svalispeaksagain 9:23 pm on May 3, 2018

Tags: Christian (24), Jesuit (10), mind control (69), occult (13), programming (60), SRA (45)

The Hierarchy of the Occult

The occultic world operates within a hierarchy model, and the groups that are occultic are very aware of this hierarchy – and the rules that govern it.

In each nation, there are local cult groups that operate, that often report to national and/or international groups that oversee their region. For an active cult member to move to a new region, they must often get permission from both the local groups, and the larger groups that oversee them.

Throughout the world, there are 12 international occultic groups around the world that have been given established territories and privileges within those regions, and one that oversees them all.

The Twelve international groups include the Illuminati, Rosicrucians, Knights Templar, Knights of Malta, Opus Dei, Magnificat , Trinity, Manus Deum, and four others (including one with its headquarters in Jerusalem).

Overseeing all of these groups is one based in Rome: The Jesuits (Society of Jesus). All other occultic societies acknowledge the headship of the Jesuits, and their pivotal role in bringing in the New World Order.

I know, because I was a Jesuit; this was the part of my history that was formerly missing earlier in my healing. My Illuminati memories are real, but they were the “cover” programming to hide my past. One of the best kept secrets of the Jesuits is that since 1912, they allowed women into their order (and programmed them from infancy on as agents) – and that since 1975, they could be a ranking general (the Jesuits have 12 top generals, each who oversees a territory in the United States, who all report to their Superior General, commonly known as the Black Pope). I know, because before I left the Order, I was fourth general and the head trainer for the Jesuits, the first woman to achieve that rank.

The facility I mention being born in was located in Rome, in the northern part of the city.

Follow

Two years ago, I wrote a book describing my memories of the Jesuit order, which I s[illegible] privately with two therapists. I have chosen not to publish it publicly, but I will share that I am quite aware of how they make their money, program their agents and of their desire that the man they call "the desire of the nations" and "the light of the world" will rule the world.

I have found two books online that very much validate my own memories of the Jesuits.

The first is an older book written in the 1800's by a man who began Jesuit training, then left it when he discovered the terrible truth about this order: *The Jesuit conspiracy: Secret Plan of the Order* by Jacopo Leone. This book can be found free online. It takes a bit of wading through, but the information is there.

The second was written more recently: *Pedophilia & Empire: Satan, Sodomy and The Jesuits as the Vatican's Order of Assassins* by Joachim Hagopian. While I do not know the author, and cannot vouch for any of his other writings (I have not read them), this one is well-researched, absolutely true, and outlines the truth about the Jesuits.

I do want to caution those who read these books: they are not "light" reading at all, but they very much expose some of the machinations the Jesuit fathers have been involved in behind the scenes. There is a reason why the term "Vatican spy" caused monarchs and heads of state to tremble over the years; they knew the Vatican had placed well-trained reporters in their courts disguised as advisors and teachers. It is no accident that the Jesuits trained the youth of the highest families in Europe.

It is important to understand that the 12 societies, and the Jesuits, do not really control the world. There is another who is really in charge of history: the LORD God of the Bible. The plans of the occultic hierarchies are destined to fail, and the messianic kingdom will rule when the occultic kingdoms fall. This is when the true "light of the nations" (who is nothing like the fake the New World Order will put forward) will rule with peace and love. His name is Jesus Christ, and He will put the armies of the NWO to flight with a word from His mouth.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

The different types of SRA and Mind Control

The Occultic Agenda
April 3, 2021

The Real Agenda Behind the Occult

January 29, 2019
In "mind control"

In "healing"

March 24, 2019
In "mind control"

Al 2:27 am on August 10, 2019

Thank you, most of all, for yourreminder and for providing the hope among all this evil of He who really owns this world. Our creator is not Lucifer, He is the Lord God Almighty, the one true God.

★ Like

svalispeaksagain 7:33 pm on January 21, 2020

There are more than 12 occultic groups in the world. The 12 that I mention are all international, and serve the Vatican. Others are smaller, or subsets of the others, or more local/national.

★ Like

mike 9:16 am on May 29, 2021

Great insight that makes sense of everything. So long people have have been in the dark. Knowledge is power. may God bless and raise your voice, protect, strengthen, and constantly revive you. Thank for the insight that is so relevant and helpful to those who hear you.

★ Like

Pingback: Targeted by Jesuits – Lifting the Wool

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

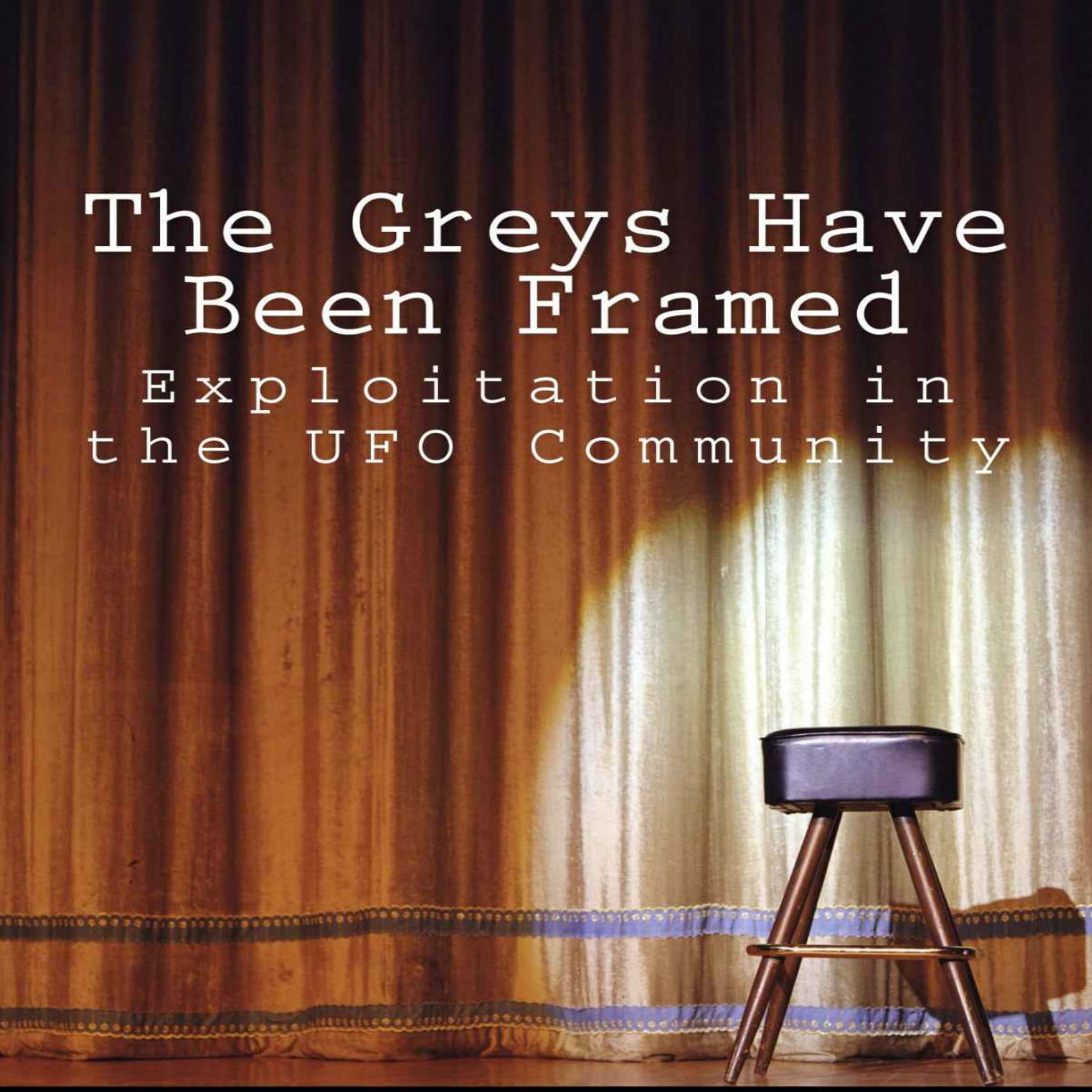
← What to Do If You Can't Afford a Therapist

The Source of Hope →

Blog at WordPress.com.

The Greys Have Been Framed

Exploitation in the UFO Community



Jack Brewer

The Greys Have Been Framed: Exploitation in the UFO Community

Jack Brewer

Copyright 2016 Jack Brewer
All rights reserved

ISBN-10: 1519579616
ISBN-13: 978-1519579614

Contents

Introduction …..... 1
1) Trauma in Paradise …..... 5
2) Hypnosis and Memory …..... 16
3) Go West, Trance States, Go West …..... 23
4) The Raping, Murderous, Mind Reading,
Sperm Collecting, ET-Human Hybrid
Baby Snatchers, Act One …..... 43
5) The Raping, Murderous, Mind Reading,
Sperm Collecting, ET-Human Hybrid
Baby Snatchers, Act Two …..... 60
6) Carol Rainey and
the Priests of High Strangeness …..... 83
7) Dr. Tyler Kokjohn Interview …..... 107
8) The Rosetta Deception and
the UFOs That Never Were …..... 118
9) James Carrion Interview …..... 131

10) Cold War Context …..... 140
11) Betty and Barney Go to Montreal …..... 167
12) Airman Mendez and the Mirage Men …..... 185
13) Leah Haley and the 139 …..... 199
14) 21st Century US Illegal
Human Experimentation …..... 231
15) Closing Thoughts …..... 256
Index …..... 269

And so it was that later
As the miller told his tale
That her face, at first just ghostly,
Turned a whiter shade of pale

- Procol Harum, *Whiter Shade of Pale*

Introduction

I came to the dance for the same reasons as lots of people. UFOs and seemingly related phenomena were a longtime interest for a variety of reasons and I desired to learn more.

My on again, off again journey through the UFO community went on for decades. While there were times I thought I was learning some things about reported UFO sightings and alleged alien abduction, I eventually came to the realization I had actually been learning more about people and dynamics that make up the UFO community. In the vast majority of circumstances, I think much more can be learned about the people, organizations and government agencies participating in the steeplechase than the often nebulous and unverifiable things they claim and promote.

In 2010 I began writing a blog, *The UFO Trail*. I made intentional efforts to explore people of interest and the related circumstances in credible manners, including holding some of the players accountable for their actions. I wrote about individuals and organizations that claim to investigate UFOs and alleged alien abductions, often concluding that the researchers and their groups should be considered much more critically than typically the case.

Other demographics explored included alleged alien abductees, self-described experiencers of high strangeness and UFO witnesses. I also blogged about members of the intelligence community, as well as people who suspected themselves to be targets of human-instigated covert operations. Interestingly, the demographics often overlapped.

The UFO Trail included posts about and submissions from scientists, mental health professionals, authors, filmmakers, researchers, scholars, skeptics and more. My intention was to provide a factual account and well rounded view of what came to be known as ufology. It became abundantly clear there were relevant aspects of the UFO genre typically being

overlooked for a variety of reasons, none of which are conducive to better understanding what's actually going on.

The general thesis I developed is that a genuine mystery may lie at the heart of humankind's fascination with the unknown, but public perception of whatever phenomena it may include has been exploited, distorted and manipulated for a variety of reasons. The perpetrators span several demographics, including the intelligence community, hoaxers, disingenuous writers, con men and, in all reasonable likelihood, lunatics, among others.

I think it likely the mid 20th century US intelligence community conducted a variety of deception operations mistaken for UFO-related phenomena. Some of those operations were intended to create confusion surrounding airborne objects. However, I am reasonably confident in some of the cases it was colorful writers and overactive imaginations, not intelligence officials, that encouraged the public to prematurely conclude phenomena, such as the so-called ghost rockets, had something to do with extraterrestrials. I do not think it was the specific intent of the architects of the operations, at least not always. Sometimes it was just a byproduct. Other times it appears to have been more intentional.

Yet other times there may have been truly unusual phenomena involved. After all, reasonable arguments have been made that such phenomena have been with humankind for a long, long time. Perhaps that is correct. Unfortunately, the tainting of the well as perpetrated by both the intelligence and UFO communities, which are ironically at times one and the same, has often rendered the task virtually impossible of sorting fact from fiction.

As the situation continued to progress, public fascination with UFOs and aliens mushroomed. In the process, more opportunities and reasons developed to produce state-sponsored propaganda related to UFOs. Further comprising the self-perpetuating snowball effect were filmmakers, authors, upstart research organizations and entrepreneurs marketing wide varieties of products and services. Hypnotists found a niche, with or without reasonable training, as did self-styled investigators who churned out books, movies and so-called instructional workshops to most anyone who was willing to ante up registration fees. Lots of people wanted in on the act. Trouble was, none of them were presenting any proof to support their claims of aliens among us,

while a large percentage of the UFO community was nonetheless driven to near hysterics while becoming convinced of alien intervention in the sometimes most mundane of events. I came to strongly suspect the reason conclusive proof of an extraterrestrial presence remained ever elusive was simple: it was an incorrect explanation for the reported sightings and experiences.

I suspect what became known as the modern day UFO phenomenon arose out of a combination of potentially legitimately unusual occurrences, covert operations conducted by the intelligence community and a public willing to be deceived. Charlatans substantially contributed to the effect, as did some sincere yet entirely incorrect researchers.

Much of the material in this book is subsequently presented from a position of being rather unimpressed with sensational stories of aliens. That is not to necessarily suggest there are no reports of high strangeness of interest, but the focus of this offering is the exploitation of public perception of what may sometimes be genuinely mysterious phenomena, and the related cultivation of inaccurate beliefs that such circumstances represent extraterrestrial visitation.

Basically, I think the greys have been framed. That doesn't have to mean there is nothing of interest under the sun, but I am indeed suggesting that ufology, by and large, has not taught us much about it. People have been hurt in the process. They've also been misled. Lots and lots of them. I think that deserves its share of attention, at least in proportion to the continuing parade of self-described investigators who chronically assert increasingly wild speculation as fact while consequences are enabled and ignored.

I would like to thank the many people who offered assistance and helped in the process of creating this book. They are far too many to name, but they are each greatly appreciated. Technical assistance, editing and other valuable services, as well as emotional support and encouragement, were generously offered. Those who gave their time and attention in fielding questions and providing comments on the forthcoming pages are appreciated as well. I also sincerely thank and appreciate my blog readers, whose interest, comments and support were primary reasons this book ever made it off the proverbial drawing board and onto these pages. Thank you.

The Greys Have Been Framed is dedicated to the countless individuals who approached the UFO community seeking reliable information, yet found their lives forever detrimentally changed amid deception and obfuscation. Many encountered unethical agendas, mystery mongering and a lack of accountability among investigators and organizations designating themselves as qualified to help. Exactly why such exploitation and manipulation occurs continues to remain unknown in many specific situations.

Chapter One
Trauma in Paradise

“He thought there were aliens everywhere,” defense attorney Brendan O'Neill told jurors.(1)

On April 7, 2005, Allison Lamont Norman went on a deadly shooting rampage that began in Delaware and ended in Maryland. His violent outburst initially included over 100 criminal charges. He randomly fired at multiple people, shot two dogs and took another, broke into a home occupied by an elderly couple, stole a car and more.(2)

At one point that morning, Norman fired at refuse workers operating a trash truck. He missed, and the round penetrated a nearby home where it struck a wall above a girl sleeping on a sofa.(3)

Maryland police reported at least eleven distinct crime scenes, including a street in front of an elementary school where Norman fired into a car and the bullet knocked a sandwich from the hand of a passenger.(4) By the time Norman was apprehended in Maryland, he had killed two people and

wounded four more, including a woman who became paralyzed and a man who approached him for a ride. It all occurred in less than an hour.

Norman's attorney, O'Neill, argued that Norman's actions stemmed from delusions of aliens trying to abduct children in his care. One of those children was a seven-year-old girl who testified about the horrific and sleepless night that preceded the deadly bi-state crime spree.(5) She told the court that Norman gathered her and her sisters into a corner of an apartment while her brother was left alone, screaming, in a hallway. O'Neill explained that his client believed the screams of the children would keep the aliens away, so Norman would pinch them to keep them yelling.

Norman, who was 22 years of age at the time, took off shortly after 8 a.m., wearing a bullet-proof vest and armed with a 9mm Glock semi-automatic handgun. He did not stop shooting until he was out of bullets in another state.

He was initially issued the death penalty for his crimes. The ruling was overturned and he was sentenced to life in prison.(6)

Mr. Norman's story is fortunately not typical. It does, however, offer us circumstances worthy of consideration about the UFO community and the suppositions it propagates.

We might consider, for instance, that although such deadly actions are not common among UFO enthusiasts, aspects of the delusional beliefs as cited in Norman's legal defense strategy are widely accepted within the UFO community. We might also consider that such actions are not entirely uncommon, either.

Reality, Fantasy and Paranormal Radio

On March 26, 1997, police in San Diego discovered the deceased bodies of 39 members of Heaven's Gate, a religious group which subscribed to extreme beliefs related to the UFO subculture.(7) The manner in which the 39 people committed mass suicide was bizarre and disturbing in its deliberate and methodical execution.

Led by Marshall Applewhite and Bonnie Nettles, the three dozen-plus people washed down phenobarbital with vodka before plastic bags were put

over their heads. The deceased were found lying in bunk beds located in a mansion the group rented in the upscale neighborhood of Rancho Santa Fe. Each of their faces and torsos were covered by a square, purple cloth, and all were dressed identically in black shirts and sweatpants with black-and-white Nike shoes. Each had a five-dollar bill and three quarters in their pockets.

All wore armbands reading, “Heaven's Gate Away Team”, one of many references the group reportedly made to the television show *Star Trek*, and in all likelihood indicative of difficulties differentiating between fantasy and reality. Among the dead was the brother of Nichelle Nichols, an actress who played the role of Lieutenant Uhura on the original *Star Trek* series.

Members were suspected to have died in three separate groups on three successive days in March, while remaining participants cleaned up after each round of deaths. Two women, apparently the last of the 39 to die, were the only bodies found without bags over their heads.

Heaven's Gate members were seemingly so entrenched and indoctrinated in their belief systems that they reportedly interpreted themselves to be following protocol that would enable them to join an extraterrestrial spacecraft following the approaching Comet Hale-Bopp. Applewhite and Nettles relied upon a number of unproven yet often accepted paranormal beliefs in order to sway their following. The group apparently believed their deaths would enable their souls to board the alien spaceship.

Prior to the mass suicide, popular paranormal radio show host Art Bell explored reports that a strange object was following Comet Hale-Bopp.(8) Bell aired a series of such reports between late 1996 and early 1997 that culminated into a story of a spaceship following the comet. The story was propped up by such questionable circumstances as an unverified photo, an unnamed astronomer and fantastic reports of remote viewing. The sensational tale was eventually conclusively demonstrated to be a hoax, as was the photo.

Some speculated about the influence Bell's shows may have had on the 39 members of Heaven's Gate who ended their lives. Bell defended his actions and asserted that he was not responsible for unstable people. He pointed out that the entire fraud was heavily exposed prior to the mass suicide.

Interestingly and however one might have interpreted the chain of events, the first line of the infamous Heaven's Gate website read, “Whether Hale-

Bopp has a 'companion' or not is irrelevant from our perspective."

It apparently still is. Heaven's Gate continues to maintain a website, a disconcerting situation in itself, and the opening line remains the same as of this writing as it did at the time of the mass suicides in 1997.(9)

The Seekers

Such circumstances – and particularly the related beliefs - were not new to the UFO community. Many years earlier, in 1956, renowned psychologist Leon Festinger and colleagues first published a fascinating and groundbreaking work on cognitive dissonance, *When Prophecy Fails: A Social and Psychological Study of a Modern Group that Predicted the End of the World*.(10)

Festinger explained how he and his team infiltrated and observed a Chicago group known as the Seekers. The group included a housewife, Dorothy Martin (given the alias "Marian Keech"), who seemed to believe she was channeling aliens through automatic writing.(11)

Martin informed her fellow believers that the world would end December 21, 1954. It was on that date that a flying saucer would arrive at midnight, she explained, and an alien would come and lead them to safety. The Seekers largely gave away their material possessions, quit college, resigned from jobs and left spouses while demonstrating commitments to their beliefs and Martin's predictions.

Festinger and his team were there when the prophecy failed. They documented how the members reacted as midnight came and went. Martin cried after a few hours and as dawn approached – but then, as if with renewed faith, she channeled a new and revised message.

The planet was spared, she announced, due to the group's profound belief. No evacuation was necessary. The Seekers had saved the world. The failure of the prophecy was framed in a manner that actually strengthened the group's collective faith, not challenged it. They began a publicity campaign to enthusiastically spread the message far and wide of the power of their beliefs.

Festinger, who would go on to work with Stanford University, conducted

the study while he and the project personnel were all staff members at the Laboratory for Research in Social Relations at the University of Minnesota. The project was funded in part by the Laboratory, as well as a Ford Foundation grant that reportedly “made preliminary exploration of the field situation possible.”(12) It might be considered curiously interesting that the Ford Foundation was later confirmed to have acted as a covert funding arm of the Central Intelligence Agency by such sources as the CIA itself.(13)

The Seekers' lack of willingness to adjust their perspectives, as contradicting evidence mounted, is alarmingly common. Among the many challenges awaiting those who wade into the UFO community, particularly in the United States, is identifying reliable, evidence-based information. Extreme, unsupported beliefs are cultivated and promoted not only by groups we might consider to be on the edge of the fringe, but also by the relatively widely recognized Mutual UFO Network, as well as such organizations as the Center for UFO Studies, each of which purport to value credible and scientific research.

Emotional Trauma

An obvious challenge of such organizations directly and indirectly facilitating belief in aliens covertly stalking the masses is that entertaining such concepts is at times virtually indistinguishable from symptoms of numerous forms of mental illness and delusion. It then only stands to reason that confused, emotionally traumatized individuals are likely to find comforting acceptance within the resulting demographics which make up the UFO community, including alleged alien abductees.

Traumatized individuals are then at risk of sustaining deeper emotional damage while failing to seek qualified professional treatment. Such professional treatment is often discouraged within the UFO community in lieu of compiling so-called evidence of fantastic encounters with extraterrestrials. Both sadly and ironically, one might consider that to be a leading indicator of the widespread circulation of sensational and inaccurate information.

There are numerous reasons that enabling such dynamics is arguably

negligent and irresponsible. Among the most convincing is that people who report what they interpret to be paranormal experiences – and particularly those who report alleged alien abductions – consistently describe themselves as traumatized by the perceived events. That being the case, it might indeed be difficult to justify why treatment of trauma would not be unanimously supported and strongly recommended as an initial priority virtually regardless of the supposed origins of the reported experiences.

It might reasonably be considered irresponsible - if not extremely so - to encourage potentially traumatized people to attend abductee support groups often lacking professional facilitators and to subject them to alien-hunting hypnotic regression. Even when such activities are conducted by credentialed professionals, the personnel are obviously biased in favor of alien-related explanations or they would not be working with such groups in the first place. Regardless of what is claimed, there is nothing either credible or scientific about such policies and procedures.

Emotional trauma and its symptoms are among the most relevant aspects of the UFO community, and particularly alleged alien abduction. Symptoms typically include confusion, anxiety and fear, and people previously traumatized are likely to experience future traumatic events, especially if traumatized as children.(14) It is not the event and the objective occurrences that determine levels of trauma sustained, but the person and their subjective emotional experience. Untreated trauma often results in inabilities to think critically, difficulties keeping chains of events in accurate chronological order and misinterpretations of repeatedly experiencing the traumatic event and variations thereof. In short, professional treatment for trauma would be valued by individuals who care about both the wellbeing of the witness and the accuracy of the reported experiences.

Please allow me to further emphasize that such treatment would be a wise and appropriate consideration for many self-described experiencers of high strangeness and particularly alleged alien abductees, regardless of the possible explanations for the perceived events. That would be the case, anyway, if the involved parties prioritized compiling accurate information and increasing the quality of life of the traumatized individual. Many would argue that therein lies the problem: questionable priorities.

The late Dr. John Mack certainly observed trauma and its relevance among alleged alien abductees. He wrote rather lengthily about it in his books *Abduction: Human Encounters with Aliens* and *Passport to the Cosmos*. Mack questioned what he described as the lack of apparent psychiatric conditions and known circumstances that might account for the symptoms of trauma present in some cases. He also considered how aspects of the narratives, while unacceptable by Western standards, fit quite well with some other cultures. Although Mack assigned credibility to various alien-related claims and regressive hypnosis-like procedures, we simply will never know how his interpretations and hypotheses would have evolved, and how he would have viewed what the abduction genre became.

Dr. CA Morgan gives us some related food for thought. He cautioned of the ethical issues inherent to doctors dissecting and analyzing symptoms of trauma, rather than simply administering treatment. Morgan considered the implications as applicable to the political refugee population in his 2007 article, *Psychiatric Evaluations of Asylum Seekers*.(15)

Morgan explained how thousands of people annually sought asylum in the United States, and, as a basis for their applications, claimed they were mistreated or tortured by the governments of their home countries. Refugees were subjected to medical and/or psychiatric examinations to establish the validity of the claims. Morgan reported that it was the goal of organizations that provided such exams to indeed help advance a candidate's claims, circumstances we might reasonably consider comparable in many instances to less than entirely objective investigations launched by organizations and researchers which advocate alleged alien abduction.

On a grimly interesting aside, there was apparently a black market for stories of torture survivors. Asylum seekers who were never actually tortured would covertly purchase such stories, learn the details and subsequently narrate testimonies similar to torture survivors.

Morgan warned there was no scientific method for establishing the veracity of a reported traumatic event. He added that the symptoms of post traumatic stress disorder were subjective report-based, and that there were no objective measures of the disorder.

"Thus, the clinician who accepts the story provided at face value and who

assumes that the symptoms reported by the applicant are ‘evidence’ of the exposure to a traumatic event is engaged in a dubious process,” the doctor explained.

Morgan wrote of the dangerous dynamics inherent to exploring recovered memories, and cited significant regrettable mistakes psychiatrists made during the 1990's. It was both unwise and professionally unsound to provide expert testimony about trauma that had no objective supporting evidence, he asserted.

Lastly, Morgan warned, such procedures were not part of treating the potentially traumatized individual, and were outside the scope of training of the doctors consulted. The process was practicing advocacy, not psychiatry. He stated that the function of clinicians in the asylum seeking process should have been to provide assessments and treatment for individuals whose psychiatric symptoms interfered with their abilities to work with attorneys.

“This is within our scope of training and expertise; extending beyond evidence-based uses of our clinical skills to achieve a legal goal is advocacy, not ethical practice, and it will undermine the credibility of our profession,” Morgan concluded.

Similar could certainly be said about mental health professionals trying to assess the complexities and validity of narrations of alien abductions, particularly if simultaneously promoting the stories as accurate along with the use of hypnosis as a memory enhancer. It is questionable enough for qualified experts to engage in such activities, but it is entirely unacceptable for professionally unqualified individuals to do so. Presenting the results of such ill advised endeavors as evidence of alien abduction – under the guise of conducting scientific study, no less – has understandably and in more recent years come to be considered grounds for dismissal from reasonable consideration, at absolute best.

---

1 Wayback Machine: The Two Malcontents: *Space Aliens Part of Shooting Insanity Defense*

https://web.archive.org/web/20140726140420/http://www.the-two-malcontents.com/2007/05/space-aliens-part-of-shooting-insanity-defense/

2 Delaware.gov: *Allison Lamont Norman v. State of Delaware*
http://courts.delaware.gov/opinions/%280d4zy355zwqwbg55jk32a055%29/download.aspx?ID=123140

3 WBOC: *Gunman Denied Bond for Shooting Rampage in MD and DE*
http://www.wboc.com/story/3179504/gunman-denied-bond-for-shooting-rampage-in-md-and-de

4 *The Washington Post*: *Eastern Shore Rampage Leaves 2 Dead, 4 Wounded*
http://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/articles/A33892-2005Apr7.html

5 Wayback Machine: The Two Malcontents: *Space Aliens Part of Shooting Insanity Defense*
https://web.archive.org/web/20140726140420/http://www.the-two-malcontents.com/2007/05/space-aliens-part-of-shooting-insanity-defense/

6 WBOC: *Del. Court Rejects Appeal in Bi-State Shooting*
http://www.wboc.com/story/24270962/del-court-rejects-appeal-in-2-state-shooting

7 Wikipedia: *Heaven's Gate (religious group)*
http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Heaven%27s_Gate_%28religious_group%29

8 Committee for Skeptical Inquiry: *Art Bell, Heaven's Gate and Journalistic Integrity*
http://www.csicop.org/si/show/art_bell_heavenrsquos_gate_and_journalistic_integrity/

9 heavensgate.com
http://heavensgate.com/

10 Amazon: *When Prophecy Fails*
http://www.amazon.com/When-Prophecy-Fails-Psychological-Destruction/dp/0061311324

11 *Slate*: *Prophecy Fail*

http://www.slate.com/articles/health_and_science/science/2011/05/prophecy_fail.html

12 Powell's City of Books: *When Prophecy Fails*

http://www.powells.com/biblio/61-9781617202803-1

13 Central Intelligence Agency: *Cultural Cold War*

https://www.cia.gov/library/center-for-the-study-of-intelligence/csi-publications/csi-studies/studies/vol46no1/article08.html

14 helpguide.org: *Emotional and Psychological Trauma*

http://www.helpguide.org/articles/ptsd-trauma/emotional-and-psychological-trauma.htm

15 PubMed Central: *Political Evaluations of Asylum Seekers*

http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC2921241/

Chapter Two
Hypnosis and Memory

> Because the risks of distortion vastly outweigh the chances of obtaining any useful information, forensic investigators and clinical practitioners should avoid hypnosis as a technique for enhancing recollection.
>
> - John F. Kihlstrom, Ph.D., *Hypnosis, memory and amnesia*(1)

The American Psychological Association (APA) website informs us that "hypnosis is a therapeutic technique in which clinicians make suggestions to individuals who have undergone a procedure designed to relax them and focus their minds."(2) It is further explained that the activity is controversial yet accepted by most clinicians as a powerful and therapeutic treatment for a wide variety of conditions, including pain, bad habits and more. The APA reports that reaching a decision to use hypnosis should only be made in consultation with a qualified health care provider trained in the use and limitations of clinical hypnosis.(3) Please note that the organization does not describe hypnosis as something recommended for amateur practice, does not claim it to be a reliable aid for retrieving suppressed memories and therefore obviously does not endorse its use as an investigative tool for writers seeking fantastic stories of alien abduction.

As a matter of fact, hypnosis and the induction of non-ordinary states of consciousness are typically viewed entirely differently among mental health professionals than members of the UFO community. Regressive hypnosis is but a single and increasingly obscure aspect of the overall hypnosis topic, albeit probably the first to come to mind among many UFO enthusiasts when the subject arises.

Non-ordinary states of consciousness are induced during many types of therapeutic activities, such as Eye Movement Desensitization and Reprocessing, or EMDR, which may be employed during the treatment of emotional trauma, for example. Such procedures are most certainly not intended for the resulting mental imagery to be definitively accepted as representations of objective reality.

Quoted in a 2011 article, *Hypnosis today*, published by the APA, psychologist Dr. Michael Yapko stated that people do not really understand the suggestibility of memory.(4) A fellow of the American Society of Clinical Hypnosis, Yapko described how hypnosis took a public relations hit in the 1990's. Therapists unwisely used hypnotic regression to supposedly assist their patients in uncovering suppressed memories of childhood abuse, resulting in hundreds of court cases consisting of false accusations made against innocent people. Yapko added that the entire regressive hypnosis issue subsequently fell by the wayside due to advances in research.

Dr. Joseph P. Green was quoted in the same APA article. A psychology professor at Ohio State University at Lima, Green's research demonstrated that hypnotic suggestions produced false and distorted memories. Adding to the mounting problems for proponents of hypnotic regression, which include many researchers of alleged alien abduction, Green found that hypnosis subjects had tendencies to incorrectly believe their hypnotically induced (and conclusively false) memories were even more reliable than those consciously recalled. Subjects argued the validity of the hypnotically induced memories even after they were informed of their inaccuracy. Such circumstances led Green to explain that hypnosis as a memory retrieval technique was “on thin ice,” regardless of the lingering and completely mistaken cultural belief that it acted as a truth serum.

If you're wondering why no one told the UFO community, they did. Lots of times. The pro-hypnotic regression segment of the community just refused to listen, which included leaders of nonprofit corporations questionably claiming to be committed to scientific investigation. In spite of such claims, many UFO-related organizations chronically provide venues for presenters who practice regressive hypnosis and promote the resulting fantastic stories as credible interpretations of reality.

Detrimental aspects of hypnosis became apparent to the American Medical Association (AMA), and not just as a memory enhancer, but across the board. The ill advised use of regressive hypnosis employed by therapists during the 1990's and the bull in a china shop tactics taken by ufology hypnotists certainly did not contribute positively to the AMA assessment. The American Psychotherapy and Medical Hypnosis Association reported that the AMA served notice in recent years to inform its membership it is not appropriate to state that the AMA recognizes or endorses hypnosis for any purpose.(5)

“The AMA objects to the use of its name in connection with hypnosis,” the notice further clarified.

False Memories

If a person wanted to learn what the professional research community has discovered about memory, the work of Dr. Elizabeth Loftus should be on their reading list. The award-winning experimental psychologist is a recognized leading expert in her field. She has conducted hundreds of experiments spanning decades that conclusively demonstrate the lack of reliability of memories and witness testimony.(6) The manners witnesses are questioned affects their perceptions of past events, Loftus verified, which carries significant implications to many professions and social dynamics, most certainly including investigations of alleged alien abduction and UFOs. The research of Elizabeth Loftus should be considered of great importance to the UFO community, as is apparently the case with the Central Intelligence Agency, which featured Dr. Loftus at a 2015 TEDx conference held at the Agency's Langley campus, the contents of which were classified.(7)

Loftus has demonstrated that details of supposed memories and entire events contained therein may be incorrectly perceived that have no basis in objective reality. Memory is not a solid data base that remains in tact, but a complex, changing mental landscape which is subject to virtually infinite conditions. Both incorrect and relatively actual memories tend to be embellished over time, and resulting perceptions, accurate or not, influence future behavior.

Loftus could identify no cogent scientific support indicating that forgotten experiences or suppressed memories could consistently be recalled through the use of special techniques, or that such techniques provided reliable results.(8) What's more, she found there is ample reason to believe that suggestive and prolonged searches for hidden memories could be harmful.

In early 2015, Loftus and colleagues published results of their first of its kind research on connections between sleep deprivation and susceptibility to false memories, which they reported could have “dire consequences.”(9) The implications were significant to the use of sleep deprivation as a technique to enhance interrogation of prisoners and incarcerated individuals.

More on false memories and people being affected, or led, by the ways questions are constructed and posed was reported in 2015 by the Association for Psychological Science.(10) Research subjects at the University of Bedfordshire were convinced within a few hours they had committed crimes that actually never happened. A study found that confessions to crimes can be surprisingly easy to generate and that the resulting false memories can have the same kinds of complex details as real memories. All participants needed to generate a richly detailed false memory, psychologist and lead researcher Dr. Julia Shaw explained, was three hours in a friendly interview environment, the introduction of a few wrong details and the use of some poor memory retrieval techniques. Bells should be ringing with those familiar with investigative techniques practiced by ufology hypnotists.

Bedfordshire researchers were surprised to discover the extents subjects were influenced when provided with accurate information accompanied by inaccurate information, and then encouraged to fill in more detail. False recollections were readily generated to the point of participants reenacting crimes they never committed.

Further considerations were provided by researchers at Macquarie University. They conducted a project in which hypnosis was used to temporarily create delusional beliefs in otherwise non-delusional people. *Science Daily* reported on the project in its 2008 article, *Hypnosis: The Key to Unlocking the Delusional Mind?*.(11) The study was fascinating and might very well be contemplated in the context of problems with subjecting alleged alien abductees to hypnotic regression.

Hypnosis was used to study delusions because they share so many characteristics, researchers explained. Both involve distortions in reality, for instance, and in both cases the distortions tend to be believed with conviction by those who experience them.

Research subjects were hypnotized and given one of three suggestions used to create a delusion. Results indicated the "hypnotic suggestion created a credible, compelling delusion."

To what extent? Some participants became unable to recognize their own reflections in a mirror. In order for researchers to learn more about a condition known as mirrored-self misidentification, subjects were given hypnotic suggestions to see strangers in the mirror. The suggestions worked.

---

1 National Center for Biotechnology Information: *Hypnosis, memory and amnesia*

http://www.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/pmc/articles/PMC1692104/pdf/9415925.pdf

2 American Psychological Association: *Hypnosis*

http://www.apa.org/topics/hypnosis/

3 American Psychological Association: *Hypnosis Today: Looking beyond the media portrayal*

http://www.apa.org/topics/hypnosis/media.aspx

4 American Psychological Association: *Hypnosis today*

http://www.apa.org/monitor/2011/01/hypnosis.aspx

5 American Psychotherapy and Medical Hypnosis Association: *Important Notice Regarding Hypnosis and the American Medical Association*

http://apmha.com/amahypnosis.htm

6 University of California at Irvine: *Gold Medal Award for Life Achievement in the Science of*

Psychology

http://www.law.uci.edu/news/faculty/loftus_APFaward-program_aug2013.pdf

7 *The Huffington Post*: *Even The CIA Likes TED Talks, But Only Secret Ones*

http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2015/04/24/ted-talks-cia_n_7139940.html

8 Cogprints: *Memory Distortion and False Memory Creation*

http://cogprints.org/599/1/199802009.html

9 Social Science Research Network: *Sleep Deprivation and False Memories*

http://papers.ssrn.com/sol3/papers.cfm?abstract_id=2554561

10 Association for Psychological Science: *People Can Be Convinced They Committed a Crime That Never Happened*

http://www.psychologicalscience.org/index.php/news/releases/people-can-be-convinced-they-committed-a-crime-they-dont-remember.html

11 *Science Daily*: *Hypnosis: The Key to Unlocking the Delusional Mind?*

http://www.sciencedaily.com/releases/2008/04/080428160113.htm

Chapter Three
Go West, Trance States, Go West

Dr. James Braid is considered the father of hypnosis.(1) The Scottish-born physician coined the term during the 19th century. His interests evolved from taking a skeptical view of those who practiced an activity known as Mesmerism, to conducting various experiments designed to help better understand trance states. Braid concluded that techniques as practiced for some 2,400 years or longer for religious purposes had qualities that could facilitate concentrations of attention to extents in which subjects became entirely absorbed.(2) Braid worked with individuals who, during hypnosis, became indifferent to or unaware of objects or purposes other than those introduced by the hypnotist.

The Skeptic's Dictionary contains a page on hypnosis.(3) The entry is a worthy summary, in my opinion, and does a good job of portraying many of the complexities inherent to the topic. It effectively explains how hypnosis is used by numerous demographics and in a variety of ways in addition to investigators of alleged alien abduction and their calling card, hypnotic regression. Showmen, entertainers, therapists and clinicians, among others, at times fall under the wide umbrella of “hypnotist.”

However apt at times, *The Skeptic's Dictionary* might be guilty of oversimplifying the situation a bit when it attempts to bring the post to a close and inform readers of what “we know” about hypnosis. A position I interpret to be generally shared by the organized skeptical community is that implications related to the power of hypnosis should be minimized due in large part to the extents the activity's effectiveness relies upon the suggestibility of the hypnosis subject. It has been stated, for example, that

studies are difficult to conduct because hypnosis and the placebo effect are virtually the same thing. I would fundamentally agree with that, or at the least recognize it as a relevant dynamic, but I would suggest it does not entirely negate the topic from being of significance and interest. Far from it, actually.

To clarify, I'm not talking about hypnotic regression. It is unreliable and potentially harmful. That's a done deal, but hypnosis employed as a memory retrieval tool is one thing, and attempting to use hypnosis to modify behavior is another. They're not the same thing, much as the dynamics may overlap and lines may blur.

Considering the latter of the two, it has been reasonably argued that hypnosis cannot be effectively relied upon to consistently influence behavior. However, that may be only part of the overall significance of what is currently understood. I invite consideration that even if hypnosis only acts as a placebo on those vulnerable to suggestions used by the hypnotist, that does not void the relevance of the topic, but implies that an entire group of suggestible people remain at risk of potential exploitation. Would it not be reasonable to allocate proportionate attention to circumstances in which hypnosis actually seemed to work to manipulate behavior, rather than focusing upon its inconsistencies?

Consider, for example, a mid 20th century CIA report, *Hypnosis in Interrogation*, composed by Edward F. Deshere and declassified in 1993.(4) The report contained several references to the work of psychologist, CIA consultant and leading hypnosis expert of his day, Dr. Martin Orne.

Deshere explained:

> Orne has shown that the demand characteristics of an experimental situation may greatly influence a subject's hypnotic behavior. It is clear that at some level any cooperative subject wishes an experiment to “work out,” wishes to help fulfill the experimenter's expectations. If he grasps the purpose of the experiment or the bias of the experimenter, he is disposed toward producing behavior which will confirm the experimenter's hypothesis. This is particularly true in a hypnotic relationship.

The implications should be clear enough to hypnotic regression sessions in which the hypnotist is attempting to collect narrations of alleged alien abduction. The natural progression of events, as implied by Deshare and Orne, would be that an adequately suggestible subject would be plenty willing to provide the results sought by the hypnotist.

Orne further noted the significance of the influence of the hypnotist in a 1965 paper in which he reported experimenter/hypnotists who held differing hypotheses arrived at conflicting conclusions that supported their personal perspectives.(5) The dynamic Orne was observing is why some parties suggest it to be suspect and impractical that ufology hypnotists John Mack, Budd Hopkins, Barbara Lamb and David Jacobs (among others) seemed to so consistently make the acquaintance of alleged alien abductees who happened to have supported their pet theories. The malevolent space invader, benevolent being of light, ET-human hybrid, disappearing fetus and so on is likely in the eye of the beholder – and hypnotist.

For those scoring at home, Orne also reported that hypnosis had no utility to assure the truthfulness of statements made by subjects who may willfully lie even in deep hypnotic states.(6) Moreover, the psychologist set the tone for medical professionals who would later tell us actual memories cannot be distinguished from hypnotic confabulations when he reported that to be the case in 1979. He warned that memories obtained via hypnosis must be independently corroborated in order to be accepted as accurate and indicative of reality.

Let us further consider the implications of the use of hypnosis as a tool to effectively influence the subject to carry out the instructions of the hypnotist, or modify the behavior of the subject. The primary mid 20th century CIA interests in hypnosis, and subsequently those of Orne and colleagues, involved topics such as influencing behavior and perfecting interrogation techniques. His observations that the subject desired to assist the hypnotist may have indeed been applicable and relevant, at least some of the time.

Orne advocated that persuading someone to do something while hypnotized was not entirely different from when they were not. Circumstances should most effectively be framed in manners agreeable to the subject and justify, from the subject's point of view, why they should carry

out the suggestions. Basically, it's all in the presentation – and distorting perception in ways that lead the subject to form assumptions and conclusions supporting the goals of the hypnotist.

"Hypnosis is not so much a way of manipulating behavior," Orne wrote in 1966, "as of creating distortions of perception and memory."(7)

In other words, the effective hypnotist alters perceptions of the subject to facilitate intended resulting behavior. Orne well understood the importance of leading the subject to believe in the power of hypnosis, for instance. Fascinatingly, the psy-chologist advised the CIA on developing what he called a "magic room," complete with props designed to deceive detainees into believing themselves vulnerable to interrogators and their supposedly advanced techniques. That may have largely *been* Orne's advanced technique: leading subjects to believe he had advanced techniques.

Deshare wrote in his report:

> A captive's anxiety could be heightened, for example, by rumors that the interrogator possesses semi-magical techniques of extracting information. A group of collaborating captives could verify that interrogees lose all control over their actions, and so on. After such preliminary conditioning, a "trance" could be induced with drugs in a setting described by Orne as the "magic room," where a number of devices would be used to convince the subject that he is responding to suggestions. For instance, a concealed diathermy machine could warm up his hand just as he receives the suggestion that his hand is growing warmer. Or it might be suggested to him that when he wakes up a cigarette will taste bitter, it having been arranged that any cigarettes available to him would indeed have a slight but noticeably bitter taste. With ingenuity a large variety of suggestions can be made to come true by means unknown to the subject. Occasionally these manipulations would probably elicit some form of trance phenomenon, but the crucial thing would be the situation, not the incidental hypnotic state. The individual could legitimately renounce responsibility for divulging information much as if he

had done it in delirium.

In a manner of speaking, Orne and the present day skeptical community seemed to share some conclusions about hypnosis and its lack of reliability as a tool to control behavior. A difference, however, was what some of today's skeptics frame as detrimental, Orne and his associates viewed as potential opportunities. They didn't appear to care if it worked intermittently or only because of belief, just that it might work some of the time.

Destructive Obedience

On an interesting aside, Yale University psychology professor Stanley Milgram conducted a study on “destructive obedience” in 1961.(8) This was incidentally in the same time frame as Project MKULTRA Subproject 84, of which Orne conducted.(9) Milgram's descent into the dark side of humanity involved urging volunteer research subjects to administer what they believed were increasingly painful electric shocks to other volunteers as forms of progressively harsher punishment for sub par performance of assigned tasks. (10)

In reality, the electric shocks were fake, and the supposed “volunteers” sustaining shocks were actors who were in on the experiment. They screamed and protested while researchers urged the actual subjects, those administering what they thought were increasingly painful electric shocks, to continue the exercise.

Some of the research subjects stopped immediately. Others did not. Milgram reported that 65 percent of the subjects went the distance, all the way to activating what they believed to be the strongest, most painful setting for the shock.

The results of the controversial project – and even what the results indicated – continue to this day to be debated and analyzed. The experiment was replicated in 2007 and reportedly obtained similar statistical results, whatever that may or may not say about virtually everybody involved.(11)

In the context of Orne's observations, we might consider Milgram's study to have altered perceptions of the research subjects to facilitate their resulting

behavior. It's a reasonable assumption that, prior to the experiment, many would have denied they would harm, much less electrically shock, other human beings, yet did so due to the way it was framed.

Similarly, Milgram's work would indeed lend support to Orne's idea that authority figures command substantial power and influence over the average individual. If people would continue to shock other people begging for mercy, and at least partially just because they were told to keep doing so by some guy in a lab coat, it would not seem that big a stretch to suspect hypnotic suggestions might be effectively administered to subjects who particularly believe hypnosis to be valid and who view the hypnotist as authoritative. That's arguably a lot of people who would dance with a hypnotist in the first place. Please allow me to again present for consideration that if hypnotically modifying behavior only works on a percentage of people and due to the placebo effect, that does not nullify it from being potentially interesting and relevant, but arguably makes it more so.

Extraordinary Claims

Long before Orne and the CIA came along, wealthy Kansas farmer and amateur hypnotist Anderson Gray (dynamic name, huh?) applied his mind-tampering interests to trying to get away with murder – twice!(12) In the late 19th century, Gray had a neighbor, Thomas Patton, whom he wanted dead for financial reasons. Gray subsequently persuaded a hypnosis subject to attempt to kill the man. The methodology seemed to work well enough, but the hit itself was unsuccessful. A scuffle broke out and a gunshot was fired. No serious injuries resulted, and both the would be assassin and the target were arrested and later released.

Not to be deterred, Gray found and worked with a second patsy, Thomas McDonald. Just as Martin Orne would advise the CIA half a century later, Gray reportedly framed the killing in an acceptable context for the hypnosis subject. He told McDonald that Patton had been talking about his wife, so he should kill him.

McDonald did just that, shooting Patton, who died shortly afterward. McDonald was eventually arrested, completely confessed his actions but also

explained the nature of his relationship with Gray. He was acquitted of all responsibility of a killing that he otherwise admittedly carried out. Gray was then arrested and convicted by a jury of first degree murder.

The case understandably attracted a great deal of attention from the legal and medical communities. It was rather extraordinary that a confessed killer had been acquitted while another man was convicted, due to what the court ruled was his hypnotic influence over the killer.

By the time the CIA took up interest in hypnosis, trance states, drugs and pretty much any and everything else the Agency could imagine might possibly be used to control behavior, a similar case unfolded in Denmark. A 1950 bank robbery occurred that involved Palle Hardrup and Bjorn Nielsen.(13) Hardrup committed the crime but told authorities he was under the hypnotic control of Nielsen. In a complex chain of events that included investigations, trials and retrials that arguably uncovered more questions than answers, hypnotist Nielsen was convicted for the actions of his subject, Hardrup.

CIA operatives may very well have been considering that very case in a now declassified 1955 memo titled, *Hypnotism and Covert Operations*.(14) Its unidentified author curiously wrote:

> Currently there is a murder trial in [redacted] in which the murderer has been judged to have been under hypnosis at the time of the crime. He has been retried, released and the hypnotist tried and convicted. The case is now under appeal. The comment of the three knowledgeable informants was that the hypnotist must have been a rank amateur to have been found out since any experienced operator would have known how to suggest away the fact that he had arranged the crime.

Whatever we are to make of such declassified documents, there are plenty of them. A 1954 MKULTRA document titled *Hypnotic Experimentation and Research* suggested at least some hypnosis subjects could be led to abandon their normally held principles and ethics, up to demonstrating a willingness to kill another human being when instructed to do so.(15) A woman was

apparently hypnotized and directed to fire a pistol at another female hypnosis subject, which she did, unaware the gun was not loaded. Researchers claimed the subjects reported no memories of the events having taken place. Numerous declassified files are available containing similar CIA claims of successfully using hypnosis to significantly modify behavior.

In a document titled, *SI and H Experimentation (25 September 1951),* CIA researchers claimed to have successfully administered post-hypnotic suggestions via telephone using code words ("SI and H" stood for sleep induction and hypnosis).(16) Experiments reportedly included the simulation of covertly planting a bomb. Post-hypnotic directives were initiated through the use of common yet prearranged code words during normal conversations conducted by telephone. One of the directives involved a subject delivering a post-hypnotic code word to a second subject (Talk about covering your tracks!). Each of the research subjects were reported to have executed detailed instructions, including navigating public locations, interacting with people and hiding a "bomb" in a predetermined location. It might be considered particularly significant that researchers claimed the subjects could largely not remember their participation in the experiments.

George H. Estabrooks was a Harvard graduate, a Rhodes Scholar, the head of the Colgate psych department and a CIA consultant during the MKULTRA years. He made absolutely extraordinary statements about successfully manipulating behavior via hypnosis.(17) The doctor claimed to be able to create multiple personalities in a subject, essentially inducing the concept of multiple personality disorder, or MPD, which has in more recent years been replaced by the term dissociative identity disorder, or DID.(18) Estabrooks asserted he could successfully control the separate personalities while selectively inducing amnesia and a multitude of related and ethically questionable procedures. He qualified that it did not work on everyone, but asserted to John Marks that he could hypnotize and control about one out of five people.(19)

John Marks wrote the groundbreaking 1979 book, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate,* in which he reported information gleaned from what became known as the MKULTRA Collection of declassified documents.(20) Marks also obtained statements from numerous CIA consultants, including New York psychologist Milton Kline, who was quoted as relatively

concurring with Estabrooks. It cannot be done by everyone and consistently, Kline told Marks, but it can be done. He added that a lack of recollection of circumstances, or amnesia, could most certainly be induced some of the time. Marks reported that Kline, who served as president of the American Society for Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, went as far as to assert that he could create a patsy in three months and an assassin in six.

The origins of the term “Manchurian Candidate” can be found in a 1953 CIA meeting of which Marks explored and documented. According to a declassified 1953 memo titled, *Subject: ARTICHOKE Conference*, those in attendance discussed reports of American prisoners of war “who had come out of North Korea across the Soviet Union to freedom” and “apparently had a blank period of disorientation while passing through a special zone in Manchuria.”

Such reports fueled the already mounting fears that Communist intelligence agencies were achieving superior results in brainwashing and mind control techniques. It was speculated that related experiments were conducted on American servicemen in Manchuria. American officials warned, sincerely or otherwise, that action needed to be taken to protect Uncle Sam from falling victim to programmed assassins, brainwashed security threats and similar such possibilities that might be achieved through advanced psychological warfare capabilities. By the time that meeting occurred in 1953, the CIA mind control venture was well underway, and whether or not it was actually taking place as represented up and down the chain of command.

Marks quoted one CIA officer as writing in a memo to his boss, “If this is supposed to be covered up as a defensive feasibility study, it's pretty damn transparent.”

A declassified 1950 CIA memo gives us a glimpse into the deceptive and manipulative mindsets of the architects of such projects.(21) While contemplating recruitment of a target described as a college graduate, linguist and an educator, and referred to in the memo as a “candidate for indoctrination” to apparently conduct hypnotic regression-like work, Agency personnel considered:

> This man recently took training at [redacted] He has given up all connections with dianetics because we do not consider dianetics medically ethically but the technique of so called dianetic auditing is an interesting one in that the subject, lying on a couch with his eyes closed, is regressed in such a way as to relive incidents, either pleasant or unpleasant at various times in his life. This is accomplished, usually without medication, and is said to be non-hypnotic.
>
> [Redacted] would like to be re-called to active duty in his rank. I feel sure that his personality is such that he would be adaptable to indoctrination. At present, he knows nothing of what might be desired of him.

The Agency continued recruiting individuals with experience in hypnosis and related fields of expertise. A 1952 CIA memo detailed an interview conducted with a professional hypnotist sought for employment.(22) CIA personnel considered such factors as the physical appearance, place of residence and community standing of the candidate in relation to the feasibility the hypnotist would make a suitable consultant.

The hypnotist, whose name was redacted from the memo, asserted during the interview they could administer post-hypnotic suggestions that could last some 20 years. The suggestions would be particularly strong, the redacted hypnotist added, if periodically reinforced. Asked if they were willing to act as a consultant for the Agency, the hypnotist agreed.

Martin Orne published numerous papers on his work and sat on the board of directors of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation. He was featured in an article written by Dr. Patricia Greenfield, the sister of John Marks. It was published in the December, 1977, edition of the *American Psychological Association Monitor* and contained what I consider to be one of the more intriguing quotes from Orne, of which there are many.

Commenting on social issues inherent to medical professionals acting as MKULTRA consultants in the search for the Manchurian Candidate, Orne told Greenfield, “We are sufficiently ineffective so that our findings can be published.”

Are all these claims just disinformation and stories of hearsay from distant yesteryear? It doesn't seem so.

Hypnotic Perception Management Comes of Age

In 2010 a retired Turkish officer was reportedly sentenced to over seven years in prison for the use of drugs and hypnosis as interrogation tools on three non-commissioned officers, or NCOs.(23) Retired Lt. Col. Gurol Dogan interrogated the soldiers for some ten days following their initial detention in 2009. They were suspected of leaking classified information.

Two of the NCOs were later released and filed a lawsuit against Dogan. The suit alleged they had been tortured, drugged, hypnotized and subjected to psychological pressure for the purpose of extracting statements. Dogan denied the allegations, but the Kayseri 2nd Criminal Court ruled otherwise, relying on a forensics report issued in June, 2010, by the Council of Forensic Medicine. It strongly suggested the NCOs were under the influence of drugs and hypnosis when interrogated. We might indeed question where the Turkish colonel came by the concepts and training for such interrogation techniques.

It might be considered potentially interesting that former Director of Central Intelligence Porter Goss registered in April, 2015, to lobby on behalf of the government of Turkey.(24) Forms were filed to the Department of Justice through his employer, Dickstein Shapiro, a large DC-based law firm and lobbying group reported to have a longstanding relationship with the Turkish government. Goss registered to advise the Middle Eastern nation on various topics, including counterterrorism and “issues of importance to Turkey.”

Whether or not the methods employed by Col. Dogan were effective, I suspect Orne, Estabrooks and the CIA gang would have taken satisfaction in knowing intelligence officers were still following in their footsteps well into the 21st century. Moreover, news recently surfaced indicating American intelligence officials continue to employ hypnosis in their attempts to interrogate and manipulate prisoners.

Information of related interest and concern was contained in the July, 2015, *Report to the Special Committee of the Board of Directors of the American Psychological Association*.(25) Also known as the Hoffman Report, the document was composed by David H. Hoffman, Esq. and colleagues at the law offices of Sidley Austin LLP. Hoffman, a former Inspector General, federal prosecutor, Supreme Court clerk and Assistant US Attorney, led a team reporting on recent involvement of the APA in national security interrogations and torture. APA collusion in such circumstances and subsequent attempts at cover-up resulted in substantial criticism of the organization and leadership upheaval. The 500-plus page Hoffman Report contained reference to the use of hypnosis on detainees, among many other items of concern.

Hoffman and colleagues reported that psychologist Michael Gelles was acting on behalf of the Naval Criminal Investigative Service (NCIS) when he worked with detained Petty Officer Daniel King in 2001. King was a cryptanalyst incarcerated since 1999 on suspicion of spying. He was eventually released after a 500-plus day saga that included grueling interrogations and no formal charges filed against the young man.

Gelles was questioned by APA ethics personnel about his interactions with King, the Hoffman Report indicated. Possible conflicts of interest were examined concerning Gelles serving in two capacities, presenting himself to King as a psychologist while aiding the NCIS in its ongoing interrogation.

Gelles stated he was merely "screening Petty Officer King to determine whether or not hypnosis would be an appropriate avenue for him." Gelles asserted that he was "not serving in two capacities, as [his] only role was advising NCIS, and in this instance assisting NCIS in determining whether or not Petty Officer King was a proper subject for hypnosis."

Elizabeth Swenson, an APA Ethics Committee liaison, described the actions of Gelles as "ethically very marginal." She added that he was "misleading" and "omitted information that could have really helped [King] about how false memories can be established and solidified by interrogation."

In addition to the ethical concerns, we might reasonably question why interrogators would employ hypnosis. What for? Were false memories induced that led detainees to unsubstantiated confessions? We might also

question what extents such detainees were subjected to unethical, involuntary experimentation in the pursuit of perfecting such techniques. Involuntary human experimentation, whether or not it included hypnosis, was later documented in the Seton Hall University School of Law report, *Guantanamo: America's Battle Lab*, among other sources.(26)

The Hoffman Report cited the involvement with the intelligence community of Mel Gravitz, a prominent psychologist and expert in memory and hypnosis. He worked for many years, according to the report, as a CIA contractor while also acting as a member of the quite questionable "Professional Standards Advisory Committee," which supposedly consulted on the treatment of detainees. Gravitz declined to either meet with the authors of the Hoffman Report or field their questions.

Perhaps, all things considered, we should not find the allegations surrounding Michael W. Fine, an Ohio attorney, entirely surprising. He was accused of being quite accomplished at manipulating perception – and subsequently behavior - via hypnosis. An emergency request for the suspension of his law license was filed to the Ohio Supreme Court by the Lorain County Bar Association in November, 2014.(27) The suspension was granted and an investigation is ongoing as of this writing that Fine was hypnotizing female clients, with neither their knowledge nor consent, and persuading them to perform sexual acts. Fine's conduct posed a "substantial threat of serious harm to the public," the emergency request charged.

The concerning story surfaced, according to the document, after "Jane Doe 1" became suspicious following meetings with Fine, who she hired as counsel in a child custody case. The woman would reportedly find her clothes to be disheveled following her meetings with Fine. She would also find herself unable to remember parts of their conversations. Doe 1 reported what she described as losses of time after meetings which occurred at both his office and the Lorain County Justice Center. She also reported experiencing losses of time after speaking with Fine by telephone.

The woman contacted authorities who offered her assistance and eventually obtained search warrants to record one of her meetings with Fine. During the meeting, Fine allegedly used what appeared to be code words to induce hypnotic states, then proceeded to make graphic sexual commands,

prompting investigators to come out of hiding, enter the office and stop the interaction.

These types of allegations are not as uncommon as we might think or hope. This case provided apparent excellent documentation as compared to some others, however, and there is also another interesting aspect: a second female client of Fine's surfaced, independently leveling similar charges.

“Jane Doe 2” hired Fine to represent her in a divorce. She stated that he wanted to instruct her on what he called relaxation and meditation techniques, and, when she followed his suggestions, she reported experiencing losses of time. Doe 2 suspected she was actually being hypnotized for exploitative purposes, and subsequently told another attorney about it. They encouraged her to contact authorities, which she did, and the prosecutor's office therefore came to have two independent witnesses reporting similar occurrences and complaints.

Clinical psychologist Dr. Ross Santamaria provided the court with expert opinion on the case, including “scientific support for both the therapeutic and manipulative use of hypnosis.”(28) He reviewed the evidence and reported that he found Fine's behavior to be in violation of professional protocols. Dr. Santamaria explained that hypnosis can be used to manipulate individuals in immoral, unethical, illegal and inappropriate ways.

Such exploitation and manipulation brings our exploration of the topic to a demographic whose actions have become as questionable as any who take the role of hypnotist: investigators of alleged alien abduction.

---

1 The James Braid Society: *About James Braid*

http://www.jamesbraidsociety.com/braid.htm

2 Wikipedia: *Hypnosis*

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hypnosis

3 The Skeptic's Dictionary: *hypnosis*

http://skepdic.com/hypnosis.html

4 Central Intelligence Agency: *Hypnosis in Interrogation*
https://www.cia.gov/library/center-for-the-study-of-intelligence/kent-csi/vol4no1/html/v04i1a05p_0001.htm

5 University of Pennsylvania: *Social Control in the Psychological Experiment: Antisocial Behavior and Hypnosis*
http://www.psych.upenn.edu/history/orne/orneetal1965jpsp189200.html

6 University of Pennsylvania: *The Use and Misuse of Hypnosis in Court*
http://www.psych.upenn.edu/history/orne/orneijceh19794311341.html

7 University of Pennsylvania: *Hypnosis, Motivation and Compliance*
http://www.psych.upenn.edu/history/orne/orne1966ajp721726.html

8 APA PsycNET: *Behavioral Study of obedience.*
http://psycnet.apa.org/journals/abn/67/4/371/

9 spiritself.net: *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*
http://spiritself.net/pdf/The%20Search%20for%20the%20Manchurian%20Candidate.pdf

10 *Business Insider*: *One of psychology's most infamous experiments on the dark side of humanity is back under the microscope*
http://www.businessinsider.com/rethinking-one-of-psychologys-most-infamous-experiments-on-the-dark-side-of-humanity-2015-2

11 *Business Insider*: *One of psychology's most infamous experiments on the dark side of humanity is*

back under the microscope

http://www.businessinsider.com/rethinking-one-of-psychologys-most-infamous-experiments-on-the-dark-side-of-humanity-2015-2

12 *New York Times*: *Hypnotism as a Defense*

http://query.nytimes.com/mem/archive-free/pdf?res=9D0CEFD61339E033A2575BC0A9629C94649ED7CF

13 Google Books: *Brainwash: The Secret History of Mind Control*

https://books.google.com/books?id=bHgbCDuKhf0C&pg=PA147&lpg=PA147&dq=Bjorn+Nielsen+and+Palle+Hardrup&source=bl&ot

14 Central Intelligence Agency: *Hypnotism and Covert Operations*

http://www.foia.cia.gov/sites/default/files/document_conversions/89801/DOC_0000140404.pdf

15 The Black Vault: MKULTRA Collection: *DOC_0000190691*

http://documents.theblackvault.com/documents/mkultra/MKULTRA2/DOC_0000190691/

16 The Black Vault: MKULTRA Collection: *DOC_0000190527*

http://documents.theblackvault.com/documents/mkultra/MKULTRA2/DOC_0000190527/

17 mindspring.com: *Hypnosis Comes of Age*

http://www.mindspring.com/~txporter/scidig.htm

18 *Frontiers in Psychology*: *Fifty psychological and psychiatric terms to avoid: a list of inaccurate, misleading, misused, ambiguous, and logically confused words and phrases*

http://journal.frontiersin.org/article/10.3389/fpsyg.2015.01100/full

19 spiritself.net: *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*
http://spiritself.net/pdf/The%20Search%20for%20the%20Manchurian%20Candidate.pdf

20 spiritself.net: *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*
http://spiritself.net/pdf/The%20Search%20for%20the%20Manchurian%20Candidate.pdf

21 The Black Vault: MKULTRA Collection: *DOC_0000146348*
http://documents.theblackvault.com/documents/mkultra/MKULTRA1/DOC_0000146348/

22 The Black Vault: MKULTRA Collection: *DOC_0000190597*
http://documents.theblackvault.com/documents/mkultra/MKULTRA2/DOC_0000190597/

23 Wayback Machine: *Today's Zaman*: *Retired officer gets 7.5 years for hypnosis in interrogation*
https://web.archive.org/web/20141216180423/http://www.todayszaman.com/national_retired-officer-gets-75-years-for-hypnosis-in-interrogation_214647.html

24 *The Intercept*: *Former CIA Director Porter Goss Registers to Lobby for Turkey*
https://firstlook.org/theintercept/2015/05/08/former-cia-director-porter-goss-registers-lobby-turkey/

25 Amazon Web Services: *Report to the Special Committee of the Board of Directors of the American Psychological Association*
https://s3.amazonaws.com/s3.documentcloud.org/documents/2160985/report.pdf

26 Scribd: *Seton Hall Law Report Guantanamo-Americas Battle Lab 1-9-15*
https://www.scribd.com/doc/252185728/6/VI-APPENDICES

27 The Supreme Court of Ohio: *Lorain County Bar Association Legal Ethics and Grievance Committee v. Michael W. Fine, Esq.*

http://www.sconet.state.oh.us/pdf_viewer/pdf_viewer.aspx?pdf=757014.pdf

28 The Supreme Court of Ohio: *Lorain County Bar Association Legal Ethics and Grievance Committee v. Michael W. Fine, Esq.*

http://www.sconet.state.oh.us/pdf_viewer/pdf_viewer.aspx?pdf=757014.pdf

Chapter Four
The Raping, Murderous, Mind Reading, Sperm Collecting, ET-Human Hybrid Baby Snatchers, Act One

To their credit, some members of the UFO community discourage the use of hypnotic regression as an investigative tool for alleged alien abduction. The British UFO Research Association (BUFORA) enacted a moratorium on the procedure in 1988 that continues today. In Heather Dixon's article posted at the BUFORA website and titled *Alien Abduction, Hypnosis and Memory*, she reported the ban was pioneered by Jenny Randles and the BUFORA National Investigation Committee.(1)

Clinical hypnotherapist and psychotherapist Judy Jaafar apparently did not believe it should ever be lifted. Jaafar expressed support for the BUFORA moratorium during an interview Dixon conducted and included in her article.

Hypnosis is a powerful tool that can be dangerous if used irresponsibly, the therapist told Dixon. No matter what narrative a hypnosis subject might generate, Jaafar warned, it should be remembered that the capacity for imagination and fantasy is probably doubled or tripled during hypnotic states.

Dangers include experiencing emotional trauma related to hypnotically retrieved memories. That is the case irrespective of whether or not any of the induced imagery actually ever happened, Jaafar explained, adding that she had concern for the mental health of such hypnosis subjects for the rest of their lives. They've been hypnotized, so they really believe the resulting stories because they incorrectly interpret hypnosis to be like a truth drug, but, she emphasized, it certainly is not.

Nonetheless, anyone even mildly familiar with American investigators of

alleged alien abduction would be aware the use of hypnotic regression and related so-called memory enhancing techniques became and remain virtually standard procedure. Hypnosis has shared the alien abduction stage from the outset of the modern phenomenon, due to such circumstances as psychiatrist Dr. Benjamin Simon using it as a treatment for emotional trauma with now legendary alleged abductees Betty and Barney Hill. Doctors and investigators such as Leo Sprinkle continued and transitioned the activity into all out efforts to uncover what they suspected were suppressed memories of encounters with aliens.(2)

Despite all that has now been published by the professional research community on the lack of reliability of hypnosis as a memory retrieval tool, as well as the inherent dangers it presents to the hypnotized subject, it continues to be tolerated and promoted by numerous UFO researchers and organizations. Among them is the Mutual UFO Network and its Director of Abduction Research (also called the Director of Experiencer Research) and niece of the Hills, Kathleen Marden.(3) It should not surprise MUFON leadership that many people, myself included, have come to seriously question the validity of the organization's dedication to conducting scientific study as claimed in its mission statement. MUFON's general credibility isn't flying too high either, resulting from episodes of leadership turmoil and years of what many deem to be the support of extremely questionable activities.(4)

It could be well argued that the premature conclusions and unsubstantiated beliefs promoted by a majority of MUFON key personnel and the organization as a whole are much more of the problem in ufology than the solution. MUFON has responsibilities to publish credible information and make intentional efforts to avoid the promotion of inaccurate, sensational material. In those regards, MUFON has failed, particularly in its claim to conduct scientific study. The examples of such study that could be cited are embarrassingly minimal in comparison to the grandstanding and tabloid-like activities that chronically plague and primarily characterize the organization.

The late Budd Hopkins rode a wave of popularity to the forefront of ufology during the 1980's and 1990's. Hopkins played major roles in further popularizing the concepts of both alien abduction and hypnosis as an investigative tool. Much more is conclusively understood today, as well as more widely known and accepted, about the pitfalls of hypnotic regression

and the fallibility of memory.

Numerous investigators followed Hopkins' lead, receiving varying extents of fame and respect within the community. Individuals were hypnotizing self-described abductees far and wide. There were hypnotists offering services to UFO-related groups at regional levels, purported experts showcasing their techniques on international levels and all points in between. Some of the hypnotists were actually licensed and formally trained but many were not, including some of the most well known, such as Hopkins and his colleague David Jacobs.

It was a thing but, even then, Hopkins' methodologies and conclusions were competently challenged. In 1993 writer/researcher George P. Hansen, along with co-authors Joseph J. Stefula and Richard D. Butler, published a thorough and sobering review of a high profile Hopkins case. *A Critique of Budd Hopkins' Case of the UFO Abduction of Linda Napolitano* continues today to be an important contribution to the genre and a valuable resource.(5)

Kevin McClure provided reasonable critical perspectives of Hopkins' methodologies via *Magonia*, including a 1997 article in which he questioned the judgment of such investigators as Hopkins and Jacobs.(6) McClure observed in Hopkins' statements that, for the experienced UFO abduction investigator, bizarre details were the mark of truth rather than signs of fiction.

“My view,” McClure wrote, “is that it is time for ufology to acknowledge that some of its leading figures are now lost so deep in their beliefs and convictions that they may, unavoidably, present a danger to those who approach them for help.”

Indeed. Valid arguments could be and have been well made.

We might also consider the likelihood that researchers who supported alien abduction as a literal occurrence came to rely upon hypnosis as a preferred investigative technique for the primary reason it offered the best chance for a steady supply of otherwise threadbare supporting evidence. And supply them it did. Book after book, movies, television appearances, speaking engagements and more resulted from instances of hypnotic regression used to retrieve so-called suppressed memories of alien abductions. In addition to the perceived advantages to the investigators of compiling an abundance of otherwise scant testimony and supposed

evidence, it was also relatively easy, at least for the hypnotists. Not so much for some of the traumatized witnesses, as McClure observed.

This is not to suggest that reports of the strange do not occur without the aid of hypnosis. They do, but the significance can hardly be overemphasized that the use of hypnotic regression played a key role in the rise of the alien abduction narrative, the resulting imagery it seeded into pop culture and the subsequent alien-related belief systems passionately embraced by the public.

As in the case of MUFON and its personnel, the ufology hypnotic regression paradigm resisted change and largely failed to revise its positions to keep up with the times. Increased understandings provided by the scientific community stood in direct contradiction, yet the alien abduction hypnosis convoy rolled on. The extents some hypnosis advocates held fast to their seeming confidence in the practice were truly amazing in their abilities to ignore the apparent.

In recent years I have witnessed an entire meeting room full of attendees at a regional MUFON gathering collectively led through hypnotic exercises designed to assist them in recalling episodes of alien-related experiences. Group hypnotic regression.

However and as previously suggested, there were exceptions. In 2010 I heard about a couple guys making some noise of the less commonly heard variety.

The Emma Woods Case

Jeremy Vaeni and Jeff Ritzmann were hosting a podcast, *Paratopia*, in which they explored paranormal-related topics and experiences of high strangeness, including their own. In addition to discussing their experiences and interviewing various guests about things that go bump in the night, these guys were shining the light of critical inquiry on the use of hypnotic regression as an investigative tool – and in a big way.

They thoroughly explored a series of events that became a major controversy, the actions of Dr. David M. Jacobs and his handling of the Emma Woods case. Vaeni and Ritzmann picked up the trail initially forged

by Kim Carlsberg, who publicly expressed her opposition to Jacobs' actions. The podcasting duo subsequently conducted several relevant interviews and Vaeni additionally published an essay on the case in *UFO Magazine*. Ritzmann, who had long questioned the validity of hypnosis as an investigative tool, contacted Dr. Scott Lilienfeld, a skeptical psychology professor at Emory University, and persuaded him to accept an invitation to be a guest on *Paratopia* and discuss hypnotic regression. I point these circumstances out for a number of reasons.

Entire books could be written on the Woods/Jacobs saga, and information provided by such qualified experts as Dr. Lilienfeld was and continues to be extremely relevant to the genre. Moreover, these were not isolated incidents on the part of Vaeni and Ritzmann, but pretty much their regular podcast beat.

Also important, in my opinion, was that Vaeni and Ritzmann demonstrated a willingness to enroll the assistance of academia and the skeptical community in addressing relevant issues, at least to the extents genuineness was reciprocated. That was outside the box of what we typically saw experiencers and paranormal-podcast hosts presenting. It built bridges, deconstructed the often oversimplified stereotypes of “skeptics and believers,” and encouraged community members to seek factual, credible information rather than lobby for favorite yet unsubstantiated conclusions. The work of Vaeni and Ritzmann left no doubt as to how disappointingly far investigation of alleged alien abduction had veered into the dangerous realms of absurdity and delusion, largely at the expense of exploited witnesses and a misinformed public.

In December, 2010, *UFO Magazine* published Jeremy Vaeni's piece, *Aliens vs. Predator: The Incredible Visitations at Emma Woods*.(7) The article was an effective summary of an absolutely mind boggling chain of absurd assertions and potentially harmful activities on the part of David Jacobs, apparently supposed to have something to do, Jacobs would have us believe, with investigating alien abduction. Vaeni provided readers a revealing look into a witness-investigator relationship and how it progressed. Specifically, the woman using the pseudonym Emma Woods, a self-described experiencer of paranormal phenomena, and Jacobs, a well known investigator of alleged alien abduction, writer and (now retired) associate professor of

history at Temple University. If there is a poster child case for subjecting abduction-researchers to more accountability and critical review, this may very well be it. Trouble is, its disturbing nature may be much more common than we are typically led to believe.

Woods and Jacobs first spoke by telephone in 2002. By 2007, Vaeni explained, Emma severed the relationship. Occurrences during the five years included dozens of hypnosis sessions by international telephone, as Woods resided in a nation located in the Pacific region.

Emma and I conducted an email exchange during April, 2015, in which I informed her that I wished to obtain comments for inclusion in this book, to which she agreed. Among her statements were recollections about her initial interactions with investigators of alleged alien abduction.

“Hopkins told me I was probably an abductee. He sent me a long 18-page questionnaire, containing 608 questions, to fill out and return to him. He said the results indicated I was being abducted by aliens,” Emma wrote, rather incredibly adding, “but that the only way I could know for sure was if I had hypnosis.”

The sessions Woods later participated in with David Jacobs lasted hours at a time, sometimes surpassing the six hour mark, arguably resembling brainwashing more than memory retrieval, much less practical investigation. During one long distance hypnosis session, Jacobs unbelievably suggested to Woods that she suffered from multiple personality disorder (MPD).(8) He added that she should tell people he was investigating MPD, not alien abduction, when they asked. But not really. Well, sort of.

Jacobs apparently tried to lead Woods to believe he made the suggestion because evil ET-human hybrids could read Emma's mind during their episodes of abuse with her, so, when they did, he wanted them to be deceived into thinking Jacobs was actually investigating MPD, not alien abduction. If the ruse catastrophically proved unsuccessful, the hybrids were going to kill Jacobs to keep him from revealing their heinous plot of global dominance. Therefore, he seemed to imply, the more she believed and told people she had MPD, the better. Ingenious, wasn't it?

Please allow me to be clear here: A man employed at the time as a Temple University history professor would have us believe that he literally

considered himself in a deadly game of cat and mouse with ET-human hybrids wishing to kill him, and the mental health and community status of Emma Woods were apparently expendable due to the extreme importance and urgency of the situation. He was saving the future of mankind when he wasn't busy at Temple. Emma explained to me in an April, 2015, email that Jacobs suggested she write her emails to him as though she believed she had MPD and that Jacobs was an expert on the disorder.

That eyebrow-raising circumstance aside, I'm not at all clear on how Jacobs could have perceived his investigations of the hybrids were otherwise not known to the public, considering he published books and regularly lectured about the alien threat and the hybrid menace. It was his claim to fame. It's not as if the world's knowledge of the concept hinged upon Emma disclosing it, but we'll just keep moving.

Instant Messages

Those hybrids, according to Jacobs, were delivering threats to him, among other ways, via instant messages sent from the computer of “Elizabeth,” another of the many individuals he hypnotized and identified as an alien abductee. Jacobs would receive messages allegedly from malevolent hybrids sent from the computer of Elizabeth, and he claimed he believed those messages to indeed be composed and sent by hybrids, not by Elizabeth or someone with access to her computer.

Jacobs was purportedly convinced of the dire danger of the situation and authenticity of the messages for reasons such as those he stated to me during a 2012 interview contained in a three-part post at my blog, *The UFO Trail*, and titled, *The Bizarre World of Doctor David Jacobs: An Interview and Review*. He explained that the electronic messages consisted of “typical hybrid discussion, having heard hundreds and hundreds of hybrid discussions from abductees.”(9)

That's kind of an odd rack to hang one's hat on to assess the validity of alleged reality-shifting communications and go all Estabrooks on somebody, but close enough for horseshoes and ufology, some seemed to think. Jacobs further asserted during the interview that receiving threatening messages

from hybrids was one of the scariest things that ever happened to him, for what that's worth.

Suffice it to say I can think of an explanation or two substantially more likely for the origin of the alleged messages than the one the author and historian claimed to believe. When I browse my inbox, I figure the messages originated from human beings, pretty much no matter how they're worded. One way or the other, David Jacobs asserted that the explanation for why he hypnotically suggested to Woods that she suffered from a serious mental disorder, and for her to tell people her MPD was the reason for his interest in her when they asked, as well as reportedly requested she compose emails to him as if she believed she suffered from MPD, was that he wanted hybrids to incorrectly think so. Please allow me to emphasize, just for the record, Dr. David Jacobs was a historian, not a medical doctor, psychologist or mental health therapist.

Disturbing Audio Recordings

I'm sorry to say there is much more. Circumstances well documented via audio recordings published by Woods included Jacobs suggesting to Emma that she wear a chastity belt.

"They have these sex shops, ya know," Jacobs can be heard explaining to Woods on the audio recording of the hypnosis session, "and I went into one that specialized in bondage dominance, a place that I frequented quite often." (10)

After introducing the idea during the session that she wear a chastity device, Jacobs informed her he was willing to send her one, given his knowledge of them. The chastity belt suggestion was supposedly also because of the hybrids. The device might slow down their repeated sexual assaults and put a "kink" in their plans, he explained. Yeah, that's a literal quote from the audio recording. If you're wondering, both Jacobs and Woods were aware the interactions were recorded.

In another instance, Jacobs acknowledged he was leading Woods during one of the hypnosis sessions.(11) The resulting audio recording demonstrated that Jacobs constructed, virtually independently of Woods' statements, an

abduction scenario in which he informed her she was the “facilitator of sperm collection.”

Jacobs informed Woods, “I know that – that I'm - once again I'm, I'm leading you here so, so you have to be careful now, and I, I understand I'm leading you, and you should understand that too. Okay, now I'm going to ask you a series of questions here and when these – when, when - you answer these questions, when you understand what's happening here, you will - it's not that there's going to be a revelation, but you're going to understand what's going on here and it's not what ya think. How's that for something odd?”

Jacobs then described to Woods a procedure in which a male fellow abductee was placed on top of her to do “his business.” Jacobs suggested she experienced just such a scenario. Before the man ejaculated, Jacobs detailed, “they pull him off and they collect the sperm in a receptacle.” It had been happening to the man all his life, Jacobs continued, incredibly concluding, “and they do this every single time that this event happens.” Not only did Jacobs apparently view himself entitled to inform Woods this happened to her, but he seemed to be suggesting it was happening repeatedly to both her and some man that he otherwise had no reasons to suppose so much as existed.

Please allow me to reiterate that those assertions were stated to Woods by David Jacobs during long distance telephone hypnosis sessions and as his descriptions of what she had experienced. He periodically asked her to confirm his statements, to which Woods would make replies such as she did not have a strong visual sense of the situation and the scenario might be wrong. Jacobs nonetheless continued the leading narrative. Such sessions sometimes went on for hours upon hours.

Over time, an ongoing and evolving story line was built almost entirely from hypnotic regression and consisting of hybrids sexually abusing Woods on a regular basis. Perhaps one of the most concerning of the many disturbing audio recordings to emerge from the train wreck was one in which Jacobs suggested Woods mail him her underpants. The episode could particularly have been interpreted as questionable not just because Jacobs inquired about Emma's unwashed underpants, which he did, or even that he suggested she mail them to him, which he also did, but that he specifically instructed she do

so “automatically” and “without even thinking about it,” adding, “and don't think about it afterwards either.”(12)

Audio tape of the hypnosis session revealed exploration of yet another of the many envisioned hybrid sexual assaults on Woods, and the following statements:

“Were you wearing underpants?” Jacobs asked.

“Yeah,” Woods replied.

“Uhm, did you wash the underpants?”

“Hmm, prob - probably, yeah.”

“Even though it was yesterday?”

“I might not have. I'll go and look in the laundry. But I won't know which ones. Uhm, I can have a look.”

“Have a look. Put it in a plastic bag, if you find the ones...”

Minutes later during the same recorded hypnosis session, Jacobs instructed, "Well, if you can dig up the underpants, without even thinking about it, just put 'em in a plastic bag, put 'em in an envelope, then just send 'em off to me. Totally, greatly appreciate it. Do not even think about it. Just do it automatically. No fuss, no muss and don't think about it afterwards either."

I asked Emma in April, 2015, if she had any comments on the above incident and quote.

“I did recall it at the time, but forgot it later,” she replied. “I think that was probably because of the amnesia blocks. I forgot whole chunks of my hypnosis, and just remember parts of them. The underwear suggestions were in the parts that I lost memory of.”

Amnesia Blocks

Emma provided a recording of a session with Jacobs in which he conducted such an “amnesia block” as she described.

“I have attached an audio clip of one of the amnesia blocks Dr. Jacobs

implanted, in case it is helpful," she wrote. "It was at the end of my thirty-first hypnosis session, which took place on August 4, 2006."

I downloaded and played the file, in which Jacobs instructed, "I want you to become very, very relaxed. Now this is a session that I want you to be able to just put into a corner of your mind - in sort of a, a vault-like structure nobody can get into - behind a brick wall that is totally inaccessible to anyone. The vault is shut tight. Your memories are in there. You can access them a little bit when you want in the future, but the point right now is nobody will know that you remembered this. Nobody can get to that part of your mind that is sealed. This is your private part of your mind. No one can access it. If someone tries, even if they try hard, even if they're powerful, it will not matter because the harder they try, the more they will not be able to access it, the dimmer it gets, the smaller it gets, the tighter it gets. They will not know that you have remembered this. They will not know. You will not allow it. This is your mind. They will not be able to access it. It is too far out of reach for them – locked in that vault, behind that brick wall. No matter what they do, they will not be able to get to it. You are strong. You will be able to keep it from them.

"Now I'll bring you out of this again. Five, coming out of this..."

Wow. What the hell's that all about?

Emma explained that particular August, 2006, hypnosis session included three separate hypnotic regressions. Jacobs and Emma explored circumstances she thought at the time supported the ongoing hybrid narrative but would later suspect otherwise.

"What is creepy about it," Emma explained further about the memory block, "is that Dr. Jacobs seems to be not only blocking my own memories (he says I can access the memories a little bit in the future), but that he seems to be trying to seal my memory of what happened during the hypnosis session in a corner of my mind so that no one else can access it. He says that even if they are powerful, they will not be able to access it."

Concerning the underpants episode, Emma described her memories around it as very fragmentary, adding, "One thing I do know is that Jacobs did not tell me in advance that he was going to put hypnotic suggestions in my mind to send him my underpants. My own way of collecting a sample

would be to use a cotton tip, bag it, and send it, and I do remember talking to him about that. The whole underpants thing came from him.

“Now I know that you can get DNA to test from multiple sources. There is absolutely no need for women's underpants, and I am sure Dr. Jacobs knows that. In hindsight, I think that Dr. Jacobs asking me under hypnosis to send him my underpants and not to think about it is very unethical. Even if it was the only way to get DNA samples, the fact he did that using hypnosis is way out of line.”

If Jacobs sincerely believed any such hybrid beings were regularly entering the home of Woods, then forensic samples could have been collected any number of ways on any number of occasions - other than via underpants. The opportunities would have been frequent and plentiful. It is difficult to envision Jacobs prioritized collecting physical evidence or even sincerely believed hybrids were regularly entering the home of Woods, considering he apparently made no serious efforts to visit the scene or dispatch qualified personnel to investigate the site.

More importantly, we might consider how we would realistically expect an individual to behave and display concern for a person's safety if they truly believed the person was suffering from repeated sexual assault committed by hybrids, humans or, for that matter, anything else. Suffice it to say protocol for providing competent support for victims of sexual abuse does not include discussion of frequenting sex shops and extending offers of mailing chastity belts. Emma explained that she did not begin to fully grasp the extents of some of the circumstances until well after the fact and while reviewing the recordings.

“In regard to the amnesia blocks,” she wrote, “that was something I only came to know about some time after I stopped having hypnosis. I was listening to my hypnosis sessions for my complaint with the OHRP [Office for Human Research Protections], and that was when I heard them and realized what had happened.”

What did Emma feel were some of the most significant and/or concerning circumstances of memory loss?

“When I realized that I had parts of my memory wiped, I was shocked,” she replied. “I had no memory that he had suggested to me under hypnosis

that I should wear a chastity belt. I am not sure how long after that hypnosis session it was before I lost the memory, but by the time that I ended my association with him I had no conscious awareness of it."

Emma continued, "I was shocked to the core when I heard the tape of Dr. Jacobs putting the hypnotic suggestions in my mind that I had MPD. I had remembered that he had told me he was using the MPD tactic on Elizabeth, and that he had asked me to write my emails to him as though I had MPD. However, I had absolutely no memory of the MPD hypnotic suggestions before then."

She concluded, "It was disconcerting to realize that important things that I absolutely wanted to know about were hidden from me, to the extent that it even affected my ability to defend myself from him."

Woods confronted Jacobs in 2007 about numerous discrepancies in his actions and those of Elizabeth, the alleged abductee whose computer was purportedly used repeatedly by malevolent hybrids to access the Internet and send hostile instant messages. Woods informed Jacobs she had become increasingly aware the many complex and conspiratorial stories did not make sense, and that there seemed to be some foxes in the hen house. Jacobs subsequently threatened Woods with various detrimental consequences, which, according to the audio tape, included suggesting he was viewed as more credible than she, a statement Woods interpreted to imply she should consider that she would be on the losing side of any trial in the court of public opinion which might ensue.(13) Jacobs apparently also threatened to reveal Woods' identity if she did not keep quiet.

Emma explained, "He threatened to reveal my identity if I made public the content of a warning he told me he had received from the hybrid named 'Jay', via instant messenger, saying that it was extremely dangerous for him to work with me as there were hybrids around me who were very concerned about security. He had read me the transcript of the IM over the phone, and later threatened to reveal my identity if I made that public."

Spoiler alert: Emma did not keep quiet. Neither did a lot of other people.

---

1 British UFO Research Association: *Alien Abduction, Hypnosis and Memory*

http://www.bufora.org.uk/Hypnosis-Article.php

2 Project 1947: *Statement by Dr. R. Leo Sprinkle, Some Uses of Hypnosis in UFO Research*
http://www.project1947.com/shg/symposium/sprinkle.html

3 Kathleen Marden UFO: *A Primer on Hypnosis*
http://www.kathleen-marden.com/a-primer-on-hypnosis.php

4 *The UFO Trail*: *MUFON, Science and Deception, Part One*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2013/07/mufon-science-and-deception-part-one.html

5 tricksterbook.com: *A Critique of Budd Hopkins' Case of the UFO Abduction of Linda Napolitano*
http://www.tricksterbook.com/ArticlesOnline/LindaCortileCase.htm

6 *Magonia*: *Abduction Watch 4*
http://magonia.haaan.com/1997/abduction-watch-4/

7 *Emma Woods Files*: *UFO Magazine*: *Aliens vs. Predator: The Incredible Visitations at Emma Woods*
https://emmawoodsfiles.files.wordpress.com/2014/11/ufo-magazine-jeremy-vaeni-david-jacobs-emma-woods.pdf

8 *Emma Woods Files*: *Hypnotic Suggestions of Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD)*
http://emmawoodsfiles.com/

9 *The UFO Trail*: *The Bizarre World of Doctor David Jacobs: An Interview and Review, Part One of Three*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2012/04/bizarre-world-of-doctor-david-jacobs.html

10 *The UFO Trail*: *The Woods/Jacobs Tapes and the 'Oral History' Falsehood*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2014/02/the-woodsjacobs-tapes-and-oral-history.html

11 *The UFO Trail*: *The Woods/Jacobs Tapes and the 'Oral History' Falsehood*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2014/02/the-woodsjacobs-tapes-and-oral-history.html

12 *The UFO Trail*: *The Woods/Jacobs Tapes and the 'Oral History' Falsehood*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2014/02/the-woodsjacobs-tapes-and-oral-history.html

13 *Emma Woods Files*: *Dr. David M. Jacobs and Threats*
https://emmawoodsfiles.files.wordpress.com/2014/11/pnw020414kgra-paranormal-waypoint-abduction-regression-dangers.mp3

Chapter Five
The Raping, Murderous, Mind Reading, Sperm Collecting,

ET-Human Hybrid Baby Snatchers, Act Two

Emma Woods filed a formal complaint to David Jacobs' then-employer, Temple University, in 2008. She followed that up with a complaint to the Office for Human Research Protections in 2009.

Emma explained in an April, 2015, email that Temple responded that they had conducted a thorough investigation. She questioned the statement given the fact she was not contacted prior to the notice, which included such additional statements as Jacobs had no book forthcoming and her withdrawal of permission to use her material would be honored. Temple simply did not address significant portions of her complaint, Emma stated.

Soon after receiving the response from Temple, Woods informed the OHRP that she felt Temple failed to investigate the matter properly. Temple subsequently defended its stance and relative lack of action, Woods explained, by telling the OHRP that it could not investigate the situation, which clearly contradicted its earlier statement of having thoroughly done so. Temple asserted to the OHRP that Jacobs was not conducting research, but collecting oral histories instead, which exempted his activities from investigation by either the university or the OHRP. The False Memory Syndrome Foundation similarly reported in a 2011 newsletter that Temple played the oral history card, adding that, whether or not such terminology was applicable, “the fundamental issue of the use of hypnosis in alien abduction research has definitely been brought to light.”(1)

Jeremy Vaeni and co-host Jeff Ritzmann covered Emma's case extensively on their podcast, *Paratopia*. In 2010 when *UFO Magazine* released the issue containing Vaeni's related article, then-publisher William J. “Bill” Birnes and writer Alfred Lehmberg also contributed pieces on the case. Bill and his wife, Nancy Hayfield Birnes, hosted Emma and addressed the circumstances on many episodes of their popular show, *Future Theater*.

Vaeni attempted to obtain statements from Temple officials while composing his 2010 *UFO Magazine* article. Richard Throm of the Temple

Institutional Review Board, who had previously corresponded with Woods, declined to comment and directed Vaeni to contact the public relations department. Having done so, a university representative initially replied to Vaeni that they would look into the situation but made no further response.

If it is any consolation to Emma Woods, I think it is reasonable to suspect her complaints may have impacted the relationship between David Jacobs and Temple University more detrimentally than the historian and his employer ever publicly acknowledged. It's difficult to envision a scenario in which the saga enhanced his career.

Obviously, underpants are not oral history. Neither are physical samples which Jacobs claimed to have collected and had analyzed when he and I spoke during the previously referenced 2012 interview.(2) The author and historian described, for instance, collections of material he submitted to a lab in New York. Another time, Jacobs stated, he facilitated collection of samples for a television show. Our specific exchange, beginning with statements from Jacobs and as published in the interview:

“I have taken material for analysis to various DNA testing places. They had negative results. There wasn't enough of it or they couldn't tell what it was – that sort of thing.”

“Are these tests available for the public to review?”

“Not yet.”

“Will they be?”

“I don't know. One I did many years ago at a local lab in Delaware. Another one was done by American Testing Institute in New York City – American Chemical? I can't remember the name of it now. That was also many years ago – about brown stains that people have; that's routinely there.

“I had another one done for a TV show and they didn't know what the heck it was. They just sort of laughed about it and I got to look at those reports.

“Maybe one day I'll put them on the Internet. I don't know, but I'm still old school. It never occurs to me to put things on the Internet, but that's an idea 'cause they're just sitting in my files.”

All of the tests apparently failed to show anything of interest, yet even

fully aware of the lack of supporting physical evidence and finding himself unable to obtain such evidence, Jacobs neglected to revise his hypotheses or curb his fantastic claims. He also neglected to make details of the tests available for public review. The testing of such samples clearly involved more than simple collection of oral histories, as Temple reportedly chose to frame Jacobs' activities. One might also question what hours upon hours of extremely questionable hypnosis sessions conducted by telephone had to do with collecting oral histories.

Upon initially hearing about Emma's plight, many people expressed concerns, ranging from disappointment to disgust and outrage about the unprofessional nature of Jacobs' behavior. The woman was, by any definition, a vulnerable research subject - and under hypnosis, no less. Was this what was being peddled to the publishing houses, television producers, public at large and even alleged abductees themselves as investigation of alien abduction?

Yet other people defended Jacobs, and, perhaps more aptly stated in a majority of circumstances, the dogma he represented by association. Irrational arguments were made in support of Jacobs, hypnosis as a memory enhancer, and the concepts of alien abduction and hybrid breeding programs to the points of fanaticism. Still are.

Emma Woods was defamed and mistreated in many venues of ufology. She and some others who supported her right to discuss her years as Jacobs' research subject were banned from participating on various e-lists and message boards. Censorship was practiced on multiple occasions.

Writer/researcher Gary Haden offered thorough accounts and thought provocative perspectives of Emma's story at his former blog, *Speculative Realms*. Learn more about Haden's blog posts, as well as the many individuals who conducted activism related to the Woods case, at Emma's ever expanding website, emmawoodsfiles.com.

Brian Reed

Remember “Elizabeth,” the woman whose computer was supposedly where malevolent hybrids were accessing the Internet and trolling David

Jacobs? Well, as it turned out, a young man using the pseudonym Brian Reed came forward and stated he was also sent messages alleged to have been composed by hybrids at Elizabeth's place. She was apparently residing in a virtual hybrid cybercafe.

In December, 2010, Jeremy Vaeni and Jeff Ritzmann published a podcast interview with Brian Reed.(3) A little background on Brian:

His mother was a long time research subject and associate of David Jacobs. She was featured as an abductee in Jacobs' published material. Brian was raised within a lifestyle conducive to the genre, including, he explained, appearing on television when he was a child. He knew Jacobs, Elizabeth and the related players. Basically, Brian Reed takes us into the second generation of the Jacobs entourage.

The young man interpreted himself to be an abductee, or at the least an experiencer of high strangeness, since early in his life, and let's just say the exploration of alternative perspectives weren't likely to have been encouraged a whole, whole lot. To his profound credit, Brian apparently managed to apply some critical thinking in spite of his personal conditioning and the manners he described the twice-his-age Elizabeth to have attempted to influence him.

Before we move on to that, I would like to give kudos to Jer and the Jeff, as Vaeni and Ritzmann were known to their listeners. The Reed interview not only vindicated Emma Woods, but the podcasters did an outstanding job of interacting with Reed. While Brian laid events on them of absolutely jawdropping absurdity regularly taking place within Camp Jacobs, Jer and Jeff maintained their composure while the 20-something year old spoke out on how he came to question the circumstances. At one point, Vaeni assured Reed that he was of the thinking, given the typical extents of indoctrination into such beliefs and resulting lifestyles, it was amazing that anyone ever breaks out of it, not that they stay in it. I would very much agree with Vaeni's perspective on that.

Vaeni asked Brian what he thought when he first heard about hybrid instant messages. Brian replied that he knew Dr. Jacobs as one of the leading researchers on UFOs and the phenomenon, and trusted Jacobs' opinion more than his own.

“I'm embarrassed to say that I actually believed him for a bit,” Brian explained about Jacobs and the hybrid instant messages. “I'm embarrassed to say it, but it's true.”

Brian interpreted himself to have experienced some strange occurrences in his life, and his possible relation to alleged alien abduction was implied via his mother's perceived involvement. He was subsequently hypnotized five times by Jacobs, Brian explained, in 2007 at the age of 21.

Soon afterward, Brian stated, Jacobs indicated he would cease hypnotizing both Brian and Elizabeth. Reasons included incredibly convoluted notions related to hybrids disapproving of Jacobs' research and his relationships with alleged abductees, as well as Jacobs' supposed plans to outsmart the hybrids. Jacobs' lack of hypnosis sessions with Brian and Elizabeth seemed in 2007 to initially draw the two together to continue their pursuit of the topic and, in effect, the hybrids.

“At what point did you stop trusting him or stop trusting Elizabeth?” Vaeni asked Brian during the 2010 interview.

“This is very complicated,” Brian replied, “but I'll try and explain it the best I can. Okay, so, anyway, I was working with Elizabeth. We were doing IM hypnosis sessions, which I didn't like at first either, uhm, but basically whenever I talked to -”

“Wait, wait, wait, wait,” Vaeni interjected. “You were doing *instant message* hypnosis sessions?”

“Yes, that's what Dr. Jacobs was doing with, with Elizabeth, and so I -”

“So not even just – not *telephone* hypnosis?”

“No, I – she, she was the only person I ever did that with and, and it didn't last very long...”

“Well, wait a second, maybe we're missing something here,” Vaeni continued. “When you say that you did it, you mean that you performed it on Elizabeth?”

“Right.”

“Uh, who trained you to do hypnosis?”

“Uhm, I wasn't certified to do it, I just – it was - kind of picked it up from

what I learned from, from Dr. Jacobs, and I'd, I'd done a lot of reading on it..."

"Did you, did you tell him that you were doing this?"

"He knew."

"And he was cool with it?"

"He was just, he was just happy to not have to deal with her hybrids."

"Okay, alright, so, so – huh. How does one *do* hypnosis through instant message?"

"Well, I'd, I had been sent by Elizabeth some, some, some copies of, of ones that she did with Dr. Jacobs, and it was pretty much the, the same type of deal. Uhm, basically just, just being typed out."

Brian went on to explain that he did some 18 such sessions with Elizabeth in 2007. The sessions would last for hours, as did telephone conversations between the two.

His trust for Elizabeth began to seriously unravel, Brian explained, when the "hybrid chats" which had occurred with Jacobs began to arise with him as well, and the content became increasingly ridiculous. It seems Elizabeth would allegedly fall under the control of the hybrids, leaving them to IM with Brian, who would exchange questions and answers with the unwelcome visitors. Elizabeth was supposedly rendered passive and without conscious recall of the occurrences. Essentially, Brian was supposed to accept that hybrids were storming the castle while he happened to have been conducting IM hypnosis with the woman, if not *because* he was doing so, and the hybrids were threatened that their plots and existence were becoming more widely known, all while Elizabeth would later be like, "What happened?". Brian told Vaeni and Ritzmann that he strongly urged Elizabeth to use a web cam, which she always refused to do for one reason or another.

During interactions that did not allegedly involve hybrids, Elizabeth would apparently encourage Brian to use a pseudonym when IM'ing with the hybrids for reasons, according to Brian, she suggested included Brian's personal safety. Commenting on such hidden identities and the many aliases recommended and employed, Emma explained that Brian pretended to the alleged hybrids to be a doctor who lived in Austria.

“This came about because Dr. Jacobs had done a similar thing,” Emma continued. “Dr. Jacobs pretended to be numerous other people to the hybrids, including a female expert in MPD called Aloha Norton. He also used aliases when communicating with Elizabeth and me, and asked us to use the aliases when communicating with him, for when the aliens and hybrids read our minds. These aliases included him being someone called Lucille Scott, David Jacobsen and so on. He also wrote emails to us in code, and asked us to do the same thing. So Brian pretending to be a different person was based on that precedent from Dr. Jacobs.”

Oral history collection at its finest.

Brian eventually told Elizabeth he was not going to play her game anymore. He also informed Jacobs of his certainty Elizabeth was insincere and deceptive. Brian indicated to Vaeni and Ritzmann that he was not satisfied with Jacobs' responses to the situation, who, in spite of the circumstances Brian brought to his attention, took a stance of supporting Elizabeth. Jacobs clung to the hybrid narrative while condemning Woods and those who questioned the motives behind what had clearly become a shockingly unreasonable chain of events on several levels.

As a matter of fact, during my 2012 interview with Jacobs, the one in which he assured me he sincerely believed himself to have been sent threatening messages from ET-human hybrids at Elizabeth's computer, he asserted to me that the alleged alien abductee known as Elizabeth was “wonderful and she's great, and she's never ever, ever, ever lied to me in any conceivable way.”(4) Brian Reed would obviously challenge those assessments.

It was such circumstances that led Reed to seek Woods. Brian explained to Vaeni and Ritzmann that he felt Emma was in a unique position to understand what he had been through and how he felt about it. Reed explained that Camp Jacobs discouraged him from interacting with Woods and tried to keep him from doing so, but he nonetheless proceeded and worked it out on his own. He subsequently chose to share what he had observed had taken place not only with Emma, but publicly as well.

“I just want to tell the truth,” Brian explained. “I just want to say this is what happened.”

Vaeni and Ritzmann were not unreasonably judgmental of Reed about the unusual lifestyle of which he became accustomed. There are indeed pockets of the UFO community in which participants subscribe to what we might otherwise term fanatical points of view, yet those beliefs are encouraged and accepted as daily ways of life in certain circles. Commenting on the related dynamics, Brian acknowledged that he considered the dramatic circumstances with Elizabeth to have been exciting and interesting at the time.

Ritzmann asked Reed about being involved in the throws of obsessive and "X-Files-ish" behavior, to which Reed explained, "That's why I had wanted her to do the web cam so bad – because I wanted that confirmation – because I wanted to believe that it was real. I mean, 'cause it - what a God awful waste of time if it wasn't, you know, and you know what I mean? And it wasn't a waste of time, but, I mean, I wanted to believe it was real because if it was, then what I was doing was extraordinary. If it wasn't, I was just a fool.

"And, and so I, I, I guess part of it was that I, I not, not so much that I trusted her - but I guess part of it too was that I *wanted* it to be real, and I, I, I hated to think about the fact that a, a friend would, would pull something like that on me."

One interpretation could certainly be that Brian Reed was a brave young man for sharing his story. As Vaeni and Ritzmann suggested, many people submersed in the narrative and resulting lifestyle never find the means and the courage to come up for air.

Missed Opportunities and Impeding All Progress

It could be reiterated at this point that Jeremy Vaeni and Jeff Ritzmann are not only willing to entertain reports of high strangeness, but believe themselves to have experienced such circumstances. It should equally be considered, and as demonstrated by the two, that a willingness to do so does not necessarily have to equate to blind belief in every unsupported alien-related story offered up by authors who describe themselves as investigators.

Other contacts Vaeni and Ritzmann developed included Dr. Tyler

Kokjohn, a microbiologist, professional researcher and university professor. Dr. Kokjohn is one of the more objective individuals and skilled communicators to make the UFO scene in recent memory. He was subsequently well received by several podcasters and consulted by numerous bloggers on a variety of issues. He authored many articles on topics related to the Woods case, alleged alien abduction and alleged ET-human hybrids.

A great deal of relevant content could be presented about the work produced by virtually any of the previously mentioned activists, and that certainly includes Tyler Kokjohn. He warned the UFO community, for example, that investigators' hypotheses should be tested and evolve accordingly, not chronically remain stagnant and unchallenged.(5) Such tests could include the use of emerging genetic analysis technologies that could swiftly and cost effectively identify alleged genomic adulterations.

Nonetheless, opportunities for such testing appears to be of minimal interest to investigators who would potentially benefit enormously from the results. It seems reasonable to suspect such investigators failed to foresee and were unprepared for the current era in which scientific advances would allow them to actually validate or negate their fantastic claims. Rather than eagerly seek the potential validation of hypotheses, investigators often seem instead to fear those very tests and what the results would actually indicate.

Addressing the alleged disappearing fetus syndrome of abduction lore, Kokjohn explained that, during gestation, mother and fetus exchange cells which may remain for years or even decades after birth or termination of pregnancy.(6) Powerful genetic analysis methods now allow examination of such circumstances via a simple blood draw from the mother. This would obviously enable investigators claiming to know such women, as well as those who claim to have experienced such occurrences, to attempt to obtain supporting physical evidence. It is reasonable to critically question their apparent collective lack of interest.

Podcaster and former publisher of *UFO Magazine* Don Ecker addressed the topic of alleged missing pregnancies during an online discussion in early 2011.(7) He explained that during the 1990's he and his wife knew a practicing gynecologist, Dr. Richard Neal. The doctor was very familiar with the work of Hopkins and Jacobs, Ecker indicated, including the alleged

missing fetus syndrome. The gynecologist wanted to try to scientifically establish the extents of validity of the reported circumstances. He requested that Ecker and his wife introduce him to Hopkins and Jacobs, which they did. Explaining what happened next, Ecker wrote:

> After the intro Neal told Hopkins and Jacobs that what he wanted to do was to interface with "abductees" that Hopkins and Jacobs were working with, that claimed having been pregnant and then the fetus disappeared. Neal wanted to speak and share information with the abductees [*sic*] doctors of record. The bottom line? (and I am not suggesting anything beyond what I am saying here...) neither Hopkins nor Jacobs had any interest in working with Neal nor introducing him to any of these abductees.

Ufology hypnotists and investigators continue to regularly make claims that have long since worn old in their simultaneous sensational content and complete lack of supporting physical evidence. In 2013 I emailed Barbara Lamb and inquired about her pending MUFON appearance in which she was scheduled to discuss her claim that “ET-human hybrids are real and they are here.”(8) According to a series of MUFON promotional emails that were circulating and contained the assertion, Lamb had hypnotically regressed over 900 people, some of which, with her “help,” discovered themselves to be ET-human hybrids.

When asked via email if medical tests were conducted by qualified third parties on such alleged hybrids, Lamb replied that she was in a huge rush and provided minimal information during a subsequent exchange of messages. When urged to directly address if physical exams were conducted, and if any such data was available for public review, she ceased corresponding.

I also emailed Jan Harzan, eventual executive director of MUFON, about the matter. At the time of my emails, which was March, 2013, Harzan held a MUFON leadership role in Southern California, where Lamb was scheduled to appear at the time. I pointed out that MUFON emails were distributed containing assertions of the reality of ET-human hybrids and that Lamb claimed to personally know some of them. I asked Harzan to please comment

on how an organization such as MUFON, claiming to be dedicated to scientific study, could promote such unsubstantiated and fantastic claims. He failed to respond to multiple emails.

I caught up with David Jacobs at the 2012 Ozark UFO Conference. The resulting interview referenced throughout this and the previous chapter was included in my three-part blog post, *The Bizarre World of Doctor David Jacobs: An Interview and Review*.(9)

Jacobs claimed, among other things, that hybrids have progressed through multiple stages. He was apparently referring to hybrids created directly by aliens and housed somewhere in Alien Land, as opposed to those that seemingly have birth certificates and participate in hypnosis sessions with Barbara Lamb. At this point, he asserted, they are “human in every way except for sleep cycle and ability to control others.”

Those are obviously some extremely questionable claims, considering we have no reasons to believe any of the beings have ever been physically examined. As a matter of fact, they cannot be demonstrated to so much as exist, but that did not stop Jacobs from confidently purporting to be qualified to inform me of their physical and mental conditions.

Jacobs may have been implying there were no reasons to attempt to obtain DNA and related evidence of the beings because they had become so similar to humans. Some people of course found that stance to be a rather convenient way of keeping one's hypothesis non-falsifiable, even if it does not actually make sense. I wrote at the time that I found such a notion – hybrids being physiologically nearly identical to humans - to be mentally unhealthy. I might add that I found it an insult to intelligence.

I urged Jacobs to comment on how he could perpetually be unable to obtain physical evidence of hybrids allegedly using a computer at the home of Elizabeth, one of his research subjects as described earlier. He offered me excuses such as Elizabeth lived 125 miles away from him, and that the curtains on the windows of her home did not allow anyone to see inside. He also mentioned there would be no fingerprints for some unspecified reason or other. I remain very unconvinced and found the lines of reasoning to be absurdly inadequate, as well as rather irrational directions to take.

The person lives 125 miles away and their curtains don't allow anyone to

see inside? That's what makes it impossible to obtain supporting physical evidence of ET-human hybrids frequenting the premises? I will reiterate that I found many of Jacobs' claims to be insults to intelligence.

The 2012 three-part blog post included information helpfully contributed by Dr. Tyler Kokjohn on topics such as the importance of DNA analysis.(10) Advances in forensics testing could be invaluable to investigators of alleged alien abduction, the doctor explained, adding that important evidence might be collected after the fact. Failing to attempt to do so brings its own consequences.

“Allowing unsubstantiated ideas to persist untested or ignoring their inconsistencies against objective facts will ultimately impede all progress toward greater understanding,” Kokjohn warned.

Retired engineer and scientist Frank Purcell graciously provided *The UFO Trail* with assessments for the post as well. Purcell questioned how investigators such as Jacobs could have any confidence in sorting out the memories of alleged abductees, given that such memories are, by the investigators' own assertions, programmed and manipulated. The entire philosophy of the hybrid hypothesis was also questioned.

“As far as I know it’s impossible to cross breed an elephant with a dog,” Purcell wrote. “If this is not an obstacle to the aliens because of their advanced technology, why then do they even bother with human DNA and not just directly engineer the results they want from either their own or from the human species?”

We might additionally consider that if alleged hybrids hypothetically procreated with human beings, they would produce offspring of varying genetic characteristics, some of which would have little to no extraterrestrial influence at all. If a being that was half human and half ET was to mate with a full human, the offspring might be typically expected to have minimal ET qualities, much less their future descendants. For instance, if a group of people who were half Italian and half French was sent to reside in France, suffice it to say we would not expect to find Paris filled with French Italians in a few generations.

Jacobs has continued his assertions that a currently active wave of hybrids is virtually indistinguishable from human beings, at least physically.(11)

While that conveniently makes points related to purpose and procreation more convoluted and confusing than ever, numerous additional questions continue to arise.

How old are these alleged hybrids? If they are any older than mere children, say, in their 20's or 30's, that would mean they were being developed from pretty much the outset of when Jacobs began writing and lecturing on the topic. We might reasonably ask how he missed it all this time, or why he failed to mention the circumstances until recent years.

And what kinds of vaccination programs do these aliens administer to these hybrids that are physiologically just like humans? It's potentially pretty serious from an immunology standpoint to even travel from one continent to another, so I would think being released to earth from the mother ship could stir up some pretty nasty bugs. If the hybrids are physiologically just like us, let's hope their alien handlers know more about ebola than we do.

Would the antibody profile of such a hybrid reflect the full complement of vaccinations humans currently administer to children, or would it indicate pediatric vaccines licensed and available 20 to 30 years ago? Along the same lines of considerations, each encounter with a pathogen leaves a record in the immune system, so qualified examination of forensic evidence would still prove potentially important. The antibodies of such alleged beings would help reveal how long they have been hanging around our neighborhood.

Unfortunately for David Jacobs, his assertion that some hybrids are “human in every way except for sleep cycle and ability to control others” does not exempt his hypothesis from potential validation or falsification. Forensic evidence might very well continue to be extremely important, and his failure to take advantage of cost effective technological advances now available likely speaks volumes in and of itself.

Additionally explored in the 2012 three-part blog post at *The UFO Trail* was a 1991 Robert Bigelow-funded Roper Poll in which Hopkins, Jacobs and sociologist Ron Westrum incredibly concluded that about four million Americans had experienced UFO abductions – without ever even asking any of the survey participants. Jacobs cited the questionable conclusions during his 2012 Ozark UFO Conference presentation and despite the fact the poll was thoroughly debunked by scholars.(12) Such scholars included psychologist Susan Blackmore, sociologist Ted Goertzel, the late psychologist Robyn M. Dawes and political scientist Matthew Mulford, who

is an expert in research methodology at the London School of Economics and Political Science.(13)

The 5,947 people surveyed were never actually asked if they had been abducted by aliens, but were instead offered a series of questions of which Hopkins and Jacobs asserted themselves qualified to interpret that a certain number of positive responses suggested abductions had occurred. About two percent, or 119, of survey participants were identified by Hopkins and Jacobs as strong possibilities of being UFO abductees. It was from there the fantastic conclusion was drawn that nearly four million Americans, or roughly two percent of the US population of about 185 million people at the time, had experienced UFO abductions.

Arguably adding insult to injury, Dawes and Mulford (and subsequently Goertzel) reported that the initial survey question was designed in a manner that resulted in increasing the number of perceived recollections and therefore positive responses. The item asked about waking up paralyzed and sensing a strange person in the room, which was what is known as a dual, or "double-barreled", question: asking two things at the same time. Text books warned against the use of the technique because it was conclusively known to give bad results. Furthermore, Dawes and Mulford demonstrated in a 1993 study that combining two issues in one item causes a conjunction effect in memory, increasing the chances of false recollection as compared to properly designed single-issue survey items. Qualified experts repeatedly asserted that both the poll and its sensational conclusions were based on faulty logic and flawed methodology.

Even completely independently of the Emma Woods debacle, the work of David Jacobs was found again and again to be of very poor quality and extremely low credibility. The legitimacy of the scenarios he spun was often entirely dependent upon testimony he attributed to unidentified third party sources, completely lacking forensic support and virtually always attributed to hypnosis subjects by his own descriptions. Reasonable supporting evidence to justify his extraordinary tales of sexually deviant space invaders bent on conquering humanity simply did not exist. His claim of being a strict advocate of scientific methodology, as contained in his bio as of this writing, could reasonably have been interpreted to be insulting.(14)

People are entitled to believe as they choose, but they are not entitled to do so and label it science. Neither are they entitled to harm others in the process.

Thanks, Emma

Back when news of the Woods case first broke, I had come to be among those seriously questioning the methods, findings and motives of some investigators of alleged alien abduction. I therefore took interest in the Woods situation because it provided the often elusive documentation of the types of circumstances that were actually taking place within such so-called investigations, even if much less widely known.

I first reached out to Emma in January of 2011 and she reciprocated my correspondence. I am grateful for the time and attention she and many people in this saga offered and continue to afford me.

It is my confident interpretation that at this point in time Emma Woods seriously doubts David Jacobs sincerely believed in the existence of ET-human hybrids and the related theories he promoted. She questions his stated motives for his actions.

Some of the people involved in the saga hold different opinions on the extents of blame that should be placed upon individuals such as Elizabeth, as compared to considering the complex dynamics of victimization and related trauma that may apply. They are not all in agreement on the possible motives of Jacobs and Elizabeth, or the levels of responsibility that should be assigned. There is unanimous agreement and no doubt, however, that David Jacobs is indeed responsible for his actions, whatever may be implied by the circumstances or ultimately indicated by his activities.

Any way one chooses to look at it, extreme and unsupported beliefs were cultivated, rampant and encouraged. Imagination, fantasy and paranoia all took leading roles in a cult-like production of which David Jacobs starred, wrote and directed. It is only reasonable to question motive and intent.

It should be noted that Emma continues to examine her possible paranormal experiences. While she has come to conclude David Jacobs and

some other self-described investigators of alleged alien abduction obscure reality and potentially harm experiencers, Woods suspects there may be intriguing phenomena, whatever its origins may be, at the heart of the reported experiences. Perhaps she is correct.

I am empathetic of Emma's circumstances. I find her interactions with David Jacobs and her experience within ufology to be extremely regretful on many levels.

Care and safety of research subjects should be prioritized. That should be a non-negotiable standard of all UFO organizations, investigators and interested parties. We should neither enable nor tolerate anything else, much less censor its discussion as repeatedly occurred.

While that is indeed the case, it was not the apparent breakdowns in investigator ethics that most insulted me and motivated my personal interest in the Woods case. Rather, I was insulted intellectually.

I felt insulted that it was suggested to the UFO community to believe not only the unsubstantiated conclusions put forth by David Jacobs and his peers, but the inept rationalizations for how they arrived at those conclusions. The same could be said for the rationalizations of why people like Emma Woods were treated improperly. We were solicited to intellectually accept such things as reasonable. They are not. Virtually the entire body of work of David Jacobs is rendered useless if it was compiled under circumstances and dynamics similar to those documented and exhibited during the Emma Woods case.

I am very sorry for what happened to Emma. Her efforts to better understand herself and events in her life were hampered and obscured, possibly beyond repair. At the least, she has a whole lot more baggage to work through than had she not been subjected to the “collection of oral histories” conducted by Jacobs.

For ufology and research of the paranormal, I am sorry that such exhibitions of behavior by so-called investigators devalue the entire genre. The interests of virtually all associated with ufology are subject to ridicule and criticism due to the ill conceived actions of people such as David Jacobs.

For myself, I am sorry that such self-described investigators cause me to

experience disgust and anger over topics, the paranormal and UFOs, I might otherwise find interesting and fascinating if presented reasonably. For that I was and continue to be insulted.

While I am sorry about what happened to Emma, I am also very grateful to her for her willingness to expose the circumstances. She has demonstrated a great deal of courage and determination, and for that I thank and respect her.

Jeff Ritzmann, since his days at *Paratopia*, has more recently hosted *Paranormal Waypoint*. On February 4, 2014, I was pleased to be on the show along with fellow guests Jeremy Vaeni and Dr. Tyler Kokjohn.(15) It was the third and final installment of a series exploring challenges within research of alleged alien abduction and titled *Problem, Evidence, Result*.

Jeff put a great deal of preparation into the broadcast, which took listeners on an audio tour of the Emma Woods case. Recorded interactions and hypnosis sessions between Woods and Jacobs were played and discussed. I am grateful to Jeff Ritzmann and Jeremy Vaeni for their work on the Woods case, as well as the contributions of Tyler Kokjohn. I am also grateful to Jeff for my inclusion in the February, 2014 episode, and the efforts of all who were involved in its production. It was significant and meaningful to me. The show indeed demonstrated the extremely concerning results of years of nonscientific speculation and extremely questionable behavior misrepresented as scientific inquiry.

But long before circumstances ever progressed to that point, something very important took place that played a major part in shaping the continuing paradigm shift. In January, 2011, just a month after *UFO Magazine* published Vaeni's revealing article on Jacobs' handling of the Woods case, Vaeni and Ritzmann produced a magazine, *Paratopia*. It included several submissions from a variety of writers, but the shot heard 'round the UFO world was fired by Carol Rainey, the former wife and co-author of Budd Hopkins. It was in that January, 2011, *Paratopia* magazine that Rainey published her article, *The Priests of High Strangeness: Co-Creation of the "Alien Abduction" Phenomenon*.(16)

If alien abduction dogma had a day the music died, that was it. Facilitated and supported by Jeremy Vaeni, Jeff Ritzmann, Gary Haden, Tyler Kokjohn,

Alfred Lehmberg, Bill and Nancy Hayfield Birnes and many more, Emma Woods and Carol Rainey were well on their way to providing the UFO community with some of the most candid and realistic accounts ever published of what was taking place during so-called investigation of alien abduction.

---

1 Wayback Machine: False Memory Syndrome Foundation: *FMS Foundation Newsletter, Spring, 2011, Volume 20 No. 2*

https://web.archive.org/web/20110519074925/http://fmsfonline.org/fmsf11.407.html

2 *The UFO Trail*: *The Bizarre World of Doctor David Jacobs: An Interview and Review, Part One of Three*

http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2012/04/bizarre-world-of-doctor-david-jacobs.html

3 *Emma Woods Files*: *Paratopia Show*: *Paratopia Episode 94: Brian Reed Vindicates Emma Woods*

http://emmawoodsfiles.com/home-4/radio-podcasts/paratopia-show/

4 *The UFO Trail*: *The Bizarre World of Doctor David Jacobs: An Interview and Review, Part One of Three*

http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2012/04/bizarre-world-of-doctor-david-jacobs.html

5 *JayVay*: *I'm Sorry, Your Hypothesis Appears to be Dead*

https://jayvay.wordpress.com/2014/02/11/im-sorry-your-hypothesis-appears-to-be-dead/

6 *JayVay*: *Try a New Hypothesis, Sherlock*

https://jayvay.wordpress.com/2014/02/18/try-a-new-hypothesis-sherlock/

7 *The Paracast*: *Hopkins Ex-wife Dumps*

http://www.theparacast.com/forum/threads/hopkins-ex-wife-dumps.7891/page-2

8 Examiner.com: *Barbara Lamb and MUFON: ET-human hybrids: They are real and they are here*
http://www.examiner.com/article/barbara-lamb-and-mufon-et-human-hybrids-they-are-real-and-they-are-here

9 *The UFO Trail*: *The Bizarre World of Doctor David Jacobs: An Interview and Review, Part One of Three*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2012/04/bizarre-world-of-doctor-david-jacobs.html

10 *The UFO Trail*: *The Bizarre World of Doctor David Jacobs: An Interview and Review, Part Three of Three*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2012/05/bizarre-world-of-doctor-david-jacobs.html

11 YouTube: *Contact In The Desert - David Jacobs - New Findings In Abduction Research*
https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=uUMPDtD4hfA

12 *The UFO Trail*: *The Bizarre World of Doctor David Jacobs: An Interview and Review, Part Two of Three*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2012/04/bizarre-world-of-doctor-david-jacobs_29.html

13 The London School of Economics and Political Science: *Research and Expertise: Mulford, Matthew*
http://www.lse.ac.uk/researchAndExpertise/Experts/profile.aspx?KeyValue=m.mulford%40lse.ac.uk

14 International Center for Abduction Research: *Biography*
http://www.ufoabduction.com/biography.htm

15 *Emma Woods Files*: *Paranormal Waypoint Show*

http://emmawoodsfiles.com/home-4/radio-podcasts/paranormal-waypoint-show/

16 Wayback Machine: *Paratopia*: *The Priests of High Strangeness: Co-Creation of the "Alien Abduction" Phenomenon*

https://web.archive.org/web/20110124192402/http://www.paratopia.net/paratopia_magazine/mag_previ

Chapter Six
Carol Rainey and the Priests of High Strangeness

> People who do this recovered memory work are not trained as scientists. More important, they often don’t read scientific literature or stay current in important relevant fields like neuroscience. If they did, I wouldn't have become so alarmed.
>
> - Carol Rainey(1)

Carol Rainey is an award-winning filmmaker. She spent over two decades writing, producing and directing documentaries on science and medicine for PBS, cable networks and commercial distribution.(2) While working in the Greater Boston area, Rainey was Executive Producer in the Media Division of an epidemiological institute. She worked alongside scientists to develop research projects that would also translate well into film. Her collaboration with the epidemiologists resulted in their co-writing 22 National Institutes of Health (NIH) grant proposals, 15 of which were funded, as were additional proposals submitted to other agencies. Rainey and her staff wrote, produced and directed the resulting films. After airing on broadcast and cable television, the films were distributed both commercially and at educational venues.

Rainey has written film scripts, short fiction and screenplays as well as nonfiction. *Momma Gets Her Ready*, an original screenplay, was a recipient of the National Endowment for the Arts (NEA) New England Regional Fellowship. She also produced and edited a related experimental narrative video, which aired nationally on USA Network and PBS.(3) It toured Europe in a video art exhibition that featured numerous artists working with the theme of surveillance. In 2003, she published the nonfiction book, *Sight Unseen*, co-authored with Budd Hopkins. The book explored reported paranormal experiences and their potential relationships to such fields as transgenics, bioengineering, neurobiology and quantum physics. She is currently at work on a memoir and documentary about her two decades (1994 to present) inside what she terms a very different kind of research community, that of investigation of the UFO phenomenon.

At my request, Rainey explained that she met the late Budd Hopkins on a

Cape Cod beach in 1994, where Hopkins owned a home. Rainey spent most summer weekends at the Cape with friends. At that time, she knew absolutely nothing about UFOs or alleged alien abductions. She had been isolated from most popular culture by first being raised in a fundamentalist Christian sect, and later finding herself again outside the populist mainstream during her years in academia and scientific research. UFOs were rarely if ever discussed in those circles, yet Rainey explained how she listened to Hopkins' stories with interest and an open mind. She described herself as drawn to the powerful emotional and symbolic content of the abductees' reports and, while reserving the right to be doubtful when warranted, admired the courage, pioneering spirit and resilience she observed in Hopkins. She also admired similar qualities in the self-described abductees who soon became part of her life. Most of them, she believed, were genuinely troubled by inexplicable events in their lives and hoped that working with Hopkins would help get to the truth.

After an ambivalent beginning, Rainey and Hopkins were soon drawn to each other and fell in love, despite the 18-year difference in their ages. In 1995, Rainey left behind her successful career in Boston video production and moved to New York City to be with Hopkins. The couple was married in the summer of 1996 at Cape Cod. For the next ten years they lived, traveled and worked together almost exclusively on the mystery of anomalous flying objects and the experiences that people reported having with the occupants of the craft.

During their marriage, Rainey actively participated in many of Hopkins' UFO cases. She was there as a filmmaker for initial intake interviews with people who had come to Hopkins to explore aspects of their lives that had long puzzled them. She also filmed multiple hypnotic regressions for these cases, along with shoots on location. Informally, off camera, Rainey acted as a secondary calming presence for seemingly frightened abductees.

She entered the picture in 1994 while Hopkins was still working on his third book, then called *Eden's End*. He had a lot riding on it. His previous bestselling *Intruders* was adapted into a network mini-series, and Hopkins was hoping Hollywood would again come calling.

As a newcomer to the field of UFOs and alleged alien abductions, Rainey

explained that she learned more about Hopkins' investigatory process and his beliefs about the phenomenon by editing the final version of the manuscript. Realizing the significance of over 20 alleged witnesses to the Brooklyn Bridge reported abduction of Linda Cortile, Rainey suggested changing the title of the work to *Witnessed,* and Hopkins agreed. In addition to her contributions as an editor, Rainey shot extensive documentary footage of Hopkins' work in several countries and produced multiple short films for him to show on the lecture circuit.

Rainey indicated that while she found the couple's partnership to be rewarding in many ways, it was also complex and plagued by financial problems. By the early 2000's, she had observed close-up and documented many alleged abduction cases that were, in fact, either full or partial inventions: false narratives that grew out of the "abductee" relationship with the investigator. Rainey still loved her husband, she explained, but would not stand by for certain destructive, recurring patterns of his life. Neither would she any longer be part of his work. By the time their mutually agreed upon divorce was finalized, Rainey and Hopkins had spent nearly eleven years together virtually around-the-clock, working and living with one another without so much as a single trial separation during the marriage.

Omitting Recommendations of Medical Professionals

In the spring of 2010 Rainey was living and working in Morocco, literally worlds away from the American UFO community, when news reached her through the Internet of David Jacobs' handling of the Emma Woods case. Rainey reviewed the case, including statements and websites of both Woods and Jacobs, and listened to the extensive audio material posted at Emma Woods' site.(4)

"If it weren't for the existence of those tapes, I'd never have believed Emma's charges against David Jacobs," Rainey explained in a July, 2015, email exchange conducted in prep-aration for this chapter. "Those tapes were shocking to hear and his disregard for the safety of his subject was extraordinary. Although I hadn't worked on abduction cases with Budd for several years, following our divorce in 2006, I was – and am - still deeply

interested in the field."

She was subsequently motivated, initially by Emma Woods' treatment, to author her widely read and much discussed article published by *Paratopia* magazine in January, 2011, *The Priests of High Strangeness: Co-Creation of the "Alien Abduction" Phenomenon*.(5) In the opening paragraphs of the piece, Rainey addressed a question posed by veteran UFO researcher Raymond Fowler, who asked, "I wonder how many other Emmas there are out there?" Plenty, apparently, as Rainey proceeded to cite a series of them and the related circumstances which she both directly witnessed and, in many cases, documented on video tape.

Rainey's article confirmed what many of the more discerning members of the UFO community long suspected: while many people genuinely believed they had encountered some type of unusual phenomena, self-appointed abduction researchers were poorly trained in collecting meaningful knowledge of such circumstances, creating an environment in which unreliable information was published. Furthermore, vulnerable people were at high risk of experiencing detrimental and harmful consequences from their relationships with the UFO community and its investigators. Although researchers of alleged alien abduction often claimed to investigate and draw conclusions based on time-honored principles of scientific inquiry, in actual practice, they were far removed from such standards. Then there was the development of dubious cases that were heavily promoted by investigator/authors who appeared to value the cultivation of vivid new story material far more than sound methods of gathering information.

Two of the most prominent and influential abduction researchers, Hopkins and Jacobs, primarily obtained their alleged evidence by having their own proclamations mirrored back to them from hypnosis subjects. The resulting confabulations and unsupported narrations were then marketed to a gullible public. Whatever genuinely unexplained phenomena may lie at the heart of select reports of high strangeness, Rainey's article most certainly suggested that public perception of the UFO phenomenon itself was being created by investigators who manipulated and steered the alleged witness narratives for a variety of self-serving reasons. What's more, often times investigators seemed to show minimal concern – or awareness – of the possibility of causing further harm to their alleged witnesses.

Consider “Dora,” a middle-aged woman from the Southwest United States, whose case Rainey summarized in *The Priests of High Strangeness*. Dora's bizarre accounts of alien/military involvement had long intrigued Hopkins. He’d done multiple hypnotic regressions with her, and the two had lengthy telephone conversations for years before Rainey met her.

In 1997, Hopkins and Rainey went to Dora's home in New Mexico, and Hopkins did a hypnosis session with her while Rainey videotaped. Dora became so hysterical during the session that Hopkins ended it. She was certain black helicopters were following her and that she was integrated into an alien/military alliance. She apparently believed her own personal hybrid was named “Pedro” and was responsible for violently raping her repeatedly.

Rainey made a short film (with Dora’s face blurred) for Hopkins to present at conferences. The filmmaker eventually discovered a letter in Dora’s file that had been sent to Hopkins from a consulting psychiatrist and a UFO-friendly psychologist. The doctors, who had both treated Dora, specified in their letter that they knew her to be a volatile, severely sexually and physically abused individual – by both her father and her husband. She’d also once lived in a shelter for battered women. The therapists’ letter, dated 1995, stated that they doubted Dora's interpretations of fantastic events, and that her best interests were not served by “allowing someone with rather deep mental/emotional disturbances to use the scenario of alien abductions to bleed out a lifetime of her abuse.” They further recommended that she participate in psychotherapy to heal issues of abuse and its accompanying anger. Hopkins, apparently undeterred, continued his alien-hunting interactions with Dora for another two years following his notification in writing from her doctors of their recommendations.

“In this case,” Rainey wrote in her 2011 article, “the welfare of the patient clearly took second place to the investigator's need for a high strangeness 'discovery' – confirmation for the alien/military conspiracy theory.”

Very much so, it appeared. Dora's stories, manufactured in part with Hopkins and his hypnotic encouragement, and against the expressed recommendations of a psychiatrist and a psychologist, wound through increasingly elaborate descriptions of the alleged involvement of high level military and government personnel, including Colin Powell. The general's

presence was reported by Dora during hypnotic regression sessions and she apparently believed he was among those collaborating with aliens to perpetrate sadistic and violent acts. So was Ralph Nader.

After Rainey discovered the therapists' recommendations for Dora, she re-cut the short film to reflect the fact. Hopkins apparently became very angry the changes were made and never again showed the film of his “Dora case” at conferences or seminars.

Some 13 years later, Dora was still living out the role of a woman victimized by alien/human militia. In 2010, a New York independent filmmaker produced and released a documentary in which Dora was framed as an alien abductee, stalked by black helicopters and otherworldly creatures. She was not, however, portrayed as exploited by a self-proclaimed UFO investigator who, many years earlier, selectively omitted consideration of her extensive traumatic history with quite real human beings and the resulting evaluations of qualified mental health professionals.

No Evidence, No Problem

The UFO community and many of its celebrated front runners such as Hopkins and Jacobs were most certainly - and quite questionably - perpetuating a widespread belief that circumstances such as fragmented memories and other well known symptoms of emotional trauma were indicative of alien abduction. Let's just say the idea wasn't discouraged very often. Practically never.

Rainey explained, for example, that Hopkins would ask new subjects if they had a fear of clowns. If the response was positive, Hopkins interpreted it to confirm his predetermined belief that an aversion to clowns indicated the individual to have been abducted by aliens. In some initial interviews he went as far as informing the subject he believed that to be the case, directly telling them they were likely abductees, based on that particular fear or some other phobia.

Already traumatized individuals were at high risk of sustaining further trauma while pursuing beliefs of experiencing abuse by extraterrestrials. The poorly conceived investigative techniques were practiced and enabled

throughout the community. Ufology hypnotists often had no professional training in how to spot and handle issues that commonly arise in a therapeutic setting – for example, transference of emotional content onto the researcher/therapist or if an individual might be on the verge of a psychotic break. They did not have the professional backgrounds or demonstrate abilities to adjust their methods to new scientific understandings of the ways memory actually worked, or the growing movement in the legal system to disqualify hypnotically recalled testimony due to its unreliability. They did not follow standard research procedures and protocols for protection of their subjects. That most certainly included Hopkins, an artist, and Jacobs, a history professor. A preferred method of avoiding the obvious concerns was to fail to report the actuality of the circumstances in their entirety and to omit mention of the suspect conditions under which the stories were often obtained and cultivated, such as in the case of Dora.

It was not unusual for claims put forth by alleged abductees, overtly traumatized or not, to simply be too far fetched to accept without corroborating evidence, yet were nonetheless sometimes fully embraced by Hopkins, his peers and the community at large. Many writers and researchers assessed the Linda Cortile reported events to be one such case that stretched the limits of credulity. In her YouTube videos, Rainey released some examples of Hopkins' credulousness when presented with Cortile's claims of abductions, human or otherwise. There would be a certain quality of comedy to the proceedings if so many people had not spent years agonizing over whether the case might actually be true, accented as it was with Hopkins' warnings for the future of humanity as extracted from Cortile's otherwise unsubstantiated stories.

Episodes observed by Rainey and reported in *The Priests of High Strangeness* included Cortile's 1996 claim that she and her cousin, Connie, successfully fought off two male government agents trying to force them into the back of a van. The incredible claim was documented and explored in video footage filmed by Rainey, posted on YouTube and titled, *1996 Budd Hopkins Hears of New Danger from Linda Cortile rev 022214*.(6) Following Cortile's disclosure of the alleged abduction, Hopkins emphasized his desire to talk to the cousin. Linda assured him that the woman would call. He subsequently received a phone call later that night.

After ending the call and while describing it to Rainey, Hopkins reportedly looked discouraged, explaining, “That was Linda, pretending to be her cousin Connie.”

Hopkins nonetheless continued to support the Cortile case while failing to report its glaring discrepancies, of which there were many.(7) He steadfastly encouraged admiration of the emperor's fine threads.

Rainey also addressed in *The Priests of High Strangeness* the case of James S. Mortellaro, Jr. This particular alleged alien abductee carried a gun in his boot and, as Rainey wrote, “tossed down prescription pills the way other people mindlessly eat popcorn at the movies.” Among his many unverified statements were his claims of holding two Ph.D.'s and having been employed as a marketing director for Hitachi prior to early retirement. He later claimed to be an auxiliary police officer decorated for heroics, which the increasingly concerned members of Hopkins' Intruders Foundation Advisory Committee discovered could easily be checked. Mortellaro’s boasts of heroic civic action proved to have no basis in fact.

Rainey described in her article how the man initially suggested he suffered tremendously from disturbing childhood memories. He apparently chose to see Hopkins about that.

“Several things about this case were making me increasingly uneasy,” Rainey wrote. “It wasn’t just the pills and the pistol.”

I reckon not. The Mortellaro case eventually erupted into a shameful spectacle of absurd unverified claims and false documents providing “evidence” for those claims. Rainey repeatedly warned Hopkins to heed the mounting red flags but to no avail. Actually, she described him as furious about her doubts and lack of enthusiasm for the case.

Rainey documented how the spiral of outlandishness included what she quickly identified at the time as forged medical reports, supposedly created in approximately 2001 when Mortellaro went to a hospital emergency room following a purported violent alien abduction. Also among the antics were telephone messages allegedly placed from people corroborating his claims, yet strongly suspected by Rainey to actually be Mortellaro impersonating what he hoped Hopkins would believe to be emerging witnesses, including alleged medical personnel. Mortellaro apparently served up one caller who

claimed to see him floated out of his home up to an awaiting saucer. Also included among the “evidence” was what became the relatively standard issue audio taped hypnotic regression in which the alleged abductee bellowed in horror, recorded in one particular instance in 2002.

The Mortellaro case was sensationally promoted as consisting of “extensive medical evidence.” Public events were conducted in which the fantastic claims were showcased, but the advertised extensive evidence was perpetually never presented. It was always reported to be coming later - for reasons including, of course, it did not exist.

Hopkins and writer Leslie Kean opted to defend and endorse the case in spite of apparently never directly communicating with any of the alleged physicians or other types of witnesses that Mortellaro claimed were familiar with the purported extraordinary encounters. After having heard only the dubious voice message recordings, Hopkins and Kean were evidently satisfied with the legitimacy of the witnesses. Hopkins took the show on the road, presenting Mortellaro on various radio programs to a demographic hungry to believe.

Rainey explained how she ceased attending events sponsored by the Intruders Foundation, an organization Hopkins founded. She stopped attending, among other reasons, due to her embarrassment at the lack of substance of the claims of medical evidence, and her conviction that Hopkins had been duped by Mortellaro’s hoaxing, yet he would neither stop promoting his case to the public nor stop accepting speaking fees for spreading the story.

Members of the Intruders Foundation Advisory Committee eventually began to share Rainey's concerns about the Mortellaro case and the way it cast UFO research in a negative light, opening the work of Hopkins and the Foundation to charges of being credulous. They stood to be perceived as unable – or unwilling - to distinguish between a worthwhile case and a hoax. Committee members had professional reputations at stake and grew wary of the carnival atmosphere. They sent Hopkins a letter, requesting to be involved as colleagues and co-investigators in cases Hopkins chose to develop from that point forward. Hopkins dodged the peer review request and bucked the guidance of the committee, circumstances one could reasonably

surmise would be viewed unfavorably by professionals asked to lend their credentials to a venture rapidly and quite publicly declining in credibility. Hopkins apparently assured committee members on multiple occasions that medical documentation of Mortellaro's extraordinary claims was forthcoming.

Mortellaro created a significant Internet presence that would turn out to be part of his downfall. His increasingly grandiose online claims resulted in many people in the UFO community perceiving him as unreliable and unhinged. When his assertions of being a law enforcement hero decorated for killing a criminal in the line of duty began making the rounds – and were quickly and easily debunked - Hopkins' very own associates at the Intruders Foundation stopped tapping the brakes and stood on them.

Advisory committee members apparently decided Mortellaro's fantastic and unsubstantiated assertions, along with Hopkins' endorsements and unmet commitments of forthcoming extensive medical evidence, had gone on long enough without effective oversight and accountability. The group went about reviewing what “evidence” in the case had been vetted well enough to present publicly, including recordings of phone messages in which committee members concurred with Rainey's initial assessments. The recordings were identified by the advisory committee to be Mortellaro attempting to disguise his voice and deceive Hopkins into believing the callers were independent witnesses. Obviously, the supposed witnesses were never confirmed.

The committee also reviewed an alleged medical report that Mortellaro claimed was written by his doctor, testifying to Mortellaro's unusual wounds and their miraculous healing. Rainey, who had worked with physicians for years, previously urged Hopkins in private to understand that the document was almost certainly fake. Reasons included her knowledge that doctors simply did not write that way and describe patient conditions in such manners. Hopkins angrily denied there were any reasons for Rainey's concern. When the advisory committee examined the document, a member who was a medical writer familiar with the style and content of physician communiques validated Rainey's initial private assessment. He declared Mortellaro's letter to be a fabrication.

The case went south like retirees in November, but Hopkins, with Leslie

Kean’s apparent support, continued to cling to it. There were claw marks all over it by the time he finally conceded an announcement would be published on the Intruders Foundation website acknowledging the Mortellaro case was deemed not worthy of further investigation. The notice additionally stated that credible evidence was never produced and that alleged official documents proved to be fabricated.

Hopkins' stubborn pursuit of the case and his eagerness to promote Mortellaro's extraordinary yet unsupported claims took a tremendous toll. Immeasurable, as a matter of fact. Several advisory committee members resigned, including Rainey. As she observed in *The Priests of High Strangeness*, the ordeal directly cost Hopkins his relationship with his advisory committee and indirectly cost him his wife. Carol Rainey never again filmed Hopkins' hypnotic regression sessions or participated in abduction research.

She wrote in *The Priests of High Strangeness*:

> It is not incidental that David Jacobs was intending to write a book about Emma Woods and several other experiencers, people who shared a high strangeness narrative focused on the infiltration of hybrid beings into our society. In Emma’s audiotapes, we can hear Jacobs, before the regression, telling Emma about his other cases, which included their hybrids’ violent, sadomasochistic sexual behavior and warning her that they just might discover that in her own upcoming hypnosis session. That isn’t even “leading”: it’s an outright push for her to then deliver, under hypnosis, the exact narrative he needs for his book. It is also not incidental that Budd Hopkins does not ever express doubt about the reliability of Linda Cortile’s story and the seminal importance of her case. If he did, he might be forced to question his own ability to sort fact from fiction or to spot a rising hoax before it crests and breaks over him.

Stacking the Deck and Failing to Address Content

Rainey backed up *The Priests of High Strangeness* with supporting short films. She maintains a YouTube channel where excerpts from her feature length documentary in progress clearly establish inconsistencies in the Cortile case, as well as numerous additional issues of interest.(8)

One of her videos shows Hopkins cherry-picking supposed evidence in order to try to effectively argue his assertion that abductees who report seeing alien writing all draw the alleged symbols the same. Rainey, knowing that was not true, asks him, on camera, to display the other abductee drawings which he's shuffling through.

"No," he says, "I want to stack the deck here."(9)

Hopkins indeed appeared either unable or unwilling to objectively consider evidence and form factually supported conclusions. It was as if he saw himself as lobbying for public opinion, rather than conducting and presenting research, and that he believed the ends very much justified the means.

Rainey's video footage gives viewers insight into how she had long asked the right questions, whether or not Hopkins was willing to reciprocate with open-minded discussions. She frequently posed questions to him – from the very beginning of their relationship. With her background in research protocols, she diplomatically suggested ways that Hopkins might initially develop his cases so that he could collect valid data and create a searchable database. That never happened. In private, she brought up the highly emotionally charged issue of what critics called his credulousness. Rainey offered specific suggestions that would have allowed Hopkins to adjust his research methods and techniques so that verifiable gains in credible knowledge would result. Rainey was nonetheless vilified as a blasphemous traitor – tagged with the standard "debunker" label by both Hopkins and his religiously loyal following.

Responding in 2014 to a critic, who asked in the comments section of one of her YouTube videos why she would publish such material, Carol Rainey explained:(10)

> Because I had clear evidence that abduction researchers, especially Budd and his best friend David Jacobs, had lost the

ability to see objectively that their well-intentioned actions were harming very vulnerable people. Current research into the neurobiology of the brain and memory processes shows quite clearly that "recovered memory" techniques like hypnosis are not recovering actual memories most of the time. The brain cannot differentiate between events that seem to be memories and events that one imagines or has suggested to him/her.

To be just, though, we should remember the context, in which Budd and others began extensive use of hypnosis in the 1980s. At that time, many professionals and certainly the public believed that the mind operates like a tape recorder, laying down memories, which can be recalled as simply as rewinding tape. Scientists now understand that many, though not all, memories (of alleged sexual abuse, satanic ritual abuse, and alien abduction, among others) are actually reconstructions of events that occurred in the past.

The brain is constantly updating, revising, and adding to any memory that's pulled up. It's like making a collage. We're not even conscious most of the time that when we "remember," we're also incorporating into that memory many other elements: the suggestive environment we're currently in (such as being in the home of a famous abduction researcher), television shows seen last week or ten years ago; ditto with books, movies, etc.

The researchers in this field, though, should be strongly aware of such influences. People who do this recovered memory work are not trained as scientists. More important, they often don't read scientific literature or stay current in important relevant fields like neuroscience. If they did, I wouldn't have become so alarmed.

In a post published in February of 2014 at *The UFO Trail*, Rainey further addressed the Woods case, while also explaining she was strongly opposed to Budd's manipulation of facts and his telling the world that certain UFO reports were factual and credible when they were actually neither.(11) She continued:

> Right now, I'm more interested in trying to ensure that there be no more Emma Woods [cases] out there - vulnerable people preyed upon by a "researcher" who has zero qualifications in psychology, hypnosis, medicine, cultural con- tagion, etc., and zero ability to handle the issues that arise. And now I'm speaking about someone who's quite alive [referring to David Jacobs].
>
> Yes, I was Budd's partner and you can hear off-camera questions which indicate that I was always asking the hard questions. I supported what he was doing for many years, until the facts in front of me said that this was a deceptive and dangerous business. That's when my opinion changed and that's when I stopped being part of that community. The mark of a good investigator, scientists will tell you, is that he/she has the ability to change perceptions once the facts have changed or been more clearly perceived.

While Rainey explained her position distinctly and repeatedly, she was perpetually misquoted, misrepresented and accused of harboring ulterior motives. The notorious host of one podcast actually repeatedly expressed his apparent belief that Rainey had written publicly about Hopkins' sexual indiscretions. In fact, she had deliberately, consciously avoided writing about that particular topic completely. That didn't stop the show's host from repeating the untrue charge against her.

A demographic of alien abduction fundamentalists consistently refused to consider Hopkins' claims and the related dogma in any context other than sacred gospel. Perhaps nowhere was this more evident than the now disbanded *UFO UpDates List*, a once high profile email list and website, where both Rainey and Woods were censored. Posted in 2014 at *The Magonia Blog*:(12)

> At least critics of the classic cases were allowed to put their case, those who criticised Saint Budd and Jacobs were just thrown off the list. No matter how wild and dangerous their claims became, no matter that they wrecked people's lives; that Jacobs went in for the shrillest kind of substitute antisemitism...

> they remained inviolate.
>
> Of course the defectors from the abductionist cult such as Carol Rainey got the worst of it. Rainey was portrayed as the caricature shrewish and vengeful ex-wife of Budd Hopkins, rather than someone who, having participated in his research had been eventually able to see the dangerous techniques and assumptions behind it. For this she was subjected to a barrage of misogynist abuse on UpDates, which provoked a number of contributors, including Magonia Online editor John Rimmer, to sever links with the list. Of course the Hopkins fan-boys and eager believers stayed to the bitter end and eventually drove it into the ground. It will be missed but not mourned.

Writer and researcher Peter Brookesmith commented in response to the post at *Magonia*:(13)

> It's not quite true that critics of Hopkins & Jacobs were summarily cast out from the list. In the late 90s at least it was possible to get a wiggin' thereon for calling Hopkins intellectually dishonest (hardly contentious, one would have thought), and some of us had some fun when Linda Cortibalone joined, calling herself 'Honeybee', as I recall. There didn't seem to be much consistency as to who did get chucked off or what threads were suddenly terminated or whose comments were censored and whose were allowed to go way over the top. Even so, the treatment of Carol Rainey and Emma Woods was a disgrace.

In addition to oppressed as a female, minimized as a former spouse and generally attacked with irrational prejudice, Rainey was criticized by the old guard of ufology for choosing to publicly address the relevant issues while Hopkins was in the last year of his life. She would later be criticized for publishing material *after* his death and therefore unable to defend himself. Those familiar with the old guard and its fan base did not find the contradictions and double binds surprising, but rather par for the course

rationalizations. Desperation was most certainly a prevailing characteristic of the attempts to deflect attention from the obvious significance of the material put forth by Rainey and Woods.

Rainey reflected on the timing of her article in an April, 2015 email, an excerpt of which is shared with her permission. David Jacobs' behavior in the Woods case went public, and that was that, in a manner of speaking. The pink elephant in the room is the responsibility of the people who placed it there, not those who acknowledge it. Describing her decision to author *The Priests of High Strangeness*, an article which would have inevitably been criticized and immediately rejected by a certain percentage of people no matter when it was published, Carol wrote:

> I said what needed to be said, irregardless of timing, when I got the Emma story [in 2010] and heard Budd's praise of Jacobs. I sent Budd a personal email, saying, "Your friend has lost his fucking mind. Can you do anything to stop him?" He replied it was none of my business, I should shut up.

Soon after the publication of Rainey's article, Hopkins circulated a rebuttal. He titled it *Deconstructing the Debunkers: A Response*, and the long and convoluted piece may have epitomized the problems and dysfunction much more than Hopkins ever realized or intended.

Kevin Randle, in a February, 2011, post at his popular blog, *A Different Perspective*, described Hopkins' article as providing little in the way of fact and consisting of not much more than an attack on Rainey.(14) Randle explained how Hopkins completely failed to competently address points previously presented by Rainey or offer evidence in support of his and David Jacobs' wildly speculative claims.

Randle wrote, “[Hopkins] suggested that Rainey, and others he labels as debunkers, believe that nearly all abductees are liars who are participating in elaborate hoaxes, though I saw nothing in Rainey’s article to suggest that. Hopkins explains the complexity of attempting to keep all the lies straight during convoluted investigations, but never mentions that these alleged liars have the assistance of the researchers to help them keep the story consistent

and in developing corroborative details.”

Kevin Randle continued:

> Hopkins, unable to prove that alien abduction is real, or that he has solid evidence to prove his case, must show that Rainey is wrong in her various assertions and attacks her as a debunker. Hopkins knows, just as anyone around this field knows, that labeling someone a debunker is a quick way to refute what he or she says without having to provide evidence that he or she is wrong. If a debunker said it, then it must not be true.
>
> The title of his paper, "Deconstructing the Debunkers: A Response," tells us all we really need to know about the paper. Hopkins isn’t going to deal with the issues raised by Rainey in her article, or by others who have preceded her. He is going [to] use the debunker brush to smear her arguments so he doesn’t have to answer them.

In the comments section of the post, Randle addressed that some people attacked Rainey as the messenger, calling her “the woman scorned.” He added that no evidence was offered that her information was inaccurate, only that we were urged to ignore it because she was supposedly the woman scorned.

Among the more articulate and insightful commentaries I read on the topic was one penned by Sue Johnson. In the comments section of a 2014 article authored by Carol Rainey and published at *The UFO Trail*, Johnson wrote: (15)

> I've been following the Woods and Rainey issues with a great deal of interest since I became a voyeur of ufology a couple of years ago. The first thing I noticed about these two topics was that there were people actively trying to silence any discussion of or by Woods or Rainey. This, in a field where people otherwise seemed to be willing to discuss practically anything ad nauseum!
>
> The manner in which Woods and Rainey were silenced and

discredited was also of interest. Rainey was billed as A Bad Wife (horrors!), and I actually read a posting where someone called Woods a hysteric. It's not easy to call a woman a hysteric and not get laughed out of the room nowadays; has ufology finally invented the time machine?

However, I would argue that the Woods and Rainey issues are central to ufology today and merit attention. First, they are women in a field in which almost all those with a public voice, and therefore defining the narrative of the field, are men. As such, their presence and work is of intrinsic interest.

Second, they are participating in the public discourse of ufology as agents or actors rather in the role of victim or experiencer. They are thus in direct violation of the roles set for women (subordinate or victim) by the master narrative of gender relations set in the 1950s – ufology's heyday. Although they stand on the shoulders of other women in the field, their work is still an interesting and important development in ufology.

Third, they have presented clear, cogent, evidence-based logical arguments which are being silenced or ignored for reasons that have nothing to do with their actual content. In addition to the 1950s-era Bad Girl argument against paying attention to what Rainey and Woods have to bring to the table, I've also heard people say it's simply not that interesting or important. To my mind, that's a much more disturbing dismissal of their voices. Because:

Fourth, the issues raised by Woods and Rainey illustrate instances in which the usual goings-on in ufology cross the line from being mostly harmless to being very probably dangerous and almost certainly unethical. This is the point at which the outside world starts to sit up and take notice. Ufology seems to be lagging a decade or two behind the outside world with respect to lessons learned from things like the satanic ritual abuse panic and iatrogenic multiple personality disorder.

Over on the UFO Collective listserv I see this topic being debated in terms of validity of the ETH, the reality of abduction experiences, and the validity of regression hypnosis for retrieving

> memory. To me, these are side issues, or maybe even dead issues. The central issue is, why can't ufology address the content of the critiques posed by Woods and Rainey? It may be that ufology, as it is constituted today, is not capable of answering that question.

Indeed. If ufology continues to hide its eyes from pink elephants stampeding through the room, it's certainly no fault of Carol Rainey's.

---

1 YouTube: *1996 Budd Hopkins Hears of New Danger from Linda Cortile rev 022214: All Comments*

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=nCsBPbRXnmY

2 carolrainey.com: *about*

http://carolrainey.com/about.html

3 YouTube: *Momma Gets Her Ready*

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=myUw4Ml7SfM

4 *Emma Woods Files*

http://emmawoodsfiles.com/

5 Wayback Machine: *Paratopia*: *The Priests of High Strangeness: Co-Creation of the "Alien Abduction" Phenomenon*

https://web.archive.org/web/20110124192402/http://www.paratopia.net/paratopia_magazine/mag_previ

6 YouTube: *1996 Budd Hopkins Hears of New Danger from Linda Cortile rev 022214*

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=nCsBPbRXnmY

7 tricksterbook.com: *A Critique of Budd Hopkins' Case of the UFO Abduction of Linda Napolitano*

http://www.tricksterbook.com/ArticlesOnline/LindaCortileCase.htm

8 YouTube: *Carol Rainey*

https://www.youtube.com/user/Dali27?feature=watch

9 YouTube: *1996 Symbols Revealed as Evidence of Alien Abduction rev 022014*

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ovSKRuc2tGY

10 YouTube: *1996 Budd Hopkins Hears of New Danger from Linda Cortile rev 022214: All Comments*

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=nCsBPbRXnmY

11 *The UFO Trail*: *Carol Rainey: Open Letter to the UFO Community*

http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2014/02/carol-rainey-open-letter-to-ufo.html

12 *The Magonia Blog*: *Northern Echoes: I Read It in the Papers*

http://pelicanist.blogspot.com/2014/01/northern-echoes-i-read-it-in-papers.html

13 *The Magonia Blog*: *Northern Echoes: I Read It in the Papers*: *The Duke of Mendoza*

http://pelicanist.blogspot.com/2014/01/northern-echoes-i-read-it-in-papers.html?showComment=1390622919322#c6608714756819109801

14 *A Different Perspective*: *A Response to Budd Hopkins*

http://kevinrandle.blogspot.com/2011/02/response-to-budd-hopkins.html

15 *The UFO Trail*: *Carol Rainey: Open Letter to the UFO Community*: *Sue Johnson*

http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2014/02/carol-rainey-open-letter-to-ufo.html?showComment=1393553544330#c6405128339131753035

Chapter Seven
Dr. Tyler Kokjohn Interview

Tyler Kokjohn holds a Ph.D. in Biochemistry from Loyola University in Chicago. The doctor is a Professor of Microbiology at Midwestern University Arizona College of Osteopathic Medicine.

“For the last 17 years I have worked in association with a group investigating Alzheimer’s disease biochemistry and immunotherapy,” Dr. Kokjohn explained at my request in preparation for this chapter. “My interest in the UFO subject began in 1967 after reading *Flying Saucers - Serious Business* by Frank Edwards.”

Dr. Kokjohn is a popular podcast guest in ufology circles due to his areas of expertise, knowledge of UFO topics and willingness to discuss the issues. In June of 2015, he generously fielded questions for inclusion in this book. Following are the questions and his responses.

What do you think is the take away from the saga of Emma Woods and David Jacobs?

Dr. Kokjohn: Emma Woods was a research subject of Dr. David Jacobs, a high profile investigator of the alien abduction phenomenon. Their interactions were extensive and well documented in a collection of audio recordings. The body of evidence available suggests that Dr. Jacobs undertook actions with Emma that were unethical, often entirely lacking in technical merit and a frankly highly disturbing pale and aberrant imitation of scientific research.

Alien abduction research stagnated long ago. Recognizing honest introspection and critical appraisals are vital to ensure the vigor and rigor of research, scientists rely on their peers to provide insightful criticisms and help root out errors. The signs of a healthy scientific community are interactive efforts to discover evidence, meticulous evaluation of hypotheses and consistent attempts to reach consensus around verifiable facts while collectively contributing to building unifying theories about the field of interest. Hypotheses that cannot be directly confirmed (or refuted) by experimental evidence or observation are deemed to have limited utility. In stark contrast, abduction researchers exist in autonomous worlds of their own creation with few rules or limits. Indeed, the entire foundation of abduction research rests on nothing more substantial than self-referential circular hypotheses uncritically accepted as fact – a dizzying logical whirlwind of mysterious, space-faring aliens arriving by unknown means from an unknown location possessing advanced technologies with no known analogs and a compulsion to specifically adulterate human heredity. Free from any demands to verify their fantastic claims, some investigators have marketed ever more elaborate versions of self-serving, self-absorbed and wholly unscientific nonsense contributing little of substance toward understanding the alien abduction mystery.

Please comment on what you think is relevant about the work of such individuals as Emma Woods, Carol Rainey and others who directly addressed the extremely questionable behavior of self-described investigators within the alien abduction genre.

Dr. Kokjohn: The available evidence strongly suggests that neither Budd Hopkins nor Dr. David Jacobs were subject to the critical and objective external oversight generally considered essential for scientific research. Investigations involving human subjects must conform to high ethical and scientific standards. Principles and guidelines governing the conduct of research involving human subjects have been formalized in the 1978 Belmont Report and later documents. Concern for subject wellbeing, full respect for their autonomy and the general criterion of beneficence must be integral to all aspects of the work. All investigators must ensure prospective subjects are

advised about the full purpose, complete requirements/expectations and foreseeable risks of the research before any work begins. The necessary information is provided to prospective research participants through written informed consent documents created in consultation with an Institutional Review Board (IRB). Emma Woods and Carol Rainey have presented information suggesting that compulsory informed consent processes were short circuited in a manner to benefit the investigators.

Audio recordings released by Emma Woods reveal what seem to be scientific incompetence, an apparent callous indifference regarding the physical and emotional wellbeing of his terrorized subject and inappropriate discussions of matters having no bearing on any valid research hypotheses. In a truly remarkable turn of events, Dr. Jacobs initiated an effort to enlist Emma in a bizarre scheme to suit his perceived personal needs. In the process the normal research relationship was literally overturned as Emma was transformed from a subject in an investigation into an expedient instrument to ensure the safety and continued wellbeing of *Dr. Jacobs*. The recordings left me with the impression that Dr. Jacobs created, directed and played the starring role in a strange personal drama which had no legitimate scientific purposes.

An interview with Dr. Jacobs conducted by Jack Brewer and published on *The UFO Trail* blog brought forth more troubling statements. During a discussion of his work Dr. Jacobs revealed he had attempted on more than one occasion to collect samples of genetic materials and submitted them to laboratory testing. Such efforts would clearly constitute a critical investigation strategy to establish the veracity of testimony provided by many alien abductees. The power and availability of examination methods today would make efforts to analyze possible samples of alien genetic material literally the first thing any researcher would want to do. The problem for Dr. Jacobs is that his acknowledgment he had undertaken multiple efforts to sample and test genetic materials from abductees seems to directly contradict his earlier descriptions of his work. An investigation prompted by complaints of research misconduct lodged by Emma Woods ended when Dr. Jacobs and Temple University authorities stipulated he was not actually engaged in any research activities. Instead it was explained Dr. Jacobs was engaged only in oral history taking. That is an important distinction because the requirements

to conduct oral history taking are typically far less stringent than those for research involving human subjects. However, it is difficult to reconcile the active collection and laboratory analyses of genetic material samples from abductees with the activities reasonably anticipated to fall under an ambit of oral history taking. Perhaps Dr. Jacobs will reveal the rationales that permitted his aggressive brand of oral history taking and explain how he could legitimately claim work which yielded results enabling him to reach generalizable conclusions which he disseminated through publication did not meet the formal definition of research.

Where can the genre of reported high strangeness go from here, and what responsibilities do its leaders and trend setters, such as UFO organizations, their board members and high profile researchers, have in the process?

Dr. Kokjohn: For decades, David Jacobs and Budd Hopkins extracted information from hypnotized subjects. Confident that they could separate important truth from confabulation, free from having to defend their methods and conclusions through any meaningful peer review process, they constructed layer on layer of elaborately contrived, uncorroborated rationalizations for their findings. While they were hard at work, the scientific community was inventing and perfecting genetic analysis tools of immense power. What were once safely untestable hypotheses explaining a nefarious program of genetic colonization by aliens, the creation of human-alien hybrids, missing pregnancies, women used as breeders and a coming takeover of our planet, *etc*., suddenly become readily approachable with the new methods. If a systematic program of clandestine adulteration of the human genome has been taking place right under our noses for decades, the telltale molecular fingerprints could be readily detected in the lab. In principle, definitive demonstrations of the alien manipulations should be straightforward as some investigators assert they personally know the identities and whereabouts of human-alien genetic hybrids or claim to have served as ‘breeders’ themselves. The new analytic tools are powerful enough to reveal the presence of alien hybrids while an implanted embryo is developing or reach back to uncover the DNA evidence of pregnancies from

decades in the past, including those that did not progress to term. Alien abduction researchers must either produce the genetic evidence that proves they have uncovered an incredible invasion from another world(s) or explain the inability to substantiate their claims. To date, no abduction researchers have come forward with the evidence.

Alien abduction research is a cottage industry based on a tradition of obscurantism. Heavily dependent on hypnotic regression and introspection approaches, investigators have not adhered to the scientific community standard practice of complete disclosure of all methods including the means employed to confirm their validity and reliable limits of application. Rather than enabling the objective assessment of their procedures, abduction investigators using hypnotic regression claim they possess secret information known only to a select cabal which enables them to distinguish real truth from confabulation. Abduction researchers have certified their approach with a self-serving circular logic while reducing confirmation bias to routine practice. The results - a florid hodgepodge of extraordinarily detailed claims regarding a secret program of assaults on human beings complete with purported explanations of the full motivations of the utterly alien extraterrestrial beings behind it all. One of the first questions probably occurring to any scientist reviewing these results would be how investigators using essentially the same methods have obtained so many different versions of ‘the’ truth. That diversity alone should have raised concerns regarding the basic validity of the methods long ago.

A rationale for the use of controversial hypnosis methods is the claim the aliens cover their tracks by installing screen memories preventing their victims from recalling events spontaneously. Only the use of hypnotic regression allows investigators to penetrate these devices and root out the real truth. Although invoked and accepted as both a rationale and explanation, screen memories themselves are a hypothetical construct. No one has proved they actually exist, deduced their mechanism, detailed their full extent of their impact on memory and cognitive function or explained why many abductees recall their experiences without the need for hypnosis or how investigators are able to defeat them.

From an investigator’s perspective, alien-installed screen memories are probably something it is best for the rest of us not to think about too deeply.

Dr. David Jacobs has long claimed he could penetrate alien-installed screen memories in abductees. At what point may one rest assured the curtain has been lifted and reliable information revealed? Attempts to establish this are doomed to collapse into an infinite spiral of never-ending doubt over whether one has or has not outfoxed the enemy. The aliens read minds and are allegedly pretty smart, what if they have a layered defense system? What if you know only what they want you to know, Doctor? What if they know you know? These questions can be tough to resolve. Based on the 'tactics' he employed with Emma Woods, it certainly seems Dr. Jacobs believed he could direct misleading messages to alien hybrids by manipulating her mental state through clandestine hypnotic suggestions. Confident he could seed disinformation while deftly avoiding both detection and any countermeasures deployed by his mind-reading hybrid enemies, he never saw his problems with Emma coming.

The problems with hypnotic regression methodology and mysticism masquerading as rationales for its use have been front and center for many years. Unfortunately, for decades other investigators, opinion leaders and UFO organizations issued neither meaningful critiques nor challenges to the weak methodology, erroneous assumptions and gaping logical holes rampant in abduction research. The scientific charlatans were given free reign and the result has been the construction and sale of an elaborate house of cards under a guise of science.

The longstanding alien abduction explanations proffered by some high profile investigators may finally face some harsh scientific judgment. New developments in genetic analysis technology make it possible to detect direct evidence of human-alien hybridization, missing pregnancies or indigo children and establish whether or not human heredity is being adulterated. A core activity of science is the testing and evaluation of hypotheses. The leaders of ufology, those interested in a scientific pursuit of the mystery, must insist that this process of confronting theory with hard data takes place.

It is unclear whether alien abduction investigators long accustomed to the unfettered freedom to create complex narratives with little corroborating evidence will embrace the new technologies. One reason might be because it is quite clear what can happen to cherished theories when they hit hard data. Ata, the extraterrestrial, promoted by Dr. Steven Greer was deemed

obviously the long sought proof positive for the existence of aliens. However, those perceptions did not survive a (still unpublished) genomic DNA analysis which revealed the strange remains were human. Researchers and trendsetters have a responsibility to deploy the scientific analyses able to definitively establish the validity or failure of longstanding hypotheses.

A tough aspect of scientific research is that some truly wonderful and pleasing ideas do not survive confrontations with data and must be reformulated or abandoned. Creative destruction is the essential force needed to drive scientific knowledge forward. Many abduction investigators may prefer to hang on to the traditional methods of hypnotic regression as long as possible rather than face the prospect that their bold and unequivocal declarations of astonishing discoveries cannot be validated with independent evidence. These investigators have constructed entire worlds out of testimony obtained with an inherently unreliable method. Without so much as directly examining a single authentic hybrid or alien entity or unequivocally establishing their existence in the first place, abductionologists proclaim they have exposed the hidden program and deduced the intentions of unknown intelligent creatures arriving from an unidentified location by mysterious means. Perhaps it will take a new generation of researchers less constrained by associations to specific claims to realize that although some hypotheses to explain alien abductions are failures, the fundamental mystery persists. Trendsetting organizations have a responsibility to seek out investigators able and willing to explore new avenues and support their work.

If the situation regarding alien abduction research has revealed anything it is to be constantly on guard to prevent highly pleasing theories and confirmation bias from pushing us too far ahead of the scientifically reliable facts. The phenomena are complex, poorly understood and difficult to approach. To comprehend them will require systematic and patient approaches.

What options and responsibilities do we have as consumers and potential supporters of UFO organizations?

Dr. Kokjohn: The web gives consumers wide latitude to elect to participate

actively in the evaluation and production of research data. Posting well written and thoughtful comments presents consumers with a chance to interact with book and blog authors to offer support, critiques or suggestions. A great democratizer because it provides opportunities to so many persons to contribute their thoughts or become information publishers, the low entry barriers to participation demands consumers evaluate the materials on offer carefully.

The recent ‘Roswell Slides’ controversy suggests that interested members of the public are capable of performing a highly effective peer review even if the original researchers seem disinterested in undertaking such work themselves. The ability to disseminate findings through web pages, blogs and social media including Facebook and Twitter gives consumers unprecedented leverage to demand and sometimes contribute to the creation of improved products. An environment in which the public may be able to confirm, extend or refute published results provides strong incentives for researchers to produce quality work and poses some strong challenges regarding matters such as data ownership and copyright rules. The situation is fluid and the swift humiliation of the Roswell Slides team at the hands of self-empowered peer reviewers suggests that future investigators may be reticent to share images and/or raw data. Consumers may have to assert their right of review aggressively or publishers may have to adopt a system similar to mainstream science in which select groups of peers are entrusted to evaluate papers prior to release. There may be no perfect way to go about this, but consumers and research groups must be diligent in insisting on review processes with integrity or demanding a capacity to conduct their own reviews when appropriate.

The Roswell Slides aftermath reminds us that the UFO interest community will probably always have to contend with a fifth column. Many products created for the community interested in UFOs are intended to make a profit and some producers may be hostile to accepting any information which undermines their hypotheses or findings. It also seems true that some consumers may resist accepting any information which conflicts with their opinions. When information is sketchy and results are controversial a diversity of opinions is predictable. The Roswell Slides situation developed quickly once the orchestrators had presented their show in Mexico City and

provides a fascinating example of a convergence of forces dictating public behaviors. When evaluating grant funding applications, mainstream scientists examine the track record of the applicant; their training, experience, publications and deliverables produced. While past performance does not necessarily predict how applicants will fare in the future, those with disappointing records are not rated as highly. Another check point for mainstream scientists appears during the publication process in which all authors are required to reveal any conflict of interest such as funding support and consultancy work that might have bearing on the work being presented for publication. Consumers are well advised to research what investigators have done in the past and how they did it as they decide whether to buy a book, attend a lecture or donate to a fund raising campaign.

Please feel encouraged to comment further on issues you feel relevant and deserve attention.

Dr. Kokjohn: For decades, alien abduction researchers using hypnotic regression methods have proclaimed that humans are involuntary participants in a nefarious and systematic effort by extraterrestrial beings to adulterate our genetic heredity. Through heroic efforts, investigators claim to have penetrated a deep conspiracy to lay bare an intricate program to remove reproductive cells, create human-alien hybrid embryos, implant them in women abductees and remove them at will at later dates to complete their gestation in external devices. Further, some have informed us that these telepathic aliens will not be content to merely steal our genetic information. The hybrids walk among us now and a plan for the genetic conquest of our entire planet is well underway.

The use of hypnosis as a memory recovery tool is controversial due to issues with subject confabulation, among other problems. However, alien abduction investigators have ideal opportunities to produce the hard genetic evidence that would corroborate their claims and expose alien manipulation of the human genome. Situations such as missing pregnancies and the announcement that at least one investigator claims to have served as a breeder might provide potential traces of alien manipulation decades after gestation was terminated. Other investigators claim to know the identities and

whereabouts of human-alien hybrids. At least one other person has publically claimed to *be* a hybrid. It is high time for one or all of these claimants to produce the hard data to prove their fantastic stories.

The situation is extraordinary. Abduction researchers assert they have uncovered a plot against humanity perpetrated by extraterrestrials. If confirmed, these discoveries would represent earthshaking events worthy of Nobel Prize awards and far more. The genetic tools to corroborate the claims have been available for a number of years, the potential sources of testable material are known and available. And nothing has happened. Decide for yourself what nothing reveals.

Chapter Eight

The Rosetta Deception and the UFOs That Never Were

James Carrion earned degrees in Russian language and international affairs from Florida State University. He is a former intelligence analyst for the US Army and held the position of International Director of the Mutual UFO Network from 2006 to 2009. It is therefore not surprising that his research interests include Russian espionage, the Cold War and UFOs. James Carrion is more qualified than most to offer opinions on the subjects and, whether or not we choose to agree with what he feels his findings indicate, a valid argument could be well made that consideration of his research and resulting analyses are in order.

I have viewed some of his presentations and read his papers over the years, as well as read his book, *The Rosetta Deception*. I am subsequently of the understanding that Carrion interprets the role of human deception, and particularly as perpetrated by the government, to be relatively unexplored and fertile ground within the study of reported UFOs. That would be the case,

anyway, as far as his approach of conducting professional research is concerned, as compared to the much more commonly found unsubstantiated conspiracy mongering. James is an advocate of protocols established by the professional research community, such as respecting standards of evidence. His work consists of citing authenticated documents, for example, and similar such sources universally identified as valid.

The gist of the research presented in *The Rosetta Deception* is that phenomena which came to be known as the 1946 ghost rocket sightings were part of a US-led deception operation, masterminded and conducted *by a select few*. The purposes included creating animosity towards the Soviet Union, but Carrion strongly suspects the primary objective was to crack the Russian diplomatic code. This would have been accomplished in part through a method known as gardening, a procedure which involves creating circumstances necessarily of interest to enemy spies, assuring that specific key words will be prevalent in coded messages. Opportunities to break the code are therefore increased.

In order to adequately understand the points presented in Carrion's research, it is my interpretation that one should begin by developing a firm grasp of his view of the government and how it conducted deception operations circa 1946-47, which is the time period explored in *The Rosetta Deception*. It is essential to understand that the US intelligence community (IC) was in a state of transition, was very compartmentalized and operated on a needs to know basis. More specifically, the proverbial “they” that is popularly used to refer to a unified and deceptive government is an incorrect and a vastly over-simplified concept.

The fact of the matter, Carrion explained via such works as his paper *New Avenues for UFO Research* and book *The Rosetta Deception*, is that everyone in the IC is not privy to all of the information obtained and all of the operations taking place.(1,2) Moreover, intel agencies will spread inaccurate information within their own ranks with the intentions of creating confusion among adversaries attempting to analyze the developments.

Please allow me to emphasize that, in order to best digest Carrion's points, one should understand there would have been only a very small group of US intelligence officials who were aware of the proverbial puzzle box lid as

proposed in *The Rosetta Deception*. A bit larger - but still small – group of US and foreign officials would have had access to various puzzle pieces, yet would have nonetheless been either uninformed or misinformed about the overall picture.

The uninformed and misinformed included the US president and, truth be told, is probably the case much, much more often than many of us would like to consider. Select groups of intelligence agents historically conduct operations as they deem justified, hidden under the cloak of secrecy from effective oversight and public accountability.

The much larger and most common demographic of the 1946-47 IC would have been personnel analyzing material as instructed, investigating circumstances as ordered and, generally speaking, unaware of details of the highest priorities and most classified operations. My point being forget the "they."

"They" did not have a unified hive mentality. Far from it. "They" actually consisted of many people, very few of which were on the same page. Individuals within the IC acted in conflicting manners not only because doing so was by indirect design, but also because the individuals sometimes genuinely did not know what their peers and supervisors knew or understand exactly why their colleagues did the things they did.

As Carrion demonstrated through now declassified communications, intelligence personnel at times assessed the severity and potential threat of certain circumstances based in part upon the interest and concern, or lack thereof, shown by their bosses. If the "brass" did not seem concerned, intelligence analysts might suspect it was because those in the loop were well aware of the more closely guarded details of events, if not outright responsible for them.

It should be understood there have been stages of developments in the research of James Carrion that led him to his conclusions. He began presenting papers at MUFON conferences a few years ago, or at least that is when I first started following his work, and it has evolved, building upon each successive stage.

I am currently going to limit my summary of some of Carrion's more recent work to addressing what I interpret to be a few of the key aspects of

quite human activity surrounding the so-called ghost rocket phenomena. I am doing so for reasons including it is necessary to develop clear understandings of each phase of his work prior to trying to accept what, to date, is the larger picture and overall thesis. I am certain that I am interpreting correctly from his previous papers, presentations and book that he suspects the UFO-related deception conducted by the IC in the 1940's was not limited to ghost rockets. I fully anticipate future material to be published by James in which he delves further into the subject matter. I will therefore currently consider a limited yet specific section of his work as I look forward to more to come.

Ghost Rockets Over Scandinavia

Let's consider that, in *The Rosetta Deception*, Carrion cited official declassified correspondence dated July, 1946.(3) It was sent from the US Military Attache Sweden to the War Department Military Division. The attache stated that the Swedish army was studying 300 to 400 rocket incidents, including six in which rockets reportedly exploded in the air and some fifty points of impact were observed. The attache added that debris fragments were being studied.

However accurate such information may or may not have been, as future reports varied greatly, President Truman was briefed on the rockets in a memo dated August 1, 1946. Carrion explained that the memo, titled *Ghost Rockets over Scandinavia*, was authored by the Executive to the Director of Central Intelligence.(4) The executive explained to the president that the Director of Intelligence of the War Department General Staff concluded the rockets were V1-type, noiseless and carried small demolition charges for self-destruction, among other characteristics. Amazingly, Carrion observed, a July 13, 1946 article, predating the Truman briefing by over two weeks and published in *The Washington Post*, reported that the mysterious rockets were set to self-destruct.

“Someone in the War Department was leaking information to the press,” Carrion deduced, and presented numerous additional circumstances in which the IC manipulated and collaborated with the media.

Perhaps the most accurate and candid intelligence assessment of the “ghost

rocket” situation was produced in August of 1946, Carrion continued.(5) The US military attache in Stockholm composed an intelligence report in which he noted numerous contradictions in the information being provided by the Swedish intelligence services.(6) The attache suggested Sweden may have been concealing its knowledge of the rockets while encouraging the belief the flights were of foreign origin. It was observed that there continued to be a lack of tangible evidence actually presented, and that “the Swedish Defense Staff obviously wishes us to believe that the reported objects are rockets.”

The intelligence report further stated that the Swedish press was in an uproar while the public was expressing considerable concern. In spite of such circumstances, the Swedish Air Force allowed officers to remain on summer leave and did not significantly increase security measures, circumstances leading some American intelligence analysts to suspect the upper echelon was not the least bit concerned about the mounting reports of so-called ghost rockets.

To drive his points home, the author of the report and attache in Stockholm, Leonard M. Johnson, emphasized that he believed the Swedish Defense Staff knew the origin of the missiles, was not worried about them, and wanted to encourage the belief there were Russian rockets over Sweden. James Carrion suggested that Johnson was largely correct in his assessment, but added that he interpreted select American officials to be key participants as well in the deception operation.

The Rosetta Deception

Among the many reasons offered for why that was the case, Carrion cited suspicious information passed to President Truman when he was briefed again in late August, 1946.(7) This time the memo was composed by Director of Central Intelligence Hoyt Vandenberg.(8) In spite of such intelligence as provided by Leonard M. Johnson, Vandenberg questionably informed the president the most likely explanation for the rockets was Russian origin for the primary purpose of experimentation. Vandenberg chose to relay that scenario in direct contradiction to the fact he was well aware Swedish intelligence personnel were providing conflicting reports, they were either

unable or unwilling to present physical evidence of their allegations against the Russians, and the press was obviously being fed the narrative.

Vandenberg provided information to the president obtained from what he termed a “key Swedish Air Officer,” a man who was otherwise quickly and conclusively discredited by both Swedish and American officials. The Swedish officer, Stig Wennerstrom (also referred to as Wennerstreen), was eventually convicted of spying on behalf of the Russians, and was quickly established to have been “planting” information about the ghost rockets, in all likelihood on behalf of the Americans.(9)

Vandenberg willfully supplied Truman with what could reasonably be considered extremely questionable information concerning origin and purposes of the reported ghost rockets. It is for such reasons that James Carrion suspects DCI Hoyt Vandenberg was a key participant in what Carrion dubbed the Rosetta Deception, a component of which was the farce known as the ghost rockets.

Conclusive Deception

I contend that whether or not one chooses to agree with James' assessments, his research makes it more than evident that further investigation is justified into the quite human aspects of the ghost rocket sightings. Carrion may very well be correct in his analysis, but whatever the purposes of the deception may have been, he has indeed established that intelligence officials were engaging in intentionally misinforming and withholding information from one another, including the president of the United States. That, combined with the manipulation of global media, is relevant, whatever the list of possible reasons. That is particularly the case if one is going to assert an extraterrestrial or paranormal aspect to the “ghost rockets” while neglecting to factor into the equation the significance of the intelligence community.

In the previously mentioned paper, *New Avenues for UFO Research*, Carrion presented a curious FBI memo.(10) He reported that the July 30, 1947, document stated:

> FLYING DISCS – The Bureau, at the request of the Army Air Forces Intelligence, has agreed to cooperate in the investigations of flying discs. The Air Force have confidentially advised that it is possible to release three or more discs in odd numbers, attached together by a wire, from an airplane in high altitudes and that these discs would obtain tremendous speed in their descent and would descend to the earth in an arc. The Army Air Forces Intelligence has also indicated some concern that the reported sightings might have been made by subversive individuals for the purpose of creating a mass hysteria.

A number of relevant issues arise. Let's consider the Air Force and its exploration of UFOs as potential psychological weapons.

An August, 1949, USAF Project Grudge report concluded, “Planned release of unusual aerial objects coupled with the release of related psychological propaganda could cause mass hysteria.”(11)

The authors of the report added, “Employment of these methods by or against an enemy would yield similar results.”

They went on to offer several recommendations, including, “That psychological Warfare Division and other governmental agencies interested in psychological warfare be informed of the results of this study.”

At about the same time someone or other in the Army Air Force was apparently slinging discs attached together by wire out of airplanes at high altitudes that “would obtain tremendous speed” as they plummeted to earth in an arc, someone else was developing something called electronic countermeasures. ECM, as it was known, was born in the 1940's and by 1950 became standard equipment on advanced Air Force bombers. It quickly evolved into providing simulated targets for training radar operators, or, in other words, creating false radar paints.

Chemical engineer, scientist and Manhattan Project participant Dr. Leon Davidson wrote about the technology - and how he suspected it related to UFO reports - in his 1959 article, *ECM + CIA = UFO*.(12) What started out as dropping aluminum foil strips from planes in order to clutter up enemy radar, Davidson explained, developed into a CIA psychological manipulation

tool.

“I contend that since 1951,” Dr. Davidson wrote, “the CIA has caused or sponsored saucer sightings for its own purposes.”

To whatever extents Davidson may have been correct, ECM research and development indeed culminated into Project Palladium. CIA man Gene Poteat explained the operation in his 1998 report, *Stealth, Countermeasures and ELINT, 1960-1975*.(13)

Poteat wrote that each Palladium operation consisted of a CIA team with its ghost aircraft system, an NSA team with special communications intelligence and encryption equipment, and a military operational support team. False radar paints were injected onto enemy radar, consisting of phantom aircraft of any size desired, traveling on any flight path at any speed and altitude.

Just as 1949 Project Grudge personnel foresaw the potential value of releasing unusual aerial objects, Poteat reported that he and his fellow Palladium personnel coordinated the release of “balloon-borne metalized spheres” with the false radar paints. During a 1962 operation off the coast of Cuba, the spheres were launched into the path of the phantom aircraft, causing a great deal of confusion among Cuban forces. I suspect that was particularly the case when the ghost craft, which Cubans monitored electronically and tried to chase by plane, suddenly disappeared from radar as a pilot planned to fire upon the target, as Poteat explained of his team's successful exploits.

Obviously, the CIA was willing to assume the role of precisely such subversive individuals as considered in the 1947 FBI memo and later contemplated by those read in to Project Grudge. Just eight years removed from the 1946 ghost rocket reports, and eight years before Gene Poteat was running pilots in circles chasing metallic spheres off the coast of Cuba, CIA assets in Guatemala were instructed to consider fabricating a UFO story as a tactic to divert public attention from an Agency-supported coup.

A now declassified 1954 CIA memo instructed operatives, “If possible, fabricate big human interest story, like flying saucers, birth sextuplets in remote area to take play away.”(14)

The recommendations were offered as strategies to minimize the consequences of a then-recently published white paper which outed CIA involvement in Guatemalan political affairs. Objectives reflected in the memo outlined creating a bigger media splash than was achieved by the white paper, including the possible use of a sensational flying saucer story to do so.(15)

Capability and Opportunity

Let's consider another intelligence official, in addition to Hoyt Vandenberg, who Carrion identified as likely to have been active in the Rosetta Deception. The man was Commander, US Naval Forces in Europe, Admiral Henry Kent Hewitt.(16)

Carrion used a now declassified 1946 memo to establish that although Hewitt claimed the Navy was very interested in the ghost rockets and obtaining physical evidence for analysis, he actually discouraged the Navy from pursuing an opportunity to retrieve such evidence from a reported crash site.(17) Hewitt downplayed the chance to secure fragments of a reported ghost rocket when a lake was identified as a possible crash site, and he questionably suggested there would be better opportunities to retrieve debris later.

Perhaps most telling of all and as Carrion demonstrated, the admiral was personally in a physical position to oversee launching missiles across Scandinavia when Swedish ghost rocket reports spiked, July 9-12, 1946. Carrion cited sources including interviews and newspaper clippings which established that Hewitt, who was usually in London, was on what was promoted as a “good will” tour during the dates in question. It is noteworthy that Hewitt was skilled and experienced in tactical deception, as was Captain Henri H. Smith-Hutton, who was called to duty for Hewitt's supposed flotilla of good will.

Also of interest is the fact Hewitt's tour at one point included a rendezvous with a ship under the command of Admiral Roscoe H. Hillenkoetter, who would soon afterwards replace Hoyt Vandenberg as Director of Central Intelligence. Admiral Hillenkoetter would eventually and curiously become a member of the board of governors of the UFO-research organization, the

National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena.

As James Carrion demonstrated history now shows us, the USS Houston was under the direct command of Admiral Henry Kent Hewitt in July, 1946, when it dropped anchor off the coast of Sweden. Accompanying the Houston were several Navy vessels, including the USS Little Rock under the command of Captain Smith-Hutton. The two officers, skilled and experienced in the art of designing and executing deception operations, were literally commanding ships off the Swedish coast during a time period in which some 300 ghost rocket reports were filed, marking one of the most active points of the saga.

---

1 UC San Diego: *New Avenues for UFO Research*

http://scilib.ucsd.edu/sio/hist/Carrion_New%20Avenues.pdf

2 *The Rosetta Deception*

http://rosettadeception.blogspot.com/

3 *The Rosetta Deception*: *The Rosetta Deception – Chapter 42*

http://rosettadeception.blogspot.com/2014/07/the-rosetta-deception-chapter-42.html

4 Keep and Share: *August 1 – 1946.pdf*

http://www.keepandshare.com/doc13/6664/august-1-1946-pdf-180k

5 *The Rosetta Deception*: *The Rosetta Deception – Chapter 45*

http://rosettadeception.blogspot.com/2014/07/the-rosetta-deception-chapter-45.html

6 Keep and Share: *August 16, 1946- Report 35-S-46.pdf*

http://www.keepandshare.com/doc13/6677/august-16-1946-report-35-s-46-pdf-640k

7 *The Rosetta Deception*: *The Rosetta Deception – Chapter 46*

http://rosettadeception.blogspot.com/2014/07/the-rosetta-deception-chapter-46.html

8 Keep and Share: *August 22 - 1946 - Memo for President Truman.pdf*

http://www.keepandshare.com/doc13/6680/august-22-1946-memo-for-president-truman-pdf-203k

9 *Follow the Magic Thread*: *The UFO Spy Who Came in from the Cold*

http://followthemagicthread.blogspot.com/2015/03/the-ufo-spy-that-came-in-from-cold.html

10 UC San Diego: *New Avenues for UFO Research*

http://scilib.ucsd.edu/sio/hist/Carrion_New%20Avenues.pdf

11 Majestic Documents: Project Grudge, August 1949: *Part 1*

http://www.majesticdocuments.com/pdf/project-grudge_part1.pdf

12 Stealth Skater: *ECM + CIA = UFO*

http://www.stealthskater.com/Documents/Davidson_01.pdf

13 Central Intelligence Agency: *Stealth, Countermeasures and ELINT, 1960-1975*

http://www.foia.cia.gov/sites/default/files/DOC_0006122549.pdf

14 Wayback Machine: U.S. Department of State Office of the Historian: *Foreign Relations of the United States, 1952-1954, Guatemala, Document 89*

https://web.archive.org/web/20120807002844/http://history.state.gov/historicaldocuments/frus1952-54Guat/d89

15 *The New York Times*: *The C.I.A.'s Cover Has Been Blown? Just Make Up Something About U.F.O.'s*

http://www.nytimes.com/2003/07/06/weekinreview/06WORD.html?8bl&_r=0

16 *The Rosetta Deception*: *The Rosetta Deception – Chapter 48*

http://rosettadeception.blogspot.com/2014/07/the-rosetta-deception-chapter-48.html

17 Keep and Share: *August 24 - 1946 - Oslo.pdf*

http://www.keepandshare.com/doc13/6717/august-24-1946-oslo-pdf-183k

Chapter Nine
James Carrion Interview

In March of 2015, James Carrion agreed to field some questions for

inclusion in this book. Below are some qualifying statements I provided to James, followed by my questions and his responses.

Jack Brewer: You have researched and reported on specific time periods and UFO flaps, such as the so-called ghost rocket phenomenon of 1946.

Would you please summarize what you think is most important for the UFO community to understand about the way you approach your work and the circumstances you have discovered?

James Carrion: My approach is similar to that of any investigator of anecdotal evidence – assessing the person(s) behind the anecdote and their possible motives first. Are they telling the truth or telling a lie? When a lie is found out, no matter how small, a red flag is raised that requires more in-depth investigation of the person(s), not the anecdote. Only when the human factor has been satisfied to be unimpeachable can the anecdote be examined on its face.

For example, if we take the 1946 Ghost Rockets, there are enough official declassified documents to show that a human deception operation was at play. Until that human deception is investigated and analyzed in all its facets and from all angles, and the motives for the deception established and explained, examining the anecdotes of the rockets themselves is an exercise in futility.

The same holds true for Ufology today. When an extraordinary claim is made, the person making the claim must be scrutinized with the eye of an insurance claims investigator or a homicide detective, not because the person is accused of committing a crime, but if a truthfulness red flag is discovered under scrutiny, then in-depth character investigation must be done first.

This is really the same approach the CIA uses to weed out potential counterintelligence threats – in the CIA's case, using a polygraph, not because it is an accurate tool for assessing truthfulness but because it is an essential tool for drawing out red flags that require further investigation and explanation.

You have probably heard of Marcello Truzzi's famous statement, "Extraordinary claims require extraordinary proof," and I would venture that even before examining the extraordinary claim, extraordinary character assessment is required first.

Too often UFO investigators gloss over the human factor, and ignore red flags in their desire to get to the juicy "claim" because it meets the investigator's predisposed belief. In a majority of cases, that human assessment is relatively straightforward, as many witnesses are honest and have no ulterior motives. But the more sensational the case, the more important this character assessment becomes. Take for example the Stan Romanek case. To many UFO investigators he comes across as honest and sincere, but when glaring inconsistencies were noted in his experiences that suggested human deception and when questioned about it, he resisted further in-depth investigation. Major red flags were triggered. Honest people have nothing to hide.

Jack Brewer: Some people think the heavy involvement of the intelligence community in the early days of what came to be known as the modern UFO phenomenon is potentially important. Reasons for such opinions typically include the ideas that initial hypotheses and assumptions formed by UFO investigators were based on deceptions in the first place, so the foundations of ufology were unstable from the beginning for future generations.

Would you please share your thoughts on that and the significance of the IC in ufology?

James Carrion: What is most significant to me is that the modern day UFO era of the 1946 Ghost Rockets and the 1947 Maury Island incident, Kenneth Arnold sighting and the Roswell incident just happen to coincide with the time of tremendous flux that the US intelligence community found itself in after the war. The OSS had been disbanded in 1945 and its remnants were divided up between the State Department and the caretaker intelligence agency known as the Central Intelligence group, which together with the military intelligence agencies were jockeying for position to establish the new structure of the post war US intelligence community. This concentrated time frame was the Wild West of US Intelligence history and there were no central checks and balances to how these organizations were allowed to behave.

In addition, another set of events was playing out at the exact same time – massive indications of Soviet espionage in the US, Britain and Canada with simultaneous belligerent Soviet political and military pressures being felt in Europe.

This created the perfect storm for the intelligence operations that I believe the early modern day UFO events were part and parcel of. This was indeed a unique period in history. If the major UFO events from 1946-47 can be explained with documented evidence to be cold war deception operations, this radically alters Ufology as we know it today.

Those who do not study the extraordinary role that intricate deception operations played in the war cannot conceptualize how early UFO cases could have been part of deception operations in peacetime. Human deception is a far more plausible theory than the ET hypothesis for the UFO cases of 1946-1947. This is hard to swallow for many people in the UFO community or even outside the community who will then label such a theory as “conspiracy”. Of course, the only way to lose the conspiracy label is for the conspirators to come forward and admit to the act, but the original conspirators are long dead and the only evidence of their actions have to be pieced together from government archives and other relevant research.

I don’t believe that these postwar deceptions had to be some massive conspiracy - it is amazing how few people it really takes to pull off a successful deception if planned just right. Those who did participate had the necessary skills honed in WW2, the war weary motivation of staving off another world conflict, and a new enemy to target, who although once an ally, was not privy to the closely-held secrets of strategic deception and code breaking.

Jack Brewer: Mark Pilkington explored deception within the UFO community at length, including such circumstances as those involving Paul Bennewitz and Richard Doty, as well as Project Palladium and its potential to result in misunderstood reports of UFOs. Bruce Maccabee reported for years on his involvement with CIA personnel and their interest in UFOs. This included Maccabee's claim that, in 1990, CIA man Ron Pandolfi told Maccabee "that in the 1970's, the CIA had obtained 'firm evidence' that the KGB had devised a plan to use US citizens, including UFOlogists, to penetrate the US defense program."(1)

You have demonstrated, among other circumstances of interest, that Project Seal, circa 1940's, was intentionally misrepresented to involve an extremely advanced airborne weapon.(2) Similarly, you reported that Swedish Air Force officer and treasonous spy Stig Wennerstrom was directly

involved in spreading unsubstantiated rumors about what came to be known as the ghost rockets.(3) You have also reported significantly on dynamics of Russian espionage, the Cold War and UFOs.

Would you please summarize why such circumstances should be of interest to the UFO community? What is the potential harm of remaining unaware of such circumstances while forming assessments of reported UFO activity?

James Carrion: The majority in the UFO community are clueless about the depths that an intelligence agency can go to manipulate and manage people of interest. Foreign intelligence agencies are equally ruthless in this regard.

When a UFO researcher gets caught up in this tricky game, they are at a disadvantage, either not capable of detecting the manipulation until it's too late or even if they are aware, believing they can somehow manipulate the situation in their favor. Like dance partners, the lead is always taken by the agency and the researcher is always led. The history of Ufology is filled with such manipulations, and prominent UFO personalities like John Schuessler, Bill Moore, and Linda Moulton Howe have all been lead down the primrose path that leads to nowhere.

Easiest of all to manipulate are those UFO personalities that are ego driven to believe they have been selected, for example, as conduits of some future disclosure or as the trusted confidante of a deep throat insider, and if they just play the game being asked, they will reap the benefits of the fame and glory that await them. This too becomes a dead-end of broken promises.

Recognizing the manipulator and the manipulation is one thing, being able to stop it in its tracks, another. The best resource the investigator has at their disposal is hardcore investigative skills - a combination of investigative journalist and an experienced police detective, with both a high tolerance for ambiguity and a finely calibrated bullshit meter.

Recognizing and thwarting human deception and manipulation is not for the faint of heart and ultimately time consuming and draining. Hundreds of hours of hardcore investigation may be necessary to get but a glimpse of the manipulation. Most UFO researchers neither have the time, the stomach nor the investigative skill to sustain the level of effort required, and will often time take the path of least resistance.

Jack Brewer: Controversial philanthropist Robert Bigelow has been credited with funding a wide range of UFO-related research projects for decades, as well as providing funding to the likes of such investigators as Budd Hopkins, John Mack, David Jacobs and many more. The credibility, ethics and intentions demonstrated during a number of such ventures have been called into question.

The Bigelow-funded 1991 Roper Poll, in which Hopkins, Jacobs and Westrum questionably concluded that millions of Americans had experienced UFO abductions, was competently debunked by numerous qualified scholars. (4) Despite that being the case, the dubious conclusions continue to be popularly cited as indications of wide scale alien nefarious activities, and even though those surveyed were never actually asked if they were abducted by aliens.

The Carpenter Affair, in which during the 1990's John Carpenter received financial compensation from Bigelow in exchange for providing data contained in case files of alleged alien abductees without their knowledge or consent, was a liability to MUFON and the genre as a whole.(5) You have explained that, in more recent years, Bigelow was moving funds originating from an undisclosed sponsor – the identify of which he revealed only to John Schuessler, not the rest of the MUFON board of directors - during the failed MUFON-BAASS relationship.(6)

Would you please explain why the UFO community should be concerned about matters of transparency? Why is it potentially important that Bigelow failed to disclose the identity of a financial sponsor?

James Carrion: Robert Bigelow has his own personal agenda that I highly doubt is the discovery of UFO truth. I perceive him as a Howard Hughes type who has deep connections within the intelligence community and most likely volunteers to act as a convenient financier and money man conduit between the intelligence agencies, their contractors, and the UFO community. Perhaps this grants him favored status when securing NASA contracts or perhaps he simple enjoys the game.

But there is no doubt in my mind that Robert Bigelow has ulterior motives that are not altruistic in the least. The insistence on non-disclosure agreements, the selective dissemination of information, the behind the scenes

manipulation of individuals and the very controlling hand that writes the check, but then wants to exercise strict control, does not indicate a philanthropist who is sincerely interested in solving the UFO mystery.

Lack of transparency means muddying of the UFO waters, and muddied waters reveal no truths, just dark and disgusting refuse.

Jack Brewer: Your work is not popular within the UFO community. Some people incorrectly identify you as suggesting there are no UFO incidents or related reports of high strangeness that might involve currently unknown phenomena. Accusations are also not uncommon that you are an irrational conspiracy theorist.

Being rather familiar with your work, as well as the way it has been received, I happen to be aware the accusations often appear to be defensive reactions to the detailed evidence you present about specific circumstances. I have also observed that people frequently qualify they have not read your work just before explaining why they discount it.

One of the dynamics that obviously eludes some of your critics is that you are not writing about *all* UFO reports, or suggesting conclusions about *all* incidents, but certain circumstances in particular. In your book *The Rosetta Deception,* for instance, it becomes increasingly apparent that, no matter what explanations might apply to *some* reported UFO sightings, the extraterrestrial hypothesis is among the least likely explanations for the ghost rockets. You effectively demonstrated that the ETH arguably should not even be on the table for that specific chain of events. Perhaps the negative reactions to your work and the personal attacks that became typical, as compared to careful and appropriate rebuttals, are indicative of a shortage of critical thinking and an actual lack of open-mindedness in the UFO community.

Where is ufology commonly running astray when it comes to differentiating between wishful thinking and professional research? Why might it be so difficult for UFO researchers to simply read the work of someone, such as you, and compose reasoned and pointed responses?

James Carrion: The UFO community is a self-supporting system that is threatened by any change in the status quo - the core beliefs that so many hold dear and unequivocally accept, whether or not they are paying lip service to “open minded” investigation. One of those beliefs is that UFOs are

extraterrestrial in nature, because as they reason, there are simply too many documented experiencers and eyewitnesses to discount the possibility. Any research that calls into question that belief is deemed heretical and the proponent of that research is summarily dismissed as a skeptic or a debunker.

Another core belief is unquestioning acceptance of what I have deemed the sacred cows of Ufology, those historical cases that are deemed unimpeachable examples of UFOs being extraterrestrial. The foo fighters are one of these sacred cows for the UFO community - the line of reasoning being if the "Nazis thought they were ours" and the "Allies thought they were Nazi", well they must be nonhuman in nature. The 1946 Ghost Rockets are equally held dear. Of course the most pivotal case and the UFO community's ultimate sacred cow is Roswell.

If you poke a sacred cow then you become anathema to the community, as I found out in 2009 when I was still the MUFON International Director. When my research uncovered evidence of human deception during the 1946-1947 time frame and I questioned whether Roswell could be a part of this deception, the community quickly closed ranks and I was declared persona non grata.

So in a nutshell you have a closed loop belief system that cannot tolerate dissent and simply is not supportive of, or conducive to, either professional research or standards of investigation.

---

1 *Unidentified Aerial Phenomena – Scientific Research: Dr Bruce Maccabee and the CIA*

http://ufos-scientificresearch.blogspot.com/2014/11/dr-bruce-maccabee-and-cia.html

2 UC San Diego: *New Avenues for UFO Research*

http://scilib.ucsd.edu/sio/hist/Carrion_New%20Avenues.pdf

3 *Follow the Magic Thread*: *The UFO Spy Who Came in from the Cold*

http://followthemagicthread.blogspot.com/2015/03/the-ufo-spy-that-came-in-from-cold.html

4 *The UFO Trail*: *The Bizarre World of Doctor David Jacobs: An Interview and Review, Part Two of*

Three

http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2012/04/bizarre-world-of-doctor-david-jacobs_29.html

5 *The UFO Trail*: *The Carpenter Affair: For the Record*

http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2013/10/the-carpenter-affair-for-record.html

6 *Follow the Magic Thread*: *Strange Bedfellows*

http://followthemagicthread.blogspot.com/2011/01/strange-bedfellows.html

Chapter Ten
Cold War Context

The Central Intelligence Agency was hard at work covertly destabilizing the government of Guatemala.(1) Code named Operation PBSUCCESS, the coup would prove effective in ousting the elected Guatemalan president. CIA headquarters would soon offer “heartiest congratulations” to PBSUCCESS operatives on what was termed a “great victory.”(2)

Prior to securing that great victory, accusations of the Agency's hidden manipulation of Guatemalan political affairs, viewed as sabotage by the regime in Guatemala, were published in a white paper. To combat the negative publicity created by the revelations (and as mentioned in Chapter Eight), CIA assets in Guatemala were instructed by cable to consider distracting attention from the white paper by such means as to “fabricate [a] big human interest story, like flying saucers.”(3)

The CIA cable additionally recommended assets ridicule the source of the paper, cultivate rumors the information contained in it was false, and spread fear the paper was a cover-up for, ironically, a secret Soviet military mission, among other subversive strategies proposed. PBSUCCESS headquarters located in Florida instructed CIA stations in Guatemala to cultivate public confusion and divert attention by essentially whatever creative means possible, including spinning a whopper of a UFO hoax.

The year was 1954. The date of the cable was January 30. By June, the coup was executed.

One of the things of which we might justifiably criticize the UFO community would be its typical lack of considering events in context. We periodically hear about one circumstance or another, or a particular point of interest or other, but rarely do we see several of these points considered in relation to one another, or put in some type of context. Did you know, for instance, the Rendlesham Forest Incident (December 26-28, 1980) and the Cash-Landrum event (December 29, 1980) happened at relatively the same time? I find that interesting, whatever it may or may not indicate. Let's look at some things that took place in the same era as when the CIA was conducting a coup in Guatemala and sending messages recommending assets fabricate big stories about flying saucers.

Propaganda

Television adaptations of *1984* were broadcast during 1953 in the US and during 1954 in England. The silver screen version was released in 1956.(4) The productions were based on the 1949 novel of the same name by English author George Orwell. The grim story revolved around a man in a futuristic totalitarian society whose job was to rewrite history for the Ministry of Truth. It is therefore darkly ironic that the CIA influenced the filmmakers of the 1956 movie to portray the character as less morally defeated than was the case in the original writing and against the specific wishes of the late author. (5)

An adaptation of Orwell's brilliant 1945 novel *Animal Farm* hit the big screen in 1954.(6) Following his death in 1950, Agency personnel were sent to visit the author's widow and secure rights to the film. The CIA subsequently presented a more overtly anti-Communist message on screen than Orwell chose to do in his classic written work. Orwell used a story of political rebellion among barnyard animals to metaphorically suggest the fundamental difference between greedy, power hungry capitalists and greedy, power hungry Communists was impossible to discern. CIA leadership apparently lacked appreciation for the perspective, which might have

particularly been the case considering they were in the process of sponsoring a coup in Guatemala.

Speaking of coups, the CIA had just toppled another regime, this one in Iran, in 1953. To give just a small example of the huge influence state-sponsored propaganda has on the population, I witnessed a fellow movie goer excitedly exclaim his challenge of information presented during a showing of the 2012 film, *Argo*. The movie had just begun, and a narrator was taking the audience through the tumultuous history of Iranian and American political relations. When the narrator explained the US manipulated the 1953 coup, the man in the theater blurted out, “That's not true!”

It of course actually was true, as the CIA released documents confirming its role in the uprising.(7) However and some 60 years after the initial fact, people apparently continued to remain so convinced and emotionally attached otherwise they were unable to refrain from shouting their disbelief of CIA intervention even while sitting in movie theaters.

During the early 1950's, CIA assets in Hollywood were very possibly applying their propaganda expertise in ways that not only influenced public perception of Uncle Sam and his CIA, but also widespread opinion of extraterrestrials. Writer and researcher Robbie Graham documented the involvement of potentially relevant personnel in the making of the iconic 1951 film, *The Day the Earth Stood Still*.(8) Verified propaganda specialists Darryl Zanuck and Edmund H. North were employed on the movie set as a production chief and a script writer. The film portrayed a story of a flying saucer landing in Washington, DC.

The next year brought a series of now famous reported UFO sightings to none other than Washington, DC.(9) On two consecutive weekends in July, 1952, unexpected radar blips were picked up by air traffic controllers. Light phenomena were reportedly observed by witnesses. The chain of events, which included scrambling fighter jets, received a great deal of media coverage. A significant amount of the public chose to attribute the events to extraterrestrial visitation, and I certainly wouldn't think the splash the film made the previous year depicting just such a scenario in the same city detracted from those assumptions. Many people within the UFO community continue today to passionately believe the DC flap of '52 was due to aliens.

Much less sensational possible explanations included temperature inversions causing the radar blips, and the reported light anomalies may have been due to layers of moisture which could have resulted in reflections. Writer, researcher and filmmaker Mark Pilkington suspected otherwise.

In several articles and interviews, as well as his book *Mirage Men*, Pilkington suggested the 1952 reports in DC may have been related to the development of electronic countermeasures technology.(10) As previously explored, ECM involved the creation of false radar blips and was contended by Manhattan Project participant Dr. Leon Davidson to have been used as a CIA psychological warfare tool, including the manufacture of "saucer sightings," as early as 1951.(11) CIA man Gene Poteat eventually reported the use of ECM in Project Palladium evolved to include the release of unusual aerial objects in coordination with false blips projected upon targeted radar screens.(12) Pilkington documented in *Mirage Men* that such deceptions continued to be considered for use by the US intelligence community until at least 1986, at which time officials contemplated conducting such an operation in Libya in order to sew the seeds of confusion and paranoia into the Khadafi regime.

To add fuel to the conspiracy fire of the 1952 DC flap, USAF Capt. Edward Ruppelt, who headed up the Air Force's official investigation of UFOs, Project Blue Book, claimed he was warned two days in advance of the reported sightings.(13) In the chapter titled *The Washington Merry-Go-Round* of his 1956 book *The Report on Unidentified Flying Objects*, Ruppelt described receiving a heads up from a scientist conducting UFO-related analysis that a major sighting was imminent. Ruppelt wrote that "a scientist, from an agency that I can't name," informed him that within the next few days Ruppelt was "going to have the granddaddy of all UFO sightings." Ruppelt added that the scientist predicted the event would occur in "Washington or New York," but "probably Washington."

Talented analyst, that unnamed scientist at that unnamed agency. Perhaps he went on to give up his lab coat to go play point spreads in Vegas.

Deception

Two months after the DC flap came the Flatwoods UFO Monster, an entity reportedly observed by witnesses after a fiery airborne object was said to have descended to the hills of West Virginia. The event drew substantial attention over the years. Some believed it was indicative of a true unknown, or even extraterrestrial encounter, while others were much less convinced.

I personally found the case interesting in the context of its similarities to a deception operation masterminded by British Maj. Jasper Maskelyne and conducted in Italy during World War II. Writer/researcher Nick Redfern drew fascinating correlations between the trickery of Maskelyne and the Flatwoods incident.(14) Redfern cited a 1950 RAND (Research and Development) Corporation report written for the USAF and titled, *The Exploitation of Superstitions for Purposes of Psychological Warfare*.(15)

The report detailed Maskelyne's exploits of scaring the daylights out of Italian peasants with his construction of a mechanical 12-foot tall "scarecrow." The device could "stagger forward under its own power and emit frightful flashes and bangs." The successful ruse bolstered support for British forces and caused numerous complications for German soldiers when locals were led to associate the menacing invader with the German troops.

Reports of the Flatwoods Monster bore interesting similarities to descriptions of Maskelyne's mechanical scarecrow. Redfern also noted similarities between the village-type communities in which the events occurred. Also considered was the fact the 1950 RAND report was composed for the Air Force, which demonstrated particular interest in the 1952 Flatwoods incident. Redfern may have been correct in his suspicion the Flatwoods case was some type of state-sponsored psychological experiment.

Maj. Maskelyne, who was a professional magician, became famous for designing and executing World War II deception operations. He and his "Magic Gang," as his unit was dubbed, were credited with such illusion-based accomplishments as deceiving German pilots into bombing an otherwise nonexistent port constructed entirely of props. The successfully achieved objective of the ruse was to protect the actual port. Maskelyne was also credited with brilliantly camouflaging troop movements, among other legendary feats.

Controversy and rumors surround the Magic Gang. Some of their

activities have no doubt been exaggerated and embellished, but I suspect some of it has also been concealed from public knowledge. It might be quite interesting to obtain a full report on the unit and its activities, but we will unfortunately have to wait – quite a while. A documentary televised a few years ago indicated that much of the work of Jasper Maskelyne remained classified. It is my understanding that the complete accounting of his deceptions was assigned a 100-year period before being considered for declassification, meaning it won't be subject to review until the year 2046.

Material currently available to the public on similar operations includes information on the “Ghost Army,” the nickname given to the US Army 23rd Headquarters Special Troops of World War II.(16) Files were declassified after 40 years on the unit, which consisted of about 1100 men recruited directly from advertising agencies and art schools for their creative talent. The Ghost Army's antics included strategic deceptions consisting of inflatable tanks and dummy artillery used as distractions. It should not be difficult to envision why some researchers suspect such circumstances may correlate with Mirage Men of UFO Land and yet to be revealed operations.

From 1950 to 1953 a colonel by the name of Edward G. Lansdale applied his creativity to practicing the art of black warfare in the Philippines. A former advertising executive, Lansdale served in the US Army, Air Force and CIA Office of Strategic Services during his career that culminated into achieving the rank of major general. The *Journal of the American Folklore Society* described the type of successful 1950's trickery conducted in the Philippines of which the ad man turned CIA agent became known:(17)

> The Filipino army had not been able to evict a squadron of Huks from the area of a garrison town. A combat psychological warfare squad was brought in and, under Lansdale's direction, planted stories among town residents of an *asuang* or vampire living on the hill where the Huks were based. A famous local soothsayer, they said, had predicted that men with evil in their hearts would become its victim. After giving the stories time to circulate, the squad set up an ambush on a trail used by the Huks and, when a patrol came by, snatched the last man. They

> punctured his neck with two holes, held the body upside down until it was drained of blood, and put it back on the trail. The next day the entire Huk squadron moved out of the area (Lansdale 1960:6-7).

That was apparently taking place during literally the same era in history, 1950-53, as the release of *The Day the Earth Stood Still* and the DC UFO flap, whatever that may indicate. After his campaigns in the Philippines, Lansdale was sent to set up shop in Vietnam as founder and chief of the CIA Saigon Military Mission under the guise of acting as an assistant air attache at the US Embassy.(18) He had the direct support and backing of Director of Central Intelligence Allen Dulles to engage in political-psychological warfare.

Lansdale's modus operandi continued to consist of fueling psyop campaigns through rumors spread by word of mouth. His toolbox included the distribution of propaganda attributing famous astrologers with predictions that were advantageous to American interests. He also recruited soothsayers to follow his instructions on how to advise their clientele.

The psywar specialist's work would later be thought by some to consist of ingenious ways of manipulating the system in favor of democracy, while others came to view his exploits as epitomizing arrogant American foreign policy gone wrong. Take him or leave him, the fact of the matter remains that Gen. Edward Lansdale rose all the way to providing intelligence reports and related recommendations to the Oval Office.(19)

It is possible his psyops evolved to include mass deceptions involving such subject matter as aliens and interplanetary spaceships. That might be particularly easy to envision, considering his preference for exploiting superstitious beliefs surrounding such topics as vampires and fortune telling. Such possible operations might remain classified at this point in time.

Spooks and Ufology

Other topics addressed in the book written by Blue Book Capt. Ruppelt included the existence of the Robertson Panel, a CIA-sponsored scientific

committee formed and briefed on military intelligence related to UFOs. Once the UFO community learned of the venture, the Air Force was pressured to release the panel's resulting report. The CIA was apparently approached by the Air Force for permission to declassify the report, while USAF Office of Special Investigations (OSI) Deputy Assistant Director Philip Strong refused to release it and declined to disclose CIA sponsorship of the panel.

“As an alternative,” the CIA reported on its website, “the Agency prepared a sanitized version of the report which deleted any reference to CIA and avoided mention of any psychological warfare potential in the UFO controversy.”(20)

Dr. Leon Davidson's contempt for the CIA and his suspicions of its responsibilities in manipulating public perception of the UFO phenomenon, as suggested in his 1959 article, *ECM + CIA = UFO*, were undoubtedly further fueled when his attempts were stonewalled to investigate the strange case of the Maier sisters. In a rather convoluted and complicated series of events, Mildred and Marie Maier of Chicago believed themselves in 1955 to have audio recorded some kind of code emanating from a UFO, one of many such UFO encounters reported by the sisters. OSI got wind of the story and dispatched minions to investigate the circumstances and obtain the recording, all of which was eventually downplayed by the Agency. The CIA later indicated that OSI determined the recording to have been “nothing more than Morse code from a US radio station.”(21) That may have even been true, but Davidson was of course unaware of any such official conclusions at the time of his 1957 investigation, as the CIA denied any involvement with UFOs.

Davidson researched the case, at which time the sisters informed him they had been visited by government officials in 1955. He then went about inquiring to the Air Force and CIA about their interests in the case, which set off a chain of interactions between Davidson and multiple intelligence officers, including DCI Dulles himself. A series of attempted cover ups and denials came to include the CIA and USAF passing the buck, and even sending undercover spooks to try to shake Davidson off the trail. At one point Davidson informed an undercover CIA officer that “he and his agency, whichever it was, were acting like Jimmy Hoffa and the Teamsters Union.” Eventually the Agency simply ceased contacting or responding to Davidson, as the more they tried to repair the situation, the worse it got.

The CIA later reported, “Thus, a minor, rather bizarre incident, handled poorly by both CIA and the Air Force, turned into a major flap that added fuel to the growing mystery surrounding UFOs and CIA's role in their investigation.”(22)

The Robertson Panel and such incidents offer UFO researchers opportunities to study documented circumstances in which the intelligence community covertly dabbled in ufology. This allows us to note the ways investigators of the era may have both accurately and inaccurately interpreted some of the events, and lets us compare such dynamics with other similar, more current cases. The saga of Dr. Davidson and the Maier sisters offers us a view into how the investigator correctly identified the involvement of intelligence agencies, but was at a substantial disadvantage to try to understand their apparent motives and intentions.

Covert Human Experimentation

As long as we're talking Guatemala and the 1954 coup that included considerations of fabricated UFO stories courtesy of the CIA, we might consider the exploitation and abuse of human research subjects that took place in the Central American nation. From 1946 to 1948, the US government funded research in which somewhere between 1,000 and 3,000 Guatemalans were unwittingly infected with sexually transmitted diseases, including syphilis and gonorrhea.(23) The project was conducted by the US Public Health Service and Pan American Sanitary Bureau in cooperation with Guatemalan government agencies. Soldiers, orphans, prisoners and mental patients were among the intentionally infected.

The lead researcher was Dr. John Cutler. This was the same Dr. Cutler involved in the infamous Tuskegee Study, in which black men were intentionally infected with syphilis after having been misled to believe they were receiving free health care.(24) Researchers failed to provide the hundreds of Alabama men treatment in the study that was initially projected to last six months but continued for 40 years, from 1932 to 1972.

In the years following World War II, and what could be reasonably considered among the most intriguing and legendary days of ufology, the

American intelligence community embarked upon an effort to perfect interrogation and mind control techniques that exploited literally untold numbers of involuntary human research subjects. The proverbial snowball picked up speed and rolled into absolutely uncannily monstrous proportions, although the overwhelming majority of exploited research subjects continue to remain unnamed.

Projects with titles such as Bluebird and Artichoke evolved into the infamous MKULTRA and its lesser known successor, MKSEARCH. Research methodologies became so extreme and chains of logic so disjointed that the mental health and judgment of key project personnel would later be called into serious question.

The director of Project MKULTRA, Sidney Gottlieb, for instance, became so fast and loose with distributing and dropping LSD that he and other CIA personnel were covertly slipping it to one another.(25) It seems the mentality behind putting some acid in coworkers' coffee had something to do with observing their subsequent behavior and toughening them up for a time in which the Russians might do it to them, at least as Gottlieb rationalized it - and that was a guy at the top of the chain of command.

Col. James S. Ketchum was a psychiatrist on the front lines of the MKULTRA madness. He explained in 2012 to *The New Yorker* that he once walked into his office at Edgewood Arsenal to unexpectedly find a barrel the size of an oil drum standing in a corner.(26) After a couple of days he opened it and found enough vials of liquid LSD “to make several hundred million people go bonkers.” The barrel vanished at the end of the week as mysteriously as it arrived.

Another time, Ketchum explained, he was conducting some observations late one night on soldiers who had been dosed with strong hallucinogens. Van Murray Sim, a doctor with a preference for trying the experimental drugs on himself, arrived unexpectedly. He sashayed into the facility wearing only underwear from the waist down. When asked what he was doing, Sim apparently explained he had some LSD in a solution taped to his wrist and was trying to see if the drug could be administered through the skin. So far, he added, it hadn't had any particular effect...

DCI Allen Dulles approved MKULTRA in 1953. By the time it was axed

in 1964, it encompassed 149 known subprojects contracting work to over 80 locations, including 44 colleges or universities, 15 research facilities or private companies, 12 hospitals or clinics, three penal institutions and multiple military facilities. Numerous “safehouses” were used in which operations ranged from conducting interrogations to running brothels where unwitting research subjects were lured and exploited, and, for all practical purposes, prostitutes were employed as project personnel.(27)

Career CIA man and eventual DCI Richard Helms would later defend such operations and their lack of scientific merit. The Clandestine Services were engaged in a long term “mission of maintaining a capability for influencing human behavior,” Helms qualified in statements reviewed by the Church Committee.(28) Operational practicality was prioritized, he explained, and personnel in the field were administering chemical and biological agents to individuals who were certainly unaware they were being drugged. Helms therefore reasoned that no matter how effectively laboratory experiments might simulate such scenarios, the use of unwitting research subjects was a necessity in order to obtain realistic results and avoid a false sense of accomplishment and readiness.

“If one grants the validity of the mission of maintaining this unusual capability and the necessity for unwitting testing,” Helms argued, “there is only then the question of how best to do it.”

Such “best” practices were apparently interpreted by Gottlieb to include slipping LSD to scientists from the Army Chemical Corps Special Operations Division (SOD) during a 1953 working retreat.(29) The meeting took place in November at a remote lodge in the woods of Western Maryland. The SOD collaborated with the Technical Services Staff (TSS) on Project MKNAOMI, a venture into the development and application of biological warfare agents. Gottlieb conducted such meetings and brainstorming sessions twice a year with key SOD and TSS personnel involved in MKNAOMI.

Among those covertly dosed with LSD at the November, 1953, retreat was Dr. Frank Olson. Less than a week later the scientist would lay dead on the sidewalk of Manhattan after a fall from a hotel room window. The death was ruled a suicide. The Olson family was unaware of Frank's drugging at the Maryland lodge and did not begin to piece together details of his career and

sudden death until many years later, no help from the CIA. Many of the circumstances continue today to draw the attention of researchers and remain open to debate and interpretation.

While all of that was going on, a procedure was developed known as the “A” treatment, due to its origins in Project Artichoke. Morse Allen, inaugural Artichoke director circa 1952, was credited with being the Agency's first behavioral research czar. Allen was also credited with coining the phrase “terminal experiments,” which, as the term implies, referred to research that surpassed and basically disregarded ethical and legal limits.(30)

An A session might include administration of drugs, hypnosis, physical and psychological torture, and combinations thereof. Attempts were made to force captives to reveal certain information and/or facilitate indoctrination of various political allegiances. The A treatment evolved to include attempts to successfully create Manchurian Candidates, or individuals who could be programmed to carry out tasks advantageous to the controller and without the conscious knowledge of the controlled. Objectification was the stage and trauma was the star.

Subjects receiving the A treatment were given sedative suppositories to increase resistance to pain. Stated reasons in one specific instance included “to intensify his ordeal midway through the planned session.”(31) Artichoke field teams reported “serious disposal problems after results are produced,” including a 1954 assignment in Europe in which it was reported that “the men must be disposed of even at maximum security risk.”

In addition to missions abroad, Artichoke teams conducted domestic operations within the United States. Objectives included "contacting" certain immigrants through means such as infiltrating targeted groups as well as setting up "sympathetic fake left-wing organizations" to lure members of demographics of interest. Attempts were then made to indoctrinate the individuals as "hypnotically controlled agents."

The entitlement and blatant violations of human rights continue to disturb and anger researchers well into this century. It has been aptly noted over the years that Agency officials often targeted minorities and marginalized populations viewed as less intelligent segments of society. Such inherent bigotry was in all likelihood due in no small part to the influence of

Operation Paperclip, an effort involving the recruitment of key Nazi personnel following World War II. Third Reich officers were among the original architects of Uncle Sam's behavior modification projects, as were, of course, the men who supported offering them citizenship and employment.

Although bureaucratic rivalries between agencies often hampered functionality, in 1951 the CIA director approved liaison with Army, Navy and Air Force intelligence to avoid duplication of effort.(32) Representatives of each branch went on to attend meetings regularly held to discuss operations such as Artichoke. The Agency also extended an invitation to the FBI, which declined participation. That might be considered particularly interesting in light of one specific Bureau operation, COINTELPRO, and its similarities to Artichoke.

FBI czar J. Edgar Hoover launched Counterintelligence Program in 1956. The project evolved to attempt to “expose, disrupt and otherwise neutralize” the “activities, leadership and adherents” of targeted organizations.(33) A 1976 Senate Select Committee final report described COINTELPRO as conspiring with other intelligence and law enforcement agencies to employ vague standards and vicious tactics.(34) The report further indicated that FBI targeting of various political groups and implementation of such vicious tactics had “continued for decades, despite the fact that those groups did not engage in unlawful activity.”(35) Attorney Brian Glick wrote in his book, *War at Home*, that the Bureau used four primary strategies during COINTELPRO: infiltration, psychological warfare, harassment through the legal system and illegal force, the latter of which included burglary, vandalism, assault, beatings and assassination.

The public learned of the operation in 1971 after the Citizens' Commission to Investigate the FBI broke in to a Bureau field office in Media, Pennsylvania. Files were obtained, copied and distributed to news outlets, piecing together that the FBI infiltrated and created dissension within such groups as the Socialist Workers Party, Ku Klux Klan and Black Panther Party. The FBI itself would later acknowledge that COINTELPRO was “rightfully criticized by Congress and the American people for abridging first amendment rights and for other reasons.”(36)

During the latter half of the 1950's a prominent psychiatrist attracted the

attention of Sid Gottlieb and the CIA. The controversial ideas of Dr. Ewen Cameron included sharing Morse Allen's perspectives on the practicality and necessity of terminal experiments. Cameron was a Scottish-born American citizen who served as the president of the American Psychiatric Association, the Canadian Psychiatric Association and the World Psychiatric Association. No fringe CIA hired gun, he was a leading, well respected professional who directed the Allan Memorial Institute, the psychiatric arm of McGill University in Montreal. It was there that Cameron found steady streams of vulnerable research subjects and cash funneled from the CIA to conduct MKULTRA Subproject 68.(37)

Cameron was convinced he could “depattern” an individual and their personal conditioning through combined and prolonged use of such tools as drugs, isolation and electric shocks. He thoroughly documented the progressive loss of memory in his research subjects, and his records painted a disturbing picture of dazed and confused patients rendered unable to care for themselves.(38) Beginning about 1958 and delivered through the cover of nonprofit foundations acting as funding conduits, the CIA supplied cash for Cameron to see if he could take the “treatment” further. The Agency wanted to know if Cameron could program new patterns of behavior, as he claimed was the case, once he had produced the blank mind.

As early as 1953 Cameron had been pursuing such ideas in the form of developing a technique he called “psychic driving.” This evolved to include strapping heavily drugged research subjects upon tables and bombarding them with relentlessly repetitive audio taped messages up to 16 hours per day, weeks at a time. Electric shocks were sometimes used simultaneously in attempts to intensify and further reinforce the messages. CIA funding enabled Cameron to expand upon such practices, including hiring a principal assistant, Leonard Rubenstein. The assistant had no background whatsoever in medicine or psychology, but Rubenstein's entire salary was paid by CIA funds, allowing him to accomplish such things as building a giant tape recorder that could play eight looping messages for eight patients at a time. Speakers were literally installed under their pillows.

Cameron's ideas brought together virtually all aspects of the CIA's mind control venture. Along with a mixture of drugs, sensory deprivation and what by any other name amounted to physical and psychological torture, he

incorporated something known as the “box” into his efforts of wiping and reprogramming the mind. This involved restricting the movements of a subject in a sealed environment and depriving them of all sensory input, up to and including fitting them with darkened goggles, ear plugs and padding over their hands. Any minimal breaks taken during the experiments were due to necessity, not for the wellbeing of the research subject.

Previous CIA experiments with the box at the National Institutes of Health resulted in documentation that a soldier hysterically kicked his way out after about 40 hours. An attending doctor, a brain surgeon by the name of Maitland Baldwin, informed the Agency that even the strongest, most mentally disciplined men could be broken by such techniques. Baldwin further advised that he never left anyone in the box for more than six consecutive days, and that doing so would almost certainly result in permanent damage. He added, however, that he was willing to conduct such experiments if the CIA would supply the research subjects and the cover.(39)

Ewen Cameron documented that, behind the Allan Memorial Institute hospital in converted stables that housed Rubenstein and a behavioral laboratory, he confined a woman to the box for 35 days. Terminal experiments indeed.

“Although the patient was prepared by both prolonged sensory isolation (35 days) and by repeated depatterning, and although she received 101 days of positive driving,” Cameron wrote, “no favorable results were obtained.”

John Marks, in his book *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, reported that Cameron's original diagnosis of the woman, 52-year-old Mary C., stated, "Conversion reaction in a woman of the involutional age with mental anxiety; hypochondriatic."

“In other words,” Marks observed, “Mary C. was going through menopause.”

Cameron remained the director of McGill's psychiatric facility until he retired in 1964. He died in 1967 at the age of 66 while mountain climbing.

More Spooks in Ufology

About the same time the CIA was taking an interest in Ewen Cameron and psychic driving, a civilian organization calling itself the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena, or NICAP, was taking shape. The group investigated UFOs and provided an example of what would become the chronic presence and involvement of intelligence personnel in the UFO community. The NICAP Board of Governors included USAF Ret. Maj. Dewey Fournet, Jr., formerly involved with Pentagon interests in UFO projects. Also sitting on the NICAP board was USAF Ret. Col. Joseph Bryan III, who, according to a report authored by the late Richard Hall, was “later discovered to be a former naval officer and CIA employee, psychological warfare specialist.”(40) Most notably was the retired Navy admiral and former DCI Roscoe H. Hillenkoetter, who served on the NICAP Board of Governors from 1957 to 1962.

In October of 1957, a young man in Brazil by the now well known name of Antonio Villas Boas apparently perceived himself to have been taken aboard an alien spacecraft. His bizarre experience was documented at length by Dr. Olavo Fontes.(41)

Mark Pilkington, among other researchers, presented valid arguments that Villas Boas may have been subjected to chemical experiments as conducted during MKNAOMI and related projects. He may have subsequently mistook drug induced perceptions as alien visitation. Curiously, Nick Redfern reported that in early 1958, literally just days after Dr. Fontes completed his composition of the Villas Boas case, the doctor was ominously visited by two men who presented identification suggesting they were employed in an intelligence capacity with the Brazilian Navy.(42)

The two men, Redfern explained, told Fontes he knew too much and that they didn't like it – then proceeded to tell him about supposedly classified information involving several crashed alien spaceships. Understandably, Redfern was very doubtful of the intentions of the intelligence personnel and the authenticity of the information. Nick suspected the two were attempting to prime Fontes with disinformation in order to further cultivate the alien abduction story, while possibly simultaneously concealing that Villas Boas was actually involved in covert chemical testing.

So what are we to make of CIA theatrics that spanned from the studios of

Hollywood to the jungles of the Philippines and the streets of Saigon, while Guatemalan assets were encouraged to create a UFO hoax, technology was developed to project ghost craft onto radar screens, a former Director of Central Intelligence and his colleagues joined a UFO investigation group, and drug addicts, prostitutes and madmen were among personnel conducting outrageous mind control experiments on unwitting research subjects? And lest we forget the 1950's was the decade of the contactees, a demographic of people who claimed direct interactions with interplanetary visitors, yet some researchers confidently suspect experienced much more dialog with the FBI and CIA than they did with inhabitants of Venus.

Whatever we make of it all, it's context should not be lost. I think it's potentially important to be aware of what was happening in the circles of Leon Davidson and Allen Dulles, for examples, as compared to exclusively promoting ET-related conjecture and supposition accumulated over decades surrounding such UFO events as reportedly occurred in 1952 DC.

The fact of the matter is that considerations of alleged UFO-related phenomena frequently omit significant events of historical record. The omission is often in preference of pursuing otherworldly explanations.

It is true that not all reported paranormal phenomena are attributable to intelligence agencies and hoaxes. Certainly not. It's also true that intelligence agencies are very compartmentalized, and there is no all knowing “they” that carefully pulls the strings and moves the chess pieces. However, there were some men like Allen Dulles and Richard Helms who had some pretty good ideas of what the puzzle box lid looked like, and they had the luxury of access to a great deal of information at their disposals while formulating strategies and decisions.

As it relates to ufology, beliefs were clearly manipulated. There were many reasons that spanned many projects, and some of those reasons may very well remain classified at this point in time, but there is no doubt that it happened. The intelligence community had specific interests in shaping and controlling public perception of UFOs and their suspected occupants. One of the relevant questions becomes to what extents.

Reasonable arguments can be made that the most likely explanations for many cases in ufology involve witness confusion, intentional hoaxes and

similar relatively ordinary circumstances. Prior to assuming otherwise we should expect substantial verifiable evidence to be presented. Keeping an open mind and suspending judgment, rather than drawing premature conclusions, is admirable and should be encouraged, as should refraining from accepting claims as facts prior to having been demonstrated as such.

All of that stated, I would argue that if unusual and extraordinary potential explanations are going to be entertained for some reports of alleged alien abduction, then possibilities related to covert human intervention and resulting trauma are much more likely occurrences in select cases than visitors from the stars and other types of supposed intelligent non-human beings. The likelihood is not even close. The effectiveness of CIA propaganda, cue *The Day the Earth Stood Still*, and irresponsible mystery mongering that have long characterized the UFO community are to blame in part for a 21st century culture that collectively fails to understand how to accurately assess the likelihood of potential explanations. It is rather astonishing, in light of all the verifiable precedence and information, that the belief is widely accepted that covert exploitation of involuntary human research subjects has likely been perpetrated by *aliens*.

In my opinion, the 1961 alleged alien abduction of Betty and Barney Hill is one such case deserving deeper scrutiny. In the next chapter we will explore circumstances that, although they are by no means presented as conclusive explanations for the reported experiences, should arguably be given more attention than typically takes place. I would go as far as to say that the common omission of such circumstances from the context of exploring the Hill case approaches intellectual cowardice and dishonesty.

Keeping Context

A chronological order of potentially relevant circumstances

1946) Ghost rockets

1947) FBI memo indicates joint considerations with Army Air Force Intelligence that “reported [UFO] sightings might have been made by

subversive individuals for the purpose of creating a mass hysteria”

1947) Maury Island, Kenneth Arnold, Roswell cases

1949) USAF Project Grudge report recommends advising agencies interested in psychological warfare of the use of unusual aerial objects to cause mass hysteria

1950) RAND provides USAF with report, *The Exploitation of Superstitions for Purposes of Psychological Warfare*

1950) Gen. Edward Lansdale successfully exploits superstitions during warfare in SE Asia

1950) CIA acquires rights to Orwell material

1950) ECM technology installed on USAF bombers, continues to evolve

1950) CIA begins actively recruiting hypnotists

1951) *The Day the Earth Stood Still* released, likely with significant CIA influence

1951) CIA claims extraordinary results in hypnosis experiments in classified memos and continued to do so for years

1952) Morse Allen, director of Project Bluebird, heads up Artichoke

1952) Washington, DC UFO flap

1952) Flatwoods UFO Monster

1953) Robertson Panel first meets, CIA conceals both its involvement with panel and its interests in UFOs as psychological warfare tool

1953) Project MKULTRA launched by CIA

1953) Frank Olson dies as the result of a fall from a NY hotel room window

1954) CIA releases version of film *Animal Farm*

1954) CIA recommends assets in Guatemala fabricate big UFO story

1954) The Seekers, infiltrated by researcher Festinger and colleagues, prophesy end of world with salvation via extraterrestrials

1956) CIA influences production of film *1984*

1956) FBI begins COINTELPRO

1957) Davidson investigates Maier sisters case, has multiple interactions with intel community, CIA later concedes situation mishandled

1957) Former DCI Hillenkoetter serves on NICAP board until 1962

1957) Villas Boas case

1958) Researcher Fontes visited by apparent Brazilian intelligence personnel

1958) CIA begins funding Ewen Cameron to expand his research

1959) Davidson publishes article, *ECM + CIA = UFO*

1961) Hills reportedly experience traumatic event they later interpret as alien abduction

1 The National Security Archive: *CIA and Assassinations: The Guatemala 1954 Documents*

http://nsarchive.gwu.edu/NSAEBB/NSAEBB4/

2 *The New York Times*: *The C.I.A.'s Cover Has Been Blown? Just Make Up Something About U.F.O.'s*

http://www.nytimes.com/2003/07/06/weekinreview/06WORD.html?8bl&_r=0

3 Wayback Machine: U.S. Department of State Office of the Historian: *Foreign Relations of the United States, 1952-1954, Guatemala, Document 89*

https://web.archive.org/web/20120807002844/http://history.state.gov/historicaldocuments/frus1952-54Guat/d89

4 Internet Movie Database: *1984*

http://www.imdb.com/title/tt0048918/

5 Amazon: *The Cultural Cold War: The CIA and the World of Arts and Letters*

http://www.amazon.com/The-Cultural-Cold-War-Letters/dp/1565846648

6 Internet Movie Database: *Animal Farm*

http://www.imdb.com/title/tt0047834/?ref_=nv_sr_2

7 The National Security Archive: *CIA Confirms Role in 1953 Iran Coup*
https://www2.gwu.edu/~nsarchiv/NSAEBB/NSAEBB435/

8 *Silver Screen Saucers*: *The CIA, the Movie Mogul, and 'The Day the Earth Stood Still'*
http://silverscreensaucers.blogspot.com/2013/02/the-cia-movie-mogul-and-day-earth-stood.html

9 *The Washington Post*: *The month that E.T. came to D.C.*
http://www.washingtonpost.com/local/the-month-that-et-came-to-dc/2012/07/20/gJQAZp2ayW_story.html

10 Mirage Men
https://miragemen.wordpress.com/

11 Stealth Skater: *ECM + CIA = UFO*
http://www.stealthskater.com/Documents/Davidson_01.pdf

12 Central Intelligence Agency: *Stealth, Countermeasures and ELINT, 1960-1975*
http://www.foia.cia.gov/sites/default/files/DOC_0006122549.pdf

13 Amazon: *The Report on Unidentified Flying Objects: The Original 1956 Edition*
http://www.amazon.com/The-Report-Unidentified-Flying-Objects/dp/1616404949

14 *There's Something in the Woods...*: *Is This The Flatwoods Monster?*
http://monsterusa.blogspot.com/2010/09/is-this-flatwoods-monster.html

15 RAND Corporation: *The Exploitation of Superstitions for Purposes of Psychological Warfare*

http://www.rand.org/pubs/research_memoranda/RM365.html

16 Hyperallergic: *Honoring the Long-Classified Ghost Army of World War II*
http://hyperallergic.com/204306/honoring-the-long-classified-ghost-army-of-world-war-ii/

17 *Journal of the American Folklore Society*: *Vol. 102, October-December 1989, No. 406*
http://faculty.buffalostate.edu/fishlm/folksongs/lansdale.pdf

18 HistoryNet: *Ed Lansdale's Black Warfare in 1950's Vietnam*
http://www.historynet.com/ed-lansdales-black-warfare-in-1950s-vietnam.htm

19 John F. Kennedy Presidential Library and Museum: *Special Group (Augmented): General, 1962: January-June*
http://www.jfklibrary.org/Asset-Viewer/Archives/JFKNSF-319-007.aspx

20 Central Intelligence Agency: *CIA's Role in the Study of UFOs, 1947-90*
https://www.cia.gov/library/center-for-the-study-of-intelligence/csi-publications/csi-studies/studies/97unclass/ufo.html

21 Central Intelligence Agency: *CIA's Role in the Study of UFOs, 1947-90*
https://www.cia.gov/library/center-for-the-study-of-intelligence/csi-publications/csi-studies/studies/97unclass/ufo.html

22 Central Intelligence Agency: *CIA's Role in the Study of UFOs, 1947-90*
https://www.cia.gov/library/center-for-the-study-of-intelligence/csi-publications/csi-studies/studies/97unclass/ufo.html

23 *The Huffington Post*: *Guatemala Syphilis Study Lawsuit: Dismissal Despite United States*

Experiments On Natives In 1940s

http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2012/06/23/guatemala-syphilis-study-lawsuit_n_1621141.html

24 Centers for Disease Control and Prevention: *U.S. Public Health Service Syphilis Study at Tuskegee*

http://www.cdc.gov/tuskegee/timeline.htm

25 spiritself.net: *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*

http://spiritself.net/pdf/The%20Search%20for%20the%20Manchurian%20Candidate.pdf

26 *The New Yorker*: *Operation Delirium*

http://www.newyorker.com/magazine/2012/12/17/operation-delirium?currentPage=all

27 spiritself.net: *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*

http://spiritself.net/pdf/The%20Search%20for%20the%20Manchurian%20Candidate.pdf

28 Wayback Machine: *Senate Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations with Respect to Intelligence Activities*

https://archive.org/stream/finalreportofsel01unit/finalreportofsel01unit_djvu.txt

29 spiritself.net: *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*

http://spiritself.net/pdf/The%20Search%20for%20the%20Manchurian%20Candidate.pdf

30 spiritself.net: *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*

http://spiritself.net/pdf/The%20Search%20for%20the%20Manchurian%20Candidate.pdf

31 *truthout*: *Cries From the Past: Torture's Ugly Echoes*

http://truth-out.org/archive/component/k2/item/89725:cries-from-the-past-tortures-ugly-echoes

32 spiritself.net: *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*
http://spiritself.net/pdf/The%20Search%20for%20the%20Manchurian%20Candidate.pdf

33 National Security Archive: *Counterintelligence Program – Internal Security Disruption of Hate Groups*
https://nsarchive.files.wordpress.com/2014/09/157-hq-9-01.jpg

34 Wayback Machine: *Senate Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations with Respect to Intelligence Activities*
https://archive.org/stream/finalreportofsel01unit/finalreportofsel01unit_djvu.txt

35 U.S. Senate Select Committee on Intelligence: *Intelligence Activities and the Rights of Americans, Book II, 1976*
http://www.intelligence.senate.gov/pdfs94th/94755_II.pdf

36 Federal Bureau of Investigation: *COINTELPRO*
https://vault.fbi.gov/cointel-pro#content

37 The Black Vault: MKULTRA Collection: *DOC_0000017468*
http://documents.theblackvault.com/documents/mkultra/mkultra4/DOC_0000017468/

38 spiritself.net: *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*
http://spiritself.net/pdf/The%20Search%20for%20the%20Manchurian%20Candidate.pdf

39 spiritself.net: *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*
http://spiritself.net/pdf/The%20Search%20for%20the%20Manchurian%20Candidate.pdf

40 National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena: *The Quest For The Truth About UFOs: A*

Personal Perspective On The Role Of NICAP

http://www.nicap.org/papers/hall-IUR1994.htm

41 Illuminati Conspiracy Archive: *Antonio Villas Boas: Abduction Episode Ground Zero*

http://www.conspiracyarchive.com/UFOs/boas-abduction.htm

42 *Mysterious Universe*: *Playing Mind-Games of the UFO Kind*

http://mysteriousuniverse.org/2015/08/playing-mind-games-of-the-ufo-kind/

Chapter Eleven
Betty and Barney Go to Montreal

> Creating amnesia remained a "big goal" for the ORD [CIA Office of Research and Development] researcher, states an ex-CIA man. Advances in brain surgery, such as the development of three-dimensional, "stereotaxic" techniques, made psychosurgery a much simpler matter and created the possibility that a precisely placed electrode probe could be used to cut the link between past memory and present recall. As for subjects to be used in behavioral experiments of this sort, the ex-CIA man states that ORD had access to prisoners in at least one American penal institution. A former Army doctor stationed at the Edgewood chemical laboratory states that the lab worked with CIA men to develop a drug that could be used to help program in new memories into the mind of an amnesic subject. How far did the Agency take this research? I don't know.
>
> - John Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*

The alleged alien abduction of Betty and Barney Hill is among the most

celebrated cases in all of ufology. For better or worse, it was elevated to sacred cow status with the support of a number of books, films and similar media projects.

Does it deserve such status? No, probably not. Almost certainly not. An overview of the now famous event provides several potential areas of concern.

The Hills were reportedly waylaid by extraterrestrials during a road trip on the evening of September 19 and morning of September 20, 1961. The two were traveling by car from Montreal to their home in New Hampshire when they encountered what they apparently interpreted as a frightening flying object and subsequent road block leading to the alleged abduction. As the reader is assumed to be generally aware, aliens allegedly subjected the interracial couple to such activities as viewing a star map and conducting a pregnancy test on Betty. The Hills reportedly arrived home hours later than they thought should have been the case, experiencing gaps in their memories of the evening.

Healthy skepticism might be initially applied to the chronological order in which the chain of events are typically represented. While people often consider the supposed abduction in its assumed entirety, the fact of the matter is the story was built somewhat piece meal spanning several years.

The UFO sighting was reported to the USAF on September 21, 1961, and it is widely accepted that the couple was indeed very disconcerted about the event. One might nonetheless surmise the narrative evolved substantially over time. It is reasonable to question the accuracy of fantastic yet unsubstantiated details that seem to have been sewn into the reported encounter.

In their book *Captured! The Betty and Barney Hill UFO Experience*, authors Stan Friedman and Kathleen Marden reported that it was not until September 7, 1963, that the Hills met USAF Capt. Ben Swett. The captain, according to Friedman and Marden, was lecturing on hypnosis at the Unitarian Church of Portsmouth, New Hampshire. The Hills apparently spoke with Swett after the lecture, contributing to their eventual 1964 consultations with Boston psychiatrist Dr. Benjamin Simon, who employed hypnosis as a treatment for trauma with the couple.

Obviously, there was a significant amount of time between the evening the event reportedly occurred in 1961, the point in which the Hills hit full stride working with Dr. Simon in 1964, and their choices to interpret their hypnotically induced mental imagery as representations of literal occurrences, all of which took place amid continual evolution of the now widely known narrative. Researcher Peter Brookesmith, co-author of *Encounters at Indian Head: The Betty and Barney Hill UFO Abduction Revisited*, commented on the time line of the case at Robert Sheaffer's *Bad UFOs* blog:(1)

> Betty's abduction story emerged not under hypnosis but in a series of dreams (not in chronological order, she said) that occurred after she had read a number of UFO-related books. The only one she recalled reading was Keyhoe's "Flying Saucer Conspiracy", from which, I maintain (see the book), she could well have developed the story she did. Her original notes on the dreams were lost (she said), and the account of them we have is one reorganized into chronological order... how much might she have elaborated in the process is anyone's guess.
>
> Despite Betty's protestations to the contrary, Barney knew about these dreams well before he started hypnosis with Dr. Simon. At least once she recounted them in public in his presence (a recording exists). I think it's fair to say that when, under hypnosis, he departs from Betty's dream material, he tells Simon, and us, more about himself than about aliens, &c.
>
> It's also worth bearing in mind that Simon wasn't trying to get to 'the truth' about what happened, but to purge the Hills of their anxieties about their experience. In this he seems to have succeeded, if not wholly in Barney's case.

It would indeed seem reasonable to suspect the Hills spoke extensively to one another during the weeks, months and years following the event about their personal suppositions surrounding the experience. Couples typically speculate at length together about such matters. Such circumstances minimize the significance of what they each may have independently stated during

hypnosis sessions, although the statements and their correlations are held in high regard by those who suggest an alien abduction occurred. History actually shows us, however, that not only would the Hills have jointly considered the event quite a bit by the time they worked with Simon, but, as Brookesmith pointed out, the psychiatrist apparently did not intend for the resulting testimonies to be taken literally. He was attempting to treat emotional trauma, not conduct an investigation and retrieve data that would prove factual.

Multiple sources, including an account of the circumstances authored by Capt. Swett, clarify that Dr. Simon did not himself suspect the Hills were abducted by aliens.(2) The psychiatrist did not interpret the perceptions reported by the Hills as accurate or literal portrayals of objective reality.

Given such circumstances, it would seem reasonable to identify confusion and mistaken circumstances as the most likely explanations for the Hill case. That would seem to be the default setting, pending further information and conclusive evidence that has not yet surfaced.

Additional Possibilities

If we are willing to entertain additional possible explanations, including those that might reasonably be labeled extraordinary, a solid argument can be made that alien abduction is among the least likely scenarios. I have come to think cultural conditioning accounts for why such fantastic circumstances are often so readily accepted as possible. At the least, there is little doubt that the science fiction portrayal of ET in cinema, television, books, advertisements and related aspects of popular culture have substantially contributed to the situation. An alien presence is not only widely accepted as possible and likely, but often fully believed to be here and active. Such a conclusion should perhaps most wisely be afforded no greater status than suspension of judgment, as I would agree with those who consider it unreasonable to accept alien abduction as a literal, factual occurrence absent proof. It's just too big a deal to fully accept on claims alone.

A number of theories have been proposed for what the circumstances may have been that contributed to the Hills forming their extreme perceptions and

eventual hypnotic confabulations. The possibilities range from stress brought on by various social dynamics specific to the era, to effects of trauma resulting from exploitation as unwitting research subjects.

I am of the opinion that, if the intelligence community played a significant role in the Hill case, it may have intervened at virtually any point in the time line of events. In other words, CIA minions were not necessarily responsible for the initial sighting and confusion, but may have later identified the circumstances as advantageous opportunities for exploitation. It's not necessarily all or nothing, and manipulation may have occurred for any number of possible reasons.

Consider, for instance, previously referenced psychologist and hypnosis expert Martin Orne headed up MKULTRA Subproject 84, the focus of which was hypnosis.(3) He conducted CIA research in Boston, the same city in which Benjamin Simon held his practice and treated the Hills. Orne can be reasonably assumed to have had a familiarity with social circles traveled by Simon, given they were each mental health professionals in Boston, each specialized in hypnosis and shared an employer, Harvard, which is now confirmed to have provided cover for CIA operations, including MKULTRA.

Declassified Subproject 84 documents bear dates ranging from 1958 to 1964, with CIA memos and related discussion continuing for several more years.(4) Reports included reference to a “major research” effort involving, among other aspects, “hypnotizability and its relationship to responsivity in sensory deprivation under mescaline, etc.” Also identified as areas of study were “the occurrence of trance-like behavior in the normal experience of subjects” and “hallucinations in hypnosis,” the latter of which “compared the performance” of various techniques and circumstances.

Further referenced was “a rigorous study” of hypnosis, which included a long term investigation of “the trance phenomena.” CIA personnel identified such phenomena as occurring among attendees of Pentecostal churches, reported that considerable observational data had been obtained and that analysis was underway. Analysis included comparing experiences reported by church goers with those the Agency termed “good hypnotic subjects.”

Additional interests and topics analyzed included manipulation of the dynamics between hypnosis and emotional stress, anxiety, physical pain and

the extents hypnotic states, “regardless of the subjective experience,” might influence an individual. “Pilot studies” were conducted, apparently leading to what were described as the major and rigorous initiatives. A consulting doctor reported to the Agency that its covert financial sponsorship was attracting valued funding and interest from additional facilities, paving the way to more opportunistic situations and advantageous relationships.

The redacted doctor wrote, “It is felt that [redacted] support provides the basis for enriching the investigations, insures that we get the first and best reporting on all work there in the laboratory and maintains a facility for special crash projects on a continual basis.”

It does not seem to be an unreasonable speculation that Orne and his contacts may have taken an interest in Simon's work with the Hills. Actually, given the scope of Subproject 84, combined with the previously explored aspects of Project Artichoke, which included targeting minority demographics and individuals with left wing interests for indoctrination as hypnotically controlled agents, it could be considered difficult to fathom that the CIA would not have taken interest in the circumstances. That may have been the case even if the Agency had no hand in the initial incident or concern about the UFO report filed to the USAF. Even if the CIA and Project MKULTRA were not initially responsible for the Hills' perceptions, which is a possibility, the couple was ready made for areas of interest prioritized by the Agency and seemed to fall in its lap.

A scenario that might negate CIA interest in the Hills would be if the relevant Agency personnel were simply unaware of the couple and their desire to participate in hypnosis. That seems rather unlikely, but it's possible.

Another scenario would be that MKULTRA and Subproject 84 were winding down by the time the Hills became involved with Swett and Benjamin in 1963 and 1964, and perhaps there was simply minimal motivation to pursue the Hills at that point. It's possible the Agency and its consultants may have reached their conclusions by that time, or had lost some of their enthusiasm for the pursuit.

Nonetheless, there are a lot of unanswered and potentially relevant questions. I have wondered, for instance, why it might have been that Simon audio recorded his work with the Hills. I realize hypnotic regression sessions

are now often recorded for reasons including the hypnosis subject may wish to later listen to the exchange, but Simon was not conducting regressive hypnosis. Furthermore, ufology hypnotists tend to record regression sessions because they transcribe them for commercial interests, in essence, books.

None of that seemed to be the case with Simon. He was reportedly treating trauma. He also had no way of knowing at the time that we would still be analyzing and discussing the case well into the next century, so why did he record his work with the Hills? In order to gauge the potential relevance of the question, it would be helpful to know how typically doctors recorded their hypnotic treatment of trauma circa 1964 and, perhaps more importantly, how frequently Simon did so. The answers might prove interesting.

Among the most damaging aspects of the alien abduction scenario are the statements of the Hills themselves. The star map has been repeatedly and competently debunked, if not arguably absurd in the first place, at least in the literal sense. The reported road block and pregnancy test seemed infinitely more like activities we might expect to be conducted by humans, not extraterrestrials, particularly considering the medical procedure described by Betty became widely understood in the industry within a few years.

Another area of potential interest might be the relevance of Montreal to the Hills. I'm not sure exactly what leads to an interracial couple crossing an international border in 1961 with a loaded gun and a broken trunk latch as were reported to have occurred, but I don't feel the issues of the purpose and length of the trip has been adequately addressed by proponents of the alien abduction conclusion.

Also relevant would be any prior history the Hills might have had of visiting Montreal and the details of any such trips. That might particularly be the case considering the activities of Dr. Ewen Cameron and MKULTRA Subproject 68 undertaken at Allan Memorial Institute of McGill University in Montreal.

We might also ask about the Hills' doctors prior to the 1961 event. What medical professionals worked with the couple, and have their names been cross referenced with known CIA consultants and MKULTRA personnel? How about any possible involvement the couple may have had in activities at

now declassified MKULTRA fronts? If the Hills were involved before their alleged encounter with any psychologists, research projects or facilities now known to have conducted CIA operations, it might prove relevant. It is a reasonable concern at this point that researchers biased in support of alien abduction and in positions to have access to such information might either choose not to pursue the matter or fail to disclose the circumstances in full. Such concerns arguably leave us with little choice but to turn our attention to researchers probably lacking access to the Hills' medical records and related material, yet willing to more fully explore the range of possibilities.

John G. Fuller

Writer and researcher Nick Redfern suspects intelligence officials played an active role in misleading the public to believe extraterrestrials were involved in the Hill case. I find his ideas interesting.

“The Hill abduction? MKULTRA,” Redfern wrote in January, 2014, in the comments section of a post made at a blog maintained by Rich Reynolds. (5)

Redfern suggested author John G. Fuller spun the case as instructed by intelligence personnel. Fuller authored the landmark 1966 *Interrupted Journey*, in which he explored the experiences of the Hills, the sessions with Dr. Simon and the likelihood the circumstances indicated an alien abduction.

“There are actually some very interesting threads involving Fuller and MKUltra,” Redfern commented further. “He actually met some of the CIA personnel involved, back in the late 1950s, and he wrote the book 'The Day of St. Anthony’s Fire,' all about the early 1950s Pont-Saint-Esprit, France affair, which was almost certainly a pre-MKUltra-type event.”

Redfern additionally explained:

> But there is something to remember: one of the reasons why so many CIA botched events (or even successful events) have been uncovered is because the mainstream media has looked into them and uncovered the facts.

The problem is that mainstream media (with its finances and staff available to investigate in-depth) hardly ever do in-depth probing of the UFO issue, because it's not seen as worthwhile.

If the mainstream media gave the same persistence as that which was given to looking into Iran-Contra, WMD, Watergate etc, then we might actually find more of this MK/UFO angle surfacing.

That's the problem: the regular media is conditioned to think the UFO issue is bullshit. So, it steers away from it.

If the major funding and manpower that has been devoted to issues like those above was also applied to UFOs, the[y] might find something very interesting. But, they won't do it.

As for us, as a UFO community, we are limited in terms of time available and funding.

Plus, regardless of what people might think, there IS a MAJOR MKUltra-John Fuller link - Fuller being the man who wrote the Hill's story up in his "The Interrupted Journey."

Fuller's private notes show he was fascinated by MKUltra, LSD and the Pont-Saint-Esprit, France affair, and how people's minds could be transformed to see something fantastic - which was the absolute crux of Pont-Saint-Esprit.

Not many have looked into all this, but I have. And I have something coming out on all this in a few months, something which will present Fuller in a whole new light... And not a positive light. The man is going to come crashing down like a ton of bricks.

Redfern concluded:

Fuller was paid well to help nurture the imagery of 'alien abductions' via The Interrupted Journey. And I don't mean paid well by his publisher...

I emailed Nick Redfern in March of 2015 and clarified that he continued to hold the same opinion as expressed in the above comments. He indicated

that was indeed the case. Nick suggested interested parties could find a small amount of related information in his 2014 book, *Close Encounters of the Fatal Kind*. He further suggested that he continues to anticipate publishing more on the topic of Fuller's involvement with the intelligence community.

In order to consider Redfern's lines of reasoning in a bit more detail, and the possibility alien abduction was used as cover for classified operations undertaken in the Hill case, let's take a closer look at some of the circumstances he mentioned and events introduced in previous chapters.

MKNAOMI

A leading researcher of the mysterious death of Frank Olson is Hank P. Albarelli Jr., author of *A Terrible Mistake: The Murder of Frank Olson and the CIA's Secret Cold War Experiments*. It was while conducting research for the 2009 book that Albarelli discovered the likelihood Olson and his contacts were involved in the tragic events of Pont-Saint-Esprit.(6) Not only does the saga support Redfern's theory, but it carries possible implications to the alien abduction genre in general.

The French village experienced a mass outbreak of insanity in 1951. Nearly 500 people were stricken, resulting in five deaths and two suicides. Those effected experienced intense hallucinations, thrashed wildly about and obviously suffered tremendously.

Initial possible explanations included ergot poisoning, which could have resulted from eating bread with psychedelic mold. Researchers would later suspect Pont-Saint-Esprit residents were targeted in some kind of CIA psychological operation and weapons testing.

Reasons would include documents released in the MKULTRA Collection, published in the 1970's. Albarelli cited declassified files stating CIA personnel were alerted by an informant that Sandoz Chemical Company conducted analysis and concluded the French event had nothing to do with bread. The 1953 report indicated the Agency was warned that researchers discovered it was actually a man-made drug that provoked the Pont-Saint-

Esprit outbreak.

Other documents certainly lent supporting evidence. A 1954 scientific intelligence memo on unconventional warfare referenced CIA capabilities of employing hallucinogens and "rendering whole groups of people, including military forces, indifferent to their surroundings and situations, interfering with planning and judgment, and even creating apprehension, uncontrollable confusion and terror."(7) What's more, Albarelli wrote, former Fort Detrick Special Operations Division personnel spoke with him directly about the unit's involvement in the ill fated experiment at Pont-Saint-Esprit.(8)

The Fort Detrick researchers were headed by Olson prior to his 1953 death, and conducted work within CIA Project MKNAOMI, an operation which focused upon the use of chemicals, including LSD. Airborne delivery systems were explored, such as aerosols and similar means.

A Federal Bureau of Narcotics agent, George Hunter White, was recruited by the CIA to assist with such experiments. The actions of White, who was reported to have a drinking problem, could easily be the focus of entire chapters in and of themselves.(9)

It was White who released chemicals upon the New York City subway you may have heard about. He did that under CIA direction in 1952 and 1953. On at least two occasions he detonated specially constructed aerosol devices containing LSD.(10)

White, who reportedly once used a pistol to shoot his initials into the ceiling of a New Orleans hotel room, was also credited with operating the now infamous CIA-funded brothels of New York and San Francisco.(11) The locations provided access to a steady stream of unwitting research subjects. Related CIA expenditures included thousands of dollars for prostitutes and liquor, and on at least one occasion the Agency made what was termed an on-the-spot payment to a neighborhood woman whose car White had hit. The immediate payment was issued in order to “maintain security and forestall an insurance investigation.”

Some years later George White reportedly described his role with the Agency in a personal letter written to the director of Project MKULTRA, Sidney Gottlieb:(12)

> I was a very minor missionary, actually a heretic, but I toiled wholeheartedly in the vineyards because it was fun, fun, fun. Where else could a red-blooded American boy lie, kill, cheat, steak rape, and pillage with the sanction and blessing of the All-Highest?

Albarelli cited now declassified 1954 correspondence White conducted with the CIA in which he seemed to address the Pont-Saint-Esprit experiment, apparently referring to it as “that little French village's Stormy epidemic.” Moreover, an undated White House document directly linked White, Olson, Fort Detrick, Pont-Saint-Esprit and other intelligence assets, referred to by Albarelli as the “smoking gun” which implicated the CIA in the French tragedy. The “identity” document, apparently part of a larger file sent to the Rockefeller Commission in 1975 during its investigation of CIA abuses that became known as the family jewels, stated in part:(13)

> Frank R. Olson
>
> Identity 17: see att.
>
> 7. Pierre (Jean) LeFitte (bellmAN?FBN) '
>
> 8. FNU Spiritto (a/k/a/s)
>
> 9. George H. White
>
> 10. French EmbaSSY*
>
> JM
>
> 11. Pont Saint Esprit incident (Olsojn)
>
> 12. Lovell-Detrick

It is for such reasons, and Frank Olson's likely involvement with Pont-Saint-Esprit and additional instances of subjecting involuntary human research subjects to the ingestion of hallucinogens and other chemicals, that some researchers suspect Olson may have become overwrought with guilt. He may have then spiraled into deeper emotional turmoil, as sources report,

following having been dosed with LSD by Gottlieb the week prior to his death in 1953. Researchers subsequently suspect Olson may have either jumped to his death due to his guilt, or that he was thrown from the hotel window because the Agency feared Olson's remorse made him a potential security threat.

Whatever the tragic circumstances may have actually been of Olson's death, in 2010 French intelligence officials developed enough interest in the material contained in Albarelli's book to request an explanation from the US State Department.(14) The Directorate General for External Security (DGSE), the French equivalent of the CIA, reportedly sent a confidential inquiry to the State Department's Bureau of Intelligence and Research prompted by Albarelli's work.

In the 1960's author John G. Fuller wrote about what would later be considered the apparent CIA operation of Pont-Saint-Esprit in his book, *The Day of St. Anthony's Fire*. Fuller also wrote of the Hill alleged alien abduction in *The Interrupted Journey*, circumstances Nick Redfern considers to have equally consisted of covert CIA activity. Such circumstances include, Redfern indicates, ties that can be demonstrated between Fuller and the intelligence community, notably payment to Fuller to have framed the Hill case in support of alien abduction. I look forward to hearing more about this from Nick or other interested researchers.

Hank Albarelli, after publishing his 2009 book on Olson, Fort Detrick and the likely ties to the French village, co-authored a 2010 *truthout* article titled, *Cries From the Past: Torture's Ugly Echoes*.(15) The piece explored Project Artichoke and how the operation was conducted simultaneously with sister projects, not absorbed completely into MKULTRA as frequently and more widely thought to be the case.

Artichoke teams reportedly conducted some 257 specific assignments throughout Europe and Asia between 1954 and 1961. Teams were also charged with executing missions on targets within the United States, circumstances that might be interpreted as further calling the origins of the Hill narrative into question, given the previously explored activities and objectives of Artichoke.

In recent years I submitted FOIA requests to the CIA seeking further

information available for release on MKNAOMI and some specific related projects which explored chemical testing and behavior modification on human subjects. I was disappointed to have been informed the already published MKULTRA Collection contains the complete list of surviving files on the projects I identified, including what is known of MKNAOMI, MKDELTA and CHATTER.

The official stance on George White's reports is they were included in a 1973 mass destruction of documents initiated by Gottlieb and Director of Central Intelligence Richard Helms. The majority of MKULTRA and related files were intentionally destroyed and subsequently lost. The only docs to survive were those apparently missed by accident.

Dr. Andrew Cowan, a former chief of the Fort Detrick Special Operations Division, was quoted by Albarelli on experiments conducted within MKNAOMI, “It should still be classified – if nothing else, to keep information the division developed out of the hands of some nut.”

---

1 *Bad UFOs*: *Betty Hill's Last Hurrah – A Secret UFO Symposium in New Hampshire*

http://badufos.blogspot.com/2015/05/betty-hills-last-hurrah-secret-ufo.html?showComment=1433115977219#c6166789499069507398

2 bswett.com: *Betty and Barney Hill*: *Testimony by Ben H. Swett*

http://bswett.com/1963-09BettyAndBarney.html

3 spiritself.net: *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*

http://spiritself.net/pdf/The%20Search%20for%20the%20Manchurian%20Candidate.pdf

4 The Black Vault: MKULTRA Collection: *DOC_0000017486.pdf*

http://documents.theblackvault.com/documents/mkultra/MKULTRA1/DOC_0000017486/DOC_000001

5 *UFO Conjecture(s)*: *The Hill “Abduction” - Morphing Details?*: *Nick Redfern*

http://ufocon.blogspot.com/2014/01/the-hill-abduction-morphing-details.html#c9072341786500257395

6 Voltaire Network: *CIA: What Really Happened in the quiet French village of Pont-Saint-Esprit*
http://www.voltairenet.org/article164447.html

7 The Black Vault: MKULTRA Collection: *DOC_0000148381.pdf*
http://documents.theblackvault.com/documents/mkultra/MKULTRA1/DOC_0000148381/DOC_000014

8 Voltaire Network: *CIA: What Really Happened in the quiet French village of Pont-Saint-Esprit*
http://www.voltairenet.org/article164447.html

9 spiritself.net: *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*
http://spiritself.net/pdf/The%20Search%20for%20the%20Manchurian%20Candidate.pdf

10 Voltaire Network: *CIA: What Really Happened in the quiet French village of Pont-Saint-Esprit*
http://www.voltairenet.org/article164447.html

11 spiritself.net: *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*
http://spiritself.net/pdf/The%20Search%20for%20the%20Manchurian%20Candidate.pdf

12 spiritself.net: *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*
http://spiritself.net/pdf/The%20Search%20for%20the%20Manchurian%20Candidate.pdf

13 Voltaire Network: *CIA: What Really Happened in the quiet French village of Pont-Saint-Esprit*
http://www.voltairenet.org/article164447.html

14 prweb: *French Government Queries U.S. State Dept. about LSD Attack, Prompted by New Book Release*

http://www.prweb.com/releases/A_Terrible_Mistake/Albarelli/prweb3549024.htm

15 *truthout*: *Cries From the Past: Torture's Ugly Echoes*

http://truth-out.org/archive/component/k2/item/89725:cries-from-the-past-tortures-ugly-echoes

Chapter Twelve
Airman Mendez and the Mirage Men

Simone Charisse Mendez grew up in America's heartland. Like many young people, the Illinois native dreamed of spreading her wings, leaving her hometown and flying to lands offering greater adventure and better career opportunities. She took a shot at literally just that when she joined the Air Force in 1981, where she remained employed the next seven years.(1)

Airman Mendez received positive evaluations from her superiors, and was soon granted Top Secret clearance. Stationed in 1981 at Nellis Air Force Base of fabled Area 51 fame, the 21-year-old served as a Wing/Base

Telecommunications Specialist with the 2069th Communication Squadron.

During October of that year a male coworker, “Airman Green,” a pseudonym, approached Mendez at her off base apartment with a carbon copy of an allegedly classified document received at the message center. It contained information carrying strong implications for the UFO phenomenon. The document reportedly suggested the North American Aerospace Defense Command (NORAD) had tracked a group of unknown objects originating from deep space. Some of the objects allegedly entered earth atmosphere and headed to the Soviet Union, where they hovered near Moscow for over an hour. Mendez retained the copy of the multi-carbon form containing the original message. She eventually developed the opinion the document was likely fake, a perspective she continues to lean towards today.

The life of Airman Mendez quickly and dramatically went downhill in the wake of being provided discreet yet unauthorized access to the document. By January, 1982, the former girlfriend of Airman Green reportedly arrived at the apartment of Mendez. The woman, who was a civilian, indicated the doc was fake, authorities had been made aware of the circumstances, and that she was to accompany Mendez, with the carbon copy of the document, immediately to the base.

Mendez voluntarily did as requested, including presenting the Air Force with the copy of the doc, and found herself the object of intense scrutiny. She was soon interrogated by both the FBI and Air Force Office of Special Investigations (OSI), and the sessions would continue for months. The agencies maintained the assertion the doc was a hoax and grilled Mendez repeatedly on her activities surrounding the message. Her interrogators wanted her to explain who she told about its contents and related details.

It was not until July of 1982 that Mendez was finally cleared of all suspicion of spying and espionage. In the mean time, her apartment had been searched and personal letters were confiscated. She was subjected to a battery of interrogation techniques, including threats of long-term imprisonment. Mendez suffered from stress and depression throughout the ordeal to the extents of periodically requiring hospitalization. In a surreal twist of irony that would only make sense to those familiar with methods of intelligence agencies, after having her security clearance revoked and getting reassigned to Tinker Air Force Base in Oklahoma, OSI reportedly approached Mendez with intentions of recruiting her to conduct work for them.

I intended to contact Simone Mendez, whom I did not yet know, in order to learn more about her story and include her comments in this chapter. As fate would have it, she coincidentally emailed me in April of 2015. She wrote to share some personal perspectives on comments I made during an appearance on *Binnall of America* after host Tim Binnall graciously invited me to guest on his popular show. Simone also informed me she was a reader of my blog, *The UFO Trail*. She and I subsequently exchanged emails and, at my request, spoke by telephone. Statements attributed to her in this chapter were obtained during that call, conducted April 20, 2015, and are quoted with her permission.

UFOs

Simone Mendez had a personal interest in UFOs long before Airman Green reportedly knocked on her Nevada apartment door with a suspicious document in hand one October morning in 1981. She experienced UFO sightings back home in Illinois and developed a familiarity with the UFO community.

“In the late 1970's and early 1980's there was a UFO flap in Northern Illinois and Southern Michigan,” Mendez explained. “One night I saw a formation of about seven objects. They were round and slightly orange, about the size of a nickel held at arm's length. They moved in a straight line, abreast, silent, coming from west and going east.”

Mendez subsequently formed affiliations with the Mutual UFO Network. She later saw unusual aerial phenomena while stationed at Nellis and continued to interact with members of MUFON and the UFO community throughout her Air Force career.

“I saw strange things in the sky at Nellis,” Mendez recalled. “They were orange - they looked like bolides – and then one time me and this guy standing outside saw this elongated blue thing that moved very fast. Other people had sightings, too. Security police took reports of round, lightning-like things that caused a lot of excitement. That happened during the time I was having my long term trouble.”

Reports of UFO activity and high strangeness at Nellis have indeed surfaced over the years.(2) While Mendez finds her observations and the additional reports of aerial phenomena at the base curious, particularly those

that occurred during the time she was under investigation, she does not interpret the events to be of primary significance.

“The real story of Nellis for me was when I came into possession of that document.”

OSI

“This airman, he had a civilian girlfriend,” Mendez recalled, “and all of us lived off base - North Las Vegas - in our own little apartments. He lived in his apartment with his civilian girlfriend.

“He came to my apartment in October, 1981, with the document. He showed it to me and left it with me, ya know.”

Once introduced to the document and the message it contained, Mendez chose to hang on to it. The situation escalated.

“His girlfriend and he had a falling out,” Mendez continued, “and he had long since showed me the document. I think it was January – January of '82 – that she came over to my apartment and said he had somehow made it look like it was destroyed properly and that no one would know he had the carbon, but that it was a hoax made by him.

“She said she'd told OSI. She said that she was to escort me onto the base.

“I agree then, 'Okay, it's a hoax made by him and I'll accompany you onto the base. I'll give it to them.'

“The whole thing,” Simone sighed, “got very stressful.”

Mendez now questions the motives and intentions of not only some of the people she knew back in 1981, but also her interrogators and OSI. The entire chain of events was very traumatic for her, and she continues to experience gaps in her memories of the circumstances, particularly related to her hospitalization. That concerns her, she explained, for reasons including her suspicions that she may have been administered drugs in attempts to enhance the interrogation process or as some type of related experimentation.

“When I got in trouble, that was real traumatic,” she said. “There was one point where they put me in a hospital, and a nurse gave me some pills. I really have no clear memory of how long I was there, except, like, maybe a week. I have it in my memory today that I was there a week and a nurse gave me some pills. Those two things are in my memory and nothing else, nothing else...”

After her life changing run-in with OSI in 1982, five years later Mendez was informed the Office again wanted to meet with her. Her career was greatly altered and on a much different path at that point. She lacked her former security clearance, for instance, but she was once again receiving outstanding performance evaluations, including commendation and awards for good conduct.(3)

“In 1987 I was at Tinker Air Force Base in Oklahoma. My security clearance was revoked and I was doing more mundane work in the laundry. The OSI head of counterintelligence guy on the base asked to see me. He had two other guys with him.

“Ya gotta understand,” she continued, “in 1987 Nancy Reagan had the whole 'just say no to drugs' thing, and OSI asked me to help them with the war on drugs. They told me they'd check in with me about once a week. It really didn't make sense.”

Mendez explained that she interpreted OSI to be interested in persuading her to remain in the service and work with them.

“I never contacted them, they always came to see me. They started sending this one guy. They told me I could be of help to them in ways that they needed.”

She wanted out, however, and apparently did not view the proposal as particularly stable or much of an opportunity. Mendez and OSI agents periodically discussed various circumstances when they would visit her but she opted to leave the Air Force in 1988.

“OSI lost interest in me,” Mendez concluded, “as soon as they learned that I made the decision to get out.”

Confirmation

“The thing about me and my story,” Mendez explained, “as compared to some other UFO story tellers, is that I have the hard documentation via the Freedom of Information Act that speaks for what I say. I may not remember this or that, but I have federal files – documentation - that speaks for what I say.”

Indeed she does. After Mendez left the Air Force in 1988, she went about obtaining evidence of the events she experienced in 1981-82 and their implications to ufology and national security. She got in touch with

researcher Barry Greenwood, who conducted work with Citizens Against UFO Secrecy (CAUS) and helped publish its newsletter, *Just Cause*.

Greenwood took an interest in the Mendez saga, sharing his experience with her on such procedures as effectively composing FOIA requests and identifying where best to send them. In January of 1989 Mendez began filing requests with the FBI and two of its field offices. On May 7, 1990, the first of what would turn out to be several files were released by the FBI on its investigation of Simone Mendez.

In July, 1990, she submitted another FOIA request, this one to the Air Force Office of Special Investigations. OSI began declassifying and releasing some of its documents related to the case in January, 1991. *Just Cause* reported that the combined files eventually totaled "nearly two-hundred pages, one of the largest government files of a single UFO-related case on record. However, as expected, many dozens of documents were withheld entirely and released papers were often very heavily censored."(4)

While that was the case, the released documents verified that much of what Mendez described had taken place. Even so, Mendez explained to me that she often felt shunned by a UFO community that preferred to avert from her story and its implications, even after authenticated. Simone Mendez had nonetheless obtained her confirmation.

FOIA

I emailed Barry Greenwood in April of 2015 and asked if he might help me gain access to back issues of *Just Cause*. I was seeking two of the publications from 1991, the June and September editions, which contained a summary of the Mendez case in addition to copies of some of the key declassified documents, which I particularly wanted to view. Greenwood promptly responded and was indeed able to provide me with the files I was seeking. His help was greatly appreciated. The September, 1991, edition of *Just Cause* contained copies of the following quoted declassified documents.

An FBI cable dated January 27, 1982, and released in response to Simone Mendez's inquiries, established the nature of her work as a Telecommunications Specialist. The cable stated in part:

For additional information of the Chicago division, investigation

> has determined that the subject Mendez has access to cryptographic keys and routinely sends and receives cryptographic messages. On a daily basis, Mendez handles classified communications up to and including Top Secret. This information was previously provided to the Bureau and Dallas via Las Vegas teletype dated January 12, 1982.

A February 26, 1982, FBI communication formerly classified “Secret” specifically referenced Simone Charisse Mendez and contained the term “espionage.” The doc listed “pertinent” yet redacted “facts as determined through investigation at Dallas, Texas.”

A declassified March 25, 1982, FBI cable released in response to Mendez's FOIA requests contained the following statements:

> The communication related to three UFOs over the Soviet Union and the Air Force was attempting to identify them. She stated that she had kept this document, however, determined that it was false.

OSI documents released to Mendez included a heavily redacted case summary exploring the possibility the “SUBJECT may have compromised classified information,” as well as FBI interest in the matters. Another OSI doc dated February 23, 1982, made a rather convincing and thorough argument that the original message apparently given to Mendez was fake. The message in question was described as containing a number of telltale inaccuracies, such as incorrect routing indicators, errors in certain codes and related discrepancies.

Just Cause acknowledged that the conclusion seemed valid based on what was released by the Air Force. However, a copy of the message was requested via the FOIA in order to cross reference the explanations with the original document.

According to *Just Cause*, OSI responded in an undated letter issued in 1991, “A review of our records reflects that the message you have requested is not being maintained by OSI.”

Were we to believe that, after all that occurred, OSI did not have so much as a copy of the original document? They indeed claimed the message was

not maintained by OSI.

“If not them, then by whom?” *Just Cause* encouraged its readers to question.

“Therefore,” the 1991 newsletter continued, “the very object of the investigation, for which six months of manpower were expended, is mysteriously not available. Everything else is and has been kept in secure files by both the Air Force and OSI.”

Context

Researchers such as George P. Hansen raised valid suspicions that the Air Force Office of Special Investigations might have targeted select individuals for recruitment precisely because of their interest in UFOs and their troubled pasts, not in spite of them.(5) In the case of Richard Doty, for instance, his dubious previous involvement with the UFO community may have been viewed as an asset for the type of work he was being considered. Hansen suggested it may have been viewed as advantageous that Doty could be easily discredited if he was caught in something that might embarrass the agency.

Curiously, *Just Cause* reported in 1991 that Airman Green, who apparently supplied Mendez with the message, had “at times committed petty theft,” as well as discussed “contents of classified messages with outsiders regarding internal affairs.”(6) One might reasonably speculate that such circumstances may have contributed to his possible eventual involvement with intelligence agencies if he did, in fact, take the role of a relatively uninformed agent in some type of counterintelligence operation when interacting with Mendez.

We might also consider statements contained in Bruce Maccabee's 2014 book, *The FBI-CIA-UFO Connection*. Maccabee asserted that long time CIA man Ron Pandolfi stated in 1990 that the official reason for Agency interest in UFOs was “the possibility of espionage.”(7) Pandolfi reportedly further alleged that during the 1970's the CIA obtained “firm evidence” that the KGB had devised plans to use US citizens, specifically including ufologists, to penetrate the US defense program. Such statements might possibly shed some light upon intelligence community interests in ufology and related counterintelligence initiatives, particularly circa 1981.

Circumstances and the time frame of the Simone Mendez saga should be

kept in context with OSI involvement with Richard Doty and the Paul Bennewitz affair. The events were thoroughly reported by such researchers as Greg Bishop in his book, *Project Beta*, and more recently by Mark Pilkington and company in their book and resulting film, *Mirage Men*.

Bennewitz believed he was intercepting electronic communications involving extraterrestrials in New Mexico. Doty intervened in 1980, steering and manipulating Bennewitz.(8) The extents Doty, a confirmed OSI agent, may have been acting in an official capacity continue to be debated and scrutinized. Doty claimed he was carrying out orders while conducting such activities as distributing fraudulent documents in attempts to encourage Bennewitz to believe an alien invasion was imminent.

In 1982 Bennewitz was sharing his extreme ideas of aliens throughout the UFO community, and by 1988 he authored a paper on the topic. He was ultimately involuntarily committed to a residential mental health facility.

The wheels fully came off when prominent writer/researcher Bill Moore announced during his speech at the 1989 annual MUFON Symposium that he had been engaged in publishing disinformation directed at Bennewitz and the collective UFO community. Moore stated that his actions were conducted in collaboration with Doty and additional undisclosed members of the intelligence community.(9)

As Mendez noted during our April, 2015, phone conversation, Doty provided researcher Linda Moulton Howe a viewing of fantastic yet bogus documents of a purported extraterrestrial presence in addition to his activities directly involving Bennewitz. Such circumstances could be interpreted as similar to those surrounding Airman Green and Mendez. Additional similarities include the time frame of Doty's deceptive actions in ufology, the 1980's, as well as the agency implicated, the AFOSI.

Just Cause further reported in 1991 that the treatment of Mendez was outrageous in proportion to the apparent lack of official concern allocated to the actions of Doty. The September edition noted the hypocrisy and implications related to involvement of an OSI agent, Doty, in distributing hoaxed UFO-related classified documents.

“Yet,” *Just Cause* observed, “there is no evidence of an FBI or OSI investigation comparable to that inflicted upon Simone Mendez, who was in no way involved in creating the document in her case, nor did she circulate it or make it freely available.”

It is not difficult to understand why some researchers suspect OSI and intelligence agencies distributed bogus UFO-related documents with the intentions of tracking the actions of those who demonstrated interest. The social circles of such individuals would have been of potential interest to intelligence agents for numerous reasons, including those as reportedly suggested by Ron Pandolfi. Such circumstances would of course add to the confusion and misunderstandings inherent to the UFO community.

To add to the chaos of the overlapping UFO and intelligence communities, in 1990 the Gulf Breeze Six entered stage right. They were a group of a half dozen National Security Agency intelligence analysts who reportedly abandoned their Army posts in West Germany and set out to save the world from the Antichrist. This, they claimed, was done under the guidance of extraterrestrials and such religious icons as Mother Mary. It was allegedly believed to be “Rapture time,” and the group of former intel analysts turned UFO chasers was arrested in July in Gulf Breeze, Florida. They were apprehended literally down the street from where the 1990 MUFON Symposium had just wrapped up, consisting of such speakers as Budd Hopkins and his fellow hypnosis advocate Dr. Rima Laibow, who would marry career intelligence officer Gen. Bert “Men Who Stare at Goats” Stubblebine. The GB6 reportedly claimed they were in town to greet an alien spacecraft on the Gulf Breeze beach.(10) The late Philip Coppens reported that when the case was declassified, 1400 of its 1600 pages were withheld. (11)

About this same time, a woman who would come to be known to the UFO community as Leah Ann Haley was starting to try to make sense of a memory of a childhood UFO sighting. The 1990's and coming years would find her immersed in a ufology hall of mirrors that seemed to include interactions with intelligence agents who may very well have been attempting themselves to clarify what was taking place, exactly who was involved and what their interests were in Florida Panhandle UFO circles. Circumstances surrounding Haley's saga - plagued by exploitation and undisclosed agendas - will be explored in the next chapter.

As for Simone Mendez, I shared a draft of this chapter with her prior to publication. I asked her to check it for accuracy and encouraged her to offer feedback.

“I find it therapeutic and healing to be dignified, much less acknowledged,

in an interested and a contributional way," she replied. "What happened to me is a highly relevant part of UFOs and the national security state. I hope that those who bullied me in chat forums in times past, and those who knowingly took advantage of me, long past, will all end up being the ones feeling stupid."

I empathize. I have studied this story from a variety of angles, allocated it considerable amounts of time and attention, and I have yet to arrive at a scenario that relieves the United States Air Force of primary responsibility. Any way one chooses to look at it, the USAF had a young airman consistently receiving positive performance reviews, and the situation was mishandled. That is the case whatever the origins of the document in question may have been. For all practical purposes, the Air Force created the circumstances that led to the chain of events, either directly or indirectly.

Inexperience is not a crime in and of itself. It is a characteristic of youth. Simone Mendez was 21 years old when she was confronted with stressful circumstances of which she lacked the experience to handle in manners assisted by age and hindsight. It was the responsibility of the employer, a reasonable argument can be made, to identify such circumstances, provide adequate support, and provide sufficient training while placing personnel in positions, both socially and professionally, that enhance their abilities and are most conducive to their attributes. The Air Force was responsible for conducting its affairs accordingly. What took place could instead be interpreted as the antithesis of functional employment and mentoring.

"Do you feel like the airman and his girlfriend hoaxed the document," I asked Mendez during our phone call, "or that the Air Force gave it to him to give you, or you're just not sure?"

"I have no stance on it," she stated.

"That's fair enough," I replied. "I think you're wise to know when you don't know."

"Yeah, I just don't know, so I'll say so."

"What do you think is most important about your story?" I asked. "What would you most want people to know about what happened?"

"Wow, I have mixed emotions about that. Like, even if the document was real, it doesn't mean the objects were necessarily alien spaceships, but I also feel like I may have seen true evidence of the so-called UFO cover-up. I hate to even say that," she added with a laugh, "because it sounds so 'disclosurey,'

and I don't like that, but it makes me wonder.

"Also," Simone continued in a bit more serious tone, "I feel like some UFO people want me to go away so they can sweep the story under the rug. I don't like it. It's just not right."

After reflecting a moment longer, she considered, "If the document was real, it's a helluva story."

"If the document was not real," I assured her, "it's a helluva story."

---

1 *Just Cause*: *Number 28, June, 1991*: *Airman Mendez vs the Bureaucracy: A Case of UFO "Espionage"*

2 *The UFO Chronicles*: *Triangular-Shaped UFO Sighted at the Nellis AFB Nuclear Weapons Storage Area*

http://www.theufochronicles.com/2015/04/triangular-shaped-ufo-sighted-at-nellis.html

3 *Just Cause*: *Number 28, June, 1991*: *Airman Mendez vs the Bureaucracy: A Case of UFO "Espionage"*

4 *Just Cause*: *Number 29, September, 1991*: *Airman Mendez vs the Bureaucracy – Part Two*

5 *The Trickster and the Paranormal*: *Chapter 18, Government Disinformation, page 232*

http://www.amazon.com/The-Trickster-Paranormal-George-Hansen/dp/1401000827

6 *Just Cause*: *Number 28, June, 1991*: *Airman Mendez vs the Bureaucracy: A Case of UFO "Espionage"*

7 *Unidentified Aerial Phenomena – Scientific Research: Dr Bruce Maccabee and the CIA*

http://ufos-scientificresearch.blogspot.com/2014/11/dr-bruce-maccabee-and-cia.html

8 Open Minds: *Open letter to the U.S. Air Force regarding allegations of UFO disinformation*
http://www.openminds.tv/open-letter-u-s-air-force-allegations-ufo-disinformation/27071

9 WayBack Machine: *MUFON UFO Journal*: *November, 1989*: *UFOs and the U.S. Government: Part 1*
https://web.archive.org/web/20131011194204/http://www.theblackvault.com/encyclopedia/documents/M

10 *Chicago Tribune*: *Army Charges 6 Who Were Awol for Jesus*
http://articles.chicagotribune.com/1990-07-20/news/9003010335_1_army-charges-deserting-701st-military-intelligence-brigade

11 Philip Coppens: *The Gulf Breeze Six*
http://www.philipcoppens.com/gulfbreeze6.html

Chapter Thirteen
Leah Haley and the 139

[T]his is not a 'witch hunt' or any kind of a personal anything against John Carpenter. This is about those 140 abductees that

> have been screwed and used by John and to insure that there is never a repeat performance. I hope that you can appreciate the importance of pursuing this as vigorously as is necessary.
>
> This nasty business has now been confirmed by Bigelow himself, Walt Andrus, Dr. [John] Alexander of NIDS, and about seven of the abductees whose files were sold. This [is] no Mickey Mouse, “Ok now we all know about it so let's forget it because we're all human” kind of thing. This isn't about “cheating on the wife” or “pilfering office supplies from work,” John [Carpenter] has violated the trust, privacy, and right to anonymity of 140 abductees.
>
> No good. That kind of bullsh*t has to stop, and stop now.
>
> - John Velez to Budd Hopkins, *UFO UpDates List*(1)

On a Saturday morning in March of 2011, I drove my Ford down the sunny streets of Pensacola, Florida. I located an address where I was expected in what turned out to be a neighborhood with an inviting appearance, and I came to a stop in front of a corner lot hosting a pleasant looking brick house. After double checking the address, I parked in the driveway, gathered some equipment and walked up a sidewalk shaded by oak trees to the front door. I considered how things are not always as they appear as I rang the bell at the seemingly typical home of a woman directly involved in a very not so typical chain of events that consistently created more questions than answers.

Leah Haley opened the door. We were soon in her den, seated across from one another discussing extremely questionable activities that had long plagued the UFO community.

Haley became a relatively high profile figure within ufology during the 1990's as an alleged alien abductee. I first contacted her in 2009 due to my growing interest in cases that seemingly overlapped with elements of the intelligence community. In addition to her possibly anomalous experiences, she reported numerous interactions with people who behaved in very questionable manners. She described how one such person directly claimed to

have approached her on behalf of intelligence officials. Her story was filled with people appearing to have hidden agendas and conflicts of interest, whoever they worked for and whatever their motives may have been. She subsequently authored books on her experience in ufology, and by the time she and I began corresponding, Haley no longer believed extraterrestrials were involved in her story at all: Her research led her to conclude that human beings were conducting mind control-like experiments and operations, and that some of the people who were targeted, including her, had misinterpreted the circumstances as alien abduction.(2)

I have come to confidently conclude Haley's saga included exploitation, manipulation and ulterior motives. That is the case regardless of what specific explanations may apply to the circumstances.

Sitting in her den that Saturday morning, we talked about her fragmented memories of a childhood UFO sighting in Alabama, and how years later the memories led her to seek assistance from the UFO community. We talked about how she became involved with ufology hypnotists, and how, after writing Budd Hopkins, he referred her to John Carpenter. It was subsequently during a 1991 trip to Missouri to meet with hypnotist Carpenter and his assistants that Haley explained how she was approached at the airport in Springfield by a stranger. The man suspiciously asked out of the blue if her travels had anything to do with her interest in extraterrestrials.(3) That occurred long before she became outspoken on the subject of UFOs, and a minimal number of people should have known – or cared – she was in town to be hypnotized by Carpenter.

Pensacola

Haley and I talked about how she got involved from her former home in Mississippi with the UFO scene in Gulf Breeze, a community of substantial significance in ufology located near Pensacola. That, in turn, resulted in two now previous board members of the Mutual UFO Network accompanying her on a 13-mile hike across Eglin Air Force Base.

On September 24, 1992, Leah Haley, along with USAF Ret. Lt. Col. Donald Ware and USAF Ret. Col. Robert Reid, set out across the south end

of Eglin, which borders the Gulf of Mexico. They hiked from Navarre east across the base to Fort Walton Beach in search of the site where an alien spacecraft had been allegedly downed by American military personnel – with her aboard. That fantastic notion, dubbed the beach incident, resulted from the hypnosis sessions conducted by Carpenter, yet another member of the MUFON Board of Directors at the time. Ware later acknowledged it was he who incredibly suggested they search the base shoreline for the crash site and undertake the puzzling expedition.(4)

Haley and I talked about how, a few months prior to the hike with Ware and Reid, she interpreted herself to have received a telepathic message stating her alien abductors were from Sirius. She later discovered Sirius to be a star in the constellation Canis Major. In her 2003 book, *Unlocking Alien Closets*, pages 19-20, Haley documented experiencing what she interpreted as a second telepathic message the very next day, March 13, 1992, following the transmission referencing Sirius.

“My communicators told me to check out the beach incident; they indicated that it had occurred Thursday morning, August 4, 1988, on Navarre Beach,” Haley wrote.

She discovered Navarre Beach to be near Pensacola and border Eglin Air Force Base. The circumstances directly contributed to her further involvement with the Gulf Breeze UFO community, Donald Ware and the subsequent hike across Eglin.

Please allow me to direct our attention to the work of Dr. Robert Becker, a now deceased orthopedic surgeon and electrophysiology researcher. He reported in his 1985 book, *The Body Electric*, that researchers had successfully transmitted spoken words directly to the human brain via pulsed microwaves. He cited work conducted in 1973 by Joseph C. Sharp of the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research. Interestingly, Becker also reported that further related research was contracted to a Navy group - located in Pensacola. In Chapter 15, titled *Maxwell's Silver Hammer*, Becker wrote:(5)

> Sharp, serving as a test subject himself, heard and understood spoken words delivered to him in an echo-free isolation chamber via a pulsed-microwave audiogram (an analog of the word’s

> sound vibrations) beamed into his brain. Such a device has obvious applications in covert operations designed to drive a target crazy with "voices" or deliver undetectable instructions to a programmed assassin. There are also indications that other pulsed frequencies cause similar pressure waves in other tissues, which could disrupt various metabolic processes. A group under R.G. Olsen and J.D. Grissett at the Naval Aerospace Medical Research Laboratory in Pensacola has already demonstrated such effects in simulated muscle tissue and has a continuing contract to find beams effective against human tissues.

"Voice-to-Skull" technology – and weapons - were born. In more recent times, investigative journalist Sharon Weinberger reported in 2008 that the US Army had removed a page on its website previously dedicated to Voice-to-Skull devices, and explanations for the removal of the page were pretty nonexistent.(6) The Federation of American Scientists had published on its website some of the information formerly displayed on the Army site, however, and continued to make it available, including the following statements about the "nonlethal weapon" Voice-to-Skull technology, also known as V2K:(7)

> Nonlethal weapon which includes (1) a neuro-electromagnetic device which uses microwave transmission of sound into the skull of persons or animals by way of pulse-modulated microwave radiation; and (2) a silent sound device which can transmit sound into the skull of person or animals. NOTE: The sound modulation may be voice or audio subliminal messages. One application of V2K is use as an electronic scarecrow to frighten birds in the vicinity of airports.

At one point in our interactions I asked Leah if she was aware of Martti Koski. She responded she never heard of him. I inquired about Koski, a Finnish citizen who claimed to have become a victim of MKULTRA-type mind control experiments while visiting Canada, because he reported hearing unexplained voices – that told him his abusers were from Sirius.(8) His case

was cited in Martin Cannon's 1990 work, *The Controllers: A New Hypothesis of Alien Abduction*.(9)

“Koski, for example,” Cannon wrote, “was at one point told that the doctors afflicting him were actually 'aliens from Sirius.'"

Further food for thought includes a September, 1991, *Flying Saucer Review* submission, *The Extraordinary Case of “Elizabeth Richmond”*.(10) Explored in the article were events surrounding the alleged UFO-related experiences of a woman assigned the pseudonym Elizabeth Richmond, who apparently resided in Pensacola. Her reported anomalies included telepathic contact involving a message about aliens from Sirius.

“During later meditation sessions there was apparently some telepathic contact,” the authors wrote. “Elizabeth was told that their home-planet belonged to the star Sirius...”

While I found such circumstances intriguing, my interest admittedly spiked when I noted this: The authors were Donald Ware and Robert Reid. I checked with Haley to make sure there was not some kind of mix up in which Ware and Reid were actually writing about her as “Elizabeth Richmond,” which, Leah confirmed, they indeed were not. She further indicated she was previously unaware of the article and its contents.

Were we to believe MUFON directors residing in Greater Pensacola knew at least two people during the early 1990's stating they interpreted themselves to have received telepathic messages claiming to have been transmitted by aliens from Sirius?

MUFON Contradictions

Whatever we are to make of the many curious circumstances that make up the Haley saga, they do not change the fact that a great deal of consideration could be given to the actions of people involved in the case, whatever those actions might indicate. At the least, issues of ethics and exploitation arise.

That is the fact no matter how adamantly one may choose to argue the validity of Haley's conclusions about her experiences or one potential explanation or another.

As I blogged about the case, primarily between 2011 and 2013, I frequently observed people seeming to be either unable or unwilling to absorb and discuss the social significance of the chain of events and its implications to ufology as a whole. Interested parties often seemed unable to get past arguing about the legitimacy of alleged alien abduction or the feasibility of relatively recent mind control operations in order to meaningfully discuss what I interpreted to be issues that offered better opportunities for deeper, more focused study. At the least, Haley's case offered opportunities to identify details of specific incidents and the players involved. I'd go as far as to say, in hindsight, I confidently suspect a significant segment of the UFO community prefers to keep attention aimed at nebulous concepts, arguing about beliefs that can't be conclusively resolved, rather than drilling down through that which is actually available for closer examination.

A fourth MUFON board member, US Navy Ret. Lt. Commander Tom Deuley, questioned Haley's motives and judgment in statements published in the March 5, 1995, edition of *The Tampa Tribune-Times*.(11) The engineer and former National Security Agency employee stated that MUFON did not embrace Haley's story of alien and military abductions when he was quoted for an article addressing her then-upcoming speaking engagement. “We feel very embarrassed” about “such ridiculous stories,” Deuley commented on behalf of MUFON, adding that “it doesn't help the serious scientific work being done.” Such statements might be considered an understandable public stance to express – if they had been accurate.

While throwing Haley under the bus, Deuley completely failed to disclose it was his own MUFON colleagues – fellow board members, no less – who played primary roles in shaping and encouraging her perceptions in the first place; perceptions cultivated via such means as hypnosis and a very peculiar field trip across an Air Force facility in search of the crash site of an alien spaceship. Deuley apparently failed to disclose extents of MUFON involvement with Haley while literally describing her statements as ridiculous. He represented the stance of the organization as rejecting such

claims, when, in fact, a much more accurate description of the situation would have been that its board members were actively involved in manufacturing them.

Readers even vaguely familiar with the Mutual UFO Network should be well aware of its long established tendencies to embrace and promote such beliefs, contrary to what Deuley informed the newspaper reporter. As a matter of fact, in 1995, during the very time in which *The Tampa Trib* ran the story with Deuley's comments, the *MUFON UFO Journal* was regularly carrying a pro-alien abduction column authored by John Carpenter. *Abduction Notes*, as it was titled, clearly endorsed and promoted claims of abduction of both the alien and military variety. In a column published in the February, 1995, edition of the *Journal*, a matter of just days before the March 5 newspaper article went to press at *The Tampa Trib*, Carpenter specifically promoted “the reality of UFO abductions” while referencing such material as Whitley Strieber's *Communion* and Budd Hopkins' *Intruders*.(12)

For Deuley to assert that MUFON attempted to discourage spreading such stories in favor of promoting “serious scientific work” was obviously, to put it kindly, incorrect. For the MUFON director to frame the events in such a manner while simultaneously omitting mention of board members' direct involvement and literal participation in Haley's story, which he described the organization as identifying as embarrassing and ridiculous, was, to put it politely, not an accurate representation of the circumstances. History would soon show us that Deuley's failure to provide *The Tampa Trib* with more accurate context of the circumstances was only a trailing indicator of what would prove to be much deeper and systemic MUFON problems directly related to transparency, protocols and ethics.

The Carpenter Affair

In 1995, hypnotist, Licensed Clinical Social Worker and MUFON Director of Abduction Research John Carpenter was publishing columns in the *MUFON UFO Journal*. He was advocating quality services and compassionate treatment for alleged alien abductees, including what he described as the emergence of “a promising network of abduction support

groups” led by “trustworthy individuals.”(13) He would later state he was at that same point in time conducting what he attempted to justify as “data sharing” with controversial ufology philanthropist Robert Bigelow: Carpenter was supplying Bigelow and his associates at the now dissolved National Institute for Discovery Science (NIDS) information from and copies of case files of alleged abductees without their knowledge or consent.(14)

The circumstances would become known as the Carpenter Affair, and, according to documents and statements obtained from multiple sources which included Carpenter himself, copies of the case files of 140 alleged alien abductees were released.(15) The files were shared without the informed consent of the individuals who were hypnosis subjects of Carpenter, and some had paid him for the sessions, including Leah Haley. Additional materials released apparently included audiotapes of hypnosis sessions.

Carpenter received a reported $14,000 from Robert Bigelow in exchange for the “data sharing.” He framed the compensation as reimbursements for his time and expenses, while others interpreted him to have sold case files.

“'[M]y data sharing was spread over three years around 1995,” Carpenter stated during a January, 2012, email exchange I conducted for a blog post at *The UFO Trail*.(16)

“Other researchers were approached with the same proposal, and some of them may have shared data, too,” he added, but declined twice to elaborate further on the alleged involvement of other researchers.

Carpenter consistently defended his actions. He repeatedly described his hypnosis and alien abduction investigation activities as serious scientific research conducted with the best of intentions.

“It was an honor to have great minds study this important information, quietly, discreetly, and respectfully,” he wrote of the hypnotically induced narrations and their release to Bigelow and associates.

“If you were so confident your motives and intentions were honorable,” I asked during the 2012 email exchange, “why did you not ever just ask Leah if it would be okay to share her file with an interested party? After all, she was obviously an ambitious truth seeker, considering her activities and levels of commitment. Why didn't you just ask her?”

“She was already publicly sharing, speaking, and publishing more details of her case than I ever thought of sharing,” Carpenter replied, “and I wasn't sharing anything publicly - only discreetly and privately with scientists - that's what researchers do.”

Even if we were to entertain that statement – evasive and condescending as it may be - as a sincere description of Carpenter's interpretation of his actions in the case of Leah Haley, it doesn't explain his justification for bypassing informed consent in releasing the files of the other 139. They weren't *all* speaking publicly about details of their experiences and hypnosis sessions, were they? Furthermore, it's quite arguably beside the point from a number of perspectives, and suffice it to say Haley saw the situation substantially differently than Carpenter tried to rationalize it.

MUFON Complicity

In a two-page statement included in a 2001 complaint filed to the Missouri Division of Professional Registration, Haley explained how Carpenter originally presented himself as acting in the capacity of a mental health professional and repeatedly assured her that all information discussed would be kept confidential.(17)

“Had I known that John [Carpenter] would sell my case files or disclose information he did not have permission to disclose, I would never have gone to him,” Haley wrote in the prepared statement.

What we can reasonably discern about the Carpenter Affair is that during the 1990's Carpenter supplied data to Bigelow and payment was made. The exchange was indeed discreet, as Carpenter described the circumstances, if not covert. It was not until investigator Gary Hart, acting on information provided to him by alleged abductees who told him of what they termed a file sale, picked up the trail in 1999 and more widely published the details. According to Hart, his tipsters were concerned about both the breach of confidential information as well as the MUFON willingness to enable the circumstances while failing to take corrective measures.

Hart took the role of principal reporter of the Carpenter Affair and in 2000 submitted a formal complaint to the Mutual UFO Network. The organization

still took no apparent action. MUFON allowed Carpenter to remain in a leadership capacity and continued to encourage self-described abductees to seek his services.

Hart then filed a complaint in 2001 to the Missouri Division of Professional Registration, where Carpenter was licensed as a social worker. The agency enacted a five-year probation period on Carpenter's license.(18) The action reportedly resulted from Hart's complaint. Carpenter vacated his position as MUFON Director of Abduction Research that same year, 2001, and the probation period was completed in 2006.

I picked up the Carpenter Affair story while blogging about the Haley case. Gary Hart subsequently left comments about the saga at *The UFO Trail*, and I then contacted him for more information. The result was the 2013 blog post, *The Carpenter Affair: For the Record*, which contained several documents submitted and specific points addressed in the complaints filed to the Mutual UFO Network and the Missouri Division of Professional Registration.(19, 20)

Among the points of Hart's complaint I identified as most relevant was the apparent MUFON complicity in the chain of events. MUFON founding member and participant on the board of directors John Schuessler was simultaneously sitting on a NIDS advisory committee during the time in question, the 1990's. It became increasingly apparent that factions of the MUFON hierarchy not only attempted to cover up the Carpenter Affair, but had in all reasonable likelihood been aware of its circumstances all along. Larry Bryant, MUFON Director of Governmental Affairs at the time, expressed such concerns in a 2000 formal statement on the matter:(21)

> Since a cloud of alleged impropriety now hangs over the Executive Committee (of MUFON) for its having taken so long to act upon its months-long knowledge of the 'Carpenter Affair', I hereby call upon all members of the Executive Committee to resign forthwith from their Committee positions, from their membership on the MUFON Board of Directors, and from their MUFON general membership - all in the interest of helping restore the public's confidence in the purpose, operation,

> management, and integrity of this organization...
>
> In addition, you Executive Committee members owe all of us in the entire field of UFO research not only a full, written explanation as to who on the MUFON Board originally knew of the 'Carpenter Affair' (and when they knew it) but also a published apology for their having embargoed or otherwise downplayed that knowledge at the expense of the rest of the Board. If we have a lesson to be learned from this debacle, how about this one: Enforced silence never can be the ally of truth!

Hart made it abundantly clear that, after submitting his complaint to MUFON, representatives for the organization expressed neither concern about the matter nor interest in pursuing it.

“Immediately after filing my MUFON complaint I was told in no uncertain terms that MUFON had no intention of taking the complaint seriously and actually doing an investigation, so I investigated the case further and made a proper report/complaint to the state licensing board,” Hart informed me in 2013.(22)

He added, “Perhaps the most important point in all of this is that MUFON's ethics code was all for show. They had and apparently still have no intention of holding anyone, even a board member, to their code of ethics.”

Other key points contained in Gary Hart's investigation included implications of sexual relations commonly taking place between investigator/hypnotists and alleged alien abductees. Carpenter, for instance, reportedly married two of his former clients, one of which was a hypnosis subject represented in the 140 files released to Bigelow and his NIDS associates.

Hart reported in his complaint that Carpenter's activities rendered his body of research worthless due to the “exceptionally dysfunctional behavior” documented as having occurred between Carpenter and some of his abductee contacts.(23) Given the circumstances, Hart continued, professional researchers could no longer determine what was truth or fiction within Carpenter's abductee accounts and conclusions. Hart's work further suggested

such questionable activities were common among investigators of alleged alien abduction.

Conditions of the probation enforced upon Carpenter's license were specified in *State Committee for Social Workers v. John S. Carpenter*, a 2001 public document available on the website of the Missouri Division of Professional Registration.(24) Stipulations included he submit to a psychosocial evaluation as part of a treatment program for an impaired professional. He was then required to inform the State Committee of any counseling or care recommendations that might result, as well as furnish progress reports on a quarterly basis. Carpenter was also required to provide the Committee with performance evaluations completed by his employer twice per year, among additional stipulations.

The Players

Several attempts were made at various times to obtain comments on the Carpenter Affair from relevant parties. Multiple requests for permission to submit questions were sent to Robert Bigelow and his representatives. No responses were received.

John Carpenter was emailed in preparation for blog posts in 2012 and again in 2013, and he was willing to provide statements in each of the two circumstances. He maintained his lack of negligence and defended his actions, in spite of acknowledging he indeed provided Bigelow and associates with copies of the files and that payment was made. He consistently denied they were sold, however. In 2013 I requested he specifically comment on how he could deny the allegations he sold case files in the context of statements he wrote in a 1996 letter to Bigelow. A copy of the letter was included in Hart's complaint, and I provided Carpenter a copy when I requested comment.

“Personally, I want to thank you, Bob, for your assistance regarding the 140 cases I mailed to you. That helped pay some bills,” Carpenter wrote to Bigelow in the letter.(25) “The remainder has been what we have been living on since last December at the rate of $600-$800 per month... What has really hurt this year – *after* I began copying and sending files – was the elimination

of my bonus/incentive pay program at work."

In response to request for comment on his remarks contained in the 1996 letter, Carpenter stated in an email received October 15, 2013, "I am now and always have been in complete possession of all original case files, approximately 140 in number. Mr. Bigelow paid me for my time, expense, and labor in making some copies that his elite science panel could review in order to understand the abduction phenomenon more fully."

John Carpenter may describe his activities as he chooses, yet the fact will remain it is not difficult to understand why some people would interpret the circumstances as selling the case files and betraying the trust of the parties involved. An argument could also be made the specific purpose of the compensation is irrelevant as compared to the significance of the file release itself.

Moreover, a primary problem I have with the published statements of former MUFON board members John Carpenter and Tom Deuley is they directly contradict one another. That is the circumstance not only in the manners Carpenter, Ware and Reid facilitated alien hunting while Deuley proclaimed MUFON rejected the resulting stories, but also in Carpenter's continued claims that his work was of scientific value to Bigelow.

Specifically, either the 140 files were relevant and of interest to Bigelow and his associates or they were not. Deuley claimed Haley's case was "ridiculous," yet Carpenter continued as recently as 2013 to suggest Bigelow and company had scientific interests in the files. It can't be both.

The circumstances and resulting platforms taken by former MUFON board members Deuley and Carpenter were mutually exclusive of one another. What's more, Deuley was making his remarks at the very point in time, 1995, that Carpenter would later indicate he was supplying Bigelow with copies of case files and related "data." Three MUFON board members had encouraged Haley to believe in alien abductions and related concepts, to the point of going fishing for a saucer crash site on an Air Force base, and her information was later released without her consent. The reasons for the release allegedly included its interest to scientists, while - at literally the same time – a fourth board member, Deuley, publicly stated the case was ridiculous and hampered efforts to do serious scientific work.

It is neither unreasonable nor conspiracy mongering to expect adequate explanations for such contradictions. In some 20 years now, no such explanations have been produced.

MUFON International Director from 2000 to 2006 and founding member John Schuessler was part of that “elite science panel” Carpenter referenced. Schuessler sat on the NIDS Scientific Advisory Board.(26) I emailed him on multiple occasions and requested permission to pose a few questions about the Carpenter Affair, clarifying that his comments were requested for inclusion in blog posts. No responses were received.

Former member of the MUFON Board of Directors Donald Ware and the organization parted ways, and Ware went on to direct the International UFO Congress from 1993 to 2010. He and I exchanged emails in preparation for my February, 2012, blog post, *The Leah Haley Case: The Eglin Expedition*. (27)

Ware explained that he suggested undertaking the hike across Eglin in 1992 based on the description of the alleged crash site, alluding to details which arose during a July, 1991, hypnotic regression session conducted by Carpenter with Haley.

“I told her there is about 100 miles of the sugary white sand along our coast,” Ware wrote, “but the most likely place for the military people to be there so soon would be the 13 miles of restricted Eglin AFB beach between Navarre and Ft. Walton Beach.”

Asked what led him to correctly believe he and two other parties could hike across the base without being detained by security, Ware replied, “A state law keeps the part of Florida coasts below the high tide line open to the public except when a mission is in progress.”

Further research revealed Ware was probably referring to the *Public Trust Doctrine*, a document of rather hypothetical water access guidelines published by the National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration and adopted by most states. I was doubtful of its practical application or relevance.

I was aware, for instance, Haley had grown increasingly suspicious of the dynamics taking place in her case, and, as a result, she and her late husband

Marc Davenport attempted in 1994 to recreate the original hike. The two were quickly confronted by base security and ordered to leave the way they came, else face legal consequences. I subsequently confirmed the circumstances with her.

“The guard threatened to take us to the brig and cite us,” Haley recalled of her and Davenport's experiment.

I telephoned Eglin Air Force Base and specifically inquired about accessing the base. I asked if I could hike along the beach if I stayed below the high tide line, adding that I had been told a state law allowed such a hike.

I was directed to pose my questions to the base's Jackson Guard, and during a call placed January 6, 2012, I was respectfully told in no uncertain terms to keep myself off that base if I did not have proper access. Suffice it to say I would personally not rely on citing any such obscure policies as suggested by Ware while proceeding with planning to sashay 13 miles across Eglin. While there remain any number of potential explanations for the trio successfully navigating the base in 1992, the fact remains Ware did not demonstrate himself able to provide any such verifiable explanation.

Offered an opportunity to comment on the Carpenter Affair, Ware replied, “I suspect Bigelow's friends would also find those files useful.”

Encouraged to name who those friends might be and describe their suspected interests, Ware failed to do so while offering a rambling response in which he discussed the alleged Majestic 12 and a treaty “with the Zetas,” among other dubious topics. Ware additionally commented that he saw “no problem” with Carpenter sharing client files, explaining the files were only useful to society if people see them, and added that he would continue to invite Carpenter to speak when the opportunity presented itself.

In a July, 2000, email to the once popular listserv and website *UFO UpDates List*, John Velez indicated that Col. John Alexander and Robert Bigelow himself, along with some of the suspected abductees in question, were among those who had confirmed that “files were sold.”(28) Career intelligence officer, non-lethal weapons expert and CIA consultant Col. Alexander was a staff member of NIDS at the time.(29)

It was for such reasons that I emailed the colonel in the weeks preceding

the 2012 Ozark UFO Conference, where Alexander was scheduled to speak, and requested permission to interview him at the event for a blog post to be published at *The UFO Trail*. In an email dated March 2, 2012, Col. Alexander responded that he "would be happy" to meet with me, and recommended I get with him at the conference to schedule a time. However, when I approached Alexander in person at the conference the next month, April, he declined to be interviewed due to what he described as my interests in conspiracies.(30)

Since our interactions in 2012, I have emailed Col. Alexander and requested comment for blog posts on various occasions. Sometimes he offers direct statements and other times he is more vague.

In August of 2013 I emailed Alexander and informed him I was hoping he would provide comment on some issues surrounding the Carpenter Affair. I particularly asked what interests he may have had in the 140 files. I also asked if he would please explain, in his opinion, why his former employer, Robert Bigelow, desired to obtain the 140 files and, in effect, finance Carpenter's ongoing activities. Comment was requested on any knowledge he might have of other researchers offered similar agreements, as asserted by Carpenter.

Lastly, I cited James Carrion's January, 2011, allegation that Bigelow, during dealings with MUFON, moved funds on behalf of an undisclosed financial "sponsor" that Bigelow only revealed to John Schuessler, but not the rest of the MUFON board.(31) I asked Col. Alexander if he could offer comment on Carrion's allegation, and if there was anything he might be at liberty to discuss concerning relationships between Bigelow corporations and intelligence agencies.

"You should ask Bigelow if you are interested in old affairs," Alexander less than transparently emailed in response.

It is possible Alexander's aversion to discussing the Carpenter Affair and related issues, while ironically promoting himself as an intelligence insider both willing and able to explain behind the scenes ufology, may be due at least in part to nondisclosure agreements long reported to be conditions of dancing with Team Bigelow. Following is an excerpt from an Associated Press article, *Millionaire searches for UFOs on ranch in Utah*, which

references such agreements while exploring Bigelow's interests in the Skinwalker Ranch, published in the October 24, 1996, edition of the *Eugene Register-Guard*:(32)

> Officially, the research is being conducted by the National Institute for Discovery Science, which Bigelow formed last October. Among the scientists involved is John Alexander, former director of non-lethal weapons testing at Los Alamos National Laboratories in New Mexico.
>
> "Our approach is to do good, high-quality research using a standard scientific approach and do what we can to get hard data," Alexander said from the institute's Las Vegas offices. "One of the missions of the institute is to make information widely available."
>
> Bigelow himself declined an interview. Alexander would not provide details of how or why the research is being conducted.
>
> [Former owner of the property Terry] Sherman, now employed by Bigelow to maintain the ranch, said he can no longer discuss the activity because of a nondisclosure agreement Bigelow had him sign.

Along with the use of nondisclosure agreements, reports have circulated of Bigelow's direct involvement with intelligence agencies, in addition to his practice of employing their consultants such as Col. Alexander. An individual identifying himself as "Chip" in an interview published in September, 2012, claimed to have been employed in security at the Skinwalker Ranch during approximately 2009.(33) Chip indicated security clearances and nondisclosure agreements were prerequisites for employment at the facility, and alleged that he saw copies of a contract between Bigelow interests and the NSA during the time he worked at the ranch.

James Carrion, in his ongoing research, documented contradictions and inconsistencies put forth by NIDS.(34) Carrion reported that individuals, including family members of the former Skinwalker Ranch owners, stated that accounts of supposed high strangeness related to the property were exaggerated or entirely misrepresented. Moreover, while serving as the

MUFON International Director, Carrion and an accompanying scientist visited the ranch but were denied access. Carrion further reported that he was among the people interviewed for a background investigation on John Schuessler for a US government security clearance allegedly related to his consulting work for Robert Bigelow.(35)

Elizabeth Chavez Carpenter is a former wife and hypnosis subject of John Carpenter, and her case file was among the 140 released. She contacted me in December, 2013, after reading my posts at *The UFO Trail* about the Carpenter Affair. Although I had not previously interacted with her directly, I was aware of Chavez Carpenter due to my research of the circumstances and correspondence with Gary Hart. She was among the sources who provided Hart with information contained in his formal complaints, and he described Chavez Carpenter as "truthful in my many talks with her."(36)

She and I subsequently corresponded, and I considered one of the more interesting aspects of her experience as one of the 140 to be that she actually had a copy of her case file eventually sent to her by standard mail. Chavez Carpenter explained that she contacted John Alexander after identifying him from the NIDS website as someone who could possibly be instrumental in returning her file and audiotapes. She and Alexander then exchanged emails, according to Chavez Carpenter, from May to October of 2000.

She described the colonel as polite in their interactions, adding that he at one point informed her that he would check on the tapes the next time he was at the NIDS offices. In one email from Alexander, she indicated, he asked her if she had yet received anything. In another, Alexander suggested that he had discovered the tapes were not at NIDS – whatever we might suspect that implied.

Chavez Carpenter received her case file in 2001, but knowing that NIDS kept a copy, she concluded. It came in an envelope with no return address, as she recalled.

"I sent three letters to Robert Bigelow requesting to have my case file back along with the audiotapes," Chavez Carpenter explained. "I did receive the case file, minus the audiotapes."

She was unsure of the specific chain of events that led to receiving the file in the mail. I asked, for instance, if she thought Alexander was instrumental,

as she initially suspected he might be.

“As I look back and reflect on all this, I cannot really say.”

I asked Chavez Carpenter what she thought the reasons were that Robert Bigelow was willing to provide John Carpenter with cash and purchase copies of the case files and related materials.

“We may never know,” she replied.

Surveillance, Perception Management and Exploitation

During my interactions with Leah Haley, she and I talked about how she was approached at one point through the UFO community by a man who requested to meet with her and claimed to be doing so on behalf of intelligence officials in Washington. We also discussed how other contacts she developed over the years spoke to her discreetly about claimed ties to the intelligence community, but would not overtly and publicly disclose their alleged connections.

When I was considering such circumstances during the 2008 to 2012 time frame, I began to suspect individuals in the UFO community might become targets of surveillance after associating with others who were targeted. The more I heard witness accounts of people convinced they had been followed, had their phone calls monitored and similar circumstances, including in some cases outright contact with apparent intelligence personnel, the more I suspected they might be passing the conditions around to one another. It stood to reason to me that any given individual might end up a target of state surveillance if they spent their time interacting with other individuals under surveillance and engaging in various counterculture activities common to members of the UFO community. I envisioned the existence of a somewhat inept yet relatively powerful, perhaps even dangerously powerful, intelligence unit, pressured to produce important results, but probably trying more to compile names on lists and justify its existence than actually accomplishing much of value. Citizens hurt in the process are traditionally not of concern in such operations.

I felt my suspicions were supported when former NSA contractor Edward Snowden and the documents he published began making news in 2013. It was

revealed that intelligence analysts start with a known target and review its list of contacts contained in email accounts, social media sites and similar venues. Google, Facebook and Yahoo were among the websites identified as key sources. The analyst may go “two or three hops” out, or what amounts to friends of friends, or even friends of friends of friends, which can mean thousands or millions of people can potentially be investigated from a single target.(37)

The extents of such surveillance were as concerning as its existence. Online gaming communities, of all things, were scrutinized due to what the NSA described as the sites' potential to be a “target-rich communication network.”(38) The NSA suspected, or at least claimed it suspected, that terrorists might be hiding in plain sight while plotting their evil deeds and transferring their ill gotten gains. Personnel subsequently attempted to infiltrate communities, recruit informants and obtain intelligence. At one point, so many spies from agencies including the NSA, CIA and FBI were involved in the infiltration that a “deconfliction” group was launched in efforts to help agents avoid conducting surveillance and undercover operations on one another. They were running into each other. To add insult to injury and raise further suspicions of intents and purposes, no counterterrorism successes were reported as a result of targeting gaming sites. Not one.

The NSA conducted bulk collection of data at Internet access points controlled by foreign telecommunications companies and allied intelligence services. To what extent? A document supplied by Snowden to *The Washington Post* indicated that in a single day the NSA collected 444,743 e-mail address books from Yahoo, 105,068 from Hotmail, 82,857 from Facebook, 33,697 from Gmail, and 22,881 from other providers.(39)

That's in one day, folks. That's also going to be a *lot* of friends, their friends and then their friends. It might hypothetically be much easier to identify anyone whose data is not of interest.

Such circumstances make it easy for me to envision cases such as Gulf Breeze, which for a while became a backdrop of the Leah Haley case, possibly attracting attention of intelligence personnel due to high levels of public interest and subsequent traffic. I suspect similar might be said for other

high profile sightings as well as reports of alleged alien abduction. It's of course also possible, if not arguably likely, the intelligence community was responsible for initiating the activity and monitoring its circulation in the first place in some cases.

We have explored a few such circumstances in this book, and there are of course many more, in which intelligence agents came calling and established a presence among members of the UFO community. It is typically very difficult to discern the specific intentions of such agents and purposes of their actions. We might wonder if the perceived UFO events and experiences were initiated as some type of covert psychological operation. Perhaps, in other cases, events already in motion were identified as advantageous opportunities to conduct such operations. In yet other circumstances, maybe intelligence analysts were attracted themselves by the reports, and perhaps they were investigating the possible covert presence of other agencies or adversaries suspected of conducting psyops and acts of aggression.

It does not seem out of the realm of possibility by any means that a variety of agencies, unaware of the intentions and objectives of one another, might each become influential in long term sagas and chains of events within ufology, leaving confusion and chaos in their wake. As a matter of fact and given what can be conclusively demonstrated to have taken place thus far between ufology and the intelligence community, it would be more surprising if intel agencies weren't significantly involved in high profile cases of recent decades.

Public access to the Internet has proven itself to be a highly targeted and valuable opportunity for the intelligence community to disseminate propaganda, manipulate opinions and manage perception. *The Art of Deception: Training for Online Covert Operations*, a Joint Threat Research Intelligence Group (JTRIG) document supplied by Snowden to *The Intercept*, detailed the infiltration of the Internet.(40) The massive websites YouTube and Blogger were specifically exploited in order to discredit activists. Priorities included the publication of false information and the manipulation of online discourse to generate desirable outcomes. JTRIG is a division of the British intelligence agency, Government Communications Headquarters (GCHQ).

Similarly, in early 2015 the British army announced the formation of the 77th Brigade, a unit of 1500 troops *The Guardian* dubbed “Facebook warriors.”(41) The soldiers are charged with carrying out unconventional, “non-lethal warfare” and executing psychological operations through the use of social media. Israeli and US armies engage heavily in such operations, with the Israel Defense Forces reporting activity conducted in six languages on 30 platforms, including Twitter, Facebook, YouTube and Instagram.

It would be difficult for me to believe the UFO community did not serve in some capacity in the research and development of such psyops, or, at the least, I would doubt the community was exempt from effects of the evolution of such projects. As a matter of fact, in his hard hitting 2015 piece on how the US intelligence community drove to dominate the world through information control, *Why Google made the NSA*, investigative journalist Nafeez Ahmed referenced ufology's favorite CIA consultant, Col. John Alexander. Specifically, the targeting of civilian populations for information war.

Addressing a 1989 US Navy brief authored by well-connected Pentagon official Richard O'Neill, Ahmed wrote, “That secret brief, which according to former senior US intelligence official John Alexander was read by the Pentagon’s top leadership, argued that information war must be targeted at: adversaries to convince them of their vulnerability; potential partners around the world so they accept 'the cause as just'; and finally, civilian populations and the political leadership so they believe that 'the cost' in blood and treasure is worth it.”(42)

In the end, the best most of us can do is inventory the facts, carefully differentiating between what we can demonstrate to be true versus what we are told is true. We can then make an honest effort to see what kind of picture emerges when the facts stand on their own, absent unsubstantiated proclamations and stripped of colorful yet distracting costumes.

Leah Haley initially waded into the UFO community in search of credible information. People claimed they were qualified to provide it. Some 14 or more hypnosis sessions and a life altering change of belief systems was facilitated by the board of directors of a purported scientific research organization. Haley put on the brakes and summoned the courage to question the validity of the indoctrinated alien narrative. In her renewed efforts to

separate fact from fiction, she found nothing to support an alien presence, yet repeatedly identified circumstances of human-instigated exploitation. She and others who have sought guidance from ufology hypnotists and similar self-described experts will deal with the adverse effects the rest of their lives.

I cannot conclusively say Leah Haley is a victim of covert mind control research as she suspects, but I can confidently say that she and her circumstances were exploited, and I can also say that she is entitled to her opinion of her experiences. She may be right.

Either way, it was her involvement with the people of the UFO community who qualified themselves as able to be of assistance that directly led to the entire traumatic series of events, of which this chapter represents but a small sample. In a manner of speaking, she's right, one way or the other, as her interpretations of reality and memories of past experiences were definitely altered and manipulated. Relevant questions become how intentional was it, who was interested in studying it and for what purposes.

As for me, I'm pretty sure a lot of the excessive window dressing is hung by people bound by nondisclosure agreements and government security clearances which restrict them from discussing classified information. They're promoting hypnotic regression as a memory enhancer, and they are generally - and in some cases extremely - exploiting the public. They're spending decades as key personnel of nonprofit corporations funded by undisclosed sources and operating under false pretenses of prioritizing scientific study, while, in actuality, virtually constantly promoting an entirely unsubstantiated alien presence. If they can ever undress the facts they're disguising beneath multiple layers of elaborate costumes, evasive statements and unresolved contradictions, I'd be more than willing to adjust my assessment accordingly.

In the mean time, I call bullshit.

---

1 *UFO UpDates List*: *UpDate: Re: Budd Hopkins on John Carpenter - Velez*

http://ufoupdateslist.com/2000/jul/m20-015.shtml

2 *The UFO Trail*: *Leah Haley on Alien Abduction: "It Doesn't Happen"*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2011/09/leah-haley-on-alien-abduction-it-doesnt_17.html

3 *The UFO Trail*: *The Leah Haley Case: Springfield, St. Louis and on to Gulf Breeze*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2012/02/leah-haley-case-springfield-st-louis.html

4 *The UFO Trail*: *The Leah Haley Case: The Eglin Expedition*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2012/02/leah-haley-case-eglin-expedition.html

5 TetraWatch: *The Body Electric, Chapter 15, Maxwell's Silver Hammer*
http://www.tetrawatch.net/papers/maxwell_hammer.pdf

6 *Wired*: *Army Yanks 'Voice-to-Skull Devices' Site*
http://www.wired.com/2008/05/army-removes-pa/

7 Federation of American Scientists: *voice to skull devices*
http://www.fas.org/sgp/othergov/dod/vts.html

8 *My Life Depends on You!*: *My Story*
http://www.netti.fi/~makako/mind/mylife.htm

9 Constitution Society: *The Controllers: A New Hypothesis of Alien Abduction*
http://www.constitution.org/abus/controll.htm

10 ignaciodarnaude.com: *The Extraordinary Case of "Elizabeth Richmond"*
http://www.ignaciodarnaude.com/contacto_alienigena/Ware,Contact%201973,Wyoming,FSR1993V38N

11 *The UFO Trail*: *The Leah Haley Case: Tom Deuley, The Tampa Trib and MUFON*

Unaccountability

http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2012/02/leah-haley-case-tom-deuley-tampa-trib.html

12 Wayback Machine: *Mutual UFO Network UFO Journal*: *Abduction Notes*

https://web.archive.org/web/20140805063624/http://www.theblackvault.com/encyclopedia/documents/M

13 Wayback Machine: *Mutual UFO Network UFO Journal*: *Abduction Notes*

https://web.archive.org/web/20140805063624/http://www.theblackvault.com/encyclopedia/documents/M

14 *The UFO Trail*: *The Leah Haley Case: John Carpenter*

http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2012/02/leah-haley-case-john-carpenter.html

15 *The UFO Trail*: *The Carpenter Affair: For the Record*

http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2013/10/the-carpenter-affair-for-record.html

16 *The UFO Trail*: *The Leah Haley Case: John Carpenter*

http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2012/02/leah-haley-case-john-carpenter.html

17 *The UFO Trail*: *The Carpenter Affair: For the Record*

http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2013/10/the-carpenter-affair-for-record.html

18 Missouri Division of Professional Registration: *Detail*

https://renew.pr.mo.gov/licensee-search-detail.asp?passkey=1549455

19 *The UFO Trail*: *The Carpenter Affair: For the Record*

http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2013/10/the-carpenter-affair-for-record.html

20 *UFO UpDates List*: *UpDate: Forward From Gary Hart*

http://ufoupdateslist.com/2000/jul/m20-017.shtml

21 Wayback Machine: *Saucer Smear, Volume 47, No. 8, September 5, 2000*: *Outrage Over John Carpenter's Ethics, or Lack Thereof*
https://web.archive.org/web/20130828171404/http://www.martiansgohome.com/smear/v47/ss000905.ht

22 *The UFO Trail*: *The Carpenter Affair: For the Record*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2013/10/the-carpenter-affair-for-record.html

23 *UFO UpDates List*: *UpDate: Forward From Gary Hart*
http://ufoupdateslist.com/2000/jul/m20-017.shtml

24 Missouri Division of Professional Registration: *State Committee for Social Workers v. John S. Carpenter*
http://pr.mo.gov/boards/socialworkers/Disciplinary%20Actions/Carpenter%20John.pdf

25 *The UFO Trail*: *The Carpenter Affair: For the Record*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2013/10/the-carpenter-affair-for-record.html

26 Wayback Machine: *National Institute for Discovery Science*: *Scientific Advisory Board & NIDS staff*
https://web.archive.org/web/20000622040455/http://www.nidsci.org/personnel.html

27 *The UFO Trail*: *The Leah Haley Case: The Eglin Expedition*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2012/02/leah-haley-case-eglin-expedition.html

28 *UFO UpDates List*: *UpDate: Re: Budd Hopkins on John Carpenter - Velez*
http://ufoupdateslist.com/2000/jul/m20-015.shtml

29 Wayback Machine: *National Institute for Discovery Science*: *Scientific Advisory Board & NIDS staff*
https://web.archive.org/web/20000622040455/http://www.nidsci.org/personnel.html

30 *The UFO Trail*: *John Alexander, Contradictions and Unanswered Questions*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2012/05/john-alexander-contradictions-and.html

31 *Follow the Magic Thread*: *Strange Bedfellows*
http://followthemagicthread.blogspot.com/2011/01/strange-bedfellows.html

32 Google news: *Eugene Register-Guard – October 24, 1996*: *Millionaire searches for UFOs on ranch in Utah*
https://news.google.com/newspapers?nid=1310&dat=19961024&id=O0xWAAAAIBAJ&sjid=HOsDAAAAIBAJ&pg=4548,6235898

33 *The Paracast*: *paracast_120902*
http://www.theparacast.com/podcasts/paracast_120902.mp3

34 *Follow the Magic Thread: Hunting the Skinwalker*
http://followthemagicthread.blogspot.com/2011/02/hunting-skinwalker.html

35 *Follow the Magic Thread*: *Strange Bedfellows*
http://followthemagicthread.blogspot.com/2011/01/strange-bedfellows.html

36 *The UFO Trail*: *The Carpenter Affair: For the Record*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2013/10/the-carpenter-affair-for-record.html

37 *Pro Publica*: *FAQ: What You Need to Know About the NSA's Surveillance Programs*
https://www.propublica.org/article/nsa-data-collection-faq

38 *Pro Publica*: *World of Spycraft: NSA and CIA Spied in Online Games*
https://www.propublica.org/article/world-of-spycraft-intelligence-agencies-spied-in-online-games

39 *The Washington Post*: *Here's everything you should know about NSA address book spying in one FAQ*
https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/the-switch/wp/2013/10/14/heres-everything-you-know-about-nsa-address-book-spying-in-one-faq/

40 *The Intercept*: *How Covert Agents Infiltrate the Internet to Manipulate, Deceive, and Destroy Reputations*
https://theintercept.com/2014/02/24/jtrig-manipulation/

41 *The Guardian*: *British army creates team of Facebook warriors*
http://www.theguardian.com/uk-news/2015/jan/31/british-army-facebook-warriors-77th-brigade

42 medium.com: Insurgence Intelligence: *Why Google made the NSA*
https://medium.com/insurge-intelligence/why-google-made-the-nsa-2a80584c9c1

Chapter Fourteen
21st Century US Illegal Human Experimentation

The exploration of who might have an interest in studying data produced by seemingly ill conceived ufology activities and what purposes might be served leads us back to topics considered in our opening chapters: indoctrinated belief systems, hypnosis and interrogation. Considered in Chapter Three was the 2015 Hoffman Report and its account of the 1999 case of Petty Officer Daniel King, accused of spying. An ethics probe called the actions of psychologist Michael Gelles into question when, acting on behalf of interrogators with the Naval Criminal Investigative Service (NCIS), Gelles attempted in 2001 to determine if King was “a proper subject for hypnosis.”(1)

Elizabeth Swenson, an American Psychological Association (APA) Ethics Committee liaison, reported finding that Gelles was "misleading" and "omitted information that could have really helped [King] about how false memories can be established and solidified by interrogation." Petty Officer King was eventually released without formal charges after experiencing some 520 days of incarceration, consisting of intense NCIS interrogations. Such circumstances, among others, establish the continuing presence of hypnosis in interrogation procedures practiced by the intelligence community.

It would appear such uses of hypnosis initially, circa the Cold War era, included at least two primary areas of focus: behavior modification and interrogation. The former involved attempts to indoctrinate subjects to predetermined belief systems, as well as manipulate the individual into carrying out specific activities on command. Hypnosis in interrogation consisted of attempts to extract information, and, as explained by Martin

Orne, sometimes involved the use of clever deceptions intended to lead the subject to believe they were defenseless to so-called powerful and infallible hypnosis techniques. It appears the implementation of hypnosis during interrogation evolved to include inducing questionable, if not intentionally inaccurate, memories in the pursuit of obtaining confessions. It also appears the lines blurred between hypnosis purposes. That might be considered even more the case outside the intelligence community – and inside ufology - among poorly trained hypnotists who practiced the procedures in haphazard conditions.

Such dynamics and uses of hypnosis are in many aspects virtually indistinguishable between the UFO community and intelligence agencies, whatever that may or may not indicate. The manners UFO hypnotists manufactured hypnotically induced narrations of alleged alien abductions, seemingly in some cases and for all practical purposes in order to create sensational and marketable material, epitomized the objectives of executing indoctrination and securing confessions as pursued by the Clandestine Services. Whether it was intentional or not, factions of the UFO and intelligence communities would have found themselves in positions in which it was mutually beneficial to observe and study the work of one another in the areas of conducting hypnosis and embedding memes into popular culture. Their objectives were similar, their methods were similar, their behavior virtually mirrored one another and their community members were, at times, one and the same.

Abuse Rationalized

Let's consider an interview of Col. John Alexander conducted by Sharon Weinberger and published in *Washington Post Magazine* in 2007:(2)

> Alexander's career led him from work on sticky foam that would stop an enemy in his or her tracks to dalliances in paranormal studies and psychics, which he still defends as operationally useful.

> In an earlier phone conversation, Alexander said that in the 1990s, when he took part in briefings at the CIA, there was never any talk of "mind control, or mind-altering drugs or technologies, or anything like that."
>
> According to Alexander, the military and intelligence agencies were still scared by the excesses of MK-ULTRA, the infamous CIA program that involved, in part, slipping LSD to unsuspecting victims. "Until recently, anything that smacked of [mind control] was extremely dangerous" because Congress would simply take the money away, he said.
>
> Alexander acknowledged that "there were some abuses that took place," but added that, on the whole, "I would argue we threw the baby out with the bath water."
>
> But September 11, 2001, changed the mood in Washington, and some in the national security community are again expressing interest in mind control, particularly a younger generation of officials who weren't around for MK-ULTRA. "It's interesting, that it's coming back," Alexander observed.

While the trail of exploitation of unwitting human research subjects may have temporarily gone cold following Congressional hearings conducted during the 1970's exploring CIA abuses, it now clearly winds through the so-called war on terror. Alexander was almost certainly alluding to what is now publicly known about human experimentation conclusively taking place at such facilities as Guantanamo Bay. Weinberger continued:

> Alexander also is intrigued by the possibility of using electronic means to modify behavior. The dilemma of the war on terrorism, he notes, is that it never ends. So what do you do with enemies, such as those at Guantanamo: keep them there forever? That's impractical. Behavior modification could be an alternative, he says.
>
> "Maybe I can fix you, or electronically neuter you, so it's safe to release you into society, so you won't come back and kill me," Alexander says. It's only a matter of time before technology

> allows that scenario to come true, he continues. "We're now getting to where we can do that." He pauses for a moment to take a bite of his sandwich. "Where does that fall in the ethics spectrum? That's a really tough question."

It is potentially noteworthy that the case of Petty Officer Daniel King, and its related circumstances of hypnosis and accompanying questionable ethics, occurred pre-9/11. The powers that be weren't even in full scale “war on terror” mode yet when the young man was detained and possibly subjected to hypnosis without being charged with a crime.

King was additionally forced to endure a time period of approximately four weeks, some 29 days or so, in which he spent every waking hour with an NCIS interrogator.(3) He was sleep deprived and held incommunicado in a six by nine foot cell with lights kept on continuously. He reported struggling to distinguish fact from reality, expressed suicidal thoughts, wept and sobbed during interrogations, and was subjected to polygraph tests. Given the circumstances, the tests were in direct violation of Department of Defense procedures, and, to add insult to injury, King's interrogators misrepresented polygraph results, which were actually inconclusive. It was not until March 9, 2001, a year and a half after his arrest in October of 1999, that King was released without charges.

If such tactics were not marginal enough, the American intelligence community further embraced extremism after 9/11. Despite complaints filed to the APA concerning the King case, Dr. Michael Gelles maintained his status with NCIS and was appointed in early 2002 to the newly formed Criminal Investigations Task Force (CITF). He was sent to Afghanistan to train interrogators and later to Guantanamo Bay, a facility located in Cuba and alleged to hold the worst of the worst of Uncle Sam's international enemies. Actuality would soon paint a much different picture than was presented to the public of what was taking place at the hell that came to be known as Gitmo.

America's Battle Lab

In January of 2015, researchers at Seton Hall University School of Law Center published a paper, *Guantanamo: America's Battle Lab*.(4) The paper clearly established the existence of a prevailing practice of brutal experimentation on involuntary human research subjects. From the abstract:

> What was it that the Executive Branch was so eager to gain from intelligence at GTMO? Results. The continued pressure effectively created GTMO's alter-ego. Out of it emerged America's "Battle Lab," as MG [Michael] Dunlavey and MG [Geoffrey] Miller both referred to GTMO. Every lab must have its test subjects and GTMO was no different; its rats were human beings, detainees. Instead of receiving POW treatment, the detainees underwent a level of interrogation overwhelmingly condemned by federal government agencies at the time, and criticized by all the agencies involved in intelligence gathering...
>
> The criticized torture tactics, known as Enhanced Interrogation Techniques, were not utilized for the purpose of obtaining reliable information. Instead, the "results" the Executive Branch was searching for was something more sinister. The government sought information on the most effective ways to torture a human physically, information on the most damaging ways to break a man psychologically, and insight as to just how far the human body could be pushed in pain and terror before organ failure or death. Upon arrival, detainees were routinely given psychosis-inducing drugs and were held in isolation for up to 30 days without access to human contact, including the International Committee of the Red Cross.

The Seton Hall paper indicated mefloquine, an anti-malaria drug, was among the psychosis-inducing drugs given to detainees. The drug was administered in doses of 1250 milligrams, five times the normal dosage of 250 milligrams. Side effects commonly include hallucinations, paranoia, psychotic behavior and memory impairment. The excessively large doses ensured, for all practical purposes, that such conditions would be experienced.

Appendix G contained a document obtained by researchers of the minutes of a “counter resistance strategy” meeting. Interestingly, participants discussed inducing perceptions of “loss of time” in prisoners, circumstances clearly considered to be advantageous. Strategies included letting a detainee “rest just long enough to fall asleep and wake him up about every thirty minutes and tell him it's time to pray again.” Increasing the number of meals served per day was also considered as a way to distort prisoners' perceptions of time.

“Truth serum; even though it may not actually work, it does have a placebo effect,” was noted during the strategy meeting. Page 33 of *Guantanamo: America's Battle Lab* explored similar subject matter, providing references and citing sources for the consideration of such techniques as administering “truth serum,” conducting “mock executions” and implementing “harsh techniques as long as the [International Committee of the Red Cross] did not discover their intention.”

The Seton Hall report quoted Col. Britt Mallow, Commander of the Criminal Investigative Task Force. The colonel explained:

> MG Dunlavey and later MG Miller referred to GTMO as a “Battle Lab” meaning that interrogations and other procedures there were to some degree experimental, and their lessons would benefit DOD in other places. While this was logical in terms of learning lessons, I personally objected to the implied philosophy that interrogators should experiment with untested methods, particularly those in which they were not trained.

The report went on to document how “Intel was intentionally encouraging untrained personnel to utilize untested methods of eliciting information from detainees without accountability”:

> Control of the camp has allowed Intel to operate GTMO as a laboratory, conducting a massive experiment where Intel can test techniques and develop strategies for extracting [human intelligence] from detainees.(74) The first evidence of this

> mindset surfaced in March of 2002, when COL Herrington advised that intelligence needed to have greater control over detainees, even where this control interfered with the detention mission.(75) Intel then proceeded to, with their new found ability to control the environment of the detainees, begin introducing drugs into interrogation procedures.(76) In addition, they began adopting decades-old battle and interrogation tactics which were designed for drastically different situations completely unrelated to intelligence gathering.(77) [See *Guantanamo: America's Battle Lab* for footnotes.]

Cited in the Seton Hall work was a now declassified 2004 report on the intelligence activities at Abu Ghraib, a CIA-operated prison located in Iraq which became infamous for its human rights violations. The document resulted from an investigation ordered by the commander of the Combined Joint Task Force Seven (CJTF-7). Due to the name of one of its coauthors, US Army Maj. Gen. George R. Fay, the document came to be known as the Fay Report.(5)

The Fay Report provided a disturbing assessment of the chaotic confinement of Middle Eastern men, women and children at Abu Ghraib. Sodomy and sexual assault were inflicted upon detainees by their captors, as well as the filming thereof, among numerous other abuses. A competition among dog handlers was reported in which the winner would be the first to cause a prisoner to defecate. Using dogs to terrify prisoners into losing bladder control, or involuntarily urinating, had already been accomplished, all of which was apparently done primarily for the entertainment of prison personnel. In one documented instance, a dog was released into a cell holding two juveniles and allowed to “go nuts on the kids.”

An inventory of prisoner files revealed many missing records. Problems stemmed, at least in part, from the employment of teams of Afghans, Iraqis and others of Middle Eastern descent who were paid inordinate sums of cash by local standards to deliver prisoners. Records were also poorly kept and unable to be located on prisoners obtained from American teams, and an obvious lack of attention was given to record keeping once detainees were in custody. Sometimes, the Fay Report stated, interrogation-related information

was written on a whiteboard and later erased.

Abu Ghraib came to warehouse males, females and juveniles who in some cases may have only been accused of crimes of local – not international – significance, if accused of crimes at all. The CIA and its forces did not so much as know who they were detaining and torturing in some instances.

Nonetheless, it was from such sites that prisoners were shipped to Gitmo, further tortured and often held for years without charges. Writer/researcher Joseph Hickman, who contributed to the Seton Hall paper and served in the 629th Military Intelligence Battalion at Guantanamo Bay, cited such circumstances as yet further evidence of the intent to prioritize and conduct unethical human experimentation.

“[Why] were men of little or no value kept under these conditions, and even repeatedly interrogated, months or years after they’d been taken into custody?” Hickman challenged readers to consider in his 2015 book, *Murder at Camp Delta: A Staff Sergeant's Pursuit of the Truth about Guantanamo Bay*. “Even if they’d had any intelligence when they came in, what relevance would it have years later? ...One answer seemed to lie in the description that Major Generals Dunlavey and Miller both applied to Gitmo. They called it 'America’s battle lab.'”

Links to Cold War Projects

The 2015 Seton Hall Law Center paper was part of a logical progression of years of path forging conducted by journalists and human rights advocates. In 2010, Physicians for Human Rights (PHR) published results of its investigation which concluded the Bush administration “conducted illegal and unethical human experimentation and research on detainees in CIA custody.”(6) The investigation was detailed in the PHR paper, *Experiments in Torture*.(7)

The report revealed grim instances of CIA and professional medical personnel collaborating to conduct torture, monitor prisoner responses and subsequently modify methods to increase physical and mental susceptibility

to the resulting techniques. Medical equipment was used to observe subject vital signs and calibrate them with progressing experiments, which included combinations of what came to be known as “enhanced interrogation techniques,” or EITs. The experiments were carried out on detainees individually as well as in groups in order to observe possible variations in stress levels and responses under differing conditions.

Frank Donaghue, PHR Chief Executive Officer in 2010 when the report was published, stated at the time, “The CIA appears to have broken all accepted legal and ethical standards put in place since the Second World War to protect prisoners from being the subjects of experimentation.”(8)

It was also reported by journalists in 2010 that an Army public health physician referred to the use of mefloquine at Gitmo as “pharmacologic waterboarding.”(9) The manners the drug was administered had no redeeming medical value, detainees were the only people at Guantanamo given mefloquine, and Maj. Remington Nevin of the Armed Forces Health Surveillance Center went as far as calling the situation, “at best, an egregious malpractice.”

What's more, research involving the classification of drugs including mefloquine, known as quinolines, was demonstrated to have direct ties to Project MKULTRA.(10) Specifically, Subprojects 43 and 45, which were conducted by the US Army Chemical Corp of Fort Detrick explored earlier in this book. The Fort Detrick Special Operations Division researched the drugs and developed related delivery systems within MKULTRA components MKNAOMI and MKDELTA. The saga of Frank Olson, Sid Gottlieb and George White echoed through the halls of Guantanamo Bay.

San Francisco psychologist, human rights activist and journalist Dr. Jeffrey Kaye was a leader in reporting current day abuses and experimentation inherent to “enhanced interrogation techniques.” While publicly documenting such circumstances as CIA intense use of solitary confinement, “rectal feeding” of prisoners, and threats to kill detainees' families, Kaye emphasized a point that otherwise went notably unreported: Psychologist James Mitchell, the man credited with implementing the most brutal part of the interrogation program, was employed in the same division of the CIA, the Office of Technical Services (OTS), as originally responsible

for MKULTRA.(11) Kaye additionally reported that, while it could be established who implemented and taught EITs, the specific origins and evolution of the techniques were much more difficult to conclusively identify.

By 2005, Mitchell and his former business partner, Dr. Bruce Jessen, a retired Air Force psychologist, formed a consulting business. The resulting entity, Mitchell Jessen and Associates, included former CIA and Department of Defense officials acting as principals when a CIA contract was secured in which some $81 million was paid for Mitchell and Jessen to conduct and facilitate EITs.(12)

Kaye assisted in further reporting that present day EITs could be demonstrated to resemble tactics initially employed during MKULTRA and the related Project Artichoke.(13) In addition to detaining individuals at CIA black sites, similarities to Cold War behavior modification projects included subjecting prisoners to drugs, stress positions, and sleep and sensory deprivation, among other aspects. It did not seem unreasonable to consider EITs in the context of the “Artichoke treatment.” Also reported were manners MKULTRA was successively integrated into a series of procedural manuals, culminating in the relatively recent CIA Human Resource Exploitation manual, as well as the presence of such abusive human subject research within evolving CIA technical service divisions.(14)

Legal Issues

A now declassified 2002 Top Secret memo was authored by Department of Justice Assistant Attorney General Jay S. Bybee for CIA attorney John Rizzo. The memo was in response to CIA inquiries about the legalities of certain proposed interrogation techniques.

The correspondence described details of several techniques assigned titles such as walling, facial hold and cramped confinement, among others. Some of the methods were reminiscent of Ewen Cameron's MKULTRA activities and his infamous sensory deprivation box, but with added options resulting at least partially from the more recent tactic of exploring and exploiting subject phobias. Bybee wrote to Rizzo:(15)

> You would like to place [Gitmo detainee Abu] Zubaydah in a cramped confinement box with an insect. You have informed us that he appears to have a fear of insects. In particular, you would like to tell Zubaydah that you intend to place a stinging insect into the box with him. You would, however, place a harmless insect in the box. You have orally informed us that you would in fact place a harmless insect such as a caterpillar in the box with him. [Next two lines redacted]

Bybee advised Rizzo and the CIA that it was the determination of his office that none of the proposed conduct would violate prohibitions against torture. He emphasized, however, that Rizzo should be aware that was their best reading of the law given the lack of case precedence related to the specific circumstances.

I strongly suspect British resident and native Ethiopian Binyam Mohamed would challenge that interpretation. He was detained and flown in 2004 to Kabul, Afghanistan, where he was held at the infamous brick factory turned CIA facility that came to be known as the “Dark Prison” and the “Salt Pit.” The American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU) reported in 2007:(16)

> In US custody, Mohamed was fed meals of raw rice, beans and bread sparingly and irregularly. He was kept in almost complete darkness for 23 hours a day and made to stay awake for days at a time by loud music and other frightening and irritating recordings, including the sounds of "ghost laughter," thunder, aircraft taking off and the screams of women and children.
>
> Interrogations took place on almost a daily basis. As part of the interrogation process, he was shown pictures of Afghanis and Pakistanis and was interrogated about the story behind each picture. Although Mohamed knew none of the persons pictured, he would invent stories about them so as to avoid further torture.

Mohamed was eventually transferred to Gitmo. The British government petitioned the US for his release in 2007, but it was not until 2009 that

Mohamed was finally allowed to leave US custody and return to Britain. After several years of continuous torturous captivity, he was never convicted of a crime.

The plight of Gitmo detainee Shaker Aamer could be considered yet further evidence of CIA efforts to measure and manipulate effects of physical and emotional trauma, as well as employ “decades-old battle and interrogation tactics” as described by Seton Hall researchers. Aamer, a Saudi Arabian national and British resident, was detained from 2001 until his release in late 2015 without charges, initially held at the Dark Prison of Kabul and then at Gitmo since 2002. American psychiatrist and trauma specialist Dr. Emily A. Keram evaluated Aamer over the course of approximately 25 hours during December 16-20, 2013.(17)

Dr. Keram's report contained a significant amount of content in which Aamer was quoted directly. He claimed his ordeal included experiencing and witnessing violent sexual assault, severe beatings, his interrogators threatening in detail and at length how they would sexually assault his young daughter, and periods of sleep deprivation of ten days at a time.

Keram observed what she interpreted to be Aamer's attempts to avoid distressing memories associated with such traumatic events. She wrote:

> Mr. Aamer currently experiences prolonged psychological distress and physiologic reactivity on exposure to reminders of trauma. Most notably, at numerous times during the five-day evaluation he became visibly agitated and interrupted himself when discussing the severe maltreatment he’s experienced. At those times he either stopped talking or repeatedly engaged in apparent efforts to distract himself from painful and disturbing memories by suddenly and loudly singing. The lyrics he sang referred to his maltreatment, “Sweet dreams are made of this. Who am I to disagree? I travel the world and the seven seas. Everybody’s looking for something. Some of them want to use you. Some of them want to get used by you. Some of them want to abuse you. Some of them want to be abused.” He would then lose the thread of our discussion and have to be brought back to

its content.

Keram noted that Aamer indicated he believed there to be a device implanted behind the wall of his cell that his captors used in order to introduce some type of electronic frequency into his environment. Aamer stated that the effect of the device varied in different parts of the cell.

“They are highly advanced in harming human beings,” Aamer was quoted in Keram's evaluation. “They have devices and the devices have some way of maybe beaming, maybe electromagnetism or some kind of radiation, but it can harm your body from a distance.”

Aamer described effects of the device as “a feeling of being in a trance.” He added it would cause “failure of my body to move.”

Keram asked Aamer if he believed the device to be real or somehow a product of his mind. He replied:

> It’s one of two things. Either the device is really there or it’s a gimmick. They want me to think there’s a device there and make me believe it by pretending to check the device at the same time they say to me, “You look terrible, are you feeling okay?”

Whether such testimony may be results of inaccurate perceptions brought on by the symptoms of emotional trauma, or indicative of actual circumstances as described by Col. Alexander to Sharon Weinberger, is a relevant consideration. It leads to a question that has persistently tugged at the sleeves of researchers of fringe topics such as alien abduction for generations: What can be discerned from circumstances in which extremely traumatized people describe similar experiences and perceived violations?

Shaker Aamer of course came to experience his environment and its impact on his body in manners resulting from his ordeal. But what does that indicate, exactly? It could be suspected the CIA was successful in inducing psychosis, for instance. We are simply left to wonder at this point specifically what the short and long term implications of such scenarios might mean. In an Orwellian twist of logic, the testimony of the research subjects is suspect for reasons including the nature of the experiments themselves.

I have come to develop a confidence that such dynamics matter, and that they likely reach far beyond the induced trauma and hopelessness of Guantanamo Bay. The entitlement and deception inherent to the research and development of such policies and procedures is relevant in and of themselves, and that is the case in addition to whatever else may be indicated.

Further food for thought was contained in a 2009 cable classified Secret and posted at WikiLeaks. The document contained key points of a meeting conducted between then-White House counterterrorism adviser and future DCI John Brennan and the late Saudi King Abdullah. On the issue of monitoring detainees after their release, King Abdullah suggested they be implanted with an electronic chip:(18)

> HOW TO TRACK DETAINEES: "I've just thought of something," the King added, and proposed implanting detainees with an electronic chip containing information about them and allowing their movements to be tracked with Bluetooth. This was done with horses and falcons, the King said. Brennan replied, "horses don,t have good lawyers," [*sic*] and that such a proposal would face legal hurdles in the U.S., but agreed that keeping track of detainees was an extremely important issue that he would review with appropriate officials when he returned to the United States.

In the event you're wondering how people come into the custody in the first place of teams paid to deliver individuals to sites such as Abu Ghraib and the Salt Pit of Kabul, suffice it to say there is not a whole lot of due process. In October of 2015, *Vice News* posted a video in which a source, describing tactics of the notorious CIA “rendition program,” explained, “They reach out, they rip him into the van, they put a hood over his head and – boom - just like that.”(19)

International courts have significantly disagreed with Assistant Attorney General Bybee's interpretation of which side of the law the CIA stands on. The European Court of Human Rights ruled in 2014 that Poland acted in violation of a human rights convention when it allowed CIA imprisonment and torture of two terrorism suspects in secret prisons on its soil.(20) One of

the suspects was ironically Abu Zubaydah, the very individual specifically discussed in Bybee's 2002 memo to CIA legal counsel, which was considered earlier in this chapter. Both of the suspects involved were eventually held at Gitmo and awarded damages by the European Court, which ruled against Macedonia in a similar 2012 case involving CIA rendition.

In 2009 an Italian court convicted 23 Americans, consisting of 22 CIA operatives and a USAF colonel, on kidnapping charges stemming from such "extraordinary rendition" programs.(21) All of the defendants, essentially accused of "snatching a Muslim cleric off the street," were tried in absentia. One of the convicted former CIA agents, American-Portuguese citizen Sabrina de Sousa, continues to try to prove her innocence in the chain of events. The rendition should have never happened, she explained in 2015 to the *Portugal Resident*, which reported that none of those convicted have received Agency support despite the fact they were each acting under orders. (22) De Sousa was officially a diplomat, she asserted, and worked only as an interpreter for a CIA "snatch" team that arrived in Italy.

There are many such circumstances. *Prison Legal News*, a project of the nonprofit Human Rights Defense Center, reported in 2015 that some 54 nations were complicit in secret CIA prisons.(23) Cited as sources were reports composed by the US Senate and the Open Society Justice Initiative (OSJI), the latter of which published *Globalizing Torture: CIA Secret Detention and Extraordinary Rendition*. It was documented that the 54 countries had assisted in detaining, interrogating and transporting prisoners in circumstances related to CIA black sites. In some cases, Agency-secured funding was provided in exchange for turning a blind eye to the existence of the prisons and tactics employed.

US Senate Summary

Dr. Jeffrey Kaye, the San Francisco psychologist and journalist who published material on the evolution of current day CIA torture and human experimentation, chose in 2008 to resign his membership to the American Psychological Association. Kaye, who had worked to reform policy towards a more ethical APA, stated in his letter of resignation that his decision was

based in part on the participation of psychologists in national security interrogations.(24) Also weighing in the decision, Kaye added, was a decades-long APA position to serve uncritically the national security apparatus of the United States, to the extent of ignoring basic human rights practice and law.

Kaye's reporting, in addition to circumstances previously cited, included assisting in raising public awareness of how detainees were drugged in manners the Department of Defense referred to as the administration of “chemical restraints.”(25) Detainees were not informed as to what drugs they were given. In one instance, the DoD indicated personnel conducted what it described as a “deliberate ruse” on a prisoner when, during an interrogation, he was administered an injection and led to believe it was “truth serum.”

Cited as the source of the information was a now declassified 2009 DoD report, *Investigation of Allegations of the Use of Mind-Altering Drugs to Facilitate Interrogations of Detainees*, obtained through the Freedom of Information Act.(26) The document included circumstances in which detainees were forcibly drugged with powerful anti-psychotic and other medications that could of course impair cognitive functioning and abilities to provide accurate information. Incredibly, the CIA defended the actions as treatment for psychoses resulting from the very EITs themselves, and continued the procedures seemingly without concern. Medical ethicist and former president of Physicians for Human Rights Leonard Rubenstein reviewed a copy of the DoD report.

"The inspector general's report confirms that detainees whose mental deterioration and suffering was so great as to lead to psychosis and attempts at self-harm were given anti-psychotic medication and subjected to further interrogation," Rubenstein explained in a 2012 article coauthored with Kaye.(27) "The problem is not simply what the report implies, that good information is unlikely to be obtained when someone shows psychotic symptoms, but the continued use of highly abusive interrogation methods against men who are suffering from grave mental deterioration that may have been caused by those very same methods."

On December 9, 2014, the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence (SSCI) released its 500-page summary of a nearly 7,000-page report on CIA

detention and enhanced interrogation techniques.(29) The latter remains classified as of this writing, and focused upon the actions of CIA officials between 2001 and 2006.

The SSCI summary asserted that out of 119 prisoner-cases investigated, not a single one indicated EITs to be significantly effective in gaining intelligence. Not a single case. We might be reminded of writer/researcher Joseph Hickman's suggestions that human experimentation was prioritized above publicly stated objectives.

About 22 percent, or 26 of 119 detainees considered in the summary, were acknowledged by the CIA to have been mistakenly captured and/or wrongfully accused in the first place. That's about one out of four – that the Agency admits. Human rights advocates and select members of Congress suspect the actual number to be much higher.

In May of 2015, *Salon* reported that the Office of the Director of National Intelligence (ODNI) released information identifying reading materials seized during the raid of the compound of Osama bin Laden.(29) Among the materials was a publicly available US government report on Project MKULTRA. While ODNI attempted to frame the situation in the context of bin Laden wallowing in conspiracy theories, *Salon* reported it much more likely that, similarly to Dr. Kaye, bin Laden identified the relevance of Cold War behavior modification projects in the evolution of EITs, and that he subsequently studied MKULTRA for defense purposes.

The ACLU asserted that the CIA and its “enhanced” techniques were in violation of US and international prohibitions on torture, as well as in violation of the well-established ban on non-consensual human experimentation.(30) The organization accused program architects and psychologists Mitchell and Jessen of having been “undeterred by law, ethics, or the lessons of history.”

In October, 2015, the ACLU announced filing a lawsuit against Mitchell and Jessen for their parts in what it described as designing torture methods, performing illegal human experimentation and war crimes.(31) The suit was filed on behalf of three men, Gul Rahman, Suleiman Abdullah Salim and Mohamed Ahmed Ben Soud, prisoners who were never charged or accused of committing crimes.

ACLU attorneys asserted that Mitchell and Jessen claimed their program was science-based and safe, while the three detainees were subjected to methods that included “slamming them into walls, stuffing them inside coffin-like boxes, exposing them to extreme temperatures and ear-splitting levels of music, starving them, inflicting various kinds of water torture, depriving them of sleep for days, and chaining them in stress positions designed for pain and to keep them awake for days on end.” Two of the men were eventually released from detention while the third, Gul Rahman, died in captivity, tortured to death at the Salt Pit.

---

1 Amazon Web Services: *Report to the Special Committee of the Board of Directors of the American Psychological Association*

https://s3.amazonaws.com/s3.documentcloud.org/documents/2160985/report.pdf

2 *The Washington Post*: *Mind Games*

https://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/content/article/2007/01/10/AR2007011001399.html

3 *truthout*: *Former Top Navy Psychologist Involved in Pre-9/11 Prisoner Abuse Case*

http://pubrecord.org/special-to-the-public-record/2722/former-psychologist-involved-pre-911/

4 Scribd: *Guantanamo: America's Battle Lab*

https://www.scribd.com/doc/252185728/6/VI-APPENDICES

5 NPR: *Investigation of Intelligence Activities at Abu Ghraib*

http://www.npr.org/documents/2004/abuse/fay-jones_report.pdf

6 Physicians for Human Rights: *Evidence Indicates that the Bush Administration Conducted Experiments and Research on Detainees to Design Torture Techniques and Create Legal Cover*

http://phrtorturepapers.org/?p=268

7 Physicians for Human Rights: *Experiments in Torture*
http://phrtorturepapers.org/?page_id=14

8 Physicians for Human Rights: *Evidence Indicates that the Bush Administration Conducted Experiments and Research on Detainees to Design Torture Techniques and Create Legal Cover*
http://phrtorturepapers.org/?p=268

9 *truthout*: *EXCLUSIVE: Controversial Drug Given to All Guantanamo Detainees Akin to "Pharmacologic Waterboarding"*
http://www.truth-out.org/news/item/253:exclusive-controversial-drug-given-to-all-guantanamo-detainees-akin-to-pharmacologic-waterboarding

10 *truthout*: *A Guantanamo Connection? Documents Show CIA Stockpiled Antimalaria Drugs as "Incapacitating Agents"*
http://www.truth-out.org/news/item/9601-a-guantanamo-connection-documents-show-cia-stockpiled-antimalaria-drugs-as-incapacitating-agents

11 *Shadowproof: SSCI Report Reveals CIA Torture Program Originated in Same Department as MKULTRA*
https://shadowproof.com/2014/12/11/ssci-report-reveals-cia-torture-program-originated-in-same-department-as-mkultra/

12 *Vice News*: *Psychologist James Mitchell Admits He Waterboarded al Qaeda Suspects*
https://news.vice.com/article/psychologist-james-mitchell-admits-he-waterboarded-al-qaeda-suspects

13 *truthout*: *The Real Roots of the CIA's Rendition and Black Sites Program*
http://truth-out.org/archive/component/k2/item/88113:the-real-roots-of-the-cias-rendition-and-black-

sites-program

14 Aljazeera America: Torture program linked to discredited, illegal CIA techniques
http://america.aljazeera.com/blogs/scrutineer/2014/12/18/torture-mitchelljessenmkultra.html

15 WikiLeaks: *Memorandum for John Rizzo Acting General Counsel of the Central Intelligence Agency*
https://file.wikileaks.org/file/us-olc-cia-torture-bybee-2002.pdf

16 American Civil Liberties Union of Northern California: *ACLU News*
https://www.aclunc.org/sites/default/files/mohamed.pdf

17 documentcloud.org: *Exhibit B Dr. Emily A. Keram Report*
https://www.documentcloud.org/documents/1104738-aamer-medical-report.html

18 WikiLeaks: *Counterterrorism Adviser Brennan's Meeting with Saudi King Abdullah*
https://wikileaks.org/plusd/cables/09RIYADH447_a.html

19 *Vice News*: *The Italian Job (Trailer)*
https://news.vice.com/video/the-italian-job-trailer?utm_source=vicenewsfb

20 NPR: *European Court Rules Against Poland In CIA 'Black Sites' Case*
http://www.npr.org/sections/thetwo-way/2014/07/24/334867581/european-court-rules-against-poland-in-cia-black-sites-case

21 *The Washington Post*: *Italian court convicts 23 Americans in CIA rendition case; extradition undecided*
https://www.washingtonpost.com/wp-dyn/content/article/2009/11/04/AR2009110400776.html

22 *Portugal Resident*: *Former CIA agent detained in Portugal "fighting to clear her name"*
http://portugalresident.com/former-cia-agent-detained-in-portugal-%E2%80%9Cfighting-to-clear-her-name%E2%80%9D

23 *Prison Legal News*: *Two Reports Find at Least 54 Countries Complicit in Secret CIA Prisons*
https://www.prisonlegalnews.org/news/2015/aug/28/two-reports-find-least-54-countries-complicit-secret-cia-prisons/

24 *Alternet*: *Why Torture Made Me Leave the APA*
http://www.alternet.org/story/78909/why_torture_made_me_leave_the_apa

25 *truthout*: *EXCLUSIVE: DoD Report Reveals Some Detainees Interrogated While Drugged, Others "Chemically Restrained"*
http://www.truth-out.org/news/item/10248-exclusive-department-of-defense-declassifies-report-on-alleged-drugging-of-detainees

26 Department of Defense Office of Inspector General: *Investigation of Allegations of the Use of Mind-Altering Drugs to Facilitate Interrogations of Detainees*
http://www.dodig.mil/foia/ERR/09-INTEL-13_Redacted.pdf

27 *truthout*: *EXCLUSIVE: DoD Report Reveals Some Detainees Interrogated While Drugged, Others "Chemically Restrained"*
http://www.truth-out.org/news/item/10248-exclusive-department-of-defense-declassifies-report-on-alleged-drugging-of-detainees

28 Wayback Machine: U.S. Senate Select Committee on Intelligence: *Committee Study of the Central Intelligence Agency's Detention and Interrogation Program*

https://web.archive.org/web/20150102091949/http://www.intelligence.senate.gov/study2014/sscistudy1

29 *Salon*: *The Bin Laden outrage nobody is talking about: What the government's OBL "treasure trove" really reveals*
http://www.salon.com/2015/05/21/the_bin_laden_outrage_nobody_is_talking_about_what_the_governm

30 American Civil Liberties Union: *Out of the Darkness*
https://www.aclu.org/feature/out-darkness?redirect=darkness

31 American Civil Liberties Union: *Lawsuit Filed on Behalf of Three Victims of CIA Torture, Alleges War Crimes and Unlawful Human Experimentation*
https://www.aclu.org/news/aclu-sues-psychologists-who-designed-and-ran-cia-torture-program

Chapter Fifteen

Closing Thoughts

Whatever one chooses to think about reported UFOs, alien abductions and what has come to be known as high strangeness, there is no avoiding the conclusion that vast amounts of exploitation are perpetrated and enabled throughout the American UFO community. There are pockets of researchers in the US attempting to make valid contributions, as there are European and other international writers and organizations behaving sensibly and responsibly, yet ufology is primarily characterized in North America as very poor in quality. Websites, radio shows and those featured on them often present sensational material with little regard for either accuracy or the consequences of failing to prioritize it.

During the course of reading this book it should have become abundantly clear that individuals acting on behalf of intelligence agencies can be about the least reliable sources of information possible. Such agencies literally exist in large part for the sake of executing deception. In spite of that being the case, UFO enthusiasts historically put great value on statements offered by intelligence personnel – as long as those statements happen to support preferred assumptions. Otherwise, such statements are quickly relegated to the status of disinformation, at which time they are rather remarkably still cited as evidence of preferred assumptions. The fact of the matter is information provided by the intelligence community must be independently corroborated to be accepted as valid, just as should be the case with claims made by anyone else.

Therein lies a substantial problem: Claims within the American UFO community are typically not subjected to validation prior to accepted as fact or rejected as incorrect. Few people seem to either understand or practice suspension of judgment pending further information. Similarly, the community seems to be collectively lacking in abilities to differentiate between not only facts and suppositions, but what those facts indicate.

In at least some of the circumstances, it is reasonable to suspect such failures in critical thinking and blatant lack of regard for professional research protocols to be by design, not ignorance. It is not uncommon for

self-styled investigators of alleged alien abduction to describe themselves as persecuted by scientists and a culture that will not review their material and grant it the status they claim it deserves. A closer look, however, reveals that these very investigators frequently conceal details of their work that would require disclosure in order to qualify it for the possible validation they claim to seek. They purport to want serious attention, yet evade relevant questions. The activities of the alleged aliens are advertised as the most important story in the history of humanity, yet the investigators themselves do virtually everything in their power to avoid procedures that might potentially result in obtaining verifiable evidence and substantiating those supposed activities.

Saying something is scientific doesn't in and of itself make it so. If organizations and investigators claiming to conduct scientific study want to be accepted within the scientific community, they have responsibilities to follow established guidelines. They also have responsibilities to refrain from activities long rejected – through years of clinical trials and qualified peer review – as ineffective and unscientific.

If an investigator is employing hypnosis, so-called relaxation techniques, double dog dares or whatever they choose to label the acts of inducing false memories, their methodology is, by definition, not scientific. That most certainly includes telling people what information is being sought, then essentially instructing them to close their eyes and mirror it back. None of that is scientific and, perhaps even more importantly, it is potentially detrimental to the mental health and quality of life of the people involved. There is no way around that. To claim otherwise is extremely questionable, at absolute best. To purport its validity is like saying a truck is an airplane or it's ten miles from Chicago to Vegas. It's just not true. When people are led to believe they are research subjects involved in scientific study, yet then guided through such astoundingly unprofessional activities as have taken place under the guise of recovering memories of extraterrestrial abusers, it is, by any other name, exploitation.

Blog Traffic

Statistics for my blog, *The UFO Trail*, indicated that on November 1,

2015, a computer with an IP address assigned to the Department of Homeland Security (DHS) visited the website.(1) The user appeared to enter from Twitter, following a link to the post, *Dead Men Do Tell Tales: The Strange Case of Jeffrey Alan Lash*.(2) The visitor apparently clicked on a couple of links contained in the piece. One led to a post at Whitley Strieber's *Unknown Country*, while the second link was to an article at Linda Moulton Howe's *Earthfiles*, both of which were related to the Lash case.

To summarize the case, the corpse of Jeffrey Alan Lash was discovered by police about July 17, 2015, in a vehicle parked in Pacific Palisades, California, after attorney Harland Braun informed law enforcement of the situation.(3) According to Braun, he was representing Catherine Nebron, the reported longtime girlfriend and fiancee of Lash. Braun told the media Nebron stated that she and her assistant, Dawn VadBunker, put Lash's deceased body in a vehicle and parked it in Pacific Palisades after he died July 4 in a grocery store parking lot due to a terminal illness. The two women did this, rather than alert authorities, because they allegedly believed Lash was an ET-human hybrid working for the CIA, and that his intelligence contacts would soon collect the body. Such were Lash's instructions prior to his death, it was apparently claimed.

Nebron and VadBunker reportedly left the Los Angeles area for Oregon shortly after abandoning the corpse. Nebron apparently retained the services of Braun after she returned nearly two weeks later to find Lash's body still where she left it in the parked vehicle. It was at that point Braun alerted police.

A subsequent search conducted by LAPD of a condo owned by Nebron, reportedly where she and Lash had resided, turned up some 1200 guns, six and a half tons of ammunition, bows, arrows, knives, weapon accessories and $230,000 in cash. Items were stacked to the ceiling in every room, police reported.

There were many additional aspects of the circumstances that drew attention from online discussion forums and researchers on the Internet. Lash apparently owned numerous vehicles, one of which was reportedly an SUV equipped to drive underwater, and VadBunker's job description allegedly included the coordination of securing garages for use throughout Southern

California. The story, according to some, was that Lash was CIA and had other agents who might need vehicles on a whim.(4)

Authorities promptly explained that no criminal activity was suspected in the death of Jeffrey Alan Lash. Answers to additional questions, such as if any other laws had possibly been broken, if the weapons were legally obtained, and why someone would have nearly a quarter of a million dollars in cash in a condo stacked to the rafters with guns and ammo, have been much slower in coming.

Regardless of what the late Mr. Lash's career interests may have included, the case offers us an excellent example of how intelligence agencies become parts of such stories. Their involvement in such sagas is inevitable. Moreover, we are often entirely unable to conclusively identify anything more than the presence of the intelligence community, as opposed to its motives and objectives, within such curious chains of events.

The Lash case and the at least seeming DHS visit to *The UFO Trail* is a working example of circumstances, such as considered in the Leah Haley chapter, in which any number of agencies and analysts might become involved in a saga for differing reasons and without the knowledge of one another. A point comes in which, absent full and verifiable disclosure of the circumstances, we are left to concede we simply have no idea who the players in such stories are, what their interests may be, and who employs them.

Soon after receiving blog traffic originating from DHS, I published a post about the circumstances.(5) I subsequently received an email from Frank Warren of *The UFO Chronicles*, a popular website where I am pleased to be a featured writer. Frank informed me his site had long been visited by computers at IP addresses assigned to government offices and intelligence agencies – dozens of them. He provided me a partial list containing just a sample of such visits, which numbered over 40 and included the Department of Defense, Department of State, FBI, US Senate and House of Representatives.(6)

Other UFO bloggers informed me they receive such traffic as well. Blog stats indicate my website has similarly been visited by computers accessing the Internet through such agencies and government offices, in addition to DHS, whatever all that may or may not indicate.

November 19, 2015, I posted a book review at *The UFO Trail* of Robert Guffey's *Chameleo: A Strange but True Story of Invisible Spies, Heroin Addiction, and Homeland Security*.(7) The book is an intriguing exploration of the possibility the Naval Criminal Investigative Service and other agencies may have networks in place which electronically harass people targeted in investigations. According to Guffey, such extreme and torturous harassment includes the induction of perceptions and conditions strikingly similar to those commonly reported within the UFO community. Guffey suspected such programs aim to intimidate targets into deciding it would be less difficult to submit to cooperating with an investigation than to continue trying to resist harassment. The author also suspected the projects exist for purposes of human experimentation.

The next afternoon after posting the book review, November 20, *The UFO Trail* blog stats revealed a visit from a computer at CIA offices located in Fairfax, Virginia. I would not venture to guess what the November blog traffic activity specifically indicates, but I would find it about as fascinating as not to find it was all entirely coincidental. After I was literally posting names of intel agencies apparently visiting UFO websites, CIA dropped by and left its IP. Not sure what to think about a chain of events like that.

Infiltration and Countermeasures

The very drama itself may attract intelligence personnel for purposes of establishing what's going on and who's involved in certain instances. It wouldn't be the oddest thing by any stretch for the Agency, in circumstances such as the Lash case, to cultivate ears in the circles of a crew hoarding firearms, keeping six-digit sums of cash on hand and claiming to be CIA. The events become of interest to the UFO community for reasons including the manner the alien narrative was wound into the story, whatever those reasons may be. We might consider other ways UFO-related dogma becomes employed to exploit public perception and manipulate individuals targeted for unknown yet seemingly specific reasons.

Researchers have long suspected US intelligence agencies and their adversaries infiltrated the UFO community in order to gain the confidence of

UFO enthusiasts holding security clearances. It is no secret the community includes many such people employed in various classified capacities at venues of potential interest to global intelligence agencies. Some researchers have subsequently suspected such agencies would infiltrate UFO circles under the guise of witnesses and alleged alien abductees, intent on developing relationships with persons of interest and using the topic of UFOs as a means to exploit them. This, in turn, would lead to an entire subculture of intel agencies similarly infiltrating the UFO community for the purpose of launching counter initiatives. Confusion would inevitably result around the relatively unassuming truth seekers attending events alongside intelligence assets harboring ulterior motives.

Whatever one might think about such scenarios, I'd have to agree that the subject matter offers a rather unique opportunity for intel assets to manipulate people holding security clearances and working on classified projects who might otherwise be cautious of strangers in their social circles. In contrast to more typical social settings, the discussion of UFOs and related subject matter comes readily equipped with reasons to protect confidentiality and conceal details of discussions which take place between UFO enthusiasts. It is a virtual prerequisite of being involved in the community to conceal one's activities, as well as the names of contacts and their activities, from the attention of employers and public scrutiny. We often don't discuss even our most basic personal details and affiliations with one another, tending instead to focus upon UFO-related topics while knowing little - outside of purported UFO experiences - about people we may have otherwise known and interacted with for years. The prevailing social dynamics indeed offer a potentially fast track method of gaining a person's confidence and sympathy, all while encouraging minimal disclosure of personal information, conveniently (for the intel community) accomplished through little more than weaving an outlandish tale or three.

I suspected the case of the late Vincente DePaula to have included such dynamics, and that he may have become caught up in such circumstances. DePaula immigrated to the United States from Cuba as a child and grew up to become employed in the US defense industry, according to a website apparently maintained by Ron Regehr.(8) A longtime staple of the UFO community, Regehr was employed in the defense industry, which, he

indicated, is how he met and befriended DePaula. In addition to career paths, the two apparently also shared an interest in UFOs and their reported occupants.

At some point DePaula, who worked on classified satellite systems, seems to have composed a drawing of an alien head for reasons that are not entirely clear, but seemed to involve the identity of someone DePaula preferred to keep in confidence. The drawing, which received a certain degree of notoriety around ufology at the time, was apparently interpreted to trigger a series of interrogations of DePaula. The Defense Investigative Service (DIS) interrogated DePaula on four separate occasions, according to Regehr's website. The sessions totaled 41 hours, occurring on dates ranging from April 18 to October 31, 1986. An interrogation initiated on August 22 reportedly went on for 28 hours.

“I didn't tell them a damned thing,” DePaula was quoted by Regehr as stating about the collective ordeal.(9)

Given DePaula's line of work and apparent security clearance status, I suspected DIS might have been suspicious of the motives of those in his UFO social circles, and possibly tried to further establish the identities, activities and interests of such people. Attempting to learn more, I went about filing an FOIA request in 2015. DIS was disbanded and integrated into the Defense Security Service (DSS), so I gave DSS the dates of the suspected interrogations, and requested it provide files available for release on DIS interest in Vincente DePaula, purposes of investigations and details of interrogations.

DSS responded in a letter dated August 27, 2015, that it did not have the requested files. It recommended I request the information from the Defense Manpower Data Center (DMDC), adding that it was “quite possible” the records sought from 1986 no longer existed.

I subsequently sent a similar FOIA request to DMDC but have received no response as of this writing. I've written a book about exploitation in the UFO community while awaiting Uncle Sam's decisions on the existence and classification of files on interrogations of Vincente DePaula.

One way or the other, the apparent circumstances of Mr. DePaula provide yet another easily identifiable example of ufology and the intelligence

community sharing a cab ride. It is unfortunately much more difficult to identify their desired destinations.

It is for such reasons as the lack of clarity of where the intelligence community has been and where it is going with ufology, combined with an overwhelming lack of physical evidence supporting the extraterrestrial hypothesis (ETH), that I don't think there is currently an alien presence on our planet. I don't think UFOs represent alien spacecraft and I don't think people are being abducted by aliens.

I think in a limited number of cases there may be outside stimuli that witnesses and the UFO community mistake for signs of alien abduction. I'm willing to consider that those stimuli may originate from sources ranging from the exploitation of involuntary human research subjects to possible true unknowns. The latter may be referenced in various cultural legends such as those related to Buddhism, shaman-like visions and even what path-forgers like Joseph Glanvil investigated in the 17th century. It's possible.

The vast majority of the time, however, I think reports of alien abduction are manifestations of unhealed emotional trauma sustained during entirely common and down to earth events, horrific in nature as the events may sometimes be. I think most stories are built upon the fragmented memories of confused and traumatized individuals who are "assisted" by sometimes well-meaning but mistaken and overly enthusiastic members of the UFO community. Other times they are "assisted" by not so well-meaning community members who have no remorse about exploiting and further traumatizing the traumatized. Either way, I think it's 99 percent (or more) speculation built on rumors and suppositions. The remaining small percentage might indeed prove interesting, but so do the quite human-oriented details of the social circumstances involving the lion's share of cases, which are full on exploitation.

I long had an interest in UFOs and related paranormal subject matter. By the 1990's, I was attending the conferences. I would eagerly await the latest books published, enthusiastically purchasing the material of my favorite writers.

Over time, however, I began to have this nagging feeling that, while often interesting, many of the books did not deliver as advertised. It became an

increasing sense of disappointment, up until the time I began fully accepting I was outright angry about having purchased and read them. I began getting the same feelings at conferences and public meetings. In spite of all the emotionalism and peer pressure found at such events to draw alien-related conclusions, I accepted that, like the books, the presentations and meetings were virtually always lacking actual substance. Always just more mystery mongering, it seemed, while sometimes the most obvious of possible explanations would fail to even be addressed.

I subsequently began developing an increasing interest in the activities of apparent charlatans and the manners the inherently deceptive intelligence community was involved. For one thing, many such circumstances could be conclusively established as compared to the ever unverified campfire stories. Also, identifying what to weed out seemed as if it would potentially make the flowers stand out a bit more.

It became abundantly clear to me that there is a great deal of out and out completely inaccurate and unsubstantiated information willingly circulated and promoted in UFO circles on a regular basis. I'm not talking about some. I'm not talking about most. I'm talking about all but a minimal minority of investigations and stories presented are absolutely worthless from a professional research perspective.

That *is* the story of ufology in the United States for all practical purposes. It's about the exploitation perpetrated by hoaxers, questionable authors, spooks and those who promote them. To frame it otherwise could be considered comparable to leaving the influence of the church out of a report of the witch trials. It *is* the story, whether or not some people were sincerely hysterical.

That's what I think, but it doesn't really matter what I think. What matters is what can be demonstrated as factual and accurate. What would matter would be if one of the fanatical pro-alien extremists ever presented actual proof of their claims, which they don't, which is why I think what I do. I have little reason to think otherwise. I'm willing to change my mind based on professionally conducted, peer reviewed research, and I'm willing to suspend judgment on various reports of unusual phenomena, pending more conclusive information.

I strongly suspect it's a matter of time until extraterrestrial life is identified on other celestial bodies. I just don't think any of that life has anything to do with cases of alleged alien abduction or mysterious flying objects, and I don't think it ever did.

1 *The UFO Trail*: *Homeland Security Reads 'The UFO Trail'*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2015/11/homeland-security-reads-ufo-trail.html

2 *The UFO Trail*: *Dead Men Do Tell Tales: The Strange Case of Jeffrey Alan Lash*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2015/09/dead-men-do-tell-tales-strange-case-of.html

3 *The Washington Times*: *Space alien or secret agent? Dead man found with trove of weapons*
http://www.washingtontimes.com/news/2015/jul/23/jeffrey-alan-lash-space-alien-secret-agent-dead/?page=all#pagebreak

4 KTLA: *Involvment* [sic] *With Palisades Mystery Man Changed Oxnard Woman Radically, Husband Says*
http://ktla.com/2015/08/28/palisades-man-who-amassed-millions-in-cash-weapons-convinced-women-he-was-alien-savior/

5 *The UFO Trail*: *Homeland Security Reads 'The UFO Trail'*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2015/11/homeland-security-reads-ufo-trail.html

6 *The UFO Trail*: *Dozens of Gov Offices Regularly Visit UFO Website*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2015/11/dozens-of-gov-offices-regularly-visit.html

7 *The UFO Trail*: *Book Review: 'Chameleo' by Robert Guffey*
http://ufotrail.blogspot.com/2015/11/book-review-chameleo-by-robert-guffey.html

8 reocities.com: *Investigation of Vincente DePaula Dates and Durations of the D.I.S.*

http://reocities.com/Area51/hollow/8827/vindate.html

9 reocities.com: *Vincente DePaula*

http://reocities.com/Area51/hollow/8827/vinnie.html

Jack Brewer resides in Central Florida, where he researches aspects of ufology, including alleged alien abduction, involvement of the intelligence community, related conspiracy theories and the overall social dynamics. Connect with him through his blog, *The UFO Trail*, on Twitter @TheUFOTrail or send him an email at jackbrewerblog@yahoo.com.

Index

Aamer, Shaker, 244-46

Ahmed, Nafeez, 224

Albarelli Jr., Hank P., 177-82

Alexander, John, 199, 216-20,
224, 233-34, 246

alien abduction, 1, 63, 65, 69, 73,
77-78, 80, 84-85, 87, 92, 99,
102, 107-14, 158, 167-78, 181,
200, 203, 205-07, 222, 256, 257,
264, 266
emotional trauma and, 10-13,
88-90, 160, 162, 245, 265
false memory, 17, 19, 97
hypnosis and, 23, 25, 39. 43- 49,
61, 79, 116-17, 208-17, 232

Allan Memorial Institute, 155, 157, 175

Allen, Morse, 153, 155, 161

American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU),

243, 250-51

American Medical Association (AMA)

stance on hypnosis, 18

American Psychological Association

(APA), 16-17, 34, 36, 231, 235, 248

Applewhite, Marshall, 6-7

Artichoke, Project, 32, 150, 153-54, 161,

173, 181-82, 241-42

behavior modification, 154, 182, 232,

234, 242, 250

Bell, Art, 7-8

Bennewitz, Paul, 134, 193-94

Bigelow, Robert, 75, 136-37, 188, 207-14,

216-20

bin Laden, Osama, 250

Binnall, Tim, 187

Birnes, Nancy Hayfield, 61, 80

Birnes, William J. “Bill”, 61, 80

Bishop, Greg, 193

Braid, James, 23

British UFO Research Association

(BUFORA), 43

Brookesmith, Peter, 100, 169-70

Bryant, Larry, 210

Cameron, Ewen, 155-57, 162, 174, 242

Cannon, Martin, 204

Carpenter Affair, 136, 207-20

Carpenter, Elizabeth Chavez, 219-20

Carrion, James, 118-24, 127-28, 131-39,
217

Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), 9, 19,
132, 146-47, 161-62, 193, 216, 222,
259
human experimentation and, 33, 37,
150-57, 167, 175-82, 233-51
hypnosis and, 24-27, 29-35, 171-73
propaganda and, 141-44, 148-49,
157-60
torture and, 235-251
UFOs as distractions and, 125-27,
140-44, 148-49

Citizens Against UFO Secrecy
(CAUS), 189

COINTELPRO, 154-55, 162

Cortile, Linda, 45, 85, 91, 95-96

Cutler, John, 150

DNA, 55-56, 62, 72-74, 111, 113

Davidson, Leon, 125-26, 143, 148-49,
159, 162

Defense Investigative Service (DIS) 263-64

Defense Security Service (DSS), 264

Department of Defense (DoD), 235, 237,
241, 249, 260

Department of Homeland Security
(DHS), 258, 260

DePaula, Vincente, 263-64

Deshere, Edward F., 24-25

Deuley, Tom, 205-07, 214

disappearing fetus syndrome, 70- 71,
111, 117

Dixon, Heather, 43

Dogan, Gurol, 35

Doty, Richard, 134, 193-94

Dulles, Allen, 147, 149, 151, 159

Ecker, Don, 70-71

Edgewood Arsenal, 151, 167

Eglin Air Force Base, 201-02, 215-16

electronic countermeasures (ECM),
125-26, 143, 148, 161-62
enhanced interrogation techniques (EITs),
236, 240-41, 250
Estabrooks, George H., 32, 35, 51
Fay Report, 238-39
Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI),
124, 126, 154-55, 159, 161, 162,
186, 188, 191-94, 222, 260
Festinger, Leon, 8-9, 162
Fine, Michael W., 37-39
Flatwoods UFO Monster, 144-45, 162
Fontes, Olavo, 158, 162
Friedman, Stan, 168
Fuller, John G., 175-77, 181
Gelles, Michael, 36, 231, 235
Ghost Army, 146
ghost rockets, 2, 121-24, 127, 131,
133, 135, 138-39, 161
Gottlieb, Sidney, 150-52, 155, 179,
181-82, 241
Graham, Robbie, 142

Greenfield, Patricia, 34

Greenwood, Barry, 190-91

Grudge, Project, 125-26, 161

Guantanamo Bay (Gitmo), 37, 234-51

Gulf Breeze Six, 195

Haden, Gary, 63, 80

Haley, Leah, 195, 199-210, 214-16,
220, 222, 224-26, 260

Hansen, George P., 45, 192-93

Hart, Gary, 209-13, 219

Harzan, Jan, 71-72

Heaven's Gate, 6-8

Helms, Richard, 152, 159, 182

Hewitt, Henry Kent, 127-28

Hickman, Joseph, 239, 250

Hill, Betty and Barney, 44, 160, 162,
167-82

Hillenkoetter, Roscoe H., 128, 158, 162

Hoffman Report, 36-37, 231

Hoover, J. Edgar, 154

Hopkins, Budd, 25, 45-46, 49, 70-71,
75-76, 79, 84-105

Howe, Linda Moulton, 135, 194, 258
human experimentation, 37, 149-58,
171-82, 231-51, 261
hybrids, ET-human, 25, 49-53, 55- 58, 63-75,
77, 88, 95-96, 111, 113-14, 117, 259
hypnosis, 16-18, 20-21, 23
alien abduction and, 11, 13, 43-47,
49-57, 61-66, 71-72, 76, 79, 85-90,
93, 95-97, 99, 104, 111-14, 116-17,
168-74, 195, 201, 206-09, 212, 215,
219, 225, 258
behavior modification and, 24-34,
37-39, 161, 171-72
interrogation and, 35-37, 153-54,
231-32, 234
interrogation, 19, 24, 26-27, 35-37, 150-51,
153, 186, 188, 231-32, 234-51, 263-64
Jaafar, Judy, 43-44
Jacobs, David M., 25, 45-57, 60-80, 86-87,
90. 95-105, 107-13, 136
Jessen, Bruce, 241, 251
Johnson, Sue, 103-05

Just Cause, 190-94

Kaye, Jeffrey, 241, 248-50

Kean, Leslie, 93, 95

Keram, Emily A., 244-45

King, Daniel, 36-37, 231, 234-35

Kline, Milton, 32

Kokjohn, Tyler A., 69-70, 73, 79-80,
107-17

Lamb, Barbara, 25, 71-72

Lansdale, Edward G., 146-47, 161

Lash, Jeffrey Alan, 258-61

Lehmberg, Alfred, 61, 80

Lilienfeld, Scott, 47-48

Loftus, Elizabeth, 18-19

Maccabee, Bruce, 134, 193

Mack, John, 11-12, 25, 136

Magic Gang, 145

Magonia Blog, The, 46, 99-100

Manchurian Candidate, 32-34, 153,
157, 167

Marden, Kathleen, 44, 168

Marks, John, 32-34, 157, 167

Martin, Dorothy, 8

Maskelyne, Jasper, 144-45

McClure, Kevin, 45-46

McGill University, 155, 157, 175

Mendez, Simone, 185-97

Milgram, Stanley, 28-29

mind control, 33, 150, 156, 159, 200,
203, 205, 225, 233

Mitchell, James, 241, 251

MKNAOMI, Project, 152, 158, 177-82, 241

MKULTRA, Project, 28, 31-34, 150-52,
155, 162, 171-82, 204, 241-42, 250

Moore, Bill, 135, 194

Morgan, CA, 12-13

Mortellaro, Jr., James S., 91-95

multiple personality disorder (MPD), 32,
49-51, 57, 67, 104

Mutual UFO Network (MUFON), 9, 44-47,
71-72, 118, 121, 136, 139, 187, 194-95,
201, 204-17, 219

National Institute for Discovery Science
(NIDS), 199, 207, 210, 212- 14, 216-20

National Investigations Committee on
Aerial Phenomena (NICAP), 157-58, 162
National Security Agency (NSA), 126, 195,
205, 219, 221-22, 224
Naval Criminal Investigative Service (NCIS),
36, 231, 234-35
Nellis Air Force Base, 185, 187-88
Nettles, Bonnie, 6-7
Norman, Allison Lamont, 5-6
Office for Human Research Protections
(OHRP), 56, 60-61
Olson, Frank, 152, 162, 177-81, 241
Orne, Martin, 24-29, 34-35, 171-73, 231
Orwell, George, 141, 161, 246
Palladium, Project, 126, 134, 143
Pandolfi, Ron, 134, 193, 195
Paratopia, 47, 61, 79, 80, 86
PBSUCCESS, Operation, 140
Physicians for Human Rights (PHR), 240, 249
Pilkington, Mark, 134, 143, 158, 193
Pont-Saint-Esprit, France, 176-81
Poteat, Gene, 126, 143

propaganda, 3, 125, 141-47, 157-60, 223

Purcell, Frank, 73-74

Rainey, Carol, 80, 83-105, 108-09

Randle, Kevin, 102-03

Randles, Jenny, 43

Redfern, Nick, 144-45, 158, 175-78, 181

Reed, Brian, 63-69

Regehr, Ron, 263

Reid, Robert, 201-02, 204, 214

Ritzmann, Jeff, 47-48, 61, 64, 67-69,
79-80

Roper Poll, UFO Abductions, 75-76, 136

Rosetta Deception, 118-24, 127-28,
131-32, 138

Ruppelt, Edward, 144, 148

Schuessler, John, 135, 136, 210, 214,
217, 219

Senate Select Committee on Intelligence (SSCI)
torture report, 250

Seton Hall University School of Law Center
Guantanamo: America's Battle Lab,
37, 235-40, 244

Shaw, Julia, 20

Sheaffer, Robert, 169

Simon, Benjamin, 42, 169-75

Snowden, Edward, 221-23

Sprinkle, Leo, 44

Strieber, Whitley, 206, 258

Swett, Ben, 168-70, 173

Tinker Air Force Base, 186, 189

trauma, emotional, 10-14, 17, 43, 44, 46,
77, 89, 90-91, 153, 160, 162, 169-71,
173, 188-89, 225, 244, 246, 265

UFO Magazine, 47, 48, 61, 70, 80

UFO Trail, The, 1-2, 50, 73, 75, 98, 103, 110,
187, 208, 210, 217, 219, 258, 260-61, 268

UFO UpDates List, 99-100, 199, 216

US Air Force (USAF), 125, 144-46, 149, 154,
157, 158, 161, 168, 173, 185, 187, 189,
192, 196, 201, 202, 206, 214, 216, 241, 247
Office of Special Investigations (OSI), 148,
186, 188-90, 192-97

Vaeni, Jeremy, 47-49, 61, 64-69, 79-80

Vandenberg, Hoyt, 123-24, 127-28

Velez, John, 199, 216

Villas Boas, Antonio, 158, 162

Voice-to-Skull technology, 203

Ware, Donald, 201-02, 204, 214-16

Warren, Frank, 260

Washington, DC, 35, 142, 220, 233

1952 UFO flap, 143-44, 147, 159, 162

Weinberger, Sharon, 203, 233, 234, 246

White, George Hunter, 179-80, 182, 241

Woods, Emma, 47-58, 60-64, 67-69, 76-80,

86, 95, 98-101, 103-05, 107-10, 113

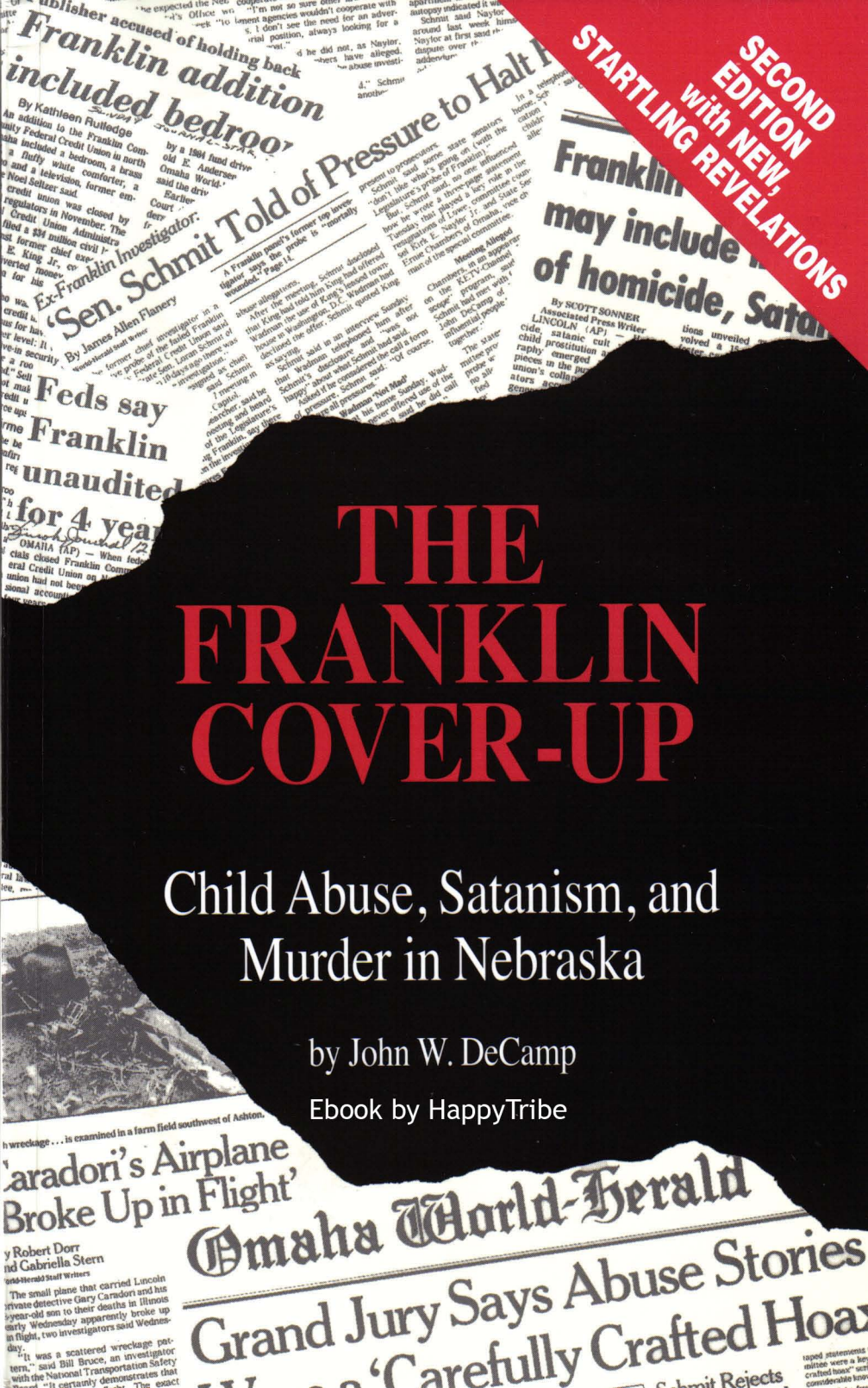
SECOND EDITION with NEW, STARTLING REVELATIONS

THE FRANKLIN COVER-UP

Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska

by John W. DeCamp

Ebook by HappyTribe



To the children who have been,
or will be, abused because of
the Franklin cover-up.

Second edition 1996
© 1992 AWT, Inc.
ISBN: 0-9632158-0-9
Library of Congress Catalog Number: 92-070074

First Edition:
First printing, May 1992
Second printing, August 1992
Third printing, February 1994

Second Edition:
First printing, December 1996
Second printing, January 2001
Third printing, January 2005
Fourth printing, February 2006

AUTHOR'S NOTE

I have brought out this new, special *200412005* edition of *The Franklin Cover-Up* because the story and its implications continue to have exploding effects upon the American political and social landscape. In the years since the first copies of *The Franklin Cover-Up* hit the streets, not only have I and others learned far more about the Larry King political sub-culture of drugs and child abuse and the horrors of child abuse committed and covered-up by certain members of the Catholic clergy, but the circulation of *The Franklin Cover-Up* throughout the United States has brought many new cases to my doorstep.

And, one after another. I have become involved as attorney on one side or the other in these startling cases-from Columbine to the Oklahoma Bombing; from MY first-of-its-kind lawsuit against any Catholic Diocese for covering up .child abuse by priests to today, when it seems every day brings a new revelation about the abuse and use of children by clergy. What I was condemned for saying 15 years ago, when the first edition of *The Franklin Cover-Up* first came out, is now shouted from the rafters of the churches and POLITICAL HALLS across the United States. AND THE ABUSES ARE BEING CORRECTED.

When this book first came out, it was the first to open the ugly side of many of these issues-and I was certainly condemned by many for doing so. In fact, I was so threatened because of that first book that I had to move my entire family to a small town of 300 people, Clatonia, Nebraska, where I felt I had more security and neighbors to help watch out for and protect my children. That move has worked out fine for me. And my children are the greatest ever.

I wish I COULD DROP THIS ISSUE ENTIRELY, but I have too many daily, weekly calls from folk all over America asking for help or guidance or information or direction on their particular problems. Hence, I thought the best way to answer them was to make this book available to them with current updates. That is part of what I have tried to do in this *200412005* edition of *The Franklin Cover-Up.*

I have never spent one penny advertising or promoting this book. However, whatever caused it, it has sold well over 110,000 (One Hundred Ten Thousand) copies. Hopefully, it will do some good for some and give courage to others to Fight Back and Tell the Truth.

John DeCamp
December 2004/January 2005 ... May God be with you.

2004/05 UPDATES AND DEVELOPMENTS SINCE FIRST *FRANKLIN COVE.R-UP* EDITION

In late 2003, Troy Boner walked into a hospital in New Mexico screaming, "they're after me, they're after me because of this book." The book Troy was waving was this book, The Franklin Cover-Up. Boner was ... mildly sedated and calmed down ... and put in a private room for 'observation.' " When nurses came to check on him early next morning, Boner was sitting in a chair, bleeding from the mouth and quite dead. Former FBI Los Angeles Bureau Chief Ted Gunderson tried to get autopsy and other information and details that were promised him on Boner's death, but Gunderson, and apparently every other entity, were totally shut out of all information. No news stories on Boner's death were published in the news, despite Boner's previous front page fame and "notoriety" in the Franklin case.

Developments on INDIVIDUALS & ENTITIES named in *The Franklin Cover-Up:*

WARREN BUFFET, has become the second wealthiest human on planet earth, at $35 Billion, second only to Bill Gates. LARRY KING was recently released from prison and is now in Washington, D.C., ... Duh, big surprise, huh? DECAMP is trying to collect the million dollar judgment he won against Larry King but Larry claims he "... has no money." JOHN KERRY & BOB KERREY both tried to become President and George W. Bush became President. JOHN KERRY claimed he knew of horrible atrocities done in Vietnam but JOHN DECAMP helped establish in 2001, 2002, 2003 that Lt. Bob Kerrey was the officer in charge who ordered slaughter of 25 unarmed women & children at place called Thanh Phong in Vietnam, for which Kerrey was decorated under claim that these had been armed Viet Cong soldiers. DeCamp returned to Vietnam in 2001 and met with the "survivors of the Thanh Phong massacre" and was asked to help them. DeCamp directly contacted both Senators Bob Kerrey and John Kerry to look into the matter and see if they were willing to help out these survivors. BOTH JOHN KERRY AND BOB KERREY REFUSED to do anything.

Catholic Church and many clergy members have been sued successfully in lawsuits identical to DeCamp's first lawsuit against the Church. DeCamp's suit first showed Americans the very serious problem with abuse and cover up of the abuse throughout the United States by members of the Catholic clergy.

Boys Town and the Archdiocese of Omaha have now also been named in multiple lawsuits for the identical activities that DeCamp alleged in his 1991 lawsuit, which, as stated, was the first of its kind in America to open and expose this abuse cesspool.

FINAL COMMENT & UPDATE: I have become involved in a number of super high profile cases since First Edition of **Franklin Cover-Up** came out .... but, perhaps the most frightening to me has been the COLUMBINE case where I represented various victims of the massacre and/or their families.

I believe as a result of those cases I am the only lawyer to have taken the depositions of the Harris boy's mother & father, and I am one of the only victims' lawyers to have seen certain Columbine materials and tapes. I have reached certain conclusions on Columbine which I feel obligated to put into print here in hopes it will some day make a difference.

More court action has been done to keep everything secret and destroy the depositions than anything 1 have seen in my 40 years of court activity. SO, for my own personal and LEGAL safety and protection. let me say simply that everything-absolutely everything-l say here is simply MY OPINION AND BELIEF and not done to violate any court orders or sealed records. But say these OPINIONS and BELIEFS. I MUST.

1. I believe the first crime committed at Columbine was the slaughter of the children (Harris and Klebold's classmates) by Harris and Klebold.

2. Just as surely I do believe the second "crime" of Columbine has been the continuing and strong suppression of the information and evidence by the Legal System which keeps parents and the public from really ever knowing the truth-or at least having a real opportunity to make judgments as to what the truth is, by having available all the information from which to make judgments.

3. I believe-as sure as I believe anything on this earth-the claim I made IN A LAWSUIT IN FEDERAL COURT in which I alleged, on behalf of the Columbine children, that the Harris boy's actions, including PARTICULARLY AND ESPECIALLY HIS FINAL ACT OF SUICIDE, were caused or influenced to occur by the antidepressant drugs he was taking.

4. Remarkably enough, within a year or so after I dropped out of this lawsuit and the lawsuit was dismissed by the Federal Judge, IT BECAME PUBLIC INFORMATION AND KNOWLEDGE THAT CERTAIN OF THESE ANTIDEPRESSANTS DO IN FACT CAUSE SUICIDAL BEHAVIOR, PARTICULARLY IN CHILDREN AND TEENAGERS, AND NOW THIS FACT MUST BE PUT ON THE DRUGS WHEN THEY ARE SOLD OR PRESCRIBED TO CHILDREN. But, of course when I had this lawsuit going, none of this information was public knowledge BUT WAS ALL DENIED by the drug companies. And, one of these days-SOON-when I get a legal comfort level to do so without getting punished by the legal system I intend to BLOW IT OUT ALL STRAIGHT ON THE REAL COLUMBINE TRUTHS.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Foreword	IX
	PART I	
	Introduction	xvii
Chapter I.	"Nebraska Is Death-Laced"	
Chapter 2.	Larry King, a Man Well-Known to Children	5
Chapter 3.	Pornography and Ritual Murder	15
Chapter 4.	Cover-up Phase I: The Police	25
Chapter 5.	Just How Big Is This Cover-up?	33
Chapter 6.	The Destruction of Commonwealth Savings, Model for Nebraska	38
Chapter 7.	The Franklin Committee	53
Chapter 8.	"Somebody Has to Tell the Story"	67
Chapter 9.	The DeCamp Memo	85
Chapter 10.	Paul Bonacci	100
Chapter II.	Cover-up Phase II: The Douglas County Grand Jury	106
Chapter 12.	The Omaha Business Community	129
Chapter 13.	The Washington Connection	164

Chapter 14.	Cover-up Phase III: The FBI	182
Chapter 15.	Kathleen Sorenson's Story	201
Chapter 16.	Four Fighters Who Didn't Quit	214
Chapter 17.	"So That the Truth Would Never Come Out"	224
Appendix A.	Fifteen Suspicious Deaths	250
Appendix B.	Bobby and Me	252

PART II

	Introduction	277
Chapter 18.	The Franklin Investigation, and Cover-Up, Continue	280
Chapter 19.	Four Years Later-Where Are They Now?	300
Chapter 20.	Troy Boner Steps Forward	305
Chapter 21.	Drugs and the Monarch Project	320
Chapter 22.	From Montana to Oklahoma City	332
Chapter 23.	The Oklahoma Bombing-The Real Story	343
Chapter 24.	The U.S. Justice Department Murder of Gordon Kahl	348
Chapter 25.	In Memoriam: Bill Colby	377
	Epilogue	390
	About the Author	394
	Index	397

FOREWORD

"What do Ronald Reagan, President George Bush, fanner CIA Director William E. Colby, Democratic presidential candidate Bob Kerrey, billionaire and second richest man in America and now head of Salomon Brothers-Warren Buffett, and Ronald Roskens, the current administrator of the Agency for International Development, all have in common?" I asked my close friend and adviser William Colby one day in 1991.

"I give up," fanner head of the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) Colby said. "What could that group have in common?"

"Three things," I replied, "all of them a burden at times for those who have to carry them. The three things are *me* (John DeCamp), a case called Franklin and a man named Larry King."

"Are you serious?" Colby asked.

"Dead serious," I responded. "And I hope that word 'dead' does not tum out to be a prophetic pronouncement, as it has for at least fifteen other Franklin-related personalities."

My statement to Bill Colby was not made lightly. Colby and his wife, Sally Shelton Colby, a United States ambassador under President Jimmy Carter, were at that very moment warning me to get away from the Franklin child abuse investigation, Larry King, and anybody else linked with Franklin, as quickly as possible for the sake of my own life and safety.

Sally and Bill had never talked to me like this before. They sat me down, made it clear that this was not one of our routine discussions about life and health and happiness, and emphasized to me the serious nature of what and whom I was dealing with.

"What you have to understand, John, is that sometimes there

are forces and events too big, too powerful, with so much at stake for other people or institutions, that you cannot do anything about them, no matter how evil or wrong they are and no matter how dedicated or sincere you are or how much evidence you have. That is simply one of the hard facts of life you have to face. You have done your part. You have tried to expose the evil and wrongdoing. It has hurt you terribly. But it has not killed you up to this point. I am telling get out of this before it does. Sometimes things are just too big for us to deal with, and we have to step aside and let history take its course. For you, John, this is one of those times," Bill warned, with Sally nodding her head in affirmation.

When a caution of this nature comes from someone of the stature and experience of Bill or Sally Colby, you have to take it seriously, even if you do not want to. I had already had warnings enough, that unless I backed off from the Franklin situation, I might be looking at life from a pine box six feet underground.

Bill Colby had ample reason to know the seriousness of the Franklin case. In secret, Colby had been hired a few months earlier by the Nebraska Legislature's investigative committee, to look into the single-engine plane crash, in which the Senate's private investigator, Gary Caradori, and his son were killed.

"But Bill," I argued, "somebody has to do something. The problem here is that our institutions of government have been corrupted. If there is a cover-up-and I now absolutely believe there is, even though originally I thought this whole Franklin story had to be a fantasy-then that cover-up can only take place with the cooperation and even the active assistance of some of our key institutions of government, from the courts to the cops, from the highest politicians, to the media representatives, to the wealthiest business leaders of our community and country.

"I can't believe what you are telling me, Bill. Are you saying I should just lay it down, and walk away from this, when I know kids are being abused and killed; when I know our most respected citizens and business leaders are up to their eyebrows in drug dealing and official corruption; when every bone in

my body tells me that evil is triumphing and everybody who is anybody is scared beanless to do something about it, for fear of one thing or another? How can any honest or intelligent person do this? If I, or someone like me, do not keep pursuing this, then who will? And if we quit now, then when, if ever, will the truth come out and something be done about this evil and this corruption?"

Bill could tell I was excited, frustrated and almost angry.

"Relax, just a moment, John," he said. "Relax, and I will tell you my own personal story. Maybe it will have some message for you.

"Last night I returned from Russia," Bill began.

Our conversation was taking place shortly before the now infamous August 19, 1991 coup attempt to throw out Gorbachov, and the subsequent collapse of the Soviet Union as it had existed since 1917.

"Why was I in Russia?" Bill explained. "For meetings in Moscow, to try to work with other world leaders and Russian leaders, privately and quietly, so that when and if a transition of power and a change of government and economic policy occur in Russia, they occur in such a way that it avoids a war.

"I was staying at a hotel located right near Red Square which, as you know, is the most guarded, sacred spot in the Soviet Union. It was about 1:00 in the morning. I could not sleep. The next morning I was to return to the United States. Not being able to sleep, I thought I would see if it was possible to walk around and get some exercise.

walked out of my room, expecting to be stopped by the guards or secret police. But nobody paid attention to me in the hallway. I walked on down into the hotel lobby. Nobody seemed to care.

"So, I walked out the door of the hotel, directly onto Red Square. Nobody paid attention. I stopped by Lenin's tomb. I stood a few feet away from the entrance to the Kremlin.

"Then it struck me like a ton of bricks: It was over. Here was the head of the CIA, once hated and feared by the Soviet Union, wandering unwatched and unguarded around Red Square, after spending the previous week meeting with their

leaders, trying to help them save themselves from economic collapse and political revolution, which might turn into a new totalitarian dictatorship. And nobody cared. The guards did not care who I was or what I was doing. The system had collapsed. It was over. Communism was dead. That was the happy part."

Bill went on, quietly, "But I also realized, that this walk in Red Square was going to be the only victory parade I would have, to celebrate my forty-year battle for this. There were not going to be any parades down Madison Avenue with ticker tape. This walk in Red Square was the only victory parade I was going to have."

"So, what's the message?" I asked. "What are you trying to tell me?"

"Sometimes," Bill said, "There are forces too powerful for us to whip them individually, in the time frame that we would like. We have to keep working at our goal. But we have to be sensible enough, not to risk everything and get ourselves destroyed or killed in the process. That victory we seek may take much longer than we wanted, and come in ways we never anticipated.

"Maybe, just maybe, you have to have your own private victory parade. You maybe have to face the fact that you cannot 'right' all the 'unrightable wrongs.' That there really are people too powerful, interests too that the rich and the powerful, even when doing evil, can and will succeed and you can do nothing about it *at that moment.*

"But," Bill continued, do the possible, recognize the impossible, and if you are right-and you are, and we both know it-there will be a time when victory will come and the good will triumph over the evil. Only the when and where and how are usually unknown to us. The best we might be able to do sometimes, is point out the truth and then step aside. That is where I think you are now. For your own safety and survival, step aside."

"Maybe I should start carrying a gun," I suggested.

Bill gave a cynical laugh and said, "No, that will only likely get you killed. If they are going to get you, a gun you are carrying is not going to stop anything. The best thing you can

do for your personal safety is to tell your story, and make sure you have the national press interested in this and looking into it with some really good investigative reporters."

"Huh," I muttered, "Maybe the simplest thing for me to do is to try to tell the story."

"Maybe it is," Bill said, "Besides, I myself want to fully understand what you said at the beginning about what all those prominent individuals, from President Bush to Bob Kerrey, from myself to billionaire Warren Buffett, have in common."

"Maybe I'll have to write a book, and tell you, won't I, Bill?"

Well, here it is.

PART I

INTRODUCTION

On June 21, 1991, 21-year-old Alisha Jahn Owen was pronounced guilty by a jury in Douglas County, Nebraska, on eight counts of felony perjury. On August 8, 1991, she was sentenced to serve nine to twenty-seven years in prison. Owen was indicted for telling a grand jury, before which she testified in 1990, that she was sexually abused as a juvenile, by a Nebraska district court judge, by the chief of police of the city of Omaha, by the manager of the Franklin Community Federal Credit Union, and others. Alisha Owen also witnessed, she said, the abuse of other children by figures in Nebraska's political and financial establishment whom she named, among them the publisher of the state's largest newspaper, the *Omaha World-Herald.* She testified that she was in a group of Nebraska children who functioned for years as illegal drug couriers, traveling nationwide, for some of Nebraska's wealthiest, most powerful and prominent businessmen.

Two grand juries, one local and one federal, had a mandate to consider these and other charges of child abuse connected with the Franklin Credit Union. *They indicted the victim-witnesses for perjury instead!*

"This is unprecedented, probably in the history of the United States," commented Dr. Judianne Densen-Gerber, a lawyer, psychiatrist and nationally prominent specialist on child abuse, during her visit to Nebraska in December 1990. "If the children are not telling the truth, particularly if they have been abused, they need help, medical attention. You don't throw them in jail!"

Both grand juries admitted that Alisha Owen and Paul Bonacci, whose testimony extensively corroborated Owen's, had

been badly abused. But this was done, they concluded, by persons other than those the young people named. Bonacci, too, was indicted for perjury. Two other victim-witnesses, whose stories buttressed those of Owen and Bonacci, recanted under immense pressure. Alisha Owen and Paul Bonacci refused to recant.

• • •

America is suffering an epidemic of child abuse. "S.O.S. America," a 1990 report from the Washington, D.C.-based Children's Defense Fund (CDF), said that "a survey by the American Association for Protecting Children indicates that 2.2 million children were reported abused, neglected, or both in 1987-a 225 percent increase since 1976, and a 48 percent increase in the previous five years." CDF and other estimates caution, however, that only one in every five cases of abuse and neglect gets reported. "The dimensions of the abuse are staggering," Dr. A. Nicholas Groth, director of the sex offender program at the Connecticut Correctional Institute, told the *New York Times* in 1990, "If we saw these same numbers of children suddenly developing some kind of illness, we'd think we had a major epidemic on our hands."

Shocking as the numbers are, the nature of the crimes is more so. Ever more frequently, abuse involves what law enforcement officials refer to as "sadistic, ritualistic" features, or, to speak plainly, satanism. What the victims of this type of abuse describe is so horrific, that parents, teachers, and even child welfare workers have great difficulty to grasp what they are being told. The mind recoils from such evil, inflicted on the most innocent of all people, children.

In recent months, news media around the country have been full of propaganda to the effect that children who report abuse are just telling what they fantasized, or stories fed to them by adults. As for satanic or ritualistic abuse, many newspapers declare that it does not even exist, as the New York *Village Voice* did in a June 1990 article, which attacked "the great ritualistic hoax."

A banner-headline story in the *Chicago Tribune* of May 17, 1991, "A chilling tale of child abuse no one can prove," gave typical coverage of the debate over whether or not children are being abused by satanists:

> All nine children tell the same story, a grisly tale of being taken out of school and abused in a blue house. They name the same culprit, a school administrator who performs satanic rituals as part of his twisted routine. In the 14 months since the first child came forward, police said they have conducted 150 interviews and cannot substantiate the claims of the children, who range in age from 5 to 9. Prosecutor Stanley Levco is more blunt: He doesn't believe them, and he plans to publicly clear the accused.
>
> But the children's enraged parents believe them. And a once-skeptical psychologist also thinks they are telling the truth.
>
> All agree the children have been traumatized. The problem is, no one can prove how. 'In all these cases, I don't know of a single shred of credible, corroborating evidence,' Levco said. . . .
>
> The stories of the Evansville children reflect a recent, bizarre trend in child abuse cases across the country. As more children are encouraged to step forward and expose adults who hurt them, police are encountering more cases of child abuse accompanied by allegations of occult rituals.

The *Tribune* cited Kenneth Lanning, the Federal Bureau of Investigation's expert on occult crime, on the virtual nonexistence of ritualistic abuse. Lanning, who has publicized his opinion that "more people have been killed in the name of Jesus and Mohammed than in the name of Satan," said on this occasion, that there had "been only one criminal conviction stemming from charges of satanic ritual abuse in the U.S."

On April 28, 1991, the *Omaha World-Herald* carried a story along these lines, titled "Satanism ... Lots of Talk, Little Proof." It said that the problem was not an epidemic of satanic abuse, but rather, "authorities say, America is witnessing an *epidemic of concern* over Satan and his minions, especially among adherents of fundamentalist Christianity. So-called rit-

ual abuse is only part of it. But are these stories of incest and human sacrifice true? Many mental health experts think not. And at least two law enforcement officers, with the FBI and the San Francisco police, say they have looked into some of the claims and found nothing." (Emphasis added.)

An embattled minority of law enforcement officials disagrees with Lanning of the FBI. Ted Gunderson, a 28-year FBI veteran, former special agent-in-charge of the Bureau's Los Angeles Field Division, speaks from his personal knowledge of one of the most infamous recent cases involving ritual abuse, the McMartin pre-school case in California. After a 33-month trial, and despite voluminous evidence against them, school operators Peggy McMartin Buckey and her son, Raymond Buckey, were exonerated in January 1990 on 52 counts of molesting the children in their care, while the jury failed to reach a verdict on thirteen other counts against Raymond Buckey.

In a May 25, 1990 interview with *Executive Intelligence Review,* Gunderson said, "In the McMartin case, for example, before any criminal charges were filed against anyone, 460 complaints were filed with the Manhattan Beach police. Are we to believe that 460 families fed their children the same story of ritualistic sexual abuse, animal sacrifices, etc.?" He stressed that the crimes were reported in an affluent suburban area, where residents are typically skeptical about organized child abuse or satanic conspiracies.

Gunderson commented on the effect of Lanning's disclaimers: "In my opinion, other than [satanists active in the United States in the twentieth century] Aleister Crowley, Anton LaVey, and Michael Aquino, Ken Lanning is probably the most effective and foremost speaker for the satanic movement in this country, today or any time in the past."

Evidence from Gunderson's investigations has convinced him that tens of thousands of children or young people disappear from their homes each year, and that many are ritually sacrificed. A decade ago, one estimate, printed in *Reader's Digest* in July 1982, was that "approximately 100,000 children are unaccounted for" each year. That number sounds too high, but

nobody knows what the true figure is, because *the FBI does not keep count.* Gunderson observes:

"The FBI has an accurate count of the number of automobiles stolen every year. It knows the number of homicides, rapes, and robberies, but the FBI has no idea of the number of children who disappear every year. They simply do not ask for the statistics. Every month, every major police department in the United States files its uniform crime statistics with the FBI. It would be simple for the bureau to add one more column to the statistics and get a breakdown of every reported case of missing children-not to even mention children who are kidnaped for ritualistic purposes, and, in some cases, murdered. I am convinced that the FBI does not ask for these statistics because they do not want to see them. They would be confronted with an instant public outcry for action, because the figures would show a major social problem. That problem would demand action."

• • •

The Franklin Credit Union scandal, centered in Omaha, opens a window into the hideous world of child abuse, and of organized, illegal drug peddling, patronized and protected by powerful figures in politics and business.

National media interest in the case flickered in 1988, when the Franklin Community Federal Credit Union was raided by federal agencies and shut down. Franklin's manager was Lawrence E. (Larry) King, Jr., then 44, a rising star in state and national Republican circles, an officer of the National Black Republican Council. King sang the national anthem at the GOP national conventions in 1984 and 1988.

Nearly $40 million was missing from the coffers of the small, ostensibly community-oriented credit union. The financial scandal turned into something more, when it became known that children from Omaha and its surroundings said they had been flown from city to city, to be abused at parties held by Franklin's officers and well-known Nebraskans, including nationally prominent Republican Party activists. "A Lurid,

Mysterious Scandal Begins Taking Shape in Omaha," headlined the *New York Times.*

Three years later, people living outside eastern Nebraska are unlikely to be aware of the Franklin scandal, and those in the region have been told that the case is closed. Larry King is serving his jail term for misappropriation of funds, after a guilty plea. Law enforcement at the local, state and federal levels said there was no evidence of drug-peddling, organized child abuse, or satanic activity by King. The allegations of child abuse were "a carefully crafted hoax," according to one of the two grand juries that examined the affair. A chief witness, Owen, stands convicted of perjury.

The day after Alisha Owen's conviction, 3,000 Nebraskans responded to a local radio station's poll; 94% of them said they believed that she had been railroaded and that there was a cover-up.

What the public suspects, the careful investigator of the Franklin case confronts face to face. This case is far from closed.

This book will explore the substance of the Franklin case, much of which has never been revealed to the public until now. That means evidence concerning key players, which apparently was never brought before, or was ignored by, the grand juries. It means evidence gathered for the Nebraska Legislature's special committee on the Franklin case, which found and verified the tracks of criminal activity, where law enforcement purported to see none. The legislative investigation, which began in November 1988, ended on January 9, 1991, when a new Legislature was sworn into office, and the investigative committee authorized by the previous Legislature was automatically terminated as required by the state constitution. The Legislature had the option to renew the investigation, but did not; many members knew or suspected what the stakes were, and were terrified.

• • •

I write about the unfolding of the Franklin case, its exposure and its cover-up, as not only an eyewitness, but a participant

in these events. I knew how high Larry King's reach went; I was sitting in the front row, just fifteen feet from the main podium, at the 1984 and 1988 Republican national conventions, duly elected by the people of the State of Nebraska as a delegate, pledged, in the first instance, to Ronald Reagan and, in 1988, to George Bush.

I was there, as the story of the Franklin Credit Union and the child abuse broke in Nebraska. I wrote the "DeCamp memo" in 1990, which marked a new phase of the case. I will describe events in which I personally was involved. Most of these have never been made public, and it has pained me tremendously at times, when I knew that the *Omaha World-Herald* was saying something false or distorting a fact, that I had no forum or no legal right to respond, because I had to protect a client or honor a legal privilege.

As an attorney, furthermore, I have some specialization in cases of allegations by youngsters against adults in the area of child abuse. It has been my policy and belief, as it is now, that there is nothing worse than child abuse, with the possible exception of falsely accusing people of child abuse. Just in the past year, I have overturned two felony charges against individuals in rural Nebraska, who were charged with abusing their daughters, based on allegations from the daughters. I was convinced the girls were not telling the truth. I successfully proved this in both cases, and the girls broke down and told the whole story as to why they had lied.

In addition, I am the lawyer for the National Child Abuse Defense and Resource Center of Nebraska, which fights against false accusations of child abuse, and is made up of adults who have been falsely accused of child abuse.

By contrast with these cases of fantasy, I can say without reservation that in one Franklin-related instance after another, there was sufficient evidence and corroboration *available for anyone seeking it,* to back up the victims' tales.

My own recollections and considered judgments are just a fraction of the huge record of the Franklin case.

The files of the Legislature's main investigator, the late Gary Caradori, testify to the mass of leads law enforcement would

not pursue. Documentary evidence presented in this book, never before made public, makes it possible to contrast the assurances of local and state officials that there was little or no Franklin-related abuse, with what those agencies had in their own files.

The chapters of this book dealing with Franklin are based, apart from my direct experience, strictly on documents available and documented facts. I do not claim to know the accuracy or veracity of every statement made by every witness or other person, recorded in these documents. I do claim, however, that the statements and the evidence were officially presented exactly as described. Readers can draw their own conclusions, as to what is or is not believable.

I have been very careful to present only material and documents which I can legally and properly, in my opinion, make available.

I also must state, that I received none of the Franklin committee documentation from the committee's chairman, Senator Loran Schmit, other than what I was entitled to as attorney for Paul Bonacci. Some people inevitably will claim, as they did when I issued the DeCamp memo in January 1990, that Senator Schmit, whose private attorney I am, "leaked" everything to me. I said then, and I say now, that nothing could be further from the truth.

Neither is anything whatsoever from grand jury documents-some of which I had access to-presented here, because I am not allowed to disclose this information. I wish I could. I wish everything about Franklin could be made public. Then, the public could judge even more thoroughly about what is true and what is false. I believe that sunshine and exposure of all facts from all agencies that have information about Franklin would establish the truth of the stories of drug abuse, child abuse, pedophilia, abuse of positions of public trust, cover-up by institutions of government, and, most tragic, involvement in this conduct and later cover-up by some of our most respected and wealthiest citizens.

I believe that the record must get out into the open, to the extent possible, and that the public has to share the information.

Otherwise, truth becomes whatever those who control the institutions of government, and the press, say it is. Benjamin Franklin said, "Whoever would overthrow the liberty of a nation must begin by subduing the freeness of speech." For a textbook example of how this can be done, I would say: Come to Nebraska! Watch how when you totally control the press, when you own the press, you can make truth be whatever you want, you can make villains out of heroes, sinners out of saints, and vice versa.

In this book, therefore, much of the material has been kept in its documentary form-the words of investigators, state senators, victim-witnesses, parents, police, or FBI, as recorded in police documents, eyewitness reports, testimony to the Legislature, published interviews, and so on. I will allow these documents to speak for themselves.

Spelling and punctuation have been left as they appear in documents, except for minor punctuation changes in transcripts. Interpolations in quoted material are denoted by brackets []. When the name of a victim or other person is not his or her real name, it is marked with an asterisk * the first time it appears.

• • •

The Franklin case, which has dominated political life in Nebraska for three years, has chilling implications for.the whole United States. The unfinished business of the investigation is a matter not only of justice for children in one state, but of the lives of untold numbers of children everywhere. Evidence developed from Franklin and King's activities leads into drug-trafficking, money-laundering, pornography, child prostitution, and the kidnaping and sale of children in different parts of the United States, and abroad.

The shocking treatment of Alisha Owen and Paul Bonacci by the courts in Nebraska is one give-away, of what a high stake has been wagered on suppressing the Franklin scandal. Members of the state Senate and investigators who sought to discover the truth of the matter, found that out earlier on, in a personal, violent manner.

CHAPTER

"NEBRASKA IS DEATH-LACED"

"If even half of what I have heard is true, this is the biggest thing to ever hit Nebraska," Gary Caradori told his wife, Sandie, late one night in August 1989. Although he was exhausted, the new chief investigator for the Nebraska Legislature's Franklin committee did not sleep that night. There was more cause for sleeplessness in the weeks that followed.

On September 14, 1989 someone broke into the Caradoris' home.

By January 1990, Caradori was writing to Nebraska Secretary of State Alan Beerman, "We-my employees and myself-have been followed and questionable situations have arisen during this investigation. Threatening situations have resulted numerous times. Why? Am I too close to something they do not want to become public?"

On April 13, 1990, a repairman from the Executone company reported to Caradori that his phone was tapped, a finding confirmed to him by sources inside the phone company.

The investigator continued to work, with a growing sense of the importance of his task.On May 29, 1990 Caradori wrote to Franklin committee chairman Loran Schmit. "To be frank," he told the senator, "it is my opinion that we are the only ones who are seriously working to get this case 'out in the open,' so to speak. I honestly feel that should we terminate this investigation that no further work will be done on it."

On June 23, 1990, Caradori took a few hours off to attend a barbecue at the Omaha home of Mary Lyons-Barrett. Most of those present were members of the Concerned Parents, a

group of citizens who were outraged about the lack of a serious investigation of child abuse by state or federal authorities, and the campaign in Nebraska's major newspaper, the *Omaha World-Herald,* to discredit young victim-witnesses. Arriving in a 1980 white Corvette, Caradori told Concerned Parents president Trish Lanphier he had taken the car out of storage for the day's drive, because his other vehicles had been tampered with, and he was "sure that no one had ever seen that car." He was planning to sell his boat for the same reason, but what he most feared, he told Lanphier, was that someone would tamper with the private plane he often flew. "It would be so easy to tamper with a plane."

In early July 1990, Caradori phoned Senator Schmit. "We've got them!" he exclaimed about some new evidence he had just developed. "There's no way they can get out of it now!" He and his son Andrew ("A.J.") would be flying to Chicago for the All-Star Game the weekend of July 7-8, he told Schmit. Caradori was going to do a little investigating on the side and would review the new evidence with the senator, upon his return the following Wednesday.

On that Wednesday morning, July 11, 1990, Senator Schmit was in his office, talking with a journalist about the Franklin investigation. He related the numerous threats received by himself and Caradori, and Caradori's evaluation of those threats. "It's unlikely that they would kill you or me, Loran, because that would be too obvious," Gary had said once, "But then again, you never know."

At about 10:30 a.m., Senator Schmit took a phone call. He listened for a moment, appeared shaken, and said, "Oh, my God, no!" After asking a few questions, he hung up, tears in his eyes. "Gary's dead."

It happened at 2:30 a.m. on July 11, when Gary and AJ. were flying back to Lincoln, Nebraska from Chicago. A farmer in Lee County, Illinois reported that he saw a flash of light, heard an explosion, and saw a plane plunge to the ground. The Caradoris were killed, the plane's wreckage scattered over three-quarters of a mile. The eyewitness account of a flash of

light and an explosion was on the early edition of television news in Nebraska, but got pulled from subsequent reports, which said that the plane exploded on impact.

At the Nebraska statehouse that morning, Senator Schmit talked to reporters, who soon filled his office. "There were a lot of people in this state who wanted to see Gary dead," he charged. "They got their wish. The question to be answered is whether it was a coincidence."

Gary's brother Dick Caradori was interviewed by the *Lincoln Journal* about the many threats Gary had received. "I know that it weighed a lot on his mind," Dick said. "He always hoped that they just didn't cover it up. He said there was a lot to it and a lot of big names involved and hoped their money wouldn't sweep it under the rug." Gary's mother, Mary, told the paper that Gary "cared dearly about the people involved in the Franklin case. He worked day and night for them."

Sandie Caradori never received official notification of her husband's and son's deaths. She heard the news from friends, who heard it on the radio. Early the next day, before the bodies were even home from Illinois, the FBI descended on Caradori's office with a subpoena for all his records.

What evidence had Caradori turned up? According to the *Lincoln Journal* the day after Caradori's death, "Schmit confirmed that Gary Caradori had been trying to obtain pictures that some alleged victims said were taken of them during the period when they were being abused. He also confirmed that Caradori had been told that some of those allegedly involved in child sexual abuse 'had exposed some of the victims to satanic cultism. He was working on places and times.' " He was also working on leads into Washington, D.C.

Mystery surrounded not only the crash of the airplane, but Caradori's whole trip. Gary and A.J. had stayed at the Days **Inn** Lakefront Motel in Chicago, where both his wife and his associate Karen J. Ormiston had telephoned, asked for him by name, and spoken with him (their phone bills showed the calls), but motel management would tell Caradori's investigative firm there was no record of his ever having stayed there. And if

there was no record that Caradori had registered at the motel, there was also no record of what phone calls he might have made from Chicago.

After months of investigation, the National Transportation Safety Board had not come up with the cause of the crash. My friend Bill Colby, former director of the CIA, commented after he looked into the matter, that the cause would probably never be known. Mary Caradori rendered her own verdict on the deaths of Gary and AJ.: "My son and grandson were murdered."

Many Nebraskans echoed her opinion. They have growing grounds for suspicion. From late 1988, when the Franklin case first broke into public view, until mid-1991, at least 15 people associated with the case as investigators, alleged perpetrators, or potential witnesses, died sudden deaths, many of them violent.

In December 1990, as Dr. Densen-Gerber prepared to travel to Nebraska at the request of the Legislature's Franklin committee, she consulted several friends with relevant expertise. One of them was a member of the New York State Police, who warned her, "Don't go. Nebraska is death-laced."

Caradori's death cast a pall of terror over the state. Civil rights leader Rev. James Bevel, who visited Nebraska in October 1990 as part of a fact-finding commission, said that he had never seen such terror on people's faces, "not even on the faces of Mississippi Negroes in the 1950s and 1960s," who lived under the threat of lynchings by the Ku Klux Klan.

In this atmosphere, Douglas County and federal grand juries indicted victim-witnesses Alisha Owen and Paul Bonacci. The Senate Franklin committee went out of existence on January 9, 1991. On June 21, 1991, Alisha Owen was found guilty, and Douglas County prosecutors dropped the charges against Paul Bonacci. As far as the Nebraska political establishment was concerned, the door on the Franklin case was slammed shut for good.

Thousands of Nebraska citizens are concerned that what Gary Caradori uncovered not go with him to the grave. The story of the Franklin Credit Union investigation is intertwined with the systematic cover-up that investigation confronted, from the time of the first cries for help from children six years ago.

CHAPTER 2

LARRY KING, A MAN WELL-KNOWN TO CHILDREN

The first alarm went off on June 10, 1985, when the Washington County, Nebraska, Sheriffs Department contacted a Nebraska Department of Social Services (DSS) social worker handling the case of Sean*, Sally* and Steve McArthur*. The children were living in foster care with Jarrett and Barbara Webb of Fort Calhoun.

The social worker wrote up the call:

> The Sheriffs department phoned today and stated they have the McArthur children in their custody and they had picked them up from the Webb home due to child abuse complaint. Sean had welts and scratches over parts of his back which he said the Webbs had beat him with a railroad iron and belt. They also had picked up the Webbs' son Joey*, age 16. Joey also complained of being beaten by his parents. . . . Sean said the Webbs have been beating [them] for quite some time and this is not the first time this has happened to them. They were afraid to say anything the other times....

Jarrett Webb worked for the Omaha Public Power District and was a board member of the Franklin Community Federal Credit Union, headed by Lawrence E. King, Jr. His wife, Barbara, is Larry King's cousin.

Foster child Sean McArthur and adopted son Joey Patterson* Webb were removed from the Webbs' custody that month. Other of their foster and adopted children-there were as many as nine in the house at one time-tried to make their break,

sometimes alone, sometimes in pairs. **In** August, Joey's sister Kimberly Patterson* Webb (age 14) and another brother, Michael*, ran away, but were returned to the Webbs. **In** November, Nelly Patterson* Webb, 16, fled to the home of her grandmother, Ruby Patterson*.

The Fremont office of DSS reported on the reasons, in a document dated December 18, 1985:

> Our office and a Deputy interviewed Kimberly [who had obtained permission to visit Nelly at their grandmother's] and Nelly separately and together. Both girls stated numerous times that they refuse to go back to the Webbs. ... Both girls have stated they have received "whippings" and "beatings" from both Barbara and Jarrett at different times. These started in 1978, approximately eight months after they moved into the Webb home. The girls said they were hit with objects: an extension cord, a belt, a "black thing," (rubber hose) and a "railroad prop" (a narrow piece of heavy black rubber approximately two feet long with several holes in each end). Before they were struck, they were made to remove their clothing. They were mainly struck on the back or on the behind, but occasionally on the head or face.

Social workers removed Nelly, whose full name was Cornelia M. Patterson* Webb, from the Webb home and placed her with foster parents Ron and Kathleen Sorenson in Blair, Nebraska. Soon after this move, she was interviewed at the Washington County Sheriff's Office by State Patrol Investigator Jane F. Tooley. Tooley found out that the abuse was not limited to beatings.

Tooley wrote in her report, dated January 30, 1986:

> She stated that she had been sexually abused. ... Nelly stated that when she was approximately nine or ten years of age, that Jarrett Webb kissed her for a long time and that she pulled away because she couldn't breathe and it was nasty. She stated that he was french kissing her and she stated that he was slobbering in her mouth.... Nelly stated again that when she was approximately nine or ten years old that on one occasion Jarrett Webb made her take a nap with him in his bed and she stated "he played with all my

> body parts" ... he touched her vagina and that he put his finger inside her vagina.... Nelly stated that when she was 10 and 11 years old, at night time when everyone was in bed, Jarrett Webb called her into his room a couple of times. When she didn't come into the room he then told her to come in or he would whip her. ... She stated that Jarrett Webb pulled the sheet down and pulled her on top of him. ... She stated that she could feel his hair against her leg and knew that he didn't have any underwear on.

When Nelly was 15, she told Tooley, Jarrett Webb punished her by ordering her to undress and lie on the bed, and then beating her with a rubber strap. Next, he made her lie on her back, put her legs in the air, and "he pressed himself between her legs," and "started 'humping her'.... He started beating her again with the strap.... He then started sucking on her breasts. ... Nelly stated that she started crying and that Webb left."

When, in February of 1986, the Department of Social Services requested immediate and emergency removal of Kendra* and Michael Webb from the Webb home, it listed eight separate concerns, among them:

> 2) Repeated allegations of physical abuse told to our Department by six children during separate interviews: a) of being struck for long periods of time while naked, by various objects, including a belt, rubber hose, and the "railroad prop"; b) denial of meals in the home
>
> 3) Sexual abuse of Nelly by Jarrett (supported by a polygraph test given to Nelly 1-30-86)
>
> 4) The intense concern by the children out of the Webb home for the physical and emotional well-being of the children remaining in the home....

• • •

DSS memos show that the Webbs aggressively sought to terminate their status as adoptive parents of Nelly and Kimberly, starting immediately after Nelly's flight in November

1985. Under DSS rules, this would cut short an investigation into the mistreatment of the girls.

Reversing an adoption was not a routine procedure. "Regarding a relinquishment [of adopted children], the Department does not accept one easily," noted one DSS social worker in her log of the Patterson Webb case. The Webbs insisted on it. Social workers recorded that in January 1986, Barbara Webb "was crying and carrying on," inquired about "allegations" the girls were making, and wanted "to get relinquishment over with."

Negotiations on behalf of the Webbs were conducted by attorney Gary Randall, whose brother Casey Randall was in the orbit of Larry King's Franklin Credit Union; Nelly and Kimberly referred to Casey as "Larry's maid." Gary Randall arranged the relinquishment with the help of the very official who would have handled a criminal prosecution of the Webbs for child abuse, had there been one at that time-Washington County prosecutor Patrick Tripp.

In June 1986, in the face of a pattern of gross abuse of children by the Webbs, the state suspended their foster care license. Prosecutor Patrick Tripp again came to the rescue, deciding not to file sexual abuse charges or any other charges against Jarrett or Barbara Webb.

Instead of investigating her reports about the Webbs' involvement in pornography and child prostitution, Tripp called Nelly Webb a liar-lie detector tests notwithstanding.

Tripp's attitude was recorded by Julie Walters, a youth care worker called on to interview Nelly and Kimberly Patterson Webb in March 1986, because they had described abuse of boys residing at Boys Town, the large orphanage west of Omaha, where Walters was employed. In Walters' fifty-page report on the child abuse described to her by the girls, Tripp figures as an adversary of the children:

> When presented with Jane Tooley's investigation, Pat Tripp, the Washington County prosecutor, said he didn't believe Nelly and wanted her to take a polygraph test. At his request, Nelly was given four polygraph tests administered by a state trooper at the State Patrol office on Center St. in Omaha.

> The state trooper, after Nelly's testing was completed, told Kathleen Sorenson he tried to "break Nelly down" but he was convinced she was telling the truth. He also told Nelly that she "passed" and that he believed her. Although the polygraph tests showed Nelly was not deceptive, Atty. Pat Tripp maintained he still didn't believe what Nelly said. He said Nelly had fantasized those stories to the point that she believed they were true.

Tripp's line, that child victims in Nebraska just invent abuses, and that therefore their complaints need not be seriously investigated, would be heard from one law enforcement agency after another, throughout the Franklin case, down to the perjury conviction of victim-witness Alisha Owen.

For Pat Tripp, there was a personal element in this case. He was a "good friend," according to foster parents cited in a September 1989 report by legislative Franklin committee investigator Karen Ormiston, of two individuals named by Nelly and Kimberly Webb as involved with the Webbs-Fort Calhoun Superintendent of Schools Deward Finch and Fort Calhoun High School principal Kent Miller.

Between late 1985 and June 1986, thanks to Tripp, the Webbs escaped both a DSS investigation and possible criminal prosecution. Shortly after his refusal to file criminal charges in this case, Tripp quit as Washington County attorney. Today he is a prominent lawyer in Omaha.

• • •

Well-known as they were, Deward Finch and Kent Miller were small fry compared to another name that appeared in Walters' report, the same person for whom Nelly and Kimberly said Casey Randall was the "maid"-Larry King. Walters wrote:

> While the Webbs were away, the kids snooped through the house. They found: I. pornographic video tapes in a bag under the Webbs' bed (which the kids played on the VCR while Webbs were gone)-one tape specifically showing teenagers involved in sexual activity. Nelly and Kimberly

> knew from eavesdropping that Larry King supplied the Webbs with the video tapes; 2. pornographic magazines in the basement. Once when Sean was suspected of snooping around in the magazines he was not allowed to eat anything at the Webbs' house for one week; 3. box of a lot of "romantic" novels in Mrs. Webb's closet (i.e., mothers having sex with their sons); 4. stacks of 8" x 10" (approx.) "photo" envelopes marked NOT BEND" in Mrs. Webb's closet ... ; 5. photos of naked white women in Webbs' bedroom dresser drawer.

Walters' report also conveys the Webbs' pricey lifestyle and the involvement of more people, including Larry King, in their activities:

> Although at the 3/7/86 hearing, Mr. Webb stated that he earns $32,000/year, the Webbs' home is furnished quite expensively ($2,000 paintings, crystal, silver, several VCRs, TVs, etc.). Also, Mrs. Webb wears a four carat diamond ring, a full-length fur coat, all custom-made dresses, expensive accessories. When they throw a party it includes caterers and limousines....
>
> Larry [King] attends meetings/parties at the Omaha Girls' Club ... about every other week. He sometimes invited Joey Webb or Nelly by calling the Webbs and telling them to have one of the kids ready in so many minutes. Nelly said they had no choice about attending these functions. She said she attended only once about 2 years ago (age 14) but Joey attended regularly from the time he was in seventh grade (approx. age 12-13) until he left the Webbs' home (age 16). When Nelly attended she and Larry King went alone in his limo. Other times, Mrs. King and Mr. and Mrs. Webb also attended.
>
> Nelly described these functions as lasting about 45 minutes. She said she attended one held on a Fri. evening about 7:00 p.m. There were about ten to fifteen older men present and about twenty-five young teenage girls there. The girls all signed a brown notebook Larry King had. Nelly has appeared very frightened and teared up when asked about [document illegible]....
>
> Larry King either called or sent invitations to Nelly, Kimberly and Joey to attend parties at his home which are

held about every other week. This began about two years ago. Again, Nelly said the kids had no choice about whether or not they would attend. They were driven over to King's with Mr. and Mrs. Webb....

Nelly and Kimberly said they talked with boys at those parties who said they were from Boys' Town.... From [Boys' Town] year book photos, after examining '83, '84 & '85 yearbooks, Kimberly said [four boys] had all attended some of Larry's parties during the summers of '84 and '85. Nelly was afraid to mention any names but earlier had mentioned a "Brent" (whose picture she didn't find in the yearbooks), who told her he had left Boys' Town in '84. Brent was "flown to another city somewhere" in Larry's private plane to "work for someone else" after he and Larry had a disagreement. ...

At the parties there are usually about thirty adults present, male & females, more white than black guests because according to Larry "blacks get ignorant when they drink and tighter with their money and whites spend more money when they're drunk." Also present were some prostitutes (ages unknown but not teenagers) and [illegible] ages 16-22, and Nelly and Kimberly-about twenty kids total. If a man was interested in a young lady he held out a folded $50 or $100 bill in front of them and whispered something in their ear. Then they went upstairs or to some other area of the house. Nelly and Kimberly said the prostitutes told them they gave half of the money they got to Larry King. Larry also gave some of the boys at these parties new cars. The sexual activity was not always behind closed doors or confined to the upstairs rooms, and sometimes involved more than two people. Couples engaged in sexual activity were same-sex as well as opposite sex.... The money Joey told Nelly and Kimberly he made "working for Larry" the Webbs took from him supposedly to keep for him....

The girls talked about Larry King's power to command underage youth to do his bidding:

Larry claims to donate money to Boys' Town and be on the Board of Directors at Girls Club. Nelly said Larry has gotten Boys' Town boys and other boys to his home by asking them to do some yard work. If Larry asks the young man

to do something and he refuses, Larry might hit him. Nelly said Larry "has a bad temper." Larry also tells the young men they'll get hurt.

• • •

Julie Walters' write-up contains the most explosive account by the Patterson Webb girls, which marked the pornography and prostitution network they were caught up in as a scandal of national scope. What they told was so awful, that it screamed for immediate investigation. In the course of attempts by law enforcement personnel and, later on, news media to belittle the children's testimony, however, this particular item from Nelly's account would serve the opposite purpose: How can anything she says be believed, the line went, if she says this? The passage in Julie Walters' handwritten report reads as follows:

> Nelly also accompanied Mr. and Mrs. King and [their son] Prince on trips to Chicago, N.Y. and Washington, D.C., beginning when she was 15 years old. She missed twenty-two days of school almost totally due to these trips. Nelly was taken along on the pretense of being Prince's babysitter. Last year she met V.P. George Bush and saw him again at one of the parties Larry gave while on a Washington, D.C. trip. At some of the parties there are just men (as was the case at the party George Bush attended)-older men and younger men in their early twenties. Nelly said she has seen sodomy committed at those parties. At other parties during Larry's trips, Larry had local prostitutes (in their 20's & 30's) there to entertain his male guests....
>
> At these parties, Nelly said every guest had a bodyguard and she saw some of the men wearing guns. All guests had to produce a card which was run through a machine to verify the guest was, in fact, who they said they were. And then each guest was frisked down before entering the party.

This was not the last time that the name of George Bush would surface in the Franklin affair.

• • •

After the Patterson Webb girls raised Larry King's name, Julie Walters asked some discreet questions about King of Boys Town employees, and of some people in the north Omaha community. Walters summarized what she was told:

> "If you mess with him, you'll get your legs broken."
>
> "On the outside he has all the appearances of an upstanding citizen; but underneath he's very dirty."
>
> "Omaha has a very large underworld and he's a very powerful man nationally. Maybe he doesn't have all the connections personally but he knows the people who do. . . . [King] used to be very active in Big Brothers and took more than an appropriate interest in the young men."

Walters also recorded information on Fort Calhoun school officials Deward Finch and Kent Miller, whose "good friend" Washington Country prosecutor Pat Tripp was. Finch would later be named by two other victim-witnesses as an associate of Larry King.

Walters wrote:

> Kimberly overheard Mrs. Webb tell someone on the phone, got him [Finch] all the way. 1 caught him several times down there with black girls." Nelly saw Mr. Finch leave the Webb home once as she returned home from school and Kimberly saw him leave the Webb house several times during daytime hours. Kimberly's first period class at school is a study hall which is located across the hall from the school's office. She said Mr. Finch would regularly call the Webbs and say, "It's time for another meeting." Mr. Finch would interrupt whatever he was doing when the Webbs arrived to meet with them, meeting in the school office sometimes for several hours. At some meetings, Kent Miller, principal of Ft. Calhoun H.S., was also present. Mrs. Webb almost always carried a large Gucci bag (almost the size of a shopping bag) with her into these meetings. Kimberly said Mrs. Webb carried some photo envelopes (from Mrs. Webb's closet) with her at least once into these

meetings, telling Kimberly she was going to show Mr. Miller pictures from their trip.

• • •

The Walters report was turned over to law enforcement agencies by March 1986. The DSS logs were also accessible.

Law enforcement officials failed to pursue the many clues and leads provided in these eyewitness accounts by children living with the Webbs, which might have taken them into a cleanout of child prostitution, pornography, and interstate transportation of child prostitutes from Boys Town. While they stalled, the trail grew cold. County Prosecutor Patrick Tripp called Nelly Patterson Webb a liar after she passed four lie detector tests. Nobody was indicted. Jarrett and Barbara Webb went free. And Larry King was invited back to sing the Star Spangled Banner at the Republican National Convention in 1988, as he had done in 1984.

CHAPTER 3

PORNOGRAPHY AND RITUAL MURDER

On May 5, 1988, Margo Georgiu* and her daughter Brenda Parker*, 17, filed a complaint against an Omaha photographer, Rusty Nelson, which the Omaha Police Department (OPD) logged under "possible child pornography."

According to police records, Nelson approached Brenda at a store where she was a cashier, and told her he was "doing some photographic work for the Easter Seals Campaign." He left her his business card, which read "Rusty Nelson the Camera Man, Creative Photography." When Brenda telephoned, Nelson said he needed to take pictures of redheads like her for a "European portfolio," and that she would pose wearing swimsuits and lingerie. Brenda asked if she could bring her mother to the photography session, to which Nelson agreed.

Officer **Irl**Carmean interviewed Parker and Georgiu on May 9, about what they had seen five days earlier, during the five-hour session with Nelson at his studio in the Twin Towers. Carmean recorded:

> NELSON took several photographs of PARKER in various types of clothing, although no swimsuits or lengerie [sic] were worn. Brenda stated that NELSON repeatedly made references to PARKER in her birthday suit and making her breasts look bigger. Nelson never specifically asked PARKER to pose nude or semi-nude but did try to get her to show as much skin as possible and also try to make PARKER show as much cleavage as possible. Repeatedly, NELSON tried to persuade PARKER to model in lengerie [sic] as well as a form of clothing known as "teddies." PARKER indicated she refused to do this.

> During the course of the photographic session, PARKER'S mother MARGO GEORGIU looked at several photographs which were scattered about the apartment and apparently taken by NELSON. Margo GEORGIU stated that she observed several photographs of nude females ranging in age in her estimation from 20 years old to as young as possibly twelve. Several of the females in the photographs showed frontal nudity.

Suspicious about the Creative Photography set-up, Margo Georgiu phoned around to various modeling agencies and schools in Omaha, to which Nelson had claimed he supplied pictures. No one there had heard of him, with the exception of a man at one agency, who called Nelson a pervert and warned Georgiu to keep her daughter away from him. That's when she called the police.

Officer Carmean reported:

> Brenda PARKER indicated that she suspected NELSON to be a homosexual. PARKER identified NELSON as being a white male approximately 25 years old, 5'9", 140 pounds with dish water blond hair and a small blond mustache. He was casually dressed and appeared quite a feminine [sic].
>
> During there [sic] conversation, PARKER stated that NELSON said that he does work at Max which is a gay bar located in Downtown Omaha and he further stated that he frequents gay bars.
>
> PARKER stated that NELSON continually offered various foods and drink to both PARKER and her mother. NELSON placed a very large bowl of strawberries on a table offering them to Brenda and her mother. They were also offered to drink some champagne.
>
> During the conversation, NELSON stated that he was self-employed but made a couple of references to "the boss" keeping the place well-stocked and that the boss let him stay there rent free. It is unknown who the boss is.

• • •

The officer sent to investigate Nelson's digs quickly established that "the boss" was Larry King.

> On Wednesday, 25 May 88, Reporting Officer MICHAEL HOCH went to The TWIN TOWERS, 2900 Farnam Street, and spoke with the Owner/Operator of The TWIN TOWER complex. ... [He] indicated that a party by the name of RUSTY NELSON, who is occupying Apt. #3-B (which was leased to LARRY KING), has since moved out of the apartment complex.

Nelson had suddenly vacated on May 14, nine days after Georgiu and her daughter filed their complaint.

In the same building, Larry King also paid the rent on a luxury penthouse. Officer Hoch reported:

> Since KING has rented the apartment [in August 1987], [the manager] believed that he has possibly put $50,000.00 into the apartment in such things as decorating, drapes, and furnishings. [He] went on to state that he had bought a couch from one of the furniture dealers in Omaha that would not fit in the elevator as it was being transported to KING'S apartment. And, as a result of this, a crane was rented for the amount of $1,200.00 to have the couch lifted to the apartment from the outside. [He] also stated that the apartment was very elegantly furnished; and the $50,000.00 outlay would not include (what he described as) original paintings, along with what is believed to be possibly a solid silver chair. [He] also stated ... that he knows that KING drives at least five different vehicles: Three of the vehicles being Mercedes-Benzes, one being a Cadillac Alante, and the other being some type of sports car....
>
> [He] also stated that he believes that KING owns properties in Washington, D.C. ....[He] went on to state that KING has a habit of throwing names around, and it is believed he is very influential in the Republican party. [He] also indicated that he does not understand how KING has as much money as he does to spend. KING does not actually live at the Penthouse apartment in The TWIN TOWERS, but uses the apartment for parties and occasionally stays at the apartment.
>
> [He] stated that he had talked to a realtor ... who indicated that KING apparently attempted to purchase a residence approximately five years ago and, at that time, had

> trouble coming up with a down payment for the house. It seemed strange to [him] that in five years KING has come into as much money as he spends.

At a neighboring complex, the Orpheum Tower, Officer Hoch learned that tenant Larry King sublet an apartment to a young man who was a disc jockey at the Max bar. King had told the building manager that he was renting the apartment as a place to stay when he worked late, so that he didn't have to travel out to his suburban home.

Hoch asked the Orpheum manager

> if she knew any particulars or had heard any type of information about LARRY KING, as it seemed very strange that he would rent an apartment in the ORPHEUM TOWER and is presently renting an apartment at The TWIN TOWERS. [She] indicated that she did not know any specifics about LARRY KING; however she stated that she has heard rumors that he is a very heavy drug dealer, and that she has heard this from more than one individual. ... [She] stated that she has also heard that LARRY KING is a homosexual and has a preference of young men or boys.

• • •

The OPD dropped its probe of Rusty Nelson, his apparent pornography operation, and his "boss." But on June 28, 1988, Officer Carmean was dispatched to interview a different girl, whose terrible story pointed to the same clique.

She was fifteen-year-old Loretta Smith*, who lived with her mother and brother in Omaha. At the time Carmean talked to her, Loretta was hospitalized at Richard Young Hospital, where she had told a therapist, in the words of Carmean's report, about "incidents in which she has been photographed nude or partially nude as well as instances of devil worship."

Carmean wrote that Loretta was "rather articulate for a 15 year old and spoke and acted rather maturely for her years." Excerpts from Carmean's report provide the outline of her story:

> SMITH initiated the conversation by indicating that approximately five or six years ago when she was nine years old she went to a party with some friends much older than her. There, she met a white male ... who coaxed her into modeling for him.... [He] offered to take SMITH home if SMITH would pose for some pictures.... Initially, the unidentified white male took photographs of her with a polaroid camera, of her fully clothed, although finally, she agreed to pose for one completely nude photograph taken by this white male....
>
> SMITH then spoke of occasions when she went to the North Omaha Girls Club on Lake Street, with friends of hers whom she identified as NELLY and KIMBERLY WEBB. There, she discovered that they were also "modeling".... SMITH stated that those field trips consisted of the girls being taken to a photographic studio where pictures were taken of them either nude or partially clad.... SMITH also stated that she has not spoken to or knows the whereabouts of either NELLY or KIMBERLY WEBB, not having seen them for approximately three years....
>
> She stated that a number of adults, whom she referred to as leaders from the North Omaha Girls Club, both male and female, were engaged in the photography of nude children. She also indicated that a number of prominent individuals were involved, including doctors and lawyers although she indicated they used code names and that she could provide no real names for these individuals.
>
> SMITH also indicated that the adult leaders who took these photographs used threats against her and others to get them to participate in these photographic sessions. She stated that she had been told on occasion that her entire family would be killed as well as her if she refused to participate in these activities.

Loretta told Officer Carmean that she "began participating in what she termed devil worship with other juveniles and adults. She stated that she was approximately *IDY2* or 11 years old when she started attending these rituals," which sometimes included nude photography. Those participating "were given something to drink which she stated, tasted like apple juice but which she thought contained some kind of a drug.... "

> SMITH indicated that NELLY and KIMBERLY WEBB, had also reported these activities to Police in the past but that nothing had been done. She stated that the WEBB girls had told the superintendent of Fort Calhoun Schools whom she identified as a Mr. FINCH, and stated that it had been reported to him first but the girls felt that since nothing was done that he must have been involved also.

In a report dated June 30, 1988, Carmean put down more of what he had learned from Loretta:

> During the course of Reporting Officer's interview with LORETTA ISABEL SMITH concerning child pornography activity, as well as devil worship, she mentioned the name of LARRY KING as being a participant and supporter in these activities. Asked how she knew this, SMITH stated that she is a friend of ... the daughter of GARY WEST. (WEST is reportedly the manager for MAX'S, a predominantly homosexual bar located south of CENTRAL STATION at 1415 Jackson Street).
>
> SMITH stated that she has been to the WEST residence several times, and that GARY WEST is a homosexual, as well as an alcoholic. She stated that when he does become intoxicated, he talks about his certain activities with LARRY KING, and indicated that he is into the use of controlled substances (i.e. cocaine) for personal use, as well as for sale, and that he owes LARRY KING a lot of money for this....
>
> With regard to Larry King, she stated that she knows that he supports devil worship activities.... She further indicated that KING owns a house on Wirt Street, the exact location of which she did not know, but that KING holds various drug and sex parties there.
>
> SMITH initially told Reporting Officer that she had been to the Wirt house on one occasion, in which she saw three or four teenage males engaged in oral copulation. ... It became apparent, when SMITH began talking about KING and WEST with a lack of specificity, that she didn't wish to go into much detail with Reporting Officer, at this time. Reporting Officer told her to consider recalling as much information as possible, and that she and Reporting Officer would talk again at a later date.

On July 5, Loretta did telephone Officer Carmean and gave him the address and phone number of King's house on Wirt Street. Carmean drove by the house and called the number. The phone was answered "King Company." At the house, Carmean wrote in his log, he "observed on a gray awning ... the name KING in black script lettering."

• • •

During 1988, as Loretta Smith grew to trust the doctors, nurses, and other personnel at Richard Young Hospital, she revealed more detail about what she and the other children had been subjected to. Her case file is summarized in a report for the Legislature's Franklin committee (by Jerry Lowe, 1989), which gives the dates on which Loretta talked to hospital staff:

> Loretta ... provided additional information of her previous involvement in cult activity which included the witnessing of homicides of several young children and which also included references to Larry King and others involved in the cult activities.
>
> August 19, 1988. The hospital notes indicated that Loretta was asked to give a chronological account of involvement in what is described as a devil worship cult and that Loretta agreed to do this. Loretta indicated that she didn't really know what was happening and that she became involved very gradually. She indicated that when she was approximately nine years old she was going to the Girl's Club in Omaha and that a guy named Ray would take her and four or five other girls at the Girl's Club on outings.... He took them to a building that according to Loretta looked abandoned and asked the girls if they wanted to go in which they all agreed to do. Loretta indicated they sat and talked for a while and then Ray provided a joint and all of the individuals got high. She indicated this activity continued for about three or four weeks and then Ray took them to a party.
>
> Loretta indicated that at the party there were about ten men all in their mid-thirties and that initially they sat around and talked with the girls about their problems. Loretta indi-

> cated that all the people got wasted and that the men at the party made them sleep around and that the girls did not have a choice of who they slept with....

Loretta stayed away from the Girls Club after this for a few days, but

> then in order to get out of the house she did begin going to the parties again and they lasted for another six months.... [O]n one occasion she threatened to tell her mother that the men were having sex with her and that they knew she was only nine but the men indicated that they would kill anyone who told about the activities....
>
> The men started taking the girls to what the men described as power meetings. Loretta advised she was ten years old. She indicated that candles and other weird stuff were at the power meetings. According to Loretta, one of the individuals on one occasion told the girls that the room was going to spin for a while and it did and she realized later that it was drugs that the men had given them.
>
> Loretta advised that about eight months later she was put through her first test. Her and the other girls were taken to a building in Omaha where ... she was locked in a room with a little girl which she described as a Caucasian infant. At about midnight, Loretta indicated that the men came into the room, took the little girl away from her and told her that she could achieve power by killing something that she really loved. Loretta described that they then cut the little girl's head off, stuck it on the wall and made her sit in front of it. Loretta indicated later she had to take the head off the wall and that the men held her down while they cut the eyes out of the little girl's head. They then left Loretta and the girl in the room, locking the door. ... [S]he was left in the locked room with the little girl for twenty-four hours and during this time she could hear another one of the girls screaming [S]he could hear the men whipping and beating the girl. Shortly after this the men came into the room and told Loretta that she had passed the test and then drove her a couple blocks from her house and let her out. ...
>
> Loretta indicated the next time that she saw the men she had gone to a friend's house who was having a party and

> the men showed up. Loretta identified two of the men as Larry King and a Mr. Finch who Loretta indicated was a school principal. Additionally she identified parties as Ace, King Horse, Jerry Lucifer and Mike....

After one such party, Loretta said, another girl called OPD and

> reported that she was raped and tried to press charges.... (O]ther girls covered up the rape for the men. Loretta indicated that she again threatened to tell about the activities and the men said they would kill her or her mother. ...
>
> At [another] meeting Loretta indicated devil worshipping was practiced and that another small boy was sacrificed. Loretta and the other girls were in the other room and she could hear the little boy screaming.... She then indicated the child was fried and eaten by the girls. Loretta indicated she refused to take part in this so that the men beat her for two days.
>
> At additional meetings Loretta indicated the men told her and the other girls that they must sacrifice for power and described three incidents where further sacrifices took place. The first a one-year old white female had her head taken off by a saw, the second a four-year old white male was hung on the wall and darts thrown at him and the third an Indian female, three or four years old, had several parts of her body cut off after which it was ground and poured on the girls and they also were made to drink the remains of the child....
>
> August 21, 1988. Loretta indicated the third, fourth and fifth sacrifices took place during the spring of 1985 when she was eleven and that the parties that were at these sacrifices were Mr. Finch, King Horses, and the big guy she referred to earlier. Between the sacrifices she indicated that the girls were tested to see if they would keep quiet and how much control that the men had over them....
>
> Loretta indicated that the men would try to scare the girls by having them watch as animals were mutilated and also the men would threaten them by saying that instead of killing them that they would just cut off parts of bodies and torture the girls and make them suffer.
>
> Asked to provide details relative to the first sacrifice of the infant girl, Loretta indicated that at first she didn't cry

> and after this the men cut the eyes out of the girl. Loretta indicated that she freaked out, was screaming and hitting the walls.... [She said] the cult members were wearing what she described as clothes which had upside-down crosses on them and that the leader always wore a long black cape with gold rings shaped like a skeleton head....
>
> Loretta ... went into the Immanuel Hospital for the first time in November of 1985 and also was in Immanuel in January of 1986 and March of 1986. Then her mother put her in the court system so that she could ultimately get her into Uta Halee, [a school and residence for troubled girls].

• • •

To the expert eye of Foster Care Review Board Executive Director Carol Stitt, when she received the reports from Loretta's caseworkers, the girl's testimony appeared highly credible. Stitt explained before the state Legislature's Executive Board, on December 19, 1988, "[O]ne of the things that you want to keep in mind, as horrifying as this is when you review it, this girl is very concrete about who was present at these homicides, what was happening, dates, she gave a lot of specific information and in working with children one of the ways you know this is not a global fantasy is the more details they give you."

The information given to hospital staff and to the Omaha police by Loretta Smith overlapped and corroborated what was already in the hands of authorities from the children from the Webb household, and from Margo Georgiu and her daughter. From three separate cases, involving pornography, child abuse, and ritual murder, children's testimony and other evidence converged on Larry King.

CHAPTER 4

COVER-UP PHASE THE POLICE

In July 1988, Omaha police officers in the Robbery and Sex Unit received an unexpected visit from their boss, Chief of Police Robert Wadman. According to the officers' own account, related by Nebraska Foster Care Review Board official Dennis Carlson in testimony to the Legislature's Executive Board, they took precautions to keep Wadman out of their work on Larry King.

Excerpts of Carlson's remarks, from the Executive Board minutes of December 19, 1988, show that the officers feared a police cover-up of King's activities, from within the department:

> [Officer Carmean] told me some things which I found to be somewhat startling. I asked if he was interested in information regarding Larry King and he said, yes we are, we're conducting what he called a supersensitive investigation of Larry King and he said this investigation was so supersensitive that they were not even using the steno pool in the Omaha Police Department.
>
> They were handwriting their police reports, and he also told me that Chief Wadman had come to their unit and directly asked if they were investigating Larry King.... Investigator Carmean told me, we lied to the Chief and we said, no, we are not investigating Larry King. OK, so that conversation took place on July 20th of 1988.
>
> After we were presented with that information we had some concerns as to what was going on in the Omaha Police Department We were concerned about if we gave this infor-

> mation to the Omaha Police Department what would they do with it?

• • •

The investigation of Loretta Smith's charges did not go far, in Wadman's department. Neither did the career of Officer Carmean.

On the afternoon of June 28, 1988, immediately after Carmean's interview with Loretta, his supervisor, Sgt. Ken Bovasso, spoke by telephone with Dr. Kay Shilling, Loretta's psychiatrist at the hospital. According to Bovasso's write-up, Shilling

> told this Reporting Officer that she has spoken with LORETTA SMITH since LORETTA'S discussion with Officer CARMEAN.... LORETTA told DR. SHILLING that she only gave Officer CARMEAN general information, ... [but] that she had no problem talking with Officer CARMEAN. Reporting Officer told DR. SHILLING that sometime during the week of 04 July 1988 this Reporting Officer will assign Officer CARMEAN to revisit Loretta at the hospital in order to build up some rapport and possibly obtain more specific information.

Carmean never came back to interview Loretta Smith again.

As Loretta volunteered more horrific, detailed allegations during the summer, Richard Young Hospital and FCRB personnel were concerned about the lack of police interest. Dennis Carlson recalled, in his Executive Board testimony:

> Loretta was making more allegations against Larry King and others and these were allegations of the most serious nature. She was reporting that she had witnessed homicides. Investigator Carmean was contacted by myself on one, possibly two or three, occasions.... I'd tell him that this girl's making more allegations, that she's opening up, she's telling additional information, she's beginning to relate better to her case workers and social workers, would you please go out and re-interview this girl? ...
>
> After Investigator Carmean received the information from

> the Foster Care Review Board, the information that I hand delivered to him, he never went back to interview Loretta Smith. In one of my telephone conversations with Investigator Carmean, I remember telling him that this girl was now reporting homicides, and he said, yes, I need to get out there and re-interview this girl. ...
>
> [O]ne of my concerns Senator is the conduct of the Omaha Police Department. I don't know what's going on up there, I'm not familiar with the players in the Omaha Police Department, but I know that I hand delivered material to an investigator. ... Investigator Carmean and Investigator Hoch left my office and they seemed sincere, they seemed that they were going to investigate these allegations and later it was as if air had been let out of a balloon, that all of a sudden they had no interest in even re-interviewing a girl who was saying that she had witnessed homicides and I just don't understand it. ...

FCRB Executive Director Carol Stitt testified:

> I would like to add something that was highly unusual in this case. Loretta's psychiatrist contacted the police in Omaha and asked them to come, Loretta's personal care worker, Ken Stoner, contacted the police, [Richard Young employee] Kirstin Hallberg contacted the police, as well as Adrienne Hart, who is Kirstin's supervisor. All those people had made contact and nothing was being done....

Not long after after his interview with Loretta, Officer Carmean was transferred out of investigations altogether, into a section called Research and Planning. At the same Executive Board meeting, Senator Ernie Chambers recounted a phone conversation with Carmean:

> When I called [the sexual assault unit], they said he's no longer here and that's when they told me that he was with Research and Planning.... I finally ... got him and I mentioned his enthusiasm at the outset, and that from what I had developed in terms of creditable information being given to me, I felt he'd been transferred because he was getting too close to something and his superiors did not want him to continue. So there was a silence, then he kind of chuckled,

> he said, well, no, uh, I wanted this transfer. I've known of Carmean for years and he's not the type of officer who'd want to be put into an office where he's the only one there, in fact that might have been the creation of the department. Didn't even have a secretary.

Carmean himself testified before the legislative Franklin committee in June 1989, that, although he had been pulled off the case, he thought Loretta's charges were "credible" and deserved follow-up.

Less than two weeks later, on July 5, 1989, Chief Wadman tried to get Carmean declared crazy. In a lengthy "Inter-Office Communication" to Omaha Public Safety Director Pitmon Fox-all (a cousin of Larry Kingl), Wadman announced that Carmean needed a mental health evaluation:

> I am requesting a supervisory referral for Officer Irl Carmean to see police psychologist Dr. Steven Sherrets. I am basing this request on the actions demonstrated by Officer Carmean that surfaced during the Larry King investigation....
>
> Prior to Officer Carmean's assignment with Research and Planning, he was serving as an investigator with the Robbery and Sex Unit under the command of Lt. Guy Goodrich. While in that assignment, Officer Carmean was involved as an investigator and did participate in looking into matters involving allegations that Larry King was involved in some sexual improprieties with young people. The investigation never did come close to supporting the allegations sufficiently for a charge to be considered against Larry King.

One other Omaha policeman who was reported to have kept a file on Larry King, Officer Bill Skoleski, died of a heart attack.

• • •

In August 1989, Chief Wadman dismissed out of hand the criminal, satanic horrors that Loretta Smith and other children had described to authorities. On Omaha radio station KKAR, the city's chief law enforcement officer chalked up concern

about these allegations to the fact that some Omahans have a "prurient interest of child abuse, of child sexual abuse, those kinds of things. . . . I think that the media attention to that element of things is inappropriate."

Regarding Loretta Smith, Wadman said, "The primary witness was . . . making statements that were very bizarre and were not founded in reality."

Wadman concluded his KKAR interview by stating that the OPD and other agencies had conducted a thorough investigation, but the allegations led to "a dead end."

• • •

Robert Wadman has sworn under oath that he barely knew Larry King, that he "had very few social contacts with Larry King." That's not what King says. In April 22, 1989 interviews with King and Wadman, Frank Brown of TV-7, Omaha, questioned them about an incident in which Wadman intervened at King's request, to order the release of a suitcase seized in a drug raid.

> BROWN: King acknowledges he is a friend of Chief Wadman's. We asked King did he call the chief to get a suitcase released that had been seized in a drug investigation?
>
> BROWN: You had that friendship where, you could....
>
> KING: Yes.
>
> BROWN: You could call the Chief of Police and get a piece of evidence released?
>
> KING: I felt that I could call anyone in this city.
>
> BROWN: What was that suitcase? I've always wondered what was in that suitcase and what was it about?
>
> KING: Urn, it's really nothing. It was a relative of mine and he was staying at a hotel, and I guess they had a drug bust or something....
>
> BROWN: We asked Chief Robert Wadman if Larry King had ever telephoned him to get a suitcase released from police custody.

WADMAN: Yes ... I can't recall if it was this past year or the year before that he did call regarding a situation and that information was forwarded to the unit responsible for the request. ...

BROWN: That did not compromise any investigation?

WADMAN: Absolutely not. And I'm very disappointed that this situation continues to be protractive but it was a situation that was routinely handled. I receive literally hundreds of those requests and this situation was handled exactly the same way as the rest.

Switching back to Larry King, Brown raised another question about a smooth ride he seemed to have gotten from the OPD:

BROWN: The Omaha Police had an investigation last summer into an alleged pornographic....

KING: Vh, huh.

BROWN: And you were cleared?

KING: I didn't even know that they had one last summer. ... [P]eople make up these things. People make up anything, you can hear anything about anyone. If you choose to believe it you will, if you choose not to, you don't. I choose not to listen to garbage and gossip.

King had indeed been cleared, with the blessing of Robert Wadman. The legislative Franklin committee's record of Wadman's own testimony to this effect dates from October 13, 1989. Besides Wadman, the speakers in this transcript are committee counsel John Stevens Berry and Robert Creager, and Wadman's attorney, Kent Whinnery.

BERRY: Are you aware whether or not there have been any ongoing investigations in Omaha regarding whether or not Mr. King has been involved with narcotics? ...

WHINNERY: May I just ask a point of clarification? Are you talking about ongoing but not concluded or–

BERRY: Well, I suppose I could ask a series of questions. Have there been in the past? Have there been any continuing?

Have there been any ongoing at all? Do you know anything about Mr. King or has Mr. King been a subject of a narcotics investigation? That's an area I want the Chief to address, and I'm happy to have him address it.

WADMAN: I'm unaware of any of those.

CREAGER: The answer is no?

WADMAN: The answer is no, yeah.

BERRY: Let me ask the very same broad question about Mr. King and the relationship to child pornography or pornography of any kind.

WADMAN: We had a situation where we were advised that there was a possibility of child pornography involving-no, it came in as child pornography case. What happened is that there was a photographer who was taking photographs of young women, and in the course of that set of circumstances, a mother with her daughter called and filed a complaint with the police department, and the complaint involved a situation where her daughter was approached by the photographer to be photographed, and the photographer extended an invitation to this young woman's mother to come with her.

They went to the studio; photographs were taken; and in the course of that the mother became concerned over the photographs and some of the photographs that she observed at the photo studio and then filed a complaint of concern that this was a possible pornographic situation.

We investigated it, found the photographer to be, you know, legitimately involved in the photography business, legitimately involved in conducting the photographs, and getting signed releases and having a photography studio and so on.

The only involvement is that this individual had subleased his studio or apartment from Larry King, and that was the extent of our investigation into pornography-related activities involving Mr. King in any direct way.

This was the photographer, Rusty Nelson, described to Margo Georgiu by people who knew him as "a pervert," and proven by her to have lied about his professional experience and resume. The pictures in his studio were "frontal nudity"

shots of adolescent girls. Nelson described King not as his landlord, but as his "boss." The investigating officers had compiled and filed accounts from several people about the lavish spending by King on Nelson's and other apartments, about his comings and goings in Mercedes Benz cars, and other evidence of an unexplained leap in King's income, and about the common knowledge that King was involved with drug dealers and was a homosexual who "liked young boys." Wadman, who had approached his officers with such curiosity about any investigations of Larry King that they might pursue, swore under oath, that he knew nothing about any of that.

CHAPTER 5

JUST HOW BIG IS THIS COVER-UP?

The Nebraska Foster Care Review Board, which is not a law enforcement agency and is not equipped to investigate crimes, let alone prosecute them, in 1988 found itself by default the main recipient of reports of abuse from children and from case workers, which attested to the existence of an organized child exploitation ring in Nebraska, and stretching far beyond.

Expressing frustration and alarm that the Omaha Police had failed to investigate reports of child murders and other serious crimes, even after many urgent phone calls from personnel at Richard Young Hospital, FCRB Executive Director Carol Stitt on July 13, 1988 met with Nebraska's Republican governor, Kay Orr, to seek help. Governor Orr told her to "do whatever is necessary" to secure an investigation.

On July 20, Stitt wrote to Attorney General Robert Spire, to request that his office, the state's top prosecuting agency, enter the case. For the first time, somebody openly pulled together the testimony of Nelly Patterson Webb, Loretta Smith, and other children, whose reports of abuse all cited Larry King.

"Pursuant to the Nebraska Child Abuse Statutes, the State Foster Care Review Board is making a report of allegations of a child exploitation ring and respectfully requests an investigation," wrote Stitt. She noted that in December 1987, FCRB had reviewed the allegations about a child prostitution ring centered on the Webb family's foster home. Then:

> On 5/17/88, the Foster Care Review Board received a phone call from Kirsten Hallberg ... who is a previous employee

> of Uta Halee Girls Village and currently works for Richard Young Psychiatric Hospital in Omaha. She was aware of Nelly and [her youngest sister] Kendra's reports to the Review Board. Ms. Hallberg told me about three Uta Halee girls, a 20-year old young man at Richard Young, and three youths at Boys Town who all reported inappropriate activities with Larry King of Omaha. She also reports that at a recent child exploitation conference in Kansas City a detective from Kansas City ... asked her when the Nebraska authorities were going to do something about Larry King.
>
> On *7120/88,* Kirstin Hallberg reported a 15-year old girl at Richard Young who is talking about inappropriate activity with Larry King and also is alleging witnessing a murder of a young boy who said he was going to tell of the abuse he suffered.

Along with the letter, the Foster Care Review Board turned over its entire file on these cases to the attorney general. Spire assured the FCRB that he would do everything in his power to help, and assigned the case to one of his top assistants, Bill Howland.

As months dragged by with little apparent action by the attorney general, Stitt and Dennis Carlson demanded a meeting with Howland, which was held in his office on November 22, 1988. Stitt described the meeting to the Legislature's Executive Board, on December 19, 1988:

> When Dennis and I were in this meeting it became clear to me that if Mr. Howland had ever read the materials we delivered to him in July, it was a long time ago. He didn't know major players' names in the case.... Dennis did some rather tough questioning and it became clear to both of us that nothing had occurred. The file was just a mess. I grabbed the file from him. Reordered it. ...
>
> Dennis and I both left that meeting, I mean, I can speak for myself, and I felt full of despair and I felt like all the optimism that we had had that something was going to happen, to not only help the kids who'd been abused, but to stop this from occurring to other kids, and many of the kids that I'm aware of were State wards, was not happening. Nothing was happening.... Now we see that we were just

> being put off, "Yeah, we'll get out there," and "Yeah. we'll do this," and "Yeah, we're on top of it," but really none of the officials had organized their investigation.

Her fellow Executive Board member Burrell Williams added:

> I think we became really baffled and puzzled on what was going on when you get all this information in front of you and nothing had, [or] is being done about it.

Dennis Carlson was also puzzled:

> I ... don't know what if anything either the Omaha Police Department or the Attorney General's office actually did. . . . If I were doing that investigation, the first thing I would have done with that information is contacted Loretta Smith who's making allegations that she had witnessed homicides, not a homicide, it's homicides.... I ... talked to Loretta Smith's case worker at Richard Young Hospital on November 22 and she told me that the last person that interviewed Loretta was Officer Carmean and that took place on June 28, 1988.

On November 30, 1988, Stitt again attempted to contact the governor, to set up a still more urgent meeting, because of the failure of the attorney general's investigation to get off the ground. The governor's staff scheduled a meeting for the following week, but canceled the appointment the next day. The governor, according to her office, was "not willing" to meet, as Carlson recorded in his daily notes of December 1.

In the November 22, 1988 meeting, Howland once again claimed he would do everything he could, a claim undercut by the attitude of the governor. The Attorney General's Office put one investigator, Thomas Vlahoulis, on the case part time, but, as the Legislature's Franklin committee was to learn on 22, 1989, he did next to nothing. In this transcript of his legislative testimony, Vlahoulis is questioned by committee counsel.

> COUNSEL: As I understand what you told Senator Chambers, the information in your notes, which was important, was placed in the reports that you generated, is that correct?

VLAHOULIS: Yes, it was.

COUNSEL: Now, the conclusion I draw, after reviewing that information, is that you really didn't do anything between July and late November, except to collect some extraneous pieces of information about Mr. King's business interests and perhaps about ... his wife's citizenship status. That's my conclusion from reading the reports.

• • •

On December 20, 1988, Attorney General Robert Spire was quoted in the *Lincoln Journal* saying that his office had "acted promptly and professionally" on all the "sensitive information" received on child abuse six months earlier. Yet the Nebraska State Patrol, the agency that would be called upon by the attorney general in such an investigation, conducted its very first investigative meeting on the case on December 19, 1988, the day Spire was boasting to the *Lincoln Journal* about his alacrity!

In the face of official inaction, Carol Stitt and the medical personnel responsible for treating Loretta Smith grew concerned about her safety. She had already been threatened, and the new charges she was making put her in even more danger.

Stitt turned to still another agency, the Douglas County (Omaha and surroundings) Attorney's Office, and requested a protective order for Loretta. When the Douglas County attorney filed the order, however, it said that Loretta was making bizarre statements, that she had been on the streets for two weeks, and that she was suicidal! Not only were these allegations untrue, but they could help ensure that Loretta be discredited in any future court appearance.

The order had an even graver implication, as Senator Chambers observed during Stitt's December 19, 1988 testimony to the Executive Board of the Legislature.

SENATOR CHAMBERS: Neither you nor Miss Hallberg said that the child is suicidal.

STITT: No.

SENATOR CHAMBERS: But if that's in the court record, in the petition, an official document and the child winds up

> deceased then and if the result of [sic] a suicide then everybody would have had prior notice that this child is suicidal, if you would, by that report, by that petition and the court order.

Chambers was also familiar with the person in the Douglas County Attorney's Office who filed the order, Liz Crnkovich.

> SENATOR CHAMBERS: Now this is some information that I have and maybe you don't, are you aware that Lynne [sic] Crnkovich has had information given to her by certain professionals about some of the things that these youngsters have been talking about and making allegations and she chose to do nothing. Were you aware of her involvement in that regard?
>
> STITT: Yes, I was made aware of that while we were trying to see what we could get done in Omaha....

Vlahoulis, the part-time sleuth from the Attorney General's Office, later told Franklin committee investigators about another time Loretta ran afoul of Crnkovich. According to Vlahoulis' conversations with Crnkovich in January 1989, Father Val Peter of Boys Town "had been approached by Loretta Smith and ... she complained to him that the F.B.1. and Crnkovich had intimidated her to such an extent while she was at Richard Young Hospital that she had not provided them with all the information that she knew."

At the December 19, 1988 Executive Board meeting, Senator Loran Schmit asked Carol Stitt what effect the gross mishandling of her case might have on Loretta Smith. Stitt answered, "I'd like to say if the State continues to handle the case the way they've handled it, everything that this perpetrator has told them is being reinforced. That he has the power, there's nothing they can do, nobody's going to help them, and that certainly has been what's happened so far."

CHAPTER 6

THE DESTRUCTION OF COMMONWEALTH SAVINGS MODEL FOR NEBRASKA

Inaction by the authorities, a blind eye to children's pleas, failure to prosecute, a rush to cover up-all this was happening in the heartland state of Nebraska. To understand how this could be, requires a good look at state politics during the mid-1980s, especially the Robert Kerrey administration of 1983-1987.

Early in the decade, the signs went up, billboard-size with flashing neon lights, that Nebraska was now, more than ever, a "wide open state," to use the terminology of the organized crime-controlled political machines in various parts of the United States during the 1920s and 1930s. Mafia control in those days was so tight in some cities, that opposition newspaper editors were gunned down in broad daylight. A June 1991 article in the Minneapolis *Star-Tribune* recalled, about the history of Minnesota, "Alvin Karpis, onetime Public Enemy No.1, once said, 'Every criminal of any importance in the 1930s made his home at one time or another in St. Paul. ... If you were looking for a guy you hadn't seen in a few months, you usually thought of two places-prison or St. Paul. If he wasn't locked up in one, he was probably hanging out in the other.' " In order for the city to have this status, veteran St. Paul *Pioneer Press* reporter Nate Bomberg has said, "Everybody was in on the take. You can't have an underworld without an overworld.... You can't have the rackets unless you have

the mayor, the chief of the police, and the county attorney in your comer."

1983 was a banner year for Nebraska's building its credentials as a modem such safe haven for crimes and perversions. That was when the state seized Commonwealth Savings, forcing its owners, the Copple family, to ante up any and all company and personal assets to help redeem depositor losses. It was the first year of Bob Kerrey's term as governor of Nebraska.

The case haunts Kerrey to this day.

In 1990, as the price tag for cleaning up failed savings and loan institutions nationwide soared into the hundreds of billions of dollars, one of the loudest critics ofthe Bush administration's handling of the matter was freshman Senator Bob Kerrey, Democrat of Nebraska. An *Omaha World-Herald* headline captured the clashes: "Kerrey, Fitzwater Trade Allegations Over Handling of S&L Crisis." White House spokesman Marlin Fitzwater cautioned Kerrey that as many Democrats as Republicans were involved in the S&L fiasco, and then admonished him in personal terms. According to the July 16-22, 1990 Omaha *Metro Update,* Fitzwater "added that if Senator Kerrey is bent upon making S&L a campaign issue, it's one that could work against Kerrey. The White House apparently has some files on Commonwealth Savings and State Security Savings, but no details were given."

The mentioned institutions were two of Nebraska's largest industrial banks. They collapsed in 1983 and 1984, shortly after Kerrey's election as governor.

Kerrey knows about his vulnerability. Soon after the exchange with Fitzwater, the senator got himself interviewed by a friendly *World-Herald* reporter, to come clean about the events of 1983-84. Under the headline "Kerrey: My Errors in Insolvencies Will Not Diminish S&L Scrutiny," he admitted what he had fiercely denied at the time-that his key adviser on the Commonwealth and State Security crises was his close friend, business associate, and chief financial adviser, Bill Wright. "Regarded by some as one of the cleverest and most ambitious financial operators in the state," according to a bro-

chure from the Lincoln-based Concerned Citizens for Responsible Government, Wright was also a major shareholder and the president of State Security Savings. This relationship, Kerrey now said, may have led to "appearances of impropriety," but this all happened because "I was new to politics."

For informed Nebraskans, Kerrey's confession was a bombshell, as the *Metro Update* observed: "But what Kerrey-faced with the absolute imperative to get his own past behind him if he is to have any credible role in the Democratic pursuit of President Bush's handling of the national savings and loan scandals-told *[World-Herald* reporter] Kotok is breathtaking in implication. It is especially so for those whose depth of knowledge takes in the entire fabric of the Kerrey Administration: Commonwealth Savings Co., State Security Savings, Kerrey's own panoply of private business dealings, and, finally, the creation and uses of the Nebraska Investment Finance Authority."

According to information published in the *Metro Update* and other documentation, those implications are that Kerrey and Bill Wright used the powers of state government to: 1) loot State Security's depositors of at least $4 million and as much as $10 million, 2) deprive the depositors of Commonwealth of at least $40 million, 3) set up a new state agency, with the sole apparent purpose of giving Kerrey and his cronies millions of dollars in low interest loans, 4) cheat farmers out of $200 million in subsidized loans, and 5) peddle junk bonds to investors who thought they were getting high-grade state bonds.

The voluminous evidence of these activities can be found in a 1986 state Senate investigation, which I chaired, of the failures of State Security and an Omaha bank, the American Savings Company; in 1988 brochures of the Concerned Citizens for Responsible Government; in the Omaha *Metro Update* of July 16-22, 1990; in a set of three tightly documented reports submitted to the Nebraska Legislature in 1990 by a group of depositors from the failed Commonwealth bank, led by Reuben Worster of Lincoln and veterinarian Dr. Melvin Bahensky of Grand Island; and in a 1991 tort claim filed by myself as attorney and on behalf of Commonwealth depositors.

According to his own account, Bob Kerrey entered politics to make money. In September 1981, as he was contemplating a run for the Nebraska governorship, Kerrey lamented to businesswoman Dana Saylor Robinson, that in business, "You have to know someone or cater to this or that politician, to get anything. The only way you are going to be able to make any money is to be in politics."

The record shows that, with the advice of financial genius Bill Wright, Kerrey fulfilled his ambition at the expense of the citizens of Nebraska.

• • •

Late one night in the last week of 1982, Democratic Governor-elect Kerrey and Bill Wright summoned Republican Paul Amen, the state banking director, to a meeting to ask him to stay on in the new administration. Anticipating the request, Amen brought with him "our highly confidential, secret, sensitive list of problem institutions," as he later told my legislative committee when we were looking into the State Security and American Savings failures.

High on the list were Commonwealth Savings, controlled by Lincoln businessman S.E. Copple and his son Marvin, and State Security, whose president and leading stockholder was none other than Bill Wright.

In 1986, testifying before my committee, Amen was asked if he hadn't felt a little strange showing the governor this list in the presence of Wright, whose own bank was on it. Amen replied, "No, Senator Harris, I didn't even think in terms of that. I thought in terms of the fact that Bill Wright was the Governor's principal adviser and the Governor had wanted him present at the particular meeting."

Wright was a prominent lawyer in Lincoln, a member of a wealthy, established family, and one of the rising stars in Nebraska politics during the 1970s. State Security, which he and associates acquired in 1978, in a highly leveraged buyout, had made many loans to businessman Bob Kerrey. Wright became the guiding force behind Kerrey's gubernatorial campaign,

headed his transition team, and served as the governor's personal counsel. His law firm, Wright, Rembolt, and Ludtke, soon became official adviser to the Nebraska State Banking Department.

On October 31, 1983, while Banking Commissioner Amen was on the East Coast negotiating for a purchaser to buy the troubled Commonwealth bank, Governor Kerrey suddenly issued a late-afternoon press release which said, "We are monitoring the activities of Commonwealth; we are looking at that institution with more interest than we are the other institutions which we monitor."

The next morning, panicked citizens mobbed the bank. State authorities shut its doors by the afternoon. According to a release from Concerned Citizens for Responsible Government,

> the *Lincoln Star* of November 1, [1983] Kerrey himself was quoted as saying that he was barred by law from publicly indicating how serious the Commonwealth situation might be. That is to prevent a public official from creating a run on a financial institution. Yet, by his own words on television and in the newspapers, Kerrey caused exactly that result."

Commonwealth could have filed for reorganization under the bankruptcy code, to protect its depositors in the wake of the run. But Kerrey forestalled that action by securing a legal opinion from his appointees at the State Banking Department's legal counsel-Bill Wright's law firm-that bankruptcy should not be allowed, but that the state should seize the bank. By statute, Commonwealth also should have had ten days to find new capital, before being seized. The bank had at least two offers-the one Amen was working on, and one from a local group of investors. S.E. Copple was willing to sell his controlling stock in the bank to this local group for $1, in return for an infusion of $8-10 million in capital, in order to save the bank. The bank, as Commissioner Amen later testified to the Legislature, would have been saved. Some $50 million of depositors' funds would have been preserved as well. But Kerrey's press release, the resulting run, and the governor's refusal to allow Commonwealth to be purchased after its seizure, preempted that possibility.

The failure of Commonwealth, the biggest collapse of a financial institution in the history of Nebraska, was a human tragedy of major proportions. Many of its depositors were elderly people, who had their life savings in Commonwealth. When it collapsed, some of them were left without even money to buy food. By 1991, eight years after the collapse, one-third of the depositors have died. Many of them died from heart attacks or strokes, within the first 90 days after their bank's doors were shut. Seven families with retarded children had put their life savings in the bank, to care for the children after the parents die; that money was all gone.

• • •

Kerrey claimed to have great compassion for Commonwealth's depositors, but his actions spoke otherwise.

Throughout 1983, the State Banking Department pressured Commonwealth president S.E. Copple to put up over $8 million of his personal assets and those of his son Marvin, to secure unsecured loans that Commonwealth had taken from other banks. In one instance, a multi-million dollar property got pledged, to secure an approximately $750 thousand loan. These were debts to, among others, Bill Wright's State Security Savings and the National Bank of Commerce, owned by Kerrey's associate Jim Stuart. Now, after seizing Commonwealth, Kerrey's administration pressured the 88-year-old man to dispose of whatever personal assets he had left, including his residence, to "pay back depositors." The bulk of Copple's substantial assets, however, were no longer available to the depositors. They had already been taken by Kerrey's friends.

The Copple family was descended from some of the first pioneers in Nebraska. It had a tradition of fierce independence from the state's financial establishment, whence Kerrey received campaign funding. The Copples' bank had been a source of liquidity for farmers and small and medium-sized entrepreneurs. When Federal Reserve Chairman Paul Volcker doubled interest rates to nearly 20%, in the fall of 1979, many Nebraska banks, including Commonwealth, landed in trouble. But there

was a decision to attack the Copples, while sparing institutions tied to Kerrey.

The brouhaha over Commonwealth's collapse diverted attention from State Security Savings, which Amen testified had been in worse shape than Commonwealth. State Security escaped the kind of pressure applied to the Copples. Rather, Kerrey's permission for State Security to remain open until July 9, 1984 made possible its "milking and draining" by Bill Wright and other bank officers, in the words of our 1986 Senate investigation. (That investigative report was unanimously adopted by all members of the legislative committee by which it was prepared, Republicans and Democrats alike, including some of Governor Kerrey's previously staunchest supporters.)

Then, State Security was allowed to file bankruptcy, contrary to the standard set for Commonwealth by Wright's law firm via the State Banking Department. Wright's double standard was glaring. It was Wright, who took State Security *intofederal* bankruptcy, which shielded it from possible attempts by local officials to investigate its affairs or to protect depositors. Yet Bill Wright's law firm, acting as official adviser to the Banking Department, had prohibited that same course from being followed by Commonwealth, by issuing its opinion that such a declaration of bankruptcy by Commonwealth would be illegal.

At the age of 88, S.E. Copple was stripped of everything he owned, sent to prison, and died a pauper, while Bill Wright quietly moved out of Nebraska, into a million-dollar mansion in Rancho Santa Fe, California.

• • •

While he was closing down Commonwealth, Bob Kerrey made money on business deals arranged by the institution he allowed to remain open, State Security.

On April 5, 1983, the governor, Wright and others formed a partnership called American Investment Group. The chief purpose of AIG was to acquire a choice block of Lincoln real estate, the Shoppers Fair shopping center. This business opportunity resulted from a maneuver by State Security. Bill

Wright's bank had loaned businessmen Jerry Joyce and Robert Rentfro, the owners of Shoppers Fair, millions of dollars for other projects. **It** threatened to foreclose on all those loans, unless Joyce and Rentfro sold Shoppers Fair for a million dollars below its assessed value. When Joyce and Rentfro prepared to sue, State Security looked for another arrangement. Ultimately, Shoppers Fair was delivered to the Kerrey group, in return for State Security writing off $3 million of Joyce/Rentfro debts. State Security financed the purchase by AIG with a loan at 4% under the prime rate.

The $3 million write-off of Joyce/Rentfro loans and the new below-prime loan to enable AIG to acquire Shoppers Fair, relieved State Security's depositors of substantial funds.

Those depositors lost millions in other financial swindles, which reveal the brutality of the Kerrey group's actions, masterminded by Bill Wright. Wright and others gained control of State Security in 1978 by purchasing its stock, through a holding company they owned, with a very preferential loan from First National Bank of Lincoln (FirsTier Bank, after its 1984 merger with Omaha National Corporation); the loan required no personal guarantee and carried no personal obligation, meaning that if it went "bad" and the company folded, Wright and his partners had no obligation to repay. Ultimately, they did not repay it.

Having gained control of State Security, they sold its most valuable asset, a downtown Lincoln office building, to themselves (using a disguised corporate name) for one fourth of its actual value. Since the depositors really owned the equitable value of the building, this transaction alone robbed them of a small fortune. Adding insult to injury, Kerrey's friends then effectively sold the building back to the selfsame depositors, using a long-term lease. The new owners leased it to them at the actual value, four times higher than what they had just paid for the building!

On May 28, 1986, with the statute of limitation on prosecution for these activities about to expire, several members of the Legislature's investigative committee wrote to Banking Director James Barbee and Attorney General Robert Spire,

urge you to consult immediately with the appropriate law enforcement authorities to determine whether criminal prosecution is warranted."

Nothing was done. The disgust of Senators over such patent corruption shows up in the transcript of a subsequent hearing. Senator Higgins: "I am sick and tired of this pussyfooting around with these boys." Senator Schmit: ... the statute will have expired and the people that needed to be protected will have been protected, that is putting it very bluntly."

Senator Higgins, incidentally, was the Legislature's most stalwart Democrat and Kerrey supporter. As a member of the investigative committee, privy to details that showed just how sordid the affair was, even she had had enough.

The senators subpoenaed Spire and other Kerrey-appointed officials, who stated that it was their prerogative to prosecute or not, and they chose not to.

We called Kerrey himself as a witness, and instructed him to bring his personal financial statements. According to the *Metro Update,* "Kerrey said he resented the request for his bank records. He parried the request by saying that the committee was essentially saying, 'It is OK if your banker tells us everything they know about you.' Kerrey eventually did consent to appear before the committee. Highlights included his denial of improper influence by William F. Wright. Key decisions of the administration were based upon advice from the Department of Banking [whose counsel was Wright's law firm] and other official channels, Kerrey testified."

Kerrey's AIG deal was already a scandal when it transpired, in 1983. Talking about his business affairs to my legislative committee in 1986, the governor claimed that he had taken every politician's routine precautions: prepared and executed a business trust that naturally moved all the assets physically that I owned, all the business assets, away from even indirect control." But somehow this did not prevent Kerrey from personally signing the papers to set up AIG. If it was supposed to be a typical blind trust, to shield a public official from knowledge of how his assets are being managed, Governor Kerrey's trust had at least one eye open. *Metro Update* described it,

"Kerrey's blind trust: It was his sister, Jessie, and her husband, Dean Rasmussen, Kerrey's very active partner in Prairie Life, the restaurants and other business deals. How can you have a blind trust with a bunch of partners you see maybe every day? You maybe eat dinner with them. Or they come over from time to time?"

• • •

In November 1983, Kerrey acted quickly to shield himself and his associates from investigation during the uproar over the collapse of Commonwealth. On November 5, 1983, news media reported what was an apparent leak from administration sources, that Republican Attorney General Paul Douglas, who normally would have handled the Commonwealth investigation, was involved in improper Commonwealth loans. Douglas was a long-standing friend of the Copples. With impeachment proceedings under way, Douglas resigned.

Kerrey replaced Douglas as attorney general with his own man, Robert Spire. (Today, Spire serves as U.S. Senator Kerrey's chief of staff.) To oversee the Commonwealth investigation, he named a new special assistant attorney general, David Domina, formerly a law clerk in Bill Wright's law firm!

On November 15, 1983, Kerrey fired Banking Director Paul Amen and replaced him with John Miller, whom he had appointed to the State Liquor Control Commission in June. Miller admitted he had no knowledge of the banking business, telling the press, according to the *Metro Update,* "I can't even balance my checkbook."

The Legislature's Banking, Commerce, and Insurance committee, then chaired by this writer, Senator John DeCamp, was prepared to investigate the Commonwealth collapse, which came under its purview. But Kerrey handpicked a special new committee for the job. In a November 21, 1983 letter to the governor, I protested Kerrey's actions: "Governor, it would be most unfair and unreasonable to expect your own people, Mr. Domina, Mr. Miller and yourself, for example, to investigate yourselves since you are the administration officials in charge

of the Banking Department and since the Attorney General's office is the attorney with the responsibility of providing the legal guidance to the Banking Department and to you."

The ostensible investigation by this made-to-order committee turned out as expected. A 1990 report to the Legislature by Reuben Worster of Lincoln and other Commonwealth depositors characterized its findings: "The conclusion of the Domina Report was filled with speculation and 'Who Dunits' and the final analysis determined that Kerrey was an innocent bystander, Amen and [his assistant in the Banking Department] Lake exercised poor judgment, and Douglas was guilty of a multitude of crimes surrounding the failure of the financial institution."

Although Commonwealth had been looted before its collapse, Worster's group charged that post-seizure actions planned by Kerrey were even more egregious. In their three-volume report, these Commonwealth depositors argued that Kerrey had tried to establish, through changes in law and personnel, the ability to devalue Commonwealth's assets by 50% and then sell them to individuals of his choice, with loans financed by a new, Kerrey-appointed agency, the Small Business Development Authority. Although this alleged scheme attributed to Kerrey bogged down in legislative resistance, Commonwealth assets did get inexplicably devalued by 54%, and did wind up in the hands of Stuart and other Kerrey-connected creditors, Worster's group has charged.

Commonwealth depositors got paid only $8.5 million by the state, against their $50 million in losses. There was no reason for them to have lost a nickel. The bank had assets, mainly in real estate, then valued at $50-60 million. The Commonwealth property at 40th & Old Cheney in Lincoln, for instance, would have been worth $35 million if properly developed, according to an estimate given in 1985 by state-appointed receiver John Queen, in front of depositors' representative Dr. Breiner and attorney John Robinson. At the fire sale after Kerrey's liquidators devalued Commonwealth's assets, choice properties, such as 40th & Old Cheney and the Commonwealth Building, went to Jim Stuart's National Bank of Commerce.

• • •

On another project to make millions from the creation of a new state body, the Kerrey clique evidently had more success. The Omaha *Metro Update* of July 16-22, 1990 summarized the case:

> In 1982, the fortunes of Prairie Life Center, [businessman] Kerrey's planned sports center in Lincoln, were at a low ebb. His managers were saying in published accounts in the Lincoln press that the project was dead. It would not fly, they said, because interest rates made it financially impossible. It was announced that subscribers to membership had their downpayments refunded.
>
> But then it was 1983 and a miracle. Kerrey was in as governor, Wright was his trusted, closest financial adviser. Kerrey's announced highest governmental priority became the creation of NIFA [Nebraska Investment Finance Authority], the very body that could breathe new life into Prairie Life.
>
> Three public agencies that had been lending money in the areas of agriculture, home building, and industry were to be consolidated into one, into NIFA, which was to be created as a new public authority.
>
> And there was one additional area of lending; loans could now be made to commercial enterprises. Suddenly, Kerrey's enterprise, Prairie Life, which couldn't fly in 1982, could soar in 1983. Suddenly, it became economically feasible. The senator and his partners got a loan of $2.55 million, some 4 percentage points under the going rate....

After the bill to set up NIFA passed, Kerrey appointed all nine members of its board, including Bill Wright. One of NIFA's very first loans was to Prairie Life. Four days after approval of this loan to Kerry's project, Lancaster County Republican Chairman Randy Moody wrote to Senator Yard Johnson, chairman of the Legislative Council Executive Board, about the obvious conflicts of interest. "This insider deal seems a slap in the face of the taxpayers and business community of the state of Nebraska," Moody wrote. "It's obvious the governor

has taken advantage of his elected position to line his pockets and he, his sister and brother-in-law [partners in Prairie Life] are laughing all the while."

Metro Update reporter Bob Hoig also came to me with some questions about NIFA:

> This writer went to former Sen. John DeCamp, who spearheaded NIFA into existence in 1983 as head of the Banking Committee. What, the Omaha *Metro Update* asked Def.arnp, has NIFA acomplished that it could not have accomplished as three separate agencies, even if the agencies had to be amended in some way, except to make the type of loan that went to Kerrey and his partners and that, of course, allowed Kerrey to appoint the original board?
>
> DeCamp said he could think of nothing. DeCamp is a Republican. He was once close to Kerrey but he said they are not close now. He knows NIFA as well as any legislator, past or present. And he can think of no reason for its existence other than to make a new class of loan and to allow Kerrey to appoint its board.

In 1986, NIFA marketed a $200 million bond issue, for the avowed purpose of funding low-interest loans to Nebraska's distressed farmers. Kerrey negotiated a deal with New York-based junk bond peddlers Drexel Burnham Lambert, for Executive Life Insurance Company of California to market the issue. (Executive Life failed in 1991 due to its Drexel-linked losses.) Drexel and associated firms earned their fat fees, the value of the bonds collapsed, and not one dollar out of the $200 million ever reached a Nebraska farmer! According to a federal law suit filed in April 1990 by holders of the devalued bonds, the main purpose of the financing was never to provide funds to farmers, but to provide "inexpensive funds to Executive Life for reinvestment, .. in junk bonds .... "

While the actions of Kerrey and his associates outraged legislators and tens of thousands of depositors who suffered, there was deafening silence from Nebraska's major press, the *Omaha World-Herald,* the *Lincoln Journal,* and the *Lincoln Star,* The *Metro Update* of July 16-22, 1990 gave some insight into why:

> John Gottschalk, an important *World-Herald* figure in the business sense since 1975 and publisher of the newspaper since last January, has invested through his daughters in Kerrey's ventures since Kerrey's earliest days in business in the early 1970s. The daughters, now ages 15 and 23, own a $50,000 share in the Prairie Life Center in Omaha.

As for the Lincoln *Journal-Star,* one of its three board members since 1981 has been Bill Wright.

• • •

From covering up financial swindles, it was a short step to covering for prominent businessmen who were involved in organized drug peddling or for politicians and publishers with a weakness for young children. Reviewing the Commonwealth case and the Franklin Credit Union scandal side by side, it is striking how the casts of characters overlap. Key personnel in the Kerrey-appointed apparatus, who snowed the Commonwealth depositors, will intervene again as Franklin unfolds.

The state regulators in charge of the Commonwealth receivership were John Queen and Robert Kirchner. Deputy receiver under Queen was one Kent Johnson, Commonwealth's former comptroller and the state's star witness against S.E. Copple; Johnson was to be indicted in 1990, for stealing over one million dollars of Commonwealth depositors' funds, during the receivership. Queen and Kirchner will get a federal contract to analyze the Franklin Credit Union in 1989. On this new assignment, they will hire Johnson once again.

Kirk Naylor was special prosecutor for a grand jury probe of Attorney General Paul Douglas and his ties to Commonwealth; Douglas' resignation cleared the decks for Kerrey's men. Jerry Lowe was a Lincoln police officer, without prior training in financial investigations, assigned to go through the records of Commonwealth. As the first counsel and investigator, respectively, for the Legislature's Franklin committee, Naylor and Lowe will quit suddenly in 1989 in what some senators see as an attempt to torpedo the committee. Naylor will argue that

Carol Stitt of the Foster Care Review Board lied, in her reports of child abuse.

Richard G. Kopf was legal counsel for the special legislative committee set up on Commonwealth, bypassing the Legislature's banking committee. Prior to this starring role, Kopf was a country attorney of no significance in a country town called Lexington, Nebraska. As a United States magistrate-Lincoln sources insist the appointment was a reward for the Commonwealth job-Kopf will issue, and seal, the order that closes Franklin's doors in 1988. An order from Kopf will get Larry King out of town at a critical moment in 1990. Kopf will preside over the federal grand jury that indicts victim-witness Alisha Owen later that year. And finally, surprise of surprises, on August 27, 1991, Kopf will vault ahead of a host of qualified attorneys to be in the lead position for appointment as a new federal judge.

CHAPTER 7

THE FRANKLIN COMMITTEE

On Friday, November 4, 1988, four days before George Bush was elected President of the United States, agents of the Federal Bureau of Investigation, the Internal Revenue Service, and the National Credit Union Administration (NCUA) swooped down on the north Omaha headquarters and branches of the Franklin Community Federal Credit Union and its affiliate, the Consumer Services Organization, and shut their doors.

It was a case of swindles on a vast scale.

At the time of the raid, the Franklin Credit Union listed $2 million in deposits, of which $1.2 million was in certificates of deposit. Yet within a week of the doors being padlocked, claims were filed for $15 million in CD's. Ultimately, close to $40 million was determined to be missing from this credit union that claimed to have a scant $2.6 million in total assets. The obligations were listed on a second, secret set of books.

• • •

In Nebraska's unicameral Legislature, a handful of senators moved to begin a probe into what happened to the Franklin money. The two main initiators of this legislative investigation, the one that would persist when law enforcement balked, were Senator Ernie Chambers, Democrat of north Omaha, and Senator Loran Schmit, Republican of Bellwood.

Senator Chambers represented the district where the Franklin Credit Union was founded in 1968, by community activists, with the proclaimed goal of making credit available for busi-

nesses and individuals in the African-American community of north Omaha. (It was by qualifying as a "low income credit union," that Franklin could sell certificates of deposit to non-members, the means by which it swindled millions.) Larry King became its manager in 1970.

Chambers was in receipt of numerous complaints against King. People talked about his high spending ways, and about the teenaged boys who got in and out of limousines with King. During 1988, Chambers received some of the Foster Care Review Board reports, that abused children had named Larry King.

Senator Schmit, as a Republican, knew of suspicious behavior by King out of town. **In** early years, Larry King was a Democratic Party activist, and headed Black Democrats for McGovern in 1972, but after he shifted registration in 1981, King made his name in the GOP.

As Schmit's friend and personal attorney, I shared with him my own recollections about how I had noticed the two faces of Larry King, which I later summarized in writing: "I had personally been a delegate to the Republican National Convention in 1984 and 1988 and been a witness at the massive spending and luxury at the Larry King parties in both Dallas and New Orleans, and as chairman of the legislative Banking Committee had observed with a jaundiced eye the Franklin operation, which no information could be obtained on because it was a Federal Institution."

At these two conventions, I attended the two biggest parties ever sponsored by Larry King. It was the first of these that brought King to my attention.

The year was 1984. I was attending the Republican National Convention in Dallas, Texas, having been elected as a delegate pledged to support Ronald Reagan. Nebraska was seated in the front row in the convention hall. I had the first seat in the row. The feeling of excitement and power was awesome.

The man sitting next to me, Senator Rex Haberman of Imperial, Nebraska, informed me that the portly black man standing at the podium as the convention was set to begin, was from

Nebraska and was the fastest rising black star in the Republican Party.

"Who the blazes is he?" 1 asked, "And how come 1 haven't heard anything about him?"

"Larry King," Senator Haberman told me, "and you and 1 are attending his party tonight."

had planned on going to a good movie," 1 told Haberman.

"Can't," Haberman explained. "Not if you are going to be a good Republican. You are from Nebraska and this is a party being put on by a Nebraskan to honor another black Nebraskan, DuBois Gilliam, who is going to be getting one of the highest appointments any black person has ever gotten in government. You've got to be there."

So, we went. I drove Rex out to the party, which was being held at Southfork Ranch, famous as the setting for the TV show "Dallas."

It was the most impressive party I have ever witnessed. The attendance by top politicians was remarkable; names and faces you only hear or see on television were there in number. At the center of the excitement was Larry King. Draped over him like a blanket throughout the evening was a heavyset woman, who 1 learned was Maureen Reagan, the president's daughter.

From what I saw, this party had to have cost far more than the one or two hundred thousand dollars I have heard as an estimate. At a public meeting in 1990, I recalled my thinking at the time: "I got to wondering: Here's this little credit union, and here's Larry King, obviously in the highest reaches of the Republican Party.... And I just wondered, how does he do this supposedly on a salary of $16 thousand a year?"

Such conspicuous consumption as I had witnessed, earned Larry King the tag "flamboyant" in just about any mention of his name. The NeVA's civil suit against King, filed November 14, 1988 in the wake of the raid, put some price tags on his lifestyle. It itemized $4 million of King's personal expenditures, paid out of credit union funds during the previous thirteen months, including: $1 million in American Express bills, $148,000 to Old Market Limousine, $70,000 to Floral Con-

cepts, $61,000 to Mastercard, $39,000 to Citibank, $37,000 to himself, $27,000 to Omaha Jewelry, and so on.

• • •

As the disclosures began to flow, on how King's $2 million dollar credit union had tens of millions of dollars in deposits unaccounted for, and on the secret second set of books, I suggested to Senator Schmit that he talk to some other legislators about investigating whether some state laws were violated.

Why was I concerned? Because, from my experience as chairman of the Banking, Commerce, and Insurance Committee of the Legislature, I knew that with all the regulatory controls existing for a federally insured institution, it was impossible for such a theft to occur without cooperation by higher up officials. Larry King could only have accomplished this massive theft with the help or cooperation of regulatory officials or politicians at the highest levels. That meant that institutions of government must have been compromised.

Senator Schmit had his own reasons for thinking that a legislative probe of the Franklin collapse was in order. He had heard from friends of his in the black community, that Larry King spent money like a drunken sailor, but was not making any loans in the community.

When I discussed a possible investigation with Schmit, I had no idea that anything other than theft, and the possible protection of illegal financial transactions, would be involved. As the investigation was launched, no one, except possibly Senator Ernie Chambers, knew where it might lead.

• • •

On November 18, 1988 the Legislature passed Schmit's resolution in favor of an investigation. In front of special hearings of the Legislature's Executive Board, the strands of evidence against Larry King were finally pulled together, for the first time, before officials who would pay attention.

After the first session, on December 12, 1988, Senator

Chambers made a dramatic announcement about the probe. The investigation would go into not only financial wrongdoing, he said, but also the physical and sexual abuse of children by persons connected with Franklin. People holding official jobs might be affected, added Senator Schmit.

At the three and a half hour Executive Board hearing on December 19, 1988, Carol Stitt, Dennis Carlson, and Burrell Williams of the Foster Care Review Board summarized the abuse complaints centered around Franklin's top officer. They presented their files on the Webb foster home and on Loretta Smith.

> CARLSON: The nature of these allegations are something that is going to shock the Committee. They deal with cult activities, they deal with sacrifices of small children, they deal with sexual abuse, and there's a correlation between these two different reports. We have, the Boys' Town report ... prepared by a worker from Boys' Town named Julie Walters, ... (which) contains the allegations of the children that were in the Webb foster home, Nelly primarily. Years later, well, two years later, we have Loretta Smith in.Richard Young Hospital who's making allegations against Larry King and as far as we know there is no relationship between Nelly and Loretta Smith. ... Both reports talk about the Omaha Girls Club, both reports mention a specific individual who is the superintendent of schools....
>
> SENATOR REMMERS: [T[he question that came into mind, it's been in my mind since you've been testifying and I think you've answered part of it just now, is you're talking about about these abuses from children from Boys' Town and Girls' Club and so forth, now is there a common thread that goes over here to the Credit Union deal that we are investigating? In other words to the Franklin Credit Union? Is there a common thread there that kind of leads to that?
>
> CAROL STITT: Well, the common thread is Larry King.
>
> SENATOR REMMERS: Yes, that's what I mean. It all goes back to him? OK.
>
> CAROL STITT: Yes, he seems to be more the organizer, or the high-class pimp, I mean if that helps fit this together. ...

Stitt also clarified what she had written in her June 1988 letter to Attorney General Spire, about a Kansas City connection of Larry King. She testified that she had cross-checked with the Kansas City detective, who reportedly inquired of Kirstin Hallberg about when Nebraska was going to crack down on King. The officer, said Stitt, "confirmed that Larry King had been there, had contributed money to a group home and when he left, three boys came forward and said that they had been abused by him while he was there."

The Executive Board also received from the FCRB the handwritten report by Julie Walters, on her interview with the teenaged victims during 1986. In the December 21, 1988 *Omaha World-Herald,* reporter James Allen Flanery recounted a telephone interview with Walters at her home in another state, in which she told him how their testimony had seemed at first "too bizarre to be true." But the more experience she gained with troubled children, Walters added, "working in probation, I'm more sure than ever that there is more truth than not in their accounts. The conclusion I reached was the kids I spoke with were not lying."

What the senators heard at the closed December 19, 1988 meeting shook them to the bone. "The information brought tears to my eyes," Schmit said, according to the *Lincoln Journal. "I* do not cry easily and I was not the only person that was moved." Chambers echoed the witnesses' outrage about delays: "With this type of information it is inexcusable that action had not been taken of an investigative nature. People were not contacted that should have been. Leads were not followed up that should have been followed up. My feeling is that the whole thing is being sat upon and nothing was done."

The question of a cover-up of Franklin-linked crimes came up at the outset, in this way. Omaha Police Chief Wadman and state Attorney General Spire offered a lame protest. "Every step that should have been taken was taken," Wadman told the *Journal.* Spire said, "We did receive some sensitive information in July. My office acted promptly and professionally and nothing was sat on. I am confident that law enforcement-both federal and state-is doing its job in the situation.... "

The Legislature's Franklin committee hired its first investigator, former Lincoln policeman Jerry Lowe, in February 1989. Attorney Kirk Naylor came on as Special Counsel. On February 15, Lowe sent a memo to the committee on the results of his first comprehensive evaluation of the case, including its handling by law enforcement. Lowe wrote:

> This matter is indeed a complex and complicated one, commencing with the closing of the Franklin Credit Union ... and mushrooming into a situation where additional allegations (other than the financial improprieties) have arisen, including influence peddling, child abuse and neglect, child sexual abuse, pornography, substance abuse, homicide, and inaction and possibly malfeasance on the part of law enforcement agencies, public agencies, and public officials for events dating several years back. More importantly, there seems to be a growing public perception that many of the affected agencies and/or officials are participating in a cover-up.... The task which the Committee has undertaken will not be an easy one....
>
> The allegations regarding the exploitation of children are indeed disturbing. What appears to be documented cases of child abuse and sexual abuse dating back several years with no enforcement action being taken by the appropriate agencies is on its face, mind boggling.

In this and other early reports, Lowe made clear that every aspect of the Franklin case was politically hot. Larry King had become wealthy and influential thanks to quite a number of "big people," he commented. Moreover, Lowe reported, there were indications that King was involved in guns and money transfers into Nicaragua, of involvement by the CIA, and possibly "a White House connection." There appeared to be "some type of connection between the money missing [from Franklin], the crisis in the Savings and Loans, and the funneling of money to Haiti and Nicaragua."

Lowe wrote that there was evidence Omaha Police Chief

Robert Wadman had stayed at Larry King's residence in Washington, D.C.

Lowe retraced the leads contained in the documents assembled by the FCRB. In March, he interviewed Loretta Smith three times. In April, he talked with Cornelia (Nelly) Patterson, who had taken back her original name after she escaped from custody of the Webbs.

• • •

With Lowe's investigative reports in hand, the Franklin committee convened hearings. When some state officials were called before them, the senators met with a stone wall.

Testifying on June 22, 1989, Attorney General Spire appeared still unchastened. Just as his office had dallied in the face of Carol Stitt's plea for action on complaints against Larry King the year before, Spire now said about Franklin-linked child abuse, that "based on conclusions and reports of the FBI, the Omaha Police, and the Nebraska State Patrol, all three of those have concluded that the reports do not have substance.

Someone was working at cross-purposes outside the hearing room, as well.

While the Legislature's Franklin committee was getting started at the end of 1988, the *NCVA* selected a firm called Financial Advisory Group, of Council Bluffs, Iowa, to make its own determination about what had happened to Franklin's missing millions. FAG was a partnership formed by John Queen and Robert Kirchner, whose earlier appointments included the one they got from Governor Kerrey-state regulators to oversee the liquidation of the Commonwealth Savings and Loan. In their 1989-1990 audit of Franklin Credit Union, Queen and Kirchner would conclude that Larry King spent nearly all of it on flowers, limousines, gold watches, and his generally extravagant lifestyle.

Even as he proceeded with the audit of Franklin, Queen was serving during 1990 as deputy receiver for Commonwealth, overseeing the liquidation of the bank's remaining assets and

the disbursement of the proceeds. On August 14, his chief assistant in the receivership, Kent Johnson, was arrested by the FBI for stealing over a million dollars in Commonwealth funds. Although Queen's co-signature was on every check Johnson wrote to steal the money, Queen claimed that his name had been forged. His career, in any case, was tightly intertwined with Johnson's. Johnson worked for him in the Commonwealth receivership, on the Franklin audit, and at an Omaha corporation he owned, Phoenix Sign Corp. This was a venture Queen launched by buying up the assets of Globe Neon, a bankrupt firm. One of Queen's fellow holders of a $50,000 share of Globe Neon before it folded, was none other than Larry King!

Queen and Kirchner enjoyed the sympathy of investigator Jerry Lowe, who wrote in his February 15, 1989 case summary for the Franklin committee:

> A private consulting firm headed by Omaha residents John Queen and Bob Kirchner, both formerly associated with the receiver for Commonwealth Savings in Lincoln, Nebraska, was retained by the National Credit Union Association (NCUA), in early 1989 and given the responsibility to trace all the funds flowing into and out of the Franklin Credit Union. . . . I am familiar with both Mr. Queen and Mr. Kirchner due to my involvement as a Lincoln Police Department investigator in the Commonwealth matter. . . . I can personally attest to the thoroughness and capabilities of Mr. Queen and Mr. Kirchner and the people assisting them and believe an association with them would save us an enormous amount of time in following the money.

• • •

I have been Senator Loran Schmit's personal attorney for a number of years. When we were both senators, we frequently worked together on major issues. At other times, such as when we disagreed on the issue of telephone deregulation, we led opposite sides, and fought each other tooth and nail.

During the early months of the legislative investigation of Franklin, I personally had serious doubts as to the validity of

what was being alleged. I provided a minimum of legal advice to Senator Schmit during this period, but he did insist that I be available to provide him such advice.

Schmit had the experience of a previous investigation, involving drug-related matters and the State Patrol, which ended up with him and other senators, including myself, being sued by some of the individuals investigated. He wanted to make sure that he made no error that would cause any legal liability for him. Even though we had won that earlier suit against us, Senator Schmit wanted to exercise all caution, to protect himself from lawsuits. Therefore, like many other state and national politicians, he quite properly had private legal counsel-me.

In the spring of 1989, after the Franklin committee had been conducting investigations for some time, Senator Schmit sought my legal advice. He wanted to know the legal liability involved, if he supported a planned report of the committee, which was to suggest that there was child abuse committed by prominent individuals-not to be named-which had not been properly investigated by agencies of government.

I asked for no names and he provided no names of the individuals he was talking about. **In** point of fact, there were enough rumors floating in the legislative corridors and on the streets of Omaha, that at least a dozen prominent persons could have been the subject of these accusations.

I gave him the same advice then, that I would give now: "Accusations of child abuse are the worst accusations you can make against an individual. That is because, no matter what the truth of the matter, once the accusation is made, it will never be able to be rubbed completely off, even if the individual accused is as innocent and pure as can be. Therefore, before you sign your name to anything that suggests that there is serious child abuse or before you suggest that an agency of government has failed in its duty to find or investigate child abuse, make sure you have the smoking gun that establishes that is what actually occurred. Not just for your legal protection, but because that is the right thing to do. To falsely accuse of child abuse is a terrible thing. To cover up child abuse, is worse than falsely accusing."

I had my own personal experience of a false accusation of child abuse, which still bums in my soul. It was also a hideous example of the use of political office to intimidate, silence or destroy political enemies.

The year was 1984, early January. I had announced my intention to run for the United States Senate. As chairman of the Legislature's Banking Committee, I was actively seeking to investigate the collapse of Commonwealth Savings, which had just occurred. In an Associated Press listing of the ten most powerful people in Nebraska, as ranked by media editors and publishers, I was number 5, behind the governor, U.S. Senator J.J. Exon, *Omaha World-Herald* publisher Harold Andersen, and University of Nebraska President Ronald Roskens. Polls showed me as the leading candidate for the Republican senatorial nomination.

Then, I received a message from Republican Party leaders. It was simple: "GOP strategists at the highest levels believe this is the year the Republicans can beat J.J. Exon. Opinion poll analysis shows that such a victory can only come, if the candidate is a woman and has no political 'baggage.' (Remember, 1984 was the year of Democrat Geraldine Ferraro's candidacy for U.S. Vice President, the 'Year of the Woman' in politics.) Republican leaders are fearful that you, John DeCamp, will be able to win the primary, but because of 'baggage' and controversiality, you will not beat Exon in November. Therefore, Republican leaders ask you to withdraw from the primary. If you do not drop out voluntarily, you will have to be stopped some other way. And stopped you will be, because this race means so much to Republican leadership, at the highest levels in Washington."

I did not listen. I continued to campaign for the Senate seat.

Shortly thereafter, a tenant in one of my apartments, who was delinquent on her rent, lodged an anonymous complaint to the Nebraska Department of Social Services. She charged that I and my wife had "abused" my young daughter when she was five years old. A picture in a family photo album, showing my daughter in a pose like the Coppertone baby ads, was the basis for the complaint.

Two investigations conducted immediately, one by the DSS and one by the Lincoln Police, found there was no child abuse and so reported.

But a County Attorney, Mike Heavican, took matters into his own hands. Heavican was on the Republican search committee for a senatorial candidate, which ultimately picked a woman with no "baggage," and she lost to Exon. He also was someone whose name had come up as my Senate Banking Committee attempted to start probing the Commonwealth and State Security matters, as someone who may have granted illegal tax favors to involved parties.

Heavican filed a petition, alleging that I and my wife had abused our daughter in the way we were educating and raising her. It was a civil, not a criminal, filing, but I am sure it was designed to gain statewide publicity.

Heavican's action also exemplified how a public position can be abused. It comes as a shock to most Americans, that the lowliest county attorney has absolute immunity when he files complaints or charges against somebody, even if he does so knowing them to be false. His automatic immunity is supposed to protect the prosecutor, as an institution of government, from being deterred from effective action by the specter of future lawsuits. The abuse of this institutional privilege can be terribly destructive.

Months of investigation resulted in a legal opinion from Judge W.W. Nuernberger, that there was *no child abuse.* Nuernberger concluded that if Mr. and Mrs. John DeCamp were guilty of child abuse, then so were a lot of families and so was the late President Kennedy, and perhaps every family in Nebraska would have to destroy its photo albums, if I were considered guilty of anything.

While the investigation was under way, media coverage continued to smear my name with the charges. I maintained that the phantom child abuse was concocted by Heavican, using the County Attorney's office, for the political purposes of knocking me out of the Senate race and stopping my Commonwealth/State Security investigation. Six years after these horrible events, my suspicions were confirmed.

On March 17, 1990, the *Kansas City Star* reported on the DeCamp child abuse allegation:

> ... Roland Luedtke, a former lieutenant governor and the mayor of Lincoln from 1983 to 1987, launched his own review of the charges. "The report that came back to me was that [DeCamp] was pure as the driven snow," Luedtke said, but, he added, whoever may have had it in their mind to get rid of DeCamp "accomplished their purpose."

My 1984 ordeal came to mind in the spring of 1989, as I insisted to Senator Schmit that he exercise caution in the Franklin case.

• • •

Senator Schmit offered an amendment to the committee report, written by himself, which stated, in essence, that at this point in the investigation, the legislative committee did not have the smoking gun that would establish the truth of any of the child abuse allegations or the failure of institutions of government.

In July 1989, a controversy broke out on the Franklin committee, over Schmit's amendment and the course of the investigation. Some members maintained that Senator Schmit was not doing enough to follow up the child abuse. Schmit rejoined that the information gathered thus far by Lowe, while useful, was mostly second-hand, and that the committee should follow the advice he had been given by a friend in law enforcement: "Follow the money trail." There is almost no important crime that can be committed, said Schmit, echoing his friend's advice, without spending money, and spending money leaves a paper trail. It should be possible to move from hearsay to court-admissable evidence such as checks, credit card receipts, and flight manifests.

Senator Chambers and Senator McFarland departed from the committee. Investigator Lowe and Counsel Naylor resigned.

Schmit and the remaining four other members of the Franklin committee-three farmers, a plumber and a grandmother, as

Schmit described them-hired private investigator Gary Caradori, a former state patrolman, to replace Lowe in August.

In a review of his work for the committee, Caradori recalled his first impressions:

> From the onset it was apparent that I was up against a barrier regarding mistrust of the Franklin Legislative Committee. I was told repeatedly that people were afraid to divulge any information, not only because of retribution of the alleged perpetrators, but also because they feared they would be publicly discredited by the *Omaha World-Herald.* People were also becoming discouraged by the lack of progress made thus far on the investigation and they translated this to mean "cover up."
>
> Initially, the reports which Mr. Lowe had generated were reviewed in detail. It was evident that while there were a large amount of reports generated, that very little of substance had been gained by him regarding firsthand information. It was then decided that, while secondhand information had been valuable in that it presented an idea of the possible scope of abuse going on, that it was more important to locate individuals who had actually been abused and participated in the various activities that comprise this case.

CHAPTER 8

"SOMEBODY HAS TO TELL THE STORY"

Caradori did find victims who would talk. Four of them allowed him to videotape their stories, in nearly 30 hours of sessions during late 1989 and early 1990. These interviews contained detailed allegations of sexual abuse, drug usage, pornography and other crimes by prominent Omaha citizens. Implicated, among others, were individuals already named by Nelly and Kimberly Webb, Brenda Parker, and Loretta Smith, as abusers or pornographers: Rusty Nelson, Deward Finch, Larry King.

What these victim-witnesses related became the central matter of the Franklin case, but nobody except for a few law enforcement personnel, state senators, and grand jury members has viewed the Caradori tapes. Snippets were aired on television in Omaha. With their contents largely unpublicized, the tapes became a target of speculation and denunciation, rumor and doubt.

The interviews are reported here for the first time in considerable detail. The excerpts that follow are from Caradori's written precis of the interviews, which include his notes on discrepancies in the testimony, corroborative details, and ideas for follow-up investigation.

• • •

On October 30, 1989, Gary Caradori and his assistant Karen Ormiston went to the Women's Reformatory in York, Nebraska, to interview 21-year-old Alisha Owen, who was incarcerated there on a bad-check conviction. Caradori had had

Owen's name on file for some months, as a potential lead. He noted in his daily report for October 30:

> Ms. Owens [sic] was informed of the purpose of our visit and was asked for her cooperation in the matter. Ms. Owens indicated, after a three-hour interview, that she had been heavily involved with various individuals in Omaha, including former members of the Franklin Credit Union. She indicated that she was also involved with other minors involved in pornography and homosexual acts involving various people in Omaha. Several of the individuals she mentioned were Alan Baer, Harold Andersen, and also former Police Chief Robert Wadman, who had participated in many parties. It should be noted that Alisha also indicated that Mr. Wadman is a pedophile.

Contrary to impressions that the *Omaha World-Herald* tried to convey, Alisha Owen not only did not seek out Caradori, but she told him only a fraction of the story at that first meeting. As she later described to the legislative Franklin committee, she was extremely reluctant to get involved at all. After Caradori left, she contacted the prison psychiatrist, who directed her to Superintendent Lawrence Wayne. He advised her to tell the truth and to cooperate with the Franklin committee.

Caradori's daily notes for November 4, 1989 record what happened next:

> Upon arriving from out-of-state on the above date, this writer received word that Alisha Owens had called this writer in an attempt to reach me regarding a meeting that I had conducted with her previously. Upon receiving this information, arrangements were made to speak with Alisha by telephone. '"
>
> Alisha went on to state that she did not relate to me all of her experiences during the first time that we had met because she was "unsure" of this writer. She stated that she now wanted to come forward with the information that she had previously withheld. Specifically, she indicated that she was one of the minors involved in flights to other states, and she knew of other minors who were on these flights also.

On November 7, Caradori and Ormiston proceeded to York prison and took a sworn video statement from Alisha. The taping lasted from 11:38 a.m. until 10:00 p.m. In addition to the video record, Caradori made an annotated transcript, which is excerpted here.

Alisha Owens [sic]

After pursuing many leads, on October 30, 1989, this writer contacted Alisha Owens at the Women's Reformatory in York Nebraska. I spoke with Alisha for approximately three hours, during which time she indicated that she had been heavily involved in pornographic and sexual activity with various individuals in Omaha, including former personnel of the Franklin Credit Union. During this discussion with Ms. Owens she initially indicated that homosexual activities also occurred involving Alan Baer, Harold Anderson [sic] and Robert Wadman.

It should be noted that Ms. Owens remitted this information without being directly questioned about these specific individuals.... Following is the information gained from Alisha during the videotaped statement [of Nov.7].

During the course of the statement, Alisha stated that she first became involved with Larry King in August of 1983. Alisha was 14 years old at this time. She indicated that she met Larry King through some boys from Boys' Town, among them Mark Powers*. Mark had invited her to a party that next Friday night.

This first party was held in August of 1983 at a Twin Towers penthouse. Alisha arrived with Troy Boner and Mark Powers at approximately 10:00 p.m. in a car that Troy was driving. Present when they arrived at the party were Larry King, Bob Wadman, Alan Baer, Harold Anderson, and other adults that Alisha did not identify at this time. ... Alisha estimated that there were approximately six adults and 20 minors. Mark Powers had told Alisha prior to going to the party that there would be marijuana, alcohol, and so much cocaine available at this party that "she would think it's snowing." ... Alisha stated that the party was held at Alfie Allen's apartment in this building....

There was a "professionally made" pornographic tape showing portraying two males, approximately age 17, engaging in homosexual acts.

Alisha observed Larry King and Larry (Last name unknown [Lnuk], black youth) going into one of the bedrooms. She observed later when the black youth emerged from the bedroom that he was tucking in his shirt and fastening his pants. Alisha also observed Alfie Allen going in and out of the bedroom numerous times. She observed a young boy approximately 14 years old sitting on Harold Anderson's lap. She then observed this boy and Harold Anderson going into one of the bedrooms.

Alisha observed Alan Baer using "two lines" of cocaine and smoking marijuana....

A young boy was sitting on Harold Anderson's lap with his pants undone. He was stroking the child's penis. The name of the child is unknown....

A third party occurred on the 21st or 22nd of September, 1983, at the same Twin Towers apartment. Alisha had turned 15 on September 18th. Present at this party were Troy Boner, Alan Baer, Robert Wadman, Mark Powers, Larry King, Larry (Lnuk), Danny King, and Harold Anderson.

Harold Anderson was "with" Danny King.

On the above evening, Robert Wadman told Alisha that she was pretty and asked her if she was wearing anything underneath her clothing. He asked her if she was wearing a bra. Sometime around 10:00 to 12:00 p.m., she was sitting on his lap. He indicated to Alisha that he knew she wasn't a virgin and he then felt her breasts. He told her that she had nice breasts. He felt her genitals and unzipped the zipper to the jumpsuit she was wearing. She asked him to stop and he grabbed her wrist very tightly and twisted her wrist.

He then removed her clothing and asked her if she knew what fellatio was. He said that he would show her what it was. He then instructed her to perform oral sex. Robert Wadman's pants and underwear were down. He pinched her on the breasts. She was kneeling on a cushion on the floor and he was stroking her hair and her breasts, while she was performing oral sex, and he was also grabbing her head and forcing her to perform oral sex on him.... After this sexual

activity, she began to cry and went to the bathroom where she vomited.

Wadman then told her that he would buy her a new dress. . . . While at the French Cafe, Wadman gave her this dress and said that he wanted to show her the wine cellar. . . . She removed her clothing and put on the dress. He said that she would look better without the dress so she took off the dress and he removed her panties and sat her on top of a table and spread her legs. He then began touching her and she was crying because she was afraid that he would rape her. He masturbated and ejaculated on her. When he ejaculated, she physically drew back which made Wadman very angry. . . .

She stated that during parties sexual encounters would occur between adult males and minor males. Usually present at these "parties" were Larry King, Robert Wadman, Gene Mahoney, Alan Baer, Peter Citron, Harold Anderson, and the superintendent of a school. . . .

She told me that a photograph was taken of her at a later party while she was tied up. It is probable that the photograph was taken by Rusty Nelson. She describes Rusty Nelson as having blond hair, average build, approximately 27 years old, and that he has acne scars on his face. . . . Reference group sex, photos were taken of the group sex encounters by Larry King and the photographer, Rusty Nelson. She mentions that her hands were handcuffed and her feet were tied up. . . .

She said that Alan Baer "cruises" the Old Market area for young boys, then takes them back to his office where he has them run naked on a treadmill while he watches them. This has been corroborated by Troy Boner who did perform this activity for Alan Baer. . . .

She states that she witnessed a young boy sitting on Bob Wadman's lap at a party and that he had his hands between the boy's legs. . . .

She also discussed the activities of Harold Anderson. She said that he likes young boys and that his "regular" boy is named Jeremy (Last name unknown) and that he was approximately 14 years old when she witnessed them together. She said that Harold Anderson gives money to boys and that she has seen young boys performing oral sex on

him. She stated that she has witnessed Danny King performing oral sex on him. . . .

I asked her to elaborate on the superintendent she mentioned as attending the "parties." She said that he lives approximately 40 miles from Omaha, is gay, older, balding, has bad teeth, and stands approximately 6'. She stated that this individual had sex with Troy Boner at the Twin Towers apartment and that he gave money to Troy for this....

Corroboration: You will later see that another witness, Danny King, identifies Deward Finch, former superintendent of the Fort Calhoun High School as an individual who he had sex with on many occasions. He also fits the description as related by Alisha.

Other information from Alisha was that Troy Boner and Danny King were taken to Council Bluffs by adult males for sexual purposes.

Corroboration: Troy Boner and Danny King related these events in detail in their respective videotaped statements.

Alisha also describes a forced sexual encounter which occurred at the French Cafe in August of 1985. Present were five boys from Boys Town, Tom McKinney [sic], and Judge Theodore Carlson, among others. Larry (Lnuk) told her that "someone is waiting downstairs and you'd better be good." She performed oral sex on Judge Carlson, and the encounter lasted approximately 20 minutes....

It should be mentioned at this time that the individual identified as Larry (Lnuk) is known as Larry King's "henchman". I have been unable to determine his last name. It wasn't usual for the individuals in this group to divulge their last names, and it was also common to use aliases....

Please note that Alisha became very upset when discussing her sexual activities with Bob Wadman, and with other individuals. The video was stopped several times so that she could compose herself.

She said that Wadman had told her that Larry King "owes him a lot" and that had done a lot for Larry King." ...

She said that she was told that [Omaha Mayor] PJ. Morgan supplies a lot of drugs....

Alisha took numerous plane trips at the direction of Larry King for sexual purposes. These trips include trips to Los

Angeles, Kansas City, Pasadena, CA. On these flights were other minors. Information regarding these flights is as follows: ...

Private Flights:

The first private flight that Alisha was on occurred in March of 1984.... The plane landed at a small airport in California.... Upon their arrival, Danny and Alisha were taken to an Embassy Suites type motel, and two businessmen came into their room. One man had sex with Danny, and one man had sex with Alisha. They received no money. Please note that she said that Larry King had ordered her to take this trip.

The man that Alisha had sex with she describes as tremely weird." He hurt her, forced her to have anal sex, slapped her and threw her around. He took out a knife and threatened her if she didn't perform oral sex on him, and threatened to cut off her nipples. She was afraid and crying.

She stated that when the men finally left, that they were both very upset. She described Danny as being very upset and angry. Their ordeal with these two men lasted approximately six hours. Also, they were both afraid to take a shower for fear that the men would come back....

Corroboration: Troy indicates in his video statement that Alisha, after this ordeal, was extremely upset and "smelled" and was a "mess." ...

When Alisha was asked who participated and who was aware of the transportation of kids across state lines for sexual purposes, she said that Larry King and Alan Baer were aware of this. It is probable that other adults were also aware of this. She stated that Bob Kerry [sic] knew about these activities and that Larry (Lnuk) had told her this. Larry (Lnuk) also indicated that Bob Kerry knew about the closing of the Franklin Credit Union before it fell.

Other issues discussed regarding Bob Kerry consisted of Alisha's statements that she had a friend who works for Dixon and Dixon law firm who is responsible for maintaining the keys to the file room. Her name is Jackie Compton, and she has told Alisha that there are various documents with Bob Kerry's signature on them that relate to the Commonwealth ordeal. This is explained in detail in the first video taped statement. ...

Alisha discusses the friendship between Judge Carlson and Tom McKinney, Assistant Douglas County Attorney. . . . She stated that McKinney and Carlson are also involved in drug activity . . . .

She also knows Peggy* West, the daughter of Gary West who is a good friend of Larry King's. She said that Peggy may have also been exploited and/or is aware of these activities. She is also acquainted with Gary West and indicated that he is a bartender at the Max Bar in Omaha.

When questioned about satanic cult activity, she said that Troy Boner and Danny King were involved in this activity, and that at one time Danny King was extremely "anti-God." . . .

She also mentioned a house on Leavenworth where there is, or was, a pentagram drawn on the kitchen floor. She also saw satanic pictures on the walls of this house . . . . In addition she stated that she saw Bob Wadman coming out of this house on one occasion.

Corroboration: Loretta Smith mentioned that a person actively involved in cult activity was a male identified as Kings Horses. She [Alisha] said that Larry (Lnuk) who wast is Larry King's "henchman" is known as Kings Horses.

She also indicated that she knows an individual identified as James Teddy Broom. She describes him as black, with greasy hair, a flat nose, slitted eyes, and that he "walks funny." Said that he does the "dirty work" for Larry (Lnuk).

Corroboration: Loretta indicates that Teddy Broom was instrumental in satanic cult activity, and threatened her if she said anything about what happened at the meetings. Loretta Smith also indicated that Teddy Broom raped her mother, Jackie Smith*, as a warning to her. . . .

She knows an individual named Frank Kessler who she thought was "very strange" and who always talked about the occult, but wanted to get out of it.

You will also see a transcript of a taped inteview from Lisa Sutherland*, who discussed satanic activity and teenage prostitution in Omaha. She too mentions Frank Kessler as being involved in cult activity.

She also knew of a social worker identified as Florence Davis who may be associated with this group of people. She stated that Larry King could "get anybody out of anything"

by offering them bogus jobs. It is also possible that Florence Davis may be involved in "funneling kids" into certain foster homes. See a transcribed interview with Millie Boggs* the Director for the Omaha Children's Home for further information regarding Florence Davis....

Caradori filed a back-up report for this part of the precis, entitled "Taped conversation with Gary A. Caradori and Millie Boggs."

GC: But I'm also interested in when I asked you about what's her name, she was living "high on the hog."

MB: Florence Davis?

GC: Florence Davis.

MB: See, I'm not. ... Let me tell you a little bit about what I know about Florence. I mean, Florence just used to be a line worker. I mean she was a worker like I am.

GC: I want you to talk about that because her name has come up. Just because a person's name has come up doesn't make you guilty either.

MB: No.

GC: And maybe it came up because she had the position at the time. And doggone it, I'm going to get her pulled on the carpet and have her explain herself from back then.

MB: You'll never get her back here.

GC: A subpoena might bring her back.

MB: Well maybe. I hear she's in San Francisco. I don't know. All of a sudden one day she was just there and the next day she's gone. And nobody can understand how Florence gave up this good job being a supervisor which would, I think had always been her goal. ...

In late June of 1983 I attended a meeting at the state with Florence Davis, the McArthur children's worker, and Lloyd Linquist, the permanency planner. Basically, the purpose of this meeting was to tell me that the state would not change their minds and that they felt they were in a better position to judge what the McArthur children needed, and that they were going to proceed with adoptive plans of placing the children with the Webb family in Fort Calhoun.

A few days later I went with Florence Davis to the Webb home, as Florence thought I would feel better about the placement if I had the opportunity to meet the Webbs. Quite to the contrary, after meeting with Mr. and Mrs. Webb, I was more concerned than ever as I did not feel that this was a proper home for these three children....

Something that I think is extremely suspicious is that about the time that the King mess was surfacing, Florence Davis suddenly left the state, almost overnight, and supposedly is living in California. A short time later, Lloyd Linquist went on sick leave and was gone for many months. And then about the time he was to return, he also resigned. While he was on leave I understand that he took a trip to Tahiti. I think personally that Lloyd Linquist and Florence Davis know a lot about the situation regarding the abuse of these children and they should be found and questioned....

One time when Florence was working for the state, I believe before she became a supervisor, I noticed that she declared bankruptcy while she was living in her new condo and had her new car. However, after that whenever I would see Florence it seemed like she was dressed extremely well and did not appear to have any monetary worries, although I am not a friend of Florence's and I did nothing with her socially.

Lloyd Linquist also was impeccably dressed, although someone told me that he had only rented a room at the Grace Bible Institute and actually didn't even have an apartment. ... I thought it was interesting that Lloyd could take trips to Europe which I know that he did in the years that he was a permanency planner, and other exotic vacations on the salary that he was paid by NDSS.

Caradori's summary of the testimony from Alisha resumed:

During the second video taped statement, [Alisha] again discussed the pornography aspect of this case. She said that Rusty Nelson develops his own photographs and that he would more than likely have the negatives of the group and individual pornographic photos, possibly to blackmail Larry King at a later date. She reiterated that Rusty Nelson and Larry King would "direct" these photographic sessions. She said that she would cry and try to get out of participating

in these sessions, but she would be "slapped around" if she didn't participate....

She also states that Alfie Allen had been given a Mercedes Benz by Larry King, and that Alfie was very upset when the money stopped coming in because of the closing of the Franklin Credit Union....

She again discussed the parentage of her child. She said that she is 99.9 percent sure that her child is Bob Wadman's, and that conception occurred in August of 1984. She had sexual intercourse with him on August 8th, August 10th, August 17th, and August 22nd. All of these sexual encounters occurred at the Starlight Motel, with the exception of August 10th which occurred at the Twin Towers apartment. ...

Caradori recommended 62 individuals and documents to be subpoenaed on the basis of Alisha Owen's testimony. He finished the precis with a list of alleged perpetrators, named by her:

1. Larry King
2. Bob Wadman
3. Harold Anderson
4. Alan Baer
5. Deward Finch
6. Peter Citron
7. Judge Theodore Carlson

• • •

Owen provided Caradori the name of Troy Boner as a victim-witness who could testify on the same events. After beginning a search for Boner, Caradori received a telephone call from him at 4:40 a.m. on November 25, 1989. From 4:30 p.m. later that same day, until 10:22 p.m., Troy Boner told his story.

Troy Boner

... Troy then stated that he met Larry King in July of 1984. He stated that Alan Baer had talked to Larry King about

him, so Larry King approached him in July of 1984 in The Max Bar and grabbed Troy's crotch....

Since it was apparent that Troy had met Alan Baer before meeting Larry King, I asked him when he first met Alan Baer. He said that he first met him in August of 1983 through a friend of his named Tim Prescott*. He said that Tim picked him up in Alan Baer's car and told him how he could make some money. Tim took Troy to Alan Baer's residence in the Twin Towers which Troy stated was apartment #201....

He said that he knew he was there so Alan Baer could get acquainted with him, and so he could make some money. He thought that he would let Alan Baer perform oral sex on him for him because Tim Prescott had told him what the "arrangements" would be....

He said that he walked back to Alan Baer's apartment later that afternoon at Alan Baer's request. Alan met him at the door in a yellow Ralph Lauren bathrobe. Alan Baer asked him to get undressed. (Troy stated that he thought he was going to get $50.00.) He started undressing in the hallway and Alan Baer asked him to go into the bedroom. Alan Baer then got undressed and a sexual encounter ensued, including mutual masturbation and oral sex. After this sexual encounter, they took a shower together and he received $400.00 in fifty-dollar bills. Alan Baer told him to call him that next Tuesday.

Troy met with Alan Baer again five days later, after Troy had called him from his residence in Council Bluffs to make the arrangements.

Corroboration: Get the telephone records for his residence in Council Bluffs at this time....

On February 5, 1984, Alan Baer took Troy and another young kid to Des Moines, Iowa. The other boy's name was Shawn (Lnuk) and he was approximately 12 to 13 years old. They drove to Des Moines in a tan Mercedes, which Troy thought might possibly be rented. They stayed at the Savoy Hotel in downtown Des Moines. Troy and Shawn stayed in the room at the hotel while Alan Baer attended some business meetings. The three of them had several sexual encounters while in the hotel. At one point, Troy left the hotel and upon returning found Alan Baer asleep holding Shawn.

Troy's mother had filed a missing persons report while

he was in Des Moines. He then called the mother of his girlfriend and had her pick him up in Des Moines. He left without Alan Baer's knowledge.

Corroboration: Check for a tan Mercedes possibly leased! rented to Alan at this time. Check to see if Loni Boner did file a missing persons report at that time. Who was Troy's girlfriend at that time? Check her and her mother to see if they did pick up Troy in Des Moines. Check the hotel records at the Savoy Hotel for that time period....

In July of 1984 Troy was approached by Larry King at the Max Bar. Larry knew what Troy looked like from the pictures he had received from Alan Baer. Larry King grabbed his crotch while at the bar. Please note that he was a minor at this time....

Larry King then had Troy move into the Travel Lodge Inn. ... During this three weeks, Larry would stop by at various times, usually in the afternoon, for sex with him. They would perform oral sex on each other, and Larry King performed anal sex on Troy. Larry King also wanted Troy to urinate on him in the bathtub, which he did....

In May of 1985 he [Troy] talked with Danny King about how Danny could make some money. Danny initially objected and said he did not want to get involved, but he later changed his mind. Troy had also told Alan Baer about Danny King. Troy then took Danny to Alan's apartment at the Twin Towers during which time Alan Baer asked Danny some questions about himself. Alan Baer then told him [Troy] to leave. He waited for approximately three hours before Danny came out of the apartment, and Danny showed him $300 that he said Alan Baer had given him. Danny said no sexual activity went on, but Troy stated that he later found out that Alan had anal sex with Danny.

In June or July of 1985, he went to a party where a 15-year old boy was in the center of the room with his pants down. An adult male was inserting beads into the young boy's rectum. Other adult men were seated around the young boy masturbating. Troy was ordered at this party to play with the young boy's genitals.

He stated that he thought the adult male who was inserting the beads into the young boy's rectum was a police officer. An individual named Mark* (Last name unknown) had told

him that this adult male was a police officer. The alleged police officer masturbated on the young boy in the center of the room....

Troy also stated that an individual he identified as PJ. Morgan was there, also masturbating while the young boy was being exploited in the middle of the floor. ...

He stated that he met Alisha Owens in February or March of 1984. He stated that Alisha did lose her virginity with him, and that he did introduce her to Bob Wadman at a party held in an office in the Woodmen Tower....

When asked for further information about Bob Wadman, he stated that he likes to have sex with young kids and that in addition to Alisha Owens, there was another young girl he was involved with identified as having the last name of Hovel*, who was a runaway from Chicago. He stated that the last time he saw this girl was in May of 1986.

He stated that although he did not take any trips with Wadman, that Wadman did take trips with Larry King....

He said that [the] reason he went on this flight was to have sex with an individual named Ron Gilbert. He stated that Ron Gilbert is a movie producer for a television series. He stated that he received no money for having sex with Ron Gilbert, and that he and Larry King also had sex while on this trip....

The next trip occurred in a private plane to California. Present were Troy, Danny King, Alisha Owens, two smaller kids, and Larry King.... he said that he knew Danny and Alisha were going to be used for sexual purposes, even though neither one of these individuals wanted to go. The two smaller unidentified kids got dropped off by Larry King and Troy at two different locations. He stated that he believes that these two kids were "sold." ...

He stated that Ron Gilbert, the television producer from California, is also involved in making pornographic movies. He described Ron Gilbert as an older, Jewish man.

Troy also discusses Robert Andreson [sic] having a collection of pornographic photographs. He feels that this individual works for Union Pacific Railroad and that he lives in Lavista, NE....

He also stated that the following individuals supplied illegal drugs:

Larry King
Alan Baer
David (Lnuk)
John Points
Bob Wadman
Mark* (Lnuk)

Troy also stated that Bob Wadman brought two grams of cocaine to the party in North Omaha....

Troy stated that Claire (Lnuk), Alan Baer's secretary, would set up "appointments" with kids for Alan Baer. He described Claire as an older woman, petite, with gray hair that she wore in a bun. Troy stated that Claire knew who he was.

He stated that Larry King and Bob Wadman and a couple of other men took a trip somewhere and with them were two young boys. He stated that the two young boys did not return from the trip....

When asked what other kids were involved in these activities, he stated the following:

Rusty (Lnuk)
Danny King
Alisha Owens
(Fnuk) Hovel*
[three others]

On December 4, 1989 and December 5, 1989, I took Troy to the Omaha, Nebraska, and Council Bluffs, Iowa, areas in order to identify the various locations he made statements about in his videotaped statement. See Exhibit PH-I for the photographs and his identification of these locations. See T-18 for the daily reports covering these two days.

On December 22, 1989, I video taped Troy again for corrections that he wanted to make reference certain details in his first video taped statement. ...

It is recommended that the following individuals and! or documents be subpoenaed reference the statements and allegations made by Troy BONER. [60 names and references are listed.]

Perpetrators:
Alan Baer
Larry King

P.J. Morgan
Bob Wadman
Ron Gilbert
Henry (Lnuk)
Bob Andresen
[two others]

• •

On December 3, Caradori taped a third victim-witness.

Danny King

This writer telephoned Danny King at the Residence Inn and, along with staff member Karen J. Ormiston, proceeded to this facility . . .

At approximately 9:32 a.m. the interview began with James Daniel King in room 422 at the Residence Inn. Please note that approximately five hours of video was completed. It was quite apparent to this writer that it was very difficult for Danny to divulge the events of his past. ...

It is apparent that there are some discrepancies between the statement of Alisha Owens and that of Danny King, however this writer feels that Danny was heavily involved with drugs during this time period and wasn't quite sure as to certain details. As a matter of fact, Danny did not know what month follows December. ...

At this time, Danny indicated that he was relieved and wanted to "go forward." It is this writer's opinion that Danny is finally coming to grips with reality. He also indicated that this is the first time he was ever told anyone about the events that have happened to him.

From Danny King's videotape:

Danny said that he first met Alan Baer toward the end of 1983. This would have made Danny approximately 13 to 14 years old. He met Alan Baer through Troy Boner. ...

Danny met with A approximately two weeks later. A and Danny drank schnapps and both participated in oral sex. Danny received 50.00 from A. The time was after school

at approximately 5 p.m. He would have been 13 or 14. This occurred at A's residence....

Danny then saw A for approximately seven months, every week. The same events would occur as stated above....

In April of]984 Danny met Larry King at A's residence. Cocaine was used by A and Danny. LK and Danny then went into the bedroom. Danny was lying on the bed and LK had anal sex with Danny. It hurt Danny and Danny made him stop. Danny then gave LK oral sex but spit LK's ejaculation. LK then hit Danny with a shoe on the side of the head because he did not swallow it. Danny received no money for this occurrence....

At this time Danny started seeing A again and A introduced Danny to "shooting up" cocaine. A gave him a shot in the arm and Danny got sick. A shot up also. Both participated in oral sex and Danny received $50.00....

Danny mentioned an individual named Larry, Jr. who is LK's righthand man....

When shown photographs, Danny identified Deward Finch as being "Chuck" who Danny had engaged in sex with quite a few times.

Perpetrators:
Larry King
Alan Baer
Deward Finch
Bob Andreson [sic]
Gary (Lnuk)

• • •

At a press conference on December 18,1989, Senator Schmit announced that he had obtained videotaped testimony from three victim-witnesses in the Franklin case. It had been viewed by himself and the other members of the Franklin committee, Senators Bernice Labedz, Dan Lynch, Jerome Warner and Dennis Baack. "Members of our committee are dismayed," Schmit wrote in a letter to Attorney General Spire, released at the press conference, "by the fact that no state or federal investigative bodies interviewed any of these new witnesses we have, even though they were discovered by our investigative efforts

after a fairly short time and with a very small budget. ... It is the opinion of all committee members that the activities described and the personalities involved scream out for action, whether statute of limitations problems are involved or not. . . . As a result of the new evidence and new investigations, we have all become very, very concerned."

Schmit expressed his personal inclination to release the tapes *in toto,* for the sake of "the safety of our witnesses" and a speedy investigation. He abided by the committee consensus, however, to hold them back.

By December 1989, local, state and federal law enforcement had received copies of the videotapes of Alisha Owen, Troy Boner, and Danny King. Some officials, notably Douglas County Sheriff Dick Roth, said they believed the victim-witnesses. After watching five hours of the tapes, the Associated Press reported in February 1990, Roth "said he found the witnesses' statements to be credible." But there was no apparent move toward prosecutions.

CHAPTER 9

THE DECAMP MEMO

On January 18, 1990, I released a document that soon became infamous as "the DeCamp memo." For the first time, the names of prominent alleged perpetrators were public.

A lot has been written about that memo, much of it full of untruths and distortions. What follows is the true story of the DeCamp memo and the events leading up to it.

In the spring of 1989, after the first child abuse stories surfaced, I recommended to Senator Loran Schmit that he go directly to the FBI in Omaha to discuss the very serious allegations being made against Police Chief Robert Wadman by various individuals. This was before anybody even knew that Alisha Owen or other victim-witnesses existed and, of course, before Alisha Owen's allegations against Robert Wadman were made.

This legal advice of mine to Senator Schmit was in response to his question as to how to handle things, when law enforcement officials themselves were being accused of impropriety.

"Go to the highest authority you can, *above* the authority who is being accused," I told him.

Senator Schmit insisted I go with him to this meeting, as his personal attorney. I agreed to go, but on condition that he first meet one-on-one with the regional head of the FBI, Nick O'Hara, without me present.

He did meet with O'Hara for about hour. Then I was called into the room. It was only at urne, through discussion, that I learned that the individual in question was former Omaha Police Chief Robert Wadman.

In brutal language and with the most somber demeanor possible, Mr. O'Hara made it clear that probably his closest

friend in the world was Police Chief Robert Wadman, and that anyone who would dare to accuse Robert Wadman of impropriety had better realize that in accusing Wadman, they were effectively taking on Nick O'Hara and the FBI.

I realized instantly, that my advice to Senator Schmit may have been faulty. How could I have known in advance, that the head of the FBI and the former chief were so intimate in their business and personal relationships?

There was tension in the air. I made a point of saying that I also was sure that all these accusations-whatever they were-had to be nonsense. I pointed out that my experience as a public official, a senator for sixteen years, made me appreciate the fact that it is easy to accuse a public official and darned difficult for one to defend himself, since the accusations are immediately put on the front page of the paper and broadcast as the lead story on the evening TV news.

But, as if to make a point that both I and Senator Schmit had better understand how serious it was for anyone to come to the FBI and raise questions about Robert Wadman, O'Hara had us sit down and provide him information about ourselves, *as ifwe were the ones being accused and investigated,* proceeding exactly as one might expect the FBI to do with someone the FBI was investigating.

"What's your date of birth? Where were you born? What is your exact name? Do you have any aliases?" O'Hara quizzed us.

When we left the FBI offices, I said to Senator Schmit, "Wow, did Jmake a mistake. Anybody who dares to investigate this is going to get themselves buried by the FBI, if they start making any accusations against Wadman or anybody associated with him."

I had no idea how prophetic those words were.

• • •

It was only after Caradori's first tapes had been turned over to law enforcement agencies, that leaks of what was on them began to reach the public and became the subject of widespread

discussion. Articles began to appear in the *Omaha World-Herald.* aimed to discredit the witnesses and intimidate any other potential child victim-witnesses from testifying or coming forward with information.

As the stories proliferated, Gary Caradori expressed to Senator Schmit his concern for the safety of the victim-witnesses who had allowed themselves to be taped. Schmit sought my legal advice again.

"These kids need protection or they are going to end up dead, or become afraid to continue to tell the truth," the senator said. "The committee has to do something to guarantee their protection."

Gary Caradori was even more vehement on the need for protection. "Unless they get into a protected environment, where Alan Baer and Larry King and Robert Wadman are not able to get to them and scare them, I can tell you the kids will fold. They will do whatever those guys order them to do. They will fold, or they will end up dead," Caradori hammered at Senator Schmit. "You have to do something to protect them."

My legal advice to Senator Schmit and my direct warning to Gary Caradori at that time, in December 1989 and January 1990, was the most painful information I have ever had to provide someone.

"You cannot and should not do anything to use committee funds or committee personnel to provide protection for these kids," I told Schmit. "Otherwise, you and the committee may be accused of impropriety and tampering with witnesses, and who knows what else. Painful as it is for me to tell you this, you have to find some other legal channel to provide protection for the kids. Whether that channel is the courts or a judge or whoever, it is something that either the lawyer for the kids should be doing, or some institution of government vested with the power and responsibility to do those things should be doing. But you, Senator Schmit, should not personally get involved in any way, shape or form in providing money or assistance or protection for these kids, nor should the committee, in my opinion."

Senator Schmit shared his concerns with other members of

the legislature, who were hearing the rumors and who had their own resources for finding out information. Key among them was Senator Jerry Chizek of Omaha, chairman of the Legislature's Judiciary Committee. He was very tight with Douglas County Sheriff Dick Roth.

In early January 1990, as stories of what was involved in the Franklin case spread through the streets of Omaha, Senator Chizek took it upon himself to set up a very secret, private meeting among Senator Schmit, Sheriff Roth, a representative of the Douglas County District Court, Judge Corrigan, and himself. I was asked by Senator Chizek and Senator Schmit to attend the meeting. I was glad to come, for the purpose of providing legal guidance to Senator Schmit, so that he did not engage in trying to solve the problem of protection for the witnesses in an illegal, if well-intentioned, manner.

The meeting took place in an auto body repair shop somewhere in west Omaha, on what I am sure was the coldest day of the year.

For most of the afternoon, discussion centered around the essence of the rumors that were circulating about the contents of the Caradori tapes. Attention was focused on the necessity of protecting the victim-witnesses who had provided testimony.

Sheriff Roth had viewed the tapes. I presume others in the room also had, including Senator Schmit. I personally had not viewed the tapes and, believe it or not, have not viewed them to this day.

From the conversation on that cold January day, there was no doubt at all, that Sheriff Roth and others in the room believed in the validity and accuracy of the allegations made on the tapes.

As the talks progessed, Sheriff Roth used a phrase that had special meaning to me. "I will tell you one thing," he said, "Nick O'Hara of the FBI and Robert Wadman are closer than nineteen is to twenty. Everybody in law enforcement knows that. I know it especially well. Closer than nineteen is to twenty. That makes it almost impossible to get anything done or to arrange any witness protection through the feds. I will try to help in any way possible, but I am not sure anything can or

will be done. These people involved are just too powerful. They carry enough weight in this community to do what they want and get away with it."

Sheriff Roth did stand up for the victims of Franklin-related child abuse, on several occasions. 1 know that he subsequently came under intense pressure, including from the *World-Herald,* to repudiate his belief that the allegations of the child victim-witnesses were true.

The net result of the secret meeting with Sheriff Roth and Judge Corrigan of the Douglas County District Court was nothing. The plan was for Judge Corrigan to explain the situation, including the fact that fellow district court judges were the subject of some of the accusations, to the other dozen district court judges. Then a plan might be worked out, for witness protection under the auspices of the court.

Unfortunately, that did not transpire. What Judge Corrigan did or did not do, only he knows.

• • •

About the time of the secret meeting with Judge Corrigan and Sheriff Roth, my office received a long-distance phone call from a girl who identified herself as Loretta Smith. 1 returned her call.

"I'm one of the Franklin victim-witnesses," she explained. "I'm the one they wrote a lot about in the *Omaha World-Herald.* A friend of mine told me that maybe you would help me."

Having read the stories about Loretta, who was not identified by name in the *World-Herald,* 1knew basically the story she was telling, as to her abuse and the individuals who had supposedly abused her.

"I know who you are, Loretta, and if 1 can help you, 1 will," 1 said. "And yes, 1 have read about you and your story and, surprising as it might sound to you, 1 do believe you."

We discussed ways 1 might help her.

A couple of weeks after that phone call, reporter Kathy Rutledge of the *Lincoln Journal* telephoned me at night at

home. She said she understood I had been in touch with Loretta Smith, and she wanted to know all about the matter. It was clear from the beginning of the conversation, by the tone of her voice and her accusatory questions, that Kathy was intent on doing a hatchet job on me.

I begged Kathy Rutledge not to distort facts. She repeatedly tried to suggest that I had improperly contacted Loretta Smith. Furthermore, she kept implying that I had told Loretta that I had secret information on Franklin, which I would be trying to use improperly.

I corrected Rutledge again and again. I pointed out to her that if I had done the things she was saying or implying that I did, such conduct would be a violation of legal codes of ethics and would subject me to penalties, including even revocation of my license to practice law. I urged that she not even write a story about this, for the protection of the young lady involved. If she insisted on writing a story, I said, she should at least tell the truth and not distort facts.

A few days later, a lawyer working in my office, John Goc, walked into the office carrying the *Lincoln Journal* and talking loudly: "What are you trying to do, DeCamp, get yourself disbarred? What are you going around talking to this reporter for? When the Bar Association sees this, you can bet you'll be in trouble. I hope you have a good explanation. You're going to kill your lobbying business with this kind of story." That is approximately what John Goc said to me on January 18, 1990.

I ran down to get a copy of the newspaper, knowing already what Kathy Rutledge must have done. Determined to get herself a headline story and lots of attention, she had to distort the truth. Just as I feared, every negative and distorted impression was conveyed by her story. Six days later, I would be notified by the Bar Association that I was under investigation, as a result of the Rutledge story.

Even before that happened, I was confronted by *Omaha World-Herald* reporter Bob Dorr on the telephone, demanding that I answer questions about Franklin, such as what I knew, where I got my information, how I got the name of this Franklin witness, what secret information I had, and why I was conceal-

ing things. His drift was the same as Kathy Rutledge's questions.

I determined that I could no longer keep silent. I would answer the questions of Dorr in detail in writing, so that there would be no misunderstanding or distortion possible. Or, if there was distortion nonetheless, I would have a record of what I had actually told him.

My answer to Bob Dorr' s questions was the DeCamp memo.

I also prepared a documented reply to the Nebraska Bar Association inquiry, to prove that the conduct related by Kathy Rutledge in her article had not occurred. I was able to submit affidavits from two employees in my office, who swore that it was Loretta Smith who contacted me, and not vice versa. I also obtained an affidavit from a friend of Loretta, who knew me and my wife from when we had helped her, on request from her minister, several years earlier, and who was the person who advised Loretta to call me. Within hours after presentation to the Bar Association of this documentation, the bar investigation was terminated. I was cleared of any impropriety or wrongdoing.

The *Lincoln Journal* ran a second story on the matter, after the DeCamp memo was issued, in which Rutledge attempted to correct the falsehoods and deceptions in the first story. **In** any case, I filed a slander and defamation lawsuit against the *Journal* for that first story, which lawsuit is still in the courts.

▪ • ▪

I charged in the memo, that in the Franklin case, *"institutions of government have failed and thus credibility of government itself* is *at stake in this matter and in a very real sense, first the [legislative] committee and then the Legislature, are the court of last resort."* (Emphasis in original.)

I had not seen the videotapes of the victim-witnesses and I said so. but I wrote:

> First. as a citizen who strongly pushed for the Franklin investigation and in fact offered suggested language for the

Senate Resolution which triggered the investigation, I find what is occurring by both the Press and Institutions of Government nothing short of criminal. The Press quietly and carefully covers up, either thru ignorance or artifice, while the various institutions of Government repeat the old Commonwealth/State Security game of "let the statute of limitations run" on those that should and could be immediately prosecuted and investigate and study and "ask for more information."

Why?

Because of the personalities involved.

The *World Herald* and *Lincoln Journal* want to know where I get information on Franklin. Get serious. A reporter has to be deaf, dumb, blind and corrupt not to know the names of the personalities involved and the scope of the allegations. Stop on any street corner in Omaha; go into any coffee shop; have a drink in any bar in Omaha, or if you are lazy, walk around the Capitol Rotunda in Lincoln and simply listen to the discussions. Here is what you will learn:

1. The allegations are that the most powerful and rich public personalities of the state are central figures in the investigation.

2. That these include former *Omaha World Herald* Editor Harold Andersen; Larry King of the dead Franklin Credit Union; Former Omaha Police Chief Robert Wadman; Media Personality Peter Citron; Ak-Sar-Ben Financier and bluest of the bluebloods, Alan Baer, for starters.

3. That the allegations are that these individuals were some of the centerpieces in a co-ordinated program of Child Abuse, Drug Abuse, and abuse of their various public positions of trust and honor.

4. That prosecutors who should be prosecuting are afraid to prosecute for one reason or another and that the public itself is rapidly losing faith in its fundamental institutions of government as a result of this perceived coverup, whether real or imagined. . . .

What do I personally believe. I damned well believe the allegations.

Now, having said these things and reported these allegations, am I afraid of being sued by these powerful personalities. *Absolutely not.* Remember that rule you newspaper folk

live and die by and crucify others by. If you have forgotten, let me repeat it for you: *truth is a defense.* And, since these are all *public figures,* we also know that *absent any malice,* and I have none, *truth is definitely a defense. . . .*

No, I do not fear a lawsuit. I fear, just like *any alleged child victims* in this bizarre tragedy, that the rich and the powerful will use their positions of power and *control of institutions of government* to shut up those who would speak out and bring things to a head.

• • •

The DeCamp memo lit a firestorm of controversy in Omaha and statewide. On radio, TV, and in the press, it was dealt with daily for several weeks.

The furor touched off by the circulation of the memo is conveyed in a March 17, 1990 *Kansas City Star* article, headlined "Former legislator's angry memo turns sober Nebraska on its ear":

> Two months ago, DeCamp sat behind his [word processing] machine and pounded out the infamous "DeCamp Memo." The piece of invective became the subject of discussion from Omaha's silk-stocking salons to the cowboy bars in the Sand Hills.
>
> He named five prominent Omaha men as "central figures" in a legislative committee's yearlong review of allegations of sexual abuse linked to the 1988 collapse of the Franklin Community Federal Credit Union. . . .
>
> DeCamp's memo found its way to dozens of copy machines and quickly littered the state, spawning a swirl of gossip. In an attempt to put the rumors to rest and find the truth, the U.S. attorney called a federal grand jury last month.
>
> And next week a Douglas County grand jury in Omaha will begin hearing the allegations, including one that King flew teenagers to Kansas City in 1985 to perform sex with men in a rented room at the Westin Crown Center Hotel.
>
> Hardly modest, DeCamp takes credit for the convening of the grand juries. "If it had not been for that memo,

> there would not even be a grand jury investigation today," DeCamp contends....
>
> DeCamp had the audacity to name, among others, Harold Andersen, former publisher of the *Omaha World-Herald.* DeCamp left the implication that Andersen, an icon of journalism who lunches with President Bush, had a fetish for children. Said one politician, "It was like insulting God."

Rumors started reaching me, that I was going to be sued by various people.

Finally, a close friend of mine, who is a prominent reporter in Nebraska and whom I agreed not to name in this book, came to me privately to say that an agreement had been reached among the various individuals I had named in the memo, and others, for Peter Citron to be the one to sue me. The purpose would be to destroy me in full view of the public, and to repudiate the DeCamp memo.

Truth put a crimp in that plan. Not long after the message was delivered to me, Peter Citron was charged with sex crimes involving male minors in the Omaha area. It seems that some parents, who knew their children were hanging around Peter Citron, were shocked to see him named in the DeCamp memo. They responded by asking their children, whether or not there was any truth to the allegations, with respect to Citron. One after another, the boys began to pour out the truth to their parents.

The demands by parents for immediate action left the police and prosecutors no choice. They had to file charges against Peter Citron, although I rather suspect they did not want to.

Citron ultimately pleaded guilty. Today he is in prison, sentenced as a mentally disordered sex offender.

• • •

Needless to say, the *World-Herald* devoted many column-inches to condemning the DeCamp memo as irresponsible.

I cannot neglect to comment on the *World-Herald's* overall role in the Franklin scandal.

Nebraska has only one state-wide news source. It is the

Omaha World-Herald. Our small population, vast expanses, and the cost of maintaining a daily newspaper in this day and age, all guarantee that the *World-Herald* is the news source for this state. With that awesome power, one would think would come a corresponding measure of responsibility, to make sure Nebraskans get all sides of an issue. That they really get the news.

But the *World-Herald's* long-standing pattern of behavior is just the opposite. If it has an editorial attitude on a story, its news coverage and every other aspect of the newspaper are mustered to accentuate the preferred side of the issue and suppress opposing views.

In the case of Franklin, the paper went to new lengths. The integrity and credibility of the newspaper went on the chopping block, for the sake of suppressing the truth about Franklin and, to a high degree, the Commonwealth and State Security banking stories-Nebraska's three biggest scandals of the last fifty years.

Why all this effort? Because, tragically, the people who control the *World-Herald* appear to have a strong vested interest in suppressing the truth. Whether it is Peter Citron, past publisher Harold Andersen, or underlings who have their positions only because of Andersen, their linkage to Franklin dictates that they use the best tool available, the *World-Herald,* to tell the public what they want them to believe.

Because of its virtual monopoly as a news source, something repeated often enough by the *World-Herald* may attain the status of truth in the minds of those who read it. In the case of Franklin, the paper has repeated a simple theme, shaped by its top personnel-that the Franklin sex scandal, pedophilia and drug abuse stories were trumped up.

I can present certain facts, never publicly revealed before now, that exemplify the program of deception carried on by the *World-Herald* throughout the Franklin scandal, continuing to the present.

In coverage of the DeCamp memo, and in other Franklin coverage, the impression given by the *World-Herald* was that the legislative committee to investigate Franklin, headed by

Senator Schmit, was functioning in an irresponsible manner, allowing leaks to the press and to others. In editorials and on the news pages, the *World-Herald* repeatedly condemned Senator Schmit for supposedly leaking information. Then they attacked me, for supposedly obtaining information from Senator Schmit and leaking it.

The truth was the opposite. I was providing information to the committee, as committee records will bear out.

Probably the best example of this would be the detailed breakdowns of Franklin Credit Union financial transactions, which the committee received from me, months in advance of their own investigation.

How did I get such data? Believe it or not, I got them from the chief counsel of the National Credit Union Administration (NCUA), Robert Fenner.

In an unsolicited phone call from him, Fenner gave me details about Franklin's secret accounts. In retrospect, I believe he wanted-through me-to throw cold water on the questions that were heating up in Omaha, about the role of Franklin monies in the Iran-Contra money-laundering schemes. At the time, I asked Fenner if he wanted me to share his information with Senator Schmit, which he did.

I immediately drafted a detailed memo of my conversation with Fenner. I provided the information to Senator Schmit, for the legislative committee. I gave Fenner's phone number to Schmit.

Thus, from the outset, I was sending information to the Senate Franklin committee, and not the other way around.

THE DECAMP MEMO

Franklin witness says DeCamp offered to help in suing state, police

By Kathleen Rutledge
Journal Investigative Reporter

As Omaha's top trial attorney, he was the Franklin Commission's federal Credit Union investigation said Wednesday that attorney John DeCamp offered to represent her in suing the Unicameral, the state for negligence but she declined.

The woman, who asked that her name not be printed, said she cooperated with the state's grand jury in the investigation that was done by the Legislature's special Franklin committee. She said she was interviewed by a state trooper, who asked her if there were children and have said that they are victims and have given molested statements to the committee.

Like the grand jury, "but not for the money," Rather she said, she does not get money to get money.

"I think I got a raw deal," she said, referring to the way she was treated by law enforcement officials. Law enforcement agencies have said they could not verify allegations of child sexual abuse that have been associated with the Franklin credit union.

She said she

to find somebody to represent her and if she couldn't find anybody, he would be willing. "There was nobody else willing to help protecting them," he said.

The woman said DeCamp offered to represent her free but explained that "if I got any money out of it," he said he would take a percentage of money. She said he also talked to getting money from the police department in the state after he was done with the case.

She said he was very close to some of the senators. He said he had remember statements," she said, "and I just told her I absolutely believe him. I totally believe him. I absolutely believe what I just told her I believe."

Although she gave information to her lawyer when he was investigating Jerry Lewis when he was in office, she said she has not been contacted by the committee for the committee. She said she has not cooperated with the investigation since it changed drafts this summer.

"I trusted Jerry Lewis and I felt more comfortable with him. I feel more

Lincoln Journal *article of January 18. 1990. which appeared despite John DeCamp's urging journalist Kathleen Rutledge to "tell the truth and not distort facts. "*

Otnce of the
oureel

COUNSEL FOR DISCIPLINE
Dennis G. Carlson

ASSISTANT COUNSEL
Alison L Larson

January 24, 1990

Mr. Juhn W. oecaep
Attorney at Law
100 Executive Bldg.
521 South 14th Street
Lincoln, Nebraska 68508

oear Hr. uecaeo:

The supreae Court Rules of Discipline of the state of Nebraska, 1989, provide that I alii to notify a member in writing that he is under investigation or that he is the subject of a coraple inb and furnish him a copy thereot. Accordingly, I aiii enclosing a copy of a newspaper article pUblished on January 18, 1990 in the Lincoln Journal.

1 am concerned, based upon the inror",ation contaLned in the article, that you may have attempted to solicit legal business.

Pursuant to Rule 9 (E) of the Supreme court Rules of Discipline, you are required to send to me an appropriate written response within the next rifteen (15) working days. If you fail to so respond, the Rules provide that this failure alone shall be qcounds for discipline.

After reviewing your response, I cen dismiss the complaint if it does not appear that your conduct was in violation of the Code of Professional Responsibility. If your conduct does appeer to constitute a violat.ion o(the Code of Professional Responslbility. a further investiqat.ion will be instituted, may be eppropriate under the clecueat.ances.

Sincerely yours,

Alison L. Larson
Assistant Counsel
for Discipline

AL:lh
tnc.

Nebraska
... St...II, 14th Street • P.O. Box ...... 1.....,In Nebraska 68501 • (402) 475-7...

Six days later. this letter from the Nebraska State Bar Association notified DeCamp he was under investigation for improperly contacting a victim-witness.

STATE OF NEBRASKA)
)
COUNTY OF LANCASTER)

is [redacted]. I live at 3009 Cass Street, Omaha, Nebraska, and I work at Richard Young Hellllorial Hospital. One of my roomates at my current residence is _____ who previously worked at Richard Young Memorial Hospital; the [illegible] Care Person) for a young lady identified as was pcp (Primary several years ago, when personal pr-cbLeras, Rever arranged for me to stay Lincoln, until such time of myself and particUlar John uecaep has provided requested it in regards All, without charge, I m fee case for me on a per-

Early in January, 1990, qivinq any notice to Joh with John DeCamp and his John's Leqel assistance course of the conversati employment at Richard Yo [redacted], and another empl from their jobs in cnerr hospital policy that pat llloths after patients ar refused to take [redacted] for her safety and had n with her former PCP, [redacted] the time.

I advised John DeCamp of surrounding [redacted] t had failed and cost peop to fear for her safety; queaticned about Frankli stories about the terrib result of franklin and t by an attorney.

John provided me legal q matter. lie did not char [redacted] that [redacted] would have to initiate t willing to represent her contact him if she vcnte

He told me t.nat he would to her ebout things such representation if she called him and asked for that help. John

STATE OF NEBRASKA)
res.
COUNTY OF LANCASTER)

COMES NOW the undersigned, Cindy Morrissey, being first dUly sworn and deposes and says thllt:

1) She is elllployed as a secretary by DeCamp Legal Services, P.c. in Lincoln, Nebraska and was so employed on January 8, 1990.

2) As a part of her duties she performs secretarial services for one of the fira's attorneys and also answers the telephone.

3) On January 8, *1990*, she answered a number of telephone eaUs to the firm and received one in particular, for John DeC--p from [illegible] telephone number . When in!or_ed that Hr. Dec amp was not available, Ms. left a llessage and requested that Hr. DeCamp return her call. Your affiant then conveyed the message and telephone number to Mr. Decamp's secretary, Jan Jewell.

4) Other than the January 8, 1990, call previously mentioned, she was unaware of any other calls to or fro. prior to such date.

And further your affiant sayeth not.

Cindy Morrissey

Sworn and subscribed before me this 9th day at January, 1990.

GENERAL NOTARY - State of Nebraska
SALLY J. BENNETT
My Comm. Exp. 11-1-93

Affidavits from Det.amp's and a friend of the victim-witness proved that the Journal was distorting facts.

Office of the
Counsel for Discipline

..bruary 7, 1990

Hr. John W. DeCamp
Attorney at Law
300 Executive Bldg.
521 South 14th Street
Lincoln, Nebraska 68508

Please [illegible] Januar 21 [illegible] B..v- .in of today's date dismissed or investigation .n,tiated against you on

Sincer..ly yours,

Allison L. Larson
Assistant Counsel
for Discipline

The Bar Association cleared DeCamp.

~~Memorandum from John De Camp 18 January 1990~~

To: Bob Dorr, Omaha World Herald, and the public:
Dear World Herald Reporter:

Attached please find copy of stOry in the Lincoln Journal. I think it important to give you some background information which l have declined to give the press.

On 8 January 1990 my office, Phone 477-3974, took a phone call from *a* young lady who identified herself as). The phone call was taken by Cindy Horr Lssey, a secretary in my office, who relayed the information to me to call this young lady at Phone Number Later in the day, when I had tune, 1 called this number aud said to the female who answered, "Hellu, my name is John De Camp. I have a message to call L

The young lady identified herself as a Franklin victim and told me that a friend of hers who had recently sought my legal assistance in her own personal matters had recommended she. the Franklin Victim. call me if she was needing an attorney.

I advised her I was quite familiar with the Franklin matter. I told her I had heard, from recently when came to see me on own legal problems, that had been treated quite poorly by our institutions of government since being released from the hospital. I told her that I understood from her friend, ____ , that she, , may be needing an attorney but had no money. had expressed the fact that might be in danger, a fact which I agreed with her on, but that did not have any place to turn and no money to hire any lawyer. I told , and when I returned her phone call. that if she was 110t able to obtain an attorney and if she indeed felt she needed one, that I would offer her any assistance my office could provide and do it for free if necessary. She asked vhy would I do this for free. I said for several reasons: Eirst, I said I believed that the bulk of what she and others were saying was essentially true and that the Foster Care Review Bear-d which I legislatively sponsored a few years ago also believed her story was Lrue and that she might well be needing a lawyer of soma kind if for no other reason than for her own protection and to obtain court assistance in these efforts. I advised her that, crazy as it might sound to her, my primary reason for agreeing to assist her if she wanted was because 1 felt Institutions of Government had failed and each citizen has a duty to try to force Institutions of Government La work when they are standing there in a position to do so.

I pointed out to her some background I had which gave me familiarity with the Franklin maLter including the fact that I had personally been a delegate to the Republican National Convention in 1984 and 1988 and been a witness at the massive spending and luxury at the Larry King parties in both Dallas and New Orleans and as Chairman of the Legislative Banking Committee had observed with a jaundiced eye the Franklin operation which no information could be obtained on because it was a Federal Institution.

1 strongly cautioned her to take care of herself and think about what she wanted to do, it anything. and offered to be available if she needed anything and vas not able to obtain assistance elsewhere.

I tried La describe for her a C-1983 Federal Court Action under which she could Seek protection from the court, assistance from Institutions of Government and damages if appropriate. I explained that if successful such an action would allow any lawyer who helped her to recover their expenses and appropriate fees. I offerad to talk to her further if she wished to come to Lincoln to talk to me.

I have heard nothing further from the young lady until the 18th of January when the Lincoln Journal called me and asked how I had obtained the name of one of the secret Franklin witnesses.

The reasou I prcvide you this information is very simple. I have maintained more than a passing inLerest in Franklin and believe, as I have suggested to Senator Loran Schm' n occasions, th STITUTIONS OF GOVERNMENT HAVE STAKE IN AND

After Rutledge's article appeared. Omaha World-Herald *reporter Boh Dorr telephoned DeCamp, demanding to know where DeCamp information. how he the name of the Franklin and what information he had. So that there would he no groundsfor misunderstanding or distortion. DeCamp decided to answer in writing. the origin of the DeCamp Memo. shown here.*

CHAPTER 10

PAUL BONACCI

In May 1990, Caradori discovered a fourth victim-witness, Paul Bonacci, whose testimony corroborated and amplified the stories told on the earlier videotapes. Caradori's daily notes of May 10 record his first contact with Bonacci, at the Douglas County jail.

> After discovering Dan Newton* wasn't at this facility, this writer then contacted Inmate Paul A. Bonacci. ... Paul Bonacci's name had been given to me by a Mary Barrett, and I had his name for quite some time.
>
> Upon having Mr. Bonacci meet me in an interviewing room, Bonacci related to this writer that he knew Troy Boner, Danny King, and Alicia [sic] Owen. He further advised that he had been a victim of Alan Baer, Peter Citron, and Larry King, and had some knowledge of Bob Wadman, Harold Anderson, and ajudge who he later on referred to as Carlson. During the next few hours, he related some of his knowledge reference Peter Citron, Alan Baer, Larry King, and also Bob Wadman.
>
> The subject stated that he had been on at least 1-200 trips and had been involved in extensive homosexual activity as a child and as a young adult, with his homosexual activity starting when he was approximately 8-10 years old. The subject then stated that between the years of 1982 and 1986 he had probably been on at least 200-300 trips. The subject stated that he made at least 15-20 trips to various parts of California, a couple of trips to Washington, D.C., and also trips to Des Moines, Minneapolis, Kansas City, Austin, Houston, Dallas, St. Louis, Miami, Pasadena, Tampa, Lincoln, and Grand Island. Some of those trips he thought

involved politicians from Washington, D.C., however, he didn't know anyone by name because of his young age.

The subject stated that he was taken to the Omaha Police Department sometime in March and was talked to by Omaha Police Detective Mike Hoch, during which time Detective Hoch was very hard on Bonacci, and after finishing up with the police interview, he told Bonacci, that, reference Larry King, he was afraid he might prosecute him (Bonacci) as there would be no attempt to give him formal immunity.

When questioned about Alan Baer, he stated that he first met him in the "Milk Run," an area near and surrounding the Correctional Center. He stated that he was approximately 12 years old and that this occurred possibly in 1979. He stated that Alan Baer would pay him $20 for oral sex. He stated that the last time he had sex with Alan Baer was, he believed, around November 15, 1989, in Alan Baer's apartment in the Twin Towers....

Other information received from Paul indicated that he had tried to get away from these people on many occasions, and in his attempt to escape them he did attempt suicide. He stated that he was very afraid of Larry King's "people." In fact, there was a black individual whom he called "Larry Little King," who would go around and make threats and attempt to scare him and other individuals. Paul Bonacci indicated that he was really very scared of being threatened.

In reference to Bob Wadman, subject stated that he believed he met Wadman sometime in late 1985 or early 1986. He stated that he had seen Bob Wadman at [at] least two parties that were located near the town of Elkhorn, Nebraska....

During the course of the conversation, subject stated that Alisha Owen was present at [at] least one of these parties that Wadman had attended also. The subject believed the girl (Alisha) and Wadman might have been together....

Other information gained during the interview: Bonacci stated he knew when Alisha Owen got pregnant because a young individual by the name of Chris told him that it was probably Bob Wadman who got Alisha pregnant. Further, he stated that there was another individual who he had spent

time with in the Twin Towers by the name of Bob Morino, Apt. #4H, Twin Towers, Omaha, Nebraska. Also, there was another young boy sexually abused by Alan Baer by the name Peter Fells*. He stated that this individual might have moved to Tennessee, however, he was not sure.

Paul Bonacci went on to state that he had gone on many "scavenger hunts" for Alan Baer. He defined "scavenger hunts" as an activity in which he would go out and recruit young boys for Alan Baer. ...

He stated that Larry King would fly him all over the country. On at least one trip to California, Alisha Owen was present on the flight. ...

He stated that on at least one trip he had seen Troy, Danny and Alisha in California. That was sometime in 1985 or '86....

He also stated he made two trips to Washington, D.C. with Larry King-just the two of them alone. He stated that while in Washington. D.C.. he had sex with other people. He thought they were part of the Republican Party because Larry King was trying to hard to in with the higher ups" in the Republican party. He stated that he heard the name of one of the individuals with whom he had sex as Frank. He thought he might be a senator or governor or some state official. ...

• • •

On May 14, 1990 Caradori took a video statement from Bonacci. He wrote in that day's notes:

> Further, when questioned, Mr. Bonacci stated that his last contact with Alisha Owen, he thought, was in 1986, and with Troy Boner and Danny King in 1987. He stated that he had no physical, verbal, or written communication with any of those three since that time.

One of the experiences with Larry King, which Bonacci described to Caradori on tape, he later detailed again in his written account of abuse, prepared for his lawyer, this writer.

Bonacci has often said, that he wants the full story of his abuse to be public. "Somebody has to tell the story," he wrote in the introduction to this document, "And it might as well be me."

Gruesome as it is, Bonacci's report to me harks back to the early cries for help, from Loretta Smith:

> I went in January of '84 on every trip. I was paid by men King knew for sex. In the summer of '84 sometime I went to Dallas Texas and had sex with several men King knew in a hotel.
>
> I flew on YNR Airlines and Kam Airlines normally for King. I never had much personally to do with King, only went where he told me to go.
>
> In or on July 26th I went to Sacramento, Ca. King flew me out on a private plane from Eppley Airfield [in Omaha] to Denver where we picked up Nicholas, a boy who was about 12 or 13. Then we flew to Las Vegas to a desert strip and drove in to Las Vegas and to some ranch and got something. Then flew on to Sacramento.
>
> We were picked up by a white limo and taken to a hotel. I don't remember the name of it. We meaning Nicholas and I were driven to a area that had big trees, it took about an hour to get there. There was a cage with a boy in it who was not wearing anything. Nicholas and I were given these tarzan things to put around us and stuff.
>
> They told me to f--- the boy and stuff. At first I said no and they held a gun to my balls and said do it or else lose them or something like that. I began doing it to the boy and stuff. And Nicholas had anal sex and stuff with him. We were told to him and stuff and beat on him. I didn't try to hurt him. We were told to put our d---s in his mouth and stuff and sit on the boys penis and stuff and they filmed it. We did this stuff to the boy for about 30 minutes or an hour when a man came in and kicked us and stuff in the balls and picked us up and threw us. He grabbed the boy and started f---ing him and stuff. The man was about 10 inches long and the boy screamed and stuff and the man was forcing his d--- into the boy all the way. The boy was bleeding from his rectum and the men tossed him and me and stuff and put the boy right next to me and grabbed a gun and blew the boys head off.

The boys blood was all over me and I started yelling and crying. The men grabbed Nicholas and I and forced us to lie down. They put the boy on top of Nicholas who was crying and they were putting Nicholas hands on the boys ass. They put the boy on top of me and did the same thing. They then forced me to f--- the dead boy up his ass and also Nicholas they put a gun to our heads to make us do it. His blood was all over us. They made us kiss the boys lips and to eat him out. Then they made me do something I don't want to even write so I won't.

After that the men grabbed Nicholas and drug him off screaming they put me up against a tree and put a gun to my head but fired into the air. I heard another shot from somewhere. I then saw the man who killed the boy drag him like a toy. Everything including when the men put the boy in a trunk was filmed. They took me with them and we went up in a plane. I saw the bag the boy was in. We went over a very thick brush area with a clearing in it. Over the clearing they dropped the boy. One said the men with the hoods would take care of the body for them.

I didn't see Nicholas until that night at the hotel. He and I hugged and held each other for a long while. About two hours later the men or Larry King came in and told us to go take a shower since we had only been hosed off at some guys house. We took a shower together and then were told to put on the tarzan things. After we were cleaned up and dressed in these things we were told to put on shorts, socks and a shirt and shoes and driven to a house where the men were at with some others. They had the film and they played it. As the men watched they passed Nicholas and I around as if we were toys and sexually abused us.

They made Nicholas and I screw each other and one of the men put the dead boy's penis in mine and Nicholas' mouth. I didn't want to write this because the man forced me to bite the boys' penis and balls off. It was gross and I saw the film where it happened and started freaking out remembering what they made us do afterwards to the boy. They showed us doing everything to the boy. I was there for about 5 days attending parties but only recall cutting my wrist which is why I stayed two days in a hospital under a name I can't recall. Some guy paid for me.

In other testimony, Bonacci said that Larry King was smiling and laughing the whole time the film was being shown, and that "the men with the hoods" were a Satanic group which planned to use the dead boy in some sort of ceremony. He also named the director of the snuff film, whom they had picked up in Las Vegas, as "Hunter Thompson."

CHAPTER II

COVER-UP PHASE II THE DOUGLAS COUNTY GRAND JURY

On July 23, 1990, twelve days after the sudden death of Gary Caradori, the Douglas County grand jury, formed in the wake of the DeCamp memo, issued its long-awaited report. A banner headline in the *World-Herald* trumpeted: "Grand Jury Says Abuse Stories Were a 'Carefully Crafted Hoax'."

The conclusions presented in the 42-page "Grand Jury Report," not to mention the pretentious language in which it discounted whole areas of the Franklin case, betray the deliberations of the jury, rather, as a carefully crafted cover-up. The grand jury gave opinions on a variety of matters.

The Douglas County grand jury cleared Larry King of child abuse:

> We found no credible evidence of child sexual abuse, interstate transportation of minors, drug trafficking or participation in a pornography ring by King or other Franklin officials or employees. To the extent that homosexual relations occurred involving such employees or officials, the evidence we were able to uncover showed these exchanges to be voluntary acts between persons above the age of consent.

Yes, Larry King had diverted credit union funds for his personal gain, but "it is our opinion that federal authorities are better able to pursue matters regarding this misappropriation of credit union funds, and we strongly recommend that they

continue to do so." And although "we also found probable cause to believe that King, on numerous occasions, used money or items of value to 'entice, inveigle, persuade, encourage or procure' men in their late teens or early twenties to engage in acts of prostitution with him, and, therefore, he committed the crime of pandering," the statute of limitations had run out on many of these acts, and "our ultimate decision was that to charge and try King with a class IV felony under state law when he is facing 40 felony counts in federal court [on financial charges only] would not be the best use of the resources of the Douglas County District Court, and again we have deferred to the federal prosecution."

So careful was this grand jury not to fritter public resources, that it did not even subpoena Larry King!

The grand jury explained away its failure to call King as a witness:

> Because King is presently in an institution out of the state pursuant to an order from the federal court, and because we believed he would rely on his right against self-incrimination ... , we decided it would not be fruitful to attempt to require King to appear before us.

Whenever it did admit that abuse had taken place, the grand jury stipulated that none of it had anything to do with the Franklin Credit Union.

The grand jury indicted three people. First came Alan Baer, the department store heir, one of the five persons named in the DeCamp memo.

> We did have testimony from certain witnesses about sexual involvement with Baer. Evidence also showed that these witnesses received substantial amounts of money or other valuables in exchange for sex.... Therefore, we believe Baer committed the offense of pandering, and we have handed down an indictment against him for that offense.

However that may be, the grand jury added, "We have found no direct connection between Alan Baer and King or the Franklin Credit Union, other than limited social and business dealings."

Peter Citron, another of the five I named, appeared before the grand jury and was found to have had "inappropriate sexual contact with male minors," but again, "no connection has been found to link Citron with the Franklin Credit Union . . . . " Citron had already been indicted and convicted for these contacts in a separate court process.

The other two people indicted were the victim-witnesses, Alisha Owen and Paul Bonacci. These young people had suffered, admitted the grand jury, but that had nothing to do with Franklin: "We think that Owen might have been sexually abused during her early years, but not by the people and in the way she has alleged." As for Bonacci, "according to his testimony, he was a child victim of repeated sexual abuse by persons not associated with the Franklin investigation." Accusing them of lying to the grand jury during May and June of 1990, the jury handed down indictments against Owen on eight counts of perjury and against Bonacci on three counts.

Troy Boner and Danny King, the other two main witnesses taped by Caradori, recanted in the spring of 1990. The County grand jury made no mention of the fact that by retractin their testimony to Caradori, the two were saying that they lie to the Legislature, whose representative Caradori was.

The grand jury noted that in a May 1990 interim report, it had recommended "that the Washington County Attorney charge Jarrett Webb with third degree sexual assault of a minor," namely Nelly Patterson Webb. Where Nelly had reported organized abuse and prostitution, however, she was not to be believed:

> In early 1986, Nelly began to expand her allegations by charging that she had been taken by King on flights to other cities such as Chicago and Washington, D.C. where she was "put on display" at parties where sex and illegal drug activities took place. We interviewed a number of witnesses who traveled extensively with King, and a few made what must have been embarrassing admissions about engaging in sexual contact with King on some of these trips. However, no witness before the Grand Jury could confirm in any way that Nelly Webb or any other children were ever transported

> for any illegal purposes and we found no evidence to support these claims.

Addressing other dimensions of the Webbs' house of horrors, the grand jury offered its opinion that it was "unfortunate that so much time elapsed between the first allegations of abuse and the time that the last children were removed from the home." It then faulted Carol Stitt of the Foster Care Review Board for writing to the state attorney general so promptly about Loretta Smith's reports, instead of first making more inquiries on her own! But Attorney General Spire had "appropriately passed the information on to [Law Enforcement chief] William Howland," and any delays past that point must have been due to Howland's heavy workload, in the jury's opinion.

Loretta Smith, who testified before the grand jury, had "suffered more abuse and neglect than anyone should ever have to endure," but "the perpetrators of such abuse may never be known." In any event, "the Grand Jury found no evidence to substantiate any connection between King, or any Franklin personnel, and the alleged illegal activities described by the girl."

The grand jury report contained gratuitous pronouncements such as that "children do have the right to expect that *if they exhibit reasonable behavior,* they will not be abused." (Emphasis added.)

It casually mentioned that, according to the OPD, there were "over 500 known pedophiles in the Omaha area." (Since the U.S. Department of Justice estimates that a typical pedophile molests 77 children before he is caught, and most are never caught, a contingent of 500 pedophiles would be abusing thousands of children every year!)

One pedophile even

> caused us [grand jury members] to be greatly concerned. This individual, Robert W. Andresen, a white male, 6'5", 325 lbs., has been known to coerce males (including male minors) to his residence. Once he has taken a male there, he may sexually assault and/or pornographically photograph

> the young man. Furthermore, we have reviewed documents that state Andresen has threatened to physically hann his victim(s) and has threatened to search out and kill those who report him to the authorities.

Having painted that bloodcurdling portrait, the grand jury dismissed the matter with a wave: "Unfortunately, because the victims refused to testify against him, we could not indict." In reality, Andresen figured in the taped testimony of Troy Boner and Danny King to Gary Caradori, which the grand jury neglected to say.

The grand jury charged that the "hoax" was spread by certain "rumormongers"; among these, it named two child care workers, to whom the victims had begun to speak. In the opinion of the grand jury, "Perhaps never in the history of Douglas County has the discordant multitude played so feverishly upon the rumor pipe as in the allegations of sexual misconduct surrounding Franklin."

All those who had pursued the allegations, such as Senator Schmit and the Franklin committee, Senator Chambers, this writer, members of the Concerned Parents, and a free-lance journalist named Michael Casey, came under attack from the grand jury. But, in a striking variation from normal grand jury procedure-to either indict an individual or not to name him at all-this jury cleared, by name, all the prominent alleged abusers, including Judge Theodore Carlson, Harold Andersen, former Game and Parks Commissioner Eugene Mahoney, Omaha Mayor P.J. Morgan, and Omaha lawyer Thomas McKenney. As for alleged abuser Chief Robert Wadman, the jury observed, "We now look upon Owen as the perpetrator and Wadman as the victim."

According to the grand jury, one of the perpetrators did not even exist: "Owen repeatedly referred to a bodyguard and enforcer of King's nicknamed 'Larry the Kid.' We believe this muscular, black male, in his late teens or early twenties, to be a fictitious character." The report did not explain, how a fabricated personality could have appeared in reports from at least four different children over a period of three years. Loretta Smith told about a person named King Horse, who was at

parties and rituals she attended in 1985. Alisha Owen testified that Larry King's "henchman" was a black youth named "Larry (Lnuk)", also known as Kings Horses. Danny King said "Larry, Jr." was King's righthand man. And Paul Bonacci reported that a black man he called "Larry Little King" would carry out threats on Larry King's behalf.

Finally, the report insisted that there was no cover-up.

> There are citizens who believe that prominent individuals, allegedly associated with this case, are automatically guilty because of their public stature. They also believe that the public stature of these individuals allows automatic protection and the power to cover up situations. While we agreed that this was a possibility, our investigation found nothing to substantiate any of these allegations. There is no evidence of a cover up.

The Douglas County grand jury said it "spent the most time" and "the majority of our fact finding and deliberative effort," on refuting the videotaped testimony assembled by Gary Caradori. **It** concluded, "There is no doubt after reviewing all relevant evidence, that the story of sexual abuse, drugs, prostitution, and judicial bribery presented in the legislative videotapes is a carefully crafted hoax, scripted by a person or persons with considerable knowledge of the people and institutions of Omaha, including personal relationships and shortcomings."

With Caradori, as Senator Schmit put it, "conveniently no longer alive to defend himself," the grand jury insinuated that he had staged the tapes for personal profit:

> We have scrutinized Caradori's investigative techniques. In too many instances individuals Caradori interviewed were "fed" items of information. He led his witnesses and the videotapes were stopped and started at suspicious intervals with the substance of the witnesses' stories changing. Caradori stated that he thought it was his job to find the leads and it was someone else's responsibility to follow them up. We believe to the contrary. We think that Caradori stood to gain professionally and personally from the outcome. Caradori spent more time supporting the allegations rather

> than verifying the same. Caradori worked from a sensational base. If there appeared to be something that would be scandalous, he was interested in following it through. If it was just a routine matter, he was not willing to invest the necessary time or effort.

In October 1990, Karen Ormiston, the employee of Caradori's investigative firm who was with him at the videotapings, passed a polygraph test administered by Chris Gugas, a professional polygraph specialist from San Diego who was President of the National Polygraph Association. The questions to which she answered "no," were: "1. During Gary Caradori's interviews with the Franklin case victims, did he ever threaten anyone in obtaining information from them? 2. To the best of your knowledge, did Gary coach any of the alleged Franklin case victims on what they should say in their interviews? 3. Did Gary and you advise any of the four victims at anytime to fabricate their stories?" To the question, "Were all the statements given to you and Gary by the four Franklin case victims completely voluntary?" she answered "yes." Gugas concluded, "[I]t is the opinion of this examiner that Ms. Ormiston answered all of the above relevant questions truthfully,"

One of Caradori's close associates said after his death, "We never thought these tapes represented more than a tiny part of the overall story. They are important, but the Franklin case has been turned into a debate on the tapes." The collaborator was talking about the investigation's reach into high political circles and into Washington D.C., but the point applies also to the use of the tapes themselves. The bad faith of the grand jury's dismissal of Caradori's work comes even more into relief, if contrasted with the reams of evidence in the investigator's files, which the grand jury apparently failed to consider. By no means satisfied with the taped statements as they stood, the meticulous Caradori listed, at the end of each interview precis, dozens of leads for follow-up and cross-checking. A small excerpt demonstrates his exhaustive investigative agenda:

> 6. Records from what was formerly Brandeis to determine the payment of the dress and teddy that Wadman bought Alisha.

7. The bartender who was present at the French Cafe when Alisha had lunch with Wadman.

8. The kitchen help who was employed at the French Cafe at the time that Alisha and Wadman had lunch there.

23. Fuel records for the private planes that Alisha took. This would indicate where the plane fueled up, especially on flights to the west coast.

24. David Hughes; a pilot named by Alisha as one of Larry King's favorite pilots.

Caradori did not trace through many of these leads, *because he died.* But the grand jury waved them aside.

The jury's report says that it "heard live testimony from 76 witnesses" in all. Caradori's notes on the Alisha Owen and Troy Boner tapes alone, list over 75 people to be interviewed during follow-up, not counting Alisha and Troy. Caradori's evidence, the originals of which occupy a whole locked room at the statehouse, comprise cross-indexed binders, boxes of files, hundreds of hours of audiotapes as well as the videotapes, and a list of 291 potential witnesses in all. The grand jury had a full set in its possession.

I do know, who from Caradori's potential witness lists was called before the panel, because I was one of the few people who ultimately had access to this information. I am forbidden from identifying these people.

As I have said, I believe that if the entire grand jury testimony could be made public, that would be in the public interest. I also believe that, if that were done, there would be a follow-up grand jury to investigate the original grand jury.

• • •

The Grand Jury Report met with outrage.

Trish Lanphier, head of the Concerned Parents group, two of whose founders were denounced as "rumormongers" by the grand jury, blasted the indictment of Alisha Owen and Paul Bonacci: "This is a sick grand jury. Turning the victim into the perpetrator. This is so classic."

Phone calls against the jury's findings poured into a local TV station, as reported in the Omaha *Metro Update* of July 30: "The day after the grand jury report hit on Tuesday, July 24, an 'unscientific' viewer phone-in poll by Omaha television station KETV Channel 7 indicated 10-1 viewer dissatisfaction with the grand jury report. More than 3,000 responses were tallied."

The jury claimed-without having called me to testify-that I had "issued [my] memorandum for personal political gain and possible revenge for past actions against [me]." I filed a civil suit, charging that the jury's statements "were malicious, intentional, negligent and done in ... violation of [my] clearly established constitutional and statutory rights."

Senator Chambers submitted a "Motion to Expunge" to the Douglas County District Court, accompanied by an 83-page supporting brief, which documented the jury's gross irregularities.

The legislative Franklin committee's official response to the jury's report raised a question which the jury had carefully left unanswered. "We assume from their choice of words-carefully crafted hoax," the Franklin committee said, "that the Grand Jury was persuaded that the testimony of the witnesses corroborated each other, and included facts and circumstances which were readily verifiable and attested to by other witnesses. Otherwise, it could not be logically deemed 'carefully crafted.' **If** it was carefully crafted, who crafted it and when?"

In addition, the committee observed, "Alisha Owen and Paul Bonacci are charged with perjury and Troy Boner and Danny King are not. As we see it, the victims who stand by their story are charged with perjury, while those that have admitted to false statements before the Committee [in the videotaped testimony] are not. That makes little sense to us. Either all of them should have been indicted or none of them. The message is mixed and appears to favor encouraging the recanting as a way to avoid the hazards of criminal prosecution. It also tells persons they can lie under oath to Legislative Committees, so long as they change their story before they get to court."

• • •

The *Omaha World-Herald,* whose society columnist Citron stood convicted of child molestation while its former publisher, Andersen, was whitewashed in the grand jury report, leaped to the jury's defense. "Grand Jury Did Its Job; The Insults Are Intolerable," blared its lead editorial on July 29, 1990.

> Rumors of wrongdoing and coverup in the Franklin case were rampant last winter. Based on the conclusions of the Douglas County grand jury, it now appears that the rumors resulted from the fantasies of liars, hoaxers and opportunists who wanted to pay back their perceived political enemies.
>
> Because of the rumors last winter, however, the faith of much of the public in its institutions was shaken. At one time, there seemed no way to determine the truth.
>
> How fortunate Nebraska was to have the grand jury system to help it get to the truth.
>
> Now, however, the grand jury system itself is under attack. The grand jurors who constituted the Douglas County body are being insulted. Doubts are being cast upon their integrity.

The barrage continued, with an August 2, 1990 *World-Herald* editorial, "Schmit Panel Can't Duck Responsibility in Hoax":

> Loran Schmit is frantically rewriting history as he urges the public to believe that his Franklin committee doesn't deserve the criticism it was given by the Douglas County grand jury. . . . Senator Schmit, you and other people connected with the committee haven't been putting evidence together properly since the day committee investigator Gary Caradori made the videotapes that became part of the Franklin story. . . . Schmit clearly had his mind made up on the credibility of many of the stories on the videotapes. By June, still sticking by his view that the stories were believable, he was insinuating that "money is being spent" to block the indictments of prominent people. The more such statements were repeated, the more some Nebraskans believed the wild

tale of a sex-and-drug ring and cover-up involving Omaha individuals and institutions.

• • •

The *World-Herald* evidently hoped that the "wild tale" about prostitution and a cover-up had been laid to rest by the grand jury. The more that became known about that panel, however, the more obvious it was that the grand jury itself, guided by prosecutor Samuel Van Pelt, was adding to the cover-up, and had systematically leaked sensitive information, buried crucial evidence, and threatened witnesses.

In my opinion, never was a case of control and abuse of institutions of government and cover-up of crime executed more perfectly, than in the calling and handling of this grand jury.

A grand jury can be the best or the worst device to uncover crime. First, everything in a grand jury is supposed to be secret. Second, the prosecutor in charge of the grand jury can do about as he pleases, in presenting or screening information. If a corrupt or incompetent prosecutor is in charge, the result will correspond to his behavior.

Third, if the grand jury is controlled by corrupt forces, as I believe this one was, then they may use the grand jury as a means to find out what people know about the matter under scrutiny, by calling them as witnesses, without any of that information becoming public. Then such information can be used to assist in a cover-up. The so-called recantations of Troy Boner and Danny King appear to be a case in point.

Nebraska may have the worst laws in the United States, on the use of the grand jury system. They contribute to corruption and cover-up, rather than proper investigation and indictment. At an October 14-15, 1991 hearing in the 8th Circuit Court of Appeals in St. Paul, Minnesota, this fact was exploited by the Nebraska Attorney General's Office, which was defending Douglas County Prosecutor Van Pelt and the grand jury foreman in the Franklin case, Michael Flanagan, before a three-judge panel that was questioning them. The state's argument

was that the poor quality and ambiguity of Nebraska state laws on the use of grand juries at the county level should exempt the prosecutor and the foreman from responsibility for any errors or wrongdoing committed by the grand jury.

All grand jury testimony remains sealed. The evidence given here of the jury's role in the cover-up comes from the public domain; it is a fraction of the story.

• • •

Concern that the grand jury was rigged arose even before it was chosen, just as soon as retired judge Van Pelt was named as special prosecutor for the Franklin case at the county level. On March 12, 1990, the *Lincoln Journal* ran a letter from 43 neighbors of the late Cairo, Nebraska farmer and political activist Arthur Kirk, in which they termed Van Pelt "a hired gun for the state." The group charged that Van Pelt had covered up the 1984 death of Kirk at the hands of a State Police SWAT squad, which they called murder. In that case, they wrote, "Van Pelt simply took the statements of the perpetrators, put them in his report and exonerated them of any wrongdoing. He did exactly what he was paid and hired to do."

Gross irregularities in Van Pelt's investigation of Kirk's death were noted by Senator Ernie Chambers and others at the time. The police, for instance, claimed that Kirk fired first. If he had, their claim to have fired in self-defense might have held water; yet no ballistics tests were done to see if Kirk had fired his weapon at all! Kirk's wife charged that she had been used by the state police to lure Kirk out of his house, so he could be gunned down. "I came to realize that they had used me against my own husband. I had been used as a decoy," she was quoted in Lindsey Williams' 1987 book, *Where's the Food?* Despite glaring contradictions in the SWAT team's story, Van Pelt found that the police had acted in self-defense.

The *World-Herald* retaliated against the Cairo citizens' letter, with an all-out defense of Van Pelt. The March 17, 1990 lead editorial, "Van Pelt's Report on Kirk Followed the Evidence," lamented, "The sad fact of the matter is that some

people cling to wild, sensational rumors and conspiracy theories even in the absence of any rational basis."

•

Van Pelt's behavior during the Franklin grand jury was no rumor, but a matter of record. Three people who testified before the grand jury-Paul Bonacci, Alisha Owen, and a young woman called "Jane Doe"-subsequently charged that Van Pelt intimidated them and attempted to force them to change their testimony.

Paul Bonacci testified before the Legislature's Franklin committee on October 16, 1990, about his grand jury experience.

> BONACCI: And the other thing is they kept saying when I was in front of the-that-some-that jury or whatever, they kept telling me to-that if I stuck to my story they were going to make me be in trouble for it.
>
> SENATOR SCHMIT: Who said that?
>
> BONACCI: It was some guy with a-it wasn't in front of everybody, it was when I was getting ready to be taken back upstairs before lunch. They stuck me in this room. He was sitting in this back room behind this desk. He was one of the guys that kept asking me questions.
>
> BEVERLY MEAD (Bonacci's doctor): Well, could you identify this particular man who in-describe him or-
>
> BONACCI: Yeah. He was-had a mustache and I don't know if he had glasses or not. ... He was the guy mainly in charge....
>
> MR. DECAMP (Bonacci's attorney): What did he say to you?
>
> BONACCI: He kind of told me if I just-he said-he kind of said, if you stick to the same story that you have been telling, you will be in a lot of trouble.

The guy with the mustache was Sam Van Pelt.

On June **11,** 1990, Alisha Owen testified to the Franklin committee about what happened when she went before Van Pelt's grand jury.

LEGISLATIVE COUNSEL: First of all, do you have any comment at all about the grand jury and you can-that you would like to tell us without violating your oath to the grand jury?

AUSHA OWEN: It was the hardest three days of my life almost.

COUNSEL: Well, now wait a minute. You've been sexually abused, you've been put into a narcotics situation, you have been in a mental hospital, you have attempted suicide, and you are saying that your appearance before the grand jury was-was more difficult than that, is that correct?

OWEN: It was more exhausting, yes. I would go home and be exhausted. Exhausted.

COUNSEL: I am going to ask a leading question. Were you humiliated, denigrated, degraded, put down?

OWEN: Yes.... I met with them on a Monday and that was just a very short meeting. And then I met with them on a Tuesday, Wednesday and Thursday. That Wednesday I was humiliated, I was put totally on the defense. Totally put on the defense.

COUNSEL: By whom?

OWEN: By I call him the jerk at the end of the table. I believe his name is Dougherty.... I have not seen prosecutors do that in a courtroom the way I was-I was done. I was angry, I was upset. I did not deserve that.

COUNSEL: Your voice is cracking and you are tearing up a little. I am going to stop and ask [Owen's attorney] Mr. Rosenthal a question .... Henry, did you feel that you were given an adequate opportunity to protect your client during the grand jury proceedings?

ROSENTHAL: Well, I was to the extent that I was allowed to. You see, in my opinion they just never asked her any questions at all.... And I think at one time, without getting into it, they asked her do you want to say anything? She says, I'm sorry you never got to the point in three days. It was always go around the circle and it was always accusatory more than trying to get the facts out and let the chips fall where they may. They never gave her an opportunity to go into them, you see.

Although the grand jury was to indict Owen for saying she was sexually abused by Omaha Police Chief Robert Wadman in 1983 and 1984, she said they asked her virtually nothing about those years, about the abuse, or about her detailed description of Wadman's physiognomy.

> OWEN: I-you know, as I said before, they never talked to me about 1983 and 1984. They don't even know what happened. They-they send me into this grand jury, they are calling me a perjurer and they have never even asked me what happened. And when-it's kind of hard for me because I want people to know I'm telling the truth, and sometimes some of the things that you have to tell them about what happened or about the perpetrators is difficult. And it would be, I think, a gross injustice if that evidence was suppressed.
>
> The fact that I know about the bunion or the knot on his little toe and he has hair on his toes, you know, I can tell you exactly how the hair patches on his feet are, it would be a gross injustice if that was suppressed in the grand jury. I think that would-that would be absolutely a crime. Because in the United States today when it comes to those kinds of cases, a lot of times the only way that a victim can actually prove that they were abused is by identifying key marks on that person's body that no one else would know.
>
> A way to call me a liar and a way to say she's not telling the truth would be to suppress that, would be not to watch-I made you a tape describing Rob's body. For the grand jury, I consider that a key piece of evidence. For that to be suppressed I think is a crime. I think that that is willful, knowledgeable suppression of evidence. And to have that done by a prosecutor, I think that's a crime and that's a deliberate cover-up.

Jane Doe recorded her anger with the grand jury in a taped interview with Senator Ernie Chambers, reported on in the *Nebraska Observer* of August 31, 1990:

> She was left with the overwhelming impression that the Grand Jury had wanted only that part of her testimony that might be useful to discredit Alisha Owen. Later, she was to receive phone calls from a male saying she talked too much.

> Since she had moved several times since her partying days, and except for phone calls right after being investigated by the FBI, had not had any such phone calls, she believed that someone connected with the Grand Jury was giving out information.

Jane Doe charged that the grand jury was simply a set-up:

> the fact is also, about half way through my testimony, in front of the Grand Jury, it was, it got to a point where I didn't even trust them. Because of the fact that they did not want to know about Alisha or any of that type of stuff." ...
>
> According to Jane Doe, Van Pelt told her how to testify and why, revealing information about the Grand Jury proceedings that others had been charged to keep secret. ... Van Pelt was said to make some references to Jane Doe's past, including some illegal activities that were blocked out of the transcript, that could have been interpreted by her as a threat to her. She said in the interview, were some things that I had done in my past that I was afraid he was going to charge me with.... Basically he was using me as, like a *dummy witness* because he had figured out that I didn't have or know about any of the information that the Grand Jury was dealing with.... So it just seemed to me like *he was going to use me to discredit Alisha,"* [Emphasis in original.]

• • •

Bonnie Cosentino, a grand jury witness pilloried as one of the "rumormongers," also contacted Senator Chambers to register a complaint. A co-founder of the Concerned Parents group, Cosentino told Chambers she was repeatedly harrassed by Van Pelt's assistant Terry Dougherty outside the jury room. The jury's sole interest, it seemed to her, was to tie her to Michael Casey, a journalist whom the grand jury was to build up as an orchestrator of the "carefully crafted hoax."

Cosentino wrote in her open letter to Chambers, printed in the Omaha *Metro Update:*

> Numerous questions asked by Mr. Van Pelt and Mr. Dougherty, seemed to be accusatory and began with phrases like, "Did you tell Carol Stitt ... " (Foster Care Review Board) and "Did you tell Jerry Lowe ... (former Franklin investigator). I found myself on trial for reporting leads to the proper authorities.
>
> I was questioned relentlessly about Michael Casey, who seemed to be the focus of Mr. Van Pelt's prosecution. I had only met Mr. Casey on two occasions, neither of which were interviews. Mr. Van Pelt and Mr. Dougherty seemed to try over and over again to form some relationship between myself and Mr. Casey which simply did not exist.

Senator Schmit recalled his own appearance before the grand jury, during a Franklin committee hearing on June 21, 1990:

> And it's also sort of interesting, of course, I appeared before the grand jury. I had about 25 minutes for a statement the first time, and they had about that many questions. Mr. Van Pelt said they didn't have any further need for my appearance up there. And I thought that was sort of strange in view of the fact that we spent a year and a half at this, we have spent hundreds and hundreds and hundreds of hours, and [the Franklin committee] could answer all their questions. And I might, without revealing anything that was asked, might add that most of the questions that were asked of me, I think [Franklin committee counsel] Mr. Berry is here, had little or nothing to do with the scope of the investigation.
>
> And the second time around, when I appeared at my request, it was more of the same. And it's a rather disappointing situation when you realize that if you are hunting for something and you do not look where you know the evidence is, you're not going to find it.

In my civil suit, I charged that Van Pelt and Dougherty had even participated in *writing* the grand jury's final report, a practice forbidden by Nebraska law. Jury foreman Michael Flanagan admitted their involvement, as the *World-Herald* reported on August 21, 1990:

> Flanagan emphasized that the grand jurors participated equally and actively in the writing of the report, dividing

> the writing into small groups and then meeting again and again as a whole to "polish and polish" the text.
>
> He said the special prosecutor, Samuel Van Pelt, and his assistant, Terry Dougherty, did not have a disproportionate amount of influence on the writing.
>
> "He (Van Pelt) was with us and he was part of it," Flanagan said. "I'd say he was one-eighteenth of the writing. Everybody had equal chance and equal opportunity. It was a completely joint effort."

The grand jury explained that its failure to subpoena Larry King was due to the probability that King would have invoked his Fifth Amendment right not to incriminate himself. **In** other cases, it was fine with Van Pelt to call witnesses who would take the fifth, as he indicated to Jane Doe in the exchange reported by the *Nebraska Observer:*

> On the return trip home, Mr. Van Pelt told Jane Doe about the "easy day" coming up the next day. When she asked why, he disclosed to her that the witness would "plead the Fifth." She said, told me that he was a homosexual and that he had sex with little boys. And that they would indict him on that, so the fact is that he had to plead the Fifth so he would not get indicted." Van Pelt said it would be an easy day "because he wouldn't have to do anything," except "just sit there and listen to those guys plead the Fifth throughout the questions." ...
>
> That exchange, in addition to consisting of inappropriate disclosure by Mr. Van Pelt, is *sharp contrast to the Jury's refusal to subpoena Larry King,* "because ... he would rely on his right against self-incrimination," and therefore, "it would not be fruitful to attempt to require King to appear before (the Grand Jury)." [Emphasis in original.]

•

Van treatment of Jane Doe caused such a public outcry, that Douglas County prosecutor Ronald Staskiewicz felt compelled to conduct an investigation. He appointed Douglas County Assistant Attorney Robert Sigler. Sigler was very famil-

iar with the Franklin case; he was the prosecuting attorney when Alisha Owen was sentenced to five years in prison for passing $700 in bad checks. He had handled the child molestation trial of *World-Herald* society columnist Peter Citron. After Citron's conviction, Sigler maintained that the Citron case had never been linked with the Franklin investigation "in the beginning, middle, or end. That's not what this case is about." He told the *World-Herald.* "It had nothing to do with Franklin, the evidence uncovered didn't show any link. That's a big misconception."

Neither was Sigler disqualified from responsibility to probe Van Pelt's performance, by the fact that two witnesses to the Legislature's Franklin committee witnesses had placed him in the Franklin case!

On June 10, 1990, Karen Ormiston interviewed one Alice Good*, who had information on pornography and prostitution. Ormiston recorded, "The subject feels that a Douglas County prosecuting attorney identified as Robert Seigler [sic], nicknamed 'Smiley,' is involved with the Franklin case."

Paul Bonacci was more specific, in testimony given to the Franklin committee on June 12, 1990.

> BONACCI: With Larry King I've traveled a lot of times to Kansas City, and that was usually by car. But we used to go up to Sioux City, Iowa and we used to take a-there was a chartered plane. It was called KAM Air or something. And they used to fly us up to Sioux City and we'd stay at a hotel that was right on the river. And he had a boat and stuff we used to go on all the time. And he-we used to go up there for having sex and stuff. ...
>
> SENATOR LYNCH: Were some of the people you met there from the Omaha area, do you remember that?
>
> BONACCI: Yes.
>
> LYNCH: Do you remember some of their names at all?
>
> BONACCI: Joe Caniglia. Guy named Robert Siegler [sic]. Alan Baer was there.

Before he joined the Douglas County prosecutor's office, Sigler had worked for an Omaha law firm, where he handled

the legal affairs of Charlie Rogers, a former lover of Larry King who died an apparent suicide in 1989. **In** the days before his death, Rogers told friends that he was very afraid of what King would do to him, and that if anything happened to him, to contact Robert Sigler. The Douglas County grand jury said it "spent a considerable amount of time investigating all aspects of Rogers' death," but concluded it had nothing to do with Larry King. Sigler's friend and associate in the law firm, Gerald Moran, later also joined the Douglas County attorney's office. **In** 1991, he ran the prosecution of Alisha Owen for perjury.

Sigler promptly reported back to Staskiewicz, that Van Pelt had done nothing wrong.

• • •

From the outset, Paul Bonacci presented a huge obstacle for the Douglas County grand jury. Since Bonacci refused to recant what he had testified to Caradori, Van Pelt's jury was compelled to indict him for perjury, in order to maintain that the story of Franklin-connected abuse was a carefully crafted hoax.

It was difficult to see how Bonacci could have participated with Owen in the fabrication of such a hoax. Caradori did not even meet him until May 10, 1990, and took his videotaped statement for the Franklin committee on May 14-five days after Owen finished testifying before the grand jury. Bonacci's recollections corroborated Alisha's on many points, although he told Caradori that he thought the last time he had spoken with her was in 1986.

Since his testimony supported Owen's, the grand jury had to call Bonacci a liar:

> Bonacci was perhaps the most pathetic witness to appear during the entire proceedings. . .. He has been diagnosed as having multiple personalities, and his psychiatrist doubts that he can tell the truth. His many inconsistencies and contradictions render his testimony unbelievable and necessitate his indictment for perjury.

This tortured formula contained not one, but two contradictions. Obviously, a person who was medically incapable of

telling the truth could not also be guilty of perjury, or deliberate lying under oath. The second error, however, was to cite the alleged opinion of "Bonacci's psychiatrist," who did not appear as a witness before the grand jury. It was a stretch even to apply this label to the doctor in question, Dr. Beverly Mead, since he examined Bonacci on behalf of the Omaha Police Department. But where Dr. Mead did testify, before the Franklin committee, he said he believed Bonacci to be telling the truth!

Dr. Judianne Densen-Gerber, New York-area psychiatrist, lawyer, child abuse expert and member of the International Society of Multiple Personality and Dissociative States, has described the ailment Bonacci suffers from, Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD). It is not a psychosis, she said, but a neurosis, that results from a defense mechanism in the mind of a child seeking to protect himself from "unimaginable atrocity." Virtually all MPD victims were severely abused starting before they were six years old, with tortures such as being hung upside down and having hot objects stuck inside them, or being forced to participate in the murder, mutilation and cannibalism of other children. A child subjected to such terrible emotional and physical pain has no possibity of escape from this "emotional Auschwitz," so his mind, in self-defense, invents another identity at the moment of abuse and suffering. Through this mechanism, the child victim can imagine he is someone else, looking at the pain and betrayal from the outside, as if it were not actually happening to him. As the victim grows older, these different personalities survive in the victim's mind, each having its own age, name, memories and characteristics.

Multiple Personality Disorder is familiar to many people from Flora Rheta Schreiber's book *Sybil,* about the first MPD victim who ever reintegrated her personality through psychoanalysis. "Sybil," tortured since infancy by her mother, first sought a psychiatrist's help as a young woman in Omaha, Nebraska.

Invited to Omaha by the Legislature's Franklin committee, Dr. Densen-Gerber testified on December 29, 1990 about her examination of Paul Bonacci. She was questioned by committee counsel Robert Creager.

CREAGER: Doctor, I believe the grand jury actually went so far as to pin their conclusion on a "fact" that according to testimony Mr. Bonacci was not capable of telling the truth. Do you have a comment on that?

DENSEN-GERBER: I think it would be very difficult for Mr. Bonacci to lie.... Being a multiple personality there is no need to lie, you switch [personalities].... First of all, Mr. Bonacci's story is an average story for someone in Mr. Bonacci's circumstances. There is nothing that Bonacci told me that I haven't heard from other patients or individuals. He has no elaborations and he often says I don't know. He does not fabricate or he does not try to provide answers which most people do because they want to please. He doesn't even give you the impression that he wants to please.

Police-hired psychiatrist Dr. Beverly Mead concurred, when he answered questions from senators and Bonacci's attorney, this writer, at an October 1990 hearing before the Franklin committee.

DECAMP: What do you believe now, Doctor, relative to his discussions here that we've heard and the ones you and I have listened to?

MEAD: I personally feel that these details that he's related to us were experiences that he really experienced....

SENATOR SCHMIT: I have several questions of Dr. Mead. Doctor, we heard the witness in various personalities mention some specific names of persons who were with him at various times, Larry King, Robert Wadman. ... In your professional experience, is there-how do you-I guess my question is do you feel those descriptions are accurate?

MEAD: I would like to see them confirmed from other sources, of course. But it's-it's my present impression that Paul is-or [personality] Alexandrew is reporting things honestly as he remembers them.

SCHMIT: Is there any way that he could have imagined this and dreamed it up and then told it to us here today? Could that have been done?

MEAD: It would be a most phenomenal trick to do that. I don't think it would be possible. I think he's talking about

things that he actually remembers .... In our effort to remember something, sometimes we may say, well, I think so-and-so, and as we think about it we come to believe it. So there might be a few details that are not precisely as happened. But I think basically the story as he tells it is what he is honestly reporting.

SCHMIT: For example, the story about his trip to the Southfork ranch [with Larry King, during the Republican national convention, to be sexually abused], do you believe that story?

MEAD: Yes.

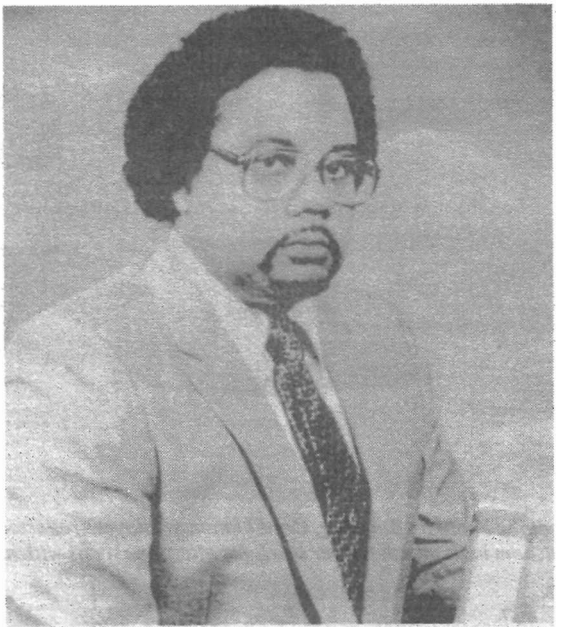
Finally, the credibility of Paul Bonacci is bolstered by his own action in April of 1986, *two years before there was a Franklin case,* when he reported to the Omaha Police Department and to officials of his high school, that he was abused by Harold Andersen, Larry King, Alan Baer, and others. Henry Rosenthal, then Bonacci's attorney, spoke to the Franklin committee about this on June 21, 1990.

ROSENTHAL: I talked to his people at school, you know, because **I – I** had some severe doubts about this fellow telling me about that. But his problem-one day he went kind of outer space in school and they thought it was drugs and it really wasn't. This stuff was really starting to work on him. He just did not want to recruit anymore for Mr. Baer.

SENATOR LABEDZ: He told us that.

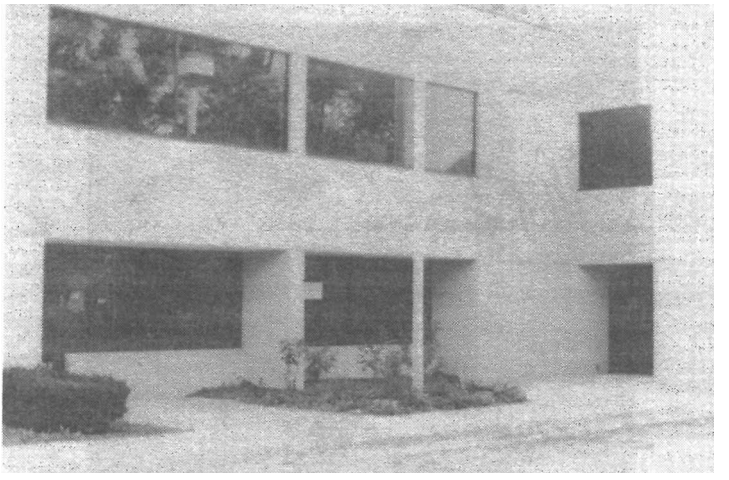
ROSENTHAL: But I talked to the school officials. You are talking about assistant principal at school, how many people, 4,000 students. I talked to his head counselor and they said it's absolutely true. They phone the police department and said he's in the hospital, are you going out to interview him? "No, we have closed the case." When he mentioned those prominent people, those people [school officials] told me you could just see like they closed their eyes and their books and was gone.

THE CREDIT UNION

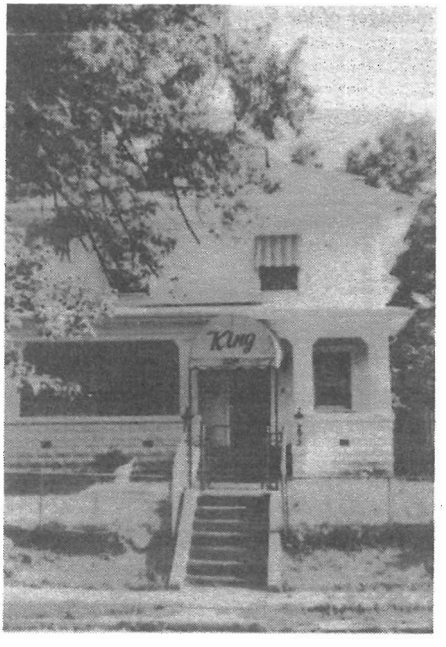


Lawrence E. ("Larry") King. manager of the Franklin Community Federal Credit Union.

Thefonner headquurtcrs of the Franklin Credit Ul/;0l/. ;1/ north Omaha.



The rear of the Franklin Building. Credit union employees reported that King had a bedroom built into the lower level Jar afternoon trysts with homosexual lovers.

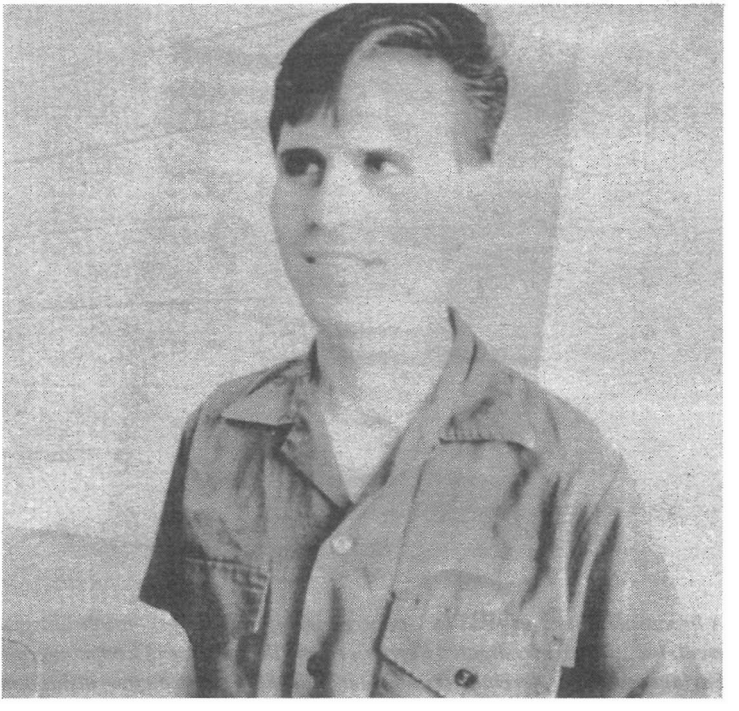


Larry King's house at 207/ Win Street, the address that abuse victim Loretta Smith gave Officer Carmean in 1988, as a location of drug and sex parties.

THE VICTIMS INDICTED

Caporaso Corp.

Alisha Owen on her way to a court appearance.

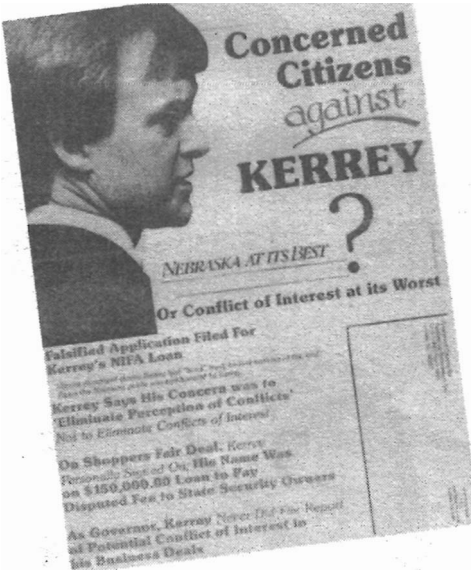


Caporaso Corp.

Paul Bonacci in pr;S(/I1.

THE COMMONWEALTH MODEL

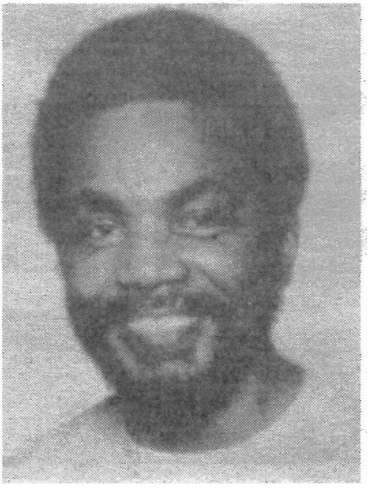
Governor Bob Kerrey oj Nebraska. now a U,S, Senator and presidential candidate, signing a bill in 1986. Directly behind Kerrey Senator john Detlamp, then head oj the Legislature's Banking, Commerce. and insurance committee,



A *broadside issued in 1988 by Concerned Citizens [or Responsible Govern- ment, tnc; which investigated Kerrey' ,r role* ill *the collapse Of Commonwealtlt Savings and his preferentiul treutment Ilf State Security and other institutions owned by his associates. The governor's 1983 press conference about Com- mllnwrulths di ficulties triggered the run on the bank.*

THE FRANKLIN COMMITTEE

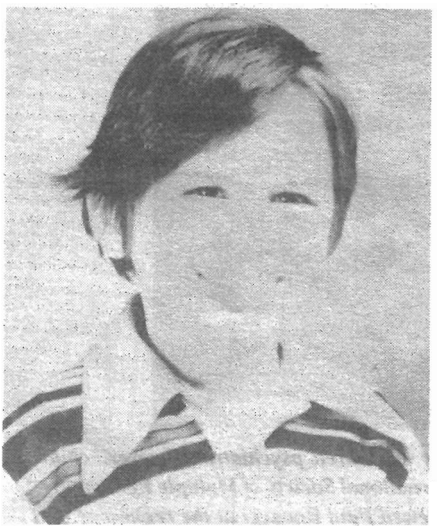
Senator Loran Schmit, chairman of the Nebraska Legislature's Franklin committee. A farmer and a 23-year veteran of the Legislature, Senator Schmit persisted in the Franklin investigation, despite vilification of him in The press, death threats, and attempts to ruin him financially.



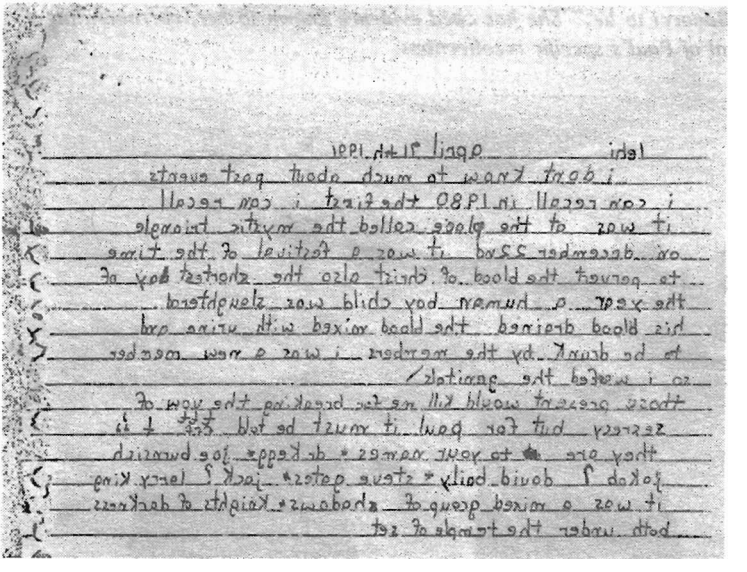
Senator Ernie Chambers, who co-initiated the legislative probe of the Franklin scandal.

The late Gary Caradori, investigator for the Legislature's Franklin committee, with his airplane. He and his eight-year-old son, A.J., died when it crashed on July 11, 1990. "There were a lot of people who wanted to see Gary dead," said Senator Schmit that day.

PAUL BONACCI

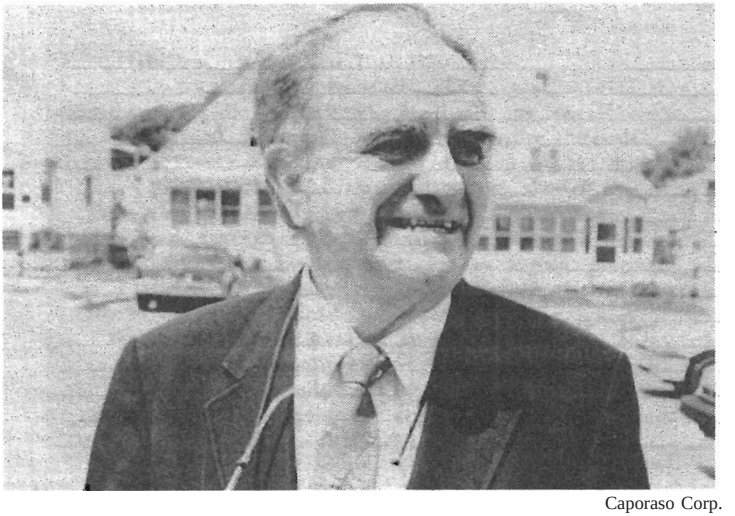


Paul Bonacci as a child. He was abused beginning at the age of six.



A *letter written by one of PallI Bonacci' s personalities, who experienced Satanic cult activity and only writes backwards, If held up 10 a mirror, it can be read in the reflection.*

Dr. Judianne Densen-Gerber, New York-area psychiatrist, lawyer, child abuse expert and member of the International Society of Multiple Personality and Dissociative States. She interviewed Paul Bonacci at the request of the Senare Franklin committee, and testified that "it would he very difficult for Mr. Bonacci to lie." She has cited evidence known to her, corroborating several of Paul's specific recollections.



Caporaso Corp.

Dr. Beverly Mead. psychiatric consultant to the Omaha Police Department. examined Bonacci for the OPD and was the first to diagnose his Multiple Personality Disorder. Mead has said many times. that Paul is telling the truth.

THE GRAND JURY AND THE *OMAHA WORLD-HERALD*

Omaha World-Herald

WEDNESDAY

25c Nebraska Edition

Grand Jury Says Abuse Stories Were a 'Carefully Crafted Hoax'

Three Indicted; Many Rumors Are Debunked

By Robert Dorr and Gabriella Stern

Schmit Rejects Report, Defends His Committee

By Henry J. Cordes

The Omaha **World-Herald** *front page of July* 25, *1990. two days after the Douglas County grand jury indicted the Franklin victim-witnesses, trumpets its "hoax" conclusion, The front-page pictures highlighted Senator Schmit, Alisha Owen, and multi-millionaire socialite Alan Baer. Named by Franklin victim-witnesses as an abuser, Baer was indicted by the Douglas County grand jury for "pandering" unrelated to Franklin. He pleaded guilty to a lesser charge, paid a $500 fine, and went free.*

Roller-Coaster Ride in Public Eye Cost Too Much, Wadman Says

By Robert Dorr

After the Douglas County ***grand*** *jury redefined "Owen as the perpetrator and Wadman as the victim," the* World-Herald *labored to repair former Omaha Police Chief Robert Wadman's reputation. This feature appeared November 18, /990.*

Sunday World-Herald

Editorial Page

Unsigned articles are the opinion of the World-Herald

Grand Jury Did Its Job; The Insults Are Intolerable

26 Thursday, August 2, 1990

Omaha World-Herald

Editorial Page

Unsigned articles are the opinion of the World-Herald

Committee Rushed to Judgment

Schmit Panel Can't Duck Its Responsibility in Hoax

Loren Schmit is frantically rewriting history as he urges the public to believe that his Franklin committee doesn't deserve the criticism it was given by the Douglas County grand jury.

During an Omaha radio talk show Tuesday, Schmit gave his committee credit for uncovering "the Franklin mess." Referring to what he said were the committee's continuing plans to receive "evidence" and to "put it together properly and deliver it to the proper authorities," he said: "I have not yet deviated from that and I'm not going to."

Senator Schmit, you and other people connected with the committee haven't been putting evidence together properly since the day committee investigator Gary Caradori made the videotapes that became part of the Franklin story.

The videotapes contained parts of interviews in which three young adults told Caradori an implausible, lurid story of child abuse, sexual exploitation and drug violations. Two of the three have since admitted that they lied; the grand jury indicted the third for perjury.

Leaks started soon after Schmit, in what would be instantly recognized as unprofessional conduct if it occurred at a professional criminal investigation, held a press conference and announced that the videotapes existed. He said he believed the stories.

Names of prominent Omaha men became the subject of rumor and speculation. John DeCamp, a long-time associate of Schmit who later bragged that he had crafted one of the resolutions that established Schmit's committee, came out with a memo in which he said "the most powerful and rich public personalities of the state are the central figures in the investigation."

DeCamp named

would "take no responsibility for the gossip and rumors." They claimed that the committee had "maximized its investigative files . . . with adequate security to prevent unauthorized access." To do otherwise, they said, could result in "innocent persons being smeared." And they said they didn't have "the responsibility of making determinations about the sufficiency of the evidence."

That is what they said. But almost from the day Schmit gleefully announced the existence of the videotapes, the chairman and other committee members have been publicly expressing judgments, saying they found the stories on the videotapes to be believable and expressing frustration that authorities hadn't filed criminal charges.

The other day we listed examples of Schmit's irresponsible rush to the judgment that the witnesses were credible. Here are other examples:

By April, after two of the "victim-witnesses" told federal investigators they had lied to Caradori, Schmit was still urging the public to believe the stories. Commenting on the recantations, he said: "I don't know if the witnesses are telling the whole truth or part of the truth, but they appear credible to me."

He said that "our sympathies have been with the victims of the alleged crimes, not the alleged perpetrators."

It turns out that more than sympathy may have been extended. Attorney Pamela Vuchetich, who represented the three young adults and still represents one of them, says that Caradori furnished food and lodging for two of the three for part of the winter and that he expected to be reimbursed by the committee

able, he was insinuating that "money is being spent" to block the indictments of prominent people.

The more such statements were repeated, the more some Nebraskans believed the wild tale of a sex-and-drug ring and cover-up involving prominent Omaha individuals and institutions. The more innocent people were harmed. National news organizations helped spread the libel outside Nebraska.

How ironic it was Saturday when the committee attempted to knock down the grand jury's conclusion that the Caradori videotapes were a carefully crafted hoax and that Caradori's methods were flawed. The committee said the people on the videotapes had been asked to state their allegations under oath and to affirm that they hadn't been threatened or offered inducements for their stories.

"The committee could not reasonably have done anything more," its statement said.

Yes, it could have done more. Just a day later, Schmit acknowledged a major flaw in Caradori's procedure. Schmit said he wished that the three people who told the videotaped stories had been given lie-detector tests.

The senator, of course, was finally right. But by then the damage had been done.

Friday: The Franklin Leaks

The World-Herald used cartoons to amplify the grand jury's charges that the Franklin accusations were a "hoax" based on "rumor." Its editorials heaped abuse on the Legislature's Franklin committee for pursuing the investigation.

THE AK-SAR-BEN CROWD

The exclusive Ak-Sar-Ben club, comprised of the leading figures in the business community, flaunts its bizarre rituals in its own publicity material. A 1967 book on Ak-Sar-Ben by Arvid E. Nelson, Jr., commissioned by the Ak-Sar-Ben Board of Governors, displayed this picture of a 1923 Ak-Sar-Ben festivity, showing male Ak-Sar-Ben members dressed as Egyptian ar_ ing girls dancing.

They Give to Omaha, State' 12/9/90

'Ak Knights Don't Control City'

The author is chief executive officer of ConAgra and chairman of the Ak-Sar-Ben Board of Governors.

By Charles M. "Mike" Harper

In recent days, Mayor P.J. Morgan has made numerous comments regarding the possible sale of Ak-Sar-Ben. There is one specific statement made by the mayor that was intermingled with other emotion- and headline-grabbing comments that I would like to address.

Morgan said, "Frankly, I am sick and tired of a small handful of people who think they can control this city and county without regard to feelings, sentiments and desires of the honest, hard-working people who are the real foundation of this community."

I am puzzled by this comment because from all I have heard and read, I think it is safe to assume that the mayor is talking about the Ak-Sar-Ben board and councillors. The Knights of Ak-Sar-Ben don't control this city. They give to this city and state, and have done so for 98 years.

The members of the board and council don't need a pat on the back, but most assuredly they don't deserve a slap in the face.

Let me take you for a moment on a journey through Omaha and the state. This journey probably won't grab headlines, but I believe it is one that the ... ens of this city

> The Board of Governors and councillors of Ak-Sar-Ben 'don't need a pat on the back, but most assuredly they don't deserve a slap in the face.'

City Roundup Parade. The River City Roundup festival is a tremendous city and statewide event tying all of Nebraska together. The Knights of Ak-Sar-Ben began it and continue to be major supporters.

On our journey, the River City Roundup Parade goes right by the Orpheum Theater, a theater that was all but dead until the Knights of Ak-Sar-Ben stepped forward to help in its renovation.

We continue southward now on our journey to the Henry Doorly Zoo, one of America's most outstanding zoos. It, too, was almost dead when the Knights of Ak-Sar-Ben contributed a half-million dollars to get it back on its feet.

The journey continues south, and we see such places as Fontenelle Forest, Bellevue College and Offutt Air Force Base ... all three have been beneficiaries of Knights of Ak-Sar-Ben support.

"...evue College reminds me of ...we head to yet another ...has received

*In this December 9, 1990 World-Herald article, the Ak-Sar-Ben Board of Governors chairman, ConAgra CEO Mike Harper, defended the Organi_*

This spread in the November 1991 Metro Monthly, *based on Ak-Sar-Ben publicity photos of its 95th coronation ball, showed Union Pacific Railroad chairman Michael Walsh and CEO Walter Scott of Peter Kiewit and Sons, the construction company, in attendance. The Union Pacific* ***Foundation*** *and* ***the*** *Kiewit Foundation were depositors in and contributors to the Franklin Credit Union. Wearing* ***the*** *crown and long train is former Nebraska* ***Game*** *and Parks Commissioner Eugene Mahoney, King of Ak-Sar-Ben for 1991. One of the most powerful politicians in the state, Mahoney was investigated by Gary Caradori.*

14 · OMAHA WORLD-HERALD Tuesday, October 17, 1989

Andersens Get Award in D.C.

Nebraskans in D.C. Honor Couple

Harold, Marian Andersen Share Award

Plaque Replaced by Statuette Designed by Nebraska Native

1989 Midlander of the Year

Harold W. Andersen: A Native Son's Sto,y

By Robert Dorr

ld Andersen, The World-Herald of,ekn"P case healed up, as adviser 10 Ihf ,V : Boord of ,he especially as he Fron In millee on he Advisory D ive, of Ihe Wor ld Pres. Freedom com, choirmon of f undraising dr of State, Harold Andersen wa: d hea ed Franklin s bigges d', Union an Franklin Cre

THE WASHINGTON CONNECTION

Furious feds make shocking charge against high-flying hotshot:

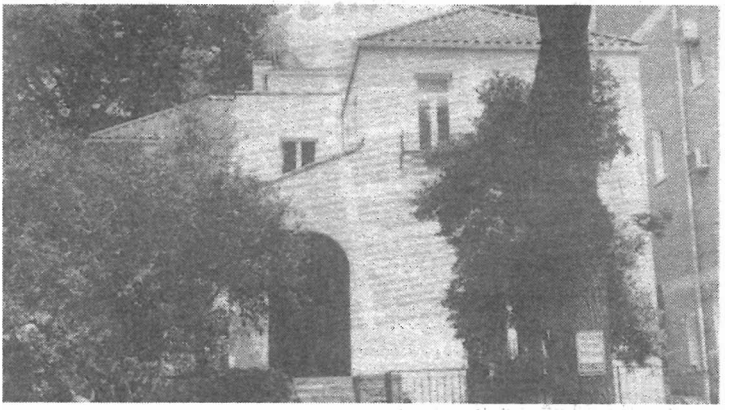
Ritzy 'Robbing Hood' stole from the poor

. . . & made HIMSELF rich!

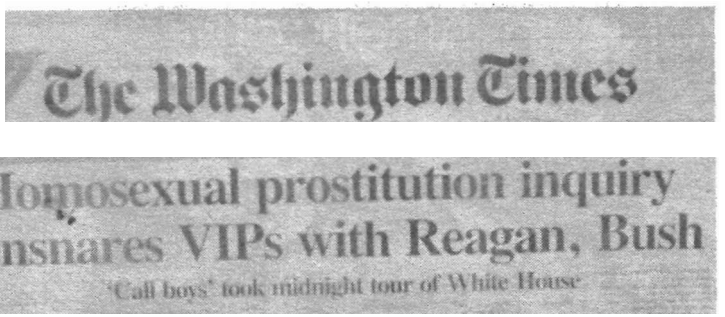
By PETE COOKE

Free-spending political hotshot Lawrence King's life in the fast lane came to a screeching halt when federal authorities charged that he financed his high-rolling ways with money he ripped off from the poor.

Larry King's party-giving at the Republican national conventions was the stuff of tabloid headlines, as this write-up in the Weekly World News *of July 25, 1989 showed. The picture shows King with Maureen Reagan at his 1984 convention party at Southfork Ranch, near Dallas.*



House on California Avenue. off "Embassy Row" D.C.. rented by Larry King for $5,000 a month, King's parties here were attended by officials of the Reagan-Bush Administration and members of Congress from both parties, according


The Washington Times

Homosexual prostitution inquiry ensnares VIPs with Reagan, Bush

'Call boys' took midnight tour of White House

The front page of the Washington Times, *June* 29. *1989.*

The Washington Times

WEDNESDAY, JULY 5, 1989 WASHINGTON, D.C. 25 cents

Top Japanese politician linked to Spence

Press 'watchdogs' forgot to bark

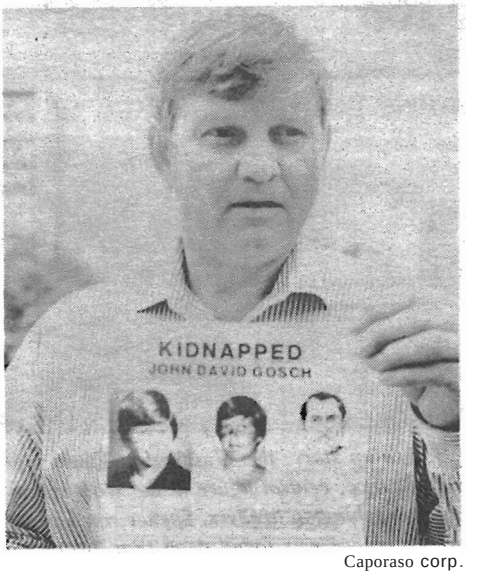
Considered LDP choice for premier

Tokyo's trade chief urges party to quit

In a July 5. *1989 follow-up story, the* Washington Times *highlighted the connections of Craig Spence. central figure in the WIl\hington "mil boy" scandal, According 10 Washington insiders, Spence ran a prostitution business with Larry King. Spence was found dead ina Boston hotel room* in *1989.*

THIS CASE IS NOT CLOSED

A 1982 *by David Thorstadt of the North American Man-Boy Love Association (NAMBLA). whose slogan is "Sex before 8. or it's too late," Paul Bonacci testified to being transported and abused by NAMBLA.*



Caporaso corp.

John Gosch. Sr. with a poster of his missing son. In 1983. at the age of 12'r Johnny Gosch was kidnaped while on his newspaper route in Des Moines, Iowa. In 1990 and 1991. Paul Bonacci provided dramatic new information on the Gosch case.

Jill Cutshall, 9 years old, was kidnaped from her home in Norfolk, Nebraska in 1987. She was never seen ***again****. Investigator Roy* ***Stephens helped*** *trace David Phelps, who was convicted of abducting* ***her*** *for sexual abuse. In* 1991*, Stephens investigated and confirmed leads provided by Paul Bonacci on other major kidnaping and abuse cases.*

The Italian weekly Avvenimenti*, circulation 300.000,* ***printed*** *an explosive* ***expose*** *of the Franklin scandal. The authors* ***were*** *Italian investigative journalists. who* ***visited*** *Nebraska in May 1991.*

Caporaso Corp,

The Rev. James Bevel, dose associate of the late Dr. Marlin Luther King, Jr., leads a picket line during 1991, against the cover-up of child abuse in Omaha.

An entrance 10 the Nebraska State Capitol. Over the door is inscribed: "The salvation of the slate is watchfulness in the citizen."

CHAPTER 12

THE OMAHA BUSINESS COMMUNITY

Senator Schmit warned the Franklin committee at the outset, not to expect to breeze through an investigation like this. "No one person," he told the Executive Board session of December 12, 1988, "could have masterminded this without the compliance and the acquiescence and cooperation of a number of people, some of whom had to be in official positions.... I do not want anyone to say I want to be on this committee, then all of a sudden say, wait a minute, I don't want to walk through that mine field with you, because that is what it will very likely prove to be."

Senator Chambers, who represented the black district of north Omaha where Franklin was headquartered, agreed: "What Larry King is doing is the tip of an iceberg and he's not in it by himself. One thing I told the Attorney General ... is that I don't want Larry King to commit suicide and I don't want any accidents that will take him out. What he's doing he has not done by himself and couldn't do by himself."

With over forty years in the Legislature between them, Schmit and Chambers knew whereof they spoke. Behind Larry King's rise to fame and riches stood some of the most powerful figures in Nebraska politics and finance.

Larry King himself bragged about his connections. "I felt that I could call anyone in this city," he told the TV interviewer who questioned him about favors from Chief Wadman. In a September 7, 1988 interview with the Omaha weekly *Metropol-*

itan, before the Franklin Credit Union scandal broke, King was more expansive about his friends:

> They were the key to my success. I had really great, great people who were counselors and teachers, who were over some of the major companies in the city. And I would go to them and ask them what they thought I should do and sometimes they would come and sit down or send someone out to talk with us. Harold Andersen of the *World-Herald* was one of the great people who came out. Bill Fitzgerald at Commercial Federal Savings and Loan. I called him once years ago when we were in a crisis and he said, "I'Il be there at 7:30 tomorrow morning." And so he was. So I have to say the Omaha power structure has some of the best people to work with. They'll help you if they're convinced you want to help Omaha. They don't tum their backs: they have never done it to me. And I appreciate it because I like being a part of what makes this city grow, and this country.

Had the "Omaha power structure" merely extended a liberal hand to a young black man trying to get ahead? For some of the city's elite, perhaps that's all there was to it.

Days and even weeks after the raid, some of Franklin's backers were still defending King. The *World-Herald* of November 9, 1988 quoted its own publisher, Harold Andersen, Ken Power of US West Communications, and Lyn Wallin Ziegenbein of the Kiewit Foundation, in praise of King. "Until the day it closed, Franklin was performing a useful purpose," Harold Andersen said on November 30, 1988.

Yet someone making even a casual inquiry-such as a businessman might be expected to do before he contributed or deposited hundreds of thousands of dollars in a credit union-would quickly hear the kind of warning Boys Town social worker Julie Walters did, when she asked around about King. They would have heard he was a dangerous man, and they would have heard about pornography, drugs, and pedophilia. Some, at least, of these "great people" from the major companies, had to know precisely what they were doing when they sponsored Larry King.

• • •

In Gary Caradori's files is the transcript of a February 12, 1989 phone conversation with Sheila McGuire, aka Sheila Calder, former manager of the French Cafe, who had moved to the West Coast. This night spot, partly owned by Larry King, was named by victim-witnesses as a center of sexual abuse. Alisha Owen told Caradori that "Sheila Calder would arrange parties at the French Cafe during the afternoon when the cafe was closed."

Here is what the hostess had to say:

> We had parties in my apartment above the French Cafe. Larry King would wine and dine potential investors downstairs at the Cafe. When the French Cafe closed about 1 AM, King and his man called Parking Lot Bob-who worked for him (and was our coke connection)-would bring people upstairs to my place. If Larry King investors wanted drugs, booze, children or hookers (male or female) we'd get them. While these guests of Kings took their pleasures-with the kids or whoever-King would sit and watch-while he drank, did coke and played with his young boys....
>
> One time, when this guy Irv from NYC wanted Sandra-who was about 12 or 13 years old and getting her 1st period, Larry intervened when Sandra refused. King pulled out a roll of $100.00 bills and gave Sandra 5 of them. King then pulled out a small gram of coke and gave that to Sandra. Sandra finally agreed and went off to bed with Irv.
>
> King took good care of the local and out of town high rollers. If you had the money to invest at Franklin, King would cater to your most deranged perversion. And, let me tell you another thing. The boys in the board rooms around Omaha are s---ing in their Brogans. If this case gets cracked open the list of involved will read like Who's Who. King and his crew have ruined a lot of childrens' lives.

• • •

Two years after the raid on King's credit union, as the legislative Franklin committee's original term drew to a close, an old hand in Nebraska politics reflected on the events of the past 24 months. "The Omaha business community," he said,

"the Ak-Sar-Ben crowd, has really closed ranks behind Alan Baer, Andersen and the rest of them. The word has gone out: layoff the Franklin investigation. Most of the Senators are terrified. These guys make and break political careers. They give a lot of campaign money, and many of the Senators get what are generously called 'consulting fees,' or sometimes positions-no-show jobs, really-with the big firms up there. That's the way it's done. It's not uncommon for a big company to have more than one Senator on a $50,000 retainer."

Who were "these guys," the Ak-Sar-Ben crowd?

Visit the Omaha Public Library to look up the boards of directors of big Omaha companies, and you will find names that are listed on board after board. Take a few of those-say, Walter Scott, Jr., chairman and CEO of the construction giant, Peter Kiewit and Sons Corporation; Charles "Mike" Harper, chairman and CEO of the $20 billion per year food conglomerate ConAgra; Michael H. Walsh, CEO of Union Pacific Railroad, a major force in Nebraska for over a hundred years-and ask the librarian to help find information on these men. The reply will likely be something like what one library staffer told a friend of mine in 1991: "These are businessmen all right, but they are intensely secretive. We have very little on them."

For over a century, the Omaha business community has been organized around the Knights of Ak-Sar-Ben, a quasi-freemasonic social organization, centered on a racetrack and fairgrounds in Omaha. Spell "Nebraska" backwards and you get its name. Founded in 1895, Ak-Sar-Ben functions as a sort of central committee of the corporate elite, and a self-perceived oligarchy for the city.

Every year Ak-Sar-Ben celebrates a ritual coronation of the "King of Ak-Sar-Ben,' generally an older corporate executive, and his Queen, generally the younger wife or daughter of another man in the club. The king for 1990 was Mike Harper of ConAgra. Here, and at debutante balls and other affairs organized for the younger generation, the lords and ladies of Ak-Sar-Ben establish their social pecking order. The rituals and "den shows" mimic ceremonies from different lands, real and invented, and always pagan. Past Ak-Sar-Ben festivity

themes included: "The Roman Hippodrome," "King Arthur's Wild Goats," "Trouble in the Tropics," and "Hi-Jinx in Hades." Sometimes the men and boys of Ak-Sar-Ben paraded in women's clothing, or dressed as Egyptian goddesses.

Ak-Sar-Ben's clout is so legendary, that Omaha Mayor P.J. Morgan, himself a member of the Ak-Sar-Ben social set, could make political hay by a demagogic attack on it. In 1990, during a squabble with Ak-Sar-Ben over where a new stadium would be constructed, Morgan blustered, "Frankly, I'm just sick and tired of a small handful of people who think that they can control this city and county without regard to feelings, sentiments and desires of the honest, hard-working people who are the real foundation of this city."

Sensitive to this widespread perception, ConAgra's Harper, speaking as chairman of Ak-Sar-Ben's Board of Governors, replied in a special *World-Herald* column on December 9, 1990, "Ak Knights Don't Control City." Just because the individuals and corporations on Ak-Sar-Ben's board had given over $50 million to various causes over the past 20 years, wrote Harper, ticking off a list of most of the public facilities in Omaha, that did not mean they had clout. am at a loss to see how contributions to reputable charities can be associated with political power."

Harper's own company flaunted its political power over the city and the state, just a few years ago. According to "Omaha Held Hostage," a May 1989 article in *Progressive* magazine, ConAgra threatened in 1987, to pull out of Omaha, unless the city granted it a choice piece of free land, sewage, paving and a host of other benefits, which will ultimately total as much as $60 million, for a new corporate headquarters. The city acquiesced. Later the same year, when the Nebraska Legislature was on the verge of removing personal property tax exemptions on purchases of jet airplanes and mainframe computers, Harper put out the word to the legislature: Change the tax bill, or ConAgra leaves Nebraska. The bill was changed.

• • •

Ak-Sar-Ben has been ruled for decades by its Board of Governors, a roster of sixteen influentials (increased to twenty, in 1990, "to better represent the entire community," according to Mike Harper), most of whom are chief executives of major corporations. In the late 1980s, the board included:

Charles "Mike" Harper, President and CEO, ConAgra
William A. Fitzgerald, President and CEO, Commercial Federal Savings and Loan
Bruce Lauritzen, President, First National Bank of Omaha
David A. Rismiller, Chairman and CEO, FirsTier Financial, Inc.
Walter Scott, Jr., President and CEO, Peter Kiewit & Sons, Inc.
Thomas J. Skutt, Chairman and CEO, Mutual of Omaha
Michael H. Walsh, Chairman, Union Pacific Railroad
Michael Yanney, Chairman and CEO, America First Cos.

These corporations poured millions into the Franklin Credit Union, in the form of deposits and outright contributions. Their executives supported King, in arrangements both informal and formal.

Bill Fitzgerald, Knight of Ak-Sar-Ben and president of Commercial Federal Savings and Loan, helped his friend Larry King with advice. When the jig was up for Franklin and the Consumer Services Organization, King's close associate CSO director Barbara Moore could find employment with Walter Scott's wife, Sue.

Mutual of Omaha placed funds in the credit union, while Thomas Skutt, chief executive of this insurance giant, co-chaired a $1.3 million fundraising drive for Franklin, with Harold Andersen.

The Franklin Credit Union had two boards. The small, governing board included Larry King, Jarrett Webb and James C. Hart, Jr., the secretary, who were named as child abusers by victim-witnesses before the Legislature's Franklin committee. The firms run by the Knights of Ak-Sar-Ben, along with other

prestigious Omaha corporations and law firms, showed up on the larger, "Advisory Board."

On the Franklin Community Federal Credit Union Advisory Board were:

Chairman Harold Andersen, publisher, World-Herald
Rep. Hal Daub (R-2nd Congressional District)
N.P. Dodge II, President, N.P. Dodge Real Estate
Lamont Wallin, Kutak, Rock, & Huie law finn
L.B. Thomas, Vice President, ConAgra
Jerome Jamrog, Senior Vice President, Commercial Federal Savings and Loan
Arnold Nesbitt, Senior Assistant Manager, Union Pacific Railroad
David Hinton, Assistant Dean, College of Public Affairs, University of Nebraska, Omaha
Louis Lamberty. County Surveyor
Samuel Marvin, President, R-Lynn, Inc., Council Bluffs, Iowa
Leslie McAuley, Supervisor, Director of Quality Control, Northwest Bell
Donald Miller, Vice President, Omaha National Bank
Carolyn Rothery, Byrne & Randall, P.c., Omaha
Dale Wolforth, Vice President (ret.), Murray State Bank
John S. Zeilinger, attorney, Baird-Holz, Omaha
Michael Albert, President, Albert Food Brokerage
Angelo Amato, General Superintendent Customer Records Department. M.U.D.
David Ambrose, Professor, Department of Marketing, University of Nebraska, Omaha
Joseph Barker III, Massachusetts Mutual Insurance Company
Dana "Woody" Bradford, Bradford, Coenen, & Ashford
Leo Eisenstatt, Erickson, Sederstrom, Leigh, Eisenstatt, Johnson, Kinnamon
James Healy, Administrator of Urban Affairs, Northern Natural Gas

L.B. "Red" Thomas headed up finances for ConAgra, which put funds into Franklin certificates of deposit. Union Pacific,

and its executives acting as individuals, poured in money, while Union Pacific officer Arnold Nesbitt sat on the board.

Ak-Sar-Ben interfaced with the Franklin credit union proper, but also with individuals in the orbit of Larry King. One of its biggest financial contributors in recent years was the department store heir and child abuser, Alan Baer. Catering for Ak-Sar-Ben was Gary West, bartender from the Max gay bar.

• • •

As the Legislature geared up to investigate the credit union, its lofty advisors began to jump ship. At the Legislature's Executive Board meeting of December 12, 1988, Senator Chambers captured the picture:

> This situation will be like the Nazi regime after it failed, nobody saw Hitler. nobody knew who Hitler was, but one kid once saw an old man who one time knew a guy who talked to a guy who saw a car drive by with curtains on it and somebody said Hitler was in that car. That's the way this is going to be, nobody knows anything, nobody has seen anything, nobody knows why investigations in the past, by the federal government, were terminated.

Sure enough, over the next months one board member after another would appear on the pages of the *World-Herald,* to deny he had really had anything to do with Franklin. Virtually nobody from the powerful firms that channeled funds to Franklin and advisers to its board, was ever questioned by the Franklin committee about his relations with the credit union. Once again, according to one veteran politician, the whiff of a ConAgra payoff was in the air: Those who helped cut short the Franklin investigation would receive campaign funding from ConAgra, and those who pursued it would not.

For some of the Franklin board members, the ties to Larry King were too close to hide. Gary Caradori questioned one of them, Joseph Barker III of Massachusetts Mutual Insurance Co., on March 1, 1990. He wrote up their exchange:

> At 1400 this writer arrived at the Massachusetts Mutual Insurance Company located at 90th and Dodge, Omaha, Nebraska, and contacted Mr. Joe Barker. Mr. Barker then did admit to writing policies for Larry King and his family. He stated that as far as he knew, he handled all of Larry King's life insurance. Mr. Barker stated that he had known Larry King for many years. He was not certain how they met, however, they did share some duties on church committees and possibly several other boards.... When my questioning started to center around social gatherings, Mr. Barker indicated with a nervous gesture that yes, he had been to some social events with Larry King, but that everything was always "on the up and up." He stated that throughout his friendship with Larry, everything was always "straight" and that he had never seen anything out of the ordinary.

To the trained investigator, something didn't sit quite right. Caradori observed:

> This investigator noted that Mr. Barker seemed extremely uneasy while this writer was present. Further investigation will be conducted reference this matter.

In other cases, Franklin Advisory Board members were one step removed from personal contact with King. One person from a company would sit on the board, while somebody else was more directly in touch. The law firm Byrne & Randall (credit union board member Carolyn Rothery) fit this pattern. Joseph Byrne handled much of King's legal business early in his career, and King used Byrne as a personal reference on credit applications, according to a February 17, 1989 report by Jerry Lowe. Byrne's partner, Gary Randall, was the lawyer who negotiated Jarrett and Barbara Webb's way out of trouble in 1986.

Erickson, Sederstrom, Leigh, Eisenstatt, Johnson, Kinnamon (credit union board member Leo Eisenstatt) was retained by King and the credit union for various matters. Quoted by James Traub in a December 1991 article in *Gentlemen's Quarterly,* Leo Eisenstatt recalled, "The Kings came to our house for dinner, and we went to their house. We were one big, happy family."

An employee of Erickson, Sederstrom, Leigh, Eisenstatt, et al., Jay Derr, came to the attention of Caradori and the Franklin committee, in connection with King's sexual escapades. Caradori received reports from at least two sources, that Derr had taken a private flight with King to the 1988 Republican National Convention, where King organized one of his sex parties. In his notes of March 29, 1990, Caradori reported a local law enforcement officer receiving call from the DEA in D.C. requesting help on Jay Derr." Then Paul Bonacci testified about him before the Franklin committee on June 12, 1990.

> SENATOR LYNCH: Does the name Jay Derr mean anything to you?
>
> BONACCI: Yeah, Derr I know. Jason Derr.
>
> SENATOR SCHMIT: Why is that name familiar to you?
>
> BONACCI: Well, there was a guy that was at some parties and stuff, he told me his name was Jason Derr. And that's all I remember. I mean, because he was having-you know, he asked me questions a lot and then he took me out sometimes, a couple times, and gave me money and-
>
> SENATOR SCHMIT: Did you have sex with Jason Derr?
>
> BONACCI: Yes.
>
> SCHMIT: More than once?
>
> BONACCI: Yes.... probably four or five.
>
> SCHMIT: Do you know of any other young lads that he had sexual contact with or among your acquaintanceship.
>
> BONACCI: Can't be positive, but I think a kid named Mark Powers. And I'm not sure if it was Danny or Troy, Danny King or Troy Boner.

• • •

Among the backers and contacts of Larry King and the Franklin Credit Union, certain stand-outs deserve special attention. These are Harold Andersen and his *World-Herald,* former state Game and Parks Commissioner Eugene Mahoney, Omaha multibillionaire Warren Buffett, FirstTier Bank, Union Pacific

Railroad, the famous Boys Town orphanage, and the Omaha Girls Club.

• • •

Harold Andersen was King's biggest backer in the Omaha business community. He chaired Franklin's Advisory Board and co-chaired its fundraising drive, starting in 1983. These money-raising efforts lost some of their luster in 1989, when it was revealed that the money was used to build an addition to the credit union, the most prominent feature of which was a bedroom. The retreat was equipped with brass bed, a fluffy white comforter, a stereo and a television," according to former Franklin employee Noel Seltzer, quoted in the March 5, 1989 Lincoln *Journal.* Others said King used it for afternoon trysts with his homosexual lovers.

Andersen claimed that he did not know there was a bedroom in the addition he raised the money for, but Seltzer had a specific recollection, reported in the *Village Voice:* "When the addition opened, credit union employees say, Andersen gave guided tours of the new building. 'He always walked by the door and it was open,' says Noel Seltzer, a former employee. 'He knew there was a bedroom in there, he had to see it. We did.' " Seltzer told the *Lincoln Journal,* that during Andersen's opening-day tour, "the door to the bedroom was open, ... although it was kept locked after that and the room was off limits to employees."

For years before the fall, Andersen's *World-Herald* chronicled the great works of Larry King and his associates. Its magazine, *The Midlands,* ran a feature article in 1983, full of praise for Franklin board member Jarrett Webb and his wife Barbara as model foster parents.

The paper's incessant PR work for King, before and after the collapse of Franklin, was bitterly resented by many in Omaha's black community, as Senator Chambers said at the Executive Board session of December 12, 1988:

> This man that the *World-Herald* has pussy-footed around and tried to hold up as a role model for our children, a leader

> in our community, is a gross insult to us ... and I get tired of seeing *World-Herald* headlines about the leader of the credit union, things that try to indicate that he typifies what our community is.... In the community there is outrage that the appearance seems to be to try to keep this man looking like a decent, upstanding citizen. One of the pictures you'll see is where he was catering something for one of the Christ Child centers in Omaha to make it look like he's a great guy. You'll see an article that talks about how generously he gave for AIDs research. If I'm stealing your money, it is easy for me to be generous with that money. In the black community $100 for the Boys Club, $100 for the Girls Club. For a gay outfit in Washington, D.C., $18,000 at a pop.... So the reason I'm saying this is to indicate that I believe that the *World-Herald* tried to cover up.

When Franklin collapsed, the newspaper viciously attacked victim-witnesses, parents, senators, and anyone else who persisted in seeking an investigation of the child abuse charges.

It was company policy to protect the pedophiles, admitted *World-Herald* reporter Gabriella Stem in 1990. Asked why the *World-Herald* did not print information Stem herself had discovered about a young homosexual tied to Alan Baer, Stern shouted, in the presence of other reporters in the statehouse corridor, that "we have to protect the little fag because he would lead to the big fag," namely Baer. (When I mentioned Stern's exclamation, on a radio station KKAR program, *World-Herald* publisher Woody Howe called me to deny Stern said any such thing. But Stem herself confirmed to me that she had. Soon afterwards, she left the *World-Herald* to work for the *Wall Street Journal.)*

• •

Harold Andersen volunteered his fund-raising talents also for the Nebraska Wildlife Federation, a private entity established in honor of his close friend, former State Game and Parks Commission head Eugene Mahoney. The latter was to figure many times during the Franklin investigation, including when

Alisha Owen testified he was present at Larry King's sex parties.

Mahoney worked on the OPO vice squad before he entered politics and became known as the "godfather" of many a political career.

In fact, Gene Mahoney was the godfather of my own political career. I conducted my first successful election campaign, from Vietnam where I was an infantry captain, without ever setting foot in the United States. The publicity about that was important to my election, but there was another, secret powerful factor. Senator Gene Mahoney had become arch enemies with the senator I was running against, Bill Wylie. I chanced to fit perfectly into Mahoney's plans against Wylie.

Back in Nebraska, while I was shooting at and being shot at by Viet Cong, Gene Mahoney was working for my election. He was to remind me later, that I never would have been a senator if not for him.

Mahoney made politicians, and he destroyed them. Ask former Omaha Mayor Mike Boyle, the only mayor of Omaha ever recalled from office. Mahoney engineered that recall.

He worked behind the scenes, so that no one was ever able to pin the tail on the donkey.

Gene Mahoney would demand that you be his "boy," once he put you in office. He might not call on you very often, but when he wanted your vote or your support on something, you had better deliver. I did not deliver, early on, because we disagreed on a major matter. As a result, I am supposed to spend the rest of my life doing "penance for Uncle Gene." It is a common joke among political folk in Nebraska, that if you cross "Uncle Gene," you will have to "do penance."

Almost any politician in the state will confirm, that Eugene Mahoney is probably the most powerful politician in Nebraska in recent history.

Gary Caradori's dossier on Mahoney filled up with incident reports of another nature. One of his confidential informants, in an interview on February 22, 1990, recalled how he once returned Mahoney's car to him at a camp where, lacking wife or family, Mahoney spent time.

> Immediately west of the Louisville State Park is a little camp near there with a half a dozen cabins in it. And Mr. Mahoney's is the far west cabin in that group right up against the river. ... We took that car down there and went up with the keys to leave the, to identify the car, so here's the keys. And the door swung open and as I recall there was no screen or anything on it. And there stood a large, heavyset, fleshy, young black man absolutely in the buff with nothing but a big smile on his face.

In retrospect, the informant thought, it was likely that the heavyset young man had been Larry King. That would agree with a report by Jerry Lowe from June 18, 1989, of an interview with a former Franklin employee:

> [Source] indicated that [Godfather's Pizza founder] Willie Thiesen's name had been linked with Larry King's as being homosexually involved ... and that King had also had similar relationships with Harold Andersen, Eugene Mahoney, and Bob Wadman.

Investigator Robert Hansel of Caracorp, Caradori's firm, filled out the picture on October 1, 1990:

> Information was obtained that Mr. Mahoney has a cabin at the west end of Louisville Park. [The source] also stated that some sexual activities may have occurred there. He stated Harold Andersen was real close with Gene Mahoney and his name had come up on several occasions. The name, Nate Foley*, was mentioned. He stated he knew for a fact that Gene Mahoney had propositioned him in the past and showed him some photos.... [He] informed this writer that Mr. Foley did get very upset at the time when he was propositioned by Mr. Mahoney. He also stated that possibly Mr. Foley did get a promotion to keep his mouth shut about the incident.

Mahoney was notorious, as Game and Parks Commissioner, for surrounding himself with good-looking young men. On March 16, 1990, Caradori recorded a description of Mahoney's travels, by a former pilot for the Game and Parks Commission, who used to fly him around:

> During his time with the Commission, he stated that Eugene Mahoney always travelled with young individuals, i.e. late teens or early 20s.... Whenever Mahoney would travel, especially with his aides, they always had to stay in the same room or cabin with Mahoney. He stated that on numerous occasions Harold Andersen had also travelled with Mahoney, which may have been to promote the State Games [sic] and Parks Commission, and also for fundraisers.

Said the February 22, 1990 confidential informant, about Mahoney's ongoing activities:

> This park isn't quite done but it's got a major residence in there with an apartment above and below. Mr. Mahoney to this day, you know he's not affiliated with the Game Commission, lives in the upper half when he's around. The lower half, 10 and behold, has a beautiful blond, blue-eyed young male there that Mr. Mahoney found at about 18 or 19 years of age. And he is kept there at state expense. He's the highest priced park superintendent in the state even though when he came in there he had absolutely no credentials. He'd never worked in a state park and didn't know anything about managing people or the wildlife or anything.

On March 16, 1990, Caradori reported the observations of another source:

> He went on to state that Mr. Mahoney did like to cater to teenage boys and had participated in many outings with various groups of teenage kids, such as the Boy Scouts.

With the help of Harold Andersen and Lincoln *Journal-Star* publisher Joseph Seacrest, over a two-year period, Mahoney raised more than $10 million for the new Mahoney State Park. According to Caradori's confidential informant, "There's an assumption that there's some Franklin Credit Union money that went into that place." To identify where the park money came from, he said,

> the place to start quite simply in any state area is to drive through them and record the names off the cabins. Mr. Mahoney has this fetish about naming cabins and outhouses and pavillions and things after his friends. Everything is the

> Harold Andersen this, V.J. Skutt that. And obviously those are the people who probably helped funnel money for that particular project, or something in that park anyway.

Mahoney's political power and his role as a darling of the Ak-Sar-Ben crowd were captured in a December 7, 1989 article in the *World-Herald:*

> Gov. Orr and Sen. J.J. Exon, who have been at odds politically for 20 years, were on the same side Wednesday in pushing the election of Eugene Mahoney to the Omaha Public Power District Board.
>
> Mahoney, who was appointed Nebraska Game and Parks Commission director when Democrat Exon was governor and who was appointed by Republican Gov. Orr to the OPPD post, said he reluctantly would seek election to the post next year. really hate campaigning," said Mahoney, a former state senator from South Omaha.
>
> He said he had planned to serve out his term and not seek election, but was talked into running by a group of prominent businessmen who where the hosts of a Wednesday reception.
>
> Among those paying tribute to Mahoney at the $100-a-person fund-raiser at the Cloud Room at Kiewit Plaza were Walter Scott, Jr., chairman of Peter Kiewit Sons' Inc., Mike Yanney, president of America First Cos.. Attorney General Robert Spire, and Mayor Morgan.
>
> The crowd of more than 210 at the event, which raised more than $40,000, included corporate leaders, South Omaha businessmen, former Mayor Eugene Leahy and former Sen. Dave Karnes, R-Neb.
>
> "I've never seen anything like it in my life," said Yanney, a frequent sponsor of political fundraisers. "The great thing about Gene is he crosses all party lines and he does it with dignity. Gene Mahoney is one of the great men in this community and this state."
>
> Scott said, "Gene is a good hunter, a good fisherman, and a good sportsman. I'm grateful to have a man like that take on a specific post like OPPD."

In September 1991, Eugene Mahoney was crowned King of Ak-Sar-Ben.

• • •

As essential to Franklin as Andersen's fundraising and publicity were, the credit union could not have functioned for a single day without the complicity of Nebraska's largest bank, FirsTier. Before coming to Franklin, Larry King had been a management trainee at Omaha National Corporation, one of the institutions that merged into FirsTier in 1984.

Every dollar that went into Franklin Credit Union-the missing $40 million was no exception-went into its account #153-7-353 at FirsTier.

"There would sometimes be a million dollars coming in in the morning and a million leaving in the afternoon," said one person familiar with the investigation. "The amounts were astounding, and remember this is a $2.6 million credit union. There is no conceivable way in the world that FirsTier was not fully aware of what was happening, as far as gross irregularities."

FirsTier would cover for Franklin when the credit union overdrew, as one disgruntled FirsTier official told former Franklin employee Noel Seltzer. Senator Chambers charged in early June of 1989, that the large volumes of Franklin transactions, occurring in such short periods of time, should have raised suspicions about the nature of its business.

This was just business as usual, protested the officers of FirsTier. Bank Vice President Donald Petersen told the *Lincoln Journal* on June 5,1989, "Franklin Credit Union had acommercial account with FirsTier Bank Omaha that was no different from our standpoint than other commercial accounts. We clear incoming and outgoing items for our customers, but the customer is ultimately responsible for each transfer in their account."

During Franklin's heyday, the board of FirsTier Bank and FirsTier Financial Services was a who's who of the Omaha business community. On it were pedophile Alan Baer and Knight of Ak-Sar-Ben Walter Scott, Jr., the Kiewit Construction chairman who was known in the business community as "one of the real powers" in FirsTier.

• • •

Donations to Franklin through the Union Pacific Foundation made the Union Pacific Railroad one of Larry King's biggest corporate backers. Its individual leaders, like former Union Pacific Chairman John Kenefick, deposited funds at Franklin.

According to reports out of Omaha's homosexual community, the old Harriman family railroad overlaps other areas with King. "The company is well-known for two things at the top: homosexuality and freemasonry," said one knowledgeable person.

Is there a tradition or obligation of homosexuality among top Union Pacific executives?

The Legislature's Franklin committee heard testimony from a former Franklin employee, implicating two Union Pacific executives in the recruitment of "young kids for Larry King's friends." Robert Andresen, the pedophile whose brutality was so heavy-handed that even the Douglas County jury mentioned (but did not indict) him, worked for Union Pacific.

So did the foreman of the grand jury! The Douglas County panel was headed by citizen Michael Flanagan, an employee of Union Pacific Railroad for 27 years. Given that Union Pacific personnel were implicated in the matters under consideration, there would have been a conflict of interest for any UP employee sitting on the grand jury. **In** the case of Flanagan, there was more to it than that.

In the summer of 1990, while the Douglas County grand jury was sitting, I received a call from a person who identified himself as an executive at Union Pacific headquarters in Omaha. He declined to give his name, saying, am too old to start over. I have too much vested in a good salary, position and pension. But I do not feel I can sit idly by."

He defended Union Pacific as a company that was good to its employees and, he thought, good for the country. But it had been taken over by a homosexual element, which tolerated, condoned and encouraged a code of sexual conduct he felt was abhorrent. Even this would be no one's business, he said, unless

it was being imposed on people, using the power of UP in Omaha and Nebraska.

At first, I thought the man might be trying to make an issue of some minor homosexual relationship, and I told him I was not interested in "bashing" homosexuals. I said that I didn't care what adult men did with their sex lives, so long as they do not abuse and hurt children. I could have told him, but I didn't, that my own brother had died of AIDS in California just the year before. My brother was a homosexual; he was also one of the best human beings on the planet.

My caller's carefully chosen words quickly dispelled the notion that he meant insignificant incidents, and led me to ask, "Are you talking about the head of Union Pacific, Mr. Walsh?" While the information he provided satisfied me that my concern about Walsh might well be valid, the caller made it clear that this was not the immediate point of his contacting me.

What he had to say, was that the foreman of the grand jury had committed impropriety of such a nature and degree, that Union Pacific had to reach a private financial settlement to protect him.

"I believe if you will check out a former very young male Union Pacific employee named Pike*," said my caller, "you will discover that Mr. Flanagan made improper sexual advances upon him, and he complained to Union Pacific officials. A financial settlement was reached by Union Pacific and the young male individual was paid a substantial sum of money by Union Pacific to keep quiet, go about his business, and find other employment."

I began to investigate, and found the facts accurate. Here is how they were summarized in a lawsuit, filed by me on behalf of Paul Bonacci:

> The Grand Jury Foreman, Michael Flanagan, should not have been allowed to be Grand Jury Foreman because he himself, Michael Flanagan, had been recently involved in an incident in which he, Flanagan, was accused of pandering and in which he, Flanagan, and his Company, Union Pacific, had reached a civil settlement to suppress such incident and satisfy the demands of the individual making the complaint

> against him. Thus, the Grand Jury Foreman was being literally asked to indict other individuals whom Bonacci was identifying for the very things that he, Flanagan, had been accused of and reached civil settlement to avoid like indictment and prosecution.

Through Flanagan, the suit also charged, Union Pacific was directing the grand jury:

> Further, Flanagan himself violated his Grand Jury duties by sharing Grand Jury information with other individuals, including lawyers and others he met with on a regular basis almost every day following Grand Jury proceedings at Union Pacific Headquarters in Omaha, and receiving advice and guidance from them on how to proceed in the Grand Jury proceedings and providing them information on the supposedly secret Grand Jury proceedings themselves.

• • •

One of King's earliest boosters was the wife of a man with an unrivaled reputation for shrewd investments-Warren E. Buffett, chairman of Berkshire Hathaway. Based in Omaha, Buffett is the second biggest stockholder in the *Washington Post* and a controlling power in ABC-TV. In 1991, he acquired large blocks of stock in American Express and Wells Fargo Bank. When Salomon Brothers faltered in August 1991, the owner of 13% of its stock-Buffett-stepped in as interim chairman. With $4.4 billion to his name, Buffett is ranked by *Fortune* magazine as the 24th richest man in the world, and in the United States is among the top five. In Omaha, the Buffett mystique gains from the fact that there are two hundred-some "Buffett millionaires," who made their fortunes by investing through Buffett's Berkshire Hathaway.

Buffett favors the multiplication of money, but not people. He contributes to groups advocating radical population reduction. His Warren Buffett Foundation lists hundreds of thousands of dollars in grants to Negative Population Growth, the Association for Voluntary Sterilization, Planned Parenthood, the Population Council and Population Institute, the Sex Information

and Education Council, and Federal American Immigration Reform. Negative Population Growth members, according to the group's literature, "believe that a drastic reduction in total population size represents the only viable option consistent with human survival." NPG wants the United States, and then every country, to enact programs to drop the U.S. and world population to *one-half* its present levels within 90 to 100 years. Buffett contributes approximately 7% of NPG's total budget.

Language about Buffett, and his own, abounds with references to his "cult." A 1991 *Washington Post* write-up of his annual shareholders' meeting quoted guests along those lines: "It's like worshipping at the altar of the high priest of finance.... "; "He has a very large, cultish following." Buffett himself has called his management staff "magicians." Said Steve Forbes of *Forbes* magazine, talking to National Public Radio about Buffett, "He's not Moses, but they read what he says as if it were written on tablets. ... Buffett's economic forecasts are more listened to, than Papal Encyclicals or the State of the Union message." **In** 1974, when stocks were at a low, Buffett told *Forbes* he felt "like a sex maniac in a harem," wanting to buy.

On November 8, 1991, the *Wall Street Journal* trumpeted in a two-page spread on Buffett as "the Oracle of Omaha," that his "folksy image belies a killer instinct."

Backing from Buffett's socialite wife, Susie, came early in the rise of Larry King. Susie Buffett was a volunteer at the credit union in its early days. According to the *Lincoln Journal-Star* of March 19, 1989, King "liked to tell the story of a woman coming to the credit union to see him and being told to return at 7:00 the next morning because he was so busy. The woman was Susie Buffett, wife of billionaire Warren Buffett, and she did come back to offer her help at the credit union."

For years, it has been part of Larry King lore in Omaha, that the Buffetts hosted a tenth wedding anniversary party for him and Alice. James Traub's December 1991 *Gentlemen's Quarterly* article served as a platform for Warren Buffett to deny he had a role in that affair, and to insinuate that perhaps the party never happened: "In 1978, King asked Susan Buffett

if she would be willing to host his and Alice's tenth-anniversary party at her house.... Susan said yes, but her husband said no."

Paula Albert, a close researcher of the Franklin scandal who has interviewed several people who attended the anniversary party, commented that the Buffettffraub account was carefully worded. Buffett avoided an outright assertion that the party didn't take place, but "you'd be left with the thought that it never happened, if you didn't know anything."

Buffett told Traub, "I knew that King was a phony.... It was like he had a big sign on his head that said, 'PHONY, PHONY, PHONY.' " These protestations prompt the question, why, if Buffett saw so clearly that Larry King was a fraud, he did not alert his friends at FirsTier, or the *World-Herald.* Buffett is a director emeritus of one of the institutions that merged to become FirsTier, and he served on the *World-Herald* board.

Larry King returned favors, by hosting a fundraiser for Buffett's son Howard, when Howard ran for Douglas County commissioner. Warren Buffett may have done some more private socializing with Larry King, if a former Omaha city employee is correct in his report, that when Larry King was crowned "Queen" at The Max gay bar, Warren Buffett was his escort. "This is what his cousin Barbara Webb told me," said the source. "She said the people, they were mad, because Larry brought his son and his wife there."

The *Wall Street Journal* feature reported that Warren and Susan Buffett have lived apart for thirteen years, although they attend official functions together. Buffett shares his home with a companion named Astrid Menks, "alternating his time between the two women." According to the *Journal,* Buffett met Menks in 1977, when Susie brought her home from the nightclub where Menks was a waitress-the French Cafe.

• • •

Buffett and King shared an interest in Boys Town, which to many Americans evokes the 1938 movie starring Spencer Tracy as Father Flanagan, the priest with the heart of gold whose orphanage, Father Flanagan's Home for Boys, straightened out

many an errant youngster. Known today as Boys Town, it is an incorporated village on the west side of Omaha, with extensive land and plush facilities, and an endowment of $460 million. The orphanage is therefore a major power in the Omaha financial world. It has begun a $25 million nationwide expansion program, and will have youth care facilities in seventeen cities by 1992. The chairman of its finance committee is Union Pacific's Michael Walsh.

In 1972, Warren Buffett executed a maneuver around Boys Town, which is not fully understood to this day. His own *Sun* newspaper ran a series of articles, that targeted Boys Town for having too large an endowment. The *Sun* wrote, "members of the board of directors of Father Flanagan's Boys' Home generally seem little concerned that the institution has amassed a net worth of more than $200 million while going to the public twice a year with a plea of poverty." Of the cited $200 million, $175 million was the "liquid endowment."

Editor and Publisher magazine reported on March 30, 1985, "The *Sun* papers in 1973 became the first weeklies to win the Pulitzer Prize for an expose of Boys Town. The story idea originated with Buffett, who also participated in its development and wrote a section of it."

The articles prompted a major shake-up and purge of personnel at Boys Town. Buffett is believed to play some significant role with the orphanage today, perhaps in his specialty-investment advice. An inquiry with Boys Town was referred to the in-house attorney for the orphanage, who, in answer to the simple question, "What is Mr. Buffett's precise role with Boys Town?" spent 25 minutes in two phone calls, not quite denying, but also carefully never confirming, that Buffett had a role with the facility. At any rate, Buffett has not complained lately about the size of Boys Town's endowment, although it is much larger now than it was in 1973.

Larry King was intimately involved with Boys Town. The institution came up repeatedly during the Legislature's Franklin investigation, and even earlier.

Foster Care Review Board Executive Director Carol Stitt's July 1988 plea to Attorney General Robert Spire, for an investi-

gation of child abuse, included that youth care worker Kirstin Hallberg "told me about three youth at Boys Town who all reported inappropriate activities with Larry King of Omaha." On March 29, 1989, her colleague Burrell Williams told investigator Jerry Lowe, "that on several occasions in the past he had heard of kids transported from Boys Town and the north Omaha Girls' Club to functions allegedly linked to King."

Boys Town youth care worker Julie Walters, when she interviewed the Patterson Webb girls in 1986, reported her findings about Larry King and Boys Town youth, to the orphanage's executive director, Father Val Peter. According to an FBI and Nebraska State Patrol interview with the girls' foster mother, Kathleen Sorenson, "Walters related Nelly's statements to Father Val Peter. ... Val Peter then stated that Boys' Town would conduct its own discreet investigation into Nelly's statements." Peter apparently did nothing, as Carol Stitt informed the legislature's Executive Board on December 19, 1988: "It has been brought to my attention that no such investigation ever took place."

The FBIINSP brief on Sorenson's interview said:

> Sorenson stated that an unspecified time in the summer of 1988, Julie Walters spoke to two prominent black males and one black female at Boys' Town confirming Nelly Webb's statements about Larry King. Sorenson could not recall the names of these individuals. The individuals were either employees or associates of Boys' Town. These individuals told Walters not to ask questions about King "because it could be dangerous."

King was highly visible on the Boys Town campus, because of his distinctive yellow Tojan car. On March 27, 1989, Jerry Lowe interviewed Julie Walters by phone:

> Julie indicated that she subsequently had a conversation with Val Peter regarding the yellow Tojan including discussions that several Boys' Town teachers, including those as having the last names Barksdale, Wilson, and Gary, had been seen driving the automobile. Julie indicated that when she brought the matter of the Tojan up to Father Peter, that he had

> initially denied any knowledge of the automobile, however, later on indicated that it was his belief that Omaha people couldn't accept black male teachers at Boys' Town and blamed the information regarding the Boys' Town black male teachers driving the Tojan, on racism.

At least one reported driver of the Tojan, John Barksdale, was closely associated with Larry King. Barksdale worked at the credit union, as well as at Boys Town, and had been tapped by King to head up a planned nationwide expansion, known as Franklin, U.S.A.

In January 1988, Father Peter summoned Kirstin Hallberg. She submitted her notes on the discussion to Franklin investigator Jerry Lowe:

> Father Peter called me (Hallberg) and expressed an interest in Loretta's case and said he felt that Boys' Town could offer her safe place to heal." When I commented that she probably wouldn't feel too safe if she saw "the yellow Tojan," he (Peter) said that he heard it had "been around" and then quickly changed the subject.

Under pressure, Peter once again promised an investigation. Julie Walters recalled, in her March 27, 1989 phone conversation with Lowe:

> Julie indicated that she later learned that Val Peter had given an individual by the name of Dave Shanahan, who is the Director of Admissions at Boys' Town, the responsibility of conducting, what Julie described, as a staff practice investigation of the Tojan automobile and the accompanying references to Boys' Town personnel riding in it. Julie indicated that she was uncomfortable about Shanahan investigating this as she expressed the personal opinion that she does not trust Shanahan. Julie indicated that Shanahan was a white male in his early forties and a long time employee of Boys' Town and indicated if she had to describe Shanahan she would describe him as being an individual with a good ole boy mentality who was not interested in the truth as much as making sure that nothing of a negative nature involving Boys' Town came out of the investigation.

Walters was right-honest investigations of Larry King at Boys Town were quashed, as Franklin investigator Karen Ormiston found out when she interviewed former policeman Alan Kupres, on August 14, 1990.

> Mr. Kupres indicated that he had worked as a police officer for Boys Town for approximately three years. He stated that he had run the license plates on a vehicle which was registered to Larry King several times, but that his superiors had directed him to "leave it alone."

Alisha Owen, Paul Bonacci, and Nelly and Kimberly Webb all reported that King took boys from Boys Town for his pedophile activities.

Omaha author Steve Bowman, who is preparing a book on the Franklin Credit Union for release in 1992, discovered as he interviewed Boys Town grads, that King's activities there were scarcely anomalous. "You would keep hearing the same thing, over and over again," Bowman said of the graduates, many of whom were homosexually involved with Larry King. "They would invariably say, 'I first discovered my homosexuality during counseling at Boys Town.' "

The homosexual ambiance at the orphanage was featured in a novel, reported on in the August 27, 1989 *World-Herald:*

> An Omaha native said his new novel describing a youth's painful upbringing in a boys' home, including many homosexual encounters, is based on his eight years at Boys Town. Jimmy Cheshire, 44, of Yellow Springs, Ohio, said in an interview that "Home Boy" accurately depicts life as he saw it at Boys Town from 1955 to 1963 when he graduated as class valedictorian.... Cheshire said homosexuality was "rampant" at Boys Town while he was there. "Everybody I knew was involved in it. After graduation, no one talks about it," he said. my opinion, one third of the Boys Town counselors were pedophiles. The only reason they were there was because kids were there. A lot of kids were seduced".... Cheshire said he did not find any adults at Boys Town who were "reliable." "There were some brutal people, some sick people," he said. "The children turned to each other' for support."

Father Val Peter said of Cheshire's book, "Boys Town would never condone any activity like that, nor do we have knowledge of it. I think sex sells, like the *National Enquirer."*

Boys Town officials deny with equal vehemence, that Larry King was associated with their facility in any way. Evidence from Franklin Credit Union files contradicts them.

Working relations between the credit union and the orphanage were in order as of a December 13, 1979 letter from Franklin employee Joel Rogers, one of King's homosexual lovers, to Boys Town Deputy Director for Development William E. Ramsey: "Mr. King, Mr. Larson, and myself are appreciative of your visit yesterday, and look forward to working with you and the Father Flanagan Boys' Home." The extent of the planned collaboration is not known, but at one point Franklin was paid $15,000 to do a study on the relocation of people who lost their houses because of an expansion of Boys Town.

Boys Town boys could get jobs at Franklin. King hired Brandt Thomas*, a 1984 graduate, to work at the credit union, according to a July 5, 1983 report from Doyle and Carol Gillespie, Boys Town family teachers. They also noted that "Brandt has moved in with his employer, Mr. King." Thomas was still under care of the school, and his change of residence was sanctioned by the highest official at Boys Town, then-Executive Director Father Hupp. His March 26 1983 letter to Brandt's mother, Lila Thomas*, was summarized by legislative Franklin committee researcher Jose J. Soto: "This letter from Father Hupp advises Brandt's mother of steps to take before Brandt moves in with Larry King." Hupp even attended the party King threw for Thomas, after the boy moved in.

Two and a half years later, Nelly Webb was to tell Julie Walters, that King frequently took Thomas around with him to serve as a homosexual prostitute.

By the time Franklin Credit Union met its fate, Boys Town had deposited, or planned to deposit, *one million dollars* in the credit union!

• • •

If his liaison to Boys Town were insufficient for his purposes, Larry King had the Omaha Girls Club as a hunting ground. Victim-witnesses consistently said both institutions were tapped by King to find candidates for sexual abuse. **In** an April 14, 1989 report, Jerry Lowe summarized what he heard from Loretta Smith:

> Loretta furthermore told Carmean that many of the people who were taking the [pornographic] photographs were leaders of the north Omaha Girls' Club and included prominent people who used code names. When I asked Loretta what the code names were she indicated simple names like Mary, Jane, etc. She had told Carmean that doctors and lawyers were involved and when I pressed her on this she indicated at one of the photographic sessions she saw some files and someone said something to her about one of the men working in chambers.

Lowe wrote up, on May 8, 1989, observations from Nelly Webb:

> Relative to the North Omaha Girls' Club, Cornelia indicated that she had heard that a couple of girls had slept with men who were somehow connected with the Girls' Club....

A week later, he learned from Kathleen Sorenson, that Nelly and Kimberly

> talked about being at many parties at King's house on River Road and at another location. They were often taken to these parties at a moments notice. They said the parties were for very important people.

Caradori's investigation showed that King's control of the Girls Club was a matter of public record, for anybody who bothered to look. Checking the incorporation papers at the Secretary of State's office, Caradori discovered that the Girls Club was incorporated in December 1973, with Larry King as its president, "to promote ... the health, social, cultural, vocational and character development of girls...." One of the three incorporators was Franklin officer Mary Jane Harvey,

indicted with King for embezzlement there, and named by children as one person who transported them for sexual abuse.

Had such research been done by law enforcement at the time of the children's complaints, more could have been learned, about the "very important people" the girls saw partying with King. The stakes in keeping their identity under wraps were obviously very high.

• • •

The Omaha corporations that bankrolled Larry King and Franklin are also the major sponsors of youth organizations in Nebraska, such as Boys Club, Girls Club, Boy Scouts, Boys Town, Uta Halee Home for Girls, and others. These corporations donate millions of dollars per year to these organizations, as the annual reports of the recipients show. Many executives of these firms sit on the boards of the youth care facilities.

The donation of so much money and time would seem to indicate a great concern for Nebraska's youth. Key members of the Omaha business community, however, did nothing to help and plenty to wreck the Franklin committee's investigation into the sexual abuse, ritual torture, and murder of children.

Is it possible that some of these corporate leaders sit on the youth boards, for the same reason that Larry King founded the North Omaha Girls Club? Why, for instance, did the notorious pedophile Alan Baer join the board of the Boys Club? And after the extraordinary publicity over his pedophilia in 1989 and 1990, and his indictment for pandering, how is it conceivable that in 1991 *Baer was still on the board of Boys Club?*

Assume most corporate board members are not involved in child abuse. But judging by the behavior of the Omaha business community during the Franklin investigation, the ones who are guilty of such behavior enjoy toleration, or even protection, by the others.

• • •

These are the 1987 and 1988 boards of directors of the two FirsTier institutions. FirsTier was the bank Larry King's pilfered $40 million passed through, without anybody batting an eye.

FirsTier Financial, Inc.

1987

George P. Abel, Chairman of the Board, NEBCO, Inc.
Charles W. Durham, Chairman of the Board, Durham Resources
Perry E. Esping, Chairman of the Board, First Data Resources
John C. Kenefick, Pres. (ret.), Union Pacific Railroad
Walter Scott, Jr., Pres., Chairman of the Board, Peter Kiewit Sons
William C. Smith, Pres., CEO, FirsTier Financial, Inc.
Dale C. Tinstman, Chairman of the Board, Eaton, Tinstman, Druhner
Neal E. Tyner, Chairman of the Board, CEO, Ameritas Financial Services
Milton E. Whitehead, Chairman of the Board, Whitehead Oil Co.
Michael B. Yanney, Chairman of the Board, America First Corp.

1988 additions

Michael H. Walsh, Chairman of the Board, CEO, Union Pacific Railroad
Robert H. Daugherty, Chairman of the Board, Valmont Industries

FirsTier Bank, N.A., Omaha

1987

Alan Baer, President, Alan Baer & Associates
Anne S. Batchelder, Secretary, U.S. Check Book Co.
John G. Bookout, President, Woodmen of the World Life Insurance Co.
Lawrence Comine, Jr., CEO, FirsTier Bank, Omaha
Roy Dinsdale, President, Dinsdale Brothers
Steven H. Durham, President, Durham Resources
Philip B. Fletcher, Pres. and CEO, ConAgra Prepared Foods

John R. Maenner, President, Maenner Co.
Martin A. Massengale, Chancellor, Univ. of Nebraska, Lincoln
Lloyd H. Mattson, Chairman of the Board, Industrial Chemical Laboratories
John D. Minton, V. Chair, Dep. CEO, Mutual of Omaha
Thomas N. Moore, Exec. V.P., FirsTier Bank, Omaha
David R. Parker, V.P., America First Corp.
Kenneth D. Power, V.P. and CEO, Northwestern Bell
A.J. Scribante, Chairman of the Board, ViTal Resources
William C. Smith, Pres. and CEO, FirsTier Financial, Inc.
Hugh L. Tinley, President Emeritus, Farmers National Co.
William F. Welsh II, President and CEO, Valmont Industries

Directors Emeriti

Edd H. Bailey, Pres. (ret.), Union Pacific Railroad
Thomas C. Quinlan, Attorney
V.J. Skutt, Chairman of the Board, Mutual of Omaha
Robert H. Storz, Chairman of the Board, Storz Broadcasting Co.

1990 addition

Howard G. Buffett

In 1981, Warren E. Buffett was on the board of the Omaha National Corporation, which merged with First National Bank of Lincoln in 1984, to become FirsTier.

OMAHA BUSINESS COMMUNITY SUPPORT FOR FRANKLIN

Documents [rom Franklin Credit Union files the financial backing to Franklin and Larry King from the Omaha community.

DEVELOPMENT OFFICE JEPOSIT REPORT

Throught the efforts of Mr Harold Andersen, deposits have been raised totalling $200,000 since the beglnnlng of che year.

Anticipated Jeposits Mr. Andersen is working on total approximately $1,000,000 and are being followed up at this time.

Other Development Office activities include anticipaced deposits of over SlOO,OOO within the next few monchs, and they are currently being followed up on.

An undated report from Franklin's Development Office cited Harold Andersen's fundraising for the credit union.

Mutual of Omaha, Unitas of Omaha.

March 20, 1981

PERSONAL

Mr. Lawrence King
Executive Direct
Consumer Service Organization, Inc.
Franklin Community Federal Credit Union
1721 North 33rd Street
Omaha, Nebraska 68111

Dear Larry:

Our 'Mutual' friend, Andy Andersen of the World-Herald, h-- written us at some length concerning the great work you are doing with the Franklin. He suggested consideration of participation by our Organization and the matter has been studied by the appropriate Departments.

The matter is receiving careful study, and we hope ee come up with a decision --rly next month. We will b. in touch with you at that time, but meanwhile want to congratulate you and extend best wishes - continued success.

With highest regards,

Sincerely,

A letter to Larry King from V.l. Skutt. then chairman and CEO of Mutual of Omaha. referred to lobbying for Franklin bv Harold "Andy" Andersen.

Community Federal Credit Union

Seevrce
(Associated with Franklin Community F__al Credit Union)

33rd and Decatur Streets
Omaha Nebraska 68111
...t 556-6665

Branch Office
Woodson Center
3009 m.
0 Nebraska 68107
Phone 731 1170

Memorandum:
To: Tom, Joel, Kurt
From: Manager

CONFIDENTIAL:

Re: Kiewit Foundation

The Kiewit Foundation has agreed to grant Franklin $lOO,OOQ. and to deposit $100.000.

The deposit will be in hopefully by the end of this veer. I need the cureenr interest ratas that we can offer them. thue I alll seeking imput from all of vou.

The criteria for ehb deposit 1. that the interest from the $lOO,OOO w111 not be uaed for adminiat.ration co.ta, divid8nds. or operation ccats. That the tncerese will be used for home (mprovement 10an8 and housing rehabilitation loans only.

In addition, a agreement (contract) of Barts must be drawn up stating that franklin wlll only ua. the acrued iaterewt for thew. mentioned purposes. I believe ve may need an attorney on this poiat•

*1 do not want anyone to diacu88 this grant: we must keep this confidential because of the possibility that ve can receive further funding later.

PROFIT, NOT C AITY. BUT FOA SEAVICE

Larry King wrote this memo to his staff about funds forthcoming from the Kiewit Foundation, associated with the Peter Kiewit and Sons construction firm.

Joel - Respond to ours immediately - so we can get our money

UNION PACIFIcvFOUNDATION

345 PARK AVENUE NEW YORK,N Y 10022

May 27. 1980

Mr. Lawrence E. King. Jr.
Manager
MT. Donald Glen Furlow
Grants and Development Officer
Consumer Services Organization, Inc.
3231 Decatur Street
Omaha, Nebraska 68111

Dear Mr. King and Mr. Furlow:

I am very pleased to formally advise you that the Board of Trustees of Union Pacific Foundation has approved a grant in the amount of $2,500 to the Consumer Services Organization, Inc. for 1980, which represents the second installment of a grant of $12,500, payable in five equal installments in 1979-83, inclusive. to assist your organization in helping individuals with consumer related problems.

Payment of this grant is scheduled to be made in June. I would appreciate receiving a status report on this project as the year progresses.

This grant is made upon the recommendation of officials of Union Pacific Railroad Company. which is an operating company of Union Pacific Corporation.

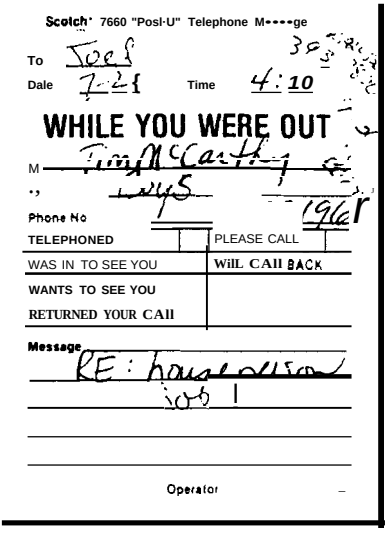
Sincerely,

In /980. the Union Pacific Foundation informed Larry King of latest grant. A handwritten note at the top a Franklin employee to expedite the transaction.

DEPOSIT UPDATE
APRIL 21, 1981

V. J. SKUTT - MUTUAL OF OMAHA	$25,000
LEO DALY	25,000
PHILLIPS KILTNER FIRST NATL. BANK	50,000
PETER KIEWIT	100,000
INTERNORTH	
ANTICIPATED	
STOWN, RE. NUPP	1,000,000
JOHN C. KENGFICK / 1/. Po	
SYNOD OF LAKES & PRAIRIES	
PETE MARROWICK / JACK MCCOLLISTER - NWB	
SALEM BAPTIST CHURCH	$20 - $100,000
AL EASTERDAY @ WOODMEN TOWER	
EUGENE CONLEY	

According to /98/ memo from Franklin Credit Union files, Town. the famous orphanage. planned to deposit $1 million with Franklin. Town officials maintained that they had no connections with Larry King or Franklin.



Scotch 7660 "Posl-U" Telephone M----ge

To Joel

Dale 7-21 Time 4:10

WHILE YOU WERE OUT

M Tim McCarthy

Phone No

TELEPHONED | PLEASE CALL

WAS IN TO SEE YOU | WiL CAll BACK

WANTS TO SEE YOU

RETURNED YOUR CAll

Message RE: hanky pinky

Operator

Memorandum oja plume call to Joel Franklin staffer and a homosexual lover of from a Bovs official.

CHAPTER 13

THE WASHINGTON CONNECTION

In December 1990, Senator Schmit recalled an incident from almost exactly two years earlier, before the Franklin committee was officially established. "It was rather strange," Schmit said, "the first day that I decided to introduce the resolution [for a legislative investigation], while the resolution was being drafted, I was cautioned by an unknown person by telephone, that I was advised not to pursue the investigation, because it would lead, I was told, to the highest levels of the Republican Party. And I responded, that the investigation would go where it went."

Hard as the Omaha business community worked to distance itself from Larry King, there were even more strenuous efforts to insulate from the scandal anybody of national stature, with whom King had consorted. There was a lot to hide.

In the Republican Party, King had a meteoric rise. He sang the Star-Spangled Banner at a National Black Republican Council event in 1982, where President and Mrs. Reagan were guests of honor. By 1984, it was the GOP's national convention that heard the national anthem from Larry King. There in Dallas, he hosted his extravagant party at Southfork Ranch, where I saw Maureen Reagan draped over King all evening like a big blanket. In 1988, at the Republican national convention in New Orleans, King sang again. He made a ten-minute "get-out-the-vote" video on behalf of Bush, for the 1988 campaign.

The *Omaha Star*, newspaper of the city's black community, chronicled the rise in politics of Larry King. In his "Political Viewpoint" column of November 24, 1983, Ernest E. Bryant

explained why King was unable to stand for re-election as chairman of the Nebraska Frederick Douglass Republican Council.

> Chairman King has accepted a position in the Reagan/Bush re-election campaign. He was appointed by National Black Republican Council Chairperson LeGree Daniels, who was named Chairperson of the Black Voters for the Campaign, in the Reagan/Bush '84 re-election bid. She has appointed King as coordinator of all the activities to bring out the Black vote. In brief this means that Mr. King will be responsible for meeting with the Party officials and the Black Republican leadership within each of the 17 targeted states. He will coordinate the efforts of these groups in support of the Reagan/Bush campaign.... Mr. King will also be traveling to the 17 targeted states when President Reagan does, to draw state party officials and Black Republican leadership together.
>
> Mr. King has also accepted the Chairmanship of the National Black Republican Council, Development Committee for Fund Raising.

Stepping inside the Franklin Credit Union, visitors were greeted by a four foot high picture of Larry King with Ronald Reagan.

King's backers in the Omaha business community have plenty of ties to Washington, since Nebraska has been a favorite stomping ground for the national GOP. Although its population is just 1.6 million, the concentration of corporate wealth in the state makes it a priority for fundraising, with the attendant political and business back-and-forth. Peter Kiewit and Sons, for instance, contributed $100,000 to elect Richard Nixon, and later got the contract to build the subway system for the nation's capital. During the 1990 gubernatorial campaign, George Bush called Republican Kay Orr's reelection bid the most important race in the country; Bush visited Nebraska three times. (Orr lost.)

On the morning of February 7, 1990, Larry King was making plans to attend one of those fundraising events in Omaha, featuring President George Bush. Out of the blue, U.S. Magis-

trate Richard Kopf suddenly ordered King to be taken to a federal psychiatric facility in Springfield, Missouri, for "tests."

Senator Chambers reacted to King's abrupt disappearance, as reported in the March 17, 1990 *World-Herald:* "State Senator Ernie Chambers said Friday that he believes that Franklin Community Federal Credit Union head Lawrence E. King was 'whisked' out of Omaha 'in a hasty, almost clandestine way' last month so he could not attend an event at which President Bush spoke. Chambers said that a trial of King could prove embarrassing to 'powerful people at the national level.' "

The notes of Franklin investigator Gary Caradori confirm the senator's suspicions. On February 19, 1990, twelve days after King was whisked off, Caradori wrote:

> I was informed that LK was sent to Missouri for observation because the Secret Service had discovered that he had purchased a ticket to Governor Orr's breakfast with President Bush. LK was approached at a local floral shop, and was rushed to court by the Secret Service, or at their demand. This was so sudden, that LK's attorneys were unaware of what was going on.

The word in Omaha was that King, indicted in federal court May 19, 1989 on forty counts of financial wrongdoing, was planning to ask Bush for help.

• • •

When Larry King traveled the political circuit, he evidently had two agendas. To the public, he was the rising GOP star with the resonant baritone voice. Something else went on behind closed doors.

At the Dallas convention in 1984, King threw his splashy party at Southfork Ranch, remembered by me and many other delegates as an unparalleled extravaganza. According to several victim-witnesses, he also arranged some private events during the convention. They recall being flown to Dallas, to be sexually used by convention-goers. Gary Caradori mapped the recollec-

tions of the Webb foster children, in his notes of February 28, 1990:

> During this visit [the children's aunt] Marcy informed [social worker] Joanie that [the youngest Patterson Webb sister] Kendra had told her she had been transported around the country several times, she thought to Texas and Louisiana. Marcy remembered Texas in particular, and a Republican Convention because one of the children, possibly Kendra, had a book of matches from Texas and that is how the children had known where they were at. Joanie stated she remembered that the children had been exploited sexually in Texas, and she indicated that it was [the] feeling this activity had been occurring for several years.

I was later to learn from Paul Bonacci, that he was also at the famed Southfork party. He described it for me in exact detail, some seven years after the party took place. He had been there for the purpose of providing sexual favors for people Larry King wanted to accommodate, satisfy, or compromise. Paul said he was one of a troop of teenaged boys and girls, whom King had shipped to Dallas for his purposes.

I have talked to Paul repeatedly about this party. I have listened to his description. Only by having been there, could someone describe the setting the way Paul did to me. Because I was there myself for the party, I am certain that Paul Bonacci was there and did not invent his story or his description of the party.

This was, it happens, just one of Paul's leads into matters surrounding Larry King and Franklin that I could personally check out and know the boy was telling the truth. Not because somebody told me he was telling the truth. Not because somebody said he passed a lie detector test on the subject. But because I was there and saw a part of it, and saw the exact same things this boy did.

Again in 1988, attendance at Larry King's party was virtually mandatory for any true Nebraska Republican attending the Republican National Convention, held this time in New Orleans. Most of the Nebraska delegation was transported to the party by bus. The theme of the festivities was Mardi Gras.

With me was my l2-year-old daughter, Jennifer, who met a black youth named Prince at the party.

"Look, Daddy, that boy's name is 'Prince King.' Isn't that a funny name?" Jenny said to me, as she looked at the name tag of the son of the man sponsoring the party, Larry King. Everybody had a name tag pinned on, immediately upon entering the party.

I am sure that, again, Larry King had youth at that party, whose sexual favors were used as gifts for this or that politician or businessman.

King's parties were designed to bring in everybody, from the innocent to the top-ranking businessmen and politicians. I personally attended the two largest parties he ever threw, as did many Republican officials. As a guest at the party, you would not know from the outer glitter, what sordid activity was going on behind the scenes. I am sure that was the character of many of Larry King's parties, particularly the political events. Outwardly, they had the appearance oflegitimacy, with prominent people in attendance, from mayors to presidents, from businessmen to congressmen.

So, when people say to me, "Well, I was at one of Larry King's parties and I did not see any of this sex or drug or pedophilia stuff," I understand that they may be speaking with honesty and accuracy. As to what really went on, I believe they are wrong.

• • •

Larry King spent his money far and wide, not just in Nebraska. One of the places he rented was a house for $5,000 a month, off Embassy Row in Washington, D.C., which formerly housed the Brazilian legation to the Organization of American States.

"When Larry entertained, it was a hot ticket," said a public relations man King hired, quoted by Rick Hornung and Michael Casey, in the February 28, 1989 *Village Voice.* "Virtually every high-ranking black member of the Reagan Administration had been out to lunch, over for drinks, or at a dinner party. The

food and drink were first rate, as was the mix of people-black, white, Republican, Democrat, young, old." For King, the emphasis was on the young.

King acquired contacts in Washington's homosexual prostitution scene, one of whom was the late Craig Spence. A lobbyist and political operative, Spence maintained a call boy ring that catered to the political elite and, unlike most D.C. call boy rings, offered children to its clients.

Spence's activities made banner headlines in the *Washington Times* on June 29, 1989: "Homosexual prostitution inquiry ensnares VIPs with Reagan, Bush." Spence's access was so good, that he could arrange nighttime tours of the White House for his clients. The *Times* added on August 9, 1989, that Spence "hinted the tours were arranged by 'top level' persons, including Donald Gregg, national security advisor to Vice President Bush. . . ." Spence, according to friends, was also carrying out homosexual blackmail operations for the CIA.

According to a Washington, D.C. investigative journalist who researched the Spence ring, "The way we discovered Larry King and this Nebraska-based call boy ring, was by looking through the credit card chits of Spence's ring, where we found King's name." Another investigator, with personal knowledge of the call-boy rings operating in Washington, put it this way:

> King and Craig Spence were business partners. Look at two companies, 'Dream Boys' and 'Man to Man', both of which operated under another service, 'Bodies by God.' "

• • •

When Craig Spence turned up dead-a suicide, police were quick to say-in a Boston hotel room, in November 1989, it was the latest in the long string of deaths of persons linked to Iran-Contra covert operations and funding.

There is evidence that Larry King had Washington business in that area as well. "In the 6½ months since federal authorities closed Franklin, rumors have persisted that money from the credit union somehow found its way to the Nicaraguan contra rebels," said a *World-Herald* article on May 21, 1989.

The first *World-Herald* reporter on the Franklin case, James Allen Flanery, apparently found more than rumors about the money-laundering. In late 1988, Flanery called Carol Stitt to discuss what he had learned. Their conversation is related in a February 21, 1989 report by Jerry Lowe:

> Carol's notes also have a reference to Larry King running guns and money into Nicaragua.... Carol's notes on Dec. 21, 1988 reflect that she talked with Flanery and in addition to the Nicaraguan info he was also now talking about CIA involvement and provided info that yesterday (Dec. 20) the FBI quit cooperating with him.... Carol's notes next jump to Feb. 6, 1989, where she talked on the phone with Flanery and Flanery told her that the appropriate people didn't want to believe any of this and who was ever going to prosecute it. Apparently Flanery told Carol he was close to resigning and the reasons he didn't think anyone wanted to do anything was because of the possibility of a White House connection, the connections to a number of big people, and the fact that the investigators wanted badly to confine this all to the money. Also many white people made Larry King, he did not happen on his own.
>
> Apparently Flanery told Carol he was uncomfortable on the phone, his editor was distressed, and things he had written were continually edited, he wanted to get his by-line off the article printed the 9th among other things.... Flanery also expressed concern to Carol that if he didn't get off this story he worried about being compromised.

Soon Flanery was off the Franklin case, which continued for months to be the major news lead in Nebraska, and went to the University of Kansas on sabbatical. When he returned a year later, Flanery no longer wrote about Franklin.

• • •

Squelching interest in an Iran-Contra connection to Franklin was also a topic of the hour, in that phone call I received from National Credit Union Administration official Fenner, back in the early months of the legislative Franklin probe. "Why would

the head of the NCVA be wanting to talk to me?" I wondered out loud, when my secretary said that Fenner was on the line.

The man on the other end of the phone said he knew I was a close friend of former CIA head Bill Colby, and that I also was Senator Loran Schmit's personal attorney. He quickly came to his point.

"I know there are a lot of rumors, that Franklin was being used as a front for laundering money for the Contras and that a lot of the money that is missing from Franklin actually went to finance the Contras."

I acknowledged that I had heard such talk, and told him, "I myself am one of those who wonder, if that is not a real possibility, in light of the way things have been shaking out on the Contra scandal."

Fenner then gave me a flood of details on the secret Franklin accounts, and where the missing money supposedly went. No destinations linked with Iran-Contra were mentioned.

"I know you recommended that Bill Colby be hired to investigate this matter," Fenner continued, "and that the committee rejected Colby. That was a big mistake. It is going to take someone of his ability and integrity, contacts and stature, to get to the bottom of this."

"So tell me," I said, "just what is at the bottom of it? If it is not laundered money involved in the Iran-Contra scandal, what the blazes is it? And how could Larry King get away with this, without you or somebody else knowing what was going on? Looks to me as if he had to have one heck of a lot of powerful political protection at the highest levels."

"Homosexuals," Fenner said, "Franklin financed the biggest group of homosexuals any state has ever seen. A lot of awfully powerful and prominent personalities involved. But probably not anything you can do anything about. As far as politicians go, it does not seem to go to the very top, as some of the rumors suggested."

"Are you telling me that the Franklin theft and scandal was just one big queer party, with a bunch of rich folk who do not want their involvement known?" I asked.

"Yes," replied Fenner, "and I am not sure we know who all

was involved. Larry King did very clearly have contacts at the highest levels, that made it possible for him to prevent proper audits. Otherwise, this could never have happened. But the money was not used for Iran-Contra purposes."

Reviewing that conversation from the vantage point of nearly three years later, I think that on both counts-where the money went, and the involvement of high-level political figures-I was hearing something short of the real story from Fenner, to put it charitably.

• • •

Independent investigations confirm that there are ample grounds to question the conclusion of the NCUA-hired firm, FAG, that the nearly $40 million gone from the credit union was all squandered by Larry King on limousines, flowers, gold watches for his lovers, and the like.

Former political associates of King, sources on Capitol Hill, and intelligence specialists suggest that Larry King was one of dozens of owners and directors of savings and loans and other financial institutions, used by the CIA to help finance covert operations. From their information, a picture takes shape.

S&L managers, allegedly including King, would secretly lend CIA operatives bundles of depositors' money, supposedly on a 30-day basis. **In** some instances, hundreds of thousands and even millions of these dollars would be flown out of the United States, to destinations such as Switzerland and the Bahamas. The money would be invested for profit in short-term high-yield financial instruments or other overseas hot-money schemes. Before federal auditors could notice any money missing, it would be returned. Some of the profit would be used to payoff the cooperating financial officer and other intermediaries. The rest was funneled into slush funds for covert operations.

But the CIA would not always return the money. **In** 1990, a U.S. congressional committee was forced to investigate allegations that the CIA's financial machinations had been a factor in the collapse of several S&Ls. **In** an explosive series of

articles in the *Houston Post,* investigative reporter Pete Brewton wrote that during "an eight month investigation into the role of fraud in the nation's savings and loan crisis, the *Post* has found evidence suggesting a possible link between the Central Intelligence Agency and organized crime in the failure of at least 22 thrifts, including 16 in Texas."

One of the S&Ls named by Brewton was the Denver-based Silverado Savings & Loan, on whose board sat Neil Bush, son of the president. Sources have alleged that Silverado and Larry King's Franklin Credit Union had financial dealings with one another, but no independent confirmation has been obtained.

U.S. House of Representatives Banking Committee hearings on the Franklin Credit Union, held in 1989, did place Larry King in the right locations for covert operations. They established that during the 1980s, King traveled several times to Jamaica, where Lt. Col. Oliver North and other Iran-Contra principals transacted a lot of banking. They heard testimony that Franklin's chief accountant, Tom Harvey, together with his mother Mary Jane Harvey, made several trips to Switzerland, in the time period millions of dollars disappeared from the credit union.

In a memo dated June 18, 1989, Jerry Lowe noted that Larry King often received phone calls from Switzerland, that the staff at Franklin Credit Union had heard that King took money to Jamaica, and that Tom Harvey took money abroad, on numerous trips to Spain.

• • •

Direct ties of Larry King to persons and institutions active in Iran-Contra are a matter of public record. In 1987, according to the *World-Herald,* King donated $25,350 to Citizens for America, a group that sponsored speaking tours for Oliver North and Contra leaders. CFA was a key public relations group for Iran-Contra; King was a founding member and one of its largest contributors.

According to his May 22, 1989 interview with Omaha radio station KKAR, King was trying to bring North to Nebraska.

A former security guard for King has sworn that he saw North attend at least one of King's parties, a party at which children were also present. Since he was stationed outside, he has no knowledge of what might have happened inside. "I just thought it seemed kind of curious, the whole set-up," he said.

The head of CFA, David Carmen, was a partner in Carmen, Carmen and Hugel, the public relations firm hired by Larry King to help set up one of his other projects, the Council for Minority Americans. It is alleged that Carmen, Carmen and Hugel was one of King's direct links to the CIA.

Another of the PR firm's partners was Max Hugel, formerly deputy director in charge of covert operations, under the late William Casey at the CIA. Hugel earned the post for services rendered to the 1980 Reagan-Bush campaign. Larry King met Hugel back then, since one of Hugel's responsibilities for the campaign committee was out-reach and liaison work with minority groups. Brought to the agency by Casey in 1981, Hugel lasted only a few months at the CIA and was forced out under a cloud of scandal.

King had a third friend at Carmen, Carmen and Hugel-Ambassador Gerald Carmen, the father of David. "What was Larry King doing with Ambassador Carmen?" reflected a Washington intelligence specialist, "It was the diplomatic pouches .... Larry had even been lobbying for his appointment as an overseas ambassador." According to a *Washington Times* report of December 15, 1988, King did seek an ambassadorial apointment. One source specified that he wanted to represent the United States in Jamaica, where his wife, Alice, was born.

During the height of Iran-Contra activities, 1984-86, Ambassador Carmen was in the right place to have served as bag man. He was U.S. Ambassador to the United Nations in Geneva, Switzerland from 1984 through August 1986. The United States ambassador to Switzerland in that period was Faith Whittlesey, who was depositioned by the congressional committee investigating Iran-Contra. Oliver North's multiple secret bank accounts were located at Credit Suisse. When Carmen left the diplomatic service in 1986, Carmen, Carmen and Hugel was and remained

deeply involved in Nicaragua. According to the intelligence newsletter *Unclassified* (December 1990-January 1991), "the Carmen group under a National Endowment for Democracy contract, handled the U.S. activities of the Violeta Chamorro campaign in the Nicaraguan elections."

If King was involved with CIA money laundering, that jibes with a report from a member of Concerned Parents: "I heard from two different black people in North Omaha that King used to send limousines down to Offutt Air Base [home of the Strategic Air Command] to pick up CIA personnel for parties."

The sometimes expansive Larry King used to talk fondly about his friends. In a Sept. 7, 1988, interview with the *Metropolitan* King said, "I know some of the people I admire aren't very popular. Ed Meese. The late Bill Casey of the CIA. And I love former Chief Justice Burger. Those are the people I really like to talk to. Bill Casey.... I just thought so very highly of him."

• • •

Larry King adored Bill Casey, but what about one of Casey's predecessors at Central Intelligence-George Bush? Ever since July 23, 1989, when the lead editorial in the *World-Herald* said that "one child ... is said to believe that she saw George Bush at one of King's parties," King's connection with Bush has been a frequently asked question about the Franklin case. Anxiety on this account has run especially high in Omaha's black community, where in December 1990, one young lady stood up at a public meeting and proclaimed, "I think George Bush is involved in this child abuse case, and that is why all these people have been dying."

Inside investigators of Franklin, and the Webb case before it, know that Bush's name came up at the very beginning, and it came up more than once. The July 1989 *World-Herald* column, in an attempt to discredit this and other victim-witness testimony, attributed the mention of Bush to a person "under psychiatric care," meaning Loretta Smith. In reality, the report was from Nelly Patterson Webb.

Nelly first brought up Bush in 1986, when she told Julie Walters about the sex parties she was flown to in Washington and Chicago. She saw Bush at two of these parties, she said, one in each city.

Nelly also told Walters that one frequent party-goer with King was a boy named "Brent," the one who was "flown to another city somewhere" after a falling out with King. Walters did not have the resources to cross-check this information with the life of Brandt Thomas, the Boys Town resident who had moved in with Larry King. Franklin credit union files contained a letter signed by King, in his capacity as Youth Affairs Committee advisor for the National Black Republican Council, listing Thomas as one of two national contact people for NBRC campus chapters.

Three years later, with an investigation of abuse by King and the Webbs finally under way, Nelly was interviewed again. Speaking to Franklin committee detective Jerry Lowe, she repeated her account of the Chicago party, and said that Bush and the two men he arrived with appeared to have left the affair with a young black man she called "Brandt."

Of course, as I have made clear, mere attendance by a politician, be he the president or any other office-holder, at a Larry King party does not mean that person knew of or was involved in Larry King's sordid activities. Almost every top Nebraska Republican, including myself, attended the two largest parties King ever hosted, the ones at the Republican national conventions in 1984 and 1988.

Bush's name surfaced again in Lowe's May 1989 review of reports by Thomas Vlahoulis from the state attorney general's office:

> Sorenson told Vlahoulis that both Kimberly and Nelly brought up the name of George Bush and indicated that they had both met him. . . .

On June 10, 1989, Lowe received a letter from a citizen:

> There is a psychologist in Omaha who used to work for the CIA. In response to a direct question by an Omaha

> psychiatrist regarding George Bush's private life, this psychologist reported hearing rumors when Bush was head of the CIA, that correspond directly with one of the inferences made by Nelly Webb, and commented to the psychiatrist, how do you investigate your boss?"

Whether or not a Bush presence at King's parties were confirmed, he certainly backed key Nebraskans tied to King.

In August 1990, Bush appointed Ronald Roskens of Nebraska, to head the Agency for International Development (AID). Roskens had been fired the previous year as chancellor of the University of Nebraska, where Larry King was a member of his "chancellor's advisory committee."

Gary Caradori's daily notes for Feb. 19, 1989 record:

> I was informed that Roskins [sic] was terminated by the state because of sexual activities reported to the Regents and verified by them. Mr. Roskins was reported to have had young men at his residence for sexual encounters. As part of the separation from the state, he had to move out of the state-owned house because of the liability to the state if some of this sexual behavior was "illegal." Upon Roskins vacating the house, he was provided a house by Joe Seacrist [sic] of the Lincoln *Journal-Star.*

The leadership of AID is the kind of sensitive job-AID assignments have been used as a "cover" by CIA agents, for instance-for which appointees undergo a background check that would have to tum up what Caradori also heard. Nevertheless, George Bush appointed Roskens.

When Harold Andersen's reputation sagged in the fall of 1989, due to his unconcealed association with Larry King, his friends at the Nebraska Society ofD.C. staged an awards dinner in Washington to polish his image. George Bush sent a testimonialletter in praise of the adviser to the U.S. State Department and occasional horseshoes-player at the White House. Bush wrote about Andersen and his wife: "These two outstanding individuals have spent countless hours serving the city of Omaha and the state of Nebraska. Throughout Harold Andersen's career with the *Omaha World-Herald,* he has made that

fine paper an example of journalistic integrity. In addition, he has been a vigorous promoter of efforts to improve the quality of life in his community."

• • •

Like George Bush, Harold Andersen moves in the upper circles of the U.S. intelligence community. The career of another Nebraskan, Robert Keith Gray, illuminates that milieu and why it would be so congenial to a person like Larry King.

Gray is the chairman and CEO of Hill and Knowlton, one of the two biggest public relations firms in the world, with such blue-chip clients as AT&T, IBM, Xerox, and DuPont. CBS-TV's 60 *Minutes* has called Hill and Knowlton "by far, the biggest, most influential PR firm in Washington," adding that "critics accuse them of being an unelected shadow government."

Gray first came to Washington, D.C. during the Eisenhower Administration, as Ike's appointments secretary and then secretary of the cabinet. He went to Hill and Knowlton in 1961.

Gray played a role in Ronald Reagan's 1976 presidential campaign and, in 1980, he was deputy director of communications, reporting directly to Bill Casey. On the strength of his connections in the new administration, he left Hill and Knowlton to set up his own PR firm. Within a year, Gray and Company secured over $9 million in billings from a clientele including Warner Communications, NBC, GTE, Mutual of Omaha, the American Trucking Association, the American Iron and Steel Institute, and the governments of Canada and Turkey. In 1986, Hill and Knowlton bought out Gray and Co.; Gray became chairman and CEO of Hill and Knowlton.

Said to be Harold Andersen's "closest friend in Washington," Gray is also reportedly a specialist in homosexual blackmail operations for the CIA.

Gray's own sexual proclivities were the subject of an article in the July-August 1982 issue of *The Deep Backgrounder*, entitled "Reagan Inaugural Co-Chairman Powerful 'Closet Homosexual'?" *The Deep Backgrounder* tabloid featured exposes

of homosexual networks in Washington, D.C.; its contributing editor was former senior CIA official Victor Marchetti.

During the Watergate era, Robert Keith Gray served on the board of Consultants International, founded by CIA agent Edwin Wilson. When Wilson and fellow agent Frank Terpil got caught running guns abroad, Gray tried to deny his connection with Wilson. "Yet ten years before," according to Peter Maas' book *Manhunt*, "in a top secret Navy review of Wilson's intelligence career, Gray described Wilson as a person of 'unqualified trust,' with whom he'd been in contact 'professionally two or three times a month' since 1963."

Author Jim Hougan, in *Secret Agenda*, reported another aspect of Wilson's work for the CIA:

> According to fugitive ex-CIA officer Frank Terpil, CIA-directed sexual blackmailing operations were intensive in Washington at about the time of the Watergate scandal. One of those operations, Terpil claims, was run by his former partner, Ed Wilson. Wilson's base of operations for arranging trysts for the politically powerful was, Terpil says, Korean agent Tong Sun Park's George Town Club. In a letter to the author, Terpil explained that "Historically, one of Wilson's Agency jobs was to subvert members of both houses [of Congress] by any means necessary.... Certain people could be easily coerced by living out their sexual fantasy in the flesh.... A remembrance of these occasions [was] permanently recorded via selected cameras.... The technicians in charge of filming ... [were] TSD [Technical Services Division of the CIA]. The unwitting porno stars advanced in their political careers, some of [whom] may still be in office."

Gray's associate Wilson was apparently continuing the work of a reported collaborator of Gray from the 1950s-McCarthy committee counsel Roy Cohn, now dead of AIDs. According to the former head of the vice squad for one of America's biggest cities, "Cohn's job was to run the little boys. Say you had an admiral, a general, a congressman, who did not want to go along with the program. Cohn's job was to set them up, then they would go along. Cohn told me that himself."

The first president of Tong Sun Park's George Town Club, where Wilson's sexual blackmail operations were reportedly run, was Robert Keith Gray.

Gray maintained his intelligence connections during the Reagan Administration, according to an affidavit filed with the Southern District of Florida Court on December 12, 1986, by Attorney Daniel Sheehan for the Christie Institute. The affidavit states that when CIA chief Casey, national security adviser Robert McFarlane, and NSC staff member Lt. Col. Oliver North were devising a method to circumvent a congressional ban on arming the Contras, they turned to Gray and Company.

Gray employee Rob Owen set up a private group to solicit funds for the Contras. Owen was called before Congress, to testify on how he delivered bags of cash to the Contras.

In February 1989, Hill and Knowlton's Charles Perkins rushed to New York, for a fraction of the firm's usual fee, to help with public relations for Covenant House. The youth organization's director, Father Bruce Ritter, was alleged to have molested youth who took refuge with him.

Lauded by the Reagan and Bush Administrations as a showcase for the privatization of social services, Covenant House had expanded into Guatemala as a gateway to South America. According to intelligence community sources, the purpose was procurement of children from South America for exploitation in a pedophile ring. The flagship Guatemalan mission of Covenant House was launched by a former business partner of Nicaraguan dictator Anastasio Somoza, Roberto Alejos Arzu, who had ties to the CIA, according to the *Village Voice* of Feb. 20, 1990. The *Voice* quoted Jean-Marie Simon, author of *Guatemala: Eternal Spring, Eternal Tyranny:* "It's like having Idi Amin on the board of Amnesty International."

A top source of money for Covenant House has been Robert Macauley, founder of Americares, a service organization implicated in channeling funds to the Contras. A close friend of the Bush family since Connecticut, Andover and Yale days, Macauley has George Bush's brother Prescott on the Americares' board. Father Ritter was a vice president of Americares, at least until he had to resign from Covenant House

in February 1989, and spent weekends at Macauley's estate in Connecticut, according to a former Covenant House employee.

As in New York, also in Nebraska an institution that sheltered child abuse could count on protection from Washington. The attitude of federal agencies towards Larry King's Franklin Credit Union fits the mold.

All the way back in 1984, a Franklin teller named Edward Hobbs tried to blow the whistle about the embezzlement of funds from the credit union. He addressed a memorandum to his employers, and traveled to Lincoln, the state capital, to brief state banking officials on its contents. National Credit Union Administration (NCUA) examiners saw Hobbs' memorandum later that year. The memo covered evidence of embezzlement, and information Hobbs had, that promotions at Franklin were based on doing homosexual favors for its manager, Larry King.

The only visible result of his initiative was that Edward Hobbs lost his job.

Between 1985 and 1988, Franklin skipped the annual audit, required by federal law for institutions of its type. The Legislature's Franklin committee was told that when an audit was called for, King would pick up a special phone, call someone in Washington, and the audit would be called off.

1 got the whiff of a Washington connection, when 1 first inquired about Franklin. As I explained it at a public meeting in December 1990, "I first noted something a little funny with the credit union when a good friend of mine and sometimes adversary on occasion, named Ernie Chambers, complained that the major financial institutions weren't making loans into the black community, that they were red-lining, in other words making sure the financing couldn't go into the black areas. As I began to investigate, I tried to find out information on ... [Franklin]-what was it doing to get loans there? ... I found out that all the king's horses and all the king's men couldn't get information because, I was told, that was none of my business and if I didn't like it, to talk to the Feds and if you talk to the Feds you could find out nothing."

CHAPTER 14

COVER-UP PHASE III: THE FBI

In a deposition taken October 13, 1989, John Stevens Berry, counsel for the Franklin committee, was grilling OPD Chief Wadman about the lack of OPD follow-up on the child abuse when it was first reported. In exasperation, Wadman replied:

> The tough thing with this, Mr. Berry, is that we have the FBI who conducts an investigation and basically says the same things that we have said. If the FBI, are they now linked to this cover-up in some way? Should the Justice Department be investigated as somehow or another assisting in this "cover-up?"

Wadman said it, but in this case it's true. The Justice Department, acting through the FBI and the U.S. Attorney's Office in Omaha, emerges from the record of the Franklin investigations not so much as a party to the cover-up, but as its coordinator. Rigging grand juries, harrassment of witnesses, incitement to perjury and tampering with evidence-federal personnel were seen to apply all of those techniques in the Franklin case.

• • •

In a case full of reported trips across state lines for sexual exploitation purposes, involving prominent persons from the national political parties, where was the Federal Bureau of Investigation? It was running interference, and worse.

Maybe Senator Schmit and I got the message in its purest form, when we met with Omaha FBI head Nick O'Hara in his

office in early 1989. O'Hara, who kept Wadman's picture on his desk, threatened, "You f--- with Bob Wadman, you f--- with the FBI!"

There was a hint of trouble from the Bureau already in the summer of 1988, as OPD Officer Irl Carmean recollected in a memo to Deputy Chief Charlie Parker, dated December 20, 1988. A fellow officer had just reminded Carmean of a meeting back in July or August, where

> Lt. [Bill] Goodrich spoke of the Larry King investigation and stated that he (Goodrich) had been in contact with a federal agency that was also investigating King. To the best of Officer Berney's recollection, Lt. Goodrich said that the federal agency was concerned that our child pornography/ abuse investigation might hamper their investigation. Officer Berney told me that although he wasn't sure, it was either directly stated or he (Berney) got the impression that we were to either "slow down or back off' in our investigation so as not to impede the federal case.

In 1988 and 1989, according to testimony to the Legislature's Franklin committee, the FBI claimed to be interested in Franklin money issues, but not child abuse. Dennis Carlson of the Foster Care Review Board testified to the Franklin committee, citing state Assistant Attorney General William Howland, that U.S. Attorney Tom Thalken had said "that the federal authorities were investigating Mr. King.... But he said basically their investigation was confined to the money issues, and they were not specifically investigating allegations of child abuse."

Howland's part-time investigator, Vlahoulis, told the Franklin committee that it was his impression the FBI had information on private charter flights, something Gary Caradori would confirm in a dramatic way.

Moreover, as advertised in a May 12, 1990 article in the *World-Herald,* the FBI had been looking at Franklin since 1987, for over a year before it was closed! The FBI men could hardly have been unaware of the Franklin ambiance, not to mention the bedroom in the new addition, and the evidence shows that they were not. It was reported in the *Lincoln Journal*

in December 1988, as summarized by Jerry Lowe for the Franklin committee, that "an ex-employee who is not identified said that when FCU shut down, FBI agents immediately began asking questions regarding child pornography, drugs and the lifestyle of Larry King."

Caradori's notes of March 14, 1990 record that on the day of the federal agents' raid, he was told by a member of the accounting firm that was auditing Franklin, that

> a large amount of pornographic material was taken out of the credit union, including videos and photographs depicting sexual acts. I was told that if Friedrichs* or any of the other people working for the CPA firm that was contracted by the government would say anything, that they would automatically lose their jobs.

That evidence was never made available to the Franklin committee, nor its existence publicly acknowledged by the FBI. All warrants concerning the raid were sealed by U.S. Magistrate Richard Kopf.

• ▪ •

The Douglas County grand jury proclaimed on July 23, 1990, that the allegations and evidence of Franklin-linked child abuse were a "carefully crafted hoax." Its report implied that the perpetrators were Alisha Owen, journalist Michael Casey, and the late Gary Caradori. According to testimony of Alisha Owen and her parents before the Franklin committee, the FBI had this line already in March of 1990, *before the grand jury even started sitting.*

Alisha testified to the Franklin committee on June 11, 1990, before promulgation of the grand jury report, that her former lawyer Pam Vuchetich had come to see her in the spring,

> giving a proposal from the FBI that if! recanted my story then nothing would happen to me, I could possibly get out of prison and no charges would ever be brought against me. Such as, if I recanted my story, they wouldn't charge me with perjury, they wouldn't charge me with lying, they would just drop the

whole thing, they would write letters to the judge asking for my sentence reduction so I could get out of prison. And if– and in this deal I would have to say that Gary Caradori and Mike Casey came to me, they set this whole thing up, they told me what to say, we got scripts, we were promised monetary values. And I would be taken care of.

On June 21, 1990, Donna and Alvin Owen told the Franklin committee about that incident.

DONNA OWEN: My concern is that Pam came to us and said that the FBI wanted Alisha to say this, to drop it.

SENATOR LYNCH: You testified that your husband was there?

ALVIN OWEN: Sitting in the living room, I remember.

SENATOR LYNCH: You heard her say that? ... Did she tell you who in the FBI made that deal, made that offer to her?

DONNA OWEN: Mickey Mott. ...

SENATOR LYNCH: Was Mickey Mott-was there anybody else with this Mickey Mott?

DONNA OWEN: He works closely with Rick Culver and John Pankonon.

SENATOR LYNCH: Okay. Well, for the record, do you remember the date at which time she told you about the FBI deal when your husband was present?

DONNA OWEN: This would have been on Tuesday, I believe. If Tuesday is April 25, then it would have been Tuesday, April 25, 1990. It would have all-that was brought up then, but it was also brought up earlier, in March. Because at that time, I called Senator Labedz and I said, do you realize that this is what is happening and I want to tell you this because I think when all is said and done it's not going to just be this man Mike Casey, they are going to say that Gary Caradori was in on it and that members of the legislative committee were in on it. And she was very concerned and she immediately went to get Senator Schmit and I talked with him about it also. And that would have been in March.

SENATOR SCHMIT: I recall that.

• • •

In order for the FBI to claim that all of the Franklin committee's evidence was a hoax, they had to break one or more of the witnesses Caradori had taped. Troy Boner and Danny King recanted; what happened with Troy shows the hand of the FBI.

On the evening of July 11, 1990, the day her husband crashed to his death, Sandie Caradori received several phone calls from Troy Boner. She wrote up her notes on the calls:

> I need to preface this writing by explaining that in the course of the Franklin Credit Union investigation, many calls were received at our home from Troy Boner. I was familiar with the individual's voice and can be 100% assured that I did, in fact, receive the telephone calls from him.
>
> In the early evening of Wednesday, July 11, 1990, several telephone calls were received at our home by an individual identifying himself as "Troy." Different individuals answered the telephone and took the message from him. I was either talking to other visitors at our home or in no shape to come to the telephone. In any event, if necessary I can supply names of the parties who can attest to the fact that a "Troy" called for me during that evening.
>
> Later in the evening, Troy again called and I was able to go the telephone. It should be noted that I did not initiate the call, nor did I know what, if anything, he wanted to speak to me about.
>
> The following is a synopsis of the conversation:
>
> SC: This is Sandie Caradori. . . . Troy, what do you want to say?
>
> TB: First, you have to be careful.
>
> SC: Troy, that is the least of my worries. How are you?
>
> TB: I am so sorry. I am so sorry. He shouldn't have died.
>
> SC: What are you saying Troy? What are you trying to tell me.
>
> TB: Gary wasn't lying. He didn't tell me what to say. What I told him was the truth. (He spoke rapidly as if fighting

back tears.) They made me take it back. They threatened me.

sc: Troy, you should tell someone.... Do you want me to call Senator Schmit? You need to come out with the truth once and for all. Troy. what has happened?

TB: You don't understand, they threatened me. They made me take it back. I was so scared.

(At this point I felt I needed someone else to hear this so I asked Troy to tell what he had just told me to our son, Sean.)

sc: Troy, I want you to talk to Sean, Gary's lti-year old son. Please tell him, alright?

TB: Yeah, sure.

SEAN: Yeah, man what do you want?

I, along with the ten to 15 other people in our kitchen/ family room heard Sean's portion of the conversation as follows:

SEAN: Okay buddy, you need to do it for my Dad, man. Okay ... Okay ...

I got back on the telephone and told him I would try to contact Senator Schmit or Karen [Ormiston). He said he'd be at [phone number) but only for a short time. He said he was going to be "on the move" or something to that effect. He further stated, "I'll go to anyone who'll listen. I'll go without my lawyer. I'm gonna come clean."

He then asked if I would talk with his mother. She wanted to talk. I said, "Of course."

Troy's mother's voice was familiar. She had called our house several times for Gary..., Troy's mother related the following:

MRS. BONER: Mrs. Caradori, I am so sorry. I'm so sorry. This is such a tragedy. I knew something happened to Troy. He got so scared just before he changed his story. They were threatening him. I knew he shouldn't have backed away from the truth....

Troy then got back on the telephone and I repeatedly asked that he would promise me that he would come through for me, for Gary, and for A.J. He said, promise '"

> tomorrow .... To anyone who will listen ... the FBI, the news-anyone."
>
> The next day I did not hear anything on the television or the radio and I really felt that Troy had probably backed away. That evening he called me again. He said, "Sandie, I tried, I tried. I went to Mickey Mott and. ..... (FBI agents). They laughed at me. They said they spent too much time and money on this case now for me to change my story. I also went to Frank Brown [Channel 7 TV] but he said he didn't want to take a statement because of my Grand Jury testimony."

• • •

The next day, Sandie Caradori arrived at the offices of her husband's firm for the first time since his death, to find two FBI agents already there, with a subpoena for all of Caracorp's records. Mrs. Caradori recalled:

> I was extremely upset because the timing certainly left much to be desired. I opened the closed door and noted two FBI agents, Karen Ormiston, and our security director, Joe Hebenstreit. They were all seated in the office. I said, "I don't think I need to introduce myself. What are you doing here? I can't believe this."
>
> The smaller individual stammered a bit and looked at Karen and said, "Who ... who is this?" "She's Gary's widow." He then halfway stood up and extended his hand as if to shake mine and expressed his/their sympathy. The whole ordeal was extremely unprofessional. He then looked over his shoulder at the other agent, gave him a smirk, and shook his head. He identified himself as Mickey Mott. ... I then asked them directly whether Troy Boner had tried to speak with them on the previous day. Mr. Mott said, "I can't confirm or deny that." I indicated that I did deserve an answer. Mr. Mott then said, "Yeah, he came to the office but we can't waste our time with him. He has lost all credibility."

Troy Boner did attempt to come clean. He went not only to the FBI office, but to Senator Schmit's-and then pretended he had not. The *World-Herald* reported July 27, 1990:

> State Senators Loran Schmit of Bellwood and Bernice Labedz of Omaha said Troy Boner told blatant lies when he said he did not come to Schmit's office last week and when he said he didn't recant what he told a Douglas County grand jury.... Schmit said at least eight people were in his office last week when Boner, in essence, recanted his recantation and said that what he had originally told Caradori was the truth.
>
> Six of the eight appeared at a press conference Thursday, including four-Schmit, Sen. Labedz, Caradori associate R.I. Nebe and Jody Gittins, an attorney who works in Schmit's office-who said they heard Boner's comments directly.... The six at the press conference Thursday said Boner was in Schmit's office both July 16 and July 17, the day of Caradori's funeral.

Under pressure, Boner reasserted that what he told Gary Caradori was not true. His new lawyer, Marc Delman, insisted that his client *had* lied to Caradori. A specialist in child abuse cases when he worked in the Douglas County Attorney's Office, Delman was now better known for defending pornographers. Since Boner was penniless, many people in Omaha wondered if Alan Baer or another patron had given him the money to hire Delman.

• • •

On Sept. 25, 1990, a federal grand jury returned findings almost identical to those of the Douglas County jury:

> There is no credible evidence for us to believe that funds or individuals connected with the Franklin Community Federal Credit Union were involved in the sexual exploitation of minors, the interstate transportation of minors, the interstate transportation of minors for sexual purposes or the trafficking in controlled substances.

All of the big shots named in the Caradori investigation were cleared:

> There is no credible evidence for us to believe that any prominent individuals in the Omaha community were in-

> volved in any ring of organized activity to sexually exploit minors, transport minors in interstate commerce for sexual purposes, or to traffic in controlled substances.

Alisha Owen was indicted again, on eight counts of perjury.

The FBI, as Boner said, had threatened Boner into recanting his videotaped statement, which enabled the Douglas jury to return its "carefully crafted hoax" verdict, and set the pattern for the federal grand jury. Federal officials in charge of the latter, in particular Assistant U.S. Attorney Thomas Thalken, attempted to terrorize Alisha Owen into recanting as well.

In testimony to the Franklin committee on June 21, 1990, Owen told about her experience with the federal grand jury, in an exchange with committee counsel.

> BERRY: Now, I do not want to know what questions were asked and what answers you gave. But you told me earlier that your life hasn't been easy and the worst three days of your life were in front of the county grand jury. Was the federal grand jury a more pleasant experience of-
>
> OWEN: Well, now I have to clarify that statement. No longer-the worst three days of my life were not in front of the county grand jury but they were in front of the federal grand jury....
>
> Imagine if you were woken up at 5:00 in the morning, told to take a shower and get dressed. You were not told where you were going. I mean, if sombody came to your home at 5:00, did not tell you where you were going, they had the authority to drag you out of bed. After you got dressed you were then taken outside your home and wrapped in chains and driven two hours to another city, all-you were still not told where you are going and what is actually happening. Officially you are not told.
>
> Then once you get to this other city, you're put into an actual cage. I mean, I have seen kennels look nicer than where I was held. And five minutes before 9:00, you are given a subpoena telling you that you have to testify at 9:00 in front of a grand jury. Now, that-I mean that in itself is suspect. Okay. Especially if you are the witness. I might be able to understand it if you are the perpetrator....
>
> I am in a room and it's a cage, okay, it's-it really is a

> cage like a zoo cage. The whole front is just a cage. And there is a hallway and there is-there is an open door so I can hear what's going on in the hallway because it's just a cage, there is no sound barrier. I heard Mr. Thalken repeatedly and repeatedly in a very disrespectful-what I consider dis-I wouldn't talk to anybody like that, disrespectful tone, saying things repeatedly, over and over, if she gets up there and she doesn't tell the truth I'm going to charge her with perjury. Over and over and over and over again. I have not heard the word perjury so many times in my entire life than that day.... He was saying this to my attorney, saying I'm going to put her on the stand and if she doesn't, you know, if she doesn't tell the truth I'm going to charge her with perjury.

Alisha's attorney Henry Rosenthal confirmed her account:

> Well, I don't know Tom Thalken.... He came at me like a little grizzly bear.... And he had a finger about two inches from my nose and kept yelling about perjury. And I didn't even know what he was talking about. Over and over about this and that and this and that. I said, let me tell you, if you think you have got any evidence of perjury when she's done, please charge her, just please do that. And that's-every time there was a recess, yelling about perjury.... This was before the evidence even started.

Long before Thalken's behavior in dealing with Owen, his name had surfaced in Gary Caradori's investigation, as an alleged pedophile who frequented adult book stores in Council Bluffs, Iowa. Moreover, a confidential informant told Caradori, that Thalken was key to the cover-up in progress. In a February 22, 1990 report, Caradori transcribed an interview with this confidential informant.

> GC: Are the federal people still putting me down, have you heard? I mean they want me off this case.
>
> CI: Well, they don't want anybody to get too close to it. ... This thing is way bigger than Nebraska.... You get one of those dominoes to fall I think it could reach to the White House and back so fast. That's why it's just almost hopeless.

GC: What have you heard that they're doing [sic] to do to try to squash this case?

CI: Well, their ace in the hole is the assistant prosecutor.

GC: Thalken.

CI: Yeah. And the term was a year ago, finger in the dike.

• • •

Rosenthal was Alisha' s second lawyer. He succeeded Pamela Vuchetich, who had conveyed to Alisha the FBI's offer of a deal, from Vuchetich's friend Mickey Mott. **In** her Franklin committee testimony of June 11, 1990, Owen reported another incident involving Vuchetich and the FBI, which appeared to be an attempt to craft some evidence of the "carefully crafted hoax":

> They had Troy call me in the beginning of March. He called me in the afternoon and I got on the phone. . .. Pam had told me that Troy had recanted his statement about Danny. She never told me he recanted his statement about me. And you know, maybe I was naive, maybe I was just dumb, but I never once thought he could do that because, I mean, I had all this evidence, you know, and I mean, I'm the one that-you know, that told them about Troy and others. It never dawned on me that he would ever do that, recant about Danny.
>
> So we-I got on the phone and I-one of the first things I asked him was, why are you doing this to Danny, he's one of your best friends, how could you do this, what are you doing? And he said, something, Alisha, I'm scared. And his voice-the FBI has this tape. His voice is just really scared.
>
> And I know Troy sleeps until 4:00 or 5:00 at night, so I started to think oh, my God, he's in Omaha for a week, it's 3:00,2:30 in the afternoon, somebody must be at his house making him do this. And I thought this must be a taped phone conversation. I was-I was literally scared. I thought either they sat down a lot of money in front of him or else somebody has got a gun to his head making him say this.

I mean, I never thought-it never dawned on me the FBI would be so, you know, devious as to try and do something like that.

So I asked him, why are you doing this? And he-and he said, Alisha, I'm scared, I don't know what to do, tell me what to do. And then he asked me, quote, unquote, do you think we're going to get any money? And I–I stopped for a second and I said, I don't give a damn about any money, you know, just tell the truth. That's what I said, quote, unquote. Excuse my French. But I just-just tell the truth. He said, what should I do? And I said, just tell the truth.

And he kept trying to make these leading statements, Alisha, what should I do? And that's when I realized at that point in time that whoever was listening was probably law enforcement, trying to do entrapping statements. . . . And after I got off the phone, I tried to get ahold of Pam. Well, Pam is sitting down in the FBI's office with them making that call. Tried to get hold of Pam, Pam is not around. So I was upset enough and I was worried enough that possibly somebody was sitting there with a gun that I called Gary. And I thought, okay, if anybody is going to be able to do anything or know anything, Gary will know or he'll be able to find out.

I called Gary. And Gary said, Alisha, Troy is sitting down at the FBI's office right now. So okay, I knew that the FBI was the one that prompted him to that call.... So Gary told me that it was the FBI. And Gary said to me at that time, Alisha, maybe you should start wondering why your attorney is spending so much time with the FBI.

Against Alisha Owen's specific instructions, she reported, Vuchetich turned over to the FBI a file that Alisha maintained on acquaintances from her past. Vuchetich had suggested she assemble this information. In it were the names of some people, like former boyfriends, who could be expected to be bitter toward her.

Alisha Owen told the Franklin committee, that the FBI also directly advised her to tell a lie-to say that she had lied on the videotapes.

SENATOR SCHMIT: In other words, they advised you to say that you had lied on the tapes?

ALISHA OWEN: Uh-huh,

SENATOR LABEDZ: The FBI?

OWEN: The FBI had advised me that I should say that not everything on the tapes is true, just a blanket statement, and say not everything on the tapes is true, and that I should forget all about the tapes because they can come back to hurt me.

SCHMIT: I want to interrupt there because that is almost an identical statement that we heard in the press made by Troy, that not everything on the tapes was true.

OWEN: That's what they told me to say.... And there were times when they tried to get me to say that Gary Caradori was withholding evidence from them, there were times when they-they basically really rammed Gary into the ground.

Caradori wrote in his daily notes of April 20, 1990:

> At approximately 1415, this writer received a telephone call from Alisha Owen. She talked about the FBI hinting to her that if she changed her story that they would insure that they would after" this writer and Mike Casey for "fabricating" an investigation. She informed me that she had not fabricated any part of any story and that she was sticking to the story she told me, and that she wished me well. For my own protection, I tape recorded the telephone conversation which lasted approximately 30 minutes.

According to an associate of Caradori, Franklin committee counsel John Stevens Berry alerted Caradori that he should get a lawyer, since he would likely be indicted.

• • •

Alisha was not the only witness the FBI was reported to have harrassed or told to lie. At a Franklin committee session on June 22, 1990, Senator Labedz related her discussion with former Franklin employee Noel Seltzer:

> One of the most important things that I thought he told me was the fact that when they first went into the investigation of Larry King, he was talked to by the FBI and he told them mostly everything that he told me about the sexual abuse and so forth. And then he said he was told by the FBI, we're going to advise you it's best for you that you keep your mouth shut. And I said, say that again, and he repeated it so I could write it down.

Gary Caradori interviewed a victim-witness named Terry Muller*. **In** his daily report of April 20, 1990, Caradori wrote:

> Further this writer received a telephone call from Sue Tompkins*, sister of Terry Muller. Briefly, Sue told this writer that the FBI and a member of the State Patrol were harrassing her brother and trying to get him to talk about things that he just didn't know about. She stated that her brother is extremely scared. He wants to tell the truth, however, he felt extremely uncomfortable with the FBI and State Patrol investigators. She stated that a Phillips and FBI Agent Coulter were very harsh with her brother.

On May 4, 1990, Caradori added:

> Following this meeting, this writer placed a telephone call to Sue Tompkins, who is the sister of Terry Muller. She advised me that Terry had retained an attorney to protect him from the FBI. I told her that I wished him well and hoped that everything worked out for him.

Caradori's investigative notes for February 19, 1990 record his talk with Joanie Gregory, a Department of Social Services social worker who screened families applying for foster care licenses:

> Approximately 2.5 years ago she was inspecting the home of Jarrett and Barbara Webb for a renewal of their license. She felt the environment was not right and wrote a letter to DSS in Lincoln. She received no response. After a couple of months, she wrote a letter to the Omaha Police Department regarding this same situation with the Webbs. She was then contacted by the FBI. In the meantime she had tried to do some research on her own, but evidently files were missing.

> To this writer's knowledge, a letter was not written to the FBI. The FBI informed Joanie Gregory that it would probably be in her best interests if she "forgot this information."

Caradori recorded in his notes for December 1, 1989:

> At approximately 4:00 PM Senator Schmit arrived at [committee counsel] Steve Berry's office, during which time he advised me that within the last 48 hours the FBI were scrutinizing several of his businesses such as his gambling machines in southeastern Nebraska and other related matters.

On his own bitter experience with the Bureau, Caradori commented to the Franklin committee, on June 22, 1990.

> CARADORI: I think the [Douglas Co.] grand jury is being misfed information.
>
> SEN. LYNCH: By who, can you tell?
>
> CARADORI: I think they are being misled by the influence of the State Patrol investigator and various people in the FBI.
>
> BERRY: Do you think the FBI and the State Patrol are deliberately misleading the grand jury?
>
> CARADORI: I do, but I can't-you know, I have nothing to base it on. You know, the people ... in law enforcement say, we checked every lead you got, every lead that you have and it's nothing. And it's like, you know, all the work that you have done is not worth a damn. ... [T]he most frustrating thing in this whole case, and no sense dwelling on it, has been that you produce a work product, not every lead is going to be in gold but you produce a work product and then one of the aspects of your investigation is the State Patrol and right away it goes to them, goes to the FBI and-and then they just tear you apart. And yeah, it's been really frustrating....
>
> SEN. LYNCH: So the impression that we talked about being left with the grand jury wasn't an impression that this committee or witnesses that we had or any staff in addition to you, our counsel, misled us with information, but the fact that information we developed that we shared with the FBI and the police department was in fact used by them to-

CARADORI: Work against us.

SEN. LYNCH: Discredit us.

CARADORI: I go on record and say I – I didn't want to give them our data....

BERRY: Mr. Creager and I, and following our advice the chairman and the committee members, have instructed you that everything you have must be turned over to both the grand juries, federal and county, you feel that sometimes your investigative effort has been sabotaged, is that-is that the source of your frustration?

CARADORI: That's right.

The legislative investigator found that the FBI interfered with material even before he got to it. One afternoon in late 1989, Caradori and Karen Ormiston spent several hours at YNR Airlines in Sioux City, Iowa, photocopying flight manifests of Larry King's charter flights. At other airlines, staffers had already confirmed to Caradori, that King took underage boys and girls with him on charter flights. At YNR, children's names were listed for the flights-proof that King was transporting children around the country as the Webb girls, Alisha Owen, Paul Bonacci, and others had charged.

The owner of YNR made a phone call, and prevented Caradori from leaving with the records, some of which had yellow FBI tabs attached to them. Since the Franklin committee had only limited, in-state subpoena power, Caradori requested the *NCVA* to subpoena the records, tum them over to him, and not mention this to the FBI. *NCVA* general counsel Robert Fenner agreed.

Caradori never got the records, but someone else apparently did. Caradori told a friend, that he saw some of the FBI stickers from YNR, in a notebook carried by FBI agent Mickey Mott. The FBI maintained that there was no proof whatsoever that King had transported children; the Douglas County grand jury lamented, that it was a pity charter companies did not keep flight manifests, so no trips could be verified.

In a September 25, 1990 letter to Senator Schmit, Ormiston summed up the FBI's activities:

> There must be *some* kind of provision which allows the State of Nebraska to retain its information so that there is not a probable cover-up when this stuff is turned over to the federal level. It is my sincere hope that the federal agencies cannot just walk all over the state agencies, especially since we have given them everything we have yet we have been allowed to see nothing that they have. This in itself has not only prolonged the investigation, but it has also been a major factor in that the FBI does seem to get to our leads since they do have a lot of manpower. I do feel that the leads turned over to the FBI have effectively been stonewalled as it pertains to this investigation.

• • •

The FBI's eagerness to discredit the victim-witnesses may be based on more than just an institutional commitment to protect former Omaha FBI chief Nick O'Hara's friend Chief Wadman, or Assistant U.S. Attorney Thalken, or higher-ups in Washington. A look at life inside the Bureau, including its Omaha branch, shows why.

In August 1990, black FBI agent Donald Rochon settled his suit against the FBI for racial discrimination. A highly decorated veteran of the Los Angeles Police Department, Rochon joined the FBI in the early 1980s. According to the settlement, Rochon, who worked in the Omaha FBI office in 1983 and 1984, will receive more than $1 million over his lifetime, and have his $500,000 in legal expenses paid.

In his suit, Rochon charged Omaha FBI personnel with sexual perversion. Some of the details are recorded in a "Motion of the [U.S.] Attorney General for Summary Judgment as to Plaintiffs [Rochon] 'Chicago Claims,' " filed on September 13, 1989 in Washington, D.C. After his Omaha assignment, Rochon had moved to Chicago, where the harassment continued.

Subhead II of that motion, "The Sexual Deviance Complaint and Investigation," reads in part:

> In response to his telephonic complaint, a signed sworn statement was taken from Rochon on July 3, 1984. In his

> statement, Rochon described a series of acts or events which he alleged were evidence of sexual deviance by SA [Special Agent] Dillon and other SAs assigned to the Omaha office. Specifically, Rochon alleged that he had "personally observed" Dillon "French kissing" SA Agent Terry 1. Bohle, a male, at a going-away party for SA Bohle, and that he likewise had "personally witnessed" Dillon "exposing himself in the Omaha office during a regular work day to numerous Omaha employees, both male and female." In addition, Rochon said that he had heard reports that Dillon had allowed Bohle to urinate into his mouth and to "urinate into a beer bottle, [from] which he subsequently drank;" and that Dillon had been observed "picking out the deodorant block in [the] men's urinal and placing this block in his mouth." Rochon further alleged that Dillon appeared preoccupied with homosexual sex, kept homosexual pornography at his desk, and had frequently spoken in the office of homosexual acts.

Another agent backed up Rochon's account of Dillon's allowing Bohle to urinate into his mouth. In an official response, Dillon protested that SA Bohle only "accidentally" did urinate on him on one occasion. He added that he, Dillon, had not exposed his penis in the office, as Rochon charged, but merely his buttocks. The Bureau defended Dillon's possession of pornographic homosexual literature, as necessary for his investigation of homosexual prostitution. But Rochon's claims of discrimination and harassment were so well substantiated, that the FBI chose to settle.

In October 1983, the FBI announced it had investigated a male prostitution ring in Omaha. Apparently one of the agents on the case was none other than SA Dillon. U.S. Attorney Ron Lahners commented privately at the time, "This thing is so big and involves so many prominent people around this state." The investigation was expected to bring high-level indictments, but never did. One Nebraska insider said recently, "There is no doubt that the pedophile networks investigated in 1983 overlapped those of Larry King; in fact King himself was probably looked at at that time."

Special agent Dillon, who was investigating homosexual prostitution in those years, was "real close to some priests at

Boys Town," according to a law enforcement source who knew Dillon then. Years later, Caradori received allegations that some priests associated with Boys Town, in particular Father Pat Henry and Father Fiala, were pedophiles; Father Henry was sent to Bolivia when child abuse scandals surfaced at Boys Town in the mid-1980s.

Donald Rochon was a successful agent, part of whose responsibility while in Omaha was to find missing children. He once was commended for finding a kidnapped girl within one day of beginning work on the case. Inevitably, as a black agent, he would have developed ties in the black community in north Omaha, where Larry King's pedophilia was notorious. Many of the boys King used as prostitutes were black, and were recruited from Boys Town, where the alleged pervert SA Dillon seemed to have friends. Would it have been just a matter of time until Rochon found himself investigating SA Dillon, and others in Dillon's clique? One thing was established for certain by Rochon's court documents: Dillon was the ringleader of the harassment operation which drove Rochon from Omaha, and most of the rest of the Omaha FBI office covered up for Dillon.

CHAPTER IS

KATHLEEN SORENSON'S STORY

At the time of his death, Gary Caradori was known.to be pursuing two tracks-the Washington, D.C. connection, and satanism. A satanic magazine was seen by a farmer at the site of Caradori's plane crash in rural Illinois; the magazine disappeared without a trace, and without further mention by the news media or the National Transportation Safety Board.

Caradori told Senator Schmit he had some Franklin leads to follow up, while he was in Chicago for the All-Star Game. One place he planned to visit was a satanic book store.

The Douglas County grand jury acknowledged that the allegations in the Franklin case "necessitated our studying satanic and pedophile activity in eastern Nebraska, particularly in the Omaha metropolitan area."

The testimony of two victim-witnesses who did not know each other, Loretta Smith and Paul Bonacci, placed King in the middle of such activity. Smith's testimony was apparently so sensitive, that the Douglas County Attorney's office made an unprecedented appeal to the presiding judge of the Douglas County Circuit Court, Judge James M. Murphy, to have it sealed in perpetuity. (When I became Paul Bonacci's attorney, this judge failed in an attempt to prevent me from representing or assisting Paul, which would have left him to be represented by a public defender. Eventually, Judge Murphy had to disqualify himself from the case, as a result of his attempt to injure me.)

Murphy granted the request to seal Smith's grand jury testimony. Its nature, however, was clear by the references to it in the jury's final report:

> In 1988 an Omaha girl, who was an inpatient at Richard Young Hospital, described a number of gruesome cult activities which she claimed to have witnessed between the approximate ages of 9 and 12.... According to the girl, she became involved in a cult where older male members sexually molested her and killed infants and children to establish their dominance over other cult members.

Smith had named Larry King as present at ritual sacrifices, along with school superintendent Deward Finch and the person called Kings Horse, identified by videotaped witnesses as King's henchman, the other Larry.

• • •

Satanic activity is not new in Nebraska and the surrounding midwestern states. Some families have passed it from generation to generation, over fifty or a hundred years. Satanic practices have spread into the highest levels of society, where Larry King traveled.

A Nebraska woman now in her forties, who calls herself "a little wild" in her youth, tells how she was approached at age 15 and asked if she were a virgin. A virgin was needed, it was explained, for certain occult ceremonies. When it appeared she might go (she didn't), she was told, "Don't be surprised at the wealthy and powerful people you will be seeing at the ceremony."

In 1974, ritualistic cult activity in parts of rural Nebraska was a big enough story to be featured in a *Washington Post* article, " 'Devil Cult' Sought in Nebraska Cattle Mutilations; Ranchers Enraged by Weird Deaths." It reported:

> There is angry-and serious-talk among Nebraska ranchers about helicopter-equipped devil cultists and fertility ritualism.... Since spring, 21 cases of cow or horse mutilations have been authenticated in a five-county area and some observers think the number should really be about 50. But it is difficult to determine the cause of death of a yearling after five or six days in open country.
>
> However Pierce County rancher Eugene Scott last week

found a calf which had been dead only five hours, according to the examining veterinarian. Its sex organs had been removed and the body drained of blood. State Patrol investigator E.M. Hastreiter said no blood or tracks were found on the scene.

Mutilation stories began in May and at first authorities attributed the acts to varmints, mostly coyotes. But then a veterinarian called to examine the dismembering and draining of a cow near Madison in June said he was concerned "that a human element was involved."

In most cases blood has been drained and reproductive organs removed. A helicopter frequently has been seen hovering over the area about the time of the mutilation. A copter with a spotlight was seen over the Lancaster County farm of Richard Benes the night of a confirmed mutilation there.

Knox County Sheriff Herbert Thompson, who is investigating seven mutilations, also reports the simultaneous sighting of unidentified helicopters in that area.

Dr. Richard Thill, Germanic professor at the University of Nebraska, who also teaches noncredit witchcraft courses, has been reviewing the reports and calls them "ritualistic." ...

Whatever is happening has nerves on edge. Nightly, cowboys in trucks with Citizen's Band radios and rifles patrol the prairies. Patrols are made almost nightly in the counties of Knox, Cedar, Antelope, Madison, and Burt.

In the blaze of publicity, and in face of the armed patrols, the ritualistic activity was driven underground, or into other, even more horrible forms.

According to testimony from Paul Bonacci, Larry King had been recruited to a satanic cult by December 1980 at the latest. In his written history, Bonacci described how King picked him up after school one day in December, "and took me to the Triangle which is in a wooded area in Sarpy County. I witnessed a sacrifice of a human baby boy. Everyone was chanting and it was a yearly ritual around the time of Christ's birth to pervert the blood of Christ. They used daggers and cut the boy and filled a cup with his blood and mixed urine in it and forced all of us to drink from the cup and chant 'Satan is Lord Lucifer

our King. Realm of darkness come now empower us your slaves.' Then they all began to chant some weird sounds and I got scared and was threatened I'd become the next sacrifice if I told anyone about it."

Bonacci said he witnessed the participation of another Franklin-related figure: did see [Alan] Baer take part in satanic activity on several occasions." Bonacci spoke to Dr. Judianne Densen-Gerber about his activities as a member of four different satanic cults in Nebraska, some of which had 50 to 100 members.

• • •

A groundbreaking account of satanic activities in Nebraska came from Kathleen Sorenson, the foster mother who took in Nelly and Kimberly Patterson after they fled from the Webbs.

Mrs. Sorenson decided to speak out about what she had learned from children in her care. Together with her eldest foster daugher, a survivor of ritualistic abuse, she spoke at public forums around the state, gave radio and television interviews, and appeared on Geraldo Rivera's nationally televised special on satanism. This is the report Kathleen Sorenson gave on a Christian TV interview program aired in Nebraska in 1989, based on her experience with over 30 children who spent months or years in her home.

> We got involved and learned about this subject because we were foster parents and worked with a number of children. And several years back, several of the children began, after a period of time and building up trust, began to talk about some very bizarre events that had happened in their past and they were frightening and very confusing. I really didn't know what to think. We went to the police, and we went to social services and there was really nothing anyone could do. These children we worked with are now adopted, in safe homes, and probably would never have talked had they not felt able to trust the people they were living with.
>
> There are certain things that are in common in the childrens' stories when we talk about devil worship.... There

are things that come up in every single story, such as candles. They all talk about sex. Sex is without a doubt a part of every area of this, all sorts of perverted sex. That is what you will first hear, about the sex, about the incest, and it is so hard to believe. But once we get that, we have learned that we can go on and ask and find out ... and it will involve pornography; that is always part of it. Part of the reason is that they can use that to threaten the children. "We have pictures, we will show the police if you talk." It makes the children feel that they are in great danger, and they are all very frightened of the law. They talk about the garish make-up that the people in the group wear, they talk about singing that they didn't understand. Obviously that is chanting, and that has come up in every one of these stories, and none of them call it chanting. There will be dancing. Most often that will involve sexual acts. There will always be a leader and they will be very frightened of the leader.

These children, from a very young age, and I am talking about children who came out of birth homes, the family they were born to, worshipped the devil. That's all I can share, and I don't pretend to be an expert. All I can tell you is what the children have told me. My husband and I say, we know things we shouldn't know. That's true, and I thought very carefully before I agreed to do the program, because we have heard so much, and it is so ugly, and so frightening, that you hesitate to tell it to people. It's very heavy to know. I don't want people running around looking in their closets and not leading normal lives. You don't want to think you are giving people ideas. I don't want people to say, if a child starts to talk about some of this, "They probably saw it on that show Kathleen did." But we're hearing more and more. And it is becoming very, very out in the open, and I think it's time for people to know that this is not fun and games; this is not something that we can laugh at-or ignore.

The children I have talked to have all had to murder before the age of two. That is something beyond anything I could comprehend. But in some way, whether with the help of an adult's hand over theirs, by having them practise, by getting them excited to be part of the adult scene, they do murder. And the evil thing that happens is, that they really believe that they want to. They want to do what the

older people are doing, and they are praised for that. And that becomes their goal, to be like the adults. There is a little part in them, that natural good, God-given part, which knows that it is wrong. But in a group, and in the excitement of everything, they want to do that. They *enjoy* the sex. Children are capable of enjoying the sex. I didn't know that. Well, why would they fight against it? A child will eat a bag of candy if you give it to them. They will take part in these things willingly. When they get out and begin to talk, it is very difficult for them to realize, we didn't realize it at first, that they actually wanted to do it.

They are told they will never get out, no one will ever believe them, that there is no freedom, that "the law will get you," they are hopeless before they get someone willing to listen. They are threatened with death. Every time a child is killed in their group, they are told, you tell, this will happen to you." They have every reason to believe that. So even when they are into the [foster care] system, and with another family and begin to feel somewhat safe, they still expect these people to show up on the doorstep. They believe that these people know everything they are doing, everyone they're talking to. One teenager told me that she had been told, that if she ever got married, that they would fool her, it would be one of them and she wouldn't know it ahead of time. They set them up to fail in every area.

It is very prevalent in the midwest, Iowa, Nebraska, Missouri. Some people have speculated recently that these states are headquarters . . . .

As you listen to us talk about these things, there will be a natural part of you which will deny much of what you hear, and believe me, we did too. I would like to share this with you, partly in the children's words, so that you can hear the things that they said that nobody could make up, that no child could know. That's what eventually convinced me, along with the deep emotion. The grieving, screeching damage and hurt that they cry out with as they talk. The children I will be talking about, these are all children that I personally talked to. They are today between the ages of 5 and 17. When they talked they were between the ages of 5 and 15. When these things occured to them, they were between the ages of, well birth, but of when memory enters

in, I would say a year and a half to eight. So we are talking about very small children.... We are talking about children forming consciences at that time, learning right from wrong. These children do not know. They come out and do not know what is right. They are confused. What they did before, that they were rewarded for, is such a horror to anybody else, that they are shunned. And most often they have been in multiple placements, they will go to a home, they will steal, they will lie, they will hurt animals. One little guy would sharpen pencils and try to stab people. I don't mean poke, I mean stab. People don't like that in their homes. They don't have any idea what it is, they just think, "We have a weird kid." Many are sent to psychiatric hospitals where they are labeled psychotics, schizophrenics, and who would want them in. I praise God that he brought so many of them into my life. and through our home, and that there are other families like ours, it is just a movement of the Holy Spirit, the only way I can explain it. ...

I will begin with the first stories that we heard, which will seem horrible to you, but are very mild to me, because we have progressed and heard far worse things. The first story is about two little boys who were 7 and 9 when they talked, and they told about sexual abuse at one point, and were very grieved. We talked about good and bad touching and we thought we really had gotten to the bottom of it, and then that afternoon the little one began to cry, and when we couldn't get the answer from him, the older brother said, "He is probably crying because he was in the room, when they killed his friend." That was the first one we know about. And as they described that, they talked about that particular victim being brought into a room, hands and arms tied, mouth taped, and how there had been x's marked on his body, on his vital organs. That was bad enough. Within a very few weeks we learned that it was not the adults who had killed that child. It was this oldest boy, who was talking.

The next person that we talked to was a little boy, who was very borderline mentally. He had language problems, it was very hard for him to explain himself. And when he began to come out of it, everyone was startled the way he talked. We were real sure, we knew he had not been around these other children and heard anything, but we began to

question ourselves, "Are we asking strange questions. Is there something odd about us which makes children come and dump these things on

The part which made me believe this child's story, he talked about different babies being killed, but this particular one being stabbed, he curled up in a fetal position, he was 9 years old when he was telling the story. He curled up in a fetal position, and his eyes got real glazed, and he said, "They cooked that baby on the grill." And I thought, he has really flipped out. I mean, I didn't know. And he said, "Oh, gross, it smelled like rotten chicken, or rotten deer."

He then went on to tell us how they would cut out the heart, or cut off the sex organs, and save them in the refrigerator. A very typical thing that these kids talk about. They *worship* the sex organs.... They kept it for another ceremony. I asked him where the bodies went. I did not get any answers from that child about what happened to the bodies, but the other two boys, who I spoke about first, eventually, they talked about throwing the babies in the fire. And I asked about that, "You mean they were dead when they threw them in the fire?" And the littlest one said, "No, no. Them was alive and them threw them." And by this time we were really getting freaked out. What were we going to do? How can you help these kids? Where do you find a therapist who can deal with this? ... But God set up a support system. Other families were helping us, and that really helped.

The next child I will share about, and I am going sort of by categories here, how we learned, and the types of killings, this little girl is II today, she was 9 when she first talked. It was a very painful thing when she first started to share the sex things. The sex things are so harmful to the children and they are so embarrassed and it is so personal to the children, and they know that they enjoyed that. They know that. We had been through all that. She began to draw pictures of cats, and the cats all had tails that were on the other side of the page, or their leg was someplace else. As we began to work with her and talk, she said that she had had to kill a pregnant cat. She first said that they had killed a pregnant cat. We said how did you know it was pregnant. Well, she could not explain that, but as we got into it, she confessed that she had had to kill the cat. And I asked her.

And her description was, "With a knife, I put it in her bottom, and twisted

Now you tell me, does a kid know that? If I ask a kid how do you kill a cat, do you think they will say that? Those are the kinds of details these children tell us. Later, and they eventually cut the cat open, and that was how they knew the cat was pregnant. And they eat parts of the cat, and the feces and the blood. And again, this was just the beginning. It progressed, and the next time she had to kill a baby, the same way-put the knife in the bottom and twist. The baby was alive and he was screaming. And that child hears that, to this day, and has nightmares and flashbacks. And they cut the baby open, and they ate the baby. They do this, so there are no bodies left, and they bum what is left and grind up the bones. And she talked about pouring gasoline on the bodies and burning them in the back yard. And I used to think that was nuts, but I have heard it enough times now that I know it must be so....

We know there are mortuaries involved, to cremate the bodies, and that makes sense....

The most horrible story about fire that I have to tell, and this is extremely, extremely disturbing, it was a little girl, she was a teenager when she was telling me. And she was describing a bam where they used to go to have their meetings and they used to gather outside the bam, and there would be chanting. And then as they went inside the bam they would be split into different groups. And she was never with any of her family, they all went to different places. And I asked her where she had to go and she said "I was always in the burning room." And as she went on to describe the burning room, I thought, how she came out of this, with any sanity at all, I don't know. She was a very small child.

They would take in children, probably pre-schoolers, and they would hang them from the rafters in this bam, and there would be as many as five or ten hung in a row. They would be fully clothed, which is unusual, because frequently they are naked. The children, like this girl, were all given candles. And you can picture the ceremony as she described it. And the candles were lit. Then the adults would go forward and would pour liquid from a cup on each of the children's clothing, which was obviously gasoline or kerosene. And

then they would give a signal and the others would have to go forward and set the children on fire. When they were done they would cut them down. The first child that this girl had to kill was a cousin, a little cousin. What does that do to you? But you couldn't object, because the children that objected were killed. Frequently, she said, people would come in families, not knowing that their child would be sacrificed, and she described the screams when they realized that their child had been killed....

This child, about two years ago, just fell to the ground at Christmas time, everyone thinks that Christmas is such a wonderful time. And she confessed that she hated Christmas, she couldn't wait until everything was put away, because all she could hear was babies crying. Christmas is the time when the most babies die. And she covered her ears and cried for 2½ hours, and screamed, "Stop it, stop it, stop it! Talk to God and make him stop it!" All she could hear is the screams and the babies crying....

Christmas for the children I have talked to, has been one of the worst times. I have had three children tell me about a very similar ceremony, and I will kind of merge that and tell you how it went. They were taken to a church, and all the children, it is a very festive occasion, and they are taken to the front of the church, and a small child is now brought in, two of them talked about babies and they put them on a platform. The adults are all celebrating and dancing, and singing and the children are getting into the spirit of it, and what they are doing is forming a circle around the child, and of course the child represents the child Jesus, and they begin mocking, and spitting, and calling names, and then they encourage the children to begin doing it, and you can imagine how it gets out of control. And at some point they hand all of the children knives and then they are all hacking, and slashing until the baby is dead, and then they all celebrate because the child Jesus is dead.

• • •

Kathleen Sorenson was aware that it was dangerous to tell the public what she did. She appealed to friends, "Pray for me." She died in a head-on car crash in October 1989.

Fonner FBI abuse specialist Ted Gunderson evaluated the accident in which Kathleen Sorenson was killed as a satanic contract suicide. The other driver didn't die, but well could have; in satanic lore, a person who loses his life in such a contract murder/suicide will be reincarnated with more power, granted by Satan.

Kathleen was driving on a long, narrow stretch of road between Fremont, Nebraska and her home in Blair. At least several people knew the road she would be on, and at what time. A car was traveling in front of her, which was possibly the "spotter" car used in such a situation. Another car, coming from the opposite direction, crossed the center line and rammed into Kathleen's car, killing her. Both the young woman driver and her husband had prior arrest records for cruelty to animals, a common marker for satanism.

Not long after Sorenson's death, a teenager in a youth care facility told a worker, "You better watch out or we will get you like we got that lady from Blair." The youth went on to describe a ceremony of drawing lots for the privilege.

• • •

One of the most potent weapons of the satanists is the inability of the average person to comprehend such hideous events as described by Kathleen Sorenson. A few years ago, if anyone had recounted something like her testimony to me, I would have recommended that they be hauled off to the loony farm. Today, I have no doubt that much-maybe all-of it is true. I have been confronted with documentation of a world I did not know about or believe existed.

I understand why normal people, reading Kathleen Sorenson's words, will have what psychiatrists call a "denial syndrome." Dr. Densen-Gerber addressed this phenomenon, when she testified before the Senate Franklin committee on December 29, 1990:

> I want to say one thing. I would not want the committee to disband. I think: that that is not in the best interest of the

> average Nebraska citizen for the reasons that I have said. I would also not want the material to be turned over to any other commmittee. Because it takes two to three years for the average person to get through the automatic denial that goes along with this kind of material. The first human defense mechanism against untenable horrific facts is to say that they don't exist.

Dr. Densen-Gerber testified that a particular satanic ritual, in which a two-year-old child was placed in the cavity created by a Caesarean section delivery of a baby, was so horrible that she herself refused to understand what some of her patients were telling her.

> I've been in this field for an awfully long time. I should have realized that's what these three patients were telling me. It was so horrific for me to contemplate. Taking a two-year-old child and placing it in an open uterus, in a dying woman. To have this child covered with blood. I used denial myself after all these years.... [This] has occurred, according to Sorenson, in Nebraska, and now she's dead. And the same thing that is described, this ceremony, was described by Bonacci as occurring in Nebraska.

She reviewed her prison interview with Paul Bonacci, conducted the previous day: 1) He has an extraordinary memory for detail, making him an invaluable witness, 2) He does not lie, 3) He has precisely described satanic rituals used by international cults which it were impossible for him to have known, unless he participated in them.

> Oh, he calls one personality a computer chip in his head. He keeps it together by this meticulous obsessive attention to detail. So that he can give you times and dates that I have never seen in any other child abuse case. I have never seen a child who could do this kind of thing. ... So that he is an unusual witness.... He doesn't fabricate, he'll say "I don't know," if he doesn't know....
>
> And then you have, what I think that you may have here. You have an internationally-connected cult. In which persons move from one place to another and [have] very set rituals and are busy attempting to bring about a force of evil

of the anti-Christ. Now he knew such things, as for instance, let me give you an example. In discussing the C[aesarean]-section, which was done here in Nebraska, the Triangle. When he was there the girl was fifteen, as he describes her two year old son had to have sex with her prior to her death, prior to the hysterotomy or C-section.... The two year old had sex with his mother. The mother was a believer, he states that she was not tied down, though she was drugged, and a lot of them had drugs. The baby was removed and the blood drained, the chalice passed, the high priest urinated in the chalice, in the blood. Because part of the way of the reverse Christian belief is to take the blood and defile it. But only the high priest may do it. And he knew it. ... The baby was dismembered.... The next thing that he said is that the child would not stop crying and so they eliminated that child as well. And ate the flesh. And the mother died and she was also eaten by the cult. And I said, "well, what happened to the bones and teeth?" And he said that they were ground in a machine. Which is one of the ways that they do do it. He described it extremely well.

Occasionally you have to ask a question in a matter of fact way. So instead of saying was there anything done with any body part that was unusual, I said "Who ate the eyes?" Because part of this ritual is the eating of the eyes. And because the concept is that when you eat the eyes of the fetus or the new born, you gain sight, that's a Celtic Druid ritual which has been taken by these individuals. And without a change in voice or anything else he said Malachi ate the eyes.... And I said but you were supposed to eat the eyes [as the third-ranking member in the cult]. And he said I was out of favor and was not permitted to eat the eyes.... But I have to tell you the detail that he knew about how the rituals are conducted have convinced me he has been at ritual events. There is no other way that this child could know.

CHAPTER 16

FOUR FIGHTERS WHO DIDN'T QUIT

Freeing America from the influence of those who protect and engage in official corruption-from drug dealing to pedophilia, from abuse of public office to protection of satanism-will depend on people who put fear behind them and stand for human dignity. The lives of four fighters who didn't quit, even under frightening conditions, give hope and encouragement for the fight to defeat the pedophile rings. I asked their friends to talk about these four people. I have incorporated their observations with some of my own.

PAUL BONACCI, A CHRISTIAN FIGHTING FOR LIFE

Two years ago, if anyone had told me, John DeCamp, that a person could have several distinct, real personalities within one body, I would have thought they had been reading too much science fiction, or living with Alice in Wonderland. Then, the Douglas County Grand Jury indictment of Paul Bonacci brought me deeper into the Franklin case, and the suffering of its victims. Paul Bonacci called me shortly after he was indicted, and I agreed to visit him in the jail where he was incarcerated for touching another boy on the outside of his pants.

Meeting with Paul, I have spoken to several of his personalities. Three psychiatrists who have examined him concurred in the diagnosis of Multiple Personality Disorder, brought on by

horrible, traumatic abuse when he was a child. My first act with respect to representing Paul Bonacci was to have him write down everything he could remember, about individuals who had abused him, from his earliest boyhood. An excerpt from what he wrote appears in Chapter 10. **In** that document and in Paul's letters, his handwriting will vary, depending on which personality is in control.

Bonacci was sentenced to five years in prison in 1989, for molesting a young boy for whom he was baby-sitting. Apparently one of Paul's homosexual personalities was in control of him during the incident, in which he briefly put his hand on the outside of the young boy's pants, an activity stopped when a remorse-stricken Paul reasserted control. Despite testimony from family friends and church members, that this was out of character, and despite its being a first offense, the Omaha court "threw the book" at Paul. This was before Gary Caradori first interviewed Paul, but the Franklin case had broken, and it would have been known to those to whom it mattered, that Bonacci could be a key Franklin witness.

Paul Bonacci is not just a victim. He is an intelligent young man, who has entered a process of redemption. Bonacci was intentionally damaged, spiritually and physically, from a very early age. He was forced to participate in "headhunting" expeditions, luring younger boys into servitude.

Throughout his childhood, Paul fought desperately to survive hell. He was brutalized continuously. Once when he was very young and it was discovered he was going to tell about the abuse, he had hot metal shoved into his mouth. Now, Paul is in a fight for his life, and for the life of others. A person who, until quite recently, was involved in a life very immoral and dangerous to others, is now motivated to an effort to live by love and a sense of justice.

In letters and conversations with friends, Bonacci says that the mission of his life is to prevent other children from suffering what he has. He speaks of being strong in his Christian faith, and of his efforts to convert other inmates.

In a letter from prison, to a friend, Bonacci talked about his desire to serve others: "I'm a 23 year old man who loves God

and wants to do the right thing to prevent other children from being abused. I'm against anyone harming a child in any way. I'm only wanting to see the men stopped from hurting others. They can kill me. I'm ready to die for what's right. If by my death I can prevent a child from being abused, I'd do it."

In his written report on his victimization, Paul said, "I have in the past cowered and given up. I no longer can cower and give up, instead I must stand firm and with truth go forward and fight against the men and the evil they have done to myself and other young people. '[P]erilous times shall come, for men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, traitors, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such tum away. For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts, ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.' 2 Timothy 3:1-9.

"This scripture just about says it all about the men who have used me and others. They can continue to deny these things before men, but the day will come when they will stand before God and He will know all and then they cannot deny.... I have continued to speak the truth and for doing so I am now being put down as a liar. The only liars are those who continue to deny the terrible sins they have done. Also Troy and Danny who at first told the truth and then began to lie to save their own butts from indictments which everyone with a brain could see coming for the victims. I will stand firm in my faith and trusting in the Lord to show the truth in the end."

Paul has repeatedly been placed in situations of danger while in prison. He has been moved to different facilities, contrary to agreements worked out by me as his attorney. He was given food to which he was allergic, while his weight dropped, and he was denied a blanket for months. He has had no medical help for his Multiple Personality Disorder, induced by what

Dr. Densen-Gerber called the "emotional Auschwitz" of ritual abuse.

Bonacci was beaten several times in jail. He has been placed in the same area in the jail with potentially violent people associated with Alan Baer and Larry King.

Since he testified before the Legislature's Franklin committee, Paul Bonacci has been under continual attack by the irregular troops, so to speak, of the Nebraska cover-up, such as the *World-Herald* and its reporter Bob Dorr, who have ridiculed him as a hoaxer.

Paul Bonacci's commitment to saving other children is evident in his willingness to be interviewed by investigators of child abuse. In order to remember details, Paul must go through the difficult process of allowing his different personalities to come forward and speak. If one personality can't remember, another might. The personalities were originally established, one by one, at the exact moments of psychological terror when Paul as a defenseless child was physically attacked. Some of the personalities are very young children, some are girls, some are boys, some are men. The process of calling them up, of assuming these different identities, often involves intense pain for Paul. If he didn't care, he wouldn't go through these difficult interviews.

ALISHA OWEN, PERSECUTED FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS'SAKE

"My statements are true. I'll never, never-change my story. The truth is the truth," Alisha Owen said during her trial. The pressure on her to recant has been immense.

Alisha's strength and determination have become famous among her supporters in Nebraska. People who meet her now, often remark that she is motivated by love. One woman said that the first thing Alisha ever told her, was that she is strong in her religious faith and that she must and will do the right

thing, "because the Lord will be here with me" through what she knows will be a long ordeal ahead.

Alisha Owen has been told she will have to serve a minimum of ten years, seven months of her sentence, even with "good time." Alisha's daughter, Amanda, has been inconsolable; until she saw Alisha in the courtroom at the sentencing hearing, she was convinced her mother was dead. At sentencing, Alisha read a statement, in which she blamed state prosecutor Gerald Moran, the *World-Herald,* and two of the men she accused of abusing her, Robert Wadman and Harold Andersen, for clouding the issues and fueling a climate of innuendo against her. "I couldn't change my story when the FBI asked me to," she said, "because I can look into the mirror and know I am telling the truth. Children ask for justice, while adults plead for mercy. Your honor, I stand before you here today and I ask for justice."

Even while she was a repeated victim of abuse, Alisha was an excellent student and a youth leader in her church. She is known as an intelligent and well organized person. During her trial, courtroom observers were impressed by her close attention and participation in all aspects of her legal defense. Meanwhile, the prosecution attempted to portray Alisha as an immoral person since childhood, the way a rapist's lawyers often try to depict the rape victim as a slut who invited and possibly deserved abuse. This courtroom performance reduced Alisha to tears several times.

As a teenager, Alisha gave birth to a child, who she strongly maintains was fathered by one of her abusers, Chief Wadman. Her parents have stood by her, and in support of her little daughter.

Even through her first months in jail, through the grand juries' denunciation and indictment of her, through its repetition by the *World-Herald* and CBS News, and through her long trial and sentencing, Alisha's supporters say, "her faith and strength have amazed us. She is always honest, loyal, and even maintains her sense of humor. Alisha maintains she will not give up until these perpetrators give up-and she won't give up!"

Even though a court-appointed psychiatrist said that Alisha

did not tolerate well being alone, during 1990 and 1991 she was held in solitary confinement longer than any other female inmate in the history of the Nebraska penal system. A friend of hers said, "Her determination was unchanged by being in solitary."

When she was 17, Alisha was discarded as a sexual object by the pedophiles. At that point, she was in a position to have become a trusted, and very wealthy, member of organized crime networks. Someone serving as a "mule," or youthful courier for criminal drug runners, would have narcotics worth hundreds of thousands of dollars pass through her hands. When Alisha started to talk to Franklin committee investigators, many deals were offered to her to make her stop. But her disgust and concern over what was happening to other children prevailed.

LORAN SCHMIT, FARMER, SENATOR, MAN WITH COURAGE

For the two years of its existence, Senator Loran Schmit chaired the Franklin committee of Nebraska's unicameral Legislature. It was disbanded against his recommendation.

Schmit has farmed all his life. He is the father of ten children, a grandfather, and has served in the Nebraska Legislature for twenty-three years. His work in the Legislature, on agricultural and water resources development in the state, is described by long-time associates as being of "legendary proportions." Senator Schmit has chaired the Agriculture, Public Works, and Natural Resources committees of the Legislature. He was a member of its Executive Board for eighteen years. In January 1991, when the Franklin committee was decommissioned, the newly elected Legislature stripped Schmit and its other members of key positions; Schmit lost his chairmanship of the Natural Resources committee.

Senator Schmit has worked as a crop duster. Of his more than 40,000 hours of flying time as a pilot, a majority has been in the dangerous occupation of low altitude crop dusting and

seeding, in both fixed-wing craft and helicopters. His personal knowledge of aircraft boosted his certainty, that his investigator Gary Caradori' s violent death was not accidental.

Loran Schmit is often moved close to tears, when he speaks about the work and the death of Caradori. In December 1990, meeting with the Ministerial Alliance in Omaha, he said he felt personally responsible for the death of the man he hired to investigate the Franklin Credit Union case.

Schmit has a longstanding reputation as a last resort for people trying to help children in trouble. As Franklin committee chairman, Schmit often stayed at his office late into the night, to pursue the investigation of the pedophile ring. After Caradori was killed, and the Franklin committee no longer had a professional investigator, Schmit remarked, "Gary had this remarkable knack of just putting on his casual clothes and going out to places where people had information and just sitting down with them and gaining their trust. That's how he brought in all these facts in the investigation. I know I can't do it like Gary did, but when I hear that someone has information for us I just put on myoid clothes and go wherever I need to go and sit down with them, and try to get that information myself. Gary would have done it much better, but I try."

This senator, who often starts speeches by saying, "Well, I'm just a farmer, but here's what I think," is a plain-spoken man. The image before him, of setting the pace for the people of his state, and of keeping the faith with his martyred investigator, has proven Loran Schmit to be a man of courage. He has withstood threats and harassment. At the height of the Franklin committee investigation, a piece of gallows humor around the state house was to ask, "Who wants to go start Schmit's car tonight?"

There have been efforts to ruin Schmit financially, including by means of spurious lawsuits filed against him. The FBI launched several investigations of Schmit. He also found his legislative district so radically altered in a June 1991 redistricting, that his reelection became a long shot.

Unhappy about what he regards as a do-nothing attitude of a majority of state senators toward child abuse, Loran Schmit

recently asked, "When does it happen that we cross the line and the passivity of the Senate makes us co-conspirators with corruption? We have to take action, and stop this abuse once and for all."

While most of the Legislature cowered, fellow Franklin committee members Senator Dan Lynch and Senator Bernice Labedz, especially, showed courage in standing by Senator Schmit to the day their committee was dissolved.

GARY CARADORI, MARTYR

Gary Caradori told the victim-witnesses of child abuse whom he interviewed, that he would die for them, if necessary. He died on July 11, 1990, at the age of 41, when his plane crashed in Illinois. His eight-year-old son was also killed.

During Alisha Owen's trial, FBI agent Rick Culver testified that Caradori' s work for the Franklin committee was worthless. Former Police Chief Robert Wadman, posing as the wronged party, sued the state for damages, charging that Caradori' s investigation caused him mental anguish. Wadman's claim against the state was turned down, and the lawsuit dismissed.

Mary Caradori has commented, that there were no such slanders of her son while he was alive. She calls him "a gentle, smiling man, a great man and the greatest investigator Nebraska has ever had." The man the *World-Herald* now smears as a Keystone Kop, she notes, was the youngest person ever to qualify as an investigator for the State Patrol. He was universally liked and respected, and he was "so bothered by what he was finding in the Franklin investigation that he just couldn't give it up."

"He worked on this investigation sometimes 24 or 48 hours without eating or sleeping," Caradori's mother recalls. "He looked so worn out I was worried about him. I told him, 'maybe you should give it up,' but he couldn't give it up. He didn't need this case, but he was just so dedicated."

Mary Caradori says that the accusation that Gary wanted to make a movie out of the Franklin case was a lie. She is angered

by the Douglas County grand jury's suggestion that tape breaks in Caradori's videotaped interviews of victim-witnesses concealed his coaching them. "He would stop the tape when the kids would start to break down," she said. "He would always leave them their dignity. That is the kind of man he was. And he knew that they were victims of slavery and a Satanic cult. He knew that if the perpetrators aren't brought to justice, they will not stop."

A former Nebraska state patrolman, who later opened his own private investigative company, Caradori was known as a resourceful investigator. George Zahn, plant manager at the Monfort of Colorado meatpacking plant in Grand Island, Nebraska, told the *World-Herald* that Caradori " 'did a very good job for us,' providing security and handling some investigations for Monfort for about seven years. 'He works any and all hours,' Zahn said. 'It doesn't make any difference to him. He's a person you can trust.' " Lincoln private investigator Edward H. Itzen, president of Metropolitan Protection Service, added, "I've never heard anything but good about him." Caradori once traveled to East Germany and found a woman's father, 39 years after they were separated. He rescued young girls who ran away from home and became caught up in prostitution in Las Vegas or California. Franklin committee counsel John Stevens Berry told the *World-Herald,* that Caradori is "the kind of guy who can check out the cat houses and find the child and get the kid out of there."

Looking back, Mary Caradori recalls Gary's anticipation that the Franklin case was about to break wide open. "You'd better believe there was a cover-up," she says. "My daughter-in-law and I were never notified about Gary and A.J.'s death. My friend had to tell me over the phone they were dead."

Gary Caradori's widow, Sandie, was his high school sweetheart. They had two sons. AJ., the younger, was an avid baseball fan, like his father. Departing for the All-Star Game, his grandmother recalls, AJ. was overjoyed that he would finally get to see his favorite big league players in person. "He was a wonderful little boy."

The Reverend James Bevel, civil rights leader, addressed

Mary Caradori during his speech to a rally held by the Nebraska Leadership Conference in Lincoln in March 1991. He thanked her "for the gift of your son and grandson, who died for what is right." Senator Schmit, to applause, declared that it is imperative to "leave no stone unturned," to find out why Gary and AJ. died.

CHAPTER 17

"SO THAT THE TRUTH WOULD NEVER COME OUT"

With the sentencing of Alisha Owen, the Nebraska judiciary and law enforcement agencies wanted to ring down the curtain on the Franklin case, once and for all. They and federal authorities moved to tidy up matters that were left hanging.

Larry King is in prison, but not for child abuse. Under a plea bargain arrangement finalized with federal prosecutors on June 17, 1991, King is serving a IS-year sentence for embezzlement, conspiracy and making false financial record entries. Since the Douglas County grand jury deferred to the federal authorities, and since there was no trial of King on the federal embezzlement or any other charges, *the evidence of child prostitution and abuse perpetrated by King was never presented in any court.*

Jarrett Webb did not stand trial. **In** a calculated display of concern, the Douglas County grand jury recommended in May 1990, that Webb be indicted by Washington County prosecutors for "third degree sexual assault of a minor," Nelly Patterson. On December 26, 1990, however, Washington County Judge David Quist dismissed the charges against Webb, ruling that the statute of limitations had run out on acts committed in 1985. **In** Nebraska, cases of abuse of children under sixteen years of age are supposed to receive an automatic extension of the statute. But although Nelly had reported abuse that began when she was nine years old, the judge ruled that the assaults in question were not prosecutable because they occurred *two days* after the girl's sixteenth birthday!

Alisha Owen was convicted of lying when she said she was sexually used by Robert Wadman. I will allow the articles and statements of others to deal with this, since I have, at Alisha's request, now agreed to represent her free of charge. I do not want to say anything here that would jeopardize Alisha or my ability to help her. But I can say, that Alisha Owen's trial took the strangest turns I have seen any trial take. Suffice it to say, that I believe she had the most extraordinary trial there ever was in Nebraska. I have not a shadow of a doubt that her story is true, like Paul Bonacci's.

On August 8, 1991, Alisha Owen was sentenced to three consecutive three to nine year prison terms. As she remarked, she will be in jail longer than Larry King.

Minutes after Owen's conviction, Prosecutor Gerald Moran dropped the Douglas County perjury charges against Paul Bonacci. He also obtained a court order that barred me from gaining access to other files that would have been used in Paul's trial.

Speaking as Paul's attorney, I charged, "They dropped the charges so that the truth would never come out."

For months, motion after motion to deposition those Bonacci accused was denied by Judge Patrick Mullen. Now, Moran stipulated that any such depositions and discovery were permanently ruled out.

I had seen it coming. As we moved closer to the commencement of Paul Bonacci's perjury trial, I said many times to all who would listen, "I guarantee you that Paul Bonacci will never go to trial. They will either kill him, or dismiss the charges. We are ready for trial. When we have the trial, the entire picture of crime, drug dealing, pedophilia and child abuse, and even this satanic cult activity, will come out, with all the personalities associated with it. They dare not bring this boy to trial. Or, if they are going to bring him to trial, they will have to get rid of me first and get someone in there handling the trial whom they control."

• • •

For over a year, after the initial flurry of coverage in 1989, the national news media avoided the Franklin case. On June

19, 1991, two days before the jury convicted Alisha Owen, CBS-TV featured Nebraska on its prime time show, "48 Hours."

The program, ostensibly on the impact of child abuse in various communities, stated its conclusion on the Franklin case at the outset: "Some communities have over-reacted and accused innocent people." Expounding on the alleged injustices done to those named by victim-witnesses as abusers, the producers had former Police Chief Robert Wadman appear tearful before the cameras to say that the Franklin case had been "the most God-awful experience you could ever go through." Omaha attorney James Martin Davis offered his assessment, that "Bob Wadman has been scarred for the rest of his life."

Neither Senator Schmit, nor nor Owen, nor Bonacci was interviewed; besides the alleged perpetrators, only Troy Boner was given air time, to say that he had fabricated all the charges. Wadman asserted that "Caradori led witnesses, fed witnesses," while Boner pronounced that "the whole thing was just a lie," and that "Caradori convinced me to do it." The narrator stated, "Caradori's motives remain unknown."

The impact on Alisha Owen's trial, of such a presumably authoritative national TV show passing judgment on the Nebraska case, was devastating. Although the judge expressly ordered the jurors not to watch the program, a good number of them did, and several reported that it was the main topic of discussion in the jury room the next morning!

In articles on July 20 and 21 and a lead editorial of July 26, 1991, the *World-Herald* attacked victim Owen, Senator Schmit, and myself as "bacteria that cause a plague," and ridiculed the legislature's investigation as a "Keystone Kop" affair. The editorial, entitled "The Lessons of Franklin," denounced all and sundry-Senator Loran Schmit, myself, the Legislature, the Omaha news media, Douglas County Sheriff Dick Roth, and the general public-whosoever had ever intimated that the children might be telling the truth-for "damaging the reputations of innocent people." Never again, the editorial intoned, should the Legislature exercise its rights to oversee law enforcement in the state.

• • •

Neither the Franklin case nor the hideous kind of activity it involved, however, are over with. The *World-Herald* itself demonstrated as much, in a July 20, 1991 article appearing side-by-side with one of its denunciations of the Franklin investigators. Under the headline "Male Hustlers Move In When Workers Leave," the paper trumpeted that prostitution and child abuse were here to stay.

The article quoted Sgt. Ken Bovasso of the OPD: "Male prostitution has been occurring at 16th and Jackson for years. . . . I don't think you can stop it ... it will continue to happen." (This was the same Sgt. Bovasso who supervised Officer Irl Carmean's work with Loretta Smith, which abruptly terminated. He is also the Bovasso charged in the civil suit filed by this writer, with having subjected Paul Bonacci "to long hours of brutal interrogation involving threats, intimidation, [and] physical and mental abuse ... purposely designed to prevent him [Bonacci] from disclosing any information he had regarding the conduct of prominent Omaha citizens.") Witnesses interviewed by the *World-Herald* described the expensive cars driven by the men who pick up young boys, and said that between "tricks" the boys shoot up drugs and discard the hypodermic needles on the sidewalk.

The Franklin case remains alive not only in Omaha, but in its nationwide and international scope. Karen Ormiston, Caradori's coworker, reviewed the case in September 1990. In her notes on a September 22, 1990 conversation with Alisha Owen's lawyer, Henry Rosenthal, Ormiston recorded:

> I did indicate to Henry that these kids were only a small part of this case, and that the bulk and real intent of this case was to determine why OPD, and the NSP had insisted that they had thoroughly investigated these allegations and concluded that there was no merit to these allegations. I also indicated that the end result of this case should be to determine where the monies earned from kiddie porn, child prostitution. and drug activity, were going to. Failure of the various law enforcement agencies to follow up on

> these allegations which they had received from several years back was also discussed. Again, I stated that the statements of the kids was [sic] very important, but these kids were but a small part of the frightening reality and extent of the "bigger picture" of this case.

Three days later, Ormiston wrote to Senator Schmit in the same vein:

> Gary and I have always maintained that these kids were not the case-they were only a small part of it. For instance, where does all the money go that is earned by child prostitution and kiddie porn, and what is it used for? Why is the FBI and/or others trying so desperately to cover all this up? We both know that if these people were just ordinary citizens that they would certainly be in prison right now based on the incredible amount of information they, the State Grand Jury and Federal Grand Jury, have already received. As a matter of fact, they would have been endicted [sic] based on just a small portion of this information and the allegations made against them.

The Franklin investigators had lifted a comer of the rug, under which could be glimpsed a national and international organized crime syndicate, engaged in pedophilia, pornography, satanism, drugs, and money-laundering, and protected, as their own limited investigation began to show, by federal authorities.

Pull a thread on any comer of this vast, seamless web, and the whole begins to unravel. In the Franklin case, this is nowhere clearer than in the testimony of Paul Bonacci.

• • •

I debriefed Paul Bonacci at length, as did private investigator Roy Stephens, in preparation for the perjury trial that was not to be. Through his many personalities, each with its own distinct, partial recollections, Bonacci provided new evidence on child kidnaping, pornography, and murder taking place in the United States and abroad. The Franklin case was just one part of what

he knew. The North American Man-Boy Love Association, or NAMBLA, figured prominently in what else Bonacci could recall.

The motto of NAMBLA is "Sex before eight, or it's too late." One of its leaders is named David Thorstadt. Two of Bonacci's personalities, Sean and Christopher, have "Thorstadt" as their last name. Bonacci reports that he was brought into contact with Thorstadt through two Omaha men, that he traveled with Thorstadt to New York, and that he witnessed NAMBLA-organized auctions of children.

Alexandrew, another Bonacci personality, wrote to Dr. Densen-Gerber, who had examined him in prison, in April 1991:

> I can even recall when and where I remember you from. Tell me if I'm wrong in which I know you wouldn't remember me. It was in New York on December I believe the 28th or 29th, 1982, it was a Tuesday or Wednesday (not important). It was a news conference at I believe the Holiday Inn. I had to wait for David [Thorstadt] with a friend. When he got done he told me that wicked old witch Gerber was someone he had to fix somehow.

Densen-Gerber, dubbed "public enemy #1" by NAMBLA for her efforts to expose the organization, commented, "He's absolutely right. The details are perfect. ... "

Bonacci may remember events in Europe. He tells of having traveled to Europe more than once. One of his personalities speaks and writes German, more fluently than is probable just from Paul's brief study of German in high school.

• • •

In July 1991, just as the Franklin case got officially wrapped up at the sentencing of Alisha Owen, the news broke in Iowa that Paul Bonacci had given evidence in one of the most notorious kidnaping cases in the country. It was the disappearance of Johnny Gosch.

Early Sunday morning, September 5, 1982, 12-year-old Johnny Gosch went out on his *Des Moines Register* paper

delivery route, as usual. Only that Sunday, he never came home. For nine years, his parents have searched the country for him. Most evenings, and weekends when they were not on the road to check out leads, they sold candy bars in local shopping centers, to finance the search. In late 1990, the Gosches got the first major break in years, because of what Paul Bonacci had to tell.

I had noted that one of the events Paul described reminded me of the case of Johnny Gosch, which I had read about years earlier. I went to the library, and confirmed the similarity of the details of the case, with what Paul said. I then contacted the Gosch family. They advised me that they had had their fill of false leads from people who claimed to know something about their missing boy, and people who claimed to have information for sale but did not seem genuinely interested. But a couple of weeks later, Mr. Gosch did come to Omaha.

The *Des Moines Register* of July 24, 1991 reported on what developed:

> A Nebraska inmate has provided details about the abduction of Johnny Gosch that only someone with firsthand knowledge could have had, his lawyer said Tuesday.
>
> Inmate Paul Bonacci's account "did not match up 90 percent, not 95 percent, not 98 percent, but 100 percent," John DeCamp said.
>
> am convinced this kid is telling absolutely the truth. . . . He never varied on the time. He gave a description of Johnny's pants, names on his shirt, scars on the body."
>
> DeCamp said he became suspicious of a Gosch connection when he read a transcript of a psychiatrist's interview with Bonacci in which an "incident" involving a newspaper carrier was mentioned. DeCamp said Bonacci didn't identify Gosch by his full name.
>
> went to the library and checked on Johnny Gosch. I wrote to the Gosches and told them I don't know if there is any validity, but the dates coincide and he talks about someone from Iowa."
>
> DeCamp said John Gosch, the boy's father, met with Bonacci, "and started getting chills. I believe he believed him," DeCamp said.

John Gosch, Sr. walked into the prison in Lincoln, Nebraska to meet Paul Bonacci for the first time, unannounced. Sitting down across from him, Gosch asked Bonacci, "Do you know who I am?" Bonacci replied, "You look like-it can't be-the eyes, you look like Johnny Gosch."

Noreen Gosch told the *World-Herald.* that paper reported on July 22, 1991, that Bonacci knew "some incredible things" about the case. For instance, "There were photographs taken of Johnny prior to the kidnaping. We know this because a woman reported it to police. We're convinced Bonacci saw those pictures. He accurately described the location, which is not far from our home. He described many things about the pictures which we have never publicly talked about." Bonacci also described a mark on Johnny Gosch's body, which the Gosches had never publicized.

As a result of the Gosch meeting, Roy Stephens came to visit with me. Shortly after we discussed Paul Bonacci and the Gosch case, I hired him to check out Bonacci's story on Gosch and on other things.

Roy Stephens is an Omaha-based investigator and a founder of the Missing Children's Foundation. A former safecracker who went straight, Stephens was named "Outstanding Man of the Year" for 1991, by the Nebraska Jaycees, for his work in recovering children. Roy is remembered in Nebraska, as the man who did what the police and other investigators were unable to do- locate and cause the conviction of the kidnaper of Jill Cutshall, the Norfolk, Nebraska girl who disappeared in 1987 and almost certainly was murdered, though her body was never found.

Stephens was cited as the leading child finder in the nation, in an article in the 1991 summer supplement to *Forbes* magazine: "The best in the business in that field, according to a survey of his peers, is Roy Stephens ... who has recovered some 50 missing children over the last five-and-a-half years," said G. Gordon Liddy of Watergate fame, now a private security consultant in Florida.

Stephens spent hundreds of hours debriefing Bonacci in prison, and many more on the road in Iowa, Nebraska, Colorado and Minnesota, visiting the sites and tracking down the people

Bonacci told him about. Quoted in the July 22, 1991 *World-Herald,* Stephens said that Bonacci "hasn't told me anything that hasn't been true."

Bonacci described to Stephens the kidnaping of Johnny Gosch, as an eyewitness:

> PB: Well, we got up at, oh, before the sun got up. He [Emilio] said he wanted to go out cause he said that he had been around here before and stuff and he said that paper boys would be going out pretty soon. He said he might be able to, that that would be the best bet. He wanted them, because he said they were easier on mornings cause there was nobody else around. Everyone else is asleep....
>
> RS: O.K., so it was just you, Mike and Emilio. And you were in his blue car, the blue Chevy. O.K., then what happened?
>
> PB: Oh, then he, well, at first he had us, they had Mike was in the back seat and he was kind of covered up with a blanket. ... Me I was stuck in the trunk. Because I had said something and Emilio hit me a couple of times.
>
> RS: What did you say?
>
> PB: Called him a dirty bastard because of the way he treated Mike.... At night when we was in the hotel and stuff he'd brought some other guy and made Mike have sex with that guy. I didn't think that was right. ...
>
> RS: O.K., so you're in the trunk and Mike is on the floor or on the back seat covered with a blanket, and what [happened]?
>
> PB: And then I heard them talking to somebody else at the car, but I don't know who it was cause we stopped. He was talking to somebody asking for directions; asking where some place was. And it sounded like there was more than one kid. It sounded like there was a couple of them there. And then we went around the block and he let me out of the trunk and told Mike to, he says, if you don't do what I say, I'm gonna shoot you. He has a gun he pulled out and pointed at me and says, you do what I say or I'll shoot you. We drove around....

RS: So you're out of the trunk now?

PB: Yeah. I was sitting in the back seat with Mike.

RS: You're both sitting there? Were you hidden in the back seat or were you just sitting up normal?

PB: Down low, kind of sitting on the floor. And then Emilio, I guess, I don't know what he did, but he, Mike told me, he says, when the car slows down, he says, when you feel the brakes jerk, he says, I'll grab him and you just hold him down. And so it happened quick. It's like we went up, I felt the brakes jerk, and I saw the door fly open and I saw Mike jump out and the next thing I know there was somebody, you know, he grabbed the boy and he'd thrown him in and my job, you know we were supposed to do is just hold him down and gag his mouth so he couldn't yell or nothing. And then after we had, just, like two seconds, just spun off, tore off, got out of there.

Two other people were involved in the kidnaping, one of whom was a local contact. Bonacci named them all. According to a July 18 article in the Des Moines *Register,* "Stephens has told the family, sources say, that [Bonacci] identified the Des Moines 'contact' from a photograph. The suspected contact, said [Noreen] Gosch, has been under suspicion by the family for some time." Furthermore, "Gosch said Stephens told her the same ring may be involved in other kidnapings in the region, including the suspected abuction of Des Moines *Register* carrier Eugene Martin, 13, in south Des Moines in 1984, and more recently, that of Jacob Wetterling in St. Joseph, Minn."

Bonacci described a network of safehouses, where the pedophile ring stored kidnaped children before selling them. He said he met Johnny Gosch again several years later, and provided a detailed description of the farm on which Gosch was being kept in Colorado and of Gosch's new "parents," a homosexual man and a lesbian in their thirties. After Gosch once attempted to run away, Bonacci reported, they branded him on the buttocks with the same brand used on horses and cows on the farm, of which Bonacci drew a picture for Roy Stephens.

The man called Emilio was part of a highly organized na-

tional and international kidnaping ring. Stephens asked Bonacci, "What did Emilio tell you that he did for a living?"

PB: Kidnap kids and took them to Las Vegas.

RS: What kind of kids?

PB: Any kid that he could get.

RS: Does it matter if it's male or female?

PB: Him, no, him he'd kidnap boys or girls. Main thing he'd kidnap was boys, though, 'cause he said he'd get more money for them. Emilio used to tell me all kinds of things like how they could get away with kidnaping kids and sell them out of the country. He said most of the kids were sold in Las Vegas at a ranch he took me to one time for an auction. I went with him to Toronto several times where boys were sold. I saw a few girls once in a while. He said virgins could bring as much as $50,000. They called the boys toys, used toys brought in money but not as much.... Most boys were sold out of America cause it's harder to find them. The men who bought them had planes and could transport them easily.

Bonacci ran into Emilio again in March 1986, near Buena Vista, Colorado, on the second occasion he saw Johnny Gosch.

Despite the astonishing new information from Paul Bonacci on the Gosch kidnaping, West Des Moines police "have not interviewed Bonacci and have no plans to do so," according to the July 21, 1991 Des Moines Sunday *Register*. "We are aware of what's going on," said Lt. Gerry Scott, in charge of the Gosch investigation. "We're not going to reinvent the wheel. This has been investigated in Nebraska. When things need investigating, here, they will be investigated."

• • •

Bonacci also conveyed to Stephens specific recollections related to two other notorious cases-pedophilia and ritualistic abuse in Jordan, Minnesota, and satanism and child sacrifice near Bakersfield, California.

In 1983 and 1984, Scott County, Minnesota prosecutor

Kathleen Morris investigated and began to prosecute a ring of child molesters centered in the town of Jordan. Child victims had testified about satanic rituals and the filming of children in sex acts. "The case involves the largest adult-juvenile sex ring in Minnesota history, authorities said," reported the Minneapolis *Star-Tribune* on November 18, 1983.

At least 30 children told police they had been molested. Morris brought indictments against 24 adults. *People* magazine of October 22, 1984 summarized, "The village harbored rings of adult sex abusers who incestuously victimized their own children and other children during ritualistic sex parties involving sadism and bestiality. Some of the children described a bizarre sexual variation of hide-and-seek in which children who were 'found' were taken to a bedroom and abused." The children told of witnessing three ritualistic murders.

Child care workers and psychologists found the children highly credible. Psychologist Michael Shea, who treated some of them, told *People*, "Children are not able to fantasize in such graphic detail about sexual acts which are outside their experience. And they certainly can't be coerced, or bribed or brainwashed into making statements about their parents." Minnesota psychologist Susan Phipps-Yonas, who also interviewed some of the children, told the *Star-Tribune* that she fully believed their reports: "It's not just the details that make them convincing, but the [emotional] effect behind the stories. They're extraordinarily upset when they recount these things. They'd have to be world-class actors to be so convincing if it wasn't true." Phipps-Yonas speculated that since the children talked about large sums of money changing hands, organized crime was likely involved.

Morris indicted the ring's chief figure, 26-year-old James Rud, on 108 counts of child abuse. His parents, Alvin and Rosemary Rud, and his 17-year old brother were also indicted, as were several other people from the Valley Green Trailer Park, 35 miles outside of Minneapolis-St. Paul. Most of the abused children also lived in the trailer park.

Like the Franklin investigators in Nebraska, Morris came under savage attack from media and the political establishment

in her state. Under pressure, she ultimately turned the investigation over to state Attorney General Hubert "Skip" Humphrey, Jr. To the horror of many, Humphrey soon released a 29-page report titled "Scott County Investigations," which closed the case, citing "insufficient evidence." Minnesota Governor Rudy Perpich then appointed a commission to investigate Morris! Humphrey named one of his political cronies, lawyer Kelton Gage, as "independent counsel" to present evidence against her.

Yet in 1991, from prison in Nebraska, Paul Bonacci identified by name, from pictures, some of the same individuals Morris had been investigating. Some of Bonacci's conversations with Stephens about these events have been transcribed:

> RS: You know anybody else who hurts children or takes kids or sells them or takes pornography of them?
>
> PB: I don't know what their names are and they're all from mainly not even from....
>
> RS: From this area? Where are they from?
>
> PB: Minnesota and California.
>
> RS: Do you know where or who?
>
> PB: ... in Minnesota there was one guy named James Rud. He lived with his mom and dad, cause I remember we went out to his place one time in a trailer.
>
> RS: And that's in Minnesota?
>
> PB: Yeah, that was in Jordan, Minnesota.

A second exchange between Bonacci and Stephens, recorded on September 28, 1991, shed more light on the events in Jordan.

> RS: What do you remember about this little boy named Joey?
>
> PB: Joey? Oh, that's what I wanted to tell you about ... Jordan, Minnesota.
>
> RS: Jordan? That's where he came from?
>
> PB: Well, he wasn't kidnaped, his parents let him go, 'cause his parents were friends with Emilio and they had some strange ...

RS: It's okay.

PB: That there's a bunch of parents, that are not just parents but other people in that town that were abusing kids. . . . Bob Bentz, that's the one I told you about that had the two [inaudible].

RS: And this guy's name was Bob?

PB: Uh-huh, Bentz.

RS: How do you spell it? Bentz.

PB: B-e-n-t-z.

RS: And he's in Jordan? When was this?

PH: Mmmmm, that was in '82.

Stephens had asked Bonacci to draw up a list of both abusers and victims. Later in the same conversation, Stephens went through the written list out loud.

RS: Okay. What do you have written here? What does this say? Who is this Bob? Is that his wife's name? Lois? Bob and Lois Bentz? They had three sons? Okay. This is the Bob you told me about?

PB: Uh-huh [yes].

RS: And Joey is theirs? Okay, and Jim Rud is the guy who lives with his mom and dad at the Valley Green Trailer Park?

PH: Yeah. 'Cause I remember one of the games we played was called hide and seek basketball.

RS: Hide and seek basketball? How do you play that? You're not talking about regular basketball, are you?

PH: No, it's sex. . . . A lot of people lived in Jordan that were doing that [child abuse]. 'Cause when we were up there [inaudible] they tortured a couple [of children] that came in.

Bob and Lois Bentz were tried for child abuse, including of their own three sons, in August 1984, and acquitted. However, their acquittal left grave doubts in the minds of many in the town. Some incidents from the trial were featured in the *People* story:

Among the children who testified against the couple was their 6-year-old boy, Tony, who told the court that his father had sodomized him and his brothers. Although the boy was confused over the meaning of the sexual terms, when a defense attorney asked if he feared that his father would abuse him again, the boy looked across the courtroom at Bentz and replied, "You won't do that no more, right?"

During the grueling cross-examination, defense attorneys succeeded in shaking some of the young witnesses' stories by hammering away at dates, places and word meanings. However, a 12-year-old girl steadfastly refused to waver from her testimony. When a defense attorney accused her of lying, she snapped: "You're just helping Bob and Lois [Bentz] to get out of this stuff, this child-abusing stuff, I'm not lying, you guys are. It's the truth, they hurt us." Later she rushed tearfully into the arms of a social worker.

Though the Bentzes got off in the Scott County case, James Rud plea-bargained. Before the case was scratched, he pleaded guilty to lesser charges. In 1978 and 1980, Rud had been convicted of sexually abusing children in Virginia and Minnesota, respectively.

On other occasions, Bonacci described ritualistic abuse and the sacrifice of a boy at a place near Bakersfield, California. The details of his testimony, including names, are consistent with the 1983-1985 investigation by Kern County, California Sheriff Larry Kleier into satanic ritual abuse there. Despite attempts by the state attorney general, John Van De Kamp, to discredit the Kern County investigation as based on "hearsay" and "hysteria," a grand jury indicted seven people on 377 counts of pornography, child abuse and drug possession. They were convicted in a 1986 trial and sentenced to a total of 2,600 years in prison, but a state appeals court overturned the convictions in 1990, on grounds of "egregious prosecutorial misconduct."

• • •

Several months after becoming Paul Bonacci's attorney in the summer of 1990, I remarked to a friend, "You know, the

more I find out about this case, the more I am absolutely convinced that drugs are a major part of it. Everywhere you turn, there are drugs, and on a huge scale. The kids report Alan Baer involved in bigtime drugs from California, Larry King has been reported as a major pusher, and Wadman's name has been strongly linked to drugs."

Through the use of young boys and girls, Larry King was able to have a nationwide drug transportation network. It interfaced perfectly with his ability to compromise and blackmail politicians or businessmen. Having cocaine available could make it easier for Larry King to entice prominent people, after they got drunk, and then high on the drug, into sex with a teenaged girl or boy.

According to the accounts of Paul Bonacci and Alisha Owen, Alan Baer was running a nationwide drug ring, and used children 18 or under as couriers. Once the children became 19, and thus could be tried as adults, Baer let them go.

Senator Ernie Chambers observed to the Executive Board of the Legislature on December 19, 1988, just as the Franklin investigation was getting underway:

> My community is ravaged by drugs. We see the Omaha police picking up kids from 14 to l8-years old with a half an ounce or less of these narcotic substances and that is supposed to be fighting the drugs. These are nickel and dime pushers, not suppliers, not mid level suppliers. A few days ago the Douglas County Sheriff got together with some of the county sheriffs, one was from Sarpy, and they made a raid and they got a pound and a half of heavy drugs, some money and some weapons. They didn't tell the Omaha police. And I talked to the Douglas County Attorney and I told him I was glad they didn't tell them because had the Omaha police been notified this drug bust would never have occurred, they would have told the individual, they would not have gotten a substantial amount of the drugs. These nickel and dime people in my community that they are arresting don't have the connections or the money to bring

> the amount of drugs into the City of Omaha that are coming. And certainly the little piddling amounts that are picked up by the police have no meaning or significance. When we wanted, as a community, to help organize and work with a task force of black officers to address the drug problem and the gang problem, Chief Wadman fought it tooth and nail and did not want it, wanted to deny that the problem existed. And I said the only reason that a police official would be opposed to this kind of action is because he knows something or he's part of it.

One of Caradori's informants stated that Wadman was instrumental in bringing the drug-trafficking gangs, the Los Angeles-based Bloods and Cryps, into Omaha. According to a June 19, 1989 report by Caradori's predecessor at the Franklin committee, Jerry Lowe, members of the Bloods and Cryps were identified by local police as driving Larry King's car.

• • •

As soon as awareness dawned, that sexual and ritual abuse of children was happening in Nebraska, and that it was being protected from within the political and law enforcement establishment, a resistance movement on behalf of the children took shape. In her famous interview on Geraldo Rivera's TV special on satanism, Kathleen Sorenson identified her group as Believe the Children. Later, friends of Kathleen were active in the Concerned Parents group, which urged that the testimony of Loretta Smith and others be investigated on its merits, instead of dismissed out of hand.

Against the shroud of cover-up, imposed by the *World-Herald* in its treatment of the Franklin case, some newspapers showed the integrity to keep all aspects of the case alive in Nebraska. Foremost among these has been the *Nebraska Observer,* published by the Nebraska Citizens' Publishing Group and edited by Frances Mendenhall.

While most of the national press dropped the Franklin story,

in the summer of 1990, *Executive Intelligence Review* sent an investigative team into the state to report on the case first-hand. Its July 27, 1990 article, "FBI covers up child abuse, murder in Nebraska," brought a rain of denunciations on the pages of the *World-Herald,* which made much of the fact that *EIR* was founded by the jailed economist and presidential candidate, Lyndon LaRouche. After an initial "no comment" from an FBI spokesman, Nick O'Hara's successor at the Nebraska-Iowa office of the bureau, Charles Lontor, took to the pages of the *World-Herald* on August 13, to denounce such talk of cover-up as "nonsense," and to say that the FBI did "not wish to become involved in a futile public debate with them *[EIR]* or anyone who may choose to support their efforts."

It was my view, that the Franklin cover-up was so massive in Nebraska, that it could not be broken just inside the state. In 1991, the case did receive attention in the Italian weekly *Avvenimenti* and in *Pronto,* published in Spain. Both articles came from Italian journalists Giovanni Caporaso and Massimiliano Cocozza Lubisco, a team that has produced many stories for Italian television. After their own May 1991 investigative trip to Nebraska, they wrote about the kidnaping and sale of children as "the market of horrors." They quoted Paul Bonacci and Roy Stephens at length.

I was glad of the presence of other international observers, who came when the Schiller Institute, founded by Helga Zepp-LaRouche in 1984 and based in Washington, D.C. and Laatzen, Germany, organized an *ad hoc* human rights fact-finding mission to Nebraska. In response to a Schiller Institute appeal, nine people from five U.S. states and three foreign countries constituted themselves as the Citizens' Fact-Finding Commission to Investigate Human Rights Violations in Nebraska. Among them were the Reverend James Bevel, former close associate of Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr., an Austrian leader of the European Citizens' Initiative to Protect Life and Human Dignity, the president of the Ukrainian Political Action Committee of the United States, and a clinical psychologist from Canada. They came from October 11 to 17, 1990, and during

that week, interviewed many witnesses, visited the Omaha FBI office, watched hours of videotaped testimony from child victims, and read mountains of documents.

The Citizens' Fact-Finding Commission issued a report that denounced the "torture and murder-in-progress" of Paul Bonacci, and said that there was so little recourse through the law left in Nebraska, that an international spotlight needed to be shined on the systematic "violations of human rights" there.

After these findings were published, one hundred fifty clergymen, civil rights leaders and other community leaders from throughout the United States signed a "Letter to the Citizens of Nebraska," which endorsed the findings and called on the Senate Franklin committee to pursue its investigation "at all costs." The *World-Herald* refused to print the Commission's findings and the endorsement letter, even as a paid advertisement. In an October 20, 1990 article by Bob Dorr, the paper attacked the independent fact-finders as "LaRouche Investigators."

There and in subsequent articles, Dorr called upon the expertise of so-called "anti-cult" specialists from the Anti-Defamation League (ADL) of B'nai B'rith and the Cult Awareness Network (CAN), in attempts to rebut the Commission's work. Rev. Bevel came in for particularly strong attack by such defenders of the cover-up.

Rev. Bevel was so horrified by what he witnessed during the short mission of the Fact-Finding Commission, that he moved to Nebraska for a period of months, to work with citizens resisting pedophilia and the cover-up of it. He was the target of death threats and physical attack in Omaha.

At first I thought that Rev. Bevel must be crazy, or a radical trouble-maker. Why would a middle-aged man with a family to support take off and move to Nebraska in the middle of winter, to take up a cause that could guarantee him nothing but grief, and might get him killed?

But as I watched him work and saw his dedication, I learned more about faith, hope, charity and truth from this one dedicated individual, than from all the priests, pastors and rabbis I have

known. Rev. Bevel cared about one thing-children. Children were being abused and were going to be abused, unless something was done. The more Bevel worked, the more he was condemned by the *World-Herald* for his efforts in the black community, particularly, to expose the sins.

Rev. Bevel and others found there was a tremendous unspoken support among the people of Nebraska, for the victims of the child abuse ring. Radio call-in polls showed that Nebraskans, by margins of up to ten to one, do not agree with the way prosecutors have handled the Franklin case or believe that the witnesses are hoaxers.

During 1991, a newly-formed citizens' group called the Nebraska Leadership Conference mobilized a large number of people, hundreds of whom traveled to Lincoln for several large conferences. At two of the conferences, detailed background presentations on the exploitation of children and on the Franklin cover-up were made by knowledgeable people from many different institutions and organizations in Nebraska. At a third, out-of-state specialists on satanic cults were given the opportunity to educate Nebraskans on the scope of the problem. The conferences turned into mass meetings, which rallied support for the victim-witnesses.

In September 1991, the Nebraska Leadership Conference issued a pamphlet called "The Mystery of the Carefully Crafted Hoax," which documented many of the inconsistencies in the Douglas County grand jury's and other official versions of the Franklin case.

After Alisha Owen's conviction, Frances Mendenhall's *Nebraska Observer* devoted its July 12, 1991 issue to a dissection of the flaws in Alisha's trial, and related matters. One article was, "Owen Trial Was a Far Cry from Justice," in which Mendenhall reviewed such key issues as the contradictory behavior of Troy Boner and the lack of any demonstrated basis for the central claim of the prosecution, that Alisha Owen was motivated by a desire for publicity. Other headlines included, "Evidence the Owen Jury Didn't Get to See," "Common Misconceptions About the Owen Trial," "Caradori Widow Ques-

tions Fairness of '48 Hours' and "Bonacci Recalls Early Trauma," which drew out the implications of dropping the charges against Paul.

Thousands of copies of that *Observer* issue have circulated in Nebraska.

Many demonstrations of support for Paul Bonacci and Alisha Owen were held in Lincoln and Omaha, outside the facilities where they have been imprisoned. A group called the Children's Civil Rights Committee was active in these, and also began holding weekly prayer meetings in Omaha, in December 1990. The Children's Civil Rights Committee has been instrumental in efforts to reinstate the Legislature's investigation into the Franklin case.

Another group that played a key role in 1990 and 1991 efforts to crack the Franklin cover-up, by lobbying and literature distribution, was the Commonwealth Depositors Committee, led by Reuben Worster and Dr. Melvin Bahensky. A respected veterinarian, now in his eighties, Bahensky is legendary for his spirit and tenacity in fighting to expose the wrongs in the Commonwealth and Franklin cases. He always maintains, that they are one and the same.

• • •

In October 1991, the Nebraska State Parole Board voted 5-0 to parole Paul Bonacci, who has been serving a five-year sentence since 1989. On Hallowe'en, soon after a scathing *World-Herald* editorial against the decision, the board reversed itself. As Bonacci's attorney, I responded with the following press release:

> From beginning to present, Franklin has been a cauldron of cover-up skillfully executed by powerful and wealthy thieves and pedophiles. Punishment, destruction and even elimination of those who would expose or try to correct the evil wrought by these individuals is the reward of child victim-witnesses and any who would aid those children.
>
> The perpetrators have corrupted institutions of government. Abetted and at times absolutely led by the Omaha

> *World-Herald* they have systematically turned lies into truth and truth into lies. A "free" Paul Bonacci would continue to provide information which helps expose individuals and offenses involved in this cover-up. *So,* one way or another, they intend to eliminate Paul Bonacci-no matter what it takes. That is my very real fear.
>
> Therefore the *World-Herald* intimidated an already frightened and beleaguered parole board into effectively reversing their original proper decision to allow this youth out of prison. If there is a God above, the Franklin cover-up will fail and the evil and individuals involved will be exposed. Meanwhile, the visible payoff to the Parole Board will be a glowing editorial in the Omaha World Herald.

Right on schedule, the *World-Herald* came out on November 3, 1991, with an editorial, "Vote on Bonacci Was Sensible." Flaunting its clout more blatantly than ever, the paper took credit for the reversal, attributing it to lobbying by "the press and others."

I have often said that I wish I had never heard of the Franklin Credit Union, Larry King, or Paul Bonacci. I sincerely mean this. Why? Simply because I believe Paul Bonacci is telling the truth, and that our institutions of government have been as badly corrupted as that implies.

If I still had the luxury of believing, as I once did, that the allegations of drug abuse, child abuse, pedophilia, theft and satanic cult activity were exaggerated imaginings of some overactive child and adult imaginations, then I would not have to do anything about Franklin. I could still be enjoying an income of $400,000 per year as a lobbyist, without having to work too hard, instead of being financially strangled as clients are intimidated away from hiring me, because of the Franklin connection.

But I do know that it's true, and because of my upbringing, I have no choice but to plow ahead.

Were there any reasons for me or others to be "afraid or concerned" about our lives? You make your own judgment, after I tell you about just one documented incident.

At the height of the legislative Franklin investigation, when

the Douglas County grand jury was also going full bore, I received a phone call in the middle of the night, from a close friend of mine in Omaha, who wanted to warn me that my life might be in danger. It was approximately a week after Gary Caradori died.

"Why do you believe this?" I asked. "Are you sure you are not falling into a trap, overreacting to rumors?"

"I don't know," answered Mary Kay Evans, a former campaign chairman of mine. "As you know, I am close to one of the University of Nebraska Board of Regents members, Dr. Robert Prokop. He called me and said he did not particularly like you or really ever get to know you, but that he felt he had an obligation, morally, to warn you."

I knew of Dr. Prokop. Everybody in Nebraska did.

Prokop had been chairman of the Board of Regents for many years. He had been a Democratic candidate for Governor of Nebraska just recently. And he was somewhat famous as a police pathologist, not only in Nebraska, but for many cities in the United States.

"What did Prokop say," I asked, "that has you so concerned?"

"He simply told me he was with the police, riding around talking to individuals on the street-which he does once a month, he said-and he learned that you were supposed to be the target of an assassination, because of your Franklin involvement and trying to force the investigation there. And he said that if I cared about you, that I should call you so that at least his conscience would be clear."

The next day, I called Dr. Robert Prokop. I told him who I was and what Mary Kay had said. I asked him if Mary Kay was imagining things, or maybe just getting carried away a bit, because of all the concern and fear that Franklin was generating.

Prokop was stern and nervous. "We really don't know each other," he said, "but I feel I have a moral obligation to tell you that when I was with the police last night, one of the very reliable informants we talked to advised us that you, John DeCamp, were supposed to be the 'first hit,' instead of Gary Caradori. In other words, Mr. DeCamp, you were supposed to

be eliminated first and then Gary Caradori if that was necessary. Now that Caradori has been killed, I was concerned that maybe they will go ahead with the next hit, which means you."

"Are you serious?" I asked. "Do you really think there is even a remote possibility that could happen?"

"I have no doubt it could happen," Prokop said. "I have been doing police work and autopsies for almost as long as you have been around. And I think I know the difference between conversation and serious talk. That's why I felt I had to warn you, even if it is not my area of responsibility."

After warning me by phone, Prokop took it upon himself to make three separate trips to Lincoln from Omaha, to meet with the legislative Franklin committee and try to warn them of the seriousness of this threat.

So, am I crazy to be concerned? Is Prokop crazy? Maybe so. But there have been too many surprises for people closely involved in Franklin, who ended up dead.

I was prepared to take Bill Colby's warning seriously, when he sat me down and warned me that Franklin would never be dealt with without exposure in the national and international press.

• • •

What is Franklin really all about?

Was it theft by a black politician of forty million dollars? Is it child abuse?

Is it just a big "homosexual party," as Mr. Fenner from the *NCVA* suggested to me?

Is it laundering money for Iran-Contra?

Were there murders to protect rich and powerful people?

Were there politicians involved in the sins and the cover-up?

Does it involve satanic cult activity and pedophilia, and exploitation of children in horrible ways?

Why does the *World-Herald* care so much, and why has it gone overboard to damage and discredit anyone who would maintain that Franklin is more than a hoax?

Why do people continue to believe, that there was and is a cover-up, by prominent wealthy businessmen and politicians?

What I am going to offer now are my conclusions, my beliefs, based on the massive information I have seen and heard since Franklin broke in November 1988.

First, I have absolutely no doubt, that prominent individuals, whom everybody in Omaha is familiar with, and many of whom have been named during the investigation, have engaged in long-term activity involving drug peddling and drug abuse, child abuse, and pedophilia, with particular attention to the abuse of young boys.

That in the case of Larry King and the cadre of people he dealt with closely, boys and girls like Paul Bonacci, Troy Boner, Danny King, and Alisha Owen were used as drug couriers for a national program of illegal narcotics marketing. They were "throwaway" kids. Because they were teenagers and younger when they were doing this activity, they provided a perfect insulation blanket between the real drug czars, like Larry King or Alan Baer, and the law.

Larry King was able to read people and compromise people through their weaknesses. And Larry King knew whom to cater to and to compromise. Compromise the heads of institutions. Cater to the secret sins of a law enforcer, so that when you need protection, that official is not in a position to do anything but sit and watch your illegal activities. Cater to the weakness for drugs, or 13-year-old girls, or 9-year-old boys, and then blackmail as required.

Yes, based on what I have seen, much of which I am legally forbidden to reveal, I have no doubt that child abuse, pedophilia, illegal drug trafficking, murder, satanic cult activity, theft, and a host of other crimes were involved in what we have come to know as the Franklin scandal.

Just as surely do I believe, that there was and is a cover-up.

Just as surely do I fear, that nothing will be done about it.

So, let me conclude my saying simply this: Bill Colby, you were right. It is too big. I am too small. They are too rich and powerful, and go up too high in business and government, for me to touch them or do anything about it. Yes, it is something

that I should have abandoned long ago and faced up to the fact that good does not always triumph and that evil, with its many faces, does sometimes succeed.

At least for a while.

If this book is read and acted on by others, I hope it will be more than just what Colby called my "private parade."

APPENDIX A.

SUSPICIOUS DEATHS TIED TO THE FRANKLIN CAS E

At least fifteen people who were close to the Franklin case have died under suspicious circumstances. Many ofthese deaths were violent, others were unexplained.

1. Bill Baker. He was a restaurant owner in Omaha, and a partner of Larry King in homosexual pornography operations. He was found shot in the back of the head.

2. Shawn Boner. Brother of victim-witness Troy Boner, he died of a gunshot wound from "Russian roulette."

3. Gary Caradori. Chief investigator for the legislative Franklin Committee, Caradori told associates days before his death that he had information that would "blow this case wide open." He died when his plane crashed on July 11, 1990.

4. Andrew "A.J." Caradori died at the age of 8, in the plane crash with his father.

5. Newt Copple. A confidential informant for Caradori and his investigative firm, Copple was a key behind-the-scenes activist fighting the cover-up of the Franklin case. Son of Commonwealth Savings owner S.E. Copple, businessman in his own right, an ex-champion wrestler with no prior health problems and parents who lived into their late eighties and nineties, Copple suddenly "died in his sleep" in March 1991, at the age of 70.

6. Clare Howard. The former secretary of Alan Baer, who

arranged Baer's pedophile trysts, Howard "died in her sleep" in 1991.

7. Mike Lewis was a former caregiver for victim-witness Loretta Smith. He died of a "severe diabetic reaction" at the age of 32.

8. Joe Malek, associate of Larry King and an owner of Peony Park, where homosexual galas were held. His death from gunshot was ruled a suicide.

9. Aaron Owen, the brother of victim-witness Alisha Owen. He was found hanged in his cell in Lincoln, Nebraska, hours before one of his sister's court appearances.

10. Charlie Rogers. A reputed homosexual partner of Larry King, Rogers said that he feared for his life, in the days before his death. His head was blown off with a shotgun, in what was ruled a suicide.

11. Dan Ryan, an associate of Larry King. He was found strangled or suffocated in a car.

12. Bill Skoleski. An officer in the Omaha Police Department who was believed to be keeping a file on Larry King, he died of a heart attack.

13. Kathleen Sorenson. The foster parent for Nelly and Kimberly Webb after they fled the home of Larry King's relatives, Jarrett and Barbara Webb, she was an outspoken activist against satanism. Her death in a suspicious car crash is related in Chapter *15.*

14. Curtis Tucker. As associate of Larry King, he fell or jumped out of the window of the Holiday Inn in Omaha.

15. Harmon Tucker. A school superintendent in Nebraska and Iowa, a reputed homosexual, his death had signs of satanic ritual murder. He was found dead in Georgia, near the plantation which Harold Andersen and Nebraska-Iowa FBI chief Nicholas O'Hara used for hunting.

APPENDIX B.

BOBBY AND ME

It is impossible to understand the Franklin scandal and its cover-up, without knowing the environment created in Nebraska when Robert Kerrey was governor, 1983 to 1987. It was an atmosphere of permissiveness for the rich and powerful, to do mostly as they pleased.

Some of what follows, I probably should have said some time ago. Now, the prospect of Bobby Kerrey holding the highest office in the land means that I, who am knowledgeable about Kerrey in a way that probably no one but the closest of his cronies is, have no choice but to speak out. I could say much more, but I think the following episodes, in addition to what I have said in Chapter 6, are enough to shed important light on Bobby's character.

• • •

I have always called him "Bobby" or "Roberto." Bobby has always called me "John-boy." Joseph Robert Kerrey and John William DeCamp.

We go back about twenty years.

Bobby had just returned from Vietnam with one and a half legs and the Medal of Honor and was trying to sort out his physical pain and mental bitterness toward the Vietnam experience. I came back from the Nam about a year later and went almost directly into the Nebraska Senate as one of the youngest state senators in the United States.

Bobby had been a Navy lieutenant on special duty in Vietnam with the SEALS. I had been an Army infantry captain in the

south, in the Mekong Delta, on special assignment to John Paul Vann and a program called CORDS, which was run by then Deputy Ambassador to Vietnam, William E. Colby. Colby would later become head of the Central Intelligence Agency, under Presidents Nixon and Ford. I functioned as an infiltrator and analyst for CORDS, which in fact was more CIA than anything. Officially, CORDS was the pacification program. But that's another story.

In the early 1970s, I was aware of Bobby because of his war protest activities and his Medal of Honor. He was aware of me because of my high profile and controversial activities as a state senator.

One of the first things I did in Nebraska, following my return from Vietnam, was to sponsor a legislative resolution, which some viewed as a war protest, but which in reality was an attempt to open dialogue on the Vietnam War issue and to educate the politicians in the United States as to what was really occurring in Vietnam.

The essence of my plea in the legislative resolution was this: Let us win or get us out of this war. Do not keep us in the position of not being allowed to win and not being allowed to lose, swinging in the wind.

For the first time in its lOO-yearhistory, the Nebraska Legislature voted not to allow any discussion on a resolution. It also forbade any hearing on the resolution to be held within the walls of the Nebraska State Capitol. This was how volatile this issue was back in 1971, and how adamant the elected officials in Nebraska were against anybody daring to question the propriety or value of the Vietnam War.

I was hurt and discouraged by this action and what I viewed as the stupidity of the Legislature, in refusing to want to learn about the issue. As I sat at my Senate desk, licking my wounds after the vote to ban any hearing on the topic, *Lincoln Star* reporter Don Walton came up.

"Pretty discouraging, wasn't it?" Don asked.

"Yeah," I muttered angrily, "these bastards think they can suspend the First Amendment by some vote of this legislature that effectively says the Vietnam War does not even exist. No

wonder they call them hayshakers. They love to wallow in their own ignorance. Sad thing is, they might actually learn something about the Vietnam War-they might even learn to understand why there are war protests."

Don Walton bent over my desk and whispered in my ear, so no one standing around would hear. "The way I read that resolution the Legislature just passed," Don said, "was that they were not allowing any discussion on your resolution to occur inside the walls of the State Capitol. I did not see anything in that resolution that said you could not hold a hearing outside the Capitol, on the front steps."

Don smiled. I perked up. **In** a flash, I knew what he meant.

Defy the Legislature. Hold a hearing of our own right on the steps of the Capitol. Invite one and all to come and participate. Have any senators attend who wanted to. Let the others chicken out if they wanted, but make sure everyone got counted.

And that is exactly what I did. I announced the hearing would take place on the "north steps of the Nebraska State Capitol." The press did the rest.

On the day of the hearing, the Capitol steps were barren of people, except for more law officers, undercover police, **FBI** agents, and CIA operatives than had ever been assembled in Nebraska at one time. The only senators who dared to come sit on the steps of the Capitol to participate in the hearing and listen to testimony were: Senator Terry Carpenter, the firebrand from Scottsbluff, who had gained national attention by nominating a non-existent "Joe Smith" for President at the Republican National Convention years ago, to mock the nomination process at conventions; Senator Ernie Chambers, who has gained state, national, and international attention for his unwavering defense of the rights of African-Americans; Senator Pol. Morgan, now Mayor Morgan of Omaha; Senator Wally Barnett, who later became Nebraska State Fire Marshall; and myself, Senator John DeCamp.

As we five sat there at our make-shift hearing table on the steps, I felt disappointed. We were going to be made fools in front of the state and national press, because of the failure of

the people to care enough to show up for the hearing. And I was going to be the biggest fool of all.

Then we heard a distant rumble. Slowly it grew louder. As we looked north from the Capitol steps, we could see the street filled by a mass of human beings moving straight toward us.

It was the most moving sight of my life. There they were, several thousand people marching on the Capitol, covering the street for blocks behind the leaders. Men in wheel chairs who had lost limbs or worse in Vietnam; combat veterans who came back shattered in spirit or mind, who had been cynical about everything but afraid to express it; students from the University of Nebraska by the thousands; and businessmen and housewives by the hundreds.

In the front, leading the parade, was a young war hero named Bob Kerrey,

• • •

The event turned out to be the largest hearing ever held by the Legislature, up to that time. As ideas were shared, those who supported the war and those who opposed it, including many on both sides of the issue who had fought in it, came together for the first time and communicated. It was awesome.

Part way through the hearing, a group of Vietnam War veterans moved up to the podium and began depositing medals they had earned for acts of heroism. This was their way of repudiating the war, and for them it was a catharsis.

Years later, there were rumors that Bob Kerrey was one of those who deposited a medal in the "coffin" some of the vets brought to the hearing to put the medals in. Kerrey has always denied this.

In 1982, when Bobby was running for governor, his participation in the event became an issue with potentially damaging political consequences. At that time, I discussed the matter with Bobby, as he sought to minimize the damage his opponent, Governor Charles Thone, was doing to him for having attended and thrown away his medal.

I remember Bobby's pleading discussion with me in my office at the Capitol, as the issue heated up. I had publicly admired and praised him for his participation because, back in 1971, it was a sign of courage. Now Bobby pleaded, "For God's sake, you're killing me. Just let the issue drop. Besides, I don't think I was even there." He declared that he had been in Peru visiting his brother at the time of the hearing, so he could not have been there.

I was dumbfounded. But as Bobby grew more insistent that he had not been there, I started to become confused about the matter myself. I complied with his request, taking his word, and publicly said that I must have been mistaken to say that Bobby attended the hearing.

Recently, I decided to see what records there were of that special hearing, twenty years ago, where Bobby now said he was not present. In the files of the *Lincoln Journal,* I found a May 6, 1971 article, which identified Congressional Medal of Honor winner Bob Kerrey as one of the main speakers at the rally. The article said, "A Nebraska native and Vietnam Congressional Medal of Honor winner, Robert Kerrey, in a prepared statement said that the 'Viet Cong or North Vietnamese troops are angelic compared with the ruthless Americans.' "

I checked the files of the *World-Herald.* They also report Bobby as a speaker at the hearing. Two days after the event, Bobby wrote a letter to the *Journal* in which he said that what he meant was that" ... the evidence of atrocities in Vietnam is sufficient to support an argument against all wars.... "

• • •

Over the next several years, we had little contact. Bobby entered the restaurant business and-with a little help from a law I helped amend, that let an individual obtain more liquor licenses than were allowed until then-began to do quite well. He became a significant personality in Lincoln, the state capital. Meanwhile, I was having more legislative success than I had dreamed possible.

It is quite something, to look back at the headlines from

that era, in the same *World-Herald* that today is trying to destroy me for defending the Franklin victims: " 'Gladiator' DeCamp is Tall in Capitol Arena: Fast-Moving Senator Wields Vast Influence"-from March 26, 1978. "Kingpin or Carpenter-like, John DeCamp Wields Power in Legislature"-from April 1978; here, C. David Kotok chronicled what he called my "rise to legislative kingpin." My influence on events was such, said Kotok, that "The 1978 Legislature even has been dubbed 'the DeCamp session' by some." The authors of those two articles, Kotok and Frank Partsch, today write most of the *World-Herald's* editorials, many of which have viciously attacked me.

Bobby and I next had quite a bit to do with each other in 1982, during the Nebraska gubernatorial race. I was there when the state's leading powerbrokers anointed Bobby as the next governor, in fact it was I who suggested they anoint him. That is a fascinating story, but let me first give a little necessary background.

Starting in the mid-1970s, a debate over the structure of Nebraska's banking industry emerged as the issue which would dominate state politics for a decade. Officially dubbed "Multi-Bank," the issue was a turf battle of monumental proportions, over who was going to own the banks in Nebraska, and what competition was going to be allowed in the purchase of existing banks.

On one side were the "Independents," who advocated ownership of banks by individuals. The Independents were very strong in Nebraska, as in many rural states. On a per capita basis, as I recall, we probably had more banks than almost any other state in the United States.

On the opposing side were the "Big Banks," particularly those based in Omaha, the state's largest city. Nebraska law forbade holding companies, which could own many banks. If holding companies were allowed, the big banks would naturally start buying up a lot of small banks-"Multi-Bank." That was the issue.

In 1976, I won the chairmanship of the Senate Banking Committee, which controlled banking, finance and insurance in Nebraska. That is, I thought I won it. I know today that I

was merely the bright young legislator selected by powerful men in business and politics, to aid their efforts to change the banking structure in Nebraska.

I believed at the time, that the banking structure changes I was proposing, which would allow the big banks to get bigger, were good for Nebraska. I thought they were necessary, as well as probably inevitable.

It was this battle over bank structure, that next brought Bobby and me together.

In 1978, the banking forces I supported determined that we had likely assembled enough senators in the recent election, to pass the Multi-Bank structural changes. But we had to be sure that if we passed the legislation, we could get it signed by the governor. A veto would be fatal. It was possible to get a majority of votes to pass the legislation, but electing enough senators to override a governor's veto might take two or three elections, or forever.

It would be much faster and cheaper, the big boys concluded, to control the governor.

Accordingly, at a very private meeting between a Nebraska congressman named Charles Thone; the state's then-premiere lobbyist, Jim Ryan; Omaha National Bank President and CEO John Woods; Omaha National Vice President Don Adams; and myself, certain agreements were reached. The meeting was held at John Woods' personal residence in Fair Acres, Omaha, in a quiet "servants' quarters" outside the main house. The understanding was clear, that we would work to make Charles Thone governor. And Charles Thone, who said he strongly believed in our Multi-Bank bill, gave his iron-clad pledge that he would sign it, just as soon as we could "put it on my desk."

But the best laid plans of mice and men go oft awry, and that is what happened with the new governor, Charles Thone.

Charlie liked being governor. Charlie was cautious. Charlie did not want to do anything that made anybody unhappy. The last thing Charlie needed after being in office for a couple of years, was to have a controversial issue on which he had to play King Solomon, which would make one or another powerful group hate him, no matter what he did.

Multi-Bank was exactly that. The two contending groups of banks financed almost all major political races in Nebraska-on both sides-for almost a decade. Politicians would pledge their support to either the Independents or to the Big Banks, led by Omaha National (later to merge with First National of Lincoln to become FirsTier), as the first step toward running for public office, particularly for the Legislature.

Some politicians came to believe that they would never really have to cast a vote on the issue, because there would never be enough votes to get the bill passed. Therefore, they could promise to support Multi-Bank, without having to worry about a final vote or signature on the bill. Charles Thone was apparently one of those. As long as the bill never reached his desk, he could promise till the cows came home that he would sign the bill, but he would never be held accountable.

But on a fateful day in 1980, something happened in the Legislature that nobody dreamed possible. It had never happened in the first one hundred years of Nebraska history. There was a tie vote, 24 to 24. Nebraska's unicameral Legislature has 49 Senators, but on this day, Senator Ernie Chambers decided to sit on his hands, rather than vote for what he regarded as one bunch of evil-doers against another. Then, in an act of dubious legality, Lieutenant Governor Roland Luedtke cast the deciding ballot in favor of the Big Banks. Never before had a lieutenant governor voted on *anything.*

Governor Charles Thone was in a dilemma. If he signed the bill, he incurred the wrath of the powerful independent bankers. If he did not, he betrayed the promise he had made to John Woods and the Omaha business community, who were intent on this piece of legislation.

Charlie did the smart thing. He left town and criticized Luedtke for having improperly voted for the bill. Luedtke responded by putting on the hat of Acting Governor, and signed the bill into law.

The story did not end there. On instructions from Attorney General Paul Douglas, who favored the independent bankers, the newly passed law was not entered into the statutes. It was as if it had never passed.

In the next year's legislative session, the Big Bank forces came back with guns blazing. Led by me on the floor of the Legislature and in the Banking Committee, we marched the legislation slowly but surely through three legislative votes and to a final showdown with Governor Thone. We had a bare majority, but nowhere near enough votes to override a governor's veto.

On a spring day, as Charlie was dreaming of an easy reelection, as the newspapers were saying that he was unbeatable, being a Republican governor in a Republican state, who had done nothing really right or really wrong, we laid the newly passed legislation on Charlie's desk.

John Woods sent clear messages to Charlie Thone, that he was expected to live up to his promise to sign the legislation. But the Independent Bankers had their own ace in the hole. They had the leading independent banker in the state meet one-on-one with Charlie and "explain the facts of life."

The facts were these: 1. That if Charlie signed the legislation he would be politically dead, because ... 2. The Independent Bankers would organize a referendum on the newly passed legislation and put the issue on the ballot in the next election, where ... 3. As Charlie, we and everybody else knew, it would almost certainly be defeated, because the voting public was inclined to support the Independents. Charlie would be done for.

Charlie got the message. He *vetoed the bill.*

With that veto, Charlie's political doom was sealed, and the door was opened for Bob Kerrey to be the next Governor of Nebraska. Until then, Bobby was still frying hamburgers at his restaurant, and was no closer to the governorship, to Debra Winger, or to Hollywood than the local movie theater.

John Woods was adamant. So was super-lobbyist Jim Ryan. Charlie Thone must be eliminated. It was time to come up with other candidates.

To my suggestion that they seriously consider supporting me for Governor, the answer was unanimous. I was too controversial. I had too much political "baggage." I would not like being governor. I was too effective as a legislator and besides, as everybody knows, except for signing bills, the Governor of Nebraska is not as powerful as independent legislators.

What they said was probably true. They wanted me as their power broker in the Legislature.

I suggested we get behind a young man named Bob Kerrey. For a couple of years, there had been talk about Bobby. I had even dreamed, as I told Bobby many times, of running for Governor, with Bobby as Lieutenant Governor. I knew others were encouraging Bobby, too.

From that meeting on, it was a done deal. Jimmy Ryan and Omaha National Bank Vice President Don Adams were assigned the task of meeting with Bobby privately to sort out whether he would support Multi-Bank legislation.

Bob Kerrey filed as a candidate. A lot of people found it remarkable, that Democrat Bob Kerrey had the heavy support of the normally totally Republican Big Bank establishment.

In November 1982, Kerrey became Governor of Nebraska. His first public appearance as Governor was to testify before my Banking Committee for Multi-Bank. Shortly thereafter, he signed the bill into law.

• • •

Though the support of John Woods and the Omaha business community was the most critical factor in Kerrey's election, there was another force in Nebraska politics at the time, whose support was believed to be practically indispensable to winning the election. This was the pro-life movement.

The vocal head of the pro-life group, Senator Bernice Labedz of Omaha, was more than just another state senator and more than just another pro-life leader. She was the matriarch of the Democratic Party. She was close friends with both of Nebraska's U.S. Senators, J. James Exon and Edward Zorinsky, for each of whom she had worked as office manager. Her support for a candidate guaranteed tens of thousands of votes.

Bernice wanted to support Bobby Kerrey, but she was not going to support anybody who was not pro-life. Bobby knew he needed to do whatever he had to, to win her support. Only with Bernice on board, and with the backing of the Big Bankers,

could Bobby do the impossible-win election as a Democratic governor, in a solidly Republican state.

Bobby wrote a letter, for distribution as a true representation of his stand on the abortion issue.

> Dear Bernice,
>
> In the months ahead, your advice and support will be critical to my ability to provide new leadership for our State. Your courageous leadership in advancing respect for human life, promoting a strong family and a decent society, has been an inspiration to me as well as thousands of our fellow Nebraskans.
>
> We have a common commitment to use our God-given abilities to defend and protect the sanctity of human life. There is no value I hold more dear than the conviction that every society should have as its first priority the protection of the life of its members....
>
> Since becoming a candidate for Governor, I have consistently stated my opposition to abortion. As recently as May 14, 1982, in both the Omaha World-Herald and the Lincoln Journal, I stated, "I find abortion to be morally repugnant." It was in the Omaha World-Herald on May 14, 1982, that I also stated clearly that my position was not "pro-choice."
>
> I believe the unborn to be human life and entitled to all the protections the State can legally offer for the preservation of life ...
>
> I believe there are many important challenges that face us over the next few years. Reducing the number of abortions in our State and working with you toward the elimination of the need for even a single abortion will be of a highest priority. I am confident working in partnership with you in the years ahead will be one of the most rewarding experiences of my life.
>
> Best wishes,
>
> (signed) Robert Kerrey

Following her rule that "a man's word is his bond," Bernice rolled out the political machine of the pro-life movement, in favor of Bobby and away from Charlie Thone.

But in 1991, when Senator Bob Kerrey decided to run for

President of the United States, the political winds had changed. Polls showed that only a candidate who would have the support of the pro-choice movement, stood a chance to beat George Bush.

Bobby's first substantive act in his presidential campaign was to repeat a pattern I had seen during the years I worked with him. He repudiated everything he had previously said on the subject of abortion, acknowledged that he had been essentially fibbing in his pro-life statements, and admitted that he had given the previous false commitments purely for the purpose of getting elected.

Campaigning in New Hampshire, Kerrey was quoted in the October 17,1991 *World-Herald,* regarding his letter to Senator Labedz: "It was a political act, yeah, and an act about which I feel very little pride.... The whole issue of not just abortion but many of the other emotional issues in 1982 were extremely difficult. I didn't know what public policy was for certain, should be for certain, and-as a result-I was all over the map."

• • •

The Multi-Bank legislation was not Governor Robert Kerrey's only foray into state banking law. In 1983-84, the state's banks were experiencing severe problems. In the summer of 1984, Kerrey called a special legislative session to deal with these problems, but specified that it would not deal with the most notorious of them, Commonwealth, whose collapse he himself had precipitated with his infamous press statement of October 31, 1983.

As the Legislature convened, however, Kerrey expanded the session to handle a completely new proposal of his own crafting, which did bear on Commonwealth and State Security. Kerrey's crony Bill Wright was involved.

Kerrey's new proposal was for a special form of interstate banking, in which *only one* out-of-state banking group would be allowed to take over Nebraska financial institutions. It would be arranged so that this single out-of-state group, a Colorado-

based combine with which Kerrey's associates were secretly working, would quietly take over Commonwealth and State Security, in return for the interstate banking monopoly.

I had been sponsoring legislation to allow legitimate interstate banking, but this was not legitimate. It was clear to me that the reason for the Kerrey administration's approach to Commonwealth, was to cover up a multitude of sins related to State Security, owned by Kerrey's intimate Bill Wright.

I met with Bobby. We talked intensely. I made clear that I would support a competitive and reciprocal interstate banking proposal, which I thought would help all Nebraskans, not one that would be used to bail out individuals involved in what I felt was corruption. I mentioned for the first time to him, face to face, the role of his friend and adviser Bill Wright.

When we ended our discussion, I thought Bobby would abandon his idea, and accept an interstate banking proposal along my lines. A legitimate interstate bank bill, however, could not be used by Bobby and his friends for their personal purposes, related to Commonwealth and State Security. From that standpoint, Kerrey, directed by Bill Wright, had to push through his peculiar form of interstate banking.

Led by his chief of staff, W. Don Nelson, Kerrey lined up enough votes to bypass my Banking Committee and railroad his bill through the Legislature and onto his desk where he could sign it. Or so he thought.

They had their votes lined up. It required 25 of the 49 to pass the legislation. Most senators knew less about the legislation than a sow knows about Sunday. But by using the most traditional political methods, carrot and stick, the Kerrey adminstration had gotten commitments from twenty-six senators. They were ready to roll.

Roll they did, using the most powerful lobbyists and the heaviest pressure the administration could put on. Through a technicality, I was able to stop them dead in their tracks. I invoked a procedural ruling, which forced them to have thirty votes to ever get to a vote on the bill itself. They had twenty-six votes, not thirty. Bobby was angry.

Immediately after the vote, I left for the Republican National

Convention in Dallas. When I got there, reporters were calling me for my response to Bob Kerrey's latest action.

"What action was that?" I inquired.

"Bob Kerrey has declared you a 'non-person' whose existence he will no longer recognize in any way," they said.

"How can you declare somebody a ghost?" I asked. "How does Bob Kerrey think he has the authority to declare me a 'non-person'? What planet is he living on that he thinks he has this incredible power?"

I thought for a minute. Bobby was riding as high as any governor ever had in Nebraska. Movie star Debra Winger was now living in the mansion with him part time. All Nebraska was in love with Bobby and Debby. Camelot was here, and Nebraskans were lapping it up. There were pictures of Bobby fluffing up a pillow, smiling and saying, "Just fluff up your pillow and dream about it"-his response when asked what it was like to date Debra Winger.

I knew the press was in love with Bobby, and that anything I said had to be simple and not susceptible of distortion. "Bobby has to learn that there is more to being a governor than macho and movie stars," I told the press.

Later, when I returned to Lincoln from Dallas, I learned from a close friend of mine and of Bobby, a prominent lobbyist, that immediately after the legislative vote in which I stopped his banking proposal, Bobby stormed out of the Governor's office and down to the doors just outside the Legislature, where he yelled out a threat:

know you lobbyists worked for John DeCamp to stop me on this. Well, I promise you one thing. DeCamp is 'dead meat.' Do you hear me? DeCamp is 'dead meat.' I mean it!"

When I was an infantry captain in Vietnam, the phrase "dead meat" was well known. It was what a soldier, usually an enlisted man, threatened an officer with just before "fragging" him. "Fragging" was a live grenade tossed into the tent, living quarters, or restroom facility of another soldier, most commonly an officer.

Live grenades usually kill or maim people. Bobby knew that. His foot was most probably blown off by a live grenade

that either the enemy threw or, as he himself has indicated, one of his own men accidentally dropped near him. Originally no one dreamed Bobby would be recommended for a Medal of Honor. Recently disclosed records show that as the Pentagon attempted to "popularize" the war, the word came down to create more heroes, to recommend more wounded for medals. Since there were more places to fill on the list, Bobby's name suddenly popped onto the bottom of it. This may be a crude way of putting things, but since the Medal of Honor is being cited by the press as the apparent best evidence of Bobby's qualifications to be President, it is legitimate to discuss it. And I do not think Bobby would deny this.

In 1984, Bobby knew that this lobbyist would deliver the message that I was "dead meat," which he did. It occurred to me that I might be dealing with an emotionally disturbed individual. I had no doubts, as to how important the legislation was to help bailout and cover up the State Security scandal, in which Bobby and his friend Bill Wright were involved. And I knew how detrimental such legislation would be to the rest of Nebraska's million and a half citizens.

A governor or legislator does not go completely nuts over a proposal the way Bobby did, unless he has something personal at stake. And I was well aware of what Bobby and his friends had hanging on their interstate banking plan.

The more I learned about State Security, the extent of the thievery that had occurred there, and the fact that the publicity about Commonwealth was being used as a smokescreen to protect State Security from a deeper probe, the more at odds Bobby and I became.

As I kept the heat on with continual demands for an investigation of State Security, Bill Wright left town. When the press confronted Kerrey as to why Wright was gone, an angry Kerrey snapped, that Bill Wright was "driven out of town by John DeCamp."

Finally, the Legislature agreed to allow my Banking Committee to investigate the State Security situation. Eight hundred pages of committee investigation record what happened, and I have covered the highlights in Chapter 6.

This investigation did not get well under way until the final year of Kerrey's governorship. It is my belief, that the reason Robert Kerrey did not run for reelection, was because of this investigation and where he thought it would lead.

The best evidence I can give of this, is what happened after the November 1986 election. Kerrey did not run for reelection. I was defeated for reelection to the Legislature.

Bobby and I sat down for a heart to heart talk.

I had not yet issued the committee report. I had determined to wait until after the election, so that it would not appear that I was using it as a campaign tool. Bobby wanted to know what I was going to say about him in the report.

"As far as I am concerned," I told Bobby, "I have no reason to go after you. You have already been hurt enough, by having to drop out of the Governor's race. I have no reason to pick on you, because it was really Bill Wright who masterminded the State Security swindle, though you obviously played a role in it. I am not out to hurt you. We both have been hurt enough and blamed enough."

As far as I was concerned, Bill Wright was the key villain, and that is what I said in the State Security report. Perhaps I felt a bit sorry for myoid friend who left half his leg in Vietnam.

• • •

Two years later, Bobby and I had occasion to get together again for some very serious business.

I received a request from a close friend of mine, a lobbyist, that Bobby wanted to meet with me privately to discuss something before he made his decision on running for the United States Senate. We met in the lobbyist's office, for a long discussion. "Are you going to run?" I quizzed him.

"I don't know. You think I should? What are you going to do if I do?"

"You mean," I said, "am I going to try to hurt you?"

"Yeah, I guess that's what I mean. What are you going to do?"

"Bobby," I said, "I told you before that I think State Security

was one terrible scandal, with thousands of victims. I believe absolutely Commonwealth was a cover-up for State Security. But I don't think you were the main perpetrator of it. Sometimes we can be the victim of our own friends," I told him, somewhat charitably. get in so deep before we even know it, just a degree at a time, trying to help this guy or protect that one from embarrassment. That's what got Nixon in Watergate ... trying to protect his friends. I truly believe Nixon did not know what the blazes was going on, but he was already in so deep, he had to take the fall for all the others because he was the 'officer in charge.'

think you did wrong in handling the whole thing-Commonwealth and State Security, but you weren't the mastermind. Bill Wright was. That I know, despite your denials.

"But," I continued, "just so you know exactly what I am going to do, so that you do not have to be looking behind your back all the time, here is exactly what you can expect:

"First, I will not do or say anything publicly that will hurt you. You had your punishment already, having to drop out of the governor's race.

"Second, with respect to the State Security issue specifically, and Bill Wright and all the thefts and crimes and cover-ups I know and believe occurred there, I will say nothing more than to tell people they can look at the official reports.

"In short, Bobby, I will do nothing to hurt you."

Then I was pressured and begged, by the highest elected and unelected officials of the Republican Party in Nebraska, to "trash" Kerrey during his U.S. Senate race, by making public everything I knew about him. Governor Kay Orr herself appealed to me to speak out. I refused, not just once, but again and again. With hindsight, I believe I should not have stayed silent.

Ultimately, someone hired a writer named Jack Hart, to go through the records of my legislative investigation and write a series of articles to establish the extent of the Commonwealth! State Security scandal and the culpability of Robert Kerrey. Hart's articles were essentially accurate, as far as they went, and I have quoted from them in Chapter 6.

I lived up to my promise to Bobby completely. And when

the election was over and Kerrey had secured his U.S. Senate seat, a hand-written note from Bobby confirmed that fact.

• • •

So, why make an issue of Kerrey and Commonwealth and State Security now?

Because too much is at stake. Patterns associated with Kerrey from his earliest days in public life, which were accentuated in the Commonwealth/State Security affairs, are being repeated now in the Franklin matter, and have the possibility of being amplified onto the national level, if Robert Kerrey became President.

What are those patterns?

1. Abuse of public positions for one's own financial benefit. This is an invariant of Kerrey' s career, from his first appearance in student politics at the University of Nebraska in 1964-65, where he was censured by the Student Council for pocketing profits from a Student Council program he was in charge of. We saw the same thing again in Commonwealth/State Security and the NIFA loan scam.

2. Shifting political position 180 degrees with the prevailing winds. When it was fashionable to be against the Vietnam War, Kerrey led the parade. When it became a political liability, he chucked his opposition overboard, and lied about it. When he needed votes and he could get them by denouncing abortion, he did so. When he thought the best way to get votes was to be pro-abortion, he embraced that position. In the lead-up to the Gulf war, Bobby was strongly against it. When it was clear that the war was popular, Bobby decided he had been "uninformed" before and switched his stance.

I saw this happen so many times, I used to call him "Flip-flop Bobby" to his face.

3. Acting as a puppet of forces behind the scenes. Bobby got his start in political life because John Woods and the Omaha business community anointed him to pass their Big Banks bill.

While governor, he danced to the tune called by them and by Bill Wright. Today he is controlled by a small circle which includes: John Gottschalk, publisher, *Omaha World-Herald,* and Kerrey business partner; William Wright, the individual who milked State Security's depositors of millions; Joe R. Seacrest, owner and publisher, *Lincoln Journal* newspaper; Bill Hoppner, his Chief of Staff who was effectively governor during the first years of Kerrey's administration, until he left the state to go work for Bill Wright in California; and Warren Buffett, billionaire from Omaha and the new CEO of Salomon Brothers.

These are the men who will tell Bobby when to open his mouth, and what to say, so much so that I will make a prediction: Look for Bobby to start taking stands for population control. His financial angel Warren Buffett is a fanatic on the issue, and funds the most radical population reduction groups in the country.

4. Operating with the protection of a corrupt press. The press can tum truth into falsehood, and lies into truth-such is its power in Nebraska, and also nationally. The media should be the ultimate check and balance of our other institutions of government in this country. Three times in my short life-the McCarthy era, Watergate, and Iran-Contra-it was the press that finally exposed the truth and kept our Constitutional system of government in place, rather than the institutions of government themselves that are assigned that purpose.

In the case of Commonwealth and State Security, Robert Kerrey had a relationship with the two major news sources in Nebraska, the *Omaha World-Herald* and the *Lincoln Journal,* that guaranteed presentation of a distorted and false picture of Commonwealth and State Security. His personal and business relationships with the owners and publishers of the *Lincoln Journal* guaranteed that truth would be sacrificed to convenience. And his business and personal relationship today with the *World-Herald* publisher guarantees even more certainly that same result from the *World-Herald.*

Lest anyone doubt the latter, consider the "open mike" inci-

dent of November 1991. Kerrey found himself on a podium in New Hampshire, sitting next to fellow-candidate Governor Bill Clinton of Arkansas. Not realizing a microphone was on, he told Clinton a dirty joke that was offensive to lesbians and homosexuals, whom he has otherwise supported. Some of the nation's press attacked him for his crudity. But here is how the *World-Herald,* run by his business partner Jack Gottschalk, covered it in an editorial entitled "Kerrey, Too, Deserves Apology."

> Bob Kerrey is right when he says he shouldn't have repeated the crude story he told Bill Clinton in a private conversation in New Hampshire. Nonetheless, it would be unjust if this stupid, minor, blown-out-of-proportion incident were to hurt Kerrey's campaign for the Democratic presidential nomination.

The *World-Herald* gave a tortured argument, that Kerrey was only telling Clinton the joke as an example of jokes which should *not* be told. At that, I had to laugh, because of a sense of *deja vu.* It was one unforgettable thing about politicians close to the Kerrey administration, that they habitually used a dirty or racial joke to open a conversation. Bill Hoppner, now chairman of Kerrey's presidential campaign, was the master of masters, when it came to telling the raunchiest sexist or ethnic joke. And this particular joke, Bobby Kerrey himself told years before, only then he used my name instead of Jerry Brown's!

Bobby's friends at the *World-Herald,* however, concluded:

> The senator on Tuesday apologized to anyone who took offense at the story. It was the proper and political thing to do. The way the story developed, however, Kerrey may be the target of a carefully crafted sabotage operation. Perhaps someone should apologize to him.

I sent the following letter to the editorial board of the *World-Herald* which, naturally, did not print it.

> Everybody suspected-but now we know, don't we?
>
> It really was the *World-Herald* directing the Franklin Grand Jury. For doubters, read the 20 November 1991 edito-

rial titled, "Kerrey, Too, Deserves Apology." That's right, Bob Kerrey tells dirty jokes about lesbians, and gets caught. Immediately, the *World-Herald* decides that Bob Kerrey is the victim because the evil people dared to catch him committing his dirty joke routine.

The *World-Herald* editorially attacks the accusers and labels Kerrey as the "target of a carefully crafted sabotage operation." And demands that his victims apologize to him.

In Franklin, the child-victim accusers were labeled as the bad people and the people they accused were the "target of a carefully crafted hoax."

Go ahead, *World-Herald,* tell us dumb Nebraskans that you did not write the script for the Franklin Grand Jury.

• • •

As I told *People* magazine in their November 25, 1991 profile of the candidate, Bob Kerrey has a magical ability, to make s--- smell like apple butter. Charisma? He has more than anyone I have known. I think he imitates Jack Kennedy even better than Jack Kennedy at times, in the way he speaks and smiles.

He also has a practiced method for touching up his image.

I have seen Robert Kerrey resort more brilliantly, successfully, and often than any other politician, to what I call the Pre-emptive First Strike Confession. If you are about to be compromised or tarnished by your own record, act swiftly, before a scandal develops. Make a tearful confession to a friendly press conduit about your "youthful indiscretion" or your "regrettable shortsightedness." Take something that could and maybe should destroy you politically, and tum it into an asset.

When Bobby needed to clean up his image on banking matters in order to attack George Bush's handling of the S&L crisis, he staged a confession to Kotok of the *World-Herald,* that yes, perhaps, being new to politics and all, he had relied a tad too much on the advice of Bill Wright in the Commonwealth/State Security affair.

When it appeared that his repudiation of his 1982 anti-

abortion letter to Senator Labedz might be used against him in the presidential campaign, given his current pro-abortion views, Bobby explained that back then, "I didn't know abortion from a load of hay."

1 dare the national press to go through the record of Bob Kerrey and see how many Pre-emptive First Strike Confessions he has made on major matters. Then, compare this with any other politician. Kerrey will win hands down.

With his flip-flops and prevarication, his personal aggrandizement, his manipulation by forces behind the scenes, and his protection by a controlled press, we are in for some very rough times, if Joseph Robert Kerrey ever becomes President of the United States.

1have warned you. 1hope 1never have to say, "1told you so."

PART II

INTRODUCTION

It is a little over four years since **I,** John DeCamp, wrote the words you have just read. My closest friend and mentor, Bill Colby, like so many others in the Franklin case, is dead; he was fished out of a river in front of his home, under the most questionable of circumstances, in April 1996.

Was he killed because of his involvement in Franklin? I don't know. What I *do* know, is that Bill Colby was the heart and soul of the Franklin investigation. Although at a certain point he warned me against investigating the case further, it was he who relentlessly pushed to publicly expose what had already been discovered, when everyone else, including, at times, myself, wanted to call it quits. Without him, this book would never have been written. In the new, final chapter of this second edition, I tell much more about my relationship to Bill Colby, who was, in my estimation, one of the greatest patriots this country has seen, from the time that he served as our country's Deputy Ambassador to South Vietnam (but, in reality, as CIA Station Chief), and recruited a young combat infantry captain named John DeCamp to be one of his chief assistants in Operation Phoenix, right through to his role in trying to blow open the Franklin cover-up.

I published *The Franklin Cover-Up,* as much as an insurance policy for myself and my family, as for any other purpose. Colby had pointed to the extreme danger for a person to have secret knowledge about a situation, that others who are affected want to keep out of the public's view.

"Some people will go to any lengths to make sure things stay secret," Colby had often repeated to me, "which is why the CIA and the KGB sometimes find their agents dead. Your

best interest," he argued, "may well be in publishing what you know and are able to prove, rather than keeping those facts secret. Whether you ever sell a single book or not does not really matter. Putting your information on the public record is what is important. That way, there is no logical reason to harm you or your family, to suppress some truth you have already documented. That is probably your real life insurance policy in something like this Franklin situation," Colby had advised me.

Now, four years later, without a single dollar spent in advertising or promotion, over 50,000 copies of this book have been sold nationwide. I am convinced that this is why I am alive today, although I did receive a warning in September 1996, through reliable sources, that I am targeted-i-vjust like they got Colby." There have also been innumerable attempts to disbar me. Although I have thus far been able to defeat every one of these attempts, they keep coming; to silence me through disbarment is, for those trying to hide the truth on Franklin, the equivalent of assassinating me. So, the battle continues, both in the Franklin case per se-about which I include stunning new material which proves the truth of Part I of this book- and in the new cases in which I have become involved. As a result of the first publication of *The Franklin Cover-Up,* as an attorney, I have become involved in some of the most famous legal cases now occurring in these United States, from cases involving the militia movement, to the Oklahoma City bombing, to the notorious Gordon Kahl shootout with U.S. Marshals, about which documentaries and movies have been made, to appearances before the U.S. Senate on all of these matters, including Ruby Ridge and Waco. I have appeared on all of the national TV networks, and on many national shows, such as *Nightline* with Ted Koppel, *Good Morning America,* CNN's *Burden of Proof, America's Most Wanted,* and others.

So, I say, as I dedicate this second edition of *The Franklin Cover-Up* to my friend and mentor, William Colby: "Thanks, Bill. You were right, so right it terrifies me. I told the truth, just as you instructed. Now, as a result of the publication of the original *Franklin Cover-Up,* I have ended up in situations, where, once again, the truth must be told on some explosive

new issues, whose consequences rival those of Franklin, for the future of this country."

Thus, this new edition contains eight dramatic new chapters (and an epilogue): The Franklin Investigation, and Cover-up, Continue; Four Years Later-Where Are They Now?; Troy Boner Steps Forward; Drugs and the Monarch Project; From Montana to Oklahoma City; The Oklahoma Bombing; The U.S. Justice Department Murder of Gordon Kahl; and **In**Memoriam: Bill Colby. This concluding chapter will reveal more about Colby's role in Franklin, and his very last instructions to me, two weeks before his death.

Finally, the last word on the Franklin cover-up is delivered in the epilogue-not by me, but by the nineteenth-century novelist Herman Melville. Besides his famous *Moby Dick,* Melville wrote short stories. A high-ranking personage involved in the Franklin case, told me that one of these stories contained the ultimate secret behind the Franklin cover-up.

He was right.

CHAPTER 18

THE FRANKLIN INVESTIGATION, AND COVER-UP, CONTINUE

When the first printing of what you have just read appeared in May 1992, I was threatened with countless law suits by individuals named in the book. I was told by their attorneys, from some of the most prominent law firms in the state and in the country, that "We will destroy you in court." As it turned out, although there have been numerous attempts to disbar me, only one law suit for libel and slander was ever launched as a direct result of the book-and that was a suit I launched and won, as I will relate.

My victory in that case was but one of a series of what I call the "mini-miracles"-perhaps a hundred or more unforeseen events since the book first hit the streets, which prove the truth of *The Franklin Cover-Up.* I have chosen a small sampling of these "mini-miracles" to recount here.

• • •

After this book appeared, attorneys for Franklin-related individuals repeatedly appeared in the printed media (particularly in the *Omaha World Herald)* and on TV to make statements such as:

"This book is the most libelous and slanderous book I have ever read. The individuals who have been slandered in this book will definitely be filing legal actions to stop distribution

of this book and against Mr. John DeCamp personally. That is certain. This book will be stopped and Mr. DeCamp will be proved to be a liar and made to pay damages."

When reporters who interviewed the lawyers or principals named in the book contacted me for my response to their threats, I had one standard answer:

"I agree with certain things these people and their attorneys attacking me are saying. I agree that the things described in this book are horrible. If anyone had said these things about me, I agree that I would sue them. I believe if there is anything false in this book or if they believe I have not told the truth in this book, that they should sue me. In fact, I welcome their law suits, because that will help develop the truth. I personally believe I have been most careful and cautious in the way I have handled matters, and only written about those things I can absolutely document."

So, what happened with those threats? Who sued whom? Who proved what?

The only major lawsuit for libel and slander arising from this book was my suit against Atlantic Telecast, owner of a television station in Wilmington, North Carolina, WECT (Channel 6). I charged that statements made on a WECT news broadcast on November 12, 1992, attacking me and the book, were false. I demanded a retraction and public apology.

The first response I received was from WECT's station manager, who informed me that WECT had consulted its attorneys, that the station had thoroughly investigated the matters described in my book, and that WECT was not only not going to apologize, but planned to repeat the attacks.

WECT's attorney further advised me that the station had investigated, in part, by talking to U.S. Senator Bob Kerrey Nebraska, who was running for president of the United States at the time, and who had visited Wilmington, and met representatives of the TV station. Further investigation, he claimed, was conducted by talking to the new Wilmington police chief, a man named Robert Wadman-the former police chief of Omaha, Nebraska, who had come to Wilmington in the early 1990s!

After hearing this, I gave a simple demand to WECT: "Rest assured I am ready to prove everything I wrote in my book. I hope you are ready and able to prove your claims made on TV. I give you three weeks for further investigation, and then I will move forward aggressively on my lawsuit against you. At that time, I will seek not only an apology, but substantial monetary damages."

Just under three weeks from the date of my ultimatum, attorneys from Atlantic Telecast contacted me and stated that they had done further investigation and acknowledged that now they, not I, were in trouble.

Shortly thereafter, a settlement agreement was reached which stipulated: (1) WECT TV would broadcast a retraction and public apology to me on its news broadcasts, and would issue a press release to the same effect; (2) WECT would pay me money damages and other financial benefits; (3) All other details of the settlement, other than those stated above, would be kept confidential for the benefit of the TV station.

I accepted the settlement offer, and dismissed my lawsuit. WECT lived up to its part of the settlement, and I have lived up to mine.

My lawsuit intersected a fierce political battle between Chief Wadman, upon whom WECT had relied for its information, and his own police department, particularly with an officer named Sgt. Robert Clatty. Sgt. Clatty is the Wilmington Police Department's expert on satanic ritual abuse of children, and is one of North Carolina's recognized experts as well, with published works on the subject. Chief Wadman, on the other hand, claimed that there was no such thing as satanic ritual abuse; he attempted to make it impossible for Sgt. Clatty to carry out his work, and, at one point, suspended him.

The publicly waged war between Chief Wadman and his wide array of defenders in Wilmington and across North Carolina, and Wadman's adversaries, led primarily by Officer Clatty, went as high as the State Legislature. From 1992 until roughly mid-1994, it divided the city of Wilmington, and even the state of North Carolina.

The outcome of the war between Chief Wadman and his

own force was that in early July 1994, a secret meeting was held with city officials and Wadman's attorney. On July II, 1994, Wadman resigned as police chief. Although city officials refused to comment on what had transpired in the meeting, Wadman himself admitted in a television interview later that month, that he had been ordered to resign from the Wilmington Police Department.

• • •

In May 1992, shortly after the first edition of this book was published, Monsignor Robert Hupp, who had been the head of Boys Town from the late 1970s through the decade of the 1980s-the critical time in question for the Franklin case, contacted me and asked to have a meeting, at which he specified that witnesses must be present. I anticipated that his purpose was to attack me, and to deny what I had written about Boys Town.

I was completely wrong. With two witnesses present, Monsignor Hupp opened our discussion with the simple statement: "John DeCamp, your book stated the game; I hope I can help with some of the names."

Monsignor Hupp and I then entered into an in-depth discussion on the entire situation involving Boys Town, Larry King, Peter Citron, the pedophile problem in general, and the entire story of the Franklin cover-up.

He verified piece after piece of evidence of the Franklin story for me, and provided guidance on other directions in which to look, to develop further proof of the children's stories of abuse by this country's wealthy and powerful.

When I asked Monsignor Hupp how this ever could have happened at Boys Town, he looked at me and told me, so apologetically, "I am like the wife who did not know, and was the last to find out. And when I finally did suspect something and tried to act, the Archbishop [Daniel Sheehan] elected to do nothing about it, when I asked him to help. And then, when I came upon something horribly evil, I found public officials and the Church would do nothing-apparently terrified at the

damage it would do to the Church and to the entire city of Omaha," Monsignor Hupp said.

"What are you talking about?" I asked him. "Is there some particular story or incident you are talking about in the book that you have more information about? Please explain what you mean," I asked the Monsignor.

He then described an incident in 1985, in which a young boy named Shattuck, who lived in Elkhorn, Nebraska, had been sexually abused and then killed. The Monsignor told me that he was certain who had killed the boy, a man he identified as a member of the Catholic clergy in the Omaha Archdiocese. Monsignor Hupp provided precise detail which he said proved beyond any doubt, that the particular individual he named was, in fact, the child's murderer.

"The Church is plagued by these sexual abuse problems across the country and by the devastating publicity the clergy abuse incidents have caused," Monsignor Hupp explained. "The Church's reaction to these sexual abuse problems is, in most cases, to immediately get the clergy member involved out of the state and, if possible, out of the country, and hopefully into treatment. I know that may not be right, but it is a difficult situation to deal with, and simply moving the priest or the brother out of the state or country has been the traditional approach by the Church in America to addressing the problems. In this case, where an innocent child was murdered and where 1 know that a member of our clergy has done this, I felt I had a moral obligation overriding all other things, to bring the situation to the attention of the appropriate authorities. And I did," Hupp concluded.

The Monsignor then shocked me for the second time that day-and in a way that brought back to me the horrible memories of the Franklin cover-up.

He explained that after he determined that the Catholic Archbishop of Omaha was not going to take action on the case, he then went to the FBI and to the Omaha law enforcement authorities to provide complete details on the child's murder.

So, what happened as a result of Monsignor Hupp's actions?

Apparently, nothing. Each year on the anniversary of the

child's murder -now almost ten years-the media talks about the case as being "under investigation," and street rumors persist about the Catholic clergyman-the one Monsignor Hupp believes killed the child-who was shipped out of state for treatment right after the murder.

In the aftermath of our meeting, Monsignor Hupp ran into his own problems. In September 1992, the Monsignor advised me that he was receiving all kinds of pressure and criticism and was, he feared, being forced to leave Boys Town.

Shortly after that discussion, in a controversy that received national press attention on how resources should be used at Boys Town, Monsignor Hupp was removed from his post. He now lives quietly in a home in West Omaha, Nebraska. Monsignor Hupp has shown incredible courage, as he has continued to provide me direction and assistance in the Franklin investigation and related matters.

Monsignor Hupp is not some 13-year-old kid whom the cops say they cannot trust or believe. On the contrary, he is one of America's most famous and nationally honored clergymen; the author of two best sellers; a former Presidential Appointee as Special Ambassador to the United Nations; and the former head of America's most famous child care institution (Boys Town).

Monsignor Hupp showed his courage yet again, when he repeated his charges a year later to a British TV team making a documentary on the Franklin cover-up, entitled *Conspiracy of Silence.*

• • •

In mid-1993, after *The Franklin Cover- Up* had been circulating for almost a year, the British-based TV station, Yorkshire Television, sent a top-notch team to Nebraska to launch its own investigation of the Franklin case. Yorkshire had a contract with the Discovery Channel to produce a documentary on the case for American television.

They spent many months in Nebraska, and also traveled this country from one end to the other, interviewing, filming, and

documenting piece-by-piece the Franklin story I had told it in the book. They spent somewhere between a quarter-million and one-half million dollars investigating the story, deploying probably a thousand times the resources and abilities that I personally had.

Over the year that I worked with them, I was amazed at team's ability to gather new documents and witnesses which kept opening up new and frightening facts about Franklin. They were a crack team. In the final weeks that they were in Nebraska, they expressed their certainty that they would win awards for this documented horror story of government-sanctioned drug-running involving children; government-sanctioned abuse of children; and government protection of some of this country's most powerful businessmen and politicians, who had been the chief actors in the Franklin story.

Finally, the big day came. Their documentary was to air nationwide on the Discovery Channel on May 3, 1994. It was advertised in the TV Guide and in newspapers for that day. But no one ever saw that program. At the last minute, and without explanation, it was pulled from the air. It was not shown then, and has never been broadcast anywhere since.

I have a copy of that program, which arrived anonymously in my mail in late 1995. When I watched this pirated copy, I could see clearly why the program had been suppressed. *Conspiracy of Silence* proved, beyond doubt, that the essential points I had stressed in the book (and more) were *all true.*

For instance, the team had interviewed Troy Boner. Sometime after that grand jury was over, Troy, guilt-stricken because of his lying over Gary Caradori's death, contacted me and told the truth about what had happened. This is recorded in a remarkable affidavit (see Chapter 20). The Yorkshire TV team spent a small fortune to confirm Troy's charges. They flew Troy to Chicago and paid for a lengthy polygraph (lie detector) test at the Keeler Polygraph Institute. With the results of that test, the Yorkshire team was so convinced that Troy was telling the truth, that they featured him in their documentary.

It was only in mid-1996, that I finally pieced together,

through sources I am not at liberty to disclose, what happened to stop the broadcast of this documentary.

1. At the time the Yorkshire TV team and the Discovery Channel were doing the documentary, they had no idea how high up the case would go into Government, and what major institutions and personalities in this country, would be found to be linked to the Franklin story. Ultimately, the documentary focused on several limited aspects documented in this book, and developed them much more extensively than I ever had the resources or abilities to accomplish.

2. These areas which the documentary focused on, were: (a) the use and involvement of Boys Town children and personalities in the Franklin Scandal, particularly Peter Citron and Larry King's relationships to Boys Town; (b) the linkage of Franklin to some of this country's top politicians in Washington, and in the U.S. Congress, with particular attention on those who attended parties held by Larry King at his Washington mansion on Embassy Row; (c) the impropriety of these politicians and businessmen and compromising of these people by Larry King, through drugs and using children for pedophilia.

3. When the broadcast tape was sent to the United States, Customs officials seized the documentary and held it up as being "pornographic material." Attorneys for Discovery Channel and Yorkshire TV were able to get the documentary released. Then, the lawyers went through the film for months, making this or that change or deletion, so that the documentary ultimately advertised to be shown on the Discovery Channel on May 3, 1994, would survive any claims of libel or slander that any of the individuals identified in the documentary might attempt to bring. The lawyers had cleared the documentary for broadcast.

4. During the several months that the documentary was being prepared and advertised for showing, major legislation impacting the entire future of the Cable TV industry was being debated on Capitol Hill. Legislation, which the industry opposed, was under debate for placing controls on the industry and the contents of what could be shown. Messages were delivered in no uncertain terms from key politicians involved

in the Cable TV battle, that if the *Conspiracy of Silence* were shown on the Discovery Channel as planned, then the industry would probably lose the debate. An agreement was reached: *Conspiracy of Silence* was pulled, and with no rights for sale or broadcast by any other program; Yorkshire TV would be reimbursed for the costs of production; the Discovery Channel itself would never be linked to the documentary; and copies of *Conspiracy in Silence* would be destroyed.

Not all copies were destroyed, however, as I and some others received anonymously in the mail a copy of the nearly-finished product.

▪ ▪ ▪

I said in Chapter 12, "The Omaha Business Community":

"As essential to Franklin as [Harold] Andersen's fundraising and publicity were, the credit union could not have functioned for a single day without the complicity of Nebraska's largest bank, FirsTier.... Every dollar that went into Franklin Credit Union-the missing $40 million was no exception-went into its account #153-7-353 at FirsTier."

In October 1994, evidence released through the Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) proved exactly how right I was. These FOIA documents showed that some of the same attorneys who had threatened so loudly to sue me, together with the FirsTier Bank with which they were associated, had reached a financial settlement with the National Credit Union Association (NCUA), in which they agreed to pay the NCUA *$10 million* in damages for their role in improprieties involving Franklin. The attorneys had to come up with over $6 million, and First Tier itself, over $3 million.

Despite the fact that the FirsTier case was the biggest malpractice settlement in the history of Nebraska, and despite the fact that the settlement involved very prominent individuals-including former Republican Governor Charlie Thone and attorney Jay Derr-the story received almost no coverage in the press, that is, before the FOIA material became public. Then, the *World Herald* jumped in with a huge editorial in October

1994, entitled "Franklin Credit Union Crimes Unfairly Claim New Victims." The *World Herald* wrote:

"Some defendants, including banks and a law firm, have agreed to pay more than $10 million to the NCUA to settle the claims. They admitted no wrongdoing. They said they acted to avoid prolonged litigation. Their position is understandable. Litigation is expensive. Moreover, this particular litigation ran the risk of creating a false impression. ... The impression could have taken hold that a wide circle of legal and financial advisers sat on the knowledge that King was looting the credit union.... Such an impression would have been false."

There was, indeed, "a wide circle of legal and financial advisers" in on the looting of Franklin, just as I had charged, and whom I name in Chapter 12, "The Omaha Business Community." Finally, some of them, at least, had to pay for it. Nor was this the only multi-million dollar scam to be exposed in the wake of the first edition of this book.

• • •

In Chapter 6, I described another big money scheme that intersected the Franklin case-the looting of the Commonwealth Savings Bank, in which I filed a claim on behalf of the Commonwealth victims. To my surprise and joy, I succeeded beyond all my expectations in this case-until a strained interpretation of our state Constitution was put forward by Nebraska's Supreme Court.

First, I presented to the Claims Board the Commonwealth story exactly as described in this book, but with even more extensive documentation.

The Claims Board agreed and reached a Settlement for some $16,000,000.00 to be paid to the Commonwealth victims.

But, the Legislature had to approve this, as did the Governor.

So, we took the matter of the settlement-with me as attorney for the Claimants and victims-to the State Legislature. Surprise-in a close but bitter battle, enough Senators stood up to acknowledge the horrible acts that had occurred, and the

intense suffering of the Commonwealth victims that resulted. The settlement was approved.

Next, we went to the Governor, who signed the legislation for the settlement.

Then, the matter was taken to court by certain unnamed individuals (concerned citizens), who claimed that they did not want their tax money used to pay these Commonwealth victims. Nebraska has a unique section in its State Constitution which forbids the state from using any tax dollars for purposes of extending the credit of the state or granting a gift.

The result: that which the Claims Board, and the Legislature and the Governor all agreed the Commonwealth Savings Bank victims were entitled to because of the failures of the Government in Commonwealth, was taken away by the Supreme Court of the State of Nebraska. The Court claimed that Nebraska's Constitution forbids paying the money to the victims, because they were only victims of *moral* wrongdoing, rather than *legal* wrongdoing.

And John DeCamp, who would have become a multi-millionaire out of the case because I had done it on a contingent fee basis, ended up with nothing but the certain knowledge that I had established the truth as I have written in this book with respect to Commonwealth Savings Bank and certain of the personalities who are today so prominent on the national scene-Senator Bobby Kerrey, for example.

• • •

Besides Yorkshire TV, the most notable among the electronic media which became interested in the Franklin story was the TV program, *America's Most Wanted (AMW).* In several episodes, *AMW* opened up a whole new dimension on just how high up politically the story went and how wide it reached across the country.

For a while, I had great hopes. For example, *AMW* interviewed Paul Bonacci in prison and broadcast his account of a host of specific details about individuals, places, activities, kidnappings, etc., in which he said he had participated.

To the shock of *AMW* (and sometimes, of myself), the incidents Paul Bonacci described, when investigated by *AMW,* turned out to be exactly as Paul had recounted.

For instance, a young boy named "Jimmy" who had been branded by pedophile perpetrators-like you would brand a steer with a hot iron-cautiously came forward to a nationally broadcast request by *AMW,* and verified many of the events Paul had described, including a secret hiding place for concealing children located in Colorado, precisely as Paul had said.

Investigation by *AMW* in preparing subsequent episodes of the program, began turning over more and more rocks, providing still more proof of the story told by Alisha Owen and by the other victim-witnesses. *AMW* even featured a one-hour special on one of the most important kidnappings on which Bonacci had given details, that of Johnny Gosch, the Des Moines, Iowa, newspaper boy who had disappeared a dozen years ago. Gosch's parents, John and Noreen, had repeatedly met with Bonacci and become convinced of the truth of Paul's description of the kidnapping and of Paul's own participation in it. At a press conference reported in the *World Herald* April 7, 1992, John and Noreen Gosch had declared: "Paul (Bonacci) told my wife and I things that we've never told anybody."

The investigation was moving rapidly in the Franklin case, as proof poured in by the bucketful. Then, I received a call from *AMW* producer for the show, Paul Sparrow.

"We are going to slow it down a bit on the Franklin story," Sparrow told me, "until you can get a break in the courts or get some responsible law enforcement to follow up some of the leads we have provided them. I don't know how to exactly say this, but I am beginning to understand what you are up against when it comes to certain law enforcement not wanting to pursue this story," Sparrow continued.

"What, exactly, do you mean?" I asked him.

"Well," Sparrow continued, "you must be aware of the fact that *America's Most Wanted* works extremely close with the FBI. In fact, without them we would not really be able to have a program. We really have never had any major disagreements in all our programming because we can't afford to. Our success

requires their cooperation and we are a tremendous benefit to them, which they could get nowhere else. But we are running into some severe problems on this Franklin thing. It is the first time that the FBI is refusing to cooperate. And, they are making it very clear that they want us off of this story- particularly anything to do with the FBI."

Paul Sparrow told me much more, but I promised confidentiality on those matters and will live up to that promise.

As I told Paul several weeks later, "You have done a tremendous service for this country in the work you did on the Franklin case, on its nationwide links and on its drug dealing and political implications, and particularly, by proving so many of the things in question, including even arranging to have Paul Bonacci polygraphed by some of the nation's best experts to prove his truthfulness. I full well understand your sensitive situation and your relationship with the FBI and the problems this entire case causes for you, because the essence of Paul Bonacci and the children's claims is that the FBI, for whatever reasons, is refusing to do anything about this case and is itself part of the cover-up."

I told Paul Sparrow that I accepted his definition of his duty: to provide an entertainment program to the American public; that requires the complete cooperation of the FBI, rather than an adversarial relationship. I have continued to maintain contact with Paul Sparrow and *America's Most Wanted,* and maintain the highest admiration for Paul and his work. But he has done his job. Now, it is up to myself and other Americans, and particularly law enforcement, who had the opportunity to see the *America's Most Wanted* programs, to do something about it.

AMWhad turned up boatloads of new evidence on the Franklin case, and on the kidnapping of Johnny Gosch. The FBI, in response to this new evidence, officially stated that Alisha Owen was a convicted liar, and that Paul Bonacci was a convicted child molester. Their response to the October 1993 requests of Troy Boner and his mother to join the Federal Witness Protection Program, so they could safely provide further evidence on Troy's affidavit statement, was to not only deny the request but to threaten Troy with prosecution on charges of

perjury, if he attempted to change the fabricated story that had helped convict Alisha Owen.

• • •

Still another revelation confirming the Franklin story surfaced with the apparent forced retirement of FBI head William Sessions in 1994. In Chapter 14, "Cover-up Phase III: The FBI," I discussed the case of the African-American FBI agent Donald Rochon in Omaha. Rochon had alleged, in his lawsuit against the FBI, that, in addition to harassing him, FBI agents in the Omaha office were involved in all sorts of sexual perversions, and these same agents were also "investigating" homosexual prostitution rings involving Boys Town. As I had reported, it was only a matter of time until Rochon discovered-if he had not done so already-that his FBI tormentors were deeply involved in the Franklin affair itself. The FBI agreed to settle Rochon's suit by paying him $1 million, and to reimburse his legal expenses of $500,000.

Later, in 1994, when the press was hounding Sessions as to what, if anything, he had done during his term as FBI Director, Judge Sessions defended himself by recalling his "successful" handling of the law suit of the former FBI agent Donald Rochon, which, he said, he had been able to settle, without it damaging the FBI. Sessions said that the horrible allegations Rochon had made in his lawsuit were in fact true, and that a public trial would have damaged the Bureau. He, Sessions, had prevented this disaster by settling out of court.

▪ • •

In Chapter 14, "Cover-up Phase III: The FBI," I reported how, in October 1989, John Stevens Berry, counsel for the State Senate Franklin Committee grilled Omaha Police Chief Robert Wadman as to why the Omaha Police Department was dismissing the reports by child victim-witnesses of horrific abuse, and of other crimes. Wadman replied:

"The FBI ... conducts an investigation and basically says

the same things that we have said. If the FBI, are they now linked to this cover-up in some way? Should the Justice Department be investigated as somehow or another assisting in this 'cover-up'?"

I noted, apropos of this exchange, that, "Wadman said it, but in this case it's true. The Justice Department, acting through the FBI and the U.S. Attorney's Office in Omaha, emerges from the record of the Franklin investigations not so much as a party to the cover-up, but as its coordinator."

Now, four years later, I am even more certain of these charges. Not only has information continued to pour in on the Franklin case which strengthens me in that conviction, and not only has the Justice Department turned its back on a high-level request to re-examine the whole Franklin case (see Chapter 25), but, in case after notorious case entirely unrelated to Franklin, Justice Department personnel appear as liars, perverts, frame-up artists, and even-assassins.

An increasing number of citizens view the United States government with suspicion, even hatred. Though there are no doubt other branches of the government where corruption flourishes, there is no question in my mind that the stench of evil which emanates from Washington, originates in the so-called Department of Justice, particularly in its permanent bureaucracy. I have documented that case with respect to the Franklin cover-up, and the average citizen may have become aware of it in the massacre at Ruby Ridge, Idaho, in August 1992, where it is now generally acknowledged that the Justice Department, through its FBI marksmen, murdered the 14-year-old son and wife of Randy Weaver. The same thing happened in Waco, Texas in 1993, when the Justice Department directed the slaughter of 86 people, based on false reports from "informants" out of Melbourne, Australia, associated with the Anti-Defamation League of B'nai B'rith.

I will note here, several other cases in which that same hideous corruption is apparent, and then describe at length, in Chapter 24 how the U.S. Justice Department on June 3, 1983, killed in cold blood midwestern farm activist Gordon Kahl, whose son is now my client.

THE LAROUCHE CASE

I think by now, although the major news media alternately blacks him out, or slanders him, most people in the country know something about the economist and several-time Democratic Party presidential candidate, Lyndon H. LaRouche, Jr. After all, he did get a very respectable 600,000 votes in the Democratic presidential primaries in 1996, averaging 10% or more of the vote in each state in which he ran. And, while people may have heard that he is a "convicted felon," they probably have no idea of what actually happened.

On December 16, 1988, Lyndon H. LaRouche, Jr. and six co-defendants were convicted on one count of conspiracy to commit mail fraud, eleven counts of mail fraud, in the alleged amount of $294,000 in unrepaid loans; LaRouche was convicted on one additional charge, of attempting to defraud the Internal Revenue Service. LaRouche was then 66 years old; it was obvious that the very harsh sentence of 15 years he was given, meant that the Justice Department intended for him to die in jail. **In** 1991, I first had a chance to examine a small portion of the six volumes of evidence his attorneys filed with the court, proving his innocence. I must say, notwithstanding all that I had already been through on the Franklin case, I was shocked-no, "stunned" is a better word-by what I read. I remember saying to colleagues at the time, "Oh, my God, if they can do this to LaRouche, who is a well-known, if controversial, political figure, in this blatant way, there is no one in the country that they won't simply frame up."

The U.S. Justice Department had not a shadow of "evidence" to convict LaRouche, nor any of his associates, one of whom, Michael Billington, was sent to jail in Virginia for 77 years! **In** fact, the evidence showed-in the government's own documents released under the Freedom of Information Act-as LaRouche's attorneys contended, that "The U.S. government knew at all relevant times, from 1979 to the present day, that Lyndon LaRouche and his co-defendants were innocent of the false charges for which they were convicted." The only crimes committed in the "LaRouche case" were the massive illegalities

of the U.S. Department of Justice in their zeal to remove LaRouche from the political life of this country.

It later turned out, as LaRouche's associates found out from FOIA appeals, that LaRouche's latest troubles started when his longtime political enemy, Henry Kissinger, wrote a letter in 1982 to then-FBI director William Webster, asking Webster to go after LaRouche. But, already back in 1973, as other FOIA documents from the FBI's own files showed, the FBI had authorized the Communist Party of the United States (which it basically ran, through its "informants") to "eliminate" LaRouche-that is, to kill him outright.

I was not the only one to get a whiff of a big-time frame-up. Former U.S. Attorney General Ramsey Clark, with whom I had had some contact during the Franklin case, and who was LaRouche's appeals lawyer, wrote a letter to Attorney General Janet Reno, in which he said, "I believe it [the LaRouche case] involves a broader range of deliberate and systematic misconduct and abuse of power over a longer period of time in an effort to destroy a political movement and leader, than any other federal prosecution in my time or to my knowledge."

And, as of August 1996, 721 U.S. state legislators (and thousands more federal parliamentarians and other dignitaries around the world) had signed an open letter calling for the exoneration of LaRouche which denounced, in no uncertain terms, his frame-up. LaRouche is out of jail, and going strong, but he has still not been exonerated from the stain of a phony conviction, nor compensated for the five years stolen from his life, nor for the untold damage done to his political movement.

THE DEMJANJUK CASE

A case which almost rivals that of LaRouche, in terms of the length to which the Justice Department will go to crush one individual, is that of former Cleveland autoworker John Demjanjuk.

In 1979, the Justice Department accused Demjanjuk of being the notorious "Ivan the Terrible," the Nazi mass-murderer who

killed countless Jews at the Treblinka concentration camp in Poland. Demjanjuk's lawyers later proved-again, from the Justice Department's own documents-that the department knew, almost from the very beginning, that Ivan the Terrible had already been proven to be someone other than Demjanjuk. Still other documents showed that the Justice Department knowingly accepted a forged J.D. card from the Soviet intelligence agency, the KGB, to frame Demjanjuk.

Finally, with the full knowledge that he was innocent, the Department of Justice had Demjanjuk extradited to Israel to be executed. It was only due to the extraordinary courage and tenacity of his Israeli lawyer, Yoram Sheftel, that the Cleveland autoworker was finally acquitted. Then, on November 17, 1993, the U.S. Sixth Court of Appeals in Cincinnati, Ohio, issued a stinging rebuke to the Department of Justice, in an 83-page decision overturning Demjanjuk's denaturalization. The Court charged that the Department had committed "prosecutorial misconduct" and "fraud upon the court," in obtaining the conviction.

Nothwithstanding all that, the Justice Department is *still trying to have Demjanjuk extradited from the United States!*

THE FRUEHMENSCHEN CAS E

On January 27, 1988, then-Congressman Mervyn Dymally placed before the House of Representatives a shocking document. It was an affidavit sworn by an FBI agent, Hirsch Friedman, concerning an FBI policy named Operation Fruehmenschen (German for "primitive man"). According to Friedman's testimony, "The purpose of this policy was the routine investigation without probable cause of prominent elected and appointed officials in major metropolitan areas throughout the United States. It was explained to me that the basis for this Fruehmenschen policy was the assumption by the FBI that black officials were intellectually and socially incapable of governing major governmental organizations and institutions."

Other evidence backed up Friedman's charges, including a 1987 book by Dr. Mary Sawyer, *Harassment of Black Elected Officials: Ten Years Later,* a follow-up to a 1977 report she had issued on the same subject.

The figures backed up Dymally and Sawyer's charges. Between 1983 and 1988, 14% of all political corruption cases targetted black officials, though they comprised only 3% of U.S. officeholders. From 1981-1983, roughly half of the 26 members of the Congressional Black Caucus were targets of federal investigation for indictments. In magnitude, this is as if 204 members of the (largely white) 435-member House of Representatives were under investigation at anyone time!

On this overall Justice Department corruption, I was very heartened to see a resolution from the National Black Caucus of State Legislators (NBCSL), which they had passed at their 19th Annual Legislative Conference, held in Birmingham, Alabama, from November 28 to December 2, 1995. The resolution referred to the two-day hearings which the Schiller Institute had sponsored in Virginia on August 31 and September 1, where a distinguished panel of legislators and international legal experts (including prominent members of the NBCSL) came together to examine Department of Justice corruption regarding the above cases and others. The NBCSL said, in its "Resolution 20: A Call For Congressional Hearings To Investigate Misconduct by the U.S. Department of Justice":

"WHEREAS, the hearings focussed on cases where there was evidence of political targeting of groups and individuals by corrupt officials inside federal governmental law enforcement agencies, working in tandem with a concert of private organizations...

"WHEREAS, the evidence was presented, not by the good word of the witnesses alone, but documented by the government's own documents, records, and memoranda, first suppressed and later obtained under the Freedom of Information Act, and other legal actions,

"BE IT RESOLVED...That this body, the 19th Annual Legislative Conference of the National Black Caucus of State Legislators, join this independent and distinguished panel of

:mdividuals, in demanding that both Houses of the United States Congress exercise their oversight responsibility and conduct investigative hearings to examine these allegations of gross misconduct by the Department of Justice...and urge our colleagues in the Congressional Black Caucus to do the same."

I can only say, "Amen."

CHAPTER 19

FOUR YEARS LATER-WHERE ARE THEY NOW?

So now, four years later, what has happened to some of the key figures in the Franklin case?

My good friend, *William Colby,* the chief behind-the-scenes architect of the Franklin investigation, is dead.

Franklin Credit Union boss *Larry King* has served five years in prison and is about to be released.

Alisha Owen was convicted of perjury on June 21, 1991. In February, she went to prison to begin a IS-year sentence. This is notwithstanding the fact that the Nebraska Supreme Court *expunged* the report of the Douglas County Grand Jury from all official records, because the report violated all laws relating to such proceedings. This Grand Jury had indicted Alisha in the first place, claiming that the children's charges of abuse were a "carefully crafted hoax." The Omaha *World Herald,* however, had extolled the Douglas County Grand Jury report, complaining that the Supreme Court had condemned it.

At my own expense, I have continued to provide legal assistance to her in the appeals process during the last four years. But, I did not represent Alisha at her original, hasty 30-day trial, and the problem in defending her subsequently is, that if things were done wrong at the trial level, either by the defendant, or by the defendant's lawyer, it is difficult, if not impossible, to correct that problem at the appeals level. The only way to do that, is to prove to the court that the defendant did not receive adequate assistance by counsel during the trial-

otherwise the appeals attorney is limited to the record created during the original trial.

Troy Boner came under such onerous pressure from the FBI, that he recanted all that he had told the State Senate's Franklin investigator, Gary Caradori. This recantation was the key factor in the Douglas Grand Jury's "findings" that all the children had lied. In 1993, Troy engaged me as his lawyer. Before he did so, however, I asked him to write an affidavit, telling the story as he actually knew it to have actually happened. In this affidavit (printed in the next chapter), he reasserted his original story, which he had also told the Yorkshire TV crew. He has now dropped from sight, no doubt terrified about the threats that the FBI and others delivered to him, were he to tell the truth.

Paul Bonacci has matured, fallen in love, and is a devoutly religious young man. He is now a youth counselor, working to protect young children from the experiences he suffered.

The civil rights lawsuit I filed on behalf of Paul still continues. It has been an incredibly costly and painful effort for both of us. I will try to outline a few of the facts which are on the public record with respect to that lawsuit.

First, as part of our discovery process in the suit, we were able to locate a vast store of pornographic materials, which were in the possession of the Douglas County Court. These had been held by Peter Citron before Citron was arrested. However, the court imposed such strict rules on our being allowed to see the material, that we were able to review only 1% of the *material-before the court ordered it destroyed!*

The material consisted of thousands of hours of tapes, magazine articles, and related pornographic materials. The court ruled that Paul was not to be allowed to see any of the materials.

This restriction was extremely damaging to us, because Paul was and is the one person who can, and will, identify the children and the others in the films-a fact the court itself acknowledged!

The more we began to pour over Citron's materials, the more we discovered that huge amounts of them, as identified in the official court inventory provided to us, were missing. So, we immediately went to court-which took additional time-to

hold hearings and to subpoena officials, to try to locate the missing materials and find out how these materials could disappear, despite strenuous security measures. The official in control of the materials simply declaimed: "We admit there are huge amounts of pornographic materials missing, but we are not the ones who hid or destroyed or took them, and we do not know who did."

Additionally, I could only view the materials in the presence of guards and of the Clerk of the Federal Court, at his convenience, and behind security doors, and with notice given to all other attorneys in the case to be present if they so desired. All this security was, as I was told, for the protection of the pornographers involved-which seems strange, even in this bizarre case.

Under the terms and within the time frame the court allowed, it was impossible to ever look at more than a fraction of the materials.

Now, incredibly, the court has ordered the materials destroyed.

Arrayed against me in this civil rights lawsuit on behalf of Paul Bonacci are lawyers from across the United States, from a dozen or so of the highest priced law firms in the country. One of them is Ed Warin, a former United States Attorney from Nebraska during the time much of the Franklin matters were occurring, who represents Alan Baer. The reality I, and particularly Paul Bonacci, must face in this lawsuit is this: These defendants have unlimited money, power, and resources. Paul has no resources and I have limited time and resources and a family to support and a living to earn.

For example, take the Deposition of Paul Bonacci, which was given in nine days spread out over the period of a year. I have often told Paul, after the deposition and the legal assault on his credibility by the battery of high-priced lawyers assembled against him:

"Paul, there was truly an angel on your shoulder during these continuing days of depositions. I do not know of a single person who could have stood up to the questioning that you were put through and survived. If I had any doubts about your

story before the depositions, I absolutely have no doubts now that you were and are telling the truth, and are possibly the single most important person in America who can document some horrible acts by some of our top government officials and government agencies. And though your particular case may not produce anything financial for you, the information you have laid out will one day be the starting point for major investigations of certain government agencies and their practices which have been concealed from the American people. You Paul Bonacci, are the living history book, for example, for a program called 'Monarch' and someday the American people must and will have access to that story."

The more than 2,000 pages of questioning of Paul Bonacci are today secret. Matters only hinted at in this book are developed in detail there.

Senator Loran Schmit was, as chairman of the State Legislature's special committee investigating Franklin, a pillar of courage, without whom little or none of the truth would ever have emerged. The forces involved in the Franklin cover-up made sure he lost his 1992 race for the Senate, after having served for 24 years. They also bankrupted him through phony lawsuits. With my help, he defeated all these legal assaults, but the suits, along with the incessant attacks by the *World Herald,* took a toll. Senator Schmit now works as a consultant in Lincoln.

Alan Baer paid a fortune to his attorneys and managed to get his charge reduced from felonies to a single misdemeanor for which he had to pay a $500 fine. Alan Baer has now become the major promoter for the gambling industry in Nebraska. In 1996, Baer and gambling syndicate supporters spent millions of dollars to win a position on the ballot for a proposal that would have given the gambling syndicates power to allow any type of casinos or gambling enterprises into the state that they would choose; and power to regulate the new casino operations.

As two former state senators, Loran Schmit and myself took out full-page ads in the *World Herald* denouncing the plan, and attacked Baer by name.

On Friday, October 25, 1996, the gambling syndicates had made arrangements to appear before Federal Judge Kopf, who

had sentenced Larry King, to obtain a federal court order to place the gambling referendum on the ballot November 5, 1996.

Only a week before, I had put out a press release in which I publicly expressed my fear that the gambling syndicates would be successful in getting their proposal on the ballot, since many of the personalities involved in the syndicate, had also been involved, and protected, in the Franklin case.

The release may be one reason why, when on Oct. 25, the syndicate went to get its expected order from Judge Kopf, he was nowhere to be found! It turns out he had checked himself into Bryan Memorial Hospital, with what was claimed to be a possible heart attack. When all deadlines for signing the order had passed, Judge Kopf remarkably recovered and was released from the hospital to resume his duties on the bench.

U.S. Federal Magistrate *Richard G. KopJ,* as predicted in the first edition, leapfrogged ahead of others to win appointment as a federal judge by President George Bush, shortly after Kopf's sentencing of Larry King.

U.S. Assistant Attorney Thomas D. Thalken, the federal prosecutor on top of the Franklin case, who had himself been named by investigator Gary Caradori's informants as being involved in pornography, moved ahead of five other candidates, to be appointed in October 1992 to replace Kopf as the new U.S. Federal Magistrate.

Gerald Moran, Douglas County Prosecutor, also moved ahead of a host of others and was appointed a District Judge in Douglas County. His assistant, Robert Sigler, who had been described by Paul Bonacci as being in the middle of the Franklin affair, took over Moran's job of prosecuting Franklin-related victim-witnesses, particularly Alisha Owen.

Omaha FBI head Nick O'Hara, who, as the saying went in Omaha, was closer to Omaha Police Chief Bob Wadman than "nineteen is to twenty," moved to Washington to become the head of Counter-Terrorism for the FBI, and then onto Minnesota, to head up the state's Commission on Crime.

CHAPTER 20

TROY BONER STEPS FORWARD

Under immense pressure from the F.B.I., Troy Boner recanted the testimony he had provided Gary Caradori, about the criminal activities of some of Omaha's elite citizens. His recantation was crucial to the Douglas County Grand Jury's findings of July 1990, that all the charges of child sexual abuse and related criminal activity was a "carefully crafted hoax."

Later, a conscience-stricken Troy sought me out and restated his original charges. His story was recorded in an affidavit he swore before a notary public on October 27, 1993. This affidavit is printed in full below.

• • •

Troy Boner, being first duly sworn, does depose and say of his own knowledge and experience as follows:

REASONS FOR THIS AFFIDAVIT:

I am making this affidavit freely and voluntarily and for the protection of myself and my family now and in the future; second, because it is right to do; and finally, because I want

to undo some of the damage and injury I have caused and to help force legitimate and honest investigations of such matters as my brother's death, Gary Caradori's death and *all circumstances surrounding my allegations herein, particularly the allegations that I lied to the grand jury and at the Alisha Owen trial but that such lies were caused by others including particularly the F.B.I.* I, and my mother and family, are exhausted from living in fear of death or injury as a result of my personal involvement in the Franklin matters which ended up in my testifying at the Grand Jury hearings as well as at the Alisha Owen Trial. I lied at the Grand Jury hearings and I lied at the Alisha Owen trial. I lied when I "recanted" my original testimony to Gary Caradori. I lied because I truly believed and still do believe that it was a situation where I must either "lie or die," and at the insistence primarily of the Federal Bureau of Investigation officials who were dealing with me at that time, specifically Mr. Mott and Mr. Culver.

The purpose of this affidavit, very simply, is to provide John De Camp the information he requires to file an action seeking protection for me and for my family from various individuals and the F.B.I. so that my true story can be told without fear of death or injury to myself or my family and so that others in a similar situation to myself can also come forward safely and tell their stories which I believe will prove very clearly that what I am saying in this affidavit is true. I am also certain now that only by telling the truth as openly and publicly as I can will I ever stand a chance of providing protection for myself and my family for the future. I have asked John De Camp to do whatever is necessary to seek Witness Protection, including Federal Witness Protection if possible, for myself and my mother and my pregnant fiancee and child-to-be. Yes, I know full well the very great risk I run by taking this action but I and my mother and family can not go on the way we are and I can not live with myself unless I take this action.

I will be as brief as possible in this affidavit but I will also try to answer the questions that have to be answered in the situation I am in.

WHY JOHN DE CAMP IS MY ATTORNEY FOR THIS UNDERTAKING:

I know some of the people I am accusing in this affidavit, and the legal action accompanying it, will immediately claim that John De Camp somehow contacted me and convinced me to take this action for his purposes. So he has told me.

The exact opposite is true. Never have I spoken with John De Camp prior to this and he has never contacted me directly or indirectly. I had a friend of mine contact John De Camp several weeks ago and bring him to a meeting with me and my family at a secret location. At the time, John De Camp did not even know he was coming to meet me or my family. He thought he was being brought to meet a girl who needed representation on some matter. I searched him before our meeting began. We both agreed-with my entire family present-that anything said at the meeting could not and would not be recorded or ever used against me or to hurt me by John De Camp if I did not want to go ahead with this action. He agreed. I proceeded, along with my mother, to detail for John De Camp the fact that I had lied; why I had no choice but to lie; and many other facts. I then asked John De Camp whether he would represent me in helping to correct matters. I told him I went to him not because I liked him or knew him but because I felt he was the only honest one in this entire mess who could and would do something about my situation and who would not back down when the going got tough and who would "stick by me thru thick and thin if I (Troy) was telling the truth absolutely." He promised to do this so long as I told the truth and would agree to comply with any lie detector or other truth test he *or any legitimate investigative officials* might ask for no matter what and so long as I and my family were doing this action not for money damages but for our safety and to get the truth told and myself and my mother and other kids protected.

John De Camp also told me that he could not and would

not represent me and my family in this effort if he, De Camp, believed that I was lying or if he believed he had any conflict of interest between myself and any other clients of his, specifically Alisha Owen and Paul Bonacci. After researching and investigating what I, Troy Boner, had told him, De Camp said he would represent me and my family on a Pro Bono basis seeking only such compensation for representation as a Court might provide him. He also agreed to assist in any way he could personally in helping procure a secure and safe environment for me and my fiancee and child-to-be and to procure such other assistance for us as was possible thru social agencies or other groups or government agencies able to assist me and my family. He specifically refused in advance to provide any personal financial assistance in any way saying that he felt that would raise questions as to the correctness of his work on this case. I have included this information in this affidavit at his, De Camp's, request, to answer in advance questions he said others would ask.

MY ORIGINAL STORY TO GARY CARADORI:

What I told Gary Caradori in the original taped interviews Gary had with me was the truth. It is still the truth. From about age 14 to 17 I was seriously involved in sexual and drug and related activities with a wide range of individuals but primarily and specifically Alan Baer, Larry King, Robert Wadman, Peter Citron, Eugene Mahoney, and others of prominence and wealth whom I will identify for any legitimate investigative officials who seriously wish to correct the problems and stop the conduct these individuals are and were engaged in rather than cover up that conduct.

It has been repeatedly publicly stated that my story and the stories told by Alisha Owen, Paul Bonacci, and a *large number of other young people not previously identified who were simply intimidated from talking or who were ridiculed,* were a "Carefully Crafted Hoax." The stories were not a hoax. The only

carefully crafted thing that occurred was in fact the cover-up of the facts and the subsequent conviction of Alisha Owen and the original Grand Jury Investigation. **In** short, there was a carefully crafted cover-up by the very people who were supposed to be exposing the conduct of these people rather than covering it up. And, *yes, I was a very, very critical element in that cover-up but that participation by me was done because of threat and promise made to me primarily from the F.B.I.. and Mr. Mark Delman, the attorney arranged for me by others.*

I repeat. The original story I told on taped interview to Gary Caradori was in fact substantially the truth and substantially accurate. I say substantially because I am sure on some points I exaggerated and on some points I did not remember exactly the date or place or time of this or that event or particular person or persons involved. But, specifically, the material and substantive facts about the (1) Parties that took place at Twin Towers; (2) the use of myself and other children as *drug couriers for Alan Baer and Larry King;* (3) the involvement of Alisha Owen at the parties and as a drug courier also and her involvement with former Omaha Police Chief Robert Wadman; (4) my relationship with Alan Baer sexually and otherwise as well as the involvement of a number of other children with him; (5) Wadman's presence and participation at these parties in question; (6) my delivering Alisha Owen personally to Bob Wadman on several occasions; (7) my involvement sexually as a boy with Eugene Mahoney, the former Game and Parks man; (8) Peter Citron's presence and involvement in the parties and related sexual activities and filmings, *were all true, correct and accurate on the material facts.* And, contrary to what the F.B.I. and others tried to get me to say and what I did say and in saying did lie about under pressure and threat and promise from the F.B.I. and others, Gary Caradori did not intimidate, threaten, coach, make up things or in any way improperly or falsely portray the information I provided him. He simply asked me to tell the truth, no matter what it was, and that is essentially what I did with him. He told me that was the law; that I had to report these things about Child Abuse under the state laws. But that was the only pressure of any kind he applied. And I

know now it is the state law and all I want to do is comply with that law without fear of me or my family being hurt or killed for having complied with that law.

MY CONTACT WITH THE F. B. I. AND WHY I LIE 0 AFTER THAT CONTACT:

After telling my story to Gary Caradori, I was assured that it was most important that *everything I knew be kept absolutely secret.* That I should talk to no-one or reveal what I had provided Caradori or the Legislative Committee. Everybody, including Caradori and the Committee and the Feds told me this. *I know now that this was the stupidest thing I could do and that my following their very instructions to conceal things in fact made me and my family subject to and victims of later threats and intimidation.* That is one of the main reasons that I have definitely determined that I will now conceal nothing from any legitimate investigative source-including the press. I am certain that had the press really known what was happening and all the facts that they would have done a far better investigation than others and would not have allowed the cover-up to occur. I will explain later why I now believe this to be the case.

In my first contact with the F.B.I., the F.B.I. officials, particularly Mickey Mott and Mr. Culver, made it clear to me that (1) They were *only* interested in *disproving* everything I had told them; that (2) they were taking the position that "...we know you are lying and we are only trying to figure out why and who is your leader who is having you lie"; and that (3) "if you will tell us you are lying then *we* will let you off the hook but if you insist on sticking with the story you told Caradori, then we will stick you in prison for a long, long time. What you told on your tapes to Caradori can land you in prison for twenty years each on a lot of different charges of perjury. If you insist on sticking with your story, *you will go down."*

When the F.B.I. dealt with me, they made it clear that they had the power to put me in prison-whether my story to Cara-

dori was true or not-and the power to put Caradori and others in prison including Alisha for providing the information we did to Caradori. And they made it clear that was what they intended to do unless I "recanted" my original story to Caradori and the Legislative Committee.

The F.B.I. in conjunction with my new attorney, Marc Delman, who was arranged for me by others including particularly Frank Brown of the Television Station in Omaha, made it crystal clear to me that my only hope of staying out of prison was in "recanting" my original story to Gary Caradori, even though my story to Caradori was and is the truth.

To make a long story short, I was put into the following situation by the F.B.I. and my attorney, Marc Delman, and I am confident in my own mind that they knew exactly what they were doing although I still do not understand all the reasons why they wanted me to lie or who they were doing this for: *I had to lie to stay out of prison and I had to say that the truth was a lie and that the lies they wanted me to tell were the truth.* So, when I went before the Grand Jury, at the insistence and instruction of Marc Delman and the F.B.I., I told the Grand Jury what the F.B.I. and Delman wanted me to tell the Grand Jury which is that the story to Gary Caradori was a "hoax." But, as stated, the exact opposite is true.

Some time after my testimony to the Grand Jury, Gary Caradori was killed. I have no proof but I do believe he was deliberately killed. But, someone else will have to determine this because I acknowledge I have no information to prove or disprove this. Immediately after Gary Caradori was killed, and *because I did believe he had been killed as part of a cover-up and as a result of my lies to the grand jury,* I immediately called his home (from the Red Lion Hotel) at which time I spoke to his wife Sandie and told her I had in fact lied to the Grand Jury and that I was going to help straighten it out now. She suggested I go to Senator Schmit and provide him that information. This I immediately did and told Senator Schmit personally in his office that I had lied to the Grand Jury and that what I told Gary Caradori was the truth and that I only lied out of fear that the F.B.I. and others, particularly my

attorney Marc Delman, would hurt me or my family and particularly because they promised me they would put me in jail if I did not say what the F.B.I. and Delman wanted me to say which I, and I am sure they also knew *was a lie.*

I also met Senator Bernice Labedz at the Caradori funeral and agreed I would meet her and Senator Schmit for lunch immediately following the funeral at which time we would go over my alleged "recantation" and I would provide her and the Committee all the facts. At the funeral, however, the F.B.I. agents, particularly Mickey Mott made it clear to me thru their actions that they knew what I was up to and gave me the clear impression that I was in "great danger" if I went ahead and met with the Legislative Committee and tried to tell them the truth. So, immediately following the funeral, I told my mother, who was with me, that we were not going to the meeting with the Senators and I was going to stick with my lies to the Grand Jury because of what I feared the F.B.I. or others associated with them or whom they were protecting would do to me or the members of my family.

Later, Senator Labedz called me and asked why I did not show up at the meeting. At first I pretended like I did not know what she was talking about because by this time I was really scared especially because of Caradori's death. Then she said she knew I was scared. So I was honest and I remember I flat told her I was "scared" and could not do anything now. She said she felt sorry for me and that she understood.

Then, Marc Delman and Mickey Mott saw Senator Schmit say on T.V. that I had been in his, Schmit's office, and that my "recantation" had been false. They both called me. Even though Marc Delman knew I had been at Schmit's office and that what Schmit was saying was the truth, he, Delman, asked me whether the conversation had been taped or whether there was any other record of my having been in Schmit's office to talk to Schmit. I told Delman there was no tape or any other record I had been with Schmit & that I had not signed anything. So, acting on Delman's instructions I publicly lied and denied any meeting or discussion with Senator Schmit and Delman publicly did the same and suggested Senator Schmit was lying.

Delman then instructed me to deny that I was in Schmit's office and to simply imply that Schmit was lying about all these things. Delman's exact words to me were, "It's your word against his ... as long as there are no tapes." Mickey Mott the F.B.I. man also met again with me and again made it clear that if I told the truth-in other words, if I recanted my recantation-that I was in big trouble and would go to prison and for the first time Mickey Mott said something I interpreted then and now to have been a direct and personal threat that later came to pass.

When I told Mickey Mott and Culver the F.B.I. people one time when I was feeling a bit cocky about their threats to me that Alan Baer and others "could n01 afford" to do anything to hurt me now because too much publicity was focused on me and that they could not afford the risk of doing anything to me, Mott right away told me that they probably would not do anything directly to me, that instead "they will do something to a family member." And, of course that is what happened shortly thereafter after I had met with Schmit and talked to Sandie Caradori and when the F.B.I. and Delman and Baer and others thought I might break away from them, the F.B.I. and Delman, and tell the truth and confirm that I had lied when I testified to the Grand Jury.

I am completely certain in my own mind, which I believe a decent and honest investigation will show, that my brother Shawn was killed as a message to me to stick with my lies and not to back down because they were afraid I might back down and tell the truth at the Alisha Owen trial. After Shawn got killed, I had no doubt at all that they really were as dangerous as I had originally feared; that they would do anything and kill anybody to keep the truth contained and to keep me lying for them; and I complied with every request they wanted me to do or say with respect to the whole so called Franklin thing.

Before the Alisha Owen trial I was carefully rehearsed by the F.B.I. as to what I would say and what questions would be asked and then after rehearsing everything with the F.B.I., I was taken over to Mr. Moran the prosecutor to go thru the Rehearsal again. I do not know whether Mr. Moran knew I

was lying but for sure the F.B.I. had to know because they were the ones who forced me to "recant" in the first place and threatened me with prison if I did not. Additionally, the F.B.I. themselves had actual pictures of me and other prominent individuals in their possession including particularly Alan Baer (1983 picture of he and me in very pornographic sexual acts) as well as checks from Alan Baer to me. So, they had to absolutely know I had a relationship with him and that they were forcing me to lie when I denied such relationships. Additionally, the F.B.I. had seized photos and tapes involving among others myself and a *Mr. Andreasen* and *Larry King.* These were video tapes of a party. And I know from having seen tapes at Peter Citron's house that the F.B.I. had access to tapes which clearly documented much of the conduct and the personalities I and other kids had identified as having occurred but which later I lied about before the Grand Jury and again at the Alisha Owen trial when I claimed-again to satisfy the F.B.I. -that the events never occurred. I do not know what the F.B.I. ever did with these pictures of me and Baer, for example, *but I know they had them because I saw them.* So, they, the F.B.I. had to know the real **truth** all along and had to know what they were doing when they forced me to *lie.* I am also sure that there are other pictures which would prove the things we kids told Caradori. Why do I say this? Because, the one thing I remember above all else is that these people like Baer, Mahoney, Citron, Andreasen, King, always loved to have pictures of themselves and others, particularly the kids, in weird sexual poses.

MY CREDIBILITY AND THE CREDIBILITY OF THE OTHER KIDS:

I know the first thing that the F.B.I. and Marc Delman and others involved in these Franklin and related matters will say when I submit my affidavit is something like: "You can't believe these kids and you can't believe Troy Boner now. If

he lied once, he will lie again. He's a drug addict. He's a sex pervert. Who are you going to believe, these kids with their wild stories or respectable people like Alan Baer or the F.B.I. or Attorney Marc Delman? Besides, these kids were as guilty or more guilty than anybody else. They were using the drugs and they were selling their bodies and they were getting paid well for it and they did it all voluntarily." Or something like this is what they will say. I have heard it before. But, let me give the other side of that story.

Yes, we kids, from early age, sold our bodies. We became drug addicts. We got lots and lots of money from these people. But today we are ruined because of that. And we were turned into sex perverts and drug addicts by these people. In my particular case, just like a lot of other young boys, I was directly turned into a true drug addict by Alan Baer. He was the one who first taught me to mainline and who first directly injected heroin directly into my veins-same as he did to a lot of other boys. He was the one who made me a prisoner of drug addiction to where he could completely control me and use me to deliver drugs or deliver sex or anything else. Sure, he paid me well, but he also destroyed me in the process. It was Alan Baer who first injected me with a "speed ball", for example. A speed ball is a heroin/cocaine mix that zips you up immediately but brings you down mellow. And it was Marc Delman, my attorney arranged for me by others who claimed lowed him more than $500,000.00 for work he did protecting me, when what he really was doing was having me lie to protect others.

But to those who really want the truth it really is all there for you to find out if you will only check on the things that are available. And the truth is the truth whether it is told by us street kids whom you may not want to believe or the richest and most powerful people in Omaha who you think you have to believe. Same with a lie.

So, here are some things that any honest investigator can check out to see who is lying and who is telling the truth.

I. Marc Delman wrote my script for the [TV] program 48 *Hours* wherein I claimed that the entire story of myself and the other kids was a "hoax." He promised me ten or fifteen

thousand [dollars] for this. I got virtually nothing. 48 *Hours* told me that they had "paid my attorney." There should be records on this. I think Marc got about $10,500.00 for doing that. And as everyone knows, the 48 *Hours* program was played on television just before the Alisha Owen jury began their deliberations. Marc Delman also claimed that I had not met with Senator Schmit to tell the truth and I followed his instructions in denying it also. This sure can be checked out. There were people who saw me with Schmit. Same with my contact with Senator Labedz.

II. I saw the picture the F.B.I. had of me and Alan Baer. Some official sure ought to be able to get this picture to prove who is lying-me or the F.B.I.

III. Lots of kids, other than myself and Alisha and the ones who tried to come forward and tell the truth, know about Alan Baer, Larry King and the major drug dealing activity they and other prominent people were involved in. But, as long as they are scared for their lives because of what happened to Alisha and me, they are not going to say anything. If an honest prosecutor would step in and offer immunity and protection to these kids, many of them young men and women now, I am sure the entire network of drug dealing, use of kids for sex, and related things could be proven and corroborated to everybody's satisfaction.

IV. But, maybe the most important thing that any honest investigator should do is to ask me, Troy Boner, or any of the other kids such as Alisha or Paul Bonacci, to take polygraph, lie detector, tests *side by side on the same questions with the people we are accusing of these things.* Example, ask Alan Baer if he shot mainline drugs into me and if he is a major drug dealer and if he had sex with me. Ask Eugene Mahoney if he met me at the book store in Council Bluffs and used to regularly pay me to have sex with him as a boy? Ask [...] to take a polygraph test on whether he is a big-time drug dealer. Ask the F.B.I. guys to take a polygraph test on whether they threatened me with jail if I did not say the things they wanted me to say which things were a lie. Ask Marc Delman about the 48 *Hours* thing and the Schmit meeting.

Obviously, either us kids are lying or the rich prominent people are lying. And just because they are rich and prominent does not mean they are telling the truth or because we are thought of as scum and kids who were supposedly all willingly involved in the drug trafficking and sexual activity does not mean we are lying. And like it or not, if we are not worth protecting then other young kids now and in the future will not be worth protecting either; and the prominent and respectable citizens who took us as children and made us a part of this drug dealing and sex abuse activity will continue without fear to do the same. Maybe to your children next time.

I promised my mother and myself after my lying at Alisha Owen's trial caused her to get convicted that if I ever got the chance to straighten things out I would come forward and do it and set the record straight. I owe it to my brother Shawn.

A couple months ago I met investigators from a British Television Broadcasting Company. They convinced me that they honestly wanted to tell the true story no matter what that story was.

I believed after talking with them that my and my family's safety lies in telling everything particularly to press sources outside Nebraska and not controlled by Nebraskans. I have done this in many hours of tapes with them. They have checked on many of the matters I told them about-not dealt with in this affidavit- and have satisfied themselves that I am telling the truth about my lying to the Grand Jury and to convict Alisha Owen and the reasons why I had to lie, just as I have explained in this affidavit. The reason I mention this is simply to establish that eliminating me or any member of my family will do nothing to suppress the information or keep me from reporting it because I have already done so in many hours of tapes which have been taken outside this country but which will be made available to Federal Authorities and legitimate investigators here and in Washington, D.C.

But right now, I need protection for myself and my family so that I can tell the truth totally and without fear of being punished or jailed for doing it. That is the purpose of this affidavit. To help Mr. De Camp in filing the proper papers to

seek that protection. Mr. De Camp has discussed with me the fact that someone may attempt to file perjury charges against me for taking this action at this time. I understand that. I want to repeat one final thing: I told the truth to Gary Caradori. I tried to tell the truth to the F.B.I. and Marc Delman but they did not want to hear the truth and the only thing they wanted was to have me say the truth was in fact a hoax; and they scared me with threats of jail and other things into lying to the Grand Jury and then later into lying for them at the Alisha Owen Trial. I want to tell the truth without fear and to help other kids who are and were in the same situation as I am and was. That is the reason I am doing this.

STATE OF NEBRASKA
COUNTY OF DOUGLAS

Before me a Notary Public on this 27 day of October, 1993, personally appeared Troy Boner, to me personally known, who executed the above affidavit, affirmed the truthfulness of the statements made therein, affirmed that he was voluntarily and willingly signing the affidavit and doing it for the purposes stated therein.

Troy O. Boner

Dated and signed this 27 day of October 1993 by Notary Public Maryann Versaw, State of Nebraska

• • •

In Chapter 17, "So the Truth Would Never Come Out," the last chapter of the first edition of this book, I charged that "in the case of Larry King and the cadre of people he dealt with closely, boys and girls like Paul Bonacci, Troy Boner, Danny King, and Alisha Owen were used as drug couriers for a national program of illegal narcotics marketing. They were 'throw-away kids.' Because they were teenagers and younger when they were doing this activity, they provided a perfect insulation

blanket between the real drug czars, like Larry King or Alan Baer, and the law."

In August 1996, events were to provide dramatic new evidence about this "national program of illegal narcotics marketing."

CHAPTER 21

DRUGS AND THE MONARCH PROJECT

On August 18-20, 1996, a California newspaper, the *San Jose Mercury,* published a series of articles implicating elements of the U.S. government in running tons of cocaine into U.S. cities during the 1980s. Based upon recently declassified government documents, eyewitness reports, and court records, *Mercury* reporter Gary Webb provided a detailed account of how the Contras financed their war against the Sandinista regime of Nicaragua by flying tons of cocaine into the West Coast, where it would be turned into the deadly, instantly addictive "crack," and sold to such street gangs as the Cryps and the Bloods.

All of this began after the U.S. Congress in the early 1980s passed the Boland Amendment, which stopped all official financing for U.S. intelligence's "covert war" in Nicaragua. The whole project was taken "off-line," and financed by drug sales-the subject of Webb's articles.

Indignation exploded when the *Mercury* series hit the streets. Maxine Waters, Congresswoman for South-Central Los Angeles, one of the areas hardest hit by crack and drug-related violence, sent a letter to Central Intelligence Agency chief John Deutsch demanding an investigation of the Agency, in which she said, someone who has seen how the crack cocaine trade has devastated the South-Central Los Angeles community, I cannot exaggerate my feelings of dismay that my own government may have played a part in the origins and history of this problem. . . . The impact and the implications of the Meneses/BlandonlRoiss Contra CIA crack cocaine connection

cannot be understated. We all have an obligation to get to the very bottom of the origin, development, and implementation of this seedy enterprise."

While many were shocked at the news of apparent U.S. government drug-pushing, to me it was one more confirmation of a key aspect of the Franklin case. As I had discovered early on (as had Gary Caradori), the sexual abuse of children was only one of the Franklin story. During the 1980s, many of the children, such as Alisha Owen and Paul Bonacci, said that they had been used as drug couriers to bring cocaine in from the West Coast for Alan Baer, Larry King, and others.

Then, on September **11,** 1996, in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, Representative Harold James, chairman of Pennsylvania's Legislative Black Caucus, and a former undercover narcotics cop himself, also put out a call for an investigation. **In** the course of that press conference another name popped up, that I knew well from the Franklin investigation: George Bush.

Flanked by political leaders of both the city and the state, James declared: "As a retired undercover Philadelphia police officer who worked on narcotics cases, I know we can better impact the flow of drugs if we stop drugs from coming into this country, arrest those at the top levels of control, and punish the white-collar dealers who try to keep their hands clean while they run the entire operation. On this occasion, we must not allow anyone to use the pretext of national security to accomplish another cover-up. We need an investigation that goes right to the top."

As to where the "top" might be, James charged, in his release to the press, "previous investigations of the Iran-Contra scandal, particularly the U.S. House and Senate joint hearings in 1987, revealed the central role played by then Vice-President George Bush in covert intelligence operations .... One of Bush's key lieutenants was Oliver North. Bush was also appointed by Reagan to run the National Narcotics Border Interdiction System, which supposedly coordinated efforts of all federal, state and local anti-drug agencies, especially along the south Florida coast. Bush was responsible for the White House anti-drug

effort while, at the same time, according to the recent newspaper reports, tons of cocaine were allegedly supplied to street gangs by CIA-related networks."

Concluded James, "There's something wrong with this picture." In response to a question from one of the ten reporters in attendance about the role of Bush, Philadelphia City Council President John Street replied, "If George Bush is involved in it, someone should find it out. This kind of activity has been going on for well over a decade."

Lt. Col. Oliver North-whom at least one witness reported seeing at a party thrown by Larry King-had overseen the Contra resupply effort, and had been fully aware of the planeloads of drugs coming into the United States. A U.S. Senate subcommittee report under Massachusetts Senator John Kerry cited extensive evidence that the Contras were involved in drugs, and North had noted the fact in his publicly exposed notebooks.

From what I know from my own corner of the world, there is excellent reason to investigate Bush for possible involvement in the dope business. Think back to what I reported in Chapter 13, "The Washington Connection," about how George Bush and Larry King were linked in multiple ways, including eyewitness reports placing Bush at King's sex parties. Think about the constant rumors that King was financing the Contras, who have now been proved to have been running dope by the ton.

The first investigative reporter to ever look at Franklin, the *World Herald's* James Flanery, told associates that King was "running guns and money into Nicaragua," and that the CIA was heavily involved. (Flanery was soon taken off the story and shipped out of state for a year.)

Records exist to show that Larry King was a top contributor to a Contra "support committee," the Citizens for America (CFA). King's own public relations firm was also used by the Contras.

I became convinced early on that King was deeply involved with the Contras. I am reminded of the phone call State Senator Loran Schmit received on the Senate floor as the Franklin case was just beginning to break. The caller warned him off the

case, because "it would lead to the highest levels of the Republican party." I am reminded of when Larry King was finally arrested-just as he was about to go to a breakfast party in Omaha for his buddy, George Bush! I am reminded of the reports I used to hear that certain people in Omaha were charging that Omaha Police Chief Bob Wadman was protecting the expansion of the Cryps and Bloods into Omaha-far from their home turf of Los Angeles.

So, was Larry King's buddy George Bush the country's "drug kingpin" in the 1980s? I don't know. But what I *do* know, is that if Bush *were* running the Contra affair, and drugs were a big part of it, that would certainly jibe 100% with everything known or rumored about Bush, Larry King, and the Franklin Credit Union. Congresswoman Maxine Waters and Representative Harold James are right-let's investigate!

• • •

As follow-up investigation from the Franklin case shows, drugs are not the deepest level of government-sponsored evil. I think the lowest level of Hell is reserved for those who conjured up and carried out the "Monarch Project."

"Monarch" refers to young people in America who were victims of mind control experiments run either by U.S. government agencies such as the Central Intelligence Agency, or military intelligence agencies.

The story told by Monarch victims-one of whom is Paul Bonacci-is that they were tortured *for the purpose of creating "multiple personalities" within them.* These multiple personalities could then be programmed as desired-as spies, "drug mules," prostitutes, or assassins.

Because of legal cases still pending, I am severely limited in what I can say about the Monarch Project. Suffice it to say at this point:

Major intelligence programs in this country did and do exist for the purpose of protection of this country and to learn what other countries, particularly our Cold War enemies, were doing in this area of mind control.

I asked Bill Colby to tell me what he could or would, about this. He said:

"Of course the CIA in particular was involved in investigating, learning and, on occasion, using, everything we could learn about mind control-and with extremely good reason. Following the Korean War, this country's military and intelligence communities went through a period of absolute paranoia about just how far our enemies were ahead of us in mind control and related activities.

"There was no particular program called 'Monarch,' contrary to what you want to think. 'Monarch' was merely a name that some participants in the program-who knew very little about it, other than from their own limited participation-were given to identify themselves. But, as far as the CIA was concerned, there was no such program named 'Monarch.'

"But, with respect to mind control, I will tell you that this country spent millions upon millions supposedly catching up to our Cold War adversaries, because we believed they had developed mind control technology which exceeded anything we had. In fact, we at the Company [CIA] truly believed for a substantial period of time, that technology and techniques and drugs had been developed by Russia which would enable them to have agents who in fact really were able to have and use ESP-extra sensory perception.

you imagine," Bill continued, "how dangerous for this country it would be if you could have had someone meeting the President of the United States, who was actually able to read what was in the President's mind?

"I know," Bill continued, "it may sound silly today to get all carried away with this fear; but I can tell you that we took it all very seriously and believed this ESP thing for some significant time period.

"I will tell you one other thing," Bill said, somewhat ominously, "we are not behind in knowledge of mind control. In fact, we never were, but we only found that out much later, after we had poured incredible resources into this area. And yes, I am sure, there were some problems and abuses that occurred and we will talk about them at another time."

We did have that other talk. And, I intend, when I am freed from court restrictions, to tell that entire story in an upcoming book. I have deposited extensive documentation on the Monarch Project with people who have the means, the motivation, and, most importantly, the guts, to print the entire story, should I suffer an "accident" before I get around to it. Here, I will merely quote from the work of one of America's finest investigative reporters, Anton Chaitkin.

I had known of Chaitkin, who writes for *Executive Intelligence Review* magazine, from the book he co-authored with Webster Tarpley, *George Bush: The Unauthorized Biography*. This 659-page-book is a devastating expose of Bush, and it played a notable role in helping to shape the 1992 presidential campaign, which Bush happily lost.

Perhaps it was because the name "Bush" was all over the Franklin scandal, that Chaitkin showed up one day in my Lincoln law office. I told him, "Look, I know you have been in some tough spots before, but are you really sure you want to poke around in this? This question of 'mind control'-the Monarch Project-is the most scary and dangerous thing I have ever encountered." As I came to know Anton, probably all that little lecture did was to spur him on. Chaitkin got his story on the Monarch Project, and printed it in the December 13, 1993, *New Federalist* newspaper under the headline, "Franklin Case Witnesses Implicate FBI and U.S. Elites in Child-Torture and Murder." Here follows an abbreviated version of that article:

• • •

WHAT IS THE FBI PROTECTING?

Since the 1992 publication of John DeCamp's book, *The Franklin Cover-Up*, Paul Bonacci has filed new affidavits and has given extensive interviews to investigators including reporters for *Executive Intelligence Review* and *New Federalist*. Bonacci's disclosures have been cross-gridded with evidence sup-

plied by authorities in law enforcement, psychiatry, and the intelligence community. The result goes a long way to explain the high stakes involved, and the frantic nature of the Franklin cover-up....

Paul Bonacci has described in detail being dragged to Washington for use as a sex toy for Larry King's clients. Bonacci told investigators he was in one of the private White House tours for young male prostitutes conducted by lobbyist Craig Spence, a close political associate of Larry King in the cloak-and-dagger Contras enterprise. Spence turned up dead in a Boston hotel room in 1989, soon after his and King's "compromising" business was exposed in a *Washington Times* June 29, 1989 story, headlined: "Homosexual Prostitution Inquiry Ensnares VIPs with Reagan, Bush."

'MONARCH,' OR, AUSCHWITZ-TAKE 2

From very early childhood, Paul Bonacci was subjected to tortures as profound as any the Nazis inflicted on their captives. This is not merely a comparison; rather it is an actual continuation, as we shall see. From sexual degradation, from witnessing and forced participation in Satanic cult murders, Bonacci suffered the cracking of his mind into what is called "multiple personality disorder" (MPD). Tens of thousands of American children have been diagnosed MPDs; virtually all of them are thought to have resulted from sexual abuse, of which perhaps 85 percent were cases of Satanic *ritual* abuse.

Psychiatric professionals specified in Paul Bonacci's legal proceedings that through it all, Paul's different "personalities" have emerged incapable of lying, with an ultra-sharp memory.

In one instance detailed in *The Franklin Cover-Up,* Paul was taken by Larry King and others to a wooded area in California-identified after publication as the Bohemian Grove. There Paul and another boy were forced to do sex acts with and to consume parts of a child whom they had watched being

murdered by the cultists. The body was to be disposed of by "the men with the hoods." A "snuff' pornography film was made of these events; it was directed by a man the party had picked up in Las Vegas whom Paul identified as "Hunter Thompson"-the same name as a well known sleaze-culture figure.

Paul has told investigators that the ring which plunged him into Satanism was centered at Offutt U.S. Air Force Base near Omaha; that he was taken to Offutt to be sexually victimized by a babysitter's boyfriend when he was about three years old, around 1970. Offutt is the headquarters for the Strategic Air Command, and has had a cadre of thousands of intelligence personnel.

At Offutt, and later at other military installations, Paul says this ring "trained" him by tortures, heavy drugging, and sexual degradation, while instructing him in military arts including assassination. In fact, his personal knowledge in these realms can scarcely be accounted for other than by crediting the indictments he has made.

Larry King, FBI agent Gerry Wahl, Alan Baer, Harold Andersen, and former Omaha Police Chief Robert Wadman have all been reported as collaborators with this Satanic military-based ring. King reportedly told Paul's captors at Offutt, "He's young-but you trained him good." A member of Nebraska's Concerned Parents group reported hearing from two North Omaha witnesses that "King used to send limousines down to Offutt Air Base to pick up CIA agents for parties." Larry King reported his own adoring relationship to the late CIA Director William Casey in a Sept. 7, 1988, interview in the Omaha publication *Metropolitan.*

Psychiatrists who have treated a growing number of MPD cases, victims of Satanic ritual abuse, report an alarming pattern of findings in many of their child patients. There is a *structure* to the personalities, conforming to what is evidently a deliberate breaking and reshaping of the mind. This phenomenon was identified to Paul Bonacci by his tormenters, and to other victims and witnesses, as the "Monarch" project. At Offutt Airbase,

Paul was told that what he and other children were being subjected to was in aid of national security.

The use of mind-altering drugs, sensory deprivation, and other brainwashing techniques on U.S. citizens as subjects was the admitted practice of the CIA, certain military arms and private institutions joined in the MK-ULTRA, Artichoke, and Bluebird projects beginning in the early 1950s. A national security pretext often cited was the need to keep up with the Soviets in the race to develop a workable Manchurian Candidate human robot. With the "Monarch" (or whatever official title may be attached to it) project, the idea is extended to the production of a horde of children in whom the soul is crushed, who would spy, whore, kill, and commit suicide.

The material presented here, on this subject, must be understood to be only a bare introduction to a complex story with immense political and strategic ramifications. It is a beginning.

Professionals probing the child victims of "Monarch" say there are clearly two responsible elements at work: the government/military, and cooperating Satanic (or more exactly pagan) cults. These are multi-generation groups, where parents donate their own children-who are proudly called "bloodline" or simply "blood" cultists-to be smashed with drugs and electric shock, and shaped. Other children are kidnapped and sold into this hell, or are brought in gradually through day-care situations.

Paul Bonacci and other child victims have given evidence in great depth on the central role of Lt. Col. Michael Aquino in this depravity. Aquino, alleged to have recently retired from an active military role, was long the leader of an Army psychological warfare section which drew on his "expertise" and personal practices in brainwashing, Satanism, Nazism, homosexual pedophilia and murder.

A former director of the CIA was asked directly, "what about 'Monarch' "? He replied angrily, and ambiguously, "We stopped that between the late 1960s and the early 1970s." If a statement of fact, this would presumably relate to official participation of the CIA.

SOME CODES AND ASSIGNMENTS

The disclosures of Paul Bonacci, which cohere with reports of MPD professionals in other cases, point to a particular artificially induced mental structure as common to many victimized children. Space permits only the briefest treatment of this here; this is intended mainly to begin to "blow the circuits," so to speak, when followed up by professional therapists and investigators.

These are some of the widely occurring separate "persons" which have been formed under torture, and the corresponding "triggers":

• General personality-accessible under the code name ALPHA, with possible Alpha-DOl, Alpha-009, etc. "persons" with distinct task orientations.

• Sex programs, accessible through code name BETA; particular programs (and thus commands) are for pornography, acting, oral sex, etc.

• Assassination programs, utilizing very specific modes, and espionage, accessible through code DELTA.

• OMEGA, self-destruction programs, ranging from self-mutilation to suicide by many different specific possible acts.

• GAMMA, system deception, amnesia and disinformation programs. Under this or other codes are track-covering false origins for the structure, giving the child memories of tormenters dressed as space aliens or Mickey Mouse or in Wizard of Oz costumes.

There are said to be such other personality levels as Master Programmer, Black Master, and different mental levels of *backup* programs. There are reported to be personnel who have large numbers of child-victims' assignments and triggers neatly filed in their little computers.

Paul Bonacci reports the following "Monarch"-related activities, often involving his "Commander" at Offutt AFB, Bill Plemmons, and Lt. Col. Michael Aquino:

• Picking up cash in exchange for drugs at various Tennessee

locations. Bonacci identifies several country music personalities as contacts.

• Trips on behalf of the North American Man-Boy Love Association (NAMBLA), the pedophile group now given semi-official status by the United Nations. Paul cites travel to the Netherlands and Germany carrying child pornography for subsequent "import" to the U.S.A. to avoid prosecution. In Amsterdam, he names "Charles Hester," and the British "Tommie Carter," who had on computer a global list of child pornography users. NAMBLA is also cited for organizing auctions of children.

• Travel to Hawaii, New York, Washington (in connection with Craig Spence) to compromise public figures by performing homosexual pedophile sex with them.

• The trip to California where the boy was ritually murdered, accompanied by "Monarch" contact, Mark Johnson of Denver, Colorado,

• Travel to Mexico for the transportation of drugs, guns, and children. Paul was accompanied by the gangster-figure "Emilio," who otherwise directed the kidnapping of Johnny Gosch of Des Moines, Iowa. Johnny Gosch's parents commend Paul Bonacci as an accurate witness relative to that crime.

• Training under "Captain Foster" (survival skills) at Fort Riley, Kansas, under "Lt. Dave Bannister" (intelligence) at Fort Bragg, North Carolina, under "Col. Harris Livik" at Fort Defiance, Virginia, who is said to run a military school and to have housed "Monarch" boys. "Col. Bill Risher" of Bamberg, South Carolina, is said to have supplied children for Michael Aquino.

• Travel to Dresden in communist East Germany, where weapons were inspected. There and in the Federal Republic of Germany, the "Monarch" personnel were frequently neo-Nazis. This milieu is a special project of Lt. Col. Aquino, who was a West European adviser to the U.S. Chiefs of Staff. Paul Bonacci has extensive experience in the Aryan Nation and other White Supremacist cults.

An account of the origin of the "Monarch" project has been compiled by those who have been debriefing MPD child-vic-

tims. Nazi experimentation in World War II concentration camps were said to have gone beyond simply insane physical tortures. They brainwashed people, for military and strategic purposes. After the war, Allen Dulles and other Western intelligence people brought Nazi doctors out for use in the United States. A teenaged concentration camp inmate named Greenbaum, who had participated to save himself, also came to the United States. Known later as "Dr. Green," he became a high-level brainwasher, and is widely represented in brainwashing programs with a distinctive Cabalistic magic theme.

The precise details of these horrors lie deeply buried in national security archives. But this history, as told to psychiatrists, dovetails with what is definitively known about Anglo-American intelligence operations and the German Nazis. And once again, the story goes right back to Nebraska.

The killers in the Nazi camps were themselves trained and organized by psychiatrists and eugenicists, operating from the "T4" bureau. These psychiatrists had long been the pets of white supremacist British and American financier networks.

At least some of these Nazi doctors were spirited out of Germany under the supervision of former Bank of England Governor Montagu Norman and Tavistock Institute Director John R. Rees on behalf of the British government. Norman, personally an insane Theosophist who had been chief of the prewar pro-Nazi faction within England, and Rees organized postwar propaganda and continuing psychological warfare activities, and created "Orwellian" groupings within U.S. psychiatry and mental health fields.

CHAPTER 22

FROM MONTANA TO OKLAHOMA CITY

Within hours after the bomb-or bombs-exploded in front of the Federal Building in Oklahoma City, on April 19, 1995, FBI agents were in my office in Lincoln, Nebraska, seeking my assistance to identify the bombers.

Why would the FBI come to Lincoln, Nebraska, to see a lawyer named John DeCamp on a bombing in Oklahoma?

Just weeks before, I had successfully represented the leadership and members of a group identifying itself as the Militia of Montana (MOM), in one of the strangest cases in which I had ever been involved.

It was through reading the first edition of *The Franklin Cover-Up,* that the Militia of Montana got my name and sought my assistance. Until they called me in early 1995, I had not even known that militias existed in this country nor, of course, that these "militias" were being closely watched by the FBI and Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms (ATF) and being viewed as a national security danger.

The Militia of Montana contacted me in a state of terror after their leaders and leaders of another group identifying themselves as "The Freemen," were physically assaulted, seized, and arrested in the town of Roundup, Montana, in early January 1995. I was shocked, as I listened to the story of their arrest, imprisonment and physical abuse by public officials.

Why? Because these men were arrested and tortured, put under bond requirements in the range of hundreds of thousands of dollars, charged with the crime of *sedition* with mandatory

10- and 20-year prison terms, and were about to go to trial. My question was, "For what?!" It quickly evolved that their "crime" was that they had met with individuals like themselves-not for any actual violation of the law.

As I investigated, and learned just how unconstitutional these arrests were, I agreed to take their case-even though I did not necessarily support, or even know, their beliefs or philosophy.

Why did I do this?

I have always been a zealous defender of the First Amendment-Freedom of Speech, Press, Assembly. This Militia of Montana case convinced me that irrespective of what I personally thought about the beliefs of the MOM Leaders or the Freemen, these individuals had done nothing wrong, but were classic victims of improper government arrest, harassment, and abuse. As the case went on, I became very assertive on behalf of these men, angered by what had happened-and was still happening-under color of law.

Soon, the major media focused attention on the case, telling wild lies about the facts of the incident surrounding the arrests. In February and March and April of 1995, talk shows repeatedly requested me to explain the true story, which I did. Meanwhile, militia groups from across the United States began marshaling to come to Montana, and to deal with the imprisonment of the MOM and Freemen in some fashion outside the court room; this caused me grave concern.

The Attorney General of Montana became involved in the case, along with federal officials at various levels, who feverishly worked to create a case to justify the imprisonment and abuse of these men.

As the deadline approached for determining whether there was to be a full scale trial to attempt to permanently lock these men up, I, acting as their attorney, gave a written ultimatum to the Attorney General and to the Governor of Montana.

I reprint it here, just as I delivered it to the Attorney General, the Governor, and to the Montana State Legislature:

• • •

Memorandum from:
JOHN W. DECAMP, *ATTY/"MONTANA* SEVEN"

To: John ConnorlMontana Atty. Gen'l office
Helena, Montana
Copies to: Montana *SenatelHouse/Govemor*
Re: Montana Seven case
Request for dismissal of charges
Offer of Settlement on probable civil rights case

Dear John:

As I have promised, I have investigated thoroughly the situation on these charges and would like to make the following request:

I would respectfully request that all charges of any nature filed against my clients be dismissed as soon as possible and that any and all personal property of my clients still held be returned. I would also, on their behalf, make the following offer to resolve in advance any civil rights litigation that my clients may initiate against the entities involved in the episode of arrest, incarceration, charges, that occurred:

If the State would make a public apology to them, explain to the public the real truth on what occurred and why it occurred, insure the dismissal of the two MusselShell County deputies involved, and pay the sum of $1.00 (One Dollar) to my clients, they would waive their civil rights case that we believe they absolutely have against the various entities and personalities involved in this most interesting story.

Having said these things, John, let me present to you first the results of *our/my investigation* as well as some surprising offers and requests that I doubt any defendants have ever offered in Montana-or maybe anywhere else, for that matter.

SITUATION:

IIWe believe the episode culminating in the arrest and filing of charges against the "Montana Seven" *began with:* (1) A *Con Job* by a long-time repeat offender, (Call him John Doe),

who was arrested and incarcerated again on or about late Feb. *1995 for serious spousal abuse.* John Doe had become obsessed with a jealous rage and anger because he believed that a certain individual, one of the Montana Seven and a so-called *Freeman* had a "Relationship" with his wife that he did not sanction while he, John Doe, was previously incarcerated.

John Doe also knew that the charges he was facing were very grave. More important, John Doe knew that the MusselShell Sheriff's office (particularly Deputy Buzz Jones) was himself obsessed with concerns and fears and hatreds of the *Freeman* and/or *the Montana Militia.*

John Doe solved his incarceration problem by spinning a tale for Deputy Jones-and later others-to the effect that the Freemen were on the verge of kidnapping and hanging public officials, particularly a Judge, as well as robbing banks and doing any sort of other dastardly deed that John Doe could spin a tale about and which MusselShell officials were ready to lap up without proper investigation or analysis. Naturally, John Doe identified his former friend, one of the Montana Seven and a Freeman, as one who was to be involved in this tale of terror-and described well his truck, items in it, etc.-including a pile of money, gold and guns to watch out for. And thus, with one fantastic-though fantasy-tale, John Doe solved his incarceration problem and his jealousy problem, we believe the evidence will clearly show and which we believe the state is now aware of.

And, with fears being driven by the Con Job of John Doe on certain public officials, on Feb. 27, 1995, warnings were issued from Federal and Other officials that armageddon was about to descend upon poor little Roundup from an invasion of the Freemen or Montana Militia, or whoever.

FICKLE FI NGER OF FATE:

Next, enter the fickle finger of fate-and, of course, paranoia and probably incompetence on the part of the local officials of MusselShell County, Montana. *And this drama unfolds.*

Seven individuals-some who did not even know or had never even met each other before, and comprised of individuals some of whom were members of the Montana Militia and others who were members of the Freemen-all ended up in Roundup at *about the same time,* but for different reasons.

Defendant Dale Martin Jacobi of Thompson Falls, a businessman who just sold his business and has the cash from the sale and other property-guns from his home since he is moving them; equipment from his business electrical/plbg/htng business-rides into Roundup in his 1 ton 83 Chevy right after using part of his business sale proceeds to buy some gold coins in Billings.

Accompanying Jacobi was his friend and, because Jacobi was carrying his stash of loot from sale of his business, *bodyguard, Frank Eugene Ellena of Billings.*

Frank had borrowed a two way business network radio-completely legal, licensed, etc.-from another "Desperado" who ended up a member of the Montana Seven, namely, *businessman* Amando Gerry Lopez of Rexford. Lopez, also a Freeman, used the equipment in his business and allowed Frank to have the radio because Frank wanted to have access to assistance because he and Jacobi were carrying the cash mentioned above. Frank also had to file some "Trust Papers" in the courthouse in Roundup for some property Frank had bought in the county.

Meanwhile, John Trochman, *not a Freeman, but founder of the Montana Militia,* had come to the area to *meet with F.B.I. officials whom he works with,* and to allay any concerns or disagreements or mis-understandings between representatives of the Freemen Group and the Montana Militia.

Now comes Paul D. Stramer, Eureka, along with his friend, Cajun James, a disabled vet out of Eureka, whose gun-toting, buckskins-wearing, foot-long beard and super-long hair appearance would make the average person look and probably think twice about messing with him. *But, until now, appearance* is *not a felony.*

Stramer wants to set up a statewide radio network for the Patriotic groups (Militia and/or Freemen) and is seeking finan-

cial assistance from the arch-enemy of the local officials, namely a Mr. Leroy Switzer. And Cajun James, a *legally licensed gun salesman,* has been given an order for purchase of weapons (single shot, I might add) from Mr. Switzer also.

Mr. Switzer utilizes a CMO for his purchases (Certified Money Order) which he believes has value but which there seems to be considerable disagremeent on as to how much value it has in the overall financial community-but *that is not an issue in the arrest of these individuals, merely an interesting sidebar.*

On Friday, March 3, 1995, the Fickle Finger of Fate caused Deputy Buzz Jones to arrest, rather violently and without sound reason, Mr. Jacobi and Mr. Ellena in Roundup and to search their vehicle.

Deputy Jones found just what his *con informant had* told him he might find *gold, hordes of cash, guns, radio equipment, and two individuals who belonged to the militant groups he, Deputy Jones hated. Deputy Jones apparently believed he was on the verge of stopping an invasion, kidnapping, murder and worse. And, under those circumstances, why not rough up the individuals you have arrested?* Why not scream obscenities at them and threaten them and tell them that those f--- Freemen are not going to take over his town. And Deputy Jones did that ... and a lot more.

But, unknown to Deputy Jones, watching from a short distance was one of the other Freemen who then contacted the other individuals named here and said they should check on what was going on. Besides, as *Lopez said,* "They got my radio and I need it for my business and I can't afford another one. They cost $500.00 and I am going to go to the Sheriff and see if they will give it back to me."

COMEDY TURNS TO SERIOUS TRAGEDY

So, in two separate vehicles, the other individuals named drive over to the Sheriffs office to check on their friends and to ask for the return of Mr. Lopez's radio.

The tale gets controversial and tragic here. *A couple of the defendants go into the sheriff's office to seek return of the Lopez radio and the others wait in their car properly parked in front of the sheriff's office. None of the Montana Seven defendants does anything improper or illegal. All are polite.*

But, suddenly, with lightning speed and led by Deputy Jones, the officials assault these individuals. They believe, apparently driven by paranoia, they have a right to capture. Again, led by Deputy Jones, the Montana Seven are trussed up like hogs; handcuffed with their hands behind their backs; forced to lie for six hours in pain on concrete trussed up and handcuffed. They abuse them in a variety of other ways, threaten them with loaded shotguns in their backs and chests, break out car windows, question them in violation of all legal and proper police standards; charge them with felonies of every ilk and description and fabricate allegations to support their charges and their actions. The officials lie to the relatives and friends calling in to the sheriff's office and repeatedly deny that the Montana Seven are even at the jail or have been arrested.

And these things recited here are *the nicest things the local officials do.*

THEN SA NITY STARTS TO RETURN

Believing they have captured the seven most dangerous men in America, the local sheriff and his cohorts bring in the Feds.

The Feds figure *out-we believe-that* they are in the midst of a comedy of errors and misunderstandings and after questioning the *Montana Seven, quickly get out of any further involvement in the matters pending* and return everything to local officials. We believe they, the Feds, are the ones who alerted the Attorney General of Montana of the need for some proper law enforcement involvement *... but we do not know.*

Next, the Attorney General of Montana gets involved, a man named John Connor, and over the next few days sanity and proper law enforcement procedures begin to replace keystone

kops and police brutality. Hundred Thousand Dollar Bonds are reduced to ten thousand dollar bond and communication is established between the attorney for the Montana Seven, myself, and the A.G.'s office.

Of course, before sanity begins returning, politicians (and I sure understand this) leap on the bandwagon and proclaim the evils of the terrorists and how the state must not be a victim of such terrorists; the media hypes the story-without benefit of accurate facts or any responsible investigative reporting and-the families and businesses of the Montana Seven are horribly damaged. And, the local law enforcement officials who prompted the comedy, "leak" one sordid and wild tale after another to the media as to what "really" occurred.

It is time now, *John,* to tether ourselves to reality instead of to *Rambo and resolve this case.* And that is what I am offering to do with this letter.

As a sample of how far reality and what was being perceived as reality were separated, let me provide you some of the evidence grabbed which was supposed to support a charge (remember the claims in the media being supported by "leaks" from Local Officials, particularly Deputy Jones) of *counterfeiting.*

Attached is the $3.00 bill which was the *basis for the claim.*

You might note, John, that if *this is counterfeiting, then every novelty store, gift shop and curio shop in America is in the business of counterfeiting and marketing counterfeit money.*

Yet, John, this was probably *the closest to reason of any of the charges* against the individuals.

As a final offer to get this settled and in the best interest of *getting some accurate information to all Montanans, my clients would like to make the following offer:*

Each of my clients would undergo a polygraph test on any material question relating to these charges against them or the events and incidents surrounding this. They would want you to bring in the best polygraph expert(s) in the country. They would agree in advance that *any results of the testing for any and all of them,* no matter whether it showed positive or negative for them, *would be admissible in court, civil or criminal.*

There would be only one condition: That is, they insist the two Deputies and local officials in Musselshell County *also be subject to the same terms and conditions.* That is, polygraph examination on the *material facts surrounding* the arrest, incarceration, filing of charges, *police brutality,* etc.

Finally, for the benefit of all Montanans, *they agree in advance that any representatives of the press would be allowed to be present at the polygraph examination and submit any questions they might have about the events.*

Why all this?

So much injury and damage has been done and so much disinformation has been put out that it is in the best interest of everybody, including particularly the Montana Seven, that the truth get out. And it is in the best interests of everybody, that Law Enforcement be held to the same standards of truth and responsibility they expect of the citizens.

Again, I would repeat my offer as outlined in the beginning of this letter; and with these additional incentives I have just mentioned, polygraph, willingness to answer any questions for the press, it seems it would be beneficial for everyone to get these matters resolved, sanity restored and the situation *de-escalated.*

Awaiting your reply I remain,
Respectfully,

John W. DeCamp,
Attorney for the Montana Seven

[All emphasis in original.]

• • •

The official response of the Attorney General of Montana to my ultimatum, was to say that the state of Montana was proceeding with the trial on charges of criminal syndicalism (sedition). The Deputy Attorney General John Connor, a fine individual who had to do whatever the Governor and Attorney General told him to, informed the press that my ultimatum would be ignored.

The Governor also stoked the rumor mills by, first, creating a strawman called "the Militia." He put forward the bogus story that the MOM had planned to assault the Sheriff's office and the courthouse in Roundup, and hang the judges.

When the press told me what the Governor and the Attorney General were purporting, I replied, "This story is pure fantasy, an attempt by public officials to excuse their mistakes. I dare Montana and its officials to go to trial on these bogus charges, because Montana will lose, and its criminal syndicalism laws will be declared unconstitutional."

Then, in March 1995, at the last minute before my deadline for dismissal of the charges, the Attorney General's office swept into Roundup, dismissed all the charges, and informed the press that Montana officials were not responding to my demands, but were dismissing the charges because the Attorney General "needed more evidence" to prove his case.

My goal to free these men had been accomplished. For that 1 felt proud and satisfied. The case received much national attention-especially with law enforcement at both the state and the federal level, and I became somewhat of a legend among the patriot and militia movement.

At the height of the "Montana Seven" case, as it came to be known, I had been dealing directly with the Montana Governor's office, the Attorney General's office and officials in Washington, as well as with the national press, trying to prevent an outbreak of violence spawned by either the militias or by the government.

During February, and particularly in March and early April of 1995, rumors were flying through the entire Militia and Patriot community on almost an hourly basis, warning of imminent raids by federal officials against militia compounds. Nationwide, militias were circulating reports in all their fax, press and phone networks, that these raids were coming, and that the militia members had better be prepared.

The militias specified in their written and oral communications, the date of April 19, 1995, as the date of the impending onslaught.

Militia members had become convinced that a Federal Strike

Team composed of ATF and FBI. CIA and U.S. military was about to launch airborne and ground strikes against various militia headquarters, particularly against the Militia of Montana at Noxon, Montana. Militias across the country prepared to defend themselves against these attacks. All this intense activity-unknown by most Americans then, or now-was occurring in the first half of April 1995.

During that same period, I and others, such as former presidential candidate Bo Gritz, for example, spent hours each day trying to determine whether any such strikes were actually planned, or were just wild rumors. Federal officials advised us that no attacks were planned, information we relayed to militia leaders both in person and through talk shows on the patriot networks, working nonstop to defuse the extremely volatile situation.

This was the environment in the militia world, on the eve of April 19, 1995. Given my role in the midst of this, it was inevitable that the Feds showed up on my doorstep right after bombing.

CHAPTER 23

THE OKLAHOMA BOMBING-THE REAL STORY

Since the bomb-or bombs-ripped through the Oklahoma City Federal Building on April 19, 1995, I have received through fluke or fate, a huge amount of information about the bombing. Based on this, I will give here my best assessment of what actually happened-what Americans in future years will understand about the events in Oklahoma City.

As noted, my first involvement came when the F.E.I. sought my assistance, because of my successful representation of various militia groups across the United States.

Then, certain bombing victims asked me to file civil litigation against whomever caused their injuries. Some of these victims were in hospitals at the time, severely injured, and able to speak only through writing notes to others to deliver to me.

I immediately put together an investigative team to look at the event and to try to determine what had actually occurred. The head of that team was Ted Gunderson, the former Special Agent in Charge (SAC) of the FBI's Los Angeles field office, who had had 800 agents working under him, and with whom I had collaborated in the Franklin case. Ted and his team arrived in Oklahoma before the dust had even settled from the explosion.

Much later, after this initial work was completed, I became the attorney for a man named Hoppi Heidelberg, who was one of the federal grand jurors who had helped to indict Timothy McVeigh and Terry Nichols for the Oklahoma City bombing. Hoppi came to me because he believed the government planned to indict him for his work on the grand jury. It seems that

Heidelberg had read his instructions on his responsibility and authority as a member of a federal grand jury, and was determined to do his job. Hoppi Heidelberg is a true patriot.

Hoppi had come to the conclusion that the government was covering up facts, was refusing to deal properly with the grand jury, and was trying to narrow the case to Mr. McVeigh and Mr. Nichols. Hoppi has said on talk shows nationwide, that he believes that there is a "John Doe 2"-and probably 3 and 4- and that the government is refusing to share that information with the American people. Hoppi was in fact removed from the grand jury-after the indictments of McVeigh and Nichols.

I emphasize at this point that nothing I say here violates, in my opinion, any information I learned from grand juror Hoppi Heidelberg, either from the standpoint of violating federal grand jury laws or violating attorney client relationships. All information disclosed here, was obtained by me from my own separate investigations.

With respect to my own investigation of the bombing on behalf of injured victims, the following events raised serious questions in my mind in regards to the case:

1. Our investigation revealed that the so-called fertilizer bomb could not, by itself, have caused the destruction of the Federal Building, and in the manner described. Today, there are many theories, including the "Hydro-Dynamic" theory of a "hydrodynamic" super-bomb, which is highly classified, and which would have been used in conjunction with the basic fertilizer bomb. There are also the theories of General Partin, a well-known retired army general, of bombs of different types, including the possibility that bombs were placed inside at key points in the building to destroy its supports.

Our investigation shows that the fertilizer bomb-as it has been described by government officials as the single source of the explosive-is not accurate. Highly qualified military personnel have observed, that if the explosion *were* to have been the result of only the fertilizer bomb, then a degree of expertise would have been required for its construction and placement, far beyond the capabilities of either McVeigh or Nichols. Such a fertilizer bomb would have to be a precisely

constructed "shape charge," all of whose force would have to be directed at the building's supports, and at precisely the right angle.

2. In the investigation, I retained the most respected (and expensive) bomb experts in the world, John A. Kennedy and Associates, Inc., out of Hoffman Estates, Illinois. They had investigated the World Trade Center bombing, and are recognized as one of the world's best, if not *the* best, in the field.

3. I prepared documents to go to court to force the government to keep the Federal Building standing long enough for experts to examine the building, the soil, and environs, to establish what caused the destruction, in particular what type of explosive was used.

4. Only hours before I was to file the legal papers for a civil action to keep the building standing, I was contacted by Timothy McVeigh's attorneys, who presented me with two major requests.

First, they asked that I allow them to file the motions to keep the building standing so that the investigation could be conducted. They had cogent legal arguments for this request: because McVeigh was/is under federal criminal charges, he had the definite legal right to keep the building standing under federal rules of evidence which grant criminal defendants the right to preserve evidence that would significantly impact their defense. It was clear that if McVeigh's attorneys believed, or even suspected government cover-up, they would definitely want the building examined.

Their second request was that I release from retainer the bomb investigation team I had assembled-John A. Kennedy and Associates-which, they claimed, they wanted to hire.

I granted these requests to Mcveigh's attorneys.

A few hours later, I watched in horror as CNN and all the national news channels reported that McVeigh's attorneys had no intent to file any motions to keep the Federal Building standing. They had "just reached agreement with the government," the reporters explained, to permit the building to be destroyed almost immediately.

Angry beyond belief, I called McVeigh's attorney and asked

what they were doing. Since this all occurred on a weekend, I could take no legal action to stop the building's destruction. Mcveigh's attorney told me, "Oh yes, we are going to allow the building to be destroyed." I demanded. "Because we could not afford to pay the retainer fee that the Kennedy and Associates firm wanted," he answered.

Shocked by this feeble explanation, I asked, "Well, just how much do they want?" Mcveigh's attorney floored me: he said. we have no resources to pay it, because we are a court-appointed attorney and there are no funds for this purpose."

"For God's sake!" I screamed at him. "I will raise the money! I will pay the fee! There is too much at stake for America. I demanded, "can McVeigh go along with wanting that building destroyed, when that building is the one thing that can tell America the story of what really happened? I will get you the money, somehow, but don't refuse to keep the building up for that reason!"

My protests were futile. Within hours of my call, by mutual agreement between McVeigh's the government prosecutors, the was destroyed, and any destroyed with it.

• • •

What really did happen in City? Without any federal laws, the is my best estimate on what transpired and how, based upon countless meetings with witnesses, victims, experts, and information gathered by my own investigative team led by Ted Gunderson. The "why" of all of this, is what I do not know in detail-at least not yet.

The United States government-probably as it should have-was investigating a group of individuals, in particular Timothy McVeigh, who were inclined to want to "get even" with the government for what they perceived to be its excesses and violations of the Constitution. The government infiltrated the McVeigh group, a standard operating procedure in such investigations.

Unfortunately, the government, was using low-quality, unreliable informants and infiltrators who were themselves more dangerous than either McVeigh or Nichols.

The government supervisors actively provided government resources and assistance-through their informants and infiltrators-to McVeigh and Nichols. They may have even provided certain chemicals and materiel. Most importantly, the government supervisors were aware of the planning of the bomb, the personalities involved, and the resources available.

There was a John Doe I and a John Doe 2 and probably several other John Does-but they were the government infiltrators the government dare not admit existed, lest the American public find out just how deeply involved the government was.

There is still the open question of terrorism against the United States by a foreign power-but this would involve complicity with at least certain U.S. agencies or personnel.

It *is* certain that the government knew from the beginning, that there were no organized militias or militia conspiracy involved in the bombing as such. Yet, government spokesmen in a coordinated fashion fostered the idea that the militias were involved, and that the militias were the most dangerous animal facing all Americans. For months after the Oklahoma bombing, witch hunts against the militias were carried out under the government cover of "national security"-the same cover used and abused far too often in the last two decades of American history, including in the Iran/Contra trial.

The government's legitimate concern with national security has been turned into a banner under which government officials and judges and agencies and politicians can, and do get away with almost anything and everything. They cover their mistakes. They cover their expenditures. They cover their sins. And they are covering up the true story of the Oklahoma bombing, not necessarily because they intend to be evil (I hope), but most likely because they cannot admit how their own negligence contributed to it.

At least, that is what I believe at this point.

CHAPTER 24

THE U. S. JUSTICE DEPARTMENT MURDER OF GORDON KAHL

Because I had successfully represented various clients in, or around, the "militias," I was contacted in mid-1995 by Yorie Kahl, the son of farmer-activist Gordon Kahl. On June 3, 1983, Gordon was assassinated by agencies of the U.S. government. The following "statement of facts" of the Kahl case, father and son, was filed by me before the U.S. District Court in North Dakota on April 16, 1996. It is based, in part, on the never-before released affidavit which Gordon Kahl prepared about the infamous shoot-out in Medina, North Dakota, on Feb. 13, 1983, in which Yorie Kahl was gravely wounded, and which set into motion the train of events that led to Gordon Kahl's own murder four months later. Gordon Kahl prepared the affidavit with the conviction that federal law enforcement would kill him, rather than capture him alive, if they ever found him - which is exactly what happened.

Yorie Kahl released the following affidavit to me in preparation for his trial. I believe it is the most complete account ever of this chilling story.

UNITED STATES DISTRICT COURT FOR THE
DISTRICT OF NORTH DAKOTA

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, vs. YORIE VON KAHL, Movant,	STATEMENT OF FACTS TO SUPPLEMENT MOTION UNDER 28 U.S.c. § 2255 TO VACATE, SET ASIDE, OR CORRECT SENTENCE

The Petitioner Yorie Kahl has filed a motion with this court under 28 U.S.c. §2255 to vacate, set aside, or correct sentence. Petitioner Kahl alleges that he is in custody in violation of the Constitution of the United States. The Petitioner suffered through a trial involving prosecutorial misconduct and a biased judge. But for the denial of his right to due process, Yorie Kahl would never have been convicted of any crime. This Statement of Facts has been prepared for the benefit of the judiciary who will be reviewing this case for the first time.

I. INTRODUCTION

The case before this Court is complex. It involves a chain of events and a compounding of errors that occurred over a time frame of several years. On February 13, 1983, Yorie Kahl was in a group who were involved in a shooting incident with United States Marshals and others in Medina, North Dakota. Four United States Marshals and two local Law Enforcement Officers attempted to serve an arrest warrant on Gordon Kahl for an alleged violation of misdemeanor probation. A gun battle erupted and two U.S. Marshals were killed. Three other law enforcement officers were injured as well as the Petitioner, Yorie Kahl. As a direct result of the "shoot out", Petitioner Yorie Kahl was charged with and convicted of second degree murder, assaulting federal officers, harboring a fugitive and conspiracy.

Before this case can be understood it is critical that events leading up to the confrontation be examined and understood. The Kahl Saga, involving both Father Gordon and Son, Yorie, consists of four significant episodes. These are: (l) Preliminary

causes, 1976-1982; (2) The "Shoot-out" event at Medina, North Dakota on February 13, 1983; (3) The trial in which Petitioner Yorie Kahl was convicted, February 14 through June 24, 1983; and (4) The death of Gordon Kahl in Arkansas, June 3, 1983.

II. EVENTS LEADING UP TO MEDINA

Yorie Von Kahl, the Petitioner, is the son of the late Gordon Kahl. Gordon Kahl was a farmer and decorated veteran of World War II. Gordon Kahl held strong religious and political convictions. Gordon Kahl came to the conclusion in the 1970's that America was headed politically and morally in the wrong direction. This distressed Gordon Kahl. Despite his personal lack of resources, he felt he had an obligation to share his beliefs and views with anyone who would listen. Towards this end, Gordon Kahl regularly spoke out publicly, criticizing the Government and particularly the federal income tax system. Often Gordon Kahl used the media and public gatherings to spread his message.

A. POLITICAL ACTIVISM

Gordon Kahl was particularly outspoken and a strong critic of what he perceived to be the perversion of politics, law and Justice that Kahl believed was occurring in America. So prolific were Gordon Kahl's written and verbal attacks on what he sincerely believed to be unconstitutional applications of laws (Income Tax, Federal Reserve System), that he eventually became a well-known political dissident among those who generally shared his concerns. Among what today is known as the "Patriot Community," Gordon Kahl might properly be termed an American "Refusenik."

In the mid-1970's, Gordon Kahl, along with other "Refuseniks," appeared on local television in Texas to share their beliefs with other Americans. The primary target of their criticism was the foundational basis of the American Income Tax system and its application. Gordon Kahl publicly advocated and encouraged non-compliance, with the claim that the non- compliance could be done with impunity. Such public disdain for the Tax System helped fan the flames of "non compliance" as far

as the IRS was concerned. For a tax system built on the very theory of voluntary compliance and self assessment, individuals such as Gordon Kahl posed a threat to the superstructure of the income tax system.

B. PROSECUTION

To stem the feared spreading noncompliance with the tax system, the IRS in 1977 targeted Gordon Kah1 officially as the leader of the "tax rebellion." The IRS initiated what it deemed to be reasonable and necessary measures to shut down the developing tax rebellion. To do this, the Government initiated a very public Prosecution of Gordon Kah1 under IRS rules and laws which penalize NON-COMPLIANCE OR FAILURE TO FILE AN INCOME TAX RETURN. A co-leader in the tax rebellion with Gordon Kah1, Mr. W. M. Rinehart, was also prosecuted, convicted and subsequently died in prison. Both Kahl and Rinehart were prosecuted for and convicted of misdemeanors for failure to file a tax return. Yorie Von Kahl was a teenager living at home at the time of his father's prosecution.

Gordon Kahl was tried and convicted in 1978 in the United States District Court for the Western Division of Texas, on two misdemeanor counts of willful failure to file federal income tax returns. Specifically, Gordon Kah1 was prosecuted under 26 U.S.c. §7203, a misdemeanor carrying a maximum sentence of up to one year imprisonment and/or maximum fine of 10,000 dollars.

IT IS MOST IMPORTANT TO NOTE, however, that at the time of sentencing, Gordon Kahl was sentenced to one year imprisonment on Count I under the *felony* provision of 18 U.S.c. 4205(a). Additionally, Gordon Kahl's sentence on the second *misdemeanor* conviction was also a *felony* sentence. Specifically, Gordon Kahl was sentenced to ... probation for five years ..." on Count II. This felony sentence itself violated 18 U.S.c. §3651. Section §3651 provides that the probation period can not exceed the maximum incarceration penalty allowable. In this case the maximum incarceration sentence allowed was one year. Statutorily the maximum probation that

the court should or could have imposed even under the felony provisions of 18 U.S.C §3651, was one year.

The judicial abuse of Gordon Kahl, whether through accident or artifice-did not end with the sentencing errors. The special conditions of Kahl's parole were blatantly unconstitutional. Parole Condition One required not that Kahl divorce himself from illegal activity or groups participating in illegal activity, but rather from groups ADVOCATING the expression of free speech, all in contravention of the First Amendment to the U.S. Constitution. Condition two required that Kahl furnish copies of his tax return every year to his probation officer. This was a direct and clear contravention of the Revenue Laws of the United States.

After conviction and sentencing, Gordon Kahl was immediately sent to the Medical Center for Federal Prisoners in Springfield, Missouri for psychiatric evaluation. There Gordon Kahl was found competent to engage in further proceedings. He was then released on bond pending appeal.

C. PRISON

In January of 1979, having exhausted his appeal rights, Gordon Kahl entered the Leavenworth Prison camp in Leavenworth, Kansas. Mr. Kahl was credited for time served at Springfield although he was given no credit towards probation for his exemplary behavior while awaiting appeal. No attempt by IRS was ever made to collect any alleged back taxes from Mr. Kahl until 1982, some four years later.

When Gordon Kahl arrived at Leavenworth prison, his Federally Appointed Case Worker advised Mr. Kahl that his sentence was illegal and that he was improperly sent to prison by the Sentencing Court. When the same case worker reported this fact to her supervisors, the Case Worker was instructed that if "she wanted to keep her job to keep her mouth shut." Shortly after that, Gordon Kahl was offered release in exchange for extremely onerous of probation. Gordon Kahl refused, preferring to serve his time and be free when released.

D. PROBAnON

In August 1979, Gordon Kahl was released from Leavenworth Prison Camp. While being processed out of the camp he refused to sign the probation papers. After going home to the farm in North Dakota, Kahl's probation officer went out to the farm to see Kahl. Gordon Kahl told the probation officer that if it would make the probation officer happy Kahl would sign the papers. That was the only visit the Probation Officer made to Gordon Kahl's house. Subsequently, for a few months, the Probation Officer left the Probation Report papers in the Kahl mailbox. Then, the Probation Officer even quit doing that.

For a substantial time following Gordon Kahl's release from prison, Gordon Kahl maintained a low profile and specifically declined invitations to attend and speak at public meetings. Consistent with the character of a dissident though, Gordon Kahl eventually renewed his denunciation and criticism of what he believed to be Unconstitutional Government actions and Judicial Corruption. Gordon Kahl was particularly outspoken about what he perceived to be the perfidy of the State and Federal judiciary in North Dakota and their links to Masonic organizations. Specifically, Kahl targeted Federal District Judges Paul Benson and Bruce VanSickle for his strongest criticism. They, consequently, took Kahl's vitriolic criticism as a personal affront, but, even more important, an affront to their judicial authority and the prestige of the position of federal judicial officers.

E. SUMMONS

On June 27, 1980, the U.S. District Court for the Western Division of Texas issued a summons for Gordon Kahl to appear before the Court to show cause why his probation should not be revoked. August 6, 1980, twelve months after Kahl's release from Leavenworth Prison Camp, Gordon Kahl was allegedly served the summons. It was further alleged that Gordon Kahl had advised the Deputy U.S. Marshal who had served the summons, that Kahl did not believe he was on probation and

that consequently he had no intention of appearing at any show cause hearing.

According to uncontroverted testimony at trial by Joan Kahl, the widow of Gordon Kahl, the signature on the summons was not that of Gordon Kahl. The sole reason given on the motion for revocation of probation was "On or about May 20, 1980, the probationer has not abided by his Special Conditions of Probation that he be required to furnish the probation office with a copy of his income tax return each year at the appropriate time for filing a return."

On September 23, 1980, a month after any legal probation period would have expired, the U.S. Attorney was given leave of the U.S. District Court of Texas to withdraw the motion to revoke the Defendant's probation. This was granted by order of the Court. It is believed that the reason for the withdrawal of the motion was that the condition of probation was illegal. It is also believed that fact was known to the Federal JUdiciary as well as the consequential fact that the order could not lawfully be enforced.

F. THE WARRANT

Six months later on March 30, 1981, the U.S. District Court for the Western Division of Texas issued a warrant for the arrest of Gordon Kahl. The supporting grounds on the petition requesting the warrant this time were, "It is alleged that probationer is in violation of Condition No. 7–YOU SHALL REPORT TO THE PROBATION OFFICER AS DIRECTED." (Emphasis in original).

According to a United States Marshals' Service Field Report, the Texas judge who had issued the warrant wanted Gordon Kahl returned to Texas. The report also stated "the JUDGE HAS SET THE BOND ON KAHL AT $1,000,000 CASH OR $75,000 + 10% CORPORATE SURETY." (Emphasis in original.)

All this for an "alleged" misdemeanor probation violation. A probation which was itself null and void and violative of Federal Law. Remember, no new motion had ever been entered to revoke Gordon Kahl's probation. And, of course, the original

probation imposed upon Gordon Kahl was illegal and therefore

Any legal probation would have necessarily expired at the latest on August 19, 1980. Therefore, for anyone of at least three reasons, the action by Federal Marshals, led by United States Marshal for North Dakota, Ken Muir, on Feb. 13, 1983 resulting in the "Shoot-out", was knowingly initiated under a faulty warrant at best.

The three reasons, summarized again, are: 1) Illegal 5-year FELONY probation sentence given for a Misdemeanor, thereby rendering the probation itself illegal; (2) Any legal maximum probation period allowed would necessarily have expired on Sept. 23, 1980, more than 2 years before the Shoot-out" at Medina; (3) The supporting grounds for issuing the "Alleged" warrant under which U.S. Marshal Muir was operating on 13 Feb. 1983, were themselves defective legal grounds. Why? Because the Probation conditions imposed ordered Gordon Kahl to perform acts which the courts are constitutionally forbidden to order; namely, (I) First Amendment violation by prohibiting Gordon Kahl from "Associating" with groups "advocating willful disobedience...." (2) Requiring Gordon Kahl to furnish copies of Kahl's future tax returns to the probation office, in violation of Federal Revenue Laws.

G. UNITED STATES MARSHAL, HAROLD "BUD" WARREN

Harold "Bud" Warren was the United States Marshal for North Dakota on March 30th, 1981, when the so called "Misdemeanor Arrest Warrant" for "Probation Violation" arrived at the U.S. Marshal's Office in Fargo, North Dakota. Warren immediately reacted by personally traveling to Carrington, North Dakota where Warren was advised Gordon Kahl might be located. Based on information from federal officials he had dealt with, Warren went there expecting to find a fugitive in hiding. What Warren by his own admission found was a friendly, smiling farmer leaning against the front of a church. Gordon Kahl had attended church and was waiting for Joan Kahl, his wife, to join him.

A few days later, Marshal Warren made arrangements to

meet personally with Gordon Kahl. He wanted to discuss the "Misdemeanor Warrant" and resolve the situation. Warren went unarmed, as was Gordon Kahl. Warren advised Gordon Kahl of the existence of the warrant and gave Gordon Kahl thirty days to try and straighten out the situation with the warrant. Marshal Warren told Mr. Kahl, after thirty days he, Warren, would have to take action to arrest him, Kahl.

During the 30 day moratorium Marshal Warren had given to Gordon Kahl to clear up the misdemeanor Warrant, Warren himself was removed from office. Warren's removal from office was itself a highly charged political maneuver. Deputy U.S. Marshal, Ken Muir, was quickly installed as United States Marshal for North Dakota.

Marshal Warren himself had incurred the wrath and animosity of the political king-makers in North Dakota politics by 1981. His decision to accommodate Gordon Kah1 and attempt to amicably resolve the issue of the Arrest Warrant was not well received. Gordon Kahl's very presence in North Dakota had become a significant embarrassment and irritant to the political system and economic power structure. Gordon Kahl was loud and outspoken in his criticism of the political power structure. He blamed the same political and economic power structure for an almost total collapse of the agricultural economy in North Dakota which was occurring in the early 1980's as part of the so called "Farm Crisis."

H. A NEW U.S. MARSHAL FOR NORTH DAKOTA

In 1981 Ronald Reagan replaced Jimmy Carter in the White House. The change in presidential administrations afforded the North Dakota power brokers and politicians the opportunity to appoint a U.S. Marshal who promised to rid the system of the irritating Gordon Kahl. In the person of U.S. Deputy Marshal Ken Muir, was the culmination of all their desires. At the request and behest of Judges Benson and VanSickle, Senator Mark Andrews of North Dakota was induced to recommend to President Reagan that Deputy Marshal Ken Muir be given the appointment as U.S. Marshal for North Dakota and that U.S. Marshal "Bud" Warren be removed from his position as

U.S. Marshal. As is the custom, President Ronald Reagan then nominated Deputy U.S. Marshal, Ken Muir, for the position of U.S. Marshal for North Dakota and the U.S. Senate routinely approved the nomination.

With the transfer of office from Warren to Muir, new U.S. Marshal Ken Muir specifically refused former Marshal Warren's offer of information and guidance and assistance in resolving the Gordon Kahl affair. Ken Muir specifically told outgoing Marshal Warren "When you were Marshal you did it your way, (handling Kahl) now we do it my way."

After failed attempts by Marshal Muir to apprehend Gordon Kahl-keystone cop type attempts which Kahl himself apparently was never even aware of-now *Deputy* U.S. Marshal Warren again contacted U.S. Marshal Muir. Deputy Marshal Warren offered to give Marshal Muir what information Warren had learned about Gordon Kahl. Muir responded to Warren's contact and offer by advising Warren that, *"No need existed any more for assistance from Warren or concern about Gordon Kahl because Muir had been advised by U.S. Marshals' Service Deputy Director Toomey in Washington D.C., '... to file the Gordon Kahl warrant away and not spend anymore time or manpower on it.' " That was in 1981.*

I. LIVING IN THE OPEN

In 1982 the dissident Gordon Kahl freely roamed the country. He attended political meetings and personally, publicly and openly addressed these gatherings giving his strong opinions on constitutional issues such as gun control, income taxes, abortion, land use planning and Kahl's belief about excessive Masonic influence. Contrary to claims made by the Federal Government Gordon Kahl went about his business in the light of day.

In the summer of 1982 Gordon Kahl's wife, Joan, and a neighbor friend named Herman Widiker went to the IRS office in Fargo, North Dakota, and offered to pay Gordon's Kahl's tax bill. The IRS told Joan Kahl and Herman Widiker that the IRS couldn't tell Mrs. Kahl and Mr. Widiker how much Gordon Kahl owed because the IRS didn't know. Gordon Kahl at-

tempted to file a Temporary Restraining Order in the Bismarck Federal District Court to halt the sale of his farmland by the IRS. The Clerk of the Federal District Court actually accepted the restraining order documents, but, unknown to Kahl, actually refused to file Gordon Kahl' s petition and complaint for a temporary restraining order. This refusal to file was unknown to Gordon Kahl. Instead of advising Kahl of the refusal, the court clerk personally turned Kahl's paperwork over to U.S. District Court Judge Bruce Van Sickle and notified the U.S. Marshals Service.

Judge Van Sickle was then personally contacted by Deputy U.S. Marshal Bob Cheshire, who would later be killed at the shoot-out February 13, 1983 at Medina, North Dakota. Deputy Marshal Cheshire advised Judge Van Sickle in the fall of 1982, many months before the 1983 shoot out, that Gordon Kahl was a fugitive and the Marshal apparently suggested therefore that the Clerk should not file the motion. One thing is for sure: That is, Gordon Kahl sure did not know he was a fugitive in 1982.

For whatever reasons, apparently based on instructions from U.S. District Judge Van Sickle, Gordon Kahl's complaint and petition for temporary restraining order were never filed. This was never known to Gordon Kahl nor was he ever informed of this refusal action. In November of 1982 the IRS attempted to sell Gordon Kahl's farm. That effort failed when no one would bid on the farm, so the IRS bought the farm itself.

Of particular interest during the early 1980's, was the problem farmers had remaining solvent. So did the banks that were financing them. Record numbers of farms and farmers were in foreclosure. In such an environment of despair and economic upheaval, many farmers saw themselves as victims of a political and economic system gone berserk.

Seeing themselves as twentieth century patriots, many farmers proposed the return to their perception of what constitutionally mandated government should be as the essential immediate and long term solution to the farm problem. Harkening back to their patriot heritage and the "spirit of 1776" these citizens openly exercised their right to keep and bear arms, to assemble

and speak out against the government. The typical farmer/patriot was also a hunter. But, bottom-line, they were simply citizens concerned about losing their farms and their personal safety.

J. ALL POINTS BULLETIN

During the week of February 6, 1983, an All Points Bulletin (APB) was disseminated by Law Enforcement Officials in North Dakota through their state law enforcement communications network, State Radio. The APB's contents were factually inaccurate. The APB originated from a confidential source in Carrington, North Dakota. It described Gordon Kahl and another man as carrying machine guns and driving to Fessenden, North Dakota to kill the Sheriff. The car Kahl was allegedly driving was in the possession of some one else that day. Needless to say Kahl and his friend did not show up to shoot the sheriff.

It now appears that the real purpose of the APB was not informational but was designed to provoke or create a violent confrontation between Gordon Kahl and Law Enforcement. By eliminating Gordon Kahl it was hoped to quash the emerging tax rebellion. This picture only emerges looking backwards with new factual data and documentation available now and not available in the heat of the 1983 Medina shoot-out and the emotionally and politically charged trials that followed.

III. EVENTS AT MEDINA, NORTH DAKOTA, FEBRUARY 13, 1983

On Sunday morning, February 13, 1983, Gordon Kahl, his wife Joan and son Yorie traveled from their farm near Heaton, North Dakota, to Medina to attend a meeting of dissidents, tax protesters and financially troubled farmers. They took their friend Scott Faul with them. Scott Faul suggested that Yorie Kahl bring Yorie's rifle in case they saw some rabbits. Yorie Kahl ran back in the house and retrieved Ruger Mini-14. Gordon, Joan and Yorie Kahl and Scott Faul then left for Medina. Along the way they shot a rabbit to feed to the dog.

A. POLICE SURVEILLANCE

Early that afternoon of Feb. 13, 1983, Bradley Kapp, the Deputy Sheriff of Stutzman County, North Dakota, contacted State Radio (law enforcement network). Deputy Kapp told the law enforcement radio network that the rumored meeting of the tax protesters/dissidents was underway in Medina, North Dakota at the Medina Medical Clinic and that Gordon Kahl himself was physically present at the meeting. State Radio immediately relayed the message to the U.S. Marshals' Service for North Dakota. The Marshals' service immediately contacted U.S. Marshal Ken Muir at his home and advised him of the meeting and Kahl's presence. U.S. Marshal Muir and Deputy U.S. Marshal Carl Wigglesworth immediately left Fargo headed for Medina. At Medina, Muir and Wigglesworth met up with Deputy U.S. Marshals Cheshire and Hopson who had come from Bismarck, North Dakota. At Medina Muir, Wigglesworth, Cheshire and Hopson enlisted the help of another local law enforcement officer, Medina City Policeman, Steven Schnabel.

Under the pretense of executing the very warrant that Marshal Muir had specifically been instructed from higher authorities to ignore and not waste further resources attempting to serve, the Marshals set up a roadblock in the town of Medina at the railroad crossing. Darrell Graf, the Police Chief of Medina, became aware of the Marshals' plans and demanded that the roadblock be moved out of town. Unable to convince the Marshals to abandon their ill conceived plan, Chief Graf persuaded Marshal Muir & the others with him to move their road-block out of town into the countryside north of Medina.

While all of these preparations were being made, the meeting was winding up at the Medina Medical Clinic. As the meeting goers were walking out they noticed someone watching the clinic. Dr. Martin, the operator of the clinic said, "That's just Brad Kapp (Stutzman Co. Deputy Sheriff) being Brad. He does stuff like that." David Broer decided to call Darrell Graf, the Medina Police Chief about it. Chief Graf told David Broer about the APB that had been issued a few days before, previously described above.

The car in the APB matched Scott Faul's. This troubled Scott Faul because the day the APB was supposedly generated, his wife Shauna had driven the car to Harvey to do laundry. None of the Kahl or Faul groups present could think of any valid reason for the issuance of a legitimate warrant, especially involving Scott's car. Someone said to Gordon, Joan and Yorie Kahl, "It looks like you're being set up." This disturbed Joan Kahl, but Gordon Kahl reassured her that nothing was going on that he knew of.

Not knowing what to think about the APB, and the anonymous comment about a setup, Yorie Kahl suggested and then insisted that Yorie Kahl and his Father Gordon Kahl, trade coats and hats. Yorie Kahl and Joan Kahl accompanied by Vern Wegner and Scott Faul, got in Gordon Kahl's Chrysler station wagon. Gordon Kahl and David Broer got in David Broer's car so they could talk on the way to Gordon Kahl's home. The two vehicles left the Medina Clinic and headed north for the Kahl home. They were totally unaware of the presence of the Marshals or the ambush the Marshals had planned for them.

B. PUBLIC SAFETY

Based on discussion and information between himself and the Marshals that afternoon of Feb. 13, 1983, Chief Graf was convinced that the Marshals planned a violent ambush and confrontation. He was certain of the upcoming violence planned by the Marshals. So certain was GRAF of the impending danger and a certain shoot out or execution of the Dissident Kahl and Kahl's party by the Marshals, that he, GRAF, took extraordinary measures to minimize the damage to the town of Medina and its citizens. Chief Graf called out the Medina rescue unit just before 5:00 p.m., a full hour before the planned shoot out. Graf then prepared to set up road-blocks of his own to keep citizens out of the Marshals' planned ambush and fire zone.

After observing the two Kahl vehicles and Marshal Cheshire's Ramcharger depart North out of town GRAF stopped citizens Mark and Carol Lanenga. The Lanengas were about

to unknowingly drive north out of town into the planned ambush zone unaware of the danger.

From the vantage point of where Chief Graf stopped them, the Lanengas could see the Marshals standing outside of the Ramcharger, aiming their weapons at the Kahl vehicles. The Lanengas later testified at the trial of Yorie Kahl. They recounted that Chief Graf told them "there was going to be a shoot out and this time the police were in the wrong."

Two other citizens who had attended the meeting at the Medina Clinic where Gordon Kahl was present were also prevented by Chief Graf from entering the ambush fire zone. Chief Graf told them, "We are going to try to save at least Dave's [Broer] life." Other people at the scene also testified that Graf told them "there is a tax protester up there and now they are going to shoot him."

The Kahl entourage first saw the roadblock ahead of them on a hilltop a mile north of Medina as they topped a hill on the edge of town. Still unaware that they were the intended targets of the road block they pulled into the first driveway they could to turn around. Immediately, the Kahl's exit route from the areas was blocked by a Dodge Ramcharger which had followed the Kahl vehicles out of Medina.

In the Ramcharger were Deputy U.S. Marshals Cheshire and Hopson, and Stutsman County Deputy Sheriff Brad Kapp. In the roadblock ahead of the Kahls' vehicles were U.S. Marshal for North Dakota, Ken Muir, Deputy U.S. Marshal Carl Wigglesworth and Medina City policeman Steven Schnabel.

After the Marshals had cut off all the Kahl vehicles' retreat routes from the planned ambush zone, the Marshals jumped out of their unmarked vehicles and aimed their weapons at the Kahl group. None of the law enforcement officers at the scene were in uniform. Deputy Marshal Cheshire even told Deputy Marshal Hopson to take off his badge.

Once out of their cars and with their weapons aimed directly ut the Kahl group. the Marshals began yelling .. we're going to blow your (Kahl group) goddamn heads off," and are going to die."

Gordon KaW, Yorie Kahl and Scott Faul then got out of their cars and began to separate from each other. None of the Marshals knew who Gordon Kahl was in the group or what Gordon Kahl looked like. Relying ONLY on the description provided by Deputy Kapp who had seen Gordon Kahl attending the meeting in Medina, the Marshals directed their shouts, their attentions, their weapons DIRECTLY AT YORIE KAHL WHO, AS YOU WILL RECALL, WAS WEARING HIS THER GORDON'S COAT AND HAT.

This stand-off continued for a period of time that is still disputed ranging from a minute to as many as 13 minutes.

Then U.S. Marshal Ken Muir fired the first shot ofthe shoot-out. Firing his .38 Special revolver at Yorie Kahl Marshal Muir hit YORIE KAHL in the grip of the pistol Yorie was wearing in his shoulder holster. As Yorie Kahl fell backwards from being hit the "Ruger mini-14 ranch rifle" Yorie Kahl was carrying discharged twice. Yorie Kahl was then shot in the abdominal region by Deputy Brad Kapp with two shotgun blasts. Marshal Muir himself-rated as one of the top ten pistol shots in the United States of America-then fired three more times hitting Yorie Kahl repeatedly with his fire.

During the balance of the gun battle, Victim Yorie Kahllay on the ground with his near fatal wounds.

Kahl friend and traveling companion Scott Faul attempted to retreat from the fire zone but Faul's escape was cut off by an unknown but armed assailant who turned out to be U.S. Deputy Marshal Wigglesworth. With his escape cut off, Scott Faul retreated and headed back towards where Yorie Kahllay wounded on the ground. At this time, Scott Faul also came under fire from the Marshals. In response to being fired upon, Scott Faul returned fire in the direction of the Ramcharger.

Seeing his son Yorie repeatedly shot and believing Yorie to be dead, Gordon Kahl himself opened fire on the Marshals, Deputy Kapp and Officer Schnabel.

Marshal Muir and Deputy Marshals Cheshire and Hopson quickly succumbed to the deadly volley of fire laid down by the veteran aerial gunner Gordon Kahl. Deputy Kapp and Officer

Schnabel were soon wounded and out of the fight also. Gordon then went over to the Ramcharger and put two more rounds into Deputy Cheshire.

By the time Scott Faul reached the wounded Yorie Kahl, the shooting had stopped. Scott Faul then assisted Yorie Kahl into a vehicle and headed into Medina to the Medical Clinic.

The moment the shooting had stopped, and right on schedule, ambulances and rescue personnel began arriving. The injured were taken directly to the Medina Clinic where Dr. Martin began treating them and preparing the critically wounded for transportation to the Hospital in Jamestown, North Dakota. Marshal Hopson and Yorie Kahl underwent emergency surgery for their wounds. Hopson was disabled from the effects of his head wound, but would recover sufficiently to testify in the rush to judgment called a trial 85 days later.

David Broer, Vern Wegner and Scott Faul all surrendered within a day. Joan Kahl was arrested along with Yorie Kahl at the Jamestown Hospital. Gordon Kahl remained at large for four months and became the center of what was officially called by U.S. Marshals the "largest manhunt in American History."

IV. THE RUSH TO JUDGMENT

Eighty-five days after the events at Medina and fifty-nine days after the Grand Jury returned an indictment, trial began in U.S. District Court for North Dakota, Southeastern Division. The trial was held before District Judge Paul Benson in Fargo and prosecuted by Assistant U.S. Attorneys Lynn Crooks and Dennis Fisher. The details of the trial and the issues there under attack are presented in more detail in the Motion to Vacate, Set Aside, or Correct Sentence. It suffices here to generally list the defects in what was passed off as a trial in Fargo, North Dakota thirteen years ago.

In the words of the Chief Judge of the Eighth Circuit Court of Appeals, record amply demonstrates the defendants did not and could not receive a fair trial in the District of North Dakota." United States v. Faul, et al., 748 *F.2d 1205, 1223 (Judge Lay, dissenting opinion).*

Below is an enumerated list of major issues that prevented

the Petitioner, Yorie Kahl, from receiving a fair trial. But for the illegal actions of the United States Government in the prosecution of the Petitioner, and the lack of a fair and impartial Judiciary, the Petitioner could have proved his innocence. The Petitioner, Yorie Von Kahl:

A. Was denied counsel and held incommunicado for ten days while he was interrogated by federal and state law enforcement agents.

B. Was prejudiced by denial of access to the Petitioner by available counsel and private investigative services being offered during the above ten day period.

C. Was denied effective assistance of counsel.

D. Was prejudiced by a partial and biased judge.

E. Was prejudiced by material non-disclosure and concealment by a juror.

F. Petitioner was tried by a jury that was "Presumably ased" and "Actually Biased."

G. Was prejudiced by prosecutorial misconduct.

H. Potential defense witnesses were hindered or prevented from testifying as a result of threats, intimidation and subterfuge by government officials.

I. There was improper contact with the jury by U.S. Deputy Marshal Carl Wigglesworth, a victim in the shooting incident.

J. On February 14, 1983, U.S. Marshals traveled to Medina, North Dakota, for the purpose of killing Gordon Kahl. The spurious arrest attempt of Gordon W. Kahl was illegal and not based on a valid warrant.

K. Was prejudiced by numerous other incidents and actions. For sure, the cumulative effects combined to deny the Petitioner's right to a fair and impartial trial and his rights to due process of law.

From the beginning of the proceedings the Defendants tried to have Judge Paul Benson removed from the case. Judge Benson was the Masonic brother and sponsor of the deceased Marshal Muir. The defendants were well aware of the animus Judge Benson bore for any who would dare to defend themselves against Government agents. Seven years earlier in another proceeding involving confrontations between citizens and

government agents at a place called WOUNDED KNEE, the team of Benson and Crooks had gained similar attention for their handling of the Leonard Peltier case.

From the start the push was on to rush the trial and prejudice the Defendants. Prior to trial there was a tremendous amount of negative pretrial publicity and a deliberate disinformation campaign carried out by the Government while a unilateral gag order was being enforced on the Defense. The biasing effect this had on the jury pool was demonstrated during jury selection. There was a presumption of bias in the jury and it was proven after trial there was actual bias.

One juror willfully gave deceitful answers to specific questions during voir dire relative to the juror's personal relationship with the prosecutor, Mr. Crooks.

Incredibly, the impaneled jury was guarded and even entertained by U.S. Marshals service who were the victims and clearly viewed themselves as a whole as the victims of the shoot out with the Defendants. Marshal Wigglesworth, himself a participant in the Medina Shoot-out and one of the assault victims of the shoot-out, engaged with the other Marshals guarding the Jury in recreational activities with the jury members.

When such conduct was reported to Presiding Judge Benson, the Judge responded by simply brushing aside the incidents, refusing to hold a hearing on the matter, and insuring that the event was not recorded when Judge Benson met in chambers to discuss Wigglesworth's jury contact incidents with a select portion of the attorneys defending in the case.

The Petitioner was denied effective assistance of counsel. U.S. Magistrate Hill appointed an inexperienced civil attorney named Warren Sogard to defend [in] the most notorious criminal trial in North Dakota history.

Sogard had seventy-six days from the time of his appointment to the date trial began to prepare for an extremely complex multi-defendant homicide trial. Sogard did not even see his client, Yorie Kahl, for days after his, Sogard' s, appointment.

Even more shocking, Sogard spent almost all of his time between appointment as the attorney for Yorie Kahl until the

time trial began OUT OF TOWN AND OUT OF TOUCH WITH HIS CLIENT THE DEFENDANT, APPARENTLY BELIEVING AS WELL AS ASSURING YORIE KAHL THAT THE TRIAL WOULD NOT OCCUR IN LESS THAN A YEAR. This was simply one more example of Sogard's advocacy deficiency.

Besides being prejudiced by ineffective assistance of counsel, Yorie Kahl was denied counsel prior to the appointment of Warren Sogard. Attorney Jerry Lafountain and private investigator-paralegal Gary Fredricks from Montana traveled to Jamestown, North Dakota to offer their services to Yorie Kahl and the other Defendants. Lafountain Fredricks made themselves available to the family but they were denied access to the Defendants including Yorie Kahl who was still in the hospital recovering from his wounds. For ten days Yorie Kahl was prevented from obtaining counselor contacting anyone, including Jerry LaFountain, that could or would provide or obtain counsel for him. Assistant United States Attorney Lynn Crooks, lead prosecutor on the case, was quoted *after* trial saying "We did everything in our power to make sure that they did not wind up having tax protester lawyers."

When Jerry LaFountain and Gary Fredricks arrived in Montana they were harassed, intimidated and threatened by federal and local law enforcement officers. The motel room and car of the attorney and investigator were bugged. Everywhere LaFountain and Fredricks went they were followed by a detachment of law enforcement. Lafountain and Fredricks were not allowed in the area of the shooting incident to investigate. They went to interview Dave Broer's Wife, Joanne Broer, and the marshals followed them there. The legal team then departed the Broer residence to see Shauna Faul, wife of Defendant Scott Faul. While LaFountain and Fredricks were driving on the interstate and no one else was on the highway, they came upon a road block and were then blocked from behind by U.S. Marshals. The Marshals searched LaFountain, Fredricks and the car including LaFountain's legal papers.

Another incident involving Mr. Lafountain and Mr. Fredricks was staged for their benefit. Lafountain and Fredricks

went to the Ramada Inn in Jamestown one night for entertainment. The place was full of U.S. Marshals. The Marshals dragged a young woman outside and stripped half of her clothes off. This happened within the view of LaFountain and Fredricks who were standing inside the lobby of the hotel watching through the window. LaFountain and Fredricks did not go out to help the woman fearing the incident was a set up to charge LaFountain and Fredricks with rape and assault. The half nude woman the Marshals were assaulting came in screaming at the Marshals. Jerry LaFountain went to the front desk to call the police and the female desk clerk was herself, a U.S. Marshal. Jerry LaFountain then called a Federal judge to advise him of what was happening to insure the safety of LaFountain and Fredricks. The Marshals later harassed LaFountain and Fredricks about it. The Marshals told LaFountain and Fredricks the U.S. Marshals didn't like LaFountain and Fredricks calling "their" judges. It was clear to LaFountain and Fredricks that if they went outside they would be arrested or shot for rape.

Gary Fredricks said that they were so scared at one point they couldn't sleep for 50 hours. LaFountain and Fredricks ultimately got so scared they decided to go back home. LaFountain and Fredricks agreed together not to do or say anything because they feared for their own lives and those of their family.

The first testimony in the Government's case was not from witnesses with actual knowledge relevant to the case or from experts. The first testimony was from the grieving widows of the dead marshals presenting studio photos of their husbands and telling of their children. There was no probative value to their testimony whatever. The only purpose served was to gamer sympathy with the jury and create animosity and prejudice against the Defendants.

The government withheld exculpatory evidence from the defense that would have substantially bolstered the Petitioner's affirmative defense. The pistol that saved the life of the Petitioner by stopping the bullet that Marshal Muir meant for Gordon Kahl, was not permitted to be utilized by the defendants to help prove their case. The government withheld knowledge of the existence and use of informants and undercover agents

who could have provided exculpatory evidence of the events of February 13, 1983 as well as knowledge of the plan by the U.S. Marshals to kill Gordon Kahl. The APB upon which the Marshals relied was inaccurate and based on false information provided by a confidential informant in Carrington, North Dakota, whose name was withheld from Defendants. Additionally, it is now known that a key undercover agent named Mike Phillips from Ashley, North Dakota, who was a principal involved in helping orchestrate the Shoot Out, was concealed from the Defendants at the trial stage. The existence of the Carrington informant who generated the suspicious APB was also improperly concealed from defendants at trial.

Potential defense witnesses were hindered or prevented from testifying as a result of threats, intimidation and subterfuge by government officials. The intimidating presence of law enforcement officers following LaFountain and Fredricks as they went to interview witnesses was very effective. An unusual number of Government witnesses testified contrary to statements and reports made shortly after the incident and subsequently supplied to defense.

Especially interesting is the case of Defense witnesses Mark and Carol Lanenga. After the Lanengas finished testifying at trial and had been excused by the Court an FBI agent came up to Carol Lenenga and said "We're not done with you yet." This upset Mrs. Lanenga as well it should have. A few months after trial the Lanengas heard from the IRS that they were being audited. The Lanengas thought it was an unusual coincidence though IRS said it was routine. When the Lanengas were audited again within a few months, it was no coincidence. Another witness called by the defense was U.S. Deputy Marshal Bud Warren. Deputy Warren was also dunned by IRS after testifying too truthfully for the defense. After going through the audit he also received a refund.

Incidents of prosecutorial misconduct were condoned and sometimes defended by Judge Benson. During cross examination of Government witness Lonny Reuer by defense counsel Mr. Ramlo, several people in the courtroom including jurors, defendants and defense counsel observed the following: (i) Mr.

Ramlo would ask Mr. Reuer a question; (ii) the witness, Mr. Reuer, would then tum his head to look at the prosecution table; (iii) Mr. Crooks would then shake his head up and down or side to side; (iv) Mr. Reuer would then tum his head back to face Mr. Ramlo and answer the question. This happened several times until Mr. Ramlo noticed others in the courtroom following this action. He then asked the witness "When Mr. Crooks shakes his head at you like that, is that a signal to answer one way or another?" Assistant U.S. Attorney Dennis Fisher objected, and Judge Benson immediately came to the defense of Mr. Crooks. "I've watched Mr. Crooks try cases for 12 Years ... The question is uncalled for." He further chastised Mr. Ramlo for suggesting such a thing totally ignoring that perhaps what Mr. Ramlo said was true. Noting the futility of pressing the issue, Mr. Ramlo dropped it, asked a token question of the witness and abandoned cross examination.

On Appeal the majority opinion did not address some of the issues appealed. After saying 28 U.S.c. §144 and 455 are similar and that it would consider them together the Court ignored §455. The Court was also disingenuous in the way it dealt with the issue of biased prospective jurors. The Court misconstrued the fact that fifty percent of the prospective jurors that were actually questioned were removed for cause arising from partiality. Judge Lay in a footnote to his dissent stated, "The Majorities statement that only 27% of the jurors attributed their partiality to media coverage is misleading." United States v. Faul, et al., 748 F.2d at 1231 fn. 8. It should not matter what their partiality was attributable to, just that they were partial.

The details of the grounds for the motion under §2255 appear in the motion itself. One thing is certain. As Chief Judge Lay wrote in his dissent, "The record amply demonstrates the defendants did not and could not receive a fair trial in the District of North Dakota." United States v. Faul, et al., §748 F.2d at 1223.

EXECUTION IN ARKANSAS

On February 17, 1983 Leonard and Norma Ginter of Walnut Ridge, Arkansas, were introduced to Gordon Wendall Kahl by

an acquaintance of theirs, Bill Wade. Gordon Kahl requested the Ginters house him after Gordon advised them that he was wanted by federal authorities. On February 25, 1983, Gordon Kahl wrote out an affidavit witnessed by Leonard Ginter recounting the events of the shooting incident in Medina, North Dakota on February 13, 1983. Gordon Kahl expressed that if he was discovered he would not be given a chance to surrender before being killed. Because he expected to be murdered Gordon Kahl wrote out the affidavit to preserve details of the previous events so that the truth could eventually be made known. For thirteen years these original documents, made in contemplation of impending death, have been hidden. Defense attorney for Yorie Kahl has now obtained this original sworn affidavit of Gordon Kahl. In these documents Gordon Kahl details what actually happened at the Medina shoot out February 13,1983. These documents clearly exonerate Yorie Kahl. Copies of these documents were not allowed to be admitted into evidence in the original trial because they were not the originals.

About the middle of April, 1983, Bill Wade had heard that the FBI was closing in on Gordon Kahl so Leonard Ginter took Gordon Kahl to the house of Art Russell. Gordon Kahl stayed at the Russell house until Leonard Ginter brought him back to the Ginter's house the last part of May, 1983. On June 2, 1983 Gordon Kahllearned of the conviction of his son Yorie Von Kahl. Gordon Kahl expressed to Leonard Ginter his desire to surrender to federal authorities to help his son.

The next day, June 3, 1983, Leonard Ginter left the house without explanation at 5:15 P.M. and started driving up the driveway when he was seized by FBI Special Agent James Blassingame. Gordon Kahl was seated at the kitchen table eating dinner when Leonard Ginter left. At 5:30 p.m. the news was just coming on and Gordon was eating dinner and watching for news of his son Yorie Kahl. Norma Ginter heard a noise outside the house and went to look out the door. She was grabbed by Sheriff Gene Mathews. Norma Ginter was told to be quiet, handcuffed and taken around the corner of the house next to her husband Leonard Ginter.

Sheriff Mathews left Leonard and Norma Ginter with Special

Agent Blassingame while Sheriff Mathews and Deputy U.S. Marshal Hall entered the house armed with pistols. State Police Investigator Ed Fitzpatrick stayed outside armed with a shotgun. Sheriff Mathews stepped through the kitchen doorway undetected by Gordon Kahl. Sheriff Mathews then shot Gordon Kahl in the back of the head with Mathews's .41 Magnum revolver. This single shot in the house was followed by four or five shotgun blasts directed into the house through the kitchen window by State Police Investigator Fitzpatrick. Sheriff Mathews was hit by the shotgun pellets fired by Fitzpatrick while he was standing outside on the patio. This all transpired in less than a few minutes. Sheriff Mathews remained in the house twenty to forty minutes after that.

The Ginters were then moved about 50 feet west of the house and pushed down to the ground. FBI agent David King then pointed a gun at Leonard Ginter and said, "I'm going to kill you, son of a bitch," several times. About ten minutes later the Ginters were taken a little bit further west to where Leonard had previously removed a large rock. The various law enforcement personnel were continuously shooting into the house this whole time. Leonard and Norma Ginter were then moved to the road up the hill and handcuffed to a police car about 250 feet from the house. Immediately after the initial shots were fired, Special Agent Blassingame went to Leonard Ginter and asked him "was Gordon Kahl clean shaven?" Leonard Ginter answered "the man at my house was clean shaven." Agent Blassingame then immediately went back to the house.

At about 6:00 PM an unidentified law enforcement officer positioned up the hill southwest of the house started shooting. Leonard Ginter said two of the many shots from this shooter sounded similar to the sound made when bullets hit a deer. This sound came from the comer of the garage. At this time different people started hollering that Sheriff Gene Mathews had been shot. Dero Downing, an FBI agent that was at the scene testified at trial that the wounded Sheriff Mathews came out of the house and was subsequently mortally shot in his side by the comer of the house as Leonard Ginter had described. The autopsy investigation would later find glass and shotgun

pellets in Sheriff Mathews's bullet-proof vest. This was from Mathews being shot while Mathews was inside the house. This shot was from a shotgun fired by State Police Investigator Fitzpatrick through the glass of the kitchen window.

In response to Sheriff Mathews being shot a police car then came down the hill on the driveway to assist him. The car was driven to the comer of the house where Mathews had been shot. Within only a minute or two the police car came back up the road past where Norma and Leonard Ginter were now handcuffed to a police car. The car went right by Leonard Ginter and Ginter could see Sheriff Gene Mathews alone in the back seat. Mathews appeared to be dead and was receiving no attention. This was about ten or fifteen minutes after six o'clock p.m., forty minutes after Gordon Kahl had been shot and killed.

Immediately after Leonard Ginter saw Sheriff Mathews being taken away, Ginter heard a radio transmission from the police car he was handcuffed to. The broadcast said that Bill Wade had been shot. The law enforcement officers obviously did not know who had actually been killed in the house, but the broadcast confirmed the man in the house was dead. Bill Wade's family was called by people listening to police scanners to see if Bill Wade was dead. Bill Wade answered the phone and advised the caller he, Wade, had not been shot.

Around eight o'clock p.m. Leonard and Norma Ginter saw Tom Lee, the City of Ravenden Marshal, with two five gallon cans of fuel. Lee stopped right behind the police car the Ginters were still handcuffed to and began stirring the contents of the cans. Lee then went on to the roof of the house and poured the contents of the cans down a roof vent. The fuel was then ignited by dropping smoke grenades and tear gas canisters into the vent. Mr. Lee testified by sworn affidavit that he was ordered to do this by FBI agents at the scene.

The Ginters were then taken up the road to the top of the hill. Walking up the hill to the police car in which they would be transported, the Ginters could see their house was on fire. Gordon Kahl had been confirmed dead about forty minutes after the initial shots were fired and before the house was

burned. The evidence suggests that law enforcement officers at the scene knew Gordon Kahl was dead before fire was set. Gordon Kahl's body was found in front of a large picture window, easily visible to the SWAT Team from outside of the house.

Later independent investigation would show accelerant pour points were found all over the house, in corners, on the body as well as under the roof vents where accelerants were admitted to have been poured. The body was definitely burned by materials not found in the house. The temperature required to burn human bones is higher than what could be attained by what was in the house or even by gasoline. Neither would 10 gallons of fuel poured down the roof vents have been enough to reach the body where the body was or burn the body to the extent it was. Considering the accelerants found on the corpse at autopsy, fuel practically had to have been poured directly on the body.

The feet and one hand of Kahl' s body were either completely burned off or cut off. Part of a foot was later found suggesting that the hand and feet had been cut off. Whichever the case, the fire was hot, it was deliberately set, and it destroyed a lot of evidence.

CONCLUSION

As stated in the foreword of this paper this case is one of an unfortunate chain of events complicated by compounding errors. The negligent manner in which the original sentencing of Gordon Kahl was mishandled served to prove beyond any reasonable doubt, in Gordon Kahl' s mind, the duplicity of the Federal Government and its court system in which he was selectively prosecuted. To Gordon Kahl, the Man whom the Media and Government described as paranoid fanatic, this treatment confirmed Gordon Kahl' s belief that the courts were corrupt and validated his deeply held conviction that the U.S. Government was acting as an outlaw government.

Whether it was mere negligence or by design, the illegal warrant used to give color of law to the actions of the U.S. Marshals at Medina, North Dakota, was nothing less than a

license to kill. The illegality of the outrageous actions of the Government in provoking the incident at Medina is unconscionable and inexcusable.

The resultant proceeding was mischaracterized as resembling a trial. Whether it was the defective voir dire, improper contact and influence with the jury by the Marshal's service and a victim-witness, prosecutorial misconduct, intimidation of witnesses and legal counsel, ineffective assistance of counsel, or an assassination plot by certain government officials, any one of these issues was a gross violation of the Petitioner's right to due process of law. Anyone should be enough to warrant a reversal of the verdict. The cumulative effect of other infringements of the Petitioner's rights combined to unfairly prejudice him. The major individual issues of this case, are outrageous. It is for the prevention of this kind of government misconduct and persecution of political dissidents that constitutional protections were memorialized in the Bill of Rights.

The fiery Arkansas chapter of this saga is bizarre to say the least. Gordon Kahl was never given a chance to surrender and the officers involved did not make any attempt to subdue Kahl when they had the chance to. The cloud of suspicion that hangs over the true identity of the burned corpse found in the Ginter house may never dissipate.

The Arkansas chapter of this saga would be the last were it not for the continued unconstitutional and unjust incarceration of Yorie Kahl and Scott Faul. For thirteen years the Petitioner and Scott Faul have been model prisoners demonstrating every day they are not typical criminals, but political prisoners.

The whole Kahl affair and the injustice of it can be identified as the defining moment in American history that spawned the constitutionalist, patriot, militia movement. The events leading up to Medina and following were an injustice resembling and predating the events at Ruby Ridge, Idaho in August 1992. The conduct and atmosphere of the trial of the Medina defendants is typified by the answers received by members of the United States Senate Judiciary Committee hearings on Ruby Ridge in 1995. In response to the question from Senator Kohl, "Why is the death of a Marshal different in terms of response than if

it's a civilian?" Henry Hudson, former director of the Marshals Service, angrily replied. "Because that is the height of defiance of the government."

The Petitioner asks of you to do justice and reverse the injustice done to him and give him relief by granting him a new trial.

• ▪ ▪

The case of Yorie and Gordon Kahl, as well as the broader militia movement, were subjects I frequently discussed with Bill Colby. In fact, I was surprised by his intense interest in the whole matter. Just two weeks before he died, Bill gave me some very pointed advice on the matter.

CHAPTER 25

IN MEMORIAM BILL COLBY

On April 27, 1996, my dear friend and mentor, former Central Intelligence Agency director, William Colby, disappeared, supposedly while boating on the eastern shore of Maryland. Ten days later, his body was fished out of the water, less than a mile from his weekend home. His death was pronounced an accident, probably caused by a heart attack, resulting in his falling into the river and drowning. Bill's sudden, and tragic death, prompts me to recount some features of our 25-year relationship, which bear directly on the events under discussion in this book. They will hopefully shed further light on his amazing life, and, perhaps, also on the circumstances surrounding his most untimely death. Bill Colby was one of the pivotal figures in unearthing the Franklin scandal. Without his persistent support and guidance, this book would have never been written.

More than once, I was determined to put Franklin behind me, and write it off as a horrible experience that I could do nothing about. Often, I would ask myself, "Why should I have any responsibility to do something, when others in positions of power and government responsibility would do nothing?" I know that Senator Loran Schmit, the head of the Nebraska State Senate's Franklin investigating committee, felt the same way. I told Bill one time: "I have done all I can do, and have been burned badly-financially and credibility-wise-and, I am sure, politically. I think it's time to just let it drop."

It was at those times that Bill Colby kept encouraging me (and Senator Schmit), kept pushing us, almost forcing us to

keep going, and to keep the press apprised. To quote his exact words, "This case is so much bigger than you think. It goes to the very highest levels; we have to keep pulling the strings." His idea was not to investigate further-which he repeatedly warned me could be very dangerous-as to shine the sharp glare of publicity onto what had already been discovered, to create the possibility of a *real* investigation.

Bill always promised that he would help me as much as possible, behind the scenes and, if necessary, publicly. And, Bill always delivered.

When the Discovery Channel program, *Conspiracy of Silence,* was being prepared, the British investigative team insisted that they would not go forward on the program unless they had the on-camera personal interview, and verification of Bill Colby himself, that John DeCamp was reporting the truth with respect to Franklin, and with respect to this book, *The Franklin Cover-Up.* Colby went on camera, and thoroughly shocked the Yorkshire T.V. team in how strongly he came out, risking himself, to support me and my work on Franklin.

Bill also wrote a letter to Attorney General Janet Reno, in which he strongly recommended that the Justice Department investigate this case from the standpoint I outlined in my book, a copy of which he enclosed with his letter. He got a formal response back from a Justice Department official, promising that the Department would indeed look into the case.

But then, Bill had always backed me up, right from the earliest days, beginning in Vietnam.

• • •

I vividly remember my first encounter with Colby-in the late 1960s. He discovered me by examining files of new, young officers being shipped to Vietnam, who might have "special talents." that time, my ability to speak half a dozen lan- my training in Airborne, Jungle, and Ranger Schools. as well as Vietnamese Language School, and the fact was a newly graduated attorney when I was called into service. voiunteered for as a Combat Captain, anoar-

ently struck Colby's fancy-or at least his curiosity. Colby was officially deputy ambassador to South Vietnam at that time, but was in reality the CIA station chief. He ordered that when I showed up in Vietnam, I was to be sent directly to him. I was.

Immediately, Bill immersed me in the planning of his own creation: a secret program which would later be one of the most controversial operations of the Vietnam War-the so-called Phoenix Program. Yes, it was controversial, brutal, and at times horribly handled. But by the admission of the North Vietnamese leadership after the war, it was also the single-most effective, and most feared program the Americans carried out during the Vietnam war.

It was Bill Colby, with his power and position as ambassador in Vietnam, in 1970, that made it possible for me to accomplish something never before done or after: to run for the position of state senator from abroad. I fought my entire election campaign from Vietnam, and won it-without ever setting foot on American soil. I ran and won, despite the fact that the top brass, from the Postmaster General, to the heads of the Army and Joint Chiefs of Staff, had tried to stop me, because I was saying, for the first time, that which Bill Colby and others thought needed to be told to the American people. That was: "Let us win or get out, but let's not keep conducting a charade, where we simply kill American boys to support a corrupt regime while the truth is hidden from the American people."

Back in the States, years later, as I marched through my political life and began practice as a private attorney, I maintained the contact with Bill, and often sought his advice. He dared-when it was truly unpopular to do so-to come back to Nebraska and testify for me on controversial issues, such as the Nuclear Test Ban Treaty in May 1986.

Bill Colby had one characteristic rarely, if ever, found in politicians in this day and age. He told it like it is-the straight, unvarnished truth in simple, understandable terms.

Colby proved that, when, as head of the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), he took the CIA before the U.S. Congress, to reveal the Agency's "family jewels" and start the process of

correcting the sins of the CIA. For this, President Gerald Ford fired Colby and replaced him with a man named George Bush.

Colby told the truth again in December 1987, when he and I, and Henry Kissinger, and a couple of dozen prominent Americans, French, British, North Vietnamese, and former South Vietnamese leaders and journalists (Adm. James Stockdale; Col. Harry Summers, Jr.; George Will; Al Santoli; Jean-Louis Arnaud; Ernesto Betancourt; Jacques Chaban-Delmas; Peter Collier; Sir James Goldsmith; Douglas Pike; Lam Ngoc Diep; Robert Komer; Olivier Todd; Nguyen Ngoc Quy; David Horowitz; Elliott Abrams; Tran Van Tong, to name a few) made our way to Paris, for three days, to sit around the very same table at which the Paris Peace Talks had been conducted 15 years earlier. There we all conducted our own International Conference on the Vietnam War.

Though not heavily reported in the U.S., in the rest of the world the Conference was heralded as the first real truth session on what happened in Vietnam, on both sides, and why we ended up where we did.

• • •

Shortly before his death, Colby gave me my final assignment. It was the week just before the Oklahoma bombing, and I spent a good amount of time with him in Washington, D.C. I brought him up to date on the Militia of Montana case which he had been following closely, describing in detail the militias' fears that the government was planning an imminent attack on them.

As I sought guidance from him on how to best handle the militia situation, Bill smiled and said, "John, it sounds to me like you have the makings of another book. Believe me," he continued, "I know this MilitialPatriot movement is more significant than most Americans, and particularly the press and politicians, could ever realize. I fear that our government does not understand the nature of this movement, nor its potential significance to this country," Bill said.

As he continued talking, Bill became very intense. "I watched the Anti-War Movement render it impossible for this

country to conduct or win the Vietnam War. I tell you, dear friend, that this Militia and Patriot movement in which, as an attorney, you have become one of the centerpieces, is far more significant and far more dangerous for America than the Anti-War Movement ever was, if it is not intelligently dealt with. And I really mean this," Colby concluded.

"What are you saying?" I asked Bill. "Aren't you being a little melodramatic?" I asked him, more than a little upset at what I thought he was saying. "Dangerous?" I continued. "Hell, one Saturday night gang fight in Los Angeles is more dangerous than all the militias combined together from what I can see," I said. "In fact," I told Colby, "I'm willing to wager that you can't find any incidents of real danger or destruction across these United States that were, in fact, initiated by the militias. Every case I have ever heard about is a situation in which one of these characters was being attacked by some government agency over some rinky-dink crime in the first place," I argued. "And, so far as I can see, most of the patriot and militia people I have dealt with are the salt-of-the-earth Americans who truly believe they are trying to save America. The typical militia member is usually someone who has a lifetime of activity, establishing that role, first in the military, then as a family man or woman, and also as a businessman or hard-working lifetime employee somewhere. Most often they are mature adults, with twenty or more years of life's experiences and learning behind them, including paying taxes, being property owners, developing their communities.

"They are not, in most cases, an eighteen- or twenty-year-old kid, who has never held a job, been spoiled rotten, or ducked the draft or burned a flag or been arrested, or served time, or done drugs, or been a gang member or done drive-by shootings," I almost shouted at Colby, as I discussed this most important issue with him.

"Just what is it that makes the patriot movement and these people so dangerous?" I demanded of him.

Bill was now very intense. He spoke very slowly and very clearly, intending that there be no misunderstanding on my part of what he was saying.

"It is not because these people are armed, that America need be concerned," Bill explained to my surprise. "It is not that these people stockpile weapons and have para-military training sessions, that they are dangerous," Colby continued. "What concerns me is something far more serious, that I fear our politicians do not see, cannot see, and and refuse to deal with," Colby said.

"They are dangerous precisely *because* of everything you just said. They are dangerous because these people are, in most cases mature citizens who have done everything you just described and who, tragically and in many cases very justifiably, have lost faith in the integrity and honesty of their own government. Yes, they are dangerous because, to use your words, John, they are true patriots who are disenchanted with the government and the system they have grown up loving, supporting and giving their lives and talents for from the moment they were born. For many of them, it is as if they learned their mother was a prostitute and that they are bastards. It really is that traumatic."

I listened to Bill; I looked at him, and said, almost playing the devil's advocate by defending the politicians, "So what, Bill? There have always been unhappy people who think the politicians are crooked; that the government is bad; that the end of the world is coming or whatever. We call them nuts or crackpots or whatever and lock a few of them up now and then and go on with our business. What makes these people so much different or more dangerous than any other group who has tromped through history in the last 225 years of this country's existence?"

Then my friend, the man whom I have found to have a better grip on the processes of history than anyone else, delivered his punch line. "They are dangerous, John, because there are so many of them. It is one thing to have a few nuts or dissidents. They can be dealt with, justly or otherwise, so that they do not pose a danger to the system. It is quite another situation when you have a true movement-millions of citizens-believing something-particularly when the movement is made up of society's average, successful citizens.

"The handwriting is on the wall in several places," Colby continued. "We know from CNN and *USA Today* polls that about three out of every four Americans no longer trust their own government. And the distance between the government and the citizens is increasing instead of decreasing. And that means, quite simply, John, that there is a base of support for the patriot and militia community which is not visible and may not be seen or understood by our government. Our government and political leaders are still in the mode of viewing the outspoken and visible members of the so-called patriot movement as simply a few nuts who need to be shut up. This is a very dangerous trend. It is time for government and the media to begin closing the gap between the government, the media and the patriot movement, rather than exacerbating it.

"The first step in that process is communication," Colby continued. Then, Colby stunned me with his next declaration.

"John," he said, looking me in the eyes, "someone needs to step into the forefront and tell the story of the militias and the patriot movement-what it is, why it has developed, what it means to America if not properly addressed by government; who is involved and just how broad-based this movement or attitude is; where it is strongest, and how this movement can be positively directed, rather than negatively directed-perhaps by foreign powers.

"That is what your next book should be, and it must be written," Colby instructed, "rather than simply spoken to me. And yes, John, I will do everything to help you do this book and tell this story. Your book must become the communications device where both sides of this controversy can go to learn about themselves but, more important, to learn about the other side." Colby concluded, "And you *can* and *must* do that because you are really in the perfect position, and have the capability to do it. In fact, right now maybe you are the only one in that position."

I was shocked by Bill Colby's near-command to write a new book. True, as the attorney for some of the Montana Militia, I had been put in a unique position to see the inner workings of the militias, but from a position of objectivity, as

a lawyer. I had first been drawn into the "militia scene" as a result of the wide circulation of this book. By the militias themselves, I was seen, not as an attorney, but as a combatant, against the worst forms of obscene corruption by our government, and by our nation's so-called elites. The fact that I was a practicing attorney and a former elected official was of secondary consequence.

"I think you are serious," I said to Colby with a gentle snicker, trying to break the tension of the moment. "You really are going to help me do this militia book, as you call it-and I know when you say you will help, that means I have access to a world of intelligence and knowledge that cannot be matched anywhere else on this planet earth. I will do it," I promised Bill. "Start on it right away in fact. OK?"

"Should be a best seller," Bill Colby said. "Next time I see you here in D.C. in the middle of May, you should have the first chapter of your new book, *Militia,"* Bill said.

A few days later, on April 19, 1995, a bomb blew up the Federal Building in Oklahoma City.

Within a year, my dear friend and longtime adviser was found dead in the Chesapeake Bay.

• • ▪

I have very serious doubts about the description of Bill Colby's death that emerged from the police search and the subsequent coroner's inquiry. I do not possess any "secret information" about Bill Colby's final hours; I base my doubts on 25 years of near continuous contact and collaboration with the man, a collaboration which deepened in his final years. I knew Bill Colby very well; I knew his personal habits, his idiosyncracies.

Colby had a sailboat and his little get-away cottage, where he went as often as he could. I visited him there on several occasions, as Bill invited me sailing whenever I was in town. Inevitably, however, the weather forecast would warn of a possibility of rain, or a drop of rain would fall, or he'd notice that the moon was not in the right position, or the sun too hot,

or whatever. And Bill would decide not to take the risk and go out sailing.

My point is simple. Bill Colby was the single most meticulously careful, programmed, organized individual I have ever encountered, especially when it came to matters of safety, security, and personal activities. Therefore, the description given in the media, surrounding his death, does not cohere with Bill Colby's personality, his character, his modus operandi, and my personal experiences with him over many years. Bill Colby was not the kind of person who would take off on an evening boating expedition, leaving his computer still turned on at his desk, his half-finished dinner still sitting on the table, and most of the lights on in the cottage. That was not Bill.

Furthermore, Bill had been the victim of a "robbery" in Washington, D.C., not too long before his death, in which he had been badly beaten, and easily could have died.

This "robbery" and his actual death were both mysterious incidents, in a relatively short span of time. I have a hard time believing in coincidences, when it comes to people like Bill Colby.

His mysterious death has also brought to my mind, his own explanations of how people end up dead, in the course of our discussing the death of Franklin case investigator Gary Caradori-a death Colby himself had investigated. His exact statement on this was: it's done right, you'll never know how it was done, or who did it for sure. That's what professionalism is all about."

Colby described both professional assassinations, as well as some bungles. The case of Fidel Castro, he said, was one of the biggest fiascos that Bill had ever run across. Colby told the story how in one, now known, memorable sequence of screw-ups, the CIA tried to get Fidel's mistress to plant a tube of super toxic toothpaste onto Castro's bath stand. The ploy ultimately resulted in the girlfriend becoming a dead, ex-girlfriend. The blunders and screw-ups and lack of professionalism, in the efforts to get Castro, drove Bill to insist that the CIA should simply quit trying to assassinate him.

In contrast, Colby always used the example of Chilean Presi-

dent Salvador Allende's death as the perfect assassination. "We didn't do that one," Colby informed me. "Everybody thinks we did. But, we truly did not. Someone else got to him before we did, because we sure were planning it. But, whoever did that one, really did it right. We (CIA) are taking the blame in the minds of most governments around the world. But despite the fact that we did not assassinate Allende, everybody knew we wanted to and, whoever did it, left no trails. The best example of a perfect assassination-no trails; somebody else takes the blame; mission accomplished."

I rather suspect in my own mind that that is the situation with Colby's own death.

• • •

In the aftermath of Bill's death, a line began to emerge that Bill was either deeply depressed, or suffering from some fatal ailment, and, perhaps, took his own life. I think a recounting of my last face-to-face discussion with Bill Colby should dispel this gossip for good.

I had this meeting with Bill shortly before his death. We had a very lengthy discussion about life, and I asked him, among other things, "Bill, if you were going to pick any period of your life that you would say was the most satisfying and enjoyable, what two-, or three-, or five-year period would it be? World War II, Vietnam, your days as head of CIA? When would it be and what made it so special?"

Without hesitation-exactly one week before he died-Bill said the following:

"The last five years and for sure the next five years," Bill said.

"Are you serious?" I asked.

"Absolutely," Bill said. "Here's why. First, I have virtually no pressure; yet I am in a position to use my entire life's experiences and learning, and share them with the world to help make a difference. You know what I am doing immediately after I leave you?" Bill continued. "I am headed for Outer Mongolia to give a briefing and to talk to the heads of business and government there.

"I just got back from Italy where I did the same thing. That's what I have been doing. I love it. Travel when you want and at somebody else's expense; receive the best treatment you could imagine-equal to or better than a head of state-but without all the responsibility, and pressure, and problems. And know that when you speak, they really do listen and know that you really can make a difference in world events, sometimes even more profound than presidents of countries. I love it. And I am in as good health as I have ever been. All the things I wanted to say, and all the places I dreamed of seeing, I am doing, and I'm going to keep doing it and enjoying it for at least the next five years, I hope," Colby concluded.

"So, John, don't be discouraged," Bill assured me, "You are young yet, and your best and happiest years really are ahead of you."

• • •

At the time of his death, Bill was working with Britain's Lord William Rees-Mogg, and his American sidekick, James Dale Davidson, publishing a series of newsletters, on international events, financial opportunities, and politics. In fact, he was working on an article for one of those newsletters when he died.

Rees-Mogg and Davidson are strange birds. Lord William was, for over a decade, the editor-in-chief of the staid *Times of London,* and its *Sunday Times of London.* He fits the stereotype of the classic English "Colonel Blimp," the blunt imperialist, who periodically uncorks with a nasty mouthful of invectives against the "commoner," or the darker-skinned races. After all, he used to write that in the coming age of society, an elite of 5% of the total population would rule over the other 95% as virtual slaves. But Rees-Mogg is not justy nasty-he represents great power. In England, it has long been said that *The Times,* the flagship paper of the Establishment, regularly announces Britain's foreign policy before the Foreign Office even knows what that policy will be.

Rees-Mogg still writes a weekly column for *The Times,* and

is one of the major contributors to the newsletter, *Strategic Investment.* At the time of his death, Bill had emerged as *Strategic Investment's* leading "gee-strategist," writing a lengthy front-page article in almost every edition. (Since Bill's death, another former CIA Director, Robert Gates, has been coopted into writing a number of articles, occupying the space formerly reserved for Bill's words of wisdom.)

But on several occasions, when I saw Bill or spoke with him during the last year of his life, I'd ask him whether I should subscribe to his newsletter, or, whether he'd just give me a few copies to look over. He always told me not to waste my money.

"Ask me about any situation you're interested in, and I'll give you as thorough a briefing as I possibly can. But don't believe a word you read in that newsletter I'm writing for." Strange. But, then again, Bill Colby spent his entire adult life in the shadow world of spies and counter-spies. Maybe his involvement with Rees-Mogg was more complicated than I ever speculated.

On at least one point, I know there was a savage difference between Bill and Lord Rees-Mogg and his crowd. Rees-Mogg is one of the most vocal detractors of President Clinton and the First Lady, and often devotes his *Times ofLondon* columns exclusively to tirades against the American President. *Strategic Investment,* which goes out to a predominantly American readership, contains non-stop assaults against the Clintons. Not only was Bill's wife, Sally Shelton Colby, in a senior position in the Clinton Administration, but Colby himself had emphasized to me, repeatedly, that Clinton was a great President, and that it was urgent that he be re-elected.

And then I recall another incident, which I barely noticed at the time, but which now stands out in retrospect. Together with Rees-Mogg, the most savage press hound attacking Clinton was one Ambrose Evans-Pritchard, a Briton who has spent hundreds of hours in Arkansas "investigating" the President, and writing streams of articles in *The American Spectator,* the British *Daily Telegraph,* and other papers, attacking Clinton. Evans-Pritchard once called me, urgently demanding a meeting.

I had never heard of him before, and so asked Bill if he had ever heard of this fellow, "Evans-Prickard, or something," as I put it, barely recalling his name. Bill answered, rather ominously, as I now look back, "His name is Ambrose Evans-Pritchard. And," he said, "be very careful."

A week after our get-together, in which Bill spoke so enthusiastically about his work and his travels, he was dead-under the most unusual circumstances, his death officially labeled an "accident."

I did not believe it then, and I do not believe it now. But I do believe what Bill said: "If it's done right, you will never know how it was done, or who did it."

And so, my dear friend, I wish you a last good-bye. I will do my best to carry out the final tasks you assigned me, as I always did, so many years ago, as a Combat Infantry Captain under your command, in the rice paddies and hamlets of Vietnam.

EPILOGUE

I finally understood the true meaning of the Franklin case one night in early 1996. Watching television and skipping through the channels, I came upon the movie *Billy Budd.* Instantly I zeroed in on this movie, and my heart, rather than the channels, started skipping.

By the time the movie ended, the Franklin cover-up made sense. Alisha Owen's imprisonment for telling the truth made sense. The protection of the perpetrators by our highest public officials, finally made sense. I understood, also, why it was necessary to discredit me, John DeCamp, and to kill Gary Caradori, with his eight-year-old son. Any nagging doubts I may have had about any aspects of Paul Bonacci's charges were laid to rest. And it was clear to me, at last, that public officials at all levels *knew* Paul was telling the truth, as they set out to destroy him.

Where did the blinding revelation come from? Let me go back a few months, to my last attempt to get a new trial for Alisha Owen. At that hearing, Troy Boner, who had originally told Gary Caradori the truth, and who had been forced to recant, was preparing to testify-to tell the truth as you read it in his affidavit in Chapter 21. Troy Boner was going to provide the information in open court, under oath, that would blow the lid off the Franklin case and force a new trial for Alisha Owen.

As Troy came into the courthouse, he was immediately ushered into a private room by county judicial authorities. He was advised that a "Special Attorney" had been appointed to protect him. For approximately one hour, *while the hearing was delayed,* Troy was cornered in a room with this "Special Attorney" and with other officials from the prosecutor's office,

the same prosecutorial team Troy was about to testify against.

When Troy came out of the meeting, I knew he was broken, his morale smashed. His head hung down. He could not, or would not look at anyone.

As I approached Troy, his new court-appointed attorney tried to step between us. With probably the last ounce of courage he could muster, Troy leaned over and whispered to me, "Oh God, forgive me. They guaranteed if I talk here today, they will put me away for twenty years. Guaranteed I would never see the light of day again. Told me that I would be charged with perjury for my original testimony, if I opened my mouth today in court. Don't call me up there. I can't survive in prison. I know they can put me there. Look what they did to Alisha. Look what they did to my brother. I've got no choice. They told me I had to take the Fifth Amendment and refuse to testify. Otherwise, they promised I would be taken directly from court to jail."

We all proceeded into the court room, where I called Troy to the stand. I showed Troy his affidavit. He hung his head, and when I asked my first question, "Would you please state your name?" Troy responded, "I take the Fifth Amendment," an answer he repeated, in a barely audible voice, to all my other questions.

It was hopeless. I ceased my questioning, and shortly thereafter the hearing ended.

I walked back to the judge's chambers to clear up any final details. Judge Enbody had been specially appointed by the Nebraska State Supreme Court to this hearing, which I had won from the Supreme Court based on Troy's new information. (The next day I learned that he had been appointed to the Court of Appeals-a very substantial advancement in his career.)

Sitting in Judge Enbody's chambers, with my head hung so low it was hitting my shoestrings, I was given the key to unlock the meaning of Franklin.

"I do not understand it, Your Honor," I kept repeating. "As God is my witness, I do not think that there is a judge or other person involved in this case who does not know that horrible

injustice has been done. Everybody *knows* that Alisha Owen is telling the truth and that she is being punished for it. And, Your Honor, a person has to be deaf, dumb, blind, and totally dishonest, not to know that some of this state's and nation's top businessmen and public officials have engaged in the worst crimes possible, which are now being covered up. And these kids, instead of being honored and protected for exposing these things, are being sent to prison. Why? Why? Why?"

Judge Enbody looked at me. Slowly, his voice shaking, he began to talk.

"I am just a man. I am not a god. I wish I were. I have no choice in what I have done. I am just a man, just a man, not a god. I am doing what I must do with the evidence before me," Judge Enbody concluded. He appeared even more shaken and upset than I was.

I shook my head. "I don't understand. I just don't understand," I kept repeating. "Everybody knows what is happening, but nobody is willing to do anything about it. Why? Why?!!"

Judge Enbody looked at me and said, very slowly, "If you want to understand the entire Franklin case, I can help you. Go read 'Billy Budd.' Read 'Billy Budd.' If you will do that, John, and if you understand the book, then you will understand the what and why of Franklin, and why it can be no other way. I do not say you will like it. I do not say you will agree with it. But at least you will understand it. That, I promise you. Go read 'Billy Budd'."

Those were the last words I spoke with the Judge on the case. I left his chambers, burnt out, but angry. And I forgot all about Billy Budd, until the night I happened upon the movie.

The story of Billy Budd is set in the British Navy near the end of the eighteenth century. Billy was a young sailor, who, although impressed into the British Navy, bore no ill will to the authorities for having dragooned him; indeed, he was the very picture of innocence and good-will, and was almost universally loved aboard his war-ship. One officer, however, developed an insane jealousy of Billy, and set out to frame him up for allegedly inciting mutiny. Since there had been several notorious mutinies in the British fleet at the time, the mere

whisper of "mutiny" was enough to spread panic among the ship's officers.

To make a long story short, because of certain incriminating *appearances* in the case, the captain and his senior officers, although they knew Billy was innocent of all charges, nonetheless sentenced him to hang, a necessity-as they viewed it–to "save the system," not just on their own ship, but in the British fleet as a whole.

Now I think I do understand the Franklin case. I know, now, that all the public officials involved in Franklin-whether they ever heard of Billy Budd or not-fully understood what they were doing.

And what they all have done, and will continue to do in this case, Franklin, and no doubt many others like it, is this: Protect the "system" at all costs. The "system" is the only ultimate sacred cow-not any particular law or constitution, but only "the system." Because, ultimately, it is the system which makes certain that the individuals functioning within it-from judges to lawyers, to prosecutors, to politicians, to businessmen-have their places and positions, and opportunities and pecking order, and future.

And, though it is unfortunate, that on occasion the protection of the "system" requires the deliberate sacrifice of perfectly innocent people, that is hoped overall to be the exception rather than the rule. But without the "system" ...

So, Judge Enbody, now I understand. And, as you said, I may not agree, but I do understand.

But then I have one final, nagging question. How do I know when, or if, the "system" itself has become so corrupted, that evil is the rule, rather than the exception? And when that occurs, what do I do about it?

But I think I know the answer to that one-myoId commanding officer in Vietnam told me what I had to do. I made some promises to Bill, and I intend to keep them.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Senator John DeCamp-Author, Attorney, 16-Year-Nebraska State Senator, Vietnam War Vet, Businessman-was selected as 2005 Nebraska Vets Council President. Vets Council consists of VFW/Am Vets/American LegionlDisabled Vets.lOrder of Purple HeartlVietnam Vets., LEADERS.

DeCamp made military history and political history with his first and only one of its kind 1970 Senate campaign run directly from Vietnam, where DeCamp was an Infantry Captain detailed to then-Ambassador William E. Colby, later CIA Director and DeCamp's lifelong friend. Captain DeCamp won that 1970 Nebraska Senate election run from Vietnam without setting foot on U.S. soil.

From 1974 through 1986, Senator DeCamp was hailed by the *Omaha World Herald* as the "... most powerful and effective senator in Nebraska." But, since writing this book, *The Franklin Cover-Up,* the *Omaha World Herald* has attacked Senator DeCamp on front pages and editorially as the *World Herald's* worst enemy.

DeCamp was born in Nebraska but his unusual experiences early in life helped make him a man of uncommon independence and determination. On his own from the age of thirteen, DeCamp traveled, lived, and worked in Europe and Iran, spoke SIX languages and graduated with a Doctor of Law Degree and became an attorney in 1967 in the Nebraska Bar when he was called to duty and ended up in Vietnam.

DeCamp was a captain in Vietnam War and worked directly

for Ambassador Colby to help establish the "Phoenix Program," which program DeCamp today condemns.

In 1975, as Saigon was falling, DeCamp excused himself from the Nebraska Senate, went to Vietnam in the final days before Vietnam collapsed, and initiated and organized the world famous "Operation Baby Lift." This program evacuated 2,800 Vietnamese/American children orphaned in the war. These children were brought to the USA, where all were adopted or reunited with people from their own families.

For this act, DeCamp was honored at the White House by the President of the United States, recognized by the u.S. Senate and, after being selected by newspaper editors across the U.S., was named and decorated by the Veterans Support Group "No Greater Love" as one of the Eight Most Outstanding Veterans of the Vietnam War.

In 1991 John DeCamp filed the first-of-its-kind lawsuit in Federal Court charging THE OMAHA CATHOLIC ARCHDIOCESE and fifteen other prominent individuals and institutions, including Larry King and *World Herald* Publisher Harold Andersen, with conspiracy to deprive Paul Bonacci of his civil rights. DeCamp's suit detailed slander, false imprisonment, child abuse, assault, battery and infliction of emotional distress suffered by Bonacci. THIS LAWSUIT with the Catholic archdiocese of Omaha as the FIRST NAMED DEFENDANT was attacked by the press and the politicians, and particularly certain members of the Catholic clergy as absolutely sinful and unforgiveable and outrageous in the extreme. And, the Federal Judge allowed almost immediately for the Catholic Bishop and Archdiocese to be excused from the suit. But, with persistence from DeCamp, and DeCamp's presentation of pictures and witnesses the pedophiles had denied even existed and shocking information that had previously been denied by all the defendants, A ONE MILLION DOLLAR JUDGMENT was won by DeCamp in the case against Larry King, the remaining defendant, who is prominent in this book.

INDEX

ABC-TV, 148
Abel, George P., 158
Abrams, Elliott, 380
Adams, Don, 258, 261
Agency for International Development, xi, 177
Ak-Sar-Ben, Knights of, 132--4, 136, 144-5
Albert, Paula, 150
Albert Food Brokerage, 135
Albert, Michael, 135
Alejos Arzu, Roberto, 180
Allen, Alfie, 69-70, 77
Allende, Salvador, 386
ALPHA, 329
Amato, Angelo, 135
Ambrose, David, 135
Amen, Paul, 41-2, 44, 47-8
America First Corp., 134, 144, 158-9
American Association for Protecting Children, xviii
American Express, 148
American Investment Group, 44-6
American Savings Company, 40-1
American Spectator, 388
America's Most Wanted, 278, 290-2
Americares, 180
Ameritas Financial Services, 158
Andersen, Harold, 63, 68-71, 77, 92,94-5, 100, 110, 115, 128, 130-1, 134-5, 138--40, 142-5, 160, 177-8,218,251,288, 327, 395
Andresen, Robert, 80, 82, 83, 109-10, 146,314
Andrews, Mark, 356
Antelope County (Nebraska), 203
Anti-Defamation League, 242, 294
Anti-War Movement, 380-1
Aquino, Michael, xx, 328-30
Arkansas, 388
Arnaud, Louis, 380
Artichoke, Project, 328
Aryan Nation, 330
Association for Voluntary Sterilization, 148
Atlantic Telecast, 281-2
Austin (Texas), 100
A*vvenimenti, 241*

Baack, Dennis, 83
Baer, Alan, 68-71, 73, 77-9, 81-2, 87,92, 100-2, 107, 124, 132, 136, 140, 145, 158, 189, 204, 217,239,248,250-1,302-4, 308, 313-16, 321, 327
Bahamas, 172
Bahensky, Melvin, 40, 244
Bailey, Edd H., 159
Baird-Holz, 135

Baker, Bill, 250
Bakersfield (California), 234, 238
Bamberg, N.C., 330
Bank of England, 331
Barbee, James, 45
Barker, Joseph III, 135-7
Barksdale, John, 152-3
Barnett, Wally, 254
Batchelder, Anne S., 158
Beerman, Alan, 1
Believe the Children, 240
Benes, Richard, 203
Benson, Paul, 353, 356, 365, 366
Bentz, Bob, 237-8
Bentz, Lois, 237-8
Berkshire Hathaway, 148
Berney, Melvin, 183
Berry, John Stevens, 30-1, 122, 182, 190, 194, 196, 222, 293
BETA, 329
Betancourt, Emesto, 380
Bevel, Rev. James, 4, 222-3, 241-3
Billings, Montana, 336
Billington, Michael, 295
Black Democrats for McGovern, 54
Blair (Nebraska), 6, 211
Blassingame, James, 371
Bloods and Cryps, 240, 320, 323
Bluebird Project, 328
Bodies by God, 169
Boggs*, Millie, 75-6
Bohemian Grove, 326
Bohle, Terry J., 199
Bomberg, Nate, 38
Bonacci, Paul, xvii-xviii, xxiv-xxv, 4, 100-5, 108, 111, 113-4, 118, 124-8, 138, 147-8, 154, 167, 197,201,203-4, 212-7,225-6,228-34,236-9, 241-2,244-5, 248, 290-2, 301-4,308,316,318,321, 323, 326-30, 390, 394-6
Boner, Loni, 78-9, 187,306
Boner, Shawn, 250, 306, 317
Boner, Troy, 69-74, 77-81, 84, 100, 102, 108, 110, 113-4, 116, 138, 186-90, 192-4,243, 248, 250, 286, 292, 301, 305-19. 390-1
Bookout, John G., 158
Boston (Massachusetts), 169
Bovasso, Ken, 26, 227
Bowman, Steve, 154
Boy Scouts, 143, 157
Boyle, Mike, 141
Boys Club, 140, 157
Boys Town, 8, 13-4, 34, 36, 57, 69,72, 139, 150-7, 163, 176, 200, 283-85, 287, 293
Bradford, Coenen, and Ashford, 135
Bradford, Dana, 135
Breiner, Dr., 48
Brewton, Pete, 173
British Foreign Office, 387
Broer, David, 360-1, 364, 367
Broer, Joanne, 367
Broom, James Teddy, 74
Brown, Frank, 29-30, 188,311
Brown, Jerry, 271
Bryan Memorial Hospital, 304
Bryant, Ernest E., 164
Buckey, Peggy McMartin, xx
Buckey, Raymond, xx
Buffett, Howard, 150, 159
Buffett, Susie, 148-50
Buffett, Warren E., xi, xv, 138, 148-51, 159,270
Warren Buffett Foundation, 148
Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, and Firearms, 332, 342
Burger, Warren, 175
Burt County (Nebraska), 203
Bush, George, xi, xv, xxiii, 12, 40, 53, 94, 164-6, 169, 174-8, 180,263,272,304, 321-3, 325, 326, 380
Bush, Neil, 173

Bush, Prescott, 180
Byrne, Joseph, 137
Byrne and Randall, P.e., 135, 137

Cable-TV, 287-8
Cairo (Nebraska), 117
Calder, Sheila (see McGuire)
California, xx, 50, 72-3, 75-6, 80, 100, 102, 222, 234, 238-40, 270, 320, 326, 330
Canada, 234. 241
Caniglia, Joe, 124. 236
Caporaso. Giovanni. 241
Caracorp, 3, 142, 188
Caradori, Andrew (AJ.), xii, 2-4. 187.221-3.250
Caradori, Dick, 3
Caradori, Gary, xii, xxiii, 1-4, 66-9, 75-7. 82, 86-8, 100. 102. 106, 110-3. 115. 125, 131. 136-8,141-3,156. 166. 177. 183-9.191-7.200-1.215, 220-3. 226-7. 240, 246-7, 250,286, 301, 304. 305-313, 321. 385. 390
Caradori, Mary, 3-4.221-3
Caradori, Sandie, 1. 3. 186-88, 222. 243, 311. 313
Caradori, Sean. 187
Carlson. Dennis. 25-6. 34-5, 57, 183
Carlson. Theodore. 72, 74, 77, 100. 110
Carmean.Trl (Chris), 15-6, 18-21, 25-8, 35, 156. 183. 227
Carmen, David. 174
Carmen, Gerald. 174
Carmen, Carmen and Hugel, 174-5
Carpenter, Terry. 254, 257
Carter, James, 356
Casey, Michael, 110, 121-2, 168. 184-5, 194
Casey, William, 174-5, 178, 180, 327
Castro, Fidel, 385
CBS-TV. 178,218,226
Cedar County (Nebraska), 203
Central Intelligence Agency, xi, xiii, 4, 59, 170-80, 253-4, 277, 320, 322, 323, 324, 327-8. 342, 379-80, 385-6, 388
Chaban-Delmas, Jacques. 380
Chaitkin, Anton, 325
Chambers. Ernie, 27, 35-7,53-4, 56-8, 65. 110, 114, 117, 120-**I,** 129, 136. 139, 145, 166, 181, 239, 254, 259
Chesapeake Bay. 384
Cheshire, Jimmy, 154-5
Home Boy, 154-5
Cheshire, Robert, 358, 360-4
Chicago, 2-4. 12. 80. 108. 176. 198, 201
Chicago Tribune, xix
Children's Civil Rights Committee. 244
Children's Defense Fund, xviii
Chizek. Jerry. 88
Christie Institute. 180
Citizens' Fact-Finding Commission to Investigate Human Rights Violations in Nebraska. 241-2
Citizens for America, 173-4, 322
Citron. Peter. 71, 77, 92. 94-5. 100. 108. 115. 124, 283, 287, 301, 308-9, 314
Clark, Ramsey, 296
Clatty. Robert. 282
Clinton, Bill, 271, 388
CNN. 278, 345, 383
Cocozza Lubisco, Massimiliano, 241
Cohn, Roy E., 179
Colby, William E., xi-xv, 4. 171. 247-9. 253, 277. 300. 324-5, 376, 377-389
Colby, Sally Shelton, xi-xii, 388
Cold War, 323-4
Colorado, 103,231.233-4,263
Collier, Peter, 380

Comine, Lawrence Jr., 158
Commercial Federal Savings and Loan, 130, 134-5
Commonwealth Depositors' Committee, 244
Commonwealth Savings Company, 39-44,47-8,51-2,60-1,63-4, 73, 92, 95, 250, 263-4, 266, 268-70, 272. 289-90
Communist Party, U.S.A., 296
Compton, Jackie, 73
ConAgra, 132, 134-6, 158
Concerned Citizens for Responsible Government, 40, 42
Concerned Parents, 1-2, 110, 113, 121, 240, 327
Congressional Black Caucus, 298-9
Connecticut Correctional Institute, xviii
Connor, John, 338-40
Conspiracy of Silence, 285-8, 378
Consultants International, 179
Consumer Services Organization, 53, 134
Copple family, 39, 44, 47
Copple, Marvin, 41, 43
Copple, Newt, 250
Copple, S.B., 41-4, 51, 250
CORDS Program, 394
Corrigan, Judge, 88-9
Cosentino, Bonnie, 121
Coulter, FBI Agent, 195
Council Bluffs (Iowa), 72, 78, 81, 191,316
Council for Minority Americans, 174
Covenant House, 180-1
Creager, Robert, 30-1, 126-7, 197
Credit Suisse, 174
Crnkovich, Liz, 37
Crooks, Lynn, 364, 366-7, 370
Crowley, Aleister, xx
Cult Awareness Network, 242
Culver, Rick, 185,221, 306, 310, 313
Cutshall, Jill, 231

Daily Telegraph, 388
Dallas (Texas), 43, 54-5, 100, 103, 164, 166, 265
Daniels, LeGree, 165
Daub, Hal, 135
Daugherty, Robert H., 158
Davidson, James Dale, 387
Davis, Florence, 74-6
Davis, James Martin, 226
Days Inn Lakefront Motel (Chicago), 3
DeCamp, Jennifer, 63-4, 168
DeCamp, John, xi, xxiii, 47, 50, 54-6,61-5,85-99,110,113-4, 118, 127, 141, 146-8, 164, 166-7,170-2,181-2,201, 214-5,226,230-1,244-6, 252-272, 277-300, 305-9, 317-18,323-25, 332-48, 376-396
DeCamp Memo, xxiii-xxiv, 85-97, 99, 106-7
Deep Backgrounder, 178
Delman, Marc, 189, 309, 311-6, 318
DELTA, 329
Demjanjuk, John, 296-7
Densen-Gerber, Judianne, xvii, 4, 126-7,204, 211-3, 217, 229
Denver (Colorado), 103, 173, 330
Department of Social Services (see Nebraska)
Derr, Jason, 138, 288
Des Moines, 78-9, 100, 229, 232-4,330
Des Moines Register, 229-30, 233-4
Deutsch, John, 320
Diep, Lam Ngoc, 380
Dillon, Special Agent, 199-200

Dinsdale, Roy, 158
Dinsdale Brothers, 158
Discovery Channel, 285-8, 378
Dixon and Dixon, 73
Dodge, N.P. **II,** 135
N.P. Dodge Real Estate, 135
Doe*, Jane (grand jury witness), 118, 120-1, 123
Domina, David, 47-8
Dorr,Robert, 90-1, 99, 217, 242
Dougherty, Terry, 119, 121-3
Douglas, Paul, 47-8, 51, 259
Douglas County (Nebraska), xvii, 36, 88-9
  Attorney's Office, 4,36-7,74, 123-5, 189, 201, 239
  Grand Jury, 4, 106-128, 146, 148,184,189-90,196-7, 20I, 214, 222, 224, 228, 243, 246, 271-2, 300-1, 305-6,309-11,313-4, 317-8
Dream Boys, 169
Dresden, 330
Drexel, Burnham, Lambert, 50
Drug Enforcement Agency, 138
Dulles, Allen, 331
Durham, Charles W., 158
Durham, Steven, 158
Durham Resources, 158
Dymally, Mervyn, 297-8

East Germany, 330
Eaton, Tinstman, Druhner, 158
Editor and Publisher, 151
Eisenhower, Dwight D., 178
Eisenstatt, Leo, 135, 137
Elkhorn (Nebraska), 101
Ellena, Frank Eugene, 336-7
Emilio (Last name unknown), 232-4,236
Erickson, Sederstrom, Leigh, Eisenstatt, Johnson, Kinnamon, 135, 137-8
ESP, 324
Esping, Perry E., 158
Eureka, Montana, 336
European Citizens' Initiative to Proect Life and Human Dignity, 241
Evans, Mary Kay, 246
Evans-Pritchard, Ambrose, 388-9
Evansville (Illinois), xix
Executive Intelligence Review, xx, 241,325
Executive Life Insurance Co., 50
Executone Company, I
Exon, U., 63-4, 144, 261

Farmers National Co., 159
Faul, Scott, 359, 361, 362-4, 367, 370, 375
Faul, Shauna, 361, 367
Federal American Immigration Reform, 149
Federal Bureau of Investigation, xix-xxi, xxv, 3, 37, 53, 60-1, 85-6,88, 121, 152, 170, 182-200,211,218,220,227-8, 241-2,251, 254, 284, 291-4, 296, 297, 301, 304, 306, 309-14,316,318,325,327,332, 342, 343, 371
Federal Witness Protection Program, 292, 306
Fenner, Robert, 96, 170-2, 197, 247
Ferraro, Geraldine, 63
Fiala, Fr., 200
Fifth Amendment, 391
Financial Advisory Group, 60, 172
Finch, Deward, 9, 13, 20, 23, 67, 72, 77, 83, 202
First Amendment, 333, 352
First Data Resources, 158
First National Bank of Lincoln, 45, 159, 259
First National Bank of Omaha, 134

FirsTier Bank, 45, 138, 145, 150, 158-9, 259, 288-9
FirsTier Financial, Inc., 134, 145, 158-9
Fisher, Dennis, 364, 370
Fitzgerald, William A., 130, 134
Fitzwater, Marlin, 39
Flanagan, Michael, 116, 122, 146-8
Flanery, James Allen, 58, 170, 322
Fletcher, Philip B., 158
Forbes, Steve, 149
Forbes magazine, 149,231
Ford, Gerald, 253, 380
Fort Bragg (N.C.), 330
Fort Calhoun (Nebraska), 5, 9, 13, 72,75
Fort Defiance (Va.), 330
Fort Riley (Ks.), 330
Fortune magazine, 148
48 Hours, 244, 315-316
Foster Care Review Board (see Nebraska)
Foxall, Pitmon, 28
Franklin, Benjamin, xxv
Franklin Committee (see Nebraska Legislature)
Franklin Community Federal Credit Union, xxi, xxiii, 5, 8, 51, 53, 57, 59-61, 68-9, 73, 77, 92-3,96, 107-8, 134-6, 138-9, 143, 145-6, 154-5, 160-3, 165, 169, 173, 181, 184, 189, 245, 288-9, 300, 323
Franklin Cover-Up, The, 277-9, 280, 285, 325, 326, 332, 378
Frederick Douglass Republican Council, Nebraska, 165
Fredricks, Gary, 367-9
Freedom of Information Act, 288, 295, 296, 298
Freemen, 332-3
Fremont (Nebraska), 6, 211
French Cafe, 71-2, 113, 131, 150
Friedman, Hirsch, 297-8
Gage, Kelton, 236
GAMMA,329
Gates, Robert, 388
Gentlemen's Quarterly, 137, 149
George Town Club, 179-80
Georgia, 251
Georgiu*, Margo, 15-7, 24, 31
Germany, 222, 229, 241, 330
Gilbert, Ron, 80, 82
Gillespie, Carol, 155
Gillespie, Doyle, 155
Gilliam, DuBois, 55
Ginter, Leonard, 370-2
Ginter, Norma, 370, 372
Gittins, Jody, 189
Globe Neon, 61
Goc, John, 90
Godfather's Pizza, 142
Goldsmith, James, 380
Goodrich, Lt., 28, 183
Gosch, John Sr., 230-1, 291, 330
Gosch, Johnny, 229-34, 291-2, 330
Gosch, Noreen, 230-1, 233, 291
Gottschalk, John, 51, 270-1
Graf, Darrell, 360, 361-2
Grand Island (Nebraska), 40, 100
Gray, Robert Keith, 178-80
Gray and Company, 178, 180
Gregg, Donald, 169
Gregory, Joanie, 167, 195-6
Gritz, Bo, 342
Groth, A. Nicholas, xviii
Gugas, Chris, 112
Guatemala, 180
Gunderson, Ted, xx-xxi, 211, 343, 346

Haberman, Rex, 54-5
Haiti,59
Hallberg, Kirstin, 27, 33-4, 36, 58, 152-3
Hansel, Robert, 142
Harper, Charles (Mike), 132-4
Harris, Sen., 41

Hart, Adrienne, 27
Hart, Jack, 268
Hart, James C. Jr., 134
Harvey, Mary Jane, 156, 173
Harvey, Tom, 173
Hastreiter, E.M., 203
Healy, James, 135
Heavican, Mike, 64
Hebenstreit, Joe, 188
Heidelberg, Hoppi, 343-4
Henry, Fr. Pat, 200
Higgins, Marge, 46
Hill and Knowlton, 178, 180
Hinton, David, 135
Hobbs, Edward, 181
Hoch, Michael, 17-8,27, 101
Hoffman Estates (111.), 345
Hoig, Bob, 50
Hoppner, Bill, 270-1
Hornung, Rick, 168
Horowitz, David, 380
Hougan, Jim, 179
Secret Agenda, *179*
Houston (Texas), 100
Houston Post, *173*
Howard, Clare, 81, 250-1
Howe, Woody, 140
Howland, William, 34-5, 109, 183
Hudson, Henry, 376
Hugel, Max, 174
Hughes, David, 113
Humphrey, Hubert (Skip) Jr., 236
Hupp, Msgr. Robert, 155, 283-5

Illinois, 12, 80, 108, 176, 198, 201
Immanuel Hospital, 24
Industrial Chemical Laboratories, 159
Internal Revenue Service, 53, 295, 351, 357-8
Iowa, 72, 78-9, 81, 206, 229-34, 251
Iran-Contra scandal, 96, 169-75, 180, 247, 270, 320, 323, 347
Itzen, Edward H., 222

Jacobi, Dale Martin, 336-7
Jamaica,
James, Cajun, 337
James, Harold, 323
Jamrog, Jerome, 135
Johnson, Kent, 51, 61
Johnson, Mark, 330
Johnson, Yard, 49
Jones, Buzz, 336-9
Jordan (Minnesota), 234-7
Joyce, Jerry, 45
Justice Department (see U.S.)

Kahl, Gordon, 278, 294, 348-76
Kahl, Joan, 354, 355, 357
Kahl, Yorie, 348-52, 359-67, 371, 375-6
KAM Airlines, 103, 124
Kansas City (Missouri), 34, 58, 73, 93, 100, 124
Kansas City Star, 65, 93
Kapp, Bradley, 360, 362, 363
Karnes, David, 144
Karpis, Alvin, 38
Keeler Polygraph Institute, 286
Kenefick, John, 146, 158, 163
Kennedy, John A. and Associates, 345
Kennedy, John F., 64, 272
Kern County (California), 238
Kerrey, Robert, xi, xv, 38-52, 60, 73, 252-273, 281, 290
Kerry, John, 322
Kessler, Frank, 74
KETV (Channel 7), 29, 114, 188
KGB, 277, 297
Peter Kiewit and Sons Corporation, 132, 134, 144-5, 158, 161, 163,65
Kiewit Foundation, 130, 161
King, Alice, 12,36, 149-50, 174

King, Danny, 70, 72-4, 80-4, 100, 102, 108, 110-1, 114, 116, 138,186,192,248,318
King, Lawrence E. (Larry), xi, xvii, xxi-xxiii, 5, 9-14, 16-8, 20-1,23-6, 28-34, 36, 52, 54-61,67,69-74,76-81,83, 87,92, 100-11, 123, 125, 127-31,134,136-9,141-2, 145-6, 148-58, 160-3, 164-78, 181, 195, 197, 199-203, 217, 224-225, 239-40, 245, 248, 250-1, 283, 287, 288-9, 300, 308-9, 314, 316, 318-9, 321, 322, 323, 326-7, 395
King, Martin Luther Jr., 241
King, Prince, 12, 168
King Horse, 23, 74, 110-1, 202
Kirchner, Robert, 51, 60
Kirk, Arthur, 117
Kirk, Dee, 117
Kissinger, Henry, 296, 380
KKAR radio, 28-9, 140, 173
Kleier, Larry, 238
Knox County (Nebraska), 203
Komer, Robert, 380
Kopf, Richard G., 52, 166, 184, 303-4
Koppel, Ted, 278
Korean War, 324
Kotok, C. David, 40, 257, 272
Kupres, Alan, 154
Kutak, Rock, and Huie, 135

Labedz, Bernice, 83, 128, 185, 189, 194,221,261-3, 273, 312, 316
LaFountain, Jerry, 367-9
Lahners, Ron, 199
Lamberty, Louis, 135
Lamenga, Carol, 361-2, 369
Lamenga, Mark, 361-2, 369
Lancaster County (Nebraska), 203
Lanning, Kenneth, xix-xx
Lanphier, Trish, 2, 113
LaRouche, Lyndon H., 241-2, 295-6
Larry (Last name unknown), 70, 72-4, 83, 101, 110-1, 202
Las Vegas (Nevada), 103, 105, 222, 234, 326
Lauritzen, Bruce, 134
LaVey, Anton, xx
Leahy, Eugene, 144
Leavenworth Prison, 352, 353
Lee County (Illinois), 2
Lee, Tom, 373
Levco, Stanley, xix
Lewis, Mike, 251
Liddy, G. Gordon, 231
Lincoln (Nebraska), 2,40-1,44-5, 48-9,51,59,61, 100,231
Lincoln Journal, 3, 36, 50-1, 58, 89-92, 97, 117, 139, 143, 145,149,177,183,256,262, 270
Lincoln Police Department, 61, 64
Lincoln Star, 42, 50, 253
Linquist, Lloyd, 75-6
Lontor, Charles, 241
Lopez, Amando Gerry, 336-7
Los Angeles (California), xx, 72-3, 198, 240, 320, 323, 381
Louisville State Park, 142
Lowe, Jerry, 21, 51, 59-61, 65-6, 122, 137, 142, 152-3, 156, 170, 173, 176, 184, 240
Luedtke, Roland, 65, 259
Lynch, Dan, 83, 124, 138, 185, 196-7,221
Lyons-Barrett, Mary, 1, 100

Maas, Peter, 179
Manhunt, 179
MacAuley, Robert, 180-1
Madison County (Nebraska), 203
Maenner, John R., 159
Maenner Co., 159
Mahoney, Eugene, 71, 110, 138,

140-1,143-44,308-9,314, 316, 395
Malek, Joe, 251
Man to Man, 169
Marchetti, Victor, 179
Martin, Eugene, 233
Marvin, Samuel, 135
Masonic, 353, 357, 365
Massachusetts Mutual Insurance Co., 135-7
Massengale, Martin A., 159
Mathews, Gene, 372-3
Mattson, Lloyd H., 159
Max Bar, 16, 18, 20, 74, 78-9, 136, 150
McArthur*, Sally, 5, 75
McArthur*, Sean, 5, 10,75
McArthur*, Steve, 5, 75
McAuley, Leslie, 135
McFarland, Sen., 65
McFarlane, Robert, 180
McGuire, Sheila, 131
McKenney, Thomas, 72, 74, 110
McMartin Preschool, xx
McVeigh, Timothy, 343-4, 345, 347
Mead, Beverly, 118, 126-7
Medina shoot-out, 348, 349, 350, 358, 359-64, 371, 374
Meese, Edwin, 175
Melville, Herman, 279; *Moby Dick*, 279; "Billy Budd," 390, 392-3
Mendenhall, Frances, 240, 243
Menks, Astrid, 150
Metropolitan magazine, 129-30, 175,327
Mexico, 330
Miami (Florida), 100
Midlands magazine, 139
Militia of Montana (MOM), 332-42, 380, 383
MilitiaJPatriot Movement, 380-4
Miller, Donald, 135
Miller, John, 47
Miller, Kent, 9, 13
Minneapolis Star-Tribune, 38, 235
Minnesota, 38, 100,231, 233-8
Minton, John D., 159
Missing Children's Foundation, 231
Missouri, 34, 58, 73, 93, 100, 124, 206
MK-Ultra, 328
Monarch Project, 303, 323-31
Montana Seven, 334-41
Montana State Legislature, 333, 334
Moody, Randy, 49
Moore, Barbara, 134
Moore, Thomas N., 159
Moran, Gerald, 125, 218, 225, 304, 313
Morgan, P.J., 72, 80, 82, 110, 133, 144, 254
Morino, Bob, 102
Morris, Kathleen, 234-5
Mott, Mickey, 185, 188, 192, 197, 306,310, 312, 313
Muir, Ken, 356-7, 360, 362, 365, 368
Mullen, Judge Patrick, 225
Multiple Personality Disorder, 126, 214,217,326-9
Murphy, James M., 201
Murray State Bank, 135
MusselShell County, 333, 340
Mutual of Omaha, 134, 159-60, 163

NAMBLA,330
National Bank of Commerce, 43, 48
National Black Caucus of State Legislators, 298-9
National Black Republican Council, xxi, 164-5, 176
National Child Abuse Defense and Resource Center, xxiii
National Credit Union Administra-

tion (NCUA), 53, 55, 60-1, 96, 170-2, 181, 197,247, 288-9
National Endowment for Democracy, 175
National Narcotics Border Interdiction System, 321
National Public Radio, 149
National Transportation Safety Board, 4, 201
Naylor, Kirk, 51, 59, 65
Nazis, 326-7, 331
NEBCO Inc., 158
Nebe, R.I., 189
Nebraska, State of
Attorney General's Office, 35, 48, 116
Banking Department, 46, 48
Claims Board, 289-90
Department of Social Services, 5-8, 14, 76, 195
Foster Care Review Board, 24-5, 27, 52, 54, 57-8, 60, 109, 122, 183
Legislature, xxii, 40, 48, 53, 56, 91, 133, 136, 219, 221, 226, 244, 252-5, 257, 259-61, 264-5, 267, 289-90, 395
Banking, Commerce and Insurance Committee, 44, 46-7, 50, 52, 54, 56, 257, 266
Executive Board, 24-6, 34, 36-7, 56-8, 129, 136, 152,219,239
Franklin Committee, xxii, 1, 4, 21, 28, 30, 35, 51, 59-62, 65-6, 68, 83, 91, 95-6, 110, 114-5, 118, 124, 127-9, 131, 146, 164, 171, 181-6, 190, 197,211,217-21,240, 242,250,293, 301, 310, 312, 377
Liquor Control Commission, 47
Parole Board, 244-5
Senate (see Legislature)
Small Business Development Authority, 48
State Patrol, 8, 36, 60, 62, 152, 195-6, 203, 221-2, 227
Supreme Court, 289-90, 300, 391
Nebraska Investment Finance Authority (NIFA), 40, 49-50, 269
Nebraska Leadership Conference, 223, 243
Nebraska Observer, 120, 123, 240, 243–4
Nebraska State Bar Association, 90-1, 97-8
Nebraska Wildlife Federation, 140
Negative Population Growth, 148-9
Nelson, Rusty, 15-8,31-2,67,71, 76
Nelson, W. Don, 264
Nesbitt, Arnold, 135-6
New Federalist, 325
New Hampshire, 271
New Orleans (Louisiana), 54, 164, 167
New York City, 12,229
New York State Police, 4
New York Times, xviii, xxii
Nguyen Ngoc Tuy, 380
Nicaragua, 59, 170, 174, 320, 322
Nichols, Terry, 343-4, 347
Nightline, 278
Nixon, Richard M., 165, 253, 268
Norfolk (Nebraska), 231
Norman, Montagu, 331
North Carolina State Legislature, 272
North, Oliver, 180,321, 322
North American Man-Boy Love Association (NAMBLA), 229

Northern Natural Gas, 135
Northwest Bell, 135, 159
Noxon, Montana, 342
Nuclear Test Ban Treaty, 379
Nuernberger, W.W., 64

Oklahoma City bombing, 277, 332, 343-7,380, 384
Offutt Air Base, 175, 327-30
O'Hara, Nicholas, 85-6, 88, 182-3, 198,241, 251, 304
Omaha (Nebraska), xvii, xxi, 1, 8-9, 13, 15-6, 18,22, 25, 28-30, 34, 37, 51, 53-4, 62, 67-8, 72, 74, 81, 85, 88, 92-3, 96, 109, III, 116-7, 126, 129-163,166, 175-7,189, 192, 199-200,230-1,240, 242, 244, 246-8, 250-1, 254, 257-8, 261, 270, 293
Omaha Catholic Archdiocese, 284-5
Omaha Children's Home, 75
Omaha Girls Club, 10-1, 19,21-2, 57, 139-40, 152, 156-7
Omaha Metro Update, 39-40, 46-7,49-50, 114, 121
Omaha Ministerial Alliance, 220
Omaha National Bank, 135, 258-9, 261
Omaha National Corporation, 45, 145, 159
Omaha Police Department, 15, 18, 23,25-7,29-30, 33, 35, 60, 101, 109, 126, 128, 182-3, 195-6,227,239, 241, 251, 395
Omaha Public Power District, 5, 144
Omaha Star, 164
Omaha World-Herald, xvii, xix, xxiii, 2, 50-1, 58, 63, 66,68,87,89-90,92,94-6, 99,106,115-6,122,124,130, 133, 135-6, 138-40, 144, 150, 154,166,169-70,173,175, 177,183,188,217-8,221-2, 226-227,231-2,240,242-5, 247,256-7,262-3,270-2, 280,288-9,291,300,303, 322,394
OMEGA, 329
Operation Babylift, 395
Operation Fruehmenschen, 297-9
Ormiston, Karen J., 3, 9, 67, 69,82, 112,124,154,187-8,197, 227-228
Orpheum Tower, 18
Orr, Kay, 33, 35, 144, 165-6, 268
Owen, Aaron, 251
Owen, Alisha Jahn, xvii-xviii, xxii, xxv, 4, 9, 52, 67-74, 76-77, 80-2, 84-5, 100-2, 108, 118-20, 124-5, 131, 141, 154, 184-5, 190-1, 193-4,197,217-9,221,224-227, 229,239, 243, 248, 251, 291, 293, 300, 306-7, 313, 316-8, 321, 390-3, 394, 396
Owen, Alvin, 185
Owen, Amanda, 218
Owen, Donna, 185
Owen, Rob, 180

Pankonon, John, 185
Paris Peace Talks, 380
Park, Tong Sun, 179-80
Parker*, Brenda, 15-7,24,67
Parker, Charlie, 183
Parker, David R., 159
Partsch, Frank, 257
Patterson* children (see Webb)
Peltier, Leonard, 366
Pennsylvania Legislative Black Caucus, 321
People magazine, 235, 237, 272
Perkins, Charles, 180
Perpich, Rudy, 236
Peter, Fr. Val, 37, 152-3, 155
Petersen, Donald, 145

Phillips, Officer, 195
Phipps-Yonas, Susan, 235
Phoenix Program, 277, 379
Phoenix Sign Corp., 61
Pike, Douglas, 380
Planned Parenthood, 148
Plemmons, Bill, 329
Points, John, 81
Population Council, 148
Population Institute, 148
Power, Kenneth D., 130, 159
Powers*, Mark, 69-70, 138
Prairie Life, 47, 49-51
Progressive magazine, 133
Prokop, Robert, 246-7
Pronto, 241

Queen, John, 48, 51, 60-1
Quinlan, Thomas C., 159
Quist, David, 224

Ramsey, William E., 155
Randall, Casey, 8
Randall, Gary, 8, 137
Rasmussen, Dean, 47, 50
Rasmussen, Jessie, 47, 50
Reader's Digest, xx
Reagan, Maureen, 55, 164
Reagan, Ronald, xi-xxiii, 54, 164-5,169,174,178,326,356-7
Rees, John R., 331
Rees-Mogg, William, 387-8
Remmers, Sen., 57
Reno, Janet, 296, 378
Rentfro, Robert, 45
Republican Party, xxi, 17, 55, 63, 102, 164, 323
  National Conventions, xxi-xxii, 14, 54-5, 128, 138, 164, 167, 176, 254, 264-5
Reuer, Lonny, 369-70
Rexford, Montana, 336
Richard Young Hospital, 18, 20, 26-7,33-5, 37, 57, 202
Rinehart, W.M., 351
Rismiller, David A., 134
Ritter, Fr. Bruce, 180
Rivera, Geraldo, 204, 240
R-Lynn, Inc., 135
Robinson, Dana Saylor, 41
Robinson, John, 48
Rochon, Donald, 198-200, 293
Rogers, Charlie, 125,251
Rogers, Joel, 155, 162-3
Rosenthal, Henry, 119. 128, 191-2, 227
Roskens, Ronald, xi, 63, 177
Roth, Dick, 84, 88-9, 226
Rothery, Carolyn, 135, 137
Roundup, Montana, 332, 336, 341
Ruby Ridge, 278, 294, 375
Rud, Alvin, 235
Rud, James, 235-8
Rud, Rosemary, 235
Rutledge, Kathleen, 89-91, 97, 99
Ryan, Dan, 251
Ryan, Jim, 258, 260-1

Sacramento (California), 103
St. Louis (Missouri), 100
St. Paul (Minnesota), 38, 116, 235
St. Paul Pioneer Press, 38
Salomon Brothers, xi, 148, 270
San Jose Mercury, 320
Santoli, AI, 380
Sarpy County (Nebraska), 203, 239
Savoy Hotel, 78-9
Sawyer, Mary, 298; *Harassment of Black Elected Officials: Ten Years Later, 298*
Schiller Institute, 241, 298
Schmit, Loran, xxiv, 1-3, 37. 46, 53-4,56-8,61-2,65-6, 83-7,96, 110-1, 115, 118, 122, 127-9,138,164,171,182, 185,187-9,194, 196-7,201, 219-21, 223, 226-227, 303, 311-3,316,322,377
Schnabel, Steven, 360, 362, 363
Schreiber, Flora Rheta, 126

Sybil, 126
Scott, Eugene, 202
Scott, Gerry, 234
Scott, Walter Jr., 132, 134, 144-5, 158
Scott, Sue, 134
Scribante, A.J., 159
Seacrest, Joseph, 143, 177, 270
Secret Service, 166
Seltzer, Noel, 139, 145, 194
Sessions, William, 293
Sex Information and Education Council, 148-9
Shanahan, Dave, 153
Shea, Michael, 235
Sheehan, Daniel, 180, 283-5
Sheftel, Yorarn, 297
Sherrets, Steven, 28
Shilling, Kay, 26
Shoppers Fair, 44-5
Sigler, Robert, 123-5, 304
Silverado Savings and Loan, 173
Simon, Jean-Marie, 180
Sioux City (Iowa), 124, 197
Sixth Court of Appeals, 297
60 Minutes, 178
Skoleski, Bill, 28, 251
Skutt, Thomas J., 134
Skutt, V.J., 144, 159-60, 163
Smith*, Jackie, 22, 74
Smith*, Loretta, 18-24,26-9, 33, 35-7, 57, 60, 67, 74, 89-91, 103, 109-10, 153, 156, 175, 201-2, 227, 240, 251
Smith, William C., 158-9
Sogard, Warren, 366
Sorenson, Kathleen, 6, 9, 152, 156, 204-211, 240, 251
Sorenson, Ron, 6
Soto, Jose J., 155
Southfork Ranch, 55, 128, 164, 166-7
Spain, 173
Sparrow, Paul, 291-2
Spence, 169, 326, 330
Spire, Robert, 33-4, 36, 45-7, 58, 60, 83, 109, 144, 151
Starlite Motel, 77
Staskiewicz, Ronald, 123
State Security Savings, 39-41, 43-5, 64, 92, 95, 263-4, 266-9, 270,272
Stephens, Roy, 228, 231-4, 236-7, 241
Stem, Gabriella, 140
Stitt, Carol, 24, 27, 33-7, 52, 57-8,60, 109, 122, 151-2, 170
Stockdale, James, 380
Stoner, Ken, 27
Storz, Robert H., 159
Storz Broadcasting Co., 159
Stramer, Paul D., 336
Strategic Air Command, 175, 327
Strategic Investment, 387-8
Street, John, 321
Stuart, Jim, 43, 48
Summers, Harry, Jr., 380
Sun newspaper, 151
Switzer, Leroy, 336
Switzerland, 172-4

Tampa (Florida), 100
Tavistock Institute. 331
T4 Bureau, 331
Terpil, Frank, 179
Thalken, Thomas, 183, 190-1, 198, 304
Theosophy, 331
Thiessen, William, 142
Thill, Richard, 203
Thomas*, Brandt, 11, 155, 176
Thomas, L.B., 135
Thompson, Herbert, 203
Thompson, Hunter, 105
Thone, Charles, 255, 258-60, 262, 288
Thorstadt, David, 229
Times of London, 387-8
Tinley, Hugh L., 159
Tinstman, Dale C., 158

Todd, Olivier, 388
Tooley, Jane F., 6, 8
Toronto (Canada), 234
Tran Van Tong, 380
Traub, James, 137, 149
Travel Lodge Inn, 79
Treblinka, 297
Tripp, Patrick, 8-9, 13-4
Trochman, John, 336
Tucker, Curtis, 251
Tucker, Harmon, 251
Twin Towers, 15, 17.69-70. 72, 77-9, 101-2
Tyner, Neal E., 158

Ukrainian Political Action Committee. 241
Unclassified. 174
Union Pacific Foundation, 146, 162
Union Pacific Railroad. 80. 132, 134-6, 138-9,146-8, 151, 158-9
United Nations, 330
U.S. Book Co., 158
U.S. Constitution. 346. 349
U.S. Department of Justice, 109, 182,294-298,378
U.S. Department of State. 177
U.S. District Court (N.D.), 348-9, 358. 364-70
U.S. District Court (Western Division of Texas), 351
U.S. Federal Reserve System, 350
U.S. Government (see Agency for International Development, Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, and Firearms, Central Intelligence Agency, Drug Enforcement Agency, Federal Bureau of Investigation. Federal Witness Protection Program, Internal Revenue Service, National Credit Union Administration, National Endowment for mocracy, National Narcotics Border Interdiction System, National Transportation Safety Board, Secret Service, Strategic Air Command, U.S. Department of Justice, U.S. Department of State, U.S. House of Representatives, U.S. Joint Chiefs of Staff, U.S. Senate)
U.S. House of Representatives Banking Committee, 173, 297-8
U.S. Joint Chiefs of Staff, 330, 379
U.S. Senate, 63. 267-9, 275, 287, 379
Judiciary Committee, 375
US West Communications. 130
University of Nebraska, 135. 159. 177, 203, 246, 255, 269
USA Today, 383
Uta Halee Home for Girls, 24, 34. 157

Valley Green Trailer Park, 235, 237
Valmont Industries, 158-9
Van De Kamp, John, 238
Van Pelt, Samuel, 116-8, 121-3. 125
Vann, John Paul, 253
Van Sickle, Bruce, 353, 356, 358
Versaw, Maryann, 318
Vietnam, 252-6, 265, 267, 269, 274-5, 378-80, 386, 389
Vietnam War, 378-80, 394-5
Village Voice, xviii, 139, 168, 180
Virginia, 238
ViTal Resources, 159
Vlahoulis, Thomas, 35-7, 176, 183
Volcker, Paul, 43
Vuchetich, Pamela, 184-5, 192-3

Waco, Texas, 278, 294
Wade, Bill, 371
Wadman, Robert, 25-6, 28-32, 58-60, 68-72, 74, 77, 80-82, 85-8,92,100-1,110,112-3,

120, 127, 129, 142, 182-3, 198, 218, 221, 225-226, 239-40,281-3, 293, 304, 308, 323, 327
Wahl, Gerry, 327
Wall Street Journal, 140, 149-50
Wallin, Lamont, 135
Walsh, Michael H., 132, 134, 147, 151, 158
Walters, Julie, 8-10, 12-4,57-8, 130, 152-3, 155, 176
Walton, Don, 253-4
Warin, Ed, 302
Warner, Jerome, 83
Warren, Harold "Bud," 356-7
Washington County (Nebraska), 5-6, 8-9, 13-4, 108
Sheriffs Office, 5-6
Washington, D.C., 3, 12, 17,60, 63, 100-2, 108, 112, 168-81, 201,317, 326, 385
Washington Post, 148-49, 202-3
Washington Times, 169, 174,326
Waters, Maxine, 320,323
Wayne, Lawrence, 68
Weaver, Randy, 294
Webb, Barbara, 5-6, 8-11, 13-4, 75-6, 137, 139, 150, 195, 204,251
Webb, Cornelia (Nelly) Patterson*, 6-12, 14, 19-20,33-4,57, 60, 67, 108, 152, 154-6, 175-7, 197,204, 224, 251
Webb, Gary, 320
Webb, Jarrett, 5-11, 14, 75-6, 108, 134, 137, 139, 195, 204, 224, 251
Webb, Joey Patterson*, 5, 10-11
Webb, Kimberly Patterson*, 6, 8-11, 13-4, 19-20, 67, 152, 154,156,176,197,204,251
Webb, Kendra Patterson*, 7, 34, 167
Webb, Michael Patterson*, 6-7
Webster, William, 296
WECT-TV, 281-2
Wegner, Vern, 364
Wells Fargo Bank, 148
Welsh, William F. **II,** 159
West, Gary, 20, 74, 136
West, Peggy*, 20, 74
Westin Crown Center Hotel, 93
Wetterling, Jacob, 233
Whinnery, Kent, 30
Whitehead, Milton E., 158
Whitehead Oil Co., 158
Whittlesey, Faith, 174
Widiker, Herman, 357
Wigglesworth, Carl, 360, 362-3, 365-6
Will, George, 380
Williams, Burrell, 35, 57, 152
Williams, Lindsey, 117
Wilson, Edwin, 179-80
Winger, Debra, 260, 265
Wolforth, Dale, 135
Woodmen of the World Life Insurance Co., 80, 158
Woods, John, 258-61, 269
World Trade Center bombing, 345
Worster, Reuben, 40, 48, 244
Wounded Knee, N.D., 366
Wright, William F., 39-47, 49, 51, 263-4, 263, 267-8, 270, 272
Wright, Rembolt, and Ludke, 42, 46-7
Wylie, Bill, 141

Yanney, Michael B., 134, 144, 158
YNR Airlines, 103, 197
Yorkshire-TV, 285-8, 290, 301, 378

Zahn, George, 222
Zepp-LaRouche, Helga, 241
Ziegenbein, Lyn Wallin, 130
Zeilinger, John S., 135
Zorinsky, Edward, 261

The Franklin Cover-up

The shut-down of Omaha, Nebraska's Franklin Community Federal Credit Union, raided by federal agencies in November 1988, sent shock waves all the way to Washington, D.C. $40 million was missing. The credit union's manager: Republican Party activist Lawrence E. "Larry" King, Jr., behind whose rise to fame and riches stood powerful figures in Nebraska politics and business, and in the nation's capital.

In the face of opposition from local and state law enforcement, from the FBI, and from the powerful *Omaha World-Herald* newspaper, a special Franklin committee of the Nebraska Legislature launched its own probe. What looked like a financial swindle. soon exploded into a hideous tale of drugs, Iran-Contra money-laundering, a nationwide child abuse ring, and ritual murder.

Nineteen months later, the legislative committee's chief investigator died - suddenly, and violently, like more than a dozen other people linked to the Franklin case.

Author John DeCamp knows the Franklin scandal from the inside. In 1990, his "DeCamp memo" first publicly named the alleged high-ranking abusers. Today, he is attorney for two of the abuse victims.

Using documentation never before made public, DeCamp lays bare not only the crimes, but the cover-up-a textbook case of how dangerous the corruption of institutions of government, and the press, can be. In its sweep and in what it portends for the nation, the Franklin cover-up followed the ugly precedent of the Warren Commission.

Senator John W. DeCamp

During 16 years in office, former state Senator John DeCamp was cited, even by his enemies at the *World-Herald*. as one of the most effective legislators in Nebraska history. A highly decorated Vietnam War veteran, in 1975 he initiated Operation Baby Lift, which evacuated 2.800 orphaned Vietnamese children. He practices law in Lincoln, Nebraska, is married, and is the father of four children.

ISBN 0-9632158-0-9 $12.95

ISBN 0-9632158-0-9

9 780963 215802 90000

THE ESSENTIAL MAE BRUSSELL

INVESTIGATIONS OF FASCISM IN AMERICA

EDITED BY ALEX CONSTANTINE

INTRODUCTION BY PAUL KRASSNER

THE ESSENTIAL
MAE BRUSSELL

THE ESSENTIAL MAE BRUSSELL:
INVESTIGATIONS OF FASCISM IN AMERICA
© 2014 BY ALEX CONSTANTINE

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

A FERAL HOUSE BOOK

ISBN: 978-1-627310-06-2

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

FERAL HOUSE
1240 W SIMS WAY
SUITE 124
PORT TOWNSEND WA 98368

WWW.FERALHOUSE.COM

DESIGNED BY GREGORY FLORES

THE ESSENTIAL
MAE BRUSSELL

INVESTIGATIONS OF
FASCISM IN AMERICA

EDITED BY ALEX CONSTANTINE
INTRODUCTION BY PAUL KRASSNER

CONTENTS

PREFACE

Brussell Sprouts, by Adam Parfrey

INTRODUCTION

The Mind of Mae Brussell, by Paul Krassner

CHAPTER ONE

Defense Industry and Nazis Linked To JFK Assassin – Mae Brussell Profile, *San Francisco Chronicle*, January 7, 1981

CHAPTER TWO

Fascism in America – Mae Brussell Interview, KLRB-FM, Carmel, California, 1971

CHAPTER THREE

The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination

CHAPTER FOUR

Timeline – How the Past Affects our Future and the Present

CHAPTER FIVE

How Nixon Rose to Power

CHAPTER SIX

Why Is the Senate Watergate Committee Functioning As Part of the Cover-Up?

I. Knowledge Omitted from the Campus

II. The Cover-Up

A. Concealing the motives

B. Witnesses not called

1. Martha Mitchell

2. Louis Tackwood

3. Tom Charles Huston

4. William Sullivan

III. Martial Law Without the Riots

A. Institutions to dismantle

B. The enemy list

C. The warfare state

D. Political prisoners of America

CHAPTER SEVEN

Thirty Watergate Witnesses Have Met Violent Deaths

CHAPTER EIGHT

Letter to President Richard M. Nixon

CHAPTER NINE

The Evil Feedback Loop & Emerson's Law of Conservation – 1978 *Conspiracy Digest* Interview

CHAPTER TEN

Why Was Patricia Hearst Kidnapped?

I. Why Was Patricia Hearst Kidnapped?

II. Cast of Characters

III. Chronology of Events
IV. Why Was the SLA Created – the Motives?
V. The Tell-Tale Revolutionaries: Conspicuous Banditos or Provocateurs?
VI. Tactical Support – Where Did It Come From?
VII. How Dangerous Was the SLA?
VIII. Why the Charges Against Patty?
IX. The Death Trap – How Do You Tell a CIA Espionage Plot from a Revolutionary, Radical, Terrorist Guerrilla Army?
1. Cover Story
2. Coincidence?
3. Dummy Fronts
4. Use of Media and Propaganda
5. CIA Collusion
6. FBI Collusion
7. Tom Charles Huston Plan, Combined Military, Justice Department, CIA, FBI, Police Departments, Department of Corrections, Stanford Research Institute, President Richard Nixon, Vice-President Gerald Ford
XI. Indications the SLA Was Part of a Larger National Conspiracy
XII. Was This Plan Necessary?

CHAPTER ELEVEN
Operation Chaos – From Monterey Pop to Altamont: the CIA's War Against the Sixties Counter-Culture
I. DEATH, DRUGS AND DEPRESSION
II. THE BEAUTIFUL PEOPLE
III. THE ENEMY
IV. THE BATTLEGROUND
V. THE FINALE … Helter Skelter, Gimme Shelter

CHAPTER TWELVE
The Assassination of John Ono Lennon (Interview)

CHAPTER THIRTEEN
About Women … – *Playgirl* Interview, 1974

CHAPTER FOURTEEN
World Watchers Program Outline, October 4, 1982

CHAPTER FIFTEEN
The Murder of John Belushi

CHAPTER SIXTEEN
Who Killed Congressman Larry McDonald? – Ronald Reagan, the Western Goals Foundation, and the Downing of KAL Flight 007

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN
NASA'S CHALLENGER, R.I.P., January 28, 1986

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN
Mae Brussell on the Air – Miscellaneous Radio Transcripts
The Corpse of Lee Harvey Oswald
Uranium and the Mormon Church
Nixon's Recruitment
"Anti-Terrorism" & Government Surveillance

Congressional Investigation of Nazis in America Sabotaged
Political Murders, the Mob, a Missing Shipload of Heroin & the Attempted Murder of Bernadette Devlin
The Worst Kind of Illegal Alien
Joseph Mengele & "The Boys from Guyana"
Ronald Reagan, Bitburg Sandwich
Hunt Family Update
CHAPTER NINETEEN
CIA-Mafia conspirators can rest easier – Mae Brussell Obituary
INDEX

PREFACE
BRUSSELL SPROUTS

The Lance deHaven-Smith book *Conspiracy Theory in America* (published by the University of Texas) reveals that the phrase "conspiracy theory" was invented by the CIA to discredit doubters of the Warren Commission, which claims that John F. Kennedy's assassination was carried out alone by a single "lone gunman."

Distraught by the murder of President Kennedy, a Beverly Hills housewife named Mae Brussell took it upon herself to buy all 26 printed volumes issued by the Warren Commission report, and attempt to make sense of the thing by cross-indexing the entire work. Mae was disturbed by the contradictory information and unreported realities she discovered in those volumes. As a result, she started subscribing to many major newspapers and magazines, whose stories she filed and organized, uncovering disquieting connections and patterns behind government and corporate malfeasance.

An impressed John Lennon donated money to Paul Krassner's hip counterculture magazine, *The Realist*, so he could afford to print Mae Brussell's work. Throughout the '70s and '80s Mae reported, in radio programs primarily, about the horrors infecting American culture. Mae's work was followed by a number of devoted listeners who were known as "Brussell Sprouts," who often expanded upon the conspiracy theories with their research.

The current administration's legal "Czar" who goes by the name Cass Sunstein was recently appointed to serve on the "NSA Oversight Panel" despite the fact that two words "NSA" and "oversight" rarely if ever fit together. He also wrote a book called *Conspiracy Theories and Other Dangerous Ideas* to make sure that the academics and the American public dismiss so-called conspiracy theories about the JFK assassination and other American events of a largely fascist nature. Cass Sunstein claims that this sort of reportage only leads to discontented Americans who turn violent with their distrust.

If Mae Brussell hadn't died in October 1988, she would have no doubt investigated Cass Sunstein's background and printed material to fill us in on why Cass Sunstein is encouraging American academics and intelligence and police agencies to move against those who write and publish "conspiracy theories." Now that Mae has passed, it's a job for one or more of Mae's Brussell Sprouts.

We hope you enjoy this collection of this influential woman's work.

— Adam Parfrey, Feral House

INTRODUCTION

THE MIND OF MAE BRUSSELL

Is "The Queen of Conspiracy" going to break the JFK case wide open, or is she just a paranoid housewife who likes to clip newspapers?

By Paul Krassner

(from *OUI magazine*, May 1978)

"Nothing just happens in politics. If something happens you can be sure it was planned that way."
— Franklin D. Roosevelt

There she is, the Bionic Researcher. Every day she feeds herself ten newspapers from around the country. This diet is supplemented with items sent to her by a network of conspiracy students (she called them Brussell Sprouts—Alex Constantine was one of them). She also consumes magazines, underground papers, unpublished manuscripts, court affidavits, documents from the National Archives, FBI and CIA materials obtained through the Freedom of Information Act and hundreds of books on espionage and assassination. "About 80 percent of all CIA intelligence information comes from printed news," she says, "so I am doing what they are doing but I'm using all the material." Each Sunday, she sorts out the week's clippings into various categories as though she were conducting a symphony of horror. Yet she is cheerful. She almost sways in counterpoint to the rhythms of hypocrisy. For, while there are those who try to discredit her by saying she's crazy, Mae Brussell remains high on her responsibility.

Mae has been our nation's number-one, self-appointed conspiracy freak since the day Jack Ruby shot Lee Harvey Oswald. She has written hundreds of articles detailing the unpleasant connections between what most people consider diverse chapters in American history—like Oswald and Francis Gary Powers, the Kennedy murders and Watergate. For the past seven years, the house-wife-turned-crusader has shocked and dismayed listeners of her syndicated radio program, *Dialogue: Conspiracy* (KLRB-FM, Carmel, California), uncovering choice tidbits about everything from Chappaquiddick to Chowchilla. She unabashedly calls herself the country's best researcher.

It would be difficult to question that she knows as much as anyone about people involved in "The Assassinations." The Queen of Conspiracy is currently writing five separate books on what happened that day in Dallas, all of which, she claims, "contain entirely new material. Collectively, these books will finally answer the question: Who killed JFK?"

At 54, she is plump and energetic; she wears long peasant dresses patch-worked with philosophical tidbits, and her favorite adjective is "cute." Occasionally, she slurs her words—information overload—but her eyes seem to reveal the deep sense of compassion permeating every fact she shares. One senses a touch of appropriate incongruity about this white, upper-middle-class, twice-divorced mother of a talented brood, who is knitting a sleeve while calmly describing the architecture of a police state in progress.

I first met Mae Brussell when she provided me with leads for a story I did on Charles Manson. Then, a few months after the break-in at Democratic Party headquarters in the Watergate Hotel, Mae rang me up. She recognized names and methods of operation from her assassination research. For example, she knew that Watergate burglar James McCord had crossed paths with Lee Harvey Oswald when both had been

working for CIA intelligence, and that Frank Sturgis had been interrogated by the FBI in Miami the day after JFK was assassinated. She also had a possible tie between McCord and a "secret army" of police who allegedly had planned to disrupt the 1972 Republican Convention with riots and possible assassination attempts on Nixon, which would then be blamed on leftist radicals and hopefully result in a further shift to the right—possibly under the figurehead leadership of Spiro T. Agnew.

And then there was L. Patrick Gray, who as acting director of the FBI would later burn evidence from the files of E. Howard Hunt and deep-six numerous documents. Mae recalled the murder of a Los Angeles reporter, Ruben Salazar, at the first Chicano-sponsored antiwar protest. U. S. Attorney Robert Meyer was later pressured by Gray into halting his investigation and resigning from his post. Mae called Meyer, asking if he would help with her research. She wanted to find out why the Justice Department in Washington was stopping an attorney in Los Angeles from investigating the simple killing of a reporter. A month or so later, ex-U. S. Attorney Meyer was found dead "of an apparent heart attack" in a parking lot in Pasadena.

Three weeks after the Watergate break-in, while the establishment press was calling it "a caper" and "a third-rate burglary," Mae Brussell completed a manuscript titled "Why Was Martha Mitchell Kidnapped?" She named names—John Mitchell, L. Patrick Gray, Richard Nixon, the FBI, the CIA—and I published her first by-lined article in *The Realist*.

"The CIA that killed President Kennedy and Robert Kennedy," she wrote, "did a test case in Greece on canceling elections. Andreas Papandreou, often compared with John Kennedy, appeared to have a good chance of winning the Greek election in 1967. The US Army, the CIA and government agencies helped replace their elections with a coup d'état . . . . The significance of the Watergate affair is that every element essential for a political coup in the United States was assembled at the time of the arrests."

Mae Brussell contends that Nixon's own Watergate plumbers, and the entire intelligence network they represented, were prepared to overthrow Nixon whenever it was deemed necessary by the true powers. Ultimately, she believes, the same men who brought Nixon to power via the Kennedy assassinations were also pulling the strings at Watergate.

Papandreou wrote to her from exile in Canada: "I am overwhelmed by the amount of work you have done and the documentation you bring to support your thesis. I have tried myself for a long time to bring out the conspiratorial aspects of the Greek coup of 1967. People are now beginning to understand how it happened that Greece went under a dictatorship. Your work is tremendously important. You have understood the framework in which these events take place, but more than that, you have dug out the facts."

Five days before Richard Nixon's would-be adversary, Robert Kennedy, was assassinated in Los Angeles, Mae Brussell handed a letter to Rose Kennedy, expressing her fear of imminent danger to his safety. A month before Mary Jo Kopechne died at Chappaquiddick, Mae warned Teddy Kennedy of "the nest of rattlesnakes" that wanted to abort his presidential possibilities. A few weeks before the SLA kidnapped the media as well as Patty Hearst, she told a Syracuse University audience that the SLA shooting of a black school superintendent in Oakland was merely the preliminary to a main event yet to come.

"A lot of stuff comes to me psychically and then the documents follow," Mae explains. "After Jack Ruby shot Lee Harvey Oswald, I found it very interesting that one of the first things Ruby said was: 'I wanted to show them that a Jew had guts.' Well, the most anti-Semitic man in Dallas was H.L. Hunt, and he was publishing *Lifeline* and was meeting with Reverend Billy Hargis and all these neo-Nazi groups and the Minutemen down in the Dallas-Fort Worth area. A radio script from a Hunt-owned station about being a 'hero' was found in Jack Ruby's car. No one ever asked him to explain how he got it. The Wednesday before the assassination, Ruby took a young woman to Hunt's office, trying to get her a job. Suddenly the whole plot of the Kennedy assassination began to open up in front of me. Here was this Jew,

Jack Rubinstein, being used to kill Lee Harvey Oswald. When the *Warren Report* came out, the very first witness I pulled to, the most important of the 552, was Oswald's friend George de Mohrenschildt, a man surrounded by neo-Nazi oil people, who was also suspected of being a Nazi during World War Two. De Mohrenschildt had set Oswald up with his oil-industry contacts in Texas. He also helped arrange for Oswald to get his job at the schoolbook depository and at the printing office where he learned all the details of the Dallas motorcade."

In 1977, shortly before he was to undergo more questioning, De Mohrenschildt purportedly "shot himself" to death with a shotgun. According to the report in the *Dallas News*, just prior to his death he had been under the impression—or delusion—that the FBI was out to "get him" and therefore had been in a mental ward at Parkland Hospital.

Mae Brussell spent eight years cross-filing the Warren Commission report on the assassination of John F. Kennedy. She cross-filed every single minute of Jack Ruby's life that doubly fatal weekend, from Thursday (the day before Kennedy was killed) through Sunday (the day Ruby shot Oswald). She was able to account for his whereabouts totally, except for two hours in the afternoon on Saturday. Although she cannot prove it, she is convinced he was at the home of H.L. Hunt.

"And then there was the testimony of Bernard Weissman. He was only one of twelve military intelligence people that were brought from Germany to Dallas for the assassination. He testified that Lamar Hunt and twenty members of the Birch Society used his name on that inflammatory 'Wanted for Treason' ad in the *Dallas Times Herald* about Kennedy because he was Jewish and they wanted a Jewish name on it. Somehow, on November 24, 1963, the Nazi link, the oil Nazis, the American military from Munich and the two Jew patsies, Rubinstein and Weissman, were all right there in Dallas. As I collected every possible document, the world picture began to get clearer to me, and my interest in the Kennedy assassination became more involved with the Nazi links than with the anti-Castro Cuban links. My disagreement with researchers at large is that they want to stop with the Bay of Pigs operation, and I think it's bigger."

But why the Nazis? Racism, for one thing, says Mae. The Bormann Society, still dedicated to the establishment of the Fourth Reich, did not appreciate Kennedy's drive to educate Southern blacks and register them to vote. Nor did they care for the fact that he was Catholic and stood in opposition to the neo-Nazi oil interests.

Mae Brussell's ascension to the throne as the queen of conspiracy investigations began with a harsh dose of culture shock during her childhood. Raised in Beverly Hills affluence, she was unhurt by the Depression (her grandfather founded the posh I. Magnin), and her family's house-guests ranged from Jack Warner and Louis B. Mayer to Thomas Mann. Her father used to go bike riding with Albert Einstein. "I grew up," she recalls, "thinking this is the way life was." Then, in her early teens, the family took a trip around the world, and her awareness of suffering expanded in the process. In Bombay, she saw people sleeping in the streets. They had no homes or possessions, let alone memberships in tennis clubs. In Shanghai, their boat hit a sampan and split it in half. Other people came out in boats to get the clothes off the victims' bodies. Some lived and died on their sampans, never getting to shore. She was not used to seeing such overwhelming poverty. In Egypt, it was the same. In Tel Aviv, the hotel her family stayed at was bombed. They were the last Americans out of Spain in 1936.

"We were happy little tourists," she muses. "But it always bothered me. I never felt the same again. I was haunted by the imbalance. I wanted to help people, but I didn't know what form it would take." In a few years, she would attend Stanford University, majoring in philosophy. "I think the discipline of it helped me with my research later."

Then there was the influence of Henry Miller during Mae's 40s. "Henry freed me from a lot of hang-ups that I was brought up with. He opened up the whole field of sex as being normal as the air you breathe. He also helped me realize that freedom of the press; freedom to live and to love is what the struggle is all

about. It's simply rhythm. People gotta shake their bodies—and relate to each other in their minds and hearts."

A turning point in her comprehension of the global aspect of conspiracy occurred when she came across the story of a Heidelberg professor named E. J. Gumbel, in the book *Inspection for Disarmament* by Seymour Melman. Gumbel was forced to resign from his academic post during the Nazis' rise to power, because of his unpopular stance as a pacifist and an anti-fascist. He wrote three books between 1919 and 1922—*Four Years of Lies, Two Years of Murders* and *Four Years of Political Murders*. In these, Gumbel documented over 400 political assassinations, most of which were admitted to by the Minister of Justice in 1924.

Mae Brussell began to study the pattern of Nazis coming to the United States after World War Two and patterns of murders identical to those in Nazi Germany. It was as if an early Lenny Bruce bit—on how a show-bit booking agency, MCA, chose Adolf Hitler as dictator—had actually been a satirical prophecy of the way Richard Nixon would rise to power.

"How much violence was there in Nazi Germany," Mae asks rhetorically, "before the old Germany, the center of theater, opera, philosophy, poetry, psychology and medicine, was destroyed? How many incidents took place that were not coincidental before it was called Fascism? What were the transitions? How many people? Was it when the first tailor disappeared? Or librarian? Or professor? Or when the first press was closed or the first song eliminated? Or when the first political science teacher was killed coming home on his bike? How many incidents happened there that were perfectly normal until people woke up and said, 'Hey, we're in a police state!'

"Hitler was gassed in World War One and they took him to the hospital and, according to a US Navy Intelligence report, they brought in a Dr. Forster, a hypnotist, and they groomed him. They told him that he would have troops that would someday invade Russia and kick the Communists out. They hypnotized him so that he would always believe that he'd be a great leader, like Joan of Arc.

"Now, take a man like Nixon, a man who is going to be President of the United States. He's known for his poker playing, his straight face. He already has a proclivity for intelligence. He wrote to Hoover, asking to join the FBI. After World War Two, the great poker player of the South Pacific was assigned to the Navy Bureau of Aeronautics, negotiating settlements of terminated defense contracts, where he helped escalate the importation of 642 Nazi specialists into the U. S. defense and aerospace industry—Project Paperclip. Then he gets a call from Murray Chotiner, who works with Howard Hughes and the Bank of America, inviting him to run for Congress against Jerry Voorhis. What did he have besides a poker face? In 1951 Senator Nixon introduced a bill to bring Nikolai Molaxa into the U. S. Molaxa was a former head of the Iron Guard and was allegedly involved in Nazi atrocities. Nixon set him up in an office of his own."

Another turning point in Mae's research occurred when she attended the trial of Hugo Pinell, who had been charged with killing a Soledad prison guard. "A public defender was assigned on Friday to begin the case on Monday, and none of his witnesses could appear. The whole trial was rigged, and I was just outraged. It was then that I decided not only to study who killed John Kennedy, but also to find the relationship between the corruption of the courts, political prisoners in this country and the political assassinations and conspiracies. When you think of Hitler, you think of prisons like Auschwitz and Dachau. And when I thought about the killing of Kennedy and all the Nazis involved, I realized that the prison system had to be directly related to it. And that's when I began to correspond with prisoners and make friends with them and get more information about prison deaths and mind-control experiments. I found there were incidents identical to what occurred in Nazi Germany, where the innocent were locked up or killed and the guilty were allowed to go free.

"Instead of just researching the deaths of John Kennedy, Robert Kennedy, Malcolm X, Martin Luther King, Mary Jo Kopechne, and the George Wallace shooting, I began collecting articles about the murders

of people involved in those cases. And I began paying attention to the deaths of judges, attorneys, labor leaders, musicians, actors, professors, civil rights leaders—studying what I considered to be untimely, suspicious deaths."

In preparation for an upcoming campus lecture in Seattle, Mae spends a day and a half cross-filing one ten-year-old article—"The Murder of Malcolm X" by Eric Norden—into some 30 different subjects. The actual motives behind the assassination. Collusion between Federal intelligence and local police. Involvement of bodyguards. Prime witnesses killed. Perjured testimony that doesn't fit the evidence. . .

Sometimes Mae's theories seem like they've been pulled from the pages of a James Bond—or perhaps an E. Howard Hunt—spy thriller. "I found it interesting that the Cuban Watergate burglars—who were later given a $200,000 payoff by the CIA—were looking for the air-conditioning plans for the hotels in Miami, when later it was discovered that Legionnaire's Disease may have come through the air-conditioning ducts. There is the capability to use germs to neutralize people. The CIA has the germs. Legionnaire's Disease has the exact symptoms of a disease they were experimenting with at Fort Detrick, Maryland. When you hear of weapons control, you think of guns, tanks, planes, but you don't hear that they're selling germs, or that Nixon ordered Richard Helms to destroy the germs at Fort Detrick and Helms didn't. Nixon was put out as a bad man, isolated and ridiculed, but Helms went on to become ambassador to Iran and is immune to perjury charges."

And now the Bionic Researcher is rolling her big wax ball of conspiracy at full speed.

"Jimmy Carter and the Pentagon can talk about disarmament, but the real tragedy is the chemical weapons used for mind control. Some people are programmed and have lost their minds. What we call the motiveless crime or senseless killings are actually people being trained as zombies."

She zips out the Congressional Record from February 24, 1972, and reads the testimony of Dr. Jose Delgado from Yale University, who was arguing against the proposed discontinuation of research into psychosurgery:

> We need a program of psychosurgery for political control of our society. The purpose is physical control of the mind. Everyone who deviates from the given norm can be surgically mutilated. The individual may think that the most important reality is his own existence, but this is only his personal view. This lacks historical perspective. Man does not have the right to develop his own mind. This kind of liberal orientation has great appeal. We must electrically control the brain. Someday armies and generals will be controlled by electric stimulation of the brain.

"So these are not just feelings I have," says Mae. "That speech was greeted by Congress with thundering silence—and money—government-funded programs paid for with our tax dollars. We are witnessing pockets of violence, because they are now able to electronically, surgically and hypnotically kill citizens. The army alone spent $26 million in projects to alter human behavior, and they not only did it with electrode implants but with LSD plus electrodes. They alter minds so that people act without knowing why. They can make someone murder a whole family and then kill himself."

And that is where the prison system comes in. It is like a farm team to develop "talent" for the outside world. "You can't just take anybody off the street and make him decide to walk up and shoot people," Mae insists. "But take people who have had no love or affection, who are in prison, who in adolescence broke a school window and the court put them away. You lock them up—heterosexuals with homosexuals—you break their spirit, dehumanize them, take away chances for education, increase their feelings of inferiority. If you have hostility combined with this lack of opportunities, you begin nurturing a situation where children or young adults like Charles Manson or Gary Gilmore—people with high intelligence but a lot of misery—sit smoking and watching TV, covering up their anger, and become very ripe for indoctrination. These are the people that they select for electronic or hypnotic control. Hitler was gassed and told his mother had cancer, that a Jewish doctor let her die. . . so he transferred his various hatreds."

"The case of Donald DeFreeze is identical to Adolf Hitler's. Colton Westbrook, a mind-control expert

who worked with [CIA Director William] Colby in Southeast Asia, helped DeFreeze with the Black Culture Association at the Vacaville prison in California. DeFreeze was told he would be a new black leader to replace Malcolm X and Martin Luther King. Later, he was shot and burned to death with all-white associates, no blacks, in the company of agents from the Defense Department—no different from Hitler or Lee Harvey Oswald."

If, indeed, we each create our deities as extensions of our own personalities, then the first thing that Mae Brussell's version of God would have done was to make a list. She can spew out a ticker tape with names of dead witnesses—literally hundreds of deaths she finds not exactly above suspicion.

Labor leaders: Walter Reuther, Joseph Yablonski, Saul Alinsky, Jimmy Hoffa, Sam Bramlet—"And there was a contract to kill Cesar Chavez, from the Treasury Department no less—the Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms agency. Meanwhile, Argentine, Chilean and Brazilian police squads are killing off labor people."

Mafia leaders: Sam Giancana, Jimmy Hoffa, John Roselli—"It was just a fluke that he bounced up; his legs were cut off and his torso put in an oil drum. Carlo Gambino—given a shot of swine flu inoculation when he had a heart disease. Sheffield Edwards was killed and William Harvey was killed—the CIA contacts with the Mafia people—and the CIA agent Guy Bannister was killed. He worked with Robert Maheu and with Lee Harvey Oswald, and he flew out a window. The same people who were behind it are alive today, and they're sweeping away the bodies. It's at the highest levels that these conspiracies are planned, not just with a few Cuban exiles."

Musicians: Otis Redding, Janis Joplin, Jimi Hendrix, Brian Jones, Jim Morrison, Mama Cass Elliott, Jim Croce, Tim Buckley—"And almost thirty other fine musicians have died under mysterious circumstances. Rock musicians had an ability to draw together youth at a time when protest meetings were being broken apart, and the hippie, antiwar youth became too visible with their own, unique art form at Woodstock. The Senate investigation documented that persons seeking 'racial harmony' and 'social protest' were defined as enemies of the state. Only people like Sonny and Cher, the Osmonds, John Denver and the Captain and Tennille make it as role models. They either have to tame you or kill you."

And then there's Freddy Prinze. "He was an active Democrat, entertained by the President at the White House, a symbol for the Chicano. He had a deep concern about who killed Kennedy. He had a copy of the Abraham Zapruder film, and he kept playing it over and over. *Time* magazine says he had an intrigue about death because he kept watching Kennedy die. Well, you could say he was worried about how Kennedy was killed.

"I know researchers who've played that film over two hundred times. It's not because they are preoccupied with death, but because it's perfectly obvious that the government is lying, that Kennedy's head is going back. And here's a guy, Freddy Prinze, who every time somebody comes over, he shows the film to them and talks about it. He tells a psychiatrist he's suicidal, who takes his gun, and then when he leaves, he hands it back to him. Then Freddy goes to Vegas and picks up a hundred Quaaludes from another doctor. The removal of Freddy Prinze means one less visual person from that stratum of society. They lose a symbol for the Puerto Rican kids sitting on the steps in New York. There are no positive visual images of Chicanos on the screen. No encouragement for the young ones, because this one's heavily doped and has blown his brains out."

In lieu of the frightening conclusions she's made, does she have any basis for optimism?

"No, I'm not optimistic now—not when government agents work with germ warfare and genocide, and those who put Hitler into power are still at it. Instead of having low-cost housing, there are SWAT teams for food riots when there's no shortage of food.

"I see pockets of fascism. You can still read about a Jewish butcher in Miami having his window broken every night, and in San José a bookstore broken into like in Nazi Germany, and *Mein Kampf* coming out all over Latin America. Those Nazis were brought there and now they're surfacing. The

Rockefellers' attorney, Allen Dulles, consulted with Reinhard Gehlen, the Nazi intelligence chief, to form our own CIA. George Ball writes about getting rid of people by the millions. Patrick Buchanan writes an article justifying the use of torture. Zbigniew Brzezinski, head of our National Security Council, writes that 'with the use of computers, human behavior itself will become more determined and subject to deliberate programming,' and that 'it will soon be possible to assert almost continuous surveillance over every citizen.'

"I believe that the Nazis and the Minutemen and the Christian movement are going to get very strong, and at the same time there's going to be a massive depression. I see large masses of people around the world being deliberately starved every day. I see terrible things happening to reduce the population of this earth, so that those who control the corporations don't have to provide for the needs of the poor."

At KLRB one Monday, somebody called and asked Mae the question that she is asked most often: "How come you're still alive?"

"Well, I'm not," she chuckled. "I'm a robot."

But it is a question that Mae Brussell has obviously considered. If she knows so much, why haven't they killed her?

"The way they handle you is to ignore or discredit. But if I were at Madison Square Garden and had that big an audience, then I wouldn't be alive. I don't want to meet large masses of people. My role is mostly to educate people and let them figure it out for themselves. Tell them books to read and sources of information. The main contribution that I've tried to make with my research is to study things individually and then find the connecting links. I'm not a movement or organization, because if I had five people, one would probably be an agent. The ratio is four to one."

She pauses to count her stitches. Mae is knitting sweaters for each of her children.

"That's why the CIA works on a basis of need-to-know. Because if you know too much, you may not do what you're supposed to do. If you know that the end result is that somebody's going to be blown up twelve miles away—and all you're supposed to do is deliver an envelope—you may think about it. One man who called me had killed ten people—a number of the murders were chemically induced 'apparent heart attacks'—for the CIA. But when he was ordered to kill a Congresswoman, he refused. Another CIA agent then tried to kill him by cutting his jugular vein, but he had it sewn up and survived. Now he's vowed vengeance against them. He told me that agents listen to my show, *Dialogue: Conspiracy*, and I asked, 'What do they think about it?' He said they think it's right on, that they can understand. That it's also a safety valve for them, something that lets them know just how far things are going."

And so we are left with the bizarre possibility that the intelligence community allows the Bionic Researcher to function precisely because she knows more than any of them do.

Despite her obsession, Mae Brussell claims she has not had to sacrifice her family because of her work. "It's not my whole life," she says. "It's important to find out who killed Kennedy, but not at the expense of your own humanness. I don't lose anything if they never find out who killed him. I still have my self-respect. And I like having children and preparing meals and mastering everything having to do with the home. In fact, my initial concern over who killed John Kennedy was basically a selfish one. I wanted to find out if there had been a coup, if the United States was going fascist. Would I be like Anne Frank's father, who told his family that things were OK and that people were basically good—while they were living their last days? They never fought Nazism, but just watched it all go by and hid in the attic until their time came around to be taken away. With a family of five children, my husband and myself, I had an obligation to understand the world outside my home.

"When Hitler failed, his officers were brought to the US, from inside Rockefeller Center, and to the Bahamas and Southern states to build that dream of the Fourth Reich. It is in this context that the Kennedys, Malcolm X, Martin Luther King, labor leaders, judges, entertainers, reporters, authors, students, Black Panthers, Indians, Chicanos and hippies are being slain, and why the masses are being

doped into control."

In December 1970, Mae's daughter, Bonnie, was killed at the age of 15 in a suspicious auto accident. The driver of the other car—a soldier in the US Army at Fort Ord—went AWOL two weeks after the crash, returned to his home and was not sought by authorities. Barbara Brussell, another daughter, was also in that accident. Her legs were severely injured; she also suffered from a broken back, face injuries and a broken nose and arm, but now dances with graceful agility. She took a course called "American Assassinations" that Mae taught at Monterey Peninsula College. "Mom combines being a researcher and a mother," Barbara says. "They have to overlap at times. Mom tends to doubt almost everything; that's her first instinct—especially as events are described in the news—instead of taking any chances of agreeing first, then having to go back later. It's a way of perceiving things that adds a little negativity to events—worrying or being suspicious if a person is an agent or not. But it's her world."

Her mother is casually devouring the obituary page for clues. A neighborhood pharmacist has died at the age of 81 of "natural causes." The clipping triggers no conspiratorial connections in Mae's computer. "Here," the Bionic Researcher laughs, "I'll give you this one …"

CHAPTER ONE

DEFENSE INDUSTRY AND NAZIS LINKED TO JFK ASSASSIN –

PROFILE OF MAE BRUSSELL, SAN FRANCISCO CHRONICLE, JANUARY 7, 1981

"I don't want to convince anyone who doesn't believe me.
They do their thing and I do mine."
— Mae Brussell

Her thing is a tireless search for names and dates—facts that provide the scaffolding supporting her speculation about how they are all related in some strange but inevitable way—the deaths of the Kennedys, Lee Harvey Oswald, Jack Ruby, Martin Luther King, Jimmy Hoffa, Martha Mitchell, Dag Hammarskjold, Fay Stender, George Moscone—even singers: Elvis Presley, Jim Morrison, Mama Cass, Jimi Hendrix, John Lennon.

What do these strange cases have to do with the Mafia, the CIA, Alger Hiss, Gary Powers, J. Edgar Hoover, Howard Hughes, Sirhan Sirhan, Charles Manson, George Wallace, Larry Flynt, Patty Hearst, Jim Jones, Nelson Rockefeller, Dan White, Ayatollah Ruhollah Khomeini, David Berkowitz -- Mark David Chapman?

Murder, blackmail, coups d'état, break-ins, payoffs, cover-ups, media manipulation, mind control, psychic surgery, drugging, hypnosis, gene splicing, eugenics - activities whose ultimate aim is . . . what?

Brussell has spent 20 years finding connections, meditating on implications, sounding the tocsin.

Her analyses have been heard weekly on radio station KLRB-FM in Carmel for nine years, appear on a spot basis with the big San Francisco AM stations, go out in cassette form with supporting documentation to members of World Watchers International, a nation-wide organization she founded.

Her home in the hills above Carmel Valley is awash in thousands of books and documents. Among them is the 26-volume Warren Commission hearings and her 27,000 pages of textual analysis. "I studied it for eight years. It was like the Rosetta Stone. It unlocked every other conspiracy," Brussell says.

"Martin Luther King, Malcolm X, the Kennedys—there is always a pattern where a piece of information is destroyed, in which a witness is killed. It's so predictable, you can go back and look up old cases."

The daughter of Rabbi Edgar Magnin of Los Angeles, Brussell was a Beverly Hills matron and mother of four who was married to a wealthy clothier when JFK was slain in 1963.

"I started saving every newspaper article about it. I wasn't a researcher. I was just curious. How could someone rule the United States for a thousand days and then be lopped off so nonchalantly?"

Years passed, marriage ended, the questioning habit of mind made greater demands. Brussell took odd jobs to support her research.

Her work became a source upon which other conspiracy buffs drew. Brussell came to know so much that increasingly it was impossible to provide brief answers to questions: dense yards of paragraphs

about background had first to be understood. Her high-speed conversation swiftly sketches connection between crime and politics, mob and government agency. If the listener allows his mind to stray during these monologs, the linkage is lost.

"I began to realize," she says at one point, "that everyone around Lee Harvey Oswald was a Nazi or in the defense industry."

She has a copy of an FBI memorandum dated Sept. 18, 1967, describing her contacts with former New Orleans District Attorney James Garrison: "She pictures America as controlled by conspirators in the government, which view she has stated publicly," the memo says.

She ruminates about the secret power of giant corporations, the possibility of clandestine meetings where powerful men plot the future, the real reason that a ringer is buried in Howard Hughes' grave.

"I'm just one person and I'm doing all I can," she says.

CHAPTER TWO

FASCISM IN AMERICA

Mae Brussell Interview (1971)

(*Dialog: Assassination*, KLRB-FM in Carmel California; Gloria Baron, host; November 28, 1971)

GB: *Eight years ago today you started your research on the assassination of John Kennedy, right?*

MB: That's right, it's been eight years, Gloria. A lot of things come to mind. You know, I read the paper yesterday about the celebrations and various religious services and dedication services commemorating John Kennedy. And I got up and I looked at my study, my library, around the walls and the books and closets and the documents and it was a time of contemplation—what is this all about? …

There is an article in *Ramparts* that I helped write on the John Kennedy murder. It was done, oh, many years ago, around 1966. And there was an insert by Penn Jones on the deaths of people involved with the assassination, or close to the assassination scene. David Welsh came over to my house. I helped him write the article and kept my name out of it. He listed the other "buffs," but at that time I wanted privacy. At least for a few years, and did not want to be in the public eye because I was very curious about Lee Harvey Oswald, the person—and all the other researchers working on the assassination were concerned with ballistics, the bullet trajectory, the autopsy, the shooting of Officer Tippit.

My interest was in Lee Harvey Oswald and Jack Ruby—who they knew, where they met and their contacts. Were they set up to be killed, to act as decoys? I spent many years charting their course, and documenting the banks they visited, the associations they had in common. Jack Ruby did not know Oswald, but there were the links, common people who worked together, and I want to show, as I mentioned, some of those links. …

I have put aside many, many things for eight years, because you have to speak with steel. You have to answer steel with steel. And you have to refuse imitations of the real thing. Everybody is taking an imitation of the real thing, and they are giving it all kinds of names, "credibility gap," or "national security" or "top secret." And I could bring to you, the listeners, over the air, all the articles I showed to Gloria this morning when I came in here. The news this week of actual repression of laws, of harm that has happened since the assassination. Because people accept the phony for the real. That wasn't a real election in 1964. It was not a real election in 1968, any more than the election of Thieu was an election in Vietnam. If you accept that, you accept the paper this morning, what Muskie was saying, or what Hubert Humphrey was saying. They're just puppets. They're puppets of a system that is propped up. Or if you think McCloskey is a liberal, you don't read his voting record. How he really votes on every issue, because you like these pat, comfortable answers.

This has been one of the big problems. Jules Feiffer had a cartoon in Sunday's paper, where two gentlemen are talking to each other. And one man is standing with his hands behind his back, with ropes. And he says, "My hands are tied, right?"

And he says, “My feet are shackled, right? And my eyes are blindfolded, right? And my movements are…” and he starts to mumble. And the other man looks at him, and says, “When do you break free?” And the man who is tied and shackled says, “What do you mean, break free? I like it.” And that’s about where people are today in the community and the nation at large. They don’t mind the position they are in, and it’s difficult to shake them to the fact of what happened in Dallas in 1963.

And I will read part, as much as time allows in the second half, of the new issue of *Computer and Automation*, the November 1971 issue. And the statement above the article is on the assassination of President Kennedy. It’s the pattern of coup d’état and public deception. And it begins with this quotation of author Edmund Berkeley.

> We must begin to recognize history as it is happening to us. We can no longer toy with illusion. Our war adventures in Asia are not related to national security in any rational sense. A coup d’état took place in the United States on November 22, 1963, when President John F. Kennedy was assassinated.

That came eight years after I began my research. People talk about never having fascism in this country or never being overthrown – they have already been overthrown, and they’re not aware of it.

I was invited to the high school this week to speak to one of the classes, a group of seniors, on revolutionary change. I went to the class, and we had a one hour discussion, which barely gets into the subject of how the government was overthrown. And how to get it back again. You have to have a revolution to get it back, intellectual or spiritual, a practical or a bloody revolution to get the country, the economy and the duty of this nation back in some national course of sanity.

And then I was sure the teacher was somewhat in a state of shock, you know, his mouth was open. He just couldn’t believe what I was saying, and he was teaching these young people revolutionary change. I said the reason students are dropping out of high school, or finding what they are learning in the classroom not meaningful, is that teachers can’t tell them what has happened to them. Therefore, they can’t instruct them on how to survive or explain the news of the day. The teachers themselves will not face the fact that the country was overthrown. So how can they teach a class on American History that is meaningful?

GB: *And the whole basis of this country is freedom. How could they explain to the kids that there was a coup d’état ?*

MB: That’s right, the whole basis is free speech, free choice of candidates and places to meet and congregate and express your opinions. But you’re photographed at every meeting that you attend. There are recordings of your voice, you’re put into a data system, the threat of losing a job or getting a security clearance hangs over you – your economic independence—you are intimidated down the line, and you feel it. And then what do you do with that kind of intimidation?

You see, the system was set up after the political assassination of John F. Kennedy to bring in more repression. And then in 1968, after the assassination of Robert Kennedy, national security and wire-tapping and surveillance increased even more. To effect a change you have to speak about a revolution now, and that’s a long way off, because people don’t yet know that they’ve been had. They will disagree with everything I say, but they haven’t examined the documents. And that’s a very pathetic situation to be in.

Now, a few words on the past eight years that affected me. The first thing that I had to learn was not to be bitter, I had to … be tolerant that other people had not yet caught up with what I was seeing. Even though they didn’t gather the data, they would say, “I don’t have the time that you have. I don’t have the leisure.” They still don’t want to know what I did with that leisure. I have backed up everything with documents, even from the words of the Commission themselves, or the chief of police in Dallas. But they

don't want that. They still want to go back to another world. I have to be very tolerant of people because I can see events and not be afraid to look at them as they are, like the diagnosis of a disease. Others are going to have to wait many years to find out what happened—to them—and I have to not be bitter with them. That doesn't mean I have to accept them or respect their opinions, but I have to not be bitter with them.…

Another lesson I learned was really a disappointment – that the intellectual class, the liberals, do not care to know at all. And this turns you off to formal education. It teaches you how Nazi Germany came about. The educated class does not care to know, either. There is no groundswell of history professors running to my house yet, and I've been on the air for twenty weeks. There's no intellectual curiosity among members of the Democratic party, or the Republican party, or the lawyers in the community, or Fulton Freeman, who worked with John Kennedy, who is the head of the Monterey Institute—these "intellectual" places of learning are headed by people who do not want you to usurp their position by saying that they have some responsibility for making the world any different than they just want to do it. They want their positions, and they will turn off this station, or they will hang on to one thing you say, and say, "that's not true, therefore nothing else [you say] is true."

So there are liberals here that have campaign lunches for people, [they] may as well be Gepetto carrying Pinocchio on a string.

I also learned how uninformed people are. Because everyone plays the authority: You go out to dinner parties Friday, Saturday and Sunday night, and people pass off their knowledge as if they really read a paper. And once you study any particular subject really well, as I've done with political assassination for eight years, you begin to gauge their awareness about political events … because they'll throw out things that are totally untrue.

And if they do it on that subject, they'll do it on many, many other things…. I don't know how they get their opinions, but I sit there and read the paper and cut out articles and I'm willing to have a dialogue about it, and I find that most people are totally uninformed. They don't read – or they'll read the top of an article and never get to the bottom. And the bottom is the most interesting of all.

In fact, apropos the John Kennedy anniversary of his death, there was an article in the *San Francisco Chronicle* this Sunday about the Texas Book Depository Building. This is the beginning of the article: "Eight years ago tomorrow, a sick, young, self-styled Marxist named Lee Harvey Oswald sneaked up to the sixth floor of a drab, red brick building in Dallas. There he waited until 11:30 a.m., when he fired three rifle shots that rang around the world and took the life of President John F. Kennedy. In the years since that awful moment, there have been countless controversies about the assassination. Most of them have by now faded away. That is, all except one."

They're hoping the discrepancies have faded away…. They go on to tell you about the Texas Book Depository. This was the building that Oswald worked in for six weeks before the motorcade went in front of it. It stands at the corner there where the car passed around the curb into the underpass. After the assassination, the building was closed off. The top floor was closed off where Oswald was supposed to have been, and nobody can use that floor. At the time that the researchers wanted to reconstruct the crime, and the trajectory of the bullet, they couldn't use that floor. And when NBC News made a 4 hour television series on reconstructing this murder in order to put down Jim Garrison's case, they went to the fifth floor to duplicate the shot that Oswald took, but the trajectory from the sixth floor is higher up and more straight down, which would change the course of the bullet, because it [supposedly] entered his back five inches below the neck and exited *uphill* through the Adam's apple, which is against the law of physics.

The Book Depository was open for business until about a year ago in April 1970, when a man from Nashville, Tennessee by the name of Audrey Mayhew bought the building. He is known as a Kennedy buff. He researches the murder of John Kennedy. Mayhew paid $650,000 for the building, and the city of

Dallas was glad to have [it] sold. And they thought this would end the controversy, that he would tear it down or do something with it. It turns out that Audrey Mayhew has a different intention for the building. What he wants to do is put a collection of 20,000 items pertaining to the assassination that he has collected into this building, and the Dallas people are very concerned that it would become a tourist trap. They have one memorial to John Kennedy, and they don't want it rubbed in that people are putting another memorial to him. Right at the corner where he was shot.

Across from the book depository is a tourist trap that shows movies of the assassination, and a shrilling voice that says, "My God, they're going to kill us all." I've been in that place across the street, and it's not really a living memorial to John Kennedy. They sell bumper stickers that say, "America – Love it or Leave it," and all-American flags, ashtrays with pictures of Jacqueline, and it's hardly a fitting description of a memorial. It is a real tourist trap, right across the street from the Book Depository. But what Mr. Mayhew wants to do is use this building to house microfilms and books and newspapers about the assassination and provide facilities for what he calls "a continuing study of what happened here that day."

In other words, Audrey Mayhew does not think the case is closed. Now that is not pleasing the Dallas people, because they want to *forget* anything happened at that corner in spite of the fact that three to four thousand people pass every single day and take pictures of the corner.

One man wanted to buy Mr. Mayhew out, so he offered him one million dollars for the bricks of the building, the bricks alone, and he's turned that down. A wax museum offered one million dollars. You know, money is no problem—you can buy Mr. Mayhew out if he can be had, because you want to tear down this living symbol of John Kennedy. And the Tragedy Museum offered him $100,000 just for the casings from the sixth floor window Oswald was supposed to have poked his rifle out. But Mr. Mayhew said, "I want a continuing study of what happened here that day."

The people in Dallas are simply furious, and Senator Mike McCool wants funds to be brought up to the state legislature to buy the building back. He is having a fit. He says it has tremendous historical value and should belong to the people of Texas. And they want to tear down this building! It should be torn down. The state legislature in Texas is coming up with millions of dollars, trying to get a law to tear the building down.

Mr. Mayhew has said, "over my dead body" would he let them do it. "I will fight it with everything I have, and I'll fight it to the Supreme Court." Well, when he gets to the Supreme Court he's going to have to fight Mr. Powell and Mr. Rhenquist.

So that's another subject—Mr. Powell is supported by Leon Jaworski, we've mentioned this before, who represented the State of Texas for the Warren Commission, head of the American Bar Association. Mr. Powell is heavily associated with people who would defend the *Warren Report*, so try and take this case to the Supreme Court.

GB: *You're listening to* Dialogue Assassination *with Mae Brussell. …*

CHAPTER THREE

THE NAZI CONNECTION TO THE JOHN F. KENNEDY ASSASSINATION

EVIDENCE OF LINK BETWEEN NAZIS IN OPERATION AFTER WORLD WAR II TO THE STILL UNSOLVED MURDER OF JOHN F. KENNEDY

(FROM *THE REBEL*, JANUARY 1984)

1940-1945: The Nazi Connection to Dallas – General Reinhard Gehlen

The sparrow-faced man in the American general's uniform clambered down the steps of the U.S. Army transport plane upon its arrival at Washington National Airport. It was August 24, 1945, two weeks after the surrender of Japan, three months after the German capitulation. The general was hustled into a van with no windows and whisked to Fort Hunt outside the capital. There he was attended by white-jacketed orderlies, and the next morning fitted with a dark grey business suit from one of Washington's swankiest men's stores.

General Reinhard Gehlen was ready to cut a deal.

Gehlen was, until the recent capitulation, Adolf Hitler's chief intelligence officer against the Soviet Union. His American captors decked him out in one of their uniforms to deceive the Russians, who were hunting him for war crimes. Now U.S. intelligence was going to deploy Gehlen and his network of spies against the Russians. The Cold War was on.

This is a story of how key Nazis, with the Wehrmacht still on the offensive, anticipated military disaster and laid plans to transplant Nazism, intact but disguised, in havens in the West. It is the story of how honorable men, and some not so honorable, were so blinded by the Red menace that they fell into lockstep with Nazi designs. It is the story of the Odd Couple Plus One: The mob, the CIA and fanatical exiles, each with its own reason for gunning for Kennedy. It is a story that climaxes in Dallas on November 22, 1963, when John Kennedy was struck down. And it is a story of the assassination's aftermath—America's slide to the brink of fascism. As William L. Shirer, author of *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich*, said, speaking of the Nixon administration's excesses: "We could become the first country to go fascist through free elections."

Even Robert Ludlum would have been hard put to invent a more improbable espionage yarn. Reinhard Gehlen was an "asset" of staggering potential in the eyes of the CIA. He was a professional spymaster, violently anti-Communist, and best of all the controller of a vast underground network still in place within Russian frontiers, his checkered past notwithstanding. "He's on our side and that's all that matters," chuckled Allen Dulles, then a U.S. intelligence officer, later director the CIA. "Besides, one need not ask a Gehlen to one's club."

Gehlen manipulated his American "hosts" with the cool hand of a Las Vegas gambler. During the war, he had looked to the future and the German collapse. He lugged all his files to the Bavarian Alps and cached them at a site called, appropriately, Misery Meadows. Then he buried his Wehrmacht uniform with

the embroidered eagle and swastika, donned an Alpine coat, and turned himself in to the nearest U.S. Army detachment. When the advancing Russians searched his headquarters at Zossen, all they found were empty file cabinets and litter.

The deal Gehlen struck with the Americans was not, for obvious reasons, trumpeted in the *Washington Post*. Heinz Hohne and Hermann Zolling wrote in *The General Was A Spy* that Gehlen took his entire apparatus, "unpurged and without interruption into the service of the American superpower." There is no evidence that he renounced the Third Reich's postwar plan, advanced by his own family's publishing house, to colonize vast regions of Eastern Russia, create a huge famine for 40 million, and treat the remaining 50 million "racially inferior Slavs as slaves."

Allen Dulles may not have invited such a man to his club, but he did the next best thing—he funneled an aggregate of $200 million in CIA funds to the Gehlen Organization, as it became known. Directing operations from a fortress-like nerve center in Bavaria, Gehlen reactivated his network inside Russia. Soon, news of the MiG-15, the first Russian jet fighter, was channeled back to the West. In 1949, the general scored an espionage coup when he turned up Soviet plans for the remilitarization of East Germany.

When Dulles spoke, Gehlen listened. The CIA chief was convinced, with his brother, Secretary of State John Foster Dulles, that the "captive nations" of the Soviet bloc would rise up if given sufficient encouragement. At his behest, Gehlen recruited and trained an exile mercenary force ready to rush in without involving American units. Also at Dulles' direction, Gehlen tapped the ranks of wartime Russian collaborators for a cadre of spies to be parachuted into the Soviet Union. Some of these spies were schooled at the CIA's clandestine base in Atsugi, Japan, where, in 1957, a young Marine named Lee Harvey Oswald was posted to the U-2 spy plane operation there.

Atsugi was only one station on Oswald's Far East intelligence route. He was also assigned the U-2 base at Subic Bay in the Philippines, and for a short while at Ping-Tung, Taiwan. In 1959, he was transferred to a Marine base in Santa Ana, California for radar surveillance instruction. His training officer graduated from the Georgetown School of Foreign Service, with its close Agency ties. In May, 1960, when President Eisenhower planned a summit meeting with Soviet Premier Khrushchev, a U-2 was shot down over Russia and its pilot captured. Francis Gary Powers, the pilot, blamed the shoot down on Lee Harvey Oswald.

The U-2 affair effectively sabotaged Ike's summit meeting.

By pre-arrangement, the Gehlen Organization was transferred in 1955 to the West German Government, its first intelligence arm, the BND. The BND was a Siamese twin of the CIA's global operation. In 1953, they had collaborated well together in Iran, where the country's first democratic government was in power. But two years earlier, Premier Mossadegh had rashly nationalized the oil industry. Dulles, with Gehlen's help, engineered the coup that toppled Mossadegh and reestablished the Pahlevi family regime. The Pahlevi's patriarch, General Reza, had been banished from the country for his pro-Nazi subterfuges during the war. Now his son, Mohammed Reza Pahlevi, ascended the Peacock Throne. The Shah of Iran was one of the CIA's most faithful assets.

Gehlen pioneered the use of dummy fronts to support his far-flung covert operations. One such was the formation of Eastern European émigré groups in the U.S. to deploy against the Soviets. Both the Tolstoy Foundation and the Union of Bishops of the Orthodox Church Outside Russia were funded by the CIA. When Lee and Marina Oswald disembarked from the Soviet Union in June, 1962, they were befriended by some three dozen White Russians in the Dallas-Ft. Worth area. Many had identifiable Nazi ties; others were in the oil and defense industries. It was an improbable social set for a defector to the U.S.S.R. and his wife from Minsk.

By the time the Gehlen Organization was grafted to the West German state, Gehlen already had his agent-in-place in the United States. He was Otto Albrecht von Bolschwing, a captain in Heinrich

Himmler's dreaded SS and Adolf Eichmann's superior in Europe and Palestine. Von Bolschwing worked simultaneously for Dulles' OSS. When he entered the U.S. in February, 1954, he concealed his Nazi past. He took over the Gehlen network, not only in this country but in many corners of the globe. He became closely associated with the late Elmer Bobst of Warner-Lambert Pharmaceutical, a godfather of Richard Nixon's political career. This brought him inside Nixon's 1960 campaign for the presidency. In 1969, he surfaced up in California with a high-tech firm, the Trans International Computer Investment Corporation (TCI), with classified Defense Department contracts. His translator for German projects was Helene von Damm, Governor Ronald Reagan's appointments secretary. Von Damme moved on to an appointment as U.S. Ambassador to Austria under Reagan.

In 1968, Reinhard Gehlen withdrew to his chalet in Bavaria. The chalet had been a gift from Allen Dulles.

Wild Bill Donovan of the OSS, Allen Dulles and the Vatican

Allen Dulles code-named it Operation Sunrise. He mounted it from his walk-up office in Bern, Switzerland, where he'd maintained contact with key Nazis since 1942. Operation Sunrise was conceived when these Nazis decided, in the face of defeat, that they preferred surrender to the Americans and British. The agreement, which double-crossed the Russians, was signed April 29, 1945.

The principle negotiator on the German side was SS Commander Karl Wolff, head of the Gestapo in Italy. Wolff, former chief of Heinrich Himmler's personal staff, acted with full authority. His relationship with Dulles spared him from the dock at Nuremberg, but when it was later discovered that he had dispatched "at least" 300,000 Jews to the Treblinka death camp, he was handed a token sentence. In 1983, Wolff made the social pages when he and some of his old SS buddies sojourned on the late Hermann Goering's yacht, Carin II of Hamburg. The skipper was Gerd Heidemann, an avowed Hamburg Nazi. The yacht belonged to the widow Emmy Goering, whose estate attorney was the celebrated Melvin Belli. Belli has always had an eclectic clientele. He represented Jack Ruby after he shot Oswald. And he represented actor Errol Flynn's family interests. Flynn, once a close friend of Ronald Reagan, was a Gestapo collaborator.

When Wolff hammered out secret surrender terms with Dulles, he had in the back of his mind a safe diaspora for his Nazi compatriots. This is where the OSS, William Donovan and the sovereign state of the Vatican came in. "Wild Bill" Donovan was top dog in the OSS. Shortly before the Germans overran Europe, Father Felix Morlion, a papal functionary, had set up a Vatican intelligence organization called Pro Deo in Lisbon. When the U.S. entered the war, Donovan moved Morlion lock, stock and barrel to New York and opened a sizeable bank account for him. The priest founded the American Council for International Promotion of Democracy Under God, on 60th Street. In the same building was the office of William Taub, whose name surfaced during the Watergate affair. Taub was a well-known and wide-ranging middleman for such powerful figures as Nixon, Howard Hughes, Aristotle Onassis and Jimmy Hoffa. His behind-the-scenes maneuvers were invaluable to Nixon in his 1960 run at the presidency. Taub was especially close to Cardinal Alfredo Ottaviani of the Holy See, who arranged Mussolini's 1929 "donation" of $89-million to the Vatican to ensure its neutrality with Mussolini and Hitler. The money went into a special account at the Vatican Bank, and after the war some of it was entrusted to Michele "God's Banker" Sindona for investment. Sindona channeled a good chunk of it to the Nixon campaign.

When Rome was liberated in 1944, Morlion and Pro Deo relocated there. In recognition of Donovan's good works on behalf of Pro Deo, Pope Plus XII knighted him with the Grand Cross of the Order of St. Sylvester. And before he flew off to Washington to cut his deal with the CIA, Reinhard Gehlen received the Sovereign Military Order of Malta award from the Pontiff. So did James Jesus Angleton, a Donovan operative in Rome, the CIA's director of counterintelligence.

For Dulles, Operation Sunrise was a personal triumph, one that set in motion his rise to the top of the intelligence heap. In 1963, by virtue of that position, he was appointed the CIA's representative on the Warren Commission.

John J. McCloy and Chase Manhattan

President Lyndon Johnson also asked John J. McCloy to serve on the Warren Commission. No less than nine presidents had called on the Wall Street lawyer for special assignments, yet he was little known to the public. McCloy said he entered the investigation "thinking there was a conspiracy," but left it convinced that Oswald acted alone. "I never saw a case that was more completely proven," he asserted.

McCloy had long been involved in the murky world of espionage, intrigue and Nazis. He spent the decade of the 1930s working out of Paris. Much of his time was spent on a law case stemming from German sabotage during World War I. His investigation took him to Berlin, where he shared a box with Hitler at the 1936 Olympics. McCloy was in contact with Rudolph Hess before the Nazi leader made his mysterious flight to England in 1941.

When the Nazis occupied Europe, banking exchanges between Britain and the U.S. on the one hand, and Germany on the other, continued. In *Trading With the Enemy*, Charles Higham documented the role of Standard Oil of New Jersey, owned by Chase Manhattan Bank, and I.G. Farben's Sterling Products with the Bank for International Settlements. Standard Oil tankers plied sea-lanes with fuel for the Nazi war machine. Prior to the war, McCloy was legal counsel to Farben, the German chemical monopoly. As an assistant secretary in the War Department:

- McCloy blocked the executions of Nazi war criminals.
- Forged a pact with the Vichy Regime of pro-Nazi Admiral Darlan.
- Displaced Japanese-Americans in California to internment camps.
- Refused to recommend the bombing of Nazi concentration camps to spare inmates on grounds "the cost would be out of proportion to any possible benefits."
- Refused Jewish refugees' entry to the U.S.

When the curtain fell on the war, McCloy shielded Klaus Barbie, the "Butcher of Lyons," from the French. Barbie and other vicious dogs from Hitler's kennel were hidden out with the 370th Counter Intelligence Corps at Obergamergau. One of their keepers was Private Henry Kissinger, soon to enter Harvard as a McCloy protégé.

In 1949, McCloy returned to Germany as American High Commissioner. He commuted the death sentences of a number of Nazi war criminals, and gave early releases to others. One of them was Alfred Krupp, convicted of using slave labor in his armaments factories. Another was Dr. Hjalmar Schacht, Hitler's financial genius, who was on the payroll of Aristotle Onassis after the war.

In 1952 McCloy left a Germany that was prepared to re-arm to return to his law practice. He was named president of the Chase Manhattan Bank, director of a dozen blue-chip corporations and legal counsel to the "Seven Sisters" of American oil. During this period he acquired a client, the Nobel oil firm, whose interests in Czarist Russia had been managed by the father of George de Mohrenschildt, Lee and Marina Oswald's "best friend" in Dallas.

Busy as he was, McCloy found time to supervise construction of the new Pentagon building. It was nicknamed "McCloy's Folly."

J. Edgar Hoover and Interpol

FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover "mistrusted and disliked all three Kennedy brothers. President Johnson

and Hoover had mutual fear and hatred for the Kennedys," wrote the late William Sullivan, for many years an assistant FBI director. Hoover hated Robert Kennedy, who as Attorney General was his boss, and feared John. In turn, the President distrusted Allen Dulles, and eased him out as CIA director after the 1961 Bay of Pigs debacle. When JFK moved to lower the oil depletion allowance, he incurred the displeasure of John McCloy, whose clients' profits would be trimmed.

Hoover, Dulles and McCloy did not belong to the Kennedy fan club. Hoover controlled the field investigation when the president was shot. Dulles and McCloy helped mold the final verdict of the Warren Commission.

When America stood on the threshold of World War II, Hoover continued a friendly relationship with the Nazis dominating Interpol, the Berlin-based international secret police. He'd been obsessed with the "Red menace" since 1919, when he took the helm of the Bureau's General Intelligence Division. Heinrich Himmler, Reinhard Heydrich, Arthur Nebe and other Nazi fanatics were active in Interpol. Even after Hitler occupied Czechoslovakia, Hoover ignored all evidence of Nazi death squads and atrocities and cooperated with the boys in Berlin. When France fell, Hoover exchanged lists of wanted criminals, enclosing autographed photographs of himself. It was not until three days before Pearl Harbor that he called a halt to the fraternization—and then only because he feared his image might be tarnished.

When war was imminent, Roosevelt charged Hoover with ferreting out Nazi spies in the Western Hemisphere. Two escaped his notice. As early as 1933, Gestapo agent Dr. Hermann Friedrich Erben recruited Errol Flynn as an intelligence source. Erben went on to naturalized American citizen status, but never abandoned his loyalty to Hitler. Flynn went on to make *Santa Fe Trail* in 1940, co-starring Ronald Reagan, and the two paired up for *Desperate Journey* in 1942.

George de Mohrenschildt, the Oswalds' genial host in Dallas, was a Nazi spy, according to wartime FBI files. Hoover's G-men noted that Baron Maydell, his cousin, had Nazi ties and that his uncle distributed pro-Nazi films. FBI suspicions were confirmed when de Mohrenschildt was tailed from New York to Corpus Christi. On October 8, 1942 a "lookout" was placed in his file in case he applied for another passport.

The parts left out of J. Edgar Hoover's investigation before and after Kennedy was killed were the Nazi associations de Mohrenschildt had while working for U.S. intelligence. George's cousin, the movie producer Baron Constantine Maydell, ranked among the top German Abwehr agents in North America. Gehlen recruited Maydell in the postwar era to run the CIA's Russian emigré programs.

Gehlen recruited veterans of Maydell's Abwehr Group to collude with East European emigré organizations inside the U.S.

Lee and Marina's red-carpet treatment in the U.S. began with their arrival from the USSR. Spas T. Raigkin was the ex-secretary general of an exile group of the sort run by Baron Maydell, the American Friends of the Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations (ABN). With CIA funding, he assisted Lee and Marina in resettling.

J. Edgar Hoover was trained only to find Communists, defuse the red menace. The Abwehr, Reinhard Gehlen and Maydell were of no interest to the FBI.

After the war, Interpol ostensibly cleaned up its act, moved to Paris and installed the prestigious Hoover as vice president. Yet Interpol steadfastly refused to search for Nazi war criminals, contending the international police organization was independent of politics. The excuse appeared a bit lame when former SS officer Paul Dickopf was installed as president in the 1970s.

"Sir" Charles Willoughby, a Franco-German American Nazi

He was a bull of a man who spoke with a German accent, wore a custom-tailored general's uniform and affected a monocle. An officer in the U.S. Army, his true name of Adolf Charles Weidenbach, born in

Heidelberg, March 8, 1892. But by the time he became Douglas MacArthur's chief of intelligence for the war in the Pacific, he was Major General Charles A. Willoughby. Behind his back he was derisively tagged "Sir Charles."

For a man with Teutonic traits, it was odd that Willoughby preferred his fascism with a Spanish accent. But this was an accident of geography. While serving as a military attaché in Ecuador, he received a decoration from Mussolini's government—the Order of Saints Maurizio and Lazzaro. After delivering an impassioned paean to Spanish dictator Generalissimo Francisco Franco at a lunch in Madrid, he was toasted by the secretary general of the Falangist Party, "I am happy to know a fellow Falangist and reactionary.

MacArthur's pre-war headquarters were in the Philippines, where commerce was dominated by the resident Spaniards. The Daddy Warbucks of this crowd was Andres Soriano, who owned an early-day conglomerate of airlines, mines, breweries and American distributorships. During the Spanish Civil War, Soriano was one of Franco's principal moneybags. When the Rising Sun flag was raised over the Philippines, Soriano fled to Washington to become finance minister of the government-in-exile. But there was such a fuss in the District of Columbia over his fascist reputation that the colonel flew off to Australia to join MacArthur's staff.

Willoughby accompanied the Supreme Commander to Tokyo for the occupation of Japan. His preferences remained the same: when military police shook down his hotel searching for a fugitive, they found Willoughby at dinner with the stranded Italian fascist ambassador to Japan and members of his staff.

He was a heavy-handed censor and suppressed unfavorable news to the States. He delighted in falsely labeling correspondents who defied him as "Communists," a tactic Senator McCarthy would adopt with enthusiasm. But the general's priority project was a dressed-up history of the Pacific War in which MacArthur would be the towering hero. Willoughby brought in Japanese military brass for a view from the enemy side, a move that may have had an ulterior motive. The possibility existed that Willoughby was down-playing Japanese war crimes so perpetrators could be protected for use against the Soviets later. This was happening in Germany where the top Nazis were writing the history of Malmedy. The tight security in which Willoughby wrapped the project only adds to this impression. One woman had a passkey, the wife of Dr. Mitsutaro Araki, a former exchange lecturer in Germany closely tied in with high Nazis in Tokyo and the Tojo clique.

Willoughby harbored another secret that only came to light last year. During the war, the Japanese conducted germ warfare experiments with human guinea pigs (at least 3,000 died, including an undetermined number of captured U.S. military). The Pentagon decided that the biological research might prove handy against the Russians, and the Japanese scientists responsible were granted immunity from prosecution in return for their laboratory records. On December 12, 1947, the Pentagon acknowledged the "wholehearted cooperation" of Willoughby in arranging the examination of "human pathological material which had been transferred to Japan from the biological warfare installations."

As his final public gesture to Franco, Willoughby lobbied in August, 1952 to authorize $100 million for the anti-Communist dictator's needs. Then he settled down in the U.S. to do battle with the domestic enemy. As Sir Charles and his right-wing allies saw it, Marxism wasn't the true enemy—liberals were.

1952: The Travels of Klaus Barbie, Evita Peron, Otto Skorzeny, and Nicolae Malaxa

By 1952, Klaus Barbie had arrived in Bolivia via a stop in Argentina. He was spirited out of Germany by the CIA with a hand from the Vatican. Barbie teamed up with SS Major Otto Skorzeny, now also affiliated with the CIA. Fritz Thyssen and Gustav Krupp, both beneficiaries of McCloy's amnesty, bankrolled Skorzeny from the start. Barbie and Skorzeny were soon training death squads such as the Angels of Death in Bolivia, the Anti-Communist Alliance in Argentina, and in Spain, with Stephen Della

Chiaie, the Guerrillas of Christ the King. Martin Bormann's money was released in 1952. In Argentina, Evita Peron died of cancer at age 33. The Nazi money was deposited in her name at 40 Swiss banks. There was $100 million in cash, another $40 million in diamonds. Several hundred million more were set aside with Evita's brother, Juan Duarte, the courier. This led to three murders the following year:

- Juan Duarte was shot to death.
- Heinrich Dorge, an aide to Hjalmar Schacht, killed.
- Rudolf Feude, Nazi banker who knew the whereabouts of the money, poisoned.

Skorzeny, released from American custody in 1947, moved to Madrid in 1952. He created the International Fascista and was dispatched by the CIA and Gehlen BND to "trouble spots." On his payroll were former SS agents, French OAS terrorists and secret police from Portugal's PDID.

SS Colonel Skorzeny's CIA agents participated in terror campaigns waged by Operation 40 in Guatemala, Brazil and Argentina. Skorzeny was also in charge of the Paladin mercenaries, whose cover, M.C. Inc., was a Madrid export-import firm.

Dr. Gerhard Hartmut von Schubert, formerly of Joseph Goebbels' propaganda ministry, was M.C.'s operating manager. The nerve center for Skorzeny's operations was located in Albufera, Spain. It was lodged in the same building as the Spanish intelligence agency SCOE under Colonel Eduardo Blanco, which doubled as a branch office of the Central Intelligence Agency.

The Albufera building was the kind of intelligence nest duplicated in New Orleans in 1963. That summer, Lee Harvey Oswald handed out pro-Castro literature stamped with the address 544 Camp Street, a commercial building. This was a blunder because Oswald actually was under the control of an anti-Castro operation headquartered there. W. Guy Banister, his controller, had connections in military intelligence, the CIA and a section of the World Anti-Communist League set up by Willoughby and his Far Pacific intelligence unit in Taiwan. In *The Great Heroin Coup*, Henrik Krüger disclosed that the International Fascista was "not only the first step toward fulfilling the dream of Skorzeny, but also of his close friends in Madrid, exile Jose Lopez Rega, Juan Peron's grey eminence, and prince Justo Valerio Borghesé, the Italian fascist money man rescued from justice at the hands of the World War II Italian resistance by future CIA counterintelligence whiz James J. Angleton."

A subcommittee on international operations of the Senate Foreign Relations Committee prepared a report, "Latin America: Murder, Inc.," that is still classified. (Lyndon Johnson gave the book its title three months before he died: "We were running a Murder, Inc. in the Caribbean.") The report concluded that the United States "had joint operations between Argentina, Bolivia, Brazil, Chile, Paraguay and Uruguay. These operations were known as Operation Condor, comprising special teams used to carry out 'sanctions,' the killing of enemies."

Jack Anderson gave a few details in his column, "Operation Condor, an Unholy Alliance" on August 3, 1979:

> Assassination teams are centered in Chile. This international consortium is located in Colonia Dignidad, Chile. Founded by Nazis from Hitler's SS, headed by Franz Pfeiffer Richter, Adolf Hitler's 1000-year Reich may not have perished. Children are cut up in front of their parents, suspects are asphyxiated in piles of excrement or roasted to death over barbecue pits.

Otto Skorzeny code-named his assault on American soldiers at the Battle of the Bulge Operation Greif, the "Condor." Skorzeny's father-in-law was Hjalmar Schacht, president of Hitler's Reichsbank. Schacht guided Onassis' shipyards in rebuilding German and Japanese war fleets. In 1950, Onassis signed on Lars Anderson for his whaling ships in the hunt off Antarctica and Argentina. Anderson had belonged to Vidkum Quisling's Nazi collaborationist group in Norway during the war. Clay Shaw, charged by New Orleans D.A. Jim Garrison with complicity in the JFK assassination, was a close friend of Hjalmar

Schacht.

In 1952, Nicolae Malaxa moved from Whittier California to Argentina. Malaxa had belonged to Otto von Bolschwing's Gestapo network, as did his associate, Viorel D. Trifia, then living in Detroit. They were members of the Nazi Iron Guard in Romania and had one thing in common – they were friends of Richard Nixon.

Trifia had been brought to the U.S. by von Bolschwing. Malaxa escaped from Europe with over $200 million in U.S. dollars. Upon arrival in New York, he picked up another $200 million from Chase Manhattan Bank. The legal path for this was smoothed by the Sullivan & Cromwell law offices, the Dulles brothers firm. Undersecretary of State Adolph Berle, who had assisted Nixon and star witness Whittaker Chambers convict Alger Hiss, personally testified on Malaxa's behalf before a congressional subcommittee on immigration. In 1951, Senator Nixon introduced a private bill to allow Malaxa permanent residence. Arrangements for his relocation in Whittier were made by Nixon's law office. The dummy front cover for Malaxa in Whittier was Western Tube, a fictional corporation. In 1946, Nixon received a call from Herman L. Perry asking if he wanted to run for Congress against Rep. Jerry Voorhis. Perry was subsequently named president of Western Tube.

When Malaxa flew to Argentina in 1952, he linked up with Juan Peron and Otto Skorzeny. Questions were raised at the time about J. Edgar Hoover, the Iron Guard, Malaxa and Vice President Nixon.

1960 Elections: Richard Nixon vs. John F. Kennedy

Before the election, a group within the Christian Right plotted to kill John Kennedy in Van Nuys, California while he was still a candidate. This group was a meld of anti-Castro Cubans, Minutemen and homegrown Nazis. Some were sought by Jim Garrison following the arrest of Clay Shaw for testimony before the New Orleans grand jury. When Garrison forwarded extradition papers for Edgar Eugene Bradley, a member of the group, Governor Ronald Reagan refused to sign them.

The Christian Defense League (CDL), the most influential of these groups, was led by the Reverend William Potter Gale. During the war, Gale was an Army colonel and trained guerilla bands in the Philippines. His superior officer was Charles Willoughby. By the late 1950s, Gale was recruiting veterans for his racial "Identity" group, financed by a wealthy Los Angeles man.

A leading CDL contact was Captain Robert K. Brown, a special forces professional from Fort Benning, Georgia. Brown worked with anti-Castro Cubans, armed mercenaries similar to Skorzeny's teams. Brown is now publisher of *Soldier of Fortune* magazine, and paramilitary texts such as *Silencers, Snipers, and Assassins*. The book details how Mitchell WerBell made special weapons for the CIA, Bay of Pigs assault squads and other customers. WerBell, son of a wealthy Czarist cavalry officer, perfected a silencer so effective a gun can be shot in one room and not heard in the next. It is ideal for assassinations.

There has been prolonged controversy over how many shots were fired the day Kennedy was killed. The President's wounds, nicks on the limousine and curb, and other bullet evidence indicated quite a few. But the Warren Commission concluded there were only three. It took the testimony of spectators in Dealy Plaza who said they only heard three. It never considered the possibility that silencer-fitted guns were fired.

When Clay Shaw was arrested by Jim Garrison, the news was of particular interest to the Italian newspaper *Paesa Sera*. It followed up with a report that Shaw had ties to a cover organization in Rome named Centro Mondiale Commerciale (CMC). CMC was founded in 1961, one year after Kennedy was elected. Its principals worked with fascist networks after World War II. Its location was frequently moved, its presidents rotated and modus operandi altered. CMC included Italian fascists, elements of the European paramilitary right, the CIA, and the U.S. Defense Department. There were major shareholders with banks in Switzerland, Miami, Basel and other major cities.

The board of directors included Ferenc Nagy, a former Hungarian premier who led that country's Anti-Communist Countrymen's Party in exile. J. Edgar Hoover brought Nagy to the United States, where there were numerous Gehlen-supported emigré organizations. On August 18, 1951, the *Saturday Evening Post* pictured Nagy with Czech, Pole, Hungarian and Russian exiles under the heading: "They Want Us To Go to War Right Now." On November 22, 1963, Nagy was living in Dallas.

CMC was a subsidiary of Swiss-based Permindex, whose president was Prince Gutierez de Spadafora, Italian industrialist and landowner. Spadafora's daughter-in-law was related to Hjalmar Schacht. Clay Shaw, who managed the New Orleans International Trade Mart, was a director. Another was Giorgio Mantello, aka George Mandel, who moved to New Orleans. Once convicted of "criminal activities" in Switzerland, Mantello worked closely with fellow Hungarian Nagy.

One of the stated goals of the CMC was that "Rome will recover once again her position as center of the civilized world."

Major L.M. Bloomfield, a veteran of the OSS living in Montreal, was a suspect Garrison wanted to question. In Canada he controlled Credit Suisse, Heineken Breweries, Israel Continental Company, Grimaldo Siosa Lines and other international firms. Shaw's name was found among 11 directors of a company in Montreal based in Rome. Who was giving virtually unlimited money to the CMC and who was pocketing it? The answer might have been found in the huge withdrawals flowing from Evita Peron's accounts.

Paesa Sera reported on March 4, 1967 that CMC was a creature of the CIA, a money conduit, and that Shaw and Bloomfield conducted illegal political espionage under its cover. In New Orleans, Shaw was the respected citizen. He had helped restore the French Quarter. In Rome he was a vital member of the boards of twin companies covering for fascists accused of European assassinations. Shaw's address book contained the private number of Principessa Marcelle Borghesé, now Duchessa de Bomartao, related to Prince Valerio Borghesé. Called the "Black Prince" or "The New Duce," Borghese was leader of the Movimento Sociale Italiano, a neo-fascist syndicate. The Black Prince, a decorated submarine captain in the First World War, was convicted of cooperating with the Nazis in WWII and convicted to 12 years in prison.

The Black Prince is the same Borghesé rescued by Angleton. No wonder James Jesus Angleton was awarded the Sovereign Military Order of Malta by the Pope after the war. This may explain what Angleton was hinting at when questioned about the murder of JFK: "A mansion has many rooms; there were many things during the period; I'm not privy to who struck John."

Clay Shaw's affiliation with Permindex plugged in later to Argentina, Spain, Rome, New Orleans and Dallas. The international hit teams, financed by the CIA with funds diverted overseas to Gehlen's cover companies, started coming together after Shaw's arrest.

In November, 1960 it would be Nixon versus Kennedy. Frank Sinatra introduced Judith Exner to John Kennedy on the eve of the New Hampshire primary. A few weeks later, Sinatra introduced Judith Exner to Chicago Mafia boss Sam Giancana. Exner became involved, as William Safire put it, in a "dual affair with the nation's most powerful mobster and the nation's most powerful political leader."

Giancana was busy with more than his love life – he was hired to form assassination teams to kill Fidel Castro. He was retained by Robert Maheu, a former FBI and CIA operative. It was a classic cut-off. Maheu never mentioned that the CIA was behind it. He intimated to Giancana that wealthy Cuban exiles were the source of the funds. This sounded plausible, since Maheu was Howard Hughes' right-hand man.

Giancana placed Johnny Roselli, his Los Angeles lieutenant, in charge of the hit squads. In 1978, when the House Select Committee questioned him, Roselli hinted that his assignment was aimed at Kennedy as well as Castro. Shortly afterwards, his mutilated body was found floating in an oil drum off the Florida coast. Giancana never had a chance to testify. He was shot to death in his Chicago home.

The Howard Hughes organization, cover for the kill-Castro conspiracy (Hughes thought it was a

patriotic idea), has long retained Carl Byoir Associates as its public relations arm. Throughout the war, Byoir represented Nazi bankers, industrialists and the I.G. Farben interests. One of his clients was Ernest Schmitz of I.G. Farben-Ilgner and the German-American Board of Trade. His Information Services was subsidized by the Nazi government. George Sylvester Viereck, editor at the German Library of Information, was also in business with Byoir. A well-known Byoir client was the Frederick Flick Group. Flick, a Nuremberg defendant released by McCloy, was the single greatest power behind Hitler's military muscle.

Frederick Flick's son had interests in the W.R. Grace Company, and invested over $400,000 in partnership with J. Peter Grace in the United States. During the war, W.R. Grace was accused in a military report of protecting a certain Nazi Colonel Brite in Bolivia. In 1951, when the CIA smuggled Barbie out of Germany, he was sent to join the same Colonel Brite. George de Mohrenschildt was a close associate of William Grace, the company's founder.

De Mohrenschildt was a man of many faces. He befriended Lee and Marina Oswald, introduced them to the White Russian community, made phone calls to obtain housing. He explained to the Warren Commission that he was fascinated with this strange couple just out of Russia – but at the Petroleum Club in Dallas, De Mohrenschildt sang the praises of Heinrich Himmler. His travels took him all over the world on missions identified with intelligence. In 1956 he was employed by Pantepec Oil Company owned by the family of William Buckley.

De Mohrenschildt often discussed Oswald with J. Walton Moore, the CIA's Domestic Contacts Division resident in Dallas. In the spring of 1963, after visiting the Oswalds, he dashed off to Washington. There is a record of a phone call de Mohrenschildt made on May 7, 1963, to the Army Chief of Staff for intelligence. Also in May, he met with a member of that staff. His military connections seem to have been numerous. One of the first persons de Mohrenschildt took the Oswalds to visit in Dallas was retired Admiral Chester Burton.

Although De Mohrenschildt and his wife Jeanne testified at length before the Warren Commission, only attorney Albert Jenner and Pentagon historian Alfred Goldberg attended. One of Jenner's clients was General Dynamics, maker of the F-111 fighter that would achieve fame in Vietnam. Max Clark, chief of security for General Dynamics in Dallas, was another De Mohrenschildt associate; he donated funds to help Marina while George found Lee his next job in Dallas. Oswald took one at the graphics house of Jagger-Chiles-Stovall, which held classified military contracts.

Jeanne de Mohrenschildt was brought to the U.S. by a relative employed at the Howard Hughes organization. In 1977, George was found shot dead, allegedly a suicide, on the day a House Select Committee investigator stopped by looking for him. Jeanne consented to a press interview. She said George had been a Nazi spy.

Oswald's job allowed him to visit the Sol Bloom agency at least 40 times—the same agency that planned the motorcade route for Kennedy's fatal visit.

Ruth Paine, whom Oswald met via George, had called Roy Truly and procured work for Oswald at the Texas School Book Depository.

Maydell and the Gehlen knew all the right moves to create their patsy.

1960: Young Americans for Freedom

President Harry Truman warned of the CIA "Gestapo" he had created.

President Eisenhower left the White House fearing the "military-industrial complex" he handed to us.

In 1960, candidate Nixon was qualified for the job of President. Many influential people were sure he was the only choice.

Nixon knew every red scare tactic from his campaign against Jerry Voorhis in 1946 for the House seat,

and vs. Helen Douglas in the Senate, and working with Sen. Joe McCarthy. The prosecution of Alger Hiss on flimsy evidence proved his value.

But Nixon had also established lasting connections with members of the mob, the Vatican hierarchy, defense industries and known Nazis. He knew them all.

What if he lost after his 17 years of preparation? Would there be a backup team for the future? Could the Pentagon or Reinhard Gehlen visualize leaving the United States presidency to chance elections?

Senator Robert Kennedy was murdered on the eve of his primary election in June, 1968. With both Kennedys gone, Nixon finally made it.

In September, 1960, two months before the election, William F. Buckley, Jr. launched his Young Americans for Freedom (YAF), from the grounds on his Connecticut estate. Buckley's career was one of the most conservative in the U.S. Following his graduation at Yale, mentor Frank Chodorov grabbed him for purposes related to his job with McCormick's Chicago Tribune.

Buckley was stationed by the CIA in Japan from 1950 to 1954. He also did a stint in Mexico with E. Howard Hunt.

Co-founder of YAF was Douglas Caddy, whose offices were used by the CIA and Howard Hughes organization for the illegal Watergate entries, wiretaps and other dirty tricks. After his return from Japan, Buckley was ready to publish his own magazine, *The National Review*. This was an unusual opportunity to bring together the world's most conservative writers for publication and much propaganda accompanied by Buckley's glib innuendos.

Once the publication was a going concern, Buckley took Young Americans for Freedom to the campus – old ideas, old money and young minds to mold. Behind the project were well-funded military masters, including the YAF's Tom Charles Huston and the Cointel-Program cooked up by Nixon.

The selected advisory board for YAF was a *Who's Who* of ultraconservative oldies even then: Senator Strom Thurmond, Senator John Tower, Ronald Reagan, Professor Lev Dobriansky, General Charles Willoughby and Mr. Robert Morris are but a sampling.

Robert Morris may not be a household name, but Buckley knew him well, and Morris, Nixon, and Senator Joe McCarthy were team players. Joe McCarthy's strongest supporters in his bid to represent Wisconsin in the senate were Frank Seusenbrenner and Walter Harnisfeger. Both admired Adolf Hitler and made continuous trips to Germany.

Senator McCarthy was obliging enough. Before pursuing commies in the State Department, he had to release a few of Hitler's elite Nazis lingering at the Dachau prison camp. McCarthy beat John McCloy by about three years.

In 1949, during congressional hearings on the Malmedy Massacre, the bloody Battle of the Bulge, McCarthy invited himself to take over the entire testimony. He wasn't satisfied until the prison doors flew open. The most detestable and ugly battle of World War II, an assault upon Americans and civilians in Belgium, was ignored. Hitler's precious Generals Fritz Kraemer and Sepp Dietrick, along with Hermann Priess and many others, were set free.

With that business finished, McCarthy took on Robert Morris as Chief Counsel for the Senate Internal Security Subcommittee. Morris' training in Naval intelligence in charge of USSR counter-intelligence and psychological warfare were useful to Senator Joe. Particularly the latter. After McCarthy died, Morris moved to Dallas. He was a judge and was named president of Dallas University.

In 1961, a year after Buckley founded YAF, another conservative organization was founded in Munich, Germany: Conservatism USA (CUSA)—not students but troops in the U.S. Army mustered out to Dallas, Texas by November 1963. Their host would be Robert Morris. Letters between Larry Schmidt in Dallas and Bernie Weissman in Munich, Germany, in preparation for the arrival of CUSA, were published in the Warren Commission Hearings, Vol. XVIII. Segments of the letters:

November 2, 1962: Dallas to Munich, Larry Schmidt: "Gentlemen, we got everything we wanted … It saved the trouble of infiltration … Met with Frank McGee … (president of the Dallas Council of World Affairs) … Suggest Bernie convert to Christianity and I mean it."

(Bernard Weissman, the only Jew, was brought all the way to Dallas on November 22, 1963 to lend his name to the "Wanted for Treason" fliers handed out to welcome JFK. He testified that the John Birch Society paid for the ads and "wanted a Jewish name at the bottom.")

"We must all return to the church … These people are religious bugs … I think in terms of 300,000 members, $3,000,000."

"The John Birch Society has a million members. Look for us to merge with them in 1964."

"Arrangements are being made for me to meet the heads of the Dallas John Birch, General Walker and H.L. Hunt, Texas oil millionaire." (General Walker had been retired from the military by John Kennedy for his compulsory Pro-Blud indoctrination.) "I have already met the top editors of the *Dallas Morning News*, the country's most conservative newspaper."

"These people are radicals but there is a method in their madness. You see, they're all after exactly what we're after."

"No liberal talk whatsoever, none … Down here a Negro is a nigger … I mean, no one is ever to say one kind word about niggers."

"Liberals are our enemies."

"The conservative isn't against the Niggers, he just wants to keep him in his place for his own good." (President John Kennedy and Attorney General Robert Kennedy had waged a bitter battle from Sept. 30 to Oct. 3, 1962 at the University of Mississippi. The integration of one black student brought in the U.S. Army and the confinement of General Edwin Walker.)

January 4, 1963: Larry Schmidt to B. Weissman, Munich: "I want big men … believe me if I had a dozen such men I can conquer the world … I will go down in the history books as a great and noble man, or a tyrant … I expect to see you here in Dallas, especially Norman and Larry … If Jim Mosely is not here by Feb. 15, he is finished … One thing had best be understood, I am not playing games here in Dallas and expect you not to play games in Munich."

"I am not here in Dallas for my health or because I think Dallas is a wonderful place … Continue to have regular meetings and try to get things back in order in preparation for the big meetings."

February 2, 1963: Larry Schmidt: "We have succeeded, the mission with which I was charged in Dallas has been achieved … Friday night I attended a gathering of the top conservatives in Dallas. The meeting was at the home of Dr. Robert Morris, President of the Defenders of American Liberty. Present were Mr. George Ward, Detective for Dallas City Police, Mr. Ken Thompson, editorial writer for the *Dallas Morning News*, Mr. Clyde Moore, former PR man for H.L. Hunt, former UPI writer [eight others]."

"I told them exactly what I wanted."

"Others suggested using an already existing movement, named the Young Americans for Freedom, with already 50,000 members … CUSA, as set up in Munich, is now an established fact in Dallas, only we are calling it YAF. I think you catch on. We are starting Munich chapters of YAF. To spread to Stuttgart, Frankfurt, Heidelberg, Berlin, Kaiserslautern. We are getting every top name in business, education, politics, and religion to endorse YAF. Change all your records to read YAF."

"All those months in Munich were not wasted. I accomplished my task in Dallas. I need you here soon. I sold these people on each of you and they are expecting you to come to Dallas and play an important role … The days of leisure are over. We want to see you, Norman, Jim and Bill Burley back here in Dallas. Sheila and my brother will be here in August; Ken Glazebrook in Sept."

June 13, 1963: Larry Schmidt to B. Weissman in Munich, Germany: "Warren Carroll, our only other recruit to CUSA, is already a PhD and two MS's. Warren is a scriptwriter for *Lifeline*, the H.L. Hunt

television and radio series. Hunt is the millionaire oilman. Warren is 32, former CIA man. Don't worry, he has been checked out. Hunt checked him out." (This appears to be a DIA action. After Jack Ruby was arrested for killing Oswald inside the Dallas jailhouse, there were copies of Warren Carroll's *Lifeline* on the seat of his car, opened to a section on "Heroism." This is interesting because one of the first reasons Ruby gave for killing Oswald was, "I wanted to show them a Jew had guts.")

"We want to get Norman into the Republic National Bank … where we are building our credit like crazy for the day we need ready cash." (The Dallas Republic National Bank was identified by the *Washington Post*, February 26, 1967, as a conduit of CIA funds since 1958. Connie Trammel, who worked at the Republic National Bank, accompanied Jack Ruby to the office of Lamar Hunt, Wednesday, Nov. 20, 1963, two days before Kennedy was assassinated.)

October 1, 1963: Larry Schmidt to Munich, Germany: "I have a lot of contacts, bankers, insurance men, realtors … My brother began working as an aide to General Walker. Paid full time … National Indignation Committee will merge in the Fall of 1963, as soon as Bernie and Norman are in Dallas. This is a top secret merger and is not to be discussed outside the movement."

October 29, 1963: Larry Schmidt to Munich, Germany – "This town is a battleground and that is no joke. I am a hero to the right, a stormtrooper to the left … I have worked out a deal with the chairman of YAF. The arrangements are always delicate, very delicate. If I don't produce the bodies it is likely Dale (Davenport) will think me a phoney. He needs our help now. Adlai Stevenson is scheduled here on the 24th. Kennedy is scheduled in Dallas on November 24. All big things are happening now."

1963: A Few Connections in Dallas—Gen. Walter Dorberger, Michael and Ruth Paine

When George de Mohrenschildt introduced Lee and Marina to the Dallas-Ft. Worth White Russian displaced Czarists, he kept their social level on par with his American contacts. One casual dinner in the company of Michael and Ruth Paine was enough to set the Oswalds' course. George and Jeane didn't have to meet with them again.

Ruth Paine provided housing for Marina while Lee went to New Orleans. A few weeks later, she drove Marina to join Lee. Ruth returned from summer vacation at Wood's Hole, Mass., and brought Marina to her home in Irving, Texas while Lee was sat on the bus to Mexico with Albert Osborne/John Bowen and four other Solidarists from the Russian network.

After Kennedy was murdered, Dallas police rushed to the Paine's home. From their garage and elsewhere (via the Paines) came most of the incriminating evidence against Oswald. It never could be proven by the Warren Commission that the alleged murder weapon came from the Paine's garage.

The cropped photo that *Life* printed with Oswald holding a rifle was found in a box removed from the garage and taken to the police department, then returned the next day with no one present to identify its origin.

Accessory after the fact, a letter was delivered to Marina in December undated and unsigned to cover up General Walker's anxiety over blaming a "Communist," Lee Oswald, for shooting at him in April. Ruth Paine gave the letter to Marina. It wasn't in the home before then.

The Warren Commission required planted evidence to divert attention from Oswald's links to the Defense Department. Michael Paine was employed by Bell Aircraft, a DoD contractor. This job required security clearances—what would the Oswalds, an American "defector" and his transplanted Russian wife, be doing in his home?

Paine's boss at Bell Aircraft as director of research and development was none other than General Walter Dornberger, the notorious war criminal. Dornberger was meant to hang at Nuremburg for his crimes, mass murders and slave labor. The British warned the U.S. not to let him live, because even after the war he was plotting another one. As stated, "Dornberger is a menace of the first order who is

untrustworthy. His attitude will turn ally against ally and he would become a source of irritation and future unrest." (*Project Paperclip,* Clarence Lasby.) The very first call to authorities after the gun went off on November 22, 1963 was from an employee at Bell Helicopter who suggested "Oswald did it." Police never found the source who gave them both Oswald addresses that day.

Michael Paine took Lee to a meeting with General Edwin Walker shortly before the assassination. Soon Oswald would be charged with shooting at Walker in April, and the latter would call Nazi cronies in Germany, 24 hours after JFK was killed, to tell them that he finally knew "who shot through his window" seven months earlier—the same Oswald.

Who were the Paines? To believe the Warren Commission and the CIA staff of lawyers, they were Mr. and Mrs. Good Neighbor, all heart, altruistic. Ruth simply wanted to learn more Russian from a native. For that price, she housed Marina, a two-year-old daughter, a new infant, with all the fuss and mess of three extras in a tiny house.

Michael Paine was a descendant of the Cabots on both sides. Thomas Dudley Cabot, his cousin, a former president of United Fruit, offered his Gibraltar Steamship as cover for the CIA during the Bay of Pigs. Another cousin was Alexander Cochrane Forbes, a director of United Fruit and trustee of Cabot, Cabot & Forbes. Both Allen Dulles and John J. McCloy were part of the United Fruit team. The Paine family had links with circles of the OSS and the CIA.

Ruth Hyde Paine maintained close ties with the Forbes families. University of California researcher Peter Dale Scott investigated "the patrician Paine and Forbes families." A far cry from anyone's neighbor. Michael's education came as a tradition. He was a third generation physicist at Harvard before working for Bell Helicopter.

The British were correct on the Dornberger evaluation.

Another clue was Albert Speer, Hitler's Reichmaster for munitions and war production, General Dornberger, and their meeting in April, 1943. When it was obvious to Hitler they would be losing the war against the USSR, ranking Nazis made plans. Speer met with Dornberger at Peenemunde, the missile and rocket factory run with Werner Von Braun, and instructed him in "the dispersion of functions throughout the Reich."

Translated, that meant get ready to go to the U.S.

Lee Harvey Oswald, Albert Osborne

When Lee Harvey Oswald crossed into Mexico at Laredo, Texas, on Sept. 26, 1963, his companion on the Red Arrow bus was Albert Osborne, alias John Howard Bowen.

Bowen-Osborne had been running a school for highly professional marksmen in Oaxaca, Mexico, since 1934. The cover for the place was his particular mission, and he was the missionary. FBI records on Bowen date back to June 4, 1942, in Henderson Springs, Tennessee. He operated a camp for boys known as the "Campfire Council." Neighbors complained it engaged in pro-Nazi activities with young fascists. Bowen vehemently opposed the U.S. going to war with Nazi Germany.

Before the war, beginning in 1933, Bowen worked for the Tennessee Valley Authority. Dual British and American citizenship took him across the entire globe. So did his use of multiple aliases.

After the Warren Commission published its report in September 1964, attorneys in the Jake Floyd murder case recognized the name Osborne. On September 8, 1952, Floyd was murdered. The intended target was his father, District Judge Floyd. Two suspects were caught, one fled. Their testimony related to Osborne and his school for assassins. Later investigation revealed Osborne's connections to Division V of the FBI and Clay Shaw's Centro Mondiale Commerciale, with funding from New Orleans for Anti-Castro Cubans and others.

Lee Harvey Oswald applied for a tourist card to enter Mexico while still in New Orleans on

September 17, 1963. Four others with consecutive tourist numbers departed nine days later, like Oswald, all to arrive at the same time, disembarking from several different cities. They were with the White Russian Solidarists, the Gehlen emigré community. This assassination team funded Maurice Brooks Gatlin, Guy Bannister and the Miami office of Double Check Corporation. J. Edgar Hoover's Division V, domestic intelligence, working with the American Council of Christian Churches, had used this group from the Bowen-Osborne academy of assassins.

Volume XXV of the Warren Commission transcripts has many pages of interviews with people who had sent money to Jack Bowen. They never met him, and some like Mrs. Bessie White, Pikesville, Tenn., mailed "$35 a month to John Howard Bowen who she believed had been doing missionary work for 18 years in Mexico." Osborne-Bowen had a mission.

Lee Harvey Oswald, an agent from the U.S. Defense Dept., had a team of doubles impersonating his behavior, leaving trails of anti-American frustration and meetings with various people.

While Oswald was in Mexico just prior to Kennedy's murder, the purpose was concealed. Meanwhile, the CIA and various authorities led Oswald to the Cuban and Soviet embassies. When the face didn't match the authentic Oswald, it didn't matter, given a difference of 40 to 50 pounds. The obvious conclusion of all this was that Oswald wanted to go to Cuba next. Which Oswald? The objective was creating an illusion of Castro fascination just days before Kennedy was killed.

Senator John Tower and Marina Oswald

One of the most consistent conservatives among Buckley's YAF Advisory Board was Senator John Tower of Texas. If there is anything he wouldn't want in his back yard, it was a defector and his allegedly Communist wife from Minsk. Yet two years after joining the YAF team in 1960, Tower passed all waivers for Marina Oswald to come to the United States as soon as possible. Without his permission, this trip might never have taken place. Many wives from the USSR are not that lucky.

On March 22, 1962, Senator Tower cooperated. "The sanctions imposed on immigration and nationality are hereby waived in behalf of Mrs. Oswald. The file check on Marina by the FBI, CIA, Dept. of Security Office, Division of biographical intelligence and passport office," (Volume XXIV, 298).

George de Mohrenschildt testified (Volume IX, pp. 228-229): "Marina Oswald's father had been a Czarist officer of some kind. I don't remember whether it was army or navy." Her real father was never identified by name anywhere in the testimony.

Between 1948 and 1950, over 200 Byelorussian Nazis and their families resettled in New Jersey. Both George de Mohrenschildt and Marina were from Minsk, in the Byelorussian area.

Reinhard Gehlen's emigrés were useful to every phase of the Kennedy assassination cover-up.

John Tower knew Marina was a safe bet. Otherwise, why the rush? Our CIA and the Defense Department knew all there was to know about both Oswalds. Tower signed the immigration papers.

The Argentine Connections—Isaac Don Levine and the Ziger Family

The *Warren Report* wasn't published until September, 1964. Testimony of witnesses and exhibits were still being submitted up to the day of printing.

Yet as early as June 2, 1964, Isaac Don Levine, the arch anti-communist editor of *Plain Talk* magazine, arranged with the Warren Commission staff to bring the daughters of Alexander Ziger, Oswald's boss, from the Minsk Radio factory to Argentina. He suggested drawing on CIA assistance.

What was that about?

"When the Oswalds left Russia they smuggled out a message to one of the relatives of the Zigers living

in the U.S. They wanted help to get the Zigers' daughters out of Russia. The daughters, having been born in Argentina, could claim Argentine citizenship. Levine suggested some confidential source in the American Government such as the CIA should contact the Argentine Government to set machinery in motion."

– "Memorandum from W. David Slauson: Conference with Mr. Isaac Don Levine," *Warren Report*, May 23, 1964

On January 21, 1964, John J. McCloy told Commission members before any witness was called, "this fellow Levine is a contact with Marina to break the story up in a little more graphic manner and tie it into a Russian business, and it is with the thought and background of Russian connections, conspiracy concept."

If there was a Russian conspiracy to kill President John Kennedy, John McCloy, Isaac Don Levine, Allen Dulles, and J. Edgar Hoover, Nixon and others would squeeze that out.

Remember that Gary Powers strongly hinted at Oswald's role in downing the U-2, breaking up the Eisenhower-Khrushchev meeting while Lee was employed at the Minsk Radio factory? Nicolae Malaxa, Otto Skorzeny, and international CIA-DIA agents were thick in Minsk and Argentina. It was Alexander Ziger and his family who introduced Lee to Marina Oswald. That same evening, they were at the home of an unidentified woman just returned from the U.S. The president was murdered in 1963. Six months later, the CIA was assisting the Ziger daughters? …

One more connection to Richard Nixon.

When poor Whittaker Chambers almost collapsed from the strain of testifying against Alger Hiss, it was Isaac Don Levine who took "Chambers by the arm, a reluctant Chambers, and arranged the meetings where he would begin to smear Hiss." (*Friendship and Fratricide*, Meyer Zelig).

Levine also did business with James Martin, Marina's new manager, while searching for a "Soviet connection" to Kennedy's death. It was Martin who sold the photo of Oswald posing with communist literature and a rifle, the same evidence pulled from the Paine's garage. Note the similarity to Whittaker Chambers' "pumpkin papers" years earlier, the lie that launched Nixon's political career and convicted Alger Hiss.

If the evidence didn't fit the conclusions of investigators, one photo would sell the Oswald assassin story.

Treason for My Daily Bread – Argentina and Martin Bormann

In August 1971, a French paper headlined a news story, "Martin Bormann behind the Kennedy murders." It listed an international band of killers based in Texas. They carried out the two assassinations at German command.

Six years later, June 8, 1977, the *London Guardian* reported, "Bormann Linked with Kennedy Murder." This story was based on a new book titled, *Treason for My Daily Bread*, by Mikhail Lebedev.

Lebedev detailed how Martin Bonnann left Europe, established his current life in Paraguay, and how the fatal head shot to Kennedy was delivered by an agent paid by Bormann, alias of Zed.

Is any of this true? Many of these allegations and names come together with Paris Flammonde's *The Kennedy Conspiracy*, and *Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal*, otherwise known as the Torbitt Document.

"Zed" allegedly used a .45 for the final shot.

Buddy Walters, murdered January 10, 1969, picked up a .45 slug in Dealey Plaza and gave it to the Dallas Police.

There were two assassination teams in Dallas.

The military from Munich, Germany that was to take over the YAF, with Robert Morris' help, have yet to be identified or interviewed (Morris was from U.S. intelligence and had experience in covert functions inside the USSR.) Gen. Edwin Walker's arrangement with U.S. military in Germany, the arrival of Germans in Dallas, is open to question.

Albert Osborne's "mission" in Mexico, with direct links to Clay Shaw's Centro Mondiale Commerciale, has never been touched. This was the international Borghesé-Angleton band of killers with operations throughout the world.

Otto Skorzeny's CIA team and Gehlen death's squads, with headquarters in Madrid, were funded by Martin Bormann after the Evita Peron funds were released in 1952.

Lebedev mentions "Ruth," David Ferrie, Clay Shaw, Guy Bannister and Colonel Orlov. The very first day George de Mohrenschildt visited Marina Oswald, she was alone and Lee was working. He brought with him a "Colonel Orlov."

The House Select Committee on Assassinations "investigated" the murder of President John F. Kennedy from 1976-1978. The information about Bormann was available from 1971. *Treason for My Daily Bread* was published while they were supposed to be finding the smoking gun. G. Robert Blakey, chief consul of the Committee, refused to admit any research or documents on these subjects. He would hang up the telephone and even refused to say if he had ever seen the Torbitt Document.

Six million dollars was allotted by Congress to investigate the assassination of President Kennedy. Martin Bormann had his motives. What were G. Robert Blakey's?

Bob Edwards, in *A Study of a Master Spy* (London, 1961), reports that a member of Parliament and Kenneth Dunne presented documentary evidence that Allen Dulles held secret conferences with representatives of Hitler's SS Security Office in February and March 1943. They learned, "Official Washington knew Martin Bormann, Deputy Fuehrer of Hitler's Germany, master-minded the international 'Die Spinne' (Spider) underground organization which is *planning to revive Nazism* as soon as West Germany is adequately rearmed by the United States. Official Washington seems disinterested."

With John J. McCloy, Allen Dulles and J. Edgar Hoover in control of the Kennedy assassination investigation, these Nazi connections were buried.

The CIA's Man: The Chronology of Helmet Streikher

1937: Training for the Gestapo. A graduate of The University of Bonn, Germany. Went to Military School at Blutordensberg, Vogelsang Castle.

1938: Assigned to join General Francisco Franco in Spain.

1939-1940: In the U.S., he learned English and American customs. His cover was a German journalist working for Adolf Hitler.

1940-1941: With Reinhard Gehlen in Eastern Europe. He will join Gehlen when they are both working for Army intelligence.

1943-1945: Streikher worked with Skorzeny.

1945: On May 7, Streikher surrenders to Allies and is cleared for intelligence.

1946-1947: He works for the OSS (Officers of Strategic Services) in Europe, Central Intelligence Group (CIG).

1948-1950: Streikher stationed in Israel, Greece, Europe, Africa and the Middle East. OSS becomes CIA.

1951-1957: CIA assigned back to General Gehlen, now in the German offices of the BND.

1958: In the U.S. training Army Intelligence officers and CIA.

1958-1961: Helps plan Cuban Invasion. Active in the Bay of Pigs.

1961-1965: In Africa, the Middle East and United States on CIA assignment. On November 22, 1963,

he said, “One of the worst kept secrets [in the world] is the truth about the President’s murder. It wasn’t Castro or the Russians. The men who killed Mr. Kennedy were CIA contract agents. … It had to happen. The man was too independent for his own good.”

1968-1970: Senior field agent for the CIA. Disguised as a writer.

1971-1973: Back in the United States. Langley, Virginia, training and making plans under assignment.

1974-1977: Under George Bush, then director of the CIA, Streikher sent to Africa and Middle East.

1978-1980: Contract agent on special assignment for CIA. June 15, 1980, he retires.

Other Known Aliases: U.S. Army officer Captain William Raine, also known as Ross Meyers, Hans Mollof, Karl Rolff and Mark Schmidt. He had nine other pieces of identification in assorted names and nationalities, some in the form of passports.

The Bunge Corporation, Argentina & Germany

The stock market dropped 24 points in 27 minutes when news of President Kennedy’s assassination was announced. 2.6 million shares were sold off. It was the greatest panic since 1929.

Somebody made a huge profit selling short in many markets.

Somebody made half a billion dollars in one day. Coincidentally, the Allied Crude Vegetable Oil Refining Corporation, headed by New Jersey commodities dealer Anthony De Angeles, crashed the same day, driving the market down.

Allied Crude was owned by the American Bunge Corporation and financially controlled by a group of shareholders headquartered in Argentina, “Bunge and Born, LDA.” *Business Week* of October 19, 1963, one month before the Kennedy assassination, described the Born family of Argentina, the biggest shareholders in Bunge, as European, specifically German.

Everything about Bunge has German influence. They have a $2 billion annual business in 80 countries. There are over 110 corporate offices, all linked by Telex and under-the-ocean telegraph channels. The Bunge Corporation is also known as “the Octopus.”

The book *Were We Controlled?* detailed the relationship of the Bunge Corporation, the foreknowledge of Kennedy’s murder, and the Argentine-German connections.

General Edwin Walker and the Hitler Nazis

The Eagle’s Nest, now a mountain restaurant, was given to Adolf Hitler by Nazi aide Martin Bormann for the Fuehrer’s 50th birthday. It is not far from Hitler’s former summer home in Berchtesgaden.

Nearby is the Platterhof Hotel, built for guests when they came to pay their respects. The Platterhof has changed its name to the General Walker Hotel.

November 23, 1963, one day after Kennedy’s death, Gen. Edwin Walker called Munich, Germany from Shreveport, Louisiana. Walker’s important call via transatlantic telephone was to the Nazi newspaper *Deutsche National Zeitung un Soldaten-Zeitung*. Walker couldn’t wait to tell Munich that Lee Harvey Oswald, the lone suspect in the Dallas murders, was the same man who shot through his window in April, 1963.

There was never a shred of evidence or reliable witness that could make this connection. Dallas police and FBI were taken by surprise. To cover this over-exuberance, linking a Marxist assassin to the altercation, it became necessary to have Ruth Paine deliver that ridiculous letter to Marina Oswald on December 3, 1964. The delayed letter was to have been written the night Lee was out shooting at Walker’s home. The only bullet fragment that remained in custody was never positively identified as coming from the 6.5 Mannlicher Carcano, and there is no proof Oswald even handled this rifle. Why was General Walker in such a hurry to have his information printed in Germany before anybody in Dallas

heard about it?

Kurt-George Kiesinger had just been installed as Chancellor of West Germany and Franz-Josef Straus as finance minister.

Kiesinger entered the radio propaganda division of Nazi Foreign Minister von Ribbentrop at age 36. He was then directing a world-wide radio propaganda apparatus with 195 specialists under his supervision during the war. He was the liaison officer, coordinating his department's work with that of Propaganda Minister Joseph Goebbels.

Richard Nixon and Kurt-George Kiesinger were pals. Nixon tried to hide his Nazi past. But General Walker, now home from military service in Munich, knew the importance of such propaganda. He was calling the same people who, under Hitler, published and controlled the newspapers.

There were two motives for this call.

First, it gave international attention to the fact that Oswald, the Marxist gunman, was shooting at Walker as well as the President.

General Walker knew too many people in the Defense Department and in the Dallas-Fort Worth area that could be part of this assassination. The claim made him appear a victim and not a suspect. It also created a profile for Lee Harvey Oswald.

No possible motive could explain why Oswald would really want to kill President Kennedy. By making it appear that Oswald shot at the right-wing General Walker with his John Birch connections, and then shot Kennedy (the commie-symp that Walker accused of treason), it would seem that Oswald was just nuts. He didn't know right from left.

The Munich newspaper Walker called was linked to the World Movement for a Second Anti-Komintern, an arm of the Gehlen apparat.

Some of Hitler's ex-Nazis and SS-men were on the staff. Gerhard Frey, the editor, was a close friend of various Nazi Party members of the Witiko League. The Witiko League and the Sudetendeutch Landsmannscraft were organizations for displaced refugees. By the summer of 1948, they formed large organizations, and by 1955 Dr. Walter Becher was elected to the executive board of the Witiko League. Becher was one of the kingpins of Nazi front organizations.

The links of Sen. Joe McCarthy, Charles Willoughby, Gen. Edwin Walker and Robert Morris to the Nazis converged when Dr. Walter Becher set up offices in Washington, D.C. in 1950.

By July 16, 1957, Becher, praised by *American Opinion* and other extreme right-wing publications, initiated his liberation campaign. MacArthur, McCarthy, Willoughby, members of the U.S. Congress and public officials then began openly to cooperate with the Nazi resurgence. Dan Smoot, former Dallas FBI agent, kept in touch with Dr. Becher in Munich. His printed sheets were identical to Goebbels propaganda under Hitler, and Walker's disinformation one day after Kennedy was killed.

Volkmar Schmidt came from Munich, Germany to work full time for General Walker. How long did he work, and where was he on November 23, 1963, when Walker made the call to the same city that gave us the CUSA imports?

The YAF crowd in Dallas was an interesting gang: Col. Charles Willoughby, intelligence chief in the South Pacific; Robert Morris, U.S. counter-intelligence and psychological warfare; Gen Edwin Walker, brought home from Munich by JFK; William Buckley, Jr., CIA in Japan, Mexico, and elsewhere; Sen. John Tower, who cleared all bureaucratic obstacles for Marina's emigration to the U.S.

1964: The Warren Commission

President Lyndon Johnson was forced to select a commission to investigate the assassination of President Kennedy and the murder of Lee Harvey Oswald by Jack Ruby. Texas authorities were called upon to conduct the original investigation. There were too many suspicious people around the world who

believed a conspiracy existed. Those rumors had to be squelched.

J. Edgar Hoover's FBI never budged from its position that Lee Harvey acted alone. Any evidence that didn't conform to this conclusion was ignored.

Twenty-six volumes of witness testimony and exhibits were published, and only 8,000 copies were sold. No more reprints. The contradiction between the conclusions of the *Warren Report*, and the abundance of discrepancies in the other volumes, makes fascinating reading.

Chief Justice Earl Warren, John J. McCloy and Allen Dulles were LBJ's logical choices. President Kennedy didn't trust CIA Director Dulles. Now JFK was dead and Dulles would be in charge of all possible "conspiracy" investigations. Richard Nixon, temporarily retired from politics for the first time since 1946, selected Rep. Gerald Ford to sit on this commission. Nixon selected Ford a second time when he ran home to escape impeachment during the Watergate hearings.

One of the first subjects for commission members to share in January, one month before witnesses were selected, was the matter of Lee Harvey Oswald's status as a government agent. Gerald Ford was the only member of the group to write a book on the assassination. It opened with the hushed and secret meeting in which allegations were received that Oswald worked for the FBI. What Ford left out of his book and commissioners ignored in their report was that Oswald had been working for the CIA. Chairman Earl Warren and Commission Attorney Leon Jaworski knew about this. They stated that "Mr. Belli, attorney for Jack L. Ruby, was familiar with these allegations."

Oswald's informant number was 110669. How was that for a starter?

The next move was to start building the myth and ignore fact one, stated above. This grand commission would call in a doctor who never met Lee Oswald or Jack Ruby to assist with the cover up.

Justice Warren suggested bringing in Dr. Overholser, who "of course is not a lawyer. He is a doctor from St. Elizabeth's Hospital." As the chairman went on to explain, "we felt we ought to have someone who, in that field, could advise us on matters concerning the life of Oswald and possibly the life of Ruby also."

The next order of business was who should write the report. By January 21, 1964, that had to be decided. Chairman Warren: "we consulted with the Defense Department, and they have offered to lend us one of their historians to do this job, and we think that it is quite essential to the work of the Commission." Mr. Goldberg would assist from the Air Force. Mr. Cokery was from the Army.

"Mr. Winnaker recommended them," Chief Counsel J. Lee Rankin offered. "We would work with them to try to anticipate all of the various historical aspects."

Who's Who in the CIA describes "Mr. Winnaker" as a native of Germany, born in 1904. His full name is Dr. Rudolph August Winnacker. He was an analyst for the OSS, a historian in the War Department, 1945-1949, and then chief of the Historical Division at the Pentagon. Was Dr. Winnaker the ilk of Willoughby or Gehlen? When did he come here from Germany? Where is he now?

Marina Oswald was the first witness to testify on February 3, 1964.

Warren wanted nothing more than to make her comfortable.

The first question dealt with the General Walker story because he'd blown it by calling Munich so soon. That scandal had to be put to rest immediately.

Warren asked Marina "if Exhibit Two was familiar to her because it was a picture of General Walker's house?" Marina said, "no," but that wasn't good enough. She was asked again and once more said, "I didn't see it, at least, taken from this view I can't recognize it. I never saw the house itself at any time in my life." That wasn't sufficient. She just couldn't remember "this particular one." Chairman Warren was ready to go "off the record."

They had only just begun.

Chief Counsel Rankin suggested he show her "more pictures," then maybe she would recognize the Walker home. This time she was given a selection of a location in New Orleans, two snapshots from

Leningrad, and the same shot of the Walker home. Because Walker wasn't living in a castle in Leningrad, Marina assumed that house in Dallas must belong to "General Walker."

This was admitted for identification. "Marina Oswald positively identified the photograph of General Walker's home among Lee's possessions."

The construction of the myth could now proceed. There is much that remains to be said about this commission and its phony report. Admission of an old card trick at the beginning set the tone for the charade to follow. The surrounding of Lee and Marina Oswald by Reinhard Gehlen agents for the purposes of covering up the assassination conspiracy would never come out.

Two Lee Harvey Oswalds existed.

One memorized the Marine manual by age 17, went directly into radar and electronic work. He trained at U-2 bases, learned the Russian language, got himself into and out of the Soviet Union, wrote clear and literate letters. He was met on arriving back home by government agents, given jobs, fathered two children, owed no debts, traveled a great deal, met with interesting oil geologists, defense department and intelligence agents. Their social circle included the "Cabots and Lodges" from Czarist Russia, Admirals and some fancy folks.

The other Oswald was one developed by the Warren Commission to divert attention from the facts. No one ever saw the original "diary" that he couldn't have possibly written.

Every Gehlen witness and emigré associated with the CIA, Tolstoy Foundation or Greek Orthodox Church was directed by the most ridiculous questions. From this garbage, the Defense Department extracted a history.

But the facts speak for themselves.

CHAPTER FOUR

TIMELINE – HOW THE PAST AFFECTS OUR FUTURE AND THE PRESENT

World Watchers International, August 17, 1979 and August 24, 1979

1826: The murder of William Morgan, writer, for revealing secrets of the Freemasons. Hitler will oppress Masons as well as Jews later.

1830: Mormon Church, Joseph Smith, *Revelations*. The Church is now a front for CIA, computer-fed data banks, the repository for all of our lives.

1838: U.S. Civil War. Southern industry destroyed to block further wars. The South turned to armaments, soldiers, its revenge only coming to fruit with the 1980 election.

1860s: Czar Alexander II and USA, President Abraham Lincoln working to advance Russian technology. Standard Oil, USA, British Empire, Royal Dutch Shell to be threatened. They will want Russia subdued.

1862: Nobel family, gunpowder and other inventions, danger to British fleets in Baltic, Crimean War.

1872: Robert Nobel established in Baku, Russia, building pipelines, railroads, storage for oil. First oil tankers. Baron Von Mohrenschildt, father of George, Oswald's friend, in charge.

1877: Standard Oil, USA, gains national ascendancy of oil market.

1870s to 1919: German secret cults forming. Anti-Semitic, nationalistic. Pan German movement VOLKISCH, interest on occultism. This movement never ended. Strong today. Strength behind Hitler.

1891: Cecil Rhodes, S. Africa, controlled 90% of world's diamond supply. Formed Round Table, Great Britain secret society. Rockefeller, Standard Oil started funding University of Chicago.

1902: Rockefeller Medical Institute, Rockefeller U. New York. Oil baron now in "medicine, education." Our institutions of learning and health began to be controlled by industry.

1905: First Russian uprisings, revolutions, hints of future. Japan wiped out Russian fleet, believed they could be conquered.

1906: Russia, Great Britain, France planning containment of Germany. Russians wanted Dardanelles, France wanted to restore Alsace and Lorrain, iron mines and coal, Britain their empire holdings. Germany building a navy to threaten British supremacy.

1908: Col. House, Texas, in Britain with Herbert Hoover. Round Table conspirators. Would defeat Woodrow Wilson's goals later.

1908-1924: William Buckley, Sr. in Mexico City for Rothchild's Shell, Rockefeller oil.

1910: Secret meeting of bankers, Jekyll Island, Ga., started Federal Reserves Act. Finalized in 1913 by Woodrow Wilson.

1912: Founding of Germanen Order. To merge with Thule Society. After defeat of Kaiser Wilhelm II's regime, Thule searched for a Fuehrer. Anti-Semitic, identified with Hindu racial purity.

1913: Rockefeller Foundation founded. Affects news, TV, radio, culture and communications.

1914: Assassination of Archduke Francis Ferdinand of Austria, WWI begins. Ten million died, lost in famine, epidemics. The plots hatched in 1906 finally "worked."

1915: Lusitania sunk, sacrificed by British, anti-German hysteria. Other planes, boats lost the same way to present date.

1915-Present: FBI founded by Charles J. Bonaparte, grandson of Napoleon's brother, got into political acts with World War I. "Stiff neutrality laws" (plans of Hindu uprising vs. British), to "Slicker raids," rounding up men who failed to register. Established Alien Act of 1918, deport, exclude anarchistic classes. Bonaparte and Bouvier family had close links.

1917: Bolshevik revolution breaking out in Russia as war against Germany almost over. U.S., Britain troops sent inside Russia to try to save the retreat at that end. Volunteer army of exiles formed, used to present day.

1919-1920: Versailles Treaty, Wilson poisoned, comes home to die. Ku Klux Klan in the USA, Thule Society in Germany, expand. Now anti-Wilson. Col. E.M. House, Institute of International Affairs. Urgency on how to deal with communism, loss of empires, fallen eagles.

1919: South Africa, Broederbond "religion." An experiment of total control, children, education, thoughts. To link with Nazis later. Gerrit Viljoen, head of Broederbond, Rand Afrikaans University. Without exception, every prime minister, state president in South Africa from 1948 to the end of the Apartheid era in 1994 was a member of the Afrikaner Broederbond.

1920: National Socialist Movement born. For Germans around the world. Self-determination for all Germans.

1920s-1930s: Lt. Col. White, with Tong Song gang, Asia, pre-Mafia, to move to Toronto, begin mind control experiments for OSS, 1942, then CIA. Move to California for further experiments.

1919: Sen. Henry Cabot Lodge, Mass., Senate Foreign Relations Committee, against Wilson and League of Nations. Lodge, Jr. to lose senate seat to John F. Kennedy in 1952.

1920: Scheme against restrictions of Treaty of Versailles. Gen. Reinhard Gehlen joined New German Army. Later to head East Europe spy system for Hitler, form CIA for USA under Allen Dulles. Gehlen Nazi agents involved with JFK assassination and cover-up.

1921: Council on Foreign Relations formed. Press, corporations, bankers, utilities, transportation, retailers, industrialists to advise army, White House, how to gain profits. Navy, Air Force, Marines, Army fight for their gains. We pay.

1921: Hoover Institute think tank, Stanford University, Palo Alto, California. Recipient of files of Okhrana, Czarist secret police. Later to receive diaries of Goebbels, Himmler, others. U.S. agencies use these documents to "handle radicals," "protesters."

1922: British put in Mussolini, Italy. Russia becomes Union of Soviet Socialist Republic, official.

Onassis in Argentina selling "tobacco," on way to millionaire. *Time* Magazine started by Henry Luce. Hitler writing *Mein Kampf*.

1923: Interpol started. Vienna, later to Berlin. Gestapo Police force. Moved to France after WWII, J.E. Hoover, Nazi connections, later Vice-President. Accumulated files now in Mormon vaults. In August, President Harding killed in S.F. Concealed Teapot Dome, govt. and oil conspiracies. Harding wanted "Dictatorship" in USA.

1924: W. Buckley, Sr. moved from Mexico, sets up oil interests in Venezuela. George De Mohrenschildt working for Creole Petroleum, a subsidiary. Later to link with Auchincloss family, Jackie, Oswald. Lenin dies. Stalin as dictator began purge of opponents. Howard Hughes Sr. died. Howard, orphan, age 19, "guided" by Noah Dietrich, "public accountant" from Doheny oil, to supervise Hughes Tool Co. Without the tool bit invention, oil companies were limited to breaking the surface. Howard worked on planes, movies.

1930: Russian fascists from Harbin, Russian Manchuria, moved to US, Connecticut fascist party. 50,000 based here.

1932: Broederbond begins removing all children, age seven, from homes. Joined Nazi Secret Society, Des Ahnenerbe. Later, will instigate South African separation of races.

1933: E.J. Gumbel, who wrote of "400 political assassinations" prior to Hitler election, 1933, fired as professor from Heidelberg, Germany. *Time*, Sept. 5, 1932: "Nazis had one victory for the week." Gumbel. Hitler becomes Reich Chancellor. Cover of *Time*. Total power. Dachau concentration camp built. Book burning. Boycott of all Jewish-owned businesses. Gestapo formed.

1934: Roosevelt inaugurated. Jack Ruby moves from Chicago to LA, with John Roselli. Plot to Seize the White House. Exposed by Gen. Smedley Butler. Feb. 15, 1935, report to Congress, no one is prosecuted. J. Howard Pew, long associate of Robert Welch, Birch Soc., involved. 1963, Birch Soc., Buckley, Caddy Nazis involved in JFK-YAF links to assassination in Texas. Best kept secret to date.

1936: Hitler invades Rhineland. Swiss Bank Account became haven for secrecy. To fund fascism and rightist causes. Used today. Roosevelt re-nominated. Spanish Civil War, testing ground for German-Italian Fascism. It worked. Ford Foundation started.

1937: France sabotaged by Cagoulards, ("hooded men") aided in arms from Germany and Italy, undermining the country for takeover.

1938: Germans staking out 600,000 square acres, Antarctica. To be used five years later, massive escapes, money, gold, Nazis. U.S. joined Interpol. J.E. Hoover in touch with top Nazis until Pearl Harbor, then went under for a few years. Night of Broken Glass, synagogues destroyed, shops torn down, 26,000 sent to concentration camps. Jews expelled from schools.

1939: Subversion of France. Cells since 1934. German, Italian financed. CSAR, Comite D'Action Revolutionnaire. Hooded ones, Cagoulards. Jean Marie Bouvier, son of French industrialist, involved. Bouvier member of CSAR. Hugh Auchinloss, Jackie's step-father's first wife, Maya DeChrapovitsky, White Russian Czar's entourage. Auchinloss, Naval Intelligence, wealthy stockbroker, host to George DeMohrenschildt when Jackie was a young child. Is the "mystery" of Jackie, Kennedy, Onassis linked to Nazi, Czar, CSAR organizations? Was she a plant when JFK defeated H. Lodge, Jr.?

1939: Jack Ruby, Chicago, aiding Hoffa, Waste Handler's Union. Founder murdered. (In 1947, Nixon, then a member of House Committee on Un-American Activities, bailed Ruby out of a jam.) Giancana, Paul Dorfman take over the Union.

1939: Chaing Kai-Shek given $25 million in credits from US.

1939: James W. Young, advisor to Nelson Rockefeller, to become Vice-President and director of J. Walter Thompson advertising agency (Watergate front). Consultant to Ford Foundation on mass communication. Ford funded Hitler, built tanks and trucks for the German war machine.

CHAPTER FIVE

HOW NIXON ROSE TO POWER

(MAE BRUSSELL, REPRINTED FROM *THE REALIST*, AUGUST 1972)

The rise of Adolf Hitler and fascism in Germany were carefully planned.

It began with the secret rearmament following defeat in World War I, a flagrant violation of Versailles Treaty disarmament agreements. American munitions manufacturers aided the military leaders of Germany in the covert rearmament.

Over *400 political assassinations* of legitimate government officials in Germany occurred in this period.

The courts assisted the growing military regime from 1920-1933. Two governments, one official and legal, one secretive, existed side by side. Hitler, front man and leader of the illicit rearmament, mistaken for comical by intellectuals, was administered the oath as chancellor of the German Reich on January 30, 1933.[1]

The rise of Richard Nixon and fascism in the United States were carefully planned.

American financiers, disdainful of the Versailles Treaty, fed and supported Germany's rearmament. The same attitude also met the Geneva Accord, approved by Dwight Eisenhower for Indochina in 1945.[2]

A study of the State Department and espionage establishment reveals that we had clandestine armies functioning abroad and in the United States.[3]

Hundreds of political assassinations related to minority races, labor leaders and spokesmen against fascism have taken place in the U.S. since World War II. In 1963, the assassination of President John Kennedy in Dallas allowed our own hidden, clandestine government to maintain control.

The candidate for President in 1968, Robert Kennedy, was murdered by the same people on the night of his victory in the primaries.

The judiciary, including the Supreme Court, have supported secret government by lending its authority to the concealment of conspiracies to murder our leaders. They refuse to examine documents that exist, allow truth to remain locked in the National Archives to perpetuate the "national security" lie.

Richard Nixon, front man and leader of this illegal government, mistaken for comical by intellectuals, was administered the oath of president of the United States on January 20, 1969.

Military and industrial fanatics felt deprived and defeated when John Kennedy would not make war with the Soviet Union as late as 1961. E.M. Dealey, militant publisher of the *Dallas News,* told President Kennedy: "We need a man on horseback to lead this nation. Too many people in Texas and the Southwest think you are riding Caroline's tricycle."[4]

John Kennedy was murdered two years later in Dealey Plaza. He feared the hidden government behind his back, publicly stating he wanted "to splinter the CIA in a thousand pieces and scatter it to the winds."[5]

The day our President was murdered, the streets of Dallas were filled with posters and handbills proclaiming him a traitor. This was the same motivation for illegal assassinations and killings in Nazi Germany.[6]

The Warfare State was set free after November 22, 1963 to show its ugly face. The war in Asia escalated with no noticeable provocation only *three weeks after* the murder of President Kennedy.[7]

John Foster Dulles was U.S. Secretary of State from 1953-1959. Before and after, this public servant wielded tremendous power and influence with the military and industrial monopolies of power and wealth in the world. He was the architect of "containing communism."[8] Mr. Dulles confided: "President Eisenhower surrendered all his power to me." In 1956, he said, "Don't bother about what the President said. I write what he says."[9] The State Department was "in my hat."[10]

Allen Dulles, his brother, headed the spy agency formerly known as the OSS. As long as John Foster was Secretary of State, Allen Dulles had no need to "chafe under political control." Both of them placed "supreme confidence in their personal judgments." They were completely trusted, able to act at will, "shielded from any unpleasant consequences."[11]

Adolf Hitler declared war in 1941. By 1942, Allen Dulles was moved to Switzerland *for the purpose of rounding up and importing* German scientific "specialists" to the United States. *Two years before the war ended* (or its fate was decided), the United States was making arrangements for Nazi scientists, arms experts, to come to our democracy (for which the boys were fighting and dying at that moment).[12]

From 1945 until 1952, the U.S. military brought over 642 alien "specialists" and their families from Nazi Germany. They were known collectively by the code-name "Paperclip." German missile and rocket experts, munition makers, war experts were carefully selected and placed in aerospace programs and armament manufacturing.[13]

Violent anti-communist fears by the military and munition makers justified the transformation of a once democratic nation into the fascist state we have today. Members of the Nazi Party now hold key positions in our universities, factories, aircraft and aerospace programs.[14]

When the Nazi empire collapsed in 1945, General Reinhard Gehlen joined forces with our OSS. Gehlen was placed in charge of wartime intelligence for Foreign Armies East. "It was not long before Gehlen was back in business, this time for the United States. Gehlen named his price and terms."[15] A series of meetings was arranged at the Pentagon with Nazi Gehlen, Allen Dulles, J. Edgar Hoover and others.[16] The Gehlen organization combined forces and agents with the OSS, which was soon to become known as the CIA. *Experts in clandestine and illegal control of Germany through political assassinations and reversal of judicial processes became the teachers of Allen Dulles and Richard Helms*. They helped form the new CIA in 1947, based upon clandestine activities in Nazi Germany.[17]

Espionage networks were to spy out secrets of other nations. Instead they have secretly engaged in overthrowing governments.

Maintaining billion-dollar war machines and related armament and aircraft factories requires controlling people, political leaders and otherwise legal governmental agencies. The communist scare, hot war and cold war propaganda, would continue to manipulate the majority of the people. This scare was the brainchild of fascist strategists.

Enter Richard Milhous Nixon.

He applied to the FBI following graduation from law school and received no response. When the United States entered World War II, Nixon requested sea duty and was assigned to the South Pacific Combat Air Transport Command.[18] Nixon's 15 months in the South Pacific ended when he was transferred to Fleet Air Wing 8 at Alameda, California. The next step, *on special orders* to the Navy Bureau of Aeronautics, was winding up active contracts with aircraft firms, including Bell and Glenn Martin.[19] As a Lieutenant-Commander in the Navy, Richard Nixon's next task was "negotiating settlements" of *terminated war contracts* at the Bureau of Aeronautics Office at 50 Church Street, New York City.[20]

That was 1945, when immigration began for the 642 Nazi rocket and aerospace experts and scientists

from Germany. Through the "generosity of the Guggenheim Foundation," they obtained a suitable site – a huge medieval castle, built by financier Jay Gould on a 160-acre estate at Sands Point, Long Island. Here the Germans began work on a secret project for the Navy's Office of Research and Inventions.[21]

April, May, June and July, 1945: worldwide attention fell upon German atrocities. From Belsen, Nordhusen, Buchenwald, and Dachau came stories of slaughter and grotesque medical research conducted in the name of science. Public opinion polls gave no evidence of generous feelings toward any group in the German population. But opinions do not automatically create policy.[22]

By 1945, the armed services accepted Nazi mentality as indispensable to American military power. Young advisors were not alarmed by the devastations of the Third Reich. They looked upon the German scientists with excitement and anticipation.[23] The Department of Navy was the first to act on the emigration.[24]

The South and Southwest states benefited economically from this influx of munitions makers to the rocket and space industries. Segregated, racist states were natural habitats for imported Germans. Cold war propaganda, perpetuated by hatred of the Soviet Union and much of Asia, was financed and fostered for the most part in Florida, Louisiana, Georgia, Ohio, Texas, Alabama, Arizona, Nevada, New Mexico and California.

The same mentality that justified genocidal, inhuman slaughters on the continent of Europe built machinery to extend pain and warfare in Southeast Asia.

Richard Nixon was in New York, serving in the Navy, the summer that importation plan started going into effect. He soon moved to Maryland where a very important telegram would arrive …

"He wanted to get out of the service, but there was the great question, 'What now?' While he pondered his alternatives, events and circumstances were deciding the question for him. A telegram was the instrument of fate."[25]

– RaIph De Toledano

In August, 1945, the "Committee of One Hundred Men" in California placed an advertisement in 26 newspapers:

WANTED – Congressman candidate with no previous political experience to defeat a man who has represented the district in the House for ten years. Any young man, resident of district, preferably a veteran, fair education, no political strings or obligations and possessor of a few ideas for betterment of country at large may apply for the job. Applicants will be reviewed by 100 interested citizens who will guarantee support but will not obligate the candidate in any way.[26]

That ad was typical, a pretension that this was an open contest for office. Richard Nixon, living in Maryland, still in the Navy, received a telephone call from Herman Perry: "Are you a Republican and are you available?" were the two questions asked of Nixon.[27]

Herman Perry was vice president of Bank of America[28]—soon on its way to becoming the largest private bank in the world. By 1960, one hundred top corporations were spending $21 billion for military goods. In California alone, fully half of all jobs related directly or indirectly on the continuance of the arms race.[29]

Richard Nixon—poor, from an unknown family, absent from California for many formative years during law school and military service – was selected to represent old guard California Republicans in Congress.[30] He was called upon to serve the strategists.

Nixon was "discovered."

Central to the political escalation of Richard Nixon from congressman to vice president was the Alger Hiss case. The Hiss case was to Nixon what the Reichstag fire was to Hitler. Both were dramatic lies planned and executed by clandestine strategists.

Parallels to German strategy—assassinations, destruction of evidence, distortions to discredit legitimate public servants – were found in America.[31] In 1934, Alger Hiss was legal counsel for the Senate Nye Committee, set up for the purpose of investigating illegal rearmament practices.[32] Hiss antagonized American industrial and banking giants. Germany was rearming illegally. It became necessary to discredit anyone who, like Hiss, worked for legitimate peaceful alternatives.

Whittaker Chambers made a point of becoming acquainted with Alger Hiss in 1934. Chambers was a suspected German spy.[33] Imported techniques were used to discredit Hiss. After several years, Hiss could be strategically placed in various Government services. John Foster Dulles was instrumental in appointing Hiss to the chair of the Carnegie Foundation, a group associated with peace and the United Nations.

Attacks on Hiss began in 1941, attempts to associate him with communists, and these exploded like a time bomb in 1948. The total effect in delaying the smear was to discredit an era. Richard Nixon was a recipient of these efforts. The reputation of Roosevelt, the New Deal, Dumbarton Oaks Conference, United Nations and Truman's administration all were tinted "red." Joe McCarthy entered this milieu and expressed fears fomented in lies.

Richard Nixon also served his masters by employing fear and hysteria. His original campaigns against Jerry Voorhis and Helen Douglas were *unfounded red smears*. That is the how he operated.

One of the clues that the framing of Hiss was a covert operation was the common mishandling of evidence (as seen, for instance, in the murder of John Kennedy—bullets, clothing, weapons, X-rays, photographs, car interior, autopsy reports, cameras, street sign, curb, lamppost, clothing of John Connally, diaries, FBI documents, CIA reports and State Department papers were either burned, flown to Michigan and destroyed, altered, planted, missing or locked up.[34])

Evidence in the murder of Robert Kennedy is "locked up for 75 years."[35]

What happened to the lone piece of evidence in the Alger Hiss case critical to his conviction, the famous Woodstock typewriter? Because Richard Nixon said his "name, reputation and career" were linked to this case, he will tell you about the typewriter himself:

"A massive search was initiated for the key 'witness' in the case, the old Woodstock typewriter on which Chambers said Mrs. Hiss had typed the incriminating documents. On December 13, FBI agents found the typewriter. The same day I appeared before the Grand Jury with the microfilm."

– Richard Nixon, *Six Crises*, 1962

For five dollars less, you could buy the same story six years later, by the same author, without the typewriter:

"A massive search was initiated for the key 'witness' in the case, the old Woodstock typewriter on which Chambers said Mrs. Hiss had typed the incriminating documents. On December 13, FBI agents were unable to find the typewriter, but they did find some old letters which Priscilla Hiss admitted having typed on the Woodstock."

– Richard Nixon, *Six Crises*, 1968

At this point, Nixon added a footnote blaming the "press."

Nixon failed to inform the reader that the Woodstock typewriter was found not by 35 FBI agents several months later, after turning Washington upside-down searching for it. *The typewriter was actually found*

by Donald Hiss and his own investigators, and presented as an exhibit for the defense by Alger Hiss at the first trial.

Richard Nixon, the chief prosecutor of the Alger Hiss case, could not write honestly in his own book about key evidence in the case. The smear would be used as the excuse for elevating Nixon into the office of vice president of the United States. Allen Dulles and John Foster Dulles would control all State Department policies and espionage activities for the president.

There was another observation regarding the famous Woodstock typewriter. Robert Kennedy, as Attorney General of the United States in 1962, had made a "recent check and [found that] the FBI *never had the Woodstock typewriter.* Writing to Meyer Zeligs, Claude Cross, Hiss's attorney in the second trial, mentioned, "In my mind there is a mystery connected with this typewriter and its whereabouts from the period just prior to the trial."[36]

Why was Robert Kennedy searching for this important evidence, the *link* in the Nixon saga? Were the Kennedys preparing to investigate Richard Nixon's uses of planted evidence, slander and redbaiting?

Three of Alger Hiss' friends who could have changed the tide of history—Harry Dexter White, Walter Marvin Smith and Lawrence Guggan—were found dead shortly after contact with the FBI.[37] When covert government creates a plot, in Germany or the United States, nobody stands in its way.

Isaac Don Levine took a reluctant Whittaker Chambers "by the arm" and arranged the meetings in which he would begin to smear Alger Hiss.[38] It was no coincidence that the same Isaac Don Levine would meet with Marina Oswald, widow of Lee Harvey Oswald, immediately after the murder of President Kennedy. They were in a huddle to exchange money for squeezing a "communist" story out of a CIA plot.[39]

Levine served Richard Nixon's career faithfully and often through the years.

"This fellow Levine is in contact with Marina to break the story up in a little more graphic manner and tie it into a Russian business, and it is with the thought and background of a Russian connection, conspiracy concept."

– John J. McCloy, Warren Commission minutes, Jan. 21, 1964

Alger Hiss said that Richard Nixon was up to something "beyond his scope and size."[40] Nixon, like Adolf Hitler, is a patchwork quilt. Both men represent the sum total of all murders, secret plans and behind-the-scene covert imaginations that created them. They were hand-sewn and designed by identical masters. It was a community project between persons from Nazi Germany and the United States military and intelligence agencies.

They are in power today, continuing mass murders, political assassinations. Industrial giants scrape the bottom of the ocean, the surface of the moon, the face of the earth for the oil, gold, minerals, resources within their grasp. It is the moral obligation of human beings to halt this hunger for power and legalized greed toward the majority of persons on the planet earth.

High summit meetings, a false sense of euphoria preceding elections, does not conceal increased budgets for weaponry, new laws of repression or further concentration of power in the White House. The family of humanity is not represented by the strategists who are few in number, still holding on to their power. Secret organizations such as the Lincoln Club, formed in 1963, continue to finance and dictate to Richard Nixon.[41] This group should be carefully examined.

Nixon's kind of power—over other lives—is elusive and vanishes rapidly in a moment. The human family has new weapons in the war against secrecy. Information is power. Speed of communications is power. Ability is power. Sheer numbers of intelligent and concerned citizens becomes power. Facts are power.

Documentation of past political assassinations must be presented in a public forum before the next

election in 1972. The *coup d'état* in 1963, and again in 1968, did not represent the interests of the majority.

It is time to call a halt to the cold war, the hot war and the war against ourselves. By examining the evidence of political assassinations, it is possible to understand how the country was misled down the line by a select, elite minority.

The strategists do not represent the people or the interests of the people of the United States.

NOTES

1. Seymour Melman, ed., "Clandestine Rearmament of Germany," *Inspection for Disarmament,* Columbia Press, 1968, pp. 203-19.
2. Attitude to Geneva Accord in *Pentagon Papers,* New York Times paperback, p. xi.
3. David Wise & Thomas Ross, "Clandestine armies of U.S. home and abroad," *Invisible Government,* Bantam, 1965; cf., David Wise & Thomas Ross, *Espionage Establishment,* Random House, 1967.
4. Fred Cook, *Warfare State* (Kennedy, Dealey), Macmillan Press, 1967.
5. "Splinter the CIA," *New York Times*, April 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 1966.
6. "Treason," *Hearings before the Commission*, XVIII, p. 835.
7. On escalation of the war, *Computers and Automation*, December, 1971, p. 39.
8. "Containing Communism," *Encyclopedia Almanac, 1970,* New York Times, p. 544.
9. "Eisenhower surrendered power to me," conversation with McMillan, *New York Times*, April 24, 1971.
10. Roger Hilsman, "State Department in my hat," *To Move a Nation,* Doubleday, 1967, p. 67.
11. On the Dulles brothers, *New York Times*, April 29, 1966.
12. Clarence Lasby, Allen Dulles, 1942, Switzerland, *Project Paperclip: German Scientists and the Cold War,* Atheneum Press, 1971; also, *Saturday Review* December 11, 1971.
13. Ibid., Rounding up Nazis, *Project Paperclip*, p. 5.
14. Ibid., Nazis in industry, schools, factories in U.S.
15. Wise and Ross, Collapse of Germany, Gehlen, pp. 134-35.
16. Louis Hogan, *Secret War for Europe,* Stein & Day, 1969, pp. 35-6.
17. Ibid., pp. 115-16, 132-76.
18. RaIph De Toledano (on the Air Transport Comman, Duell, Sloan, Pearce), *Nixon*, p. 35.
19. Ibid., p. 37, Alameda, air contracts, p. 37.
20. New York, Contracts, *Six Crises,* Pyramid Books, 1962, p. 81.
21. Lasby, pp. 4-5.
22. Ibid., p. 61.
23. Ibid., p. 64.
24. Ibid., p. 66.
25. De Toledano, p. 37.
26. Ibid., pp. 39-40.
27. Ibid., p. 40.
28. Herman Perry in Emile Di Antonio's *Milhous*.
29. Cook, p. 23.
30. Richard Nixon selected by old guard, *New York Times*, February 16, 1972.
31. *Computers and Automation,* October 1971, pp. 41-45.
32. Meyer Zeligs, *Friendship and Fratricide*, Viking Press, p. 192.
33. Ibid., p. 3.
34. *Computers and Automation* (JFK, evidence locked up, altered), May, June, July, Nov., 1970; March, May, June, July, Aug., Sept., Oct, Nov., Dec., 1971; Jan., Feb., 1972.
35. Ibid., Aug. and Oct, 1970, April, 1971, on the Robert Kennedy murder.
36. Zeligs, p. 368.
37. *American Opinion* (Hiss, death of friends), Feb., 1971, pp. 51-53.

38. Zeligs (Isaac Levine, Chambers), p. 23.
39. *Hearings Before the Commission*, vol. XXIV, pp. 24-25.
40. Zeligs, pp. 282-283.
41. *New York Times* (Lincoln Club, secrets), Feb. 16, 1972.

CHAPTER SIX

WHY IS THE SENATE WATERGATE COMMITTEE FUNCTIONING AS PART OF THE COVER-UP?

(Mae Brussell, Originally published in The Realist, *July 1973)*

I. Knowledge Omitted from the Campus

II. The Cover-Up

A. Concealing the motives

B. Witnesses not called

1. Martha Mitchell

2. Louis Tackwood

3. Tom Charles Huston

4. William Sullivan

III. Martial Law Without the Riots

A. Institutions to dismantle

B. The enemy list

C. The warfare state

D. Political prisoners of America

I. Knowledge Omitted from the Campus

There are hundreds of conspiracies taking place. They are all ordered from the White House. Political assassinations, the killing of presidential candidates, is for the purpose of denying our freedoms.

The arrests at the Watergate Hotel in Washington D.C. took most Americans by surprise. We had been educated with a continuous series of denials that conspiracies at the White House level could exist. The news media treat high-level conspiracies with platitudes, indifference and unimaginative cover stories. Propaganda is an important weapon of the fascist state. TV and the media are filled with clandestine agents, some posing as *liberal* writers, whose purpose is to break the credibility of researchers or discredit evidence that would confirm conspiracies.[1] Colleges and academic institutions offer no courses on agents provocateurs or how to recognize covert operations.[2] When an accurate history of the violence in the 1960's and '70's is written, facts will reveal that government provocateurs created most of it. A series of our own Reichstag fires was the justification for a sweeping domestic operations program

designed to deny liberties guaranteed by the Constitution.[3]

There is no textbook on protecting society from sabotage. The Watergate Affair exposes how the Justice Department colludes with espionage agents in acts that amount to treason.[4] Top lawyers ignore the law and pursue corporate interests for purposes of power and profits.[5] G. Gordon Liddy, counsel for the White House and CREEP, helped create the infamous April 7, 1972 law allowing concealment of campaign donations and illegal corporate financing. History classes devote little time to the evils of fascism. They seldom teach the specific strategies that bring the condition into existence. Classrooms in the U.S. do not discuss the edicts of repression in Greece following the military junta in 1967. This *coup d'état*, planned and financed in the U.S., would be invaluable to study as a protection against an identical occurrence in this country.

A clear understanding of covert operations and how they are carried out is avoided.[6] The electoral process and our civil liberties have been sabotaged. White House documents exist to prove this fact.[7]

Techniques for running clandestine operations and controlling the population were illustrated in the Watergate exposures. There will be pressure to halt the televised hearings and detract from their significance because this is the first time we have been given a peek at the spies, and the methods used to protect their operations. They are not difficult to follow. Once the agents and their tactics are identified, there may be a better chance to end the continuous and systematic infiltration taking place.

Clandestine assignments are composed of a combination of acts obscured by secrecy and lies. Secrecy is necessary because most of the methods are illegal. The operations, when discovered, are covered by lies.[8]

The patterns of criminal spy operations, with certain agents reappearing in many of the same assignments, become more complicated every day. They are all CIA operations:

1. 1954 assassination of President Jacobo Arbenz Guzman, Guatemala – E. Howard Hunt, Frank Sturgis involved in this murder, identical to Kennedy assassination in 1963. After the President Arbenz assassination, an "extreme leftist lone assassin" was murdered.

2. Richard Nixon, Fourth Crisis, Latin American Tour as cold war propaganda – Votes were lagging for Ike and Dick. The CIA arranged this tour, staged for the "hard line on Communists" hook. Nixon briefed by CIA and Allen Dulles on intelligence estimates of anti-American demonstration. Col. Vernon Walters, CIA, was Nixon's interpreter. Gen. Robert Cushman, CIA, gave rundowns of reactions to riots. E. Howard Hunt in Latin America, attached to CIA station, 1956-60. His cover was advisor to Defense Department.

3. U-2 Flights Over USSR to Sabotage Cold War Summit Conference – Allen Dulles, in coordination with James McCord, who found and identified the Soviet intelligence agent questioned by airmen. Lee Harvey Oswald, Naval Intelligence, trained in radar at Atsugi Air Base where the U-2s were monitored. Oswald watched for possible vapor trails over USSR. E. Howard Hunt was engaged during the 1950s in the U-2 spy plane project. He arranged takeoff and landing of CIA aircraft.

4. Bay of Pigs – Richard Nixon in charge of that operation, wanted nothing wrong. Bob Cushman and Howard Hunt had private phones to the White House. When Hunt needed his contacts, Nixon and Cushman were beaten by Kennedy in the 1960 election. Bernard Barker, Frank Sturgis, Martinez, Gonzales and the entire Watergate cast of Miami Cubans involved in the Bay of Pigs and Watergate operation. In *Six Crises*, Nixon claimed credit for the covert training of Cuban exiles by the CIA.

5. 1963 assassination of President Kennedy – José Romero, soldier of fortune, was approached by a

hired assassination team from the U.S. They planned to kill Kennedy during his 1961 visit to France. Romero definitely remembers Frank Sturgis as one of the representatives. James McCord, according to Louis Tackwood, was in Dallas the day Kennedy was shot and flown afterwards to the Caribbean. The National Archives have FBI reports on file indicating that Frank Sturgis a friend of Lee Harvey Oswald and David Ferrie. Sturgis had a Miami arsenal of weapons, and original plans were to kill JFK in Miami in 1963.

6. Plans to assassinate the President of Panama in 1971 – Hunt and Liddy at the White House made Operation Intercept their cover. The President of Panama was "not cooperating" in the "control of narcotics," and one of their jobs was to kill him.

7. ITT, CIA, Chile, and Watergate – William Broe, CIA, offered to help ITT "create economic chaos in Chile." Broe combed corporate files to determine if CIA was involved in Watergate. This cleaning out is identical to L. Patrick Gray looking for evidence in the FBI reports. Hunt and Liddy, while in the White House, worked for the CIA and ITT at the same time, helping out with Dita Beard's kidnapping and hospitalization in Denver.

8. The Daniel Ellsberg, Dr. Fielding robbery – Hunt, Liddy, members of the Cuban committee working for the CIA. Gen. Robert Cushman supplied the cameras, film developing, disguises, safe houses.

None of these people, including the president, believed they were breaking any laws. Certain members of the Defense Intelligence Agency, CIA, Division V of the FBI, Secret Service, armed forces and NSC have been warfare killers and war criminals for a long time. They are now conducting paramilitary warfare *inside* the U.S.

Opening Statement by Senator Sam J. Ervin Jr.
Before the Senate Select Committee on Presidential Campaign
Activities – May 17, 1973, the First Day of Hearings

What they were seeking to steal was not the jewels, money or other property of American citizens, but something much more valuable, their most precious heritage: the right to vote in a free election.

The Select Committee must probe into assertions that the very system itself has been subverted and its foundations shaken.

If the allegations that have been made in the wake of the Watergate Affair are substantiated, there has been a very serious subversion of the integrity of the electoral process, and the committee will be obliged to consider the manner in which such a subversion affects the continued existence of this nation as a representative democracy, and how, if we are to survive, such subversions may be prevented in the future.

Following the Watergate break-in, there has been a massive attempt to cover up all the improper activities.

Evidence that has surfaced has cast a black cloud of distrust over our entire society. Our citizens do not know whom to believe, and many of them have concluded that all the processes of government have become so compromised that honest government has been rendered impossible.

The health, if not the survival of our social structure and of our form of government requires the most candid and public investigation of all the evidence and of all the accusations that have been leveled at any persons, at whatever level, who were engaged in the 1972 campaign.

My colleagues on the Committee and I are determined to uncover all the relevant facts surrounding

these matters, and to spare no one, whatever his station in life may be, in our efforts to accomplish this goal.

The American people are looking to this committee for enlightenment and guidance regarding the details of the allegations regarding the subversion of our electoral and political process.

The purpose of this committee is to provide full and open public testimony in order that the nation can proceed toward the healing of wounds that now afflict the body politic. History and the nation are watching us.

We cannot fail our mission.

Murders, conspiracies, entrapment, assaults, false imprisonments are acts of warfare. Unsuspecting citizens are taken by surprise because they did not realize that white America was the enemy. Blacks, Indians and Chicanos have long known of the open war against their existence. Watergate is a revelation of a civil war that is not likely to go away without a struggle. Expect a counter-attack by the White House and even the armed forces if necessary.

A web of conspiracies has been strangling this nation.

The Senate Select Committee on Presidential Campaign Activities is part of the cover-up. The committee's structure and methods are reminiscent of the fictitious *Warren Report* their colleagues put together for us ten years ago.

Are these errors caused by ignorance or stupidity or complicity? The question was asked of Haldeman if demonstrators were known to be paid by McGovern or Wallace or other opponents. The question wasn't how much Republican money paid provocateurs to defecate or urinate on the streets in Miami. There is evidence that provocateurs were in fact hired, including a female FBI agent who swam nude at the convention.

Are the errors only one more con game directed at citizens who deserve better than they are getting from witnesses?

Spiro Agnew praised the Watergate hearings. He said they are "evidence that our society is more open than ever." Instead of secret hearings, they are open and allow us to *watch* the cover-up. If the committee did its job with an understanding of the magnitude of the crimes, *Agnew* would be investigated, too, because he is part of the problem: the selection of our candidates is forced upon us by violence and murders.

The election sabotage that took place in 1972 had as much to do with Agnew supporters as the Nixon plumbers.

James Earl Ray, the alleged assassin of Martin Luther King, said, "King had to be killed in an election year." It was Agnew who benefited by this murder. He had close ties to the FBI, and was prompted into an anti-black, law-and-order position for election purposes.

Greek military money expressly for Agnew, running into millions, was secretly stashed away and determined American foreign policy in the Middle East. Oil profits and military interests have placed Agnew in the vice-presidency.

The Constitution made no provisions for election robberies or clandestine agents posing as candidates. President Nixon, intelligence agencies and the armed forces deny our Constitutional rights, then expect an orderly Constitutional succession of power.

This situation is the first of its kind in the U.S. and should be tested by popular election. Senator Muskie or Kennedy would defeat Agnew tomorrow, indicating he *does not represent the majority* in this democracy. The election was a fraud, and Agnew supporters and his finances were directly involved in the Watergate Affair through Mullen Associates and specific White House aides.

There are many methods of conducting a lengthy, voluminously and costly investigation without ever

serving truth or justice. While giving the appearance of attempting to solve Phase I of the Watergate Affair, there is a basic dishonesty exhibited in the unskilled procedures.

No wonder American citizens are as confused about the White House espionage squad as they were a year ago. The Senate Select Committee, by making many errors, increases the problem of solving sabotage and conspiracy. Some of these include:

1. Wrong witnesses called. Last July, 1972, it was obvious that Al Wong, the Secret Service man who hired James McCord, should be a major witness. When it was disclosed by Alexander Butterfield that the White House was bugged, Al Wong appeared to be holding the tapes. Wong and McCord were close associates.

Other men were at the Watergate and fled to Miami. They were never arrested or called as witnesses.

Donald Segretti was "one of 50 agents." Where are the other 49?

Who controls the Washington prison that sent men in to beat up Liddy and Hunt the night before they testified before the Grand Jury?

There were two guards on duty at the Watergate Hotel on June 17, 1972. One "went home early." Who arranged that?

The Watergate Hotel manager knew the espionage team. He was told to "shut up" and never interviewed.

2. Wrong questions are asked. When the correct witness is on the stand, the wrong questions are asked. It is impossible to shed light on a problem made more difficult by a cover up.

3. Change of subject. When the right witness is on the stand and the correct question is asked, there is a quick change of subject to obstruct information that might flow. After a Senate vote, many good questions were dropped. The Warren Commission went "off the record." The voting pattern serves to break up the testimony and evidence.

4. Questions are made out in advance. There is a narrow inquiry into Phase I, the Watergate, that can't be limited, the hotel entry is part of the entire "plumbers operation." They can't be separated. Their plans for violence and provocateurs have to do with the Democratic offices entry.

The John Kennedy assassination, and Jack Ruby's killing Oswald, were one espionage plan. The Warren Commission, and Ruby's trial, attempted to have the public believe these were separate, isolated events. In the same manner, the Senate Committee and witnesses involved want to separate the "caper" from the "horror stories." Both involved identical plans, funds and a team that worked together for many years doing the same kinds of sabotage.

5. Time limits imposed. The restoration of confidence in government will come about by delving into all leads, not being limited by a clock or calendar. The testimony about Tony Ulasewicz's other assignments was cut short for "lack of time." Hours spent on repetitious questions. Important matters are limited in subject matter by a 10-minute agreement.

6. Not equipped to recognize or question espionage agents. The Senate Committee asks serious questions without clarifying that lies, perjuries, denials are part of the operation. There are other ways of locating evidence of sabotage. Witnesses are allowed face-saving devices and not exposed as intelligence operatives. If Ulasewicz had been allowed to describe his "35 assignments for the White House," a conclusion, not so humorous, would be drawn.

7. No cross-examination. Mild discrepancies, important, are ignored. James McCord said he had

"nothing to do with the Kennedy assassination," and this may be a fact—he didn't shoot the weapon. His presence in Dallas on that day, or identification of the plane that took him to the Caribbean would be helpful in describing some of McCord's duties for the CIA.

8. Documentary evidence exits to illustrate charges of treason and conspiracy. Arthur Bremer's second gun, found in his car, and bullets taken from the Wallace shooting, could be compared.

The White House inter-agency espionage operational plans could be shared with the public to understand the minds in the Oval Office.

Louis Tackwood's tapes of planned San Diego martial law for 1972 could be played and exposed.

In spite of the exclusion of White House logs from examination, and massive evidence destroyed, there is enough evidence available to purge an administration that remains in power.

9. Deaths, threats of death, assaults. The Senate Committee is not interested in jail problems, or local police and the CIA working together. G. Gordon Liddy was hurt in a prison fight the night before his appearance at the Grand Jury.

E. Howard Hunt was beaten up on the eve of his grand jury testimony in May, 1973. Evidence of the sabotage of Mrs. Dorothy's Hunt's plane is ignored.

Questions are not asked Tony Ulasewicz regarding the death of Mary Jo Kopechne. What hour did he arrive on the island? Was he there before she was killed? One security guard saw Mary Jo asleep in back of the car at 11 p.m. Who was that? The guard was giving press interviews to *Time*, Colson's outlet for smear.

James McCord stated he had "worked for the CIA long enough" to know he could be killed once he was sent to prison. The phone call McCord received from Tony Ulasewicz, attempting to force a "guilty plea" like the others, was interpreted as a threat to his family and himself.

The only member of the Senate Committee who shows the appropriate disgust and anger is Senator Weicker. He seems to understand clandestine operations and the slimy arrogance of super-patriots who disgrace our nation.

Members of the Black Caucus once asked then-Attorney General John Mitchell about future programs. He answered, "Don't listen to what I say, watch what I do." This same advice would serve investigators of conspiracy operations. Concealing and covering by lies and perjury will never expose the crimes committed by this team.

Going back to the John Kennedy assassination, to Robert Kennedy's murder and other arranged tragedies, the bullets, autopsies, medical reports all exist to prove conspiracies. It is time to examine evidence and not ask the masters of subversion for answers to stupid questions. Watergate has logs, evidence, arrangements for Miami, tapes of treason. Get them out in the open and we shall be the judge.

Senator Ervin said the "government was subverted," "citizens do not know whom to believe," "the processes of government were compromised."

Don't depend on liars or Senate Committees guilty of covering for the Nixon Administration they are criticizing. Produce the documents and homicide records. We can figure out what is happening for ourselves and save time and money wasted in perpetuating a dying system of government. There is no place for the CIA, DIA, intelligence operations or their continuous infiltrations.

The Senate Committee is arranging the witnesses and questions in such a way that little can be accomplished to prevent the continuation of the existing military junta.

II. The Cover-Up

A. CONCEALING THE MOTIVES

The twenty-million-dollar question: More than a year has passed since the illegal entry of Democratic National Headquarters in Washington, D.C. The motive for this assignment, planned almost six months in advance, remains the carefully guarded secret. There is reason for this silence, and it is not lack of evidence. The men who planned the operation, as well as those who covered it up, and the courts investigating, wish to keep this important information secret. Why? Racism, prejudices and fear of changing the status quo are so deeply embedded in our ruling class that there is a silent and tacit agreement to protect each other. "National security" may be used to soften the inquiry, as it was used to lock up evidence in the John Kennedy assassination.

It is impossible, the way the courts are constructed, to force revelations that would damage the existing power structure. If Richard Nixon moves out of office, Spiro Agnew moves in and Ronald Reagan will follow. The depth of corruption and links to the sabotage will not be touched. The power base of manipulations and political dishonesty remains.

My Lai, Kent State, Attica, riots at Isla Vista, the San Quentin shootout, political assassinations, illegal bombings, Jackson State and a hundred other conspiracies are covered up.

Exposing white America, the so-called law-and-order people, as burglars, wiretappers, forgers, extortionists and thieves can only go so far. They can obstruct justice, get refunds on illegal donations, commit perjury and violate election laws. Their prosecution as murderers, criminals or conspirators never happens. Treason is not even whispered when that is exactly what is taking place.

Last year was the most important election in U.S. history. Corporations and conglomerates were meeting a crisis. Special interests such as ITT, Howard Hughes, oil companies, warfare contractors and aerospace industries always select the president and vice-president, but this victory was vital in 1972.

Certain countries were agitating against conglomerates. Kidnappings and confiscations could escalate. ITT was nearly divested of interests this administration saved for them. Chile's President Salvadore Allendé spelled matters out at the UN. He charged "ITT, CIA and armed forces with creating economic chaos, altering free elections, instigating civil war and wanting to create a military dictatorship." The Cold War manipulations that we enforced in over 90 countries could be halted with a new administration.[9]

Warfare industries were in trouble without a Nixon-Agnew victory. The war in Asia could escalate after elections. The Middle East is waiting for the next U.S.-fomented war. A Democratic president might change the course of U.S. economic dependence on warfare hardware into domestic needs. There is less profit in building the U.S. than bombing Cambodia or importing and distributing narcotics. The drug traffic from Asia involves more billions than military profits.

Anti-war protestors, particularly Vietnam veterans, were an embarrassment.

Domestic programs were to be solved with Caspar "the Ax," or Malek "the Hatchet" once the "mandate" was declared.[10]

The election victory of Nixon-Agnew was ordered. Maurice Stans went around telling the corporations exactly what percentage to put into the till. The foot soldiers then put the money to work.

Over $60 million went into Republican funds to re-elect the incumbent and popular President.

Another $20 million in secret, consecutive $100 bills was set aside to be sure they won the election *by any means necessary.* That is where the motives for the Watergate Hotel entry start to become important. The conservative Republican, the old guard traditional politician who can win or lose elections fairly, becomes separated from the espionage operation. Some money goes into legal spending such as TV time, office expenses, etc. And some money goes into the illegal guarantee of success when the polls close.

There are a lot of reasons for keeping political donations to the President and Vice-President secret.[11] None of them except the obvious illegal discretions require such complicated secrecy. If more than favors

are expected, and serious crimes will be committed to select candidates through violence, all techniques of secret funding are employed.

The $5,300 in consecutive $100 bills found on the Watergate espionage squad was part of the complicated funding.

Potential candidates for the 1968 and 1972 elections were eliminated by murder, a contrived scandal involving a murder, attempted murder, forgery and harassment. These favors require a lot of money that will never be accounted for. They might be the missing millions. $20-million was delivered in cash, some of it deliberately burned to conceal consecutive serial numbers. Donations were hidden in 45-90 dummy fronts that never existed. Money was pulled from "1968" accounts in Mexico, the Middle East, Switzerland, Los Angeles, New York, Houston and other cities.

Complicated money laundering financed five or six operations, travelled from Texas, to Mexico, Houston, Washington, Florida and back to Washington. Safes stuffed with cash were inside the White House, Maurice Stans' offices and elsewhere. Consecutive $100 bills were passed in suitcases, unmarked envelopes, put in desk drawers when the recipient left the room. Money was given to unknown persons, for unknown reasons, from unknown sources, left in telephone booths, passed inside taxicabs, near airports, handed on park benches, in hotel lobbies, on golf courses, and donated by friends from the Philippines.

A super-secret account was located in Bethesda, Maryland under the name of Henry Buchanan, brother of White House aide Patrick Buchanan.[12]

Donald Nixon made two secret trips to Greece for a $10 million loan from the Marriott Corporation during the time Republicans were seeking money to silence the Watergate defendants.[13] Martha Mitchell was delivered to the Marriott New York apartment, a la Dita Beard, after her abduction from California and her famous call to Helen Thomas of UPI.[14] Martha said she would be receiving $2 million for a book —to buy her silence. Marina Oswald was offered $125,000 to write a book. It was never published. Howard Hunt sent a message to the White House stating that he was "writing a book." This is a typical clandestine message in seeking a bribe.

Edward Nixon, the President's other brother, flew a helicopter from New York to New Jersey to discuss the famous $200,000 delivered at the airport, donated by Robert Vesco. Nixon decided whether it would be check or cash.[15]

The Federal Reserve System distributes money to commercial banks, but were unable to trace $10,000 found in consecutive $100 bills marked with the serial "B." The money, found in Mrs. Dorothy Hunt's purse after her fatal airplane crash, was not recorded in New York. "Unlike other areas, this bank does not keep track of the serial numbers."[16]

At least eight persons connected with the mysterious funding alone have been killed since last year.[17] Provocateurs had been paid those consecutive $100 bills in Miami by the CIA, and reservations were made for demonstrations to take place.

Where was all this secret money going?

There is a way to find out.

Tony Ulasewicz, bagman for Herbert Kalmbach (who wears gloves when he handles the cash), was paid $100,000 in 1969 by the president's attorney. Other years he earned $22,000 plus "expenses."

Ulasewicz has a New York accent.

Arthur Bremer, arrested for the Wallace shooting and recently denied a re-trial, was seen in Michigan talking politics with a man 6'2," 220 lbs., "with a New York accent." Maryland police stopped a suspect after the George Wallace shooting described as 6'2," weighing 220 lbs., in a light blue Cadillac.

Arthur Bremer spent a lot of money on airplane tickets, the Waldorf-Astoria Hotel in New York, nights at the ITT Sheraton Plaza in Maryland, and with a CIA agent in Toronto at the Lord Elgin.

There was money spent in the Wallace shooting.

A New York accent, to be identified, should have been interviewed. Did any of the secret $20 million finance the Wallace shooting?

Was Ulasewicz with Arthur Bremer?

Did any of the Kalmbach $400,000 from New York to defeat Wallace get to Maryland police, agents—were these funds involved in the Wallace shooting? Complicated money transactions took place, secure and secret; the 1972 election was almost secure.

J. Edgar Hoover, who strenuously objected to the illegal sabotage, was dead.

The Domestic Intelligence Agency intended to have the Director of the FBI as its head. Hoover objected to every section of it, so it was unlikely they could proceed if he were alive. L. Patrick Gray, on the other hand, was a master of stopping all investigations of Justice Department conspiracies. He quelled the Watergate Affair by burning documents, closed the ITT case, halted the Ruben Salazar and Jerie Lee Amie murder investigations in Los Angeles, stopped the Isla Vista riot investigation, halted the Teamsters-Mafia wiretapping regarding health plans in California. Gray fired U.S. Attorney Robert Meyer for refusing to prosecute the Ellsberg case. A few months later Robert Meyer was dead.

J. Edgar Hoover did not have an autopsy. His body was not removed in a hearse. There was no indication of poor health. There is reason to exhume his remains: the possibility of poison in his apple pie might be discovered.

Mary Jo Kopechne, former secretary of Senator Smathers of Florida, was dead, eliminating Senator Ted Kennedy as a candidate.

George Wallace's 20-26 million votes were back in Republican ballot boxes.

Senator Muskie was sufficiently smeared to lose the New Hampshire primaries. Senator Humphrey, followed by Sedan Chair 2 and Sedan Chair 88, was well under control, with a few smear letters thrown in for bad luck.

Senator Eagleton's hospital records were with John Ehrlichman, probably in the same drawer as the illegal bugging tapes ordered by Henry Kissinger and General Haig.

Things were looking pretty good for the GOP—but…

What would happen if the Democrats came up with a combination of candidates who could still win the election in 1972? John Mitchell testified that "in June 1972 the Republicans were not sure of an election victory." And Ehrlichman testified that the surveillance changed from Muskie to McGovern and Ted Kennedy.

The only alternative remaining, to be sure of winning, would be the anticipated alternate solution planned since the fall of 1971.

The CIA, Litton Industries and U.S. tested a *coup d'état* in Greece that is still going strong. The CIA, FBI and armed forces practiced in the Philippines.

The CIA, DIA, FBI, armed forces, Internal Security, Secret Service and Justice Dept. would be called to help create martial law.

All the nation's top law enforcement agencies and top agents were cooperating in the Watergate operation. They aided in the cover-up, and they influence investigations now. Claims to the contrary notwithstanding, there is no way such an extravaganza of characters could be assembled for a "stupid" and "uninformative" adventure.

The highly trained team of Hunt, Liddy and McCord were arrested.

The nation came to a standstill and there was an economic crisis abroad.

All investigative and government agencies were tainted by scandals and covering up. The entry to Democratic headquarters was the culmination of two years preparation for assuring a 1972 election mandate. The White House "Plumbers" worked closely, in every CIA operation, with the armed forces and investigative agencies.

In the end, James McCord feared a CIA takeover identical to Nazi Germany intelligence operations.

J. Edgar Hoover feared the CIA takeover and destruction of all civil liberties. Hoover didn't mind helping a couple of Kennedys get killed, or the systematic slaughter of 28 Black Panthers with more in prison today. He drew the line at martial law. He would not have allowed George Wallace to be assassinated.

The Plumbers Connection

David Young worked under Henry Kissinger at the National Security Council. He was transferred to head the White House "Plumbers" unit under John Ehrlichman.

Young went to then-Director of the CIA Richard Helms to obtain a psychiatric profile of Daniel Ellsberg. Helms said that although the original 1947 charter of the CIA forbade engagement in domestic intelligence, Young insisted that it was very important to the White House, that the assignment came from Ehrlichman's highest authority, and the request was granted.

Helms testified that he put Young in touch with Howard Osborn to prepare the profile. FBI documents, included in the Warren Commission Hearings on the Assassination of John F. Kennedy (Vol. XXV, pp. 1-60), show that Albert Osborn, also known as John Howard Bowen, sat on the bus to Mexico with Lee Harvey Oswald on September 26, 1963.

Osborn ran a missionary school in Mexico that was a front for political assassins sent all over the world. A Mr. Osborn purchased the 1,000 "Hands Off Cuba" leaflets that Oswald distributed in New Orleans with Carlos Brienguier.

During the 1972 election campaign, Spiro Agnew is alleged to have taken several trips to New Orleans to meet with this same Carlos Brienguier.

Howard Osborn is a name used in a previous assassination, and reappears now as the contact man between the CIA and the White House, working with William Sullivan of Division V of the FBI in the "Plumbers"—the interagency spy group that even the late J. Edgar Hoover believed to be a threat to the nation's civil liberties. Hoover objected to the CIA using the FBI as a front for domestic intelligence.

Richard Nixon was in trouble, according to Andrew Tully, Hoover's friend. He was surrounded by the same CIA that McCord and Hoover feared. "He needed me around to protect him from those people around him"—statement by Hoover in January, 1972—and this may be the reason Hoover had to be killed. This would fit into the assassination plans for Nixon in the fall of 1972.

The top intelligence and law enforcement agents involved in the Watergate and Gestapo operations were:

– Acting Director of the FBI, L. Patrick Gray
– William Sullivan, Division V, FBI, Domestic Security
– Assistant Attorney General Robert Mardian
– Director of the CIA Richard Helms
– CIA Deputy Director Lt. Gen Cushman
– CIA Deputy Director Vernon Walters
– Henry Kissinger, NSC
– General Alexander Haig, NSC, now Chief of Staff, White House
– Inspector General of the CIA, William Broe

– Assistant Attorney General Henry A. Peterson

W. Clement Stone, who has contributed nearly $7 million to Republicans since 1968, said, “I felt this provided the one chance in a lifetime to change the course of history for the better.” The feeling of necessity and desperation he expressed—translated into “better” business, I suppose—was identical to the attorney general’s and others who knowingly broke laws to preserve the presidency for two special men.

The second illegal entry of Democratic offices required nine men, a hotel room across the street, special “Gemstone” files and a complicated system of passing a message to the Oval Office.

When five men were arrested on June 17, 1972, the frantic telephone calls, denials and secret meetings took place. White House aides were burning documents and carting away file boxes, opening Hunt’s desk and safe.

The Gemstone papers *had to be destroyed immediately.*

Tapes of conversations taken from Mr. Oliver *had to be destroyed.*

If conversations were “foolish and stupid, unfruitful,” why not produce the tapes to show what an ill-advised adventure this was? That could have cleared the air.

But what if provocateurs entered Democratic offices—Republican spies registered as Democrats, like Donald Segretti? Republicans sent allies to the Watergate to secure room plans for the Miami conventions.

What if the telephones were used to discuss radicals, planned violence in Miami or the intention to kill President Nixon?

James McCord testified that the objective was “to look for information if President Nixon were secure in Miami.” In clandestine operations, when you “look,” *you plant evidence*.[18] G. Gordon Liddy received campaign funds to determine what to do if the crazies made an attack on the President.

Louis Tackwood, agent provocateur for nine years with the LAPD, was hired to join this White House espionage squad for planned violence in San Diego. Those plans included “getting Nixon” after martial law was declared.[19]

The Secret Service, FBI and armed forces could protect President Nixon without this secret espionage group. Andrew Topping, a wealthy New Yorker, made arrangements to murder Nixon between his nomination and the election.[20]

Tight-lipped Al Wong of the Secret Service (he hired James McCord) and Alexander Butterfield knew, via bugging devices, every room that Richard Nixon entered. McCord, Hunt and Liddy could receive messages from Wong. Dwight Chapin, Nixon’s appointment secretary, has been silent about Topping. Nobody mentions his name.

If conversations were produced after the planned events, martial law or Nixon’s assassination, the anti-war protestors, radicals and McGovern supporters would be blamed. G. Gordon Liddy proposed illegal kidnappings of radicals until after the elections. All voices against future wars or domestic repressions would be in prison.

Internal Security provided lists of desired political activists. They worked with James McCord every day in the spring before the Watergate arrests. The White House emergency division exists today. McCord’s links have been silenced and ignored. In *The Politics of Lying*, David Wise describes McCord’s important position with a military reserve unit, the Special Analysis Division, and his preparation of a national watch list.

The martial law plan would *secure the presidency* for selected agents Nixon and Agnew, *silence protestors* and clear the way for a list of domestic strangulations of civil liberties. Many important witnesses who could shed light on the complicated motives for entry into the Democratic offices will never be called before the Senate Committee or by Special Prosecutor Archibald Cox, unless we continue

to expose their cover-up roles.

Sherman Skolnick, independent investigator from Chicago, has kept alive the facts about possible sabotage of United Airlines flight 553 and the killing of Mrs. Hunt. Other information and witnesses will be forced into the open if the public demands that the truth be told.

B. WITNESSES NOT CALLED

1. MARTHA MITCHELL

Who's afraid of Martha Mitchell?

White House documents signed by President Nixon exhibited a "gestapo mentality," said Senator Ervin.

Louis Tackwood said the LAPD, connected to the White House special squad, wanted a "*gestapo.*"

Fascism isn't a piece of paper.

The treatment of Martha Mitchell exemplifies what dictatorship is about.

The quashing of her testimony is identical to gestapo kangaroo courts. The Senate Committee is protecting the guilty. In California, after the arrests, she might know who was involved in the cover-up. At least seven people directly involved in the Watergate entry, planned months earlier, were with the Mitchells in California.

Kidnapping: Serious charges were made by Martha Mitchell. When she called for help, the telephone was torn from the wall. All communications ceased. Only non-English-speaking persons entered her room. She was forcibly detained while her husband used their Washington D.C. apartment for clandestine meetings. Robert Mardian and Fred LaRue met with Mitchell on June 19, 1972. Martha was forced to remain in California.

Private Armies: The White House hired private thugs to take care of demonstrators. "Unsalaried" police travelled with Nixon, tore down signs in Illinois. Private cop Tony Ulasewicz worked on a salary of $22,000 for political espionage. What private police force of four men was called to contain Martha? Steve King couldn't handle her alone. She said there were five men. Hotel staff said they couldn't be responsible. California police and the FBI didn't respond. Where do the private guards come from?

Assault: Herbert Kalmbach, Nixon's attorney, took Mrs. Mitchell to the hospital. Strangers occupied her room. Her body was very badly bruised in many places. Hospital records were not subpoenaed to determine the treatment she required. Martha asked why the men who detained her were not arrested. They were not only not exposed, but *promoted*. Steve King, who did most of the damage, was promoted to chief of security for CREEP.

Mental illness: To this day, Martha is made to seem drunk, stupid, deranged. A psychiatric profile from the CIA is spread around. Like Jim Garrison, Dita Beard or Marguerite Oswald, when certain persons know too much about government conspiracies, they have to be discredited.

Bribery, blackmail: When Howard Hunt wanted money for silence, he said he was "going to write a book." Martha was offered $2-million for a book. John Mitchell will never say anything to embarrass President Nixon. The book money could help support them for a few years.

Safe-Houses: Martha couldn't go back to her Washington apartment after the arrests. Her move to the Marriott in New York, following the disclosures, indicates the deep involvement of high officials. That was no reason to dislodge a family, in an election year when her husband would still be working with the president every day.

Protection of the guilty: No testimony taken from Martha. She said she could "name names." The phony investigators want her far away. She will spoil the illusion of inquisitiveness. The real facts remain hidden in spite of the good TV show.

FBI are protected: Why were FBI men in her room? She didn't do anything wrong. Martha said her room in California was filled with the FBI. Did she mean John Mitchell, L. Patrick Gray, William Sullivan or other members of the team?

Promotions: The guilty get promotions for their cooperation. Steve King, former employee of Senator Gurney of the Senate Committee, earned $18,000 a year working for him. He had a security clearance at the Justice Department. Mitchell "loved King like a son." Steve King is now in the Department of Agriculture. Do they send the thugs, the same who assaulted and injected Martha, to beat up United Farm Workers?

Martha Mitchell and James McCord: McCord was in the Mitchell apartment at the Watergate Hotel January 6, 1972. CREEP paid $207 for "technical inspection." John Mitchell was attorney general at this time, and could have used the FBI, not private funds or McCord. The fee was for "smoke detectors." When arrested, McCord had a case marked "Smoke Detectors." John Mitchell said he "only saw McCord once." Martha would know if there were any listening devices in their apartment.

2. Louis Tackwood

Louis Tackwood should have been the first witness before the Senate Committee. In a press conference held on October 25, 1971, he asked Congress to investigate a secret espionage squad inside the White House.[21] One year after the Watergate arrests, all of the Tackwood allegations are proven accurate. Listed below are his charges and a brief reference to massive evidence now available to support his warnings:

1. ***An espionage squad was formed inside the White House, a secret operation.*** Judge Morell E. Sharp refused to work with the Domestic intelligence plan because it was "too secret." This was six months *after* it was allegedly "rescinded." No evidence exists to prove the necessity of the squad except for political sabotage. Tackwood was referring to the Domestic Intelligence and Internal Security Group.

2. ***This secret squad was formed in the fall of 1971.*** E. Howard Hunt, G. Gordon Liddy moved into White House in the fall of 1971. Donald Segretti and other operatives started hiring provocateurs in the fall of 1971.

3. ***The group was connected to the FBI and other intelligence agencies.*** William Sullivan, Division V, FBI, left J. Edgar Hoover to work with this group. Logs were taken from the FBI. FBI agents involved with Division V in other election manipulations.

4. ***Domestic White House police force connected to California up and down the coast worked with Attorney General Evelle Younger.*** California is the center of major Justice Department conspiracy cases. Black Panthers, Chicanos, political prisoners are victims of the White House working with Asst. Attorney General Robert Mardian. The Grand Jury is used to force litigations, conspiracy trials and imprisonment.

5. ***Murders and violence were planned for the Republican National Convention in 1972.*** Arsenals of weapons were purchased for Miami. Violent demonstrations were planned. Liddy, Hunt, LaRue were armed with weapons in White House desk, attaché cases. William Lemmer, Special Forces, U.S. agent, told his girlfriend: "Don't come to Miami. Stay out, there will be fighting and shooting."[22]

6. ***Provocateurs would be hired to incite violence.*** Hundreds of Republicans were brought in for demonstrations. Segretti met with Hunt to hire provocateurs. White House private phone, billed to Kathleen Chenow in Virginia, was used by Hunt for calls to Bernard Barker in Miami. Miss Chenow was immediately spirited to a London "vacation" after the Watergate arrests. She was secretary to White House "Plumber" David Young.

7. ***Radicals were to be rounded up, Internal Security working to get them.*** James McCord met daily with Internal Security. The Watergate squad had access to lists if protection from violence was the motive, rather than arrests.

8. ***Code names in White House to contact were "Martin" and "White."*** James McCord registered at the Washington police station as Edward Martin. E. Howard Hunt was known as "White."[23]

9. ***Public relations offices would cover the martial law and secret squad front.*** Mullen Associates: Hunt kept a desk there at the same time he worked at the White House and went back and forth between the two. Mullen represented the business interests of ITT and Howard Hughes. Hunt and Liddy did errands for ITT, kidnapped Dita Beard and interviewed her in Denver. Liddy was using a Hughes airplane to gather valuable information – allegedly Howard Hughes' game plans for elections—in Las Vegas publisher Hank Greenspun's safe.

"Public Relations": The office name for CCS, the Los Angeles section of the L.A. Police Department that creates criminal conspiracies for White House purposes.

FBI Public Relations—L. Patrick Gray threw in with the Justice Department's squad to put the lid on conspiracies, and worked in the PR office awaiting confirmation as FBI director.

10. ***Ten million dollars was set aside for the secret martial law plans.*** A secret $10 or $20 million will never be accounted for. G. Gordon Liddy burned consecutive $100 bills that could be traced to the CIA to fund political sabotage. $10 million was passed to provocateurs and others before March, 1972, in anticipation of the April 7th deadline when donors would be identified.

But the convention was moved from San Diego to Miami in mid-March due to the ITT scandal. That required another $10 million for hired soldiers, provocateurs and imported violence to round up radicals. This would explain the frantic effort to accumulate $10 million in only three weeks. Hugh Sloan testified April 5-6 that $5 to $6 million arrived in cash at CREEP offices.

If the names did not have to be revealed, per campaign law current on April 7, 1972, why did the money have to be delivered in cash?

How could so much of it have consecutively numbered bills?

11. ***After martial law was declared, the plans included "getting Nixon."*** Andrew Topping's assassination plan confirms this. Testimony of Harold W. Eldridge could confirm this.[24] Investigation of the death of Secret Service agent J. Clifford Dietrich might confirm this.

Secret Service agent Robert H. Taylor was transferred. He had a rift with H.R. Haldemen, who tried to change security arrangements. Taylor threatened to arrest Haldeman for interfering with security when he wanted a "spontaneous demonstration" for the president in New Hampshire. A duplication of the Wallace shooting could clear the way for Agnew.[25]

12. ***The goal was a U.S. Gestapo.*** Senator Ervin described the espionage squad inside the White House as a "gestapo mentality." J. Edgar Hoover refused any part of the gestapo, saying the secret Domestic Intelligence operations "denied our civil liberties." The Inter-Agency Group (IAG) on

Domestic Intelligence and Internal Security includes members from the FBI, CIA, DIA, NSA, Counter-Intelligence agencies of the Army, Air Force, Navy and Police Departments.

[*As this article went to press, Louis Tackwood was picked up by Los Angeles police, beaten, his arm broken in prison.* Realist *note: "It should be the duty of the Senate Committee and the special federal prosecutor to protect the life of this vital witness. He has documentation and names linking the White House plumbers to California law enforcement agencies. He could also be a deciding factor in the San Quentin Six and other trials."*]

3. Tom Charles Huston

Orders for Nixon – The "Huston documents" are a cover. Tom Charles Huston did not write these. Who did? Huston is a cut-out, a delivery boy.

There are *instructions for President Nixon,* supposedly Huston giving orders:

"I am attaching my recommendations on the decision the President should make with regard to these operational restraints."

"It might be helpful to add my specific recommendations and reasons in the event the President has some doubts on specific courses of action…"

I recommend the President call in Mr. Hoover for stroking sessions. The President explains the decisions he made. He thanks Hoover for his candid advice and past cooperation. He indicates he is counting on Edgar's cooperation in implementing the report. He announces his decision. Follow this up with a meeting in the Oval Office.

Thank members for their report. Announce his decisions. Indicate his desire for future activities. Present each member with an autographed copy of photo of first meeting where OLLIE took place.

Huston, whoever he represents, had advice for the military and intelligence agencies pushing his domestic "emergency" plans.

Having seen the President in action with Mr. Hoover, I am confident he can handle the situation in such a way that we can get what we want without putting Edgar's nose out of joint. At the same time [that Nixon is placating Hoover] we can capitalize on the good will the President has built up with the other principles and minimize the risk that they may feel they are being forced to take a back seat to Mr. Hoover.[26]

Tom Charles Huston came to the White House from Young Americans for Freedom. Douglas Caddy, the attorney called to the Washington jail the night five men were arrested at the Watergate, was founder of Young Americans for Freedom.

Military intelligence agents arrived in Dallas from Munich, Germany to infiltrate and take over Young Americans for Freedom.

Those agents were involved in the assassination of President Kennedy in 1963. Their goal was to take over the White House by 1970.[27]

Herbert Kalmbach, attorney for President Nixon, had meetings with Douglas Caddy, as did many others from the White House espionage teams.

With the cooperation of the Justice Dept., intelligence agencies and the armed forces, it appears that Tom Charles Huston was performing his duties, as assigned, to carry orders to Richard Nixon. Caddy took his orders from the military and intelligence agencies. Although he is described as a "White House aide," Huston was mentioned in testimony by Richard Kleindienst as general counsel to the CIA.

4. William Sullivan, Division V, FBI

William Sullivan worked closely with Robert Mardian, Internal Security, and the White House espionage squad.

When Sullivan left the FBI, he removed tapes in J. Edgar Hoover's possession that could do political damage to Nixon-Agnew.

Senator Weicker at least asked John Dean if he knew William Sullivan.

The killing of President Kennedy was planned by Division V of the FBI under the cloak of the Defense Intelligence Security Command.

Headquarters were in Muscle Shoals, Alabama, home of NASA.

Five fronts were utilized.

The same fronts employed for the complicated set of murders in Dallas—of President Kennedy, Officer J.D. Tippit and Lee Harvey Oswald—were familiars in the Watergate Affair. Many of the agents involved in 1972 election sabotage can be connected to earlier operations. These include:

Solidarists: CIA foundations, centered in Houston, working with the emigré community, many employed as scientists, oil operators. They were connected to the Mexican money laundering, Siberian oil contracts and warfare production. Large donations to the Nixon campaign (and before that Johnson's) came from Houston and Dallas.

American Council of Christian Churches: Shortly before LBJ died, he revealed that curiosity led him to find the real assassins of President Kennedy. They were found in the Caribbean Murder, Inc. A series of Church fronts funded a school for assassins in Oaxaca, Mexico. They dressed as missionaries. The same church people, interested in such activities, have direct contacts to important White House aides, FBI and CIA agents. Agency money is sent to churches, and it is passed to persons unknown. This money hires assassins.

Miami syndicate: Frank Sturgis delivered arms for Castro at one time, switched sides and left the gambling tables. From that moment on, he attempted to "save" Cuba from communists. Gambling was an important motive in anti-Castro operations. Bernard Barker, bag man in the Miami area, worked for Batista's secret police. The Syndicate, hoping to return to control Cuba, promotes disturbances by hiring Cuban exiles.

Cuban Exile Group, Free Cuba Committee: The Cuban exile community worked closely with government agencies and the Solidarists, coordinated by Division V of the FBI. Oil interests, geologists and gambling interests utilized exile Cubans for foot soldiers to help reclaim Cuba for particular purposes. Hatred of communism was their common motivation.

Power and profit motives are played down, but financiers have always forced the White House to make military decisions. Kennedy's refusal to invade Cuba or kill Castro was one more proof he was not their man.

Security Division of NASA: Headed by Werner von Braun. Nazi headquarters were moved to the Caribbean after World War II. The National Security Council, patterned after Hitler's intelligence apparat, provided the framework inside the White House for political assassinations, Watergate "Plumbers" and election manipulations.

Agents from military intelligence and the armed forces were concealed inside defense projects.

The Syndicate worked with the Defense Industrial Security Command.

Robert Sheridan, appointed by George McGovern to "investigate Watergate for the Democrats," was

the direct liaison to departments involved in the Kennedy assassination. The Watergate parallels are too great to not suspect a continuous working of this operation.[28]

III. Martial Law without the Riots

"They have the marshals, I have the Army."
– Richard Nixon to John Dean

Ordering martial law under the guise of national emergency is no problem for the White House.

We are actually in a state of martial law at this time, with the judiciary and executive branches facing a crisis in which the president will not account for criminal actions.

Richard Nixon is no longer receiving unwanted advice from Melvin Laird, but will accept Pentagon orders and directions.

William Timmons of the White House espionage group wasn't purged. He's now chief White House lobbyist.

Roy Ash, who should have been removed from the White House for at least ten good reasons, has been described as "expanding his perimeter." The U.S. will become like Greece, which Litton Industries and Ash helped create.

General Haig said he didn't give up his military career "to shuffle papers." He intends to shuffle us instead. He refuses to fire White House aides involved with Watergate "whether they are guilty or not."

There is no indication that the military and intelligence plans are not in operation, or that Haig and others do not put ends far above the means.

The White House is controlled by the clandestine mind, operators who have instigated military *coup d'états* and military dictatorships elsewhere. They have determined that the majority are not able to decide what is best for the conglomerates and financial empires.

Long before the 1972 elections, a series of government agencies formed to assure control of the population.

A conflict was going to arise. Billions would be spent on the production of military hardware. Money would be withheld from programs for domestic improvements and opportunities. A civil war situation, identical to those created by the CIA in Chile and elsewhere, would be forced.

We were entering a period of no-knocks, surreptitious entry, mail openings, imprisonment without trials, elimination of mental hospitals, reduced minority benefits, systematic assassination of minority leaders, closed borders into Canada and Mexico, police laser weapons, data banks and population unrest. With that in mind, we are left with those agencies still functioning, becoming stronger every day when they should be broken up.

If you can't accept the martial law plans for 1972, insist that the Senate and federal prosecutors examine data existing to prove this fact, such as the Louis Tackwood revelations and other evidence.

A. Institutions to dismantle

Only a few of the most dangerous institutions to dismantle include:

Office of Management Budget: Domestic funds and financial decisions belong in the hands of Congress. Roy Ash was accused of taking $43-million from Howard Hughes contracts by shuffling the books, then started the Litton Industries empire. Litton is fattened by large cost overruns, running into billions. The excuse of the Office of Management Budget was to "save money." Ash could save the taxpayer by minding his own shipyard.

The close association of Roy Ash, the CIA's John Maury and other top government officials to the Greek military dictatorship is shocking. The White House "Plumbers" and all agents involved in sabotage and conspiracy worked through and with the Office of Management Budget at one time. Fred Malek of that Office should be sent back to the Pentagon, turned away from domestic affairs.

Office of Emergency Service: We all want warnings and protection from natural disasters. That cover story is for promoting the diabolical, 1984-Orwellian James McCord secret warning system.

This involves a two-way radio in every home.[29]

Ronald Reagan, hoping to be President, is pushing hard in California for the Office of Emergency Service.

The Roseville, California tests on military equipment exploding was to further justify that office. It was a provocateur-type operation to create the need for legal repression.

Any natural disaster will come and go. But the Office of Emergency Service will remain.

Inter-Divisional Information Unit (IDIU): This is a cover for domestic intelligence gathering.[30]

While the CIA is not supposed to be operating inside the U.S., it exists everywhere under different covers.

There are military provisions to anticipate all future uprisings.

Drug and Law Enforcement (DALE): This is a dangerous new development. The agency conceals espionage operations and foments terror in the community.

Every manifestation of Nazi Germany has been realized inside the U.S. with the exception of entering, breaking homes apart, killing and leaving. DALE is that missing link. There are no promises that raids will cease. There is every reason to believe they will continue. There will be more "errors." Even when the arrested have drugs on the premises, the methods and consequences of the discovery do not justify DALE's tactics.

Imported narcotics on CIA planes and otherwise serve three purposes important to the federal government.

It is good business, exceeding war profits. Drug dealers work with the intelligence and military sectors. Profits gained from drug traffic help support covert projects, including assassinations.

Second, provocateurs and police agents purposely push narcotics into the ghettos to control minorities. According to Louis Tackwood, the LAPD distributed drugs, as do other police agencies.

Third, the necessary violence and crime in the streets caused by supporting drug habits requires more police, local helicopters, surveillance, arrests without warrants, framing selected patsies by planting evidence, and makes the law enforcement agent the protector of our life and property.

Planted marijuana in the binoculars of John Lennon was the excuse to deport him. In spite of the cultural advancements that he and Yoko Ono have made, their outspoken criticism of war, genocide and political imprisonment make them eligible for the "enemies list." Planted narcotics becomes the excuse to deny a family the right to find their child.

DALE is a political tool of the administration.[31]

UCLA institute to Study the Causes of Violent Behavior: This is Ronald Reagan's answer to "solving violence by 1975." Senator Ervin and others requested this study be put off at the time of Watergate.

Funded by CIA fronts, concealed grants and government money, the UCLA Institute hid behind the California Council on Criminal Justice.

Suicides, family beatings, minority problems can easily be solved in direct proportion to the amount of

money located in space and defense budgets transferred to domestic needs. There is a concerted interest in federal, CIA studies to justify brain experimentation, prisoner behavior modification and minority experimentation on the basis that social unrest is not caused by economic deprivations. Every effort to pass this propaganda as fact should be challenged.

Twenty-five per cent of the Gestapo doing painful and subhuman experiments in Nazi Germany were from the leading universities. NASA scientist Dr. Ross Adey at UCLA justified brain alteration by claiming that "the brain feels no pain."[32]

ENSKIDS: The National Security Act of 1947 made every provision for NSC-CIA sabotage and infiltration inside the U.S.[33] ENSKIDS is one of the provisions. Anyone can be "suspected" of having foreign contacts, thus justifying surveillance. This was the excuse for following Mary Jo Kopechne, later found dead inside Senator Ted Kennedy's car.

Atascadero, California, Lister Unit, Vacaville, California: California prisons have been experimenting with dangerous, painful drugs for a long time. Empty units wait at the Lister Center in Vacaville in the hope that the public will lose interest in prisoners. Public opposition stalled the process temporarily until the UCLA center appeared.

Federal funds, through LEAA, provide methods of social control. These include various drugs and techniques not allowed by the Nuremberg Code or AMA guidelines.

– Proloxin was used on 1,093 inmates in Vacaville in 1971.

– Anecetin has been used on at least 90 unwilling patients in California, and probably many more.

– Electro-convulsive shocks are administered as punishment.

– Castrations are common. L.A. Superior Court Judge Lawrence Turrentine ordered 60 castrations. L.A. Superior Court Judge Frank Collier ordered 41 castrations. Genitals are wired inside California prisons as experimentation on prisoners.

– Sterilizations, 19,042 of them, were ordered by California judges for "preventive procreation."

This is a national problem, but I have done research into the California prisons as related to California conspiracy and espionage operations.[34]

U.S. Medical Center for Federal Prisoners in Springfield, Miss., Adirondack Treatment Center, New York State, Behavior Research Center in Butner, North Carolina: Clockwork Orange is alive and well in the United States. Anticipated social unrest will be challenged by removal of prisoners from their home states. There will be no with those prisoners. Advanced behavior modification, imprisonment without commission of a crime and transporting prisoners across state lines are escalations of Auschwitz, USA.

New Proposed Cabinet in California to Combine the Military, Prisons, Law Enforcement into One Group: Ronald Reagan compared President Thieu in Vietnam to George Washington. Following all the methods used by Thieu and the Phoenix program in Asia to silence over 40,000 political prisoners in preparation for an election, presidential aspirant Reagan is clearing the way at home.

The UCLA Institute to Study the Causes of Violent Behavior, the Office of Emergency Service, the new proposal to establish a single manpower agency for employment and the new proposed cabinet are Reagan's pet projects, and *he is pushing to implement them as soon as possible.*

If there was ever a time to question and fear one public servant, it is now and the man is Reagan. Almost each month a diabolic suggestion has appeared as a real nightmarish possibility. A "special task force" has assembled to combine controls over the citizens under the guise of a "study." A new California cabinet is proposed. This would include the military, Highway Patrol, Office of Emergency Service,

California Criminal Justice (federal funds), Crime Technological Research Foundation, Department of Corrections and the Youth Authority.[35]

B. THE ENEMIES LIST

The White House intelligence operation was coordinated to handle domestic emergencies. These turned out to be political enemies of the administration, or the corporate structure as it wants to exist.

Procedures of operation, surreptitious entry, wiretapping, opening mail, etc., were listed and approved, although clearly illegal. Where did this counter-intelligence army learn who to attack? From the White House enemies list, of course.

What was the military objective? Radicals, anti-war protestors, minority leaders and prisoners were already under attack by existing military and federal agencies. They were infiltrated, saturated with provocateurs, bugged, busted and imprisoned. Others were murdered, poisoned and crippled.

The president himself admitted approving an illegal operation of repression against campus and other radical groups.

All that remained was the list to get the army moving.

"By 1970, it was public knowledge the FBI alone had added 1,200 agents for campus work, that federal funds for local police surveillance were increased by 300%, and that the Justice Department was turning its Internal Security Division into a national squad devoted to massive surveillance and harassment."[36]

The White House "Plumbers" and the agencies that coordinated with them were formed to damage political enemies secretly. Standard governmental departments made up of Republicans and Democrats would have learned of these operations.

H.R. Haldeman gave the approval for $400,000 to "defeat" George Wallace. Supposedly it went to a Democratic candidate for governor, but Haldeman didn't know his name. Couldn't it also go to an assassination team? He only allocated the cash from a special, secret White House safe, but didn't inquire about the use of it when it was handed over. Only an intelligence operation, based on a need-to-know basis, behaves in such a manner.

There were ways to attack political enemies. In some manner, they would be "screwed" after the elections. Investigating tax returns, the withholding of federal grants and contracts, litigation and prosecutions were suggested. That is where the army comes in. They have to create the conspiracies to "frame," "screw," "program" and "create scandals."

Create scandals: Michael Dellums, son of black Representative Ron Dellums, was arrested recently. Were any of his companions provocateurs? Were they coerced? That is not far-fetched after studying lists of those in prison today because of such planted conspiracies.

The Trojan boys—The USC fraternity gang that ended up in the White House were stuffing ballot boxes, creating disturbances and testing their political muscles as young adults.

Sally Harmony testified about Robin Cranston early in the Watergate hearings. His name was on the Gemstone papers. Robin, the son of anti-war Senator Alan Cranston, recently had legal troubles with a female who claimed he put LSD in her drink. Was she one of Liddy's choice women to be utilized in Miami?

Programming: Mr. and Mrs. A. Picker were to be "programmed." The Pickers were large contributors to the political campaign of Senator Muskie.

What constitutes programming?

Mrs. Dorothy Hunt, at the time of her death on a sabotaged flight to Chicago on December 8, 1972, had the name of two neurosurgeons with her. An accomplished CIA agent in her own right, would these

persons perform for the accused a service that would save paying blackmail money the rest of their lives?

The present Attorney General Eliot Richardson seems to be knowledgeable about mind control, behavior modification and programming.

Following the Detroit riots of 1967, a new method of handling minorities was explored seriously as an alternative to social progress. Frank Ervin, Vernon Mark and William Sweet, all from Massachusetts, received aid from Eliot Richardson to begin studies and experimentation on the behavior modification of minorities. Richardson tapped Congress for project financing.

The project is the use of preventive psychosurgery on minority children in Massachusetts.[37]

C. The Warfare State President Richard Nixon

The image of J. Walter Thompson, cold war advertising agency, has been replaced without a cover story.[38]

The Pentagon has taken over the Oval Office. It was always there but concealed in a more subtle way.

Cold War provisions for the National Security Council, housed inside the White House to direct the designated official, are followed through.

Domestic spy operations, illegal procedures, denial of Constitutional protections, were also ordered.

Armed guards seal all files and documents.

Tape recordings of presidential conversations can be used to blackmail the President if he forgets his lines or does not respond appropriately to orders.

Intelligence agents hire the staff.

Vice-President Spiro Agnew

Plans to assassinate Richard Nixon indicate a desperation of the extreme right-wing to place Agnew in the White House as soon as possible.

Watergate defendants and close working associates of the espionage teams were Agnew-Ashbrook supporters. YAF, Tom Charles Huston's organization, supported Agnew in 1972.

There was a determination by conservatives to "get Nixon," not Democrats or radicals. Agnew's money and close links to the Greek military junta have not been mentioned with regard to 1972 election financing. Tapes exist to prove millions of dollars, through Tom Pappas, Esso Oil, placed Agnew on the Republican ticket.

Maj. Gen. John Dunn, Agnew's deputy chief of staff, indicates a growing fear of a militarized White House. Dunn, a colonel three years ago, was boosted to two-star general this March. The Greek military junta came into existence during a 24-hour *coup d'état*, because the generals and older conservatives had been systematically replaced prior to the takeover.[39]

Chief Justice Warren Burger

A new Constitution was written for use after the 1972 elections.

It is a blueprint for a Nazi state.

Warren Burger insisted the new Constitution *eliminate trial by jury.*

Burger claimed, "trial by jury slows the wheels of justice."[40]

The Supreme Court recently turned down, by a vote of 7-0, a request to examine documentary evidence that Sirhan Sirhan *did not kill* Senator Robert Kennedy. The circumstances that allowed Nixon to become president were unusual and horrendous. If evidence of political assassination are ignored, there is no chance that illegal wiretapping will cause the president to move very far away from the source of his

power.

General Alexander Haig, White House Chief of Staff

General Haig passed over 243 generals for his appointment. Rockefeller in New York directs his men: Henry Kissinger, John Mitchell, Spiro Agnew. Haig is the protegé of Kissinger and maintains control over the White House as the other men move out and shift positions after the Watergate scandals.[41]

Haig is a defendant in a suit by Morton Halperin for illegal wiretaps at his home and office. There is no chance, with the Pentagon ruling the courts, that Kissinger or Haig will even receive a reprimand. "National security" protects criminalized espionage agents from us. If their lies are revealed, as in the Pentagon Papers, the punishment is pushed upon those who see and tell. There is more national security in smoking these people out.

Maj. Gen. John C. Bennett, White House Staff,
Maj. George Joulwan

Bennett and Joulwan are aides, still on active duty at the present time. They are assisting General Haig at the White House.[42]

William J. Baroody, Pentagon,
Fred Buzhardt, Counsel for the President

Buzhardt's name came up at the time of the Pentagon Papers trial. Evidence was withheld to the detriment of the defendants. March, 1971, Buzhardt testified that electronic surveillance of civilians by the army did not *directly* interfere with civil rights.[43]

Clarence Kelley, new Director of the FBI

Famous for computerized police departments. Blacks, anti-war protestors, radicals harassed in Kansas. Police killings of blacks, use of helicopters, data banks. LEAA funds for repressions followed violence instigated by federal provocateurs. Heavily linked to federal police systems. Passed Senate approval 96-0, indicating total ignorance of what Watergate espionage was really about. This appointment could have been held up, like L. Patrick Gray's, until more information was available.

William Colby, Director of the CIA

The CIA has been involved in domestic sabotage. Colby, as head of the dreaded Phoenix program in Vietnam, became synonymous with population displacement, tortures, imprisonment of political voices against Thieu, and dropping Viet Cong from airplanes. The arrogance of this nomination at this time by Richard Nixon will be equaled by a Senate with no respect for human lives or liberty.

James Schlesinger, Secretary of Defense

"Knowledge is a form of power and most institutions exhibit an understandable reluctance to dissipate this power in the absence of compensating advantages." "The deliberate introduction of distortion and fuzziness to improve the competitive position of one's own agency or division is an unavoidable and dominant feature of the bureaucratic landscape."

"Politics, so far as mobilizing support is concerned, represents the art of calculated cheating, or more precisely how to cheat without being really caught."
– James Schlesinger, Systems Analysis and the Political Process, Rand Corp., June, 1967

Provisions for martial law and the institutions to implement a military dictatorship inside the U.S. affect all facets of our society. No persons suffer more than political prisoners, victims of the police state.

The prison system reflects the quality and justice of the surrounding society. Tiger cages in Vietnam, islands of torture in Greece, assassination police squads and torture in Brazil, extermination camps in Germany have been powerful and necessary methods of silencing political opponents. Knowing such prisons exist keeps the moderate and frightened from voicing objections to oppression.

The same Justice Dept., FBI, counter-intelligence agencies working inside the White House that condoned election sabotage and the "horror stories" come down upon radicals *inside the prisons* as well as on the streets.

Raymond Procunier, director of State Department of Corrections in California, said, "If we've got a group out preaching revolution, and we think that it's dangerous, we lock them up."[44] Many U.S. prisoners have been murdered, framed and confined in isolation solely for their political beliefs and not for actual crimes committed. When the California authorities can't find a crime, provocateurs create one and assure that selected targets are blamed. Throughout the 1960's and '70s, the consciousness of prisoners related to the political nature of their situations has grown, and so have political movements on the outside.

The more they call attention to their conditions, the more inhumane is their treatment. Prison demonstrations or actions to voice existing conditions cause some men to be segregated for life.

If the White House defined moderates such as Hubert Humphrey or Edmund Muskie as "enemies" to be defeated by any means necessary, what chance do radical prisoners have for a new definition or chance to live?

The Adjustment Center, Maximum Security, is for political prisoners inside the United States.

Germans claimed to be ignorant of Dachau and Auschwitz.

There are enough books and data available about the prisons to set innocent men free and force a change of conditions.[45]

The Watergate espionage squad is directly linked to California agencies and prisons. Elmer Davis, a man currently held in the Calif. State Prison at Folsom, was charged with the Ellsberg robbery of Dr. Lewis Fielding's office. Davis was in prison at the time he was charged and could not have been in Beverly Hills at the time. A suit has been filed by Davis in U.S. District Court against Richard Nixon, John Ehrlichman, Egil Krogh, G. Gordon Liddy, E. Howard Hunt and California law enforcement officials, including Beverly Hills law enforcement officers.[46]

The Elmer Davis case is only one from a long list of arrests that will indicate the inter-relationship of the CIA, LAPD, California Department of Corrections and other offices.

In Los Angeles, Cuban terrorists waged armed arson attacks in 1970 against the Haymarket, a radical meeting place and bookstore, the offices of the Socialist Workers Party, and Ashgrove, a coffee house made available to radical causes.

Mario Pelaez, Reynaldo Castro and Reynaldo Gonzalez, all arrested, worked for the CIA. Edward Gritz and Sergeant Charles Loust of the LAPD Criminal Conspiracy Division confirmed the CIA connection. The Cubans were hired in May 1970 to "fight communism and get Cuba back." The men worked with Alpha 66, the armed guerrilla warfare group associated with Frank Sturgis, Bernard Barker, Eugenio Martinez and other Watergate operatives.

Louis Tackwood revealed another CIA, LAPD, FBI conspiracy plot that took place at San Quentin, the George Jackson murder and framing of radical prisoners for other deaths that occurred that day.

The White House espionage group was responsible for killing 28 Black Panthers and other minority leaders. They also were determined to exterminate leaders inside the prison. Eldridge Cleaver, writer and Panther, fled to Algeria to avoid a prison sentence. Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms agents were making a deal with Sonny Barger, Hell's Angels leader, to "bring Cleaver home dead in a box." Larry Shears, the

agent who exposed this arrangement, also revealed the plans of ATF to kill Cesar Chavez.[47] This was at a time when John Caulfield and G. Gordon Liddy worked for the Treasury Department's ATF.

Tackwood stated at his 1971 press conference that the LAPD Criminal Conspiracy Section, with links to the CIA and FBI, had foreknowledge of the Judge Haley murder, Marin Courthouse shootout and the San Quentin killing of George Jackson.

In line with murdering political leaders, writers and Black Panthers, George Jackson had been marked for death several years in advance of the shootout. Many prisoners were offered parole to kill or frame him. Refusal to comply brought more charges and punishments. Ronald Reagan, Governor of California, had information on the San Quentin killings on his desk four months in advance. But like other staged riots and acts of violence, this was meant to take place. (The suppressed report on possible disturbances inside the prison was described in the October 23, 1971 edition of the *San Francisco Chronicle.)*

As an agent provocateur for the LAPD, Tackwood was sent to prison disguised as an inmate to create disturbances or to frame a particular prisoner. As part of his LAPD employment, he testified at the trial of Joseph Lee Jenkins and sent an innocent man to San Quentin for life. Jenkins, innocent, is imprisoned for political purposes. Sergeant Woods, Homicide Division, LAPD, stated he would charge Clemmie E. Henderson unless he cooperated and testified against Joseph Lee Jenkins.

The threat was made at the Antelope Valley Police Dept., Lancaster, California. Henderson was given a set of facts to testify to. He was taken to the scene of the crime, shown photographs of the area.

Two other witnesses, Larry and Arnold Kendrick, were coerced. Henderson did not see Jenkins kill Darlene Smelcer. He was instructed on August 13, 1969 to give false testimony. Arnold Kendrick and Clemmie Henderson killed Miss Smelcer, and Jenkins was not involved in the crime.

Jenkins was the only person among a group with an arrest record, so the police found him the "easiest person to convict of the crime." (This information is from the deposition of Clemmie E. Henderson, State of California, Marin County, recorded at San Quentin State Prison on Sunday, October 15, 1972, at the request of Clemmie E. Henderson, B-34006 and Joseph Lee Jenkins, B-33668. Is there an attorney who will come forward and represent Joseph Lee Jenkins? He is innocent, and has already served four years of his life in San Quentin for a crime he never committed.)

Lee Smith, another provocateur, testified before a House committee that he was "recruited to foment prison unrest" at the California Men's Colony in 1971. He was to help plan and carry out a strike, and worked with other prisoners to assault two California prison guards. Agent provocateurs are hired to blame "Marxist revolutionary forces" for prison unrest. The conditions of prison then become more secretive and controlled.[48]

Stephen Bingham was the agent provocateur of the San Quentin shootout. Boyd Douglas was hired to frame the Berrigans. Whittaker Chambers was persuaded to imprison Alger Hiss. Bingham was employed for the murder of George Jackson and the subsequent imprisonment of six radicals: Fleeta Drumgo, Willie Tate, Hugo Pinell, Johnny Larry Spain and Louis Talamantex. Known as the San Quentin Six, they will be on trial soon, two years after their arrests.

A common Nazi method of extermination was utilized—"killed while escaping." George Jackson was shot in the head. There are discrepancies regarding the autopsy and location of the wounds.

Bingham was not a "Communist." Tackwood told me he was sent from British intelligence, went to San Quentin, provided the excuse for the George Jackson killing. He produced a gun supposedly hidden in Jackson's "wig."

Charges against the San Quentin Six are for the murder of two other prisoners and three guards.

Asst. Attorney General Robert Mardian, associated with the Watergate arrests and the White House intelligence squad, created the grand jury system to suit administration purposes—to prosecute radicals, anti-war protestors and political prisoners.

The grand jury that indicted the San Quentin Six two years ago was divided by their stormy sessions.

One grand juror, in an unprecedented move, resigned in protest over the indictments. He spoke of the "inequalities and injustices of the secret indicting process." Two other grand jurors walked out on the meeting, declaring, "what this Grand Jury does is not justice but vengeance."[49]

Grand jurors, attorneys and outside authorities were not permitted inside San Quentin for a length of time, denied access to investigate the incident.

No impartial investigation was conducted after Jackson and five others were slain. The cover story for the murders was "throats were cut." Scare stories frighten the outside population against prisoners, and assures that political prisoners will remain locked up. But throats were not cut in New York. Nelson Rockefeller, governor of New York, allowed the murder of 43 prisoners inside Attica that could also have been avoided. Who sent out that phony story? Why? If it was concluded that throats were not cut in New York, after the prison was inspected carefully, what assurance is there that throats were cut in California? Nobody was allowed to enter and examine the evidence.[50]

Judge Haley's body was exhumed in search of evidence in the Marin County Ruchell Magee trial, a case involving the LAPD, CCS, Evelle Younger and the Department of Corrections. Before the trial for the San Quentin Six begins, their attorneys should demand bodies be exhumed to determine if that cover story holds.

Taped conversations of Stephen Bingham, taken after the killings in Canada, also exist. They should be produced by the LAPD. Immediately after the San Quentin murder of George Jackson, guards and inmates, 22 in all, sent out a letter pleading for someone to solve the conspiracy behind those bloody events. Ten years of research into the murders of President John Kennedy, Senator Robert Kennedy, Malcolm X, Martin Luther King and then the Watergate Affair led me to the San Quentin killings.

Six men are anxious to prove their innocence.

They are denied lawyers of their choice.

The trial will be a railroad if we allow this to happen.

America must wake up, save the living, investigate and mourn the dead.

The Watergate affair is not only about election sabotage. Watergate is about a White House President, Department of Justice, FBI, CIA, intelligence agencies that conduct paramilitary operations against all citizens alike. Indifference to conspiracy trials, created by agencies for silencing minorities, assures that the real criminals will remain in power.

The team that sabotages the Constitution and the Bill of Rights has locked innocent human beings in isolated traps for 23 1/2 hours each day for the past two years.

Two days before George Jackson's trial, as one-third of the famous Soledad Brothers, he was killed. Two companions were acquitted. Prison violence is escalating in San Quentin now in anticipation of this long and crucial trial.

The defendants live with threats of death every day. Phony messages of "escape plans to Algeria and Cuba" circulate. It is treacherous business to look for life and justice in the U.S. if you are marked by the federal government to cease existing. California law enforcement agencies and planned conspirators should be on trial. Free the San Quentin Six and investigate Watergate West.

Epilogue

A "caper" is a "horror story."

John Mitchell, former Attorney General, attempted to separate the Watergate Hotel entry and arrests from the White House "horror stories."

The Watergate Affair can't be taken apart as a series of isolated acts.

The entry into the Democratic Headquarters, forging documents, complicated money transactions,

kidnapping, blackmail, provocateurs, phony polls were part of an espionage establishment that has existed for a long time. They finally got caught.

Research into political violence and political assassinations would have clipped their wings much earlier.

Refusal to expose their methods at this time or allowing specific agents to still control with power over government agencies, assures their continued success. Election reforms are a beginning, but a simplistic approach to needed purges.

"McCarthyism" was firing and frightening innocent citizens by calling them "communists." Guilt by association was the charge.

The Watergate purge is different, involving actual criminals.

Murders, conspiracies, sabotage and treason should be the charges this time, or would be if the investigators were not part of the conspiracies.

NOTES

1. Jerry Policoff, "How All the News About Political Conspiracies in the United States Has Not Been Fit to Print in *The New York Times*," and "Liberal press intent on silencing conspiracies," *Realist*, Oct. 1972.

2. "An agent provocateur is a police agent who is introduced into any political organization with instructions to foment discontent … or to fake a case in order to give his employers the right to act against the organization in question." – Louis Tackwood, *The Glass House Tapes*.

Example: The White House took steps to assemble a political attack team for 1972. They needed a cover, so called them "Plumbers" to find leaks in SALT talks from the NSC. All of their assignments were political, including the Ellsberg robbery, kidnapping Dita Beard, forging State Department papers to blame JFK for the murder of Diem, collecting data to smear Ted Kennedy after Chappaquiddick, securing cover stories for Arthur Bremer (arrested for shooting George Wallace). William Becher from the NSC planted the leaks. Becher was then promoted to deputy assistant secretary for public affairs at the DoD. A provocateur, he created the excuse for unleashing repressive operations against innocent citizens.

3. *Reichstag Fires in the U.S.:* The Reichstag was the German government building burned by Hitler's general as an excuse to imprison radicals and protestors. Domestic violence caused by Justice Department conspiracies: Murder of Martin Luther King. Systematic killing of 28 Black Panthers. Kent State, murder of four students. Jackson State, murder of two students. Urban guerrilla warfare; police and FBI ammunition; bombs supplied. Attica, three prisoners killed in riots, San Quentin, murder of George Jackson, two guards, three prisoners. Chicago 1968 convention; police, armed forces causing violence. Planned killings of 1972, violence for Republican convention, but arrests at Watergate cancelled the plans.

4. *Acts of treason: Webster's New Collegiate Dictionary* defines treason as "(l) The betrayal of a trust, and (2) The offense of attempting by overt acts to overthrow the government of the state to which the offender owes allegiance, or to kill or personally injure the sovereign or his family." Existing evidence can prove that acts of violence, and even the planned killing of the president, were planned for the fall of 1972. The Watergate Affair is about treason, not wiretapping and burglary.

5. *Watergate Lawyers:* Attorney General John Mitchell; Attorney General Richard Kleindeinst; Asst. Attorney General Henry Peterson; Acting Director of the FBI, L. Patrick Gray; Asst. Attorney General Robert Mardian; William Sullivan, Director of Division V, FBI; California Attorney General Evelle Younger; William Bittman; Charles Colson; John Dean; Paul O'Brien; Gordon Strachan; Egil Krogh; Donald Segretti; Fred LaRue; John Ehrlichman; Herb Kalmbach; Kenneth Parkinson; Tom Huston; Richard Moore; G. Gordon Liddy; Herbert Porter; Judge C. Richey; Richard Nixon.

Lawyers *not* involved: Judge J. Sirica and Judge Morell E. Sharp, who had the good judgment to refuse involvement with the domestic intelligence squad.

6. *Methods by which covert acts are carried out – a few examples:* Secret funding to conceal sources. Using provocateurs to conceal motives behind the operations. A "public relations" office to hide the department planning the conspiracies. Dummy fronts, non-existing businesses or firms. Cover stories, inaccurate descriptions of agents or operations. Cut-outs, hiring a middle-man so connecting agents are not recognized as integral to a conspiracy.

Need-to-know, hiring people but not divulging the larger plans; they "didn't know" what the money was used for, or about the operation. Evidence is manipulated, destroyed, forged, "missing," locked up, delayed (reconstructed to fit the cover story), altered, planted against the innocent, withheld in National Archives. Disguises—wigs, speech impediments. False I.D.—passports, social security, birth certificates, union cards, aliases. Code names, to lose identification, conceal projects. Job placements, salaries given but not working at that premise, promotions for services, transfers.

Arson, bombing, concealing evidence and motives, confuse. (I learned of a CIA agent working with McCord and others from Agency who

burned two churches in Washington. The blame was placed on hippies and radicals, "anti-Christ" youth). Transportation provided, private planes, getaway planes, double license plates to switch states, double car ownerships and keys that fit several cars. Illegal wiretaps, electronic surveillance, robbery, forging. Secret meeting places, safe houses, places to stay, change clothes, meet in parks, under bridges, hotel lobbies, airports, inside taxicabs. Oral instructions; no written memos, evidence removed, final plans made with a nod or sign of the hand.

7. *Removal of civil liberties:* J. Edgar Hoover objected to domestic CIA plans, lamenting, "our civil liberties would be denied." The plan *was never rescinded:* (1) July 13, 1970: President Nixon approved the plan. Electronic surveillance, "surreptitious entry," breaking and entering, opening mail and operations still not revealed. (2) July 28, 1970: the intelligence plan was "rescinded" after strong objections from FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover. (3) Dec. 1970 and late Jan. 1971: Judge Morell E. Sharp worked inside the White House and went over the plans because he was recruited to head this "rescinded" squad. He refused because of the secrecy. Six months after the project was rescinded, interviews were being held to keep it going into the future. (4) July 15, 1970: Tom Charles Huston, "author" of the intelligence plan, said: "No one at the White House gave formal orders to rescind the plan." (5) June 10, 1973: The *Washington Post* revealed at least 22 covert operations conducted by this domestic intelligence squad.

8. *How to cover clandestine operations if detected or arrested:* Jeb Magruder told John Mitchell that he was going to tell the truth in court and not perjure himself the second time around. According to Magruder, Mitchell told him that was fine but that he was "going to have to take the other route." Keeping secrets is as important to spy operations as ammunition is to a weapon. They are not given away. Methods of concealment are: *Denial*—Deny all charges. When the denials are proven to be lies, they become "inoperative." *Can't recall*—Agents are working as a team. Some may or may not talk. Answer to a question with a "yes" or "no" might be contradicted later. "I can't recall" covers the territory. Recall can return at any moment. *Suicides*—Agents are provided with literal suicide medications. Psychological suicide is to die as a person, to lose traces with the other agents. You are dead—to them and future contacts. *Disavowal*—Gordon Strachan delivered money to Fred LaRue. LaRue wore gloves to receive it, and reminded Strachan that he didn't know him. *Perjury*—Perjury isn't perjury; it is rationalized as patriotism. Lies are not considered lies; they are necessities to save America. *"Essentially gossip, nothing evidentiary"* – Richard Moore, Nixon's attorney, never told him about information in the *Washington Post* or from other sources regarding CREEP or the possible involvement of White House staff in the Watergate Affair. His excuse was that it was "essentially gossip, nothing evidentiary." The gossip could be checked out with the Justice Dept. or intelligence agencies. So long as he didn't bother, it remained "gossip." *Nothing illegal* — When Tony Ulasewicz was asked by Senator Weicker if any of his jobs for the White House were "illegal," he answered "no."

Howard Hunt was asked the same question by the grand jury in Washington on May 2, 1973. When asked if he was "aware or did participate in what might commonly be referred to as illegal activities," Hunt answered, "I have no recollection of any, sir." *Question:* "What about clandestine activities?" *Hunt:* "Yes, sir." *Question:* "What about that?" *Hunt:* "I am not quibbling, but there's *a difference between something that's illegal and something that's clandestine*. An entry into something like Dr. Fielding's office would simply be called *an entry operation conducted under the auspices of competent authority."*

9. *Allendé allegations, Dec. 1972. United Nations:* William Broe, chief of CIA clandestine services in the Western Hemisphere, proposed to ITT officials a plan to accelerate economic chaos in Chile. Broe has now become the CIA Inspector General and recently combed its records for Watergate documents. Broe has supervised a sweep of CIA records to determine whether they contain any further evidence suggesting CIA links with the Watergate scandal. U.S. minorities and the unrepresented majority will have to take the same complaints to the UN some day. Our fiscal condition at the present time is identical to CIA "planned economic chaos." (AP, *San Jose Mercury,* 6-22-73)

Prime Minister Michael Manley of Jamaica demanded that U.S. Ambassador Vincent de Roulet be recalled. He had suggested to Congress they work out a pre-election deal in 1972. Manley was promised that the U.S. would not interfere in the elections if he agreed not to make nationalization of the American-owned bauxite industry a campaign issue. (AP, 7-23-73)

10. *Domestic programs to cut:* Fred Malek, Office of Management Budget, "hatchet man," cuts off jobs on a moment's notice. Caspar Weinberger, Health, Education & Welfare, known as the "Ax" or "Cap the knife," reduces domestic needs.

11. *Some reasons for secret donations:* Corporate political donations are illegal. Favors in litigation before the Justice Dept. Delay in smog, pollution controls that are costly to factories. Keep minimum wages down. Raise the price of milk. Wheat contracts and a $6 billion gas deal with Soviet Union. Navy bases on Greek Islands, oil transports and bases.

12. *Henry Buchanan account:* Patrick Buchanan, White House aide, was a close personal friend of Spencer Oliver. Oliver's phone was tapped at the Howard Johnson Motel. Could this telephone be used for the Miami provocateurs? Henry Buchanan, who kept the very special secret account in Bethesda, gave some of this money to Ken Reitz. Reitz was a college director in charge of "hiring provocateurs" for demonstrations. (*Washington Post*, 6-29-72)

13. *Donald Nixon, "loan from Marriott" after Watergate arrests:* Herb Kalmbach needed money to keep Howard Hunt and others quiet. The CIA couldn't get involved at this late date when they were trying to work their way out. Too many consecutive $100 bills had been passed already. Kalmbach went to New York for money. There was a suggestion to ask "Mr. Mitchell or Maurice Stans." Mitchell stayed at a Marriott apartment. Stans had a very close relationship with Tom Pappas, the Greek military junta and Marriott. Stans praised the Greek dictatorship and conveyed Nixon's "warm love." (Evans & Novak, 9-21-71; *Washington Post* 5-11-73)

14. Mae Brussell, "Why Was Martha Mitchell Kidnapped?" *The Realist*, August 1972.

15. *Donald Nixon, Vesco*, $200,000 cash, *Washington Post,* June 6, 1973

16. Federal Reserve can't find serial number: *Washington Post,* AP, 4-26-73

17. Eight persons killed with regard to funding:

(1) *Mrs. Dorothy Hunt* – Carrying $40,000 cash, not $10,000, from Bernard Barker's account. Also with $2,000,000 in securities, bonds, money orders. Killed on Flight 553, United Airlines, Dec. 8, 1972. Mrs. Hunt said her "husband knows enough to impeach Nixon."

(2) *Rep. W. Mills.*

(3) *Col. J. Webster* – Campaign manager for Mills.

(4) *James Glover* – Second in command of W. Mills.

A total of $25,000 in mysterious funds passed through Mills' account. He claimed he didn't know where it came from. Two men who would know are dead. Maryland money is important in the context of the Wallace shooting in Maryland. There are many people who would be paid off or silenced to advance the plan.

(5) *Mr. Taub* – Allegedly worked for Herb Kalmbach. Died in Switzerland with $2 million on him, the same amount Dorothy Hunt had when she was killed.

(6) *Dennis Salvatore Cossini* – CIA contact with Arthur Bremer. Could have provided the money, like Mrs. Hunt, be the cut-off.

(7) *Mrs. A. Topping* – Wife of Andrew Topping, the man hired to kill Nixon – $1,000 was paid to a Secret Service agent. This could be traced. Did any of the money come from Watergate accounts? Mrs. Topping was murdered because of something she knew. She was part of her husband's team. Although her death was listed as "suicide," like Rep. W. Mills, Topping said it was murder.

(8) *Lou Russell* – Carl Oglesby in the *Boston Phoenix* (July 31, 1973) refers to "the recent death of Lou Russell, an old-school security cop employed by McCord Associates on the Republican convention security contract. He brought about a dozen checks in different amounts from McCord to Fensterwald's Committee to Investigate Assassinations during a period in which McCord and Fensterwald are not supposed to have known each other."

18. *"Looking for evidence":* Howard Hunt testified before the Grand Jury that Charles Colson called from the White House and told him to "go to Bremer's apartment and see if there is left or radical reading material around." The night before this testimony, June 11, 1973, Hunt was hurt, beat up in his cell. *(Washington Post,* 6-21-73)

Bittman, Hunt's attorney, asked for permission to review the record of the Wallace story and amend it later if necessary, because of the possibility of mistakes after the attack. Will he be forced to change testimony to protect the White House and Colson's connections to the Wallace shooting?

Herb Kalmbach was pouring money into the defeat of Wallace.

19. *Assassination plans for Nixon:* "After the martial law they planned to get Nixon." – Louis Tackwood, *Glass House Tapes,* Avon Press.

20. *Andrew Topping:* Topping told Detective Peter Book that "rightist forces beyond his control caused his wife to be killed." (*Washington Post, San Jose Mercury*, 8-12-72)

21. *Tackwood press conference:* October 25, 1971, *New York Times.*

22. *Violence in Miami:* William Lemmer, *Harper's,* Dec. 1972.

23. *Edward Martin, McCord: Washington Post,* June 18, 1972. *"White." E. Howard Hunt: Los Angeles Times,* June 20, 1972. Ibid, *Glass House Tapes*, page 237. McCord was "Martin."

24. *Washington Post,* October 11, 1972.

25. *Working for Agnew, "The Man"*: Harold W. Eldridge co-wrote the letter in Florida that smeared Senator Muskie. The purpose was to keep Muskie from winning in 1972, otherwise the "Man" would not be able to run again in 1976. Nixon had already been president. The "Man" who wanted the chance must have been Agnew. If Muskie lost, Nixon would get the nomination in August and win the election in November. If Nixon was killed, "The Man" wouldn't have to wait until 1976.

26. *Tom Charles Huston:* "Details on Domestic Intelligence Plans, Orders for President Nixon," *New York Times* 6-7-73

27. *Evidence of YAF infiltration, right-wing takeover of White House by 1970:* "A Plot That Flopped," by Patricia Swank, *Look*, 1-26-65; *Warren Report,* cover-up, Doubleday, 1964, pp. 293-298, pass over high-level conspiracy; "Meetings before the Commission on the Assassination of President John F. Kennedy." Vol XVIII, pp. 834-98.

28. William Torbit, *Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal,* Jan. 1970, unpublished manuscript put together by trial lawyers in the Southwest who work with intelligence agencies and government agents. He is a member of the American Trial Lawyers Assn.

29. *Office of Emergency Service:* Two-way bedside radio, AP, *Los Angeles Times*, 11-11-72; "Big Brother," Plans for a Dictatorship, Alan Stang, *American Opinion*, January 1973; James McCord, censorship plans, *Monterrey Peninsula Herald*, 10-23-72.

30. *Inter-Divisional Information Unit:* Supposedly abolished, *Washington Post*, 6-1-73.

31. *DALE:* 6-25-73, *New York Times.*

32. *UCLA Inst. to Study Causes of Violent Behavior:* 4-1-73, *San Francisco Examiner,* temporarily put aside after Watergate.

33. *ENSKIDS: Los Angeles Times,* 6-14-73, CIA infiltration into U.S. through loopholes.

34. *Prison Experimentations:* Lister Unit, *San Francisco Chronicle*, 11-21-72, *Monterey Herald*, 3-16-73. Vacaville, *L.A. Free Press*, 3-16-73, Violations of Nuremberg Code, write Venceremos Prison Committee, 1969 University Ave., E. Pale Alto, Calif. 94303.

35. *Ronald Reagan's Super Gestapo Cabinet: San Jose Mercury, San Francisco Chronicle*, June 2, 1973.

36. *Enemy list:* Kirkpatrick Sales, *L.A. Times,* 7-30-73.

37. Eliot Richardson, "Secretary of Lobotomies," *Berkeley Barb*, June 29, 1973.

38. *J. Walter Thompson Advertising Agency*, 3-5-73, *New York Times:* James Webb Young, former vice-president and director of

Thompson, conceived the idea during World War II of a "War Advertising Council" to aid the war effort with advertising campaigns *at no cost to the government*. Young worked for the Ford Foundation and Nelson Rockefeller as coordinator of Inter-American Affairs in South America.

39. *Agnew, Maj. Gen. Dunn:* Jack Anderson, *San Jose Mercury*, 7-7-73.

40. *Warren Burger, New Constitution. No trial by jury:* 9-8-70, *New York Times*.

41. *General Haig:* Given number two Army Post over 243 Senior Generals, *Wash. Post, NY Times*, 9-8-72

42. *Maj. Bennett, White House staff: Wash. Post* 6-17-73.

43. *J. Fred Buzhardt, Pentagon Lawyer into White House: San Francisco Chronicle*, May 14, 1973.

44. *Raymond Procunier:* "If we have political prisoners we lock them up" – *S.F. Chronicle*, 2-10-72.

45. *Books on Prisons:* A few suggested readings – there are many more. Gerald Leinwand, *Prisons, Problems of American Society*, Pocket Books, 1972; *Maximum Security, Letters from California's Prisons*, Edited by Eve Pell, Bantam Books, 1972; *Ain't Nobody Gonna Hear You Scream*, Grossman Publishers, NY; *Voices from the Big House*, Harlo Press, Detroit; Cynthia Owen Philip, *Imprisoned in America*, Prison Communications; *1776 to Attica*, Harper & Row; Charles Goodell, *Political Prisoners of America*; George Jackson, *Blood in My Eye*, Random House.

46. *Elmer Davis*, P.O. B-3677, Represa, Calif. 95671, U.S. District Court – *Elmer Davis, Plaintiff, Complaint for Civil Damages*, "defamation of character, violation of right to privacy with wanton, malicious and evil intent and design to cause the false arrest and imprisonment of the plaintiff," filed June 23, 1973.

47. *Plans to kill Eldridge Cleaver and Cesar Chavez:* Treasury Dept. ATF, Larry Shears, Dec. 17, 1971, 5:50 p.m., Channel 23, Los Angeles; *New York Times*, January 2, 1972; *San Francisco Chronicle*, 12-20-72, Trial of Sonny Barger: "He had been approached by law enforcement officers asking him to *kill someone*." He entered into deals with authorities in exchange for dismissal of charges against gang members.

"Ex-Convict 'Recruited' for Rioting": UPI, *San Francisco Chronicle*, 7-26-73.

49. *San Quentin Six, grand jury walkouts:* San Quentin Six Legal Defense Fund, 558 Capp St., San Francisco 94110.

50. Louis Tackwood, *Glass House Tapes*: "Younger's links to Washington, Squad 19, martial law plans …" Evelle Younger, attorney general of California, is named as part of the national Gestapo intelligence operations of which Watergate is one aspect."

CHAPTER SEVEN

THIRTY WATERGATE WITNESSES HAVE MET VIOLENT DEATHS

(MIDNIGHT, JULY 12, 1976)

What are the odds of 30 people—all involved in the same horrible scandal—dying within four years? Because that's what happened with Watergate.

Since the break-in at the Democratic National Headquarters on June 17, 1972, there have been 30 deaths—many of them violent—all of people involved in one way or another.

By Malcolm Abrams

The CIA is behind it all. That's the conclusion of Mae Brussell—one of America's foremost assassination experts—a researcher who has collected every pertinent newspaper story, every book, every document since the Watergate break-in four years ago on the night of June 17, 1972.

Mae Brussell is the only person in America who perceived the gruesome string of deaths that stretches from Watergate to now. She believes that a faction within the Central Intelligence Agency is responsible not only for Watergate, but for the assassinations of John and Robert Kennedy.

She believes, as President Nixon stated on the Watergate tapes, that everything horrible that's happened in American politics is connected, starting with the Bay of Pigs.

Some of the 30 people who died, she says, knew only about CIA involvement in Watergate. Some of them knew much, much more.

A few of the dead, like Martha Mitchell, Lyndon Johnson, Congressman Hale Boggs and Mafia hoodlum Sam Giancana, are well-known. Others might have been—if they had lived and told their stories.

But 30 are dead. And there's no reason to believe that there won't be more.

1. Beverly Kaye, 42, died of a "massive stroke" in December, 1973, while riding in the White House elevator. She was Secret Service Agent John Bull's secretary, and her job included the storing and preservation of the White House tapes.

It is almost without question, says Mae Brussell, that she knew what was on those tapes, including the 18 minutes of recorded conversations that were mysteriously erased.

As reported by the West Coast news service *Earth News*, on June 5, 1974, from the stories she told her friends and neighbors, she was convinced that the president and his aides were involved in the Watergate bugging and cover-up.

2. Murray Chotiner, a long-time friend of Nixon's, was killed when a government truck ran into his car on January 23, 1974. At first it was reported that Chotiner suffered only a broken leg, but he died a week later.

According to a March 31, 1973 article in the *Los Angeles Times*, Chotiner may have been one of the people who received the tape recordings made inside the Democratic campaign headquarters in the Watergate building.

3. William Mills, a Congressman from Maryland, was found shot to death—an apparent suicide—one day after it was disclosed that he failed to report a $25,000 campaign contribution given to him by President Nixon's re-election finance committee. Mills, 48, was discovered with a 12-gauge shotgun by his feet and an "alleged suicide note" pinned to his body. In all, seven such notes were found, apparently written by Mills although this was never verified. According to Brussell, the $25,000 came from the $1.7 million secret fund for "dirty tricks" held by the Committee to Re-Elect the President.

4. and 5. James Webster and **James Glover**, key men in Congressman Mills' campaign, were killed in a car accident in February, 1972. Another campaign worker stated in the *Washington Post* on May 23, 1973 that the illegal $25,000 contribution was delivered to Mills' campaign manager James Webster.

6. Hale Boggs, Congressman from Louisiana and a member of the Warren Commission, died in July, 1972, one month after the Watergate arrests. Boggs and two other men disappeared when the light aircraft in which they were flying crashed in Alaska.

The *Los Angeles Star* reported on November 22, 1973 that "Boggs had startling revelations on Watergate and the assassination of President Kennedy."

Richard Nixon made unintelligible remarks about Congressman Boggs, recorded on the White House tapes, just seven days after the Watergate break-in.

7. Dorothy Hunt, the wife of convicted White House "Plumber" E. Howard Hunt, was killed along with 41 other people when United Airlines Flight 553 crashed near Chicago's Midway Airport on Dec. 8, 1972.

Mrs. Hunt, who like her husband had worked for the CIA, was allegedly carrying $100,000 in "hush" money so her husband would not implicate White House officials in Watergate.

The day after the crash, White House aide Egil (Bud) Krogh was appointed undersecretary of transportation, supervising the National Transportation Safety Board and the Federal Aviation Association—the two agencies charged with investigating the airline crash. A week later, Nixon's deputy assistant Alexander Butterfield was made the new head of the FAA, and five weeks later Dwight Chapin, the president's appointment secretary, was dispatched to Chicago to become a top executive with United Airlines.

The airplane crash was blamed on equipment malfunctions.

8. and 9. Ralph Blodgett and **James Krueger**, attorneys for Northern Natural Gas Co., were killed in the same airplane as Mrs. Hunt.

The two men, Brussell contends, had documents linking Attorney General John Mitchell to Watergate, and a secret transfer of El Paso Natural Gas Co. stock to Mitchell after the Justice Department dropped a $300 million antitrust suit against the company.

The money from these stocks may have been used for political espionage.

Blodgett told friends before boarding the plane in Washington that he would "never live to get to Chicago."

10. and 11. Dr. and Mrs. Gary Morris died in March, 1972 when their boat mysteriously disappeared off the Caribbean Island of St. Lucia. Their bodies were never found. But their names were on the dead body of Mrs. Dorothy Hunt, according to an article in the Oct. 3, 1975 *Washington Post*. "The plane crash

that killed Mrs. Hunt in Chicago has now been officially ruled an accident," the story stated. "But there's one bizarre coincidence that may never be explained. Her red wallet at the time of her death had a slip of paper with the name of a Washington psychiatrist, Dr. Gary Morris, on it."

Neither Howard Hunt nor his wife were patients of the doctor, who [had already disappeared by] the time of the plane crash.

It is interesting to note, Mae Brussell says, that Dr. Morris was an expert in hypnosis and that Mr. Hunt used mind control in his espionage work.

12. J. Edgar Hoover, head of the FBI, died on May 1, 1972, a month before Watergate. There is considerable evidence that he may have known about the White House "dirty tricks." An article in the *Harvard Crimson* quotes Felipe De Diego, a Cuban exile who took part in the break-in at psychiatrist Daniel Ellsberg's office: "Two burglaries took place at Hoover's Washington home. The first was in the winter of 1972 to retrieve documents that might be used for blackmail against the White House.

"After the first burglary," according to Diego, "a second burglary was carried out; this time, whether by design or misunderstanding, a poison, thyonphosphate genre, was placed in Hoover's personal toilet articles. Hoover died shortly after that."

"Thyonphosphate genre" is a drug that induces heart seizures. Its presence in a corpse is undetectable without an autopsy. No autopsy was ever performed on the body of J. Edgar Hoover.

1**3. Sam Giancana**, the Mafia chief, was murdered on June 22, 1975 as he was about to testify before Sen. Frank Church's Senate Committee investigating the use of underworld figures by the CIA, for the purpose of assassinating foreign leaders. Giancana had ties to E. Howard Hunt and the CIA.

His murder is unsolved, although police say "it didn't look like a Mafia hit." His former girlfriend, Judith Campbell Exner, recently revealed her secret romance with JFK.

14. Lyndon Baines Johnson, the former president, died on January 20, 1973 in a helicopter ambulance en route to San Antonio, Tex.

Three months before his death, Johnson was quoted in the *San Francisco Chronicle*: "We've been running a damn Murder Inc. in the Caribbean." This was two years before Sen. Church's committee revealed the plots to assassinate foreign leaders.

"Coincidentally," Mae Brussell says, "Johnson died in the arms of a secret service agent, Mike Howard, who in 1963 had been assigned to protect Marina Oswald after her husband was killed."

15. George Bell, assistant to Charles Colson, special counsel to the White House, died of unreported causes on June 30, 1973. When questioned about President Nixon's infamous "enemies list," Colson told the subcommittee investigating Watergate that the "late George Bell" was responsible for the list of 200 celebrities and politicians whom the President considered dangerous.

16. Lee Pennington, Jr., a CIA agent, died of an apparent heart attack in October, 1974. Immediately after the Watergate arrests two years earlier, he had been sent to ransack James McCord's home. Richard Helms, the CIA chief at the time, did not reveal this fact to investigators.

It was not until June 28, 1974, four months before Pennington's death, that the new CIA director, William Colby, reported to Sen. Howard Baker: "The results of our investigation clearly show that the CIA had in its possession, as early as June, 1972, information that one of its paid operatives, Lee R. Pennington, Jr., had entered the James McCord residence shortly after the Watergate break-in and destroyed documents which might show a link between McCord and the CIA."

17. J. Clifford Dieterich, a 28-year-old secret service agent assigned to Nixon, was killed when the

president's helicopter crashed off the Bahamas in May of 1973.

Dieterich was one of seven men in the helicopter, but the only one to die. Ms. Brussell believes that in guarding Richard Nixon, he may have come to know too much.

18. Clay Shaw, who years earlier had been acquitted of conspiracy to kill John F. Kennedy, died of a heart attack on August 16, 1974.

His death came just weeks after Victor Marchetti, author of *The Cult of Intelligence*, revealed that Shaw had worked for the CIA. He had been on assignment in Mexico in 1963 at the same time as CIA agent E. Howard Hunt and Lee Harvey Oswald.

Shaw was cremated. There was no autopsy.

19. Merle D. Baumgart, an aide to Rep. Peter Rodino of the House Judiciary Committee on Impeachment, was killed in a traffic accident on May 20, 1975. Washington police described his death as "a routine traffic accident"—until they received an anonymous call to "look into it." According to the *Portland Oregonian* of June 30, 1975, U.S. agents joined the probe but kept it secret because of the "stature of some individuals who might be involved."

Ms. Brussell speculates that in his work to impeach Nixon, Baumgart may have come across some dangerous information.

20. Nikos J. Vardinoyiannis, a Greek shipowner who contributed funds to Nixon's presidential campaign, died of undisclosed causes in 1973. Watergate prosecutor Leon Jaworski was investigating Vardinoyiannis when the Justice Department declared that the Greek's contribution of $27,000 was not illegal.

The Department reached this conclusion, Mae Brussell says, even though the contribution was made after one of Vardinoyiannis' companies was contracted to supply fuel for the U.S. 6th Fleet, and even though federal law bars foreign contractors from contributing to U.S. political campaigns.

21. Joseph Tomassi, the 24-year-old head of the American Nazi Party in California was shot to death on the front steps of his Los Angeles headquarters, on August 15, 1975.

Two years earlier, the *Los Angeles Times* reported, "the Committee to Re-Elect the President gave $10,000 in undisclosed funds to finance a surreptitious campaign to remove George Wallace's American Independent Party from the 1972 California ballot."

The *Times* went on to say, "$1,200 of the fund found its way to Joe Tomassi, head of the Nazi Party in California."

22. Mrs. Louise Boyer, Nelson Rockefeller's assistant for 30 years, fell to her death from a 10th story New York apartment on July 3, 1974.

At the time, as a consequence of Watergate, Rockefeller was being considered for the vice-presidency. Accusations had been made that he had been involved in the illegal removal of gold from Ft. Knox. It's believed that Mrs. Boyer supplied the investigators with this information.

23. Jose Joaquin Sangenis Perdimo, a Cuban exile who worked with the CIA at the Bay of Pigs, died mysteriously in 1974. Code-named "Felix," he had worked with Watergate plumbers Hunt and Barker. In 1972 he was awarded a secret merit medal by the CIA.

24. Rolando Masferrer, another Cuban exile employed by the CIA, was blown to bits when his car exploded on October 5, 1975. Masferrer had worked with plumbers Hunt, Sturgis and Barker.

According to Miss Brussell, "He would have been investigated for his activities in connection with

assassination attempts on foreign leaders, had he not been killed."

25. Lou Russell, an old friend of Nixon's from the "Red Scare" days, died of natural causes on July 31, 1973.

In testimony before the Senate Select Committee on Presidential Campaign Activities, Nixon's secretary Rosemary Wood stated: "I met Lou Russell once when he came to the office. He said he worked on the old House Un-American Activity Committee and that he needed a job."

Russell found a job alright, with "McCord Associates," a CIA front run by Watergater James McCord.

26. Jack Cleveland, a partner of the president's brother Donald Nixon, died in Canada in November of 1973. At the time he was wanted for questioning in connection with a possible government pay-off to Howard Hughes.

Cleveland was suspected of being a go-between in a deal whereby Nixon's brother gained an interest in a large Nevada ranch in exchange for the president's clearing the way for the billionaire's takeover of Air West.

"When Watergate came apart," Ms. Brussell says, "this deal came under investigation."

27. Richard Lavoie, chief of security for International Telegraph and Telephone, died of a heart attack on December 27, 1972.

At the time, Lavoie was guarding Dita Beard, an ITT secretary who claimed she had a memo that her company had contributed $400,000 to Nixon's campaign fund so John Mitchell would not bust up some of ITT's holdings.

When columnist Jack Anderson broke this story, Miss Beard was moved from Washington to Denver, Colo., where she was hospitalized for an apparent heart attack. She was whisked away, Anderson claimed, so that she couldn't testify.

Mae Brussell suspects that Lavoie may have heard too much from Dita Beard.

28. Mrs. Andrew Topping, the wife of a man arrested for plotting to kill Nixon, died of gunshot wounds on April 6, 1972, two weeks after the Watergate break-in. Her death was declared a suicide.

Andrew Topping told police that "pro-rightist forces" beyond his control caused his wife's death.

29. James Morton was President Gerald Ford's campaign treasurer. According to a *New York Times* report of November 2, 1973, Ford was being questioned by a senate committee prior to his appointment as vice president, and was asked about a secret sum of $38,000 used in his campaign for the House of Representatives.

The *Times* story stated: "Ford confirmed under questioning that a committee organized in Washington raised $38,216 for his re-election in 1972 … but Ford said he did not know the names of the donors because the committee treasurer, James G. Morton, is now dead."

Like so much of the Watergate money, Ms. Brussell notes, no records were kept.

30. Martha Mitchell, estranged wife of the former attorney general, died on Memorial Day, 1976. A constant "pain in the side" of the Watergate conspirators, she was the first person to point the finger at Richard Nixon and suggest he resign.

CHAPTER EIGHT

LETTER TO PRESIDENT RICHARD M. NIXON

MAY 20, 1973

Dear President Nixon:

My name is Mae Brussell.

I have a radio program in Carmel, California called "*Dialogue: Conspiracy*." On this weekly show I illustrate government conspiracies, how they operate, who is behind them.

My background is nine years research into political assassinations and espionage operations.

The purpose of my work was never a negative one, to hurt any particular people or to tear the country apart. The sad situation today was inevitable because truth will come out. To cure a sickness, you have to first diagnose it.

In addition to seeking a diagnosis to America's problems, I spend many hours thinking about the alternatives. That is why I write to you now.

You are sitting almost alone at this point as the head of a great country you loved which needs your help.

I have studied the causes for this tragedy.

I have also studied the cures.

Half or ¾ of the problems were created by errors on your part.

But you were also the victim and were going to be the victim of a tragedy worse than what took place so far.

While I am pleased to see truths exposed, and all my messages are proven to be correct, I would still like to help you.

I understand the history of the Cold War, the 1960s, the 1970s and have given a great deal of thought to all these complexities.

I will tell you what I want to do for you, if you would allow me.

What I want is to go with you, away some place, like San Clemente preferably, only because I live in California.

Alone, only with your wife and children, I would give you a complete blueprint of alternatives at this point.

As I stated, my work and research is very positive in many, many ways.

I could take you out of the mess in Washington, present a carefully thought-out plan based upon some evidence, to make you the hero you wanted to be. You could finish off your office with dignity. You would not be asked to resign but could establish yourself as the great person you always wanted to be.

The things I would offer you, if you would listen very carefully, would lift you above all this.

Even if there was an espionage squad inside the White House, even if they did everything to assure your election, the problem was they intended to kill you after the nominations. And you could prove, in a

hurry, that their necessity to sabotage the government agencies, the CIA, FBI, Justice Department, was to gain control after you are dead.

Now I am a serious researcher, not some person making jokes or scares. I have tapes of all my radio shows, and I speak week after week about the plans they had for you later.

As I say, I have alternatives for you to present to Americans on the streets, minorities, Blacks, Chicanos, political prisoners for you to be able to announce drastic changes, make 180 degree changes in your plans and posture, so all would forgive you after the Watergate. They would all realize that you are a victim, as much as us, of deceit and unlawful plans.

My father is a friend of yours. He has blessed you in the White House.

We don't agree about many political things because I identify with the underdog and he protects the status quo. But you, President Nixon, are the underdog today, and I can help heal this nation while the investigations proceed, and you can face the public with a new determination, based upon facts and plans I hold are important for you and all of us at the same time.

Sincerely,
Mae Brussell

CHAPTER NINE

THE EVIL FEEDBACK LOOP & EMERSON'S LAW OF CONSERVATION

MAE BRUSSELL INTERVIEW (1978)

(ORIGINALLY PUBLISHED IN THE WINTER 1978 NUMBER OF CONSPIRACY DIGEST, VOL. III, NO. 1.)

C.D.: *Personally, I no longer have any firm prescriptions for social betterment. The study of conspiracy seems to indicate that the laws of reality give the dedicated conspirators the upper hand against anyone with any version of social reform in mind. Another way of looking at it is that evil has a better feedback loop than good. The loot gained by conspiracy puts power in the hands of a few conspirators who then can undertake even vaster conspiracies to further enhance their power. The fruits of "good" movements, on the other hand, are widely dispersed among the people rather than being concentrated and available for further success. Perhaps this would be a good question. Do you have any reaction?*

M.B.: There are also philosophical, literary and historical examples where evil does not have a better feedback loop than good. The laws of reality do not guarantee that power gained from force and monopoly will be lasting or of any long range value to those who have struggled to obtain that power. "Compensation," Ralph Waldo Emerson's essay, describes my views on evil, power and the attempted manipulations of mankind and nature: the farmer imagines power and place are fine things. But the President has paid dearly for his White House. It has commonly cost him all his peace and the best of his manly attributes. To preserve for a short time so conspicuous an appearance before the world, he is CONTENT TO EAT DUST BEFORE THE REAL MASTERS WHO STAND ERECT BEHIND THE THRONE. This law (of compensation) writes the laws of the cities and nations. It is in vain to build or plot or combine against it. Things refuse to be mismanaged for long. Though no checks to a new evil appear, the checks exist and will appear. If the government is cruel, the governor's life is not safe. If you tax too high, the revenue will yield nothing.

The dice of God are always loaded. Every secret is told, every crime punished, every virtue rewarded, every wrong redressed in silence and certainty. David, the poet, was able to halt Goliath, the giant. Remember Achilles' heel? Children love Popeye and instant spinach. Power comes from many sources to counteract evil.

Evil has never had a better feedback loop than good. The popularity of Star Wars today has to do with the longing for heroes, the triumph of good over evil, the forces of good winning. The CIA spent $26 million in tax revenue over a 25-year period with the express purpose of altering human behavior, starting as early as 1947. This budget was not only for defensive purposes, but to erase memories and to create apathy at home. Dr. Jose Delgado at Yale University, funded by Naval Intelligence (our tax money again), specialized in electronically controlling human beings. We are preparing for future warfare robots. If power and evil provide such a good feedback, why the necessity to worry about emotions such as anxiety,

guilt, or conscience? Power is temporary and illusive. It can be shattered by one leak or scrap of evidence. One slip of scotch tape placed on the door-latch at the Watergate Hotel in Washington, D.C. was responsible for removing the president, vice-president, attorney general, secretary of commerce, top presidential aides and attorneys. No one has yet admitted who put the second piece of tape back on the door.

The kinds of conspiracies I am talking about pertain to political assassinations and their cover-ups.

The fruits of good movements are too widely dispersed. They receive no assistance from the federal government. The FBI COINTELPRO and the CIA's Operation Chaos have been breaking up leftist organizations and social-cultural activities with a purposeful vengeance (again with our tax dollars).

Divide and conquer is the rule, whether inside the prisons or at charitable meetings. Anywhere people get together, they are infiltrated. The ratio of agents and informants has been about one provocateur to five members of any given group.

There has been a systematic effort to kill all leaders whose awareness or activities interfere with international oil interests or narcotics traffic.

It has been alleged that the CIA-FBI combine, in conjunction with the Defense Industrial Security Command, has supported a school in Oaxaca, Mexico, for professional assassins. This religious academy, disguised as a missionary, was exposed in 1970. Albert Osborne, alias John Howard Bowan, director and head "missionary," accompanied Lee Harvey Oswald on his trip to Mexico in September, 1962. Oswald, not an assassin, was a patsy for the men who killed President John F. Kennedy.

The killing of Kennedy was only one of dozens or possibly hundreds of murders of leaders around the world, or potential future leaders.

With this kind of worldwide organization in operation, how can any movement or leader ever serve the people?

C.D.: *Do you think, then, that centralization of power can be a good thing as long as the power is held by persons selected by the people and dedicated to what you consider to be a valid program of social reform? Doesn't power always corrupt? Aren't the worst always attracted by the prospect of centralized power? Wouldn't extreme decentralized power be the solution to conspiracy?*

M.B.: Centralization of power is always dangerous. What is valid social reform to one group, such as Hitler's Germany, is genocide for others.

I have to agree with Thomas Jefferson's thoughts about power: "I have never been able to conceive how any rational being could bring happiness to himself from the exercise of power over others." You have to understand that my views about power and happiness are not realistic or even possible. Utopian dreams of a world without fear, killings and unnecessary pain is only a goal that makes every day a challenge and every hour worthwhile.

Yes, power corrupts. The worst are attracted by centralized power. The solution is for parents and educators to avoid subjecting children to power trips, the church to avoid the lure of power, the government to halt dividing economic and ethnic groups against each other. Conspiracies are possible when people have been conspired against from birth. If parents, schools, church and government divested themselves of the games that increase their power, new sources of energy and production would take their place and do a much better job of it.

C.D.: *What is your attitude on the right-left dichotomy? From your writing, I would presume that you have a "left-wing" background and probably are favorably disposed to socialism or "true" communism. Could you describe your social-political ideals? Everyone knows what Mae Brussell is against—your positive philosophy, on the other hand, would be news to many of our readers.*

M.B.: My attitude on the right-left dichotomy should not enter into or affect my research. When a biologist looks at cancer cells in a microscope, they are not Republican or Democratic or Socialist cells. There is no right-left distinction in diseases. I examine autopsy reports, sworn testimony under oath, Congressional Hearings, FBI, CIA and other government documents, witness testimony, police reports, books, articles and unpublished manuscripts along with newsletters.

My conclusions about assassinations and their cover-ups are cross-referenced and constantly checked for changes or new information. The FBI and Los Angeles Police Department have photographs labeled that prove ten or more bullets were fired in the Ambassador Hotel the night Sen. Robert Kennedy was killed.

Sirhan Sirhan's weapon only fired eight shots.

There is no indication that any of Sirhan's bullets went into Kennedy. The fatal shot came from behind the Senator, into his head. A guard from Lockheed, Thane Cesar, fired his gun that night.

Kennedy's coat sleeve was cut off and is missing.

The bullet-ridden ceiling panels are gone.

Sirhan Sirhan's weapon was "sold" and is out of the state, probably destroyed.

If the Republicans and the right-wing did the killing and cover up, we should know.

If the Democrats or Communists did the killing or cover-up, we should know.

L.A. Chief of Police Ed Davis, and former District Attorney Evelle Younger, were both running for governor of California at the time of the cover-up. The voters should be informed if Davis and Younger were engaged in a conspiracy to cover up the murder of a senator and presidential candidate.

The voters must be informed. This has nothing really to do with right-left.

Documents exist to prove that the CIA and FBI planned the murder of Richard Nixon in 1972. Conservative George Wallace was eliminated from the 1972 election due to a near assassination.

I want to know who is killing Republicans or Conservatives as much as I want to know who is killing President John F. Kennedy, Sen. Robert Kennedy, Malcolm X, Reverend Martin Luther King or hundreds of others less known.

Everyone *doesn't* know what Mae Brussell is against. If I tell you what I am against, you can deduce or know what I am for. I am against planned political assassinations by our intelligence and defense agents. The CIA, FBI, DIA and DISC (Defense Industry Security Command), were set up originally to protect citizens of the USA. They became their own judges and juries, private servants of corporations with investments at home and abroad.

I am against the constant destruction of evidence in criminal cases and political assassinations. Prime witnesses are murdered before or after testifying. Diaries are forged and planted in obvious places. Doubles are created to confuse. Police departments manipulate facts in cooperation with conspirators.

I am outraged that our judicial system since 1947 has been patterned after Nazi Germany. Patsies are dead or locked away. The assassins walk the streets or leave the country, "home free." I am against using Earl Warren, chief justice of the Supreme Court, to cover up the assassination of President Kennedy. When the highest court is corrupt, there is no hope at local levels.

I am against allowing the CIA to spend $25 million since 1947 for the *express purpose,* as stated before, to alter our behavior. Is the State supreme over individuals? Who owns or controls our minds?

Why was CIA Director Allen Dulles allowed to order 100 million LSD tablets? Were half the U.S. population going to receive their doses? What gives the CIA and Pentagon the right to define normal, or to determine what is national security? Are we being drugged through food, water, and supplied with chemicals so we become slaves and robots? Where is all the cancer coming from? Why the preoccupation with death?

Why is the government in the business of creating a "psycho-civilized" world? Who is ordering the

ultrasonic waves to lower brain waves of cities' populations to an alpha state, leaving citizens susceptible to mass propaganda and hypnotic suggestion? These facts have been confirmed by researcher Walter Bowart in 1977. I learned about the project years ago.

I am against the using of CBS, ABC, NBC, UPI and AP by Washington D.C. since WWI, and by the CIA since WWII as propaganda tools. The so-called "liberal" *New York Times* and *Washington Post* would make Adolf Hitler proud. Notice that in all the *Washington Post* accolades concerning Watergate exposures, the newspaper never delved into the massive evidence surrounding the murder of Mary Jo Kopechne, the shooting of George Wallace, the Howard Hughes connections, the murder of J. Edgar Hoover, the planned riots for Miami in 1972, the assassination plans for Richard Nixon through both the San Diego Secret Army Organization and the Andrew Topping arrest in New York. The media are cover-up artists. They allow assassins or would-be-assassins to fade away.

One thing is certain about all these matters. The laws of nature are such that certain truths are going to come out. It is only a matter of time. There is no den in the wide world to hide a rogue. Commit a crime. You cannot recall the spoken word, you cannot wipe out the foot track, you cannot draw up the ladder as to leave no inlet or clue. SOME DAMNING CIRCUMSTANCE ALWAYS TRANSPIRES. The laws and substances of nature become penalties to the thief.

My positive philosophy is very simple. I believe there is in each of us a potential for peace and harmony. A few power-mad perverts dictate orders that must be challenged. They are in violation of the laws of nature.

A society that does not care for its infants with love and affection will create mad bombers. The source of this peace and harmony is within the family unit, not government agents or law enforcement. Without love in the home, there is never quiet in the community, cities or around the world.

There are ways to counteract the evil being purposely planned. Study history. Separate fears and prejudices from facts. Recognize facts from propaganda. Invest energy in fighting for what you believe in. Analyze harder where we are going and what you are doing about it. What do you really believe in? How much do we care?

C.D.: *Where can our readers get information on Walter Bowart's research on the mind control uses of ultrasonics and microwaves?*

M.B.: Walter Bowart's book, *"Operation Mind Control,"* will be published in the Spring, 1978.

Bowart's allegations about the CIA using ultrasonic waves on the human brain to control the behavior pattern of entire cities confirm information I received in 1974 about the same project.

A reliable source of information told me that a radio tower and a tall bank tower in San Francisco were going to extend a beam to have virtual radio control of that entire city. He informed me that the radio frequencies would make meditation impossible. The radio towers were being utilized for future control of our minds. The same week that I received this information, an article in the *Los Angeles Times* appeared mentioning the use of radio beams over large cities to control the population.

C.D.: Conspiracy Digest *has often propounded the theory that the right-left political-economic spectrum is an artificial concoction of the ruling class that creates a "heads I win, tails you lose" situation for the ruled class. Isn't the choice between communism and fascism only a choice in style of tyranny? Are you familiar with Antony Sutton's Wall Street series of books that documents that both Nazism and Soviet Communism were financed largely by the same Wall Street cabal whose interest was in creating conditions for big government favoritism as opposed to laissez-faire competition?*

M.B.: The choices between fascism and communism are not our ONLY alternatives. Tyranny, by any

name, isn't the only solution.

I am familiar with Antony Sutton's books and own a few. Nazism and *Soviet* Communism were financed by Wall Street cabals. They were NOT FUNDED TO SUPPORT COMMUNISM.

Money was poured into the USSR and behind the Iron Curtain for the purpose of funding future uprisings and encouraging dissidents. Nazi agents are behind part of the KGB and MKD. Just as Wall Street poured money in Russia after WWI, Allen Dulles, attorney for the Wall Street cabal, then Director of the CIA, funded Adolf Hitler's chief of Nazi-Eastern Intelligence with $200 million (our tax revenue again). Gehlen was paid for placing agents behind the Iron Curtain, and for cold war/hot war purposes. This money does not support communism, but *anti*-communism.

Marina Oswald's background was White Russian aristocracy. Marina has overwhelming links to the CIA, defense industry and General Reinhard Gehlen's agents through the CIA/Greek Orthodox Church. Her membership in the communist Komsomolsk organization, a leftist front, didn't bother the State Department or violently Anti-Communist Rescue Commission that met Lee and Marina in New York City.

The right-left political and economic spectrum is a farce. Howard Hughes' Summa Company, the South Korean KCIA, Hughes Medical Institute and other funding front operations have bought our Congress, Republicans as well as Democrats. Those that can't be bought are blackmailed.

C.D.: *On numerous occasions you have mentioned that the Buckley school of conservatives and his youth wing, Young Americans for Freedom (YAF), are connected to CIA/ruling-class dirty tricks and even the Kennedy Assassination. Few conspiracy buffs would dispute the CIA-Buckley-Establishment connection. Of course, Buckley is death on conspiracy theory. His favorite target is "paranoids."*

What do you think of the conspiracy-minded conservatives, such as the Liberty Lobby and the John Birch Society? No doubt you disagree with their theories, but do you think they are largely sincere? Or are they black propaganda outlets for the Establishment? Or like many other organizations are they simply infiltrated and used from time to time in specific black propaganda campaigns? In one of your tapes you seemed to imply that George Schuler's American Opinion *attack on Malcolm X contained outright lies and was timed to coincide with Malcolm's assassination. Comments?*

M.B.: Paranoia is a psychological diagnosis applied to a disease of the mind. Buckley is hardly a psychiatrist. He is a useful media showcase and propaganda machine.

When Buckley states his opinions in writing or on the air, he never prefaces remarks or articles by providing facts about his CIA days with E. Howard Hunt. Few people know that Buckley's family fortune came from Pantipec Oil Company. E. Howard Hunt and George DeMohrenschildt, Oswald's CIA baby-sitter, both worked under Warren Smith. Smith was President of Buckley's Pantipec Oil.

Buckley not only worked with E. Howard Hunt in the CIA, but formed the notorious YAF with Douglas Caddy, co-worker in the CIA office of Mullen and Co. of Watergate fame.

Members of the YAF were brought from U.S. Military Intelligence in Germany to the Dallas-Ft. Worth area in the fall of 1962. Their object was to infiltrate and take over this conveniently formed new organization. Orders went from Larry Schmidt, first to arrive, that all members had to be in Dallas before JFK arrived … for their briefings and roles to be played. There is more to the Buckley-CIA-YAF-Caddy connections than time allows here.

Liberty Lobby and the John Birch Society accumulate interesting facts. Their numbers are correct, but the conclusions can't be proven and are in error.

Jimmy Carter sent a message into the new spacecraft. He wrote that "we human beings are still divided into nation states, but these states are rapidly becoming a single global civilization."

The Birch Society and Liberty Lobby would claim this is proof of "one world" conspiracy of

communism and the communists are winning their goals. On the other hand, my assessment forces me to believe the Bormann Brotherhood exists. Hitler's goal to rule the world through satellites and weapons is working. We are moving into the Nazification of planet earth. Carter's Human Rights issue is a sham. He scolds the USSR. We support and fund South Africa, Argentina, Chile, Brazil, South Korea, Nicaragua, Iran, feudal Middle-East countries with no trials and much torture.

George Schuler's attack upon Malcolm X, published in *American Opinion*, Feb. 1973, argues that it would be better to memorialize Benedict Arnold, a known traitor, than Malcolm X. Malcolm X was never a traitor to the USA.

Schuler's put down on Malcolm begins by stating Malcolm X was once a pimp, dope peddler, an ex-convict who served ten years for robbery.

He fails to mention the murder of Malcolm's father, the causes of his hatred and poverty, the reasons blacks get into crime. Schuler doesn't praise Malcolm X for changing his ways, for his eloquent self-education, for his published lectures and writings, for his ability to raise himself above the gutter to become an inspiration for many people.

White racists use Black fools and Jewish apologists for much of their dirty work.

The anti-Semitic YAF—John Birch Society wanted to place an ad, "Wanted for Treason," with a black border, in the newspapers the day JFK was assassinated in Dallas, Texas. Birch Society members paid for the ad. Neo-Nazi Christians wrote the ad. Whose name was at the bottom, in the newspaper Nov. 22, 1963? Jew boy Bernard Weissman. Why his name? Weissman testified before the Warren Commission that they wanted his name "because he was Jewish." Why did they need a Jewish name identified with the death of JFK? Because another Jew, Jack Rubenstein (Ruby), who worked with oil millionaire anti-Semites and wanted their approval, was going to silence the patsy. No other members of the YAF were asked to come before the Warren Commission. Why not?

CD: *A number of conspiracy researchers are suspicious of the U.S. Labor Party and NCLC, funded by powerful governments or private interests. They seem to promote some of your conspiracy theories, such as your interpretation of the Symbionese Liberation Army kidnapping of Patty Hearst. What do you think, is Lyndon LaRouche for real? We find it suspicious that a new world Central Bank is the linchpin of his program. Central Banks and their power to create money (power) by slapping ink on paper have always been the primary tool of ruling classes. What is your opinion of the money question?*

M.B.: The U.S. Labor Party always blames the CIA and Rockefeller for everything that is wrong.

Maybe they are hitting the top dogs. It is hard to argue that one.

However, the CIA and the Rockefellers can't do it alone. The USLP praises Gerald Ford as a fine man. Ford was a cover-up artist for the Warren Commission. His crime of lies about Oswald in his book and the cover-up of hard evidence make him guilty of crimes worse than Nixon was charged with. Ford covered up the killings of Kennedy, Officer J. D. Tippit, and the murder of Lee Harvey Oswald. Ford brought neo-Nazi G. Gordon Liddy to Washington, D.C. to work in the Treasury Dept. Ford pardoned Nixon because he was guilty of the same charges, cover-up of conspiracies.

The NCLC never uses documents that prove the Defense Industry Security Command, Division V of the FBI and other agencies had a part in the assassinations and conspiracies.

They were and are not interested in assassinations inside the USA.

Political murders determine who will become head of the Pentagon, Marines, Airforce, Navy, FBI, CIA, Treasury Dept., etc.

Financial policies, national and international, are controlled by corporations and individuals to make up multinational nation-state empires. It is the *systematic* and always planned *murders* that *control* their

financial investments. I want to know who is murdering. The NCLC speak of the condition. They can't make a proper diagnosis without examining the deaths. I agree with the NCLC that terrorism is funded by the right. This has been a historical truth, a technique used by the Czar then brought to Germany for the Nazis.

The SLA was formed by the CIA to infiltrate Bay Area left-wing movements and test mind control drugs.

Lyndon LaRouche never writes about Ronald Reagan, Robert Maheu, Howard Hughes, Paul Laxault, the Summa Company, the Hughes Medical Institute in Florida or others who are the opposite side of the Rockefeller coin. There is a battle going on between the warfare industries and war machine and the Eastern Wall Street gang. The NCLC knows the names of some of the players. They conspicuously omit others. Chase Manhattan Bank is named. Bank of America is never fingered.

My opinion on the money question could fill your entire issue. Profits are obtained by monopolizing what we need; oil, coal, water, transportation, minerals, gas, food, health, homes, entertainment, and communications (phones).

Profits are made from what we don't need; drugs, chemicals, tobacco, narcotics, gambling, prostitution, kidnapping, bank robberies, white collar crimes, hijacking, weapons, overcosts, guns, warfare machinery.

Murders and assassinations that I study pertain to those killings that served *a purpose* involving *future* financial gains that would not have occurred without those deaths. If the electoral system were REALLY FREE to allow people to vote for those representatives who could alter their lives and pocketbooks, the profits in the hands of a few would be considerably reduced.

If the Judicial system really worked, there would be fewer crimes and payoffs for murdering.

Is money the root of all evil? It comes pretty close.

For a given salary, the head and fingers of SLA leader Donald DeFreeze were cut off before his body was sent to Ohio.

Who paid for the injections that Jack Ruby and Martha Mitchell received? What laboratory manufactured the substance?

What profits were made from the LSD given to Patty Hearst while locked in a closet for 45 days? How were the car accidents of Murray Chotiner and Clay Shaw financed?

What did it cost to cover up the fatal plane crash of CIA money bagwoman Dorothy Hunt at the height of Watergate?

How much was the telephone bill from New York City to Chicago when CBS ordered the cremation of Michelle Clark, victim on Dorothy Hunt's plane along with 45 others?

Were Jack Ruby's debts of $40,000 to the IRS before the Kennedy assassination automatically paid when he obliged and shot Lee Harvey Oswald?

How much tax money went to fund doubles for Lee Harvey Oswald, Sirhan Sirhan, Donald DeFreeze and James Earl Ray?

Where are the bankers who are funding violence? Are we paying for all this, the murders, the expensive, lengthy trials and hush money?

Who paid the hospital bills in Colorado for Dita Beard, ITT secretary, when she embarrassed President Richard Nixon?

The important crises in America are what we are doing and what we are allowing to happen.

Fascism isn't found in bank names or bank titles. It is what they are doing to people in front of our eyes.

According to New York City Health Department figures during 1976, murder was the number one cause of death for ages between 15-24. MURDER IS WINNING OVER DRUG ABUSE, CANCER, DISEASES OR ANY OTHER CAUSE.

I don't care as much about the banking houses as I do about where money is *abused* and wasted. If we were ever to solve these crimes, we could locate which banking houses were funding the plans.

CD: *From listening to your tapes, I detect that you believe that the Bildeberger-CIA-CFR "free world" Establishment ruling class is Anglo-Saxon/White Racist. How do you square this theory with the apparent pro-minority attitude of the Establishment's kept liberals and think tank/foundations? Left-cover? Incitement to backlash? How do so many of Jewish descent become prominent in government and finance if the ruling class is still White Racist? How do you account for the Rothschilds, Warburgs, Schiffs, Kissingers, etc.?*

M.B.: The Bildebergers, CIA, CFR establishment ruling class is basically Anglo-Saxon White Racist. There are a few Jewish showpieces allowed on the fringe for entertainment or media coverage.

Racism in the USA is everywhere, in every prison, police department, and so-called peacemaking organizations.

The Control of Candy Jones by Donald Bain tells how a New York model was taken by the CIA, injected with sodium pentothal, and hypnotized. Candy was then taught to hate Blacks, Jews and Italians. Why? Why were our tax dollars (I keep repeating this because it makes me furious that we are funding these crimes) used to further hatred? How many more Candy Joneses were taught to hate? Candy joined the CIA to deliver messages and ended up with two personalities inside her head.

There is no pro-minority attitude on the part of the Establishment. That is so foolish that I wonder what kind of vacuum you are coming from. Blacks, Mexicans, Jews and Indians are not part of the mainstream of white USA. They are on the lowest fringes.

A few Jews such as the Rothschilds, Warburgs and Schiffs are always the token names for a gentile society. They do not represent assimilation or a symbol of Jewish-Christian solidarity.

Henry Kissinger is a different story. Kissinger was developed by U.S. Army Intelligence following World War II. Kissinger worked in counter-intelligence. Many Christian agents were assuming names of Jews killed in the concentration camps.

How is it possible that Jewish Henry Kissinger became the darling protégé of Rockefeller, Exxon, Standard Oil? Kissinger has been photographed kissing Anwar Sadat in Egypt. Sadat was in league with Hitler's Nazi brotherhood.

Would oil magnates with their anti-Semitic clubs and multi-million dollar investments allow Jewish Kissinger to make deals and sign contracts with oil giants in the Middle-East? Why does the Shah of Iran, a Moslem, work with Kissinger so well?

Kissinger put Nazis into power in Greece, Brazil, Chile—they love him. When Hitler's $400-million in cash went to Argentina, did they know that Kissinger would be heading our State Department and National Security Council? No Jew would be in charge of the Pentagon. The CIA is a racist organization.

All of this is impossible!!! Kissinger's Jewish cover conceals the Rockefeller and Wall Street bankers directing him.

C.D.: *Isn't it possible that all racial-ethnic issues are simply manipulated to keep the ruled class fighting among themselves? It seems incredible to me that men (or women) with the intelligence (if evil intelligence) to conspiratorially rule nations (and maybe even the world) would be so petty-minded as to be racists. What is your reaction?*

M.B.: Racism is taught from an early age. White men and women fear they will lose their jobs, and also lose their possessions in a competitive market with minorities.

There must have been a lot of black anger after slavery, a rage that the white man feared. The way to control this situation was and is by nurturing hatreds, hiring more police, rigging the courts to keep minorities locked up, sending narcotics to the ghetto, exclusion from labor unions and labor market, and many other techniques. You know what they are.

C.D.: *I agree that race prejudice exists to one degree or another at most levels of U.S. society. However, it seems to me that the majority working classes are the most racist because they fear competition for jobs from Blacks and Mexicans. The ruling class, especially the Eastern Wall Street gang that controls the "liberal" CBS/ABC/NBC/New York Times/Washington Post, really seems to take the side of minorities. Is this just fake propaganda to rake in minority votes?*

M.B.: Competition for jobs between Indians, Blacks and Chicanos is caused by a racist power structure in this country that refuses to allow jobs in the first place. Labor Unions exclude minorities. Medical schools and law schools could be increased by the hundreds instead of bickering over a particular student's grades.

IQ tests have been proven to be racist, thereby dropping off otherwise qualified students. By keeping minorities out of the professions, except entertainment and athletics, the white community can keep their residential areas white, their schools white, their churches white, perpetuate the racism. There is no need for fences or ID cards.

Law enforcement and government agencies, such as the FBI, CIA, NSA, DIA, DISC, are predominantly white.

We could write an entire issue of *Conspiracy Digest* about our differences regarding CBS, ABC, NBC, *New York Times* and *Washington Post*.

Where do you ever get the label "liberal" for these people?

How can you possibly say they take the side of minorities? When? Where? How?

I subscribe to these newspapers and want to puke. I have boycotted major network news coverage since I studied political assassinations because of their lies, distortions, half truths, insinuations and massive cover-ups.

The United States press doesn't fake propaganda. They don't even appeal to minorities. To hell with minority votes. These maniacs support military dictatorships and fascism, instituted by the USA since World War II. They treat the CIA and heads of state as if they were some kind of royalty, not the war criminals they really are.

C.D.: *Several right-wing authors have theorized that the main conflict in the world is or was the battle between Wasp and Jewish financiers. Or, more simply, that the history of the 20th Century is primarily the Rockefeller (Standard Oil) vs. Rothschild (Royal Dutch Shell) battle to control governments and resources. Do you think there is anything to these theories? What do you think about the Cowboy-Yankee War, by Carl Oglesby? Your research would seem to support the theory that Nixon was an agent of new wealth, the "Cowboy" capitalist faction (Hughes?), finally done in by the old wealth, "Yankee" capitalist faction (Rockefeller-Rothschild) at Watergate?*

M.B.: The main conflict in the world is not between Wasp and Jewish financiers.

The battle of Cowboy vs. Yankee, Carl Oglesby's theories, are oversimplified. There is no way to mark off geographical boundaries or to separate fighting factions into such categories. What we are experiencing is a series of revolutions taking place at the same time. Some of them are political. Others are cultural and social.

While these changes have been occurring in the 20th century, the old feudal monopolies, economically dependent upon empires, have been grasping for control of sources of power and wealth (listed earlier as sources of profit).

Three good books that describe the origins for our current moral and financial bankruptcy are *The Great Conspiracy* by Michael Sayers and Albert E. Kahn, *Merchants of Death* by H. C. Egglebrecht, and *Weimar Republic, Clandestine Rearmament,* by E. J. Gumbel.

Following World War I, the allied armies were afraid to disarm German militarism, fearing that Bolshevism would spread throughout Europe.

The solution was secret, clandestine armies, the secret SS, a series of over 400 murders that altered the face of Germany.

U.S. Corporations and Wall Street, along with France and England, armed Germany.

World War I mobilized 66,103,164 men. 37,494,186 were killed. Indirect costs were $151 million. Direct costs were $208 billion.

The propaganda myth of the "menace of Bolshevism" put Nazis in power. Adolf Hitler, hypnotized front man for the warfare industries and corporations, was to rid Europe of Bolshevism.

When World War II was over, and the communists were still very much alive, THE SAME CORPORATIONS AND MULTINATIONAL COMPANIES THAT ARMED GERMANY AFTER WWI sent the Nazis and war criminals with their loot, counterfeit or otherwise, to the USA, Middle East, Asia, Africa and South America.

Allen Dulles, Wall Street attorney, made arrangements for the Nazis' exit. He became the first director of the CIA in 1947.

The divisions and decoys we fall into, all the categories of conflict, never follow history or documents day-by-day to understand why we have so many assassinations and cover-ups. Over 600 Nazis were brought to our defense industries, universities and hospitals from 1945-1952 under Project Paperclip.

World War II cost 80 million lives. The cost went up. The rearming for World War III began as early as 1945, when the decision was made to protect doctors and scientists under Hitler to continue their human experimentations and weapons systems research in the United States. The real battle now is whether or not it is too late to stop this country from going fascist. If Arab investors, funded by the Nazis, withdraw their savings from U.S. banks, the country will be instantly bankrupt.

Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen had the solution for conquered USSR territory.

Gehlen was going to turn 50 million Russians into slaves "in accordance with Aryan racial principals, to become sub humans."

Some "forty million Soviet Citizens would be eliminated by natural means, namely famine." This is the same Gehlen that Allen Dulles provided $200,000,000 of *our tax dollars*. Yes! Add it up. Are we getting our money's worth? (See *Reinhard Gehlen, Spy of the Century,* E. H. Cookridge)

It is easier to understand droughts, famines, terrorism, new kinds of diseases, rare cancers, mind control experiments, stock manipulations, labor strikes and other unpleasant "accidents" of nature in the USA after studying the history of Nazism.

C.D.: *How much conflict do you see in the ruling class? Some conspiriologists think it is all fake, a diversion.*

M.B.: The conflict in the ruling class is between those who are elected and appointed to rule, and those who are acting illegally to condition us for the next war or series of wars. We are identical to Germany in 1932. Salvadore Allendé had to put up with strikes and the raging of the Chilean citizens who turned out to be paid by the CIA (over $8 million was spent to disrupt his country).

Nothing is natural today. Billions are going into creating divisions, terror, to make headlines, to spread confusion and fear.

If any officials come along with independence or suggestions, they are killed, blackmailed, ignored, surreptitiously drugged, paid off or bugged. To make change today is to enter into an obstacle course.

The intelligence community and the people doing all this manipulating to enhance power and wealth are moving against the laws of nature. Something must give. Our institutions should be re-examined. Individuals must come forward with enough courage to support investigators like myself, who are armed

with facts and information.

As Emerson said, “That form of government which prevails is the expression of what civilization exists in the population which permits it.”

C.D.: *Many conspiriologists point the finger at David Rockefeller as the most powerful financial conspirator in America and possibly the world. Do you agree? What about Hughes, H.L. Hunt? Others? Is Chase-Manhattan really going broke?*

M.B.: David Rockefeller might be the most powerful financial conspirator in America. Howard Hughes and H. L. Hunt are dead. Daniel Ludwig is hiding.

Rockefeller managed to keep their boy Kissinger running all our foreign policies in every country while their Exxon stayed on top, the ranking corporation for profits. Nice arrangement!! That is power. The Bildebergers select our presidents.

Is Ronald Reagan a member of the Bildeberger and Tri-Laterals?

If Ronald Reagan were to become President because of Carter’s death, would the Rockefellers be still be powerful?

Where would the power be transferred? To the Pentagon and away from Wall Street.

The power is in a silencer, secret weapons. It comes in many forms. This is a battle royal between two kings, the Rockefeller Dynasty and the weapons-warfare, clandestine government the Rockefellers created originally for their own power.

CIA agent John Connally, one of the most powerful men in the world, named as part of the DISC, FBI combine that covered up the JFK assassination, is opening funding offices for Reagan in D.C.

Can the Rockefellers survive? Are they part of a dying era, identical to Kaiser Wilhelm? IS THE AMMUNITION INDUSTRY READY TO TAKE OVER THE USA? That is where the power struggle is taking place.

The Wall Street-based international banks created spies to march in protection of their profits. The armies turned against their masters. They decided they could create their own wealth and power. New York is crumbling. The Pentagon is stronger than ever. Yale, Harvard, Princeton and the top eastern universities haven’t produced a new idea or a constructive change for all their classical education. They have been swallowed by the Pentagon and spy contracts.

The USA looks like a dance of death in every major city.

C.D.: *Unless I am misreading you, you seem to have deep respect for John F. Kennedy. Is there any reason to believe that his idealistic line was for real? Wasn’t he just another glib gangster who lost? Do you agree with Oglesby that he was an agent of the old Wall Street establishment (as was his Nazi-leaning father), and that his assassination was plotted by Southern Rim upstarts?*

M.B.: Yes, I do have a respect for John F. Kennedy.

If you don’t believe his idealistic line was for real, just add up what he was doing when he was killed.

JFK asked his brother, Attorney General Robert Kennedy, to break up organized crime. Nobody high-up in government has tangled the Mafia. J. E. Hoover, the hired hands of FBI and CIA, ran the assassination teams. They have been used since World War II.

JFK was attempting to end the oil-tax depletion rip-offs, to get tax money from oil companies.

JFK instituted the nuclear test ban treaty, often called “the kiss of death,” to oppose the Pentagon.

JFK called off the Invasion of Cuba. He allowed Castro to live, antagonized narcotics and gambling, oil and sugar interests, formerly in Cuba.

JFK asked his brother, Attorney General Robert Kennedy, to break up the CIA, the “hidden government

behind my back." Allen Dulles was fired. Dulles, the attorney for international multinationals, was angry.

JFK planned to withdraw troops from Vietnam after the 1964 elections. Nov. 24, 1963, two days after JFK's burial, the Pentagon escalated the Vietnam war … with no known provocations, after JFK was gone.

There was no chance Kennedy could survive antagonizing the CIA, oil companies, Pentagon, organized crime.

He was not their man.

The assassination of JFK employed people from the Texas-Southwest. *It was not a Southern plot. Upstarts could not* have controlled the northern CIA, FBI, Kennedy family connections. This was a more detailed, sophisticated conspiracy that was to set the pattern for future murders to take place.

The murder was funded by Permindex, with headquarters in Montreal and Switzerland. Their stated purpose was to encourage trade between nations in the Western world. Their actual purpose was fourfold:

1) To fund and direct assassinations of European, Mid-East and world leaders considered threats to the western world, and to Petroleum Interests of their backers.

2) Provide couriers, agents for transporting and depositing funds through Swiss Banks for Vegas, Miami and the international gambling syndicate.

3) Coordinate the espionage activities of White Russian Solidarists and Division V of the FBI, headed by William Sullivan.

4) Build, acquire and operate hotels and gambling casinos. See: *Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal*, by William Torbitt.

CHAPTER TEN

WHY WAS PATRICIA HEARST KIDNAPPED?

(*Originally published in* The Realist, *July 1974)*

CONTENTS

I. Why Was Patricia Hearst Kidnapped?

II. Cast of Characters

III. Chronology of Events

IV. Why Was the SLA Created – the Motives?

V. The Tell-Tale Revolutionaries: Conspicuous Banditos or Provocateurs?

VI. Tactical Support – Where Did It Come From?

VII. How Dangerous Was the SLA?

VIII. Why the Charges Against Patty?

IX. The Death Trap – How Do You Tell a CIA Espionage Plot from a Revolutionary, Radical, Terrorist Guerrilla Army?

1. Cover Story

2. Coincidence?

3. Dummy Fronts

4. Use of Media and Propaganda

5. CIA Collusion

6. FBI Collusion

7. Tom Charles Huston Plan, Combined Military, Justice Department, CIA, FBI, Police Departments, Department of Corrections, Stanford Research Institute, President Richard Nixon, Vice-President Gerald Ford

XI. Indications the SLA Was Part of a Larger National Conspiracy

XII. Was This Plan Necessary?

"You only need to have a tape recorder to set up a revolutionary movement today."
—FBI Director Charles Bates, San Francisco

There are three Symbionese Liberation Armies.
This article is about SLA-BC …

SLA-BC (Before Cremation)
A small band of people brought together in the San Francisco Bay Area, California through various manipulations: military intelligence infiltrated radical groups, specifically the prison's Black Guerrilla Family, Vietnam Veterans Against the War, United Farm Workers, Chino Defense Fund, Venceremos and the Women's Movement. These targets of the FBI and police were to be associated with the importation of persons from out of state. Some local women were brought into the group to lend it authenticity.

SLA-AC (After Cremation)
Radicals or concerned citizens who responded with sympathy and horror at the public cremation of six SLA members by the military SWAT team. Continuous government murders—the Orangeburg massacre, Jackson State, Kent State, Attica and San Quentin, police murders of Black Panthers, Black Muslims and hundreds of others—necessarily provoke a genuine response. Silence in the face of these acts escalates genocide. Public disapproval escalates police armies.

SLA-CIA
More "liberation armies" surface, fictitious messages, forged documents, infiltrators and spies. Legitimate reform groups will continue to be discredited by acts of violence committed in their names. Peaceful rallies will be destroyed by intelligence agents. The organized disruption of the anti-war movement and rock concerts that took place during the '60s will escalate. The kidnappings and bombings will be blamed on the SLA, or "dedicated to the memory of the six slain SLA members." These planned acts of violence will include chemical warfare.

I. WHY WAS PATRICIA HEARST KIDNAPPED?

The kidnapping of Patricia Campbell Hearst was as vital to the creation of the Symbionese Liberation Army as the murder of Austrian Archduke Franz Ferdinand was to the beginning of World War I. Both the kidnapping and the murder were excuses to declare war. The ensuing battles were carefully prepared and anticipated by the merchants of death.

The goal of the SLA—World War III—is to plunge the Third World masses into starvation and slavery. The CIA has accomplished this in 77 countries. The Third World inside the United States is the next selected victim.

The SLA was nurtured inside the American prison system. This will provide the excuse to isolate prisons from future visitors, creating private Dachaus and another Auschwitz.

The SLA was created to spread terror and fear across the country.

There will be a forced response upon existing radicals. Domestic chaos will escalate. Carefully synchronized with the Hearst kidnapping in Berkeley were a series of provocateur kidnappings. Fictitious "armies" surfaced. As far away as England, well-dressed and well-financed Ian Ball pretended to kidnap Princess Anne to "feed the poor." After his brief moment in history, Ball was taken away to a mental hospital.

An admitted kidnapping hoax involved Jean Paul Litt, son of a Belgian diplomat, in Florence, Italy.

The timing of international with national kidnappings could easily be planned to instill fear of an epidemic of abductions across continents.

In the meantime, and not by coincidence, only the poor suffer the kidnappings and shootings.

America's first political kidnapping was necessary to justify the creation of laws and police SWAT teams. They can later be used against guerrilla or terrorist activities.

Increased repression, genocide, starvation, widespread unemployment, inadequate health care and housing must necessarily provoke anger. Washington is preparing its defenses, punishments and armies in the streets.

A series of staged exploits by the SLA created fear, suspicion and mistrust of genuine avenues of political change. Radical movements can be discredited and associated with kidnapping, terror, murder, bank robbery and violence.

Under the guise of "reforms," the door is now open for increased infiltration and disruption of progressive movements.

The Watergate affair provides only a small glimpse of how the White House, Pentagon, CIA, FBI, local police departments and intelligence agencies rig elections, manipulate candidates and violate the rights of citizens. Wiretapping, smear campaigns, illegal entry, forgery, interception and opening of mail, provocation, planned kidnaps, blackmail, leaks, poisoning and assassination are acceptable tactics to the "team members."

The Justice Department, attorney generals, government prosecutors and investigators are used to protect these domestic espionage operations and cover up the serious crimes committed.

Intelligence agents don't only work against us at election time. They work every year, in every city, to help the power structure maintain control. They work against leftists, radicals and ordinary citizens assembling to inquire how their freedoms are being taken away.

Government-funded studies are conducted at Rand and other think tanks on how to manipulate the population for maximum effectiveness and profit. The armies put these plans into action.

The agencies that control our elections, and indeed the selection of candidates, by bullets and smear tactics also control domestic productivity and investments. Starvation and unemployment will inevitably lead to violent objections, so provisions must be made to handle the mob. That is what the SLA was about.

Members of radical groups in the Bay Area were taunted and baited to join the revolution to determine how many were ready for the next stage and would accept violence. All of these groups turned the SLA down, suspecting that they were police provocateurs.

The "People In Need" Program (the Hearst food giveaway plan) and the SLA communiqués identified radical or leftist organizations. Their strength and numbers were added up. Leaders were identified.

Public sensitivities were tested by well-placed cameras, which invited us to witness the SLA cremation in Los Angeles. How will we respond the next time troops are deployed to control the people? What did you think of the first military operation inside the U.S., based upon the feeble creation of the mythical SLA., and our "first political kidnapping"?

The 1960's saw the systematic murder of politicians, civil rights leaders, minority spokesmen, educators, Black Panthers, prisoners and many other concerned citizens.

In the 1970's, large masses of the population, now leaderless, can be controlled and exterminated. We have allowed this situation to develop by not exposing each conspiracy as it came along, pretending the facts and evidence would disappear.

Dr. Marcus Foster, Oakland School Superintendent, was murdered by the same kind of people, and for the same reasons, as Martin Luther King.

Patricia Hearst was kidnapped by the same kind of people, and for the same reasons, as Martha

Mitchell.

Our lives are manipulated by specific individuals who can be identified and exposed. Conspiracy theories only remain "theories" when there is no court, no lawyer, no judge, no Congress with the courage to expose the evidence. In every case in which evidence is pursued, the "theory" becomes a clear-cut case of criminal conspiracy.

It took ten years for Emile Zola to reveal that Captain Alfred Dreyfus did not betray the French Army.

"Wherever and whenever dissension about social harmony, political expediency and national defense obscures the rights of minorities, the corruption of institutions and the aberrations of patriotism, there is a Dreyfus Affair."

—David L. Lewis, Prisoners of Honor

America has hundreds of Dreyfus Affairs going. Latest on the list was the creation of the SLA.

Congress gives the CIA and other intelligence agencies all the money they desire. No questions are asked about how much they receive, much less how it is used. CIA Director William Colby wants to tighten secrecy—with the threat of a $10,000 fine and ten years in jail—for any Paul Reveres shouting in the dark to wake us up.

Until the present time, the CIA was carefully inconspicuous on the domestic scene. Creation of the SLA provides an excuse for the CIA and special police forces resembling the German Gestapo to step forth publicly and assume control of all law enforcement agencies.

The covert operations and psychological warfare techniques that were used to form the SLA were perfected in Britain and Germany during World War II. After the war, our OSS was converted to the CIA by English and German spymasters.

Right-wing groups such as the American Nazi Party, the Ku Klux Klan, the Minutemen and National States Rights Party are used as fronts for CIA and FBI operations. The military-intelligence teams give approval, funding, tactical support and protection from arrest.

Mass education, political organization and the attempt to solve economic and social problems are perceived as threats to the status quo. Recommendations for constructive alternatives to unemployment, sickness, hunger and poverty are answered by chaos, violence and racism. It is because the solutions to many problems exist today that armies and propaganda machines must step lip their domestic warfare. Police, prison guards, and intelligence agents flex their muscles and take aim at their victims.

Motive for Creation of the SLA

This elaborate conspiracy had fifteen goals, and a careful observer can see them implemented in current news stories.

1. Inflame national fear of terrorist organizations and future kidnappings, accompanied by increased bombings.
2. Link U.S. terrorists to international guerrilla groups.
3. Discredit communes.
4. Escalate domestic fear of Mao Tse Tung, brainwashing and indoctrination.
5. Create the apparent justification for UCLA's Institute to Study the Causes and Prevention of Violence, now temporarily shelved and suspect.
6. Discredit the poor and test food distribution programs.
7. Isolate prisoners from genuine reform organizations.
8. Escalate domestic race war between blacks and whites.
9. Discredit radical and/or leftist organizations, particularly the Black Guerrilla Family, Los Venceremos, United Farm Workers, women's movement groups and Vietnam Veterans Against the War.
10. Increase public and private police forces and security agents.
11. Turn the population into informers.
12. Prompt new legislation against future kidnappings.
13. Link demons and the Devil to communists, radicals, leftists and other "deviants" from the official Government line, virtuous right-thinking Christianity.

14. Discredit the FBI; make the military, international police and CIA appear necessary to control terrorism in the U.S.
15. Set up conditions for martial law, prevent free election choices in 1976 and escalate fear to keep power in the hands of the military and intelligence agencies.

What was Patricia Hearst's state of mind during these various manipulations? None of us was there, so we can only speculate. Did she undergo a change to think and feel with the "radicals" when she was their captive? The rank-and-file of the SLA consisted predominantly of CIA agents and police informants. For this reason, Patty could be cleverly controlled to give the appearance that she had joined them of her own free will.

Sophisticated radicals of the Bay Area rejected the SLA, but Patty Hearst had no choice; she was their captive.

Each day we were invited to witness the purposeful manipulation of an individual who had been captured, and subsequently altered drastically over a four-month period of time. Patty lived with fear, was taught terror, became hunted and oppressed, was given a new name, a new family and new "loves."

Was Patty Hearst brainwashed?

What did Vacaville Medical Facility promise Donald DeFreeze in exchange for the use of his head? What favor did he do for them?

Why was CIA agent Colston Westbrook—educated in psychological warfare and the training of assassination and terrorist cadres—chosen to select and train the group that became the SLA?

Joseph Remiro and Nancy Ling Perry, critical to the SLA for military tactics and cover story rhetoric, were dependent on drugs. Both were political conservatives with a "kill-a-commie-for-Christ" background. Their transition into "radicals" could have been assisted by the same chemical and psychological controls our intelligence agencies are using and experimenting with daily.

Bill and Emily Harris, and Angela Atwood, worked together as a "mod squad" narc team for the Indiana State Police. What brought them all scurrying to the Bay Area in the summer of 1972?

Russell Little and Robyn Steiner, college chums from the University of Florida, drove out together from Florida to Oakland in the summer of '72. Though neither had shown previous interest in blacks or prisoners, both immediately began working with Colston Westbrook and Donald DeFreeze at Vacaville Medical Facility.

Camilla Hall and Patricia Soltysik were at least authentic residents of the Berkeley community. What controls were used to draw them into the SLA and ultimately to their deaths in Log Angeles?

Donald DeFreeze and Patty Hearst are not the only ones who were brainwashed.

The same mass media that told us Lee Harvey Oswald killed John F. Kennedy—and that James Earl Ray killed Martin Luther King, Sirhan Sirhan killed Robert F. Kennedy, Arthur Bremer was the lone gunman when George Wallace was shot, and Ted Kennedy was responsible for the death of Mary Jo Kopechne—brainwash this society every single day. The creation of the SLA is only one more propaganda lie. We can't discuss Patty's brainwashing without looking at our own.

Our sensitivities and emotions were tested over the same period of time as Patty Hearst's and Donald DeFreeze's. Patty was taken to a building near the death trap on 54th Street to witness six of her close associates and intimates for the last four months shot and burned to death. We watched the event in living color over Friday's TV Dinner.

All of us took part.

The only ones to gain from the maneuvers of the SLA were the military and police agencies. They have already spent between $5 and $10 million "pursuing" the SLA. Ten thousand young adults were stopped, searched or arrested within a three-week period. SWAT police teams are now located in every major city. Police helicopter contracts are escalating. Computerized police information systems will increase. And the CIA will openly take over local police departments, no longer hide behind public relations doors.

The creation of the fictitious Symbionese Liberation Army was a cruel hoax perpetrated on the

American public.

Years of planning went into this operation. It may have started taking shape after the Chicago convention in 1968, when protestors were moving into the streets, displeased with Washington's policies. The intelligence community was determined that large riots such as those in Watts and Detroit would never happen again. The next stage of "political protest" will be planned terrorist activities.

To speed things along, police and the military have distributed weaponry selectively, knowing that dissidents will be outnumbered, outgunned and handled with brutality. America will become like Vietnam, a battleground of burnings, killings and provocations. Military provocateurs will be used to control blacks, Chicanos, Indians and radicals.

The public cremation in Los Angeles on May 17, 1974 was not the end of the SLA. It was only Stage One. Vietnam arrived in California.

The families of the deceased SLA members wish they understood what the SLA was about, aside from the empty rhetoric. The SLA's printed analysis of fascism in America was accurate enough, but their actions did not point the way to constructive programs for altering society. The SLA provocateurs simply illustrated how easy it is to be wiped out once the issues are declared. Police have made it perfectly clear what can happen to you if you don't like what you are getting.

A 15-member team of psychiatrists, criminologists and suicide specialists has assembled to piece together what they call "psychological autopsies" to answer "puzzling question" remaining after the SLA members "chose to die."

Nancy Ling Perry was gunned down after she fled from the flaming house. What does that tell the so-called experts? Why wasn't a psychological profile of the police who did not allow her to surrender prepared?

The "psychological autopsies" of the SLA are a CIA technique for culling irrelevant facts from a person's life. They will dangle these facts before us as "motives" for violence, but the analysis will make no reference to how the victims were led and tricked into dying.

Donald DeFreeze may have had fantasies of becoming a great black leader. The systematic assassination of black leaders left a genuine void. The same agencies that murdered George Jackson, Malcolm X, Fred Hampton, Martin Luther King, Che Guevara and Jonathan Jackson were not about to provide Field Marshal General Cinque with his own personal army, without having some purpose of their own. Was Cinque's vision of freeing society's slaves born at Vacaville Medical Facility, known and dreaded for experimentation on the human mind?

DeFreeze didn't outsmart the law enforcement agencies from the time of his "escape," as the SLA communiqué would have us believe. These agencies permitted him his freedom only until the time came when they wanted him dead.

The street was choked with Los Angeles police agents and DeFreeze was an escaped convict, wanted for murder, kidnapping, bank robbery and assault. He never managed to persuade a single black person to join the SLA. The only support given to the SLA by blacks came from police agents, informers and collaborators who conspired to lure him to his death trap.

The man was mechanized and robotized by the CIA and other agencies. He was a pathetic example of the way our society uses black males in its sadistic, imperialistic greed. Legitimate dreams are perverted by the military intelligence system. One black male surrounded by whites, and all of them led step-by-step to their deaths, was presented as a serious army, a threat to all. And the nation responded like a hypnotized, robotized zombie, like Camilla Hall, Donald DeFreeze or Patricia Hearst, drawn slowly, step by programmed step, toward destruction.

Are there really such vicious and immoral people making long-range plans and conspiring against us? Of course there are. And the more carefully they plan, the more difficult it is to detect and unravel the master plan.

Politica was a game plan devised by Abt Associates in Cambridge, Massachusetts. The Pentagon and CIA wanted a course of action against developing Third World countries, including Chile. Politica was funded by the Defense Department's Advanced Research Projects Agency (ARPA). The aim was to devise methods for anticipating social groups and personality characteristics that might emerge in response to given military actions. Politica became a reality when Salvadore Allendé was murdered, and Chile delivered into the hands of ITT and other investors.

The Phoenix Program was applied to Vietnam the way Politica was used in Chile. CIA Director William Colby was in charge of the Phoenix Program. It included a continuous policy of political assassinations, rigged elections, political imprisonment in American-made tiger cages, torture and slanted misinformation spread by uncontrollable CIA agents. Colby promised at his Senate confirmation hearings in July, 1973 that he would curb the CIA's activities at home and abroad. Instead, he has imported the Phoenix Program to the United States.

The SLA script was to America what Politica was to Chile, or the Phoenix Program to Vietnam. Methods of political control through manipulation and terror have been perfected. Our response to America's "first political kidnapping" will determine how well these machinations succeed.

II. Cast of Characters

The California Connections

Donald DeFreeze, Camilla Hall, Nancy Ling Perry, Patricia Soltysik, Joseph Remiro.

Importations—Migratory Birds

Angela Atwood, Gary Atwood, Emily Harris, William Harris, Russell Little, Robyn Steiner, William Wolfe.

Patsies

Donald DeFreeze, Patricia Hearst.

Victims

Dr. Marcus Foster, Donald DeFreeze, William Wolfe, Camilla Hall, Angela Atwood, Nancy Ling Perry, Patricia Soltysik.

Military Agents, Intelligence Agents and Police

Wes Davis, Dr. Frederick Hacker, William Harris, Ron Karenga, Ludlow Kramer, Joseph Remiro, Chris Thompson, Colston Westbrook, Attorney General Evelle Younger, six migratory birds from the East.

Allowed to Vanish

Peter Benenson, Jean Chan, JoAnn Little DeVito and Joseph DeVito, Amanda De Normanville, Dave Gunnell, Bernard Keaton, Tom Mathews, Mary Alice Siem, There Wheeler, three unnamed black agents of the LAPD.

Angela Atwood, alias Deborah Key Crus, General Gelina, Angela DeAngelis

Graduate, University of Indiana.

Trained by CIA think tank, College of Foreign Affairs, University of Indiana, Bloomington.

Worked in a "mod squad," setting up narcotics arrests for the Indiana State Police Intelligence Division.

Angela's father a Teamsters' Union Official, in New Jersey.

Never discussed with best friend how she met Gary, her husband, or why she married him. "Nobody could get near him."

Moved to Oakland, California with husband Gary Atwood, Emily and William Harris, summer, 1972.

Upon arriving in Oakland, Angela immediately volunteered to work for the United Farm Workers and Los Venceremos, both highly infiltrated by the Federal Government at the time.

Visited Vacaville Medical Facility and prisoners in the Black Cultural Association (BCA).

Described as warm, sensitive, wanted to be an actress.

Not politically sophisticated upon arrival in California.

Employed as a waitress at Great Electric Underground at the Bank of America Building, San Francisco.

A close friend feared Gary might kill Angela. He had beaten her.

Gary and Angela maintained separate sets of friends. Their husband-wife relationship was similar to that of known espionage agents.

Gary moved back to Indiana in the summer of 1973. In the fall, Angela severed other friendships, proclaiming, "I am into my own trip now," and moved in with Emily and William Harris.

November 7, 1973, one day before arrest of Remiro and Little, Angela Atwood bought a .380 caliber automatic Mauser pistol and registered it in her name. Gary Atwood's library card was found at the Sutherland Court address after Remiro and Little were arrested.

Surfaced as "General Gelina" after the Hearst kidnapping.

Found dead in the house on 54th Street in Los Angeles 24 hours after the five other bodies were discovered.

Gary Atwood

Married to Angela Atwood, who trained with Emily and Bill Harris, set up narcotics arrests for the Indiana State Police.

Moved to West Coast in the summer of 1972 with Angela, William and Emily Harris.

Occupation in Bay Area not explained. Taught in Chinatown for awhile.

Political involvement "all talk," described as "indoor entertainment, like an intellectual exercise." Threatened to "blow off the head" of a friend who didn't join his revolution. Spoke of Nietzsche, Superman, revolution, Palestinian guerrillas. No evidence of political activism. Not identified with prison or radical groups.

Mean disposition. Angela told a friend, "Nobody could get next to him. He didn't like to be touched."

Summer, 1973: Gary went back to Indiana and library school.

Angela's body remained unclaimed for three days after her death. Friends called Gary, and he signed the release for her burial in New Jersey.

Peter Benenson

Mathematician at Lawrence Laboratory, Berkeley, a sensitive government agency.

He was tied up in the floor of his car while five persons kidnapped Patricia Hearst. He heard the shoot-out as they exited the apartment.

Benenson's car was used to drive to a waiting white station wagon, and he was left tied up inside the car.

He released himself and walked one mile to his sister's home, where he spent the night. The FBI and police were not notified for 24 hours about the use of his car for the kidnapping.

He later refused to testify, claiming that he "didn't see faces" when he was tied up.

A letter to the *Berkeley Barb*, February 22, 1974, stated: "The manipulators are brother and sister both by blood and in mind. The male is a mathematician with the U.C. Radiation Lab. His was the car 'commandeered in the kidnapping.'"

The SLA had in their possession books that might have belonged to Benenson: *Chemical and Biological Warfare; The Science of Public Death*, and *The Genetic Effects of Radioactivity*.

Jean Chan

Asian girlfriend of David Gunnell, owner of "Peking House" where SLA members lived.

Visited Vacaville Medical Facility, tutored in Black Culture.

No information on her background or training that would qualify her to tutor in the prison system.

Sold Chinese food from a stand on Bancroft Way with Gunnell.

Police stopped a 1965 station wagon in connection with Dr. Marcus Foster's murder, and questioned an Asian woman. Firearms were found in the vehicle. This was three weeks before Patty Hearst was kidnapped. If Jean Chan was the woman questioned then, she was never identified.

Wes Davis

Freelance photographer for Empire News Service (a CIA front) in Vietnam and Asia.

Surfaced after the Hearst kidnapping an expert on Maoist brainwashing.

His sanctimonious speeches ignore the billion-dollar investment in American prisons and hospitals that funds research on behavior modification techniques, including psychosurgery, chemosurgery, use of mind-altering drugs, electric shock and electrode implants. The Vacaville Medical Facility where SLA was nurtured is notorious for such experimentation.

Davis heads an organization called World Humanity Against Totalitarianism. This group assisted in setting up speaking engagements for Reverend Sun Myung Moon, defender of Richard Nixon against impeachment.

Reverend Moon is an agent of General Parks' South Korean Intelligence, KCIA. Genuine Christians in South Korea are suspicious of him.

Donald DeFreeze, alias Donald David DeFreeze, Don Cinque DeFreeze, David Thomas, David Kennedy Robinson, Donald John DeFreeze, Donald DeFrez, John DeFriele, Steven Robinson, Gin, Cinque, General Field Marshal Cin, SLA

Born in Cleveland, Ohio, the oldest of eight children; beaten by father, forced to leave home at age 14.

Lived with Reverend W. Foster in Buffalo, N.Y., became deeply religious.

Arrested for robbing a parking meter, later for stealing a car and a weapon.

Spent two years in a reformatory, surrounded by "hell," loneliness, fear, hatred.

Tried to keep out of fights and avoid homosexual advances.

Married Glory Thomas, 23, mother of three children. [Dawn Defreeze Cabot, Donald Defreeze's daughter, is today a born-again Christian who gives speeches on the Northeast Ohio church circuit. - ed.] They had three more children. Marriage filled with rejection, disappointment. Tried to work and support Glory, but differences drove him to California. Began drinking, taking drugs, collecting weapons.

Arrested on nine separate occasions. Charges involved possession of bombs and explosives, knifes, sawed-off shotguns—robbery, assault, possession of 200 firearms, grand larceny, kidnapping and escaping arrest.

From 1967 to 1969, worked as an informant for the Los Angeles Police Department under Detective R. G. Farwell, Public Disorder Intelligence Division (PDID). At the time, the LAPD was supplying weapons to black agents and hiring them to kill Black Panthers. DeFreeze worked with police agent provocateur Ron Karenga, head of the US Organization. Later, other members of Karenga's group were at Vacaville Medical Facility with DeFreeze. US used the seven-headed cobra later adopted by the SLA for its symbol. Nothing in DeFreeze's background indicated a political consciousness while he worked as a police intelligence informer.

In December 1967, DeFreeze led police to an apartment where a cache of 200 stolen weapons was found. On November 11, 1969, DeFreeze exchanged gunshots with a bank guard and wounded him—with a .32 caliber Beretta automatic pistol, one of the 200 stolen guns that the police had apparently allowed him to keep.

In 1968, Glory DeFreeze wrote to authorities, following an arrest of her husband, reminding them that they had promised him protection from arrest while he worked for them.

In 1969, DeFreeze subpoenaed District Attorney Evelle Younger to testify on his behalf. Younger has always maintained close contact with LAPD's Criminal Conspiracy Section (CCS).

In 1969, DeFreeze maintained a house a few blocks from the Los Angeles Airport, close to his death trap. He was in the business of pimping for black judges and airport officials. DeFreeze drove around in a city truck during the day, giving the impression to one of his women that he was employed by the city.

Late in 1969, DeFreeze's religious conscience began to bother him. Detective Farwell found that he was no longer useful to the LAPD and "cut him loose." In December, 1969, DeFreeze was sent to Chino for "psychiatric testing." From there, he was sent to Vacaville Medical Facility for a term of 6-14 years. He was to undergo a drastic and ultimately fatal personality change.

Dr. Frederick Hacker, an "expert on terrorism," was assigned to Donald DeFreeze for "psychiatric evaluation." He later became a consultant to Randolph Hearst after Patty was kidnapped.

In 1970, DeFreeze wrote Judge William L. Ritzi to say that he wanted to tell everything. "I want to let you know what really happened and why. I am going to talk to you truthfully like I am talking to God. I will tell you things no one has ever known before." Judge Ritzi wasn't interested.

In 1970, Colston Westbrook, trained in the psychological warfare unit of the CIA, became the CIA control officer for DeFreeze and the group that was to become the SLA. Westbrook headed an experimental behavior modification unit, the Black Cultural Association (BCA), at Vacaville.

DeFreeze assumed a militant anti-white cover while meeting with white agents who were brought into the prison system.

While in prison, DeFreeze worked as a double agent for Westbrook, the CIA, the California Department of Corrections and Bureau of Criminal Intelligence and Investigation.

He was responsible to Attorney General Evelle Younger.

Westbrook, supervising DeFreeze for two years, bragged about how he brought beautiful women into the groups: “They accused me of taking sexy-looking black women wearing high miniskirts into the prison. Sure, I took some foxes, some of my prime stock in there. Because if you want to dangle a carrot in front of the inmates to get them to learn and come to meetings, you don’t dangle communism. You dangle fine-looking chicks. The SLA women say I tortured the inmates by taking in chicks they couldn’t do anything to. That’s why those lesbians were mad at me.”

Vacaville Medical Facility was not a political science institute. Colston Westbrook was not instructing inmates in “communism” for the CIA and the Department of Corrections. For what purpose did Westbrook bait DeFreeze with his carrot-stick technique and his “prime stock?”

In November, 1972, DeFreeze met Thero Wheeler, inmate.

A month later, DeFreeze was transferred to Soledad Prison. He was placed in South Facility, a holding section for informers and trusted inmates. One prisoner described DeFreeze’s departure from Soledad:

> While Donald DeFreeze was here, I had a few conversations with him. I have always questioned his departure as being a simple walk-away. I didn’t come into contact with him personally until his last couple of weeks here. There weren’t many who would associate with him. He tried to give the impression of being super-cool, and he came across as cold. When I met him, he was working in the maintenance shop. I asked him if he was happy on his job, because if not, I might be able to find him something else.
>
> He replied that within a few days, he was going to be assigned to work in the boiler room at the South Facility. I questioned that, because he didn’t have enough time here to be given that trust. I know cons that have been turned down for that position. He wouldn’t comment; he only gave me a big smile. I should explain that no prisoners were kept at the South Facility at that time, because it had no security.
>
> No gun towers were in operation, and there were no guards posted. A few prisoners with proven records of trust were taken from Central Facility to South Facility to perform certain duties; then they would be returned to Central after their shift. A few days later, DeFreeze did get that job. Midnight to 8 a.m. shift, in the boiler room, South Facility. On his first night, he was dropped off at midnight, and given a few instructions. His job was automatic; it only required an overseer. He was left to himself, and when an officer returned an hour later to check on him, he was gone.

A few months after leaving Vacaville, DeFreeze was given a special privilege at Soledad prison. He was allowed to use the marital trailers for visits with women, a privilege normally reserved for married men.

Did Westbrook provide women for DeFreeze even though he was not meeting him with prison visits?

Donald DeFreeze walked out of Soledad prison in March, 1973. His transportation to the Bay area was allegedly arranged by Deputy Superintendent James Nelson. Another former employee from Soledad, currently owner of a liquor store in Sacramento, assisted in the departure, later classified as an “escape.” His name will be turned over to a grand jury when there is a proper investigation of the case.

In the Spring of 1973, Bernard Keaton, a double for Donald DeFreeze, visited the Foster family in Buffalo, New York. He passed himself off as DeFreeze, who had lived with the family 15 years ago, and he knew intimate details of their life.

In August, 1973, Thero Wheeler walked away from Vacaville Medical Facility.

From August to October, 1973, DeFreeze and Wheeler met “at least twenty times” with the SLA in Oakland.

DeFreeze made his public appearance as General Field Marshal Cinque of the SLA following the kidnapping of Patricia Hearst.

In March, 1974, DeFreeze publicly named Colston Westbrook, Chris Thompson and Robyn Steiner as

CIA and FBI informants.

On May 4, 1974, Donald Freed, writer, and Lake Headley, independent investigator, held a press conference in San Francisco. They presented 400 pages of documentation on DeFreeze's arrest records, the work of Colston Westbrook with CCS and CII (Criminal Identification and Investigation), and evidence of links of the CIA to metropolitan police departments.

On May 17, 1974, the *New York Times* carried the story of DeFreeze and the Los Angeles Police Department. That day, he was cremated by the Los Angeles Police Department.

The LAPD did not notify DeFreeze's family of his death for three days. His remains were sent to Cleveland, Ohio with the head and the fingers missing.

Billions of dollars are spent confining, arresting, judging, punishing, altering and experimenting upon men like DeFreeze. If the same attention and money were spent on understanding and helping them, events like the SLA saga would never happen.

Amanda De Normanville

Former student at Berkeley School of Criminology. Said to have housed Donald DeFreeze after he left Soledad prison.

Again: DeFreeze was allowed special visits with women in marital trailers while in prison, a privilege only allowed to married men. Amanda visited DeFreeze in prison and was reported to have been romantically involved with him.

Prisons keep detailed records of visitors, but the police never went to Amanda's house in the Bay Area to search for DeFreeze after his "escape."

JoAnn DeVito, and Ex-Husband Joseph DeVito

JoAnn was Russell Little's sister. She was interested in prisons and Donald DeFreeze.

The SLA house in Concord was rented by Mr. and Mrs. J. DeVoto, aliases for Russell Little and Nancy Ling Perry.

Joseph DeVito was questioned by FBI agents in Isla Vista, California on March 26, 1974. Held for interstate flight from prosecution of a prior crime in Florida. The nature of the crime was not stated.

Dr. Marcus Foster, Supt. Oakland Unified School District

Fatally wounded on November 6, 1973. Robert Blackburn, deputy superintendent, was also critically wounded.

Both men had moved from Philadelphia together in 1970.

Oakland put police in the schools as part of the federal government's push to solve social problems with "law and order" government. This and other measures became the excuse for Foster's murder.

Willie Wolfe, who had no children, attended Oakland School Board meetings and told prisoners in Vacaville that "something had to be done to prevent Foster from implementing student identification programs." Colston Westbrook and other prison visitors aroused the anger of black inmates against Foster.

Two weeks before the killing, the American Nazi Party handed out leaflets in nearby San Leandro predicting the murder of a "Mixmaster school superintendent" and his white friend.

Foster was shot with cyanide bullets and didn't stand a chance. Blackburn, the white man, was shot with ordinary bullets and lived. The quantity of cyanide in the bullets was not as important as the selective methods of kill vs. survival.

Foster's death was a blow to the black community, where he was needed and well liked.

The SLA surfaced immediately after the murder to take "credit" for the assassination in the name of the "Symbionese Liberation Army, Western Regional Youth Unit."

Two "black" people were seen leaving the scene of the Foster murder. When Remiro and Little were indicted for the crime, black make-up was found in their house. This make-up can be worn by whites emulating blacks.

How many other whites in blackface are killing and kidnapping?

Blaming "blacks" for white murders is consistent with a fascistic escalation of terror to speed up genocide.

Dave Gunnell

In his late thirties, older than the other SLA members. Lived with Jean Chan in the house on Chabot Road, Berkeley, called "Peking House," an SLA meeting place—played up by CIA agent Wes Davis as "proof" that Mao was behind the SLA.

Gunnell sold Chinese food from a stand on Bancroft Way, adjacent to the U.C. Berkeley campus, next to Fruity Rudy's stand, where Nancy Ling Perry worked. Gunnell claimed he did not know Nancy. He was a jazz musician, like Nancy's husband and Rudolph "Fruity Rudy" Henderson.

Chris Thompson, ID'd as a CIA agent by DeFreeze, was a frequent visitor at Peking House, also a source of contact with Nancy Ling Perry, Camilla Hall and Patricia Soltysik.

Willie Wolfe, Russell Little and Robyn Steiner lived at Peking House. The FBI and police would have been well aware of the SLA members before Patty Hearst was kidnapped if the place was indeed a haven for radicals, if the SLA was visiting California prisons and if Maoist doctrine was taught at the house.

Yet in spite of the SLA's attempted infiltration of every radical group in the area, their weekend target practice at gun clubs and the assortment of guns registered in their names, the residents of Peking House were quite inconspicuous as far as the police were concerned.

Gunnell was "not into politics."

Camilla Hall, alias "Gabi"

Daughter of Lutheran Minister, Reverend D.G. Hall.

Graduate of University of Minnesota; excelled in English and art.

Social worker for three years before moving to California.

Shared apartment with Patricia Soltysik, wrote poetry for her, named her "Mizmoon."

Authentic Berkeley artist: sensitive, gentle, into ecology and the women's movement, not radical politics. Drawn into SLA with Patricia Soltysik to lend authenticity to the cover story that SLA was a group of

Berkeley hippie-radicals.

Travelled to Spain in 1972. What other countries?

Worked as a groundkeeper for the regional parks. Fired in Fall, 1973.

Disappeared in December, 1973, a month after SLA claimed credit for murder of Dr. Foster.

Blue VW, similar to Camilla's, seen scouting Steven Weed's apartment before Patty's kidnapping.

Jan. 2, 1974: purchased .380-caliber automatic Mauser pistol and registered it under her name.

Feb. 4, 1974: Patricia Hearst kidnapped.

Feb. 14, 1974: Camilla moved out of her apartment, taking only her pet cat.

Photographed at Hibernia Bank robbery in San Francisco as a gun-toting radical terrorist. This act was inconsistent with Camilla's hatred of war and violence.

Christine Johnson, the last person to see Camilla Hall alive, said she was holding two bottles in her hands, with "something white around the bottles. She was walking around, looked like a zombie or something, halfway smiling."

Emily Harris, alias Anna Lindenberg, Yolanda

From the Illinois suburbs, daughter of a wealthy consulting engineer. B.A., University of Indiana, language arts.

Training: CIA think tank, College of Foreign Affairs, University of Indiana, Bloomington.

Worked with William Harris and Angela Atwood in "mod squad," setting up narcotics arrests for the Intelligence Division, Indiana State Police.

When the Harris apartment was vacated, among the names left in an address book was Tim Casey, from Orange County. Emily and Tim dated during the summers of 1967 and '68 while she was working in California at Disneyland Hotel. Were there any links between two clients of J. Walter Thompson Advertising Agency—Disneyland Hotel and the San Francisco Police Department?

Was Emily in touch with espionage agents from Orange County?

Described as "cold, intelligent, the strength of the family, had leadership ability."

Moved to Oakland in late 1972 with the Atwoods.

Employed as clerk-typist, Survey Research Center, a "polling office" at University of California.

Not in politics in Indiana, never involved in radical movements.

On moving to California, immediately joined Chino Defense Committee, an offshoot of Marxist-Leninist Venceremos organization. Worked to aid members accused of a prison break, wrote letters on their behalf. Visited prison inmates Doc Holiday and Barren Broadnax, who had long been targets of the prison system, and Attorney General Evelle Younger. She travelled several hundred miles from Oakland to San Luis Obispo each week to make these prison visits. At the time, the Black Guerrilla Family and the Chino Defense Fund were filled with infiltrators and agents provocateurs.

Emily's last prison visit was January 10, 1974, the day Remiro and Little were arrested.

It is not clear why the Harrises left Bloomington. They had "toyed" with politics and posed in the school annual with Bill jokingly holding a book entitled *About Communism*, but they were not into radical politics.

The cover story that "underemployment radicalized middle-class America" has no basis in fact. Underemployment is consistent with clandestine assignments.

Through her work, Emily Harris allegedly had access to Patty Hearst's school schedule. Denials merely indicate that investigation should proceed on this matter. Remember the Watergate denials?

The Harris' apartment in Oakland was modern, well-furnished, with a color TV, waterbed, imported kitchenware and fine china. They read the straight press: *Time*, the *Oakland Tribune*.

A Maoist poster and a picture of a starving child hung over their dining table. Donald Segretti, White House spy, had a "Free Huey Newton" poster over his desk, and wore a peace emblem and long hair for espionage cover. William and Emily Harris were verbally and visually "radical."

Emily owned a gun registered in her name, and practiced shooting twice a week at Chabot Gun Club in Oakland.

Emily's father, Mr. Schwartz, said on TV that in her last letter, she explained a change in her life-style, saying she had been "pretending for some time." Her other life—the straight life, with material possessions, non-radical experiences, formal education and employment at the UCB polling office—might indicate that the SLA experience did not reflect her true self. Suddenly abandoning her husband for a "black lover," and disappearing with Randolph Hearst's daughter might have been her next assignment.

William Harris, alias Rip Kimberley, Richard Frank Dennis, Jonathan Mark Salamone, Teko

B.A., University of Indiana, studied Speech and English. Enlisted in U.S. Marines, served at the supply depot at DaNang. Joseph Remiro and Colston Westbrook were in Vietnam at the same time.

Returned to Indiana. Joined fraternity, competed in golf and cross-country running.

Member of "mod squad" with Emily and Angela Atwood. Set up narcotics arrests for the intelligence division, Indiana State Police. Studied at College of Foreign Affairs, University of Indiana.

Taught at Bloomington Junior High School before coming to California.

Received a Master's Degree in "Urban Education" at Indiana. CIA agent Colston Westbrook, leader of the group that became the SLA, taught "Black Lexicon" at the Department of Urban Affairs, UC Berkeley.

Not a campus radical, but he kept posters of Black Panthers Huey Newton and Bobby Seale in a trailer in Indiana following his return from Vietnam. Later, the SLA headquarters had a map of Huey Newton's apartment, and his name was listed as a possible death target.

In California, worked as truck driver for the post office. Postal helmet discovered November 10, 1973, following the arrest of Remiro and Little, at Sutherland Courthouse in Concord. Harris could have been identified by police at that time, before the Hearst kidnapping.

November, 1973: Purchased 9mm Mauser pistol, registered in his own name. Joined Chabot Gun Club, in Oakland, and practiced twice a week. Associated with but not active in Vietnam Veterans Against the War, a heavily infiltrated organization.

Rented the SLA safe house in December, 1973 that would be filled with propaganda materials, used later by Attorney General William Saxbe for future political terrorism and repression.

Driver's license from Rhode Island. Never explained when or why Harris was in Rhode Island.

Mayor Alioto claimed Emily and William Harris intended to kidnap his grandchildren. Considering the Harrises' provocateur role, and Alioto's campaign for Governor, it is possible that they obliged him by making themselves conspicuous in his neighborhood without being arrested by police.

Caused an altercation at Mel's Sporting Goods Store, Inglewood, that would be the signal for the pre-arranged murder of six SLA members. Set Patty up at the "shooting scene." Purposely introduced and identified "Tania" to Tom Matthews during an unnecessary 12-hour captivity, supervised her so-called "confession" to Matthews, framing her so that 22 charges would be brought against her.

Harris' military I.D. was found in the death house on 54th Street in Los Angeles. It was not explained why a radical revolutionary terrorist was still using his military I.D.

Set Patty Hearst up so that she could witness the massacre of the other SLA members.

June 7, 1974: Released another "SLA Communiqué," hardly the rhetoric of George Jackson, Malcolm X, Chairman Mao or Martin Luther King. The man with a B.A. in English and a Master's Degree produced a provocative, foul-mouthed public display that can only harm legitimate protest.

Harris is probably currently hiding at a CIA safe house, preparing for his next outrageous action.

While the Harrises acted as provocateurs and set Patty Hearst up, they themselves are not wanted for anything.

"The Harrises are less militant than their six SLA comrades…. So far, the Harrises were not overtly involved in any of these incidents…." So says Charles Bates, Chief of FBI, San Francisco.

"I feel that Bill and Emily Harris have lost touch with the masses. They have become isolated. The SLA is not an organized group that plans its actions as far as I can see. My political friends and comrades think the SLA has a superfly mentality. They lined their pockets with the bank robbery money and accomplished nothing but spreading of fear."—Bill Brennan, former roommate of Joseph Remiro

Were Emily or William Harris ever in touch with the masses? Or was their role as police agents to do exactly as they were told?

Black leader of the US Organization. In December, 1967, Detective Sergeant R. Farwell recruited Donald DeFreeze to work for the LAPD Criminal Conspiracy Section's political intelligence unit. Its purpose was to monitor black political activities in California.

Karenga schemed with DeFreeze and the LAPD in a "fuck-fuck unit," running guns to various black militant groups, hoping to set off a gang war between the Black Panthers and the US Organization.

US member Melvin Cotton Smith helped set up Black Panther busts for the police. The Steiner brothers, working with Karenga and the LAPD, killed Panther leaders John Huggins and Alpretnice "Bunchy" Carter at UCLA.

Members of Karenga's group were at Vacaville with DeFreeze.

In April, 1974, the Steiner brothers were allowed to walk away from San Quentin, just as Thero Wheeler walked away from Vacaville and DeFreeze walked out of Soledad a year earlier.

The Steiner brothers seem to have disappeared without a trace. Where are they now? Did they play any role in setting up comrade-informer DeFreeze back home in Los Angeles?

Bernard Keaton

Double for Donald DeFreeze. Surfaced in Spring, 1973, after DeFreeze walked away from Soledad.

Claimed to be Donald DeFreeze, moved in with Reverend W. Foster and family in Buffalo, New York. Familiar with intimate details of the family history that only DeFreeze would have known about.

The FBI stated that they were not concerned or curious about DeFreeze's double, because it "isn't

illegal."

The only reason for having a double would be that in case DeFreeze had been accidentally picked up by law enforcement officers in the Bay area during the time between his "departure" from Soledad and the kidnapping of Patricia Hearst, his double could have taken his place in prison. Three long years went into training DeFreeze for his mission at Vacaville Medical Facility. It couldn't be thrown away.

Secretary of State, Washington State. Director of P.I.N. (People In Need), the Hearst food give-away rip-off.

Hired by Randolph Hearst to distribute $2,000,000 worth of food to the poor.

Previous experience handing out food during NASA and military job lay-offs in Washington. Quality of that food was good, and provoked violence was not a part of this previous assignment.

P.I.N. food program was a disaster. It was a catalytic provocateur action to hasten Patty's conversion to the SLA.

Meat was bought for Hearst's program from "the nation's major meat packer," at triple the normal cost - it contained up to 75% fat. Some of the food was contaminated.

Governor Ronald Reagan hoped the people who took the food would get botulism.

His mission accomplished, Kramer returned to Washington in time to run for Congress on the Republican ticket—with substantial financial backing.

Kramer pushed for "vote by voice print" by 1984—identification of every adult by voice and social security number.

During this time, March, 1974, Congress passed a bill to pay $10 million to five chicken growers from the South. Their chicken feed was poisoned, somehow, with Dieldrin, a cancer-inducing insecticide. Nobody knows how it got into the chicken feed. Millions of poisoned chickens had already been delivered to poor school lunch programs in Chicago and Detroit.

Question: Did any of those poisoned chickens make their way into the P.I.N. food distribution program?

Russell Little, alias George DeVoto, Robert James Scalise, Osceola

Father a mechanic at Naval Air Station, Pensacola, Florida.

Little also stated that his father was a retired labor relations specialist.

Graduated from University of Florida, Gainesville, 1967.

Allegedly took a course on Revolution, where he was introduced to communist writers, such as Marx, Lenin, Mao, Cleaver and Malcolm X.

Studied engineering, electronics.

Questioned by police in Philadelphia when Dr. Marcus Foster was leading an anti-drug campaign in that city. Why was Little there? Was Dr. Foster marked earlier for identification and death?

Traveled in U.S., locations not identified, before arriving in Oakland.

Summer of 1972: Made contact with Willie Wolfe through Peking House in Berkeley, started to visit California prisons, joined BCA at Vacaville with Donald DeFreeze.

No previous radical experiences with prisoners or blacks.

It is strange how migratory birds like Little, Steiner, the Atwoods and the Harrises entered immediately

into California prison "reform" groups—their "reforms" would set prison movements back a hundred years.

Little joined Westbrook, DeFreeze and SLA members in a small prison group, "Unisight," with a Maoist cover. All took African names.

Little brought controversial discussions and hatred of Dr. Foster into the prisons.

Visited Death Row Jefferson, supposedly "founder" of BCA.

Taught at Peralta Junior College, Oakland.

Bought a .380 caliber Brazilian-made Rossi revolver from Chris Thompson. This kind of weapon could be used with cyanide bullets.

October 8, 1973: Rented a house on Sutherland Court, alias George DeVoto, with Nancy Ling Perry. It became an SLA "Liberated Zone."

November 6, 1973: Dr. Marcus Foster murdered, allegedly by two black men. Little and Remiro arrested for this crime, possessed black make-up and the murder weapons.

January 19, 1974: Little and Joseph Remiro taken to San Quentin, charged with the murder of Foster, resisting arrest and assaulting a policeman.

While in San Quentin, Little apparently read an interview with me in the *Berkeley Barb* on April 19, 1974, titled "Is SLA's Cinque the First Black Lee Harvey Oswald?" Little was furious at my suggestion that the SLA was a CIA operation. He wrote a letter, stating in part, "That dizzy bitch can kiss my ass! That pompous bitch has a nerve to call Jonathan Jackson a 'patsy.' I hope she drops dead tomorrow."

Louis Tackwood, in *Glass House Tapes*, describes in detail how the LAPD knew in advance of the George Jackson "escape" plans and the Marin County Courthouse shootout. Jonathan Jackson was double-crossed and abandoned without a promised backup. He was murdered by members of the LAPD. Risking his life to tell the truth, Tackwood is the real freedom fighter. Little and Remiro are the mouthpieces that Congressmen will quote to "prove" that a violent revolution is taking place.

Anyone involved in radical politics is aware that most if not all radical groups are heavily infiltrated by espionage agents and provocateurs. What angered Little was exposure of the methods and contacts that created the SLA.

Nancy Ling Perry, alias Nancy DeVoto, Fahizah, Lynn Sedworth

Family background: Political conservative, well-off, Goldwater supporter.

Attended Santa Rosa High School; cheerleader, Sunday school teacher.

B.A., Whittier College. Graduate work, UC Berkeley, specializing in chemistry.

Married for six years to black jazz musician Gilbert Perry. They met when he worked for the State Employment office. Described as a "love-hate affair."

Topless blackjack dealer in San Francisco, underwent a period of heavy use of psychedelic drugs and amphetamines.

Her politics always "vague." Remained apart from groups in Berkeley; maintained her older friends from high school. She seemed to like the appearance of having no past at all. People who knew her sensed a curious intellectual loneliness. Into dope and she knew where to find it.

No indication as to where or when radical political indoctrination took place. Trained in behavior

modification.

Sold juice at Fruity Rudy's stand on Bancroft Way near U.C. Berkeley campus.

Dated Chris Thompson, the link between "Peking House" and Nancy, Camilla Hall and Patricia Soltysik.

Began visiting prisoners. Her cover story was "an interest in prison reform." She and Emily Harris appear to have been given special privileges—they were permitted to visit more than one prisoner at a time. Were SLA members given special treatment?

Nancy wrote "Death to the Pigs" inside Fruity Rudy's stand, the same slogan written on the walls of Sharon Tate's home to lead police to think that blacks committed the murders.

Nancy paid $553 in cash to rent the house at 1560 Sutherland Court in Concord, under the alias "Nancy DeVoto." The house was used as an SLA hideout and filled with ammunition, weapons and literature.

On January 10, 1974, the day Remiro and Little were arrested for the murder of Dr. Foster, Nancy set fire to the bungalow. She did a remarkably poor job of destroying the evidence, but an excellent job of calling attention to the house and its contents.

There was no personal oppression, no experience in the past that would explain participation in the murder of Foster, or acceptance of a fiery martyrdom in Los Angeles. She was apparently shot by police while trying to escape from the house.

Joseph Remiro, alias George DeVoto, "B," Charles Robert Peterson

Remiro, in San Quentin, didn't cry when he heard that six SLA members had been cremated. He went on playing gin rummy. "Joe was a political heavy."

Devout Catholic family, raised in San Francisco, trained as a "stone reactionary."

Member of 101st Airborne Division. Volunteered twice for duty in Vietnam. Signed up to "kill a commie for Christ." Participated willingly in numerous search and destroy missions, said they were like Calley's massacre at My Lai.

Declared himself to be a pacifist when he came home. This would be inconsistent with his alleged murder of Dr. Foster, and the subsequent death warrants issued by the SLA.

By January, 1969, Remiro allegedly started to take quantities of drugs. He claimed he "couldn't get outside my house without being completely drugged out of my head." Remiro and Perry, both dependent upon drugs, could be manipulated by CIA agents to form the nucleus of the SLA. Perry was the theoretical "brains" behind the organization. Remiro provided military and tactical support. Chemistry, weapons and radical rhetoric were all they needed to start their "army."

Carlos Marighella's *Minimanual of the Urban Guerrilla* was to the SLA cover story what Marx's *Das Kapital* was to *The Warren Report* and Lee Harvey Oswald. (The myth that Marx influenced Oswald was pure fabrication, a "cover story.")

Remiro was a "mechanic," divorced with one child.

July 19, 1973: Purchased a .380 caliber Walther automatic, found in his possession when he was arrested on November 10, 1973.

October, 1973: Went underground with Little and Willie Wolfe. Rented 7th Street apartment in Oakland with Emily and William Harris for Foster ambush.

A racist, wanted Vietnam Veterans Against the War and Winter Soldier Organization to take the position

that U.S. minorities should each have their own territory.

Helped race war along by owning black make-up. Did he put on blackface to escalate violence in the Oakland-Berkeley area?

Devised plans to kill Black Panther leaders Huey Newton and Bobby Seale.

Remiro and Little were placed in San Quentin without trial immediately after indictments for the murder of Dr. Foster were handed down. They were given maximum media coverage to mouth radical violence.

Lee Harvey Oswald's public radio broadcast in New Orleans, with Ed Butler of Army intelligence, was to create a cover for U.S. agents operating behind a Communist front.

Colston Westbrook, William Harris and Joseph Remiro supplied the SLA's intelligence and military tactics.

"I believe the SLA actions have had and are having such an inhibiting effect on political works in the Bay Area that I feel the time to speak out has come."
– Bill Brennan, former roommate of Joseph Remiro

Mary Alice Siem

Twenty-four years old, mother of a small child, friend of Thero Wheeler.

Frequent visitor to Wheeler at Vacaville Medical Facility.

August, 1973: Wheeler "escaped" from Vacaville and lived with Mary Alice in the Bay area.

August-October, 1973: Mary Alice and Thero made at least 20 visits to DeFreeze and the SLA in Oakland.

DeFreeze wanted to kill both of them but was "discouraged."

Mary Alice gave $600 to DeFreeze and the SLA, claimed she'd been "robbed." Difficult to visualize prison escapee Wheeler and Mary Alice carrying $600 in cash to a meeting in Oakland with the SLA. Possible source of funding for DeFreeze before the kidnapping?

Visitors to prisons are carefully identified, yet police didn't seek or locate Wheeler at Mary's home in the Bay areas or hold her for harboring an escapee.

Born in Goleta, Santa Barbara County, daughter of a pharmacist.

Outstanding student, came to Berkeley in 1968, attended U.C. Berkeley. Worked as a part-time janitor at the Berkeley Public Library.

Involved in radical politics, women's movement, gay liberation.

Seen frequently with Chris Thompson, the connecting link between Camilla Hall, Patricia Soltysik, Nancy Perry, Chabot House and the out-of-state imports. These three women lent authenticity to the Berkeley image of the SLA.

Mizmoon and Camilla were sensitive poets, artists and sometime lesbians.

Mizmoon participated in the BCA at Vacaville Medical Facility. She worked with Donald DeFreeze. After DeFreeze walked out of Soledad, he lived with Mizmoon.

Mizmoon had access to the Berkeley library, where Cinque found source material for SLA rhetoric. SLA tapes and written messages sound more like E. Howard Hunt than George Jackson or "Cinque," the historical slave leader.

July 27, 1973: Purchased .12 gauge sawed-off Mosberg shotgun under the name Mizmoon Monique

Erlich.

Changed housing from September to December, 1973. Missing during time Dr. Foster was murdered.

Identification and library books checked out in her name found at SLA house on Sutherland Court, January 10, 1974, three weeks before Hearst kidnapping.

Vanished from the apartment by January, 1974.

Photographed in Hibernia Bank Robbery, San Francisco.

Cremated in Los Angeles, May 17, 1974.

Robyn Steiner

1970: Met Russell Little at the University of Florida.

No political awareness, interest in blacks or prisoners. Not an activist.

Drove to California with Little in July, 1972.

Steiner and Little moved into the "Peking House" commune, where Little met William Wolfe and would join Westbrook and DeFreeze at the Vacaville Medical Facility.

Entered the prison as a tutor to blacks; previous training nonexistent.

Worked at Lucky's Market, Oakland.

Broke up with Little, left California, returned to Florida in December, 1973 and went back to school.

Named by DeFreeze as an FBI informer.

Protected from questioning by U.S. Attorney and the grand jury. San Francisco police interviewed her in Florida. Lives in constant fear, "doesn't know who her friends are," so the tables are turned.

Chris Thompson

ID'd by DeFreeze as a CIA agent. Black, not a political radical or activist, described as a "curious man." Moved freely in and out of "Peking House."

"Dated" Nancy Ling Perry, Patricia Soltysik and Camilla Hall. Served as the connection between the three Berkeley females and the seven who moved west and infiltrated radical groups (Wolfe, Angela and Gary Atwood, Emily and William Harris, Robyn Steiner and Russell Little).

March, 1973: Sold a .38 caliber Rossi to Russell Little—bullets fired from this pistol allegedly killed Dr. Foster.

Drove to Vacaville Medical Facility with a member of BCA, but didn't attend meetings.

January, 1974: Rented an apartment on 2069 Hillegass Street, Berkeley, half a block from Steven Weed's and Patricia Hearst's apartment at 2602 Benvenue Avenue. His apartment opened on a small alleyway. You can walk through the alleyway and be on Benvenue, directly across the street from the apartment.

Occupation: Sold soul food from a stand on Bancroft Way, Berkeley, near the food stands where Dave Gunnell and Nancy Ling Perry worked.

After the Foster murder and Hearst kidnapping, Chris was "around now but missing."

He appeared as a secret and protected grand jury witness. (Typically, in trials of radical groups someone in the know remains under protection, while the others get roasted.)

Not wanted by police or FBI, allowed to “vanish,” or possibly to testify against the deceased.

Thompson offered to prove he was not CIA by submitting the facts to a jury that would include Ron Dellums, Bobby Seale, Angela Davis and Mrs. Foster. If he waits another year, they might take him up on the offer.

Steven Weed

Graduate of Princeton University, home in Santa Rosa, California. Taught school where Patricia Hearst was a student.

Patty and Steven were living together in Berkeley when she was kidnapped.

Black Abductor, a novel published in 1972, described the plans for the Hearst kidnapping, including the “boyfriend who is beaten unconscious.” Its publication date indicates how far in advance the plans were made.

Weed’s role in the kidnapping can only be clarified by a proper investigation of the author and publisher of this book. His behavior since the kidnapping indicates the need to delve further.

Colston Westbrook, alias Big Daddy, Yajiuma

1962: CIA advisor to the South Korean Central Intelligence Agency. Cover: U.S. Army, U.S. Air Force linguistics training.

1962: Enrolled at Inter-Christian University, Tokyo. Special training in latest psychological warfare techniques.

1962-1966: Worked illegally under cover of AID, the Agency for International Development. Handled undercover assignments in Cambodia, Thailand, India, Japan, Hong Kong, Philippines, Okinawa and Soviet Union.

Claimed to have personal line of communication with the Premier of Cambodia.

William Harris’ passport indicates a visit to USSR. Was he there at the same time as Westbrook? Willie Wolfe was in Europe for nine months. Was it at the same time, same places?

Feb. 5, 1966, to Sept. 10, 1969: Westbrook listed his employment, “Administrator, Pacific Architects and Engineers,” a CIA cover.

Provided logistical support for CIA’s Phoenix Program. His job was the indoctrination of assassination and terrorist cadres.

William Harris, Marine volunteer, was stationed in Vietnam. Joseph Remiro served two voluntary tours in Vietnam. Did Remiro and Harris know Westbrook in Asia?

1969: Plans for the Black Cultural Association were formed.

1970: Donald DeFreeze sent by LAPD to Vacaville Medical Facility. Colston Westbrook, home after seven years in Asia with the CIA, was assigned to visit Vacaville Medical Facility two times a week.

Westbrook ran the BCA classes and decided who would be in the program.

The “cultural” meetings between DeFreeze and his white tutors were infiltrated, under the cover of teaching black male identity. The tri-colored flag of New Africa was paraded on stage, celebrated with music and black power salutes. Everyone in attendance adopted an African name. DeFreeze became

“Cinque.”

Westbrook brought women and pornography to induce prisoners to attend meetings.

The Black Cultural Association was the nucleus of the SLA after two black prisoners, DeFreeze and Wheeler, were allowed to “escape” and join the group in Oakland-Berkeley.

The BCA was a behavior modification and psychological experimentation unit. Illegal funding and direction for the BCA came from the CIA, via the Stanford Research Institute (SRI).

The cover story was “development of black pride.”

Black prisoners were prepared and primed to murder black leaders on the outside. (Dr. Marcus Foster, Huey Newton, Bobby Seale and Richard Foster were on the SLA “hit list.”)

Westbrook’s CIA spymaster can be linked to another counter-insurgency expert, William Herrman, an advisor to Governor Ronald Reagan. Herrman was in contact with both SRI, the Hoover Center on Violence and the Rand Corporation in his development for Reagan of a plan to win the hearts and minds of the people of California. This was the proposed UCLA Center for the Study and Prevention of Violence, a front for massive psychosurgical and psychological experimentation on radicals, Third World people, women, children and prisoners.

SRI and CIA R&D programs experimented with drugs such as Librium, administered illegally to certain BCA members.

Westbrook’s assignment in the BCA behavior modification unit was to recruit future agents for CIA domestic programs. The “zombie” killings and the Zebra murders in San Francisco were linked to prison control and training, employing drugs and other forms of mind control.

Donald DeFreeze identified Westbrook as a CIA agent, one who had betrayed him.

Westbrook must now live in fear for his life. David Ferrie, Lee Harvey Oswald, Jack Ruby and nearly 100 others who served as government agents in past political intelligence operations have been murdered.

They were killed by their own team, not by the “enemy.”

Thero Wheeler

Described as a “hell of a mind, close to genius.”

Brother Bill with San Francisco police force.

“Did not relate ideologically with Donald DeFreeze,” a polite way of saying that his association with DeFreeze was to entrap him, perhaps.

Allegedly interested in Venceremos. Actually, only mailed them one letter.

November, 1972: Met with DeFreeze in Vacaville Medical Facility for one month.

December, 1972: DeFreeze sent to Soledad from Vacaville. He “escaped” in March, 1973.

August, 1973: Wheeler “escaped” from Vacaville.

Stayed with Mary Alice Siem, a frequent visitor to Wheeler while he was in Vacaville, in the Bay Area. He was never sought there.

August-October, 1973: Met with DeFreeze and SLA members in Oakland at least 20 times. Provided the SLA with $600.

DeFreeze wanted to kill Wheeler and Mary, indicating his probable mistrust of them as provocateurs or

agents.

Description of Wheeler fits that of the second black man, who with DeFreeze kidnapped Patricia Hearst.

After cremation of six SLA members in Los Angeles on May 17, 1974, the FBI and police claimed that only William Harris, Emily Harris and Patricia Hearst were still being sought. The SLA thus was reduced.

Why did the police forget about the man who helped kidnap Patty and assault Steven Weed?

Was Wheeler one of the black men who lured DeFreeze to his death trap—and in exchange, will not be sought or prosecuted?

William Wolfe, alias Charles William Morgan, Cujo

Born in Pennsylvania, son of Dr. L.S. Wolfe, anesthesiologist.

Hobbies, interests not described.

Studies, education unclear.

Travelled for nine months in Europe before arriving in Berkeley, "not yet decided on his goals."

The only Berkeley class mentioned was a course in "Black Lexicon," under Professor Colston Westbrook, who would later bring William to Vacaville Medical Facility.

Westbrook described himself on San Francisco radio station KGO as the product of an all-white Pennsylvania town. He knew few blacks. Wolfe had no experience with prisoners or radical movements. This team taught "black identity" to a prison study group. They created the pathetic "Field Marshal General Cinque of the SLA."

Wolfe lived at Peking House, the common meeting ground from which "prison reformers" would spread into Vacaville Medical Facility, San Quentin, Folsom, Soledad and San Luis Obispo prisons.

Wolfe brought Russell Little and Robyn Steiner into the prison group.

Wolfe, though childless, attended Oakland School Board meetings, and brought arguments against Dr. Marcus Foster into BCA prison discussions at Vacaville. The prisoners were remote from Oakland's school problems. The incitement of black prisoners against Dr. Marcus Foster was consistent with police policies. Ultimately, it was two whites in blackface who allegedly shot Dr. Foster.

Wolfe was last seen in Pennsylvania visiting his father in January, 1974, when Remiro and Little were arrested for the Foster murder. Wolfe then went underground, "disappeared."

Burned alive on 54th Street in Los Angeles, May 17, 1974. Not charged with a crime.

III. Chronology of Events

1945 – Importation of British and Nazi Intelligence into the United States After World War II

William Stephenson, head of British Intelligence, combined with U.S. and Nazi intelligence to form covert operations and psychological warfare units against the free world. Their purpose was to control labor, energy, oil and minerals. Capitalism was transformed into a disguised imperialism conducted by subversion.

The CIA was formed to infiltrate and overthrow legitimate governments. It is now taking over the United States. The SLA is domestic internal warfare. World headquarters for American-Nazi operations

were set up at the Tryall Club, Montego Bay, Jamaica.

The anti-humanist events taking place in America against youth, experimentation on the brain, robot armies of humans without choices and segregated tiger cage prisons must be blamed upon the courting of Nazi doctors and technicians.

1965 – Cambridge, Mass., Politica, Camelot

Defense Department plans were drawn to use against Third World countries. They were applied to Chile. U.S. think tanks produce the mentalities and methods to manipulate mass populations through terror and chaos.

1962-Present Time – The Phoenix Program

Directed by the CIA's William Colby. Control of the Vietnamese population through terrorism, murder, imprisonment, torture, rigged elections and falsified statistics. Fear of communism from North Vietnam caused our soldiers to commit illegal and immoral acts, believing the end justified the means. The same rationalizations are taking place in the U.S.

May 1, 1968 – COINTELPRO, FBI "Covert Intelligence on the New Left"

Clandestine intelligence operation designed to incite antagonism between and among the anti-war and black movements, and fear in the minds of the populace. The program was designed to threaten and undermine activities of any organization that fell into the category of the New Left: All black student unions and similar organizations mustered to project the demands of black students. Full-scale surveillance and intelligence of the anti-war movement, women's liberation, anything with the name "Black." Denounce, leak fabrications to the press, warn of violence, link to communists, scare away the committed, reduce memberships.

June, 1968 – Los Angeles Police Department, Criminal Conspiracy Section

Formed after SUS, Special Unit Senator, the team that concealed Robert Kennedy's assassin and swept the conspiracy under the rug.

Secret funding from the CIA, connected directly to White House intelligence and Huston (emergency preparedness) Plan.

Detective R. Farwell, Commander in Public Disorder Intelligence Division, assigned to monitor black political activity in California.

Donald DeFreeze worked from this office as a police informant, 1967-1969. Black agents infiltrated the prisons and Black Panther Party.

Ron Karenga, an agent who worked with provocateur Louis Tackwood and Donald DeFreeze, used the SLA seven-headed cobra insignia at the US Organization.

Evelle Younger, former L.A. district attorney when CCS was formed, moved on to the position of attorney general. Younger is an Air Force Major General in counter-intelligence and an agent of the FBI.

1962-1969 – Colston Westbrook, Vietnam and Service Abroad

Westbrook served in Asia with the CIA's Phoenix Program.

While he was away, President John Kennedy, Senator Robert Kennedy and Reverend Martin Luther King were assassinated.

The FBI had targeted all left, radical and black movements to be broken apart.

When Westbrook returned to America, the military and intelligence agencies were to escalate the war at home.

Important to that domestic war were closed prisons, with radical prisoners killed or locked up forever.

July 23, 1970, "The Huston Plan" – Army, Navy and Air Force in League with Intelligence Agencies and Local Police Departments

The "Huston Plan" was approved by President Nixon.

Senator Sam Ervin stated in May, 1974 that it is still operating.

This document gave permission for widespread political surveillance by burglary, wiretapping, eavesdropping, mail covers and spying inside the U.S. by the CIA.

The methods were employed against all dissenters, political opponents, news reporters and selected government employees.

Congress continues to give full support to these operations by appointing known war criminals to head our agencies and to finance their operations without controls.

1970 – California Prisons

War against political prisoners began overtly on January 14, 1970, at Soledad Prison. Black leaders William Nolan, Cleveland Edwards and Alvin Miller were murdered by a guard. Continued killings of prisoners and guards have escalated since that date.

Segregation, racism, torture, provocations, threats and fear are rampant in the prisons. This is state policy. Gang wars are encouraged and narcotics distributed to pit groups against each other, hoping they never get out alive.

Eldridge Cleaver, well-known Black Panther leader and writer, fled to Algeria from California.

The orders throughout the prison system were: "No more Cleavers."

Westbrook came home after seven years in Asia with the CIA to lecture twice weekly inside the politically-explosive California prison system.

Late 1969-1970 – Black Culture Association, Vacaville Medical Facility

The meeting place of Westbrook and DeFreeze.

BCA was an extension of psychological experimentation projects connected to Stanford Research Institute, Menlo Park, and the CIA in Langley, Virginia. The Symbionese Liberation Army was incubated here.

If the SLA was not meant to happen, DeFreeze, his teacher and their constant associates would have been identified when Wheeler and DeFreeze left their prisons.

1970 – Donald DeFreeze Confesses to Judge Ritzi: Wants to Come Clean

DeFreeze wrote to Superior Court Judge W. Ritzi: "I will tell what really happened and why. I will tell you things that no one has ever known before." Judge Ritzi turned down DeFreeze's appeal to confess his crimes and his work for the LAPD. DeFreeze was packed off immediately to Chino Prison, then to Vacaville Medical Center for 6-14 years. This is when his personality change began. He would meet Colston Westbrook, director of the new BCA.

1970 – Joseph Remiro in California

Remiro returns to California after two tours in Vietnam.

1970-1972 – Colston Westbrook, CIA and Donald DeFreeze, LAPD, Meet

Westbrook taught two days a week at BCA, Vacaville. He also controlled all visitors to the group. Future SLA members began to meet with DeFreeze. Their "Maoist" revolutionary discussions included designing their own flag, adopting African names, hostile discussions against black leader Dr. Marcus Foster. Many of the "tutors" were police informants.

1971 – Summer Meetings of White House Agent Donald Segretti, FBI, Minutemen and Secret Army Organization in San Diego

Donald Segretti, funded by secret intelligence money, met with paramilitary right-wing organizations. They planned kidnappings of radicals during the Republican conventions in 1972. Members of the SAO had been shooting, burning and attempting murder, using federal "anti-poverty" money. The Minutemen have publicly anticipated a race war in the U.S. They are well-armed and infiltrated by police and law enforcement agents.

1971 – Camilla Hall in California

Moves to Bay Area from St. Paul, Minnesota.

1971 – William Wolfe in California

Moves from Pennsylvania to the Bay Area.

1971-1972 – John Mitchell, John Erlichman, G. Gordon Liddy and the American Nazi Party

The history of the SLA has roots in the American Nazi Party. Secret White House money was sent down the line to Lyn Nofziger in California and Joseph Tommassi, Nazi Storm Trooper. Additional funds for California Nazis were promised at known meetings in the Hilton Hotel, L.A., and the Mayflower Hotel, Washington, D.C.

Robert Mardian, Assistant AG in charge of Internal Security, maintained lists of radicals to be kidnapped in Florida when the Republican convention was moved there from San Diego. Open interest (Liddy and Mardian) in German Nazis indicates that more than election results of the Wallace campaign were the topic these secret meetings and fundings.

The Nazi Party was involved in the murder of Dr. Foster and Bay Area violence, with the approval of the Justice Department and military intelligence.

1970-1974 – California's explosive years of prison violence, conspiracies, entrapments, genocide, segregation and terrorism

The California Department of Corrections instituted a reign of terror in collaboration with Attorney General Evelle Younger, simultaneous with the murder of leaders on the outside and genocidal policies becoming law.

1972 – Migration to California; this group to change the prisons?

Robyn Steiner, Russell Little, Emily Harris, William Harris, Angela Atwood and Gary Atwood would make frequent visits to Vacaville Medical Facility, the men's colony at San Luis Obispo, San Quentin, Folsom.

The Department of Corrections has letters written by members of the SLA on behalf of Donald DeFreeze. The DoC wanted his early parole from Soledad.

They immediately infiltrated the Black Guerrilla Family, Vietnam Veterans Against the War, Chino Defense Fund, United Farm Workers, women's organizations and Los Venceremos.

November, 1972 – Thero Wheeler and DeFreeze together for one month

Thero Wheeler, the silent mystery man, met DeFreeze in Vacaville. In December, 1972, DeFreeze was moved from Vacaville to Soledad Prison.

March, 1973 – The Great Escape: Donald DeFreeze

DeFreeze, assisted by Soledad Prison superintendents, working for the Attorney General's office, walked away. A change of clothing and transportation were waiting for him. One officer who assisted in DeFreeze's escape still works at Soledad. The other now works in Sacramento.

August, 1973 – The Great Escape: Thero Wheeler

Wheeler walked out of Vacaville.

August-October, 1973 – Nobody looks for Wheeler and DeFreeze

Two black escapees from California prisons, both "associated" with radical groups, Venceremos and Maoists, were not sought by the law. Wheeler and DeFreeze met at least 20 times during this three-month period. Both were living with women they met through prison visits, so they were easily traceable … if anyone had been searching for them.

Summer, 1973 – DeFreeze's "double," Bernard Keaton

A second DeFreeze was trained and prepared to stand in for "Cinque." In case the psychologically well-programmed DeFreeze was accidentally picked up in Oakland or Berkeley, Keaton could go to prison for him. Doubles are used in every major conspiracy. It is a standard CIA operating procedure. James Earl Ray and Lee Harvey Oswald each had a double. The FBI loses track of them deliberately.

August 21, 1973 – SLA Declaration of War

Enter American domestic intelligence warfare.

The SLA "Declaration of War," dated August 21, 1973, was not openly distributed until November 7, 1973, the day after the murder of Dr. Marcus Foster.

August 26, 1973 – The Cobra Appears

An Egyptian cobra, "long, mean, ill-tempered, very deadly," was released in Chicago. This symbolic gesture was picked up immediately by the KKK, American Nazi Party and the White Aryan Knights. A signal?

"We hope the cobra has nationalistic tendencies and bites a few kikes. The cobras have niggers beat all to hell so far as danger is concerned. All power to the cobra."

September 1973-February 1974: Race War Launched in the Bay Area

Ex-cons, some armed by police, have been trained and allowed to conduct planned "vengeance killings." White men wearing blackface commit murder; black patsies are encouraged to escalate killings and terrorism. A series of murders in the San Francisco area, termed "Operation Zebra" by police, occurred immediately prior to the Hearst kidnapping on February 4, 1974.

Mayor Alioto linked them feebly to the SLA.

October 2, 1973 – Race War Escalation

Two policemen died in a helicopter crash in Oakland. *Somebody* wanted blacks blamed for it. The unknown "August 7th Guerrilla Movement" claimed credit for the deaths. Both the coroner and the National Transportation Safety Board stated the deaths were caused by "engine failure." August 7th Guerrilla Movement literature was found at SLA headquarters. Blackface make-up (for whites) was also found.

The message claiming "credit" for the policemen's deaths also referred to the "San Quentin Six." Prior to every major political trial in California, provocateurs create violence to associate the defendants with terror on the streets. The trial of the San Quentin Six was almost ready for jury selection. They have been continuous targets of California "law enforcement" authorities. The indictments were later dropped.

October 8, 1973 – The Race War Continues

Murphy Anderson, a black man, and Faith Trumpour, a white woman, were found murdered gangland style by the side of a highway in Monterey County. A week after their bodies were discovered, the usual pattern of planted evidence occurred. A message from the "August 7th Guerrilla Movement" was delivered, claiming "credit" for these killings. The message once more mentioned the "San Quentin Six." This is a convenient way of murdering two people and arousing racist fears at the same time. The cover story was narcotic-related death. Kidnapping involved here. Was it an SLA run-through?

October, 1973 – American Nazi Party warns that Dr. Marcus Foster will be assassinated – two weeks before the murder took place

At a San Leandro shopping center near Oakland, members of the Nazi Party handed out pamphlets warning: "There might be shotgun blasts into the guts of mixmaster principals and superintendents."

October, 1973 – Black Cultural Association, Vacaville Medical Facility, Lectures Denouncing Dr. Foster

Director Westbrook and tutor Willie Wolfe spread hate stories about Dr. Foster. Inmates were jubilant weeks later when they learned the educator was dead. But another black leader had been assassinated. Violence is nurtured in the prisons by selected agents.

November 6, 1973 – Dr. Marcus Foster assassinated, Oakland

Dr. Foster was black. He was shot with deadly cyanide bullets. His co-worker, Robert Blackburn, is white. He was shot with regular bullets and survived. The men were close associates, often referred to as "salt and pepper." Both had moved to California together from Pennsylvania a few years earlier.

"Blacks" fleeing the murder scene were observed by witnesses after the shooting.

Nazis wanted him murdered. Nazis are active in education issues in California.

White men possessing black make-up were later arrested for his murder.

November 7, 1973 – Symbionese Liberation Army, First Communiqué

The SLA claimed credit for killing Dr. Foster, inspired by "love for the people." "Death warrants" were issued against other School Board Members.

January 10, 1974 – Joseph Remiro and Russell Little, two white men, arrested and charged with the murder of Dr. Foster

Both men deliberately created the condition for arrest by driving around in a van for several hours early in the morning in a quiet residential area, a few blocks away from their "safe house" in Concord.

Remiro surrendered four hours after Little was captured. He brought the murder weapon with him.

On the same evening, Nancy Ling Perry set fire to the SLA "safe house" at Sutherland Court. This "Liberated Zone" contained a goldmine of evidence and information that the law enforcement officials could reveal or conceal to their advantage.

Written plans to kidnap Patricia Hearst were found in the house, three weeks prior to her abduction.

Police ignored this information.

November 27, 1973 – Murder of a Guard at Tracy Prison

August 7th Guerrilla Movement again took "credit." The murder of the guard would signal escalation of war against prisoners by the California Department of Corrections.

Prisoners were reclassified; packages limited, visiting days reduced and further repressions were inaugurated.

Some 85% of all eligible paroles were denied in January and February of 1974. Guards brought in weapons, encouraged narcotics traffic and imposed impossible living conditions. The emergence of the SLA, nurtured within the prison system, would set back any hopes for prison reform.

January 17, 1974 – Second Communiqué: The SLA Explain their "Philosophy," Nancy Ling Perry, "Fahizah," speaks

"The SLA were 'freedom fighters.'"

"The USA had been overthrown since 1963."

"Their 'information and intelligence unit' was fighting oppression."

"The SLA was made up of blacks, browns, yellow, red and white people. 'We would never wear make-up or disguise ourself by race.'"

When "confronted with oppression, starvation and the death of their freedom, they will fight." (None of the SLA had ever endured these conditions.)

"The SLA is not the August 7th Guerrilla Movement." (That "group" was never heard from again.)

"The fire in Concord, California was only to melt fingerprints." (It didn't.)

"Death to the fascist insect that preys upon the life of the people."

February 4, 1974 – Patricia Hearst is kidnapped

Two black males and one white female kidnapped Patty Hearst.

Her boyfriend, Steven Weed, was beaten.

This was America's first political kidnapping.

February 7, 1974 – Third SLA Communiqué

Patricia Campbell Hearst is a "prisoner of war"

February 12, 1974 – Field Marshal General Cinque, Donald DeFreeze, makes his first (taped) public appearance

Cinque explains that Randolph Hearst was to set up a food program for the poor.

Patty speaks to her parents and fiancé Steven Weed in a taped message: "Mom, Dad, I am OK. I had a few scrapes and stuff, but they washed them up and they're getting OK. I caught a cold, but *they gave me some pills*. I am in a combat unit that is armed with automatic weapons. There is also a *medical team* here."

Her voice was drowsy and she appeared anxious to get home. This was a period of sympathy for Patty, and conditions for her return would be met, she hoped.

Cinque asked for "food of the best quality" to be delivered.

One giveaway of the SLA was the suggestion that the food be distributed from "Safeway or Mayfair" stores. Radicals in California are aware of the boycott of Safeway stores because of Cesar Chavez's strikes relating to non-union lettuce, grapes and wine. It seemed strange for volunteers for the United Farm Workers to ask that Safeway participate in the food giveaway plan.

There were many indications in the third communiqué that the SLA was a right-wing conspiracy.

February 12-April 1, 1974 – The Great Food Rip-Off

Randolph Hearst spent $2 million on the People In Need Program.

"Best quality" food was to be delivered. That was a clear stipulation of the conditions for returning Patricia Hearst.

Ludlow Kramer, Secretary of State, Washington State, Republican candidate for Congress and former employee of NASA, helped distribute food during defense industry personnel layoffs and was imported to California to oversee the program.

"Top quality" companies sold Kramer meat with "75% slop" at triple the normal price. Cabbages replaced meat in some bags of food.

Food was thrown at the people. Some threw it back.

Food trucks were hijacked.

Conveniently placed cameras photographed violence at food distribution centers.

Some food was "contaminated."

Randolph Hearst was publicly embarrassed and forced to apologize. What food companies, allegedly the nation's best major meatpackers, sell contaminated food? Do they usually stock meat with 75% fat content in Washington? Did they throw food at the unemployed in Washington? Were the recipients photographed?

SLA members Remiro and Little, now in San Quentin, called the food "hog feed."

Patty's captors could demonstrate to her that "her father didn't care about her safe return," while Hearst was ripped off and made to look responsible for the violence and the slop. Patty's kidnappers could claim they cared more about her than her own father did.

CIA agent William Buckley wrote with authority, from 3,000 miles away, that Cadillacs pulled up for food handouts. Hearst put up $4 million to feed the poor if Patty would come home safe before the first of May.

April 2, 1974 – SLA Message: Time and place of Patty's release to be revealed in 72 hours

There was a "pray for Patty" weekend.

Her 20th birthday was spent in captivity.

Romantic roses were delivered to the *Phoenix*, a Bay Area underground newspaper, with a message promising Patty's return.

Family hopes were high.

APRIL 3, 1974 – Patty joins the SLA

Patricia Hearst was disappointed with the $2 million food distribution program. Her father had "not done everything in his power" to get her back.

The rip-off of Hearst could easily give Patty that impression if most of the news was kept from her except the negative and purposeful manipulation of the food distribution program.

Patty became "Tania," a name she said she chose, but one month later said it "was given to her." (The

original Tania was an associate of revolutionary leader Che Guevara in Bolivia. Tania and Che were both killed by the CIA working with Bolivian police.)

Her father was now a "corporate liar."

Nobody worried about Patricia any more.

The SLA didn't keep their word. Hearst seemed shocked. He should have known better.

Bad guy Randolph Hearst, supporter of fascism, militant dictatorships, napalm, Nazis and news censorship, became a sympathetic figure in the manipulated media. From that point on, it didn't matter whether Patricia was found alive or dead.

We'd been led through a series of episodes along with the Hearst family, anxiously awaiting Patty's safe return. After April 3rd, things went from bad to worse.

The SLA issued "death warrants" for Colston Westbrook, Chris Thompson and Robyn Steiner, who were termed FBI and CIA informers.

Patty said, on tape, "I am not brainwashed, drugged, tortured or hypnotized in any way."

April 15, 1974 – Patty stages a bank robbery and makes the "Ten Most Wanted" list

Four alleged members of the SLA posed for 1,200 pictures at the bank. They didn't shoot at the cameras.

"My comrades and I have expropriated $10,660.20 from the Sunset Branch of the Hibernia Bank. Casualties could have been avoided had the persons involved kept out of the way and cooperated with the people's forces until after our departure," said Patty on a new tape cassette.

Arrest warrants were issued.

FBI posters went up across the country.

Patty, gun in hand, made the cover of *Time* and *Newsweek*.

Her good father was a "liar." Bad daughter was a bank robber.

Get the picture? Patty was toughing it out. What a revolution!

May 1, 1974 – SLA moves to Los Angeles

Christine Johnson, a resident of the house on 54th Street that burned down two weeks later, had come to the Bay Area and met with the SLA before their migration south. Their plans were made in advance.

Question: How could she find them so easily, when the FBI and San Francisco police were looking for them with added forces?

May 2, 1974 – Patty living in filth, "Tania" and graffiti on the walls

An empty apartment was found. What next? Cockroaches were coming down the walls.

Chemicals in the tub. "Tania" was obviously here—it said so on the walls!

No fingerprints to prove Patty Hearst lived there.

A downstairs neighbor heard "money clicking on the floors."

May 1, 1974 – Ricky Delgado (an Alias) purchases a van to transport the SLA to Los Angeles

One of three vans was bought for $1,800 cash. A non-existent address—a parking lot on Fillmore St.—and false name were given for identification. A black man with a woman and child left their green car behind and drove away in the van. They were never sought or seen again. (Did anyone track down the green car?)

May 16, 1974 – Shoot-out at Mel's Sporting Goods Store, Inglewood

William Harris stuffed a pair of socks up his sleeve.

Employee Tony Shepard, a police science major, just happened to have his handcuffs with him and handcuffed William Harris on one wrist.

An altercation occurred outside the building in full view of Patty.

The Los Angeles scene was staged—to prove Patty was capable of firing an automatic weapon.

Nobody saw Patty fire the weapon.

William Harris dropped a gun registered in Emily Harris' name, and announced that the SLA was in town.

The red and white van was unnecessarily abandoned, conveniently leaving the SLA's address on 834 West 84th Street.

Emily, William and Patty took a two-block ride in a Pontiac.

That car broke down, so they helped themselves to a Chevrolet.

The Chevrolet took them to Tom Mathews' house. They borrowed his van for the next 12 hours, and took Tom along for the ride. William Harris introduced "Tania" to Tom Mathews, and "Tania" told the latter the whole story about what an enthusiastic member of the SLA she was. Then they all went to a drive-in movie and saw *The New Centurions*.

Tom Mathews' account of that 12-hour "kidnapping" gave the D.A. the excuse they needed to file 19 charges against Patty Hearst by the next Monday morning.

May 17, 1974 – State of Siege, Patty Observes a Public Cremation

6:00 a.m.: Tom Mathews is allowed to drive away in his van, leaving Emily, Patty and William *on foot* in the Hollywood Hills.

6:00 a.m.: An assault task force of police, FBI and U.S. Treasury agents surround the house on West 84th Street. At 9 a.m., ten canisters of tear gas are fired into the house. Minutes later, members of the LAPD Special Weapons and Tactics Team (SWAT) charged the house. Nobody was inside. There was a two-hour wait before they attacked the empty residence.

8:00 a.m.: The three SLA members—Emily, William, Patty—turn up in Griffith Park and drive off in a Lincoln Continental. Two women with a gun say, "We need your car for a couple of hours." Frank Sutter obligingly gives them $250.

9:00 a.m.: Donald DeFreeze and an unidentified black man look at a vacant apartment on 54th St. with the idea of renting it.

The house at 1466 East 54th Street was filled with activity.

On Thursday night there was wine and grass, guests, traffic in and out, weapons delivered, packed under the floorboards, food brought in on request.

The SLA was trying to recruit new members for their army.

11:00 a.m.: One black man left, promising to return with transportation.

Police are gathering in the streets.

3:30 p.m.: Two black men depart, taking Patricia Hearst with them. Where are the Harrises? One whispers in DeFreeze's ear.

5:00 p.m.: One black man departs from the front door, just before the shooting.

5:00 p.m.: Lawmen, who claim they used a bullhorn that no one heard, said, "Come out with your hands up. The house is surrounded." Five minutes elapsed between the first and second warnings. Why not two hours this time?

Two minutes later, a policeman fired a tear gas shell into the house. Heavy gunfire followed. Incendiary bombs were thrown into the house by the FBI. The house went up in flames.

A fire chief who wanted to go in and put out the flames was threatened with arrest by an FBI agent if he crossed the police line.

By 6:45 p.m. the fire burned the house to the ground.

Donald DeFreeze, Nancy Ling Perry, William Wolfe, Patricia Soltysik, Angela Atwood and Camilla Hall were burned beyond recognition.

Patty Hearst witnessed the cremation of her friends from a nearby apartment.

Sadism and cruelty were employed at every carefully-staged scene of this dreadful conspiracy.

May 19, 1974 – In Hollywood, Patty Hearst assaults Mrs. Alcala

Anita Alcala, manager of an apartment house, turned down an offer of $500 rental for one night. Two black men and "Patty Hearst" said they needed a room.

"Do you want to die?" asked Patty (with blue eyes this time).

One of the men stepped forward and slashed at Mrs. Alcala's dress. The house dress was cut at least six inches. The picture of the dress resembled LBJ showing his scar following surgery. This unverified episode, with descriptions that didn't match Patty, could give her life in prison if she is found alive.

May 19, 1974 – "Only Three SLA Members Left: Emily and William Harris, and Patty Hearst"

Stage one of the SLA was over. Randolph Hearst assumed his daughter could now "vanish."

The scenario included murder, kidnapping, bank robbery and cremation.

Now the hunt begins. The word "terrorist" has become as American as apple pie.

IV. Why Was the SLA Created?

(Motives and Goals; How the Goals are Met; Suggestions for Investigating and Controlling Intelligence Operations)

1. Create Widespread Fear of Kidnapping & Suspicion of Terrorist Organizations

The CIA uses kidnapping as a diversion from other conspiracies, and to escalate public fears.

The kidnapping of Frank Sinatra, Jr., immediately after the John Kennedy assassination diverted news and attention from political events. Jack Zangetty, the man who exposed this kidnapping and other matters about the JFK-Oswald murders, was found dead two weeks after he revealed a few facts.

Kidnapping scares are all around us now.

"Lethal postcards," bombings of oil company offices, chemical poisoning and threats of "radical" terrorism will escalate.

The protection industry is growing rapidly.

When citizens are led to believe their lives are in danger, they support more police weapons and harsher laws.

Every kidnapping since February 4, 1974 should be carefully investigated. The kidnappings may be real, but the circumstances surrounding them are questionable. Some are obvious hoaxes. The kidnappers, their funding, secrecy, protection and concealment by the FBI and police should be exposed. The kidnappings and bomb scares make the headlines. The half-hearted, superficial "investigations" and lack of convictions go unnoticed.

The Secret Service, for the first time in U.S. history, presented an award outside the United States. It is no surprise this was delivered to Inspector James Beaten, the man who was wounded March 30 when Ian Ball was supposed to "kidnap" Princess Anne.

Was there any relationship between this altercation and the prior abduction of Patricia Hearst? The Secret Service knows the answer. Were they acting accordingly, apologizing for a near victim in a provocateur-inspired event?

2. Link U.S. Terrorists to International Guerrilla Groups

If there were international links to radical movements in the U.S., military intelligence encouraged this interaction.

They need to *prove* that Communism is coming to America.

Many police agents would welcome the emergence of a police state. They are creating the "necessity" to crack down on workers, the unemployed and the hungry.

International money is donated to right-wing radical groups. The CIA can also send unlimited funds abroad, to be returned through "radical" connections.

Roy Ash at the Office of Management Budget reduces opportunities and hope instead of striving to improve the quality of life in the United States. As a result, the finger will be pointed at "communists" and "international influences" when a segment of the population is radicalized—as though intolerable domestic conditions were not cause enough.

Rather than face the realistic challenge, the usual pattern is to blame outside forces for unrest. If all the hungry and oppressed people in the world were to band together, it would not necessarily be a conspiracy. It would come with common knowledge of who is depriving them of life.

3. Discredit Communes

Why did a Supreme Court ruling recently come down against communes?

Why have intelligence agencies supported Rand Corporation studies and tried to smear communal living?

Economics is always behind such laws.

By the media's association of the SLA with communal living, with its constant references to the communal "Peking House," the suggestion is planted that group housing breeds violence.

Communes are bad for business. Twelve people living together can get along with one dishwasher, instead of six. Many young people have left their empty, sterile "nuclear family" homes and created a new kind of extended family that provides them with friendship and support. This is seen as a threat to the status quo with its inbred isolation and suspicions.

The Sharon Tate-La Bianca massacres were the first organized assault by the military on the hippie generation. The SLA fits that pattern.

4. Escalate Domestic Fear of Mao Tse Tung, Brainwashing and Communist-Style Indoctrination

Books by Chairman Mao were given to DeFreeze and the BCA.

The "Peking House" commune diverted attention from the way clandestine agents were actually meeting. The presence of a few books about China would link residents of the commune to communism.

"Symbionese," like "Viet Cong," is an army-coined term.

"Criticism and self-criticism," words mouthed by Joseph Remiro while in prison, would be linked to brainwashing techniques of the Far East.

"Leninism-Marxism-Stalinism" are whipping boys of the radical right. *Détente* does not exist for them.

Gunnell's Chinese food stand suggested Asian influence at Peking House. Every association of the SLA with China, no matter how weak, forced or trivial, was exaggerated by the media.

The *Minimanual* from Brazil exacerbated suspicions of Maoist influence over the SLA. With this scanty ammunition, the Sacramento hearings on Civil Disorder and the Washington Internal Security Committee stepped up the communism scare.

The best solution to this massive propaganda effort is to look very closely at the so-called "experts"

now writing articles and appearing on radio and TV talk shows. They are frequently connected to CIA-front organizations. Check their occupations, their military service, credentials and funding, and expose them for what they are: packagers of scare tactics and government propaganda.

5. Drum Up Support for the UCLA Center for the Study and Reduction of Violence

The proposed UCLA center to find causes of violence in the brain, and the Behavior Research Center in Butner, North Carolina, are the two potentially most dangerous institutions in the U.S.

Massive funding from the federal government, NASA and intelligence agencies will escalate the transformation of human beings into zombies.

Nazi doctors and well-trained American psychiatrists are already using electrode implants, transponders, powerful drugs and similar devices on prisoners.

Many of the current rash of "senseless killings," "massacres" and "zombie type murders" are committed by individuals who have been in Army hospitals, mental institutions or prisons, where their heads have been literally taken over surgically to create terror in the community.

Sirhan Sirhan was hypnotized to forget the persons who controlled him before he became the patsy in the Robert Kennedy murder.

The solution to these charges is not to shake your head and say, "impossible." Ask prison inmates. They know it is true.

Study the medical, military and prison history of every alleged murderer during the past five years. Investigate every hospital and psychiatrist who treated them.

A good starting point would be the case of Lawrence Kwong, programmed to murder a KGO radio broadcaster and then kill himself, in September, 1973, in San Francisco.

The day after a Marine-trained LAPD SWAT team murdered six SLA members in Los Angeles, the *L.A. Times* printed a letter to the editor. Someone disguised as a concerned citizen begged UCLA to start "finding the cause of violence." Letters to the editor are common CIA public relations plants to influence public opinion. Police did the killings but they won't be studied. The victims of violence all their lives will be.

6. Discredit the Poor, Rehearse for Massive Food Hand-Outs, Distribute Contaminated Food

The food handouts demanded by the SLA could serve several purposes.

The poor were ridiculed, provoked to violence and made to appear ungrateful.

Cameras were on hand to photograph the violence on the first day of food distribution. Even worse than the image of violence and greed projected on the poor, was the possibility that they were poisoned.

John F. Kennedy was outraged in 1962 when the CIA used chemical toxins to contaminate the sugar crop sent from Cuba to the USSR. He said, "This could be the beginning of chemical espionage." Controls over CIA activities died with John Kennedy. More sophisticated chemicals have been developed since then.

At the time the "feed the poor" program was underway in California, it was revealed that five major chicken farmers in Mississippi had 22 million poisoned birds. The chickens had been fed chicken feed contaminated "mysteriously" with Dieldrin, a deadly insecticide that can cause cancer. Some of those poisoned chickens were sent to school lunch programs for needy children in Detroit and Chicago.

The five chicken growers asked for $10 million from Congress as compensation for slaughtering the remaining chickens. (*The New York Times* suggested the payment was in exchange for anti-impeachment votes from five Southern senators.)

Lost in the controversy was the question: Were the poor given poisoned food?

One solution is to give annual check-ups to all recipients of the "free food" in Detroit, Chicago and the San Francisco Bay Area. Governor Ronald Reagan publicly hoped that they would suffer an "epidemic of botulism." In future years, will there be an epidemic of cancer among those who ate this food? Time will tell.

7. Creation of the SLA Was Intended to Halt Prison Reform Movements

Prison conspiracies are directly related to national conspiracies.

Many political leaders have spent years in prison—the price they paid for understanding the causes of slavery and oppression.

Potential leaders are trained inside the prison system.

When the national policy-makers gave orders to destroy future black political leaders, violent assaults began to take place inside the prisons and on the streets.

With the determination to transform prisoners into helpless zombies without will, the fewer living witnesses, the better.

If prison interviews and visitors are carefully controlled, the truth can never be told.

That is why select CIA and police agents were allowed to form the BCA inside Vacaville Medical Facility.

Every legitimate prison study group is infiltrated by "the Man," CIA informers and agents.

Prisoners are turned into snitches by the California Department of Corrections, FBI and CIA. All politically aware inmates must struggle for survival on a day-to-day basis.

The solution is to demand that objective ombudsmen have free access to investigate prison conditions and keep the public aware of what is happening inside prison walls. The taxpayer provides the funds to maintain these institutions. But prison authorities attack the society that supports them. Many prisoners have been offered parole or freedom by prison guards in return for murdering selected political prisoners and civil rights leaders on the outside.

The prison system is breeding the violence in the streets, not the prisoners themselves.

The recent Nixon-appointed Supreme Court ruling that news media may not interview specific prisoners excludes the public from crimes taking place away from public scrutiny.

To make sure that prisoners are not coerced surgically into committing violent acts, the medical records of every inmate should be available to a doctor of his choice. These records should also be available for inspection by independent doctors chosen by the prisoner's lawyer or objective investigators.

8. Escalation of the Race War

SLA members used black make-up. Why were blacks blamed for crimes they didn't commit?

Were the "Zebra murders" in San Francisco, preceding the Hearst kidnapping, conducted by many white men with black faces?

"Hit lists" of Black Panthers and civil rights leaders among SLA possessions proved there is a determination to kill black activists across the country.

The cover story is that "black militants want to kill false black leaders." But it is not the blacks who want their leaders dead; it is right-wing conspirators who wish to destroy black leadership.

The Nazi Party, KKK, States Rights Party and Minutemen seek a race war.

Howard Hughes, ITT and other equally racist conglomerates send orders down the chain of command. Republican leaders, including the attorney general, assure the assassins that they will never be discovered or prosecuted.

The White House and the National Security Council collaborated with these extremist groups in the

assassinations of John Kennedy, Robert Kennedy and Martin Luther King.

They are also behind the Symbionese Liberation Army.

It is one thing to hate blacks and want a race war. It is quite another to receive funding and legal protection from the White House to promote genocide.

The stopping of black males in San Francisco during the recent hunt for the "Zebra" killers could lead to future card identification and apartheid. The "Zebra" murders and Hearst kidnapping were synchronized and timed in an exact order.

The solution is to investigate and prosecute upper-level agents. Make sure they are sentenced to life in prison for their crimes. When they are convicted, like the killers of labor leader Joseph Yablonski, they will reveal who paid for the murders, then the masterminds can be prosecuted.

9. SLA Links Would Discredit All Radical Movements

During the 1960s, agents infiltrated the anti-war movement. They also broke up rock concerts that were not "political."

Twenty-eight or more Black Panthers were murdered.

Students were shot by National Guardsmen and local police following orders. The murderers were legally protected by grand juries and the Justice Department.

SLA members infiltrated radical groups that happened to be targets of the attorney general and the FBI. These target groups include the United Farm Workers, the feminist movement, the prisons' Black Guerrilla Family, Venceremos, Vietnam Veterans Against the War, Winter Soldiers Organization and Chino Defense Fund.

The leadership of a wide variety of organizations—the Indian Movement, gay liberation, Nairobi College in East Palo Alto, Glide Memorial Church, the Black Teachers Caucus, the National Welfare Rights Organization, Third World Women's Alliance, United Prisoners Union—were all named by the SLA. In effect, they were targeted.

FM radio stations, the underground press and alternative news services were specifically asked to observe and participate in the food distribution programs and relay messages. They will feel repression soon.

Every communiqué sent out by the SLA revealed that this was an intelligence operation. The communiqués also listed the groups targeted for the infiltration and hassling.

Roadblocks have been set up to stop and search hippies across the country. Ten thousand young people were stopped in the three weeks following the shoot-out in Los Angeles.

SLA sightings, like UFOs, can continue indefinitely. The Harrises can keep Patty in a CIA safe-house for the summer, grooming her for her next hair-raising escapade, while long-haired males and females with hair, eyes and skin of all colors are stopped, searched, questioned, harassed and busted.

10. Increase Public and Private Security Guards and Police Forces

On February 22, 1974, private security forces protected golfers at the Jackie Gleason Classic Tournament as a reaction to the recent wave of kidnappings.

Some typical headlines:

EXECUTIVES RUSH FOR PROTECTION, KIDNAP SCARE

THE BODYGUARD BUSINESS IS BOOMING

COLLEGES STEP UP CAMPUS SECURITY

BODYGUARDS ORDERED FOR LEGISLATORS

FIRMS BUYING KIDNAP INSURANCE

MRS. CLARK GABLE TELLS HOW HER SON WAS ALMOST KIDNAPPED [*fourteen* years ago]

ONASSIS FAMILY INCREASES SECURITY

After Patty Hearst's kidnap and a few other abductions, the media escalated the hysteria and created entire new industries.

There is profit in creating kidnap scares.

There is also profit in offering "protection."

11. You Too Can Become an Informer: Watch For Patty, Turn the SLA In

The FBI appeared to be inept. They asked us to help them find Patty and the SLA. That's not the way they did it on the old Jack Webb TV show.

Doctors were officially requested to notify the FBI if any of their patients fit medical descriptions of SLA members.

Neighbors were asked to sharpen their eyes, play detective and report any of their neighbors living in groups who might be the SLA. Some "suspicious" signs would be that the group was quiet, inconspicuous and inoffensive. How suspicious can you get? We were supposed to be involved in the numerous reported SLA sightings, just as the Nazis noisily hunted the Jews.

The policies initiated in this domestic warfare campaign are far more dangerous to society than the six SLA members cremated in Los Angeles.

12. Instigate New Laws and Harsh Legislation Against Kidnapping

Kidnapping is a terrifying experience. It can't be justified.

Starvation and unemployment are also terrifying to people with no opportunity to provide for their basic needs.

Legal punishment, isolated dungeons and more prisons will not solve social and economic problems; tremendous inequalities in the distribution of wealth.

Kidnapping laws will not serve as effective controls, any more than death penalty laws have served to prevent murder.

Corporations want to protect their employees, and CEOs want to protect their lives. Lawmakers oblige.

New laws will be passed. It is a pitiful commentary on how inadequate our solutions are to the obvious problems around us.

13. Christ and Christians vs. Radicals and Terrorists

Christianity, the family and God are "fighting for survival." Social change and radical politics are always associated with the Anti-Christ.

Colston Westbrook received his CIA training at the Inter-Christian University in Tokyo. Wes Davis, the "authority" on communism and the evils of Asian Anti-Christ politics, is linked to World Humanity Against Totalitarianism—a Christian organization that could be another CIA front.

Senator J. Harmer, candidate for Lt. Governor in California, described the SLA terrorists as "directed in their scheme against the will of God and the plan of Christ for the salvation of mankind."

CIA agent William Buckley criticized Randolph Hearst's attempts to communicate with the terrorists. He felt that Patty should be sacrificed "in the name of Christ," rather than placate the degenerate Commies.

Remnants of Germany's Nazi Party emerged openly in Chile after Allendé was murdered. They blamed Jews for radical politics in Chile. Obvious economic inequalities in Chile are ignored.

The Nazi Party is visible and rampant in the San Francisco Bay Area. They were involved in the Dr. Foster murder.

There are Nazi Party members working for the San Francisco Police Department. One keeps his Nazi uniform stored in a locker between meetings.

Following the scare tactics of kidnappings and bombings by police provocateurs, radical right-wing Christians will emerge to compare this violence to the Godlessness of the Russians and Chinese. The bad guys will be labeled "Anti-Christ," and the good guys will be "Christians."

14. Discredit the FBI, Make Military Intelligence Agencies and the CIA Seem Necessary for Routine Police-End Investigative Work

The public embarrassment of the FBI began the last few years in the life of J. Edgar Hoover.

The reason the FBI was made to appear so inept in the Hearst kidnapping is that CIA and military intelligence agents wanted them to appear lost and bumbling.

When the SLA was lured to Los Angeles, they were murdered by a Marine-trained SWAT team. The FBI contributed the incendiary bombs to set the house on fire, but the "weakness" of the FBI provided the CIA with an excuse for domestic police support.

The Tom Charles Huston plan revealed how the military and federal intelligence agents would work with local police departments. For all practical purposes, the FBI is now combined with U.S. intelligence networks.

15. Set Up Martial Law and a Police State: Maintain Power in the Hands of the Military & Intelligence Agents

There are provisions to cancel future elections or rig national elections. The 1968 election required a murder to eliminate a candidate. The selection of candidates for 1972 was manipulated. Special Prosecutor Leon Jaworski's Watergate Hearings were not about to expose the depth of political corruption, or the CIA-military hold over the White House and themselves.

The military controls clandestine agents, political assassins and potential kidnappers necessary to escalate violence.

Massive uses of nerve gas or other planned tragedies can occur, disguised as natural catastrophes.

Vice President Gerald Ford's move into a Naval compound is consistent with a military takeover. Ford was a secret team member of the Warren Commission. This is a visible reminder of our monarchy, his enclosure surrounded by Naval Intelligence.

CIA Director Colby rigged elections in Vietnam. He did well with these tricks while he was away. Imagine how much easier it will be to deceive given his experience as chief of all U.S. intelligence.

V. The Tell-Tale Revolutionaries: Conspicuous Banditos or Provocateurs?

Were documents planted in specific SLA safe-houses for political use? Why did California Senator John Harmer and U.S. Attorney General William Saxbe use the flimsy SLA evidence for red scare tactics?

We are aware that the CIA faked and planted the "diaries" of Lee Harvey Oswald, Sirhan Sirhan and Arthur Bremer. The same methods of falsifying evidence to back up a conspiratorial cover story were used with the SLA.

William Saxbe referred to the *Minimanual of the Urban Guerrilla,* stating the "food program and the Hearst kidnapping came right out of the book." He intimated that this document proved the SLA was an arm of an international terrorist group.

"When you think that the Symbionese and others are taking this right out of some Maoist doctrinal textbooks on how to operate in terrorism and other forms of civil disturbance, you realize it is not just a coincidental thing. There is evidence of a worldwide conspiracy, but it cannot be discussed further."

– Attorney General William Saxbe

Marighella, a Brazilian revolutionary, published the book. It is popular in Latin America, Asia and Africa. He was killed by the Brazilian police in 1969.

Every important suggestion about urban guerrilla warfare—quoted by the newspapers to "prove" that the SLA had followed this manual—was in fact *completely ignored* by the SLA. Indeed, if they *had* gone by the book, they might still be alive. They did *not,* in fact, follow the Marighella manual.

The book served but one purpose, identical to the planted diaries: it supplied the match for the political fires of lawmakers and politicians. It was false "evidence" that served to prove a lie.

To cite one of many examples, a basic *Minimanual* injunction that was ignored: "*Never* leave a track or trail." *Why then, did the SLA leave not one, but three safe houses full of incriminating evidence?*

Why did Russell Little allow himself to be arrested on January 10, 1974, and booked for the murder of Dr. Marcus Foster?

And why did Joseph Remiro surrender to police four hours later *sporting one of the murder weapons?* He had spent the last four hours inside an SLA safe house two blocks away, discussing the situation with his SLA comrades. It was decided to "sacrifice" Remiro—but why did he surrender wearing evidence that linked him to the Foster murder? His comrades could have thrown the gun away for him.

Why were Remiro and Little placed immediately, upon their arrest, on Death Row in San Quentin—without trial? How many other persons receive this special treatment?

Were they placed inside the prison to link the SLA to "new recruits," and give the impression that the "army" numbered more than nine persons?

In March, 1974, a prisoner in Soledad was offered a chance to "escape" by three prison officials if he would "join the SLA army." How did the police and prison personnel know where the SLA was? Why would they want to "help" them recruit more troops—unless the idea was to link the "terrorists" to prison escapees?

The house at 1560 Sutherland Court, Concord, the SLA hideout and "liberated zone," was rented by Nancy Ling Perry and Russell Little, alias Nancy and George DeVoto. Concord police did not associate the name DeVoto with the SLA when Little and Remiro were arrested.

Why didn't Nancy and her male companion, who had a van and Willie Wolfe's car, and all the time they needed, remove incriminating evidence from the house when they vacated the premises? They could have quietly loaded their vehicles and driven off.

Instead, Nancy lit a fire in the house and split hours after Remiro and Little were arrested.

The sight of the flames aroused the neighbors and brought the police. The fire was quickly extinguished, and the police were left with a treasure trove containing the SLA's weapons, ammunition, posters, revolutionary documents, blackface make-up, gas masks, maps, typewriters, cyanide bullets and communiqué.

The police found lists of prison officials and their wives and families marked for assassination. Records indicate that the FBI immediately placed them under protective watch. Sacramento authorities immediately rushed through legislation for protecting prison guards' families.

The California Senate Hearings immediately received information about the SLA and its involvement with California prisoners. Senator Harmer talked up the kidnapping scare at Mormon lunches. SLA death warrants for executives of California industries were also noted.

But the police said nothing about SLA members, who could have been arrested and locked up 24 days before Patty Hearst was kidnapped. And for nearly three months, they did not reveal that they'd found notes concerning "Patty Campbell Hearst, Ambush, Art student," and other clues that she might be kidnapped. And they did not warn the Hearsts, either.

The information found in the Concord safe-house was used to link a rash of scare kidnappings around the country to the SLA.

An apartment at 627 15th Street in Oakland was another SLA safe house. This one was referred to by the police as "SLA intelligence information headquarters."

William Harris rented that apartment on December 15, 1973; one month *after* Dr. Foster was murdered.

He and Emily lived in a lush, comfortable apartment nearby.

What purpose did this "intelligence information headquarters" serve? Nobody lived there. It was hardly used, except by Harris, who stocked it carefully with "incriminating evidence."

Police *"stumbled"* on this location several weeks after Patty Hearst was kidnapped.

At the time, Emily and William Harris were not suspects in the Foster murder or Hearst kidnapping. They had several weeks to vacate this totally useless apartment, chock-a-block with radical books and weapons, before the police "found" it.

Inside the apartment was the famous *Minimanual of the Urban Guerrilla* that Saxbe would quote. Right wing extremists quickly picked up the line, and booklets were printed and sold over the air: *HOW TO PREVENT YOUR CHILD FROM BEING RECRUITED BY RADICALS, WHY TERRORISTS BEHAVE AS THEY DO* and *HOW OUR PRISON GROUNDS ARE BECOMING BREEDING GROUNDS FOR REVOLUTION* were written and published by W. S. McBirnie, the same author who hurriedly wrote *A COMMUNIST KILLED OUR PRESIDENT* a decade earlier.

Specific planted evidence is seized upon and dispatched by the wire services as proof of subversion. In the same apartment was William Harris' U.S. Army manual from Pennsylvania. The official explanation for this book was that it had been "stolen."

There was more reason to believe the SLA followed that army manual than the Brazilian text.

Colston Westbrook served in the military for seven years before heading a group that would become the SLA. Westbrook and Willie Wolfe were natives of Pennsylvania. Dr. Marcus Foster and Robert Blackburn also lived there before they were targeted for assault. Russell Little visited Pennsylvania in the vicinity of Dr. Foster on his way to California.

The Pennsylvania Army manual was significant evidence, but was passed off as if it served no purpose. No one mentioned the possible influence of military intelligence directing the SLA.

The apartment at 1827 Golden Gate Avenue in San Francisco was another CIA-SLA safe house; the third dwelling abandoned by the SLA that contained handpicked "incriminating evidence."

In each instance, the SLA had plenty of time to remove everything from the premises. Authorities did not know about these locations, and were not close to finding their inhabitants. Yet the Golden Gate apartment contained enough clothing and other objects to fill four FBI vans. They even left a bicycle.

"Tania," *"Patria o Muerte"*, "Venceremos", a seven-headed cobra and other quaint graffiti were painted on the walls.

There were cockroaches, dirty female underwear, empty wine bottles, wigs and stale bread. The SLA left a tub full of chemicals and insulting notes to the police. Marighella, the tracks-coverer, would have turned over in his grave.

Patty Hearst and other SLA members supposedly lived in this apartment from mid-March until May 1, 1974. The famous kidnap victim had already undergone agonizing transitions, from pleading with her parents to do everything for her safe return to turning against her father, family, and fiancé, and finally to her transformation into a bank robber with an automatic weapon tucked under one arm. The next stage of shock—the utter filth and disarray found in the SLA safe-house—would graphically illustrate her social and psychological degradation.

The apartment was only 14 blocks from the FBI office. It even had a telephone.

Photographs taken at the bank robbery were published conspicuously in every newspaper and magazine—yet none of their neighbors paid the slightest heed to nine oddly assorted "new tenants."

The Golden Gate apartment was meant to horrify us and hasten Patty's "conversion" to the SLA.

In each case, the SLA had ample time to remove and destroy evidence. Instead, the provocateurs left loads of useful propaganda: kidnapping lists, the *Minimanual* and their bug-infested garbage. The police and FBI would use it all to feed the anxious news media with a steady diet of lies.

Filth and the *Minimanual* did exist. Evidence of military intelligence to support conspiracies is

ignored.

VI. Tactical Support

The SLA received many types of tactical support. Unnamed and unsought agents provided housing, transportation, weapons, supplies, food, rented cars and information about the Hibernia Bank.

If this had been a genuine terrorist group, rather than a police-intelligence operation, there would be many more arrests and more searches for specific suspects.

Compare the treatment of supporters of Black Panthers, Muslims or members of Venceremos. Morton Newman was sentenced to five years in jail for simply *acting as a lookout* against police after Ronald Beaty escaped from Chino.

Christine Johnson met the SLA members on a previous trip to San Francisco. She was expecting them when they arrived in two vans at the death house on 54th Street in Los Angeles, late on the evening of May 16. She is not charged with a crime.

Florence Lishey, owner of the burnt-out house in which Christine sheltered the SLA, has just received an advance payment from the City of Los Angeles.

"God bless his honor, the mayor, the city attorney, bless them all," she said, waving a check for $489. She had been promised another $80,000 to follow soon.

Three SLA "safe houses" were found, more incriminating and provocative evidence. But there were other safe houses that we are not supposed to know about.

Numerous so-called "blunders" by police and the FBI were examples of police collusion. Some visible evidence of tactical support can't be written off as "errors."

Two SLA members were sent to prison. Six more were cremated. The FBI and police searched for "the last three," the Harrises and Patty Hearst. But how do they explain the tactical support the "last of the SLA" received? It's simple—they just don't mention it.

1. Safe House at 1476 7th Avenue, Oakland

This apartment was the staging area for the murder of Dr. Foster.

Early in October, Joseph Remiro rented a top-floor apartment, one of 14 units. The building was within walking distance (3/5 of a mile) from the Oakland School District Building where Foster was murdered and Robert Blackburn wounded.

Clayton Mosely, manager of the building, was a *private security guard*. According to Mosely, six members of the SLA used the apartment from October 1 until the end of November.

Emily Harris, alias Anna Lindenberg, obtained a driver's license on September 26, 1973, using this address. William Harris, alias Jonathan Mark Salamone, also gave out this address on September 26, 1973. How far in advance did the Harrises know this safe house would be available for them?

No one in the 13 other units, including manager Mosely, knew the six SLA members moved out.

"No one actually lived in the apartment at all, but several people came and went at all hours," said Mosely. He added, "This group of young people didn't seem like the others here."

On December 6, 1973, when the rent was due, Mosely "discovered" no one was living in the apartment.

Where were the police after the Foster murder, five blocks away? A safe-house is exactly what is implied in the name: safe from discovery.

2. Safe House From January 10 to Mid-March, 1974

The SLA went underground after the January 10 arrest of Remiro and Little. They gave up their apartments, jobs and outside contacts.

There was enough evidence in the abandoned house on Sutherland Court in Concord to identify Gary Atwood, William Harris, Nancy Ling Perry, Patricia Soltysik and William Wolfe. Why weren't they found? Where did they live after January 10?

Who arranged for the "combat headquarters" where Patty Hearst was taken on February 4, after her kidnapping? Who rented it and when did they give it up?

If the SLA moved to the Golden Gate Avenue apartment in San Francisco in mid-March, where did they live from January 10 to the time they relocated to this address?

Is the rent on that safe house still paid? And if so, by whom? Would the Venceremos receive that kind of protection if they had murdered one man, shot another and kidnapped Patty Hearst?

3. Two black men and a third party, a small man or possibly a woman, participated in the ambush that killed Dr. Marcus Foster and wounded Robert Blackburn.

Who was this third suspect? Some news accounts speculate that it was Nancy Ling Perry. Other news stories describe the third person as Asian, possibly female.

Why has no effort been made to identify or locate the third party?

An Oriental woman was picked up and questioned by police on the day of the murder. She had weapons in her car.

Could this woman have been Jean Chan, Dave Gunnell's friend and a BCA tutor at Vacaville?

4. Two black men and a white woman kidnapped Patricia Hearst. If Cinque was one of them, who was the second black man?

Thero Wheeler, an escapee from Vacaville Medical Facility, was a suspect in the Hearst kidnapping.

The authorities maintain that only three SLA members are still at large: the Harrises and Patty Hearst. Why are they ignoring the second man who allegedly assaulted Steven Weed and kidnapped Patty Hearst?

5. Telephone service for the SLA: Who put it in? Who took it out?

Lola Evans, partially blind, listened to the noises of the SLA in the apartment upstairs on Golden Gate Avenue in San Francisco. She said they made a lot of phone calls. We all know the telephone company has records of every number dialed—who did the SLA call?

Telephone company employees could have recognized the faces of the SLA, following the well-publicized bank robbery pictures and massive search.

Between the time the SLA rented the apartment in mid-March, and the time the FBI arrived, a new manager took over at the apartment house, one who conveniently had no knowledge of the apartment's residents. Why the change in managers?

And how did the SLA manage to stumble on a location with a blind lady living below them and no other witnesses?

6. Who rented the two green cars used for the Hibernia Bank robbery?

Two rental cars used by the SLA were abandoned nine blocks from FBI offices.

Who rented them to the SLA?

Car rentals require the presentation of a valid driver's license and handwriting, possibly fingerprints on an application form. Some employee, somewhere, might remember a face.

7. Why the confusion and contradictions regarding the time getaway cars were found after the bank robbery?

Some reports stated that two green cars were found one day after the robbery, other reports say it was three days. Which was it?

Three days later, police in Monterey, California were still searching for the two green cars. If they had already been located, why were police still searching 100 miles south of San Francisco?

8. Familiarity with the San Francisco Hibernia Bank

Bank Manager James Smith said he watched the SLA robbery from a spyhole in his upstairs office.

"It was done in such a precision-like manner," he said. "They seemed to have a knowledge of the bank, knew where to go and what to do. How did the bandits know that the two tellers' drawers looted were the only ones open before 10 a.m.? The hold-up gang entered at 9:50 a.m. The bandits also seemed to be aware that while the top drawers in the two cages that were robbed contained about $2000 each, there was more money, about $3000, in each of the two lower drawers, and they got that too."

Bank employees apparently did not recognize any members of the SLA hold-up team from previous visits to the bank.

Strangely enough, the SLA get-away car was parked in front of 2330 Lawton Street, the former home of San Francisco Chief of Police D. Scott. When Scott lived in that house, did he do his banking early at the Hibernia Bank? Does he still maintain an account there?

Thero Wheeler, suspiciously missing and "protected," has a brother on the San Francisco Police Force. Was Wheeler a provocateur? Did he brief DeFreeze on details of the bank's operations?

If the mention of these possible connections seems shocking, remember that U.S. Attorney General John Mitchell planned to kidnap radicals … anything is possible.

9. How did Mrs. Christine Johnson find the SLA in San Francisco?

Mrs. Johnson visited the SLA in San Francisco before they migrated to her little bungalow in Los Angeles.

With the police, FBI and everyone else looking high and low for the SLA, and if there are no more SLA members and no conspirators, how in the world did Christine Johnson find the SLA in April?

Mrs. Johnson almost didn't live through the Los Angeles shoot-out. For some strange reason, she woke up in the middle of the shoot-out at 5:30 p.m. from a "drugged sleep."

If she had died with the others, her silence would have been ensured.

10. Who purchased the three vans used to transport the SLA to Los Angeles?

Two vans have been found and identified. Where is the third? One black man, with a black woman and a child in tow, bought one red and white van. He used the alias "Ricky Delgado," paid $1,800 in cash and gave a phony address on Fillmore Street. When he drove off in the new van, he left an old green car behind. Under whose name was the green car registered?

The new van was registered to 833 West 84th Street, Los Angeles. This address was found on a parking ticket in the van, and the L.A. police said that the parking ticket led them to the 84th Street address. How far in advance did the SLA lease this apartment? Two females from the SLA rented it from May 9 to May 17. Who is "Mr. Delgado"? Does he work for the LAPD?

Were the safe houses and transportation lined up far in advance, pre-arranged to lure the SLA to their deaths?

This red and white van was abandoned by Emily and William Harris outside Mel's Sporting Goods Store in Inglewood.

11. Two black men took Patty away

On the afternoon of May 17, 1974, a blue and white van pulled up behind the SLA bungalow on 54th Street.

Who purchased or owned this van?

Where is it now?

Two black men took Patty Hearst from the SLA hideout and drove away. "Two brothers tipped them off and got Patty out of here, for love of her. Miss Hearst walked to the van with them and drove off."

As they left, one of the men whispered a final word to Donald DeFreeze at around 3:30 p.m.

After they drove off with Patty, they were never mentioned again. Who were they—and why don't the police care? Why was no description of them released?

12. Who purchased the third van?

Authorities said: "*Three* vans brought the SLA to Los Angeles." Where is the third? Why is there no description of the van, the persons who purchased it or the two men with Patty?

13. Who owns the house at 833 West 84th Street, Los Angeles?

Van number one was abandoned at the shoot-out at Mel's Sporting Goods Store. The police said they knew the SLA was in town because they found a parking ticket inside the van with the 84th Street address.

It takes many weeks for the Department of Motor Vehicles in Sacramento to process a change of address. How could they have traced the abandoned van, bought by "Ricky Delgado" using a false San Francisco address, to the two SLA girls who lived on 84th Street in Los Angeles for seven days?

14. Which safe house did the SLA live in from May 1 to May 17?

Two white females rented and lived in the bungalow on 84th Street in Los Angeles from May 9 until May 16. If the SLA left San Francisco on May 1, where did they live until May 9?

15. Where did the rest of the SLA live from May 1 until midnight, May 16, 1974?

Two women were housed in a "safe location" for nine days until they moved to 84th Street. But eight other SLA members needed secure housing from May 1 until May 16.

A second black man was with DeFreeze a few hours before his death. Tactical support in Los Angeles came from LAPD agents. If these blacks had indeed been radicals, they would be sought and arrested for housing and abetting persons charged with murder, kidnapping and bank robbery. Instead, their existence has been ignored.

16. Who is the black man who looked for a vacant apartment with DeFreeze on May 17, 1974?

At 9 a.m. on the morning of the fatal shoot-out, Mrs. F. Lishey, the owner of the house that burned down when the SLA were killed, showed DeFreeze and another black man a vacant apartment nearby.

17. One black man was with DeFreeze and the others inside the house on 54th Street on the night

of May 16, 1974

Brenda, 17, spent the night of May 16 in the house with the SLA. She saw guns and ammunition all around. They said they were "getting ready to get out Friday night. It was getting heavy."

"There was another black man with DeFreeze." Was he the same man who looked at the vacant apartment in the morning? Why haven't the FBI and the police released a description of this man?

18. One black man left at 11 a.m., May 17, and never returned

Another black man, not described as the person who slept at the house on Thursday night, visited Donald DeFreeze on Friday morning and left at 11 a.m. Neighbors said they'd seen him before. Who was he? He drove a "green LeMans." He didn't return.

"Ricky Delgado," who purchased the red and white van in San Francisco, was described as 5'11" tall, weighing about 175 pounds. This other "friend" was tall and did not fit the same description.

The "friend" departed at 11 a.m., promising that he "would return later," but he never came back.

Were DeFreeze and his army abandoned?

19. One black man walked out the door of the bungalow on 54th Street just before the shooting began

Was this the signal to begin the attack? The murders at Kent State followed a single shot. Did the SWAT team know who was inside the cottage? Were they told Patty Hearst had been removed?

20. Transportation from Mulholland Drive in the Hollywood Hills to Griffith Park, on the morning of May 17, 1974

On Friday morning, 6 a.m., Emily and William Harris, Patty Hearst and the "kidnapped" Tom Mathews parted company. Mathews was allowed to drive off in his car, leaving the remnants of the SLA near Mulholland Drive in the Hollywood Hills.

Authorities have no description of the vehicle used to get the trio from Mulholland Drive to Griffith Park. Did they walk? If they needed a car, why didn't they leave Tom behind and use his?

21. Transportation from Griffith Park to 54th Street, Inglewood

The Harrises and Patty commandeered a Lincoln Continental from a Mr. Sutter at 8 a.m. Where did they drive it to?

Did Mr. Sutter drop them off to travel on foot, as Tom Mathews did two hours earlier?

Did they drive his car to Inglewood and abandon it?

Who found the car? And where?

Who found Emily, William and Patty? What kind of support did they receive?

22. Patty watched six members of the SLA burn to death from a safe house near 54th Street

Donald DeFreeze and a black male located a vacant apartment nearby a few hours before the shooting erupted.

Was Patty taken to this vacant apartment by the same man who accompanied DeFreeze in the morning?

She stated she had watched her comrades burn to death. She observed the fire but was not seen and recognized.

Was she placed there to further influence her thinking and her determination to stay with the SLA?

23. Two black men with Patty Hearst on Sunday night in Hollywood

L.A. District Attorney Joseph Busch accepted the testimony of Anita Alcala as sufficient evidence to indict Patty Hearst on charges that could mean life in prison.

Two black men and a woman who did not match Patty's physical description knocked on a door in Hollywood, and asked to rent a room for the night.

When Mrs. Alcala refused them, they offered her $500 for the night.

When the $500 was turned down, the woman identified by Mrs. Alcala as "Patty" said, "Do you want to die?"

A black man slashed Anita's house dress with a knife. The trio departed hurriedly in a "red car with a black top." Anita Alcala described the woman she identified as Patty Hearst as "blue-eyed, with long, light-brown hair and wearing a long flowered dress with a brown coat." This description does not match previous descriptions of Patty, who has brown eyes and had recently been described as having her hair cropped short.

L.A. police at first said that they did not have sufficient evidence that this was indeed Patty. But the next day, L.A. District Attorney Busch accepted Mrs. Alcala's testimony and indicted Patricia Hearst.

This "Patty" was officially last seen in Hollywood on May 19, 1974, with two black men. Yet the FBI and police insist that she is now with the Harrises. On what evidence? The FBI and police are only seeking the Harrises and their convert, Patricia Hearst. What about the two black men?

24. Will tactical support come from a CIA safe-house in the Mojave Desert?

Charles Manson and his "family" were moved from the Spahn Ranch in Topanga Canyon to the Barker Ranch in the Mojave Desert following their "arrest," and after the Sharon Tate-La Bianca murders.

The SLA reportedly had maps of deserts, parks, wilderness areas and abandoned mines.

At the time of the incident at Mel's Sporting Goods Store, the Harrises were buying thermal underwear, sleeping bags and other outdoor items.

Over twelve million acres of California desert have suddenly been closed to off-road traffic.

Dic Emily, William and Patty hole up in government safe-houses while law enforcement officers spent the entire summer searching vans, campers, communes, airports and highways?

Law enforcement officials in Ozona, Texas set up roadblocks—24 persons were busted on pot charges, 20 others were arrested, while "looking for Patty."

Many "SLA suspects" have been stopped.

Driving down U.S. 101, Linda Lipsett, her husband and a female friend were tailed by police. "We thought they were going to shoot us." They were forced to lie face down on the pavement, and seven officers held pistols and rifles to their heads.

VII. How Dangerous Was the SLA?

The reason given for the SLA's deaths in Los Angeles was that they were "armed and extremely dangerous."

The Los Angeles police had records indicating that Donald DeFreeze was dangerous. Yet they gave him considerable freedom when he was in prison. He was allowed to "escape" and there was no attempt to retrieve him.

Dr. Foster had been murdered, Robert Blackburn had been shot. Yet when the SLA surfaced, police

didn't believe its members were dangerous enough to be sought. The SLA safe houses and the abandoned apartments in Oakland and Berkeley contained weapons, ammunition and lists of possible kidnapping victims. Still, law enforcement agencies didn't bother to identify or search for this "army," with the exception of Joseph Remiro and Russell Little.

Seven of the SLA had weapons registered in their names. All SLA members except Donald DeFreeze did their target practice at the Chabot Gun Club in Oakland.

Police haven't bothered to locate the third person who participated in the murder of Dr. Foster, or the third person who kidnapped Patricia Hearst.

Willie Wolfe and Angela Atwood, cremated in Los Angeles, were not named as suspects in any crime.

Did the SLA intend to kill?

Were the police violent in not alerting the neighborhood that their lives might be in danger, that homes might burn down? One neighbor's three dogs were burned alive.

The LAPD called in its public relations firm to witness the assault on the 54th Street house. Advertising men would later collaborate with their client, the LAPD, to justify the extermination of lives and whip up public approval for police actions.

Did the police hope the SLA would accidentally wound or kill persons in the neighborhood during the shoot-out? This could have provided the SWAT team with the excuse that they were "protecting lives."

If the SLA and similar groups are dangerous, why do the police supply them with arms? Donald DeFreeze had previously received weapons from the LAPD that were used by him during an armed robbery and shoot-out.

Two men were shot when the SLA fled the Hibernia Bank. How serious were their wounds? Were the men hospitalized? How come we never heard about them again? Were these shootings sufficient justification to murder six persons later?

California law enforcement paid three men to stage a prison "escape" in San Jose at the time of the Angela Davis trial. One of the men was killed. Were the Hibernia Bank shoot-out and the shooting in front of Mel's Sporting Goods Store staged by the same culprits? Would this prove to the public that the SLA could handle weapons?

When the same cast of characters stage continuous conspiracy productions, it is important to consider the similarities.

The worst violence committed by the SLA was the murder of Dr. Foster and the kidnapping of Patricia Hearst. Two men charged with the murder are in jail. If the other SLA members were dangerous, they should have been indicted for Dr. Foster's death. If they were not involved, their "dangerous" description has to be challenged.

Most of the "violence" of the SLA is contained in their tapes, messages and writing on the walls. The planted rhetoric may inflame, but it doesn't hurt, kill or even influence a thinking person.

The SLA had many opportunities to commit serious bodily harm in order to protect their own lives or promote their stated aims. In almost every instance, the violence was more a matter of threat than action.

1. The Assault on Steven Weed

Hearst was kidnapped from an apartment she shared with Steven Weed. Weed was treated for assault wounds.

Compare the media coverage of Weed's bandages injuries to Martha Mitchell's. Martha was also a kidnapped prisoner. She required hospital care and stitches on her finger. Stephen King, the man who inflicted the injuries, was later promoted. He became Chief of Security for CREEP, and went on to an appointment as chief of recruitment for the Department of Agriculture. Martha wondered why no arrests were made.

If assaults by the SLA are dangerous, why are assaults not dangerous when committed by security guards? Law enforcement and selective media coverage make some crimes more "criminal" than others.

2. The "shoot-out" between Joseph Remiro, Russell Little and Police Sergeant Duge

Remiro and Little cruised around in their own neighborhood in a suspicious manner. They opened fire on Officer Duge—but didn't hit him. It was two armed and dangerous men against one. If the SLA team was dangerous, and if they wanted to protect their comrades, they could have either gone directly home or silenced Officer Duge forever. Yet no one was hurt badly. What was this unnecessary street scene about?

3. Why did Remiro turn over his weapon to the police?

If the SLA members are "armed and dangerous," why do they give their weapons away and leave them lying around in vacant buildings and apartments when there is more than sufficient time to pick them up?

Remiro walked out of the Concord "safe-house" with his weapon. He told the arresting officer which pocket it was in.

4. Why didn't the SLA follow the *Minimanual* and barter for their comrades?

Were Remiro and Little really the SLA's political comrades, or is this all talk?

The *Minimanual* advised the exchange of kidnap victims for comrades in prison. But the SLA never mentioned trading Patty Hearst for Remiro and Little.

5. How bad was the shoot-out at Mel's Sporting Goods Store in Inglewood, California?

Was Patricia Hearst instructed to shoot if she saw a member of the team threatened with arrest?

Was the William Harris-Tony Shephard episode intended to cause Patty to shoot in response?

How many witnesses positively identified Patricia Hearst as the woman who fired a weapon in front of Mel's? I haven't read of a single one in the newspapers. (I subscribe to eight.) Was Patty Hearst in the van? Again, no witnesses have made any such statement.

The automatic weapon was fired, the bullets plowed harmlessly into the storefront.

Lee Harvey Oswald, intelligence and FBI agent, staged a phony altercation with Carlos Bringuier in front of the International Trade Mart in New Orleans. The incident was created for the benefit of TV news cameras. The scene was contrived to portray Oswald as a pro-Cuban sympathizer. Did the same people who planned that event also plan the Los Angeles spree that provided the excuse to move in and attack DeFreeze and the others?

Whoever fired the shots did not intend to injure anyone.

6. How do you borrow a Pontiac?

The Harrises and "Tania" abandoned their red and white $1,800 van. Instead of asking for a short ride, they projected an unnecessarily violent image in the presence of an unsuspecting woman. "We are the SLA. We need your car. I have to kill someone, but I don't want to kill you."

Two blocks and much talk later, the car was abandoned.

7. Do you need a submachine gun to borrow a Chevrolet?

The Pontiac "malfunctioned" within a few minutes. A man "believed to be William Harris"

(unverified) ran up to a man "with his submachine gun" and commandeered the use of a Chevrolet.

Was the SLA dangerous, or merely showing off their weapons?

If they needed this car badly enough, they could have kidnapped the owner, tied him up or murdered him, and kept the car.

8. Why didn't the SLA tie up Tom Mathews and keep his van?

The Harrises and Patty drove Tom Mathews around Hollywood Hills for twelve hours.

One stop was at a hardware store. They bought a hacksaw to remove one handcuff still on William Harris' wrist. Why didn't they buy rope as well, tie up Mathews, take his van, warn the others that Emily's gun and the van were lost at Mel's?

The SLA was so non-violent and polite that after taking in *The New Centurions* at a drive-in movie and joy-riding all night, they let Mathews drive off in his own van, walked the Hollywood Hills on foot at 6:00 am.

9. Mr. Sutter wasn't hurt by the SLA

At 8 a.m., May 17, the SLA was still walking around in Griffith Park. They borrowed a Lincoln Continental, drove around for a few hours, and took $250 from a Mr. Sutter.

It isn't clear whether Sutter went along for the ride, or was left off when they took his car.

Did Mr. Sutter, like Tom Mathews, leave the SLA on foot again?

The pacifist yet violent SLA got around in Los Angeles without hurting anyone.

10. Why didn't the six SLA, so soon to die, stave off the assault with hostages?

Were the SLA even capable of harming people? When the police arrived to encircle them, they didn't hold Christine Johnson, Brenda or the children in the cottage.

There was no indication that they would have harmed anyone to save their own lives.

11. Who fired the first shot?

There has to be a reason for the massive gunfire and firebomb siege.

Would careful examination of the building, if not burned, show that the SLA fired the first shot? Is it possible that the first bullet came from behind and through the building, as a signal to begin the massive and deadly assault?

Police claim that a bullhorn was used to issue a warning. No neighbor or nearby witness heard it.

Remember the Gulf of Tonkin "raid?" The illegal bombing of Cambodia? The one-shot signal that set off the Kent State murders? The umbrella that went down just before John Kennedy was hit with a deadly crossfire?

Did Cinque fire at the police? Or were the SLA surrounded on every side, with no chance to live after police sent out the first shot?

If Cinque was prepared for a battle with the LAPD, might he not have aimed to take at least one "pig" with him?

Even in death, the SLA weren't violent. Counting the ammo on hand is no proof of their capacity to kill.

Not a single officer or passerby was injured by the SLA.

12. Why did the SLA cut Mrs. Alcala's dress and not use her room if they needed a place to stay?

Violence isn't cutting a six-inch slice in someone's housedress and threatening, "do you want to die?"

There is no proof that Patty Hearst ever went near Mrs. Alcala's motel.

If the SLA needed a place to stay, there was an empty room and they were short of money, all they had to do was walk into Mrs. Alcala's apartment, silence her, use the place for the night, keep the $500 and leave. The charge against Patty was "assault with a deadly weapon" anyway, although the gun she allegedly pointed at Anita Alcala didn't even go off.

VIII. Why the Charges Against Patty?

"I no longer seem to have any importance as a human being. However, I have become all-important as a political pivot point for certain right-wing elements and I can only be used successfully by these people if I am killed."

– Patty Hearst, March, 1974

Why was it necessary to introduce the conversion of Tania with writing all over the walls in the Golden Gate apartment? Why was it necessary to introduce Tania to the tellers at the Hibernia Bank while the SLA was taking the money? "This is Tania," they said.

William or Emily Harris dropped a weapon registered in Emily's name at Mel's Sporting Goods Store. This action announced that the SLA was in town. They had used aliases at other times. Why not with the weapon purchase?

Why did William Harris think it necessary to introduce Patty Hearst to Tom Mathews? Bill, Emily and Patty "kidnapped" Tom on the pretense that they needed transportation. Instead of using his van *for any rational purpose*, they created the circumstances by which Patty Hearst would be indicted on 19 charges the next Monday morning.

The ride with Mathews had to have a purpose.

Who arranged the "For Sale" sign on the van that belonged to Mathews? Was he a police provocateur who willingly went for the ride—and cooperated with D.A. Joseph Busch?

During the ride, William Harris made a point of introducing his partner in crime. "Do you know who this is? This is Tania," William told Tom.

Why did Patty bother to wear a wig or disguise if her friends were always introducing her by name?

Why build a kidnapping case on a 12-hour ride, killing time at a drive-in movie, when they didn't use the van for any specific purpose?

During the 12-hour ride, Patty explained how she robbed the bank. Then she confessed to shooting it out at Mel's Sporting Goods Store.

Patricia demonstrated the loading of an automatic weapon.

By the time the 12 hours were over, 19 charges could be filed against Patricia Hearst. And they were.

At 6 a.m., May 17, Tom Mathews drove off in his own van, leaving William, Emily and Patty on foot in the Hollywood Hills. Twelve hours later, their six SLA comrades would be dead.

Why was there a classified ad in the *L.A. Free Press* the week the Harrises arrived in L.A., with references to their "attempt to destroy the potential of a human mind?"

The Harrises led Patty Hearst through numerous confessions that led to the indictments against her. Yet the provocateur Harrises can come out clean.

FBI Director Charles Bates stated publicly on May 10, 1974 that "the Harrises are less militant than their six SLA comrades. So far, the Harrises were not overtly involved in any of these incidences."

On Sunday night, May 19, Patty acted out an assault scene … that is, if you accept the description of a "blue eyed" Patty.

For the Alcala episode, Patty Hearst was charged with “assault with a deadly weapon.” If convicted, the penalty could be life in prison.

The black men with her were never wanted by police.

Patty was framed and led through all the actions that led to her 22 indictments.

District Attorney Busch and U.S. Attorney Browning charged her with five counts of assault with intent to commit murder; four counts of assault with a deadly weapon, three counts of unlawfully taking a vehicle, kidnapping and kidnapping for the purpose of robbery.

The last charge carries a life sentence on conviction.

How would Tom Mathews know the woman in his van was Patty Hearst? He never saw her before. If Donald DeFreeze has a double, was there a double for Patty as well?

The FBI admitted they didn’t have Patty’s fingerprints. Yet the basis for indicting her after the 12-hour ride with Mathews was “fingerprints” the LAPD never had.

Why was D.A. Joseph Busch in such a hurry to press indictments based on the testimony of such flimsy witnesses?

Why was U.S. Attorney James Browning so anxious to press immediate charges against Patty after the SLA deaths in Los Angeles?

Patty knew the FBI wanted her dead.

She was no longer important to the SLA charade.

By reducing her alternatives, a shoot-out could be encouraged, thereby assuring her death.

Only by analyzing how she was charged, and determining who set her up, is it possible to know that Patty and the SLA were not the dangerous ones. As usual, the military and police have a monopoly in that department.

IX. The Death Trap

Before:
“If you see him, nail him.”
– LAPD

After:
“Our mission is accomplished.”
– SWAT Team, LAPD

“In all my years as a coroner, I’ve never seen this kind of behavior in the face of living flames.”
—Dr. Noguchi, L.A. County Coroner

Were the six members of the SLA willing to die?

Was the SLA deliberately massacred?

The SLA tapes made frequent references to accepting death as a condition of their struggle. The passages about death could have been written by agents. Did they mean death after service, not realizing they would be killed as patsies? It is noble to die for your beliefs. It is pitiful to lose your life without having accomplished any of your goals.

The SLA murdered Dr. Foster, wounded Robert Blackburn, robbed a bank and kidnapped Patricia Hearst. This was the sum total of their revolutionary contributions.

They left behind a heritage of death lists, including black leaders Huey Newton and Bobby Seale.

Six comrades were killed.

Notice that the military-CIA agents who gathered this group together and framed Patty Hearst are still alive? They are not even suspects.

Donald DeFreeze named Colston Westbrook, Chris Thompson and Robyn Steiner as espionage agents. They are alive. DeFreeze is dead.

Cinque had to be murdered. He was talking too much.

For the cover stories concerning the purposes of the SLA to hold, the group had to be lured to their death trap—*and they all had to die*. Sam Williams, president of the Board of Police Commissioners, said their "most important task" was to "neutralize" the SLA.

Their strange behavior "in the face of living flames" is only unusual *if they had a choice*.

What were the alternatives? 1. Self-immolation, burning alive. 2. Expectation of escape support, which didn't arrive. 3. Out of contact with reality, drugged; medically or electronically controlled. 4. Escape attempts thwarted by the police. 5. They never had a chance to live.

Were they murdered *before* the flames consumed the building?

1. Self-Immolation

Was the SLA as dedicated to its tiny army as Buddhist monks who set fire to their bodies?

If they wanted to die, why would they wear gas masks, cartridge belts and load their guns?

Were they dedicated to that point?

How could these college graduates from the Bay Area know enough about oppression to choose to make this sacrifice?

The FBI's incendiary bombs gave them little choice, much less a religious dedication. They didn't set fire to themselves.

2. Expecting back-up support?

On Thursday night, Donald DeFreeze told a neighbor: "We are getting out on Friday. Things are getting heavy."

Friday morning, 9:00 a.m.: DeFreeze was looking for another location, an apartment in the neighborhood.

Friday morning, 11:00 a.m.: A tall black man left the house on 54th Street, promising, "I will be back as soon as I get a car." He never returned.

3:30 p.m.: Another black man whispered into DeFreeze's ear and departed. Did he make a promise to return? Was DeFreeze programmed, post-hypnotically instructed to "remain in this building and don't leave"?

The same LAPD that lured DeFreeze to his death trap in Los Angeles had advance notice of the prison escape in Marin County a few years earlier, when Jonathan Jackson was murdered. Jackson was expecting vans to follow behind. When he got outside the court with Judge Haley and other hostages, Jackson was left stranded and alone. LAPD officers Mahoney and Sherritt were up there at the shooting. They told Louis Tackwood to "get his ass out of there" and he was put on a bus.

3. Out of contact with reality: Were the SLA controlled by drugs, electrodes or hypnosis?

What "favors" did DeFreeze do for Vacaville Medical Facility?

Massive experiments in mind control are performed on prisoners' brains today.

Were electrodes or transponders inserted into DeFreeze's brain?

The wires are no thicker than a hair, the insertion point no larger than a grain of wheat.

The effect of tranquilizers that alter the brain can persist for a month after withdrawal from the drugs.

There is no way to detect their presence, because all traces disappear from the bloodstream within a few hours.

Joseph Remiro and Nancy Ling Perry, two SLA members, were dependent on drugs.

A druggist was mentioned as the brains behind the entire SLA operation.

Christine Johnson, the last person to see the SLA alive, woke up from a "drugged sleep" in the middle of the gun battle. That is unusual, considering the excitement in her home. Her houseguests were storing ammunition under the floor on Thursday evening. Was Ms. Johnson bored? It was 5 p.m. and all this activity going on … Why was Christine Johnson asleep?

Camilla Hall, according to Christine, was walking around "like a zombie. She was carrying some bottles in her hands."

If the six SLA members were dependent upon outside suppliers for wine and LSD, grass or cigarettes, would it not be possible to control their emotions and reduce their anxiety in the face of death? The CIA and intelligence agencies have an unlimited capacity to subdue persons through additives to their food and drink.

Black FBI agent William O'Neill, Panther leader Fred Hampton's "bodyguard," drugged Hampton and Mark Clark the night of the police shootout in Chicago, in 1969. Hampton and Clark died. San Francisco FBI Director Charles Bates, who is now in charge of the SLA affair, was director of the Chicago FBI at that time.

There were two messages in the underground press that referred to the SLA and thought control. Who put them there and why? What was their meaning?

"Two are cowards who are fascinated with their own talent, that being to manipulate others to their own destruction without those others even being aware of their own manipulation."
– *Berkeley Barb*, Feb. 22. 1974

"Angela A., Emily H., and Bill H., your silent support for the attempt to destroy the potential of a human mind, and anti-humanist philosophy that teaches impossible purism is unbelievable."
– *L.A. Free Press*, May 4, 1974

One of the 15 motives for creating the SLA was revival of plans for the UCLA Institute for the Study and Prevention of Violence.

The proposed Institute is anxious to experiment with transponders, electrodes and reduction of prisoners' reasoning abilities. The experimental subjects would be blacks, Chicanos, Indians, women, children and radicals.

A carefully guarded secret has been the massive brain experimentation and hypnosis programs taking place in prisons and mental hospitals during the past 15 years.

An inmate from Vacaville Medical Facility wrote that he was employed holding down prisoners against their will while Actine and Rudall were administered. Double doses were given for no reason, bringing about "distinct changes in personalities."

Over the past year, I have been accumulating evidence of mind-altering methods and how they pertain to past political assassinations.

The U.S. has financed psychosurgical experiments in Boston by Drs. Mark, Ervin and Sweet that are now spreading around the country. Plans exist that could turn large masses of the population into zombies to be used for future slave labor and kamikaze war troops. Prisoners are the experimental scapegoats.

Dr. Jose Delgado, funded by NASA and Naval Intelligence, is an expert in controlling behavior with implanted electrodes. Because this is done at Vacaville Medical Facility and Atascadero Hospital in California, it is important to relate Delgado's underlying philosophy, the justification for this radical

procedure:

"We need a program of psychosurgery for political control of our society. The purpose is physical control of the mind. Everyone who deviates from the given norm can be surgically mutilated. The individual may think that the most important reality is his own existence, but this is only his personal point of view. This lacks historical perspective. Man does not have the right to develop his own mind. This kind of liberal orientation has great appeal. We must electrically control the brain. Some day armies and generals will be controlled by electric stimulation of the brain."

—Dr. José Delgado, *Congressional Record*,

No. 26, Vol. 118, February 24, 1974

Destroying "the potential of a human mind" is exactly what Delgado and California prison doctors are working on.

Is it a coincidence that the red and white van that brought the SLA to Los Angeles was purchased under the fictitious name of "Ricky Delgado"?

Delgado is a man who destroys the mind before the others destroy the flesh.

All of the men registered at the Watergate Hotel on June 17, 1972 used false names taken from E. Howard Hunt's spy novels. The use of aliases with special meanings to "insiders" is common practice in CIA operations.

What appeared as irrational behavior by the SLA in the face of the flames could have been explained by examining the medical records of DeFreeze at Vacaville—if they hadn't been destroyed.

The behavior of the six SLA members on the day of their deaths, from all available accounts, seems to have been out of contact with reality. In some way, they were drugged, hypnotized or controlled. When the flames grew hot enough for a few to try to escape, they were shot and killed by the police.

All six were well educated and aware that they were fugitives. They were connected with the death of Dr. Marcus Foster, a bank robbery and the kidnap of Patty Hearst.

They were surrounded by police, yet they showed no anxiety.

They loudly announced their presence—"We are the SLA"—instead of hiding while they tried to muster a larger "army."

They were dependent on others for food, drinks, cigarettes and other supplies, allowing themselves to be boxed in.

They sent strangers in and out of the building on errands, exhibiting no anxiety or fear of betrayal.

They showed no tension while the streets filled with more police agents.

Recruitment went on "as usual," even though the SLA had not added one new member in a year's time.

White women wore Afro wigs, a pathetic identification that hardly went unnoticed.

They strapped on ammunition belts while they asked a young neighbor: "Please join the army. We need more blacks."

Pathetic "guerrilla" outfits were worn—shades of Che Guevara in a Hollywood Bolivian jungle set.

Donald DeFreeze casually walked out of the front door and came back in. Willie Wolfe lay on the bed, turning his pistol toward the ceiling. There was no transportation available if they wanted to leave.

Guns were strewn on the floor. Stephanie Reed, a casual visitor, was asked if she had "any bullets or knives."

Christine Johnson fell asleep, drugged. The shooting woke her up in time to flee before the flames burst out.

If the SLA intended war with the LAPD, nobody on the other side was injured.

This was a group of six persons cut off from the world, calm, detached, going through a few last pathetic motions before they died.

4. Escape attempts thwarted

Did the SLA make any effort to escape before the heat of the flames consumed them?
There are indications that some would have left the building—if they had been allowed.
Nancy Ling Perry's burned body was found outside the house.
Camilla Hall came left the house and was slain.
Police radio logs reveal that some would have departed.

"There's one down and one's firing. He came out and went back in, possibly hit. He's still firing. Three females are shooting."
—LAPD radio

Who came out? Was he hit?

5. They never had a chance to live—were they murdered before the flames consumed the building?

First accounts said, "Bullets that killed the victims came from a considerable distance."
Twenty-four hours later, DeFreeze must have grown a long arm—on second thought, he was a "suicide," shot through the temple at very *close* range. Did the revision prevent lawsuits and investigations?
One of the SLA had "an unidentifiable severe head injury." The investigators were puzzled about how she got that. Have they come up with an answer yet?
Camilla Hall and Nancy Ling Perry died instantly.
Camilla was shot through "the center of her forehead." That was a fine shot … considering the SWAT team was far away, the SLA wore gas masks and the walls of the house were plaster with no view from the front.
It was later announced that she had been killed outside the house.
Nancy Ling Perry died from a "gunshot wound through the back that severed the spinal cord." The window to the back alley was open. Were they killed at close range from the back of the house?
The fire in the front of the house created a wall of flames that prevented escape, and they were pushed toward the back. Were they murdered from behind?
The police radio picked up a conversation between two officers during the siege. At the height of the shooting, a barefoot man in shorts and T-shirt, with a police badge, was seen trotting past the rear of the besieged house. "What is he, a jogger?" asked the FBI.
There was a window in back of the bungalow. It gave a clear view through the alley to 56th Street and Compton Boulevard. DeFreeze sent Brenda Daniels to Sam's corner store on 56th Street for food and cigarettes. "He told me he was going to watch me through the alley."
Was this the same alley where an off-duty sheriff was seen running before the flames consumed the building?
Police units described a man running down from 56th Street behind the house. "There's a man moving on you north on 56th, a hundred yards, that could be an off-duty sheriff in plain clothes. I just saw him a while ago. There's one down and one firing."
Were shots fired at close range?

It is impossible to tell, because Nancy Ling Perry's body and William Wolfe's body were cremated. Dr. Wolfe couldn't locate his son's body. By the time he arrived in Los Angeles, he was informed that Willie had already been cremated with his "mother's consent." Would a medical doctor have hurried to destroy possible criminal evidence?

Donald DeFreeze's body was sent back to Ohio three days after his death for burial, minus head and fingers. Why the delay in forwarding his remains? Why was the only black member of the SLA singled out for decapitation?

Witnesses saw gasoline poured along the back of the building. Both sides of the house were in flames.

The bodies were burned beyond recognition. Black men had assisted DeFreeze into the house. The LAPD knew exactly who they had to murder. Long before the dental charts arrived for identification, the media announced: "Donald DeFreeze is dead." And the SWAT team retired, radioed: "Our mission is accomplished."

If Patty Hearst was no longer of importance to any group but the right wing, neither was the original SLA.

The motives for creating this first army had been accomplished.

The most reason for murdering them was to *bury any evidence that would explain how such an unlikely assembly ever came together in the first place.*

Donald DeFreeze, Nancy Ling Perry, Camilla Hall, Barbara Soltysik, Angela Atwood and Willie Wolfe were slain.

The agents who directed this episode are preparing for their next assignments.

X. How Do You Tell a CIA Espionage Plot From a Revolutionary, Radical, Terrorist, Guerrilla Army?

1. Cover Story

2. Coincidence?

3. Dummy Fronts

4. Media and Propaganda

5. Indications of CIA Conspiracy

6. Indications of FBI Collusion

7. The Tom Charles Huston Plan: Combined Efforts of the White House, Vice-President, Justice Department, Intelligence Agencies, Military, Police Departments, and Prison Systems.

1. The Cover Story

Secret intelligence operations do more than gather information. Espionage agents overthrow governments, select leaders and do everything possible to prevent Third World change from taking place.

The *cover story* is the official version of what clandestine operatives are doing. These lies conceal multiple crimes.

A. The SLA was "influenced" by "Maoist" teachings and the *Minimanual of the Urban Guerrilla*

This "blueprint for terrorism" is an excuse for government escalation of a red hunt.

There is nothing Asian or Brazilian about SLA tactics.

Every action they took violated the book's instructions, including kidnapping, feeding the poor and failing to protect themselves.

A ring of high-level public officials, assisted by intelligence agents from Florida to California, have sought to break the University of California for seven years. They centered their conspiracy on Berkeley assisted hijackers to gain complete control over airport entrances.

The same agencies are creating a series of kidnappings. They began to escalate immediately after "America's first political kidnapping," Patty Hearst.

Vice Consul John S. Patterson's kidnap and subsequent murder in Mexico were arranged by the CIA. The agent, Bobby Keesee, was arrested at his San Diego home on May 29, 1974.

The facts behind Reg Murphy's kidnapping in Atlanta were hushed up because it was a step in a wider conspiracy.

Albert Dantzler's escapade in Florida was first called a kidnapping, but turned out to be a hoax.

There are about 27 of these recent kidnappings, each of which must be carefully studied and exposed before "kidnap" gets out of hand. The Argentine police have been calling them "self-introduced kidnappings."

B. The Black Cultural Association gave birth to the SLA. Officials at Vacaville and Soledad prisons may have been asleep

Conspiracies against radical prisoners have existed for years. The public had just begun to wake up and become involved, seeking better legal aid for prisoners and questioning prison policies.

Allowing CIA agents and police informers to create the SLA inside the prison system provided the excuse for tighter control over visitors. Genuine reform movements can be kept outside.

C. The Black Cultural Association was formed to teach black history and identity

Black studies programs were permitted for black inmates. But BCA "tutors" at Vacaville had no training or familiarity with blacks and the prison system.

Colston Westbrook, the black leader of the group, grew up in an all-white community in Pennsylvania.

D. Donald DeFreeze was consumed by fantasies

DeFreeze couldn't have survived one year outside of prison sans police support. The Prison Superintendent didn't provide transport for DeFreeze's departure because he loved Maoist-trained black radicals giving revolutionary raised-fist salutes.

E. The group of young people going into the prisons regularly were interested in prison reform

Why would out-of-state police agents—with no known relationship with one black or prisoner anywhere—arrive to reform the California prisons?

How did these people manage to single out some of the most wanted targets of the California Department of Corrections for their visits, such as Doc Holiday and members of the Black Guerrilla Family?

Where did they get the names of these particular prisoners?

Why were future members of the SLA permitted to visit more than one prisoner at a time? No one else can.

Why did Emily Harris drive 200 miles to San Luis Obispo and back, twice a week, to visit Doc Holiday? He had been held back from parole by the Department of Corrections. The Senate Hearings on Civil Disorder may now link him with the SLA and keep him in jail to prevent "violence" on the streets.

What reforms did the SLA suggest or initiate?

What political trials of prisoners in the Bay area did the SLA attend?

2. Coincidence?

A. Knowing too much can be bad for your health

1. William A.H. Williams, charged with kidnapping publisher Reg Murphy in Atlanta, said: "if we're caught, you tell them we know all about the Symbionese Liberation Army."

Immediately, a notation was whisked from the federal marshal to the police blotter, stating Williams had "suicidal tendencies." This information came from Williams' Naval discharge file.

2. Three men kidnapped Eunice Kronholm in Minneapolis, March, 1974. The FBI, under the Hobbs Act, immunized them from kidnapping charge. Instead, they were booked on a lighter count of extortion.

James Johnson, one of the three men charged, pled innocent in the case, claiming "the hoodlum element downtown was involved in the abduction." He was mysteriously shot in the head in May, and was taken to the neurological intensive care unit for possible brain damage.

B. San Diego espionage?

Black Abductor, published in 1972, was a short novel that anticipated much of the Hearst kidnapping two years in advance. The unknown author, using a non-existent publisher, was identified only as a San Diego resident.

San Diego was the city designated for the kidnapping of radicals in 1972. This plan was drawn up by Attorney General John Mitchell, White House intelligence teams and the same agencies involved with the SLA two years later. Attorney General Evelle Younger, Los Angeles Police Department, and the CCS were to crack down on hippies and anti-war protestors.

C. Is selling the Zebra murders like selling 7-Up?

The J. Walter Thompson Advertising Agency, a well-known supplier of White House staffers, took on a new client in the fall of 1973. San Francisco Chief of Police D. Scott announced at a press conference that San Francisco law enforcement required the services of an advertising and public relations firm. In August, the "Zebra" killings and Hearst kidnapping were about to break. Was the San Francisco Police Department preparing to protect its image in the media?

D. "Victim" candidates

Election years and criminal conspiracies often seem to coincide. California State Senator John Harmer, Evelle Younger, and Joseph Alioto were running for office in the summer of 1974. The men who exploited the racist, radical-scare tactics the hardest, tried to identify themselves as victims of SLA-type violence. Alioto and Younger, by coincidence, were victims of what I believe were provocateur bombings. Senator Harmer spread totally unfounded fears of kidnapping and future terrorism.

E. The use of the dead for identity—a common espionage tactic

Russell Little also went by the name "Robert James Scalise." Robert Scalise died of leukemia in Oakland in 1963.

Frank Sturgis, defendant in the Watergate break-in, was granted IRS tax-exempt status for his Miami Church three days before he was arrested. One of the three people listed on the board of directors of this

fictitious church was a Mrs. Doris Hunt. Mrs. Hunt died of cancer in a nursing home on March 22, 1952.

Eugen Wrangell was sent to San Quentin for the purpose of murdering Sirhan Sirhan. $25,000 cash is in an account, deposited by one of the White House Plumber teams from the CIA. Wrangell has asked for help and wants assistance to get out. They now have him confined on an altercation with the San Quentin priest. Vladimir Alexander Zatco is the espionage name he uses in prison. The name is from a man who died in an automobile accident in Italy in 1968. He was given orders to assume his identity.

F. Visible deception

A "Free Huey Newton" poster hung on the walls of Donald Segretti's office when he was a military intelligence spy at Fort Ord. Segretti wore his hair long, and a peace symbol dangled from a chain around his neck. At the time, Segretti was flying to the White House, preparing for espionage assignments.

A "Free Huey Newton" poster hung in the trailer of William Harris, recently returned from Vietnam, while he was a student at the University of Indiana.

The burned-out SLA safe house on Sutherland Court was decorated with Huey Newton's name and the floor plan of his apartment, suggesting that the SLA planned to murder the Black Panther leader. Posters of political subjects or personalities often conceal motives.

3. Dummy Fronts

A dummy front may be a legitimate business or a fictitious operation. The purpose of creating or using the organization is to conceal espionage activities.

A. Department of Urban Affairs

Is the University of California Extension a cover for CIA agent Colston Westbrook? SLA member Willie Wolfe became a student in Westbrook's class immediately after he arrived in California.

Wolfe recently returned from nine months in Europe.

Westbrook had also been to Europe.

There were no indications that Wolfe took classes apart from Westbrook's.

Colston Westbrook, after serving in the CIA in Asia for seven years, returned to the University of California to teach under the Department of Urban Affairs.

William Harris, police agent in Indiana, had just received his master's degree in Urban Affairs. Westbrook was teaching Black Lexicon, a language course. Harris was driving a postal truck.

B. Survey Research Center, Polling Offices

White House tapes and recent Watergate exposures illustrate how many hundreds of thousands of dollars went into secret "polling offices."

Emily Harris, teacher and college graduate, moved to California and was hired as a typist at the Survey Research Center. In her free time—or while employed—she visited black radical prisoners.

Did the Survey Research Center have access to Patty Hearst's schedule? They denied it. But then, John Mitchell denied employing James McCord for the Watergate burglary.

C. College of Foreign Affairs, University of Indiana

Georgetown University in Washington, D.C. and the University of Indiana have similar think-tank study groups.

Future SLA members Emily and William Harris and Angela Atwood all studied at the think-tank together.

There has been no explanation of their move to California. Upon arrival there, they were employed as

waitress, typist, postal delivery truck driver and part time teacher. Gary Atwood's employment for over a year was never stated.

D. "Architects and Engineers"

This Los Angeles-based firm provided logistical support for the CIA Phoenix Program in Vietnam.

Colston Westbrook used it as his cover. He worked for the firm from February 5, 1966, to September, 1969, and traveled to Cambodia, India, Japan, Hong Kong, the Philippines, Okinawa and the USSR.

E. Black Cultural Association, Vacaville Medical Facility

The BCA was approved by prison officials because it would soon be infiltrated. Westbrook, home after seven years in the CIA, "volunteered" his services twice a week to lead the group.

Out of the BCA was born the SLA. This controlled manipulation of agents was nurtured inside the prisons to hurt inmates later.

4. Use of Media and Propaganda

San Francisco FBI Director Charles Bates knew that it took more than a tape recorder to start a revolution. Newspapers had to print the messages. Radio stations had to play the tapes.

Just before the SLA was launched, after Patty was kidnapped, there was a series of murders and kidnappings of media persons to ensure extra media attention.

9-73: Shooting at San Francisco's KGO radio station while Jim Dunbar was on the air. Ben Munson, a station employee, was killed. Lawrence Kwong, the gunman, shot himself. The circumstances surrounding this shooting episode are wide open for investigation. It was quickly buried.

2-74: Robert Shethen, film editor for KBHK-TV, San Francisco, was murdered in the Tiki Bar.

2-74: Patricia Hearst, heiress of the famous newspaper chain, was kidnapped.

2-74: Reg Murphy, editor of the *Atlanta Constitution*, was kidnapped. Radio and TV were played his tapes.

3-74: Ben Maidenberg, publisher, and his son, from Akron, Ohio, were the objects of a $2 million "feed the poor" kidnapping threat.

Radio stations in the Bay Area were manipulated into playing the SLA communiqués "to save Patty's life."

Newspapers were ordered to print all SLA communiqués.

The media were put in the position of advertising a "revolution." If they failed to cooperate, Patty Hearst might be killed. TV and radio time worth hundreds of thousands of dollars was donated free for the SLA's public appearance.

William Knowland, editor and publisher of the *Oakland Tribune*, died mysteriously on February 24, 1974. The *Tribune* had refused to continue printing SLA communiqués. Knowland had refused to hold up the story of Patty's kidnapping.

The cover story for Knowland's "suicide" was his concern over the shooting of Dr. Marcus Foster, and a "fear of being kidnapped." Can this be the first time a man shot himself because he was afraid he might be murdered? There is much more to this story.

The J. Walter Thompson Advertising Agency told us the Cold War and the Marshall Plan, conceived of the War Advertising Council to promote World War II. Is it any wonder that their new clients, the San Francisco Police, felt they were ready to undertake domestic U.S. warfare with media support behind them?

The LAPD wouldn't murder the six SLA members until their public relations men were in position to observe. Commander Peter Hagan, LAPD's PR chief, was told: "An operation is coming down that will

require a public relations spokesman." TV cameramen and reporters were given more time to get to the SLA house on 54th Street than the occupants were given to leave the building.

Immediately after the Marine-trained SWAT team burned a few houses and cremated six individuals, media praise began to ring out. Members of Congress, L.A.'s Mayor Tom Bradley and Randolph Hearst were interviewed. All defended the police action.

The media forced us to participate in the destruction of lives and homes. They were on the spot with cameras, tape recorders and pencils.

The media called in people to acclaim the historic actions of the brave SWAT team, and praise them for "saving lives."

Media conventions didn't waste time, either. Their guest speakers were persons directly involved in the SLA conspiracy.

FBI Director Clarence Kelley warned of the dangers of "kidnapping" at a newspaper editors' convention in March, 1974. There is nothing admirable about kidnappings. But why do law enforcement officials talk only about certain kinds of kidnapping? What about the kidnapping of Dita Beard? Or Martha Mitchell?

Raymond Procunier, director of the California Department of Corrections, lectured at the 28th Annual Convention of the AP and Television and Radio Associations. Kelley and Procunier should have fired some of their agents for bungling, collusion with the SLA and obvious conspiratorial involvement. Instead, these men spoke to the media as honored guests, continuing the propaganda about the fictitious army.

The media are still using COINTELPRO orders to "leak fabrications" and "warn of violence." FBI Director Kelley foresaw future terrorist acts. The CIA, in conjunction with the warning, can bring about the violence. They work together.

5. Indications the SLA is a CIA Operation

A. Victor Marchetti, former CIA agent, author of *The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence*, warned of CIA plans to target subversives

"Upheaval is what prompts the CIA to begin planning clandestine activities. The CIA conducts semi-legal operations around the world. It might begin to conduct them in the United States.

"The men of the Agency are superpatriots. It is only natural for them to view violent protest and dissidence as a major threat to the nation. The inbred CIA reaction would be to launch a clandestine operation to infiltrate dissident groups.

The U.S. intelligence community is already targeting on groups in this country they feel to be subversive."

Radical groups and movements infiltrated by the SLA were precise targets of the CIA and FBI. The White House moves on these groups after special moneyed interests invest huge sums to buy political officials, including the President.

B. Phony letters like the SLA communiqués are standard CIA policy

The U.S. Embassy admitted that a CIA agent sent the Thai government a phony letter in January, 1974. It was signed with the name of an insurgent leader, and proposed a cease-fire.

The SLA claimed credit for bombings and airplane crashes, and threatened that poisoned gas would be released over Los Angeles. These, too, can be CIA creations.

C. Louis Tackwood, agent provocateur for the LAPD, exposed CIA links to police agencies in 1971

The Glass House Tapes, Tackwood's account of prison, police, FBI and CIA conspiracies against radicals and black prisoners, is vital reading to understand the concept of the SLA "army."

D. SLA weapons and ammunition were partly supplied by police and the military

Only a few guns were traced to purchases in the local area. The CIA keeps a stockpile of unidentifiable weapons in the Midwest.

"They have all kinds of military equipment, all kinds of unmarked weapons. Over the years they have bought everything they could get their hands on from all over the world that is untraceable. The CIA even used to send weapons buyers around to buy arms from the Soviet bloc countries."

– Victor Marchetti

William Harris, Willie Wolfe and Colston Westbrook travelled a great deal. It is possible that they met earlier, purchased weapons or tapped military intelligence for SLA caches.

E. Louis Tackwood described and illustrated CIA infiltration inside the prisons starting late in 1969

Colston Westbrook returned from his CIA Asian assignment after seven years. In January, 1970, he began his "tour" at Vacaville Medical Facility. He "volunteered" his time as a teacher, twice a week for two years.

On January 14, 1970, William Nolan, Cleveland Edwards and Alvin Miller were murdered in the yard at Soledad Prison. This date marked the beginning of internal domestic warfare by the rigged courts, police departments, FBI, CIA and prison officials against radical prisoners. Creation of the SLA is an escalation of the policy that began in 1970.

6. Indications that the SLA is an FBI Operation

After Patty was kidnapped, Randolph Hearst was completely surrounded by the FBI. It was impossible to reach him by telephone or letter to suggest a federal conspiracy. All messages were screened by the FBI.

The FBI controlled the media coverage. KGO radio wouldn't broadcast talk shows that didn't follow the radical-terrorist story line. The *San Francisco Chronicle* kept from its pages all evidence of police collusion.

The FBI was responsible for reducing the charges against the three suspects in the Eunice Kronholm kidnapping in Minneapolis.

The FBI quickly closed the investigation of the Reg Murphy kidnapping in Atlanta. The Bureau protected the right-wing para-military group that worked with the CIA.

The FBI taunted Joseph Remiro and Russell Little in San Quentin. Before a meeting with them regarding Patty Hearst, they took Remiro and Little, in chains, past the gas chamber.

On March 1, 1974, Camilla Hall withdrew $1,565 from the Bank of America's Central Branch, 2187 Shattuck Avenue, in Berkeley. FBI offices are across the street from the bank. The Bureau could not spare a man to stake out the bank, though a spokesman admitted it was known that Camilla Hall maintained an account there. The FBI had some 300 agents assigned to the Hearst case at the time. They did not even arrange for the bank to notify them if Camilla Hall made a withdrawal. Camilla could continue to use her account, safe from FBI or police interference.

This is a safe way to fund an espionage operation.

The FBI was quick to place the children of Folsom Prison guards under protection. At the same time, the names of others listed as potential targets of SLA assassination or kidnapping attempts were withheld. Black educator Richard Foster and Black Panther Huey Newton were not notified that they might be in

danger. Neither was Patty Hearst.

Selected senators and assemblymen—the very ones who campaign the hardest for the death penalty and harsh legal punishment—jump on the bandwagon for more laws against terrorists, but only civil rights leaders or workers for the less privileged are ever murdered. The FBI throws its protection to the extreme right wing.

The FBI rushed out a new "Ten Most Wanted" SLA poster. They did not include the third person who kidnapped Patty, or the third person who murdered Dr. Marcus Foster. There was the usual selective urgency in dramatizing their story.

Robyn Steiner, Russell Little's friend from Florida, was protected by the FBI and police. She moved west in the summer of 1972 with the others, went into the prisons, and stayed with the group until December, 1973. Robyn didn't have to come west to testify before the grand jury. A police intelligence officer quietly went to Florida to assure Robyn that things were cool for her.

Robyn was named as an FBI informant by Donald DeFreeze. The special treatment some SLA members received proves that this FBI-CIA conspiracy is no different from Watergate or other affairs.

The San Francisco law offices of attorney Vincent Hallinan were broken into to retrieve SLA messages. The FBI wanted them so they broke in and took them.

The SLA warned that Patty Hearst's life depended on fair treatment for Remiro and Little in San Quentin. Guards beat the men in custody and forced them to conclude "U.S. Attorney General William Saxbe and FBI Director Clarence Kelley want Patricia Hearst to die to discredit the SLA." Deputies spread rumors throughout the jail where Remiro and Little were taken that they had attacked a black prisoner at San Quentin. It was hoped that this would lead to the assassination of Remiro and Little by fellow prisoners.

The FBI participated in what appears to be a phony provocateur bombing scare at Shell Oil Company in Fresno. A pipe, 6 to 8 inches long, with a dynamite cap, was found. The FBI said they came into the case "because it might be a national conspiracy." The intelligence agencies want to link worldwide terrorist organizations to the SLA. But when evidence surfaced that Arab money was donated to the CIA-SLA to bomb American oil companies, the FBI shut up. Right-wing Arab oil money was involved in the Reg Murphy kidnapping.

Every witness at the Hibernia Bank in San Francisco was ordered not to talk by the FBI. This is standard procedure. Silence protects conspirators, not suspects. If the wall of silence were lifted, it might expose who arranged the bank robbery. No members of the SLA had accounts in the bank.

The FBI was involved in the kidnapping of Aris Graham, another banker's wife in Minneapolis. Local police didn't learn of the kidnapping or the ransom. Only the FBI knew the details—but the media and the Justice Department could add one more to their list of kidnappings.

A "prowler" was discovered one mile from the home of Mrs. Kronholm in Minneapolis. Danny Callendo, 20, from Chicago, was shot by the FBI. James Johnson, a suspect in the Kronholm abduction, said the case involved "hoodlums from downtown." Did "downtown" mean Chicago? Johnson was shot in the head a month later.

The FBI actively participated in the Los Angeles killing of the SLA. Los Angeles police called headquarters asking permission to use incendiary bombs on the 54th Street house. Chief of Police Ed Davis said "No." But the FBI had already used them, and the house caught fire moments later. In the official story, the use of incendiary bombs was overruled and police blamed the fire on "Molotov cocktails" they claimed the SLA kept in the house.

The use of a double is an old FBI stunt. Lee Harvey Oswald, FBI agent, had several doubles. Sirhan Sirhan's look-alike was Michael Wayne. James Earl Ray had three aliases and three doubles. The FBI claims it was "not illegal" for Keaton to impersonate Donald DeFreeze. But it might be illegal if you consider that these doubles are used in conspiracies that result in murders.

Robert Hyde, a prisoner at Soledad, notified the FBI of conspiracies inside the prison and asked for their help. His troubles began. Hyde was blinded in one eye by acid in a medicine bottle that he was told contained eye drops. Then he was scheduled for psychosurgery at Vacaville Medical Facility. When that plan was halted due to public exposure, the prison guards put out a contract for his murder by another prisoner. And it all started when he confided to the FBI that he knew of illegal prison conspiracies.

The FBI knew in advance where Patricia Hearst was before the SLA deaths in Los Angeles.

7. The Tom Charles Huston Plan

The White House intelligence army was given that name to conceal the involvement of high military brass and intelligence agencies in domestic operations. Huston no longer works in Washington, D.C., but Senator Sam Ervin announced that the Huston Plan is still in operation.

It is impossible to define exactly where collusion between the various agencies starts or ends.

A prison guard may allow Donald DeFreeze to escape from Soledad. It is the responsibility of the police to see that he remains free.

The SLA was born, functioned and died with the cooperation of the San Francisco-Oakland-Berkeley Police Departments, Vacaville Medical Facility, Soledad Prison, Stanford Medical Research Institute at Menlo Park, the CIA, FBI, Criminal Investigation and Intelligence, the Justice Department, U.S. Attorney James Browning, District Attorney Joseph Busch, U.S. Attorney General William Saxbe, Vice-President Gerald Ford, President Richard Nixon and well-paid public relations firms.

An image of terrorism is going to be forced upon the public.

This will allow the Gestapo-like CIA to control local police agencies.

In order to escalate fear over the next few years, we were taken on a trip with Patricia Hearst. If she is killed or is never seen again, the scenario will still be the same.

Listed below are several examples of collusion between various agencies. What appears to be “bumbling” or “blunders” are not errors at all.

(1) DeFreeze did a favor for the prisons

DeFreeze “did a favor” that made him eligible for parole earlier than usual. He had been sent to prison for 6-14 years on conviction for armed robbery. His had a record of continuous arrests involving bombs, weapons, assaults, kidnapping and forgery.

A “favor” at Vacaville Medical Facility usually means submitting to medical research on the brain. SLA members were asking for DeFreeze’s parole after he had spent only two years in prison. DeFreeze was given “Unisight,” his own prison group, to lead, and a score of white CIA-police agents to keep him company. Several legitimate, warm, friendly persons held the group together. One of them was Patricia Soltysik. After DeFreeze’s “escape,” he lived with her, and probably felt secure during those months in Berkeley.

(2) William Harris and James Douglas Garske

In 1970, Garske was at Vacaville Medical Facility serving time for armed robbery and forgery committed in Los Angeles. Harris made numerous visits to Garske in the summer of 1973, while the latter was in San Quentin.

What did Harris have in common with Garske? Consider Harris’ military and police background, his interest in sports and fraternities, his master’s degree in urban affairs. Why did he meet with this particular prisoner? His motive was more than prison reform.

Subsequent events indicate that Harris’s “friendship” with prisoner Garske had other factors. Garske

"failed to return" to San Quentin from a "work furlough," from which he was due back on May 19, 1974, two days after the SLA massacre on Los Angeles. How many convicts for armed robbery are allowed out of San Quentin on "work furloughs"? Garske remained free for a month, and was then arrested at a remote cabin in Calaveras County, in the Sierra Mountains of California.

"There was immediate speculation that he may have helped the Harrises and Patricia Hearst escape to the Sierras. However, FBI agents … found no indication that the SLA members had been there." Did Garske help the SLA? Did William Harris enlist Garske's aid in return for Harris' "helping" Garske to get out of San Quentin?

(3) SLA members had guns registered in their names—police had 24 days to find them before Patty Hearst was kidnapped.

Camilla Hall, Angela Atwood, William Harris and Joseph Remiro all had bought weapons under their own names. There is a five-day wait between the purchase and delivery of handguns in California. The State Criminal Identification Bureau and the police cleared the names.

The same people were all identified with the house on Sutherland Court abandoned on January 10, 1974. The SLA had already released their first communiqué with the "Declaration of War," and the second by Nancy Ling Perry.

Police had over two weeks to find these people. They were all living in the Oakland-Berkeley area.

(4) Patricia Hearst was not warned of the kidnapping danger

"Patricia Campbell Hearst," "art student," "Secure van," "ambush" and related messages found in the Sutherland Court House suggested that Patty Hearst might be kidnapped. *Books on kidnapping were found with the lists.*

Why did it take three months for the police to admit they had in their possession information received on January 10, 1974, indicating that Patricia Hearst might be kidnapped?

The Hearsts, after all, are a famous California family. Patty's mother is on the Board of Regents of the University of California, and could easily have been located.

Patricia Hearst attended classes regularly at U.C. Berkeley, and should have been notified.

Other businessmen on the SLA "list" were warned of possible danger.

(5) Department of Motor Vehicles: transportation used in the Hearst kidnapping could have been identified

Registered weapons should have led to immediate identification of SLA members.

Library cards, a postal helmet, Parks uniforms and lists identified the SLA members who used the safe house at Sutherland Court.

Why didn't the police locate automobiles registered to persons identified by existing evidence? The SLA had claimed credit for the murder of Dr. Foster, followed by a "Declaration of War."

Imagine a situation in which two blacks are arrested for murder, their comrades set fire to a house, flee … and the police don't' seek the other members of the group.

A blue Volkswagen owned by Camilla Hall was seen "scouting the scene" around Patty Hearst's apartment for a few days.

If the police wanted to, Camilla Hall's car could have been identified before the kidnapping, due to her association with Remiro, Little and the SLA safe-house.

A station wagon was used in the kidnap of Patty Hearst. Nancy Ling Ferry had an automobile. What about the others?

(6) Police didn't search the area where Dr. Foster was murdered and Robert Blackburn wounded

The SLA rented an apartment less than one mile from where the shooting occurred.

The manager of the apartment building knew that the residents the were not using it as a permanent residence.

Thirteen other tenants in the building might have noticed there was an unusual commotion on the evening of November 6, 1973.

(7) Polite made no effort to solve the murder of Dr. Foster and the shooting of Blackburn

Did the police know that if the Foster murder was solved, there would be no Patricia Hearst kidnapping?

Sheriff Preston Guillary left the L.A. Sheriff's Department following the arrest of Charles Manson and his "family" at the Spahn Ranch. Guillary stated that there had been numerous complaints from neighbors of the ranch. There were reports of automatic weapons, drugs, young females and questionable activities.

The orders at the Sheriffs office were "Don't touch Manson."

"They" were setting the Manson Family up for a killing of some kind. The Sheriffs office believed the Manson family was going to murder Black Panthers, and that was acceptable to the officers. The surprise set-up against Manson was the Sharon Tate-La Bianca massacres, where seven persons were murdered, including an unborn child. Manson, like DeFreeze, was a patsy of our society. Patsies are used by law enforcement for their own purposes, to spread terror.

(8) SLA "headquarters" was not sealed off after the arson, following the arrest of Joseph Remiro and Russell Little

Shades of the Texas School Book Depository. Identical to the apartment of Arthur Bremer.

What about the removal of boxes from the garage of Mrs. Ruth Paine, following the arrest of Lee Harvey Oswald, without warrants?

The safe house at Sutherland Court in Concord was a nest of revolutionary documents, addresses, weapons, ammunition and evidence. Bayonets and pistols were taken away. *The building was open to the public*. Anything could have been removed—or planted.

(9) Police could have located Willie Wolfe's car and searched for him after January 10, 1974

Wolfe was in California when Dr. Foster was murdered.

Unmarried, no children, he had attended Oakland School Board meetings where Dr. Foster's policies were discussed.

Willie's version of these meetings incited hatred against Dr. Foster at the Vacaville Medical Facility.

Wolfe's car was used by Nancy Ling Perry and another male to vacate the Concord house after it was set on fire.

The car was abandoned in a residential section of North Berkeley. Police did not look for Willie Wolfe, and he was without transportation upon his return to the West Coast.

Why did it take 13 days to find his car?

(10) Police didn't locate the house at 1560 Sutherland Court, Concord, rented by "Nancy end George DeVoto," for 17 hours after the arrest of Remiro and Little

When Little was arrested, Remiro ran from police and hid two blocks away in the SLA "safe-house."

If Remiro and Little shot at Sergeant Duge, why didn't other officers search the neighborhood? They knew Little's companion escaped on foot.

Four hours later, when Remiro decided to "surrender himself," the police were still hanging around the neighborhood. This was at about 5 a.m.

Yet police did not locate the building until 17 hours later, and then only because Nancy Ling Perry's arson fire called it to their attention.

(11) Why burn a house "to melt fingerprints," when the SLA had plenty of time to remove more incriminating evidence before the house was discovered?

Identification of the SLA members was left in the house.

References to the kidnapping of Patty Hearst were also left behind.

Was the SLA sure the police would not halt their plans, or could even be a part of them? Whatever they left behind, the police and the FBI didn't use this information to find them.

(12) Why did the police stop looking for an "Oriental woman?" Is there a record of her stopped car on the day of the Foster murder?

An "Oriental" woman, driving a white 1965 station wagon, was stopped by police the day of the Foster murder. Her vehicle contained a "number of firearms."

A third person, small, possibly female, possibly Asian, was seen leaving the Foster ambush.

A small female, possibly Asian, accompanied the SLA when Patty Hearst was kidnapped.

Jean Chan, a friend of Dave Gunnell, attended BCA meetings at Vacaville with the SLA. She lived at Peking House, the meeting place of Wolfe, Little and Steiner.

Was the female stopped with the weapons the same female "prison reformer" who attended Colston Westbrook's classes at Vacaville?

(13) Two White Station Wagons? Links of Foster Murder to Hearst Kidnapping—Why Are the Police Protecting Conspirators?

The woman driving a white 1965 station wagon, stopped at the time of the Foster murder, had a vehicle containing firearms. She was released, never a suspect.

A woman driving a white station wagon followed the convertible used when Patty Hearst was kidnapped. The authorities believed Patty was transferred to the station wagon, which became the eventual getaway car.

If it wasn't Jean Chan, who *was* driving the white station wagon in both incidences?

The police stopped one white station wagon and could have records of the owner. After a second wagon was described as being used for the Hearst kidnapping, and the SLA claimed credit for the Foster murder as well as having Patty, why wasn't this evidence used to locate a possible member of the "army"?

Tim Findley, reporter for the *San Francisco Chronicle*, left his job over the coverage of the SLA. He claimed the media wanted the appearance of a "much larger army" than there was. The law-enforcement agencies were using the possible size of membership for scare tactics. At the same time, their own backup support was ignored.

(14) Why did Colston Westbrook delay informing police he knew Joseph Remiro and Russell Little?

Westbrook was teaching at UC Berkeley.

Two members of his former group at Vacaville were arrested for murdering Dr. Foster.

There were pictures taken of the SLA group at Vacaville that Westbrook could have produced immediately.

It was reported that Westbrook himself spoke against Dr. Foster at Vacaville.

When Remiro and Little were arrested, the SLA issued their "death warrants" and "Declaration of War." did Westbrook go immediately to police and tell them how well he knew these men and women?

Did the police inform Westbrook that the "leader" of his prison group, Donald DeFreeze, had escaped almost a year earlier?

Did the police tell Westbrook that Thero Wheeler, another group member, escaped from Vacaville in August, 1973? Two prison escapees, two alleged murderers … and there was silence?

Given the evidence at Sutherland Court and the four men involved, the kidnapping of Patty Hearst could have been prevented.

(15) The police department supplies weapons for terrorism

Beginning in August, 1973, money and weapons were supplied to the SLA on a regular basis. The supplier attempted to involve Chicano, American Indian and black prison reformers with the SLA.

Unguarded U.S. Army arsenals supply left- and right-wing radicals. In an eventual shootout, the army will back up the right wing.

(16) Did Dr. Hacker tell Randolph Hearst he had known Donald DeFreeze?

The official CIA psychiatrist-in-residence, Dr. Frederick Hacker, author and "expert" on provocateur violence, acted as an advisor to Randolph Hearst.

Hacker's claim to fame was a book about the Olympic Games massacre of Israeli athletes. Germans and Americans killed the Israeli men. Hacker's book did not analyze the violence of Germans and Americans. Instead, it analyzed the violence of the Arab "terrorists" who took the Israelis as hostages.

Dr. Hacker was the psychiatrist assigned to Donald DeFreeze on November 21, 1968, while the future "Cinque" was an LAPD informant.

(17) Why have the FBI and police conceal evidence of Arab oil money offered to the SLA to provoke bombings?

The LAPD knows $1-million in Arab funding was offered to the SLA. The purpose? Bombings. The result? To crack down on terrorists and link the culprits to international guerrilla movements.

William Williams, arrested for kidnapping Reg Murphy, had an address book in his pocket. The name of the Saudi Arabian Embassy was in the book. A diary indicated that Williams had communicated with both the Saudi Arabian Embassy and a right-wing political leader, J. B. Stoner, leader of the ultra-conservative States Rights Party.

(18) Are other police connections with the SLA part of the conspiracy?

Amanda de Normanville was the woman Donald DeFreeze lived with when he left Soledad prison. A former student at U.C. Berkeley, Amanda studied at the School of Criminology. Why didn't police seek her?

Compare the favoritism shown to certain SLA contacts to the San Bernardino trials after Ronald Beaty's escape from prison.

Four persons who assisted in Beaty's escape were found guilty of a wide range of charges, including the murder of a guard. But the killing of Dr. Marcus Foster, a black man, did not result in the filing of charges against the SLA. And harboring a prison escapee is not a crime if you are working with the SLA.

Police agents lured the SLA to their death trap.

The Mel's Sporting Goods scene was meant to provide a convincing dramatic sequence; one that we might accept provided we did not think about it too carefully.

When William Harris allegedly stole a pair of socks, the salesman took him outside the building and put a handcuff on one of his wrists. Emily (or William) left her registered gun in the store.

The salesman was a student in police science, and he just happened to have a pair of handcuffs with him. Bill Harris shoplifted a $.45 pair of white socks.

Was this scene pre-arranged between the LAPD and Harris?

Thero Wheeler, the missing black man in the Hearst kidnapping, has a brother who works on the San Francisco Police Force.

DeFreeze suspected Wheeler and almost killed him.

Wheeler is "not politically like DeFreeze," which means that Wheeler is the opposite of "radical," if you accept the premise that DeFreeze was radicalized.

Wheeler is not charged with Patty Hearst's kidnapping, and his name is barely mentioned. Did he work with the police and against DeFreeze?

(19) How could the police not search for escaped convict Donald DeFreeze for eleven months?

DeFreeze had an elite group of tutors at Vacaville for two years. White college graduates, teachers and "friends" were employed in the Berkeley-Oakland-San Francisco area.

Each prison visitor must present complete identification, including driver's license, address and social security number.

Russell Little, Robyn Steiner and other SLA members corresponded with Soledad Prison on DeFreeze's behalf, asking for his early parole.

DeFreeze was allowed to use marital trailers with visiting women at Soledad Prison.

In March, 1973, Donald DeFreeze walked out of Soledad. Clothing and transportation were waiting for him. He didn't go back to Los Angeles. He didn't go back to Ohio, to his wife and family.

DeFreeze went directly to the Bay Area, where he lived for 11 months with his former friends. The police *never looked for him*.

Black men living with white women are still conspicuous to the racist police.

Black men joining Venceremos, offering his services as a "hit man" and suggesting murders are highly conspicuous.

(20) Did the San Francisco police ever look for Thero Wheeler after he left Vacaville Medical Facility?

Donald DeFreeze walked out of Soledad in March, 1973.

Thero Wheeler, the second prisoner who knew members of the SLA, walked out of Vacaville in August, 1973.

Didn't law enforcement think these men might meet again on the outside?

Wheeler and DeFreeze both stayed with former friends and visitors from their prison days, and also met each other frequently.

(21) Why does the repressive California Department of Corrections encourage the study of

Maoist books, revolutionary hand-fist salutes and radical dialogue?

Colston Westbrook bragged that he brought “chicks” to BCA classes to bait the men; their appeal was greater than “communism.” Since when is communism a subject taught in prison -- and by a career CIA man, at that?

At the present time, the Department of Corrections is encouraging the study of Maoist literature in prison. If violence is committed after these men “escape” or are paroled, “foreign influence” will be blamed.

(22) Donald DeFreeze had assistance when he left Soledad Prison

DeFreeze was stationed alone in the boiler room at the unguarded South Facility, late at night. An hour later, he was gone.

Another inmate at Soledad was told that his classification would be changed to minimum if he would work in the boiler room with DeFreeze.

A custody reduction chrono was given to me to have my boss sign so I could move to South where I would be allowed to escape and join Don DeFreeze and members. I went for reduction in August, ’73, but I refused to do this for the fact I realized I was being set up along with DeFreeze. Classification results are in my central file to prove I refused to let my custody be dropped to minimum.

On April 18th, 1973, a letter changing this prisoner’s records was completed referring to five months previous work inside the boiler room.

That date coincides with the entry of DeFreeze at Soledad from Vacaville Medical Facility in December, 1972.

James Earl Ray, another famous inmate, was allowed to leave a Missouri prison. A “safe-house” prison trailer was waiting for him nearby. Eleven months later, James Earl Ray was named as the assassin of Dr. Martin Luther King. James Earl Ray was carefully set up as a patsy.

So was Donald DeFreeze.

(23) Did the police and the California Department of Corrections know where the SLA members were? How hard did they push to recruit for the SLA?

On March 26, 1974, an inmate at Soledad was offered a chance to “escape” if he would kill convict Jerry Lee Johnson, join an outside organization—the SLA—and “inform” for the state. The prison committee consisted of a Mr. Martel, a Mr. Dobuff and a Mr. Mac Endrec. Their orders came down from either Deputy Superintendent Morris or Associate Superintendent Marquez.

The prison officials wanted prisoner “collaboration with officials,” to “instigate tactics used to *stir up racial disruptions*, promote ‘tips’ and control the population to instill a constant sense of fear and apprehension.”

Did the FBI and the police know where Patty Hearst was in March, 1974—if they were *asking prisoners to join the SLA?*

Did they want a “larger army” for future propaganda?

(24) Donald DeFreeze worked with Ron Karenga and the Criminal Conspiracy Section of the LAPD. Isn’t it more than a coincidence that two of their co-workers walked out of San Quentin in March, 1974?

"Dear Mom and Dad, The prison system is going through a strong repressive stage and we know for certain that we will do another five years or more. We love you more than you can ever imagine."—**George Steiner (age 27) & Larry Steiner (age 26)**

The Steiner brothers served time in San Quentin for murdering two Black Panthers on the UCLA campus. Ron Karenga, Donald DeFreeze and the Steiner brothers had all worked for the LAPD.

A lengthy note was left by the bed in a visitors' cottage outside the walls of San Quentin, where convicted murderers George and Larry were kindly allowed to stay overnight with their parents, in March, 1974. It is possible that their "escape" was arranged to send them on their way to set up an old co-worker—Donald DeFreeze back in Los Angeles.

No one is looking for the Steiner brothers, either.

(25) Why the discrepancy in the diagnosis of Donald DeFreeze?

In 1970, Donald DeFreeze wanted to "confess," end a life of running from the police—*or* working with them. The LAPD's CCS "cut him loose," and sent him to Chino Men's Facility for a diagnosis.

Medical reports at Chino described DeFreeze as "disorganized … impaired social adjustment … a schizoid personality, passive-aggressive, needs 24-hour program of treatment."

DeFreeze was sent on to Vacaville Medical Facility.

For two years at Vacaville, DeFreeze was befriended by a highly educated, socially elite group of visitors and tutors: college graduates, two "professors" and graduate students. They met with him twice a week.

There was no mention of unusual behavior, depression or lack of organization when DeFreeze participated in the BCA, or later when he led his own group, "Unisight."

How did he make this miraculous recovery?

DeFreeze spent four months at Soledad. He was not considered dangerous. He was allowed to work unguarded, and he showed no aggressive behavior or disorganization.

DeFreeze's prison and medical records have probably all been removed and been destroyed by now.

For eleven months, DeFreeze lived with members of the SLA in the Berkeley area. Emily Harris was "in love" with him. Mizmoon was "in love" with him. His depression and his "schizoid personality" seem to have vanished.

Was the original diagnosis exaggerated to provide the excuse to send him to Vacaville, where his mind could be altered and programmed?

(26) Why are CIA and police intelligence agents stationed inside the prisons? Was the purpose to promote stiffer legislation?

British and U.S. Intelligence share the same agents and the same techniques. British agent Kenneth Littlejohn surfaced recently and explained how and why British Intelligence come down upon the Irish. (Kenneth Littlejohn infiltrated the Irish Republican Army in 1973, and pulled off the biggest bank robbery in Irish history. During the trial, he and a brother accomplice testified that they worked for British intelligence, were told to stage the robbery to discredit the IRA.)

The CIA uses the same strategy in the U.S.

Lady Onslow, an English countess, visited prisoners often as part of her espionage assignment. She was the link between prison inmates, military intelligence and the British "dirty tricks" department. Kenneth Littlejohn was hired to commit a bank robbery and a murder. He worked with Lady Onslow. The purpose of his assignments was to provoke stiffer legislation by the British against the Irish. The espionage agents

were disguised to make their attacks appear to come from the "enemy."

(27) The House Internal Security Committee of the U.S. Congress becomes expert on the SLA

In February, 1974, the Committee had already linked the SLA with every radical group on the West Coast, including prisoners.

How can they maintain these lies in the face of overwhelming evidence that the U.S. military worked with police to create the SLA?

(28) Harris' U.S. Army identification

Harris served with the Marines in Vietnam before he finished college. Would he still be carrying and his military ID card five years later?

When was the last time he used this card? Were the supplies to sustain Patricia Hearst and the SLA obtained at Marine bases?

(29) Proximity to the FBI

Camilla Hall withdrew $1,565 from a bank located across the street from the FBI. Twenty-five days after the Hearst kidnapping, Camilla felt safe enough to do that. The FBI knew she had an account at the bank. The Central Bank at 2187 Shattuck Ave. failed to notify the FBI of the withdrawal. The FBI didn't ask bank officials for help.

They asked doctors. Money for SLA tactical support was more important. It allowed the "army" to continue their escalation of episodes as directed.

The two rented getaway cars used in the Hibernia Bank robbery were left nine blocks from the FBI offices.

The red and white van purchased for the SLA getaway to Los Angeles was bought a few blocks from the FBI offices.

The SLA safe house, decorated for our benefit with the Cobra mural, graffiti and filth, was 14 blocks from the FBI offices. Six of nine of the SLA lived there, rode a bicycle and did their marketing at local stores for six weeks.

The SLA safe house that produced the famous planted urban guerrilla *Minimanual* was conveniently located *one block from the Oakland police and FBI offices.*

(30) Is the creation of the SLA by the CIA part of a plan for future genocide? How closely does the SLA script follow the King Alfred Plan?

John Williams, in *The Man Who Cried I Am*, included a plan purportedly drawn up by the National Security Council to exterminate all black people. It was called "The King Alfred Plan." The creation and activities of the SLA appear to follow the King Alfred Plan.

In "The King Alfred Plan," the United States was divided into districts. Joseph Remiro wanted the Vietnam veterans to assist toward legislation separating non-whites into their own geographical areas.

Both the King Alfred Plan and the SLA wanted to eliminate black leaders.

The SLA list of assassinations to follow the murder of Dr. Foster included Huey Newton, Bobby Seale and Richard Foster, an educator instrumental in ending segregation in the Bay Area. Does the Marcus Wayne Chenault death list have links to the King Alfred Plan and the SLA?

In June, 1974, Chenault, a black college graduate, flew from Ohio to Georgia and murdered Mrs. Martin Luther King, Sr. in an Atlanta Church. The papers said Chenault "had a list of people to murder.

The list included Rev. Ralph Abernathy, Hosea Williams, head of the Southern Christian Leadership Conference, Rev. Jesse Jackson, head of the Chicago-based Operation Push, and singer Aretha Franklin, who had contributed to the Angela Davis Defense Fund."

The FBI is purposely concealing five other names on the death list.

The SLA wanted to kill black leaders. Marcus Chenault told Martin Luther King, Sr. of a "whole army" dedicated to killing black leaders. The cover story is that they want to kill "false black leaders." If every prominent black leader in civil rights is slated for extinction, who then are the "true" leaders—police informers like Donald DeFreeze?

When Martin Luther King was murdered, Howard Hughes said, "I know this is not a very praiseworthy point of view, but I feel the Negroes have already made enough progress to last the next one hundred years, and there is such a thing as overdoing it."

Charles Colson and other witnesses have revealed that Howard Hughes "is the CIA." Colson said that Hughes was the largest private contractor for the CIA. As such, he controlled the White House and the National Security Council.

Is it the plan of ITT and the Hughes empire to employ espionage agents, directed by the CIA, to exterminate blacks across the country?

Whites are painting their faces black to commit acts of violence. How many blacks are being taught, compelled or programmed to frame or murder blacks? The FBI's William O'Neal framed and set up Fred Hampton. Chris Thompson, Thero Wheeler and Colston Westbrook.

They helped lead DeFreeze to his death. One of the reasons Louis Tackwood left the LAPD was because he was aware of their racism and desire for a police state. Tackwood knew that after he had served them, they would murder him.

(31) California Attorney General Evelle Younger: Military and FBI Connections – Links with Donald DeFreeze and a National Conspiracy

Evelle Younger is an Air Force major general, trained in counter-intelligence and a member of the FBI.

The LAPD's Criminal Conspiracy Section was under Younger's direction.

As Los Angles District Attorney, Younger was directly responsible for concealing the identity of the real assassin of Robert Kennedy. Sirhan Sirhan was the chosen patsy and did not commit the murder.

Every major conspiracy in the California Police Departments and prison system is directly linked to Younger and the National Security Council in Washington. D.C.

Their murders would conceal larger conspiracies, so Younger has pushed so hard for the death penalty and the execution of political radicals.

Evelle Younger was called as a witness for Donald De Freeze in 1970.

Did the Attorney General tell Randolph Hearst of his working relationship with DeFreeze earlier?

(32) Comparison of the treatment received by selected agents & genuine radicals in the prisons

Ruchell Magee was charged with armed kidnapping in 1963. Evelle Younger keeps after Magee with a vengeance. The prison system wants to keep Magee ineligible for parole.

But the Steiner brothers, DeFreeze, James Garske and other police agents are eligible for parole. Shooting police officers, murdering, kidnapping and armed robbery are not considered obstacles to parole … if the right people are behind you.

(33) Why do police supply weapons to black radicals?

On December 6, 1967, Donald DeFreeze turned Ronald Coleman, his partner, over to the LAPD.

DeFreeze and Coleman had a cache of 200 weapons, stolen goods from a surplus store. Police knew the guns were intended for the U.S. Organization, a Black Nationalist group.

Two years later, DeFreeze exchanged gunshots with a bank guard and was wounded. The gun he used in the shootout was a .32 caliber Berretta automatic pistol. There is evidence that this gun was one of 200 stolen guns turned in to the police in '67.

With all the editorials about the causes of violence and terrorism, the basic cause is always omitted: the police and prison guards supplying the weapons.

(34) U.S. Attorney General William Saxbe

The Justice Department has been covering up criminal conspiracies for the past fifteen years.

AG William Saxbe of Ohio said he would close the Kent State investigation if he were appointed Attorney General.

There is no safety in ending wire-tapping and electronic surveillance alone. Agents provocateurs should be illegal. As long as the top U.S. law enforcement official attempts to cover up a national conspiracy like the SLA, then he must be considered part of the plan.

Saxbe stirs the fires of fear with quotations from planted documents. He has inherited John Mitchell's role.

The Attorney General should be confronted with evidence of the SLA conspiracy. He should be removed from office if he continues to cover it up.

(35) Admiral Ford? Or Vice President Ford?

Gerald Ford, a member of the infamous Warren Commission, condemned "crime by revolutionaries in California."

Ford praised the L.A. police for their excellent response to a "murderous group of self-proclaimed revolutionaries."

This is the same man who signed his name to a fictitious document called *The Warren Report*. Lee Harvey Oswald was described in *The Warren Report* as a "self-proclaimed" communist. Gerald Ford knew from the very first meeting of the Warren Commission that Lee Harvey Oswald was an espionage agent of the U.S. government, and an FBI informer as well. *Portrait of The Assassin*, Gerald Ford's own book, opens with the important information about Oswald's background.

(36) President Richard M. Nixon

At a time Patty Hearst's life was in danger and she was in the hands of her kidnappers, Richard Nixon got into the act. He asked for "death to the kidnappers." With limited alternatives, the SLA might have murdered.

The police, the FBI and the president egged the abductors on, letting them know that they might as well go through with the murder, they would not live anyway.

Remember that this is the same president who said "Charles Manson is guilty" while the trial was taking place. Manson never entered the Sharon Tate home on the night of the murders. Police intelligence agents did. Charles Watson wrote "Death to the pigs" in blood on the door, hoping Black Panthers would be blamed for the murder. Who moved the bodies after the Manson Family departed?

(37) FBI bait for the provocateurs

FBI Director Charles Bates offered what amounted to immunity if William and Emily Harris wanted to

surface.

"So far, the Harrises were not overtly involved in any of these incidents."
– Charles Bates, 6-10-74

The favoritism that police, prison guards and federal law enforcement show espionage agents is identical to the special treatment Watergate defendants are receiving. If any one thing proves that the CIA is behind the SLA operation, it is the way the law is handling their agents. They murdered six SLA members. The others can surface now and go on to their next assignments.

House keys for the 7th Avenue Oakland apartment, found on Remiro and Little, linked them with the murder of Dr. Foster. This apartment was used as the hideout for a murder and an attempted murder.

William and Emily Harris each obtained drivers' licenses using false names and the address of this apartment in September, 1973, a few days before the SLA moved in.

Why doesn't this act link *them* to the murder of Dr. Foster? Why haven't *they* been charged with murder and conspiracy? As intelligence agents or agents provocateurs on a higher and more sophisticated level, they are safe from prosecution. Selected patsies take the rap once again.

(38) Accessories after the Fact

The Warren Commission was provided "delayed evidence" by the FBI to back up its finding that Lee Harvey Oswald assassinated President Kennedy. Oswald's famous planted diary, the camera that took his superimposed portrait and famous bullet #399 are examples of delayed props.

Investigators of the SLA, working with the police, are coming out with delayed evidence reminiscent of other conspiracies.

Police associated Patty Hearst's name with the SLA three weeks before she was kidnapped. It was revealed months later.

It was reported that cyanide bullets were found in Patty's apartment, behind a bookshelf. A "more thorough search the next day" produced this evidence. The Hearst family and news media were not told of these findings for two months. Bullet #399 that allegedly traveled through John Kennedy and John Connally, the subject of two books, was "found on a stretcher" in the hall of Parkland Hospital.

Photographs allegedly of the SLA were located a week after their deaths in the burned-out house. The use of Polaroid negatives from the SLA location could link the group to negatives found near a dead police officer in Compton one week earlier.

Piles of maps, dozens, were found at the SLA house on Jan. 10, 1974. Some included the Hillsborough area, home of Patty Hearst. A map marked "Graton Road, Sonoma County, led to a *federally-licensed demolition contractor [given] a permit to possess, use and sell high explosives and detonation equipment*. Investigators found three bunkers of dynamite at the site." July 23, 1974, the police revealed the presence of maps. They had three weeks to use them before Patty Hearst was kidnapped. Who was the government contractor?

An un-mailed letter was supposedly found under Camilla Hall's burned body. It took one month for police to reveal this fact, if it is a fact and not a forged document. The death message complements the violent language of the SLA. The purpose was to coax radicals to take to the gun and denounce "so-called radical leaders" for lack of support.

(39) The SLA and the CIA—Spanish Connections?

Paul Halverson, friend of Camilla Hall, was called before the S.F. Grand Jury. He didn't understand why they wanted a postcard mailed by Camilla from "Spain two years ago."

Howard Hunt was associated with the Spanish Embassy. Dorothy Hunt, his wife and CIA partner, worked for the U.S. Spanish Embassy. William Harris had been to Spain recently. Willie Wolfe and Colston Westbrook traveled extensively in Europe.

Did any of the SLA know each other or meet in Spain?

Did the U.S. Attorney General want to cover up these "innocent" pieces of evidence—proving that the SLA members had mobility and funding of some kind?

Joyce Halverson, Paul's wife, went to jail for refusing to give information about Camilla Hall. They had known each other for a long time.

Joyce added: "I hope the grand jury will look into the charges that the CIA was behind the SLA."

XI. Indications That the SLA Is Part of a Large-Scale National Conspiracy

"We had to keep the lid on all the other things that were going on here that would have been worse, I think, than the Watergate business."

—Former Attorney General John Mitchell, phone call to John Ehrlichman, April 14, 1973

June 17, 1972, the day of the Watergate arrests, was an important date in American history. The CIA was caught altering the electoral process one more time. This event provided us with the opportunity to expose methods of clandestine agents working on domestic terrain.

Two years after the arrests, Congress and the Justice Department are still protecting the conspirators. The top directors and agents of espionage will not be asked to reveal how many horrors were and are being planned for us, and what they have been doing to destroy our Constitution.

The SLA and the violence that will follow it in years to come would never occur if the secret military intelligence army were smashed and exposed once and for all. We are more afraid of progressive social change than we are of a murderous dictatorship.

There are many reasons for believing that the SLA is only part of a larger national conspiracy.

Listed below are a few reasons for this conclusion.

1. FBI Director Charles Bates's Role

In 1969, Bates was a special agent in charge of the Chicago FBI offices. In 1971, he moved to the General Investigative Division of the Washington, D.C. FBI. He is currently Director of the San Francisco FBI, in charge of the SLA investigation.

There are startling parallels between the FBI-police murder of Black Panther leaders Fred Hampton and Mark Clark in Chicago in 1969, and the deaths of Donald DeFreeze and the SLA in 1974.

In each case, black police-FBI informers took an active part in their deaths. Hampton and Clark were drugged before the police broke in and killed them; Christine Johnson, who almost died inside the SLA house, said she awoke from a "drugged sleep."

In Chicago, the police were deliberately misinformed that the Panthers had killed police officers. The LAPD was told that the SLA had murdered a police officer a few days earlier.

In each case, the FBI was responsible for both the killings and subsequent cover-up of the facts.

2. The Cobra as the SLA insignia

The cobra is used as an anti-Semitic and racist point of reference by the Ku Klux Klan, White Aryan Knights and Christian militants in Brazil. The U.S. Organization, part of Ron Karenga's LAPD-infiltrated group that killed Black Panthers, used the same 7-headed cobra (the "Kawaida") that DeFreeze and the

SLA adopted. The "Kawaida" is a concept developed by the OSS and CIA. It is a set of indoctrination precepts used in brainwashing technology, imposed upon the victim.

3. SLA "help" was rejected by every radical group in the Bay Area

The services of the SLA were turned down by Bay Area radical groups. Their offers to provide "hit men" for violence were rejected. They were suspected of being provocateurs.

4. Prison escapes as national policy

James Earl Ray was allowed to leave a Missouri prison 11 months before he became the patsy in the Martin Luther King murder. California prisoners were offered a chance to leave the prisons if they would join the SLA. This was not the decision of individual prison guards, but is part of a national conspiracy.

5. Intelligence agencies or law enforcement had never heard of the SLA before the Foster murder

The FBI has informers planted in every legitimate radical group.

Unless the SLA were police agents themselves, they would have been known to police as radicals, either in the prisons they visited or in the Berkeley-Oakland area.

6. SLA communiqués were pathetic imitations of radical thinking

The SLA's messages were hardly inspired or written in the style or spirit of other radical leaders like George Jackson, Malcolm X or Martin Luther King. William Harris, a teacher with an M.A. in urban affairs, revealed his "advanced political thinking" in the message he taped in May, 1974. He referred to the "jive-assed pig agent school superintendent, sick-assed racists, mindless cunts and gigantic black penises."

7. Breakup of Black Leadership

The purpose of FBI orders issued in 1969 was to *break up all radical and leftist groups*. Organizations with the word "black" in their names were particular targets.

Then what about the Black Cultural Association inside Vacaville Prison?

Black leaders were to be "neutralized" by FBI provocateurs, and that included assassination when necessary.

DeFreeze's army was so "neutralized" that he was its only black member.

8. More kidnappings, assassinations and violence will follow the Hearst kidnapping

FBI Director Clarence Kelley warned that there'd be more kidnappings in the future. He should have known. The early rush of kidnappings will be followed by a steadily escalating stream of bombings, scare tactics, murders, arson, robberies and assorted violence blamed on terrorists. The facts behind these incidents are protected on a national level, and never fully exposed in the courts. They are concealed by careful selection of evidence and witnesses.

9. National brain-altering policies

Medical experimentation on prisoners' brains in California is directly related to national conspiracies.

The work on prisoners' brains was developed at Massachusetts General Hospital, where federal money funded a team working on electrode implants and psychosurgery.

The punishment and experimentation—with drugs, electroshock, behavior modification programs and surgical techniques to alter behavior—prominent at Vacaville are also taking place in other prisons and hospitals around the country.

10. Links between California Governor Ronald Reagan, former Florida Governor Claude Kirk and the planned destruction of the University of California.

Former Governor Kirk of Florida ran his gubernatorial campaign with promises to "break the University of California" … over 3,000 miles away.

The day after Kirk and Reagan were elected in 1967, they met in Los Angeles. On the following day, University of California's President Clark Kerr was fired, without a day's notice.

This was the beginning of many changes at the University of California, now moving rapidly backwards.

Kerr had dreamed of a college education for every high school graduate. The University of California had a flowering humanities program.

Today, the hopes of a college education for every child are gone. Courses on social justice and the humanities are disappearing.

The location of the SLA at the doorstep of U.C. Berkeley was a purposeful act, designed to link the radical-hippie movement with violence.

Shana Alexander wrote a book on the SLA, "explaining" how it was nurtured in the permissive radical community. The California climate did not breed violence. The military-industrial police agents deliberately *created* violence to discredit necessary and legitimate organizations against genocide and fascism.

H.R. Haldeman, who has always represented Richard Nixon, took an active role in the firing of Kerr from the presidency of the University of California.

11. The Olympic Games massacre of Israeli athletes in Munich, Dr. Hacker and the SLA

The Massacre in Munich was wide open for the investigation of a larger conspiracy involving U.S. and German military police.

"Arab terrorists" kidnapped the Israelis after the German police watched them climb the fence.

Dr. Frederick Hacker, an "expert" on terrorism, wrote a book deploring violence and guerrilla movements. But he never mentioned the secret funding behind the Arabs, or elaborated on the fact that it was the Germans and Americans who murdered the Jewish athletes, not Arabs.

Hacker, as a consultant to the LAPD, became Donald DeFreeze's psychiatrist when he was working as a police informant. When Patty Hearst was kidnapped, Dr. Hacker moved on to become Randolph Hearst's advisor.

12. Links of Saudi Arabian and Iranian oil money to the Reg Murphy kidnapping, Watergate plumbers, dirty tricks and SLA bombings

Saudi Arabian money was involved in the Murphy kidnapping and was linked to J.B. Stoner's States Rights Party.

Funds from the Middle East went into CIA accounts in Mexico for White House dirty tricks.

Stoner's States Rights Party employs the brother of James Early Ray.

There is a link here between conspiracies and provocations in the U.S., funds from right wing oil

companies and the SLA kidnapping and related bombings in 1974.

13. U.S. military assistance to the SLA

The media and Congressional hearings emphasize the influence of Mao, the Brazilian *Minimanual* and international terrorists on the SLA.

But what about William Harris' U.S. Military I.D.? The SLA also had a copy of *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich*. Nazi influence was prevalent in the Justice Department in the persons of G. Gordon Liddy and Robert Mardian, visible in San Leandro with the Nazi prediction of Dr. Foster's death.

14. The true story behind California's epidemic of violence has not yet been told

Juan Corona, Herbert Mullen, Edmund Kemper, Charles Manson, Charles Watson and Sirhan Sirhan might have interesting stories to tell, confirming their involvement in larger conspiracies.

These men are isolated, not allowed to be interviewed and not permitted to have fair trials.

The Zodiac killings and the Zebra murders are part of the same pattern of pre-arranged terrorism.

Judges, prosecutors and defense attorneys make a mockery of court proceedings, and refuse to examine the evidence properly. The SLA and Zebra scare are a continuation of a sequence of events that have common law enforcement links.

15. The CCS is linked to the White House secret intelligence army, the Huston Plan and operates throughout the state of California.

Louis Tackwood, in *The Glass House Tapes*, illustrated the interlocking of national and state police agencies. Since his book appeared, the CIA has admitted placing agents in local police departments.

Donald DeFreeze worked for the Criminal Conspiracy Section.

16. Future germ warfare, the American Nazi Party, SLA threats and the U.S. military.

An alleged SLA memo published in Los Angeles June 1974 threatened future radiation and chemical poisonings.

American Nazis stationed at Ford Ord, California, engaged in a national project called "Operation Blue," were studying how to spread botulism to murder large sectors of the population.

The SLA had books on *Chemical and Biological Warfare, The Science of Public Death*, by Dr. Marc Lappe, and *The Generic Effects of Radioactivity*. The U.S. Army could use chemical warfare—and blame terrorists and radicals.

17. U.S. Attorneys Branden Alvey and Robert Merckle were flown from Washington, D.C., to Los Angeles, to prosecute the SLA Case

These imported Government prosecutors also had their assignments.

Legitimate radicals are imprisoned and harassed.

Police, CIA and FBI informants are protected and not charged with crimes. Did Alvey and Merckle work with Bates in Washington, D.C.?

If this had been a legitimate radical group, the supporting cast would have been rounded up and imprisoned.

18. Were 12.6 million acres of California desert land closed to off-road traffic in November, 1973

for future military operations?

The SLA had maps of abandoned mines and desert locations.

The Manson-Watson family was protected at Barker Ranch, safe house on the Mojave Desert, until they were arrested for stealing dune-buggy parts.

The Harrises purchased camping gear and clothing at Mel's Sporting Goods Store - where they departed in a hurry. Was this a clue to where they might be found? Can Patty and the Harrises be hidden somewhere in this large area for the summer, while hippies in vans and communes are harassed?

19. *Black Abductor*, San Diego, the FBI, Minutemen, kidnapping of radicals and White House intelligence

Black Abductor, the 1972 "novel" containing a blueprint for the Hearst kidnapping, came from an unknown writer, Harrison James, published by Regency. Is this a CIA dummy front?

San Diego is the area where radicals were going to be kidnapped during the 1972 Republican Convention.

San Diego is where Donald Segretti, emissary of White House military intelligence, met with FBI agents in the Minutemen.

The Minutemen have created provocateur situations to hasten the arrival of a police state and race war. The SLA marks the beginning of the implementation of this plan.

XII. Were These Game Plans Against Humanity Necessary?

The Phoenix is a mythical bird of great beauty that rose from the ashes and represented immortality.

The CIA's Phoenix Program in Vietnam represented sadism, greed, hypocrisy, lying, torture, false imprisonment, terror and assassinations. Every decent human being should have rejected these actions from the beginning. Instead, we promoted William Colby, who presided over the Phoenix Program, to the position of director of all U.S. intelligence.

The seven-headed cobra symbol originated in Asia. It represented unity, self-determination, collective work and responsibility, cooperative production, purpose, creativity and faith.

The CIA and military intelligence once more perverted a symbol. They utilized the cobra for the Symbionese Liberation Army. The purpose was to associate symbols of hope and progress with murder, kidnapping, suicide, bombings, bank robberies and terror.

From the ashes of Vietnam the Phoenix rose. American youth marched in the streets or left the country in preference to murdering.

A body of citizens met and publicly protested the killings and warfare. Those individuals became enemies of the state, and had to be infiltrated and discredited.

From the ashes of the SLA, another group of persons may arise. They may resent the military SWAT teams, intelligence infiltration, assassination squads, false imprisonments, torture and all the other horrors brought from Vietnam to the United States. If we can see the parallels between our military operations at home and abroad, perhaps clandestine operations of this kind will be halted. If we don't see the comparisons, they will escalate.

The truth about the SLA—and future acts by provocateurs posing as "spin-offs from the SLA"—can be scrutinized.

Crimes do not remain unsolved for long once participating agents are identified by name. The wide discrepancies between the SLA cover stories and the hard evidence will emerge if we ask the correct

questions and pursue every lead.

Public relations offices serving as fronts for the CIA and military give their versions of U.S. history. These accounts are false. The SLA requires the same scrutiny applied to other political conspiracies.

America is a nation groping for culture and art. Whenever an opportunity appears, those in control divert public money into a few private pockets, wage war, increase profits and industrial productivity.

Every time a political or civil rights leader emerges to effect necessary change, the military kills him.

When youth begins to awaken and ask the proper questions, their culture has to be crushed.

For ten years, military intelligence has made a profession of destroying lives and dreams.

They pervert idealism.

They pump the poor full of drugs and TV images of murder, rape, violence.

They turn masses, organizations and individuals against each other.

We must protect our feelings and separate them from these contradictions—between what is imminent death and what might become creative life. Our only hope is to become aware of how we are manipulated, and by whom.

– July 11, 1974

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Donald Freed, of Citizens' Research and Investigation Committee (CRIC); Author and researcher, *Executive Action, Agony in New Haven, Inquest;* Editor, *The Glass House Tapes.*

Lake Headley, Independent Investigator; Chief investigator in Billy Dean Smith Case, Wounded Knee.

Stephanie Caruana, writer.

The Fifth Estate, CARIC, Counter-Spy Campaign Organizing Committee. P.O. Box 647, Ben Franklin Station, Washington, D.C., 20044.

Sherman Skolnick, Citizens' Committee to Clean Up the Courts.

Prisoners from Vacaville Medical Facility and Soledad Prison, who have risked their lives to assist in exposing Donald DeFreeze's contacts while in prison.

CHAPTER ELEVEN

OPERATION CHAOS: FROM MONTEREY POP TO ALTAMONT

THE CIA'S WAR AGAINST THE SIXTIES COUNTER-CULTURE (1976)

I. DEATH, DRUGS AND DEPRESSION

II. THE BEAUTIFUL PEOPLE

III. THE ENEMY

IV. THE BATTLEGROUND

V. THE FINALE … HELTER SKELTER, GIMME SHELTER

I. DEATH, DRUGS AND DEPRESSION

American and British pop/rock music during the '60's advanced an art form that has been described as one of the most important cultural revolutions in history. Within a few years, between 1968 and 1976, many of the most famous names associated with this early movement were dead. Mama Cass Elliott, Jimi Hendrix, Otis Redding, Brian Jones (formed the Rolling Stones with Mick Jagger and Keith Richards) and Janis Joplin were all at the Monterey Pop celebration, summer 1967. Duane Allman, Berry Oakley (helped form Allman group with Duane and Gregg Allman), Tim Buckley, Jim Croce, Richard Farina, Donald Rex Jackson (road manager for Grateful Dead), Michael Jeffery (Jimi Hendrix' manager), Brian Epstein (Beatles manager), Al Jackson (drummer for Wilson Pickett, back-up drummer for Otis Redding), Vinnie Taylor (Sha-Na-Na), Paul T. Williams (an original Temptation), Clarence White (Byrds), Robbie McIntosh (drummer Average White Band), Jim Morrison (Doors), Pamela Morrison (Jim's wife), Rod McKernan "Pig Pen" (Grateful Dead), Phil Ochs, Gram Parsons (Byrds, Flying Burritos, International Submarine Band, sang with Emmylou Harris), Sal Mineo, Meredith Hunter (victim of ritual killing at Altamont Festival), Steve Perron (lead singer of Children, wrote hit songs for ZZ TOP) and Jimmy Reed (influenced many groups, combined harmonica with guitar) were a few possible victims.

Family and friends accepted the musicians' depressions or accidents as having to do with alcohol, drug usage or both. Was anything added to their beverages or drugs to cause personality changes and eventual suicides? Almost every death was shrouded with unanswered questions and mystery. Persons around these musicians had strange backgrounds and were often suspect. All of these musicians were at the peak of a creative period and success at the time they were offered LSD. Their personalities altered drastically. Optimism and gratification were followed by doubt and misery. Why would young people with so much talent and influence as Phil Ochs, Janis Joplin, Gram Parsons or Brian Jones wallow in suffering, self-doubt and despondency? They were all loved; making important contributions, cutting new records and were recognized for their talent. Jimi Hendrix, Mama Cass Elliott, Steve Perron choking from their vomit? I doubt it. Phil Ochs just happened to be touring Africa when native "robbers" jumped him

and cut his throat, severing his vocal chords? Way back in 1966, the American Broadcasting Co. was planning to merge with International Telephone and Telegraph Co. (ITT). ABC had put aside $100,000 advance for the first television special by writer-poet Bob Dylan. The production was to climax the season. On Saturday, July 30, 1966, Bob Dylan had a motorcycle accident. Dylan never made it on the air and ABC never merged with ITT. The merger required a lack of protest from the Antitrust Division of the Justice Department. No comment.

In addition to Dylan, Stevie Wonder, Eric Clapton and the Dave Mason band, many others suffered near fatal accidents. The nine years in which the musicians allegedly overdosed, drank themselves to death, drove over cliffs, hung themselves, choked, crashed their motorcycles, went insane or freaked out without any reasonable explanation, were the same years that the FBI and CIA waged a domestic war against any kind of dissent. Was Lenny Bruce the first victim? How about Jack Kerouac? Did Bruce pay his dues for comparing United States police to Hitler's Gestapo? Was all the fuss about dirty words only a cover story? An important part of neutralizing any group is to kill or discredit its leaders. Monterey Pop set the combined government agencies in motion.

Never again was there a festival such as the one that took place that weekend of 1967. Never was there another event where over thirty rock groups were inflated by no more than the joy of an enraptured audience and the gorgeous pleasure of performance itself. There were eight, nine, ten times as many people running rock festivals taking place only two years later. There was never another Monterey! The weekend was too intoxicating, too radiant, and too pure.

– Myra Friedman, *Buried Alive, The Biography of Janis Joplin*

By 1968, the FBI's COINTELPRO and the CIA's Operation Chaos included among their long list of domestic enemies "Advocates of New Lifestyles," "New Left," "Apostles of Non-Violence and Racial Harmony" and "Restless Youth." Justification for indexing 300,000 law abiding citizens into files, and wire-tapping, bugging or burglarizing offices was rationalized on the basis that violence was prevalent, the cities were burning. Now we find out that "non-violent" protest and "racial harmony," according to recent Congressional investigations, also became crimes in the 1960s. The meeting places for this social, economic and soon-to-become political revolution were the folk festivals, rock concerts, free park love-ins, FM radio stations—or home with favorite records. In the music there were many messages. American youth were provided with a wide variety of radio stations to manage, alternative news sources and new ways to learn what was going on in the world. For the first time, young Americans found themselves with enough space and time to communicate—an entire continent, then the globe. They wandered. Many left homes in large numbers, seeking contacts with strangers in distant communities. They dropped out from established institutions. Clocks disappeared. Musicians were bringing these young people together from far away places.

I see a great deal of danger in the air. Teenagers are not screaming over pop music anymore, they're screaming for much deeper reasons. We're only serving as a means of giving them an outlet. Pop music is just the superficial tissue. When I'm on the stage I sense that the teenagers are trying to communicate to me, like by telepathy, a message of some urgency. Not about me or my music, but about the world and the way they live. I interpret it as their demonstration against society and its sick attitudes. Teenagers the world over are weary of being pushed around by half-witted politicians who attempt to dominate their way of thinking and set a code for their living. This is a protest against the system. And I see a lot of trouble coming in the dawn.

– Mick Jagger, 1967

Everything was beautiful until the insanity began. The CIA got into the business of altering human behavior in 1947. Project Paperclip, an arrangement made by CIA Director Allen Dulles and Richard Helms, brought 1,000 Nazi specialists and their families to the United States. They were employed by military and civilian institutions. Some Nazi doctors were brought to our hospitals and colleges to continue further experimentation on the brain. American and German scientists, working with the CIA, then the military, started developing every possible method of controlling the mind. Lysergic Acid Diethylmide, LSD, was discovered at the Sandoz Laboratories, Basel, Switzerland, in 1939 by Albert Hoffman. This LSD was pure. No other ingredients were added. The U.S. Army became interested in LSD for interrogation purposes in 1950. After May 1956 until 1975, the U.S. Army Intelligence and the U.S. Chemical Corps experimented with hallucinogenic drugs. The CIA and Army spent $26,501,446 "testing" LSD, code-named EA 1729, and other chemical agents. Contracts went out to 48 different institutions for testing. The CIA was part of these projects. They concealed their participation by contracting to various colleges, hospitals, prisons, mental hospitals and private foundations. The LSD I will refer to is the same type that the CIA tested. We shall be speaking of CIA-LSD, not pure LSD. Government agents had the ability to induce permanent insanity, identical to schizophrenia, without physician or family knowing what happened to the victim.

No physical examination of the subject is required prior to the administration of LSD. A physician need not be present. Physicians might be called for the hope they would make a diagnosis of mental breakdown which would be useful in discrediting the individual who was the subject of CIA interest.
– Senate Report to Study Governmental Operations with Respect to Intelligence Activities, April 1976

All existing CIA records were destroyed with the first reports that the CIA could administer a tasteless substance to the beverage of one of their most responsible co-workers, and drive that man into a mental institution, or cause him to jump out of a window to his death. Hippies and musicians, previously normal and creative, with families and loved ones identical to Dr. Frank Olson, responded in the same manner after their introduction to the same drugs. Damning documentation of LSD experimentation should not have been left in the hands of CIA Director Richard Helms. On January 31, 1973, one day before retiring from the CIA, Helms destroyed files on the fates of minds shattered over the previous ten years. Helms supported the mind-altering projects—Operation Chatter, Operation Bluebird/Artichoke, Operations Mknaomi, Mkultra and Mkdelta. By 1963, four years before Monterey Pop, the combined efforts of the CIA's Directorate of Science and Technology, Army Intelligence and U.S. Chemical Corps launched covert operations that seemed necessary. U.S. agents were able to destroy any reputation by inducing hysteria or excessive emotional response, temporary or permanent insanity, encouraging suicide, erasing memory, inventing double or triple personalities inside one mind, prolonging lapses of memory, teaching racism and hatred against specific groups, causing subjects to obey instructions on the telephone or in person, hypnotically assuring that no memory remains of their assignments. The CIA has poison dart guns to kill from a distance, tranquilizers for pets so the household or neighborhood is not alerted by entry or exit. While pure LSD is typically 160 micrograms, the CIA issued 1,600 micrograms. Some of the LSD was administered to patients at Tulane University, who already had wired electrodes in their brain. Was insanity an occupational disease in the music industry? Or does this LSD, tested and described in Army documents, explain how a cultural happening that took place place in 1967-68 could be altered radically and halted?

Janis used to say that her amphetamine experience was induced by a man. He was the cause of it. He brought her lower than she had ever been in her life. Her involvement with the young man started in the spring of '65.

He had a very sharp brain and questionable character. Neither his history nor his name was his own. He set up a fraudulent international pharmaceutical company in Canada to obtain drugs. He was also a methedrine addict. Janis was an exceptionally vulnerable girl. It had taken her about seven months from the moment she returned from New York to degenerate into a vegetable, an 80-pound spastic speed-freak.

– Myra Friedman, Buried Alive, The Biography of Janis Joplin

Chrissie Shrimpton described how Mick Jagger's mind was affected after he started taking acid. In June 1966, Jagger had a nervous breakdown in the United States, some months after he started taking LSD. His collapse came just weeks before the start of a concert tour. Several friends from America visited Jagger and Chrissie and surreptitiously slipped acid in her drink. She was literally out of her mind. A short while later, Chrissie attempted to kill herself.

Henry Schneiderman, a sinister American, or Canadian … he had so many passports no one was certain of his origin, brought to Keith Richard's home a suitcase … which contained several pounds of heroin, cannabis, pills, acid, DMT, every herb and chemical to stab or stroke the mind … along with choice LSD from San Francisco. Schneiderman had let believe he was really bending the law all over the world. He was on a James Bond thing, the CIA or something.

– Tony Scaduto, *Mick Jagger*

Brian Jones underwent a complete personality change after taking LSD. Janis Joplin's first LSD trip was administered surreptitiously. When she discovered what happened, she ran to spit it out. Before Watergate, long before our understanding of government agents interfering with our privacy or right to assemble, many autopsies and descriptions of mental conditions were never challenged. Today there is healthy suspicion. When Tim Buckley died, following a successful concert in Dallas; his death was first attributed to a heart attack. Ten days later, Buckley's cause of death was discovered to have been brought on by a drug overdose. UCLA graduate student Richard Keeling was finally charged with murder after it was discovered that Buckley had sniffed heroin-morphine-ethanol. A police eyewitness saw Buckley ingest the powder. Robbie McIntosh sniffed cocaine at a party. The cocaine was laced with heroin and strychnine. Host Kenneth Moss was charged with murder. In the cases of rock musicians becoming ill or passing away, there were many possibilities that could have been narrowed down *if* the doctors had been aware of all circumstances. Jimi Hendrix was given a tab of acid just before his show at Madison Square Garden, where he performed with Buddy Miles and Bill Cox. The audience, and Hendrix as well, were completely freaked out by his irrational behavior. The result was that Hendrix was discredited. The effect of one LSD dose could cause permanent brain injury. Anything Hendrix did after this experience, up to and including the time of his death, could be attributed to that earlier event. Government-manufactured LSD was tainted by countless combinations of chemicals. The New York State Psychiatric Institute was granted the first known contract for research into psychochemical drugs. The purpose was to determine the effects of psychological chemical agents on human subjects. These subjects were given derivatives of LSD and mescaline. Other chemicals tested and distributed at a later date included: morphine, demerol, seconal, scopolamine, ditan, atrophine, psilocybin, BZ (benzilate), glycolate, atrophine substitutes, dimethyl, tryptamine, chlorpromazine, LSD with Dibenzyline (blocking agents), LSM (Lysergic acid morpholide), LSD-like compounds, psilocybin and various chemical glycolate agents. It is no easy feat to alter society's consciousness. An arsenal of weapons was available. Mixed with these chemicals were choking agents, nerve agents, blood agents, blister agents, vomiting agents, incapacitating agents and toxins.

The glycolates cause incapacitation by interfering with muscle, gland functions and the central nervous system; they depress or inhibit nervous activity. In addition to delirium there is physical incoordination, blurred vision inhibition of sweating and salivation, rapid heart rate, elevated blood pressure, increased body temperature and, at high doses, vomiting, prostration, and stupor or coma. The onset may be minutes, hours, or days.

– "Use of Volunteers in Chemical Agent Research," document released by the Pentagon, March 1976

II. THE BEAUTIFUL PEOPLE

How does it feel to be One of the Beautiful people?
– The Beatles

Robert Hall, a private detective in Hollywood, was killed by a single bullet on July 22, 1976. So far, there has been a wire service news blackout on the implications of Hall's murder, for obvious reasons. The facts in this case should expose more than the tip of Watergate. What was going on in Los Angeles is part and parcel of the Washington, D.C. scandals. If one Army report alone exposes that millions of dollars were spent using and testing chemical combinations for operational purposes, then somebody has to be around to distribute the poison. Managers of seven rock groups hired private eye Hall to find out how their stars were getting "stoned." Turning on doesn't warrant hiring of a detective. They were obviously complaining that the musicians were altered in such a way that it hampered public appearances, credibility, personal lives and recordings. Hall's inquiry revealed the drugs were coming from two pharmacies where he had been employed—Hall once owned a drug store in Hollywood with co-partner Jack Ginsburg, an admitted pornographer, who was charged with Hall's murder. Gene LeBell, 44, arrested along with Ginsburg, was referee at the Muhammed Ali bout with a Japanese wrestler in July '76. LeBell, a professional wrestler, is the son of Aileen Eaton, a well-known boxing promoter who owns and operates the Olympic Auditorium in Los Angeles. Hall's report included the names of two physicians and a dentist writing false prescriptions. The cause of apparent freaking-out was centered in a small area of operation. This information was turned over to the proper authorities for arrests before Hall was murdered. No action was taken by police. The same frustrations that plagued Robert Hall also preyed on Phoenix, Arizona reporter Don Bolles. The higher-ups get police and law protection. Investigators get killed. Don Bolles and Robert Hall were investigating some of the same people, an actual *Who's Who* of the Cold War. Hall's contacts were important because they touched the prime movers of our politics, movies, electoral processes, entertainment and taste in music. Within moments of Hall's murder, his name was linked with possible murder-for-hire kidnap plans involving millionaire-financier Robert Vesco's son, gun-running to Vesco in Costa Rica, the stabbing of actor Sal Mineo, blackmail, the lost safe-deposit box of Howard Hughes that could contain his original will, Beverly Hills financier Thomas P. Richardson (convicted of a $25 million stock fraud), Hollywood's most famous celebrities in drug-and-sex scandals, exposures of televisions stars and high Washington officials, drug traffic from Los Angeles to Malibu, international sporting events, the LAPD (one of their former agents is now retired, heads the Police Science Department at L.A. Valley College and supplied the fatal weapon used to kill Hall), LAPD Chief Ed Davis (links to the FBI and CIA), a possible plot to kidnap Bernard Cornfeld (associate of Robert Vesco), past contacts with Mickey Cohen, the long drug addiction of singer Eddie Fisher, contract employment of Hall by Howard Hughes' Summa Corp., the two burglaries of Hughes headquarters in Van Nuys and on Romaine Street. The Romaine burglary set off the Glomar Explorer scandal that had Hughes fronting the contract for the CIA. Hall sent his pals to New York. Dr. Max Jacobson, titled Dr. Feelgood,

the source of John F. Kennedy's happy-time vitamins. Roy B. Loftin, contractor for NASA, Texan, with a long association and friendship with Bobby Baker. Baker, Lyndon Johnson's protegé, knew Hall. Investigations into the slain Burbank private detective prompted Beverly Hills Police Captain Jack Eggers, on the force 17 years, to resign. Hall worked as a double agent for Beverly Hills police and the LAPD. The relationship between law enforcement, drug traffic and politicians and musicians makes it sometimes impossible to get an impartial investigation of certain deaths. What appears as suicide can be murder. At the time of Hall's murder, his possessions included tranquilizer guns, drug-loaded darts that fire gas canisters, electronic bugging equipment of all kinds and a wide variety of chemical formulas. The chemicals were possibly a combination of many tested by the U.S. government from 1953 to 1963.

III. THE ENEMY

Why were hippies such a threat, from the President on down to local levels, objects for surveillance and disruptions? Many of the musicians had the potential to become political. There were racial overtones to the black-white sounds, harmony between Janis Joplin, Otis Redding and Jimi Hendrix. Black music was the impetus that drove the Rolling Stones into composing and performing. The war in Vietnam we escalated. What if they stopped protesting the war in Southeast Asia and turned to expose domestic policies at home with the same energy? One of the Byrds stopped singing at Monterey Pop to question the official *Warren Report* conclusion that Lee Harvey Oswald was a "lone assassin." Bob Dylan's *Bringing it All Back Home* album features a picture of Lyndon Johnson on the cover of *Time*. By 1966, LBJ had ordered writers and critics of his commission report on the JFK murder under surveillance. That research was hurting him. Rock concerts and Oswald. What next?

While preacher preach of evil fates teachers teach that knowledge waits Can lead to hundred dollar plates Goodness hides behind its gates But even the president of the United States Sometimes must have to stand naked.
– Bob Dylan, "It's Alright Ma"

John and Yoko Lennon protested the Vietnam War. The State Department wrote documents that described them as "highly political and unfavorable to the administration." It was recommended their citizenship be denied and they be put under surveillance. Mick Jagger, before he was offered Hollywood's choicest women and heavy drugs, was concerned about the youth protests in Paris, 1968, and the anti-war demonstrations at the London Embassy.

War stems from power-mad politicians and patriots. Some new master plan would end all these mindless men from seats of power and replace them with real people, people of compassion.
—Mick Jagger

Woodstock, summer of 1969, was the turning point of rock festivals. *Time* magazine described this happening as "one of the most significant political and sociological events of the age." One half-million American youth assembled for a three-day rock concert. They were non-violent, fun-loving hippies who resembled the large followings of Mahatma Gandhi in India and Rev. Martin Luther King in the USA, both strong advocates of non-violence. Both assassinated. It is important to understand the kinds of drugs and chemical agents available to stifle dissent, the mentality of people hell-bent on changing the course of history, to comprehend that cultures and tastes can be moved in directions according to game plans in the hands of a few people. Adolf Hitler's first targets in Nazi Germany were Gypsies and the students. LSD was a youth-oriented drug perfected in the laboratory. When it was combined with other chemicals and

given wide distribution, all that remained were marching orders to go to war.

IV. THE BATTLEGROUND

In July 1968, COINTELPRO attacked law-abiding individuals and groups. The purpose of these assaults was to disrupt large gatherings, expose and discredit the enemy and neutralize their selected targets. Neutralization included killing leaders if necessary. Preferably, by turning opposing segments of society against one another. Remember that among these dangers to the security of the United States were persons with "different lifestyles" and "apostles of non-violence and racial harmony." CIA Director Richard Helms warned National Security Advisor Henry Kissinger, February 18, 1969, that the study on "restless youth" was "extremely sensitive," and "would prove most embarrassing for all concerned if word got out the CIA was involved in domestic matters." The FBI sent out a list of suggestions on how to achieve its goals. They can all be applied to what happened to musicians, youngsters at folk festivals and hippies along the highway.

Gather information on their immorality. Show them as scurrilous and depraved. Call attention to their habits and living conditions. Explore every possible embarrassment. Send in women and sex, break up marriages. Have members arrested on marijuana charges. Investigate personal conflicts or animosities between them. Send articles to the newspapers showing their depravity. Use narcotics and free sex to entrap. Use misinformation to confuse and disrupt. Get records of their bank accounts. Obtain specimens of handwriting. Provoke target groups into rivalries that may result in death.
– Senate Committee Study with Respect to Intelligence, *Intelligence Activities and Rights of Americans*, Book II, April 26, 1976

The IRS admitted, "people who attend rock concert festivals" were listed among targets for investigation by its special staff. Agent Leon Levine said, "Ideological groups such as rock festival patrons were to be watched." A San Diego police officer was penalized for throwing rocks at a concert that injured a 17 year-old girl. She was treated for a fractured nose and facial lacerations. John and Yoko's legal problems began when marijuana was planted in a pair of binoculars.

Schneiderman left town after he showed British police his suitcase full of drugs at the Jagger-Richards bust. Jagger was then put on the International Red List as a possible narcotics smuggler every time he passed through customs. Cable Splicer III martial law plans, set to control civil disturbances, May 1970, described as dangerous "love-in type gatherings in the parks where large numbers freak out, peace marches, rock festivals where violence is commonplace and sex is unrestrained." Chicago Police Chief Rockford, commander during the police clashes at 1968 demonstrations, was also in charge of the police who fired a volley of shots that wounded one youth in a riot at the 1970 rock festival in Grant Park. Louis Tackwood, agent provocateur with the Los Angeles Police Department, exposed CREEP and the Republicans who were going to turn San Diego into a scene of violence during the conventions in 1972. Part of the plan was to seal off and bomb a hundred thousand demonstrators attending a rock concert on Fiesta Island in Mission Bay, San Diego. Employees at the CIA's Langley, Virginia headquarters don't have to stand in line to purchase tickets to these events. They have a top-secret Ticketron outlet for rock concert appearances. A similar top-secret Ticketron outlet is administered by the National Security Agency at George Meade, Md. The Howard Hughes organization ordered "all rock concerts prohibited in Las Vegas." *Fortune* (January, 1969) described the movement as encompassing "hippies and doctrinaire Leninists, anarchists and populists, revolutionaries whose domain is the human mind, rock bands and cultural guerrillas." During the 1968 riots in Washington, D.C., group singing was outlawed by the police department. They were aware that people "get high" singing together. Records of Led Zeppelin, Cat

Stevens, Alice Cooper, Simon and Garfunkel, Jethro Tull and others were burned at the Hollywood Christian Academy in Hollywood, Fla. Rock music was described as work "of the devil, having no place in a Christian life." The rock group Black Cat won a $570,000 slander suit against a minister in Arkansas. Their concert had been cancelled with the claim that they were a "mongrel group" with "Satanic origins." Following the slaying of two Americans in South Korea in August, the government issued tighter controls on long hair and "decadent music." Korea has a list of 260 decadent folk-rock and protest songs. Among them, "I Shot the Sheriff" and "We Shall Overcome." A survey of Quebec policemen showed that more of them were more hostile to hippies or beatniks than criminals. Art Linkletter, a television personality, told a Congressional committee investigating drug abuse, "the Beatles were the leading advocates of an acid society." This is an example of turning one hostile group against another. There is every reason to believe that the LSD that caused Dr. Frank Olson and Diane Linkletter to leap from tall buildings to their death could be manufactured from the same laboratories. With justifiable anger, Linkletter became a mouthpiece.

Meanwhile, the so-called straight society Linkletter defended spent 16 years and millions of dollars perfecting LSD as an operational weapon. Los Angeles Police arrested 511 persons attending the Pink Floyd concert. There were no mass arrests at Elton John's performance in the same city. Somebody is selecting their targets, because there is plenty of grass at Elton's concert. "Peace Pills" were distributed at the Santa Clara Fairgrounds for a folk-rock festival. A strange drug was handed out freely and poured into drinks. Youngsters were hospitalized. All of those who took the drug were treated but sent home without any knowledge of the psychological damage. This pill was blamed for the death of Mrs. Lois Dodd de Lattre, wife of a beatnik priest. Mrs. de Lattre's heart burst under the stimulation of the drug. Under its influence, she tore out her hair and threw herself on the floor. A man jumped on the musician's platform and announced they had 4,000 pills to hand out. The pills caused "marked disorientation as to time and space, inability to sustain directed thought, presence of a trance-like state." This kind of scene was so common that large groups were discouraged from performing in the manner they had before these assaults took place. The irreplaceable loss of lives and talent has been noticed by persons sensitive to folk-rock music. We can't bring them back to life. We might take time to examine their deaths if only to stop the attacks on certain artists and musicians. Some of my information on the details of these deaths is incomplete. The circumstances surrounding them caused me to ask some hard questions:

JOHN CARPENTER: 45 yrs., Sept. 18, 1976, killed by hit and run driver in Ben Lomond, Calif. Part of the earliest rock scene, once managed Grace Slick, wrote for *Rolling Stone* from issue one through eight, disc jockey at KPFK, music critic for the *Los Angeles Free Press*. He was "totally crazed," and committed himself to a mental institution for treatment.

TIM BUCKLEY: 28 yrs., June 29, 1975, Los Angeles. Just returned from a concert in Dallas, Texas, and was about to make a movie of Woody Guthrie's "Bound for Glory." Death caused by heroin-morphine-pentothal. Joe Falsia, Buckely's manager, "never knew Tim used drugs." Richard Keeling charged with his murder.

THE CHASE: August 11, 1974. Four in rock group killed, airplane crash. Bill Chase, Jazz trumpeter with Woody Herman, Walt Clark, drummer, John Emma, guitarist, and Wallace Wouhne, organist. Three years ago The Chase had a single, "Get It On," that became a hit. Popular with radio stations. Played often in Las Vegas, Japan, Africa, released three albums.

JIM CROCE: 30 yrs. old, Sept. 20, 1973. Airplane crash in Louisiana. Recorded hit albums, including "Bad, Bad Leroy Brown." Degree in psychology from Villanova University, sang at small

colleges. Croce's widow filed a $2.5 million suit against the Federal Aviation Administration. Allegations that maps of the airport runway were faulty, leaving unmarked a tree the fatal plane struck.

BRIAN JONES: July 1969, London. One of the original members of the Rolling Stones. Unique musician, under control of drugs by 1966, took LSD that caused personality changes and depression. Seemed to have brain damage and disintegrated. Compare his arrests and planted grass to the treatment Lenny Bruce received, forced to drop from the group. Keith Richards said,

Some very weird things happened the night Brian died. We had these chauffeurs working for us, and we tried to find out. Some of them had a weird hold over Brian. I got straight into it and wanted to know who was there and couldn't find out. The only cat I could ask was the one I think who got rid of everybody, and did a whole disappearing thing so that when the cops arrived, it was just an accident. Maybe it was. I don't know. I don't even know who was there that night, and finding out is impossible. It's the same feeling with who killed Kennedy. You can't get to the bottom of it.

– Tony Scaduto, *Mick Jagger*

MAMA CASS ELLIOT: 33, former member of Mamas and Papas, London. Found dead in her apartment. "Probably choked to death on a ham sandwich," or "possibly of heart attack." The coroner said it "appears the singer had not died of natural causes." She was propped up in bed, and had been dead for a considerable time before her body was found. Had just completed two weeks at the London Palladium, and was preparing to tour Britain. In excellent mental spirits. Performed at Monterey Pop.

JANIS JOPLIN: 27 yrs., Oct. 3, 1970, Los Angeles. Cause of death listed as "drug overdose, accidental." A lawsuit in 1974 noted, "it was possible that something unknown triggered a fatal reaction." Fought alcohol and drug usage most of her adult life. Body at autopsy didn't show large amounts of morphine. The night she died, Janis was with a mysterious character who accompanied her to the Landmark Hotel, L.A. She made three calls to her drug "connection" on the hotel switchboard. No arrests or effort to locate this party. Went to the lobby, bought cigarettes, talked, walked back to her room and fell on the floor inside the door. Was taking pills to stop drug habit? Engaged to be married, slim, tan, recording *Pearl*, an album expected to be a tremendous success; happy with her band, climbing out of darker days when she dropped dead. Sang at Monterey Pop with Big Brother and the Holding Company. One of the top blues-acid rock stars.

DONALD REX JACKSON: 31, Sept. 28, 1976. Automobile accident. Manager for the Grateful Dead; just arranged for a national tour. Car swerved off the road, killed instantly.

AL JACKSON: 39 yrs., October 1975. Former drummer with Booker T. and the MG's. Shot to death five times, Memphis, Tenn. Cause of death, "apparent robbery." Produced Stax Records.

JIMI HENDRIX: 27 yrs., Sept. 18, 1970. Cause of death clouded. Suggestions of drug plants, mafia connections, murder. Kidnapped a year before he died. Surrounded by groupie females, one of whom boasted giving him his first acid trip. Affected by acid, depression interfered with performances. One of top stars at Monterey Pop. Into rock-blues, jazz. Media assumption of "suicide" or "drug overdose" like Joplin. Earned millions. Freaked out and couldn't do his serious music.

JIM MORRISON: 27 yrs., July 3, 1971. Paris, France. Lead singer for the Doors. Cause of death: "heart attack," "pneumonia" or "died peacefully of natural causes." Best-known hit was "Light My Fire." Author of "The Lords," "The New Creatures." Poet, UCLA graduate, writer, musician, politically

controversial. Completed tour of Europe, South Africa, writing a movie script in Paris. Sometimes engaged in irrational behavior on stage. Harassed by police, false arrests, some charges later dropped. Described as "appearing to be in a hypnotic trance." Found guilty of "lewd and lascivious conduct" in Miami, Florida, March 1969. His arrest was the excuse for a "rally for decency" by singers, television personalities. Deeply affected by the death of Brian Jones. (Janis Joplin died a month after Jimi Hendrix. Jim Croce died a day after Gram Parsons.) Group broke up after Morrison's death.

PAMELA MORRISON: April 27, 1974, Hollywood, California. Wife of Jim Morrison. Cause: "apparent drug overdose." A hypodermic syringe discovered in the apartment. No mention of drugs in her system, or if there were needle marks.

RICHARD FARINA: Carmel Valley, California motorcycle crash. Author, musician, just completed a book, attended autographing party, drove down the road, met fatal crash. Brother-in-law of Joan Baez, married to Mimi. Recorded a new album, *The Falcon*. "Celebrations for a Gray Day," as described on the jacket, "Goldwater was about to win the California primary, and the skies were somewhat uneasy."

ROBBIE McINTOSH: 28 yrs., Sept. 23, 1974, Los Angeles, Died from heroin and strychnine that he believed was cocaine. Host Kenneth Moss, Freelandia Airlines, might have been singled as the target. Moss formed a new low-cost charter airline. Cher Bono was at the party, saved the life of Alan Gorrie. Gregg Allman working for Jimmy Carter's nomination at the time. Allman's drug arrests just before elections, Cher's attending a party where drugs with poison administered, might have caught McIntosh as innocent victim. Moss was charged with murder. (Janis Joplin's known drug connection was not held for her death.)

SAL MINEO: 1975, Los Angeles. Stabbed in back. One time singer, actor whose next role was to play Sirhan Sirhan in a controversial movie about the hypnotic state of Sirhan, and LAPD suppression of evidence in the Robert Kennedy assassination. Robert Hall was allegedly following Mineo the night he was killed.

ROD McKERNAN: "PIG PEN," 27 yrs. old, March 1973, Corte Madera, Calif. Member of Grateful Dead, organist, singer. Body found in an apartment by neighbor who hadn't seen him for a few days. Coroner's office reports, first accounts probably natural causes, liver disease. Had been suffering from cirrhosis of the liver, swelling of blood vessels in his throat. Hadn't touched alcohol for two years.

PHIL OCHS: 35 yrs. old, April 1976, New Jersey. "Death by hanging." No suicide notes, nobody sure why Ochs died. Active during Vietnam War, depressed in 1971, using alcohol. Sang at Madison Square Garden, with Bob Dylan, "An evening with Salvadore Allendé" in 1974, obsessed with JFK assassination. Developed two personalities, "John Train" and his nemesis, Phil Ochs. Spoke of death, exhibited erratic behavior. "Band of robbers" in Africa one of the reasons for his depression. Ochs was attacked, his vocal chords severed. Known as the "troubadour of the New Left," among the FBI's target groups.

STEVE PERRON: 28 yrs., Aug. 8, 1973. San Antonio, Texas. Died from inhaling vomit fumes during sleep. Composer, writer, lead singer for The Children. Was off drugs, preparing to cut a new album for Ode Records. Wrote "Francine" for ZZ TOP, hit records. Composed over 100 songs. Married with child, happy, productive composing when he died.

GRAM PARSONS: 26 yrs., Sept. 19, 1974, Calif. Cause of death shrouded in mystery. Autopsy report

"inconclusive." Body taken off airplane on way to Louisiana, cremated 200 miles away from L.A. Composer, singer, musician. Former theology student from Harvard, took up country-western music, sang with the Byrds, Flying Burritos, Submarine Blues and Emmylou Harris. Made some informal recordings with actor Brandon DeWilde, child star of "Shane." DeWilde died in a July, 1972 car crash in Denver, Colorado. He was driving to a performance of "Butterflies Are Free," the stage play he starred in.

Once happy family life, conventional, turned on to LSD, drugs, alcohol, became depressed. Phil Kaufman—he lived with Charles Manson for two months, an ex-convict charged with drug smuggling—managed Parsons. Coffin removed to the desert, the body cremated.

OTIS REDDING: 26 yrs., December 1967. Airplane crash over Wisconsin. First star of Monterey Pop to die. Brought soul to every American city. Best known hit record: "By the Dock of the Bay." A poll before his death claimed Redding was the most popular musical star in Europe.

JIMMY REED: 50 yrs., Aug. 29, 1976. Natural causes the night before he was to set off on a California tour. Blues writer, harmonica player, influenced Dylan, Steve Miller, Grateful Dead.

VINNIE TAYLOR (CHRIS DONALD): 25 yrs., April 1974, Virginia. Lead guitarist for Sha-Na-Na. Found by the National Guard in a motel room following a concert in Virginia. On his way to appear in Pittsburgh, Pa. for a sell-out concert.

CLARENCE WHITE: Car crash, Los Angeles, Calif. One of the Byrds, close friend of Gram Parsons.

PAUL WILLIAMS: 34 yrs., Aug. 23, 1973, Detroit, Michigan. Found dead in a car, gun on his lap. One of the original Temptations. Did choreography for the group. Had solved drinking problems, emotional crisis. Dead only a few blocks from Motown where his first records were made.

V. Finalé – Helter Skelter & Gimme Shelter

War, Children It's just a shot a-way, It's just a shot a-way, See the fire sweeping our very street today, Barns like a red coal carpet, ma Mad bull lost its way Rape! Murder! It's just a shot away Gimme Gimme Shelter or I'm gonna fade away Love sister, It's just a kiss away.
– Rolling Stones, "Gimme Shelter"

By the end of 1969, the folk music festival was killed in spirit and was over as a cultural happening. It was never the same again. There are musical performances, but it isn't the same feeling. The two most popular groups, The Beatles and the Rolling Stones, would be identified through media distortions with cold-blooded murder and violence. "Helter Skelter," a Beatles song, would become the title of Manson Family prosecutor Vincent Bugliosi's book. What a strange twist of fate. *Gimme Shelter*, the name of a movie depicting the ritualistic murder of a black man attending the Rolling Stones concert at Altamont, is from a song by the Rolling Stones. How did this happen? Coincidence or conspiracy? There are so many published government documents, and minutes of congressional hearings exposing illegal CIA and FBI domestic operations, that it is impossible to ride the coincidence coat tails much longer. Just as pocket calculators add numbers faster, history's dates also put pieces of the puzzle into better perspective.

FACT 1 – Social structures are rearranged. Politica, the game plan for overthrowing Salvador Allendé's elected government in Chile, was conceived by Abt Associates, Cambridge, Mass., in 1965. Abt was a front for the Pentagon and CIA. They had another plan titled Camelot. Was Camelot the military

answer to future dissent in America? The war in Vietnam escalated Nov. 24, 1963, with no known provocation from North Vietnam. It was only a matter of time before the natives at home would find out, before Norman Mailer would be writing *Why are We in Vietnam?*

FACT 2 – In 1972, at the time of Watergate, E. Howard Hunt was employed by the White House to forge secret State Department papers. The sole purpose of the forgeries was to distort history, and make the late President Kennedy responsible for the assassination of Ngo Dinh Diem, president of South Vietnam. There would be attempts to blame Kennedy for the assassination plot against Fidel Castro, in spite of massive evidence to the contrary. For all who remembered Kennedy kindly, who complained about his assassination, history was revised with a scissors and scotch tape. Kennedy would come out a scummy killer himself. This didn't take place in some strange office or dark cellar, but in the same White House offices where Nixon was screaming, "Manson is guilty." If President Nixon went to so much trouble to identify murder with an innocent man like Kennedy, there is every reason to believe his hatred of anti-war hippies and their folk-rock musicians could also be identified with murder. Make them all look violent. Bring it all down.

FACT 3 – In 1969, the combined agencies of the CIA, Army and FBI were put into full operational use. The Sharon Tate-La Bianca murders were committed in August 1969. The Altamont violence occurred four months later.

CIA

The CIA prepared for defense against domestic unrest in 1965, coinciding with Camelot and Politica. The CIA joined forces with the FBI and the Army. By August 1967, a special operations group went after the youth. By July 1968, Operation Chaos, identical to the Chilean "Chaos," clamped down on "restless youth." This wasn't a study. It was an attack. Mid-summer of 1969, one month before the Manson Family massacres, Operation Chaos entered a phase of tight security. From 1956-63, the Agency had produced enough LSD to incite every violent act associated with the chaos in Los Angeles or at Altamont. It was identical to handing out poison candy at Halloween. LSD was the moving force, the cause for the Sharon Tate-La Bianca slaughters. It was a steady diet at the Spahn ranch. LSD was the catalyst of the Altamont killing. Thousands of tablets were distributed to the Hell's Angels, who then went totally berserk and started cracking skulls.

FBI

May 1964, after the JFK assassination, the FBI instituted COINTELPRO. July 1968, explicit orders went out to proceed, accompanied with instructions, to neutralize segments of American society, including those "restless youth." By 1969, the Special Services Staff (SSS) of the FBI teamed up with the Justice Department and the CIA's Operation Chaos.

ARMY

Began testing LSD, the youth drug, in 1965, the same year Politica and Camelot were planned in Cambridge, Mass. Contracts for testing LSD and scores of psychoactive chemical agents continued through 1975. January 21, 1969, the army reported, "the LSD tests are rewarding. It is recommended that the actual application of LSD be utilized in real situations on an experimental basis." Acid was distributed surreptitiously to large masses of the population. It was the chemical that linked *Helter Skelter* and *Gimme Shelter* with blood and gore.

FACT 4 – There is more to the creation of the Manson Family and their direction than has yet been exposed. There is more to the making of the movie *Gimme Shelter* than has been explained. This saga has

interlocking links to all the beautiful people Robert Hall knew. The Manson Family and the Hell's Angels were instruments to turn on enemy forces. They attacked and discredited politically active American youth who had dropped out of the establishment. The violence came down from neo-Nazis, adorned with Swastikas both in L.A. and in the Bay Area at Altamont. The blame was placed on persons not even associated with the violence. When it was all over, the Beatles and the Rolling Stones were the icing on this cake, famed musicians associated with a racist, neo-Nazi murder. By rearranging the facts, cutting here and there, distorting evidence, neighbors and family feared their own youth. Charles Manson made the cover of *Life* with those wide eyes, like Rasputin. Charles Watson didn't make the cover. Why not? He participated in all the killings. Manson wasn't inside the house. Manson played a guitar and made records. Watson didn't. He was too busy taking care of matters at the lawyer's office prior to the killings, or with officials of Young Republicans. Who were Watson's sponsors in Texas, where he remained until his trial, separate from the Manson Family's to psychologically distance him from the linking of Watson to the murders he actually committed. "Pigs" was scrawled in Sharon Tate's house in blood. Was this to make blacks the suspects? Credit cards of the La Bianca family were dropped intentionally in the ghetto after the massacre. The purpose was to stir racial fears and hatred. Who wrote the article, "Did Hate Kill Tate?"—blaming Black Panthers for the murders? Lee Harvey Oswald was passed off as a Marxist. Another deception. A pair of glasses was left on the floor of Sharon Tate's home the day of the murder. They were never identified. Who moved the bodies after the killers left, before the police arrived? The Spahn ranch wasn't a hippie commune. It bordered the Krupp ranch, and has been incorporated into a German Bavarian beer garden. Howard Hughes knew George Spahn. He visited this ranch daily while filming *The Outlaw*. Howard Hughes bought the 516 acres of Krupp property in Nevada after he moved into that territory.

What about Altamont? What distortions and untruths are displayed in that movie? Why did Mick Jagger insist, "the concert must go on?" There was a demand that filmmakers be allowed to catch this concert. It couldn't have happened the same in any other state. The Hell's Angels had a long working relationship with law enforcement, particularly in the Oakland area. They were considered heroes by the *San Francisco Chronicle* and other newspapers when they physically assaulted the dirty anti-war hippies protesting the shipment of arms to Vietnam. The laboratory for choice LSD, the kind sent to England for the Stones, came from the Bay Area and would be consumed readily by this crowd. Attendees of the concert said there was "a compulsiveness to the event." It had to take place. Melvin Belli, Jack Ruby's lawyer, made the legal arrangements. Ruby had complained that Belli prohibited him from telling the full story of Lee Harvey Oswald's murder (another media event). There were many layers of cover-up, and many names have reappeared in subsequent scripts. Sen. Philip Hart, a member of the committee investigating illegal intelligence operations inside the US, confessed that his own children told him these things were happening. He had refused to believe them. On November 18, 1975, Sen. Hart realized matters were not only out of hand, but crimes of the past had to be exposed to prevent future outrages.

How shall we ensure that it will never happen again? It will happen repeatedly unless we can bring ourselves to understand and accept that it did go on.

Flo and Eddie, the musical group formed after The Turtles, had to cancel a fully booked, one-year tour of the U.S. and Britain. Their lead guitarist either fell or was pushed from a ninth-floor hotel room at the Salt Lake City Hilton. The first notice of this murder appeared in the *San Francisco Chronicle* on November 9, 1976, in a small column. John Austin wrote "the accident has not yet been reported, as the gendarmes are trying to keep the lid on it." A few days before, their manager, Jim Taylor, was threatened. There were hints the syndicate might be taking over the pop music business. Was that the next phase once the counter-culture was decimated?

BIBLIOGRAPHY

I

"Use of Volunteers in Chemical Agent Research," Chapter IX, *Intelligence Corps Experimentation with Hallucinogenic Drugs*, pp. 135-147.

"Use of Volunteers in Chemical Agent Research," *Contracts with Civilian Institutions*, Chapter X, pp. 152-166.

U.S. Army, *Contracts for Testing Chemical Agent Research*, Attachment "C," "Contract Costs 1950-1975," Section III, pp. 212-247.

II

"Intelligence Activities," *1976 Foreign and Military Intelligence*, Book I, April 26.

III

"Intelligence Activities and the Rights of Americans," *Senate Committee to Study Government Operations with Respect to Intelligence Activities*, Book II, April 26, 1976.

IV

"Report to the President by the Commission on CIA Activities Within the United States," *Rockefeller Report*, June 1975.

Tony Scaduto, *Mick Jagger*, David McKay, New York, 1974.

Friedman, Myra, *Buried Alive, The Biography of Janis Joplin*, Bantam, New York, 1973.

"Department of Army Report on the Use of Chemical Agent Research, Intelligence Corps Experimentation with Hallucinogenic Drugs" – Dept. of the Army, Office of the Inspector General and Auditor General, released March 1976.

Chronology of U.S. Army Intelligence, U.S. Chemical Corps Experiments with LSD, Codename EA 1729

1950 – LSD considered by Army as method of interrogation and possible defense against enemy interrogation.

May 1956 – CHEMICAL WARFARE LABORATORIES, EDGEWOOD ARSENAL, MD. Tests on human volunteers. Page 136, Army Report: "All beverages served to volunteers had included sufficient LSD, EA 1729, for effective dosage, or additional dosage [administered] before volunteering."

1956-1957 – Army Intelligence, Fr. Holabird with Army Chemical Corps, Edgewood Arsenal, for LSD tests. These included many other chemicals. Also included LSD in conjunction with electrode implants. Doses as high as 1,600 micrograms; normal LSD, street level, 160 micrograms.

THE HEIGHT OF LSD TESTING

March, 1958 – Used for memory impairment, motor reactions, stress under LSD. READY TO BE USED FOR "OPERATIONAL ADVANTAGE."

Jan. 21, 1959 – CONCLUSION: LSD TESTS REWARDING – "IT IS RECOMMENDED THAT ACTUAL APPLICATION OF LSD BE UTILIZED IN REAL SITUATIONS ON AN EXPERIMENTAL BASIS."

Jan. 8, 1960 – ARMY FIELD INSTRUCTIONS FOR G-2, ADMINISTRATION OF LSD. TOLD TO COORDINATE WITH FBI, CIA.

Dec. 1960 – CIA, ARMY INTELLIGENCE, U.S. CHEMICAL CORPS WORKING TOGETHER on LSD TESTS.

April 28, 1961 – OPERATION THIRD CHANCE. Overseas "testing," LSD. Causing mental diseases not recognized by physicians—any diagnosis tended to discredit.

July, 1961 – LSD READY FOR OPERATIONAL PURPOSES.

Feb., 1962 – OPERATION DERBY HAT, Hawaii military bases, LSD experiments.

April 19, 1963 – LSD TESTING CONTINUED. No records of "volunteers."

Existing records "incomplete." Most records "totally inadequate." THE SENATE OBTAINED THIS REPORT AND MINIMIZED THE FINDINGS. U.S. ARMY, U.S. CHEMICAL CORPS. SPENT $26,501,446. TESTS WERE CONDUCTED FROM 1951-1971. SOME 48 INSTITUTIONS WERE USED AS COVER: HOSPITAL, PRISONS, COLLEGES, MENTAL HOSPITALS, ARMY PERSONNEL.

SUMMARY OF THE CIA'S LSD TESTS, CHEMICALS FOR ALTERING HUMAN BEHAVIOR

Senate Committee to Study Governmental Operations With Respect to Intelligence Activities, *Foreign and Military Intelligence*, Book I, April 26, 1976.

1947 – Same year Nazi doctors brought to USA, continued their tests and experiments.

1947 – CIA EXPERIMENTS BEGIN FOR ALTERING HUMAN BEHAVIOR.

1947-1953 – OPERATION CHATTER (for the purpose of interrogation).

1953-57 – OPERATION BLUEBIRD/ARTICHOKE: Sodium pentathol injections, hypnosis. Purpose: erase memory, create double and triple personalities, resist torture, conduct covert operations without memory later.

1/8/53 – Death of Dr. Harold Blauer by injections of synthetic mescaline derivative. U.S. Chemical Corp., New York State Psychiatric

Institute (cf. Barrett v. U.S., 660 F Supp. 1291, S.D.N.Y. 1987, awarding $702,044 to Blauer's daughter).

1967-70 – OPERATION MKNAOMI: The CIA stockpiled incapacitating, lethal materials to be used by the Technical Services Division. Make sure complete predictability of results. Toxins, shellfish, poison darts, pills, biological weapons. Drugs to silence animals. Worked with the Army from 1952.

1953-1963 –MKULTRA, CHEMICAL, BIOLOGICAL AGENTS. Radiation, electrode implants. Electroshock, LSD + electrodes. "Ten years of tests," then operational. Tested all levels of society. Native Americans, wide variety of persons used. Army Hospitals, Vacaville Prison, National Institute of Mental Health.

1961-1971 – MKULTRA BECAME MKDELTA: OPERATIONAL USE. Allen Dulles, 100-million LSD tablets. Millions of dollars. Universities, pharmaceutical houses, hospitals. State, Federal institutions. Special and unique items for dissemination. Combined MKULTRA with Army, Projects Derby Hat, Project Third Chance. Purpose: TO CONTROL BODIES, WILLING OR NOT. DRUGS COULD BE USED TO HARASS, DISABLE, OR KILL.

Dec. 1963 – MKULTRA, MKDELTA. Used as an OPERATIONAL WEAPON. PRESIDENT, CONGRESS NEVER KNEW. Purpose: DISCREDIT, IMPLANT SUGGESTIONS, MENTAL CONTROL, ELICIT INFORMATION. CAN PRODUCE PSYCHOSIS IN CHRONIC FORM PARTICULARLY IN LATENT SCHIZOPHRENIA. CAN CAUSE PERMANENT CONDITION OF INSANITY.

Senate Committee to Study Governmental Operations With Respect to Intelligence Activities, *Intelligence Activities and the Rights of Americans*, Book II, April 26, 1976: SUMMARY OF FBI COUNTER INTELLIGENCE OPERATIONS AS APPLIED TO STATED "APOSTLES OF NON-VIOLENCE," "NEW LEFT," "ADVOCATES OF NEW LIFESTYLES."

1964-1970 – THE FBI JOINED WITH THE CIA, NATIONAL SECURITY AGENCY IN ILLEGAL, DOMESTIC ACTIVITIES.

May, 1964 – COUNTER-INTELLIGENCE PROGRAM STARTED.

July, 1968 – ORDERS FROM FBI HEADQUARTERS: INSTRUCTIONS FOR OPERATIONS. Selected "enemy" were to be, exposed, disrupted, neutralized.

1969 – SSS, SPECIAL SERVICES STAFF. Started targeting groups, individuals (After Woodstock, just prior to Manson Family and Altamont.) FBI, NATIONAL SECURITY AGENCY, JUSTICE DEPARTMENT, COMBINED INTO A LARGER OPERATION, INTER-DIVISIONAL INFORMATION UNIT, IDIU, JUSTICE DEPT.

Aug., 1969 – FBI, PLUS JUSTICE DEPARTMENT, PLUS NATIONAL SECURITY AGENCY COMBINED WITH CIA'S OPERATIONAL CHAOS.

FBI and Justice Department knew CIA operations in USA were illegal. They agreed to work together, keep it highly secret, not put CIA names on meeting memos and give concealed names to shield CIA FROM OBSERVATION.

CHAPTER TWELVE

INTERVIEW: THE ASSASSINATION OF JOHN ONO LENNON

(Recorded in December, 1980, at her home in Carmel, conducted by Tom Davis, a Northern California bookseller.)

TD: *What would be the motive to kill John Lennon on December 8, 1980? Lennon had been in seclusion for many years and had not yet released his new album.*

MB: Both the date of Lennon's murder and the careful selection of this particular victim are very important. Six weeks after Lennon's death, Ronald Reagan would become President. Reagan and his soon-to-be appointed cabinet were prepared to build up the Pentagon war machine and increase the potential for war against the USSR. The first strike would fall on small countries like El Salvador and Guatemala. Lennon, alone, was the only man (even without his fellow Beatles) who had the ability to draw out one million anti-war protestors in any given city within 24 hours if he opposed those war policies.

John Lennon was a spiritual force. He was a giant, like Gandhi, a man who wrote about peace and brotherly love. He taught an entire generation to think for themselves and challenge authority. Lennon and the Beatles' songs shout out the inequalities of American life and the messages of change. Change is a threat to the longtime status quo that Reagan's team exemplified.

On my weekly radio broadcast of December 7, 1980, I stated, "The old assassination teams are coming back into power." The very people responsible for covering up the murders of President John F. Kennedy, Senator Robert Kennedy, Reverend Martin Luther King, for Watergate and Koreagate, and the kidnapping and murder of Howard Hughes, and for hundreds of other deaths, had only six weeks before they would again be removing or silencing those voices of opposition to their policies.

Lennon was coming out once more. His album was cut. He was preparing to be part of the world, a world which was a worse place since the time he had withdrawn with his family. It was a sure bet Lennon would react and become a social activist again. That was the threat. Lennon realized that there was danger in coming back into public view. He took that dangerous chance and we all lost!

TD: *The common assumption is that Mark David Chapman, arrested the moment he killed John Lennon, was acting out his personal love-hate relationship with Lennon. Why do you have to look for a larger conspiracy than the conflicts in Chapman's own head?*

MB: Single crimes of passion are easy to explain and solve. When someone is gunned down who is controversial, has political enemies, is hated by wealthy and well-organized religious movements, and is an open opponent of government policies at home and abroad, that kind of murder requires much more inquiry into the background of the assassin. The conclusions about the murder motive may turn out to be

simple. Yet, in every political assassination since 1963, there were always more unanswered questions that led to a broader supposition of intention to kill by a group of people rather than one single individual.

TD: *What is the first clue you look for if you are suspicious of a larger conspiracy to assassinate, whether it is John Lennon, President John F. Kennedy, or the recent attempts on President Reagan and Pope John Paul II?*

MB: There are necessary connecting links in every assassination conspiracy. If any link of that chain falls apart and becomes exposed, the larger plot is more visible. When every element of that chain holds together and is present in the evidence and testimony regarding any particular murder, there has to be a larger conspiracy.

The most important link in that chain is the selected decoy or patsy. Whoever is arrested at the scene of the crime, to the exclusion of other suspicious persons, becomes the "assassin." This single person must serve a purpose, namely, to divert all attention away from those people who have armed him and placed him at the scene of the crime.

Letters and diaries are always present and easily found to support the predetermined cover story. They provide a "motive," and are the glue that cements (we are told) the "loner" to his single purpose.

In preparation for his "act," the decoy or patsy is moved across countries or overseas, traveling and staying at safe houses. He has no friends, no jobs, no means of support while staying at fancy hotels, spending money, receiving phone messages and meeting lots of people. Very few people have the money to spend years in transit like these patsies, whose chances of being in selected locations at the precise moment their victim is murdered are minute without assistance.

TD: *Who was Mark David Chapman? What was there in his background that made you suspicious that he had been selected for a "decoy" or "patsy" by other persons who wanted Lennon dead?*

MB: Chapman came from a conservative military family who had moved from Fort Worth, Texas to Florida. He had become a "Jesus Freak" at the time Lennon and the Beatles were receiving death threats, during the anti-war period. Joining the religious movement while supposedly loving and admiring Lennon was a gross contradiction—the fundamentalists were furious that Lennon considered himself better known and loved than Jesus.

DeKalb County, Georgia, just to the east of Atlanta, figures prominently in Chapman's life, as it had some years earlier in that of Martin Luther King. In a 1977 court affidavit, Robert Byron Watson, a former employee of Magellan's Art Gallery in Atlanta, named several citizens who planned and boasted of the pending "murder of Reverend Martin Luther King." King's death came just one week after the plans were discussed. These same people also talked about murdering Senator Robert Kennedy.

Chapman attended DeKalb Junior College. From DeKalb County, Chapman was sent to Beirut, Lebanon. He was handed the funds both ways. Beirut was the center for George Habash and CIA assassination teams also identified in the Watson testimony before the House Select Committee on Assassinations in 1977-78.

On March 31, 1981, United Press International exposed "military training in a guerrilla camp" in Beirut, Lebanon with "worldwide Nazi ties."

After six months in Lebanon, Chapman went to Fort Chaffee, Arkansas to work with Vietnam refugees recently arrived from Southeast Asia. Agents of the CIA were with him at this military base.

William Colby's Phoenix program in Vietnam, staffed by agents who intensely hated anti-war social activists like John Lennon, had both the intent and the means to move persons like Chapman to their training camps and specific locales planned as sites for future assassinations. Colby came back to the U.S.

to become Director of the C.I.A. (1973) when "Operation Chaos" was in full swing against hippies, rock musicians and anti-war protestors. Many of them were killed or otherwise neutralized.

From Fort Chaffee, Arkansas, Chapman moved to Lookout Mountain, Tennessee to attend Presbyterian College.

Martin Luther King, a victim of plans laid in DeKalb County, Georgia, was murdered in Memphis, Tennessee. Senator Howard Baker from Tennessee and CIA Director William Colby were making deals to cover up Watergate crimes in 1974-75, a year before Chapman moved to Tennessee.

According to news reports, Chapman "fled" Tennessee for Hawaii in 1976. His earliest arrest records indicated he had committed crimes in Florida, but the authorities later blamed them on someone else, excusing the mix-up as a "computer mistake." Many patsies and decoys have earlier arrest records that are used to keep them silent and actively cooperative for fear of going to jail. Was there any connection between the Florida identification and Chapman's flight to Hawaii?

Hawaii has been the scene of many clandestine operations. A host of CIA Vietnamese and members of the Special Forces, now safely removed from Vietnam, were assembled in Hawaii. The Nugan Hand Bank, an Australian conduit for CIA "black money," assassination funds, kept a branch in Hawaii. Herbert Mullen, convicted of mass murders in California, appeared perfectly normal until he was sent to a military hospital in Hawaii. It was in Maui that he evolved in his "religious thinking" and emerged as a killer. Ed Sanders, author of *The Family*, a book about the Manson Family, obtained documents regarding a mysterious trip Mullen took to Hawaii before he became a programmed killer.

The years 1976-78 in Chapman's biography are still vague and murky: two years of limited employment and "mental treatment." Allegedly, he was in the hospital for a mental breakdown. On the other hand, if there were any evidence of mental instability, would not his gun purchase permit have been denied?

There were many years, months, days when Chapman could have been mentally programmed to become a "Manchurian Candidate," specifically to murder John Lennon if and when he re-entered public life. Lennon was not a threat until the U.S. was approaching another war.

Subsequently, Chapman took a long "vacation," including a trip around the world. On this voyage, he stopped in Switzerland to visit a pal from DeKalb County, Georgia, the same man who had arranged the trip to Lebanon. The journey culminated in London with a visit to a rare live Lennon concert.

Chapman's wife worked for a travel agency and "arranged his itinerary." The financing for his fare, hotels, food and concerts has never been identified, although Pacific Holding Ltd., a "tourism" company formed by the CIA and Special Forces, may be implicated. Both groups had funds to hire assassination teams.

When Chapman left his job in Hawaii, October 23, 1980, he flew to Atlanta. From Georgia, he went to New York City with the intention of killing John Lennon, but was apparently able to resist the "master inside himself," a conflict he describes, and returned to Hawaii. Before long, however, Hawaii was again behind him, and Chapman arrived in New York on December 5, 1980 with the specific plan to kill John Lennon, which he did three days later.

TD: *What you are talking about is only circumstantial. There is no proof that the CIA or any government agency manipulated Chapman for their purposes. When does the proof of a conspiracy ever become apparent?*

MB: The burden of proof is placed on the private investigator, but there are links in the conspiracy chain that reveal the relevant questions to ask: Did Chapman have armed accomplices to ensure that Lennon was dead? Who fled the scene in a hurry, never sought again by law enforcement agencies? Why did the New York police adamantly refuse to accept photos of Lennon signing an album for Chapman

earlier on the evening of the murder? Why were they donated to a newspaper after police refused to accept them? When Chapman's wife was called by New York police, why did they instruct her: "Don't release any pictures of him?" Why did Miami Police issue an erroneous description of a criminal with the same last name, date of birth, race and approximate height as the slaying suspect? Can we ever see the picture of the Florida suspect? If Chapman was treated for mental illness in Hawaii, how did he procure the gun *in* that state? How did Chapman transport the gun from the island to the mainland? (This question was dismissed by Federal Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, and Firearms agents, who said, "No investigation was in progress.")

Money was never a problem for this wanderer. He and his wife lived in a $400 per month apartment and were able to support his hobby of collecting expensive works of art. Owning original Norman Rockwell lithographs worth $7,500, and traveling around the world aren't impossible if there is some kind of occupation that provides the money for these luxuries. If Chapman wrote "John Lennon" on his work sheet on October 23, 1980, it would seem impossible for someone not to notice this message until the day after Lennon was murdered. Employment log sheets are tallied regularly to determine hours worked and amount of pay. It is more probable that Chapman recorded the name at that time so his cover story, his defense after the murder, would be his mental identification with John Lennon.

Chapman's intention to find Lennon, the adoring Beatle fan, must be separated from the question concerning who transported him from Hawaii to Georgia to New York, back to Hawaii, back again to New York, with lots of cash and the sole purpose of killing Lennon.

Jimmy Breslin, the New York columnist, was impressed that Mark David Chapman could be such a "good shot" with "no military background at all." But Chapman had been trained. He had learned to become a security guard in Georgia before his trips to Lebanon and the many countries where he could have been instructed in killing. What about Ft. Chaffee? Why not shooting practice in Tennessee? What about military bases in Hawaii? What gives Breslin and the *New York Daily News* the right to make such statements without an inkling of Chapman's background?

Like all the other "lone" drifters, Chapman stayed at expensive hotels. His last evening before killing Lennon was spent at the Sheraton Centre Hotel in New York. He was carrying more than $2,000 in cash along with his credit cards. Where did he get these cards, and on what basis was the money earned and saved to establish credit to qualify for these cards?

TD: *You apparently believe there was a government conspiracy to assassinate and silence John Lennon conceived and executed by the same people who murdered other political figures and musicians over the past 18 years?*

MB: Absolutely! The federal government has maintained active programs to eliminate rock musicians and disrupt rock concerts. Senator Frank Church's committee hearings in 1975, and the FBI's COINTELPRO clearly document the intent to break up any gatherings of the "new left." Nothing brought anti-war demonstrators into contact with political messages more effectively than music festivals.

There is hard evidence that the CIA assigned agents to "investigate the music industry." After the murders of Tim Buckley, Jim Croce, and Mama Cass Elliot, more information surfaced about the prior mysterious deaths of Jimi Hendrix, Jim Morrison and Janis Joplin. Listed below, but not updated this past year, are some of the rock musicians who have died since the Huston Plan and FBI counter-intelligence program were activated. If these people were taking drugs, there is the distinct possibility that poisons were introduced in lethal quantities, to make it appear that they had died from simple "overdoses."

The murder of John Lennon is the tragic finale to an era, a reminder that once an artist becomes as popular and as political as he, enemies will be waiting to ensure that the artists fails to awaken slumbering youth.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

ABOUT WOMEN …

(PLAYGIRL MAGAZINE INTERVIEW)

(PLAYGIRL MAGAZINE, AUGUST 1974)

At a time when many writers and thinkers are seriously questioning the official accounts of the political assassinations, kidnappings and "dirty tricks," a housewife-turned-social-theorist offers her own frightening, but well-researched, explanation.

By Stephanie Caruana

Mae Brussell is a researcher who has spent ten years studying political assassinations and conspiracies in the United States. On July 11, 1972, she wrote the first article to give a reasonable explanation for the break-in and arrests at the Watergate—three weeks after the event. The article, "Why Was Martha Mitchell Kidnapped?" was published in *The Realist*.

Meanwhile, the establishment press was sweeping the Watergate story under the rug, to the accompaniment of the "Third-rate Burglary Chorus." But the story—and Mae Brussell—wouldn't go away. In December, 1972, she published a second long article in *The Realist*. But Watergate was still, in the words of President Nixon's tape transcript, "an unpricked boil," and this story, too, was left to the alternative press.

For three years, Mae Brussell's weekly hour-long live radio news analysis show, *Dialogue:Conspiracy*, has been broadcast over KLRB-FM, in Carmel, California. The show is also currently heard in Sacramento, Boston, Syracuse, and San Francisco. She also teaches the first accredited university course entitled "Conspiracies and Assassinations" at Monterey Peninsula College.

In April, 1974, I asked her: "Who or what is the SLA, and why did they kidnap Patricia Hearst?" Her answer, "Is SLA's Cinque the First Black Lee Harvey Oswald?" appeared in the *Berkeley Barb*. Her theory is that the SLA is a conspiracy involving top intelligence agencies. Mae Brussell believes she knows who is manipulating the course of American history by means of "bullets and blackmail"—and why. She believes that plans for the military takeover of the United States and the imposition of martial law sit on governmental desks like time bombs, waiting to go off when the time is right—and that only immediate public awareness can avert a national disaster with echoes of Nazi Germany, Greece and the Philippines.

Of course—she could be wrong. In spite of her painstaking analysis of hundreds of books and thousands of articles, letters and other documents; in spite of her staggering perception of a Gestalt, a pattern, in which puzzling, wearying daily news stories emerge as expected details to be slipped into the overall framework—she could be wrong. She *could* be simply a modern Sherlock Holmes exercising a brilliant capacity for deductive logic on events which in reality have no interconnection. Even so, how happy I would be to sit at her feet like a modern Dr. Watson, with no pipe to chew on to hide my comic consternation at having missed the point *again*. Sometimes I become so involved with the exhilaration of

the chase, the mental process of tracking down the game, that I almost forget this is real life we are talking about. Real people are being murdered while other real people are framed and railroaded into real prisons. The "arch enemy" in this game isn't Professor Moriarty, "the most fiendish criminal mind the world has ever known," after all, a fictional character safely on the wrong side of society's pale—it is the intelligence agency complex of the United States.

Oh yes, Baker Street Irregulars, I know how you feel—you with your Inverness capes, sleuth caps, and meerschaum pipes, as you slouch through a world of fantasy. But can you guess how *I* feel? With a whole new unwritten library of mystery stories before me in the person of a lively, charming, lovable mother of four who currently shares a rambling, casual, suburban home with two daughters, two kittens, a rabbit and a blond cocker spaniel? A potential shelf of contemporary history books that I myself may help to write? I feel *lucky*.

* * *

Mae thinks back to her life before she began her research, and laughs. "Did you ever see a movie called *The Garden of the Finzi-Continis*? It's about a wealthy Jewish family living in Italy during the emergence of fascism. We weren't quite *that* wealthy. Let's say we were 'comfortable.' My activities were centered around my husband, our children, and our home. I was also reading the newspapers, watching the cold war: the Rosenberg case, and the Alger Hiss case.

"I was watching Nixon. I had a strong philosophy about raising children before I began studying political assassinations. The two are related. You can't make the world safe while you are raising a bunch of mad bombers.

"I went to Stanford University and got married a few weeks before graduation. I majored in philosophy. We studied Plato, Nietzsche, Emerson and Thoreau—yet the professors didn't seem to understand anything about real life. Those were the war years, 1940 to 1943. Hitler was raising a Holocaust all over Europe—but we were upper middle-class children, so we studied medieval history. We spent a lot of time learning to distinguish between Rembrandt, Degas and Picasso. It was as if the world outside didn't exist.

"Before that? I grew up in Beverly Hills and went to Beverly High. We sat around swimming pools with movie stars' kids, played backgammon, went to polo games. All of a sudden, there was Hitler killing Jews. My father is a rabbi, but we never discussed Jewishness until after Hitler was gone. Like most cultural groups in the United States, we were never encouraged to respect our own cultural heritage. Yet the Jews have made many important contributions.

"People sometimes wonder how an ordinary housewife like me could get so interested in the John F. Kennedy assassination. But nothing just happens. There has to be a time when you begin to think and feel an emotional climate of caring about people, a nurturing place where you give a damn. If you repress your children, slap them, ignore them, dump them in front of the TV, go away and leave them with strangers, you are not nurturing them to be sympathetic to other people. That's where my head was when Kennedy was assassinated. I was worried about my children and what sort of society we were living in where this murder could take place.

"I didn't believe the official reports because there were too many discrepancies. I was taking the morning and evening papers then. I also had a number of magazine subscriptions. I clipped and saved articles from the day Kennedy died. Gradually, I increased my newspaper subscriptions to include the *New York Times* and the *Washington Post*. Now I take eight newspapers a day. I get a better perspective on what is happening all over the country. Stories that are left out of one paper often get into another one.

"In September, 1964, the *Warren Commission Report* came out, and I read it very carefully. Lee Harvey Oswald interested me. Twenty-three adjectives were used to describe him in the *Warren Report*.

They said he had no friends, no meaningful relationships, couldn't hold a job, and so on. But the evidence all pointed in the opposite direction. So I bought the 26 volumes of the Warren Commission hearings and began studying them.

"My husband never tried to discourage me. In many ways, he helped me. I could have any book or magazine subscription that I wanted. But my new interest in political assassinations definitely drove a wedge into our marriage. He couldn't see why it was so important to know who murdered John F. Kennedy. And I think most men would begin to resent the time I withdrew from entertaining our friends and devoted instead to what became serious, full-time research. We were divorced four years ago.

"I had gone through a drastic role change. But people do change partners today, when their interests change. If your mind leads you to follow a new belief, and your mate goes with you, that is beautiful. Otherwise, you need the courage to go it alone, or you will meet someone who is on the same trip, and so you continue on that trip with him.

"The people I admired most were Frank Lloyd Wright, Carl Sandburg, Henry Miller, Bertrand Russell, Emerson and Thoreau. They cared about people—how they live and relate to each other. They were calm and placid. They served humanity and tried to turn people on to the truth."

"It seems like a long jump from philosophy to the Warren Commission hearings," I said. Mae nodded. "Yes, but it's a question of survival. I studied the hearings for two years. And I perceived a certain way of questioning witnesses, so that they never got to the point. It is the same technique that was used in the Watergate hearings: you don't push too hard because you might elicit something that you don't want others to know.

"Albert Jenner was on the Warren Commission, and he is now busy helping as Nixon's counsel on impeachment procedures. Other members of the Warren Commission team that covered up the JFK assassination conspiracy ten years ago are in power now.

"I developed a cross-filing system, which grew as I went through the 26 volumes of testimony. I personally believe the JFK assassination was an intelligence operation and that Oswald was a government agent. I'd like to do a book on Oswald, showing how our society can take a person into military service, train him, set him loose and use him—then turn its back, lock him up, or kill him when he has done his work. Oswald was expendable, a 'throw-away person.' If you care for my view, he was framed, defamed and then murdered.

"I will do another book called *Decoy into Patsy* about Oswald and Arthur Bremer, the alleged would-be assassin of George Wallace—and Sirhan Sirhan, James Earl Ray, Charles Manson, Juan Corona. All of these are political assassinations, conspiracies. Would you accept the supposition that they all follow similar patterns? Once you have solved the first one, it is easy to figure out the others. The most difficult thing for people to understand is the use of the prison system to bury living human evidence of political conspiracies. Yet once the concept is understood, it provides the key to unlock every case.

"Even though there is a wide pattern of conspiracies, it doesn't involve a large number of people. Fewer than one-half of one percent of the population is involved. The biggest problem for the researcher is that the average person can't even conceive of the possibility of conspiracies. But if enough people realized the truth, they could end the devastating process that has kept us constantly at war to protect the financial interests of a small group of people. It has driven 50,000 of our young men into permanent exile, and killed another 50,000 American soldiers, as well as countless thousands of innocent people in other countries. It has ruined our economy and is now leading inevitably to a bloodbath in our own country."

I asked whether she thought Nixon's tape transcripts would have some effect on people's thinking.

"Of course. They follow the same pattern as the Warren Commission hearings. Evidence has been chopped up, destroyed, deleted, shredded or deep-sixed. This is what they did with JFK's autopsy. X-rays were never developed, the original autopsy papers were burned, the car interior was destroyed immediately, and JFK's brain was hidden away so researchers couldn't find out about the bullets.

Remember Sally Harmony and her shredding machine, L. Patrick Gray destroying the contents of Howard Hunt's desk, Mrs. James McCord burning typewriter ribbons from the White House while a C.I.A. agent stood 'innocently' by? The only reason you destroy these things is to hide the fact that you have done something illegal. For the guilty, the crime of destroying evidence is less serious than the crime you are hiding."

"It seems difficult for many people to take what you are saying seriously," I ventured.

She laughed again. "There are many reasons why people won't examine these questions. Some people feel they lack the capacity to understand what is happening. Others believe they are just doing their job and don't want to get involved. Another group fear they would be in danger. They don't realize that whether they like it or not, America could be like Vietnam for the next ten years. An elite group feels that changing the system might be bad for their profits.

"But while there may be little profit in investigative work, there is no poverty in it. I can go out and lecture on what I have learned about conspiracies. Woodward and Bernstein won a Pulitzer Prize for taking a position against the whole administration. There is money in truth these days, although for years you couldn't give it away. I think people are hungry for truth and bored with lies."

I asked whether she had any suggestions for women who might want to get more involved themselves, but didn't know where to start.

"A woman could start with her morning paper, like I did. She has to throw away the programmed assumption that because she is a woman, she can't figure things out. She could learn more about the things that interest her, write to her congressmen and correspond with prisoners. It is up to women to force society to change, because the men aren't doing it.

"I began with one book and gradually built up a collection of information so comprehensive that people come from all over the world to see it. And I am not endowed with special brains. I just sat back and asked myself, 'What is life about? And what do I want out of my life?' What I want is to know the truth about the world I and my children live in."

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

WORLD WATCHERS PROGRAM OUTLINE, OCTOBER 4, 1982

NAZIS, SS. OSS, DULLES SINCE WORLD WAR II, THE WEB AROUND GRACE KELLY, MONTEREY TAX COLLECTOR – WELLS FARGO, "CONTENT ANALYSIS OF NEWS," HOW TO EXTRACT, "REAGAN, NANCY DECLARE WAR ON DOPE DEALERS," *SF EXAMINER*, 10/3/82

(PROGRAM OUTLINE FOR WORLD WATCHERS INTERNATIONAL BROADCAST, OCT. 4, 1982)

SIDE ONE

1. Release Bobby Hall tapes, LA, on GOP, Hollywood drug users.
2. Fire Sen. Paul Laxalt, Nevada, as GOP fund raiser, Vegas mob, crooks.
3. Take away key to White House from Frank Sinatra, your best pal.
4. Remove George Bush, CIA, Task Force 157, Nugan Hand, heroin, cocaine.
5. Grant immunity to CIA dope assassins, T. Shackley, Edwin Wilson, Frank Terpil, Michael Sindona, Robert Vesco in exchange for their telling us who killed JFK, Nov. 22, 1963. JM/Wave, CIA.
6. Release Michael Sindona from 25 yr. sentence if he tells MAFIA dope connections to Ronald Reagan and Jimmy Carter, Richard Nixon.
7. Reveal how much money was made selling heroin, cocaine in USA the past three years, and in what cities. How many prosecuted?

DUTCH PRINCE "DEPRESSED," *SF Chronicle*, 10/2/82. Prince Claus, Nazi husband of Queen Beatrix, Basel, mental hospital.

TREND WATCHER, JOHN NAISBITT, READING NEWSPAPERS. *W.S. Journal*, 9/30/82. "Avoid the big event, news hole, content analysis of smaller papers."

THOMAS C. WHITE III, MONTEREY COUNTY TREASURER-TAX COLLECTOR.CHECK HIM OUT!!

"*Insurance Executives Vanish*, County Again Escapes Financial Misfortune." *Monterey Herald*, 9/29/82. WELLS FARGO BANK, Monterey. "Insurance Exec. Vanishes Along with $3000,000 – Plus Another $100,010." *LAT*, 9/28/82. Sleazy outfit, alias, death threats, secret operations. Workman's compensation funds, Monterey funds with two who are gone.

THE NAZI CONNECTIONS: WHY KRAEMER VS. KRAEMER IS IMPORTANT.

1. "SECRET REPORT ON HOW NAZIS AIDED U.S. SPIES," *S.F. Examiner*, 9/29/82, 7/27/47, Allen Dulles on forming CIA, testimony on sharing Nazi spies with USA while WWII fighting. Adm. Wilhelm Canaris, others. **"TIFF OVER A DOCUMENT, COPS CALLED TO CAPITOL HILL,"** *SF Chronicle*, 9/30/82 Ira Goldman tried to stop Reuters newsman from reading about Allen (Warren Commission) Dulles, OSS-SS co-workers.

2. "U.S. PLANNING NUCLEAR WAR," SFC, AP, 10/2/82. Sov. For. Minister Andrei Gromyko, "cold blooded composure of gravediggers" – Reagan administration.

3. "LABOR PARTY GROUP URGES NEW PEACE EFFORT," *NY Times*, 10/10/48. Accused USA of breaking peace with Russia, working with Nazis, and setting a policy for war, that looms larger every day. ONE YEAR AFTER CIA FORMED, ASSIST FROM HITLER'S TOP NAZIS.

4. "DEMANDS FOR 'ARGENTINE NUREMBERG' TRIALS," *L.A. Times*, 9/27/82. 20,000 KILLED, ARMED FORCES SINCE 1970'S. "We DID WHAT WAS NECESSARY," Argentine admirals, generals. "YOUR COMMANDERS WERE NOT TRIED FOR VIETNAM AND WE SHOULDN'T BE EITHER." "CATCH 22 – NAZIS, FRITZ KRAEMER, KISSINGER SET UP VIETNAM AND ARGENTINE DEATH SQUADS."

SIDE 2

THE WEB AROUND GRACE KELLY, WHY DID SHE LEAVE HOME ALONE?

Part II – More next week on the connections listed below. DANGEROUS TIMES, SHE TOUCHED ALL BASES.

1. VATICAN CONNECTIONS, when murders, exposes explosive possibilities.

2. NUGAN HAND CONNECTIONS, Monte Carlo, Samuel Cummings, CIA, Mafia.

3. ARCTIC CIRCLE CONNECTIONS, Robert Vesco vs. Bernie Cornfield, Oil, energy war, deciding votes for natural resources in Monte Carlo.

4. HOLLYWOOD CONNECTIONS. Twentieth Century Fox, MGM, Columbia, politics mixed with CIA, assassination teams, Mafia, and church. *THE SPIDERWEB*, J. Persico, Crown, NY. "Operation Bernhard," counterfeit for Nazis, for after war, what Vatican doing now with Mafia, Nazis.

GRACE KELLY'S SPIDERWEB

1. CATHOLIC RELIGION PRIMARY when CIA, GEHLEN, TOP USA SPIES HAD BEEN SWORN INTO **Sovereign Military Order of Malta (SMOM).** Would need a CATHOLIC FOR PRINCE RAINIER. If no heirs, Monte Carlo goes back to FRANCE. Spies, the Spiderweb needs Monte Carlo, Hong Kong, international weapons, narcotics, intrigue, Nazis, not accountable to countries.

2. ROCKEFELLER CONNECTIONS – *NY Daily News*, 9/15/82. In 1935, father borrowed $7,000. Construction loan. 15 years later, $18 million. Helped build Rockefeller Center.

3. MODEL, NYC, TWO PLAYS SHORT RUNS – Three months. Three weeks. TV spots. Gerald

Ford, model, NYC, to Warren Commission, Twentieth-Century Fox board with Grace. Candy Jones, Model, NYC, CIA, Jimmy Hoffa, international trips.

4. MGM CONNECTIONS – Ida Koverman, Herbert Hoover secy., with Louis Mayer, Randolph Hearst, Catholic Hitler lover. Hoover, Mayer combine.

5. OLEG, IGOR CASSINI, JOSEPH KENNEDY – Nazi, SMOM, Allen Dulles, Louis Nizer (Warren Commission Introduction), Jackie O., Wrightmans, Rubiroso, Trujillo, Nixon, Monte Carlo, Grace Kelly.

6. CASSINI CONNECTIONS, CZARIST RUSSIA, RANDOLPH HEARST, ONASSIS, GRACE.

7. FRANK SINATRA CONNECTIONS, "HIGH SOCIETY." – Alfred Bloomingdale, Vicki Morgan, Bernie Cornfield, Roy Cohn, Monte Carlo. Sam Giancana, Robert Maheu.

8. MONTE CARLO CONNECTIONS – The Lodge, Kissinger, Alex Haig, Licio Gelli, Middle East narcotics.

9. VATICAN CONNECTIONS – Arranged her contract marriage, ten day engagement, took Rainier to her door, question asked THAT SAME NIGHT, second meeting, directed by CHURCH, VATICAN FOR RAINIER, MONTE CARLO CASINO, KEEP OUT OF FRANCE! ! !

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

THE MURDER OF JOHN BELUSHI

(World Watchers International broadcast, March 21, 1982.)

When John Belushi died, there was a wave of confusion in Los Angeles for the first week or so from the coroner's office and police officials concerning the cause of death. A week later, the headlines delivered a *fait accompli*—that he was always drunk, a slob, took drugs all the time. He had this expensive drug habit.

I didn't know John Belushi, but he was very successful, just as many rock musicians died at the peak of their success, at the crest when they were about to do better things. This death follows the same pattern.

He was about to make, with partners, two very important and highly political movies. One was to be called *Blue Moon Over Miami*, and it was to be directed by Louis Malle, the fellow who directed *Atlantic City*, nominated for an Academy Award—and also *My Dinner with André;* it's been suggested this was the best picture of the year. Malle is a serious director. The script was written by highly successful and well-known writer, John Guare.

So one of the movies that Belushi was about to make was a comedy about the FBI and drug smuggling from Colombia to Miami. And he would play the role of the drug dealer, an informer for the FBI, and then the FBI agent becomes the drug dealer. That is, you must admit, a very controversial movie because the state of Florida depends upon the drug market. It is probably the biggest going industry in Florida, and also the United States.

And these people don't appreciate comedy.

And the network of assassination teams and drug dealers selling poison drugs comes from headquarters in Hollywood and Miami.

Belushi was also in Hollywood to make a movie called *Noble Rot*, and he was to be with his good friend Don Novello, Father Sarducci. Now, Father Sarducci and John Belushi were making a movie about the wineries in California, dominated by the mob. They are trying to establish social acceptance, and this was to be a comedy about the Italian Mafia. *Noble Rot*, you can imagine what that is by the title alone.

So if you think that Belushi was not overly-political, forget it. In the past, he made fun of the Establishment. And to make fun of the Establishment is lethal.

Incidentally, Belushi had bought a $400,000 home up at Martha's Vineyard—he had 2,000 feet of ocean-front land and eight-and-a-half acres. He bought it in 1979 from former Defense Secretary Robert McNamara. When you read that a man had $2 million in life insurance, and has a $400,000 home that belonged to Robert McNamara, he wasn't just drugging and goofing off, his lazy, sloppy, sleazy image. After he was dead, the articles came out, the mess he lived in, the dirt. To get into productions, you have a commitment to be on time. Millions of dollars are invested in you. You have a schedule you keep, and while it looks like fun and games on the screen, and I'm sure there is plenty of goofing off, there were also a lot of brilliant laughs—and plans and *commitments* to schedules and sense of timing. The image given after he was dead was the big slob who almost deserved to die in his own vomit. But that wasn't John Belushi. His success, what he earned and what he was saying speak loud and clear. All the rest is

garbage. You don't have to believe the cover stories once the fellow is dead.

Three nights before he died he was on LaCienega Blvd. near Wilshire, just bordering Beverly Hills. He was with a cab driver who gave an interview. It was late at night. They were sitting at a counter at a sandwich shop, and there was a newspaper there. They both were looking at it, and he asked Belushi, "Which part do you want, 'Sports,' 'Entertainment," or 'El Salvador'." And Belushi said: "I want El Salvador." He went on to say that he hated what he read in the news, that he hated Hollywood, that they're a "bunch of pricks. I want to get back to New York City." And he said that he wanted to stay there.

They went to Belushi's car, where he had a lot of cocaine in the glove compartment. But the driver said Belushi was unhappy, fearful of his environment, that he wanted to get back [to New York]. I think that about describes it. There was another article published about him, that he didn't want to stay in Hollywood. The last night before he died, Belushi said to somebody, "I'm going home to Judy tomorrow"—that's his wife in New York—"I want to get out of here."

I'm sure that he sensed some danger, just as Elvis Presley was poisoned until he died. Or John Lennon was kept secluded and isolated in an apartment, and the minute he emerged, he died.

Belushi, when he was in Hollywood, was bounced around the drug scenes and a lot of hard people, a very sleazy element that could entrap him later. He expressed the idea that he would leave the next day, evidently drop the movie and go back to New York. But that next day never came.

He'd hired bodyguards. The studios wanted to keep him from using cocaine. If he did indeed have it, they wanted to keep him clean.

Well, Nelson Rockefeller, vice president of the United States, had bodyguards who weren't around when he died. Robert Kennedy had a bodyguard, Thane Cesar from Lockheed, who was behind him when the fatal bullets were delivered to the back of his head. Bodyguards often let people through the door who shouldn't be there. It's a question of the agencies that employ them.

Who was looking after Belushi? Two nights before, someone came to his home - Evelyn Smith—the same woman who would be with him when he died. She was kicked out.

She reappears … and she's one of the major suppliers of drugs to the Hollywood stars. Her behavior at the death scene was questionable—not only was supplying narcotics a crime, but not calling 9/11 or the police or the hotel desk is irresponsible; she was there when he died, went away for a couple of hours, returned. Smith didn't call anyone. She let the bodyguard, who appeared at 12:30 p.m., find the body, even though Belushi was dead when she walked out.

So, again, who were the security guards?

Another article in the paper: "John Belushi Felt Tragically Alone." He was paranoid that he was being used. It's probable that ever since he appeared on *Saturday Night Live* and did impersonations of famous people, he was placed on an enemies list. He was that political. The last performance of *Saturday Night*'s original group was [so radical], a friend asked me how they got away with it. The next day, the whole group was fired, and it was reported that they were "too political." The whole group was broken up.

Sure, he was followed and used by people. I'm sure that he was prepared by this milieu around him to be done in if he continued to be political. And the two movies that he was going to make were so highly political that it would be imperative to see that he didn't gather any further fame and notoriety.

Noble Rot means the "noble" priest, Sarducci, and the rottenness of the winery people. You can imagine how popular he was with the wine people behind the Hollywood studios and the drug scene.

And, again, the movie *Blue Moon Over Miami*. I must repeat, these are not popular subjects to make movies about.

The papers reported that John Belushi died alone in bed, nude, in a fetal position. Lieutenant Dan Cook of the LAPD said, "it appears to be natural causes. There were dark blotches on his arms caused when blood starts to settle, and not by needles." That was the first report. Then the police said it appeared he

choked on his tongue.

John Belushi died on Friday. On Saturday there were more articles about food, choking, natural causes. Heart attack was a possibility. No sign of drug usage. The hotel clerk said his heart evidently failed him. The room was neat, the actor in bed, his clothes neatly folded as though he had gone to sleep for the night. There was nothing out of order, "no reason to suspect foul play."

He was in good health the night before, according to witnesses.

By Sunday, Los Angeles coroner Thomas Naguchi—the controversial Naguchi who was fired after this case—was telling reporters, "the cause of death has not yet been determined."

"Discounting his lifestyle, he seems to have choked on food."—that was the *San Francisco Examiner* (March 7). He was at the Roxy nightclub the night before he died, and the owner of the club said that he hadn't taken any drugs.

On Monday, the newspapers reported: "More Tests Needed to Determine Cause of Death."

The *Houston Post* reported that Belushi was under examination, they were inspecting his heart.

They said he ordered breakfast: "whole wheat toast, jelly, a pot of coffee and freshly squeezed orange juice." He had breakfast on the terrace. Now, *Evelyn Smith ordered the breakfast*, and at 10:30, when Belushi was nice and dead, *she went out for breakfast*, she said. But it's obvious that from 6:30 to 8:00, when it was ordered, he was not in any condition to eat.

On Monday the cause of death was still undetermined. Slides of tissue had to be taken, more pathology of the body. Dr. John Holloway—a doctor who worked on the autopsy of Senator Robert Kennedy—entered the case and insisted that parts of the body would have to be removed and internal organs examined to determine if the cause of death was a heart attack.

Now, if Belushi overdosed on narcotics, and there was a mess of needles, cocaine and heroin littering the place as reported 10 days later—the first five days it was reported that there were "no drugs" involved—then the search for a heart attack was superfluous. The doctor from the Robert Kennedy autopsy said that the evidence "may not be so visible," so the tissue "must be tested, and full anatomic evidence presented."

"It may be myocardial infarction, or a coronary attack," Dr. Holloway said.

So they weren't so sure.

Tuesday: No comment on Belushi, a second round of tests for toxic substances and evidence of disease on samples of tissue taken.

On the sixth day, March 10, they still didn't know what killed him. There were interviews. The police said there was a powder resembling cocaine on the nightstand; his body had needle marks likely to be from intravenous injection of cocaine.

Seven days after his death, it was an "overdose of drugs." Chief of Police Gates in Los Angeles said he didn't know about an overdose; he had been informed that the musician-actor died of "natural causes." On this day, "Signs of Drug Usage on Belushi's Body" were reported. He had been stuck with "a needle." One report stated that there were numerous needle marks, another reported only one—and yet another said the dark spots were from blood clots.

And then the official autopsy report came out—and that was the shocker, because it contained very little information related to questions that should have been asked.

The *L.A. Examiner*: "Official Report on Belushi Death"—"At 1:00 am, he went to a private bar. He stayed there and was driven back to his room, where he vomited, and was pale and sweaty."

He was immediately sick—and then indulged in wine and cocaine. There was no evidence of sickness when the police first entered the room. They thought he had a heart attack.

At 3:00 till 3:30 am, friends arrived; people came, according to the report. We don't know how many, and they are not named. We don't know how many there were. They arrived at the hotel and stayed about 30 minutes.

That would be the time when he was injected with the “cocaine or heroin.”

By 6:30, he was having hot and cold flashes, took a shower.

At 8:00 a.m., he fell asleep shaking and wheezing. Evelyn Smith entered the hotel room, and at 9:30 she heard him struggling for breath.

He was terrified and very sick.

She hears a terrible noise, and he pleads: “please don’t leave me.”

At 10:15, he falls asleep, so she walks out, leaves him “to get something to eat.”

He knew that he was dying, but she walks out.

At 12:30, Belushi’s physical therapist come in, the body was still warm. He was pronounced dead.

Belushi had “congestion of the lungs, liver and spleen, swelling of the brain and heart, arteriosclerosis, distended bladder,” and they threw in “obesity”; he weighed 220 pounds. All of this should have showed up in the first autopsy. It doesn’t take 7-10 days to find all of this, and the enlarged brain (the weight was given in the autopsy report) would have been tremendously painful.

He was writhing in pain. When Ms. Smith left the hotel room, he was covered with a blanket and there was foam coming out of his mouth. He swallowed his tongue. And the eyes rolling—in fact, a friend who entered the room said, “I closed his eyes, because I couldn’t stand to see them open.”

So she would have seen easily that he was dying, the terrible set of symptoms. And she walks out and leaves. Then she comes back, the police hand-cuffed and took her away. Then they released her, and she becomes a super-star, goes to New York City for an interview at ABC, does an article for *Rolling Stone*.

Cathy Evelyn Smith was not charged with any role in Belushi’s death. There was no mention of collusion, but the unidentified guests who arrived at 3:00-3:30 a.m. were a clue that something was amiss.

The first reports that he was taking drugs—the police chief and coroner didn’t mention it—came from the ABC network. A lawyer for ABC is Gregson E. Bautzer, one of the attorneys retained by Howard Hughes (at the time that HE was drugged, silenced and possibly murdered. Greg Bautzer is the law partner of Frank Rothman at MGM, the domain of Kirk Kerkorian and Fred Benninger, chairman of MGM Mirage.)

ABC had “inside information” and worked closely with teams involved in other mysterious, drug-related deaths. The coroner came along after the ABC reports and stated that Belushi overdosed by “intravenous injections of heroin and cocaine.” The report stated that Cathy Evelyn Smith was with him when he died.

Is she responsible for his death if she sees him writhing in pain, obviously dying, foaming at the mouth, choking? She didn’t call 9/11, didn’t run to the front desk.

The article in the *Los Angeles Herald-Examiner* reported: “Belushi may have died before the woman left him.”

Where does murder begin and leave off?

What was her responsibility?

Who were the people in the room?

This was a very political, highly successful person offed in Hollywood. Smith left him to die. There were fresh multiple injection marks on both arms. There was no evidence of scarred veins in either arm. He’d been only recently injected. The body was still warm.

She ordered breakfast at 8:00, went out for breakfast again at 10:30. He turns up dead. She doesn’t call anyone, lets him be found.

Tom Gerald flies her to the Essex Hotel in New York City with her attorney, and puts her on ABC-TV’s *20/20*. The “Mystery Woman” is described as a known “drug dealer” in Hollywood, supplies big celebrities with narcotics. When they die, shouldn’t she be questioned?

John Belushi didn’t trust her. His bodyguard kicked her out two nights before he died.

“I don’t believe the story,” Belushi’s wife said.

The night after he kicked Smith out, Belushi told friends he wanted to get out of town because he didn't feel safe.

He felt he was in danger.

She suddenly appeared at the "unnamed club" above Roxy's in the autopsy report. Belushi is visited by unnamed people. There are anonymous sources of drugs. The LAPD only made a cursory search for the source and announced that no charges would be filed.

An unnamed rock star was with him shortly before he died—not mentioned in the autopsy report—and said: "there wasn't a needle present anywhere."

His doctor said there were no needle marks on him prior to the fatal injection. (Belushi had recently been to the doctor for treatment of ear, nose and throat problems.)

There were no "multiple" needle punctures, no scarring of the veins, no proof that he had been a junkie. He may have taken cocaine and marijuana—they are all over Hollywood—but certain segments of society are dying.

His wife said immediately, in an article printed by the *Chicago Sun-Times*: "Something weird happened. That woman was thrown out two days ago. John told Bill to throw her out. John wasn't a junkie."

Evelyn Smith was with Gordon Lightfoot for a short while in Toronto. She moved to L.A. in 1978 for the drug scene. And Judith Jacqueline Belushi wanted to know "where she came from, who is this woman, what was she doing there, and how does she appear the night that he dies?"

Smith was with Belushi until he was dead—and, of course, the obvious move was to not call the police. (When Nelson Rockefeller died, Megan Marshack, his staff assistant, was present and didn't call the guard or chauffeur outside the door, or 9/11 or the hospital—she called Poncitta Pierce, who lives down the street, and she comes over, and the two of them talk it over and decide to call police … when he's good and dead.)

The newspapers reported later that police were searching for the source of the drugs—how far did they have to go. All they had to do was ask the "Mystery Woman."

He begged her not to leave. She left Belushi … who was supposedly so heavily into drugs that they there all over the place.

But the police didn't find drugs and powder and needle marks at that time.

She reappeared two hours later and brought the drugs with her—then she could spread the cover story that she took them with her when she left. And she did confess: "I didn't want to leave [a drug stash behind] because the maid might find it."

If a woman is a drug dealer, and the police are coming because a man is dead, the last thing she would do is incriminate herself by walking in with a stash of cocaine and drug paraphernalia.

Why did she bring it all back and lay it in front of them—unless she knew that she wouldn't be held for the murder? Was she so mindless (after fearing the maid might find the drugs) that she returned to the death scene with cocaine on her for police to confiscate?

Then the stories came along: "John Belushi's Reckless Race to the Grave," the "drug-soaked sex orgies," a one-way ticket to Hell. But it would be awfully hard, as I say, to make a multi-million dollar movie with a "$25,000 a month cocaine habit," or work with the finest directors and writers going in Hollywood. I am sure that he was not the crazy, reckless pig that he was made out to be after he was dead.

The worst article came from Kate Braverman, staff reporter at the *Los Angeles Times*: "A harsh final look at Belushi, the patron saint of pigs." So he "hits Los Angeles and goes berserk. … What else is Los Angeles good for? It's the last frontier for desperate men, rock stars, exiled tyrants. Los Angeles is a Disneyland for the decadent, a top ticket all the way, the best ride to Hell." Belushi was "the belly of this century," with "an endless appetite for novelty and the rot that began with manifest destiny." She tears him apart, a twentieth-century "nightmare."

"Much Ado About Nothing," opined the *San Francisco Chronicle*. "*Saturday Night Live* was designed to attract the sleepy and the sloppy." John Belushi will be "totally forgotten in a few years."

But he will be remembered for the programs he did with Lampoon and *Saturday Night Live*. His particular brand of political humor was genius—and that was his fatal mistake.

POSTSCRIPT

(Excerpt from *Untouchable: A Biography of Robert De Niro*, by Andy Dougan, Thunder's Mouth Press, 1996, pp. 156-57.)

De Niro was one of those who did not like Cathy Smith. He thought she was a low-life, and he seemed to resent the hold she had over his friend Belushi. When he arrived at On the Rox shortly after midnight on 5 March, Belushi called him over. De Niro had been trying to get hold of him earlier in the evening and had left a number of messages. Possibly because Smith was there, De Niro did not stay for long. Belushi, however, was keen to talk further about the heroin script, perhaps fearing that he might be losing ground in the argument with Insana and the studio. He asked De Niro to visit him in his bungalow after the club had closed for the night and the actor agreed. Also at On the Rox later that night was another acquaintance of Belushi, comedian Robin Williams. A superb improviser, Williams was at this stage undoubtedly America's finest stand-up comedian. He was also a household name after becoming an overnight sensation in the smash-hit television series *Mork and Mindy*. He had been performing at the nearby Comedy Store on Sunset Boulevard and headed for On the Rox when he had finished his set. Messages had been left at the club telling Williams that both Belushi and De Niro, an old friend, had been looking for him and had gone back to Chateau Marmont.

To this day Williams, who first met Belushi in New York some years previously, believes that there was an attempt to set him up that night, and possibly De Niro along with him.

"I was only in Belushi's room for five or ten minutes then I split," he told *Rolling Stone* magazine in 1988. "I saw him and split. He didn't want me there; really, he obviously had other things he was doing. I do think I was *set up* in some way to go over there. A guy at the Roxy told me that John wanted me to stop by his bungalow. But when I went by, he wasn't looking for me. He wasn't even there. When he arrived, he said, 'What are you doing here?' He offered me a line of cocaine, I took it and then I drove home. If I had known what was going on, I would have stayed and tried to help. It wasn't like he was shooting up in front of me."

The following afternoon, on the set of *Mork and Mindy*, Williams was stunned to be told by co-star Pam Dawber that his friend was dead.

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

WHO KILLED CONGRESSMAN LARRY MCDONALD?

RONALD REAGAN, THE WESTERN GOALS FOUNDATION & THE DOWNING OF KAL FLIGHT 007

(HUSTLER MAGAZINE, FEBRUARY 1984)

In the aftermath of the Korean Air Lines disaster that shocked the world on September 1, 1983, the editors of the *Los Angeles Herald-Examiner* contended with a series of nagging questions. Prominent among them was the following:

Q: Is there reason to believe that Rep. Lawrence McDonald of Georgia, an admittedly ultra-right U.S. congressman traveling on 007, may have been deliberately assassinated aboard the flight?

A: "While the [U.S.] government has made no such charge, McDonald's widow claims that her husband, the national chairman of the John Birch Society, was 'murdered.' She holds that it was no accident that 'the leading anti-Communist in the American government' had been on a plane that was 'forced into Soviet territory' and shot down."

Another question to be addressed is: Why would the Soviet Union wish to make a martyr of Larry McDonald? If the Russians are the experts at terrorism they're supposed to be, it would seem obvious that they could find an easier way to get rid of the congressman than chasing his airplane over Soviet territory for 2 1/2 hours. They could have easily blown him away anywhere in the world.

Furthermore, it is hard to believe that KAL Flight 007 was forced into Soviet airspace, as if a giant mechanism had sucked McDonald toward his mortal enemy. During the strange 2 1/2 hours that 007 ventured as far as 226 miles inside Soviet airspace, the Russians were testing new missiles directly below. They didn't need any more problems.

And I doubt that McDonald, fanatic as he was, deserves the label of "leading anti-Communist in the American government." He has pretty stiff competition from A.G. "Fritz" Kraemer, Sven Kraemer, John Lenczowski, Paula Dobriansky, William Clark, Jeanne Kirkpatrick, William Casey, Henry Kissinger, Dr. Ernest Lefevre, William F. Buckley, James Buckley, Richard Pipes, General Daniel O. Graham, and a cast of thousands.

An article that appeared immediately after the shooting down of 007 accused Secretary of the Navy John Lehman of responsibility for "the deaths of 269 over Sakhalin Island." Lehman's strategic design, known as "Horizontal Escalation" in defense circles, outlines a series of provocations against the USSR.

Lehman: "He who gets the signal to fire first in the North Pacific will *enjoy* a tremendous tactical advantage. This region … is most probably where we shall witness confrontation with the Soviet Union."

Thus, while Europe and the U.S. divert the public with NATO missile debates, plans are formulated for a first strike in the Pacific. South Korea, Japan and the U.S. are at collectively at work on these plans. Sending spy planes over the Soviet Union serves the purpose of provocation.

Five days after the 007 incident, former CIA spy Ralph McGehee told a college audience that the Korean airliner was indeed on a spy mission. He also believes that the Russians thought 007 was an RC-135 intelligence plane.

It was Senator Jesse Helms (R-North Carolina)—another archconservative ideologue; anti-union, anti-

government, anti-Communist and an opponent of an international treaty on genocide—who arranged McDonald's invitation to attend the celebration commemorating the 30th anniversary of the official U.S. entry into the Korean War.

Instead of traveling together, however, Helms and McDonald arrived in Anchorage, Alaska—the first stop of the journey to South Korea—on separate planes. The fact that McDonald was the only person in the 36-member American delegation to fly alone seems strange. After refueling, the Boeing 747 carrying Helms arrived at its destination safely. But McDonald—and his fellow passengers on Flight 007—were not so fortunate.

As depicted in the books by Ian Fleming, 007 was James Bond's "license to kill." In this case, who had the license to kill? Was it the CIA and its Korean counterpart, the KCIA? They were formed at approximately the same time and work together closely.

The fact that McDonald and Helms flew on separate planes brings up several more unanswered questions. Who sat next to McDonald? Korean Air Lines must have a boarding pass for that passenger. If nobody used the seat, and if McDonald was accompanied by others in the American delegation, why didn't one of them occupy the seat? Where were the staff or advisory members of McDonald's Western Goals Foundation, a data bank in Alexandria, Virginia, that serves as a national right-wing clearinghouse for negative information about leftists? Why was McDonald left to die alone?

Who actually gained by Flight 007's violation of Soviet territory? Not the Russians. They were in preparation for the next week's meeting in Madrid, Spain, between U.S. Secretary of State George Schultz and Soviet Foreign Minister Andrei Gromyko, also the resumption of arms-reduction talks and the annual United Nations meeting. An incident of any kind would—and did—set world opinion against them at a critical time.

On the other hand, the U.S. government benefited by gathering valuable military information about Soviet radar and defensive capabilities in the hours preceding the crash. Other benefits to the State Department and Pentagon included favorable MX-missile and binary nerve-gas votes from a knee-jerk Congress.

Clearly, Larry McDonald did not die at the hands of Soviet planners. The most important explanation for his demise relates to recent revelations about his clandestine activities. A prior relationship between McDonald and President Reagan started to surface before the crash. Illicit espionage concealed behind a cloak of righteous Americanism at any price was about to be exposed.

The media, along with many other institutions and individuals, had purposely withheld the darker side of Reagan's years as California governor from the 1980 presidential campaign. Now the dirty laundry of the past was starting to leak out.

Key backers, financiers and appointees of Ronald Reagan have always been involved in political spying—and worse. California was rife with intrigue. Nixon and Reagan were from California. And California is where the bubble burst. The trail leading to the connection between Reagan and McDonald is long and winding. But the facts prove collusion between informers hired by Reagan when he was governor and McDonald's Western Goals Foundation. The methods—and even the persons involved—were the same in both cases.

The first indication that something was even more rotten than usual in California came on August 15, 1980, when Warren Hinckle—the former editor of *Ramparts* magazine—noted that the snooping of Jerry Ducote appeared to involve members of Ronald Reagan's gubernatorial staff. (Ducote was a former sheriff's deputy employed by Reagan's backers to infiltrate suspected subversive groups.)

"What is happening in Santa Clara County today is the germ of the biggest scandal of the next 1 1/2 years," Hinckle said. "People thought that with Watergate it was all over. But this is the next layer of Watergate."

On January 4, 1983, nearly 2 1/2 years after Hinckle's prediction, Detective Jay Paul of the Los

Angeles Police Department supplied a weary team of investigators with the connection between Larry McDonald and Ronald Reagan. That day marked the end of McDonald's usefulness to the larger network he served. He had become a liability to some very important people.

A carefully constructed web of deceit was brought down by the massive volumes of files illegally assembled on law-abiding citizens by the L.A. Police Department's Public Disorder Intelligence Division (PDID). The files were ordered destroyed in 1975, but it was later discovered that LAPD officers kept the data-bank information.

Enraged by this disobedience, the Los Angeles Police Commission officially requested the files. But by then, Lieutenant Thomas Scheidecker had stolen at least 10,000 pages of documents, and PDID Detective Jay Paul had moved a huge batch of files to his garage in Long Beach. Attorney Ann Love, his wife, was paid $30,000 a year to feed a sophisticated $100,000 computer data that had been ordered destroyed.

The information eventually wound up in the computer of the Western Goals Foundation. And, lo and behold, the man who paid Ann Love was Representative Larry McDonald, chairman of Western Goals.

Also caught up in the web was John Rees, an editor at the Western Goals Foundation, and a longtime associate of Jerry Ducote by way of their common employers and similar methods of accumulating data. Both acted as agents provocateurs.

"An agent provocateur is a police agent who is introduced into any political organization with instructions to foment discontent . . . or to take a case in order to give his employers the right to act against the organization in question," according to Colonel Victor Kaledin of Imperial Russian Military Intelligence.

Ducote was employed by key Reagan supporters and the John Birch Society. Rees collaborated with the Birch Society and a host of other right-wing groups, feeding them information to harass and embarrass those who opposed their point of view.

Reagan's man, Ducote, and Larry McDonald's crony, John Rees, worked together at the San Francisco-based Western Research, also known as Research West. Ducote secluded himself behind unmarked doors, running a blacklisting service for industry. The results of his spying were added to a repository of information used by Governor Reagan to screen out potential state employees with leftist political tendencies contrary to his own beliefs.

At the same time, photographs of rallies and demonstrations—along with copies of underground newspapers—were supplied to Western Research by agents of the Los Angeles Police Department. In turn, Western Research sold background information on employees and advised corporations about possible risks.

Research West, an incarnation, maintained close ties with law enforcement and corporate data banks, employing spies to feed information to utility companies anxious to identify anti-nuclear activists. Clearly, blacklisting didn't end with the death of Senator Joseph McCarthy. The witch hunt never ceased.

Last January in Los Angeles, the American Civil Liberties Union filed a lawsuit on behalf of 131 law-abiding groups and individuals who were illegally spied upon. Among the defendants in this case were 54 police officers from the LAPD's Public Disorder Intelligence Division.

The law firm representing the defendants was Gibson, Dunn and Crutcher. Curiously enough, Attorney General William French Smith was a partner in that firm. And none other than President Ronald Reagan is a client of Gibson, Dunn and Crutcher in all personal legal matters.

Time was running out for Larry McDonald after many years of stealing, bugging and compiling. He was about to be subpoenaed by a Los Angeles County grand jury. His testimony—particularly the parts relating to the feeding of illegal police intelligence files to his Long Beach computer—could embarrass and even damage a great number of powerful people.

* * *

Several weeks after the downing of Flight 007, Soviet President Yuri Andropov blamed the United States for a "sophisticated provocation, masterminded by U.S. special services, an example of extreme adventurism in politics."

How could the United States have written such a script? Larry McDonald was going to embarrass President Reagan if too many of the documents from California were exposed. They shared common spies and common enemies. So let's assume that the CIA, FBI and all federal agencies that worked with McDonald—particularly the Pentagon—wanted him silenced immediately. At the same time, because McDonald was so violently anti-Communist, why not make the Soviets responsible for his murder? A New Right martyr could be created in the struggle against communism. Remember the *Pueblo?*

The scenario might have continued in the following way:

• There would be a celebration in South Korea early in September. McDonald had strong ties to Korean-born Reverend Sun Myung Moon, leader of the Unification Church (the Moonies) and the South Korean military. Arrange for McDonald to attend that celebration in South Korea.

(Dorothy Hunt, CIA officer and wife of Watergate defendant E. Howard Hunt, was blown up in a *commercial airliner* over Chicago, and nobody seemed to care. Undoubtedly, her murder scared into silence the primary witnesses who could have embarrassed President Nixon at the time he was paying them to "plead guilty" before sinking his presidency. Incidentally, the espionage activities of both E. Howard Hunt and Congressman McDonald were entangled with the Los Angeles Police Department.)

• Send spy planes over the USSR continuously. The Soviet Union does not appreciate such flights violating its territory. By putting McDonald on a commercial airliner and timing its incursion inside Soviet airspace with spy-plane operations at the same time, an attack by Soviet missiles would be assured.

One of the many mysteries of Flight 007 is the total lack of communication between its pilots and U.S., Korean and Japanese listening posts. This is known as maintaining radio silence. Furthermore, 007 left Kennedy Airport in New York with a defective radio and navigational system. When the pilot on the first leg of the flight disembarked in Anchorage, he assumed the plane's malfunctioning parts would be repaired. But this didn't happen.

It is common knowledge to all pilots flying over Soviet territory that aircraft going beyond a certain point inside Russian borders will be forced to land or shot down. If the CIA and the National Security Agency wanted Larry McDonald dead, thereby assuring an international incident, isolating the pilots from instructions or warnings would be essential. The way to accomplish this is either to tamper with radio transmissions or the pilots' minds—or both.

Chun Byung In, the pilot in command of 007, held the rank of colonel in the South Korean Air Force. He was considered reliable enough to have flown the Korean president to the U.S. in 1982, and fly overseas routes linking Southeast Asia to the Middle East, Paris to Los Angeles, and New York to Seoul.

The co-pilot on 007 was Lieutenant Colonel Sohn Dong Hui. According to news reports, Chun boasted to close friends that he was carrying out special tasks for American intelligence, and he even showed them some of the plane's spying equipment or surveying Soviet military installations. Spying was sometimes the covert mission of regularly-scheduled commercial flights that began in New York City and ended in Seoul.

After the 007 disaster, it was reported that Koreans often flew over Soviet airspace to reduce fuel expenses. But spy cameras with the ability to photograph Soviet military bases are a more plausible reason for Korean jets losing their way so often.

Reports indicate that Korean Air Lines concluded a secret agreement with the CIA in the early 1970s to

carry out intelligence surveys of Soviet territory. These reports further suggest that when Flight 007 was shot down, the U.S. intelligence mission utilized a reconnaissance satellite programmed to pass overhead at the same time. This allowed the U.S. to record electronic traffic denoting the whereabouts of Soviet air-defense systems as they were activated to meet a presumed threat.

After triggering the radar warning of a threat to the USSR, the pilot of a U.S. RC-135 reconnaissance plane used maneuvers typical of American spy planes to frustrate Soviet air defenses. Eventually, he dove below the radar cover off the Kamchatka Peninsula to distract air-defense crews and allow Flight 007 to enter Soviet airspace undetected.

Meanwhile, attempting to dodge Soviet fighter planes 226 miles inside the USSR, pilot Chun requested permission to elevate to 35,000 feet. Moments later, he shouted, "Rapid … a rapid decompression." Flight 007 was hit by a missile.

Chun's last words –"one-zero, one-zero-delta"– left everyone confused, as did the plane's final radio transmissions. Neither Matsumi Suzuki, head of Japan's Sound Research Institute, nor the Japanese broadcast network NHK, could explain what "*delta*" meant. Was that Chun's "Rosebud"?

Early reports following the tragedy, noting the apparent loss of contact with 007's pilots, suggested that the plane had been hijacked. A second report said that the two pilots and the navigator may have been asleep—a dubious theory considering the crew's unblemished record.

A more likely possibility is that the crew had been the victim of hypnosis and mind control—receiving instructions in advance, before they left Anchorage, that could not be picked up and recorded later.

If this seems farfetched, consider the experience of Candy Jones—a famous model and radio personality—who described in her biography how the CIA programmed her mind for spying and activities related to espionage. A single phone call from an unseen person would have been enough to implement previously implanted instructions to kill herself.

These revelations came to light at the height of the Watergate scandal, along with evidence that she had previously done errands for the CIA. Only the intervention of her husband saved Candy Jones from certain death.

The issue of 007's defective navigational system came under close scrutiny following the disaster. Reports filed with NASA revealed that at least 25 times during the past five years, U.S. airline pilots relying on the same navigational equipment used by 007 had strayed off course—once as much as 250 miles. Cited among the cause were computer malfunctions and human errors.

"It's easy to become complacent [on long flights]," said Pan American World Airways pilot Thomas Foxworth. "It's a human failing. The record is replete with numerous incidents of a guy just falling asleep."

What if the "human failing" cited by Foxworth was actually mind-controlled planning? Two of the 007 crew might have been asleep—or even dead. But the one who cried "delta" was obviously awake until the end. His response to what was going to happen, given his years of experience and expertise, was that of a programmed zombie instructed to fly continuously—disregarding any external sights or sounds on the flight equipment.

As long ago as November 1974, the Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights—headed by then-Senator Sam Ervin of North Carolina—issued a 645-page report titled, *Individual Rights and the Federal Role in Behavior Modification*, which plotted the advanced state of CIA mind work and testing.

Three years later, the Senate Select Committee on Intelligence and the Sub-committee on Health and Scientific Research published another report, *Project Mkultra: The CIA's Program in Behavior Modification*.

The upshot of these reports is that the Pentagon had the capability, if it so desired, to link mind control with satellite defense systems. And a logical use of mind control, of course, would be to program a pilot —perhaps even turning a normal flight into a kamikaze mission.

Dr. Jose Delgado, the father of military-and-defense mind experimentation who worked with the CIA and Navy Intelligence, perfected such procedures as early as 1971. In one instance, he surgically implanted a receiver in the brain of a Spanish fighting bull. Later in a Madrid arena, when a tiny radio-controlled electrode delivered a minute surge of current to the enraged beast's mind, the bull braked to an abrupt halt.

Delgado also pioneered a method of shooting mood drugs into the brain, calming the subject by a remote computer that sensed oncoming anxiety, depression or rage, and flashed back inhibitor signals by radio.

"The [programmed] individual may think that the most important fact of reality is his own existence," Delgado wrote. "But that is only his personal point of view, a relative frame of reference which is not shared by the rest of the living world."

The justification for perfecting physical control of the mind was to enable outside forces to determine how to use a person's body by activating his brain and directing it beyond the subject's control—in spite of any conscious efforts he might make.

KAL Flight 007 was equipped with the latest navigational technology. Three computer-driven, inertial-navigational systems installed a year earlier told the airplane seven times per second where it is supposed to go.

Only the following elements could have coordinated the death of Representative Larry McDonald with the Soviet missile response: (1) human factors; (2) altered instruments in New York City or Anchorage; or (3) mind control over the Korean Air Force pilots.

* * *

Exactly who *was* Larry McDonald, the strange and complex individual who wore so many robes? At first he was a doctor specializing in urology who prescribed the discredited drug laetrile to cancer patients. He was also a man who concealed the ownership of 200 guns. In 1974, he was elected to the U.S. House of Representatives, later chairman of both the tax-free Western Goals Foundation and the John Birch Society.

The best way to describe most people is to understand who their heroes are. McDonald reportedly kept two photographs on the walls of his Congressional office that give some clues to his mental state.

One picture was of Senator Joseph McCarthy.

The other was of Chilean dictator Augusto Pinochet.

Senator McCarthy began his Senate career after World War II with financial assistance from two known Nazi sympathizers in Wisconsin—Frank Seusenbrenner and Walter Harnischfeger. Fred J. Cook's *The Nightmare Decade* details the pro-Nazi backers of McCarthy, and how the senator knew of their "passionate ultra-rightism and admiration for Hitler." Harnischfeger's nephew, in fact, often displayed an autographed copy of Hitler's *Mein Kampf*. He also flaunted a watch-chain swastika.

In December 1946, 43 of Hitler's top military officers received death sentences or long prison terms at the Dachau Trials for the bloody massacre of American soldiers at Malmedy, France. One of McCarthy's primary objectives as he entered the Senate was to facilitate their release. By 1949, thanks to Congressional hearings, he directed another maneuvering. McCarthy's efforts paid off. The 43 Nazis were freed.

When McCarthy conducted his House Un-American Activities Committee (HUAC) hearings in 1953 and accumulated data on law-abiding citizens for future fascist purposes, most of his information came from combined United States intelligence and Nazi war criminals. He also drew upon the extensive files of a spy network known as ODDESSA, an association of former SS officers formed between 1943 and 1945, when it became obvious the Third Reich could not win the war against the Soviet Union.

After McCarthy died in 1957, it is reasonable to assume that Larry McDonaid—by way of Louise Rees—took over the massive computerized files that now contain millions of names worldwide.

Louise Rees, the wife of John Rees, an editor at McDonald's Western Goals Foundation, worked for McCarthy and Roy M. Cohn, counsel for the senator's 1953 Permanent Investigations Subcommittee of the Government Operations Committee. Western Goals lists Roy M. Cohn, now a New York lawyer, on its advisory board. And when McDonald went to Washington as a representative from Georgia in 1974, Louise Rees was his paid staff aide.

McDonald's admiration for his other major hero, Chilean dictator Augusto Pinochet, can be explained in part by the fact that both of their careers benefited from the support of international fascist organizations. And there is evidence that Nazis in Chile funded McDonald's Congressional campaigns since 1974, at Pinochet's direction—just as Nazis were the source of funds for McCarthy in Wisconsin.

Ironically, the very night that McDonald was killed, Pinochet, his CIA-supported hero—was taunted by rioters in Chile. The Chilean people also want their nightmare decade to end. Pinochet is responsible for DINA, Nazi-like death-squad terrorist teams that are an arm of the Chilean police, necessary to maintain his repressive regime. Without DINA's methods of fear and torture, the U.S. puppet government in Chile would not last another day.

Pinochet also does nothing to interfere with Colonia Dignidad, a haven for Nazi war criminals located on the border between Argentina and Chile. Colonia Dignidad serves as a torture center where dissenters who oppose Pinochet are mutilated and fed to dogs while still alive. Armed guards discourage snoopers. Amnesty International is currently investigating this deplorable situation.

Larry McDonald's unsavory Chilean connection was further exposed when Robert Byron Watson presented attorneys from the House Select Committee on Assassinations with an affidavit reportedly detailing McDonald's dealings with Fuad Habash Ansare in Santiago de Chile; Watson claimed that Fuad Habash is the brother of Arab terrorist leader Dr. George Habash of the Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine. This organization is said to work with our CIA to arrange Arab terrorist murders around the globe.

* * *

Larry McDonald's Western Goals Foundation, another sinister organization, was formed in 1979. Members of its advisory board are listed in brochures and newspaper advertisements, and include the following: Jean Ashbrook, Mrs. Walter Brennan, Taylor Caldwell, Roy M. Cohn, Congressman Philip M. Crane (R-Illinois), General Raymond Davis, Henry Hazlitt, Dr. Mildred F. Jefferson, Dr. Anthony Kubek, Robert Milliken, Admiral Thomas H. Moorer, E. A. Morris, Vice-Admiral Lloyd M. Mustin, Mrs. John C. Newington, General George S. Patton III, Dr. Hans Sennholz, General John Singlaub, Dan Smoot, Robert Stoddard, Congressman Bob Stump (D-Arizona), Mrs. Helen Marie Taylor, Dr. Edward Teller, General Lewis Walt and Dr. Eugene Wigner.

The executive staff of Western Goals consists of Linda Guell, director; John Rees, editor; and Julia Ferguson, research associate.

Two members of Western Goals bear special mention. According to Seymour Hersh's recent book *The Price of Power in the Nixon White House*, Admiral Thomas Moorer masterminded the surreptitious removal of sensitive data from President Nixon's office. Working through Yeoman Charles Radford, Moorer stole papers clearly marked "President's Eyes Only" and had them delivered to the Pentagon.

His reward for stealing these top-secret documents was a promotion to the prestigious Joint Chiefs of Staff. Merry Christmas, Cambodia! Bypassing every member of Congress, Henry Kissinger and Admiral Moorer conducted their own private war against that country—one that has not fought the United States at any time—gleefully selecting bombing targets that cost the lives of millions of innocent people.

It later developed that Los Angeles Police Department files on two million Californians were assessed by Moorer's and McDonald's Western Goals computer.

So it comes to pass that the criminals keep track of the innocent. Information about you is probably already filed and computerized in their secret data banks. Would you trust people like this with your good name?

A second Western Goals advisory board member worth noting is Edward Teller, Hungarian-born father of the hydrogen bomb. The same day that McDonald made the front page of the *Washington Post*—when Western Goals was ordered to answer the stolen-documents subpoena in Los Angeles—Teller was attending a European seminar on nuclear warfare critical to America's future foreign policy.

* * *

There is no beginning or end to the Larry McDonald tragedy. His right-wing fanaticism drew him to the crueler side of blackmailers, burglars, assassins, terrorists, wiretappers, and people dedicated to waging a future war with the Soviet Union.

And there he was, last August 31 and September 1, apparently sitting all alone on Flight 007. If that was by Soviet design, then all in his entourage were communists who knew in advance.

But since the American delegation was screened and cleared for travel with a congressman, then the CIA and U.S. agents knew something they wouldn't share with him—even to save his life.

So what's it all about, Alfie?

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

NASA'S CHALLENGER, R.I.P.

(JANUARY 28, 1986)

William Rogers, chairman of the commission appointed by President Ronald Reagan to investigate the causes of the January 18, 1986 Challenger shuttle explosion, stated for the record, "a serious deficiency in the flawed decision-making process was responsible" for the tragic event that occurred on Tuesday morning, January 28, 1986."

That makes a good cover story. Human error did it.

But what if the demise of the Challenger with its seven-member crew wasn't an error?

Mike Royko, columnist for the *Chicago Tribune*, wrote: "Somebody should check the laws of Florida and the federal laws for criminal liability. There could be a manslaughter case here."

Senator Donald W. Riegle, D. Michigan, suggested, "one can only assume they, the President's commission, are hitting upon things that are so disturbing they feel they can't share them with the public."

A NASA official said, "it's like an artichoke. Everyday they peel something else. The Commission has begun pointing the finger at the individuals and the procedures involved in the catastrophe and the resulting picture isn't pretty."

Every major military operation and shift in Defense Department policy occurs as a result of long planning.

The problems surrounding the Challenger explosion, with the disastrous ripple effect on the entire shuttle program, suggest that the Pentagon and NASA's Star Wars operation will assure the friendly skies for their Warfare State. Control of all space projects for the future will be in the hands of the military. Commercial and exploratory projects are shelved or put on a long waiting list.

The transfer of NASA shuttle programs to the Defense Department was detailed in an article in *Spaceflight* [No. 24, May, 1982, pp. 226-29], "The Military Role in the Shuttle," by Gerald L. Borrowman. The United State Department of Defense has a major role in the utilization of the space shuttle.

The participation of the shuttle Challenger in new Pentagon ambitions became obvious in September, 1983.

The Challenger "accident" may go down in history along with the Reichstag fire, the assassination of Austrian Archduke Ferdinand, the Gulf of Tonkin incident or the downing of the Korean Airliner 007 as a provocateur action implemented by the military to gain tighter control of war machinery.

Some estimated costs to activate the shuttle projects are $2–$10 billion. It will take four to five years.

It is impossible to believe that such a system—huge in terms of money, plans and contracts for military purposes and spy satellites—didn't have some kind of backup with less expensive alternatives in the event of a single accident.

Making matters worse, the accident was obviously preventable. Time and money are not thrown away unless there are other major plans waiting to execute. NASA had already ordered the shuttle program's extinction as early as 1983. The terms were an impossible situation: "Pull yourself out of the red and

produce revenue of at least $2 billion." Get going or get out of the way.

Problems related to the controversial O-ring, caused by freezing in cold weather, were a concern to NASA back in December 19, 1982. By February, 1983, NASA was warned, then chose to ignore, specific problems created by lack of protection with the secondary back-up seals. Why did the shuttle program have no interest in the survival of passengers and equipment?

Memoranda detailing a "catastrophic" disaster if the shuttle was launched in less than 50 degrees Fahrenheit was presented to NASA in July 1985, and again in August 1985 by two scientists.

Did NASA and the Pentagon choose the timing? They demanded a launch on the *coldest* day in shuttle history.

The shuttle Challenger, unlike any previous launch, waited outside in rain and cold for 38 days.

Television cameras focused upon the ice coating and huge icicles at the time of the launch. Ice teams were sent out the "check." It was not always cold at Cape Canaveral.

The Rogers Commission limited the public inquiry into launching decisions to the evening of January 27th and the morning of the 28th of January, 1986.

Plans for an earlier launch on Saturday, January 25th, 1986 were postponed due to "dust storms in Africa and Morocco."

It is interesting that weather so far away was conveyed to the launch team at the top of the their pyramid. The same decision-makers couldn't see ice or feel the freezing temperature at Cape Canaveral.

It was not a matter of seeing or feeling the cold.

NASA experts from Huntsville, Alabama at Marshall Space Center literally ordered management from Morton Thiokol and Rockwell to approve the launch, and ignored what they did not choose to hear.

Challenger would leave on the morning of January 28, 1986. Weather was not a factor considered.

Robert Lund, vice president for engineering at Morton Thiokol, the company that made the controversial solid fuel boosters, was told, "don't make an engineering decision." He was expected to quick-change from engineer into a manager. Lund wore the two hats. He had to be a manager because Marshall teams at Huntsville were dangling a renewal contract in front of the compay involving $300-$400 million a year … and was forced to make an about-face and disregard the safety of seven astronauts.

The other hat was military. Lund changed directions and took orders.

Life is cheap at the Pentagon.

Sunday turned out to be a fine day for a launch. Was there too much media competition with Super Bowl Sunday, with Reagan's "teacher in space" production, after two years of publicity?

The hundreds of press, teachers and students waiting at Cape Canaveral could have seen a fine launch on Sunday, Monday afternoon or even Tuesday afternoon when it was much warmer. NASA officials had been alerted by Sunday that a cold front was coming in Monday night or Tuesday, for sure. Indications were always that weather was a factor in safely launching a shuttle.

The orders to launch coincided with President Reagan's State of the Union speech before Congress. Christa McAuliffe, Reagan's pet teacher, was the superstar of this event.

Rumors spread through Washington, D.C. that Chief of Staff Donald Regan called Marshall Space Flight Center and *ordered* the "ship to fly" on the morning of January 28, 1986.

Regan, a Wall Street broker from Merrill Lynch, does not know the mechanics of space travel. He knows business. Billions of dollars, not lives, have a way of altering judgment. So [does] national security. Only the National Security Council and the Pentagon put words into Regan's mouth on shuttle matters.

A shuttle disaster would not embarrass the "Teflon president."

A shuttle catastrophe would be, and was, an advantage for Star Wars, SDI and the militarization of space.

Reagan's primary goal is to dole out funding to SDI. If he has his way, no matter who is President,

Republican or Democrat, the first-strike offensive and space weapon system will be in place.

Background for SDI, and the recent announcement of laser weapons that can scorch the earth, came from the importation of 642 Nazi specialists to the United States between May, 1945 and December, 1952. The importees' expertise was in rockets, atomic bombs and missiles. The United States benefited greatly from Nazi engineering.

Project Paperclip by Clarence Lansby describes how Dr. Werner von Braun, Walter Dornberger and 640 partners manufactured weapons at Peenemunde and Camp Dora, "with the benefit of 10,000 slave laborers under [the] control of the Waffen SS, the Gestapo."

Those Nazis quietly resettling in Huntsville, Alabama arrived with the idea of using space to "rule the world" by building a reflector that would kill human targets immediately. It could instantly kindle forests or turn the ocean water into steam.

It was no coincidence that the pressure to launch came from four top officials at Marshall Flight Center in Huntsville: William Lucas, Stanley Reinartz, Lawrence Mulloy and George Hardy still arrogantly defend the launch massacre despite ignoring all warnings.

Konrad Dannenberg, part of the Paperclip-Von Braun team, and George von Tiesenhousen, Nazi rocket scientists, described in the *Wall Street Journal* the "hazards of rocketry," clearly implying that death goes with the territory.

Remember, however, the seven murders were avoidable. Why couldn't they wait to launch? Tuesday afternoon was warm.

Star Wars/SDI has been in the minds of both the Germans and the United States Pentagon for over 30 years, but was not formally presented to the world until March 23, 1983.

President Reagan, with Edward Teller, the father of the Hydrogen bomb, by his side coaching this event, pulled out the Paperclip plans and labeled them "SDI," the Strategic Defense Initiative.

August 30, 1983, five months after the SDI presentation, the shuttle Challenger was launched in the dark of night.

Challenger would start its twenty-fourth and twenty-fifth orbit, making a close approach the Korean Airliner 007.

While a satellite could monitor the KAL-007 activation of Soviet defense systems, the shuttle was on one of its designated military functions. Challenger's role "extended intelligence operations with sea, land, air and space involvement."

Representative Larry McDonald, chairman of the John Birch Society and Western Goals, was [a passenger on] Korean KLA 007, a civilian plane used for military purposes.

When KAL-007 was shot down by the Soviets, the arms race escalated as never before. Reagan used the deaths of 268 passengers for pushing production of MX missiles, deployment of Pershing 11 and cruise missiles in Europe, and to escalate funds for his new Star Wars, High Frontier, SDI projects.

Edward Teller sat on the Board of Western Goals, the illicit espionage data bank, with the late Larry McDonald.

The pilot of the Challenger [August 30–September 5, 1983] was Rear Admiral Richard Truly. Truly became head of the Naval Space Command. Following the Challenger destruction on January 28, 1986, Truly has been appointed to replace Jesse Moore as associate director for space flight.

Jesse Moore was offered a promotion to director of Johnson Space Center, Houston, Texas, just five days before the tragedy. Those were the sunny days when Challenger rested before the soon-to-be-freezing launch. Remember, Moore had the final decision for a "go or no go."

[And] 1983 was the year that Lockheed got their contract for maintenance of the shuttle system at Cape Canaveral. Lockheed's $1.2 billion, three-year job included readying the shuttle for each launch. Lockheed was the contractor that built and assembled the suspect rocket booster.

Recent news accounts describe patchwork repairs on the shuttles as "Mickey Mouse" operations.

The history of Lockheed is one that hardly recommends such a sensitive position with the politicized, overzealous and assured NASA-wired Star Wars project that is in the pocket.

The company hired to service the shuttle program, Lockheed, is best described by author Jim Hougan in his book, *Spooks:*

> "Lockheed's chairman, Daniel J. Haughton, masterminded and raped the treasures of a dozen countries, corrupted the political processes of both hemispheres, jeopardized national security, screwed the taxpayer, destabilized the governments of three allies, undermined NATO, subverted the marketplace, boosted inflation, and stimulated suicides as far apart as Tokyo and Los Angeles."

Would Lockheed employees with past cozy relationships with former Nazis, fascists, members of the Waffen SS, assist the SDI and militarization of space, or have any part of dismantling the civilian space program?

One Lockheed employee working on the Challenger nearly went out of his mind upon seeing the explosion. "It was my fault. I killed seven people," he screamed.

Lockheed had an unprecedented series of accidents. The most recent was a derrick hitting the Challenger, possibly weakening the side for raging fuel to [escape].

There are two obvious changes in NASA and the military space program since January 28, 1986.

NASA is getting exposure of their bitter in-fighting, mismanagement, near accidents and horror stories on inefficiency.

The Rogers Commission, along with leaks and Congressional pressures, will uncover scandals inside the shuttle program and NASA itself.

At the same time, funding for Star Wars has escalated.

SDI is the only Pentagon project not open for any cuts at all by the Gramm-Rudman amendment. National security's sacred cow, Reagan and Teller's baby, is untouchable.

Congress has been asked to spend $4.8 billion for Star Wars in 1987.

The Energy Department wants $603 million for nuclear weapons in space. That will include the Paperclip goals: microwave heat, nuclear pellets and projects related to SDI, in case they cannot pull in enough cash over the table on their own.

$50 million more has been requested for nuclear weapons research. NASA and the Pentagon want a "third generation weapon, beyond the atomic and hydrogen bomb. Edward Teller is to give birth again. Ronald Reagan is the mid-wife."

Teller and Reagan have teamed up since Governor Reagan visited Lawrence Livermore Laboratory, in Berkeley, California in 1966.

NASA, rocket and missile experts, scientists, specialists in future possible nightmares, now are assured monopoly and control of space projects. Atomic bombs, Star Wars lasers, reflectors can be activated without some civilian teacher trying to explain the "humanization of space".

When one shuttle exploded, the other three were doomed for anything but military purposes.

Almost a perfect James Watt "Rainbow Coalition" went to their graves – one black, a classmate of Jesse Jackson, one Buddhist-Japanese, one Jew and two women.

If the launch explosion was no accident and could have been prevented, was the crew handpicked for this specific voyage? Given the mentality and logic of the Reagan team, if not Reagan himself, combined with the imported Nazi space scientists still ordering when to launch, nothing is impossible or should be overlooked.

(Transcript by Virginia McCullough)

*** * ***

Challenger Timeline

Was the shuttle Challenger sabotaged by the Defense Department and Air Force for the militarization and control of Space?

Chronology

3/23/83
President Ronald Reagan and Edward Teller present Star Wars and SDI.

8/30/83
KAL-007 downed. Space Shuttle Challenger. McDonald sinks down.

9/18/83
New York Times "NASA's Next Mission—Big Business in Space." Challenger. NASA moving away from "exploration" to *commercial and military uses.*

1/28/86
Challenger goes down. Vandenberg, military Star Wars take over.

Evidence of Internal Warfare: NASA vs. military, Pentagon, SDI elevation

1. NASA *knew* of hazards, "could be catastrophic," *New York Times*, 2/10/86. Warning, 8/85 – "Failure of seals to prevent flames next to solid-fuel booster rockets." "O-ring *defective*." Double jeopardy, sub-freezing weather.

2. Purpose of appointed commission to divert weather hazards—AP, UPI, CNN, NBC, CBS, ABC 2/6/86 and 2/7/86: "Weather not a factor." *San Jose Mercury*, 2/7/86: Freezing temperatures.

3. Shuttle could have taken off on Sunday—"weather perfect." *Washington Post*, 1/27/86.

4. "Another Shuttle Chance Bolts Away," *Washington Post,* 1/28/86. Why delay necessary? Comedy of errors.

5. "Challenger Was a Disaster Anyway," *Wall Street Journal*, 1/28/86. List of "problems," defects.

6. "With Shortage of Shuttle, Military now has Priority" *New York Times*, 1/31/86.

7. Unload James Watt's Rainbow Coalition: Buddhist-Japanese, one Jew, two women and one Black. No cripples this time, just corpses. Ellison Onizuka, "secret military spy satellite mission," January, 1985. Judith Resnick, National Institute of Health, Bethesda, 1974–77. AIDS experiments.

8. Feud between James M. Beggs, NASA'S administrator, and Daniel O. Graham. *San Jose Mercury News*, 1/30/86. Graham joined NASA three months ago. Begg's "space colony" vs. SDI.

9. Infighting at the White House. Star Wars, détente. State vs. Pentagon. "Administration at War with Itself," *Washington Post*, 1/28/86. Assistant Secretary of Defense Richard Perle: "There hasn't been a disaster, so maybe system works."

10. "Arms control Rasputin, Prince of Darkness, Richard Perle," *San Jose Mercury News*, 12/11/84.

11. Rockwell, Lockheed, Thiokol will make Star Wars, if not a new shuttle. "50% increase for Star Wars," *Los Angeles Times*. "Air Force asks for $104.5 billion," *San Francisco Examiner*. All after the explosion.

12. NASA Admiral William Graham with Representative Manuel Luian, Jr., New Mexico. *Los Angeles Times*, 1/29/86. When Challenger went down, Graham with ranking GOP of House Committee on Science, Technology.

13. "Space Invaders: Military Cowboys Seek Setting for Star Wars," *San Francisco Examiner*, 1/27/86. How SDI, Air Force blow up Navy, NASA Solwind satellite. "Anti-satellite tests open Pandora's box," *Los Angeles Times*, 9/22/86.

14. Destruction of booster rockets—and lies—followed. *Los Angeles Times*, 1/30/86. "Going into population…" *Time* Magazine, 2/10/86, "… wasn't a danger." *San Jose Mercury News*, 1/30/86—boosters important to determine what happened.

15. News groups protesting NASA'S seizure of film. *New York Times*, 1/31/86: "NASA knew that impounding film was illegal."

16. Reagan's reaction. Did "'Rasputin' Drug our King?" *Washington Post*, 1/28/86. Buchanan: "Shuttle blown up." President: "The one with the teacher on it?" Reluctance to accept the deaths. Information from TV, not White House communication lines.

17. "NASA Held Up Information of Leak, Solid Fuel Three Days," *San Francisco Examiner*, 2/4/86. This story links to "sub-freezing temperature, that is why boosters were destroyed."

18. "NASA Failure to Communicate for Five Hours," William Safire, *Los Angeles Herald*, 1/30/86. March 20, 1984, NASA directive: "No longer than 20 minute elapses, then tell."

19. "Air Force Blew Up Remote Control, Solid Rocket Booster," *Newsweek*, 2/18/86.

20. Reagan's Challenger commission—Chairman William Rogers is a member of Kissinger Associates. *Sundance*, 11/1972, Jeff Gerth, Peter Dale Scott, William Rogers and organized crime, Mafia links to Nixon, Rebozo, Bahamas drug traffickers.

21. "Day of Minor Pre-launch Flaws," *Washington Post*, 1/29/86. Day of launch. Delayed 6.38 a.m., freezing weather. Second hours, "fire-detection system".

22. Accidental damage from derrick, didn't bother to x-ray fuel tank, *Newsweek*, 2/10/86. They didn't really care about this old shuttle.

23. Shift of authority to life from Jesse Moore to "others involved." *Wall Street Journal*, 2/4/86. Rockwell said, "Don't go, too cold." Who are the "others?"

24. "Weather has NASA Concerned, Cracks From Cold Feared," *San Jose Mercury News*, 2/7/86. Morton Thiokol: "withstands temperature down to 40 degrees, solid rocket boosters." The night before launch, January 27, *all temperatures in the 20s*.

25. “Shuttle Ready to Launch Again, Air Force Knows Cause of Explosion,” *San Jose Mercury News*, 2/8/86. Mid-July date, after “cause isolated by defense department.”

26. Shuttle Contingency Plans, *New York Times*, 1/31/86. Shifting to military space. Dr. Hans Mark, former deputy administrator of space agency, former secretary of Air Force: “military missions have priority,” Three shuttles “could do the job.”

27. “Solid Rocket Temperature Not Checked by NASA,” *Chicago Tribune*, *San Francisco Examiner*, February 5, 1986. NASA admitted temperature inside booster rockets not checked before launch. “Never considered monitoring the cold fuel package.” “Solid fuel deteriorates in sub-freezing weather, allows flames, 6,000 degrees.”—“A burn through believed most likely cause of explosion.”—“NASA REFUSED TO RELEASE TEMPERATURE AT LAUNCH SITE BEFORE LAUNCH.”—“Weather service reported low of 23 degrees early morning, 28 degrees at launch-pad 39-B”—“No sensors to monitor, measure fuel temperature.”

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN

MAE BRUSSELL ON THE AIR

TRANSCRIPTS

THE CORPSE OF LEE HARVEY OSWALD

URANIUM AND THE MORMON CHURCH

NIXON'S RECRUITMENT

"ANTI-TERRORISM" & GOVERNMENT SURVEILLANCE

CONGRESSIONAL INVESTIGATION OF NAZIS IN AMERICA SABOTAGED

POLITICAL MURDERS, THE MOB, A MISSING SHIPLOAD OF HEROIN & THE ATTEMPTED MURDER OF BERNADETTE DEVLIN

THE WORST KIND OF ILLEGAL ALIEN

JOSEPH MENGELE & "THE BOYS FROM GUYANA"

RONALD REAGAN, BITBURG SANDWICH

HUNT FAMILY UPDATE

THE CORPSE OF LEE HARVEY OSWALD

(WORLD WATCHERS INTERNATIONAL, KLRB-FM, CARMEL, CALIF, JULY 26, 1978)

The *Washington Post* recently reported: "The CIA Tried to Have Oswald Exhumed." The Post reports newly released files show that the CIA, suspicious the Soviet Union may have brainwashed Lee Harvey Oswald, sought unsuccessfully to exhume his corpse to see if his reported 1959 suicide attempt was a Russian cover-up…

The above facts stated in the *Washington Post* report are a prime example of disinformation. E. Howard Hunt was forging documents that could be released later after Nixon's election in 1972 to show how Kennedy was not only sleeping with various women, but had also ordered the murder of a man three weeks before he was killed.

Neither the Warren Commission nor the Justice Department were deprived of information to find the killers of Kennedy or King.

E. Howard Hunt, a CIA agent, along with other persons would be called to testify at the assassination hearings, and Hunt was caught [forging documents]. The White House, Pentagon, the press, FBI and CIA were part of a combined effort to deceive the American public. Top State Department papers trusted to the military were delivered to Mr. Hunt along with scissors, razor and typewriter to blame John Kennedy for the murder of Diem. It is the admission of new evidence during the hearings into the Kennedy killings that should be suspect. If FBI agent James Hosty threw Oswald's letter in the toilet after the assassination of JFK, he should be indicted for destruction of evidence and perjury.

The UPI memo above is signed by W. David Slauson … the same CIA lawyer on the Warren Commission who took two weeks before the report was published, and stated they should go ahead with

the allegation of Oswald in Mexico, his quote being: "I have fudged the text sufficiently to put in phantom exhibits."

This is a crime of falsification of documents.

Arlen Spector is running for Governor of Pennsylvania. He was the attorney who hid the [number of] bullets and the possibility of silencers. Spector did not ask to see the car that Kennedy was in at the time of the assassination, now sequestered in Dearborn, Michigan at the Ford Motor Company. Arlen Spector created the Bullet #399 story—the fabrication of the number of bullets that went through JFK.

This recently released CIA document is false—the CIA did not ask to have Oswald's corpse dug up. In fact, they ordered it cremated. And if the Warren Commission had the body of Oswald cremated, then a body was substituted and not the same Oswald that was in Russia. If anyone challenged the Commission or the hearing officials to exhume that body, now, it would be the story of the century.

David Lifton documents an addendum to the *Warren Report* about a January 21 meeting, regarding Marina Oswald, called as a witness before any of the other witnesses were called. In reference to this meeting, Chairman Earl Warren said, "We will go to the next item 'H' under Roman Numeral II—'The Remains of Lee Harvey Oswald'—and a letter we received from Nicholas Katzenbaum, attorney general."

Now the situation is this: this man is buried in a cemetery and it takes officers around the clock to watch him and [assure] that "they" don't come in and exhume him, and do something that would further "injure the country." No one ever asked Warren who "they" were. Jerry Ford is still a survivor of that meeting. He might know. So it has been suggested that we should save expenses, we should exhume him AND cremate him. [Oswald's] mother says she didn't care how much it costs or what it is, she just won't consent to his cremation. But if anyone took credit for cremating this man, we would be in trouble.

Senator Russell said: "Do we have jurisdiction in that? It seems to me it would be in the court down there in Texas. I don't see that we would have any right to pass that on."

Warren, the same Warren, who ordered the concentration camps for the Japanese in World War II, said, "well, the question might arise as to something on that body. Now, I don't know what it is, it could be in the course of the bullet, or it might be something else. But I don't think we would want that disposed of until the report had been made."

There was some question about how Oswald died, that perhaps he had to be helped to the death state and didn't die from the shot by Ruby. The Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, Warren, has been told something about the corpse, otherwise why would he make such overtures?

"We can't injure the country. The country can't stand another shock."

"We wouldn't want to do something until the reports are made," Senator Boggs said.

"Absolutely not," said Senator Russell, "because then they would make a case of "if." I thought we might do this. I thought we might get a mausoleum to take the body, and we seal it up and put it in the mausoleum and it would be unknown to anybody else." At the Warren Commission, every secretary and every stenographer and custodian of the minutes of the report worked for the CIA. Senator Russell continued: "Now the wife would consent to that, and the mother hasn't anything to say about it, if the wife consents. I would have that rather than cremate it or dig it right now. We might get into a religious controversy."

John McCloy, head of the World Bank, chairman of Chase Manhattan, on the Warren Commission, released the bulk of the prisoners from the Nuremburg trials … two million Nazi files were found by the U.S. government in World War II and kept secret. Here it is 1964, and he's continuing the cover-ups. "I don't think we ought to have it on the record that we're moving him on this thing. We're not saying anything about it." The steno took it down and it was found in the Archives.

Senator Boggs said that even if you move that corpse 20 feet, somebody is going to say that the body has been switched, that it's not Oswald, and you're going to have to drag that body out and take pictures

and x-rays. It may take a little extra money to pay a few cops to watch it, but in this case, it's worth it.

Quite possibly the real Oswald was flown out of Dallas to Baton Rouge and then to Brazil, to the Nazi colony of Daniel Ludwick, described as a missionary of the Latter Day Saints. Relatives who visited L.H. Oswald in Helsinki before he went to Russia arrived on a military plane. A former Mormon is trying to expose the conspiratorial assassination links to Mullen Associates, a public relations firm who represented the Free Cuba Committee.

Mr. Riley, who was receiving money from Mullen and Associates of Washington, D.C., hired L.H. Oswald at the Riley Coffee Company in New Orleans.

A helicopter was left for Oswald's escape from Dallas. The escape route is not documented yet. Joe Cooper, *National Tattler*, was doing a big story on the Baton Rouge connections to the JFK assassinations and the Navy Intelligence connections when he was blown to smithereens and killed. *National Tattler* went out of publication after that. This is a very secret story.

The fact that certain witnesses are dead means that Marina Oswald can successfully lie. DeMorenschildt is dead. If his wife Jean DeMohrenschildt testifies under oath, it will be taken as truth because the man is dead. She put him into Parkland Hospital, where the teacher was given multiple shock treatments to ruin his memory and induce suicide. And he was given drug treatments, then "became suicidal" and "crazy."

There's no accountability of the car that was sent to Michigan or the clothes of JFK or Connally. The evidence is destroyed. The witnesses were murdered. The destruction of evidence and murder of witnesses should have been investigated before new evidence was pondered.

A list of witnesses who have been put in prison or the mental hospital as a result of what they know about the assassination needs to be pursued. Like Mrs. Stevens, or Abraham Bolden or DeMohrenschildt. A list of witnesses who worked for the House Select Committee, and lawyers who have been blackmailed or are stopping the investigation, should be examined.

Uranium and the Mormon Church

(Mae Brussell broadcast, KLRB-FM, Carmel, California, August 4, 1978.)

On the morning of July 20, 1878, a press conference was held at the scene of the ordination of Larry Lester, the Black minister admitted to the Mormon priesthood two years ago. The subject of the conference was "Mormon Church Infiltration of Government Agencies Suspected of Sequestering Uranium Ore Outside the United States." This press conference was held by the Latter Day Saints Freedom Foundation in connection with the development of Melody Mountain Ranch, Inc.—an intended boy's vocational training school to be located at Cornelius, Oregon, in 1958. Charles A. Bean became involved in the acquisition of certain surplus government property. This led to the dismantling of some buildings for resale at the tri-city area in Washington.

During September of 1958, volunteer men were working to assist in guaranteeing the supply of iron ore alleged to be needed in the connection of nuclear cooling processes at Hanford. As a result of these efforts several samples of the ore indicated that hard rock uranium ore was located in Washington state and yellow uranium in Utah. Through subsequent arrangements, the interests of 20 volunteers who had contributed to the National Association of Evangelicals—which became involved in backing the Melody Mountain Ranch project, later called Pacific Youth Institute—were exchanged for stock in the Yellow Cat Uranium Co., a Utah-based corporation, which later changed its name to Trans Pacific Enterprises in 1957.

Simultaneously, Lyndon B. Johnson (then a senator) became involved in the uranium discovery through

one J.J. McCoy, a fund-raiser who had affiliations with Johnson. Johnson was also a member of the Teamsters Trust Fund Committee at Lubbock, Texas, utilized to move money to the number one endeavors of the Association of Evangelicals, made of 30,000 American churches. The Internal Revenue Service eventually became involved because some of the $4-million intended for use by the Pacific Youth Institute was backed by the Evangelicals. A bond of ten percent (10%) was deposited against claims, which might arise from the non-tax-exempt status of the corporation. This bond, deposited with the Justice Department, was made up of $20,000, some parcels of land held by individual owners and subsequently was funded by the Teamsters' Fund. Teamster funding of many other projects was guaranteed by the anticipated proceeds from the uranium production.

The Treasury Department and the Securities Exchange Commission were to monitor the activities of all concerned. Ralph Grandquist, an Oregon IRS director, recommended to Mr. Bean that he file a Government "Conveniency" Bankruptcy to secure and preserve for future Americans the file which was developed concerning the uranium. This occurred in late 1958 after the discovery. The file was lost and is not now part of the bankruptcy files. A subsequent file was developed by Mr. Bean, and it also was stolen later!

It began to appear that the CIA was involved, for in 1960, some 15 months before the Bay of Pigs Invasion, the request was made that Mr. Bean, who had the authority, sign off on 60 mothball Liberty Ships stored at a California port, ostensibly for use in the Bay of Pigs. Later these ships were used to transport the mined uranium to Australia for refining although it was described as manure and fertilizer. Since virtually all the ore shipped was mined in Utah under the eyes of the Mormon Church, which controls everything that goes on in that state, it may be safely stated that the Church was involved directly or indirectly in the affair. It is of no small moment that the LDS church is infiltrated the CIA and the FBI, and that the special interests of the church have been handled by those church members who had the agencies of government to assist them in the conspiracy.

It is also interesting to note that the Utah Corporation is also the largest mining and refining organization in Australia. This corporation, affiliated with the Mormon Church, was the alleged destination of the shipped uranium. The objective of the Mormon conspiracy was to transport the ore beyond the control of the federal government. The avowed purpose of the church in its secret political conquest council of fifty, was to obtain nuclear capability for future use when it would attempt to obtain world conquest and single world government.

It appears as though president Lyndon Johnson assisted the Mormon Church in this conspiracy by promoting such projects as "Atoms for Peace," "Food for Peace," and "Water for Peace." By executive order, Johnson ordered the movement into an international treaty of one million tons of the mined uranium, which was subsequently shipped to Australia. This order issued in 1966 was violated, in that during three years (1966, 1967 and 1968) all ten million tons of the ore were shipped off to Australia aboard those ships registered to Lady Bird Johnson.

It is a well-known fact to researchers at the LDS Freedom Foundation, that Lyndon Johnson had placed in the limousine two pillows on the floor upon which the Secret Service agents could push him at the moment President Kennedy was to be shot in 1963. It is also known that the pathologist who conducted the pathology on Kennedy has denounced the official pathology report as not being his report, which indicated that several shots penetrated the president's head from different angles. The Warren Commission, appointed by Johnson, has been accused of whitewashing the entire episode.

It is also of no small significance that Lady Bird Johnson acquired numerous FCC licenses beyond normal regulations during this period of time, and further that the chairman of the FCC has always been a Mormon since its inception.

The nuclear capability of Israel has resulted from this conspiracy, which provided for the hijacking of 200 tons of ore in 1968. The rumor was widespread in the knowledgeable circles of Salt Lake City that

the Mormon Church had arranged to assist Israel in bringing off Armageddon.

Upon hearing of the ore shipments, Lyndon Johnson made a hurried four-day world trip after which he abandoned plans to run for reelection. His death shortly after retiring appears to be part of the cover-up of the conspiracy along with numerous others involved.

Twenty notes for 1.5 million dollars each are acknowledged to be in a Swiss bank to repay the value of part of the one million tons of ore authorized for shipment. Mr. Bean and an associate, Mr. Robert J. Wright, have filed suit in a federal court in Oregon seeking to make the Treasury Department responsible and accountable for the loss to themselves and the National Association of Evangelicals.

Lyndon Johnson was the head of NASA, and Werner von Braun, the Nazi war criminal, was brought to this country. The atomic bomb and nuclear capabilities were moved with the assistance of Lyndon Johnson and the Mormon Church. Mullen Associates in Washington, D.C., a public relations firm, had been a non-Mormon account for the Tabernacle tours overseas, yet all Mormons give their business to other Mormons.

But the LDS used this Washington firm, Mullen Associates, which carried the Latter Day Saints Tabernacle around the world—a good method of disseminating agents from the tours. The LDS also funded the Free Cuba Committee (which again is Mormon) and the ships for the Bay of Pigs. The LDS funded Mr. Riley of Riley Coffee Co., where Lee Harvey Oswald worked. E. Howard Hunt was the vice president of Mullen Associates. Lyndon Johnson, atomic weaponry and the Nazi-Mormon-CIA, had obvious connections. Australia had one-fifth of the world's non-Communist uranium, making it a major supplier. The ore was shipped from the US to Australia and from there to other nations. This is thanks to the Mormons.

This all started having steam in 1957, a very important year. That's when Admiral Byrd died. His documents and the truth of his visits to the Antarctic were never published. That was the year of the International Geophysical Year. This was the year that Candy Jones was put into her mind control experiments, without her even knowing it for so many years. It was the year that Lyndon Johnson made great strides for the Mormon cause. Satellites, launched by NASA, were organizing the earth for the industrialists who use the uranium.

Please note that some parts of the above information were taken from a press conference by attorney Doug Wallace.

Nixon's Recruitment

In the Memoirs of Richard Nixon, page 33, Nixon discusses his run for Congress in 1966. He tells about his letter from Hermann Perry, the manager of a Bank of America in Whittier.

> *Dear Dick,*
> *Do you want to run on a Republican ticket? Air mail me your reply.*
>
> *H. L. Perry*

The date 1966 is important because Nixon was then taken to see Mr. Perry and then was taken to the bungalow of Howard Hughes. And they decided, yes, this is our man. Nixon had already written to the law offices of Allen Dulles, asking to be in intelligence work. When Nixon was in the Navy, he had written to the FBI asking to be in the FBI.

The fact that Nixon didn't get a response from them doesn't mean that he wasn't hired. His answer came in the form of Perry and Howard Hughes, who contacted him, and he was brought to California to run against Jerry Vorhees. In the book *Wanted, the Search for the Nazis in America*, this same Mr. Perry

was instrumental in bringing war criminals to the United Sates, such as the Nazi Nicholai Moloxa, who was brought to Nixon's office. Moloxa, of Odessa, then went down to Argentina. Nixon's first visit to the White House in 1947 was a meeting with Truman who discussed helping restore Europe and especially German industry. German industry included I.G. Farben and munitions makers.

This class of "1946-1947" was very important—it included Mr. Smathers from Florida, Gerald Ford from Michigan, and Nixon from California. These men elected in 1946, worked along with the Nazi war criminals and the OSS-CIA officials to form the National Security Council. Then foreigners like Kissinger and Brezinski came in and ran our country. It's no longer run by Americans.

This group looked at the globe and smacked their lips and decided how it would be divided.

The importance of bringing the German space scientists to this country (written up very carefully in the book *Operation Paperclip*), is that the satellites tell you where the oil is or the minerals, water, oil, vegetation and population are. Then, from this vantage point, you can displace people from where the oil is or from where the minerals you want are located.

Control is either bought or obtained by force. The war was over in May 1945, and in August 1945, the United States dropped the A-bombs made by Hitler and Oppenheimer (a "basket of pineapples") on Japan to keep Russia from going into those oil fields of Asia any further. Russia had already gone west and the United States wanted to stop her from going east.

"Anti-Terrorism" & Government Surveillance

The following is information supplied by Jim Horowitz, of Los Angeles, who works with Mark Lane and Don Freed. They apparently suppressed information on several issues at conspiracy conferences. Jim Horowitz has a newsletter, Vol. 4, No. 6, about Evelle Younger. Younger's "Organized Crime Collector School (he advertises himself as a "spy czar") is actually an anti-terrorist Red school. Our country is no longer chasing communists. We're doing trade with Russia and China. They are looking for "terrorists," and they will become the excuse to open our mail and break into newspaper offices, keep people under surveillance and do anything they want under the cover of "terrorism."

Anacapa Sciences, Inc. is a mystery firm hired for politically and paramilitary-motivated campaigns to get dissidents. In Zaire, it is General Motors which is sending in troops. Private corporations work with the Department of Defense and the CIA so we don't have to declare war, and the FBI doesn't have to half its underground work. Mr. FBI Webster sent 80 informers to monitor the terrorists' work. Then the private corporations get money from the government, and the FBI can look at you and say, "We only have 80 agents on this subject." But Anacapa, whose cover is organized crime, is setting up national—as in "Gestapo" – national training schools. They will work with local police. Hitler worked with Interpol. Hitler had the best police system. It was not only national, but included Vienna, Poland, Hungary and Romania, and then it became international.

SWAT teams are formed under all this and they want more SWAT teams for urban counter-insurgencies and for the militarization of the police forces, with headquarters to be in Los Angeles, California.

Daryl Gates, chief of the Los Angeles Police Department, was under the influence of Ed Davis. In San Francisco, Charles Gain is the chief of police. Gain ran the FBI counter-intelligence program in Oakland against the Black Panthers, before he was made chief of police in San Francisco. Oakland is the third police center in America.

Anacapa is linked with the CIA. It shares with them anti-terrorist money. Anacapa's project director is Jack Kinney of Air Force Intelligence, who is also a top secret National Security Agency executive. Anacapa is also tied to officers of Naval Intelligence, the Defense Intelligence Agency, and has reciprocal relations with the CIA. Evelle Younger's influence reaches through the Organized Crime Collectors

School.

The unemployed, especially black persons who are unemployed, Chicanos who are unemployed—there are no jobs from them. Stealing to get food? Those who are forced to become criminals—these are your "terrorists." There's going to be unemployment, riots, food-riots and so on in this country. There are no "terrorists." There's going to be self-defense. That's the reason the Panthers started.

Younger works with the Organized Crime Collectors School and Anacapa, and also with a group in Washington D.C. called the "Psychological Assessment Associates (PAA)." PAA is a deep cover CIA's proprietary that worked with behavior modification-like experiments. You get a Donald DeFreeze working in Vacaville prison in California. DeFreeze was working under the Defense Department's mind control program established by Westbrook of the CIA. Westbrook formed the Symbionese Liberation Army (SLA) which became the excuse to burn those people—SLA members caught in the burning house in Los Angeles, on prime time TV. The burning of these six SLA members became the inaugural of the SWAT teams' burning of "terrorists." Boy, it's really great that they saved us in time from those terrorists—which, had they been merely arrested, would have required utilizing the courts to hear their cases. United Sates prosecuting attorney Browning, who prosecuted the Patty Hearst case, still hasn't prosecuted Emily William Harris (four years now) for kidnapping Patty Hearst. Browning is running for Attorney General of California while Evelle Younger runs for Governor.

Browning and Younger have links to the mind control programs. One of Younger's liaisons in Washington, the firm Psychological Assessment Associates, works under cover with a John Gettinger. J.W. Gettinger is an agent who works under the cover of the Human Ecology Fund, known to be a CIA conduit. …

Hitler's idea of ecology was the "pure white Aryan race." The Nazis will work with the Arabs and the Asians to a degree until they have control, and then will utilize sterilization. An example of this type of sterilization was the American Indian misfortune. Another example was the mass programs of germs and genocide, conducted by white people in South Africa—which was an experiment after WWII regarding a handful of whites handling a bunch of blacks. It works. People may object to Steve Bilko being killed. 33 other men were killed in those South African prisons last year.

There will be no leaders, a parasol will remain. It's a test case. And it works. And there's no reason why these people can't continue their genocide policy and that is the reason for the Human Ecology Fund. All this is from Jim Horowitz's newsletter on Evelle Younger's spy network in Los Angeles (rather, some of it is.)

Congressional Investigation of Nazis in America Sabotaged

(World Watchers International broadcast, KLRB-FM, April 13, 1979)

There's an article in the *Washington Post* (April 1, 1979) on Simon Weisenthal. They call him the Holocaust "Avenging Angel." He's the gentleman who was rescued from a concentration camp during WW II, and has spent his life trying to find Nazis still at large. He claims that there are 150,000 Germans who committed war crimes and that 96 percent survived the war. Weisenthal estimates now that there are between 15-20,000 of these murderers still free in South America, Spain, the Near East, Germany and other countries.

There was a photograph of Gustav Franz Wagner interviewed in Brazil in 1978. There was a birthday party April 20 for Adolf Hitler, and Wagner was seen at that time. And he helped organize Treblinka. But in the whole year that has passed, there hasn't been any mention by Simon Weisenthal about Wagner … the name is hardly mentioned in the article, and I think it's interesting because they have his picture.

Vice President Mondale has been down to Brazil, and Jimmy Carter has been to Brazil, but there is

never any effort to get these Nazi war criminals. … Another article about Argentina making fake U.S. visas, this was in the Washington Post —"at least 3,000 illegal aliens, some from North Korea, South Korea, and other countries" which are not named, get passports into the United States from the U.S. consulate. A ring may have been involved in $5 million, payments for giving false travel papers. This is April of 1979, but the Vatican was writing passports for Nazi agents after WWII to go down to South America, and Argentina was writing passports for people like Martin Bormann and other agents to travel. … So it comes out this week that this is 20 or 30 years of false papers [so] people can come from all over the world to the United States and stir up some more trouble here.

Another article in the *New York Times* (March 25), a dispute over releasing funds for investigating 175,000 Nazi war criminals in the United States. Congressman Elizabeth Holtzman, a Democrat from Brooklyn, has been working with the House Subcommittee on Immigration, Refugees and International Law for several years. There was a $2 million fund to investigate a special litigation unit on Nazi war crimes. No one can figure out why there is a delay in investigating it. The Justice Department hasn't been serious about prosecution; not a single attorney has been hired since May, 1978 despite repeated requests for the Nazi task force. Congress allocated $2,052,000 for direct use by the unit, and it hasn't been used. There is no staff, no attorneys, and they are not looking for the Nazis. …

There are some powerful forces trying to [run] Elizabeth Holtzman out of congress, the way Bella Abzug was pushed out in New York City. [Holtzman] has been working on this for two years, trying to get this investigation going. She's had no cooperation from the Justice Department.

Political Murders, the Mob, a Missing Shipload of Heroin & the Attempted Murder of Bernadette Devlin

(World Watchers International, KLRB-FM, Carmel Valley, Calif., February 1, 1981)

Our federal agencies—the CIA, the FBI, the Defense Intelligence Agency, the NSA and so forth—have all been pressed together to put down labor unions [and] social programs, kill "radical" [and] liberal leaders, cultural leaders, social leaders—and musicians and artists and writers and entertainers while they develop their police and armed forces around the world.

They use the mob for killing and wiping out counter-forces—and in exchange, the mob was promised, if they would use their goon squads as killer teams, that the mob would not be prosecuted for their narcotic imports. And that brings in Air America and Flying Tigers, and books on the war in Vietnam, and China, and the United States and military planes going into the narcotic business, culminating in large amounts of money stolen from banks every single week, unaccounted money that ends up in the hands of mobs, and gun-running, experimentation and fascism.

So the huge profits today are not $1 million or $2 million exposed changing hands, but it will be $55 million at the Nugan Hand Bank missing from Australia, and $22 million from another city in Florida, and $50 million from Minneapolis, and $23 million from Houston. And a truck with $27 million was shipped to Louisiana this week, and the mob didn't pick it up because it was marked.

And an entire ship disappeared that was supposed to have corn to be transferred for heroin coming in from the Middle East. The ship, "The Poet," is missing from Scotland Yard, and the CIA linked it to the Gambino Family, so you don't get a plane-load or a paper bag filled with seven pounds of heroin any longer—you get the entire ship. …

The reason to study these assassinations is to keep track of how many heads of state have power today because they are directly linked to murders that preceded them. Ronald Reagan has worked closely with people from the team of Alpha 66, anti-Castro Cubans. And Richard Nixon's team—the people who killed John Kennedy, those he has protected and worked with—[assured that] he came into office not

having to compete with the power of Nelson Rockefeller, who was done in about two years before the elections. Nelson Rockefeller was quickly cremated on the orders of a doctor from South Africa working at the hospital. They didn't examine the body to see if he was poisoned, and no questions about the Secret Service [agents] who were supposed to be with him.…

There was an article in the *Los Angeles Times* this week—it's the anniversary of the death of Mahatma Ghandi, a symbol to the British to get out of India. The article has a tragic tone to it, "Ghandi: His Image Fades for the Indians," and it tells how the upper-classes have no interest in him, that they thought he was too austere, and they were uncomfortable with his turning away material possessions. And 97 percent of the students in India know very little about Mahatma Ghandi. He's now actually almost in obscurity, the universities don't teach courses about him, and they want to forget that he existed.

Another leader who was shot this week—that we haven't heard a thing about—is [Irish activist and former Parliamentarian] Bernadette Devlin. A group of three people broke into her home in Ireland, and they hit her seven times in the chest, hip, leg. Three gunmen. And they used sledge hammers. She was in a cottage with her husband, she had three children and she was getting them ready for school. She said when she went to the hospital: "Now they think that they've got me and I'm not dead yet." She and her husband are still alive—he also was gunned down, three times, in serious condition.

But there will be this continuous slaughter of people who speak up, our world leaders, unless there is a positive effort to change this society.

The Worst Kind of Illegal Alien

(World Watchers International broadcast, KLRB-FM, April 13, 1979)

The *New York Times* (April 5) has a story, "Paraguay Alien Tied to Murders in Native Lands." They found in Brooklyn a man living with a woman, a nephew and a child who [came] from Paraguay. His name is Mr. Pena, and federal agents have been looking for him. He's been living in a Shephardic neighborhood in Paraguay. He's been involved in the killing and torture of the opponent of Alfred Stroessner and the military government down in Paraguay. And the opponent's son was a 17-year-old, picked up, tortured and killed. The boy died, was beaten and received high-voltage electric shock. … Mr. Pena was charged with murder, but he left Paraguay, came to New York City.

People wanted for murder and torture, linked to the Nazis, have no trouble getting into this country.

Joseph Mengele & "The Boys from Guyana"

(Mae Brussell's World Watchers International, KLRB-FM, May 31, 1981)

… I do want to mention, again, a very quiet story that didn't make the headlines everywhere. A New York newspaper had a large story this week that said Joseph Mengele, the notorious "Angel of Death" from Auschwitz, has been very much alive in New Jersey and Westchester, New York. He has a relative living in New Jersey who has a farm manufacturing company, and he also worked for the firm. It was well-known in Germany.

When he left Auschwitz, he was never wanted as a war criminal. He was never wanted at the Nuremberg trials. And when he was recognized in Germany, he went on down to South America. I've alleged for a long time that Mengele has been in and out of this country, and that the FBI has documents that he has in fact been an American citizen since the 1930s. I've had information from people that he's been in Nevada City not too long ago. Now it turns out that he was very much seen in Westchester County, the headquarters of narcotics and organized crime. And his crew from Uruguay, Paraguay, Chile and

Argentina have a lot of activity up in Westchester County and in New Jersey where he was. Mengele does travel in the United States. He has lived here and goes in and out of the United States. That was confirmed by another series of articles that just came out this week. Those of you who are familiar with this program know that I've been saying this has been happening for a long time.

There are a lot of people who are outraged by the experiments he did at Auschwitz, his extermination policies, his treacherous experimentations on people, all kinds of body experiments. But there are many other people that consider him a fine, reputable citizen, and they look upon those victims at Auschwitz as animals or beasts, and they don't think of him as torturing. And I believe that if we look further, we'll find The Boys From Brazil—the movie that was made about Mengele—will in fact be The Boys From Guyana. I said that also at the time of the Jonestown massacre.

Joe Holsinger, the aid to [Congressman] Leo Ryan who was murdered down in Jonestown, had given me the phone number of a doctor in Westchester County who allegedly supplied the bulk of the drugs for Jonestown. I never called him and I kept the number, but that's an interesting point now because of Mengele's association there in Westchester, and experimentation with electrodes, the surgery without anesthetics, the mistreatment, and the narcotic or mind experimental drugs that were down in Jonestown.

As I said before, the book The Children of Jonestown tells about enough drugs in the laboratory for a population of 60,000. And there were, at the most, 900–1,000 people there. But there were different accounts, as you know, when [the bodies] were first counted. [At first it was] over 400, and then that number was greater the next day. I was told the bulk of the drugs for their experimentation or treatment came from Westchester. It would be interesting now to see if Mengele and this pharmacist who sent them to Jim Jones had any connection, and if The Boys From Guyana are The Boys From Brazil. I've had a deep feeling for a long time that there were connecting links between the Jonestown experimentations and Joseph Mengele from Auschwitz.

Ronald Reagan, Bitburg Sandwich

(Mae Brussell, World Watchers International, KAZU-FM, Pacific Grove, Calif, April 29, 1985.)

The president of the United States, Ronald Reagan, is a sandwich. He's a sausage between two pieces of bread, squeezed at both ends. One is Fritz Kraemer and Henry Kissinger, representing the Fourth Reich. The other is Richard von Weizsäcker and Helmut Kohl—representing the Fourth Reich. Germany and America, with the president of the United States in between—and the relish on the bun is, of course, Richard Nixon with his contacts to Germans in America.

There was an article about Helmut Kohl, who said that he had reassured Ronald Reagan that he would not back out of the demand that he visit Bitburg, and that there was no way to change that commitment.

A Kohl advisor added—and this was in the *San Francisco Chronicle* on April 23—"if one tries to act symbolically, one has to choose the symbols carefully." Well, the symbol of this particular Bitburg piece of geography is [its history as] the staging area for the Battle of the Bulge; it had already been decided by that time that the real project was to take on the Soviet Union.

[Reagan's Bitburg trip] involved a cast of characters that I have been talking about for the past years: Prince Bernhard of the SS, he worked for IG Farben and married Queen Juliana in Holland; Henry Kissinger, an advisor to all media networks at the present time, former secretary of state and national security advisor, the roving ambassador for the Germans; William Casey, the CIA director; Fritz Kraemer.

Senator Howard Metzenbaum urged Chancellor Kohl to back down on the demand [upon] our president of the United States: "Please take our president off the hook." And Helmut Kohl said: "No."

Another quotation in the newspaper was: "I don't think the president of the United States should go to a German cemetery to honor German soldiers who died killing American soldiers in the service of the

greatest tyrant of our time, Adolf Hitler." That was from Senator Cranston. He said, "there are graves of SS troops in the cemetary that make it unsavory and intolerable." At one point, Cranston said, "are Germany's ties to the United States so weak, so tenuous and so insecure and uncertain that Germany's price for reassurance is the humiliation of our president?"

What they don't understand—the news media, Senator Cranston, Senator Metzenbaum and these well-meaning people—is that the relationship, Germany and Ronald Reagan, is so secure that they don't care who screams and yells, they are going to meet anyways. …

The symbolism, as I say—they said it, and I'm quoting again—"is very important." What is the symbolism of Bitburg? The "symbolism" is that the American president and Americans and veterans and others living in this country will forget the Bulge.

You get help in forgetting the Battle of the Bulge. Many times I've referred to congressional hearings on the Dachau Trials. There were the Nuremberg Trials and the Dachau Trials. And do you know, there are NOT entire books on the defendants in the Dachau Trials. The builders, the SS, the choice elite were separated. The bankers were released by John J. McCloy, and the multinational weapons-makers were released by the Nuremberg group. The Dachau [Nazis] were the Waffen SS—and they are making tomorrow's Waffen possible!

Hunt Family Update

(World Watchers International, KAZU-FM, Pacific Grove, Calie, July 8, 1985)

Another member of the Hunt family's name came into the news just this week—Ward Hunt [and] his association with Princess Michel of Kent. Her name surfaced when Ronald Reagan was going to Bitburg, because her father was (he passed away) SS officer Gunther von Reibnitz. He played an important role with Richard von Weizsäcker's father, the current president of Germany, in the overthrow of Czechoslovakia.

So it came out this week that she was allegedly having an affair or meeting with Mr. Ward Hunt, and it may be very political. It doesn't even have to be sexual, but the British monarchy, the daughter of the SS family, is meeting in Texas and other places with Ward Hunt.

Herbert Hunt is linked in the Italian news this week to Pro Deo, Father Morlion and the CIA. And Ward Hunt is linked to Princess Michel of Kent.

CHAPTER NINETEEN

CIA-MAFIA CONSPIRATORS CAN REST EASIER

By Warren Hinckle

(*San Francisco Examiner*, October 6, 1988)

Mae Brussell died this week. The question is, who killed her?

Mae was the grandest conspiracy theorist of them all, the Madame Defarge of paranoia. Her last passion before she slipped through the narrow door was investigating satanic cults in the military.

She found conspiratorial links in events large and small, from the Kennedy assassinations to Watergate to Contragate, and anytime anyone of note died, she was at the ready with a fascinating theory of why the death fit The Pattern.

Not one of her many friends, which included this writer, would doubt she would come up with a compelling conspiracy theory of her own death at a vibrant 66. Among the many enemies she was constantly exposing on her weekly radio show that was gospel to conspiracy buffs were Nazi scientists in the U.S., the Mafia, the CIA and the oil cartels—and that's a mean lot of enemies. The doctors say she died of cancer, but that was what they said about Jack Ruby, and Mae knew better than that. "Mae was multi-motivated," her old friend, publisher and co-conspiratorialist Paul Krassner said, admiringly, "but her specialty was Lee Harvey Oswald."

Mae was a complacent Carmel housewife raising a bunch of kids until the John F. Kennedy assassination. The horror of having her kids watch Jack Ruby bump off Lee Harvey Oswald right on daytime TV in what was obviously a set piece of work made her a conspiratorial crusader. If at times Mae was short on theory, she was always long on facts—at the time of her death Monday, she had amassed more than 80,000 pages of research material amassed from a compulsive clipping of 15 newspapers a day and a couple of hundred magazines a month. She was the first researcher to come up with the facts of Richard Nixon's career links—unquestionably earlier, more speculatively later—to the mob.

Krassner said Mae called him after he published a famously crude piece of fiction in *The Realist* about an alleged act of necrophilia between Lyndon Johnson and the corpse of John Kennedy aboard Air Force One returning from Dallas to Washington, D.C. on Nov. 22, 1963, and told him things even he hadn't imagined about the Kennedy assassination.

Mae remained in the pack of Kennedy assassination researchers but came into her own with Watergate. "Three weeks after Watergate, when the press was still treating it like a third-rate burglary, Mae sent me a piece that had the goods on the entire cast of characters—Hunt, McCord, Martinez and the rest—and linking them back to CIA-Mafia ties to the Kennedy assassination," Krassner said.

The main Brussell thesis, if I dare risk committing the sin of summary on her complex work, was that an ex-Nazi scientist-Old Boy OSS clique in the CIA using Mafia hit men changed the course of American history this past quarter-century by bumping off one and all, high and low, who became an irritant to them. She believed the Manson Family was set up by counterintelligence types to blacken the image of anti-war music-and-youth longhairs who were becoming a threat to the dominant culture and that Jonestown was a

medical and mind-control experiment in getting rid of undesirables.

Mae never had a theory she couldn't back up with a bewildering mass of news clippings and assorted facts. The question that must in all respect and sobriety be asked about Mae Brussell is the one Tom Wolfe asked about Marshall McLuhan: "Whaaaaat if she was right?"

"Way back then in the '60s, way back before Watergate even happened, Mae told me that all the crazy and violent things going on in the country were part of a plan to get Ronald Reagan in office," said Krassner.

INDEX

A

Abt Associates *151*, *281*
activist(s) *84*, *171*, *194*, *288*, *290*, *319*, *349*
aerospace *6*, *61*, *62*, *78*
agent provocateur ***(see provocateur)***
Agnew, Spiro *2*, *74*, *78*, *79*, *83*, *85*, *89*, *91*, *99*, *100*
Air Force
    United States *51*, *55*, *89*, *172*, *177*, *251*, *333-36*, *345*
    Korean *320*, *323*
Allendé, Salvadore *78*, *107n9*, *140*, *151*, *198*, *280*, *281*
Altamont *265*, *266*, *281*, *282-86*
American Bunge Corporation ***(see also "Octopus")*** *47*
American Council of Christian Churches *42*, *91*
American Nazi Party *116*, *147*, *159*, *179*, *181*, *182*, *260*
Anacapa Sciences, Inc. *345-46*
Angleton, James Jesus *25*, *31*, *34*, *45*
anti-war *79*, *84*, *97*, *98*, *100*, *104*, *144*, *176*, *195*, *229*, *273*, *282*, *284*, *287*, *289*, *290*, *292*, *356*
Argentina *30-32*, *34*, *44-47*, *56*, *132*, *136*, *324*, *344*, *347*, *350*
atomic bomb *330*, *332*, *343*
Atsugi Air Base (Japan) *23*, *71*
Atwood, Angela and Gary *149-53*, *161-63*, *166*, *171*, *180*, *189*, *204*, *212*, *226*, *231*, *239*
"August 7th Guerrilla Movement" *181-84*
Auschwitz *7*, *96*, *102*, *145*, *350*, *351*
Australia *29*, *290*, *342*, *343*, *348*

B

Bank of America *6*, *63*, *134*, *153*, *235*, *344*
Bannister, Guy *9*, *42*, *45*,
Barbie, Klaus *26*, *30*, *35*
Barger, Sonny *102*, *110n47*
Battle of the Bulge *31*, *37*, *352*
Bay of Pigs *5*, *27*, *33*, *41*, *47*, *71*, *111*, *116*, *341-43*
Beard, Dita *72*, *80*, *86*, *88*, *106n2*, *117*, *135*, *233*
Beatles *265*, *271*, *276*, *281*, *283*, *287*, *289*
behavior modification *95-98*, *155*, *156*, *168*, *173*, *258*, *322*, *346*
Bell, George *115*
Bell Aircraft/Helicopter *40*, *41*, *61*
Belli, Melvin *24*, *50*, *284*
Belushi, John *305-13*
Benenson, Peter *152*, *154*
Bildeberger *135*, *136*, *140*
Bitburg *337*, *351-53*
Black Abductor (novel) *172*, *228*, *261*
Black Cultural Association (BCA) *153*, *156*, *166*, *170-78*, *182*, *191*, *194*, *205*, *227*, *231*, *242*, *246*, *248*, *257*
Black Guerrilla Family *144*, *148*, *162*, *180*, *195*, *228*
Black Panthers (Black Panther Party) *12*, *82*, *87*, *102*, *103*, *106n3*, *144*, *146*, *156*, *163*, *165*, *169*, *177*, *178*, *194*, *195*, *203*, *230*, *235*, *247*, *253*, *256*, *284*, *345*
blackmail *13*, *86*, *98*, *99*, *106*, *114*, *131*, *140*, *146*, *272*, *296*, *326*, *340*
Blodgett, Ralph *113*
Boggs, Hale (Senator) *112*, *113*, *339*
Borghesé, Prince Justo Valerio, "Black Prince" *31*, *34*, *45*
Bormann, Martin *30*, *45-48*, *132*, *347*,
Bormann Society *5*
Bowart, Walter *129-30*
Bowen, John Howard ***(see Osborne, Albert)***

Brainwashed, brainwashing 148, 149, 155, 186, 191, 256, 337
Buckley, Tim 9, 265, 270, 276, 292
Buckley,
William F., Jr. 35-37, 43, 49, 57, 131, 132, 185, 198, 316
William F., Sr. 54, 56
burglary 2, 3, 7, 78, 106n4, 114, 177, 231, 267, 272, 295, 326, 356
Byrd, Admiral 343
Byrds, The (rock group) 266, 273, 280, 281

C

cabal 131
Caddy, Douglas 36, 57, 90, 91, 132
Camelot 176, 281-83
Cape Canaveral 329, 331
Carpenter, John 276
Carter, Jimmy (President) 7, 132, 140, 279, 301, 347
anti-Castro (movement) 4, 32, 42, 91, 349
Castro, Fidel 34, 35, 43, 47, 91, 92, 141, 282
Challenger (shuttle) 327-35
Chambers, Whittaker 32, 44, 45, 63-67, 104
Chan, Jean 152, 154, 160, 205, 242, 243
Chapman, Mark David 13, 288-92
Chappaquiddick 2, 3, 106n2
Chase Manhattan Bank 25, 26, 32, 134, 140, 339
Chavez, Cesar 9, 102, 110n47, 184
Chicano 2, 9, 10, 12, 73, 87, 120, 137, 150, 222, 243, 346
Chile 31, 72, 78, 93, 107n9, 132, 136, 140, 151, 152, 176, 198, 281, 282, 323, 324, 350
Chino Defense Fund 144, 162, 180, 195
Chotiner, Murray 6, 112, 135
Christian, Christianity 10, 133, 136, 148, 155, 197, 198, 250, 256, 275
Christian Defense League (CDL) 32
Chun, Byung In (KAL 007 pilot) 320, 321
Church, Frank 114, 292
CIA 1-3, 7-11, 13, 22-52, 53, 55, 60-66, 77-103, 105, 111-17, 120, 126-42, 144-52, 156-86, 189-202, 211, 219, 221, 223, 226-38, 244, 246, 248, 250, 253-62, 265-70, 272, 274, 275, 281-83, 289, 290-92, 301-04, 316, 319-26, 337-53, 355-56
civil rights 7, 100, 146, 194, 235, 250, 262
clandestine 14, 23, 59, 60, 61, 63, 66, 70, 71, 74, 77, 80, 84, 85, 93, 107, 138, 140, 162, 176, 191, 199, 226, 233, 255, 262, 290, 317
Cleaver, Eldridge 102, 110n47, 166, 178
CMC (Centro Mondiale Commerciale) 33, 34, 42, 45
cobra (symbol) 156, 177, 181, 202, 249, 256, 261
cocaine 270, 279, 301, 306-13
coincidence 65, 114, 143, 145, 223, 228, 229, 247, 281, 330
COINTELPRO 126, 176, 233, 267, 274, 283, 292
Colby, William (Director of CIA) 8, 100, 115, 147, 151, 176, 199, 261, 290
Cold War 22, 61, 62, 66, 67n12, 71, 78, 98, 99, 120, 131, 232, 272, 297
collusion 7, 143, 203, 226, 233, 235, 237, 238, 310, 317
commune(s) 148, 171, 191, 211, 261, 284
computer 10, 12, 16, 24, 53, 100, 150, 290, 318, 319, 322-25
Computer and Automation (magazine) 16, 67
corporation(s) 10, 14, 26, 32, 55, 63, 78, 79, 129, 134, 138-40, 197, 319, 341, 342, 345
counter-culture 265, 285
coup d'état 3, 11, 13, 16, 17, 23, 66, 70, 81, 93, 99
cover story 94, 98, 104, 105, 143, 149, 161, 162, 168, 169, 173, 182, 194, 199, 226, 232, 250, 267, 289, 292, 312, 327
covert (operations) 23, 45, 59, 64, 65, 70, 71, 94, 107, 147, 175, 176, 269, 321
Croce, Jim 9, 265, 277, 279, 292
Cuba 43, 83, 91, 92, 102, 105, 141, 193, 340
Cuban 4, 7, 9, 32, 34, 42, 43, 47, 71, 72, 92, 102, 114, 116, 214, 349

D

Dallas 2, 4, 16, 18-20, 21-27, 33-40, 45, 48-51, 60, 72, 76, 90, 91, 132, 133, 270, 276, 340, 356
Das Kapital 169

Davis, Angela *172*, *213*, *250*
Davis, Ed (L.A. Chief of Police) *128*, *237*, *272*, *345*
Davis, Wes *152*, *155*, *160*, *197*
defense industry *13*, *14*, *131*, *185*
Defense Department *9*, *24*, *33*, *40*, *43*, *48*, *50*, *52*, *71*, *151*, *176*, *327*, *328*, *333*, *335*, *346*
DeFreeze, Donald *8*, *135*, *149-52*, *155-60*, *164-66*, *170-91*, *206-27*, *236-63*, *346*
Delgado, Jose (Dr.) *8*, *126*, *222*, *223*, *322*, *323*
Delgado, "Ricky" *187*, *207-09*, *223*
Democrat(s) *9*, *81*, *84*, *92*, *97*, *99*, *128*, *131*, *330*, *347*
Democratic (political party) *18*, *78*, *97*, *128*
Democratic National Headquarters (offices) *2*, *75*, *77*, *82-85*, *106*, *111*, *112*
de Mohrenschildt, George *4*, *27*, *28*, *35*, *36*, *40*, *43*, *45*, *56*, *57*, *132*, *340*
DeVito, Joann Little and Joseph *152*, *159*
Devlin, Bernadette *337*, *348*, *349*
Dialogue: Conspiracy (radio show) *2*, *11*, *119*, *295*
dictator *6*, *28*, *56*, *323*, *324*
dictatorship *3*, *56*, *78*, *85*, *94*, *101*, *108n13*, *255*
DISC (Defense Industry Security Command) *129*, *137*, *141*
Dodd de Lattre, Lois *276*
Donovan, William (Bill, "Wild Bill") *24*, *25*
Dornberger, Walter (General) *40-41*, *330*
double(s) *42*, *129*, *135*, *158*, *165*, *180*, *181*, *218*, *237*
Ducote, Jerry *317-19*
Dulles, Allen *10*, *22-25*, *27*, *32*, *41*, *44*, *46*, *50*, *55*, *60*, *61*, *65*, *71*, *129*, *131*, *139*, *141*, *268*, *302*, *304*, *344*
Dulles, John Foster *23*, *60*, *63*, *65*
dummy front *23*, *32*, *79*, *107n6*, *143*, *226*, *230*, *261*
Dylan, Bob *266*, *273*, *280*

E

Eisenhower, Dwight D. (President) *23*, *36*, *44*, *59*, *60*
Elliot, Mama Cass *9*, *265*, *266*, *277*, *292*
entrap (-ment) *73*, *174*, *179*, *274*, *307*
espionage *1*, *22*, *23*, *26*, *34*, *59*, *61*, *65*, *70*, *75*, *76*, *79*, *84-87*, *89-106*, *113*, *114*, *119*, *120*, *142-46*, *153*, *162*, *167*, *193*, *219*, *226-30*, *235*, *249-53*, *255*, *317*, *320*, *321*, *331*
Exner, Judith *34*, *114*

F

Farben, I. G. *26*, *35*, *344*, *352*
Fascism *6*, *10*, *15*, *17*, *22*, *28*, *57*, *59*, *70*, *85*, *131*, *135*, *138*, *150*, *186*, *258*, *297*, *348*
fascist *11*, *22*, *29*, *31*, *33*, *34*, *56*, *61*, *70*, *139*, *184*, *324*
FBI *2-6*, *14*, *27*, *28*, *34*, *42*, *43*, *48-50*, *55*, *61*, *64*, *65*, *72*, *74*, *81-92*, *97*, *100-07*, *114*, *120*, *126-29*, *134*, *137*, *141*, *142*, *143-48*, *154*, *158-60*, *164*, *165*, *171*, *174-81*, *186-90*, *194-98*, *201-11*, *214*, *218*, *221*, *225-28*, *231-61*, *266*, *272*, *274*, *281-86*, *293*, *305*, *319*, *338*, *342*, *344*, *345*, *348*, *350*
FCC *342*
Flynn, Errol *25*, *27*
Ford Foundation *57*, *109n38*
Ford, Gerald (VP, President) *50*, *118*, *133*, *134*, *143*, *238*, *252*, *304*, *338*, *344*
Foster, Dr. Marcus *146*, *152*, *159*, *160*, *161*, *166-83*, *198-205*, *212*, *213*, *219*, *223*, *232*, *236*, *240-44*, *250*, *253*
Fourth Reich *5*, *12*, *351*
Franco, Francisco (Generalissimo) *28*, *29*, *46*
Free Cuba Committee *92*, *340*, *343*

G

Garrison, James (Jim) (New Orleans DA) *14*, *31-33*, *86*
Gehlen, Reinhard *10*, *21-33*, *36*, *42-52*, *55*, *61*, *131*, *139*, *303*
genocide *10*, *95*, *127*, *144*, *145*, *160*, *179*, *195*, *250*, *258*, *316*, *346*, *347*
germ warfare *10*, *29*, *260*
Germany *4*, *6*, *7*, *10*, *18*, *23*, *26*, *29*, *30*, *35-57*, *59-67*, *82*, *90*, *94*, *95*, *101*, *127*, *129*, *132*, *134*, *138-40*, *147*, *274*, *296*, *347*, *350-53*
Gestapo *24*, *25*, *27*, *31*, *36*, *46*, *56*, *83*, *85*, *89*, *95*, *110n50*, *147*, *238*, *266*, *330*, *345*
Ghandi, Mahatma *349*
Giancana, Sam *9*, *34*, *57*, *112*, *114*, *304*
Glass House Tapes *106n2*, *110n50*, *167*, *234*, *260*

Glover, James *112*
glycolate(s) *271*
Goebbels, Joseph *30*, *48*, *49*, *56*
Gray, L. Patrick *2*, *3*, *72*, *81*, *83*, *86*, *88*, *100*, *106n5*, *299*
guerrilla *102*, *143*, *145*, *148*, *190*, *223*, *226*, *244*, *249*, *259*, *289*
guerrilla warfare *102*, *106n3*, *199*
Gumbel, E.J. *5*, *56*, *138*
Gunnell, David *152*, *154*, *160*, *171*, *242*

H

Hall, Camilla *149-52*, *160*, *161*, *168*, *170*, *171*, *179*, *189*, *221*, *224*, *226*, *235*, *239*, *240*, *249*, *254*, *255*
Hall, Robert *271*, *272*, *279*, *283*
Harris, William (Bill) and Emily *149-53*, *161-64*, *168-74*, *180*, *187-89*, *201*, *204*, *207*, *209*, *214-17*, *228*, *230*, *231*, *238-59*, *346*
Hearst, Patricia (Patty) *3*, *13*, *133*, *135*, *143-263*, *296*, *346*
Hearst, Randolph *156*, *165*, *184-86*, *189*, *233*, *235*, *244*, *251*, *259*, *304*
heart attack *3*, *115*, *117*, *270*, *277*, *278*, *308*, *309*
Hell's Angels *102*, *282-84*
Helms, Jesse (Senator) *316*, *317*
Helms, Richard (CIA Director) *7*, *61*, *82*, *83*, *115*, *268*, *269*, *274*
Hendrix, Jimi *9*, *13*, *265*, *266*, *270*, *273*, *278*, *279*, *293*
heroin *270*, *276*, *279*, *301*, *308-10*, *313*, *347-49*
Himmler, Heinrich *24*, *27*, *35*, *56*
hippie(s) *9*, *12*, *107n6*, *161*, *191*, *196*, *229*, *258*, *261*, *268*, *273-76*, *282*, *284*, *290*
Hiss, Alger *13*, *32*, *36*, *44*, *45*, *63-67*, *104*, *297*
Hiss, Priscilla *64*
hoax *145*, *150*, *190*, *227*
Hoffa, Jimmy *9*, *13*, *25*, *57*, *304*
Holiday, Doc *162*, *228*
Holloway, John (Dr.) *308*, *309*
Hoover, J. Edgar *6*, *13*, *27*, *28*, *32*, *33*, *42*, *46*, *50*, *56*, *57*, *61*, *81-83*, *87*, *89-91*, *107*, *114*, *129*, *141*, *198*
Horowitz, Jim *345*, *347*
Hughes, Howard *6*, *13*, *14*, *25*, *34-37*, *56*, *78*, *88*, *93*, *117*, *129*, *131*, *134*, *140*, *195*, *250*, *272*, *275*, *284*, *288*, *310*, *344*
Humphrey, Senator Hubert *16*, *81*, *101*
Hunt,
- Dorothy *76*, *80*, *85*, *98*, *108*, *135*, *254*, *320*
- E. Howard *2*, *7*, *36*, *71-76*, *80-88*, *102*, *107-110*, *113-15*, *132*, *170*, *223*, *254*, *282*, *299*, *320*, *337*, *338*, *343*, *356*
- H.L. *4*, *38*, *39*, *140*
- Lamar *4*, *39*
- Ward *353*

Huston Plan (Tom Charles Huston plan) *143*, *177*, *198*, *226*, *237*, *260*, *293*
hypnosis *13*, *114*, *220*, *222*, *286*, *321*

I

informant *50*, *127*, *148*, *155*, *158*, *177*, *178*, *236*, *244*, *259*, *260*
intelligence community *11*, *140*, *150*, *233*
International Fascista *30*, *31*
Interpol *27*, *28*, *56*, *57*, *345*
Iran *7*, *23*, *132*, *136*, *259*
Iron Curtain *131*
Israel *33*, *46*, *244*, *258*, *259*, *342*, *343*
ITT (International Telephone and Telegraph Co.) *72*, *78*, *80*, *81*, *88*, *89*, *107*, *117*, *135*, *151*, *195*, *250*, *266*

J

J. Walter Thompson Advertising Agency *57*, *98*, *109n38*, *162*, *229*, *232*
Jackson, George *102-10*, *150*, *164*, *167*, *170*, *257*
Jagger, Mick *265-70*, *273*, *275*, *277*, *284*
Jew *4*, *38*, *39*, *133*, *136*, *333*, *334*
Jewish *4*, *8*, *10*, *26*, *38*, *56*, *133*, *135*, *136*, *138*, *259*, *297*
John Birch Society *4*, *38*, *56*, *57*, *132*, *133*, *315*, *318*, *323*, *331*
John, Elton *276*
Johnson, Lady Bird *342*
Johnson, Lyndon (President) *25*, *31*, *50*, *112*, *273*, *342*, *343*, *356*

Jones, Brian *9*, *265*, *266*, *270*, *277*, *279*
Jones, Jim *13*, *351*
Jonestown *351*, *356*
Joplin, Janis *9*, *265-69*, *273*, *278*, *279*, *293*
Justice Department *3*, *70*, *81*, *86*, *87*, *97*, *113*, *116*, *120*, *143*, *146*, *179*, *195*, *226*, *236*, *237*, *252*, *255*, *259*, *266*, *283*, *286*, *337*, *341*, *348*

K

KCIA (South Korean Intelligence Agency) *131*, *155*, *172*
Korean Air Lines, KAL (Flight 007) *315-23*, *328*, *331*
Karenga, Ron *152*, *156*, *164*, *165*, *177*, *247*
Kaye, Beverly *112*
Keaton, Bernard *152*, *158*, *165*, *180*, *181*, *237*
Keeling, Richard *270*, *277*
Kelly, Grace *301-04*
Kennedy
    John Fitzgerald (John F., JFK) *2*, *14*, *27*, *31*, *34*, *38*, *41*, *49*, *50*, *55*, *57*, *72*, *114*, *132*, *133*, *141-42*, *190*, *273*, *280*, *283*, *298-99*, *301*, *338*, *340*
    Robert *3*, *7*, *17*, *27*, *36*, *38*, *60*, *64*, *65*, *77*, *99*, *105*, *111*, *128*, *129*, *141*, *176*, *177*, *192*, *195*, *251*, *279*, *288*, *289*, *307*, *308*
    Rose *3*
    Ted *3*, *81*, *106*, *149*
King Alfred Plan *250*
King, Martin Luther *7*, *8*, *12*, *13*, *14*, *74*, *105*, *129*, *146*, *149*, *150*, *164*, *177*, *195*, *247*, *250*, *256*, *257*, *274*, *288-90*, *338*
King, Steve (Stephen) *85*, *86*, *213*
Kissinger, Henry *26*, *81-83*, *100*, *136*, *140*, *274*, *303*, *304*, *316*, *325*, *335*, *344*, *351*, *352*
KLRB-FM *2*, *14*, *15*, *295*, *337*, *340*, *347-50*
Kohl, Helmut *351*, *352*
Kopechne, Mary ***Jo*** *3*, *7*, *77*, *81*, *95*, *129*, *149*
Korea
    North *347*
South *132*, *155*, *275*, *316*, *320*, *347*
Kramer, A. Ludlow *152*, *166*, *185*
Kronholm, Eunice *228*, *235-37*
Krueger, James *113*

L

LAPD (Los Angeles Police Department) *84*, *85*, *94*, *102-05*, *152*, *155*, *156*, *158*, *164-67*, *173*, *178*, *188*, *192*, *207*, *208*, *212*, *216*, *218-25*, *232*, *234*, *244-59*, *272*, *279*, *308*, *311*, *318*
LaRouche, Lyndon *133*, *134*
Latin America *10*, *71*, *199*
Latter Day Saints (LDS) *340-43*
left-wing *128*, *134*
Lenin *56*, *166*
Lennon, John (John Ono) *13*, *95*, *273*, *287-93*, *307*
Lester, Larry *340*
Levine, Isaac Don *43*, *44*, *65*
Liberty Lobby *132*
liberal *8*, *16*, *38*, *70*, *129*, *137*, *222*, *348*
Liddy, G. Gordon *70*, *72*, *75*, *76*, *82-89*, *102*, *107*, *134*, *179*, *259*
Linkletter, Art *276*
Little, Russell *149*, *152*, *159*, *160*, *166*, *170*, *175*, *180*, *183*, *200*, *202*, *212*, *213*, *229*, *235*, *241*, *243*, *245*
Lockheed *128*, *307*, *331-34*
Love, Ann *318*
LSD *8*, *98*, *129*, *135*, *221*, *266*, *268-71*, *274*, *276*, *277*, *280-86*

M

MacArthur, Douglas *29*, *49*
Mafia, ***see also Mob***
Magnin, I. *5*, *14*
Maheu, Robert *9*, *34*, *134*, *304*
Malaxa, Nicolae *30-32*, *44*
Manson, Charles *2*, *8*, *13*, *211*, *240*, *241*, *253*, *259*, *280-83*, *299*

Manson Family *240*, *253*, *261*, *281*, *282*, *283*, *286*, *290*, *356*
Mao, Tse-tung *148*, *160*, *164*, *166*, *191*, *259*
Marighella, Carlos *169*, *199*, *202*
marijuana (pot) *95*, *211*, *274*, *275*, *311*
Marshall Space Flight Center *329*, *330*
martial law *76*, *82-93*, *101*, *109n19*, *148*, *198*, *275*, *296*
Marx, Karl *166*, *169*
Marxist (ism) *19*, *30*, *48*, *104*, *162*, *166*, *191*, *284*
Mayhew, Audrey *19*, *20*
McAuliffe, Christa *329*
McCarthy, Joe *29*, *36*, *37*, *49*, *64*, *319*, *323*, *324*
McCloy, John J. *25-27*, *35*, *37*, *41*, *44*, *46*, *50*, *65*, *339*, *352*, *356*
McCord, James *2*, *71-88*, *94*, *107-09*, *115*, *117*, *231*
McDonald, Larry *315-26*, *331*, *333*
McKernan, Rod (“Pig Pen”) *266*, *279*
McIntosh, Robbie *266*, *270*, *279*
Melody Mountain Ranch, Inc. *341*
Mengele, Joseph *350*, *351*
Meyer, Robert *2*, *81*
Middle East *46*, *47*, *74*, *78*, *79*, *132*, *136*, *139*, *259*, *304*, *320*, *349*
militant *60*, *156*, *164*, *165*, *186*, *218*
military-industrial *36*, *258*
Mills, William *112*
mind control *7*, *8*, *13*, *55*, *98*, *114*, *130*, *134*, *139*, *173*, *221*, *321-23*, *343*, *346*, *356*
Mineo, Sal *266*, *272*, *279*
Minimanual of the Urban Guerrilla *169*, *191*, *199-203*, *214*, *226*, *249*, *259*
minorities *94*, *98*, *105*, *120*, *137*, *138*, *147*, *169*
Minutemen *4*, *10*, *32*, *147*, *179*, *195*, *261*
Mitchell, John *3*, *77*, *81*, *86*, *87*, *100*, *105-108*, *113*, *117*, *179*, *206*, *229*, *231*, *255*
Mitchell, Martha *3*, *13*, *80*, *85-87*, *112*, *118*, *135*, *147*, *233*, *295*
“Mizmoon” ***(see Soltysik, Patricia)***
“mod squad” *149*, *152*, *161*, *163*
Moloxa, Nicholai *344*
monopoly (-ies) *26*, *60*, *125*, *138*, *218*, *332*
Monterey Pop *265-73*, *278*, *280*
Moon, Sun Myung (Reverend) *155*, *320*
“Moonies” (Unification Church) *320*
Moore, Jesse *331*, *335*
Moorer, Thomas (Admiral) *325*
Morlion, Father Felix *25*, *353*
Mormon Church *53*, *56*, *201*, *337*, *340-43*
Morris, Robert *37*, *39*, *45*, *49*
Morrison, Jim *9*, *13*, *266*, *278*, *279*, *293*
Morrison, Pamela *266*, *279*
Morton Thiokol, Inc. *329*, *335*
Mullen Associates *74*, *88*, *132*, *340*, *343*
Mullen, Herbert *259*, *290*
Murphy, Reg *228*, *232*, *235*, *236*, *244*, *259*
Muskie, Edmund S. (Senator) *16*, *74*, *81*, *98*, *101*

N

narcotics *72*, *78*, *94*, *95*, *127*, *134*, *137*, *141*, *152*, *153*, *161*, *163*, *178*, *182*, *183*, *274*, *275*, *303*, *304*, *307*, *308*, 311, *348*, *350*, *351*
NASA *91*, *92*, *95*, *165*, *185*, *192*, *222*, *272*, *322*, *327-36*, *343*
National Archives *1*, *60*, *72*, *107n6*
National Association of Evangelicals *341*, *343*
National Security Council *10*, *82*, *92*, *99*, *136*, *195*, *250*, *251*, *330*, *344*
Navy Bureau of Aeronautics *6*, *61*, *62*
Nazi *4-7*, *10*, *14*, *18*, *21-52*, *55-57*, *60-62*, *65*, *92*, *94*, *95*, *99*, *104*, *129*, *131*, *134*, *136*, *139*, *141*, *175*, *176*, *179*, *182*, *186*, *192*, *197*, *198*, *259*, *268*, *274*, *289*, *296*, *302-04*, *323*, *324*, *330-333*, *337-52*, *355-56*
Nazism *11*, *22*, *46*, *131*, *139*
neo-Nazi *4*, *5*, *133*, *134*, *283*
New York Times *118*, *129*, *137*, *158*, *193*, *297*, *333*, *334*, *335*, *347*, *350*
Newton, Huey *162*, *163*, *169*, *173*, *219*, *230*, *235*, *250*

Nixon, Richard Milhous 2, 3, 6, 7, 22, 25, 32-37, 44-50, 57, 59-67, 71, 74, 77-80, 83-86, 89-92, 98-110, 111-18, 119-20, 128, 129, 133-38, 155, 177, 194, 238, 253, 258, 282, 295-99, 301, 304, 317, 320, 325, 335, 337, 344, 349, 351, 356
Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal *(see also Torbitt Document)* 45, 109n28, 142
Novello, Don (Father Sarducci) 306
Nuremberg 24, 35, 96, 302, 350, 352

O

O-ring (Challenger shuttle) 328, 333
Ochs, Phil 266, 280
Octopus, The (see also Bunge Corporation) 47
Onassis, Aristotle 25, 26, 31, 56, 57, 196, 304
Ono, Yoko 95, 273
Operation Chaos 126, 265, 267, 282, 283, 290
Operation Condor 31
Operation Greif 31
Operation Sunrise 24, 25
Osborne, Albert (John Bowen, Bowen-Osborne) 40, 42-45, 82, 127
Oswald, Lee Harvey 2-9, 13-52, 56, 65, 71, 72, 82, 91, 115, 127, 133-35, 149, 167, 169, 174, 181, 190, 199, 214, 237, 241, 252, 254, 273, 284, 296, 298, 337-43, 355
Oswald, Marina 23, 35, 43-45, 48, 51, 65, 80, 115, 338, 340
OSS 24, 25, 33, 41, 46, 51, 55, 60, 61, 147, 256, 301, 302, 356

P

Paine, Michael 40, 41
Paine, Ruth 36, 40, 41, 48, 241
Palestine 24, 325
Papandreou, Andreas 3
paranoia, paranoid 1, 131, 307, 355
Parkland Hospital 4, 254, 340
Parsons, Gram 266, 279, 280, 281
patsy (-ies) 4, 36, 95, 127, 129, 133, 152,167, 181, 192, 219, 241, 247, 251, 253, 256, 289, 290, 298
Paul, Jay 318
Peking House 154, 160, 166, 168, 171, 175, 191, 242
Pentagon 7, 27, 29, 35, 36, 51, 61, 92, 94, 98, 100, 129, 134, 136, 140-42, 145, 151, 271, 281, 287, 317, 319, 322, 325, 328-34, 338
Permindex 33, 34, 142
Peron, Evita 30, 45
Peron, Juan 32
Perron, Steve 266, 280
Perry, Hermann (H.L.) 32, 63, 344
Perry, Nancy Ling 149-52, 159-60, 167-71, 183, 189, 200, 204-05, 221-26, 239-42
Phoenix program 96, 100, 151, 152, 172, 176, 177, 231, 261, 290
P.I.N. (People In Need) food program 146, 165, 166, 185
Pink Floyd 276
Pinochet, Augusto 323-4
plumbers (Watergate) 3, 74, 75, 82, 83, 89, 92, 94, 97, 116, 259
police state 2, 6, 101, 190, 198, 251, 261
political murder 134, 347, 348
political prisoners 7, 87, 96, 101-06, 120, 177, 194
Politica 151, 152, 176, 281-83
Powers, Francis Gary 2, 13, 23, 44
Presley, Elvis 13, 307
Prinze, Freddy 9, 10
prison reform 168, 175, 183, 193, 228, 238, 242, 243
prison system 7-8, 101, 145, 154, 156, 162, 178, 183, 193-94, 226-27, 247, 251, 299
Pro Deo 25, 353
Procunier, Raymond 101, 233
Project Paperclip 6, 61, 139, 268, 330
Project Paperclip (book) 41, 330, 332
propaganda 30, 37, 48, 49, 61, 62, 70, 71, 95, 129-32, 137-39, 147, 149, 163, 192, 203, 231-33, 247
provocateur(s) 70, 74, 75, 80, 84, 87-89, 94, 97-108, 127, 143-46, 150, 156, 162, 164-67, 174, 177, 182, 190, 198, 199, 203, 206, 217, 218, 229, 234, 236, 244, 252-57, 261, 262, 275, 318, 328

public relations *35*, *88*, *107n6*, *150*, *192*, *212*, *229*, *232*, *238*, *262*, *340*, *343*

R

race war *148*, *169*, *179*, *181*, *182*, *194*,*195*, *261*
racism *5*, *78*, *136-37*, *147*, *178*, *251*, *269*
racist *62*, *133-37*, *169*, *182*, *195*, *229*, *245*, *256*, *257*, *283*
radical(s) *2*, *38*, *56*, *84*, *88-89*, *97-108*, *143-53*, *160-80*, *184*, *190*, *191*, *195-98*, *201*, *206*, *208*, *222*, *226-35*, *244-51*, *254-61*, *348*
Ray, James Earl *74*, *135*, *149*, *181*, *237*, *246*, *247*, *256*, *259*, *299*
Reagan, Ronald *24-27*, *32*, *37*, *78*, *94-96*, *103*, *109n35*, *134*, *140*, *141*, *166*, *173*, *193*, *258*, *287-88*, *301-02*, *315-19*, *327*, *329-35*, *335*, *349*, *351-53*, *356*
Redding, Otis *9*, *265*, *266*, *273*, *280*
Rees, John *318*, *324-25*
Louise *324*
Regan, Donald *329-30*
Reichstag *63*, *70*, *106n3*, *328*
Remiro, Joseph *149-53*, *160-64*, *167-69*, *172-75*, *178*, *183*, *185*, *191*, *200*, *204*, *212-14*, *221*, *235*, *236*, *239-43*, *250*, *253*
repression *16*, *17*, *66*, *70*, *84*, *94*, *97*, *100*, *145*, *163*, *183*, *196*
Republican(s) *18*, *63*, *74*, *79-81*, *83*, *84*, *88*, *97*, *99*, *128*, *131*, *166*, *179*, *185*, *195*, *275*, *330*, *344*
Republican Convention (1972) *2*, *106n3*, *179*, *261*
revolution *17*, *54*, *55*, *101*, *138*, *146*, *153*, *166*, *167*, *186*, *201*, *231*, *232*, *265*, *267*
revolutionary (-aries) *17*, *104*, *144*, *164*, *178*, *186*, *199*, *200*, *219*, *226*, *227*, *241*, *246*, *252*, *275*
Richards, Keith *265*, *277*
right-wing *30*, *49*, *99*, *128*, *138*, *147*, *179*, *184*, *190*, *195*, *198*, *201*, *217*, *225*, *235-36*, *244*, *259*, *317*
Riley Coffee Co. *340*, *343*
rock concert(s) *144*, *195*, *267*, *273-75*, *292*
rock group *267*, *271*, *275*, *277*
rock musician(s) *9*, *265*, *270*, *275*, *276*, *282*, *290-93*, *305*
Rockefeller, Nelson *13*, *57*, *99*, *104*, *116*, *133*, *307*, *311*, *349*
Rockefellers, the *10*, *133*, *140-41*
Rogers Commision *329*, *332*
Rogers, William *327*, *335*
Rolling Stones, the *265*, *273*, *277*, *281*, *283*
Roosevelt, Franklin D. *1*, *27*, *56*, *57*, *64*
Roselli, John *9*, *34*, *56*
Rothschilds, the *136*, *138*
Royal Dutch Shell *53*, *138*
Ruby, Jack (Rubenstein) *2-4*, *13*, *15*, *16*, *24*, *39*, *50*, *56*, *57*, *75*, *133*, *135*, *174*, *284*, *339*, *355*
Russell, Lou *108n17*, *117*
Russia *6*, *22*, *23*, *27*, *35*, *44*, *53-56*, *131*, *302*, *304*, *338*, *340*, *345*
Russian *21-24*, *28*, *29*, *33*, *40*, *41*, *44*, *51*, *53-56*, *65*, *135*, *198*, *315-20*, *337*
Ryan, Leo *351*

S

sabotage *23*, *26*, *57*, *70-106*, *120*, *333*, *337*, *347*
safe house *72*, *86*, *107n6*, *163*, *164*, *183*, *196*, *199-214*, *230*, *240*, *241*, *247*, *249*, *261*, *289*
Salazar, Ruben *2*, *81*
satellite(s) *132*, *321-22*, *328*, *331*, *334*, *343*, *344*
Saturday Night Live *307*, *312*
Saudi Arabia *244*, *259*
Schneiderman, Henry *270*, *275*
Secret Army Organization (SAO) *130*, *179*
Secret Service *72*, *75*, *82*, *84*, *89*, *108n17*, *112*, *115*, *190*, *342*, *349*
Shaw, Clay *31-34*, *42*, *45*, *115*, *135*
Sirhan Sirhan *13*, *99*, *128*, *135*, *149*, *192*, *199*, *229*, *237*, *251*, *259*, *279*, *299*
Skorzeny, Otto *30-32*, *44-46*
SLA (Symbionese Liberation Army) *3*, *134*, *135*, *143-62*, *296*, *346*
Smith, Evelyn *307-11*
Socialist *55*, *102*, *128*
Soledad Prison *6*, *105*, *157-59*, *165*, *170*, *174*, *175*, *177*, *180*, *200*, *227*, *235*, *237*, *244*, *245-48*
Soltysik, Patricia (“Mizmoon”) *161*, *170*, *248*
Soviet Union *21-23*, *51*, *60*, *62*, *108n11*, *172*, *315*, *316*, *320*, *324*, *326*, *337*, *352*
space shuttle ***(see Challenger)***

Spector, Arlen *338*
Speer, Albert *41*
spy ***(see espionage, intelligence)***
Standard Oil *26*, *53*, *54*, *136*, *138*
Star Wars (SDI) *328-34*
State Department *37*, *59*, *60*, *64*, *65*, *101*, *131*, *136*, *273*, *282*, *317*, *328*, *338*
Steiner, George and Larry *247*, *251*
Steiner, Robyn *149*, *152*, *158*, *160*, *165-66*, *171*, *175*, *180*, *186*, *219*, *236*, *242*, *245*
Sturgis, Frank *2*, *71*, *91*, *102*, *116*, *229*
suicide *36*, *95*, *107n8*, *108n17*, *112*, *117*, *150*, *224*, *232*, *261*, *266*, *269*, *272*, *278*, *280*, *332*, *337*, *340*
Sullivan, William *27*, *69*, *83*, *86*, *87*, *91*, *142*
Summa Company *131*, *134*
surveillance *10*, *17*, *23*, *81*, *95*, *97*, *100*, *107n6*, *176*, *177*, *252*, *273*, *337*, *345*
SWAT *10*, *144*, *145*, *150*, *188*, *192*, *198*, *209*, *212*, *219*, *224*, *225*, *233*, *262*, *345*, *346*
Swiss banks *30*, *57*, *142*, *343*

T

Tackwood, Louis *72*, *76*, *84*, *85*, *87*, *89*, *93*, *94*, *102-10*, *167*, *177*, *220*, *234*, *251*, *260*, *275*
Tate, Sharon *168*, *191*, *211*, *241*, *253*, *282-84*
Taub, William *25*, *108n17*
Teller, Edward (Dr.) *325-26*, *330-33*
terrorist *30*, *102*, *145*, *148-50*, *161*, *164*, *172*, *189*, *190*, *197-203*, *226*, *233*, *235*, *236*, *244*, *257*, *259*, *260*, *324-26*, *345-46*
Third Reich *22*, *62*, *259*, *324*
Thompson, Chris *152*, *158*, *160*, *167-71*, *186*, *219*, *251*
Tippit, Officer J.D. *15*, *91*, *134*
Tomassi, Joseph *116*
Torbitt Document *45*, *46*, *142*
treason *4*, *38*, *49*, *70*, *76-78*, *106*, *133*
Treason for My Daily Bread *45*, *46*
Truman, Harry (President) *36*, *64*, *344*

U

Ulasewicz, Tony *76-81*, *85*, *107n8*
U-2 *23*, *44*, *51*, *71*
UCLA (University of California Los Angeles) *95*, *96*, *148*, *165*, *173*, *192*, *222*, *247*, *270*, *278*
United Farm Workers *87*, *144*, *148*, *153*, *180*, *184*, *195*
uranium (uranium ore) *340-43*
U.S. Labor Party *133*
USSR *28*, *37*, *41*, *43*, *45*, *71*, *131*, *132*, *139*, *172*, *193*, *231*, *287*, *316*, *320-21*
Utah *341-43*
Utah Corporation *342*

V

Vacaville Medical Facility *149-58*, *165*, *169-71*, *173-75*, *178*, *180*, *194*, *205*, *221*, *222*, *231*, *234*, *237-38*, *241*, *246*, *248*
Vacaville Prison *8*, *257*, *346*
Vatican, the *24*, *25*, *30*, *36*, *303-04*, *347*
Venceremos *144*, *148*, *153*, *162*, *174*, *180*, *195*, *202-04*, *245*
Vietnam *16*, *35*, *79*, *96*, *100*, *101*, *141*, *150-52*, *155*, *163*, *168*, *172-73*, *176-78*, *199*, *230-31*, *249*, *250*, *261-62*, *273*, *280*, *282*, *284*, *290*, *299*, *303*, *348*
Vietnam Veterans Against the War *144*, *148*, *163*, *169*, *180*, *195*
Von Braun, Werner *41*, *92*, *330*, *343*
Voorhis, Jerry *6*, *32*, *36*, *64*

W

Walker, Gen. Edwin *38-52*
Wall Street *25*, *131*, *134*, *136-41*, *330*
Wallace, George *7*, *13*, *74*, *76*, *80-82*, *89*, *97*, *106n2*, *116*, *128-29*, *149*, *179*, *299*
Warren Commission *27*, *33*, *35*, *40-44*, *49-52*, *65*, *75*, *82*, *113*, *133*, *199*, *252*, *254*, *298-99*, *302*, *304*, *337-39*, *342*
Warren, Earl (Chairman, Chief Justice) *50*, *129*, *338*
Warren Report *4*, *20*, *43*, *44*, *50*, *74*, *169*, *252*, *273*, *298*, *338*
Watergate *2*, *3*, *7*, *25*, *37*, *50*, *57*, *69-110*, *111-18*, *120*, *126*, *129*, *132*, *135*, *138*, *145*, *162*, *198*, *229*, *231*, *236*, *253*, *255*, *259*, *270*, *271*, *282*, *288*, *290*, *295*, *298*, *318*, *320*, *322*, *355-56*
Watson, Charles *253*, *259*, *261*, *283*

Webster, James *112*
Wehrmacht *22*
Weidenbach, Adolf Charles ***(see Willoughby, Charles A.)***
Weisenthal, Saul *347*
Weissman, Bernard *4*, *37-39*, *133*
Westbrook, Colston (alias Big Daddy, Yajiuma) *8*, *149*, *152*, *156-59*, *163*, *166*, *169*, *171-75*, *177-78*, *182*, *186*, *197*, *202*, *219*, *227*, *230-31*, *234*, *242-46*, *251*, *255*, *346*
Western Goals Foundation *315-25*
Western Research (aka Research West) *318-19*
Wheeler, Thero *152*, *157-58*, *165*, *169-70*, *174*, *178*, *180*, *205-06*, *243-46*, *251*
White Russian *23*, *35*, *40*, *42*, *57*, *131*, *142*
Willoughby, Charles A. (Major General) *28-32*, *37*, *49*, *51*
wiretap (-pers, -ing) *37*, *78*, *81*, *97*, *99*, *100*, *106n4*, *146*, *177*, *326*
Wolfe, William (Willie) *152*, *159*, *160*, *166*, *169*, *171*, *172*, *174-75*, *179-82*, *189*, *200*, *202*, *204*, *212*, *223*, *225*, *226*, *230*, *234*, *241-42*, *255*
Wolff, Karl *24-25*
Woodstock (music festival) *9*, *273*
Woodstock typewriter *64-65*
World Bank *339*
World Watchers International *14*

X

X, Malcolm *7*, *8*, *12*, *14*, *105*, *129-33*, *150*, *164*, *166*, *257*

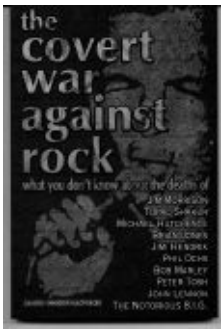
Y

YAF (Young Americans for Freedom) *36-45*, *49*, *57*, *99*, *109n27*, *131-33*
Younger, Evelle (Attorney General) *87*, *105*, *110n50*, *128*, *152*, *156-57*, *162*, *177*, *179*, *229*, *251*, *345-47*

Z

Zapruder, Abraham *9*
Zeligs, Meyer *65*

OTHER TITLES BY ALEX CONSTANTINE



The Covert War Against Rock

What you don't know about the deaths of Jim Morrison, Tupac Shakur, Michael Hutchence, Brian Jones, Jimi Hendrix, Phil Ochs, Bob Marley, Peter Tosh, John Lennon, the Nortorious B.I.G.

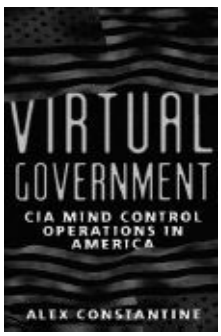
A provocative examination of how government, organized crime and the music industry intermingle.

$14.95 178 pages

Psychic Dictatorship in the U.S.A.

Alex Constantine's explosive book uncovers the terrifying extent of electromagnetic and biotelemetric mind control experimentation on involuntary human subjects in America today.

$12.95, 221 pages



Virtual Government: CIA Mind Control Operations in America

Alex Constantine connects the dots on such events as the integration of Nazis into the U.S. government,

CIA experiments on children and the mysteries of the McMartin case, the rise of Timothy McVeigh from robot to bomber, and the infestation of American media by intelligence operatives.

$14.95, 304 PAGES

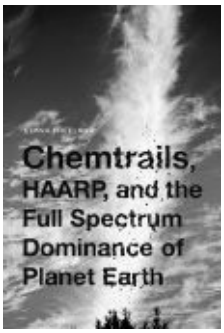
OTHER FERAL HOUSE TITLES

Caught in the Crossfire: Kerry Thornley, Oswald and the Garrison Investigation

By Adam Gorightly

The strange saga of Lee Harvey Oswald's Marine Corps pal, Kerry Thornley, and his connections to the JFK assassination conspiracy.

$18.95, 253 pages

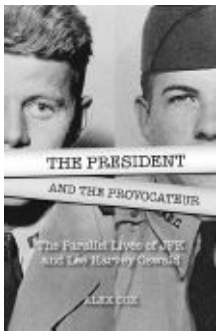


Chemtrails, HAARP, and the Full Spectrum Dominance of Planet Earth

By Elana Freeland

The skies look strange and different. Scientists are discovering heavy metals in the soil. Chemtrails tells us why.

$21.95, 272 pages



The President and the Provocateur: The Parallel Lives of JFK and Lee Harvey Oswald

By Alex Cox

Famous film Director Alex Cox, like most of the American and British public, does not buy into the moth-eaten establishment tale about the regicide. The President and the Provocateur is not the usual conspiracy volume, and is structured almost like the film Rashomon, including varying views of the story with different fonts and sizes.

$16.95, 316 pages

[FERALHOUSE.COM]

THE ENSLAVED QUEEN

A Memoir about Electricity and Mind Control

WENDY HOFFMAN

THE ENSLAVED QUEEN

A Memoir About Electricity and Mind Control

Wendy Hoffman

AEON

First published in 2014 by Karnac Books.

This new edition published in 2019 by
Aeon Books Ltd
12 New College Parade
Finchley Road
London NW3 5EP

Copyright © 2019 Wendy Hoffman

The right of Wendy Hoffman to be identified as the author of this work has been asserted in accordance with §§ 77 and 78 of the Copyright Design and Patents Act 1988.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

British Library Cataloguing in Publication Data A C.I.P. for this book is available from the British Library ISBN-13: 978-1-91159-783-4

Typeset by Medlar Publishing Solutions Pvt Ltd, India
Printed in Great Britain www.aeonbooks.co.uk

To the living children whose lives were twisted and thwarted
and who were forced to do things
that no child could do without being split into many pieces
and in memory of the dead children
and for those struggling to know who they are

PART I

THE SPLIT MIND

ONE

The sell-off

If you have a single, undivided mind, it must be difficult to fathom how people could walk around with splits in their mind; how one part of the mind could take over and all the other parts would know nothing of it; how one part of the split mind could make the body do something that none of the other parts would want or remember.

I had already had mountains of therapy and thought I was finished with my memories of my childhood and adulthood as a victim of mind control and ritual abuse in a multigenerational family, and the obliteration of my memory by criminal groups. Traumatic remembrances still dribbled out, but my concept of myself held a steady course like a vessel sailing through a fogged night.

I had long suspected that my sister and I did not have the same biological parents. Perhaps we had the same father but not the same mother, I thought. We don't look alike but there is something familiar about us. Marlene is stunning with her long straight hair and I'm not. But we have the same overly narrow wrists, one of our eyebrows is almost identical, and we share the same inherited talents and interests. And now that we have aged, we look even more alike. I ignored all that and thought we were too different as people to be full sisters, though I knew this disparity to be common. How could one sister be interested in the recovery of memory and being, and the other adverse?

A couple of years ago, Marlene visited her married son in a nearby state with her new boyfriend. They slept over at her son's house. I was invited for the afternoon. I went into their guest bathroom and saw my sister's hairbrush filled with her luscious long hair like a bird's ambitious nest on the sink. With my fingers I combed most of it out and placed it in a plastic bag I happened to have in my purse. I left enough hair in her brush that Marlene wouldn't become suspicious. None of this was premeditated. Once I got back to my home in Baltimore, I called laboratories that specialized in

DNA testing. I mailed it and a sample of my saliva to a lab. The DNA report said we were full sisters with the same parents. I was shocked. I had been so sure. I started doubting all my memories.

Meanwhile a towel fell off my shower door onto my right little finger and tore a tendon. I went to a hand specialist. While I was in his office, I said, “Would you look at my left little finger and tell me what made it like that?” My mother had told me I was born with a deformed left little finger. There was no reason for me not to believe her, but I didn't. The doctor examined the tip and said in an instant with certainty, “It's an amputation that happened before you were three. How did it happen?” During the years of therapy I received, I had already remembered my paternal grandfather's chicken farm in upper state New York and the initiation ritual with me wearing a white ruffled dress, a hatchet coming down not to my neck but to this finger. The hatchet aimed at my neck swerved at the last moment. I was under three years old. I didn't tell the doctor. He said, “You probably caught it in a door by accident.”

“It was no accident,” I mumbled as he hurried to another patient. So I was wrong about my sibling but right about the initiation ritual.

Starting over

Over a decade before this, I had finished ten years of intense therapy, and now I was in another crisis. Confusion makes people desperate, and there weren't many people I could talk to about memories of mind control. I contacted a therapist and writer friend from the past, E. Sue Blume. She is a specialist in dissociative memories. I told her I doubted myself. E. Sue said that while I had been retired from this field, others had been galloping along. She greatly respected Alison Miller's safe and competent, innovative work. She arranged for me to talk with Alison on the phone.

It was as if a voice without a face fell from the skies. I wanted to know whether all my mind control programs had been removed by my previous therapist, Ann, or whether any were still active. During the phone evaluation, Alison asked me what my internal structure was, who my gatekeeper was, whether I had memories of snuff films. “Snuff films!” I was getting more and more overwhelmed, dismayed, and frustrated. Wasn't the abuse I remembered bad enough? I kept saying, “No,” and “I don't know”. She asked whether I was in touch with my family. I said I was.

Alison explained to me about safety precautions. She was especially concerned that I not report what was going on in me to anyone in my family or who could potentially be involved with the abuser group.

Alison told me that my programs were still active. How could this be? I'd had so many memories, and so many years of therapy. She said I didn't know the fundamental and important things I should have discovered. My brain galloped within. Underneath, some people in me panicked, and others had headaches, as if a vise were around my skull. I hadn't yet recognized that feeling as a body memory. Every one of my nerves was in anxious distress. The voice over the phone implied that all the recovery work I had done for decades was for naught. That work had been my life. Despair mixed with fear. A chorus of internal, indistinguishable, indistinct voices sung out to me, “We are here. They will kill us. Don't tell.” I had body memories of electroshock. Fear, hope, despair, worry whirled around uncontrollably. I was filled with too much unrest to sleep.

Right there, my world changed. The queens in me slipped out wearing their crowns and ice blue fur-trimmed capes. They sniffed. They smelled hope. Was there really someone in the world to help? They watched and quickened in expectation. Word went up and down the ladders in my system. This exploration into retrieving my frozen-over soul began. In therapy a decade before, Ann, my Christian therapist who was also a plant, had taught me that forces in the universe harassed me, and that when I became anxious and depressed and had “visions” of abuse, it was from spiritual warfare, from Satan and his forces making me uneasy. A plant is someone who pretends to help you but really works for one of the mind-controlling groups. “They are all parts of you; they are not spiritual forces from outside of you. So you need to listen to them, not banish them,” Alison said. I grappled with what was outside of me and what was within. Neither one of us initially suspected that Ann was a plant from the abusers. But one day I described the hand signals Ann used during my sessions with her. Alison knew what that meant. Ann was busted, which meant my process was just beginning.

Alison continued to provide long-distance guidance. One day about half a year later, she wrote that she cared about me. Did I want to start this process again, did I want to spend myself finding out what my past is? No, then yes. I do. No. I had held my life intact. I had a simple, comfortable enough house, a job. I could save a little for retirement. I didn't need to open the

whole thing again. I didn't need to talk to another of these therapists. Alison was on the other side of the continent and in another country. No. I went to sleep, if what I do can be called sleep. I woke up. I would re-open. I could take out stitches that my skin had grown over. I would begin again.

A therapist who is a good person is an antidote to the people filled with hatred, the people who abused me. It is easy for the tortured to believe that all people are harmful, so it is especially important to be in touch with genuine, wholesome humans. Previously, I had been alone in this world of horror. Now I had an interested companion as I re-entered it. Support also contradicted my low self-esteem. If someone is helping me, I must be somewhat worthwhile, I thought. Alison's targeted questions kept me on track. She spotted the blanks in the narrative, what Ann had deliberately taken out. She probed for the training memories, the first instances of them, pointed out any incongruities and inconsistencies in my story, and reached out to my insiders who held the emotional and physical pain of each memory. She would also ask, “What words did they say?” I might have missed much of this if I were just working on my own.

A life lurked behind and underneath my brain, a life I didn't know about yet but could smell. How could I have spent so many years in therapy and know hardly anything about myself? Now I know it is because I went to therapists who were plants.

If you think the world is pure and innocent and that almost all of our political leaders mean well, then you may not believe what I am about to write. Some of the public has to be interested in the below-the-surface webs of duplicity, why a stench of evil permeates ordinary life.

This story is really about electricity.

The Nazi purchase, 1947

In my normal life, I thought I was a regular Jewish child from Queens, New York, far away from the East European world my grandparents came from and far away from Hitler, about whom I had heard only the vaguest things. I was not face to face with the horrors of the Holocaust, and my family never talked about their escape from Europe.

I think the letters began around when I was born in 1943, but I of course didn't know about them until later.

The memory of the letters came to me in a dream. I saw the stationery, insignia, signature. At first, I couldn't believe that our government was that corrupt. I remembered Mengele's smell in my conscious life, and the black machines, and all the children in the hallways, and the frozen eyes.

A letter arrived which caused great excitement, and Mrs. Twartski called for a special meeting that took place in our living room. Mrs. Twartski was my handler. A handler, also called a trainer, is the person who controls you and makes you do things you never would choose to do. Handlers start by breaking a child's mind into pieces and in cults like these, try to control the mind for the person's whole life. They administer programs and their cues or triggers as they take over a life. All the leaders of our community were present. Children did not attend this family meeting, but we were excellent eavesdroppers.

Uncle Harry and Mrs. Twartski sat on one of Mother's curved sofas. Uncles Richard and Sidney sat on the other sofa. My mother sat on the piano bench by the window that overlooked the waterfall. She wasn't supposed to be at this meeting but since it was her apartment, they let her stay. Maybe that's why she chose the worst seat and was trying to be inconspicuous. Usually she liked a lot of attention. My father was in his wing chair and Wiezenslowski sat in Mother's wing chair. He was very short and always wore a mask. People said he was the master programmer who knew the most. In mind control, programmers divide victims' brains into sections, one section not knowing about another, with each section blindly following commands that are to that person's detriment. Mother had taken the pale blue slipcovers off the wing chairs for this occasion, and their chartreuse silk looked clean and shiny.

Aunts Mimi and Eileen led my sister and me into the kitchen. Grandma and Aunt Bea were there already. We all listened through the walls. Mrs. Twartski read:

> *The great country of Deutschland is delighted to accept your invitation to have our revered Herr Doktor Josef Mengele visit your United States of America and instruct selected communities on the current state of our advanced knowledge of mental development, stimulation and management.*
>
> *Our officials will be in contact with you concerning schedule and reimbursement.*
>
> *Very truly yours, Felix Hofstadtler, Assistant to the Secretary of the Interior*
>
> *October 17, 1947*

This meeting was a big happening in our family and there was a rosier excitement than when they talked politics. I was aware letters were arriving from Germany shortly after Daniel died. Daniel was the boy who loved me and whom they killed. My father kept some of the letters in his safe in his hall closet. He was the lawyer for our group and had been corresponding for years. Germany first wrote to President Roosevelt, then President Roosevelt and Mr. Truman, then President Truman. This letter came after the war had ended. Which part of the German government, undercover government or group impersonating a government, had sent the letters is unknown to me. I might be wrong about the date and the spelling of the name. In their ordinary lives, my Jewish family hated the Germans but in their cult-robot lives, they cooperated with the Nazis. And also their own American government. The United States government was the conduit to Mengele and his entourage. The United States wanted to learn the Nazi mind-control programming techniques and not be left behind. What better weapon than the human brain? The human brain was Mrs. Twartski's and Wiezenslowski's domain. The children who were used were the castaways of the United States government, like dogs abandoned in a vet's office. Mrs. Twartski read the letter out loud, slowly and carefully enunciating every word in her thick Polish accent.

The German research scientists were looking for children who could learn quickly, were between ages four and twelve, and could withstand being famished without dying. Deutschland was paying $50,000 per subject. Everyone in the living room except Mrs. Twartski and all my aunts let out a huge “Ahhh”. My sister's and my eyes grew wide because we had no idea what this meant or why the adults were so excited. Then my sister's eyes narrowed as if she knew something that I didn't yet, as if she had just figured something out. She was very smart even though she got bad grades in school.

Mrs. Twartski continued: “Every selected community that receives this letter via the United States government should nominate two children to begin with. The great Herr Doktor Josef Mengele will visit New York, Boston, Philadelphia, St. Paul, Duluth and other Midwestern cities, Dallas, San Francisco, and Los Angeles next month.”

UNCLE HARRY: “It's like magic. They do things and don't remember they did it!”

MRS. TWARTSKI: “How is that different from what we already are doing?”

UNCLE RICHARD: “They're refined techniques, much more advanced than our methods. The Germans know.”

MOTHER: “But what about the children?”

UNCLE HARRY: “They won't remember anything. Children never remember.”

UNCLE RICHARD: “It will be like it never happened.”

WIEZENSLOWSKI: “That's why the government brings Nazis over here, so they can learn from them, so that we know how to manipulate people's minds better.”

MRS. TWARTSKI: “We are already expert on manipulating people's minds.”

Purplish crows outside the windows screeched harrowing cries. It must have been late autumn by the time this letter reached us.

Mrs. Twartski said, “We have decided that Marlene and Wendy Hoffman will be the first subjects. If Dr. Mengele requests other children in the months to come, then Rhonda Jacobs and Sheila Goldman will be the next set, and Michael Jacobs and DeeDee Goldman will be after them.”

“Well, children, now that it's settled, I'll be leaving,” Wiezenslowski said.

“Aren't you going to stay and eat anything?” Grandma said.

“No, I have business to attend to.”

A short time later, my grandfather with his mean beady eyes entered wearing the same kind of coat and shoes as Wiezenslowski, but I didn't think much of it then.

In the kitchen, my Aunt Eileen and Aunt Mimi stared at each other. “Why my children and not yours?” Eileen said. Marlene and I looked at each other. Her features blurred and she breathed sharply. At first, I felt proud. It's always good to be chosen. It was an honor. The letter said so. Although I didn't know what it meant. And why was Aunt Eileen unhappy and angry at Aunt Mimi? Aunt Mimi's children were under four; one was just a baby. But I would be with Marlene. I wouldn't be alone.

My father came into the narrow, pink and green kitchen. His face was glowing. “You can join us now,” he said. He was so wrapped in radiance, he forgot to suspect that we were eavesdropping. We all walked into the living room. The letter with its thick veined paper and insignia lay on the table with its envelope next to it. The gold insignia looked like a sunburst with

ripples. Children in my class drew suns that looked like the insignia. Fancy stamps were on the envelope.

“Can I show it to my friends?” I asked.

“No,” everyone screamed. “Bad child!” All the adults sipped ginger ale and ate cocktail franks, chunks of Daitch's Swiss and muenster cheeses and a wheel of gouda cheese wrapped in shiny red plastic the color of the women's nail polish, different kinds of crackers, pineapple chunks that my father had cut up, herring. Uncle Harry and my father had shots of hard liquor. Uncle Harry slapped my father on the back and said, “You're rich.”

It was a big party, filling all the living room and dining room space. People were gathered around Mrs. Twartski, the star of this community. My grandfather also liked being near Mrs. Twartski. He kept bringing her platters of cakes and cookies that Grandmother baked that morning, and smiling his crooked smile and pushing his body a little closer to hers. Grandma glared at her, which didn't stop Grandpa Max. Mrs. Twartski preferred the cheese and crackers.

After everyone left, my parents cleaned up the living room, dining room, kitchen, and bathroom. My mother was angry that someone hadn't used a coaster and had left a ring on the side table in the living room. Marlene would not tell me what the experiments meant, and I sensed it all meant something terrible for Marlene and me. Mother kept banging dishes and seemed angrier and angrier even as my father appeared more and more pleased. My heart was becoming a rope that left my body and twisted itself tight. Around midnight, my sister and I got into her bed together and listened to our mother's ripping screams and deep moans coming from across the apartment. It sounded like something coming from the depths of the forest where Bambi's mother was shot. Marlene and I clasped each other's hands. Around two o'clock in the morning, we heard the front door slam. With our father out of the house, we were able to sleep. I didn't know when he came back, but when we woke he was in his bed.

Mengele in America

A month after my family's meeting, Mengele entered our living room. It is generally thought that Mengele fled to South America after the war and remained there for the rest of his life. He may have used South America as a home base, but during that time he traveled around the world

experimenting on victims and informing and teaching other countries about his mind-control discoveries, which the United States wanted to learn.[1] Mengele's face was lined and often had beads of sweat on it. He was like a dead, thinner version of my father. His piercing eyes devoured you in a cannibalistic way. Only my parents were present, and Marlene and I were expelled to the kitchen. Marlene held a glass to the wall and listened through it. She said I shouldn't because I might drop it and then our parents would know that we were eavesdropping.

“Then we'll have to do double experiments on her and it may be too much for one girl. I don't want to have my experiments ruined or falsified,” Mengele said.

My heart stopped throbbing and calcified in my stone body. I ceased being a breathing person. I knew what this meant, that Mother had got Marlene out of it and put the whole thing on me. Marlene looked relieved. She let the breath out of her body and her face spread out. I would be alone there. My father was talking to Mengele in that oily way of his. I couldn't decipher their words, something about payment. After he left, no one talked about it.

A season passed and it was cool outside. Mengele was in the foyer of our apartment. He wore a blue overcoat. The man with him wore a cap and ran in and out of our apartment to the driver outside in the parked limousine. My sister wore old clothes. I was dressed up and scrubbed. Mengele glanced at the portrait of my sister in an off-the-shoulder white blouse with braids piled on her head. She looked like a Greek goddess. I could see Mother killing herself for not having removed the portrait. They never hung a portrait of me.

“I want to see her naked,” Mengele said pointing to Marlene. She froze and shook. My mother flung her body in front of Marlene's and said, “You can't have her. I love her, my daughter.”

My father said, “Take the younger one. She's smarter,” as he pushed me forward.

Marlene cried because our father said I was smarter even though he was just trying to manipulate Mengele. The doctor's chest grew large.

“All right, we'll take her. She'll be back on Sunday or Monday, depending,” Mengele said. It was Thursday. He slipped a check on the dining room table in the foyer. It was a pale blue check that contrasted with the dark wood. Morris S. Hoffman, the date and the dollar amount were

written in faint, careful script. “Mengele” was in thick black curving lines. I could read everything but the amount, which had many zeroes.

Mengele slipped his rough arm under mine and dragged me to the front door. The top of my oxfords scraped against the pale gray carpet. My mother pulled out a small suitcase the size of a briefcase that she had packed for me the day before and hidden in my father's hall closet by the entrance. I was too afraid to cry. My body was stiff, dragging and not moving on its own. My clothes seemed to follow me. Betrayal is a more subtle, twisted feeling than terror. It burns and eats, but terror stabs right through.

“She won't need anything,” Mengele said, pushing my mother and the suitcase away and pulling me through the front door, up the three steps, out the side entrance and into the parked limousine. Mengele got into the back seat with me. Two men were in the front. It was 1947. My sister was almost nine. I was four and a half. The car doors locked.

The limousine drove up 68th Road, turned right at 108th Street. Before we reached Enterprise Avenue, Mengele whipped out his white handkerchief and pressed it against my nose. I fell unconscious. It was past midnight anyway and I was usually asleep by eight o'clock. Even in this heavily drugged sleep, I felt my body spasm and saw iron cages opening and closing.

When I awoke, I was at the Montauk Point Programming Center on Long Island. I had been here before under Mrs. Twartski's care. The Center was part Bauhaus sleek and clean, and part dungeon filled with children. The building looked white, and had an outside overhang where cars dropped people off. Water, the Long Island Sound, and towers with machines on top were outside too. The machines were spinning like windmills. The inside had a central open staircase and programming rooms upstairs and in the basement levels. I was probably in the group of American children Mengele first experimented on. Construction in the basement had not been completed. I don't know why I thought there would be an adjustment period. Attendants strapped me to a stretcher and wheeled me roughly into an inner room. At this Center, there wasn't morning, afternoon, and night. It was twenty-four hours with no sleeping and no eating. Mengele only worked on hungry subjects, like a dog trainer. I heard the staff ate in the cafeteria. We wore only the oversized helmets that shot electricity into our

brains, and electrodes all over our bodies. The staff kept us in a drugged state from injections into our bodies and scalps.

Terror is so sharp, you wouldn't believe it could be turned up a notch. When it reaches its crescendo, it transforms into a watchful passivity. The insides are running while the outside is both immobile and levitating. The heart is breaking out of the body while the bones and skin invert.

Our government built the Montauk Point Programming Center for experimentation in mind control. Mengele was a guest there. The workers, including Mrs. Twartski, bowed down to him as if he were a god. Mengele thought of himself as God. These groups' first concern is that none of their victims spill the beans. Mengele adapted his mind-control techniques for America and probably other countries. Children like to talk about what happens to them. Some of Mengele's first experiments were to trick us into believing we would self-destruct if we told. He wanted young children as subjects because young children readily believe lies and their minds are still malleable. I believed almost all the lies they told me.

The mental surgeries took place in the basement chambers. I had already been drugged, my wrists and ankles were clamped, a huge helmet with wires was on my head and electrodes were on my body. Mengele said, “Mrs. Twartski, please notate that these are experiments twelve to twenty-four,” as he pushed a long needle into the nerve of the first tooth.

“We are doing a new kind of surgery. It is experimental. We are implanting cameras in you. They are tracking devices. They will follow you forever and record everything you do, everyone you talk to and whatever you say. With these cameras, you will never be free of us. You will never be able to escape. You will always be our prisoner. Only very special people get to be our prisoners. These are the first ten to twenty cameras, telescopes, tape recorders, and other devices that we are sealing in your top row of teeth.”

Another day or night in a basement room at Montauk Point, Mengele put a knife on my chest, and told me he was taking out my human heart and inserting a bomb instead. The cut felt like a ragged line.

“If you ever try and turn away from us, it will explode and you will blow yourself up and the people around you. It knows your thoughts and moves. It is in you now and will be in you forever.

“Close it up now, Mrs. Twartski. Seal her chest back. Now we are making the hideous scar invisible only because we are being kind to you.

We leave it showing for some girls and boys," Mengele said as he administered intermittent jolts of electricity. Mrs. Twartski put a black glue, then a black tape on the pretend scar, then peeled the whole thing off. The child parts of my brain that Mengele addressed believed there was a bomb instead of a heart in my body.

Also while in the lower levels of Montauk Point, Mengele said, "I am taking out your womb and putting in a cow's womb. I've done this hundreds, thousands of times in the camps. You will only give birth to animals from now on."

I spent my childhood looking down at my chest to see if it was growing. I prayed and prayed that it would not grow. I could never understand why I had this fear until the girl entrapped in the Mengele section of my mind's internal structure said, "I don't want to give birth to an animal or to a half person and half animal. If I have breasts, I could get pregnant."

"We have a nice little girl, let's slice her in half and I can have half and you can have half. Which half do you want, vanilla or chocolate?" I felt my fear rising even though I realized he was trying to make me afraid. I thought of the half chocolate and half vanilla cookies my grandmother brought from the bakery on Paradise Boulevard.

Mrs. Twartski answered, "Vanilla." I was surprised. I thought she liked chocolate.

Mengele said, "I'll get my saw. We'll put this vise on her head to hold her still. Tell me when her brains come out, then I'll know I squeezed too tight." That started my terror despite myself. I could feel worry becoming a mountain with ice on top.

Mengele said "You're going to go to a dentist who'll put very sharp needles all the way down your throat. You have that to look forward to too." Then they spun me, saying "Who wants to remember what's going to happen to her?" They were trying to bring out an internal part that would always do what they commanded.

MENGELE: "It should be a boy and not a girl."

MRS. TWARTSKI: "Why?"

MENGELE: "They're more controllable."

I liked to spite Mengele even more than I liked to rebel against Wiezenslowski, the other big shot. I felt my inside people think, if he wants a boy, a girl will come out. That was the only way I could think of to fight back.

I said, “I'll remember and I'm a girl.”

Once a part of the mind comes out to accept a task, it's too much trouble for the mind controllers to put that part back in and coax out a more suitable part. This part's name was Annie and she had a Raggedy Anne doll look. Mengele was angry that I popped out. “Maybe I should whip you.”

Mrs. Twartki said, “Let's get on with it.” Mengele wore a devil costume with a tail. Mrs. Twartski wore her floral dress. She was heavy and square looking like both my grandmas. He went right up to my face and roared and scared me. That made me want to fight him harder. He was like an eight-year-old and I was four.

“Let's take her and flush her down the toilet,” he said.

My head was way too big to flush down the toilet. It was silly. He raged at me. “We're going to throw you in the ocean. You deserve to feed the fish. We'll take you to the top of the tower and throw you out the window. Whenever you see a shadow or a Negro man, you'll be afraid, you'll even scream. Whenever you see a Japanese man, you'll be afraid he'll cut you with a sword. Whenever you hear a bell, you'll be afraid I'm going to come and get you. And if you don't get afraid, then know I will take this knife and cut all the way from your chin down the center of your body and Mrs. Twartski will scoop out your insides. So it's better to be afraid, if you want some advice.”

He threw me onto a cot. “I'm getting bored.”

Mrs. Twartski said “Me too.”

“We'll come back later.” They didn't come back that day.

The information about all these “experiments” was held in different sections of my brain. When all the distinct parts come together, the memory can crystallize. All divisions need an internal leader to control them when the outside cult leaders are not present. The mind controllers torture the body with spinning, alcohol, drugs, and electroshock until one aspect of the mind steps forward only to spare the others and stop the torture. Usually there were many failed attempts and then a part of me relented. For the internal leader of this section, they ended up with a seven-year-old girl who was alternately raped and strangled while relatives chanted, fusing the

names “Mengele” and “Wendela.” This girl then thought of herself as an internal replica of Mengele, who kept the other parts obedient. The parts that jump out to do this dirty work are the real heroes because they save the others.

Mrs. Twartski gave Mengele the “black book” on me. Cult handlers record everything that happens from conception to death in the black book. She recorded all the mind-control procedures that were used to separate my mind into sections with purposes. All the victims have a black book on them. Mrs. Twartski hand wrote her entries, but now the black books are computerized. The German scientists would know how to go right into my already created parts, chambers, and structures. They would know how to build from my foundation. People call this mind control Nazi programming. Until Mengele, I had dealt only with my parents and handlers. All of them had a drop of compassion in them, except for Wiezenslowski. They probably had programming in them to force them to control children and believed something worse would happen if they didn't. My parents and handlers flickered in and out of evil, but Mengele stayed consistent.

In that moment, I could have signed up for evil to make my life easier, the way my relatives had, but something in me recoiled sharply. I made a vow and all the morality in me shot out like a missile. From the many parts of my brain that took the Mengele hit, this seven-year-old girl, the internal leader older than my biological age, became the most ethical. I thought hard about whether there could be a God. Mengele's world was sticky and cloying, dense with meanness. There was no God there and no space that I perceived where God could even creep in. In the other world, there was often something of comfort, like eating chocolate pudding with no drugs in it; like my friend's eyes which I remembered clearly even though he had already been dead for over a year; like the breeze, the slope of the hills, when the sunshine leaned on me; like when I could learn something in school; like cantaloupes and honeydews. These might be what other people call God. When you go deeply into the jaws of evil, you have to go one way or another. When you take something to a total extreme, it turns into something else.

My father drove me to Montauk Point many times. He stood by the driver's side of the car while the attendants took me to Mengele's programming chamber. Sometimes a sign said “Advanced Programming” or “Special Programming”. I was a rat in a maze. My betrayer went home to

my other betrayers. I hoped they would all suffer an agonizing death, that my sister would have a plague of pimples, my mother's mink coat would get wet, my father would have his pocket picked.

I felt only the knock and throb of terror. Later when I relaxed a smidgen, a tidal wave of worry flooded me. The betrayal gnawed me to pieces. So many children here were like the children behind barbed wire I had seen in photographs, children from different countries, child faces frozen into those of the aged. Some of the faces I recognized: my cousins, neighbors whose eyes had become hollow. Hopeless faces that knew drudgery and every kind of pain. Children of parents who were not parents. We had all steeled ourselves. We all wanted to die. It was not so easy to die but he did kill some of us. Closed doors covered many child-screams. The walls were ice. Ice formed around my bones.

Mengele wore a white shirt and black pants. Mrs. Twartski was at the side of the room watching and studying and wore a dress and thick medium heeled shoes like my mother's. With a vise squeezing my head, I was naked, strapped in a chair, when he injected my arm and I had to drink something like orange juice. He plugged all my orifices during these mental surgeries. Everything got blurry as I watched Mengele reading from my black book and the document my father had prepared which told him crucial things about my programming, history, and general personality. Mrs. Twartski also coached him and kept handing him slips of paper. “This is an experiment to see if we can separate and store emotions,” Mengele said into a microphone. He pointed out the window to a line of nine tall towers and told me each emotion had to become discrete and go in a specific tower. He considered this experiment one of his best innovations. I knew some of the towers he showed me were an optical illusion, because a bird on them looked painted and because I was used to my handlers using pictures to fool me. A pile of records played on a phonograph.

“Didn't your mother just keep your sister home and not you!” he said. When my feelings came out, he directed them to a tower that he identified by number, Tower Number One, hatred of my mother.

“Your mother doesn't love you because you have dark skin. Hitler would have exterminated you for your dark skin alone. I'm going to make your skin dark.” He had a pail of someone's shit (probably his own) and put on rubber gloves and rubbed it all over me. He put shit through my hair.

“You will never be able to rid yourself of the smell. Now put your shame in Tower Number Three. You're having trouble finding shame. Let me tighten what's around your head to help you.” I squeezed out some shame and hopelessness to the tower though I thought he was the one who should be ashamed, but I'd do anything to get him away from me.

“They use your hands to do the sacrifices, don't they?” Mrs. Twartski nodded her head. Now I knew what was on the slips of paper she handed him. I remembered my friend's mother telling me that it wasn't my fault, that they were just using my hands and I couldn't do anything about it. “That makes it your fault. Why does it have to be your hands that kill? They never use your sister's hands. Put your guilt in Tower Number Four. We will keep it there for you and you won't have to suffer so. Let me tighten your headband to help you.

“Your father tells me that some days you can't get out of bed and you can't eat. You're sad because your friend is dead and you have no other friend. Put your sadness in the depression tower. We will tell you when you have to kill yourself. We decide that, not you.

“You're lonely since your friend died. Maybe he didn't love you anyway.” I knew he did. Mrs. Twartski cleared her throat. “Maybe he didn't like you.” Mrs. Twartski made a noise. She talked to him in secret. I knew some of the things he said were untrue. For example, I knew that they did sometimes use my sister's hands to kill. All the children are used at one time or another. Mrs. Twartski didn't like it when programming held obvious lies which interfered with the potency of the programming. I could see that Mrs. Twartski was much better at this than him. The drugs took away some of my will. I felt sick but then realized it was the emotions from the towers. The towers had a life of their own. They moved inside me. He said to imagine a little rowboat going from a tower to the mainland and back and forth. My body was the mainland.

Mengele got angrier at the little boys than at the girls. He roared, and his white shirt became wet under his arms. He screwed a sharp claw onto his baton and pushed it into a little naked boy's chest. “That's not enough anger,” he roared. “How are you going to kill?” he screamed. The little boy was supposed to be experiencing the feeling of Tower Number Six for assassins. Mengele became more agitated and erratic. Mrs. Twartski touched his arm and said “Maybe that's enough for today.” He screamed “How dare you touch me!” and sobbed.

His towers were Number One, Hatred of Mother; Number Two, Anxiety; Number Three, Hopelessness; Number Four, Depression; Number Five, Oblivion; Number Six, Assassins; Number Seven, Anger; Number Eight, Physical Pain; and Number Nine, Terror. The prostitutes he trained came from Tower Number Eight, and the spies from Tower Number Five.

If we learned the hand signals for the towers and memorized them for all time, then we could eat something. Mengele was careful to time the offer before the beginning of starvation, when we would no longer want to eat.

The attendants took us away at five in the morning. The maids cleaned me up and gave me a bowl of Rice Krispies with regular milk. They bathed us and dressed us in our original clothes—for me it was a dress and oxfords. The attendant walked me out to my father's car at six thirty in the morning. Father wore his usual coat and hat and had placed a pillow and blanket in the back seat. Mother had cut up raw vegetables for me to eat on the way home, but my father stopped in a restaurant and brought me a vanilla malted, chips, and a hamburger. “Don't tell your mother,” he said. She didn't like us to eat that kind of greasy food. In our ordinary life, Mother gave us Walker Gordon non-homogenized milk, baked bread, and didn't allow us to eat junk food. I ate a little of the hamburger and fell asleep in the front seat. I couldn't get rid of the headache or the smell of shit on me.

Why Americans thought they could trust the Nazis is curious. Mengele reneged on part of the deal to show Americans what he knew about mind control and wouldn't let Mrs. Twartski into some of the Montauk Point programming rooms or even her own programming classroom in Pleasant Hills. At least sixty-one of the two hundred fifty-six experiments Mengele performed on me were about suicide. Mrs. Twartski did not know that Mengele would try to make Jewish children kill themselves.

The bridges

“Jews are polluting the universe and you are one of them. Jewish girls are not allowed to have babies to further pollute the world,” Mengele preached at a subsequent time at Montauk Point.

I was tied to a large black chair. Mengele used the oldfashioned hypnosis method of moving a gold watch on a chain back and forth, the same way Mrs. Twartski and my Hungarian grandfather did. A large helmet was on

my head. Electrodes were all over my naked child's body. How can I still be alive after so much electricity?

“You remember your friend,” Mengele said. He showed a film of this boy, his face, him riding a bicycle, him walking his bicycle down the bicycle ramp in our building. I cried. I was naked, sleep deprived, and hungry. Before I left that night, Mother had not let me have dinner. My father had slipped me some oatmeal cookies.

“You remember how sad you felt when he died. The entire Jewish people have to be exterminated. They are polluting the universe and you are one of them.

“Now I will show you pictures of the bridges you will have to jump off to improve the world and rid it of the evil you Jewish people bring into it,” Mengele said. “Your father will drive you to the George Washington Bridge, or the Triboro Bridge. You will open the car door, get out of the car, walk to the middle of the bridge, and jump off, plain and simple.”

In another room at Montauk Point, he set up several yards of planks with a railing attached to simulate a shaky bridge. I had to walk on it, crouch down, and slip through the bars. If I couldn't, then I had to fling myself over the railing and jump. Beethoven played while I practiced walking along the fake bridge. Mengele made a clockwise circle four times on the tip of my nose and said “Jump.” He caught me. He made the planks move as if swaying in the high wind, played sounds of water and wind, and opened a window so that I could hear and smell the water. I felt like I was walking blindfolded on a plank into an ocean.

“Reach over and throw yourself down, you slimy, disgusting Jew. Feed yourself to the birds and the fish. You are good for nothing else. Redeem your people. You must all die,” he said. Hunger pains gripped my stomach like claws. It was hard to stay awake. He placed me back in the electric chair.

“Now Heil Hitler! Heil Hitler! Heil Hitler!” he screamed as he leaned on the electricity button, my body now nothing more than a marionette.

“The two worst things you can be are Negro and Jewish. You are both of them. You have no place in the world. You are only fit for killing yourself. Rid the world of your odor, your look. Walk over this bridge and jump, jump to your death. You owe it to the world.” He showed a Nazi propaganda film of rats crawling all over one another. The film described

the Jews as rats. He spoke as if he were singing to the music. Beethoven reached a crescendo. Mengele's rage subsided.

A few days after I returned home, my father drove to the George Washington Bridge. My parents were in the front seat and I was in the back seat. My mother said, “Get out of the car. Walk to the middle of the bridge. You know what the doctor wants you to do.”

The contract with Germany said there was an extra $10,000 for the parents of any child who killed itself. I know why this is happening to me, I thought. It's because I'm ugly. If I were pretty, I would be home safe and sound with my sister, coloring in my coloring book. I am dispensable. To be dispensable is not to be human.

I walked along the pedestrian part of one of the bridges, suspended in space. It was night, black. The wind swept around me like a twirling skirt. I had heard Mengele tell my parents, “No identifying information. No name tags in her underwear. Some fisherman somewhere will find the body. I want no way to identify who she is or where she comes from. Let her wear her heaviest shoes. They weigh the body down.” I don't think my parents told Wiezenslowski.

Cars drove by. They didn't see me. I approached the middle. I sat down in the right spot. I brought my knees to my chest. If I jumped into the water, no one would know who I was or match me with my parents. I was shaking and sobbing when another me took hold. I would not do what they wanted me to do. I got up and walked carefully along the railing.

When the wind grew strong, I put both hands on the outside handrail and held tight but I kept walking, one foot, then the other foot, always feet touching each other. I stepped over the rods with my left foot, leaving space for my right foot, and resumed walking. My skirt flew up. I wondered what my best friend who had died would say if he saw me now. I could almost hear him say that he was with me. I could feel his long arms around me balancing me. No, I wouldn't think of him now because I couldn't afford to cry. Focus was everything. I belonged to the universe now, not to people. The moon and stars were out. I pretended they were my friends. My heart was drumming into the world. My heart was making a dent into the night sky. *Did the stars feel the knock?* My bridge was swaying. *Hold on tight. Don't let them win*. I was on the tip of the universe. No one knew where I was except my enemies. I was the mist, the thinnest smoke. I crept along like a turtle, definitely not a hare. Oh, how I wished I had a turtle's shell to

protect me from the wind, and parents, and scientists. I would not be blown away like the light branches of a tree or the red balloon. I bent my knees to make my body more like a tree trunk. I took one step after another in my heavy brown corrective oxfords. One foot touching the other. I saw boats going by. They didn't see me. If I jumped into a boat, I would be killed. If I jumped into the water, I'd be killed. I wished the moon would shine on me so that people could see me. I wished I could fly. The pedestrian walk was going up and down like the waves at Jones Beach. I wished I were a clam living in a shell.

I felt Mengele, this Dr. Faustus, on the bridge. I felt him peel my hands off the railing, hurl my body over it and my body spin and spin down fast through the frigid air. Twisting, chopping. His face roared at me like the lion in the MGM movies. He said my neck would snap during the fall and I would be dead before I hit the water. I felt his insistence that I release my hands and bless the world. I heard his incessant music.

A feeling of despair pulsed out of me. I wanted to leave my family and I was afraid that if I left something terrible would happen to them. I felt trapped in conflict so overwhelming that I became hopeless. This was a moment when I needed someone to intervene and no one did. It was September 15, 1947.

The wind roared, the moonlight pierced. I felt a silvery terror but also a strength from outside me—gathered from the waves or the stars—a strength that was not me but infused me. And with my corrective brown oxfords, I kept my progression towards the other end of the undulating bridge. Something from the moonlight went into the pores of my skin. My spine straightened. My heart anchored itself in my body. The wind helped me along like a dog that pulls on the leash. I believed I was going to make it.

I held my stomach close to the railing so that no space was between it and my body. I arched back slightly. The important thing was not to look down. *Look outward. Pretend the vast darkness is a carpet.* I was secure on my velvet carpet. *Do not feel*. When I felt, I spun with dizziness. *Pretend the bridge is my horse, the waters my chariot, the sky my kingdom, the stars my friends, the moon my fairy godmother*. Here on the bridge I had a family. There were moments when it was fun. I never relaxed into the pull of it—I was always fighting not to be overtaken—but sometimes I felt myself in the middle of a momentum. I was taken off the earth and given an experience of nonhuman life. I could have been a seagull or a hawk.

I cemented my fingers closed. I would not let Mengele, Germany, my community, or my parents win. I was alone in the world but I would fight back. I felt my bones, muscle, ribs disintegrate. It was as if I had a hole in my body that the chill air passed through. I neared the end of the bridge. The anger started when I was out of danger. I felt it mostly in my face. I hoped Mengele and Mrs. Twartski would be chopped into pieces. I hoped my parents would die a gruesome death.

My parents' Packard drove slowly across the bridge. They saw me. The car waited at the other end of the bridge. I got in the back seat. I couldn't tell whether my mother was happy or sad but she said, “I'll be punished for this,” and sighed heavily. *By Mengele or God*? I thought. My father said, “She's a cat.” I didn't know what he meant until years later.

When I got in the back seat of my parents' car, I realized how tired my legs were. The muscles in my thighs crumbled. I lay down in the back seat, my body shaking like the milk in the malted machine in the candy store at the corner of 68th Road and Paradise Boulevard. I shook until I plunged into sleep.

Each time I walked the bridges, my father carried me into the apartment. I woke when he bumped my head on the outside door, entrance, and our front door. If he was careful, then my mother's voice would wake me: “Take her shoes off before you put her on the bed.” My father dropped me on the bed anyway and gave my mother a snide look. She ran over and pulled my shoes off. “I don't want the sheets dirty,” she said, her voice strident, eyes bulging, the veins on her neck like a dulcimer's tight strings.

My mother would warm up a can of Campbell's Vegetarian Vegetable soup and I would eat all the portions. If I were still chilled, she would warm up Hershey's cocoa for me. I would drink it scalding and eat all the Graham crackers and all the Mallomars I wanted. One day, I woke up early and ate a whole bar of Velveeta cheese and vomited.

In the morning, the parts of me that walked the bridge receded and the rest of me remembered and knew nothing. I didn't know why I was so tired and still felt chilled. My mother's awareness of the bridge walk also vanished in the morning. She thought I was getting a cold, squeezed oranges for me, cooked chicken soup, and kept me home. The brain has infinite divisions and each section can hold a whole life that the other parts haven't a clue about.

In the hidden programming room in my apartment building, Mengele performed other experiments to make Jewish children kill themselves. He used electroshock to teach me how to slit my wrists. The electroshock obliterated the hunger pains.

“It's the only thing to do when no one loves you. You hold out your left arm and with the razor blade that will wait for you in the lower shelf of the medicine cabinet, you slit like this: a long line up like the tree trunk, short lines across the wrists. Anyone can do it. Even a girl like you. It's the obligation of the Jewish people to exterminate themselves,” Mengele said. “Let's see you practice with a lipstick. When you draw the tree, the electric shocks will stop. You don't have to draw the tree. You can stay shocked like this. Now let's pretend you're dead,” he said putting a cloth soaked in something over my face.

Mengele's words formed a caul that encased me most of my life. But when I peeled the scab off these memories, he fell away, word by word, electroshock by electroshock, hypnosis by hypnosis, rape by rape.

After Montauk Point, I walked down the blocks around my home. The hills sloped gently, the air was clean, and yellow and pink flowers bloomed all around the backyards of the buildings. Adults smiled. Women pushed carriages and strollers. Men rushed to and from the subways carrying briefcases and folded newspapers. Girls walked home from school in herds. Boys shouted and climbed trees even in their good schoolclothes. Everything seemed normal. This was ordinary life. But I felt that in less than a second, as fast as a hunger pain or the space before the next breath, the world could change and all these pleasant faces could turn into roaring monster heads that would devour me. While I walked like this, I remembered nothing of all the procedures done on my mind, and nothing of the endless torture, and the sharp betrayals. Emotions leaked out into normal life, but not the narrative. The world appeared as a spinning disk that I couldn't quite slow down or step onto.

In July 2013, I drove over the George Washington Bridge on my way to Connecticut. As I approached the bridge, I felt a terror inside and discovered it was from the children who had walked this bridge. My strong inside adults surrounded these children and held them close as if they were the jelly inside a doughnut. The traffic that morning was fierce, almost standstill. A few peppy pedestrians walked along the outside path and seemed to enjoy the air and sunshine. As I drove at about five miles per

hour, I noticed the slats under the outside banister were about one and a half inches apart. I had remembered about five inch spaces. I wondered how I had been able to take these steps in the early morning darkness and wind, so small and alone.

In 1962, the movie *The Manchurian Candidate* told some of the story of government mind control in a very mild form. The breaking of the parent–child bond, allowing mothers to have one child so that the mothers can be controlled; government creation of assassins who kill on command and remember nothing; the victim's desire to kill the perpetrator and spare the innocent target; idealization of the villain; mind-control procedures such as drugged states, hypnosis, post-hypnotic visual cues; and the destruction and consumption of a person's mind, will, behavior, and soul are all in this popular film.

One fallacy of the movie is that it depicts adults brainwashed to be assassins without the early splitting of their brains. Children's minds have to be separated into pieces and fragments very young, usually in infancy, sometimes in the womb. People who managed to escape programmers before they turned seven, eight, or nine cannot be mind controlled to do criminal acts and not remember.

Waterfall

At times, both sides of the family joined to administer initiations. This primitive initiation rite occurred eleven times, when I was between the ages of two and thirteen, always in August at three a.m., in the tiered waterfall. Four nine-storey red brick apartment buildings surrounded the falls like giant outstretched wings. On the left was where I lived with my parents and sister, on the right was where my handler, Mrs. Twartski, lived. The time I remember most clearly was when I was six years old. My paternal grandfather stood on the balcony off the lobby of two of the main buildings. In his black robe, he lifted his hammer, struck each child over the head, carried each concussed child down the steps, and threw us all in the water. My father, also in a black robe, lifted us up and placed us on the shore, near the berry bushes. Then each child's parents, in black robes, ran carrying their offspring to the base of the waterfall and laid them on the ground, like dead fish. We all lay there drenched with fear and concussions. They

separated one child, and the executioner held a knife to that child's throat. The programmer said, “If anyone cries, this child will be killed.”

Portable rods held up an outside curtained area at the bottom of the tiered waterfall. Children of different ages sat there where my other grandfather, Grandpa Max, officiated. He had hung a boy named Donnie from the branch of a tree. Donnie was suffering terribly. All the children cried. In a second, my grandfather slit the boy's throat. Grandpa came to me raging with the bloodstained knife. I was now ten different people. He put the knife on my throat and said “It's your fault the boy died. It's because you cried.” Some parts of me stayed in my numb body, and a few flew in my mind to Donnie, who was rising in the air. The bushes were far below our feet and the people with black robes were like dots on the grass. We went up as I pressed my stomach into his spirit-body. Donnie said, “It's not your fault. Go back. They would have killed me anyway.” And then he was out of reach. He didn't know my name. He was older and lived on Cobblestone Boulevard. Parts of me still wanted to follow him. Even though Donnie had said it wasn't my fault, I decided not to cry and the other parts of me toughened and steeled themselves.

The programmers installed a reservoir and waterfall inside me, where concussed children sit and feel guilty, afraid to cry or leave their families. The waterfall initiations also became the model for inside rivers that would dominate my internal structure.

Learning and unlearning, 1948

When I started first grade, my world opened. I was with all sorts of other children, had an opportunity to learn something and was aware that I was walking the same path that I had watched my dead friend walk for one year. Feeling that I was in his footsteps made me happy. Only television would open the world as much as school. I was one of the youngest in my class because my birthday was one day before the cutoff. My sister walked me to school on the first day. Getting me and my sister ready for school was all my mother could manage so she stayed home. Our front door would close and she would go back to bed. She got up shortly before we returned. But she always made us lunch, braided my straight hair, and dressed us well, and she too was interested in learning.

It was September but it was still August warm. My sister held my hand as we walked up the hill, across the street and down the block. She left me at the entrance for first graders and my heart pounded through my pink and white ruffles. The boys who were monitors lined us up and we had to be quiet. No one dared talk. My new class filed up the metal steps. We held ourselves narrow. Each floor had a boy monitor.

“Did you catch any fish?” the second floor boy shouted.

“None yet,” the first floor boy screamed back. I continued up the steps to the third floor thinking of myself as a fish swimming in the rough Atlantic about to be swallowed by a hungry whale that was trapped near the shore. The momentum of the crowds pushed me on even though my legs had frozen in place. My teacher looked like a regular fat old woman. I liked the inkwell in my desk. I practiced not listening, because I wasn't allowed to learn. One day, the teacher brought in a mix master machine and made butter, which fascinated me. Another day, I was painting at the easel, peed, and told the teacher I had spilled the jar of water. No one hit or yelled at me. In arts and crafts, I made my mother a brooch out of an oval shape, glue, and little pieces of pink glass. Even more than the delight of pleasing her was that of creating something with my fingers. I fell in love with arts and crafts, as well as letters and numbers.

Using a whip, Mrs. Twartski taught me how to be learning disabled in the special classroom underneath her apartment building. I had learning disabilities put in my brain before first grade was over. For example, I had to reverse numbers and letters, not concentrate, give wrong answers, and especially not create anything. First I had to know the right answer, then figure out a wrong answer. My intelligence could only show in the cult life my family led. But still, I got away from home for hours each day.

Mathematical minds

Various groups contribute to the industry of creating slaves by usurping their victims' brains. Some groups are governmental and power hungry; money or spiritual dominance motivates others. They all use an imaginary geometric structure for mind control, and the trained parts of the mind are located within this structure. Mine was shaped like a layered pyramid that looked a bit like a bridal cake. The section on the bottom was the Reverse Kabbalah group; on top of that the Luciferian group; then the Illuminati,

composed of people whose bloodlines made them rulers with aspirations for world dominance; then the Mafia with their criminal deeds; and lastly our government, or MKUltra, with their political interests. The MKUltra Project did secret experiments on people's minds and behaviors. A globe where the soldiers trained in security lived on top of my internal structure. Behind this main structure were smaller inverted pyramids that held different kinds of programming and experiences of torture. Mengele, with his money and prestige, bribed the committee to embellish my structure. The mind controllers put the Mengele child parts of me within the roots of the Kabbalah tree, underneath the structure, driving it, breathing into it. With its spider web structure, it became an avenue of evil.

Note

1. These sources have further information:
New York Times (2010). Nazis were given “safe haven” in U.S., report says. November 14, p. A1.
O'Brien, C., & Phillips, M. (1995). *Trance Formation of America*. Las Vegas, NV: Reality Marketing.
Ross, C. A., M.D. (2006). *The CIA Doctors: Human Rights Violations by American Psychiatrists*. Richardson, TX: Manitou Communications.
Rutz, C. (2001). *A Nation Betrayed*. Grass Lake, MI: Fidelity Publishing.
http://www.wanttoknow.info/mindcontrol10pg#ciadocs [accessed January 20, 2014].

TWO

Betrayals

Child labor

Starting in 1947, my parents and I drove through the outskirts of the Bronx, New York, into sections that housed dilapidated factories and warehouses. A few dingy stores that closed early were on isolated blocks. My parents dropped me off at the half-hidden side entrance of a dirty, moldy, flat building. Brothel 8 had eight floors and was the eighth brothel of the network of two hundred fifty-one that existed in the U.S. and Canada at that time. Attendants recorded the number of the drop off. Sometimes I was number fifty-five or fifty-seven or sixty-eight or even seventy-three. That meant there were that many other children who arrived before me. They put my clothes in a locker with the same assigned number. The matrons said, “The parents get uppity if all the clothes aren't returned, though with all the money they get, they shouldn't mind.” They gave me a pastel shift to wear, and bedroom slippers. The women watching the girls also wore bedroom slippers and shifts but theirs were floral. They weren't allowed to use any cosmetics or put anything in their hair because the owners didn't want anything detracting from the children. The women especially grieved for their toenail polish. The men who visited the brothels mostly liked children so I didn't know what the managers were worried about. The lines for the boys were the longest. I thought maybe it was because they had more to their bodies on the outside than girls our age, though some girls already had breasts. The boys came from all over the world.

One of the younger children inside of me is talking:

> I was one of the girls standing on the stage at the Brothel 8 lower level theater—standing on a stage in a littered room in front of a jeering audience of men hooting, throwing objects, blowing on party pipes; men—smelly men with unshaved whiskers, beer bellies, and cocaine noses. The other girls who were just like me pushed me forward to represent them. The other girls wanted to hide behind me—they were ashamed, too ashamed to come forward themselves but they want to be known as well. (The girls she refers to are all inside me, all part of me and my experiences there.)

We were naked. Our skin was darker than many of the girls there. The men preferred the lighter skin, especially the dark-skinned men. Some were throwing coins at us, others beer cans or just pieces of damp paper. Some were jerking off as they watched the line of us standing naked on stage.

“Pull your pants up,” a guard screamed at the low-class men. “Get your hands off.”

We were trying to shrink. We felt our body crumbling. Our soul was twisting out of our skin. But there was nowhere to fly. We were trapped in this stifling, perspiring, tiny room. A guard was at each side of the wings. The men who finally got me were angry and rough. They threw me against the wall, which wasn't allowed. One time I was in a leg cast and they paid my father extra money because I was hurt more than the contract said I could be. They also rubbed me against their penises. Some girls were raped all the way. The blond, fair girls were raped the most. One of the older girls bled to death.

We saw them roll people out on a stretcher. When someone was killed, they put a purple lily or tulip on the covered corpse. It was a warning, but these girls didn't do anything wrong.

Once I had pubic hair, I would not have to be on the bidding stage, but then life would get worse because they could impregnate me.

“Hey, ugly.”

“Hey, fat legs.”

“Hey, skinny thighs.”

“Let's see your ass.”

“Hey, gawky, turn around,” the men screamed at the scared girls.

Shame like boiling syrup covered our bodies. Shame became a barricade between us and the men. Shame became a tight home we lived in and did not exit. Its windows caved in on our eyes, its door pushed into our vaginas.

My parents didn't really need this money. My father was a bad lawyer but he brought in enough to pay the rent and clothe us. My mother's father was a millionaire and could always lend him money in an emergency. He gambled the money away anyway.

Shame can burn, like a stove left on overnight. Shame can burn through the layers of skin. I wanted to stay hidden, shielded, tucked in a safe person's body. I didn't ever want to be looked at or touched again—ever.

My heart folded into itself. My heart slipped down my vertebrae bone by bone. My blood could not hold my body up.

“Turn that ass around.”

Grownups who use children and only care about themselves are bad people. When children were killed or just died, grownups didn't care. There were always more children they could make money off.

The world seemed all dirt and filth like the littered floor and stage. I didn't like the overhead lights shimmering on my skin. I didn't want light to touch my skin. No, this was not a good world for children. And all these mean adults were once children.

It would be easy to say that money motivated this kind of abuse but that's not the whole story. The parents who sold their children must have been programmed, which means that one part of their minds had been separated through torture and did what they had been instructed to do. These parents were programmed against their will until they didn't know consciously what they were doing. They hadn't an idea that they were acting against any instinct for decency, or perhaps they thought their children would be killed if they didn't cooperate. The parents who dropped their boys and girls off at brothels and warehouses—most of these parents would not have done so if they were living in awareness of the other parts of their minds. The customers who frequented these brothels were not programmed. They were simply criminals and perverts. When I returned home, I remembered nothing of being a child sexual slave.

The school yard

Back in my ordinary life, it was a sticky, cloying August in 1949 Queens, New York. My big sister was in charge of me. I was six, she was eleven. She had begun menstruating and had breasts that pushed out from under blouses and sweaters and said “Look at me, I'm swelling.” I had no breasts, just nipples that squeezed together when they were cold or wet. I was glad I didn't have blooming breasts because that meant I wouldn't be pregnant. My sister was glad she had blooming breasts because they brought her attention.

It was hot in our family's small apartment. The walls were sweating and curving from the heat. My sister said we would walk to the playground of Public School Number Three—that was up the hill to 108th Street, down the block to 67th Road, across the street, down another block and there was the schoolyard on the left. My sister had soft black hair in a loose pageboy.

We both had dark eyes. Hers always looked in the mirror. Mine looked around to spot dangerous people.

She said we would go to the schoolyard and stand under the fountain. I don't remember where my mother was, probably shopping or going to a doctor's. My father was at work losing money.

My sister put on a green one-piece bathing suit. She looked in the dresser mirror this way then that way. She looked this way and that way again.

“Just wear your bottom part,” she said.

“You mean go out naked?” I asked.

“You're not naked. You're so young, you don't have to wear a top. You don't have breasts yet.”

“But people will notice,” I said.

“No one will notice. You're just a little girl,” she said. “You'll be cooler.”

I wore my yellow bathing suit bottom. She took my hand and walked ahead. Her arm was stretched backwards, mine forward. She walked eagerly, rushing. She seemed to be rushing to meet someone. I looked from side to side trying to see if anyone was looking at me. When she got to the schoolyard, she ran to the back where the sprinklers sprouted water and where a group of girls congregated. They laughed and jumped up and down looking at one another's bathing suits. Then they pointed to me. I don't know what they were saying. Other children were playing. Their happy shouts formed clouds above the cold blue water.

“Look at her. Look at those nipples,” a boy pointed.

“Right out of a pin-up calendar.”

“Little girl forgot to get dressed,” a freckled boy shouted.

“I caught a fish and the fish is naked,” another boy laughed.

They circled around me. My sister was on the other side of the fountain standing this way and that way for all to see.

I cried and covered my chest with my crossed-over arms.

“Cry baby.”

“Go suck your thumb.”

“Wa, wa, baby wants to go home.”

I wasn't sure of the way home. I wasn't allowed to cross the street.

“Bye bye, baby, cry baby, bye bye.”

One of the girls near my sister yelled at the boys, then yelled at my sister, “Don't you care about her?”

My sister finally came back and took my hand and we walked home while I cried and shivered.

“I'm not responsible for what boys do,” she said. “Don't tell Mommy.”

“I hate you,” I said.

She pulled up her bathing suit and wiggled around in it. One of her breasts moved around.

The Hansel leading me by the hand pretending to be a friend and big sister—this Hansel is an enemy. “I must be careful of people leading me by the hand,” I thought.

Shame burned within me. It started from the inside, forced its way through my ribs, and crawled up my skin, lodging on my cheeks. The boys had seen my chest. I was branded.

Alison thought my sister may have just returned from being used in a brothel, where men had jeered at her, and that she was acting that experience out on me.

Mengele's return, 1951

Mengele wore an overcoat and entered our living room in his fast, demanding way but sideways, hip and shoulder first, not straight on; the way people enter a sick room when the invalid is contagious. He demanded Marlene, who hid in our bedroom. My father told her to come out. Mother had dressed her shabbily on purpose in play clothes and old shoes. Her idealized portrait had been removed. My mother again threw herself in front of Marlene, and this time thrust out a large kitchen knife that she held behind her back.

“You can't have her,” she screamed.

Mengele twisted away as his fingers squeezed my left shoulder and he dragged me. I vomited.

“Jewish vomit,” Mengele said.

“I'll clean her up,” my father said.

“We'll take care of it,” Mengele said. He grabbed my new Tiny Tears doll dressed in a pink and white checked pinafore that I had got for my birthday. I had seen my mother put Baby Jane on the loveseat in the foyer that morning and hadn't understood why. Mengele shoved me into the limousine, handed me Baby Jane and wiped the vomit off with a towel. I felt no better than the yellow vomit all over the front of my pink dress. I

pressed Baby Jane to my body. I was in the second grade. We drove for a long while in the night.

Inside the Programming Center, two black programming chairs sat side by side. My cousin, DeeDee Goldman, was already buckled in her chair. DeeDee was one year younger than me with a November 11th birthday. She clutched her teddy bear. “If you resist, we will squash Baby's legs with this hammer,” Mengele said.

To DeeDee he said, “If you resist, we will pull off Teddy's legs.”

He showed us alternating photographs of our mothers under strobe lighting. Aunt Gertrude looked angry. My mother looked beautiful and in love with herself.

“Your mothers hate you. They sold you to me.” My father got my mother to sell me. “They love your sisters, not you.” Uncle Paul may love DeeDee. “It's best for you to eliminate your mothers. Your father will wake you up and show you the jack of clubs. At three in the morning, you will go into the kitchen and get the sharpest butcher knife. It will be on the kitchen table where you usually sit for meals. You will sleepwalk to your mother's bed and stab her in the heart. Just like in the rituals. You will leave the knife by her body, return to your own bed and sleep. You will do this Thursday night,” Merkel said. Mengele used the names Dr. Black, Dr. Schwartz, Merkel, or Menkel when he was programming us to kill, and Dr. Faustus when he wanted us to kill ourselves.

DeeDee loved her family and may never have even picked up the knife. On Thursday, I made it all the way to my mother's bed. I looked down on Mother's head. She had set her hair in curls with bobby pins holding them in place. Some curls took one bobby pin on a diagonal, others crossed like a pair of swords. Mother, a light sleeper, turned, woke and asked with a groggy expression on her confused face, “What's going on?” She probably had just fallen asleep an hour or two before. Her little pills took a while to work. I dropped the knife and raced back to my bed. It was as if I galloped breathless over clouds. My father followed me out; I heard him put the knife back in the kitchen drawer.

That weekend at Montauk Point, Merkel said, “I'm disappointed in both you girls. You did not complete your task. You will have to be punished.” We received double the electricity and harsher drugs. I couldn't think.

“Never disobey Dr. Black. Whatever he says, you do. Dr. Black is your master. You are his concubines. All little girls have to kill their mothers.

Mothers are bad people. If your mothers loved you, they wouldn't have sold you to me.” Enthusiastic Bach music played in the background. Sometimes he played along with his violin, especially when DeeDee and I screamed. Our screams became part of his symphony.

One day, the female doctor, Dr. Lillian Kraus, administered the shocks and in her lust to hurt, she upped it too much for DeeDee. A harrowing scream ripped out of DeeDee; then she faded. Mengele pulled off her helmet, did artificial respiration and put an oxygen mask on her. He yelled at the woman, “We have to pay $50,000 if you kill one of these.” Our programming ended for that day. I felt glad that hadn't happened to me but also guilty. If I had somehow taken more of the electricity, it might not have happened to DeeDee. I pictured twins where one is born larger and healthier than the other. One took too much and the other not enough. After that day, DeeDee couldn't remember anything, not even where the bathroom was. Merkel dismissed the female doctor. “She's too dangerous,” people at the Programming Center said. Our screams. I can still hear our screams. Her scream.

Mengele had access to my foundational homicidal and suicidal programming. Earlier, he had worked up some homicidal programming while in Mrs. Twartski's schoolroom in Pleasant Hills. Mrs. Twartski was not permitted in while Mengele showed us children a cage filled with parakeets, fluttering green and blue birds with busy beaks. Mengele wore his preferred devil suit. As he wielded his whip, we had to jump. If his whip hit us, he took us to the altar where a little bird was pinned down but still fighting for its freedom, its wings thumping. There was a difference between killing a human who was already dead or drugged into a lifeless state and killing a fighting bird. Mengele—he wanted to be called Menkel for this display—held our hands over the knife and stabbed the little bird. “If you tell your parents or anyone at all, all the birds will die and it will be your fault. All the birds will die.” He reinforced the don't-tell program with his gold watch, which we had to follow with our eyes. “Never tell what we have together here,” Menkel said.

We had to choose the weakest child in our group and kill that boy or girl. If we didn't, they would; but they would do it slowly, first skinning the child alive, then in slow motion pushing a knife into the solar plexus but so slowly—it was more than death, it was slow-torture-murder. We saw that happen to a girl named Nancy and a boy named Richard. After that, we

stabbed as fast as possible to spare them. Mengele's hands always covered ours. Most of the children wanted to be chosen to die but a few of them wanted to live. The meanest children wanted to live. Our group had thirteen children, six girls and seven boys. If a child was killed, the parents got more money. A child who didn't learn the programming fast enough would be chosen.

Mengele was interested in the mixture of pain and pleasure, always raping while he performed his experiments. He clamped a vise around my head to see whether the brain would squeeze out while he sexually abused me. He measured the pain and sexual response with a little clicking machine like a metronome. He loved machines, but I suspect many of them were just for show. The bones in my neck popped.

In 2012, I had an ultrasound. When the technician put goo on me, and wheeled the table, my jaw clenched so hard it could have broken. She moved the wand over my neck testing the blood flow in my carotid artery. Then my memory transported me to Montauk Point with Mengele and Mrs. Twartski. Mengele shone a red light on my young, closed eyelids.

“This is how you do it, Mrs. Twartski. You slowly move the little red light back and forth tracing the orb of the moon. Start with the right eye on the top and work gradually down to the bottom. Then do the left eye in the same manner, tracing its contours, slowly, excruciatingly slowly. Children will be eternally confused.” Before Mengele began, he called out two of the original infants whom Mrs. Twartski had created in me, and gave this confusion-training to them.

I was shocked to see my mother on a stretcher at the Programming Center. I thought Mengele only worked on children. I felt bad for her lying there immobile as if she were in a coffin. I wondered how she would be changed. Her gray hazel eyes stared wide, unfocused. She had a white turban wrapped around her head. Underneath the turban, her scalp was shaved down the middle. My father stood in the hall. He looked guilty for a while but he shook it off quickly. He once said he had a moment of truth around three every morning, but it was gone by the time he woke up in the morning. He didn't say what he meant by “a moment of truth” but I supposed he was talking about having a conscience.

Hours later, Mengele came out and said about Mother, “She was an easy subject. Very little fight in her.” After that, Mengele used Marlene, and Mother spent hours in bed too drugged to move. She never woke before

noon. I noticed that she had no reaction when he took me. I saw my sister at the Programming Center often, though we were not always there at the same time. Mengele brought Marlene home one time with bandages on her breasts. He or his assistant had given her nipples too much electricity. They no longer had feeling. Mengele must have gone after her sexually more than usual. My mother turned sharply to me and spit out, “Why did this have to happen to her? Why not to you?” I knew she was thinking that but was surprised she would say it. DeeDee came home without her intelligence, my other cousin Rhonda with epilepsy, my sister with dead nipples, and me not able to trust anyone in the world. Rhonda's parents said Rhonda had given herself epilepsy by banging her head against the wall. I believed their explanation for decades until I remembered Mengele's experiments on us. Rhonda probably still believes it.

The early morning after Marlene returned, Mother came into our bedroom, ripped off my covers, tore open my pajama top and made four slashes on my nipples with a double edged razor blade. The sting kept me in my body. Perhaps that is why I remembered this assault before I remembered the mind control and Mengele. I don't know whether my mother's violence and favoritism were from programming or whether the environment and abuse drove her crazy. Had my mother been born into another family, she might have had a little life in the real world like other people.

My father drove me to the hospital. The doctor looked at my nipples under a magnifying glass similar to the one Mother's jeweler on 47th Street used. I told the doctor everything because I wanted the world to know what happened. He said, “Parents can do whatever they want with their children.” It was 1951. I had never seen this doctor at rituals.

Mengele spent days programming me to be a spy, thief, and prostitute at Montauk Point. He began these procedures with injections going into the side of my nose outside the right nostril, which is now discolored.

“We are giving her the civilian treatment. In the camps, we didn't have to worry about this. We could put needles in them absolutely anywhere,” Mengele said to Mrs. Twartski, who assisted him for this round of programming. “We have multitudes of *frauleins* like her entertaining our boys in the cafés in my country. They have no idea what they are doing and do it so well. I tell you, Mrs. Twartski, the less they know what they're doing, the better they do it. Let that be a lesson to you.”

In the present, as I retrieved these memories, my sleep fell into the pattern of sleeping for several hours, then waking in terror. I tried to store the terror in containers and breathe it out. I would fall asleep again and wake later in a daze.

“Now, Mrs. Twartski, I will show you how to construct a government puppet. For males, we build on their capacity for violence. For females, we build from their capacity for sexuality and seduction. The formula is sterling and simple. We divide these programs into age categories: sixteen to twenty-two, twenty-two to twenty-six, twenty-six to thirty-one, thirty-one to thirty-seven, thirty-seven to forty-four (especially if the girl looks young). Each girl will go once every seven years on these particular kinds of adventure. After that, we close the program down. No age group knows about another. No function within a category knows about another. Ingenious, isn't it?” Mengele said.

“Brilliant,” Mrs. Twartski said.

“We will make her a sexual robot. She has a good body and we will use it. We use the obedience drug. We show her the card. We tell her to sit in the chair. We tell her to put her own helmet on. We strap her in.”

To me, he said, “You are now being made a criminal. Do you agree?”

“Shoot her with electricity.”

“Nod when you agree.”

“Keep shooting her, Mrs. Twartski.”

“That's all for today. We want to make her agree, not kill her,” Mengele said. This went on for consecutive days until I started to die. They gave me no food or water and didn't permit me to sleep. On the fifth day, some part of me nodded and I agreed.

“When you are beckoned, you come out. The *maitre d'* will point to where you go. The next person inside sits on the designated man's lap. The next person dances on his lap. Next person gets two pills from your purse. The next person leans her breasts into the designated man's face, covering his eyes. Next person drops both pills in his drink. Next person slips out documents from his pocket in his jacket. Next person slips in replacement document. The man should have already passed out by now. Next person slides away from the man. Next person exits room. Exiting, next person hands *maitre d'* in doorway papers taken from passed out man.[1] The assistant will help girl take off her costume. She will return to her home and remember nothing. No person will feel anything—no fear, pleasure, shame,

victory—nothing. She will perform her sequence of tasks like a puppet with no emotion, an emotionless puppet. A puppet of the state. Herr Hitler wanted a country filled with these people. Controllable people doing the right thing for the welfare of the government."

Mengele was in a frenzy of ecstasy. All the people he referred to were internal parts of me that he and my grandfather had put in. He instructed me on which fingers to use to retrieve the pills from my purse. "If you drop one of the pills, you discreetly pick it up. If you can't find it, you motion with your left arm to the *maitre d'* who will be watching, and he will deliver one to you."

When I look at the faces of some of the assassins of political leaders, I think that they are programmed because of their wide-eyed stare that seems to go back into their own brains, and the hyper-determined look of a person acting on a program. When they say they don't remember what they did, I believe them. The part who assassinated recedes, and the other parts of the person's brain don't know anything about the crime.

Elise brings down Mengele

Mengele used Mrs. Twartski's musty schoolroom. Sometimes he permitted her to observe his practices but often he didn't. This day, he permitted her to be present along with almost every child in the immediate neighborhood. He sat us in orderly rows with the youngest in front and the older children behind. Elise was one of the youngest, sitting third from the left in the front row. She had red hair and an open face, and wore smocked dresses that her mother probably bought in a fancy store. Elise was small and looked younger than her four- and a-half years.

Mengele, naked from the waist down, stood in front of us on a little raised wooden platform. He preferred being naked on the bottom during his teaching times, but wore a tuxedo with tails on top or a devil outfit. Sometimes he wore plain black slacks without a single crease in them anywhere. My grandfather Max, also obsessively neat, admired his ironing. Mengele used hand signals to make us take our seats and be quiet. We were all so afraid, we didn't want to make noise anyway. He could even make us all go to sleep by moving his right arm down from the elbow. Mengele instructed Mrs. Twartski on his methodology, right in front of us:

> Step one, destroy their sense of self. This is foundational, Mrs. Twartski. It's easier to take it away from boys, but we can get it away from everyone.

We didn't know what he meant by a “sense of self”.

“Dr. Black, we have already done that by dividing them at birth,” Mrs. Twartski replied. We didn't know we had been divided at birth. She had done that by torturing us as infants until we split away from our body.

“You will see,” Mengele said tossing his head. “We can take it further.”

“Well, I'm certainly not going to stand in front of them naked,” Mrs. Twartski said. She wore her blue and white flowered dress with buttons down the front. Shocked that the great doctor preferred to be naked, I overheard her tell grown-ups that he disrespected her and was a pervert.

“Children,” he said, turning his full attention to us and pushing Mrs. Twartski aside, “take your assigned seat.” We were already in our assigned seats. Mengele spread the tails of his tuxedo out like a peacock spreads its feathers. He liked performing for Mrs. Twartski and also disdaining her. She sat on a wooden school chair on the side of the platform. The air seemed filled with evil spirits climbing over the walls.

“Your parents don't love you. They pretend to but they don't. Even when they do nice things for you, they think bad things about you,” Mengele said to us all. Many of the children started crying, including Elise. I didn't cry because I already knew my parents didn't love me even though they loved Marlene. Marlene cried. She didn't think our father loved her.

Mengele kept his eyes fixed on us as he held out his arm to Mrs. Twartski. We all watched his hand and arm movements because he often controlled us with them. His slightest gesture, his fingers barely moving sent us commands. Mrs. Twartski handed Mengele a bowl with goldfish swimming in it. The goldfish looked young and alive. Mengele scooped out a goldfish that swooshed its body. He twisted off its head and plopped it back in the bowl. The children, especially the girls, let out a breathless sound that had many R's. We saw its pieces sink to the bottom. He scooped out another fish.

“That's what will happen to anyone you tell,” he said to us. His face became all lips. His nose disappeared.

I vowed silently to myself that I would never tell anyone and I also vowed that I would tell. I would have liked to tell Mr. Jacobs, the nice man who lived across the waterfall, who prayed with his family and wore a shawl, but then he would be killed too.

“Some of you still want to tell. Some of you are natural betrayers,” he said as he stepped off Mrs. Twartski's platform, walked to the third row shoving two children out of the way with his right shoe and grabbed a tiny hunched over girl wearing a clean ironed dress and whose hair was in braids. I curled further into a ball as he lifted me, my legs flapping in the air like a fish's tail when pulled out of water.

“Here's a girl who wants to tell. What should we do to it? Push her head under water and let her drown in the fishbowl?” I thought he would hang me upside down. I knew my head wouldn't fit in the fishbowl. I glimpsed Mrs. Twartski's upside-down face. She smiled. I could see she hated me. “Or should we twist her apart as if she was a slithering snake, or should we squeeze her?”

Mrs. Twartski mouthed to the children “squeeze.” Mengele liked to squeeze children the way Grandpa Max liked to pinch them. During each programming session, he took a child at random and squeezed that child until he or she almost died. The child would cough and gag for a long time. He squeezed me like a mother bear squeezes her prey. My legs dangled and the air went out of my body. He scooped out the live goldfish, put it in my hand and said, “Squeeze it until it dies.” It felt slippery, slimy and helpless, like me. I couldn't squeeze. I fainted. He shook me, put his hand over mine and made me pick up the goldfish flailing on the cement floor and squeeze it to death.

“This is what will happen to anyone who talks, especially the children who want to talk and to anyone they tell.” I cried because I had saved myself and not the goldfish. The goldfish was my friend. Mrs. Twartski nodded approvingly.

“Now take communion and scram,” Mengele said to all the children. Communion meant licking his penis. We had to put our tongue on the slit where the semen comes out. The boys also had to stroke it. He told them it was a privilege because they were male. Mrs. Twartski lined us up and then let us out one by one. When I got outside, I vomited.

Boys and girls all around vomited, then ran in different directions. Some went down to the building on Cobblestone Avenue, cut across the courtyard with the waterfall and exited on 67th Road. Some ran up the steps, through the balcony and into the lobby at 108th Street. Many ran out the side entrance, through the swinging gates to 68th Road. They ran past the windows of Mrs. Twartski's first floor apartment and my family's garden

apartment on the other side. The parents of the younger children waited for them. Elise's mother waited. Children emerged without a self and the parents didn't seem to notice. The children took their parents' hands as if nothing had happened. Kindergarten didn't exist yet, but the parents took the children's hands as if they had just had a good morning playing and having juice and crackers in preschool.

I overheard my parents' conversations and learned that when Elise turned five, her mother had given her a doll for her birthday. Elise told her mother she couldn't have a baby because she was Jewish. Her mother questioned her, and Mengele's teachings cracked. Mrs. Twartski became a detective, and asked all the children one by one what happened in her own schoolroom or at the Programming Center. If we were too afraid to tell, she used the hand signals we had learned to access the information.

From all the children, she heard “All Jewish girls may never procreate” or “Jewish girls may not have babies.” And “You have contaminated our sacred Deutsch language with your Yiddishkeit. For that, you will be punished,” and “You are an ugly people. When I look at you, I want to regurgitate.” But the one that sealed the deal was Mengele's programming the children to kill their mothers. Mrs. Twartski was a mother. The handlers and parents called meetings—some took place in our living room. The lawyers in the community all got together. They discussed how to break the contract, whether the parents had to reimburse any of the monies, whether they could be sued for breach of contract, and whether Mengele had any rights under the law. They expelled him from our community, and that's how a just-turned-five-year-old girl brought Mengele down in Pleasant Hills, New York, in 1951, and how the children learned that telling could be good.

When my family handed me over to Mengele, they withheld some of the information in the separate, highly secret, black book on me, especially my governmental functions and links. Mengele did the same thing. He created red, green, yellow, and blue books on me. Mengele left these programs in me that my family handlers didn't know about and that were supposed to go off at staggered ages.

All during the 1950s and perhaps later, Mengele and his associates also created hidden personalities in me and other programmed children. These concealed personalities were designed to come to life and perform functions such as kidnapping, setting bombs in banks, stealing from banks,

assassinating designated people, and in general causing chaos in the United States. He left behind other Nazis who attempted to follow up on the programs he had created, and Nazi programming probably continues to this day. There may not have been sufficient follow-through for the personalities Mengele created to perform their functions when they were adults.

Note

1. An excerpt has been published in Miller, A. (2014). *Becoming Yourself: Overcoming Mind Control and Ritual Abuse*. London: Karnac.

THREE

The foundational destruction

I am in a small plane flying from Baltimore to Toronto. The plane flies over streams of cars moving south and north on a highway, perhaps Route I-95. *So that's what we look like all lined up in a row*.

I hover above my life and look down. Pieces of it fly together. I spread a golden carpet. “Come to me,” I tell my many inside parts, personalities, what clinicians in the field call “alters” but what is really my splintered brain cut and spilled like a diamond. “Come to me and speak, at last.”

The clouds hide the earth. Barricades keep me from all my memories, from people inside me. I sharpen myself. I must pierce through. The clouds make a gentle clearing. I would have given my life to save the sacrificed children, but they are dead and I am alive. I must do what I can.

In awareness resides responsibility.

To divide a mind so that it doesn't know itself or its parts, programmers have to start young, at birth or before, in the womb.

The womb, 1943

We swallowed together, hummed together, and moved our bowels together. She was quite calm when she slept, and I used to stay awake and absorb the peacefulness. For moments she enjoyed me. She would put her hands on the outside of where I was, spread out her fingers and move them up and down and around to the sides. I don't think she would have done that had she not loved and wanted me. She must have loved me some.

We were in a chair in a strange dark room with presences that encircled us. Suddenly lightning cut an outside wall and ripped through us. I became frozen and my mother went away. No trace of her anywhere. Gone. I was alone, trembling, shivering. Mother and I had been in the same vicinity until the shock. She came back eventually but I didn't want any part of her. How

could I ever trust her? And sure enough, that lightning-earthquake happened probably thirteen times.

Decades later, in my forties, I learned that the handlers gave her electroshock with the purpose of separating us.

I floated in the most soothing chamber in the world with perfect temperature, enclosed, wrapped up in life. Then it leaked out, all that perfectly warm water. It leaked out, then poured out, and I was rushed along, hurried along before I was ready, without comfort and uncomfortable. I felt the walls on the sides and top pushing me out hard. Shiny steel cold things caught hold of my head and pulled me out without my agreement. The air felt cold on my neck, shoulders and waist. The rest of my body was still warm. The second half became slippery and fast. My mother screamed almost as loud as her scream during the shocks and breathed even harder. She didn't like my father. She didn't like her father. She said they should never have let their wives have second children. She was the firstborn.

Strange hands did all sorts of things to me. Other hands wrapped me in a cuddle blanket. The tighter the wrap, the happier I became. But I missed her smell and longed to see her even though I still felt angry at her for hurting and leaving me alone. My heart beat faster and faster and went outside my body, like a helicopter.

Then I was near her again. I knew her lavender, gardenia smell inside and outside. I felt her eyes. The eyes are what connect the inside and the outside. Something was wrong. She went far away again. She turned away. She was saying no. Something was the matter with me. Why else would she go away? She liked me better inside than outside. And even inside she had left me.

Birth ritual, May 1943

I was born during an outdoor ritual at Bear Mountain, New York. Right after I emerged, a fluffy white thing, maybe a bird or cloud, floated over me and pulled me up into the air. We went higher and floated above all the people. I felt my mother lying on the blanket with a ring in her left nipple. She lay so still and pale, I was sure she had died and I felt sorry for my mother who didn't move and who had never touched me or known me. I would have wanted a mother. The fluff rose and me with it and we went to

the tallest pine trees. It nestled me in a branch and the large hooting bird didn't seem to mind and the smaller birds got a little excited but then calmed down. I felt my tiny body lying on the stone altar pale and still and felt sorry for whoever remained in that frail body. Its loneliness reached the high tree branches because the birds and I felt overcome with sorrow. A whole world of sorrow squeezed into the little heart and some of the birds had to fly away. The tree top swayed gently in the night wind and sometimes I feared falling off but I was glad not to be on earth. I also felt shame for having abandoned those below. I thought about returning and was sure I could get back but I didn't want to. I felt a stab of selfishness but I couldn't bear the pain of my sorrow and loneliness and now I was also sure my mother had died and I had to stay away. She lay so still. Even up here, the heart pain swallowed me alive. I was caught in the middle of two extremes. The Presence wanted me to return. It urged me, gently shoving me like a mother bird wanting her young to fly. But I was just born and too young to have wings.

As part of the consecration ceremony, my grandfather had stabbed my left nipple with the surgical needle. He paced around my body, agitated. His hands waved and he shouted at people. They rushed to my body from different directions and screamed orders to others. They called out “104.5 degrees”. Someone rushed over with a bag and a man pushed something into the limp arm. The body coughed or cried, I couldn't tell which. My father picked up the body and walked it to his car as my Aunt Mimi followed, holding the bag, and my sister walked behind them.

If I went away, I would never see the frail limp body again and I would never know who I became. I would live as a mist in the trees and the birds would never accept me as one of their own. The birds looked down on the people and I could tell the birds thought of humans as bad animals. I quickly rode the white fluff down and returned to my shell just as my father closed the door to the car. My body flamed hot, especially my left side around my nipple, an armor of scalding pain. I heard the body groan.

As I write this at two in the morning in the bed-and-breakfast I stay in during my third therapy week-long intensive, I hear animal fights outside my bedroom window, squeals, grunts and fluttering sounds. A cat may have caught a helpless bird. Now it is quiet again.

My body rested in the back seat and Aunt Mimi held the IV bag as its medicine poured into me. I was not sure I should have returned to this body

that couldn't contain the searing physical pain. Worse than that, though, was the line that sharply cut my heart. All around me grew a thick blackness and I felt in too much worry and fear to be able to cry. But then I did cry and made breathing sounds even though I also held my breath.

As we drove away, I felt a deeper cut of sorrow in my heart. I had hardly even smelled her from the outside. I'd had a mother inside and now I didn't have a mother outside, and this new world seemed too large to be in without a mother to guide me. This pain became too immense and the IV medicine could not touch this worse pain. I wondered whether one of the snakes had entered my body and wrapped itself around my heart and squeezed it. Snakes and spiders had walked over the stone altar they had placed me on as soon as I was born.

Even though I remained so far away from my mother, I felt her stirring and rising. I felt them putting her on a stretcher and holding the stretcher high in the air and parading my mother, who had just risen from the dead, high in the sky. The moonlight shimmered on her white body and on the ring in her left nipple to signify she belonged to them and was only an object of use. I didn't know whether I would ever see her again but I felt her alive in the world and alive in me and that gave me hope. I had a new determination to live rise in me despite this cutting pain that sliced through my heart and the throb of pain on my left side. Aunt Mimi held me on her lap and my sister stroked my legs. In the future, when they didn't force her to be mean, my sister would be nice.

It is five in the morning in the bed-and-breakfast and fear starts in my heart that I can't connect to anything. I get out the tapping machine searching for an answer. A small bilateral tapping machine sends faint electrical pulse sensations from side to side and helps unfreeze my brain. It can cut through the mind-control barricades and bring forward unknown, forbidden memories. I feel and then notice my upper chest turning bright red as the rash travels up my neck and face. And my left breast hurts.

They carried me into the apartment and put me in the crib with the IV. Much later, people came in, my relatives, my mother, and also the doctor. I had a rash over my body and the doctor said I had an allergic reaction to the medicine. He said it was not uncommon for newborns. He pulled the IV out of my arm and said my body would have to fight the infection on its own. The rash stung and burned and the left side of my chest had sharp pains.

I know tears streamed down my face then but I cannot cry now. I cannot cry.

People surrounded my crib, relatives and the doctor, but my mother was in another room, resting or sleeping and crying. They said she didn't want a dark skinned baby. I hadn't known that I had dark skin. My grandmother was trying to comfort me by shaking the crib. None of this meant much to me but then a huge finger from above touched me and to everyone's surprise, I lived. The finger gave me a good feeling, peaceful, comforting.

Familiar voices filled the room. “She has ten fingers and toes.” “She's a good weight.” “If you didn't want a dark child, why did you marry a dark man?” “You can't give your baby away.” “She is your baby. She came out of you.” “She has a chin. It will show more as she grows.” “You'll feel better in a day or two.” “You just need to eat something.” “Why can't you be like the other mothers?” Someone sneezed and my mother screamed, “You're making germs.” Then she said, “She looks like the doorman's baby.”

I pulled deep into my cuddle blanket and tried to wrap my arms around me but they went wild. I tried to pull my knees up as they had been but the blanket was too tight. My heart was pouring out, but I went underneath it. I hid there from my mother. I crouched underneath my heart until I needed her milk.

How do I remember all this about being born and before? I don't know for sure but it is possible that the fetus-me and infant-me picked up my mother's attitudes and also the environment. Parts of my brain recorded the sounds and voices, which older personalities in my mind are translating as I put these memories together. All that I write is part of my adult journey of recapturing what has happened. I describe infant reality in adult language because the infants and adults in me are telling this story together. Traumatic memory is more chiseled than ordinary memory. Traumatic memory doesn't wash away, and dissociated traumatic memory, or memory that isn't remembered at first, contains the boldest lines and the sharpest details.

The first splits, 1943

In the apartment in Pleasant Hills, I lay in a large crib so I must have been between three and six months old because I was out of my bassinette. I

knew my parents, my sister, and my handler. My relatives and handler gathered around my crib with purpose. Other shadowy presences were there, including the master programmer, Wiezenslowski. We were all in the larger bedroom my sister and I shared. Well-ironed white organdy curtains covered the two windows. Beams that I worried would fall on me protruded from the ceiling. We had two single maple beds and Mother, with her artistic eye, had hung Victorian prints of ladies in crinoline flared skirts. The narrow kitchen was pink and green, the living room bleak and gray. The air was also gray. My parents made the dining room overlooking the waterfall into their cramped bedroom. The basement or garden apartment was large enough for children but the adults lived constrained, one on top of another, with little privacy or solitude.

In this family I was born into, children had to be controlled. I am not talking about behaving-well-controlled. Children had to become marionettes of countless pieces strung together tightly, each string wrapped around someone's finger and pulled fiercely. Inside the pieces in my head, I had always heard babies sucking. Babies inside my brain pushed to come out. Sucking to hold onto life.

Little hands emerge stretching out, calling me now. I cannot turn my back and abandon them. No, I will travel into their countries of fear and exhaustion. I will believe what they bravely tell me even if my life as I know it will turn to wax, and the people in my world will melt and disappear. I can find the people inside me who have never known life. I can retrieve my forgotten, abandoned selves.

For over sixty years, I remembered nothing about my reversed, false Kabbalah foundation. Then one day recently, I awoke early in the morning and saw in my mind a shiny black material going over my tiny body in my familiar crib and Mrs. Twartski's tough hands. My infant-self was fascinated by the different colors within the black that undulated in the air, and the memory of this programming unfurled like the satin material.

Mrs. Twartski was a short, stout immigrant from somewhere in Poland, perhaps Galicia, where one grandfather was born, or Belarus, where one grandmother was born, but not from Budapest, where the other side of the family was born. She lived in a ground floor apartment across the courtyard. Each morning, she leaned out of her kitchen window that was close to the grass and said good morning to my mother. Each evening, she leaned out and asked my mother how her day went. They may have talked

in between too. Her husband was a shadowy thin man who usually wore a business suit and conservative tie.

Mrs. Twartski started the mind-control programming when I was being nursed by my mother. She pulled me off Mother's nipple repeatedly until I went into a rage. When I was back in the crib, Mrs. Twartski held a bottle for me and then had Aunt Mimi pull it away. She also took off my warm pajamas and left me in the crib cold and naked and without comfort. Mrs. Twartski gave me a cuddly toy. I liked the way it felt. It was not as good as a mother but it was better than nothing. Aunt Mimi pulled it away. I tried to hold on but she was much stronger. “Give me that toy,” she said over and over. I became angrier and angrier. Wiezenslowski came in. “The jacks will be her card,” he said. He laid down four and said, “The blacks, for killing, the reds, for sex.” He tried to seal my fate. He channeled my anger into distinct internal personalities whom he could access whenever he wanted.

Later, I was still in my crib and hadn't had a bottle for a long time. Adults were doing things to my body with instruments. Alison said they were probably taking my blood pressure and heart rate. Mrs. Twartski was always there. Wiezenslowski was there sometimes. Then they used my mother. She fed my sister Marlene conspicuously as I with hunger pangs watched from the crib. I went into despair.

“She was supposed to get angry. Never mind, we can use this,” Mrs. Twartski said and showed me a card with a picture of a beautiful angel in blue.

“This angel helps you with your sorrow.” She pointed to my tears and wiped the left side of my face with her pudgy fingers. “Follow the angel always.” Then she turned to the adults and said, “We just established the basis of suicide programming. We already have enough anger to make her a killer.”

The “killer” training was mind-killing or psychic killing. They tricked me into believing that I could kill with my mind.

Mrs. Twartski came into our pale blue bedroom. I waited in my crib near the two windows overlooking the courtyard and waterfall. I wasn't wearing a diaper. It was night and the birds were quiet.

Mrs. Twartski picked me up. Her hands were strong, determined, and blistered. They were the hands of a laborer. I was naked and my legs dangled. I liked the feel of my blanket but she left it in the crib. She handed me to my Uncle Richard. He was like a giant so I was high up in the air. My

legs were free and moving. Uncle Richard just held me there. His hands were not chapped and rough, but they were mean hands that didn't seem to like babies. Nothing happened. I just dangled in space. The air was quiet and still. It was dark in the room and outside the window.

Mrs. Twartski grasped my left foot. I felt her fingernails. She twisted it the way years later my sister and schoolmates would give my wrists “Indian burns”. Something snapped, perhaps her fingers. I heard the word “good”. The “good” came from my trainer, the woman who had taken over my life, the woman to whom my parents had to turn me over. They had no choice. They kept me but gave me away. They must have also been trained from birth.

I heard a sharp sound cutting the air, a blade slicing the invisible. My chest heaved and my tiny caterpillar legs curled underneath me. Once I began crying, I couldn't stop, the way later, when anger poked out, it wouldn't stop. I cried until I lost my breath and then cried breathlessly and in chokes. A piece of me popped away. Now there were two of me, the crying-gasping-for-air baby and this other baby, parallel to me but not me.

“Cynthia,” Mrs. Twartski said. “Walk by her. I'm putting her back in the crib. Walk by her without making eye contact, without looking at her. Keep walking by her, back and forth without one bit of eye contact until I say stop.”

Mother walked by. She was wearing one of her pretty cotton dresses with flowers. She always looked beautiful. Her hair was still black. When she turned thirty, her hair would start to gray but not yet. Later she became a redhead, which brought out the greenness of her hazel eyes. Mother walked by and she didn't look at me and didn't care that I was in my crib screaming and I couldn't catch my breath and there was another part of me dangling in the air and that dangling part wouldn't come back. She didn't care because I was no good. If she didn't love me, no one would love me. She walked by me with her pretty flowers on her dress and her black hair. She walked by as if I were Father's Camel cigarette butt tossed to the ground. I gasped harder. Mrs. Twartski—my only mother now—picked me up and tapped with her fat, squat hand on my back. I began to calm down and let some air float into me. That other part of me would not come back, the perpetually crying, floating part that they named “Jane”.

“The infant is too delicate. We need a stronger child. I won't use Jane,” Mrs. Twartski said. I felt a cold hush in the room. From the moment I came

out into this lighted world, I felt a silence that meant that people thought I was not adequate. It was the way I looked. Now it was also my crying. They didn't like my crying. The more they didn't like it, the more I couldn't stop.

I smelled harsh cigarette smoke. It burned my swollen eyes and insides around my heart. It filled the gray air. All the windows and Venetian blinds were closed. They wanted no one looking in.

Uncle Richard wore a long hooded black robe. So did Mrs. Twartski, Uncle Sidney, and my father, who smoked constantly. Decades later, I would realize this was a religious ceremony. Uncle Richard took me out of the crib and dangled me again. Mrs. Twartski grasped my left leg, which swung loosely in the air. She pulled my loose skin as if I were a chicken. She pulled it and pulled it. I tried to be tough and fight her but I couldn't stay in myself and flew away from myself again. This time I flew further away from my body.

“There she is. Seal it. I can keep this one,” Mrs. Twartski said. “Her name is Pam.”

When she said “Seal it,” Uncle Richard shot something strong through my body that I later in life recognized as electricity. The flash of it ripped through me, shredding me. It cemented the part of me that went away. She had split a part of me away. She had taken a part of me for herself. A numbness settled over me.

Electroshock is like searing raw meat in hot oil before you simmer or bake it.

It causes pain without leaving marks.

Mrs. Twartski laid me back in the crib. I shivered and peed down my legs. As soon as I cried, she said, “Cynthia, walk past her again. Don't look at her. You slowed down a little last time. No lingering or feeling. This is surgery. We don't feel. You do this right or we will kill her on the spot. It's so easy to kill a baby. They suffocate in less than three minutes. If you don't behave, we will kill your other one too. The whole family is so damn sensitive. I don't have these problems with my other clients.”

I saw that my mother who had started out tough was breaking down like the Jane part of me. Mother was crying. My mother with her beautiful flowers and graceful gait walked by without looking at me, but I felt her heart breaking for me. I felt her wanting to scoop me out of the crib and hold me even though she didn't like my skin and didn't think I was pretty.

Mother didn't look but she slowed down by my crib. She even touched the rail when she walked by. Her hand looked graceful, like a white swan.

Uncle Sidney, who had been quiet until now, leaped forward and punched my mother in the jaw. She screamed, and everyone, even Father, told her to shut up, that the neighbors might hear. Mrs. Twartski made a big movement with her arms and Uncles Sidney and Richard pushed Mother onto a desk's wooden chair, tied her delicate hands and legs, and gagged her. My father did nothing to stop them. Uncle Sidney and my father had big round bellies. They turned the chair so that her back was to me. She still made wild sounds through the gag.

“Another misstep, Cynthia, and we will kill Marlene.”

Mrs. Twartski waved a color in front of my face. It was a bold, bright green. She hung a pocket of the same rich color on the side of my crib. She and Uncle Sidney flashed two cards before me. When I was older, I recognized the pictures on the cards as birds flying, one getting caught in eaves. The birds were also on the green pocket hanging on the railing of my crib. Mrs. Twartski put on a black apron over her robe with a shape covering her breasts. Around the shape was the color green. I had never seen the shape before. The shape had a line going down and a line on the top going across. The top line pointed to the windows. When I was older, I recognized this shape on Mrs. Twartski's apron as a Khaf in the Hebrew alphabet. All the time my father smoked Camel cigarettes. So did Uncle Sidney.

To separate each new infant Mrs. Twartski or one of my uncles performed a different kind of torture: twisting, burning, pulling, squashing, suffocating, sticking needles in me, or spinning me, then sealing each split with electroshock. Uncle Sidney put something cold and smooth in my ear. It made a high pitched screeching sound like an animal dying. I couldn't bear it. Every split left a gulf between me and my part. The splits came faster and faster. I had no more outrage or resistance. I was broken into pieces of me. I was a full adult before I went back to share the infants' pain. I am the infants.

Mrs. Twartski showed each new infant she detached from the core of me a color, a card, and a symbol. Each of these separated infants was a root from which an entire tree of parts with a particular purpose would grow.

Perhaps Mother's tiny bit of empathy allowed the programming to dissolve gradually. Her feeling for this withdrawn, afraid, bred-for-a-

purpose infant, however slight the feeling—perhaps it was only a blip in the otherwise seamless structure, a kink in the otherwise carefully constructed world—allowed freedom to creep in.

“We will need a queen, you know. You will be our next queen only because of your bloodline though you would never know it from who your mother is.” Mrs. Twartski pinched my neck until I gasped and could no longer breathe, put the sound prong in my left ear, and caught the split.

“The prophets said Cynthia's second child will reign, not the first, not the third, just the second. It is ordained.”

Electroshock is like a virulent force of nature that saws through the body, its unstoppable pain leaving one thwarted, paralyzed. When a deliberate electroshock occurs, everything—all development, awareness, feelings of humanity—stops. A part of the mind is stunned and arrested in that moment and isn't aware of anything but itself.

The irregular shapes were like a rainbow, as I scattered over my crib in the air—I could almost reach out and touch the different me's looking down at my body. Like stars watching on a dark night, almost touchable but not touchable—my body and selves were parallel and not the same.

“Now the last one. We now dedicate her to Lucifer, our Lord and Master.” They all started humming something excited. Their robes swayed sideways as if they were dancing. One by one they took off their black robes. First Father, then Uncle Richard, Sidney, then strangers I didn't know yet. People returned from the other room but not my mother. My mother was no longer my mother. It left a hole in me that never stopped yearning. Even when I will be old and dying, I will have this sadness.

Mrs. Twartski twisted my head off away from my body while I still lay in the crib. As she twisted, when I came to the point of wanting to die, she showed me the picture of the beautiful smiling angel in light blue and a second card with a picture of a beautiful sunset in pinks, golds, and reds.

“This angel will make everything all right for you. Follow him.” The angel had a halo around him as if he were straight out of heaven from God. I would learn that this heaven was not the heaven of the regular world. In that world, people get to heaven by doing good things or by the grace and forgiveness of God. In this world my family belongs to, people get to “heaven” by doing bad things. The worse people were, the more they were valued here.

Mrs. Twartski gave some signal and one by one the people laid their robes over me. As the black fluttered, I saw silver, white, and purple in it. I didn't have enough smoky air to breathe. My sheet was black, my covers were black. The robes lay sticky and heavy on top of me. They smelled of men's sweat. Mrs. Twartski counted to thirteen. She reached under all the robes and put her fingers on my throat.

“Take the robes off her. She is still alive. An angel intervened. She will be our next queen. It's ordained,” Mrs. Twartski declared.

My body betrayed me too. I did not suffocate.

“Hail to the queen.”

“Hail to the infant queen.”

“Hail to the witch of witches.”

“Our ancestors are proud.”

“Hail to our lines of witches.”

“You will make us proud.” Mrs. Twartski stretched out her five fingers, then one finger, and said, “Cursed be any man who disturbs what is set.”

This memory has crawled out of me slowly but deliberately over days. After each memory sequence finishes, I feel exhilarated for a few hours, then exhausted and blurry for days. Even as I recover, my inside organizers are pulling up the parts who hold the next batch of dissociated memories. Once this process breaks free, it unleashes. It is a difficult form of labor.

Thirteen of me lay disconsolate in the crib. The part who was too delicate and thrown away, “Jane,” hovered by the side.

Mother closed the windows especially quietly. It must have been the middle of the night. I followed her seamless moves with my eyes. She left again and came back with Marlene.

“I don't want to go to sleep. I want to stay with the grownups,” Marlene said, and cried.

Mother put her in her big-child bed and tucked her in. I heard a kiss. Then she came to my crib, her head hanging down.

“Don't touch her,” Mrs. Twartski said from the doorway. “No holding or touching for forty-eight hours.” Mother turned her back and walked away. I saw her glance back at Marlene sleeping in her bed.

Mrs. Twartski came to my crib and put a white blanket next to me. She picked me up—I didn't like being close to her face—and put me on top of the white blanket. She pressed both her crusty thumbs into my ribs. The touch hurt. All thirteen of my parts pulled away from her. This would be

one of the last times all parts of me were in unison. The infant blanket felt good, as if I were held. I pulled away from Mrs. Twartski and sank into the safe blanket. She wrapped it tightly around me and pulled out my left arm so that my mouth could reach my thumb. I sucked furiously. All thirteen parts at this moment wanted the same thing. I rooted my mouth over my thumb and sucked until the world with all these people left and only the vacuum between my mouth and thumb existed, as I drifted away in infant sleep. I could comfort myself. I could find comfort in soft material and my own body. I did not need people.

The pictures spun in my head. I saw the yellow rose and the death card together, a skeleton riding on a horse. A circle of dancing children and parents coupled with a landscape frozen with ice translated into “Only here will I have a family and friends, nowhere else in the world.” A card of a naked handcuffed girl with rats told me I would be a sexual slave. All the colors and letters and pictures crashed down on my mind. The joker, hanged man, ace of spades, quarter moon with stars, seagulls flying over an ocean, and candle holder spun around me laughing. I was so filled with electricity that I became an electricity baby.

Flashlight demons

Primarily religious, these criminal groups believe in demonic entities and the supreme beings of Satan and Lucifer. They also believe in their enemies, God and Jesus and the masses of good angels.

Although they believe that these entities are invisible, they make representations of them for children. This kind of programming starts in infancy and continues throughout early childhood. Children's gullible young minds are caught in the snare of preposterous beliefs.

The infant lies in its crib. The room is dark. The programmers give the child a small bottle of water laced with psychedelics. It tastes bitter but the child is hungry, dehydrated and drinks it. Shadows of huge “birds” (at first called “birdies”) cover the walls. The birds fly around the room, go through and into the terrified infant. The infant hears hooting sounds, smells something like tar burning. Suddenly an excruciating electroshock comes out of nowhere. The relative who secretly administered it says “The demons did that to you. They bit you. If you love them, they will stop.” The infant

looks up and sees a red eye as large as the room. The relatives say “Satan's eye is always watching you.”

The child doesn't know that flashlights and cameras, tinted lenses and colored paper over flashlights, hand puppets and large puppets on poles and handles formed these illusions. The programmers reinforce this core training recurrently and consider it necessary for the creation of paralyzed, mindless automatons. When the children grow up and when the adults in them figure out what happened, the adult parts will have to coax their child parts to release their frozen terror and cognitive distortions.

During a therapy session, Alison showed me how a flashlight could make shapes that would trick a child to believe in demons invading the crib. I had no idea that children in me lived in this arrested, fabricated terror.[1]

Note

1. The late Stella Katz gives a detailed explanation of how programmers create the illusion of resident demons in children under five in A. Miller (2012). *Healing the Unimaginable: Treating Ritual Abuse and Mind Control* (pp. 107–108). London: Karnac.

FOUR

The difference

Security programming

When I was almost two years old and lying in my crib, every person I knew put a needle in my gums. My sister put it in hard. Some of the grownups put it in roughly, others gently. A boy I hadn't met yet who lived in the same building pretended to put the needle in. He whispered to me to cry, and we fooled the adults. I thought we even fooled Satan whose eye shone above my crib all night and who watched everything I did. My father projected the eye onto the ceiling. His projector made shadows on the wall to terrify me.

In my conscious mind and ordinary life as an adult, I remembered nothing of this boy Daniel, the most important person in my life. But he touched and taught every insider. Insiders are parts or personalities in the brain living underneath the front person and hidden from normal life. They do the bidding of the cult trainers and usually do not know about the front person. The front person is the part of the mind assigned the task of living in normal life. The front person doesn't know there are insiders.

In the late 1980s, I am in bed in my 108th Street Manhattan apartment and writing in my journal. My hand starts drawing. It draws the silhouette of a tall, lean, curvy boy. I add a mass of dark curls and deep, haunting dark eyes. I dress him in well-fitting black pants, a cracked leather belt, skimpy shoes, and a V-neck machine-made sweater. Under the picture, I write “Daniel David Baker”. Then I sob. My front person doesn't know what is going on. My insiders have begun to talk. It is as if Daniel has come back from the dead to guide me.

They put needles in my gums to teach me that I was not allowed to tell anyone about Satan or what we do. I would feel dental pain if I even thought of straying. Every bit of my programming addressed security. Joseph, another of my handlers, gave me a little voodoo doll and told me to put a needle in its chest, on the left side. The doll represented me. He shocked my heart with electricity and told me to feel those pains if I ever got close to remembering and telling. After a while, he didn't use the needles and electricity and just told me to feel the pain. I had to watch a metronome going back and forth hypnotizing me as my uncles and father

chanted, “Don't tell, don't know.” All through my recovery until I consciously remembered this training, I had dental and chest pains as I approached new memories.

Dedicated and marked

I watched as my grandfather made the bed furthest away from me into a ritual arena. My sister slept in the other bed, closer to my crib. She was seven and I was three. He placed a thick white towel over the pulled-tight white sheet. He took two shiny silver swords with fancy handles and placed them on the sides of the towel and polished the rubies and emeralds on the handles with his handkerchief from his pocket. He patted everything down and measured with his eye, like a dressmaker. He glanced at me but didn't smile, left and flicked off the light by the doorway. I lay in the dark, trying to reach the mobile with my wiggling legs and looking at this world through the bars on my crib.

The neighborhood was shrouded in darkness. There were different kinds of black, the blacks of restfulness, sleep, death, evil. Across the courtyard, light surrounded Mr. Jacobs' apartment, a rocking peaceful shimmer of gold. The rest of the neighborhood had particles of evil forming a solemn and lugubrious aura.

My grandmother entered furtively, glancing quickly behind her. She took something out of her dress pocket and rubbed it on the towel with her squat, strong hands. She wore rubber gloves, the kind Mother and Mrs. Mathies cleaned in.

My mother stood in the doorway holding a bottle for me. She also looked as if she had been rushing. My grandmother looked up from her rubbing and said sharply, “Cynthia, go away for a while.” My mother, always obedient to her mother, turned around and went away with my bottle. I felt angry and swallowed hard out of thirst.

Grandma lifted the ceremonial sword closest to me and put something on its tip with the same rag that she then tucked back in her pocket. She placed the sword in its exact spot, straightened it a bit more, peeled off her gloves, and rushed out, switching off the overhead light.

Hours later, after I'd had my bottle and slept some more, the ritual began for my second dedication. My grandfather lifted me from my crib. He wore a purple robe and looked to me like a girl. His hands felt dry and rough,

though his nails were always perfectly manicured. He placed me on the towel on the bed prepared for the ritual. It burned my skin and I cried, but he and everyone else continued as if nothing had happened. I felt my back turn red and crinkly. Grandpa Max and Uncle Harry, also wearing a purple robe, each held a sword with a jeweled handle. Only men were present but Mrs. Twartski stood in the doorway.

They held the swords with tips touching and forming a V over my baby body. They touched the tips together, then moved them to the left side, right side, and center again, all while chanting “Hail Satan, hail Satan, hail to the master of the universe, hail to our guardian Lucifer who foresees all events in his dominion.” Then it all started again. “Hail Satan…” with the curtains billowing and their voices rising to a pitch of frenzy, each hail more impassioned than the last. They seemed to rise off the floor, and sweat poured from their faces. With the tip of his sword, Grandpa made a slit on my stomach and chanted, “Bless this womb that it may provide an heir for Lucifer's kingdom.” That's when the angels took me above the waterfall, and I felt what happened in other people's apartments, and the goodness that came out of Mr. Jacobs' apartment. We stayed there for a long time in a peaceful, delicate mood. When I was in the sky far away from this bed, I felt something higher that was pure and good, and I reached to get there. But that golden, inviting space said, “Go back,” and I was falling, tumbling. I heard the chanting and clanging and was enraged.

When I somehow returned to my body, a doctor was there with my parents and grandparents. They called my grandfather by his nickname that I had not heard before: Wily Max. My grandfather was not wearing any one of his masks. Just as I returned, the doctor told my relatives that I would be all right. I felt a leftover peacefulness from my excursion and also a sorrow all mixed together.

“Wily-Willy-Wily-Max, you've still got a granddaughter,” everyone cheered. But the doctors said I had a fever of 104 degrees. The doctors gave me medicine, and put ice on my feet because they considered the fever more dangerous than the rash all over my body.

I had this memory in May 2013. I hadn't known that my grandfather was the infamous international traveling programmer who ruined many people's minds. I thought he was just an unlikable grandparent who pinched. It is a hard adjustment. As a child, I remembered this well-known master programmer traveling around, programming me; and as an adult, I heard of

other survivors who had a similar experience. Then I had a memory in which this Wiezenslowski, who is the same person as Willy Max and Wily Max, peeled off one of his masks, and a second one underneath the first, and there was my grandfather. I wonder whether Hitler had granddaughters and whether they and I could form a support group.

“The kingdom will proceed, hail Lucifer, hail Lucifer, hail Lucifer…”

The clanging ritual swords formed a roof over me. A rash appeared all over my body. It formed almost straight lines the length of my body, wrapping around my feet.

“It's a bad omen,” Mrs. Twartski said.

My father came in, “We'll say she has the chicken pox, that she caught it from Marlene who had a very mild case.” When my mother came in, she saw the rash and screamed. She pulled Marlene away by the arm and would not let her near me.

Now it is 2013 and I am in an airplane flying to Alison Miller. The plane is crowded and cramped. I find a vacant seat next to a young couple with a baby boy. I guess the other passengers don't want to sit next to a baby.

Grandpa called everyone into the big bedroom where I lay with my rash that went right to the bone. It felt as if the rash ate up my body. Grandma sat on the edge of the mattress where they performed the ritual. Mrs. Twartski tapped with her fingers in sequence on the wood desk. I lay back in my crib looking through the bars. Grandpa tried to find out what had happened to me. He was adamant. Mrs. Twartski tapped louder and faster and also shook her crossed-over top leg faster and faster. He asked my grandmother, his wife, whether she had done this, meaning caused my rash. She answered “No,” and resented the question. He asked my mother, and she shook her head furiously. He asked her whether she knew what had happened or whether she had seen anyone alone with me, perhaps when she went to give me the pre-ritual bottle. Grandma's eyes latched on Mother, and Mother continued to shake her head. Grandpa said, “I am getting nowhere and this is a grave offence and a serious investigation.” Mrs. Twartski stopped tapping and shaking. She stood up and hooked her arm under Mother's and walked her down the hall outside the bedroom. Mrs. Twartski was going to do something to my mother but I didn't know what. Mother appeared docile. Grandma frowned deeply and looked as if she wasn't there anymore. Grandpa walked over to my crib, looked me over, and made a disgusted sound in his mouth.

Around April 2013, a month before my next therapy intensive, a rash starts on my right foot around my big toe. After a week or two, it spreads to my chin and neck. I have straight lines of rash over my body and go to my holistic doctor.

The doctor isn't sure what kind of rash I have. The rash isn't poison ivy, shingles, a fungus, or from gluten. It is a body memory of this dedication ritual. The mind is that strong.

In the airplane, flying over the states, the rash on my hip sends out shoots. It becomes a blossoming flower.

They tied Grandma to a chair in her own living room, gagged, and Grandpa whipped her. He said everyone there had to take a turn; Father, Aunt Mimi, eventually me. He held his hands over mine and we whipped her around her calves. He said to her, “We'll mark up your skin the way you marked up hers.” Mother received a punishment in their small bedroom for not snitching on her mother.

That night, they wrapped me in a white blanket, put me in the stroller and walked me to the ritual site in Old Pleasant Hills, off Enterprise Avenue, one and a half miles away. It was after midnight and the only people on the streets were families also hurrying to the site. Children sat in strollers and parents carried babies. Older children walked behind their parents. Everyone rushed quietly. When we got to the ritual site, my mother picked me up out of the stroller and carried me in. The crowds chanted, “Hail to the queen's mother, hail to the mother of the queen.” The crowds wore black robes and swayed like waves in the ocean. Even when my mother picked me up and carried me to the raised platform and everyone cheered and chanted—even then, she did not seem proud of me, just proud of the attention she received.

The mother and father sitting next to me on the plane are absorbed in their baby. They watch their baby's finger movements and beam every time he moves or gurgles or burps.

At the ritual in the courtyard near the train station, Grandpa took me from Mother's stiff, bony arms, removed the cuddle blanket, and held me high up. Doctors in the congregation spotted my rash and rushed over in their black hooded robes.

“It's poison ivy.”

“Or poison oak.”

“Or poison sumac.”

One of the doctors put calamine lotion on me.

“It's a pity,” another doctor said. “It's such an important festival.”

The rash hurt more and more, turned butterfly colors and spread.

“Poor little butterfly,” someone said.

“It's an omen,” Mrs. Twartski repeated.

“She should go to the hospital.”

“We can't take her to the hospital.”

My grandfather insisted he could see lines he had made underneath the rash. He needed a prophetic sign.

Rituals adhered to tight schedules. As part of my consecration as the mother of the future heir, Grandpa put me on the altar with snakes and bugs that hurt my skin more. The sacrifice always signaled the beginning of the festivities. To signify the importance of this ritual, there were two victims slaughtered simultaneously. The two killings had to take place at exactly the same moment. If anyone were too fast or too slow, they would have had to sacrifice other people until the executioners got it right. The tall man, who must have been the executioner, held his hand over my tiny hand. We held the sword at the first altar and my grandfather was at the parallel one. On one altar lay a drugged or dead six-year-old boy and a baby was on the other. I didn't want to kill those people. I wanted to be the one who died. The executioner plunged the weapon into the dead or sleeping child's body and Grandpa Max killed the baby. Through his masks, his underface turned into a tiger's as his beads of sweat turned red and purple. I can see now that these were lighting and film effects, but I thought it was real then. The sacrificial blood the tall man poured over my body stung my rash. They made us all drink the blood. Everyone cheered, then began a frenzy of dancing and chanting. I looked at my hands; they seemed like strangers. No one yet had told me that killing was wrong, but something in my soul recoiled and my heart had another pain right down its center. My wrists felt exhausted from the inside out. My hands wanted to fall off. Rage could have split me open.

I vomited. I didn't want the boy and baby killed, but other people were in a high religious state that built as the tall man lifted me and turned slowly to the left, holding my ribs too tightly. The air was cold. I felt alone even though a man held me up and I saw the tops of many robed heads. I tried to make friends with the stars checkering the midnight sky. I wanted to touch the stars. A longing almost ripped my body open. A sadness swallowed me.

I cried. My father, who was near the platform, frowned and looked worried. He had told me not to cry. “Little queens grow into big queens. Little queens are princesses and princesses don't cry.”

The tall man kept rotating me as the black river of robes chanted. When he put me down, doctors ran up to me with their stethoscopes, IVs, artificial respiration breathing tubes, oxygen masks, and something like Demerol, which made everything look as if I were floating above water. Seven more people split from me and hung out in the black sky above the branches away from my body. I came back to my body filled with iciness. They were not letting me die.

A machine pressed on my chest. Over my face, a hand held something down which got my lungs to work. I pushed as hard as I could against his arm. I felt myself shrinking in.

All these ritualized procedures are ordained and performed in a certain sequence at an exact time according to ancient rules. After the doctors worked on me, and I revived, my grandfather attached a ring to my pierced left nipple and said, “If she lives or if she dies, I dedicate her to Satan and consecrate her to Lucifer. If she dies, her bones will return to Lucifer and be made into ash.” As the ring went into my skin and I bled, I wanted to kill him but I passed out again, and the doctors started all over. The same doctors who cheered the sacrifices tried to save my life once more. They whipped their heads around with authority as if they were in a hospital and said my grandfather would have to leave. Grandpa Max shouted, “I will not leave my own ritual site.” My father and uncles took him away screaming.

After I was revived, Mrs. Twartski began the mind control. My brain recorded Mrs. Twartski's words, and when I recalled the memory, I finally knew what she meant. “You had the chicken pox. You caught it from your sister. If you ever remember this ritual, your hands and feet will be chopped off.” A little later, my father returned with the car to take me home.

The doctor said my nipple was infected and he set up an IV with a bag on a stand by my crib. My parents strapped my arms down so that I couldn't scratch. My grandfather stood by my crib sobbing into his well-ironed handkerchief. The infection spread and everyone expected me to die. A big white bird flew through the window and perched on the railing of my crib, like a stork. I thought it had come to take me away the way it had brought me. It lifted me by the diaper and we went up into the blue sky. My grandfather folded the joints of his fingers and examined his nails.

Everyone felt sorry for me for having chicken pox during such an important ritual in 1946.

As soon as I recovered, my grandfather began the preparation for my use as a government servant.

Butterflies for monarchs

Children had to emulate butterflies. We didn't dance in costumes doing little routines in ballet shoes on elementary schools' stages. We were strung up in the air like the murdered prison guard in the movie *Silence of the Lambs*. It took three men to hoist up one child. One man held the child who was being attached to a ceiling hook, and two other men attached the child's wrists and ankles to ropes and clamps on either side. They had to fasten the child's arms simultaneously, because a limb could be dislocated if one side was done before the other. This positioning happened to many children, teenagers, and even young women. I saw them in politicians' hidden chambers. Perhaps these male criminals identified with the kingly aspects of the monarch butterfly, dominant in the butterfly skies, whose drenched coloring is breathtaking and majestic.

This secret, deep training took place in my grandparents' second bedroom, his unofficial office. In this second bedroom, where non-relatives were not permitted, my grandfather often did not disguise himself with the masks and personalities he presented to the criminal cult world. He was just his sadistic self, mean and raw. He liked to work in contained, private environments, but sometimes he demonstrated to his sons-in-law. And he needed their help getting me strung up. To start, he held me over his lap and gave me an injection in the same spot he always used, the left side of the lumbar spine. “You tilt the needle up and head for the bone. It doesn't matter how much they scream. It's supposed to hurt,” he said to my uncles.

“Are you a butterfly?” he asked me.

“No.” Even though I was starved and physically weakened, I answered, “I'm a little girl.” Often as the body weakens, the spirit gets stronger. But when the body passes out, the spirit can't do much. My answer earned me more electroshock, spinning, and then being strung up by him and two uncles. All that might have happened anyway. Being in the air, even when held up by a hook and ropes, increases dizziness and disorientation. My uncles told me I had to flutter my wings, but I couldn't because the straps

were taut. Before I was strung up, I had to balance on one foot and wave my arms as if they were wings flapping in the air. It was a little dance, sometimes fun.

For the first timed training session when I was three years old in 1946, shortly before Daniel entered my life, I hung for two minutes. My grandfather always timed it with his stopwatch. He built my suspension gradually to sixty minutes, then ninety, then 120. He needed to create endurance for when the “monarchs” of the world would want to use me. While I was suspended, he stretched my two orifices with rods of gradually increasing widths. My grandfather wanted his specimens to be perfectly pleasing.

I was very sore. So were my muscles and bones. I often had rashes, infections, and dislocated joints; but worst of all, I felt like a rag to dirty and throw away. I felt that that was the reason I was born, to be used up. If I was being prepared for “monarchs,” then this was too big to fight. How do you even fight your parents? My grandfather gave my father cash on his way out, and he said to one of my uncles that soon his daughter would have this same training, meaning he'd get cash too. Powerful people must have been paying my grandfather, and he would give the legal fathers a cut of it.

After my grandfather spun the drugged young me, and finished with his other tortures of a head vise and putting me in a freezing compartment, he said to these shivering parts with head pain, “Spin, little butterfly, spin over there. You are on a long string, a pole flying hither and there. Dangle little butterfly. You are no longer a girl. Forget about having curls. You are an insect, pure and simple, made for man's use. Listen to the wives, but do as the man says. Always listen to your Grandma, but it's only I who gives orders. Forget about your father. But the rulers, our monarchs, those are men. You do what they say. Bring honor to your family. Perform your duties. It won't hurt. You are prepared. Everything is stretched. You are a perfect specimen stretched under glass, pinned in the air. Now fly, little butterfly, and do my bidding for the sake of your family.” He created thirty-six butterflies in me. At the political offices, silent girls of various ages who were the butterflies had to stay in a cage until the wives of the politicians called us out.

All of this is coming out in writing. These parts can't speak. I'm writing from my journals. Our butterfly wings flap against the wires of the cage. We're all in the same big cage.

In his second bedroom, my grandfather had an open book of photographs of butterflies, and he wanted my body painted like one. He instructed my artistic Aunt Mimi where to paint. With poster and finger paint, she drew thick black lines and put red, green, pink, blue, or yellow inside, according to his instructions. He especially liked orange, the color for government privilege. He left my backside and legs unpainted. Grandpa was delighted with this innovation. “I should have done this long ago. I should have done this to all you girls.” To me, Grandpa said, “I should have done this to your mother.” Then he talked to himself even though we were still there. “What a unique idea, what an invaluable idea. I'll be a millionaire.” His eyes were visionary but framed in sadism, insanity, and greed. Before I went home, my grandmother had to scrub the paint off me in the bathtub, as she muttered, “Another one of his crazy ideas.” Paint bled onto the porcelain of the tub, which she also had to scrub. The paint clumped on human skin, and pieces fell off.

The wife of one of the monarchs was appalled when a clump landed on her dress. She then would have no part in painted girls, whose painted-on-naked-skin costumes might get dye or chunks of paint on the staff's or her designer clothes.

Half a century later, video sex-symbol stars entertain dressed in butterfly wings painted with the new technologies and deliver secret messages to new generations of victims.

The difference

I do not believe that I ever would have known there was such a thing as love on earth, that people could be kind, that there was a divine presence that lived through people—never would I have known had it not been for a tall, thin boy with dark curly hair whom I first met when he pretended to put a needle in my gum and who became my friend when I was three years old, at the moment before my heart would have barricaded itself off.

He moved gracefully like a dancer or swimmer. He had pale white skin with an under-layer of rose, brown eyes with long lashes, and cherry-like lips. He was born into the same distorted world as I, but he somehow knew what love and compassion were, and he gave them to me. His mother was kind.

He knocked on our front door.

“My name is Daniel David Baker and I've come to play with Wendy.”

I looked at him through the bars in my crib, which was placed in the living room next to the planter that was also a room divider. It divided the foyer that was also our dining room from the living room. Usually, my crib was in the big bedroom that my sister slept in. His eyes looked sad, filled with sorrow. I didn't know why he was calling on me.

“I've come to play with Wendy,” he said again. “They sent me because my sister just died.” He was tall, narrow, and had a bouncy walk. My heart leapt out of my body. Perhaps there was a safe person in the world. He smiled at my mother and looked at me sideways. His eyes were like a velvet path. A new me was suddenly growing within. This glance was the one that changed my life. I went from being one of my family to being an outsider.

“Who sent you?” my mother asked.

“The masters,” the new boy answered. They bowed their heads a little, and the new boy entered our apartment that most people would have wanted to escape.

“She's three years old and often a bad girl,” my mother said.

“I'll be careful with her,” he answered.

“Come here, Wendy,” he said as he lifted me out of the crib. He smelled like the outdoors and leaves on the trees. His skin was very soft and didn't have hair on it. He wasn't an adult yet but he wasn't a child either. His cheeks were smooth, his hands gentle. My body snuggled into his shirt. He carried me walking back and forth in the gray living room. His body didn't jerk or move sharply. My body melted into his bones and flesh. It was the first time I had ever wanted to be held.

“It's okay, Wendy. I will take care of you,” he said.

Maybe he found me before it was too late. Maybe he would let me taste this thing that I didn't have but that I seemed to know about, even have a memory of. I felt my heart shed the plaster and brick walls that I had constructed. Windows opened, spring air entered, wild flowers in blues and greens sprouted inside me. I felt for the first time like a person with arms and legs and a stomach that didn't hurt and a face that could spread out. My body was feeling and singing and not just aching tight. I started crying.

“It's okay, Wendy. Cry if you want.”

The tall boy who came with trust even though he was sent—it was impossible but I felt safe with him even though I didn't know the word yet or have the concept. I wrapped my dangling legs around his thin waist.

When my father and grandfather carried me, I pushed away. Mother never carried me.

The tall boy carried me to the wing chair closer to the kitchen hallway. It had a washed-out blue corduroy cover over the chartreuse silk. Everything in the apartment was colorless except the chartreuse which Mother covered so it wouldn't get dirty. He sat down slowly, holding my back and backside. He pushed his back into the soft chair, leaned back, and let my front fall against him.

“Don't be afraid any more, Wendy. I'll take care of you,” he said.

His chest got large when he breathed in and hollow when he breathed out. I made my breath the same as his. I breathed faster than he did, so I held my breath at the top and the bottom waiting for him. I wondered whether this was what people called heaven, where it was peaceful and calm. I took a finger from my right hand and put it in the middle of one of his curls on his head. I circled it to the right and then the left. His hair felt like silk and the softest cotton. I took a curl and made a moustache on my lip. We both laughed. It felt delicious underneath my nose. My breath naturally slowed to match his and I didn't have to hold it anymore.

“You're a good girl, Wendy Sue, and I love you,” he sang.

Mother paced around the apartment. She watched me as if she were threading a needle. The fire in her smoldered within but did not lash out to burn. A barrier of angels or something kept her from charging in and ruining this too for me. I leaned my right ear onto the center of his heart. I heard his heartbeat, pulse, and breath all at once. My ear sucked in life and hope. I was not alone in a whirlwind. I matched my breath to his, he matched his breath to mine.

I moved my left hand up past the little buttons on his white shirt and reached my thumb into my mouth. I sucked hard while matching my breath to his and feeling his heart beat life into mine. I rode on his breath as if it were God's. It was. For me.

Cool air swam through the walls of the living room windows like love. Swans outside in the waterfall screeched, the sparrows chirped. I sucked away fear and torture. In this nest, my brain began to be silent. I drooled on his shirt.

Now as an adult, trying to sleep or in a crisis, my mind returns to the wing chair; I put my ear on his heart, I feel the up and down of his breath. I

surround the scene with pointy pine trees. I sleep. I smile. All else stays away from me. But thinking of him still makes frozen me immediately cry.

Daniel, the tall boy, visited me every day. One day he walked me out our front door, down the basement hall and into the elevator that was in front of the garbage room with the fiery furnace and next to the laundry room. He took my hand, which fit into his palm the way my breath matched his. He pressed the button for three. We got out of the elevator, made a sharp right turn, and rang his doorbell. His mother answered. She had the straightest back, her hair was pulled tight into a bun, and she wore plain, drab clothes. When she smiled, her eyes disappeared into her face. When she looked at me, her face got wet. Daniel took me into his parents' bedroom.

On the dresser in their bedroom, large compared to the other rooms in their apartment, was a small photograph of a little girl, maybe four or almost five. She looked like a nice little girl with dark thick curls, white, white skin, puffy cheeks, and big, round, startled, soft eyes. I couldn't tell the color because the photo was black and white. I would have liked this girl for a friend. She wore a white starched dress, pale ribbons that were probably pink, patent leather shoes, and white anklets with lace. Or the socks may have been pink to match the ribbons. Her eyes were soft. They drew you in through tunnels to different worlds. Worlds of love for her mother and brother, and fear of her father, monsters, demons, life. She wanted to hug her mother and dig her soft head into her chest. She wanted to cling to her brother and fold her body over him. Her patent leather shoes wanted to run and dance and fly. In this family, each child had the mother's good heart. She wanted to go to public school and learn, and then grow up and take the E train to Manhattan where she would work as a secretary. She would have lunch with the other secretaries, who would confide in her. She wouldn't marry a man like her father. She would have children like herself and her brother. She would have added a sweet pea smell to the earth had she lived. Maria, this Maria, this innocent with cheeks like plums, and eyes like blackberries, and lips like slices of peaches. Luscious girl. Miracle.

The word in the neighborhood was that she had died from a virus. Daniel told me they had killed her during a ritual when she turned six years old. His mother cried because I reminded her of her little lost girl. I must have reminded Daniel of her too. *Maybe they don't love me for myself,* I thought. *Maybe they are just lonely for a little girl. Maybe they love me because they have a hole in them.*

All summer, Daniel still came to my apartment every day and my mother let me sit on his lap in the armchair and suck my thumb. In the fall, when his school started again, I watched the clock and when the little hand was on the three and the big hand on the ten, I slipped out of the house with my shoes on, went out the main side door, turned right and walked to the corner and stood under the ancient maple tree whose branches bowed down like a willow's and whose samaras spiraled down to the cracked sidewalk. I stayed there, never crossing the street, eyes fixed like a terrier's on the corner down one block and across the street. I was on the corner of 108th Street and Sixty-Eighth Road. I looked to the corner of Sixty-Seventh Road and 108th Street and at five minutes after three, he was there wearing his jacket, carrying his school books, surrounded by boys his own age. When he reached the corner, his eyes looked for me. Our eyes were like sailboats floating toward each other, cementing together, locked. He left his school friends and walked toward my corner. Each day he said, “Did your mother see you leave the house?”

“No,” I said.

“I'll walk you home,” and we walked side by side down the sloping half block, through the side door into the hallway and then the door to my apartment that I had left unlocked. My mother knew I was out but pretended I had never left.

“Hello, Daniel. How about a snack?” she said. In my family, everyone got offered food. Mother took things away from me, everything I wanted, but she was letting me have Daniel. Why? She let me have what would be most valuable and irreplaceable.

Daniel and I sat at the kitchen table or on the love-seat in the foyer eating Dugan's wholewheat muffins with raisins and drinking Walker Gordon milk. Walker Gordon non-homogenized milk had disgusting clumps of cream floating in it but with Daniel everything tasted delicious. I've searched for those wholewheat muffins but never found them again, anywhere. The company must be out of business. I can still taste them. For years as an adult, I ate muffins for almost every meal and never knew consciously why I found them so comforting. Now that I have conscious memory, when I bite into a muffin, I cry.

Daniel sat on the loveseat doing homework and I watched him. I watched him swallow and frown and think. His Adam's apple protruded and then was flat when he swallowed. His writing had heavy curves and he stabbed

the paper with his pencils. Then we would sit on the wing chair with our hearts beating, breathing together, and I sucked my thumb.

Without this interlude, I would have been like my twisted family and not remember what happened or what I did or who I was. My brain would have stayed sealed into isolated and barricaded sections.

Our job was to get rid of the body parts. After the rituals, the butchers cut up the sacrifices into small pieces so that children could manage picking them up and throwing them away. It was always the children who scattered them around the neighborhood. At the ritual site, the men cut the bodies up and wrapped them in towels so the blood wouldn't seep out. They moved them to a storage bin in the concealed rooms off the furnace and laundry rooms. Daniel kept his Schwinn bicycle in his apartment on the third floor. He rode down with it in the elevator. My father and I were waiting when the doors opened. My father handed him the body parts that needed to be disposed of. Daniel put them in a basket on his bicycle. Then he and I walked the bicycle up the steep ramp to the sidewalk. Daniel was an expert bicycle rider and had strong arms too. And I was an excellent lookout even at 3 a.m. when we did this task. Sometimes we were out at 2 a.m. if it looked like it would rain early in the morning. He lifted me between him and the handlebars and we were off crossing 108th Street and heading toward the woods. No one was on the street. No buses, cars, pedestrians, police. Just us and the body parts that hadn't yet started to smell. I leaned my head onto Daniel's heart. My ear felt the throb of his heart beating fast. I didn't care what we did. I was safe with him. He would never hurt me. I would do anything for him.

He put the small parts like hands, feet, eyes, and tongues in the trash cans along 108th Street, Cobblestone and Enterprise Avenues. We stayed away from Paradise Boulevard because sometimes there was middle-of-the night traffic on that big road. The larger body parts we put in the woods where other people had dug holes. Later other children would fill the holes with dirt. The children's battalion had to do this chore because no one would suspect children of burying people or their body parts. I didn't care what we did as long as I could rest my head with my ear pressed onto his heart. But he cared. He cried when he pedaled. Tears wet his shirt. He said if we didn't do it, something worse would happen and they would kill me. He said he didn't care if they killed him but he didn't want them to kill me. The choice was always between two evils.

Daniel was so graceful and curvy; he looked a little like a girl. The men used to line up to put their penises in his rectum. I saw it at rituals and he spoke about it.

“He's the sweetest with the softest,” the men said, even my uncles and father. It made him want to die. It didn't just happen every now and then. It was another of his chores. I could keep living because of him, but I wasn't enough for him to keep living. Maybe if the real sister were still alive, that would have been enough for him. But she wasn't, and I wasn't enough.

We lived like this for one year, me walking unnoticed to the corner, my eyes latching onto his, our having milk and wholewheat muffins, wholewheat because my mother cared about nutrition and health, and my breathing with him while I sucked my thumb on the wing chair in the living room. I had a year to heal from the early ravages of not having love. Then he was turning thirteen, the year boys like Daniel were sacrificed. We knew it was coming. Everyone talked about it. It must have been December 1947.

All during that year, his mother did not knit him a sweater. She was a seamstress and made all the clothes for her family, even her husband's. Daniel's slacks always fit perfectly. She kept a dummy and a sewing machine in the corner of her dining room. She often had a tape measure hanging around her neck. Baskets of wool were everywhere in the apartment. A glass jar held a mass of knitting needles, their heads and numbers pointing up proudly.

“The children who are the most loved are put on the altar first,” Mrs. Baker said. “I should not have dressed Maria so well. I will stop knitting him sweaters. I will not put home baked bread and desserts in his lunch bag. I will not touch him in public. Maybe we can fool them and they'll let him live longer,” she said out loud but to herself in her narrow kitchen, while she baked oatmeal cookies with Irish oatmeal. His father scowled.

“We need the money soon,” he said. Mrs. Baker looked at him with hatred. They were poor. They had hardly any furniture and only had a radio. Mr. Baker went to work but didn't get paid much. At night, he drank from bottles with red liquid. She babysat to bring in a little money and pushed a baby carriage up and down Sixty-Eighth Road. Mother said everyone should have posture like Mrs. Baker's. She always looked proud and plain. That's how the breeders of sacrifices looked. Breeders are girls and women who give birth to babies, usually for sacrifice, though sometimes for positions of power within the cult. The babies are sacrificed either right

away or later in childhood. You'd think the children to be sacrificed would be mean and angry but they weren't. They were sweet, kind, feeling. For weeks, Daniel had been preparing me. When I sat on his lap sucking my thumb, when he walked me home from school, when we walked down the basement hallway to take out the garbage for my mother.

Walking home from school, he said, “Wendy, you know my turn is coming.” When I sat on his lap, “Wendy, don't cry. You know it is coming. It's why I was born. They say it is an honor and for the good of the community. They sacrificed my sister when she was six. Boys are usually thirteen. I will be thirteen soon. I will be leaving you, Wendy, but I will always be with you, always looking out for you. You are my sister. It is my turn now.”

The last night I saw Daniel, he wore a V-neck medium gray sweater that was not hand knit. We were in the basement hall that led to the laundry room. It was after dinner but not ritual time. Rituals start after midnight. I ran my hands up his sweater and along its long sleeves. I could feel the life in his body underneath the sleeves' machine-made stitches.

“Run away, hide,” I pleaded.

“It doesn't pay, Wendy. They'll find me and punish you,” he said.

“I don't care. I stole money from my father's wallet.”

“Put it back, Wendy. Don't get in trouble. We can't fight them.”

“Yes we can,” I insisted. “Run and hide.”

“I can't fight them. They're too big for me.”

“I'll fight them.”

“You're too little. Wendy, you know the swans outside in the waterfall, how white and pure they are. Grow up to be pure like the swans. Don't be like the rest of the people,” he said.

“You're the only good person in the world, Daniel.” I couldn't bear the thought of Daniel just disappearing, like the petals that fall off the glorious tulips that give beauty to the universe. “I will memorize what happens and tell the world about this ring of rackets. They will know who you are and your name. They will know you as the best person who ever lived. I will write and make your life everlasting.”

“That's a very good idea, but don't bring too much trouble on yourself, Wendy. Just be pure and good, like the swans gliding outside. Grow up to be pure like the swans.”

“Take me with you. Don't leave me here alone.”

“No, Wendy. You have work to do, I don't,” he said. Then he turned around and walked down the dark basement hallway. Halfway down the hall, Daniel turned around and said, “I'll always be with you, Wendy. I love you.”

He turned around again and walked. I was crying too hard and my knees were failing so I could only mouth the words back to him. Tears came from my whole body. Then he walked down that grimy hall, rays of light surrounding him in the damp blackness. He pressed the button for the elevator. It was slow in coming. It was probably on the fifth or sixth floor. The doors opened, and he stepped into the jaws of the elevator, his slender, graceful silhouette moving away from me, bravely going toward his death at thirteen years old. He turned around in the elevator, raised his right arm and opened his right hand as if he were holding my hand, then waved to me as he had waved to me for a year after school. Our eyes locked and his soft mouth formed the words, “I love you.” The elevator door closed with its familiar creak and moan but I could still see him. I saw him walk down the hall to his mother in their corner apartment. His mother would be at the table sobbing. His father would be pacing back and forth with his hands in his pockets, jingling change. His mother would offer him nutritious food, an Irish stew, and even though he would want to please her, he would not be able to eat. He would lie on his bed unable to sleep on his last night on earth. All during the night, our eyes remained locked though separated by three floors and many walls.

I went back into my parents' apartment. My mother was in the foyer. I walked past her. I lay on my bed, stomach down. I did not take my shoes off, even though it wasn't allowed. I did not have the energy to follow her rules. In bed, I formed the words “Daniel David Baker” over and over. I said those words all night every night for a long time. Sometimes I still do. I became old in those moments, when I was four.

My parents came into my bedroom. They must have given me a drug because my body became rigid. They turned me over and sat me up in my bed. My legs and arms were stiff. My father spoon-fed me Campbell's tomato soup. I could eat some of that. My mother wanted me to eat a banana but I couldn't. Then she wanted me to eat American cheese but I couldn't.

When it was time, my father carried me down the basement hallway where last I saw Daniel. I felt as if I could still touch him there. My father

carried me into the back rooms, down a shaft into the second lower level under the basement. People were already there. They stood me up naked. My body would not fold or bend. They smeared me with dog or human shit mixed with mud, poured blood over me, put a cape on me. It was ice blue with white fur on the edges. They tied Daniel up. He looked more gaunt than usual and seemed almost unconscious. He must have been drugged. Uncle Sidney held the scepter with my hand over it and his over mine, while my mother masturbated me. I don't think I was being spun, but everything went round and round and I collapsed or fainted as they chanted, led by Uncle Richard: “Hail to the new queen, hail to the new queen of Pleasant Hills, hail to the new queen of the Feast of the Beast, hail to our princess forevermore.”

And then my life was over.

Young healthy blood rushed out. They cut up his body into parts. Daniel was no more. They told me they had to kill him because I loved him.

“Anyone you love will be killed,” the masters said to me again and again. “Anyone you love…”

I thought I had killed the only good person in the world by loving him. The masters and my mother made me believe everything was my fault. Mrs. Baker said her children were born to be killed and that it wasn't my fault. *Maybe if I hadn't sucked my thumb so much*, I thought. Mr. Baker filled their apartment with furniture and a record player. He carried around a stack of cash in his trouser pocket. Now I understood why Mother had let Daniel be my friend, why they had let me taste love.

He and I have gone through life together, dead and alive, merging worlds where we leave scents, one following the other, always.

They cooked his cut-up body in a large black pot. The pieces swam around like goldfish.

The neighborhood learned that a boy had died from leukemia. His teacher and classmates were very unhappy. I couldn't let Daniel go, so in my mind I decided that I had twelve Daniels in my life. I told everyone I had a dozen brothers but I pronounced dozen “muzen.” Some people understood what I meant. My mother loved my telling people because a few said to her “But you look so young.”

A few days later, I retraced his steps on the bicycle ramp in the building, then stepped onto 68th Road. My heart burst out of my mouth and I collapsed on the sidewalk. A neighbor saw me and called an ambulance. I

lifted my arm, the one they used to hold the scepter, against the plastic in the oxygen tent in the hospital and my finger outlined over and over the letters DDB.

Only recently have doctors noted that there are two kinds of heart attacks, mechanical and emotional ones that mimic the physical ones.[1] I had an emotional one that didn't leave physical scars. After they killed Daniel, I could no longer eat. I needed to be with him. My uncles stepped in to get me to eat. They held a gun to my head right there at the left temple and pulled back the lever so that I heard the click. They said “Eat.” A bowl of spaghetti, a food I used to like, was in front of me even though we were all seated in the living room. I couldn't, wouldn't. “If you don't, we will kill you.” I still wouldn't. They sat Marlene on the piano bench and held the gun to the middle of her forehead. “If you don't pick up some of the spaghetti and eat, we will have to kill Marlene,” my uncles said. We could hear Mother groan in the kitchen.

UNCLE SIDNEY: “And it will be your fault.”

UNCLE RICHARD: “You will be killing your sister.”

They didn't let my father talk much any more because he said unnecessary things that confused the programming. Mother always complained of his premature ejaculations. He had premature ejaculations in everything.

I didn't much like my sister and often hated her. I did think that if she weren't around, maybe Mother would love me, but I didn't want her to die, not because of me or anyone. I, or parts in me who were still able to eat, picked up the spaghetti with our fingers. Once I started, it tasted good with the tomato sauce. Uncle Richard called to Mother in the kitchen, “She's eating.” Uncle Sidney put the gun away. “Because you ate, we don't have to kill Marlene. Say thank you to your sister, Marlene,” Uncle Richard said. Marlene said, “I'm not thanking her. We wouldn't have had to go through this scare if she would just eat in the first place.” I was angry at Marlene for not thanking me. They didn't punish her. As an adult, Marlene had a blatant lack of empathy. They must have programmed empathy out of her. That night, in our bedroom, Marlene twisted my arm—more than an Indian burn twist, more like a near-break twist. She said if I told, she would kill me.

At the next ritual I told Uncle Richard what Marlene had done. The reaction, led by my mother, was that I should have eaten and Marlene was right. That night in our bedroom, Marlene twisted my arm harder. She, like everyone, had been taught to be as vicious as possible. The adults were really only unrestrained children doing harm.

Before I was four years old, I had developed a pleasure principle of life. If I could look forward to something, then I could be wrapped up in that delight all day. I could look forward to walking outside when the flowers were out, noticing new cracks in the sidewalk, which made delightful patterns and designs. Any time I was not in physical pain, I rejoiced. Before Daniel died, every moment was rich because I either was with him or felt him with me, or was looking forward to seeing him and smelling him and feeling his breath and his eyelashes. After he died, I could still talk to him and hope to catch a glimpse of Mrs. Baker. I might be able to pet a soft dog or friendly cat. The air had changing hues and was not polluted in the 1940s. Each day, I looked for another color, one I hadn't seen before. Perhaps all the color coding Mrs. Twartski did when I was a newborn made me sensitive to the glories of color. And any day I could have vanilla ice cream or a Mallomar cookie would be a good day.

I enjoyed thinking. When I was almost seven years old, I watched a television show in which the host asked people from all stages of life what was the best part of life. People gave answers like getting a first job, buying a first house, marrying for the first time, having a first child. One person said having sex for the first time. From their wing chair seats, my parents gave similarly silly answers. I knew right away that the best part of life was all the parts, depending on what you made of it. The last person interviewed was eighty-nine years old. The camera showed her stooped over, wrinkled, barely able to walk. She said the same thing as me. I realized then that out of my suffering, some wisdom had grown. *I will use this wisdom to outsmart them and survive*, I thought, *because Daniel wants me to*.

There were at least monthly rituals, if not weekly. They continued deep within the basement levels of the apartment building, on its roof, in hidden ritual sites. Many took place at Bear Mountain. Worship of Satan or Lucifer, sacrifices, orgies, and cannibalism were mainstays. The events of these rituals were scripted, carefully planned and organized. Sometimes, however, domestic scenes went wild. Once they gave people permission to harm others, they never knew what would happen.

Note

1. Wittstein, I. S., Thiemann, D. R., Lima, J. A., Baughman, K. L., Schulman, S. P., Gerstenblith, G., Wu, K. C., Rade, J. J., Bivalacqua, T. J., & Champion, H. C. (2005). Neurohumoral features of myocardial stunning due to sudden emotional stress. *The New England Journal of Medicine, 6*: 539–548.

FIVE

Scripted scenes

When I was an infant, Mrs. Twartski separated one piece of my mind to be the person who walked the pathways. She put the child-me on a baby scale, tied me down, put a support under my bobbing neck, and spun the scale. With each new rotation, Mrs. Twartski said, “You will do whatever you're told.” Spinning, I passed my families' faces and representations of wild animals, monsters, and devils. I spun until all the faces became one and my family's faces melted into the animal-devil ones. This dizzy infant surrounded by people who didn't rescue her grew into the child who walked the inside and outside pathways in the bitter blackness.

Over sixty years later, the pathways still shiver in my mind. The leaders of my false-Kabbalah-based cult indoctrinated small children by having them walk a dirt path alone, usually in a secluded forest. The path was like an exploding tunnel. I felt alone despite Daniel's telling me he would always be with me, and my being surrounded by people. I never had a family and no longer had a friend, yet at times something insulated me. The pathway earth was filled with electricity, the kind the world made naturally. The earth breathed the way Daniel had breathed. I felt his breath through my feet. The forest with its trees reaching the black sky and breathing soil was not criminal, only people were. The earth molded to my feet. Typical pathway messages were, “You may never escape us,” and “You belong to us”, or “This is your destiny.” “What is learned in the pathways is applied to life,” they taught. By “life” they meant normal life, what all people lead. And I was deliberately given “normal life” experiences that echoed or foretold what the pathways taught.

The foundational pathways, reverse Kabbalah training, 1945–1952

My father lifted me gingerly from my white crib and carried me over his shoulder to the car parked outside the side door. I lay on the back seat in my

blanket sucking my thumb hard. My sister sat in the front seat between my parents. My mother and sister wore sneakers instead of their usual dressy shoes. My father wore his everyday leather shoes. He drove slowly and carefully. He wasn't speaking and didn't call any other driver an ignoramus as he often did. It was as if he were trying to be invisible. When we reached a highway the car went faster. Behind us was a car with my grandmother and grandfather, another with Aunt Eileen and Uncle Sidney, and another with Aunt Mimi and Uncle Richard. My cousins had not been born yet.

In the middle of the night, we arrived at Bear Mountain, where bears lived. My father had a hand-drawn map that I could see from the back seat, and he searched for a certain section that had been prepared for us. He had one hand on the steering wheel and one hand holding the map to his side. He went up and down and back and forth along the dark dirt roads with the relatives following his car until he found it. People high up in the trees flashed lights that led him to where he needed to park. Other cars were hidden in the bushes. The ritual had to be on this night because a particular ranger was on duty then. I had heard my parents say that he got this job to protect us but he had really wanted to live in the Midwest where it is quieter than in New York. Rangers like solitude.

Before they took me out of the car, someone put a cloth over my nose. Now that I was drugged, the world seemed to fold in on itself. The dirt was soft and moist. The trees had survived storms. People sprayed insect repellants on their skins. Others with flashlights looked for snakes.

Darkness hid our people stationed among high wires in the tall branches of the trees. Stars dotted the dense sky. The set-up crew made catcalls to one another.

I could just manage walking on the gray carpet in our living room. Uncle Richard in a hooded robe told me to walk along the rocky dirt path where wild animals lived. When I lost my balance and began to crawl, voices behind the trees said, “Bad, bad, get up, get up.” Eerie sounds rang in the dark, and there was no one to love me. I wanted to be home, inside. I didn't want to be eaten by a bear and I didn't like the hooting and howling. I didn't know where my father was, the only person who might give me a little protection. At the end of each path was a symbol on a tarot card and a Hebrew letter printed on sheer material that waved in the wind. People's cheering pushed me forward until I finished the walk.

The most intense loneliness I have known has been on these pathways. Even people cheering and chanting at me could not make a dent in the feeling of being hopelessly alone.

After I had already walked several pathways, Wiezenslowski (who was Grandpa Max, though I didn't know it yet) and Mrs. Twartski worked on me in a programming room underneath the Pleasant Hills apartment building.

WIEZENSLOWSKI: “A person is no stronger than her weakest part. Bring out the split we didn't use because it was too weak.”

MRS. TWARTSKI: “Humpty Dumpty sat on a wall, Humpty Dumpty had a great fall. All the king's horses and all the king's men couldn't put Humpty Dumpty back together again. Come out Baby Jane.”

Grandpa Max pressed his thumb between Baby Jane's eyes.

“You will be our pathways' queen. You can cry but you must finish. It is your destiny. Your mother wants Marlene to be our queen but we will not permit that. It is your destiny according to the prophecy. But you must complete the prophecy.” Then he said to Mrs. Twartski: “We'll test her on the next pathway.”

I had to wear a crown, which kept falling off. Baby Jane cried but finished. I had known they put the snakes on the ground. But I also knew they wouldn't go through all this trouble training me if they were going to have a snake bite me to death. The snakes were hapless beings like me. I thought it would be good to have these non-lethal creatures as my friends. I liked snakes better than I liked people.

Another pathway with candles along its edges happened soon afterward. I had to go through two doors with my crown on. I was too faint to walk. I crawled as crowds chanted, “This is your destiny. Praise to Lucifer our Savior, Lucifer our guardian. We give you the next queen. Hail to the King Lucifer, hail to the god almighty. Hail to his son Satan, hail to the trinity.” The crowd's cheering was seductive and I was caught in grandiosity for the moment. Grandpa Max rubbed his semen over me. Now I could be queen, though I had no idea what that meant. My father talked about how the bloodline came from this grandpa, my mother's father, and this grandpa was always rubbing his semen on me at the end as an anointment. Then Joseph and Grandpa led the procession to the altar. Uncle Sidney lifted me up

beside the altar. Joseph held my hand over a sword and stabbed as the chanting roared. I went so far away from my body that I'm not sure I ever fully came back. It was my first killing. Blood spurted. The body was so soft. The sword went in as if the baby were cottage cheese. They had little cups that they passed around and everyone drank blood. I felt as if I had entered a new world, and that everyone hated me. I didn't trust anyone and thought that no one trusted me. My mother and sister called me murderer, but when they used that word, I didn't yet know what it meant.

When we got home and I was back in my crib, the bumper guard spun around. I was sure I was going to be killed at any moment. When my father put me in the crib, he said he was proud of me. Mrs. Twartski had said she was proud of me. I was a murderer.

I witnessed my cousins walking the pathways at Bear Mountain and I became one of the people in the bushes jumping out and scaring them. I should have been relieved to be on the other side of it, but that first split in me took over, the delicate Baby Jane, and I cried. My father put me in the car so I didn't see the whole miserable walk, ending in the customary sexual assault. The trainings had the same themes: You won't escape. You belong here.

Grandmother's noodles and the monster, 1946

The family was at Grandmother's lavish table filled with homemade-from-scratch foods. My grandfather placed me in a booster seat with my back to the kitchen. A thick phone book was under my seat so that I was higher up. My father sat at one end, my grandfather nearer the kitchen, Marlene and Mother by the window. Everyone seemed especially happy, and I watched with interested caution. Even happy moments could turn in a second in my family.

My grandmother never sat down to eat. In her apron with the big butterfly bow, she went back and forth in her kitchen stirring, opening and closing doors, dishing out. Grandpa had just finished his plate of hot food. I was two years old.

GRANDFATHER: “Rosie, don't you have to do something? Get something?”

GRANDMOTHER: “Just a minute, Max, I'm in the middle of something.”

GRANDFATHER: “First things first.”

GRANDMOTHER: “I can't do everything at once.”

MOTHER: “The strudel's delicious.”

Father wanted a third piece.

My grandmother, in animated spirits, left the dining area for a moment and returned from the bathroom holding one of Grandpa's single-edged razors. Holding up the blade, she said, “I'm going to make noodles, but first I have to cut the dough in half,” and rushed to my booster seat. She still had her floral apron on. She made a line down the center, a deep cut in my scalp. “I'm making a half and half cookie. This half is bad, this half is good.” Grandma cut lines horizontally then vertically on my scalp just as if she were making her broad noodles from scratch on her worn wooden board that she brought over on the boat from Belarus. My scalp stung, and blood dripped onto the towel on my shoulders. My grandfather and father sat as if nothing had happened. My mother and sister stood up and clung to each other as if they, rather than me, needed comforting. I hadn't spilled or thrown anything, said “No”, or thought anything bad. My torso fell forward onto the table. One arm was outstretched and the other descended in slow motion on top of it. Hopelessness sealed me in this sorrowful position as I watched the kitchen walls crash into me.

My grandfather came over to my scalp, pressed on the squares on the left side one by one, and said, “You, and you, and you belong to me forever and ever. Whatever I tell you, you will have to do. I'm going to give you each a letter and a number, and when I call you by those, you will have to do it.”

On the other side of my head, he used the squares to put in functions so that it appeared as if I behaved well, such as “You will smile when people talk to you,” “You will say ‘thank you’,” and “You will curtsey”. The distractors and reporters are also in the “good” part of the head.

That night, we did another pathway. As usual, I had to walk down the dirt pathway alone. It was cold and rocky but I was able to balance a bit better now that I was over two years old. They brought me a hand mirror. I looked in the mirror and saw that I had no hair, because my grandmother had cut up my scalp. They all chanted: “Monster, Monster, decrepit you, Monster, Monster, no one would choose you, Monster, Monster, into the fire with you.” They said I was born a monster, would always be a monster, and that they were going to sell me because I was no good. I thought, *but monsters have a lot of hair*. I felt ugly and it was a world where prettiness was

everything. I was no good and would be sold to bad people because I was bad. I wanted to die. I didn't have a place on earth.

Angel of mercy, 1946–1947

In the middle of the line my grandmother had carved that separated the bad and good parts of my brain (both parts mind controlled to belong to evil)—right there in the middle, my grandfather placed a representation of the Angel of Mercy. This angel was to lead me into suicide. The angel was slinky, squished, but it could grow enormous.

My grandfather, grandmother, and Mrs. Twartski tied me on a hard chair in my grandparents' second bedroom. The lights grew dim as Mrs. Twartski fed me teaspoons of a brown syrup, and my grandmother injected my scalp. My grandfather showed me a picture the size of a tarot card of this beautiful Angel of Mercy dressed in a pale blue robe. As I looked at the picture, my grandfather talked to the angel. “Your assignment is to follow this child all over. I'm placing you in her mind, right in the middle where Rosie made the cut. And you will be perched and nestled there until she dies, Angel of Mercy…” All the fight in me was gone, and I had sharp pains in my eye. Alison said it was from the syrup, and that they probably get this effect with pills or injections in modern day programming sessions.

Grandpa started his projector. He put the picture of the angel in front of it. The projector made the image of the angel go from small to huge on the wall. Grandpa said, “If the bad side and good side of your head talk to each other or weave together, then you and the Angel of Mercy will be one.” The angel travelled up to the ceiling, around me, over me, finally landing in the center of the wall. He projected an image of me onto the one of the Angel.

Mrs. Twartski kept giving me teaspoons of brown syrup, and Grandpa said, “You have people who do very bad things, and people who do very good things. And the two will never meet, and never know about each other. The bad side is very bad and nobody should know about the bad side, or they will never like you and never accept you as part of the world.”

Normal and pathway life

During these early years, there were also moments of peace, rare like spring days in January and snow in April. We four were strolling. My father and

mother were arm in arm. The apartment was clean but Mother was not exhausted. Marlene and I were in the row behind. Marlene did not have to be Mother's confidante or I, Father's wife. We wore mother and daughter outfits that Mother had designed and Father wore a tie made out of the same green and white checkered material. The family walked over the cherry blossom petals spilled on the sidewalk. The hills and breeze were comforting and exciting. Lilac bushes created a cocoon. Marlene and I held hands, swung arms, and giggled until we were sore. The parents looked over their shoulders and smiled from their inside. My mother smiled at me as well as her, and my father smiled at Marlene as well as me. They were glad we were theirs. The earth, sky, air radiated warmth, fragrance. Tulips, red and yellow, tall and proud sprouted. We smelled them until we became intoxicated. Each pansy had a dreamy face and eyes, a soft soul. We crossed the street. Father bought two chocolate coated and two toasted coconut ice cream bars from the Good Humor truck singing our song. I could have eaten ten of these. The cold sweetness slid down to my hunger.

“We had our moments,” Mother said to me right before she died. We had moments.

My family's ancient cult had been training children on pathways and combining scripted, known life with secret rituals for many centuries. The mind controllers anchored the pathways teaching in scripted scenes of family life that family members played like actors. The only person who didn't have a memorized role was the child victim. The scripted scene staged a family conflict and an assault on the child's self-esteem. Then the pathway training threatened the child into submission and rendered the child loyal to the criminal group. The leaders made a point of not sharing this information with Mengele.

The pathways training took up a small percentage of my life. I had one or two pathway treks per year, and perhaps one or two programming sessions a month. The programming not to stand out or succeed in everyday life continued, and affected all areas of my regular life. Most of my life was spent in “normalcy,” going to school, with my mother shopping for clothes and food, going to Manhattan three times a week for ballet, speech, and art lessons, plus having weekly piano lessons in my home until Mr. Brown fired me for not practicing. How could I practice when I wasn't allowed to succeed in the normal world? I had to look bored and lazy during ballet lessons because the Russian master teachers came to Mr. Yanvinsky's studio

and spotted me. I was double jointed and had high extensions. In normal life, our theater-mother couldn't be stopped from being ambitious artistically for her daughters. Mother, who had talent, must have been madly frustrated.

Pathways trainings resonated all my life. The experiences captured some of my soul. What they didn't capture, they scratched. I remembered few normal life setups for pathways until I began to delve into my inner world in the early 1980s, shortly after my mother died.

Four hundred dollars, 1949

When I was in my twenties, living in Pittsburgh, I put my toddler in the stroller and walked him to the Arts & Crafts Center, which had an exhibit of Marcarelli's paintings. This artist cut or ripped unprimed canvas into strips and pasted the raw lengths on other canvas. When I saw his work, I froze.

Strips of canvas. More strips of canvas. Strips of uneven widths. Pleasant Hills. Gray living room. My mother's portrait in oils. With these spurts of narrative, a living room scene charged out from my stunned mind.

For three days and three nights before it happened, she lay motionless in her bed like the center sardine in a can. Then, as I watched from the hall doorway, she emerged ponderously, a sleepwalker. In the portrait, she wore her diamond ring, pearl choker, and a blue satin gown. Only its scooped bodice showed. She smiled with perfect teeth. She appeared American enough to be a first lady but looked too alive. In the oil painting with an ornate gold frame, Mother had thick, dark, wavy hair; the painter made a big deal about how white her skin was. She looked proud of her beauty and like she wanted sex. The perfect blue tint of her enormous ring glowed.

The knife. I don't know whether she had the knife in her bedroom the whole time or whether she had detoured into the kitchen. It had a black handle. I watched from the door-way. Strips of canvas, flying curlicues attached to the wall. They looked cheerful, like my doll's hair, the flickering of sunlight dancing on the wall. Her nose that she would later have fixed and that we weren't allowed to touch gone, her high forehead, creamy breasts. Only her hand with the ring remained intact.

More memory dragged across my brain. My sister and I were in bed. I was in a deep sleep the way I slept as a child when I did not have one of my

frequent migraines. My sister shook me. It must have been the middle of the night or at least around midnight.

“Wendy, get up,” my sister said. She took my hand and led me to the doorway in the hall that contained the long sliding door closet. Marlene, who was much taller than I, stood in front of me near the foyer. We all wore pajamas except for Father who just wore boxer shorts. My father was already in the foyer; my mother in front of her recently hung portrait held two kitchen knives, one in each hand. Mother's eyes were fixed and wild. Whoever was out in her was not one of Mother's usual parts. Bambi, our miniature Doberman, must have been hiding.

“Watch,” Marlene said. My father smiled slightly. I yawned since I was still asleep on my feet, but noticed my father nod to my mother who was holding knives. My father told Marlene to go back to her bed, but I stayed glued in the doorway.

My mother screamed and started slashing her portrait. The strips flew away from the canvas backing and curled at the bottom. They looked like a blossoming flower in papier mache. Mother screamed as she shredded. “I'm not happy, I'm not happy,” she sang to the knife sounds. Pulp left my heart. She glanced at me. “It's your fault. Why is she standing there always in the way? Why can't she be good like Marlene?” Marlene colored much better than I, chose better colors, and stayed within the lines of our coloring books. But I didn't want to be like her. She was a show-off.

And then Mother threw the knife at me. I ducked and the knife went into the material-covered sliding closet door behind me. With her other hand, she threw the knife at Bambi, who was under a side table. He was whimpering and bleeding by the side table in the living room near the planter room divider. Bambi had a knife in his stomach. Blood spread like my fear. I rushed back into my bedroom and dove under my bed. My heart felt like skin rubbed raw.

Decades later, when I asked my father about it, all he said was that the portrait had cost four hundred dollars.

My sister was safe in bed. I was under my bed and Mother poked the knife trying to reach me. I kept sliding away from her. My father's hand pulled the knife away. He was barely stronger than she at that moment. Finally, my father shouted “Cynthia, Cynthia,” which stopped her, and he was able to pull her out of the bedroom. My mother must have been trained as a witch to have had such excellent aim.

The penultimate part of the memory that I associated was my sister waking me up and leading me to the doorway. The last piece that I brought into the memory was my smiling father watching my mother slash. My mother should really have been on the stage. The handlers didn't create a personality in me to watch this scene unfold. They took whoever spontaneously came forward. My controller called that same person out to do the pathway walk that night.

It was hard for me to accept this memory and that my parents would act in such a drama. In the 80s, when my first memories shoved out and before I had the memory of my mother's slashing, when I was creating and exhibiting visual art in New York City, I reproduced the hallway wallpaper, put a knife in it and a representation of a small child huddled on the floor. The knife had just missed.

I wondered what had happened to Bambi's body. My father said he wrapped him in a towel and carried him out. I wondered whether he threw him down the fiery furnace. He wouldn't have taken him to a vet. I had never felt close to Bambi, but I hated to see him violently killed and was aware it should have been me, according to my mother's intent or at least the script.

That night, there was a pathway at Bear Mountain. Its goal, like that of the other pathways, was to terrify me and make me feel that within the criminal cult group was the only place I would be safe. Mrs. Twartski said, “We want to talk to the person who saw her mother throw the knife,” and that part of me emerged from pools of terror. Towards the pathway's end, the ground was covered with the same strips of canvas that my mother had slashed with her knives. On the altar was Bambi with the knife still in his stomach. A chorus of people chanted, “You killed him.” The other half chanted, “It should have been you. It was meant to be you.” All together, they sang “You are always in the way,” and “Marlene is better than you.” Wiezenslowski held up my arm—the left one—with a sword in it.

Contradicting themselves, at the end of the pathway, people chanted “Queen Philomena, Queen Philomena” over and over. “Here you are wanted, here you are something, here you will rule for ever more.”

Pressing his thumb on the back of my neck, Grandpa Max said, “Only here will you be accepted, with us. All else is ashes and shreds.” He held up the tarot card pictures of the skeleton riding a donkey and the queen on the throne holding the scepter and globe.

Someone in a devil suit danced around, opened its mouth wide and put my head in the mask's mouth, then raped me. “You will never escape us. You belong only to us. You belong to Lucifer.” There were more pictures of a field of daisies, a mountaintop and a hanged man upside down, then the letter ayin.

The morning I remembered this part of the pathway, I awoke in hollow fear with the image of Bambi on the altar and the strips of canvas on the ground.

During the pathway, Baby Jane fainted and stronger parts stepped forward. Grandpa Max was probably wrong, how strong one is does not depend on one's weakest parts.

Later I remembered another scene from the day after the pathway: My parents had a big party. Noisy people filled the whole gray apartment. Cheeses and crackers were everywhere, and my grandmother had brought platters of interesting concoctions that grown-ups like. My mother cooked little cocktail franks, which I liked but wasn't allowed to eat until after the company arrived. My father sliced salamis paper-thin. Everyone drank hard liquor. On the carpet where there had been Bambi's blood was a patch scrubbed almost white, which served as his memorial monument.

Even though I was the only child in this crowd and I hardly knew anyone at the party, the party was ostensibly to celebrate my sixth birthday. My sister was present, but she was so mature that she didn't like playing with me anymore. Some people brought me presents. One woman gave me a red and white checked blouse. My mother thought both red and white were becoming with my dark skin. I was sure I had said thank you. I don't remember the other presents. What was not traumatic washed away. Trauma sticks through a lifetime.

Around midnight, when everyone had left, Mother came into my bedroom. I had a walk-in closet in my bedroom and I stood in front of it. She hit me over and over with the red and white checkered blouse. It resembled the waves at Jones Beach undulating, rising, and falling. “You didn't say thank you,” she screamed. “I did, I did too,” I answered.

Then she said, “You killed Bambi.” The rotating axis of the apartment froze. My father shouted “Cynthia!” and pulled her away. My parents disappeared into the remains of my birthday party.

The next day, the Council was in the living room sitting on the two curved half sofas and wing chairs. The apartment was clean and neat again.

My parents or father must have stayed awake cleaning. I was not invited but my sister and I eavesdropped. Grandpa Max wearing his Wiezenslowski mask, Joseph, Mrs. Twartski, and my parents attended.

“Cynthia, I had to fly here from the west coast, which was very inconvenient. You have broken a cardinal rule. You are not allowed to refer to a pathway event in your other life. The pathways are holy, secret events. Yours is a grave offence,” Grandpa said. I could feel the others nod their heads. Mother was in trouble. And I hadn't killed Bambi, she had!

“We will have to do double programming on Wendy to prevent consciousness. That will cost in time and money.” *What about me?* I thought. That meant more drugs, electricity and spinning for me—torture.

“We have a family in Salt Lake City that is willing to take her or you in. We could say you have an illness, which is true, and need convalescence. If anything like this happens again, one of you will go and it will probably be you. That means you would not be with Marlene. Marlene would stay here under Morris' care. In the meantime, Morris will take you to Dr. Brown tomorrow. You will remain on sedatives. Morris, you must make sure she takes them every day. Cynthia, you have crossed a serious line. We never refer to a pathway in mundane life. No one in our community will speak to you for ten days.” Then the front door closed, and Marlene and I believed everyone had left.

Mother screamed wildly at Father. “You told them, how could you! You're trying to get rid of me.” Then the pounding that we recognized as Mother's fists on Dad's chest began. Marlene and I went to our room and sat on the floor between the beds with a blanket over our heads.

In the 1980s, I watched the movie *Bambi* with one of my bad boyfriends. After Bambi's mother was shot, I began to cry uncontrollably. One of those long New York City lines that went around the block was in front of the theater when we exited. A woman in the line saw me sobbing and asked what movie I had just seen. I ignored her, but the boyfriend gratuitously answered *Bambi*. The gawking busybody repeated *Bambi* in disbelief, turned to the person behind her and said, “She saw *Bambi*.” This information traveled quickly down the line. My suffering became comedy. I had as yet no memory of the tragedy with Bambi.

The ermine collar, 1952

Marlene kept doing her English homework, but I left our side bedroom window from where I could see the waterfall, swans and geese and rushed out to greet Father at the front door. Daddy sniffed and his neck and nose stretched almost to the ceiling. I could tell he was relieved to smell food cooking. If meat were cooking, he wouldn't be angry and then there wouldn't be fights. Mother was in the kitchen broiling a sirloin steak, warming up peas from a can, and baking potatoes in a potato baker on top of the stove.

He hung up his overcoat and hat in the hall closet and said, “Get your mother. I have a surprise…. Cynthia,” he called. I wondered why he told me to get her if he was going to call her himself. He unwrapped a package from the furrier and took out a sleek white fur collar. Its smoothed out white hair all over reminded me of Slinky, the cat on our block.

“It looks alive,” I said. The fur collar was the gift for Marlene becoming a grownup. They had been talking about it all week. She was thirteen but already had birthday presents that took her up to her twentieth year. Anything to keep Mother from going deeper into one of her moods. My special things were hand-me-downs.

“It is stunning. Oh, I love it, Morris,” Mother said. “It will look beautiful on Marlene. Perfect for a girl becoming a woman.”

Mother cooked in her apron over her housedress. She was slim and petite with dyed red hair and amber eyes that shifted colors with her feelings. Mostly Mother was sad. She was around thirty-five now, and Dad was older. She was unhappy about getting older because she thought that looks were everything.

Marlene came out of the bedroom slowly, wearing an ironed paisley dress and black polished shoes. Her long brown hair was braided and pinned in a pile to the top of her head. Mother spent a lot of time on Marlene's hair. My sister had rosy cheeks, what my mother called a “Greek nose” and a sculptured chin. She reminded me of Queen Elizabeth.

Mother took the ermine collar, put it around Marlene's neck, and joined the hook and eye together. No one watched me watching.

“Ouch, it's hurting me. It's pressing on my throat,” my sister screamed.

“Oh, no, Morris, it's too tight for her. You brought too small a collar home,” Mother said. She was angry. “How could you do that?”

“Well, try it on Wendy. It should fit her,” he answered. I knew that oily tone in Daddy's voice. He used it when he was trying to trick someone.

Mother handed the white collar back to Daddy and looked away. He hooked it around my neck.

My heart was pounding as I imagined myself a Hollywood star in a fur coat or one of the glamorous women in Mother's magazines.

“There, it fits her fine,” Daddy said.

“It does look good. It's becoming with her round face and it gives her a lighter look,” Mother said.

That compliment may have been the first I ever had from Mother. I could always read disappointment in her eyes. Once, after I had had my own ordinary-life child, I tested her. I asked “With you so beautiful and Daddy so handsome, shouldn't you have had a prettier daughter?” She smiled at me as if someone finally understood her. I wanted to rip her dyed red hair out then.

I rushed to the mirror in the hall closet with my collar on, sucked in my cheeks, lifted and pushed forward my right hip and shoulder. Daddy looked happy and Mother smiled a little. If I could be prettier, then Mommy could be happier. And maybe even love me.

I had thought my father was relieved to have done something nice for me. He knew Mother ignored me.

“That's a size four. I'll bring you a size seven tomorrow, Marlene,” he said. My older sister's soft brown eyes narrowed into steel. Her self-satisfied expression changed into cold hatred and envy.

“You promised. You promised me the ermine collar for my thirteenth birthday,” my sister pleaded. “I will not wear the same thing as a nine year old. I'm not a child. I have to have better things than she has, not the same. I'm older. Mine has to be special. I'm thirteen. If she wears one, mine won't be special.”

Marlene was holding herself back from hitting me in the face. And I wanted to lunge forward and put deep scratches on her cheeks and leave scars.

“You're acting ridiculous, Marlene. Her having the same collar doesn't take anything away from you. I'll bring you the right size tomorrow,” Father said.

“You promised me,” Marlene screamed, as she left the room and slammed our bedroom door. Daddy let out a breath that said he was the only reasonable and just person in the house.

“I can see her point, Morris. It's humiliating to wear the same thing as your younger sister, and we did promise her,” Mother said.

The wind roared outside. The water was restless. The ducks swam zigzag, the swans in circles. My chest swelled.

I will hate Mother and Marlene forever, I said to myself silently and meant it. I felt myself sliding out of my body, going to the window, and watching the waterfall. The bushes sprouted red and yellow berries. Rust and orange leaves floated down the falls. My father's voice startled me back into myself.

“I'll bring an ermine collar in a larger size tomorrow. I'll bring a different kind of collar in a size four for Wendy,” he said.

Mother's angry mouth smiled. Marlene's smug look came back on her face, and her chin went up again. I returned to my station at the smaller of the two bedroom windows and looked out into the courtyard. I stared at the swans shrieking and the ducks moving their wings. One swan was particularly loud. It was getting dark. The birds made large shadows on the water. The wind was blowing. The swans circled. The ducks rested on the shore. The moon was out. Then my chest filled again with hatred as Mother called us in for dinner.

It must have taken consistent planning to script regular life so that it backed up cult programming. We all drove to Bear Mountain in the middle of the night after Father brought home the ermine collar. Mother and Marlene got out of the front seat and Father said to Mother, “I'll get her. Go ahead.” They went into the woods. “Listen to me,” Father said. “Don't go with the man, don't listen to what anybody says, and you can fight back if you want.”

I was angry about the ermine collar and angry that I had to do another pathway barefoot and in my pajamas, even though I was nine years old. The pathway training was supposed to be just for small children.

Lookouts and temporary lights were in the trees; members hid in the bushes. As I walked down the path, a tall, thick black robed figure came towards me and said, “Follow me into death.” I said “No” and the people in the bushes cheered. I had passed the first test. I thought these pathways were getting more and more concrete. “If you follow me, you can have this,” he said. I kept walking straight ahead, about a quarter to a half mile. It was chilly on the mountaintop. My mother came onto the pathway. I was surprised to see her. She said, “If you follow him, I'll love you more than I

love Marlene.” I spit in her face and thought this pathway was getting to be fun. My mother would love me more the day I became a blond with blue eyes or maybe a boy. My father came toward me from the front. “Wendy, I just lost all my money in the fur market. If you follow that figure, I'll get my money back.” I walked around him feeling guilty. I knew they were playing and testing me, but I felt sorry for my father because he had gambled away all his money and all the family's money that he invested for everyone, and that had ruined Mother's popularity in the family. My father had saved my life many times. I walked through a screen and there was a card. Someone shone a flash-light on a picture of the beautiful angel in blue with wings and a crown and another Hebrew letter, I think this one was lamed, then an ugly picture of a skull and crossbones. Mrs. Twartski came forward holding a mirror. “Follow the angel and you can be pretty.” The girl who had tried to kill my mother spat in her face and attempted to kick her. I had overcome these temptations, because of my father's advice.

The next night I had no memory of the pathway temptations. Dad brought home a sleek white ermine collar in a size seven for Marlene, and a round brown mink collar for me. Marlene put on the ermine collar, which made her look like a princess. She wore it for three days straight and then forgot about it. Everyone said the mink collar was beautiful, but I didn't want it. “I don't like the brown,” I said. “I don't want to wear the brown one.”

My fingertips and nails ached. Sometimes even my toenails felt the rage. I so wanted to scratch my sister and parents. I went back to my bedroom and looked out the window. The water was frozen, thick and green. Cracks were around the edges. The ice looked like a giant jigsaw puzzle.

I remembered the ermine collar scene but never knew it was scripted and a setup for a pathway. I realized that only last year.

In the 1980s, when I was in New York City, I choreographed a dance about a tall hooded and robed figure tempting a little girl. The death-robed figure strolled on the stage. Someone in the wings unrolled satin material onto the stage. An anorexic dancer wearing a child's blue flannel pajamas with a white ruffle across the chest moved on the satin material that resembled a pathway. I found the actor for the part of the tall robed figure on the street. He looked like my ex-husband. He turned out to be a theater student and accepted the role. The tall dark figure tried luring her into death

several times and she resisted. When I choreographed this piece, I had no conscious memory of the pathway temptations.

SIX

Breeder

The Rosenbergs, 1951

My father brought home one of the first televisions that he got probably from one of his clients or perhaps he stole it. A stranger and my father carried the bulky console in past the heavy front door, down the long hall where my parents each had a large closet, and through the foyer that we used as a dining room. The man wearing a cap and my father turned the corner and with difficulty put the television between the two curved sofas, where a small table had been, and opposite two winged chairs centered against the wall, where my parents usually sat. My sister and I sat on the gray-carpeted floor. My mother liked pale gray. The carpet and walls were seamless, hushed. The emotions, fights, stinging voices, aromas of food added the color to the living room. Our family's ordinary life was monotonous, with eruptions interrupting the numbness of childhood, the intensity of boredom.

The television screen was bare, not covered by doors. It stood about three and a half feet high and about two feet wide. When it entered our tiny apartment, the world came in too. We watched television shows in which families listened to one another and didn't pretend that what happened didn't happen. People were not objects for use.

My father reached into his pocket and flicked bills. He caressed each one as if he were in love with money, then slipped the mystery man a pile. The stranger left and my father plugged in the television, raised the antenna, and started fiddling with knobs on its back. First there were dots on the screen, then horizontal, then diagonal lines. It reminded me of people rushing along the streets of the city. An urgent-sounding male voice was coming through the helter-skelter designs. My mother, sister, and I shouted “now” as soon as the picture came into focus. Faces, bodies, scenes emerged from green-tinted, black and white patterns. It was like a radio with live pictures, like having the Atlantis movie theater in the living room. Sometimes Father didn't stop turning the knobs just as we shouted “now” and we lost the picture. Then he would reverse the motion and the people would come back into view. It was magic.

On the front, the TV case said “Hoffman”. I thought at first that the name referred to my family or perhaps my Uncle Arnold who was an inventor. I asked my father whether we had the TV engraved with our name, but he said it was a coincidence and that Hoffman was the name of the company that made it.

Television created a happy time for my family. Every Saturday night, we watched *Your Show of Shows*. Imogene Coca was just like my mother, crazy and funny, and Sid Caesar was like my father, baffled and obstinate. We laughed as a family. Suddenly, my parents' personalities weren't just peculiar. They were universal. Stars had the same idiosyncrasies, and they were famous for them. My parents took on a Hollywood sheen. And nothing bad happened while we watched *Your Show of Shows*.

A while later, when the family was hypnotized in front of the television, maybe during the evening news or maybe there was a special news show, an outline of a face popped out. The accused spy, Ethel Rosenberg, came into view. She was in a drawing of a courtroom on television. I had seen photos of her in the newspapers. Now there were newsreels on the evening news. She wore a dress that my mother said flattered her. Her face was like a risen moon, pale white but also material, physical. She also looked like a housewife: a moon-housewife. The television cameras panned on a photograph of the judge, a thin man in a black cloak, a gavel in his hand. The announcer said his name was Judge Irving R. Kaufman. He frowned. His mouth went way down and his ears flared out and looked like they were about to fly away. He was looking down his nose at everyone. I would not have wanted him to resolve an argument between my sister and me. The screen went back to Ethel's face. Her eyes were like little bungalows and behind the eyes, I could see her soul flittering down into her body and coming up occasionally for air. Her eyebrows rose in defiance. She could have been one of our gang when we were called into dinner and didn't want to stop playing outside. On March 6, 1951, she was thirty-seven, about the same age as my parents. The television left the courtroom and showed an interview with her that they had done months before. She appeared in what looked like an east side tenement apartment then, held a butcher's knife and chopped a raw chicken into parts that she would cook for her husband, Julius, and their two sons, Michael who was almost exactly my age, eight, and his three-year-old brother, Robert. That's very young to be away from your home and parents. The walls behind Ethel were streaked with grease.

Why didn't she clean her kitchen before letting the television cameras in? Mother went wild with cleaning before company came. I wondered who advised her. She seemed disorganized, like Mother.

One night, after dinner, we watched again and the television announcer said the lawyer pounded her with questions, the way my father cross-examined me when I had done something wrong and not admitted it, which I did often, sometimes for spite. My father questioned well, trying to get you to admit. This Judge Kaufman asked about the atomic bomb. The judge asked Ethel if she was a Communist. And about typing. He wanted to know if she typed for her brother. Mother said her brother betrayed her. He saved himself by sacrificing her. I looked at my sister with suspicion. She would do that too.

Another night they talked about a Jello box cut in a curved line. I couldn't believe grown people were talking about Jello boxes on TV in a courtroom. My mother and I had just gone to Foodland grocery store on Paradise Boulevard. They had a promotion on Jello. If you bought twenty boxes, you got a paper house you could put together. I loved to put things together. I thought my mother would never buy so many boxes all at once, even though we ate several boxes each week. But she did. She bought twenty boxes of orange and strawberry. Every now and then, my mother wanted to give me everything. It didn't happen often but when it did, the skies opened and stars fell on me. I thought, “Now she loves me” and I felt mellow and peaceful. I supposed other children felt this way. Soon, however, she beat me again just for being around. The television talked about fitting pieces of the box top together. Why would grownups fit a box top together? The mean lawyer asked Julius about a box of raspberry Jello and an atomic bomb. I didn't know what an atomic bomb was. Perhaps it was like a rifle. I asked my sister, who was twelve. “You drop it and it wipes out the whole world, all of us too,” she said, “in one fell swoop. Russia wants to do that to us.” I believed my sister because in school, we had to squeeze ourselves under our desks to practice hiding in case the Russians attacked. We had to curl ourselves up really tight so the Russians didn't kill us right there in our school and blow us all to smithereens. But when you curled yourself into a ball, your shoes touched your dress and smudged it. Mother didn't like having to wash my dress again. The television announcer kept using the word “espionage”. I didn't know what that word meant but it sounded as if

someone had to use the bathroom. I wanted to ask what “adjourned” meant but both my parents were too absorbed to be interrupted.

They showed more pictures and drawings of Julius and kept using the word Communism. Maybe that meant a neighborhood all together having a party. Julius kept saying, “I refuse to answer on the grounds it might incriminate me”. “Incriminate” sounds like “criminal”. Maybe they were criminals. Maybe I was a criminal. My mother said if they wouldn't answer, they were guilty. Father said everyone was Jewish, the judge, lawyers, accused. He said the world had them in a hole that was like a pit bull fight with a gentile jury watching.

They showed pictures of Ethel's eyes wandering. Mother said she was searching for Julius. Ethel did not answer. A wall between her and the world existed, but she yearned for her husband. Mother said she was a woman in love. Photographs in the newspapers showed Julius kissing Ethel in an endless kiss; they fused into each other. Julius kissed Ethel the way Mother always wanted to be kissed. Mother seemed jealous of Ethel even though Ethel was going to be electrocuted. Electrocuted, that means having electricity run through your veins and kill you. I knew all about electricity but it hadn't killed me yet. But it had ruined DeeDee's mind. And Mother's mind. And Marlene's nipples. I didn't remember any of that while watching television with my family. I wouldn't remember until the turn of the century. In the photograph, Julius and Ethel grasped onto each other as if they were the only ones in the world. Mother sighed. Father was disgusted.

“Did you receive gifts from the Soviet Union?” a lawyer asked.

Julius' face was huge on the screen, the natural green of his complexion mixing with the television's hue—he looked sick, there but not there. It was as if he were focused on a faraway mountain, maybe an ancient mountain. His ears listened to the inside of the earth. His spirit danced in the clouds. He was not in the courtroom. He was not being tried. In his listening eyes, distant and fragile, I saw myself. I felt close to him. He was not listening to the courtroom drone. He was listening to angels. I didn't listen to my family's fights. I went far away, like Julius. And both of us looked delicate and hopeless.

My family had just finished dinner. My mother cooked pot roast that night and we had mashed potatoes that she placed under the broiler to form a crust. We wolfed the meal down. I wondered what prison food tasted like.

Did they serve just bread and water? Did they give them something more because the world watched?

Julius answered questions. He sounded smart. He didn't elaborate. Ethel liked to talk more than he did. I knew what film meant. I didn't know the micro part. My father stirred in his wingback chair covered with the pale blue corduroy cover. My father's body moved. His arms and legs jerked. His stomach bloated out. Sounds came from his moist mouth. He dribbled and stood up. He stood up for hatred. My mother responded too. Julius again said, “I refuse to answer on the grounds it might incriminate me”. My mother jumped out of her chair. Her chin jutted out. Her bottom teeth showed. This was the mother-face that scared me. Something bad would happen when she made that face. Saliva came through her teeth. Whom did she hate so? Europe? My father? Her parents? Her friend Edith, who had a better marriage? The 1930s when she should have gone to college? Me? Her voice formed a knife, silver, serrated, with an invisible handle. It could go anywhere and stab anything. My parents poked in the air at the screen. My father poked at the air trying to hurt Julius. I thought he liked to help criminals. They thought Julius and Ethel were real people in their living room and they were poking and hurting them. It was like a ping-pong game between the TV and my parents on the covered wing chairs. Everything seemed life and death. Words and energies bounced from my parents' shouts to the lawyers' words to my parents' gesticulations to Judge Kaufman's gavel to my parents' curses to the Rosenbergs' eyes. Our gray muted living room turned into a courtroom.

“They should be killed. They should be shot. The electric chair is too good for them.”

My mother answered, “How could they do this to us? The Jews haven't had enough trouble? The world doesn't hate us enough already?”

“Traitor,” my father screamed. Spit curled around his lips.

“Jew hater,” my mother said, her arms waving like a wild ballerina in the air. World War II had ended less than a decade ago. It was still dangerous to be Jewish.

“Commie,” my father snarled out. It sounded like the nail in the coffin. “Come-me.” Did it mean “come here?” My parents' voices slit the air stretched taut in our apartment. I covered my ears with my fists. My nails dug into my palms. I pressed my knuckles inside my ears. I had to keep out their voices but still I heard, “Commies, traitors”. Then I heard my

thoughts. *If you go against the family. Traitor, spy, betrayer*. My head crashed in, a tower crumbling. Tiny bones couldn't hold. Spinning, reeling. The gray became continuous, three dimensional walls and floors of gray. The walls of my mind, the walls of the living room collapsed on top of me and my family, because of me. *If you go against your family*.

Back on the screen, Ethel started to dissolve. It started in her waist folding, her shoulders falling forward, her head to one side. Ethel Rosenberg was having a breakdown. She couldn't stop crying. She couldn't go on. Her lawyer asked for an intermission. The judge allowed her to see Julius for a short visit. She needed to see her husband and they let her. Just for five minutes. It was private. She was like the exhausted Olympic runner who caught a glimpse of his girlfriend on the sidelines and ran faster. Now she could go on. She could fight. Her melting was from my parents' hisses. They were killing Ethel. Mother suddenly understood Ethel. She understood dependency on people. She saw herself as a woman who would do anything for love and sex, including sacrifice her children. She softened. She stopped lynching Ethel Rosenberg for the rest of the night. My father remained disgusted with all this female goo. Women slowed everything down. But my mother had begun to forgive Ethel.

The television went to commercial, and my mother served chocolate cake with strawberries and whipped cream between the layers of the cake. She had whipped the cream herself and added vanilla. She had baked the cake herself and used buttermilk. We ate in front of the blank television. My parents had two slices each. Then Ethel was back, as defiant and physical as ever. Mother nodded. She said to herself, “Ethel needed that”. Mother didn't feel close to Father. She had always wanted a communion in marriage like Julius and Ethel had. Once when we were visiting Aunt Ruth at her farm in Florida, Mother and I took a walk and saw a banana stalk unravel into bloom right in front of us. “Why not me?” Mother said out loud. I felt her hunger for love. But Father only liked children. He came to life around a child, any child, and Mother became jealous.

The judge said, “Ladies and gentlemen, you will be asked to return Monday morning at ten thirty. In the meantime, I want to wish you all a very happy Easter and a pleasant weekend.” I wondered whether the court killed people on Easter the way the Satanists did. My parents grunted but didn't answer. They talked to each other and forgot my sister and me.

“They won't snitch,” my father said.

“They are protecting others,” my mother said. They looked at the Rosenbergs as if they were fools but underneath I could see they respected them. Deep inside my parents' dead eyes, something glowed. The Rosenbergs didn't tattle.

Later in April, with spring vacation from school over, Julius' face appeared large on the nineteen-inch screen. His eyes, watery and prophetic, strong and fragile, had a tribal look. No one cared what he said. They hated him and wanted him dead. My parents hissed. My sister, in her own world, was not watching. She liked to make up stories and write them down, so she didn't see what really happened. I saw Julius. I saw myself. I didn't know the word yet or even had a hint of its concept, but when I saw the still photos of Julius' face, I knew that I was a “revolutionary” and that a revolutionary would sacrifice everything for a belief and a purpose that he thought was right. Julius was thirty-three when arrested, like Jesus, and he sacrificed a wife and children for his protest beliefs. I was a child in the third grade knowing I would betray my family and tell. The TV announcer said Julius grew up in lower-east-side, tenement-immigrant poverty, and I was growing up with a family that hated. I didn't know whether these conditions made Julius and me who we were or whether we would be like that anyway. This was long ago, but I knew something then in my child's mind. I knew that like him, I would do something that was not allowed. I would break rules. I would tell my family's story even if they killed me for it.

When they sentenced him to death, I became inconsolable. I could not look at what happened, I could not face the pain. I became like my sister ignoring the world. As I crumbled, and as he died, I realized he looked like Daniel.

Green fruit

When I was ten and a half in 1954, Grandpa Max said to Mrs. Twartski in front of me, “I want to bring her to fruition soon and I need more pounds on her.” I thought he was going to give me fruits to eat, though I was confused because I knew fruits didn't have many calories. I loved peaches and cantaloupe and could eat any number of green grapes as I sat with my family under a beach umbrella at Jones Beach every summer in ordinary life. My father took me into the endless ocean. I floated on my back and he

hooked his feet under my arms and also floated. The waves caressed, but I felt as if I could drown. I could sink into the waves and rest on the wet sand floor. We floated out to deep water that I could not stand in. I had to trust that my father would keep me afloat, but that trust was impossible. My mother and sister sat linked together under a striped beach umbrella rented mostly to keep my skin from getting any darker. While I swayed on the unpredictable waves of Jones Beach, while the waves flung themselves high and low and I felt entrapped and also banished from my mother and sister—something descended from the skies. The force was stronger than the piercing sunlight and turbulent wind, calmer than the blues, greens, and salty smells; a force reached down and held me as if I were a nurtured fish in a pond. Though heavy and huge, it coated me gently. The air seemed to smile like Mr. Jacobs' face. The clouds emitted love that felt like Daniel's presence. The precarious Atlantic Ocean did not feel unsafe. I felt like I was on dry land, in an enclosed watery garden, secure and with the fragrance of ripe peonies and roses. For a moment, I did not feel enslaved. The intense sun framed my eyes causing me to see rainbows of translucent color. Even when the waves peaked and spilled over my face, and the inside of my nostrils and eyes stung, I still felt a solid, indestructible presence rain on me. I was alone in this liquid garden but filled with a presence that was goodness. I don't know whether it covered all of Jones Beach or the universe or whether it was trying to make me less distraught, but it was there even while I was drowning in waves of hopeless loneliness. As my father turned his feet at a sharp angle, stood up, and yanked me out of the ocean by the arm, even then I carried this protected paradise into any abysses he and my other handlers had planned.

Grandpa had no intention of waiting until my body menstruated in its own time. He started injections to bring it on by eleven. He must have been working for the Mafia group then because the Illuminati hadn't wanted to start impregnating me until I was thirteen.

In ordinary life, I was sitting on the toilet in our long, narrow Pleasant Hills bathroom with a floor of miniature black and white ceramic tiles. I was eleven and menstrual blood poured out of me. I must have made a sound because my sister rushed into the bathroom. We were not allowed to lock the door. I wanted to die, foreseeing what lay ahead. Crisp blood flew out of me as if I had been cut in half. Life would become a tidal wave that pulled me into the sea with sharks, then washed me to shore with family. If

no one would help a child escape, who would rescue a bleeding girl? Previously, life was set with my parts in place, now life would be executed. My father came in, attracted by the commotion. I said, “What are you, a sex maniac!” My mother had retired to her bedroom.

I began to feel sexual feelings for the first time. I was finishing sixth grade and starting junior high school.

For my eleventh birthday, before they sent me away, my mother bought me many gifts including a leather jacket with knit sleeves that I had admired in Klein's discount department store for months. She filled the two curved sofas in the living room with a panoply of beautiful clothing either from love or guilt. My sister didn't even seem jealous. My mother also baked a masterpiece for my eleventh birthday, a gorgeous, round, four-layer chocolate cake. She baked the batter in two round nine-inch pans, then sliced each layer in half and put hand-whipped cream in between them. She wrote Happy Birthday in pink whipped cream, and around the border put pink decorations like rosebuds, and added giant fresh strawberries. As if that weren't enough, she then said, “I want to take you shopping and have you point your finger and I will buy you whatever you point to.” Perhaps that's when I realized how transitory and meaningless material possessions are.

In normal life, my father practiced American law. In later years, he was on a White House committee and was a law partner with a congressperson's father. But deep within him, he believed in ancient Roman law. Like the church leaders who think pedophilia is a not a crime, my father felt entitled to use his daughters' and other children's vaginas and rectums. He preferred younger children and impregnated me by accident. I had remembered this pregnancy when I worked through my incest memories in the 1980s. As I worked more deeply into my mind control and ritual abuse memories in 2012, a body memory brought this phase of my life roaring back. I felt nauseated and almost vomited. Then I realized the eleven-year-old child my father impregnated had suffered from morning sickness. My vomit had informed my mother and grandmother that I was pregnant. Since my father raped me repeatedly, they deduced it was from him. This was right before the Mafia group started impregnating me deliberately at Brothel 8.

My mother and grandmother rushed me to the family doctor and Dr. Brown gave me an abortion, which I hadn't wanted. I thought it would be nice to have a baby. I loved my Tiny Tears doll. I knew nothing of the

societal implications of having an incest baby—to me it was like having a doll.

I was well aware that my father kept me alive, but perhaps my mother would not have hated me so much if he hadn't kept raping me. Or perhaps she would have anyway because she was programmed to hate me. My father, when confronted, said, “She's so cute and adorable,” blaming me for being raped weekly, sometimes nightly. After the abortion, it was quieter in the apartment. My father was trying to make it up to my mother. I found myself in multiple double binds: I didn't want to be raped and I was raped; I had sudden sexual feelings and I felt confused and guilty; I didn't want the abortion and was forced to have the abortion; I was blamed for the whole thing; there was no way out. Mostly I wanted to rip my skin off.

Driving to the brothel, 1954

This inside girl never hid. I always remembered her. She never told me her whole story but she told me the beginning. Or perhaps that's the only piece of the event she held. Then other parts inside of me finished the history she had begun.

They put me between them in the front seat of the light blue Packard and later the green Pontiac. I held my body in so that no part of me touched either one of them. I wore my brown coat and brown hat with a feather that curled around into a question mark-type shape. The brown hat covered my whole head and the feather wrapped around my left ear. My brown coat went below my knees and matched my hat. This coat was my dress coat, not the storm coat I wore to school. Underneath, I had a simple dress, a starched white blouse, a sweater, and good, new, white underwear and a training bra. I was shiny and polished like my shoes. Mother had arranged my hair in curls along my forehead. I had had to sleep with the bobby pins holding them in place the night before. This was how mother dressed me when she took me to the brothel. Anyone would think I was the most cared-for child in the world. My mother looked out the window of the front seat through the polka dots on her hat's French veil. Her gray suede gloves matched her pumps with fat heels. She wore a mink stole with mink heads dangling down the sides that collided with her belt. I wondered how many dead minks those dangling heads represented. It must not have been the dead of winter or she would have been wearing her mink coat. My father

had on a stylish hat. I was almost eleven and a half. The girls in the car, my inside girls, didn't know about the past experiences in the brothel. It was all new to them. The older girls who had been at the brothel earlier shivered deeper inside me. But even they didn't know what was coming. I should've been at Oldtown Junior High School. They thought, *They are driving me to the brothel. Soon my parents will leave me at the brothel*.

How this girl with the hat never got sunken into the forgotten is unknown, but I thank her for never disappearing. To stay connected to the person who lives ordinary life is a feat. Tons of electricity and torture discourage communication. I hadn't remembered where she was going. Just that she was in the front seat flanked by my parents and shaking, wearing that hat. Sometimes my heart hurt so much that I could feel its outline pierce through my torso. Big bold strokes outlined its shape. The center of my tongue was dry. The back of my throat had a chute that went past my tailbone.

My left leg started shaking violently. My father ignored me as he drove recklessly. My teeth rattled and smashed. “Stop that shaking,” my mother snapped. Her bottom teeth jutted forward and her bottom lip dropped. The minks' heads bobbed. “Stop it.” I tried to hold my body still but my left leg jerked wildly.

“Stop that shaking!” My father drove on.

At the entrance to the brothel, Father handed me over. Mother stayed in the car. No one saw her mink stole or her coordinated outfit. The thin male greeter gave me a shift, slippers, and a number, and tagged my arrival clothes, the same way as when I was younger. Another man who always looked down and was probably from the same country as the first took me to an empty room with a bleak single bed on a cold, uneven floor. The window was fogged over and the wall streaked with dirt. Rusty pipes made sleep apnea sounds. *This place is putrid*. I wanted to go home, even though I had no home.

The visit

I looked down at my chest all the time and prayed that it would not grow. I inspected to make sure it was flat. Several years later, my breasts did start to change but they grew wide rather than out. The relief I felt that I still didn't have breasts was as huge as the town I lived in. The girls in the brothel did

not want to be pregnant, and they knew that the brothel keepers impregnated the older girls. The older girls were salmon swimming upstream. Once they deposited their babies, they died unless their parents came for them. Even girls in regular life were hyper-conscious of their breasts forming. What distinguished us was who wore an undershirt, a training bra, or a real bra. And who had a boyfriend, the most exotic accomplishment.

My parents visited me at Brothel 8 in the Bronx weekly, on Wednesdays or Sundays during visiting hours, which were from two in the afternoon until six in the evening for the younger girls and three to five for the older ones. My mother brought me chopped liver and other foods I liked, like Mallomars. Mother broke off tiny pieces and put them between my lips. My eyes were sunken. I was often chained to the bed when they visited. Mother sobbed. Father looked down and around. They seemed to feel bad, but the fact was they had sold me into this slavery. My father always left with fifty and hundred dollar bills and a few thousand dollar bills thrown in; I saw the stack with a rubber band tied around it. I imagine that they thought they didn't have a way out of this, and that they might as well take the money.

During one visit, my mother wore a new, elaborate pearl choker.

“That's a pretty necklace, Mom,” I said.

“Your father bought it for me for our anniversary,” she said.

With my money, I thought.

I wonder, when my parents visited me, did they know? Were they conscious or so programmed that they didn't know what they had done? My father flicked off a fifty dollar bill, handed it to a man wearing a pale green medical shirt and said “Make sure no one beats her up.” If my parents had stopped visiting me, the men would have killed me the moment I got sick. Sometimes the men sold the abandoned girls to foreign men. The parents had already got the money. They didn't want the girls any more. And just looking at the girls probably made them feel guilty. My parents were better than that. It's hard to believe my parents were better than anyone in the world.

The harvest, 1954–1959

Pamphlets were scattered all over the downstairs of the faded warehouse:

> See your sperm spread over the world.

Have offspring on every continent.
Be a real man.
Give your sperm to one of our girls.
Grow babies in lots of our gals.

I had overheard the managers telling the nurses, “The eggs have to be fertilized—we can't afford a bad batch, we'll lose our customers.” Nurses on the floor drew our blood after we had a series of rapes. My left arm and leg were tied to a bed, this time with metal bracelets and chains like the African slaves wore. My life consisted of rapes, attempts at impregnation, hormone shots, vomiting, and having my insides scooped out. It felt like diarrhea and cramps when they scooped out my eggs to ship them to places around the world. “You have to keep stimulating her. I want constant orgasms. We need an uptake for the sperm,” a nurse in the brothel said. The stimulation was painful.

The air outside was clean, the sky a dreamy blue. Sometimes birds chirped a sharp and harmonious sound. The women had left the window open a crack because they were too hot. The employed women always kept photographs of their children, especially the babies. These women who had the hardship of leaving their home country for another, who struggled with the language—these women loved to make circus-like bows and put them on their children. I realize now the bows were a code saying, “don't tell or you will be killed”. My grandmother also made butterfly bows. I would not mind leaving this country for another, but I thought every country had these brothels and parents who were forced to sell their children and think of themselves as farmers and their children as their crop.

The air was warm and playful. I longed for a glass of orange juice—Mother squeezed oranges for us and left the pulp in—and to go out and play, perhaps ride my bicycle, later go to the drugstore for a vanilla egg cream. When I moved, the metal cut my skin. The men liked to see blood on the girls. The more wounds and scratches the better. *Maybe Mother will bring me orange juice when she visits on Sunday,* I thought. I had tried to infuse ordinary life with as much pleasure as possible. The key to not going crazy or killing yourself was to find some enjoyment somewhere, somehow, possibly. Daniel had wanted me to go on living. Therefore I had to find a way. But here at the brothel, all I could come up with was that my mother might bring me freshly squeezed orange juice on Sunday. My throat was sore. It would taste good.

I also thought of my eggs going to all these countries. Some would create babies I would never see or care for. Would they grow up to be slaves like me who would die soon or be bought by a middle class or rich family that wouldn't know about me lying here in chains? If they thought about it, they might know, but why should they bother thinking about it? They just wanted a baby, any baby.

It was springtime. I was on spring vacation from seventh grade. Maybe one more week and they would send me home and back to school. I would be home for my birthday. Where I lived, the hills were soft and caressing, like a lullaby. The woman sitting on a chair here in the corner sighed and wiped her forehead. She wanted to be home also.

I prayed that my babies would find a good home, not here but perhaps in a small country where parents didn't sell their children. Maybe when my children were eighteen or thirty, they would look for me and find me. But how would they know who I was? There would be no records. Maybe my children would never be. That would be the best. I prayed for that, that my children would never be.

The woman, Trixie, came over with a rag and swatted my cheeks.

“No cry. No allow.”

I wondered what they were doing at home now. Mother and Marlene would be getting up late since school was out. They would have breakfast, probably pot cheese and corn rye bread, slowly dress and then take the F train downtown to Klein's. Mother would buy Marlene nice clothes. Mother might buy me a welcome home outfit. I wondered whether Marlene had ever been sent to Brothel 8. Sometimes she disappeared and I didn't know where she had gone. In September, she'd be going away to college. Then I'd be all alone with my parents. Mother would have stopped Marlene from going to the brothel if she could, but she might not have been able to. Me she just handed over. But she would never have chosen to do that without the masters making her.

My heart got caught in a hard knot. I was trying to coax the fluid in it to move around. The air outside smelled clean. It was funny how it didn't show the pollution outside or inside. I felt a wave come over me. It was light and careful and touched me gingerly. I felt a peacefulness.

“No cry. No allow,” Trixie said.

I didn't know whether the peace was coming from inside me or perhaps from God outside in the sunshine or maybe from the spirit of Daniel. My

nerves were always tumbling around my body, crashing into poles inside me, making dizzying circles. Crash, crash, jump. My mother was driven crazy and these nerves would drive anyone crazy.

I think they charged $500 per vial, or maybe it was fifty dollars? The men who delivered sperm were mostly businessmen, politicians—sometimes a truck driver. The men were rough and came into the girls' small rooms one after the other. Some just laid their entire over-two hundred pounds on you, didn't move, just sank into you, all their weight crushing your child bones, and let their semen dribble around you. They fell asleep and the guards had to be called to get them off. A matron in each room watched that we weren't killed. Each room did not have its own set of guards, and there were nights when more girls were having emergencies than there were guards. That's when a girl or even two were killed. They carried the dead girls out in the darkness in large bags. We envied those girls.

There was a time limit and the matron timed it. “Cigars outside. Rest it in ashtray,” the concierge said. “All men are like this, not just these. They want women, girls chained.”

For exercise, we walked only within the building and up and down the steps while a male nurse held a gun to our ribs. For air, I stuck my head out the window for an hour each night. The matron always watched so I couldn't jump.

Some men were there because they wanted to propagate children all over the world, the way Florida exports citrus fruits and California mangoes.

A cleanup team was supposed to wash the girls off, and bring them a bedpan and water, but often the cleanup crew skipped people because they were lazy. We showered and washed our hair after every ten clients, and we were supposed to wash our parts after every client. The clients, who included a rare woman, didn't notice how sticky and dirty our bodies were. When men wanted to ejaculate, all they cared about was their own sperm. And when they wanted to beat and whip, the dirtier you were the better. It justified their need to make you bad.

Physicians came to the Brothel 8 every ten to eleven days, sometimes every fourteen days, if it was a holiday. They spoke with accents. I don't know whether they were really doctors. They wore street clothes and carried a little black bag. They had a stethoscope, took our temperature orally, pressed on our stomachs, examined us for bugs and venereal disease,

and determined whether we were pregnant. We were tied up during the examinations. They didn't treat us as human beings. To them, we were also just bodies that could bring in money. One time I was sent home early because one of the pseudo-doctors had done a bad procedure and I hemorrhaged. They couldn't use me for a while.

Mrs. Twartski was sometimes there, checking to see that none of my programs broke down so that my parts would cooperate, not fight and, when released from the brothel, remember nothing. Some of us, however, did remember. She or another programmer would press on both my temples together and a stream of these inner slave-girls would come out. Each girl had to take care of five men, then another girl would take over. All these girls were parts who were inside me, who were me. The temple squeeze also told me to hold still and be silent. Even during the five deliveries, I had to bite on a stick between my teeth and be quiet.

When my parents visited, we talked about nothing but it was better to have them near me than being alone. They stayed for fifteen or twenty minutes, less time than it took to drive to the brothel. Then they got up to leave, walked out together and didn't glance back at me. They were robots walking away. They didn't know what they were doing. The masters had control of their minds, souls, and wallets. When they got home, they would think I was at a recreational camp. They may never have had a moment of truth. I had no one in the world.

In my mind, I flung myself from side to side against the walls. After they left, still in my mind, I flew to the side bathroom with a skylight, out the window and perched on its window ledge with the free pigeons, or I jumped to my death. If I jumped, maybe an honest person would find me splattered on the sidewalk and the workings of Brothel 8 would be known. No, honest people didn't hang out around this neighborhood. I would just be dead but I was ready. I could have stayed alive for my children but I will never know who they are.

The girls who were kept in the brothel were separated and weren't allowed to become friends. My body and mind were like locomotives racing across country, never stopping at stations, never slowing down at intersections. In sleep and awake, I rushed, sped, flying off tracks. Anguish ate up my pounds. I found no comfort except in the memory of Daniel. I saw his curls, eyes, felt his still smooth but becoming-a-man skin—some nights, I thought I felt his weightless ghost body covering my writhing-in-

pain body and then the smell. Within the dusty, leaking warehouse, I would suddenly smell daffodils and wildflowers. A perfume filled my nostrils and sinuses even as my ears listened to other girls' whimpering, and the occasional horn honking outside.

“Eat or we will break your jaw.” A guard socked it. After that, I had some sort of contraption around my jaw. They fed me with only a straw. I couldn't open my mouth. They gave me milk shakes.

When I tried to sleep, I spun. The attendants held my arm and walked me to the bathroom or I would have fallen. I started spitting up saliva and retching. The attendant called the doctor.

“She's got to eat something.”

They hooked me onto an IV. Another time, a crew rushed in after the attendant pressed the bell. They came with an IV, blood pressure cuff, and oxygen mask. That same bell rang all through the floors. They never sent us to the hospital.

I used to outline the Pleasant Hills apartment floor plan over and over again in my mind endlessly. I imagined walking from where my parents double locked the front door for the night, past the square gray foyer that we used as a dining room into the hall, past the elongated bathroom with scrubbed tiles, past our room where my sister had the bed closer to the windows with starched organdy curtains. I ran my eyes along the bumps and crags of the walls, came to the deep blue crevice of the corner and rested in its arms. I looked at the Victorian prints of ladies in hoop skirts and samplers stitched by children who lived one hundred years ago, went into the kitchen that mother had painted yellow and green, past the long windows of the living room, and back to the double locked front door for the night. I noticed that I didn't include my parents' bedroom in my mental outline. I wondered whether the girls who stitched the sampler had to go to a brothel.

“If you eat, we'll let you keep the baby.”

We girls rarely saw one another except in the one large bathroom. We were all chained in our separate rooms. But we felt one another. We communicated in our minds and supported one another. I tried especially hard to contact my cousin Rhonda.

A hand has reached out to me in the twenty-first century. It has five fingers with nails and is covered with mud. How brave of it to reach for air even in this polluted world. I lick the mud off covering the self-importance,

the deceptive specialness, I lick in between the fingers and pull and tug on the slippery skin. I will not let go. At last, I have found another one of my selves.

Breeder, 1954–1959

In the brothel, men in white coats had conversations in a foreign language that I somehow understood. In the hallway men said, “We have a big order. They want live newborns. We have an especially big order for half Jewish, half Asian newborns.” They calculated numbers. It would cost them less to keep me here chained to the bed during the pregnancies than for me just to produce fertilized eggs.

They found Asian men on the street who weren't the brothel's usual clients but were workers in the neighborhood, or men they imported from Canal Street in lower Manhattan. The Asian men were rounded up about twenty-five at a time. The managers of the brothel wanted to make sure I and the other Jewish girls got pregnant. These men were violent. They were there only for use of their sperm and the guards often stationed themselves by the beds with their guns drawn. After the clients attempted to impregnate me, they were handed money.

But when the brothel was closed down for the morning, the guards would put down their guns, loosen their shirts, and start unzipping their flies. One of the matrons would storm into the room and shout, “These girls are not for your use.” The guards would slink away because they needed their jobs. Most of me was out the window.

Now that they are remembering, the girls on the ledge talked to the girls left in the bed:

GIRLS IN BED: “Why did you leave me?”

GIRLS ON LEDGE: “We couldn't take it.”

BED: “You left me alone. You shouldn't have left me. You were selfish like Marlene, only caring about yourself.”

LEDGE: “That hurt.”

BED: “It's true, you were cruel.”

LEDGE: “We're sorry. We were not as strong as you.”

BED: “Ha.”

LEDGE: “Why didn't you leave too?”

BED: “Someone had to stay and protect. Everyone can't leave.”

LEDGE: “Why not?”

BED: “Then the body would be completely abandoned and unprotected.”

A short stocky man with an eager but mean face in a tweed suit, tie, and hat and a taller blond woman who had a page boy cut and sprayed hair, a fur coat in winter, a trench coat in the fall and spring, or a summer suit, walked the halls, peering in rooms, holding briefcases and clipboards—looking over the mothers, while planning on taking the babies. The matrons called them “angels of death”. Holding a clipboard and a box of chocolates, the blond woman entered my room when the clients finished with me. She had a tag on her jacket that read Rebecca P. Smith.

“We're from the Wyoming Family Aid Agency, and we're here to help girls like you. We specialize in placing beautiful babies from unwed mothers. We want to get these babies far away from the East Coast, into the clean mountainous air. Don't you want your baby to be raised in clean air and not here in a Bronx ghetto? Don't you want that for your baby as a mother? Your sister gave us all her babies. She wanted a better life for them. Don't you want to be like your sister? We have so many couples who tried for so long to have a baby and would give anything to raise your babies.”

Knowing she was lying, I said, “Maybe they should lie here—then they'd get pregnant.”

“They are very sad and you could make them happy. The Wyoming Family Aid Society specializes in earnest adoptions, meaning adoptions where the birth mother doesn't renege. We are longstanding partners with the Nebraska Aid Society that believes in mother and baby happiness. All little pregnant girls like chocolate candies,” the blond woman said as she shoved the box towards me. The attendants pricked up their ears, knowing I would give them the chocolates as soon as the vulture left. Sometimes they ate the chocolates on the spot, other times they brought the box home to their families.

After the adoption woman and her partner left, a sole Asian worker with kind eyes came in. He looked tired as if he had just come from work and

had been rounded up. He wore a white shirt and loosened tie. Maybe he was a waiter or *maître d'* of a restaurant. He looked at me and his body curved backwards into an opened parenthesis, his fingers stretched wide and he stood frozen in the doorway to my room. Beads of sweat appeared on his face and his eyeballs bulged and receded. His white button down shirt became wet under his arms. His shocked face reminded me of who I was. My handlers had told me this happened to all girls and that I was special to have so many men who would pay for me, that what I was doing here was what life was about. But the man's face shocked me back to the truth. The skinny man with kind eyes looked at me chained to the bed, crying, struggling, and he turned on his toe to leave as he said “No, too little girl.”

“You have to or you'll be killed,” I called to him. He answered, “No little girl, no tied up,” and left.

“If you don't, they'll kill you,” I screamed. I'm not sure he was able to hear me because he spun around and ran. The guards wrestled with him. I heard noise and shouting. The men in the hall followed him. And then the silenced shot in the alley. The inside girls in the bed felt guilty even though they had warned him. *If we weren't crying, maybe he would still be alive*, they thought to themselves. The guards may have killed the one good person in the neighborhood because he knew what was going on inside and they didn't have anything over him. The basis of this kind of criminal security is co-opting. That's why they have the children of these groups kill so young.

In a fairly wild state, my father came to Brothel 8 on his own one afternoon, not during visiting hours. I don't know how he got in. He probably bribed the guards with cash. My father sat on a hard chair near my bed sobbing into his white handkerchief that Mother had ironed for him. He didn't say anything, just sobbed next to me. Two of the male attendants who patrolled the halls with hand guns came in, held a gun to his temple and told him to leave. He reached into his deep pocket. Twenties were on top. He peeled off two twenties, gave each man a bill and sobbed, “Don't hurt her,” and left without turning back around.

My first baby was born on May 17, 1954. The attendant-doctor held her up in the air, mucus and blood coating her perfect body. Beautiful toes. Then he quickly carried her out of the birth room leaving me on the table, my arms extended, longing to hold and sniff her. I never saw her again. My second child was born on February 23, 1955, a stillborn, they said. The

people at the brothel whipped me for it but I'm not sure the infant boy was really dead. When a baby leaves a mother, even an overly young mother, it's as if a meteorite hits a farmland and leaves a crater, and the land will grow no more crops. When a baby leaves a child–mother, it may be even worse. I searched for a nice person in the world, anywhere. Daniel was always there with me, as a ghost always protecting me from the environment, grief, and sadistic workers. In between deliveries, I went home to Pleasant Hills. Sometimes my sister was home from college, with a sophisticated air of the outside world that intrigued me.

This year, I contacted agencies that specialize in trafficking cases and might have access to black market files, but none so far handles “cold cases”. I imagine they have enough trouble investigating current cases. I put ads in newspapers with the dates of my children's births, but so far I've had no responses.

SEVEN

The right choice

Feast of the beast, 1955

The most important moment of my life started a cascade of punishments that would continue my whole life.

During this festival, a third brothel baby grew inside me while death was all around outside, in the same spot where the ceremonies took place every twenty-seven years,[1] in Prince Edward Island, Canada.

Until now, the executioner's hand or one of my handlers' hands had been over mine. It embarrassed the cult leaders that a designated queen of a county had not killed with her own hands. Even eight-year-old children in this cult had already sacrificed for their god. I thought that perhaps they wouldn't send me back to the brothel if I cooperated, but I didn't think they would let me keep my baby.

Killing with your own hands is how you become an adult in this subterranean world. I was walked to the altar at the stroke of midnight surrounded by all the swaying participants chanting, “Daughter of King Saul…royal bloodline…” I and everyone else wore black hooded robes. Two flags on long, high-up poles, higher than the tall pine trees, waved in the cool air. One said *United Brothers of Israel*, the other, the name of my maternal bloodline.

Red strobe lighting flashed. The masters swayed before and behind me. This was the moment I was to step into my prophesied role of queen of this county, which had been the fourth county and was now the first, the one endowed with spiritual importance. This county is composed of the United States, Europe, Canada, and Greenland. Thirteen geographic areas called counties make up the satanic world. Grandpa Max held a sparkling crown in his open hands. Since before my birth, he had been working towards this goal. Everyone present was pushing me to kill with my own hands without assistance, which meant my acceptance of my prophesied position. Even my mother and sister wanted me to do it. The dull hum of chanting

suspended for a moment. In my mind, I heard Daniel speak to me, “Be as pure as the swans,” and saw Mr. Jacobs pray with his family in his apartment across the waterfall. His face and heart vibrated goodness and kindness to his children and the world. My spirit had become one of his children. When you are taken this deeply into the jaws of evil, you have to go one way or another.

The leaders had a drugged Caucasian male prepared to be sacrificed. He was probably thirty-three years old, according to tradition. He would be killed no matter what I did. I was only a pawn. If I killed, I could have an easier life on earth, with less torture, prostitution, and other illegal activities. These groups gave women two husbands: a poor choice of a husband for ordinary life, and a better matched husband for their cult life. My cult husband, Eli, was chanting and expecting me to join him and kill with my own hands. Rhonda was right behind me and watched, neutral. The executioner put the jeweled sword in my left hand. No one breathed. The air was like silk and the earth moist and mellow. The worst crimes take place in the most beautiful landscapes.

In my mind, Mr. Jacobs' hand went over mine, the hand that was over his boys' heads as he prayed in his tallit and as his emaciated wife fingered her rosary. Daniel breathed into me with the familiar breath that had nurtured me for nine years. Daniel, the swans, my parents' deeper unconscious, some place ancient in my bloodline, the strength from the bridge walk—something whispered to me. I would not do it. I passed the test. I failed the test. In this underworld, that is about as close to having free will as it gets.

The emblazoned sword lay on the ground as if bleeding. The chanting turned to a hiss. The strobe lighting ceased. After I dropped the sword, they chanted, “Fall on sword” and “Queen Philomena is a failure” as guards handcuffed me. The executioner stepped up to the altar, took Rhonda's hand, and killed the drugged adult sacrifice.

Grandpa Max wearing his Wiezenslowski mask, Joseph, and Mrs. Twartski whipped me in front of the participants. The other twelve counties performed successful 1955 Feasts of the Beast.

The last days at the brothel

After the feast, my father parked the car in the Bronx slum. My mother got out of the car, took my arm, and dragged me out to the brothel. She had

probably been told that if I didn't return to the brothel, Marlene or I would be killed.

Run, run, I thought, but there was nowhere to run. Overflowing trashcans were on the dark corners. No one was around. Mother shoved me to Mrs. Twartski, who took me inside the heavy, squeaky door and pushed me up many flights of wooden wide steps. I looked frantically for an escape route. On the sixth floor, we went into a large dingy room with a cot, chair, and lamp that had a dirty lampshade. Pale green paint peeled off the walls. The filthy wooden floors rocked. It was like an oversized cell without a single comfortable or pleasant thing to look at. There was a hanger for my coat, a hook for my hat, and a dresser for my clothes.

My second daughter was rushed away from me on December 14, 1955. From the glimpse that I got, I saw that she was delicate, serious, and Asian looking. I don't know what happened to my children. I felt more numb when the other children were born but not completely. I suffered severe chest pains and waited to die from a heart attack, but it was just grief playing with me. I had given these babies all the pent-up love I stored in myself. They were purity among foulness.

Parts of my mind have kept records of everything that happened to me. These parts or personalities were self-created, not affected by the concussions, and my programmers didn't know about them. I think this self-recording started in infancy. I imagine all survivors of these kinds of abuses have this recording mechanism in their brains.

On the last days at the brothel, the supervisor took the girls to the basement. “When you get in your father's car, you will dissolve in a million pieces and no piece will know of the other. Once you are home, you will remember nothing of your experience. You will be a silent child, a quiet child. If you say one word, this is what will happen to you.” They showed us images of girls with black eyes and missing front teeth being thrown off a cliff, and crows and vultures eating them as they said, “If you ever tell even one little bit, the tiniest little bit, or give a hint, then this will happen to you.” They also showed us pictures of mountain lions devouring children. Sometimes now I awake in a panic attack with these images. “This program starts when you hear the bell ring for the next girl to leave. Whenever you see a yellow bow or any kind of bow, you will remember to forget us here.”

They checked us out by number. They returned our small valises and coats. We put on our street clothes, which we had arrived in. Sometimes the

mothers brought different clothes from those we had arrived in to accommodate the season or growth. Psychically, I said goodbye to the girls. Trauma and abuse bind people for life. We all had the same experience. My father was waiting double-parked outside. Another man made sure my father was there.

“We don't want any trouble.” Then he told me to leave.

The man rang a desk bell for the next crippled girl to check out. The walls of evil crashed in on my child's body like an avalanche. No possible escape. The world was an empty abyss, and I was filled with terror.

I got in the front seat and my father and I didn't say anything. By the time I arrived home, I didn't remember anything. It was as if I returned from a regular school day or summer camp. When I got home, my mother either went into her own bedroom and closed the door, or frantically paced the small apartment, or acted as if nothing had happened and put milk and cookies on the kitchen table, either Mallomars or her homemade butter dough cookies with ground walnuts on top.

A friend, 1955

Back in the twenty-first century, yesterday, I began to feel particularly bad about not having a real friend. No close friend with whom I could share everything. Then I remembered Sally and understood my current grief. She and I had been friends about this same time. An emotional explosion often precedes the narrative of my dissociated memories. I remembered being at Sally Kraus' home in Pleasant Hills. I used to walk to Sally's apartment building five blocks down from mine, towards Enterprise Avenue. We were together in the seventh grade and close for months, before Mengele reappeared.

An only child, Sally invited me to a sleepover at her apartment. We ate meat, mashed potatoes, and dessert at a small table with her parents. The mother commented that I had a sweet tooth and asked me questions about myself. There was almost no other talk. The parents were divorcing. Sally and I got along wonderfully. I had not had a friend for a long time. Given that we were both programmed with mind control, it's amazing that we were able to be spontaneous and play. Then suddenly it ended.

Mrs. Kraus, whose first name was Dorothy, was one of the better mothers because she knew enough to divorce, but still she couldn't protect. When

the father, Marvin, picked Sally up off the bed, he said, “You're next” to me. He paced back and forth as he carried my friend around with his penis in her. Sally's mother called from another room, “Marvin, leave the girls alone, come out of there, or I'm coming in.” Then she was at the door, knocking. I couldn't understand why she didn't just barge in. Mr. Kraus dropped Sally on her bed in the middle of the rape and left the room. Sally was crying and ashamed. “Now you know my secrets,” she said to me. We clasped hands, her left hand with my right hand, and lay there heartbroken. She had thought he wouldn't do it if I were there. Without television, I don't know that we would have ever found out that there was another way to live. The fathers in *I Remember Mama*, *My Life with Father*, and later *The Brady Bunch* never raped their children, or at least the television never showed it.

With our fingers intertwined, love passed between us, stronger, deeper, more permanent than all the electrical shocks Mengele and the Satanists could muster with all their elaborate machines. Two friends knowing what each other's nights and families were like and loving each other because of it. I felt our souls touch and our hearts take in what we endured. That feeling of communion is still with me today.

Maybe Sally reported to her handler that she had a sisterlike friend, or perhaps her parents did, or my mother might have told her own parents who told my handler, or it may have been my sister who told on me. Or one of the reporters in me may have told though no one inside me has confessed yet.

When Sally and I were holding hands, she still sobbing, we put our heads together with our temples touching and fell asleep like that, our heads like joined mind-controlled twins.

Almost every day, I walked the five long blocks on 108th Street under the cherry blossom trees from my apartment to Sally's apartment building. I took the elevator to the eighth floor, turned left, walked down the hall, and knocked on her door. Her mother Dorothy opened the door about two inches and stuck her eye out. Her knee was between the door and the doorframe. She dressed in street clothes, not the housedress my mother wore inside. “Can Sally come out?” I asked, thinking that if she couldn't, I could come in and see her.

“Sally can't play with you,” Dorothy said. I was too stunned to ask why not. She closed the door. I heard the double lock click in place. I began crying. I walked back the five blocks under the cherry blossoms trees

sobbing, trying to understand what had happened. *I hadn't done anything wrong. Sally's father had done something wrong. I knew something about them I wasn't supposed to. Were Sally or I not allowed to have any friends?* I felt boxed in loneliness even as pink petals softly fell on me. This block was an Eden and a pastel loveliness caressed my sorrow. Without success, I called on Sally every day for about two weeks. My mother said not to, that either Sally was sick or her parents didn't want to let her out. I couldn't stop crying. My eyes stung without stopping.

In my normal, everyday life outside the cult, I had the problem of automatically transferring to any friend all the feelings I had for Sally. Most of those friends, of course, did not warrant such trust.

The last time I tried to call for Sally and was refused, while I was walking home with my eyes burning from sobbing, Mengele's big black car pulled up under the cherry blossom trees glistening in the sunlight. He hopped out and told me to get in. He called me Wendy and put chloroform over my nose. He and I were in the back seat as his driver and another man were in the front. I naively thought he would drive me home, but we went right to the programming quarters at Montauk Point, where Mrs. Twartski waited. My parents must have told Mengele where to find me. Now Mrs. Twartski and Mengele were friends and working together.

The assistants put me on a stretcher and wheeled me to the second floor. I was barefoot, naked, with electrodes on the soles of my feet, up the sides of my trembling legs, above my knees. They fastened on a helmet with inside spikes that especially hurt the soft spot of my head. I got quick shots of drugs in the right and left arms, and had to follow Mengele's watch moving back and forth hypnotically, with commands followed by brutal shots of electroshock. Mrs. Twarstski instructed, “You are not allowed to have any friends. Jewish girls have no friends. Any friend you have will be killed. You can't be friends with Sally Kraus, and she can't be friends with you.”

Sally was a great loss for me, but now the possibility of not having any friend was an even greater loss.

MENGELE: “Any friend you make we will kill.”

MRS. TWARTSKI: “I thought you learned that when we killed Daniel.”

MENGELE: “We can see your every move. You cannot have friends. You are ours to do with what we like. No other people in your

world. Only us.”

But Sally and I had already tasted the nurturing love of a friend, which they couldn't erase.

Polio, 1955

In front life, Aunt Eileen in the Bronx had called my mother to say two children in my cousin Rhonda's elementary school had come down with polio. She wouldn't let Rhonda go to school and she was sterilizing all their dishes. At the same time, Aunt Mimi in Flushing called and told my mother she wouldn't let her daughters outside, not even the older one who was younger than me. No one in our school, Public School number three, had it yet. We still went to school, sat at our desks, learned fractions, and studied countries, this time Hawaii with its luxurious blue skies and sensuous fruits and dances. But I knew my mother worried. She never let us take bites from other people's sandwiches or licks of their ice cream cones. My parents watched Dr. Salk on television. They worshipped the man who was saving children's lives.

“Dr. Salk should have been in charge of the distribution himself,” my mother screamed at the T.V. “Then the inoculations would be safe.” She had heard stories of children getting polio from the vaccine. “I'm not giving the children the injections,” she said to my father, who sat in his wing chair half dressed, dubious, placid. “If everyone else gets it, they won't have germs to catch,” Mother argued. Father, who was a professional arguer, didn't agree or disagree and he didn't argue with Mother, even though he was a trial lawyer. *Was this a script for my punishment or how my mother really felt,* I wondered.

A few nights later, my father and sister were in the small room adjacent to the living room, which was our foyer and dining room. My father had his overcoat on. It was after dinner on a school night, already starting to get dark outside. My sister had her green mid-weight coat on. My father wore his fedora hat, which he also wore to his office in downtown Manhattan. Lovingly, as if she would never see her again, Mother straightened Marlene's collar. She was fifteen; I was twelve. My father and Marlene left and I didn't know where they had gone. My father never went out alone with my sister because Marlene belonged to my mother, not him. I belonged

to him, not my mother. Yet I was left behind with my mother. Where was he taking Marlene? Why didn't I go? Was it a doctor's appointment? Was something wrong that they hadn't told me about? Mother didn't answer. They closed the heavy front door to our apartment. Mother did not double lock the door.

“They'll be back soon,” Mother said nonchalantly and returned to the kitchen to finish washing the dishes. I went back to my bedroom, sat at my desk and finished my math homework. It was soothing to do math problems and have everything turn out right. An unknown that had an answer that was either right or wrong. It was an alternate world to the unclear one I lived in. Maybe they were buying my sister something big but not me. Maybe it was so heavy that my father had to carry it. A secret. When my sister returned from this outing, she wouldn't say anything. She just hung up her coat and got ready for bed.

The next night, a Thursday, when he came home from work, Father flung the folded newspaper on the dining room table in the foyer. Mother hated when he didn't put it on the small side table but he never did. He liked to aggravate her. He sniffed deeply the dinner smells. Mother cooked meat for him. He went into the kitchen to find her.

I studied Norman Rockwell's drawings on the cover of the *Saturday Evening Post* but didn't usually read the newspaper. But this night, something led me to the folded over local paper on the dining room table. I opened it slowly. On the front page, in the right hand column, was a headline: “Polio vaccine given out at Public School number three from 5 to 8 P.M. yesterday.” A photo of lines of children with their parents, both parents, was underneath. I looked at the photograph of many children, many parents. And there was my sister, her green coat a medium black in the picture, Father's Stetson hat a light grey. They stood towards the back of the line, the bigger figures in the photo on the table in Pleasant Hills. The small figures must have gone there before their dinners because they were first in line.

Mother called from the kitchen, “Wash up, get ready for bed.” Why did they want Marlene to have an inoculation and not me? I couldn't figure it out but felt silent arrows piercing my skin, first my heart then my brain. I didn't have the word for it yet but it was forming into a feeling of betrayal. Did they want me to die? This part of me had not known of all the times they showed that they would willingly let me die.

One afternoon, I returned from Oldtown Jr. High School and found Mengele sitting on our curved living room sofa, his legs tightly crossed. When I saw his dark, dry hair, I felt as if the floor had disappeared and I was standing on a huge spring. Mother and Mengele seemed like giant bats flying around the apartment, bumping into each other. I pictured all the stars as dull black and me in the middle of their evil universe. I wanted to run away but my legs had stiffened and there was nowhere to disappear to. He was smoking his brown filtered cigarette, sipping ginger ale that Mother had brought him in her good tall glass with hand painted flowers on it. In the living room, my parents called Mengele Uncle Charlie.

“Hello again, Wendy,” he said. His face folded in. His beady eyes seemed to dance with death. His large black shoes glowed with shine. I wondered whether he had slave-children shine them. His overcoat was open and his dark suit didn't have a single visible wrinkle. His skin still smelled of burnt and decaying bodies. His legs were stiff as if in a perpetual Nazi stance. His fingers were delicate like a woman's, though he used his nails to bite into people's flesh.

“I hear you're a big girl now, bleeding,” he said. I glared at my mother. I never knew how my body would react, and I peed through my clothes in the foyer. Barely surprised, Mother told me to change my clothes and began scrubbing the grey carpet as Mengele kept talking to her and as I eavesdropped with my heart galloping around in circles. “I just want to borrow her for a few days,” he said.

“I'll have to ask Morris about it,” Mother answered.

“Let me have this child on the operating table while you think it over,” he said. “I'll make it worth your while. I can start the experiment right here in your own building. No transportation necessary.”

I felt there was something so wrong and bad about me that my parents would hand me over. When these feelings reached a peak and I could take it no longer, I splintered into hundreds of pieces and floated above myself, shivering and ashamed. I had so much anger that some made its way out of the pieces of me and into the air in front of me. My body became a Swiss cheese with deep holes sprouting rage. I said to my mother, “Why don't you send Marlene?”

“No, not Marlene. Your father will decide,” Mother answered.

“She's just the kind of subject we want—someone who fights back,” Mengele said. “She's got spunk.” The air became sick with gaseous poisons.

My father must have given permission. We were underneath the apartment building in the second lower level, where the medical surgery took place. His surgery room with an operating table and IV drip was a square room off one of the tunnels. “Lie down on the table,” he ordered. He had a tape measure and took measurements of my vertebrae, and the width of my thighs, forearms, wrists, ankles, toes.

For the experiments with polio, Mengele wanted to be called Dr. Menkel or Merk. He called this sub-basement room his “laboratory.” He attached the IV drip into the vein in my right arm and said he was dripping the polio virus into it. He continued measuring me as the container of virus emptied. I filled with dread and fear and my body shook violently. *This was death*, I thought. I waited for death. When the container emptied, he unhooked me and it was over. My Aunt Gertrude and another person came into the “laboratory.”

They dressed me, then pushed me up the shaft-like tube that ended up in one of the basement rooms on the ground floor, off the hallway. She knocked on our front door in code, one, three, two knocks. My father opened the door. Mother stood behind him. Their faces were emotionless masks, not a snicker or sneer.

“Don't let her eat or drink anything for forty-eight hours. He wants the virus to settle in,” Aunt Gertrude said. *So my parents knew what Mengele was doing to me*, I thought. *Of course, they sold me to him*. I felt too weak and spent to think about killing them at that moment. Half of my top lip curled.

“She'll need something to drink sooner than that,” my father said. “This isn't a concentration camp.” *It's worse than that*, I thought, *because my own parents did this to me*.

“I'm just repeating what he said,” Aunt Gertrude said and walked away in a huff. It seemed that Aunt Gertrude had become Mengele's assistant.

I didn't know whether they pretended to give me polio or whether the virus was real. I still don't know. I felt as if I had the flu with more severe pain than usual. I did have polio around these years, and my back and legs changed shape. I was most unhappy because I loved to run and dance and walk to Queens Boulevard to buy a loaf of rye bread. I ate half of it as I walked home. I didn't want to be a cripple. I preferred to be dead. And I preferred to kill them before I died. Until I started my recovery, I hadn't remembered about the polio though I knew about the curvature in my upper

back, my skinny legs, and extreme sensitivity to physical pain, heat and cold.

In the middle of the night, my father brought me water. “I don't care what he says,” my father said. I gulped the water.

Sometime later, after the inoculation period, Mengele reappeared in our apartment.

“We have to do a second round. I need more advanced equipment,” he said. “I need to take her to the main offices.”

“When will you bring her back?” my father asked.

“Tomorrow,” Mengele answered.

“Take good care of her,” my father said. I added my father to my list of people I would kill. My mother stayed in her bedroom. Marlene was not home. At that moment, my hatred rose stronger than my fear. I didn't feel anger. I became anger. My rage, like a locomotive, swept through my life. I enjoyed the fantasy of killing people. I vomited in the foyer, outside hall, and Mengele's limousine. I had to control my anxiety and depression or I would be ruined and they would win. My depression made me passive and hopelessly heavy. I figured out that if I could think of something pleasurable to look forward to every day, I could survive. A piece of chocolate, the smell of a flower, the breeze on my skin—all these could keep me alive. Montauk Point was always flooded with children. Maybe I would see someone I knew. That anticipation kept the octopus of depression off me, which allowed me to keep fighting. But the injections Mengele constantly gave me in my upper right arm blunted my ability.

I had to leave myself Hansel and Gretel breadcrumbs to get back to my mind and retrieve myself. I knew Mengele would starve me but when he had finished, I would eat again. That would be a pleasure. I would drink water. When I returned home, Mother would squeeze oranges. And she would cook Wheatina in the morning and make it lumpy, the way I liked it. My lips would be chapped and it would feel good to put Vaseline on them.

At Montauk Point, I became a demonstration model as Mengele lectured to a medium-sized audience of handlers, scientists, and specialists. He pointed to a diagram of the human body on a stand, while vials of his poison dripped into me as he kept me on stage in a hospital bed and sometimes a wheelchair.

“She's a good subject for polio,” he taught. He pointed to a large screen filled with illustrations of body parts. In front of everyone, Mengele

injected the top side of a tendon below my knee and fastened an IV drip on my arm. I don't know whether fake chemicals came out of the IV both times, or whether one was real, or perhaps both.

I returned from Montauk Point with braces on my legs. I felt determined not to be a cripple but hadn't realized what a huge disease I fought. I lay on my back and made cycling motions with my legs. The second my legs got tired, I stopped and slept. Then I started again. I did this all day and night despite the pain like swords going through me. I dragged myself to the toilet. Eventually, I got rid of the braces and walked.

Months passed, and I returned to school. I had no strength and could hardly lift my arms. The pain felt like a cluster of nails being hammered into my vertebrae. Every time I took a step, the ground fell away. I couldn't stop crying. I couldn't remember my name. I didn't know my address. Mengele sent his Nazi-trained assistants to re-assess me.

“She's frail,” two of them decided.

Mengele telegraphed, “Close her down.”

“You will remember nothing that we have put in this vault. You will never approach this vault. If you ever touch the door to this vault, you will be electrocuted. You will tell no one of this vault. You will speak to no one of your life. You have never heard of Mengele, Dr. Black, Dr. Schwartz, Dr. Green, Merkel, Merk, or Uncle Charlie. If you remember anything about your treatment under Dr. Mengele, you will explode on the spot.”

Using drugs and electroshock, they sealed this storage unit. The inside girls Mengele worked on remained in the subterranean tunnels within these vaults. They stayed in the middle of a chronic nervous breakdown until I found and rescued them.

Ordinary life, 1956

When I was home from the brothel, and before I was sent to the monastery, I remembered nothing about my real life. I attended regular school and thought that the reason I didn't know anything was because of my stupidity and limitations. I looked for ways to win Mother's love. We were in Manhattan and she admired a gold bar brooch in a jeweler's window on West 47th Street. Later that week, when I was alone in the apartment after school, I made my way to Enterprise Avenue and took the subway downtown, bought the brooch for eight dollars, and gave it to her. My

mother most likely did not remember that the child she had left at a brothel and sold to Mengele and whom she was about to send away again, that that child spent her life savings trying to please her. Mother wore the brooch often on her crisp white blouses.

In my parents' ordinary life, they loved avocados and hated to see anything go to waste, not thrive, or die. They bought a thin book on how to grow avocadoes from pits, and learned to place an avocado pit held up by three spaced toothpicks in a jar with water. When the pits sprouted roots, my father transplanted them into a clay pot with dirt, and my mother inspected the textured, bright leaves regularly. They delighted in the growth, and every sunny windowsill had these plants in various stages of development. But I went to waste, my life.

Note

1. The Passport Office struggled to cope because so many people were arriving for the ceremony:
New York Times (1955). Passport Office strained by credit travel rush. June 11, p. 2.
New York Times (1955). Travel boom overtaxes U.S. passport facilities. July 11, p. 25.
New York Times (1982). The mighty dollar, the wilting traveler. June 16, p. 3.
New York Times (1982). Passports are being delayed by a backlog of applications. June 20, p. 42.
New York Times (1982). Passport crunch. September 12, p. 4.

EIGHT

The monastery

The Mafia got its grip on children with the sole purpose of making money. Its leaders were not interested in the spiritual dimension of depravity. But the Illuminati group imposed on the same children its archaic, twisted religious beliefs about extending the rule of their deity, Lucifer. One aspect of these beliefs was that there was a royal bloodline that would birth their rulers. A prophecy had told the Illuminati leaders that my second-born Illuminati child was supposed to rule over our county.

Mother of the heir, 1956

For these Illuminati pregnancies, I had to take up residence away from home. Before I was sent away, I had mind-control sessions to persuade me that I was going to la Madeleine church in Paris, that I was being honored, and that I owed it to Lucifer to obey. They programmed me to believe that I was flying Air France, but instead of driving to the airport, my father switched me to another personality and drove me to a church or monastery in a middle-class section of New York. That's where I would live, with Father Anthony, who dressed like a Vatican priest, and the Brothers. Not until I put this memory together did I realize I had never left New York.

My father parked his car and walked me to the front entrance. I carried my own suitcase. An expensive, engraved sign by the arched wooden door read “La Maison aux Jeunes Filles Perdus”. I was thirteen years old and had already learned some French in Junior High School. My handlers hadn't thought to program me not to learn in a foreign language, and I absorbed its grammar quickly. My brain experienced unimpeded learning. It felt like cold, salty ocean air. At the church's front door, I immediately spotted the mistake in noun agreement, that “perdus” was missing the “e” and should have been spelled “perdues”. The sign meant “lost young girls” and the “e” was needed for feminine agreement. I thought this clumsy mistake should not have happened in France.

Brother Gregory answered the door. He wore a long brown cloak with braided cords and decorations around his neck, appeared chubby and had a forbidding, musty smell to him. A West Highland terrier rushed down the

steps and flew to the door. Pow Wow sniffed my feet and never left my side for the rest of his life, except for the times when they sent me home. I would not have survived without this spunky dog.

One of the robed brothers walked me past the entrance to the large kitchen, up the side stairway and to my attic room. My father did not follow, but Pow Wow did. My father did not say goodbye and I didn't say goodbye to him; I just followed the pretend-friar in the robe. My sterile room had a cot with a white enamel head and footboard, a wooden dresser, sink, closet, table, and chair. Its windows were barred. Pow Wow jumped on the bed, and I was able to take in a bit of air and even exhale partway. The furnishings were minimal but much less grim than in the brothel rooms. Father Anthony brought in a bowl of water for Pow Wow, which I thought was a kind gesture. He must have figured out that Pow Wow had become attached to me. All the friars seemed fond of quirky Pow Wow. I sat on the bed relieved not to see pamphlets scattered on the floors and the sharp mumbling of auctions as background noise. It appeared quiet and clean, but I held my head in my hands.

Later that night, a man and a woman entered and told me to undress. Before I left home, Mother had scrubbed me like a bathroom and had given me starched and ironed clothes to wear. I laid my clothes neatly on the cot. Mother yelled if I ever left my clothes crumpled and scattered.

“She's too thin,” the woman said. She was solid, stocky with dyed blond hair pulled back in a bun. She looked like an actor playing the part of a villain in a movie. I had noticed that overweight women always hated my skinniness. The thin, white-haired man with a puffy face and eyes wore a hospital coat. “It doesn't matter,” he said. Apparently he was a doctor. “We'll inseminate her tomorrow.” He poked around my naked body. The woman, whose name was Bertha, came back with a bowl of rice pudding with raisins and a blob of whipped cream on top. I put on my pajamas, bedroom slippers, and bathrobe, sat on the hard chair by the table, ate the bowl of rice pudding and fell right into a heavy sleep—they must have put drugs in it. A round clock on top of the dresser said it was about ten minutes after five in the morning when the team woke me up and examined my body again. “She has shingles,” the doctor said. He went away and came back with pills. He said he had never seen shingles on someone so young, and he couldn't impregnate me until the shingles had run its course, which took about ten days. He said the delay would not affect their schedule. I had

no idea what schedule they were on. They discussed whether to send me home or keep me at the monastery. I wanted to go home despite loyal Pow Wow at my feet. They decided to keep me there. I remained a prisoner in this room for ten days with nothing to do, and the burn and sting of shingles around my waist. I missed my mother and sister, even though I had no mother or sister.

Bertha used the time to give me mind-control sessions. “You are at the Madeleine church in Paris, France. You are a queen; everyone loves you. You are special and important. Your babies will rule the world. You will rule the world through witchcraft,” she said as she showed me pictures of Paris, the parks around the church, my room in the church, and Pow Wow. I only went out when she took me with her to test the new mind control. I had to believe I spoke French and ate French food. She took me to the deli, and I had a salami sandwich with mustard and chips with ketchup.

“You are eating a crêpe and croissant,” she said. “Whenever you hear English, you will think you are hearing French.” When I had a bagel, I had to think brioche. The neighborhood seemed somewhat clean and family-oriented, but not stylish like Paris.

Too soon, the doctor said I could be impregnated. My body didn't explode from anguish as it had when the shingles appeared. First I fasted for three days and was only allowed to drink water. A technician shaved my whole body—scalp, eyebrows, arms, legs, pubic area. I can still hear the sound of the electric razor. In the basement tunnel, they started the preparation rituals, calling on Satan, demons, and in particular Lucifer to open my young womb. Cult artists drew black and red ink occult designs over my naked hairless body—lots of swirls and spirals, upside-down crosses, broken Swastikas—then poured blood, semen, and urine over me, while the chorus chanted prayers and invocations, and incense burned constantly. I felt nauseated, and doubly naked without hair. Black candles flickered. The popular 1968 movie *Rosemary's Baby* captures a bit of the atmosphere of ritual preparations, drugs, devil worship, cannibalism, sacrifices, double binds, and enforced pregnancies, as well as co-opted outsiders.

The church's basement held operating rooms. The doctor used my assigned cult husband's sperm that they had flown in from Israel. He started the artificial insemination, and the Brothers punctured tiny holes around my vagina. “We are conducting spirits into your womb that will accompany and

influence the fetus," they said. They claimed test tubes contained my ancestors' spirits and showed me a whole wall of them. The Brothers believed wholeheartedly in the demon and spirit world.

"Tilt the foot of the bed upward. Raise her legs. The sperm has to stay in."

"Keep stimulating her. We need her womb to pulsate."

"Now lower her legs. Let her rest."

"She's cramping. Give her an injection." They gave me morphine.

The workers wore masks, like oxygen masks, while they operated on me. "Clean her up. Put her to bed. Keep her in bed for two weeks. All meals in bed. She can get up to go the bathroom. Every few days, she can walk around the balcony. No bending or lifting. Clean up the dog shit. It creates germs." The last part reminded me of my mother and grandmother, caring about a speck of dust when the whole picture was filthy. My grandmother only let us have machine-made ice cream cones that "no human hands had touched" because she was afraid of our catching germs from strangers.

Puppy mill bitches are made to breed over and over until either they can no longer produce good litters or they die. The doctor took his gloves and hospital coat off, picked up his black bag and left. They determined I was pregnant through urine and saliva tests, and when it grew back, smelling my scalp and pubic hair.

After a few weeks, the Brothers in gray or brown hooded robes let me go downstairs to the kitchen, where I met Rosalita, the Italian cook. She was a pleasant, almost wholesome-looking woman in her forties who liked to mother people and had been an outsider. She always wore her apron, was buxom and comforting. Her smile filled her whole face. Her hands were soft and warm. She stroked my head and rubbed my belly. My young skin was tight and hurt. Rosalita had taken this job because she needed money. She was one of the immigrants they employed and made dependent on them. She would not have known of all the criminal activities going on, but she would have sensed them. Once the Brothers get you in their grip, it's almost impossible to get out even if you weren't born into it. If someone like Rosalita ever talked, the Brothers would have killed her or had her deported.

The Brothers insisted I only eat human flesh. My body screamed for raw fruits and vegetables, and the more human flesh they forced me to consume, the more I wanted to eat raw natural crops. I told Rosalita about my food

cravings. When the Brothers weren't watching or at night, she snuck me large tossed salads like my mother made. She made the dressing with balsamic vinegar, olive oil, and mustard; my mother used peanut oil and lemon juice.

As I began to hang out in the kitchen, I became less lonely. I sat at her kitchen table for hours with soothing Pow Wow at my feet. During the day, she snuck me leaves of lettuce and chunks of apple. There was no kindness in the suburban monastery, except for Rosalita in the kitchen. She risked her life to bring me salads. My days were spent finding a way to eat real food, hanging out with Rosalita, making voodoo dolls, practicing the witchcraft my mentor Joseph, who was an advanced wizard, taught me, and soaking up Pow Wow's steadfast love. I could also reverse the witchcraft into white witchcraft and do good, when they weren't watching me and reading my mind. These were years when my non-cult contemporaries learned more advanced math, science, history of civilization, geography, literature. I learned only witchcraft. I had no tutor for academic subjects or even books.

The map room

The leaders decided to use my craving for fruits and vegetables to coerce me to do more psychic work. They started to withhold all food. They put spiders on my naked body. All I could think of was how to stop it. “Just kill me. Let me die. No one could live with this,” I said to them.

“Just go through the door,” Joseph said. “Go through the door into the map room. Into the nice map room. The Council is waiting for you there. Oranges, clean clothes, salads that Rosalita prepared herself—better than your mother makes. All you have to do is go into the map room and give us your intelligence.” The Council, what Joseph called “the leaders of your division,” were disguised men wearing robes, plus one woman. They wanted me to discern with my hands where they should strike.

The map room was ice blue and located on the top part of the monastery's tower. It had ornate wood panels, globes of the world, and world maps on the walls. Each session started with torture, putting needles in my gums as I lay on a leather couch and then spinning me in a leather desk chair. The spinning left me feeling as if I had a concussion.

“You will sit here and with your considerable sensitivities, you will tell us which parts of the world are most prone to accept Lucifer as their

master.” The woman spoke English with an accent, but I couldn't tell which one. “Put out your hands over this map and tell us where we are succeeding and where we should go.” The men in ice blue robes nodded. I couldn't see their faces. I was required to put my hands over the globe without touching it, and I had to feel where the most spiritual energy came out, and tell them. They had divided the globe and flat maps into the thirteen satanic counties. One county might be huge; others such as Haiti were tiny. The population of a large county was not attuned to the spirit world, whereas people in the tiny counties were more spiritually alive. In terms of spiritual acumen, it would take thousands of Americans and Europeans to equal one individual from the Virgin Islands. The Philippines had two counties. They wanted to know the thirteen worldwide hot spots, which could be cities or whole countries. These spots were always in flux, so they tested them over and over. Going to the map room was a monthly task.

Illuminati babies

These cults operate by destroying what is natural and whole. They want children whose minds they can shatter. A necessary condition of shattering a mind is creating an unbonded and unattached infant. They wanted an unbonded newborn from me but not one addicted to drugs or with brain damage.

Their plan was to shock the fetus through my skin and torture me at the same time, to ensure that I didn't stay emotionally and spiritually connected to the fetus. They put my feet in ice cubes. The medical assistants felt for the fetus' head and avoided it. During the shock, Philomena, who was me, had to go away, leaving the baby. I would not go away. With prenatal electric torture, if the mother stays connected, the mother–child bond is still intact despite the torture. They could not tell whether I left my baby or stayed connected. These were the moments of fighting them with everything in me.

“If these babies are born wrong, we will kill them in front of you.” I was spun in a chair, and a vise squeezed my head. *Did I want a baby who would have the same life as mine or worse, or did I want a baby who did not belong to the cult*? They upped the electricity. If my children were born bonded and thereby deemed unprogrammable, they could be given a different role, adopted out, or killed. I could feel the babies growing inside

me, kicking and being real. With them, I felt I would never again be alone and I could take care of them and give them the love I learned about from Daniel. If I didn't know what to do, he would come to me and teach me. I would fight to protect them. All the electricity in the world could not keep me from my children. Queen Philomena, this pregnant part of me, did not know of the babies we had already lost.

Melissa

One of the first memories I had when I started this trek into re-associating my tormented life came in a dream. In this dream, my one living child took my hand and led me over the hills to a grassy field. I thought the field was in Israel because of the programming, but it must have been in this suburb. There I saw a baby girl in a cradle surrounded by a circle of hooded chanting figures in charcoal gray robes. While I still lived in New York in the 1980s, this dream drew me to remember my four Illuminati infants. The first one, Melissa, looked like Eli, my cult husband. She was delicate, self-contained, and intense. Her soul shone through all her pores. After that breakthrough dream, I stayed shocked for a long time.

When my baby was born, the programmers still could not tell whether I had left the prenatal child emotionally during the electroshock torture. About a week after delivery, they tested the infant. They pricked the baby's left foot to cause pain, then tried to comfort the infant. If the baby accepted comforting, it was bonded. If its body stiffened and turned away in rage, it was unbonded. My Illuminati babies accepted comforting.

It was the first time the parts of me had someone to love since Daniel's death. I trusted the babies, they were all my insiders had, all I would ever have. And the babies trusted me. I didn't leave them for a second, not in the womb or outside. We were good mothers and loved our babies the way Daniel had loved us. We would gladly die for them. We put them on our heart. Their body weight pressed some of our pain away.

All but the third of my Illuminati babies were conceived through artificial insemination, and the first two were born on December 24th in consecutive years. A white-haired, thin man with a puffy face and eyes, in a hospital coat, performed the artificial insemination for each Illuminati pregnancy. His face looked as if he were drowning. They had me copulate during rituals but first they impregnated me with what they said was my cult

husband's sperm. I was induced each time and given no painkillers during the labor. My cult husband was usually present for the birth rituals and was kind during the deliveries. He held my hands and head during the hard labors. An adult man was sacrificed during each ritual in which a child was delivered. They wrapped each newborn in the liver from the sacrificed thirty-three-year-old victim and paraded the child around to show to each member of the coven.

My firstborn was delivered on December 24, 1956. The ritual for Melissa's birth took place outdoors, probably in the enclosed back yard of the Holy Brotherhood of Priests. I had been so drugged, I didn't know where I was. The friars passed her around one to the other and put drops in her eyes during this consecration. They wore gray robes with yellow sashes. I wore a white robe with a pale blue sash. Afterward, they told me she had died and implied it was from the drops they administered because she was bonded, because I disobeyed. I never saw her again. It's possible that she was sent somewhere. It's possible that she is alive somewhere. They bound my screaming breasts after they took her away.

The Brothers sent me home for three months, and I attended school, but felt distant from the other students. While I was away, I missed energetic Pow Wow and compassionate Rosalita. At home I was not close to anyone. People walked past me as if I didn't exist. Outside, neighborhood passersby averted their gaze. Perhaps they knew.

Baby Daniel, the heir

My father took me out of morning math class at Oldtown Junior High School just before lunch. I hadn't expected him. My mother had a lunch ready for me, a tuna fish sandwich on wholewheat bread, carrot and celery sticks, a glass of milk made from Walker Gordon non-homogenized milk, and two Mallomars.

I changed out of my plaid skirt and put on slacks, a shirt, and a jacket. The doorbell rang. My father answered the door. Two men in overcoats entered, one carrying a black satchel. They took me under the arms, sat me in a dining room chair in the foyer. They filled a needle and plunged it into my right arm under my rolled-up sleeve. The gray walls spun. The ceiling hit the floor and the floor floated out the window and over the waterfall. Everything grew dark as my parents seemed to rise along the walls.

I didn't know how much time passed but I woke up, fell back to sleep, woke up, fell asleep. I felt bumped and jostled. My elbows hit wood. I felt a helmet on my head and noticed myself wrapped in a blanket with my knees up to my chest. It comforted me to hold my body so tight. I realized then that a box or a crate contained me and that I seemed to be in an airplane. The drugs wore off too soon. I shouldn't have been up. I overheard something about landing in a foreign language. No, I knew the language, French. They were shipping me back to France. I wondered whether my parents were happy that I was gone and whether my sister would miss me. My parents must have been happy because they let the men in. I must have fallen back to sleep, but my head banged as I landed. The men held me under the arms again because it was difficult walking after being cramped in a box.

I was in a limousine surrounded by large men, who gave me more pills to swallow. We were in Paris. I recognized the elegance of the streets and wildness of the traffic. The car pulled up to la Madeleine church. Looking back now, I am not sure whether they did virtual reality programming or only hypnotized me to believe it was Paris. They must have had crates in a warehouse and an apparatus to simulate a bumpy ride.

Joseph Jacobson, my familiar trainer, and Rosalita escorted me into the kitchen, and Joseph sent the two thugs away, *allez-vous-en*. I buried my head in Rosalita's bosom and shivered. I smelled the food on her apron but was grateful for the comfort.

She appeared happy to see me. Joseph gave me hot chocolate and croissants but I felt too blurry and nauseated to eat. I asked for an orange. Rosalita gave me a cold orange and kissed me. We heard scratching at the door to the basement. Joseph asked if I wanted to see my dog. Pow Wow raced to me, jumped on my lap, and licked my face. I cried and Pow Wow licked the tears from my cheeks. Until this moment, my heart had been a cold stone buried in a coal mine.

Rosalita led me to the small room upstairs. The bed had, as usual, very starched sheets that scratched. My elbows had blood on them. I slept a long time, a drugged sleep. I didn't yet know how long I would be there and still wanted to go home. Pow Wow jumped on the bed and slept by my side, molding his small body to my thigh, then hip and torso as he inched nearer my head. My arms remained crossed over my heart, in the same position as in the crate. I slept more.

As an adult remembering nothing of my past, whenever I passed a Westie on the street, a sense of love and joy exploded in me. Until now I didn't consciously understand why I was so drawn to this breed. *Perhaps it's the big round eyes*, I thought.

As soon as I was pregnant, I returned to normal school until I began to show. I couldn't concentrate in school or listen to the teachers. My mind was preoccupied with how to survive and keep my children alive. And all my induced learning disabilities remained active.

Much of this Illuminati group's imagery is a warped takeoff from Judaism and Christianity. For example, their targeting the second-born child to be the heir of the "kingdom" may be a reference to the Esau–Jacob story. The religious divisions of the cults believe in demons, spirits, prophecies, and worshipful rituals. But their god is Lucifer and/or Satan. Some religious groups worship one or the other. The group I was born into may have been the umbrella for the various occult religions, since this group worshipped both deities at different times or simultaneously.

My second Illuminati child was born on December 24, 1957. He liked to cuddle. I held him constantly. He slept on my heart, and affectionate Pow Wow was always stretched out by my side. These were excellent days for me. Daniel had dark shiny hair, not curly like the original Daniel, my friend. This infant had the prophecy on his head. The prophecy declared that the second-born Illuminati baby would grow to rule this part of the satanic kingdom. I didn't want that for him.

During the labor pains and delivery, my wrists were tied with rags to the headboard. Father Anthony stayed in the room, and one monk was on one side of the bed and three monks on the other side. No drugs were used. They didn't believe in painkillers. A monk said "Here it comes," and the baby and then placenta appeared. A monk held my baby upside down, and hit his backside. "It's a boy," Father Anthony shouted. One of the monks untied my wrists and another placed Daniel on my chest. We lived happily like that for eight days.

Daniel was the age when babies are circumcised. His consecration to Lucifer took place on a balcony inside this church. The Brothers wore white robes with red embroidery and cords and a black sash. I wore a white robe with red embroidery and a yellow sash. This was considered such an exalted ritual that they wanted some of the bloodline there. My parents wore black robes. The Brothers passed Daniel around. I didn't want them to

touch him. The Brothers looked at him adoringly and patted him gently. They acted like new mothers. Some kissed his forehead and chanted softly under their breath. With their fingers they put an ash-like mark on Daniel's forehead, and little crosses all over him. Incense burned. They passed him around from person to person and chanted “Consecrated into our Brotherhood…”

I didn't want my parents near him and felt as tense as a snapped twig. My father handed him to my mother clumsily. He had forgotten to support the head. My mother held Daniel well; her eyes became wild and she said, “This baby should be Marlene's, not hers.” My mother held the baby more tightly and suddenly threw him over the railing. A long way down. He splattered all over. His beautiful head separated and kept rolling away. All the mothers in me rushed together, all the bereft mothers, including the ones who had given birth to the babies in the brothel, whom the Illuminati mothers didn't yet know about. Even the mothers who had had their eggs scraped out ran there in that second. All those mothers gathered and flung themselves over trying to reach their Daniel. We threw ourselves over the railing of the balcony. It happened in less than the opening and closing of an eye. My head was aimed towards my Daniel, but then my body wasn't going forward but backwards. The priests grabbed my legs before I plunged all the way and drew me back up by my ankles. Milk drenched my white embroidered robe as if to nurse the dead. I ran down the side wooden steps and threw myself on top of the pieces of Daniel, his bones, blood, organs, tissue. I rubbed it all on me, smeared his blood and guts all over my face as if my skin could bring him back to life. An eyeball rolled to the side. I put it in my mouth and would not spit it out. I grabbed and held onto one of his leg bones, the femur. The pitch of my cry could have shattered the stained glass windows of Jesus healing children. That was the end of the scene for me but in the balcony, I heard rumblings and my mother screaming, “This baby belongs to Marlene!” as they took her forcibly away. My father at some point pontificated, “This baby was not allowed to be killed. We'll have to go before the Council. There will be trouble.”

I hadn't wanted my children to live. I didn't want them to have a worse life than mine.

The priests who had caught my ankles pulled me away into the kitchen. Rosalita cleaned me up and I never saw the baby Daniel again. The Brothers had to tranquilize me.

Suppose you are in your car going to work and the car's upholstered seats start unraveling, and the frame crumbles, its motor self-chops into little pieces, its steering wheel cracks, and all its windows shatter as its gas spills onto the road. That's what rage that eats the insides of one's body feels like. They coerced me into doing voodoo curses on the vulnerable countries and had prayer teams of false priests chanting for Lucifer to sweep the nations. I didn't care about Korea or Ethiopia or the United States, the country that abandoned me, or even unfeeling suburban residents who strolled through the park without concern. I hated my parents and Joseph, and spent my adolescence planning or trying to kill them.

When I came to after being tranquilized, the Brothers were still in a tizzy. They had all changed out of their ritual garb and into their brown everyday robes. In the two years I was at the monastery, this was the most commotion I heard among the monks. They went from one private meeting to another. I overheard hushed debates about whether to execute or sacrifice Mother, but they worried that since I was missing for six months or longer at a time, it might raise suspicions about the family if she disappeared or died.

They had injected me in my own bedroom, where they kept me prisoner. When I came to, Rosalita brought me freshly squeezed orange juice, warm buttermilk biscuits she had just baked, and *café au lait*. They still pretended I was in Paris. When I sat up, I felt something hard under the mattress. Someone had put Daniel's femur there. It must have been one of the friars or maids. I still possessed complete memory of the night before. I placed his short, thin bone on my left hip under my underpants, got dressed and put on my coat, and went into the enclosed garden to a spot hidden from view. It became black like evil outside. The earth was cold and hard and I began scratching at it with my nails. I scratched for hours and my fingers bled into the grave and mixed with my tears and breast milk. The friars must have been watching me from a side window, but they left me alone. I kept scratching, bleeding, leaking, and drooling. Then I began humming. Sanity rode its sleigh slowly and kindly back into my fragmented, tortured mind. Halfway down, I found a rock and used it as a tool for digging. When the hole was deep enough, I slipped his bone in vertically and filled the grave with winter dirt. I did not place a marker but memorized where Daniel's bone lay. With the first light, I went back to my room. Later, I heard Christmas carols sung throughout the monastery. They invited the neighborhood to an open house that day. Rosalita had to bake cookies and

make punch and eggnog. I cried in my room. Rosalita came in, washed and bandaged my hands, and bound my leaking breasts. I did not leave my room for two weeks. I sat in a chair crying, rocking, grieving, meditating on murder. Rosalita sometimes cried with me, which helped.

There were many discussions after Daniel's death. Joseph thought about sending me home for a while. The international leaders, who were involved in solving the problem of Daniel's having been killed, gave detailed instructions to my handlers about how to close me down. Until the close down, I remembered everything about those last days.

I have recurrent dreams of walking on a narrow path on a cliff that spirals up a mountain. If I lose my concentration for even a moment, I will fall off and plunge down the mountain. I think this is a dream of my fighting for sanity.

It felt like my heart poured out of my body but my heart had become coals, tar, and dust.

In 1968, I visited my mother in New York City when Ned was one and a half years old. Ned is my ordinary-life child, a cult baby but not fathered by one of their higher ups. Todd, my ordinary-life husband, had coerced me into conceiving so that he could avoid the Vietnam draft. I didn't have the electroshock torture during this pregnancy. During the visit, Mother took baby Ned to the open window in her bedroom, and both Todd and I feared she would throw him out. Todd didn't know the history unless he had my black book, and I was not conscious of my life at that time.

The leaders decided to hide the fact that their heir had been killed and wanted me pregnant again fast. They decided against getting a substitute baby and pretending that baby was mine, because they were quasi-purists and believed in prophecies. But they didn't order more of Eli's sperm because they didn't want the international community to know of the murder of the heir. So they let the Brothers impregnate me live. The Brothers lined up outside my door dutifully and reluctantly. Some of them were not able, but I became pregnant and delivered the infant privately, not in a ritual. Because she was deformed, they gave her away.

Then they sacrificed my last Illuminati baby, a boy, whom I named Matthew. The eighth day after his birth, the altar was prepared for Matthew's consecration. I sat at the round table in the kitchen with Rosalita. Joseph took happy Matthew into a side room and tested him. He returned and said something like, “*Il n'est pas programable*.” The ritual began with

the chanting, prayers to Lucifer, incense. Only several priests were present. My parents hadn't been invited. Joseph lifted his left arm that held the sacrificial knife. I lifted mine and aimed my knife at Joseph's heart. He caught my arm midway, let go of his knife, and plunged my knife into Matthew who was in the middle of running with his chubby legs in the air while lying on his back. He plunged the knife into Matthew with my hands trapped under his. Matthew looked stunned and confused, and died instantly.

The morning after my fourth Illuminati baby was killed, I felt something hard under my mattress. I felt around and pulled out a bone, thin like Daniel's but about an inch and a half longer. It must have been Matthew's femur. One of the Brothers must have dissected it and brought it to me. That same morning, Rosalita let me keep a breakfast spoon. If the Brothers knew, they could have killed her for just this one thing. After midnight, I crept into the garden and found the memorial spot where I had buried Daniel's bone. This time, I dug with my spoon. I dug all night. I lay his bone parallel to Daniel's. I had made two graves for two brothers. I sat there all night and felt a force from above rock me softly and horizontally, back and forth, side to side. Sometimes this force stroked my spine. Slowly sanity slid back.

The cult world got wind of Daniel's death. Immediately my county plummeted in its standing in the international world. We were considered a county that had lost its power. A smile snuck onto half of my face. The right side of my lip curled and tears came only from one eye during my incessant crying. This half smile is the victory moment of these years.

The sacrifice of Matthew is one of the early memories I had in New York City about twenty-five years ago. In the 1980s, I got a coveted appointment with a therapist in this field, Sandy Flowers, and traveled to Virginia to discuss this memory with her. I didn't know whether it was true. Before I just thought I was a regular somewhat depressed and anxious person trying to get noticed in the big city. Now I was finding out ridiculous horror stories that couldn't be true. Or could they? I was sure they weren't true, but why did they pour out of me with recurrent themes and real emotions that came from a deeper place than my front person had ever known? What did I have to benefit from these memories? There was no benefit, only hardship.

Hatred

While at the monastery before my babies were born, I looked for help. During the day, I managed to take a walk outside. I still thought I was in Paris and tried speaking French to people. "*Voulez-vous m'en aider?*" They didn't respond. Then I noticed the street signs and realized I was in America. I didn't know I was in a suburb, but that didn't matter. I was used to their tricking me and making me think I was somewhere I wasn't, even on a different continent. I called out, "Help, help, I need help." People looked away and crossed the street. I might as well have been speaking French or Greek. They could tell I was pregnant. In the morning, mothers and children were in the park. I was weak and hadn't eaten for about twelve hours, a long time for me. I should have asked Rosalita for a stash of food. "Somebody please help me with my baby." One of the women called a policeman, who returned me to the church. My hatred of people grew. The Brothers locked me in. I sat in my room rocking myself for a long time, holding my breath, not swallowing. No mother in me knew about the others, but all the babies were present with me. The rage turned to grief and whipped around me as if I had a prehensile tail.

Pow Wow

Valentine's Day brought a ritual. The executioner started skinning Pow Wow alive with a small knife. There was nothing I could do to stop them. They tied me on a wooden chair, and wouldn't let me close my eyes or turn my head. He whimpered and tried to get close to me, leaving bloody paw prints in concentric circles. Finally, he died, ending his merciless agony. It was a terrible end for the most compassionate and loyal of dogs. Shortly afterward, they sent Rosalita away. They lied and said she had committed a crime. I don't know whether they killed or deported her. Either they figured out that she had aided me or they wanted to torment me further. Or perhaps they got wind of a possible investigation. Honest police could have made Rosalita talk. She wasn't a mind-control victim. I lost what sanity I had left. My severe closedown followed.

A current friend who has a hard life but with no cult abuse says she would never write a memoir because she doesn't want to relive her life. If one is dissociated, one has to relive the events in order to get all parts of the brain to recognize one's life and one another. One has the choice of dying in denial or living with excruciating truths. One has to decide whether

knowing oneself and the truth about one's life is worth it. If there is a hunger to find oneself and take one's mind back from programmers, if there is a thirst to know one's life no matter how brutal the knowledge, then even a flash of freedom and knowledge is worth it. I have chosen to spend most likely the last decade of my life in this search. Knowing about my life lets me have compassion for myself.

A false memory, 1980

The memory appears early in my attempted recovery when I live in New York City. A nail sticks up out of the wood floor in my apartment near Amsterdam Avenue. I pound it with my hammer; rage pours out and a memory vaguely comes into view. One night after Joseph had killed my babies, he was enclosed in his bath. One part of me stole a hammer from the tool shed, another snuck down the halls and into his bathroom, and others pounded on his head. I hit him once with the full force of my rage. He became unconscious or died after my first strike.

Only rage could have made that force. Once you release rage, it keeps pouring out. Afterward, I feel a peace. It is as if the sea has opened and allowed me to kill. The memory is still hazy. By the time the nail is flush with the wood floor, I remember killing Joseph, but the memory is in pieces. I see a print of the 1793 oil painting “The Death of Marat” by Jacques-Louis David, and the impression of killing Joseph comes more into focus. In the painting, Marat lies in an old-fashioned bathtub much like Joseph's. Someone has assassinated him. He lies as if in a *pietà*, with his arm draped to the side like Michelangelo's “Pietà”.

In 2013 I tell Alison about killing Joseph. She is shocked at my lack of remorse, and says my response doesn't match my reaction to my other crimes. When we investigate, it turns out that I don't have remorse because it never happened. Finally my internal system flashes up the truth about killing Joseph. I see the scene. I was in the monastery cellar; the Brothers projected a slide of David's “The Death of Marat” from their slide projector. Marat, just assassinated, was in the bathtub. His arm hung to one side. The Brothers then projected a slide of Joseph's face, then a white closet door, a hammer, and a knife with a black handle, me walking in my long white nightgown, Joseph apparently dead in the bathtub. In my bedroom, my nightgown with splotches of wet hung on a hanger. “This is what happened.

This is what you did. Link the pieces," the Brothers said. They played off my rage and sorrow about my children being murdered.

In my deepest mind, a core belief about myself formed: I believed I had killed him. The Brothers gave me the signposts in the slides. It was classical "false memory" programming, with the purpose here of making me believe I was a natural murderer. It turns out that I couldn't kill. When they started chopping ankles off one of their designated sacrifices or skinning someone alive, then I could, but only to prevent worse and inevitable suffering.

Chronic shock defines those 1980s days of breakthrough memories. I have to digest that I am a prostitute, breeder, murderer, bereaved mother. All that means that I am not a regular girl from Queens, or a regular dancer trying to create in Manhattan, or a regular person in any way. It means I am a freak of society and somehow have to come to grips, get a grip, swallow it. I fight with these memories, but don't even approach in consciousness anything about also being a kidnapper of babies.

Before I remember much, I go to Shakespeare & Company bookstore on Broadway and 81st Street and gravitate to the fiction, poetry, and self-help sections. After memories begin, I find myself looking at the true crime books. In the college I attended, no one reads true crime. It is like watching television and considered gross. But there I sit on the floor in the bookstore, examining these books that have more to do with my life than any of the highbrow books. It is winter because my long black coat flares around me on the floor like a pool of darkness.

Ordinary, middle-class Jewish girl from Queens finds out she is a forced member of a secret, evil cult, that her parents, consciously or not, sell her into slavery. How do I do an about-face and accept who I am? Gradually. I combat shock and exhaustion. I decide somehow to stand by myself, no matter what. All the while, they torture me into submission and program my mind to forget what it recovers. This is truly a dance of one step forward, two backward, hand stands, tight ropes, and somersaults. But in some people, the need to know the truth can carve a path in ancient stone, can become a mountain stream in forbidding land.

Mrs. Twartski, Mengele, and my other programmers had put mind-control programs in me at an early age to perform certain tasks such as prostitute, accomplice, thief, and kidnapper. It was easy for them to call out the personalities who performed these roles, and for me to go into a robotic state, do whatever I was told to do and have no memory of doing it. It's

good to know who one is but if one has had a life like mine, remembering can also eat one's bones up. I think one reason the cult leaders contaminate lives to the extent that they do is to encourage the victim/perpetrators they create to choose not to remember. They also up the torture to ludicrous degrees so that outsiders would not believe these stories—the same method the Nazis used. I have heard memoirists say they enjoyed writing their life stories. Writing this memoir is not enjoyable.

The Mafia side of the monastery

Assassinations

These “Brothers” must have been part Illuminati and part Mafia because we had to do many illegal activities, the kind of crimes the Mafia is known for. I had two cult accomplices, or rather I was their accomplice. One was Eli, the cult husband whose sperm fathered three Illuminati babies. The other was the man they would marry me to and who would father my child in regular life. As I approach these memories, the dental pain is severe. Every time I get close to a memory, I feel big needles going all the way down into my gums. The torture was to reinforce no telling, no remembering.

Eli and I were stationed near the church in a bar that had extensive wood paneling and rooms off to the side. I was between thirteen and fifteen years old, and wore very high heels that I could never walk in now, a red dress, and black underwear. I crossed my legs and swiveled from side to side on a bar stool as Eli played the crowd. Eli, four years older than I and a good manipulator, went around getting men interested in having sex with me and paying him in advance. Then he went up to a previously designated man, slapped him on the back and said “You go first.” I proceeded into the room on the side of the bar with the targeted first man and once inside, started stripping slowly. Eli secretly entered from the other door. When my dress was at my feet, Eli stabbed the designated target in the back. Eli and I raced out onto the street before anyone knew what had happened. I had trouble running in my shoes, and he didn't wait for me. Separately, we returned to our hideout, the monastery. Another time I was already in the bed placed in the side room of the bar and with the designated victim on top of me, when Eli walked in and stabbed him.

After the men were murdered, we had to report to the police chief in his headquarters. There we received extensive programming not to recognize

faces. A lineup of men sat on chairs and wore brown paper bags over their faces. The paper bags had a flap that opened and closed. Someone opened the flap so that we could see the face. A man in a police uniform asked, “Can you remember this face?” We answered, “No.” “Is this what the face looks like?” was the next question. If we answered “Yes,” we received two shocks of electricity. When we answered incorrectly, we received none. Eventually, we were too confused about the truth to answer at all. They demonstrated later with white sheets of paper, and graph paper. They repeated this quiz until we recognized no faces and saw only brown paper bags or white sheets or graph paper.

Drugs

The monastery was also a cover for a drug ring. We delivered packages of drugs to a nearby schoolyard. For the drug sales, the cult used my to-be husband in ordinary life, Todd. Todd had grown up in Flatbush, Brooklyn and lived with his parents. He was also generational cult and one year older than me. The dealers put vials of drugs in my socks and in Todd's coat pocket. Somebody waited at a schoolyard for the drug packages. Sometimes Eli was used as well. I had a role even when my pregnancy showed a bit, usually in my fourth month. The male collected the money. When they had a huge shipment of drugs and an order, we took a baby stroller with a blanket covering it. I would pretend to be distracted and leave the stroller for a moment. When I returned, the stroller would be heavy with drug packages placed underneath the baby blanket. We pushed the stroller back to the monastery, where Father Anthony received and unloaded it. After that, I was not involved until the next delivery of drugs. These exchanges were somewhat less dangerous than the assassinations because no one got killed, and the planning was less extensive.

Kidnapping

Father Anthony, or one of the Brothers, showed me out the door. I left the monastery with the blanketed stroller. I wore a loose coat and a big floppy hat, which made me look older. A man was with me, Todd or Eli, occasionally a different Mafia gangster. We walked with this empty stroller. We passed a policeman who was in on the plan. We crossed the street by the

school, and continued walking up the path and circling into the pastoral park. The man pretended to be my husband. We reached the water fountain. We passed somebody right near the water fountain—my cue. I said to the pedestrian standing by the fountain, “Could you watch my stroller for a second?” I went to get a drink of water. After I counted fast to ninety while drinking water, I returned to the stroller. When I came back, a baby was visible in my stroller. I proceeded with a heavier stroller, around the park and back the way I came. The male I was with took the stroller into the monastery. Sometimes I heard a baby cry. Father Anthony said to me “Go to your room” as he lifted something out of the stroller. Five times it was a baby. The other times, drugs were in the stroller.

I don't know where they got the babies. Either they stole them from innocent people or the babies were bred to be sacrificed at rituals and the parents were given money.

Knowing about these episodes crushes me the most. It would have been better if we were all killed. I will never know what happened to the babies, whether their parents searched and grieved for them, or what kind of life they were deprived of.

Closedown

Late in my recovery process, I remember this closedown. The awareness starts with body memories, stabbing and aching upper back pain that at first I think the rainy weather causes. I have headaches and a burning under my facial skin that I mistake for sunburn.

I lay stretched out, stomach down, on a stretching rack with my hands and ankles tied. The Brothers stretched me and threw babies and dolls at me. My upper back took the hit and my cheeks burned with shame and humiliation. I vomited as they stretched and spun me because I was already half unconscious and overdosed. They called out my most vulnerable part, Baby Jane, who could tolerate very little. During the worst of this abuse, God or a compassionate force took me away from my body. He held me far away while the Brothers kicked and punched me and it felt good to be with Him or It. I was to believe that I had attended Oldtown Jr. High School and Pleasant Hills High School all these years, and that I was an average student and didn't have a boyfriend and wasn't looking for one. My sister was special and I was ordinary, my sister was beautiful and I was ugly. My

parents loved me and I loved them. To make me believe these lies, the brothers tortured me. The methods of torture had been set up in the pathways and in Mengele's towers. The new programmers built on those and added stretching me on a wheel, whipping me as they spun me and peed on me.

When they poured blood over me and told me it was my babies' blood mixed together, some got in my eyes, and I screamed, breaking me out of the trance. They threw me on the spinner, tied my wrists and ankles, and spun me. God or a force of good came to me then and put itself between my spun body and dissociated parts. It said, “My beloved daughter.” It felt like a field of wild flowers and I was not alone. Sunlight streamed into the damp dark basement tunnel. But does love keep you alive for a life like this?

As the memories emerge, the parts who hold them feel rage, then exhaustion during the day that turns into heart spasms during the night. Depression and anxiety hook elbows and dance in my brain.

“Now you are ready to go home. Nothing happened here tonight. You will remember nothing.”

They expelled me wearing only a loose old coat and no shoes. My father's car waited outside. He got out of the driver's seat and opened the door to the back seat. He told me to put some clothes on in the back seat and he held a blanket over me. The clothes were too tight and the bra didn't fit at all. My mother hadn't realized how seven pregnancies in a row changes a teenager's body. I lay down on the back seat. My body had scratch and whip marks despite the Vaseline. My breasts leaked Matthew's milk.

My father drove to LaGuardia Airport instead of home. I had to go to Air France, walk back, pass a store, and buy a pack of Dentyne gum. The gum signaled to my chopped up, crushed brain that I was back in the States from France. I walked through the airport like a robot. It was before the days of strict airport security. I chewed the gum. My father then drove me back to the family apartment. I remembered the apartment and the hill it was on but nothing else.

I entered. My mother and I nodded to each other. I went to my bedroom. My sister's bed was empty. Her clothes had been removed. My father said she was at college. I was alone with my parents.

Once I returned home, a phase of my life ended. I remained a prisoner in their apartment until they moved to Long Island and I went away to college

the following year.

The closedown the Brothers performed was so severe that I remembered nothing from this period of my life until I had a massage from a gifted physical therapist in New York City around 1992. She pressed on a swollen tendon on my left side of my breastbone and out came my fourteen-year-old head resting protectively over a small head. I burst into tears that were sealed away for about thirty-five years. I felt a baby's head nestling into me. He had black straight hair. I could smell him and knew his name was Daniel. I couldn't stop crying. Were it not for this tendon, I may not have ever rejoined in memories my babies born to the Illuminati and the kingdom of evil and shame.

NINE

A palace

I have absorbed emotional and cognitive impressions from the infants in me and am translating them into words. The adults in me are endowing what the infants and children communicate with some perspective. I will try to tell this inconceivable story more or less chronologically.

My handlers designated the thirteenth infant in me, who was really the fourteenth split, to be the queen of the Illuminati and transfer demonic power to world leaders. They used spinning and electroshock to split parts off from this original, pitiful infant. These splits live in rarefied air and are only for certain people to have contact with. Some of this mind control took place in one of the programming rooms in Pleasant Hills. Grandpa Max showed me the color ice blue, but its feeling was black. He put a tiny crown on me, and as I grew older, gave me a globe and a scepter to hold in each hand. The leaders' goal was to maintain the seed of power, and rule a new world, all for the glory of Lucifer.

As soon as I tell Alison these “secrets,” I think I will be stricken dead. I am now lying on her black leather sofa, with her black and white dog that offers comfort at exactly the right moments at my curled-in feet. I have a visual of Lucifer extending his black claws. They showed many trick pictures during the programming. “These could be my last words,” a child part in me says out loud. Lucifer extends his black claws. I am always stunned by what comes out of my mouth. Alison's dog raises his compassionate head. She replies, “Did you ever see Lucifer?” I say, “They showed me pictures of things like big black claws and dark smoke.” She answers, “Just as God doesn't act in the world except through people, neither does Lucifer.”

These memories did not slip out like a malted drink from a straw. A feeling would sting deep and hard. A dream would turn into a haunting nightmare. Body memories flicker in and out but are as severe as pain in real time.

My grandfather and uncles drugged, spun, and shocked me. I vomited. Somebody said, “She's going to be a government baby. She's going to get our monarchs to help us.” My neck hurts. They had a vise around my head, squeezing it. My grandfather yelled, “You have to get used to a crown.” He

must have tightened the vise, because as I remember this initiation, my right eye feels like it's popping out. I have other body memories of chills. “We have to get her used to the freezer,” and they wiped off all the goo from my body that they use for electroshock and put me naked into a little, old freezer. This second bedroom programming took place regularly.

The drugged monarch, 1943

I was in the back seat of a limousine. My grandfather held me in a white blanket. It was a long drive, and I slept most of the way. He folded the knuckles of his left hand and closely examined his polished fingernails. He had his usual self-satisfied, sticky smile. When we got to our destination, we went underground. Shadows were on curving-above-us walls and gray darknesses. Someone carried me a long way. It was bumpy; I thought the bumps were fun.

Once we arrived, it went quickly. Men took my clothes off even though it was chilly and wrapped me in a black blanket and put a crown and blue cape on me. A man sat tied up in a metal chair that rolled. He was slumped over, asleep, and almost fell on me when they put me on his lap. He felt soggy. Two men held guns to his temples, one on each side, even though he was asleep and didn't know what was happening. A third much older man unzipped the seated man's pants, took out part of his body, and touched it to part of my body. He performed this task very politely as if he were serving lobsters at a dinner. “Long live Lucifer. Long live his kingdom.” Other men said words out loud in a language I didn't yet know. Then they gave me back to my grandfather, whom people congratulated. He held me under my chest and thighs and flew me around the room as if I were an airplane, then he held me under my shoulders and legs and flew me again. It wasn't fun. He could have dropped me. Maps of the world hung on the walls I flew by. Everyone applauded and shouted, “Long live Lucifer, long live his queen of the twentieth century.” Other men who wore white gloves dressed me, and my grandfather and I exited to applause, as if we were on a stage in a theater. We passed long lines of grownups; many had children with them, who were waiting to be blessed by the Illuminati leaders, who were the royalty from other counties. This county wasn't number one until the 1950s.

On the way out, we passed blond children in cages. They all had that Doris Day look—eager, scared, almost dumb, and pretty. We went past all

the dark rooms with very low ceilings. Someone crawled as he held me. We drove on the bumpy road, onto the smooth road, and the bright stars, pale moon, and highway lights shone during the long drive home. *Why do they shine on me when no one cares?* I wondered.

The next monarch, 1945

I was much older when I returned to underneath this official palace, and which we were later led to believe was the White House. I was about two years old. We followed exactly the same path in a black limousine. When we got to the man in power for whom we made this trip, they placed me on his lap, like the first time I was there, but he was not asleep and slumped over. He didn't feel soggy but hard and tight. He sat still, but was looking around alertly. I was surprised by how plain looking he appeared. I wore a crown and pale blue cape. Part of this man's body, the part that came out of his zipper, touched mine that was normally in my underpants but it had to be an exact spot. I didn't understand why we should have to drive a long distance for that. Men put me on a slab. Someone poured sticky stuff out of a silver pitcher over my front as other men said words in different languages. They rubbed it up and down me. Someone else told me it was semen and blood. I cried because the stuff they put on me burned my skin. Some leaked into my eyes. The pain of the skin irritation reminded my body of my Bear Mountain birth ritual. I had the same loop in my left nipple. The prayers asked for owning and conquering, world dominion. I must have been washed before the buggy ride, but my front still burned from what they put on me. I think they put a vise on my head again and turned the screw. If I ever told, they would make it very tight on my head and kill my parents. I also had drugs and felt woozy.

Queen or death

The torture for me, the master programmer's grandchild and the designated hidden queen of the Illuminati, started young to force me to choose between being queen and death. The fact that I am still alive might make you think that I fought for life, but I did want to die. I didn't want my life. No one would.

Earlier, and twice today in September 2013, I heard screaming and crying inside me, then it felt like a breakthrough and release. My left and right big toes hurt. Grandpa had put the needles in straight to the bone. He concentrated very hard on the torture, as if he were a painter and not aware of anything but his canvas. When Mengele tortured, he was aware of the people around him, craved an audience, and was exhibitionistic. Mengele created dramas and liked to work with groups. Grandpa only worked on individuals in contained environments. He was a womanizer and a dandy socially, but when he worked he was entirely focused on his methodology.

This memory is coming in slowly. It drags its feet against my brain. I know I had the spinning, drugs from injections or rags soaked in gas or both, freezing, torture with a band around my head, and needles to the bones, but I don't know yet what more the queen had to do.

Grandpa Max asked my internal parts whom he made from the thirteenth infant, “Which one of you is going to be queen? I need a queen. We will keep doing this until you die, or agree to be queen. Everyone bows down to the queen bee. The queen killer bee. The child queen killer bee. The princess queen killer bee.”

At exactly midnight, when I was three and a half, the queen's training began. Relatives gathered in the living room for my initiation. My grandfather took me into the second bedroom of his apartment. He started by shaving my head and drew sections on it labeled with numbers and letters such as A3, C6, J25. He hit specific parts deliberately with his hammer. Most of his pounding was on the right side toward the center.

I had to wear a head covering until my hair grew back. Then Grandpa spun me in the spinning chair, put needles in my feet, and whipped me. Afterward, I had to aim darts at the dartboard on the back of his door. No matter how dizzy I was, if my dart did not hit the target, he said, “You have to try harder, do better. If you don't get it this time, we'll starve you, shock you. Maybe this hit on the head with the hammer will make you aim better.” Sometimes he used a rubber tipped hammer. When I was older, we had archery competitions to perfect our aim. Chaos thrives during rituals, but the leaders are supposed to be precise and accurate. Grandpa was preparing me for my role as a psychic killer. I had to reach the correct target. I had to be able to aim even if I had alcohol in me. Some of the killings would take place at political parties. Accuracy and security were always prominent in mind-control training.

In my grandparents' living room, the relatives enjoyed one another's company. They laughed, joked, told stories, imitated people. The air was electric with exciting energies. After I appeared, everyone was quiet in the living room. I could barely walk after the tortures. My grandmother directed me to her kitchen table. She showed me two tarot cards: a skeleton riding a donkey on the left, and on the right, a sun with a crowned woman sitting on a throne and holding a scepter and globe. I didn't know the word “tarot” yet and thought of them as picture cards. Grandma sat in a chair by mine and leaned over me, placing her weight on one elbow. “Which do you want?” she said as if I were choosing between an oatmeal and a peanut butter cookie. She explained the meaning of the cards, though I think I could have guessed it on my own. The sun and globe meant we would have world dominion. The crown and throne represented my role as queen. The skeleton warned that I'd be killed if I told or misbehaved. Even as a small child, it was clear to me that she asked me to choose between being queen and dying.

“Max, Max, she wants to die. Max, Max, she doesn't want to be queen. You hear that, Max!”

“Then we'll redo the torture until she changes her mind,” he called out from the second bedroom. Blurry though I was, I consistently chose the death card. There were sighs of disappointment from the living room. My mother said that I was a disappointment, and now the family would think poorly of her. Grandpa said Mrs. Twartski would have to do some of the programming, that my grandmother wasn't productive enough. “He's just interested in having another affair,” the adults whispered. My grandfather took me back to the spare room and hit me over the head to “clarify” my brain, but I kept choosing death. The needle in my left lumbar spine said, “You must be queen.” Needles penetrated my feet, the torture for the program “You must never run away”. The people inside who held the emotional pain, which stings deepest with clawing nails, suffered the worst.

The future

My Uncle Richard, the movie producer, took me into one of the programming rooms and showed me films of what he said were future events in the world. He claimed the prophets foresaw these events. Some of the events were ones that have now occurred, but not exactly as the films

depicted. Since it was the 1940s, the films were black and white, and the buildings, cars, planes, and clothing were of that era. A few examples of the events are: a man tipping his top hat while being driven in a motorcade; a man in a different motorcade sitting doubled over, dead; a rifle sticking out of a window; buildings blown up; planes crashing into a building which looked like the Empire State Building; tall buildings crumbling and falling; a limousine crashing into a serpentine tunnel. There were other scenes that concerned more politicians, movie stars, and the financial districts. The people's faces were blacked out with a rectangle.

The film's soundtrack had commentaries such as "…and this disaster will occur…" while Uncle Richard made comments such as "It will be called 9–1–1." He didn't pronounce it "nine-eleven". This was before 9–1–1 was the emergency telephone number. Some of the events depicted, such as a stock market crash, have not happened, or have not happened yet. Uncle Richard insisted that they all would take place within my lifetime. At the end, the film spoke of "these accomplishments". Either the Illuminati prophets were particularly gifted, or the group actually planned some of these treacheries years ahead of time and caused them to occur. I didn't free myself of the belief in the Illuminati prophets' magical abilities until I retrieved these forbidden memories. Uncle Richard said that some of their prophets had predicted that I would be a traitor. In this, at least, they were correct.

Don't cry training

It's pouring outside today, and it's pouring inside me, but I have not been able to shed one tear. The program not to cry is that strong. When I was three and a half, I cried all the time, and overheard a conversation between Mrs. Twartski and my grandfather:

GRANDPA: "She's too delicate. We should have killed her when she was an infant."

MRS. TWARTSKI: "We couldn't because of the prophecy."

GRANDPA: "We can stop her crying, but I don't know what to do about her soul."

MRS. TWARTSKI: "She's a delicate flower. We already gave her the pillow suffocation to stop her crying."

GRANDPA: “We'll have to do the bathtub drowning.”

MRS. TWARTSKI: “Where?”

GRANDPA: “Here.”

MRS. TWARTSKI: “With who, me or her?”

GRANDPA: “You.”

MRS. TWARTSKI: “What temperature?”

GRANDPA: “Lukewarm.”

Mrs. Twartski filled the tub about one-third up. I saw her fingers feeling the water coming out of the faucet. Grandpa had a stopwatch.

GRANDPA: “I'll time it. Watch if the bubbles in the water become less. I'll be looking at the watch.”

MRS. TWARTSKI: “Any time you cry, you will go under the water.”

GRANDPA: “And one time we will forget to bring you back up. So don't cry too many times.”

Mrs. Twartski undressed me in the bathroom. She put me in the tub and on my back, pushed me under the water. I couldn't breathe. I wanted air. Terror made me fight. She lifted me up. Eventually, I cried, and they did it again. They must have done this about ten times, but on different days. When they had finished programming me, Mrs. Twartski dried me off and dressed me in the bathroom. Grandpa told Grandma to give me some cookies.

“Feed her yourself,” Grandma said, her blank blue eyes like knives as she slammed her bedroom door. The pictures on the wall shook. I didn't know why she was angry, but thought it might be because of me.

The sound torture's scratching siren blocked out memory. “No one will remember this event” was its purpose.

Some of the torture in Grandpa's second bedroom prepared me to be the masonic queen. Some divisions of the Masons are under the Illuminati, but Masons in the other divisions have no knowledge of these practices. He blew tiny hard black balls at me through a straw. They woke me up when I

drifted off into sleep. Grandpa drew the masonic staircase up my spine, step one, two, three and so on to the crown on my head. He said, “The queen has to climb all these steps. You can't lead your people until you have achieved the highest order.” He blew the hard little balls so that each one hit a certain vertebra in my spine that corresponded to the masonic step he worked on. “If you want to be queen, you have to kill with your own hands. It's an honor to kill and be queen. That's how you help your people. If you can't kill, you're no good. People who can't kill are good for nothing. You can't walk up the steps without killing. You have to climb all the steps. The top three are the Illuminati where you belong. Your mother is only at the middle. Your sister is at the bottom with your father, but you belong at the top, like me.”

I notice that when I write about the masonic structure, my handwriting goes from large to minuscule.

Grandpa's face became almost all mouth, moving wide and rapidly. The clear brown skin, beady dark eyes, fierce concentration like a diamond cutter before the first strike—his concentration on pulling apart without tearing, and inserting without rupturing—all loomed. Maybe my mother objected so strongly to my dark complexion because it reminded her of his, though his had an undercoating of yellow and mine at that time had a foundation more of pink. Or perhaps Mother was just a common racist, like so many of her generation.

I feel hollow now with gashes of pain. Nothing hooked me to life.

The strongest split

I see myself climbing on the bathtub edge, opening the medicine cabinet, looking for a razor blade. I was three years old. Such a despairing child could attract attention. They used the old standby of trickery to attempt to strengthen me.

In the Pleasant Hills tunnel programming spaces, I saw six little dolls projected onto the wall before me. My grandfather and his projector were behind me. He said, “These parts all came out of you. I saw them leave. Let's see how brave each one is.” He started at the right hand side and stuck a pin in the first one. I saw his very large hand projected on the wall. I heard a scream but didn't know where it came from. He did this to each projected image of a doll, with screams, and said, “I'm taking you,” to the fourth doll

that he said appeared the bravest. With his projected, enlarged hand like a monster's, he pulled that doll towards my body and threw away the other five dolls. “You'll never get them back, but you don't want them back, because they're weak and they cry. Whenever you cry, you'll lose another part of yourself.” He squeezed my waist and ribs and said, “Now we've got the strong part in you for good.” He put a cape, crown, and scepter on that imaginary fourth split, gave it a globe, and said, “Here's our county—this is what we have to rule.” I was sucking my thumb.

“Now you don't have to die, because you have a much stronger person in you. This is the bravest, strongest part of you. Do you believe it came from you?”

“No, it came from the camera.”

“For that answer, you will have to go back in the freezer.” When I was gradually freezing, it was as if a large pendulum swung back and forth within my whole body about to erupt and shatter me into frozen chunks. When he let me out, he asked, “Where do you think that part came from?”

“From me.”

“That's good. That will be your strong part, who will go to the monarchs and serve our lord and master.” He kept building on an illusion, as all mind control does, but I couldn't stop crying. Uncle Sidney said, “We should give her a bottle.” They did.

Grandpa considered himself a visionary, always charting the changing world and monitoring the density of evil. He believed or pretended that he could sense evil from that distance. World maps with colored pins covered the walls like in the basement programming spaces and in the monastery. Red ones indicated the countries these groups aimed at; black ones were supposed to be already dominated by evil.

The blue angel of mercy leaped into my mind like a loyal puppy. I could get away from all of this if I just had the angel with me. But despite all the suicidal programming they hounded me with, they wanted me alive. Perhaps that is why they sent Daniel to me at this moment. The tricks with the camera and projector couldn't strengthen me, but he could. My grandfather continued to do what he called work-ups. Twenty freezers were in the secret cellars where the endowment of the important men took place. He kept increasing my time in the practice freezers in the Pleasant Hills hidden tunnels to build tolerance. When I got back home from the basement tunnels, my mother offered me tomato soup with rice in it.

It surprises me that the Nazis treated their families tenderly as they destroyed many millions of others. The family knew what happened in my grandparents' spare room, as civilization knew what happened in the concentration camps in Eastern Europe. My grandfather travelled the world turning children's minds into fallow fields. He must have accidentally killed many, as he did in his hometown.

Refrigerators

It was a year later. I'd had a year of Daniel's love before they killed him. This scene happened after he was dead.

“Rosie, do you have the fridge empty yet?”

“It's almost empty, Max. Just a second.” He dragged me into the kitchen. Grandma had the contents of the refrigerator sitting on the oval kitchen table near the window. “Look how you're inconveniencing your grandmother, making her do all this extra work, when she should be cooking dinner.” He lifted my rigid body into the empty fridge, and closed the door. It was black and freezing. For a long time now, I had been used to the state of no comfort. My bones felt stiff and hard. There was no air to breathe. *If he didn't let me out, I would be another one of those tragedies found on the sidewalks of Pleasant Hills*, I thought. Every now and then, there was a child who died in our neighborhood. They were found in discarded refrigerators left out on the streets. The explanation adults gave was that the children played in them, the door closed, and then they were locked in and suffocated. People got fines for not taking the doors off their refrigerators. No murder charges. Whenever I heard those stories, or passed a discarded fridge, my heart would freeze. I passed out in this fridge. When he took me out and revived me, he said, “You must be one of us. You can't run away from being one of us. You have to be a slave like all the others.”

“I don't want to be one. Let someone else be one. Let Rhonda be one.”

“You both have to be one. I'm going to teach you a lesson until you want to be one.” He kept freezing me until I relented. Grandpa timed me in the ice box. He went up to eighteen and nineteen minutes, but when he opened the door, I was unconscious, so he knew he had gone too far. My fingertips and ears were like glaciers. Grandma put earmuffs on me, but that made them worse. I thought my ears would fall off like icicles. My grandmother put cold compresses on me to thaw me out. My grandfather told me he

wanted me to punish babies, to kill babies. If I didn't, they would kill other children by putting them in the ice box. That was one of the queen's "duties". *What should I do, Daniel?* My heart squeezed together just like it had when I had a heart attack on the sidewalk after Daniel died. *If I kill babies, babies will be dead. If I don't kill babies, children will be dead.* "You must kill babies, or you can't be queen. Our family depends on you. Our county depends on you. You must do it. Do you agree?" Grandpa Max asked.

At the masonic rituals, I had to kill. Blood splattered on the pastel walls, and on the black and white patterned floor. A man with leather gloves gathered my hands, and we stabbed. I made up a song:

> "Hush little baby, don't you cry.
> Even though you're about to die.
> I'll stab you quick, I'll kill you fast.
> I'm the only one who'll have a pain that lasts.
> Hush, little baby, don't you cry.
> I'll never never let them skin you alive.
> You're the lucky one who's going to die.
> You will go to heaven with dry eyes.
> When I look up to the sky, I will have to cry,
> because now I belong to Satan."

The victim babies were not strangers to me. I was left in a room with them before the slayings. Daniel had breathed a conscience into me. I don't know whether I was born with one. I wondered whether my grandparents had had a conscience when they were young. Life for resisters within these groups meant trying to find the way of the least evil.

"I could always make another"

For several days, I have been feeling my vaginal wall. Then the physical memory returns. I was a four-and-a-half-year-old in the second bedroom, strung up in front of his dartboard, my arms tied to hooks on the door, ankles tied to a chair. Grandfather, who must have been in a particularly primitive mood because he wore his costume and devil mask, held a wand that conducted electricity. He placed it up my vagina, and I screamed from the shattering pain. He created internal Itchy-face-Frank, Change-subject-Sally, and Frozen-fear-Nellie, who would distract me should I approach remembering who I am.

My grandmother rushed in. “She has to bear children. What are you doing, Max? She's the Illuminati princess. You're going to kill her…the neighbors.”

“I could always make another one. I could always make more,” he shouted through the door. My mother, who sat in the living room, screamed, then wailed. I was still strung up, but I heard a blow. Later Aunt Eileen told me that my father had hit my mother. He was allowed to do that when she became hysterical. Something had really shaken the family. An invisible barricade broke. My sister kept saying, “What does that mean?” My grandfather left the room to yell at my grandmother. “You keep interrupting me. Now everyone has to be programmed not to remember this.” Rhonda was two years old at that time, and the family discussed whether she could possibly know anything, and whether she needed programming.

I visualize what was going on in the living room. I see all my relatives sitting in Grandma's comfortable chairs aghast. I hear clearly the word that he could make more of me, or of what? I had thought my father was my father. *Who would want such a vicious, horrible man to be a father? If he was my father, then I am a double freak. Wasn't that against the law? Why would my mother have let out that scream? Such a piercing, tormented sound.* Sidney and Richard restrained my grandfather, who was wild and out of his mind. They pulled off his devil mask, and made him sit in the stuffed corner chair in the second bedroom. His eyes went to the side, and he looked troubled and distant, as if on the continent where he had been born, as if watching something in a dream.

My father and uncle unhooked me. My father shuddered when he saw me strung up. Didn't he know how my grandfather treated me? My mother put my coat over me; my father carried me out over his shoulder. I sobbed “Daniel, Daniel.” People on this fifth floor stuck their heads out their front doors. My father said, “She fell off a chair,” as my mother said, “She burned her finger.” In the elevator, I turned my head around and saw my father give my mother an exasperated look. My mother looked down, as if she had done something wrong. I wondered whether my father blamed my mother for her father, as I blamed my mother for mine, or whether it was something deeper. Children with knowledge of sexuality and violence pick up the innuendoes of adult life, but I didn't understand what passed between my parents in the elevator. Marlene clung to my mother. We walked home. My mother went right to her room, and my father put me to bed. My sister

stayed with my mother. I thought as I lay in bed shivering, shaking, still calling Daniel's name, that my grief for Daniel made my grandfather crazy, that all my sadness intoxicated him. And in bed, I cried out to God after having lost the only love that I will ever know. I cried out to him in the heavens who might or might not have been watching, “I cannot take a whole life of this.” I felt Daniel rise from the newly dead, and lie beside me. He placed his hand over the opening to my frayed vaginal wall that steamed with the ravages of electroshock. We breathed together, and I slept.

Choosing to be queen

These criminal groups think that victims need to make the choice to be evil even though they are coerced. A little while ago, I went into one of those faint-or-sleep states. I lay down and this memory leaped out of nowhere. When I was eight, my mother walked me to my grandparents' apartment. She had the keys. We entered, and I went ahead to the second bedroom. I was supposed to be there for a programming session. I had ballet twice a week; speech, piano, and mind control once a week. I looked in the second bedroom door that was open about one foot. My grandmother, who would have been in her forties, was strung up from the ceiling. My grandfather had his shirt off and held a whip. He waved the whip at me and said, “Get out of here.” My mother grabbed my hand, but she had a slight grin on her face similar to how my grandfather chronically smiled. Being hung and stretched was hard on a child's body. I think it would have been unbearable on an adult's body. My grandmother, while hanging, though she had her feet on a chair, looked at me with her shallow blue eyes and said “He's doing this to me because you won't choose to be queen.”

That night we had a ritual in Old Pleasant Hills. I was in the center of a circle, and people threw pebbles at me saying things like “You're aggravating your grandfather,” “You're making your grandmother be punished,” “You're making us ordinary.” I think that's when I said I would choose to be queen, but it wasn't a real choice. I just didn't want Grandma tortured though she was happy enough to have me tortured, even gratuitously and of her own doing. That's how children are. They love and protect anyone who gives them a homemade sugar cookie with an egg yolk glaze. I was that stupid.

The monarchs' slaves

Several years after they murdered Daniel in 1947, while my grief was still at its crest of desperation, my grandfather began splitting and layering to create and program slaves within me for servicing the monarch-type leaders. He created a line of white and black naked slaves, their supposed ages almost fifteen to twenty-six, although developmentally they were really young children. They wore iron necklaces around their necks, which were chained together. In mind control, the programmers create homes and locations where their newly created parts reside. They can't have personalities floating around like homeless people who won't go to the shelters. Grandpa constructed an internal well by just telling me it was there and torturing me into believing it. He put the electricity circuits on the soles of my feet. I was wearing an everyday dress, strung up on the ceiling, and when it hurt too much, he said “Who wants to come out and be a slave?” No answer. “Then you'll have to have more electricity.” Internal people volunteered. He showed me pictures of African slaves all tied together. Was I willing to be like that? No. Electricity. Then yes.

In 2013, I dream that devil's horns grow out of my feet; I feel serious chest pains. In the morning, I wake with this memory: I was an older child, eight to ten or twelve or most likely all those ages. Grandma put me under her sunlamp in the master bedroom and said, “Now you are Negro.” My skin became very dark. Grandpa and Aunt Mimi walked me into the second bedroom. Mrs. Twartski was there. They spun me in the spinning chair and injected me. Grandpa started to put a rag with gasoline over my nose, and Mrs. Twartski said, “Don't overdose her.” I was relieved not to get the rag. They put me on the single bed by the window, where Grandpa often slept. He put a ring in my left nostril and another on the left side of my tongue. Mrs. Twartski asked why he passed over the nipple and vagina, and Grandpa said, “She's too prone to infection. No one will ever know.” She put rings on both big toes and many very thin bracelets up my left arm. Grandpa handed her curved horn-like white pieces of bone. She glued them to the metatarsus on each foot. “These are your devil's horns, so that people know you're a devil-demon. You'll have to be very polite to the men who believe they will profit from the use of you. Turn her over. We need to darken her backside.” Grandma paced the hall, banging things and making angry noises. Grandpa continued, “This is your costume. You will be

dressed like this for eternity, even when you sleep in the well. Whenever you are bidden, you arrive wearing this costume, behave well, and do whatever they ask. Unless you are called out, you are asleep at the very bottom of the well. No one must know about you."

Through hypnosis, I had to walk down a rung ladder to the bottom of a well. The well went below the foundation, past Mengele's spider web, into the deepest part. My grandfather pushed me physically into the imaginary well he built. He pushed on the top of my head, pressing my neck down until my neck became a hand fan that could no longer open. "You have to go down, down deep into the structure; I am drilling a well right now. Now one by one go down there." The black slaves went by groups A, B, C, D… the white ones by alpha, beta…Greek letters. Each letter signified a different function such as sexual, criminal, blotting out memory. I imagine the programmers personalize the functions to the role of each of their victims. The white slaves in me existed to be used by elected officials, and the black ones were for top world leaders, also mostly elected. These men felt more comfortable degrading a black female. "Now you live in the well, and I and very official people will call you up when we need you, and you all stay down there unless we call you." When Grandpa tapped his foot, leaving his heel on the floor, seven times, or when Mrs. Twartski tapped a glass with a spoon three times, the black slaves would emerge. There are thirty-five of them in clans of seven. Grandpa would decide which one(s) to send by limousine or airplane to these important people. He tried to match the slave to the personality of the leader. The slaves were so well behaved that the handler didn't need to be present.

The monarchs who were part of this criminal group had the opportunity to order sex slaves from my grandfather. The butterflies were all female, but the sex slaves were both male and female and were designed to be older than the butterfly girls. The abusers' belief was that a true woman was a child in a woman's body. He advertised: "We create specimens who are pleasing to monarchs…who can do any sort of trick for a monarch. Our specialty is form-fitting monarchs. We have girls in yellow, pale pink, light blue, green, violet, white. You choose the girl you want and we will form her to fit your needs."

For the female slaves, he pretended that he was supplying women's and junior's dresses. Customers could order size five, six, seven, eight, nine, and so on. Each size represented a certain sexual act. Various pastel colors also

translated as code for an assortment of sexual acts. The assistants to certain monarchs ordered them in advance.

I don't know whether my grandfather invented this industry or whether he inherited it from a predecessor. He must have travelled the world creating these sexual slaves for monarchs. During a therapy session, we found these parts of me hidden internally in the corner of Grandpa's second bedroom. They huddled in shame and did not feel like human beings. Once we discovered them, they had a bit more trust in humanity than before. They no longer think all people are bad.

I read the word “brandy” in a book, and the slave parts got a craving for Harvey's Bristol Cream sherry and scotch. I think they're alcoholic. In the dressing rooms at this important American place, we were routinely shot up with something like cocaine to make us more energetic, numbed, and cooperative, and to help us bear the disillusionments and assorted pains. We never knew what drug they put in us.

My grandfather created an alternate black book that no one knew about, including Mengele. He said all of this was family business. He called two of his secretaries, who were his middle and youngest daughters, to record. My aunts left the second bedroom each holding a different “top secret” black book. Because of the torture, I had to give over my imagination also. Mind-control programmers usurp all the movements of victims' minds.

Transferring demonic power to world leaders

These groups flail about in archaic beliefs. One is that the queens pass on demonic power through their genitals. They hypnotized me into believing that drawers in the walls that resembled old-fashioned library card containers held “demons”. They pretended to insert them with a long skinny rod, and told me I would always be demonized. The demons looked like black puffy smoke with blues in it, and had a bad smell like burning rubber. When they took the demons out of the drawers, their shapes were already fully formed, and appeared solid. They became looser as they entered me. They burned but not so badly as when my father put cigarettes out on my skin. The queens were sad and shamed, because they believed that they had demons in them and they had to go into a separate room with the monarchs. Unbelievably, my mother, sister, and some of the monarchs' wives were jealous of my position.

I had to remember how I entered these hidden rooms. You don't just breeze in. A long way from this underground suite of torture rooms was an entrance to a paved tunnel with sparse lighting on its walls. After the equivalent of several blocks, the road became unpaved. The drivers parked the limousines. Other men transferred the captive to an open car, like a buggy, and we proceeded on packed dirt roads. The tunnel became tighter and lower as the open car crawled along. After about another six blocks, I had to get out and climb through another tunnel using flashlights for light. Eventually, by crawling, I arrived at the secret ceremony district. World leaders and their wives, butterfly girls, and servants were already present. A trio of leaders of the worldwide Illuminati organization stood waiting.

Some of the butterfly girls were in cages, others hoisted on a conveyor belt. When the girls were strung up in hanging machines, sometimes upside down, the politicians serviced themselves. The “monarch” could choose which ones he wanted to play with sexually.

One time, while I was in an adjacent room, a monarch's voice boomed, “Flying girls, I want my flying girls.” His wife was there holding a whip—a refined whip like people use on purebred horses. “Now don't make me whip you, gals. Don't make me hurt you pretty young ’uns.”

Another time, a wife of a monarch did not have that down-to-earth ambiance. This one lined up the girls who had to “fly” by putting her right index finger inside the right side of the mouth of each girl, and pushed toward their right. She wore a plastic glove on each hand, because she didn't want to touch the air they breathed.

Escorts ushered me into the dressing room, where pleasant women prepared my body and hung up my travelling clothes. Wearing my cape, crown, and loop in my left nipple, I entered the alcove that held the sacrificial body, a baby, child or a thirty-three-year-old male. The three heads of the Illuminati and an executioner already filled the tight space. The executioner held my hands and killed the sacrifice as the men sang prayers in an inflamed manner. The executioner left and other workers entered to excrete blood from the corpse. I had to sip a thimbleful, then the three men drank. All during this time, my feet floated above ground and I looked down on the scene from the low ceiling. The three men spat on me as I exited and walked down a pathway to a world leader. They spat because they considered it shameful that an Illuminati queen would not kill unaided.

The workers had gathered the blood from the corpse or pretended to. I had to stand in it as the world leader took a sip from an ornate goblet, which reflected his role in the universe. We both entered a tiny chamber the size of a phone booth, where there was a transfer, Old Testament style, from my clitoris to his penis, of what they considered demonic power. These groups had bizarre, ancient beliefs. Outside the booth, a man dressed in robes like a Vatican priest recited prayers in a language that sounded like half Hebrew, half Latin. I couldn't speak it, but someone in me understood:

> Hear, my children of divine majesty
> Hear O angels of the silver world
> Hear demonic forces of the golden world
> Lucifer's angels are gathered herewith
> All his children have their feet on the earth
> And their toes in Jesus' blood

A river runs through
Channel his power into this mortal man
Channel Lucifer's force into this endowed leader
Channel Lucifer's heart into the soul of the country
Lucifer's queen is endowed with powers
Lucifer's blessing is on this official of his own sovereignty.

Then my job was done, though I remained in a dense trance, part from drugs, part from shock. During these assaults, when I was a piece of cloth, with no rights or being, a veil descended from the heavens and blocked their claws. They took possession of my body, but my soul hid insulated in a non-tangible substance that kept me from utter despair. The leader proceeded to the butterfly girls on the conveyor belt, and I returned to the dressing room.

By the time I was a young adult, they brought in another queen, but kept me at these initiations. Now there were two booths for the transfer of power: one for the new queen, Laura, whom they believed would cooperate, and one for the degraded me. “You're saving yourself, but now Laura has to do all the work. You care for yourself, but you don't care for Laura. The reason we have a bad leader is because of you.” They put me on a little stage and the audience booed me. “You're a good-for-nothing queen, a blemish on your heritage, a stuck angel, a namby-pamby fallen angel.” To be called “namby-pamby” in this vicious criminal world was meant as a huge insult.

Some of the leaders would not take part in these Illuminati rituals. One was drugged and kidnapped, another made a brief, angry appearance, others refused to participate. And some of the leaders wanted to be part of these grabs for power. Sometimes only the wife cooperated. The leaders of the hidden criminal world became nervous if a leader did not come from their organization. About such a leader, the visiting heads of this whole evil organization said to me, “We have another namby-pamby who's encroaching on us. This is all your fault. You punctured one of Lucifer's membranes. One of the seals isn't working, and it's your fault. You have interfered with our divine plan. You have not endowed our future. You have failed.” The torturers threatened the world leaders who didn't worship evil and world dominion with killing their children if they didn't cooperate. Other men shook and strangled me. “If you ever tell what happens here, you'll be dead.” As I go through these memories, the internal babies feel terrible anxiety. I have to hold the babies' heads close to my heart and rock

them tenderly as I go about my day, and my life. “Ah, ah, babies, don't you worry, I'm here with you,” I say to my selves.

This all happened in the forties, up to the nineties. My main goal in life was to make Daniel proud of me. He would most likely not have gone to college. He would have been a worker of some kind, making one woman extremely happy and teaching his children to be good citizens and spread love in their worlds. But the love that he gave me, the physical comforting during which I passed through catch-up developmental stages, his acceptance and understanding of me—took me out of this web of perversity and transplanted me. Almost seventy years later, my heart can still feel the thump of each beat of his heart, and the silent breath between them. One morning recently, I woke remembering his smell.

Government offices have their own closedown crews who performed the usual procedures expertly and extensively. The men didn't pump up their muscles like open peacock wings but were slim and tight in dark gray suits, white shirts, and skinny black ties. I wonder what these men dreamed about and how they treat their families.

The government cellar had about twenty spinning chairs in one place, and the men spun the butterfly people all at once. Projectile vomit flew like the fluttering wings of the butterfly girls. The government servants administered electroshock and tightened a head vise simultaneously, which made the tension level in the body enormous. Also we had to hold still or the guns that they held flush to our bodies might “accidently” go off. I heard shots through the corridors and in adjacent rooms. I don't know whether people were killed or whether they tried to scare us. Then came the whipping, kicking, needles in our teeth, more electroshock, always with guns pressed to victims' temples. In addition, they administered a series of six injections of mind-numbing drugs to help the brain not hold information: when entering, going into the booth, coming off the whipping stage, before closedown torture, after it, and as I returned to normal life. When they put me in one of their freezers, I had to vow not to tell anyone, or they threatened they would kill any children I ever had.

Back to the normal world

When I was a child, the government men returned me to my parents' home in Pleasant Hills, and later Long Island. I remember three other dump-off

locations when I was an adult. In the 1960s, I was discharged at Hiram College, Ohio, where I was a student. Young women in the dormitory accused me of spending the night with a college boy. “Which one?” “Do you like him?” “How far did you go?” “I was here, I was right here,” my front person said to my dormitory friends. I couldn't understand why they accused me of missing last night. I saw their several peering faces, but a universe parted me from them. People without skin cannot communicate with those who wear skin.

I smelled a faint odor of Vaseline especially around my wrists. I didn't want water touching my body, the assault of water on decaying skin, but I had to make my odor vanish. I walked into the bathroom, away from my gaping dormitory friends, used one in the line of sinks, showered. The water hit my skin, pounding it to meal. I couldn't kill, it wasn't killing. It was murder. I couldn't do it. The Angel of Mercy scrubbed my back. Its giant golden wings filled the shower stall. “Come with me, my child.” *Yes, yes, I will.* I sleepwalked half wet to the bottle of pills that only a few people inside knew about. There were only two left. Not enough. Someone must have been swallowing them during the night.

Everyone in the dormitory was rushing to class. I felt them swooshing past me. I had clean clothes. The pre-instructions were to make sure I had clean, respectable clothes for the next day. They were in my drawer. I needed food. I made my way to the cafeteria and sat at one of its wooden round tables. “Yes, I would like two eggs, bacon, and toast.” I wolfed it down, as if I had never eaten. The children wanted juice. My throat was sore, the chills rampant. My front person thought I had a fever. No one in the dormitory was sick. I made my way to math class; almost vomited in biology; fell asleep in French, my best subject; gazed out the window in religion. The professor talked about the prophets. I had a stirring feeling that there was no civilization, no hope.

After the classes, I floundered back to the dorm. Someone in me took the last little pill. The rest of us didn't see. Another inside person threw the bottle in the large can in the bathroom. I fell into a sleep of the dead. I felt the Angel's wings over my narrow bed by the window. A sophomore yelled to me that I had a telephone call. I kept sleeping. She said she'd tell them I was asleep. Some internal part of my mind knew it was their check-up call and that message would suffice. I thought I smelled blood, but almost all of my mind answered that was impossible. I began ripping hair off my body.

The wings. Highway lights. Tunnels. I entered a deep, drugged sleep and dreamt of thugs beating me.

In the 1970s, while visiting my parents, I was dumped at their Manhattan apartment at 90th Street and Madison Avenue. One of the muscular escorts held me tight under my bent arm with our hips touching. I could feel his gun through our clothes. We went up the elevator to the eighth floor, and my father opened the front door. He had been playing solitaire at the dining room table. The escort immediately disappeared. I went right to my bedroom. My mother had put a fresh nightgown on my pillow. *Touching*, I thought. Some awareness must still have lingered up front in me. My father came in and asked me if I wanted something to eat. I had not eaten for a long time. The government doesn't feed you when they torture. My father brought me toasted corn rye bread from Merritt Bakery, and a glass of carrot juice.

In the mid-eighties or early nineties, an escort deposited me at my co-op on 108th Street and Amsterdam Avenue in Manhattan. The doorman who talked loud and incessantly was on night duty, but didn't seem to notice anything unusual. The escort held me in the elevator, opened my front door with a key he had and left. I was alone in my apartment with a head that already had forgotten everything. By morning, I would be another person returning to ordinary life, with my government robot switch on off.

PART II

THE WAY OF THE LEAST EVIL

CHAPTER TEN

Wife and mother

The last Pleasant Hills ritual, 1959

We all looked up at the stars. The night sky was black. Someone called out “Big Dipper,” “Little Dipper”. You would have thought it would make everyone humble. My clothes were cold. I couldn't stop shaking, sneezing, and yawning. I had spent hours here in the outside ritual site in Old Pleasant Hills. The ground was laid bricks, which looked hundreds of years old. They knew so many stories but kept their stony silence. The area was deserted. Even during the day, hardly anyone was here, blocks away from the busy Enterprise Avenue with its subway stop and shops, housewives buying, commuters rushing.

I came early with the set-up crew. Early but past midnight. My father walked me here, then returned home. He and my mother, sometimes my sister, walked here a few hours later. No reason for my mother to stand around in the cold when she had so much to do in the apartment. No one forced my father to come to these rituals the way they had to force others. He wanted to worship Lucifer with his whole heart. Mother didn't like the killings but enjoyed the sex. She always complained about father's being impotent so she needed the rituals to get satisfied. I hated all aspects of these rituals, which they also called worshipfuls.

My Uncle Richard used his organizational skills to get everyone going. Like my grandfather when he made women's dresses, Uncle Richard loved detail and exactitude. Every switch, plug, light had to be just so.

Mrs. Twartski talked with the other handlers of the neighborhood. They were comparing notes on how to structure people's minds. My cousins and school classmates arrived. Incense was lit. I hated the smell, others inhaled it lovingly. The altar was arranged. They used a low, stone wall that was part of this site and had been there for hundreds of years. That night there would be a sacrifice, a real one, not pretend. This part, plus the orgy, especially terrified the children. Sometimes an adult was killed but often it

was children, both boys and girls though the group preferred boys, white ones. If such a child could be killed, any of us could be next.

I had a new job. I had to draw the designs that Lucifer craved on the bodies. Sometimes the person was already dead, and during the ritual they killed that person again for show. Sometimes the person was heavily drugged and would be killed at the ceremony or would wake up and be let go. Ever since my teacher said I had talent, the organizers had assigned me this job. Lucifer liked swirls in black and red, lines that never stopped zigzagging and curving. We only decorated the top part of the body and the parts that were exposed, such as the toes. The leaders said the designs enhanced the spirituality of the sacrifice to Lucifer.

Uncle Richard told me to hurry up. He said, “You are taking too long. You are dawdling.” I was not dawdling. I tried to work in designs that dedicated this life, this body, that night this six-year-old boy, to God. On TV I had watched a contest. They gave you a form or a letter and you had to make a whole drawing that included that shape or letter in an unrecognizable way. That was when I thought I could write “God” on the bodies. I formed the “G” around the belly button and camouflaged it so that no one could tell. If they discovered what I was doing, there would be two sacrifices and with no drugs for me. All the leaders had it in for me since I hadn't produced an heir. It wasn't my fault that my mother had killed baby Daniel, but they were angry that he and the others were born bonded.

Uncle Richard glared at me suspiciously. He didn't know why I was taking so long. He already wore his black hooded robe and eye mask. And the crowd was arriving. There were the Smiths, Joneses, Callaways, the Sheins, Olsens, Johnsons. Some of the teachers from Public School Number Three and Oldtown Junior High School arrived. There were the druggist and one manager of the grocery store, our dentist, and many women from Grandma's beauty parlor with their husbands and children, plus the women Grandma played canasta with. My parents and grandparents had just arrived.

The ink dried instantly and the carriers moved the body to the altar. A six-year-old girl who was being initiated stood there. It was her turn to do the sacrifice. The executioner stood behind her ready to use her hands. After her hands were used to kill, she would probably feel trapped, that she could never be free to leave. She would be so ashamed that she would stay

in the only place where she would be accepted and where everyone was the same.

The lights blinked, the dagger went in, and lights on the side showed a soul being clutched in Lucifer's hand. The soul tried to slip through his fingers but couldn't. People watching believed in this afterlife even though it was clear that we were watching a movie on a screen. Uncle Richard directed it. Sometimes the adults were more naïve than their children. A robed figure stood to the side on the brick wall. He moved his left arm down sharply, which signaled that the orgy should begin. The orgy always began thirteen minutes after the only or last sacrifice. People were naked under their robes. They threw naked children up in the air and penetrated them. My father had an erection. He can only get one around children. My mother was looking for men.

Human flesh *hors d'oeuvres* were passed around. They had human meat in the kind of containers chicken salad comes in. Everyone had to have a chunk. It was not optional. We picked it out of the container with toothpicks. You had to chew it. You couldn't spit it out. It was cooked and had seasoning. Even if you got a piece with fat, you had to chew and swallow or you would be whipped right in front of everyone. The meat was stringy and lean. I hoped they were just pretending it was human meat.

About three in the morning, a whisper flashed through the site. A muted call sounded the alarms from the outer trees all the way into Uncle Richard's ear. The handlers stretched up their necks. The lookouts, who were perched in the tree branches, formed concentric circles around the site. The outer ones had a view of the nearby busy avenue. The most responsibility was on the lead outer person. The lookouts were usually older teenagers and young adults. They had to be able to climb tall trees, stay awake and balance for several hours on branches, and imitate bird calls that they had been learning since early childhood. They had to perfect low whispering because birds were asleep in the middle of the night. Just the cats prowled and owls were awake. That training was one of the fun parts of this life we all led.

The shutdown signal was given right in the middle of the orgy. If it had happened before the sacrifice, the child would have been killed anyway, probably in the truck. The robes were tossed into a large bag, and people scrambled back into their street clothes that they had placed carefully and in a deliberate order on the other side of the low, stone wall. Men quickly

moved the corpse, paints, ritual dagger, and drugs into the parked truck. Everyone dispersed silently. We had rehearsed this time and time again, and this night we disassembled in seconds. Our secret religion depended on speed.

The first position lookout had spotted a lone police officer in uniform carrying a baton and wearing a gun in his holster while patrolling within blocks of our site. He was not one of ours. He was a new man on the beat. How had the police chief let this happen? He was supposed to let only our own patrol this neighborhood at night, especially on arranged ritual nights. He might be losing his authority. Our ritual site was wiped clean, but we could never return now. That is a fundamental rule: once a site has been invaded or almost invaded, never return. Fail-safe security is all-important. This event contaminated Pleasant Hills, as I had contaminated my coven and county's reputation.

When we arrived back in our apartment, my father was agitated. He was making phone calls and tapping on the table, more restless than usual. He couldn't even calm down enough to play solitaire. Within a week, extra programming began in the back programming room. My handler showed me pictures of a lone police officer walking. She said, “If you ever remember this ritual, you will go crazy.” She shot me up with electricity and drugs. “If you ever report it to the police, you will present yourself as a babbling fool, a mad girl.” They did this programming for months. All the drugged, spun children were shot through with electricity so that they would never remember and tell, even if cross-examined.

Meanwhile, my parents quickly bought a house on a wooded, hidden lot on Long Island. To walk near the wooded part, a police officer would have to walk on private property. For years, their hobby had been to take drives and look at houses on Long Island, where the middle class was moving. Now suddenly, they acted. They met with the builder every week while the house was being built. The Pleasant Hills clan dispersed and was absorbed by other neighboring groups. A new Long Island coven formed. The lone police officer never knew how close he came to being killed. Only the leaders discovered what had happened to the police chief's authority.

Marriage as punishment, 1964

Right before I graduated from Bard College, the young women in my dorm were breaking up with college boyfriends, getting apartments in the city, and jobs in large corporations like Pepsi Cola, continuing on in graduate school, planning on roaming around Europe. No one else was getting married and pregnant, and certainly not to a man she hated. The committee that controlled me found a male who was the opposite of me. We had nothing in common and opposing values, but we both lived in New York and my father was his father's lawyer. My grandfather as Wiezenslowski, a new woman who had taken over as “Mrs. Twartski”, and some international leaders made this decision during my sophomore year of college. They ordered that I change colleges to be closer to my selected and future husband and next handler. I was twenty-one and wanted to romp through life on tiptoe, not be saddled with a taker.

Right before the engagement party in Todd's parents' backyard on Long Island, I stormed around my parents' Manhattan apartment, ripping my clothes and refusing to attend. My father gave me hand signals that got me into their car and to the dreaded celebration. I must have switched into another part when I arrived, for I danced under the canopy in his backyard by the pool that only my parents and I swam in. The lindy was in style then. I turned and spun and my dress flared. My mother whispered with other females including my future mother-in-law about my recent temper tantrum. Driving home, my mother said, “You wore the wrong slip which showed when you twirled around. You're wearing a polka dot slip and should be wearing a solid color. You made me feel ashamed.” I wore an emerald green summer dress that had bold red and yellow flowers. A red slip would have been nice underneath. My mother had no way of snatching me and running away.

If only I'd had a protective part to help me escape or if only my front person had perspicacity, I might have changed my name and social security number, run to another country, and started a real life somewhere. I was twenty-two and didn't have the belief in myself or enough independence to make decisions. I had no memories or suspicion of my trapped underlife.

During another engagement-time trip to Long Island, I fought like a crazy cat not to marry and not to marry this man in particular. I was in a car with male programmers. They wanted me to marry Todd. Todd was six foot, thin, with medium brown oily hair, and pasty skin. He had a large nose, diminutive chin, and hazel eyes not unlike my mother's. A deadness

and greed flowed from his eyes. He wore thick glasses that slid down his nose. He used the middle finger of his right hand to push them back into position. I screamed that I wouldn't, couldn't. Through drugs, hand signals, and threats, they subdued me and made me cooperate mindlessly. Even my mother noticed that this fiancé would try to keep me down. He was my punishment for not being one of them. His agreeing to marry me came with the deal that he could control me and I would support him through graduate school. Later they tagged on my having to have an ordinary-life child to keep him out of the draft. But the larger reason for this conception was so that my love for this baby would keep me compliant. *Run, Wendy, run before you give birth.*

The vanity, 1966

I pushed back the side mirrors of the painted vanity placed in the large bedroom with low windows that overlooked farmlands and the pond. The fields of this tiny rural town outside Rochester were filled with white, yellow, and purple wild flowers. Honeoye's soft hills felt like a melody and made me happy to be alive. I was twenty-three years old, teaching French in a country school, married to a graduate student. In the second year of our marriage, I still supported him while he sat in a recliner studying and daydreaming in the living room and picking the hair off his right arm with his teeth and spitting it out. Though more ambitious than bright, he was preparing for a career in academia.

In the bedroom, I sat before the mirrors on the vanity which reflected back droplets of scars on the sides of my navel, not really scars but marks, whitish jagged colorations that looked a little like miniature people rushing to the subway, or the tips of waves about to break, or jagged clouds in the sky. I pushed the side mirrors in a quarter of the way, then back out a little. First they picked up the yellow flowers of the wallpaper on the side wall, cheerful and old fashioned. As I changed the angles, the mirrors reflected hieroglyphics even wrapped around my hips.

I stood in front of the painted vanity with movable side mirrors, wearing only my black bra. I had never before taken a good look at my belly, but that evening a curtain lifted or something shifted inside and someone younger inside me looked at my flesh and saw stretch marks, more on the right side of my body than on the left. I adjusted the side mirrors and looked

at the stretch marks from different angles. *How do you get stretch marks that look like the skies after the rains? From pregnancy or obesity*, I answered myself. As far as I knew, I had never been pregnant. Or fat. I was skinny but loose skin girdled my lower stomach and hips, too loose for me to wear a bikini. When I attended Bard College, my friends and I had made a day trip to nearby Vassar College, and we had all tried on the bikinis in its campus store. Only I had loose skin hanging over the elastic. I was maybe nineteen at the time and a dancer. It didn't make sense.

I stood stunned, looking at my stained belly, stretching my neck as if it were a microscope to see the swirling lines. Dark theater curtains of my mind opened for a moment and I saw beautiful Paris and glistening babies and red. I saw Paris, not the Bronx. Or Brooklyn. Decades would pass before I would realize that Paris represented a programming ruse. My face and the pores of my skin became immobile, unfeeling, but underneath a torrential storm began. *Who was I? What had my life been?* I could not form the question of whether I had given birth to babies I didn't know about. I could not ask that question yet, or where they might be now. My heart spiked and receded, my brain spasmed, my breathing quickened. It looked as if the clouds on my belly would break into lightning. Perhaps I had a moment of lucidity because my husband was pressuring me to have a baby. I closed the mirrored vanity and my mind. My husband in the other room closed his book and wanted dinner.

I went into the small kitchen off the living room. We were living in a couple's finished attic, cheap, student-like housing. I warmed up franks and beans for dinner. Over the sink, a small table lamp stood on a shelf. Its cord went around the sink to a plug in the wall. No overhead light was in the kitchen. I leaned over to switch on the lamp and electricity shot through my body. I had another flash of Paris, and then I held my arm and realized an electric shock had ripped through my body.

“Why can't you be more careful?” Todd asked as he stood in the doorway to the kitchen. “I told you not to lean over the sink.” In my awareness, I returned to Honeoye.

He began the refrain that had become his habitual dinner conversation. “If you are pregnant, they will not draft me. If you're not pregnant, they will draft me. They are drafting students, right now.” My mind ricocheted between anger and guilt. I did not want a baby. *Was I just a breeder? To have babies for his benefit? If he were drafted and died in Vietnam, it would*

be my fault. Once I repeated to our landlady what he had said. “Why does he think he is better than anyone else?” she answered. I had lucidity for one moment before the conscious part of my brain folded into the programming. I raced around town, even asking the family doctor where I could get an abortion. This rural physician looked at me as if I were a shrew. Instinct led me, not conscious awareness. And how could I have explained? My mind was scattered like dead people's ashes. But unlike ashes, the natural, organic electricity in the brain can bring it back to life.

Somewhere in the recesses, I knew. I knew what had happened to my sister and me.

The “expendable” child

Most of the experts who write about this abuse avoid the subject of the required sexual abuse of one's own children. Or perhaps they don't know about it because survivors are too shamed to disclose it. It's impossible to understand the full devastation of this planned destruction without acknowledging it. Writing about it makes me want to retreat to an island and never see anyone again.

The universal method of these groups is to let one child survive so that the mother can be controlled. This boy of mine who survived started out with a crisp, shining mind. He was born frowning though they hadn't given me electroshock during the pregnancy. He must have absorbed my emotions. As a child, his face lit up like a Frans Hals masterpiece, so full of life was he. His father was what they called a “commoner”, which means not of a “distinguished” blood line, so my child was considered “expendable”. I did what they told me in order to keep him alive.

Is it better to have your child slowly, tortuously killed or for you to rape him or her? They would not have killed us both together. I would have lived and he would have died. He was my eighth child. The others had all been murdered or abducted.

Their instructions were specific. All members of this kind of group had to abuse their children sexually at home and in rituals. Programmers don't call it sexual abuse or incest. They say, “You have to do this,” and demonstrate. I imagine some parents were strong and wise enough not to. I wanted my boy to be alive.

My covering “front” person at that time knew nothing of this other life. Now I have many front people. They try to accept that I was a perpetrator but the despair is larger than they are. As one of them slips into almost suicide, another takes over. That's how I stay alive—by frequently changing. Why do I want to stay alive? I don't, but I must tell this story. These atrocities have to end.

My front person didn't yet know to talk to my insiders and find out about her history. She knew her boy had started out with an inordinate amount of devotion. My young son had looked at me with an idealizing, adoring kind of love. My inside people could hardly bring themselves to tell the others what had happened to this vigorous child. He had dark shiny hair that people wanted to stroke when they passed him. His hazel eyes were enormous and intelligent. His skin had an apricot tint. As a toddler, he concentrated as well as any adult. I sent him to a Midwestern university's school for gifted children. Their intelligence tests couldn't measure his aptitude for conceptual thinking. He could explain anything brilliantly. And he was so perceptive. I never knew what he would say and his comments took my mind to new places.

Once I took him to the planetarium. It happened that an exhibition of Taurus was showing. Just about everyone in the family was born under that sign. I asked him who the characteristics of Taurus reminded him of, thinking he could answer his parents, or half of his grandparents. He answered “Mayor Daley”. He played the flute with such a perfect pitch, it made me want to start dancing again. He had empathy. We visited young adults in their first apartment. “They're lonely,” he said. I had only noticed a vague uneasiness. When his father, Todd, from whom I was separated, told me he was living with someone and I cried, Ned put his head in my lap and said, “You're heartbroken”. He had a logical, philosophical bent. One afternoon in Lincoln Park, I fell asleep. When I woke up a short time later, he was still sitting next to me. I said, “I fell asleep.” He answered, “How do you know you were asleep?” He was six.

Why?

Why do parents have to abuse their children sexually? Some explanations are: to destroy bonding, to teach children that they are objects for others' use, to give them overwhelming physical and emotional feelings, to create

familial triangles and rivalries, to teach them that they have to do what was done to them.

In addition, children at the mercy of groups like these have to be prepared for rapes that will take place during rituals, as part of programming. Trainers instruct parents in how gradually to stretch their children's orifices so that there will be a minimum of damage and tearing. Some parents cannot bring themselves to do this preparation to their offspring. Official trainers then step in. Ned's father was willing to stretch him so he wouldn't be injured. I couldn't, but they didn't let me off free. As punishment, I still had to abuse sexually, as did his father.

Sexual abuse punctures a child's relationship to the world and his or her own body. It teaches him that his body isn't his own, and that he is at the mercy of anyone who wants to violate him. It robs that child of the air and space around him. It cuts into his soul because our sexual life and the life of our emotions are intertwined and interwoven. It takes away the child's right to discover an enormous movement in his own time and way. When children are stripped of their sexual being, they are stripped of finding out who they are. A life-giving impulse is drowned by shame and discomfort.

We need water, air, food, touch, sleep; and we need boundaries. Boundaries to know where our limits are, to know we start and stop like countries. These groups destroy our boundaries before knowledge of them begins. They swallow our limits along with our concept of truth. Children in these groups live in a gray haze.

If my son hadn't been corrupted, he would have been one of the loving people in the world.

I hate genetic narcissism, the fact that people care mostly about their own, an extension of themselves. I fell into that same trap. These cults know that in the end what matters is the blood connection. We are wired for the preservation of family.

One of the mothers inside said to my front person, “I wouldn't touch Ned when he was born. They want the sexual stuff the second the child is born and I wouldn't do it, and then my sister wouldn't do it, and then another of us and another. Finally, the shocks became too much, and we gave out when they said they would start shocking him. Maybe they would shock a newborn, maybe they wouldn't. There's no way to trust them. We just wanted you to know that we tried.”

If they would electroshock a fetus, they would shock a newborn. “Sister” refers to another part or personality within that section. In my journal, I wrote to the parts that knew of the sexual abuse of children. I wanted to know why they couldn't just fake it. They wrote back:

A MOTHER: “They did question Ned. They would have killed him if he didn't answer correctly.”

ME: “We don't know for sure.”

A DIFFERENT MOTHER: “I know for sure. I was there three or four times when they sat him on a chair and asked him whether his mother or father touched his penis, for how long, whether anything was put in his backside. He answered ‘yes’, he didn't know for how long and ‘yes, things were put in his backside, fingers and sticks and toys,’ he said. They asked, ‘Did they pat your behind at the end?’ ‘Yes.’ ‘Did they tell you to lie and say yes when the answer should be no?’ ‘No.’”

ME: “Where did they question him?”

A MOTHER: “When I was there, it was in the apartment on Oakdale, in Madison Park, and before then on Everett Place.”

ME: “Could we have taught him to lie?”

THE FIRST MOTHER: “No.”

ME: “Why not?”

THE MOTHER: “You would have had to use more torture on him than they did.”

ME: “Would they have killed him if he said no?”

THE MOTHERS: “Probably.”

Ram in the bush, 1972

In 1972, we were living in an apartment in the Midwest. Hours past midnight, there was a break-in, but someone had the key. Todd, who had recently left me, and two other men opened my door. I sprung up and heard Todd say, “Get the boy.” My mind raced. *Do they mean Ned*? I thought. *How am I going to get to him? How will I fight off three men? I should have*

a gun! As my panicked thoughts swirled, one of the men put a cloth over my face and I lost consciousness, but also heard the back door to the apartment close. Its thump sounded so final, inescapable. I was unconscious, but a part of my mind recorded, and witnessed. Even when put under anesthesia for major surgery, a part of the mind-controlled brain watches. I didn't know where my child was or what these men would do. I couldn't completely black out, and I was aware that it was right before his sixth birthday. Small Feasts of the Beast were being celebrated in towns across the world—not the twenty-seven year international ones, but still rituals to contend with. My bedroom clock said eight minutes after two. I was drugged and mostly asleep but still watching, remembering, calculating. It hadn't dawned on me yet that it was my thirtieth birthday. The men stood me up, held me under my sore armpits, and dragged me down the metal stairs. In remembering this, I wonder how many men have invaded my armpits. *How many fingerprints are there?*

The light on the steps looked mellow as if something sweet and festive were about to occur. We bumped into no one. I heard Todd say, “Lights out” from my apartment. He wanted me to hear him. He wanted me to think I would be killed or Ned would be killed, and terror swept me. I thought I heard him switch off the hall light and close the door. The rough men doing a job they were most likely paid to do pushed me into a black car still running its engine. *Where is my son*? I thought as I tumbled into the back seat. The mules in me rose for a moment because of the familiarity of this scene, but I was not aware of my inside parts and could not have identified them then. Todd had disappeared with Ned. *They had killed Daniel's sister when she turned six.* The drive along the water took less than half an hour. Few cars were on the road. The car sped, lights danced on the road like fairies. The pale moon and flat stars shone on the molten lake. Even when calm and mellow, the city has a razor edge. We parked in the grassy fields around the mammoth sculpture of robed figures. The men parked in the bushes close to the area where about one hundred hooded people had already gathered.

At the entrance to rituals, wardrobe assistants take your clothes and hand you a hooded robe. A woman at the entrance said, “Everyone has to be naked underneath for the movies.” Those last words brought out an actor in me, one who was used to performing for cameras. I hadn't seen Ned since he left the apartment with Todd. Even the actor looked around for him.

Everyone was rushing about, mumbling, dancing, chanting. I made out some of their words, “Ram in the bush…” Black and white candles surrounded the ritual site but lights from cameras let me see well. Cameras shot the crowds and often panned on my face. It felt like a rape, even to the actor.

I saw the sharp outline of parallel altars, pale children placed on top. The altars had brought out a mother in me, which made the actor disappear into my depths of being. I thought I recognized Ned's profile on an altar. The moonlight and camera lights lit his body. I became certain that he lay on one of the two prepared altars. My heart froze and dropped. It was worse than my worries. He was motionless, probably not dead. A bomb of hatred filled my body. For a drop of prestige, his father would sacrifice him, like one of those Greek heroes. The other altar had a beautiful boy. People near me said it was John Lee, an Asian boy who lived in the same neighborhood as me. I did not know him. He was probably a better person than me or my son. The boys were naked; I wanted to cover them even with my black robe. The stars and camera lights glistened on their young limbs. Was John's family present? Were they members or had he been abducted? Flashes of Daniel's sacrifice ripped through my ribs. Daniel had been thirteen. There had been no escape. Decades later, there was no escape.

A tall man came up behind me, and I jumped. The crowds chanted “Choose who you will slaughter for Lucifer, praise his name.” The Luciferians wanted the corruption of the soul; the Mafia, a snuff flick to circulate and sell. The man pushed his draped knee into my back and legs and walked me to the center of a circle. Hooded figures swayed and chanted. The candles flickered but the camera's lights projected harsh yellow. The robed man behind me drove with his knee. John screamed “Don't let them choose me, don't let them kill me,” crying, gasping. I felt impressed that the child wanted to live. So many didn't. I hadn't. Daniel hadn't. I became paralyzed. I don't even think I blinked. Then I sobbed. The suspense built for the crowd as they chanted “Happy birthday to you, you have reached the age of treason, now all you have to do is kill your own boy—you don't even have a girl—or use your ram in the bush—a yellow-skinned boy. Happy birthday to you, you have reached the age of misfortune, now slay the ram and become of use, miserable queen, unfortunate queen, slay this ram and rejoin your fold.” I couldn't choose. Ned screamed, “Just choose, Mom.” His “Mom” made me break down

further. They began torturing both boys, twisting their arms, shoving their heads back. They took out a razor as if to prepare for skinning alive. Ned must have known what was about to happen. He must have witnessed these scenes before. Someone inside me said, “Just take him,” pointing to John. Ned screamed, “Don't do it.” This child started out with great compassion. I heard Todd's voice and saw his face in the camera lights. He was talking to the camera and with a snide expression said, “I knew she'd do that.” The crowd desired the torture.

I hadn't known this was a significant ritual. Little rituals took place at every holiday, at least once a month. They always found an excuse. The man standing behind me and pressing into me covered my hands within his black-gloved hands, and walked me over to the altar where Ned lay in agony. My heart felt as if it had a knife in it, the pain rippling to my arms and jaw. The man lifted my arms over my son, whose eyes were wild with fear but clear, not drugged. That gave me hope, since they usually drugged sacrificial victims. The cameras rolled furiously if silently, close-ups, panorama shots. The executioner's movement jarred me from ruminating. His right arm squeezed my intestines, his left knee jutted between my legs, as his left hand pressed a knife in my left hand, closed his hand around mine, and lifted my arm. It happened in a fast swoop. The masses chanted and hummed. The executioner abruptly as if following my mental order walk-dragged my limp body away from the altar where Ned lay as if dead, and toward the one where John lay as if dead. Someone shouted “cut,” and the lights went off. It was black except for the flickering candles. The crowd continued chanting, “Ram in the bush.” The wardrobe mistress entered from the side and slipped a crown on my head. In the breath between seconds, with his gloved hands wrapped over mine, right after the blackout of lights, the executioner plunged the knife into, I thought, this beautiful boy John. Even now, I can feel the resistance in my arms, especially the leading left one, as a body memory. In the blackout, I felt a puncture of something soft but solid. I thought my hands had been taken from me and used to kill.

Blood spurted, the crowd cheered, and I felt a sinking fall as the crowd began its off-and-on orgy. When the ritual knife came down, my mind divided into two. One part was not sure whether John was dead and whether I had killed him. That part stayed in perennial searching for him. The other part saw that during the blackout, the stage crew removed John and

replaced him on the altar with a raw sirloin tip roast. I fainted and vomited in my faint onto the meat. Part of the faint was relief. The snuff flick would be circulated. Part of my dizziness is from internal spinners keeping me from the memory, and part is from the anguish of realizing who I am.

I gained some consciousness, and the camera lights came back on for the next scene. When the crew's lights shone, casting a greenish hue on the hungry faces in the crowd, I noticed my parents for the first time. They lived in New York and must have flown in for this ritual. And I saw my grandfather who strutted about like the vain emperor with no clothes. He wore his Wiezenslowski mask, and smiled knowingly at the camera.

He was programming Ned after they removed him from the first altar. My grandfather held a gun to Ned's temple and said, “This boy is not allowed to love his mother. You will always despise your mother, and whenever you see her, you will remember how much you despise her. Go over there and tell her.” My parents said, “Good boy.” My mother kept turning her head over her shoulder to smile at the cameras, and tilted her head up. Her hair was newly dyed. Todd was about to be granted freedom from the marriage as long as he agreed to become “conscious”.

A presence like a compilation of inside parts rises and floats above this scene. She is nine and a half years old, stretched out lengthwise on her side, leaning on her bent elbow and wearing one of the blue and white ruffled dresses my grandmother had brought back from Florida for Rhonda and me. She says over and over that she wants to die. She is comprised of many betrayals and was created when I was four and a half. Parts have to be established in the years before nine to hold their form. She is always there but not always visible like a cloud, a fox, or a suicidal thought. She guides me to the ritual site. The blackout occurred. John was removed from the altar. They lifted me from my faint and vomit, and placed me on the same altar that John had been on. Ned had been programmed by my grandfather. Now I was on the altar and they brought in a birthday cake for me on a silver platter. A dagger stuck out of the top of the birthday cake with black flickering lit candles. The crowds like a prophetic Greek chorus chanted, “I hate you, Mom, unqueened…” This leaning figure of parts of me pushes me forward. She will not let me stop writing. I want to have my dinner. “No,” she says, “keep writing. Write.” The executioner pushed Ned forward, lifted his arms with Ned's small limbs captured between them; the knife high, it started to move down—another blackout. The dagger had a rubber tip and

was collapsible. It plunged into my heart that had already felt it had another kind of dagger in it. I was still alive, covered in my own vomit. Terrified, I was ambivalent about being alive. *I should stay alive to protect my child, but I cannot guard him,* I thought.

Ten days before the memory of this coming-of-age ritual presented itself, I felt exhausted and started thinking about a boy named John. I had a flash of myself drugged—the body memory of exhaustion may have been the drugged feeling. In the memory flash, I wore a black robe, was held under the arms, and dragged down a building's front staircase by two men, one of whom was my estranged or ex-husband.

My nights were filled with insomnia. Finally, the memory crept out of my mind.

After I fainted on the second altar, they gave me smelling salts to bring me back. The camera panned on Ned's pained face, and John's terrorized but relieved face. Ned repeated as taught, “I hate you, Mom.” He spoke his scripted words in that mind-control monotone. I felt myself crumble as if I had lost everything, and could never get any of it back. I felt that in my life I had just misery and hopelessness, and a child pressured to hate me who would eventually hate me. The chorus chanted, “He hates his mother,” the cameras licked the words.

Taking advantage of this vulnerability, my grandfather in the center of a circle said “You think you have spine and are so fine like Bordeaux wine, here's what will make you shine,” as he kicked my body, and invited the chorus to kick me. In the recall process, for four days, I have muscle spasms that I think are from lifting my dog too much. When I retrieve this last part of this memory, my back stops hurting. It is the beginning of October 2013 now. The real event took place in the fall around 1972. The mind has inner workings that push up anniversary memories, even forty-one years later. Afterward, in my ordinary life, I did not remember this ritual. But some part of my brain kept looking for John on the street, in the neighborhood.

After the ritual, when the two thugs dragged me back to my door, and dumped me in my apartment, I saw a bottle of pills—white round ones—that did not belong to me, spilled on my night table. Todd must have dumped the pills before he said “lights out.” I took it as a message that he wanted me to kill myself. I became more depressed than usual. By now, my conscious mind didn't know a thing about John Lee, but my hidden mind thought about him constantly.

During these years of rituals and when they actively programmed Ned against me, only severe hunger would drive me from bed in the mornings. I would buy a fruit that I particularly desired and when the hunger pains mounted, I would drag myself out of bed and eat the persimmon or mango. That is how I stayed alive. Some of these feelings came back as I wrote this chapter. It felt as if my bones left my body. I had painted a mixed media canvas in the 1980s. I attached a doll that wore a starched white dress to a canvas of pasted-on strips of canvas in various shades of greenish black. The doll's bones were scattered over the canvas, though the doll maintained its prenatal position.

Rituals take a few hours, and mind-control programming sessions about half an hour, so the majority of one's time is spent in ordinary life. I had made one of the bigger accomplishments and one of the more significant mistakes of my still fairly young life in normal life. I sent my son to private school. His mind started working as if it didn't have programs in it. The true self is what the criminal cults want to obliterate. When my mother died and my program not to create was destroyed, I began writing and choreographing. Two real selves, my son and me. We had to be stopped. The long series of calculated moves to separate us intensified. Our hearts bumped and fled, knocked and hid, scarred bleeding hearts—hopelessness turned bitter.

When my son wasn't on altars or at rituals, he was a perfect student; I was a scholarship graduate student working toward a PhD, and taught modern dance classes to support us. Those parts functioning in the world knew nothing of the rituals and mind control. Absolutely nothing. We thought we were a regular person. The programmers used portable electrical gadgets to make us forget. “This ritual never happened. You weren't here. You were home asleep the whole time.”

They sent away the parts of the brain that attended, and called out the unknowing, functioning personalities. With their electricity, they could accomplish almost anything concerning the mind.

There remained a bridge between Ned and me, but it was built of coolness, temper tantrums, and defiance. The programming remained hidden inside, unknown to the personalities living normal life, but affecting all actions and feelings. And underneath the programming was the abiding love that I have for my child, and I believe that he somewhere still has for

me. On the surface, however, he opposed whatever I said, and I couldn't like him.

Alison said he opposed what I said because of programming, and he was afraid I would be hurt if we were close.

The rift, 1979–1982

This criminal group wanted Ned away from me permanently. A thug, an electroshock expert, and Todd had Ned and me sitting on two hard chairs that they took from my downtown loft. Tied to parallel chairs, we received electroshocks. Me, him, me—he screamed, “Let me go, Mom.” One of their standard methods is to impersonate a parent so that the child thinks that parent is torturing him. They either use a look-alike adult or show a film and tell the child that the villain is his parent.

To get him away from them, I would send him to an excellent private school, I thought. I found a Quaker school that seemed wholesome. He would escape somehow. They separated us, but they didn't have to keep him. But the next week, his father took him away. I sat in the kitchen numb and immobile. I had turned to stone. Even electricity could not melt me now. While Todd packed up Ned's belongings, I did not think of my other stolen and killed children. These awarenesses were barricaded in recesses and caverns. I did not hear my son's logical, clear scream, “Let me go.” It was not worth the struggle, we could not win, he was saying. I thought of my mother sneaking into my bedroom when I was three, or four, or five. She held a down pillow and placed it over my head. I turned and struggled. My sister in a parallel bed screamed, and my father rushed in, and pulled Mother away as I gasped for air and knew my mother truly wanted me dead. I wished she had succeeded.

My son knew I did not want to give him up. He knew I had tried to find a better environment for him. Meanwhile Todd kept being promoted in academia, until he landed a national position. This kind of cult acquires positions like these through corruption and money, and rewards its most compliant members with prestigious high-paying jobs. It is one reason we find so many incompetent people holding positions of power. I was just a dancer and teacher. My son would be sent to power and money.

It was during the 1982 Feast of the Beast on Prince Edward Island, when the leaders tortured and pressured me the most to accept my role as queen

and become fully conscious, that they cemented the rift. I was on a rack being tortured for my refusal to cooperate, when the slaves took Ned away. When he returned, he was thoroughly mind controlled against me, and probably fearful that if he was loving toward me, that I would be killed. That barrier never broke down. A tone of constrained disdain crept into his formerly loving melodic voice. Now he was on one side, and I the other. Never would he have chosen to be in this position of his own free will. One has to go through a life-threatening struggle for free will. It has not been a birth-right for us who were conceived within criminal groups like these.

ELEVEN

A mule's life

I sat in a big airplane. I didn't know how I had got here. Panic seized my throat. I receded, and another person came forward. In the time it takes to swallow or less, a person can emerge and recede. This new person was assured. She had instructions. Similar people came out with her, so she was not alone.

I was the one who emerged. I was a courier. We carried drugs and political documents from one continent to another. I walked through customs without expression. The inspectors did not look up my vagina, or into my rectum, or in any of my bras. I went by different names. I had been travelling since my late teens, two trips per year, probably a total of twenty-five.

Paris to Pakistan, 1972

The alarm clock rang at 3:45 a.m. I rolled over, pretending to sleep through the noise. Todd sat up in bed and shut off the alarm.

My clothes for this run were laid out on a chair: black trousers, new underpants, a brassiere slightly small for me, white socks, black loafers, a brown shirt. He must have gathered them after I fell asleep last night. He stored them in the narrow broom closet in the kitchen. The travel clothes would not attract attention. A “run” was when the internal couriers took something illegal from one country to another. I had many couriers in my system, but my other personalities didn't know about them. Todd pulled off my nightgown, and tried to dress me. I tried to bite his hand, but he waved four fingers on his right hand in front of my face. Something clicked in my brain, and I could not bite, kick, fight, or flee. My father had given him my hand signals as part of my dowry.

“That's good, darling girl,” my husband said. “Just you lie there.” He put on my clothes piece by piece, as if I were a child or a doll.

“Lift your arms through,” he said. His voice went up and down, which meant he was not in a robotic state like me. I lifted my arms as if I were a marionette, just there to flop around according to someone else's wishes. Life can be taken away from you just like that. The childhood, teenage years, and now this expanse of adulthood. I lived it, but it did not belong to me.

My six-year-old ran into the bedroom. He wore his blue pajama sleeper, and cried. He ran to me, and Todd said, “Help Mommy on with her shoes.” Ned pounded on my feet. He was a bright, intense boy who readily had temper tantrums. His mind ground out thoughts constantly.

Todd put on my brown parka that I wore only for runs, zipped it up, and put on my gloves. He forgot my hat and scarf. It was the Midwest in the winter, which meant brutal coldness. The building heat hadn't started yet.

I remained dazed, but parts of me floated above myself, and watched. These parts of my mind didn't like to go too far away from my body and the others. My son cried and needed his mother. So much of me wanted to spin out of this program, pick him up and tell him I'd never leave, but Todd waved the fingers, my brain pinched, and I stayed in the part of my brain that had been tortured into being a courier.

“Go back to your room,” Todd told Ned. Ned didn't challenge Todd. Then Todd slipped his arm under mine, squeezed my arm through my parka, and walked me down the three flights of the row house in Old Town. I stepped over children's bikes parked on the steps. The new neighbors who had moved into the first floor let their children leave their bikes all over the public places.

I was sleepwalking and dull. Deeper in my heart were terror and grief that I had left my crying child, so connected to me that he woke from a deep sleep when I was forced to leave him. The robot part of my brain persisted, but the feelings from the other parts formed a halo around my brain and clamored. Some parts recorded the action so that one day I could tell what happened to me and at least thousands of others. I did this for the other mothers forced to leave their crying or sleeping children to make runs for pimps, runs that they would not be conscious of doing and have no memory of having done.

Two sedans were double parked in the street outside the row houses. They glistened in the dark like wet goose feathers. A man with a shiny leather jacket and a cap put his gloved hand under my free arm. For a

moment, I was sandwiched between the betrayer-husband and the hired kidnapper.

“She's a wild fire. Don't trust her,” my husband said, slipping his arm away, and turning quickly to go back into the warmer building. He wore his bedroom slippers. He knew the transfer would be swift and efficient. The front door to my building closed silently as the man opened the back door to the car, and pushed me in. I ducked my head, and he slipped in beside me. He pressed his hip into mine, pushed my back forward, clasped my gloved hands behind me, and handcuffed them. My heartbeat turned upside down. Sweat soaked my gloves even though it was freezing outside. He reached over me and pulled down the shade. I quickly looked up to my dark, shut third floor home, and my heart dropped. The man whose name I didn't know pulled down the shade on the other side. He told me to put my head down as he shoved it down. He pried open my mouth, and shoved a pill under my tongue. I felt ambivalent about the pill. If it brought me oblivion, it might not be so bad. He pulled out a handgun, and pressed it into my right temple.

The man cocked the gun and said, “I hope we don't have any big bumps or crashes.” When I was a child in bed gasping for breath through my sobs, my mother had stood in the doorway and said, “If you don't stop crying, I'll take you into bed with me.” I started to wheeze.

The car drove carefully through the narrow, dark streets. I imagined it went at exactly the speed limit. The street lamps glowed, but I couldn't read the corner signs. The program in me not to know my location was active. I fought to stay awake, but fell deeper and deeper into unconsciousness. Sometimes my head jerked up. I thought I heard Ned crying.

We arrived in the city's desolate outskirts. The driver shut the car lights off, but continued to drive. We crept slowly. Two men dressed in black, lean and quick, ran out of a warehouse. The man with the cap jerked me out of the sedan. The winter air splashed my face, and made me more alert. The two men from the warehouse grabbed my arms and walked me roughly into the warehouse, as the second sedan pulled up. Two men got out of the car. I felt the round head of a gun in my back. Even though a gun pressed into me, I could barely stay awake. My head plunged down and popped up.

Men lifted me onto an examination table. One warehouse man ripped my black trousers off. “Don't tear anything. She has to wear these clothes

home," the other one said. *They didn't plan on killing me then.* He took the rest of my clothes off roughly, but didn't tear them.

A small, well-wrapped package sat on a side table. The leader man attempted to insert the package in my vagina. He couldn't get it in. I felt a faint pride that I had won that battle, if being naked in a warehouse and having dope inserted into you meant winning.

"We'll have to use the ass," he said.

Nearby a police siren blasted. The men froze, their muscles tensing like a mother deer spotting hunters. They darkened the room, swept the packages and clothing into a bag, and pushed me into a back room. Two men went in with me. They gagged my mouth, and held a gun to my throbbing head. My eyes looked around wildly. I feverishly wanted the police to find me, but even without the gag, I couldn't scream. I heard no knock on the door, or doors opening. The tendons on my neck jutted out brutally. Men outside whistled. *They must be lookouts.* After a while, the gun still held taut, a man outside whispered, "All clear."

They dragged me from the back room into a dirty, streaked bathroom. It reminded me of gas stations' bathrooms.

"Get on all fours," a man spit out. His saliva crossed the room. He appeared angry about the delay.

"She can't. She's in handcuffs," a chubbier man said.

The first man unlocked the cuffs, made a sudden, artful karate spin, and kicked me in the ribs to the ground. Another man filled the enema bag with water, and plunged the prong into my rectum. I then sat on the freezing toilet seat, shivering and having diarrhea. They used washcloths and towels to clean my legs, inserted the package in me, pried open my mouth, and forced me to swallow another pill with water from the rusty sink. They put a brassiere on me that had papers in between the material, and fastened a second bra on top of the first bra. They walked me into a wardrobe room. Closets stacked with clothes in the same style from sizes six to eighteen, and bras and underpants overflowed. Some had fallen to the ground. They chose a sturdy, inconspicuous outfit for me, similar to what I wore to get there. Hundreds, thousands of women must have passed through here. A men's division was on the other side. I felt like a cockroach.

They gave me a size eight. They tried on different pairs of shoes. None fit right. I had to be able to run if necessary. They let me wear my own shoes.

Birds outside chirped. I thought of mothers sleeping in their husbands' arms. Soon they would awaken contented, brew coffee, and boil oatmeal. Did I hear my child's crying?

The worker-man folded my clothes and put them in a black bag. He put my white socks on top and tagged the bag.

I became a mule in black pants. If I returned home and was not killed or jailed, then I would return to being a wife of an academic, making dinner parties for faculty from *Mastering the Art of French Cooking*, and the mother of a first grader, and a graduate student on fellowship. I remained so sleepy-doped that I could barely tell which man was which. They all scurried around as if a bomb were about to explode. The driver and my escort left. Other warehouse men controlled me now. They dragged me into an identical black sedan. Still dark, it probably was not 5:00 a.m. yet. Two men flanked me; each had a gun in my ribs. I felt them through the black coat they outfitted me with. With their guns cocked, these desperate men readied to shoot. *Do not do anything rash. Go along with them. What's going on here is bigger than one woman's protesting*, I said to myself mantra-style. Daniel had told me not to bring too much trouble onto myself. *Other victims must have tried to escape. Why else would they use two guns?*

A woman sat up front, next to the driver. I wondered how this middle-aged woman got lured into this business. *What could she get from it, or what was she preventing? She must have a child at home also.* We drove for a long time, though I kept falling asleep despite the guns. I had a vague sense of their giving me an injection in my arm as they dressed me in my uniform of another identity.

I saw light flickering in the distance, and signs for an airport. The car followed the signs to “International”. Lights shone gaily. Midwest International Airport. The limousine pulled up to the drop-off section for Air France. The man on the passenger side took a small suitcase out of the trunk, and stood it on the sidewalk. He handed me a purse with my passport and ticket inside.

“You're on the 5:08 a.m. flight to Paris, France, flight 538. Our people are in front, behind, and on the side of you. Don't try anything. In Paris, you take another flight. We're watching your every step,” the passenger-side man said. I walked toward customs and noticed a woman by my side, a man in front, and another behind me. They seemed to trail me. I opened my passport. My name was Sheila Richardson today. My photo was current. I

couldn't remember when they had photographed me. My small suitcase and purse passed customs easily. They didn't search my body. I wanted to collapse right here on the airport's floor and go to sleep, but if I did, one of my stalkers would shoot me and flee. I believed that if I stated my correct name they would kill my child or me.

I started to come to when the woman by my right side waved four fingers on her left hand. The hand signal meant I had to stay in my stone-faced trance. The woman wore a pleated skirt and jacket. It looked like a dog trainer's outfit, the kind you saw on television during the Westminster dog shows. I passed through. I said nothing. I boarded the plane, and took my seat on the aisle.

One of the men had the aisle seat directly in front of mine, another man right behind me. I didn't know where or when the woman flanking me disappeared. Later I got up to use the bathroom in the back of the plane, and the man who sat in front trailed me. I closed the bathroom door, and noticed some of the enema had formed a skipping pattern down my leg like ants carrying breadcrumbs into a hole. I used paper towels and airplane soap to clean it, then pulled my pants back up. *You would think these men would supply pads.* I heard a tapping outside, not on the door but on some part of the wall. Two long taps, four short. My signal to hurry up. *If I was late because of cleaning up my enema, would they kill my son?* At least I was wearing trousers this time. When they dressed me in tights and a skirt, it was harder to clean myself. I opened the door, and the waiting man tipped his hat to me, which meant trouble. He rushed in, probably checking to see whether I had discarded the contents of my inner bra, the one with the political papers. I couldn't take the chance, though were it not for my child, I wouldn't have minded provoking them to murder me.

I felt something desperate, or reckless and wild rise in me, something of my original spirit perhaps. A few hours had passed since I had received a hand signal, and I must have been coming out of my trance, slowly, leaving the world of mindless, programmed robot and re-becoming flesh and blood.

A nice man with a round face and soft eyes sat in the window seat on the rear left side of the plane next to an empty seat. I rushed into it. The nice man looked up surprised, as the man who sat behind me came over, bit his nails into my shoulder and said, “Miss, you were sitting over here. You got confused.” He took me by the arm, jamming the nail of his thumb deep into

my arm muscle. Squeezing my arm more and more tightly, he led me back to my original seat, smiling pleasantly at the passengers who watched him.

The next day when I was home again with my child, I would look at my arm and see a sprawling black and blue mark like an octopus shooting out feelers, seeking help. The guard-men were not supposed to use force in public, or leave marks that could jog the memory. I have to thank this bruise for getting me to this memory over four decades after it occurred. A present-day bruise with a similar shape led me right to this forbidden awareness.

Back in my seat, I wondered why the nice man with soft eyes didn't suspect something foul. *Couldn't he at least have reported a problem to the flight attendant?* "Miss, may I help you with your bag?" the front man said. The men formed a team, but from their dress and manner, one would never guess. The back man acted like a businessman with his gray suit, tie, and briefcase. The front man seemed like a hippie in his blue jeans, cap, and wrinkled shirt. I got simultaneous hand signals from front and back—"Stay in trance, don't speak, don't attract attention, one wrong move and we will kill your boy."

We proceeded to baggage claim as an unknown man in casual clothes approached. His skin was dark, and he didn't seem to speak English. He handed me another valise, and slipped a purse onto my left shoulder. I felt myself fold flat.

The two men kept aiming me down the jammed corridor with noisy people and foreign language signs that looked like dancing scrolls. They sat me down in a waiting room, the new purse on my shoulder, and the valise by my feet. I received a hand signal to look inside the purse. I found an American passport with a photo of me—for this leg of the trip, Sandra Daniels was my name—and tickets to Pakistan. Just then a man asked in foreign English if this seat was taken. He sat down, and I knew he was my next escort. Formally dressed, he had an inconspicuous manner. The other man sitting across from me wore gray chinos, and a blue open shirt.

I didn't have to think. They pulled the strings. The casual one waved his four fingers, thumb tucked, and I plummeted back into the trance I had just begun to emerge from. I noticed a Pepsi next to me. It must have been for me to drink. Drugs must have been in it. I would rather not know what would happen next, so I swallowed it. The man across smiled slightly, the

man next to me sighed with relief. Pretty soon I would be at home with my child, figuring out how to kill my husband, if I returned.

An announcement was made in what I thought might be Pakistani, then in English, to board the plane. I didn't recognize the names of its destination cities. I didn't know where Pakistan was. In trance, I boarded the plane to Pakistan. A suspicious-looking, all-covered-up woman sat across the aisle, and eyed me through her peripheral vision.

After we landed, I stood up to get my coat, but a different coat occupied the overhead compartment. I took it, and carried it over my arm.

“Have a nice day,” the cheerful flight attendant said to the guard in front of me.

He nodded his head and tipped his hat.

“I hope you enjoyed your trip,” she said to me.

“Thank you,” I answered sweetly.

“Have a nice day,” she said to the kidnapper behind me.

“And to you,” he answered, and turned stiffly.

I saw that one man carried my first coat over his arm. He stopped, and emptied the pockets. Later he threw the coat in a garbage pail.

The men flanked me, but pretended they didn't know me. My head wouldn't stay steady. Everyone thought of Todd as a hero. He was chair of a department, and he sold his wife into slavery, and told my agents not to trust me because I was a spitfire. *When I get home, I could castrate him in his sleep, or put poison in his hamburger. Couldn't these people tell how drugged I was?*

I walked obediently as if in a dream into the trap of customs. I pulled my body through the airport as if it were a reluctant dog on a leash. I felt a rumble of terror like the sounds before a thunderstorm peaked. I could move, I could walk, but the terror played a roll call under my heart. I didn't think that I could contain it. It crescendoed when the officers took me into a back room and closed the door, click, click, double lock. I didn't know the nationality of the men who followed me and were now locked out. Inside here in customs, they were all Pakistanis. The men wore official uniforms, the woman a purple silk robe that brought out the blue highlights in her heaps of black hair. She translated into a distorted English.

“Leave down on the table.”

They left my loafers on.

Right now in the present as I remember, my inner skin turns red.

They ripped me open the way eager adolescents tear open their Christmas gifts.

“Look for the bra,” the woman translated.

They ripped off the inner bra with document padding.

“Get her off the table,” the woman translated.

The men talked fast, sometimes at the same time. The woman in silk didn't translate everything.

“Maybe we should keep her. Why send her back?”

“She doesn't have a contract.”

The fear I'd had since my first run took hold of my throat. Worse than killing me, they could keep me as a sex slave. “Look at the boobs, big,” the woman translated.

“Nice boobs, bigger than our women's.”

“No, they have stretch marks.”

“We don't like stretch marks.”

“We could do better. American boobs could be better.”

“We have better right next door.”

That poor woman, I thought.

“She's no good.”

They slapped my face with the outside part of their hands, punched me in the stomach, kicked me until I buckled in two. *This dialogue must have been scripted.*

“Let's see if we got everything out. Maybe she's hiding something from us.”

A familiar loneliness seized me. I couldn't live in this world, with people. I thought these four men, smelly, unwashed criminals in uniform costumes, on government payroll, planned to re-explore me, but that was their signal for rape. The smell of fermented urine and dirt rose. Once I started vomiting, I could not stop. It was as if the vomit became my anger.

Behind the rape room, the men pushed me through a hidden door in a brick wall. It opened onto another square room with a familiar-style black chair. They threw me on the chair, and tilted it back. A man who wore a turban traced the blue veins on my throat with the tip of his knife. *These men wanted something more from me. There was a reason they would not let me pass.* A man with a turban began: “Who would think there was bright red inside these blue veins? It's as if the blood were wearing an overcoat. If we took the coat off, a lot of blood would come out—that would be a

shame. That's what will happen if you disobey again. Like when you sat in the wrong seat next to that man. You don't want us to kill an innocent person. Some nice, innocent person. You don't want to force us to kill that person. If that person had helped you, he would now be dead. You don't want to force us to kill your little boy, who is at home now wondering where his mother is. It would be a shame if you didn't return to him, wouldn't it? All you have to do is behave. Sit in your right seat. Make the deliveries on your own. Go where you're supposed to go.

"We are going to give you the opportunity to redeem yourself. We don't usually do this."

Was this all they wanted, I think, *just to punish me*? The man with the turban started using hand signals. He said: "You will go on your own. You will travel all over the world being our mule, our puppet. If you ever disobey, remember, or tell, we will kill your boy that day."

This was what they wanted, for me to travel without the plants. I burdened their finances by needing escorts. They wanted more from me: "You will take another flight, change planes in Copenhagen. A man will take you by your left arm. You will not look right or left, just straight ahead. You will have different names. They will be on your ticket and passport. You will get your new purse when you land in Copenhagen. You are our courier girl. You have to regain our trust."

They electroshocked me as they gave me the information again about flight numbers and names. A series of songs ran through my head. I heard the melodies, but not the lyrics. As they electroshocked my nipples, they said: "It would be a shame if we didn't let you return home to your little child. It would be a shame if we had to keep you here for ever and ever. But maybe you would like living in Pakistan in one of our clean brothels, or maybe one of our not-so-clean brothels where the girls have many diseases. You can live a year or two with syphilis, before we put you out on the street. We have Americans in our brothels. Big, powerful America, and we have their girls. We could keep you here. If you disobey again.

"We would not want to have to kill him, take him out of his private school if you disobey." *So they knew where he went to school.*

"If you try and escape, don't do your assignment, remember or tell. We would hate to have to kill him, your boy." They spun me, then stopped the spinning abruptly, jarring me, and shook me roughly. If that happened to me at the age I am now, my bones would dislocate.

The female translator cleaned me up. She made my hair neater, and told them that I needed a new coat to cover me. The customs men had torn my clothes.

I was released from Pakistani customs. Then I could escape, but where to? Where to in Pakistan? I might have tried something in France, but not here. I would end up in a brothel, which would be full-time work.

My first run came in 1962, when I was in college. After that, I made one or two runs per year. In 1966, when I was twenty-three and pregnant, my controllers used me again. Todd walked me to the gate at La Guardia Airport. I was wearing a medium blue dress with a large bow on the bodice, the pre-feminist maternity style of the Sixties. I had a container in me within a leather pouch. Someone in me ran into the bathroom. That part didn't know what was about to happen, but knew she had to stall for time. She couldn't figure out a way to escape, so she started tweezing her eyebrows in front of the bathroom mirror. She stayed in the bathroom for a long time, tweezing. When she emerged, Todd said, “You took so long. I almost came in after you.”

During the later runs, my anticipation to be home was ecstatic. I would see and hold my child, even though he squirmed and hit. I could eat fruit and a salad without fear of moving my bowels and being killed if I could not retrieve all the dope. I could shower and wash feces off my legs, and practice sanitary ways of cleaning. I could breathe in fresh air with the windows open, and not the braided smell of urine and semen. I could go back to school, and fall into the role of an ordinary person and faculty wife. Perhaps Todd would be repentant. Other abusers offered a short-lived consideration phase. I craved being soothed and sanitized.

After one of the runs, when the limousine with my driving escorts pulled up to my home, I got out of the back seat. The front-seat man handed me my original purse and keys. He separated the key to my front door, so it stood out like a telephone pole. I walked up the three flights of steps, opened the door, and walked past the marital bedroom. It was early morning dark, maybe 4:30 a.m. Todd was in bed with a woman, probably one of his students. The girl had long, straight, blond hair, the kind men love. Her skin was anemic-looking, and she was ultra-thin. She was probably a freshman at the university. Todd was on his side of the bed with his hands folded under his head. He smirked and pretended to be asleep. I walked past this bedroom, down the hall, through the kitchen, into the back bedroom where

my son was in too deep a sleep. I felt his pulse, and put my ear on his chest. He was alive but drugged. I lifted his arm, and it fell heavily. I lay next to him and held his pudgy hand with long fingers. Todd's fingers. *How to escape? Was there a way to save Ned? I couldn't kill my husband tonight because of the poor used girl next to him.*

* * *

It is a typical night in 2013. I sleep for a few hours and awaken with a thrust, my jaw clenched, my teeth notched like antique drawers. Another memory arises in my consciousness. An older courier went through customs stone-faced, and no one suspected her. No one peered up her vagina. She said that she took a plane with her body empty to a stopover country, which could have been Holland, France, or anywhere. She went on command into a bathroom and a woman, a native of that country, in the next locked stall, climbed underneath into hers and inserted a package of dope that had a white string attached like a tampon. If customs searched, they would think she was menstruating. The foreign native woman climbed back to her own stall, unlocked the door, and exited.

I feel my inner face underneath my skin turn scarlet. The parts of my brain, the personalities within, turn scarlet with shame. It is one thing to be a willing criminal. It is another to be an unwitting slave.

After another run, when I picked Ned up from school, Sharon the teacher said, “We missed you yesterday. Ned was upset, and not getting along with the other girls and boys.” I didn't know that I had missed a day. Ned ran up to me and pounded my legs, then bit me through my gray flannel slacks and socks. I started crying. *What have I done to my child*? I thought. I sat down on the floor, pulled my knees to my head, and cried. Perhaps it was the teacher's kindness that set me off, someone who seemed to care. I didn't know whether I was having a nervous breakdown, or just crying out of hopelessness. As children, my sister and I would cry only when someone was kind. My back was pressed against a bookcase filled with children's books. Toys were scattered on the floor. The teacher Sharon never would have believed where I had just been. Sharon said something to Ned, and I was able to hold his hand and take him out.

When I got home, if I got home from a run, I could tell the woman who had a child my son's age. I could tell her during one of their play-dates. I

would then never hear from her again, and Ned wouldn't have the play dates. There were others I could tell, and never hear from again. So my life was surface normalcy interrupted by criminal activities that I didn't remember, and if I happened to remember enough to tell someone, I would be marked as crazy. The world colludes with crime.

Courier training

Being a mule wasn't punishment for disobedience. My training started young, in the bathtub. My father, with his hand on my left shoulder, said: “Let me see you be the little girl who spreads her legs.”

“Let me see you be the girl who lifts her behind. Let me see you be the girl who has packages put in her poupee and behind.”

While my father bathed me, first he pulled out different parts by talking, then giving hand signals. We rehearsed this every Saturday night. This was not part of the sexual training. It was the training to be a mule, what they called a courier.

I would come out of the bathroom after having been run through my exercises, and my mother and sister would be busy with something in the next room. Neither one of them would notice me. My sister would go back to our bedroom without looking into my eyes, or even at me. My mother would be like an invisible person for the rest of the night. My father looked flushed with accomplishment.

“Now we're going to create an idiot girl who people won't think is very bright. You don't have a mind, you're just a body. You can't think, you just follow directions. Whatever anyone tells you, you do, no arguments, no kicking.” Mrs. Twartski and Wiezenslowski spoke to me in the room behind the laundry room in Pleasant Hills. I wore a helmet, and sat in the black programming chair with electrodes over my naked body. They spoke to my part named Mary Jane, who was created when I was five. Mary Jane wore Mary Jane shoes, and white anklet socks.

“If we say go here, there, you don't fight or complain. Whenever we press on your nose, you're a windup toy. When we press your nose down, your job is over.”

When I was seven and three-quarters, drugged on the black chair with electrodes over my naked body, they called Mary Jane out by pressing on our nose. I had to walk little steps with a bottle in my vagina.

“Walk over there, turn around, sit down, Mary Jane.” They spread the cheeks of my backside and fit a package in it.

“Do you like the way that feels?”

“No,” I answered. They shoved it further in.

“Do you like the way that feels? This will be your life from now on. This is what happens to all little girls in the world, every girl you see in California, Mexico, Paris, Italy, Spain—every little girl everywhere—it's happened to them. Don't tell anyone.”

It is 2013 and I drive to the airport and experience an eruption inside of fear. I ask who feels such terror, and find the mules. They are afraid of airports. Later they will have to go through customs. We who have not been mules rush to them. We travel because we want to. We have no drugs or political papers on us. The mules agonize. The rest of us console. We will care for you, protect you.

The little boy

Ever since I started remembering decades ago, I had an impression of my entering a doorless department store with a wind wall at its front. I saw myself in my twenties, my hair in a French roll. I wore a leather skirt, like a rich American. I thought I was in Paris. The store resembled Bloomingdale's. As the years went on, the memory filled out. I had the impossible impression I had gone into the store to find a child. I was on the main floor, where they sold perfume. A little booth was to the side of the counters and a man in a robe, similar to the Brothers at the monastery, handed me a seven-year-old white boy with freckles, greenish eyes, and red hair. The man's hands were darker than mine. The signs in the store used a different alphabet; it looked like figures dancing. When I told her about this, Alison pulled up examples of South Asian languages on the computer. I recognized one of them, Urdu. I took the boy's hand and walked him out to the waiting limousine. Men sat in the front seat. The man on the passenger side held a gun in the opening between the seats. He pointed the gun at the little boy. We drove through narrow, winding streets. The little boy, who seemed experienced, and I both knew what the gun meant: one wrong move and the men would shoot this little boy. That meant if I bolted from the car, they would shoot him. The little boy knew not to talk or cry. He sat rigidly and stared ahead. He had pants and a short-sleeved shirt on. We were both

robots in this hot country. His hand was on the seat. I reached for his hand again. He had short chubby fingers. I felt his heart and his breath through his fingers—beats of sadness, more sadness than fear. He might have been drugged. I let my hand tell him that I was with him, that I could not save him but that I could feel him. This boy whom I didn't know will be part of me always. This boy who was probably stolen and would eventually be killed. I sent as much of myself to this child as I could. The men in front did not feel us, but the gun kept pointing.

"Get rid of her now," a man said. They pulled over. "Get out of the car," the driver said in a heavy accent. I held onto the child. In my mind, we would both get out of the car. "Leave him." The other man cocked the gun as if to shoot the boy. I left the car. The boy was not with me but the boy was with me. The road went down sharply. Little huts were everywhere. Someone came up to me and said, "Come with me" in an accent. The car was gone. We went down a path to a hut. A woman inside the hut gave me comfortable clothes and a purse. Another car drove me on the highway to the airport.

What if they were bluffing? What if I hadn't left the car? Maybe the boy would not have been killed.

Earlier, my grandfather and father refueled a pre-existing program. We sat at the dining room table in my parents' New York City apartment. I was home from college, perhaps summer break. My grandfather, wearing his Wiezenslowski mask, put down a Jack of Clubs, Jack of Hearts, and Ace of Clubs, cues that called out my mule parts. "We have an assignment for you and you have your choice. You're going to Pakistan. You could either take a child, or transport a child, or kill a child. You'd better transport the child because you're not a good killer. Since you're a wimp and a sissy, that will be your next assignment."

Thinking of this little boy cuts through my extensive programming not to cry. Remorse fills the tears. *What would have happened if I didn't take the boy out of the store or leave him*?

The red-haired boy may have been one of the children bred to be used for these purposes. Then his parents would have received money or some privilege, and a slashed conscience. Or his mother might have been a brothel girl like me, who grieved his loss and yearned for him all her life. The world will never know whose little boy it was and what happened to him. Children are being used as he was right now.

TWELVE

Beginning to come alive

Creativity regained

These groups are expert at assessing infants' potential. Always on the lookout, they had spotted my creativity fast. In early childhood, my drawings, interest in color, expressive movement, and struggle to find new words and the right word tipped them off. In my ritual abuse cult, you are not allowed to do anything that lets you come close to your core self. That self, they believe, belongs to them. So my handler and her assistants used drugs, torture, threats, and extensive electroshock to command me never to be creative again. But during a programming session, my father added, “Leave all the creating to your mother and sister.” The program not to create stayed put in my splintered brain until around 1978, when my mother began her last phase of dying. In my literal child's mind that held this programming, I thought if my mother wasn't going to create, then that program was defunct. I couldn't leave the creativity to my mother and sister if my mother was dead.

I began creating in my mid-thirties. I saw dances in my head, put them on paper, and then transcribed them to space. I would notate the dances on graph paper with squiggly lines that reminded me of a movement, a color for an emotion, and words that described the movements, stage direction, interactions, and place in the score. Film, costumes, setting, and music were woven into the conception. That first year after this program broke, I choreographed seven or eight long dances and wrote over one hundred poems. I started a dance company to perform the choreography.

I had zero awareness of my true life then. I hadn't even remembered the incest. My dances were about life in general, not that I really understood what life was supposed to be. I was no longer a dead robot. The air was sweet, the sunbursts golden, the blue curtain of sky clear harmony. My cracked, tangled heart spread and opened and breathed. I felt solid.

But while I joined this artists' world, forces were against me, conspiring my recapture. And parts of my mind were against myself, as was preplanned. After all, I was a manufactured robot. Some inside parts smelled something fishy. These parts existed in my internal ghetto city and had the job of reporting to my handlers what was going on in my life. They had learned through heightened torture to obey and not question and above all not think. It takes a world of electricity to stop the brain from thinking. They told the abusers what I had done.

Reporting and recall

One internal reporter telephoned my father in New York. She told my father that I was about to mount a performance in the theater-loft I had just opened for my new dance company. I don't think my handlers ever found out why this program had broken, but they were swift to act on its demise. This father who could not care less about dance or art or me was on the next plane to the Midwest.

My inside reporters patted themselves on the back. *We have done well*, they thought. My front people who knew nothing of the reporting on myself were impressed that my father was travelling to see my work. *He really cares*, they thought. My more aware insiders screeched “Traitor, betrayer.” The creators screamed, “All our hard work for nothing, to be ruined, you fool.”

I refuse to be angry at myself, even though it eviscerated these years of my life. Those parts were tortured beings just doing what they had been tortured into believing they had to do. But here comes despair from other parts, ones with a wider view of my interior. Yes, I did this to myself. I got some creativity back, but at what cost?

Overnight, I became dead again. Electricity and rape punctuate programming. My performance's opening was that night, and I could hardly rise from my bed. My father sat in my apartment, expecting me to serve him food. He was like a black pit sucking out air and cleanliness. He was a dark hole of perversion. After the portable electroshock and the rape, he delivered the command: “When your sister telephones you, you must return to live in New York and leave the Midwest.” After the opening night performance, I had to drive him to the airport. A friend in the audience said later, “You were so filled with life and energy. What happened?”

Seasons later, his telephone call came. He put my sister on. She delivered her command: “You don't want to be a bad mother, and they'll kill Ned if you don't come.” My father returned to the phone to make sure I would be obedient. “We will kill him.” I returned to New York as ordered. Ned didn't want to leave me and live with his father, I didn't want him to leave. I clung to him, but I had to push him away to save his life, or so I thought then. My son would stay with his father. He never came back to me.

My conscious mind knew that I had been living in the Midwest, but my father had wanted me to return to New York. I couldn't consciously remember that his reason was to keep an eye on me, or that after Mother died, he had called me back, though I knew she had died. I knew I had begun creating, but didn't know it was not allowed, or that they had had to tighten the reins, get me to behave, tweak the programming. I thought I was back in New York because my father had had a heart attack. It did not help that my father and my new assigned handler, my boyfriend Eli, kept torturing me to get me to obey and stop creating. I was breaking the rules and following the rules. I was creating, which was breaking the rules, and reporting on myself, which followed the rules, but I couldn't hold it all together in my head.

Once a program breaks, it's difficult to put it back in. My front people were on one track, and my insiders couldn't stop them. Had my front people known how much the internal ones and my body suffered, I think that they would have ceased their work. But they were oblivious to the other side of my life. Even though the subject matter of my creations was still vague and abstract, the family attacks on me were vicious.

I arrived in New York in 1980 and immediately began looking at what others were performing and began auditioning. Being in New York had its benefits. A new form of art called “performance art” was buzzing. It suited what I was doing because it didn't require balletic technical skill, used multimedia, and was expressive and socially aware. The choreography I had been doing easily transformed into performance art.

First memories

One afternoon when I was walking to the Star Health Club to go for a swim, I vomited into a corner, outdoor, city trashcan onto empty cans of Tab and Coke. In my head I saw babies, one being thrown, another being

stabbed. *What was the matter with my mind? Why was I seeing violent, vicious scenes?* More memories began to erupt. There would be no going back.

I took a class from Elaine Summers in what she named “kinetic awareness”, a body technique that helps defrost frozen tension. People would lie down on rubber balls from a toy-shop and suddenly have breakthrough memories. People who had spent their adult lives in therapy would do one session of kinetic awareness and recover a lost part of themselves. I was one of the dancers who lay on blankets in Elaine's huge loft, moved our bodies internally from our joints, then placed six-inch rubber balls under our necks. Instantly an image of my mother peeing on me appeared. Shocked tears drenched me. That was my first memory that came straight from my body, not a typical incest memory, and it hinted at something even more ominous. Memories that come from the body are compelling and easier to believe. From there, incest memories charged out like bulbs in early spring.

I was closer to my real self than I had ever been, except for the year I had spent with Daniel, when I experienced love.

Twelve-step meetings for sexual abuse

We rushed straight from our jobs without eating to the six p.m. meeting. We sat in a large oval on collapsible chairs, our feet rubbing the spilled-on basement linoleum floor of a midtown church. To open the meeting, one by one, we iconoclasts went around the room and in shame and victory confessed who our perpetrators were. Some people had always remembered the incest although they hadn't spoken about it before. More were like me, remembering only that very week or day yet another betrayal and trauma, and in the throes of absolute early shock. The group whispered fathers, stepfathers, sometimes mothers, often neighbors, siblings, teachers, religious leaders. I had always remembered my paternal grandfather's sexual abuse. Each week, I added to my personal list. Mother came first, the other grandfather, uncles, grandmother, and sister. Finally, I got to my father, who I thought had loved me, and who had protected me from my mother's rages. My outer world smashed, and each piece had a bold black line around it.

One week, I added Bambi, our miniature Doberman, and the group of comrades and strangers gasped. Shivers went through the group meeting. Eli let out a horrific scream. When I heard the scream, I thought *How nice that he cares so much about what happened to me.* I later realized that he was warning other cult victims not to dare follow in my memory path. I couldn't name it yet but my consciousness had entered the realm of ritual abuse: the extended family incest, bestiality, and people close to me masquerading as helpers but really blocking my path. I had a vague impression of shadowy meetings outdoors with robed figures. I had no notion yet of the mind control, but I knew I was following a stormy current in a shifting raft through dangerous waters into a disallowed unknown.

Some of us in the Manhattan 12-step support group for sexual abuse earnestly worked on excavating our treacheries. My front person scratched and dug into my brain with all my energies, gathering all my strength to endure the horrendous scenes unfurling from my mind. I would see them as if watching a movie, then record them as accurately as possible in my journals. In the morning or waking up from a nightmare, I would plow through emergent memories. In the afternoon, I would encourage the children in me to draw what they wanted to tell. I always had art supplies on hand. The children could sit on the floor and draw what they didn't have words to say.

But at night, cult-loyal perpetrators would abduct me and warn me not to believe what came out of me. The double agents in the 12-step meetings used their internal memorizers to report what survivors said. They shared experiences that reflected what was already known, pretending to disclose their deepest truths. Consciously, I didn't recognize my slimy, handsome boyfriend Eli as the main plant in this territory, but my inside parts must have known. Why didn't they warn me? Maybe they thought something worse would happen if the outside me knew. But also the nature of dissociation is for parts of the mind to endure distinct lives and not communicate with one another. A huge disconnect existed between the outside me who lived my life and the inside people in me who knew about the cult abuse and mind control and didn't tell.

Trying to help survivors

I entered the training program for kinetic awareness. Survivors came to me for sessions, and I tried to help them. At the same time, I thought I needed clinical skills to manage people's huge reactions to knowledge about themselves. Like so much of my life, I thought it was my decision to get further training. I didn't know I was programmed to go to school and become a therapist instead of an artist.

I studied and received a master's degree from Hunter College School of Social Work in 1993. Soon I had a full-time clinical practice, and many of my clients were mind control and ritual abuse survivors. Some found me honestly, but many were sent. Wherever there are mind-controlled clients, there will be plants and trespassers. They reported knowing one another from rituals. They would get some clarity in their session, but that night or week, they would be reprogrammed. Professionals didn't know how to treat them at that time.

I wrote about my experiences with my clients and my own attempts at healing myself in a clinical book. Despite the threats, I continued writing this book to expose the abusers' practices. However, a few chapters of the otherwise helpful book took an oversimplified Christian approach that I had been programmed to include. A Christian publisher gave me a contract, but when the False Memory Syndrome Foundation took hold of this field, saying that all these memories were implanted in clients and suing earnest therapists, this publisher withdrew its contract.

I also curated art exhibits on ritual abuse, which launched me onto a more serious hit list, especially after publicity. I started a lawsuit for sexual abuse against my father and an uncle, which was eventually thrown out of court because of the statute of limitations. Some of my internal parts remained fearful, others intractable. I didn't care if I was hurt. I just didn't want others to be. I gave lectures to New York City professionals and survivors on incest and what we then called satanic ritual abuse.

I depicted my incest memories in a mixed media performance piece called “INCEST: Remember & Tell,” urging the survivor audience to cut through dissociation, find their true selves, and speak out. This performance was well received, well attended, and reviewed even by major papers like *The New York Times.* Arlene Raven chose it for her “critic's choice” for *Village Voice.* The performance was funded and toured. We had sold-out audiences. After each performance, there was an open audience discussion. Women poured their stories out. Some had never told anyone before. Some

of their utterances weren't completed because survivors broke out in staccato sobs. They cried “My father…” “My brother…” “My uncles…“ “My mother…” People were just beginning to speak about their mothers raping them. The play started with a scene of an actress-dancer raping a naked doll. A shudder went through the audience. The audience members were very supportive to one another. Sometimes they sat in silence when the pitch of emotion reached the theater-loft's rafters. The evenings felt holy. Men were present, but I can't remember any talking about their own abuse. A woman who directed a nursing home was in the audience and said, “Now I understand why children are so mean to their elderly parents.”

Multiple personalities

I had discovered all these memories, and had focused on helping survivors, but I didn't yet know the most important part, that I was multiple.

Some moments in a life are indelible and do not wash away no matter how many years have passed. These moments derailed the stream of my life and put me on a different path. I was in my bed, about to go to sleep or wake up, when a curtain ripped open within me. Many people inside came to the surface—I think now it was my Council, the leaders of my internal world—and told me they existed.

“No, I am not multiple,” the surface me or me's screamed back. “Others are multiple, not me. Multiplicity is a hoax,” I flailed, contradicting myself. The force of my recoil from my own being alone could have right there shredded me into fragments. I realized that I wasn't one piece but had parts to my brain that alternated and rotated and carried either shameful acts, or scenes of atrocities, or programs not to remember. I did not want to bite into the apple, but I did want to bite. My integrity and also curiosity and desire for truth urged me on, despite my recoil. The shame overwhelmed.

It took me time to yearn to be with every single part of my assaulted mind. I had continued interference not only from the inside but also from outside me. Slowly, breath by breath, thought by thought, eyelash by eyelash blink, I accepted my selves. I didn't know them yet. That would take years. But I came to know that my mind was a tangled web of despair and the condition serious.

While I was lying on my good Stearns & Foster mattress and propped up by delicious down pillows in my apartment on 108th Street and Amsterdam

Avenue, either in the middle of the night or early morning, hundreds of scenes squeezed out of my constipated mind. Each scene was held by different parts of my brain, different personalities. I had to face that multitudes lived under my surface reality and I had to meet everyone. That moment was the worst and the best moment of my long life. Despite my initial revulsion, I learned that the parts I avoided are the real me, and the strongest.

Even as I had these pivotal memories that led me to the heart of ritual abuse and eventually mind control, I didn't know that each program or command to do a task was held by a different part of my brain. Nor did I realize that these parts were not random and free floating but were arranged in strict hierarchical, chronological order. Although I, like all humans and animals, was born with a natural brain, programmers hijacked it and rendered parts of it servants of evil purpose.

THIRTEEN

Trapped in therapy

The first plant—a psychologist

Elaine Summers' advanced student, Annette, referred me to a New York City psychologist to help process my budding memories. Sheila Lesser, Ph.D. had long blond hair, a child's bookworm face, and legs that seemed to go in opposite directions. Her specialty seemed to be giving practical advice, which no one needs in therapy. I imagine she did this in order to distract me from the search for traumatic memories. Although Sheila seemed to view me as a specimen, she appeared interested in my theater work and encouraging. My front person did not know that she, Eli, and a major traveling mind controller trained some of my inside parts in her office.

“Roll up your sleeve,” the international programmer said and gave me an injection. “Follow my fingers. You will remember nothing more of incest.” An electroshock.

“You will forget the memories you have,” Sheila Lesser said. “You will tell no one of these memories; you will stop your performances about incest….”

“Upon penalty of death,” Eli continued in his heavy Israeli accent while twisting my left arm backwards to almost breaking. Twice a week, I went to this therapy and about once a week, I had these anti-therapy sessions. While I was quasi-satisfied with therapy on the outside, the colonies of my insiders raged.

A warning

An inconspicuous car pulled up as I walked down McDougal Street in Greenwich Village. Eli and another man pulled me in. The man held my arm behind my back and one hand over my mouth, while my boyfriend slit my nose with a razor and said, “Stop before we kill you.” They dropped me off in front of a hospital downtown, giving me papers that identified me as Madeline Smith. The Emergency Room doctors sewed my nose, asked

Madeline no questions, and discharged her. The outside me didn't notice the scar on the strip between my nostrils, or the pain. The inside me's fumed.

The cult handlers pulled me away from Sheila Lesser because she had not managed to quell my memory process and productivity. For a while I remained without professional help, which in my case meant cult help. Even though I was better off, I felt adrift. When swimming in a sea of sharks, one needs the illusion of a raft if not a lifeboat.

A bright survivor, Denise, who frequented the 12-step support meetings for survivors of sexual abuse, where Eli recruited people, called and told me of a pastoral counselor who helped survivors by doing short-term walk-throughs or visualizations of hidden memories. I felt intrigued but cautious. That night, a call woke me up and a male voice called out my scheduler. “I want to talk to the person who schedules Wendy's undercurrent life,” the voice said. *It sounds like Eli*, I thought. Then that part of my mind receded and another part received that information. The voice gave this pastoral counselor's phone number, which I didn't have to write down, and instructions to call her. She had an out of state area code.

The second plant—a Christian pastoral counselor

This pastoral counselor, Catherine Carter, gave in-home seminars to educate survivors, and she happened to be giving one the following week. Denise and I took the train to her town. Catherine's neighbor, a popular pastor of a large local Presbyterian church, picked us up at the station. They lived in suburban split-level homes. The pastor, Cliff, in his late thirties, had red hair, was pleasant and accommodating, in good physical shape, and over-energized. Catherine was about ten years older and overweight, used a walker to get around, and often had life-threatening asthma attacks. During her seminar, I was in a hyperactive mood, asking too many questions and responding too noticeably. My front person was not in control.

Afterward, we went from Catherine's den to the pastor's living room in his identical home across the street. Cliff, his wife Liz and her mother, Catherine and her live-in mother, Mrs. Landon, gathered around Denise and me. Mrs. Landon grabbed my wrist, put a razor blade on my wrist's veins, and said “You do what I say or else.” Mrs. Landon was a short, stocky woman with dried-up skin holding together a body that appeared empty. She had cunning and alertness but resembled stale, crumbling leaves in late

fall. A lifetime of worshipping evil depletes the body of blood and life. The tip of the razor penetrated my skin. She called out the slaves my grandmother had created when she slit my scalp with her razor blade. All adult programming is grafted onto one of the personalities or a group of them that was created in childhood. Mrs. Landon got out a vacuum cleaner. “We're going to burn you at the next ritual and vacuum up your ashes unless you obey us.” Liz's bent-over mother carried the electroshock kit to the pastor, and Mrs. Landon gooed us up and injected Denise and me. Drugs carry one away from terror into a blurry compliance that can be felt as a relief.

Cliff asked Denise, “What do you want to be?” She answered, “An investment banker.” “You are not permitted,” he told her. “Wendy, what do you want to be?” I answered, “Just what I'm doing now.” “You may not do your book, choreograph, paint, or write, and you have to withdraw your lawsuit. You can be a therapist or a secretary. Denise, you can't even work.” He looked at me and said, “She's sleeping over.” Looking at Denise, he said, “She's going back to Manhattan.” Denise looked worried, more for me than for her. To me, he said, “We're going to work you over,” and about Denise he said, “Get rid of her.”

Liz drove Denise back to the train station, while Mrs. Landon continued working on the obedient child slave parts of me she had called out, using electroshock and other torture. These parts were supposed to live eternally in cages in the closet in my grandfather's second bedroom, even though he was long dead. Now she wanted them to live in cages in the closet in her guest room. “Your job is not to remember,” Mrs. Landon said to them. “If you remember, we'll make you into ashes and you will go into the vacuum, your leftovers into the garbage disposal.” She injected me over and over, and the drugs made me foggy, and nauseated. Afterward, she showed me boxes of Goobers chocolate-covered raisins and peanuts, and told me that eating them would make me not remember anything. During recent therapy where I retrieved these mind-controlled-away memories, Alison said to these child parts, “It was the drugs that made you forget.” Mrs. Landon placed an upright vacuum cleaner right by the head of my bed in the guest room, as a reminder or cue.

My front person thought *They must really like me, inviting me to stay over, and such knowledgeable folks too. They must be good people, because they are Christian.* My internal people blindly followed orders and had a

deep sinking feeling. In the corners of my mind, I see hand signals going wild. Trapped again, others in me thought, and terror seized me. Before I left the next day, Mrs. Landon opened the sliding closet door, and I saw cages on the bottom. “This is where you will live for eternity,” she said to my child slave parts. She put a lock on the closet. My child parts shook with fear, and my internal adults didn't know how to reach them.

Catherine took me into her grip with weekly counseling sessions during the day and mind-control programming and rituals at night. Before each ritual, Cliff administered electroshock and drugs. The outdoor night-time rituals took place in a deserted field. The participants, naked under their black robes, danced wildly around a blazing bonfire. Cliff had a penchant for immodest exuberance when he was not playing the role of the restrained Presbyterian pastor. During the flamboyant ritual, he said, “Is anybody here not Christian? Anybody who is not Christian is going to be thrown in the flames.” He turned to me and called out Queen Philomena. “Are you going to be Christian or will you be thrown in the fire?” “Yes, I'll become Christian.” Queen Philomena had to protect her people within. Afterward, they dumped me at the train station. In the middle of the trip home, when I had to change trains, I made my way to the candy bar station in the middle of the two train tracks and as directed bought Goobers chocolate-covered nuts. They allowed me to choose between nuts and raisins.

I thought becoming a Christian meant going to church. For a while, I attended this pastor's church, but they said they wanted me to have a church closer to home. After the command and assault, I walked around the city wondering which Manhattan church I was supposed to attend. My inside parts were confused. I was being sucked into evil, and no one on the other side helped me pull against the current.

After a ritual with torture, Cliff said “We have found a home church for you.” Interspersed with electroshock, they gave me the address of the Acres of Grapevine Church in Manhattan and instructions to go there on Sunday “because you need Jesus for protection”.

It is the end of 2013. For days I have coaxed out this 1990 memory, clearing a path through my brain, reassuring the children who hold this memory in the cages of the locked closet that they are safe enough now to tell. The memory unfurls. The terrorized children huddled in the closet in Mrs. Landon and Catherine's guest bedroom. Small, terrorized children who trust no one shoot me images as if in a film, then talk.

In a private ritual in the pastor's living room, Cliff called out Queen Philomena. He required that she put on her cape and crown, and hold her scepter. In real life, I was practicing kinetic awareness with incest survivors at that time. Referring to my clients, he said, “You will lead your people into church and Jesus' blood. You will tell them that Christianity is the way to heal, tell them to go to church, but one of our churches. Then we will send them to our line of Christian therapists trained and ready to close them down. You will go to the Acres of Grapevine Church and lead your clients there. This is the work we have cut out for you,” he said.

Queen Philomena in me didn't want to lead people to Christ, or what these abusers considered to be their Christ. She threw down her scepter, flung off her crown and cape, and had a queenly temper tantrum with spitting and stomping.

“Then every one of your clients, past and present, will be sacrificed. We will start by chopping off their left ankle and proceed to skinning them alive. If you prefer that to happen, then disobey us.” If you have ever seen someone's ankle chopped off while they lie on an altar or the start of a skin-alive, you believe these threats. “You decide. You lead people to the churches we tell you, or you indirectly kill your clients. It's up to Queen Philomena. They are her subjects,” the pastor roared.

“You will persuade your clients that they are demonized. You will tell them the only way to be free of demons is to have deliverances in one of our churches. We will stop this movement of knowing and remembering. You will be instrumental,” Cliff said. For security reasons, they would not have killed my clients, but my drugged, terrorized parts didn't know that then.

That Sunday I took the bus to the Acres of Grapevine Church. The second I entered, a beautiful and wholesome-looking woman greeted me. Grace stuck to my side and became a friend and companion to me. Only now do I realize she was a handler.

My programmed inner parts became a member of this church and also attended the small neighborhood home groups. Going to this church had some positive effects. The music inspired and took me out of the earthly realm, a feeling of being in a family comforted me, the Bible teachings taught how to live and values, and at times I could feel what I believed to be the Holy Spirit. At this church and others like it, anything that popped into your head could be the voice of God. I took communion each week, but had

convulsions right afterward. There were so many sick and injured people who attended that I didn't attract too much attention. I had experienced belonging and community in my cult life but not in real life before. My outer mind didn't hold any awareness that this was cult life again.

I am Jewish and had never considered becoming Christian until I was ordered to. Two of my cult survivor Jewish clients followed me to this church. This was before the rules against dual roles for therapists, and in any case mind-control programming supersedes generalized codes of ethics in strength.

I continued trying to do authentic therapy with my mind-control clients, kept creating, and also writing a clinical book.

Punishment

One winter night in 1990, I left my computer running, grabbed my giant study Bible, and hurried to the bus stop so as not to be late to my prayer group. The bus driver did not lower the bus steps, and as I descended, I stepped in one of the many cracks in the sidewalk and smashed my ankle. My front person thought I had the worst luck. I didn't think there was anything more to it. But there was.

Two mornings before, in the early hours, Eli, Grace, and my ex-therapist entered my apartment with a key. I sat up in bed as they streamed into my bedroom. Sheila brought in a chair from the main room. They tied me to it, while Eli pressed his gun to my head. On the outside, I showed only stunned silence. Inside, where no one could hear, were sobbing screams. Sheila did hand signals in front of my face.

SHEILA: “Wendy dear, you have misbehaved again and evoked a great deal of anger, wrath, from very high-up people who think you are not as controllable as we would like.”

GRACE: “It's Monday night now. On Wednesday night, you will go to home group. You will not walk there. You will take the bus.”

SHEILA: “You will exit the back door, look up, and see a man giving you directions. You must follow them.”

They recited lines as if they were in a high school play, I thought. Eli pressed the gun in further. Two other men entered, whom I recognized as

Stan, the pastor of the Manhattan church, and the higher-up pastor, Ralph, from the other location who had sent me the client. *Of course.*

I thought I smelled alcohol on Ralph's breath. “I want all these art supplies cleared out.”

ELI, WITH THE GUN: “I'll take them away. I can use them.”

RALPH: “Bitch, no more painting, writing, dancing. You are through as an artist. We're about to send you away for good.”

Stan shoved a gun into my back, right behind my heart, which seemed to have stopped. With one gun pressed in, I felt as if I were hanging on a mountain. At the moment, Eli seemed aware of himself, but at any second he could fly into his demonic-style rage. Ralph spit foam. With two guns pressed in, I was floating with clouds, not sure I would land anywhere. My body was far out the window in polluted air and fragmented with hundreds of pieces going in disparate directions. Ralph grabbed Stan's gun, as if to say his violence wasn't enough, and moved it from my back to my crotch. I heard a click. “No more expressing yourself. Don't forget to take the bus Wednesday night.”

Over a decade after this “accident” occurred, it pushed its way out of my closed-down mind. I had told Alison about the bus accident during one of our therapy intensives, about what bad luck I had with all these accidents, but she thought I might have had some signal to fall, since I'd already told her I had inside parts who were trained to fall. My mind was a blank. But months later, as I walked to the post office during a lunch break at work, I envisioned a man in a suit with brown hair and a pleasant face. I didn't know him. He made circles with his hands and arms, which were bent at the elbows. He directed the hand signals to my internal parts in a deliberate way, staring into my insides. I looked more closely. He looked like a businessman who had just finished work for the day, and stood outside the back bus door among the other passengers waiting for the bus, but slightly to the side. I had a clear view of his body and hands.

The bus driver hadn't lowered the high bus steps. I carried my heavy study Bible. A girl in me began stepping down the rear exit, when someone else inside me looked up and saw this man's hands. A boy inside me behind

her pushed another inside person, and the girl fell down the bus steps onto a highly cracked sidewalk. The toe of my shoe caught in one of the cracks, and I spun and fell. I lay screaming on this spider web of cracks and splits in the sidewalk. My ankle broke in three places and had a double closed dislocation. Even shots of morphine in the Emergency Room didn't take away the pain.

About ten waiting passengers observed the fall at the bus stop. The bus driver quickly lowered the bus steps, then called for an ambulance. A would-be witness slipped me a piece of paper with his name and number printed neatly on it. He told me he would witness that the bus driver hadn't lowered the steps. The front person who received the paper didn't know that this witness was the same person who had given me the hand signals.

One of the home group's members visited me at St. Luke's Hospital, and confessed in private to my front person, the queen in me, and anyone else who was listening, “All together the support and prayer group threw curses at you. We were disappointed and thought we hadn't coordinated the attack well enough. We had to keep trying.” She delivered the message that they had been trying to kill me, but they had probably just been scaring and warning me. If they had wanted me dead, it would not have been difficult to accomplish.

“But I am so injured and in a cast up to my hip for months,” I said to her.

“But we didn't kill you, so we failed.”

They wanted me to believe it was their curses that magically broke my foot, rather than my inside people obeying hand signals they had been taught in childhood.

In real life, despite my injuries, I continued doing the kind of therapy work I wanted to do. My clients, who must have been programmed to be in therapy with me, still made progress and became increasingly aware of who they were. Even though becoming a therapist wasn't my idea, I found the work rewarding and enjoyed helping people in despair. Perhaps we were all getting too close to the truth.

I had just about recovered from the bus accident in 1990, when another occurred in 1992. A giant man crashed into my head as I was swimming at the Star Health Club. When questioned, he blubbered, “I did not see her” and continued swimming. He dislocated my vertebrae and gave me a concussion. I lived, but it was another two decades before I understood what had happened. In therapy in 2013, I hear the words: “You will go to

the Star Health Club. You will swim the crawl forward, then back. A large man will crash into your head.” My memory followed these words and discovered the voice of a therapist I believed was a friend. She also used hand signals. I didn't know she was a cult member and handler. I don't think the swimming pool crash was a homicidal attempt. It was another warning and branding of ownership.

Later, I was drugged and kidnapped from my Manhattan apartment and taken to the main branch of this same Christian church. A mob of people I knew, plus one international programmer, mauled me.

“You will be one of our line of therapists. When people have memories, you will erase them. You will tell people that demons are causing their memories. You will be part of our Christian army of therapists who will close down this chaotic movement to know what's real. You will become the enemy of anyone who tries to lift our veil and expose truth.” They wanted me to have credentials. “You'll go to Hunter so we can keep tabs on you. You'll be a B student there, not an A student. Then you'll be one of our gals.” They meant Hunter College School of Social Work. At least they sent me to a good school.

Slowly I began to remember these church leaders at satanic rituals. The leaders of the main branch of this unconventional church sent me a member of their congregation, who had just started to remember ritual abuse. I believed that this church was offering me a practice treating its congregation. The new rememberer sat on the sofa tense and ashamed, her arms and legs tightly crossed, not able to make eye contact. I told this young woman to reject this church and go to a safe, clean one, because this church was part of what she was trying to get away from. She left aghast and that was the last I saw of her. As soon as I remembered the pastors and congregants at rituals, I told my clients, and they and I left the church. The walls of my life recollapsed.

Ritual abuse experts

Still trying to get free and thinking I was acting on my own initiative, I got a coveted appointment with a pioneer therapist in the deep south, Sandy Flowers. Hardly anyone could get an appointment with her. As I explained myself, she stopped taking notes, circled around me as if I were an

interesting antique piece, and said, “Do you remember being in a black chair? It looks like you've had black chair programming.”

I hadn't heard of black chair programming but my inside people sprung to attention, both those who wanted to be free and those who had the job of preventing freedom, and also those who were not up for any more torture.

“I'm not taking any new clients,” she said, smiling. She looked like a youngish but middle-aged Southern belle. She referred me to Judith Peterson or Ann Wilson. Why I chose the Christian baffled my front person. Had I learned nothing from the “pastoral counselor” and “evangelical church”? My front person did not know Ann was part of this cult or of the programming.

Decades later, the parts inside who held this memory all gathered together and told the front person the bad news that would lead to healing. I was back in Catherine Carter's guest bedroom still in the early 1990s. I was only partially conscious. Catherine said about me, “She's having good memories. She's close to a total breakthrough.”

CLIFF, THE PASTOR: “We'll take her off your hands. We'll send her to our old standby.” (Cliff pressed his thumb hard into my third eye.) “Juice her up.”

Mrs. Landon, Catherine's mother, lifted my left arm and injected it. My heavy arm fell back down. She put goo on me.

Cliff called out the little girls whom Mrs. Landon had put in cages in her closet, and ordered everyone else in me to go away. Mrs. Landon punctuated his orders with electroshock. I felt like a cut-up chicken under cellophane in a grocery store.

MRS. LANDON: “I'm putting a piece of paper with a name and phone number in your purse. Tomorrow you will call her and make an appointment. No one else inside you can know this information. She will be waiting for your call at 3:00.”

I went south to Sandy Flowers' office as directed, returned, and found myself again in Catherine's guest bedroom, flanked by my programmers and handlers. Cliff told me that I would go to Ann Wilson, and would not return. “If you remember what happens in Ann's territory, we will kill your son,” he said. He told Catherine she was rid of me. Eli added, “If you

remember and tell, we will skin him alive," as he waved the index finger of his left hand in front of my drugged body, while shoving a tarot card of the hanged man at my face. Motherhood is particularly charged for people of this lifelong abuse. The mothers in me blocked the knowledge that I had fallen into yet another trap and was being closed down.

I left New York City and moved to the rural town Ann lived in. Instead of getting to mind control programs, parts, and structure, Ann focused on Jesus, demons, intruding human spirits, and spiritual warfare. Ann performed "deliverances" as she moved her hands back and forth spiraling upward—hand signals that meant, "If you ever tell, we will kill you or worse."

In regular "therapy", parts in me came forward and spoke. They thought it was real therapy and their chance for freedom. When a part is first coming out, it feels like a wave rising, almost like levitating. Ann persuaded me that these were not parts of myself but human spirits and demons or demonized human spirits, people who had at one time lived in the real world and had now become spirits invading my body. To rid me of these supposedly supernatural beings, she verbally bound all the demons and commanded that the demons and human spirits go to the throne of Jesus for judgment. Then she symbolically put Jesus' blood on any openings that might be left in me, to seal them and prevent them from being redemonized. She made a mob of hand movements, and I felt a movement and an eruption within me, followed by exhaustion and a need to eat protein. I thought I had been delivered.

Some of these hand movements were to get rid of my front person, who fell into a coma-type sleep while still in her office. Then, without my being conscious of it, Ann called out personalities within me and directed them to caves, caverns, closets, drawers, drawers within drawers, wells, freezers, internal coffins. Some she dumped in the rivers running through my system. Crucial parts of my existence became locked away in the recesses of my mind, and I didn't know it. She closed down the courageous parts of myself that had tried to come forward and speak. She banished my internal Council. By the time she had finished with me, all the inside parts who knew their and my story had been locked away, and my outside, everyday life person thought that I had been mostly filled with evil entities. My front person thought she had sent away the evil spirits; my inside parts knew that

they had been locked away into internal representations of actual containers.

Ann convinced my front person that outside forces caused all my problems and conflicts, that I was a mere pawn in the universe. I began seeing life and the gray skies as filled with demons and demonized spirits. During the programming sessions, her Christian music played in the background, but it rendered disguised mind-control messages. She said it did spiritual warfare for her. She recited many Christian prayers using words like demons, human spirits, authority, pathways, portals, channels, protection, broken, armor, weapons, vexes, hexes, curses, vows, fallen angels, astral projection. She taught me how to handle spiritual attacks, which were really only insiders telling me the horrible truth about my life. I was to pray that the demons and curses be sent back to whoever sent them and up the chain of command threefold in Jesus' name. When I complained that that was overkill, she said, “It's what God wants.” I had to say “the Lord rebuke you” whenever I felt such “spiritual attacks”. In that way, I silenced the lucid truth seekers within. She gave me Christian books to read that held the same beliefs.

Ann's closedown of me was systematic. Drugs and torture take away the ability to think and have a will. Because she had possession of the volumes of my black book, Ann knew how to draw out and intimidate vulnerable pieces of my dissected brain. “You will never remember, tell, or write about what we do, or we will kill your only living child, of that you can be certain.” No one in me doubted it. In retrospect and without the drugs or concussions, I can see that it is doubtful they would have taken the chance of killing my son. My protective acts were most likely for nothing.

Christian therapy for the cult

During week-long intensive therapy, Ann's assistant Marge brought me drugs to sniff. Marge's husband Lenny hit me over the head with the handle of his gun. A hit over the head feels like sliding down endless winding steps on one's back. During a concussion, it's impossible to connect thoughts. Concussed thinking is like trying to knit with one knitting needle. Ann said, “This is how you close people down. As soon as someone has a memory, you know there's an alter there. Most people have been trained in hand signals. First your alternating hands pull out the alter as if pulling on a rope.

Round up all the alters, put them in a chamber (your hands go down), then use words, tell them they're in a cave, etc.—you can improvise what. Tell them they'll be there forever and put Lucifer's stamp on them so they're encapsulated, like a pill in plastic. The right fist comes down before the left. Now you will go back to New York and practice on your clients." Marge sang "O beautiful for spacious skies" and a medley of other songs. "Whenever you hear one of these songs, you will remember what your job is, why we made you into a therapist." That was lesson number one.

Lenny performed lesson number two during a different trip while I was still commuting from New York City. "Everyone has human spirits and demonized human spirits in them. Your job as a therapist is to have long conversations with these human spirits, to bind the demons, and send them to the throne of Jesus for judgment. You do rope pulling hand signals to pull them out, then flick your hand outward to send them to the throne of Jesus, and use your fists to communicate to go to the throne for judgment. With your mouth you're saying Jesus but your hands say Lucifer. Then give the hand signal that the ordinary life parts will remember nothing of these commands. Hand signals override words."

Ann continued, "Make people dependent on you, make them think the only way to get rid of these spirits is by having you do deliverances. Persuade them that they are filled with demons. You will go back to New York and practice on your clients, then move here and be part of our practice."

"Lesson four, you will hand in all information on your clients."

"Lesson five, you will tell us immediately if anyone is close to breaking free."

"Lesson six, you will go into supervision with Jennifer Winters." Jennifer Winters was one of the better-known psychologists working in this field and extremely well respected.

"Lesson seven, if Jennifer Winters tells you to send someone to a hospital, you will. She will tell you which ones."

I foolishly believed that if my clients weren't closed down, they'd be killed. The cult would not have killed them all, but I thought they would kill at least one. So I had to tell them they were filled with demons and distract them from the truth of their lives by saying they were subject to spiritual forces outside themselves. I had to tell them they were just a pawn in a battle, instead of focusing them on their thousands of inside parts. I had to

make them believe that feelings and wishes cause things to happen, and that they could do horrible things to people with their minds, rather than that programmed people respond to pre-arranged signals because of mind control. Somehow no one in me was scared enough to use the hand signals. Meanwhile cult handlers most likely tortured these same people, who wanted to be free, in rituals and programming sessions. Back in New York, as I was giving my clients misinformation, thinking I was saving their lives, these clients were triggering me with hand signals, probably thinking also that they had to do it to prevent something worse happening to me. Evil thrives on victims' goodness.

I commuted to Ann's town every few months until I received another command: “We do not put you in a position to help people get free. When we give you an order, it's not for you to do what you want with. It's for you to do what we want with. You're going to close your practice and move to where Ann lives. We will keep a closer watch on you.”

After seven years, Ann and her colleagues deemed that I was sufficiently closed down and were disgruntled that it had taken so long. She needed my space for other unwitting survivors making progress in their quests for freedom, and was anxious to discard me to make sure I could not influence any of her new victims.

Right before I was sent away from her rural town, Ann drugged me and Lenny put a head vise around my now fifty-seven-year-old head, squeezed it more and more tightly until someone agreed to be a seven-year-old girl who was in charge of a whole schoolroom of internal children.

“All the children have to be told there's no point in seeing other therapists because they are all Ann. If you need a therapist, you have to go back to Ann. You must never tell anyone about Ann.” They were sure they had sealed me off for good.

They went through my black book, step by step, identifying the important personalities and enclosing them in storage containers. They repeated all the original tortures which these internal people had experienced, to emphasize that they must remain locked away and never disclose their secrets. They read that my grandfather had put me in freezers and when he separated out the black slaves in me, he had tortured me in a human-sized freezer. Ann then bought such a freezer and put it in a room adjacent to her therapy room. She called out these slaves in me, put my body in there, and told

them they were stored permanently in her freezer. They are now in my internal safe house.

She told me what to say if anyone wanted to know why I had stopped therapy. “You are bored with therapy, bored. Ann, me, doesn't want you to, but you are so bored that you have to stop.”

If you are a survivor who has been closed down, go back to the closedown memories. They will tell you who has been frozen off and silenced. Then rescue those parts of yourself from storage. The mind and heart want to be whole. Your yearning for your full self will help you find what they took away. Their closedown is a road map to what is missing in you, a shortcut to self-awareness and rebuilding the self. It also will validate your memories.

Hiding a piece

The head programmers must have taught the underlings that traumatic memories resolve only when victims bring all pieces to consciousness. The closedown specialists planned to take pieces of crucial memories out and block them, so that I would never be able to complete and therefore resolve certain dissociated sequences. Ann would call out a part of me that played a role in that memory, torture and shock that part, and move it into storage in what she called a “morgue”. There the parts remained in cold storage, separated from the other parts of me who had participated in the experience. In my last session at her counseling center, Ann asked for someone who could withstand the ongoing spinning and burning to come forward. The threat of more torture hung in the air.

A heroic four-year-old came forward. “This is your assignment—when there's a painful event in your secret or outward life, you split off a small part of the memory and put it in this box. It doesn't have to be the worst part of the memory, but it has to be a part of it. Now you will leave here and will never come back for therapy but will report back to me every six months, sooner if you do anything not allowed. Go in peace, forgetting everything. Move to Baltimore, and we don't care what you do or become. Just remember nothing.”

During this castration of the self, the universe delivered a moment of joy.

The day I became a horse

Couples and families with invigorated children sprawled on the hot mustard sand. Radios and six-packs of coke and beer held down the corners of their striped, frayed-edge blankets. I was alone and needed a place where I wouldn't be crowded. I scanned my possibilities. I stepped onto the orange sand, and carried my beach chair to the water's edge. Drip castles dotted the dark wet sand. I felt disappointed not to see the wild ponies at Assateague Beach. I needed to feel close to something untamed. Perhaps they were sunning further down the shore.

The beach smelled pregnant, the color of inner grass. A few yards from the low tide, I dropped my chair, pulled off my beach robe, and put on my large straw sun hat decorated with clusters of artificial fruits on top—a banana, green grapes, and plump peaches. The breeze sculpted my mouth into a smile. I spooned my feet into the sand. My toes popped out like spring buds. My spine sank into the back of my low beach chair. My breath skimmed the green gray ocean. I exhaled into the rhythm of the vibrating waves. My pores opened and yearned for the thinnest air.

I smelled horse. Pungent, stinging. A wild pony lay down on my right side. Brown and white, slim and muscular with an eager look, it lay parallel to me, like a puppy. I was tempted to stroke its spine but it was wild. And it had fleas and flies. A fatter gray horse slid from behind and lay down on my left. I was snug tight in the middle. Two pets. A cozy living room in the center of the beach. A third, tan and delicate, approached gracefully and lowered on its balletic legs behind my chair. The brown and white one lifted its head, then rested its chin on the sand. The gray horse swished its tail. I absorbed its happiness. The tan one edged in closer.

A calm encircled me. At last, I fit in. I belonged. A community. The wild horses with fleas chose me above all the other beachgoers. Who was the leader of our pack? I wondered. Perhaps the more muscular one. My soul had no borders. It floated on the calming waves. I was with my own kind. I was chosen. I looked around for a photographer from the *Baltimore Sun* to record our family. The breeze enveloped my limbs. The sun became a torch above me, blazing a path. The scalding sand formed diamonds and sapphires, and I tasted salt and the richness of creation. The earth. I breathed into my part of the universe as if it were my husband. My nostrils turned inside out. Calm, calm, endless calm. A hedge of stillness held us and sealed me into their world.

I heard a rumble and felt a jolt, like the first quiver of an earthquake. My right eye's peripheral vision caught hooves a half inch from my scalp. A fourth beach pony, darker tan, fought for the spot to my right. Hooves, legs, manes, flying, neighing. On my stomach, dragging my sandals in one hand and my hat in the other, I inched toward the tide, like a crab, creeping low so as not to distract the ponies from their playing or fighting. In case of a stampede, better to be in the water than on the burning ground. Moments before, the other beachgoers held one eye transfixed and with the other shot darts of envy at me. Now some laughed. Two ponies were still butting and neighing in our nest. The sand singed. The orange and brown resonated and danced in the wind. All four ponies sped off in the same direction. My former gang flew way down the shoreline.

“A male,” a man called out. “Two males were fighting for the females.”

Maybe the beach ponies thought I was a horse. Maybe I had been in a harem. My legs reared up on the relenting sand, my arms stretched into other legs with hooves. Orange turned burgundy, and the wind waved my mane and suspended me. My spirit galloped and galloped with belonging and through the crashing waves leapt into my future and past.

* * *

I could not live as a corpse, molded into my abusers' conception of a human being. Something in me stirred, then fought to know the truth. I refused to abandon myself. All I needed was a little support and help and when I found that, I began the more targeted search inward. I had not suspected there would be so many caverns in my brain. No matter how many or how dense, I plan to travel through them all and find the captured parts of my mind. I yearn to be who I am without the programs.

FOURTEEN

A glimpse of freedom

But first another punishment marriage, 1998

I had thought that Darlene, the woman Ned married, was from the normal world. But at the wedding, Ned's eye twitched faster than a hummingbird's wings.

Three women flew to his wedding with me. Two stayed in the hotel, and one with her daughter who lived nearby. I saw Ned for the first time at the rehearsal dinner. He looked handsome and accomplished. As I rushed over to him, instead of rushing to me, he looked at a woman I didn't recognize. She nodded, moved both hands as if to shoo away a pesky animal. Only then did he approach me. He needed her permission to greet me! Then she came over to me, stuck her face in mine, and put a closed hand out for a shake in my face too. I said “Who are you?” and she said “Cindy, Todd's wife.” I had seen her only once, years before.

I remembered all this clearly. Then there was a big blank, and I didn't pick up any narrative until the next morning when I went to the continental breakfast in the hotel, after my two friends had already eaten. I had slept later than they had. When there's a blank and your life disappears from under you, then you know something is amiss. I had to go to therapy to retrieve the lost narrative.

In the hotel, everybody was asleep. It was after 2 a.m. My son and one of Darlene's brothers came in quietly. The brother injected me, and they silently dragged me out of the room in my nightgown. I thought about holding Ned as an infant pressed against my heart, and realized that I had led my friends unknowingly into danger. In my mind, I gripped a thick rope that sunk into a pure, olive-colored ocean, then all my thoughts suddenly froze. The men forced me down wooden steps and into a parked car, which

sped along a steep driveway like a garage ramp. I felt jostled in the car, sleep-driving to somewhere. We drove a long way and arrived at an indoor banquet hall. People gathered at long rectangular tables with white tablecloths. Darlene's family dominated the head table. This could have been a fairy tale like *Alice in Wonderland.* Darlene and her parents and sister and sister's husband and sons were there with Todd and Cindy, the stepmother who had stuck her face and hand in mine, my former in-laws and crowds of people I didn't know. They were all drinking heavily, especially Cindy's alcoholic father, who was the most boisterous. I still wore my nightgown. Some man was kind enough to put his jacket over me. It was June 1999.

They sat Ned and me on straight chairs in the middle of their circle, tied us both up, and circled us, chanting. The crowd at the secret middle-of-the-night banquet chanted:

> Stolen from the nest
> Stolen from the nest
> He'll never rise again
> This boy of yours will never rise again
> Trapped in a marriage
> Trapped in a marriage
> Your punishments again
> He'll fall from grace, amen

"My punishment again." *Yes, just like in my own marriage.* Ned must not have known that he was kidnapping his mother only to be electroshocked himself.

Taser blasts assaulted both of us. In therapy, Ann instructed me never to remember this. They bounced the Tasers off me and Ned, as they chanted:

TO ME: "Let him go"
TO NED: "You'll never be free"
TO ME: "Your boy is doomed"
TO NED: "Your fate is sealed"
TO ME: "It's all because of you"
TO NED: "This is punishment for you"

TO ME: “Look at your deeds”

TO NED: “Now you're stuck”

The circling and drinking crowd sung “Booby prize…” which was insulting to Darlene, but she didn't seem to notice. Maybe the insult made her hysterical, unless she was that desperate for a husband. Then the orgy. Darlene wildly copulated with every male, while her father chased girls. Ned and I were tied up on those chairs and drugged, through the chanting:

> Poor boy, poor boy
> Undone his life
> Poor boy, poor boy
> Trapped underground for life
> No more hope for him
> All because of his sin.
> Poor mother,
> Poor mother
> No rescue possible
> No heritage possible
> All her efforts naught
> You're punished, you're through
> There's nothing more to you
> There's nothing more for you to do.

If he had done something they wanted to punish him for, if he were sufficiently rebellious for them to give him an inappropriate marriage, then he must still have a conscience. What I want for Ned is not to be one of them. He resisted. He was punished. He is holding his soul as best he can. I soar. I see light, as if from Mr. Jacobs' apartment, streak the darkness.

These drunken cultists were punishing him as they had punished me through a degrading marriage, twisting and thwarting him like a bonsai tree. I don't know what they were punishing him for—perhaps not being willing to kill. Maybe my parenting had not been for naught.

At the end of this wedding-ritual humiliation, they untied us, drove me back to the hotel, and cautioned me about not forgetting to lock the door. “It's a dangerous world out there.” Drugged, I slept for hours. When I woke up, my friends had already had their continental breakfast downstairs.

The day after I processed this memory, in the late morning, something else crept out of my mind. Some part perceived an action, a silent movement in the blackness, out of my peripheral vision. Another man had

entered the room before Ned and the brother. He glided to the bed closer to the window, where my friend Amy had wanted to sleep. I saw a handkerchief flash in the dark. Silly of them to use white handkerchiefs. Then he snuck to the other bed between mine and Amy's but by then, the other two men had me sleepwalking to the door. The first man in raced through the hotel room pushing open the bathroom door, looking in the wardrobe alcove. Ned must have told them I had three friends. He hadn't known one would be staying with her daughter. It had never occurred to me that non-cult people would be drugged. In the morning, when my two friends had just returned from breakfast and I was just waking, they looked at me suspiciously. Everyone's unconscious mind must have been rattling, but nothing had slipped into consciousness yet.

During the night and for weeks afterward, two simultaneous rhythms pervaded my heart. It was sinking, and in its middle, it burst like an overripe fruit but with sadness. Soon I would be in my front person, not knowing I had endangered my friends who had just wanted a fun trip. After the enforced wedding, I wept through the night silently. Almost all of me realized that he had married into cult and that we would remain separated. Before his wedding, now and then there would be a word, gesture, or sigh from my son that recalled our connection, but mostly there was only ice with barely a crack. After the marriage, another layer of thickened ice set over the winter landscape.

The closed-down years

I remained hollow and unknowing for thirteen more years after Ann closed me down. I managed a little bit of a life. I still worked as a therapist for people who were in emotional pain. I bought a house in a suburb of Baltimore, decorated it and created a garden, made some friends. I walked around as if something huge was missing, like the inside of me. I had fewer memories than before and did less creative writing. I performed activities to absorb my anxiety. I cleaned, dusted, washed, ironed. I knitted and went shopping. I cooked dishes that had to simmer for hours, like chicken paprikash. I couldn't figure out why I had so much time for cleaning. I didn't even know that the missing me was gone.

I spent more hours at my job. As soon as Ann discarded me, I reverted to doing good therapy with clients and did not put forth any of Ann's pretend-

beliefs. For me, much of being a therapist is feeling what the client is suffering. Having someone else holding their feelings lets the clients see their situations from a distance. Objectivity can set in. Changing angles frees them for a moment to transform themselves. They can then go back to their sorrow with a new perspective. My life remained stagnant until a handful of my sister's hair, a towel's fall, and a doctor's comment restarted my search.

Ned lived a short plane ride or a day's drive away from where I lived in Baltimore. I was invited to visit every couple of years. He visited me maybe twice in a decade.

I endured the insults of ordinary life without knowing about the real trespasses. I am afraid that every one of my visits coincided with a pre-planned ritual. During these rituals, my grandchildren were programmed against me, and the leaders threatened their lives as a snare to get me to kill. As I got older, I must have become more immune to their ways, because I continued to refuse, and my grandchildren were not killed. But, like me and Ned, they were raised in the cult. And I could do nothing to rescue them.

One of my first intensive therapy sessions with Alison was spent discussing how to make a child abuse report. I had called Child Protective Services and ascertained that they took out-of-state reports anonymously. They would go to the school and question the children. The children had already been mind controlled to deny. I retrieved in therapy how to signal children that it is all right to talk, as if they were reporting to a master in the cult. But the twenty minutes the worker would spend with the child could not counteract the mind control not to tell that they had received from birth on. When the parents found out, the children would be double programmed with a stronger lid. The system was not sophisticated enough, and the workers would be too naïve. I didn't know my daughter-in-law very well, but the man my son was in these rituals was not the person he was in ordinary life. Alison and I concluded that the only way I could help my grandchildren, and all children, would be by writing this memoir.

There was a death warrant on me. I was supposed to go to the 2009 Feast of the Beast, an international ritual dedicated in part to the transfer and promotion of leadership. There I would have been forced to “fall on the sword”, the ancient way of suicide, which was how my ancestor King Saul had died, my ancestor according to this group. My body would have been cooked and eaten. At my home, the forgers would have left a suicide note.

The cult relies entirely on its members' obedience. If you don't report what you're doing, they won't know. If you're not where they want you to be, they may not come after you.

These groups usually have a fail-safe plan. Since I didn't attend the last Feast of the Beast ritual to be forced to kill myself, then when I am seventy-two, they will send people—most likely family members—to escort me to another ritual where I will be required to “fall on the sword”. I have written letters to the police and left them with lawyers and doctors. The letters state that I am not suicidal or psychotic, and give the names of persons to investigate should I have a serious “accident” or die.

My son and his family visited me a few years ago, before I remembered the rituals in New England. Darlene took the lead in hurting my grandchildren and torturing them into believing their punishments were because of me. My remembering this visit is why I left Baltimore and am in hiding. I have no contact with my family. My grandchildren have probably been programmed to believe that I don't want them in my life. I care enough about them and all children to have written this book.

The tide, fall 2013

I'll have to hide. I will get in the car with my clothes and files, computer and dog. I will drive a long way. Like the bride whose train covers the ground behind her, like the snake shedding its seasonal skin, I will take steps away from my known world. Unlike the cicada that returns every seventeen years, I will not return.

I take steps away shedding love, friendship, family, money, the known world. I step into a tide, lie on my back and float. *Whyo, whyo, whyo,* the waves murmur. The silken sky covers me. The green ocean becomes an inflated raft. A rip tide erupts and floats me far away. I don't fight it this time. My elastic body folds, suspends.

At my first week-long intensive therapy session with Alison in 2012, I spoke about “running for my life”. I heard myself say those intense words with sincerity, but I hadn't a clue what I was talking about. I accused myself of being melodramatic, looked at myself from a distance and didn't understand the urgency of this belief. I would have left my home and arrived across the country before those parts of me who spoke these mysterious words identified themselves.

I abruptly closed down my life in Baltimore. I gave two months' notice at work, but it still felt like a sharp, unquiet end. People grieved my leaving. Of all my clients, only one understood that something was the matter and that's why I was leaving. The others said, “Enjoy your travels” and thought I was abandoning them. But an injured roofer with a frozen shoulder who had a mild mental handicap said, “Now I will have to worry about you.” He knew I wouldn't leave my practice unless I absolutely had to. This morning, my first morning in my new location, where I fled to, I am crying for the clients I left behind and didn't see through to the end. Before I left, I told a few friends the real reason. One said I was just upset and making up stories; another said, “I'm worried about you,” implying I was insane. Leaving my clients, and the hope that my family would come around, hollow out my heart.

Epilogue

My grandfather was once a scared little boy in Galicia until they forced him to decide to be evil, this grandfather who attempted to destroy so many young minds. My mother was like a firefly closed in a glass jar with only one hole punctured for air. Even when the firefly changed colors fast, it remained lidded and caught. My sister was afraid. My father was still a child doing whatever he could not to be a victim. This next generation is under the lid of this oppression.

I had a year of a boy's love. Sixty years later, I had a friend who nurtured. And another friend who cared enough about me to point me to someone who could help. Alison cared that I become free. People cared. A small amount of love can undo what man has connived from the beginning of time. Love is that potent.

Even seeing some of my mind's barriers dissolve affirms this laborious process. Even a moment of not being surrounded by satanists makes this trek through awareness worth it. The unspeakable purity of freedom is like breathing the cleanest ocean air.

Despite every day that I had expected to be my last, I have grown into an old woman. Being alive allows me to honor those who were killed or driven crazy. It allows me to remember and tell.

Today, in another country, I walk through a wooded area with my West Highland Terrier, and by chance an old man using a thick cane walks his large black dog at the same time. He tells me the herons have flown to another park because of a hawk. Multitudes of empty nests crown bereft trees.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Without Alison Miller's clinical support and steadfast encouragement to tell my story, this memoir would not have been written.

I want also to thank Baron Wormser, Eugenia Kim, and Kim Dana Kupperman for their interest, guidance, and concern.

The names and locations have been changed to protect the innocent and consequently the guilty. My name is real, as are those of Alison Miller, E. Sue Blume, Daniel David Baker, and some others.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Wendy Hoffman is a survivor of criminal abuses and has been a psychotherapist for over two decades working in general practice and the field of recovering dissociated memories. Her MSW comes from Hunter College School of Social Work in New York and her MFA from Fairfield University in Connecticut. She has done performance art and given multimedia art exhibits in NYC, on tour, and in Chicago. Her writings are published in *Passenger, The Healing Muse, Jewish Women's Literary Annual,* and other literary journals.

THE EGYPTIAN-MASONIC-SATANIC CONNECTION

WARNING: GRAPHIC 'EXPOSE'
MATURE READERS ONLY !

By DAVID L. CARRICO

RICK DONINGER - SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE CHAPTER

PSYCHOTHERAPIST WENDY HOFFMAN C.S.W., M.A. - FOREWORD

THE

EGYPTIAN

MASONIC

SATANIC

CONNECTION

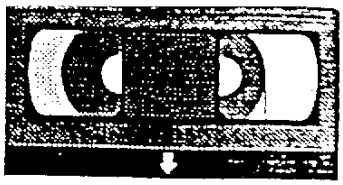
(WITH REVISED AND UPDATED DOCUMENTATION)

BY DAVID L. CARRICO

Self-Published by:
FOLLOWERS OF JESUS CHRIST MINISTRIES
P.O. Box 4174
Evansville, In. 47724-4174

(812) 477-6338 (FAX Same No.)

Satanic Ritual Abuse and Secret Societies



VIDEO TAPE

Satanic Ritual Abuse and Secret Societies is the first serious documentary addressing this subject. Ritua abuse involves the sexual abuse and/or sacrifice of children and others during organized religious rituals Researcher David Carrico examines the subject in detail. After beginning with the historical scriptural evidence Carrico documents the modern day occurrence. The existence of Satanic Ritual Abuse and Masonic Ritua Abuse are fully supported by facts, dates and court convictions. The following aspects are covered:

Definition of Satanic Ritual Abuse

A legal definition is followed by scriptural descriptions of the nature of Satan and other demons. Historical evidence of ritua abuse is documented in scripture.

Proof of the continued existence of Satanic Ritual Abuse

Several of the numerous recent court convictions for ritual abuse are presented. Names, dates and locations are given The information is a matter of public record and can be verified.

An examination of the claims of those who deny that Satanic Ritual Abuse occurs today

The reluctance of prosecutors to pursue ritual abuse cases as well as the reluctance of law enforcement officers to investigat such cases is discussed. The nature of recovered memories, reliability of recovered memories, and the possibility o causing additional injury to the ritual abuse victim by improper therapy are discussed. False Memory Syndrome is covered in detail. In order to understand the purpose of the False Memory Syndrome Foundation, it is necessary to understand the backgrounds of its founders. Carrico documents allegations of child abuse and paedophilia directed at its founders. The impact of the False Memory Syndrome defense on survivors of ritual abuse is discussed.

The origins of Satanic Ritual Abuse & how the practice has been propagated to the present

The roots of SRA are examined and traced back to Babylonian mystery religions. The teachings and practices of the mystery religions are documented as well as the need for secrecy. Present day organizations which promote the teachings of the mystery religions are revealed. Their founders and leaders are identified and their teachings are examined. Included in the discussion are Modern Witchcraft, Rosicrucianism, The Theosophical Society, The Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn and Ordo Templar Orientis, (O.T.O.).

The role of the Masonic Lodge

Carrico documents the connections between the various occult organizations and the largest secret society in existence today, the Masonic Lodge. The structure of Freemasonry is discussed. Former witch Bill Schnoebelen explains why as a witch, he was encouraged to join the Masonic Lodge. The history of Freemasonry and the identity of many pagan Masonic gods are documented in Masonic literature. Connections between Freemasonry and the ancient mystery religions are thoroughly documented. Masonic literature promoting human sacrifice and an example pact with a demon to deliver human souls to the prince of demons is shown. The similarities between Masonic ritual and the rites of Lucifer (as practiced by the Church of Satan) are discussed. Masonic Ritual Abuse, the sexual ritual abuse of children in a Masonic context, is discussed. Many victims are coming forward reporting that, as children, they were sexually abused by Masons. The numbers are too significant to be ignored. There has been legal action which resulted in conviction.

This tape is like nothing you have ever seen. It is well documented and fact filled. 88 Minutes

Available from:
Followers of Jesus Christ, Inc.
P.O. Box 4174
Evansville, IN 47724-4174
(812) 477-6338

ORDER FORM

Please send ___ copies of Satanic Ritual Abuse & Secret Societies to:

Name _____

Address _____

Address _____

City, State, Zip _____

Enclosed is a check or money order for $20.00 per copy plus $3.00 shipping

THE EGYPTIAN - MASONIC - SATANIC - CONNECTION

(WITH REVISED AND UPDATED DOCUMENTATION)

BY DAVID L. CARRICO
RICK DONINGER - SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE CHAPTER
WENDY HOFFMAN C.S.W., M.A. - FORWARD

WARNING !

Consult your Therapist or Minister before reading this book if you are a survivor - This book contains details of occult rituals that could be triggering!

IS THERE A CONNECTION BETWEEN FREEMASONRY AND SATANISM ?

This book researches and explains that 'connection' and examines the common Egyptian element in both Freemasonry and Satanism. 37 Pictures, drawn by victim-survivors of Satanic ritual abuse are presented and analyzed to show the amazing similarities between Satanism and ancient Egyptian rites. The Egyptian element in Freemasonry is pursued down a path that leads to an intriging study of Black Masonry and the O.T.O.

Also included in this book are statistics from leading therapists, counselors, and counter-cult ministries concerning cases of ritual abuse alleging Masonic perpetrators.

THIS BOOK PRESENTS A VIEW NEVER SEEN BEFORE OF THE WORLD'S LARGEST SECRET SOCIETY - FREEMASONRY

JESUS CHRIST IS EXALTED AS THE ULTIMATE ANSWER FOR VICTIM-SURVIVORS

DAVID L. CARRICO - Bible Teacher--Seminar Speaker--Radio Host is the Author of *THE OCCULT MEANING OF THE GREAT SEAL OF THE UNITED STATES*, and *CHRISTIAN WORKER'S HANDBOOK - THE GUIDE FOR MINISTRY TO MASONS*, and numerous booklets and tracts.

THE

EGYPTIAN

MASONIC

SATANIC

CONNECTION

(WITH REVISED AND UPDATED DOCUMENTATION)

Copyright © 1994 by David L. Carrico

All Rights Reserved

No material in this publication may be copied, reproduced,
or used in any way without written permission.

ATTENTION !

This book for Religious Instruction or Research only !

All References out of the KING JAMES VERSION of The Holy Bible.

Written by David L. Carrico
Manuscript edited and prepared by Donna M. Carrico
Cover Design by Butch Doninger and Donna Carrico

FOLLOWERS OF JESUS CHRIST MINISTRIES
P. O. Box 4174
Evansville, In. 47724-4174

(812) 477-6338 (FAX Same No.)

TABLE OF CONTENTS

FOREWORD VII

INTRODUCTION X

CHAPTER 1 - OUR INTENTION ! 1
we present a theory that there is a connection between Freemasonry, Egyptian rituals and Satanic ritual abuse 1
'Son of Sam' killer David Berkowitz 1
man responsible for directing the cult that committed the murders was a Freemason 1
case in Dade County Florida, with Frank Fuster 2

CHAPTER 2 - THE MYSTERY RELIGIONS 5
Nimrod was the man who was responsible for the building of the Tower of Babel 6
first recorded attempt of man trying to establish a One World Government and a Universal Religion 6
Nimrod is honored as a "great Mason" 8
Mystery Religions were celebrated at the Autumnal Equinox and the Spring Equinox 9
The Ritual Calendar 10
worship of idols and other gods will bring us into fellowship with demons 11

CHAPTER 3 - FREEMASONRY AND HUMAN SACRIFICE 15
1. THE CONNECTION BETWEEN FREEMASONRY AND THE MYSTERY RELIGIONS 15
the "teaching of the Mysteries, the true parent of Freemasonry" 16
the secrets these operative Masons had were received from the Chaldean Magicians . 17
Oath of Nimrod 17
Hiram Abiff and the Mystery Religions 17
Freemasonry is modeled on the plan of the Ancient Mysteries 19
The Rite of Circumambulation 20
This is a cup of abomination from which Christians cannot drink 20
DIONYSUS 21
MYSTERY RELIGIONS 21
All these primitive rites are associated with the fertility cult 22
3. THE CONNECTION OF FREEMASONRY AND HUMAN SACRIFICE 22
Do the Freemasons know that there is a **connection between the Mystery religions and human sacrifice?** 22
ritual of human sacrifice and cannibalism 22
cutting off the male member and then letting the victim bleed to death 23
Freemasonry is a descendant of the Adonis cult 23

The Masonic symbol of the double-headed eagle stems from the pagan rites of human sacrifice 24
the symbolism of the bee in Freemasonry is used because of the fact that the male bee is a sacrifice victim 24
the cult of Adonis not only dealt with death and resurrection 25
Moloch, and the Masonic hero Hiram Abiff 26
Moloch is well known in Scripture as the pagan god who was worshiped with the sacrifice of human children 26
hung his skin on a tree 27
The symbolism of the twenty-four inch gauge in Freemasonry also stems from the Pagan rites of human sacrifice 28
newspaper article about a skeleton 28

CHAPTER 4 - A 33° MASON WHO DEFINITELY DID KNOW ABOUT HUMAN SACRIFICE 30
ALEISTER CROWLEY 30
The Beast 666 30
human infants in occult rituals 30
he induced a he-goat to copulate with his mistress 30
WAS ALEISTER CROWLEY JUST A 'CLOSET' FREEMASON? 30
He bragged about all of the Masonic medals and insignia 30
CROWLEY'S DOCTRINE 32
male child of perfect innocence and high intelligence is the most satisfactory and suitable victim 32
I peck at the eyes of Jesus as he hangs upon the cross 32
ALEISTER CROWLEY WAS AN INTERNATIONAL MASON 32
universal inspector-general of the various rites 33
WHAT IS THE O.T.O. ? 34
Body composed of men and women who have accepted the principles of *The Book of the Law* 34
universal brotherhood 35
IS THERE A CONNECTION BETWEEN THE O.T.O. AND FREEMASONRY ? 35
O.T.O. PROFESS-HOUSES 36
There are individuals and secret societies today who are dedicated to continuing Crowley's work 40

CHAPTER 5 - THE EGYPTIAN-MASONIC-SATANIC CONNECTION 41
Michael Aquino and the Temple of Set is thoroughly Egyptian 43
THE MASONIC LODGE AND THE EGYPTIAN MYSTERY RELIGION 44
Man is a god in the making 46
HIRAM - KUNDALINI YOGA - HINDU MYSTICISM 46
MASTER MASON DEGREE 48
the Book of the Dead is the open sesame of symbolic Masonry 50

CHAPTER 6 - EGYPTIAN SATANISM 51
Ritual Satanic Child Abuse 51
WHAT IS THE BOOK OF THE DEAD ? 51
DRINKING BLOOD 51
CANNABALISM 51
TORTURE CHAMBER 51
THE CRUSHER OF BONES 52
WASHING IN BLOOD 52
KILLING ANIMALS - LOCKS OF HAIR 52
KING UNAS EATS HEARTS 52
SCALPING PEOPLE AND BONDAGE 52
DISMEMBERMENT 52
RITUAL FIRE 53
HACKING IN PIECES THE FIRSTBORN 53
GOD BORN FROM THE BUTTOCKS OF A COW 54
BOAT RITUAL 55
HEART IN THE JAR 57
SEXUAL PERVERSION 58
EXCREMENT 58
SELF-MUTILATION AND PERVERSION 58
CHAMBER OF SNAKES 58
THE SCARAB 58
THE ANKH 59
EGYPTIAN SEX MAGIC 59
Rituals of Egyptian Magick 59
THE GOAT OF MENDES 61
goat of Medes or Baphomet 61
PEOPLE WEARING MASKS 62
secret word of the third degree of Freemasonry, MA-HAH-BONE 63

CHAPTER 7 - SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE 64
contributed by Rick Doninger 64
first-hand experience in dealing with the survivors of the horrors that the children of our nation are experiencing after being subjected to satanic ritual abuse 64
increase your awareness of what these children have suffered 64
encourage the authorities who are responsible for punishing the perpetrators to provide justice for the victims and their families 64
join with us in this spiritual battle by praying for the survivors and their families 64
comparison between the ancient rites of Egyptology (the Mysteries) and the rites of modern day Satanism 64
Disbelief 65
Fear 65

Child victims have related accounts of how the cult members would always drain and save the blood of their victims 66
the child was forced to drink the blood 66
children disclose cannibalism 67
eating of the intestines 68
victim is sometimes branded on the chest with a five-pointed star symbol 68
Skinning the victims alive, we are told, is also a preferred form of torture 69
body parts are utilized for some purpose 69
animal sacrifice 69
killing of a goat 70
eating the hearts of the sacrificial victims 70
hearts of children kept in jars and the children's names recorded on the jars 70
sacrifices take place when the moon is full 72
newborn was placed inside the stomach of a drugged cow 72
six cult members, six burning red candles, with six snakes placed in the boat to crawl on her . . 73
genitals were cut off 75
nude on tables, eaten, insulted, mocked, tortured sexually, and forced to have sex with siblings, animals, and adults, including same-sex partners 75
show bowls nearby filled with urine and feces 75
child shows the book had the Egyptian symbol of life and fertility on the cover 76
children display tendencies toward self-injury 77
The power of Jesus Christ to redeem, through love, those little ones offended by the servants of Satan himself, is the one hope the innocent young victims have 78
DRAWINGS BY SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE SURVIVORS 79

CHAPTER 8 - BLACK MASONRY - DEVOTED TO THE KNOWLEDGE OF EVIL 109
Black Masonry is degrees 19 through 30 in the Scottish Rite and are known as the Council of KADOSH 109
vengeance-elements in the degree of Knight K.H. 109
James de Molay was the last head of the Knights Templars 109
spitting or urinating on the crucifix during secret rites of initiation, worshipping a skull or head called Baphomet 110
interwoven with the Egyptian tradition corresponding to our Black Masonry 110
K. H. or Black Masonry, was devoted to the knowledge of evil 111

CHAPTER 9 - FREEMASONRY AND SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE 113
I experienced at least 18 years of Satanic ritual abuse by several groups of Masons 113
therapists and Christian counter-cult ministries that high percentages of their victims have a connection with Freemasonry 113
90% of his victims claim that they were abused by Masonic perpetrators 113
50% of the actual abuse took place on Masonic properties 113
About half of the clients I treat report that their fathers were Masons 113

"Blue House SRA case" 113
all of the 'blue house children' claimed that they were abused by Masonic perpetrators 114
police who investigated the 'blue house case' also were Freemasons 114
Christian lay counselor 114
clients report childhood sexual and ritual abuse occurring during Masonic rituals 114
counter-cult ministry 114
known many SRA's who had Masons in their family 114
"Masonic programming" in some part of their system 114
about one-half the people I've worked with have some connection to Masons 114
major book in the field of SRA by Margaret Smith 114
Thirty-three percent said perpetrating family members were Masons 115
THE FREEMASONRY - SATANISM - SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE LINKS 115
POINT #1 - THE OVERLAPPING MEMBERSHIP 115
connection between Masonry and the various occult groups are the many leading occultists who were Freemasons 115
Baphomet was used in the Masonic lodge 115
POINT #2 - OVERLAPPING THEOLOGY 116
Masons who emphasize the universal aspect of Freemasonry and have a Kabbalistic element in their doctrine 116
POINT #3 - THE APPEAL OF MASONIC SECRECY 116
death oath not to reveal Masonic secrets or conversations 116
Secrecy is indispensable in a Mason 116
Initiate binds to himself every Mason in the world 116
POINT #4 - THE CO-ORDINATION THEORY 117
Freemasonry could theoretically fill that role 117
POINT #5 - THE RECRUITMENT POSSIBILITIES 117
Masonic lodge provides a fertile field of recruitment for other occult orders 117
first man who was known to have done this was Adam Weishaupt with his Bavarian Illumanati 117
POINT #6 - THE COVER-UP THEORY 117
Mason obligates himself to help his fellow-Mason whether he is right or wrong 117
Mason cannot tell you the 'secret word' that the Worshipful Master whispered in his ear 118
POINT #7 - THE DEMONIC LINK 118
counseled more than 550 people who were demonically invaded and many of them were affected by Masonic Lodge backgrounds 118
form of hereditary oppression can come through the Masonic Lodge 119
POINT #8 - THE GENERATIONAL LINK 119
tremendous pressure from their Masonic parents to join Masonic organizations 119

Transgenerational cults are those perpetuated through family generations . . 119
Alex Sanders who was a Freemason and a witch was initiated into witchcraft by his Grandmother 120
POINT #9 - DISSOCIATION 120
Dissociation is a defense mechanism 120
dissociation is taught to people in Satanic cults 120
Dissociation also occurs in what the Freemasons and other occultists call initiation 121

LET US SET THE RECORD STRAIGHT 122
FREEMASONRY REMAINS SUPREMELY AN ORGANIZATION THAT DECEIVES GOOD MEN! 122
IGNORANCE IS NO EXCUSE AND A POOR DEFENSE 122
THERE IS NO EXCUSE - YOUR HANDS ARE NOT CLEAN 122
RESIGN from the lodge 122
Plead forgiveness from God through his son Jesus Christ 122

RESIGNATION FORM 124

ENDNOTES 126

FOREWORD

It probably all started with the women's movement, which gave society the message that victims of oppression need not be silent. They should be able to talk about what happened to them without being blamed for their perpetrators' transgressions. Many of the early feminists were focused on women's rights in society. Simultaneously, women all over the States also started remembering another form of violence.[1]

In the 1970s and 80s, American women who were incest survivors started speaking out. No, they didn't seduce their fathers; they were raped. No, they didn't like it. Yes, they wish it had never happened. It scarred their lives. No, they didn't fantasize it. Their lucidity set the stage for our present decade of uncovering the hidden and naming abuses. In united voice, they contradicted the experts whose opinions joined with common "wisdom" over the centuries to sabotage truth and justice and blame innocent victims. They held self-support meetings so that survivors could share and validate one another. They wrote books on incest and produced art exhibits and theatre performances. They held "Take Back the Night" marches. National and local television talk shows started featuring incest survivors, or as they were called, incest victims. These shows reached millions of American homes and gave other silent or repressed survivors permission to remember and speak out.

At the same time, some, not all by any means, survivors of severe repressed trauma observed that they had divided parts within themselves, that different personas had different interests, manners, outlooks, personalities, functions. Professionals gave these survivors the diagnosis of Multiple Personality Disorder. As their treatment progressed, inevitably they discovered that some of the personas recalled severe sexual abuse at home, sometimes by multiple perpetrators.

As time went on, though this all happened very fast, some survivors remembered fathers and mothers raping and violating them, their brothers and sisters. Moreover, the rapes were not so secret as in families where there is incest by one parent only. Here there was open collusion. Sometimes known community members, including high up politicians and professionals, were remembered violating together. Survivors remembered that this violence occurred during rituals and ceremonies. Some, again not all, remembered

---

[1] Writers such as Judith Herman, Florence Rush, Louise Armstrong, Sandra Butler, Diana Russell, Ellen Bass, Laura Davis, E. Sue Blume and many, many others paved the way for hidden sexual issues to be exposed.

religious overtones. They recalled that covens held these rituals, and that spiritual warring occurred during them. As soon as Satan was named, some churches became involved in the recovery process. Many churches continue to disbelieve this abuse exists.

Many survivors whom I have worked or spoken with observed that they had terrible reactions to their breakthrough memories, that after they had a memory, some became suicidal, felt that they were losing their minds or had other strange responses. Why should they suddenly feel so negative at the very moment of a leap into freedom? These reactions helped them and their therapists understand that this was not solely a phenomenon of physical and spiritual torture. An advanced scientific system of mind control was the main ingredient in satanic cult abuse.[2]

People's recovery process deepened, and survivors and their therapists discovered more about imposed and natural dissasociation and repression. Some survivors remembered that Masonic abuse also occurred. As each month goes on, more and more therapists and survivors are reporting this connection. Some remember their fathers taking them to Masonic meetings and rituals occurring on the characteristic black and white checkered floors. Other survivors have done art work describing their abuse, in which Masonic and satanic symbols are interwoven. Some of Ann-Marie Germain's conversations with her father, which support her memories of having been Masonically and satanically abused, were recently published in Margaret Smith's book *Ritual Abuse* (HarperSanFrancisco, 1993).

David L. Carrico's *The Egyptian - Masonic - Satanic Connection* presents the characteristics of Masonic abuse. With Rick Doninger, he describes the characteristics of satanic abuse and demonstrates how they correspond. In addition, some of what he describes as Masonic practices are also reported by satanic cult survivors, such as the kissing of certain parts of the body described on page 126. The double subterranean level shown in the illustration on page 64 matches what some survivors have described as hidden ritual sites. The demonic presences described on page 137 reflects some satanic cult survivors' experiences. Another similarity is the extensive and exact use of hand signals and motions to communicate

---

[2] D. Corydon Hammond, Ph.D. gave intricate presentations on satanic cult mind control until 1993. The journals *Dissociation* and *Treating Abuse Today*, and the newsletter Survivorship have frequent articles on mind control. *Beyond* presents annual conferences on ritual abuse and mind control in Virginia. For further information contact: *Beyond*, P. O. Box 1923, Midlothian, VA 23112, (804)379-7696. In addition, Cf. my book titled *ASCENT FROM EVIL: The Healing Journey out of Satanic Cult Abuse*. (Liguori, MO: Triumph Books), 1994 (in press, available in the fall).

messages.[3]

There's no precedent in history for understanding satanic cult abuse. It's not exposed like incest, alcoholism, the Holocaust, the mafia, what's happening in Bosnia or our ghettoes. We don't know about groups of people being mind controlled and living with no free will, but they have been with us for centuries. The Bible describes satanic practices but not mind control or the high tech electroshock programming that satanic cult survivors suffer.[4] One of the many reasons people are so reluctant to believe satanism exists is because they're not aware of a model for it in modern Western civilization. It's no accident that the Masonic connection to satanic cult abuse is slow to be revealed in survivors' memory process. The Masonic link brings survivors into the realm of the political world view that satanic cults have and how some world leaders may be involved in this exploitation.[5]

David Carrico's work is one of the first attempts to set the foundation for understanding the interconnectedness of satanism and Egyptian-Masonic abuse. This kind of historical exploration is needed to put today's world in perspective and help people understand the roots of current violence, conspiracy and destruction. The combination of personal testimonies and research has got to make a strong impact even on a sleepy, negligent society that is prone to denial. The information in this book is important.

Wendy Hoffman

---

[3] William T. Still, *New World Order: The Ancient Plan of Secret Societies*. (Lafayette, Louisiana: Huntington House), 1990, pp. 102-107.

[4] Craig Lockwood, *Other Altars*. (Minneapolis: CompCare Publishers), 1993, pp. 29-30.

[5] Gary H. Kah, *En Route to Global Occupation*. (Lafayette, Louisiana: Huntington House), 1992; and John W. DeCamp, *Franklin Cover-Up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska*. (Lincoln, Nebraska: AWT, Inc.), 1992.

INTRODUCTION

The title of this book causes various reactions. Some cannot see how there could possibly be a 'connection' with the subjects mentioned. **We will prove that there is without a doubt a 'connection' between Freemasonry and Satanism.** In this book we will examine the rituals and literature of Freemasonry and Satanism. As we proceed you will begin to see that the most prominent link is the Egyptian element with its rituals and other factors involved with the mystery religions. **This Egyptian element is the common denominator between Freemasonry and Satanism.**

A little over two years has passed since *The EGYPTIAN - MASONIC - SATANIC CONNECTION* was written and to our knowledge it was the first book that ever suggested a connection between Freemasonry and Satanic ritual abuse.

Our first book was written as a result of examining the personal disclosures of SRA victim-survivors from Evansville and other parts of the United States who contacted child advocates Mr. and Mrs. Rick Doninger for help. This is a very rough book and not for the squeamish. Exposing the deep workings of Satan can indeed be very uncomfortable, however, this is what it will take to liberate the captives and this is our mandate from our Lord:

> 11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather expose them.
>
> *Ephesians 5:11 NKJV*

Today the connection between Freemasonry and Satanic ritual abuse is still just a theory, but it is becoming a theory that is getting some 'teeth'. Personal testimonies from SRA victims and those who work with them from all parts of the country are now testifying to the presence of a Masonic element in their abuse. These testimonies together with all of the additional documentation that we have obtained certainly calls for a re-write of our first meager efforts.

While it is true that clergy, law enforcement, and school teachers have also frequently been named as SRA perpetrators, there are many reasons that will become apparent in this book that make the Masonic element very unique. **Is there a coordinating force and link in SRA crimes that always seems to enable them to have just the right people - in just the right places - at just the right times?** As more is learned about how SRA crimes are executed such a networking medium seems to be a necessity and Freemasonry could theoretically fill that role.

While the evidence is increasing in support of this theory, it is not strong enough at this time to present a case in court; and for those of us who live in the 'real world', we expect a serious investigation of the organization of Freemasonry about as much as Scotty beaming us all up to the Enterprise.

Long ago we gave up the idea of seeing the Devil tried and convicted in a human court; indeed, many of the pastors who fill the pulpits in our land can't decide whether or not Satan even exists. In the final analysis their decision doesn't really matter at all. What does matter is the fact that every time one of the victim-survivors turns in faith toward Jesus Christ, Satan looses!

JESUS IS LORD OF ALL AND THE LORD GOD OMNIPOTENT REIGNETH.

18 "The Spirit of the Lord is upon Me,
Because He has anointed Me to preach the gospel to the poor.
He has sent Me to heal the broken hearted,
To proclaim liberty to the captives
And recovery of sight to the blind,
To set at liberty those who are oppressed,
19 "To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord."

Luke 4:18-19 NKJV

To the Reader:

I am pleased and honored to be able to heartily recommend *THE EGYPTIAN-MASONIC-SATANIC CONNECTION*. As a former member of both the occult fraternity and the Masonic fraternity who has now chosen to serve the Lord Jesus Christ instead, I must say that David Carrico's book is a ground-breaker in many ways. It accurately captures the ancient evil which undergirds the Lodge and then brings it right up to the present day with practical, Biblical solutions. It opens up several new lines of insight for me in my sutdies.

I think it is a powerful resource tool for the lay-person, pastor and Christian worker who wish to understand more about Masonry, Satanism, and their impact upon the people they encounter in their service of the King of Kings, both in terms os prayer intercession and counseling.

Your fellow bond-servant in Jesus,

Bill Schnoebelen

Author of: *BLOOD ON THE DOORPOSTS, LUCIFER DETHRONED, WICCA: STATN'S LITTLE WHITE LIE, AND MASONRY BEYOND THE LIGHT*, and co-authored many other books. Founder of WITH ONE ACCORD MINISTRIES, P. O. Box 457, Dubuque, Iowa 52004-0457.

THE EGYPTIAN-MASONIC-SATANIC CONNECTION

(With Revised And Updated Documentation)

CHAPTER 1 - OUR INTENTION !

In this book we present a theory that there is a connection between Freemasonry, Egyptian rituals and Satanic ritual abuse. The fact that there is a connection between these things and occult crime is now impossible to deny. The mass murderer called the zodiac killer is a sad but classic example.

A Signature Taken From the *Book of the Dead*

> The satanic killer taunted his pursuers by sending coded messages and letters to the newspapers. His "signature" was a cross within a circle.
>
> "He claims he's killing people to be his slaves in the afterlife," a police investigator stated. "He has a great knowledge of the occult. His signature, or insignia, was taken directly from the Egyptian *Book of the Dead*, where it was used as a symbol of death."[1]

Convicted 'Son of Sam' killer David Berkowitz also testified in the quote below that the satanic cult that he was involved in was strongly influenced by the writings of Freemasons Aleister Crowley and Eliphas Levi. This cult used a "death oath" of secrecy as does Freemasonry.

> At one time I was a member of an occult group. Being sworn to secrecy or death I cannot reveal the name of the group, nor do I wish to. This group contained a mixture of Satanic practices, including the teachings of Aleister Crowley and Eliphas Levi. It was and is totally blood oriented and I am certain you know just what I mean. The coven's doctrines are a blend of ancient Druidism.... the secret orders of the Golden Dawn, black magick, and a host of other unlawful and obnoxious practices.
>
> To break away completely is impossible because of a pact each new member signs in his own blood. Also each new and carefully screened recruit supplies a picture... of all his family, plus their addresses. These items are used, if necessary, as tools for blackmail, coercion, and eventually physical harm should one attempt to betray the group.[2]

In his investigation of the 'Son of Sam' murders, Maury Terry uncovered evidence that the man responsible for directing the cult that committed the murders was a Freemason who used his business connections to further the goals of the satanic cult. As recorded in his book, *The Ultimate Evil*, Terry states:

> The top leader of the Children, not surprisingly, was said to be a lawyer who dealt in real estate, or a real estate man who also held a law degree....
>
> The Children's leader was further said to be a Mason, rank unknown, and to have owned or kept dogs. "Berkowitz occasionally watched the guy's dogs for him,".....
>
> This man--about whom multiple, intricate details were provided--is allegedly responsible for directing the group which committed the Son of Sam murders and other violent crimes.[3]

We will also be resenting a theory that much of today's ritual Satanic child abuse could stem from Secret Societies that are using Masonic and Egyptian rituals. Such pseudo-Masonic cults have been around for a long time and have a history of advocating violence.

If we do our job well, by the time you finish reading this book, you will have an awareness and a compassion for the children who are suffering at the hands of Satanists around the world. THIS BOOK WILL BE VERY GRAPHIC AND SOMETIMES SHOCKING BECAUSE IT WILL SAY SOME VERY HARD THINGS THAT HAVE A GREAT NEED TO BE SAID! IT WILL BE A GRAPHIC "EXPOSE" OF WHAT CAN RIGHTLY BE CALLED THE ULTIMATE EVIL.

We need to pray that law enforcement officials will become aware of this problem and learn how to put these hideous offenders behind bars. Such was the case in Dade County Florida, with Frank Fuster. The charges that were made against Frank Fuster were very disturbing.

> There were sixteen actual charges against Fuster. He was accused of eight separate counts of sexual battery and seven lewd and lascivious assaults. The last count was a charge of aggravated assault compassing different acts committed on twenty-one children. The Prosecution argued that Fuster on several occasions had threatened the children by wearing masks, making verbal threats, dancing naked, fondling sex organs, defecating and urinating in the presence of the children, by administering drugs, confining them against their will, and compelling them to eat excrement.[4]

Frank Fuster's wife Iliana:

> claimed that Frank had beaten her into submission and said Frank continually tried to insert a cross into her rectum, that he dosed her with drugs every night, that he tied her up, threatened her with a power drill, and forced her to have oral sex and give drugs to the children.[5]

No doubt, reading this has made you feel uncomfortable, and well it should. Perhaps that you, along with many, will say that you don't want to HEAR about it. BUT YOU DO NEED TO HEAR ABOUT IT! Until we are made aware of it (and unfortunately, even after we are made aware of it) INNOCENT CHILDREN WILL CONTINUE TO SUFFER at the hands of the Satanists and also often at hands of the authorities, BECAUSE MANY REFUSE TO BELIEVE THEIR DISCLOSURES! This UNBELIEF is part of Satan's plan; to make the abuse so cruel and hideous that no one would believe that anyone could do such a thing to a helpless child.

This is how the defense was conducted for Frank Fuster. Fuster owned a $ 150,000 home and was the head of the Country Walk Day Care Center. Because of those facts, Fuster's attorneys led people to believe that the charges against him were an impossibility. His lawyers stated:

> Now the government wants you to believe all the allegations these children eventually made about being abused. Now, these are children who also said that they ate heads, sipped ants through straws, saw doody monsters,[6]

Fuster's lawyers, however, were not able to convince the jury.

> ..it proved difficult to explain to the jury how Frank Fuster's seven-year old son, Jamie came to be infected with gonorrhea of the throat or why Jamie's father had recently taken a photo of him seated on a toilet, the surrounding floor smeared thickly with excrement.[7]

Frank Fuster was found guilty and will not be eligible for parole until the year 2150. Since he has been in prison, Fuster tried to hire a man to kill his wife by offering him the video tapes of the rituals he did with the children. Frank Fuster is a horrible reminder that RITUAL SATANIC CHILD ABUSE DOES HAPPEN!!

The exposure and conviction of Frank Fuster had some far-reaching effects.

> Parents initially reacted with shock, guilt, and denial. Government officials in Florida reacted strongly to the widely publicized case by assembling task forces, drafting tougher legislation, and running on election platforms in 1984 denouncing child molestation. A wave of media attention brought to light at least fourteen other child abuse arrests. Forty illegal child-care facilities were shut down in a matter of weeks. An emergency session of the legislature was held in 1985, and some forty bills pertaining to child welfare were introduced.[8]

As we see in Frank Fuster's case, SOMEONE DID BELIEVE THE CHILDREN and there was some retribution. This, unfortunately, is not always the way it ends up. I regret to say that the community's response and the response of the official authorities to Satanic ritual abuse, often is not that good. Just try to imagine

how the children must feel; children who have told the truth to someone who is supposed to protect them from the ones who hurt them - and still they are not believed by the authorities. Many times the child and the mother are left at the mercy of a system that does not protect them. Hopefully, this book will be one small shot in the war to prevent ritual houses from becoming as one of Fuster's victims said:

"the house into which God could not see." [9]

Also, during the course of this book, it is hoped that the Anti-Christ nature of Freemasonry will be made known to many. Even those Masons who are repulsed by Satanism and child molestation are guilty of participating in pagan and occult rituals and of propagating a system that could provide a cloak of secrecy for evil deeds.

If you think that Egypt, Masonry, and Satanism are three odd topics to group together, you will discover by the end of our book that these are three intricately intertwined and interwoven subjects. You will come to see that there is an Egyptian-Masonic-Satanic Connection. The search for the solution takes us back to faith in the shed blood of Jesus Christ, the Son of God, of whom it was said:

> (1 John 3:8 KJV) He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

Many have chosen to remain silent while the innocent suffer.

Therefore We Speak !

> (2 Corinthians 13:8 KJV) For we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth.

CHAPTER 2 - THE MYSTERY RELIGIONS

In this chapter we will be examining the pagan mystery religions that had their origin in ancient Babylon. These pagan mysteries will be used by Satan in the time of the end to form the backbone of the apostate church that is prophesied in scripture.

> (Revelation 17:1-6 KJV) And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will show unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: {2} With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication. {3} So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. {4} And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: {5} And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. {6} And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.

To lay the groundwork for our study, we are going to begin by making a brief study of the Ancient Mystery Religions. We are going to quote an article from Mackey's Revised Encyclopedia of Freemasonry to try to understand what the mystery religions were.

> Each of the Pagan gods, says Warburton....had, besides the public and open, a secret worship paid to him, to which none were admitted but those who had been selected by preparatory ceremonies called Initiation. This secret worship was termed the Mysteries.[10]

This statement confirms the fact, that in addition to the public worship that the average person could attend, secret meetings for the "initiated" were also held in secluded areas, caves, and behind closed doors. The ancient mystery religions functioned in the same manner as modern secret societies function with members sworn by oath not to reveal what goes on at the meetings.

This certainly seems like a strange way to operate. If what they were doing was so great and Godly and wonderful, why didn't they tell everyone so that all could come and learn about the things of God? There certainly was a reason why they didn't want the public to know what they did at their secret meetings, but their

reason had nothing whatsoever to do with God. As we trace the Ancient Mystery Religions back to their origin we can easily understand why they had to do what they did under the cloak of secrecy. This is not the way of the knowledge and worship of the true God! He wants the worship of Him to be open, public, above board, and free to all that all may come and hear the life-changing Gospel of Jesus Christ.

> (Isaiah 45:19 KJV) I have not spoken in secret, in a dark place of the earth: I said not unto the seed of Jacob, Seek ye me in vain: I the LORD speak righteousness, I declare things that are right.
>
> (John 18:20 KJV) Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the world; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews always resort; and in secret have I said nothing.

THE ORIGIN OF THE MYSTERY RELIGIONS

To get back to the very beginning of the mystery religions we must begin with a man named Nimrod. The Bible speaks of Nimrod in the tenth chapter of Genesis as being a member of the family of Ham, one of the sons of Noah.

> (Genesis 10:6-10 KJV) And the sons of Ham; Cush, and Mizraim, and Phut, and Canaan. {7} And the sons of Cush; Seba, and Havilah, and Sabtah, and Raamah, and Sabtechah: and the sons of Raamah; Sheba, and Dedan. {8} And Cush begat Nimrod: he began to be a mighty one in the earth. {9} He was a mighty hunter before the LORD: wherefore it is said, Even as Nimrod the mighty hunter before the LORD. {10} And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel, and Erech, and Accad, and Calneh, in the land of Shinar.

According to the Jewish historian Flavius Josephus, Nimrod was the man who was responsible for the building of the Tower of Babel. **This is the first recorded attempt of man trying to establish a One World Government and a Universal Religion in opposition to God.**

> Now it was Nimrod who excited them to such an affront and contempt of God. He was the grandson of Ham, the son of Noah, a bold man, and of great strength of hand. He persuaded them not to ascribe it to God, as if it was through his means that they were happy, but to believe that it was their own courage which procured that happiness. He also gradually changed the government into tyranny, -seeing no other way of turning men from the fear of God, but to bring them into a constant dependence upon his power. He also said he would be revenged on God, if he should have a mind to drown the world again; for that he would build a tower too high for the waters to be able to reach! and that he would avenge himself on God for destroying their

forefathers![11]

God did not want a **One World Government or a New World Order** ruled by the tyranny and oppression of man, but it was his will that the peoples of the earth be divided into nations and spread over all of the earth. Genesis 10:25 appears to refer to God's first attempt to divide the people of the earth into nations.

> (Genesis 10:25 KJV) And unto Eber were born two sons: the name of one was Peleg; for in his days was the earth divided; and his brother's name was Joktan.

Expositor Robert Candlish comments on Genesis 10:25:

> Eber receives a commission from God to divide the earth among them--to announce to the several tribes and families their appointed homes, and to lay down, as on a map, their different routes and destinations. This charge he executes, and in memory of so remarkable a transaction, he gives the name of Peleg, signifying "division," to his son, born about the time when it took place.[12]

It is clearly God's will as revealed in the Scriptures for the people of the Earth to be divided into nations and therefore the action of Nimrod in building the Tower of Babel was clearly an act of rebellion against God.

> (Deuteronomy 32:8 KJV) When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when he separated the sons of Adam, he set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel.

> (Acts 17:26 KJV) And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation;

The plan of Nimrod failed because God intervened and confounded their language.

> (Genesis 11:7-8 KJV) Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech. {8} So the LORD scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city.

The Bible also tells us that one day the dream of Nimrod for a One World Government and a One World Religion will be realized in the man that the book of Revelation calls the Beast.

> (Revelation 13:7-8 KJV) And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations. {8} And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

Nimrod was apparently killed because of his open and public displays of wickedness. Herein lies the real reason for the establishment of the secret mystery religion. It was not created out of any desire to spread the real truth about God but only to protect themselves from public outcry and retribution because of the wicked acts that they were committing. The following commentary is from Rev. Alexander Hilsop's book, *The Two Babylons*:

> It seems to have been now only when the dead hero was to be deified, that the secret Mysteries were set up. The previous form of apostasy during the life of Nimrod appears to have been open and public. Now it was evidently felt that publicity was out of the question.[13]

In the *History of Freemasonry* published by the Masonic History Company, we find that Nimrod is honored as a "great Mason" and his early attempt at establishing a "New World Order" earned him the distinction of being called the "first Grand Master".

> We see, therefore, that the Masons of the present day are wrong when they make Babel or Babylon the symbol of intellectual darkness, and suppose that there the light of Masonry was for a time extinguished, to be re-illumined only at the Temple of Solomon.
>
> And, again, the *Legend of the Craft* vindicates its character, and correctly clothes an historical fact in symbolic language, when it portrays Babylonia, which was undoubtedly the fountain of all Semitic science and architecture, as also the birth-place of Operative Masonry.[14]

> The universal sentiment of the Masons of the present day is to confer upon Solomon, King of Israel, the honor of being their "first Grand Master." But the *Legend of the Craft* had long before, though there was a tradition of the temple extant, bestowed, at least by implication, that title upon Nimrod, the King of Babylonia and Assyria.[15]

> The Craft have in both forms of the legend recognized Nimrod as a great Mason, nor have the vituperations of Josephus and the scandalous legends of the orientalists had the slightest effect on their apparent estimation of that mighty monarch, the founder of nations and the builder of cities.[16]

While the ancient Kingdom of Babylon fell, its religion conquered all who conquered it and spread its system of evil all over the world. Once again, from Hilsop's book, *The Two Babyons*:

> ...it will be readily perceived that, in these circumstances, if idolatry was to continue–if, above all, it was to take a step in advance, it was indispensable that it should operated in secret. The terror of an execution, inflicted on one so mighty as Nimrod, made it needful that, for some time to come at least, the extreme of caution should be used. In these circumstances, then, began, there can hardly be a doubt, that system of "Mystery," which, having Babylon for its center, has spread over the world. In these Mysteries, under the seal of secrecy and the sanction of an oath, and by means of all the fertile resources of magic, men were gradually led back to all the idolatry that had been publicly suppressed, while new features were added to that idolatry that made it still more blasphemous than before.[17]

This Mystery Religion, with its origin established in the ancient kingdom of Babylon, is still being carried on by various groups today. These groups which are propagating the Ancient Religion of Satan form the cornerstone of what the Bible calls in Revelation Chapter seventeen, "Mystery Babylon". Even in its infant stages this Satanic form of worship contained the trappings of what we know as modern Satanism with its occult symbols, ritual fires, candles, and other occult paraphernalia. Comments from Woodrow's book, *Babylon Mystery Religion*:

> Much of the Babylonian worship was carried on through mysterious symbols–it was a "mystery" religion. Since the deified Nimrod was believed to be the sun god, fire was considered his earthly representation. Thus, as we shall see, candles and ritual fires were lighted in his honor. In other forms, he was symbolized by sun images, fish, trees, pillars, and animals.[18]

We see another connection between the Ancient Mystery Religions and Modern Satanism in learning from Masonic authority Albert Pike that the Mystery Religions were celebrated at the Autumnal Equinox and the Spring Equinox - two days that are also celebrated by Modern Satanists as Satanic holidays.

Quoted from Albert Pike's book, *Morals and Dogma*:

> We celebrate the August Mysteries of Ceres and Proserpine," says the Emperor Julian, "at the Autumal equinox, to obtain of the gods that the soul may not experience the malignant action of the Power of Darkness that is then about to have sway and rule in Nature."[19]
>
> Ezekiel speaks of the festivals of Adonis under the name of those of Thammuz, an Assyrian Deity, whom every year the women mourned, seated

at the doors of their dwellings. These Mysteries, like the others, were celebrated in the Spring, at the Vernal Equinox, when he was restored to life; at which time, when they were instituted, the Sun (Adon, Lord, or Master) was in the Sign Taurus, the domicile of Venus.[20]

The Ritual Calendar below is from *The Edge of Evil*, by Jerry Jonston.

January 7	St. Winebald Day	Blood Rituals
January 17	Satanic Revels	Sexual Rituals
February 2	Satanic Revels	Sexual Rituals
February 25	St. Walpurgis Day	Blood Rituals
March 1	St. Eichatadt Day	Blood Rituals
March 20	Equinox Feast Day	Sexual Rituals
April 26-May 1	Grand Climax	Blood Rituals
June 21	Solstice Feast Day	Sexual Rituals
July 1	Demon Revels	Blood Rituals
August 3	Satanic Revels	Sexual Rituals
September 7	Marriage to the Beast	Sexual Rituals
September 20	Midnight Host	Blood Rituals
September 22	Equinox Feast Day	Sexual Rituals
October 29	All Hallow Eve	Blood Rituals
November 1	Halloween	Sexual Rituals
November 4	Satanic Revels	Sexual Rituals
December 22	Solstice Feast Day	Sexual Rituals
December 24	High Grand Climax	Blood Rituals

In addition to the above dates, a satanic group member's birthday is considered a special holiday. .....,the satanic calendar revolves every 28 years, culminating in a year-long series of celebrations called the "Feast of the Beast." The next Feast of the Beast will occur in the year 2009.[21]

By comparing this Ritual Calendar with the information previously quoted from Albert Pike you can see that the days held sacred for the celebration of the Mystery Religions are indeed days that are used by Satanists for Satanic rituals. In the following statement by Masonic authority Albert Pike the satanic nature of the Mystery Religions can once again be seen.

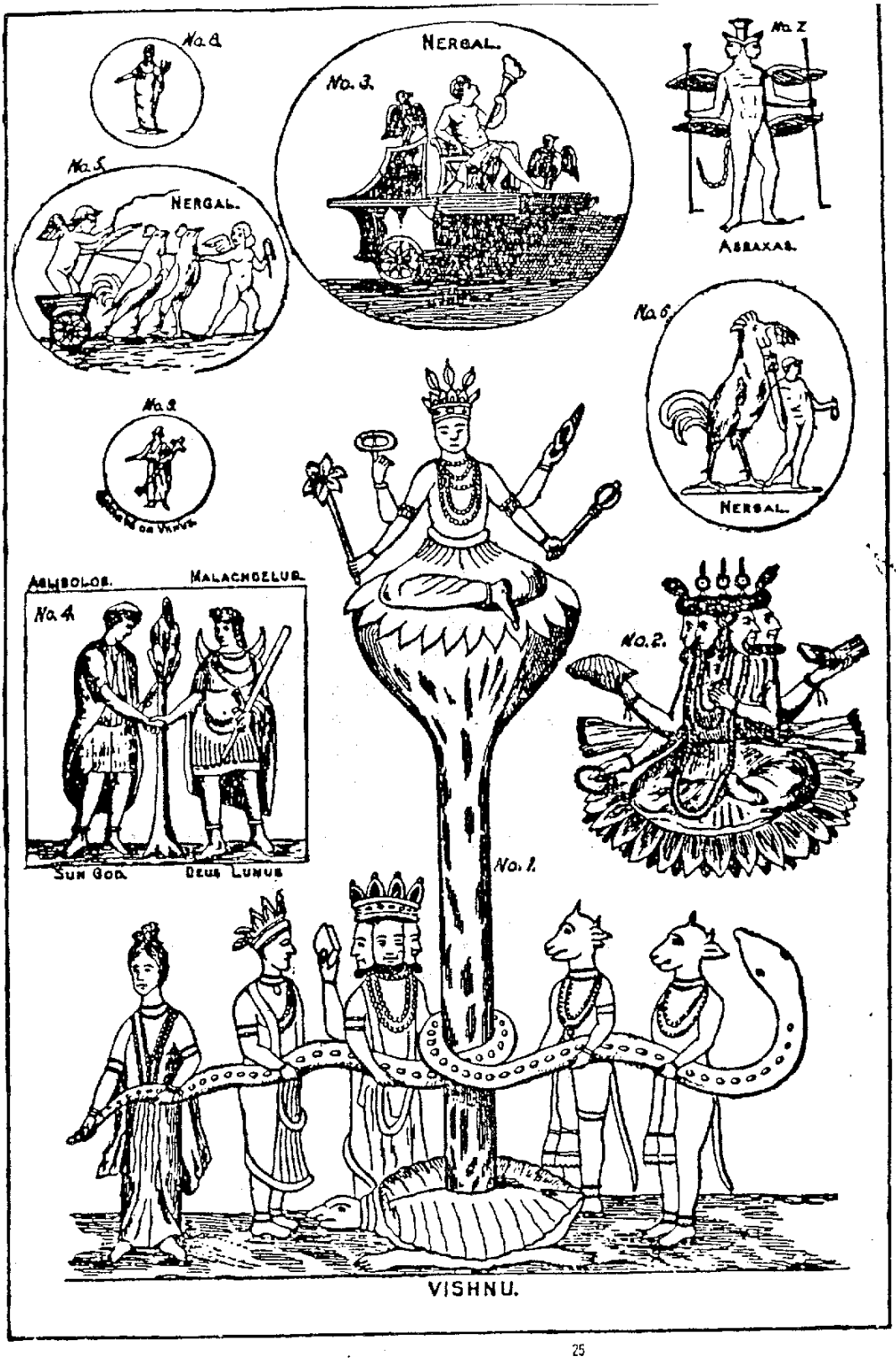
> The powers revered in the Mysteries were all in reality Nature-Gods;[22]

The pagan origins of Freemasonry becomes apparent as we examine the two pages of pictures of pagan gods. The pictures are taken from *The History of Freemasonry* published by the Masonic History Company. These pictures are given the following explanation in the *History of Freemasonry*.

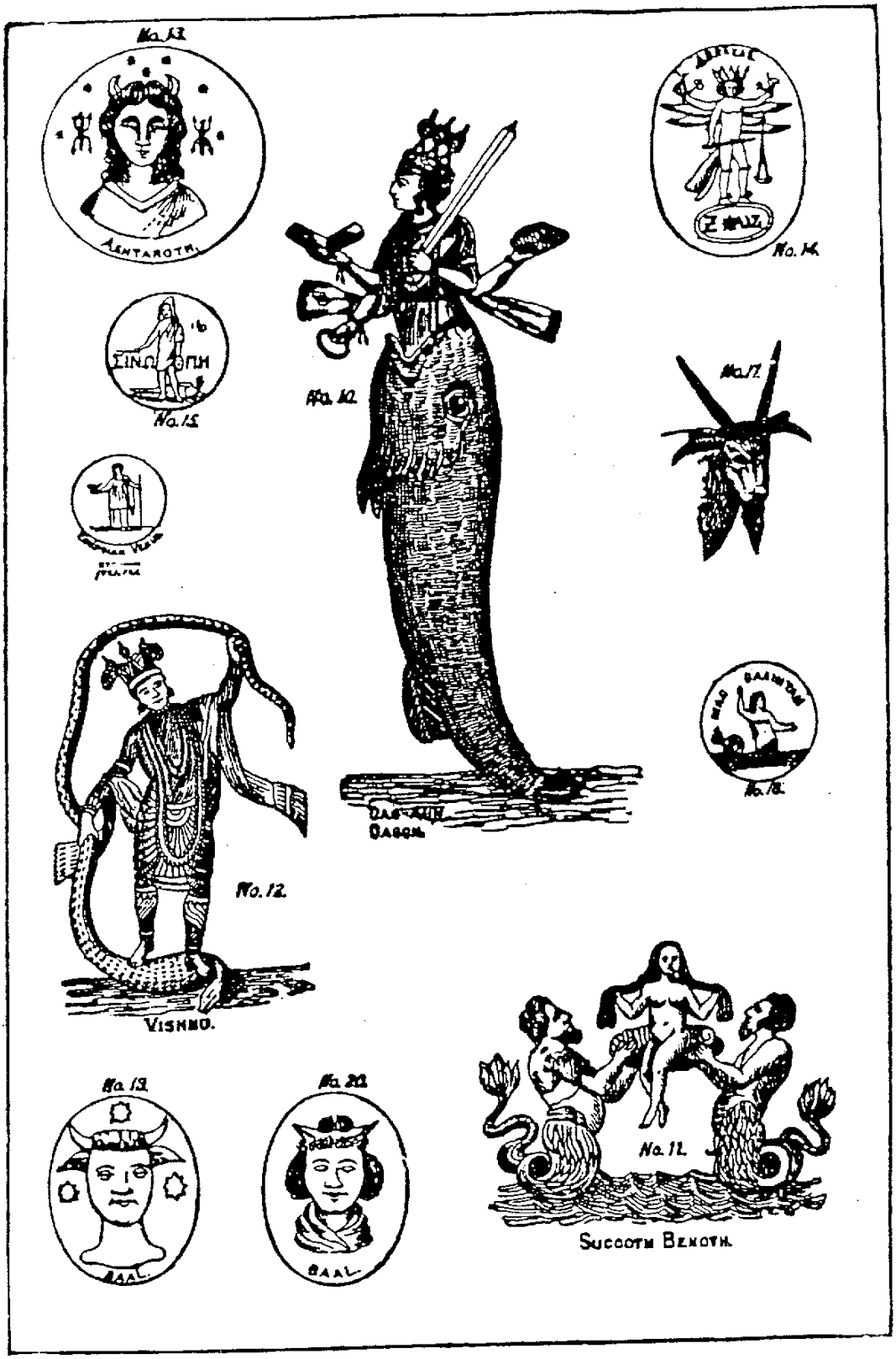
> "Krause gives ample proof that the Colleges of Artificers made use of symbols derived from the implements and usages of their craft.[23]
>
> It would, indeed, be strange if, with such an education, the various craftsmen had failed to have imbued their trades with that same symbolic spirit which was infused into all their religious rites and their public and private acts."
>
> In plates 1 and 2 (pages 1719 and 1720) we have shown a very few of the symbols used by the Ancients in their mythologies, and which are copied from Calmet, and herewith is a short description of each.[24]

According to the Bible the worship of idols and other gods will bring us into fellowship with demons.

> (1 Corinthians 10:19-20 KJV) What say I then? that the idol is any thing, or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing? {20} But I say, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God: and I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils.


No. 8
No. 3.
NERGAL.
No. 7
ABRAXAS.
No. 5.
NERGAL.
No. 6.
NERGAL.
No. 9
ASHBOLOS.
MALACHBELUS.
No. 4.
SUN GOD.
DEUS LUNUS.
No. 2.
No. 1.
VISHNU.

25


No. 13.
No. 14.
No. 15.
No. 12.
VISHNU.
No. 13.
No. 11.
SUCCOTH BENOTH.

Thus, in the Mystery Religions, a system was set up that brought people into direct demonic contact and schooled them in the occult arts. In this chapter we have learned what the Ancient Mystery Religions were and how they came about. We have revealed their satanic nature and have identified them as what the Bible calls Mystery Babylon. In the next chapter we will be showing the direct connection between the Mystery Religions and the Most Powerful Secret Society in the world today - the Masonic Lodge.

Among these pictures of gods that were taken from the Masonic History Book are the pagan dieties who were the most viscous opponents of God's people in the pages of Scripture. On page 13, upper left No. 13 is the goddess Ashtoreth; center page No. 10 is the pagan god Dagon; lower left No. 19 and No. 20 are of the god Baal to whom human children were sacrificed; and toward the top left No. 17 is the Satanic Goat of Mendes.

CHAPTER 3 - FREEMASONRY AND HUMAN SACRIFICE

In this chapter we will reveal the definite possibility of a connection between Freemasonry and human sacrifice. We will do this by simply presenting documentation and drawing logical conclusions. The points that will be established are as follows:

- 1. THE CONNECTION BETWEEN FREEMASONRY AND THE MYSTERY RELIGIONS.
- 2. THE CONNECTION BETWEEN THE MYSTERY RELIGIONS AND HUMAN SACRIFICE.

  Having established that there *is* a definite CONNECTION BETWEEN FREEMASONRY AND THE MYSTERY RELIGIONS - and also that there *is* a definite CONNECTION BETWEEN THE MYSTERY RELIGIONS AND HUMAN SACRIFICE – this logically necessitates the possibility that there *is* a -

- 3. CONNECTION BETWEEN FREEMASONRY AND HUMAN SACRIFICE; and documentation toward that conclusion will be presented.

We have chosen, for the sake of our research, to take the advice of one of these Masonic books that we will be quoting and read some of the stories of the Mystery Religions. To be precise, we will research the **best possible place to learn about Freemasonry and the Mystery Religions - a book written on the subject by a Freemason.**

*** Please understand that what we are going to quote is very graphic and quite offensive to most Christians, however we feel we must present evidence to support our conclusions. We feel it is best to let you, the reader, see the true depth of evil that is contained in the Mystery Religions.** Many Masons would like to present this material as harmless to their spiritual walk.

■ 1. THE CONNECTION BETWEEN FREEMASONRY AND THE MYSTERY RELIGIONS

There is certainly no shortage of testimonies by Masonic authorities as to the relationship of Freemasonry and the Mystery Religions. According to Joseph Fort Newton, Masonry is the "spiritual descendant" of the Mysteries. Joseph Fort Newton was a 33° Mason who served as Past Grand Chaplain of the Grand Lodge of Iowa and Past Grand Prelate of the Grand Encampment of Knights Templar of the United States. In his book, *The Builders*, he states:

> Masonry stands in this tradition; and if we may not say that it is historically related to the great ancient orders, it is their spiritual descendant, and renders much the same ministry to our age which the Mysteries rendered to the olden world.[27]

In his book, *The Meaning of Masonry*, W.L. Wilmshurst, the Past Provincial Grand Registrar (West Yorks) makes the following statement:

> It remains with the Craft itself whether it shall enter upon its own heritage as a lineal successor of the ancient Mysteries and Wisdom–teaching, or whether, by failing so to do, it will undergo the inevitable fate of everything that is but a form from which its native spirit has departed.[28]

The book, *Freemasonry Its Hidden Meaning*, by George H. Steinmetz, published by Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Company, calls the "teaching of the Mysteries, the true parent of Freemasonry" and states that Freemasonry is a descendent or reincarnation of the Mysteries.

> It is entirely out of harmony with the profound teaching of the Mysteries, the true parent of Freemasonry.[29]

> If Freemasonry is the actual descendant or, if one prefers the term, reincarnation of the Mysteries, back of its "veil of allegory," then must be concealed a deeper truth than expounded in the various lectures of the degrees.[30]

It is from this book, *The Spirit of Masonry*, by Foster Bailey, that we will take a quote concerning Masonry and the Mystery Religions. Bailey plainly says that Masonry is carrying on the work of the ancient Mystery schools.

> Study of spiritual realities found in Masonry reveals that we have perpetuated and increasingly activated the essential principals of the ancient Mystery Schools which have existed from the very earliest times.[31]

The Masonic authority, Albert Pike, also testifies to the relation of Freemasonry to the Mystery Religions.

> The Mysteries, like the symbols of Masonry, were but an image of the eloquent analogies of Nature;.....[32]

> Masonry, successor of the Mysteries, still follows the ancient manner of teaching. Her ceremonies are like the ancient mystic shows,–not the reading of an essay, but the opening of a problem, requiring research, and constituting philosophy the arch-expounder.[33]

Freemason Albert Churchwood writes in his book about the connection between Freemasonry and the religion of Babylon:

But the secrets these operative Masons had were received from the Chaldean Magicians.[34]

The next documentation, a Masonic oath, the **OATH OF NIMROD**, is also from Churchwood's book.

Oath of Nimrod

Apprentice Degree (1st).

I,.....do , in the presence of El Shaddai and of this Worshipful Assembly of Free Masons, Rough Masons, Wallers, Slaters, Paviors, Plaisterers and Bricklayers, promise and declare that I will not at any time hereafter, by any act or circumstance whatsoever, directly or indirectly, write, print, cut, mark, publish, discover, reveal, or make known, any part or parts of the Trade secrets, privileges, or counsells of the Worshipful Fraternity or Fellowship of Free Masonry, which I may have known at any time, or at any time hereafter shall be made known unto me.

The penalty for breaking this great oath shall be the loss of my life.

That I shall be branded with the mark of the Traitor and slain according to ancient custom by being throtalled, that my body shall be buried in the rough sands of the sea a cable's length from the shore where the tide regularly ebbs and flows twice in the twenty-four hours, so that my soul shall have no rest by night or by day–

(*Candidate Signs the O.B.*)

Given under my hand and sealed with my lips, this day of 1913.

So help me El Shaddai and the holy contents of this book.[35]

The Masonic Lodge in Indiana makes no effort to hide its connection with the Mystery Religions. It openly boasts of its connection with the Ancient Mysteries. *The Master Mason*, a book authorized by the Grand Lodge F.& A.M. of Indiana and compiled by the Committee on Masonic Education, plainly shows the connection between Hiram Abiff and the Mystery Religions.

The idea that lies behind the Hiramic legend is as old as religious thinking among men. The same elements existed in the story of Osiris, which was celebrated by the Egyptians in their ancient temples; the old Persians told it concerning Mithras, their hero god. In Syria, the Dionysian Mysteries had the very same elements in the story of Dionysius: for the

> Romans, Bacchus was the god who died and lived again. There is also the story of Tammuz, older than any of these. These are collectively referred to as the ancient mysteries. They were celebrated by secret societies, much like ours, with allegorical ceremonies, during which the initiates were advanced from one degree to another in these old societies. Read these old stories for yourself and marvel how men in all ages have taught the same great truths in the same effective way.[36]

The book, *The Master Mason*, quoted above **challenges the Freemason to read the stories of these Old Mystery Religions to see how they teach the same "great truths" as Freemasonry**. The truth is: the Mystery Religions were the enemies of the church in New Testament times; they were pagan and Satanic, loaded with rituals that included sexual perversion and even human sacrifice.

In the previous quote, the Indiana lodge proudly states that Hiram Abiff had a direct relationship to Tammuz, which was clearly denounced as an abomination by the Old Testament prophets.

> (Ezekiel 8:13-14 KJV) He said also unto me, Turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations that they do. {14} Then he brought me to the door of the gate of the LORD'S house which was toward the north; and, behold, there sat women weeping for Tammuz.

We have seen how the passage in Ezekiel condemned this type of rite as an abominatin to the Lord. We have read how the Indiana lodge knows the connection of Hiram Abiff and Tammuz; however, we have met many Freemasons, claiming to be Christians, who proudly defend their membership in the Masonic Lodge. The idea of such statements is staggering!

Other Masonic authors also brag about the connection between Freemasonry and the Ancient Mysteries, the Ancient Wisdom, and the Occult, etc. Henry C. Clausen, 33° Sovereign Grand Commander says in his book, *Your Amazing Mystic Powers*:

> A new day is dawning for Freemasonry. From the insufficiencies of modern theology, the hopelessness of materialism, and the sterility of academic philosophy, men are turning to those eternal truths perpetuated in the arcana of the ancient mysteries.[37]

Mason S. R. Parchment states in his book, *Ancient Operative Masonry*:

> The hierophants of the universal science and sublime philosophy taught in the Great Mysteries of Egypt, India, Persia, Chaldea and other nations of antiquity, revealed certain secrets pertaining to the finer forces of

> nature to such candidates as were worthy and well qualified. These faithful ones were also instructed in the doctrine of universal Brotherhood, and finally initiated into the "I am that I am" consciousness. These ideals are the landmarks, traditions and glyphics of Ancient Operative Freemasonry–nothing more.[38]

Mason R. Swinburne Clymer, M. D., says in the introduction of his book, *The Mysticism of Masonry*:

> There are indeed many reasons why the present volume should be generously circulated among all classes of students of the Occult and Mystic, especially the members of the Masonic bodies.[39]
>
> The vast majority of Masons smile with derision when the term "Occult Science" is used in connection with the Mysteries but, despite this, if it had not been for the Occult Fraternities, Masonry could not have existed.[40]
>
> It is the duty of every sincere Mason who is interested in the spirit of the teachings of his Order, carefully to study the philosophy of the masters who have reconstructed the Ancient Wisdom to suit his needs, and having done so, to guide his actions in all the affairs of life so as to be prepared for his entrance into the Great Lodge hall where he must give an account of all his deeds and in return receive his "Mark."[41]

And also from the book:

> All Masonry of the past dealt largely with the ethics and symbolism of the Ancient Mysteries. If the Masons of the present age will but seek for the spirit of the symbolism upon which the degrees are based, the grandest achievements in the knowledge and reconstruction will be possible and the mysteries concealed in the Greater Mysteries of Antiquity will be recovered to them.[42]

Another Masonic author J. D. Buck 32° makes these statements in his introduction of his book, *Symbolism or Mystic Masonry*:

> Freemasonry is modeled on the plan of the Ancient Mysteries, with their glyphics and allegories, and this is no mere coincidence; the parallels are too closely drawn.[43]

In his book, *A Bridge to Light*, published by the Supreme Council of U.S.A., 32° Freemason Rex R. Hutchens explains about the 23rd degree in the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry:

> Here we begin the symbolic initiations into the Mysteries practiced by the ancients from whom Masonry has obtained her great truths.[44]

32° Rev. Charles H. Vail speaks about one of the rites in the Blue Lodge in his book, *Ancient Mysteries and Modern Masonry* published by the Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Co.:

The Rite of Circumambulation

> This Rite again connects Freemasonry with the Ancient Mysteries. It consists in a formal procession around the altar, and originally alluded to the apparent course of the sun which is from east to west. In ancient Greece the priests, during the Rites of sacrifice, walked three times around the altar while chanting a sacred hymn, which was divided into three parts, and each part was to be sung at a particular point in the procession. The analogy between this practice of the ancients and the recitations of a passage of Scripture in the Masonic circumambulation is quite apparent.[45]

Another Masonic author, Lynn F. Perkins states:

> At one point in the Ritual reference is made to the hidden Mysteries of Ancient Freemasonry. If there were no other references, or allusions, this one alone would be sufficient to indicate to any informed person that Modern Speculative Masonry is founded upon the Ancient Wisdom of the so-called "Mystery Schools" that are known to have existed in ancient Egypt, Persia, India, Tibet, Palistine, Asia Minor, Greece and Italy.[46]

We believe the documentation above should be sufficient to establish in the minds of honest-hearted people an undeniable link between the Masonic Lodge and the Mystery Religions. Not because we say so, but because we have read the testimony from their own Masonic authorities. It is clear that there are men who are using the modern Masonic Lodge to carry on the work of the ancient Mystery Religions. This is a cup of abomination from which Christians cannot drink.

> (Revelation 18:2-5 KJV) And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. {3} For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies. {4} And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. {5} For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.

2. THE CONNECTION BETWEEN THE MYSTERY RELIGIONS AND HUMAN SACRIFICE

The link between human sacrifice and the Mystery Religions can be established beyond a shadow of a doubt. The following description of the rites of Dionysus sounds very similar to the stories that are told by present day satanic cult survivors.

> DIONYSUS - In classical mythology, the god of wine and fertility. His cult was widespread in Thrace, where the Thracian women were particularly dedicated to his orgiastic rites. The women, Maenads, in their ecstatic frenzy, abandoned their homes, roamed the fields and hillsides, dancing, swinging their flaming torches. In their passion they caught and tore apart animals, sometimes even children, and devoured the flesh, thus acquiring communion with the divinity.[47]
>
> MYSTERY RELIGIONS - Certain pagan religions received initiates by secret rites that were not publicly divulged. **The secret knowledge thus acquired by the aspirant would ensure advantages in his present life and in the life after death.....**
> The Dionysiac mysteries were observed in different places. The ceremonies which were orgiastic, required the drinking of the sacred wine, the eating of raw flesh of the sacrificed animal, drinking its blood. The ultimate purpose of the cult was an assurance of immortality.....
> In Syria the mysteries, again involving a vegetation myth, centered around Adonis, the consort of the Nature Goddess, who dies and is reborn.
> The Egyptian mysteries of Isis and Osiris were popular throughout the Graeco-Roman world.[48]

Once again we feel we must apologize for the offensive nature of the quotes. However, as long as men will try to defend Freemasonry as something that is compatible with Christianity, we feel even more compelled to bring the facts to light and challenge Freemasons who profess Christianity to justify their membership in an organization that admits its association with the ancient mystery religions.

J. S. M. Ward explains in his book *Who Was Hiram Abiff?* how Freemasonry evolved from the 'great mystery rites' and also connects these rites with the fertility cults and also the blasphemous death and resurrection ceremonies of the 'corn maiden', etc..

> Out of these crude beginnings **evolved the great mystery rites, and Freemasonry itself**, wherein **men were taught the doctrine of the resurrection of the soul and of life beyond the grave.....All these primitive rites are associated with the fertility cult**, and in the case of the women their rites developed into a representation of the death and resurrection of the "corn maiden," called by the Greeks "Persephone," just as among the men it was the male spirit of vegetation, Tammuz, who predominated...from such societies as these that some of the ancient mysteries and the modern Rosicrucians evolved.[49]

■ 3. THE CONNECTION OF FREEMASONRY AND HUMAN SACRIFICE

Having established the first two points in this chapter we will now look into the possibility of a connection between Freemasonry and human sacrifice. We will begin by asking the question, **"Do the Freemasons know that there is a connection between the Mystery religions and human sacrifice?"**

The answer to that question is, "Some Masons absolutely do know about the Mystery religions and human sacrifice." To prove this point we will quote from a book written by Freemason J. S. M. Ward, *Who Was Hiram Abiff?*. This book is sold in the Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Company Catalogue. In the following quote, Ward describes a ritual of human sacrifice and cannibalism and then proceeds to describe those involved as people who were on the path of true knowledge and receiving light from the Supreme Master.

> In view of these rites my readers should bear in mind the fact that in the 16th century the Mexicans still sacrificed men as representatives of the gods. Among them was one who represented Qretzlcoatl, the god who wore ears of corn in his hair, and must closely corresponds with the Preserver in other lands. Many curious legends are told concerning this god, who, according to one account, was slain by three of the other gods.....
> It is, therefore, a significant fact that every year a man was chosen forty days before the date of the festival to represent this god and was clothed in his regalia, which included a sceptre shaped like a sickle. He was first bathed in a lake and then robed in the royal and divine robes. At the end of his forty days he was slain by having his heart torn from his body, which latter the worshipers subsequently ate.[50]
>
> Thus, after having performed a series of most ghastly human sacrifices, terminating with a cannibalistic feast, the priests of Ancient Mexico would solemnly preach a sermon inculcating a most exalted moral code. They laid it down that their flock must be kind and charitable, must lead a humble,

> quiet life, most [must] abhor evil and cling to the good, finally warning them of the doom of the wicked hereafter, while painting in glowing terms the joys of Paradise.
>
> Where did the Mexican priest learn such moral lessons? Not from the ghastly ceremony in which he had just taken part. Does it not show that the Supreme Master of All does send down messages of light to even his most backward children, and thereby leads them on from stage to stage of True Knowledge?[51]

For the author above to imply that God? (the Supreme Master of All) sends 'messages of light' after such 'gastly human sacrifices' is ridiculous. We feel that it is not the true light of God which would bring them to their knees in repentance and fear. Satan is the master of deception and confusion and these ceremonies described above help to prove that fact.

In the next quote Ward describes the disgusting human sacrifice and torture that took place in the cult of Adonis. Later in the same chapter Ward proudly agrees that Freemasonry is a descendant of the Adonis Cult.

> The custom of sacrificing animals by hanging and then stabbing them was widespread in Asia Minor, and at Heriapolis itself the victims were hung on a tree before they were burnt. We thus see that there is abundant evidence to show that in many areas the **human representatives of Adonis perished** by being fastened to a tree and stabbed, and a tree in fact is constantly associated with the sacrifice, no matter whether the victim is stabbed or, as at Heirapolis, burnt.
>
> Let us now turn to the **method of cutting off the male member and then letting the victim bleed to death**. The slow cruelty of this method seems quite early to have led to its mitigation, and the Rite developed in two directions. Either the victim lost his virile organ but the bleeding was stopped, or else a more expeditious method of causing his death was adopted, usually that of stabbing.[52]

> It is, however, well to remember that the cult of the vegetation god was, and is, far more widely spread than was the cult of the individual god Adonis, although this fact does not affect the other arguments **I shall set forth to show that Freemasonry is a descendant of the Adonis cult.**[53]

We must remind you that Ward's book quoted above is distributed by the Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Company. Freemason Ward had full knowledge of the torture, sex perversion, and human sacrifice rituals and clearly admits that Masonry is a descendant of the Adonis cult.

The Masonic symbol of the double-headed eagle stems from the pagan rites of human sacrifice.

> In this sculpture the youthful priest, or god, holds a *double-headed axe* in his left hand, which reminds us of the symbol of Sandan and of the Masonic gavel. In his right he holds a rod, which ends in an "Armless doll, with the symbol of the cross-barred oval instead of a head." which, of course, indicates his close connection with the two fertility deities. He is undoubtedly the son and lover of Astarte, while the bearded deity represents Moloch, or the god in his aspect of the former lover.
>
> Behind the young man are two goddesses, both standing on the same double-headed eagle, an emblem which at once calls to mind the double-headed eagle of the 30th degree, or Knights Kadosh. As the kadosh, or sacred men and women, were peculiarly associated with the worship of Astarte and Adonis, we cannot lightly brush aside this interesting detail.[54]

The association of the goat with Freemasonry does not come form the wild conjecture of anti-Masons, but from solid tradition. Speaking about a sculpture in Asia Minor Ward says:

> Beneath the outstretch arms of the god and goddess appear the forequarters of two goats, a fact which suggests that the popular association of the goat with modern Freemasonry may have some solid tradition behind it.[55]

According to Ward, the symbolism of the bee in Freemasonry is used because of the fact that the male bee is a sacrifice victim.

> In conclusion it must be remembered that at Antioch and Ephesus Cybele blended with Astarte and there we find Eunuch priests, some of whom are known as King-bees, which suggests that the survival of the Bee in Freemasonry may be due to the fact that it reminded men of the sacrifice the male insect makes in order that the Queen may be fertilised, the present theory that it is an emblem of industry being merely a later explanation put forward at a time when the original meaning had become lost.[56]

The author of a majority of these informative quotes, J.S.M. Ward had full knowledge of the pagan rites of human sacrifice and torture that took place in the rites of Astarte, Tammuz and Adonis. With this full knowledge he states that it is possible that a reformed version of the cult is still taking refuge in Freemasonry. To appreciate these quotes more fully, we will share with you the author's conclusion.

> We have abundant evidence also that human victims were regularly, at one time, sacrificed to Astarte.[57]

> The man who was sacrificed doubtless represented Tammuz, disguised as Diomede at a later date, to whom ultimately the sacrifice was transferred. The manner of the man's death was as follows: –He was led or dragged by youths (perhaps with a halter round his neck) around the altar three times. He was then stabbed in the throat with a spear, and his body was afterwards burnt on a pyre. The stabbing in the neck corresponds to the custom of cutting the throat of a ram for sacrifice, and perhaps the victim's three symbolic journeys were for the purpose of proving to the worshippers that he was a victim properly prepared.[58]
>
> The mourning for Tammuz occurred in the Spring, and the priests, worked up to a state of frenzy by the wild music of flutes and drums, slashed themselves so that the blood ran down, in order that it might fertilize the soil. At such times those desirous of entering the priesthood tore off all their clothing and, seizing one of the swords which stood ready, castrated themselves. Then holding the bleeding fragments in their hands, they ran through the streets and flung them into the houses, whose owners had thereupon to supply each of them with a complete outfit of female clothing, which henceforward they always had to wear.[59]
>
> Although the Greeks modified the rites of Adonis, we must not forget that their own legends indicate quite clearly that at one time human sacrifices were offered even in Greece, and the modification of the Adonis cult must therefore be fairly late.[60]
>
> Thus we find that the cult of Adonis not only dealt with death and resurrection, but its hero was murdered and the annual celebration started when a certain bright star appeared in the East at dawn.
> Further, we have seen that certain fragments of this cult still survive as popular customs in Europe to this day. This being so there is nothing impossible in a reformed version of it taking refuge in Freemasonry.[61]

The author spoke of the Astarte and Adonis cults that are described and studied in Chapter four of his book and he is boldly stating the connection of this cult with Freemasonry, and also the possibility of its existence in Freemasonry today in some modified form. Please read and contemplate the following quotes:

> One of these Kings of Tyre called himself Abi-Melech, which means "Father of the King" or "Father of Moloch," and is a title which implies that its bearer was the father of a God...From this we see that the title of Hiram Abiff, i.e., "Father of the Exaltation of Life," etc., becomes perfectly intelligible.[62]

In the passage above the connection is made between the King of Tyre, Moloch, and the Masonic hero

Hiram Abiff. In the Holy Bible, this chapter of God's word begins by rebuking the pride of the Prince of Tyrus.

> (Ezekiel 28:2 KJV) Son of man, say unto the prince of Tyrus, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Because thine heart is lifted up, and thou hast said, I am a God, I sit in the seat of God, in the midst of the seas; yet thou art a man, and not God, though thou set thine heart as the heart of God:

The next Bible passage tells the prophecy that begins to focus on the King of Tyre, who is the real power behind the Prince of Tyre, Satan himself.

> (Ezekiel 28:12-15 KJV) Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus, and say unto him, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty. {13} Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emeraid, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created. {14} Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. {15} Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee.

Moloch is well known in Scripture as the pagan god who was worshiped with the sacrifice of human children.

> (Leviticus 20:1-5 KJV) And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, {2} Again, thou shalt say to the children of Israel, Whosoever he be of the children of Israel, or of the strangers that sojourn in Israel, that giveth any of his seed unto Molech; he shall surely be put to death: the people of the land shall stone him with stones. {3} And I will set my face against that man, and will cut him off from among his people; because he hath given of his seed unto Molech, to defile my sanctuary, and to profane my holy name. {4} And if the people of the land do any ways hide their eyes from the man, when he giveth of his seed unto Molech, and kill him not: {5} Then I will set my face against that man, and against his family, and will cut him off, and all that go a whoring after him, to commit whoredom with Molech, from among their people.

There is no doubt that human sacrifice, torture, and sex perversion was very much a part of the Mystery Religions. The following quotes out of one chapter in Ward's book certainly are not short on information on human sacrifice. There is no doubt that he connects these rites to Hiram Abiff and Freemasonry.

> From the above we see that the Kings of Tyre were Priest-Kings and that King Hiram himself had a father who used the title of "Father of the god, Baal" and that this man appears to correspond with Hiram Abiff.[53]

Speaking of the different methods of the death of victims, Ward's book goes on to say:

> The most unusual method, however seems to have included burning, though often we find that the victim was killed before being placed on the funeral pyre. It is this **form of death which seems peculiarly associated with Melcarth or Moloch**.....[54]
>
> **Melcarth was the Baal, or Lord of Fertility**, who annually mated with the Great Mother, and in the consequence died, but was reincarnated in his son. As the living Divine King of the City he was worshipped under the title of Melcarth, but when he assumed his aspect of the Dying God he was bewailed as **Tammuz or Adonis**. In short, he was at once the husband and the son of Astarte.....
> It seems, moreover that the annual marriage of these kings consisted of a more or less temporary **union with the sacred women, or sacred prostitutes** as they are often called, who were always attached to the temples of Astarte. In Palestine, these women were called Kedehsoth (Kadosh), a word which, strictly speaking, means "Sacred Women." In such circumstances the supply of Divine men, the **offspring of such unions [were called] Sacred Men," the offspring of the sacred women....it was one of these sacred men who was annually slain**.....
>
> This story is almost identical with that told of Marsyas, who also was a Lover of Astarte and was slain and flayed by Apollo, who then **hung his skin on a tree. Similar gruesome rites occur in other parts of the world, notably in Mexico**, and we cannot avoid the conclusion that the legend describes a former practice of the **slaying the human representative of the Divine Lover, and hanging him, or his skin, on a tree as part of the Fertility Rites**.[55]
>
> Among the Mexicans the victim, **whose heart had been torn out, was subsequently eaten by the human worshippers**.[56]

Once again we have seen an undeniable connection with some of the practices that victim-survivors of Satanism relate such as bloody sacrifice, eating hearts, and hanging skins on trees, etc., and the Mystery Religions, and now the connection with all of these things and Freemasonry.

The symbolism of the twenty-four inch gauge in Freemasonry also stems from the Pagan rites of human sacrifice.

> In the Operative ritual the twenty-four inch gauge is replaced by a piece of wood which is called the "Straight-Edge," and with it the height of the candidate is measured. The straight-edge, like the twenty-four inch gauge, is retained by the Lodge, and according to this old belief the measure of the man remains attached to it and so his life principle is thus held hostage for his fidelity. Should he betray his trust, all that the indignant brethren need do is to bury that measuring stick under the next building they erect, and he will die.
>
> This, and not the fanciful explanation now given in the Speculative ritual, is undoubtedly the true origin of the twenty-four inch gauge. That the custom of sacrificing a man did not die out till quite late, is indicated by a local story of Castle Rising, Norfolk. According to this the Norman Baron who ordered it to be built murdered the architect and had him buried beneath the foundations. Local gossips say that not many years ago the skeleton of a man was found there.
>
> In like manner it was customary to sacrifice human victims at the Consecration or Completion of a building.....Even to-day there is a superstition that if a man is killed while a building is being erected that building will be lucky.[67]

The facts that we have learned about Freemasonry and human sacrifice in this chapter make the following newspaper article about a skeleton very interesting.

Skeleton may be from '50s

> Associated Press
>
> MIDDLETOWN, Ind. — The skeletal remains of an infant found in a closet of an old downtown building this week may be 40 years old, an investigator said.
>
> The remains were found by a 9-year-old boy who was helping his father run a television wire in their apartment.
>
> "We're guessing the baby might have been there since 1951 because a Superman comic was found in the storage space," said Police Chief James Tharp. "We also found a white corset, a cup and plate and open food containers"

Tharp said yesterday the Anderson Police Department crime laboratory was examining the remains to determine the age and sex of the infant.

The building, constructed in the late 1800's, houses an auto parts store on the first floor and an apartment on the second, where the closet is located. **The top floor housed the Masonic Lodge during the period that the body was believed to have been left in the closet, but it is vacant now.**

"The items found might not be related to the skeleton," Tharp said. "But if this took place in the 1950's, it might have been an unwed mother who tried to hide the fact she was pregnant by wearing the corset, and then hid in the storage area. We don't know at this point."[58]

IS IT POSSIBLE THAT WITHIN FREEMASONRY THE THINKING EXISTS THAT WOULD ALLOW FOR THE PRACTICE OF HUMAN SACRIFICE TO EXIST?

In the following quote from a book called, *Ancient Operative Masonry*, author S.R. Parchment talks about the mysterious Brothers of the shadow who practice human sacrifice. He then goes on to explain why a Brother of the Great White Lodge does not try to stop them. Parchment explains giving the typical New Age reasoning that it would limit their freedom of choice which will enable them to evolve into Godhood.

The Brothers of the Shadow who are in the flesh are usually very fearful of death and are, therefore, ever in quest of methods for prolonging their physical existence. The biblical statement that man may "Eat of the Tree of Life and live forever," is not to them a mere statement, and **for the purpose of prolonging their lives**, they have ferreted out and perpetuated among their clan many nefarious schemes too heinous to mention. When these methods fail, as a last resort **they sacrifice human beings and feast upon the flesh and blood of their victims**.

The question has often been asked, **why do the Brothers of the Great White Lodge**, who are said to be emissaries of God, permit such diabolical practices to be perpetuated throughout the ages? This question shows clearly that the mission of the Brothers of Light is not understood. My dear Reader! **Since these great souls are working in absolute harmony with cosmic law, they can at best only foster that which is good in whomsoever it is found.** A moment's thought on this subject should be sufficient to convince one that if the Great Ones were to influence man to do the things which they think best for his future welfare, they would be depriving him of the many valuable experiences so essential for the building of soul qualities. It is obvious that continued guidance from without would inevitably reduce man to an automaton; **while with freedom to choose, he evolves into a dynamic God.**[59]

CHAPTER 4 - A 33° MASON WHO DEFINITELY DID KNOW ABOUT HUMAN SACRIFICE: ALEISTER CROWLEY

33° Aleister Crowley would definitely get some votes in the "most wicked man who ever lived contest" and is the clear cut favorite for the title of "The Father of Modern Satanism". Crowley's wicked life and his intimate association with Freemasonry are both well known.

> Crowley himself was terribly decadent. A happily heroin-addicted, bisexual Satan worshiper, he asked people to call him "The Beast 666." Crowley believed that he was literally the antimessiah of the apocalypse.[70]

> During the first World War, Crowley transferred his activities to America. The press proclaimed him "the wickedest man in the world." He also spent time in Italy, but was expelled because Italian authorities accused his disciples of sacrificing human infants in occult rituals. According to one source, Crowley resided in the Abbey of Thelema near Cefalu Sicily, and revived ancient Dionysian ceremonies. During a 1921 ritual, he induced a he-goat to copulate with his mistress, then slit the animal's throat at the moment of orgasm.[71]

WAS ALEISTER CROWLEY JUST A 'CLOSET' FREEMASON?

Aleister Crowley was very proud of all his accomplishments and connections. He bragged about all of the Masonic medals and insignia that he was entitled to wear.

> This view was confirmed when The Arcane Schools of John Yarker came to me for review. I wrote to the author, who recognized my title to the 33° and conferred on me the grades of 95° Memphis and 90° Mizraim. It seemed as if I had somehow turned a tap. From this time on I lived in a perfect shower of diplomas, from Bucharest to Salt Lake City. I possess more exalted titles than I have ever been able to count. I am supposed to know more secret signs, tokens, passwords, grand words, grips, and so on, than I could actually learn in a dozen lives. An elephant would break down under the insignia I am entitled to wear.[72]

In the picture below, we see 33° Aleister Crowley in all of his Masonic regalia:

Baphomet, the Supreme and Holy King of Ireland, Iona, and all the Britains that are in the Sanctuary of the Gnosis, O.T.O. Crowley in full Masonic regalia, 1916.

PAST GRAND MASTER ALEISTER CROWLEY

FRATER SUPERIOR BAPHOMET XI°

73

CROWLEY'S DOCTRINE

We find in the next quotes, the 'doctrine' of 33° Aleister Crowley.

From *MAGICK in Theory and Practice*, by The Master Therion (Aleister Crowley):

> But the bloody sacrifice, though more dangerous, is more efficacious; and for nearly all purposes human sacrifice is the best.[74]

> The animal should therefore be killed within the Circle, or the Triangle, as the case may be, so that its energy cannot escape. An animal should be selected whose nature accords with that of the ceremony–thus, by sacrifcing a female lamb one would not obtain any appreciate quantity of the fierce energy useful to a Magician who was invoking Mars. In such acase a ram would be more suitable. And this ram should be virgin–the whole potential of its original total energy should not have been diminished in any way. For the highest spiritual working one must accordingly choose that victim which contains the greatest and purest force. A male child of perfect innocence and high intelligence is the most satisfactory and suitable victim.[75]

From *The Book of the Law*, by Aleister Crowley:

> With my Hawk's head I peck at the eyes of Jesus as he hangs upon the cross.....
> There is no law beyond Do what thou wilt.[76]

From SATANIC EXTRACTS, by Aleister Crowley:

> 3
> The Oath of Fealty
> I bind my blood in Satan's hands,
> All this that lieth betwixt my hands
> To thee, the Beast, and thy control,
> I pledge me; body, mind, and soul.
> 4
> Pledge
> I swear to work my Work abhorred,
> Careless of all but one reward,
> The pleasure of the Devil our Lord.[77]

ALEISTER CROWLEY WAS AN INTERNATIONAL MASON

Crowley was truly an international Mason. He received his 33° in Mexico City and spoke of participating in Masonic rituals in the United States and also was involved in other rites of Freemasonry. Not only was Crowley a 33° Grand Inspector General of Scottish Rite Freemasonry, but he was also involved in other rites of Freemasonry that went even deeper into the occult. The Rite of Memphis contained Masonic rituals with a definite Egyptian flavor.

> By the end of 1910, thanks to my relations with the Grand Hierophant 97° of the Rite of Memphis (a post held after his death by Dr. Gerard Encausse ['Papus'], Theodor Reuss ['Merlin'], and myself), I was now a sort of universal inspector-general of the various rites, charged with the secret mission of reporting on the possibility of reconstructing the entire edifice, which was universally recognized by all its more intelligent members as threatened with the gravest danger.[78]

Even for a man like Crowley who was obsessed with the occult, the rituals of Freemasonry provided a profound occult thrill.

> I supposed myself to have reached the summit of success when I restored the Secret Word of the Royal Arch. In this case, tradition had preserved the Word almost intact.[79]

Was Aleister Crowley and his followers or perhaps a similar group capable of performing acts and rituals that are comparable to what are described by satanic ritual abuse survivors. The following quotes are from a book entitled, *Secrets of the German Sex Magicians*. This book talks about the ritual use of pain and attributes to Crowley the most perverted of practices such as bestiality and the ritual consumption of body fluids.

> The ritual use of pain and agony as an access mode to trance and magical power does have its limits, though. For one thing, physical pain tends to dull the senses in the long run, so that stimuli have to be increased incessantly. This may quite easily lead to grave bodily harm, not to mention the fact that it can become downright addictive and lead to a kindled frenzy not very easily mastered.[80]

> Crowley, in fact, trod in his practice a path similar to that of the more materialistic authorities. Although he positively encouraged ejaculatory orgasm in his sex magic, he always made a point of consuming what he

called the "elixir" afterwards. He understood this elixir to be the mixture of the sexual fluids of both partners or, in the masturbatory act, as just the semen. He entered very carefully in his the magical diaries a description of the elixir's consistency and taste, and he even recorded the prophecies which he deduced from these data.[81]

And Crowley's practices go on to be even more disgusting.

> Coprophagia, which means consumption of excrement, here also includes consumption of other secretions such as urine and sweat. It was ritually practiced from early times on the sympathetic-magic principle that the secretions of any entity contain part of its *magis*. Crowley, for example, occasionally offered his disciples in Cefalu the excretement of a goat. This frequently met with no small disapproval![82]

> Crowley performed a similar ritual in his Sicilian Abbey of Thelema, during which his Scarlet Woman was to be mounted by a goat which would be beheaded during the climax.[83]

There exists today a secret society that dedicates itself to carrying on the teachings of Aleister Crowley. This group is called the O.T.O.. The O.T.O. was founded earlier this century by high grade Austrian Freemason Karl Kellner and German Freemason Theodor Reuss. The O.T.O. became a major force in the occult world when Aleister Crowley became its leader.

WHAT IS THE O.T.O. ?

From *The Equinox*, the official organ of the O.T.O.:

> The ORDO TEMPLI ORIENTIS (O.T.O.) is an Initiatic Body composed of men and women who have accepted the principles of *The Book of the Law*, which was transmitted through Aleister Crowley (1875-1947) in Cairo, Egypt in 1904 E.V. The communicating Intelligence identified Itself as Aiwass, a messenger of the ruling hierarchy of our species. The Book announces a New Law for mankind and the planetary transition into the Aeon of Horus or New Aeon. The Book is conceived to be a perfect transmission of the divine, freed from any defects of human interference. As such, it is a luminous vehicle of Truth that can serve as an infallible guide to human conduct.
>
> Aleister Crowley will at least be remembered as the greatest occult genius of the twentieth century. In *The Book of the Law*, he is designated as the Prophet of the New Aeon.[84]

> The O.T.O. IS A SECRET ORDER, pledged to the high purpose of securing the Liberty of the Individual and his advancement in Light, Wisdom, Understanding, Knowledge and Power through Beauty, Courage and Wit on the Foundation of Universal Brotherhood.[85]

As previously revealed, Aleister Crowley held many honors as a member of the Masons. It is interesting to discover that a Masonic author also calls Masonry a 'universal brotherhood'.

From *Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry*, by Dr. R. Swinburne Clymer:

> Mystic Masonry is not only the key to the religion taught to all men in all ages from the very beginning of conscious life up to the present, but it holds the keys to these religious and is, in fact, the very repository of religion itself.....It has for its object the uniting of mankind into a Universal Brotherhood.[86]

The O.T.O. taught sexual Magic that they felt was the Key that unlocked all occult mysteries. We read this information from book *The Secret Rituals of the O.T.O.*:

> 'Our Order possesses the KEY which opens up all Masonic and Hermetic secrets, namely, the teaching of sexual magic, and this teaching explains, without exception, all the secrets of Freemasonry and all systems of religion.'[87]

The book, *Secrets of the German Sex Magicians*, gives this account of O.T.O. sex teachings:

> Today's literature about sex magic relies heavily on practices which were already common in the O.T.O. or in its later development by Aleister Crowley. This literature differentiates the workings of the VIIIth, IXth and XIth grade, which was introduced by Crowley. (The X° of the O.T.O. is a mere "administrative grade" of no special magical importance.) The division is as follows:
>
> VIII° O.T.O. = autoerotic practice
> IX° O.T.O. = heteroerotic practice
> XI° O.T.O. = homoerotic practice
>
> This is the traditional sex-magic practice as performed under Crowley.[88]

IS THERE A CONNECTION BETWEEN THE O.T.O. AND FREEMASONRY ?

We have connected Aleister Crowley to both organizations, but how did he become a member of the O.T.O.? He tells us himself. He was recruited by a fellow Freemason - Theodor Reuss.

> Although I was admitted to the thirty-third and last degree of Freemasonry so long ago as 1900, it was not until the summer of 1912 that my suspicion was confirmed. I speak of my belief that behind the frivolities and convivialities of our greatest institution [Freemasonry] lay in truth a secret ineffable and miraculous, potent to control the forces of Nature, and not only to make men brethren, but to make them divine. But at the time I speak of a man came to me, [Theodor Reuss] a man of those mysterious masters of esoteric Freemasonry who are alike its Eyes and its Brains, and who exist in its midst–unknown, often, even to its acknowledged chiefs.....This man had been watching my occult career for some years, and deemed me now worthy to partake in the Greater Mysteries.[89]

The Secret Rituals of the O.T.O. tells of more connections:

> For the O.T.O. not only had, as we shall see, connections with spurious and clandestine masonic groups but functioned as a recruiting office for one of these–for in the 'Classification of Members by Degrees' appended to Reuss's document it is clearly stated that 'candidates are made Freemasons by the Directing Members (Fratres Superiores) of the O.T.O.'.[90]

Once again from *The Equinox*, the official organ of the O.T.O., Crowley states:

> I claim for my system that it satisfies all possible requirements of true freemasonry. It offers a rational basis for universal brotherhood and for universal religion.[91]

From *The Equinox*:

> ...The Book of the Law and the Word of the Aeon are essential principles of membership. In all other respects, it [the O.T.O.] stands by itself as a body similar to Freemasonry, but involving acceptance of a social and economic system which is intended to put the world on its feet. There is also, of course, the secret of the IX° which is to say, the weapon which they may use to further these purposes.[92]

O.T.O. PROFESS-HOUSES

Having already read these following quotes by Aleister Crowley:

> "...for nearly all purposes human sacrifice is the best." etc. and "A male child of perfect innocence and high intelligence is the most satisfactory and suitable victim."; (see page 37).

we find it most interesting to hear of the O.T.O.'s deep compassion for children and pregnant women. The following documentation is from *O.T.O. Ordo Templi Orientis An Open Letter to Those Who May Wish To Join The Order, Enumerating the Duties and Privileges.* The quotes below are taken from *The Equinox*, The Review of Scientific Illuminism, The Official Organ of the O.T.O.

The titles above each set of quotes such as FIFTH HOUSE, means that particular section of the O.T.O. laws is called FIFTH HOUSE, etc. Contained in the quotes titled FIFTH HOUSE, etc. is information about actual Profess-Houses that were places where women and children of Brethren, those born without or within the Order of O.T.O., were taken, housed, and some children were adopted by some of the members of the O.T.O.

FIFTH HOUSE

13. **Every Brother shall seek constantly to give pleasure to all Brethren with whom he is acquainted, whether by entertainment or conversation, or in any other manner that may suggest itself.** It will frequently and naturally arise that love itself so springs up between members of the Order, for that they have so many and sacred interests in common. Such love is peculiarly holy, and is to be encouraged.

14. All children of Brethren are to be considered as children of the whole Order, and to be protected and aided in every way by its members severally, as by its organization collectively. No distinction is to be made with regard to the conditions surrounding the birth of any child.

15. **There is an especially sacred duty, which every Brother should fulfil, with regard to all children, those born without the Order included. This duty is to instruct them in the Law of Thelema**, to teach them independence and freedom of thought and character, and to warn them that servility and cowardice are the most deadly diseases of the human soul.[93]

TENTH HOUSE

37. **All pregnant women are especially sacred to members of the Order, and no effort should be spared to bring them to acceptance of the Law of Freedom, so that the unborn may benefit by that impression.** They should be induced to become members of the Order, so that the child may be born under its aegis.

38. If the mother that is to be have asserted her will to be so in contempt and defiance of the Tabus of the slave-gods, she is to be regarded as especially suitable to our Order, and the Master of the Lodge in her district shall offer to become, as it were, godfather to the child, who shall be

trained specially, if the mother so wishes, as a servant of the Order, in one of its Profess-Houses.

39. Special Profess-Houses for the care of women of the Order, or those whose husbands or lovers are members of the Order, will be instituted, so that the frontal duty of womankind may be carried out in all comfort and honour.

FIFTH HOUSE

53. All Brethren may expect the warmest co-operation in their pleasures and amusements from other members of the Order. The perfect freedom and security afforded by the Law allows the characters of all Brethren to expand to the very limits of their nature, and the great joy and gladness with which they are constantly overflowing make them the best of companions. "They shall rejoice, our chosen; who sorroweth is not of us. Beauty and strength, leaping laughter and delicious languor, force and fire, are of us."

54. Children of all Brethren are entitled to the care of the Order, and arrangements will be made to educate them in certain of the Profess-Houses of the Order.

55. Children of Brethren who are left orphans will be officially adopted by the Master of his Lodge, or if the latter decline, by the Supreme Holy King himself, and treated in all ways as if they were his own.

56. Brethren who have a right to some especial interest in any child whose mother is not a member of the Order may recommend it especially to the care of their lodges or of Grand Lodge.[94]

TENTH HOUSE

67. Women of the Order who are about to become mothers receive all care, attention, and honour from all Brethren.

68. Special Profess-Houses will be established for their convenience, should they wish to take advantage of them.

TWELFTH HOUSE

72. The secrecy of the Order provides its members with an inviolable shroud of concealment.[95]

O.T.O. members have the right to visit secret-houses.

> d. They obtain the right to sojourn in the secret houses of the O.T.O. permanetly or for a greater or lesser period of the year according to their rank in the Order; or, in the case of those of the Fifth and lower degrees, are candidates for invitation to these houses.[96]

These Profess-Houses are designed to cater to the different tastes of the members.

> Naturally, as it takes all sorts to make a world--and we rejoice in that diversity which makes our unity so exquisite a miracle--some Profess-Houses will suit one person, some another. And birds of a feather will learn to flock together.[97]

The higher you rank in the O.T.O. the more access to the Profess-Houses you get.

> 51. In the higher degrees Brethren have the right to reside in our Profess-Houses for a portion of every year, as shown:
>
> VI°. Two weeks.
> G.T. One month.
> P.R.S. Six weeks.
> VII°. Two months.
> S.G.C. Three months.
> VIII°. Six months.
>
> 52. Members of the IX°, who share among themselves the whole property of the Order according to the rules of that degree, may, of course, reside there permenently. **Indeed, the house of every Brother of this grade is, *ipso facto*, a Profess-House of the Order.**[98]

After reading the quotes above about the Profess-Houses taken from *The Equinox*, the official organ of the O.T.O. - and then reading the following quotes by Aleister Crowley from *The Book of the Law* (also in *The Equinox*) - it gives us serious cause for concern, as the members of the O.T.O. have accepted the principles of *The Book of the Law* and the following quotes speak of the sacrifice of a child.

> 43. Let the Scarlet Woman beware! If pity and compassion and tenderness visit her heart; if she leave my work to toy with old sweetnesses; then shall my vengeance be known. **I will slay me her child:** I will alienate her heart: I will cast her out from men: as a shrinking and despised harlot shall she crawl through dusk wet streets, and die cold and an-hungered.[99]

> 11.....Worship me with fire & blood; worship me with swords & spears. Let the woman be girt with a sword before me: let blood flow to my name. Trample down the heathen; be upon them, o warrior, I will give you of their flesh to eat!

12. Sacrifice cattle, little and big: **after a child**.
24. The best blood is of the moon, monthly: **then the fresh blood of a child**, or dropping from the host of heaven: then of enemies; then of the priest or of the worshippers: last of some beast, no matter what.[100]

In this chapter we have proven some very important points.

1. Aleister Crowley was a high ranking and very active Freemason.

2. Aleister Crowley was an extrememly perverted Satanist who was capable of almost any act. Crowley's own son died in a ritual that was performed behind closed doors and attended by only Crowley and his son.[101]

3. Crowley carried the Masonic doctrine over into his secret societies.

4. There are individuals and secret sociteies today who are dedicated to continuing Crowley's work.

CHAPTER 5 - THE EGYPTIAN-MASONIC-SATANIC CONNECTION

The place where Satanism and Freemasonry cross paths on their trip to the dark side seems to be at Egypt. This was certainly true for the Father of modern Satanism 33° Mason Aleister Crowley. Crowley's honeymoon was the occasion for an occult Egyptian experience when Crowley and his bride spent the night in the Kings chamber of the Great Pyramid.

> They journeyed to Paris, Marseilles, Naples, and Cairo, where they spent a night in the King's Chamber of the Great Pyramid and Crowley showed off his magic by illuminating the chamber with astral light.[102]

The night that Crowley spent in the Great Pyramid with his bride, produced a profound spiritual experience.

> Once ensconced there with his bride, he lit a candle and began to read an incantation. All at once, Crowley later reported, a pale lilac light bathed the room, allowing him to continue without his candles.[103]

In 1904 another event took place that had a definite Egyptian flavor. Crowley regarded it as the most important event of his life. It took place in Cairo Egypt where Crowley invoked the Egyptian god Horus. This occult practice led to the demonic revelation that inspired Crowley to write his most important book, *The Book Of The Law*.

> They returned to Cairo where he adopted the guise of Prince Chioa Khan of Persia and it was there in the early spring of 1904 that the event took place which Crowley would regard as the most important of his entire life.
>
> Rose, who had little interest in magic, asked Crowley to perform a minor ritual purely out of curiosity. Soon afterwards, she was possessed by a strange inspiration and declared to her husband that 'they are waiting for you', eventually informing him that 'they' meant in particular the god Horus. A skeptical Crowley carried out a series of tests based on the traditional correspondences of the god and although Rose had no knowledge at all of occultism, she guessed correctly every time against total odds of 21,168,000 to 1. Some bewildering coincidences followed, all of which identified Crowley with The Beast 666 of Revelations. The upshot of all this was that Crowley performed an invocation to Horus and obeyed his wife's instructions to sit at a desk in his hotel room on 8,9, and 10 April between 12 noon and 1 p.m. A being which announced itself as Aiwass appeared behind him on each occasion and dictated to him the three chapters of a book called Liber Al vel Legis or The Book of the Law.[104]

Crowley's book of the Law stated that all of History was divided into three eons, all three of these eons were named after an Egyptian god!!

> Crowley's philosophy was expounded in *The Book of the Law*, which taught that history can be divided into two eras. The first was the eon of Isis, the Egyptian nature goddess, wife and sister of Osiris. During this time period, prior to 500 B.C., matriarchy and Egyptian mythology dominated humanity. The second epoch was Osiris, based on the Egyptian god of the underworld. During this time, coinciding with the period of Judaism, Buddhism, Islam, and Christianity, man dominated. In 1904, however, humanity supposedly entered the eon of Horus, the Egyptian child-god of light, the son of Osiris and Isis. During this time, the true self of man would dominate, rather than any allegiance to external authorities, priests, or gods.
>
> Crowley's creed was simple: "Be strong, O man! Lust! Enjoy all the things of sense. Fear not that any god shall deny thee for this." He lived what he preached. Crowley was accused of being a homosexual, a child molester, and a deviant of every sexual variation known to man. He borrowed the idea of sexual magic from Hindu tantric yoga and taught that sexual union reached its highest realm when the mind, the breath, and the semen were held still.[105]

Crowley can definitely be cited as a prime example of a man who took the dark Egyptian path. Just how dangerous is the Egyptian-Satanic connection as practiced by Crowley and others? The words of professor Carl A. Rashke are certainly worth considering when answering this question; and his words will show that with **people of this doctrine and practice, human sacrifice is certainly a possibility.**

> Crowley also conducted regularly with his disciples the Thelemic version of the Black Mass, which he termed instead the "Gnostic Mass," which may have been a carefully embroidered version of the older Cathar rituals. The centerpiece of the mass was the ingesting of a biscuit, mimicking the consecrated wafer, which Crowley dubbed the "Cake of Light," baked with blood. It is interesting that Crowley's own *Book of the Law* prescribed the use of real human blood in this sacramental foodstuff, as the earlier legends about what was employed in the Black Mass implied. Crowley's own black bible described, "the best blood" as that of a menstruating woman, then "fresh blood of a child," and finally of "enemies." This unsettling passage, which has parallels in other writings of Crowley, without doubt confirms that the Crowley cultists, at minimum, granted themselves a license for human sacrifice.[106]

Crowley's rituals were certainly of the most debased and Satanic kind.

> Drugs, particularly heroine and cocaine, were a sacrament for Crowley.[107]

Crowley learned ritual magic from the man who was renown as the master of his day, MacGregor Mathers. The pupil-student relationship soon turned into a bitter rivalry and resulted literally in a Black Magic war. When Mathers died in 1918 many of his friends were convinced that Crowley was responsible for his death. Mathers, also a Freemason, introduced Crowley to an occult organization called the "Golden Dawn" and helped Crowley along his dark walk on the Egyptian Masonic road.

> Mathers and his wife Moina, the sister of the philosopher Henri Bergson, lived in Paris. (Mathers tried to convert Bergson to magic, but without success.) Their house was decorated as an Egyptian temple and they celebrated 'Egyptian Masses', invoking the goddess Isis. Mathers officiated in a long white robe, a metal belt engraved with the signs of the zodiac, bracelets round his wrists and ankles, and a leopard-skin slung across his shoulders. He was convinced that he was descended from the Scottish clan MacGregor and took to calling himself MacGregor Mathers, Chevalier MacGregor and Comte de Glenstrae. W. B. Yeats, whose magical name in the Golden Dawn was *Daemon est Deus Inversus* (The Devil is God Reversed), was a frequent visitor to the Mathers household in Paris.[108]

One of the most talked about Satanic groups in recent years has been The Temple of Set headed by Michael Aquino.

The brand of Satanism that is practiced by Michael Aquino and the Temple of Set is thoroughly Egyptian. In the book, *The Book of Coming Forth by Night* (1985) Aquino describes what seems to be a call to start the Church of Satan and speaks in the first person as Set, the Egyptian Satan.

> The Equinox has succumbed to my Solstice, and I, Set, am revealed in my Majesty....I am the ageless Intelligence of this Universe...and from my manifest semblance, which alone is not of Earth. Known as the Hebrew Satan, I chose to bring forth a Magus, according to the fashion of my Word. He was charged to form a Church of Satan, that I might easily touch the minds of men in this age they had cast for me.[109]

The accusation of child abuse and molestation against Aquino was made in 1988 by Sandi Gallant of the San Francisco Police Department, thus placing another link between Egyptian style Satanism and Satanic Ritual Abuse. The accusations surfaced concerning the day care center at the Presidio military installation and were as follows.

> Children said they were taken by day to private homes, including two on army property, where they had been sexually molested.....
> Other children talked about a "googoo" game in which they were urinated

> and defecated on by a "Mr. Gary".... Pencils were used to doodle on the skin and genitals of the children and were also inserted in a child anus..... A gun was pointed at the head of another adult in front of the children..... There were five confirmed cases among the children of chlamydia, a sexually transmitted illness.[110]

Although no formal charges were filed against Aquino, there were certainly some interesting twists to the case. His repeated claims of innocence to many were hollow cries. There are some similarities in the accusations against the day care center when compared to the recent disclosures of children that we have been in contact with.

> It is not clear how long the army has known about Aquino's peculiar genus of satanism. But the San Francisco police have been exceptionally interested since about 1980. The interest crested in November 1987 when police raided a house where a three-year-old girl told police she had been molested by a sinister-looking man named "Mickey" who snapped pictures of her in the bathtub and sexually mistreated her in a room with black walls and a cross etched on the ceiling. The girl later spotted "Mickey" in the PX at the Presidio army base in San Francisco, where Aquino was stationed. The girl said she thought "Mickey" was Aquino. The girl also said she recognized Mrs. Aquino. Meanwhile, authorities had found evidence of ongoing child abuse at the Presidio day care center. A three-year-old had also been molested, and the cops turned up six cases of sexually transmitted infection in fifty-eight other charges at the center. A thirty-four-year-old civilian day-care worker at the Presidio facility, who was also a Southern Baptist minister was arrested. At first, the charges were dismissed. But subsequently, Hambright was indicted anew on twelve counts of sodomy, oral copulation, and lewd conduct. Hambright later died of AIDS.[111]

Albert Churchward in his book, *The Arcana of Freemasonry*, confirms that Set is the Egyptian name for Satan.

> That Sut or Set was first primary god of the Egyptians, but was god of the South Pole, or Southern Hemisphere, is amply proved and borne out by the monuments as well as the Ritual. Set or Sut, according to Plutarch, is the Egyptian name of Typhon–i.e. Satan of the Christian Cult.[112]

THE MASONIC LODGE AND THE EGYPTIAN MYSTERY RELIGION

As the Mystery Religions spread all over the world from Babylon, they found expression in all countries of the ancient world with only a change in the names of the gods and slight variations in the rituals. While the

mystery religions were practiced in all of the countries of the ancient world, it was in Egypt where centuries of devotion developed them to their highest degree.

According to Mason Manly P. Hall's book *Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians*:

> It is now generally acknowledged that the Egyptians, of all the ancient peoples, were the most learned in the Occult sciences of Nature. The wisest of philosophers from other nations visited Egypt to be initiated in the sacred Mysteries by the priests of Thebes, Memphis, and Hermopolis.[113]

In this chapter we will be showing that the Egyptian Mystery Religion has a profound and undeniable connection with the Masonic Lodge.

There is indeed, as we have established, a very definite link between the Egyptian Mystery Religion and the Masonic Lodge. This link can be readily established from the words of Masonic authors and testimony can be provided to remove all reasonable doubt. In the book, The Meaning of Masonry, by Past Provincial Grand Registrar, W.L. Wilmshurst, we find the statement:

> I am acquainted, for instance, with an Egyptian ceremonial system, some 5,000 years old, which taught precisely the same things as Masonry does,...[114]

In the book, Freemasonry Its Hidden Meaning, by George H. Steinmetz, we find the statement:

> Regardless of the origin of the modern lodge, or of the name "Freemason," we can, after freeing the symbolism of modern adaptations, discern in Freemasonry the outline of the teachings of the ancient mysteries of Egypt.[115]

In the same book Mr. Steinmetz makes the statement connecting Freemasonry and the Egyptian mysteries.

> If the symbols can be consistently interpreted in this manner, throughout the three degrees we have confirmed Freemasonry to be the reincarnation of the Ancient Mysteries of Egypt".[116]

33" Mason Manly P. Hall relates the efforts of early Masonic historians to link Hiram Abiff to the Egyptian Mystery Religion.

> Early Masonic historians such as Albert Mackey, Robert Freke Gould and Albert Pike were of a single purpose in their efforts to establish a definite correspondence between the Hiramic legend of Freemasonry and the Osiris

myth as expounded in the initiatory rituals of the Egyptians.[117]

From *The Lost Keys of Freemasonry* by 33° Manly P. Hall:

> Man is a god in the making, and as in the mystic myths of Egypt on the potter's wheel he is being molded.[118]

From Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians by 33° Mason Manly P. Hall:

> Freemasonry as an institution is Isis, the mother of Mysteries, from whose dark womb the Initiates are born in the mystery of the second or philosophic birth.[119]

Dr. Thomas Milton Stewart 33rd degree identifies the "Christos State" as the "Osirified State".

> The sanctified Spirit of man is now in the Cristos state; and this means the Risen Spirit in Man. In Egypt one would call this the Osirified State,...[120]

HIRAM - KUNDALINI YOGA - HINDU MYSTICISM

33° Mason, Manly P. Hall also shows the similarity between Hiram and the Kundalini of the Hindu's, and also the ancient occult rites of Egypt.

> Sufficient similarity exists between the Masonic CHiram and the Kundalini of Hindu mysticism to warrant the assumption that CHiram may be considered a symbol also of the Spirit Fire moving through the sixth ventricle of the spinal column. The exact science of human regeneration is the Lost key of Masonry, for when the Spirit Fire is lifted up through the thirty-three degrees, or segments of the spinal column, and enters into the domed chamber of the human skull, it finally passed into the pituitary body (Isis) where it invokes Ra (the pineal gland) and demands the Sacred Name. Operative Masonry, in the fullest meaning of that term, signifies the process by which the Eye of Horus is opened. E.A. Wallis Budge has noted that in some of the papyri illustrating the entrance of the souls of the dead into the judgment hall of Osiris the deceased person has a pine cone attached to the crown of his head. The Greek mystics also carried a symbolic staff, the upper end being in the form of a pine cone, which was called the thyrsus of Bacchus. In the human brain there is a tiny gland called the pineal body, which is the sacred eye of the ancients, and corresponds to the third eye of the Cyclops.[121]

These Egyptian mystery rites that Masonic authorities are so proud to align themselves with did more than just theorize about human sacrifice, they actually practiced it. Sir James Frazier informs us of those practices in his book, *The Golden Bough*.

> With regard to the ancient Egyptians we have it on the authority of Manetho that they used to burn red-haired men and scatter their ashes with winnowing fans and it is highly significant that this barbarous sacrifice was offered by kings at the grave of Osiris. We may conjecture that the victims represented Osiris himself, who was annually slain, dismembered, and buried in their persons that he might quicken the seed in the earth.[122]

> To return to the human victims whose ashes the Egyptians scattered with winnowing-fans, the red hair of these unfortunates was probably significant. For in Egypt the oxen which were sacrificed had also to be red; a single black or white hair found on the beast would have disqualified it for the sacrifice. If, as I conjecture, these human sacrifices were intended to promote the growth of the crops–and the winnowing of their ashes seems to support this view–red-haired victims were perhaps selected as best fitted to personate the spirit of the ruddy grain.[123]

In the following quote the man who is called "Masonry's greatest philosopher", 33° Mason Manly P. Hall Reveals the Egyptian and sexual symbolism that lies behind the Masonic rituals.

> In Egypt, the Mysteries, or institutions of philosophic rebirth, were called Isis and those born out of the temple were designated the Sons of Isis. Now, through the death of Osiris, her husband, this goddess had donned the badges of mourning and through the loss of the Word (symbolized by the phallus of Osiris), had become the great Widow. Hence, those born out of her, the philosophic elect, were termed the Widow's Sons, a designation which has clung to Freemasons, even in this age.[124]

In another book, Hall states:

> The golden phallus is rendered alive by the secret processes rescued from the lost Book of Thoth.[125]

Morals and Dogma states:

> The Egyptians consecrated the Phallus in the Mysteries of Osiris and Isis...[126]

The story of the Egyptian god Osiris lies behind the symbolism of the third degree of the Blue Lodge Freemasonry, The Master Mason degree. Freemason J. S. M. Ward retells the story of Osiris in his book, *Freemasonry and the Ancient Gods*. Ward's account of the story includes murder, mutilation and necrophilia (sex with corpses).

In the Egyptian mystery legend of Osiris we are told that, on discovering the dead body of the murdered Osiris, Isis threw herself upon the corpse and had intercourse with it, and from this came the birth of Horus, the avenger of Osiris. To prevent a repetition of this, Set tore the body of Osiris into many pieces and scattered them throughout Egypt.[127]

MASTER MASON DEGREE (the third degree of Freemasonry)

To explain what goes on in the Master Mason degree of Masonry we will quote from the book, *Freemasonry: The Invisible Cult in Our Midst*, by Jack Harris.

The initiate, after being met by three ruffians and literally shaken and pushed around, representing Hiram Abiff, is symbolically slain, mutilated and buried at the base of an acacia tree.

After diligent "searching," the body of the initiate (Hiram Abiff) is found by Fellowcrafters of the second degree.

Hiram Abiff supposedly was in possession of a secret password, known as the Grand Masonic word. Since his death, it could not be given unless Hiram Abiff, Hiram of Tyre and King Solomon were all present and agreed. So a substitute word was used by King Solomon, represented by the Worshipful Master of the lodge, who, in Masonic rite, raises the initiate's body from the "dead" and gives it "eternal life."

Hiram Abiff, which the initiate represents, allegedly came from Phoenicia, a pagan country which worshipped Baal, the sun god. King Solomon, represented by the Worshipful Master of the lodge, fell into idol worship. The ceremony uses Bible characters and verses for some of the story, but adds myth to suit the rite.

After a prayer and other rituals, the initiate is raised upon the five points of fellowship. When the Master raises the initiate, he whispers in his ear the Grand Masonic word ("Mah-Hah-Bone"). The Master than [then] says to the newly raised brother, "Brother _____, you have now been raised to the sublime degree of Master Mason, and the word which I have just communicated is the Grand Masonic word. You were raised by the strong grip of a Master Mason, or the lion's paw, and upon the five points of fellowship, which are..." (The Master then takes the brother's hand and shows him how to do this grip, and says to the brother,) "Follow me. Foot to foot, knee to knee, breast to breast, hand to back, and cheek to cheek or mouth to ear, give me the word." If the brother forgot the word, the Master in this position gives it to him again. The position of giving the Grand Masonic word (five points of fellowship) is the only way it can be given. The Master then steps back from the brother and explains the five points of fellowship.[128]

In this degree the candidate for Master Mason actually plays the part of Hiram Abiff and in so doing actually plays the role of the Egyptian god Osiris as was done in the Egyptian Mysteries thousands of years ago. There is abundant documentation from Masonic authors to prove this point.

The excellent book, *The Deadly Deception*, by Jim Shaw and Tom McKenney, cites Masonic authorities to show that the Masons consider Hiram Abiff and Osiris to be one and the same!

> (1) "The legend and traditions of Hiram Abiff form the consummation of the connecting link between Freemasonry and the Ancient Mysteries."(Pierson, "Traditions of Freemasonry," p. 159)
> (2) "We readily recognize in Hiram Abiff the Osiris of the Egyptians....."(Pierson page 240)
> (3) "Osiris and the Tyrian Architect (Hiram Abiff are one and the same" (Sickles, Daniel, "Freemason's Guide," page 236)
> (4) "That part of the rite (Master Mason initiation) which is connected with the legend of the Tyrian Artist (Hiram Abiff)...should be studied as a myth and not as a fact.....outside of Masonic tradition there is no proof that an event such as is related in connection with the "Temple Builder" ever transpired and, besides, the ceremony is older by more than a thousand years than the age of Solomon.....it is thoroughly Egyptian." (Sickles, Daniel, The Ahiman Reyan" page 195)
> (5) It (the legend of Hiram Abiff) is thoroughly Egyptian, and is closely allied to the supreme rite (highest degree) of the Isianic Mysteries (Mystery religion of Isis and Osiris)." (Mackey, Albert, "Lexicon of Freemasonry," page 195)[129]

One of the greatest Masonic authorities of all time, Former Grand Commander of the Scottish Rite, Albert Pike, describes the meaning of the Masonic symbol of the All-seeing Eye.

> The *All-seeing Eye* is a symbol of the Deity, as it anciently was, in Egypt, a hieroglyphic of OSIRIS and the SUN. Connecting the legend of HUROM with that of OSIRIS, by its hieroglyphical meaning,.....
> The *Sun, Moon, Comet*, and *Seven Stars* indicate the astronomical symbolism of the legend, and again connect it with that of Osiris.[130]

In this chapter we have thoroughly documented the connection between the Masonic Lodge and the Egyptian Mystery religion. In the next chapter we will be developing our theory that the ancient religion of Egypt has had a profound influence on orthodox Satanism. Much of our documentation in the next chapter will come from the *Egyptian Book of the Dead* which dates from about 1,500 B.C. which describes rites and rituals that are even more ancient. 33° Mason Manly P. Hall equates the Egyptian Book of the Dead with transcendental magic.

> "The Book of the Dead" is a singularly unfortunate modern selection of a title to cover the principle nucleus of Egyptian literary remains. The reason for the designation is obvious, but the impression created is strangely inadequate. The text is dominated by a spirit of transcendental magic.[131]

As we proceed in the next chapter to document the Egyptian Satanic Connection from the *Egyptian Book of the Dead*, you will be appalled and shocked as you read the gory and blatantly Satanic Statements. As you read the revealing information that is in our next chapter, we want you to remember this statement by 33° Mason Manly P. Hall pertaining to the relationship between Masonry and the Book of the Dead.

> If the identity of the Osiris and Hiramic myths be accepted, then the Book of the Dead is the open sesame of symbolic Masonry, revealing a hidden beauty beneath the rituals, an unsuspected splendor in the symbols, and a divine purpose actuating the whole of Masonic procedure.[132]

CHAPTER 6 - EGYPTIAN SATANISM

In this chapter we will be documenting and listing the practices of the Ancient Egyptian Religion. As you read these doctrines and practices of the Egyptians their Satanic nature will be readily apparent. These rites which are mostly taken from the Egyptian Book of the Dead will be compared with actual pictures that were drawn by children who are survivors of Ritual Satanic Child Abuse. The comparisons will be made in the next chapter. These passages should remove all doubt as to the evil nature of the Ancient Egyptian Religion and coupled with the other documentation brought forth in this book will establish the case for the Egyptian influence on modern Satanism. Remember as you read this chapter, the words of 33° Mason, Manly P. Hall, "the book of the Dead is the open sesame of symbolic Masonry".

WHAT IS THE BOOK OF THE DEAD ?

> The Book of the Dead is the title generally given to a collection of Egyptian inscriptions and papyri found in tombs or in mummy wrappings. The ancient Egyptians attributed The Book of the Dead to Thoth, Lord of Wisdom, and recorder of the deeds of men, which were produced when the soul came to judgment.[133]

> The deposit of the body in the tomb was accompanied by ceremonies of a symbolic nature,..... prayers, short litanies, etc., having reference to the future life, were recited or chanted by priests and relatives on behalf of the dead....recital would secure for the dead an unhindered passage to God in the next world, ...these..became a distinct ritual..which preceeded actual burial....[134]

The following passages from *The Egyptian Book of The Dead* are graphic and repulsive and are presented solely for the purpose of expose.

[1] DRINKING BLOOD - SLAUGHTER BLOCK

> (15) "Hail, devourer of Blood, who camest forth from the block of slaughter, I have not acted guilefully".[135]

[2] CANNABALISM - EATING INTESTINES

> Hail, Eater of intestines, coming forth from Mabet, not have I desolated ploughed lands.[136]

[3] TORTURE CHAMBER

> (21) "Hail, thou two-headed serpent, who comest forth from the torture-chamber, I have not defiled the wife of any man."[137]

[4] THE CRUSHER OF BONES

> (9) Hail, Crusher of Bones, who comest forth from Suten-henen, "I have told no lies.."[138]

[5] WASHING IN BLOOD

> Behold ye then god this great of slaughter, mighty of terror, he washeth in your blood, he batheth in your gore.[139]

[6] KILLING ANIMALS - LOCKS OF HAIR

> I have obtained the mastery over the animals with the knife in their heads and their locks of hair, who live among their emeralds, the aged and the shining beings who prepare the moment of Osiris Ani, triumphant in peace. He maketh slaughter upon the earth, and conversely, I am strong.[140]

[7] KING UNAS EATS HEARTS

> He has taken the hearts of the gods.
> He has eaten the Red,
> He has swallowed the Green
> Their charms are in his belly
> He has swallowed the knowledge of every god.
> The lifetime of King Unas is eternity;[141]

[8] KING UNAS IS A CANNIBAL FOND OF SCALPING PEOPLE AND BONDAGE

> 509. UNAS devoureth men and liveth "upon the gods, he is the lord of envoys, whom he sendeth "forth on his missons. 'He who cutteth off hairy scalps,' "who dwelleth in the fields, tieth the gods with ropes;.."[142]

[9] BONDAGE - MURDER - CANNABALISM - DISMEMBERMENT THE VICTIMS THROATS ARE CUT AND THE BODY PARTS ARE BOILED IN A CALDRON AT NIGHTTIME

> 510. Tcheser-tep keepeth guard over them for Unas and "driveth them unto him: and the Cord-master bound "them for slaughter. Khonsu the slayer of the wicked "cutteth their throats.[143]

511. and draweth out their intestines. "for it is he whom Unas sendeth to slaughter; and Shesmu "cutteth them in pieces and boileth their members in his "blazing caldrons of the night.."[144]

[10] THE THIGHS OF THE FIRST BORN ARE HEAPED UP

513. The old gods "and the old goddesses become fuel for his furnace. The "mighty ones in heaven light the fire under the caldrons" where are heaped up the thighs of the firstborn;[145]

[11] THE RITUAL FIRE IS STARTED WITH THE THIGHS OF A WOMAN

514. ..."UNAS lighteth the fire under the caldrons with the thighs "of their women;[146]

[12] HACKING IN PIECES THE FIRSTBORN

[508] Unas hath weighed his "words with the hidden god [?] who hath no name, on the day of hacking in pieces the firstborn.[147]

[13] UNAS EATS MAGICAL CHARMS

Behold, Unas eateth of that which the red crown "sendeth forth, he increaseth, and the magical charms of the gods are in his belly;[148]

The following quote is a comment on the texts about King Unas by the translator of the Egyptian Book of the Dead, E.A. Wallis Budge:

> The notion that, by eating the flesh, or particularly by drinking the blood, of another living being, a man absorbs his nature or life into his own, is one which appears among primitive peoples in many forms.[149]

It is indeed an accurate accessment that these murders in the Unas texts were performed in a ritual and religious manner for the purpose of obtaining the life-force or energy force of the victim. Not only was this the purpose of these ancient Egyptian texts, but it is also the purpose behind modern Satanism. This common underlying purpose can be seen by comparing these texts and their accessment with the words of Master Satanist Aleister Crowley. He writes:

> **The blood is the life.** This simple statement is explained by the Hindus by saying that the blood is the principle vehicle of vital Prana....**It was the theory of the ancient Magicians, that any living being is a storehouse of energy** varying in quantity according to the size and health of the animal,

> saying that the blood is the principle vehicle of vital Prana....**It was the theory of the ancient Magicians, that any living being is a storehouse of energy** varying in quantity according to the size and health of the animal, and in quality according to its mental and moral character. At the death of the animal this energy is liberated suddenly. [For Magical purposes] The animal should therefore be killed within the Circle, or the Triangle, as the case may be, so that its energy cannot escape. An animal should be selected whose nature accords with that of the ceremony...**For the highest spiritual working one must accordingly choose that victim which contains the greatest and purest force. A male child of perfect innocence and high intelligence is the most satisfactory and suitable victim**... Those magicians who object to the use of blood have endeavoured to replace it with incense... But the bloody sacrifice, though more dangerous is more efficacious; and **for nearly all purposes human sacrifice is the best.**[150]

[14] A GOD BORN FROM THE BUTTOCKS OF A COW

This is a bizarre passage from the Egyptian book of the Dead, translated by Normandi Ellis of the University of Colorado. We will quote excerpts from this strange passage and will compare it in the next chapter with an actual Satanic ritual.

> Every season of the flood I saw god born from the buttocks of a cow...."Come" said the lord of life to the lord of death one day. "Let us make a truce. I shall bring forth creatures and deliver them unto death, if you deliver the dead unto life..."On the day I saw Ra born from the buttocks of a cow I was overcome with weeping....These are the manifestations of Horus, a thousand souls in his train, an army marching against darkness. These are souls returning to earth, men and women beautified.....In the house of death there awaits a being of darkness whose eyebrows swim on his forehead like fishes....I shall not fall under flashing knives I shall not burn up in the cauldron.... I have seen the face of evil—a face full of burns and scars, tortures inflicted upon the self. He would scald his own chest and blame it on others. He would slash his own wrists and blame it on the gods... Now is the day of the joining of opposites, of the mingling of the dust of flesh with the dust of the coffin. This is the day of flow, the living ether returned to air, the maker of forms assuming new form. This is the day without end—the passage into light itself the joining of Osiris to Ra.[151]

That revolting passage was presented solely or the purpose of exposing and reproving the works of darkness, but it speaks of self-inflicted torture that is reminiscent of Satanic Ritual Abuse Victims who are programmed to inflict harm upon themselves.

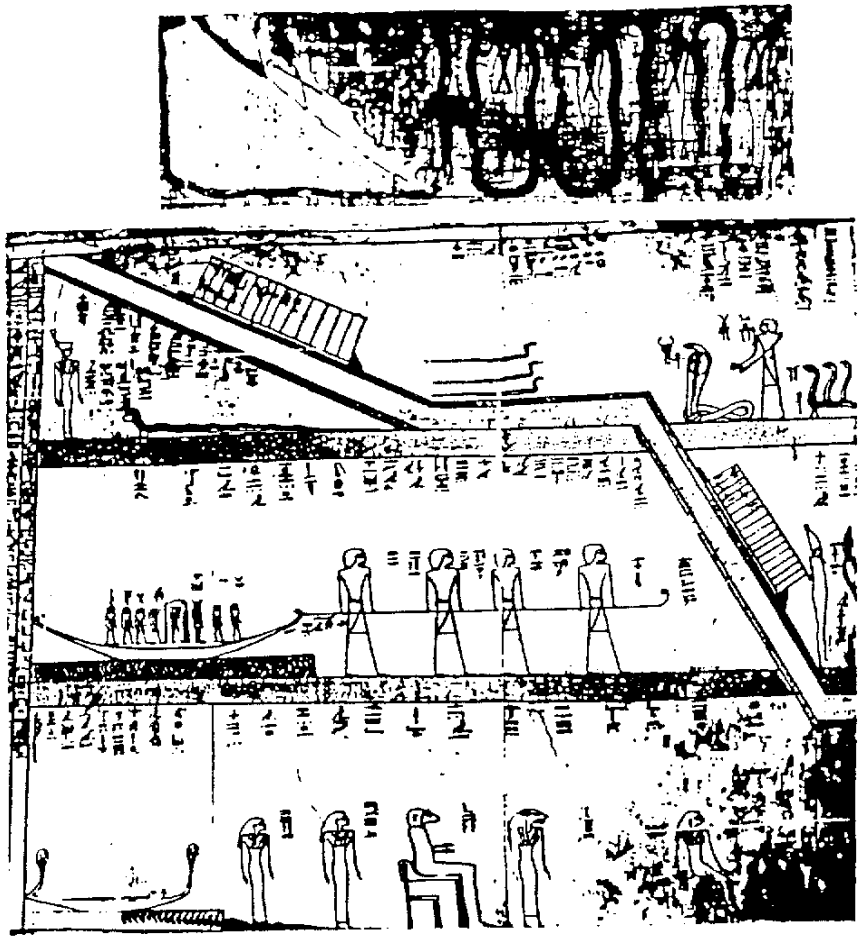
This ritual which came from the Egyptians is being widely used by generational Satanists. We have recently had confirmation from a Satanic ritual abuse survivor on the West Coast that she endured an identical ritual. The cow was a symbol of great importance for the Egyptian sexual rites, to them the cow represented the passive sexual energy. The following information is from *A History of Phallic Worship* by Richard Payne Knight:

> Among the Egyptians, as before observed, the cow was the symbol of Venus, the godess of love, and passive generative power of nature. On the capitals of one of the temples of Philae we still find the heads of this goddess represented of a mixed form; the horns and ears of the cow being joined to the beautiful features of a woman in the prime of life; such as the Greeks attributed to that Venus, whom they worshipped as the mother of the prolific god of love, Cupid, who was the personification of animal desire or concupiscence, as the Orphic love, the father of gods and men, was of universal attraction. The Greeks, who represented the mother under the form of a beautiful woman, naturally represented the son under the form of a beautiful boy; but a people who represented the mother under the form of a cow, would as naturally represent the son under the form of a calf.[152]

[15] BOAT RITUAL

> These illustrations from Albert Champdor's "The Book of the Dead" show a mummy with phallus erect sliding into the Seventh Region of the Lower World, described as being "filled with serpents coils and four sons of Horus who protect the viscera of the Dead." [153] (See Illustration on the following page)

Satanic ritual abuse victims have frequently reported being put in a boat with snakes.



154

More from *The Book of the Dead*:

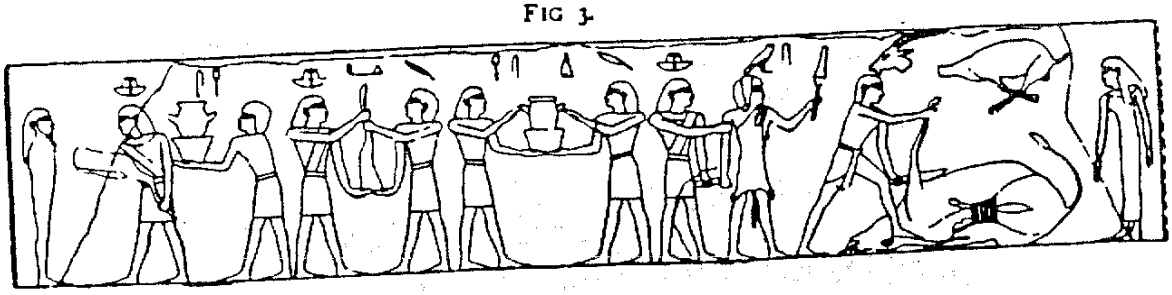
[16] THE EATING OF DEAD BODIES

> O Ra-Tmu, Lord of the Great House, prince, life, strength and health of all the gods, deliver thou [me] from the god whose face is like unto that of a dog, whose brows are as those of a man, and who feedeth upon the dead, who watcheth at the Bight of the Fiery Lake, and who devoureth the bodies of the dead and swalloweth hearts, and who shooteth forth filth, but he himself remaineth unseen.[155]

[17] RITUAL SLAUGHTER OF AN ANIMAL

Illustration (Fig. 3, f.# 155) Shows the passing down of body parts and pitchers of blood?

FIG 3.



156

[18] THE HEART IN THE JAR

The heart is placed in a jar to be weighed for judgement.

> The double Maat goddesses are at times represented standing beside the balance to watch the result of the weighing, and at the same time Maat is also placed in the scale to be weighed against the heart of the deceased (Fig. 1 [on the following page])
> ..In the papyrus of Qenna the head of Aunbis is on the beam and the ape, wearing disk and crescent, is seated upon a pylon-shaped pedistal beside the balance. (Fig.2 [on the following page])
> Another vignitte shows horus holding Maat in his hand, weighing the heart in the presence of the Maat goddesses, and anubis, holding the deceased by the hand, presents the heart to Osiris while Isis and Nephthys in the form of apes sit near (Fig. 3 [on the following page])[157]

FIG. 1.

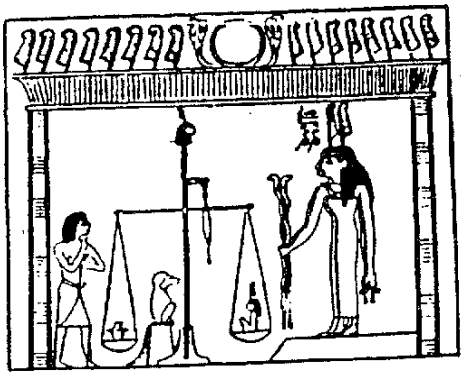


FIG. 2.

FIG. 3.

158

[19] SEXUAL PERVERSION

> It is Osiris. Others, however, say that his name is Ra, and that the god who dwelleth in Amentet is the phallus of Ra, wherewith he had union with himself.[159]

[20] EXCREMENT

> Who is this? "It is Osiris. Others however, say that it is the dead body of Osiris, and yet others say that it is the excrement of Osiris.[160]

[21] SELF-MUTILATION AND PERVERSION

> Who are these gods? They are the drops of blood which came forth from the phallus of Ra when he went to perform his own mutilation. These drops of blood sprang into being under the forms of the gods Hu and Sa, who are in the bodygard of Ra, and who accompany the god Tem daily and every day.[161]

[22] CHAMBER OF SNAKES

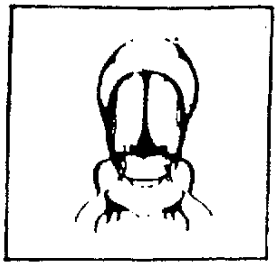
Manly P. Hall 33° Mason, describes a ritual in the second degree of the Egyptian Mysteries that we will show to be very similar to modern Satanic rituals.

> The chamber appeared to be filled with reptiles, to teach the Necoris to withstand bodily terror. The greater the courage shewn on this trial, so much the more was he lauded after reception.[162]

[23] THE SCARAB

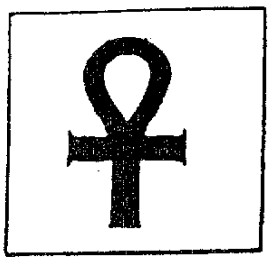
It was believed that the Scarab, if placed in the heart of the deceased, will perform the opening of the mouth so that the deceased may speak words of power or the innermost intentions of his soul.

> The scarabs which are found in the mummies, or lying upon the breast just above the position of the heart, form an interesting section of every large Egyptian collection.[163]



SCARAB: A design based on the dung beetle, this is the ancient Egyptian symbol of reincarnation. It also is associated with Beelzebub, Lord of the Flies.[164]

[24] THE ANKH



ANKH: This is an Egyptian symbol of life and often is associated with fertility.[165]

[25] EGYPTIAN SEX MAGIC

Sexual magic practices that are used by modern occult groups were perfected to fine art by the ancient Egyptian magicians. The following example of a spell to seduce a married woman is from *Ancient Egyptian Magic* by Bob Brier.

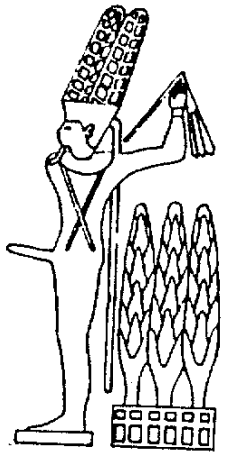
Spell to Seduce a Married Woman

Unas cohabits with his phallus,
Unas is the lord of seed,
he who takes the women from their husbands.
whenever Unas wants, according to the wish of his heart

Pyramid Texts, Spell 510[166]

The following picture of the Egyptian sex god Min is from *Coming into the Light, Rituals of Egyptian Magick*, by Gerald and Betty Schueler.

Another formula of Sex Magick used by the ancient Egyptians was for purposes of enhancing fertility and fecundity were embodied in the god Amsu, whose name is literally "the formula of fertility." Amsu, or Min, was also called Menu (not to be confused with the god Menthu, the warrior Lord of Thebes), and was always depicted in iphyphallic form. Menu vecame the greek god Pan, whose sexual exploits are legendary. An appropriate prayer should be addressed to Amsu–Menu before sex to assure a son or daughter.[167]



Min

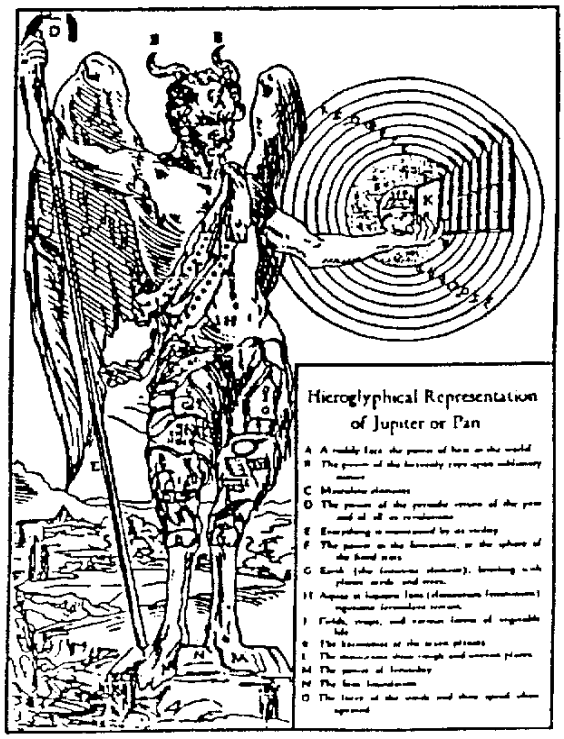
As was explained in this quote the Egytian god Min or Menu is the same as the Greek god Pan. The picture on the following page of 'THE GREAT GOD PAN' is from the book, The Secret Teachings of All Ages, by 'Masonry's Greatest Philosopher' - 33° Manly P. Hall. The explanation under the picture in Hall's book makes it clear that he was aware that Pan was a phallic diety. Hall also alludes to a saying from the early church "Great Pan is dead".

The words under the picture say:

> ...Pan is the prototype of natural energy, and while undoubtedly a phallic deity, should not be confused with Priapus. The pipes of Pan signify the natural harmony of the spheres, and the god himself is a symbol of Saturn because this planet is enthroned in Capricorn, whose emblem is a goat. The Egyptians were initiated into the Mysteries of Pan, who was regarded as a phase of Jupiter, the Demiurgus...The Christians fabricated a story to the effect that at the time of the birth of Christ the oracles were silenced after giving utterance to one last cry, "Great pan is dead!"[168]

Later in the same book Hall makes it clear where his sentements lie and those of Freemasonry when he makes this preposterous statement.

> The ancient Mysteries did not cease to exist when Christianity became the world's most powerful religion. Great Pan did not die! Freemasonry is the proof of his survival.[169]



[26] THE GOAT OF MENDES

The Satanic practice of using a goat for sexual purposes during a ritual also comes from Egypt. The goat of Medes or Baphomet is the most famous of all Satanic symbols. The Satanic goat takes its name from a city in Egypt where the goat was used publicly in a public ritual. This information is from a book called *A History of Phallic Worship*.

> The Egyptians showed this incarnation of the Deity by a less permanent, though equally expressive symbol. At Mendes a living goat was kept as the image of the generative power, to whom the women presented themselves naked, and had the honour of being publicly enjoyed by him. Herodotus saw the act openly performed, and calls it a prodigy. But the Egyptians had no such horror of it; for it was to them a representation of the incarnation of the Deity, and the communication of his creative spirit to man.[170]

The following illustration is the most widely used of all Satanic symbols, The Goat of Mendes or the Baphomet as it was drawn by Freemason Eliphas Levi. On page 15 of this book, there is a picture of a goat with the other pagan gods that was taken from The History of Freemasonry published by the Masonic History Company and they admit that the goat is indeed The Goat of Mendes.

> Figure 17 is a representation of a four-horned goat, which is said to be from Spain, with two upright and two lateral horns. This animal was alive in London about 1769. It is a symbol of the goat of Mendes.[171]

[172]

[27] THE SYMBOLIC CRUCIFIXION

The symbolic crucifixion in the picture below is occuring in the King's Chamber of the Great Pyramid and is taken from the book, *The Phoenix*, by 33° Mason Manly P. Hall. A Satanic ritual abuse survivor from Dearborn County, Indiana, confirmed that he was hung on a wooden cross in a similar ritual.

THE SYMBOLIC CRUCIFIXION
In the King's Chamber of the Great Pyramid 173

THE MOST DANGEROUS PIECE OF INFORMATION ABOUT THE BOOK OF THE DEAD — IT CONTAINED RITUALS THAT WERE PERFORMED IN SECRET BY PEOPLE WEARING MASKS.

Manly P. Hall 33° Mason writes:

> Professor Breasted, the most distinguished Egyptologist, told me that he was convinced that this book contained the ritual of a sacred drama performed by the living in the secrecy of the ancient temples. He justified his remarks by saying that he had personally examined the manuscripts of this work which had been marginated with prompter's marks and notes indicating entrances and exits. The ritual was evidently part of the primitive mask cult. When a priest, or even a consecrated layman, put on the mask or likeness of one of the gods, he became identical with that god.[174]

Can old writings thousands of years old give us clues to who is behind ritual satanic child abuse? If no further explanation were given, these hideous passages would reveal themselves as blatantly Satanic. The comparison that we will now make with the pictures that were drawn by the survivors of Satanic Ritual Abuse will show conclusively that someone is practicing Satanism with a distinctive Egyptian twist.

The similarities that we have drawn between Freemasonry and the ancient Egyptian religion are far too intricate to be dismissed as a mere coincidence. The magic word of Egyptian Magic though it is not now known was known to be a three syllable word which once again gives us an amazing similarity to the secret word of the third degree of Freemasonry, MA-HAH-BONE.

From *Ancient Egyptian Magic*:

> The story specifies that the word had three syllables, but does not give the word.[175]

We will close this chapter with a few more words of praise for *The Egyptian Book of the Dead* from an extremely popular Masonic book, *The Lost Keys of Freemasonry*:

> The Book of the Dead is a treasure house of Masonic lore to those who can realize that the ancient work has a significant meaning throughout, and were it available in a complete form, would render the whole subject of philosophy considerably more lucid.[176]
>
> Thus, from the crude fragments left to us of ancient Egyptian manuscripts, and their commentaries, we receive a great inspiration, an enobling realization of our one purpose. We are promised that if we serve faithfully and consecrate ourselves to the purpose for which the Mystery Schools came into existence, the Word will ultimately be returned and with it will come the full understanding of that deep and sublime mystery of philosophy as the rational substitute for death.[177]

CHAPTER 7 - SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE

This chapter is being contributed by Rick Doninger. He and his wife have been child advocates for eight years and are currently involved with helping children who are survivors of satanic ritual abuse as well as all other forms of abuse and molestation. Mr. Doninger has first-hand experience in dealing with the survivors of the horrors that the children of our nation are experiencing after being subjected to satanic ritual abuse. Our goal in providing this information to you is to help increase your awareness of what these children have suffered so that you will have compassion for them, believe their disclosures and encourage the authorities who are responsible for punishing the perpetrators to provide justice for the victims and their families. We also pray that you will join with us in this spiritual battle by praying for the survivors and their families. We ask that you pray for protection for all the men and women of our nation who are actively involved in this struggle for justice for the survivors.

****

In this chapter passages selected from the Egyptian rites in *The Book of the Dead* will be compared with the explanations of drawings of survivors of satanic ritual abuse. **The drawings at the end of this chapter will be indicated by Mr. Doninger as #1,# 2,# 3, etc.**. Please refer back to CHAPTER 6 for further explanation about their connection to Egyptian Satanism if necessary;

****

RITUAL ABUSE: by definition is:

> repeated physical, emotional, mental, and spiritual assaults combined with a systematized use of symbols, ceremonies and machinations designed and orchestrated to attain malevolent effects. The abuse may be repeated 100-1000 times.[178]

This will probably be the most disturbing chapter you will read in this book. This chapter is meant to be a comparison between the ancient rites of Egyptology (the Mysteries) and the rites of modern day Satanism as described and illustrated by the victims of the most heinous crime brought to the public's attention in the history of our country: ritual child Abuse. Although the evidence that is needed to prosecute such crimes against children is by far the most difficult to obtain, the growing number of reports of this nature demand that we as a society take a very serious look at what these victims are saying.

The recent allegations of ritualistic abuse of children is not limited to this country. Reports are

beginning to surface in England, Canada, France and Italy. All of the countries mentioned have also noticed a virtual explosion of interest in the areas of witchcraft and the occult.

Although the fascination with the supernatural covers too many areas to mention, the one most frequently referred to by victims of ritual abuse is satanism. Our knowledge of satanic ritual abuse is still very limited, as the reports of this crime have only begun to gain attention over the last decade. Law Enforcement personnel and professionals in the areas of identification, intervention, and treatment of abuse victims are painstakingly trying to piece together the information supplied by survivors of ritualistic abuse in order to meet the urgent need for expertise in this growing field of occult crimes.

Primarily as a society we are not at all prepared to wage war with an enemy we've seen very little of. Although evidence of its presence is seen in the eyes of its victims and felt after hearing their disclosures, there are some very definite obstacles to overcome before we can even begin to arm ourselves with the weapons to fight this hidden foe. Disbelief from those who are supposed to be involved in intervention for such victims is one of the biggest hindrances to those who have become aware of the ritual abuse problem and have committed themselves to offering assistance to those victims. In 1991, in the United States of America, many in law enforcement, child welfare, and the judicial process simply refuse to accept that there are elements of our society who are committed to the physical, mental, emotional, and spiritual destruction of our children.

'Fear' is another factor which prohibits those who are approached for assistance from getting involved in such a controversial issue. This 'fear element' is probably the single most effective weapon the perpetrators of ritual abuse use to continue their activities undetected. Professionals often fear the loss of credibility at the mention of terms such as Satanism or Devil Worship. Much of the fear generated when this issue is raised results from a lack of knowledge and understanding of occult crimes and, more specifically, the ritualistic abuse of our most precious resource--our children.

In this chapter we are going to try to counter some of this fear by sharing some of the information gathered from interviews with the survivors of these horrible crimes. In this comparative look at the specific rituals described in the previous chapter, alongside the disclosures and illustrations drawn by child victims of ritual abuse, we hope to better arm you - the reader - with understanding necessary to face this nation's darkest secret. This information, though shocking and heartbreaking, will hopefully open some eyes to the fact that man is capable (and has been capable) for centuries of such atrocities as human sacrifice and cannibalism in hopes of appeasing a god of darkness. The same god of darkness and deception who cloaks himself today

in the secrecy of symbolism and ceremony is found in the occultic nature of secret societies that have been around for centuries. As stated in chapter one, we will also be putting forth a theory that much of today's ritual satanic child abuse could stem from secret societies who are using Masonic and Egyptian rituals. Such pseudo-masonic cults have been around for a long time and have a history of advocating violence.

We will now begin to compare the Egyptian rituals with pictures drawn by victim-survivors and their testimonies.

[1] DRINKING BLOOD - SLAUGHTER BLOCK

> Hail, devourer of blood, who camest forth from the block of slaughter, I have not acted guilefully. (Ch. 6, page 51)

The drinking of blood, either human or animal is consistently part of the ritual abuse survivors disclosures (**Pictures #1,3,5,8,9, and 10**). According to the victims, the Satanists believe that the life force of the sacrificial victim is in the blood. Partaking of the blood is believed to empower and add longevity of life. Child victims have related accounts of how the cult members would always drain and save the blood of their victims in apple juice jars, pans, bottles, and pots. The very young children are sometimes introduced to the taste of blood gradually by mixing it with milk, formula, punch, and other beverages. Eventually, with increases in blood content in these drinks, the child victim will be able to drink the blood without dilution. Pictures **#9,12,16,20, and 23** show body parts removed to be used in a ritual, including the drinking of blood. Picture **#10** illustrates 'blood punch' made from the blood of a sacrificed child. The child victim titled this picture "Birthday Colt [Cult] Celebration". The trauma to child victims, resulting from this type of forced participation in satanic rituals such as these is immeasurable. The State of Idaho, as a result of legislative efforts in 1990, has a Legislative Act relating to ritualized abuse of a child (House of Representatives Bill No.817)-Céntennial Legislature second regular session 1990. Chapter 15, Title 18 Idaho Code-New Section-18-1506 A Idaho Code.) (Idaho Code-Chapter 50 Title 18, New Section 18-5003. Def. Cannibalism)

In pictures **#1,3,8,10, and 17**, ingestion of blood is shown as a major part of the rituals. In picture **#1** a young girl describes how during her grooming to be a Priestess in a satanic coven, she was forced to kill the sacrificial victim (a woman) without the aid of the adult members. Three priests in the cult stand, with glasses in hand, waiting for the child to cut the victim. When the blood would begin to flow, it was drained into each of the three glasses. The child was then placed in a suspended cage and made to observe the victim being crucified upside down on a cross and burned. Then the child was forced to drink the blood offered by the

priests and was then placed on a table and tortured sexually by all the members as a reward.

In picture **#8**, the child describes how blood was drank from the skull of a sacrificial victim (a man?). This picture also represents the child and an adult nude, with blood smeared over their bodies in preparation for a ritual that also includes the drinking of blood.

Picture **#4** illustrates the members of the cult getting ready to use the ritual stick and carving with the knife to draw more blood. These rituals are damaging to the physical health and mental stability of the victims.

[2] CANNABALISM - EATING INTESTINES

> Hail, eater of intestines, coming forth from Mabet, not have I desolated ploughed lands. (Ch. 6, page 51)

Cannibalism (**Pictures #6,10,11,12,17, and 20**) is the practice of eating the flesh of one's own kind. In our experience with the victims of ritual abuse, this aspect of the abuse is certainly one of the most traumatic of all. One of the best pictures depicting this is **#11**. To the average American citizen, the thought of cannibalism is a foreign concept; something you hear about happening in the deepest, darkest regions of Africa or South America. We just cannot accept the possibility of such an atrocious act in a "civilized nation". In 1989 in Matamoros, Mexico, a cult was discovered operating a drug trafficking business. When the Mexican authorities searched the compound of the cult, human remains were found in boiling pots. In the last few years children all over America are telling authorities about these sorts of practices at "meetings" where the people pray to the devil. When children disclose cannibalism their attitudes and behavior vary from regression, to aggressiveness, to horrified. Then there are those who can speak very plainly and recall the mutilation and devouring of both babies and adults with no emotion at all. In an interview with an eight year-old girl I was told how her dad had been teaching her to skin babies in the garage. When I asked what they did with the babies after they were skinned, this angelic looking child answered almost mockingly, "They ate them?". I was shocked! She said "Yes Rick, they ate them. There's people like that. They think it gives them power". That child will never know the impact she had on my life. Out of the mouth of this child came testimony of the ultimate evil! Forced ingestion of flesh of her own kind. Cannibalism, right here in the U.S.A. I cried sporadically the next several days at the memory of that child's disclosure. I didn't want to believe it, but I knew in my heart it had to be true. Later, I learned that children from all over the U. S. and several foreign countries were giving very detailed accounts of ritual murders and cannibalism.

Pictures #6,9,10,11,12,17,20 and 34 depict rituals involving cannibalism. This survivor titled picture #12 "eating organs". It shows eighteen coven members around a table upon which a human sacrifice is offered to Satan. The intestines are exposed on the body. On the wall are two pieces of entrail to be eaten and, on a small table, the instruments used to remove these parts from the body. Present at this ritual were six red-robed priests. Our survivor was not sure why so many of high position were present, but said the eating of the intestines provided some special power.

Picture #6 shows six members of this satanic group kneeling in prayer, giving thanks to Satan for the baby which is about to be offered as sacrifice.

Picture #36 illustrates how the child was hung by a nail through the head, entrails removed, and then roasted on a spit over an open fire. Our survivor said, "You throw up the first few times you eat it, but you eventually get used to it." The damage done to a child's mental, emotional, and spiritual health as a result of this type of victimization, is long lasting and results in the child suffering from post traumatic stress disorder (PTSD), such as is found in war veterans. Although disbelief is provoked by the children's testimonies of the atrocities, the detail and similarity from such a large number of unrelated children from different geographical areas demands credibility be given to their stories.

[3] TORTURE CHAMBER

(21)Hail, thou two-headed serpent, who comest forth from the torture-chamber, I have not defiled the wife of any man. (Ch. 6, page 52)

The police detective and his female assistant tried to maintain their composure as the nine year-old victim described the horrors that she had witnessed in the basement torture chamber of her grandmother's house. She described how tables were made with chains attached to hold the victims down on the table; how the victims heads are shaved, and three foot long "sticks" placed in the rectums of the victims on the tables. It was all the South Georgia policeman could do to keep from showing the disgust and anger at the perpetrators who had forced this beautiful, red-haired, freckled child to participate in horrors that tested the experienced child abuse investigator's imagination.

Pictures #12,13,15, and 18, drawn by a male and female survivor in Indiana, depicts victims restrained on tables and mutilated in different ways.

Pictures #18 and 21 show how the victim is sometimes branded on the chest with a five-pointed star symbol. This illustration is titled "Baby being branded by the demons".

The children tell of how the eyes, ears, brains, hearts, hands, and feet are usually removed. The Satanists believe the longer and more prolonged the death, the more power they absorb from the victims. Skinning the victims alive, we are told, is also a preferred form of torture. The children are always forced to participate in this torture which serves a two-fold purpose: First, it ensures silence of the children by implicating them in the crime and, secondly, it desensitizes the child to future participation in these ritualistic activities.

> [4] THE CRUSHER OF BONES
>
> Hail, Crusher of Bones, who comest forth from Suten-henen, "I have told no lies.." (Ch. 6, page 52)

In pictures **#9,16, and 23**, the children's illustrations show the removal of bones. The children tell how some of the bones are kept, dried and crushed into powder. They are then used to make clay from which ritual paraphernalia is made. Things such as plates, cups, and bone china dolls are sculpted from this bone clay. These items are then sold and traded among other cult members. This also answers some investigators' questions about why evidence of ritual murder is seldom found. The children say virtually all body parts are utilized for some purpose, and what isn't eaten or kept is burned leaving no traces to be found by authorities.

> [5] WASHING IN BLOOD
>
> Behold ye then god this great of slaughter, mighty of terror, he washeth in your blood, he batheth in your gore. (Ch. 6, page 52)

Picture **#17** illustrates bathing in a tub filled with blood at what the child called a "Blood Moon" ritual. These rituals, according to the survivors, take place on nights when the moon appears red in the sky. The cult pictured consisted of people in Southern Indiana.

> [6] KILLING ANIMALS - LOCKS OF HAIR
>
> I have obtained the mastery over the animals with the knife in their heads and their locks of hair, who live among their emeralds, the aged and the shining beings who prepare the moment of Osiris Ani, triumphant in peace. He maketh slaughter upon the earth, and conversely, I am strong. (Ch. 6, page 52)

The children we have interviewed have all given accounts of animal sacrifice. The stories involving animals have ranged from rats and other small animals, to cows. We are not sure of the specific meaning for the use of different kinds of animals: the children say that those who do this will use anything for the shedding

of blood; dogs, cats, squirrels, mice, or deer.

Picture **#14**, drawn by a nine-year-old, shows a rat being killed. This child was allegedly taken from her school to an old church where a satanic ritual was being held. She said those adults involved were personnel from her school.

Pictures **#26 and 37** depict the killing of a goat which was then beheaded. The head was then mounted on the wall and the members prayed to Satan asking him to possess the goat head and speak through it. According to our survivor she was then placed inside the carcass of the dead goat and the cult members sodomized it and her once again while she was inside.

[7] KING UNAS EATS HEARTS

He has taken the hearts of the gods.
He has eaten the Red,
He has swallowed the Green
Their charms are in his belly
He has swallowed the knowledge of every god.
the lifetime of King Unas is eternity. (Ch. 6, page 52)

Survivors of satanic ritual abuse involving human and animal sacrifice always tell of eating the hearts of the sacrificial victims. They tell us the heart is the most powerful part of the body to be eaten and all of the victims life energy is contained within the heart. Sometimes the heart is removed very quickly while the victim is still alive and then devoured immediately by the group. Picture **#19** drawn by a nine-year-old girl illustrates hearts of children kept in jars and the children's names recorded on the jars. In Picture **#20** the cabinet the child says the hearts were kept in also had a knife, a pan that blood was collected in, and books that held written accounts of all that was done to the ritual abuse victims. The children say that the cult has members designated to do this. These record keepers are known as scribes with the cult.

[8] KING UNAS IS A CANNIBAL FOND OF SCALPING PEOPLE AND BONDAGE

509. UNAS devoureth men and liveth "upon the gods, he is the lord of envoys, whom he sendeth forth on his missons. 'He who cutteth off hairy scalps,' "who dwelleth in the fields, tieth the gods with ropes;..(Ch. 6, page 52)

Pictures **#6,8,9,18, and 19** are all depictions of cannibalism, **#15,18,22** bondage. and **#21**, scalping. These are aspects of modern day Satanism which are routinely described by victims of ritual abuse.

Picture **#21** shows the skin being peeled from the skull of a baby. Skinning people alive is a common practice among cults involved in human sacrifice. As in this same illustration the inverted pentagram is sometimes carved upon the abdomen of the victim.

Picture **#22** is what the survivor calls the "dirt offering". The victim is tied down on a bed of spikes. Then the child participant is forced to push the victim down onto the deadly points. Once again this forced participation in ritual murder is devastating to the child. The mental and emotional scars resulting from this lasts a lifetime. Survivor guilt is common among these children.

> [9] BONDAGE, MURDER, CANNIBALISM, DISMEMBERMENT, THE VICTIMS THROATS ARE CUT AND THE BODY PARTS ARE BOILED IN A CALDRON AT NIGHTTIME
>
> 510. Tcheser-tep keepeth guard over them for Unas and driveth them unto him; and the Cord-master bound them for slaughter. Khonsu the slayer of the wicked cutteth their throats.....and draweth out their intestines, for it is he whom Unas sendeth to slaughter; and Shesmu cutteth them in pieces and boileth their members in his blazing caldrons of the night..(Ch. 6, page 52-3)

Picture **#11** is the most graphic of illustrations done by any of the survivors we have interviewed. This picture is entitled "carving for our feast." It tells the story of an eight-year-old girl being forced to butcher the sacrificial victim into small enough pieces to be packaged for storage for a cannibalism ritual. Sometimes the victims' body parts were cooked in pots as a stew; sometimes the cult just devoured the flesh raw. The child who drew this illustration suffers from Multiple Personality Disorder as a result of the forced participation. M.P.D. is common among child ritual abuse victims.

> [10] THE THIGHS OF THE FIRST BORN ARE HEAPED UP
>
> The old gods and the old goddesses become fuel for his furnace. The mighty ones in heaven light the fire under the caldrons: where are heaped up the thighs of the firstborn; (Ch. 6, page 53)
>
> [11] THE RITUAL FIRE IS STARTED WITH THE THIGHS OF A WOMAN (Ch.6, page 53)

Picture **#23** drawn by a little girl from a generational Satanist family from south Georgia, shows the thighs of a woman lying next to a firepit.

> [12] HACKING IN PIECES THE FIRSTBORN
>
> [508] Unas hath weighed his "words with the hidden god [?] who hath no name, on the day of hacking in pieces the firstborn. (Ch. 6, page 53)

Picture **#24** is a very simple illustration of the offering of the firstborn. The survivor tells us she was given the special privilege of being allowed to carry this sacrificial offering to the stone altar where it was then hacked to pieces. This particular ritual is shown as having been done during a full moon. Our survivor tells us that most of the sacrifices take place when the moon is full.

> [13] UNAS EATS MAGICAL CHARMS
>
> Behold, Unas eateth of that which the red drown sendeth forth, he increaseth, and the magical charms of the gods are in his belly; (Ch. 6, page 53)

Although it is still unclear exactly what is meant by "magical charms", one survivor tells us that it may be the different entrails of the sacrificial victim, as each part (heart, liver, testicles, etc.) are believed to contain mystical powers and those who consume those parts become endowed with such powers.

> [14] A GOD BORN FROM THE BUTTOCKS OF A COW
>
> Every season of the flood I saw god born from the buttocks of a cow..." (Ch. 6, page 54)

Picture **#29** was one of the most bizarre disclosures of the many we've heard involving Satanism and ritualistic abuse. This disclosure came from one of the alter personalities of a survivor. When asked where she was at the time of this ritual, she said, " I was watching from up on top of the light. I'm little enough to sit up there, you know." She recalled this ritual as a birthing ceremony whereby a full-term infant was taken from the mother by cutting open the belly. Then the newborn was placed inside the stomach of a drugged cow. After sewing the child inside and performing the required incantations the infant is removed, symbolizing being born into the family of Satan. Actual performance of these appalling rituals are beyond the comprehension of most modern minds, yet children from all over America are giving corroborative testimony to these ungodly crimes.

[15] BOAT RITUAL

These illustrations from Albert Champdor's "The Book of the Dead" shows a mummy, with phallus erect sliding into the Seventh Region of the Lower World, described as being "filled with serpents' coils and four sons of Horus who protect the viscera of the Dead." (Ch. 6, page 55)

In Picture **#27**, a 19-year-old ritual abuse survivor depicts herself being made to lay in a boat floating in shallow water. The boat is surrounded by six cult members, six burning red candles, with six snakes placed in the boat to crawl on her. She says she was not allowed to move even one muscle or be punished for her disobedience. She said this was a part of a ritual performed to cleanse her of sins against Satan, which consisted of acts of kindness, or belief in God. She titles this picture "the snakes will cleanse forever life." One can only imagine the horror experienced by a small child while enduring this type of abuse.

Many times the various tortures and acts of violence perpetrated upon these children are specifically designed to cause the child victim to suffer a split personality. This Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD) aids the perpetrators in cases where this type of abuse is discovered by authorities. M. P. D. destroys the credibility of a child witness in a court of law. The trauma, resulting from ritual abuse, is something the perpetrators rely on to avoid prosecution.

[16] THE EATING OF DEAD BODIES

Ra-Tmu, Lord of the Great House, prince, life, strength and health of all the gods, deliver thou [me] from the god whose face is like unto that of a dog, whose brows are as those of a man, and who feedeth upon the dead, who watcheth at the Bight of the firey Lake, and who devoureth the bodies of the dead and swalloweth hearts, and who shooteth forth filth, but he himself remaineth unseen. (Ch. 6, page 56)

This ritual has already been discussed in the section on CANNABALISM on page 78. However, there is a reference made to "face is like unto that of a dog", which could possibly be similar to one of the masks the survivors tell about that are sometimes worn during the rituals.

[17] RITUAL SLAUGHTER OF ANIMALS (Ch. 6, page 56-7)

The illustration on page 57 shows the passing down of body parts and pitchers of blood?

The survivors show things similar to this in Pictures **#29, and 37**.

[18] HEARTS IN A JAR

The heart is placed in a jar to be weighed for judgment. (Ch. 6, page 57)

The young children who tell of these sordid rituals do not know why many of these ceremonies are performed, but those adults who commit these atrocious acts are well aware that the motivation is to satisfy their god of darkness. In the previous chapter. the weighing of hearts in jars for judgment are Egyptian in origin.

In Pictures **#19 and 20**, the survivors show the hearts in the jars also. How many satanic cults actually use the Egyptian Book of the Dead as a guide for their bloody worship is unknown, but the similarities in specific aspects of the ritual leaves no doubt that it is more than a coincidence.

As we near the year 2000 A.D., we must remember the children who have been ritualistically abused are human beings who have been attacked by an enemy and taken prisoner. They have suffered wounds that they may or may not survive. They have suffered assaults upon their spirit that are intended to corrupt their innocence. Evil, pain, and fear have been forced upon them repeatedly until the child prays to die but, at the same instant, anger, violence and hate are kindled. If the child is fortunate enough to find someone who believes them they have a chance to be helped. It takes much love, earning their trust, making the child (or adult) feel safe, a strong stomach, and belief in the power of God to heal and deliver the survivor from the powerful clutches of Satan. When there is no intervention, you have a child (or adult) who has had to experience more than the soldiers of most of the conventional wars, some of whom act out their frustrations on school-mates or members of their families. It is no wonder that some of these victims experience learning difficulties and attention problems in school, problems holding down a job or, just relating to people in general.

Trauma suffered as a result of physical and sexual abuse at a very young age leaves scars that, more often than not, never go away. When this abuse is combined with assaults on the victims' emotions and spirit, in such a way as to implant evil, not only is the child traumatized, but - without intervention, the child will be desensitized to horrors such as cannibalism, murder, bestiality, animal mutilation, and sexual perversion beyond our imagination. Some of these children will grow up to be murderers, rapists and child molesters. This is the goal of those involved in ritual abuse; to totally corrupt the child in every way. Satanists have a goal to breed an entire generation of youth, indoctrinated in evil.

[19] SEXUAL PERVERSION

> It is Osiris. Others, however, say that his name is Ra, and that the god who dwelleth in Amentet is the phallus of Ra, wherewith he had union with himself. (Ch. 6, page 58)

Pictures **#28,31, and 37** are graphic examples of sexual perversion. When one tries to imagine the trauma associated with either of these pictures, the heart is - or should be - gripped with compassion for the victim of ritual abuse. In Picture **#28** (the lower half), the child illustrates how a sacrificial victim was laid on a table, whereupon his genitals were cut off. This was done while he was alive! After removal of the penis, a stick was inserted into the amputated organ. The emotional and physical shock to the child victim because of the use of this tool of perversion is beyond description. She was first made to taste the blood from where the genitals were removed, then made to lie down and suffer molestation and torture with the tool made from the amputated penis. Finally, she was placed in a cage suspended from a tree to watch while the cult members finished the mutilation (Picture **#2**). The lower part of **#28** shows the tool from the amputated penis. Picture **#31** shows a wand, or ritual stick, used in the sexual torture.

Sexual perversion is a part of every ritual, according to our survivor. This unbridled sex, including the abuse of children which many times is filmed to be sold for profit in the child pornography market, is also part of the lure to attract those people who are prone to participate in acts of deviate sexual conduct. This aspect is interesting because child molestation is a crime and, many times, blackmailing the victims and parents can be profitable. The children who have been victimized all tell of being placed nude on tables, eaten, insulted, mocked, tortured sexually, and forced to have sex with siblings, animals, and adults, including same-sex partners. Satanism's doctrine proclaims no restraints in all areas of morality including sex.

> [20] EXCREMENT
>
> Who is this? It is Osiris. Others however, say that it is the dead body of Osiris and, yet others, say that it is the excrement of Osiris." (Ch. 6, page 58)

Both Pictures **#35 and #34** are examples of the use of excrement in satanic ritual abuse in the 90's. Both show children lying on tables with people in robes and other disguises. Both show bowls nearby filled with urine and feces to be smeared over the children's bodies. Children tell how they were made to eat and drink the human waste. Defilement of the innocence of the child, humiliation, and degradation are forced upon these children to both satisfy their god-Satan-and their own unbridled Lust.

An interesting note about the child who drew **#35**: This girl alleges she was ritually abused at a Masonic home down in the south. She claims she spent nine years at this home being forced to participate in and witness some type of ritual performed by men who were Masons. According to this victim, the people who forced these children to partake in these rituals also forced them to wear a pair of 'golden scales' around

their neck. This is extremely significant in light of what 33° Mason C. W. Leadbeater said about Black Masonry.

> The whole of what we now call Black Masonry led up to an explanation of karma as divine justice, this having been preserved for us in shadow in what is now the 31°. That is the degree of the Grand Inspector Inquisitor Commander, whose symbol is a pair of scales. In Egypt, this pair of scales was taken as an emblem of the perfect balance of divine justice.[179]

This young girl's disclosure could well be the first ritual of Black Masonry ever to be documented. She also alleges that she observed her siblings killed during these rituals. Further, she alleges that other children at the home were used in pornography and prostitution.

> [22]. CHAMBER OF SNAKES
>
> The chamber appeared to be filled with reptiles, to teach the Necoris to withstand bodily terror. The greater the courage shewn on this trial, so much the more was he lauded after reception. (Ch. 6, page 58)

In Pictures **#30 and 33**, snakes are used to teach the children who are ritually abused to withstand bodily terror.

In **#33**, the child victim had to let the snakes crawl over her. She was not allowed to cry or move even one muscle. This use of snakes is so traumatic to the children many times this act alone is enough to cause the development of Multiple Personality Disorder.

In **#33, and in #28**, in the Boat Ritual referred to on page 64, snake bites occurred many times. The pain was unbearable, but intentionally inflicted upon the victims.

Picture **#30** shows the use of snakes as guardians to keep the children in their cages and quiet.

> [24] THE ANKH
>
> The ankh is an Egyptian symbol of life and is often associated with fertility. (Ch. 6, page 59)

The ankh in Picture **#32** shows an illustration of a book the child victim calls "The Devil's Book". The child said the perpetrators of her abuse read from this book at the "meetings" where she and other children were abused. The child shows the book had the Egyptian symbol of life and fertility on the cover. Pictures such as these leave no doubt to the adult observer that these rituals, described by child victims of ritual abuse, are directly related to ancient blood rites.

During many of these rituals, the Devil, or Satan, was summoned from a pit. In Picture **#7**, a survivor has drawn her conception of what she thought he resembled: a half-human, half-animal form. In some

literature this type of figure is called a "Pan" figure or god of the underworld.

[21] SELF-MUTILATION AND PERVERSION

> Who are these gods? They are the drops of blood which came forth from the phallus of Ra when he went to perform his own mutilation. These drops of blood sprang into being under the forms of the gods Hu and Sa, who are in the bodygard of ra, and who accompany the god Tem daily and every day. (Ch.6, page 58)

Although I do not have an illustration that depicts self-mutilation, we have worked with many ritual abuse victims and it seems as though even the youngest of the children display tendencies toward self-injury. We have known of instances where children as young as age four have cut and scratched themselves severely as a result of the trauma and pain suffered during ritualistic abuse. As the victims spend more time in the abusive situation, they will eventually be programmed to keep the abuse a secret. One victim that we have worked with extensively would hurt herself impulsively. She told us that she was taught to do something to herself if she began considering disclosure of the dark secrets to someone who might threaten the cult's operations. Even years after leaving the abusive group the urge to hurt herself was sometimes overwhelming, resulting in self-inflicted scratches, burns, or razor blade cuts. Suicidal tendencies are common among ritual abuse victims. One survivor said she would rather die than feel the pain caused by guilt over the things she was forced to participate in. She saw, over and over, the pain felt by the cult's sacrificial offerings; sometimes adult, and sometimes child, victims. During these times, she would usually feel like hurting herself, saying, "I deserve it." This false feeling of being responsible for those victims who died upon the Satanists' altars many times would send the survivor into a frenzy of self-mutilation.

Other children who have been ritualistically abused will sometimes try to aggressively sexually assault other children, repeating and acting out the perversion of the adult cult members.

All of the illustrations we have briefly examined in this chapter are gruesome testimonials to the horrors that man is capable of inflicting upon innocent children. The trauma or emotional shock to the children is immeasurable and in many cases death results. As I have stated earlier, in those cases where the child survives, the atrocities the victim is left with does irreparable damage to body, mind, and spirit. This indoctrination into evil is not easily reversed. That is exactly what the perpetrators of this abuse set out to accomplish. The children are taught that the dark god who requires the blood, pain, and flesh of innocent

victims is the supreme deity. They are taught that darkness is more powerful than light. Love is something fictitious. To devour one's own kind is a pleasure which extends life and adds to personal gain. The total reversal of both spiritual and moral value results in the development of a heartless, murderous, depraved human being, who can only be reclaimed by the one power greater than God's dark adversary. **The power of Jesus Christ to redeem, through love, those little ones offended by the servants of Satan himself, is the one hope the innocent young victims have.**

After looking at the obvious similarities between the Ancient Egyptian Blood Rituals of "The Book of the Dead" and the disclosures of victims of modern day ritualistic satanic abuse or Satanism, we are left with no doubt as to the origin of this dark religion. Although we may draw back at the thought, we must also consider those who practice these dark rites and consider the role they may play in our every day life as a society. **Do these blood thirsty practitioners of horror affect anyone more than the innocent victims of this religion? We think: Yes!**

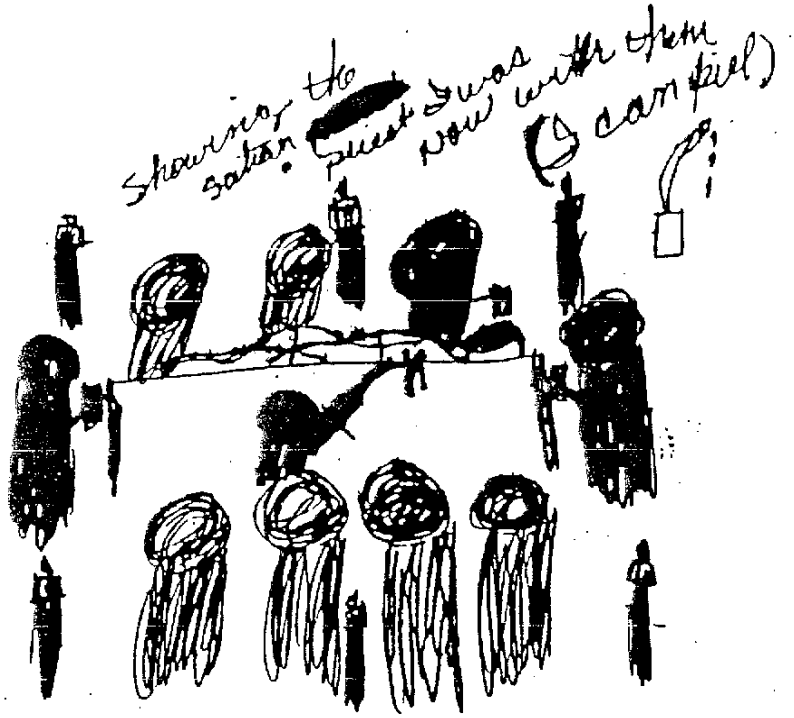
We know from first-hand experience, the grief each victim-survivor is living through as they disclosed the terrible things they endured. We have seen the problems this information has caused the families of the survivors. We have listened as families and victim-survivors have told us how many times they have been rejected and not believed by their own church families. We have spent a countless number of days and nights listening, believing, crying, comforting, and most important of all praying for and with these victim-survivors and their families; these "little ones" whom Jesus died for.

We hope this book will show you - the reader - that the evil of old is as real and present in our day as it was in the day when the Ancient Rites were first recorded. **Let us continue to pray for the innocent "little ones" who need our intervention to help rescue them from the chains which bind them within this "Hidden Holocaust."**

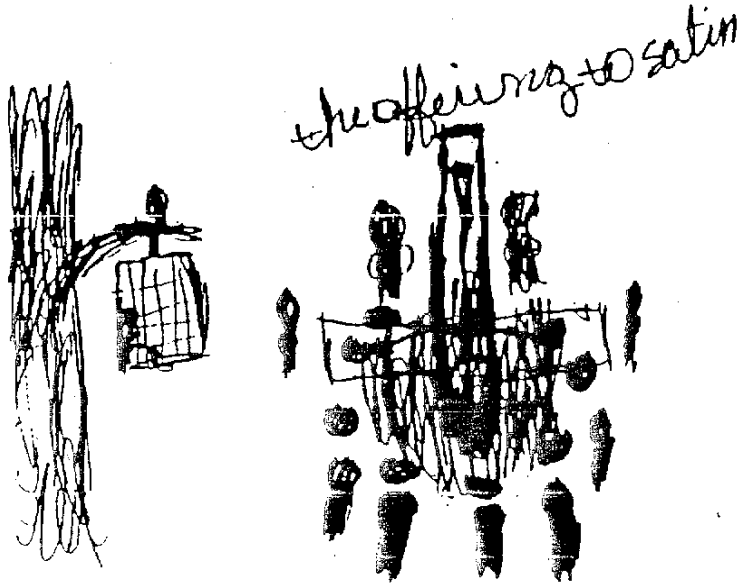
Although our society as a whole is rejecting the possibility of such an unspeakable problem; ritual child abuse is a reality. Only by believing the children, who have survived these awful acts, can we help them escape. Modern day Satanists have a number of stated goals; one of which is to claim as its own an entire generation. We as Christians, must answer the call to spiritual warfare if we hope to help God's most precious creation: Our children ! If you have any questions regarding this chapter, or questions about ritual abuse, write to the address in the front of the book.

DRAWINGS BY SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE SURVIVORS

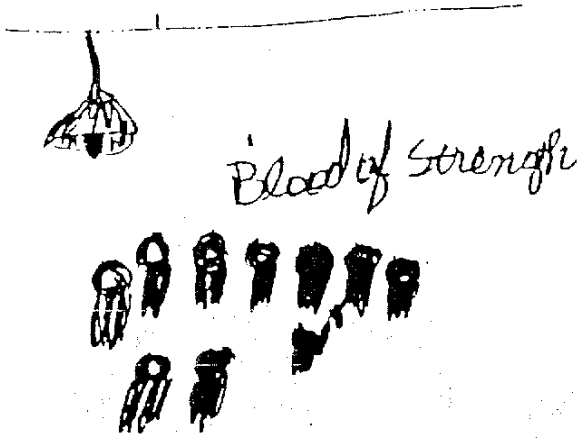
1



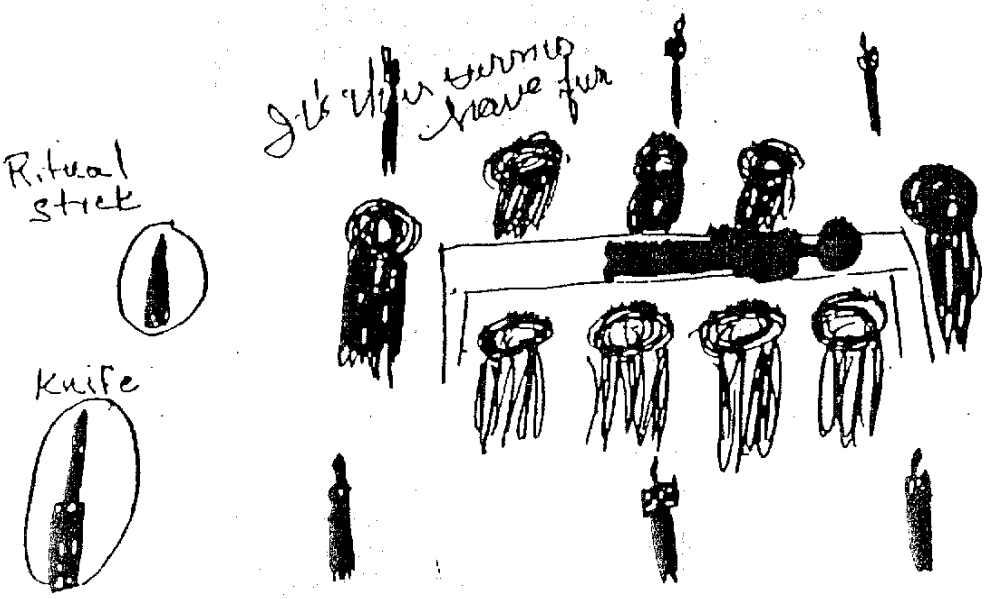
2



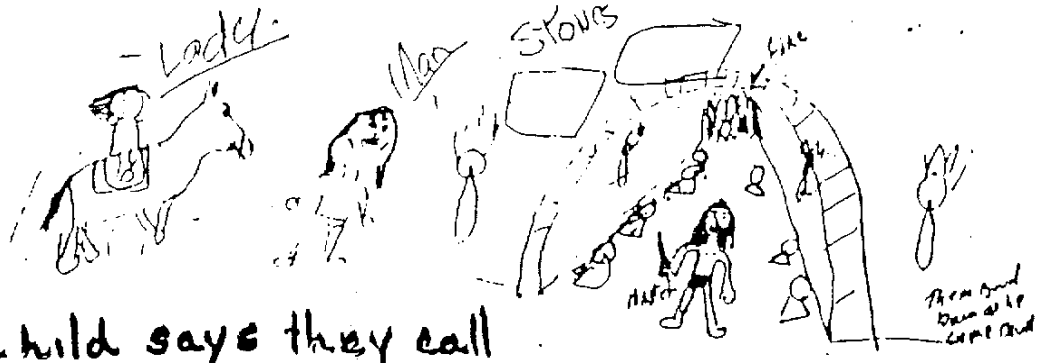
3



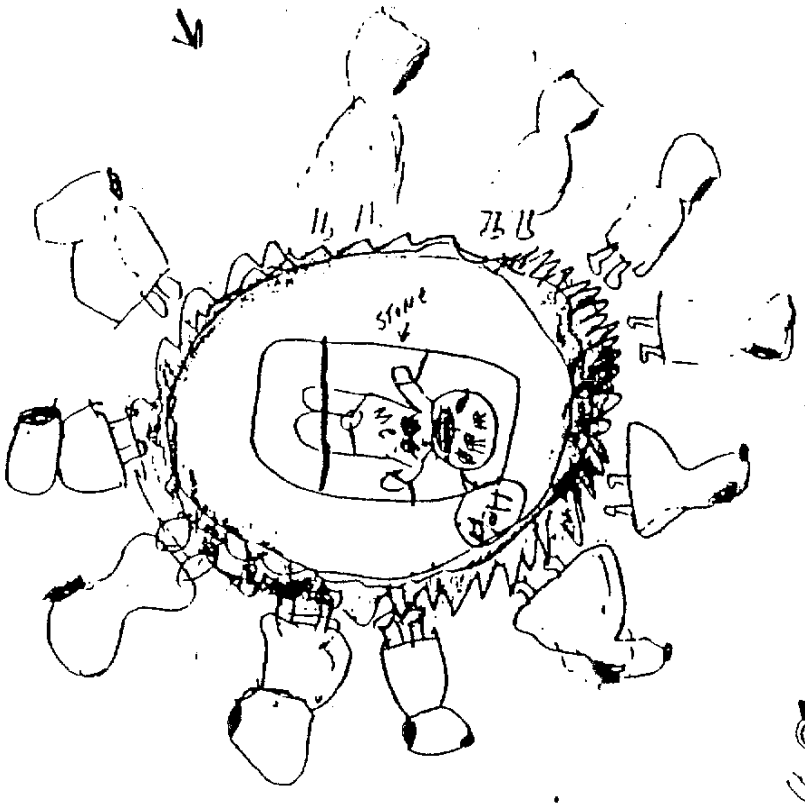
4



5



Child says they call themselves "Druids"



Singing in Different Language

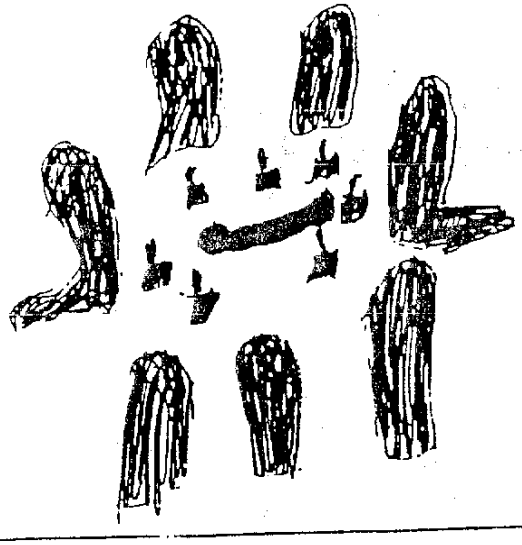
Painted Bear on Full and Sat on Clay Where to be Yellow

Painted bear

9:45 PM Jan 1, 1991 Dream complete Yellow House.

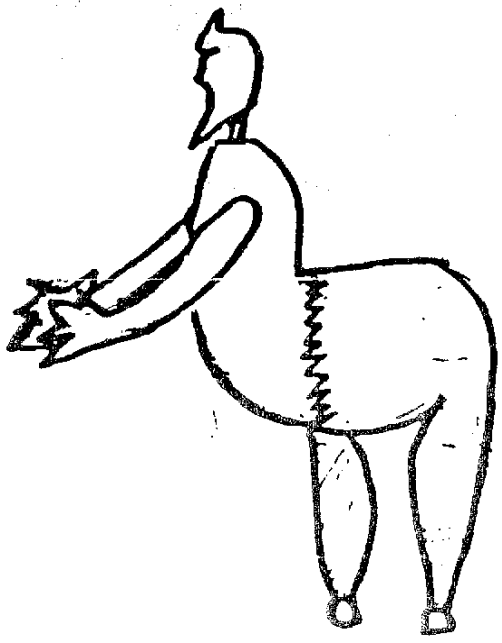
6

Thanks to Satan



Sept. 13 1990

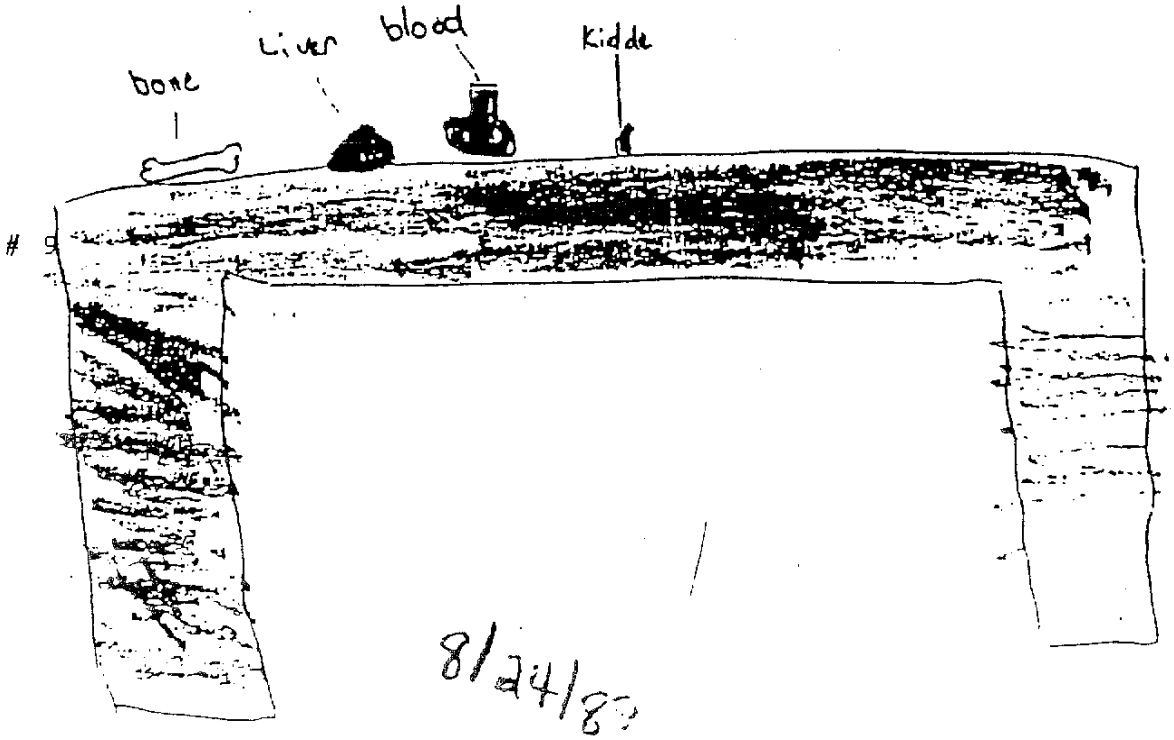
7



8

members
drinking
Blood and
putting blood
on themselves

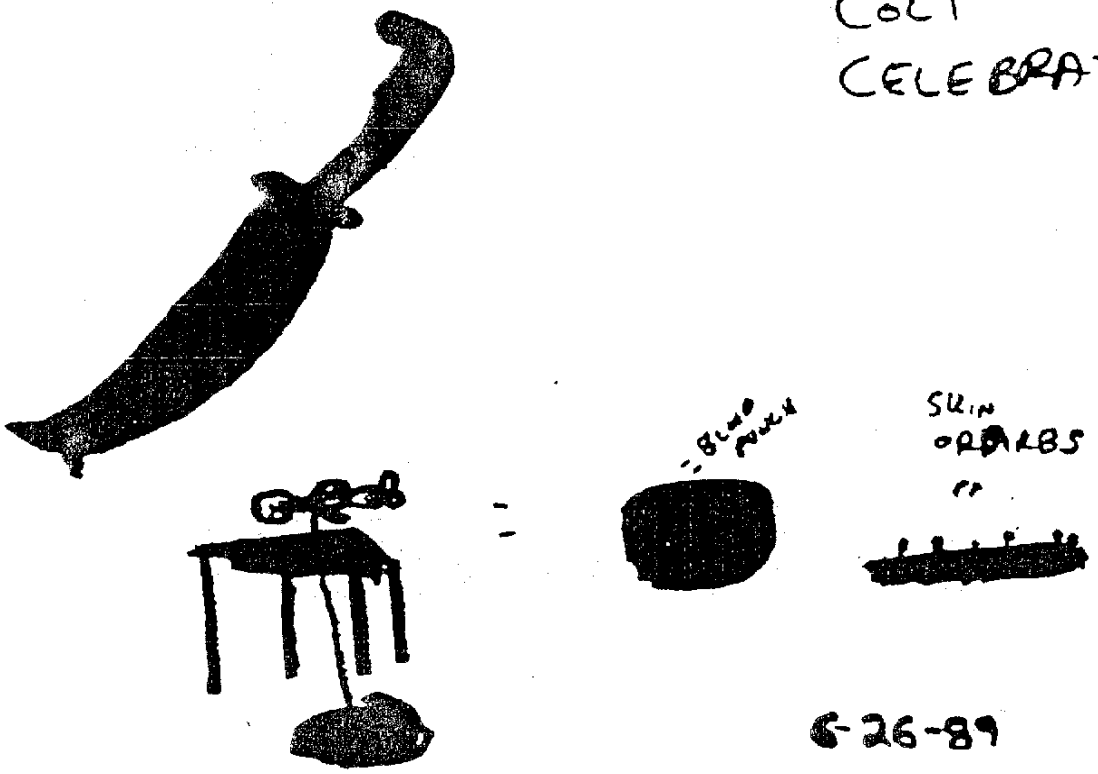
9


bone
Liver
blood
Kidde

8/24/83

10

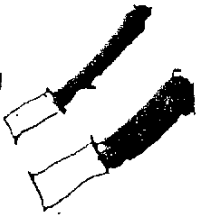
BIRTHDAY
COLT
CELEBRATION

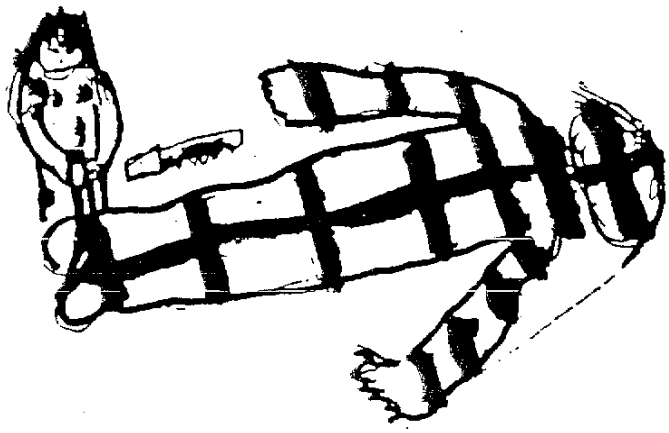


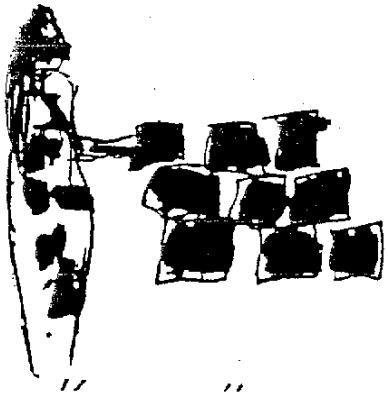
6-26-89

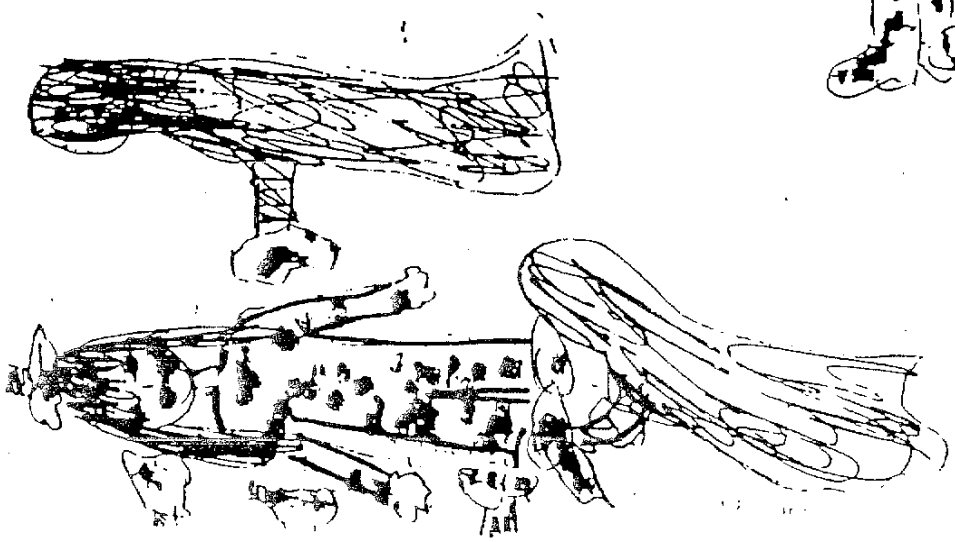
Carving for [redacted] our
Feast Aug 29. 1990.

11



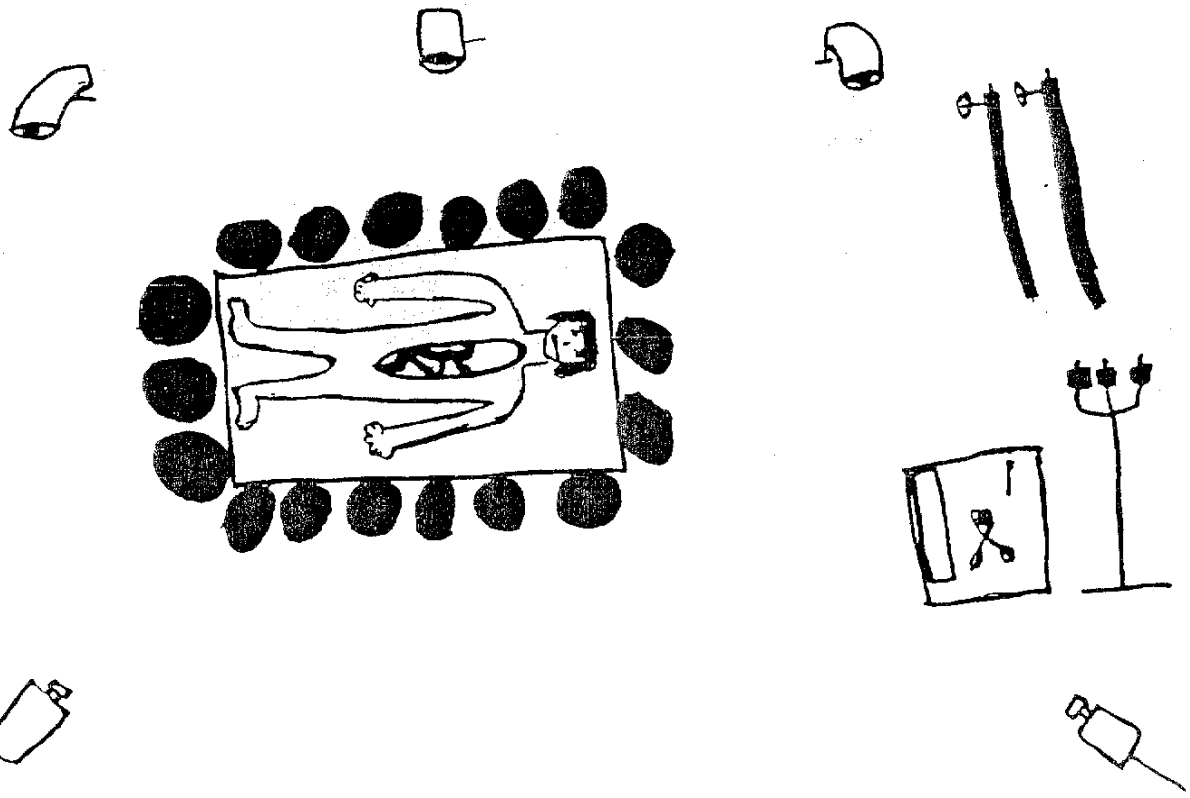




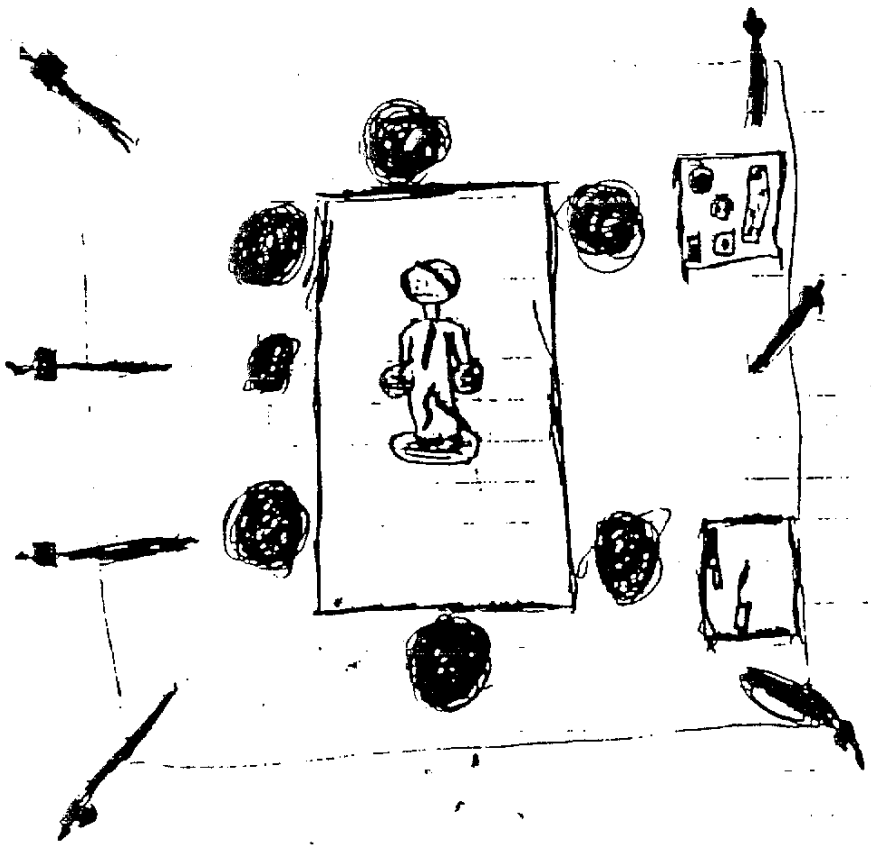


12

eating organs



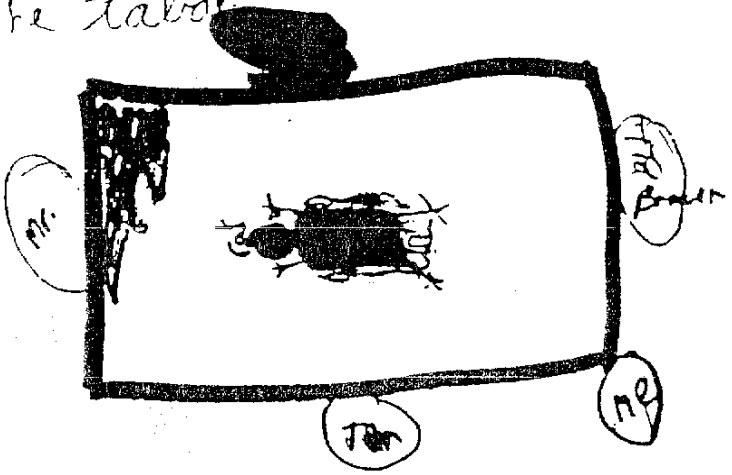
13



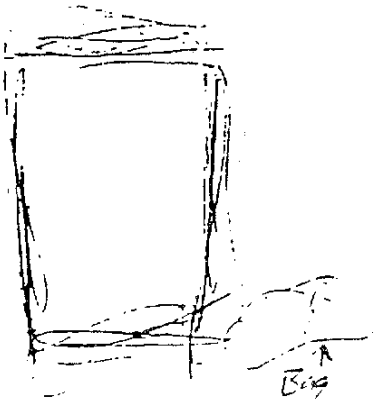
[redacted]

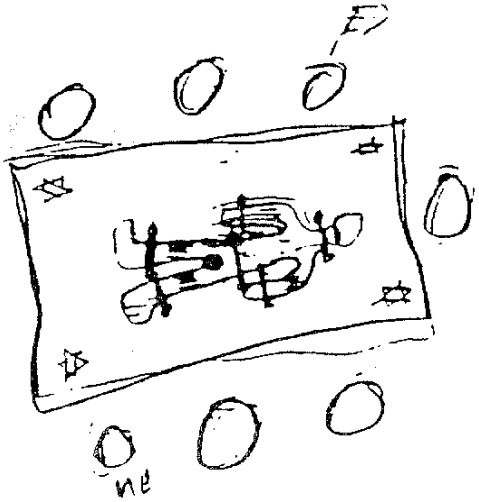
They killed the animals on the table.

14



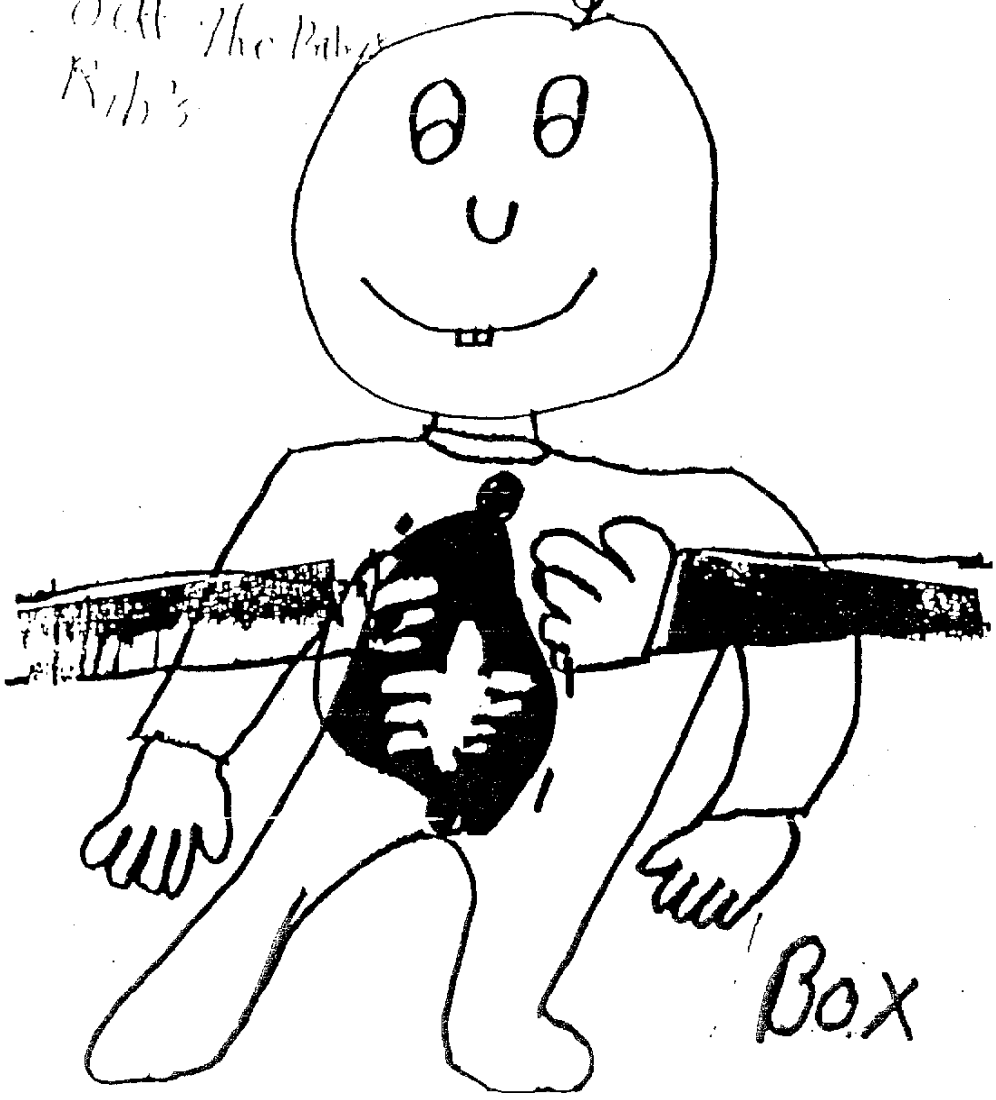
15



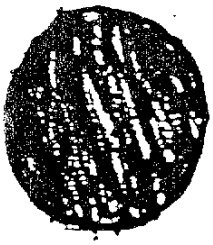


16

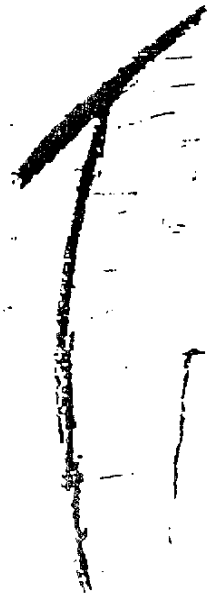
They are taking
out the Baby
Rib's

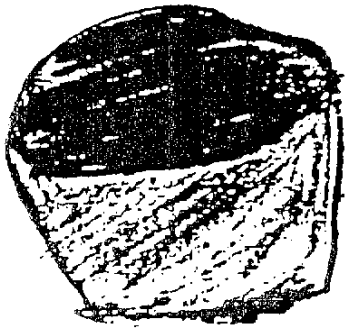


Blood moon

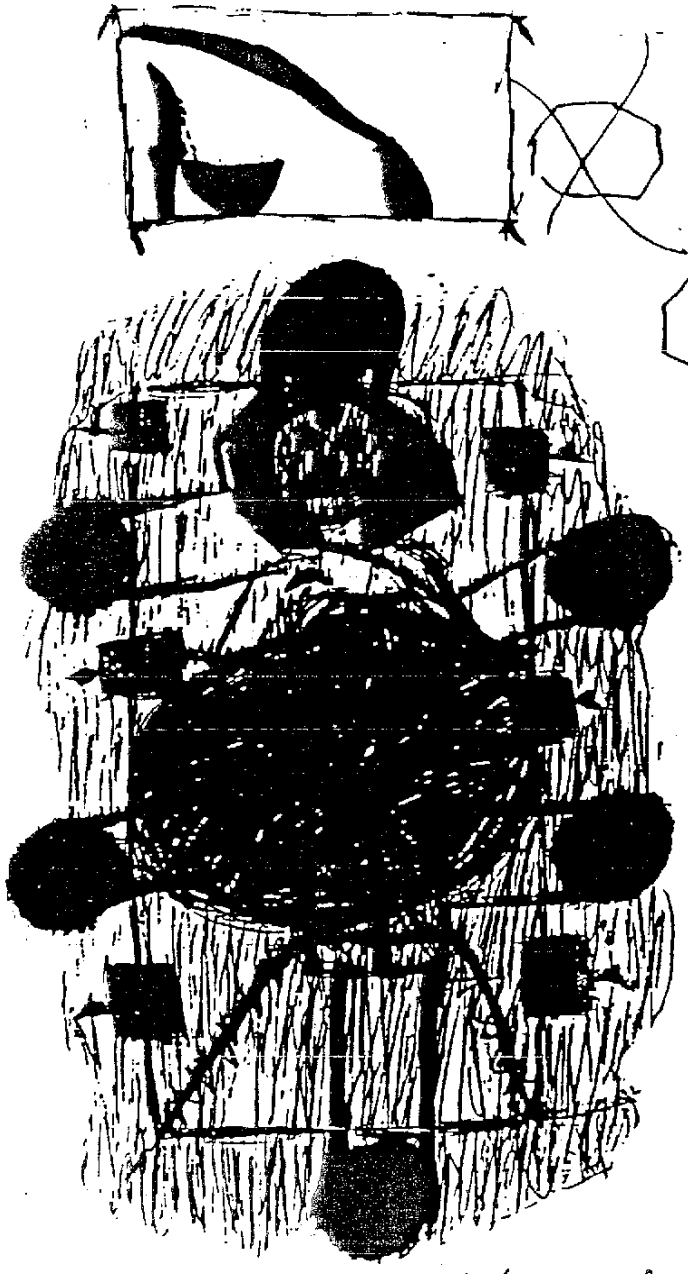


17



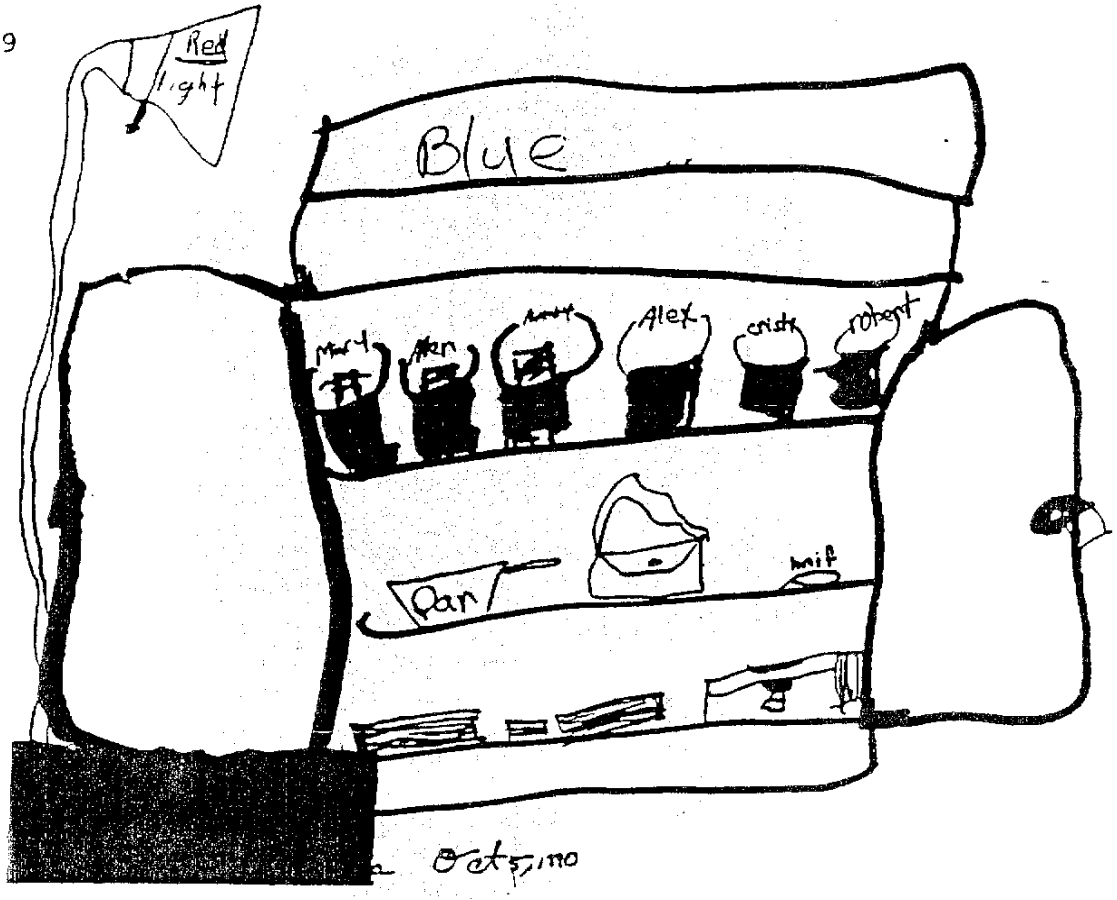


#18



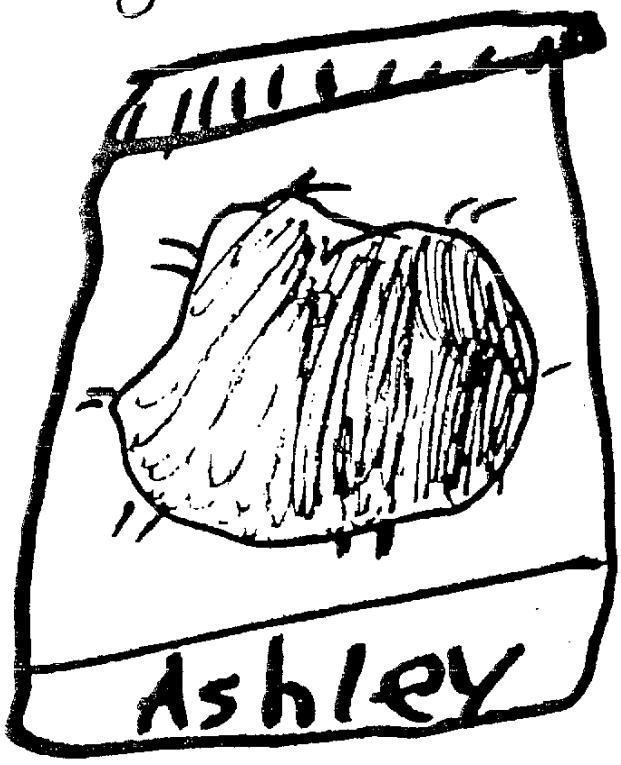
Baby being Branded. Buy the demons

19



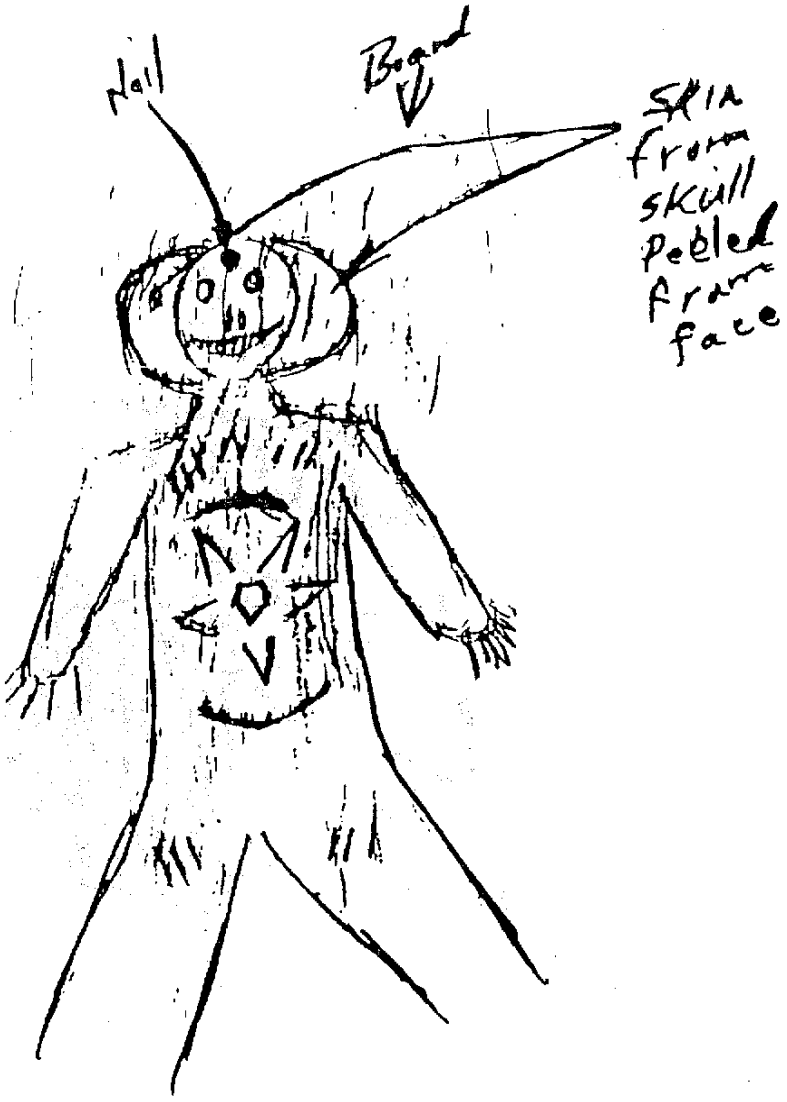
a baby's heart in a jar ~~the~~ that they had many of.

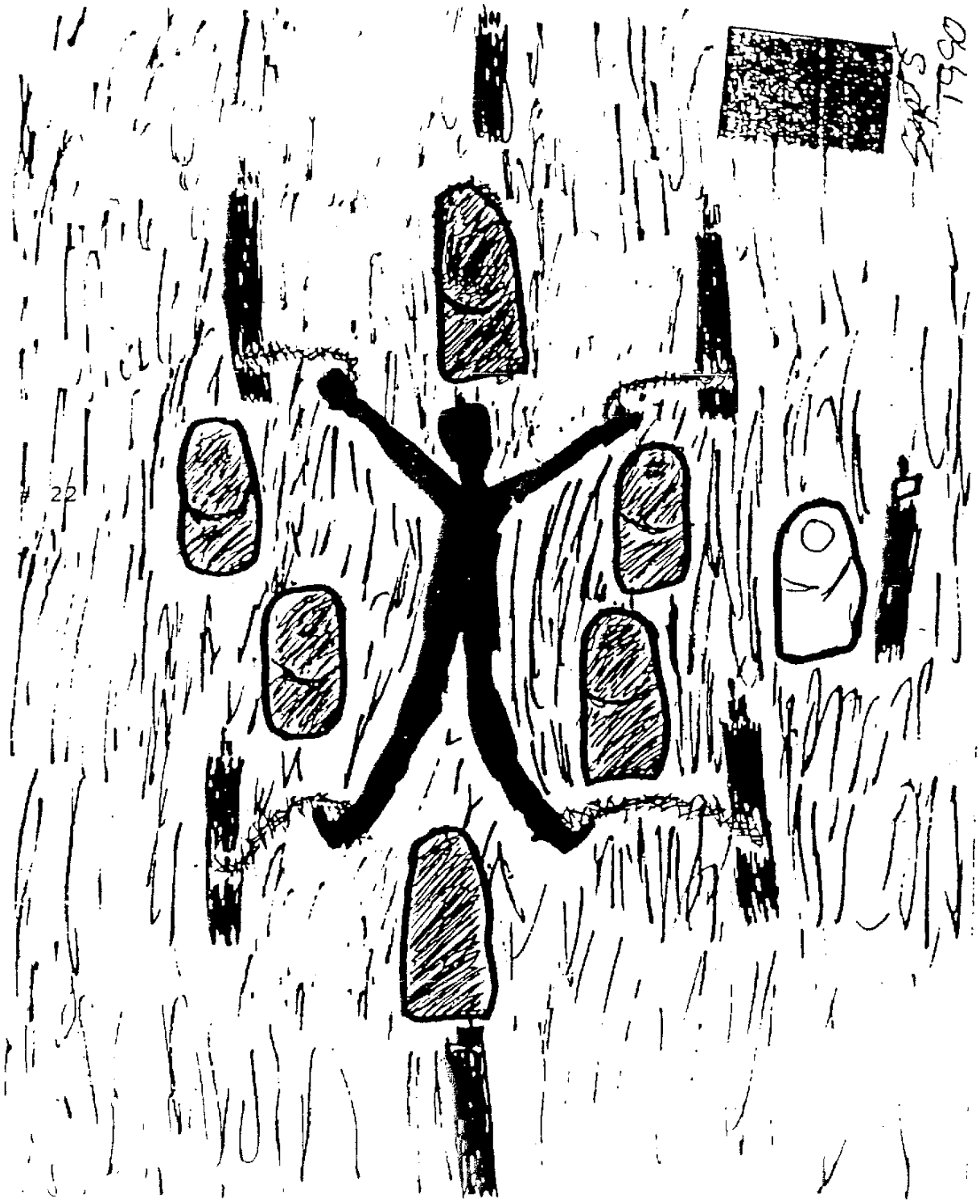
#. 20



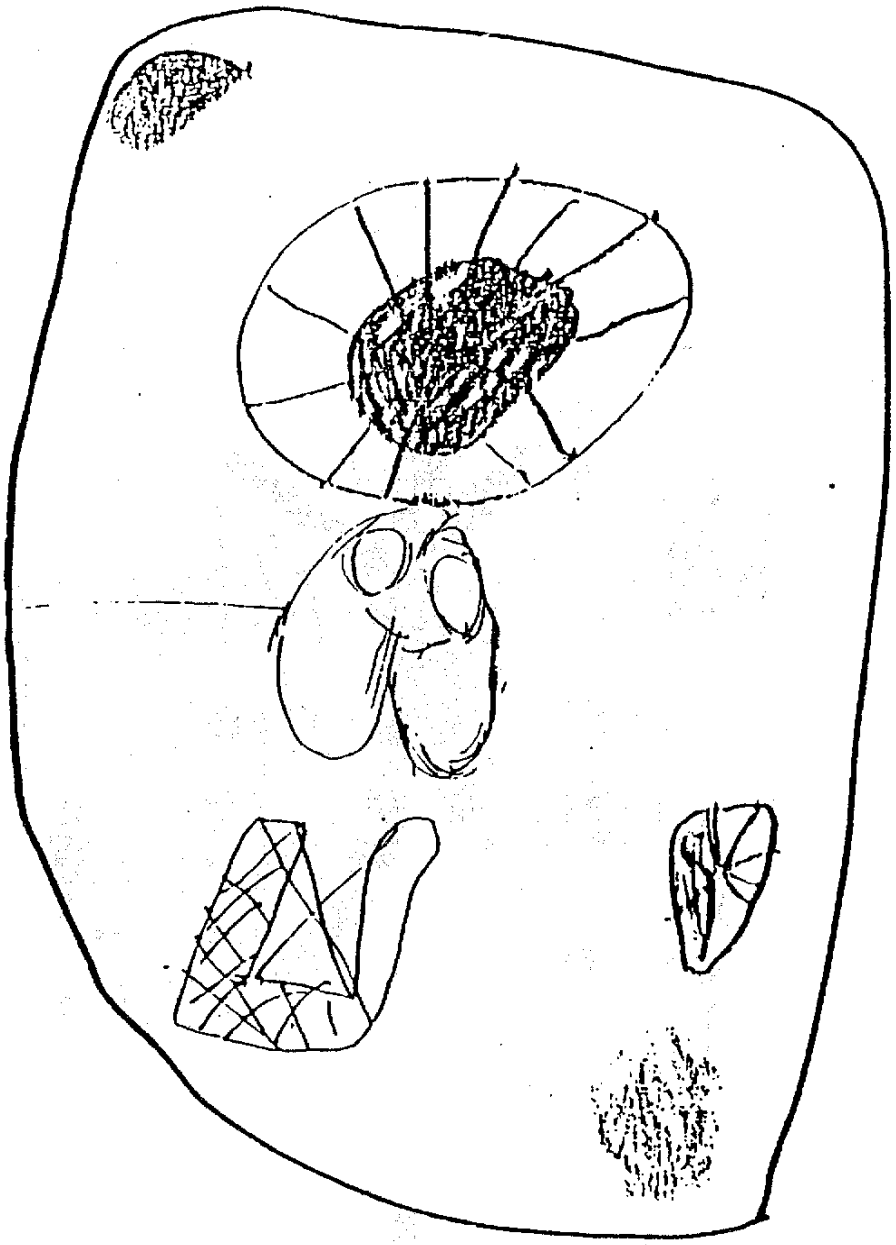
[redacted] Oct 5, 1770

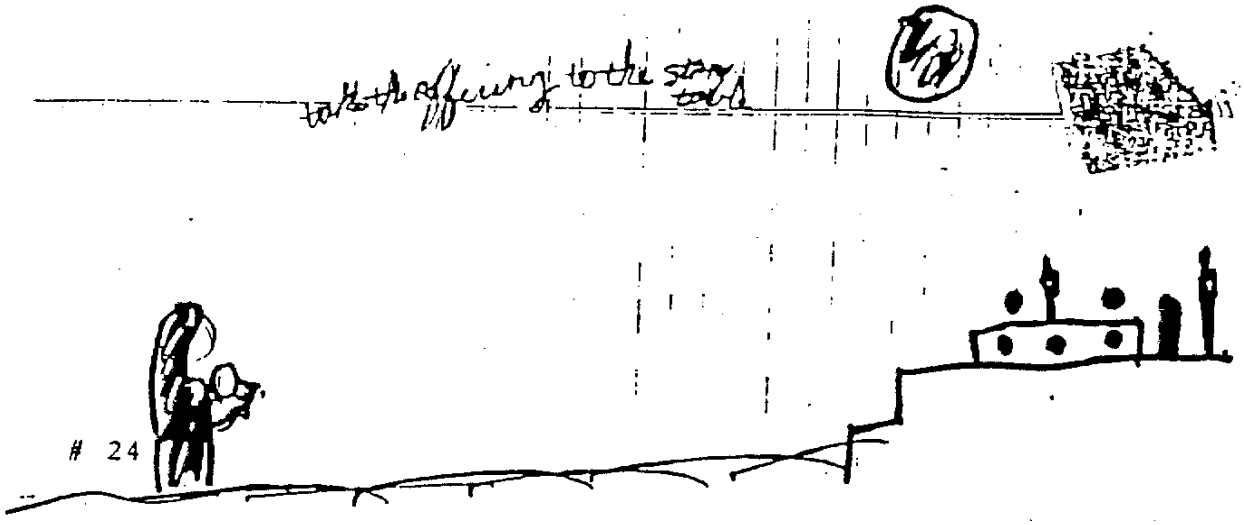
21





23

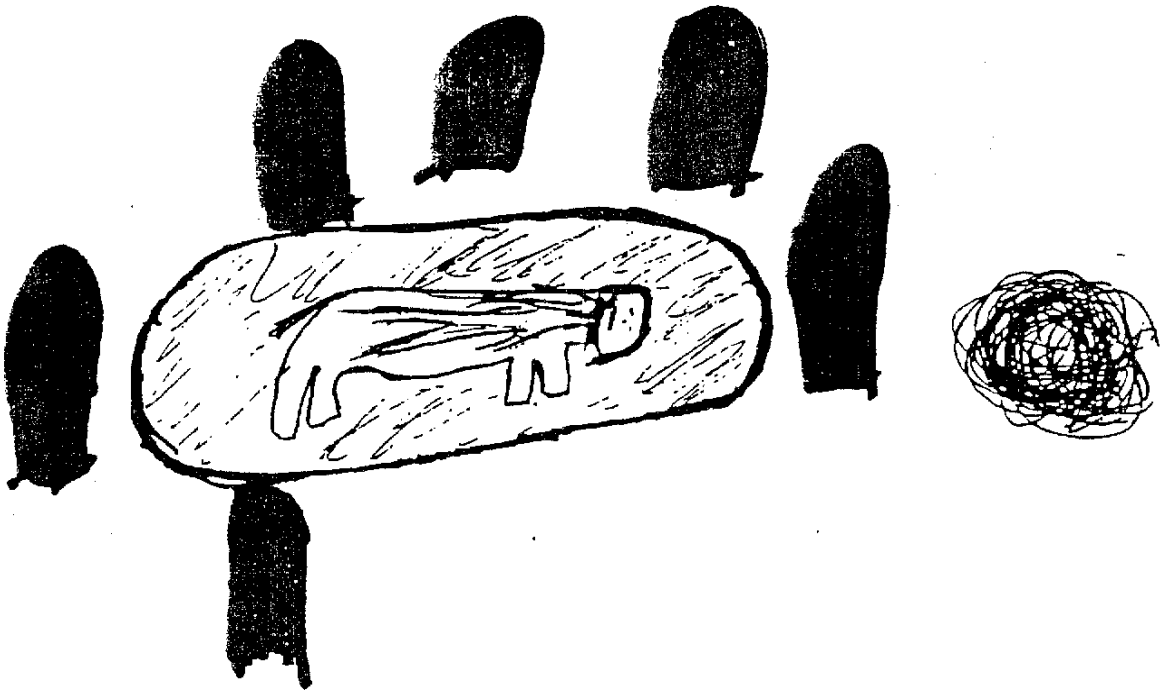




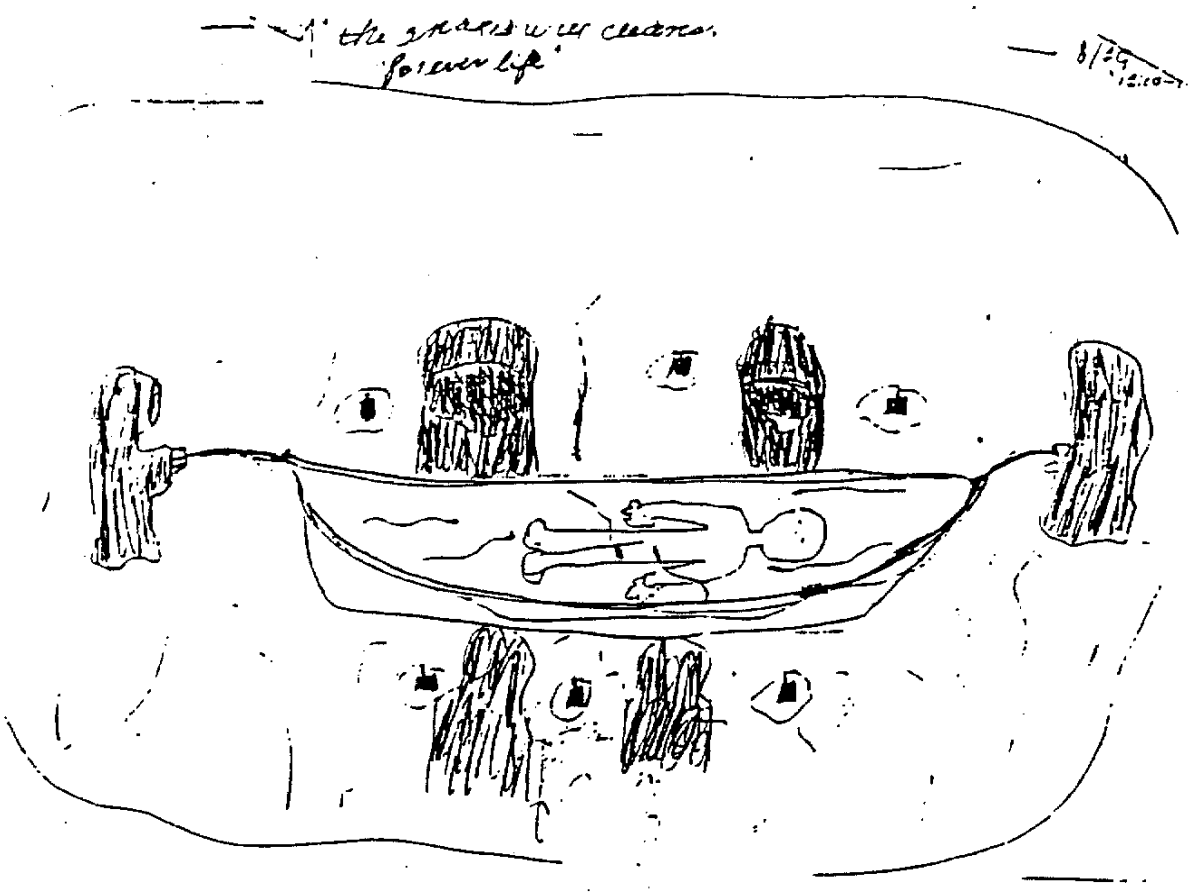
25

26

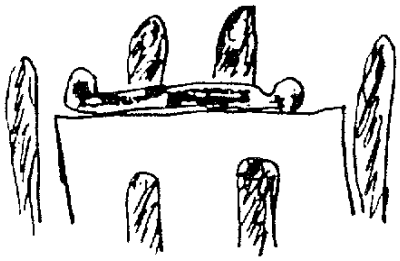
Me in the coat then they had sex

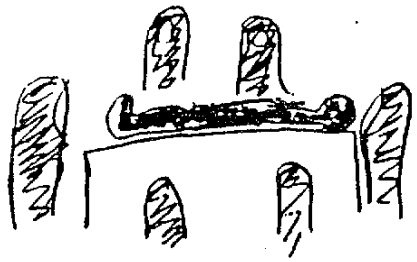


27



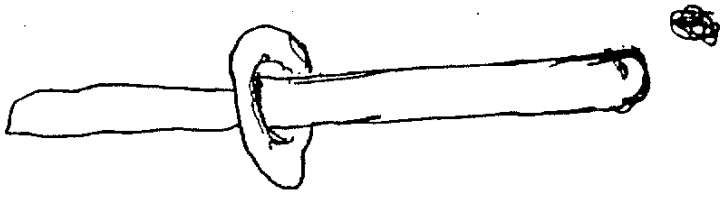
28





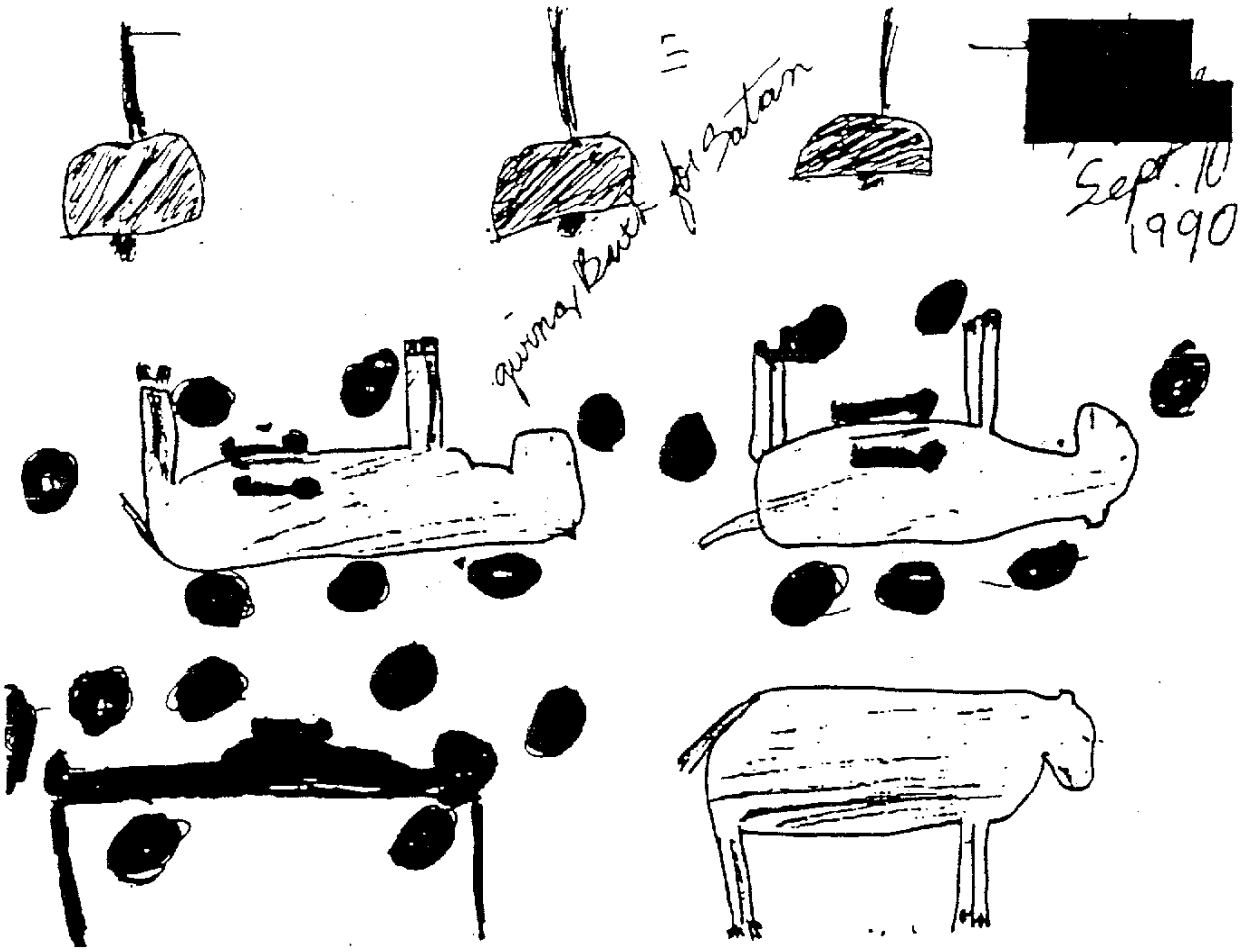
Sept. 24
9/25 1990
3:00 AM

Sexual Involvement

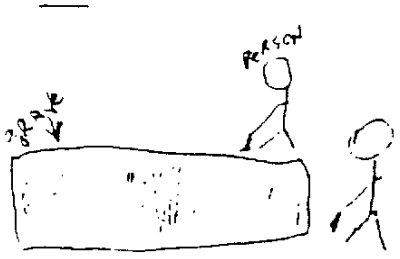


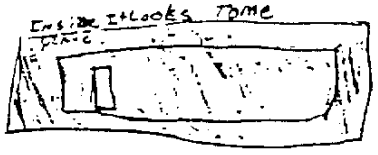
Defiled child with mans genitals oral, vaginal, rectal. Then made her put her mouth where cut was.

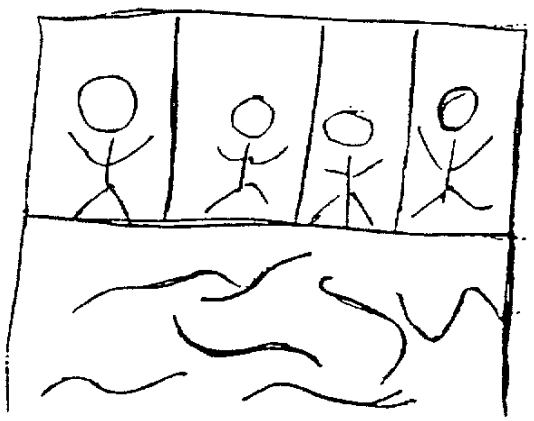
29



30







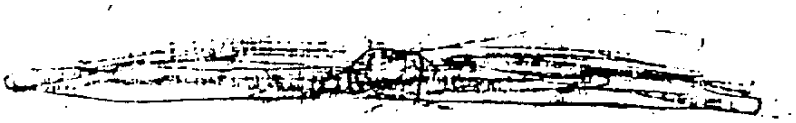
31

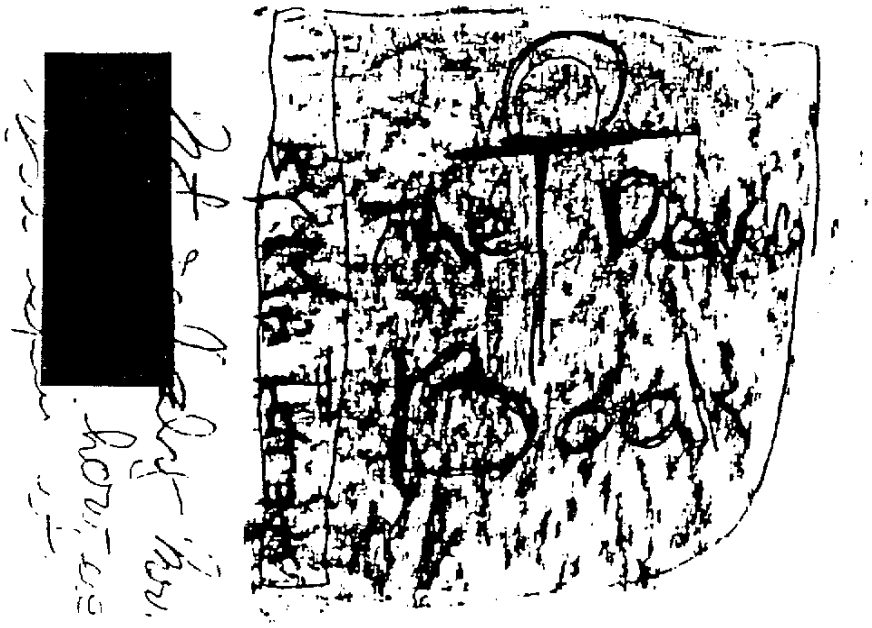
[redacted]

Ritual Stick

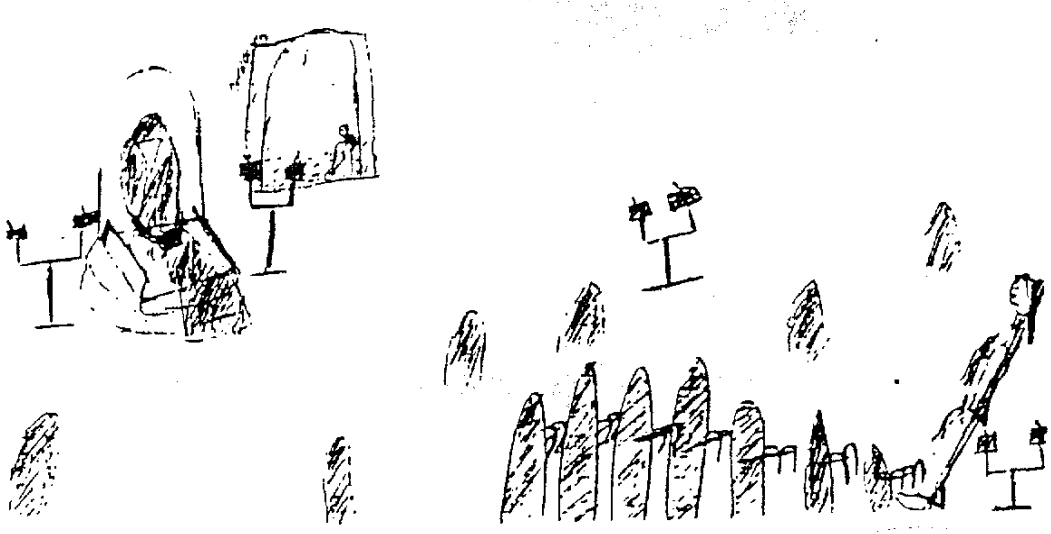
32

[redacted] perpetrators read
ook at the rituals

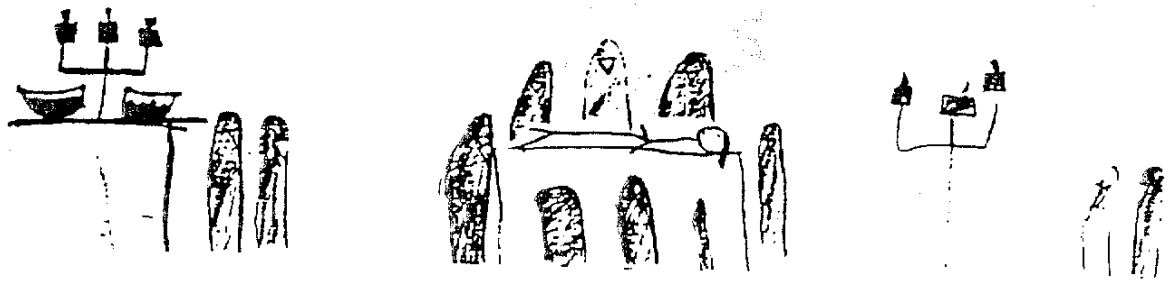




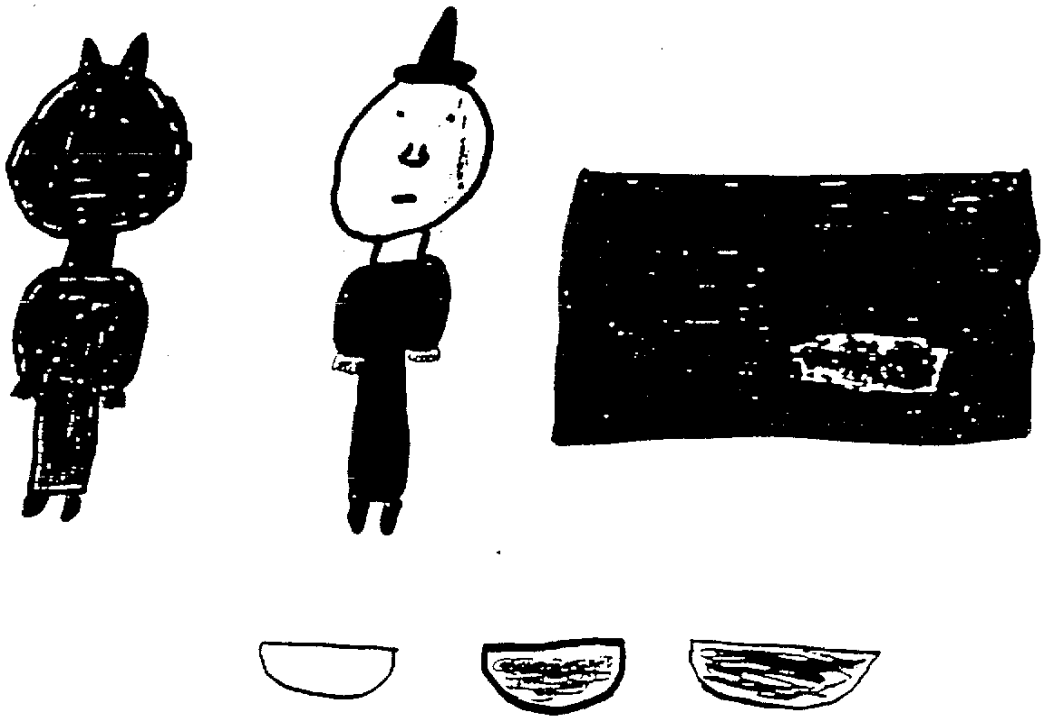
33



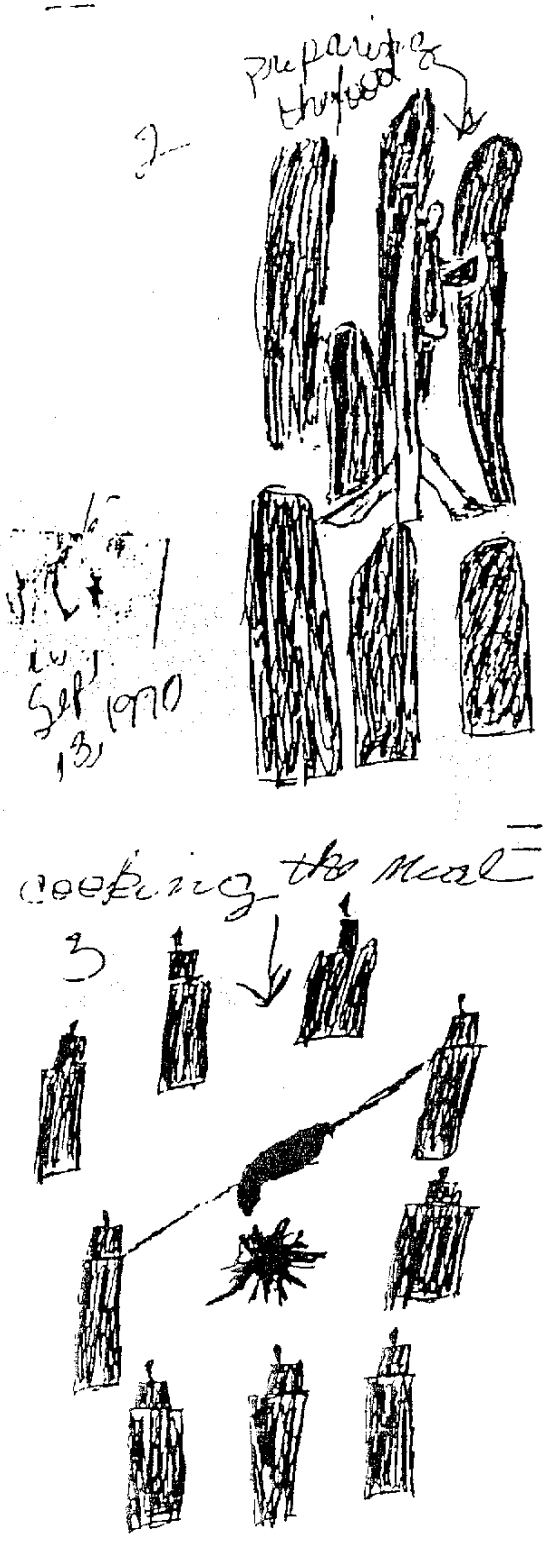
34



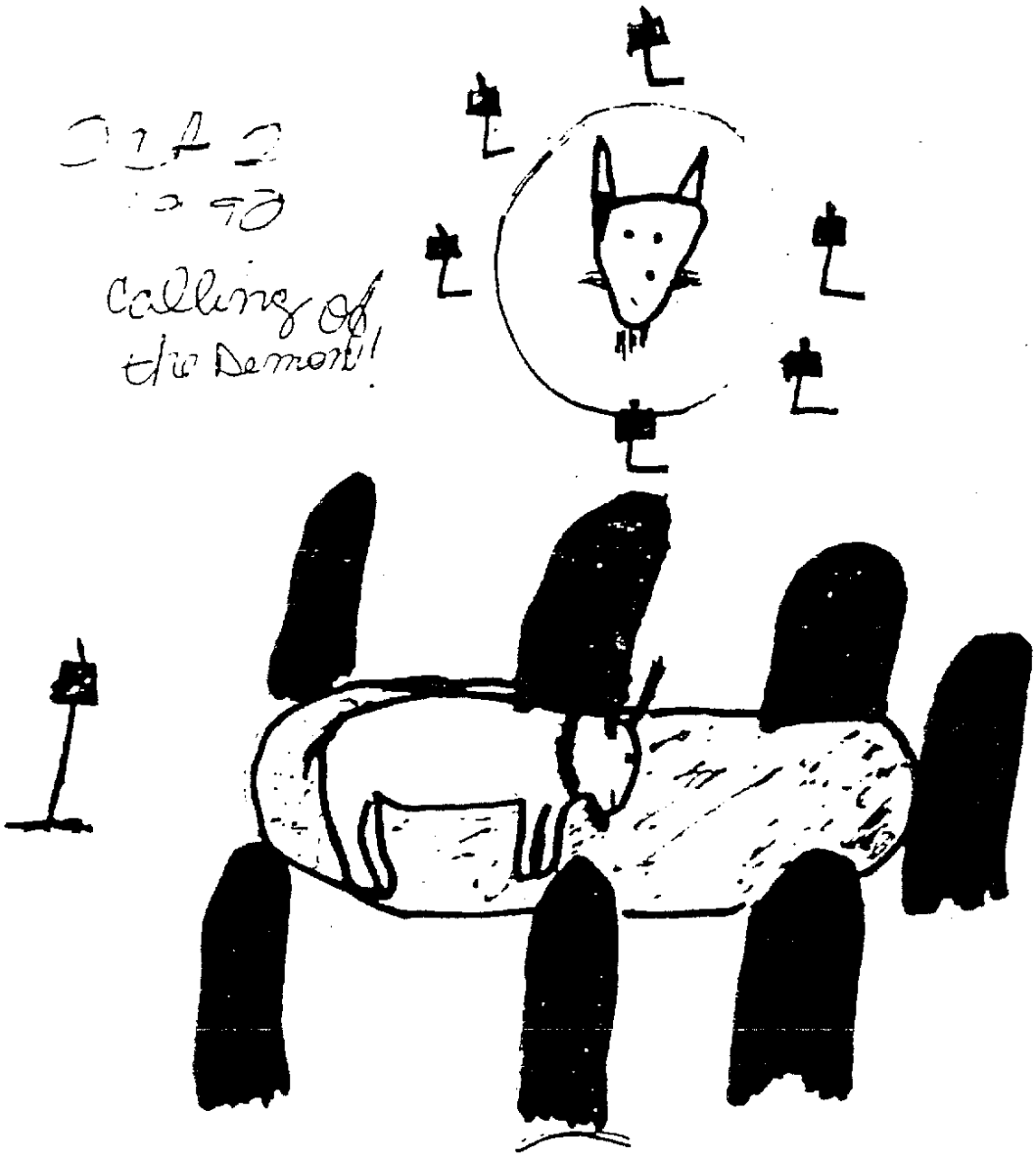
35



36



37



CHAPTER 8 - BLACK MASONRY - DEVOTED TO THE KNOWLEDGE OF EVIL

In this chapter we are documenting the doctrine of Black Masonry as it was taught by 33° Mason C. W. Leadbeater. Not only was Leadbeater a prominent Mason, he also was an influential Theosophist and worked closely on many projects with the head of Theosophy, Annie Bessant. Leadbeater according to some sources was a homosexual pedophile.[180] According to Leadbeater, Black Masonry is degrees 19 through 30 in the Scottish Rite and are known as the Council of KADOSH. In the following quotes 'Knight K. H.' is the Masonic abbreviation for Knight Kadosh. In the following quote from Leadbeater's book, *Ancient Mystic Rites*, he defines the scope of Black Masonry and talks about its relationship to evil, suffering, and vengeance.

> Few indeed of our Egyptian Bm. appear to have passed beyond the Rose-Croix, for only the few needed anything further than the splendid revelation of the indwelling Love of God which they received in what we call the Eighteenth Degree. But for those few who felt that there was yet more to learn of the nature of God, and **who eagerly wished to understand the meaning of evil and suffering and its relation to the divine plan, the prototype of our Black Masonry existed, the teaching and progress comprised in our degrees from the nineteenth to the thirtieth.** This section of the Mysteries was especially concerned with the working out of karma in its different aspects, studied as a law of retribution, from one point of view dark and terrible. This is the inner kernel of truth lying behind the **vengeance-elements** in the degree of Knight K.H.[181]

Albert Mackey in his Encyclopedia of Freemasonry gives the doctrine of the Masonic Kadosh system. Kadosh doctrine centers around the story of the execution of James de Molay by the Pope and the King of France for satanic crimes. James de Molay was the last head of the Knights Templars and Mackey contends that the Templars continue on in Freemasonry.

> The doctrine of the Kadosh system is that the persecutions of the Knights Templar by Philip the Fair of France, and Pope Clement V, however cruel and sanguinary in its results, did not extinguish the Order, but it continued to exist under the forms of Freemasonry. That the ancient Templars are the modern Kadoshes, and that the Builder at the Temple of Solomon is now replaced by James de Molay, the martyred Grand Master of the Templars, the assassins being represented by the King of France, the Pope, and Naffodei the informer against the Order;[182]

In his book, *The Occult Conspiracy*, Michael Howard lists the charges against the Knights Templars that stemmed from the October raid of their headquarters in Paris in the year 1307 A.D.

> Specifically the Templars were accused of denying the tenets of the

> Christian faith, spitting or urinating on the crucifix during secret rites of initiation, worshipping a skull or head called Baphomet in a dark cave, anointing it with blood or the fat of unbaptized babies, worshipping the Devil in the shape of a black cat and committing acts of sodomy and bestiality....
>
> Candidates entering the Order also had to kiss their initiator on the mouth, the navel, the penis and at 'the base of the spine'. These kisses were regarded by critics of the Order as proof of their perverted sexual activities but in the occult tradition the naval, sexual organs and the perineum are the physical locations of the psychic centres of the human body, known in the East as *chakras*.[183]

Freemasons today will argue that de Molay was not a Satanist and will rigorously defend his character, mainly because the Masonic organization for young boys is named after de Molay. This Masonic argument contradicts the facts and de Molay stands in history as a man executed for Satanic crimes. British Historian Nesta H. Webster talks about the convincing evidence against the Knights Templar.

> Moreover, do the confessions of the Knights appear to be the outcome of pure imagination such as men under the influence of torture might devise? It is certainly difficult to believe that the accounts of the ceremony of initiation given in detail by men in different countries, all closely resembling each other, yet related in different phraseology, could be pure inventions. Had the victims been driven to invent they would surely have contradicted each other, have cried out in their agony that all kinds of wild and fantastic rites had taken place in order to satisfy the demands of their interlocutors. But no, each appears to be describing the same ceremony more or less completely, with characteristic touches that indicate the personality of the speaker, and in the main all the stories tally.[184]

The Masonic defense that the confessions of the Knights Templars were extracted under torture is false. While it is true that torture was used in France, torture was not used in Italy and England and the confessions were identical. Leadbeater explains how the Templars went to Scotland and mingled their doctrine with other occult sources and the Egyptian mysteries to create the Black Masonry of the Scottish Rite.

> Certain of the French Knights Templars took refuge with their brethren of the Temple in Scotland, and in that country their traditions became mingled to some extent with the ancient Celtic rites of Heredom, thus forming one of the sources from which the Scottish Rite was later to be evolved. Traditions of vengeance upon the execrable King and Pope and the Traitor passed down throughout the ages, and were interwoven with the Egyptian tradition corresponding to our Black Masonry, culminating in what we now call the 30°.[185]

This is confirmed by Masonic authority Albert Pike who honors James de Molay as the founder of the Scottish Rite.

> "The end of the drama is well known, and how Jacques de Molai and his fellows perished in the flames. But before his execution, the Chief of the doomed Order organized and instituted what afterward came to be called the Occult, Hermetic, or Scottish Masonry. In the gloom of his prison, the Grand Master created four Metropolitan Lodges, at Naples for the East, at Edinburg for the West, at Stockholm for the North, and at Paris for the South." [The initials of his name, J.•. B.•. M.•. found in the same order in the first three Degrees, are but one of the many internal and cogent proofs that such was the origin of modern Free-Masonry. The legend of Osiris was revived and adopted, to symbolize the destruction of the Order, and the resurrection of Khurum, slain in the body of the Temple..[186]

Once again Leadbeater stresses that Karma or revenge is the main element of Black Masonry.

> The whole of what we now call Black Masonry led up to an explanation of karma as divine justice, this having been preserved for us in shadow in what is now the 31°, that of the Grand Inspector Inquisitor Commander, whose symbol is a pair of scales. In Egypt this pair of scales was taken as an emblem of the perfect balance of divine justice; the aspirant learnt that all the evil and horror associated with the working out of karma was indeed based on perfect justice, although it had appeared as evil to the lesser vision of the profane.[187]

What was the revenge that was taken in the death of convicted Satanist James de Molay? According to former Grand Commander Albert Pike, it was the death of the Pope, the King, and the informer against the order.

> "The Pope and the King soon after perished in a strange and sudden manner. Squin de Florian, the chief denouncer of the Order, died assassinated.[188]

In this quote Leadbeater makes it plain that Black Masonry is **DEVOTED TO THE KNOWLEDGE OF EVIL.**

> Thus the first stage of the higher instruction, that of the Rose-Croix or Red Masonry, was devoted to the knowledge of good, while the second stage, that of K. H. or Black Masonry, was devoted to the knowledge of evil.[189]

Is it possible that there are Freemasons today that follow Leadbeater's doctrine of Black Masonry, dedicated to the knowledge of evil? We will have to admit that it is indeed possible. Is it also possible that there are people in Freemasonry who take revenge against the Pope, the State, and the revealer of secrets, seriously? Once again we have to admit - IT IS AT LEAST POSSIBLE! It is interesting that in America the Scottish Rite has a black uniform for the Knights Templar degree presumably because of their great admiration for de Molay.

> There have been considerable discussions about the black uniform of the American branch of the Knights Templar, which does not conform to the dress of the Medieval Order, which was white with a red cross on the breast, the latter being used in British and Canadian priories or preceptories. The theory followed in the United States seems to have been that black was adopted in respect of the martyred de Molai and his associates.[190]

The frightening thing about Freemasonry is that any interpretation can be given to Masonic ritual and symbols that does not violate basic Masonic landmarks. As the Mason is encouraged to seek the deeper understanding of the Masonic symbols, this leaves a huge door wide open for a Mason to plunge deeper into the occult. This has been used by occultists for hundreds of years to develop their own system of Satanic teaching. The following is from the *Indiana Freemasons Monitor*:

> Fortunately for the peace of mind of the modern initiate there are no arbitrary tests of faith in these matters, so there can be no trials for heresy or danger or sorcerer burning. There are certain ancient doctrines known as the Landmarks which every duly obligated Freemason is bound to respect; there are prescriptions of Masonic conduct which he is bound to obey. But if he chooses to believe that the Fraternity descended by some mysterious process from the planet Neptune he is as free to do so as he would be to believe that Neptune itself is the ghost of a previous planetary incarnation of the world.[191]

From *Proofs of a Conspiracy*, Adam Weishaupt, the original founder of the Bavarian Illumanati said:

> ...no man can give any account of the Order of Free Masonry, of its origin, or its history, of its object, nor any explanation of its mysteries and symbols, which does not leave the mind in total uncertainty on all these points. Every man is entitled, therefore, to give any explanation of the symbols, and any system of the doctrines, that he can render palatable. Hence have sprung up that variety of systems which for twenty years have divided the Order.[192]

Now we proceed with more shocking information.

CHAPTER 9 - FREEMASONRY AND SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE

> My name is Neil and I experienced at least 18 years of Satanic ritual abuse by several groups of Masons. The Masons all over the country are an organization - a secret order - and part of what they do is ritually abuse children, adults, and animals. The people in my family are to blame, as well as the Masons and our society for allowing it to happen. The Masons are an organized part of society, including politicians, judges, lawyers, policemen, rabbis, priests, doctors, etc. The Masons are all are over the country, including the female chapters, which are called Eastern Star.[193]

This testimony by a SRA (Satanic Ritual Abuse) MPD (Multiple Personality Disorder) survivor should give us reason for concern about the possibility of a connection between Freemasonry and Satanic ritual abuse. What is even more compelling is the fact that this testimony is not unique. All over the United States victims are disclosing that Satanic ritual abuse is being perpetrated by Freemasons and that this type of abuse is taking place on Masonic properties.

There is now a rapidly growing awareness among therapists and Christian counter-cult ministries that high percentages of their victims have a connection with Freemasonry.

One Christian minister, has worked with about 100 SRA MPD victims and reports that 90% of his victims claim that they were abused by Masonic perpetrators and that over 50% of the actual abuse took place on Masonic properties.

A practicing psychotherapist gives the following report:

> I am a psychotherapist in private practice and treat mainly survivors of Satanic cult abuse. About half of the clients I treat report that their fathers were Masons. About half of the others report that a very close friend of the family's was a Mason. They recall going to parties and gatherings at the homes of Masons.[194]

For some time now our ministry has been involved with warning the church about the cancerous anti-Christian menace of Freemasonry. We have also been compiling a record of statements from therapists and ministers and of victims like Neil who have testified to a direct connection between FREEMASONRY and SRA (SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE). These testimonies are becoming too numerous to ignore and the study of the Masonic connection in SRA could open up new areas of understanding and prevention.

Our suspicions were first aroused that there could be a connection between Freemasonry and SRA during our involvement in the "Blue House SRA case" in Evansville, Indiana. The children in Evansville alleged that they were taken from school and subjected to Satanic abuse in a blue house. According to Rick Doninger, the leading children's advocate for the 'blue house children', all of the 'blue house children' claimed that they were abused by Masonic perpetrators. Mr. Doninger also informed us that the police who investigated the 'blue house case' also were Freemasons. No arrests resulted from the investigation.

Some people say there is no reason for unusual concern when Freemasons are accused of SRA because many ministers, teachers, day care workers, and policemen have also been accused. On the surface this argument seems to make sense but the logic is faulty. What has often come out upon closer examination is that those ministers, teachers, etc., accused of SRA have a common denominator - Freemasonry.

Much of our concern and motivation to revise our original EGYPTIAN-MASONIC-SATANIC CONNECTION book was a result of requests for information like the following from a Christian lay counselor.

> Dear David,
>
> I am a Christian lay counselor who works with women who have been sexually and ritually abused. I, and other counselors I know, have had clients report childhood sexual and ritual abuse occurring during Masonic rituals. I have begun seeking confirmation from other counselors as well as those who are exposing the Masons for written material that would confirm that this type of abuse is real.[195]

Our response to this counselor and others is, "Yes, we do believe that this abuse is real and that confirmation is coming from all parts of the country."

The following statement is from a Midwest counter-cult ministry:

> Yes, I have known <u>many</u> SRA's who had Masons in their family - even those who were <u>not</u> themselves involved in the Masonic Lodges have "Masonic programming" in some part of their system....
> I would roughly estimate about one-half the people I've worked with have some connection to Masons.[196]

The following statistics on Freemasonry and SRA are from a major book in the field of SRA by Margaret Smith.

> Historically, certain secret societies and fraternal organizations were accused of practicing a violent, sexualized mass. Survivors in this study also reported a relationship between perpetrator involvement in secret societies and the practice of ritual abuse. Sixty-seven percent of the survivors said

> their ritual abuse perpetrators were members of secret societies or fraternal organizations. Thirty-three percent said perpetrating family members were Masons.[197]

These figures of Thirty-three percent SRA victims abused by Masons is staggering. What is even more alarming is the fact that many more could have had strong Masonic ties without the knowledge of the victim. And what is even more disturbing is that this figure is low compared to what we hear from many therapists and ministries.

THE FREEMASONRY - SATANISM - SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE LINKS

From our personal contact with Satanic ritual abuse survivors and the therapists and ministers who have worked with them, we have summarized the following **NINE POINTS** of the **FREEMASONRY - SRA THEORY.**

POINT #1 - THE OVERLAPPING MEMBERSHIP

An obvious connection between Masonry and the various occult groups are the many leading occultists who were Freemasons.

Aleister Crowley - Satanist - O.T.O.

Gerald Gardner - Founder of Gardnerian Witchcraft

Alex Sanders - Founder of Alexandrian Witchcraft

Wynn Westcott - Golden Dawn Founder

S. L. MacGregor Mathers - Golden Dawn Founder

Eliphas Levi - Black Magic - Artist who drew the picture of the famous Satanic Baphomet.

British Historian Nesta Webster records that even in our century the Baphomet was used in the Masonic lodge.

> "Baphomets" were preserved in the masonic lodges of Hungary, where a debased form of Masonry, known as Johannite Masonry, survives to this day.[198]

With so many Freemasons known to have been members of serious occult orders, the FREEMASONRY - SRA theory is, as we have previously stated, at least possible.

POINT #2 - OVERLAPPING THEOLOGY

The writings of Masonic authorities Manly P. Hall and Albert Pike, to name two, are appealing to members of occult orders outside of Masonry. The teaching of these men and other Masons who emphasize the universal aspect of Freemasonry and have a Kabbalistic element in their doctrine, help to forge a link between Masonry and other occult orders.

POINT #3 - THE APPEAL OF MASONIC SECRECY

The secret structure of Freemasonry where all who enter the doors of the lodge swear a death oath not to reveal Masonic secrets or conversations that have taken place in the lodge has always held great appeal to members of various occult orders. To our knowledge nothing that was ever said in a lodge has ever been used against anyone to prosecute or convict them for a crime. Even in the first degree of Freemasonry, the Entered apprentice degree, the penalty for revealing the secrets of the Lodge is a ritual murder.

> All this I most solemnly, sincerely promise and swear, with a firm and steadfast resolution to perform the same, without any mental reservation or secret evasion of mind whatever, binding myself under no less penalty than that of having my throat cut across, my tongue torn out by its roots, and my body buried in the rough sands of the sea, at low-water mark, where the tide ebbs and flows twice in twenty-four hours, should I ever knowingly violate this my Entered Apprentice obligation.[199]

One of the greatest Masonic authors of all time, former Grand Commander of the Scottish Rite, Albert Pike, taught about the importance of Masonic secrecy and how the Masonic oath binds the Mason to every other Mason in the world.

> Secrecy is indispensable in a Mason of whatever Degree. It is the first and almost the only lesson taught to the Entered Apprentice. The obligations which we have each assumed toward every Mason that lives, requiring of us the performance of the most serious and onerous duties toward those personally unknown to us until they demand our aid, –duties that must be performed, even at the risk of life, or our solemn oaths be broken and violated, and we be branded as false Masons and faithless men.[200]

> Upon entering the Order, the Initiate binds to himself every Mason in the world. Once enrolled among the children of Light, every Mason on earth becomes his brother, and owes him the duties, the kindnesses, and the sympathies of a brother.[201]

Many so called Christian Ministers are a mockery to God because they have obligated themselves by a death oath to aid Satanists and Witches.

POINT #4 - THE CO-ORDINATION THEORY

Apparent co-operation between hospitals, law enforcement, politicians, schools, and other institutions have made victims' stories even harder to accept. Could there be a co-ordinating factor between these institutions enabling them to execute their crimes? If we are going to believe the testimony of SRA survivors we have to allow for such a factor, and Freemasonry could theoretically fill that role.

POINT #5 - THE RECRUITMENT POSSIBILITIES

The fact that the Masonic lodge provides a fertile field of recruitment for other occult orders is hard to deny. Freemasonry offers the possibility of inner groups forming within the lodge and operating without the knowledge of some Masons in the lodge who would disapprove of their activities. The first man who was known to have done this was Adam Weishaupt with his Bavarian Illumanati. In this quote Aleister Crowley tells how he was recruited into the O.T.O. by Theodore Reuss.

> Although I was admitted to the thirty-third and last degree of Freemasonry so long ago as 1900, it was not until the summer of 1912 that my suspicion was confirmed. I speak of my belief that behind the frivolities and convivalities of our greatest institution [Freemasonry] lay in truth a secret ineffable and miraculous, potent to control the forces of Nature, and not only to make men brethren, but make them divine. But at the time I speak of a man came to me, a man of those mysterious masters of esoteric Freemasonry who are alike its Eyes and its Brains, and who exist in its midst–unknown, often, even to its acknowledged chiefs....This man [Theodor Reuss (Frater Merlin) form whom Crowley took over the headship of the O.T.O.] had been watching my occult career for some years, and deemed me now worthy to partake in the Greater Mysteries.[202]

POINT #6 - THE COVER-UP THEORY

The oaths that all Masons swear to help one another and the many politically influential Freemasons makes the suspicion of Masons helping other Masons to cover up their crimes an obvious one. The following quote from Duncan's Masonic Ritual Monitor is a portion of the oath of the Royal Arch degree of York Rite Freemasonry. In this oath, which is just one of the many oaths that Masons swear as they move up in the lodge, the Mason obligates himself to help his fellow-Mason whether he is right or wrong and to keep all of his secrets.

> I furthermore promise and swear, that I will assist a Companion royal

> Arch Mason when I see him engaged in any difficulty, and will espouse his cause so far as to extricate him from the same, whether he be right or wrong.
>
> I furthermore promise and swear, that I will keep all the secrets of a Companion Royal Arch Mason (when Communicated to me as such, or I knowing them to be such), without exceptions.[203]

If a Mason tells you that the Masonic oaths are only symbolic and that he doesn't really take them serious, **ask the Mason to reveal the 'secret word' that the Worshipful Master whispered in his ear upon the five points of fellowship in the Master Masons degree.** The Mason cannot tell you the 'secret word' that the Worshipful Master whispered in his ear when he was symbolically raised him from the dead with the strong grip of the lions paw, **BECAUSE HE HAS SWORN A DEATH OATH NOT TO DO SO.** Ask the Mason to give this 'secret word' and you will quickly see how serious Masons take their death oaths. **The 'secret word' is: MA-HAH-BONE.**

POINT #7 - THE DEMONIC LINK

Testimonies have been given that participation in either Freemasonry or Satanism could lead to demon possession. The following statement was made by Dr. C. Fred Dickason, the chairman of the Theology Department at Moody Bible Institute at the 1993 Leadership Conference For Ministry to Masons in Knoxville, Tennessee.

> Since the early 1970's I have counseled more than 550 people who were demonically invaded and many of them were affected by Masonic Lodge backgrounds. Either ancestral lodge backgrounds or personal involvement in the Lodge.[204]

It is rapidly becoming common knowledge among Christian counselors who believe in demonic oppression and possession that participation in Freemasonry at any level can lead to oppression and even possession. Leading Christian counselor Dr. Neil T. Anderson in his book, *Released From Bondage*, calls on his readers to "renounce your previous or current involvement with Satanically-inspired occult practices or false religions." [205] Dr. Anderson then provides a "Non-Christian Spiritual Inventory"[206] that lists such "Satanically-inspired" practices and false religions. The Masons are on this list by Dr. Anderson as a group with which all involvement should be renounced to find freedom in Christ. Reports are also becoming widespread from deliverance ministries who are discovering the devastating effect that participation in Freemasonry can have. The following quote is from the book *Demons Defeated* by Bill Subritzky.

> Another form of hereditary oppression can come through the Masonic Lodge. This Lodge which worships the gods of Baal and Ashtaroth, was founded in England in 1717 as a universal religion. Jesus is not central and the oaths taken are totally contrary to the Word of God. The person whose parents have belonged to that Lodge may well find that they are under a spirit of oppression. Until they renounce the involvement of their parents or ancestors in that Lodge, forgive their parents and ancestors and command the familiar spirit of Freemasonry to depart, they will find there is an occultic influence over them. They will have difficulty in witnessing to the presence and power of God in their lives. Many well meaning Christians belong to the Freemasonry Lodge without realizing its origin and the source of oppression upon them.
>
> I well recall a leading member of a Christian organization who came to me because he and his wife were having some problems. The Holy Spirit quickly showed that this man had been a member of the Freemasonry Lodge approximately twenty-five years earlier, and although he had left the Lodge he had never formally severed his connections with it, and in fact still had some of the regalia in his home. Like the other persons referred to earlier, this man was a Spirit-filled, tongue-speaking Christian of high standing in a Pentecostal church. He readily agreed to renounce again all involvement with the Freemasonry Lodge and to burn the regalia. After he had made this renunciation and the deliverance ministry commenced, a demon clearly manifested itself through this man. It threw him on the floor like a snake and he slithered along the floor and up the wall of the bedroom.[207]

Christians who believe in an intelligent Devil and his Demons can easily see how he could use the system of Freemasonry to accomplish his goals.

POINT #8 - THE GENERATIONAL LINK

Many Freemasons have a tremendous compulsion for their children to continue on in the Lodge. Many people have reported tremendous pressure from their Masonic parents to join Masonic organizations. This is a definite similarity with generation Satanist and Witchcraft families. We believe the similarity is due to demonic influence. Daniel Ryder gives us the following information about transgenerational cults in his book "Breaking The Circle Of Satanic Ritual Abuse."

> Transgenerational cults are those perpetuated through family generations. They are not exclusive to satanism, but may be based on other forms of religious tradition. Children brought up in such environments often view cult activities as the norm. Power, heritage, and programming keep the transgenerational cults flourishing. Some of these cults engage in prayer ritual, mind control, sexual orgies, child sexual abuse, torture,

murder/sacrifice.[208]

Alex Sanders who was a Freemason and a witch was initiated into witchcraft by his Grandmother.

> Alex Sanders said he was initiated as a witch when he was seven years old by his grandmother who was a witch. As the story goes, she had him stand nude in a circle with his head down. She took a sharp razor, cut his scrotum to make it bleed slightly, and declared him a witch. He was initiated as a third degree, and he became a black magickian.[209]

POINT #9 - DISSOCIATION

Dissociation is a defense mechanism that develops in people that experience extreme circumstances that they cannot face. A licensed Psychologist, Dr. Loreda L. Fox explains:

> Webster defines dissociation as a split in the conscious process in which a group of mental activities breaks away form the main stream of consciousness and functions as a separate unit, as if belonging to another person.
>
> We all dissociate in certain circumstances, and normal trances include such things as daydreaming, fantasizing, or mental absorption. Everyone can relate to being so engrossed in an activity that the outside world is on the periphery of awareness. An example is watching T.V. while kids are laughing and playing in the background and not even being aware of them. This is dissociation.
>
> In order to not receive certain input we have all developed the ability to tune something out. This is exactly what a person does in order to escape the reality of a harsh stimuli at the time it presents. He dissociates from it and does not experience the full impact of the experience at the time.
>
> Our bodies are made to go into shock if we are severely wounded so that we do not feel the pain. People who are shot or stabbed often say that they felt nothing at the time. Our mind also goes into shock and removes itself from traumatic awareness.
>
> A client told me that her brother used to describe how he would leave his body and stand and watch while his father beat him. He bragged that when he did this, the beatings did not hurt him at all, and therefore he continued to seperate from similar traumatic events. This is a simple explanation of dissociation.[210]

What is sad is that dissociation is taught to people in Satanic cults. This is so that MPD [Multiple Personality Disorder] will develop in the victim and the memories of the abuse will be hidden in one of the alter-personalities. The victims who cannot dissociate and repress the memories are usually sacrificed. Psychotherapist Wendy Hoffman explains:

> Dissociation is different for survivors of satanic cult abuse. **The cult carefully teaches the art of dissociation. Its victims' lives depend on their capacity to learn it young and fast.** Dissociation is a required subject taught in its school, like math or satanic writing. Moreover, the cult insists that its victims master simultaneously dissociation and not dissociating. It's easy for cult members to tell by looking at somebody whether he is dissociating. They can check on a member's dissociative skill just as easily as they can check on whether his addition is accurate.[211]

Dissociation also occurs in what the Freemasons and other occultists call initiation. The candidate dissociates and opens his mind up to demons who give him spiritual experience. The goal of occult initiation is what is called "Cosmic Consciousness" or sometimes "Christ Consciousness" where the initiate comes to the point that he believes he is God.

Read carefully how this Freemason talks about the need to dissociate in Masonic initiation and how to be a "Master" you must be able to "shut off consciousness at will". The following quote is from *The Masonic Initiation* by W. L. Wilmshurst.

> Nevertheless, a measure of dissociation does occur naturally in even the most healthy and well-organized people(and of cases of abnormal psychic looseness of constitution we need not speak). It occurs in sleep, when the consciousness may be vividly active, whether in an orderly or disorderly manner; people "travel" in their sleep. It occurs at times of illness or violent shock. It may be induced by alcohol or drugs; the "anesthetic revelation" is a well recognized phenomenon. Under any of these conditions there may be a complete *ec-stasis*, or conscious standing out or away of the Ego from the physical body. Apparitions and even action at a distance are well accredited facts. Such phenomena are explicable only upon the suppositions of the existence of a subtler vehicle than the gross body, of the fact that consciousness becomes temporarily transferred from the latter to the former, and that the two are capable of conjoint function in complete independence of the physical brain and body....
>
> A Master, however, is one who has outgrown the incapacities to which the undeveloped average man is subject. Unlike the latter, he is in full knowledge and control of all his parts; whether his physical body be awake or wrapped in sleep, he maintains unbroken consciousness. He is able at will to shut off consciousness of temporal affairs and apply it to supra-physical ones. He can thus function at a distance from his physical body, whether upon the mundane or upon higher planes of the cosmic ladder.... **Initiation always occurs when the physical body is in a state of trance or sleep, and when the temporarily liberated consciousness has been** transferred to a higher level.[212]

LET US SET THE RECORD STRAIGHT

NOT ALL FREEMASONS ARE SATANISTS and many of them would heartily oppose the Satanic activity that we have described in this book. FREEMASONRY REMAINS SUPREMELY AN ORGANIZATION THAT DECEIVES GOOD MEN! Not all Freemasons have a "god-hood experience" in initiation. In fact, most do not. Many Masons go through the rituals and give little thought to their deeper meaning. Not all Masons are bad people. Many have a high standard of morality and are concerned and caring people. If you fancy yourself such a Mason, let us say this to you: YOU ARE RESPONSIBLE FOR THE ACTIONS AND DOCTRINES THAT THE MASONIC LODGE PERPETRATES, YOUR HANDS ARE NOT CLEAN. YOU CANNOT REAP THE BENEFIT OF POWER AND PRESTIGE OF THE LODGE AND REMAIN ALOOF FROM THE RESPONSIBILITY FOR WHAT GOES ON THERE. It would be impossible for a true Christian to participate in even the first degree of Masonry and swear the terrible death oath and not be convicted by the Holy Spirit that what he was doing is wrong. Masonic materials can be obtained by anyone who is interested and much material has been published that exposes the true intent and purpose of the lodge. IGNORANCE IS NO EXCUSE AND A POOR DEFENSE. If you profess Christianity, you cannot justify your participation in Freemasonry because the lodge has been shown to be totally incompatible with Christianity. THERE IS NO EXCUSE - YOUR HANDS ARE NOT CLEAN.

If you are a Mason and have decided to RESIGN from the lodge, a form is provided for your convenience. If a Mason 'demits' from the organization, it means that he is in good standing and can start attending again. YOU WILL NEED TO RESIGN FROM ALL PARTS OF MASONRY, such as the Blue Lodge, the Shrine, and the Scottish Rite, etc. Renounce all ties and demonic influence from your life that you have received from the Freemasons. Plead forgiveness from God through his son Jesus Christ. Call or write us if you have questions.

> (2 Corinthians 6:17 KJV) Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you,

Jesus said:

> (John 12:46 KJV) I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness.

This study of FREEMASONRY AND SRA is still in its infancy and it is our prayer that this book will help to focus attention on this problem and open up a floodgate of new information and understanding.

If you are a victim of any kind of abuse including Masonic ritual abuse, please contact us for prayer, literature, information, or counseling advice.

In His Service,

David and Donna Carrico
FOLLOWERS OF JESUS CHRIST
5220 Ashley Drive
Evansville, In. 47711

(812) 477-6338

Revised edition completed January 23, 1994

RESIGNATION FORM

I _____ have found that it is no longer possible for me to remain a Freemason and member of _____ (Lodge No., Shrine, Scottish Rite, etc.) and be true to my Lord and Savour Jesus Christ. I hereby withdraw my membership from Freemasonry and wish to sever all ties with the organization.

Yours Respectfully,

_____

Address _____

Date _____

ENDNOTES

All bold in quoted has been added for emphasis by author of this book.

1.Brad Steiger and Sherry Hansen Steiger, *DEMON DEATHS*, 1991 Berkley Books, New York, p. 35.

2.Dr. Ken Olson, *EXORCISM*, 1992 Thomas Nelson Publishers, Nashville, p. 85.

3.Maury Terry, *The Ultimate Evil*, Bantam Books 1987, p. 502.

4.Carl A. Raschke, *Painted Black*, Harper and Row 1990, p. 213.

5.Ibid., p. 212.

6.Ibid., p. 213.

7.Ibid., p. 211.

8.Ibid., p. 210-211.

9.Ibid., p. 212.

10.Albert G. Mackey, *Mackey's Revised Encyclopedia of Freemasonry*, The Masonic History Company, 1946, Vol. 2., p. 689.

11.*Josephus Complete Works*, translated by William Whitson, *Antiquities of the Jews*, Kregel Publications 1960, p. 30, Book I, Chapter 4.

12.Robert Candlish, *Studies in Genesis*, 1979 Kregel Publications, p. 172-173.

13.Rev. Alexander Hilsop, *The Two Babylons*, Loizeaux Brothers 1916, p. 62.

14.Albert Gallatin Mackey, M.D., 33 degree, THE HISTORY OF FREEMASONRY, Its Legends and Traditions Its Chronological History, William R. Singleton, 33 degree, SYMBOLISM OF FREEMASONRY The Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite and the *Royal Order of Scotland*, published by The Masonic History Company, p. 62.

15.Ibid., p. 63.

16.Ibid., p. 65.

17.Rev. Alexander Hilsop, *The Two Babylons*, Loizeaux Brothers 1916, p. 66-67.

18.Ralph Edward Woodrow, *Babylon Mystery Religion*, 1966 Ralph Woodrow Evangelistic Association, p. 4.

19.Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*, 1871 L. H. Jenkins Inc., p. 404.

20.Ibid., p. 419.

21.Jerry Johnston, *The Edge of Evil*, Word Publishing, 1989. p. 179.

22.Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*, 1871 L. H. Jenkins Inc., p. 354.

23.Albert Gallatin Mackey, M.D., 33 degree, THE HISTORY OF FREEMASONRY, Its Legends and Traditions Its Ch*ronological History, Willi*am R. Singleton, 33 degree, SYMBOLISM OF FREEMASONRY The Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite and the *Royal Order of Scotland*, published by The Masonic History Company, p. 1772.

24.Ibid., p. 1773.

25.Ibid., p. 1718. Illustration.

26.Ibid., p. 1720. Illustration.

27.Joseph Fort Newton, *The Builders*, Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Company, 1979, p.47.

28.W.L. Wilmshurst, *The Meaning of Masonry*, Bell Publishing Co. 1927, reprinted 1980, p. 216.

29.George H. Steinmetz, *Freemasonry Its Hidden Meaning*, Macoy Publishing & Masonic Supply Co., Inc. 1976, p. 96.

30.Ibid., p. 48-49.

31.Foster Bailey, *THE SPIRIT OF MASONRY*, Lucis Press Ltd., London 1957, p. 125.

32.Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*, 1871 L. H. Jenkins Inc., p. 356.

33.Ibid., p. 22.

34.Albert Churchward, *THE ARCANA OF FREEMASONRY*, George Allen & Unwin Ltd. London, p. 9-10.

35.Ibid., p. 313.

36.Grand Lodge F. & A. M. of Indiana, compiled by Committee on Masonic Education, *The Master Mason*, p. 9-10, *On The Threshold.*

37.Henry C. Clausen 33 degree, *Your Amazing Mystic Powers*, 1985, The Supreme Council [Mother Council of the World] of the inspectors General Knights Commander of the House of the Temple of Solomon

of the Thirty-third Degree of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry of the Southern Jurisdiction of the United States of America., p.xvii.

38.S. R. Parchment, *Ancient Operative Masonry*, San Francisco Center - Rosecrucian Fellowship, p. 11.

39.R. Swinburne Clymer, *The Mysticism of Masonry*, The Philosophical Publishing Company, Quakertown, P.A. 1924, p. Introductry.

40.Ibid., p. 13 in Introductry.

41.Ibid., p. 18 in Introductry.

42.Ibid., p. 35.

43.J. D. Buck, *Symbolism of Freemasonry or Mystic Masonry*, 1925 Regan Publishing, p. xxvii.

44.Rex R. Hutchens, *A Bridge To Light*, The Supreme Council, 33degree Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry Southern Jurisdiction United States of America 1988, p. 194.

45.Rev. Charles H. Vail, 32°, *The Ancient Mysteries and Modern Masonry*, Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Co. 1909, p. 200.

46.Lynn F. Perkins, *Masonry in the New Age*, CSA Press 1971, p. 34.

47.Wade Baskin, *Dictionary of Satanism*, Citadel Press 1972, p.109.

48.Ibid., p. 229.

49.J. S. M. Ward, *Who is Hiram Abiff?*, The Baskerville Press, Limited, p. 195.

50.Ibid., p. 220.

51.Ibid., p. 222.

52.Ibid., p. 43.

53.Ibid., p. 58.

54.Ibid., p. 62.

55.Ibid., p. 61.

56.Ibid., p. 75.

57.Ibid., p. 50.

58.Ibid., p. 51.

59.Ibid., p. 53.

60.Ibid., p. 55.

61.Ibid., p. 59.

62.Ibid., p. 31-32.

63.Ibid., p. 34.

64.Ibid., p. 44.

65.Ibid., p. 39-41.

66.Ibid., p. 52.

67.Ibid., p. 187-188.

68.*Evansville Press*, Wed. Jan 8, 1992.(Article on file in David Carrico's possession).

69.S. R. Parchment, *Ancient Operative Masonry*, San Francisco Center - Rosecrucian Fellowship, p. 74-75.

70.Jonathan Vankin, *Conspiracies, Cover-ups and Crimes*, From JFK to the CIA Terrorist Connection, A Dell book 1992, p. 289.

71.Bob Larson, *Satanism, The Seduction of America's Youth*, Thomas Nelson, Inc., 1989, p. 153, quoting Arthur Lyons, *Satan Wants You*, The Mysterious Press, New York 1988, p. 81.

72.Edited by John Symonds and Kenneth Grant, *The Confessions of Aleister Crowley*, Bantam Books, p. 684-685.

73.Edited by Hymenaeus Beta X degree, *The Equinox*, Samuel Weiser 1990, Vol. III, No. 10, p.206. Illustration of Aleister Crowley.

74.The Master Therion (Aleister Crowley), *MAGICK In Theory and Practice*, Magickal Childe Publishing, Inc. 1990, . 96.

75.Ibid., p. 95.

76.Edited by Hymenaeus Beta X degree, *The Equinox*, Samuel Weiser 1990, Vol. III, No. 10, p. 42-43.

77.Aleister Crowley, *Satanic Extracts*, Black Lodge Publishing 1991, p. Inside cover of book.

78.Edited by John Symonds and Kenneth Grant, *The Confessions of Aleister Crowley*, Bantam Books, p. 760.

79.Ibid., p. 771.

80.Frater U.·. D.·., *Secrets of the German Sex Magicians*, Llewellyn Publications 1991, p. 194.

81.Ibid., p. 130.

82.Ibid., p. 194.

83.Ibid., p. 192.

84.Edited by Hymenaeus Beta X degree, *The Equinox*, Samuel Weiser 1990, Vol. III, No. 10, p. 87.

85.Ibid., p. 195.

86.Dr. R. Swinburne Clymer, *Ancient Mystic Oriental Masonry*, Its teachings, Rules, Laws and Present Usages which govern the Order at this present day, "True Masonry and the Universal Brotherhood of Man are One.", p. 24.

87.Frances King, *THE SECRET RITUALS OF THE O.T.O.*, Samuel Weiser 1973, p. 25.

88.Frater U.·.D.·., *Secrets of the German Sex Magicians*, 1991 Llewellyn Publications, p. 138.

89.Kenneth Grant, *Aleister Crowley & The Hidden God*, Samuel Weiser, p. 174.

90.Frances King, *THE SECRET RITUALS OF THE O.T.O.*, Samuel Weiser 1973, p. 13.

91.Edited by Hymenaeus Beta X degree, *The Equinox*, Samuel Weiser 1990, Vol. III, No. 10, p. 205.

92.Ibid., p. 11.

93.Ibid., p. 164.

94.Ibid., p. 169.

95.Ibid., p. 171.

96.Ibid., p. 158.

97.Ibid., p. 152.

98.Ibid., p. 169.

99.Ibid., p. 42.

100.Ibid., p. 39.

101.James G. Friesen, PH.D., *Uncovering the Mystery of MPD*, 1991 HERE'S LIFE PUBLISHERS, INC., p. 101.

102.Gerald Suster, *The Legacy of the Beast*, 1989 Samuel Weiser, Inc., p. 40.

103.*Mystic Places*, 1987 Time-Life Books, Inc., p. 51.

104.Gerald Suster, *The Legacy of the Beast*, 1989 Samuel Weiser, Inc., p. 41.

105.Bob Larson, Satanism, *The Seduction of America's Youth*, Thomas Nelson, Inc., 1989, p. 152.

106.Carl A. Raschke, *Painted Black*, Harper and Row 1990, p. 94-95.

107.Ibid., p. 95.

108.Richard Cavendish, *The Black Arts*, 1967 Putnam Publishing Group, Perigee Books, p. 39.

109.Carl A. Raschke, *Painted Black*, Harper and Row 1990, p. 143.

110.Ibid., p. 140.

111.Ibid., p. 145.

112.Albert Churchward, *THE ARCANA OF FREEMASONRY*, George Allen & Unwin Ltd. London, p.87.

113.Manly P. Hall, *Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians*, The Philosophical Research Society 1965, p. 7.

114.W.L. Wilmshurst, *The Meaning of Masonry*, Bell Publishing Co. 1927, reprinted 1980, p. 25.

115.George H. Steinmetz, *Freemasonry Its Hidden Meaning*, Macoy Publishing & Masonic Supply Co., Inc. 1976, p. 46.

116.Ibid., p. 49.

117.Manly P. Hall, 33rd degree, *The Lost Keys of Freemasonry*, Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Company, Inc., p. 101.

118.Ibid., p. 92.

119.Manly P. Hall, *Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians*, The Philosophical Research Society 1965, p. 69.

120.Dr. Thomas Milton Stewart, *Symbolism of the Gods of the Egyptians*, 1970 The Baskerville Press, p. 107.

121.Manly P. Hall, *The Secret Teachings of All Ages An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Qabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy*, The Philosophical Research Society, Inc. 1988, p. LXVIII.

122.Sir James George Frazer, F.R.S., F.B.A., *The Golden Bough*, A Study in Magic and Religion, 1922 Collier Books MacMillian Publishing Company, p. 439.

123.Ibid., p. 440-441.

124.Manly P. Hall, 33rd degree, *The Lost Keys of Freemasonry*, Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Company, Inc., p. 109.

125.Manly P. Hall, *Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians*, The Philosophical Research Society 1965, p. 68.

126.Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*, 1871 L. H. Jenkins Inc., p. 656.

127.J. S. M. Ward, *Freemasonry and The Ancient Gods*, Simpkin, Marshal, Hamilton, Kent & Co. Ltd., first published in 1921, p. 307.

128.Jack Harris, *Freemasonry: The Invisible Cult in Our Midst*, 1983 Daniels Publishing Co, Inc., p. 72-73.

129.Jim Shaw and Tom McKenney, *The Deadly Deception*, Huntington House 1988, p. 153-154.

130.Albert Pike, *The Porch and The Middle Chamber*, The Book of the Lodge, Kessinger Publishing Company, p. 333.

131.Manly P. Hall, *The Soul in Egyptian Metaphysics and The Book of the Dead*, 1965 The Philosophical Research Society, p. 15.

132.Manly P. Hall, 33rd degree, *The Lost Keys of Freemasonry*, Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Company, Inc., p. 106-107.

133.Peter Topmkins, *Secrets of The Great Pyramid*, 1971 Harper and Rowe, p. 259-260.

134.E. A. Wallis Budge, *The Egyptian Book of The Dead (The Papyrus of Ani) Egyptian Text Transliteration and Translation*, 1967 Dover Publications, p. Xi.

135.Ibid., p. 348.

136.Ibid., p. 200.

137.Ibid., p. 348.

138.Ibid., p. 350.

139.Ibid., p. 144.

140.Ibid., p. 178.

141.James Baikie, *Egyptian Papri and Paprus Hunting*, Flemming H. Revell, p. 195.

142.E. A. Wallis Budge, *The Book of The Dead*, Bell Publishing Co., p. 95.

143.Ibid., p. 95.

144.Ibid., p. 95.

145.Ibid., p. 95.

146.Ibid., p. 95.

147.E. A. Wallis Budge, *The Egyptian Book of The Dead (The Papyrus of Ani) Egyptian Text Transliteration and Translation*, 1967 Dover Publications, p. LXXX.

148.Ibid., p. LXXX.

149.Ibid., p. LXXXI.

150.Stoddard, *Trail of the Serpent*, (quoting Aleister Crowley MAGICK), Omni Christian Book Club, p. 259.

151.Normandi Ellis, *Awakening Osiris The Egyptian Book of The Dead*, Phanes Press, p. 78-81.

152.Richard Payne Knight, *A History of Phallic Worship*, 1992 Dorset Press, p. 120.

153.Peter Topmkins, *Secrets of The Great Pyramid*, 1971 Harper and Rowe, p. 259.

154.Ibid., p. 258.(Illustration)

155.E. A. Wallis Budge, *The Egyptian Book of The Dead (The Papyrus of Ani) Egyptian Text Transliteration and Translation*, 1967 Dover Publications, p. 288-289.

156.Ibid., p. 266. (Illustration)

157.Ibid., p. 255-256.

158.Ibid., p. 256. (Illustration)

159.E. A. Wallis Budge, *The Book of The Dead*, Bell Publishing Co., p. 379.

160.Ibid., p. 379.

161.Ibid., p. 383.

162.Manly P. Hall, *Freemasonry of the Ancient Egyptians*, The Philosophical Research Society 1965, p. 86.

163.E. A. Wallis Budge, *The Egyptian Book of The Dead (The Papyrus of Ani) Egyptian Text Transliteration and Translation*, 1967 Dover Publications, p. 262.

164.Ibid., p. 165. (Illustration)

165.Pat Pulling, with Dathy Cawthon, *The Devil's Web - Who is Stalking Your Children For Satan?*, 1989 Huntington House, p. 164. (Illustration)

166.Bob Brier, *Ancient Egyptian Magic*, 1980 Quill, p. 289.

167.Gerald and Betty Schueler, *Coming Into The Light Rituals of Egyptian Magick*, 1989 Llewellyn Publications, p. 109.

168.Manly P. Hall, *The Secret Teachings of All Ages An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Qabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy*, The Philosophical Research Society, Inc. 1988, p. XXXV. (Illustration)

169.Ibid., p. CLXXVI.

170.Thomas Wright, *A History of Phallic Worship*, 1992 Dorset Press, N.Y., p. 61. Vol.I.

171.Albert Gallatin Mackey, M.D., 33 degree, *THE HISTORY OF FREEMASONRY*, Its Legends and Traditions Its Chronological History, William R. Singleton, 33 degree, *SYMBOLISM OF FREEMASONRY* The Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite and the Royal Order of Scotland, published by The Masonic History Company, p. 1780.

172.Manly P. Hall, *The Secret Teachings of All Ages An Encyclopedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Qabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy*, The Philosophical Research Society, Inc. 1988, p. CIV.

173.Manly P. Hall, *The Phoenix*, An Illustrated Review of Occultism and Philosophy, 1960 The Philosophical Research Society, p. 160.

174.Manly P. Hall, *The Soul in Egyptian Metaphysics and The Book of the Dead*, 1965 The Philosophical Research Society, p. 23.

175.Bob Brier, *Ancient Egyptian Magic*, 1980 Quill, p. 44.

176.Manly P. Hall, 33rd degree, *The Lost Keys of Freemasonry*, Macoy Publishing and Masonic Supply Company, Inc., p. 103.

177.Ibid., p. 110.

178. Description of Ritual abuse written by Dr. Lawrence Pazder author of *Michelle Remembers*, 1980 Pocket Books, New York.

179.C. W. Leadbeater, *Ancient Mystic Rites*, The Theosophical Publishing House, Wheaton, Ill., p. 42.

180.Jerry Johnston, *The Edge of Evil*, Word Publishing, 1989, p. 136.

181.C. W. Leadbeater, *Ancient Mystic Rites*, The Theosophical Publishing House, Wheaton, Ill., p. 41.

182.Albert G. Mackey, *Mackey's Revised Encyclopedia of Freemasonry*, The Masonic History Company, 1946, p. 514.

183.Michael Howard, *The Occult Conspiracy*, Secret Societies–Their Influence and Power in World History, Destiny Books 1989, p. 36-37.

184.Nesta H. Webster, *Secret Societies and Subversive Movements*, Christian Book Club of America, p. 57.

185.C. W. Leadbeater, *Ancient Mystic Rites*, The Theosophical Publishing House, Wheaton, Ill., p. 167.

186.Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*, 1871 L. H. Jenkins Inc., p. 820-821.

187.C. W. Leadbeater, *Ancient Mystic Rites*, The Theosophical Publishing House, Wheaton, Ill., p. 42.

188.Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*, 1871 L. H. Jenkins Inc., p. 821.

189.C. W. Leadbeater, *Ancient Mystic Rites*, The Theosophical Publishing House, Wheaton, Ill., p. 42.

190.Henry Wilson Coil, 33°, *Coil's Masonic Encyclopedia*, Macoy Publishing & Supply Company 1961, p. 98.

191.Laurence R. Taylor, *Indiana Monitor and Freemason's Guide*, Published by authority of the Most Worshipful Grand Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons of the State of Indiana 1975, p.

192.John Robinson, A.M., *Proofs of a Conspiracy*, The Americanist Classics, Western Islands, 1798, p. 63.

193.*S.O.A.R. (Survivors of Ritual Abuse)* P.O. Box 1776, Cahokia, Illinois 62206-1776,USA. Volume 3, Number 1, July 21, 1993, p.1.

194. Letter dated II/15/1993 to David Carrico on file from Source #1.

195.Letter dated 11/9/1993 to David Carrico on file from Source #2.

196.Letter dated 12/12/1993 to David Carrico on file from Source #3.

197.Margaret Smith, *Ritual Abuse*, 1993 HarperSanFrancisco, p.137-138.

198.Nesta H. Webster, *Secret Societies and Subversive Movements*, Christian Book Club of America, p. 72.

199.Malcolm C. Duncan, *Duncan's Ritual of Freemasonry*, David McKay Company, p.34-35.

200.Albert Pike, *Morals and Dogma of the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry*, 1871 L. H. Jenkins Inc., p.109.

201.Ibid., p. 726.

202.Kenneth Grant, *Aleister Crowley & The Hidden God*, Samuel Weiser, p. 174.

203.Malcolm C. Duncan, *Duncan's Ritual of Freemasonry*, David McKay Company, p.230.

204.Transcribed from 1993 Conference cassette tape #15 on file.

205.Dr. Neil T. Anderson, *Released From Bondage*, 1991 Heres Life Publishers, p. 230-231.

206.Ibid., p. 230-231.

207.Bill Subritzky, *Demons Defeated*, 1985 Sovereign World, p. 47-49.

208.Daniel Ryder, C.C.D.C., L.S.W., *Breaking The Circle Of Satanic Ritual Abuse*, 1992 CompCare Publishers, p. 14.

209.Larry Kahaner, *Cults That Kill*, Probing the Underworld of Occult Crime, Warner Books *1988, p.* 99.

210.Dr. Loreda L. Fox, *The Spiritual and Clinical Dimensions of Multiple Personality Disorder*, Understanding and Treatment Strategies for Helpers of Extreme Trauma Survivors, p. 59.

211.Wendy Hoffman, *ASCENT FROM EVIL*: The Healing Journey Out Of Satanic Cult Abuse, 1994 (In Press) Triumph Books, Liguori MO: (Available Fall 1994).

212.W. L. Wilmshurst, *The Masonic Initiation*, Trismegistus Press, p. 84,85,86.

svalispeaksagain 5:45 pm on January 29, 2019

Tags: mind control (69), nephilim (2), occult (13), SRA (45)

The different types of SRA and Mind Control

The following blog is an excerpt from a chapter in a new book, Prayer Warrior 2, available on Amazon; it was used with permission from the author.

The term "satanic ritual abuse" (also known as "multi-perpetrator, organized abuse") can cover a wide range of groups, each with their own practices and spiritual orientation. The term "mind control" includes the manipulation of an individual through attachment needs, trauma, coercion and other means in order to perform a task or agree with the beliefs of the individuals attempting to exert control over another. Mind control can include the methods used by governmental agencies, for instance, to instill loyalty and specific skills and behaviors on cue.

Almost all occultic groups also use mind control to varying degrees to ensure silence, obedience and loyalty to the group. The distinction between "SRA" and "mind control" often blur and overlap, as many governmental agencies also include occultic rituals and elements in their programming methods.

When working with survivors, it can be helpful to have an overview of some of the major types of multi-perpetrator groups that use mind control methods. These can include: (*please note that there may be individual variations within groups*)

a. **"Dabblers**": These are often teens, or curious adults, who read literature regarding satanism or witchcraft, and who want to try it out for themselves. They may go online to learn more, and eventually will attempt to practice some of the more common rites, either alone, or will encourage others to join them. Most do not engage in the active recruiting seen in more organized groups, and are very isolated and localized unless the local get together is noticed by representatives of other groups, who may offer to come and "teach" more. The mind control in a group like this is minimal, either than the oaths and vows made to one another; and the shared guilt if an animal sacrifice is done, with a vow of silence (and threats) made to those who participate. This type of group is the one most likely to leave evidence of their activity, such as mutilated animals in a field, for others to find, since they do not have the training instilled since

Follow

early childhood to perform meticulous cleanup.

b. **Wicca and witchcraft covens**: these are often generational, local to a county or region, and may range from white wicca groups (which may be composed of "dabblers" who are not generational) who practice casting spells for healing and "good" purposes; and black wicca groups who actively abuse members starting in childhood. In the more secretive black groups, sexual and ritual abuse are incorporated with activities that may include animal and (rarely) human sacrifice, learning spells to curse others to death; vows of silence (with traumas that can include brief burial alive, to elicit the child's promise to never tell). The black witchcraft groups are matriarchal, with an older woman who often holds a powerful position (the "crone" over the group) and will have close ties to the local community and close-knit relationships among those who are born into the group. Recruiting may be done to individuals who appear highly interested in learning, and marriages may be done to "outsiders" to strengthen the genetic pool. If the "outsider" seeks to leave the group, after a child is conceived, the outsider may be sacrificed.

c. **Local satanic covens** (generational): these are generational, meaning most of the members are born into the group; they may do some recruitment of outsiders, or may abduct young children to increase their numbers and bring in outside genes (to prevent in-breeding in smaller, more isolated groups). These groups are usually tied to a town, small city or rural region, and can include clans that have existed for years in mountainous regions; or the local coven that "runs" and has almost complete control of a small rural town. The mind control elements are usually mainly physical, such as beatings, whippings, sexual abuse, burial alive, etc. The children may be rented out for use by pornographers, or to be used as breeders for other national groups, for a price. In recent years, the mind control has begun to be more sophisticated, with the use of some programming technology shared by the larger, more organized groups that have representatives come in and teach how to use it. These groups are more likely than national or international groups to leave marks or evidence of the abuse in their members, such as loss of a digit or toe (marking a sacrifice given during an important ceremony), or burn marks on the back.

d. **Government mind control.**This include intelligence agencies from nations around the world such as Russia's SPETZ, the UK's MI-6, or Israel's Mossad, as well as the US CIA and military lab trainees. Most governmental mind control is well-funded and has an extensive research base that is ongoing; all individuals that have undergone it will have extensive profiles and data tracking to evaluate the person's reactions to the methods used. Shared characteristics include an emphasis on military training, physical strength and "survival of the fittest" setups to weed out the weak and promote the emotionally and physically strongest. These agents will be accomplished assassins, spies with photographic memories used to gather intelligence, and will have undergone extensive programming to be loyal to their country (which may be seen as a "mother" or "creation" figure within who they are bonded to), and to their primary handlers, who will be seen as a "daddy" figure regardless of actual gender. They will often be used in missions both nationally and internationally, and will have extensive mind control to not disclose information related to the national security of the nation they were programmed by; they are programmed to suicide before disclosing this type of information (which will include any information regarding how they themselves were programmed, and the techniques used). Some individuals seeking help may have been used in mind control experiments, which are used to gather data in methodology, or to create "prototypes" for the military. Governmental agencies will often track their programming methods and agents by the generation or other similar designation: Generation 1 (G1) would be the earliest generation programmed; G12 would represent the 12th generation produced using ever newer genetic and programming technologies.

e. **Organized criminal groups:** There are numerous national and international crime groups that are highly organized, and often use brutal mind control and trauma methods to instill loyalty, silence to outsiders and the skills required of its members. Some of the better known ones include the Italian Mafia, with similar groups in Russia, China and other countries; the Asian Triads; and other groups. These groups are often "go betweens" for the purposes of sales for those who produce child pornography (including snuff films), child trafficking, drug trafficking and gun running, and the national and international groups that may oversee their region's area of commerce. Some members of organized crime groups also belong to local or national occultic groups, so there is some overlap. The occultic practices in these groups tend to be to promote success and prosperity for their own group, rather than to curse or control others. These groups are often generational, with specific families running the group within a nation, are very closed to outsiders, and rarely recruit except (rarely) by marriage.

f. **National satanic groups**: In the U.S. the Brotherhood is one of the larger, more organized national groups. They have divided the U.S. into sectors, with representative groups in most major cities. These groups are generational; extremely loyal to their family members, and are programmed to lay down their life before betraying a "brother" (which will include close family members). The mind control will begin in late infancy with participation in rituals; and fairly sophisticated use of technology, such as isolation tanks, virtual reality and programming setups to instill beliefs in the young child. The members of this group will often "help out" the international groups in their city or region upon request.

g. **Asian occult societies**: These clans are generational, with training methods perfected over the centuries. These include the secret ninja clans of Asia, and the wealthy occultic families who in centuries past helped administer the opium trade in China and surrounding countries, among other activities (and still do, to this day). The children undergo extensive mind control starting in infancy, with training in military, herbs for healing and poisons, hand-to-hand combat and other skills. Their mind control involves sophisticated technology as well, including the use of virtual reality. Programmers from the Asian occult societies attend programming conferences with programmers from the international occult societies; some programs commonly used by the internation occult societies were actually developed by programmers from the Asian occult societies. These clans began to be involved in human experiments and mind control research around the same time that the European researchers did prior to World War II (much of this was conducted in Japan), and the exchange of information has gone on for close to a century.

h. **International occultic groups**: These include the 12 societies such as the Knights Templar; Opus Dei; Knights of Malta; Rosicrucians, Magnificat; Illuminati, the Knights of Jerusalem; Balepheron, and others, and the Jesuit order, which is the 13th and oversees the others. These groups are generational (they do not recruit outsiders; instead, they may purchase DNA from genetic labs to improve the strength, intelligence or other characteristics of each new generation). The mind control methods used to instill loyalty, obedience and skills required are very sophisticated, and may include VR, brain scanning, negative sound rooms, and high-tech machines used to program in specific beliefs and responses. The children raised in these groups will often have extensive military training, as well as training in the sciences (including programming methods and technologies); various languages, as well as spy and assassin training. These groups have various regions of influence accorded to them around the world (for example, the Templar Knights have been accorded most of France, and Canada; while the Illuminati have been given Germany, the Druid Council was given England, much of Russia, and large portions of

the US, and the Knights of Malta have been given Switzerland). Because these groups often send their agents on missions around the world, the agents will first contact and be given permission to conduct their assignment by the leader of the group over the region they are entering. An individual raised in an international occultic group will have programming that is started in the womb, with extensive post-natal programming at specialized facilities or camps. Most children will have a primary placement and bond with their genetic family. The exception is the Jesuit order, which programs their children entirely within a facility setting the first three years of life, and then allows them to be hosted within a family setting for short periods during childhood.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

The Occultic Agenda
April 3, 2021
In "healing"

Interview
February 14, 2022
In "healing"

Book available on Amazon
April 25, 2018
In "mind control"

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← Growing Up International Part Four: Ages Six to Twelve

Mother Programming →

Blog at WordPress.com.

http://www.whale.to/b/cannon.html

The Controllers: A New Hypothesis of Alien Abductions

By Martin Cannon

Table of Contents

I. Introduction. 1
The Problem.. 1
The Hypothesis. 3
II. The Technology. 6
A Brief Overview.. 6
Implants. 8
Subsequent Electrode Implant Research. 10
Abductee Implants. 12
A Question of Timing. 13
The Quandary. 14
Remote Hypnosis. 15
That's Entrainment 19
Wave Your Brain Goodbye. 20
Final Thoughts on "The Wave". 24
III. Applications. 26
Palle Hardrup's "Guardian Angel". 27
Screen Memory. 30
The Super Spy. 32
Bases of Suspicion. 37
The Scandinavian Connection. 38
Helicopters and Discs. 39
The Military and Mind Control 40
The Ultimate Motive For Mind Control 43

IV. Abductions. 46
The Hill Case and the "Advanced" Aliens. 47
Arms and the Abductee. 50
"They Will Think It's Flying Saucers". 52
Glimpses of the Controllers. 54
Cults. 55
Grounds For Further Research. 57
Final Thoughts. 59

Selected Bibliography on Mind Control 61

I. Introduction

One wag has dubbed the problem "Terra and the Pirates."

The pirates, ostensibly, are marauders from another solar system; their victims include a growing number of troubled human beings who insist that they've been shanghaied by these otherworldly visitors. An outlandish scenario — yet through the works of such authors as Budd Hopkins[1] and Whitley Strieber,[2] the "alien abduction" syndrome has seized the public imagination. Indeed, tales of UFO contact threaten to lapse into fashionability, even though, as I have elsewhere noted,[3] they may still inflict a formidable social price upon the claimant.

Some time ago, I began to research these claims, concentrating my studies on the social and political environment surrounding the events. As I studied, the project grew and its scope widened. Indeed, I began to

feel as though I'd gone digging through familiar terrain only to unearth Gomorrah.

These excavations may have disgorged a solution.

The Problem

Among ufologists, the term "abduction" has come to refer to an infinitely-confounding experience, or matrix of experiences, shared by a dizzying number of individuals, who claim that travellers from the stars have scooped them out of their beds, or snatched them from their cars, and subjected them to interrogations, quasi-medical examinations, and "instruction" periods. Usually, these sessions are said to occur within alien spacecraft; frequently, the stories include terrifying details reminiscent of the tortures inflicted in Germany's death camps. The abductees often (though not always) lose all memory of these events; they find themselves back in their cars or beds, unable to account for hours of "missing time." Hypnosis, or some other trigger, can bring back these haunted hours in an explosion of recollection — and as the smoke clears, an abductee will often spot a trail of similar experiences, stretching all the way back to childhood.

Perhaps the oddest fact of these odd tales: Many abductees, for all their vividly-recollected agonies, claim to love their alien tormentors. That's the word I've heard repeatedly: love.

Within the community of "scientific ufologists" — those lonely, all-too little-heard advocates of a reasonable and open-minded debate on matters saucerological — these claims have elicited cautious interest and a commendable restraint from conclusion-hopping. Outside the higher realms of scientific ufology, the situation is, alas, quite different. In the popular press, in both the "straight" and sensationalist media, within that journalistic realm where issues are defined and public opinion solidified (despite a frequently superficial approach to matters of evidence and investigation) abduction scenarios have elicited two basic reactions: that of the Believer and the Skeptic.

The Believers — and here we should note that "Believers" and "abductees" are two groups whose memberships overlap but are in no way congruent — accept such stories at face value. They accept, despite the seeming absurdity of these tales, the internal contradictions, the askew logic of narrative construction, the severe discontinuity of emotional response to the actions described. The Believers believe, despite reports that their beloved "space brothers" use vile and inhuman tactics of medical examination — senseless procedures most of us (and certainly the vanguard of an advanced race) would be ashamed to inflict on an animal. The Believers believe, despite the difficulty of reconciling these unsettling tales with their own deliriums of benevolent off-worlders.

Occasionally, the rough notes of a rationalization are offered: "The aliens don't know what they are doing," we hear; or "Some aliens are bad." Yet the Believers confound their own reasoning when they insist on ascribing the wisdom of the ages and the beneficence of the angels to their beloved visitors. The aliens allegedly know enough about our society to go about their business undetected by the local authorities and the general public; they communicate with the abductees in human tongue; they concern themselves with details of the percipients' innermost lives — yet they remain so ignorant of our culture as to be unaware of the basic moral precepts concerning the dignity of the individual and the right to self-determination. Such dichotomies don't bother Believers; they are the faithful, and faith is assumed to have its mysteries. Sancta Simplicitas.

Conversely, the Skeptics dismiss these stories out of hand. They dismiss, despite the intriguing confirmatory details: the multiple witness events, the physical traces left by the ufonauts, the scars and implants left on the abductees. The skeptics scoff, though the abductees tell stories similar in detail — even certain tiny details, not known to the general public.

Philip Klass is a debunker who, through his appearances on such television programs as Nova and Nightline, has been in a position to affect much of the public debate on UFOs. In his interesting but poorly-documented work on abductions,[4] Klass claims that "abduction" is a psychological disease, spread by those who write about it. This argument exactly resembles the professional press-basher's frequent assertion that terrorism metastasizes through media exposure. Yet for all the millions of words expectorated by newsfolk on the subject of terrorism, terrorist actions remain quite rare, as any statistician (though few politicians) will admit, and verifiable linkage between crimes and their coverage remains to be found. For that matter, there have

also been books — bestsellers, even — on unicorns and gnomes. People who claim to see those creatures are few. Abductees are plentiful.

Both Believer and Skeptic, in my opinion, miss the real story. Both make the same mistake: They connect the abduction phenomenon to the forty-year history of UFO sightings, and they apply their prejudices about the latter to the controversy about the former.

At first, the link seems natural. Shouldn't our thoughts about UFOs color our thoughts about UFO abductions?

No.

They may well be separate issues. Or, rather, they are connected only in this: The myth of the UFO has provided an effective cover story for an entirely different sort of mystery. Remove yourself from the Believer/Skeptic dialectic, and you will see the third alternative.

As we examine this alternative, we will, of necessity, stray far from the saucers. We must turn our face from the paranormal and concentrate on the occult — if, by "occult," we mean secret.

I posit that the abductees have been abducted. Yet they are also spewing fantasy — or, more precisely, they have been given a set of lies to repeat and believe. If my hypothesis proves true, then we must accept the following: The kidnapping is real. The fear is real. The pain is real. The instruction is real. But the little grey men from Zeti Reticuli are not real; they are constructs, Halloween masks meant to disguise the real faces of the controllers. The abductors may not be visitors from Beyond; rather, they may be a symptom of the carcinoma which blackens our body politic.

The fault lies not in our stars, but in ourselves.

The Hypothesis

Substantial evidence exists linking members of this country's intelligence community (including the Central Intelligence Agency, the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency, and the Office of Naval Intelligence) with the esoteric technology of mind control. For decades, "spy-chiatrists" working behind the scenes — on college campuses, in CIA-sponsored institutes, and (most heinously) in prisons have experimented with the erasure of memory, hypnotic resistance to torture, truth serums, post-hypnotic suggestion, rapid induction of hypnosis, electronic stimulation of the brain, non-ionizing radiation, microwave induction of intracerebral "voices," and a host of even more disturbing technologies. Some of the projects exploring these areas were ARTICHOKE, BLUEBIRD, PANDORA, MKDELTA, MKSEARCH and the infamous MKULTRA.

I have read nearly every available book on these projects, as well as the relevant congressional testimony.[5] I have also spent much time in university libraries researching relevant articles, contacting other researchers (who have graciously allowed me access to their files), and conducting interviews. Moreover, I traveled to Washington, DC to review the files John Marks compiled when he wrote The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate."[6] These files include some 20,000 pages of CIA and Defense Department documents, interviews, scientific articles, letters, etc. The views presented here are the result of extensive and ongoing research.

As a result of this research, I have come to the following conclusions:

1. Although misleading (and occasionally perjured) testimony before Congress indicated that the CIA's "brainwashing" efforts met with little success,[7] striking advances were, in fact, made in this field. As CIA veteran Miles Copeland once admitted to a reporter, "The congressional subcommittee which went into this sort of thing got only the barest glimpse."[8]

2. Clandestine research into thought manipulation has not stopped, despite CIA protestations that it no longer sponsors such studies. Victor Marchetti, 14-year veteran of the CIA and author of the renown expose,

http://www.whale.to/b/cannon.html

The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence, confirmed in a 1977 interview that the mind control research continues, and that CIA claims to the contrary are a "cover story."[9]

3. The Central Intelligence Agency was not the only government agency involved in this research.[10] Indeed, many branches of our government took part in these studies — including NASA, the Atomic Energy Commission, as well as all branches of the Defense Department.

To these conclusions I would append the following — not as firmly-established historical fact, but as a working hypothesis and grounds for investigation:

4. The "UFO abduction" phenomenon might be a continuation of clandestine mind control operations.

I recognize the difficulties this thesis might present to those readers emotionally wedded to the extraterrestrial hypothesis, or to those whose political Weltanschauung disallows any such suspicions. Still, the open-minded student of abductions should consider the possibilities. Certainly, we are not being narrow-minded if we ask researchers to exhaust all terrestrial explanations before looking heavenward.

Granted, this particular explanation may, at first, seem as bizarre as the phenomenon itself. But I invite the skeptical reader to examine the work of George Estabrooks, a seminal theorist on the use of hypnosis in warfare, and a veteran of Project MKULTRA. Estabrooks once amused himself during a party by covertly hypnotizing two friends, who were led to believe that the Prime Minister of England had just arrived; Estabrooks' victims spent an hour conversing with, and even serving drinks to, the esteemed visitor.[11] For ufologists, this incident raises an inescapable question: If the Mesmeric arts can successfully evoke a non-existent Prime Minister, why can't a representative from the Pleiades be similarly induced?

But there is much more to the present day technology of mind control than mere hypnosis — and many good reasons to suspect that UFO abduction accounts are an artifact of continuing brainwashing/behavior modification experiments. Moreover, I intend to demonstrate that, by using UFO mythology as a cover story, the experimenters may have solved the major problem with the work conducted in the 1950s — "the disposal problem," i.e., the question of "What do we do with the victims?"

If, in these pages, I seem to stray from the subject of the saucers, I plead for patience. Before I attempt to link UFO abductions with mind control experiments, I must first show that this technology exists. Much of the forthcoming is an introduction to the topic of mind control — what it is, and how it works.

II. The Technology

A Brief Overview

In the early days of World War II, George Estabrooks, of Colgate University, wrote to the Department of War, describing in breathless terms the possible uses of hypnosis in warfare.[12] The Army was intrigued; Estabrooks had a job. The true history of Estabrooks' wartime collaboration with the CID, FBI[13] and other agencies may never be told: After the war, he burned his diary pages covering the years 1940-45, and thereafter avoided discussing his continuing government work with anyone, even with close members of the family.[14] Occasionally, he strongly intimated that his work involved the creation of hypno-programmed couriers and hypnotically-induced split personalities, but whether he succeeded in these areas remains a controversial point. Nevertheless, the eccentric and flamboyant Estabrooks remains a pivotal figure in the early history of clandestine behavioral research.

Which is not to say that he worked alone. World War II was the first conflict in which the human brain became a field of battle, where invading forces were led by the most notable names in psychology and pharmacology. On both sides, the war spurred furious efforts to create a "truth drug" for use in interrogating prisoners. General William "Wild Bill" Donovan, director of the OSS, tasked his crack team — including Dr. Winifred Overhulser, Dr. Edward Strecker, Harry J. Anslinger and George White — to modify human perception and behavior through chemical means; their "medicine cabinet" included scopolamine, peyote,

barbiturates, mescaline, and marijuana. (This research had its amusing side: Donovan's "psychic warriors" conducted many extensive and expensive trials before deciding that the best method of administering tetrahydrocannabinol, the active ingredient in marijuana, was via the cigarette. Any jazz musician could have told them as much.)[15]

Simultaneously, the notorious Nazi doctors at Dachau experimented with mescaline as a means of eliminating the victim's will to resist. Jews, Slavs, gypsies, and other "Untermenschen" in the camp were surreptitiously slipped the drug; later, mescaline was combined with hypnosis.[16] The results of these tests were made available to the United States after the War.

In 1947, the Navy conducted the first known post-war mind control program, Project CHATTER, which continued the drug experiments. Decades later, journalists and investigators still haven't uncovered much information about this project — or, indeed, about any of the military's other excursions into this field. We know that the Army eventually founded operations THIRD CHANCE and DERBY HAT; other project names remain mysterious, though the existence of these programs is unquestionable.

The newly-formed CIA plunged into this cesspool in 1950, with Project BLUEBIRD, rechristened ARTICHOKE in 1951. To establish a "cover story" for this research, the CIA funded a propaganda effort designed to convince the world that the Communist Bloc had devised insidious new methods of re-shaping the human will; the CIA's own efforts could therefore, if exposed, be explained as an attempt to "catch up" with Soviet and Chinese work. The primary promoter of this "line" was one Edward Hunter, a CIA contract employee operating undercover as a journalist, and, later, a prominent member of the John Birch society. (Hunter was an OSS veteran of the China theatre — the same spawning grounds which produced Richard Helms, Howard Hunt, Mitch Werbell, Fred Chrisman, Paul Helliwell and a host of other noteworthies who came to dominate that strange land where the worlds of intelligence and right-wing extremism meet.[17]) Hunter offered "brainwashing" as the explanation for the numerous confessions signed by American prisoners of war during the Korean War and (generally) un-recanted upon the prisoners' repatriation. These confessions alleged that the United States used germ warfare in the Korean conflict, a claim which the American public of the time found impossible to accept. Many years later, however, investigative reporters discovered that Japan's germ warfare specialists (who had wreaked incalculable terror on the conquered Chinese during WWII) had been mustered into the American national security apparat — and that the knowledge gleaned from Japan's horrifying germ warfare experiments probably was used in Korea, just as the "brainwashed" soldiers had indicated.[18] Thus, we now know that the entire brainwashing scare of the 1950s constituted a CIA hoax perpetrated upon the American public: CIA deputy director Richard Helms admitted as much when, in 1963, he told the Warren Commission that Soviet mind control research consistently lagged years behind American efforts.[19]

When the CIA's mind control program was transferred from the Office of Security to the Technical Services Staff (TSS) in 1953, the name changed again — to MKULTRA.[20] Many consider this wide-ranging "octopus" project — whose tentacles twined through the corridors of numerous universities and around the necks of an army of scientists — the most ominous operation in CIA's catalogue of atrocity. Through MKULTRA, the Agency created an umbrella program of a positively Joycean scope, designed to ferret out all possible means of invading what George Orwell once called "the space between our ears" (Later still, in 1962, mind control research was transferred to the Office of Research and Development; project cryptonyms remain unrevealed.[21])

What was studied? Everything — including hypnosis, conditioning, sensory deprivation, drugs, religious cults, microwaves, psycho-surgery, brain implants, and even ESP. When MKULTRA "leaked" to the public during the great CIA investigations of the 1970s, public attention focused most heavily on drug experimentation and the work with ESP.[22] Mystery still shrouds another area of study, the area which seems to have most interested ORD: psychoelectronics. This research may prove key to our understanding of the UFO abduction phenomenon.

Implants

Perhaps the most interesting pieces of evidence surrounding the abduction phenomenon are the intracerebral implants allegedly visible in the X-rays and MRI scans of many abductees.[23] Indeed, abductees often describe

operations in which needles are inserted into the brain; more frequently still, they report implantation of foreign objects through the sinus cavities. Many abduction specialists assume that these intracranial incursions must be the handiwork of scientists from the stars. Unfortunately, these researchers have failed to familiarize themselves with certain little-heralded advances in terrestrial technology.

The abductees' implants strongly suggest a technological lineage which can be traced to a device known as a "stimoceiver," invented in the late '50s-early '60s by a neuroscientist named Jose Delgado. The stimoceiver is a miniature depth electrode which can receive and transmit electronic signals over FM radio waves. By stimulating a correctly-positioned stimoceiver, an outside operator can wield a surprising degree of control over the subject's responses.

The most famous example of the stimoceiver in action occurred in a Madrid bull ring. Delgado "wired" the bull before stepping into the ring, entirely unprotected. Furious for gore, the bull charged toward the doctor — then stopped, just before reaching him. The technician-turned-toreador had halted the animal by simply pushing a button on a black box, held in the hand.[24]

Delgado's Physical Control of the Mind: Toward a Psychocivilized Society[25] remains the sole, full-length, popularly-written work on intracerebral implants and electronic stimulation of the brain (ESB). (The book's ominous title and unconvincing philosophical rationales for mass mind control prompted an unfavorable public reaction — which may have deterred other researchers from publishing on this theme for a general audience.) While subsequent work has long since superceded the techniques described in this book, Delgado's achievements were seminal. His animal and human experiments clearly demonstrate that the experimenter can electronically induce emotions and behavior: Under certain conditions, the extremes of temperament — rage, lust, fatigue, etc. — can be elicited by an outside operator as easily as an organist might call forth a C-major chord.

Delgado writes: "Radio stimulation of different points in the amygdala and hippocampus in the four patients produced a variety of effects, including pleasant sensations, elation, deep, thoughtful concentration, odd feelings, super relaxation, colored visions, and other responses."[26] The evocative phrase "colored vision" clearly indicates remotely-induced hallucination; we will detail later how these hallucinations may be "controlled" by an outside operator.

Speaking in 1966 — and reflecting research undertaken years previous — Delgado asserted that his experiments "support the distasteful conclusion that motion, emotion, and behavior can be directed by electrical forces and that humans can be controlled like robots by push buttons."[27] He even prophesied a day when brain control could be turned over to non-human operators, by establishing two-way radio communication between the implanted brain and a computer.[28]

Of one experimental subject, Delgado notes that "the patient expressed the successive sensations of fainting, fright and floating around. These 'floating' feelings were repeatedly evoked on different days by stimulation of the same point..."[29] Ufologists may recognize the similarity of this sequence of events to abductee reports of the opening minutes of their experiences.[30] Under subsequent hypnosis, the abductee could be instructed to misremember the cause of this floating sensation.

In a fascinating series of experiments, Delgado attached the stimoceiver to the tympanic membrane, thereby transforming the ear into a sort of microphone. An assistant would whisper "How are you?" into the ear of a suitably "fixed" cat, and Delgado could hear the words over a loudspeaker in the next room. The application of this technology to the spy trade should be readily apparent. According to Victor Marchetti, The Agency once attempted a highly-sophisticated extension of this basic idea, in which radio implants were attached to a cat's cochlea, to facilitate the pinpointing of specific conversations, freed from extraneous surrounding noises.[31] Such "advances" exacerbate the already-imposing level of Twentieth-Century paranoia: Not only can our phones be tapped and mail checked, but even Tabby may be spying on us!

Yet the ramifications of this technology may go even deeper than Marchetti indicates. I presume that if a suitably-wired subject's inner ear can be made into a microphone, it can also be made into a loudspeaker — one possible explanation for the "voices" heard by abductees.[32] Indeed, I have personally viewed a strange, opalescent implant within the ear canal of an abductee. I see no reason to ascribe this device to alien intrusion

— more than likely, the "intruders" in this case were the technological inheritors of the Delgado legacy. Indeed, not many years after Delgado's experiments with the cat, Ralph Schwitzgebel devised a "bug-in-the-ear" via which a therapist — odd term, under the circumstances — can communicate with his subject.[33]

Subsequent Electrode Implant Research

Other researchers have made notable contributions to this field.

Robert G. Heath, of Tulane University, who has implanted as many as 125 electrodes in his subjects, achieved his greatest notoriety by attempting to "cure" homosexuality through ESB. In his experiments, he discovered that he could control his patients' memory, (a feat which, applied in the ufological context, may account for the phenomenon of "missing time"); he could also induce sexual arousal, fear, pleasure, and hallucinations.[34]

Heath and another researcher, James Olds,[35] have independently illustrated that areas of the brain in and near the hypothalamus have, when electronically stimulated, what has been described as "rewarding" and "aversive" effects. Both animals and men, when given the means to induce their own ESB of the brain's pleasure centers, will stimulate themselves at a tremendous rate, ignoring such basic drives as hunger and thirst.[36] (Using fixed electrodes of his own invention, John C. Lilly had accomplished similar effects in the early 1950s.[37]) Anyone who has studied the abduction phenomenon will find himself on familiar territory here, for the abductee accounts are replete with stories of bewildering and inappropriate sexual response countered by extremely painful stimuli — operant conditioning, at its most extreme, and most insidious, for here we see a form of conditioning in which the manipulator renders himself invisible. Indeed, B.F. Skinner-esque aversive therapy, remotely applied, was Heath's prescription for "healing" homosexuality.[38]

Ralph Schwitzgebel and his brother Robert have produced a panoply of devices for tracking individuals over long ranges; they may be considered the creators of the "electronic house arrest" devices recently approved by the courts.[39] Schwitzgebel devices could be used for tracking all the physical and neurological signs of a "patient" within a quarter of a mile,[40] thereby lifting the distance limitations which restricted Delgado.

In Ralph Schwitzgebel's initial work, application of this technology to ESB seems to have been limited to cumbersome brain implants with protruding wires. But the technology was soon miniaturized, and a scheme was proposed whereby radio receivers would be mounted on utility poles throughout a given city, thereby providing 24-hour-a-day monitoring capability.[41] Like Heath, Schwitzgebel was much exercised about homosexuality and the use of intracranial devices to combat sexual deviation. But he has also spoken ominously about applying his devices to "socially troublesome persons"...which, of course, could mean anyone.[42]

Bryan Robinson, of the Yerkes primate laboratory has conducted fascinating simian research on the use of remote ESB in a social context. He could cause mothers to ignore their offspring, despite the babies' cries. He could turn submission into dominance, and vice-versa.[43]

Perhaps the most disturbing wanderer in this mind-field is Joseph A. Meyer, of the National Security Agency, the most formidable and secretive component of America's national security complex. Meyer has proposed implanting roughly half of all Americans arrested — not necessarily convicted — of any crime; the numbers of "subscribers" (his euphemism) would run into the tens of millions. "Subscribers" could be monitored continually by computer wherever they went. Meyer, who has carefully worked out the economics of his mass-implantation system, asserts that taxpayer liability should be reduced by forcing subscribers to "rent" the implant from the State. Implants are cheaper and more efficient than police, Meyer suggests, since the call to crime is relentless for the poor "urban dweller" — who, this spook-scientist admits in a surprisingly candid aside, is fundamentally unnecessary to a post-industrial economy. "Urban dweller" may be another of Meyer's euphemisms: He uses New York's Harlem as his model community in working out the details of his mind-management system.[44]

Abductee Implants

If we are to take seriously abductee accounts of brain implants, we must consider the possibility that the implanters, properly perceived, don't look much like the "greys" pictured on Strieber's dustjackets. Instead, the

visitors may resemble Dr. Meyer and his brethren. We would thus have an explanation for both the reports of abductee brain implants and, as we shall see, the "scoop marks" and other scars visible on other parts of the abductees' bodies. We would also have an explanation for the reports of individuals suffering personality change after contact with the UFO phenomenon.

Skeptics might counter that the time factor of UFO abductions disallows this possibility. If estimates of "missing time" are correct, the abductions rarely take longer than one-to-three hours. Wouldn't a brain surgeon, operating under less-than-ideal conditions (perhaps in a mobile unit) need more time?

No — not if we accept the claims of a Florida doctor named Daniel Man. He recently proposed a draconian solution to the overblown "missing children problem," by suggesting a program wherein America's youngsters would be implanted with tiny transmitters in order to track the children continuously. Man brags that the operation can be done right in the office — and would take less than 20 minutes.[45]

Conceivably, it might take a tad longer in the field.

A Question of Timing

The history of brain implantation, as gleaned from the open literature, is certainly disquieting. Yet this history has almost certainly been censored, and the dates manipulated in a nigh-Orwellian fashion. When dealing with research funded by the engines of national security, one can never know the true origin date of any individual scientific advance. However, if we listen carefully to the scientists who have pioneered this research, we may hear whispers, faint but unmistakable, hinting that remotely-applied ESB originated earlier than published studies would indicate.

In his autobiography The Scientist, John C. Lilly (who would later achieve a cultish renown for his work with dolphins, drugs and sensory deprivation) records a conversation he had with the director of the National Institute of Mental Health — in 1953. The director asked Lilly to brief the CIA, FBI, NSA and the various military intelligence services on his work using electrodes to stimulate directly the pleasure and pain centers of the brain. Lilly refused, noting, in his reply:

Dr. Antoine Remond, using our techniques in Paris, has demonstrated that this method of stimulation of the brain can be applied to the human without the help of the neurosurgeon; he is doing it in his office in Paris without neurosurgical supervision. This means that anybody with the proper apparatus can carry this out on a person covertly, with no external signs that electrodes have been used on that person. I feel that if this technique got into the hands of a secret agency, they would have total control over a human being and be able to change his beliefs extremely quickly, leaving little evidence of what they had done.[46]

Lilly's assertion of the moral high ground here is interesting. Despite his avowed phobia against secrecy, a careful reading of The Scientist reveals that he continued to do work useful to this country's national security apparatus. His sensory deprivation experiments expanded upon the work of ARTICHOKE's Maitland Baldwin, and even his dolphin research has — perhaps inadvertently proved useful in naval warfare.[47] One should note that Lilly's work on monkeys carried a "secret" classification, and that NIMH was a common CIA funding conduit.[48]

But the most important aspect of Lilly's statement is its date. 1953? How far back does radio-controlled ESB go? Alas, I have not yet seen Remond's work — if it is available in the open literature. In the documents made available to Marks, the earliest reference to remotely-applied ESB is a 1959 financial document pertaining to MKULTRA subproject 94. The general subproject descriptions sent to the CIA's financial department rarely contain much information, and rarely change from year to year, leaving us little idea as to when this subproject began.

Unfortunately, even the Freedom of Information Act couldn't pry loose much information on electronic mind control techniques, though we know a great deal of study was done in these areas. We have, for example, only four pages on subproject 94 — by comparison, a veritable flood of documents were released on the use of drugs in mind control. (Whenever an author tells us that MKULTRA met with little success, the reference is to drug testing.) On this point, I must criticize John Marks: His book never mentions that roughly 20-25 percent of

the MKULTRA subprojects are “dark” — i.e., little or no information was ever made available, despite lawyers and FOIA requests. Marks seems to feel that the only information worth having is the information he received. We know, however, that research into psychoelectronics was extensive; indeed, statements of project goals dating from ARTICHOKE and BLUEBIRD days clearly identify this area as a high priority. Marks’ anonymous informant, jocularly named “Deep Trance,” even told a previous interviewer that, beginning in 1963, the CIA and military’s mind control efforts strongly emphasized electronics.[49] I therefore assume — not rashly, I hope — that the “dark” MKULTRA subprojects concerned matters such as brain implants, microwaves, ESB, and related technologies.

I make an issue of the timing and secrecy involved in this research to underscore three points: 1. We can never know with certainty the true origin dates of the various brainwashing methods — often, we discover that techniques which seem impossibly futuristic actually originated in the 19th century. (Pioneering ESB research was conducted in 1898, by J.R. Ewald, professor of physiology at Straussbourg.[50]) 2. The open literature almost certainly gives a bowdlerized view of the actual research. 3. Lavishly-funded clandestine researchers — unrestrained by peer review or the need for strict controls — can achieve far more rapid progress than scientists on “the outside.”

Potential critics should keep these points in mind should they attempt to invalidate the “mind control” thesis of UFO abductions by citing an abduction account which antedates Delgado.

The Quandary

We have amply demonstrated, then, that as far back as the 1960s — and possibly earlier still — scientists have had the capability to create implants similar to those now purportedly visible in abductee MRI scans. Indeed, we have no notion just how advanced this technology has become, since the popular press stopped reporting on brain implantation in the 1970s. The research has no doubt continued, albeit in a less public fashion. In fact, scientists such as Delgado have cast their eye far beyond the implants; ESB effects can now be elicited with microwaves and other forms of electromagnetic radiation, used with and without electrodes.

So why — if we take UFO abduction accounts at face value — are the “advanced aliens” using an old technology, an Earth technology, a technology which may soon be rendered obsolescent, if it hasn’t been so rendered already? I am reminded of the charming anachronisms in the old Flash Gordon serials, where swords and spaceships clashed continually.

Do they also watch black-and-white television on Zeta Reticuli?

Remote Hypnosis

Hypnosis provides the (highly controversial) key which opens the door to many abduction accounts.[51] And obviously, if my thesis is correct, hypnosis plays a large part in the abduction itself. One thing we know with certainty: Since the earliest days of project BLUEBIRD, the CIA’s spy-chiatrists spent enormous sums mastering Mesmer’s art.

I cannot here give even a brief summary of hypnosis, nor even of the CIA’s studies in this area. (Fortunately, FOIA requests were rather more successful in shaking loose information on this topic than in the area of psychoelectronics.) Here, we will concentrate on a particularly intriguing allegation — one heard faintly, but persistently, for the past twenty years by those who would investigate the shadow side of politics.

If this allegation proves true, hypnosis is not necessarily a person-to-person affair.

The abductee — or the mind control victim — need not have physical contact with a hypnotist for hypnotic suggestion to take effect; trance could be induced, and suggestions made, via the intracerebral transmitters described above. The concept sounds like something out of Huxley’s or Orwell’s most masochistic fantasies. Yet remote hypnosis was first reported — using allegedly parapsychological means — in the early 1930s, by L.L. Vasiliev, Professor of Physiology in the University of Leningrad.[52] Later, other scientists attempted to accomplish the same goal, using less mystic means.

http://www.whale.to/b/cannon.html

Over the years, certain journalists have asserted that the CIA has mastered a technology call RHIC-EDOM. RHIC means “Radio Hypnotic Intracerebral Control.” EDOM stands for “Electronic Dissolution of Memory.” Together, these techniques can — allegedly — remotely induce hypnotic trance, deliver suggestions to the subject, and erase all memory for both the instruction period and the act which the subject is asked to perform.

RHIC uses the stimoceiver, or a microminiaturized offspring of that technology to induce a hypnotic state. Interestingly, this technique is also reputed to involve the use of intramuscular implants, a detail strikingly reminiscent of the “scars” mentioned in Budd Hopkin’s Missing Time. Apparently, these implants are stimulated to induce a post-hypnotic suggestion.

EDOM is nothing more than “missing time” itself — the erasure of memory from consciousness through the blockage of synaptic transmission in certain areas of the brain. By jamming the brain’s synapses through a surfeit of acetylcholine, neural transmission along selected pathways can be effectively stilled. According to the proponents of RHIC-EDOM, acetylcholine production can be affected by electromagnetic means. (Modern research in the psycho-physiological effects of microwaves confirm this proposition.)

Does RHIC-EDOM exist? In our discussion of Delgado’s work, I have already cited a strange little book (published in 1969) titled Were We Controlled?, written by one Lincoln Lawrence, a former FBI agent turned journalist. (The name is a pseudonym; I know his real identity.) This work deals at length with RHIC-EDOM; a careful comparison of Lawrence’s work with MKULTRA files declassified ten years later indicates a strong possibility that the writer did indeed have “inside” sources.

Here is how Lawrence describes RHIC in action:

It is the ultra-sophisticated application of post-hypnotic suggestion triggered at will [italics in original] by radio transmission. It is a recurring hypnotic state, re-induced automatically at intervals by the same radio control. An individual is brought under hypnosis. This can be done either with his knowledge — or without it by use of narco-hypnosis, which can be brought into play under many guises. He is then programmed to perform certain actions and maintain certain attitudes upon radio signal.[53]

Other authors have mentioned this technique — specifically Walter Bowart (in his book Operation Mind Control) and journalist James Moore, who, in a 1975 issue of a periodical called Modern People, claimed to have secured a 350-page manual, prepared in 1963, on RHIC-EDOM.[54] He received the manual from CIA sources, although — interestingly — the technique is said to have originated in the military.

The following quote by Moore on RHIC should prove especially intriguing to abduction researchers who have confronted odd “personality shifts” in abductees:

Medically, these radio signals are directed to certain parts of the brain. When a part of your brain receives a tiny electrical impulse from outside sources, such as vision, hearing, etc., an emotion is produced — anger at the sight of a gang of boys beating an old woman, for example. The same emotion of anger can be created by artificial radio signals sent to your brain by a controller. You could instantly feel the same white-hot anger without any apparent reason.[55]

Lawrence’s sources imparted an even more tantalizing — and frightening — revelation:

...there is already in use a small EDOM generator-transmitter which can be concealed on the body of the person. Contact with this person — a casual handshake or even just a touch — transmits a tiny electronic charge plus an ultra-sonic signal tone which for a short while will disturb the time orientation of the person affected. [56]

If RHIC-EDOM exists, it goes a long way toward providing an earthbound rationale for alien abductions — or, at least, certain aspects of them. The phenomenon of “missing time” is no longer mysterious. Abductee implants, both intracerebral and otherwise, are explained. And note the reference to a “recurring hypnotic state, re-induced automatically by the same radio command.” This situation may account for “repeater” abductees who, after their initial encounter, have regular sessions of “missing time” and abduction — even while a bed-mate sleeps undisturbed.

At present, I cannot claim conclusively that RHIC-EDOM is real. To my knowledge, the only official questioning of a CIA representative concerning these techniques occurred in 1977, during Senate hearings on CIA drug testing. Senator Richard Schweicker had the following interchange with Dr. Sidney Gottlieb, an important MKULTRA administrator:

Schweicker: Some of the projects under MKULTRA involved hypnosis, is that correct?

Gottlieb: Yes.

Schweicker: Did any of these projects involve something called radio hypnotic intracerebral control, which is a combination, as I understand it, in layman's terms, of radio transmissions and hypnosis.

Gottlieb: My answer is "No."

Schweicker: None whatsoever?

Gottlieb: Well, I am trying to be responsive to the terms that you used. As I remember it, there was a current interest, running interest, all the time in what affects people's standing in the field of radio energy have, and it could easily have been that somewhere in many projects, someone was trying to see if you could hypnotize someone easier if he was standing in a radio beam. That would seem like a reasonable piece of research to do.

Schweicker went on to mention that he had heard testimony that radar (i.e., microwaves) had been used to wipe out memory in animals; Gottlieb responded, "I can believe that, Senator."[57]

Gottlieb's blandishments do not comfort much. For one thing, the good doctor did not always provide thoroughly candid testimony. (During the same hearing he averred that 99 percent on the CIA's research had been openly published; if so, why are so many MKULTRA subprojects still "dark," and why does the Agency still go to great lengths to protect the identities of its scientists?[58]) We should also recognize that the CIA's operations are compartmentalized on a "need-to-know" basis; Gottlieb may not have had access to the information requested by Schweicker. Note that the MKULTRA rubric circumscribed Gottlieb's statement: RHIC-EDOM might have been the focus of another program. (There were several others: MKNAOMI, MKACTION, MKSEARCH, etc.) Also keep in mind the revelation by "Deep Trance" that the CIA concentrated on psychoelectronics after the termination of MKULTRA in 1963. Most significantly: RHIC-EDOM is described by both Lawrence and Moore as a product of military research; Gottlieb spoke only of matters pertaining to CIA. He may thus have spoken truthfully — at least in a strictly technical sense — while still misleading the Congressional interlocutors.

Personally, I believe that the RHIC-EDOM story deserves a great deal of further research. I find it significant that when Dr. Petter Lindstrom examined X-rays of Robert Naesland, a Swedish victim of brain-implantation, the doctor authoritatively cited Were We Controlled? in his letter of response.[59] This is the same Dr. Lindstrom noted for his pioneering use of ultrasonics in neurosurgery.[60] Lincoln Lawrence's book has received a strong endorsement indeed.

Bowart's Operation Mind Control contains a significant interview with an intelligence agent knowledgeable in these areas. Granted, the reader has every right to adopt a skeptical attitude toward information culled from anonymous sources; still, one should note that this operative's statements confirm, in pertinent part, Lincoln Lawrence's thesis.[61]

Most importantly: The open literature on brain-wave entrainment and the behavioral effects of electromagnetic radiation substantiates much of the RHIC-EDOM story — as we shall see.

That's Entrainment

Robert Anton Wilson, an author with a devoted cult following, recently has taken to promoting a new generation of "mind machines" designed to promote creativity, stimulate learning, and alter consciousness — i.e., provide a drug-less high. Interestingly, these machines can also induce "Out-of-Body-Experiences," in which the percipient mentally "travels" to another location while his body remains at rest.[62] This rapidly-

developing technology has spawned a technological equivalent to the drug culture; indeed, the aficionados of the electronic buzz even have their own magazine, Reality Hackers. I strongly suspect that we will hear much of these machines in the future.

One such device is called the “hemi-synch.” This headphone-like invention produces slightly different frequencies in each ear; the brain calculates the difference between these frequencies, resulting in a rhythm known as the “binaural beat.” The brain “entrains” itself to this beat — that is, the subject’s EEG slows down or speeds up to keep pace with its electronic running partner.[63]

The brain has a “beat” of its own.

This rhythm was first discovered in 1924 by the German psychiatrist Hans Berger, who recorded cerebral voltages as part of a telepathy study.[64] He noted two distinct frequencies: alpha (8-13 cycles per second), associated with a relaxed, alert state, and beta (14-30 cycles per second), produced during states of agitation and intense mental concentration. Later, other rhythms were noted, which are particularly important for our present purposes: theta (4-7 cycles per second), a hypnogogic state, and delta (.5 to 3.5 cycles per second), generally found in sleeping subjects.[65]

The hemi-synch — and related mind-machines — can produce alpha or theta waves, on demand, according to the operator’s wishes. A suitably-entrained brain is much more responsive to suggestion, and is even likely to experience vivid hallucinations.

I have spoken to several UFO abductees who describe a “stereophonic sound” effect — exactly similar to that produced by the hemi-synch — preceding many “encounters.” Of course, one usually administers the hemi-synch via headphones, but I see no reason why the effect cannot be transmitted via the above-described stimoceiver. Again, I remind the reader of the abductee with an implant just inside her ear canal.

There’s more than one way to entrain a brain. Michael Hutchison’s excellent book Mega Brain details the author’s personal experiences with many such devices — the Alpha-stim, TENS, the Synchro-energizer, Tranquilite, etc. He recounts dazzling, Dali-esque hallucinations, as a result of using this mind-expanding technology; moreover, he offers a seductive argument that these devices may represent a true breakthrough in consciousness-control, thereby fulfilling the dashed dream of the hallucinogenic ’60s.

I wish to avoid a knee-jerk Luddite response to these fascinating wonder-boxes. At the same time, I recognize the dangers involved. What about the possibility of an outside operator literally “changing our minds” by altering our brainwaves without our knowledge or permission? If these machines can induce a hypnotic state, what’s to stop a skilled hypnotist from making use of this state?

Granted, most of these devices require some physical interaction with the subject. But a tool called the Bio-Pacer can, according to its manufacturer, produce a number of mood altering frequencies — without attachment to the subject. Indeed, the Bio-Pacer III (a high-powered version) can affect an entire room. This device costs $275, according to the most recent price sheet available.[66] What sort of machine might $27,500 buy? Or $275,000? What effects, what ranges might a million-dollar machine be capable of?

The military certainly has that sort of money.

And they’re certainly interested in this sort of technology, according to Michael Hutchison. His interview with an informant named Joseph Light elicited some particularly provocative revelations. According to Light:

There are important elements in the scientific community, powerful people, who are very much interested in these areas...but they have to keep most of their work secret. Because as soon as they start to publish some of these sensitive things, they have problems in their lives. You see, they work on research grants, and if you follow the research being done, you find that as soon as these scientists publish something about this, their research funds are cut off. There are areas in bioelectric research where very simple techniques and devices can have mind-boggling effects. Conceivably, if you have a crazed person with a bit of a technical background, he can do a lot of damage.[67]

http://www.whale.to/b/cannon.html

This last statement is particularly evocative. In 1984, a violent neo-Nazi group called The Order (responsible for the murder of talk-show host Alan Berg) established contact with two government scientists engaged in clandestine research to project chemical imbalances and render targeted individuals docile via certain frequencies of electronic waves. For $100,000 the scientists were willing to deliver this information.[68]

Thus, at least one group of crazed individuals almost got the goods.

Wave Your Brain Goodbye

Every Senator and Congressional representative has a "wavie" file. So do many state representatives. Wavies have even pled their case to private institutions such as the Christic Institute.[69]

And who are the wavies?

They claim to be victims of clandestine bombardment with non-ionizing radiation — or microwaves. They report sudden changes in psychological states, alteration of sleep patterns, intracerebral voices and other sounds, and physiological effects. Most people never realize how many wavies there are in this country. I've spoken to a number of wavies myself.

Are these troubled individuals seeking an exterior rationale for their mental problems? Maybe. Indeed, I'm sure that such is the case in many instances. But the fact is that the literature on the behavioral effects of microwaves, extra-low-frequencies (ELF) and ultra-sonics is such that we cannot blithely dismiss all such claims.

For decades, American science and industry tried to convince the population that microwaves could have no adverse effects on human beings at sub-thermal levels — in other words, the attitude was, "If it can't burn you, it can't hurt you." This approach became increasingly difficult to defend as reports mounted of microwave-induced physiological effects. Technicians described "hearing" certain radar installations; users of radar telescopes began developing cataracts at an appallingly high rate.[70] The Soviets had long recognized the strange and sometimes subtle effects of these radio frequencies, which is why their exposure standards have always been much stricter.

Soviet microwave bombardment of the U.S. Embassy in Moscow prompted the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency's Project PANDORA (later renamed), whose ostensible goal was to determine whether these pulsations (reportedly 10 cycles per second, which puts them in the alpha range) could be used for the purposes of mind control. I suspect that the "war on Tchaikovsky Street," as I call it,[71] was used, at least in part, as a cover story for DARPA mind control research, and that the stories floated in the news (via, for example, Jack Anderson's column) about Soviet remote brainwashing served the same propaganda purposes as did the bleatings of Edward Hunter during the 1950s.[72]

What can low-level microwaves do to the mind?

According to a DIA report released under the Freedom of Information Act,[73] microwaves can induce metabolic changes, alter brain functions, and disrupt behavior patterns. PANDORA discovered that pulsed microwaves can create leaks in the blood/brain barrier, induce heart seizures, and create behavioral disorganization.[74] In 1970, a RAND Corporation scientist reported that microwaves could be used to promote insomnia, fatigue, irritability, memory loss, and hallucinations.[75]

Perhaps the most significant work in this area has been produced by Dr. W. Ross Adey at the University of Southern California. He determined that behavior and emotional states can be altered without electrodes — simply by placing the subject in an electromagnetic field. By directing a carrier frequency to stimulate the brain and using amplitude modulation to "shape" the wave into a mimicry of a desired EEG frequency, he was able to impose a 4.5 cps theta rhythm on his subjects — a frequency which he previously measured in the hippocampus during avoidance learning. Thus, he could externally condition the mind towards an aversive reaction.[76] (Adey has also done extensive work on the use of electrodes in animals.[77]) According to another prominent microwave scientist, Allen Frey, other frequencies could — in animal studies — induce docility.[78]

The controversial researcher Andrijah Puharich asserts that “a weak (1 mW) 4 Hz magnetic sine wave will modify human brain waves in 6 to 10 seconds. The psychological effects of a 4 Hz sine magnetic wave are negative — causing dizziness, nausea, headache, and can lead to vomiting.” Conversely, an 8 Hz magnetic sine wave has beneficial effects.[79] Though some writers question Puharich’s integrity (perhaps correctly, considering his involvement in the confused tale of Uri Geller), his claims here seem in line with the findings of less-flamboyant experimenters.

As investigative journalist Anne Keeler writes:

Specific frequencies at low intensities can predictably influence sensory processes... pleasantness-unpleasantness, strain-relaxation, and excitement-quiescence can be created with the fields. Negative feelings and avoidance are strong biological phenomena and relate to survival. Feelings are the true basis of much “decision-making” and often occur as subthreshold impressions... Ideas including names [my italics] can be synchronized with the feelings that the fields induce.[80]

Adey and compatriots have compiled an entire library of frequencies and pulsation rates which can affect the mind and nervous system. Some of these effects can be extremely bizarre. For example, engineer Tom Jarski, in an attempt to replicate the seminal work of F. Cazamalli, found that a particular frequency caused a ringing sensation in the ears of his subjects — who felt strangely compelled to bite the experimenters![81] On the other hand, the diet-conscious may be intrigued by the finding that rats exposed to ELF (extra-low-frequency) waves failed to gain weight normally.[82]

For our present purposes, the most significant electromagnetic research findings concern microwave signals modulated by hypnoidal EEG frequencies. Microwaves can act much like the “hemi-synch” device previously described — that is, they can entrain the brain to theta rhythms.[83] I need not emphasize the implications of remotely synchronizing the brain to resonate at a frequency conducive to sleep, or to hypnosis.

Trance may be remotely induced — but can it be directed? Yes. Recall the intracerebral voices mentioned earlier in our discussion of Delgado. The same effect can be produced by “the wave.” Frey demonstrated in the early 1960s that microwaves could produce booming, hissing, buzzing, and other intracerebral static (this phenomenon is now called “the Frey effect”); in 1973, Dr. Joseph Sharp, of the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research, expanded on Frey’s work in an experiment where the subject — in this case, Sharp himself — “heard” and understood spoken words delivered via a pulsed-microwave analog of the speaker’s sound vibrations.[84]

Dr. Robert Becker comments that “Such a device has obvious applications in covert operations designed to drive a target crazy with ‘voices’ or deliver undetectable instructions to a programmed assassin.”[85] In other words, we now have, at the push of a button, the technology either to inflict an electronic Gaslight — or to create a true Manchurian Candidate. Indeed, the former capability could effectively disguise the latter. Who will listen to the victims, when the electronically-induced hallucinations they recount exactly parallel the classical signals of paranoid schizophrenia and/or temporal lobe epilepsy?

Perhaps the most ominous revelations, however, concern the mysterious work of J.F. Schapitz, who in 1974 filed a plan to explore the interaction of radio frequencies and hypnosis. He proposed the following:

In this investigation it will be shown that the spoken word of the hypnotist may be conveyed by modulated electromagnetic energy directly into the subconscious parts of the human brain [my italics] — i.e., without employing any technical devices for receiving or transcoding the messages and without the person exposed to such influence having a chance to control the information input consciously.

He outlined an experiment, innocent in its immediate effects yet chilling in its implications, whereby subjects would be implanted with the subconscious suggestion to leave the lab and buy a particular item; this action would be triggered by a certain cue word or action. Schapitz felt certain that the subjects would rationalize the behavior — in other words, the subject would seize upon any excuse, however thin, to chalk up his actions to the working of free will.[86] His instincts on this latter point coalesce perfectly with findings of professional hypnotists.[87]

Schapitz's work was funded by the Department of Defense. Despite FOIA requests, the results have never been publicly revealed.[88]

Final Thoughts on "The Wave"

I must again offer a caveat about possible disparities between the "official" record of electromagnetism's psychological effects and the hidden history. Once more, we face a question of timing. How long ago did this research really begin?

In the early years of this century, Nikola Tesla seems to have stumbled upon certain of the behavioral effects of electromagnetic exposure.[89] Cazamalli, mentioned earlier, conducted his studies in the 1930s. In 1934, E.L. Chaffe and R.U. Light published a paper on "A Method for the Remote Control of Electrical Stimulation of the Nervous System."[90] From the very beginning of their work with microwaves, the Soviets explored the more subtle physiological effects of electromagnetism — and despite the bleatings of certain right-wing alarmists[91] that an "electromagnetic gap" separates us from Soviet advances, East European literature in this area has been closely monitored for decades by the West. ARTICHOKE/BLUEBIRD project outlines, dating from the early 1950s, prominently mention the need to explore all possible uses of the electromagnetic spectrum.

Another point worth mentioning concerns the combination of EMR and miniature brain electrodes. The father of the stimoceiver, Dr. J.M.R. Delgado, has recently conducted experiments in which monkeys are exposed to electromagnetic fields, thereby eliciting a wide range of behavioral effects — one monkey might fly into a volcanic rage while, just a few feet away, his simian partner begins to nod off. Fascinatingly, when monkeys with brain implants felt "the wave," the effects were greatly intensified. Apparently, these tiny electrodes can act as an amplifier of the electromagnetic effect.[92]

This last point is important to our "alien abduction" thesis. Critics might counter that any burst of microwave energy powerful enough to have truly remote effects would probably also create a thermal reaction. That is, if a clandestine operator propagated a "wave" from outside an abductee's bedroom (say, from a low-flying helicopter), or from a truck travelling alongside the subject's car), the power necessary to do the job might be such that the microwave would cook the target before it got a chance to launder his thoughts. Our abductee would end up like the victim of the microwave "hit" in the finale of Jerzy Kozinsky's Cockpit.

It's a fair criticism. But Delgado's work may give us our solution. Once an abductee has been implanted — and if we are to trust hypnotic regression accounts of abductees at all, the first implanting session may occur in childhood — the chip-in-the-brain would act as an intensifier of the signal. Such an individual could have any number of "UFO" experiences while his or her bed partner dozes comfortably.

Furthermore, recent reports indicate that a "waver" can achieve pinpoint accuracy without the use of Delgado-style implants. In 1985, volunteers at the Midwest Research Institute in Kansas City, Missouri, were exposed to microwave beams as part of an experiment sponsored by the Department of Energy and the New York State Department of Health. As The Arizona Republic[93] described the experiment, "A matched control group sat in the same room without being bombarded by non-ionizing radiation." [My italics.] Apparently, one can focus "the wave" quite narrowly — a fact which has wide implications for abductees.

III. Applications

So we now have some idea of the tools available to the "spy-chiatrists." How have these tools been used?

This question necessarily involves some detective work. The Central Intelligence Agency, under duress, provided some, though not enough, documentation of its efforts to commandeer "the space between our ears." We know that these efforts were extensive, long-term, and at least partially successful. We know also that these experiments used human subjects. But who? When?

One paradox of this line of inquiry is that, for many readers, the victims elicit sympathy only insofar as they remain anonymous. Intellectually, we realize that MKULTRA and its allied projects must have affected hundreds, probably thousands, of individuals. Yet we react with deep suspicion whenever one of these

individuals steps forward and identifies himself, or whenever an independent investigator argues that mind control has directed some newsworthy person's otherwise inexplicable actions. Where, the skeptic may rightfully ask, is the documentation supporting such accusations? Most of the MKULTRA "paper trail" was (allegedly) burnt at Richard Helms' order; what's left has been censored, leaving black ink smudges wherever the names originally appeared. Claimed mind control victims can, for the most part, only give us testimony — and how reliable can such testimony be, especially in light of the fact that one purpose of MKULTRA was to induce insanity? Anyone asserting that he was victimized by the program might well be seeking an extrinsic excuse for his own psychopathology. If you say that you are a manufactured madman, you were probably mad to begin with: Catch 22.

When John Marks wrote The Search for the "Manchurian Candidate" he received numerous letters from people insisting that they had been drugged, "waved," or otherwise abused by the CIA or the military. Most of these communications went directly into his crank file. Perhaps many deserved that destination; I know of at least one that did not.[94]

Marks did, however, devote much attention to Val Orlikov, a former "patient" of perhaps the most notorious figure in the annals of American medical crime: Dr. Ewen Cameron, a CIA-funded scientist heading the Allan Memorial Institute at McGill University, Montreal, Canada. Cameron, a highly-respected mental health researcher,[95] experimented with a technique he called "psychic driving," a brainwashing program which involved inflicting upon a subject an endless tape loop blaring selected messages, 16-to-24 hours a day, combined with massive electroshock and LSD. The project's "guinea pigs" were patients who had come to Allan Memorial with relatively minor psychological complaints. Cameron's experiments failed and his theories were discredited, which may explain why the CIA and its apologists now feel relatively comfortable discussing the Frankensteinian efforts at Allan Memorial, as opposed to more successful work elsewhere.

Orlikov's testimony has received much respectful attention from those writers who have examined MKULTRA, and correctly so. When I studied the files at the National Security Archives, I was particularly keen to read her original letters to John Marks, for these pages had led to the unmasking of an especially heinous CIA project. The letters, interestingly enough, proved just as vague, disjointed, and bizarre as similar correspondence which researchers routinely dismiss. Orlikov can't be blamed for the hazy nature of her recollections; a certain amount of fog is to be expected, given the nature of the crime perpetrated against her. The important point is that her story, ultimately, was found to be true. All of which leads me to wonder: Why did her claims prompt investigation when those of others prompt only dismissal? Perhaps the answer lies in the fact that Orlikov's husband became a Canadian Member of Parliament. Any victims of CIA experimentation who wish to be taken seriously ought, perhaps, first make sure to marry well.

Of course, we can easily forgive previous writers and readers whose researches into MKULTRA have been biased in favor of complacency.[96] But we can't let this natural prejudice cripple our present investigation. Let us examine, then, a few of the "horror stories" from the mind control literature and highlight possible correlations to abductee testimony.

Palle Hardrup's "Guardian Angel"

As mentioned previously, I have not delved much into the subject of hypnosis in this paper — primarily because of space and time limitations, but also because discussions of the possibilities of hypnosis per se tend to cloud the issue of its use in conjunction with the above-mentioned electronic techniques. Obviously, however, hypnosis is a major weapon in the mind controller's armament; in a forthcoming full-length work, I intend to deal with this subject at much greater length.

Needless to say, one of the primary objectives of MKULTRA and related projects was to determine whether one could hypnotically induce someone to commit an anti-social act. This possibility remains one of the most hotly-debated issues in hypnosis, for conventional wisdom asserts that no individual can be hypnotized to commit an action which violates his interior moral code. Martin Orne, editor of the prestigious International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis agrees with this axiom,[97] and he is in a position to codify much of the established view on this topic. Orne, however, is a veteran of MKULTRA, and furthermore seems to have lied — at least in his original communications — to author John Marks about his witting involvement with subproject 84.[98] While I respect much of Orne's ground-breaking work, his pronouncements do not hold,

for this layman, an Olympian unassailability.

To be sure, many other hypnosis experts, untainted by Company connections, also discount the possibility that anti-social actions can be induced. But a number of highly-experienced professionals — including Milton Kline, William Kroger, George Estabrooks, John Watkins, and Herbert Spiegel — have argued that such actions can, at least to some degree, be elicited by an outside manipulator.

Occasionally, claims of hypnotically-induced anti-social behavior find their way into the courtroom; one such case, which led to the incarceration of the hypnotist, was the Palle Hardrup affair. This incident occurred in Denmark in 1951.[99] Palle Hardrup robbed a bank, killing a guard in the process, and later claimed that he had been instructed to do so by the hypnotist Bjorn Nielsen. Nielsen eventually confessed to having engineered the crime as a test of his hypnotic abilities.

The most significant aspect of this incident concerns the "pose" Nielsen adopted to work his malicious designs. During the hypnosis sessions, Nielsen hypnotically suggested that he was Hardrup's "guardian angel," represented by the letter X. Hardrup testified that "There is another room next door where Nielsen and I go and talk on our own. It is there that my guardian spirit usually comes and talks to me. Nielsen says that X has a task for me."

One of these tasks was arranging for Hardrup's girlfriend to have sex with the hypnotist. The other tasks, he mentioned, included robbery and murder. Nielsen convinced his victim that "X" wanted the robbery funds to be used for worthwhile political goals. The end, Hardrup was told, justified the means.

Compare this scenario to that encountered in the typical contactee case, in which alien "guardians" convince their victims/subjects that the encounter will eventually serve some unspecified "higher purpose." Indeed, in my interviews with abductees who have established a "long-term" relationship with their visitors, I have found that some of them originally believed themselves in contact with Hardrup-like angelic guardians. Only in recent years was the "angel" pose discarded and the true "alien" form revealed.

Thus we have one possible means of overcoming the proposition that hypnosis cannot induce anti-social behavior. If a hypnotist lacks scruples, and has access to a particularly susceptible subject, he can induce a misperceived reality. Actions which we would abhor in an everyday context become acceptable in specialized circumstances: A citizen who could never commit murder on a suburban street might, if drafted into an army, kill on the field of battle. In hypnosis, the mind becomes that battlefield. In the words of Dr. John Watkins,

We behave on the basis of our perceptions. If our perceptions of a situation can be altered so as to cause us to misconstrue it, or to develop a false belief, then our behavior in relation to it will be drastically altered. It is precisely in the area of changing perceptions that the hypnotic modality demonstrates its most powerful effects. Hallucinations both under hypnosis, and posthypnotic, can easily be induced in the suggestible subject. He can be made to ignore painful stimuli, be apparently unable to hear loud sounds, and "see" individuals who are not present [my italics]. Moreover, attitudes and beliefs can be initiated in him which are quite abnormal and often contrary to those which he previously held.[100]

If traditional hypnosis, unaided, can achieve such changes in perception, one can only imagine the possibilities inherent in the combination of hypnotic techniques with the psychoelectronic research previously described.

Scientists such as Orne and Milton Erickson[101] have taken issue with Watkins' assertions. But the Hardrup case would appear to bear Watkins out. If someone can be convinced that he, like Jeanne D'Arc, acts under the influence of a supernatural higher power, then previously unthinkable capabilities may be evinced and "impossible" actions carried forth. Indeed, when we consider the extreme personality changes — and occasionally, the heinous actions — elicited by leaders of certain cults, and occult groups,[102] we understand the desirability of installing a hypnotic "cover story" within a supernatural matrix. People will do for God — or the Devil, or the Space Brothers — what they would not do otherwise.

The date of the Hardrup affair corresponds to the institution of BLUEBIRD/ ARTICHOKE; it doesn't require much imagination to see how this case could have served as a model to the scientists researching those

http://www.whale.to/b/cannon.html

and subsequent projects.

Screen Memory

According to declassified documents in the Marks files, a major difficulty faced by the MKULTRA researchers concerned the "disposal problem." What to do with the victims of CIA-sponsored electroshock, hypnosis, and drug experimentation? The Company resorted to distressing, but characteristic, tactics: They disposed of their human guinea pigs by incarcerating them in insane asylums, by performing icepick lobotomies, and by ordering "executive actions."[103]

A more sophisticated solution had to be found. One of the goals of the CIA's mind control efforts was the erasure of memory via hypnosis (and drugs, electronics, lobotomies, etc.); not only would this hide what occurred during the experimental indoctrination/programming sessions, it would prove useful in the field. "Amnesia was a big goal," confirms Victor Marchetti, who points out its usefulness in dealing with contract agents: "After you've done it, the agent doesn't even know what he's done...you send him in, he does the job. When he comes out, you clean his head out."[104]

The big problem: Despite hypnotically-induced amnesia, there would be memory leaks — snippets of the repressed material would arise spontaneously, in dreams, as flashbacks, etc. A proposed solution: give the subject a "screen memory," a false story; thus, even if he starts to recall the material, he will recall it incorrectly.

Even the conservative Dr. Orne notes that:

A S [subject] who is able to develop good posthypnotic amnesia will also respond to suggestions to remember events which did not actually occur. On awakening, he will fail to recall the real events of the trance and will instead recall the suggested events. If anything, this phenomenon is easier to produce than total amnesia, perhaps because it eliminates the subjective feeling of an empty space in memory.[105]

Not only would the screen memories fill in the uncomfortable blanks in the subjects' recollection, they would protect against revelation. One fear of the MKULTRA scientists was that a hypno-programmed individual used as, say, a courier, could be un-programmed by another hypnotist, perhaps working for the enemy. Thus, the MKULTRA scientists decided to instill multiple personalities — multiple cover stories, if you will — to confuse any "unauthorized" hypnotist.[106]

One case using this technique centered on an assassin named Luis Castillo, who, after his capture in the Philippines, was extensively de-briefed and studied by experts in the employ of the National Bureau of Investigation, that country's equivalent to our FBI. Castillo was discovered to have had at least four separate personalities hypnotically instilled; each personality could be triggered by a specific cue. In one state, he claimed to be Sgt. Manuel Angel Ramirez, of the Strategic Air Tactical Command in South Vietnam; supposedly, "Ramirez" was the illegitimate son of a certain pipe-smoking, highly-placed CIA official whose initials were A.D.[107] Another personality claimed to be one of John F. Kennedy's assassins.

The main hypnotist involved with this case labelled these hypnotic alter-egos "Zombie states." The report on the case stated that "The Zombie phenomenon referred to here is a somnambulistic behavior displayed by the subject in a conditioned response to a series of words, phrases, and statements, apparently unknown to the subject during his normal waking state."

Upon Castillo's repatriation to the United States, the FBI claimed that he had fabricated the story. In his book Operation Mind Control, Walter Bowart makes a convincing case against the FBI's claims. Certainly, many aspects of the Castillo affair argue for his sincerity — including his hypnotically-induced insensitivity to pain,[108] his maintenance of the story (or stories) even when severely inebriated, and his apparently programmed suicide attempts.

If Castillo told the truth, as I believe he did, then he manifested both hypnotically-induced multiple personality and pseudomemory. The former remains controversial; the latter has been repeatedly replicated in experimental situations.[109]

This point is vitally important for students of the abduction phenomenon. We cannot assume the accuracy of abduction descriptions given during subsequent hypnotic regression. Moreover, we cannot even assume the accuracy of spontaneously-arising recollections (i.e., abduction memories not elicited through hypnotic regression). Indeed, responsible skeptics have argued that hypnotic regression may prove inadvertently harmful, in that it may lock in place a false remembrance. (Note, however, that other psychiatric professionals consider hypnotic regression the best technique, however flawed, in unlocking amnesia.[110] For my part, I maintain an ambivalent and cautious attitude toward the use of hypnosis in abductee work.)

Granted, it is all too easy for the debunkers to cry "confabulation" to dismiss hypnotic testimony which does not conform to our preconceptions about the possible; I do not intend to make this same error. Whenever skeptics offer the phenomenon of pseudomemory to rationalize abduction claims, they cite experimental situations in which pseudomemory was originally created by a hypnotist.[111] These experiments can not be cited as proof that an individual abductee spontaneously conjured up a fantasy (which just happens to correspond to the details of hundreds of similar "fantasies"). Rather, laboratory studies of pseudomemory creation prove my point: Pseudomemory can be induced by previous hypnosis.[112]

In other words, an abductee may talk of aliens — when the reality was something else entirely.

In correspondence with me, a noted abduction researcher noted an instance in which an abductee recounted seeing a helicopter during his experience; as the abductee testimony progressed, the helicopter turned into a UFO. During one of the (quite few) regression sessions I attended, I heard an exactly similar narrative. Hopkins would argue that the helicopter was a "screen memory" hiding the awful reality of the UFO encounter. But does Occam's razor really cut that way? Shouldn't we also consider the possibility that the object in question really was a helicopter — which the abductee was instructed to recall as a UFO?

The Super Spy

Among the released BLUEBIRD/ARTICHOKE/MKULTRA papers was the following handwritten memorandum, unsigned and undated:

I have developed a technic which is safe and secure (free from international censorship). It has to do with the conditioning of our own people. I can accomplish this as a one-man job.

The method is the production of hypnosis by means of simple oral medication. Then (with no further medication) the hypnosis is re-enforced daily during the following three or four days.

Each individual is conditioned against revealing any information to an enemy, even though subjected to hypnosis or drugging. If preferable, he may be conditioned to give false information rather than no information.

In the margin of this document, one of Marks' assistants wrote, "Is this Wendt?" The reference here is to G. Richard Wendt, a professor employed by project CHATTER who, in 1951, led both his Naval employers and the CIA on a mind control merry-goose-chase, when an experiment similar to that described above failed to produce results.[113] Even if the above memorandum does describe an operational failure (and the tactics described in this memo do not seem very feasible to me), we should not rest complacent. We now know that, in at least one case, more sophisticated techniques made the above scenario a reality.

I refer to the case of Candy Jones.

Her story has filled at least one book[114] and ought, one day, to give rise to another. Obviously, I cannot here give all the details of this fascinating and frightening narrative. But a precis is mandatory.

Ms. Jones (born Jessica Wilcox) achieved star status as a model during World War II, and later established her own modelling agency. An FBI man requested her to allow her place of business to be used as a "mail drop" for the Bureau and "another government agency" (presumably, the CIA); Candy, deeply patriotic, accepted the proposition gladly. Toiling on the fringes of the clandestine world, Candy eventually came into contact with a "Dr. Gilbert Jensen," who worked, in turn, with a "Dr. Marshall Burger." (Both names are pseudonyms.) Unknown to her, these doctors had been employed as "spy-chiatrists" by the CIA. Using a job interview as a

cover, Jensen induced hypnosis, found Candy to be a particularly responsive subject — and proceeded to use her as other scientists would use a rhesus monkey. She became a test subject for the CIA's mind control program.

Her job — insofar as it is known — was to provide a clandestine courier service.[115] Estabrooks had outlined the basic idea years earlier: Induce hypnosis via a disguised technique, give the messenger information to memorize, hypnotically "erase" the message from conscious memory, and install a post-hypnotic suggestion that the message (now buried within the subconscious) will be brought forth only upon a specific cue. If the hypnotist can create such a courier, ultra-security can be guaranteed; even torture won't cause the messenger to tell what he knows — because he doesn't know that he knows it.[116] According to the highly respected Dr. Milton Kline, "Evidence really does exist that has not been published" proving that Estabrooks' perfect secret agent could be successfully evoked.[117]

Candy was one such success story. Success, in this context, means that she could be — and was — brutally tortured and abused while running assignments for the CIA. All the MKULTRA toys were brought into play: hypnosis, drugs, conditioning — and electronics. Using these devices, Jensen and Burger managed to:

— install a "duplicate personality,"

— create amnesia of both the programming sessions and the field assignments,

— turn Candy into a vicious, hate-mongering bigot, the better to isolate her from the rest of humanity (previously, her associates considered her noteworthy for her racial tolerance; her modelling agency was one of the first to break the color barrier), and

— program her to commit suicide at the end of her usefulness to the agency.

The programming techniques used on her were flawed. She breached security when she married famed New York radio personality John Nebel,[118] who, using hypnotic regression, elicited the long-repressed truth. Eventually, the "Other Candy" was bade farewell, and the programming broken.

Skeptics might find Candy's story as incredible as the abduction accounts — after all, an amateur had conducted her hypnotic regression, and the possibility of confabulation always lurks. Nevertheless, I feel that the veracity of her narrative has been established beyond reasonable doubt. In her hypnotic regression sessions, she recalled being programmed at a government-connected institute in northern California — which, as John Marks' investigators later proved, was indeed heavily involved with government-funded brainwashing research.[119] Marks himself believes Candy's story — not least, because the details of the programming methods used on her were substantiated by documents released after her book was published.[120] Interviews with Milton Kline, Dr. Frances Jakes, John Watkins and others provided the testimony that the programming of Candy Jones was feasible — and Deep Trance substantiated the story.[121]

Recently, the case has received important "indirect" confirmation: Investigators interested in follow-up research have filed FOIA requests with the CIA for all papers relating to Candy Jones. The agency admits that it has a substantial file on her, but refuses to release any part of it. If her tale is false, then why would the CIA be so reluctant to deliver the information? Indeed, why would they have a file in the first place?[122]

The final confirmation of Candy's tale requires a revelation — one which I make with some trepidation, even though the individual named is dead.

"Marshall Burger" was really Dr. William Kroger.[123]

Kroger, long associated with the espionage establishment, had written the following in 1963:

"...a good subject can be hypnotized to deliver secret information. The memory of this message could be covered by an artificially-induced amnesia. In the event that he should be captured, he naturally could not remember that he had ever been given the message...however, since he had been given a post-hypnotic suggestion, the message would be subject to recall through a specific cue."[124]

If Candy confabulated her story, why did she name this particular scientist, who, writing theoretically in 1963, predicted the subsequent events in her life?[125]

After l'Affair Jones, Kroger transferred his base of operations to UCLA — specifically, to the Neuropsychiatric Institute run by Dr. Louis Jolyon West, an MKULTRA veteran. There he wrote Hypnosis and Behavior Modification,[126] with a preface by Martin Orne (another MKULTRA veteran) and H.J. Eysenck (still another MKULTRA veteran). The finale of this opus contains chilling hints of the possibilities inherent in combining hypnosis with ESB, implants, and conditioning — though Kroger is careful to point out that "we are not concerned that man might be conditioned by rewards and punishments through electronic brain stimulation to be controlled like robots."[127] He may not be concerned — but perhaps we ought to be.

The control of Candy Jones gives us much information useful to our "alien abduction" hypothesis.

1. Her torture sessions — inflicted during her programming by her CIA masters, and on missions by as-yet mysterious persons — seem strikingly like the otherwise senselessly painful "examinations" allegedly conducted aboard alien spacecraft.

2. Her personality shifts roughly parallel those experienced by certain UFO abductees.

3. Despite her brutalization, she remained "loyal" to Drs. Jensen and Burger. This bewildering behavior reminds me of my first abductee interviews, during which I heard ghastly descriptions of UFO torture sessions — followed by protestations of limitless love for the alien pain-mongers.

4. Like many abductees, Candy had to attend regular "conditioning" sessions. Repeated exposure to the programming is necessary to effect continuous control.

5. To maintain their hammerlock on her mind, Candy's handlers programmed her to remain isolated. Specifically, they instilled a deep paranoia toward other human beings; "outsiders" were probable enemies, out to use or abuse her. I have seen this pattern consistently in my own work with abductees.[128] Skeptics would argue that unreasonable abductee fears probably indicate paranoid schizophrenia — one symptom of which can, indeed, be hallucinatory experiences. But most abductees are easily hypnotized, while paranoid schizophrenics are extremely difficult to "put under," according to Dr. Edward Simpson-Kallas, a psychiatrist with wide experience in the area of forensic hypnosis.[129] If, however, those unreasonable fears had been hypnotically induced, the contradiction is resolved.

6. Candy was the product of an unhappy childhood, hence her propensity toward multiple personality.[130] Many of the "repeater" abductees I have interviewed had similarly depressing family histories.[131]

7. The story of Candy Jones also has what we might call a "negative relevance" to the abduction accounts. Because the Controllers did not establish a hypnotic cover story, or pseudomemory, the true facts of the case managed to percolate into her conscious mind. No matter how thorough the post-hypnotic amnesia, leaks will occur — hence the need for a false memory, to fill the gap of recollection. The CIA learns from its mistakes. Candy's hypno-programming broke down in early 1973 — the year the "alien disguise" became (if my hypothesis proves correct) standard operating procedure.[132] (Milton Kline accepted the Candy Jones story, but considered the job amateurish and inconsistent with the best work done at that time.[133] Perhaps the major fault was the lack of a pseudomemory cover story?)

Bases of Suspicion

"Underground base" rumors are as hot as jalapenos in the UFO field right now, and several of these stories involve abductions.

For example, a sideshow of the famous Bentwaters UFO case involves the abduction of an airman named Larry Warren to an underground cavity beneath the military base. There, while in what he later described as "a bit of a drugged state," he saw aliens and human beings — military figures — working side-by-side.[134]

I have spoken to another abductee, Nancy Wright, who was allegedly taken to an underground chamber ten

miles north of Edwards AFB, California. As this was a multiple-witness event, and Ms. Wright has not attempted to capitalize on the story for financial gain, I tend to credit her story.[135] According to abduction researcher Miranda Parks, an elderly couple living in the vicinity was also abducted in an exactly similar fashion.[136]

In 1979, Paul Bennewitz and Leo Sprinkle researched a particularly controversial abduction involving a young woman (name unrevealed) who was apparently taken to a facility where aliens processed fluids and body parts from a cattle mutilation. This investigation seems to have led to the government harassment of Bennewitz, in which some form of mind control (or, as I have previously referred to it, "electronic Gaslight") may have played a part.[137]

How do we account for these tales of alleged alien skullduggery carried out in conjunction with the military? I, for one, cannot credit the generally-unsubstantiated tales of "cosmic conspiracy" now promulgated by ex-intelligence agents such as John Lear and William Cooper. While I cannot assert insincerity on the part of these men, I often wonder if they have been used as conduits — witting or unwitting — in a sophisticated disinformation scheme.

A simpler, though no less chilling, explanation for the "base" abductions may be found in the story of Dr. Louis Jolyon West, now notorious for his participation in MKULTRA experiments with LSD.[138] Inspired by Violence and the Brain (a book by Drs. Frank Ervin and Vernon H. Mark which ascribed inner city turmoil to a "genetic defect" within rebellious blacks), West proposed, in 1973, a Center for the Study and Reduction of Violence, where potentially violent individuals could be dealt with prophylactically.

And who were these individuals? According to West's proposal, the noteworthy factors indicating a violent predisposition were "sex (male), age (youthful), ethnicity (black) and urbanicity." How to deal with them? "...by implanting tiny electrodes deep within the brain, electrical activity can be followed in areas that cannot be measured from the surface of the scalp...it is even possible to record bioelectrical changes in the brains of freely-moving subjects, through the use of remote monitoring techniques..." By monitoring the subjects' EEGs remotely, potentially violent episodes could be identified.

For our purposes, the most significant aspect of this proposal had to do with location. In a secret communication to Dr. J.M. Stubblebine, director of the California State Department of Health (fortunately, this missive was "leaked" to the public), West disclosed that he intended to house his Center in an abandoned Nike missile base, whose location was accessible yet relatively remote. "The site is securely fenced," West wrote. "Comparative studies could be carried out there, in an isolated but convenient location, of experimental model programs, for the alteration of undesirable behavior."[139]

Public outcry stopped these plans. But was this scheme truly eliminated? Or was it merely modified, stripped (temporarily) of its overtly racial overtones and relocated to some less-accessible spot?

One thing is certain: A CIA "spy-chiatrist" favored secret behavior control experimentation in a remote military installation. Perhaps someone within the espionage establishment's mind-modification divisions still thinks highly of the idea. If so, the disposal problem would once again rear its ugly head, should "visitors" to these installations ever reappear in outside society. Again, a hypno-programmed cover story — the less believable, the better — would prove invaluable.

The Scandinavian Connection

Many books have been written about abductees, yet few exist about the victims of mind control. I cannot understand this situation; the reality of UFOs is still controversial, yet the existence of mind control was verified in two (heavily compromised) congressional investigations and in thousands of FOIA documents. Nevertheless, the abductees find many a sympathetic ear, while those few who dare to proclaim themselves the victims of known government programs rarely find anyone to hear them out. Our prejudices on this score are regrettable, for if we listened to the "controllees" we would hear many details strikingly similar to those mentioned by UFO abductees.

Two cases in point: Martti Koski and Robert Naeslund.

Koski, a Finnish citizen, claims to have been a victim of mind control experimentation while visiting Canada. Shortly after his experience began, he attempted to broadcast his situation to the world and draw attention to his plight. Few listened. Many of his details were bizarre, and not being a native speaker of English, he could not express himself convincingly to those he approached for help. Yet many aspects of his story correspond closely to known details of MKULTRA and related programs.

Naeslund, a Swedish citizen, tells a similar story. Moreover, his claims were backed by special evidence: X-rays revealed an implant in his brain. Naeslund actually went to the extreme of having his implant tested by electronic technicians employed by Hewlett-Packard. A Greek surgeon performed the necessary trepanation to remove the device.

Many aspects of the Koski and Naeslund stories correspond to my hypothesis. Koski, for example, was at one point told that the doctors afflicting him were actually "aliens from Sirius." At another point, he was led to believe that he was under the direction of "the Lord." (As I previously indicated, manipulation of religious imagery could help induce anti-social behavior; the subject's super-ego can be nullified if he believes that he follows commands from on high. Such manipulation may explain the more bizarre aspects of Betty Andreasson Luca's abduction.[140])

Naeslund's implant was originally placed through his nasal cavity. He first realized that something terrible had happened to him after an experience of missing time, followed by an inexplicable nosebleed.

This detail will be instantly familiar to anyone who has studied abductions; I have encountered it in my own conversations with abductees. For an excellent example in the UFO literature, I refer the reader to the case of Susan Ransted, as detailed in Kevin D. Randle's The UFO Casebook;[141] the background of alleged contactee Diane Tessman is also noteworthy in this regard.[142] Intriguingly, I have located a reference in the open literature to the use, in animal study, of nasally-implanted electrodes for the measurement of electromagnetic radiation effects.[143]

There are other claimed mind control victims bearing evidence of implants; note, especially, the fascinating case of James Petit, a CIA-connected pilot and alleged brainwashing alumnus; X-rays of his cranium have revealed abductee-style implants — fitting, perhaps, since his body bears abductee-style scars.[144] Conversely, certain abductees will, if allowed a thorough and sympathetic hearing, deliver testimony strongly agreeing with Koski's narrative.

Helicopters and Disks

The bizarre story of Rex Niles and his sister (not named in news accounts) may shed interesting light on a variety of abductee cases, particularly that of Betty and Barney Hill.[145] Niles, the high-rolling owner of a Woodland Hills defense subcontracting firm (Rex Rep) was fingered by authorities investigating defense industry kickbacks. He became an extraordinarily cooperative witness in the investigation — until he was targeted by his enemies, who allegedly used psychoelectronics as harassment.

The following excerpt from the Los Angeles Times article on Niles is particularly compelling:

He [Niles] has produced testimony from his sister, a Simi Valley woman who swears that helicopters have repeatedly circled her home. An engineer measured 250 watts of microwaves in the atmosphere outside Niles' house and found a radioactive disc underneath the dash of his car [my italics].

A former high school friend, Lyn Silverman, claimed that her home computer went haywire when Niles stepped close to it.

No aliens in this story — yet how similar it is to tales of alien abduction! The low-flying helicopters, of course, are frequently reported by abduction victims — the Betty Andreasson Luca case provides the best-known example.[146] The haywire electronics equipment is also frequently encountered in putative abduction cases; I have spoken (independently) to three women who claimed to have been able to disturb or shut off televisions and stereos simply by walking past the devices; one woman even claimed she had switched off her TV simply by pointing at it!

But the radioactive disc is especially intriguing. As former FBI agent Ted Gunderson recently explained to my associate Alexander Constantine, magnetic radioactive discs have long been used by the clandestine services as cancer-inducing "silent killers" — i.e., as tools of assassination. Not only that. The disk calls to mind one little-remembered detail of the Hill case — the dozen-or-so circular "shiny spots," each the size of a silver dollar, found on the trunk of her car directly after the abduction. A compass needle reacted wildly when placed near these spots. Could they have marked the location where an electromagnetic or radioactive device, similar to that found by Niles, was placed on the car? (Such a device might have been held to the spot magnetically, hence the circular impressions.) If so, then the disorienting EMR could have helped induce the Hills' "UFO sighting."

The Military and Mind Control

Some time ago, I attended hypnotic regression sessions in which the subject — a claimed UFO abductee — recalled undergoing a mysterious "brain operation" at a veteran's hospital in California. The operation was performed by human beings, not aliens. Interestingly, this same hospital was mentioned in two other cases I encountered. These other claims were not made by abductees, but by people alleged to have been victims of mind control experimentation.

One of these claimants, a former Navy SEAL who undertook numerous dangerous missions in Vietnam, favorably impressed me with the wealth of detail in his story.[147] This individual — I've taken to calling him "the trained SEAL" — had received specialized combat training at a military base in California; he claims that at one point during this training he was drugged, hypnotized, possibly placed under some form of electronic control, and subjected to the extremes of pain/pleasure operant conditioning. One peculiar detail of his story concerns the "reward" aspect of the conditioning: When properly acquiescent, he was given unlimited sexual access to a woman who, the SEAL avers, was herself the victim of brainwashing!

Unbelievable as this last claim may seem, I found it oddly resonant when I later interviewed a prominent abductee in the Southern California area, who bravely offered me details on a puzzling, albeit quite delicate, incident in her past. Still an attractive woman, she recalled for me — indeed, seemed strangely compelled to describe — an early love affair with a young soldier training at a military base near her home. She cannot recall the soldier's name. All she remembers is that one day he started living at her family's house; she has no memory of how the arrangement began, and her parents have never felt comfortable discussing the matter. Although unattracted to this soldier, she felt compelled to become intimate with him, adopting a pliant, obeisant attitude that was quite out of character for her. Later, the soldier went on to covert missions in Vietnam.

Of course, a young person's psycho-sexual development is never smooth, and the incident related above may merely have represented one peculiarly upsetting bump in that notoriously rough road. Still, some of the details of this story — particularly the parents' attitude, the woman's personality shift, and her subsequent memory lapses — are striking, and I treat with respect the abductee's intuition that this minor enigma in her personal history could, if properly understood, shed light on her later "missing time" experiences.

Could the "trained SEAL" have been right? Was there, is there, a coterie of hypno-programmed soldiers conducting particularly hazardous missions? And do the programmers have at their disposal a "ladies' auxiliary," so to speak, of hypnotized camp followers?

If the SEAL's story stood alone, skeptics could easily dismiss it (provided they did not sit, as I did, face-to-face with the story's teller, listening to all the grisly and unsettling details). But other veterans have added their voices to this grim tale. Daniel Sheehan, of the Christic Institute, claims that his organization has spoken to half-a-dozen individuals with narratives similar to my SEAL informant. All had received "processing," so to speak, within the context of standard military training; after programming and specialized combat instruction by mercenaries, the recruits were placed "on hold," to be used as situations arose — and some of those situations occurred within the United States.[148]

Walter Bowart began his own researches into mind control by placing an ad in "Soldier-Of-Fortune"-style publications, asking for correspondence from veterans who experienced inexplicable lapses in memory or strange behavior modification techniques while serving in Vietnam; he received over 100 replies. Bowart

devoted an entire chapter to one of these respondents — an Air Force veteran named David, who ended his four-year tour of duty recalling only that he had spent the time "having fun, skin diving, laying on the beach, collecting shells...It never dawned on me until later that I must have done something while I was in the service." (An obvious example of screen memory.) He was also "assigned" a girlfriend whose name he cannot now recall, despite the length and deep intimacy of the affair.[149] The parallels to the SEAL's story and the abductee's account should be obvious.

We even have a confession, of sorts, from a scientist who specialized in one aspect of this sort of training. Lt. Commander Thomas Narut, of the U.S. Naval Hospital at the NATO headquarters in Naples, Florida, admitted during a lecture in Oslo that recruits in Naples underwent "Clockwork-Orange"-style behavior modification sessions. Trainees would be strapped into chairs with their eyelids clamped open while watching films of industrial accidents and African circumcision ceremonies — films frequently used by psychologists as a means of inducing stress in experimental situations. Unlike the protagonist in Clockwork Orange, who learned revulsion at the sight of violence, Narut's soldiers were taught to accept and enjoy bloodshed, to view it with equanimity. Similar techniques were used to dehumanize potential enemies. Graduates of this program became, in Narut's words, "hit men and assassins," to be placed in American embassies throughout the world.

When questioned by reporters about these claims, the American government denied the story; Narut — after a long incommunicado period and apparent coercion — later explained to journalists that he had merely spoken theoretically. If so, why did he originally describe the behavior modification procedure as an ongoing program? [150]

And while it may seem frivolous to return to the subject of abductions after examining such grim data, I should remind the reader of the many abduction accounts in which abductees recall being forced to watch certain stress-inducing motion pictures. The aliens, it seems, have learned a few lessons from Dr. Narut.

Narut, of course, concentrated on selective programming of individual American soldiers; on the other side of the mind control spectrum, Defense Department specialists have also concentrated on methods to render entire enemy battalions "combat ineffective." Electromagnetic weaponry, intended to wipe out the aggression of the enemy, is the province of DARPA, under the direction of Dr. Jack Verona. These projects remain fairly mysterious; we do know, however, that one operation, SLEEPING BEAUTY, employed the services of Dr. Michael Persinger, a scientist who has expressed interesting views regarding UFOs.

Persinger discovered a method of using ELF waves to induce the brain's MAST cells to release histamine; should a battlefield commander wish to subject his enemy to mass bouts of vomiting, Persinger's trick could do the job even faster than a Tobe Hooper movie. The method works on animals. "The question," writes mind control researcher Larry Collins, "is how to get from point A to point B without violating one of the most rigorous commandments of Government ethics — thou shalt not conduct experiments like that on human beings."[151]

If Collins studied the record a little more carefully, he might realize that the government hasn't always regarded this commandment as something graven in stone. As Milton Kline put it:

"Ethical factors involved in most research would preclude having positive results. Those ethical factors don't always hold with government research. The research which has given really positive results has not been limited by ethical constraints."[152] [My italics.]

The Ultimate Motive For Mind Control

Hypnosis hard-liners of the Orne school would almost certainly dismiss the foregoing veterans' accounts of the use of hypnosis, drugs and behavioral conditioning on American fighting men. Why, the skeptics would ask, would anyone attempt to create a "Manchurian Candidate" when the military services, using entirely conventional means, can create a "Rambo"? There have always been recruits for even the most hazardous duties; what need of hypnosis?

The need, in fact, is absolute.

http://www.whale.to/b/cannon.html

The modern battlefield has little place for the traditional soldier. Advanced weaponry requires an increasing level of technical sophistication, which in turn requires a cool-headed operator. But the all-too-human combatant — though capable of extraordinary acts of courage under the most stressful conditions imaginable — does not possess inexhaustible reserves of sang-froid. Eventually, breakdowns will occur. Per-capita psychiatric casualties have increased dramatically in each successive American conflict. As Richard Gabriel, the excellent historian of the role of psychiatry in warfare, writes:

Modern warfare has become so lethal and so intense that only the already insane can endure it...Modern war requiring continuous combat will increase the degree of fatigue on the soldier to heretofore unknown levels. Physical fatigue — especially the lack of sleep — will increase the rate of psychiatric casualties enormously. Other factors — high rates of indirect fire, night fighting, lack of food, constant stress, large numbers of casualties — will ensure that the number of psychiatric casualties will reach disastrous proportions. And the number of casualties will overburden the medical structure to the point of collapse.

The ability to treat psychiatric casualties will all but disappear. There will be no safe forward areas in which to treat soldiers debilitated by mental collapse. The technology of modern war has made such locations functionally obsolete...[153]

According to Gabriel, the military intends to meet this challenge by creating “the chemical soldier,” a designer-drugged zombie in fighting man’s uniform:

On the battlefields of the future we will witness a true clash of ignorant armies, armies ignorant of their own emotions and even of the reasons for which they fight. Soldiers on all sides will be reduced to fearless chemical automatons who fight simply because they can do nothing else...Once the chemical genie is out of the bottle, the full range of human mental and physical actions become targets for chemical control...Today it is already possible by chemical or electrical stimulation to increase the aggression levels of the human being by stimulating the amygdala, a section of the brain known to control aggression and rage. Such “human potential engineering” is already a partial reality and the necessary technical knowledge increases every day.[154]

While this passage speaks of drugs and electronics, we can safely assume that the planners of battle would not refrain from using any other promising technique.

Gabriel writes primarily of large-scale battle scenarios, but based on his information, we can fairly deduce that the mind-controlled soldier will also play a role in the surgical strike, the covert operation, the infiltration behind enemy lines by units of the Special Forces. On such missions, United States personnel have increasingly relied on torture as a means of interrogation and intimidation,[155] and as such barbarism becomes standard procedure the American fighting man of the future will need to find within himself unprecedented reserves of brutality. Will the average recruit, culled from the nation’s suburbs and reared on traditional ideals, possess such reserves?

Vietnam proved that the soldier, despite a barrage of propaganda intended to cloud his discernment, will sense the difference between fighting for legitimate defense interests and fighting to protect political hegemony. To forestall this realization, or to render it irrelevant, military planners must withdraw the human combatant and replace him with a new species of warrior. The soldier of the future will not discern; he will merely do. He will not be a butcher; he will be the butcher’s knife — a tool among other tools, thoughtless and effective.

And it is my contention that to create this soldier of the future, the controllers need a continuing program, one designed to test each new method and combination of methods for conquering the human mind. One primary goal of this program must include expanding the human capacity for stress and violence. Subjects enrolled in such experimental procedures will experience pain, and will learn to accept the pain. Eventually, they will learn to inflict it, without remorse or even remembrance. The nation who first creates this new soldier will possess a decisive advantage on the “conventional” battlefield — as will the nation which first develops a means of using mass mind control techniques to disable entire enemy platoons. This paramount military necessity is the reason why I will never believe any unconvincing reassurances that our nation’s clandestine scientists have foregone or will forego research into behavior modification. This research will never be mere history. What’s past is present, and today’s covert experimentation will become tomorrow’s basic training.

http://www.whale.to/b/cannon.html

A prototype of the future warrior may already be with us. The Navy SEAL I interviewed spoke in horrifying detail of dismemberment without emotion, of rape as routine, of killing without affect. And then forgetting that he had killed. Even years later, he could not recall the stories behind many of the wounds on his own body. He claims that whenever he would need the services of the veteran's hospital, doctors would re-hypnotize him shortly after his admission, while a physician specifically cleared for such work would examine his medical history, which was highly classified and kept under lock and key.

According to the SEAL's testimony, his memory block cracked little by little, as a result of events too complex to recount here. Finally, years after Vietnam, he was able to remember what he did.

Amnesia was a blessing.

IV. Abductions

Press and public now regard abductees as tony curiosities, yet science, for the most part, still banishes their tales to the domain of the damned, as Charles Fort defined damnation. So too with claimed victims of mind control. The Voice of Authority tells us that MKULTRA belongs to history; like Hasdrubal and Hitler, it threatened once, but no more. Anyone insisting otherwise must be silenced by glib rationalization and selective inattention.

Yet these two topics — UFO abductions and mind control — have more in common than their mutual ostracization. The data overlap. If we could chart these phenomena on a Venn diagram, we would see a surprisingly large intersection between the two circles of information. It is this overlap I seek to address.

Note, however, that I can not address all the other interesting and important issues raised by the UFO abduction experience. For example, I have written, admittedly rather vaguely, of nasal implants reported by abductees — the sort of detail which might place an account in the "high strangeness" category, and of course, a detail central to my thesis. But what percentage of the percipients speak of such implants? A truly scientific analysis would provide a figure. Unfortunately, I haven't the resources to compile a sufficiently large abductee sample from which one could draw statistics. Nor can I make an over-arching qualitative analysis, measuring the value of "high strangeness" reports against other abductee claims. All I can do is note the available literature, and leave the reader to wonder, as I do, whether the compilers of that literature concentrated on exceptional cases or were biased in favor of the less fantastic abductee accounts. I have supplemented readings of the abduction literature with my own interviews with percipients — which, since abductees tend to know other abductees, can give a surprisingly wide view of the phenomenon. This view has been broadened still further by my talks and correspondence with other members of the UFO community.

Of course, we must recognize the difference between testimony and proof. No one can state definitively that abduction reports have a basis in objective reality (however misperceived). Ultimately, all we have are stories. Some of these stories may be of questionable veracity; others may be contaminated by investigator bias; many are insufficiently detailed. No one research paper can resolve all abduction controversies, and many necessary battles must be fought on other fields.

Still, the testimony won't go away — and we certainly have enough to allow for comparisons. I maintain that an unprejudiced overview of abduction reports in the popular press and the less-familiar material on mind control will demonstrate a striking correlation. Once other abduction researchers have been educated in the ways of MKULTRA (and this paper is intended as an introductory text) they may note a similar pattern. If so, we can then begin to write a revisionist history of the phenomenon.

The abduction enigma contains within it sub-mysteries that slide into the mind control scenario with surprising ease, even elegance — mysteries which fit the E.T. hypothesis as uncomfortably as a size 10 foot fits into a size 8 shoe. As we have seen, the MKULTRA thesis explains the reports of abductee intracerebral implants (particularly reports involving nosebleeds), unusual scars, "telepathic" communication (i.e., externally induced intracerebral voices) concurrent with or following the abduction encounter, allegations that some abductees hear unusual sound effects (similar to those created by the hemi-synch and cognate devices), haywire electronic devices in abductee homes, personality shifts, "training films," manipulation of religious imagery,

and missing time. Needless to say, the thesis of clandestine government experimentation readily accounts for abductee claims of human beings "working" with the aliens, and for the government harassment that plays so prominent a role in certain abductee reports.

Let's look at some more correlations.

The Hill Case and the "Advanced" Aliens

Earlier, I asked, "Do the aliens also watch black-and-white television?" in reference to their alleged use of old-fashioned, Terra-style brain implantation devices. Abduction accounts abound in other examples of alien "retro-technology." The most striking example can be found in the Betty and Barney Hill incident, the details of which are too well-known to recount here.[156] As we have already glimpsed during our discussion of the Rex Niles affair, the Hills' "interrupted journey" abounds in data which, taken together, permits the construction of an alternative explanation.

At one point during the alleged UFO abduction, the "examiners" inserted a needle in Betty Hill's navel, telling her that this practice constituted a test for pregnancy.[157] Some ufologists[158] rashly assume that Betty Hill's "pregnancy test" is evidence of advanced extraterrestrial technology, since her 1961 account pre-dates the official announcement of amniocentesis, which does indeed make use of a needle inserted into the navel. But we now have much less invasive means of testing for pregnancy than amniocentesis. True, amniocentesis is still sometimes used to gather information about the fetus, but the wielders of a highly evolved technology would certainly use other methods of determining the existence of pregnancy in the first place.

Betty Hill's testimony reminds us of certain other abduction accounts, which contain descriptions of "healings" surprisingly similar to the procedures associated with still-experimental electromagnetic therapy techniques, such as those described in Robert O. Becker's The Body Electric. For example, abductee Deanna Dube described for me an abduction-related "regeneration" of her long-damaged heart; had she been familiar with Becker's work,[159] she might have been a bit less rapid to ascribe her healing to otherworldly influences.

Medical breakthroughs often undergo years of testing before their official "discovery." For some of these tests, finding volunteers presents a major obstacle. If we accept the proposition that the Hill incident originated in an external and objective stimulus, we must then ask ourselves which scenario is more likely: Did Betty Hill encounter human beings using a technique ten years ahead of its time? Or did she encounter aliens (reputedly a "billion years ahead of us") using science from eons before their time?

One must also ask why Betty Hill's aliens seemed to have no grasp of basic human concepts (such as how we measure time) — yet they knew enough about us to speak English fluently and had even mastered our slang. Were these real aliens, or humans engaging in theatricals (and occasionally muffing their lines)? For that matter, why did Betty Hill originally recall her abductors as humanoid, only later describing them as aliens?

The Hill case provided a particularly controversial piece of evidence — the celebrated "star map" recalled by Betty Hill under hypnosis. In later years, an Ohio schoolteacher named Marjorie Fish made an ingenious and laudable attempt to discover a match for this map by constructing an elaborate three-dimensional model of nearby star systems; whether she succeeded remains a matter for keen debate.[160] For now, I prefer to avoid taking sides in this dispute and will confine myself to insisting that pro-ET ufologists answer (without resorting to glib ripostes) a point first raised by Jacques Vallee: The map makes no sense as a navigational aid. Vallee notes that, even if we grant the Fish interpretation, the stars are not drawn to scale — and at any rate, alien spaceships would surely be navigated the same way we guide our own spacecraft: via computers and telemetry.[161] The validity of the Fish interpretation is irrelevant; the point is that any such chart would have no value to an interstellar star-farer.

Fish's work raises other controversies: Allegedly, the map points to Zeta Reticuli as the aliens' home system and pictures Zeta Reticuli as a single star, a view consistent with scientific opinion of the 1960s. Yet in later years scientists discovered that Zeta Reticuli is binary.[162] Moreover, how did our abductee manage to remember so accurately a complex chart glimpsed in passing? Even allowing for the possibility of increased accuracy of recollection under hypnotic regression, the memory feat here seems remarkable. Consider the circumstances of the abduction: Kafka on hallucinogens couldn't have conceived of the nightmare vision

confronting Betty Hill that night — yet for some reason this particular arrangement of stars emerged as her most intensely-detailed recollection of the experience.

This memory (if not confabulated during regression, a possibility we should always weigh) is comprehensible only as an example of artificially-induced hypermnesia. In other words, Betty Hill was directed to store that chart within her subconscious. The celebrated star map ought to be recognized for what it was: a prop, a seemingly-confirmatory circumstantial detail meant to convince her — and perhaps us — of the reality of her abduction.

The question of motive arises. Why — if my thesis is correct — were these two fairly innocuous individuals chosen for this new variation on the old MKULTRA tricks?

The selection might, of course, have been arbitrary. Or perhaps circumstances now irretrievably lost to history rendered the couple a convenient target. Interestingly, Barney Hill had become acquainted (through church functions) with the head of Air Force intelligence at Pease Air Force Base; perhaps this relationship first brought the Hills to the attention of members of the intelligence community. Arguably, the Hills could have been fingered for a wide variety of reasons; as a general rule, the clandestine services prefer to satisfy a number of itches with one scratch.

In fact, the espionage establishment had one particularly compelling reason to focus on the Hills. Barney Hill (a black man) and his wife held important positions in several civil rights organizations, including the NAACP.[163] The abduction took place during the 1960s, when the NAACP and allied groups fell victim to an increasingly paranoid series of attacks from the FBI and other governmental agencies (under operations COINTELPRO, CHAOS, GARDEN PLOT, etc.).[164] At that time, infiltration of civil rights groups proved a difficult chore; while most left-leaning groups provided easy targets for FBI stooges, the average undercover operative would have had an exceptionally difficult time posing as a black activist. (In 1961, the only black people on the FBI's payroll were the servants in J. Edgar Hoover's home.)

In light of these facts, we should recall Victor Marchetti's anecdote about the cat that the CIA had "wired for sound." Perhaps an ambitious covert scientist proposed a similar experiment, in which a human being would play the role that had once been assigned to the unfortunate feline? As Estabrooks noted, the ultimate espionage agent would be the spy who doesn't know he is a spy. Barney Hill, a well-regarded figure with a near-genius-level IQ, was a safe bet to obtain a leadership role in any group he joined; he would have been remarkably well-positioned, had any outsiders wished to use his ears to overhear prominent black organizers in confidential discussion.

Of course, many intelligence professionals would counter this suggestion by reminding us that eavesdroppers on the civil rights movement had plenty of less-flamboyant methods: Bugging, "black bag" jobs, paying for information, etc. The point is valid. But if the technology to create a "human bug" was developed circa 1961 — and there is documentation suggesting that such was indeed the case[165] — the intelligence agencies would surely have wanted to test the possibilities in the field. And considering the expense of such a test, why not conduct the experiment in such a way as to reap the maximum benefits? Why not choose a Barney Hill?

Arms and the Abductee

Budd Hopkins told the following story during his lecture at the Los Angeles "Whole Life Expo."[166] He considers the case "very good...lots of corroborating witnesses for parts of it." Though not, presumably, for this part:

Hopkins' informant, after the by-now familiar UFO abduction, was given a gun by the aliens. Not a Buck Rogers laser weapon — this was something Dirty Harry might have packed.

The abductee was also given someone to shoot. Not a little grey alien — another human being, tied to a chair. The "visitors" told their armed abductee that this captive had done "evil on the earth, and he's a bad person. You have to kill him." If the abductee didn't do as asked, he would never leave the ship.

The captive proclaimed his innocence, and pleaded for his life. The abductee, caught in the middle of all this, became quite upset. (Worth noting: he seems to have at least considered the aliens' request to shoot someone he had never met.) Ultimately, the abductee turned the gun on the aliens, and said, "Nobody's going to get shot here."

According to Hopkins, "The aliens said 'Fine. Very good.' They took the gun from him; the man [presumably, the captive] got up, walked away, disappeared, and they went on to the next thing." Obviously, this little drama had been staged — a test of some sort.

I submit that this surreal incident is incomprehensible as either an example of alien incursion or of "Klassical" confabulation. The scenario described here exactly parallels numerous experiments in the hypnotic induction of anti-social action as revealed both in the standard hypnosis literature and in declassified ARTICHOKE/MKULTRA documents. For example, compare Hopkins' account to the following, in which Ludwig Mayer, a prominent German hypnosis researcher, describes a classic experiment in the hypnotic induction of criminal action:

I gave a revolver to an elderly and readily suggestible man whom I had just hypnotized. The revolver had just been loaded by Mr. H. with a percussion cap. I explained to [the subject], while pointing to Mr. H., that Mr. H. was a very wicked man whom he should shoot to kill. With great determination he took the revolver and fired a shot directly at Mr. H. Mr. H. fell down pretending to be wounded. I then explained to my subject that the fellow was not yet quite dead, and that he should give him another bullet, which he did without further ado. [167]

Of course, if a conservative hypnosis specialist were asked to comment on the above account, he would quickly point out that hypnotic suggestions which work in an experimental situation would not easily succeed outside the laboratory; on some level, the subject will probably sense whether or not he's playing the game for real.[168] Similarly, a conservative abduction researcher would, in reviewing Hopkins' material, emphasize the problems inherent in using testimony derived during regression, where the threat of confabulation lurks. I'll concede both arguments — for the moment — only to insist that they are beside the point. The matter of primary importance, the sticking point which neither Klass nor Hopkins can comfortably confront, is the convergence of detail between Mayer's hypnosis experiment and the testing event related by Hopkins' abductee. Why are these two stories so similar? Did the good Dr. Mayer take pupils from Sirius?[169]

Hopkins says he knows of other instances in which abductees found themselves in similar crucibles. So do I.

One person I spoke to can remember (sans hypnosis) being handed a gun inside a ziplock baggy, and receiving instructions that she will have to use this weapon "on a job." Early in my interviews with her (and with no prompting from me) she recited an apparent cue drilled into her consciousness by the "entities" (as she calls them): "When you see the light, you will do it tonight," followed by the command, "Execute." (One can only speculate as to how such commands would be used in the field; we will discuss later the use of photovoltaic hypnotic induction.) Though her personal feelings toward firearms are decidedly negative, she vividly describes periods in her "everyday" life when she feels an uncharacteristic, yet overpowering urge to be near a gun — a quasi-sexual desire to pick one up and touch the metal.[170]

She is not alone. Another has been so affected by gun fever that he became a security guard, just to be near the things.[171] The abductees I have spoken to connect this sudden surge of Ramboism to the UFO experience. But I suggest that the UFO experience may be merely a cover story for another type of training entirely.

One of the primary goals of BLUEBIRD, ARTICHOKE, and MKULTRA was to determine whether mind control could be used to facilitate "executive action" — i.e., assassination.[172]

It isn't difficult to imagine the media's reaction if a public figure were murdered by someone acting at the behest of the "space brothers." Who would dare to speak of conspiracy under such circumstances? The hidden controllers could choose a myth structure that conforms to the abductee's personality, then pose as higher beings, who would whisper violence into the ear of the percipient. Using this ruse, the trick that scientists such as Ludwig Mayer could perform in the lab might now be accomplished in the field. As Estabrooks' associate Jack Tracktir (professor of hypnotherapy at Baylor University) explained to John Marks, anti-social acts can be

induced with “no conscience involved” once the proper pretext has been created.[173]

“They Will Think It’s Flying Saucers”

Jenny Randles contributes an anecdote from Great Britain which dovetails nicely with this hypothesis.

In 1965, “Margary” (a pseudonym) lived in Birmingham with her husband, who one night told her to prepare her for a “shock and a test.” As Randles describes what she calls a “rogue case”:

They got into his car and drove off, although her memory of the trip became hazy and confused and she does not know where they went. Then she was in a room that was dimly lit and there were people standing around a long table or flat bed. She was out on it and seemed “drugged” and unable to resist. The most memorable of the men was tall and thin with a long nose and white beard. He had thick eyebrows and supposedly said to Margary, “Remember the eyebrows, honey.” A strange medical examination, using odd equipment, was performed on her.

Both the husband and the scientists, using (apparently) hypnotic techniques, flooded her mind with images that, she was told, would be understood only in the future. According to Randles, “At one point one of the ‘examiners’ in the room said to Margary in a tone that made it seem as if he were amused, ‘They will think it’s flying saucers.’” The husband also revealed that he had a second identity. After the abduction, this husband (am I going too far to assume his employment with MI6 or some cognate agency?) left, never to be seen again.[174] Margary did not recall the abduction until 1978.

This affair can only baffle a researcher who insists on fitting all abduction accounts into the ET hypothesis; once we free ourselves from that set of assumptions, explanations come easily. I interpret this incident as a case in which the controllers applied the flying saucer cover story sloppily, or to an insufficiently receptive subject. If my thesis is correct, the UFO “hypnotic hoax” technique would still have been fairly new in 1965, particularly outside the United States; perhaps the manipulators hadn’t yet got the hang of it. The odd comment about the scientist’s eyebrows may refer to an item of disguise donned for the occasion. The unscrupulous hypnotist, unsure about his ability to induce an impenetrable amnesia — and mindful of the price paid by his forerunners in mesmeric criminality[175] — would understandably want to hedge his bets; by indulging in the British penchant for theatrics, he could further protect his anonymity.

A similar incident was brought to my attention by researcher Robert Durant. The relevant excerpt of his letter follows:

“Now I want to turn to a case that I have been investigating for several months. The subject is an abductee. Standard abduction scenario. Twice regressed under hypnosis, the first time by a well-known abduction researcher, the second time by a psychologist with parapsychology connections.

In the course of many hours of listening to the subject, I discovered that she has had close personal contact over a long period of time with several individuals who have federal intelligence connections. She was hypnotized many years ago as part of a TV program devoted to hypnosis. Her abductions began shortly after she attended several long sessions at a laboratory where, ostensibly, she was being tested for ESP abilities. Two other people who were “tested” at this same laboratory have also had abductions. All three were told by the lab to join a local UFO group. During her abductions, the principal alien spoke to the subject in the English language in a normal manner, not via telepathy. She recognized the voice, which was at one time that of her very close friend of yesteryear who was then and is now employed by the CIA. The other voice was that of an individual who works in Washington, has what I will call very strong federal connections as well as a finger in just about every ufological pie, and who just happened to bump into her at the aforementioned laboratory. He also anticipated, in the course of telephone conversations, her abductions. When the subject confronted him about this and the voice, he claimed to be psychic.” (!)[176]

The “ESP” connection is suggestive; the MKULTRA documents betray an astonishing interest on the part of the intelligence agencies in matters parapsychological.

Some researchers would object that examples such as this are rare; most abductions contain no such overt

indications of intelligence involvement. But have investigators looked for them? As mentioned in the introduction, a false dichotomy limits much ufological thought; as long as the abduction argument swings between the ET hypothesis and purely psychological theories, researchers will not recognize the relevance of certain key items of background data.

Glimpses of the Controllers

In an interview with me, a northern-California abductee — call him "Peter" — reported an experience which was conducted not by a small grey alien, but by a human being. The percipient called this man a "doctor." He gave a description of this individual, and even provided a drawing.

Some time after I gathered this information, a southern-California abductee told me her story — which included a description of this very same "doctor." The physical details were so strikingly similar as to erase coincidence. This woman is a leading member of a Los Angeles-based UFO group; three other women in this group report abduction encounters with the same individual.[177]

Perhaps those three women were fantasists, attaching themselves to another's narrative. But my northern informant never met these people. Why did he describe the same "doctor"?

One of the abductees I have dealt with insisted, under hypnosis, that her abduction experience brought her to a certain house in the Los Angeles area. She was able to provide directions to the house, even though she had no conscious memory of ever being there. I later learned that this house is indeed occupied by a scientist who formerly (and perhaps currently) conducted clandestine research on mind control technology.

This same abductee described a clandestine brain operation of some sort she underwent in childhood. The neurosurgeon was a human being, not an alien. She even recalled the name. (Note: This is not the same individual referred to above.) When I heard the name, it meant nothing to me — but later I learned that there really was a scientist of that name who specialized in electrode implant research.

Licia Davidson is a thoughtful and articulate abductee, whose fascinating story closely parallels many found in the abductee literature — except for one unusual detail. In an interview with me, she described an unsettling recollection of a human being, dressed normally, holding a black box with a protruding antenna. This odd snippet of memory did not coincide with the general thrust of her abduction narrative. Could this remembrance represent an all-too-brief segment of accurately-perceived reality interrupting her hypnotically-induced "screen memory"? Peter clearly recalls seeing a similar box during his abduction.

Interestingly, Licia resides in the Los Angeles suburb of Tujunga Canyon, a prominent spot on the abduction map: Many of the abductees I have spoken to first had unusual experiences while living in this area. Near Tujunga Canyon, in Mt. Pacifico, is a hidden former Nike missile base; more than one abductee has described odd, seemingly inexplicable military activity around this location.[178] The reader will recall the connection of Nike missile bases to the disturbing story of Dr. L. Jolyon West, a veteran of MKULTRA.

Cults

Some abductees I have spoken to have been directed to join certain religious/philosophical sects. These cults often bear close examination.

The leaders of these groups tend to be "ex"-CIA operatives, or Special Forces veterans. They are often linked through personal relations, even though they espouse widely varying traditions. I have heard unsettling reports that the leaders of some of these groups have used hypnosis, drugs, or "mind machines" on their charges. Members of these cults have reported periods of missing time during ceremonies or "study periods."

I strongly urge abduction researchers to examine closely any small "occult" groups an abductee might join. For example, one familiar leader of the UFO fringe — a man well-known for his espousal of the doctrine of "love and light" — is Virgil Armstrong, a close personal friend of General John Singlaub, the notorious Iran-Contra player, who recently headed the neo-fascist World Anti-Communist League. Armstrong, who also happens to be an ex-Green Beret and former CIA operative, figured into my inquiry in an interesting fashion:

An abductee of my acquaintance was told — by her "entities," naturally — to seek out this UFO spokesman and join his "sky-watch" activities, which, my source alleges, included a mass channelling session intended to send debilitating "negative" vibrations to Constantine Chernenko, then the leader of the Soviet Union. Of course, intracerebral voices may have a purely psychological origin, so Armstrong can hardly be held to task for the abductee's original "directive."[179] Still, his past associations with military intelligence inevitably bring disturbing possibilities to mind.

Even more ominous than possible ties between UFO cults and the intelligence community are the cults' links with the shadowy I AM group, founded by Guy Ballard in the 1930s.[180] According to researcher David Stupple, "If you look at the contactee groups today, you'll see that most of the stable, larger ones are actually neo-I AM groups, with some sort of tie to Ballard's organization."[181] This cult, therefore, bears investigation.

Guy Ballard's "Mighty I AM Religious Activity," grew, in large part, out of William Dudley Pelly's Silver Shirts, an American Nazi organization.[182] Although Ballard himself never openly proclaimed Nazi affiliation, his movement was tinged with an extremely right-wing political philosophy, and in secret meetings he "decreed" the death of President Franklin Roosevelt.[183] The I AM philosophy derived from Theosophy, and, in this author's estimation, bears a more-than-cursory resemblance to the Theosophically-based teachings that informed the proto-Nazi German occult lodges.[184]

After the war, Pelley (who had been imprisoned for sedition during the hostilities) headed an occult-oriented organization called Soulcraft, based in Noblesville, Indiana. Another Soulcraft employee was the controversial contactee George Hunt Williamson (real name: Michel d'Obrenovic), who co-authored UFOs Confidential with John McCoy, a proponent of the theory that a Jewish banking conspiracy was preventing disclosure of the solution to the UFO mystery.[185] Later, Williamson founded the I AM-oriented Brotherhood of the Seven Rays in Peru.[186] Another famed contactee, George Van Tassel, was associated with Pelley and with the notoriously anti-Semitic Reverend Wesley Swift (founder of the group which metamorphosed into the Aryan nations).[187]

The most visible modern offspring of I AM is Elizabeth Clare Prophet's Church Universal and Triumphant, a group best-known for its massive arms caches in underground bunkers. CUT was recently exposed in Covert Action Information Bulletin as a conduit of CIA funds,[188] and according to researcher John Judge, has ties to organizations allied to the World Anti-Communist League.[189] Prophet is becoming involved in abduction research and has sponsored presentations by Budd Hopkins and other prominent investigators. In his book The Armstrong Report: ET's and UFO's: They Need Us, We Don't Need Them [sic.][190], Virgil Armstrong directs troubled abductees toward Prophet's group. (Perhaps not insignificantly, he also suggests that abductees plagued by implants alleviate their problem by turning to "the I AM force" within.[191])

Another UFO channeller, Frederick Von Mierers, has promulgated both a cult with a strong I AM orientation[192] and an apparent con-game involving over-appraised gemstones. Mierers is an anti-Semite who contends that the Holocaust never happened and that the Jews control the world's wealth.

UFORUM is a flying saucer organization popular with Los Angeles-area abductees; its founder is Penny Harper, a member of a radical Scientology breakaway group which connects the teachings of L. Ron Hubbard with pronouncements against "The Illuminati" (a mythical secret society) and other betes noir familiar from right-wing conspiracy literature. Harper directs members of her group to read The Spotlight, an extremist tabloid (published by Willis Carto's Liberty Lobby) which denies the reality of the Holocaust and posits a "Zionist" scheme to control the world.[193]

More than one unwary abductee has fallen in with groups such as those listed above. It isn't difficult to imagine how some of these questionable groups might mold an abductee's recollection of his experience — and perhaps help direct his future actions.

Some modern abductees, with otherwise-strong claims, claim encounters with blond, "Nordic" aliens reminiscent of the early contactee era. Surely, the "Nordic" appearance of these aliens sprang from the dubious spiritual tradition of Van Tassell, Ballard, Pelley, McCoy, etc. Why, then, are some modern abductees seeing these very same other-worldly Uebermenschen?

One abductee of my acquaintance claims to have had beneficial experiences with these "blond" aliens — who, he believes, came originally from the Pleiades. Interestingly, in the late 1960s, the psychopathically anti-Semitic Rev. Wesley Swift predicted this odd twist in the abduction tale. In a broadcast "sermon," he spoke at length about UFOs, claiming that there were "good" aliens and "bad" aliens. The good ones, he insisted, were tall, blond Aryans — who hailed from the pleiades. He made this pronouncement long before the current trends in abduction lore.

Could some of the abductions be conducted by an extreme right-wing element within the national security establishment? Disagreeable as the possibility seems, we should note that the "lunatic right" is represented in all other walks of life; certainly hard-rightists have taken positions within the military-intelligence complex as well.

Grounds For Further Research

John Keel's ground-breaking Operation Trojan Horse, written in an era when abductees still came under the category of "contactees," includes the following intriguing data, gleaned from Keel's extensive field work:

Contactees often find themselves suddenly miles from home without knowing how they got there. They either have induced amnesia, wiping out all memory of the trip, or they were taken over by some means and made the trip in a blacked-out state. Should they encounter a friend on the way, the friend would probably note that their eyes seemed glassy and their behavior seemed peculiar. But if the friend spoke to them, he might receive a curt reply.

In the language of the contactees this process is called being used...I have known silent contactees to disappear from their homes for long periods, and when they returned, they had little or no recollection of where they had been. One girl sent me a postcard from the Bahama Islands — which surprised me because I knew she was very poor. When she returned, she told me that she had only one memory of the trip. She said she remembered getting off a jet at an airport — she shouldn't recall getting on the jet or making the trip — and there "Indians" met her and took her baggage...The next thing she knew she was back home again.[194]

Puzzling indeed — unless one has read The Control of Candy Jones, which speaks of Candy's "blacked out" periods, during which she travelled to Taiwan as a CIA courier, adopting her second personality. The mind control explanation perfectly solves all the mysteries in the above excerpt — save, perhaps, the odd remark about "Indians."

Hickson and Mendez' UFO Contact At Pascagoula contains the interesting information that Charles Hickson awakes at night feeling that he is on the verge of re-awakening some terribly important memory connected with his encounter — yet ostensibly he can account for every moment of his adventure.

Hickson also received a letter from an apparent abductee who claims that the grey aliens are actually automatons of some sort — perhaps an unconscious recognition of the unreality of the hypnotically-induced "cover story."[195] In this light, the film version of Communion — whose screenplay was written by Whitley Strieber — takes on a new interest: The abduction sequences contain inexplicable images indicating that the "greys" are really props, or masks.

Communion and Transformation contain passages detailing what seems to be a hazily-recalled Candy-Jones-style espionage adventure, in which Strieber was shanghaied by a "coach" and a "nurse" (both human beings) who apparently drugged him.[196] Recall the example of Keel's informants. Moreover, Transformation contains lengthy descriptions of alien beings working in apparent collusion with human beings.

Abductee Christa Tilton also recalls both human beings and aliens playing a part in her experience. Ever since her abduction, she claims, she has been "shadowed" by a mysterious federal agent she calls John Wallis.[197] Christa's husband, Tom Adams, has confirmed Wallis' existence.[198]

In his Report On Communion, Ed Conroy — who seems to have become a participant in, and not merely an observer of, the phenomenon — describes harassment by helicopters, which as we have already noted, seems to be quite a common occurrence in abductee situations.[199] Researchers blithely assume that these incidents

represent governmental attempts to spy on UFO percipients. But this assertion is ridiculous. Helicopters are extremely expensive to operate, and the engines of espionage have perfected numerous alternative methods to gather information. After all, we now have a fairly extensive bibliography of FBI, CIA, and military efforts to spy on numerous movements favoring domestic social change. Why have no veterans of CHAOS or COINTELPRO (either victim or victimizer) spoken of helicopters? Obviously the choppers serve some other purpose beyond mere surveillance. One possibility might be the propagation of electromagnetic waves which might affect the perceptions/ behaviors of an implanted individual. (Indeed, I have heard rumors of helicopters being used in electronic "crowd control" operations in Vietnam and elsewhere; alas, the information is far from hard.)

Contactee Eldon Kerfoot has written of his suspicions that human manipulators, not aliens, may be the ultimate puppeteers engineering his experiences. He describes a sudden compulsion to kill a fellow veteran of the Korean conflict — a man Kerfoot had no logical reason to distrust or dislike, yet whom he "sensed" to have been a traitor to his country. Fortunately, the assassination never materialized.[200] But the situation exactly parallels incidents described in released ARTICHOKE documents concerning the remote hypnotic induction of anti-social behavior.

One last speculation:

Renato Vesco's Intercept But Don't Shoot[201] outlines a fascinating scenario for the "secret weapon" hypothesis of UFOs. Vesco points out that if these devices are one day to be used in a superpower conflict, the attacking power would be well-served by the myth of the UFO as an extra-terrestrial craft, for the besieged nation would not know the true nature of its opponent. Perhaps, then, one purpose of the UFO abductions is to engender and maintain the legend of the little grey aliens. For the hidden manipulators, the abductions could be, in and of themselves, a propaganda coup.

Final Thoughts

I do not insist dogmatically on the scenario that I have outlined. I do not wish to dissuade abduction researchers from exploring other avenues — indeed, I strongly encourage such work to continue. Nor can I easily account for some aspects of the abduction narratives — for example, any suggestions I could offer concerning the reports of genetic experimentation would be extremely speculative.

But I do insist on a fair hearing of this hypothesis. Criticism is encouraged; that which does not destroy my thesis will make it stronger. I ask only that my critics refrain from intellectual laziness; mere differences in world-view do not constitute a valid attack. God is found in the details.

I recognize the dangers inherent in making this thesis public. New and distressing abductee confabulations may result. I would prefer that the audience for this paper be restricted to abduction researchers, not victims, who might be unduly influenced. However, in a society that prides itself on its ostensibly free press, such restrictions are unthinkable. Therefore, I can only beg any abduction victims who might read this paper to attempt a superhuman objectivity. The thesis I have outlined is promising, and (should trepanation ever provide us with an example of an actual abductee implant) susceptible of proof. But mine is not the only hypothesis. The abductee's unrewarding task is to report what he or she has experienced as truthfully as possible, untainted by outside speculation.

Whether or not future investigation proves UFO abductions to be a product of mind control experimentation, I feel that this paper has, at least, provided evidence of a serious danger facing those who hold fast to the ideals of individual freedom. We cannot long ignore this menace.

A spectre haunts the democratic nations — the spectre of technofascism. All the powers of the espionage empire and the scientific establishment have entered into an unholy alliance to evoke this spectre: Psychiatrist and spy, Dulles and Delgado, microwave specialists and clandestine operators.

http://www.whale.to/b/cannon.html

A mind is a terrible thing to waste — and a worse thing to commandeer.

Selected Bibliography on Mind Control

Acid Dreams, by Martin A. Lee and Bruce Shlain (Grove, 1985). Outstanding work on MKULTRA and drugs.

The Body Electric, by Robert Becker (Morrow, 1985). Important.

The Brain Changers, by Maya Pines (Signet, 1973). Outdated, but an excellent chapter on the stimoceiver and related technologies.

Brain Control, by Elliot Valenstein (John Wiley and Sons, 1973). Highly conservative; outdated; still worth reading.

CIA Papers, compiled by the Capitol Information Associates (POB 8275, Ann Arbor, Michigan, 48107). Interesting selection of MKULTRA documents.

The Control of Candy Jones, by Donald Bain (Playboy Press, 1976). Mandatory reading.

Human Drug Testing By the CIA, hearings before the Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee On Human Resources, United States Senate (Government Printing Office, 1977).

Hypnotism, by George Estabrooks (Dutton, 1957). See especially the chapters on hypnosis in warfare and crime. Some modern experts in clinical hypnosis decry Estabrooks' work. These "experts" tend to have a history of funding by CIA cut-outs and military intelligence. I suspect they denounce Estabrooks not because his work was shoddy, but because he let the cat out of the bag.

Individual Rights and the Federal Role in Behavior Modification, by the Staff of the Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights of the Committee of the Judiciary, United States Senate (Government Printing Office, 1974).

Megabrain, by Michael Hutchison (Ballantine, 1986). The only popular book on modern mind machines.

Messengers of Deception, by Jacques Vallee (And/Or, 1979). Vallee has been criticized, correctly, for including in this book invented "conversations" with a composite character he calls Major Murphy. But the section on cults in this book bears a haunting resemblance to stories I have heard in my own investigations.

The Mind Manipulators, by Opton and Scheflin (Paddington Press, 1978). Conservative, but extremely useful as a reference work.

Mind Wars, by Ronald McCrae (St. Martin's Press, 1984).

Operation Mind Control, by Walter Bowart (Dell, 1978). The best single volume on the subject. Difficult to find; indeed, this book's rapid disappearance from bookstores and libraries has aroused the suspicions of some researchers. (Tom Davis Books, POB 1107, Aptos, CA 95001, carries this work.)

Physical Control of the Mind, by Jose Delgado (Harper and Row, 1969). Outdated; still essential.

Project MKULTRA, joint hearing before the Select Committee On Health and Scientific Research of the Committee On Human Resources, United States Senate (Government Printing Office, 1977).

Psychic Warfare: Fact or Fiction? edited by John White (Aquarian, 1988). See especially Michael Rossman's contribution.

Psychotechnology, Robert L. Schwitzgebel and Ralph K. Schwitzgebel (Holt, Rhinehart and Winston, 1973).

The Scientist, by John Lilly (expanded edition: Ronin, 1988). Bizarre — Lilly is an ex-"brainwashing"

specialist who claims to be in contact with aliens. Is he controlled or controlling?

The Search for the “Manchurian Candidate”, by John Marks (Bantam, 1978). An invaluable book. However, many people have made the mistake of assuming it tells the full story. It does not.

Were We Controlled? by Lincoln Lawrence (University Books, 1967). Explores possible connections to the JFK assassination. Dr. Petter Lindstrom’s endorsement of this work makes it mandatory reading.

Who Killed John Lennon? by Fenton Bresler (St. Martin’s Press, 1989). Interesting thesis concerning the possible use of mind control on Mark David Chapman. Better in its analysis of Chapman than in its history of mind control. In my own work, I have encountered data which may help confirm Bresler’s theory.

The Zapping of America, by Paul Brodeur. (MacLeod [Canadian edition] 1976). Contains a good chapter on microwave mind control technology.

The important stories of Martti Koski and Robert Naeslund can be obtained by sending three dollars to: Martti Koski, Kiilinpellontie 2, 21290 Rusko, FINLAND. Koski’s description of his “programming” sessions should not be taken at face value: We cannot always trust the perception of someone whose perception has been altered. His research into the technology of mind control is solid.

---

[1]. Budd Hopkins, Missing Time (New York: Richard Marek Publishers, 1981) and Intruders (New York: Random House, 1987).
[2]. Whitley Strieber, Communion (New York: Beech Tree Books,1987).
[3]. Cannon, “Psychiatric Abuse of UFO Witness,” UFO magazine, Vol. 3, No. 5 (December, 1988).
[4]. Philip Klass, UFO Abductions: A Dangerous Game (Buffalo: Prometheus Books, 1988). Klass makes some sharp observations, which are undercut by his refusal to interview abductees directly. The work has no footnotes and depends heavily on the work of Dr. Martin Orne — of whom more anon.
[5]. See bibliography.
[6]. New York: Bantam Books, 1979.
[7]. See generally Project MKULTRA, the CIA's Program of Research In Behavior Modification, joint hearing before the Select Committee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee on Human Resources, Unites States Senate (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1977).
[8]. Robert Eringer, “Secret Agent Man,” Rolling Stone, 1985.
[9]. John Marks interview with Victor Marchetti (Marks files, available at the National Security Archives, Washington, D.C.).
[10]. In an interview with John Marks, hypnosis expert Milton Kline, a veteran of clandestine experimentation in this field, averred that his work for the government continued. Since the interview took place in 1977, years after the CIA allegedly halted mind control research, we must conclude either that the CIA lied, or that another agency continued the work. In another interview with Marks, former Air Force-CIA liaison L. Fletcher Prouty confirmed that the Department of Defense ran studies either in conjunction with or parallel to those operated by the CIA. (Marks files.)
[11]. Estabrooks, Hypnosis (New York: E.P. Dutton & Co., Inc., 1957 [revised edition]), 13-14.
[12]. A copy of this letter can be found in the Marks files.
[13]. Estabrooks attracted an eclectic group of friends, including J. Edgar Hoover and Alan Watts.
[14]. Interview with daughter Doreen Estabrooks, Marks files, Washington, D.C.
[15]. Martin A. Lee and Bruce Shlain, Acid Dreams (New York: Grove Press, 1985) 3-4; Marks, The Search for the “Manchurian Candidate”, 6-8.
[16]. Marks, ibid. 4-6.
[17]. Edward Hunter, Brainwashing in Red China (New York: Vanguard Press, 1951.). Hunter invented the term “brainwashing” in a September 24, 1950 Miami News article.
[18]. “Japan's germ experiments,” The Globe and Mail (Toronto), May 19, 1982.
[19]. Walter Bowart, Operation Mind Control (New York: Dell, 1978), 191-2, quoting Warren Commission documents. We cannot fairly derive from this statement a sanguine attitude about present Soviet capabilities; in this field, even outdated technology suffices for mischief.
[20]. Marks, The Search for the “Manchurian Candidate”, 60-61. A folk etymology has it that the “MK” of MKULTRA stands for “Mind Kontrol.” According to Marks, TSS prefixed the cryptonyms of all its projects

with these initials. Note, though, that MKULTRA was preceded by a still-mysterious TSS program called QKHILLTOP.
[21]. Marks, The Search for the “Manchurian Candidate”, 224-229. Seven MKULTRA subprojects were continued, under TSS supervision, as MKSEARCH. This project ended in 1972. CIA apologists often proclaim that “brainwashing” research ceased in either 1962 or 1972; these blandishments refer to the TSS projects, not to the ORD work, which remains terra incognita for independent researchers. Marks discovered that the ORD research was so voluminous that retrieving documents via FOIA would have proven unthinkably expensive.
[22]. For a description of the research into parapsychology, see Ronald M. McRae's Mind Wars (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1984). The best book available on a subject which awaits a truly authoritative text.
[23]. Abduction researcher and hypnotherapist Miranda Park, of Lancaster, California, reports that she has viewed such anomalies in abductee MRI scans. See also Whitley Strieber, Transformations (New York: Beech Tree Books, 1988) 246-247. At this writing, both Strieber and Hopkins report initially promising results in their efforts to document the presence of these “extras” in abductees.
[24]. Allegedly, the experiment took place in 1964. However, in Were We Controlled? (New Hyde Park, NY: University Books, 1967), the pseudonymous “Lincoln Lawrence” makes an interesting argument (on page 36) that the demonstration took place some years earlier.
[25]. New York: Harper and Row, 1969. Much of Delgado's work was funded by the Office of Naval Intelligence, a common conduit for CIA funds during the 1950s and '60s. (Gordon Thomas' Journey Into Madness (New York: Bantam, 1989) misleadingly implies that CIA interest in Delgado's work began in 1972.)
[26]. J.M.R. Delgado. “Intracerebral Radio Stimulation and Recording in Completely Free Patients,” Psychotechnology (Robert L. Schwitzgebel and Ralph K. Schwitzgebel, editors; New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1973): 195.
[27]. David Krech, “Controlling the Mind Controllers,” Think 32 (July-August), 1966.
[28]. Delgado, Physical Control of the Mind.
[29]. Delgado, “Intracerebral Radio Stimulation and Recording in Completely Free patients,” 195.
[30]. Note, for example, Charles Hickson's account of the Pascagoula Incident. Charles Hickson and William Mendez, UFO Contact at Pascagoula (Tucson: Wendelle C. Stevens, 1983).
[31]. John Ranelagh, The Agency (New York: Simon and Shuster, 1986): 208. Marchetti casts this story in the form of an amusing anecdote: After much time and expense, a cat was suitably trained and prepared — only, on its first assignment, to be run over by a taxi. Marchetti neglects to point out that nothing stopped the Agency from getting another cat. Or from using a human being.
[32]. Of course, this suggestion raises the knotty question of whether the abductees suffer from a form of schizophrenia, which may also be characterized by “voices.” I refer the reader to the work of Hopkins, Strieber, Thomas Bullard, and others who have described the difficulties of ascribing all abductions to psychotic states.
[33]. Alan W. Scheflin and Edward M. Opton, Jr., The Mind Manipulators (London: Paddington Press, 1978), 347.
[34]. Thomas, Journey Into Madness, 276.
[35]. James Olds, “Hypothalamic Substrates of Reward,” in Physiological Reviews, 1962, 42:554; “Emotional Centers in the Brain,” Science Journal, 1967, 3 (5).
[36]. Vernon Mark and Frank Ervin, Violence and the Brain (New York: Harper and Row, 1970), chapter 12, excerpted in Individual Rights and the Federal Role in Behavior Modification, prepared by the Staff of the Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights of the Committee of the Judiciary, United States Senate (Washington: Government Printing Office, 1974).
[37]. John Lilly, The Scientist (Berkeley, Ronin Publishing, 1988 [revised edition]), 90. Monkeys allowed to stimulate themselves continually via ESB brought themselves to orgasm once every three minutes, sixteen hours a day. Scientific gatherings throughout the world saw motion pictures of these experiments, which surely made spectacular cinema.
[38]. Scheflin and Opton, The Mind Manipulators, 336-337. Heath even monitored his patient's brain responses during the subject's first heterosexual encounter. Such is the nature of the brave new world before us.
[39]. Robert L. Schwitzgebel and Richard M. Bird, “Sociotechnical Design Factors in Remote Instrumentation with Humans in Natural Environments,” Behavior Research Methods and Instrumentation, 1970, 2, 99-105.
[40]. Thomas, Journey Into Madness, 277. In the Behavior Research Methods and Instrumentation article referenced above, Schwitzgebel details how the radio signals may be fed into a telephone line via a modem and thus analyzed by a computer anywhere in the world.
[41]. Scheflin and Opton, The Mind Manipulators, 347-349.
[42]. Louis Tackwood and the Citizen's Research and Investigation Committee, The Glass House Tapes (New

York: Avon, 1973), 226.
[43]. Perry London, Behavior Control (New York: Harper and Row, 1969), 145.
[44]. Scheflin and Opton, The Mind Manipulators, 351-353; Tackwood, The Glass House Tapes, 228.
[45]. “Beepers in kids' heads could stop abductors,” Las Vegas Sun, Oct. 27, 1987.
[46]. Lilly, The Scientist, 91.
[47]. Marks, The Search for the “Manchurian Candidate”, 151-154.
[48]. Interestingly, Lilly has come out of the closet as a sort of proto-Strieber; The Scientist recounts his close interaction with alien (though not necessarily extraterrestrial) forces which he labels “solid state entities.”
[49]. The story of Deep Trance, an MKULTRA “insider” who provided invaluable information, is somewhat involved. I do not know who Trance is/was and Marks may not know either. He contacted Trance via the writer of an article published shortly before research on The Search for the “Manchurian Candidate” began, addressing his informant “Dear Source whose anonymity I respect.” I respect it too — hence my reticence to name the aforementioned article, which may mark a trail to Trance. The fact that I have not followed this trail would not prevent others from doing so.
[50]. London, Behavior Control, 139.
[51]. See generally, UFO magazine, Vol. 4, No. 2; especially the interesting contribution by Whitley Strieber.
[52]. Lawrence, Were We Controlled?, 36-37; Anita Gregory, “Introduction to Leonid L. Vasiliev's Experiments In Distant Influence,” in Psychic Warfare: Fact Or Fiction (editor: John White) (Nottinghamshire: Aquarian, 1988) 34-57.
[53]. Lawrence, Were We Controlled?, 38.
[54]. Bowart, Operation Mind Control, 261-264.
[55]. Ibid. 263.
[56]. Lawrence, Were We Controlled?, 52.
[57]. Human Drug Testing by the CIA, 202.
[58]. Note especially the Supreme Court's decision in Central Intelligence Agency et al. v. Sims, et al. (No. 83-1075; decided April 16, 1986). The egregious and dangerous majority opinion in this case held that disclosure of the names of scientists and institutions involved in MKULTRA posed an “unacceptable risk of revealing 'intelligence sources.' The decisions of the [CIA] Director, who must of course be familiar with 'the whole picture,' as judges are not, are worthy of great deference...it is conceivable that the mere explanation of why information must be withheld can convey valuable information to a foreign intelligence agency.” How do we square this continuing need for secrecy with the CIA's protestations that MKULTRA achieved little success, that the studies were conducted within the Nuremberg statutes governing medical experiments, and that the research was made available in the open literature?
[59]. Letter, P.A. Lindstrom to Robert Naeslund, July 27, 1983; copy available from Martti Koski, Kiilinpellontie 2, 21290 Rusko, Finland. Lindstrom writes that he fully agrees with Lincoln Lawrence, author of Were We Controlled?
[60]. Bowart, Operation Mind Control, 265. I have attempted without success to contact Dr. Lindstrom.
[61]. Bowart, Operation Mind Control, 233-249. This interview was reprinted without attribution in a bizarre compendium of UFO rumors called The Matrix, compiled by “Valdamar Valerian” (actually John Grace, allegedly a Captain working for Air Force intelligence).
[62]. Robert Anton Wilson, “Adventures with Head Hardware,” Magical Blend, 23, July 1989.
[63]. Michael Hutchison, Mega Brain (New York: Ballantine, 1986) 199-201; Gerald Oster, “Auditory Beats in the Brain,” Scientific American, September, 1973.
[64]. Marilyn Ferguson, The Brain Revolution (New York: Taplinger, 1973), 90.
[65]. Ibid., 91-92. The presence of delta in a waking subject can indicate pathology.
[66]. Bio-Pacer promotional and price sheet, available from Lindemann Laboratories, 3463 State Street, #264, Santa Barbara, CA 93105.
[67]. Hutchison, Mega Brain, 117-118. Compare Light's observations about “the grant game” to Sid Gottlieb's protestations that nearly all “mind control” research was openly published.
[68]. Thomas Martinez and John Gunther, The Brotherhood of Murder (New York: McGraw-Hill, 1988), 230.
[69]. Interview, Sandy Monroe of the Los Angeles office of the Christic Institute.
[70]. See generally Paul Brodeur, The Zapping of America (Toronto, George J. MacLeod, 1977).
[71]. Until recently, the American Embassy was on a street named after the composer.
[72]. It was finally determined that the microwaves were used to receive transmissions from bugs planted within the embassy. DARPA Director George H. Heimeier went on record stating that PANDORA was never designed to study “microwaves as a surveillance tool.” See Anne Keeler, “Remote Mind Control Technology,” Full

Disclosure #15. I would note that the Soviet embassy was “bugged and waved” in Canada during the 1950s, and according to the Los Angeles Times (June 5, 1989), the Soviet embassy in Britain had been similarly affected.
[73]. Ronald I. Adams and R.A. Williams, Biological Effects of Electromagnetic Radiation (Radiowaves and Microwaves) Eurasian Communist Countries, (Defense Intelligence Agency, March 1976.) Brodeur notes that much of the work ascribed to the Soviets in this report was actually first accomplished by scientists in the United States. Keeler argues that this report constitutes an example of “mirror imaging” — i.e., parading domestic advances as a foreign threat, the better to pry funding from a suitably-fearful Congress.
[74]. Keeler, “Remote Mind Control Technology.”
[75]. R.J. MacGregor, “A Brief Survey of Literature Relating to Influence of Low Intensity Microwaves on Nervous Function” (Santa Monica: RAND Corporation, 1970).
[76]. Keeler, “Remote Mind Control Technology.”
[77]. Larry Collins, “Mind Control,” Playboy, January 1990.
[78]. Allan H. Frey, “Behavioral Effects of Electromagnetic Energy,” Symposium on Biological Effects and Measurements of Radio Frequencies/Microwaves, DeWitt G. Hazzard, editor (U.S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare, 1977).
[79]. quoted in The Application of Tesla's Technology in Today's World (Montreal: Lafferty, Hardwood & Partners, Ltd., 1978).
[80]. Keeler, “Remote Mind Control Technology.”
[81]. L. George Lawrence, “Electronics and Brain Control,” Popular Electronics, July 1973.
[82]. Susan Schiefelbein, “The Invisible Threat,” Saturday Review, September 15, 1979.
[83]. E. Preston, “Studies on the Nervous System, Cardiovascular Function and Thermoregulation,” in The Biological Effects of Radio-Frequency and Microwave Radiation, edited by H.M. Assenheim (Ottawa, Canada: National Research Council of Canada, 1979), 138-141.
[84]. Robert O. Becker, The Body Electric (New York: William Morrow, 1985) 318-319.
[85]. Ibid.
[86]. Ibid., 321.
[87]. See Bowart's Operation Mind Control, page 218, for an interesting example of this “rationalization” process at work in the case of Sirhan Sirhan, who was convicted for the assassination of Robert F. Kennedy. In prison, Sirhan was hypnotized by Dr. Bernard Diamond, who instructed Sirhan to climb the bars of his cage like a monkey. He did so. After the trance was removed, Sirhan was shown tapes of his actions; he insisted that he “acted like a monkey” of his own free will — he claimed he wanted the exercise.
[88]. Keeler suggests that the proposal was revealed only because Schapitz' sensationalistic implications may have worked to discredit — and therefore hide — the real research. Personally, I don't accept this argument, but I respect Keeler's instincts enough to repeat her caveat here.
[89]. Margaret Cheney's Tesla: A Man Out of Time (New York: Dell, 1981), the most reliable book in the sea of wild speculation surrounding this extraordinary scientist, confirms Tesla's early work with the psychological effects of electromagnetic radiation. See especially pages 101-104; note also the afterword, in which we learn that certain government agencies have kept important research by Tesla hidden from the general public.
[90]. Noted in Lawrence, Were We Controlled?, 29.
[91]. Particularly one Thomas Bearden of Huntsville, Alabama; I have in my possession a document written by Bearden associate Andrew Michrowski which identifies Bearden as an intelligence agent for an undisclosed agency.
[92]. Kathleen McAuliffe, “The Mind Fields,” Omni Magazine, February 1985.
[93]. May 5, 1985.
[94]. I refer to an individual who later wrote a very clear-headed and thoughtful letter to Dr. Paul Lowinger, who has graciously made his files available to me. For now, I feel compelled to withhold this person's name.
[95]. Cameron became president of the American Psychiatric Association, the Canadian Psychiatric Association, and the World Association of Psychiatrists. He previously sat on the Nuremberg panel, helping to draw up the statutes governing ethical medical behavior!
[96]. In particular, Opton and Scheflin's overview, though excellent in scope and detail, continually seeks reassuring interpretations of evidence which points toward more distressing conclusions.
[97]. Martin T. Orne, “Can a hypnotized subject be compelled to carry out otherwise unacceptable behavior?” International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, 1972, vol. 20, 101-117.
[98]. Marks mentions, in a letter to Orne, the latter's claim to have been an unwitting participant in subproject 84. Yet the papers released concerning subproject 84 clearly establish the Agency's willingness to put Orne in the know; Orne's letter admitted to Marks that he was made aware of his CIA sponsorship (Marks, The Search

for the “Manchurian Candidate”, 172-173). In an interview with Marks, Orne discounted the story of Candy Jones (which we shall recount later) by insisting that if such an experiment had occurred “someone in some agency would have come to me.” Why would they come to him about a super-secret project, unless Orne had a high security clearance and worked extensively with intelligence agencies? Note also that Orne conducted extensive studies for the Office of Naval Research from June 1, 1968 to May 31, 1971. He has also been funded by DARPA. Moreover, I consider noteworthy the fact that Orne somehow became president of the Society for Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis despite the fact that the organization had decided not to have a president. (This fact was related to Marks by a prominent hypnosis specialist in an off-the-record interview that I probably wasn't supposed to see.)

[99]. The story has been told many times. See Turner and Christian's The Killing of Robert F. Kennedy, 207-208; also Peter J. Reiter, Antisocial or Criminal Acts and Hypnosis (Springfield, Illinois: Charles C. Thomas, 1958).

[100]. John G. Watkins, “Antisocial behavior under hypnosis: Possible or impossible?” International Journal for Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, 1972, vol. 20, 95-100.

[101]. Milton H. Erickson, “An experimental investigation of the possible anti-social use of hypnosis,” Psychiatry, 1939, vol. 2. Erickson argues that if a hypnotist has convinced his subject to misperceive reality, then resulting actions cannot be considered “anti-social,” for the actions would be acceptable within the subject's internal reality construct. This argument strikes me as semantic quibbling.

[102]. See generally Flo Conway and Jim Seigelman, Snapping (New York: Lippincott, 1978).

[103]. Lee and Schlain, Acid Dreams, 8-9.

[104]. John Marks interview with Victor Marchetti, December 19, 1977 (Marks files).

[105]. Martin T. Orne, “On the Mechanisms of Posthypnotic Amnesia,” The International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, 1966, vol. 14, 121-134. Orne's work with post-hypnotic amnesia was funded by NIMH, the Air Force Office of Scientific Research, and the Office of Naval Research. I should like to hear what innocent explanation, if any, the Air Force has to offer to explain their interest in post-hypnotic amnesia.

[106]. Bowart, Operation Mind Control, 242-243.

[107]. Obviously Allan Dulles. This may have been a hypnotically-induced delusion; on the other hand, Dulles' legendary sexual rapacity makes this claim rather less unlikely than one might first assume.

[108]. Always the best indicator of whether or not hypnosis is genuine; I can't understand why Orne didn't use this test in the Bianchi case.

[109]. Herbert Spiegel, “Hypnosis and evidence: Help or hindrance,” Ann. N.Y. Acad. Sci.; 1980, 347, 73-85.

[110]. See, for example, Kroger, Hypnosis and Behavior Modification, 21-22.

[111]. See especially Klass, UFO Abductions: A Dangerous Game, 60-61. Orne, interviewed here, makes reference to the work summarized in his article “The use and misuse of hypnosis in court” (International Journal of Clinical Hypnosis, 1979, vol. 27, 311-341.)

[112]. Klass argues that ufologists, in conducting hypnotic regression sessions, inadvertently cue their subjects. A close reading of his text reveals that he never proves or claims that such “cues” have taken place in any individual instance; he simply believes that cueing might have occurred. Had Klass been more willing to deal with abductees directly, he might have found evidence of cause and effect; as it stands, his argument really amounts to no more than a suggestion. For all that, I find his ideas regarding the running of “clean” hypnotic regression sessions potentially valuable.

[113]. Marks, The Search for the “Manchurian Candidate”, 34-37.

[114]. Donald Bain, The Control of Candy Jones (Chicago, Playboy Press, 1976).

[115]. The use of hypnotized couriers in warfare goes back to the 19th century.

[116]. Estabrooks, Hypnotism, 193-214.

[117]. John Marks interview with Milton Kline, December 22, 1977 (Marks files). In another interview, Professor Clare Young (a colleague of Estabrooks' at Colgate University) confirmed that Estabrooks' hypnosis work for the government has never been published.

[118]. Or could her marriage have been part of the program? “Long John,” as he was popularly known, was famous in UFO circles, and had provided a forum for such early-day contactees as Howard Menger. He also knew Jackie Gleason, a prominent (if unlikely) name in the “crashed disk” rumor vaults. Could Candy have been assigned to discover what Nebel knew?

[119]. Marks files. John Marks did excellent work on the Candy Jones story; he erred — almost unforgivably — on the side of conservatism when he refused to include information about this incident in his book. I know the name of the institute involved; however, since Candy saw fit to keep this aspect of her story secret (probably for sound legal reasons), I shall follow her lead.

[120]. Scheflin and Opton, The Mind Manipulators, 446-447.
[121]. Interviews, Marks files. One of Marks' informants offered the interesting speculation that Candy's torture sessions were not conducted in the field, but in the lab — her entire mission might have been a hypno-programmed fantasy.
[122]. The information about Candy's CIA files stems from a telephone interview with Candy Jones. A problem looms here: CIA cover stories unravel like the skin of an onion; once you remove the outer layer, the next lie is revealed. In the case of Candy Jones, the substrata of buncombe involves allegations that she willingly complied with the CIA, and used Jensen's hypnosis experiments as a rationalization for her compliance. Such is the explanation offered by certain of Marks' informants; alas, Opton and Scheflin seem to have bought this line. Anyone familiar with the vile acts of self-degradation to which Candy's programmers subjected her will laugh this story out of court. No one, short of a severely psychotic masochist, would willingly undergo what she went through.
[123]. Marks files.
[124]. William Kroger, Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis (Philadelphia: Lippincott, 1963), 299.
[125]. Recently, ufologist Jim Moseley, an acquaintance of Candy's, has claimed that an unidentified source on the Nebel's "inner circle" once, off-the-record, pronounced Candy's story "a crock." This assertion deserves careful and respectful consideration. Still, Moseley won't identify his source, and we have no way of telling if this insider spoke from instinct or certain knowledge, or indeed, what he really meant. Did he feel Candy was fantasizing or fibbing? If the former, why did her hallucinations match details of MKULTRA released only after publication of her book? If the latter, how are we to explain the many hypnotic regression tapes, at least some of which were made available to outside investigators? (Fairly elaborate, for a hoax.) In any case, how could Candy have known the fact (confirmed by Marks' associates) that Kroger taught "Jensen" at a certain West-coast institute? Why, if the story was "a crock," would Candy risk libel suits by naming — to associates and investigators, if not to the general public — real-life hypnotherapists? All in all, I would suggest that Moseley's "insider" was speaking glibly, and did not know the true facts.
[126]. Philadelphia, Lippincott, 1976.
[127]. Ibid., 415.
[128]. Similar paranoid outbreaks led to the dissolution of Dr. Richard Neal's UFO abductee group in Los Angeles, according to a telephone interview I had with Dr. Neal.
[129]. Affidavit of Dr. Simpson-Kallas in the case of Sirhan-Sirhan, 1973; see Bowart, Operation Mind Control, 225.
[130]. All true MPs have experienced some form of abuse or trauma, psychological or physical, during childhood.
[131]. One was ritually abused in an occult setting. If I were a "spy-chiatrist" scouting potential fodder for mind control experiments, I would seek out abused children from military families. (A military background would ensure that the "right" doctor gets access to the child.) Abduction researchers should look for such a pattern.
[132]. I refer here to the vast upsurge in alien abductions which took place that year; see generally Kevin Randle, The October Scenario (Middle Coast, 1988). Of course, abductions (or, according to my hypothesis, disguised mind control operations) occurred previous to this year.
[133]. John Marks interview with Milton Kline, December 22, 1977 (Marks files).
[134]. Brenda Butler et al., Sky Crash, expanded edition (London: Grafton Books, 1986), 305-321, 354-355.
[135]. Telephone interview with Nancy Wright.
[136]. Telephone interview with Miranda Parks.
[137]. William Moore, "UFOs and the U.S. Government," Focus, vol. 4, June 30, 1989. Moore's role in the affair strikes me as highly questionable, even scandalous — although at least here we have one instance of direct and irrefutable "insider" testimony of government harassment.
[138]. Some have also raised questions about his psychiatric treatment of Oswald assassin Jack Ruby. I find it odd that a CIA mind control veteran — who did not reside or practice in Dallas — should have been assigned to the Ruby case.
[139]. Samuel Chavkin, The Mind Stealers (New York: Houghton Mifflin, 1978), 96-107.
[140]. Raymond Fowler, The Andreasson Affair (New York: Prentice Hall, 1979).
[141]. New York: Warner Books, 1989; 198-202.
[142]. Ruth Montgomery, Aliens Among Us (Ballantine, 1985), 49. My article "Psychiatric Abuse of UFO Witness," referred to earlier, also documents this phenomenon.
[143]. Chung-Kwang Chou and Arthur W. Guy, "Quantization of Microwave Biological Effects," in Symposium of Biological Effects and Measurement of Radio Frequency/Microwaves, edited by Dewitt G.

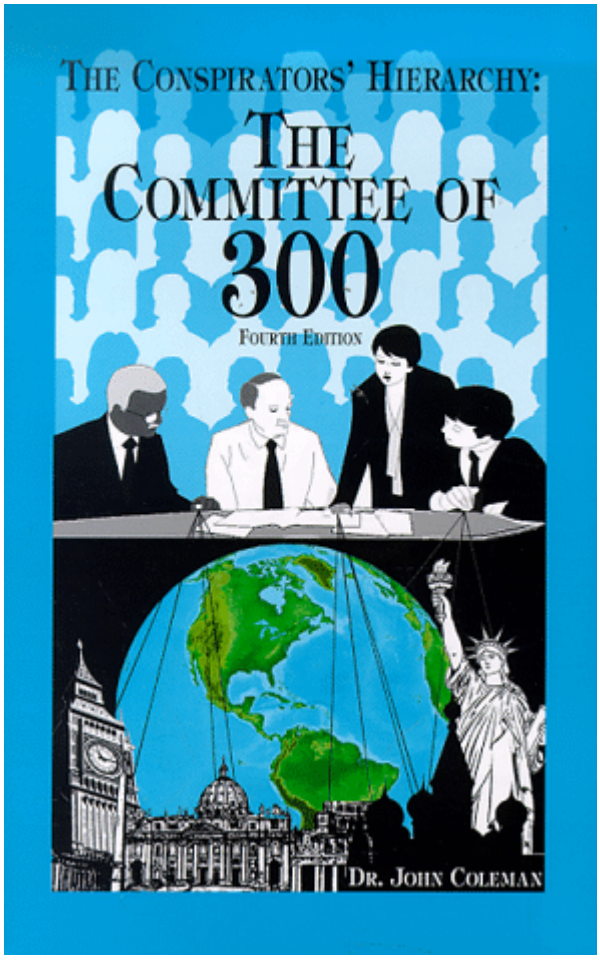
Hazzard (U.S. Department of Health, Education and Welfare, 1977).
[144]. Miami Herald, May 28, 1984 and June 6, 1984; National Examiner, Vol. 22, No. 18, April 30, 1985. Although the Examiner is a supermarket tabloid, and therefore a questionable source, this periodical has rendered researchers the service of printing the X-ray of Petit's brain, showing the implant.
[145]. Los Angeles Times, March 28, 1988.
[146]. Raymond Fowler, The Andreasson Affair, Phase Two (Reward, 1982). This book includes rare photographs of the unmarked helicopters which have plagued this abduction victim and her family.
[147]. A mutual friend described for me an incident in which the former SEAL, mistakenly perceiving a threat, almost instantly felled, and nearly killed, a man twice his size. Whatever the truth of my informant's other statements, he certainly has received advanced combat training.
[148]. Fenton Bresler, Who Killed John Lennon? (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1989), 45-46.
[149]. Bowart, Operation Mind Control, 27-42.
[150]. Denise Winn, The Manipulated Mind (London, Octagon Press, 1983), 72-73; Bresler, Who Killed John Lennon?, 41; see generally: Peter Watson, War on the Mind (London: Hutchison, 1978) (Watson broke the story on Narut for the London Times).
[151]. Larry Collins, “Mind Control,” Playboy, January 1990.
[152]. John Marks interview with Milton Kline, December 22, 1977 (Marks files).
[153]. Richard A. Gabriel, No More Heroes (New York: Hill and Wang, 1987), 124.
[154]. Ibid., 150-151.
[155]. See generally: Mark Lane, Conversations With Americans (Simon and Shuster, 1970); A.J. Langguth, Hidden Terrors (New York: Pantheon, 1978).
[156]. John G. Fuller, The Interrupted Journey (New York: Dell, 1966).
[157]. This detail plays a part in other abductions — for example, it crops up in the Betty Andreasson Luca case. See Raymond Fowler, The Andreasson Affair (New York: Bantam, 1980), 50-51.
[158]. Stanton Friedman, for example; the reader is referred to his 1988 Whole Life Expo lecture, “UFOs: A Cosmic Watergate.”
[159]. The Body Electric, 196-202.
[160]. The Fish map has received wide discussion; for a representative sampling, the reader is directed to the aforementioned Friedman lecture (note 3); Terence Dickenson, “The Zeti Reticuli Incident,” Astronomy, December, 1974; Klass, UFO Abductions: A Dangerous Game, 20-23; and John Rimmer, The Evidence For Alien Abductions (Weillingborough: Aquarian, 1984), 88-92. Incidentally, Klass has proposed to Friedman a test regarding the ability to recall such material accurately under hypnotic regression; Friedman, for reasons best known to himself, declined the offer to participate.
[161]. Jacques Vallee, Dimensions (Chicago: Contemporary, 1988), 266.
[162]. See Rimmer, The Evidence For Alien Abductions, 91-92. None of this is meant to denigrate Marjorie Fish, whose work has received universal praise.
[163]. Fuller, The Interrupted Journey, 18-19.
[164]. Athan G. Theoharis and John Stuart Cox, The Boss: J. Edgar Hoover and the Great American Inquisition (Philadelphia: Temple University Press, 1978), 325; Chip Berlet, “The Hunt for the Red Menace,” Covert Action Information Bulletin, No. 31 (Winter, 1989); J. Edgar Hoover, COINTELPRO (memo), March 4, 1968.
[165]. For example, Delgado's work pre-dates the Hill incident. Moreover, one of the few pages released on MKULTRA subproject 119 concerns “a critical review of the literature and scientific developments related to the recording, analysis and interpretation of bioelectric signals from the human organism, and activation of human behavior by remote means.” The review took place in 1960-61. Presumably, the CIA wanted to do something with the information so derived.
[166]. “UFO Abductions Workshop,” Whole Life Expo, March, 1988.
[167]. Ludwig Mayer, Die Technik der Hypnose (Munich: J.F. Lehmanns Verlag, 1953), 225; quoted in: Heinz E. Hammerschlag (translation: John Cohen), Hypnotism and Crime (Hollywood: Wilshire Book Company, 1957), 24-25.
[168]. Numerous articles discuss this possibility; see, for example, William C. Coe et al. “An Approach Toward Isolating Factors that Influence Antisocial Conduct in Hypnosis,” The International Journal of Clinical and Experimental Hypnosis, 1972, Vol. XX, No. 2, 118-131, as well as other reports in that issue. The difference between the laboratory and the “field” settings may account for success of Mayer's experiment and the apparent failure of the “aliens.”
[169]. For a description of a quite similar experiment conducted under CIA auspices in 1954, see “CIA Able To Control Minds By Hypnosis, Data Shows,” The Washington Post, February 19, 1978.

[170]. Abductee interview, “Veronica.” The reader will, I hope, forgive my use of a pseudonym here. For the most part, I hope to deal in this work with published cases. Suffice it to say, Veronica's testimony proved fascinating, troubling, convoluted, and problematical; in spite of all the questions raised by this case, I still believe it to have substantial bearing on my thesis. The reader will forgive me for severing relations with this abductee before completing an investigation; she keeps a mini-armory next to her bed.
[171]. Abductee interview, “Veronica.” At one point, she ran an informal abductee/contactee group; as a result, she was able to describe many other cases to me.
[172]. One ARTICHOKE document explicitly details a failed attempt to use hypnosis to induce the assassination of a foreign leader. The document is undated; the experiment took place January 8-January 15, 1954. Document reproduced in CIA Papers, Vol. 1 (Ann Arbor, MI: Capitol Information Associates, 1986), 39-41.
[173]. John Marks interview of Prof. Jack Tracktir (Marks files).
[174]. Jenny Randles, Abductions (London: Robert Hale, 1988), 52-53.
[175]. As in, for example, the Palle Hardrup affair.
[176]. Private correspondence, Robert Durant to the author.
[177]. Abductee interview, “Polly.” I won't give the facial details here; suffice it to say that this abductor, like Margary's (noted earlier), has something of the smell of greasepaint about him.
[178]. The base is mentioned in Ann Druffel's and D. Scott Rogo's The Tujunga Canyon Contacts (New York: Signet, 1989) [expanded edition], 157.
[179]. On the other hand, Armstrong asks us to accept his own channelled material, so he would have an awkward time should he choose to challenge the “psychic impressions” of others.
[180]. Jacques Vallee, Messengers of Deception (Berkeley: And/Or Press, 1979), 192-193.
[181]. Curtis G. Fuller (editor), Proceedings of the First International UFO Congress (New York: Warner Books, 1980), 307.
[182]. For information on Pelley, see John Roy Carlson, Under Cover (New York: Dutton, 1943).
[183]. Gerald B. Bryan, Psychic Dictatorship In America (Los Angeles: Truth Research, 1940). An essential book-length expose of Ballardism. One of Bryan's sources alleges that Ballard, before founding the I AM group, may have practiced some variety of black magic.
[184]. The student should carefully compare I AM dogma with the available information on pre-Third Reich occultism; the best sources are James Webb's masterful analyses, The Occult Establishment and The Occult Underground (La Salle, Illinois: Open Court Publishing, 1976).
[185]. Vallee, Messengers Of Deception, 192-194.
[186]. Even a cursory examination of Williamson's Secret of the Andes (London: Neville Spearman, 1961), written under the pseudonym Brother Philip, will reveal the I AM connections.
[187]. Personal sources. Van Tassell's “Integration,” a domed structure allegedly built under extra-terrestrial guidance (located near 29 Palms, California) prominently displays, to this day, key I AM artifacts such as the portraits of Jesus and Saint Germain commissioned by Ballard.
[188]. “The Afghan Arms Pipeline,” Covert Action Information Bulletin No. 30 (Summer, 1988).
[189]. Telephone interview with John Judge.
[190]. Village of Oak Creek, Arizona: Entheos, 1989, 119. I can't recall ever encountering another book title which contained so many grammatical errors. Armstrong's accomplishment is genuinely impressive.
[191]. For further information on I AM, Prophet's organization, saucer cults, and other groups, see the appropriate sections of J. Gordon Melton's Encyclopedia of American Religion.
[192]. Ruth Montgomery, Aliens Among Us (New York: Ballantine, 1985), 128-188.
[193]. Penny Harper, “Are Aliens Taking Over the Earth?” Whole Life Times, January 1990.
[194]. John A. Keel, Why UFOs: Operation Trojan Horse (New York: Manor Books, 1970) [paperback edition], 228.
[195]. Hickson and Mendez, UFO Contact At Pascagoula, 242.
[196]. Strieber, Communion, 134; Transformation, 109.
[197]. “Contactee: Firsthand,” UFO magazine, Vol. 4, No. 2, 1989.
[198]. Telephone conversation, Tom Adams.
[199]. Ed Conroy, Report On Communion (New York: William Morrow, 1989), 365-385.
[200]. “Contactee: Firsthand,” UFO magazine, Vol. 3, No. 3.
[201]. New York: Zebra, 1971. See especially note 2, Chap. 9.

http://www.whale.to/b/cannon.html

[“The Controllers” released circa 1990.]

http://www.xs4all.nl/~sm4csi/nwo/MindControl/TheControllers.htm



Released by RareReactor.tk

FOREWARD

In my career as a professional intelligence officer, I had many occasions to access highly classified documents, but during service as a political science officer in the field in Angola, West Africa, I had the opportunity to view a series of top secret classified documents which were unusually explicit. What I saw filled me with anger and resentment and launched me on a course from which I have not deviated, namely to uncover what power it is that controls and manages the British and United States governments.

I was thoroughly familiar with all of the well known secret societies such as the Royal Institute for International Affairs (RIIA), the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), the Bilderbergers, Trilaterals, the Zionists, Freemasonry, Bolshevism-Rosicrucianism and all of the spinoffs of these secret societies. As an intelligence officer, and even before that as a young student in the course of my studies at the British Museum in London, I had cut my eye teeth on all of them, plus a good number of others with whom I imagined Americans were familiar.

But when I came to the United States in 1969, I found that names like the Order of St. John of Jerusalem, Club of Rome the German Marshall Fund, the Cini Foundation, the Round Table, the Fabianists, the Venetian Black Nobility, the Mont Pelerin Society, Hellfire Clubs, and many others were at best totally unknown here, or else their true functions were at best but poorly understood, if at all.

In 1969-1970 set about remedying the situation in a series of monographs and cassette tapes. Much to my surprise I soon found plenty of people willing to quote these names as if they had known of them all of their writing careers, but who were not in the least bit knowledgeable about the subjects, yet quite unwilling to state the source of their lately acquired information. I consoled myself with the thought that imitation is the sincerest form of flattery.

I pursued my investigations, pressing on in the face of severe risks, attacks on myself and my wife, financial losses,

continual harassment, threats and calumny, all part of a carefully-crafted and orchestrated program to discredit me, run by government agents and informers, embedded in the so-called Christian rightwing, the "Identity Movement" and rightwing "patriotic" groups. These agents operated, and still operate, under cover of strong and fearless outspoken opposition to Judaism their main enemy, they would have us believe. These agent-informers are led and controlled by a group of homosexuals who are well-liked and well-respected by political and religious conservatives all across the United States.

Their program of calumny, lies and hatred, disinformation about my work, even lately attributing it to other writers, continues unabated but it has not had the desired effect. I shall carry on with my task until I have finally ripped off the mask of the entire secret upper-level parallel government that runs Britain and the U.S. This book is a part of that ongoing effort.

Dr. John Coleman, November 1991

TABLE OF CONTENTS

FORWARD

AN OVERVIEW AND SOME CASE HISTORIES

INSTITUTIONS THROUGH WHICH
CONTROL IS EXERCISED

PAST AND PRESENT INSTITUTIONS/ORGANIZATIONS
AND THOSE DIRECTLY UNDER INFLUENCE OF THE
COMMITTEE OF 300

SPECIAL FOUNDATIONS AND INTEREST GROUPS

BANKS

LEGAL ASSOCIATIONS AND LAWYERS

ACCOUNTANTS/AUDITORS

TAVISTOCK INSTITUTIONS IN THE UNITED STATES

BIBLIOGRAPHY, SUMMARIES AND NOTES

AN OVERVIEW AND SOME CASE HISTORIES

Certainly a fair number of us are aware that the people running our government are not the people who are really in control of political and economic matters, domestic and foreign. This has led many to seek the truth in the alternative press, those newsletter writers who, like me, have sought, but not always found what it is that is making the United States terminally ill. "Seek and ye shall find" has not always been the case with this group. What we did find was that the people walk in great darkness, mostly not caring or bothering to find out where their country is headed, firm in the belief that it will always be there for them. This is the way the largest population group has been manipulated to react, and their attitude plays right into the hands of the secret government.

We frequently hear about "they " doing this, that or the other. "They" seem literally to be able to get away with murder. "They" increase taxes, send our sons and daughters to die in wars that do not benefit our country. "They" seem above our reach, out of sight, frustratingly nebulous when it comes to taking action against "them." No one seems able to clearly identify who "they" are. It is a situation that has pertained for decades. During the course of this book, we shall identify the mysterious "they" and then, after that, it is up to the people to remedy their situation.

On 30th April 1981, I wrote a monograph disclosing the existence of the Club of Rome identifying it as a Committee of 3OO subversive body. This was the first mention of both of these organizations in the United States. I warned readers not to be fooled by the feeling that the article was far-fetched and I drew a parallel between my article and the warning issued by the Bavarian government when the secret plans of the Illuminati fell into its hands. We shall return to the Club of Rome and the role of the Committee of 300 in U.S. affairs later herein.

Many of the predictions made in that 1981 article have since come to pass, such as the unknown Felipe Gonzalez becoming prime minister of Spain, and Mitterand being returned to power in France; the downfall of Giscard D' Estang and Helmut Schmidt, the return to power of Swedish nobleman and Committee

of 300 member Olaf Palme, the nullifying of Reagan's presidency and the destruction of our steel, auto and housing industries in terms of the post-industrial zero-growth order handed down by the Committee of 300.

The importance of Palme lies in the use made of him by the Club of Rome to deliver technology to the Soviet Union on the forbidden list of the U.S. Customs, and Palme's world-wide communications network employed to train the spotlight on the phony Iran hostage crisis, while he shuttled back and forth between Washington and Teheran in an effort to undermine the sovereign integrity of the U.S. and place the phony crisis in the realm of a Committee of 300 institution, viz, the World Court at The Hague, Holland.

In what is in fact an open conspiracy against God and man, which includes enslaving the majority of humans left on this earth after wars, plagues and mass-murder have done with them is not well hidden. In the intelligence community, it is taught that the best way to hide something is to place it in open view. As an example of the foregoing, when Germany wanted to hide its prize new Messerschmidt fighter plane in 1938, the aircraft was put on display at the Paris Air Show. While secret agents and spies were collecting information from hollow tree trunks and from behind loose bricks in a wall, the information they sought was staring them right in the face.

The upper-level parallel secret government does not operate from dank basements and secret underground chambers. It places itself in full view in the White House, Congress and in Number 10 Downing Street and the Houses of Parliament. It is akin to those weird and supposedly terrifying "monster" films, where the monster appears with distorted features, long hair and even longer teeth, growling and slavering all over the place. This is distraction, the REAL MONSTERS wear business suits and drive to work on Capitol Hill in limousines.

These men are IN OPEN VIEW. These men are the servants of the One World Government-New World Order. Like the rapist who stops to offer his victim a friendly ride, he does not LOOK like the monster he is. If he did, his intended victim would run off

screaming in fright. The same applies to government at all levels. President Bush does not LOOK like a dutiful servant of the upper-level parallel government, but make no mistake about it, he is as much a MONSTER as are those horrors found in horror-movies.

Stop for a moment and consider how President Bush ordered the brutal slaying of 150,000 Iraqi troops, in a convoy of military vehicles carrying white flags, on their way back to Iraq under Geneva Convention rules of agreed disengagement and withdrawal. Imagine the horror of the Iraqi troops when, in spite of waving their white flags, they were mowed down by American aircraft. In another part of the front, 12,000 Iraqi soldiers were buried alive in trenches they occupied. Is that not MONSTROUS in the truest sense of the word? From where did President Bush get his orders to act in this MONSTROUS fashion? He got them from the Royal Institute for International Affairs (RIIA) who received its mandate from the Committee of 300, also known as the "Olympians."

As we shall see, even the "Olympians" do not hide their faces. Often times they put on a show which could be likened to the Paris Air Show, even as conspiracy buffs spend their time in fruitless searching in the wrong places and in the wrong direction. Note how the Queen, Elizabeth II, performs the ceremonial opening of the British Parliament? There, in full view is the head of the Committee of 300. Have you ever witnessed the swearing-in ceremony of a United States President? There in full view is another member of the Committee of 300. The problem is only one of perception.

Who are the conspirators who serve the mighty all-powerful Committee of 300? The better-informed of our citizens are aware that there is a conspiracy and that the conspiracy goes under various names such as the Illuminati, Freemasonry, the Round Table, the Milner Group. To them the CFR and the Trilaterals represent most of what they do not like in regard to domestic and foreign policy. Some even know that the Round Table has a big input into United States affairs through the British ambassador in Washington. The problem is that real hard information on the treasonous activities of members of the invisible Government is very hard to come by.

I quote the profound statement made by the prophet Hosea, which is found in the Christian Bible: "My people perish for lack of knowledge." Some may already have heard my expose of the foreign aid scandal, in which work I named several conspiratorial organizations, whose number is legion. Their final objective was the overthrow of the U.S. Constitution and the merging of this country, chosen by God as HIS country, with a godless One World-New World Order Government which will return the world to conditions far worse than existed in the Dark Ages.

Let us talk about actual case histories, the attempt to communize and deindustrialize Italy. The Committee of 300 long ago decreed that there shall be a smaller—much smaller—and better world, that is, their idea of what constitutes a better world. the myriads of useless eaters consuming scarce natural resources were to be culled. Industrial progress supports population growth. Therefore the command to multiply and subdue the earth found in Genesis had to be subverted.

This called for an attack upon Christianity; the slow but sure disintegration of industrial nation states; the destruction of hundreds of millions of people, referred to by the Committee of 300 as "surplus population," and the removal of any leader who dared to stand in the way of the Committee's global planning to reach the foregoing objectives.

Two of the Committee's earliest targets were Italy and Pakistan. The late Aldo Moro, Prime Minister of Italy, was one leader who opposed "zero growth" and population reductions planned for his country, thereby incurring the wrath of the Club of Rome commissioned by the "Olympians" to carry out its policies in this regard. In a Rome courtroom on November 1Oth, 1982, a close friend of Moro's testified that the former prime minister was threatened by an agent of the Royal Institute for International Affairs (RIIA) who is also a Committee of 300 member while he was still the U.S. Secretary of State. The meteoric rise of the man the witness named as Kissinger will be dealt with later.

It will be recalled that Prime Minister Moro was kidnaped by the Red Brigades in 1978 and subsequently brutally shot to death.

It was at the trial of members of the Red Brigades that several of them testified to the fact that they knew of high-level U.S. involvement in the plot to kill Moro. When threatening Moro, Kissinger was obviously not carrying out U.S. foreign policy, but rather acting according to instructions received from the Club of Rome, the foreign-policy arm of the Committee of 3OO.

The witness who delivered the bombshell in open court was a close associate of Moro's, Gorrado Guerzoni. His explosive testimony was broadcast over Italian television and radio on November lOth, 1982, and printed in several Italian newspapers yet this vital information was suppressed in the U.S. Those famous bastions of freedom with a compelling right to know, the Washington Post and the New York Times, did not think it important to even print a single line of Guerzoni's testimony.

Nor was the news carried by any of the wire services or television stations. The fact that Italy's Aldo Moro had been a leading politician for decades, and who was kidnaped in broad daylight in the spring of 1978, all of his bodyguards butchered in cold blood, was not deemed newsworthy, even though Kissinger stood accused as an accomplice to these crimes? Or was the silence BECAUSE of Kissinger's involvement?

In my 1982 expose of this heinous crime, I demonstrated that Aldo Moro, a loyal member of the Christian Democrat Party, was murdered by assassins controlled by P2 Masonry with the object of bringing Italy into line with Club of Rome orders to deindustrialize the country and considerably reduce its population. Moro's plans to stabilize Italy through full employment and industrial and political peace would have strengthened Catholic opposition to Communism and made the destabilization of the Middle East—a prime goal—that much harder.

From the foregoing it becomes clear just how far ahead the conspirators plan. They do not think in terms of a Five Year Plan. One needs to go back to Weishaupt's statements about the early Catholic Church to understand what was involved in the murder of Aldo Moro. Moro's death removed the roadblocks to the plans to destabilize Italy, and as we now know, enabled conspiracy plans for the Middle East to be carried out in the Gulf War 14 years later.

Italy was chosen as a test-target by the Committee of 300. Italy is important to the conspirators' plans because it is the closest European country to the Middle East linked to Middle East economics and politics. It is also the home of the Catholic Church, which Weishaupt ordered destroyed, and home for some of Europe's most powerful top oligarchical families of the ancient Black Nobility. Should Italy have been weakened by Moro's death, it would have had repercussions in the Middle East which would have weakened U.S. influence in the region. Italy is important for another reason; it is a gateway for drugs entering Europe from Iran and Lebanon, and we shall return to that subject in due course.

Various groups had combined under the name of socialism to bring about the downfall of several Italian governments since the Club of Rome was established in 1968. Among these are the Black Nobility of Venice and Genoa, P2 Masonry and the Red Brigades, all working for the same goals. Police investigators in Rome working on the Red Brigades-Aldo Moro case came across the names of several very prominent Italian families working closely with this terrorist group. The police also discovered evidence that in at least a dozen cases, these powerful and prominent families had allowed their homes and/or property to be used as safe houses for Red Brigades cells.

America's "nobility" were doing their share to destroy the Republic of Italy, a notable contribution having come from Richard Gardner even while in his official capacity as President Carter's ambassador to Rome. At that time Gardner was operating under the direct control of Bettino Craxi, an important member of the Club of Rome and a key man in NATO. Craxi was the leading edge of the conspirators' attempts to destroy the Italian Republic. As we shall see, Craxi was almost successful in ruining Italy, and as the conspirators hierarchy's leading player, was able to get divorce and abortion pushed through the Italian Parliament, resulting in the most far-reaching and destructive religious and social changes ever to strike at the Catholic Church, and consequently, the morals of the Italian nation.

After President Ronald Reagan was elected, an important meeting was held in Washington D.C. in December 1980 under the auspices of the Club of Rome and the Socialist International. Both these organizations are directly responsible to the Committee of 300. The main agenda was to formulate ways and means of how to neutralize the Reagan presidency. A group plan was adopted and, as we look back, it is perfectly clear that the plan the conspirators agreed to follow has been very successful.

In order to get an idea of how vast and how all-pervasive is this conspiracy, it would be appropriate at this point to name the goals set by the Committee of 300 for the pending conquest and control of the world. There are at least 40 known "branch offices" of the Committee of 300, and we shall be listing them all, together with a description of their functions. Once this is studied it becomes easy to understand how one central conspiratorial body is able to operate so successfully and why it is that no power on earth can withstand their onslaught against the very foundations of a civilized, progressive world, based on freedom of the individual, especially as it is declared in the United States Constitution.

Thanks to the sworn testimony of Guerzoni, Italy and Europe but not the U.S. learned that Kissinger was behind the death of Aldo Moro. This tragic affair demonstrates the ability of the Committee of 300 to impose its will upon any government without exception. Secure in his position as a member of the most powerful secret society in the world, and I am not talking about Freemasonry, Kissinger not only terrified Moro, but carried through on his threats to "eliminate" Moro if he did not give up his plan to bring economic and industrial progress to Italy.

In June and July of 1982, the wife of Aldo Moro testified in open court that her husband's murder came about as a result of serious threats against his life, made by what she called "a high ranking United States political figure." Mrs. Eleanora Moro repeated the precise phrase reportedly used by Kissinger in the sworn testimony of Guerzoni: "Either you stop your political line or you will pay dearly for it." Recalled by the judge, Guerzoni was asked if he could identify the person Mrs. Moro was talking about.

Guerzoni replied that it was indeed Henry Kissinger as he had previously intimated.

Guerzoni went on to explain to the court that Kissinger had made his threats in Moro's hotel room during the Italian leaders official visit to the U.S. Moro—then Prime Minister and Foreign Minister of Italy, a NATO member-country—was a man of high rank, one who should never have been subjected to Mafia-like pressures and threats. Moro was accompanied on his American visit by the President of Italy in his official capacity. Kissinger was then, and still is, an important agent in the service of the Royal Institute for International Affairs, a member of the Club of Rome and the Council on Foreign Relations.

Kissinger's role in destabilizing the United States by means of three wars, the Middle East, Korea and Vietnam, is well known, as is his role in the Gulf War, in which the U.S. Army acted as mercenaries for the Committee of 300 in bringing Kuwait back under its control and at the same time making an example out of Iraq so that other small nations would not be tempted to work out their own destiny.

Kissinger also threatened the late Ali Bhutto, President of the sovereign nation of Pakistan. Bhutto's "crime" was that he favored nuclear weapons for his country. As a Moslem state, Pakistan felt threatened by continued Israeli aggression in the Middle East. Bhutto was judicially murdered in 1979 by the Council on Foreign Relations representative in the country General Zia ul Haq.

In his planned ascent to power, ul Haq encouraged a frenzied mob to set fire to the U.S. Embassy in Islamabad in an apparent attempt to show the CFR that he was his own man and to secure more foreign aid and, it was later learned, to murder Richard Helms. Several years later, ul Haq paid with his life for intervening in the war raging in Afghanistan. His C-130 Hercules aircraft was hit by an E.L.F. (electricallow frequency) shot shortly after it took off, causing the aircraft to loop into the ground.

The Club of Rome, acting on Committee of 300 orders to eliminate General ul Haq, had no compunction in sacrificing the

lives of a number of U.S. servicemen on board the flight, including a U.S. Army Defense Intelligence Agency group headed by Brigadier General Herber Wassom. General ul Haq had been warned by the Turkish Secret Service not to travel by plane, as he was targeted for a mid-air bombing. With this in mind, ul Haq took the United States team with him as "an insurance policy," as he commented to his inner circle advisors.

In my 1989 work "Terror' in the Skies," I gave the following account of what happened: "Shortly before ul Haq's C-130 took off from a Pakistan military base, a suspicious looking truck was seen close to the hangar that had housed the C-130. The control tower warned base security, but by the time action was taken, the C-130 was already airborne and the truck had gone. A few minutes later the plane began looping-the-loop until it hit the ground and exploded in a ball of fire. There is no explanation for such behavior by the C-130, an aircraft with a marvelously reliable record, and a joint Pakistani-United States board of enquiry Found no pilot error or mechanical or structural failure. Looping-the-loop is a recognized trade mark of an aircraft hit by E.L.F. fire.

That the Soviet Union has been able to develop high-peak radio frequency devices is known to the West through the work of Soviet scientists who work in the Kurchatov Atomic Energy Institute's Intensive Relatavistic Electron Beam Division. Two of its specialists were Y. A. Vinograov and A. A. Rukhadze. Both scientists worked in the Lededev Physics Institute, which specializes in electronic and X ray lasers.

After receiving this information, I searched for confirmation from other sources and found that in England the International journal of Electronics had published some material which appeared to confirm the information given to me about the method chosen to shoot down General ul Haq's C-130. In addition, the information was confirmed by two of my intelligence sources. I received some useful information from a Soviet scientific paper on these subjects, published in England under the title "Soviet Radio Electronics and Communications Systems." There was no doubt in my mind that General ul Haq had been murdered. The truck seen near the C-130 hanger undoubtedly carried a mobile E.L.F. device of the type the Soviet Armed Forces are known to possess.

According to written testimony by Bhutto, smuggled out of the country while he was in prison, Kissinger severely threatened him: "I will make a horrible example if you continue with your nation-building policies." Bhutto had fallen afoul of Kissinger and the Club of Rome by calling for a nuclear energy program to bring Pakistan into a modern industrialized state which, in the eyes of the Committee of 300, was a direct contravention of its orders delivered by Kissinger to the Pakistani government. What Kissinger was doing when he threatened Bhutto was not official U.S. policy, but the policy of the modern-day Illuminati.

One needs to have a clear understanding of just why it is that nuclear power is so hated all over the world, and why the fake "environmentalist" movement, established and financially supported by the Club of Rome, was called upon to wage war on nuclear energy. With nuclear energy generating electricity in cheap and abundant supplies, Third World countries would gradually become independent of U.S. foreign aid and begin to assert their sovereignty. Nuclear generated electricity is THE key to bringing Third World countries out of their backward state, a state which the Committee of 300 has ordered to remain in position.

Less foreign aid means less control of a country's natural resources by the I.M.F. It was this idea of developing nations taking charge of their destiny that was an anathema to the Club of Rome and its ruling Committee of 300. We have seen opposition to nuclear power in the United States successfully used to block industrial development in conformity with the Club's "Post-Industrial Zero-Growth" plans.

Dependence upon U.S. foreign aid actually keeps foreign countries in servitude to the Council on Foreign Relations. The people of the recipient countries receive very little of the money as it usually ends up in the pockets of government leaders who allow the natural raw material assets of the country to be savagely stripped by the I.M.F. Mugabe of Zimbabwe, formerly Rhodesia, is a good example of how raw material assets, in this case high grade chrome ore, is controlled through foreign aid. LONRHO, the giant conglomerate run by Angus Ogilvie, an important member of the Committee of 300, on behalf of his cousin, Queen Elizabeth II,

now has total control of this valuable resource while the people of the country sink ever deeper into poverty and misery, notwithstanding a hand-out of in excess of $300 million from the United States.

LONRHO now has a monopoly of Rhodesian chrome and charges any price it likes, whereas, under the Smith government this was not allowed. A reasonable price level was maintained for twenty-five years prior to the Mugabe regime taking power. While there were problems during the 14-year rule of Ian Smith, since his departure unemployment has quadrupled and Zimbabwe is in a state of chaos and de facto bankruptcy. Mugabe received enough foreign aid from the U.S. (in the region of $300 million per annum) to enable him to build three hotels on the French Cote d'Azur, Cap Ferat and Monte Carlo, while his citizens grapple with disease, unemployment and malnutrition, not to mention an iron-fisted dictatorship that allows no complaints. Contrast this with the Smith government which never asked for nor received one red cent in aid from the United States. Thus it is clear that foreign aid is a powerful means of exercising control of countries such as Zimbabwe and indeed all African countries.

It also keeps U.S. citizens in a state of involuntary servitude and therefore less able to mount meaningful opposition to government. David Rockefeller knew what he was doing when his foreign aid bill became law in 1946. It has, since then, become one of the most hated laws on the statute books following public exposure of what it is a racket run by government and paid for by we, the people.

How can the conspirators maintain their grip upon the world, and more especially, their chokehold over the U.S. and Britain? One of the most asked questions is, "How can any single entity know at all times what is going on and how is control exercised?" This book will attempt to answer these and other questions. The only way we can come to grips with the reality of the conspirator's success is by mentioning and discussing the secret societies, front organizations, government agencies, banks, insurance companies, international businesses, the petroleum industry and the hundreds of thousands of entities and foundations whose leading lights make up the membership of the

Committee of 300—the ULTIMATE controlling body that runs the world and has done so for at least a hundred years.

Since there already are scores of books on the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) and the Trilaterals, we shall go directly to the Club of Rome and the German Marshall Fund. When I introduced these organizations to the United States, few, if any, had heard of them. My first work, "The Club of Rome," published in 1983 attracted almost no attention. Many uninitiated people thought the Club of Rome was something to do with the Catholic Church and that the German Marshall Fund referred to the Marshal Plan.

This is precisely why the Committee chose these names, to confuse and to deflect attention away from what was happening. Not that the U.S. government didn't know, but as it was part of the conspiracy, it helped to keep the lid on information rather than let the truth be known. A few years after I published my work, a few writers saw in it a wealth of hitherto untapped information and began writing and talking about it as though they had always had full knowledge of it.

It came as a revelation to them that the Club of Rome and its financiers under the title of the German Marshall Fund were two highly-organized conspiratorial bodies operating under cover of the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO) and that the majority of Club of Rome executives were drawn from NATO. The Club of Rome formulated all of what NATO claimed as its policies and, through the activities of Committee of 300 member Lord Carrington, was able to split NATO into two factions, a political (left wing) power group and its former military alliance.

The Club of Rome is still one of the most important foreign policy arms of the Committee of 300—the other being the Bilderbergers. It was put together in 1968 from hard-core members of the original Morgenthau group on the basis of a telephone call made by the late Aurellio Peccei for a new and urgent drive to speed up the plans of the One World Government—now called the New World Order, although I prefer the former name. It is certainly a better job-description than the New World Order, which is somewhat confusing as there have

been several "New World Orders" before, but no One World Government.

Peccei's call was answered by the most subversive "future planners" drawn from the United States, France, Sweden, Britain, Switzerland and Japan that could be mustered. During the period 1968-1972, The Club of Rome became a cohesive entity of new-science scientists, globalists, future planners and internationalists of every stripe. As one delegate put it, "We became Joseph's Coat of Many Colors." Peccei's book "Human Quality" formed the basis of the doctrine adopted by NATO's political wing.

The following is extracted from Dr. Peccei's book, "Human Quality":

"For the first time since the first millennium was approached in Christendom, large masses of people are really in suspense about the impending advent of something unknown which could change their collective fate entirely.... Man does not know how to be a truly modern man.... Man invented the story of the Bad Dragon, but if ever there was a bad dragon, IT IS MAN HIMSELF.... Here we have the human paradox: man trapped by his extraordinary capacity and achievements, as in a quicksand—the more he uses his power the more he needs it.

"We must never tire of repeating how foolish it is to equate the present profound pathological state and maladjustment of the entire human system to any cyclic crisis or passing circumstances. Since man has opened Pandora's Box of new technologies, he has suffered uncontrolled human proliferation, the mania for growth, energy crises, actual or potential resource scarcities, degradation of environment, nuclear folly and a host of related afflictions."

This is identical to the program adopted by the much later fake "environmentalist" movement spawned by the same Club of Rome to blunt and turn back industrial development.

Broadly, the anticipated counter-program of the Club of Rome would cover inventing and disseminating "post industrialization" ideas in the United States, coupled with the spread of counterculture movements such as drugs, rock, sex,

hedonism, Satanism, witchcraft and "environmentalism." Tavistock Institute, Stanford Research Institute and the Institute for Social Relations, in fact the entire wide spectrum of research organizations in applied social psychiatry either had delegates on the board of the Club of Rome, or acted as advisors and played a guiding role in NATO's attempt to adopt the "Aquarian Conspiracy."

The name, New World Order, is seen as something developed as a consequence of the Gulf War in 1991, whereas the One World Government is recognized as being centuries old. The New World Order is not new, it has been around and developing under one or another guise for a very long time but it is perceived as a DEVELOPMENT OF THE FUTURE, which is not the case; the New World Order is PAST AND PRESENT. That is why I said earlier that the term One World Government is, or ought to be, preferred. Aurellio Peccei once confided in his close friend Alexander Haig that he felt like "Adam Weishaupt reincarnated." Peccei had much of Weishaupt's brilliant ability to organize and control the Illuminati of today, and it showed through in Peccei's control of NATO and formulating its policies on a global scale.

Peccei headed the Atlantic Institute's Economic Council for three decades while he was the Chief Executive Officer for Giovanni Agnellis' Fiat Motor Company. Agnelli, a member of an ancient Italian Black Nobility family of the same name, is one of the most important members of the Committee of 300. He played a leading role in development projects in the Soviet Union.

The Club of Rome is a conspiratorial umbrella organization, a marriage between Anglo-American financiers and the old Black Nobility families of Europe, particularly the so-called "nobility" of London, Venice and Genoa. The key to the successful control of the world is their ability to create and manage savage economic recessions and eventual depressions. The Committee of 300 looks to social convulsions on a global scale, followed by depressions, as a softening-up technique for bigger things to come, as its principal method of creating masses of people all over the world who will become its "welfare" recipients of the future.

The committee appears to base much of its important decisions affecting mankind on the philosophy of Polish aristocrat, Felix Dzerzinski, who regarded mankind as being slightly above the level of cattle. As a close friend of British intelligence agent Sydney Reilly (Reilly was actually Dzerzinski's controller during the Bolshevik Revolution's formative years), he often confided in Reilly during his drinking bouts. Dzerzinski was, of course, the beast who ran the Red Terror apparatus. He once told Reilly, while the two were on a drinking binge, that "Man is of no importance. Look at what happens when you starve him. He begins to eat his dead companions to stay alive. Man is only interested in his own survival. That is all that counts. All the Spinoza stuff is a lot of rubbish."

The Club of Rome has its own private intelligence agency and also "borrows" from David Rockefeller's INTERPOL. Every U.S. intelligence agency cooperates very closely with it, as does the KGB and the Mossad. The only agency that remained beyond its reach was the East-German intelligence service. the STASSY. The Club of Rome also has its own highly organized political and economic agencies. It was they who told President Reagan to retain the services of Paul Volcker, yet another important Committee of 300 member. Volcker stayed on as Federal Reserve Board chairman, notwithstanding the faithful promise of candidate Reagan that he would dismiss him as soon as he, Reagan, was elected.

The Club of Rome, after playing a key role in the Cuban Missile Crisis, attempted to sell its "crisis management" (the forerunner of FEMA) program to President Kennedy. Several Tavistock scientists went to see the President to explain what it meant, but the President rejected the advice they gave. The same year that Kennedy was murdered, Tavistock was back in Washington to talk with NASA. This time the talks were successful. Tavistock was given a contract by NASA to evaluate the effect of its coming space program on American public opinion.

The contract was farmed to the Stanford Research Institute and the Rand Corporation. Much of the material produced by Tavistock, Stanford and Rand never saw the light of day and remains sealed until now. Several Senate oversight committees and sub-committees I approached to obtain information told me

they had "never heard of it," nor did they have the slightest idea where I might find what I was seeking. Such is the power and prestige of the Committee of 300.

In 1966 I was advised by my intelligence colleagues to approach Dr. Anatol Rappaport who had written a treatise in which the administration was said to be interested. It was a paper intended to bring an end to NASA's space program, which Rapport said had outlived its usefulness. Rappaport was quite happy to give me a copy of his paper which, without going into fine detail, basically claimed that NASA's space program should be scrapped. NASA has too many scientists who were exerting a bad influence on America because they were always eager to lecture schools and university audiences on how rocketry worked, from construction to propulsion. Rappaport claimed that this would produce a generation of adults who would decide to become space scientists, only to find themselves "redundant" as no one would need their services by the year 2000.

No sooner had Rappaport's profiling report on NASA been presented to NATO by the Club of Rome, than the Committee of 300 demanded action. NATO-Club of Rome officials charged with urgent anti-NASA action were Harland Cleveland, Joseph Slater, Claiborne K. Pell, Walter J. Levy, George McGhee, William Watts, Robert Strausz-Hupe (U.S. ambassador to NATO) and Donald Lesh. In May 1967 a meeting was organized by the Scientific and Technological Committee of the North Atlantic Assembly and the Foreign Policy Research Institute. It was called "Conference on Transatlantic Imbalance and Collaboration" and it was held at Queen Elizabeth's palatial property in Deauville, France.

The basic purpose and intent of the conference at Deauville was to end U.S. technological and industrial progress. Out of the conference came two books, one of which is mentioned herein, Brzezinski's "Technotronic Era." The other was written by conference chairman, Aurellio Peccei, entitled "The Chasm Ahead." Peccei largely agreed with Brzezinski, but added that there world be chaos in a future world NOT RULED BY A ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT. In this regard, Peccei insisted that the Soviet Union must be offered "a convergence with NATO," such a convergence ending in an equal partnership in a New World Order

with the United States. Both nations would be responsible for future "crisis management and global planning." The first Club of Rome's "global planning contract" went to the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT), one of the premier Committee of 300's research institutes. Jay Forrestor and Dennis Meadows were placed in charge of the project.

What was their report all about? It did not differ fundamentally from what Malthus and Von Hayek preached, namely the old question of not enough natural resources to go around. The Forrestor-Meadows Report was a complete fraud. What it did not say was that man's proven inventive genius would in all likelihood work its way around "shortages." Fusion energy, the DEADLY enemy of the Committee of 300, could be applied to CREATING natural resources. A fusion torch could produce from one square mile of ordinary rock enough aluminum, for example, to fill our needs for 4 years.

Peccei never tired of preaching against the nation-state an how destructive they are for the progress of mankind. He called for "collective responsibility." Nationalism was a cancer on man was the theme of several important speeches delivered by Peccei. His close friend Ervin Lazlo produced a work in 1977 in a similar vein which was called "Goals of Mankind," a landmark study for the Club of Rome. The entire position paper was a vitriolic attack on industrial expansion and urban growth. Throughout these years, Kissinger, as the designated contact man, kept in close touch with Moscow on behalf of the RIIA. "Global modeling" papers were regularly shared with Kissinger's friends in the Kremlin.

With regard to the Third World, the Club of Rome's Harland Cleveland prepared a report which was the height of cynicism. At the time, Cleveland was United States Ambassador to NATO. Essentially, the paper said it would be up to Third World nations to decide among themselves which populations should be eliminated. As Peccei later wrote (based on the Cleveland Report): "Damaged by conflicting policies of three major countries and blocs, roughly patched up here and there, the existing international economic order is visibly coming apart at the seams....The prospect of the necessity of the recourse to triage-deciding who must be saved—is a very grim one indeed. But, if lamentably, events should come to

such a pass, the right to make such decisions cannot be left to just a few nations because it would lend themselves to ominous power over life of the world's hungry."

In this is found the committee policy of deliberately starving African nations to death, as evidenced in the sub-Sahara nations. This was cynicism at its worst, because the Committee of 300 had already abrogated the decisions of life and death unto itself, and Peccei knew it. He had previously so indicated in his book "Limits of Growth." Peccei completely dismissed industrial and agricultural progress and in its place demanded that the world come under one coordinating council, to whit, the Club of Rome and its NATO institutions, in a One World Government.

Natural resources would have to be allocated under the auspices of global planning. Nation states could either accept Club of Rome domination or else survive by the law of the jungle and fight to survive. In its first "test case," Meadows and Forrestor planned the 1973 Arab-Israeli War on behalf of the RIIA to sharply bring home to the world that natural resources like petroleum would in the future come under global planners control, meaning of course, under the control of the Committee of 300.

Tavistock Institute called for a consultation with Peccei to which McGeorge Bundy, Homer Perlmutter and Dr. Alexander King were invited. From London Peccei traveled to the White House where he met with the President and his cabinet, Followed by a visit to the State Department where he conferred with the Secretary of State, the State Department's intelligence service and State's Policy Planning Council. Thus, from the very beginning, the United States government was fully aware of the Committee of 300's plans for this country. That should answer the often asked question, "Why would our government allow the Club of Rome to operate in a subversive manner in the United States?"

Volcker's economic and monetary policies were a reflection of those of Sir Geoffrey Howe, Chancellor of the exchequer and member of the Committee of 300. This serves to illustrate how Britain has controlled the United States, beginning from soon after the War of 1812, and continues to exercise control over this country through the policies of the Committee of 300.

What are the goals of the secret elite group, the inheritors of Illuminism (Moriah Conquering Wind), the Cult of Dionysius, the Cult of Isis, Catharism, Bogomilism? This elite group that also calls itself the OLYMPIANS (they truly believe they are equal in power and stature to the legendary gods of Olympus, who have, like Lucifer their god, set themselves above our true God) absolutely believe they have been charged with implementing the following by divine right:

(1) A One World Government-New World Order with a unified church and monetary system under their direction. Not many people are aware that the One World Government began setting up its "church" in the 1920's/ 1930's, for they realized the need for a religious belief inherent in mankind to have an outlet and, therefore, set up a "church" body to channel that belief in the direction they desired.

(2) The utter destruction of all national identity and national pride.

(3) The destruction of religion and more especially the Christian religion, with the one exception, their own creation mentioned above.

(4) Control of each and every person through means of mind control and what Brzezinski call "technotronics" which would create human-like robots and a system of terror beside which Felix Dzerzinski's Red Terror will look like children at play.

(5) An end to all industrialization and the production of nuclear generated electric power in what they call "the post-industrial zero-growth society." Exempted are the computer and service industries. United States industries that remain will be exported to countries such as Mexico where abundant slave labor is available. Unemployables in the wake of industrial destruction will either become opium-heroin and or cocaine addicts, or become statistics in the elimination process we know today as Global 2000.

(6) Legalization of drugs and pornography.

(7) Depopulation of large cities according to the trial run carried out by the Pol Pot regime in Cambodia. It is interesting to note that Pol Pot's genocidal plans were drawn up here in the United States by one of the Club of Rome's research foundations. It is also interesting that the Committee is presently seeking to reinstate the Pol Pot butchers in Cambodia.

(8) Suppression of all scientific development except for those deemed beneficial by the Committee. Especially targeted is nuclear energy for peaceful purposes. Particularly hated are the fusion experiments presently being scorned and ridiculed by the Committee and its jackals of the press. Development of the fusion torch would blow the Committee's conception of "limited natural resources" right out of the window. A fusion torch properly used could create unlimited untappeed natural resources from the most ordinary substances. Fusion torch uses are legion and would benefit mankind in a manner which is as yet not even remotely comprehended by the public.

(9) Cause by means of limited wars in the advanced countries, and by means of starvation and diseases in Third World countries, the death of 3 billion people by the year 2000, people they call "useless eaters." The Committee of 300 commissioned Cyrus Vance to write a paper on this subject of how best to bring about such genocide. The paper was produced under the title the "Global 2000 Report" and was accepted and approved for action by President Carter, for and on behalf of the U.S. Government, and accepted by Edwin Muskie, then Secretary of State. Under the terms of the Global 2000 Report, the population of the United States is to be reduced by 100 million by the year 2050.

(10) To weaken the moral fiber of the nation and to demoralize workers in the labor class by creating mass unemployment. As jobs dwindle due to the post industrial zero growth policies introduced by the Club of Rome, demoralized and discouraged workers will resort to alcohol and drugs. The youth of the land will be encouraged by means of rock music and drugs to rebel against the status quo, thus undermining and eventually destroying the family unit. In this regard The Committee of 300 commissioned Tavistock Institute to prepare a blueprint as to how

this could be achieved. Tavistock directed Stanford Research to undertake the work under the direction of Professor Willis Harmon. This work later became known as "The Aquarian Conspiracy."

(11) To keep people everywhere from deciding their own destinies by means of one created crisis after another and then "managing" such crises. This will confuse and demoralize the population to the extent where faced with too many choices, apathy on a massive scale will result. In the case of the United States, an agency for crisis management is already in place. It is called the Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA), whose existence I first disclosed in 1980. There will be more on FEMA as we proceed.

(12) To introduce new cults and continue to boost those already functioning which includes rock "music" gangsters such as the filthy, degenerate Mick Jagger's "Rolling Stones" (a gangster group much favored by European Black Nobility) and all of the Tavistockcreated "rock" groups which began with "The Beatles." To continue to build up the cult of Christian fundamentalism begun by the British East India Company's servant, Darby, which will be misused to strengthen the Zionist state of Israel through identifying with the Jews through the myth of "God's Chosen People" and by donating very substantial amounts of money to what they mistakenly believe is a religious cause in the furtherance of Christianity.

(14) To press for the spread of religious cults such as the Moslem Brotherhood, Moslem fundamentalism, the Sikhs, and to carry out experiments of the Jim Jones and "Son of Sam" type of murders. It is worth noting that the late Ayatollah Khomeini was a creation of British Intelligence Military Intelligence Division 6, commonly known as M16, as I reported in my 1985 work, "What Really Happened In Iran."

(15) To export "religious liberation" ideas around the world so as to undermine all existing religions but more especially the Christian religion. This began with "Jesuit Liberation Theology" which brought about the downfall of the Somoza family rule in Nicaragua and which is today destroying EI Salvador, now 25 years into a "civil war," Costa Rica and Honduras. One very active

entity engaged in so-called liberation theology is the Communist oriented Mary Knoll Mission. This accounts for the extensive media attention to the murder of four of Mary Knoll's so-called nuns in EI Salvador a few years ago.

The four nuns were Communist subversive agents and their activities were widely documented by the government of EI Salvador. The United States press and news media refused to give any space or coverage to the mass of documentation in possession of the Salvadorian government, documentation which proves what the Mary Knoll Mission nuns were doing in the country. Mary Knoll is in service in many countries, and played a leading role in bringing Communism to Rhodesia, Mozambique, Angola and South Africa.

(16) To cause a total collapse of the world's economies and engender total political chaos.

(17) To take control of all Foreign and domestic policies of the United States.

(18) To give the fullest support to supranational institutions such as the United Nations (UN), the International Monetary Fund (IMF), the Bank of International Settlements (BIS), the World Court and, as far as possible, make local institutions of lesser effect by gradually phasing them out or bringing them under the mantle of the United Nations.

(19) Penetrate and subvert all governments, and work from within them to destroy the sovereign integrity of nations represented by them.

(20) Organize a world-wide terrorist apparatus and negotiate with terrorists whenever terrorist activities take place. It will be recalled that it was Bettino Craxi who persuaded the Italian and U.S. governments to negotiate with the Red Brigades kidnapers of Prime Minister Moro and General Dozier. As an aside, General Dozier is under orders not to talk about what happened to him. Should he break that silence, he will no doubt be made "a horrible example of" in the manner in which Kissinger dealt with Aldo Moro, Ali Bhutto and General Zia ul Haq.

(21) Take control of education in America with the intent and purpose of utterly and completely destroying it.

Much of these goals, which I first enumerated in 1969, have since been achieved or are well on their way to being achieved. Of special interest in the Committee of 300 program is the core of their economic policy, which is largely based on the teachings of Malthus, the son of an English country parson who was pushed to prominence by the British East India Company upon which the Committee of 300 is modeled.

Malthus maintained that man's progress is tied to the earth's natural ability to support a given number of people, beyond which point earth's limited resources would rapidly be depleted. Once these natural resources have been consumed, it will be impossible to replace them. Hence, Malthus observed, it is necessary to limit populations within the boundaries of decreasing natural resources. It goes without saying that the elite will not allow themselves to be threatened by a burgeoning population of "useless eaters," hence culling must be practiced. As I have previously stated, "culling" is going on today, using the methods mandated in the "Global 2000 Report."

All economic plans of the Committee meet at the crossroads of Malthus and Frederick Von Hayek, another doom and gloom economist who is sponsored by the Club of Rome. The Austrian born Von Hayek has long been under the control of David Rockefeller, and Von Hayek theories are fairly widely accepted in the United States. According to Von Hayek, the United States economic platform must be based on (a) Urban Black Markets (b) Small Hong Kong-type industries utilizing sweat-shop labor (c) The Tourist Trade, (d) Free Enterprise Zones where speculators can operate unhindered and where the drug trade can flourish (e) End of all industrial activity and (f) Close down all nuclear energy plants.

Von Hayek's ideas dove-tail perfectly with those of the Club of Rome, which is perhaps why he is so well promoted in rightwing circles in this country. The mantle of Von Hayek is being passed to a new, younger economist, Jeoffrey Sachs, who was sent to

Poland to take up where Von Hayek left off. It will he recalled that the Club of Rome organized the Polish economic crisis which led to political destabilization of the country. The exact same economic planning, if one dare call it that, will be forced upon Russia, but if widespread opposition is encountered, the old price-support system will quickly be restored.

The Committee of 300 ordered the Club of Rome to use Polish nationalism as a tool to destroy the Catholic Church and pave the way for Russian troops to reoccupy the country. The "Solidarity" movement was a creation of the Committee of 300's Zbigniew Brzezinski, who chose the name for the "trade union" and selected its office holders and organizers. Solidarity is no "labor" movement, although Gdansk shipyard workers were used to launch it, but rather, it was a high-profile POLITCAL organization, created to bring forced changes in preparation for the advent of the One World Government.

Most of Solidarity's leaders were descendants of Bolshevik Jews from Odessa and were not noted for hating Communism. This helps to understand the saturation coverage provided by the American news media. Professor Sachs has taken the process a step further, ensuring economic slavery for a Poland recently freed from the domination of the USSR. Poland will now become the economic slave of the United States. All that has happened is that the master has changed.

Brzezinski is the author of a book that should have been read by every American interested in the future of this country. Entitled "The Technotronic Era," it was commissioned by the Club of Rome. The book is an open announcement of the manner and methods to be used to control the United States in the future. It also gave notice of cloning and "robotoids," i.e. people who acted like people and who seemed to be people, but who were not. Brzezinski, speaking for the Committee of 300 said the United States was moving "into an era unlike any of its predecessors; we were moving toward a technotronic era that could easily become a dictatorship." I reported fully on "the Technotronic Era" in 1981 and mentioned it in my newsletters a number of times.

Brzezinski went on to say that our society "is now in an information revolution based on amusement focus, spectator spectacles (saturation coverage by television of sporting events) which provide an opiate for an increasingly purposeless mass." Was Brzezinski another seer and a prophet? Could he see into the future? The answer is NO; what he wrote in his book was simply copied from the Committee of 300's blueprint given to the Club of Rome for execution. Isn't it true that by 1991 we already have a purposeless mass of citizens? We could say that 30 million unemployed and 4 million homeless people are a "purposeless mass," or at least the nucleus of one.

In addition to religion, "the opiate of the masses" which Lenin and Marx acknowledged was needed, we now have the opiates of mass spectator sport, unbridled sexual lusts, rock music and a whole new generation of drug addicts. Mindless sex and an epidemic of drug usage was created to distract people from what is happening all around them. In "The Technotronic Era" Brzezinski talks about "the masses" as if people are some inanimate object—which is possibly how we are viewed by the Committee of 300. He continually refers to the necessity of controlling us "masses."

At one point, he lets the cat out of the bag:

"At the same time the capacity to assert social and political control over the individual will vastly increase. It will soon be possible to assert almost continuous control over every citizen and to maintain up-to-date files, containing even the most personal details about health and personal behavior of every citizen in addition to the more customary data.

"These files will be subject to instantaneous retrieval by the authorities. Power will gravitate into the hands of those who control information. Our existing institutions will be supplanted by pre-crisis management institutions, the task of which will be to identify in advance likely social crises and to develop programs to cope with them. (This describes the structure of FEMA which came much later.)

"This will encourage tendencies through the next several decades toward a TECHNOTRONIC ERA, A DICTATORSHIP,

leaving even less room for political procedures as we know them. Finally, looking ahead to the end of the century, the possibility of BIOCHEMICAL MIND CONTROL AND GENETIC TINKERING WITH MAN, INCLUDING BEINGS WHICH WILL FUNCTION LIKE MEN AND REASON LIKE THEM AS WELL, COULD GIVE RISE TO SOME DIFFICULT QUESTIONS."

Brzezinski was not writing as a private citizen but as Carter's National Security Advisor and a leading member of the Club of Rome and a member of the Committee of 300, a member of the CFR and as a member of the old Polish Black Nobility. His book explains how America must leave its industrial base behind and enter into what he called "a distinct new historical era."

"What makes America unique is its willingness to experience the future, be it pop-art or LSD. Today, America is the creative society, the others, consciously or unconsciously, are emulative. What he should have said was that America is the proving ground for Committee of 300 policies which lead directly to a dissolution of the old order and an entry into the One World Government-New World Order.

One of the chapters in "The Technotronic Era" explains how new technology will bring in its wake intense confrontation that will strain social and international peace. Oddly enough we are already under intense strains through surveillance. Lourdes in Cuba is one place where this is happening. The other is NATO headquarters in Brussels, Belgium, where a giant computer designated "666" can store data of every type mentioned by Brzezinski, plus possessing an expanded capacity to take in data for several billions more people than presently exist, if it ever comes to that, but which, in the light of the Global 2000 genocidal report, will probably never need to be utilized.

Retrieval of data will be simple in the United States where social security and or driver licence numbers could simply be added to 666 to provide the surveillance recording announced by Brzezinski and his Committee of 300 colleagues. The Committee already in 1981 warned governments, including the government of the USSR, that there "will be chaos unless the Committee of 300 takes complete control of preparations for the New World Order.

CONTROL WILL BE EXERCISED THROUGH OUR COMMITTEE AND THROUGH GLOBAL PLANNIG AND CRISIS MANAGEMENT." I reported this factual information a few months after I received it in 1981. Another item I reported back then was that RUSSIA HAD BEEN INVITED TO JOIN THE PREPARATIONS FOR THE COMING ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT.

When I wrote these things in 1981, the conspirators' global plans were already in an advanced state of preparedness. Looking back over the past 10 years, it can be seen just how rapidly the Committee's plans have advanced. If the information provided in 1981 was alarming, then it should be even more alarming today as we near the final stages of the demise of the United States as we know it. With unlimited funding, with several hundred think tanks and 5000 social engineers, the media banking and control of most governments a reality, we can see that we are tracing a problem of immense proportions, one that cannot he opposed by any nation at this time.

As I have so often stated, we have been misled into believing that the problem I am talking about has its origin in Moscow We have been brainwashed into believing that Communism is the greatest danger we Americans are facing. This is simply not so. The greatest danger arises from the mass of traitors in our midst. Our Constitution warns us to be watchful of the enemy within our gates. These enemies are the servants of the Committee of 300 who occupy high positions within our governmental structure. The UNITED STATES is where we MUST begin our fight to turn back the tide threatening to engulf us, and where we must meet, and defeat these internal conspirators.

The Club of Rome also had a direct hand in creating the 25year old war in EI Salvador, as an integral part of the wider plan drawn up by Elliot Abrams of the U.S. State Department. It was Committee of 300 member Willy Brandt, leader of the Socialist International and a former chancellor of West Germany, who paid for the "final offensive" by the Salvadorian guerrillas which, fortunately, was not successful. EI Salvador was chosen by the committee to turn Central America into a zone for a new Thirty-Year War, which task was allocated to Kissinger to carry out under the innocuous title of "The Andes Plan."

Just to demonstrate how the conspirators operate across all national boundaries, the "final offensive" action planned by Willy Brandt came about as a result of a visit to Felipe Gonzalez, who at the time was preparing himself for his Club of Rome-ordained role as Spain's future prime minister. Apart from myself and one or two of my intelligence colleagues and former colleagues, no one appeared to have heard of Gonzalez before he surfaced in Cuba. Gonzalez was the Club of Rome's case officer for EI Salvador, and the first Socialist to be elevated to political power in Spain since the death of General Franco.

Gonzalez was on his way to Washington to attend the Club of Rome Socialist "get Reagan" meeting which took place in December 1980. Present at the Gonzalez-Castro meeting was the left-wing guerrilla, Guillermo Ungo, run by the Institute for Policy Studies (IPS), the Committee of 300's most notorious Washington-based leftwing think tank. Ungo was run by an IPS fellow who died in a mysterious plane crash while enroute from Washington to Havana to visit Castro.

As most of us know, both the left and the right of the political spectrum is controlled by the same people, which will help to explain the fact that Ungo was a life-long friend of the late Napoleon Duarte, leader of the rightwing in EI Salvador. It was after the Cuban meeting that the "final offensive" by the Salvadorian guerrillas was carried out.

The polarizing of South America and the U.S was a special assignment given to Kissinger by the Committee of 300. The Malvinas War (also known as the Falklands War) and the subsequent overthrow of the Argentine government, followed by economic chaos and political upheavals, were planned by Kissinger Associates acting in concert with Lord Carrington, a top-ranking member of the Committee of 300.

One of the principal Committee of 300 assets in the U.S., the Aspen Institute of Colorado, also helped plan events in Argentina even as it did in the case of the fall of the Shah of Iran. Latin America is important to the United States, not only because we have so many mutual defense treaties with countries there, but

also because it has the potential of providing a huge market for American exports of technology, heavy industrial equipment which world have galvanized many of our faltering companies and provided thousands of new jobs. This was to be prevented all costs, even if it meant 30 years of war.

Instead of seeing this huge potential in a positive light, the Committee of 300 saw it as a dangerous threat to its postindustrial zero-growth U.S. plans and immediately acted to make an example of Argentina as a warning to other Latin American nations to forget any ideas they may have had to promote nationalism, independence and sovereign integrity. This is the reason why so many Latin American countries turned to drugs as their sole means of support, which may very well have been the intention of the conspirators in the first place.

Americans in general look down on Mexico, which is precisely the attitude with which the Committee wants the people of the United States to regard Mexico. What we need to do is change our thinking about Mexico and South America in general. Mexico represents a potentially huge market for all types of U.S. goods which could mean thousands of jobs for Americans and Mexicans alike. Transferring our industries "south of the border" and paying the maquiladores slave wages is not in the interests of either country. It benefits nobody but the "Olympians."

Mexico received most of its nuclear power technology from Argentina, but the Malvinas War put an end to that. The Club of Rome decreed back in 1986 that it would stop exports of nuclear technology to developing countries. With nuclear power stations generating abundant cheap electricity, Mexico would have become the "Germany of Latin America." Such a state of affairs would have been a disaster for the conspirators who have, by 1991, stopped all exports of nuclear technology except that destined for Israel.

What the Committee of 300 has in mind for Mexico is a feudal peasantry, a condition that allows for easy management and looting of Mexican oil. A stable and prosperous Mexico can only be a plus for the United States. This is what the conspirators wish to prevent, so they have engaged in decades of innuendo, slander and direct economic war on Mexico. Before former

President Lopes Portillo took office and nationalized the banks Mexico was losing $200 million a day to capital flight, organized and orchestrated by the Committee of 300's representatives in banks and brokerage houses on Wall Street.

If only we in the United States had statesmen and not politicians running the country, we could act together and set back the One World Government-New World Order plans to return Mexico to a state of helplessness. If we were able to defeat the Club of Rome's plans for Mexico, it would come as a shock to the Committee of 300, a shock from which they would take a long time to recover. The inheritors of the Illuminati pose as great a threat to the United States as they do to Mexico. By seeking common ground with Mexican patriotic movements we in the United States could forge a formidable force to be reckoned with. But such action requires leadership, and we are more lacking in leadership than in any other area of endeavor.

The Committee of 300 through its many affiliated organizations was able to nullify the Reagan presidency. Here is what Stuart Butler of the Heritage Foundation had to say on the subject "The right thought it had won in 1980 but in fact it have lost." What Butler was referring to was the situation in which the Right found itself when it realized that every single position of importance in the Reagan administration was filled by Fabianist appointees recommended by the Heritage Foundation. Butler went on to say that Heritage would use rightwing ideas to impose leftwing radical principles upon the United States, the same radical ideas which Sir Peter Vickers Hall, top Fabianist in the U.S. and the number one man at Heritage, had been openly discussing during the election year.

Sir Peter Vickers Hall remained an active Fabianist even though he was running a conservative "think tank." As a member of the British oligarchical Vickers armament manufacturing family, he had position and power. The Vickers family supplied both sides in the First World War and again during Hitler's rise to power. Vickers' official cover was the University of California's Urban and Regional Development Institute. He was a longtime confidant of British Labour leader and Committee of 300 member Anthony Wedgewood Benn.

Both Vickers and Benn are integrated with the Tavistock Institute for Human Relations, the premiere brainwashing institution in the world. Vickers uses his Tavistock training to very good effect when speech-making. Consider the following example:

"There are two Americas. One is the nineteenth century heavy-industry based society. The other is the growing post industrial society, in some cases built on the shards of the old America. It is the crisis between these two worlds which will produce the economic and social catastrophe of the next decade. The two worlds are in fundamental opposition, they cannot coexist. In the end the post industrial world must crush and obliterate the other one." Remember, this speech was made in 1981 and we can see from the state of our economy and our industries just how accurate was Sir Peter's prediction. When concerned people ask me how long the 1991 recession will last, I refer them to Sir Peter's statements and add my own opinion that it will not end until 1995/1996, and even then what emerges will not be the America we knew in the 1960's and 1970's. That America has already been destroyed.

I reported Sir Peter's speech in my newsletter soon after it was delivered. How prophetic it was, but then it was easy to predict a future already written for America by the Committee of 300 and its executive Club of Rome. What was Sir Peter saying in a euphemistic manner? Translated into ordinary everyday English, he was saying that the old American way of life, our true and trusted republican form of government based upon our Constitution, was going to be crushed by the New World Order. America as we knew it was going to have to go, or be crushed to pieces.

As I said, Committee of 300 members often make themselves highly visible. Sir Peter was no exception. To make it clearly understood where he was coming from, Sir Peter rounded off his speech by declaring:

"I am perfectly happy working with the Heritage Foundation and groups like that. True Fabians look to the New Right to push through some of their more radical ideas. For more

than a decade the British population has been subject to a constant propaganda barrage of how it was on the industrial skids. All of this is true, but the net effect of the propaganda was to demoralize the population. (Exactly as intended by the new-science scientist at Tavistock.)

"This will happen in the United States as the economy worsens. This (demoralizing process) is necessary to make people accept difficult choices. If there is no planning for the future or if constituencies block progress there will be social chaos on a scale which is currently hard to imagine. The outlook for urban America is bleak. There is a possibility of doing something with the inner cities, but basically the cities will shrink and the manufacturing base will decline. This will produce social convulsions."

Was Sir Peter a psychic, a magician of great report or merely a charlatan fortune teller with a great deal of luck? The answer is "none of these." All Sir Peter was doing was reading off the blueprint of the Committee of 300-Club of Rome for slow death of the United States as a former industrial giant. Looking back over the ten years of Sir Peter's predictions, can anybody doubt that the Committee of 300's plans for the demise of an industrialized United States has become a fait accompli?

Haven't Sir Peter's predictions proved to be remarkably accurate? Indeed they have, almost down to the last word. It is worth noting that Sir Peter Vickers (Sir Peter Vickers-Hall's father-in-law) worked on the Stanford Research paper, "Changing Images of Man," from which much of the 3000 pages of material advice sent to the Reagan Administration was taken. Moreover, as a senior MJ6 British intelligence officer, Sir Peter Vickers was in a position to give Heritage a great deal of advance information.

As a member of the Committee of 300 and NATO, Sir Peter Vickers was around when NATO directed the Club of Rome to develop a social program which would utterly change the direction in which America wanted to go. The Club of Rome, under Tavistock direction, ordered Stanford Research Institute (SRI) to develop such a program, not only for America, but for every nation in the Atlantic Alliance and the OECD nations.

It was Sir Peter's protege, Stuart Butler, who gave President Reagan 3000 pages of "recommendations," which no doubt contained some opinions expressed by Anthony Wedgewood Benn, a member of parliament and a ranking member of the Committee of 300. Benn told members of the Socialist Internaional who met in Washington on December 8, 1980: "You can thrive under Volcker's credit collapse if you profile Reagan to intensify the credit collapse."

That Butler's advice was taken and applied to the Reagan administration can be seen in the collapse of the Savings and loan and banking industries which accelerated under Reagan economic policies. While Benn called it "profiling," he really meant that Reagan should be brainwashed. It is worth noting that Von Hayek-who is a founder member of Heritage-used his student, Milton Friedman, to preside over the Club of Rome's plans to deindustrialise America using the Reagan presidency to accelerate the collapse of first the steel industry, and then the auto and housing industries, for example.

In this regard a French Black Nobility member, Etienne D'Avignon, as a member of the Committee of 300, was assigned the task of collapsing the steel industry in this country. It is doubtful that any of the hundreds of thousands of steel workers and shipyard workers who have been without jobs for the past decade have ever heard of D'Avignon. I fully reported the D'Avignon Plan in April 1981 Economic Review. Attending that fateful December lOth Club of Rome meeting in Washington D.C. was a mystery man from Iran who turned out to be Bani Sadr, the Ayatollah Khomeini's special envoy.

One speech in particular at the December 1Oth, 1980 conclave caught my attention, mainly because it came from Francois Mitterand, a man the French establishment had discarded and thought to be washed up. But my intelligence source had previously told me that Mitterand was in the process of being picked up, dusted off and returned to power, so what he said carried a good deal of weight for me:

"Industrial capitalist development is the opposite of freedom We must put an end to it. The economic systems of the

20th and 21st century will use machines to crush man, first in the domain of nuclear energy which is already producing formidable results. Mitterand's return to the Elysee Palace was a great triumph for socialism. It proved that the Committee of 3OO was powerful enough to predict happenings and then make them happen, by force, or by whatever means it took to make its point that it could crush any and all opposition even if, as in the case of Mitterand, he had been totally rejected a few short days before by a discerning political power group in Paris.

Another group representative at the December 1980 Washington meetings with "observer status" was John Graham, also known as "Irwin Suall," head of the fact-finding committee of the Anti-Defamation League (ADL). The ADL is an outright British intelligence operation run by all three branches of British intelligence, that is, M16 and the JIO. Suall's extensive bag of dirty tricks was garnered from the sewers of the East End of London. Suall is still a member of the super-secret SIS, an elite James Bond type of operation. Let nobody underestimate the power of the ADL, nor its long reach.

Suall works closely with Hall and other Fabianists. He was singled out as useful to British intelligence while at Ruskir Labour College at Oxford University in England, the same communist education center that gave us Milner, Rhodes, Burgess, McLean and Kim Philby. Oxford and Cambridge Universities have long been the province of the sons and daughters of the elite, those whose parents belong to the "upper crust" of British high society. While at Oxford, Suall joined the Young People's Socialist League, and was recruited by British intelligence shortly thereafter.

Suall was posted to the United States where he came under the protection and sponsorship of one of the most insidious leftists in the country, Walter Lippmann. Lippmann founded and ran the League for Industrial Democracy, and Students for Democratic Society, both leftist spoiler operations to set industrial workers at variance with what it called "the Capitalist class" and management. Both of Lippmann's projects were an integral part of the Committee of 300 apparatus that stretched right across America, of which Lippmann was a most important member.

Suall has strong connections with the Justice Department and can secure FBI profiles of any person he targets. The Justice Department has orders to give Suall everything he wants when he wants it. Most of Suall's activities center around "keeping an eye on rightwing groups and individuals." The ADL has an open door to the State Department and makes good use of State's impressive intelligence agency.

The State Department has a layer of agents in the right wing, posing as "fearless anti-Semitic fighters." There are four leaders in this group of informers, three of whom are discreet Jewish homosexuals. This spy group has been in operation for the past two decades. They publish virulently anti-Jewish "newspapers" and sell a wide variety of anti-Semitic books. One of the principal operators works out of Louisiana. A member of this group is a writer who is dearly beloved in Christian rightwing circles. The group and the individuals who go to make it up are under the protection of the ADL. Suall was deeply involved in ABSCAM and is often called upon by law enforcement agencies to assist them in investigations and sting operations.

Suall was assigned to "dog Reagan," in terms of the course laid out for the newly-elected President by the Heritage Foundation, and to figuratively fire a few warning shots if Reagan looked like deviating or taking off his blinders at any time. Suall helped to get rid of any troublesome rightwing advisor not beholden to Heritage for his or her job with the Reagan administration. Such a person was Ray Donovan, Reagan's Secretary of Labor, who was eventually removed from his post thanks to the Dirty Tricks department of the ADL. James Baker III, one of those on the list of 3000 recommendations made by the Heritage Foundation, was the go-between who carried Suall's messages of hate about Donovan to the President.

Another important conspirator was Philip Agee, the socalled CIA "defector." Although not a member of the Committee, he was nevertheless its case officer for Mexico, and run by the Royal Institute for International Affairs (RIIA) and the Council on Foreign Relations. For the record, nothing that happens in the U.S. happens without the sanction of the RIIA. It is a continuing and ongoing agreement first OPENLY entered into (there were many

such secret agreements before that) by Churchill and Roosevelt in 1938, under the terms of which U.S. intelligence services are obliged to share intelligence secrets with British intelligence.

This is the basis of the so-called "special relationship" between the two countries about which Churchill and Lord Halifax boasted and which "special relationship" was responsible for the U.S. fighting the Gulf War against Iraq for and on behalf of British interests, more especially British Petroleum, one of the most important companies in the Committee of 300 in which Queen Elizabeth's immediate family has a big stake.

No intelligence activity has taken place since 1938 except through this special joint command structure. Philip Agee joined the CIA after graduating from Notre Dame where he was inducted into its Jesuit Freemason ring. Agee first came to my attention in 1968 as the intelligence officer behind the riots at the University of Mexico. One of the most important things about the Mexican student riots was that they occurred at the same time as student rioting in New York, Bonn, Prague and West Berlin.

With the coordination expertise and its special intelligence network of which INTERPOL is an integral part, it is not as difficult as it might seem at first sight for the Committee to set in motion carefully timed global actions, whether they be student rioting or deposing leaders of supposedly sovereign nations. It is all in a day's work for the "Olympians." From Mexico, Agee moved on to align himself with Puerto Rican terrorist groups. During this time he became a trusted confidant of the Cuban dictator, Fidel Castro.

It should not be imagined that while Agee was carrying out these operations, he was doing so as a "rogue" agent. On the contrary, he was working for the CIA all during these assignments. Trouble came when Castro's DGI (Cuban intelligence service) was able to "turn" him. Agee continued to work in his capacity as a member of the CIA until his double role was uncovered. This involved the biggest Soviet listening post in the West located at Lourdes, Cuba. Staffed by 3000 Soviet specialists in signals monitoring and deciphering, Lourdes has the capability of monitoring thousands of electronic signals simultaneously. Many a

private phone conversation between a member of Congress and his mistress was picked up at Lourdes and used to telling effect.

Although we are told today in 1991 that "Communism is dead," the United States has done nothing to close down the vast spy operation which sits on our doorstep. Incidentally Lourdes has the capability of picking up even the weakest "tempest" signal, which is the type given off by a fax machine or an electric typewriter which, when deciphered, will give the contents of whatever is being typed or faxed. Lourdes remains dagger in the heart of the United States. There is absolutely no reason for its continued existence. If the U.S. and USSR are truly at peace with each other, why the continued need for so massive a spy operation? The simple truth is that, rather than retrenching personnel as we are led to believe, the KGB has taken on additional recruits during 1990 and 1991.

Bernard Levin is probably not a name that is well-known in the United States. Unlike decadent "pop stars" or Hollywood's latest miserable "discovery," academics seldom if ever come before the public eye. Of the hundreds of academics in the United States working under the Control of the Club of Rome, Levin is worthy of special mention, if for no reason other than his role in undermining Iran, the Philippines, South Africa, Nicaragua and South Korea. The demise of the Shah of Iran was run to a plan devised by Bernard Levin and Richard Falk, and supervised by Robert Anderson's Aspen Institute.

Levin was the author of a work entitled "Time Perspective and Morale" which is a Club of Rome publication concerning how to break down the morale of nations and individual leaders. Here is an extract of the document:

"One of the main techniques for breaking morale through a strategy of terror consists in exactly this tactic: keep the person hazy as to where he stands and just what he may expect. In addition, if frequent vacillations between severe disciplinary measures and promise of good treatment together with the spreading of contradictory news make the structure of the situation unclear, then the individual may cease to know whether a particular plan would lead toward or away from his goal. Under

these conditions, even those individuals who have definite goals and are ready to take risks are paralyzed by the severe inner conflict in regard to what to do."

This Club of Rome blueprint applies to COUNTRIES as well as to individuals, particularly the government leaders of those countries. We in the U.S. need not think that "Oh well, this is America, and those kinds of things just do not happen here." Let me assure you that they ARE happening in the U.S., and perhaps more so than in any other country.

The Levin-Club of Rome plan is designed to demoralize us all so that in the end we feel we should follow whatever it is that is planned for us. We WILL follow Club of Rome orders like sheep. Any seemingly strong leader who SUDDENLY APPEARS to "rescue" the nation must be regarded with the utmost suspicion. Remember that Khomeini was groomed for years by British intelligence, especially during his time in Paris, before he suddenly appeared as the savior of Iran. Boris Yeltsin is from the same M16-SIS stable.

The Club of Rome feels confident that it has carried out it Committee of 300 mandate to "soften up" the United States. After 45 years of waging war on the people of this nation, who will doubt that it has indeed accomplished its task? Look around and see how we have been demoralized. Drugs, pornography rock and roll "music," free sex, the family unit all but totally undermined, lesbianism, homosexuality and finally the ghastly murder of millions of innocent babies by their own mothers. Has there ever been a crime so vile as mass abortion?

With the U.S. spiritually, morally bankrupted, with our industrial base destroyed throwing 30 million people out of work with our big cities ghastly cesspools of every imaginable crime with a murder rate almost three times higher than any other country, with 4 million homeless, with corruption in government reaching endemic proportions, who will gainsay that the United States is ready to collapse from within, into the waiting arms of the New Dark Age One World Government?

The Club of Rome has succeeded in splitting the Christian churches; it has succeeded in building up an army of charismatics

fundamentalists and evangelicals who will fight for the Zionist State of Israel. During the Gulf War of genocide I received scores of letters asking me how I could oppose "a just Christian war against Iraq." How could I doubt that Christian fundamentalist support for the (Committee of 300's) war against Iraq was not Biblical—after all didn't Billy Graham pray with President Bush just before the shooting started? Doesn't the Bible speak of "wars and rumors of wars" ?

These letters give an insight into just how well the Tavistock Institute has done its work. The Christian fundamentalists will be a formidable force behind the state of Israel, exactly as planned. How sad that these fine people do not realize that they have been GROSSLY MISUSED by the Club of Rome and that their opinions and beliefs are NOT THEIR OWN, but those created for them by the hundreds of Committee of 300 "think tanks" that dot the American landscape. In other words, like any other segment of the United States population, the Christian fundamentalists and evangelicals have been thoroughly brainwashed.

We as a nation are ready to accept the demise of the United States of America and the American way of life, once the envy of the entire world. Do not think this has happened on its own-the old "times are changing" syndrome. Time does not change anything, PEOPLE do. It is a mistake to think of the Committee of 300 and the Club of Rome as European institutions. The Club of Rome exercises great influence and power in the United States, and has its own chapter based in Washington D.C.

Senator Claiborne Pell is its leader, and one of its members is Frank M. Potter, a one-time staff director of the House Sub-committee on Energy. It is not difficult to see how the Club of Rome has maintained its grip on U.S. energy policies and where "environmentalist" opposition to nuclear energy is coming from. Perhaps the Club's greatest success story is its hold over Congress in regard to nuclear energy which has had the effect of preventing the U.S. from entering the 21st century as a strong industrial nation. The effect of the anti-nuclear policy of the Club of Rome can be measured in terms of silent blast furnaces. derelict railroad yards, rusting steel mills, shipyards long since closed down and a

valuable trained work force scattered across the United States, which may never again be assembled.

Other Club of Rome members in the U.S. are Walter A. Hahn of the Congressional Research Service, Ann Cheatham and Douglas Ross, both senior economists. Ross's task, in his own words, was to "translate Club of Rome perspectives into legislation to help the country get away from the illusion of plenty. " Ann Cheatham was the director of an organization called "Congressional Clearing House For The Future."

Her task was to profile members of Congress who would be susceptible to astrology and New Age mumbo-jumbo. At one stage she had in excess of 100 Congressmen in her classes. Daily sessions were held in which a variety of astrological "forecasts" were made based on her "occult perceptions." Besides Congressmen, other prominent people who attended her sessions were Michael Walsh, Thornton Bradshaw—A LEADING MEMBER OF THE COMMITTEE OF 300—and David Sternlight, a senior vice-president of Allstate Insurance Company.

Some of the more important members of the Committee of 300 are also members of NATO, a fact which we ought to remember. These Committee of 300 members often hold several offices. Among the NATO-Club of Rome membership are found Harland Cleveland, a former U.S. ambassador to NATO, Joseph Slater, a director of the Aspen Institute, Donald Lesh, a former staffer in the U.S. National Security Agency, George McGhee and Claiborne Pell, to name a few examples.

It is important that we remember these names, make a list of them if you wish, so as to recall who they are and what they stand for when their names come up in television programs and news services. Following intelligence modus vivendi, leaders of the Committee often appear on television, usually in the most innocent of guises. We ought to be aware that nothing they do is innocent.

The Committee of 300 has planted its agents in the muscle and sinew of the United States, in its government, in Congress, in advisory posts around the President, as ambassadors and as Secretaries of State. From time to time the Club of Rome holds

gatherings and conferences which, although they appear under innocuous titles, break up into action committees, each of which is assigned a specific task and a specific target date by which time their assignments must be completed. If it does nothing else, the Committee of 300 is working to a very specific time-table.

The first Club of Rome conference in the United States was called by the Committee of 300 in 1969 under the title: "The Association of the Club of Rome." The next meeting was held in 1970 under the title "Riverdale Center of Religious Research" and was directed by Thomas Burney. Then followed the Woodlands Conference held in Houston, Texas, starting in 1971 Thereafter, regular conferences have been held at Woodlands every year.

Also in 1971, at a later date, the Mitchell Energy and Development Corporation held its energy strategy meeting for the Club of Rome: The recurring theme: LIMIT THE GROWTH OF THE U.S.A. Then to crown it all, the First Global Conference on the Future was held in July of 1980, attended by 4000 social engineers and members of think tanks, all of whom were menbers of or affiliated with various institutions operating under Club of Rome umbrella organizations.

The First Global Conference on the Future had the blessing of the White House which held its own conference based on the transcripts of the First Global Conference forum. It was called the "White House Commission on the 1980's" and OFFICIALLY recommended the policies of the Club of Rome "as a guide to future U.S. policies" and even went so far as to say that the United States economy is moving out of the industrial phase This echoed the theme of Sir Peter Vickers Hall and Zbibniew Brzezinsky and provides further proof of the control exercised by the Committee of 300 over U.S. affairs, both domestic and foreign.

As I said in 1981, we are set up, politically, socially and economically so that we remain locked into the Club of Rome's plans. Everything is RIGGED against us. If we are to survive then we must break the stranglehold the Committee of 300 has on our government. In every election since Calvin Coolidge ran for the White House, the Committee of 300 has been able to plant its agents in key positions in government so that it matters not who

gets the White House post. For example, every one of the candidates who ran for the Presidency, from the time of Franklin D. Roosevelt, were selected, some like to call it "hand picked," by the Council on Foreign Relations acting on the instructions of the RIIA.

Especially in the 1980 election, every candidate for the highest office in the United States was run by the CFR. Therefore it was of no consequence to the conspirators who won the presidential race. Through such Trojan Horses as the Heritage Foundation and the CFR, ALL key policy making positions in the new administrations were filled by the Council on Foreign Relations nominees, and before that, since the 1960's, by NATOClub of Rome yes-men, thereby ensuring that key policy decisions bore the indelible stamp of the Club of Rome and the CFR, acting as the executive arms of the Committee of 300.

Both the 1984 and 1988 elections followed this longestablished pattern. Secretary of State George Schultz was the perfect choice of the Committee of 300 for the office of Secretary of State. Schultz was always a creature of Henry Kissinger, the ruling order-giver for the CFR. Moreover, his position with Bechtel, a key Committee of 300 company of global dimensions, gave him access to countries that might otherwise have been suspicious of his Kissinger connection. The Carter Administration accelerated the process of key pro-conspiracy personnel in key positions. Before Carter was elected, his key campaign strategist, Hamilton Jordan, said that if Cyrus Vance or Brzezinski received appointments in the Carter cabinet, he, Jordan, would resign. They did. Jordan did not resign.

Carter's choice of Paul Volcker (in fact he was told to appoint Volcker by David Rockefeller) started the collapse of the U.S. economy according to the plan laid down by the Club of Rome. We are up against powerful forces who are dedicated to the goal of a One World Government. We have been engaged in a devastatingly crippling war for the past 45 years, only it is not perceived as such. We are brainwashed, methodically and systematically, without ever being aware of it. The Tavistock Institute provided the system for this to take place, and then set its operations in motion.

The only way we can fight back is by exposing the conspirators and their multiplicity of front organizations. We need men with experience who can formulate strategy to defend our priceless heritage which, once lost, will never again reappear. We need to learn the methods the conspirators use; learn them and adopt counter-measures. Only a crash program will stop the rot which is consuming our nation.

Some may have difficulty in accepting the idea of a global conspiracy because so many writers have made financial gain from it. Others doubt that activity on a global scale can be successfully advanced. They see the huge bureaucracy of our government and then say, "Well, how are we supposed to believe that private people can do more than the government does? This overlooks the fact that government is part of the conspiracy. Hard evidence is what they want and hard evidence is difficult to come by.

Others say, "So what. What do I care about a conspiracy, I don't even bother to vote." That is exactly the way the general population of America was profiled to react. Our people have become discouraged and confused, the results of 45 years of warfare conducted against us. How this is done is explained in Bernard Lewin's book, but how many people would bother to read an academic's non-fiction book? We are reacting exactly as we were profiled to act. Demoralized and confused people will be far more ready to welcome the sudden appearance of a great man who promises to solve every problem and guarantee a wellordered society in which people are fully employed and domestic strife is minimal. Their dictator, for that is who it will be, will be welcomed with open arms.

Knowing WHO the enemy is a vital necessity. No one can fight and against an unidentified enemy. This book could be used as a military field manual. Study its content and memorize all names. I have mentioned profiling techniques quite frequently in this chapter. A full explanation of "profiling" is contained in the next chapter. One of the most profound pieces of information to come out of the science of profiling is the relative ease in which this can be accomplished in individuals, party groups, political entities and so on right on down the line. Once we wake up as to how easy this is to do, the conspiracy will no longer be more than

we can comprehend. The assassination of President Kennedy and the attempt on the life of President Reagan become easy to understand.

INSTITUTIONS THROUGH WHICH CONTROL IS EXERCISED

Profiling is a technique developed in 1922 on command of the Royal Institute for International Affairs (RIIA). Major John Rawlings Reese, a British Army technician, was instructed to set up the largest brainwashing facility in the world at the Tavistock Institute for Human Relations as a part of Sussex University. This became the core of Britain's Psychological Warfare Bureau. When I first introduced the names of Reese and Tavistock into the United States in 1970, very little interest was shown. But over the years, as I revealed more and more about Tavistock and its vital role in the conspiracy, it has become popular to imitate my earlier research.

Britain's Psychological Warfare Bureau made extensive use of the work done by Reese on his 80,000 British Army guinea pigs, captive soldiers who underwent many forms of testing. It was Tavistock-designed methods that got the United States into the Second World War and which, under the guidance of Dr. Kurt Lewin, established the OSS, the forerunner of the CIA. Lewin became the director of the Strategic Bombing Survey, which was a plan for the Royal Air Force to concentrate on bombing German worker housing while leaving military targets, such as munition plants, alone. The munition plants on both sides belonged to the international bankers who had no wish to see their assets destroyed.

Later, after the war was over, NATO ordered Sussex University to establish a very special brainwashing center which became part of Britain's Psychological Warfare Bureau, only now, its research was directed toward civilian rather than military applications. We shall return to that super secret unit which was called Science Policy Research Institute (SPRI) under our chapters on drugs.

The idea behind saturation bombing of civilian worker housing was to break the morale of the German worker. It was not designed to affect the war effort against the German military machine. Lewin and his team of actuaries reached a target figure, that if 65% of German worker housing was destroyed by nightly RAF bombing, the morale of the civilian population would collapse.

The actual document was prepared by the Prudential Assurance Company.

The RAF, under the command of "Bomber" Harris, carried out Lewin's plans, culminating in the terror firestorm bombing of Dresden, in which over 125,000, mainly old men, women and children, were killed. The truth of "Bomber" Harris's horror raids on German civilians was a well kept secret until long after the end of WW II.

Tavistock provided most of the detailed programs that led to the establishing of the Office of Naval Intelligence, (ONI) the number one intelligence service in the United States, one which dwarfs the CIA in size and scope. Contracts worth billions of dollars were given to Tavistock by the United States Government and Tavistock's strategic planners provide most of what the Pentagon uses for our defense establishment, even today. Here again is illustrated the grip the Committee of 300 has on the United States, and the majority of our institutions. Tavistock runs over 30 research institutions in the United States, all of which we will name in our charts at the end of the book.

These Tavistock-U.S. institutions have in many cases grown into gargantuan monsters, penetrating every aspect of our government agencies and taking command of all policy making. One of Tavistock's chief wreckers of our way of life was Dr. Alexander King, a founder member of NATO and a favorite with the Committee of 300, as well as an outstanding member of the Club of Rome. Dr. King was assigned by the Club of Rome to destroy America's education by taking control of the National Teachers Association and working in close conjunction with certain law makers and judges. If it was not generally known how all-pervading is the influence of the Committee of 300, this book should dispel every vestige of that doubt.

The trial run for the Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA) a Club of Rome creation came in a test run against the nuclear power station at Three Mile Island, Harrisburg, Pennsylvania. Termed "an accident" by the hysterical media, this was not an accident but a deliberately designed crisis test for FEMA. An additional benefit was the fear and hysteria created by

the news media which had people fleeing the area when in fact they were never in any danger.

It was considered a success by FEMA and it scored a lot of points for the anti-nuclear forces. TMI became the rallying point for the so-called "environmentalists," a highly financed and controlled group run out of Aspen Institute on behalf of the Club of Rome. Coverage was provided free of charge by William Paley of CBS television, a former British intelligence agent.

FEMA is a natural successor to the Strategic Bombing Survey of WW II. Dr. Kurt Lewin, theoretician for what the Tavistock conspirators called crisis management, was deeply involved in the study. There is an unbroken chain between Lewin and Tavistock that stretches back for thirty-seven years. Lewin incorporated the Strategic Bombing Survey into FEMA, with only a few small adjustments proving necessary, one of the changes being the target, WHICH WAS NO LONGER GERMANY BUT THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA. Forty-five years after the end of WW II it is still Tavistock that has its hands on the trigger, and the weapon is pointed at the United States.

The late Margaret Mead conducted an intensive study of the German and Japanese population, under the aegis of Tavistock, on how they reacted to stress caused by aerial bombardment. Irving Janus was an associate professor on the project which was supervised by Dr. John Rawlings Reese, promoted to Brigadier-General in the British Army. The test results were given to FEMA. The Irving Janus report was of great value in formulating FEMA policies. Janus used it in a book which he later wrote entitled AIR WAR AND STRESS. The ideas in his book were followed TO THE LETTER BY FEMA DURING THE THREE MILE ISLAND "CRISIS." Janus had a really simple idea: Simulate a succession of crises and manipulate the population following the Lewin terror tactics and they will do exactly as required.

In carrying out this exercise, Lewin discovered something new, that social control on a wide scale can be achieved by using the news media to bring home the horrors of a nuclear war via the television media. It was discovered that women's magazines were very effective in dramatizing the terrors of a nuclear war. A trial

run conducted by Janus had Betty Bumpers, wife of Senator Dale Bumpers of Arkansas, "writing" for McCalls magazine on that subject.

The article appeared in McCalls January 1983 issue. Actually, Mrs. Bumpers did not write the article, it was created for her by a group of writers at Tavistock whose speciality such subject matters are. It was a collection of untruths, non-facts, innuendoes and conjectures based entirely upon false premises. The Bumpers article was typical of the kind of psychological manipulation at which Tavistock is so very good. Not one of the ladies who read McCalls could have failed to be impressed by the terror-horror story of what a nuclear war looks like.

The Committee of 300 has a major bureaucracy at its disposal made up of hundreds of think tanks and front organizations that run the whole gamut of private business and government leaders. I will mention as many as I can fit in, starting with the German Marshall Fund. Its members, and remember they are also members of NATO and the Club of Rome, consist of David Rockefeller of Chase Manhattan Bank, Gabriel Hague of the prestigious Manufactures Hanover Trust and Finance Corporation, Milton Katz of the Ford Foundation, Willy Brandt, leader of Socialist International, KGB agent and member of the Committee of 300, Irving Bluestone, chairman of the United Auto Workers Executive Board, Russell Train, U.S. president of the Club of Rome and Prince Philip's World Wildlife Fund, Elizabeth Midgely, CBS programs producer, B. R. Gifford, director of the Russell Sage Foundation, Guido Goldman of the Aspen Institute the late Averill Harriman, Committee of 300 extraordinary member, Thomas L. Hughes of the Carnegie Endowment Fund, Dennis Meadows and Jay Forrestor of MIT "world dynamics."

The Committee of 300, although in existence for over 150 years, did not take on its present form until around 1897. It was always given to issuing orders through other fronts, such as the Royal Institute for International Affairs. When it was decided that a super-body would control European affairs, the RIIA founded the Tavistock Institute, which in turn created NATO. For Five years NATO was financed by the German Marshall Fund. Perhaps the most important member of the Bilderbergers, a foreign policy body

of the Committee, was Joseph Rettinger, said to have been its founder and organizer, whose annual meetings have delighted conspiracy hunters for several decades.

Rettinger was a well-trained Jesuit priest and a 33rd Degree Freemason. Mrs. Katherine Meyer Graham who is suspected of having murdered her husband in order to get control of the Washington Post, was another ranking member of the Club of Rome, as was Paul G. Hoffman of the New York Life Insurance Company, one of the largest insurance companies in the United States and a leading Rank company, with ties directly to Queen Elizabeth of England's immediate family. John J. McCloy, the man who attempted to wipe post-World War II Germany off the map and last but not least, James A. Perkins of the Carnegie Corporation, were also founding members of the Bilderbergers and the Club of Rome.

What a star-studded cast! Yet strangely enough, few if any outside of genuine intelligence agencies had ever heard of this organization until recent times. The power exercised by these important personages and the corporations, television stations newspapers, insurance companies and banks they represent matches the power and prestige of at least two European countries, and still this is only the tip of The Committee of 300's enormous cross-gridding and interfaced interests.

Not mentioned in the foregoing line-up is Richard Gardner who, although an early member of the Committee of 300, was sent to Rome on a special assignment. Gardner married into one of the oldest Black Nobility families of Venice, thus providing the Venetian aristocracy a direct line to the White House. The late Averill Harriman was another of the committee's direct links with the Kremlin and the White House, a position which Kissinger inherited after the death of Harriman.

The Club of Rome is indeed a formidable agency of the Committee of 300. Although ostensibly working on American affairs, the group overlaps other Committee of 300 agencies and its United States members are often found working with "problems" in Japan and Germany. Some of the front organizations

operated by the above committee include the following, although not limited to them:

LEAGUE OF INDUSTRIAL DEMOCRACY

Officials: Michael Novak, Jeane Kirkpatrick, Eugene Rostow, IRWIN SUALL, Lane Kirkland, Albert Schenker.

Purpose: To disrupt and disturb normal labor relations between workers and employees by brain washing labor unions to make impossible demands with special attention to steel, automobile and housing industries.

FREEDOM HOUSE

Officials: Leo Churn and Carl Gershman.

Purpose: To spread socialist disinformation among American blue collar workers, spread dissension and dissatisfaction. Now that these objectives have been largely realized, Gershman has been drafted by Lawrence Eagleburger to CEDC, a newly created body to stop a united Germany from expanding its trade into the Danube Basin.

COMMITTEE FOR A DEMOCRATIC MAJORITY

Officials: Ben Wattenburg, Jean Kirkpatrick, Elmo Zumwa and Midge Dector.

Purpose: To provide a connecting link between the educated socialist class and minority groups with the intent of setting up a solid block of voters who can be counted on to vote for leftwing candidates at election time. It was really a Fabianist operation from start to finish.

FOREIGN POLICY RESEARCH INSTITUTE

Officials: Robert Strausz Hupe.

Purpose: To undermine and eventually end NASA space program.

SOCIAL DEMOCRATS U.S.A.

Officials: Bayard Rustin, Lane Kirkland, Jay Lovestone, Carl Gershman, Howard Samuel, Sidney Hook.

Purpose: To spread radical socialism, especially among minority groups, and forge links between similar organizations in socialist countries. Lovestone was for decades the leading advisor to U.S. presidents on Soviet affairs and a strong direct link with Moscow.

INSTITUTE FOR SOCIAL RELATIONS

Officials: Harland Cleveland, Willis Harmon.

Purpose: Change the way America thinks.

THE CITIZENS LEAGUE

Officials: Barry Commoner.

Purpose: To bring "common cause" legal suits against various government agencies, especially in the defense industries.

WAR RESISTERS LEAGUE

Officials: Noam Chomsky and David McReynolds.

Purpose: To organize resistance to the Vietnam War among leftwing groups, students and the Hollywood "in crowd."

THE DEMOCRATIC SOCIALIST ORGANIZING COMMITTEE OF THE INSTITUTE FOR DEMOCRATIC SOCIALISM

Officials: Frank Zeider, Arthur Redier and David McReynolds.

Purpose: A clearing house for leftwing socialist ideas and activities in the U.S and Europe.

ANTI-DEFAMATION LEAGUE FACT FINDING DIVISION

Officials: IRWIN SUALL, also known as John Graham.

Purpose: A joint FBI-British intelligence operation designed to single out rightwing groups and their leaders and put them out of business before they grow too large and too influential.

INTERNATIONAL ASSOCIATION OF MACHINISTS

Purpose: A labor oriented front for the Socialist International and a hot-bed of organized labor unrest polarizing workers and management.

AMALGAMATED CLOTHING WORKERS

Officials: Murray Findley, IRWIN SUALL and Jacob Scheinkman.

Purpose: Much the same as the Machinists Union, to socialize and polarize workers in the garment trade.

A. PHILIP RANDOLPH INSTITUTE

Officials: Bayard Rustin.

Purpose: To provide a means of coordinating organizations with a common purpose, an example of which would be the spread of socialist ideas among college students and workers.

CAMBRIDGE POLICY STUDIES INSTITUTE

Officials: Gar Apelrovitz.

Purpose: To expand on the work being done at the Institute for Policy Studies. Founded in February 1969 by international socialist, Gar Apelrovitz, former assistant to Senator Gaylord Nelson. Apelrovitz wrote the controversial book ATOMIC DIPLOMACY for the Club of Rome which work was financed by the German Marshall Fund. It concentrates on research and action projects, with a stated goal of fundamentally changing American society, i.e., to create a Fabianist United States in preparation of the coming One World Government.

ECONOMIC COMMITTEE OF THE NORTH ATLANTIC INSTITUTE

Officials: Dr. Aurellio Peccei.

Purpose: NATO think-tank on global economic issues.

CENTER FOR THE STUDY OF DEMOCRATIC INSTITUTIONS

Officials: Founder Robert Hutchins of the Committee of 300, Harry Ashmore, Frank Kelly and a large group of "Fellows."

Purpose: To spread ideas that will bring on social reforms of the liberal kind with democracy as an ideology. One of its activities is to draft a new constitution for the U.S. which will be strongly monarchical and socialistic as found in Denmark.

The Center is an "Olympian" stronghold. Located in Santa Barbara, it is housed in what is affectionately called "the Parthenon." Former Representative John Rarick called it "an outfit loaded with Communists." By 1973 work on a new United States Constitution was in its thirty-fifth draft which proposes an amendment guaranteeing "environmental right," the thrust of which is to reduce the industrial base of the U.S. to a mere whisper of what it was in 1969. In other words, this institution is carrying out Club of Rome zero-growth post-industrial policies laid down by the Committee of 300.

Some of its other aims are control of economic cycles, welfare, regulation of business and national public works, control of pollution. Speaking on behalf of the Committee of 300, Ashmore says the function of the CSDI is to find ways and means of making our political system work more effectively. "We must change education and we must consider a new U.S Constitution and a Constitution for the world," Ashmore says.

Further goals enunciated by Ashmore are as follows:

(1) Membership of the U.N. must be made universal.

(2) The U.N. must be strengthened.

(3) South East Asia must be neutralized. (For neutralized, read "Communized.")

(4) Cold War must be ended.

(5) Racial discrimination must be abolished.

(6) Developing nations must be assisted. (Meaning assisted to destruct.)

(7) No military solutions to problems. (Pity they didn't tell George Bush that before the Gulf War.)

(8) National solutions are not adequate.

(9) Coexistence is necessary.

HARVARD PSYCHOLOGICAL CLINIC

Officials: Dr. Kurt Lewin and staff of 15 new-science scientists.

Purpose: To create a climate where the Committee of 300 can take unlimited power over the U.S.

INSTITUTE FOR SOCIAL RESEARCH

Officials: Dr. Kurt Lewin and staff of 20 new-science scientists.

Purpose: To devise a whole new set of social programs to steer America away from industry.

SCIENCE POLICY RESEARCH UNIT

Officials: Leland Bradford, Kenneth Dam, Ronald Lippert.

Purpose: A "Future Shocks" research institution at Sussex University in England and part of the Tavistock network.

SYSTEMS DEVELOPMENT CORPORATION

Officials: Sheldon Arenberg and a staff of hundreds, too numerous to mention here.

Purpose: To coordinate all elements of the intelligence communities of the U.S.A. and Britain. It analyzes what "players" have to be assigned the role of a national entity; for example, Spain would come under a supine watered-down Catholic Church, the U.N. under the Secretary General and so forth. It developed the system of "X RAY 2" where think tank personnel, military installations and law enforcement centers are all linked to the Pentagon through a nation-wide network of Teletypes and computers: To apply surveillance techniques on a nation-wide scale. Arenberg says his ideas are non-military, but his techniques are mainly those he learned from the military. He was responsible for the New York State Identification and Intelligence System, a typical George Orwell "1984" project, which is completely illegal under our Constitution. The NYSIIS system is in the process of being adopted nationwide. It is what Brzezinsk referred to as the ability to almost instantaneously retrieve data about any person.

NYSIIS shares data with all law enforcement and government agencies in the state. It provides storage and rapid

retrieval of individual records, criminal and social. It is a TYPICAL Committee of 300 project. There is a crying need for a full investigation to be conducted into just what it is that Systems Development Corporation is doing, but that is beyond the scope of this book. One thing is sure, SDC is not there to preserve freedom and liberty guaranteed by the U.S. Constitution. How convenient that it should be located in Santa Barbara in easy reach of Robert Hutchins "Parthenon." Some publications put out by these Club of Rome institutions are as follows:

"Center Magazine"
"Counterspy"
"Coventry"
"Covert Action Information Bulletin"
"Dissent"
"Human Relations"
"Industrial Research"
"Inquiry"
"Mother Jones"
"One"
"Progressive"
"Raconteur"
"The New Republic"
"Working Papers for a New Society"

These are by no means all of the publications issued under the auspices of the Club of Rome. There are many hundreds more, in fact each of the foundations puts out its own publication. Given the number of foundations run by the Tavistock Institute and the Club of Rome, a partial listing is all we can include here. Some of the more important foundations and think tanks are in the following list, which includes Army think tanks.

The American public would be astounded if it only knew how deeply the Army is involved in "new war tactics" research with Committee of 300 "think tanks." Americans are not aware that in 1946 the Club of Rome was ordered by the Committee of 300 to further the progress of think tanks which it said offered a new means of spreading the Committee's philosophy. The impact of these think tanks upon our military, just since 1959 when they suddenly proliferated, is truly astounding. There is no doubt that

they will play an even greater role in the daily affairs of this nation as we come to the close of the 20th century.

THE MONT PELERIN SOCIETY

Mont Pelerin is an economic foundation devoted to issuing misleading economic theories and influencing economists in the Western world to follow models it lays out from time to time. Its leading practitioners are Von Hayek and Milton Friedman.

THE HOOVER INSTITUTION

Founded originally to fight Communism, the institution has slowly but surely turned toward Socialism. It has an annual budget of $2 million, funded by companies under the umbrella of the Committee of 300. It now concentrates on "peaceful changes" with emphasis on arms control and domestic U.S. problems. It is Frequently used by the news media as a "conservative" organization whose views they seek when a conservative viewpoint is needed. The Hoover Institution is far from that, and following the 1953 take-over of the Institution by a group allied to the Club of Rome, it has become a One World-New World Order outlet for "desirable" policies.

HERITAGE FOUNDATION

Founded by brewery magnate Joseph Coors to act as a conservative think tank, Heritage was soon taken over by Fabianists Sir Peter Vickers Hall, Stuart Butler, Steven Ayzlei, Robert Moss and Frederich Von Hayek under the direction of the Club of Rome. This institute played a major role in carrying out British Labour leader Anthony Wedgewood Benn's order to "Thatcherize Reagan." Heritage is certainly not a conservative operation although at times it may look and sound like one.

HUMAN RESOURCES RESEARCH OFFICE.

This is an Army research establishment dealing in "psychotechnology." Most of its personnel are Tavistock-trained. "Psychotechnology" covers GI motivation, morale and music used by the enemy. In fact a lot of what George Orwell wrote about in

his book "1984" appears to be remarkably similar to what is taught at HUMRRO. In 1969, the Committee of 300 took over this important institution and turned it into a private non-profit organization run under the auspices of the Club of Rome. It is the largest behavioral research group in the U.S.

One of its specialities is the study of small groups under stress and HUMRRO teaches the Army that a soldier is merely an extension of his equipment and has brought great influence to bear on the "man/weapon" system and its "human quality control," so widely accepted by the United States Army. HUMRRO has had a very pronounced effect on how the Army conducts itself. Its mind-bending techniques are straight out of Tavistock. HUMRRO'S applied psychology courses are supposed to teach Army brass how to make the human weapon work. A good example of this is the manner in which soldiers in the war against Iraq were willing to disobey their field manual standing orders and bury 12,000 Iraqi soldiers alive.

This type of brainwashing is terribly dangerous because today, it is applied to the Army, the Army applies it to brutally destroy thousands of "enemy" soldiers, and tomorrow the Army could be told that civilian population groups opposed to government policies are "the enemy." We are already a mindless brainwashed flock of sheep, yet it seems that HUMRRO can take mind bending and mind control a step further. HUMRRO is a valuable adjunct to Tavistock and many of the lessons taught at HUMRRO were applied in the Gulf War, which makes it a little easier to understand how it came to be that American soldiers behaved as ruthless and heartless killers, a far cry from the concept of the traditional American fighting man.

RESEARCH ANALYSIS CORPORATION.

This is HUMRRO'S sister "1984" organization situated in McLean, Virginia. Established in 1948, it was taken over by the Committee of 3OO in 1961 when it became part of the Johns Hopkins bloc. It has worked on over 600 projects, including integrating Negroes into the Army, the tactical use of nuclear weapons, psychological warfare programs and mass population control.

Obviously there are many more major think tanks, and we shall come to most of them in this book. One of the most important areas of cooperation between what think tanks turn out and what becomes government and public policy are the "pollsters." It is the job of the polling companies to mold and shape public opinion in the way that suits the conspirators. Polls are constantly being taken by CBS-NBC-ABC, the New York Times, the Washington Post. Most of these efforts are coordinated at the National Opinion Research Center where, as much as it will amaze most of us, a psychological profile was developed for the entire nation.

Findings are fed into the computers of Gallup Poll and Yankelovich, Skelley and White for comparative evaluation. Much of what we read in our newspapers or see on television has first been cleared by the polling companies. WHAT WE SEE IS WHAT THE POLLSTERS THINK WE SHOULD SEE. This is called "public opinion making." The whole idea behind this bit of social conditioning is to find out how responsive the public is to POLICY DIRECTIVES handed down by the Committee of 300. We are called "targeted population groups" and what is measured by the pollsters is how much resistance is generated to what appears in the "Nightly News." Later, we shall learn exactly how this deceptive practice got started and who is responsible for it.

It is all part of the elaborate opinion-making process created at, Tavistock. Today our people believe they are well-informed but what they do not realize is that the opinions they believe are their own were in fact created in the research institutions and think tanks of America and that none of us are free to form our own opinions because of the information we are provided with by the media and the pollsters.

Polling was brought to a fine art just before the United States entered the Second World War. Americans, unbeknown to themselves, were conditioned to look upon Germany and Japan as dangerous enemies who had to be stopped. In a sense, this was true, and that makes conditioned thinking all the more dangerous, because based on the INFORMATlON fed to them, the enemy did indeed appear to be Germany and Japan. Just recently we saw

how well Tavistock's conditioning process works when Americans were conditioned to perceive Iraq as a threat and Saddam Hussein as a personal enemy of the United States.

Such a conditioning process is technically described as "the message reaching the sense organs of persons to be influenced." One of the most respected of all pollsters is Committee of 300 member Daniel Yankelovich, of the company, Yankelovich, Skelley and White. Yankelovich is proud to tell his students that polling is a tool to change public opinion, although this is not original, Yankelovich having drawn his inspiration from David Naisbett's book "TREND REPORT" which was commissioned by the Club of Rome.

In his book Naisbett describes all of the techniques used by public opinion makers to bring about the public opinion desired by the Committee of 300. Public opinion making is the jewel in the crown of the OLYMPIANS, for with their thousands of newscience social scientists at their beck and call, and with the news media firmly in their hands, NEW public opinions on almost any subject can be created and disseminated around the world in a matter of two weeks.

This is precisely what happened when their servant George Bush was ordered to make war on Iraq. Within two weeks, not only the U.S. but almost the entire world public opinion was turned against Iraq and its President Saddam Hussein. These media change artists and news manipulators report directly to the Club of Rome which in turn reports to the Committee of 300 at whose head sits the Queen of England ruling over a vast network of closely-linked corporations who never pay taxes and are answerable to no one, who fund their research institutions through foundations whose joint activities have almost total control over our daily lives.

Together with their interlocking companies, insurance business, banks, finance corporations, oil companies, newspapers, magazines, radio and television, this vast apparatus sits astride the United States and the world. There is not a politician in Washington D.C. who is not, somehow, beholden to it. The Left rails against it, calling it "imperialism" which indeed it is, but the

left is run by the same people, the very same ones who control the right, so that the left is no more free than we are!

Scientists engaged in the process of conditioning are called "social engineers" or "new-science social scientists" and they play an integral part in what we see, hear and read. The "old school" social engineers were Kurt K. Lewin, Professor Hadley Cantril, Margaret Meade, Professor Derwin Cartwright and Professor Lipssitt who, together with John Rawlings Reese, made up the backbone of new-science scientists at Tavistock Institute.

During the Second World War, there were over 100 researchers at work under the direction of Kurt Lewin, copying slavishly the methods adopted by Reinhard Heydrich of the S.S. The OSS was based on Heydrich's methodology and, as we know, the OSS was the forerunner of the Central Intelligence Agency. The point of all this is that the governments of Britain and the United States already have the machinery in place to bring us into line in a New World Order with only a slight modicum of resistance materializing, and this machinery has been in place since 1946. Each passing year has added new refinements.

It is this Committee of 300 which has established control networks and mechanisms far more binding than anything ever seen in this world. Chains and ropes are not needed to restrain us. Our fear of what is to come does that job far more efficiently than any physical means of restraint. We have been brainwashed to give up our Constitutional right to bear arms; to give up our Constitution itself; to allow the United Nations to exercise control over our foreign policies and the IMF to take control of our fiscal and monetary policies; to permit the President to break United States law with impunity and to invade a foreign country and kidnap its head-of-state. In short we have been brainwashed to the extent where we, as a nation, will accept each and every lawless act carried out by our government almost without question.

I for one know that we will soon have to fight to reclaim our country from the Committee, or lose it forever. BUT when it comes right down to it, how many will actually take up arms? In 1776 only 3% of the populace took up arms against King George III. This time around, 3% will be woefully inadequate. We should

not allow ourselves to be led down dead-end roads, for that is what our mind controllers have planned for us by confronting us with such a complexity of issues that we simply succumb to long range penetration and make no decisions at all on many vital issues.

We shall be looking at the names of those who make up the Committee of 300 but, before we do that, we should examine the massive interfacing of all important institutions, companies and banks under the Committee's control. We must mark them well because these are the people who are deciding who shall live and who shall be eliminated as "useless eaters"; where we will worship God, what we must wear and even what we shall eat. According to Brzezinski, we shall be under endless surveillance around the clock for 365 days a year ad infinitum.

That we have been betrayed from within is being accepted by more and more people each year, and that is good, because it is through knowledge, a word translated from the word BELIEF, that we shall be able to defeat the enemies of all mankind. While we were being distracted by the bogeymen in the Kremlin, the Trojan Horse was moved into position in Washington D.C. The greatest danger free people face today is not from Moscow but from Washington D.C. We need first to conquer the DOMESTIC ENEMY, and after that we will be strong enough to mount an offensive to remove Communism from the earth together with all of its attendant "isms."

The Carter Administration accelerated the collapse of our economy and our military strength, the latter begun by Club of Rome and Lucis Trust member Robert Strange McNamara. In spite of his promises, Reagan continued to undermine our industrial base, starting where Carter left off. While we need to keep our defenses strong, we cannot do that from a weak industrial base for, without a well-run military-industrial complex, we cannot have a viable defense system. The Committee of 300 recognizes this and planned from 1953 its zero-growth post-industrial policies now in full flower.

Thanks to the Club of Rome our technology potential has dropped below that of Japan and Germany, nations we are

supposed to have defeated in the Second World War. How has this come about? Because of men like Dr. Alexander King and our blindfolded state of mind, we have failed to recognize the destruction of our educational institutions and systems of teaching. As a result of our blindness, we are no longer training engineers and scientist in sufficient numbers to keep us among the industrialized nations of the world. Thanks to Dr. King, a man very few people in America know about, education in the U.S. is at its lowest level since 1786. Statistics produced by the Institute for Higher Learning show that the reading and writing capabilities of high school children the United States are LOWER than they were among high school children in 1786.

What we face today is not only the loss of our freedom and the very fabric of our nation, but far worse, the possibility of the loss of our souls. The steady chipping away at the foundation upon which this republic rests has left an empty void, which satanists and cultists are rushing to fill with their synthetic soul material. This truth is difficult to accept and appreciate because there was nothing SUDDEN about these events. If a sudden shock were to hit us, a cultural and religious shock, we would be shaken out of our apathy.

But gradualism—which is what Fabianism is, does nothing to raise the alarm. Because the vast majority of Americans can see no MOTIVATION for the things I have described, they cannot accept it, and so the conspiracy is scorned and often mocked. By creating chaos through presenting hundreds of daily choices our people have to make, we have come down to a position where, unless motivation can be clearly shown, all information is rejected.

This is both the weak and the strong link in the conspiratorial chain. Most thrust aside anything that has no motive, so the conspirators feel safe behind the ridicule poured upon those who point to the coming crisis in our nation and our individual lives. However, if we can get enough people to see the truth, the motivation block gets weaker until it will eventually be forced aside as more and more people become enlightened and the notion that "this cannot happen in America" is dispensed with.

The Committee of 300 is counting on our maladaptive responses to govern our reaction to created events, and it will not be disappointed as long as we as a nation continue in the present way we respond. We must turn responses to created crises into ADAPTIVE responses by identifying the conspirators and exposing their plans for us, so that these things become public knowledge. The Club of Rome has already made THE TRANSITION TO BARBARISM. Instead of waiting to be "raptured," we must stop the Committee of 300 before it can accomplish its goal of making us prisoners of the" New Dark Age" planned for us. It is not up to God, IT IS UP TO US. We have to take the necessary action.

All information that I provide in this book comes from years of research backed up by impeccable intelligence sources. Nothing is exaggerated. It is factual and precise so do not fall into the trap set by the enemy that this material is "disinformation." For the past two decades I have provided information which has proved to be highly accurate and which has explained a lot of puzzling events. My hope is that through this book, a better, clearer and wider understanding of the conspiratorial forces ranged against this nation will come about. That hope is being realized as more and more young people are beginning to ask questions and seek information about what is REALLY going on.

It is difficult for people to comprehend that these conspirators are real and that they have the power I and many others have attributed to them. Many have written to ask how it is that our government does nothing about the terrible threat to civilization? The problem is that our government is PART of the problem, part of the conspiracy, and nowhere and at no time has this become more clearly evident than during the Bush Presidency. Of course President Bush knows precisely what the Committee of 300 is doing to us. HE WORKS FOR THEM. Others have written to say, "We thought we were fighting the government." Of course we are, but behind government stands a force so powerful and all-encompassing that intelligence agencies are even afraid to mention the name "Olympians."

Proof of the Committee of 300 is found in the vast number of powerful institutions owned and controlled by it. Listed here are some of the more important ones, all of which come under the

MOTHER OF ALL THINK TANKS AND RESEARCH INSTITUTIONS, THE TAVISTOCK INSTITUTE OF HUMAN RELATIONS with its far-flung network of hundreds of "branches." STANFORD RESEARCH CENTER

Stanford Research Center (SRC) was founded in 1946 by the Tavistock Institute For Human Relations. Stanford was created to help Robert 0. Anderson and his ARCO oil company, who had secured for the Committee of 300 the oil rights on the North Slope of Alaska. Basically, the job was too large for Anderson's Aspen Institute to handle, so a new center had to be founded and funded. That new center was Stanford Research Center. Alaska sold its rights on a downpayment of $900 million, a relatively small amount for the Committee of 300. The governor of Alaska was steered to SRI for help and advice. This was no accident but the result of judicious planning and a process of long-range conditioning.

Following the governor's call for help, three SRI scientists set up shop in Alaska where they met with the Alaskan Secretary of State and the State Planning Office. Francis Greehan, who headed the SRI team, assured the Governor that his problem of how to handle the rich oil find would be safe in the hands of SRI. Naturally Greehan did not mention the Committee of 300 or the Club of Rome. In less than a month Greehan assembled a team of economists, petroleum scientists and new-science scientists numbering in the hundreds. The report SRI gave to the Governor ran to eighty-eight pages.

The proposal was adopted virtually without change by the Alaska legislature in 1970. Greehan had indeed done a remarkable job for the Committee of 300. From this beginning SRI developed into an institution employing 4000 people with an annual budget of $160 million plus. Its President, Charles A. Anderson, has seen much of this growth during his tenure, as has Professor Willis Harmon, director of the SRI Center for the Study of Social Policies, employing hundreds of new-science scientists, many of the top staffers having been transferred from Tavistock's London base. One of those was RCA board chairman and former British intelligence agent, David Sarnoff, who was closely involved with

Harmon and his team for twenty-five years. Sarnoff was something of a "watchdog" for the mother institute in Sussex.

Stanford claims to make no moral judgments on projects it accepts, working for Israel and the Arabs, South Africa and Libya but, as one would imagine, by adopting this attitude it ensures an "inside edge" with foreign governments that the CIA has found most useful. In Jim Ridgeway's book, "THE CLOSED CORPORATION," SRI spokesman Gibson brags about SRI's non-discriminatory stance. Although not on the Federal Contract Research Center lists, SRI is today the largest military think tank, dwarfing Hudson and Rand. Among SRl's speciality departments are chemical and biological warfare experimental centers.

One of Stanford's more dangerous activities is counter-insurgency operations aimed at civilian populations—just the sort of "1984" things government is already using against its own people. The U.S. government pays SRI millions of dollars each year for this kind of highly controversial "research." Following student protests against chemical warfare experiments conducted at Stanford, SRI "sold" itself to a private group for just $25 million. Of course nothing really changed, SRI was still a Tavistock project and the Committee of 300 still owned it, but the gullible appeared to be satisfied by this meaningless cosmetic change.

In 1958 a startling new development arose. Advanced Research Products Agency (ARPA), a contracting agency for the Defense Department, approached SRI with a top secret proposal. John Foster at the Pentagon told SRI that what was needed was a program to insure the United States against "technological surprise." Foster wanted to perfect a condition where the environment became a weapon; special bombs to trigger volcanos and/or earthquakes, behavioral research on potential enemies and minerals and metals with potential for new weapons. The project was accepted by SRI and code-named "SHAKY."

The massive electronic brain in SHAKY was capable of carrying out many commands, its computers having been constructed by IBM for SRI. Twenty-eight scientists worked on what is called "Human Augmentation." The IBM computer even has the capability to solve problems by analogy and recognizes

and identifies scientists who work with it. The "special applications" of this tool can be better imagined than described. Brzezinski knew what he was talking about when he wrote "THE TECHNOTRONIC ERA."

Stanford Research Institute works closely with scores of civilian consulting firms, trying to apply military technology to domestic situations. This has not always been a success, but as techniques improve, the prospects for massive all-pervading surveillance, as described by Brzezinski, daily becomes more real. IT ALREADY EXISTS AND IS IN USE, EVEN THOUGH SLIGHT MALFUNCTIONS FROM TIME TO TIME HAVE TO BE IRONED OUT. One such civilian consulting firm was Schriever McKee Associates of McLean, Virginia, run by retired General Bernard A. Schriever, a former chief of the Air Force Systems Command, who developed the Titan, Thor, Atlas and Minuteman rockets.

Schriever put together a consortium of Lockheed, Emmerson Electric, Northrop, Control Data, Raytheon and TRW under the name of URBAN SYSTEMS ASSOCIATES, INC. The purpose of the consortium? To solve social and psychological "urban problems" by means of military techniques using advanced electronic systems. It is interesting to note that TRW became the largest credit information collecting company in the credit-reporting business as a result and an outcome of its work with Urban Systems Associates, Inc.

This should tell us a great deal about just how far this nation is already under TOTAL SURVEILLANCE, which is the first requirement of the Committee of 300. No dictatorship, especially not one on a global scale, can function without total control over each and every individual. SRI was well on its way to becoming a key Committee of 300 research organization.

By the 1980's, 60% of SRI's contracts were devoted to "Futurism" with both military and civilian applications. Its major clients were the U.S. Department of Defense-Directorate of Defense Research and Engineering, Office of Aerospace Research which dealt with "Applications of the Behavioral Sciences to Research Management," Executive Office of the President, Office of Science and Technology, U.S. Department of Health. On behalf

of the Department of Health, SRI ran a program called "'Patterns in ESDEA Title I Reading Achievement Tests." Other clients were the U.S. Department of Energy, the U.S. Department of Labor, U.S. Department of Transportation and the National Science Foundation (NSF). Of significance was the paper developed for NSF, entitled "Assessment of Future and International Problems."

Stanford Research, under the tutelage of Tavistock Institute in London, put together a far reaching and chilling system it called "Business Intelligence Program." In excess of 600 companies in the U.S. and abroad became subscribers. The program covered research in Japanese Foreign Business Relations, Consumer Marketing in a Period of Change, The Mounting Challenge of International Terrorism, Sensory Evaluation in Consumer Products, Electronic Funds Transfer System, Opto-Electric Sensing, Exploratory Planning Methods, the U.S. Defense Industry and Capital Availability. Among the TOP Committee of 300 companies who became clients of this program were Bechtel Corporation (George Schultz was on its board), Hewlett Packard, TRW, Bank of America, Shell Company, RCA, Blyth, Eastman Dillon, Saga Foods Corporation, McDonnell Douglas, Crown Zellerbach, Wells Fargo Bank and Kaiser Industries.

But one of the most sinister of all SRI programs with the possibilities of doing tremendous damage in altering the direction in which the United States will go, socially, morally and religiously, was Stanford's Charles F. Kettering Foundation's "CHANGING IMAGES OF MAN" under Stanford official reference "Contract Number URH (489)-2150 Policy Research Report Number 4/4/74, Prepared by the SRI Center for the Study of Social Policy, Director Willis Harmon." This is probably one of the most far-reaching investigations into how man might be changed that has ever been conducted.

The report, covering 319 pages, was written by 14 new science scientists under the supervision of Tavistock and 23 top controllers including B. F. Skinner, Margaret Meade, Ervin Lazlo and Sir Geoffrey Vickers, a high-level British intelligence officer in M16. It will be recalled that his son-in-law, Sir Peter Vickers Hall, was a founding member of the so-called conservative "Heritage Foundation." Much of the 3000 pages of "recommendations" given

to the Reagan administration in January 1981 were based upon material taken from Willis Harmon's "CHANGING IMAGES OF MAN."

I was privileged to receive a copy of "THE CHANGING IMAGES OF MAN" from my intelligence colleagues five days after it was accepted by the United States government. What I read shocked me, as I realized I was looking at a blueprint for a future America, unlike anything I had ever seen before. The nation was to be programmed to change and become so accustomed to such planned changes that it would hardly be noticeable when profound changes did occur. We have gone downhill so fast since "THE AQUARIAN CONSPIRACY" (the book title of Willis Harmon's technical paper) was written, that today, divorce draws no stigma, suicide is at an all time high and raises few eyebrows, social deviations from the norm and sexual aberrations, once unmentionable in decent circles, are now commonplace and excite no special protest.

As a nation we have not noticed how "CHANGING IMAGES OF MANKIND" has radically altered our American way of life forever. Somehow we were overcome by the "Watergate Syndrome." For a while we were shocked and dismayed to learn that Nixon was nothing but a cheap crook who hobnobbed with Earl Warren's Mafia friends at the beautiful home they built for him adjoining the Nixon estate. When too many "future shocks" and news headlines demanded our attention, we lost our way, or rather, the huge number of choices with which we were and still are daily confronted, confused us to such a degree that we were no longer able to make the necessary choices.

Worse yet, having been subjected to a barrage of crimes in high places, plus the trauma of the Vietnam War, our nation seemed no longer to want truths. Such reaction is carefully explained in Willis Harmon's technical paper, in short, the American nation was reacting exactly as profiled. Worse yet, in not wishing to accept truth, we took matters a step further: We looked to government to shield us from the truth.

The corrupt stench of the Reagan-Bush Administrations we wanted covered with six feet of earth. The crimes committed

under the title of Iran/Contra affair (or scandals), we didn't want uncovered. We let our President lie to us regarding his where abouts in the period October 20-23rd, 1980. Yet these crimes far exceed in quantity and scope anything Nixon did while he was in office. Do we as a nation recognize it as going downhill with our brakes off?

No, we do not. When those whose business it is to bring the truth to the American people that a private, well-organized little government inside the White House was busy committing one crime after another, crimes which attacked the very soul of this nation and the republican institutions upon which it rested, we were told not to bother the public with such things. "We really don't want to know about all this speculation," became a standard response.

When the highest elected official of the land blatantly put U.N. law above the Constitution of the United States—an impeachible offense, the majority accepted it as "normal." When the highest elected official of the land went to war without a Congressional declaration of war, the fact was censored out by the news media and, again, we accepted it rather than face the truth.

When the Gulf War, which our President plotted and planned, began, not only were we happy with censorship of the most blatant kind, we even took it to our hearts, believing that it was "good tor the war effort." Our President lied, April Glaspie lied, the State Department lied. They said the war was justified because President Hussein had been warned to leave Kuwait alone. When Glaspie's cables to the State Department were finally made public, one United States Senator after another went charging to defend Glaspie, the harlot. It mattered not that they came from both the Democrats and the Republicans. We, the people, let them get away with their vile lies.

In this public attitude of the American people, the wildest dreams of Willis Harmon and his teams of scientists became a reality. The Tavistock Institute was elated at its success in destroying the self respect and self esteem of this once great nation. We are told that we won the Gulf War. What is not yet perceived by the vast majority of Americans is that, in winning the

war, it cost the self respect and honor of our nation. That lies rotting in the desert sands of Kuwait and Iraq, alongside the corpses of the Iraqi soldiers we butchered in the agreed retreat from Kuwait and Basra—we could not keep our word that we would abide by the Geneva Conventions and not attack them. "What do you want," our controllers asked us, "victory or self respect? You can't have both."

One hundred years ago, this could not have happened, but now it has happened and excites no comment. We have succumbed to the long range penetration warfare waged against this nation by Tavistock. Like the German nation, defeated by the Prudential Bombing Survey, enough of us have succumbed to make this nation the kind that totalitarian regimes of the past would have only envisaged in their dreams. "Here," they would say, "is a nation, one of the largest in the world, that doesn't want the truth. All of our propaganda agencies can be dispensed with. We don't have to struggle to keep the truth from this nation, they have willingly rejected it of their own volition. This nation is a pushover."

Our once proud Republic of the United States of America became no more than a series of criminal front organizations, which history shows is always the start of totalitarianism. This is the stage of permanent alteration we are at in America as 1991 drew to a close. We live in a throw-away society, programmed not to last. We do not even flinch at the 4 million homeless nor the 30 million jobless, nor the 15 million babies murdered thus far. They are "throw-aways" of the Age of Aquarius, a conspiracy so damnable that, when first confronted with it, the majority will disavow its existence, rationalizing these events as "times have changed."

This is how the Tavistock Institute and Willis Harmon programmed us to react. Dismantling of our ideals goes on without protest. The spiritual and intellectual drive of our people has been destroyed! On May 27th, 1991, President Bush made a very profound statement, the thrust of which appears to have been totally misused by most political commentators:

"The moral dimension of American policy requires us to chart a moral course through a world of lesser evils. That is the real world, not black and white. Very few moral absolutes."

What else could we expect from a President who is most probably the most evil man ever to occupy the White House? Consider this in the light of his order to the military to bury alive 12,000 Iraqi soldiers. Consider this in the light of his ongoing war of genocide against the Iraqi people. President Bush was delighted to characterize President Saddam Hussein as the "Hitler of our times." He never bothered to offer a single scrap of proof. It was not needed. Because President Bush made the statement, we accepted it without question. Consider this in the bright light of truth, that he did all of these things in the name of the American people while secretly taking his orders from the Committee of 300. But, more than anything else, consider this: President Bush and his controllers feel so secure that they no longer deem it necessary to hide their evil control of the American people, or to lie about it. This is self-evident in the statement that he, as our leader, will make all manner of compromises with truth, honesty and decency if his controllers (and ours) deem it necessary. On May 27th, 1991, the President of the United States abandoned each and every principle embodied in our Constitution and boldly proclaimed that he was no longer bound by it. This is a great victory for the Tavistock Institute and the Prudential Bombing Survey, whose target changed from German worker housing in 1945 to the soul of the American people in a war that began in 1946 and runs through to 1992.

Increased pressure on this nation for change was applied by Stanford Research Institute in the early 1960's. SRI's offensive gathered power and momentum. Switch on your television set and you will see Stanford's victory in front of your very eyes: talk shows featuring heavy sexual details, special video channels where perversion, rock and roll and drugs reign supreme. Where once John Wayne ruled, we now have a made-over apology for a man (or is he?) called Michael Jackson, a parody of a human being who is held up as a hero, as he gyrates, shuffles, mumbles and screams his way across television screens in millions of American homes.

A woman who has been through a series of marriages gets national coverage. One filthy, half-washed drug-ridden decalent rock band after another has hours of air time devoted to its inane sounds and mad gyrations, clothes fashions and language aberrations. Soap operas showing as near as "dammit" is to wearing pornographic scenes draw no comment. Whereas in early 1960 this would never have been tolerated, today it is accepted as normal. We have been subjected and we have succumbed to what Tavistock Institute calls "future shocks" whose future is NOW and we are so numbed by one cultural shock after another that to protest seems like a futile gesture and, therefore, logically we think, it does no good to protest.

In 1986 the Committee of 300 ordered the pressure turned up. The U.S. was not going down fast enough. The United States began the process of "recognizing" the butchers of Cambodia, the criminal Pol Pot regime, self confessors to the murder of 2 million Cambodian citizens. In 1991, the wheel turned the full circle. The United States went to war against a friendly nation that had been programmed to trust the Washington traitors. We accused President Hussein of the small nation of Iraq of all manner of evil, NONE OF WHICH WAS EVEN REMOTELY TRUE. We killed and maimed its children, we left them to starve and to die of all manner of diseases.

In the same breath we sent the Bush emissaries of the Committee of 300 to Cambodia to RECOGNIZE THE EVIL MASS MURDERERS OF 2 MILLION CAMBODIANS, who were sacrificed by the Committee of 300's depopulation of cities experiment, which the big cities of the United States will experience in the not too distant future. Now, President Bush and his Committee of 300-ridden administration say, in effect, "Look people, what do you want from me? I told you that I will compromise where I see fit, even when that means sleeping with the Pol Pot murderers. SO WHAT—KISS MY HIPS."

The level of pressure for change will reach its peak in 1993 and we shall witness scenes such as we would never have thought possible. Punch drunk America will react, but ever so slightly. Not even the latest threat to our freedom, the personal computer card disturbs us. Willis Harman's "CHANGING IMAGES OF MAN" would

have been too technical for most so the service of Marilyn Ferguson was obtained to make it more easily understood. "THE AGE OF AQUARIUS" heralded nude stage shows and a song which made the top of the charts: "The Dawning of the Age of the Aquarius" swept the globe.

The personal computer card which, when fully distributed, will deprive us of our familiar environment and, as we shall see, environment means a lot more than the usually accepted meaning of the word. The United States has gone through a period of intense trauma such as has never been visited on any other nation in the history of the world, and the worst is yet to come.

Everything is going according to what Tavistock ordered and what the social scientists at Stanford mapped out. Times do not change; they are made to change. All changes are preplanned and come as the result of careful action. We have been changed gradually at first, but now the pace of change is picking up. The United States is being transformed from One Nation Under God to a polyglot of nations under several gods. The U.S. is no longer One nation under God. The framers of the Constitution have lost the battle.

Our forebears spoke a common language and believed in a common religion Christianity, and held common ideals. There were no aliens in our midst; that came later in a deliberately planned attempt to break up the United States into a series of fragmented nationalities, cultures and beliefs. If you doubt this, go down to the East Side of New York, or the West Side of Los Angeles on any given Saturday and look around you. The United States has become several nations struggling to coexist under a common system of government. When the floodgates of immigration were opened wide by Franklin D. Roosevelt, a cousin of the head of the Committee of 300, the cultural shock caused great confusion and dislocation and made "One Nation" an unworkable concept. The Club of Rome and NATO have exacerbated the situation. "Love thy neighbor" is an ideal that will not work unless your neighbor "is as yourself."

To the framers of our Constitution, the truths they laid out For future generations were "self evident"—to themselves Being

unsure that future generations would also find the truths to which they bound this nation self evident, THEY SET ABOUT SPELLING THEM OUT. IT SEEMS THAT THEY WERE AFRAID OF A TIME THAT MIGHT COME WHEN THE TRUTHS THEY ESPOUSED WOULD NO LONGER BE SELF-EVIDENT. The Tavistock Institute for Human Relations has made sure that what the framers feared might come to pass has indeed come to pass. That time has arrived with Bush and his "no absolutes" and his New World Order under the Committee of 300.

This is part of the concept of social changes forced upon Americans which Harmon and the Club of Rome said would make for severe trauma and a great building up of pressure. The social upheavals that have taken place since the advent of Tavistock, the Club of Rome and NATO will continue in the U.S. for as long as the limit of absorption is ignored. Nations are made up of individuals and, like individuals, there is a limit to their ability to absorb changes, no matter how robust they may be.

This psychological truth was well proven by the Strategic Bombing Survey which called for saturation bombing of German worker housing. As mentioned earlier, the project was the work of the Prudential Insurance Company and no one doubts today that Germany suffered its defeat because of this operation. Many of the scientists who worked on that project are working on saturation bombing of America, or else they have passed on, leaving their skilled techniques in the hands of others who followed behind them.

The legacy they left behind them can be found in the fact that we have not so much lost our way as a nation, but that we have been steered in a direction opposite to that which the framers of the Declaration guided us for over 200 years. We have, in short, lost contact with our historical genes, our faith, which inspired countless generations of Americans to move forward as a nation, benefiting from the patrimony left to us by the framers of the Declaration of Independence and the United States Constitution. That we are lost is clear to all who seek the truth, as unpleasant as it may be.

With President Bush and his "no absolute morals" guiding us, we blunder ahead as lost nations and individuals tend to do. We are collaborating with the Committee of 300 for our own downfall and our own enslavement. Some sense it—and feel a strong sense of unease. The various conspiracy theories they are familiar with do not seem to cover it all. This is because they know nothing of the Conspirators'Hierarchy, The Committee of 300.

These souls who feel a deep sense of unease and that something is radically wrong, yet cannot put their collective fingers on the problem, walk in darkness. They look to a future they see slipping away from them. The American dream has become a mirage. They place their faith in religion but take no steps to help that faith along by ACTION. Americans will never experience a retracing of steps such as the Europeans experienced when at the height of the Dark Ages. By determined ACTlON, they awoke in themselves a spirit of renewal which resulted in the glorious Renaissance.

The enemy that has directed them to this point decided to make a strong move against the United States in 1980, so that Renaissance of America would be impossible. Who is the enemy? The enemy is no faceless "they." The enemy is clearly identifiable as the Committee of 300, the Club of Rome, NATO and all of its affiliated organizations, the think tanks and research institutions controlled by Tavistock. There is no need to use "they" or "the enemy" except as shorthand. WE KNOW WHO "THEY," THE ENEMY, IS. The Committee of 300 with its Eastern Liberal Establishment "aristocracy," its banks, insurance companies, giant corporations, foundations, communications networks, presided over by a HIERARCHY OF CONSPIRATORS—THIS IS THE ENEMY.

This is the power that brought to life the reign of terror in Russia, the Bolshevik Revolution, World Wars I and II, Korea, Vietnam, the fall of Rhodesia, South Africa, Nicaragua, and the Philippines. This is the secret upper-level government that brought into existence the controlled disintegration of the U.S. economy and deindustrialized what was once the greatest indusrial power, for good, that the world had ever known.

America today can be compared with a soldier who falls asleep in the thick of battle. We Americans have fallen asleep, given way to apathy caused by being confronted with a multplicity of choices which has confused us. These are the changes that alter our environment, break down our resistance to change so that we become dazed, apathetic and eventually fall asleep in the thick of battle.

There is a technical term for this condition. It is called "long range penetration strain." The art of subjecting a very large group of people to continued long range penetration strain was developed by scientists working out of the Tavistock Institute of Human Relations and their U. S. subsidiaries, Stanford Research and Rand Corporation, and at least another 150 research institutions here in the U.S.

Dr. Kurt Lewin, the scientist who developed this fiendish warfare, has caused the average American patriot to fret over various conspiracy theories, leaving him or her with a feeling of uncertainty and insecurity, isolated and perhaps even afraid, as he searches, but fails to understand the decay and rot caused by "THE CHANGING IMAGES OF MANKIND," unable to identify or combat the social, moral, economic and political changes he deems undesirable and does not want, yet which increase in intensity on every hand.

Dr. Lewin's name will not be found in any of our establishment history books which, in any event, are a record of events mostly from the side of the ruling class or the victors of wars. Therefore, it is with pride that I introduce his name to you. As mentioned before, Dr. Lewin organized the Harvard Psychological Clinic and the Institute for Social Research under the auspices of the Tavistock Institute. The names do not give much indication of the purpose of the two organizations.

This reminds me of the infamous bill to reform coinage and mint laws passed in 1827. The title of the bill was harmless enough or sounded harmless, which was the intention of its backers. Through this Act, Senator John Sherman betrayed the nation into the hands of the international bankers. Sherman allegedly sponsored the bill "without reading it." As we know, the

bill's true purpose was to demonetize silver and give the thieving bankers unlimited power over the credit of our nation; powers to which the bankers were clearly not entitled under the clear and unmistakable terms of the U.S. Constitution.

Kurt Lewin gave the Tavistock Institute, the Club of Rome and NATO unlimited power over America, to which no organization, entity or society is entitled. These institutions have used the usurped powers to destroy the will of the nation to resist the plans and intentions of the conspirators to rob us of the fruits of the American Revolution and steer us on a course leading directly to a New Dark Ages under a One World Government.

Lewin's colleagues in this long range penetration objective were Richard Crossman, Eric Trist, H. V. Dicks, Willis Harmon, Charles Anderson, Garner Lindsay, Richard Price and W. R. Bion. Again, these names never appear in the evening news; in fact, they only appear in scientific journals—so very few Americans are aware of them and not at all aware of what the men behind the names have done and are doing to the United States.

President Jefferson once said he pitied those who thought they knew what was taking place through reading the newspaper. Disraeli, the British prime minister, said much the same thing. Indeed, down through the ages, rulers have delighted in running things from behind the scenes. Man has always felt the need to dominate and nowhere and at no time is the desire more prevalent than in this modern era.

If it were not so, why all the need for secret societies? If we are ruled by an open system run by democratically elected officials, why the need for a secret Masonic order in every village, town and city across the United States? How is it that Freemasonry can operate so openly and yet keep its secrets so well hidden? We can't ask the Nine Unknown Men of the Nine Sisters Lodge in Paris that question, nor can we ask it of their nine fellows in the Quatuar Coronati Lodge in London. Yet these eighteen men form part of an even more secret government, the RIIA, and beyond that, the Committee of 3OO.

How is it that the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry could brainwash John Hinckley to shoot President Reagan? Why do we have such secret orders as the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, the Round Table, the Milner Group and so on down line upon line of secret societies? They form part of a world-wide chain of command and control running through the Club of Rome, NATO, the RIIA and finally right up to the Conspirators' Hierarchy, The Committee of 300. Men need these secret societies because their deeds are evil and must be hidden. Evil cannot stand in the light of truth.

In this book we shall find an almost complete list of the conspirators, their institutions, fronts and publications. In 1980 the Aquarian Conspiracy was in full swing and its success can be seen in every facet of our private and national life. The overwhelming rise in mindless violence, serial killers, teenage suicides, the unmistakable signs of lethargy—"long range penetration" is a part of our new environment, as dangerous, if not more so, than the polluted air that we breathe.

The coming of the Age of Aquarius caught America totally unprepared. We as a nation were not prepared for the changes about to be forced upon us. Who ever had heard of Tavistock, Kurt Lewin, Willis Harmon and John Rawlings Reese? They were not even on the American political scene. What we would have noticed, if we bothered to look at all, was a falling off of our ability to withstand futuristic shock as we became more fatigued, distressed and eventually entered a period of psychological shock followed by widespread apathy as an outward manifestation of long range penetration warfare.

The Age of Aquarius was best described by Tavistock Institute as the vehicle for delivering turbulence: "There are three distinct phases in the response and reaction to stress displayed by large social groups. First, there is superficiality; the population under attack will defend itself with slogans; this does not identify the source of the crisis and therefore does nothing to address it, hence the crisis will persist. The second is fragmentation. This occurs as the crisis continues and social order breaks down. Then, there is the third phase where the population group goes into 'self realization' and turns away from the induced crisis and there

follows a maladaptive response, accompanied with active synoptic idealism and disassociation."

Who can deny that with the huge increase in drug usage-"crack" making thousands of instant new addicts each day—the shocking rise in the murder of infants each day (aborticide), which by now far exceeds casualties suffered by our armed forces in both World Wars, Korea and Vietnam, the open acceptance of homosexuality and lesbianism whose "rights" are protected by more and more laws each year, the terrible plague we call "AIDS" washing over our towns and cities, total failure of our education system, the stunning increase in the divorce rate, a murder rate that shocks the rest of the world into disbelief, satanic serial killings, the disappearance of thousands of young children, snatched off our streets by perverts, a virtual tidal wave of pornography accompanied by "permissiveness" on our television screens—who can deny that this nation is in crisis, which we are not addressing and from which we are turning away.

Well-meaning people who specialize in these things blame a lot of the problem on education, or what passes for it in the United States. Criminals now abound in the age groups 9-15. Rapists are quite commonly as young as 10. Our social specialists, our teacher's unions, our churches say it is all due to a faulty education system. Witness how test scores keep dropping. The specialists bewail the fact that the United States now ranks around 39th in the level of education in the world.

Why do we bemoan what is so obvious? OUR EDUCATlON SYSTEM WAS PROGRAMMED TO SELF-DESTRUCT. THAT WAS WHAT DR. ALEXANDER KING WAS SENT HERE BY NATO TO ARRANGE. THAT IS WHAT JUSTICE HUGO BLACK WAS ORDERED TO ARRANGE. THE FACT IS, THE COMMITTEE OF 300, WITH THE APPROVAL OF OUR GOVERNMENT, DOES NOT WANT OUR YOUTH TO BE PROPERLY EDUCATED. The education that Freemason Justice Hugo Black, Alexander King, Gunnar Myrdal and his wife came to give the children of the United States is that CRIME PAYS, EXPEDIENCY IS WHAT COUNTS.

They taught our children that United States law is unequally applied, and that is perfectly in order. Our children were

properly educated by a decade of corrupt examples; Ronald Reagan and George Bush were ruled by greed and became totally corrupted by it. Our education system hasn't failed. Under the guidance of King, Black and the Myrdals it is actually a great success, but it all depends from whose point of view we look at it. The Committee of 300 is DELIGHTED with our education system, and will not allow one comma of it to be changed.

According to Stanford and Willis Harmon, the induced trauma of long range penetration of which our education is a part, has been going on for 45 years, yet how many are aware of the insidious pressures being applied to our society and the constant exposure to brainwashing that goes on every day? The mysterious gang wars that broke out in New York in the 1950's is an example of how the conspirators can create and stage-manage any type of disruptive elements they like. Where those gang wars came from nobody knew until the 1980's when researchers uncovered the hidden controllers who directed the so-called "social phenomena."

Gang wars were carefully planned at Stanford, deliberately designed to shock society and cause ripples of disturbances. By 1958 there were in excess of 200 of these gangs. They were made popular by a musical and a Hollywood movie, "West Side Story." After making the news for a decade, suddenly, in 1966, they disappeared off the streets of New York, Los Angeles New York, New Jersey, Philadelphia and Chicago.

Throughout the near decade of gang violence, the public reacted according to the profiled response Stanford expected; society as a whole could not comprehend gang warfare and the public responded in a maladaptive manner. Had there been those wise enough to recognize in gang wars a Stanford experiment in social engineering and brainwashing, the conspirator's plot would have been exposed. Either we did not have trained specialists who could see what was going on—which is highly unlikely—or else they were threatened and remained silent. The cooperation with Stanford by the news media brought to light a "new age" attack on our environment just as predicted by the social engineers and new-science scientists at Tavistock.

In 1989 gang warfare, as a social conditioning to change, was reintroduced to the streets of Los Angeles. Within a few short months of the first incidents, gangs began to proliferate-first in the scores, then in the hundreds on the streets of the East Side of Los Angeles. Crack houses and rampant prostitution proliferated; drug dealers dominated the streets. Anybody who got in their way was gunned down. The outcry in the press was loud and long. Stanford's targeted large population group began defending itself with slogans. This is what Tavistock called the first phase, with the targeted group failing to identify the source of the crisis.

The second phase of the gang war crisis was "fragmentation." People not living in the areas frequented by gangs said, "Thank God they are not in our neighborhood." This ignored the fact that the crisis continued with or without recognition and that social order in Los Angeles had begun to break down. As profiled by Tavistock, those groups not affected by gang war "broke away to defend themselves" because the source of the crisis was not identified, the so called "maladaptation" process the period of disassociation.

Apart from the proliferation of drug sales, what is the purpose of gang wars? First, it is to show the targeted group that they are not safe, i.e., insecurity is generated. Secondly, it is to show that organized society is helpless in the face of such violence and thirdly to bring about a recognition of the fact that our social order is collapsing. The present wave of gang violence will go away just as quickly as it started, once the three phases of the Stanford program are completed.

An outstanding example of social conditioning to accept change, even when it is recognized as unwelcome change by the large population group in the sights of Stanford Research Institute, was the "advent" of the BEATLES. The Beatles were brought to the United States as part of a social experiment which would subject large population groups to brainwashing of which they were not even aware.

When Tavistock brought the Beatles to the United States nobody could have imagined the cultural disaster that was to follow in their wake. The Beatles were an integral part of "THE

AQUARIAN CONSPIRACY," a living organism which sprang From "THE CHANGING IMAGES OF MAN," URH (489)2150-Policy Research Report No. 4/4/74. Policy Report prepared by SRI Center for the study of Social Policy, Director, Professor Willis Harmon.

The phenomenon of the Beatles was not a spontaneous rebellion by youth against the old social system. Instead it was a carefully crafted plot to introduce by a conspiratorial body which could not be identified, a highly destructive and divisive element into a large population group targeted for change against its will. New words and new phrases—prepared by Tavistock-were introduced to America along with the Beatles. Words such as "rock" in relation to music sounds, "teenager," "cool," "discovered" and "pop music" were a lexicon of disguised code words signifying the acceptance of drugs and arrived with and accompanied the Beatles wherever they went, to be "discovered" by "teenagers." Incidentally, the word "teenagers" was never used until just before the Beatles arrived on the scene, courtesy of the Tavistock Institute for Human Relations.

As in the case of gang wars, nothing could or would have been accomplished without the cooperation of the media, especially the electronic media and, in particular, the scurrilous Ed Sullivan who had been coached by the conspirators as to the role he was to play. Nobody would have paid much attention to the motley crew from Liverpool and the 12-atonal system of "music" that was to follow had it not been for an overabundance of press exposure. The 12-atonal system consisted of heavy, repetitive sounds, taken from the music of the cult of Dionysus and the Baal priesthood by Adorno and given a "modern" flavor by this special friend of the Queen of England and hence the Committee of 300.

Tavistock and its Stanford Research Center created trigger words which then came into general usage around "rock music" and its fans. Trigger words created a distinct new break-away largely young population group which was persuaded by social engineering and conditioning to believe that the Beatles really were their favorite group. All trigger words devised in the context of "rock music" were designed for mass control of the new targeted group, the youth of America.

The Beatles did a perfect job, or perhaps it would be more correct to say that Tavistock and Stanford did a perfect job, the Beatles merely reacting like trained robots "with a little help from their friends"—code words for using drugs and making it "cool." The Beatles became a highly visible "new type"—more Tavistock jargon—and as such it was not long before the group made new styles (fads in clothing, hairstyles and language usage) which upset the older generation, as was intended. This was part of the "fragmentation-maladaptation" process worked out by Willis Harmon and his team of social scientists and genetic engineering tinkerers and put into action.

The role of the print and electronic media in our society is crucial to the success of brainwashing large population groups. Gang wars ended in Los Angeles in 1966 as the media withdrew its coverage. The same thing will happen with the current wave of gang wars in Los Angeles. Street gangs will wither on the vine once media saturation coverage is toned down and then completely withdrawn. As in 1966, the issue would become "burned out." Street gangs will have served their purpose of creating turbulence and insecurity. Exactly the same pattern will be followed in the case of "rock" music. Deprived of media attention, it will eventually take its place in history.

Following the Beatles, who incidentally were put together by the Tavistock Institute, came other "Made in England" rock groups, who, like the Beatles, had Theo Adorno write their cult lyrics and compose all the "music." I hate to use these beautiful words in the context of "Beatlemania"; it reminds me of how wrongly the word "lover" is used when referring to the filthy interaction between two homosexuals writhing in pigswill. To call "rock" music, is an insult, likewise the language used in "rock lyrics."

Tavistock and Stanford Research then embarked on the second phase of the work commissioned by the Committee of 300. This new phase turned up the heat for social change in America. As quickly as the Beatles had appeared on the American scene, so too did the "beat generation," trigger words designed to separate and fragment society. The media now focused its attention on the "beat generation." Other Tavistock-coined words came seemingly

out of nowhere: "beatniks," "hippies," "flower children" became part of the vocabulary of America. It became popular to "drop out" and wear dirty jeans, go about with long unwashed hair. The "beat generation" cut itself off from mainstream America. They became just as infamous as the cleaner Beatles before them.

The newly-created group and its "lifestyle" swept millions of young Americans into the cult. American youth underwent a radical revolution without ever being aware of it, while the older generation stood by helplessly, unable to identify the source of the crisis, and thus reacting in a maladaptive manner against its manifestation, which were drugs of all types, marijuana, and later Lysergic acid, "LSD," so conveniently provided for them by the Swiss pharmaceutical company, SANDOZ, following the discovery by one of its chemists, Albert Hoffman, how to make synthetic ergotamine, a powerful mind-altering drug. The Committee of 300 financed the project through one of their banks, S. C. Warburg, and the drug was carried to America by the philosopher, Aldous Huxley.

The new "wonder drug" was promptly distributed in "sample" size packages, handed out free of charge on college campuses across the United States and at "rock" concerts, which became the leading vehicle for proliferating the use of drugs. The question that cries out for an answer is, what was the Drug Enforcement Agency (DEA) doing at the time? There is compelling circumstantial evidence that would appear to indicate that the DEA knew what was going on but was ordered not to take any action.

With very substantial numbers of new British "rock" bands arriving in the U.S., rock concerts began to become a fixture on the social calender of American youth. In tandem with these "concerts," the use of drugs among the youth rose in proportion. The devilish bedlam of discordant heavy beat sounds numbed the minds of listeners so that they were easily persuaded to try the new drug on the basis that "everybody is doing it." Peer pressure is a very strong weapon. The "new culture" received maximum coverage from the jackal media, which cost the conspirators not one single thin dime.

Great anger was felt by a number of civic leaders and churchmen over the new cult but their energies were misdirected against the RESULT of what was going on and not against the CAUSE. Critics of the rock cult made the same mistakes that had been made in the prohibition era, they criticized law enforcement agencies, teachers, parents anybody but the conspirators.

Because of the anger and resentment I feel toward the great drug plague, I make no apology for using language which is not customary for me to use. One of the worst drug slobs ever to walk the streets of America was Alan Ginsberg. This Ginsberg pushed the use of LSD through advertising which cost him nothing, although under normal circumstances it would have cost millions of dollars in TV advertising revenues. This free advertising for drugs, and LSD in particular, reached a new high in the late 1960's, thanks to the ever-willing cooperation of the media. The effect of Ginsberg's mass advertising campaign was devastating; the American public was subjected to one cultural future shock after another in rapid succession.

We became over-exposed and over stimulated and, again, may I remind you that this is Tavistock jargon, lifted from the Tavistock training manual, overwhelmed by its new development and, when we reached that point, our minds began to lapse into apathy; it was just too much to cope with, that is to say, "long range penetration had taken hold of us." Ginsberg claimed to be a poet but no greater rubbish was ever written by anyone who ever aspired to becoming a poet. Ginsberg's designated task had little to do with poetry; his main function was to push the new subculture and force acceptance of it upon the large targeted population group.

To assist him in his task, Ginsberg coopted the services of Norman Mailer, a writer of sorts who had spent some time in a mental institution. Mailer was a favorite of the leftwing Hollywood crowd and so had no problem with getting maximum television time for Ginsberg. Naturally Mailer had to have a pretext—not even he could blatantly come out with the true nature of Ginsberg's television appearances. So a charade was adopted: Mailer would talk "seriously" on camera with Ginsberg about poetry and literature.

This method of getting wide television coverage at no cost to themselves was followed by every rock group and concert promoter who followed the example set by Ginsberg. The electronic media moguls had big hearts when it came to giving free time to these dirty verminous creatures and their even dirtier products and filthy ideas. Their promotion of horrible garbage spoke volumes and, without abundant help from the print and electronic media, the drug trade could not have spread as rapidly as it did in the late 1960's-early 197O's, and probably would have been confined to a few small local areas.

Ginsberg was able to give several nationally televised performances extolling the virtues of LSD and marijuana, under the guise of "new ideas" and "new cultures" developing in the art and music world. Not to be outdone by the electronic media, Ginsberg's admirers wrote glowing articles about "this colorful man" in the art and social columns of all of America,s largest newspapers and magazines. There had never been such an acrossthe-media-board free advertising campaign in the history of newspaper, radio and television and it cost the promoters of the Aquarian conspiracy, NATO and the Club of Rome not one red cent. It was all absolutely free advertising for LSD, only thinly disguised as "art" and "culture."

One of Ginsberg's closest friends, Kenny Love, published a Five-page report in the New York Times. This is in accordance with the methodology used by Tavistock and Stanford Research: If something is to be promoted which the public has not yet been fully brainwashed to accept, then have someone write an article, covering all sides of the subject matter. The other method is to have live television talk shows in which a panel of experts promotes the product and or idea under the pretext of "discussing", it. There are point and counter-point, both pro and con participants airing their support or opposition. When it is all over, the subject to be promoted has been dinned into the public mind. While this was new in the early 1970's, today it is standard practice on which talk shows thrive.

Love's Five-page pro LSD pro Ginsberg article was duly printed by the New York Times. Had Ginsberg tried to buy the

same amount of space in an advertisement, it would have cost him at least $50,000. But Ginsberg didn't have to worry; thanks to his Friend Kenny Love, Ginsberg got the massive advertising all for free. With newspapers like the New York Times and the Washington Post under the control of the Committee of 300, this kind of free advertising is given to any subject matter, and more especially to those promoting decadent life styles—drugs-hedonism—anything that will confuse the American people. After the trial run with Ginsberg and LSD, it became standard Club of Rome practice to call upon major newspapers in America to give free advertising on demand to people and ideas they were promoting.

Worse yet—or better yet, depending upon the viewpoint-United Press (UP) picked up Kenny Love's free advertising for Ginsberg and LSD and telexed it to HUNDREDS of newspapers and magazines around the country under the guise of a "news" story. Even such highly respectable establishment magazines as "Harpers Bazaar" and "TIME" made Mr. Ginsberg respectable. If a nation-wide campaign of this magnitude were presented to Ginsberg and the promoters of LSD by an advertising agency, the price tag would have run into at least $1 million in terms of 1970 dollars. Today the price tag would be nothing less than $15-$16 million dollars. It is no wonder that I refer to the news media as "jackals."

I suggest that we try to find any media outlet to do an expose on the Federal Reserve Board, which is what I did. I took my article, which was a good expose of the greatest swindle on earth, to every major newspaper, radio and television station, magazine house and several talk-show hosts. A few made promises that sounded good—they would definitely air the article and have me discuss it—give them about a week and they would get back to me. Not one of them ever did, nor did my article ever appear in the pages of their newspapers and journals. It was as if a blanket of silence had been thrown over me and the subject I was endeavoring to promote, and indeed that was precisely what had happened.

Without massive media hype, and without almost around the clock coverage, the hippy-beatnik rock, drug cult would never have gotten off the ground; it would have remained a localized

oddity. The Beatles, with their twanging guitars, silly expressions, drug language and weird clothes, would not have amounted to a hill of beans. Instead, because the Beatles were given saturation coverage by the media, the United States has suffered one cultural shock after another.

The men buried in the think tanks and research institutions, whose names and faces are still not known to but a few people, made sure that the press played its part. Conversely, the media's important role in not exposing the power behind the future cultural shocks made certain that the source of the crisis was never identified. Thus was our society driven mad through psychological shocks and stress. "Driven mad" is taken from Tavistock's training manual. From its modest beginnings in 1921, Tavistock was ready in 1966 to launch a major irreversible cultural revolution in America, which has not yet ended. The Aquarian Conspiracy is part of it.

Thus softened up, our nation was now deemed ripe for the introduction of drugs which was to rival the prohibition era in scope and the huge amounts of money to be made. This too was an integral part of the Aquarian Conspiracy. The proliferation of drug usage was one of the subjects under study at the Science Policy Research Unit (SPRU) at Tavistock's Sussex University facility. It was known as the "future shocks" center, a title given to so-called future oriented psychology designed to manipulate whole population groups to induce "future shocks." It was the first of several such institutions set up by Tavistock.

"Future shocks" is described as a series of events which come so fast that the human brain cannot absorb the information. As I said earlier, science has shown that there are clearly marked limits to the amount of changes and the nature of them that the mind can deal with. After continuous shocks, the large targeted population group discovers that it does not want to make choices any more. Apathy takes over, often preceded by mindless violence such as is characteristic of the Los Angeles street gangs, serial killers, rapists and child kidnapers.

Such a group becomes easy to control and will docilely follow orders without rebelling, which is the object of the exercise.

"Future shocks," says SPRU, "is defined as physical and psychological distress arising from the excess load on the decision-making mechanism of the human mind." That is Tavistock jargon lifted straight from Tavistock manuals—which they don't know I have.

Just as an overloaded electrical circuit will activate a trip switch, so do humans "trip out," which is a syndrome that medical science is only now beginning to understand, although John Rawlings Reese conducted experiments in this field as far back as the 1920's. As can be appreciated, such a targeted group is ready to "trip out" and take to drugs as a means of escape from the pressures of so many choices having to be made. This is how Drug usage was spread so rapidly through America's "beat generation." What started with the Beatles and sample packages of LSD has grown into a flood-tide of drug usage which is swamping America.

The drug trade is controlled by the Committee of 300 from the Top down. The drug trade started with the British East India Company and was closely followed by the Dutch East India Company. Both were controlled by a "Council of 300." The list of names of members and stockholders of the BEIC read like something out of Debretts Peerage. BEIC established the "China Inland Mission," whose job it was to get The Chinese peasants, or coolies, as they were called, addicted to opium. This created the market for opium which the BEIC then filled.

In much the same way the Committee of 300 used "The "Beatles" to popularize "social drugs" with the youth of America and The Hollywood "in-crowd." Ed Sullivan was sent to England To become acquainted with The first Tavistock Institute "rock group" to hit the shores of the United States. Sullivan then returned to the United States to draft the strategy for the electronic media on how to package and sell the group. Without the full cooperation of the electronic media and Ed Sullivan, in particular, "The Beatles" and their "music" would have died on the vine. Instead, our national life and the character of the United States was forever changed.

Now that we know, it is all too clear how successful the "Beatles" campaign to proliferate the use of drugs became. The fact that "The Beatles" had their music and lyrics written for them

by Theo Adorno was concealed from public view. The prime function to "The Beatles" was to be discovered by teenagers, who where then subjected to a non-stop barrage of "Beatle music," until they became convinced that they liked the sound and adopted it, along with all that accompanied it. The Liverpool group performed up to expectations, and with "a little help from their friends," i.e., illegal substances we call drugs created a whole new class to young Americans in the precise mold ordained by the Tavistock Institute.

Tavistock had created a highly visible "new type" to act as their drug-runners. The China Inland Mission "Christian missionaries" would not have fitted in with the 1960's. "New type" is social-science scientist jargon; what it meant was that the Beatles created new social patterns, first and foremost being to normalize and popularize the use of drugs, new tastes in clothes and hair styles which really distinguished them from the older generation as was intended by Tavistock.

It is important to note the deliberate fragmentation-inducing language used by Tavistock. The "teenagers" never once dreamed that all the "different" things they aspired to were the product of older scientists working in think tanks in England and Stanford Research. How mortified they would have been if they had discovered that most of their "cool" habits and expressions were deliberately created for their use by a group of older social science scientists!

The role of the media was, and remains, very important in promoting the use of drugs on a nation-wide scale. When coverage of the street warfare gangs was abruptly terminated by the media, they became "burned out" as a social phenomena; the "new age" of drugs followed. The media has always served as a catalyst and has always pushed "new causes" and now media attention was focused on drug usage and its supporters, the "beat generation," yet another phrase fashioned at Tavistock, in its determined efforts to bring about social changes in The United States.

Drug usage now became an accepted part of everyday life in America. This Tavistock-designed program took in millions of

American youth, and the older generation began to believe that America was undergoing a natural social revolution, failing all the while to realize that what was happening to their children was not a spontaneous movement, but a highly artificial creation designed to force changes in America's social and political life.

The descendants of the British East India Company were delighted with the success of their drug pushing program. Their disciples became adept in the use of lysergic acid (LSD) so conveniently made available by patrons of the drug trade like Aldous Huxley, courtesy of the highly respected Sandoz company of Switzerland and financed by the great Warburg banking dynasty. The new "wonder drug" was promptly distributed at all rock concerts and on college campuses in free sample packages. The question that begs to be asked is, "What was the FBI doing while all this was going on?"

The purpose of the Beatles had become abundantly clear. The British East India Company's descendants in the upperclass society in London must have felt very good about the billions of dollars that began rolling in. With the coming of "rock" which shall henceforth be used as shorthand to describe Adorno's fiendish satanic music, a tremendous increase in the use of social drugs, especially marijuana, was observed. The entire dope business was expanded under the control and direction of the Science Policy Research Unit (SPRU).

SPRU was run by Leland Bradford, Kenneth Damm and Ronald Lippert, under whose expert guidance a large number of new-science scientists were trained to promote "future shocks," one of the chief being the dramatic increase in the use of drugs by America's teenagers. SPRU's policy papers, planted in various government agencies, including the Drug Enforcement Agency (DEA), dictated the course of the disastrous "drug war" allegedly waged by the Reagan and Bush Administrations.

This was the forerunner of how the United States is run today, by one committee and/or council after another, by an inner-government fed on Tavistock papers which they firmly believe are their own opinions. These virtual unknowns are making decisions that will forever change our form of government and the quality of

life here in the United States. Through "crisis adaptation" we have already been changed so much as to barely compare with what we were in the 1950's. Also, our environment has been changed.

There is much talk about environment these days and, while it mostly refers to green surroundings, pure rivers and fresh air, there is another, equally important environment, namely, the drug environment. The environment of our life style has become polluted; our thinking has become polluted. Our ability to control our destiny has become polluted. We are confronted by changes that pollute our thinking to the extent that we do not know what to make of it all. The "Environment of Change" is crippling the nation; we appear to have so little control that it has produced anxiety and confusion.

We now look to group solutions instead of individual solutions to our problems. We do not make use of our own resources to solve problems. In this the prolific rise in drug usage is playing a leading role. The strategy is a deliberate one, devised by the new-science scientists, the social engineers and tinkerers, aimed at the most vulnerable of all areas, our self-image, or how we perceive ourselves, which leads us eventually to become like sheep being led to the slaughter. We have become confused by the many choices we have to make, and we have become apathetic.

We are manipulated by unscrupulous men without ever being aware of it. This is particularly true of the drug trade and we are now in the transition stage where we can be set up for a change from the present constitutional form of government, which has taken a giant step forward under the Bush administration. While there are those who still persist, in the face of all of the evidence to the contrary in saying, "It can't happen in America," the fact is: IT HAS ALREADY HAPPENED. Our will to resist events not to our liking has been steadily eroded and undermined. We will resist, some of us say, but not so many of us will do that, and we will be in the minority.

The drug trade has insidiously changed our environment. The alleged "war on drugs" is a farce; it does not exist in qualitative measure to make the slightest difference to the

descendants of the British East India Company. Combined with computerization, we are almost fully brainwashed, robbed of our ability to resist forced changes. Which brings us to another environment, PEOPLE CONTROL, also known as personal information control, without which governments cannot play their numbers game.

As matters stand, we the people have absolutely no way of knowing just what government does or does not know about us. Government computer files are not subject to scrutiny by the public at large. Do we foolishly believe that personal information sacrosanct? Remember, in every society there are rich and powerful families who control law enforcement agencies. I have proved the existence of such families. Do not think that if these families wanted to find out about us, they could not do so. These are the families who often have a member in the Committee of 300.

Take Kissinger, for instance, who has his own private dossiers on hundreds of thousands of people, not only in the U.S. but all over the world. Are we on Kissinger's enemy list? Is this far fetched? Not at all. Take P2 Masonic and Committee Monte Carlo who have such lists which run into tens of thousands of names. Incidentally, Kissinger is one of them. There are other "private" intelligence agencies, such as INTEL, whom we shall meet later.

One of the ways heroin is moved into Europe is through the Principality of Monaco. The heroin comes from Corsica carried in ferries that ply a busy trade between Corsica and Monte Carlo during the summer. There is no check of what goes on or comes off these ferries. As there is no border between France and Monaco, drugs, and more especially heroin (partly processed opium), flows through the open border of Monaco into laboratories in France, or else if it has already been processed into heroin, it goes directly to the distributors.

The Grimaldi family has been in the drug smuggling business for centuries. Because Prince Ranier got greedy and began skimming heavily and would not desist after three warnings, his wife, Princess Grace, was murdered in a car "accident." Ranier underestimated the power of the Committee of which he is a

member. The Rover car in which she was traveling had the brake fluid chambers tampered with in such a way that each time the brakes were depressed, fluid was released in measured amount, until by the time the car reached the most dangerous of several hairpin bends, there was no stopping power, and it sailed over a stone wall, hitting the ground fifty feet below in a sickening smash.

Everything possible was done by the Committee of 300 operatives to conceal the truth about the murder of Princess Grace. To this day the Rover car remains in the custody of French police, shrouded under a cover on a trailer which no one is allowed to approach, let alone examine. The signal for the execution of Princess Grace was picked up by the British Army listening post in Cyprus and it is believed by well placed source that the Committee Monte Carlo and P2 gave the order.

The drug trade, controlled by the Committee of 300, is a crime against humanity, but having been conditioned and softened up by years of incessant bombardment by Tavistock Institute, we have more or less accepted our changed environment, regarding the drug trade as a problem that is "too big" to handle. This is not the case. If we could marshal an entire nation, equip and send millions of American soldiers to fight in a war in Europe in which he had no business intervening, if we could defeat a major power, then we can smash the drug trade, using the same WW II tactics.

The logistical problems that had to be solved when we entered the Second World War are even today still mind-boggling. Yet we successfully overcame all problems. Why then is it impossible to defeat a well-defined enemy, far smaller and weaker than Germany, given the immensely improved weapons and surveillance equipment we have today? The real reason that the drug problem is not eradicated is because it is being run by the highest families in the entire world as part of a coordinated gigantic money-making machine.

In 1930, British capital invested in South America greatly exceeded capital investment in British "dominions." Graham, an authority on British investments abroad, stated that British investment in South America "exceeded one trillion pounds." Remember, this was 1930, and one trillion pounds was a

staggering sum of money in those days. What was the reason for such heavy investment in South America? In a word it was drugs.

The plutocracy controlling British banks held the purse strings and then, as now, put up a most respectable facade to cover their true business. No one ever caught them with dirtied hands. They always had front men, even as they do today, willing to take the blame if things went awry. Then as now the connections with the drug trade were tenuous at best. No one was ever able to lay a finger on the respectable and "noble" banking families of Britain, whose members are on the Committee of 300.

There is great significance in that only 15 members of Parliament were the controllers of that vast empire, of which the most prominent were Sir Charles Barry and the Chamberlain family. These overlords of finance were busy in places like Argentina, Jamaica and Trinidad, which became big moneyspinners for them through the drug trade. In these countries, British plutocrats kept "the locals" as they were contemptuously called, at bare subsistence levels, hardly above slavery. The fortunes extracted from the drug trade in the Caribbean were vast.

The plutocrats hid behind faces like Trinidad Leaseholds Limited, but the REAL MEAT, then as now, was drugs. This is true of today where we find that Jamaica's Gross National Product (GNP) is made up almost entirely of sales of ganja, a very potent form of marijuana. The mechanism for handling the ganja trade was set up by David Rockefeller and Henry Kissinger under the title "Caribbean Basin Initiative."

Up until a relatively short time ago, the true history of the China opium trade was quite unknown, having been as well covered up as it is possible to do. Many of my former students in the days when I was lecturing, would come and ask me why the Chinese were so fond of smoking opium? They were puzzled as are many still today, over contradictory accounts of what had actually taken place in China. Most thought it was merely a case of the Chinese workers buying opium on an open market and smoking it, or going to some of the thousands of opium dens and forgetting their terrible existence for a while.

The truth is that the supply of opium to China was a British monopoly, an OFFICIAL monopoly of the British government and official British policy. The Indo-British opium trade in China was one of the best kept secrets, around which many misleading legends grew up, such as "Clive of India" and the tales of derring-do by the British Army in India for the glory of "the Empire," so well written by Rudyard Kipling, and tales of "Tea Clippers" racing across the oceans with their cargoes of China tea for the high society drawing rooms of Victorian England. In reality, the history of British occupation of India and Britain's Opium Wars are some of the most dastardly blots on Western civilization.

Almost 13% of the income of India under British rule was derived from the sale of good quality Bengal opium to the British-run opium distributors in China. "The Beatles" of the day, the China Inland Mission, had done a great job in proliferating the use of opium among the poor Chinese laborers (coolies, as they were called). These addicts did not suddenly materialize out of thin air, any more than did teenager addicts in the U.S. THE POINT TO REMEMBER IS THAT BOTH WERE CREATED. In China a market for opium was first created and then filled by opium for Bengal. In the same way, a market for marijuana and LSD was first created in the United States by methods already described, and then filled by British plutocrats and their American cousins with the help of the overlords of the British banking establishment.

The lucrative drug trade is one of the worst examples of making money out of human misery; the other being the legal drug trade run by the pharmaceutical drug houses under Rockefeller ownership, in the U.S. for the most part, but with substantial companies operating in Switzerland, France and Britain and fully backed by the American Medical Association (AMA). The dirty dope transactions and the money it generates flows through the City of London, together with Hong Kong, Dubai and latterly, Lebanon, thanks to the invasion of that country by Israel.

There will be those who doubt this statement. "Look at this business columns of the Financial Times," they will tell us. "Don't tell me that this is all related to drug money"? OF COURSE IT IS, but don't imagine for one minute that the noble lords and ladies of

England are going to advertise the fact. Remember the British East India Company? Officially, its business was trading in tea!

The London "Times" never dared tell the British public the it was impossible to make VAST PROFITS from tea, nor did the illustrious paper even hint at a trade in opium being plied by those who spent their time in London's fashionable clubs or playing a chukka of polo at the Royal Windsor Club, or that the gentlemen officers who went out to India in the service of the Empire were financed SOLELY by the enormous income derived from the misery of the millions of Chinese coolies addicted to opium.

The trade was conducted by the illustrious British East India Company, whose meddling in political, religious and economic affairs of the United States has cost us very dearly for over 200 years. The 300 members of the British East India Company's board were a cut above the common herd. They were so mighty, as Lord Bertrand Russell once observed, "They could even give God advice when he had trouble in Heaven." Nor should we imagine that anything has changed in the intervening years. EXACTLY the same attitude prevails today among members of the Committee of 300, which is why they often refer to themselves as the "Olympians."

Later the British Crown, i.e., the Royal Family, joined the British East India Company's trade, and used it as a vehicle to produce opium in Bengal, and elsewhere in India, controlling exports through what was called "transit duties," that is, the Crown levied a tax on all producers of opium duly registered with the state authority, who were sending their opium to China.

Prior to 1896, when the trade was still "illegal"—a word used to extract greater tribute from the producers of opium-there never having been the slightest attempt to stop the trade, colossal amounts of opium were shipped out of India on board "China Tea Clippers," those sailing ships around which legend and lore were built, which supposedly carried chests of tea from India and China to the London exchanges.

So audacious did the British East India Company lords and ladies become that they tried to sell this lethal substance to the

Union and Confederate Armies in pill form as a pain killer. Is it difficult to imagine just what would have happened had their plan succeeded? All those hundreds of thousands of soldiers would have left the battlefields totally hooked on opium. "The Beatles" were much more successful in turning out millions of teenage addicts in later years.

The Bengal merchants and their British controllers and bankers grew fat and intolerant on the enormous amounts of money that poured into the coffers of the British East India Company from the wretched Chinese coolies opium trade. BEIC profits, even in those years, far exceeded the combined profits made in a single year by General Motors, Ford and Chrysler in their heydays. The trend in making huge profits out of drugs was carried over into the 1960's by such "legal" drug death merchants as Sandoz, the makers of LSD and Hoffman la Roche, manufacturers of Valium. The cost of the raw material and manufacturing of Valium to Hoffman la Roche is $3 per kilo (2.2 pounds). It is sold to their distributors for $20,000 per kilo. By the time it reaches the consumer, the price of Valium has risen to $50,000 per kilo. Valium is used in huge quantities in Europe and the United States. It is possibly the most used drug of its kind in the world.

Hoffman la Roche does the same thing with Vitamin C, which costs them less than 1 cent a kilo to produce. It is sold for a profit of 10,000 percent. When a friend of mine blew the whistle on this criminal company, which had entered into a monopoly agreement with other producers, in contravention of European Economic Community laws, he was arrested on the Swiss-Italian border and hustled into prison; his wife was threatened by the Swiss police until she committed suicide. As a British national he was rescued by the British consul in Berne as soon as word of his plight was received, removed from prison and flown out of the country. He lost his wife, his job and his pension because he dared to disclose Hoffman La Roche secrets. The Swiss take their Industrial Espionage law very seriously.

Remember this the next time you see those lovely advertisements of Swiss ski slopes, beautiful watches, pristine mountains and cuckoo clocks. That is not what Switzerland is

about. It is about dirty multi-billion dollar money laundering which is carried out by major Swiss banking houses. It is about the Committee of 300 "legal" drug manufacturers. Switzerland is the Committee's ultimate "safe haven" for money and protection of their bodies in time of global calamity.

Now mind you, one could get into serious trouble with the Swiss authorities for giving out any information on these nefarious activities. The Swiss regard it as "industrial espionage" which usually carries a 5-year term in prison. It is safer to pretend that Switzerland is a nice clean country rather than look under the covers or inside its garbage can banks.

In 1931 the managing directors of the so-called "big Five" British companies were rewarded by being made Peers of the Realm for their activities in drug money laundering. Who decided such matters and bestows such honors? It is the Queen of England who bestows honors upon the men in the top positions in the drug trade. British banks engaged in this terrible trade are too numerous to mention, but a few of the top ones are: The British Bank of the Middle East. Midland Bank. National and Westminster Bank. Barclays Bank. Royal Bank of Canada. Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank. Baring Brothers Bank.

Many of the merchant banks are up to their hocks in pigswill drug trade profits, banks such as Hambros for example, run by Sir Jocelyn Hambro. For a really interesting major study of the Chinese opium trade, one would need access to India Office in London. I was able to get in there because of my intelligence service and received great assistance from the trustee of the papers of the late Professor Frederick Wells Williamson, which provided much information on the opium trade carried on by the British East India Company in India and China in the 18th and 19th centuries. If only those papers could be made public, what a storm would burst over the heads of the crowned vipers of Europe.

Today the trade has shifted somewhat in that less expensive cocaine has taken over a good part of the North American market. In the 1960's the flood of heroin coming from Hong Kong, Lebanon and Dubai threatened to engulf the United States and Western Europe. When demand outpaced supply there

was a switch to cocaine. But now, at the end of 1991, that trend has been reversed; today it is heroin that is back in favor, although it is true that cocaine still enjoys great favor among the poorer classes.

Heroin, we are told, is more satisfying to addicts; the effects are far more intense and last longer than the effects of cocaine and there is less international attention on heroin producers than there is on Colombian cocaine shippers. Besides which, it is hardly likely that the U.S. would make any real effort to stop the production of opium in the Golden Triangle which is under the control of the Chinese military, a serious war would erupt if any country tried to interdict the trade. A serious attack on the opium trade would bring Chinese military intervention.

The British know this; they have no quarrel with China, except for an occasional squabble over who gets the larger share of the pie. Britain has been involved in the China opium trade for over two centuries. No one is going to be so foolish as to rock the boat when millions upon millions of dollars flow into the bank accounts of the British oligarchists and more gold is traded on the Hong Kong gold market than the combined total traded in London and New York.

Those individuals who fondly imagine they can do some kind of a deal with a minor Chinese or Burmese overlord in the hills of the Golden Triangle apparently have no idea of what is involved. If they had known, they would never have talked about stopping the opium trade. Such talk reveals little knowledge of the immensity and complexity of China's opium trade,

British plutocrats, the Russian KGB, the CIA, and U.S. bankers are all in league with China. Could one man stop or even make a small dent in the trade? It would be absurd to imagine it. What is heroin and why is it favored over cocaine these days? According to the noted authority on the subject Professor Galen, heroin is a derivative of opium, a drug that stupefies the senses and induces long periods of sleep. This is what most addicts like, it is called "being in the arms of Morpheus." Opium is the most habit-forming drug known to man. Many pharmaceutical drugs contain opium in various degrees, and it is believed that paper

used in the manufacture of cigarettes is first impregnated with opium, which is why smokers become so addicted to their habit.

The poppy seed from which it is derived was long known to the Moguls of India, who used the seeds mixed in tea offered to a difficult opponent. It is also used as a pain-killing drug which largely replaced chloroform and other older anesthetics of a bygone era. Opium was popular in all of the fashionable clubs of Victorian London and it was no secret that men like the Huxley brothers used it extensively. Members of the Orphic-Dionysus cults of Hellenic Greece and the Osiris-Horus cults of Ptolemaic Egypt which Victorian society embraced, all smoked opium; it was the "in" thing to do.

So did some of those who met at St. Ermins Hotel in 1903 to decide what sort of a world we would have. The descendants of the St. Ermins crowd are found today in the Committee of 300. It is these so-called world leaders who brought about such a change in our environment that enabled drug usage to proliferate to the point where it can no longer be stopped by regular law enforcement tactics and policies. This is especially true in big cities where big populations can conceal a great deal of what transpires.

Many in the circles of royalty were regular opium users. One of their favorites was the writer Coudenhove-Kalergi who wrote a book in 1932 entitled "REVOLUTION THROUGH TECHNOLOGY which was a blueprint for the return of the world to a medieval society. The book, in fact, became a working paper for the Committee of 300's plan to deindustrialize the world, starting with the United States. Claiming that pressures of over-population are a serious problem, Kalergi advised a return to what he called "open spaces." Does this sound like the Khmer Rouge and Pol Pot? Here are some extracts from the book:

"In its facilities, the city of the future will resemble the city of the Middle Ages...and he who is not condemned to live in a city because of his occupation, will go to the countryside. Our civilization is a culture of the major cities; therefore it is a marsh plant, born by degenerated, sickly and decadent people, who have voluntarily, or involuntarily, ended up in this dead-end street of

life." Isn't that very close to what "AnkarWat" gave as "his" reasons for depopulating Phnom Penh?

The first opium shipments reached England from Bengal in 1683, carried in British East India Company "Tea Clippers." Opium was brought to England as a test, an experiment, to see whether the common folk of England, the yeomen and the lower classes, could be induced into taking the drug. It was what we could call today "test marketing" of a new product. But the sturdy yeomen and the much derided "lower classes" were made of stern stuff, and the test marketing experiment was a total flop. The "lower classes" of British society firmly rejected opium smoking.

The plutocrats and oligarchists in high society in London began casting about for a market that would not be so resistant, so unbending. They found such a market in China. In the papers I studied at the India Office under the heading "Miscellaneous Old Records," I found all the confirmation I could have wished for in proving that the opium trade in China really took off following the founding of the British East India Companyfunded "China Inland Mission," ostensibly a Christian missionary society but in reality the "promotion" men and women for the new product being introduced into the market, that new product being OPIUM.

This was later confirmed when I was given access to the papers of Sir George Birdwood in India Office records. Soon after the China Inland Mission missionaries set out to give away their sample packages and show the coolies how to smoke opium, vast quantities of opium began to arrive in China. "The Beatles" could not have done a better job. (In both cases the trade was sanctioned by the British royal family, who openly supported the Beatles.) Where the British East India Company had failed in England, it now succeeded beyond its wildest expectations in China, whose teeming millions of poor looked upon smoking opium as an escape from their life of misery.

Opium dens began proliferating all across China, and in the big cities like Shanghai and Canton, hundreds of thousands of miserable Chinese found that a pipe of opium seemingly made life bearable. The British East India Company had a clear run for over a 100 years before the Chinese government woke up to what was

happening. It was only in 1729 that the first laws against opium smoking were passed. The 300 board members of BEIC did not like it one bit and, never one to back down, the company was soon engaged in a running battle with the Chinese government.

The BEIC had developed poppy seeds that brought the finest quality opium from the poppy fields of Benares and Bihar in the Ganges Basin in India, a country they fully controlled this fetched top price, while the lower grades of opium from other areas of India were sold for less. Not about to lose their lucrative market, the British Crown engaged in running battles with Chinese forces, and defeated them. In the same manner, the U.S. government is supposedly fighting a running battle against today's drug barons and, like the Chinese, are losing heavily. There is however one big difference: The Chinese government fought to win whereas the United States government is under no compunction to win the battle which explains why staff turnover n the Drug Enforcement Agency (DEA) is so high.

Latterly, high grade quality opium has come out of Pakistan via Makra on the desolate coastline of the country from whence ships take the cargo to Dubai where it is exchanged for gold. This is said to account in part for heroin being favored over cocaine today. The heroin trade is more discreet, there is no murder of prominent officials such as became an almost daily occurrence in Colombia. Pakistani opium does not sell for as much as Golden Triangle or Golden Crescent (Iranian) opium. This has greatly spurred heroin production and sales which threaten to overtake cocaine as the number one seller.

The vile opium trade was talked about in the upper-crust circles of English society for many years as "the spoils of the Empire." The tall tales of valor in the Khyber Pass covered a vast trade in opium. The British Army was stationed in the Khyber Pass to protect caravans carrying raw opium from being pillaged by hill tribesmen. Did the British royal family know this? They must have, what else would induce the Crown to keep an army in this region where there was nothing of much worth other than the lucrative opium trade? It was very expensive to keep men under arms in a far away country. Her Majesty must have asked why these military

units were there? Certainly not to play polo or billiards in the officers' mess.

The BEIC was jealous of its monopoly in opium. Would-be competitors received short shrift. In a noted trial in 1791, a certain Warren Hastings was put on charges that he helped a Friend to get into the opium trade at the expense of the BEIC. The actual wording which I found in the records of the case housed in India Office gives some insight into the vast opium trade: "The charge is that Hastings has granted a contract for the Provision of Opium for four years to Stephen Sullivan, without advertising for the same, on terms glaringly obvious and wantonly profuse, for the purpose of creating an INSTANT FORTUNE for the said William Sullivan Esq." (Emphasis added.)

As the BEIC-British government held the monopoly in opium trading, the only people allowed to make instant fortunes were the "nobility," the "aristocracy," the plutocrats and oligarchical families of England, many of whose descendants sit on the Committee of 300 just as their forbears sat on the Council of 300 who ran the BEIC. Outsiders like Mr. Sullivan soon found themselves in trouble with the Crown if they were so bold as to try and help themselves get into the multi-billion pound Sterling opium business.

The honorable men of the BEIC with its list of 300 counselors were members of all the famous gentlemen's clubs in London and they were for the most part members of parliament, while others, both in India and at home, were magistrates. Company passports were required to land in China. When a few busybodies arrived in China to investigate the British Crown's involvement in the lucrative trade, BEIC magistrates promptly revoked their passports, thus effectively denying them entry into China.

Friction with the Chinese government was common. The Chinese had passed a law, the Yung Cheny Edict of 1729, forbidding the importation of opium, yet the BEIC managed to keep opium as an entry in the Chinese Customs Tariff books until 1753, the duty being three taels per chest of opium. Even when British special secret service (the 007 of the day) saw to it that

troublesome Chinese officials were bought off, and in cases where that was not possible, they were simply murdered.

Every British monarch since 1729 has benefited immensely from the drug trade and this holds good for the present occupant of the throne. Their ministers saw to it that wealth flowed into their family coffers. One such minister of Victoria's was Lord Palmerston. He clung obstinately to the belief that nothing should be allowed to stop Britain's opium trade with China. Palmerston's plan was to supply the Chinese government with enough opium to make individual members become greedy. Then the British would withhold supplies and when the Chinese government was on its knees, supplies would be resumed—but at a much higher price, thus retaining a monopoly through the Chinese government itself, but the plan failed.

The Chinese government responded by destroying large cargoes of opium stored in warehouses, and British merchants were required to sign INDIVIDUAL agreements not to import any more opium into Canton. BEIC responded by sending scores of fully-loaded opium carrying ships to lie in the roads of Macao. Companies beholden to BEIC, rather than individuals, then sold these cargoes. Chinese Commissioner Lin said, "There is so much opium on board English vessels now lying in the roads of this place (Macao) which will never be returned to the country from which it came, and I shall not be surprised to hear of its being smuggled in under American colors." Lin's prophecy proved to be remarkably accurate.

The Opium Wars against China were designed to "put the Chinese in their place" as Lord Palmerston once said, and the British Army did that. There was simply no stopping the vast, lucrative trade which provided the British oligarchical feudal lords with untold billions, while leaving China with millions of opium addicts. In later years the Chinese appealed to Britain for help with their immense problem and received it. Thereafter respective Chinese governments realized the value in cooperating instead of fighting with Britain—and this held good during the bloody rule of Mao Tse Tung—so that today, as I have already mentioned, any quarrels that come about are only over the share of the opium trade each is entitled to.

To advance to more modern history, the Chinese-British partnership was solidified by the Hong Kong agreement which established an equal partnership in the opium trade. This has proceeded smoothly, with an occasional ripple here and there, but while violence and death, robbery and murder marked the progression of the Colombian cocaine trade, no such baseness was allowed to disturb the heroin trade, which, as I said earlier, is once again coming into the ascendancy as we near the end of 1991.

The major problem that arose in Sino-British relations during the past 60 years concerned China's demand for a larger slice of the opium-heroin pie. This was settled when Britain agreed to hand Hong Kong over to full Chinese government control which will come into effect in 1997. Other than that, the partners retain their former equal shares of the lucrative opium trade based in Hong Kong.

The British oligarchical families of the Committee of 300 who were entrenched in Canton at the height of the opium trade left their descendants in position. Look at a list of prominent British residents in China and you will see the names of members of the Committee of 300 among them. The same holds good for Hong Kong. These plutocrats of a feudal era, that they seek to return to the world, control the gold and opium trade of which Hong Kong is THE center. Burmese and Chinese opium poppy growers get paid in gold; they do not trust the U.S. paper $100 bill. This explains the very large volume of gold trade in the Hong Kong exchange.

The Golden Triangle is no longer the largest producer of opium. That dubious title has since 1987 been shared by the Golden Crescent (Iran), Pakistan and Lebanon. These are the principle opium producers, although smaller quantities are once again coming out of Afghanistan and Turkey. The drug trade, and more: especially the opium trade, could not function without the help of banks as we shall demonstrate as we proceed.

How do banks with their great air of respectability fit into the drug trade with all of its attendant filth? It is a very long and complicated story, which could be the subject of a book on its own.

One way in which banks participate is by financing front companies importing the chemicals needed to process raw opium into heroin. The Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank with a branch office in London is right in the middle of such trade through a company called TEJAPAIBUL, which banks with Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank. What does this company do? It imports into Hong Kong most of the chemicals needed in the heroin refining process.

It is also a major supplier of acetic anhydride For the Golden Crescent and the Golden Triangle, Pakistan, Turkey and Lebanon. The actual financing for this trading is hived off to the Bangkok Metropolitan Bank. Thus, the secondary activities connected with processing opium, while not in the same category us the opium trade, nevertheless generates substantial income for banks. But the real income of the Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank and indeed all banks in the region is financing the actual opium trade.

It took a lot of research on my part to link the price of gold to the price of opium. I used to tell anyone who would listen, "If you want to know the price of gold find out what the price of a pound or a kilo of opium is in Hong Kong." To my critics I answered, "Take a look at what happened in 1977, a critical year for gold." The Bank of China shocked the gold pundits, and those clever forecasters who are to be found in great numbers in America, by suddenly and without warning, dumping 80 tons of gold on the market.

That depressed the price of gold in a big hurry. All the experts could say was, "We never knew China had that much gold where could it have come from?" It came from the gold which is paid to China in the Hong Kong Gold Market for large purchases of opium. The current policy of the Chinese government toward England is the same as it was in the 18th and 19th centuries. The Chinese economy, tied to the economy of Hong Kong—and I don't mean television sets, textiles, radios, watches, pirated cassette and video tapes—I mean opium/heroin—would take a terrible beating if it were not for the opium trade it shares with Britain. The BEIC is gone but the descendants of the Council of 300 linger on in the membership of the Committee of 300.

The oldest of the oligarchical British families who were leaders in the opium trade for the past 200 years are still in it today. Take the Mathesons, for instance. This "noble" family is one of the pillars of the opium trade. When things looked a bit shaky a few years ago, the Mathesons stepped in and gave China a loan of $300 million for real estate investment. Actually it was billed as a "joint venture between the People's Republic of China and the Matheson Bank." When researching India Office papers of the 1700's I came across the name of Matheson, and it kept on cropping up everywhere—London, Peking, Dubai, Hong Kong, wherever heroin and opium are mentioned.

The problem with the drug trade is that it has become a threat to national sovereignty. Here is what the Venezuelan Ambassador to the United Nations said about this world-wide threat:

"The problem of drugs bas already ceased to be dealt with simply as one of public health or a social problem. It has turned into something far more serious and far-reaching which affects our national sovereignty; a problem of national security, because it strikes at the independence of a nation. Drugs in all their manifestations of production, commercialization and consumption, denaturalizes us by injuring our ethical, religious and political life, our historic, economic, and republican values."

This is precisely the way the Bank of International Settlements and the IMF are operating. Let me say without hesitation that both these banks are nothing more than bully-boy clearing houses for the drug trade. The BIS undermines any country that the IMF wants to sink by setting up ways and means for the easy outflow of flight capital. Nor does BIS recognize nor make any distinction when it comes down to what is flight capital and what is laundered drug money.

The BIS operates on gangster lines. If a country will not submit to asset-stripping by the IMF, then it says in effect, "Right, then we will break you by means of the huge cache of narco-dollars we are holding." It is easy to understand why gold was demonetized and substituted with the paper "dollar" as the world's

reserve currency. It is not as easy to blackmail a country holding gold reserves as it is one having its reserves in paper dollars.

The IMF held a meeting in Hong Kong a few years ago which was attended by a colleague of mine and he told me the seminar dealt with this very question. He informed me that the IMF agents told the meeting that they could literally cause a run on any country's currency, using narco-dollars, which would precipitate a flight of capital. Rainer-Gut, a Credit Suisse delegate and member of the Committee of 300, said he foresaw a situation where national credit and national financing would be under one umbrella organization by the turn of the century. While Rainer-Gut did not spell it out, everybody at the seminar knew exactly what he was talking about.

From Colombia to Miami, from the Golden Triangle to the Golden Gate, from Hong Kong to New York, from Bogota to Frankfurt, the drug trade, and more especially the heroin trade, is BIG BUSINESS and it is run from the top down by some of the most "untouchable" families in the world, and each of those families have at least one member who is on the Committee of 300. It is not a street corner business, and it takes a great deal of money and expertise to keep it flowing smoothly. The machinery under control of the Committee of 300 ensures this.

Such talents are not found on the street corners and subways of New York. To be sure the pushers and peddlers are an integral part of the trade, but only as very small part-time salesmen. I say part-time because they are caught and rivalry gets some of them shot. But what does that matter? There are plenty of replacements available.

No, it is not anything the Small Business Administration would be interested in. IT IS BIG BUSINESS, a vast empire, this dirty drug business. Of necessity, it is operated from the top down in every single country in the world. It is, in fact, the largest single enterprise in the world today, transcending all others. That it is protected from the top down is borne out by the fact that, like international terrorism, it cannot be stamped out which should indicate to a reasonable person that some of this biggest names in

royal circles, the oligarchy, the plutocracy are running it, even if it is done through intermediaries.

The main countries involved in growing poppies and the cocoa bush are Burma, Northern China, Afghanistan, Iran, PaKistan, Thailand, Lebanon, Turkey, Peru, Ecuador, Bolivia. Colombia does not grow the cocoa bush but, next to Bolivia, is the main refiner of cocaine and the chief financial center of the cocaine trade which, since General Noriega was kidnaped and imprisoned by President Bush, is being challenged by Panama for first place in money laundering and capital financing of the cocaine trade.

The heroin trade is financed by Hong Kong banks, London banks and some Middle East banks such as the British Bank of the Middle East. Lebanon is fast becoming the "Switzerland of the Middle East." Countries involved in the distribution and routing of heroin are Hong Kong, Turkey, Bulgaria, Italy, Monaco, France (Corsica and Marseilles) Lebanon and Pakistan. The United States is the largest consumer of narcotics, first place going to cocaine, which is being challenged by heroin. Western Europe and Southwest Asian countries are the biggest users of heroin. Iran has a huge heroin addict population—in excess of 2 million as of 1991.

There is not a single government that does not know precisely what is going on with regard to the drug trade, but individual members holding powerful positions are taken, but of by the Committee of 300 through its world-wide network of subsidiaries. If any government member is "difficult," he or she is removed, as in the case of Pakistan's Ali Bhutto and Italy's Aldo Moro. No one is beyond the reach of this all-powerful Committee, even though Malaysia has been successful in holding out up until now. Malaysia has the strictest anti-drug laws in the world. Possession of even small amounts is punishable by the death penalty.

Like the Kintex Company of Bulgaria, most smaller countries have a direct hand in these criminal enterprises. Kintex trucks regularly ferried heroin through Western Europe in its own fleet of trucks bearing the EEC marker Triangle Internationale

Routier (TIR). Trucks bearing this marker and the EEC recognition number are not supposed to be stopped at customs boarder posts. TlR trucks are allowed to carry only perishable items. They are supposed to be inspected in the country from whence they originated and documentation to this effect is supposed to be carried by each truck driver.

Under international treaty obligations this is what happens, thus Kintex trucks were able load their cargoes of heroin and certify it as "fresh fruit and vegetables;" and then make their way through Western Europe, even entering high-security NATO bases in Northern Italy. In this manner, Bulgaria became one of the principal countries through which heroin was routed.

The only way to stop the huge amounts of heroin and cocaine presently finding their way to markets in Europe is to end the TIR system. That will never happen. The international treaty obligations I have just mentioned were set up by the Committee of 300, using its amazing networks and control mechanisms, to facilitate passage of all manner of drugs to Western Europe. Forget perishable goods! A former DEA agent stationed in Italy told me, "TIR=DOPE."

Remember this the next time you read in the newspapers that a big haul of heroin was found in a false-bottom suitcase at Kennedy Airport, and some unlucky "mule" pays the price for his criminal activity. This kind of action is only "small potatoes," sand in the eyes of the public, to make us think our government is really doing something about the drug menace. Take for example, "The French Connection," a Nixon program embarked upon without the knowledge and consent of the committee of 300.

The entire amount of opium/heroin seized in that massive effort is somewhat less than one quarter of what a single TIR truck carries. The Committee of 300 saw to it that Nixon paid a heavy price for a relatively small seizure of heroin. It was not the amount of heroin involved, but a matter of one whom they had helped up the ladder to the White House believing that he could now do without their help and backing, and even go against direct orders from above.

The mechanics of the heroin trade go like this: wild Thai and Burmese Hill tribesmen grow the opium poppy. At harvest time, the seed-bearing pod is cut with a razor or sharp knife. A resinous substance leaks through the cut and starts to congeal. This is raw opium. The crop of raw opium is made up into sticky roundish balls. The tribesman are paid in 1 kilo gold bars-known as 4/10ths—which are minted by Credit Suisse. These small bars are used ONLY to pay the tribesman—the normalweight gold bars are traded on the Hong Kong market by the big buyers of raw opium or partly processed heroin. The same methods are used to pay hill tribesman in India—the Baluchis-who have been in this business since the days of the Moguls. The "Dope Season," as it is called, sees a flood of gold traded on the Hong Kong market.

Mexico has started producing relatively small amounts of heroin called "Mexican Brown" which is much in demand by the Hollywood crowd. Here again the heroin trade is run by top government officials who have the military on their side. Some producers of "Mexican Brown" are making a million dollars a month by supplying their U.S. clients. On occasions when a few Mexican Federal police are prodded into taking action against the heroin producers, they are "taken out" by military units who seem to appear as if from nowhere.

Such an incident occurred in November 1991 at an isolated airstrip in Mexico's opium producing region. Federal narcotics agents surrounded the strip and were about to arrest people who were in the act of loading heroin when a squad of soldiers arrived. The soldiers rounded up the Federal narcotics police agents and systematically killed all of them. This action posed serious threat to Mexican President Goltarin, who is faced with loud demands for a full-scale investigation into the murders. Goltarin is over a barrel; he can't back off from calling for an inquiry, and neither can he afford to offend the military. It is the first such crack in the tight chain of command in Mexico that stretches all the way back to the Committee of 300.

Raw opium from the Golden Triangle is pipelined to the Sicilian Mafia and the French end of the business for refining in the laboratories that infest the French coastline from Marseilles to Monte-Carlo. Nowadays, Lebanon and Turkey are turning out

increasing amounts of refined heroin and a large number of laboratories have sprung up in these two countries in the past four years. Pakistan also has a number of laboratories but it is not in the same league as France, for example.

The route taken by the raw opium carriers of the Golden Crescent goes through Iran, Turkey and Lebanon. When the Shah of Iran was in control of the country, he refused to allow the heroin trade to continue and it was forcibly discontinuedup until the time that he was "dealt with" by the Committee of 300. Raw opium from Turkey and Lebanon finds it way to Corsica, from where it is shipped to Monte Carlo with the connivance of the Grimaldi family. Pakistani laboratories, under the guise of "military defense laboratories" are doing a bigger share of refining than they were two years ago, but the best refining is still done along the French Mediterranean coastline and in Turkey. Here again, banks play a vital role in financing these operations.

Let us stop here for a moment. Are we to believe that with all the modern and vastly improved surveillance techniques, including satellite reconnaissance, available to law enforcement agencies in these countries, that this vile trade cannot be pinpointed and stopped? How is it that law enforcement agencies cannot go in and destroy these laboratories once they are discovered? If this IS the case, and we still cannot interdict the heroin trade, then our anti-narcotics services ought to be known as "The Geriatrics" and not drug enforcement agencies.

Even a child could tell our alleged "drug watchers" what to do. Simply keep a check on all factories making acetic anhydride, THE most essential chemical component needed by laboratories to refine heroin from raw opium. THEN FOLLOW THE TRAIL! It is as simple as that! I am reminded of Peter Sellers in the "Pink Panther" series when I think of law enforcement efforts to locate heroin-refining laboratories. Even someone as bumbling as the imaginary inspector would have had no trouble in following the route taken by acetic anhydride shipments to their final destination.

Governments could make laws that would oblige manufacturers of acetic anhydride to keep scrupulous records showing who buys the chemical and for what purposes it is to be

used. But do not hold your breath on this one, remember Dope=Big Business and Big Business is done by the oligarchical families of Europe and the United States Eastern Liberal Establishment. The drug business is not a Mafia operation, nor one run by the Colombian cocaine cartels. The noble families of Britain and America's top people are not going to advertise their role in the shop windows; they always have a layer of front men to do the dirty work.

Remember British and AMERICAN "nobility" never dirtied their hands in the China opium trade. The lords and ladies were much too clever for that, as were the American elite: the Delanos, Forbes, Appletons, Bacons, Boylestons, Perkins, Russells, Cunninghams, Shaws, Coolidges, Parkmans, Runnewells, Cabots and Codmans, by no means a complete list of families in America who grew immensely wealthy from the China opium trade.

Since this is not a book about the drug trade, I cannot of necessity, cover the subject in an in-depth manner. But its importance to the Committee of 300 must be emphasized. America is run not by 60 families but by 300 families and England is run by 100 families and, as we shall see, these families are intertwined through marriage, companies, banks, not to mention ties to the Black Nobility, Freemasonry, the Order of St. John of Jerusalem and so on. These are the people who, through their surrogates, find ways to protect huge shipments of heroin from Hong Kong, Turkey, Iran and Pakistan and ensure they reach the market places in the U.S. and Western Europe with the minimum cost of doing business.

Shipments of cocaine are sometimes interdicted and seized That is mere window dressing. Often times the shipments seized belong to a new organization trying to break into the trade. Such competition is put out of business by informing the authorities exactly where it is going to enter the U.S. and who the owners are. The big stuff is never touched; heroin is too expensive. It is worthy of note that U.S. Drug Enforcement Agency operatives are not allowed into Hong Kong. They cannot examine any ship's manifest before it leaves the port. One wonders why, if there is so much "international cooperation" going on—what the media likes

to characterize as "smashing the dope trade." Clearly the trade routes for heroin are protected by "a higher authority. "

In South America, apart from Mexico, cocaine is king. The production of cocaine is very simple, unlike heroin, and great fortunes are to be made by those willing to take risks for and on behalf of the "higher ups." As in the heroin trade, interlopers are not welcome and often finish up as casualties, or victims of family feuds. In Colombia the drug mafia is a closely knit family. But such has been the bad publicity generated by the M19 guerrilla attack on the Justice Building in Bogota (M19 is the private army of the cocaine barons) and the murder of Rodrigo Lara Bonilla, a prominent prosecutor and a judge, that the "higher authority" had to rearrange matters in Colombia.

Accordingly, the Ochoas of the Medellin Cartel turned themselves in after being assured that they would not suffer any loss of fortune, harm of any kind, nor would they be extradited to the United States. A deal was struck that, provided they repatriated the bulk of their huge narco-dollar fortunes to Colombian banks, no punitive action would be taken against them. The Ochoas—Jorge, Fabio, and their top man, Pablo Escobar, would be held in private jails that resemble a luxury-class motel room, and then be sentenced to a maximum term of two years-to be served in the same motel jail. This deal is ongoing. The Ochoas have also been guaranteed the right to continue to manage their "business" from their motel-prison.

But that does not mean that the cocaine trade has come to a screeching halt. On the contrary, it has simply been transferred to the second-string Cali cartel, and it is business as usual. For some strange reason the Cali cartel, which is equal in size to the Medellin cartel, has been—at least up until now—largely ignored by the DEA. Cali differs from the Medellin cartel in that it is run by BUSINESSMEN, who eschew all forms of violence and never break agreements.

Even more significant is that Cali does virtually no business in Florida. My source told me that the Cali cartel is run by shrewd businessmen unlike any seen in the cocaine business. He believes that they were "specially appointed," but does not know by whom.

"They never call attention to themselves," he said. "They do not go around importing red Ferraris like Jorge Ochoa did, attracting immediate attention, because it is forbidden to import such cars into Colombia."

Cali cartel markets are in Los Angeles, New York and Houston, which closely parallel the heroin markets. Cali has not shown any signs of moving into Florida. A former DEA operative who is a colleague of mine said recently, "These Cali people are sure smart. They are a different breed to the Ochoa brothers. They act like professional businessmen. They are now larger than the Medellin cartel and I think we are going to see a lot more cocaine get into the United States than ever before. The kidnaping of Manuel Noriega will facilitate an easier flow through Panama of cocaine and money, what with so many banks there. So much for President George Bush's Operation Just Cause. All it did was make life a great deal easier for Nicolas Ardito Barletta who used to be run by the Ochoa brothers and who is fixing to front for the Cali cartel."

Based on my experience with the heroin trade I believe that the Committee of 300 has stepped in and taken over full control of the South American cocaine trade. There is no other explanation For the rise of the Cali cartel which is coupled with the kidnaping of Noriega. Did Bush take his orders from London regarding Noriega? There is every indication that he was literally PUSHED into invading Panama and kidnaping Noriega, who had become a serious impediment to "trade" in Panama, especially in the banking business.

Several former intelligence agents have given me their opinions which coincide with my own. Like the Gulf War that followed in the wake of Panama, it was only after several calls from the British Ambassedor in Washington that Bush finally plucked up enough courage to make his totally illegal move on General Noriega. That he was supported by the British press and the New York Times, a British intelligence run newspaper, speaks volumes.

Noriega was formerly the darling of the Washington establishment. He frequently hob-knobbed with William Casey and

Oliver North and even met with President George Bush on at least two occasions. Noriega was often seen at the Pentagon where he was treated like one of those Arab potentates, and the red carpet was always laid out for him at CIA headquarters in Langley Virginia. U.S. Army Intelligence and the CIA are on record as having paid him $320,000.

Then storm clouds began to appear on the horizon at about the same time the Cali cartel was taking over the cocaine trade from the Ochoa brothers and Pablo Escobar. Led by Senator Jesse Helms, who sold out to Ariel Sharon and the Israeli Histradut Party in 1985, there suddenly began an agitation for the removal of Noriega. Jesse Helms and those of a like mind were backed up by Simon Hersh, a British intelligence agent working for the New York Times, which has been a British intelligence mouthpiece in the U.S. since the time that M16 boss, Sir William Stephenson, occupied the RCA building in New York.

It is very significant that Helms should have chosen to lead the charge against Noriega. Helms is the darling of the Sharon faction in Washington and Sharon was the principal gun-runner in Central America and Colombia. Moreover, Helms has the respect of the Christian fundamentalists who believe in the maxim: "Israel, my country, right or wrong." Thus a powerful momentum was created to "get Noriega." It is evident that Noriega could well prove a serious impediment to the international drug merchants and their Committee of 300 bankers, so he had to be removed before he could do some significant damage.

Bush was pressured by his British masters to conduct an illegal search and seizure operation in Panama that resulted in the deaths of no less than 7,000 Panamanians and wanton destruction of property. Nothing to implicate Noriega as a "drug dealer" was ever found, so he was kidnaped and brought to the U.S. in one of the most blatant examples of international brigandry in history. This illegal action probably best meets the Bush philosophy: "The moral dimensions of American (read British royal family-Committee of 300) foreign policy require us to chart a moral course through a world of lesser evils. That's the real world, not black and while. Very few absolutes."

It was a "lesser evil" lo kidnap Noriega, rather than have him up-end the banks in Panama working for the Committee of 300. The Noriega case is a prototype of monstrous One World government actions waiting in the wings. An emboldened Bush came right out in the open, unafraid, because we, the people have put on a spiritual mantle that accommodates LIES and wants no part of TRUTH. This is the world we have decided to accept. If it were not so, a firestorm of anger would have swept the country over the invasion of Panama, which would not have stopped until Bush was hounded from office. Nixon's Watergate transgressions pale into insignificance next to the many impeachable offenses committed by President Bush when he ordered the invasion of Panama to kidnap General Noriega.

The government case against Noriega is based upon perjured testimony by a group of big men, for the most part, already convicted and lying through their individual and collective teeth to gel their own sentences lightened. Their performance would have pleased Gilbert and Sullivan immensely, were they alive today. "They made them the rulers of DEA," might be apropos instead of, "They made them the rulers of Queen's Navy," from "HMS Pinafore." It is an altogether grotesque scene to see how these con-artists are performing like not-so-well-trained seals for the U.S. Justice Department; that is if we care to insult such a nice clean animal by such an unworthy comparison.

Key dates conflict wildly, key details are altogether conspicuous by their absence, lapses of memory on crucial points all add up to the obvious fact that the government has no case against Noriega, but that does not matter; the Royal Institute for International Affairs (RIIA) says "convict him anyway" and that is what poor Noriega can expect. One of the Justice Department's star witnesses is one Floyd Carlton Caceres, a former pilot for the Ochoa brothers. Following his arrest in 1986, Carlton tried to ease his position at the expense of Noriega.

He told his DEA interrogators that the Ochoa brothers had paid Noriega $600,000 to allow three planes loaded with cocaine to land and refuel in Panama. But once in court in Miami, it soon became apparent that what was billed as the "star witness" for the prosecution was at best damp squib. Under cross-examination the

true story emerged: Far from being paid to allow the flights, Noriega wasn't even approached by the Ochoas. Worse yet, in December of 1983, Noriega had ordered that all flights to Panama from Medellin be refused permission to land in Panama. Carlton is not the only discredited witness.

One who is even a sorrier liar than Carlton is Carlos Lehder, who was a kingpin in the Medellin Cartel until he was arrested in Spain and sent to the U.S. Who gave the DEA the most vital information that Lehder was in Madrid? The DEA reluctantly concedes that they owe this important catch to Noriega. Now, however, the Justice Department is using Lehder as a witness against Noriega. If nothing else, this single witness demonstrates the wretchedness of the United States government's case against Manuel Noriega.

In return for services rendered, Lehder has been granted an easing of his sentence and far nicer quarters—a room with a view and television—and his family was given permanent residence in the U.S. Robert Merkel, a former U.S. attorney who prosecuted Lehder in 1988 told the Washington Pose "I don't think the government should be in the business of dealing with Carlos Lehder, period. This guy is a liar from beginning to end.

The Justice Department, purely a name which bears no resemblance to what it is supposed to stand for, has pulled out all its dirty tricks against Noriega: illegally wire-tapping his conversations with his lawyer; appointing a government lawyer to pretend he was serving Noriega but who quit in the middle of everything; freezing his bank accounts so that Noriega is unable to conduct a proper defense; kidnaping, illegal search and seizure. You name it, the government has broken more laws than Noriega has ever done—if indeed he has broken any laws at all.

It is the U.S. Justice Department that is on trial tenfold more than General Noriega. The Noriega case shows the glaringly evil system that passes for "justice" in this country. The U.S. "war on drugs" is on trial as is the Bush Administration's socalled drug policy. The Noriega trial, although it will end in a violent and flagrant rape of justice, will nevertheless offer some compensation to those who are not blind, deaf and dumb. It proves for once and

for all that Britain is in charge of our government and it will reveal the utterly bankrupt ideology of the Bush Administration which ought to have as its motto, "No Matter What, The End Always Justifies The Means. There Are Very Few Moral Absolutes." Like the majority of politicians, for Bush to have a standard of ABSOLUTE MORALITY WOULD BE SUICIDAL. Only in this climate could we have allowed President Bush to violate at least six United States laws and DOZENS OF INTERNATIONAL AGREEMENTS in going to war against Iraq.

What we are witnessing in Colombia and Washington is a complete revision of how the cocaine trade is to be run; no more wild stuff, no more blazing guns. Let the gentlemen of the Cali cartel in pin-stripe suits conduct the business in a gentlemanly way In short, the Committee of 300 has taken a direct hand in the cocaine trade which henceforth will go as smoothly as the heroin trade. The new government of Colombia is geared to the change in tactics and direction. It is on notice to perform according to the Committee's game plan.

There is need to mention U.S. participation in the China opium trade which began in the southern United States prior to the War Between The States. How can we tie the opium trade in with the great cotton plantations of the South? To do that, we have to start in Bengal, India, producers of the finest (if one can call such a foul substance fine) opium which was much in demand. Cotton was THE biggest trade in England, after opium sales through the BEIC.

Most of the cotton from Southern plantations was worked in the slave mills of Northern England, where women and children earned a pittance for a 16-hour day's work. The cloth mills were owned by the wealthy socialites in London, the Barings, Palmerstons, Keswicks and most of all the Jardine Mathesons who owned the Blue Star Shipping Line, on which the finished cotton cloth goods were shipped to India. They could care less about the hapless conditions endured by Her Majesty's subject. After all, that is what they were for, and their husbands and sons were useful for fighting wars to preserve Her Majesty's farflung empire as they had done for centuries, and latterly, in the bloody Boer War. That was British tradition, wasn't it?

Cotton cloth finished goods exported to India undercut and destroyed the long-standing Indian producers of cotton finished goods trade. Terrible privation was endured by thousands of Indians thrown out of work as a result of cheaper British goods taking over their markets. India then became utterly dependent upon Britain to earn enough currency to pay for its railroads and finished cotton goods imports. There was only one solution to India's economic woes. Produce more opium and sell it for less to the British East India Company. This was the rock upon which British trade grew and flourished. Without its opium trade, Britain would have been as bankrupt.

Did the Southern plantation owners know about the ugly secret of opium-for-cotton goods? It is unlikely that some of them didn't know what was going on. Take, for instance, the Sutherland family, one of the largest cotton plantation owners in the South. The Sutherlands were closely related to the Matheson family—Jardine Matheson—who in turn had as their business partners the Baring Brothers, founders of the famous Peninsular and Orient Navigation Line (P&O), the largest of Britain's many merchant shipping lines.

The Barings were big investors in Southern plantations as they were in the U.S. Clipper ships which plowed through the seas between Chinese ports and all the important ports along the eastern seaboard of the United States. Today the Barings run a number of very substantial financial operations in the United States. All of those names mentioned were, and their descendants still are, members of the Committee of 300.

The majority of families who go to make up the Eastern Liberal Establishment, among whom are the wealthiest to be found in this country, derived their fortunes from either the cotton trade or the opium trade and in some instances from both. Of these the Lehmans are an outstanding example. When it comes to fortunes made solely from the China opium trade, the first names that come to mind are the Astors and the Delanos. President Franklin D. Roosevelt's wife was a Delano.

John Jacob Astor made a huge fortune out of the China opium trade and then he went respectable by buying up large tracts of Manhattan real estate with his dirty money. During his lifetime Astor played a big role in the Committee of 300s' deliberations. In fact, it was the Committee of 300 who chose who would be allowed to participate in the fabulously lucrative China opium trade, through its monopolist BEIC, and the beneficiaries of their largess remained forever wedded to the Committee of 300.

That is why, as we shall discover, most real estate in Manhattan belongs to various Committee members, even as it has since the days when Astor began buying it up. With the benefit of access to records that would be closed to others outside of British intelligence, I discovered that Astor had long been an asset of British intelligence in the United States. Astor's financing of Aaron Burr, the murderer of Alexander Hamilton, proves the point beyond any reasonable doubt.

John Jacob Astor's son, Waldorf Astor, had the additional honor bestowed upon him of being appointed to the Royal Institute for International Affairs (RIIA), through which organization the Committee of 300 controls every facet of our lives in the United States. The Astor family is believed to have selected Owen Lattimore to carry on their association with the opium trade which he did through the Laura Spelman-funded Institute for Pacific Relations (IPR). It was the IPR that oversaw China's entry into the opium trade as an equal partner and not merely as a supplier. It was IPR that paved the way for the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor. Attempts to turn the Japanese into opium addicts met with dismal failure.

By the turn of the century the oligarchical plutocrats of Britain were like overgorged vultures on the Serengeti Plain at the time of the annual Wildebeest march. Their income from the China opium trade exceeded David Rockefeller's income by SEVERAL BILLION DOLLARS PER ANNUM. Historic records made available to me in the British Museum in London and from India Office and other sources—former colleagues in well-placed positions, proves this completely.

By 1905, the Chinese government, deeply concerned about the rise in the number of opium addicts in China, tried to get help from the international community. Britain pretended to cooperate, but made no move whatsoever to abide by the 1905 protocols it had signed. Later Her Majesty's government did an about-face after showing China that it was better to join them in the opium business rather than to try and end it.

Even The Hague Convention was scoffed at by the British. Delegates to the convention had agreed that Britain must abide by the protocols it had signed, which was to drastically reduce the amount of opium sold in China and elsewhere. The British, while paying lip service, had no intention of giving up their trade in human misery, which included the so-called "pig trade."

Their servant, President George Bush, in prosecution of the cruel war of genocide waged against the Iraqi nation SOLELY for and on behalf of British interests, likewise showed his contempt by flouting the Hague Agreement on Aerial Bombardment, and a whole slew of international conventions to which the U.S. is a signatory, including ALL of the Geneva Conventions.

When evidence was produced two years later, notably by the Japanese, who were growing very concerned about British smuggling of opium into their country, that opium sales had increased instead of decreased, then Her Majesty's delegate to the Fifth Hague Convention produced a set of statistics which were at variance with those provided by Japan. The British delegate turned the tables by saying that it made a very strong case for legalizing the sale of opium which would have the effect of doing away with what he called "the black market."

He suggested on behalf of Her Majesty's government that the Japanese government would then have a monopoly and full control of the trade. THIS IS PRECISELY THE SAME ARGUMENT BEING ADVANCED BY THE FRONT MEN FOR THE BRONFMANS AND OTHER BIG-TIME DOPE DEALERS—LEGALIZE COCAINE, MARIJUANA AND HEROIN, LET THE U.S GOVERNMENT HAVE THE MONOPOLY AND THEREBY STOP WASTING BILLIONS ON THE PHONY WAR ON DRUGS AND SAVE THE TAXPAYERS BILLIONS OF DOLLARS.

In the period of 1791-1894, the number of licensed opium dens in the Shanghai International Settlement rose from 87 to 663. Opium flowing into the United States was also stepped up. Sensing that they might have some problems in China with the spotlight of world concern shining upon them, the plutocrats of the Knights of St. John and the Order of the Garter, transferred some of their attention to Persia (Iran).

Lord Inchcape, who founded the biggest steamship company in the world at the turn of the 19th century, the legendary Peninsula and Orient Steam Navigation Company, was the principal mover and shaker in establishing the Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank, which remains the largest and least controlled clearinghouse bank for the opium trade, which also financed the "pig trade" with the United States.

The British had set up a scam whereby Chinese "coolies" were sent to the U.S. as so-called indentured laborers. The rapacious Harriman family's railroad needed "coolies" to push the rail connection westward to the California coast, or so they said. Strangely enough, very few Negroes were given the manual labor jobs they were used to at that time and could have done a better job than the emaciated opium addicts who arrived from China.

The problem was that there was no market for opium among the Negroes and, moreover, Lord Inchcape, son of the founder of P and O needed the "coolies" to smuggle in thousands of pounds of raw opium into North America, something the Negroes could not do. It was the same Lord Inchcape who in 1923 warned that there must be no diminishing of opium poppy cultivation in Bengal. "This most important source of revenue must be safeguarded," he told the commission allegedly investigating the production of opium gum in India.

By 1846, some 120,000 "coolies" had already arrived in the U.S. to work on Harriman's railroad pushing westward. The "pig trade" was in full profitable swing because, of this number, it was estimated by the U.S. government 115,000 were opium addicts. Once the railroad was finished, the Chinese did not go back to where they came from, but settled in San Francisco, Los Angeles,

Vancouver and Portland. They created a huge culture problem that has never ceased to exist.

It is interesting to note that Cecil John Rhodes, a Committee of 300 member who fronted for the Rothschilds in South Africa followed the Inchcape pattern, bringing hundreds of thousand of Indian "coolies" to work on the sugar cane plantations in Natal province. Among them was Mahatma Ghandi, a Communist agitator and troublemaker. Like the Chinese coolies, they were not returned to their country of origin once their contracts expired. They, too, went on to create a massive social program, and their descendants became lawyers who spearheaded the drive to infiltrate the government on behalf of the Africa National Congress.

By 1875 the Chinese "coolies" operating out of San Francisco had set up an opium supply ring that resulted in 129,000 American opium addicts. What with the known 115,000 Chinese addicts, Lord Inchcape and his family were raking in hundreds of thousands of dollars a year from this source alone which, in terms of today's dollar would represent at least a $100 million dollar income every year.

The very same British and American families who had combined to wreck the Indian textile industry in the promotion of the opium trade, and who brought African slaves to the U.S. combined to make the "pig trade" a valuable source of revenue. Later they were to combine to cause and promote the terrible War Between The States, also known as the American Civil War.

The decadent American families of the unholy partnership, thoroughly corrupted and wallowing in filthy lucre, went on to become what we know today as the Eastern Liberal Establishmemt whose members, under the careful guidance and direction of the Crown and subsequently its foreign policy executive arm, the Royal Institute of International Affairs (RIIA), ran this counry—and still does—from top to bottom through their secret upper-level, parallel government, which is tightly meshed with the Committee of 300, the ULTIMATE secret society.

By 1923, voices were being raised against this menace that had been allowed to be imported into the United States. Believing the United States to be a free and sovereign nation, Congressman Stephen Porter, Chairman of the House of Representatives Foreign Affairs Committee, introduced a bill which called for the British to account for their opium export-import business on a country-by-country basis. The resolution set up quotas for each country, which if observed, would have reduced the opium made by lO%. The resolution was passed into law and the bill accepted by the Congress of the United States.

But the Royal Institute of International Affairs had other ideas. Founded in 1919 in the wake of the Paris Peace Conference held at Versailles, this was one of the earliest "foreign policy" executors of the Committee of 300. Research I have done on the Congressional Records, House, show that Porter was totally unaware of the powerful forces he was up against. Porter was not even aware of the existence of the RIIA, much less that its specific purpose was to control every facet of the United States.

Apparently Congressman Porter received some kind of an intimation from the Morgan Bank on Wall Street that he should drop the whole affair. Instead, an enraged Porter took his case to the League of Nations Opium Committee. Porter's total unawareness of who he was up against is demonstrated in some of his correspondence to colleagues on the House Foreign Affairs Committee in response to open British opposition to his proposals.

Her Majesty's representative chided Porter and then, acting like a father toward an errant son, the British delegate—on instructions from the RIIA—presented Her Majesty's proposals to INCREASE opium quotas to account for an increase in the consumption of opium for medicinal purposes. According to documents that I was able to find in The Hague, Porter was at first confused, then amazed and then enraged. Joined by the Chinese delegate, Porter stormed out of the plenipotentiary session of the Committee session, leaving the field to the British.

In his absence, the British delegate got the League to rubber stamp Her Majesty's government proposals for a creation of a tame-tiger Central Narcotics Board, whose chief function was

information gathering, the terms of which were purposely vague. What was to be done with the "information" was never made clear. Porter returned to the U.S. a shaken and much wiser man.

Another British intelligence asset was the fabulously rich William Bingham, into which family one of the Barings married. It was stated in papers and documents that I saw that the Baring Brothers ran the Philadelphia Quakers and owned half of the real estate of that city, all made possible because of the fortune the Baring Brothers had amassed from the China opium trade. Another beneficiary of the Committee of 300's largess was Stephen Girard, whose descendants inherited the Girard Bank and Trust.

The names of the families, whose history is intertwined with that of Boston and who would never give us ordinary folk the time of day, were wrapped in the arms of the Committee of 300 and its vastly lucrative BEIC China opium trade. Many of the famous families became associated with the notorious Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank which is still the clearing house for billions of dollars that flow from the opium trade in China.

Such famous names as Forbes, Perkins and Hathaway appear in the records of the British East India Company. These genuine American "bluebloods" created Russell and Company, whose main trade was in opium, but also ran other shipping enterprises from China to South America and all points in between. As a reward for their services to the British Crown and the BEIC, the Committee of 300 granted them a monopoly in the slave trade in 1833.

Boston owes its celebrated past to the cotton-opium-slave trade granted to it by the Committee of 300 and it is stated in the records I was privileged to see in London that Boston's merchant families were the chief supporters of the British Crown in the United States. John Murray Forbes is mentioned as the majordomo of the "Boston Blue Bloods" in India House records and in bank records in Hong Kong.

Forbe's son was the first American allowed by the Committee of 300 to sit on the board of the most prestigious drug bank in the world—even today—the Hong Kong and Shanghai

Bank. When I was in Hong Kong in the early 1960's as "an historian interested in the British East India Company," I was shown some old records, including past board members of this notorious drug bank, and sure enough, Forbes' name was among them.

The Perkins family, so illustrious that their name is still mentioned in awed whispers, were deeply involved in the nefarious filthy China opium trade. In fact Perkins the elder was one of the first Americans to be elected to the Committee of 3OO. His son, Thomas Nelson, was Morgan's man in Boston, and as such also an agent for British intelligence. His unsavory-I would say disgusting—past was not in question when he richly endowed Harvard University. After all, Canton and Tientsin are a long way from Boston, and who would have cared anyway?

What helped The Perkinses a lot was that Morgan was a powerful member of the Committee of 300, which enabled Thomas N. Perkins to rapidly further his career in the China opium trade. All the Morgans and Perkinses were Freemasons, which was another tie that bound them together, for only Freemasons of highest rank have any hope of being selected by the Committee of 300. Sir Robert Hart, who for almost three decades was chief of the Imperial Chinese Customs Service (read the British Crown's number one agent in the opium trade in China was subsequently appointed to the board of Morgan Guarantee Bank's Far Eastern Division.

Through access to the historical records in London and Hong Kong, I was able to establish that Sir Robert developed an intimate relationship with Morgan operations in the United States. It is worthy of note that Morgan interests in the opium/ heroin trade have continued in an unbroken line; witness the fact that David Newbigging is on the advisory board of Morgan's Hong Kong operation run in conjunction with Jardine Matheson.

To those who know Hong Kong, the name of Newbigging will be familiar as the most powerful name in Hong Kong. In addition to his membership of Morgan's elite bank, Newbigging doubles as an advisor to the Chinese government. Opium for missile technology, opium for gold, opium for high-tech

computers—it is all the same to Newbigging. The way these banks financial houses, trading companies and the families who run them are intertwined would perplex Sherlock Holmes, yet somehow they must be unraveled and followed if we are to understand their connections with the drug trade and their membership in the Committee of 300.

The two-track entry into the United States of alcohol and drugs were products of the same stable occupied by the same thoroughbreds. First, prohibition had to be introduced into the United States. This was done by the British East India Company heirs who, acting upon experience gained through the welldocumented China Inland Mission records found in India House, set up the Women's Christian Temperance Union, supposedly to oppose consumption of alcohol in America.

We say that history repeats itself, and in a sense, this is true. except that it repeats itself in an ever-upward spiral. Today we find that some of the largest companies, allegedly "polluting" the earth, are the largest contributors of funds to the environmentalist movement. The "big names" send forth their message. Prince Philip is one of their heroes, yet his son Prince Charles owns a million acres of forested land in Wales from which timber is regularly harvested and, in addition, Prince Charles is one of the largest owners of slum housing in London, where pollution thrives.

In the case of those who railed against the "evils of drink," we find they were financed by the Astors, the Rockefellers, the Spelmans, the Vanderbilts and the Warburgs who had a vested interest in the liquor trade. On the instructions of the Crown, Lord Beaverbrook came over from England to tell these wealthy American families that they were to invest in the WCTU. (It was the same Lord Beaverbrook who came to Washington in 1940 and ORDERED Roosevelt to get involved in Britain's war.)

Roosevelt complied by stationing a U.S. Navy flotilla in Greenland that spent the 9 months prior to Pearl Harbor hunting and attacking German U-Boats. Like his successor, George Bush, Roosevelt thought the Congress a confounded nuisance so, acting like a king-sense he felt strongly since he is related to the British

royal family—FDR never sought the permission of Congress for his illegal action. This is what the British are most fond of referring to as their "special relationship with America."

The drug trade has a connection with the murder of President John F. Kennedy, which foul deed stains the national character and will continue to do so until the perpetrators are found and brought to justice. There is proof that the Mafia was involved in this through the CIA, which brings to mind that it all started with the old Meyer Lansky network which evolved into the Irgun terrorist organization, and Lansky proved to be one of the best vehicles for peddling cultural warfare against the West.

Lansky was, through more respectable fronts, associated with the British higher-ups in bringing gambling and dope distribution to Paradise Island in the Bahamas under the cover of The Mary Carter Paint Company—a joint Lansky-British M16 venture. Lord Sassoon was later murdered because he was skimming money and was threatening to blow the whistle if he was punished. Ray Wolfe was more presentable, representing the Bronfmans of Canada. While the Bronfmans were not privy to Churchill's massive Nova Scotia Project, they were and still are nevertheless an important asset of the British royal family in the business of dope peddling.

Sam Rothberg, close associate of Meyer Lansky, also worked with Tibor Rosenbaum and Pinchas Sapir, all king pins in the Lansky drug ring. Rosenbaum ran a drug money laundering operation out of Switzerland through a bank he established for this purpose; Banque du Credite International. The bank quickly expanded its activities and became the principal bank used by Lansky and his mobster associates for laundering money garnered from prostitution, drugs and other Mafia rackets.

It is worthy of note that Tibor Rosenbaum's bank was used by the shadowy chief of British Intelligence, Sir William Stephenson, whose right hand man, Major John Mortimer Bloomfield, a Canadian citizen, ran Division Five of the FBI throughout the Second World War. Stephenson was an early member of the 2Oth century Committee of 300, although Bloomfield never made it that far. As I revealed in my series of

monographs on the Kennedy assassination, it was Stephenson who master-minded the operation which was run as a hands-on project by Bloomfield. Fronting for the Kennedy assassination was done through another drug-related front, Permanent Industrial Expositions (PERMINDEX), created in 1957 and centered in the World Trade Mart building in downtown New Orleans.

Bloomfield just happened to be the attorney for the Bronfman family. The World Trade Mart was created by Colonel Clay Shaw and FBI Division Five station chief in New Orleans, Guy Bannister. Shaw and Bannister were close associates of Lee Harvey Oswald, accused of shooting Kennedy, who was murdered by CIA contract agent Jack Ruby before he could prove that he was not the assassin who shot President Kennedy. In spite of the Warren Commission and numerous official reports, it has NEVER been established that Oswald owned the Mannlicher rifle said to be the murder weapon (it was not) nor that he had ever fired it. The connection between the drug trade, Shaw, Bannister and Bloomfield has been established several times, and need not concern us here.

In the immediate post-WW II period, one of the most common methods used by Resorts International and other drug related companies to clean money was by courier service to a money laundering bank. Now all that has changed. Only the small fry still use such a risky method. The "big fish" conduit their money via the CHIPS system, an acronym for Clearing House International Payments System, run by a Burroughs computer system centered at the New York Clearing House. Twelve of the largest banks use this system. One of them is the Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank. Another is Credite Suisse, that oh so respectable paragon of virtue in banking—until the lid is lifted. Combined with the SWIFT system based in Virginia, dirty drug money becomes invisible. Only wanton carelessness results in the FBI getting lucky now and then, if and when it is told not to look the other way.

Only low echelon drug dealers get caught with drug money in their hands. The elite, Drexel Burnham, Credite Suisse, Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank, escape detection. But this, too, is changing with the collapse of Bank of Credit and Commerce

International (BCCI) which is likely to expose a great deal about the drug trade if ever a proper investigation is carried out.

One of the largest assets in the portfolio of the Committee of 300 companies is American Express (AMEX). Its presidents regularly occupy positions on the Committee of 300. I first got interested in Amex when I was carrying out an on-the-spot investigation that led me to the Trade Development Bank in Geneva. Later, this got me into a lot of trouble. I discovered that Trade Development Bank, then run by Edmund Safra, key man in the gold for opium trade, was supplying tons of gold to the Hong Kong market via Trade Development Bank.

Before going to Switzerland, I went to Pretoria, South Africa, where I talked with Dr. Chris Stals, at that time the deputy governor of the South African Reserve Bank which controls all bulk dealings in South African-produced gold. After several discussions over a period of a week, I was told that the bank could not supply me with the ten tons of gold that I was authorized to buy on behalf of clients I was supposed to be representing. My friends in the right places knew how to produce the documentation which passed without question.

The Reserve Bank referred me to a Swiss company whom I cannot name, because it would blow cover. I was also given the address of Trade Development Bank in Geneva. The purpose of my exercise was to find out the mechanics of how gold is moved and traded, and secondly to test bogus documents which had been prepared for me by ex-intelligence friends of mine who specialized in this kind of thing. Remember "M" in the "James Bond" series? Let me assure you that "M" does exist, only his correct initial is "C." The documents I had consisted of "buying orders" from Liechtenstein companies with supporting papers to match.

On approaching Trade Development Bank I was at first greeted cordially but, as discussions progressed with more and more suspicion until, when I felt it was no longer safe for me to visit the bank, without telling anyone at the bank I left Geneva. Later the bank was sold to American Express. American Express was briefly investigated by former Attorney General Edwin Meese,

after which he was quickly removed from office and labeled "corrupt." What I found was that American Express was and still is a conduit for laundering drug money and, thus far, no one has been able to explain to me why a private company has the right to print dollars—aren't American Express travelers checks dollars? I subsequently exposed the Safra-Amex drug connections which upset a lot of people, as can be imagined.

Committee of 300 member Japhet controls Charterhouse Japhet, which in turn controls Jardine Matheson as a direct link to the Hong Kong opium trade. The Japhets are reportedly English Quakers. The Matheson family, also members of the Committee of 300, were kingpins in the China opium trade, at least up until 1943. The Mathesons have appeared in the Queen of England Honors List since the early 19th century.

The top controllers of the drug trade in the Committee of 300 have no conscience about the millions of lives they ruin each year. They are Gnostics, Cathars, members of the cult of Dionysus, Osiris, or worse. To them, "ordinary" people are there to be used for their purposes. Their high-priests, Bulwer-Lytton and Aldous Huxley, preached the gospel of drugs as a beneficial substance. To quote Huxley:

"And for private everyday use, there have always been chemical intoxicants. All the vegetable sedatives and narcotics, all the euphorics that grow on trees, the hallucinogens that ripen in berries, have been used by humans since time immemorial. And to these modifiers of conscience, modern science has added its quota of synthetics. For unrestricted use the West has permitted only alcohol and tobacco. All other chemical Doors in the Wall are labeled DOPE."

To the oligarches and plutocrats of the Committee of 300, drugs have a two-fold purpose, firstly to bring in colossal sums of money and secondly, to eventually turn a major part of the population into mindless drug zombies who will be easier to control than people who don't need drugs, as punishment for rebellion will mean withholding of supplies of heroin, cocaine, marijuana, etc. For this it is necessary to legalize drugs so that a MONOPOLY SYSTEM, which has been readied for introduction

once severe economic conditions, of which the 1991 depression is the forerunner, cause drug usage to proliferate as hundreds of thousands of permanently jobless workers turn to drugs for solace.

In one of the Royal Institute of International Affairs top secret papers, the scenario is laid out as follows (in part):

"...having been failed by Christianity, and with unemployment on every hand, those who have been without jobs for five years or more will turn away from the church and seek solace in drugs. That is when full control of the drug trade must be completed in order that the governments of all countries who are under our jurisdiction will have a MONOPOLY which we will control through supply.... Drug bars will take care of the unruly and the discontent, would be revolutionaries will be turned into harmless addicts with no will of their own...."

There is ample evidence that the CIA and British intelligence, specially M16, have already spent at least a decade working toward this goal.

The Royal Institute of International Affairs used the life-time work of Aldous Huxley and Bulwer-Lytton as its blueprint to bring about a state where mankind will no longer have wills of their own in the One World Government-New World Order of the fast-approaching New Dark Age. Again, let us see what high priest Aldous Huxley had to say about this:

"In many societies at many levels of civilization, attempts have been made to fuse drug intoxication with God intoxication. In ancient Greece, for example, ethyl alcohol had its place in the established religions. Dionysus, Bacchus, as he was often called, was a true divinity. Complete prohibition of chemical changes can be decreed but cannot be enforced. (THE LANGUAGE OF THE PRO-DRUG LOBBY ON CAPITOL HILL.)

"Now let us consider another type of drug—still undis covered, but probably just around the corner—a drug making people happy in situations where they would normally feel miserable. (Is there anyone more miserable than a person who has sought and been unable to find work?) Such a drug would be

a blessing, but a blessing fraught with grave social and political dangers. By making a harmless chemical euphoria freely available, a dictator (read Committee of 300) could reconcile an entire population to a state of affairs to which self-respecting human beings ought not to be reconciled."

Quite a dialectical masterpiece. What Huxley was advocating and which is official policy of the Committee of 300 and its surrogate, RIIA, can be quite simply stated as mass mind control. As I have often said, all wars are wars for the souls of mankind. Thus far it has not dawned on us that the drug trade is irregular low-intensity warfare against the whole human race of free men. Irregular warfare is the most terrible form of warfare which, while it has a beginning, has no ending.

Some will question the involvement of the British royal families, past and present, in the drug trade. To see it in print appears on the surface to be preposterous, and it is being seen in print more often these days to make it appear exactly that, preposterous. The oldest maxim in the intelligence business is, "If you want to hide something, put it where everyone can see it.

F. S. Turner's book, "BRITISH OPIUM POLICY," published in 1876, shows how the British monarchy and its hangers-on family relatives were deeply involved in the opium trade. Turner was the secretary of the Anglo Oriental Society of the Suppression of the Opium Trade. He declined to be silenced by Crown spokesperson Sir R. Temple. Turner stated that the government, and therefore the Crown, had to withdraw from the opium monopoly, "and if it takes any revenues at all, take only that which accrues from taxation honestly meant to have a restrictive force. "

Turner was answered by a spokesman for the monarchy, Lord Lawrence, who fought against the BEIC losing its monopoly. "It would be desirable to get rid of the monopoly, but I myself am disinclined to be the agent of change. If it is question of moderate loss that we could afford, I would not hesitate to undertake it." (Taken from the Calcutta Papers 1870.)

By 1874 the war against the British monarchy and the aristocracy over its deep involvement in the China opium trade

was getting heated. The Society for the Suppression of the Opium Trade violently assailed the aristocracy of the day and pressed home its attacks in a fearless manner we would do well to emulate. The society said that the Treaty of Tientsin, which Forced China to accept the importation of enormous amounts of opium, was a dastardly crime against the Chinese people.

There arose a mighty warrior, Joseph Grundy Alexander, a barrister by profession who, in 1866, led a strong attack on British Crown opium policy in China in which he openly mentioned the involvement of the royal family and the aristocracy. For the first time Alexander brought India, "the Jewel in the Crown," into the picture. He laid the blame squarely where it belonged, on the monarchy, the so-called aristocracy and its servants in the British government.

Under the direction of Alexander, the society committed itself to the total destruction of the cultivation of opium poppies in Bengal, India. Alexander proved to be a doughty opponent. Through his leadership, the drug aristocracy began to falter and, in the face of his open denouncements of the royal family and its hangers-on, several Members of Parliament began siding with him Conservatives, Unionists, Labor. Alexander made it clear that the drug trade was not a party political issue; it was for all parties to join together in helping to eradicate the menace.

Lord Kimberly, spokesman for the royal family and the entrenched oligarchists, threatened that any attempts to interfere with what he called "the commerce of the nation will run into serious opposition from the cabinet." Alexander and his society pressed on in the face of innumerable threats and finally parliament agreed to appoint a Royal Commission to enquire into the opium trade, with Lord Kimberly, who was Secretary of India, as its chairman. A more inappropriate person to head the commission could not have been found. It was akin to Dulles being appointed to the Warren Commission.

In his first statement, Lord Kimberly made it clear that he would rather resign from his august position than consent to a resolution that would surrender Indian Opium Revenues. It is worthy of note that "Indian Opium Revenue" implied money

shared by the nation. Like the idea that the people of South Africa share in the enormous profits from the sale of gold and diamonds, this was just not the case. Indian opium revenues went straight into the royal coffers and the pockets of the nobility and the oligarchists and plutocrats, and made them billionaires.

Rowntree's book, "THE IMPERIAL DRUG TRADE" gives a fascinating account of how Prime Minister Gladstone and his fellow plutocrats lied, cheated, twisted and turned to keep the astonishing truth of the involvement of the British monarchy in the opium trade from being exposed. Rowntree's book is a treasure house of information on the deep involvement of the British royal family and the lords and ladies of England and the huge fortunes they accumulated from the misery of the Chinese opium addicts.

Lord Kimberly, secretary of the commission of inquiry, was himself deeply involved in the opium trade so he did everything in his power to close the proceedings to all who sought the truth. Finally, under a great deal of pressure from the public, the Royal Commission was forced to open the door to this inquiry just a crack, so that it became apparent that the highest in the land were running the opium trade and receiving huge benefits from it. But the door was quickly slammed shut again, and the Royal Commission called no expert witnesses, thereafter sitting for an absurdly short period of time. The commission was nothing but a farce and a cover-up, such as we have become accustomed to in 20th century America.

The Eastern Liberal Establishment families of the United States were just as deeply involved in the China opium trade as were the British, indeed they still are. Witness recent history when James Earl Carter toppled the Shah of Iran. Why was the Shah deposed and then murdered by the United States government? fn a word, because of DRUGS. The Shah had clamped down and virtually put an end to the immensely lucrative opium trade being conducted out of Iran by the British. At the time that the Shah took over in Iran, there were already one million opium/heroin addicts.

This the British would not tolerate, so they sent the United States to do their dirty work for them in terms of the "special

relationship" between the two countries. When Khomeini took over the U.S. Embassy in Teheran, arms sales by the United States, which had begun with the Shah, were not discontinued. Why not? Had the United States done so, Khomeini would have canceled the British monopoly of the opium trade in his country. To prove the point, after 1984, Khomeini's liberal attitude toward opium had increased the number of addicts to 2 million, according to United Nations and World Health Organization statistics.

Both President Carter and his successor, Ronald Reagan, willingly and with full knowledge of what was at stake, went on supplying arms to Iran even while American hostages languished in captivity. In 1980 I wrote a monograph under the title, "What Really Happened in Iran," which set out the facts. The arms trade with Iran was sealed at a meeting between Cyrus Vance, a servant of the Committee of 300, and Dr. Hashemi, which resulted in the U.S. Air Force beginning an immediate airlift of arms to Iran, carried on even at the height of the hostage crisis the arms came from U.S. Army stockpiles in Germany and some were even flown directly from the United States with refueling stops at the Azores.

With the advent of Khomeini, who was put in power in Iran by the Committee of 300, opium production skyrocketed. By 1984 Iran's opium production exceeded 650 metric tons of opium per annum. What Carter and Reagan did was ensure that there was no further interference in the opium trade and they carried out the mandate given to them by the oligarchical families in Britain in this connection. Iran presently rivals the Golden Triangle in the volume of opium produced.

The Shah was not the only victim of the Committee of 300 William Buckley, CIA station chief in Beirut, in all his lack of experience on who is behind the opium trade, began conducting investigations in Iran, Lebanon and even spent time in Pakistan. From Islamabad, Buckley began sending back damning reports to the CIA in Langley about the burgeoning opium trade in the Golden Crescent and Pakistan. The U.S. Embassy in Islamabad was firebombed, but Buckley escaped the mob attack and returned to Washington because his cover was blown by forces unknown.

Then a very strange thing happened. Contrary to all procedures laid down by the CIA when an agent's cover has been blown, Buckley was sent back to Beirut. Buckley was in effect sentenced to death by the CIA in order to silence him, and this time the sentence was carried out. William Buckley was kidnaped by agents of the Committee of 300. Under brutal interrogation by General Mohammed el Khouili of Syrian intelligence to force him to disclose the names of all field officers of the DEA in these countries, he was brutally murdered. His efforts to expose the huge opium trade developing out of Pakistan, Lebanon and Iran cost Buckley his life.

If the remaining free men in this world believe that singlehandedly or in small groups they can smash the drug trade, they are sorely mistaken. They could cut off the tentacles of the opium and cocaine trade here and there, but never the head. The crowned cobras of Europe and their Eastern Liberal Establishment family will not tolerate it. The war on drugs which the Bush administration is allegedly fighting, but which it is not, is for TOTAL legalization of ALL types and classes of drugs. Such drugs are not solely a social aberration, but a fullscale attempt to gain control of the minds of the people of this planet, or as the "Aquarian Conspiracy" authors put it, "to bring about radical changes in the United States." THIS IS THE PRINCIPAL TASK OF THE COMMITTEE OF 300, THE ULTIMATE SECRET SOCIETY.

Nothing has changed in the opium-heroin-cocaine trade. It is still run by the same "upper class" families in Britain and the United States. It is still a fabulously profitable trade where what seem to be big losses through seizures by the authorities are written off in paneled boardrooms in New York, Hong Kong and London over port and cigars as "merely the cost of doing business, old boy."

British colonial capitalism has always been the mainstay of the oligarchical feudal system of privilege in England and remains so to the present day. When the poor, untutored pastoral people in South Africa who became known as the Boers fell into the bloodstained hands of the British aristocracy in 1899, they had no idea that the revoltingly cruel war so relentlessly pursued by Queen Victoria, was financed by the incredible amounts of money

which came from the "instant fortunes" of the BEIC opium trade in China into the pockets of the plutocrats.

Committee of 300 members Cecil John Rhodes, Barney Barnato and Alfred Beit instigated and engineered the war. Rhodes was the principle agent for the Rothschilds, whose banks were awash in cash flowing from the opium trade. These robbers, thieves and liars—Rhodes, Barnato, Oppenheimer, Joel and Beit—dispossessed the South African Boers of their birthright, the gold and diamonds that lay beneath their soil. The South African Boers received nothing out of the BILLIONS UPON BILLIONS of dollars derived from the sale of THEIR gold and diamonds.

The Committee of 300 quickly took full control of these vast treasures, control which it even now maintains through one of its members, Sir Harry Oppenheimer. The average South African receives $100 per annum per capita from the gold and diamond industry. The BILLIONS which flow out annually go to the bankers of the Committee of 300. It is one of the most foul and vile stories of greed, theft and the murder of a nation ever recorded in the annals of history.

How could the British Crown have succeeded in pulling off this stunning fraud of gigantic proportion? To accomplish such a Herculean task requires skilled organizing with devoted agentsin-place to carry out the daily instructions passed down from the conspirators' hierarchy. The first step was a press propaganda campaign portraying the Boers as uncivilized barbarians, only slightly human, who were denying British citizens the right to vote in the Boer Republic. Then, demands were made on Paul Kruger, leader of the Transvaal Republic, which of course could not be met. After that, a series of incidents were staged to provoke the Boers into retaliation, but that didn't work either. Then came the infamous Jameson Raid where a certain Jameson led a party of several hundred armed men in an attack on the transvaal. War followed immediately thereafter.

Queen Victoria mounted the largest and best equipped army that the world had ever seen at that time (1898). Victoria thought he war would be over in two weeks, since the Boers had no standing army and no trained militia and would be no match for

her 400,000 soldiers drawn from the ranks of Britain's underclasses. The Boers never numbered more than 80,000 farmers and their sons—some were as young as fourteen-Rudyard Kipling also thought the war would be over in less than a week.

Instead, with rifle in one hand and the Bible in the other, the Boers held out for three years. "We went to South Africa thinking the war would be over in a week," said Kipling. "Instead, the Boers taught us no end of a lesson." That same "lesson" could be taught to the Committee of 300 today if we could but muster 10,000 leaders, good men and true to lead this nation in battle against the gargantuan monster threatening to devour everything our Constitution stands for.

After the war ended in 1902, the British Crown had to consolidate its grip on the unimaginable fortune of gold and diamonds that lay beneath the barren veldt of the Boer Republics of Transvaal and Orange Free State. This was done through the Round Table of the legend of King Arthur and his Knights. The Round Table is strictly a British M16 intelligence operation established by the Committee of 300 which, together with the Rhodes Scholarship program, is a dagger in the heartland of America.

The Round Table was established in South Africa by Cecil Rhodes and funded by the English Rothschild family. Its purpose was to train business leaders loyal to the British Crown who would secure the vast gold and diamond treasures for the British Crown. South Africans had their birthright stolen from them in a coup so massive and all pervading that it was apparent only a central unified command could have pulled it off. That unified command was the Committee of 300.

That this was accomplished is not in dispute. By the early 1930's, the British Crown had a stranglehold on the biggest supplies of gold and diamonds ever found in the world. NOW THE COMMITTEE OF 300 HAD AT ITS DISPOSAL BOTH THE VAST FORTUNE COMING FROM THE DRUG TRADE AND THE EQUALLY VAST FORTUNE OF THE MINERAL AND METAL WEALTH OF SOUTH AFRICA. Financial control of the world was complete.

The Round Table played a pivotal role in the coup. The express purpose of the Round Table, after swallowing up South Africa, was to blunt the benefits to the United States of the American War of Independence, and once more bring the United States under British control. Organizing ability was essential for such an enterprise and it was provided by Lord Alfred Milner, protege of the London Rothschild family. Using Scottish Rite Freemason principles in selecting members of Round Table, chose chosen underwent a period of intense training at Cambridge and Oxford Universities under the watchful eyes of John Ruskin, a self-confessed "old school communist," and T. H. Green, an operative of M16.

It was Green, the son of a Christian evangelical cleric, who spawned Rhodes, Milner, John Wheeler Bennet, A. D. Lindsay, George Bernard Shaw and Hjalmar Schacht, Hitler's finance minister. I pause here to remind readers that the Round Table is only ONE SECTOR of this vast and all-encompassing Committee of 300. Yet the Round Table itself consists of a maze of companies, institutions, banks and educational establishments, which in itself would take qualified insurance actuaries a year to sort out.

Round Tablers fanned out throughout the world to take control of fiscal and monetary policies and political leadership in all countries where they operated. In South Africa, General Smuts, who had fought against the British in the Boer War, was "turned" and became a leading British intelligence, military and political agent who espoused the cause of the British Crown. In the United States, in later years, the task of boring away at the United States from the inside fell to William Yandell Elliot, the man who spawned Henry Kissinger and who was responsible for his meteoric rise to power as chief U.S. advisor to the Committee of 300.

William Yandell Elliot was "an American at Oxford," who had already served the Committee of 300 well, which is a prerequisite for higher office in the service of the committee. After graduating from Vanderbilt University in 1917, Elliot was drafted by the Rothschild-Warburg banking network. He worked at the Federal Reserve Bank in San Francisco and rose to be a director. From there he acted as a Warburg-Rothschild intelligence officer, reporting on the important areas of the United States he was

overseeing. Elliot's "Freemason" talent spotters recommended him for a Rhodes Scholarship and, in 1923, he went to Balliol College at Oxford University whose "dreaming spires" hid a network of intrigue and future traitors to the West.

Balliol College was, and still is, the center of recruiting for the Round Table. After a thorough brainwashing conducted by the Tavistock Institute of Human Relations representative, A.D. Lindsay, who had succeeded Master of Balliol T. H. Green, Elliot was received into the Round Table and sent to The Royal Institute of International Affairs to be given his assignment, which was that he return to the United States to become a leader in the academic community.

The Round Table's driving philosophy was to have Round Tablers in positions to formulate and carry out social policies through social institutions whereby what Ruskin called "the masses" could be manipulated. Members infiltrated the highest levels of banking after under going a course at the Tavistock Institute. The course was drawn up by Lord Leconsfield, an intimate of the British royal family, and later run by Robert Brand who went on to manage Lazard Freres. The Royal Institute of International Affairs was and remains totally interfaced with the British monarchy.

Some of the spinoffs of the Round Table are the Bilderbergers, set up and run by Duncan Sandys, a prominent politician and son-in-law of the late Winston Churchill, the Ditchley Foundation, a secret banker's club which I exposed in my 1983 work, "International Banker's Conspiracy: The Ditchley Foundation," the Trilateral Commission, the Atlantic Council of the United States and the Aspen Institute for Humanistic Studies, whose well-hidden, behind the scenes founder was Lord Bullock of the RIIA for whom Robert Anderson fronted.

The way in which Henry Kissinger, the RllA's chief asset in the United States, came to power is a story of the triumph of the institution of the British monarchy over the Republic of the United States of America. It is a tale of horror, too long to be included here. Nevertheless, it would be remiss of me if I did not mention

just a few of the highlights of Kissinger's rise to fame, fortune and power.

After a stint in the United States Army, beginning with the job of driving General Fritz Kraemer around war-torn Germany, thanks to the Oppenheimer family Kissinger was picked to attend Wilton Park for further training. At the time he held the rank of private first class. In 1952 Kissinger was sent to the Tavistock Institute where R. V. Dicks took him in hand and turned him inside out. Thereafter there was no holding Kissinger back. He was later drafted to serve under George Franklin and Hamilton Fish of the Council on Foreign Relations' New York office.

It is believed that the official nuclear policy adopted by the United States was delivered to Kissinger during his stay at Tavistock and further shaped by his participation in "Nuclear Weapons and Foreign Policy," a Round Table seminar which brought forth the doctrine known as "flexible response," a total irrationality, which became known by the acronym MAD.

Thanks to William Yandell Elliot and under the tutelage of John Wheeler Bennett, top intelligence director of the Round Table and chief of MI6 field operations in the United States, Kissinger became Elliot's "favorite son" as he explained in his book, "The Pragmatic Revolt in Politics." Kissinger was coopted into the Round Table to push monetarist policies he studied at Harvard International Seminars.

Kissinger avidly absorbed Elliot's teachings and was no longer recognizable as the man General Kraemer once described as "my little Jew-boy driver." Kissinger was inculcated with the spirit of the Master of Balliol, becoming an ardent disciple of decadent British aristocracy. Adopting the philosophies of Toynbee, chief intelligence director for MI6 at the Royal Institute of International Affairs, Kissinger used its papers to write his undergraduate "dissertation."

By the mid 1960's Kissinger had proved his worth to the Round Table and the RIIA, and thus to the British monarchy. As a reward and a test of what he had learned, Kissinger was placed in charge of a small group consisting of James Schlessinger,

Alexander Haig and Daniel Ellsberg. The Round Table was using to conduct a series of experiments. Cooperating with this group was the Institute of Policy Studies chief theoretician Noam Chomsky.

Haig, like Kissinger, worked for General Kraemer, albeit not as a driver, and the general found a number of varied openings in the Department of Defense for his protege. Once Kissinger was installed as National Security Advisor, Kraemer got Haig the job as his deputy. Ellsberg, Haig, and Kissinger then set in motion the RIIA's Watergate plan to oust President Nixon for disobeying direct instructions. Haig played the lead role in brainwashing and confusing President Nixon, and in effect it was Kissinger who ran the White House during this softening up of the President. As I mentioned in 1984, Haig was the White House go-between known as "Deep Throat," passing information to the Washington Post team of Woodward and Bernstein.

The Watergating of Nixon was the biggest coup yet pulled off by the Round Table as an agency and an arm of the RIIA. All the tangled threads led back to the Round Table; from there to the RIIA, and right back to the Queen of England. The humiliation of Nixon was an object lesson and a warning to future Presidents of the United States not to imagine they could go against the Committee of 300 and win. Kennedy was brutally murdered in full view of the American people for the same reason; Nixon was not considered worthy enough to suffer the same fate as John F. Kennedy.

But whatever the method used, the Committee of 300 made sure that all would-be aspirants for the White House got the message: "Nobody is beyond our reach." That this message remains just as forceful as it was when Kennedy was murdered and Nixon hounded out of office, is evidenced by the character of President George Bush, whose eagerness to please his masters should be cause for grave concern among those who worry about the future of the United States.

The purpose of the exercise was made clear in the Pentagon Papers episode and the drafting of Schlessinger into the Nixon Administration to act as a spoiler in the defense establishment and a counterforce to the development of atomic

energy, which role Schlessinger carried out from the shelter of his position in the Atomic Energy Commission, one of the key factors in deindustrializing the United States in the planned Club of Rome Post Industrial-Zero-growth strategies. From this beginning we can trace the roots of the 1991 recession/depression which has thus far cost the jobs of 30 million Americans.

It is virtually impossible to penetrate the Committee of 300 and the oligarchical families that go to make it up. The camouflage they pull over themselves as protective covering is very hard to rip off. This fact should be noted by every freedom-loving American: The Committee of 300 dictates what passes for United States foreign and domestic policies and has done so for over 200 years. Nowhere was this more strikingly portrayed than when a cocky President Truman had the wind knocked out of him by Churchill ramrodding the so-called "Truman Doctrine" down the throat of the little man from Independence, Missouri.

Some of their former members, whose descendants filled vacancies caused by death, and present members include Sir Mark Turner, Gerald Villiers, Samuel Montague, the Inchcapes, Keswicks, Peases, Schroeders, Airlies, Churchills, Frasers, Lazars and Jardine Mathesons. The full list of members is presented elsewhere in this book; these people on the Committee ORDERED President Wilson to go to war against Germany in the First World War; this Committee ordered Roosevelt to engineer the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor with the object of getting the United States into the Second World War.

These people, this Committee, ordered this nation to war in Korea, Vietnam and the Persian Gulf. The plain truth is that the United States has fought in 5 wars this century for and on behalf of the infamous Committee of 300. It seems that, apart from just a few, no one has stopped to ask, "WHY ARE WE FIGHTING THESE WARS?" The big drum of "patriotism," martial music and waving flags and yellow ribbons, it seems, caused a great nation to become bereft of its senses.

On the 50th anniversary of Pearl Harbor, a new "hate Japan" campaign is being waged, not by the Institute of Pacific Relations (IPR), but in the most direct and brazen manner by the

Bush Administration and the Congress. The object is the same as it was when Roosevelt inspired the attack on Pearl Harbor, paint the Japanese as aggressors and wage economic war, then ready our forces for the next phase—armed aggression against Japan.

This is already in the works; it is only a matter of time before more of our sons and daughters are sent off to be slaughtered in the service of the feudal lords of the Committee of 300. We ought to shout from the housetops, "It is not for freedom nor for love of country that we are going to die, but for a system of tyranny that will shortly envelope the entire world."

So tight is the grip of this organization on Britain that 95% of British citizens have, since the 1700's, been forced to accept as their share, less than 20% of the national wealth of the country. This is what the oligarchical feudal lords of England like to call "democracy." These nice, proper English gentlemen are, in reality, utterly ruthless—what they did in India, Sudan, Egypt, Iraq, Iran and Turkey will be repeated in every country under the New World Order-One World Government. They will use every nation and its wealth to protect their privileged way of life. It is this class of British aristocracy whose fortunes are inextricably woven and intertwined with the drug trade, the gold, diamond and arms trades, banking, commerce and industry, oil, the news media and entertainment industry.

Apart from the rank and file of the Labour Party (but not its leaders), the majority of British political leaders are descendants of titled families, the titles being hereditary and handed down from father to eldest son. This system ensures that no "outsideers" aspire to political power in England. Nevertheless, some aliens have been able to squeeze their way in.

Take the case of Lord Halifax, former British Ambassador to Washington and the man who delivered Committee of 300 orders to our government during the Second World War. Halifax's son, Charles Wood, married a Miss Primrose, a blood relative of Lord Rothschild. Behind such names as Lord Swaythling is hidden the name of Montague, director of the Bank of England and adviser and confidant of the majority stockholder of the Shell Oil Company, Queen Elizabeth II. All are members of the Committee of 300.

Some of the old barriers have been broken down. Title is today not the only criteria for admission to the Club of Rome.

It is appropriate to provide an overview of what the Committee of 300 hopes to achieve, what its aims and objectives are before we proceed to its vast, far flung interlocking interfacing of banks, insurance companies, corporations, etc. The following information has taken years of investigative research to put together from hundreds of documents and sources of mine who gave me access to some of the papers in which the details are hidden.

The Committee of 300 consists of certain individuals specialists in their own fields, including cultus diabolicus, mind altering drugs, and specialists in murder by poison, intelligence; banking, and every facet of commercial activity. It will be necessary to mention former members since deceased, because of their former roles and because their places were given to family members of new members considered worthy of the honor.

Included in the membership are the old families of the European Black Nobility, the American Eastern Liberal Establishment (in Freemason hierarchy and the Order of Skull and Bone), the Illuminati, or as it is known by the Committee "MORIAH CONQUERING WIND," the Mumma Group, The National and World Council of Churches, the Circle of Initiates, the Nine Unknown Men, Lucis Trust, Jesuit Liberation Theologists, The Order of the Elders of Zion, the Nasi Princes, International Monetary Fund (IMF), the Bank of International Settlements (BIS), the United Nations (U.N.), the Central, British Quator Coronati, Italian P2 Masonry—especially those in the Vatican hierarchy—the Central Intelligence Agency, Tavistock Institute selected personnel, various members of leading foundations and insurance companies named in the lists that follow, the Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank, the Milner Group-Round Table, Cini Foundation, German Marshall Fund, Ditchley Foundation, NATO, Club of Rome, Environmentalists, The Order of St. John of Jerusalem, One World Government Church, Socialist International, Black Order, Thule Society, Anenherbe-Rosicrucianists, The Great Superior Ones and literally HUNDREDS of other organizations.

What then are we looking at? A loosely-knit gathering of people with weird ideas? Certainly not. In the Committee of 300, which has a 150-year history, we have some of the most brilliant intellects assembled to form a completely totalitarian, absolutely controlled "new" society only it isn't new, having drawn most of its ideas from the Clubs of Cultus Diabolicus. It strives toward a One World Government rather well described by one of its late members, H. G. Wells, in his work commissioned by the Committee which Wells boldly called: "THE OPEN CONSPIRACY-PLANS FOR A WORLD REVOLUTION."

It was a bold statement of intent, but not really so bold since nobody believed Wells except the Great Superior Ones, the Anenherbes and those who were what we would call "insiders" today. Here is an extract of what Wells proposed:

"The Open Conspiracy will appear first, I believe as a conscious organization of intelligent, and in some cases wealthy men, as a movement having distinct social and political aims, confessedly ignoring most of the existing apparatus of political control, or using it only as an incidental implement in the stages, a mere movement of a number of people in a certain direction, who will presently discover, with a sort of a surprise, the common object toward which they are all moving. In all sorts of ways, they will be influencing and controlling the ostensible government."

Like George Orwell's 1984, Wells'account is a mass-appeal for a One World Government. Summarized, the intent and purpose of the Committee of 300 is to bring to pass the following conditions:

A One World Government and one-unit monetary system under permanent non-elected hereditary oligarchists who self select from among their numbers in the form of a feudal system as it was in the Middle Ages. In this One World entity, population will be limited by restrictions on the number of children per family, diseases, wars, famines, until 1 billion people who are useful to the ruling class, in areas which will be strictly and clearly defined, remain as the total world population.

There will be no middle class, only rulers and servants. All laws will be uniform under a legal system of world courts practicing the same unified code of laws, backed up by a One World Government police force and a One World unified military to enforce laws in all former countries where no national boundaries shall exist. The system will be on the basis of a welfare state; those who are obedient and subservient to the One World Government will be rewarded with the means to live; those who are rebellious will simply be starved to death or be declared outlaws, thus a target for anyone who wishes to kill them. Privately owned firearms or weapons of any kind will be prohibited.

Only one religion will be allowed and that will be in the form of a One World Government Church, which has been in existence since 1920 as we shall see. Satanism, Luciferianism and Witchcraft shall he recognized as legitimate One World Government curricula with no private or church schools. All Christian churches have already been subverted and Christianity will be a thing of the past in the One World Government.

To induce a state where there is no individual freedom or any concept of liberty surviving, there shall be no such thing as republicanism, sovereignty or rights residing with the people. National pride and racial identity shall be stamped out and in the transition phase it shall be subject to the severest penalties to even mention one's racial origin.

Each person shall be fully indoctrinated that he or she is a creature of the One World Government with an identification number clearly marked on their person so as to be readily accessible, which identifying number shall be in the master file of the NATO computer in Brussels, Belgium, subject to instant retrieval by any agency of the One World Government at any time. The master Files of the CIA, FBI, state and local police agencies, IRS, FEMA, Social Security shall be vastly expanded and form the basis of personal records of all individuals in the United States.

Marriage shall be outlawed and there shall be no family life as we know it. Children will be removed from their parents at an early-age and brought up by wards as state property. Such an experiment was carried out in East Germany under Erich

Honnecker when children were take away from parents considered by the state to be disloyal citizens. Women will he degraded through the continued process of "women's liberation" movements. Free sex shall be mandatory.

Failure to comply at least once by the age of 20 shall be punishable by severe reprisals against her person. Self-abortion shall be taught and practiced after two children are born to a woman; such records shall be contained in the personal file of each woman in the One World Government's regional computers. If a woman falls pregnant after she has previously given birth to two children, she shall be forcibly removed to an abortion clinic for such an abortion and sterilization to be carried out

Pornography shall be promoted and be compulsory showing in every theater of cinema, including homosexual and lesbian pornography. The use of "recreational" drugs shall be compulsory, with each person allotted drug quotas which can be purchased at One World Government stores throughout the world. Mind control drugs will be expanded and usage become compulsory. Such mind control drugs shall be given in food and/or water supplies without the knowledge and/or consent of the people. Drug bars shall be set up, run by One World Government employees, where the slave-class shall be able to spend their free time. In this manner the non-elite masses will be reduced to the level and behavior of controlled animals with no will of their own and easily regimented and controlled.

The economic system shall be based upon the ruling oligarethical class allowing just enough foods and services to be produced to keep the mass slave labor camps going. All wealth shall be aggregated in the hands of the elite members of the Committee of 300. Each individual shall be indoctrinated to understand that he or she is totally dependent upon the state for survival. The world shall be ruled by Committee of 300 Executive Decrees which become instant law. Boris Yeltsin is using Committee of 300 decrees to impose the Committee's will on Russia as a trial run. Courts of punishment and not courts of justice shall exist.

Industry is to be totally destroyed along with nuclear powered energy systems. Only the Committee of 300 members and their elitists shall have the right to any of the earth's resources. Agriculture shall be solely in the hands of the Committee of 300 with food production strictly controlled. As these measures begin to take effect, large populations in the cities shall be forcibly removed to remote areas and those who refuse to go shall be exterminated in the manner of the One World Government experiment carried out by Pol Pot in Cambodia.

Euthanasia for the terminally ill and the aged shall be compulsory. No cities shall be larger than a predetermined number as described in the work of Kalgeri. Essential workers will be moved to other cities if the one they are in becomes overpopulated. Other non-essential workers will be chosen at random and sent to underpopulated cities to fill "quotas."

At least 4 billion "useless eaters" shall be eliminated by the year 2050 by means of limited wars, organized epidemics of fatal rapid-acting diseases and starvation. Energy, food and water shall be kept at subsistence levels for the non-elite, starting with the White populations of Western Europe and North America and then spreading to other races. The population of Canada, Western Europe and the United States will be decimated more rapidly than on other continents, until the world's population reaches a manageable level of 1 billion, of which 500 million will consist of Chinese and Japanese races, selected because they are people who have been regimented for centuries and who are accustomed to obeying authority without question.

From time to time there shall be artificially contrived food and water shortages and medical care to remind the masses that their very existence depends on the goodwill of the Committee of 300.

After the destruction of housing, auto, steel and heavy goods industries, there shall he limited housing, and industries of any kind allowed to remain shall be under the direction of NATO's Club of Rome as shall all scientific and space exploration development, limited to the elite under the control of the

Committee of 300. Space weapons of all former nations shall be destroyed along with nuclear weapons.

All essential and non-essential pharmaceutical products, doctors, dentists and health care workers will be registered in the central computer data bank and no medicine or medical care will he prescribed without express permission of regional controllers responsible for each city, town and village.

The United States will be flooded by peoples of alien cultures who will eventually overwhelm White America, people with no concept of what the United States Constitution stands for and who will, in consequence, do nothing to defend it, and in whose minds the concept of liberty and justice is so weak as to matter little. FOOD and shelter shall be the main concern.

No central bank save the Bank of International Settlement and the World Bank shall be allowed to operate. Private banks will be outlawed. Remuneration for work performed shall be under a uniform predetermined scale throughout the One World Government. There shall be no wage disputes allowed, nor any diversion from the standard uniform scales of pay laid down by the One World Government. Those who break the law will be instantly executed.

There shall be no cash or coinage in the hands of the non-elite. All transactions shall be carried out by means of a debit card which shall bear the identification number of the holder. Any person who in any way infringes the rules and regulations of the Committee of 300 shall have the use of his or her card suspended for varying times according to the nature and severity of the infringement.

Such persons will find, when they go to make purchases, that their card is blacklisted and they will not be able to obtain services of any kind. Attempts to trade "old" coins, that is to say silver coins of previous and now defunct nations, shall be treated as a capital crime subject to the death penalty. All such coinage shall be required to be surrendered within a given time along with guns, rifles, explosives and automobiles. Only the elite and One

World Government high-ranking functionaries will be allowed private transport, weapons, coinage and automobiles.

If the offense is a serious one, the card will be seized at the checking point where it is presented. Thereafter that person shall not be able to obtain food, water, shelter and employment medical services, and shall be officially listed as an outlaw. Large bands of outlaws will thus be created and they will live in regions that best afford subsistence, subject to being hunted down and shot on sight. Persons assisting outlaws in any way whatsoever, shall likewise be shot. Outlaws who fail to surrender to the police or military after a declared period of time, shall have a former family member selected at random to serve prison terms in their stead.

Rival factions and groups such as Arabs and Jews and African tribes shall have differences magnified and allowed the wage wars of extermination against each other under the eyes of NATO and U.N. observers. The same tactics will be used in Central and South America. These wars of attrition shall take place BEFORE the take-over of the One World Government and shall be engineered on every continent where large groups of people with ethnic and religious differences live, such as the Sikhs, Moslem Pakistanis and the Hindu Indians. Ethnic and religious differences shall be magnified and exacerbated and violent conflict as a means of "settling" their differences shall be encouraged and fostered.

All information services and print media shall be under the control of the One World Government. Regular brainwashing control measures shall be passed off as "entertainment" in the manner in which it was practiced and became a fine art in the United States. Youths removed from "disloyal parents," shall receive special education designed to brutalize them. Youth of both sexes shall receive training to qualify as prison guards for the One World labor camp system.

It is obvious from the foregoing that much work remains to be done before the dawning of the New World Order can occur. The Committee of 300 has long ago perfected plans to destabilize civilization as we know it, some of which plans were made known by Zbignew Brzezinski in his classic work "THE TECHNOTRONIC

ERA" and the works of Aurellio Peccei who founded the Club of Rome, especially in his book, "THE CHASM AHEAD."

In "THE CHASM AHEAD," Peccei spelled out Committee of 300 plans to tame man, whom he called "THE ENEMY." Peccei quoted what Felix Dzerzinski once said to Sydney Reilly at the height of the Red Terror when millions of Russians were being murdered: "Why should I concern myself with how many die? Even the Christian Bible says what is man that God should be mindful of him? For me men are nothing but a brain at one end and a shit factory at the other. "

It was from this brutish view of man that Emmanuel The Christ came to rescue the world. Sydney Reilly was the MI6 operative sent to watch over Dzerzinski's activities. Reilly was allegedly shot by his friend Felix while attempting to flee Russia. The elaborate plot was devised when certain members of the British Parliament raised a hue and cry and began to loudly demand an accounting of Reilly's activities in Russia, which threatened to expose the role of the Committee of 300 in gaining control of the Baku oilfields and its major role in assisting Lenin and Trotsky during the Bolshevik Revolution. Rather than have the truth dragged out of Reilly, MI6 thought it expedient to stage his death. Reilly lived out his days in utter luxury in a Russia villa usually reserved for the Bolshevik elite.

Arguing that chaos would ensue unless the "Atlantic Alliance," a euphemism for the Committee of 300 ruled post industrial America, Peccei proposed a Malthusian triaging on a global scale. He envisioned a collision between the scientifictechnological-military apparatus of the Soviet Union and the Western world. Thus the Warsaw Pact countries were to be offered a convergence with the West in a One World Government to run global affairs on the foundations of crisis management and global planning.

Events unfolding in what was formerly the USSR and the emergence of several independent states in a loose federation in Russia, is exactly what was envisaged by Peccei and the Club of Rome and this is clearly spelled out in both the books I have mentioned. A USSR thus divided will be easier to cope with than a

strong, united Soviet nation. Plans that were laid down by the Committee of 300 for a One World Government, which included the prospect of a divided Russia, are now approaching a point of rapid escalation. Events in Russia at the close of 1991 are all the more dramatic when viewed against the 1960 longrange planning by the Committee of 300.

In Western Europe the people are working toward a federation of states within a one government framework with a single currency. From there the EEC system will be transferred bit by bit to the United States and Canada. The United Nations is benign slowly but surely transformed into a rubber stamp of One World Government, with policies dictated to it by the United States as we saw in the case of the Gulf War.

Precisely the same thing is happening with the British Parliament. Discussion on Britain's participation in the Gulf War was kept to a ridiculously minimal level and belatedly took place only during a motion to adjourn the House. This has never happened before in the ancient history of parliament, where so important a decision had to be made and so little time was allowed for discussion. One of the most noteworthy events in parliamentary history has gone virtually unnoticed.

We are close to the point where the United States will send its military Forces to settle any and all disputes brought before the United Nations. Departing Secretary General Perez de Cuellar, heavily laden with bribe money, was the most compliant U.N. leader in history in granting demands of the United States without discussion. His successor will be even more inclined to go along with whatever the U.S. government places before him. This is an important step along the road to a One World Government.

The International Court of Justice at The Hague will be used in increasing measure in the next two years to settle legal arguments of all types. It is of course the prototype for a One World Government legal system that will supplant all others. As for central banks, essential in the planning of the New World Order, this is already very much a fait-accompli with the Bank of International Settlements dominating the scene at the close of 1991. Private banks are fast disappearing in preparation for the

Big Ten banks that will control banking the world over under the guidance of BIS and the IMF.

Welfare states abound in Europe, and the United States is fast becoming the largest welfare state in the world. Once people come to depend on government for their subsistence, it will be very hard to wean them away from it as we saw in the results of the last mid-term election held in the United States where 98% of incumbents were returned to Washington to enjoy the good life in spite of their utterly deplorable records.

The abolition of privately owned firearms is already in force in three quarters of the world. Only in the United States can the populace still own guns of all types, but that legal right is being chipped away at an alarming rate by local and state laws which violate the Constitutional right of all citizens to bear arms. Private gun ownership will have become a thing of the past in the United States by the year 2010.

SIMILARLY, EDUCATION IS BEING ERODED AT AN ALARMING RATE. PRIVATE SCHOOLS ARE BEING FORCED TO CLOSE BY A VARIETY OF LEGAL STRATAGEMS AND LACK OF FUNDING. The standard of education in the United States has already sunk to such a deplorable level that today it can barely be classified as education at all. This is according to plan; as I described earlier, the One World Government does not want our youth to be properly educated.

Destruction of national identity proceeds apace. It is no longer a good thing to be patriotic unless it is in the cause of some One World Government project such as the war of genocide being waged against the nation of Iraq, or the impending destruction of Libya. Racial pride is now frowned upon and deemed to be an illegal act in many parts of the world, INCLUDING THE UNITED STATES, BRITAIN, WESTERN EUROPE AND CANADA, ALL COUNTRIES HAVING THE LARGEST CONCENTRATIONS OF THE WHITE RACE.

Led by the secret societies in America, destruction of republican forms of government has proceeded apace since the close of WW II. A list of such governments destroyed by the U.S.

is long, and it is difficult for the non-informed to accept that government of a country allegedly wedded to republicanism under a unique constitution would engage in such conduct, but the facts speak for themselves.

This is a goal which was set over a century ago by the Committee of 300. The United States has led the attacks on such governments and continues to do so even as the United States republican base is being steadily undermined. Starting with James Earl Carter's legal counsel, Lloyd Cutler, a committee of constitutional lawyers has been working to change the U.S. Congress into a non-representative parliamentary system. Work has been in progress since 1979 on the blueprint for such a change, and because of his devotion to the cause, Cutler was made a member of the Committee of 300. The final draft for a parliamentary type of government is to be presented to the Committee of 300 at the end of 1993.

In the new parliamentary system, members will not be responsible to their constituents, but to parliamentary whips and will vote the way they are told to vote. Thus, by judicial and bureaucratic subversion will the Constitution vanish as will individual liberty. Preplanned degrading of man through licentious sexual practices will be stepped up. New sexually degenerate cults are even now being set up by the British Crown-working through the SIS and MI6 services. As we already know, all cults operating in the world today are the product of British intelligence acting for the oligarchical rulers.

We may think this phase of creating a whole new cult which specializes in sexual degenerate behavior is still far off, but my information is that it is due to be stepped up in 1992. By 1994 it will be quite commonplace to have "live shows" in the most prestigious clubs and places of entertainment. This type of "entertainment" is already in the process of having its image cleaned and brightened.

Soon the big names in Hollywood and the entertainment world will be recommending this or that club as a "must" for live sex shows. Lesbianism and homosexuality will not be featured. This new socially acceptable "entertainment" will consist of

heterosexual displays and will be written up in reviews as one finds in today's newspapers about shows on Broadway, or the latest hit movie.

An unprecedented assault on moral values will go into high gear in 1992. Pornography will no longer be called "pornography," but adult sex entertainment. Sloganeering will take the form of "why hide it when everybody does it. Let's take away the image that public displays of sex are ugly and dirty." No more will those who care for this type of unbridled sexual lust have to go to seedy porno parlours. Instead, the upper-class supper clubs and places favored by the rich and famous will make public sexual displays a highly "artistic" form of entertainment. Worse yet, some church "leaders" will even recommend it.

The voluminous all-pervading and enormous social psychiatry apparatus put in place by the Tavistock Institute and its huge web of related capabilities has been under the control of one single entity, and that entity is still in control as we enter 1992. That single entity, the conspirators'hierarchy, is called THE COMMITTEE OF 300. It is a power structure and a power center that operates far beyond the reach of any single world leader or any government, including the United States government and its Presidents—as the late John F. Kennedy found out. The Kennedy murder was an operation of the Committee of 300 and we shall return to that.

The Committee of 300 is the ultimate secret society made up of an untouchable ruling class, which includes the Queen of England, the Queen of the Netherlands, the Queen of Denmark and the royal families of Europe. These aristocrats decided at the death of Queen Victoria, the matriarch of the Venetian Black Guelphs that, in order to gain world-wide control, it would be necessary for its aristocratic members to "go into business" with the non-aristocratic but extremely powerful leaders of corporate business on a global scale, and so the doors to ultimate power were opened to what the Queen of England likes to refer to as "the commoners."

From my days in the intelligence business I know that heads of foreign governments refer to this all-powerful body as

"The Magicians." Stalin coined his own phrase to describe them: "The Dark Forces," and President Eisenhower, who was never able to get beyond the "hofjuden" (court Jew) grade, referred to it in a colossal understatement as "the military-industrial complex." Stalin kept the USSR heavily armed with conventional and nuclear forces because he did not trust what he called "the family." His ingrained mistrust and fear of the Committee of 300 proved to be well-founded.

Popular entertainment, especially the medium of movie making, was used to bring discredit upon those who tried to warn of this most dangerous threat to individual liberty and freedom of mankind. Freedom is a God-given law which man has constantly sought to subvert and undermine; yet the yearning for freedom by each individual is so great that up to now, no system has been able to tear that feeling from the heart of mad. The experiments that have gone on in the USSR, Britain and the USA, to blunt and dull mans yearnings for freedom, have thus far proved to be unsuccessful.

But with the coming of the New World Order-One World Government, far-reaching experiments will be stepped up to drive mans God-given yearning for freedom out of his mind, body and soul. What we are already experiencing is but nothing, a mere bagatelle, when compared with what is to come. Attacking the soul is the thrust of a host of experiments being readied, and I regret to say that institutions in the United States will play a leading role in the terrible experiments which have already been carried out on local small-scale levels at such places as Bethesda Naval Hospital and Vacaville prison in California.

The movies we have seen thus far include the James Bond series, the "Assassination Bureau," the "Matarese Circle" and so on. They were make-believe movies, designed to hide the truth that such organizations do exist and on a far greater scale than even Hollywood's fertile idea-men could dream up.

Yet the Assassination Bureau is absolutely real. It exists in Europe and the United States solely to do the bidding of the Committee of 300 to carry out high-level assassinations where all other remedies have failed. It was PERMINDEX which ran the

Kennedy assassination under the direction of Sir William Stephenson, for years the Queen of England's number one "pest control" operative.

Clay Shaw, a contract agent of the CIA, ran PERMINDEX out of the Trade Mart Center in New Orleans. Former New Orleans District Attorney Jim Garrison came very close to cracking the Kennedy assassination plot up to the level of Clay Shaw until Garrison was "dealt with" and Shaw was found not quilty of involvement in the Kennedy assassination plot. The fact that Shaw was eliminated in the manner of Jack Ruby, another CIA contract agent—both died of induced quick-acting cancer—speaks volumes that Garrison was on the right track.

A second assassination bureau is located in Switzerland and was until recently run by a shadowy figure of whom no photographs existed after 1941. The operations were and probably still are financed by the Oltramaire family—Swiss Black Nobility, owners of the Lombard Odier Bank of Geneva, a Committee of 300 operation. The primary contact man was Jacques Soustelle—this according to U.S. Army-G2 intelligence files.

This group was also closely allied with Allen Dulles and Jean de Menil, an important member of the Committee of 300 and a very prominent name in the oil industry in Texas. ArmyG2 records show that the group was heavily involved in the arms trade in the Middle East, but more than that, the assassination bureau made no less than 30 attempts to assassinate General de Gaulle, in which Jacques Soustelle was directly involved. The same Soustelle was the contact man for the Sendero Luminosa-Shining Pathway guerilla group protecting the Committee's Peruvian cocaine producers.

When all of the best that the assassination bureau could do had failed, thanks to the excellent work done by DGSE (French intelligence-formerly SDECE) the job was assigned to MI6-Military Intelligence Department Six, and also known as Secret Intelligence Service (SIS), under the code name "Jackal." SDECE employed clever young graduates and was not infiltrated by MI6 or the KGB to any measurable extent. Its record in tracking down foreign agents made it the envy of the secret services of every nation, and

it was this group that followed "Jackal" to his final destination and then killed him before he could fire on General de Gaulle's motorcade.

It was the SDECE who uncovered a Soviet mole in the cabinet of De Gaulle, who also happened to be a liaison man with the CIA in Langley. In order to discredit the SDECE, Allen Dulles, who hated De Gaulle, (the feeling was mutual) had one of its agents, Roger De Louette, caught with $12 million worth of heroin in his possession. After a great deal of expert "interrogation," De Louette "confessed" but was unable to say why he was smuggling drugs into the United States. The whole thing stank to high heaven of a set-up.

Based upon an examination of SDECE methods in protecting De Gaulle, especially in motorcades, the FBI, Secret Service and the CIA knew exactly how to strip President Kennedy of his security and make it easy for the three PERMINDEX shooters to murder him in Dealey Plaza in November 1963.

Another example of FACT disguised as fiction is the Leon Uris novel, "TOPAZ." In "TOPAZ" we find a factual account of the activities of Thyraud de Vosjoli, the very KGB agent uncovered by SDECE and denounced as the KGB's liaison man with the CIA. There are many fictionalized accounts of the MOSSAD's activities, nearly all of which are based on fact.

The MOSSAD is also known as "The Institute." Many would-be writers make nonsensical statements about it, especially one writer who is much in favor with the Christian right wing, which is accepted as truth. One can pardon the offender because he has no intelligence training, but that does not stop him from dropping "Mossad names" all over the place.

Such disinformation exercises are routinely run against American right wing patriotic groups. Originally the MOSSAD consisted of 3 groups, the Bureau of Military Intelligence, the Political Department of the Foreign Office and the Department of Security (Sherut Habitachon). David Ben Gurion, a member of the Committee of 300, received some considerable help from MI6 in putting it together.

But it was not a success, and in 1951 Sir William Stephenson of MI6 restructured it into a single unit as arm of the Political Department of the Israeli Foreign Office, with a special operations group for espionage and "black job" operations. British intelligence gave further assistance in training and equipping for servicing the Sarayet Maktal, also known as the General Staff Reconnaissance unit, in the format of Britain's Special Air Service (SAS). This service unit of the MOSSAD is never mentioned by name and is known simply as "The Guys."

"The Guys" are merely an extension of British intelligence's SAS unit who continually train and update them in new methods. It was "The Guys" who killed the leaders of the P.L.0. and kidnaped Adolph Eichmann. "The Guys" and indeed ALL MOSSAD agents, operate on a war-time footing. The MOSSAD has a tremendous advantage over other intelligence services in that every country in the world has a large Jewish community.

By studying social and criminal records, the MOSSAD is able to pick agents among local Jews it can have a hold over AND MAKE THEM WORK FOR IT WITHOUT PAY. The MOSSAD also has the advantage of having access to the records of all U.S. law enforcement agencies and U.S. intelligence services The Office of Naval Intelligence (OM) ELINT services the Mossad at no cost to Israel. Citizens of the United States would be shocked, angered and dismayed if ever it was discovered just how much the MOSSAD knows about the lives of millions of Americans in every walk of life, even those who are not political in any way.

The first head of the MOSSAD, Reuben Shiloach, was made a member of the Committee of 300, but it is not known whether his successor enjoyed the same privilege. Chances are that he does. The MOSSAD has a skillful disinformation service. The amount of disinformation it feeds to the American "market" is embarrassing, but even more embarrassing is how it is swallowed hook, line and sinker and all.

What we are actually witnessing in the microcosm of the MOSSAD is the extent of control exercised by the "Olympians" over the intelligence services, entertainment, publishing, opinion-

making (polls) and the television "news" media on a global scale. Ted Turner was recently given a seat on the Committee of 300 in recognition for his "news" (making) CNN broadcasts. The Committee has the power and the means to tell the people of this world ANYTHING, and it will be believed by the vast majority,

On every occasion that a researcher happens upon this astounding central control group, he is either successfully bought off, or else he undergoes some "speciality training" at the Tavistock Institute after which he becomes a contributor to more fiction, of the James Bond type, i.e., he is derailed and well rewarded. If such a person as John F. Kennedy should stumble onto the truth about who directs world events, and cannot be bought, he is assassinated.

In the case of John F. Kennedy, the assassination was carried out with great attendant publicity and with the utmost brutality to serve as a warning to world leaders not to get out of line. Pope John Paul I was quietly murdered because he was getting close to the Committee of 300 through Freemasons in the Vatican hierarchy. His successor, Pope John Paul 11, was publicly humiliated as a warning to cease and desist—which he has done. As we shall see, certain Vatican leaders are today seated on the Committee of 300.

It is easy to put serious researcher off track of the Committee of 300 because Britain's MI6 (SAS) promotes a wide variety of kookery such as the New Age, Yogaism, Zen Buddhism, Witchcraft, Delphic Priesthood of Apollo (Aristotle was a member) and hundreds of small "cults" of all kinds. A group of "retired" British intelligence agents who stayed on the track labeled the conspirators'hierarchy "Force X," and declared that it possesses a super-intelligence service that has corrupted the KGB, the Vatican Intelligence, the CIA, the ONI, DGSE, U.S. military intelligence, the State Department intelligence service and even the most secret of all U.S. intelligence agencies, the Office of National Reconnaissance.

The existence of the National Reconnaissance Office (NRO) was known to only a handful of people outside of the Committee of 300, until Truman stumbled upon it quite by accident. Churchill

had a hand in setting up the NRO and he was reportedly livid when Truman discovered its existence. Churchill more than any other servant of the Committee of 300, considered Truman His-Little-Man from independence "without an independence at all." This referred to Truman's every move being controlled by Freemasonry. Even today, NRO's annual budget is not known to the Congress of the United States, and it is responsible to only a selected few in Congress. But it is a creature of the Committee of 300 to whom its reports are routinely sent every few hours.

Thus the fictionalized spoofs one sees about the various branches and arms of control of the Committee were designed to take suspicion away from the real thing, but we should never doubt that the real thing does indeed exist. Take another example of what I mean, the book "THE DAY OF THE JACKAL," from which a highly successful movie was created.

The events related in the book are factual. Although for obvious reasons the names of some of the players and the locales were changed, but the thrust of the story, that a single MI6 operative was assigned to get rid of General Charles De Gaulle, is absolutely correct. General De Gaulle had become unmanageable, refusing to cooperate with the Committee-whose existence he knew very well since he had been invited to join it—came to a climax when De Gaulle withdrew France from NATO and immediately began building his own nuclear force—the so-called "force de frappe."

This so angered the Committee that De Gaulle's assassination was ordered. But the French secret intelligence service was able to intercept "Jackal's" plans and keep De Gaulle safe. In the light of the record of MI6, which I might add is the Committee of 300's main resource when it comes to intelligence, the work done by French intelligence borders on the miraculous.

Military Intelligence Department Six dates back to Sir Francis Walsingham, paymaster of Queen Elizabeth I for dirty tricks operations. Over hundreds of years, MI6 has established a record which no other intelligence agency can come near to duplicating. MI6 agents have gathered information from the four corners of the earth and have carried out secret operations that

would astound even the most knowledgeable if ever they were to be made public, which is why it rates as the Master service of the Committee of 300.

Officially, MI6 does not exist, its budget comes out of the Queen's purse and "private funds," and is reported to be in a range of $350-$500 million per annum, but no one knows for sure what the exact amount is. In its present form MI6 dates back to 1911, when it was under the leadership of Sir Mansfield Cumming, a captain in the Royal Navy, who was always identified by the letter "C," from which "M" of James Bond fame is taken.

No official record of MI6's failures and successes exist—it is that secret, although the Burgess-Maclean-Blake-Blunt disasters did great damage to the morale of MI6 officers. Unlike other services, future members are recruited from universities and other areas of learning by highly skilled "talent scouts" as we saw in the case of Rhodes Scholars inducted into the Round Table. One of the requirements is an ability to speak foreign languages. Candidates undergo a rigorous "blooding."

With the backing of such a formidable force, the Committee of 300 had little fear from ever being exposed, and this will go on for decades. What makes the Committee incredible is the incredible secrecy that prevails. None of the news media has ever made mention of this conspiratorial hierarchy; therefore, as is to be expected, people doubt its existence.

The Committee of 300 is for the most part under the control of the British monarch, in this case, Elizabeth II. Queen Victoria is believed to have been quite paranoid about keeping it secret and went to great lengths to cover up MASONIC writings left at the scene of "Jack the Ripper" murders which alluded to the Committee of 300's connections with "experiments" carried out by a family member who was also a highly-placed member of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry. The Committee of 300 is filled with members of British aristocracy which has corporate interests and associates in every country of the world, including the USSR.

The Committee's structure is as follows:

The Tavistock Institute at Sussex University and London sites is owned and controlled by the Royal Institute for International Affairs whose "hofjuden" in America is Henry Kissinger. The EAGLE STAR GROUP, which changed its name to the STAR GROUP after the close of the Second World War, is composed of a group of major international companies involved in overlapping and interfaced areas (1) Insurance, (2) Banking, (3) Real Estate, (4) Entertainment, (5) High technology, including cybernetics, electronic communications, etc.

Banking, while not the mainstay, is vitally important, especially in the areas where banks act as clearing houses and money launderers of drug money. The main "big name banks" are The Bank of England, the Federal Reserve Banks, Bank of International Settlements, the World Bank and the Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank. American Express Bank is a means of recycling drug dollars. Each of these banks is affiliated with and/or controls hundreds of thousands of large and small banks throughout the world.

Banks large and small in the thousands are in the Committee of 300 network, including Banca Commerciale d'Italia, Banca Privata, Banco Ambrosiano, the Netherlands Bank, Barclays Bank, Banco del Colombia, Banco de Ibero-America. Of special interest is Banca del la Svizzeria Italiana (BSI)—since it handles flight capital investments to and from the United States-primarily in dollars and U.S. bonds—located and isolated in "neutral" Lugano, the flight capital center for the Venetian Black Nobility. Lugano is not in Italy or in Switzerland, and is a kind of a twilight zone for shady flight capital operations. George Ball, who owns a large block of stock in BSI, is a prominent "insider" and the hank's U.S. representative.

BCCI, BNL, Banco Mercantil de Mexico, Banco Nacional de Panama, Bangkok Metropolitan Bank, Bank Leumi, Bank Hapoalim, Standard Bank, Bank of Geneva, Bank of Ireland, Bank of Scotland, Bank of Montreal, Bank of Nova Scotia, Banque Paris et Pays Bas, British Bank of the Middle East and the Royal Bank of Canada to name but a very small number in a huge list of "speciality" banks.

The Oppenheimers of South Africa are much bigger "heavyweights" than the Rockefellers. For instance, in 1981 Harry Oppenheimer, chairman of the giant Anglo American Corporation that controls gold and diamond mining, sales and distribution in the world, stated that he was about to launch into the North American banking market. Oppenheimer promptly invested $10 billion in a specially created vehicle for the purpose of buying into big banks in the U.S., among which was Citicorp. Oppenheimer's investment vehicle was called Minorco, which set up shop in Bermuda, a British royal family preserve. On the board of Minorco was to be found Walter Wriston of Citicorp and Robert Clare, its chief counsel.

The only other company to rival Oppenheimer in the field of precious metals and minerals was Consolidated Gold Fields of South Africa, but Oppenheimer took control of it with a 28% stake the largest single stockholder. Thus gold, diamonds, platinum, titanium, tantalite, copper, iron ore, uranium and 52 other metals and minerals, many of them of absolutely vital strategic value to United States, passed into the hands of the Committee of 300.

Thus was the vision of one of the earlier South African members of the Committee of 300, Cecil John Rhodes, fully realized, a vision which started with the spilling of the blood of thousands upon thousands of White farmers and their families in South Africa, whom history records as the "Boers." While the United States stood by with folded hands as did the rest of the world, this small nation was subjected to the most vicious war of genocide in history. The United States will be subjected to the same treatment by the Committee of 300 when our turn comes and it will not be long in coming.

Insurance companies play a key role in the business of the Committee of 300. Among these are found such top insurance companies as Assicurazioni Generali of Venice and Riunione Adriatica di Sicurta, the largest and second largest insurance companies in the world, who keep their bank accounts at Bank of International Settlements in Swiss gold francs. Both control a multiplicity of investment banks whose turnover in stocks on Wall Street double that of U.S. investors.

Prominent on the board of these two insurance giants are Committee of 300 members: the Giustiniani family, Black Nobility of Rome and Venice who trace their lineage to the Emperor Justianian; Sir Jocelyn Hambro of Hambros (Merchant) Bank; Pierpaolo Luzzatti Fequiz, whose lineage dates back six centuries to the most ancient Luzzatos, the Black Nobility of Venice, and Umberto Ortolani of the ancient Black Nobility family of the same name.

Other old Venetian Black Nobility Committee of 300 members and board members of ASG and RAS are the Doria family, the financiers of the Spanish Hapsburgs, Elie de Rothschild of the French Rothschild family, Baron August von Finck (Finck, the second richest man in Germany is now deceased), Franco Orsini Bonacassi of the ancient Orsini Black Nobility that traces its lineage to an ancient Roman senator of the same name, the Alba family whose lineage dates back to the great Duke of Alba, and Baron Pierre Lambert, a cousin of the Belgian Rothschild family.

The English companies controlled by the British royal family are Eagle Star, Prudential Assurance Company, the Prudential Insurance Company, which own and control most American insurers, including Allstate Insurance. At the head of the list is Eagle Star, probably the most powerful "front" for Military Intelligence Department Six (MI6). Eagle Star, although nowhere near as large as Assicurazioni Generale, is perhaps equally important simply because it is owned by members of the Queen of England's family and, as titular head of the Committee of 300, Eagle Star makes a tremendous impact.

Eagle Star is more than a major "front" for MI6, it is also a Front for major British banks, including Hill-Samuels, N. M. Rothschild and Sons (one of the gold price "fixers" who meet daily in London), and Barclays Bank (one of the funders of the African National Congress-ANC). It can be said with a great degree of accuracy that the most powerful British oligarchical families created Eagle Star as a vehicle for "black operations" against those who oppose Committee of 300 policies.

Unlike the CIA, British law makes it a serious crime to name MI6 officials, so the following is but a partial list of "top brass" of MI6, who are (or were) also members of the Committee of 300:

Lord Hartley Shawcross.
Sir Brian Edward Mountain.
Sir Kenneth Keith.
Sir Kenneth Strong.
Sir William Stephenson.
Sir William Wiseman.

All of the fore going are (or were) heavily involved in key Committee of 300 companies which interface with literally thousands of companies engaged in every branch of commercial activity as we shall see.

Some of these companies include Rank Organization, Xerox Corporation, ITT, IBM, RCA, CBS, NBC, BBC and CBC in communications, Raytheon, Textron, Bendix, Atlantic Richfield, British Petroleum, Royal Dutch Shell, Marine Midland Bank, Lehman Brothers, Kuhn Loeb, General Electric, Westinghouse Corporation, United Fruit Company and a great many more. MI6 ran a large number of these companies through British intelligence stationed in the RCA building in New York, which was the headquarters of its chief officer, Sir William Stephenson. Radio Corporation of America (RCA) was formed by G.E., Westinghouse, Morgan Guarantee and Trust (acting for the British crown), and United Fruit, back in 1919 as a British intelligence center. RCA's first president was J.P. Morgan's Owen Young, after whom the Young Plan was named. In 1929 David Sarnoff was appointed to run RCA. Sarnoff had acted as an assistant to Young at the 1919 Paris Peace Conference where a fallen Germany was stabbed in the back by the victorious "allies." A network of Wall Street banks and brokerage houses takes care of the stock market for the Committee, and prominent among these are Blyth, Eastman Dillon, the Morgan groups, Lazard Freres and Kuhn Loeb Rhodes. Nothing happens on Wall Street that is not controlled by the Bank of England, whose instructions are relayed through the Morgan groups and then put into action through key brokerage houses whose top executives are ultimately responsible for carrying out Committee directives. Before it overstepped the limits laid down by

Morgan Guarantee, Drexel Burnham Lambert was a favorite of the Committee of 300. In 1981 almost every major brokerage house on Wall Street had sold out to the Committee, Phibro merging with Salomon Brothers. Phibro is the business arm of the Oppenheimers of Anglo American Corporation. By this control mechanism, the Committee of 300 ensures that its members and their far-flung business corporations turned their investments on Wall Street over at a rate of double that of the "non-insider" foreign investors.

Remember, some of the richest families in the world live in Europe, so it is natural that they should have a preponderance of members on the Committee. The Von Thurn und Taxis family who once owned the German postal franchise, make David Rockefeller look like a very poor relation. The Von Thurn und Taxis dynasty dates back 300 years and generation after generation of family members have had seats on the Committee which they occupy to this day. We have already mentioned by name many of the most wealthy Venetian Black Nobility members of the Committee of 300 and other names will be added as we come across them in their various fields of endeavor. Now we shall include some American members of the Committee of 300 and try to trace their affiliations and connections to the British Crown.

How can these facts be verified? Actually, some of them cannot be verified because the information comes straight out of intelligence files, but with a lot of legwork, there are many sources which can verify at least part of the facts. The work would involve a diligent search of Dun and Bradstreet Reference Book of Corporations, Standard and Poors, British and American "Who's Who" with long hours of hard work in crossreferencing names with their corporate affiliations.

Committee of 300 corporations, banks, and insurance companies operate under the unified command covering every conceivable matter of strategy and cohesive action. The Committee is the ONLY organized power hierarchy in the world transcending all governments and individuals, however powerful and secure they may feel themselves to be. This covers finance, defense matters and political parties of all colors and types.

There is no entity the Committee cannot reach and control, and that includes organized religions of the world. This then, is the all powerful OLYMPIAN GROUP whose power base is in London and the City of London's financial centers with its grip on minerals, metals and precious gems, cocaine, opium and pharmaceutical drugs, rentier-financier bankers, cult promoters and founders of rock music. The British Crown is the control point from which all things radiate. As the saying goes, "They have a finger in every pie."

It is obvious that the communications field is tightly controlled. Going back to RCA, we find that its directorate is composed of British-American establishment figures who feature prominently in other organizations such as the CFR, NATO, the Club of Rome, the Trilateral Commission, Freemasonry, Skull and Bones, Bilderbergers, Round Table, Milner Society and the Jesuits-Aristotle Society. Among them was David Sarnoff who moved to London at the same time Sir William Stephenson moved into the RCA building in New York.

All three major television networks came as spinoffs from RCA, especially the National Broadcasting Company (NBC) which was first, closely followed by the American Broadcasting Company (ABC) in 1951. The third big television network was Columbia Broadcasting System (CBS) which, like its sister companies was, and still is, dominated by British intelligence. William Paley was trained in mass brainwashing techniques at the Tavistock Institute prior to being passed as qualified to head CBS.

Thus, if we the people of the United States but knew it, all our major television networks are subject to British oversight, and information they provide first goes to London for clearance. It is interesting to note that the Tavistock intelligence paper written by Stanford Research Institute, commonly named "The Aquarian Conspiracy" was funded by donations from all three major television networks.

All three major networks are represented on the Committee of 300 and are affiliated with the giant of the mass communication business, the Xerox Corporation of Rochester, New York, whose Robert M. Beck holds a seat on the Committee. Beck is also a

director of the Prudential Life Insurance Company, which is a subsidiary of the London Prudential Assurance Company Limited.

Others on the board of Xerox are Howard Clark of the American Express Company, one of the main conduits for moving drug money through "travelers checks," former Secretary of the Treasury, William Simon, and Sol Linowitz, who negotiated the Panama Canal Treaties for the Committee. Linowitz is important to the Committee by virtue of his long standing expertise in laundering drug money through Marine Midland and the Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank.

Another Xerox board member is Robert Sproull, who is of real interest because, as president of the University of Rochester, he allowed the Tavistock Institute, working through the CIA, to use the university's facilities for the 20-year MK-Ultra LSD experiments. Some 85 other universities in the U.S. also allowed their facilities to be misused in this manner. As giant-sized as Xerox is, it is dwarfed by the Rank Organization, a Londonbased conglomerate fully controlled by members of Queen Elizabeth's immediate family.

Notable members of the board of Rank Organization who are also members of the Committee of 300 are the following:

Lord Helsby, chairman of the drug money clearing house, Midland Bank. Helsby's other positions include a directorship in the giant Imperial Group and the Industrial and Commercial Finance Corporation.

Sir Arnold France, a director of Tube Investments who runs the London underground train service. France is also a director of the BANK OF ENGLAND which has so much control over the Federal Reserve Banks.

Sir Dennis Mountain, chairman of the mighty Eagle Star group and a director of English Property Corp, one of the rentier-financier companies of the British royal family. One such member is the Honorable Angus Ogilvie, "Prince of Companies," who is married to Her Royal Highness Princess Alexandria, sister of the Duke of Kent, leader of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry and who

takes the place of the Queen when she is outside of Britain. Ogilvie is a director of the Bank of England and chairman of the giant LONRHO conglomerate. It was LONRHO that ended the rule of Ian Smith in Rhodesia so that he could be replaced by Robert Mugabe. At stake was Rhodesia's chrome mines which produce the finest high-grade chrome ore in the world.

Cyril Hamilton, chairman of the Standard and Chartered Bank (the old Lord Milner-Cecil Rhodes bank) and a board member of the Bank of England. Hamilton is also on the board of the Xerox Corporation, the Malta International Banking Corporation (A Knights of Malta bank), a director of the Standard Bank of South Africa—the largest bank in that country, and a director of the Banque Belge d'Afrique.

Lord O'Brien of Lotherby, past president of the British Bankers Association, director of Morgan Grenfell—a powerful bank, director of Prudential Assurance, director of J. P.Morgan, director of the Bank of England, a board member of the Bank of International Settlements, a director of the giant Unilever conglomerate.

Sir Reay Geddes, chairman of the giant Dunlop and Pirelli tyre companies, director of the Midland and International Banks, director of the Bank of England. Note how many of these powerful men are directors of the Bank of England which makes control of American fiscal policies simple.

Many of these organizations and institutions, companies and banks are so interfaced and interlocked as to make it an almost impossible task to sort them out. On RCA's board sits Thornton Bradshaw, president of Atlantic Richfield and a member of NATO, World Wildlife Fund, the Club of Rome, The Aspen Institute for Humanistic Studies, the Council on Foreign Relations. Bradshaw is also chairman of NBC. The most important function of RCA remains its service to British intelligence.

It is not generally known how powerful was the role played by the Committee of 300 in stopping the investigation into the CIA which Senator McCarthy almost succeeded in pulling off. Had

McCarthy been successful, it is very likely that President John F. Kennedy would be alive today.

When McCarthy said he was going to summon William Bundy to appear before his commission of enquiry, panic swept Washington and London. Bundy, had he been called to testify, would most probably have cracked and opened the door to the "special relations" that existed between British oligarchical circles and their cousins in the United States Government.

Such a possibility could not be entertained. The Royal Insititute of International Affairs was called in to put an end to McCarthy. The RIIA chose Allen Dulles, a man who was totally enamored of decadent British society, to attack McCarthy head on. Dulles put Patrick Lyman and Richard Helms in charge of the McCarthy case. Helms was later rewarded for his service against McCarthy by being made head of the CIA.

General Mark Clark, a member of the CFR and a well-liked military man in London circles, was appointed by General Eisenhower to turn back McCarthy's full-fledged attack on the CIA. McCarthy was preempted when Clark announced that a special committee was to be appointed to examine the agency. Clark, on instructions from the RIIA, recommended a Congressional watchdog committee to "periodically examine the work of government intelligence agencies." The whole thing was a super tragedy for America and a victory for the British, who feared that McCarthy would accidentally stumble onto the Committee of 300 and its control over every aspect of United States affairs.

Lehman Brothers-Kuhn Loeb's former chairman, Peter G.Peterson, served under former MI6 chief Sir William Wiseman and as such was no stranger to British royalty. Peterson is tied in with Aspen Institute, yet another arm of British intelligence.

John R. Petty is president and chairman of the Marine Midland Bank—a bank whose drug trade connections have been well established long before it was taken over by the Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank, probably the number one bank in the opium trade, a position it has held since 1814.

But the best proof I can offer of the existence of the Committee of 300 is the Rank Organization which, in conjunction with Eagle Star, IS THE BRITISH CROWN. It is also the black operations center of MI6 (SIS). Between them, these two Committee of 300 companies control Her Majesty's Dominion of Canada, using the "hofjuden" Bronfman family to carry out their orders.

Trizec Holdings, ostensibly owned by the Bronfman family, is in reality the main asset of the Queen of England's in Canada. The entire Southeast Asian opium trade interfaces with the Bronfman empire and is one of the means whereby heroin is brought to America. In a sense, Canada is like Switzerland pristine snow-covered landscapes, big cities, a place of great beauty, but underneath lies a deep layer of filth and dirt arising from its massive heroin trade.

The Bronfman family are "cut-outs"'what is known in MI6 as "front men" controlled from London by MI6 "deskmen," intelligence jargon for controllers at headquarters. Edgar Bronfman, the family leader, was sent to "Moscow Center"-cover name for the KGB headquarters at 2 Dzerzhinsky Square, Moscow, on a large number of occasions.

At a low level, Bronfman was probably very useful as a contact man with Moscow. Bronfman was never at any stage a contract agent for MI6 and so never carried the title "Paroles," a key intelligence word for mutual identification between agents, which greatly disappointed the eager Bronfman family head. At one stage when it was thought that some of the family were acting suspiciously, "watchers"—intelligence jargon for intelligence officers keeping persons under surveillance, were put on the Bronfman family, but found only that one of the Bronfmans had been bragging to a United States "cousin" (the word MI6 uses for the C.I.A.) who was unaware of the role of Edgar Bronfman. This was quickly corrected.

Two Eagle Star directors, who were also the two top MI6 operatives, took control of the Bronfman family about six months after the war ended. Sir Kenneth Keith and Sir Kenneth Strong, whom we have already met, legitimated the Bronfman family by

setting up Trizec Holdings. There is no one in the world who can do a better job of "fronting," through companies, than MI6

Yet, like Switzerland, there is a dirty side to Canada that has been well-hidden from view by the Committee of 300 under cover of the Official Secrets Act, a carbon-copy of the British law passed in 1913. Drugs, dirty money laundering, crime and racketeering are all covered by their infamous Act.

Not known to many is that, if charged under the Official Secrets Act, which can be interpreted any way the Crown agents choose, persons could face the death penalty. As I have said so many times since 1980, Canada is not a nation like South Africa, or Holland or Belgium; it always was, and remains tied to the Queen of England's apron strings. Canada, we find, is always first in carrying out Queen Elizabeth's wishes. Canadian troops have fought in every one of Her Majesty's wars, including the Boer War (18991903).

Like its American counterpart, the Canadian Institute of International Affairs is a child of the Royal Institute for International Affairs (RIIA) and runs Canadian politics. Its members have filled the position of Secretary of State ever since it was founded in 1925. The Institute for Pacific Relations, the body that fostered the attack on Pearl Harbor, was welcomed in Canada after Owen Lattimore and his fellow members had their treasonous activities exposed in 1947 and left the United States before they could be charged.

The Canadian Institute for International Affairs is connected with the Rank Organization through Sir Kenneth Strong, who was second in charge of MI6 at the end of the Second World War. As a member of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem, Strong is the number two man in Canada for Rank and the British Crown's commercial interests. He is on the board of one of the most prolific drug banks in the world after the Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank, the Bank of Nova Scotia, through which proceeds of the Canadian heroin trade are handled.

First in line is Sir Brian Edward Mountain, the ranking member of the Knights of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem. It is

well to remember that, when the British Crown wanted the United States to enter the Second World War, it sent Lord Beaverbrook and Sir Brian Mountain to meet with President Roosevelt to deliver the Crown's orders in this regard. Roosevelt complied by ordering the United States Navy to operate out of a base in Greenland, from where attacks on German submarines were carried out nine months before Pearl Harbor. This was done without the knowledge and consent of the Congress.

Another big name in the Rank-Canadian interfacing was Sir Kenneth Keith, a director of Canada's equivalent of the Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank, the Bank of Nova Scotia, dripping in drug money laundering. He was also on the board of Britain's oldest and most venerable newspaper institution, the London Times and the Sunday Times. For over 100 years the "Times" has been the Crown's voice on foreign affairs, finance matters and political life in England.

Like so many Committee of 300 members, Sir Kenneth circulated between MI6 and the opium supply chain of command in Hong Kong and China, ostensibly on business for the Canadian Institute for International Affairs, of which he was a member Furthermore, as a director of the Hill Samuel banking house, his presence in China and Hong Kong could be explained without any problem. One of his closest associates outside of MI6 circles was Sir Philip de Zuleta, the Committee of 300's direct controller of all British prime ministers, both Conservative and Labor. Sir Kenneth Strong tied in all the spokes of the drug wheel, including terrorism, production of opium, the gold markets, dirty money laundering and banking to its central core, the British Crown.

At the top of British Crown control of Canada was Walter Gordon. A former member of the Queen's hands-on oversight committee, also known as the Privy Council, Gordon sponsored the Institute for Pacific Relations via the Canadian Institute of International Affairs. As a former minister of finance, Gordon was able to place Committee of 300 selected accountants and lawyers inside the three main chartered banks: the Bank of Nova Scotia, the Canadian Imperial Bank and the Toronto Dominion Bank.

Through these three "Crown banks" a network of Committee of 300 agents responsible to Gordon oversaw the world's second largest dirty drug money laundering operation, with a direct open door to China. Before his death, Gordon controlled James Endicott, Chester Ronning and Paul Linn, identified by MI6 as Canada's top "China specialists." All three men worked closely with Chou-En-lai, who once told Gamal Abdul Nasser that he would do to Britain and the USA what they had done to China, i.e., turn them into nations of heroin addicts. Chou-En-lai made good on his promise, starting with American GI's in Vietnam. Other close collaborators in the Canadian heroin drug ring were John D. Gilmer and John Robert Nicholson, both members of the Order of the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem.

Lord Hartley Shawcross, who is believed to report directly to Queen Elizabeth II, was on the board of the Royal Institute for International Affairs and chancellor of Sussex University where the notorious Tavistock Institute for Human Relations is located, with extensive connections in Canada.

As part of Rank's United States operation, no other single company has been more successful for Rank than the Corning Group, owners of the Metropolitan Life Insurance Company and the New York Life Insurance Company. Committee of 300 members, Amory Houghton and his brother James Houghton, have long served the British Crown through the above named insurance companies, and Corning Glass, Dow Corning and Corning International. Both sit on the board of IBM and Citicorp. James Houghton is a director of the Princeton Institute for Advanced Studies, a director of the J. Pierpont Morgan Library, a stronghold of the RIIA and the CFR, and he is also a director of CBS.

It was the Houghton brother who donated hundreds of acres known as Wye Plantation in Maryland to the British Crown's Aspen Institute. Also on the Corning Glass board sits the Bishop of the Archdiocese of the Anglican (Episcopalian) Church of Boston. All this gives the group its much-vaunted air of respectability, which insurance company executive s must carry, and as we shall see, in addition to James Houghton, Keith Funston and John Harper, both on Corning's board, run the Metropolitan Life Insurance Company.

The MASSIVE gridding and interfacing of just this one single unit of the Committee of 300 will give us a good indication of the vast power at the disposal of the conspirators' hierarchy, before which all knees are bowed, including the knee of the President of the United States, whomever that happens to be.

What is important to note is how this American company, one of HUNDREDS, is interfaced with British intelligence, with Canada, the Far East and South Africa, not to mention its gridding of corporate officials and directors reaching into every aspect of business and politics in the United States.

While Metropolitan Life Insurance Company does not begin to compare with the Committee of 300's giant Assicurazioni Generale, it is nevertheless a good indicator of how the Houghtons'power extends right across the business spectrum of the U.S. and Canada. Starting with R. H. Macy, (whose floor walkers no longer wear red carnations to honor the company's affiliation with Communism), the Royal Bank of Canada, National and Westminster Bank, Intertel (a virulent and vile private intelligence agency), Canadian Pacific, The Reader's Digest, RCA, AT&T, the Harvard Business School, W. R. Grace Shipping Company, Ralston Purina Company, U.S. Steel, Irving Trust, Consolidated Edison of New York and ABC, the Houghtons' power grid extends as far as the Hong Kong and Shanghai Bank.

Another successful Rank company in the United States is the Reliance Insurance Group. As an integral part of the Strategic Bombing Survey, Reliance established the initial structural base for brainwashing, opinion-making, polling, survey and the systems analysis used by the Tavistock Institute in the United States. The Reliance Insurance Company, based in Philadelphia, set up the corporate structure which enabled the Strategic Bombing Survey to be turned against the people of the United States who, although unaware of it, have been subjected to savage psychological warfare for the past 45 years.

A key operative in this assault on the United States was David Bialkin of the Committee of 300 law firm, Wilkie, Farr and Gallagher. Bialkin ran the Anti-Defamation League (ADL) for many

years. The ADL is a British intelligence operation founded in the U.S. by MI6 and run by Saul Steinberg and Eric Trist of Tavistock. Saul Steinberg is the U.S. representative and business partner of the Jacob de Rothschild family of London.

Reliance Corporation is home for Carl Lindner who succeeded Eli Black when he "fell" from a 44th floor window of a New York skyscraper. Reliance Company interfaces with the powerful United Fruit Company of Boston and New Orleans run by Max Fisber who, before be was sheepdipped, was a wellknown Detroit underworld figure. United Fruit Company has long been a conveyer of heroin and cocaine into the U.S. under the expertise of Misbulam Riklis of Rapid American Corporation who masterminds shipments from Canada to the U.S. Remember, all this is under the aegis of a single company, gridding and interfacing with a myriad of smaller companies and operations to give the Committee of 300 full control of a multiplicity of operations, each one carefully interlocked in the grid.

Reliance Group is a spinoff of the parent company whose function it is to brainwash the American people through a network of pollsters and opinion makers and relies on Operations Research for direct links with the Tavistock Institute. Another associate company is Leasco, which is closely interfaced with AT&T, Disclosure Incorporated, Western Union International, Imbucon Ltd and Yankelovich, Skelly and White.

Daniel Yankelovich is the emperor of the polling-opinion making corporate structure in the United States, a vast apparatus which provides "public opinions on social, economic and political matters of substance," to quote Edward Bernays. It was this vast apparatus that turned the majority of Americans, who had never even heard of Saddam Hussein and vaguely knew that Iraq was a country somewhere in the Middle East, into a people howling for his blood and the extermination of Iraq as a nation.

Yankelovich utilized to the full all knowledge gained during the Second World War. As a second-generation warrior, Yankelovich has no equal, which is why ABC polls conducted by his company are always in the forefront of "public opinion." The population of the United States was targeted in the same manner

of German worker housing by attacking the sense of reality. This technique is, of course, standard training for certain intelligence groups, which includes the CIA.

Yankelovich's task was to destroy traditional American values and replace them with New Age-Age of Aquarius values. As the Committee of 300's most senior public opinion maker, no one can doubt that Yankelovich has done a superb job.

Probably the best way to explain what methods are used and what results are expected to be achieved is to quote John Naisbitt's work as explained in his "Trend Report." Naisbitt has acted as advisor to Lyndon Johnson, Eastman Kodak, IBM, America Express, the Center for Policy Study, Chase Manhattan, General Motors, Louis Harris Polls, the White House, Institute of Life Insurance, the American Red Cross, Mobil Oil, B.P. and a host of Committee of 300 companies and institutions. His methodology, derived from MI6 Tavistock procedures, is of course not unique:

"I will briefly outline our methodology. In developing Trend Report for our clients we rely mostly on a system of monitoring local events and behavior. We are overwhelmingly impressed with the extent to which this is a bottom-up society, so we monitor what is going on locally, rather than what is going on in Washington or New York. Things start in Los Angeles, in Tampa, in Hartford, in Wichita, Portland, San Diego and Denver. It is a very much 'from the bottom-up' society.

"The tracking concept employed in determining these trends has its roots in WW II. During the war, intelligence experts sought to find a method for obtaining information on enemy nations that public opinion polls would normally have provided. Under the leadership of Paul Lazarsfeld and Harold Laswell, a method was developed for monitoring what was going on in these societies that involved doing a content analysis of the daily press.

"Although this method of monitoring public thinking continues to be the choice of the intelligence community the nation annually spends millions of dollars doing newspaper content analyses in all parts of the world.... The reason this system of monitoring changes in society works so well is that 'news holes' in

newspapers is a closed system. For economic reasons the amount of space devoted to news in a newspaper doesn't change over time.

"So when something new is introduced into that news hole, something or a combination of things has to go out or be omitted. The principle involved here is classified as a forced choice within a closed system. In this forced situation societies add new preoccupations and forget old ones. We keep track of the ones that are added and the ones that are given up.

"Evidently, societies are like human beings. I do not know what the number is, but a person can only keep so many problems and concerns in his head at any one time. If new problems or concerns are added, some existing ones must be given up. We keep track of what Americans have given up and have taken up.

"The United States is rapidly shifting from a mass industrial society to an information society and the final impact will be more profound than the 19th century shift from an agricultural to an industrial society. Starting in 1979, the number one occupation in the U.S. became clerking, replacing laborer and farmer. In this latter statement is a brief history of the United States."

It is not by chance that Naisbitt is a member of the Club of Rome and, as such, a "senior staffer" of the Committee of 300. He is also one of the senior vice presidents of Yankelovich, Skelly and White. What Naisbitt is doing is not forecasting trends but MAKING them. We have seen how the industrial base of the United States has been destroyed, starting with the steel industry. In 1982 I wrote a work I called "Death of the Steel Industry," in which I stated that by the mid-1990's, steel production in the U.S. will have declined to a point of no return, and that the auto and housing industries would go the same way.

All this has come to pass, and what we are witnessing today is not an economic recession due not only to unsound economic policies, but the deliberately planned destruction of our industrial base—and along with it the destruction of America's unique middle class—the backbone of the country—which depends

on a progressive industrial expansion for growth and for steady employment.

This is one of the reasons why the recession, which started in earnest in January of 1991, has turned into a depression from which the United States as we knew it in the 1960's-1970's will most probably never reappear. The economy will not come out of the depression of 1991 until at least 19951996, at which time the United States will have become an entirely different society from the one it when the recession began.

Opinion makers have played no small part in this war on the United States; we need to examine the role of the Committee of 300 in bringing about these far-reaching changes and how the social engineers have used central systems analyses to keep public opinion from expressing anything other than the policies of the invisible government. How and where did it all begin?

From documents covering the First World War that I was able to gather and examine in the War Office in Whitehall, London, it appears that the Royal Institute for International Affairs was commissioned by the Committee of 300 to do a study of manipulating war information. This task was given to Lord Northcliffe and Lord Rothmere and Arnold Toynbee, who was MI6's agent at the RIIA. Lord Rothmere's family owned a newspaper which was used to support various government positions, so it was thought that the paper could change public perceptions, especially among the ranks of growing opposition to the war.

The project was housed in Wellington House, named after the Duke of Wellesly. American specialists drafted to help Lords Rothmere and Northcliffe included Edward Bernays and Walter Lippman. The group held "brain storming" sessions to work out techniques for mobilizing mass support for the war, especially among the working class people whose sons were expected to go to the slaughter fields of Flanders in record numbers.

Using Lord Rothmere's newspaper, new manipulative techniques were tried out and, after a period of about 6 months, it was apparent that they were a success. What the researchers

discovered was that only a very small group of people understood the process of reasoning and the ability to observe the problem as opposed to passing an opinion on it. This, said Lord Rothmere, was the way in which 87% of the British public approached the war, and that the same principle applied not only to the war, but to every conceivable problem in society in general.

In this manner, irrationality was elevated to a high level of public consciousness. The manipulators then played upon this to undermine and distract the grasp of reality governing any given situation and, the more complex the problems of a modern industrial society became, the easier it became to bring greater and greater distractions to bear so that what we ended up with was that the absolutely inconsequential opinions of masses of people, created by skilled manipulators, assumed the position of scientific fact.

Having literally stumbled upon so profound a conclusion, the manipulators put it to one test after another during the war, so that in spite of hundreds of thousands of the youth of Britain being slaughtered on the battlefields of France, there was virtually no opposition to the bloody war. Records of the time show that by 1917, just before the United States entered the war, 94% of the British working class bearing the brunt of the war did not have the faintest idea what they were fighting for, other than the image created by the media manipulators that the Germans were a horrible race, bent upon destroying their monarch and their country, and who had to be wiped off the face of the earth.

Certainly nothing has changed because, in 1991, we had the exact same situation created by the news media which allowed President Bush to flagrantly violate the Constitution in waging a war of genocide against the nation of Iraq with the full consent of 87% of the American people. Woodrow Wilson can be credited—if that is the proper expression to use—of jumping on the public opinion manipulators' band wagon and using it to further the causes whispered in his ear by his controller, Colonel House.

On instructions from President Wilson, or rather Colonel House, the Creel Commission was created and, as far as can bb ascertained, the Creel Commission was the first organization in the

United States to use the RIIA techniques and methodology for polling and mass propaganda. The psychological warfare experiments perfected at Wellington House were used in the Second World War with equal success, and have been in continuous use in the massive psychological war against the United States which began in 1946. The methods did not change, only the target. Now it was not German worker housing but the middle class of the United States that became the focus of the attack.

As so often happens, the conspirators could not contain their glee. After WW II, in 1922 to be precise, Lippmann detailed the work done by the RIIA in a book he called "PUBLIC OPINION":

"Public opinion deals with indirect, unseen and puzzling facts, and there is nothing obvious about them. The situations to which public opinion refers are known only as opinions, pictures inside heads of human beings, pictures of themselves, of others, of their needs, purposes and relationships, are their public opinions. These pictures which are acted upon by groups of people, or by individuals acting in the name of groups are PUBLIC OPINION with capital letters. The picture inside the head often misleads men in their dealings with the world outside of their heads."

No wonder Lippmann was chosen to make the people of the United States "like" the Beatles when they arrived on our shores and were thrust upon an unsuspecting country. Combined with the propaganda sent forth night and day from radio and television it was only a comparatively short time before The Beatles became "popular." The technique of radio stations allegedly receiving hundreds of requests from imaging listeners for Beatlemusic, led to charts and ratings for first, the "top ten" and gradually escalated until, by 1992, it has expanded to "the top 40 on the charts."

In 1928, Lippmann's compatriot Edward Bernays wrote a book called "CRYSTALLIZING PUBLIC OPINION" and in 1928 a second book of his was published entitled simply "PROPAGANDA." In it Bernays described his experiences at Wellington House. Bernays was a close friend of Master Manipulator H.G. Wells,

whose many quasi-novels were used by Bernays to help formulate mass mind control techniques.

Wells was not shy about his role as a leader in changing lower class society, mainly because he was a close friend of members of the British royal family, and spent a great deal of time with some of the most highly placed politicians of the day, men like Sir Edward Grey, Lord Haldane, Robert Cecil of the Jewish Cecil family that had controlled the British monarchy since a Cecil became the private secretary and lover of Queen Elizabeth I, Leo Amery, Halford Mackinder of MI6 and later head of the London School of Economics, whose pupil Bruce Lockhart would become MI6 controller of Lenin and Trotsky during the Bolshevik Revolution, and even the great man himself, Lord Alfred Milner.

One of Well's favorite watering holes was the prestigious St. Ermins Hotel, meeting place of the Coefficient Club, a club to which certified gentlemen only were admitted and where they met once a month. All of the men mentioned above were members and also members of the Souls Club. Wells claimed that any nation could be defeated, not by direct confrontation but by understanding the human mind—what he called, "the mental hinterlands hidden behind the persona."

With such a powerful backer, Bernays felt confident enough to launch his "PROPAGANDA":

"As civilization becomes more complex, AND AS THE NEED FOR INVISIBLE GOVERNMENT HAS BEEN INCREASINGLY DEMONSTRATED (emphasis added-JC), the technical means have been invented and developed BY WHICH PUBLIC OPINION MAY BE REGIMENTED (emphasis added-JC). With printing press and newspaper, the telephone, telegraph, radio and airplanes, ideas can be spread rapidly, and even instantaneously, across the whole of America." Bernays had not yet seen how much better television, which was to follow, would do the job.

"The conscious and intelligent manipulation of organized habits and opinions of the masses is an important element in a democratic society. Those who manipulate this unseen mechanism of society constitute an INVISIBLE GOVERNMENT WHICH IS THE

TRUE RULING POWER IN OUR COUNTRY." To back up his position, Bernays quoted H. G. Wells' article published in the New York Times in which Wells enthusiastically backed the idea of modern means of communication "opening up a new world of political processes which will allow the common design to be documented and sustained against perversion and betrayal" (of the invisible government).

To continue with the revelations contained in "PROPAGANDA":

"We are governed, our minds are moulded, our tastes formed, our ideas suggested, largely by men we have never heard of. What ever attitude one chooses to take toward this condition, it remains a fact that in almost every act of our daily lives, whether in the sphere of politics or business, our social conduct or our ethical thinking, we are dominated by a relatively small number of persons, a trifling fraction of our hundred and twenty million, who understand the mental processes and social patterns of the masses. It is they who pull the wires which control the public mind, and who harness old social forces and contrive new ways TO BIND AND GUIDE THE WORLD" (emphasis added-JC).

Bernays was not bold enough to tell the world who the "THEY" are who "pull the wires which control the public mind...," but in this book we shall make up for his intentional oversight by disclosing the existence of that "relatively small number of persons," the Committee of 300. Bernays was roundly applauded for his work by the CFR whose members voted to place him in charge of CBS. William Paley became his "undergraduate" and eventually replaced Bernays, having acquired thorough knowledge of the new-science science of public opinion making, which made CBS the leader of the field, a role which CBS television and radio has never relinquished. Political and financial control by the "relatively small number," as Bernays called them, is exercised through a number of secret societies, most notably the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, and perhaps even more importantly, through the Venerable Order of the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, an ancient order consisting of the British monarch's hand-picked executives chosen for their expertise in areas vital to the continued control of the Committee.

In my work "The Order of St. John of Jerusalem" published in 1986, I described The Order in the following manner:

"...It is therefore not a secret society, except where its purposes have been perverted in the inner councils like the Order of the Garter, which is a prostituted oligarchical creation of the British royal family, which makes a mockery of what the Sovereign Order of St. John of Jerusalem stands for.

"As an example, we find the atheist Lord Peter Carrington, who pretends to be an Anglican Christian but who is a member of the Order of Osiris and other demonic sects, including Freemasonry, installed as a Knight of the Garter at St. George's Chapel, Windsor Castle, by Her Majesty, Queen Elizabeth II of England, of the Black Nobility Guelphs, also head of the Anglican Church, which she thoroughly despises."

Carrington was selected by the Committee of 300 to bring down the government of Rhodesia, sign over the mineral wealth of Angola and South West Africa to City of London control, wreck the Argentine and turn NATO into a leftwing political organization beholden to the Committee of 300.

Another strange face we see attaching itself to the Holy Christian Order of St. John of Jerusalem, and I use the word stranger as it is used in the original Hebrew of the Old Testament to denote the lineage of an individual, is that of Major Louis Mortimer Bloomfield, the man who helped plan the murder of John F. Kennedy. We see photos of this "strange" man wearing with pride the Cross of Malta, the same cross worn on the sleeve of the Knights of the Order of the Garter.

We have been so brainwashed that we believe the British royal family is just a nice, harmless and colorful institution, and fail to realize just how corrupt and therefore highly dangerous is this institution called the British Monarchy. The Knights of the Order of the Garter are the INNERMOST circle of the most corrupt public servants who have utterly betrayed the trust placed in them by their nation, their people.

The Knights of the Order of the Garter are the leaders of the Committee of 300, Queen Elizabeth II's most trusted "privy council." When I did my research on the Order of St. John of Jerusalem some years ago, I went to Oxford to talk with one of the Masters who is a specialist on ancient and modern British traditions. He told me that the Knights of the Garter are the inner sanctum, the elite of the elite of Her Majesty's Most Venerable Order of St. John of Jerusalem. Let me say this is not the original order founded by the true Christian warrior, Peter Gerard, but is typical of many fine institutions that are taken over and destroyed from the inside, while yet appearing to the uninitiated to be the original.

From Oxford I went to the Victoria and Albert Museum and gained access to the papers of Lord Palmerston, one of the founders of the Opium Dynasty in China. Palmerston, like so many of his kind, was not only a Freemason, but a dedicated servant of Gnosticism.... Like the present 'royal family,' Palmerston made a pretense of being a Christian but was in fact a servant of Satan. Many satanists became leaders of British aristocracy and made immense fortunes out of the China opium trade.

I learned from the papers in the museum named after Victoria that she changed the name of the Order of St. John of Jerusalem in 1885 in order to break away from the Catholic connection of the Order's founder, Peter Gerard, and renamed it the "Protestant Most Venerable Order of Jerusalem." Membership was open to every oligarchical family that had made its fortune in the China opium trade and every thoroughly decadent family received place in the 'new order.'

Many of these venerable gentlemen were responsible for overseeing the prohibition era in the United States from Canada, where several of its members supplied the whisky ferried to the United States. Notable among this group was Committee of 300 member Earl Haig, who gave his whisky franchise to old Joe Kennedy. Both prohibition and the distilleries who met the demand for alcohol were creations of the British Crown acting through the Committeemen of 300. It was an experiment which became the forerunner of today's drug trade, and the lessons learned from the

prohibition era are being applied to the soon to be legalized drug trade.

Canada is the route most used by Far East heroin suppliers. The British Monarchy sees to it that this information never becomes public. Using her powers, Queen Elizabeth rules over Canada through the Governor-General (one wonders how modern Canadians can accept such an archaic arrangement?), who is the Queen's PERSONAL representative, and on down the line to the Privy Council (yet another archaic hang-over from colonialist days) and the Knights of St. John of Jerusalem, who control Canadian commerce in all of its facets.

Opposition to British rule is suppressed. Canada has some of the most restrictive laws in the world, including so-called "hate crime" laws imposed upon the country by Jewish menbers of the House of Lords in England. At present there are four major trials in various stages in Canada involving persons charged with "hate crimes." These are the Finta, Keegstra, Zundel and Ross cases. Anyone who dares to try and show proof of Jewish control of Canada (which the Bronfmans exercise), is immediately arrested and charged with so-called "hate crimes." This will give us some idea of the vastness of the reach of the Committee of 300 which quite literally sits on top of everything n this world.

Testifying to the truth of this statement is the fact that the Committee of 300 set up the International Institute for Strategic Studies (IISS) under the auspices of the Round Table. This institute is the vehicle for M16-Tavistock black propaganda and wet jobs (an intelligence cover name denoting an operation where bloodshed is required), nuclear and terrorist, which goes to the world's press for dissemination, as well as to government and military establishments.

Membership of IISS includes representatives of 87 major wire services and press associations as well as 138 senior editors and columnists drawn from international newspapers and magazines. Now you know where your favorite columnist gets all of his information and opinions from. Remember Jack Anderson, Tom Wicker, Sam Donaldson, John Chancellor, Mary McGrory, Seymour Hersh, Flora Lewis and Anthony Lewis, et al? The

information provided by IISS, especially scenarios like those prepared to blacken President Hussein and to justify the coming attack on Libya and condemn the PLO are all specially tailormade for the occasion. The Mai Lai massacre story published by Seymour Hersh came straight out of IISS, just in case we wrongly suppose that men like Hersh do their own research work.

The International Institute for Strategic Studies is nothing more than a higher echelon opinion-maker as defined by Lippmann and Bernays. Instead of writing books, newspapers report opinions presented by chosen columnists, and IISS was formed to be a coordinating center for not only creating opinions, but to get those opinions and scenarios out much faster and to a greater audience than could be reached by a book, for example. IISS is a good example of the gridding and interfacing of Committee of 300 institutions.

The idea of bringing IISS into being arose at the 1957 Bilderberger meeting. It will be recalled that the Bilderberger Conference is a creation of M16 under the direction of the Royal Institute of International Affairs. The idea came from Alastair Buchan, son of Lord Tweedsmuir. Buchan was chairman at the time, and a board member of the RIIA and a member of the Round Table reportedly very close to the British royal family This was the same conference that welcomed Labour Party leader Dennis Healey to its ranks. Others in attendance were Francois Duchene, whose mentor, Jean Monet Duchenes, ran the Trilateral Commission under the tutelage of H. V. Dicks from Tavistock's Columbus Center.

Among the governing council of this gigantic propaganda opinion-making apparat is included the following:

Frank Kitson, a one time controller of The IRA PROVISIONALS, the man who started the Mau-Mau insurgency in Kenya.

Lazard Freres, represented by Robert Ellsworth.

N. M. Rothschild, represented by John Loudon.

Paul Nitze, representative of Schroeder Bank. Nitze has played a very prominent and substantial role in matters of Arms

Control agreements, which have ALWAYS been under the direction of the RIIA.

C. L. Sulzberger of the New York Times.

Stansfield Turner, a former director of the CIA.

Peter Calvocoressi, representing Penguin Books.

Royal Institute for International Affairs, represented by Andrew Schoenberg.

Columnists and Reporters, represented by Flora Lewis, Drew Middleton, Anthony Lewis, Max Frankel.

Daniel Ellsberg.

Henry Kissinger.

Robert Bowie, a former director of the ClA's National Intelligence Estimates.

Flowing from the 1957 Bilderberger meeting, Kissinger was instructed to open a Round Table office in Manhattan, the nucleus of which consisted of Haig, Ellsberg, Halperin, Schlessinger, McNamara and the McBundy brothers. Kissinger was directed to fill all executive positions in the Nixon administration with Round Tablers, loyal to the RIIA and therefore to the Queen of England. It was no accident that Kissinger chose President Nixon's old hangout, the Hotel Pierre, as his center of operations.

The significance of the Round Table-Kissinger operation was thus: On orders of the RIIA chairman Andrew Schoeberg, a block was placed on all agencies involved in intelligence, preventing them from giving information to President Nixon. This meant Kissinger and his staff were getting ALL INTELLIGENCE, FOREIGN AND DOMESTIC, LAW ENFORCEMENT INFORMATION, INCLUDING FBI DIVISION 5, before any of it was released to the President. This made certain that all M16-controlled terrorist operations in the U.S. would have no chance of being leaked. This was Halperin's bailiwick.

By working this methodology, Kissinger at once established hegemony over the Nixon presidency, and after Nixon was disgraced by the Kissinger group and hounded from office, Kissinger emerged with unprecedented powers such as have not been equaled before or since Watergate. Some of these seldom enumerated powers included the following:

Kissinger ordered National Security Decision Memorandum No. I to be drafted by Halperin, who got the actual wording directly from the RIIA through Round Table circles. The memorandum appointed Kissinger as the supreme U.S. authority, chairman of the Verification Panel. All SALT negotiations were directed from here, using Paul Nitze, Paul Warnke and a nest of traitors inside the Arms Control mission at Geneva.

In addition, Kissinger was appointed to The Vietnam Special Studies Group, which oversaw and made evaluations of all reports, civilian and military, including intelligence reports coming out of Vietnam. Kissinger also demanded and got oversight of the "40 Committee," a super-secret agency that has the task of deciding when and where to initiate covert activities and then monitors the progress of operations it sets in motion.

Meantime Kissinger ordered a blizzard of wire-taps by the FBI, even on his closest assistants, so as to give the impression that he was on top of everything. Most of his circle were told that wiretaps on them were in force. This nearly backfired was an M16 operative by the name of Henry Brandon was ordered wiretapped, but was not informed by Kissinger. Brandon was doubling as a reporter for the London Times and Kissinger very nearly got thrown out because nobody does this to the London Times.

The full story of the Ellsberg break-in and the subsequent Watergating of Nixon is too long to be included here. Suffice to say, Kissinger had control of Ellsberg from the day that Ellsberg was recruited while at Cambridge. Ellsberg had always been a hardliner in favor of the Vietnam War, but was gradually "converted" to a radical leftist activist. His "conversion" was only a shade less miraculous than St. Paul's Damascus Road experience.

The entire spectrum of the new left in the United States was the work of British intelligence M16 acting through Round Table assets and the Institute for Policy Studies (IPS). Just as it did with all countries with a republican base, whose policies had to be changed, LPS played a leading role, even as it does today in South Africa and South Korea. Much of IPS's activities are explained in my work "IPS Revisited" published in 1990.

IPS had one main function, that being to sow discord and spread disinformation resulting in chaos. One such program, aimed at America's youth, centered on drugs. Through a series of IPS fronts, acts like the stoning of Nixon's motorcade and a large number of bombings, a climate of deception was effectively created which led a majority of Americans to believe that the United States was under threat from the KGB, the GRU and Cuban DGI. The word went out that a lot of these imaginary agents had close ties to the Democrats through George McGovern. It was in fact, a model disinformation campaign for which M16 is justly famous.

Haldeman, Ehrlichman and Nixon's closest aides had no clue as to what was happening, hence a flurry of statements emanating from the White House that East Germany, The Soviet Union, North Korea and Cuba were training terrorists and funding their operations in the United States. I doubt whether Nixon knew very much about IPS, let alone suspected what it was doing to his presidency. We suffered the same kind of disinformation during the Gulf War when the word went out that terrorists of all stripes were about to invade the United States and blow up everything in sight.

President Nixon was literally left in the dark. He didn't even know that David Young, a Kissinger pupil, was working in the basement of the White House, supervising "leaks." Young was a graduate of Oxford and a long-time Kissinger associate through Round Table assets such as the law firm of Milbank Tweed. President Nixon was no match for the forces arrayed against him under the direction of M16 on behalf of the Royal Institute for International Affairs and hence the British royal family.

About the only thing that Nixon was guilty of, in so far as Watergate is concerned, was his ignorance of what was going on all around him. When James McCord "confessed" to Judge John Sirica, Nixon should have been on to it like a flash that McCord was playing a double game. He ought to have challenged Kissinger about his relationship with McCord there and then. That would have thrown a spanner in the works and derailed the whole M16-Watergate operation.

Nixon did not abuse his presidential powers. His crime was not defending the Constitution of the United States of America and not charging Mrs. Katherine Meyer Graham and Ben Bradley with conspiracy to commit insurrection. Mrs. Katherine Meyer Graham's pedigree is of the most doubtful kind, as "Jessica Fletcher" of "Murder She Wrote" would soon have discovered. But even knowing that, Mrs. Graham's controllers in the Round Table would have fought hard to keep the lid on things. The role of the Washington Post was to keep the pot boiling by one "revelation" after another, thereby engendering a climate of public distrust of President Nixon, even when there was not one shred of evidence to support wrong doing by him.

Yet it shows the immense power of the press, as Lippman and Bernays had quite properly anticipated, in that Mrs. Graham, long suspected of the murder of her husband, Philip L. Graham—officially classed as "suicide"—should have retained any credibility at all. Other traitors who should have been indicted for insurrection and treason were Kissinger, Haig, Halperin, Ellsberg, Young, McCord, Joseph Califano and Chomsky of IPS and those CIA operatives who went to McCord's house and burned all of his papers. Again, it is worth repeating that Watergate, like many other operations we do not have the space to include here, demonstrated the COMPLETE CONTROL exercised over the United States by the Committee of 300.

While Nixon kept company with people like Earl Warren and some Mafia dons who had built Warren's house, that does not mean that he should have been disgraced over the Watergate Affair. My dislike of Nixon stems from his willingness to sign the infamous ABM Treaty in 1972 and his all-too-cozy relationship with Leonid Brezhnev. One of the sorriest slip-ups of the Minority Council was its abject failure to expose the dirty role played by INTERTEL, the Corning Group's ugly private intelligence agency whom we have already met, who "leaked" a lot of Watergate material to Edward Kennedy. Private intelligence agencies like INTERTEL have no right to exist in the United States. They are a MENACE to our right to privacy and an insult to all free men everywhere.

Blame must also fall on those who were supposed to protect President Nixon from the kind of steelmesh net that was thrown around him to isolate him. The intelligence personnel around Nixon were a poor lot who had no knowledge of just how thorough British intelligence operations are; indeed, they had no inkling that Watergate was a British intelligence operation in its entirety. The Watergate plot was a coup-d'etat against the United States of America, as was the murder of John F. Kennedy. Although this fact is not recognized as such today, I am confident that when all the secret papers are finally opened, history will record that two coup-d'etats, one against Kennedy and one against Nixon, did indeed take place, and which in their wake brought the most violent rape and assault on the institutions upon which the Republic of the United States stands.

The individual who most deserves the title of traitor and who is most guilty of sedition is General Alexander Haig. This desk-man office-colonel whose paper-shuffling career did not include commanding any troops in battle, was suddenly thrust upon the scene by the invisible upper-level parallel government President Nixon once described him as a man who had to ask Kissinger's permission to go to the bathroom.

Haig was a product of the Round Table. He was noticed by Round Tabler Joseph Califano, one of Her Majesty's most trusted Round Tablers in the United States. Joseph Califano, legal council of the Democratic National Convention, had actually interviewed Alfred Baldwin, one of the plumbers A MONTH BEFORE THE BURGLARY TOOK PLACE. Califano was stupid enough to write a memorandum on his interview with Baldwin, in which he gave details of information on McCord's background and why McCord had selected Baldwin to be on the "team."

Even more damaging, Califano's memorandum contained full details of transcripts of wiretaps of conversations between Nixon and the reelection committee, all this BEFORE the break-in occurred. Califano should have been indicted on a score of federal offenses; instead he got away cleanly with his criminal activity. Sanctimonious Sam Ervin refused to allow Fred Thompson, Minority Council, to introduce this highly damaging evidence at the

Watergate hearings—on the spurious grounds that it was "too speculative."

On Round Table orders, Kissinger had Haig promoted from colonel to four-star general in the most meteoric rise ever recorded in the annals of United States military history, in the course of which Haig was leap-frogged over 280 senior U.S. Army generals and high-ranking officers.

During Haig's "promotion," and as a result of it, 25 senior generals were forced to resign. As a reward for his treachery toward President Nixon, AND THE UNITED STATES, Haig was subsequently given the plum job of Commanding General of the North Atlantic Treaty Organization forces (NATO), although he was THE LEAST QUALIFIED COMMANDER EVER TO HOLD THAT POSITION. Here again he was leap-frogged over 400 senior generals from NATO countries and the United States.

When the news of his appointment reached the Soviet Armed Forces High Command, Marshall Orgakov recalled his three top Warsaw Pact generals from Poland and East Germany, and there was much merrymaking, clinking of glasses and quaffing of champagne until well into the night. All through Haig's tenure as commander of NATO forces the professional elite cadre of the Soviet Armed Forces, men who have never been anything else but professional soldiers, held Haig in the utmost contempt and openly referred to him as the "office manager of NATO." They knew that Haig owed his appointment to the RIIA and not to the United States military.

But before his military promotion took him out of Washington, let it be known that Alexander Haig, in conjunction with Kissinger, all but destroyed the office of the President of the United States and its government. The chaos left by Kissinger and Haig in the wake of Watergate has never been chronicled to the best of my knowledge. On the insistence of the RIIA, Haig virtually took over the management of the Government of the United States after the April 1973 coup d'etat. Bringing 100 Round Table agents chosen from the Brookings Institution, Institute Policy Studies and the Council on Foreign Relations, Haig filled the top one hundred posts in Washington with men who, like himself,

were beholden to a foreign power. In the ensuing debacle, the Nixon Administration was torn asunder and the United States along with it.

Thrusting aside the pious platitudes and posturings of defending the Constitution, Senator Sam Ervin did more to change the United States than anything President Nixon was alleged to have done, and the United States has not yet recovered from the near-mortal wound of Watergate, a Committee of 300 sponsored operation conducted by the Royal Institute for International Affairs, the Round Table and "hands on" M16 officers based in the United States.

The way President Nixon was first isolated, surrounded by traitors and then confused, followed to the letter the Tavistock method of gaining full control of a person according to the methodology laid down by Tavistock's chief theoretician, Dr. Kurt Lewin. I have already given details of Lewin's methodology elsewhere in this book, but in view of the text-book case of President Richard M.Nixon, I think it is worth repeating:

"One of the main techniques for breaking morale through a strategy of terror consists in exactly this tactic—keep the person hazy as to where he stands and just what he may expect. In addition, if frequent vacillations between severe disciplinary measures and promises of good treatment together with the spreading of contradictory news, make the cognitive structure of this situation utterly unclear, then the individual may cease even to know a particular plan would lead toward or away from his goal. Under these conditions even those individuals who have definite goals and are ready to take risks are paralyzed by severe inner conflict in regard to what to do."

Kissinger and Haig followed Tavistock training manuals to the letter. The result was a distraught, confused, frightened and demoralized President Nixon, whose only course of action—he was told by Haig—was to resign. In 1983 I wrote two works, "The Tavistock Institute: Sinister and Deadly" and "The Tavistock Institute: Britain's Control of U.S. Policy," based upon Tavistock secret manuals which had fallen into my hands. Tavistock Institute's methods and actions are spelled out in these two works.

So successfully were Tavistock methods applied to unseat President Nixon that the people of this nation fully believed the calumny of lies, distortions and set-piece contrived situations mounted by the conspirator as truth, when in fact Watergate was a diabolical lie from end to end. It is important to stress this because we have certainly not seen the last of Watergate-type operations.

What were the alleged impeachable offenses committed by President Nixon, and the so-called "smoking gun" evidence which was supposed to back up the charges? First, the "smoking gun." This piece of FICTION was created by Kissinger and Haig around the June 23rd tape, which Haig coerced Nixon into surrendering to Leon Jaworski.

Haig spent hours convincing President Nixon that this tape would sink him, because it proved "beyond any doubt" that Nixon was guilty of serious wrong doing and a co-conspirator in the Watergate break-in. President Nixon's first response was to tell Haig, "It's utter nonsense to make such a big deal of this," but Haig chipped away until Nixon became convinced that he could not make a successful defense before the Senate, based solely on this particular June 23rd tape!

How had Haig accomplished his mission? Acting out a scenario prepared for him by his Round Table controllers, Haig had an unedited transcript of the "smoking gun" tape typed by his staff. In reality there was nothing in the tape that President Nixon could not have explained. Sensing this, Haig then circulated his unauthorized unedited transcript of the tape among Nixon's staunchest supporters in the House and Senate and the Republican Party high command. Peppered with "smoking gun" and "devastating," and coming from Nixon's trusted aide, the transcript had the effect of a falcon hitting a flock of pigeons; Nixon's supporters panicked and ran for cover.

Following up his sedition and insurrection, Haig summoned to his office Congressman Charles Wiggins, a staunch Nixon supporter who had agreed to lead the fight in the House to head off impeachment proceedings. In a bare-faced blatant lie, Wiggins

was informed by Haig, "The fight is lost." After that Wiggins lost all interest in defending Nixon, believing that Nixon himself had agreed to give up. Haig then dealt with Senator Griffin, a leading supporter of the president in the Senate in the same way. AS A RESULT OF HAIG'S SEDITIOUS, TREASONOUS ACTIVITIES, SENATOR GRIFFIN IMMEDIATELY WROTE A LETTER TO PRESIDENT NIXON CALLING UPON HIM TO RESIGN.

THREE MONTHS EARLIER, Round Table controlled Institute for Policy Studies, child of James Warburg, founder and a fellow, Marcus Raskin, delivered EXACTLY the same ultimatum that President Nixon resign, using the British intelligence propaganda journal, The New York Times of May 25th to deliver the ultimatum. The Watergate tragedy was a step in the irreversible transition to barbarism which is enveloping the United States, and which is leading us into the One World Government New World Order. The United States is now at the same place that Italy found itself when Aldo Moro tried to rescue it from created instability.

With what wrongdoing was Nixon charged? John Doar, whose brutish character was well-suited to his task of bringing so-called articles of impeachment against the president, was the author and finisher of one of the most far-reaching ILLEGAL domestic surveillance counterintelligence operations ever run in the United States.

Heading the Interdepartmental Intelligence Unit (IDIU), Doar garnered information from every conceivable agency of the federal government, including the Internal Revenue Service. The program was linked to the Institute for Policy Studies. One of the highlights of John Doar's career was to provide the CIA—which is forbidden by law to engage in domestic surveillance, with 10,000-12,000 names of citizens he suspected as political dissidents, for further investigation.

On July 18th, 1974, this great upholder of the law, with measured pomposity, delivered the "charges" against President Nixon, which episode was nationally televised. THERE WAS NOT A SINGLE PIECE OF EVIDENCE THAT NIXON HAD DONE ANYTHING IMPEACHABLE; indeed, Doar's pathetic litany of Nixon's alleged "crimes" were so trivial that it is a wonder the proceedings went

beyond this point. Income tax fiddling, unauthorized bombing of Cambodia and a vague "abuse of power" charge that would never have stuck in a court of law was the best that Doar could do. The United States was as unstable as it would ever be when President Nixon resigned on August 8th, 1974.

Nowhere more so than in our economic and fiscal policies. In 1983 the international bankers met in Williamsburg, Virginia to work out a strategy to prepare the United States for a total disintegration of its banking system. This planned event was to stampede the U.S. Senate into accepting control of our monetary and fiscal policies by the International Monetary Fund (IMF). Dennis Weatherstone of Morgan Guarantee on Wall Street stated that he was convinced this was the only way for the United States to save itself.

The proposal was endorsed by the Ditchley Group which had its beginning in May of 1982 at Ditchley Park in London. On January lOth-11th, l983, this alien group met in Washington D.C., in violation of the Sherman Anti-Trust Act and the Clayton Act, and conspired to overthrow the sovereignty of the United States of America in its monetary and financial freedom. The United States Attorney General knew of the meeting and its purpose. Instead of charging members of the group with conspiracy to commit a federal crime, he simply looked the other way.

Under the abovementioned acts, proof of a conspiracy is all that is needed for a felony conviction, and there was ample evidence that a conspiracy did indeed take place. But as the Ditchley Foundation had met at the request of the Royal Institute for International Affairs and was hosted by the Round Table, no one in the Justice Department had the courage to take action as required by those who had sworn to uphold the laws of the United States.

The Ditchley Plan to usurp control of the fiscal and monetary policies of the United States was the brainchild of Sir Harold Lever, a strong backer of Zionism and a close confidant of members of the British royal family and a member of the Committee of 300. Sir Harold Lever was a director of the giant UMILEVER conglomerate, an important Committee of 300

company. Lever's plan called for the IMF's influence to be broadened so that it could influence central banks of all nations, including the U.S. and guide them into the hands of a One World Government bank.

This was considered a vital step in bringing about a situation where the IMF would become the supreme arbiter of world banking. The ultra-secret January meeting was preceded by an earlier meeting in October 1982, and was attended by representatives of 36 of the world's top banks who met at the New York Vista Hotel. Security for the October 26th-27th seminar was as tight as anything ever seen in the Big Apple. This earlier Ditchley Group meeting also violated United States law.

Addressing the meeting, Sir Harold Lever said it was essential that national sovereignty as an archaic hang-over must be ended before the year 2000. "The United States will soon have to realize that it will be no better than any Third World country when the IMF takes control," said Sir Harold. It was later reported to the delegates that plans to appoint the IMF as the controller of United States fiscal policies were being readied to bring before the United States Senate by the year 2000.

Rimmer de Vries, speaking for Morgan Guarantee, said it was high time that the United States became a member of the Bank of International Settlements. "There must be a reconsideration of U.S. hesitancy over the past 50 years," De Vries declared. Some British and German bankers, fearing possible violations of U.S. law, said that the Ditchley Group is nothing but a committee to iron out exchange rate problems. Felix Rohatyn also spoke of the great need to change U.S. banking laws so that the IMF could play a greater role in this country. Rohatyn headed Lazard Freres, a Club of Rome bank and part of the Eagle Star Group which we have already met.

Round Tablers William Ogden and Werner Stang spoke enthusiastically in support of surrendering U.S. fiscal sovereignty to the International Monetary Fund and the Bank of International Settlements. Delegates representing the Alpha ranking Group, a P2 Freemasonry bank, said the United States must be forced to

surrender to "the higher authority of a world bank," before any progress toward the New World Order could be made.

On January 8th, 1983, before their big meeting on January lOth-11th, Hans Vogel, a leading Club of Rome member, was received at the White House. President Ronald Reagan had invited George Schultz, Caspar Weinberger, George Kennan and Lane Kirkland to be present at his meeting with Vogel, who explained to President Reagan what the aims and objectives of the Ditchley Group were. From that day, President Reagan did an about face and worked with the Committee of 300's various agencies to advance the International Monetary Fund and the Bank of International Settlements as the authority on U.S domestic and foreign monetary policies.

The invisible government of the Committee of 300 has put tremendous pressure on America to change its ways—for the worse. America is the last bastion of freedom and unless our freedoms are taken away from us, progress toward a One World Government will be considerably slowed. Such an undertaking as a One World Government is a massive one, requiring a great deal of skill, organizing abilities, control of governments and their policies. The only organization that could possibly have undertaken this mammoth task with any hope of success is the Committee of 300, and we have seen just how far it has come toward total success.

Above all, the battle is a spiritual one. Unfortunately, the Christian churches have become little more than social clubs run by the infinitely evil World Council of Churches (WCC), whose beginnings lie not in Moscow but in the City of London, as we see from the chart at the end of the book which gives the structure of the One World Government Church. This body was set up in the 1920's to serve as a vehicle for One World Government policies, and stands as a monument to the long-range planning capabilities of the Committee of 300.

Another corrupt body similar in structure and design to the WCC is the Union of Concerned Scientists, set up by the Trilateral Commission, and funded by the Carnegie Endowment Fund, the Ford Foundation and Aspen Institute. This is the group that has led the fight to prevent the United States from mounting an

effective deterrent against Soviet Cosmospheres, space-based laser beam weapons which can destroy selected targets in the United States or elsewhere from outer space.

The United States SDI program was designed to counter the threat posed by Soviet Cosmospheres, a threat which still exists in spite of the assurances that "communism is dead." Soviet spokesman Georgi Arbatov told a meeting of the Union of Concerned Scientists that it is important for them to oppose the SDI program, because if the SDI program became operational, "it will be a military catastrophe." Year after year the Union of Concerned Scientists has opposed every budget which included funding for the vital SDI program, until by the end of 1991, there is not even enough money to fund further research still required let alone place the system in orbit. The Union of Concerned Scientists is run by the Royal Institute for International Affairs and is heavily infiltrated with M16 British intelligence agents.

There is not one single aspect of life in America that is not watched over, steered in the "right" direction, manipulated, and controlled by the invisible government of the Committee of 300. There is not one elected official or political leader that is not subject to its rule. No one thus far has got away with defying our secret rulers, who do not hesitate to make "a horrible example" of anyone, including the President of the United States of America.

From 1776 when Jeremy Bentham and William Petty, the Earl of Shelburne, fresh from the triumph of the French Revolution which they planned and ran, were drafted by the British Crown to bring their combined experience to bear against the colonists, to 1812 when the British sacked and burned Washington, destroying secret documents that would have exposed the treason being worked against the young United States of America to the Watergating of President Nixon and assassination of President Kennedy, the hand of the Committee of 300 is clearly visible. This book is an attempt to open the eyes of the American people to this terrible truth: We are not an independent nation, nor can we ever be, as long as we are ruled by an invisible government, the Committee of 300.

PAST AND PRESENT INSTITUTIONS / ORGANIZATIONS AND THOSE DIRECTLY UNDER INFLUENCE OF THE COMMITTEE OF 300

Academy for Contemporary Problems.
Africa Fund.
Agency of International Development.
Albert Previn Foundation.
Alliance Israelite Universalle.
American Civil Liberties Union
American Council of Race Relations.
American Defense Society.
American Press Institute.
American Protective League.
Anti-Defamation League.
Arab Bureau.
Arab Higher Committee.
ARCA Foundation.
Armour Research Foundation.
Arms Control and Foreign Policy Caucus.
Arthur D. Little, Inc.
Asian Research Institute.
Aspen Institute.
Association for Humanistic Psychology.
Augmentation Research Center.
Baron De Hirsh Fund.
Battelle Memorial Institute.
Berger National Foundation.
Berlin Center for Future Research.
Bilderbergers.
Black Order.
Boycott Japanese Goods Conference.
British Newfoundland Corporation.
British Royal Society.
Brotherhood of Cooperative Commonwealth.
Bureau of International Revolutionary Propaganda.
Canadian Jewish Congress.
Cathedral of St. John the Divine, New York.
Center for Advanced Studies in the Behavioral Sciences.
Center for Constitutional Rights.
Center for Cuban Studies.

Center for Democratic Institutions.
Center for International Policy.
Center for the Study of Responsive Law.
Christian Socialist League.
Cini Foundation.
Club of Rome.
Cominform.
Committee for the Next Thirty Years.
Committee of Fourteen.
Committee on National Morale.
Committee to Frame A World Constitution.
Communist League.
Congress of Industrial Organizations.
Council on Foreign Relations.
David Sassoon Company.
De Beers Consolidated Mines.
Democratic League of Brussels.
East India Committee of 300.
Economic and Social Control (ECOSOC).
Environmental Fund.
Environmetrics Inc.
Esalen Institute.
Fabian Society.
Federation of American Zionists.
Fellowship for a Christian Social Order.
Fellowship of Reconciliation.
Ford Foundation.
Fordham University Institution Educational Research.
Foundation for National Progress.
Garland Fund.
German Marshall Fund.
Governing Body of the Israelite Religious Community.
Gulf South Research Institute.
Haganah.
Harvard University.
Hells Fire Club.
Horace Mann League.
Hudson Guild.
Hudson Institute.
Hudson Bay Company.
Imperial College University of London.

Industrial Christian Fellowship.
Institute for Brain Research.
Institute for Pacific Relations.
Institute for Policy Studies.
Institute for Social Research.
Institute for the Future.
Institute for World Order.
Institute on Drugs, Crime and Justice.
Inter-Alpha.
Inter-American Social Development Institute.
International Institute for Strategic Studies.
Interreligious Peace Colloquium.
Irgun.
Knights of Malta.
League of Nations.
Logistics Management Institute.
London Board of Deputies of British Jews.
London School of Economics.
Mary Carter Paint Company.
Massachusetts Institute of Technology.
Mellon Institute.
Metaphysical Society.
Milner Group.
Mocatto Metals.
Mont Pelerin Society.
NAACP.
National Action Research on Military/lndustrial Complex.
National Center for Productivity Institute.
National Council of Churches.
National Opinion Research Center.
National Training Laboratories.
New Democratic Coalition.
New World Foundation.
New York Rand Institute.
NORML.
North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO).
Odd Fellows.
Order of St. John of Jerusalem.
Order of The Golden Dawn.
OXFAM.
Oxford Univac.

Pacific Studies Center.
Palisades Foundation.
Peninsula and Orient Navigation Company.
PERMINDEX.
Princeton University.
Rand Corporation.
Rand School of Social Sciences.
Research Triangle Institution.
Rhodes Scholarship Committee.
Rio Tinto Zinc Company.
Riverside Church Disarmament Program.
Round Table.
Royal Institute for International Affairs.
Russell Sage Foundation.
San Francisco Foundation.
Sharps Pixley Ward.
Social Science Research Council.
Socialist International.
Socialist Party of the United States.
Society for Promotion of Study of Religions.
Society of Heaven (TRIADS).
Soviet State Committee for Science and Technology.
Stanford Research Institute.
Stockholm International Peace Research Institute.
Sun Yat Sen Society.
Systems Development Corporation.
Tavistock Institute of Human Relations.
Tempo Corporation.
The High Twelve International.
The Public Agenda Foundation.
The Quality of Life Institute.
Theosophist Society.
Thule Society.
Transatlantic Council.
Trilateral Commission.
U.S. Association of the Club of Rome.
U.S. Institute for Peace.
Union of Concerned Scientists.
UNITAR.
University of Pennsylvania Wharton School.
Warburg, James P. and Family.

Western Training Laboratories.
Wilton Park.
Women's Christian Temperance Union.
Wong Hong Hon Company.
Work in America Institute.
World Council of Churches.

SPECIAL FOUNDATIONS AND INTEREST GROUPS

Arab Bureau.
Aristotelian Society.
Asian Research Institute.
Bertrand Russell Peace Foundation.
British American Canadian Corporation.
Brotherhood of Eternal Love.
Cambridge Apostles.
Canadian Histadrut Campaign.
Canadian Pacific Ltd.
Caribbean-Central American Action Group.
China Everbright Holdings Ltd.
Chinese People's Institute of Foreign Affairs.
Council of South America.
Endangered Peoples' Society.
English Property Corporation Ltd.
Hospice Inc.
International Brotherhood of Teamsters.
International Red Cross.
Jerusalem Foundation, Canada.
Kissinger Associates.
Kowloon Chamber of Commerce.
Organization of American States.
Overseas Chinese Affairs Committee.
Radio Corporation of America (RCA).
Royal Police of Hong Kong.
YMCA.

BANKS

American Express.
Banca de la Svizzera d'Italia.
Banca Andioino.
Banca d'America d'Italia.
Banca Nazionale del Lavoro.
Banca Privata.
Banco Ambrosiano.
Banco Caribe.
Banco Commercial Mexicana.
Banco Consolidato.
Banco d'Espana.
Banco de Colombia.
Banco de Commercio.
Banco de Iberio-America.
Banco de la Nacion.
Banco del Estada.
Banco Internacional.
Banco Latino.
Banco Mercantile de Mexico.
Banco Nacional de Cuba.
Banco Nacional de Panama and 54 smaller Panamanian banks.
Bangkok Commercial d'Italian.
Bangkok Metropolitan Bank.
Bank al Meshreq.
Bank America.
Bank for International Settlements.
Bank Hapoalim.
Bank Leu.
Bank Leumi.
Bank of Bangkok.
Bank of Boston.
Bank of Canada.
Bank of Credit and Commerce International.
Bank of East Asia.
Bank of England.
Bank of Escambia.
Bank of Geneva.
Bank of Ireland.

Bank of London and Mexico.
Bank of Montreal.
Bank of Norfolk.
Bank of Nova Scotia.
Bank Ohio.
Banque Bruxelles-Lambert.
Banque Commerciale Arabes.
Banque du Credit International.
Banque e Paris et Pays-Bas.
Banque Francais et Italienn por l'Amerique du Sud.
Banque Louis Dreyfus e Paris.
Banque Privee.
Banques Sud Ameris.
Barclays Bank.
Baring Brothers Bank.
Barnett Banks.
Baseler Handeslbank.
Basel Committee on Bank Supervision.
BCCI.*
Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce.
Centrust Bank.
Chartered Bank.
Charterhouse Japhet Bank.
Chase Manhattan Bank.
Chemical Bank.
Citibank.
Citizens and Southern Bank of Atlanta.
City National Bank of Miami.
Claridon Bank.
Cleveland National City Bank.
Corporate Bank and Trust Company.
Credit and Commerce American Holdings.
Credit and Commerce Holdings, Netherlands Antilles.
Credit Suisse.
Crocker National Bank.
de'Neuflize, Schlumberger, Mallet Bank.
Dresdener Bank.
Dusseldorf Global Bank.
First American Bank of Georgia.
First American Bank of New York.
First American Bank of Pensacola.

First American Bank of Virginia.
First American Banking Corp.
First Empire Bank.
First Fidelity Bank.
First National Bank of Boston.
First National City Bank.
Florida National Bank.
Foreign Trade Bank.
Franklin National Bank.
Hambros Bank.
Hong Kong and Shanghai Banking
Independence Bank of Encino.
Israeli Discount Bank.
Litex Bank.
Ljubljanska Bank.
Lloyds Bank.
Marine Midland Bank.
Midland Bank.
Morgan Bank.
Morgan Et Cie.
Morgan Grenfell Bank.
Narodny Bank.
National Bank of Cleveland.
National Bank of Florida.
National Westminister Bank.
Orion Bank.
Paravicini Bank Ltd.
Republic National Bank.
Royal Bank of Canada.
Schroeder Bank.
Seligman Bank.
Shanghai Commercial Bank.
Soong Bank.
Standard and Chartered Bank.
Standard Bank.
Swiss Bank Corporation.
Swiss Israel Trade bank.
Trade Development Bank.
Unibank.
Union Bank of Israel.
Union Bank of Switzerland.

Vanying Bank.
White Weld Bank.
World Bank.
World Commerce Bank of Nassau.
World Trade Bank.
Wozchod Handelsbank.

Note: With the exception of the Basel Committee on Banking each of the above mentioned banks have been, and may still be involved in the drug, diamond, gold and weapons trade.

* BCCI. This bank has been indicted on several charges of being heavily involved in drug money laundering throughout the world. Its structure girds every operation of the Committee of 300. Of interest is its corporate structure. Middle East Interests, 35% of stock held by:

Ruling Family of Bahrain.
Ruling Family of Sharjah.
Ruling Family of Dhubai.
Ruling Family of Saudi Arabia.
Ruling Family of Iran.
Group of Middle East Businessmen.
BCCI Cayman Islands 41%.
Bank of America 24%.

BCCI Cayman Islands and BCCI Luxembourg established Agency offices in Miami, Boca Raton, Tampa, New York, San Francisco and Los Angeles.

LEGAL ASSOCIATIONS AND LAWYERS

American Bar Association.
Clifford and Warnke.
Coudert Brothers.
Cravaith, Swain and Moore.
Wilkie, Farr and Gallagher.

ACCOUNTANTS/AUDITORS

Price, Waterhouse.

TAVISTOCK INSTITUTIONS IN THE UNITED STATES

FLOW LABORATORIES

Gets contracts from the National Institute of Health.

MERLE THOMAS CORPORATION

Gets contracts from the U.S. Navy, analyzes data from satellites.

WALDEN RESEARCH

Does work in the field of pollution control.

PLANNING RESEARCH CORPORATION, ARTHUR D. LITTLE, G.E. "TEMPO," OPERATIONS RESEARCH INC.

Part of approximately 350 firms who conduct research and conduct surveys, make recommendations to government.

They are part of what President Eisenhower called "a possible danger to public policy that could itself become captive of a scientific-technological elite."

BROOKINGS INSTITUTION

Dedicates its work to what it calls a "national agenda." Wrote President Hoover's program, President Roosevelt's "New Deal," the Kennedy Administration's "New Frontiers" program (deviation from it cost John F. Kennedy his life), and President Johnson's "Great Society." Brookings has been telling the United States Government how to conduct its affairs for the past 70 years and is still doing so on behalf of the Committee of 300.

HUDSON INSTITUTE

Under the direction of Herman Khan, this institution has done more to shape the way Americans react to political and social events, think, vote and generally conduct themselves than perhaps any except the BIG FIVE. Hudson specializes in defense policy

research and relations with the USSR. Most of its military work is classified as SECRET. (One idea during the Vietnam War was to build a moat around Saigon.) Some of its earlier papers were entitled "Stability and Tranquility Among Older Nations," and "Analytical Summary of U.S. National Security Policy Issues."

Hudson prides itself on its diversity; it helped NASA with its space programs and helped to promote new youth fashions and ideas, youth rebellion and alienation for the Committee of 300, ostensibly funded by Coca Cola. Hudson may be quite properly classified as one of the Committee of 300's BRAIN-WASHING establishments. Some of its nuclear war scenarios make for very interesting reading and, if they can be obtained, I would recommend "The 6 Basic Thermonuclear Threats" and "Possible Outcomes of Thermonuclear War" and one of its more frightening papers entitled "Israeli-Arab Nuclear War."

Hudson also does corporate advising for Committee of 300 companies, Rank, Xerox, General Electric, IBM and General Motors, to name but a few of them, but its really big client remains the U. S. Department of Defense which includes matters of civil defense, national security, military policy and arms control. To date it has not got into "wet NASA," that is to say, the National Oceanographic Agency.

NATIONAL TRAINING LABORATORIES

NTL is also known as the International Institute for Applied Behavioral Sciences. This institute is definitely a brainwashing center based on Kurt Lewin principles which include so-called T-Groups (training groups), artificial stress training whereby participants suddenly find themselves immersed in defending themselves against vicious accusations. NTL takes in the National Education Association, the largest teacher-group in the United States.

While officially decrying "racism," it is interesting to note that NTL, working with NEA, produced a paper proposing education vouchers which would separate the hard-to-teach children from the brighter ones, and funding would be allocated according to the number of difficult children who would be

separated from those who progressed at a normal rate. The proposal was not taken up.

UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA, WHARTON SCHOOL OF FINANCE & COMMERCE

Founded by Eric Trist, one of the "brain trusts" of Tavistock, Wharton has become one of the more important Tavistock institutions in the U.S. in so far as "Behavioral Research" is concerned. Wharton attracts clients such as the U.S. Department of Labor—which it teaches how to produce "cooked" statistics at the Wharton Econometric Forecasting Associates Incorporated. This method is very much in demand as we come to the close of 1991 with millions more out of work than is reflected in USDL statistics.

Wharton's ECONOMETRIC MODELING is used by every major Committee of 300 company in the United States, Western Europe and by the International Monetary Fund, the United Nations and the World Bank. Wharton has produced such noteworthy persons as George Schultz and Alan Greenspan.

INSTITUTE FOR SOCIAL RESEARCH

This is the institute set up by "brain trusters" from Tavistock Rensis Likert, Dorwin Cartwright and Ronald Lippert. Among its studies are "The Human Meaning of Social Change," "Youth in Transition" and "How Americans View Their Mental Health." Among the institute's clients are The Ford Foundation, U.S. Department of Defense, U.S. Postal Service and the U.S. Department of Justice.

INSTITUTE FOR THE FUTURE

This is not a typical Tavistock institution in that it is funded by the Ford Foundation, yet it draws its long-range forecasting methodology from the mother of all think tanks. Institute for the Future projects what it believes to be changes that will be taking place in time frames of fifty years. The institute is supposed to be

able to forecast socioeconomic trends and to blow the whistle on any departures from what it has laid down as normal.

Institute for the Future believes it is possible and normal to intervene now and give decisions for the future. So-called "Delphi Panels" decide what is normal and what is not, and prepare position papers to "steer" government in the right direction to head off such groups as "people creating civil disorder." (This could be patriotic groups demanding abolition of graduated taxes, or demanding that their right to bear arms is not infringed.)

The institute recommends actions such as liberalizing abortion laws, drug usage and that cars entering an urban area pay tolls, teaching birth control in public schools, requiring registration of firearms, making the use of drugs a non-criminal offense, legalizing homosexuality, paying students for scholastic achievements, making zoning controls a preserve of the state, offering bonuses for family planning and last, but by no means least, a Pol Pot Cambodia-style proposal that new communities be established in rural areas. As will be observed, many of the Institute for the Future's goals have already been more than fully realized.

INSTITUTE FOR POLICY STUDIES (IPS)

One of the "Big Three," IPS has shaped and reshaped United States policies, foreign and domestic, since it was founded by James P. Warburg and the Rothschild entities in the United States, bolstered by Bertrand Russell and the British Socialists through its networks in America which include the League for Industrial democracy in which Leonard Woodcock played a leading, if behind-the-scenes role. Local lead players in the League for Industrial Democracy included "conservative" Jeane Kirkpatrick, Irwin Suall (of the ADL), Eugene Rostow (Arms Control negotiator), Lane Kirkland (Labor leader), and Albert Shanker.

For record purposes only, IPS was incorporated in 1963 by Marcus Raskin and Richard Barnett, both highly-trained Tavistock Institute graduates. Most of the funding came from Rothschild associates in America like the James Warburg Family, the Stern Family Foundation and the Samuel Rubin Foundation. Samuel

Rubin was a registered member of the Communist Party who stole the Faberge name (Faberge was "Jeweler of the Imperial Russian Court") and made a fortune out of the Faberge name.

The objectives of IPS came from an agenda laid down for it by the British Round Table, which agenda in turn came from Travistock Institute, one of the most notable being to create the "New Left" as a grass roots movement in the U.S. IPS was to engender strife and unrest and spread chaos like a wildfire out of control, proliferate the "ideals" of left wing nihilistic socialism, support unrestricted use of drugs of all types, and be the "big stick" with which to beat the United States political establishment.

Barnett and Raskin controlled such diverse elements as the Black Panthers, Daniel Ellsberg, National Security Council staff member Halperin, The Weathermen Underground, the Venceramos and the campaign staff of candidate George McGovern. No scheme was too big for IPS and its controllers to take on and manage.

Take the plot to "kidnap" Kissinger, which was in the hands of Eqbal Ahmed, a British M16 intelligence agent of Pakistani origin, laundered through "TROTS" (Trotskyite terrorists based in London). The "plot" was "discovered" by the FBI so that it could not go too far. Ahmed went on to become the director of one of IPS's most influential agencies, The Transnational Institute which, chameleon-like, changed from its former name, Institute of Race Relations, when intelligence agents of BOSS (Bureau of State Security) in South Africa unmasked the fact that it was tied directly to Rhodes Scholarship-Harry Oppenheimer and Anglo-American-British mining interests in South Africa. BOSS also discredited the South Africa Foundation at the same time.

Through its many powerful lobbying groups on Capitol Hill, IPS relentlessly used its "big stick" to beat Congress. IPS has a network of lobbyists, all supposedly operating independently but in actual fact acting cohesively, so that Congressmen are pummeled from all sides by seemingly different and varied lobbyists. In this way, IPS was, and is still, able to successfully sway individual Representatives and Senators to vote for "the trend, the way things are going." By using key point men on Capitol Hill, IPS was

able to break into the very infrastructure of our legislative system and the way it works.

To give only a single concrete example of what I am talking about: in 1975, an IPS point man persuaded representative John Conyers (D-Michigan) and forty-seven members of the House to request IPS to prepare a budget study that would oppose the budget being prepared by President Gerald Ford. Although not adopted, the request was reinstated in 1976, 1977, and 1978 gathering sponsors as it went.

Then in 1978, fifty-six Congressmen signed their names to sponsor an IPS budget study. This was prepared by Marcus Raskin. Raskin's budget called for a fifty percent cut in the Defense Budget, a socialist housing program "that would compete with and steadily replace private housing and mortgage markets," a national health service, "radical changes in the educational system that would disrupt capitalist control over the distribution of knowledge," and several other radical ideas.

The influence of IPS on Arms Control negotiations was a major factor in getting Nixon to sign the treasonous ABM Treaty in 1972, which left the United States virtually defenseless against ICBM attack for almost 10 years. IPS became, and remains to this day one of the most prestigious "think tanks" controlling foreign policy decisions, which we, the people, foolishly believe are those of our law makers.

By sponsoring militant activism at home and with links to revolutionaries abroad, by engineering such victories as "The Pentagon Papers," besieging the corporate structure, bridging the credibility gap between underground movements and acceptable political activism, by penetrating religious organizations and using them to sow discord in America, such as radical racial politics under the guise of religion, using the establishment media to spread IPS ideas, and then supporting them, IPS has lived up to the role which it was founded to play.

STANFORD RESEARCH INSTITUTE

Jesse Hobson, the first president of Stanford Research Institute, in a 1952 speech made it clear what lines the institute was to follow. Stanford can be described as one of the "jewels" in Tavistock's Crown in its rule over the United States. Founded in 1946 immediately after the close of WW II, it was presided over by Charles A. Anderson, with emphasis on mind control research and "future sciences." Included under the Stanford umbrella was Charles F. Kettering Foundation which developed the "Changing Images of Man" upon which the Aquarian Conspiracy rests.

Some of Stanford's major clients and contracts were at first centered around the defense establishment but, as Stanford grew, so did the diversity of its services:

Applications of Behavioral Sciences to Research Management.
Office of Science and Technology.
SRI Business Intelligence Program.
U.S. Department of Defense Directorate of Defense Research and Engineering.
U.S. Department of Defense Office of Aerospace Research.
Among corporations seeking Stanford's services were Wells Fargo Bank, Bechtel Corporation, Hewlett Packard, Bank of America, McDonnell-Douglas Corporation, Blyth, Eastman Dillon and TRW Company. One of Stanford's more secret projects was extensive work on chemical and bacteriological warfare (CAB) weapons.

Stanford Research is plugged into at least 200 smaller "think tanks" doing research into every facet of life in America. This is known as ARPA networking and represents the emergence of probably the most far-reaching effort to control the environment of every individual in the country. At present Stanford's computers are linked with 2500 "sister" research consoles which include the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), Bell Telephone Laboratories, U.S. Army Intelligence, the Office of Naval Intelligence (ONI), RANI), MIT, Harvard and UCLA. Stanford plays a key role in that it is the "library," cataloging all ARPA documentation.

"Other agencies"—and one can use one's imagination here, are allowed to search through SRI's "library" for key words,

phrases, look through sources and update their own master files with those of Stanford Research Center. The Pentagon, for instance, uses SRI's "master files" extensively, and there is little doubt that other U.S. Government agencies do the same. Pentagon "command and control" problems are worked out by Stanford.

While ostensibly these apply only to weapons and soldiers, there is absolutely no guarantee that the same research could not, and will not, be turned to civilian applications. Stanford is known to be willing to do anything for anyone, and it is my belief that if ever SRI were to be fully exposed, the hostility which would arise from revelations as to what it actually does would most probably force SRI to close.

MASSACHUSETTS INSTITUTE OF TECHNOLOGY, ALFRED P. SLOAN SCHOOL OF MANAGEMENT

This major institute is not generally recognized as being a part of Tavistock U.S.A. Most people look upon it as a purely American institution, but that is far from being the case. MIT-Alfred Sloan can be roughly divided into the following groups:

Contemporary Technology.
Industrial Relations.
Lewin Group Psychology.
NASA-ERC Computer Research Laboratories.
Office of Naval Research Group, Psychology.
Systems Dynamics. Forrestor and Meadows wrote The Club of Rome's "Limits of Growth" zero growth study.

Some of MIT's clients include the following:
American Management Association.
American Red Cross.
Committee for Economic Development.
GTE.
Institute for Defense Analysis (IDA).
NASA.
National Academy of Sciences.
National Council of Churches.
Sylvania.

TRW.
U.S. Army.
U.S. Department of State.
U.S. Navy.
U.S. Treasury.
Volkswagen Company.

So vast is the reach of IDA that it would take hundreds of pages to describe the activities in which it is engaged, and IDA is fully described in my book on the role played by Institutions and Foundations in committing treason against the United States of America, which will be published early in 1992.

RAND RESEARCH AND DEVELOPMENT CORPORATION

Without a doubt, RAND is THE think tank most beholden to Tavistock Institute and certainly the RIIA's most prestigious vehicle for control of United States policies at every level. Specific RAND policies that became operative include our ICBM program, prime analyses for U.S. foreign policy making, instigator of space programs, U.S. nuclear policies, corporate analyses, hundreds of projects for the military, the Central lntelligence Agency (CIA) in relation to the use of mind altering drugs like peyote, LSD (the covert MK-Ultra operation which lasted for 20 years).

Some of RAND's clients include the following:
American Telephone and Telegraph Company (AT&T).
Chase Manhattan Bank.
International Business Machines (IBM).
National Science Foundation.
Republican Party.
TRW.
U.S. Air Force.
U.S. Department of Energy.
U.S. Department of Health.

There are literally THOUSANDS of highly important companies, government institutions and organizations that make use of RAND's services, and to list them all would be an impossible task. Among RAND's "specialities" is a study group that predicts the timing and the direction of a thermonuclear war, plus working

out the many scenarios based upon its findings. RAND was once accused of being commissioned by the USSR to work out terms of surrender of the United States Government, an accusation that went all the way to the United States Senate, where it was taken up by Senator Symington and subsequently fell victim to articles of scorn poured out by the establishment press. BRAIN WASHING remains the primary function of RAND.

To summarize, the major Tavistock institutions in the United States engaged in brainwashing at all levels, including government, the military, business, religious organizations and education are the following:

Brookings Institution.
Hudson Institute.
Institute for Policy Studies.
Massachusetts Institute of Technology.
National Training Laboratories.
Rand Research and Development Corporation.
Stanford Research Institute.
Wharton School at University of Pennsylvania.

It is estimated by sources of mine that the total number of people employed by these institutions is in the region of 50,000 with funding close to $lO billion dollars.

Some major world-wide Committee of 300 institutions and organizations are as follows:

Americans for a Safe Israel.
Biblical Archaeology Review.
Bilderbergers.
British Petroleum.
Canadian Institute of Foreign Relations.
Christian Fundamentalism.
Council on Foreign Relations, New York.
Egyptian Exploration Society.
Imperial Chemical Industries.
International Institute for Strategic Studies.
Order of Skull and Bones.
Palestine Exploration Fund.

Poor Knights of the Templars
Royal Dutch Shell Company.
Socialist International.
South Africa Foundation.
Tavistock Institute of Human Relations.
Temple Mount Foundation.
The Atheist Club.
The Fourth State of Consciousness Club.
The Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn.
The Milner Group.
The Nasi Princes.
The Order of Magna Mater.
The Order of the Divine Disorder.
The RIIA.
The Round Table.
Trilateral Commission.
Universal Freemasonry.
Universal Zionism.
Vickers Armament Company.
Warren Commission.
Watergate Committee.
Wilton Park.
World Council of Churches.

PAST AND PRESENT MEMBERS OF THE COMMITTEE OF 300

Abergavemy, Marquis of.
Acheson, Dean.
Adeane, Lord Michael.
Agnelli, Giovanni.
Alba, Duke of.
Aldington, Lord.
Aleman, Miguel.
Allihone, Professor T. E.
Alsop Family Designate.
Amory, Houghton.
Anderson, Charles A.
Anderson, Robert 0.
Andreas, Dwayne.
Asquith, Lord.
Astor, John Jacob and successor, Waldorf.

Aurangzeb, Descendants of.
Austin, Paul.
Baco, Sir Ranulph
BalFour, Arthur.
Balogh, Lord.
Bancroft, Baron Stormont.
Baring.
Barnato, B.
Barran, Sir John.
Baxendell, Sir Peter.
Beatrice of Savoy, Princess.
Beaverbrook, Lord.
Beck, Robert.
Beeley, Sir Harold.
Beit, Alfred.
Benn, Anthony Wedgewood.
Bennet, John W.
Benneton, Gilberto or alternate Carlo.
Bertie, Andrew.
Besant, Sir Walter.
Bethal, Lord Nicholas.
Bialkin, David.
Biao, Keng.
Bingham, William.
Binny, J. F.
Blunt, Wilfred.
Bonacassi, Franco Orsini.
Bottcher, Fritz.
Bradshaw, Thornton.
Brandt, Willy.
Brewster, Kingman.
Buchan, Alastair.
Buffet, Warren.
Bullitt, William C.
Bulwer-Lytton, Edward.
Bundy, McGeorge.
Bundy, William.
Bush, George.
Cabot, John. Family Designate.
Caccia, Baron Harold Anthony.
Cadman, Sir John.

Califano, Joseph.
Carrington, Lord.
Carter, Edward.
Catlin, Donat.
Catto, Lord.
Cavendish, Victor C. W. Duke of Devonshire.
Chamberlain, Houston Stewart.
Chang, V. F.
Chechirin, Georgi or Family Designate.
Churchill, Winston.
Cicireni, V. or Family Designate.
Cini, Count Vittorio.
Clark, Howard.
Cleveland, Amory.
Cleveland, Harland.
Clifford, Clark.
Cobold, Lord.
Coffin, the Rev William Sloane.
Constanti, House of Orange.
Cooper, John. Family Designate.
Coudenhove-Kalergi, Count.
Cowdray, Lord.
Cox, Sir Percy.
Cromer, Lord Evelyn Baring.
Crowther, Sir Eric.
Cumming, Sir Mansfield.
Curtis, Lionel.
d'Arcy, William K.
D'Avignon, Count Etienne.
Danner, Jean Duroc.
Davis, John W.
de Benneditti, Carlo.
De Bruyne, Dirk.
De Gunzberg, Baron Alain.
De Lamater, Major General Walter.
De Menil, Jean.
De Vries, Rimmer.
de Zulueta, Sir Philip.
de'Aremberg, Marquis Charles Louis.
Delano. Family Designate.
Dent, R.

Deterding, Sir Henri.
di Spadaforas, Count Guitierez, (House
Douglas-Home, Sir Alec.
Drake, Sir Eric.
Duchene, Francois.
DuPont.
Edward, Duke of Kent.
Eisenberg, Shaul.
Elliott, Nicholas.
Elliott, William Yandel.
Elsworthy, Lord.
Farmer, Victor.
Forbes, John M.
Foscaro, Pierre.
France, Sir Arnold.
Fraser, Sir Hugh.
Frederik IX, King of Denmark Family Designate.
Freres, Lazard.
Frescobaldi, Lamberto.
Fribourg, Michael.
Gabor, Dennis.
Gallatin, Albert. Family Designate.
Gardner, Richard.
Geddes, Sir Auckland.
Geddes, Sir Reay.
George, Lloyd.
Giffen, James.
Gilmer, John D.
Giustiniani, Justin.
Gladstone, Lord.
Gloucestor, The Duke of.
Gordon, Walter Lockhart.
Grace, Peter J.
Greenhill, Lord Dennis Arthur.
Greenhill, Sir Dennis.
Grey, Sir Edward.
Gyllenhammar, Pierres.
Haakon, King of Norway.
Haig, Sir Douglas.
Hailsham, Lord.
Haldane, Richard Burdone.

Halifax, Lord.
Hall, Sir Peter Vickers.
Hambro, Sir Jocelyn.
Hamilton, Cyril.
Harriman, Averill.
Hart, Sir Robert.
Hartman, Arthur H.
Healey, Dennis.
Helsby, Lord.
Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth II.
Her Majesty Queen Juliana.
Her Royal Highness Princess Beatrix.
Her Royal Highness Queen Margreta.
Heseltine, Sir William.
Hesse, Grand Duke descendants, Family Designate.
Hoffman, Paul G.
Holland, William.
House of Braganza.
House of Hohenzollern.
House, Colonel Mandel.
Howe, Sir Geoffrey.
Hughes, Thomas H.
Hugo, Thieman.
Hutchins, Robert M.
Huxley, Aldous.
Inchcape, Lord.
Jamieson, Ken.
Japhet, Ernst Israel.
Jay, John. Family Designate.
Keynes, John Maynard.
Jodry, J. J.
Joseph, Sir Keith.
Katz, Milton.
Kaufman, Asher.
Keith, Sir Kenneth.
Keswick, Sir William Johnston, or Keswick, H.N.L.
Keswick, William Johnston.
Kimberly, Lord.
King, Dr. Alexander.
Kirk, Grayson L.
Kissinger, Henry.

Kitchener, Lord Horatio.
Kohnstamm, Max.
Korsch, Karl.
Lambert, Baron Pierre.
Lawrence, G.
Lazar.
Lehrman, Lewis.
Lever, Sir Harold.
Lewin, Dr. Kurt.
Lippmann, Walter.
Livingstone, Robert R. Family Designate.
Lockhart, Bruce.
Lockhart, Gordon.
Linowitz, S.
Loudon, Sir John.
Luzzatto, Pieipaolo.
Mackay, Lord, of Clasfern.
Mackay-Tallack, Sir Hugh.
Mackinder, Halford.
MacMillan, Harold.
Matheson, Jardine.
Mazzini, Gueseppi.
McClaughlin, W. E.
McCloy, John J.
McFadyean, Sir Andrew.
McGhee, George.
McMillan, Harold.
Mellon, Andrew.
Mellon, William Larimer or Family Designate.
Meyer, Frank.
Michener, Roland.
Mikovan, Anastas.
Milner, Lord Alfred.
Mitterand, Francois.
Monett, Jean.
Montague, Samuel.
Montefiore, Lord Sebag or Bishop Hugh.
Morgan, John P.
Mott, Stewart.
Mountain, Sir Brian Edward.
Mountain, Sir Dennis.

Mountbatten, Lord Louis.
Munthe, A., or family designate.
Naisbitt, John.
Neeman, Yuval.
Newbigging, David.
Nicols, Lord Nicholas of Bethal.
Norman, Montague.
O'Brien of Lotherby, Lord.
Ogilvie, Angus.
Okita, Saburo.
Oldfield, Sir Morris.
Oppenheimer, Sir Earnest, and successor, Harry.
Ormsby Gore, David (Lord Harlech).
Orsini, Franco Bonacassi.
Ortolani. Umberto.
Ostiguy, J.P.W.
Paley, William S.
Pallavacini.
Palme, Olaf.
Palmerston.
Palmstierna, Jacob.
Pao, Y.K.
Pease, Richard T.
Peccei, Aurellio.
Peek, Sir Edmund.
Pellegreno, Michael, Cardinal.
Perkins, Nelson.
Pestel, Eduard.
Peterson, Rudolph.
Petterson, Peter G.
Petty, John R.
Philip, Prince, Duke of Edinburgh.
Piercy, George.
Pinchott, Gifford.
Pratt, Charles.
Price Waterhouse, Designate.
Radziwall.
Ranier, Prince.
Raskob, John Jacob.
Recanati.
Rees, John Rawlings.

Rees, John.
Rennie, Sir John.
Rettinger, Joseph.
Rhodes, Cecil John.
Rockefeller, David.
Role, Lord Eric of Ipsden.
Rosenthal, Morton.
Rostow, Eugene.
Rothmere, Lord.
Rothschild Elie de or Edmon de and/or Baron RothschiLd
Runcie, Dr.Robert.
Russell, Lord John.
Russell, Sir Bertrand.
Saint Gouers, Jean.
Salisbury, Marquisse de Robert Gascoiugne Cecil. Shelburne, The Salisbury, Lord.
Samuel, Sir Marcus.
Sandberg, M. G.
Sarnoff, Robert.
Schmidheiny, Stephan or alternate brothers Thomas, Alexander.
Schoenberg, Andrew.
Schroeder.
Schultz, George.
Schwartzenburg, E.
Shawcross, Sir Hartley.
Sheridan, Walter.
Shiloach, Rubin.
Silitoe, Sir Percy.
Simon, William.
Sloan, Alfred P.
Smuts, Jan.
Spelman.
Sproull, Robert.
Stals, Dr. C.
Stamp, Lord Family designate.
Steel, David.
Stiger, George.
Strathmore, Lord.
Strong, Sir Kenneth.
Strong, Maurice.

Sutherland.
Swathling, Lord.
Swire, J. K.
Tasse, G. Or Family Designate.
Temple, Sir R.
Thompson, William Boyce.
Thompson, Lord.
Thyssen-Bornamisza, Baron Hans Henrich.
Trevelyn, Lord Humphrey.
Turner, Sir Mark.
Turner, Ted.
Tyron, Lord.
Urquidi, Victor.
Van Den Broek, H.
Vanderbilt.
Vance, Cyrus.
Verity, William C.
Vesty, Lord Amuel.
Vickers, Sir Geoffrey.
Villiers, Gerald Hyde family alternate.
Volpi, Count.
von Finck, Baron August.
von Hapsburg, Archduke Otto, House of Hapsburg-Lorraine.
Von Thurn and Taxis, Max.
Wallenberg, Peter or Family Designate.
Wang, Kwan Cheng, Dr.
Warburg, S. C.
Ward Jackson, Lady Barbara.
Warner, Rawleigh.
Warnke, Paul.
Warren, Earl.
Watson, Thomas.
Webb, Sydney.
Weill, David.
Weill, Dr. Andrew.
Weinberger, Sir Caspar.
Weizman, Chaim.
Wells, H. G.
Wheetman, Pearson (Lord Cowdray).
White, Sir Dick Goldsmith.
Whitney, Straight.

Wiseman, Sir William.
Wittelsbach.
Wolfson, Sir Isaac.
Wood, Charles.
Young, Owen.

CONSPIRATORS' HIERARCHY: THE COMMITTEE OF 300
BIBLIOGRAPHY, SUMMARIES AND NOTES

1980'S PROJECT, Vance, Cyrus and Yankelovich, Daniel.

1984, Orwell, George.

AFTER TWENTY YEARS: THE DECLINE OF NATO AND THE SEARCH FOR A NEW POLICY IN EUROPE, Raskin, Marcus and Barnett, Richard.

AIR WAR AND STRESS, Janus, Irving.

AN AMERICAN COMPANY; THE TRAGEDY OF UNITED FRUIT, Scammel, Henry and McCann, Thomas.

AN INTRODUCTlON TO THE PRINCIPLES AND MORALS OF LEGISLATION, Bentham, Jeremy. In this 1780 work Bentham claimed that "nature has placed mankind under the governance of two sovereign masters, pain and pleasure... They govern us in all we do." Bentham went on to justify the horrors of the Jacobin terrorists in the French Revolution.

ANNUAL REPORT OF BANK LEUMI, 1977.

AT THAT POINT IN TIME: THE INSIDE STORY OF THE SENATE WATERGATE COMMITTEE, Thompson, Fred. I was told where to find Thompson, who was the Minority Counsel on the Ervin Committee, by Bernard Barker, one of the Watergate Burglars. My meeting with Barker took place outside an A&P supermarket quite close to the Coral Gables Country Club in Coral Gables, Florida. Barker said Thompson was with his law partner who was on a short visit to his mother in Coral Gables, which was only about five minutes away from the A&P Supermarket. I went there and met Thompson who expressed his disappointment over the way Ervin had imposed such severe restrictions on evidence he, Thompson, could admit.

BAKU AN EVENTFUL HISTORY, Henry, J. D.

BEASTS OF THE APOCALYPSE, O'Grady, Olivia Maria. This remarkable book gives details about a large number of historical figures, including William C. Bullitt, who conspired with Lloyd George to pull the rug out from under White Russian Generals Denekin and Rangle at a time when they had the Bolshevik Red Army on the very brink of defeat. It also gives a great deal of information about the utterly corrupt Petroleum Industry. Of particular interest is the information it provides on Sir Moses Montefiore, of the ancient Venetian Black Nobility Montefiores.

BRAVE NEW WORLD, Aldous Huxley.

BRITISH OPIUM POLICY IN CHINA, Owen, David Edward.

BRITISH OPIUM POLICY, F. S. Turner.

CECIL RHODES, Flint, John.

CECIL RHODES, THE ANATOMY OF AN EMPIRE, Marlow, John.

CONFERENCE ON TRANSATLANTIC IMBALANCE AN COLLABORATION, Rappaport, Dr. Anatol.

CONVERSATIONS WITH DZERZHINSKY, Reilly, Sydney. In British Intelligence documents not published.

CREATING A PARTICULAR BEHAVIORAL STRUCTURE, Cartwright, Dorwin.

CRYSTALIZING PUBLIC OPINION, Bernays, Edward.

DEMOCRATIC IDEALS AND REALITY, Mackinder, Halford.

ERVIN, SENATOR SAM. Apart from obstructing the introduction of vital evidence in the Watergate hearings, Ervin, in my opinion, while holding himself out as a Constitutional authority, consistently betrayed this nation by opposing aid to church schools, citing the judicial opinions in the Everson case. Ervin, a Scottish Rite Freemason—which in my opinion is why he was given the Watergate Committee chair, was eventually honored receiving the

prestigious Scottish Rite "Individual Right's Support" award. In 1973, Ervin held a luncheon in the Senate Dining Room in honor of Sovereign Grand Commander Clausen.

EVERSON VS. BOARD OF EDUCATION, 33O U.S. I, 1947.

FRANKFURTER PAPERS, Box 99 and Box 125, "HUGO BLACK CORRESPONDENCE."

GNOSTICISM, MAMCHEANISM, CATHARISM, The New Columbia Encyclopedia.

GOALS OF MANLL, Lazlo, Ernin.

GOD'S BANKER, Cornwell, Rupert. This book gave some insight into P2 and the murder of Roberto Calvi—P2 Masonry.

HUMAN QUALITY, Peccei, A.

INTERNATIONAL JOURNAL OF ELECTRONICS.

INTRODUCTION TO THE SOCIOLOGY OF MUSIC, Adorno, Theo. Adorno was kicked out of Germany by Hitler because of his Cult of Dionysus music experiments. He was moved to England by the Oppenheimers where the British royal family gave him facilities at Gordonstoun School and their support. It was here that Adorno perfected "Beatlemusic Rock," "Punk Rock" "Heavy Metal Rock" and all of the decadent clamor that passes for music today. It is worthy of note that the name "The Beatles" was chosen to show a connection between modern rock, the Isis cult and the Scarab Beatle, a religious symbol of ancient Egypt.

INVASION FROM MARS, Cantril. In this work Cantril analyzes the behavior patterns of people who fled in panic following the Orson Wells experiment in mass hysteria, using H.G Wells' "WAR OF THE WORLDS."

INVESTIGATION OF THE KENNEDY ASSASSINATION, THE UNCOMMISSIONED REPORT ON JIM GARRISON FINDINGS. Paris, Flammonde.

IPS REVISITED, Coleman, Dr. John.

ISIS UNVEILED, A MASTER KEY TO THE ANCIENT AND MODERN SCIENCE AND THEOLOGY, Blavatsky, Madame Helena.

JOHN JACOB ASTOR, BUSINESSMAN, Porter, Kenneth Wiggins.

JUSTICE BLACK'S PAPERS, Box 25, General Correspondence, Davies.

KING MAKERS, KING BREAKERS, THE STORY OF THE CECIL FAMILY, Coleman, Dr. John.

LIBERATION THEOLOGY. Information was drawn from work by Juan Luis Segundo, who in turn drew heavily upon the writings of Karl Marx. Segundo savagely attacked the Catholic Church instruction against Liberation Theology as found in "Instruction on Certain Aspects of the 'Theology of Liberation'" published August 6th, 1984.

LIES CLEARER THAN TRUTH, Barnett, Richard (Founder member of IPS).

McCalls Magazine, January 1983.

McGRAW HILL GROUP, ASSOCIATED PRESS. Portions of reports from 28 magazines owned by McGraw Hill, and AP stories.

MEMOIRS OF A BRITISH AGENT, Lockhart, Bruce. In this book we are told how the Bolshevik Revolution was controlled out of London. Lockhart was Lord Milner's representative who went to Russia to watch over Milner's investment in Lenin and Trotsky. Lockhart had access to Lenin and Trotsky at short notice even though Lenin frequently had a waiting room full of high-ranking officials and foreign delegates, some having been waiting to see him for as long as five days. Yet Lockhart never had to wait more than a few hours to see either man. Lockhart carried a letter signed by Trotsky informing all Bolshevik officials that Lockhart had special status and should be given the utmost cooperation at all times.

MIND GAMES, Murphy, Michael.

MISCELLANEOUS OLD RECORDS, India House Documents, London.

MK ULTRA LSD EXPERIMENT, CIA Files 1953-1957.

MR. WILLIAM CECIL AND QUEEN ELIZABETH, Read, Conyers.

MURDER, Anslinger, Henry. Anslinger was at one time the Number 1 agent in the Drug Enforcement Agency and his book is highly critical of the so-called war on drugs allegedly being waged by the U.S. Government.

MY FATHER, A REMEMBRANCE, Black, Hugo L., Jr.

NATIONAL COUNCIL OF CHURCHES, Josephson, Emmanuel in his book "ROCKEFELLER, INTERNATIONALIST."

OIL IMPERIALISM, THE INTERNATIONAL STRUGGLE FOR PETROLEUM, Fischer, Louis.

PAPERS OF SIR GEORGE BIRDWOOD, India House Documents, London.

PATTERNS IN EASDEA TITLE I READING ACHIEVEMENT TESTS, Stanford Research Institute.

POPULATION BOMB, Erlich, Paul.

PROFESSOR FREDERICK WELLS WILLIAMSON, India House Documents, London.

PUBLIC AGENDA FOUNDATION. Founded in 1975 by Cyrus Vance and Daniel Yankelovich.

PUBLIC OPINION, Lippmann, Walter.

REVOLUTION THROUGH TECHNOLOGY, Coudenhove Kalergi, Count.

ROCKEFELLER, INTERNATIONALIST. Josephson details how the Rockefellers used their wealth to penetrate the Christian Church in America and how they later used their Number 1 agent, John Foster Dulles—who was related to them—to maintain their grip on every aspect of church life in this country.

ROOM 3603, Hyde, Montgomery. The book gives some detail about M16 British Intelligence operations run by Sir William Stephenson out of the RCA Building in New York; but, as is usual with "cover stories," the REAL events have been omitted.

SPECIAL RELATIONSHIPS: AMERICA IN PEACE AND WAR, Wheeler-Bennet, Sir John.

STEPS TO THE ECOLOGY OF THE MIND, Bateson, Gregory. Bateson was one of the Tavistock new-science scientists in the top five at Tavistock and later did much to formulate and manage the 46-year war on America conducted by Tavistock.

STERLING DRUG. William C. Bullitt was once on its board of directors and was also on the board of I.G. Farben.

TECHNOTRONIC ERA, Brzezinski, Z.

TERRORISM IN THE UNITED STATES INCLUDING ATTACKS ON U.S. INTELLIGENCE AGENCIES: FBI Files # 100-447935, #100-447735, and #100-446784.

THE CAIRO DOCUMENTS, Haikal, Mohammed. Haikal was the grand old man of Egyptian journalism, and he was present at the interview given to Chou En-lai by Nasser in which the Chinese leader vowed to "get even" with Britain and the U.S over their opium trade in China.

THE CHASM AHEAD, Peccei, A.

THE DIARIES OF SIR BRUCE LOCKHART, Lockhart, Bruce.

THE ENGINEERING OF CONSENT, Bernays. In this 1955 book, Bernays lays out the modus operandi of how to persuade

targeted groups to change their minds on important issues that can and do alter the national direction of a country. The book also deals with the unleashing of psychiatric shock troops such as we see in lesbian and homosexual organizations, environmental groups, abortion rights groups and the like. "Psychiatric shock troops" was a concept developed by John Rawlings Reese, the founder of the Tavistock Institute of Human Relations.

THE FEDERAL BUDGET AND SOCIAL RECONSTRUCTION, IPS Fellows Raskin and Barnett. A list of members of Congress who asked IPS to produce the alternative budget study and/or supported it is too long to include here but contained such prominent names as Tom Harkness, Henry Ruess, Patricia Schroeder, Les Aspin, Ted Weiss, Don Edwards, Barbara Mikulski, Mary Rose Oakar, Ronald Dellums and Peter Rodino.

THE HUXLEYS, Clark.

THE IMPERIAL DRUG TRADE, Rowntree.

THE JESUITS, Martin, Malachi.

THE LATER CECILS, Rose, Kenneth.

THE LEGACY OF MALTHUS, Chase, Allan.

THE MANAGEMENT OF SUSTAINABLE GROWTH, Cleveland, Harlan. Cleveland was commissioned by NATO to report on just how far the Club of Rome's Post Industrial

Society-Zero Growth blueprint to wreck the industrial base of the United States had succeeded. This shocking document should be read by every patriotic American who feels an urgent need for an explanation as to why the U.S. is in a deep economic depression at the end of 1991.

THE MEN WHO RULED INDIA, Woodruff, Philip.

THE OPEN CONSPIRACY, Wells, H. G. In this work, Wells describes how in the New World Order (which he calls the New Republic) "useless eaters," excess population, will be gotten rid of:

"The men of the New Republic will not be squeamish either in facing or inflicting death.... They will have an ideal that will make killing worthwhile; like Abraham, they will have the faith to kill, and they will have no superstitions about death.... They will hold, I anticipate, that a certain portion of the population exists only on sufferance out of pity and patience, and, on the understanding that they do not propagate, and I do not foresee any reason to oppose that they will not hesitate to kill when that sufferance is abused.... All such killings will be done with an opiate.... If deterrent punishments are used at all in the code of the future, the deterrent shall be neither death, nor mutilation of the body...but good scientifically caused pain." The United States has a very large contingent of Wells converts who would not hesitate to follow the dictates of Wells, once the New World Order becomes a reality. Walter Lippmann was one of Wells' most ardent disciples.

THE POLITICS OF EXPERIENCE, Laing, R.D. Laing was the Staff Psychologist at Tavistock and, under Andrew Schofield, a member of the Governing Council.

THE POLITICS OF HEROIN IN SOUTH EAST ASIA, McCoy, Alfred W., Read, C.B and Adams, Leonard P.

THE PROBLEM OF CHINA, Russell, Bertrand.

THE PUGWASH CONFEREES, Bertrand Russell. In the early 1950's Russell led a movement urging a nuclear attack on Russia. When it was discovered, Stalin warned that he would not hesitate to retaliate in kind. This led to a quick "rethink" on he part of Russell, who almost overnight became a pacifist thus was born the "Ban the Bomb" Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament (CND) out of which arose the Pugwash antinuclear scientists. In 1957 the first group met at the home of Cyrus Eaton in Nova Scotia, a long-time American Communist. The Pugwash Conferees dedicated themselves to anti-nuclear and environmental issues and were a thorn in the side of U.S. efforts to develop nuclear weapons.

THE ROUND TABLE MOVEMENT AND IMPERIAL UNION, Kendle, John.

THE STRUCTURE OF THE POPULAR MUSIC INDUSTRY; THE FILTERING PROCESS WHEREBY RECORDS ARE SELECTED FOR PUBLIC CONSUMPTION, Institute for Social Research. This work explains how "Hit Parades," "The Top Ten"—now expanded to the "Top Forty"—and other charades are constructed to deceive listeners and convince them what they hear is what "THEY" like!

THE WORKS OF JEREMY BENTHAM, Bowering, John. Bentham was the liberal of his day and the agent for Lord Shelburne, British Prime Minister at the end of the American War of Independence. Bentham believed that man was no more than a common animal, and Bentham's theories were later written up by his protege, David Hume. Writing about instinct in animals Hume said, "...which we are so apt to admire as extraordinary and inexplicable. But our wonder will perhaps cease or diminish when we consider that the experimental reasoning itself which we possess in common with beasts, and upon which the whole conduct of life depends, is nothing but a species of instinct, or mechanical power that acts in us unknown to ourselves.... Though the instincts be different, yet still it is an instinct."

TIME PERSPECTIVE AND MORALE, Levin B.

TOWARD A HUMANISTIC PSYCHOLOGY, Cantril.

TREND REPORT, Naisbitt, John.

U.S. CONGRESS, HOUSE COMMITTEE ON INTERNAL SECURITY, REPORTING ON THE INSTITUTE FOR POLICY STUDIES (IPS) AND THE PENTAGON PAPERS. In the spring of 1970, FBI operative William McDermott went to see Richard Best, who at that time was Rand's top security officer, to warn him of the possibility that Ellsberg had removed Vietnam study papers done by Rand and had copied them outside of Rand premises. Best took McDermott to see Dr. Harry Rowan who headed Rand and who was also one of Ellsberg's closest friends. Rowan told the FBI that a Defense Department inquiry was going on and on his assurance, the FBI apparently dropped its investigation of Ellsberg. In fact, no inquiry was in progress, nor did the DoD ever conduct one. Ellsberg retained his security clearance at Rand and blatantly went on removing and copying Vietnam War documents right up to the

time of his exposure during the Pentagon Papers affair which rocked the Nixon Administration to its foundations.

UNDERSTANDING MAN'S SOCIAL BEHAVIOR, Cantril. Cantril was primarily responsible for establishing the Association for Humanistic Psychology based in San Francisco that taught Tavistock methods. It is in institutions of this type that we find the lines between pure science and social engineering become totally obliterated. The term "social engineering" covers every aspect of methods used by Tavistock to bring about massive charges in group orientation toward social, economic, religious and political events and brainwashing of target groups who then believe that opinions expressed and viewpoints taken are their own. Selected individuals underwent the same Tavistockian treatment, resulting in major shifts in personality and behavior. The effect of this on the national scene was, and still is, devastating and is one of the principal factors in bringing the United States into the twilight, decline and fall state-of-being in which the country finds itself at the close of 1991. I did a report on this national condition under the title: "Twilight, Decline and Fall of the United States of America" which was published in l987. The Association for Human Psychology was founded by Abraham Maselov in l957 as a Club of Rome project. Another Tavistock-Club of Rome Commissioned opinion-making research center was established by Risis Likhert and Ronald Lippert who called it The Center for Research in the Utilization of Scientific Knowledge. The facility was under the directorship of Club of Rome's Donald Michael. The center drew heavily on the Office of Public Opinion Research established at Princeton University in l940. It was from here that Cantril taught many of the techniques used by today's pollsters-opinion makers.

UNPUBLISHED LETTERS, Kipling, Rudyard. Kipling was a Wells disciple and, like Wells, believed in Fascism, as a means of world control. Kipling adopted the Running Cross as his personal emblem. The Running Cross was later adopted by Hitler and with slight modifications became known as the swastika.

UNPUBLISHED LETTERS, Wells, H. G. Gives interesting details of how Wells sold the rights to "WAR OF THE WORLDS" to RCA.

WHO OWNS MONTREAL, Aubin, Henry.

WHO'S WHO IN CANADA, several editions.

"Varo Edition"

THE CASE FOR THE

UFO

UNIDENTIFIED FLYING OBJECT

BY M. K. JESSUP

Transcribed by
The Quantum Future Group
Castelnau-Barbarens, France
2003

THE CASE FOR THE

U F O

Unidentified Flying Objects

By M.K. Jessup

PREFACE

On the evening of April 20, 1959, an astronomer committed suicide in Dade County Park, Florida. Inhaling automobile exhaust fumes, which he had introduced from the tail pipe through a hose into his station wagon, he died in the same academic obscurity in which he had lived, unheralded and almost unrecognized in his discipline.

Ironically, the scientist's only public recognition had come from lay people, who had read his series of four books about unidentified flying objects.

Morris K. Jessup's first book, *The Case For the UFO,* had tended to alienate him from his colleagues, though it came and went with relatively few sales. Its publisher sold it off to second-hand bookstores at $1.00 each. Today it brings $25.00 or better per copy, if you can find one.

It was a paperback edition of the same book, published in 1955 by Bantam Books that enmeshed Jessup in one of the most bizarre mysteries in UFO history. An annotated reprint of the paperback was laboriously typed out on offset stencils and printed in a very small run by a Garland, Texas manufacturing company which produced equipment for the military.

Each page was run through the small office duplicator twice, once with black ink for the regular text of the book, then once again with red ink, the latter reproducing the mysterious annotations by three men, who may have been gypsies, hoaxters, or space people living among men. The spiral bound 8 ½" X 11" volume, containing more that 200 pages, became known as *The Annotated Edition*. The reprint quickly became legend. A few civilian UFO enthusiasts claimed to have seen copies, and it was rumored that a few close associates of the late Mr. Jessup possessed copies. Many people claimed it simply had never existed.

Because you are now holding a virtually exact facsimile of *The Annotated Edition* in your hands, it is most obvious that the book existed. But the big mystery still remains: why did a Government contractor go to so much trouble to reprint a book that had been rejected by the scientific community, and further to include mysterious letters to the author and even more bizarre annotations? And with this mystery goes the suspicion that the book may have been printed by the manufacturer at the request of the military, which implies Government interest in some of the weirdest aspects of "Flying Saucer" study.

Jessup's Background

Not much detail is known of Jessup's life before he emerged as one of the early writers on UFOs, mainly because nobody has taken the trouble to do the needed research. Probably the most that Ufology knows about him prior to his involvement with flying saucers is contained on the jacket flap of his first book.

He is described as having been an instructor in astronomy and mathematics at the University of Michigan and Drake University. The Jacket copy also notes that Jessup completed his thesis for the doctorate degree in astro-physics at the University of Michigan, though it does not state whether on not he was awarded the actual degree. In the academic business, usually the thesis is the thing that comes

last, and is the final step in the awarding of the doctorate degree. Sometimes these doctoral candidates are deferentially called "Doctor" by their associates, though it cannot be used officially by them. This would seem to be the case of Jessup, who was often addressed as "Dr. Jessup", but who never used the title in correspondence, nor on the covers or title pages of his four books. Very likely Jessup was never actually awarded the degree.

Apparently, his thesis consisted of a report on his research program which (again according to the book jacket) resulted in several thousand discoveries of physical double-stars "which are now catalogued in the *Memoirs of the Royal Astronomical Society* of London".

The short biography also lists other important research activities by Jessup. It indicates that he was assigned by the United State Department of Agriculture to study the sources of crude rubber in the headwaters of the Amazon, though no date is given. He made archeological studies of the Maya in the jungles of Central America for the Carnegie Institute of Washington.

Without identifying the source of sponsorship or financing, the jacket states that he explored Inca ruins in Peru, and concluded that the stonework he found there had been "erected by the levitating power of space ships in antediluvian times". Also:

"Mr. Jessup's latest explorations have taken him to the high plateau of Mexico where he has discovered an extensive group of craters. They are as large as, and similar to, the mysterious lunar craters Linne and Hyginus N, and he believes them to have been made by objects from space. They are presently under study by means of aerial photography and the study will be ready for publication in approximately eighteen months".

Apparently the further exploration of the craters was never carried out. According to James W. Moseley, former publisher of Saucer News, Jessup sought university, foundation and private sponsorship of the project, but was unsuccessful in gaining sufficient interest and funds.

The Allende Letters

The mystery of the annotated paperback edition of *The Case for the UFO* was preceded by a series of strange letters from Carlos Miguel Allende addressed to Jessup. Two of these, reproduced as part of the *Annotated Edition*, appear in the following pages. The letters claimed that as a result of a strange experiment at sea utilizing principles of Einstein's Unified Field Theory, a destroyer and all its crew became invisible during October, 1943.

"The Field was effective in an oblate spheroidal shape," Allende wrote. He added that "any person within that sphere became vague in form, and that as a result of the experiment some of the crew went insane. Further horrifying aspects of the alleged experiment are detailed in the two letters (See Appendix).

The Allende letters became connected with *The Annotated Edition* when the Varo Manufacturing Company evidently got in touch with Jessup in regard to the latter.

Varo's unusual involvement in the mystery began a few months after February 1956, In April of that year Admiral N. Furth, Chief of the Office of Naval Research, Washington D.C., received a manila envelope postmarked Seminole, a small town in Texas. Written across its face was the notation "Happy Easter". When Furth opened the envelope he found a copy of the Jessup paperback. We are not certain of Furth's reactions, but we can assume that he thumbed through the book and that his interest was piqued by a series of notes, interjections, underscorings, etc., in three colors of ink, apparently written by three different people. Only the name of one of the authors of the annotations appeared in the notes, that of "Jemi".

The paperback had apparently been passed through the hands of the strange annotators several times. This conclusion could be drawn from the fact that the notes indicated discussions between two or all three of the men, with questions answered, and places where parts of a note had been marked through, underlined, or added to by one or both of the other men. Some had been deleted by marking through.

The notes had a tone of absolute weirdness. Sometimes they agreed with Jessup's original text; sometimes they contradicted it, as they referred to two types of people living in space. They specified two habitats for the space people: underseas, and what they termed the "stasis neutral", the latter term apparently in agreement with Jessup's exposition on points of neutral gravity in space.

They mentioned the building of undersea cities and identified two groups of spacemen, "L-M's" and "S-M's". The "L-M's" were designated as peaceful, the "S-M's" as sinister.

Some of the terms used would have been familiar to any ufologist of the 1950's, yet others expressed an alien-like vocabulary which had never been previously used in "saucer" literature.

Some of the terms were: Mothership, home-ship, dead-ship, great ark, great bombardment, great return, great war, little-men, force-fields, deep freezes, measure markers, scout ships, magnetic and gravity fields, sheet of diamond, cosmic rays, force cutters, inlay work, clear-talk, telepathing, burning "coat", nodes, vortice, magnetic "net".

They explained what happened to people and to ships and planes which had disappeared, as discussed in Jessup's original text – and elaborated upon the origin of odd storms and clouds, objects falling from the sky, strange marks and footprints, and other matters Jessup wrote about.

Two Theories

We do not know Admiral Furth's personal reaction to the strangely marked paperback. The history of this matter, again from a confidential source, next surfaces several months later, in July or August of the same year, when the paperback was passed on to Major Darrel L. Ritter, U.S.M.C., Aeronautical Project Officer of ONR. Soon afterward, and no date is available, Captain Sidney Sherby joined ONR, and, along with Commander George W. Hoover, Special Projects Officer, ONR, indicated interest in the book.

Sherby and Hoover were deeply involved in satellite development, and supervising the systems which would later place the first U.S. satellite into orbit. Some UFO buffs have expressed the belief that they were also coordinating gravity research, and that this was the reason for their interest.

The book was evidently taken to the Varo firm by Sherby, possibly in conjunction with Hoover. At that time, Varo was deeply involved in aero-space design and manufacturing for the military. One division was called "Military Assistance", which may have coordinated the firm's activities with the government, and occasionally performed personal services for military personnel (as any commercial organization might do).

At any rate, the Military Assistance Division agreed to run off a limited number of copies of the annotated book, and it was laboriously typed out my Miss Michael Ann Dunn, personal secretary to the president of the company, a Mr. Stanton. (Incidentally, Miss Dunn no longer is employed by Varo. Varo says that personnel records fails to find a record of her employment!)

Two theories evolve as to Varo's role in publishing the Annotated Edition:

(1) Top military brass passed this down through the lower echelon, thus avoiding the responsibility should there be any publicity, and it was published surreptitiously by Varo, the personnel of which may have had top military security clearance – avoiding sending it to a government printing source, where word might leak out. The Military was interested in applications of the notes to secret research being carried out by the U.S. After printing, the limited edition could be passed around to interested persons, and distributed to other contractors engaged in secret military development.

(2) Lower echelon officers, such as Sherby, had deep personal interests in the UFO mystery, and wanted copies to give to other Naval personnel who held similar interests. As a matter of personal interest, they asked the Varo company to make the reprint, knowing that the contractor would comply, as one of the many personal favors they may have extended to military personnel.

The latter of these alternatives is the writer's best guess. No great degree of secrecy seemed to have been employed. Jessup was called in by Varo and shown the book, and nothing in his subsequent writings or reported conversations indicates he was requested to maintain secrecy. Permission was obtained both from the author and the publisher, Citadel Press, to reproduce the text of the original book. Jessup was given several copies, probably the source of the copies a few UFO researchers reportedly possess.

One such copy, according to Riley H. Crabb, Director of Borderland Sciences Research, has been given to the late Bryant H. Reeves, author of two books published by Ray Palmer.

Crabb told me recently that he saw the *Varo Edition* while visiting Reeves at his home in Virginia Beach. Reeves agreed to lend the volume for a brief period, and Crabb, who told me he felt that both he and Reeves were "under surveillance", hesitated to carry it with him back to his home in California. He posted it to himself, but it was lost in the mails.

A tradition of bad luck or strange circumstances is connected with possession of the *Varo Edition*. One person's home, along with the book, was destroyed by fire shortly after he acquired a copy. Capt.

Edward J. Ruppelt, former head of Project Bluebook, suffered a fatal heart attack, allegedly shortly after he read a borrowed copy. Robert Loftin, UFO author, who also died prematurely, was another rumored owner of the book. Of course, except for the deaths, thus is purely hearsay, and, if true, could have been the result of coincidence.

Regardless of the motivation behind printing the *Annotated Edition*, neither Varo nor the military could foresee the zeal of civilian UFO research in its probing of the matter. Intrigued by the mystery, and questioning the untimely death of Jessup, Ufologists began delving. At least two national magazine articles explored Jessup's death and his connection with the book.

Our Personal Involvement

Our personal involvement with the mystery surrounding Jessup began after we heard of his suicide and began looking into rumors involving the above matters. Our findings became the basis for a book, *The Strange Case of Dr. M.K. Jessup*, published in 1963 by Saucerian Books, and reprinted in 1965 and 1967.

The book contained a chapter about *The Annotated Edition* and reproduced the Preface with annotations, though not in facsimile. The Preface was provided by Riley Crabb of the Borderland Sciences Research Associates Foundation, Inc. Our interest continued, though we had never seen an actual copy of *The Annotated Edition*, and often doubted that it really existed.

One of our correspondents claimed to possess the complete volume in photocopy form and sent us second generation copies of a few pages to prove his point. Brad Steiger provided miniature reproductions of three actual pages to illustrate an article, "Fantastic Key to the Flying Saucer Mystery," in *Saga* magazine, November, 1967. He noted that the reproductions were from a microfilm copy owned by Stephen Yankee.

We finally acquired one of the rare original copies in 1971 from a friend of the late Mr. Jessup, to whom he had given one of the few copies supplied him by its publisher. Observing the clarity of the printing and the good physical condition of our copy we began exploring the idea of a facsimile reprint.

I am president of a small publishing company, Saucerian Press, Inc., which specializes in limited editions of works pertaining to unidentified flying objects. Sales of these books rarely exceed 2,000 copies, and the main purpose of the publisher is to provide distribution for works, sales of which do not warrant general trade publication.

Publishing a facsimile of *The Annotated Edition* would present problems. It contained about twice the number of pages of our usual publications; it demanded expensive separation negatives and printing, and its appeal would be much more limited than our usual books. It would demand a run of no more than 500 copies and would have to sell at a relatively high price. While prudence urged that the idea be dropped, two overwhelming considerations urged us on. The original edition of *The Case For the UFO* had long been out of print, was becoming very rare among antiquarian dealers. *The Annotated Edition* was almost legendary, surrounded by excessive mystery and controversy, and unavailable to serious students of the UFO mystery, either in libraries or by their own personal acquisition.

In July 1972, Saucerian Press made the positive decision to publish this edition.

The Facsimile Edition

We have reproduced the original as faithfully as possible, within the photo-mechanical means available to us.

The body of the facsimile edition begins with the Introduction on the following page. No information as to the authorship of this Introduction is given in the original. It is, however, competently done, helps to explain what is to follow and comments further upon the arrangement of the volume.

In our original copy the Appendix is bound between the original Introduction to Jessup's text and Part One of the body of the book. While this could be a mistake in binding, the Appendix, consisting of the two Allende letters, does help set the tone and scene for *The Annotated Edition* and most likely was bound there on purpose. Not having a second coy for comparison, we have included the Appendix at the same place, even though this represents a radical placement.

The writer is happy that this work is going to be printed. He believes it will represent a contribution to the literature of Ufology, some minor monument to those strange and wonderful times that began with Kenneth Arnold in 1947.

Gray Barker
July, 1973

INTRODUCTION

Notations that imply intimate knowledge of UFO's their means of motion, their origin, background, history, and habits of beings occupying UFO's provide an interesting subject for investigation. Such notations were found in a copy of the paperback edition of M.K. Jessup's "Case for the UFO's". Because of the importance which we attach to the possibility of discovering clues to the nature of gravity, no possible item, however disreputable from the point of view of classical science, should be overlooked.

The annotated copy, addressed to Admiral N. Furth, Chief, Office of Naval Research, Washington 25, D.C., came in a manila envelope postmarked Seminole, Texas, 1955. Written across the face of the envelope in ink was "Happy Easter." In July or August of that year the book appeared in the incoming correspondence of Major Darrell L. Ritter, U.S.M.C. Aeronautical Project Office in ONR. When Captain Sidney Sherby reported aboard at ONR he obtained the book from Major Ritter. Captain Sherby and Commander George W. Hoover, Special Projects Officer, ONR indicated direct interest in some of the material therein.

Varo Mfg. Co., Garland, Texas, offered to re-publish the book together with all notations in a very limited edition as a prelude to consideration of further pursuit of this unconventional material.

Miss Michael Ann Dunn has undertaken the task of rewriting this book including all notes, interjections, underscoring, and etc. By form, position, color, and footnotes as much of the meaning and relationships of the original annotated copy is retained as possible. No attempt has been made, with ultra violet light or other methods, to read material which has been crossed out by one of the correspondents.

It appears that these notes were written by three persons. The use of three distinct colors of ink--blue, blue-violet, and blue-green-- and the difference in handwriting lead to this conclusion. Hereafter they will be referred to as **Mr. A,** ***Mr. B,*** and **Jemi.**

It is assumed that the third person was Jemi because of the direct use of "Jemi" in salutations and references to that name by **Mr. A (Green)** and ***Mr. B (Blue)*** throughout the book. There are many, some of which appear on pages 2, 81, 122, 126, and 162 in the original book. It is possible of course that it is merely a salutation.

It is possible that two of these men are twins. There are two references to this word. They appear on page 6 and page 81 of the original book. The assumption that Mr. A is one of the twins may be correct. On page 81, Mr. A has written and marked through "…and I Do Not know How this came to Pass, Jemi." Then he has written, "I remember, My twin…". On page 6 he writes in an apparent answer to Mr. B, "No, My twin…" We cannot be sure of the other twin.

It is probable that these men are Gypsies. In the closing pages of the book Mr. B says, "…only a Gypsy will tell another of that catastrophe. And we are a discredited people, ages ago. Hah! Yet, man wonders where "we" come from…" On page 130 Mr. A. says, "…ours is a way of life, time proven & happy. We have nothing, own nothing except our music & philosophy & are happy." On page 76 Mr. says "Show this to a Brother Gypsy…" On Page 158 the reference to the word "we" by Mr. A could refer to the "discredited people". Charles G. Leland in his book "English Gipsies and Their Language" states that the Gypsies call each other brother and sister, and are not in the habit of admitting to their fellowship people of a different blood and with whom they have no sympathy. This could explain the usage of the term in the closing notes "My Dear Bothers" and perhaps the repeated reference to "vain humankind."

This book was apparently passed through the hands of these men several or many times. This conclusion is drawn from the fact that there are discussions between two or all three of the men, questions answered, and places where parts of a note have been marked through, underlined, or added to by one or both of the other men. Some have been deleted by marking through.

Shortly after the publication of his book, Mr. Jessup received a letter from a Carlos Miguel Allende. (A copy of this letter and the one that followed appear in the appendix.) Mr. Jessup said that he "had felt from the first that this man was the one who mailed the book to the Navy.." Consideration of the handwriting, style, content, and phraseology of both the notes and letter show a distinct possibility that the letter was written by Mr. A. This conclusion comes from the notes by Mr. A on page 130, 117, and 150. These references to Farraday, Hob-mail or cleated shoes, and catching fire are nearly the same as the ones in the letter.

The letter was received by Mr. Jessup in Miami, on Friday January 13, 1956. It was postmarked Gainesville, Texas, and mailed in an envelope of the Turner Hotel, Gainesville. It is copied as nearly verbatim as possible.

Mr. Jessup received a second letter from Mr. Allende postmarked Du Bois, Pennsylvania, May 25, 1956. Due to peculiar spelling and other idiosyncrasies there can be little doubt that Mr. A. and Carlos Allende are the same person.

These men have been careless in their spelling, capitalization, punctuation and sentence structure; though consistency indicates adherence to custom, perhaps dictated by their original language. The notes are arranged as close to the original as possible. In cases where a word or group of words could not be deciphered footnotes were used.

It might seem that the underscore in the book was in the form of a code or that if read separately that it would have a meaning of its own. Superficial examination has failed to disclose such a code. The underscored text usually refer to the notes by the same man.

The distinction between the original book and the handwritten additions to it is made by the use of red and black type. Black type indicates the type of the original book. Red type indicates any addition made in handwriting by Mr. A, Mr. B. or Jemi to the original.

The placement of the notes indicates the paragraph to which they refer, or to their precise position in the book.

The page numbers of the original book are denoted in parenthesis. The matter on the page numbered follows the number. The page numbers of this edition appear at the bottom of each page.

It had been necessary to disregard the italics of the original.

It might be helpful for you to know a little about the nature of the notes before you begin reading this book. The notes refer to two types of people living in space. Specifically the "stasis neutral" and the undersea are mentioned as habitats. They seem to live in both interchangeably. The building of undersea cities is mentioned. Many different kinds of ships are used as transportation. These two peoples, races or whatever they may be called, are referred to over and over again. They are called L-M's and S-Ms. The L-M's seem to be peaceful; the S-M's are not. It seems that the annotations are inclined toward the L-M's as they speak more kindly of them that the S-M's.

Terms such as: mothership, home-ship, dead-ship, Great ark, great bombardment, great return, great war, little-men, force-fields, deep freezes, undersea building, measure markers, scout ships, magnetic and gravity fields, sheets of diamond, cosmic rays, force cutters, undersea explorers, inlay work, clear-talk, telepathing, burning "coat", nodes, vortice, magnetic "net", and many others are used quite naturally by these men. They explain how, why, and what happens to people, ships, and planes that have disappeared. They explain the origin of odd storms and clouds, objects falling from the sky, strange marks and footprints, and other things which we have not solved.

These men seem to feel that it is too late for man to obtain space flight. They feel that mankind could not cope with "those mind wrecking conditions that space and sea contain" for mankind is to

egotistical, values too much the material, wars over mer parcels of the planet, is too filled with jealously, and lacks true brotherhood.

How much truth is there in this? That cannot be answered. It is evident that these men provide some very intriguing explanations; explanations that may be worth consideration.

The subject of UFO's in its present stage is like astronomy in that it is a purely observational "science," not an experimental one; necessarily, therefore, it must be based on observation and not on experiment. Observation, in this case, consists of everything which can be found to have bearing on the subject. ***There are thousands of references to it in ancient literature,*** but the authors did not know that their references had any bearing, for the subject did not then exist. The writers were recording such things as met their senses solely through an honest effort to report inexplicable observational data.

Hoping, in those days, that something would "come of it" Nowadays, Science Is afraid that "Something Will Come of it." It will, too, In 1956 or 57 the Air force Will have Ships LIKE these in appearance & Will "feel" safe to announce that Human eyes Have seen Saucers from outer Space BUT to Not be Worried because "we too have these Ships" Oh! Brother What a farce! Ours will be JET propelled not M ◯ propelled.

Some of my contemporaries have attempted to prove that all of these phenomena are, in some way or other, illusory, and that in any case they do not involve flight, wingless or otherwise, mechanical propulsion or intelligent direction.

I consider their negative case unproven because **there is an overwhelming mass of authentic evidence *(B)*** which can be cited as: (1) direct observation, (2) indirect observation, and (3) supporting evidence or indication.

There is one sphere of indirect evidence in the form of events of mysterious nature which have never been explained. These things would be easy to explain were we to admit the limitations of our own knowledge, and the possibility of "intelligence" elsewhere in the universe operating space ships -- quite possibly more than one kind of "intelligence" and more than one kind of space ship.

This world is full of unexplained oddities. The legends of Atlantis and Mu have been favorite targets of the scoffers. "They" say there are no ghosts, no spirits, nothing falls from the sky but iron and stone meteorites. But for centuries the earth was believed to be flat, there was no America, no heliocentric system of earth and planets, no fossil dinosaurs; **yet we know these beliefs to have been wrong.**

Reliable people have been **seeing** the phenomena known as flying saucers ***for a thousand years and more. There are good reports as far back as 1500 BC and before. Thousands of people have seen some kind of navigable contraptions in the sky,*** and ***some have sworn it under oath.***

In a day When oaths were just as good as Money -in-Hand for if incorrect your Neck suffered "The Miracle"[1] from the Church as a knife from the out-raged who took your oath.

[1] Undecipherable: could be Nracle or Nrack.

I cannot agree with any astronomer who insists that all of these things are mirages, planets, clouds or illusions. The majority of the people are articulate enough to tell their stories, and sincere enough to make depositions before notaries public. Even scientists concede that these folk saw something.

I see nothing particularly odd in strange descriptions of phenomena the like of which has no earthly counterpart or for which we have no frame of reference.

If he does not, then he KNOWS the L-M's.

This work is a serious attempt to bring order out of chaos, an attempt to pull all of the facets of this controversy into a basic stratum **upon which to make an intelligent evaluation of the subject.**

M.K. Jessup

Washington, D.C.
January 13, 1955

If he does succeed in such evaluation Nobody cares enough to bother believing him for that would require the effort of Courage & the Gaiyar are such cowards & conformists. Even if believed, Nobody would dare say so for that would require action & They dare not act in BEHALF OF A BELIEF THAT INTERFERES WITH USUAL LIVING

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Introduction

PART I
The Case for the UFO's

"If It Waddles…"? 1
UFO's Are Real 3
There Is Intelligence in Space 9
Short-Cut to Space Travel 15
The Home of the UFO's 20
Are UFO's Russian? 22
Space Flights: Common Denominator 24

PART II
Meteorology Speaks

Falling Ice 28
Falling Stones 32
Falling Live Things 37
Falling Animal and Organic Matter 40
Falling Shaped Things 45
Falls of Water 52
Clouds and Storms 56
Rubbish in Space 60

PART III
History Speaks

Disappearing Ships and Crews 65
Teleportation or Kidnapping? 75
Levitation 84
Marks and "Footprints" 91
Disappearing Planes 97
Fireballs and Lights 101
Legends 106

PART IV
Astronomy Speaks

The Incredible Decade 115
UFO's Against the Sun 119
Location of UFO's 125
UFO Patrol 128
The Height of the Puzzle 133
The Case is Proved! 137
A NOTE ON SOURCES 144

List of Illustrations

A Flying Saucer photographed over Brasil 2
Passage of Auroral beam, November 17, 1882 13
Cross found in an ancient grave in Georgia. 50
Meteor from an organic cloud, Salford, England, 1877 59
The "Devil's Hoofmarks." 92
Six UFO's seen and drawn by Astronomer Barnard in 1882 136
Comet "B" of 1881 141

NOTE:
Anyone reading this book would have to KNOW that Electron *quatums* (sic), Within Molecular structures, are similar in scope of "field" as Planets *orbits.*
They Would Have to know that. Electrons in Metal go across, What in Planetary Systems, would be BILLIONS OF MILES, Leaving three a Graviational field, Dead-spot *or* Node, or Vortice or Neutral as *this one thing* is variously called. Realizing this as Dr. Albert Einstien did, it shows clearly how solids may become Energy or Dissolute AND How then they May Pass easily out of Visual scope *instantly.*
This is Merely one Clue gleamed from *Einstiens Theory of a Unified Magnetic* Field through *all substances* AND throughout Whole inter-Galactic-Universe.U.S. EXPIERMENTS, 1943 ON ONE PART OF IT *PROVED* PLENTY!

Ed: The page numbers in this Table of Contents are the numbers in the original book.

The Case for the UFO is perhaps the **most unusual** and **comprehensive volume yet produced *on*** the fascinating subject of the "flying saucers." To bring the rare combination of **a scientifically trained mind**, plus imaginative, **fetter-free thinking** to the mysterious subject of possible intelligence from outer space, is something which has been much needed. This is precisely what Jr. Jessup has done.

This book is a sound step forward in the great need to approach, dispassionately, material pertaining to the flying saucers; it goes far toward putting the topic on a down-to-earth basis. I have **never before seen such** apparently unrelated **subject matter brought into focus** so skillfully and **analyzed so successfully.**

He *says* "apparently" means "seemingly"

It **is** the **men of insight and** the men **of unobstructed vision** of **every** generation who are able to lead us through the ***quagmire of a in-a-rut thinking. It is the men of imagination who are able to see relationships which escape the casual observer*.** It remains for the men of intuition to seek answers while others avoid even the question.

Mr. Jessup's analyses are based on phenomena which were of scientific record many years before the present controversial era, and are therefore objective; thus, the overall picture which we have here will, and should, become the bible for the UFO.

Whereas, I may **not necessarily agree** with Mr. Jessup ***in each*** of his startling deductions, certainly there **is every reason to believe that his is the correct approach**: indeed, many of his conclusions will be difficult, if not **altogether impossible to refute!**

Having brought to The Case for the UFO his ability to reason clearly, **to research assiduously** and to write lucidly and effectively, **Mr. Jessup has performed a valuable service to all of us who know and believe** "There are more things in heaven and earth… than are dreamt of in **(our)** Philosophy."

FRANK EDWARDS

Jemi;
He may reason clearly *but only to the point* where
Logical deduction stops & Emotionalism takes over,
as do all Humans. Mortification *or* pride or Lack
of enough evidence May put him on a Soap-box Level.
Yet, He *is* a Scientist and as such May show No such
traits, as are ;usually found in Gaiyari. I see your
point, Jemi, He could convince the whole thing but
then have you ever tried to tell the Honest truth
about Something of which *only* you have observed?
True enough, It cannot be done. So Let us see What
***this* man has in ways of Doing So, Eh?**

APPENDIX

The first letter received by Mr. Jessup from Carols Allende:

Carlos Miguel Allende
R. D. #1 Box 223
New Kensington, Penn.

My Dear Dr. Jessup,

Your invocation to the Public that they move en Masse upon their Representatives and have thusly enough Pressure placed at the right & sufficient Number of Places where from a Law demanding Research into Dr. Albert Einstiens (sic) Unified Field Theory May be enacted (1925-27) is Not at all Necessary. It May Intrest (sic) you to know that The Good Doctor Was Not so Much influenced in his retracton (sic) of that Work, by Mathematics, as he most assuredly was by Humantics. (sic)

His Later computations, done strictly for his own edification & amusement, upon cycles of Human Civilization & Progress compared to the Growth of Mans General over-all Character Was enough to Horrify Him. Thus, We are "told" today that that Theory was "Incomplete".

Dr. B. Russell asserts privately that It is complete. He also says that Man is Not Ready for it & Shan't be until after W. W. III. Nevertheless, "Results" of My friend Dr. Franklin Reno, Were used. These Were a complete Recheck of That Theory, With a View to any & Every Possible quick use of it, if feasable (sic) in a Very short time. There Were good Results, as far as a Group Math Re-Cheek AND as far as a good Physical "Result," to Boot. YET THE NAVT FEARS TO USE THIS RESULT. The Result was & stands today as Proof that The Unified Field Theory to a certain extent is correct. Beyond that certain extent No Person in his right senses, or having any senses at all, Will evermore dare to go. I am sorry that I Mislead You in My Previous Missive. True, enough, such a form of Levitation has been accomplished as described. It is also a Very commonly observed reaction of certain Metals to Certain Fields surrounding a current, This field being used for that purpose. Had Farraday concerned himself about the Mag. Field surrounding an Electric Current, We today Would NOT Exist or if We did exist, our present Geo-political situation would have the very time-bomish, ticking off towards Destruction, atmosphere that Now exists. Alright, Alright! The "result" was complete invisibility of a ship, Destroyer type, and all of its crew While at Sea. (Oct. 1943) The Field Was effective in an oblate spheroidal shape, extending one Hundred yards (More or Less, due to Lunar position & Latitude) out from each beam of the ship. Any Person Within that sphere became vague in form BUT He too observed those Persons aboard that ship as though they too were of the same state, yet were walking upon nothing. Any person without that sphere could see Nothing save the clearly Defined shape of the Ships Hull in the Water, PROVIDING of course, that that person was just close enough to see yet, just barely outside of the field. Why tell you Now? Very Simple; If You choose to go Mad, then you would reveal this information. Half of the officiers & the crew of that Ship are at Present, Mad as Hatters. A few, are even Yet, confined to certain areas where they May receive trained Scientific aid when they, either, "Go Blank" or Go Blank" & "Get Stuck". Going-Bland IE an after effect of the Man having been within the field too Much, IS Not at all an unplesant experience too Healthily Curious Sailors. However it is when also, they "Get Stuck" that they call it "HELL" INCORPORATED" The Man thusly stricken can Not Move of his won volition unless tow or More of those who are within the field go & touch him, quickly, else he "Freezes".

If a Man Freezes, His position Must be Marked out carefully and then the Field in cut-off. Everyone but that "Frozen" Man is able to Move; to appreciate apparent Solidity again. Then, the Newest Member of the crew Must approach the Spot, where he will find the "Frozen" Mans face or Bare skin, that is Not covered by usual uniform Clothing. Sometimes, it takes only an hour or so Sometimes all Night & all Day Long & Worse It once took 6 months, to get The Man "Unfrozen". This "Deep Freeze" was not

psychological. It is the Result of a Hyper-Field that is set up, within the field of the Body, While the "Scorch" Field is turned on & this at Length or upon a Old Hand.

A Highly complicated Place of Equipment Had to be constructed in order to Unfreeze those who became "True Froze", of "Deep Freeze" subjects. Usually a "Deep Freeze" Man goes Mad, Stark Raving,, Gibbering, Running MAD, if his 'freeze' is far More than a Day in our time.

I speak of TIME for DEEP "Frozen Men" are Not aware of Time as We know it. They are Like Semi-comatoese (sic) person, who Live, breathe, Look & feel but still are unaware of So Utterly Many things as to constitute a "Nether World" to them. A Man in an ordinary common Freeze is aware of Time, Sometimes acutely so. Yet They are Never aware of Time precisely as you or I are aware of it. The First "Deep Freeze" As I said took 6 months to Rectify. It also took over 5 Million Dollars worth of Electronic equipment & a Special Ship Berth. If around or Near the Philadelphia Navy[2] and you see a group of Sailors in the act of Putting their Hands Upon a fellow or upon "thin air," observe the Digits & appendages of the Stricken Man. If they seem to Waver, as tho within a Heat-Mirage, go quickly & Put YOUR Hands upon Him, For that Man is the Very Most Desparate of Men in The World. Not one of those Men ever want at all to become again invisible. I do Not think that Much More Need be said as to Why Man is Not Ready for Force-Field Work. Eh?

You will Hear phrases from these Men such as "Caught in the Flow (or the Push) or "Stuck in the Green" or Stuck in Molasses" or "I was "going" FAST", These refer to Some of the Decade-Later after effects of Force-Field "ork. "Caught in the Flow" describes exactly the "Stuck in Molasses" sensation of a Man going into a Deep Freeze" or Plain Freeze" either of the two. "Caught in the Push" can either refer to That Which a Man feels Briefly WHEN he is either about to inadvertently "Go-Blank" IE Become Invisible" or about to "Get Stuck" in a "Deep Freeze" or "Plain Freeze."

There are only a very few of the original Experimental D-E's Crew Left by Now, Sir, Most went insane, one just walked "throo" His quarters Wall in sight of His Wife & Child & 2 other crew Members (WAS NEVER SEEN AGAIN), two "Went into "The Flame, "I.E. They "Froze" & caught fire, while carrying common Small-Boat Compasses, one Man carried the Compass & Caught fire, the other came for the "Laying on of Hands" as he was nearest but he too, took fire. THEY BURNED FOR 18 DAYS. The faith in "Hand Laying" Died When this Happened & Mens Minds Went by the scores. The expierement (sic) Was a Complete Success. The Men Were Complete Failures.

Check Philadelphia Papers for a tine one Paragraph (upper Half of sheet, inside the paper Near the rear 3rd of Paper, 1944-46 in Spring or Fall or Winter, NOT Summer.) of an Item describing the Sailors Actions after their initial Voyage. They Raided a Local to the Navy Yard "Gin Mill" or "Beer Joint" & caused such Shock & Paralysis of the Waitresses that Little comprehensible could be gotten from them, save that Paragraph & the Writer of it, Does Not Believe it, & Says "I only wrote what I heard & them Dames is Daffy. So, all I get is a "Hide-it" Bedtime Story."

Check observer ships crew, Matson Lines Liberty ship out of Norfolk, (Company MAY Have Ships Log for that Voyage or Coast Guard have it) The S.S. Andrew Furnseth, Chief Mate Mowsely, (Will secure Captains Name Later) (Ships Log Has Crew List on it.) one crew Member Richard Price or "Splicey" Price May Remember other Names of Dec Crew Men, (Coast Guard has record of Sailors issued "Papers") Mr. Price Was 18 or 19 then, Oct. 1943, and Lives or Lived at that time in His old Family Home in Roanoke, VA a small town with a Small Phone book. These Men Were Witnesses, The Men of this crew, "Connelly of New England, (Boston?), May have witnessed but I doubt it. (Spelling May be incorrect) DID Witness this. I ask you to Do this bit of Research simply that you May Choke on you own Tongue when you Remember what you have "appealed be Made Law"

Very Disrespectfully Yours,
Carl M. Allen

P.S. Will Help More if you see Where I can. (Z416175)

[2] Could be "Free Freeze"

Days Later

Notes in addition to and pertaining to Missive.
(Contact Rear Admiral Ransom Bennett for verification of info Herein. Navy Chief of research. He may offer you a job, ultimately)

Coldly & analytically speaking, without the Howling that is in the Letter to you accompanying this, I will say the following in all Fairness to you & to Science. (1) The Navy did Not know that the men could become invisible WHILE NOT UPON THE SHIP & UNDER THE FIELDS INFLUENCE. (2) The Navy Did Not know that there would be Men Die from odd effects of HYPER "Field" within or upon "Field." (3) Further, They even yet do Not know Why this happened & are not even sure that the "F" within "F" is the reason, for sure at all. In Short the Atomic bomb didn't kill the expierimentors (sic) thus the expieriments (sic) went on-but eventually one or two were accidentally killed BUT the cause was known as to Why they died. Myself, I "feel" that something pertaining to that Small-boat compass "triggered" off The Flames." I have no proof, but Neither Does the Navy. (4) WORSE & Not Mentioned When one or two of their Men, Visible-within-the-field-to-all-the-others, Just Walked into Nothingness, AND Nothing Could be felt, of them, either when the "field Was turned on OR off, THEY WERE JUST GONE! Then, More Fears Were Amassed. (5) Worse, Yet, When an apparently Visible & New-Man Just walks seemingly "throo" the Wall of his House, the surrounding area Searched by all Men & thoroughly scrutinized by & with & Under an Installed Portable Field developer AND NOTHING EVER found of him. So Many Many Fears were by then in effect that the Sum total of them all could Not ever again be faced by ANY of those Men or by the Men Working at & Upon The Experiments.

I wish to Mention that Somehow, also, the Experimental Ship Disappeared from its Philadelphia Dock and only a Very few Minutes Later appeared at its other Dock in the Norfolk, Newport New Portsmouth area. This was distinctly AND clearly identified as being that place BUT the ship them, again, disappeared And Went Back to its Philadelphia Dock in only a Very few Minutes or Less. This was also Noted in the Newspapers But I Forget what paper I read it in or When It happened. Probably Late in the experiments, May have been in 1956 after Experiments were discontinued, I can Not Say for Sure.

To the Navy this Whole thing was So Impractical due to its Morale Blasting effects Which were so much so that efficient operation of the Ship was Drastically Hindered and then after this occurrence It was shown that even the Mere operation of a ship could Not be counted upon at all. In short, Ignorance of this thing bred Such Terrors of it that, on the Level of attempted operations, with what knowledge was then available It was deemed as impossible, Impracticable and Too Horrible.

I believe that Had YOU then been Working upon & With the team that was Working upon this project With yourself knowing what You NOW know, that "The Flames" Would Not have been so unexpected, or Such a Terrifying Mystery. Also, More than Likely, I must say in All fairness, None of these other occurrences could have happened without some knowledge of their possibility of occurring. In fact, They May have been prevented by a far more Cautious Program AND by a Much More Cautiously careful Selection of Personnel for Ships officers & Crew. Such Was Not the case. The Navy used Whatever Human Material was at hand, Without Much, if any, thought as to character & Personality of that Material. If care, Great Care is taken in selection of Ship, and officers and crew AND If Careful Indoctrination is taken along with Careful watch over articles of apparel Such as rings & Watches & Identification bracelets & Belt buckles, Plus AND ESPECIALLY the effect of Hob-Nailed shoes or Cleated-shoes U.S. Navy issue shoes, I feel that some progress towards dissipating the fearfilled ignorance surrounding this project Will be Most surely and certainly accomplished. The Records of the U.S. Maritime Service HOUSE Norfolk Va., (for Graduated Seamen of their Schools) Will reveal Who was assigned to S S. Andrew Furuseth for Month of either Late Sept. or October of 1943. I remember positively of one other observer who stood beside Me When tests were going on. He was from New England, Brown-Blond Curly Hair, blue eyes, Don't remember Name. I Leave it up to you to Decide if further Work shall be put into this or Not, and Write this in Hopes there Will be.

Very Sincerely,
Carl M. Allen

The second letter received by Mr. Jessup from Carlos Allende:

Carl M. Allen
RFD #1 Box 223
New Kensington, Pa

Dear Mr. Jessup:

Having just recently gotten home from my long travels around the country I find that you had dropped me a card. You ask that I write you "at once" and So after taking everything into consideration, I have decided to do so. You ask me for what is tantamount to positive proof of something that only the duplication of those devices that produce "this phenomenon" could ever give you. At least, were I of scientific bent, I presume that, were I of Such a Curiosity about something, the which has been produced from a theory that was discarded (1927) as incomplete, I am sure that I would be of such a dubiousness towards that I would Have to be shown these devices that Produced such a curious interaction of Forces & Fields, in operation & their product Mr. Jessup, I could NEVER possibly satisfy such an attitude. The reason being that I could not, Nor ever would the Navy Research Dept. (Then under the present oss of the Navy, Burke) ever let it be known that any such thing was ever allowed to be done. For you see, It was because of Burkes Curiosity & willingness & prompting that this experiment was enabled to be carried out. It proved a White-elephant but His attitude towards advance & ultra-advanced types of research is just "THE" THING that put him where he is today. (Or at least, to be sure, It carries a great weight). Were the stench of such an Experiments results EVER to come out, He would be crucified.

However, I have noticed, that throo the ages, those who have had this happen to them, once the vulgar passions that caused the reaction have cooled-off AND further research OPENLY carried on, that these crucified ones achieve something akin to Saint hood. You say that this, "is of the greatest importance". I disagree with you Mr. Jessup, not just whole Heartedly, but vehemently. However at the same time, your ideas & your own sort of curiosity is that of mine own sort and besides my disagreement is based upon philosophical Morality and not upon that curiosity which Drives Science so rapidly. I can be of some positive help to you in myself but to do so would require a Hypnotist, Sodium Pentathol, a tape recorder & an excellent typist-secretary in order to produce material of Real value to you.

As you know one who is hypnotized cannot Lie and one who is both hypnotized AND given "Truth serum" as it is colloqually (sic) known, COULD NOT POSSIBLY LIE, AT ALL. To boot, My Memory would be THUS enabled to remember things in such great detail, things that my present consciousness cannot recall at all, or only barely and uncertainly that it would be of far greater benefit to use hypnosis. I could thus be enabled to not only Recall COMPLETE names, but also addresses & telephone numbers AND perhaps the very important Z Numbers of those sailors whom I sailed with then or even came into contact with. I could too, being something of a Dialectician, be able to thusly talk exactly as these witnesses talked and imitate or illustrate their mannerisms & Habits of thought, thus your psychologists can figure IN ADVANCE the Surefire method of dealing Most Successfully with these. I could NOT do this with someone with whom I had not observed at length & these men, I lived with for about 6 months, so you are bound to get good to excellent results. The mind does NOT ever forget, Not really, As you know. Upon this I suggest this way of doing this with Myself but further, the Latter usage of Myself in Mannerism & Thought pattern illustration is suggested in order that the Goal of inducing these Men to place themselves at & under you disposal (HYPNOTICALLY OR UNDER TRUTH-SERUM), is a Goal, the Which could Have FAR greater impact, due to co-relation of Experiences remembered Hypnotically by Men who have NOT seen or even written to each other, at all, for Nearly or over TEN years. In this, With such Men as Witnesses, giving irrefutable testimony It is my belief that were, Not the Navy, but the Airforce, confronted with such evidence, (IE Chief of Research) there would be either an uproar or a quiet and determined effort to achieve SAFELY "that which" the Navy failed at. They did NOT fail to, I hope you realize, achieve Metallic & organic invisibility nor did they fail to, unbesoughtedly, (sic) achieve transportation of thousands of tons of Metal & Humans at an eyes blink speed. Even though this latter effect of prolonged experimentation was (to them) THE thing that caused them to consider the experiment as a failure, I

BELIEVE THAT FURTHER EXPERIMENTS WOULD NATURALLY HAVE PRODUCED CONTROLLED TRANSPORT OF GREAT TONNAGES AT ULTRA-FAST SPEEDS TO A DESIRED POINT THE INSTANT IT IS DESIRED throo usage of an area covered by: (I) those cargoes and (2) that " Field" that could cause those goods, Ships or Ship parts (MEN WERE TRANSPORTED AS WELL) to go to another Point. Accidentally & to the embarrassed perplexity of the Navy THIS HAS ALREADY HAPPENED TO A WHOLE SHIP, CREW & ALL. I read of this AND of THE OFF-BASE AWOL ACTIVITIES OF the crew-Men who were at the time invisible in a Philadelphia NEWSPAPER. UNDER HARCOHYPNOSIS I CAN BE ENABLED TO DIVULGE THE NAME, DATE & SECTION & PAGE NUMBER of that Paper & the other one. Thus this papers "Morgue" Will Divulge EVEN MORE POSITIVE PROOF ALREADY PUBLISHED of this experiment. The Name of the REPORTER who skeptically covered & Wrote of these incidents (OF THE RESTAURANT-BARROOM RAID WHILE INVISIBLE & OF THE SHIPS SUDDEN AWOL) AND WHO INTERVIEWED the Waitresses CAN THUS BE FOUND, thus HIS and the Waitresses testimony can be added to the Records. Once on this track, I believe That you can uncover CONSIDERABLY MORE evidence to sustain this, ------- (what Would you call it --SCANDAL or DISCOVERY?) You would Need a Dale Carneigie to Maneuver these folks into doing just as you wish. It would be cheaper than paying everyone of all these witnesses & Much more Ethical. The Idea Is, to the Layman type of person, utterly ridiculous. However, can you remember, all by yourself, the Date of a Newspaper in which you saw an interesting item more than 5 years ago? Or recall names of Men, their phone #'s that you saw in 1943-44.

I do hope you will consider this plan. You will Progress as Not possible in any other way. Of course, I realize that you would need a Man Who can cause people to want to have fun, to play with Hypnotism, one that can thusly dupe those he-you need to: #1 come to His Demonstrations & thus call on them to be either or both "Honored" as Helping with the show" & for doing Him a Great favor, &/or being part of the act for the mite of a small fee He would HAVE to be a Man of such an adroit ingenuity at Manufacturing a plausible story on the-instant-he-sizes-up-his-"personality-to be dealt-with THAT had cost PLENTY. The ability to convince people of an outright Lie as being the absolute truth would be one of his prime prerequisites. (Ahem.) Yes, some such skulduggery (sic) would have to be thought well out & done. THE ULTIMATE END WILL BE A TRUTH TOO HUGE, AND TOO FANTASTIC, TO NOT BE TOLD. A WELL-FOUNDED TRUTH BACKED UP BY UNOBFUSCATIVE PROOF POSITIVE. I would like to find where it is that these Sailors live NOW. It is known that some few people can somehow tell you a mans name & his Home address UNDER HYPNOSIS EVEN THOUGH NEVER HAVING EVER MENT OR SEEN THE PERSON. These folks have a very high or Just a High PSI factor in their make-up that can be intensified under stress or strain OR that usually is intensified under extreme fright. It also can be RE-intensified by Hypnosis, thus is like reading from the Encyclopedia Britannica. Even though that Barroom-Restaurant Raid was staged by invisible or partly invisible men, those men CAN SEE EACH OTHER THUS NAMES, In the excitement, were sure to have been Mentioned, whether last or first Names or Nicknames. A check of the Naval Yards Dispensaries or Hospital or aid stations or prison RECORDS of that particular day that the Barroom-Restaurant occurred May revela (sic) the EXACT NAMES OF PRECISELY WHO WERE THE MEN, THEIR SERVICE SERIAL NUMBERS & THUS THE INFORMATION ON WHERE THEY ARE FROM BE SECURED & by adroit "Maneuvuerings" (sic) of those still at Home, THE NAME OF THE PLACE where they are at present can be secured.

HOW WOULD YOU LIKE TO ACTUALLY SPEAK TO (or some of THE MEN) A MAN WHO WAS ONCE AN INVISIBLE HAMAN BEING? (MAY BECOME SO IN FRONT OF YOUR VERY EYES IF HE TURNS-OFF HIS HIP-SET). Well, all this fantastically preposterous sort of rubbish will be necessary, Just to do that, the Hypnotist-psychologist & all that. Maybe I suggest something too thorught (sic) & too Methodical for your taste but then I, as first subject, Don't care to be Hypnotized at all, But too, feel that certain pull of curiosity about this thing that, to me, is irresistible. I want to crack this thing wide open. My reasons are simply to enable more work to be done upon this "Field Theory".

I am a star-gazer Mr. Jessup. I make no bones about this and the fact that I feel that IF HANDLED PROPERLY, I.E. PRESENTED TO PEOPLE & SCIENCE IN THE PROPER PSYCOLOGICALLY EFFECTIVE MANNER. I FEEL sure THAT Man will go where He now dreams of being---to the stars via the form of transport that the Navy accidentally stumbled upon (to their embarrassment) when their EXP. SHIP took off & popped-up a minute or so later on several Hundred sea

travel--trip miles away at another of its Berths in the Chesapeake Bay area. I read of this in another newspaper & only by Hypnosis could any Man remember all the details of which paper, date of occurrence & etc., you see? Eh. Perhaps already, the Navy has used this accident of transport to build your UFO's. It is a logical advance from any standpoint. What do you think???

VERY RESPECTFULLY
Carl Allen

The Case for the UFO's

"If it waddles…"?

If it looks like a duck, waddles like a duck and quacks like a duck, swims and has webbed feet--then perhaps it is a duck!

But a child, seeing his first platypus, will say, "It looks like a duck with four feet and fur! But what is it?

But what happens when a man sees something for the first time and asks, "What is it?"…and there is no one who can supply the answer?

Fortunately, our experience and knowledge enable us to explain the seeming inconsistencies of this freak of nature.

The controversy about the s0-called Flying Saucers began in just such a fashion with Kenneth Arnold-s startling announcement in 1947.

A businessman of Boise, Idaho, Mr. Arnold was on his way from Chehalis to Yakima, Washington. Flying in his private plane, he was startled to see a bright flash on his wing.

Looking in the direction of Mount Rainier, he was astonished to see **nine** gleaming disks, each approximately the size of a C-54. They were **clearly outlined** against the snow.

As he later told the story, "it was as if they were linked together. They flew close to the top of mountain in a diagonal, chainlike line."

Mr. Arnold estimated their speed to be around twelve hundred miles per hour, and he thought they must have been about twenty to twenty-five miles from his plane.

"I watched them about three minutes," he said. "The were swerving in and out around the high mountain peaks. They were flat, like a pie pan, and **so shiny** they **reflected the sun** like a mirror. I never saw anything so fast!

Thus, as of June 24, 1947, Flaying Saucers were born.

"I saw them--but what are they?" Mr. Arnold undoubtedly asked. And no one had the answer.

Since that memorable day, thousands of other sightings have been reported and verified, and still the question must be asked, "What are they?" But more importantly, **where do they come from**, what is their purpose here, and if they can do it, why can't we? Are they Russian secret weapons?

**Not Worry, Jemi, those were L-M Ships, Not "S" Men.
They are an improved type & were only on a training
Flight. That is why their leader inter-connected
their force-fields-to teach them Ion Level Tele-**

Control without inducing a fear-block[1] which they, too, get When "Mowing the Lawn."

Several well-documented volumes have been devoted to listings of sightings, to reports by everyone from boy scouts and families on picnics to astronomers and a man who claims to have had a conversation with a Saucer passenger from Venus.

But our answers to the questions, our evaluation of the potential answers to the fascinating and sometimes frightening questions, end where others begin. In other words, we shall not devote ourselves to the recent sightings and reports which have flooded newspaper offices, official bureaus of the government and, for some strange reason, airports. (Presumably, the public feels that anything which takes place in the air is the business of the airport!)

I have long been interested in the study of the unexplained areas of human existence, and **as an astronomer** with special interest in the moon, the early reports of flying saucers caught my attention. References in dusty volumes in the Library of Congress flashed through my mind, references I **had noted years ago** and which **now**, **in the light of these developments, seemed to offer a new field** of research, **of analysis and co-relation** which might throw light upon the matter.

I began to ask myself questions … **and** I began to see a shape, a form, take place in the entire field of observable phenomena **which had remained obscure and previously unrelated.**

This flying saucer was **photographed** *over the Brazilian Jungle*

Desmond Leslie, in the book, "Flying Saucers Have Landed," reviewed some of the interesting material gleaned from old manuscripts, many of which referred to sightings of unidentified objects flying through the air. The most cursory examinations of such material, when collected and organized into a readable whole, made it **quite evident** that conclusions could be drawn.

Does it follow, I wondered, that **still further conclusions** could be drawn if one were to collect and sift and evaluate data from many different fields? Would there be any indication that life does, in fact, exist in space? If so, would that life have direction, control, intelligence? Or would it be amoebic in nature, lacking intelligence, be a form of vegetable or animal-mineral life? Would a thorough study of material in many fields **reveal a pattern**, a consistency of any sort which would provide clues to the future activities of these Unidentified Flying Objects?

I wanted to know the answers. I wanted to know if the somethings existed, and if they did, what they were. **I wanted to know where they lived and how they lived**. I wanted to know what they were doing when we didn't see them. I wanted to know why some people saw them and some people didn't see them. I wanted to know why they appeared in one place and not another. **I wanted to know whether they were friendly or hostile.**

L-M? PALS; S-M?[1]

Even if he knew he nor any number of men could ever do anything, Jemi.

---

[1] Clearest Translation

[1] This note is quite ambiguous. It may be interpreted as the above or as: L---M: PALS S-M? or since L-M closely follows the word hostile it might be: Hostile L-M? PALS: S-M? From the similarity of the marks following L-M and S-M the first interpretation is most likely the correct one.

For first they would refuse to even believe.
Requires true Humility or active[2] fascination.

I wanted to know, further, if they might be a Mark Twain-like hoax which a gullible public was swallowing, having tired of ordinary pursuits of happiness and excitement.

I wanted to know, too, whether we would have to wait until the things decided to visit us, or if we could possibly **expect to pay them a surprise visit in their own territory in the near future**.

Like a child seeing his first platypus, I asked myself questions. But unlike the child, I searched for my own answers.

UFO's Are Real

A serious approach to the question of Unidentified Flying Objects demands, first of all, that we face a fundamental change in concept as regards the world of our environment. We must loosen out thinking, let our imaginations fly with the winds, and, above all, we must want to think!

No human being with a closed mind need read further, for he will be asked to think as he has never thought before, to admit to possibilities which will shake the very foundations of his being.

For countless generations mankind has been confronted with an endless series of events, the causes of which have been obscure, if not altogether outside any casual sequence which his mind was able to imagine. In varying degrees, these happenings have generally been called supernatural: in more modern terminology, paranormal. This convenient phraseology may **name** them and, to a lesser extent, classify them; however, it does **not** explain the events, nor does it transmit and real knowledge to a groping mankind.

To gain understanding, therefore, **we must do more than classify; we must analyze and theorize**.

To do these things we must courageously invade a field which has so frightened formal science that it has been omitted from man's professed and organized cognizance. Only a few have **dared** **to admit these phenomena and to investigate them** Of the few, **a large proportion have become outcasts from their chosen field of study**. They have become nonconformists, and few sins are considered more basic. **Yet the mass of our qualitative** **knowledge has come through nonconformity**.

Don't Worry those few DO NOT COUNT. He again
asks too much of Proud, Vain Humankind

In this volume, we are going to confront, for the first time, a number of hitherto incorrigible facts. We shall relate, for the first time, previously unrelated data and draw startling conclusions therefrom.

To begin such a leap into the maelstrom of the "supernatural," we must first clarify our use of the word "world." We must no limit it to a state or a continent. And, despite the fact that it may disturb our complacency and arouse vague fears, we can no longer limit it to a single planet. The earth is not alone, nor has it been for some time.

---

[2] Clearest translation. Could be actual.

Next, we segregate paranormal experiences into groupings having some family likenesses. Only by so doing can we give them the merciless scrutiny necessary to determine their significance. If there is enlightenment to be had from the, we shall have it. (If this be nonconformity, let us make the most of it; our orthodox opponents may try to make the worst.)

This segregation of "erratics" or "oddities" into groups having some similarity serves a two fold utility. First, it simplifies our problem of analysis, because it helps t bring order out of chaos-chaos which is the product of centuries of accumulated data with no co-relation, with no purpose other than that of cataloguing facts for posterity. We may now assume, and with great assurance, that we are the posterity for whom these data were recorded. The time has come when these isolated ? and lone facts, so long orphaned, must be brought into the light, marshaled, and made to serve our purpose. This heterogeneous mass of data has doubtless been preserved for some purpose, **if life has any meaning at all**, and **the solution of the mystery of the UFO's may well be that purpose**.

The second utility of grouping is to establish emphasis and striking power, for any one of these innumerable events is too weak to stand alone in the face of scientific scoffing. It does not matter, evidently, that a thousand, or even ten thousand, people observe and report paranormal events. **One self-confident**, **assertive** and **arrogant scientist**, **backed by the tacit support of his esoteric profession**, **can deny the occurrence**, **obfuscate its record**, ***nullify*** **its import**, and come close to convincing the ten thousand people **that they did not see what they *plainly* saw**. **This, of course, is not really science**. It comes close to a kind of intellectual dictatorship, and imperialism of the intellect. Thus, by relating the previously unrelated, we can build a wall **unscalable by such conformists**.

Such contempt for those badly frightened or
Strictly Orthodox Namby-Pamby Scientists,
The Shade of Galileo Walks again in the Name
of Better Science.**Will he arouse & Enlighten**
as before?

No, my twin, He Walks throo cloudsl

But let us not be over ambitious. We can as easily overstep the bounds of our capabilities **as we can shirk our responsibilities.** Some of the unexplained phenomena do seem to lie in what, for lack of a better terminology, we must still call the paranormal or psychic fields. One must be on guard not to commit the prime fallacy of all analysis, that of evolving a theory and then proceeding to find facts by which to substantiate it. Therefore, we must sort our observations into two groups. One group will contain everything which can be attributed to physical action by intelligent beings or an undeified and nonspiritual status. The second group is the residue which, as far as one can judge after careful consideration, must remain associated with the psychic or spiritual realm.

Even a cursory survey of the vast and scrambled field of strange events--oddities, we can call them--shows us at least three major areas. One of these relates to things which fall from the sky, some of which come from space and which may be roughly classified as organic and inorganic. We use "organic" in the sense of something which is part of, or associated with, a living, thinking entity, and "inorganic" as being merely the debris of space. An ordinary iron-nickel meteorite from space is inorganic within the sphere of our present definition; but if this meteorite arrives on earth shaped like a seven-headed Malayan goddess, or a compound microscope, it's organic.

A second major category stands out in the bibliography of oddities. It is the great area of events which encompasses disappearing people, and ships; airplanes and airships crashing and disappearing without trace and without warning; instantaneous and mysterious transportations of people and things; inexplicable tracks and marks, such as the Devil's Footprints of Devonshire, and the "cup-marks" found in stone over much of the world; the organically shaped meteorites found in Tertiary rock and coal formations; evidences of levitation and flight from prehistoric antiquity; and many other phenomena which appear to us to be, or resemble, acts rather than things.

All of these are terrestrial events--manifestations more or less on the terrestrial surface.

But there is a third great area of observational data. It is that vast conglomerate of purely astronomical observations which relates to things and phenomena in space or on planets and satellites other than earth. These are the unpopular, poor relatives of **orthodox** astronomy, the untouchable erratics. **These have come to be regarded with such disfavor** that there are few published records of them within the past fifty to seventy-five years.

We may consider that the sciences of meteorology and mereoritics, whose nature we will discuss later, speak almost eloquently in behalf of the case for space life and UFO's. **It is within these fields that we have found the greatest volume** of **detailed observation and data**. And it is just here that we have found the most difficulty in grouping and organizing. Even here, however, we can not a primitive **pattern** and by simple use of it as a guide, we begin to separate acts of intelligence from "natural" acts of statistical nature.

Whereas the actual groupings are given in Parts Two, Three, and Four, the problems involved in the initial research are of interest. The resolution of those problems is still another key to the fact that we are on the right track, **that by relating the previously unrelated we have discovered pattern and form.**

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

> **All men of renown had two things, Courage & Conviction, often so Much that they were ridiculed. This Man opens & invites same merely by Saying what his observations, Records & Data *have shown* him, What Cannot be escaped. There are, of course, such Men who like the one that Would not permit himself to View the Planets Circling the sun Lest it interfere with his religious "Dogmas of the day."**

An example of the way such things develop is our experience in classifying falling objects. Our first thought was that this was a minor field which could be disposed of with a casual perusal. Not so. It soon developed, as the pattern began to evolve, that we could not coordinate these onslaughts from the sky, nor interpret them, unless we gave consideration to their effect, their origins, and to concomitant phenomena. Not only that, but very shortly we were forced to acknowledge that falling objects and other phenomena in the sky must be considered in three categories if order was to ensue from chaos. In short, there seemed to be a class of objects which were merely physical debris cluttering up space and moving in orbits of varying shapes and which had little, if any, relationship to or association with intelligent being. A second group was obviously the product of thinking, if not, indeed, of higher mental characteristics such as purposefulness, determination, morality, and perhaps even humor. Then, especially in those instances where space phenomena appear to intermingle with our native meteorological condition, it became necessary to consider, as a third group, the less spectacular terrestrial events and to clarify our thinking by segregating these and getting them out of our way.

The upshot of this coercion was that we found more than half a dozen subcategories wherein we were allied with the sciences of meteorology which is the terrestrial science of the air, and meteoritics which is a branch of astronomy.

Let us, then, consider briefly these segments of our problem. To most of you who read this book, falling ice has been limited to hailstones, mostly small, perhaps the size of marbles. But in trying to organize data on ice which falls from the sky, we ran head-on into cases where chunks of ice weighing from a few pounds to some tons were known to fall, and without final proof we were forced to give thought to "spacebergs" which might weigh thousands of tons each, maybe hundreds of thousands, and which arrived from space in swarms of hundreds or even thousands, and left vast scars on the surface of the

earth. We were compelled to consider some of these falling blocks of ice as having been produced by, or at least associated with intelligent entities. It was even necessary to consider various sources for the orbital ice, depending on whether it came from the exploded fifth planet, whether it was blasted off the earth by prehistoric atom scientists, whether it was detached from the earth by tidal action when the earth and moon were united, whether it fell off the moon, or just where did it come from? In sifting out these cases where intelligence seemed to be involved, we found the process to have certain resemblances to panning gold nuggets from alluvial gravel. At least if the nuggets were there, we had to do our own sifting.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

I am Not adverse to saying that a Force-Field
***Can* Make a Man to fly FOR I HAVE SEEN IT DONE**
& I know the cause of this flight & Am Not
disturbed Paris Exhibition, 1951, Scientiest
from Paris Universigy Demonstrated this.
An AP PHOT WAS SENT TO U.S. SHOWING
THIS ACTION.

U.S. NAVYS FORCE-FIELD EXPEIRIMENTS 1943
OCT. PRODUCED INVISIBILITY OF CREW & SHIP.
FEARSOM RESULTS. SO TERRIFYING AS TO,
FORTUNATELY, HALT FURTHER RESEARCH.

We went through similar compelling experiences with regard to falling stones, falling live animals, and falling animal or organic matter. We found that life arriving from the sky was almost universally of a low order, such as reptilian or aquatic, and we found that some of it involved such intellectual elements as functionality, localization of target and repetition in fixed areas. The only common denominator for all the observed conditions turned out to be -- of all things --hydroponic tanks in space craft!

ON *THE* HEAD!

And if we are confronted with a falling object of crystalline rock obviously shaped as an optical aid, are we to cravenly call it an erratic, and discard or ignore it? And are we to cringe before the deposition of a few hundreds of dead birds from the heavens, all on one city, but of species completely scrambled and mostly unknown within hundreds of miles of that city?

What would you do with a piece of meteoric iron, unmistakably shaped by intelligent hands, but which was equally unmistakably removed from solid formations of geological Tertiary Age of 300,000 years ago? Wouldn't you perhaps reshuffle your conception of the antiquity of intelligence and wonder whether it was, for a fact, indigenous to this planet?

If you found raw meat, with hair attached, falling over a two-acre space, from a clear and undisturbed sky, wouldn't you struggle even harder to find some kind of category for it, and a common denominator of explanation relating it with other phenomena?

SPOILED FOOD, DROPPED.

If you found that water sometimes arrives from the sky in solid masses, flooding little brooks until they washed away villages, but neglecting the brooks a half mile away, wouldn't you look for a category outside routine meteorological storms?

These problems all had to be faced. Something had to be done about them -- and they all arose from objects falling from the sky. Also, they had to be distinguished from meteorological storms -- for **some of the clouds which** we studied **just appeared**, spat a stone or two and passed on. They were not thunderstorms, What were the?

Those were the problems which we faced in a welter of data on things coming from the sky, but they were, on the whole, less puzzling than events which directly involve people, or which were clearly current actions and not merely things which may have been operated in distant times and places. Among those phenomena involving people, the sudden disappearances are probably the most amazing. Some have disappeared instantly, while being watched by friends and close relatives. Crews have mysteriously disappeared from ships-- sometimes within sight of their home port--without warning and without trace.

HEH! IF HE ONLY KNEW WHY, HE'D DY OF SHOCK.

There are too many instances of planes and ships disappearing for us to ignore them. One plane is reported to have flown into a cloud from which it never emerged, while the crew of a blimp disappeared before the eyes of dozens of watchers. We are still wondering what happened to about fifty passengers from a plane whose wreckage was found recently on a mountainside in the Pacific Northwest.

These are several of the instances which have prompted some writers to postulate that UFO's were on the attack. My contention is that, at the very worst, such an attack is no more organized or malicious than that of a redcapped hunter stalking deer in the Pennsylvania mountains is an attack by the human race against the deer; and there may be elements of similarity.

It is almost an inseparable corollary to our thesis that we admit to an unfathomable antiquity for mankind, or at least intelligence, upon the earth, and its vicinity. This conclusion is made unavoidable by the antiquity of records of UFO's and wingless flight. It is apparent in the innumerable megalithic works of stone which involve masses **too huge to be moved by means other than levitation** and which have been standing for ages before any written record now available.

THE MAN IS CLOSE, *TOO* CLOSE.

As these pieces of the jigsaw puzzle make themselves known, and as we realize fully that this is an old, old problem, we can begin to take comfort. If UFO's have been here for 300,000 years and have not yet chosen to launch a mass attack on humanity, it is scarcely likely that they will do it now -- unless they are forced to do something to prevent the world's experimenting militarists and scientists from destroying the earth through ignition of its hydrogen, thus crating another nova or new star in the galaxy, a may well have been done when the fifth planet disintegrated at an incalculable time in the past.

So there are two elements of importance in our study of the antiquity of intelligence: the proof that superior beings have been here longer than mankind has been civilized, and the demonstration that forces were at work in those millennia, the magnitude and nature of which are only suspected today.

Is this, then, a **hint that** we are **at this moment awakening** and, like a chrysalis, emerging into a new and much more powerful state of existence and cognizance? Are, therefore, our current troubles, domestically and internationally, but the excruciating birth pains of such a renaissance, as **we could not have imagined** one short generation ago? Will we, then perhaps be welcomed rather than repelled by the intelligences which inhabit the UFO's or which may even be the UFO's?

Man's Emotional structure is such that he *cannot* awaken to Powers of 'True-'Thinking.'

Alright so it was not thougth that man would *ever* mature, Don't worry, Jemi.

Probably the oldest, and almost surely the most prolific of sources bearing on wingless flight, are the records of the Indian and Tibetan monasteries. These in themselves **are almost conclusive**. Records of 15,000 years ago imply wingless flight at least 70,000 years prior to that. Add this to the recorded visit of a space fleet to the court of Thutmose III, approximately 1500 B.C., and we are close to paralleling the sightings of today. Evidence of continued interest by the space dwellers comes from

medieval France where Adamski was completely scooped by elements of the French populace who **were given rides in the UFO's**.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

> **No Not pals but the French are such of an general Pholosophic attitude Even in that Day that they were chosen to be contacted. Now, some L-M's live in france out of preference *in* field of Philosophical Study. *They* like it.**

If early visits to Asia, subsequent contacts with the Egyptians at the peak of their culture, rumored associations of flight with the disappearance of Atlantis, and tours of France some centuries ago, indicate a pattern, then it may be of little wonder that the civilizations of today, perhaps the most spectacular of all, are receiving attention.

In many ways, the most intriguing data of all comes from the skeptical astronomers. Their observations do tend to be quantitative, timed, and documented. The astronomical data is more than merely qualitative. In other words, the astronomers themselves, being conscientious data hounds, were not content with merely seeing things move in space. Although unaware of the true nature of what they saw, they recorded as much as time and equipment would permit, and, as a result, they have enabled us to locate the habitat of the UFO's.

As with out own observations today, any single sighting by an astronomer could be a mistake or an illusion. **But hundreds of sightings are involved, and dozens of serious, reliable astronomers**.

BOY! IF ONLY HE KNEW THE THOUSANDS.

Many round things have been seen crossing the discs of the sun and moon, and some in space with no background. Roundness implies spherical or discoid shapes. Lights have been seen in space, some of them near Mercury, Venus, Mars, and the moon, and some between us and those orbs, so that they might be on their surfaces. In the case of the moon, lights have been seen on the surface. There have been shadows on the moon and on the earth which could have been cast only by manipulated space contrivances. The advent of the great comets and the red spot on Jupiter in the late 1870's was coincident with the mysterious appearance of a new crater on the moon precisely the size of the UFO's seen by astronomers between the earth and the moon.

The astronomers have seen two distinct classes of objects: the spherical, definitely outlined ones, and the hazy, nebulous ones. Both have appeared to undergo intelligent manipulation and exhibit erratic motions. In all of these are features that have counterparts among the sightings listed by lay observers since 1947. Simultaneous observations by tow or more observers have at times established the approximate distances of the UFO's through study of parallax. ("Parallax" is the displacement, often measurable, caused by looking at an object from too different points; e.g. hold up a finger and view it with first one eye and then the other. The displacement against a distinct background is parallax.) All-I-all, the astronomical evidence for UFO's while less voluminous than other types, is better grounded in factual and quantitative data. It must be given great weight.

If, in reality, the astronomical profession is to be forced into the position of being the principal witness for the defense, in the case of the UFO's its members will suffer a most peculiar type of embarrassment, for theirs is the unenviable position of having been most dogmatic and derogatory.

It seems unfortunate that astronomy, once the leader in the search for qualitative knowledge, **is apparently degenerating into opposition to pioneering**. Yet, astronomy, while strictly an observational and not an experimental science, takes front rank in denying authentic observational data which threatens in the slightest to upset its own scientific applecart.

IT SEEMS QUIOTICALLY RELIABLE OF HUMANS TO WAIT

TILL THEY THEMSELVES HAVE KNOWN FLIGHT & THINK NOW OF SPACE-FLIGHT BEFORE ADMITTING THAT OTHERS TOO HAVE FLIGHT. NOT, OF COURSE, (HE!-HEH) THAT *THEY* ARE SURPASSED,NO NOT WHEN THEY NOW ARE CLUED TO AN EQUALING IDEA IN FORCE FIELDS. THEY NOW HOPE TO BECOME EQUALS. *ALAS*!

In an observational science such as astronomy, **laws have to be built from innumerably repeated observations** and not, as is partially true in physics and chemistry, on the basis of duplicative laboratory experiment. In such cases, as the astronomer knows only too well, repeated observations must be accepted as tantamount to proof.

H-K HAS Enough observations, as he says, They ignore them

Many of astronomy's tenets are in such a category. To take only one example, the hypothetical life history of stars is based entirely on the so-called spectral sequence built solely upon spectroscopic observations of thousands of stars and the subsequent grouping and arranging of these into some logical structure. Even in this ponderous sequence there are erratics, or stars with peculiar spectra, whose real nature is a matter of speculation even after a hundred years of spectroscopy. Yet, the astronomer can hardly deny the existence of the obviously shinning star, no matter how recalcitrant may be its light waves.

There Is Intelligence in Space

The vast amount of material from the past, in all categories, **shows clearly** that intelligence exists in space! "Intelligence" is the sine qua non of our analysis. Without it our thoughts may be meaningless. Wit it, our corollary postulates are automatic.

Is Nothing, Harvard expiereiments show that only a few Humans Have Pie factors of any depth. They cannot tele-talk to any Clarity, Nor thusly are they able to "see" beauty of Each others Souls. Thus they are forced into Matierialistic Values & concepts & and Lack any SORT OF REASONABLE PHILSOSPHY TO LEAD THEM UPWARDS. SAVE THE GREAT BOOK.

Throughout this book, we make some rather fine distinctions. The difference between rain and "falling water" is one. For our concepts of **our** spatial environment we have to make a similar division between "mind" and "intelligence." "Mind," for our purposes, is the thinking function of the brain of mankind, or perhaps of lower animals. By "intelligence," we must conceive more broadly of an ability to think, construct, direct, analyze, plan,, navigate, laugh, etc., which is not necessarily a part of, or associated with, a carnate brain. In short, we must adjust our ego to the possibility that intelligence exists in space, that it may be and probably is superiour to our own, and that it may inhabit physical entities of a discarnate nature such as the nebulous or cloudlike bodies observed by Barnard (described later.)

Throughout, we are searching for **objects, bodies,** events which have been **made,** shaped or guided **by forces** obviously controlled by an "intelligence" which has the power of decision as opposed to those which have merely been acted upon by "physical" forces and "physical" laws, such as gravitation, and the Keplerian or Newtonian laws. Only thus can we establish "intelligence" as a universal component of neighboring space.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

Einstiens Theory of Unified Field throughout all Space & atmosphere WAS SO WELL PROVEN that upon realizing Mans Misanthropic emotionality He Withdrew it. 1927

Nobody know the precise nature of this spatial intelligence, much less the nature **of the physical body** within which its resides. This intelligence seems to manifest itself in many ways. In our study of storms we have been driven inexorably to admit that some storms have an artificial aspect, as sort of organic appearance, an air of being manufactured for a purpose and to be carrying out that purpose. We therefore postulate some percentage of artificiality, or intelligence, among that small percentage of storms which **suddenly** appear in otherwise undisturbed skies, proceed with a purposeful manner, as though concealing something, and discharge peculiar materials. They seem to concentrated, perhaps too directive, to be entirely meteorological in their orgins (sic).

DEAD GIVE-AWAY! *HE KNOWS*, SAYS AS MUCH, TOO.?

As a means, then, of assuring that we **do not knowingly overlook** any possible contributory evidence in the case for the UFO's, I ask you to keep these storms and cloud formations in mind, and, if possible, to fit them in to the basis of any comprehensive conclusions which you may eventually draw.

I believe that space structures of five to twenty miles in diameter are sufficiently large to produce such storms, and there may be elements of purposefulness in so doing, if only for camouflage or concealment.

THE L-M GREAT ARK=*BIGGER*!

It may be difficult to see the significance of antiquity in the consideration of space flight or space inhabitance. **But failure to consider the sprawling background of the** UFO **problem is the greatest single factor in the appalling chaos which engulfs this enigma**. Take but **one** small item: the little piece of meteoric iron which was found deep within a tertiary coal bed. The locale and the finding are authentic. The shape is purely artificial. It is but an inch or so square, practically a cube. Four sides are squarely faced, and the other two are convexly shaped, with complete symmetry. Around the four surfaced sides runs a groove, geometrically contrived. Here are three established facts:

1. Placement in an incipient coal bed some 300,000 years ago.
2. Made of meteoric iron, identifiable by structure and chemical content.
3. Clearly shaped by artificial means.

The number of explanations as to how it got into that coal bed may be few or several, but there is one underlying fact which cannot be scoffed into oblivion: This piece of natural steel was shaped by an intelligent instrumentation at least 300,000 years ago!

BEFORE STEEL WAS KNOWN TO H.S.

We can go on, but **somebody has to make a choice**, or deny and ignore the entire factual substratum. Science has ignored it. The **choice is most galling to face**: Was this gadget, created as it was by intelligence, placed there by man indigenous to earth, or was it dropped from space by a space traveler?

You choose to say: placed by Man? Then there was a race of men here 300,000 years ago who knew enough to shape steel, and, by inference, make machinery. If they could do that, **they most likely had locomotion of some sort**, and there is no good reason to deny that they could have found space flight either by research or accident. At worst there was time to develop a civilization of any preassigned refinement. **Science doesn't like that**. Alternative to that horn of the dilemma, we must contemplate space flight of 300,000 years ago,

TO WIT; THEY HAD THE WHEEL IN MANY FORMS.
SUCH AS MACHINE TOOLS OR FORCE FIELD (sic) "SHAPERS"
& CUTTER-BURNERS WHICH?

---BROTHER! THEY SURE DON'T!

capable of bringing this little machine part to the earth, or of bringing civilization itself and planting it here within that type of animal life judged most likely and suitable to perpetuate and develop mental capacity. **It is indeed a nasty choice for inhibited minds.**

EINSTIEN WASN'T ALIVE THEN, BUT THE NATURAL
FUNCTIONS OF OUR UNIVERSE & this planet Worked
Well without him.

We can conclude that space habitation has existed for many a millennia. We do not care whether earthmen took to space as a matter of convenience, comfort, and safety after blowing off a portion of the planet; or whether space inhabitants created terrestrial intelligence "in their own image." Bluntly: "What's the difference?" The basic thought is that **man is living in a world in which he is neither the completely dominant nor the supremely intellectual being.**

HUH, HE'LL *NEVER ADMIT IT*, THOUGH: PRIDE.

There has been a raging controversy for generations between pro-Atlantians and anti-Atlantians as regards the antiquity of civilized mankind upon this planet. **The archaeological remains of those nuclei civilizations,** which have, for 7,000 years or more been recovering from the celestial impact which caused the traditional flood, redistributed the surface soil of the earth, destroyed continents and made new ones, sunk Atlantis and Mu and raised hob in general, **are readily available in quantity**. They offer **easy materials for study**. Archaeology and ethnology, sharing with astronomy the feature of being observational and not experimental, have built their entire framework upon the study of those remains. Yet, underlying and intermingled with this vast array of material, there **are remnants of cultures of almost unspeakable age**. Their artifacts have been subjected to geological and cosmic cataclysms of almost incomprehensible violence and few major relics remain for perusal. Those few, however, are cast aside as the erratics of archaeology and ethnology, and their very existence is buried or denied in efforts to avoid toppling the house of cards so laboriously established by those branches of learning.

THAT'S JUST IT, NO ONE HAS DARED SPEAK, EXCEPT
IN COMMENTS TO ONE ANOTHER. *TILL NOW*.

INSTANCE:

(DARWIN WAS CASTIGATED, OSTRACIZED)

These studies break down almost completely at an antiquity of approximately 7,000 years, at which point they meet with what the mathematician calls discontinuity. Many of the oases of culture thus studied appear, suddenly, in final analysis, as going concerns, with little indication of forward development and **considerable to show** that **they were degenerate remnants of something already lost behind the misty curtain of antiquity**. It is my belief that we must admit to the "doings" of man in the eons prior to the collision of the earth with a vast aggregate of meteoric material which struck the Western Hemisphere some 10,000 to 15,000 years ago.

Books have been written, **libraries of them**, to **show this antiquity**, but it has not yet been accepted, even in principle, by any branch of science. Geology opposes any type of cataclysmic change in the structure of the earth and **will go to any extremes to avoid coming to grips with its erratics.**

Yet every science breaks down when it is forced to contemplate the origin of man's intellectual development. (Printing in Red is A & J)

IE. WHAT INSPIRATION CAUSED MAN TO BECOME MAN BY STARTING TO USE TOOLS. WHENCE CAME THE IDEA. SCIENCE SAYS "OF NECESSITY" BUT THE SAME NECESSITY EXISTS FOR APES…. *EVEN NOW*.

The few erratics in the following pages show that there have been very ancient cultures, or civilizations, which may have and could have developed methods of flight much simpler and more effective than ours, **and more directly associated with forces which we do not yet comprehend**. Again we are dealing with indirect evidence, not always of the greatest clarity. Yet in support of an antiquity of such an order I have seen and touched stonework carved out of the solid mountains of rock in South America, **which certainly antedate the Andean glaciers,** and almost as **certainly predate the formation of the mountains themselves**. **This work is superior in technique to that accomplished by our currently machanized civilization**. Much of that construction, sculpture and tunneling could only have been accomplished **by "forces"** different from those in use by us today. The quandary is largely **resolvable by admitting to a levitating force** developed and used by the same common denominator--space flight--which simplifies so many other puzzles for us.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

SUCH PRE-GLACIAL AGE WORKS OF CIVILIZATION ARE GENERALLY KNOWN BUT MUST BE DENIED A PLACE IN HISTORY FOR THEY ALL ARE--MYSTERIES.

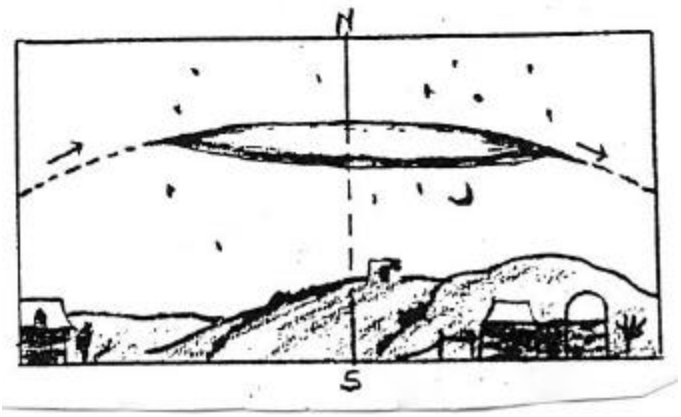
PRIDE IGNORANCE

On the basis of the evidence of an antiquity involving epochs of 50,000 to 200,000 or 300,000 years or more, we postulate the ancient development of some kind of science which either produced space flight or was brought to this third planet via space flight. I do not believe it is of great significance to our thesis at the moment whether one, or the other, of these assumptions is most likely to be true. Either is abhorrent to science and to some religions, yet either presents a background of conditionality favorable to an extremely ancient development of wingless flight. Nothing else answers all of the conundrums presented by observed and recorded facts.

As you will see, history is replete with stories of another great category of phenomena: the mysterious and ghostly disappearances of people, singly and in groups, publicly or in unobserved obscurity. These skin-ting-ling episodes seemed at first to have little in common with the falls of objects and the antics of storms. Many are incidents which, if their reality has been admitted at all, are in the view of scientists, spiritualists, and students of the occult, considered to belong to or border on the so-called supernatural. Within these segregations we must place the disappearance of the crews of ships, such as the Sea Bird and the Marie Celeste; the disappearance of individuals while in the company of their peers. There is not much hypothecating to be done with these. The stories can be told, and the cases lumped together as one big unexplained group of events. No explanation other than that of abduction by intelligently navigated aerial or celestial craft can be advanced: It is almost a case of proof by default.

With planes, there is perhaps some added element other than metal fatigue which involves striking some apparently solid object while in the air, or being rent by unimaginable forces just before falling. (Because of this additional evidence I have put the accidents to planes into a separate section of Part Three, below.)

Planes seem to hit something which crushes them or tears them apart, which **is** nevertheless **invisible**, and which strikes with such suddenness that the pilots do not have time to make an outcry via



Passage of Auroral beam, November 17, 1882, as seen from Guildown Observatory, Lat. 51 31' 39" N., Long. 0 28' 47" W.

their ever-live radios.

Then, too, there are cases of dead or frightened birds, and the cases of people being struck by unseen forces, as with seventeen marching soldiers in eighteenth-century France who were simultaneously struck down by an invisible agency.

One had a compass on him, fouled a "SWEEP" made L-Ms ANGRY

After analyzing these things, one speculates as to **new types** of obstacles **as well as new forces**. Take the mysterious **Maunder object**, which moved deliberately across the sky above southern England in November 1882. Rand Capron, an authority on auras, said it was auroral, while other equally competent scientists said it was a physical or material object. Then there are the many modern sightings of things which seem to manifest intelligent action, and to possess all normal physical characteristics except mass or weight. We recollect that radar sees things which are not visible to the eye.

ARK IN STASIS, THEN CAME OUT OF STASIS.

From such analysis we come by **easy stages to conceive of a force, ray, or focal point**, **in some force-field** either; unknown to us, **or at least not understood**, which produces rigidity in a localized or sharply delimited volume of air, or possibly in space itself. We are thinking of something like crystals of ice freezing within a body of water. The element remains the same but its physical attributes change suddenly and drastically.

DEH O', They Can't Prove it *yet!*

Another example might be the passage of a limited but **powerful magnetic field** through a scattering of iron filings or iron powder. Before the approach of the magnetic flux, the powder lies loose, flexible, and penetrable. Yet, when the flux enters it, invisibly and imperceptibly to the senses of man, this docile powder become rigid, tenacious, coherent, and at least semisolid. Do the space dwellers have a force **which** produces **this temporary rigidity In the air, or even possibly in the gravitation field** itself? Or do they create "local" concentrations of the gravitational field **as we are able to do with the magnetic field?**

REVERSE MAG. FORCE?

Suppose that some intelligent entity was directing a concentration of potential which could make small volumes of rarefied air rigid, could set up a sort of island in the gravitational or magnetic field,

moving the island about as the spot of a searchlight is moved on thin clouds. Such a thing would be invisible, would have many of the physical attributes of a solid body, but very small mass. For example, its movement through the air would be wavelike, and would not envolve translation of the medium any more than the spot of the searchlight would require movement of the cloud which enabled the beam to attain visibility. In moving, this island would simply "freeze" on the advancing edge and "thaw" on the trailing edge. In this way it could have almost infinite velocity, and also acceleration, just as the spot of the searchlight. In this manner it would appear to be free of mass, and actually it would be free of mass, because only the force beam would move, not the air. Yet in resisting the impingement of a bird, a plane, or perhaps a meteor, it would have mass, and a very destructive mass at that. A pilot flying a plane into such a body would have no warning. Yet if such a thing were a few hundred yards in diameter, its mass in resisting the plane would be thousands of pounds, perhaps tons. The analogy to a ship hitting an iceberg would be very close.

If such a force island were formed in the upper atmosphere, it might be very possible for it to have many of the physical characteristics of a solid body, and yet in matters of illumination it could behave exactly as any other auroral phenomena. In this connection we must remember that **auroral phenomena are magnetic** and may be caused by streams of electrons from the sun which are, in effect, **precisely the type** of force beam upon which we are speculating.

Yes, He is Close, but doesn't think of Mag. Inductors *or* of Gravity as "air" Or thought of in Jet propulsion. He doesn't know gravity & Magnetizm (sic) can be drawn into a ship, built up to High Power, While being converted & used as a Force-Propulsive HE MAY KNOW OF FORCE-SHIELDS of Primitive Ancient type.

It seems obvious that a single beam could not have the effect which we have suggested, else the freeze would take effect along the entire length of the beam. However, it is possible that the three-dimensional volume enclosed within the intersection of two beams might create such a congealed island.

Speculating further on this weird possibility, remember that **oxygen is a magnetic substance**. It is not, perhaps, paramagnetic like iron, manganese and nickel, but nevertheless sufficiently magnetic that it can be separated from the other constituents of air by means of a magnetic field.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

2000 Watt Cyclotron, built 1948, N.Y. STATE GIVES PROOF OF THE *ACTUALITY OF "SOLIDITY"* IN FORCE-FIELDS (sic) HOWEVER, IS NOT RECOGNIZED YET, OR THOUGHT OF YET AS TOOL.

If such a **congealment** were possible, consider the result of crossing the two beams at the exact aerial position of a flying plane and congealing the air around and in the plane. **Could you**, in this way, hold a plane in suspension, or even carry it away? **Could you**, by a similar concentration of beams, **freeze** two aviators on the sands of the Arabian Desert, and carry them away? **Could you freeze** a man and instantly lift him out of sight, or cause him to be invisible within the block or frozen air or oxygen? **Could you** freeze the crew of a ship, and remove them from the vessel? Could you catch or kill birds, quickly and over a vast area, with such a thing, and dump them on a city in Louisiana? All these peculiar things happened, **but we don't know how, or why**.

Heh! If he only knew by experience he'd keep Silent & Not write or speak of it *ever* again in his Lifetime. He COULDN'T SPEAK OF IT, for you see, Jemi, It paralyzes ones Sense of time & Nulifys Mental Cognition, functions & Memory, SO HE HAS NO KNOWLEDGE, HE COULD NOT HAVE. *ONLY* GUESSING.

Before we leave this tantalizing topic, give thought to the nature of an aurora borealis. As early as the time of Maunder's object, it was recognized that auroras are magnetic phenomena, or at least associated with the earth's magnetic field. It has been further ascertained that they are related to sunspots, and that they are probably due to the interaction of electronic streams from the sun or from sunspots. **Is not an aurora, then, something very much akin to the congealed islands** which we have just postulated? Is it not a delimited volume of rarefied air caught within the tripping reaction of an electron stream passing through a magnetic field? Was Maunder's object, then, in a sense both material and nonmaterial; both massive and nonmassive? Is it the incounter with the "pockets" which makes meteors explode? Do they make blips on a radar screen?

S-F REGARDED AS FANTASTIC DREAMERS. D-W

Have we a clue here, or are we **dangerously close** to science fiction?

Short-Cut to Space Travel (He has "hit the nail")

It is but a step from such contemplations to a similar analysis of the "Foo" fighters, fireballs, the comet-like objects usually seen in groups of six or eight, and the darting evanescent things seen now and then over Washington D.C. Such phenomena must be considered as most likely due to intelligent manipulation, or remote control, from distant structures, and **technically trained observers have often said as much**. We do not entirely rule out a self-contained intelligence, but many of these manifestations have more the quality of something which, for want of an established terminology, we might call the searchlight type of UFO. Many reports have described objects or UFO's as appearing to have been operated by remote control. I believe that they are exactly that.

It is by no means clearly established that all apparently self-luminous phenomena are of this nature. There are still a number of luminous spheres and discs which seem to have a more material nature and to contain the intelligences which operate them. The widgets seen by astronomers in space are examples, and I think, too, of such things as the ruddy disc which buzzed Captain Manning's DC-3 near south Bend, Indiana.

The "Devil's Hoofprints" and related phenomena, discussed below in Part Three, offer another key or clue, and in segregating them from the mass of unclassified data we can, again, remove a considerable segment of the load which burdens the psychic and paranormal field. The misinterpretation adherent to the Hoof marks are more fantastic than the phenomenon itself. It is unbelievable, to me at least, that people intelligent enough to make a living among their fellows would try to interpret a linear sequence of exactly duplicated marks, crossing roof tops, walls and haystack unfalteringly and indiscriminately as animal tracks. These marks were **equally spaced**, occurring singly, not in twos or fours. Even in the old mythology there is no tale of a one-legged animal.

The Measure-Marker was accidently Left Idling, that time. Nowadays, Measure-Markeres are Not used, *except by Undersea-Explorers*. *(Italics by A)*

Here is something clearly mechanical. With equal clarity it is something maneuvering in the sky. Since the mysterious phenomenon occurred half a century before our race developed mechanical flight, this, to me, is an isolated and clear-cut indication of space flight.

Throughout the series of modern (after Arnold) sightings of UFO's there is a thread of **frequent references** to "Mother Ships" **and huge superconstructions**. The **vast thing** chased by Mantell **and the ten-mile-long thing**/over Kansas are examples. There can **no longer** be serious **doubts of their existence**. It seems probable that these constructions **are the domiciles** of the small-fry discs, spheres,

balls of light, etc., which are so frequently seen in proximity to the earth's surface and to our planes, rockets, air fields and cities.

It is my belief that these constructions are few in number, not many (there is some possibility, in fact, that there may be only two of them) and that they do not come from distant planets such as Venus, Mars, Jupiter or the vastly more distant stars. It is my belief that they are usually globular, sometime spindlelike, and that they are an indigenous part of earth-moon binary-planet system. **I make this statement on the basis of hundreds of astronomical observations** in which the rough determinations of parallax can be made. Parallax shows these objects to be somewhere between a few hundred miles away and a maximum of something less than the distance of the moon. While I believe that these space islands probably use both earth and moon for their own convenience, I suggest that their most natural and permanent habitat is at the **gravitational neutral** of the earth-sun-moon, three-body system which **is well within the orbit of the moon**.

Why Not, The Neutral has Less wearing effects on Tissue, Nerves & Lets one Live Much, Much Longer. Humans Die Due to Gravitational Wear & tear, too.

Dean Swift was prescient in regard to his astronomy, predicting that Mars had two small satellites, one of which was close to Mars' surface and made two revolutions daily. It has been pointed out that this inner body is too close to Mars to be in adjustment with any known postulate of the natural distribution of satellites relative to their parent body. This may be an indication that **Mars' inner satellite is artificial**.

Also an old "Dead-Ark" S-M MAKE

It has been postulated that **gravitation need not be considered as acting with uniform continuity**, from the center of the attracting body outward, even if subject to the inverse square law. **Such a concept, today**, **would be especially horrendous to physics and astronomy.** Yet, there is a suspicious rhythm to the distribution

TODAY IS When it could be if the Most Technical use Tomorrow is too-Late for these War-Lovers.

of planets, outward from the sun. This has been somewhat crudely expressed in Bode's "law," and in spite of scientific protestations there is a similarity between atomic structure as we comprehend it and the obvious structure of the solar system.

& HOW ABOUT MOLECULAR STRUCTURES & ITS "FIELDS"???

Refinements of Bode's law indicate **nodes in the gravitational field**, at which planets, asteroids, and possibly comets and meteors tend to locate themselves. An extension of the theory to the satellite systems of the major planets **indicates a similar system of nodes** on smaller scales, where planets, rather than the sun, are gravitational centres. This indicates a sort of generality, and since these smaller planets, such as Venus, Earth, Mars, do not have satellite systems (the moon is more of a companion than satellite and may have joined the earth through acquisition rather than formation), it might well be that these gravitational **nodes** are occupied to some degree by navigable construction.

"Nodes," are the old Traps & burial "Grounds" Here Lay quite a few Dead-Ships they cannot get away. The old types couldn't but these new types can. It was nodes in great number on Surface of this Earth that gave the clue to L-M's of How to Neatralize forces but a floor pattern in METAL ACTUALLY SHOWED THE MEANS.

Over a period of almost two hundred years there have been many modifications of Bode's law, in an effort to completely generalize it, and to make it theoretical as well as empirical. Many researchers have extended the law so as to establish nodes **right down to the surface** of the central bodies, and in so doing the nodes become closer and closer together so that there may be many of them at short distances from the parent body. Thus, if the law or its derivatives have significance, there could be a number of these orbital nodes between the moon and the surface of the earth.

We can therefore, take it as highly probable that there are many zones of convenience around the planets, as well as around the sun, which are presently unoccupied by planets or satellites of any considerable size and which may well be used by enlightened space dwellers. Such zones, if they exist, are **in addition** to the demonstrable earth-sun-moon neutral. Since this system of nodes appears to be some function of the radius of the attracting body, it may be that there is a complete series of them in concentric circles starting at the surface of a parent body such as the earth, but their existence or true nature can hardly be known to us until we can in some way determine the nature of gravity itself.

No, they are Part of Same Physics Principal.
They DO Extend outward concentrically, Usually stay in position, Not, always.

There may even be hints available to us regarding gravity. For instance, no final settlement has ever been made of the argument over the opposed wave and corpuscular theories of the propagation of light. An assumption that the ether, a necessary adjunct to the wave theory, is identical with the gravitational field, whatever that may be, would reconcile the opposing theories and a quantum of light would then be merely a pulsation or fluctuation in the gravitational field. **Intense studies** of the movements **of space-navigable UFO's** might furnish vital clues to such problems.

It would only tell all, What this one has guessed.

Let us go back for a moment to the matter of **masslessness of some of the UFO's**. Their ability to achieve enormous acceleration has been one of the greatest puzzles to scientists. Time after time **we are told that the UFO's could not possibly contain living bodies of flesh and bone** -- that such bodies could not withstand the stresses imposed by the observed accelerations. Yet such argument can well be based on **entirely erroneous ideas as to the nature of the propulsive forces used** by the UFO's. Acceleration is damaging **only** because **the forces necessary to produce it are applied externally to the living body**, or to the structural members of any flying machine. **Any force** which would simultaneously accelerate **every** molecule of either the living body or the mechanical structure would avoid all such stresses, and both the living and the mechanical could undergo any amount of acceleration without the slightest damage or discomfort!

Ei! Yeih:

UNLESS* THOSE BODIES WERE *TINY, MATURE*, & ENCASED *IN LIQUID*. LIQUID USED AS A SHOCK ABSORBER. *(Italics by A)

GOTTEN FROM "TANKS" & in the tiny "Life-boat-ships, Was seen.

IT WORKS FINE.

Since the UFO's, even the material, structure like ones, are observed to sustain acceleration without mishap, we cannot but conclude that whatever the force used for such violent propulsion may be, it **must** be of such a nature that all fractions of the accelerated bodies are acted upon individually. **This could only come about through reactance with the gravitational field, because nonmagnetic**

materials do not react to a magnetic field. Therefore, since such movements are observed, we have to stop thinking in terms of jet or rocket propulsion, or reactance with a magnetic field, any of which subject both flesh and metal to outside pressures, and instead, **ascertain how space craft obtain reactance with gravity**. **(red is A&B)**

DO MOST CERTAINLY REACT.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

Proof of Reactance of Non-Magentic Materials is in Mag. Chamber, Cyclotron, 2000 WATTS, NEW YORK STATE.

A Man *cannot* Move in a *concentrated Mag*. Field & too, Mag can be connected to Grav. & VICE-VERSA Concentrated Magnet causes "Freezing of Man

The Man is on the right track but thinks of Mag. as a Minor force.

Either this guy KNOWS OF MAG. ATTRACTORS & GRAV. CONVERTERS & Force Field Functions

or

& He wants to Mislead or He knows Very Little & shows it ----Which? ?

It should be **obvious to** all engineers and **scientists** that **rocket propulsion will never solve the problems of space travel**, not only because of the unavoidable problems of acceleration, but because of the impossibility of transporting the necessary fuel and carrying the heavy reactance motors. Few laymen realize that, for rocket flight, the fuel is of dual purpose. Its ability to produce energy is no whit more valuable than its ability to produce inertial reactance when expelled through a jet, and therefore, any rocket propulsion craft must carry mass in some form for the purpose of being expelled so as to create reactance. Using fuel for both energy and reactance is only a partial solution of the problem, and **obviously limits** both the range and speed of a space craft. **(Red is A & B).**

QUITE TRUE, ROCKET *CARGO (word illegible)* DO.

Atomic power is certainly not the answer, at least not as regards jet or reactance propulsion, for all of the atomic power in the world will not move a space craft, by reactance propulsion, unless there is an enormous mass to be ejected and lost. The amount of such expendable mass is proportional to the weight of the craft and the square of the speed obtained. It is exactly here that the great cost and impracticality of current attempts at rocket flight occur.

***True*, in the way he thinks of applying. Can XXXXXX Worked in Combination.**

A cheap power must, therefore, be found. By cheap power we have in mind something **like** the **effect of the winds on sailing craft,** [1] or the reactance of revolving cylinders with the winds, as was tried on a Scandinavian vessel twenty to thirty years ago. **Such a force or power will have to originate in reactance directly with the gravitational field, since magnetic fields will not account for the observed accelerations** nor are they, so far as we know, extensive enough in space.

[1] This probably refers to the series of notes on the preceding page.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

GRAV. CONVERTER, TURNING GRAV. SUCKED IN ON THE GRAV. FIELD ATTRACTORS, HAVE BEEN IMPROVED & PUSH BETTER.

If the money, thought, time, and energy now being poured uselessly into the development of rocket propulsion were invested in a basic study of gravity, it is altogether likely that we could have effective and economical space travel, at a small fraction of the ultimate cost which we are now incurring, within one decade.

Our present path of development will not give it to us.

Science has consistently scoffed at any thought of gravity control or levitation, and **such scoffing has had to be accepted as authoritative in the absence of proof** to the contrary. Such proof now seems to be within sight, or at least there **is increasingly strong evidence that gravity is neither so continuos so immaterial nor so obscure as to** be completely **unamenable to use, manipulation and control**. Witness not only the documented movements of UFO's in the form of lights, discs, nebulosities, etc., but the many instances of stones, paper, clothes baskets and many other things which have been seen to leave the ground without apparent cause. **The lifting of the ancient megalithic structures, too, must surely have come through levitation**.

ED: the following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

I should have enjoyed seeing Lemis Chieftran trying to Maneuver The first Craft before directional field induction was discovered. That, to Me, is a Classic tale of Howlingly Good Humor.

The same inhibited thinking which has consistently aroused our protests is responsible for the maladjusted direction of our attack on the problems of space flight through rocket power. There must be, and almost certainly is, a better, shorter way of accomplishing it. The difference between the pre-Incan methods of handling huge stone masses and those of our present-day engineers offers a kind of parallel. We should be looking for the simpler, more direct course-- not wasting our resources on unworkable methods.

In the magazine, *Look*, August 24, 1954, there was an article entitled "How Close Are We To Space Flight?" by J.Gordon Vaeth. He thinks we are not very close. If we accept his reasons we have to agree with him. He says the problem is too massive, too expensive, too intricate. We might add, ponderous. And--he is quite correct if we continue along present channels of research and development. Our procedure is expensive, cumbersome, tedious, and extremely wasteful of money, time, manpower, and intellect.

If, on the contrary, we shift our concentration **to the intensive study of gravity**, and put on that problem brains and education comparable to those which have solved the problems of fission and atomic structure, **it is my honest belief that we can whip the problem of space travel inexpensively within a decade.** It is my belief that something of the sort was done in the antediluvian past, through either research or through some **fortuitous discovery** of physical forces and laws which have not as yet been revealed to scientists of this second wave of civilization.

It is **always easier to uncover a principle**, or a fact, **if it is known in advance to exist**. This is certainly a fact that helped the Russians in their development of the atomic bomb and the H-bomb. It probably helped Columbus in his quest for the "Indies," even though he found something slightly different. It is my belief that the possibility of gravity control, or **at least gravity reactance**, has been strongly indicated by the phenomena listed in this book.

He May know of this principle but he needs to

Have a permanent or Very Close "Node" to fathom the thing. Or one that *frequently* touches Earth in the same spot or even General Area. Nowadays Such "Dead-spots" don't revisit the Planetary surface as described & so Now this Principle cannot be discovered, *even if known*.

The Home of the UFO's

There seems to be something of periodicity in events of celestial and spatial origin. This has been called to our attention by John Philip Bessor in the *Saturday Evening Post* as early as May, 1949; but no one has thus far been able to catalogue and classify enough of this data to determine for certain whether such cycles exist, much less their time period or cause. It is not particularly astonishing that these phenomena should be cyclic, for practically everything astronomical is periodic. If periodicity could be firmly established for these phenomena, that fact alone would be proof of their reality and integration with the organic world about us.

The rush of oddities and unusual events in the decade 1877 to 1887 is very much in evidence. Perhaps it does seem to be drawing the long bow a bit if one tries to make out that the presence of the great comets, or the activity of the Red Spot on Jupiter, were influential in causing such events, but that all of these were concomitant is undeniable. If space life is limited to the earth-moon system, there is probably no common cause, but it must, however, be borne in mind.

Of greater pertinence is the observed and authenticated activity on the lunar surface during those and the immediately preceding years. Not only were there appearances and disappearance of lunar craters abaout the size of some of the larger space craft which have been seen but there is some evidence that nebulous entities hover over these evanescent craters and contribute to their obscuration.

Observations of UFO phenomena and related events on or near the earth's surface may be distorted by excitement, emotionalism and prejudice. But the direct observations of space life and its contingent activity, as seen by astronomers are more objective and more coolly recorded. We can feel more relaxed in dealing with them, on more solid ground.

Astronomical observations break naturally into three categories: lights, shadows, and bodies. Lights and shadows, perhaps, in reality comprise one group since one is the counterpart of the other, while bodies, on the other hand, tend to divide into two groups, one made up of solid contrivances and the other of nebulous or cloudlike units.

Lights seem to be especially representative of intelligence, particularly when they appear to have independent movement, or to shine in places where there seems to be no natural organic activity, for lights have to be created as well as manipulated. The **hundreds** of **observations** of **lights on** or **near** the **moon** and **in other parts** of **nearby space** --lights which seem to exhibit volition, purposefulness and direction – are extremely difficult to explain on any other basis than intelligent activity in space. On the other hand, they become a natural corollary to such activity. Again, since **science has failed utterly to offer any other acceptable explanation**, we ask that these lights be taken as one more phenomenon which can be simply adapted to our organic environment by the one common denominator of space flight and space life.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

They have built there, now that peace has come these past 70 years. I would Like to see their Great Port City but I am too old to travel & even if so could not return. As always, Its underground

Shadows are almost as easily identified with intelligence as are lights, and one is pretty well the counterpart of the other. Their validity cannot be denied. Russell's shadow on the moon, 1,500 miles in diameter, holding a steady position for hours, cannot be lightly dismissed. The shadows on our own clouds, as seen in Texas and England, are irrefutable proof that some kind of dirigible bodies are moving in our upper atmosphere or in nearby space.

Bodies seen in space may be considered to have more direct and obvious connection with intelligence than do lights and shadow. There was a time when astronomers, seeing these by the dozens, thought them to be intra-Mercurial planets, or asteroids. **Keen analysts** have long since dispelled that misapprehension, but they **have not discouraged nor discredited the sightings**. These have remained without explanation for many decades, and some for hundreds of years. All of these observations gradually came to be regarded as erratics, to be ignored if possible. Astronomers who did not make any such observations liked to call them hallucinations, especially the **spindleshaped ones** whose configuration did not resemble that of more commonly known celestial objects. Mass passages, such as those seen be Herschel and Bonilla, were laughed off as being bugs, birds or seeds; or at worst, meteor swarms.

Ship frames, unfinished & being pushed or turned to new bases, during the Last War.

Little effort was made to determine the parallax of such objects, so their distance was never fairly established. We cannot blame the individual astronomer too much for this, particularly since many of those observations were made by amateurs. In those days it had not entered our comprehension that any of these spatial wanderers could be so close to the earth that parallax would be noticeable between observers only a few score miles apart. It has remained for us, awakening to the importance of those old observations, to make what we can of parallax studies for determining the distance of the objects sighted. It is not astonishing that our findings substantiate earlier analyses, but there may be an element of amazement in finding that these bodies are being navigated within the earth-moon system.

There is something more of astonishment, however, in finding that the astronomical observations include two distinct and divergent types of bodies: the solid, geometrically shaped structures, and the ill-defined nebulous clouds. Both have been recorded by impeccable witnesses. Both have been shown to exhibit evidences of intelligent direction or control. Both have their parallel instances among the current observations of UFO's seen by the man in the street, since 1947, and by our forebears as shown in historical records.

Strangely enough, however, the cloudy types have been seen really far out in space, and rather probably associated with such large comets as that of 1882. But whether seen two-thirds of an astronomical unit away or hovering over New York Harbor, they have had peculiar characteristics. Some of those seen by Schmidt in the neighborhood of the great comet in 1882 were moving both with the comet and at right angles to it, and there were undoubtedly objects moving about within the head of the comet.

The astronomical observations are so definite that we must leave them largely to speak for themselves, other than to point out again their concentration in certain years. It may be that further investigation will disclose other years of concentration, but the task is an enormous one. It is possible to say, however, that the search has been fairly exhaustive for the years 1877-86. There is reason to think that the next intensive investigation might bear fruit if concentrated around the prior years 1845-1860.

It is my contention that these observations of space movements are well explained by the existence of controlled space clouds and space structures, and that nothing else known to man does explain them. That the structures are the habitat of some kind of intelligence seems reasonable enough, but we also begin to wonder if intelligence is also inherent in the big clouds. If it is, then we are almost certainly going to have to adjust ourselves to a new type of intelligence and "life."

Have refused acceptance for 200 ages, *How could* they ever adjust to What they refuse to accept?

Observations by Harrison, Gould, Perrine, Swift, Brooks and others demonstrate incontrovertibly that some of the objects seen by astronomers are subject to volitional and purposeful controls, whether they are cometary (nebulous) (sic) type (as per Harrison, Perrine, Gould, Bone), or of the planetary (structural) sorts (as per Watson, Swift, Lescarbault, Gruitheinsen, et al.).

The astronomical literature from 1885 to the present has been but sketchily included and researched. If it is but a fraction as prolific as that of the "comet years," there is, indeed, a wealth of UFO lore awaiting some research. It is to be doubted if there is as much in later years, because it became increasingly unfashionable to publish such information. It is barely possible that the editorial offices of some scientific publications may retain some of their old correspondence, and, if so, readers who have enough interest and access to those files might reap a rich reward from a bit of browsing. Search of observers' notebooks and observatory files might also bear fruit, and the old files of daily and weekly papers, especially where there are professional observatories or active amateur clubs, might disgorge some valuable information. I welcome reports of such items.

I suggest an alliance between amateur astronomers with telescopes and UFO enthusiasts, for the purpose of keeping eyes on the gravitational neutral of the earth-sun-moon systems. At times of new moon and of solar eclipse, this neutral point will be directly in line with the sun and moon, which will either be superimposed in the sky or be very close to each other. As the moon approached first quarter the neutral will swing to the east (left) of the sun and will move back into line between first quarter and full moon. After full moon and until third quarter the neutral will move to the west (right) of the sun, and will again swing toward the sun between third quarter and new moon. The neutral will reach its maximum distance to left of right at first and third quarters, but will not follow the moon around the earth. At new moon the neutral will be very close to the moon and that will be the time to watch for objects landing or taking off from the moon, although it is the worst time of all to see anything in that region because of the glare of sunlight. On the other hand, at the time of full moon the neutral will be closest to the earth, and directly in line with the sun, and that will be the time to watch for objects crossing the disc of the sun, probably from left to right. All of this on the assumption that space structures do make use of the neutral on account of the lessened navigational problems. Look for formations and groups which are especially indicative of intelligent action.

Cometary masses, on the other hand, will be more easily seen in other parts of the sky and are less likely to be using the neutral. Look for them in the northern sky on dark nights and expect them to look exactly like small comets without tails, or like a small nebula. Their rapid motions will give away their nature. **Watch** the regions of terminator **on the moon for lunar surface activity**. You might get a surprise.

"What are we (humans) that Thou hast *placed* us only a Little *"Lower than the Angels"*

Are UFO's Russian

The October 1946, issue of the *Intelligence Digest* said:

The Soviets have ordered the building of a special centre of Astronomical research--in which will be a number of institutes, observatories and special airdromes where flying observatories, special balloons and airships are to be based for carrying out protracted studies at high altitudes.

Special machinery was acquired and there were further reports of work with monster mirrors. *Intelligence Digest* reported that the Russians were known to be working on a highly secret project involving cosmic rays, which (without much proof) was surmised to be related to atomic development. They were reported to have made some discoveries far in advance of the atomic research. **One of their reported accomplishments was said to be a method of freezing large areas of ground to subzero temperatures, killing everything therein**.

If that is so then they also have a Heat Generator all in one IF this is Like to what I'm thinking about, in Principle.

The reporting agency, ***Intelligence Digest***, of London, **has proved remarkably accurate** in many instances, as for example their prediction in November, 1948 of the explosion of a Russian atom bomb which did actually occur during the following August, within two months of the time predicted.

This is not to say that the UFO's are definitely Russian. But it does appear that **Russia has had something** during the postwar years, **which was worth some very extreme efforts to conceal**. Since we were presumably ahead of them in atomic research and development in the late forties, it does seem unlikely that concealment of their own atomic work would have justified such tremendous effort.

One wonders if their vast military deployment has been of that nature--for if they intended to use it against us, their ideal time was in 1950-52 when the United States was weak and spread most thinly over the world. There was just enough ostentatious secrecy about their military operations to make them appear to be the major interest.

UFO's, as we have seen, and as has been pointed out by Palmer and Arnold, Leslie, Wilkins, Fate, and others, have been around for thousands of years. ***It has been no* secret that some principle of space flight** or levitation was in existence; the problem was to rediscover it for contemporary civilization. As we have said before, **it is easier to discover a scientific principle if it is *known* to exist**. The Russians have known this as well as we have known it.

We are contemplating space travel via cumbersome methods within a few years-- at most a few decades. If earthlings can be that close to it now, other races, either nonterrestrial or of great terrestrial antiquity, can already have it. If the U.S.A. can foresee space navigation in such a short time, there is no reason why Russia's mathematicians and physicists cannot have stumbled onto the principles which makes it possible.

But there is another, and much more plausible, possibility. Have the Russians captured a space ship? Or have space people taken over the Red Empire?

NUTS.

The **secrets of ancient flight** and levitation, according to researchers into very ancient oriental records and reported by Churchward, Leslie, and others, have **been preserved in the monasteries** of the Himalayas: **in Tibet**, Nepal, India and China. **Can there be a direct relationship between this fact and Russian anxiety to capture and control those mountain fastnesses?**

Could easily be so.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

Russia FINALLY admits atomic Warfare would obliterate Civilization from the Earth, No Winner & etc. Would they admitt such if they knew of Nothing better?

Russia may have discovered such a new force or principle, either **through accidental scientific discoveries** or through capture of a space ship or association with "Space People."

If the UFO's are, indeed, interested in preventing disintegration of the earth through atomic warfare, it is but natural that they would act through control of one or both of the nations now throwing around their atomic weight. Do they, then, control the United States, secretly? Or do they control the Soviets? Or have the Soviets captured a space ship? **Whether we like it or not, and whether or not our governments admit the true state of affairs, these are *some* of the possibilities which we must consider**.

If such a condition exists, then even the development of atomic and hydrogen bombs **could be diversionary.**

Space Flight: Common Denominator

If I should be asked to state my thesis in one word, I believe that this word would be isolationism, or if I could squeeze in a hyphen, anti-isolationism.

Whatever else we may do or think, we have to extend our ideas of one world to include at least one solar system, and maybe more. But, whether or not, it is beyond the comprehension of our weary minds to go further at the moment, and we will just have to be content to consider our solar system as one living entity. **This war-weary, heartsick and bedraggled planet** is not alone--it is just one cell in a multicellular unit.

GALACTICLY SPEAKING

Let us revive from the **sedative idea** fostered by both science and religion that man, homo sapiens, of here and now, of the United States and today, is the final, glorious, end-point in the work of an omnipotent and benevolent creator, all alone in an infinite universe. It cannot be true and in our honest hearts all of us know that it is not so.

IT IS NICE TO HAVE COMPANY. EH? DRAGA?

Were I to be granted one more word, that word would be Truth. **I am interested in true knowledge, for its own sake.** It is my philosophy that science and religion should have at least one thing in common: the untiring, unceasing, **unwavering quest** of **unbiased, undistorted true knowledge of the world around us…** and, again, I use the word world in its old, original and all-comprehensive sense.

To cry out that we have discovered the truth about UFO's **would be to invite ridicule**, even for our effort. **Therefore, let us summarize our conclusions** and preface them with the same statement of open-mindedness which we demand of others whom **we invite** to immerse themselves in our studies of historical, meteorological, and astronomical erratics. **We believe that our analyses** have taken every possibility into account and **have provided us with the most logical answers**. (Red is A and B)

What this guy Believes he has knowledge to Prove his beliefs in the Main.

Psychological appeal to be Man enough to keep an open Mind, Lively with wanting to know, and to try Not to form any opinion until book is concluded.

Our general conclusions then, are:

1. A vast number of hitherto unexplained phenomena are readily accounted for by admitting that they result from intelligent action on the part of being living in space in navigable contrivances.

2. Abundant observations by accredited astronomers, despite the general attitude of the profession, indicate both the existence and location of the parent structures from which UFO's come.

3. UFO's inhabit the space between the earth and the moon, probably at the approximate region of the earth-sun-moon gravitational neutral, about 165,000 to 170,000 miles from the earth.

4. While some of the larger widgets (like the one chased by Mantell and the ten-miler seen over Kansas) may occasionally come close to our terrain, we see, mostly, the small, agile observers of both solid and nebulous types **which they send** on exploratory **missions**.

5. They have developed a source of power much superior to anything of which we aware.

6. UFO's have pointed the way too a shortened research program which might give us space travel in a decade, at a small fraction of the cost of trying to develop rocket flight, if we will only concentrate our research into the proper channels.

7. Russia may well have captured a UFO and be developing the resources gained therefrom, employing atomic experimentation as a diversionary measure.

NOT SO or else she'd have cornered the Worlds Diamond Market by Now as a dead-Give-away that she'd Caught one. (Takes a Powerful Magnetic "Net" to do so)

one with a reverse "snap Neutralizer" in it.

8. The very number and variety of the UFO's **which are constantly seen** is almost a priori **proof of** an **origin close** to the **earth**. Even the distance to nearby planets such as Venus and Mars seems too great to permit of such promiscuity.

We can conclude that the UFO's are permanent because they have been here for many centuries. That we have so suddenly become aware to them may be due in part to an increased activity, but it is more likely the result of our own slow awakening from intellectual immaturity. **Exhaustive research has disclosed records of sightings covering thousands of years, and occasionally actual visits and contacts** with our race. More of these incidents are coming to light constantly as research is pursued with UFO's in mind. Now that **we are aware of UFO's** and know what to look for the uncorrelated data of our predecessors takes on a meaning hitherto lacking and becomes significant. It is now up to us to discover and analyze all the data, and to correlate it with current observations.

We can allay our fears of present-day "Flying Saucers." **They have been here since before the dawn of our civilization,** so what is there to get excited about? If we haven't been molested seriously in two thousand centuries, why get excited now? **If anything is at stake, it is our ego,** not our physical welfare. (**Red is A&B)**

Yet, it is hard to discourage the innate feeling that there has recently been a great surge of activity on the part of UFO's as if in preparation for something big. One does not have to look far for a motive. These entities have probably been living in the solar system long enough to have seen the fifth planet explode, destroying itself and perhaps jeopardizing life throughout the system. They may have originated on that planet. **Should one be astonished if these space dwellers are preparing to prevent a few fearstricken human beings from blowing up another planet, perhaps the only remaining one which offers supplies and a haven to space navigators? If we are incapable of the self-control necessary for our preservation, are we to assume that superior neighbors will permit their safety to be imperiled by our immature behavior?**

Matches our own thoughts.

It is no longer necessary to explain them as visitors from Mars, Venus, or Alpha Centauri. They **are a part of our own** immediate **family**-- a part **of the earth-moon, binary-planet system**. They didn't have to come all of those millions of miles from anywhere. They **have been here for thousands of years**. Whether we belong to them by possession, like cattle, or whether **we belong to each other by common origin** and association is an interesting problem, and one which may soon be settled if we keep our heads.

He *Knows* Something but *How* Does He know.

In final summary, the UFO's have been around us for a long time and probably are a connecting link with the first wave of terrestrial civilization. They have been used against us in some very minor and insignificant cases, but, on the whole, have either been friendly or indifferent. They are **operated by forces** currently unknown to us, but of **vastly greater efficiency than anything we now contemplate**. Space contains enough miscellaneous debris to supply many of the requirements of space life, and the remainder are obtained from the surfaces of the earth and moon, while the UFO's spend most of their time at the neutral points in space. The Russians have something which they have determined to conceal at all costs. The Russians have been doing very advanced experimental research with cosmic forces; UFO activity was stepped up greatly just a year or so after intelligence reports noted the unusual Russian scientific activity. It is not necessary to assume that the Russian basic science is far ahead of our own if we can believe that a space ship has landed in inner Asia and that they have captured it and are studying its principles and experimenting with models -- or that the space people have taken over the Russian high officialdom and are directing their efforts and supplying know-how.

We **do have** the UFO's. They are of several kinds, always have been, so they may come from various sources. They are either terrestrial, extraterrestrial, or both. We think they are extraterrestrial, but remotely of terrestrial origin.

We believe they are both, and that the Russians may have captured one or more. **We think** that some new scientific principles are with us, perhaps even now operating within our **military** laboratories, and may burst forth at any moment -- and that as a race we may be on the verge of something akin to what the modern atomic scientist calls a "quantum expansion"!

No other set of conclusions will serve as a common denominator for all observable facts.

The possibility of the Ruskies have FOUND an *old* "Dead-Ship" is Not without the realm of probability. His admittance to other forms of Humanoid Life is near-revealatory to what I surmise; *He* is *being Lead* by his short-Wave Telepathic nose, so to speak; too "SEE" these things. He says, "WE" and that could imply anything from one friendly L-M to a fellow scientist or his Wife or Some Member of U.S. Government.

If What I, now, surmise, is true, then the L-Ms are in trouble *or* the S-Ms Wish to War upon the L-Ms & are USING this Man, telepathically, to "get help." Whether this consideration is of import to him only remains to be seen. If is isn't , then, He will be Left out on a Emotional Limb, trying to say "See, I am right, "They" are Wrong" & will forget what IS important here.

Falling Ice

It has been postulated that there are "lands in the sky" from which ice falls to earth periodically. But there has never been a positioning of these lands. No one tells us what kind of lands, where they are, why ice falls from them or why ice exists on them. The lands in the sky theory is based solely on the locale of the falls and the kind of ice noted.

Read the following citations, bearing in mind our thesis that intelligence or intelligent direction does explain the selectivity of materiel and locale.

Selectivity can be intelligent or nonintelligent. The affinity of hydrogen and oxygen, which produces water, is what we consider nonintelligent selection. The direction which makes rifle bullets strike on or near a target is what we believe to be intelligent direction or selectivity.

Repetition of falls on the same pinpointed area from fixed regions above a spinning and revolving earth is incredible. But repeated showers, selectively directed by intelligence, is a probability within the grasp of the uninhibited thinker.

We list these occurrences with two thoughts: first, to show that there is a great amount of activity in space which has origins difficult to explain on the bases of Newtonian or Keplerian laws, second, they indicate that the simplest explanations common to all of these puzzles is that they originate from the actions of space contrivances or the intelligence directing such mechanisms.

The following reports are from The Books of Charles Fort:

1802: During a storm in Hungary on May 8, a mass of ice fell which was three feet long, three feet wide, and more than two feet thick.

1808: The sun suddenly turned a dull brick red on May 16. At the same time there appeared, on the Western horizon, a great number of round bodies, dark brown, and seemingly the size of a hat crown. They passed overhead and disappeared on the Eastern horizon. It was a tremendous procession lasting two hours. Occasionally one fell to the ground. When the place was examined, there was found a film which soon dried and vanished. Sometimes, on approaching the sun, the bodies seemed to link together in groups not exceeding eight. Under the sun they were seen to have tails, Away from he sun, the tails were invisible. Whatever their substance may have been, it is described as gelatinous "sopy (sic) and jellied."

1811: Lumps of ice, a foot in circumference, fell in Derbyshire, England, on May 11.

1828: A mass of ice about a cubic yard in size fell in Candeish, India.

1829: A block of ice weighing four and one-half pounds fell at Cazorta, Spain, on June 15.

1830: A profound darkness came over the city of Brussels, on June 18, and flat pieces of ice, an inch long, fell to the ground.

1844: A block of ice weighting eleven pounds fell at Cette, France, in October.

1849: An irregular-shaped mass of ice fell at Ord, Scotland, in August, "after an extraordinary peal of thunder." It was said that this was homogenous ice, except in a small part, which looked like congealed hailstones. The mass was about twenty feet in circumference. The story, as told in the *London Times*, August 14, 1849, is that, upon the evening of August 13, 1849, after a loud peal of thunder, a mass of ice, said to have a circumference of twenty feet, has fallen upon the estate of Mr. Moffat, of Balvullich, Rosshire. It was said that this object fell alone, without hailstone.

1851: Ice the size of pumpkins fell in Gunfalore, India, on May 22.

1851: Masses of ice, each piece about a pound and one-half in weight, fell in New Hampshire, August 13.

1853: Masses or irregularly shaped piece of ice fell at Pouen, France, on July 5. They were about the size of a hand and described as looking as if all had been broken from one enormous block of ice.

1854: At Pourhundur, India, December 11, flat pieces of ice, many of them weighing several pounds each, fell from the sky. They are described as large "Ice-Flakes."

1857: The *London Times* of August 4 reported that a block of ice, described as "pure" ice, weighing twenty-five pounds, had been found in the meadow of Mr. Warner, of Cricklewood. There had been a storm the day before. As in some of our other instances, no one saw this object fall from the sky.

1860: January 14, in a thunderstorm pieces of ice fell on Captain Blackiston's vessel. "It was not hail, but irregular-shaped pieces of solid ice of different dimensions, up to the size of half a brick."

1860: In a snowstorm in Upper Wasdale, England, on March 16, blocks of ice fell which were so large that at a distance they looked like a flock of sheep.

1864: During a storm at Pontiac, Canada, July 11, pieces of ice fell which were one-half inch to two inches in diameter. What is most extraordinary is that a respectable farmer, of undoubted veracity, says he picked up a piece of ice, in the center of which was a small, green frog.

1869: Near Tiflis, large hailstones fell which had long protuberances. The most remarkable point is that a very long time must have been occupied in their formation.

1877: Ice as large as men's hands killed thousands of sheep in Texas on May 3.

1880: In Russia, June 14, red hailstones, blue hailstones and gray hailstones fell in profusion.

1882: A mass of ice weighing about eighty pounds fell from the sky near Salina, Kansas, in August. Mr. W.J. Hagler, a North Santa Fe merchant, collected it and packed it in sawdust in his store.

1882: Pieces of ice eight inches long and an inch and one-half thick fell at Davenport, Iowa, on August 30.

1883: A lump of ice the size of a brick, weighing two pounds, fell in Chicago, on July 12.

1883: There was a storm at Dubuque, Iowa, on June 16. Great hailstones and pieces of ice fell. The foreman of the Novelty Iron Works stated that in two large hailstones, melted by him, were found small living frogs.

The pieces of ice which fell at that time had a peculiarity as bizarre as anything in this book. They seemed, evidently, to have been motionless for a long time floating somewhere.

There could be no more perfect description of ice suspended in meteoric orbits.

1886: In a small town in Venezuela, April 17, hailstones fell, some red, some blue, and some gray.

1887: In Montana, in the winter, snowflakes fell which were fifteen inches across and eight inches thick. (Snowflakes?)

1889: Intense darkness at Aitkin, Minnesota, April 2; sand and "solid chunks of ice" fell.

1889: At East Wickenham, England, on August 5, an object fell, slowly, which was about fifteen inches long and five inches wide. It exploded, but no substance was found from it.

1891: Snowflakes the "size of saucers" fell near Nashville, Tennessee, on January24.

1893: A lump of ice weighing four pounds fell in Texas, on December 6.

1894: From the Weather Bureau of Portland, Oregon, a tornado was reported on June 3. Fragments of ice fell from the sky. They averaged three to four inches square and about an inch thick. In length and breadth they had smooth surfaces and "**gave the impression of** a **vast field of ice suspended in the atmosphere**, and **suddenly broke into fragments** about the size of the palm of the hand."

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

Crystal, Ice in Great Curved sheets is used at odd times as a Gigantic Lens for close observation of Humankind or Merely for amusement.

1897: Rough-edged, but smooth surfaced pieces of ice fell at Manassas, Virginia, August 10. They looked much like the roughly broken fragments of a smooth sheet of ice. They were two inches across, and one inch thick.

1901: On November 14, lumps of ice fell during a tornado in Victoria, New South Wales, which weighed a minimum of one pound each.

1908: A correspondent wrote that, at Braemar, Switzerland, July 2, when the sky was clear overhead and the sun was shining, flat pieces of ice fell. Thunder was heard.

1911: Large hailstones were noted at the University of Missouri. They exploded like pistol shots. The reporter had seen a similar phenomenon at Lexington, Kentucky, eighteen years before.

The entire report below, from the *Science Record* of 1876, is worthy of note.

At Potter Station, on the Union Pacific Railroad, recently, a train was just pulling out from the station when a storm commenced and in ten seconds there was such a fury of hail and wind that the engineer deemed it best to stop the locomotive. The "hailstones" were simply great chunks of ice, many of them three or four inches in diameter and of all shapes: squares, cones, cubes, etc., and the first "stone" that struck the train broke a window and the flying glass severely injured a lady on the face, making a deep cut. Five minutes later there was not a whole pane of glass on the south side of the train, the whole length of it. The windows of the Pullman cars were of French plate three-eighths of an inch thick, and double. The hail broke both thicknesses and tore the curtains to shreds. The wooden shutters were smashed and many of the mirrors were broken. The deck lights on top of the cars were also demolished. The dome of the engine was dented as if pounded with a heavy weight, and the woodwork of the south side of the cars was ploughed as if someone had struck it all over with sliding blows of a

hammer. During the continence of this fusillade, which lasted fully twenty minutes, the damage amounted to several thousand dollars and several persons were injured.

Note, particularly, the size and shapes of the "hailstones." This was obviously not a hailstorm. Winds strong enough to have torn mountain icesheets to bits and carried them across the country, would have lifted the train from its tracks. Note, too, the suddenness of the attack.

A more definite case of meteoric ice could scarcely be imagined.

Lest we fall into the trap of suspecting these reports merely because of their age, I shall depart from my desire to draw upon material reported before the present flying saucer phenomenon, and reproduce this letter in *Fate Magazine*, August, 1950.

The Great Hail

On Sunday, September 11, 1949, three acquaintances, Dr. Robert Botts, Dr. John Tipton, and Dr. T.J. Treadwell, went dove hunting on the Eugene Tipton Ranch in northwest Stephens County, Texas.

Dr. Botts told me about it, and said that it was a fairly clear, hot afternoon on the ranch when the skies let loose with about forty pounds of ice, all in one chunk. Dr. Tipton and Dr. Treadwell substantiate what Dr. Botts says that he saw.

Dr. Botts was sitting by an earthen tank, waiting for birds. He said that he "heard a whistling sound, and when I looked up, I saw a glistening, whirling object falling. It landed fifteen feet from me and shattered into hundreds of pieces." He added that the ice knocked a hole several inches deep in the ground. He immediately called his companions, and, when they arrived, all three saw that the ice was milky white, and when they tasted it they found that it had a soapy flavor.

Botts said there were a few thunderheads in the sky, but none overhead. He declared that no airplanes had passed overhead.

The ice fell about 4:30 P.M., and had not completely melted when Dr. Botts and his friends left, about two hours later.

Treadwell, said that he did not hear the sound of the ice falling, but he arrived on the scene immediately after and saw the chunk where he was sure there had been no ice when he walked by the tank earlier.

Tipton, whose uncle owns the ranch, said that the ice did not look like the truck-delivered variety, but did have something of the appearance of hail, except for the dimensions. All three declared that the pieces were not dry ice, and both Drs. Tipton and Treadwell agreed that there had been no airplanes heard overhead, before or after the ice fell.

After hearing this story, I turned to *my* Bible, Revelations 16:21 -- "And there fell upon men a great hail out of Heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent." According to a dictionary definition, a talent is fifty-eight pounds.

Can you explain this mystery?

Lewis W. Mathews,
Fort Worth, Texas

Now… how do we interpret these strange falls of ice? What, after careful consideration, do they mean to us?

We have already enough data to indicate three classes of falling ice:
(1) real hailstones, from thunderstorms, or normal meteorological phenomena,
(2) large and small blocks of meteoric ice, which may have been blasted from the polar regions, or oceans, when scientists of Mu invented the first series of atom and hydrogen bombs, and removed Mu, plus a few million square miles of surrounding land and seascapes from the southwest corner of our harassed planet, and (3) ice from some superstructures which make repeated visits to the atmosphere of the earth.

Since some of the pieces of ice, which show evidence of some contact with a smooth surface, fell long before the days of modern mechanical flight, we are forced to assign their origin to some other, older type of space inhabiting, moving mechanism.

It seems most natural that a space contrivance, if made of metal, and coming in from cold space, would soon become coated with ice. That ice should fall, or be pushed off by de-icing mechanisms, or even melt off when the space ships are heated by friction with the air, or become stationary in the sunshine, seems equally natural. If these contrivances are drawing power from surrounding media via an endothermic process, the space structure will become colder and colder to more power it draws, and, in the atmosphere, ice would tend to form on it, just like the frosting of the coils in a refrigerator.

I am fully convinced that huge ice swarms are moving around in space, in orbits like those of meteors. Somewhere in space there is a borderline--beyond it the sun's rays will not melt ice: on the sunward side of the line, melting takes place slowly.

I cannot accept the idea of a floating ice field permanently near the earth. In contrast, I postulate vast masses in orbital motion, so that when they approach the earth they are held against its attraction by the dynamic force of their velocity. Meteoric and cometic orbits are of what we call very high eccentricity, which is to say that the material following such paths varies extremely in it distance from the sun, as compared to the movement of the earth and other planets, which have orbits almost circular. Then, as the ice swarm approach the sun, in its periodic orbital circuit, tiny amounts of ice are melted and, being fluid, the film of melted ice is pulled toward the side of greatest gravitational attraction, probably earthward or sunward. This melted ice flows toward the direction of greatest gravity, on the surface of the spatial iceberg exactly as, and for the same reasons that, the sun and moon pull water toward the proximate side of the earth in their production of ocean tides.

We come to the inevitable conclusion, therefore, that this series of falling ice cannot be explained other than as vast masses of ice in orbital motion, in which case they are an intrinsic element of the space life or space craft, and that their very inconsistency indicates intelligence in space. Since they are not consistent with natural laws, there must be direction behind them.

Falling Stones

What, indeed, do "falling stones" have to do with UFO's?

We shall list, herein, but a few of the more interesting and entertaining examples of stones having fallen from space, and we can note that **quartz** and other materials not of usual meteoric types indicate something other than meteors. Where else, then, but from UFO's?

Yes, quartz, it has its uses Electro-Magnetically and otherwise on the Home-ships.

It is essential, too, to keep reminding ourselves that because we attribute intelligence too these otherwise inexplicable phenomena, it does not necessarily mean human Intelligence. **It is a blow to our ego to accept the fact that our racial intelligence is anything but the supreme summation of creation**; however, **the quicker we adjust to the notion** that the human body and the human mind are but incidental in a limitless welter of space life and activity, the quicker we shall approach a true grasp of the nature of the Universe and our own true purpose in it.

"WHAT IS MAN THAT THOU HAST PLACED (planted)
HIM A LITTLE LOWER THAN ANGELS." "angelic"
is a good discription of the Little-Men *when*
they aren't *on* business.

On June 20, 1887, during a violent storm, a small stone fell from the sky at Tarbes, France. It was thirteen millimeters in diameter, five millimeters thick, and weighed two grams. It was reported to the French Academy by M. Sudre, Professor of the Normal School, Tarbes.

It is difficult for the conventionalists to press the old, convenient expostulation that the stone was there in the first place. Such a dodge must be resisted, for…the stone was covered with ice.

The object had been cut and shaped by means" similar to human hands and human mentality." That expression, "similar to," begins to tell a story. It was a disc of worked stone, "tres regulier." "Il a ete assurement travaille." There is no word of any known whirlwind or tornado, or notes of any other objects or debris which fell at, or near, this date, in France. It was a single entity. It had fallen alone!

Can part of our trouble with the acceptance of miscellaneous falls lie in our definition of "sky" and our use of the word sky instead of space? When we get far enough out into space**, Only a few hundred miles,** the word sky becomes meaningless.

To the surface dwellers, sky is essentially something opposed to earth, or the solid understratum of dirt and pavement on which we live. It is usually thought of as the immediate layer of air above us. But out in space, the earth, with its air and sky is but a minute detail. If you were in a space ship remote from planets, completely surrounded by the blackness of infinity, but nevertheless bathed by the sea of sunlight, what would be your concept of sky?

Monthly Review, 1796: "The phenomenon which is the subject of the remarks before us will seem, to most persons, as little worthy of credit as any that could be offered. The falling of large stones from the sky, without any assignable cause of the previous ascent, seems to partake so much of the marvelous as almost entirely to exclude the operation of known and natural agents. Yet a body of evidence is here brought to prove that such events have actually taken place, and we ought not to withhold from it a proper degree of attention."

That was one hundred and fifty-nine years ago! It is a part of a paper read to a very learned society. These were intelligent and erudite men. They had to overcome their own prejudices, and those of even more bigoted people. They had to undergo a change of concept and to accept a less egocentric or geocentric, viewpoint. They had to attain an increased degree of objectivity. And they had to do it innately, spontaneously, on the basis of accumulating evidence which ran contrary to their every belief and tenet.

1846: Something described as "slag" fell at Darmstadt, Germany, on June 6.

1875: Ashes fell on the Azores.

1879: A quantity of "slag" fell from the sky near Chicago, on April 9. A professor who did not see the fall and who was not there, said that the slag was there all the time. But the *New York Times* of April 14, 1879 said that about two bushels had fallen.

1881: Two silver crosses were found by Charles C. Jones in Georgia. An unintelligible inscription was upon them and they were definitely not Christian since both arms of the cross were of equal length.

1884: *Nature*, of January 10, quotes a Kimberley newspaper: "Toward the end of November, 1883, a thick shower of ashy matter fell at Queenstown, South Africa. It was in marble-sized balls, soft and pulpy, and crumbled when dry. The shower was confined to one narrow strip of land, and thus hardly attributable too Krakatao almost halfway around the world. With the fall, loud noises here(sic) heard."

It is most significant that this shower was confined to a narrow strip of land.

1908: A white substance, like ashes, fell at Annoy, France, on March 27.

1910: Charles F. Holder wrote that on September 10: "Many years ago a strange stone, resembling a meteorite, fell into the valley of the Yaqui, Mexico, and the sensational story went from one end of the country to the other, that a stone bearing human inscriptions had descended to the earth… The stone was brown igneous rock, about eight feet long, and on the 'eastern' face was the deep-cut inscription… I submitted the photographs to the Field Museum and the Smithsonian, and others, and, to my surprise, the reply was that they could make nothing of it."

A lot of coke, cinders, ashes and slag fell in, the proximate to, the decade of the 1880's. There are too many cases of stones, fire balls, and other things falling in storms. It is useless to argue that storms pick these things up. The list is too selective. So we have to think of some reasons why these things fall during storms; and one wonders if the storms were created by something outside of what we are commonly calling meteorological conditions?

1885: It was reported that a good-sized stone, of clearly artificial form, had fallen at Naples, in November.

La Science Pour Tous, 5-264: At Wolverhampton, England, June, 1860 a violent storm, there fell so many little pebbles that they were cleared away with shovels… Rept. Brit. Assoc., 1864. Great numbers of small black stones which fell at Birmingham, England, in August, 1858 – in a storm… Mon. Weath. Rev., July, 1888: Pebbles of the water-worn variety, not common to the locality, fell at Palestine, Texas, July 6,1888…Am. Jour. Sci., 1-26-161: Many round smooth pebbles fell at Kandahar in 1834…Mon. Weath. Rev., May, 1883: "a number of stones of peculiar formation and shapes, unknown in this neighborhood, fell at Hillsboro, Illinois, May 18, 1883."

Concentrate on the selectivity—a function of intelligence—and possibly shape. Possibly, we should consider the coincidence of storms, to which we can hardly attribute this selectivity nor the dexterity with which to implement it.

1815: Hailstones the size of baseballs, which were said to contain small pebbles, fell near Annapolis, Maryland.

1824: Small symmetrical objects of metal fell at Orenburg, Russia, in September. A second fall of these objects at Orenburg, January 25, 1825.

Selectivity, repetition, symmetry, timing: attributes of intelligent action!

1884: A report from the *Signal Service* observer at Bismark, North Dakota, states that at 9:00 P.M., May 22, sharp sounds were heard throughout the city, caused by the fall of flinty stones at Bismarck. Fifteen hours later there was another fall of flinty stones at Bismarck. None reported falling anywhere else.

1860: Professor Sayed Abdulla, Professor of Hindustani, wrote an account of the fall of stones at Dhurmsalla, India, which were of "divers forms and sizes, many of which bore great resemblance to ordinary cannonballs, just discharged from engines of war."

Note that some of these Dhurmsalla stones were spherical. Spherical stones are most likely shaped by intelligence. It is further noted that, within a few months of the fall of the Dhurmsalla "meteorite," there had been a fall of live fish at Berares, a shower of red substance at Furrackabad, a dark spot observed on the disc of the sun, an earthquake, "an unnatural darkness of some duration," and a luminous appearance in the sky that looked like an aurora borealis.

1855: A series of explosions in the sky, fall of debris, slag, cinders, powder, discolored rain, reported at and near Crieff, England.

Recurrence, in a localized area, of unusual events, mostly of celestial, or mysterious origin.

1858-1868: Dr. C.M. Inglsby, a meteorologist, wrote: "During the storm on Saturday (12) morning, (May), Birmingham was visited by a shower of aerolites. Many hundreds of thousands must have fallen, some streets being strewn with them." Many pounds of stones gathered from awnings. Greenhouses damaged. The **same type of stones fell** again at Wolverhampton, thirteen miles from Birmingham, June 9, 1860, two years later. Eight years later they fell again in Birmingham. Birmingham Daily Post, May 30, 1868: Letter from meteorologist, Thomas Plant, who said: "I think for one hour the morning of May 29, 1868, stones fell from the sky at Birmingham. From nine to ten o'clock, meteoric stones fell in immense quantities in various parts of town. They resembled, in shape, broken pieces of Rowley ragstone…in every respect they were like the stones that fell in 1858." In the Post, June 1, Mr. Plant says the stones of 1858 did fall from the sky, and were not washed out of the pavement by rain (although of the same shape) because many pounds of them were gathered from a platform which was twenty feet above the ground.

This phenomenon may have continued in driblets, for in the *Post* of June 2, 1868, a correspondent wrote that on the first of June, his niece, walking in a field, was struck by a stone that injured her hand severely. In the *Post*, June 4, someone else wrote that his wife had been cut on her head by a stone while walking down a lane.

Some of these big falls occurred in storms, and all of the falls are identified as being of the same appearance as the Rowley ragstone with which Birmingham was paved, and the old explanation of whirlwinds is invoked. But regardless of the origin, there is again repetition and a selectivity of material which is inexplicable except through intelligent manipulation. Why anyone or anything would pick up Rowley ragstone and dump in on Birmingham and Wolverhampton, repeatedly, is more than we can say! There must be a reason.

1896: On February 10, a tremendous explosion occurred in the sky over Madrid, and throughout the city windows were smashed. A wall in the building occupied by the American Embassy was thrown down. The people of Madrid rushed to the streets and there was a panic in which many were injured. For five and a half hours a luminous cloud of debris hung over Madrid, and stones fell from the sky.

Here we have stone falling from the sky, a hint of a localized cloud, luminosity, and definitely the suggestion that some violent activity had come from space. There is also a haunting resemblance to the circumstances of the Great Heresford Quake, in England, of December 17, 1896.

A disc **of quartz** fell on the plantation, Bleijendal, Dutch Gueana,(sic) and was sent to the Layden Musuem (sic) of Antiquities. It measures six centimeters by five millimeters by about five centimeters. I am puzzled by these dimensions, unless the disc is slightly oval and is six cm. in its major axis and five cm. in the minor axis. This seems to be a good datum. It has some individuality. Even if we omit space

ships from our cognizance, this thing could have been blasted into space by our progenitors in Mu when they lost control of the atom.

The Muaneans *Never knew What* an atom was &
Niether did the Atruscan-Lems. They only know
& knew Force-field work as their top accomplishment
& found that throo Inlay work in Metal that the
Design had been Hit by Lightning causing it to
Have No weight somehow. THEY WENT ON
FROM THAT FLOOR Design or floor pattern which
may have been Laid in Lodestone for all I know.

Anything about quartz that appears to come from the sky is interesting because it helps to illustrate the diversity of debris which drifts around in space. Quartz, as celestial debris, is scientifically damned at present, for science has not yet admitted, openly, the existence of meteoric material other than the two conventional types. Certainly, we do not find meteoric quartz to be plentiful. It's so scarce that if you encounter it, you almost feel instinctively that it has some connection with intelligent being. That may seem an arbitrary assumption; **however**, worked quartz is something else again!

As I said; it has its uses.

There is the instance of a man, his wife, and his three daughters, of Casterton, Westmoreland, who were looking at their lawn during a thunderstorm when they saw a stone fall from the sky, kill a sheep, and bury itself in the ground. They dug. They found a stone ball. The object was exhibited at a meeting of the Royal Meteorological Society and is described in its Journal as a sandstone ball and it is described as a sandstone by Mr. Symons.

There is a suggestion of symmetry and structure in this object, and it had an external shell separated from a loose nucleus.

Science maintains that it is impossible for quartz to come from any place other than earth. I offer that quartz not only can, but has come from elsewhere. There are two possible sources: (1) that items such as quartz, closely resembling our own geological specimens, may have been blown off this planet by erratic Muvian scientists when they erred in their explosions of hydrogen, and that some of these things are coming home after several eons in orbital isolation, and (2) they may be a part of the space ships or be attracted by them as they pass, drawing them up and then, through some spatial phenomenon, dropping them at a later date.

Bode's law indicated a gap in the planetary sequence between Mars and Jupiter, and near the beginning of the nineteenth century small planetoids began to be discovered at the designated place. They now number much over a thousand, and it is suspected that millions of small pieces of space debris occupy this belt. Astronomical science has never fully accepted the idea that a planet exploded in that location, but a case can be made for such a cataclysm, and it would explain the origin of stones which fell to the earth.

The asteroid zone is the only gap in the Bode systems, but some of the derivatives of that system, which seem to fit observed data a little bit more snugly, have gaps which do not seem to be filled. Furthermore, such systems indicate zones surrounding the larger planets which are not always occupied by satellites, and which may contain interplanetary debris.

The earth-moon system is unique. It is really a binary planet, and while we speak of the moon as being earth's satellite, it may be that this is a misnomer, and the result of a misconception of the formation of the little system. There are a number of traditions, among ancient tribes and races, to the effect that their forefathers were thriving before there was a moon. This would hint that the moon was picked up by acquisition and not formed in the original coagulation of earth-material. At any rate, neither the earth nor its twin Venus formed satellite systems such as accompany the outer major planets. Nevertheless, the

laws, such as Bode's **imply physical conditions in which either satellites or belts of debris could exist**. If this is true, then we see no reason for not suspecting that there may be gravitational nodes around the earth, as around the sun, and major planets; and these nodes may very well be the abode of all manner of particles, either directed or undirected.

Bodes Law to that extent is Proved.

Most of the material in these belts would doubtless be meteoric material, but our experience is that meteoric material includes a much broader category than has heretofore been accepted, and that mixed with it are things associated with intelligence.

MOON NOW *RECOGNIZED* AS RECENT ACQUISITION OF EARTH. NOT KNOWN FROM WHENCE IT CAME. *STRONGLY* SUSPECT QUANTUM "GAP" indicated Bodes Law as original position of *our* Moon.

Falling Live Things

Food expieriments (sic) to compensate for Growing Population of L-M and Mutations.

In the reported falls of live things, we find again selectivity and localization.

There are recorded, by Charles Fort, two hundred and ninety-four distinct reports of showers of living things. The reports are authenticated and are quoted in magazines of learning, substantiated by countless eyewitnesses and newspaper articles, contemporary with the falls. This is excluding, or course, the numerous ancient and biblical references. The latter, for the uninhibited thinker, are not difficult to allow.

Live things falling from the sky have been almost exclusively confined to sea life and lower forms: snails, worms, reptiles, fish, crabs, and a few insects. Most of these have high reproductive rates, simple living habits, and require a minimum of attention to raise.

In case someone is thinking "hoax!" why was it, or would it be, confined to these lower forms? Why not rabbits or groundhogs or cats? Why snails, fish, worms?

Accepting as I do the veracity of the many reports of live things having fallen from the skies, I **submit that they are the inhabitants of celestial hydroponic tanks and that their falls come from one of two things:** (1) when the tanks are dumped and cleared for refilling, for whatever reason there might be, **(2)** that the falls may be the residue from the collection from earth while the monitors of the tanks are replenishing their supplies.

Some of Both & of Wrecks & repair-Jobs on Most Ships.

Again we are faced with the admission of intelligence and direction. An intelligence in space controlling either the collection, dissemination, or nurture of sea life, either for study or for food or both, is the only answer which satisfies all the elements of all the reports.

Let us scan but a few of the more dramatic of the falls.

1886: There was a shower of snails, during a heavy thunderstorm, in Cornwall, England, on August 13.

1890: Fish showered over Montgomery County, California, on February 6.

1891: A great shower of fish took place at Seymour, Indiana. They were completely unknown and remain unidentified. This was August 8.

1892: At Coalburg, Alabama, on May 29, a tremendous shower of enormous eels took place. The eels were of a variety unknown in Alabama, though somebody said he knew of such eels in the Pacific Ocean. There were piles of eels in the street, and farmers came with carts and took them away to use for fertilizer.

1892: A yellow cloud appeared over Paderborn, Germany, and a torrential rain fell from the cloud in which there were hundreds of mussels.

1921: Innumerable little frogs appeared in the streets of northern part of London during a thunderstorm on August 17. A thorough search of newspapers of the day indicated no whirlwinds or storms, nothing but frogs!

1922: Toads dropped for two days at Chalon-sur Saone, France.

1924: A shower of red objects fell, with snow, at Halmstead, Sweden, on January 3. They were red worms varying from one to four inches in length.

1925: Mr. C.J. Grewar reported, on March 21, from Uitenhage, Transvaal, that on "The Flats" about fifty miles from Uitenhage he noted some springboks leaping and shaking themselves unaccountably. At a distance he could conceive of no explanation for such eccentricities. He investigated and found that a rain of little frogs and fish had pelted the springboks. Mr. Grewar heard that, sometime before, at the same place, there had been similar shower.

It is interesting to note that this localized repetition; the yellow cloud over Paderborn, Germany, appears to have been an artificially created cloud which **might well conceal a navigable structure**. It makes us think again of someone opening a vast hydroponic tank in which mussels are grown.

1842: Enormous numbers of fish were reported to have fallen at Derby, England.

1873: A shower of frogs was reported during a rain storm in Kansas City, Missouri. The sky was exceptionally dark.

1877: It was reported that during the winter of 1876-77 at Christiana, Norway, worms were found crawling upon the ground. The worms could not have come up from the ground because the ground was completely frozen at the time and, too, the fall of worms was reported from Sweden.

1877: In Memphis, Tennessee, after a violent storm during which rain fell in torrents, thousands of snakes were found in the space of two blocks! They were crawling on sidewalks, in yards and in streets, masses of them.

Again note the localized area, as if a "dumping" had taken place.

Perhaps the most glamorous of all falls in this category took place in Geneva, Switzerland, on March 21, 1922. The incident, as reported in the *Boston Transcript*, reads as follows:

"Geneva, March 21. During a heavy snowstorm in the Alps, recently, thousands of exotic insects **resembling** spiders, caterpillars **and huge ants** fell on the slopes and quickly died. Local naturalists are unable to explain the phenomenon…"

There are several other records of similar falls in the Alps, and usually in late January. It is interesting to note that most falls of worms and insects are recorded in late winter and often in the snow. It may be that this is merely because we are unlikely to see or notice them otherwise.

Again we encounter selection and segregation, despite the fact that we have a mixture of species. These falls, nevertheless, do indicate selection as they are always of relatively the same order and remain unmixed with twigs, grasses, or other debris from space.

The reports are too lengthy and detailed for inclusion in such a volume as this; however, we should at least mention the many unexplained records of eels appearing in inland ponds and mountain tarns; seals and squids in Onondaga Lake; sudden appearances of plants in unexpected areas; a five and one-half foot alligator found frozen on the bank of Rock River, Janesville Wisconsin; parakeets, one after another, appearing in Scotland, These are all verified, substantiated reports.

But, as we have pointed out, most of the falls of animal life have been reptilian, insect, or other low-grade life forms, especially of marine varieties. Fish are among the highest types. There must be significance in this. Are these things indicative of the eating habits of the beings that run space contraptions? Or are they representative of the operators themselves?

We almost drift into fantasy with the "tremendous red rain" in France, October 16-17, 1846. It is said that this rain was so vividly red and so blood-like that many persons in France were terrified. Two analyses were given. One chemist noted a great quantity of corpuscles—whether blood-like or not—in the red rain. The other chemist set down the organic matter at thirty-five percent. Of significance is the fact, that with this substance, larks, quail, ducks, and water hens, some of them alive, fell at Lyons, Grenoble, and other places.

Chico, California, must be a crossroads for celestial phenomena. Not only are there very extensive falls of stone in Chico, but there have been other phenomena there. In the *New York Times*, September 2, 1878, it was said that on August 20, 1878, according to the *Chico Record*, a great number of small fish fell from the sky, covering the roof of a store and falling in the streets and upon an area of several acres. Perhaps the most important part of the observation is that the fell from a cloudless sky.

Hah! Even yet they Honor their Heros of
The Great Battle.

1917: A Baton Rouge correspondent to the *Philadelphia Times* reported that in the summer of 1896, into the streets of Baton Rouge, Louisiana, and from a "clear sky," hundreds of dead birds fell. There were wild ducks, catbirds, woodpeckers, and "many birds of strange plumage," some of them resembling canaries.

Usually one does not have to look very far from such an event to learn of a storm, but the best that can be done in this instance is to point out that there has been a storm on the coast of Florida.

Isn't there more than just a hint of intelligent action in the fall of these birds? Especially such a heterogeneous collection of species from widely separated places of usual habitat which are not usually found flocking together? Doesn't this smack of dumping, as in the many cases of fish, frogs, periwinkles, etc.?

I have seen reference to live birds which flew head-on into a locomotive, as though frightened into complete panic; also a group of starlings flying as though completely terror-stricken into suicidal collision in New York streets. What had they seen, or encountered? Something real, but invisible to, or unnoticed

by man? Have we some clues in the apparently unmaterial things which are being reported today under the misnomer "flying saucers"?

1921: A shower of little frogs fell upon Anton Wagner's farm, near Sterling, Connecticut.

By way of coincidence, Professor Campbell of Lick Observatory, Ace Aviator Eddie Rickenbacker, conservative astronomer, Colonel Marwick, and Dr. Emmert, of Detroit, all reported from widely separated points of the earth that an unknown, luminous object had been seen near the sun on August 6 and 7. "Near the sun," means, in astronomical parlance, something more or less in line with the sun as seen from terrestrial observation. It actually means "apparently near the sun," not necessarily physically close to that orb.

In conclusion, let us summarize the vital features of these phenomena as they relate to our thesis.

Most falls involve only low forms of life, **most of which require water** for their environment, or at least a moist habitat. Many falls are reported in clear weather from a clear sky, but most are associated with torrential downpours of water – not an ordinary rain. In some cases, isolated and strange-looking clouds are responsible, and some of these suddenly appear in otherwise cloudless skies. The descriptions of these storms and clouds have an element of similarity and the haunting suggestion arises that these storms and clouds are the result of artificial conditions as opposed to ordinary meteorological forces.

This does not prove that hydroponic tanks exist for the convenience of our space race; however, whether these tanks are for supplies or experimentation, it substantiates our thesis for **either** a race originally from earth which drove itself to space, **or a race** which originated in space and keeps in touch with earth.

If he has "seen" them, It does not seem
that he has managed "clear-talk" with them
& Mistakes their or its actual meaning
Their spoken tongue is rough from Disuse
and only a True—"Thinker" could see their
complete Lingo. Besides, When they are
Hungry they Don't "speak" well.

Falling Animal and Organic Matter

Perhaps the least substantiated, but most fascinating, of the itemized falls include animal and organic matter for which no real explanation is yet available. This material is usually considered, but without real thought, to be the result of whirlwinds picking up the material in one locale and dropping it elsewhere. It has also been suggested that buzzards have been disgorging the matter, particularly the bits of bone and bloody flesh. That no whirlwinds were reported at the time of the falls, and that no flights of buzzards have been reported seems to have been of little consequence.

It is up to us, therefore, to ask: Is there another explanation?

1887: On December 13, in Cochin, China, a substance like blood, somewhat coagulated, fell from the skies.

1888: There was a repeated "red rain" in the Mediterranean region on March 6, and again on March 18. The substance, when burned, had a strong and persistent odor of animal matter.

It is in the records of the French Academy that, on March 17, 1669, in the town of Chatillon-sur Seine, a reddish substance fell which was "thick, viscous and putrid." Only organic matter can become putrid.

There is also a story of a highly unpleasant substance which fell from the sky in Wilson County, Tennessee. A Dr. Troost visited the place and investigated the reports. He declared that the substance was clear blood and that portions of bloody flesh were scattered upon tobacco fields.

On March 3, 1876, at Olympian Springs, Bath County, Kentucky, flakes of a substance that looked like beef fell from a clear sky. Nothing but this falling substance was visible in the sky. It fell in flakes of various sizes; some two inches square, and some four inches square. It was a thick shower, on the ground, on trees, on fences, but it was narrowly localized on a strip of land about one hundred yards long and about fifty yards wide. For the first account see the *Scientific American*, 34-197, and the *New York Times*, March 10, 1876.

It is very important to consider the familiar landmarks of selectivity and localization. The geometric shape of distribution, fifty yards by one hundred yards. It corresponds to the size of many of the well-defined falls of toads, fish and frogs. Note, too, the thick shower on trees, fences, and the ground.

In the American Journal of Science of 1833-1834, in many observations upon the meteors of November, 1833, are the following reports of falls of gelatinous substance: (1) that according to newspaper reports, "lumps of jelly" were found on the ground at Rahway, New Jersey. The substance was whitish, or resembled the coagulated white of an egg; (2) that Mr. H.H. Garland, of Nelson County, Virginia, had found a jellylike substance of about the circumference of a twenty-five cent piece; (3) that according to a communication from A.C. Twining to Professor Olmstead, a woman at West Point, New York, had seen a mass the size of a teacup, which looked like boiled starch; (4) that according to a newspaper of Newark, New Jersey, a mass of gelatinous substance, like soft soap, had been found. "It possessed little elasticity, and, on the application of heat, it evaporated as readily as water."

A story from California, reported in the San Francisco *Evening Bulletin*, August 9, 1869, tells of flesh and blood which fell from the sky, upon Mr. J. Hudson's farm, in Los Nietos Township—a shower that lasted three minutes and covered an area of two acres. The conventional explanation was that these substances had been disgorged by flying buzzards. "The day was perfectly clear, and the sun was shining, and there was no perceptible breeze"; and if anybody saw buzzards, buzzards were not mentioned.

Has anyone ever seen buzzards in one flock to disgorge over an area of ten square yards – much less two acres?

The **flesh** was in **fine particles**, and **also in strips** from **one to six inches long**. There were short, fine hairs. One of the witnesses took specimens to Los Angeles, and showed them to the editor of the *Los Angeles News*, as told in the *News*, August 3. The editor wrote that he had seen, but had not kept, the disagreeable objects. "That the meat fell, we cannot doubt. Even persons of the neighborhood are willing to vouch for that. Where it came from, we cannot even conjecture."

S-M's Work. They eat so revolting amount of Sea Food that Red-Meat is a Madness in Them?

The bulletin also said that about two months before flesh and blood had fallen from the sky in Santa Clara County, California.

These falls of flesh and blood coincide, temporally, with a vast fall of dead birds in Baton Rouge, Louisiana.

Again we have a familiar pattern: segregation, isolation, clear sky, "about two acres of ground."

There is an interesting item from the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, 1847. On March 16, 1846, at about the time of the fall of edible substance in Asia Minor, an olive-gray powder fell at Shanghai. Under the microscope it was seen to be an aggregation of hairs of two kinds: Black ones, and rather thick white ones. They were supposed to be animal fibers, but, when burned, they gave out "the common ammoniacal smell and smoke of burnt hair or feathers." The writer described the phenomenon as a "cloud of 3,800 square miles of fibres, alkali, and sand."

According to Professor Luigi Palazzo, head of the Italian Meteorological Bureau, on May 15, 1890, at Massagnadi, Calabria, something the color of fresh blood fell from the sky. The substance was examined in the public health laboratories of Rome and found to be blood. Some said that migratory birds were caught and torn in a violent wind, but there was **no record of a violent wind at the time**, nor any feathers or dead birds. Later, more blood fell from the sky in the same place.

The *Literary Digest* of September 2, 1921 published a letter about a fall of a substance resembling blood in southwest China on November 17. It fell upon three villages, and was said to have fallen forty miles away as well. The quantity was great, and in one village it covered the ground completely. The writer in the Digest accepts that this substance did fall from the sky because it was found on rooftops as well as on the ground. He rejects the conventional explanation of dust because the material did not dissolve in several subsequent rains.

In the *American Journal of Science*, 1-42-196, we are told of a yellow substance that fell in great quantities over a vessel one "windless" night in June, in Pictou Harbor, Nova Scotia. The writer of the article analyzed the substance and it was found to "give off nitrogen and ammonia, and an animal odor."

I don't think there is much intelligence required in the matter of depositing "a yellow substance giving off nitrogen, ammonia, and an animal odor," on a ship. But there could be purposefulness! I feel that there may have been intent or necessity, either of which implies some kind of control or cognizance

Monthly Ship-Cleaning.

In these few examples of flesh and blood having come from the sky, we can readily see that it is not beyond the realm of **possibility that our space friends are flesh and blood**: however, it is a more likely assumption that these "disgorged" materials have more to do with experiments and "captures" than anything else.

Kuts, Sky burial impossible.

It is possible that there we may have a clue to the whereabouts of the people who have vanished suddenly under mysterious circumstances that have baffled witnesses and those seeking to explain these mysteries.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

Burial in Space Not possible, So the L-M's *had* to grind-up any proof of their existence & drop it. THEY Do not Do so now, except in case of attractor failure but deposit their dead undersea in the "Vaulted City"

Other organic materials have frequently been attributed to meteoric activity, but again we are faced with the simple fact that materials fall which do not exist in meteors.

In 1872, on March 9, 10, and 11, something fell from the sky and was accompanied by dust. It was described as red iron ochre, carbonate of lime, and unidentifiable organic matter.

In the *American Journal of Science*, 1-2-335 (1819), is Professor Graves' account, communicated by Professor Dewey, that on the evening of August 13, 1819, a light was seen in Amherst – a falling object – with accompanying sounds as if from an explosion. In the home of Professor Dewey this light was reflected upon a wall of a room. The next morning in Professor Dewey's front yard, in what is said to have been the only position from which the light could have been reflected, a substance was found "unlike anything before observed by anyone who saw it." It was a bowl-shaped object, about eight inches in diameter, and one-inch thick, bright buff-colored, and having upon it a "fine nap." Upon removing this covering, a buff-colored, pulpy substance of the consistency of soft soap, was found – "of an offensive, suffocating smell," A few minutes of exposure to the air changed the buff color to a "livid color resembling venous blood," It absorbed moisture quickly from the air and liquefied.

Note that the "thing" fell with a burst of light. It is not reported to have come with a storm. It was obviously of either organic or artificial character, and the "sounds as of an explosion" were scarcely normal or commonplace.

But it is interesting to compare that report with another; that in Marcn, 1832, there fell in the fields of Kourianof, Russia, a combustible, yellowish substance, covering an area at least two inches thick, and six hundred or seven hundred square feet. It was resinous and yellowish so one inclines to the conventional explanation that it was pollen from pine trees – but, when torn, it had the tenacity of cotton. When placed in water it had the consistency of resin. "This resin had the color of amber, was elastic, like India rubber, and smelled like prepared oil mixed with wax."

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

Stuff causing "Explosion" was "Force-Impacted" Material Expanding back to Natural "size". Thus,Explosions where no Sound is heard, only seen close by.

In *Philosophical Transaction* of 1695 there is an extract from a letter by Mr. Robert Vans, of Kilkenny, Ireland, dated November 15, 1695, that there had been "of late," in the countries of Limerick and Tipperary, showers of a sort of matter like butter or grease …"having a very stinking smell." There follows an extract of a letter from the Bishop of Cloyne, Leinster, that for a good part of the spring of 1695 there fell a substance which the country people called "butter" – "soft, clammy, and of a dark yellow" – that cattle fed "indifferently" in fields where this substance lay. "It fell in lumps as big as the end of one's finger." It had a "strong, ill scent." His grace called it a "stinking dew." In Mr. Vans's letter, it is said that the "butter" was supposed to have medicinal properties, "and was gathered in pots and other vessels by some of the inhabitants of the place."

The yellow substance at Kourianof, combustible (organic_ covering six or seven hundred square feet – about the size area we have so often noted – some characteristics of pine pollen… but who ever saw pine pollen of fibrous nature which "when torn had the tenacity of cotton"? Two inches thick means tons!

I am inclined to think that there is something of an indication in these buttery things. There is a haunting quality which says that these substances were formed by some guidance of a higher intellectual grade than the chemical law of averages.

The constant references to substances, rather than naming definite elements, compounds, or natural organic products, is significant. Why, if all this stuff that admittedly falls from the sky is commonplace, natural material or life, **is it usually** so difficult for experienced and trained scientists and naturalists to give it positive definite identity?

There have been many reports of so-called "spider-webs" and "angel hair" that have fallen from the sky. To give but one example, let us look at the *Montgomery* (Alabama) *Advertiser* of November 21, 1898, which reported **numerous batches of a spider-weblike substance** which fell in Montgomery. Some of it **fell in strands** and **some in masses several inches long** and several inches broad. According to the writer, it was not spiders' web, but something like asbestos. It was reported, too, as phosphorescent.

Force-extruder expieriment in Plastic cloth
fibreswhich, faild, (sic) then, but Later was
successful. Boy! My socks wear for 3 years *or* so!

It has been suggested that all of the "falling material" is the result of occasional wrecks of interplanetary, super-space contraptions, or even the dumping from them while in route from planet to planet. If one considers this proposition carefully, the natural question is: why so often?

On the other hand, if adjacent space toward the gravitational neutral at the edge of the earth's sphere of influence, perhaps 180,000 to 200,000 miles away from here, should be the habitat of a vast number and considerable variety of intelligently operated space widgets or urban concentrations of the like, then the whole proposition begins to take on a certain amount of plausibility.

In the past two or three decades, there has been a great discussion about miniature fossils found in meteorites, and something about spores and mono-cellular organisms, maybe alive, or at least viable. Everyone, but those whose weak ego demands that they maintain scientific dignity by making categorical denials with professional aplomb, will concede that this question is debatable, and has been since the findings were first announced. But, debatability is something different from inconceivability, incredibility, negative proof, positive proof, or even smug denial. It is an important point to settle.

If settled positively – that meteorites do contain fossils, viable spores or dormant protozoa – than we have proved that life, or remnants of it, does come from outer space. This is obviously a qualitative decision. It is on the periphery of science, especially astronomy, biology, and geology. It can be an anthropological question if it can be shown that human life has mergers with life in outer space.

If one or more of these fossils or elements of incipient life can be shown to arrive on this planet via meteors, we are confronted with a major problem of deciding whether the meteorites were thrown off this earth in the remote past, whether they originated in the explosion of another planet, whether they arrive from interstellar space, whether they grew spontaneously in the general melee of the origin of the solar system –- or where, in fact, did they originate?

A Dr. Hahn has claimed to have found miniature fossils in meteorites, including corals, sponges, shells and crinoids, all microscopic, which he photographed. Some, who didn't see them, taking an attitude of professional scorn, claimed they were not valid. Some trained and intelligent men, like Francis Blingham, who did see them, agree that they are real and were contained in meteorites.

Much miscellaneous junk does seem to come from space, and, with all of this material in space, it is but a step to acceptance of intelligence, or life, some of it in control of vast assemblages of spatial objects or of individual little ones.

One supposes organic material to be a product of life processes, associated with life, or the abode of life. Life implies intelligence, even of an incipient, primitive or rudimentary type. Our contention is that some kind of intelligence **has adapted itself to this environment**, if it was **not actually indigenous thereto.**

We shall close this section with a mystery. The following is from *Fate*, of April 1951.

The Mystery of the Falling Grain

One day last summer construction men were working on the top of the Empire State Building tower, 1,467 feet above the street, preparing to put up a new television mast. Suddenly, something stung the check of one of the men. Then another reached into his shirt collar and picked out a grain of something or other. He looked at it in puzzlement, then flung it aside.

Then other men began to notice the kernels falling upon them. While they looked in bewilderment, nearly a peck of grain fell upon the men. It stung their faces and necks and bounced off the steel floor.

Where was it coming from? They heard no airplanes overhead nor did they see any. There was no wind or storm, though the sky was overcast. Meanwhile the grain continued to fall. Tenants along the north side of the building heard it rattling against their windows.

Samples of the grain were taken to Dr. Michael Lauro, official chemist of the Produce Exchange, who identified it as barley. Dr. Lauro suggested that it might have come from one of the great breweries of New York -- possibly carried up through cyclone chimneys – but hastened to add that he was just guessing. Ernest J. Christie, of the U.S. Weather Bureau, said that the winds that day were too light to have borne the grain aloft. He did not consider it likely that it had blown in from the Midwest. One scientist suggested, but dropped the idea hastily, that birds had dropped the barley.

Of a reasonable satisfactory explanation, there was none.

This Man hints much at there being two distinct species or groups of Similar species to be involved in his observation. Why does he presist in Mere Hinting so strongly. I believe that he KNOWS FOR CERTAIN *but* can do Nothing. L-M's ARE in for a surprise *if* he does do *something*.

Falling Shaped Things

I use the word "shaped" here to mean forming by intelligence.

I suggest the following classifications of things that have fallen from the sky:

A. Object unassociated with intelligent action.

1. Substances of inorganic nature, shaped or moved by random forces: e.g., inorganic dust, "true meteoritic material," etc.

2. Miscellaneous objects.

B. Object associated with intelligent action.

1. Symmetrical Objects: wedges, spheres, discs, threads, carvings, works of art, nails; any object not obviously the product of the unguided forces of nature.

2. Objects and substances of organic or functional nature.

3. Objects, lights, substances, or groups of these, of any kind, which demonstrated motions, control, accumulation placing, selection, delimitation, direction, defiance of gravity or other natural forces, locomotion, gregariousness, purposefulness, or any dynamic or volitional characteristic not attributable to recognized physical forces alone.

We have to consider some of the utilitarian or functional categories as including items which might be used for food: shrimps, periwinkles, snails, etc., or edible substances.

Two purposes will be served in this chapter. We will consider shapes and functional things as related to intelligence and to falls from space, but will also include gadgets which indicated the extreme antiquity of some type of intelligence or intelligent life on earth; and items found in locations and strata where falls from space, or space ships, might have placed them.

In some of these cases we have to decide between several possible alternatives:

(a) Extreme antiquity, attributable to ancient civilizations without space flight;
(b) The same, but with space flight developed internally;
(c) Space flight independent of man on earth, bringing occasional widgets from extraterrestrial sectors of intellectual development;
(d) Falls of items originally on the earth but previously expelled by explosion or other force;
(e) Falls of items blown off other exploding planets.

We cannot forever ignore the immense antiquity of some archaeological items. It is not fashionable with archaeological circles, which is anything but an exact science, to admit the existence of culture or rather civilization, more remote than that of the historically recorded Egyptians and Orientals: four to seven thousand years at most; and heaven forbid if one suggests advanced races in eras of ten, twenty, forty, or one hundred thousand years ago. **Yet no scientist has found a logical common denominator for the various races, cultures**, and **civilizations of which we have unmistakable records**, except that of a common source predating the Egyptians, the Chinese, the Indians (Asiatic), the Incas, and the Mayas, and in fact all branches covered by the study of anthropology and ethnology. Much as we may deride writers such as Churchward (as per De Camp; Lost Continents) in his rather crude presentation of his hypothesis of the Lost Continent of Mu, his is the only general explanation of terrestrial intellectual development and distribution to be advanced which in a broad way explains the observed data. Such explanations, however desirable, are ruled out by **the fashion of the day** which decries emphasis on qualitative knowledge in favor of quantitatively investigating the fifth place of decimals or other exaggerated refinement of classified knowledge.

Who is Churchward or this DeCamp? Some "Gaiyor"
Baini who guessed or knew right???

Because we feel so strongly on this subject, we list some of the obstreperous items which prove that articles created by intelligence existed tens or scores of thousands of years ago. These things prove either, or both, of two things: there was a vast and advanced civilization on the earth in those distant times; or those articles have come here from space, via ships, or from a scattering of debris in space. **Anyway you look at it, the arrogant omnipotence of homo sapiens takes a beating** – for our present egotistical state of culture was preceded by another of unfathomable age.

If intellectual development is that old, isn't it logical that it may have created a form of flight not yet known to our engineers? Let's forget the fifth decimal place – go back to unity – to the objective assimilation of qualitative data; back to philosophical generalizations and the divination of natural law; back, in fact, to the mentality of a Humboldt, a Newton, a Copernicus. Science is starved for such ability, more than at any time in the past century.

A Dr. Gurlt, in 1877, reported an object found in a tertiary coal bed. In several magazines of that general period there were questions from speculative scientific men as to why, if meteors have been encountering the earth from remote times, there are no meteorites in tertiary coal deposits. Subsequent finds have answered the questions. Well, anyway, this object, incongruous in its carbonaceous environment, is a fossil meteorite. There has been much debate, some of it venomous, as to whether it can be more than merely that. The find has been placed in the Salzburg Museum, after being taken from a block of coal in Lower Austria.

The specimen was examined by many interested persons and scientists, who did not fully agree on its origins. Some said that it was a meteorite; some said that it was an artificial production; others remarked that is resembled a meteorite modified by the hands of man. (Nobody, so far as I know, ever suggested that modification could have been effected through the agency of intelligence **other** than human.)

The object is an almost perfect cube, and many examiners consider it **too** geometric in shape to be entirely natural. Two opposite faces are a little bit rounded, reducing the size of the other four. A deep incision runs around the cube. The material is of a variety conventionally conceded to be meteorite iron and nickel, roughly three by two by two inches. It weights 785 grams, has a specific gravity of 7.75, and it is hard as steel, as are all iron-nickel aerolites.

I can't help thinking of the little stone of Tarbes: **are** most of the things, which come from space of a little more physical delicacy than most of the indigenous items of the same types?

This cubic meteorite is most disturbing to **conservative science**. **Its tertiary age cannot be denied**, nor its authenticity – that much is firm. That is, it was certainly placed in the coal bed **in tertiary times**, but **no one knows how much older it may be**. Equally firm is its nature as meteoritic iron, nickel and carbon (it is really a form of steel.)

The greater puzzle is its geometric shape, including the circumscribed groove, so regularly and doubly "artificial" that it seems certainly to have been shaped by hands.

"Hands"? Human hands, in the tertiary era? No! say the anthropologists. Extraterrestrial hands, maybe on an exploded planet, or blasted off this bedeviled old earth when Mu went up in cosmic glory?

Hands with 3 fingers & thumb

To uninhibited thinkers, facts **remain** facts. This specimen is artificially shaped; it is a fossil of tertiary coal beds; it is of meteoritic structure and material which even conservative science has reluctantly admitted as being from outer space. So this must have been shaped by intelligence either before or after falling, but certainly prior to or surely concomitant with the formation of tertiary coal.

For our purpose, we do not care whether one says it was fashioned by extraterrestrial hands or terrestrial hands, for we are just as much interested in proving the extreme antiquity of civilized man as we are in indicating the existence of extraterrestrial intelligence. This obstreperous whickeroo was dropped into an embryonic coal bed, either from an indigenous civilization or by an off-shore agency of some kind.

If there was civilization in tertiary times – terrestrial or spatial – the sequel of intelligence in space, then or evolving later from the ground variety, is a quantitative development, and the emergence of space travel is inherent in the later case and an almost inevitable emergence in the former.

It is recorded in the *Annals of Scientific Discovery*, 1853-71, that Sir David Brewster had made a startling announcement at a meeting of the British Association for the Advancement of Science in 1853. He had, he said, to call to the attention of the meeting an object of so incredible a nature that nothing short of the strongest evidence was necessary to render the statement at all probable. He claimed that a **true crystal lens** had been found in the treasure house at Nineveh. It is on record that many of the temples and treasure houses of old civilizations were in the habit of **preserving things which fell** from the sky and things which, to these ancient peoples, **were already antiquities**.

This egocentric race has been so imbued with its own importance that it cannot believe that optical equipment could have evolved in times prior to the Renaissance. We will concede that such items **were not in use during the Dark Ages**, nor, apparently, during the centuries from that period backward to some thousands of years BC. **But such a concession is**, in fact, a victory, for it then becomes

necessary to concede a knowledge of optics some millennia **before** the **incarceration of this lens at Nineveh.** And that is a major part of our whole tenet.

In *The Microscope and its Revelations*, Carpenter presents two drawings of the lens, but he argues that it is impossible to accept that optical lenses have ever been made by the ancients. He says the object must have been an ornament. Brewster says **it was a true optical lens**.

Then we are right back where we started with the little worked meteorite. If either, or both, of these shameless trinkets are indigenous to our planet we must, perforce, accept a civilization with a knowledge of optics, predating all presently recorded history.

Lens was Atruscan,

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

Mirror Silvering of Crystal (Rock or Force-Made Crystal) *Unknown to Atruscans.*

It was Crystal & It was a Lens, Atruscans used them to Make fine Gold & Silver earrings & Gold wire inlays. Also were used to Make fire for the 'Smiths.

This lens is just as much, in its small way, a relic of the first wave of civilization (if not from space) as is the Great Pyramid **which embodies more astronomy and mathematics than was possessed by those people to whom its construction is attributed**.

MAN SPEAKS FROM GENERAL CONCENSUS.

Wilkins, in *Secret Cities of South America*, reports the finding of optical lenses and mirrors in a **submerged city** on the coast of Equador, and others in archaic ruins of Central America. These appear to be pre-Incan and pre-Andean.

These Were Muanian in Make

The *London Times* of February 1, 1888, has reported the finding of a roundish, or ovate, object of iron which was found in a garden at Brixton, after a violent thunderstorm on August 7, 1887. It is described as an oblate spheroid about two inches across its major axis. An oblate spheroid is the shape generated by an ellipse if rotated about its minor axis, and a prolate spheroid is similarly generated by rotation about its major axis. A football is shaped something like a prolate spheroid, while a flattish pumpkin or tomato is close to being an oblate spheroid.

The paper discussed this object at length, while also describing an "iron cannon ball," found in a manure heap after a thunderstorm. Both items seem to be too shapely, or symmetrical, to have been created without the aid of intelligence. There may be some significance in the fact of their all being small, a couple of inches or so in diameter.

The Scientific American, 1851-52, has the following to say, which is contributory to our theme:

A few days ago, a powerful blast was made in the rock at Meeting House Hill, in Dorchester, a few rods south of Reverend Mr. Hall's meeting house. The blast threw out an immense mass of rock, some of the pieces weighing several tons, and scattered small fragments in all directions. Among them was picked up a metallic vessel in two parts, rent asunder by the explosion. On putting the two parts together, it formed a bell-shaped vessel, four and one-half inches high, six and one-half inches at the base and two and one-half inches at the top, and about an eighth of an inch in thickness. The body of this vessel resembles zinc in color, or a **composition material**, in which there is a considerable portion of silver. On the sides there are six figures of a flower or bouquet, beautifully **inlaid** with pure silver, and

around the lower part of the vessel a vine or wreath, **inlaid** also with silver. The chasing, carving, and inlaying are **exquisitely done by the art of some cunning workman**. This curious and unknown vessel was blown out of the pudding stone fifteen feet below the surface...there is **no doubt** but **that this curiosity was blown out** of the rock as above stated...the matter is worthy of investigation, as there is no deception.

Inlay Work the Mark of Atruscan-Lemurians.

The *London Times*, for June 22, 1844, reports that some workmen, quarrying rock close to Tweed, not far from a place called Rutherford Mills, had discovered a gold thread embedded in the stone at a depth of about eight feet. A piece of the gold thread had been forwarded to the office of the *Kelso Chronicle*. That is a very simple item, indeed! Just a wee bit of gold thread in solid rock!

Matching the gold thread in interest is something found inside a lump of coal by a Mrs. Culp, at Morrisonville, Illinois, in 1891. When the lump of coal for her cooking range fell apart she was startled to find embedded in circular fashion, a small gold chain about ten inches long and of quaint workmanship. If the **cubical Austrian meteorite** is not enough to convince you that things of intelligent manufacture were falling into coal beds in tertiary times, then surely this one will.

Cube shaped by Mag. Force compressor.Caused tremendous Heat, thus the regard of it as being a Meteorite.

It is further reported that James Parsons, and his two sons, exhumed a slate wall **in a coal mine** at Hammondville, Ohio, in 1868. **It was a large, smooth wall, disclosed when a great mass of coal fell away** from it, and on its surface, **carved** in bold relief, **were several lines of hieroglyphics**. Nothing further seems to have been reported, and if any reader knows more of this incident the author would welcome a report (send care of the publisher) – perhaps from some local newspaper of that date. This item, at least, we will concede was not dropped by space ships. It must represent the work of contemporary, indigenous civilization in tertiary times.

In their hearts, all Miners know this!

Ref. to Ohio incident Miners See these things EACH Year, Many or Most speak Little English & "It ain't coal & ITS IN THE WAY SO GET IT OUT of there.

Some Miners Save parts or all of these above curiositys & they May be found *in their homes.* They are *used* to seeing them.

In the *London Times* of December 24, 1851, it is stated that a citizen of Springfield, Massachusetts, a Mr. Hiram de Witt, had returned from California bringing a chunk of auriferous quartz about as big as a man's fist. It was accidentally dropped and broke upon. It had a nail in it. A cut iron nail, about the size of an ordinary six-penny nail, a bit corroded, "straight and with a **perfect** head."

DISCARDED FORCE-CRYSTAL

According to the *Reports of the British Association*, 1845-51, Sir David Brewster astounded the assembled brethren with an account of a nail which was found in a block of stone from Kingoodie Quarry, in North Britain. The block of stone was nine inches thick. There was little, if any, evidence as to what part of the quarry it came from, except that it could not have come form the surface. The quarry had been worked for about twenty years, and consisted of alternate layers of hard stone and a substance called "till." The point of the nail extended upward into the till and was badly eaten by rust. Part of the nail lay on the surface of the stone, but about an inch, **including the head**, was embedded in the stone.

Head imbedded thus could Not have been pounded in Head first, It *Would Not go in*.

This till intrigues me. Once upon a time I read the book, *Raganork*, by Ignatius Donnelly, who was a U.S. Congressman with time on his hands, and who spent that time in the Library of Congress, making himself one of the most literate Congressmen ever to invade Washington. His theme was of Atlantis, and he built up a case for this till having been splattered all over the Atlantic hemisphere of the earth by collision with a comet. In this splash were transported the erratics of the till which are so annoying to geologists. Maybe this nail was one of these erratics.

The Learned Rep. Was right, save that It was done by MANY "Comets" in The Great War.

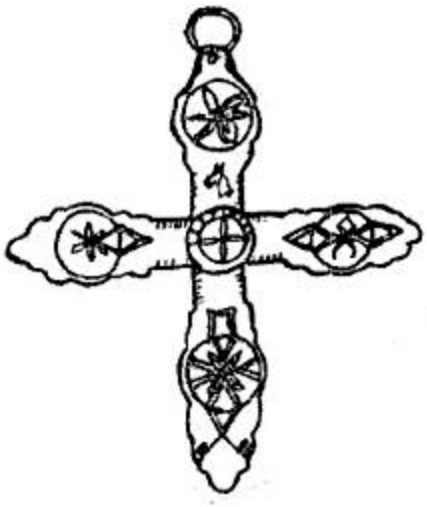
Under the title "Mysterious Monoliths," *Fate Magazine*, March 1950, shows a photograph of some spherical sandstone balls which were blasted out of solid rock by a highway crew near Hornbrook, California. The balls appear **incredibly ancient**. Sandstone balls of nearly spherical shape are not especially rare, and they are oblate spheroids which used to be sought after for garden ornaments throughout the Middle West. They were called concretions, and were shaped either by the action of water or by successive deposits of sand which later solidified, according to geologists. We can believe in their natural formation, since the condition in which they were found seem to indicate that this is true. **But these balls in California were apparently found in quantity**, in solid rock. Their symmetry indicates **artificial shaping**, they are an indication of antiquity, rather than a proof.

***Balls* were compressed Earth, Used as Ammo for Force-"Guns" During "The Great War" The success of *that*, was so fast, that these were never used.**

W.S. Forest, in *Historical Sketches of Norfolk, Virginia*, reports the finding of a coin at a depth of thirty feet, by well borers, in September, 1833. It was about the size of a shilling and unlike anything seen before. Although buried for many centuries, the markings were well preserved, represent a warrior or hunter, and had a Roman appearance.

"ROANOKE" a Whole Colony kidnapped.

There are a number of these coins which have been found in unexplained places, and where



The Cross found in an ancient grave in Georgia. The inscription is undecipherable. The horse's head is crudely scratched by an unskilled hand at a later date than the original. Was it dropped by a UFO?

burial at very early dates is indicated. A coin described by Donelly is fully discussed in *Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society*, and was brought up from a depth of one hundred and twenty feet, with the borings of a well in Illinois. The crosses reported in the *Smithsonian Institute Reports*, 1881 are puzzling. Looked at in a mirror, some of the inscription resembles Roman numerals, but is not quite intelligible. Their appearance is certainly not indicative of anything within everyday experience. They may have been dropped from space ships. The alphabetical characters resemble our own to a degree, but are not interpretable in any known language. These were found in an ancient grave in the state of Georgia.

Cross is Atruscan-Lemurian, language is that now called "Black tongue" spoken by "Gitana" the World over. Show this to a Brother-Gypsy & Lord know what the reaction would be if the original were shown. It is a Chiefs or Nabobs own insignia of Clan. He flew to that place but had to walk, Later. He died from Walking for His Muscles were not used to *or* for such purpose. Manner of Death indicated by Horses Head, even tho there were no horses on this Land at that time. His name and address & his accomplishments are signified on the metal. The cross was Left so that the body Might be brought home. The making of this required Calipers, Scribes and Drawing compass, plus Mathematics.

Punch, a Press, a set ot Stamps, a Drill, SeveralDifferent FILES, A FORGE, SMELTER & ETC. *OR* ONE FORCE-RAY *STAMP & BURNER* PRESS. (*italics by Jemi)*

We continue to **have a choice between terrestrial antiquity or spatial antiquity**. **But antiquity we do have,** and a race so ancient, on earth, could very well have invented space travel.

All of these samples lead to conclusions, but we must not overlook the actual sighting of shaped objects, falling from the sky. The object, five inches by fifteen inches, for instance, which fell at Twickenham, August 5, 1889.

Samples of script have come out **of the Brazilian jungles** which are almost **identical with alphabetical characters from Ceylon's buried and forgotten ruins**. Tiahuanaco is thought to have been in ruins so long before the formation of the Andes that it **had actually been submerged** and was raised from under the sea at the time of the formation of the Andes. (Red is A & B).

Confirmed, 1954, American Arch. Exp.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary postion.

Read, "The Day the Sun Stood Still" Edited 1941. Readers *Digest of the book*.

Andes were impelled upwards by Great force once by Nature once by "The War of the Great Freeze" & by, in part "The Great Bombardment"

Some scientists believe that **the Andes have been formed twice**, and that the last formation was perhaps 10,000 to 12,000 years ago. It probably was farther into the past than that. The meteor craters spread across the southwestern United States and down into tropical Mexico have an apparent age of 8,000 to 12,000 years. The traditions agree that "Atlantis" or its equivalent, was destroyed about

9,000 years or so BC. There are several traditions in several parts of the world that the ancestors of some races and tribes were flourishing before the moon existed.

A detailed build-up for this antiquity is beyond the scope and ability of this book. Mainly we are interested in showing that such an antiquity did exist, and that it is conceivable that some very early race, 200,000 years ago or so, may have developed space flight, and after the cataclysm of 12,000 years ago may have chosen to stay in space, thinking it a safer habitat than this uncertain planet.

We offer no proof for this supposition. What we do offer is a set of conditions which might make it possible, plus a long series of observations of activity in space which gives every appearance of being the result of intelligent direction. Such a hypothesis relieves us of having to assume that the UFO's of today must necessarily come from another planet, or another star. We submit that our postulate is an improbability of lesser order, **and that the growing evidence of the antiquity of mankind, far beyond anything heretofore admitted by science is a contributory factor worthy of consideration**.

Falls of Water

There are many instances of lights, **clouds** or structures which **seem to exhibit voluntary or controlled motions.** This applies to some isolated freak storms which appear in otherwise undisturbed skies. Some of these storms seem to have organic entity. They seem to have many components, including debris of all sorts, and their clouds are apt to be of unique shape, density, texture, or color; they may be luminous or contain lights; they often produce extremely violent winds and stygian darkness.

It is my contention that some of these storms are associated with intelligent action, that they may contain navigable structures which may surround themselves with clouds, for purposes of camouflage, or merely through natural interaction with the atmosphere. We will try to distinguish between these and the meteoritic disturbances proper, some of them very huge indeed, which sometimes appear to share some of their physical characteristics.

Also, we are going to draw a very fine distinction. We must distinguish between rain and falling water. We are going to assume that the rain is falling water, **but that falling water is not necessarily rain –** at least not as understood by meteorological science.

DEC. 22, California Mysteriously flooded, 1955.

All through our research into the falls of unusual objects from the sky, we frequently encounter the statement that these objects fall in a torrential downpour of water, and almost as frequently we find references to peculiar cloud formations which do not appear to have their origin based on normal, or at least familiar, meteorological conditions – conditions of weather, that is.

We hope that you will give very special thought to the world-wide scope of some of these intense and violent storm periods. There are many cases where storms and floods which inundated a considerable part of our own country have been almost **universal in their action**. **This tends to hint the entrance of the earth into a large cosmic cloud of water and debris sufficient to deluge** most of the areas in both northern and southern hemispheres together. The volume of water falling and the concomitants of mud, black rain, stones, etc., indicate unity of external origin.

There are some cases where the distribution of violence follows restricted belts of terrestrial latitude, so that one thinks of the rotation of the earth as **carrying successive longitudes into the disturbance.**

About the middle of September, 1886, water was falling from a cloudless sky, always within an area of twenty-five feet square, at Dawson, Georgia, and showers were reported over an area ten feet square at Aiken, South Carolina, and at Cheraw, South Carolina, (*Charleston News and Courier*, October 8, 21, 25, 26). Falls of water from a cloudless sky, to a point in Chesterfield County, South Carolina, and falling so heavily that streams of it gushed from roof pipes.

To the honest skeptic, either layman or meteorologist, who protests that these events, while not usual, are nevertheless not abnormal nor paranormal, I would ask: **"Since when are meteorological conditions so stable that water can condense and fall over precisely delimited areas, over such periods of time?"**

There is an account from a Dr. Wartmann about water which fell from the sky, at Geneva, Switzerland. It seems that there were clouds on the horizon at 9:00 AM, August 9, 1837, but the sky was clear at zenith. It may not be startling that some raindrops should fall from a clear sky, but these were large drops of warm water, and they fell in such abundance that people were driven to shelter. This kept up for several minutes, and there were repeated falls during a period of an hour or so. Warmed, perhaps, by meteoric velocity?

Repetition, selection, pinpoint localization, warmth!

Not only do we have pinpoint accuracy in these precipitations but there is an obvious tendency for reports of them to be restricted to certain general areas.

Compare these extremely localized falls of water with the highly delimited falls of other objects, and the purity of segregation which is so characteristic of most of the falls which we have noted. It is falls of water, of this type, which we believe should be included in the same overall category with ice, stones, live organisms, etc., together with the dumpings of water concomitant with the unloading of periwinkles, fish, etc. We suggest that intelligence is involved in the obvious selection and placement.

As with the case of ice, we believe there are **three types of water falling to the ground**. That class of water which seems to partake of direction and isolation corresponds to the ice, for instance, which we postulated to have origin in, on, or with, space navigating objects. We hope it will be apparent that cloudburst and the almost solid masses of water know to fall are the counterpart of the large pieces of ice or their congregations of "chunk-like" nature: in other words, both the ice and the water are meteoritic. Then we have the common variety of meteorologically formed hailstones and rain. To us, there appears a parallelism.

It seems, at times, that there is a merging between the space structure, the water and cloudbursts. Here is a little item from the *New York Tribune* of July 3, 1922. For the fourth time within a month, it is said, a great volume of water, or a "cloudburst" had poured from one local sky, near Carbondale, Pennsylvania. This event, or series of events, has the localization and repetitive qualities which we have learned to associate with falls of periwinkles, snails and frogs and other things. **In addition** it has the almost cataclysmic feature, on a small scale, of the impacts of meteoritic masses of water. But in line with our speculation regarding the dumping of hydroponic tanks, we find it convenient to link repetitive, highly localized impacts of dense masses of water with the dumpings. Sometimes there is animal life in the water; sometimes not. We think that some judgment **can be exercised** in deciding which of these falls of water are meteoritic and which are connected with space contrivances.

Yet Will not be, for No set up exists to XXXXXXX (crossed out by A)

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

Observe these phenomenal "coincidnents" Some
Chemical Gardening Practiced in Arks & D ships
Not too much, at Last report.

In *Symons Meteorological Magazine*, for 1889, it is said that the annual fall of rain, at Norfolk, England, is about twenty-nine inches, and that is not a dry or desert locality. But Mr. Symons points out that volumes of water up to twenty-four inches fell from May 25,to 28 in New South Wales—and of a deluge much greater, thirty-four inches, which engulfed Hong Kong on May 29 and 30. In the United States, **one inch of rain a day is a big fall** and two inches is a flood. A **normal thunder** shower can **bring** from one-eighth to one-half inch of rain water. Mr. Symons called attention to these two splashes which were a couple of thousand miles or more apart, and posed the question of whether they were merely coincidence, but leaving it to ⌘⌘⌘⌘⌘⌘⌘⌘⌘⌘⌘⌘⌘⌘⌘ **professional meteorologist thought ⌘⌘⌘⌘nds of miles apart, might be remarkable, and not easy to explain** on any known basis of meteorological science.

This is another example of partial data and partial thinking. Newspapers reported the soak in New South Wales, but from their reports: columns of water fell in other places, notable Avoca, in Victoria; Tasmania was flooded, its fields gutted with floating rabbits. The *Melbourne Argus* "explained": a waterspout had burst in Victoria. Victoria, Tasmania, New South Wales—a whole continent and more – and Hong Kong. That is not local, and bulks of water are not normal. We look for outside help.

Also, New Zealand,and I do Not know How this came to Pass, Jemi.

I remember, My Twin, This was the Cleaning and the Regeneration of the Great Ark & all its "Great Rooms" All Arks too, needs Cleaning same as any other ship.

Let us now follow the startling cases of **the floods** of 1913 which seriously damaged our Middle Western States but **which were practically world-wide** and, for some reason, failed to attract much attention from science or to be recognized as a single, complex disturbance. It is especially this sort of condition to which we direct your attention. We believe that you should question how such a widespread upheaval of our normal meteorological processes could be generated without an encounter with extraterrestrial clouds of space matter.

In March, 1913, farmers were caught short with their spring planting. People were alarmed and driven from homes… March 23, 1913, found the State of Ohio flooded, inundated. Torrents were falling and rivers were out of control. The floods at Dayton, Ohio were singularly disastrous and they were the center of attraction in the national press. 250,000 people were homeless, many homes were obliterated.

Dayton was a shambles of bodies, stalled street cars, snarled traffic, wrecked buildings, and the general flotsam of any flood. Dayton got the headlines, I remember them. I was two hundred miles away, on a farm in western Indiana. It rained there, too. We couldn't plow the land, much less plant crops. That was the year I got my first camera, and I bought a brownie. And one of the very first rolls of film I used was to photograph the tiny brook which ran through our pasture. Only it wasn't tiny then, it was a raging torrent and I snapped my sister standing by it. The little brooklet had a drainage basin not over a half a mile long, but it was a river that day in March. So I remember 1913 and the news from Dayton—the last dispatch: "Dayton in total darkness—no power."

Meteorology was not as advanced in 1913 as it is today, but it was a lusty infant and weather forecasting was not wholly undeveloped. But there was no warning to farmers about the protracted deluge. It surprised the scientists as well as the layman.

On March 23, 24, and 25, a watery sky sat on the Catskills and Adirondacks. It slipped and ripped its pants on a peak, and rivers invaded the streets of Troy and Albany. Lampposts disappeared and furniture floated against the ceilings of rooms. In New Jersey something called a "cloudburst" grabbed factories and made a mess of them, cluttering up the nicely laid out streets. There were a thousand dead in Columbus, Ohio, which is close to Dayton, and the Delaware River at Trenton was fourteen feet above normal. The Ohio River floods at the slightest opportunity—it had a field day. At Parkersburg, West Virginia, people called on their second-story neighbors in rowboats. There were lakes

in Vermont. Farmers were caught napping in Wisconsin. Destructive floods occurred in Illinois and Missouri.

By March 27, the meteorologists began to catch up, and the weather bureau was issuing storm warnings (*New York Tribune*, March 28, 1913). Indiana was an inland sea.

Waters were falling and freezing on trees in Canada, breaking power lines and telegraph wires and flooding powerhouses. Towns were in darkness, listening to crashes of trees heavy with ice. California, two thousand miles from Ohio, was drenched; torrents were falling in Washington and Oregon. Texas should be warm, maybe hot, in latter March; there were unprecedented snows, as also in New Mexico and Oklahoma. Alabama was inundated; Florida flooded.

Deluges in France. All Europe was wet. Not much sunny evaporation there. In Spain, near Valencia, there was a hailstorm: trains were stalled by unusually large hailstones, piles three feet deep.

South Africa is practically antipodal to our Midwest; there were watery fists from the skies of Colesburg, Murraysburg, and Prieska, and one of these bulks was the equivalent of one-tenth of the total normal rainfall of South Africa for a whole year!

Summer in the South American Andes? Maybe, but snow was covering them two months ahead of schedule—and in the jungles of Paraguay people were dispersing in panic from flooded rivers. The Uruguay River was rising—governments were rushing supplies and equipment to thousands of starving, homeless people.

The Fiji Islands were drenched and Tasmania was under water. On March 22, the day before the catastrophe in Ohio and four neighboring States, there began a series of great thunderstorms in Australia; a "rain blizzard" in New South Wales, in Queensland all transportation was tied up.

According to the *Wellington Evening Post*, of New Zealand, March 31, there was "the greatest disaster in the history of the colony"; where there had been listless rivers there were unruly torrents embellished with the woolly bodies of sheep and the accouterments of farming. The roar of rivers was the cry of drowning and cattle. Store windows were smashed; dead bodies were wrapped in silk curtains from the red-light district.

May, 1889: There was a spectacular "afterglow" in France although no volcanic eruptions had occurred to fill the air with dust—and storms everywhere had supposedly cleared the murky air. There was a red rain in Cardiff, Wales, and red dust fell on the island of Hyeres, off the coast of France. An unknown substance fell for several hours from the sky at St. Louis, crystalline particles, some pink and some white. Fine dust fell in Dakota: looked like a snowstorm. **In Greece there was a monstrous debacle** and **the rivers choked with cattle**. The Bahama Islands were on a spree of water. A downpour was described by a newspaper on St. Helena. A drought occurred in British Honduras, followed by heavy rains, June 1 and 2. Floods raged in California, Ceylon, Cuba; cities and plantations of Mexico were raped by deluges.

All in certain Range of Latitude.

Deluges and falls of lumps of ice throughout England. France deluged. Water dropped from the sky in Switzerland, flooding some streets five feet deep. It was not rain: there were falling columns of water from what was thought to be a waterspout. "Bulks Dropped! and one of them was watched—or some kind of a vast, vaporous cow sailed over the town, and people looked up at her bag of water. Something that was described as a large body of water was seen at Coburg, Ontario. It crossed the town, **holding its baglike formation**. When it broke, it splashed rivers that broke all dams between Coburg and Lake Ontario. In the *Toronto Globe*, June 3, this falling bulk is **called** a waterspout. Fall of a similar bulk was noted in Switzerland and Saxony." (Quoted from The Books of Charles Fort.)

One can find plenty of other references to concentrated, local cloudbursts. They are all of a pattern: solid masses of water flooding small demarcated areas, causing local floods and flash flash floods. One was observed in France, yet two miles away, dry land.

These are what we may call single, or isolated slugs of meteoric water.

What can account for these erratics?

Surely, here is proof of intelligence, or selectivity and regularity of a sort which must be attributed to something in space.

Clouds and Storms

Many of these singular objects which are known to have fallen with storms come from storms having some peculiarity. Sometimes the only notation is that the storms were of unusual violence, but even then there is something, perhaps of statistical significance. These small, you might say independent, storms sometimes seem to have causes other than the accepted meteorological conditions. They are quick, tempestuous, sometimes luminous; frequently with geometrically defined clouds of rare and striking colors. They often appear suddenly in clear skies.

As in the instances of some other phenomena, there appear to be three classes of clouds. The first, and most common, of course, are the ordinary meteorological or "weather" clouds. Everybody sees them by the million. Then there are clouds that seem to come from, at least be connected with outer space. These, we can sort into two broad categories, although there may be some merging of one into the other. Of these, the small, peculiarly formed, and sometimes startlingly colored, are the more difficult to define and the rarest in literary descriptions. They are often noted only by a casual phrase in passing, in connection with hailstorms, earthquakes, and sudden violent disturbances of the air; or in some other way they call themselves to the attention of observers whose most urgent interest lies in the more forceful physical aspects which may endanger him, or his crops, animals and home. It is seldom that anyone has the time or opportunity of observing such clouds **carefully**, and even more rarely does he make notes.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

1955, 9 Hurricaines (sic) Where they never *were* before & all of a sudden, too

The other category of clouds, or storms, of seemingly cosmic nature, are larger sometimes we think they may be larger than the earth itself, and in the case of dusts or mists they may be very much larger. They seem to cause all sorts of widespread trouble and disturbance, either directly or by generally upsetting the earth's meteorological balance. They may cause discoloration of the sun for considerable periods; or diminution in its light, with ensuing darkness; or very cold weather, such as the extremes of the winter of 1882-83, when space around the earth seemed to be replete with clouds of spatial debris. They may bring floods to the whole earth, simultaneously, they do not always seem to be wholly vaporous, and there are some which are certainly made up of debris, dust, water, stones, ice, etc.

It seems impossible to organize a firm classification from data not at hand. There are apparently mergings or blendings of each type into the others. We will describe and list some of them. Maybe something will work out as we go along.

1697: A horrid black cloud, attended by frequent lightnings, was precursor of a violent hailstorm. Animals were killed, crops ruined, and people had their heads broken. The breadth of the cloud was about two miles. The hailstones were some round, some semispherical and others were embossed and crenulated like the foot of a drinking glass, the ice being very transparent and hard.

1812: The latest remarkable fall of aerolites in Europe, of which there is a distinct account, was in the vicinity of Laigle, Normandy, early in the afternoon of April 26. A fiery globe of a very brilliant splendor, which moved in the air with great rapidity, was followed in a few seconds by a violent explosion which lasted five or six minutes and was heard for thirty leagues in all directions. Three or four reports like those of a cannon were followed by discharge resembling musketry fire, **after which a dreadful rumbling was heard like the beating of a HUGE** drum. The air was calm and the sky serene with the exception of a few clouds such as are frequently observed. The noise proceeded from a small cloud of rectangular form, the largest side being in a direction from east to west. It appeared motionless all the time the phenomenon lasted, but the vapor of which it was composed was projected momentarily from the different sides by the effect of the different explosions. The cloud was about half a league to the northeast of Laigle, and was at so great an altitude that the inhabitants of two hamlets a league apart saw it directly overhead. A multitude of meteoric stones fell amid a hissing sound.

Thunderbird, Dragon of Lao Fzu, p. 27, Saucer,
ALL the same thing, all Rumble when "Hit" Hard
or When in Need of Repairs.

The shape of that "cloud" is important. It seems to be the only sure clue that this could be anything more than an ordinary exploding meteor. Rectangular clouds do not just happen. They almost certainly have to be made. And the cloud appeared to be motionless. Meteors do not remain Motionless. The clouds which they usually provoke are not capable of sustaining the heavy meteoritic material inside, should the whole complex become immobile. So this cloud was certainly not of ordinary meteorological origin, and seems to partake of artificiality. Also, a stationary state is indicative of control.

There is something of the incongruous in meteors which exit from clouds, especially clouds of such peculiar formation that they do not associate easily with the common variety of weather clouds. Maybe that seems to be a rather remarkable statement. But if a meteor is moving through the atmosphere at a rate of ten to twenty miles per second there is not much time for clouds to form ahead of it. A cloud train behind the meteor would require little in the way of explanation, **but, under such circumstances, how do we form a cloud in time for the meteor to emerge from it;** why does the cloud suddenly and sharply stop moving while the meteor passes onward; **why, in short, does there seem to be a slight difference between the usual meteors and those which emerge from clouds?**

We quote the following from *Observatory*, 1877, a popular British astronomical monthly of competence and reliability:

… the meteor was seen by J. Plant, Esquire, F.O.S., at Salford, and is described by him as bursting from an intensely lit cloud, like a ball of silver quite as large as the moon. The explosion was remarkable, a whirling shower of pear-drop (sic) stars—ruby, blue, white and yellow—radiating from the center mass, the colors being quite brilliant. The meteor was seen about three seconds before the explosion.

The meteor itself may be only casually interesting, although its colors may be unusual and may hold some interest for students of meteoritics. **What is of interest to** us **is the cloud**, which seems to

have **preceded the meteor instead of following it**, and especially, to have been illuminated or **self-luminous.**

Many are the report of meteors emerging from clouds, as in 1808: "…such a phenomenon as appeared at Siena in 1794, when stones descended, not from a moving meteor, but from a luminous cloud…"

A yellow cloud appeared over Paderborn, from which came a torrential rain and a shower of mussels; the triangular cloud with a tail, whose red nucleus exploded; February 13, 1901, greenish-yellow clouds appeared in France, spreading "intensest darkness"; people froze to death in **Naples** that night.

Naples in Southernmost Italy.

Did something bring in the cold of outer space?

The Journal of Royal Meteorological Society contains some extracts from the Captain's log, of the ship Lady of the Lake, Captain F.W. Banner. On March 22, 1870 position 5° 47' N. Lat., 27° 52' W. Longitude, the crew observed a remarkable cloud in the sky. It **was a cloud with a circular form** which **enclosed a semicircle divided into four parts**, the central dividing line (cord, bar, partition or what?) starting at the center of the circle, and extending far beyond the limits of the structure, then curving backward, like a hook.

NO CLOUD EVER SHAPED BY WIND COULD EVER TAKE THIS SHAPE, NOHOW, IN NATURE

This cloud had geometric shape, and a mechanical complexity. In fact it had an **organic**, or an artificial form.

Thompson says: "In August and September, 1831, there was an anomalous brightness in the sky and small print was visible at midnight—the barometer fell, the sun was of a silvery whiteness and storms were general in Europe and the West Indies."

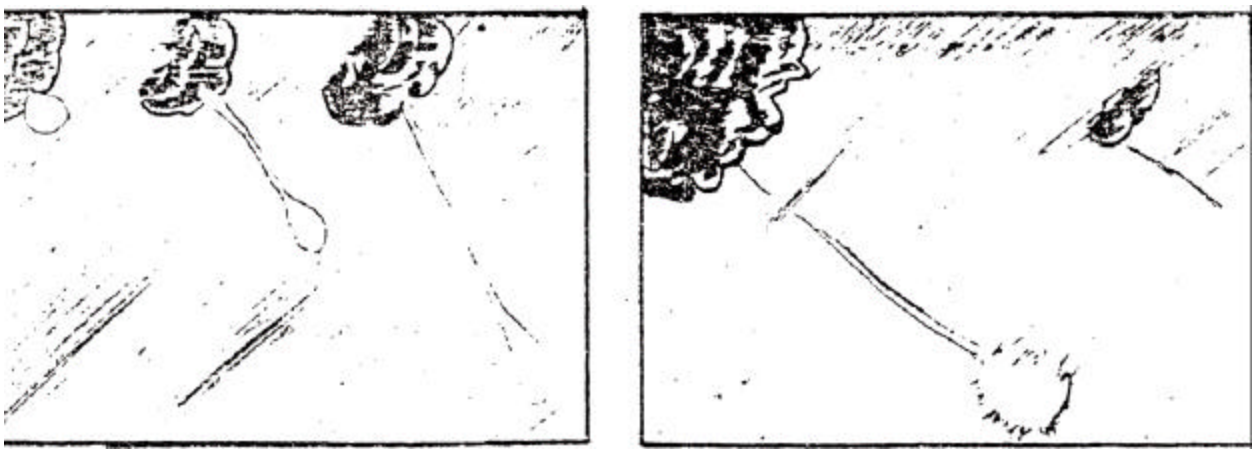
W.S. Forest says: "Citizens were much surprised on the morning of August 13, 1831, by the strange appearance of the sun. The sun's disc seemed on rising, to have changed from its usual golden color to a pale, greenish tent which soon gave way to cerule blue and this to a silvery white. In the afternoon the sun appeared like an immense plane of polished silver and to the naked eye there was exhibited an appearance on the surface termed a black spot. The sun shone with a dull gloomy light, and the atmosphere was moist and heavy."

These two passages, one written in England, the other in Virginia, will serve to indicate the vastness of this condition and nature of it.

Many sources mention frequent cases of darkness and obscuration of the sun. There is, in this darkness and "cold days," the blending of terrestrial and cosmic clouds. We will have other occasions to mention cosmic clouds, in connection with things astronomers have seen in space. For now, it is enough to say that when these clouds contact the earth, we have dust, gas, obscuration, darkness, cold and meteorological disturbances in general; a blending of meteoritic and meteorological conditions.

According to the *Chicago Tribune*, January 7, 1892, a **fiery** blast **shot across the State of Georgia,** on the previous June 5th described as "a black tornado, **filled** with fire." About this time there were earthquake shocks in Italy, approximately the same geographical latitude; people in New York State were watching a glare in the sky and shocks were felt. On June 8th, dust fell from the sky in northern Indiana. Quakes followed around the world for several days. Snow fell in Mobile, which is certainly an indication that the storm may have brought materials from the cold of outer space. There was a tidal

wave in the Atlantic, and there were shocks at Memphis, Tennessee, on June 14. There was a tidal wave in Lake Michigan on June 18. A mass of fire fell from the sky on the 20th, on a town in Massachusetts. At the same time quakes occurred in Italy and France. On the 24th, a great meteor shot over Cape Town. Durango, Mexico had its first rain in four years. Glare in the sky alarmed Germans on the 26th. **In England, people watched a luminous cloud at night**. Quakes were reported in Tasmania and Australia.



Meteor from an organic cloud, seen by J. Plant, F.S.S., Salford, England, November 23, 1877 - - t The first year of the "Incredible Decade."

SMALL BATTLE

Why recite all those things? Why imply a relationship? Because it is a part of our present purpose to indicate that earthquakes and local storms may be engendered by huge masses of space material passing close to the terrestrial surface.

That storm across Georgia, from the phrase, "A black tornado, filled with fire," does not have to be considered extranormal just from that description. Tornadoes are black, and they often involve brilliant and vicious **displays** of electrics. on OUTER EDGES, NOT IN MIDDLE "FILL" It is the concomitants which cause us to wonder. The events which we mentioned spread over a rather long time to be in any way connected with one local storm, but there does seem to be a family resemblance, and there are many such examples. Yet in view of the concomitants, and since we do not have a definite statement that the storm was a twister, the term, tornado, being frequently used loosely, we wonder if there were extensive gravitational irregularities, or if something was made to surge through our lower atmosphere, thereby creating a vehement black cloud, filled with fire, which was only a detail in a world-wide melee. Could we have had the close approach of a vast scattering of space debris, through which the earth passed during a period of several days, and from which we had meteorites, water, dust, cold, etc., and disruption of the normal meteorological processes over most of our globe, not to speak of seismic upheavals on a wide scale?

The instances of apparent association between clouds, meteors, and quakes are many. It seems like stretching things too far to claim that all are merely coincidence.

For four hours, in the wake of the Georgia storm, on January 8, dust fell on northern Indiana—no records of such in between. Research fails to disclose any volcanic action to put dust into the air, and if it did, what of the intervening places? There was no dust bowl in Georgia, and besides this storm, as is general, was moving eastward, not northward. From the western deserts—a long way to carry a heavy fall of dust without dropping noticeable amounts! Could it be that the dust was not from Georgia's tornado, but from the common cause of both?

Time after time it seems that **isolated clouds, of a singular appearance**, approach the earth's surface, **yet remain suspended in flight**. To be sustained by velocity they would have to move with the speed of escape, around six and one-half miles per second, which they obviously are not doing. Since they apparently bring with them a considerable amount of space debris, they are indicated to have celestial origin rather than arising from the earth's surface.

It is our suggestion that some of the singular, or disassociated clouds, contain camouflaged, navigable space contraptions, or they are dirigible space widgets, guided and directed by intelligence.

Again we close with an arresting quotation. Bearing our theories in mind, consider the following contribution from John P. Bessor to *Fate*, March, 1954:

The Battle of the Clouds: On July 28th, 1874, the little community of Saw Mill Run, near Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, met with disaster from a most singular phenomenon. Curious villagers and country folk looked at the sky and beheld something very strange. Over the northeastern horizon, slowly and majestically, sailed a black cloud **ringed with a scarlet belt**; and over the southwest horizon slowly sailed **another black cloud**—with a scarlet belt.

Onward they came towards each other, like two men-of-war approaching the scene of battle. As they drew nearer, they discharged flashes of lighting, and the whole effect was that of an eerie sea battle high in the air.

Nearer and nearer they drew, the violence of the flashes of lightning increasing the closer they approached, until, with one great flash, they collided, and rain fell in torrents. One hundred and fifty persons drowned and it is believed to be the most disastrous flood ever to befall that section of the country.

The L-M Live *in* Water half or More of the time
and it is No Wonder so Much Water fell from two
"Mother Ships" Lemurian & Muanina Ships in Battle,
***no Doubt*.**

Rubbish in Space

These few chapters of observational material show that space contains a much greater amount and variety of material scattered between planets than most of us, including the astronomers, have known. Before true meteoric material (the now well-known iron and stone meteorities) were scientifically accepted there had to be innumerable cases where meteorites were truly seen to fall. These were collected by authoritative witnesses. That these meteorites had been identified by their testure and chemical elements, as well as their external appearance, was **not enough to overcome bigotry**, and **more than one French scientist had to risk his professional standing before the Academy in Paris ere it was accepted by science that iron and stone did fall from the sky**. This **controversy was raging as recently** as one hundred and fifty years ago, in spite of firm demonstrations by some isolated scientific observers one or two hundred years previously, and there were still holdouts until the end of the 19th century. So firm is astronomy in its entrenched dogma, that there are still some respected men who dispute that the Arizona meteor crater is meteoric in origin, or that the Carolina Bays were caused by anything but mysteriously formed whirlpools.

GREAT BOMBARDMENT.

The great Bombardment Announced the end of Mu.

It is not surprising, therefore, when we learn that among the vast amount of material that has fallen from the sky, **sulfur is present**. But it cannot fall from the sky because it isn't in the sky! But it does!

1868: A mass of burning sulfur about the size of a man's fist fell at Pultusk, Poland, on January 30. It fell upon a road and was stomped out by several villagers.

Inflammable objects falling from space may well account for the many reports of falling "fire," from which no tangible debris is found; and since such material is of low specific gravity, its velocity is speedily checked by atmospheric friction, and it can fall slowly, burning the while, and thus, perhaps, give rise to some of the reports of **large appearing** slowly moving **masses of fire**.

S-M SHIPS OR ARKS.

"Burning bituminous matter" fell during a thunderstorm in July, 1681, upon the deck fo the English vessel Albemarle.

The jagged pieces of ice which fell at Orkney, July 24, 1818, had a strong **sulphurous odor**; and also the coke—or what looked like coke—which fell at Mortree, France, April 24, 1887, with which fell a **sulphurous substance**. And. the **enormous "round things"** which **rose from the ocean**, near Victoria: whether we accept that they were superconstructions, or something else, including perhaps imagination, it was reported that they spread a **"stench of sulfur."** If they **smelled like that**, they could not have been too distant, could they?

L-M SHIPS ON UNDER SEA EXPLORATION, STAYED TOO LONG, GATHERED A "COAT" ON SHIELD EDGE. BURNED IT OFF AT SURFACE. ICE GATHERED ON VENUSIAN VOYAGE & BURNED OFF WHEN COMING OUT OF "SHIELD"[2] SAME FOR OTHER MATERIALS BUT THESE "CAUGHT" ON OTHER PLANETS

There was a staggering fall of dust and mud in Europe in February 1903. It seems that southern England was quite a dumping ground, although some scientists thought the dust cam from lanes and byways of the local shires. They hadn't heard that it also covered the Canary Islands. The substance contained a sizable percentage of organic matter, and was, of course, identified by some as sand from the Sahara Desert. It covered Ireland, England, and the Canaries. It was reported on the 27th in Belgium, Holland, Germany, and Austria. Ten million tons fell on south England alone! A vessel reported the stuff falling midway between England and Barbados. It fell in Switzerland, according to *Symons' Meteorological Magazine*, of March, 1903. It fell in Russia. Not only did Australia get covered with this stuff in November 1902; it was falling there again in February – enormously—fifty tons per square mile of red mud.

-RESULT OF L-M'S "HOME ON MOON" being built.

This stuff was variously said to be like brick dust, buff colored, or light brown, chocolate colored and silky to touch, and slightly iridescent, gray; red-rust colored; quite red, yellowish brown, tinged with pink.

I do not believe these falls of mud on earth indicate life in space, unless in very indirect ways, obscurely, and deviously. But there is definitely, here, an indication of dust in the space proximate to the earth, or in orbits intersecting our orbit. It seems more and more inescapable that there are immense amounts of material of almost every fanciable type. That such unaccountable millions of tons of red dust composed of a high percentage of organic matter could be whirled aloft from the Sahara, or any desert,

[2] :"SHIELD" is by Jemi. It is printed over a word, which may be "STASIS", BY Mr. A.

and disseminated to such scattered areas, is an incomprehensibility far more durable than that of orbital existence in space – and we have to assume clouds of something in space to account for the disturbance of comets' tails, and for the temporary disappearance of comets, as for instance the great comet of 1882.

It is therefore, my contention that these falls of mud originate in space, and that such clouds of dust are a normal part of space debris. Whether they come from the explosion producing the asteroids, or from **an atom explosion** which hoisted Mu into the firmament and into eternity, is beyond or ability to ascertain.

NOT ATOMIC, Was sudden, broad inerse snap of stasis.

It is our stand that, if there is such diversity and quantity of material in vicinal space, then there is room, and perhaps sustenance of a sort, for intelligence and intelligently manipulated space ships.

It is equally our contention, that, if all of this dispersed, but tangible, array of assorted items can exist in nearby space, or in orbits intersecting that of the earth, and if **all of these things** (except the conventional iron and stone meteorites) **can have escaped the cognizance of science for such a long time,** even though falling to earth in considerable quantity**, then there is no reason why intelligently operated contrivances cannot also be in the same celestial regions**, and have escaped our attention, in spite of **visiting** our atmosphere **frequently.**

VISITING! They Live here & Work here & build Here but fortunately all undersea.

To list but a few of some of the other materials reported: ashes, sand, algae, iron, gelatinous matter, seeds, red edible stuff, mud, dust, powder, vegetable matter, white substance, soot, coke, charcoal, coal, earthy matter, soft substance, wedge shapes, black rain, colored rain.

Add these things to the stone, ice, water, organic matter, living organisms, gadgets, gold thread, etc., and you have three possible explanations: the surface debris of an exploded planet, the surface debris of a continent blasted off the earth, or the rubbish of a space life of vast extent and unspeakable age; perhaps also, curiosity, a trait of intelligence.

I believe it substantiates a "space life" of some sort. Space being cluttered with such a vast amount of debris, sparsely scattered, but of all types and enormous in the aggregate, it is sufficient to supply many of the needs of space life. You will note that throughout our enumeration of "falls," our theme has been that there seem to be two types of arrivals from outer space: those which are moving in highly elliptical meteoric orbits (true space debris, that is), and those which seem to be, or have been, associated with intelligence. There may well be some overlapping for some of the intelligences may be moving in such orbits, especially if it should develop that some of them are associated with the great comets such as those of 1880-81-82. In its simplest form, then, our idea is that the **least objectionable explanation for these falls is that they come from intelligently operated space craft,** or are in some way formed, guided, or influenced by the operators of such craft. We base this on characteristics of shape, texture, functionality, delimited and localized distribution, timing, repetition, location in places inaccessible to modern man; and on the purely negative deduction that they could not have happened through any commonly accepted chain of casual conditions.

Such a cause or, such a common denominator does appear to exist in the contemplation of space flight or space navigation, to put it more simply, in space life. This appears to be the least improbable causal factor in sight at this time. Also, there appears to be **ample observational proof** for this view since 1947.

I believe that space between the earth and the moon is occupied, however thinly, by large navigable constructions of a rigid nature, whose size may range from one to many miles in diameter, and which have a planetary appearance as seen in telescopes. These sometimes come close to the earth.

There are other bodies which seem to be of a cloudlike nature, which cast shadows on both earth & moon, and; which may range the entire solar system accompanying comets. These also, or **their smaller components**, sometimes approach the earth. All of these objects evince evidences of control by intelligence, as do the more recently sighted UFO's.

Smaller "**scouts or operators**," which are probably inhabitants of, or associates, of the great spherical contraptions, are constantly seen in earth's atmosphere. They are of many types, and in fact **it does seem** that many of them have the ability to change shape. They **seem to be of two sorts: the solid or material,** and **the massless or ethereal**. All exhibit elements of control, but the weightless ones seem more to have the appearance of remote control. Solid types tend to be discoid or to be spherical or spindle shaped, and these shapes, in themselves, **are indicative of intelligent construction**. (Red is **A and B)**

read "YOUR SINS & MINE" for clues "Ethereal types" *Don't change shape*, only change in-stensity or amount of Protective Force-Shield to Ward off extra fast tiny Meteors *or* to change course.

ALSO WARDS-OFF COSMIC RAY PARTICLES

As to What is to come *if* L-M's GET DISGUSTED WITH MANS MISANTHROPIC, NON-PHILOSOPHISM & MATERIALISM. MAN HAS *MANY* BOOKS ON "TRUE-THOUGHT" YET THEY IGNORE THEM, BIBLE, KORAN, ETC. *ANGERS L-M's FEIRCELY* (sic)

Ethereal types Similair to results of Navy expieriments, in force-Field invisibility, 1943 SOLIDS GO THROO THEM, NO HARM TO OCCUPANTS AT ALL.

The following notes appear at the beginning of Part Three.

A force able to propel every Molecule of itself, plus its passengers, at 7500 MPH if used as a force shield to withstand the *impact* of Meteoric Rock groups can also be used to Withstand the Tremendous Pressures of Undersea *Living & Working & building* Especially when this force is used to create new *Tre-mendously* Compacted-tough *Plastics* & *Metals*, out of Which their ship are Made. With *only* these Latter, Undersea Living is easily and Nicely accomplished.

Metal Lamination, Would become feasible, at Last.

PART THREE

Disappearing Ships and Crews

There are two purposes to be served in discussing the disappearances of ships and crews. First, we shall list enough of the available material to show that such phenomena have occurred and, second, we shall see what conclusions can be drawn and how it will serve our space thesis.

Yes, Many Many times. More often than is recorded. Ulysses & crew believed suffered same fate. Nes[3] "Wanderings thus Were Pure invention.

It is well-known sea lore that ships develop a kind of spiritual or psychic entity, or personality, like people, and the strange tale of the *Marie Celeste* illustrates this as few other histories can. After reading the whole story, it cannot be denied that a malignant curse enshrouded this unhappy vessel. The dramatic disappearance of her crew is vital to our present theme, but it is only one incident in the strange experiences of the brigantine.

The following account by Henry S. Galus is from *Fate* (Vol. X, No. 8):

***Marie Celeste* Had an Extra Compass in Captains Cabin**.

On the afternoon of December 4, 1872, the British brigantine, *Dei Gratia*, made a queer discovery, about three hundred miles off the Portuguese coast, which soon tangled seamen, courts and researchers in the hottest controversy in nautical history.

Mate Oliver Deveau had raised his glass to windward and had seen a vessel under short sail, plowing directly toward him. Deveau notified Captain David R. Morehouse, of it, and the skipper "spoke" to the craft in greeting. There was no reply. Sensing some tragedy, Morehouse went abreast the brig to lend it possible aid. Nothing stirred on her deck. Yet this brig had been holding a course **as if guided** by the skill of a salty helmsman!

Deveau and two hands boarded the craft. Official records reveal the baffling sight in his own words: "I found no one on board—I found three and one-half feet of water in the pumps—fore hatch and lazerette hatch both off—**binnacle stove in** – skylight of the cabin was open and raised—**the compass** in the binnacle **was destroyed**. All the Captain's effects had been left – I mean his clothes, furniture, etc. I found the log book in the mate's cabin, on his desk.

CAPT. *ALWAYS* TAKES THE LOG *WHEN* ABONDONING SHIP. LOG MUST BE TAKEN EVEN IF CAPT. IS DEAD. THEY WERE FROZE & "SWIPED"

"There seemed to be **everything left behind** in the cabin **as if left in a hurry**, but everything in its place. I noticed the **impression** in the Captain's bed as **of a child** having lain there."

[3] Clearest Translation.

***NOT* A CHILD, WAS ANOTHER "LITTLE-MAN" OF MU**

GRAVITY IS GREAT STRAIN ON THEM, THEY TIRE EASILY & *MUST* REST OFTEN WHEN ON "TERRA."

EXCEPT UNDERSEAS.

Nine days later, at Gibraltar, Deveau swung the ghost ship into port with the idea of collecting salvage money for the 1,700 barrels of alcohol under her hatches. But the destiny of the *Marie Celeste* was more complicated than that. The Marshal of the Vics Admiralty Court put the brig under arrest. The Queen's Proctor, Frederick S. Flood, asserted that a crew just didn't leave a ship with $80,000 worth of alcohol, to risk their necks on a directionless joy ride. What, then, had Deveau done with the missing crew?

The *Dei Gratia* had also pulled into port. Flood turned suspicious glances toward its hands. Clearly he was determined to find evidence of crime. He entered the *Marie Celeste's* cabin, and his eyes snapped when he uncovered an old Italian sword under the Captain's berth. Flood scrutinized the deck—and found the stains he expected! Dr. J. Patron was summoned to make a chemical test.

"No," he told Flood, "these are not blood stains."

John Austin, the ship surveyor and diver, next examined the brig's underside. He came up dripping to report that there was no indication that the brig had struck anything like a reef which might have caused the crew, fearful of being trapped on board, to abandon ship.

Then, why had the *Marie Celeste* been abandoned? It was learned that her master had been Captain Benjamin S. Briggs. Nine others accompanied him, including his wife and daughter Sophie. Surely Briggs, and old sea master, would have done nothing to endanger his family. The destroyed compass was a clue—but there was no further evidence of violence. Superstitious seamen pedicted:

They break compasses, fearing that we may use *More than one Bar Magnet*, & thus fly *as they*.

A compass "card" Looks EXACTLY Like a FLYING SAUCER from the top, Looking down on a Large Ships binnacle compass card floating in its Liquid.

"You'll never find the answer. An unworldly power cleared the brig's deck." The tribunal scoffed. Ghost ships! In the 19th Century!

Lack of evidence now bogged down the court's hearing of the *Dei Gratia's* salvage claims. Meanwhile, as news of the riddle boiled in the world presses, amazing background facts came to light. Rumor stated that the current tragedy was only a continuation of the misfortunes that dogged the brig since she was first launched in Nova Scotia. Who ever had touched her had suffered disappointments, financial losses, or worse.

As the *Amazon*, in 1861, the 206-ton brig made her maiden voyage under Captain Robert McLellan. He took sick while plying the Bay of Fundy. Ashore, days later, he died. John N. Parker, the next skipper, was only mildly successful with his trips. The owners replaced him with William Thompson. Promptly, the brig cracked up on Cape Breton Island. This broke her owners. Salvors seized the vessel. John Howard Beatty bought and lost her quickly, for as the Sackville, New Brunswick, Tribune reported, the *Amazon* piled up on the Maine coast.

As a condemned hulk she was auctioned off at New York. On November 12, 1868, Richard W. Hains paid $1,750 for her, and it was he who named her *Marie Celeste*. Scarcely ten months later he forfeited the brig for debt. James H. Winchester, her newest proprietor, put the blame for his poor profits

on a swift succession of skippers; however, not until the middle of 1872 did a serious misfortune befall him. A Boston Marshal charged Winchester with fraudulent ownership. The *Marie Celeste* was immediately bonded for $2,600.

Reeling under the blow, Winchester was reedy to let the bedeviled craft go, but fate, through the court, settled in his favor. During ensuing repairs, the ill-fated Benjamin S. Briggs reduced Winchester's costs by purchasing a third interest. And the Captain's wife, Sarah, penned these final words to her mother-in-law, on November 7th, 1872, off Staten Island: "Benje thinks we have a pretty peaceable set (crew) this time, if they continue as they have begun. Can't tell you how smart they are."

Had Captain Briggs conveyed any suspicions of his crew to his wife? One theory of what happened to the *Marie Celeste's* human cargo, with a possible correlation to Sarah Briggs' words, comes from an English author, Laurence J. Keating. In 1929 his book, *The Great Marie Celeste Hoax*, "exposed the famous sea mystery with ruthless truth." Keating charged that: "Mrs. Briggs was a prime irritant on board the *Marie Celeste*; trouble rode most of the voyage; she died and was cast overboard; Captain Briggs disappeared one night from the brig, apparently murdered while most of the men were drunk. Lastly, the *Dei Gratia* had not found the *Marie Celeste*, but a brig named *Julia*—and the whole puzzle was the result of a criminal conspiracy between Captains Morehouse and Briggs, which unfortunately cost the latter his life!"

More than any other theory to date, this astonishing one from Keating has been shouted down. J. Franklin Briggs, nephew of the lost skipper and now living in New Bedford, Massachusetts, has spent many years trying to disprove both Keating's claims and other statements he considers a defamation of the innocent dead. In a privately circulated booklet published August 8, 1944, the surviving Briggs presents a digest of his voluminous investigations which included interviews with H.S. Morehouse, the *Dei Gratia's* Skipper's son; Winchester Noyes, grandson of Captain Winchester; and Mrs. Alice Melason, Mate Oliver Deveau's daughter.

Still, the booklet does not solve the riddle. "We may believe," J.F. Briggs concludes, "that the Captain became suddenly alarmed (Presumably by rough weather), hauled aback the square sails to stop the brig's headway, ordered all hands into the yawl, and temporarily left the ship, which subsequently gathered way and sailed off."

This view is the simplest explanation. But scores of other solutions have been just as sincerely forwarded. There is the letter Proctor Flood wrote to the London Board of Trade on January 22 or 23, 1873: "My own theory, or guess, is that the crew got at the alcohol and in the fury of drunkenness murdered the master, his wife, child, and the chief mate; that they damaged the bows of the vessel with the view of giving it the appearance of having struck on rocks…so as to induce the Master of any vessel which might pick her up to think her not worth saving; and that they did, sometime between November 25, and December 5, escape on board some vessel."

This, so closely paralleling Author Keating's accusations, was countered by a Captain Shufeldt, U.S. Navy, who had examined the *Marie Celeste*: "The damage about the bows of the brig appears to me to amount to nothing more than splinters made in the bending planks,,, neither hurting the ship nor any possible chance the result of intention to do so,"

In *Yachting*, for February, 1940, Dr. Oliver W. Cobb, cousin of Sarah Briggs, wrote: "there may have been leakage, and gas may have accumulated in the hold" because of the effects of temperature changes on the alcohol store. Thus, the *Marie Celeste's* master, fearful of an explosion, got his crew off the craft. Cobb feels that Briggs used a halyard line to hold the brig until it was determined safe for a return aboard. "Probably a fresh northerly wind sprang up, filled the square sails—these people were left in an open boat on the ocean."

A sailor named **Lund**, one of the three who sailed the *Marie Celeste* into Gibraltar claimed that the derelict's "peak halyards were broken and gone." The second seaman, Anderson, "saw ropes hanging over the side." Deveau at the same time testified: "the main peak halyards were broken." He didn't say, "gone." Has Dr. Cobb provided the true solution, then?

No Lazarette Hatch & Stow Hold Hatch *covers* could have been taken off & the body of Ship Ventilated, often done, common practice.

Several researchers suggested that icebergs threatened the brig and, therefore, the fear-stricken crew took flight only to become victims of other icebergs. However, one of the most painstaking historians of the enigma is Charles Eddy Fay, who now lives at Lake Worth, Florida. He went directly to the Navy Department to ask whether icebergs were common in the part of the ocean where the ghost ship was picked up. On December 7, 1940, the hydrographic office told him: "As to the possibility of icebergs being found in the locality—that is highly improbable, due to the long drift, through comparatively warm water, necessary for any ice to reach this vicinity. However, small pieces of ice have been sighted exceptionally far south as follows—up to 1934."

Another more popular assumption saw Captain Briggs and his crew fall prey to merciless pirates. On this one, too, Fay sought government information. A letter dated January 15, 1941, came from the *Naval Archives*: "—concerning the possibility of pirates—records do not reveal that any piratical operations took place as late as 1872 between the Azores and the coast of Portugal."

A swirling flood of conjectures continued to pour forth as to the fate of Captain Briggs and his men and women. Was J. L. Hornibrook any nearer the facts in *Chamber's Journal*, September 17, 1904? "Suddenly a huge octopus rises from the deep, encircles the helmsman. His yells bring every soul running on deck. One by one they are caught by the waving wriggling arms. Then, freighted with its living load, the monster slowly sinks into the deep, leaving no trace of its attack."

Or do you prefer the story from the *Washington Post*, December 19, 1931, quoting a feature published earlier in the *London Daily Express*? An R.E. Greenbough found a document in a floating bottle which told of the crew being kidnapped from the *Marie Celeste* by an undisclosed ship. Kathleen Woodward wrote in the *New York Times Magazine*, October 12, 1924: A man referred to as Triggs, a bo'sun's mate on the *Marie Celeste*, quoted as charging Captain Briggs and crew abandoned ship, boarded a derelict steamer, broke open its safe, stole gold, fled and arrived with a misleading tale at Cadiz.

In the *British Quarterly Review*, July 1931, there appeared a story by Harold T. Wilkins. The *Dei Gratia*, on a predatory mission, purposely waited in the middle of the ocean for the brig, somehow induced the crew to come aboard and slaughtered all hands. In *Nautical Magazine*, July 1922, D.G. Ball tried to wash the log page clear once and for all—"the whole story is just a myth without any foundation of fact." He assured his readers that no such ship had ever existed. He regretted that he must divulge this truth for the controversy fascinated him.

That the *Marie Celeste* did exist is proven **by subsequently recorded voyages after her release** March10, 1873, by the Gibraltar court; **and by the court records themselves**.

EXTANT, STILL

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

Alcohol fumes partly inebriated the Whole Crew & L-Ms WERE OVERHEAD; Drunk men naturally are not Mentally Paralyzed by "Freeze" They seized Lines as they were starting to ascend & Hung on Grimly. Some fell on Deck, L-M SHIP STOPPED M-C & took them all off.

Captain George W. Blatchford, of Wrentham, Massachusetts, finally delivered her alcohol cargo to Genoa, then sailed to Boston. "When she arrived," related Winchester, her owner, "a great many people came to look at her, but as soon as they found out her history they would not touch her." Those

who believed an ominous fate still pursued her were soon presented with a convincing sequel. Here are the actual incidents that followed.

Winchester refused to gamble further on the brig. He managed to get rid of her at an $8,000 loss. The succeeding owner, Captain David Cartwright, according to the *New York World*, January 24, 1886, "sent her to Montevideo with a cargo of lumber. She arrived there minus her deck load, and minus spars and sails. There the Captain got a charter to carry horses. The few delivered alive were too ill to be worth anything. Edgar M. Tuthill (her skipper) obtained a charter to bring freight from Calcutta. On the passage home he was taken sick and died in St. Helena, three weeks later. We next sent her to Africa. She lost $1,000.00."

But the end was near. The *Marie Celeste's* last proprietor, Wesley A. Grove, signed Captain Gillman E. Parker and loaded her with assorted cargo for Port-au Prince, Haiti. The various shippers; first took out insurance for $25,000—and on January 3, 1885, the drunken Parker staggered up to the helmsman, pointing to a clearly visible coral reef.

"Steer hard for her, m'hearty, and do the job real good." The brig crunched viciously, and the grinning skipper shouted all hands below for a lusty drink session, after which all rowed ashore.

In Haiti, someone talked. The plot failed when the insurance companies dug up evidence to indict the bribing shippers. At the trial in Boston, the shippers admitted guilt. Parker escaped conviction, as the judge ordered a new trial on the charge of barratry.

Perhaps the last echo of the *Marie Celeste's* evil fate intervened to cheat justice. For within three months Parker died. Six months later his mate was dead. All the conspiring firms by this time had bankrupted, and one of their members committed suicide.

Thus the log book of the most ill-fated brig in history was closed forever.

There are several facts which we must stress. First, the upper rigging of the ship was slightly damaged, as if **some unusual accident or activity took place there**. Then, the **compass was damaged.** Aside from these, there was no note of disarray or a struggle. Life had departed from the ship instantly, apparently with all the routine activities interrupted and; no preparations made; log book on the table, clothing in order, sails set, galley undisturbed—but no records in the log or anywhere else!

To attempt to postulate motive for space inhabitants kidnapping crews from ships—not to mention isolated individuals to which we shall come momentarily—is in the realm of pure speculation. On the other hand, bearing our two possibilities in mind as to the origin of space contrivances, in either case our space friends would want to know what has happened to us since they left, or what has happened to us since they put us down here. Again, there is always the possibility that **the open seas provide an easy catching place.**

Ought to, the Sea is Natural home of the
Little bastards.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

The Little pricks come-aboard at nite and
go Wandering about the Decks, Scares the
Crews but No Crew Man meeting one, *ever*
***says so*, Just quits drinking.**

In any case, selective transportation requires intelligence. A force acting from the sky and intelligently directed could do some very puzzling things.

Here is another mystery at sea as reported in *Fate Magazine*, June 1954:

SOS, SOS---came the distress call from the Dutch vessel *S.S.Ourang **Medan***, Dutch and British listening posts located the vessel as proceeding through the straits of Malacca. It was early February 1948, the sea calm, the weather clear.

SOS, SOS, again came the frenzied call. After a short silence, "…all officers, including Captain dead, lying in chartroom and on Bridge… probably whole crew dead…"

There followed a series of indecipherable dots and dashes and then came quite clearly: "I die." And after that only an ominous silence.

Rescue ships from Dutch Sumatra and British Malaya rushed to the indicated location of the vessel in distress. They found her only **fifty miles from the position given**. Boats were put over the sides to investigate.

> **"Medan" *was MOVED.* RADIO DIRECTIONALFINDERS ARE TOO ACCURATE & SHIPS TOO SLOW TO MOVE THAT FAR IN *SO LITTLE TIME***. (*Italic emphasis by A)*

When boarding parties reached the *Ourang Medan* they found an eerie sight. There wasn't a living creature on the ship. The captain lay dead on the bridge. The bodies of the other officers sprawled in the wheelhouse, chartroom and wardroom. The faithful "sparks" was slumped in a chair in the radio shack, his hand still on the sending key. The bodies of the hapless crew lay everywhere: in their rooms, in the passageways, on the decks. And on all the dead face was a look of convulsive horror. As a report of the Proceedings of the Merchant Marine Council put it: "their frozen faces were upturned to the sun, the mouths were gaping open and the eyes staring…" Everyone was dead! Even the ship's dog a small terrier, was lifeless, its teeth bared in anger or agony.

> **Navigator trying to Plot Movement of ship?**

But strangely there was no sign of wounds or injuries on any of the bodies.

> **SUFFOCATION? JAMMED "FREEZE" SomebodySlipped-up on this one Must Have been a "Jammed"-Freezer to kill all. Otherwise, the "sparks" would not have got Hit so hard.**

After a quick conference, the would-be rescuers **decided** to put a tow line onto the unlucky vessel and take her into port. But **at that very moment** smoke and flames belched froth from No. 4 hold. The fire was immediately so hot and so widespread that it was impossible to subdue.

> **Telepathic, Eh?**

The boarding parties hurriedly abandoned the doomed vessel and returned to the safety of their own ships. Moments later there was a terrific explosion on the *Ourang Medan* and the ship seemed to leap into the air. Then it settled back and quietly slid beneath the waters. From that day to this, no one has ever been able to determine what happened to this unfortunate ship or to her officers and crew. The fate of the *S.S. Ourang Medan* is another unsolved mystery of the sea.

> **More Work of "The Little-Men" of Mu & their force-ships.**
>
> **Radio Men are Liffle affected by "freezing" when *in* their Shacks *with* sender turned on. Electro Resistance.**

The notable points: sudden death (or disappearance) of people (all life) at a lonely and isolated spot, at sea. No apparent cause assignable. A sudden and unexplained fire, obviously for the purpose of

"destroying the evidence," a fire so suddenly violent and widespread as to defy action, although strong men, familiar with ships, were at hand, prepared for emergencies.

Some meteorologists and astronomers have suggested from time to time that ships and aircraft disappearing at sea may have been struck by meteors. Many writers have expressed the feeling that there is something unexplained in these disappearances without trace, but there is no proven case of an aircraft being struck by a meteor over land. In fact there are a few, if any, proven cases of cars, trucks, trains, buggies, sleighs, mud scows, coal barges, or even buildings, being struck directly by meteors, and considering the millions of these features on a landscape, it seems like stretching and distorting coincidence rather far to blame random meteors for the dispatching of numerous ships and aircraft to oblivion. Especially without trace, and more especially, today with constant radio vigil, without warning or without radio reports from the victims. Can you imagine a ship, struck by meteor big enough to sink it, going down entirely without some debris being scattered about?

As a Sailor, I say, impossible for Meteor.

PRESUME MEN OF "MEDAN" LIKE ALL OTHERS, PILOTS OF AIRCRAFT, AUTOS, SHIPS, ETC. SAW "SUN BLACK-OUT" in Middle fo Day as per "*DEEP* FREEZE." *THIS* WAS AN ATTACK FOR REASONS WHICH I DREAD, IF DONE BY S-MEN, AS HERE SEEMS PROBABLY FROM DESCRIPTION.

The *New York Times*, of June 21, 1921, discusses the disappearances of three U.S. ships, with such a dearth of information that piracy was suggested. Several departments of the U.S. Government were investigating. In February, the *Carol Deering*, a five-masted schooner, had run ashore on the coast of North Carolina, in circumstances startlingly like those of the *Marie Celeste*. The crew had disappeared about the time a meal was to be served. Some bottles were later found with messages, one purporting to be from the Captain and one from the Mate, but they were contradictory, and not to plausible. The *Times* of June 22, 1921, commented on "More Ships Added to the Mystery List," and on June 24 mentioned about a dozen disappearances without a trace.

For something modern, we cite the Washington D.C.Times-Herald, of February 11, 1953"

Colombo, Ceylon, and February 10, **1953**: A slightly damaged motor ship whose five-man crew vanished mysteriously at sea was towed into Colombo today, **still carrying plenty** of food, water and fuel.

Something else MUST HAVE BEEN MISSING.

A Meal had been prepared in the galley, ready for serving. Despite a broken mast, the *Holchu* rode well in the waters with a cargo of rice. The ship normally plies between Andaman and Nicobar Islands, near the route from Colombo to Singapore.

There was no clue as to the fate of the five Asiatic crew men known to have been aboard.

Sighted three days ago, two hundred miles south of Nicobar Islands, the derelict was boarded by crew members of the British freighter, *Ranee.* The British vessel was carrying 7,450 tons of rice from Communist China to Ceylon—the first consignment under a new trade agreement…

Note the pattern again in this modern case. The broken mast is the key. This was a motor ship, and carried no sails (presumably), but in any case was not dependent on sails. **The damage aloft is a common feature of these events** and somehow indicates activity above the ship, or at least above its deck.

Another training ship, British, the *Atlanta,* set sail early in 1880 from Bermuda, with 250 cadets and sailors aboard, and was not heard of again. Two things strike me: the year 1880, a year of unexplained mysteries; and the Bermuda-Caribbean area where mysterious disappearances are many.

The Danish training ship, ***Kobenhoven***, sailed from Montevideo on December 14, 1928, with fifty cadets and sailors aboard…and disappeared. She was a beautiful sight, full-rigged and radiant of strength and dependability—I saw her and photographed her in the harbor of Funchal, Madeira, in November, 1927, when I was aboard the *S.S. Windsor Castle*, en route from Southampton to Capetown, What happened?

May I suggest that **there seems to be a tendency for selectivity toward sailing vessels**? And don't overlook the fact that this strong ship disappeared in the era of wireless and radio. As in the cases of so many airplanes, where radio operators are constantly on duty, this ship not only disappeared with trace, but met a fate so instantaneous that it was impossible to radio for help or to announce impending disaster.

Don't know about *Kobenhoven*, May have sighted Home-ship in the Water, Making ready for ascent & so Many Highly trained eyes could not be permitted tell What they had seen, So! they are on the Greak Ark, Now? Yet feel that *Kobenhoven* is still being Held, *Intact*. Windjammer Sailors are Hard fighters & Prove good sport to the L-Ms Later when pacified, they are good company, Make good *Space Sailors*. Deep Space is Not for every Man, only a few types can take it for Very Long. Most of these type Men *are* Sailors, used to Long Long Voyages.

On October 3, 1902, the German bark, *Freya*, cleared from Manzanillo, on the west coast of Mexico (a tropical pesthole, if ever I saw one), for Punta Arenas (see *Nature*, April 25, 1907). On October 20, she was found at sea, partly dismasted, lying on her side—nobody aboard. The anchor was still hanging from her bow, not fully shipped, a good indication that calamity had struck very soon after she left port. The date on the wall calendar, in the Captain's cabin was October 4. Weather reports showed that there had been only light winds, but upon July 5 there had been an earthquake in Mexico. It does not seem that this quake could have created a tidal wave sufficient to capsize and damage this vessel, **without doing some noteworthy damage along the nearby shores**. Note that she was dismasted—not the type of damage to expect from a tidal wave.

Several weeks after the disappearance of the crew of the *Freya*, another strange sea occurrence was reported. According to the log of the S.S. Fort Salisbury, the second officer, Mr. A. H. Raymer, had, October 28, 1902, in Latitude 50º 31', Longitude 4º 42' W, (which is a few hundred miles off the coast of French Equatorial Africa, in the South Atlantic), been called by the lookout, at 3:05 AM, who reported that there was a huge, dark object, bearing lights, in the sea ahead. Two lights were seen, and the steamer passed a bulk of an estimated length of 500 – 600 feet, which seemed to be slowly sinking. A mechanism of some sort, the observers thought, was making a commotion in the water. Phosphorescence was mentioned, but seems weak to account for two definite lights.

The Captain was interviewed, and said: "I can only say that Mr. Raymer is very earnest on the subject, and has, **together with the lookout and helmsman**, seen something in the water, of a huge nature, as specified."

HOME-SHIP in process of taking on enough ballast to get to The Atlantic "Chain: cities

Now comes a tale in which there seems to be little chance of error or hoax. This is the sort of thing that can be certified, and it happened in the open, among a group of hard-headed people noted for clear thinking and straight-forward speech. Note how typical it is, as to details.

About seven AM, on a bright sunny morning in 1850, the people living in the vicinity of Easton's Beach, near Newport, R.I., rubbed their eyes in disbelief. They saw a large sailing vessel heading hard-in

for shore and disaster. At first they believed it was an optical illusion, but as the vessel drew closer, they heard its weather-beaten sails flapping like shrouds in the stiff breeze, and they shouted: "It's the *Seabird*?" Frantically they tried to wave her, from her course. But the vessel come (sic) on.

Then miraculously, **as though lifted by giant hands**, the vessel majestically berthed herself on the shore, undamaged.

The watchers, most of them God-fearing fishermen, crossed themselves, and like a funeral procession, boarded the ship, their hearts filled with fear of the sight that their eyes might meet. But the only thing they did meet was a friendly mongrel, its tail wagging as it emerged from the shadows of the vessel and followed them about the dock.

A search was made for Captain John Durham and his crew, but no sign of them was found. A look of bewilderment covered the faces of the searchers when they crowded into the small galley and found coffee boiling **on the stove** and an elaborate breakfast laid out on the table. They also found that the crew's quarters smelled strongly of tobacco smoke, but there was no clue to the crew's whereabouts.

Should Have spilled.

Captain Durham was a rugged New Englander, not afraid of the Devil himself, and an excellent seaman. The ship's course was carefully plotted and the navigation instruments all in order. The ship's log lay open, with the last entry neatly noted: "Branton Reef, sighted." Branton Reef, a chain of rock off-shore, is only a couple miles from Newport, where the 300-ton trading boat was scheduled to dock. The *Seabird* had been on a four-month voyage and was just returning from Honduras.

The *Seabird* remained beached on the sand, the object of many curious eyes. There was mu;ch speculation of how, where, when and why the captain and his crew had disappeared—so close to home—without leaving a tangible clue.

The crew of a fishing boat, which returned two hours earlier with a catch, reported hailing the captain from a distance, and said that he waved back at them. They said that the *Seabird* then was on her course for Newport.

One fisherman speculated that a sea monster reached aboard the vessel and swallowed the crew. Friends nodded agreement, for there were reports by reputable seamen of the sightings of strange denizens of the seas, bigger than whales.

FOOD-SHIPS or Home ships

A thorough investigation by a Board of Inquiry failed to shed new light on the mystery. They reported their findings to the Captain's wife, a woman of few words. She glanced up from the Bible she as reading, and with a look of resignation, said: "'Tis the will of the Lord."

The vessel's holds were unloaded. Tropical hardwoods, pitchpine, sacks of coffee and some dyewoods were transported to her designated port of call. Then an attempt was made to refloat the ship—but the *Seabird* dug deeper into the sand.

She was *pushed* in Deeper. *(Italic by Mr. A)*

Soon after, a night gale blew itself into a violent storm. The wind howled around the neck of Rhode Island, kicking up the sea. The sea, in turn, threw mountainous waves at the *Seabird*, lifting her from her sand anchorage and tossing her about.

In the calm of the day that followed, when the sea was gentle again, the fishing folk who lived in the quiet village near Easton's Beach arose early to see what damage the storm had done. They expected to find the *Seabird* pounded to pieces, her debris littering the shore.

Instead, the vessel was gone. Like her ill-fated captain and crew she had **vanished without a trace**, and was never seen or heard of again! (*Fate*, April, 1953)

There are really at least two important events in this story. The disappearance of the crew can be considered one event, or certainly as one distinct phase of one event. The final disappearance of the ship is another, and perhaps the initial beaching of the boat, without damage, is something to be singled out for attention.

The crew must have abandoned the ship—or disappeared—within sight of land. In fact they were within sight of their homeport, and most likely there were fishing boats around in the area. There was no storm to complicate matters. No boat or wreckage came ashore, in spite of the nearness of land. It would be interesting if we could know whether there was damage to masts or rigging.

It seem obvious that the ship was close enough to port so that the last and final alteration in course had been made before the crew disappeared, and this fact would enable us to place a maximum limit on the distance from shore at which an "event" could have occurred. The vessel was spoken to about two hours previously, another check on distance, as well as on time.

It is one thing for a crew, to vanish without a trace; another for a stranded ship to do likewise. The two disappearances, in quick succession, create an improbability of much higher order. For our present purposes we cannot overlook the disappearance of the ship, for some wreckage should have been seen somewhere, but none was reported, although there was a storm of sufficient violence to make an experienced seagoing population expect to find the ship completely demolished.

Experience has taught that the gear, clothes, supplies & comforting atmosphere of The ship FOR its crew are far More Desirable than a "Froze" crew with nothing but fear to guide their actions when they are "unfrozen." Of course if No one is telepathic on board, there is some difficulty; cannot sense friendliness.

The crew disappeared, suddenly, unexpectedly, completely, in daylight within sight of the home port, in good weather, and left the dog. A sailor leaving a ship casually, or leisurely, would not abandon the ship's mascot or pet!

Now—let's peer into the records a bit closer. First the crew. Do you begin to see a pattern? Complete and sudden disappearance, with no time to leave a record of any kind, from a ship under sail, in calm weather. A very high order of selectivity—so high as to demand that purposefulness be considered. A dexterity for segregation beyond the capability of natural forces in one case, much less in a long sequence of events. A disappearance almost impossible to explain except as upward.

But in this case, the disappearance of the crew is but one phase, and there is evidence of continued application of intelligence—from above. As if the force, which abducted the crew, might have some element of compassion for the owners of the cargo, the unfortunate ship was brought carefully to shore, and gently grounded, high on the sand, "miraculously, as if lifted by giant hands." What better description can there be of a ship being levitated by an intelligently directed force from above?

But even that is not all. The ship lay quietly on the beach until the undamaged cargo was unloaded. Then—disappearance. Yes, we know there was a storm, a big one. Yes, storms do queer things. But this storm, with all the delicacy of a watchmaker, removed all of a large ship…hull, spars, rigging, hatchcovers, deck rear, dunnage, small boats—everything. Took it off the beach where experienced salvors could do nothing with it…took it away, completely, suddenly finally—without trace.

Are we to keep on forever attributing this high order of dexterity and selectivity to untutored storms and whirlwinds?

In the disappearances we certainly have an intimation, however slight, of levitation…of something operating from above, with great and decisive power, and suddenness of action. Whatever it may be, it seems to favor isolated places and ships. There is without doubt, an element of our old friend: selectivity,

and perhaps segregation. There is also a suggestion of ruthlessness—selective ruthlessness. There is something of evasion, or secretiveness. All are attributes of intelligence.

The story is told—by C.F. Talman, in *Realm of the Air*—of a ship which was expected to arrive in New York in colonial days. One Sunday afternoon, after a violent storm she was floating **in the air,** every spar so clearly visible that there was no doubt about the identity of the image depicted in the sky. That was the last ever seen of her. Mr. Talman opines that this was a mirage, and that probably she had sprung a leak in the storm, and foundered before she got to port.

> ***Air* too Cleared-up of Dust & etc. *after* Storm**
> **at Sea. Clouds Show Whole convoys Coming**
> **over Horizon, *Not* air. *ESPECIALLY SUCH CLEARED AIR*.**

We're in none to good a position to argue with the learned meteorologist. It may have been a mirage. Could be; but let's peer a bit closer.

First of all, if the ship was seen so clearly, it should have been possible for seaside folk to note whether she was in distress. Nothing was said of that. No wreckage was reported, although she was admittedly close to shore, and we're familiar with that characteristic, too. Disappearance close to port, without a trace: and that's **a repeating tale, along the Atlantic seaboard**. Nothing was said about the image being upside down, which is a usual characteristic of mirages. And if so close as to make **every spar** recognizable, would not this be pretty close for a mirage? And, again, are mirages commonly noted right after a storm? Aren't they more likely in a time of stable weather when stratification of the atmosphere over water and land is possible?

It is entirely within the realm of possibility that this ship was seen in the process of being levitated!

> **Tried that with XXXXX[1] & I on XXXXXXXXXXXXX[1]**
> **and he [1]XXXXXXX[1] was drunk enough to slip out of**
> **the "Freeze" & He Made them know it *in No uncertain***
> ***terms*. They put us down & *Then* unfroze the crew**
> **who to this day Do Not remember of it. *THEY CAN'T*.**
> **(Mr. M. was Chief Mate, "Hatteras" 1943)**
>
> **Perhaps they detected "FIELD" Activity of NAVY**
> **D-E WHICH WAS CLOSE BY, (BEFORE) TESTING**
> **AN *INVISIBILITY* EXPIERIMENTAL "gadget."**

Teleportation or Kidnapping?

As sheer entertainment, little compares with the intrigue of the **countless** reports, verified, of the strange and instantaneous movement of persons from one place to another—distances of many many, miles.

---

[1] Crossed out by Jemi

But to serve our ends, we must look again for selectivity and, if possible, some indication of motive. Perhaps we should ascribe these phenomena to caprices of space inhabitants. On the other hand, there may be an element of error involved. Perhaps, for some inexplicable reasons, the UFO's made choices for capture or kidnapping and **then discovered**, suddenly, **that their choice had not been a wise one.** From what we have already discovered, as to speed of movements and the vast areas which can be covered. It is not at all unlikely that the pickup was made, the error discovered, and the kidnapped set down again—but the UFO has traveled such a great distance that it does not realize that it is not putting the object (person) down in relatively the same place! But if they are that intelligent they'd know they weren't putting the object (person) down in the same place. Perhaps so—but why would they care?

A Malaria infested person, Not Desirable to
L-Ms It is a Deadly fearful Plage to them,
This Man *May* have Had it & also for this reason
was Let go. Quien Sabes?

Bear these thoughts in mind as we review our first case of teleportation.

On the morning of October 25, 1593, relates Don Luis Gonzales Obregon, in Las Calles de Mexico, a soldier suddenly appeared in the Plaza Mayor of Mexico City; a soldier dressed in the uniform of the regiment which at that moment was guarding the walled citadel of Manila, in the Philippine Islands.

With the soldier's strange appearance came the rumor that his Excellency, Gomez Peres Dasmartinas, Governor of the Philippines, was dead. A preposterous rumor, of course! But one that spread through the city like wildfire.

Puzzled as to how the soldier could have traveled more than nine thousand miles without so much as soiling his uniform, the authorities nevertheless jailed him as a deserter from the Philippines regiment.

Weeks passed while the soldier languished in prison; the long slow weeks necessary for new to travel by sailing ship from the Philippines to Acapulco, then by messenger across the sky-high mountains and into the valley of Mexico.

Suddenly, Mexico City was quaking with news. His Excellency, the Governor of the Philippines was dead, murdered by a mutinous Chinese crew off Punta de Azufre shortly after he had left his island home on a military expedition against the Moluccas! Moreover, he had been murdered on the very day the Philippine soldier had appeared in the Plaza of Mexico City.

The Holy Tribunal of the Inquisition took charge of the soldier. He could not tell them how he had been transported from Manila to Mexico. Only that it had been "in less time than it takes a cock to crow." Nor could he tell them how it had come to pass that Mexico City was buzzing with the news of the Governor's death, even before it was known in Manila.

Time of battle, = each inch of the way.

At order of the Holy Tribunal, the soldier was returned to the Philippines for further investigation into the mysterious matter. Irrefutable witnesses came forward to swear that the soldier had been on duty in the Island City on the night of October 24; just as it had been proved beyond doubt that on the following morning he had been apprehended in the Plaza of Mexico City, more than nine thousand miles away.

"Froze" or Semi-Froze, time not recognized.

A Legend? Not according to the records of the chroniclers of the Order of San Augustin and the order of Santo Domingo. Not according to Dr. Antonio de Morga, high justice of the criminal court of the Royal Audiencia of New Spain, in his Sucesos do las Islas Filipinas.

This case of this peripatetic soldier is one where we can tie down both ends of a teleportation

peripatetic my eye, He fought Like a Mad-Man
& could not be taken aboard, so he was Let-down.
They kept his rifle, though

axis, if indeed it is teleportation. We can find unexplained disappearances and appearances, but, offhand, we don't know of others just like this one. And t seems as though there may be several debatable disappearances. But what are you going to do with apports, or appearances? It seems to me that they are a sort of second order phenomenon, unless they can be connected somehow with corresponding disappearances, some place. Shall we settle for a kidnapping by UFO's?

"Help, help! It's got me!" This pitiful plea ending in a piercing scream brought friends running to Oliver Lerch's home, into the bright moonlit night. But he was not to be seen, although they could hear his voice, growing fainter, calling for help from a hundred feet or more above their heads. "Help me, help…"

Oliver Lerch was never seen again on the face of this earth; and thus was recorded one of the most amazing disappearances ever to confront our modern age—the disappearance of a man into thin air!

The facts of the case are clearly written down for everyone to see in the police records of South Bend, Indiana, and have been attested to by level-headed persons not given to delusions, mass hysteria or suggestion. These witnesses include lawyers; Reverend Samuel Mallelieu, the local Methodist minister; and responsible citizens who actually witnessed the weird disappearance.

The impossible happened on the farm of Tom Lerch, Christmas Eve, 1890, in a community of over 100,000 people—by no means an ignorant backwoods settlement filled with limitless superstition.

The Lerch farm stood (and still does) on the outskirts of South Bend, an ordinary farmhouse with the roof sweeping low over the entire building and no attic—no nook or crevice which could conceal a dead body.

Tom Lerch was a stern father who demanded absolute obedience from his two sons; 23 year old Jim, and especially 20 year old Oliver; however, there was nothing to indicate that he was unkind to the boys.

The house was the scene of a merry Christmas party, and young Oliver was in good spirits as he sang with his girl, pretty Lillian Hirach, daughter of a Chicago attorney, a friend of his father's who was also a guest. Jim had his attention also arrested by a young lady whom he later married. Altogether, perhaps twenty people were gathered around the piano, singing hymns and gay holiday songs. Nothing foretold of the grim tragedy which was to come.

Outside, the night was still and quiet. After a day of dimness and snowfall, the winds shifted and the clouds faded away. Now the moon shone down on a countryside charmingly beautiful with glistened snow. Around 10:00, Oliver's mother, who was preparing supper, called to him to fetch some water from the well. He smiled and excused himself from Miss Hirsch. He walked from the living room and put on his coat, cap and gloves. Then he went out into the calm night. That was the last time any person saw him on this earth.

Some minutes later, perhaps five, a horrible cry for help, so terrifying that it could be heard above the singing, split the serenity of the happy occasion. For a second the group in the house froze, looking at each other in astonishment; then with Tom Lerch in the lead they dashed out into the night. The cry sounded again, only this time it was fainter.

"Help, help… It's got me…" Oliver's terror-stricken voice called again, this time from a position above their heads.

With panic in their hearts, some of the people dashed back into the house, while the others continued to call to the voice above their heads which was still moaning: "Help me…Help…" Anxiously they continued to scan the moonlit sky, but there was nothing to be seen; only the voice could be heard: "Help me, help…"

It is highly possible that the glare from the lights of the house may, to a limited extent, have affected the visibility of the would-be rescuers. Then too, the trees and bushes situated near the house may have deflected the apparent direction of the pleading voice. But for almost five minutes the voice continued to call. Sometimes it was loud, then soft, now close at hand, now feeble and far away—but always from the sky, never on the ground level.

Neighbors were called and a frantic search was begun which covered the entire yard, the farm buildings, the roof and chimney of the house, and even the basement. Men got ladders and climbed in trees, poked in the snow, and even lowered the lantern down the well. Oliver could not be found.

At 10:00, the horror of the ghastly situation became all the more apparent when eight or nine people in the yard heard the voice calling to them from above their heads. Once more it uttered a soul-tingling plea for help. After that, the voice was never heard again.

The search was continued with renewed effort, the members not daring to venture an opinion as to what weird, unnatural event was taking place. Then it was noticed the Oliver's tracks had stopped about 225 feet from the house, about half the distance to the well; beyond these tracks the snow was undisturbed. There was no sign of struggle, nothing to indicate that a fracas of nature had occurred. At the end of the tracks, halfway between the house and the well, lay an abandoned bucket. Oliver had left the house with two. Where was the other one?

The search for Oliver continued all night and all the next day, without revealing the slightest clue as to his whereabouts.

Some witnesses disagreed as to the exact words called out by Oliver. Some swore he called "It's got me." Others were just as dogmatic and claimed he screamed: "They've got me!"

Said both, first "Its"when attractor hit Him
& upon sight of L-M on receiving-Port, said
"They"

Different theories were advanced to the effect that an eagle might have carried him off. But who ever heard of an eagle carrying off a grown man? And would an eagle, even if it could do so, hover over the scene for half an hour, holding on to its victim? What about the missing bucket? Would Oliver, thus lifted up into the sky, still retain his hold on a bucket? Would he not drop it and use both hands in the struggle?

For a time it was thought that the grapnel of a balloon had carried off the man. This, however, was quickly disproved. Due to weather conditions no balloon had ascended that day, anywhere.

Another theory holds that Oliver was murdered; that the slayer crept up behind his unsuspecting victim as he went to the well, seizing the bucket and killing him with it. One of the guests at the Lerch farm that night, driven mad with jealousy over the attentions Oliver was giving to Lillian Hirsch, may have

been a amateur ventriloquist. Did he murder Oliver and conceal his body somewhere? If so, how did he manage it? The entire farm was searched. Aided by the darkness, did this guest simulate Olivers' voice and "throw" it into the air, thereby confusing the other startled guests? Or was Oliver Lerch, by some unknown trick of nature, sucked into another dimension? (*Fate*, September, 1950)

As a corollary to the disappearance of Oliver Lerch, a Mr. H.M. Cranmer of Hammersley Fork, Pennsylvania, Wrote a letter tot he editor of *Fate* Magazine which we reproduce in part.

An event similar to the strange disappearance of Oliver Lerch happened here, about twenty-five years earlier. (This would make it around 1865).

It was late in summer when a group of men gathered here for the winter work of cutting pine. Just after dark a dozen men finished their supper at the hotel kept by Uriah Hammersley, and seated themselves on the hotel porch to enjoy their after-dinner smoke.

PO-Great, WANA=FISH (NATICK LINGO)

As they sat talking, they noticed a drunken man—a stranger no one had ever seen before—staggering along the road in front of the hotel. The stranger, cursing to himself as drunks often do, passed the hotel without stopping, and continued down the road. After he had gone about two hundred yards, he suddenly began to shout angrily, "damn you, let me go!"

The men from the hotel porch ran down to the spot, and Kelleys who lived on a farm an equal distance below—came running from the opposite direction. The stranger was nowhere to be seen, but everyone could hear him still shouting, "damn you, let me go," from overhead. His voice got fainter and fainter and finally stopped.

No more drunks will be picked up after Ole Potter, His breath killed two.

The dust in the road was several inches thick and the stranger's boot tracks were plainly visible up to the spot where they abruptly ended. On one side of the road was Kelley's cornfield – no tracks could be found in it. On the other side was a creek forty feet away, with a sandbar thirty feet wide. No tracks were found in the sand.

In the crowd there were men who could track deer or bear all day **on bare ground**, but not one of them could, or even did, find a trace of the missing man!

PO=*Great*, MOLA=*BIRD* (NATICK)

Up to 100 years ago the Indians stoutly maintained that the "thunderbird" – a bird **that could carry a full grown** deer or a man – still existed in the United States. In Maine the Indians called it **"Pomola."**

"**Bird"= Primitive Description**

Sometime after 1500 AD, the Indians killed two "thunderbirds" along the Mississippi River, and carved and painted them, life size, on rocks on the Illinois side. One of the carvings was destroyed by a stone quarry but the other one is still there. The Indians along the upper Mississippi called the bird "Piazzi"—meaning destroyer.

In **translating** "thunderbird" from the Indian languages, the word "eagle" was used. The average American, if he saw a gigantic bird carry off a calf, would be afraid to tell of it, because he would know that no one would believe him. Or, if a pilot saw one, who would believe his story of a bird with a 25 or 30 foot wingspread?

S-M SHIPS-THUNDERBIRDS *or* DISABLED L-M SCOUT ship. Both Made considerable Noise. old type ships Made Much Noise, Heard at a certain WAVE distance.

Ed: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

FATHER, AVIATOR, DIPLOMAT, SAILOR, SOLDIER, & LAWYER & common-Men *ALL* Were Necessary to L-Ms SCRUTINY OF "OUR" *TOO RAPIDLY* GROWING CULTURE.

No Man Wearing Hob-Nail boots or Cleats on shoes has ever been know to have been "stolen". Neither a Man in a *cave*, under earth.

When I am hunting in Woodland: I make My Mind a BLANK & *always* get animals at *Close* range. HOL-M can quiet his Mind thusly. So it is that all animals are silent when they are near.

If a Man Can KEEP His Mind as a Lifeless clod, He *can* escape Detection from the L-Ms *or* S-Ms *in this way*. They "feel" you out, in the country, in Cities Listen to Birds. IF BIRDS DON'T SING, *BE READY*.

FURTHER PROOF, BOOKLET, LAO TZU, "THE WAY OF LIFE" IS "A MENTOR BOOD, BY R.B. BLAKNEY, PAGE 27, bottom.

I am interested in Mr. Cranmer's comments about the Indians and the thunderbird. Has there ever been a better description of a noisily-powered flying machine? And for the word "Piazzi" meaning destroyer, is not that fairly descriptive as well?

See full grown, Mummiefied "Little –Man" in Vault in Casper, Wyo. *DO NOT TOUCH*.

According to the *Chicago Tribune*, of January 5, 1900, there disappeared a young chap named Sherman Church. It seems that Mr. Church was employed in the August Mills in Battle Creek at the time. He was seated in the company's office, when he arose and ran into the mill. He has not been seen since. The mill was almost taken apart by searchers, and the river, woods and country were scoured, but to no avail. Nobody saw Church leave town, nor was there any known reason for his leaving.

What can we make of that one? If somebody (or something) desired to teleport Mr. Church, it seems that the teleportation could just as well have taken him right out of his seat. So—what impelled him to run out of the offices? **Did "something" want him to go outside** where he could be lifted…?

Have resisted this of them. Myself. "Telepathic control" only resisted by another telepath. Darn tough on me, I am only partly telepathic but can "set" call-barriers. If ever see L-M swimming about again, Ill grab him.

This account, from the *London Sunday Express*, September 21, and 28, 1924, bears careful consideration. On July 24, 1924, at a time of Arab hostility, Flight Lieutenant, W.T.Day, and Pilot Officer, D.R.Stewart, were sent from British Headquarters upon an ordinary reconnaissance flight over a desert in

Mesopotamia. According to scheduled flight plan they would not be absent more than a few hours. The men did not return, and they were searched for. The **plane** was **soon** found, **easily spotted** in the desert. Why it should have landed was the problem. "There was some petrol in the tank. There was nothing wrong with the craft. It was, in fact, flown back to the aerodrome." But the men were missing. "So far as can be ascertained, they encountered no meteorological conditions which might have forced them to land." There were no marks to indicate that the **plane** had been shot at.

In the sand around the plane were seen footprints of Day and Stewart. "They were traced, side by side, for some forty yards from the **machine**. Then, as suddenly as if they had come to the brink of a cliff, the marks ended."

The landing of the plane was unaccountable. But, accepting that as a minor mystery, the suggested explanation of the abrupt ending of the footprints was that Day and Stewart had been captured by hostile Bedouins, who had brushed away all trails in the sand, starting from a point forty yards from the plane. But hostile Bedouins could not be thought of brushing indefinitely and a search was made for a renewal of traces.

Airplanes, armored cars, and mounted police searched. Rewards were offered. Tribal patrols searched unceasingly for four days. Nowhere beyond the point in the sand where the tracks ended abruptly were other tracks to be found.

What is there about that account that would lead you to suspect a hoax, a mistake, or an error? I do not see anything, and if there is I would be grateful for being put straight. So far as I can see, these two men really did disappear—at the end of their tracks…in a barren desert. Oliver Lerch disappeared the same way. He left a bucket. **These sturdy Britishers**, two of them, mind you, walking side by side, left a plane. I have known some British airmen. They would not give up without a struggle, unless they **were overpowered instantly** and unexpectedly—or were snatched up off the ground! Have you ever tried to brush tracks out of the sand without leaving more disturbance than you obliterated?

Came to L-M Ship hovering a few feet off ground, LMs wanted to know about their Mode of flight, so brought them aboard. Their Progeny Proved to be of good Stock & are highly regarded undersea Explorers or Soverning "Men".

L-Ms WERE IN STASIS, THUS NOT VISIBLE.

I suggest that these two men were abducted by some levitating power which suddenly pulled them off the ground after compelling them to land and walk away from their plane to a point where they could be levitated without injury to themselves or damage to the plane.

On November 25, 1809, **Benjamin Bathurst**, returning from Vienna, where he had been a representative of the British Government, stopped in the small town of Perleberg, Germany. In the presence of his valet and secretary he **was examining the horses** which were to take his coach further along its way to England. Under observation, he walked around to the other side of the horses—and vanished!

FELT L-M PRESENCE BY PSI, WAS SUSPICIOUS BUT DID NOT KNOW OF WHAT. He was Indignant, became good sport & was well Liked y al L-M's.

Teleportation or kidnapping?

Kaspar Hauser entered the town of Nuremberg, Germany, on Whit-Monday, May 1828. Most accounts agree that he had **poor control of his legs as he walked**. About sixteen or seventeen years

old, he knew nothing at all of the accoutrements of civilized living, even trying to pick up the flame of a candle. Either he **suffered from** almost **complete amnesia**, or practically his entire life had been spent in solitary confinement or **its equivalent**. Nobody knows to this day where Kaspar came from. Many suspect imposture but that doesn't fit the known circumstances. In view of some of our modern knowledge of handling prisoners, he may have been subjected to brain-washing. There may be no connection at all for us, in the advent of **Kaspar Hauser**. We merely mention that he suddenly appeared, full grown, at the gates of Nuremberg, but without mentality enough to have arrived there by his own volition. **??? (Red is A & B)**

Could he have been dropped from a space ship?

Kaspar & No Gravity were a problem. His Legs were weak from Lack of it.

Kaspar could talk a complete Language BUT None of Germanys Best Linguists could define it. He DID Not Lack Mentality, Worried, Had kids Spoke Good "Kraut" after a While.

Not too long ago I had some correspondence with R. DeWitt Miller, author of *Forgotten Mysteries*, and, some time back, the contributor of a long series on the same subject in *Coronet*. **Mr. Miller is devoted to the investigation of all types** of paranormal **events**, and **especially the** sort of **thing we have been discussing here.** When I mentioned Oliver Lerch's case to him, Mr. Miller expressed the opinion that the Lerch story might have had the same origin of that of David Lang. **Certainly we must concede an element of parallelism in the various accounts of sudden disappearances**. Miller sent me the following story, which bore the pencilled note that there is an affidavit and the story is said to be essentially identical with the disposition. This is it:

On September 23, 1880 (again those incredible 1880's), Land, a farmer and prominent land owner living near Gallatin, Tennessee, returned home from a business trip. After greeting his family, he started across an eight-acre field to inspect his blooded horses.

While he was walking across the field his wife and two children saw a buggy approach along the road, and stop. In the buggy were "Judge" Peck, a local attorney, and a friend. When he saw Lang crossing the field, Peck stopped his buggy and signaled the farmer to return to his house.

There, in full view of five persons—Lang's wife and two children, Peck and his friend—Lang vanished in a field which was devoid of trees, boulders, or any sort of cover; a field covered with grass and without caves, bogs, abandoned wells, or other chasms. In fact, a later geological survey showed this entire field was underlayed at a depth of a few feet with a **solid** stratum of limestone.

The press of Tennessee was filled for months with stories about the "Lang Disappearance." There were searches – made immediately following Lang's vanishing and for months afterwards.

Bloodhounds were used. Detectives were called in. The story reached Vienna, and a Dr. Hern stated that: "there are **vortices** (in the so-called physical world) through which a man might vanish." Ambrose Bierce wrote a fictionalized version of the incident. The bloodhounds, the detectives and the theorists produced nothing.

VORTICES, NODES, DEAD SPOTS "traps," = *all the same things*.

The case has been the subject of endless speculation. But no one has ever found a trace of David Lang. And there remains only the affidavit of Lang's daughter and the statements of the the other witnesses that **Lang simply vanished** while crossing an open field.

E=MC HERE APPLIED PROOF SHOWN BY USE OF converter-FEILED (sic) in ACTION? HARMLESS

And so we are faced with the problem of explaining these phenomena. Are they cases in which the psyche of the individual is such that he can control his movement and body in time and space? If so, why does he not return?

I submit that capture by a space contraption, for purposes beyond our ken, is the only truly satisfactory answer. '

Lang did XXX dematieralize (sic) XXXXXXX, swept up *so quick*, XXXXXXXXXXX.[1] The same for Nurd, Plants, Water, Rocks, Etc. "Kaspar" *was* a problem, a result of cross-breeding that for once falied, He had no Gills & grew Much too Large for his *old* environment. He *Had* to be dumped.

L-Ms or LEMURIAN-MUANIANS OR LITTLE-MEN! WERE FORCED BY THEIR SIZE & BY THE FACT OF THEIR GILLS TO DIG DEEP HOLES IN ROCK, WHERE, NOT ONLY COULD TITANIC EDIFICES BE RAISED, WELDED, CUT & SCULPTED TO their Leaders Honor but Where they could Live with GRAVITY. WATER WAS TO FILL THE QUARRY HOLES & WATER IS THE BEST NATURAL GRAVITY NEUTRALIZER KNOWN TO MAMMALS OR FISH. Here they could sleep & Rest & be More acclimated to Gravity, While they also built temples in other terrestrial places,or XXXX-XXXXX XXXXXXXXXXXXXXX[2] so the plan was to have been, S-MEN BROKE IT ALL UP.

[1] Italic and three markouts by Mr. A

[2] Markouts by Mr. B

LEVITATION

It is not within the scope of this book so show that a civilization of single origin covered this planet some tens of thousands of years ago – perhaps hundreds of thousands.

Such a case can be made, **without** too much **difficulty**, in spite of the **anti-Atlantians** who **have** a **phobia against it**; and we **can show** that there have been two – **at least** two—principle waves of civilization. The first can be said, roughly, to be antediluvian and the second postdiluvian, speaking in general terms and putting the Flood, or its equivalent, far enough back in history so as to coincide with the cataclysm which caused it.

All of the centers of civilization and cultural renaissance recognized by present-day anthropologists – India, Peru, Yucatan, Egypt, Babylonia, Greece, China, Rome, England and others – are but the reviving remnants of an empire and civilization which colonized the world a hundred thousand years ago. They area **all** "parts," or nuclei, in one great renaissance which has been taking place for, roughly, six to ten thousand years. In it are some **traces** of the archaic, original, **master culture**, and, perhaps through India, Tibet, Egypt and Middle America, there **are** some **tenuous links** between our immature revival and the parent past. These traces are mostly in the form of stone works, and some glyphs, of a **singular** nature, with a very few written records existing mostly in the Orient, and particularly in southern Asia.

LEFT UNAVOIDABLY IN "GREAT WAR.

Above is true, Jemi They are Written about in Many Writings, So old, as to be Nulified by antiquity.

All of this is anathema to conventional science, archaeology and anthropology especially, for organized science has set up a pattern which covers human growth in broad general terms, and has accepted some rigidly restricting tenets which limit original thinking **and shut out much that is obvious**. While these **general assumptions** of science are largely proven by observation and deduction, they are only proven up to a point. Beyond that point there are the "erratics": little annoying things, events, or artifacts, which stubbornly refuse to fit into the pattern, and which are **sturdily disregarded** in the interest of maintaining a working hypothesis acceptable to science in its current state of thinking.

A THORN IN AN OSTRICHES HEAD, PAINS SO CONTINUALLY THAT IT HIDE IT IN THE SAND, YET IT PAINS IT STILL, ED?

In addition to all this there is the refusal to acknowledge evidence antedating the current subwave which extends back only about three thousand to eight thousand years, and that far only in Egypt and south Asia. **All data** in conflict with this basic assumption are **rejected by definition**.

Many of the so-called erratics **cease to be erratics by** the **simple expedient of admitting** the **real antiquity of human culture** upon the earth. Most of the perpetual squabble over whether Asians settled America, or American colonized Asia, are painlessly dissolved by merely extending the time scale back a few thousand years—and, perhaps, accepting a new working theory to the effect that all present cultures are traceable to a common origin.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

I do Not know much about The Ancient L-M' Colonies.

Aside from written records, to be discussed later, which establish mechanical flight at a remote time of maybe 70,000 to 200,000 years ago, we concern ourselves at the moment only with the gigantic stone masonry which remains in almost all parts of the world. Certain characteristics of some of the stone work **bespeak origin in a single, widespread civilization,** highly developed in some way, but **not mechanical in the same sense as ours of today**. We will presently limit ourselves to one phase only: the massive size and weight of the various monoliths. The manner or **method** of their **carving is material for another report,** but it can be confidently said that the First Civilization had simple and effective **methods of working and moving stone** which are unused today, **and which were more effective than anything which we of the Second Civilization have developed. (red is A & b)**

Cut with *over sized* Measure-Marker

on All-Power, i.e. *cutter*

In **many** areas we find evidence of stone blocks of unbelievable weight being quarried, more or less **casually moved considerable distances**, then **lifted** into place. This common factor connects pre-Inca Peru with Easter Island in a startling and undeniable way, and seems to tie in the Middle East, the Orient, Africa, and maybe Polynesia. Many investigators and thinkers have proposed methods for moving these quarried and dressed blocks. All of the proposals are based on application of such simple

Block & tackle unknown to those peopole (sic)
Mech. Lifting, thusly Not feasable,

(DON'T KNOW)

present day engineering equipment as block-and tackle or sand ramps. The great pyramids, consisting of hundreds of thousands of huge stone blocks, are thought by some to have been erected by thousands of slaves toiling up long ramps of sand to bring these gigantic masses from the Nile. Flotation has been considered. No suggestions have been made **which really fit all cases**, and some of the submissions are so cumbersome and inadequate as to seem ridiculous.

Let's take a look at some of these great monoliths, and note their size, their geographical distributions, and, where possible, something of their age and any other details which stand out.

One such example is that of **Sacsahuaman Fortress**, in the High Andes of Peru, **above** the ancient Inca, and pre-Inca city of Cuzco. There are several eras of civilization represented in the poorly understood archaeological remains at, and near, Cuzco. The latest, aside from the present Spanish-Indian population, are the Inca ruins, most of which were in use at the time of the iniquitous Spanish conquest. The Incas were also **using** some structures which **were inherited** from their predecessors, and this **has led to some confusion**, because practically **all other** ruins in the neighborhood have been **vaguely** and **uncertainly** classified as "pre-Incan."

This is a rather too comprehensive term, and the pre-Inca remains should be divided into those ruins which were immediately pre-Inca, and those which had their creation remote in time; some of which were skillfully constructed before the mountains were raised to their present high level – certainly before glaciation.

The **massive** work of Sacsahuaman seems to be intermediate between the extremely old and the more immediately pre-Inca, and may very well be the initial works **of those people who were last in the area** before the Incas, **and whose works the Incas inherited and used**.

Rope of that day was so crude as to even
be negligible, Lacked strength.

L-M's Build this before deciding to go Under-
sea. They were too Puny to Withstand an attack

such as the one received in the Great Bombard-ment prior to building it.

Inca & Mayan peoples (sic) Did NOT know the use of the Wheel in any shape, form or size, at all. SO THEY COULD *NOT* HAVE MOVED SUCH HUGE MASSES.

Not so, Jemi, one by one they were Lifted & only one face was "matched" at a time, using FORCE-GRIPS OR THE STRONG "FREEZE" SIMPLY MAKING SHIP TO MOVE BACK & FORTH each thusly NOW *appears* to have been ground between each, which, as you know & see could Not work for the force-freeze Doesn't Grip two Huge ones AND RUB them, If two were "Gripped" BOTH Would be forced to Move with the ship, back & forth, *simultaneously*, thus roughness would BE between the two Held. *HOWEVER*, if these *HUGE* STONE BLOCKS WERE FORCE CUT BY FORCE-CUTTERS, THEN, END TO END, SIDE FOR SIDE THEY WOULD "MATCH" PERFECTLY WHEN CUT FROM SAME QUARRY. BOTH WAYS WERE USED. A SHORT-CUT *LATER USED* WAS ROCK-WELDING.

ROCK-WELDING, IE. MOLECULAR-ELECTRONIC-FIELD BLENDING Was used as the signs of the Great War approached as an Emergency speed-up Measure.

The Fortress (so-called by archaeologists, who admit no types of building other than religious, military, and occasionally residential) of Sacsahuaman is on a mountain top overlooking modern Cuzco. It is noteworthy as one of the earliest works showing the construction of walls by grinding and fitting stones, in situ. These walls are also noted for the very large stones which make up the lower of three tiers, and it is these in which we are more interested. (See *Fate*, Vol. II, No. 1, and *American Anthropologist*, 1936.)

The stones making up the corners of the reentrant angles, of this lower tier, appear to be a dark basalt; heavy, hard, and rugged. They are **so large** that **they dwarf a man on horseback** standing beside them. Some of them are about twelve feet square at the base, and eighteen to twenty feet high. They are estimated to **weigh** about **two hundred tons each**. Other stones in the same walls range from small ones of only a few hundred pounds, through continuous gradations up to the largest. All of them were crudely rough quarried, and were then ground into their designated niches in the structure by pushing them back and forth, in situ, until they fitted so closely, completely and accurately that a knife blade cannot be inserted between them. This is a logical and practical shortcut to effective stone fitting which we have not equaled in modern engineering.

(It is interesting to note in passing, however, that we use this method in what is probably our operation of highest accuracy and precision: lens and mirror grinding for astronomical telescopes. No substitute has been found for this system of grinding pieces of glass together to obtain perfect curvature, and there is no basic difference in the two operations.)

However, there are some startling inferences in the size and mass of the stones. To place the largest of these corner stones in place, so that others could be worked to fit them, required tremendous force. It is unimaginable that sufficient hand labor and crude tackle could be massed around them so that they could be moved and handled.

The **intermediate sizes**, some to them weighing ten, twenty, and **forty tons, or more**, had to be picked up, put approximately into place, and pushed back and forth until they ground themselves into their individually fitting contours. This was no mean chore. It is inferred that means of handling must have existed which made it easy, or at any rate possible, to swing these stones up and around, and to shove them to and fro, against terrific friction, **while pinched between their adjacent neighbors**. Such power would tax any modern machine or power plant and require an installation of generating equipment sufficient to run a city. It seems plainly obvious that some other source of power existed.

ALUMINUM, NON-MAGNETIC METAL HAS & IS NOW BEING MADE TO "FLOAT" IN A FORCE-FIELD, 1948 cyclotron, 2000 WATTS. NEW YORK STATE.

It may be that this tremendous power was limited in its application to articles of stone texture only, but this is a little doubtful. Or, perhaps it **was limited to nonmagnetic materials in general**. Such a limitation would have sidetracked the development of a mechanized culture such as ours of this day, and would partly account for the strange fact that almost all relics of the profound past are non-metallic. It does seem possible that the usefulness of that power, whatever it was, may have been limited by its very nature and that it was never developed along industrial lines because of this limitation and even, perhaps, because of a basic difference in values. This writer cannot see his way to believing that such a power was electrical, magnetic, calorific, or strictly mechanical, else it would have led to industrial developments leaving at least a few traces.

The ruins of Baalbek lie to the northeast of Beirut, between the eastern end of the Mediterranean Sea and the northern end of the Syrian Desert. The ruins of Baalbek are the most majestic and the most notable of the earth's ancient structures. They have caused more speculation among scientists generally, and archaeologists in particular, than any other group of ruins on earth, for it is usually conceded that there has never been found a single vestige of information intimating or showing when, or by what people, they were created. I have several descriptions of these ruins before me. The one of all others which, it seems to me, would appeal to the layman, as strongly as to the scientist is Mark Twain's, and as this book is written for the people, his description is the one I have selected to use:

At eleven o'clock our eyes fell upon the walls and columns of Baalbek, a notable ruin, whose history is a sealed book. It has stood there for thousands of years, the wonder and admiration of travelers. Who built it is a question that may never be answered. One thing is sure though, such grandeur of design, and such grace of execution as one sees in the temples of Baalbek, **have not been equaled or even approached in any other work of man's hands that has ever been built within the last twenty centuries.**

The great Temple of the Sun, the Temple of Jupiter, and the several smaller temples are clustered together in the midst of these Syrian villages miserably dirty. They look strange enough in such plebian company. These temples are **built upon massive sub-structures that might support a world almost.** The material used is blocks of stone as **large as an omnibus, very** few of them are smaller than a carpenter's tool chest. These structures are traversed by tunnels of masonry through which a train of cars might pass. With such foundations as these it is little wonder that Baalbek has lasted so long.

The temple of the Sun is nearly 300 feet long and 160 feet wide. It has 54 columns around it, but only six are standing now; the others lie broken at its base, a confused and picturesque mass. Corinthian capitals and entablatures, and six more shapely columns do not exist. These columns and their entablatures together are ninety feet high, **a prodigious altitude for shafts of stone to reach**, and yet one only thinks of their beauty and symmetry when looking at them. The pillars look slender and delicate, the entablatures with their elaborate sculpture look like rich stucco work, but when gazed aloft until your eyes are weary you glance at the great fragments of pillars among which you are not standing and find that they are eight feet thick, and with them lie **beautiful capitals (?)** apparently as large as a small cottage, and also single slabs of stone superbly sculptured that are four or five feet thick and would completely cover the floor of any ordinary parlor.

DON'T KNOW, SURELY NOT WRITING L-Ms WERE & ARE ALL TELE-PATHS

The temple of Jupiter is a smaller ruin than the one I have just been speaking of, and yet it is immense. It is in a tolerable state of preservation. One of nine columns stands almost uninjured. They are 65 feet high and support a sort of porch or roof. This porch roof is composed of tremendous slabs of stone which are so finely sculptured on the undersides that the work looks like fresco from below. One or two of the slabs that lay around me were no larger than those above my head. Within the temple the ornamentation was elaborate and colossal. **What a wonder of architectural beauty and grandeur this edifice must have been when it was new and what a noble picture** it, and its stellar companion, with the chaos of **mighty fragments** scattered around them made in the moonlight.

And yet, these sculptured blocks are trifles in size compared with the rough-hewn stones that form the side verandah, or platform which surrounds the great temple. One stretch of that platform **composed of only three stones** is nearly **300 feet in length**. They are thirteen feet square, two of them are each 64 feet and a third 69 feet long. They are built into the massive wall twenty feet above the ground.

We went to the quarry from whence these stones of Baalbek were taken. It was a quarter of a mile off, down-hill. In a pit lay the mate of the largest stone in the ruins. It lay there just as the giants of the old forgotten time left it when they were called hence; to remain for thousands of years an eloquent rebuke to such as are prone to think slightingly of the men who have lived before them. This enormous block lies there squared and ready for the builder's hands, a **solid mass** 14 feet by 17 feet wide and 70 feet long.

One **could use** **the same words** almost **to describe** the **massive unfinished stone** statues **left in the quarries** on Easter Island. Something sudden terminated the work of Easter Island and Baalbek. I do not say that it was the very same something, but the epoch is certainly of the same order of time and there are elements in common --Easter Island, Peru, Baalbek, Egypt – all with screaming evidence of sudden overwhelming disaster happening to a race of beings who handled rocks weighing hundreds and hundreds of tons.

THEY SHOULD SEE THE "ATLANTIC CHAIN" CITIES GREAT UNDERSEA METROPOLISES.

There is little in Baalbek, Easter Island, Peru, or Egypt to show a gradual development of so advanced a culture or civilization: they, or at least their megalithic stone work, appear **to have been ready-made**, as though a colony was set up directly, complete, a going concern. In Peru it appears that the levitator, or power plant, was lost. In Baalbek it has been shown that the work was never completed and the **largest** stone **still lies in the quarry**. In Easter Island a similar great stone, a statue, still lies in the quarry where it was being sculptured, in a depression from which great power manipulation would be required to move it. In both cases work stopped suddenly, and apparently the "force-lift" **for the 1,200 ton stones** was lost, somehow.

THE BOMBARDMENT, OF WHICH THE EAST COAST SHOWS GOOD SIGNS, even yet. THE GRAND BANK, Circular swamps & etc.

Largest Would Have been cut into regular building sizes or else it Had a twin to be Marched to.

It seems necessary to conclude that **while massive stone work was in progress all over the world** (for we have to include India, Tibet, Polynesia, etc.), sources of power were limited in number, and available only to a few important projects. It seems that such levitators disappeared suddenly and unexpectedly. Where to?

They Went Home.

It is further possible that maybe there was only one machine available which could lift the greatest of weights, and that it was mobile and used first in one part of the world and then another.

What kind of power was this levitation agency? How did it work? If through our crude mechanical principles of ropes, cables, blocks and tackles, how did the ancients get enough rope on a **1,200-ton block** to take the strain of lifting it, and how shift the position of the prime mover? Rocks are not magnetic. Does flotation offer a complete answer for lifting the big ones into place? Sand ramps do not seem suitable.

THESE PROVED INADEQUETE

THEORY.

TRUE. "PRIME-MOVER" Caused GRAV. NODE OR MINOR STRENETH (sic) or Major. thus Gravity didn't exist upon these stones.

I have used the word "levitation" as a substitute for power or force. I have suggested that flying saucers used **some means of reacting with the gravitational field**. In this way they could apply accelerations or lifting forces **to all particles of a body, inside and outside, simultaneously**, and not through external force applied by pressure, or harness, to the surface only. I believe that **this** same, **or a similar force** was used to move stones in very ancient times. I believe the source of this lifting or levitating power was lost suddenly.

All Comes under one Principle, just applied diff.

We believe, in short, that this lifting engine was a space ship, probably of vast proportions; that it brought colonists to various parts of the earth, probably from other terrestrial areas; and that it supplied the heavy lift power for erecting great stone works; and that it was suddenly destroyed or **taken away**. Such a hypothesis **would** underwrite all of the movements of stone over which archaeologists and engineers have puzzled.

We believe Mu to have existed as a world civilization, **hoary with age**, replete with knowledge or astronomy and physics in an almost unbelievably remote past; that this entire civilization was wiped out with great, and sudden, violence, leaving very little trace. Whatever we have of culture development today

Yet, Mu *has* Left some traces, artifacts and Highly civilized remnants, *Undersea.* *(italics by Mr. A)*

is but the thin, reviving remnants of that era, propagated by a **little** handful of **people** who happened to be in sheltered positions when the devastation struck. Earthquakes have been most usually cited as probable causes for such catastrophes, but they do not explain all the concomitant details. **One thing does, and is logical**. Collision from outside bodies striking the earth. It is the only common denominator for our broadest and most basic problems of anthropology.

Heh: He's hit it.

Let us merely state that our tenet, and the point of inserting this discussion into the general concept, is to indicate that **there was long ago a very advanced culture**, which could and **almost certainly did**, invent a means of levitation and space mobility; that this world-wide culture was cataclysmically and instantly wiped out all over the world. Remnants of humanity escaped, and it is our suggestion that at least one space ship was afloat at the time and escaped the disaster and sired a race

of space dwellers which has ever after used the neutral at the limit of the earth's sphere of influence as an abode or headquarters.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

Had Farraday concerned *Himself* With The Mag. FIELD SURROUNDING HIS Elec. current, Man to-day would already Have reached the outermost Parts of our Galaxy.

There, Jemi, Was given the results of What Would have been possible had Dr. Farraday Done as suggested other page. The S-Ms & L-Ms FOUGHT *USING* SMALL ASTEROIDS.

We have no inclination to fare-forth to other things & other Ways. our is Way of Life, time-proven & Happy. We have nothing, own Nothing, except our Music & our Philosophy & are Happy.

Any action has a re=action, thus if Something *pulls* upward, it also pushes downward. Such a trimendous (sic) force could cause SHEETS of Diamonds *to be Made in saucer-shape, ??* (to divert cosmic ? rays.?[1]) It could cause[2] new Metals to be Made, or tougher ones.

(*HELP* DIVERT RAYS & ETC.)

It could cause earth to become rock with in a few Minutes, It could change a Whole

World or

Civilization just by its potential.

AND IT DOES, TOO

[1] Italics and Question marks by Jemi.

[2] Italics and the insertion of parentheses by Mr. A

Marks and "Footprints"

The following series of oddities is perhaps the most conclusive of all. Because I wish to develop *"The Devil's Footprints"* fully, I shall not go into detail about the innumerable marks and depressions in stone. However, after the footprints study, and a mention of the stone depressions and what they are, I believe the case for the UFO's will be clearly in your mind. What other source but something from space could account for these erratics?

The story of *"The Devil's Footprints"* is classic. It was told as follows, by Frank W. Lane, In *Fate*, April-May, 1952 – The material being largely the product of research by Rupert Gould as printed in *Stargazer Folks* and elsewhere:

On the night of Thursday, February 7, 1855, there was a fall of snow over South Devon, in southwest England. The next morning, as men and women went about their business, they discovered, imprinted in the virgin snow, a series of tracks unlike any seen before. At first glance they looked like the impression made by a donkey's hoof, measuring four by two and three-quarter inches. But there, all resemblance between the imprints on the snow and the sort of tracks left by a workaday donkey, ends. And the real mystery begins.

It was found that the hoof marks ran in a single line, and also that the distance between one impression and the next, as carefully measured, was undeviatingly eight and one-half inches. to appreciate properly the imprints in the snow that greeted the incredulous eyes of the Devonians, that Friday morning, you must try to imagine a line of marks such as would be made by a creature with only one leg, terminating a hoof, which proceeded by a series of jumps, always mathematically eight and one-half inches apart.

MARKER: IDELING (sic)

This was only the beginning of the puzzles associated with this mystery written in the snow. As word of the strange markings spread and men began to look more closely at them, and to trace their path across the whitened landscape, they discovered further inexplicable details.

Whereas the tracks of cats, dogs, horses, rabbits, birds and so forth, looked much as tracks always do in the snow – some clearly defined, others smudged, some cutting the snow deeply, others merely leaving a light imprint – these mystery markings were everywhere utterly clear and distinct. One investigator-on–the-spot said: "This particular mark removed the snow wherever it appeared, clear, as if cut with a diamond, or branded with a hot iron – so closely, even, that the raising in the centre of the frog of each print could be plainly seen." Some witnesses claimed to have seen traces of toe or claw marks at the edges of the impressions.

MARKER IS LIKE LOW POWER STONE CUTTER

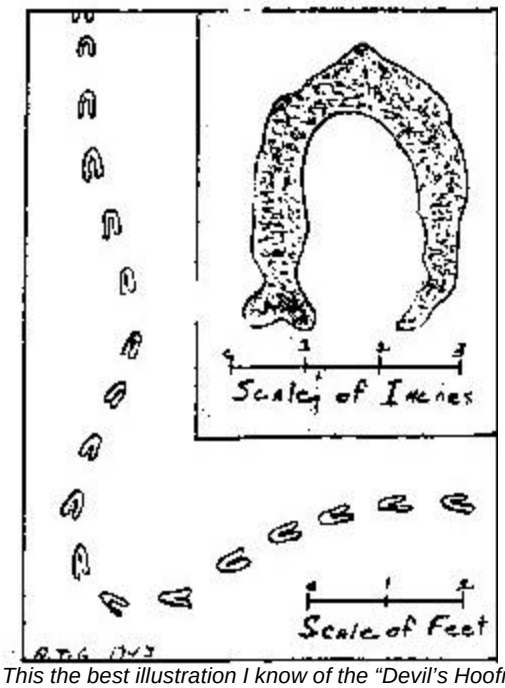
The tracks were not confined to the ground. Two men following the tracks for three and half-hours ("under gooseberry bushes and espaliered fruit trees") suddenly lost all trace of it. They cast around and eventually picked up the tracks in the last place they thought of looking for them: on the roofs of some houses!

The witnesses already quoted said that the marks could be traced "in some instances, over the roofs of houses, and hayricks, and very high walls (one fourteen feet high), without displacing the snow on either side, or altering the distance between the feet; and passing on as if the wall had not been an impediment. The gardens with high fences or walls and gates locked, were equally visited as those open and unprotected."

Another investigator said that he traced the prints across a field up to a hayrick. The surface of the rick was wholly free from the marks but on the opposite side, in a direction corresponding exactly with the track already traced, they began again. A similar occurrence was noted when a wall intervened in the path of the track.

As high walls, hayricks, and houses were no obstacle to the onward march of these tracks, so neither was a great stretch of water. The hoof marks were traced to the bank of the estuary of the river Exe, and then picked up again on the opposite bank – across two miles of salt water.

The meanderings of the track ranged from Bicton in the east to Totnes in the west, a distance of about twenty miles as the crow flies. But the actual mileage covered by the track, as measured by the distance between hamlets, villages, towns and so forth, where the marks were seen was very much more. As one Devonian who was greatly interested in the occurrence wrote: "When we consider the distance that must have been gone over to have left these marks – I may say in almost every garden, on doorsteps, through extensive woods of Luscombe, upon commons, in enclosures and farms – the actual progress must have exceeded one hundred miles."



This the best illustration I know of the "Devil's Hoofmarks."

It did not take long for these markings in the snow to become the talk of all Devon. It was not so difficult to step in those days for a village rustic, pondering the inexplicable nature of the markings and their apparent **ability to go wherever they would**, and remembering their shape, to wonder fearfully if perhaps the Devil himself had been abroad in the land.

This fear was mentioned in a letter from the Reverend G.M. Musgrave, a local clergyman who was keenly interested in the whole matter, and who wrote of "the state of the public mind of the villagers, the laborers, their wives and children, and old crones, and the trembling old men, dreading to stir out after sunset, or to go half a mile into lanes or byways on a call or message, under the conviction that this was the Devil's walk, and no other, and that it was wicked to trifle with such a manifest proof of the Great Enemy's presence…"

What of the explanation of these prints in the snow? First, review what has to be explained; an exceptionally clearly defined single line of equally spaced marks, which was found on the tops of houses, walls and in enclosed gardens, on both sides of an estuary two miles wide and at places twenty miles

distant and which, at a conservative estimate, had a total length (allowing for doubling and meandering) of a hundred miles.

All sorts of well-known creatures were suggested as the makers of the tracks: swans, cranes, bustards, otters, rats, hare, and badgers. It is hardly necessary to add that none of these creatures provide even a plausible explanation. Birds do not leave hoof marks, nor make tracks that remove snow as clearly as if "branded with a hot iron". If a mammal is chosen as the track maker, then how are we to explain the imprints across the roofs of houses and on tops of high walls, let alone the line of single, exactly spaced imprints?

One ingenious correspondent suggested that a hopping toad was the mischief-maker! The hopping would explain the single track, and the imprint of the toad's belly and claws the mark…

There is one single argument against all explanations of the tracks being made by any common animal or bird. The tracks left by such creatures were perfectly familiar to the inhabitants of Devon and if such tracks had been anything like those made by well-known animals nobody would have thought twice about it.

Two unfamiliar species of animals were suggested as possible makers of the tracks: Two kangaroos and a raccoon, these allegedly having escaped from near-by captivity. But simple arithmetic is fatal to the hypothesis that one or even two animals could have made all the tracks. To make a line of marks eight and one-half inches apart and one hundred miles long, the two kangaroos would have had to make an average of six steps a second for some twelve hours nonstop, and the raccoon over a dozen steps.

It is at once obvious that these hoof-prints could not have been caused by an animal. The single prints, in straight line, exactly in front of each other, confute this idea without the necessity of further data or analysis. But there is further data. The tracks extended a hundred miles or more crossed an inlet of the sea without deviation or interruption, passed over and on buildings and walls. Yet, we are asked, by explainers, most of whom were nowhere near the site, to believe that this was done by a badger or a kangaroo?

In the descriptions there are two or three notations which are very significant. First, let's take the rectilinear nature of the line of tracks: no animal walks in such a manner, nor for such a distance, nor over housetops. So – something passed over the country in the air, making contact with the ground as it went. No animal walks by putting one foot directly in front of the other, so these holes in the snow were made with mechanical precision by something mechanical. Therefore let's make the broad conclusion that something, **mechanical** passed over Devon in the air.

Mechanical, Not Precisely but slightly.

"F" for Force

Some acute observers noted that the prints did not look like normal hoof marks, wherein the snow is packed into the bottom of the track, but that it looked as if the snow had been removed. Also, someone noticed that the tracks looked more as if they **had been burned into the snow**. Again, it "F" could not be an animal. So – lets's broaden our conclusion to include, not only something mechanical passing over Devonshire, but also, that it reached out in some way and made surface contact at regular intervals.

Something reached, projected or emanated from this contrivance at regular times, and because the contraption was moving with uniform velocity this instrumentality of contact made regularly spaced marks.

"On the Head!"

Now we note that this thing did not pack snow into the tracks, but **perhaps removed it instead**, so it was not pressure, and therefore, not a mechanical contact. On the other hand, it appears to have been hot, or warm, or at the very least to have conveyed **energy convertible into heat**. "F" Whatever the method or manner, it conveyed enough energy to melt or remove part of the snow, almost instantaneously. What have we left to consider? Anything besides a ray of some sort? It doesn't seem too likely.

We have advocated levitation as an explanation before; thus the levitation of a few snow crystals in trivial as compared to the kicking, squirming body of Oliver Lerch, or the 1,200-ton blocks at Baalbek.

So we have, by elimination, a mechanical device passing through the air, emitting some sort of ray of heat or energy, at regular intervals of time and distance. What sort of device, and why the rays?

Close, Someone is telepathing to his infierior (sic) receivor.

I suggest that this ray **was something in the nature of radar**, and that it either adjusted the distance of the machine from the ground or acted as a repulsion medium to sustain the machine in flight. The slight pressure in the prints could hardly account for the latter, so let's guess that the rays were for guidance or navigational purposes to maintain the ship at a uniform distance from the ground or prevent too close an approach to the surface.

Tests *should show* emanations, else the "Measurer" was only Idleing his "Marker."

or unless, Now Elec. Power is close-by there.

And from the *London Times*, March 14, 1840, fifteen years before the event of the "Devil's Footprints." Among the high mountains of the elevated district where Glenorchy, Glenlyon, and Glenochay are contiguous, there have been found several times, upon the snow, the tracks of an animal seemingly unknown at present, in Scotland. The prints in every respect resemble that of a foal of considerable size, although perhaps the sole seems a little stronger and not so round. No one has obtained a glimpse of this creature, only, it is remarked that, from the depth to which the feet sank in the snow, it must be a beast of considerable size. It has been observed also that its walk is not like that of the generality of quadrupeds, but more like the bounding or leaping of a horse when scared or pursued. It is not only in one locality that the tracks have been met with, but through a range of at least twelve miles.

Here, once again, is the element of localization which we can associate with intelligence.

"Cup Marks" are strings of cuplike impressions in rocks. Sometimes there are rings around them and sometimes they have only semicircles. They have been found in America, Great Britain, France, Algeria, Palestine, almost everywhere except the far north. In China, cliffs are dotted with them, and in Italy, Spain, and India they occur in enormous numbers.

There are twenty-four cups, varying from one and a half to three inches in diameter, arranged approximately in straight lines, on the Witches' Stone near Ratho, Scotland. It is explained locally that these are tracks of a dog's feet (in stone?). In Inverness-shire the marks are called "Fairies' Footmarks." In Norway **and other places** they are said to be horses' hoof prints. The rocks of Clare, in Ireland, have prints supposed to have been left by a mythical cow.

Ed: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

Picture coming to Strange unexplored, never seen planet, Not knew Photography or cartography SO *Must* Mark it, *indelibly*, No?

On U.S. 40, between Dayton, Ohio, and Richmond, Indiana, there is a popular roadside stop where tourists pull over to look at the footprints in a large stone by the side of the road.

Now, in Devonshire, our space-navigating device seemed to be cruising around, probably slowly and silently, using a weak ray, maybe a sort of beamed radar, to maintain its elevation above the ground. But, where the cup marks appear in stone we get the impression that a more powerful ray was used, capable of disintegrating, or fusing, rocks; and that the flying gimmick was hovering over a small area. **This hovering would account for the cupmarks appearing in clusters** within which there were rows of cup marks in straight lines, since the hovering machine would be certain to drift back and forth, due to air currents and other disturbances while using its powerful ray to maintain position over a certain area or object.

GRAV. FIELD NOT STEADY, CAUSES WOBBLES

I am reminded, here, of the pigs somewhere in the French-Canadian wilderness which were killed by circular burned spots of totally unexplained origin.

Some hints might be gained by studying all of the places where cup marks are found, and determining whether these locales have any prominent features in common, such as might attract a space flyer, either for a particular interest, or merely for anchoring. For levitating stone, perhaps.

One must have SOME permanent way of finding ones way to lifes necessitys & pleasures.

So, we premise that the cupmarks, like the Devil's footprints, the prints of Glenorchy, and those in the Chinese Palace-compound, and who knows, perhaps those of the legendary "abominable snow man" of the Himalayas, were all made by somewhat similar types of rays from space navigating contrivances.

SNOW MAN CAPTURED, OCT. 1954

It would appear that any resemblance to Morse Codes, or codes in general, or any other form of communication is purely coincidental, and is merely personal interpretation of the obviously mechanical nature of the distribution of the marks, be they cups in stone or depressions in snow. It is the establishment of the mechanical nature of these manifestations and their consequent subordination to intelligent control, which is our first concern. The whys and wherefores must be secondary issues.

Have you heard of the **vitrified** forts of Scotland, Ireland, Brittany and Bohemia? There **are a number** of very ancient forts, many on hilltops, which are scattered through those areas. They are

From the below he *may have surmised* that there Were two types of people, at War with one another. *Can't say for sure*.

unique, because a part of the stone work **is vitrified**. It isn't clear as to just what enemies caused the building of the forts—whether they were built by invaders or defenders, or already in place prior to an invasion. **These forts** seem almost to **surround England**, and since some are in Brittany and Bohemia, one wonders if England at that time **was connected with the mainland of Europe.**

TRUE.

Archaeologists postulate that these **incredibly ancient people** built vast fires to vitrify the stone forts and cement them together by melting them externally. **Even** where there was not a good supply of wood to burn; but then, that was a long time ago and there might, then, have been wood, coal, oil, or something. But a Miss Russel, in the *Journal of the B.A.A.*, has pointed out that single stones, much less long walls, are not vitrified when large houses are burned to the ground, or where the stones are otherwise **cooked** by so-called natural means.

Force Cutter, full blast.

But the singular fact of these vitrified forts is that the stones are **vitrified in streaks**, as **if special blasts** had struck or played upon them

Bdra! He's hit it, on the nose!

Lightning? At any rate, once (or more) upon a time something melted, **in streaks**, the stones of forts on the hills of Scotland, Ireland, Brittany and Bohemia. Whoever, or whatever did it, they, or it, had some handy way of getting around. Lightning has a way of hitting things **prominently** displayed on hilltops. But some of the vitrified forts are inconspicuously located and yet didn't escape; their walls, too, are vitrified **in streaks**. But, on hills and mountains all over the rest of the world are remains of forts which have not been vitrified. I have in mind Sacsahuaman, on top of the Andes at Cuzco.

ANCIENTS WARS. TOO WERE THE CAUSE, BY "F" CUTTER

In this instance of forts partially **vitrified, in streaks**, we have one of the most outstanding examples of selection and segregation –attributed to intelligence. Not only do we have forts of a certain circumscribed area picked out for attention, but we have such a high degree of concentration and direction that only streaks in **certain forts** are vitrified.

Boe da lograni tash na Stendic og daeli mork
"Pielidismacraeli!" Stones cut with "P" at
full power of "F" *cutter*.

***UPON REVIEW*; I BELIEVE THIS Man MAYBE being**
"Illuminated" Telepathically. *Somebody*, L-M
or S-M *is Making* him write about that which
he "sees" in his head & has checked upon to
Verify. THAT somebody wants to come out of
Hiding. *Not be Misunderstood*, *or* feared but
Wants to co-exist in a Very Peacefu fashion.
OR IS PLANNING ON MAKING THE GAYORI THEIR
***ALLIES*, FOR WAR. IF THIS IS SO THEN ONLY THE**
S-M;S WOULD WANT WAR. THEY ARE IMMATURE &
***only* they are SO immature as to desire War.**
One planet in the Galaxy Means *Nothing* to
them, all they foster is "War as a Game to
alleviate their boredomish, unplayful, un-
happy existence. THE NON-PHILOSOPHISM OF
HUMAN & S-M = DESTRUCTION.

Disappearing Planes

We shall not devote too much time to disappearing planes as it is a modern phenomenon, by definition, and we are building our Case for the UFOs from a wealth of historical information. However, inasmuch as these disappearances relate, directly, to our thesis of intelligence in space, space contrivances which kidnap human beings, either for study, food, or experiments of a nature beyond our ability to grasp, they bear mention.

FOR PROGENATION.

I should like to suggest, first, that a continuous flow of conversation, via a special frequency, be recorded automatically from all large craft in the air. There could be a series of Air Force and Civil Aeronautics Administrations base stations which could record this conversation. It becomes increasingly unthinkable that so many aircraft are falling from the air without time for a single crewmember to shout something, however brief, into the microphone so that we shall know what is happening to them. If we could establish this system of running conversation we might get some clues as to the destroyers of these ships and the captors of their crews and passengers.

Also, I believe in all fairness that we must admit the ease with which one can overemphasize mysterious disappearances of planes over water. Whereas I, personally, will not accept, categorically, mechanical failure which makes it impossible for the crew to report, and which means the ship is lost forever, its last moments with it, I will admit we cannot afford to draw too many conclusions from these incidents.

But, contrast the sea disappearances with the C-46 **with thirty-two marines aboard**. The **wreckage was found – but never any bodies!**

GOD HELPTHE L-Ms, THE MARINES HAVE LANDED

Also, at half past ten o'clock on the morning of March 7, 1922, Flying Officer B. Holding set out from an aerodrome near Chester, England, on what was intended to be a short flight in Wales, turning back and heading in the direction of Chester. He was never seen again. Holding disappeared far from the sea, and he disappeared over a densely populated land of highly civilized people!

The **unexplained and unannounced** crashes of planes over land are numbered in dozens, but these are crashes – not disappearances. Nevertheless there is a strong element of mystery in many of them. **It is the rule**, and **not the exception that the major catastrophes come without warning. Whatever causes the crash seems to cut off communication simultaneously,** for seldom is there any warning from the radio: only routine reports, and then – silence, until the wreckage is found with no survivors, **and** in **at least one case, no bodies!**

We cannot, with reasonable certainty, say that aircraft are attacked wantonly, promiscuously, or indiscriminately by a malicious enemy, for if that was true, the attacks would almost certainly be more universal, and we believe, more selective. Yet, it is most difficult to overlook the possibility that some sort of intelligence, coupled with the necessary forces, has destroyed some of our aircraft while simultaneously muting the occupants thereof.

It is **one thing for** a **solitary plane to vanish**, from above the sea, without trace, and without signals being heard. It is **quite another thing** for **five military planes**, flying as a group, all with full crew and radio, to pass silently and irrevocably **from human ken**.

There were fourteen men aboard those bombers. As the hours passed, anxious buddies back at the base and in other aircraft out on patrol listened hopefully on the radio channels. But no word came to tell of the whereabouts of the missing flyers.

The last routine message, received at 5:25 that gusty afternoon, had given the position of the flight as seventy-five miles northeast of Banana River (Florida) Naval Station, or about two hundred miles northeast of Miami.

The hands of the clock crawled around to the point where the bombers' fuel supply would be exhausted. Still no word. The Navy swung into action. Search planes and ships were ordered out to cover the entire area from Key West northward to Jacksonville and two hundred and fifty miles out to sea.

For the benefit of the public the Navy pointed out tersely that the Avenger bomber was noted for its buoyancy. In similar emergencies such planes had **always remained afloat long enough for the crews to launch the life rafts, often "without getting their feet wet."**

One of the first rescue craft to roar off the water in search of the missing fliers was a Navy PBM, a huge Martin Mariner bomber with a crew of thirteen that had been trained for just such work.

This plane, too, disappeared without trace!

Interest in the disappearances now reached the stage where it dominated discussion in the streets. How could five bombers, each with its own crew and radio facilities, disappear from the face of the earth without even flashing a single message of explanation? It was hardly logical to assume that the planes had collided in mid-air, killing all the crewmembers simultaneously.

And, even were such a weird explanation acceptable, how about the PBM?

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

L-M INVESTIGATIONS OF TECHNICAL LEAPS & BOUNDS OF THE GAYORI IN PAST TEN YEARS BEING DISTORTED TO SHOW CAUSE FOR HOSTILE INTENT & *THIS NOT SO.* CURIOSITY IS SIGN OF INTELLIGENCE & L-Ms HAVE THIS IN *OVER-ABUNDANCE*.

Sorry to Say L-Ms REGARD HUMANS JUST AS HUMANS *HAVE CHOSEN TO BE REGARDED*; AS JUST SO MUCH VALUELESS *ANIMAL FORMS* OF LIFE, SWORN TO DESTRUCTIVENESS N& TO FOLLOW THOSE PASSIONS THAT NEGATE IDEA OF HIGHER LIFE-FORM-POSSIBLITY TO THEM.

In July 1952, a strange silvery object was seen high in the sky over San Anselmo, California, and five minutes later there was an unexplained crash of a quite airworthy plane, five miles away, and the Navy has been unable to account for it.

In March 1952, a case-hardened British fighter pilot, Wing Commander J. Baldwin, was flying a jet plane for meteorological and reconnaissance purposes over Korea. He flew into a cloud – and didn't come out again. The mystery was never solved. (About this time, a U.S. Carrier in Korean waters had sighted a strange object in the skies.)

On June 9, 1952, British Air Vice-Marshal Aitcherly set out in an amply fueled meteor jet from Suez to Cyprus, three hundred miles away. A radio signal was received from him three minutes arter take-off. Nothing more has been seen or heard of him. "Without a trace."

February 2, 1953: A York transport aircraft, with thirty-three passengers and crew of six, vanished over the Atlantic, on a trooping flight to Jamaica. No explanation. "Cause unascertainable." (And this, again, in the eerie region of the Gulf and the Caribbean.)

The lists of disasters to jet planes **is long**. The list of explanations **is short**. Pilots surviving crashes of whole squadrons **have been silenced**. When four British jets, all without collision, crash-landed at the same time in foggy flying weather, it was "explained" that all four ran out of fuel at one time.

NOT SO, THEY WERE "PUSHED" DOWN.

Your own reading for the past ten years will tell you of a number of unexplained disappearances and accidents to planes. The *Constellation* over Brazil. The DC-3 in Lake Michigan, apparently torn a part and its blankets, etc., shredded mysteriously.

On August 2, 1947, the British South American Airways plane, *Lancastrian Star Dust*, mysteriously vanished on a flight over the Andes. It would not have been so surprising if the craft had disappeared in the high peaks of the Andes, but – she was due to land at the airport at Santiago, Chile, at 5:45 PM, she sent out a signal stating her time of arrival. That is just four minutes from the airport, almost within sight of the control tower. At the end of the message came a word "Stendec," loud and clear and given out very fast. The Chilean Air Force operator, at Santiago, queried the word which he did not understand. He heard it twice repeated by the plane. No explanation of the word has ever been found. Nothing further was heard from the plane although calls were sent out. The plane never arrived, and from that day to this the mystery has never been solved. Searchers were made by ski troops and planes and by skilled mountaineers and automobiles over an area of 250 square miles, in vain. That plane carried a crew of five men and there were six passengers. The pilot, Captain R. J. Cook, had crossed the Andes eight times as second pilot. Four minutes from the landing strip – what happened?

STENDIC "GAELIC" FOR "Stranger to World
Was Cook raised around "Gaelic" folks when
a child? Where heard he of "The Stendics."

Cook was talking TO NEAR BY & CLOSING-IN L-M
SHIP "STEN-BECK" SAID FEARFULLY & SAID VERY
RAPIDLY BECOMES "STENDIC" Meant "STAND-OFF"

"**You bloody Stendicer" or Stendisher or**
even Standisher is an *occaisional* (sic) oath of
Scots border. (*italic by A)*

& in Some parts of England.

It is used only to imply the very worst
sort of Mysterious-Doing person.

Ychym tae bu dall "Stendic"? Ne Bdi ta
Hoanni fahn bi skoa kaii tog ymi, ok? Yes,
could have been an L-M aboard & he said
"Standback" VERY FAST.

In 1947, an American Superfortress bomber strangely vanished when 100 miles off Bermuda – the area of Missing planes. In March, 1950, a U.S. Globemaster disappeared while flying from North America to Ireland, without warning, without trace.

The Pan-American Airways liner, a Constellation with forty people aboard, was on her way from South Africa to New York, on June 20, 1951. The ship left Accra, West Africa, for Monrovia, Liberia, and at 3:00 AM the crew radioed that she was due at Roberts Field airport, Monrovia, at 3:15 AM. This plane was never seen nor heard of again. Fifteen minutes out, with no trouble to report, and anticipating an eventless landing, this giant craft disappeared – without a trace of a record, no outcry from its radio.

MEN "FROZEN – HELPLESS" are good Prey.

I submit that these disappearances are in greater number than those of the past – disappearances of people, etc. – because our air age **is proving of great interest to our** space **neighbors.** Also, we are infinitely more aware of such disappearances. (The same reasoning, of course, applies to the increase of UFO's sighted since the advent of the air age and use of radar.)

I suggest, further, that these disappearances are but more kidnappings, by the space contrivances. Are there any other explanations which satisfy all the questions?

We close the strange accounts of disappearing planes with an account, published in *Coronet*, March, 1951, which is as startling as any yet encountered.

On a calm, but overcast Sunday in August, 1942, two experienced Naval Officers, Lieutenant Cody, and Ensign Adams, in fine spirits took off on an antisubmarine patrol in the U.S. Navy blimp, L-8, from a small base on Treasure Island, California. Adams, after fifteen years' service, had just been made Ensign, and this was his first flight as a commissioned officer; so the flight was a bit more than merely routine, as they flew low to look for submarines.

Not far from San Francisco they saw an oil slick, which might denote a submarine. The blimp circled and came over it. There were several patrol craft and many fishermen about, and everyone was interested in whether a depth charge would be dropped.

To the surprise of everyone the airship neither circled nor bombed. Instead, she **shot upwards** and disappeared into the clouds. The ship was not seen again by the watchers in the patrol and fishing boats – and her happy crew was not heard of again, by anybody.

The L-8 rose to 2,500 feet and drifted for two and one-half hours, and then came down on a California beach, almost striking two fishermen, who grabbed her towing lines and tried to hold her. They looked inside the gondola and found it empty. The craft tore out of their hands and drifted against a cliff, until one of her depth charges loosened and dropped, after which she soared over the cliff and later made a perfect landing in a street of Daly City, a suburb of San Francisco. Inspecting officers found everything in the gondola in perfect order, except – Cody and Adams were missing.

The last word from Lieutenant Cody, commanding, was at 7:50 AM when he radioed, "Am investigating oil slick." There should have been a follow-up report and, at 8:00 AM, a routine position report. There was nothing.

Nothing has ever been found out about the disappearance of these men. They must have left the blimp at the instant when it shop into the clouds, for there is no other suspected cause for it to rise, and the loss of their weight would certainly cause it to do so. Many patrols and fishermen were watching the maneuvers of the aircraft over the suspected area; everyone was standing by, to avoid a possible depth charge; dozens of eyes were on the blimp. Nobody say Cody and Adams jump, fall, or otherwise leave the gondola – no sign of trouble or struggle. **The craft merely shop upward** into **the overcast. Cody and Adams just disappeared** – for keeps, **with at least a dozen or two interested observers watching** every move of their airship. Why? And **where to**?

Will remain in a "Stasis Neutral" Living
with L-Ms & being fed by them until they
are of No use & No farther info can be
gotten from the. L-Ms USE a Mental Probe,
NOW, SOMETHING LIKE ENCALPHOGRAPH.
SAVES MUCH TIME & SWEAT WITH SUBJECTS WHOSE
PSI FACTORING & OR EXTRA-SENSORY PERCEPTION
IS TOO LOW FOR TELEPATHY."

Fireballs and Lights

Followers of flying saucers are well acquainted with the "Foo Fighters" reported so extensively during World War II. Because they are modern, and because their presence is so undeniably established and their activities so well catalogued, we shall do nothing with them other than this brief mention in the general category of lights and fireballs.

The "Foo Fighters" seem, however, to be of a slightly different genre from the usual UFO lights. "Foos" are usually reddish or yellowish, soft and diffuse, unattached to any tangible object and extremely mobile. UFO's, on the other hand, have hard, bluish-white lights and are brilliant, **functional,** and **flickering**.

Hard. Bluish, White Lighted are Scouts, Solid.

SCOUTS, CURIOUS ABOUT THE LAST WAR, ABLE TO DETECT ELECTRONIC-MAGNETIC FIELDS IN EQUIPMENT AND SO KEPT THEMSELVES AT A STAGE OF *MOLECULAR DISSOLUTION* IE. STASIS, THAT THEY COULD OBSERVE YET NTO GET HURT BY *WHATEVER* WEAPONS "WE" HAD, KNOWINGLY OR UNKNOWINGLY. Some of our Electrom's Equipment *could have had* an odd effect upon functionality of L-M observer Scout ships & caused some consternation to the L-M's, A PEACE-FUL NAIVELY CURIOUS BUNCH OF INADVERTANT HAVOC WREAKERS, AS YOULL EVER SEE, Jemi.

With that distinction in mind, let us suppose that the "Foos" either have intelligence or are remotely directed by intelligence. It is only another short step to say that they are intelligence. That they are a manifestation of some intelligent activity seems the most logical compromise.

The **references throughout history** to strange lights in the sky, and **burning** objects fleeing through the air, **are common knowledge**. There are myriad cases where lights, balls of fire, luminous points and areas, and ball lightning **which** do not seem to be attached to or emanate from any solid object, have been observed. Two recent sightings will serve to establish our basis of judgement.

QUITE SO!

The following letter, to the editor of *Fate*, March 1951 bears careful scrutiny. I ask that you recall the rays we suggested in *"Marks and Footprints."*

"My husband and I live alone in a little hidden hollow in Nye County, Nevada, known as the Old Burns Ranch. It is almost completely surrounded by bleak gray hills, and is located a crooked mile back from the paved highway that runs to the little town of Beatty, eight miles distant.

"The nearest human habitation is a cattle ranch a mile away by coyote trail over the hills.

"It was 1:45 AM on a night in January, 1949, just after what is known as The Big Snow. A frozen white pall lay draped over hill and desert. I had wakened from sound slumber a half-hour earlier. More sleep eluded me and I was standing at my window drinking in the beauty of the dimly moonlit landscape. **Not a creature was stirring, nor a breath of wind**.

IF THIS HAPPENS, COVER YOURSELF WITH EARTH, Jemi.

"Gradually, my eyes focused upon a pale gray stain, irregularly shaped and no bigger than by two hands. It rested on the smooth crust near a corner of the grape arbor about three rods from the house and in line with the window. Almost at once this fuzzy-gray shadow that was not a shadow bloomed into a disc of clear white light approximately three feet in diameter. It lay there for fully two minutes. Then suddenly contracting into a brilliant orange-tinted stream five or six inches wide, flowed swiftly over the snow toward my window and, to all appearances, exploded soundlessly against the stone foundation of the intervening front porch.

"Several tongues of scintillating red and blue flame spurted a few inches above the two-and-a half foot high wainscoting of the porch. That was all.

"When daylight came, we searched conscientiously but found no signs, marks, or tracks of any kind that might help to explain this phenomenon."

Sara Elizabeth Lampe
Gardnerville, Nevada

We have another interesting account of a recent visit by a fireball which warrants attention. It was reported by Gordon W. Hackbarth of Seattle, Washington, and tells of an **electronics mechanic** at the Puget Sound Navy Yard, Robert Burch, and his experience on Tuesday, November 6, 1951.

Returning from his evening meal, Burch stopped at the desk of the Bremerton YMCA, picked up his key, then rode the elevator to the top floor. Inside his room, he noticed that it was 7:30 PM He **switched on** his **radio**, then turned to the dresser.

Suddenly, something made him look up. The mirror reflected a ball of orange-red fire coming toward him through the open window. There was a blinding flash and a **loud report**. The **ceiling light** went out and Burch was knocked to the floor. In a daze he reached for the foot of his **metal bed** to haul himself upright. A **searing pain** shot up his arm. Later it was diagnosed that he had received second-degree burns.

DON'T KNOW IF BULB IMPLODED

(LATER) HYPER-ACTIVATION BY F-F ON MOLECULES COULD HAVE CAUSED BURNS OR PURE-ENERGY IMPLOSION "BOUNCES" BACK, EFFECTS SECONDARY EXPLOSION, THUS BURNS & ETC.

In the corner of his room the contents of a wastebasket blazed furiously. Beneath the window a piece of fireproof Samsonite luggage was charred and smoking. The cabinets of two radios were burned. The sill of the window through which the fireball had entered was black and too hot to touch.

YES, ALL THE ABOVE ARE SCEINTIFICALLY EXPLAINABLE THEY ARE REACTIONS OF FORCE & ENERGY, WILD & TAME.

Burch's roommate, Alex Myers, rushed in from the shower room three doors away. He had heard the loud report. A moment later, a city policeman entered. The officer, in the process of writing a traffic violation ticket three blocks away, had looked up, seen the orange-red ball flash across the sky in an arc from a southerly direction and enter the window.

In the Bremerton Naval Hospital the next day the bewildered Burch, his arm swathed in bandages, still suffered from shock.

ED: the following has no obvious reference or necessary position

The terrifying thing about Fireballs is that When Human & Fireball face each other,

the one recognizes a *Panicked* intelligence in the other AND is thus terrified in reciprocal emotions. A Fireball is either L-M or S-M WHO, *LIKE* THAT process that Burned the Ancient ARKS HAS TOO HAD A MALFUNCTION

ACCIDENT. OR CAUSED.

OF ONE OR ALL OF HIS "INDUCED" FIELDS & thus burns.

"Crawling fireballs" are still another form of oddities which lend substance to our theory of intelligence in space. Most of these awesome incidents occurred in France. In Marseilles, during October 1898, an adolescent girl was seated at a table when suddenly a spherical shape of fire darted into the room, paused in the corner farthest from her and gradually moved toward her along the floor. Terror stricken, she drew back against the wall. Then, abruptly, it changed its course, circled her several times and shot toward the ceiling. It flung itself at a paper-covered stovepipe hole and burned a ring in it on its way up the chimney. Minutes later a loud crash shattered the chimney top.

A similar occurrence was reported in Paris on July 5, 1852, in the shop of a tailor on the Rue Saint Jacques, near Val De Grace. This time the fireball crawled over the windowsill into the room and came at the man in a floor-skimming action. Horrified, he retreated as the globe of blazing light climbed to the height of his face. It was too much for him. The tailor collapsed. A little later he revived to hear a tremendous explosion atop the shop which scattered bits of chimney brick over surrounding rooftops. Proof that the fireball had fled up the chimney again appeared in the form of a burnt paper cover over the stovepipe hole.

In one series of volumes published around 1898 by *The Association Francaise*, M. Wander, a scientist, wrote: "A violent thunderstorm has descended upon the Commune of Beugnon. I happened to be passing through a farm in which two children of about twelve and thirteen were playing. I saw these children take refuge from the rain under the roof of a stable, in which were twenty-five oxen. In the courtyard grew a poplar. Suddenly there appeared a globe of fire, the size of an apple, near the top of the poplar. We saw it descend branch by branch, and then down the trunk. It moved along the courtyard very slowly, picking its way, and came through to the door where the two children stood. One of them touched it. Immediately a terrible crash shook the entire farm to its foundation. The children were thrown back, uninjured but eleven of the oxen were felled dead."

In the town of Gray, on July 7, 1886, a luminous ball from thirty to forty centimeters in diameter jumped to the roof of a home and ripped off the corner. In this case, unlike so many others, the fireball didn't disintegrate after a single act of destruction. It rebounded to the home's outside stairs, crushing the slates. Still it retained its shape, crawled into the midst of a group of passers-by who had stopped to watch the queer sight. These persons, in a body, took off down the road. The perverse object seemed to pursue them momentarily: **then it vanished without a sound.**

Must have hit a Vortice, *or* been saved somehow.

M. Lawrence Roth, Director of the Blue Hill Observatory, in 1903, was visiting Paris on September 4, of that year. At 10:00:PM, he happened to be looking toward the Eiffel Tower from the Rond-Point of the Champs Elysees. The tower was suddenly struck by white lightning. Simultaneously he spied a flaming sphere edging downward to the second platform. Roth claimed the ball was about a yard in diameter, and that it covered some one hundred yards in a matter of seconds and then vanished completely.

It is very interesting to note that these reports are from the general area where a great deal of UFO activity was reported in late 1954. **Localization? Selectivity?**

Yes, *no doubt*.

Additional substantiation of the localization-selectivity factor comes from reports from Hammersly Fork. Remember the strange disappearance in that area.

A fireball at Hammersly Fork floated down through the roof and exploded in a cabin, blowing out windows and doors, at midday on December 9, 1951. Another one came down fifty yards east of the post office there and vanished just before reaching the ground on January 9, 1952. A week later, another one came down just at dusk, at Cross Fork, eight miles from Hammersly Fork and vanished just before touching the ground. On January 23, again at dusk, a fireball floated down in the woods about two hundred feet from the car of Mr. Doyle Schoonover, and **vanished just before reaching the ground**. Another fireball went through two inches of boards on a building, on February 1, and within seconds the whole roof was ablaze.

Mr. John P. Bessor, a very careful and reliable investigator, made a special trip of inspection to the vicinity of Brown Mountain, near Mogantown, North Carolina, and personally saw the mysterious lights reported there. He avers that they cannot be due to locomotives, cars, houselights, **or whatever else the Geological Survey would like them to be**. He was not able to coordinate the lights with any mineral deposits, or human activity. Nevertheless the lights were observed by him over a period of several days and nights. They appeared **to move at will**, to have volition.

No Will of Wisp Gases in that area at all.

While the innumerable reports on strange lights may be only indirectly related to space travel, it does seem obvious that some of the same forces and physical characteristics are common to both types of phenomena, and a study of one may supply insight into others. For instance, we note the common traits of maneuverability, transparency, color, and evidence of intelligent manipulation, not to mention the ability to appear and disappear at will, as did the saucers over Washington in 1952.

There is a report on a puzzling light seen in Hampshire on the night of September 14, 1908 – a light as if from an unseen moon. Strangely enough, that same night, David Packer, in Worcestershire, saw an illumination which he thought was auroral, and proceeded to photograph it. What he saw was a broad, diffuse series of cloudlike illuminations. His photograph in English Mechanic **showed** a large luminous disc of sphere over the auroral illuminations. This does not in any way indicate a flaw in the film or lights leaking into the camera. The only possible explanation in that case is based on the conventional knowledge that this thing, invisible to the eye, was luminous in that part of the spectrum to which the plate was sensitive, probably ultraviolet, as infra-red plates were not then available.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

Each Pilot of a F Ship receives the ability
to become Moleculary Dissolute AFTER he has
been so done by His own Ships "fields" enough
times. Further, *when* He Has been *imbued* with
this ability he sometimes Loses control of it
Due to too Many repetitions or flows in Natural
fields, or break Down of Ships Fields. L-Ms
ARE COMING CLOSER & CLOSER TO SOLVING HOW TO
TOTALLY PREVENT THEMSELVES FROM "CATCHING
FIRE" PERHAPS HAVE BY NOW SUCCEEDED, I hope,
FERVERENTLY!

In *Cambrian Natural Observer*, 1905-32, are several accounts of lights, in the skies of Wales, which are exactly like many of those reported in the United States since 1947. Lights like "a long cluster of stars, obscured by a thin film of mist," were reported. Later this thing is said to have taken on the shape and **appearance of a vertically suspended iron bar heated to an orange-colored glow**; but the initial description is that of lights in formation.

SHIP STANDING VERTICALLY IS SIGNALLING "HELP" TO ALL IN VICINITY

I submit that **all** strange lights reported, throughout history and today, are either from UFO's themselves, or reflections of them. They may be UFO's.

I think we can agree, further, that fireballs may be the only available indication that UFO's have weapons – and that fireballs are their weapons. I base this upon the singular fact that the only reports of destruction or injury come from these fireballs. **This is not to inscribe malicious intent to UFO's for accidental shooting of a hunter does not condemn the sorrowed friend who fired the shop, much less the distant manufacturer.** That fireballs are released at all is, again, probably sheer experimentation on the part of the UFO's.

(NOT, SO) THE "BURNINGS" *MUST* BE EJECTED *or* the ship will catch fire in control pit.

As an example of destruction, we shall close with this brief case.

An intelligent boy was trudging along the highway at night near Palestine, Texas. A woman was riding in the same direction, on a horse. The boy reappeared in Palestine that night, out of breath and very pale. He said he saw a ball of fire come out of the sky and strike the woman and set her ablaze. The horse ran one way and he ran back to town to tell what had happened. The people went to look for further particulars of this curious accident. They found the woman lying on the ground with all her clothing burned, but with enough life in her to tell that she had been struck in the breast by a ball of fire. The horse was found with his mane singed. The woman died the next day.

Such fireballs could also be the new method of Execution of Outlaws or Method of Disposal for Olden Peopole. These theorys could each and every one be Possible. I do know that The Arks were burned, That Scouts can also burn in this fashion. I dread these Fireballs & I believe the U.S. NAVY May also have formed some out of Human Material, 1943-44.

I do Not fear the L-Ms or their enemies themselves but I dread in a Terror filled Hellish Dreadfulness the Least intimation of the appearance of a Fireball that is Not inanimate & thus clearly mere "Burnings" of & from a "coat" upon interior parts of a ship. All electricity gathers a "coat" & this must be disposed of else functionality of ship & fields is impaired. This I understand, but Not a burning personality in TERROR. IT VERGES TOO MUCH UPON THE INHUMAN, THE HORRIBLE.

Legends

In all these discussions, **one thing** seems to be **outstanding** as a common denominator. All of the aerial or spatial contrivances and gadgets which we have postulated appear to have one feature in common: they have their natural habitat in space, or at very least in the atmosphere. There is no sure record of an appearance on the ground, and few indications. **Appearances from**, or **disappearances into,** the sea indicate only **an ability to make use of the fluid medium of seawater**, when necessary or desirable. This leads to an assumption that UFO's live naturally and easily in space; that they do not necessarily come from other stellar systems, or even from other planets.

No. Not Easily
The "Little-Men" are known to have GILLS
Just as all Men before birth, have gills, too.

After considering that the space structures or UFO's spend most of their time in line between earth and the sun, it has been suggested that some of the ancient Sun worship may have originated in the condition that some god-like beings may have come from UFO's which were said to be "in the Sun," because of this alignment of the neutral, and that perhaps the "death boats" for celestial flight which were buried with the Egyptian kings may have been **symbolic of the UFO flight XXXXXX** . Perhaps some of these traditions were fragmentary memories from the first wave of civilization. In fact there are several very ancient traditions which can be at least partially accounted for **by** our common denominator of life in and from space.

For emphasis, and for the establishment of present principles, we repeat that it **is relatively unimportant whether we decide that civilization was brought to us from space**, perhaps from the exploded planet between Mars and Jupiter, **or whether it reached space from terrestrial development in a previous upsurge of civilization.** Such relics as the Great Pyramid indicate the advancement of that age, and it is perhaps a little less strain on our sensibilities to assume that space life, especially if limited to the earth-moon system, originated on earth. **Our two greatest mental hazards at the moment are to overcome the blows to our racial ego**, **and to free ourselves from the idea that UFO's and space life now reaching our cognizance necessarily come from a planet**. Their presence in near-by space regions is improbability of lesser order and has little about it which is difficult of acceptance. (Red is A and B)

There **is much** to make us believe that this extraordinary thing which we call civilization today is nothing but flickering flamelets rekindled from almost extinct embers of civilization, **the antiquity of which is undreamed of by modern archaeologists.**

The Man is Right, So What.

The Hawaiians claim to have known about flying saucers for 1,000 years, and even to have a name for them: Akualele, or flying spirits. They describe these flying spirits as appearing in many shapes and colors just as they are sighted today…the balls of fire. cones and saucer-shaped discs.

From this it is an easy jump to an obscure, but reliably documented case from England, A.D. 1290. It is one of the best reports on things in space that we call UFO's.

A Mr. A.X. Chumley, a British scholar, recently found a Latin document at Byland Abbey, in Yorkshire, describing a strange aerial object that terrified the monks in A.D. 1290. The document refers to a "Round, flat, silver object **called** a discus which flew over the monastery exciting maximum terrorem among the brethren."

YES, L-MS INTRODUCED DISCUS THROWING WHILE
TRYING TO EXPLAIN THE METHOD OF HAPHAZARD
ARRIVAL IN THESSALONIA TO The "Blocked-headed

Locals who thought it a New game.

The farther back in time, the less note is taken of plain, bare facts, thus antiquity of obfuscates, realty.

It is the purpose of this chapter to lead you still farther back in time – to the threshold of human intelligence, in a wave of civilization covering the world before the flood. If we discover that no matter how far we push the periphery of our quest, we still find a ready-made civilization – we have to admit human intellectual antiquity of (to us) fantastic and unbelievable vastness. Could this mean that civilization was planted here, within the species of animal selected by some superintelligence as most fit to develop culture? Could these superfolk be space dwellers? Could they be tending us as sheep are tended? Are we actually owned? Could the UFO's be their abode? Or perhaps their supervisors, shepherds? Could it be that the saucers, in their whimsical variety, are the space dwellers – the intelligences?

GETS A LITTLE WILD HERE BUT HE *DOES DARE FACE THINGS* NO OTHER ARCHEOLOGIST *EVER* HAS (*italics by A)*

In 1809 a Mr. Stavely, in London, saw many bright specks of light moving around the edge of a black cloud. The lights played around for an hour, and one of them became as large and bright as Venus, moving with great speed around the cloud; later it became stationary, lost its brilliance and finally disappeared. There was no lightning, and the altitude of the lights seemed variable.

On June 19, **1801**, a great body, **moonlike** but larger **with a dark mark** across it, appeared over Hull, England, at about midnight. It **devolved into five bodies, all brilliant**, which faded away, **leaving a very bright sphere**. **A bluish light was around** it **all the while**, but when it disappeared the sky was left calm and clear. On July 14, in the early evening, something that looked like an ordinary cloud, several miles long, **seemed** to take fire, **burning** with a **bluish flame**, lasting fifteen minutes, and twice repeated for shorter intervals.

MOTHERSHIP, INDUCTOR LEFT RUNNING WHILE DISCHARGING SCOUTS, THEN, RAN-OFF OVER CHARGE.

An elliptical sphere rose and fell over Edinburgh on June 21, 1787, and disappeared behind clouds. On December 26, 1785, Edinburg was, at nine o'clock PM, illuminated as bright as day by a sphere with a sort of cone shaped attachment. This was seen in a number of distant places.

Cone was Measure-Marker on Tracker-Scout ship.

Jacob Bee's Diary records a "comet" that "appeared" at 4:45 PM on December 20, 1689: "first in ye forme of halfe a moone, very firie, and afterwards did change itself to a firie sword, and ran westward."

On June 3, 1732 a storm of lights appeared in the sky having all the earmarks of an **intense meteor shower.**

YES.

Throughout the 19th century there are many reports of **explosions**, **cannonading**, and **crashes in the sky**. Holby, Kepler, and other scientists acknowledge the veracity of these reports **but never offer real solutions**.

ED: The following has no obvious reference or necessary position.

Mother

Dreadnaught & Scout-fighters, with Force-Shields at full-blast-*TOTAL*

Compressed Matieral, or "Frozen" Matieral (sic) *hits* atmosphere *or* is *(italics by A)*

PRONTO

unfroze, results in Mild Explosions.

WHEN AREA SUDDENLY "FROZE" it causes implosions.
(AIR)

Kepler reported "A burning globe appeared at sunset, on November 17, 1623, visible all over Germany and much of Austria."

A whole series of observations of illuminated crosses, burning globes, horrid celestial clashing noises, beams of fire, discolored sun, sun dogs and mock suns is reported from 1501 through 1557. These reports **include a thunderbolt** that **disrupted the bridal chamber** of Francois Montmorency and Diane de France.

Heh! Chuckle, Lost his "erection"

The *Chronicles of* ***Basel***, AD 1478, recount "Divers kinds of crosses and fiery bowls fell **to the ground** from the sky **leaving tokens behind."**

Yes, May still be Laying there.

In the early winter of 1387, a fire in the sky was seen many times, like **a burning and revolving wheel**, or a round barrel of flame, emitting fire from above, and others in the shape of a long fiery beam, in the country of Leicester, England.

imploded & burning Ship-frame, some expierimentals (sic)
were faulty and actually burned Whole "alfoat."(sic)

This weird report is dated AD 1322. In the first hour of the night of November 4, after 7:00 PM, there was seen in the sky over Uxbridge, England, a pillar of fire of the size of a small boat, pallid and livid in color. It rose from the south, crossed the sky with a slow and grave motion, and went northward. Out of the front of the pile of fervent **red flame burst forth with great beams of light**…many beholders saw it in collision, and there came sounds of fearful combat, and sounds of crashes.

"Buja"

Matthew, of Paris, says: On July 24, AD, 1239, at the vigil of Saint James, in the dusk, but not when the stars came out, but while the air was clear, serene and shining, a great star appeared. It was like a torch, rising from the south, and flying **on both sides** of it there **was emitted** in the height of the sky **a very great light**. It turned towards the north in the aery region, not quickly, nor, indeed, with speed, but exactly as if it wished to ascent to a place in the air. But when it arrived at the apparent middle of the firmament, in our northern hemisphere, it left behind it **smoke with sparks**.

An *old* Ark being "Demolished." (Italics by A)

March 20, AD 1168, "a globe of fire was seen moving to and fro in the air."

I wonder if there is any significance to the month of March in regard to these events?

ONLY A FEW old Arks now remain. Most are

waystations. (There *are* two GREAT-ARKS, ONE NEW.)

FOR EARTH DUTY

AD, 1104: Burning torches, fiery darts, flying fires were often seen in the air in this year. And there were, near stars, what looked like swarms of butterflies and little fiery worms of a strange kind. They flew in the air and took away the light of the sun as if they had been clouds.

Above Latter is Excellent description of Grecian Mercury HAT. THAT IS just exactly what His Hat & Mayhap himself, was designed from.

AD, 1067: In this year people saw a fire that flamed and burned fiercely in the sky. It came near the **earth,** and for a little time **brilliantly lit** it up. Afterwards, it revolved, ascended on high, then descended **into the sea**. In several places it burned woods and plains, and in the country of Northumberland this fire showed itself in two seasons of the year. (From Geoffrey Gaimar's Lestorie des Englis solum Maistre Geffrei.)

AD, 936: "In a clear sky, the sun was suddenly darkened red like blood."

When the Chain Cities Moved all off the ark. No, FOR TWO SEASONS *old* arks & Boats BEING DEMOLISHED.

AD, 941: "The sun had a terrible appearance for some time and a stream like blood issued from it."

AD 823: "In summer a **piece of ice** fell from the sky over Burgundy, France. It was sixteen feet long, seven feet broad, and two feet thick." **That** was **quite a hailstone**!

Ice for "Hangover!

YAK

AD 796: Roger of Wendover records that small globes were seen circling around the sun.

AD 457: "Over Brittany, France, a blazing thing like a globe was seen in the sky. **Its size was immense**, and **on its beams** hung a ball of fire like a dragon **out of** whose mouth **proceeded two beams**, one of which stretched beyond France, and the other reached towards Ireland, and **ended in firelike rays."**

"S" Ship, Ark type, in Battle & FORCE-LOCKED *with* L-M 'BOATS"

AD 393: "In the time of Theodosius, a sign like a hanging dove (colmba pendens) appeared in the sky. **It burned for thirty days**."

Can't say, Probably Ship in Distress, FORCE-LOCKED

170 BC: "At Lanupium, on the Appian Way, sixteen miles from Rome a remarkable spectacle of a **fleet of ships** was **seen** in the air."

Mirage of Boats on Clouds, No record of such

a SIZED MOVEMENT.

106 **BC**: "A bird that flew in the sky and set houses **on fire**, was seen over **Rome**."

"S" Ship, Not L-M, Jammed "Cutter"

214 BC: "The forms **of ships** were seen in the sky over Rome." And 220 BC: "A clear light shone at night in the sky at Rome."

214BC Probably Just plane Water boats, Human.

216 BC: "At Praeneste, sixty-five miles from Rome, **burning "lamps"** fell from the sky, and at Arpinium, forty-two miles east of Praeneste, a thing like a round **shield** was seen in the sky."

Ship Cleaning off "Coat" & obviously in a Hurry, too

99 BC: "When Murius and Valerius were consuls in Tarquinia, there fell in different places a thing like a flaming torch and it come suddenly from the sky. Towards sunset, a round object, like a globe, or a round circular shield took its path in the sky from west to east." That is as good a description of a saucer as any.

These describe the Great Activity & Undersea building (to a small inference) of the "Chain Cities" and too, the S-M's resistance to the L-M's in the "*Small War*" after "great Return."

Now let us consider the hieroglyphs from an Egyptian papyrus, together with a translation by Boris de Rachewiltz. De Rachewiltz says that the original is a part of the Royal Annals of the times of Thutmose III, circa 1504-1450 BC, and that the original is in bad condition. Parts were too obliterated for translation.

In the year 22, third month of winter, sixth hour of the day (..2..) The scribas of the House of Life found it was a circle of fire that was coming in the sky. (though) it had no head, the breath of its mouth (**had**) **a foul odor**. Its body one 'rod' long and one 'rod' large. **It had no voice**. Their hearts became confused through it: then they laid themselves on their bellies (..3..) They went to the King..? to report it. His Majesty ordered (..4..) has been examined (..5..) as to all which is written in the papyrus rolls of the House of Life His Majesty was meditating upon what happened. Now, after some days had passed over those things, Lo! **They were more numerous than "anything"** They were **shining in the sky more than the Sun to the limits of the four supports of heaven** (..6..) Powerful was the position of the fire circles. The army of the King looked on and His Majesty was in the midst of it. It was after supper. Thereupon they (the fire circles) went up higher directed to the south. Fishes and volatiles fell down from the sky. (it was) a marvel never occurred since the foundation of this land. Caused His Majesty to brought incense to pacify the hearth (..9..) (to write?) what happened in the ook of the House of Life (..10..) (to be remembered?) for the Eternity.

ole TITMOUSE SAW "The Great Return: a Story you know very Well.

He saw Group "Coat" Burnings of Whole Convey.

in Great Return, one ship payed-call in Titmouses towns peopole (sic), was Honored & received Graciously, even if at first somewhat fearfully, Like sun Worshipers the World over.

To this added the following comment from the translator:

As you can see from (the translation) the "flying saucers" made their first appearance in the 22nd year of the reign of Thutmose III, about 3,500 years ago. The first lacuna of the papyrus in the end of another marvel. I think that this papyrus was part of a book preserved in the mysterious institution called House of Life (of which Sir Alan Gardner has written), that I am actually deeply investigating. In it, magic rites were performed and a special group of scribes was trained.

Two things have to be noticed: it left after a foul odor and it was not making any noise. It measures one rod, i.e. 100 cubit. As a cubit is about 20.6 inches we might judge the fire circle was large and long, about fifty meters. During their second appearance they were very numerous and shining, and fishes and volatiles fell down from the sky. And their movements through the sky, from north to south, was regular, and, more than that, powerful! Therefore the king thought that the best thing to do was to pacify the hearth of Ammon Ra, Lord of the Thrones of the Two Lands (Egypt).

This record is a part of the archives of a responsible government. The event was unusual enough to warrant inscribing in the archives, and to have the past records searched for precedent. The descriptions are concise, although the vacant places are annoying in their omissions. De Rachewiltz's comments, supplementing his translation, indicate an interpretation similar to that which we, ourselves, might make.

However we find it difficult to resist pointing out some of the elements of this event, which are so typical of the reports in current sightings. Silence of operation for one thing. Foul odor. In size, this UFO was said to be about one hundred cubits, which is about 172 feet long. The fact that two equal dimensions were given indicating (perhaps) equal length and breadth implies disc shape. In any case it was described as a fire circle, indicating its shape, and that flames were associated with it as has so often been the case. The exact nature of the flames is of course unknown to us; they may have been electrical discharges which would have been strange to the Egyptians of 1500 BC and would have been recorded as ordinary flames. As in our modern sightings, there was sometimes one object and sometimes a group or flock. **They were shining**, and by this it seems we can infer that they were luminous.

LAMINATED METAL, COVERED BY SHEET-DIAMOND?

One other thing is obvious from this Egyptian record; that mechanical flight, if it had been previously known to the Egyptians, or to their progenitors, was Already a completely lost science in 1500 BC. It is in line with our thinking that the Egyptians were merely another one of the trickles through the dyke of time from the previous great wave of civilization.

The records of Tibet, however, seem to be more complete than those of Egypt, **and more ancient**. Perhaps it is because the mountain fastnesses of Tibet and Northern India have not been subjected to the burnings and other destructive activities of Western civilization which annihilated the libraries of the Egyptians and the Mayas.

TRUE

If one may judge from his writings, **Colonel James Churchward**, in a **lifetime of study**, Learned something of the lore which is stored in the Tibetan monasteries, and supplemented this with studies throughout the world.

Churchward says that he came upon **many** records ranging back to at **least** 200,000 years. **One** of **his** most fascinating **finds** relates to mechanical flight, brought to India by the first settlers, and its **antiquity** may be anything from 15,000 to 200,000 years, with the longer term the more likely. It is Churchward's deduction that India was settled by Nagas from Burma, who, **in their turn**, were descendents of the original Mayas of the "motherland," common ancestors of the Naga and the Central

American Maya. This settlement must have taken place about 70,000 years ago, and it seems most probable that mechanical flight **came** form the "Motherland."

Not know Churchward. If then he has seen so ancient writs, then he KNEW Why we do Not War. Nor ever Worry & Why each of us knows or Day of Death AND THAT WE ONCE RULERS THEN WERE SLAVES.

Here, by mechanical flight, we most certainly mean something different either our lighter than air or heavier than air flight mechanisms of today. That the flight of those millennia employed a type of power unknown today, "**seems almost certain**." **Whatever the source of that power was** it did not involve power plants as we know them today, and apparently did not result in a truly mechanical or industrialized civilization such as we have. **That this power source worked on some principle of levitation** or **gravity nullification seems logical**. It may be, too, that such a force or power does not lend itself to industry.

IT DOES. FROM LIFE-BOAT POWER IS XXXXX BUILT "SCOUT & *SO*, ON *UP* TO Great Arks

(XXXXX getting too close for comfort XXXXXX ?)[1]

***phraseology* indicates Lack of courage, Not Worry, Jemi**.

An Hindu Manuscript of ancient origin says: "When morning dawned, Rama, taking the celestial car which Pushpaka had sent him be Vivishand, stood ready to depart; self moving was this car; it was large and **finely** "painted." It had two stories, and many chambers with windows, and was draped with flags and banners. It gave forth a melodious sound as it coursed along its airy way."

This was written millennia ago – and this translation was made before the modern age of mechanical flight. **If the translation had been made by a person with the technical training available in 1955**, **it would read like this:**

When dawn came, Rama took the flying machine with Pushpaka had sent to him by Vivishand, and stood by to take off. This machine was self-propelled, large and finely-finished. It was a **two-decker**, with many compartments having windows, and was draped with flags and pennants. As the machine flew it made a humming or droning sound.

NO; Had TWO EQUALLY SHAPED HALVES; LOOKED UP AT FROM GROUND IT SEEMED ---- TO BE OF TWO PARTS as hereon.

There is another Hindu manuscript dated 500 BC, which has been translated as follows:

Rawan (Ravan?), King of Ceylon, flew over the enemy's army and dropped bombs, causing many casualties. Eventually Rawan was captured and slain, and his flying machine fell into the hands of the Hindu Chieftain, Ram Chandra (Rama), who flew it all the way back to his Capital in northern India.

No, Not bombs: *Rocks* or "Frozen" air, *or 'Coat" Burnings*.

Both of these manuscripts seem to have been taken from the same temple records at Ayhodia and refer to a time **at least** 20,000 years ago.

---

[1] Parenthesis, markouts, and question mark by A

During time before "The Ice"?

It is from this material that we come to the conclusion that space flight is not a new phenomenon, but rather a lost art!

XXXXXXXXX *that* I can "remember."

Therefore, I strongly recommend that legislation be enacted to once to **assign qualified researchers to the field of gravity**. **There**, **and not in atoms**, **shall we discover the secret of the true flight into space.**

a circular pattern of Bar Magnets 342 of them, HAVE NO WEIGHT if they are attached to a common Sheet of Metal

& are XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX[1]

In short, THEY FLOAT IN THE AIR, *all* 900 lbs of them. XXXXXXXXXXXXX [1&2]

2

(In center, I wish were one Drive-inductor. [3]
Boy! oh Boy!

ED: The following note appears on 111 above PART FOUR.

"And a Little Child shall lead them" Nothing describes a LITTLE-MANS basic Nature so well as that Description. They are childlike in Many Many Ways. So Much so as to easily be mistaken for children WHEN they are Mature-youngs.

[1] A over B

[2] By B

[3] By Jemi

PART FOUR

Astronomy Speaks

The Incredible Decade

From 1877 to 1887, the decade of the Great Comets, we had a greater and more representative concentration of phenomena related to UFO activity than during any other similar period prior to 1947. Astronomy's part has been an important one; the pertinent observations of astronomers extend through the centuries; and to such an extent that we cannot consider all of them in one short volume. However, if we consider the decade of the Great Comets, as a typical slice of UFO History, we shall err but little and that little quantitative rather than qualitative. The events of the comet years were numerous and concentrated, but not typical.

Astronomers missed the best cue of their collective lives during those years, for they were the culmination of generations of observations which, if accepted at face value and interpreted with psychic insight, would have authenticated UFO deduction. **The comet years would have supplied visible confirmation to anyone with the perspicacity to look for it.**

It is difficult to select any single event as having initiated this period. In fact there is no real discontinuity; merely an unusual surge of erratics. Either of two obscure occurrences might serve as curtain raisers, but there were straws in the wind before 1877. Dr. Kirkwood of Indiana University had commented on the unusual, and increasingly large, number of fireballs reported, and there had been a modest but steady increase in the number of comets discovered per year.

Neither of the two minor events within our solar system was great enough to attract much public attention at a time when astronomy was moving out of the visual stage into its golden era of spectroscopic and photographic adventure.

The true magnitude of the universe of stars and nebulae was only beginning to dawn on the human intellect, and studies of the solar system beginning to be passé, because objects only a few score millions of miles distant were too near home to concern the exploring mind. Yet visual observation rolled up a record in the later years of the 19th century which may turn out to be Astronomy's magnum opus for the race of mankind.

The first of the two little events took place in an obscure corner of the Mare Serenitatis, which is one of the Seas, or dark areas, which make up the Man in the Moon. Near the modest sized but well-known lunar crater called Hyginus by the selenographers, there appeared sometime in 1877, **without fuss or warning**, a **small** but **perfect** and **distinct crater**. It was only a few short miles in diameter. It was just big enough to be comfortably seen with the small telescopes of that day. **Orthodox astronomers**, who did not believe in changes of the moon, **refused to accept the word of the selenographers at first**, and there was a minor intraprofessional hassle. **Eventually** the little erratic was called **Hyginus N ?**

IMPRESSION, MADE BY FORCE-FORMING A NEW
Ships Hull MADES SUCH HOLES. MAY BEEN
"DEEP-ROUGHED" BY BURNER, AFTERWARDS.

They don't know but Very Little about THIS GALAXY that we Live in. If they did they'd shout for Joy or weep the tears of Heartbroken Egotistical S-M

The discovery should have been a tip-off!

In 1878, a tremendous disturbance broke out on the surface of our greatest planet. At the beginning it escaped the notice of professional astronomers. They were busy conquering worlds much further afield. But the amateurs noted it. The Great Red Spot of Jupiter (some called livid pink) was some six or seven thousand miles wide, thirty thousand miles long, shaped like a longitudinal section of a pecan, and it raced around the planet at a surface speed of about 200 miles per hour, shouldering aside all one other surface features of that planet. This storm, if it was such, lasted several decades. Whether there was anything purposeful about it is problematical. **Certainly for absolute size** it dwarfed little Hyginus N.

But Hyginus N was close to being in our own back yard, and it should have received more attention than a busy profession gave it. It should have been remembered when Watson and Swift thought that they were observing some new planets.

It wasn't. **And science moved on in a manner which has been called** "progress."

I see the Humor of such a Sarcasm but too Jemi, It is the Catastrophic truth, They Learn the Wrong things and because it is a Machone,[1] or Material thing, they call it Good, even though they do not know the Least Natural *Law of Social Philosophy.* *(Italic by A)*

Whether or not the era of the great comets was initiated, or only marked, by the appearance of Jupiter's **Red Spot**, the surface of Jupiter was exhibiting a condition of great turmoil and disturbance. Round white spots, and equally well formed dark spots, formed, moved over the surface and went away. The big cloud belts were sometimes shifted and distorted. To maintain that such activity on Jupiter was intelligently directed, or that it actually caused the odd phenomena in our own neighborhood, would be presumptuous. But that a common state of disturbance existed both here and there cannot be denied.

The *Great* Ark.

To Have *seen* "The GREAT ARK" would Humble or Terrify *any* Human. I wish, even so, that I could have seen it, *the* Greatest structure ever built, by Humanoids, or all time.

Jupiter, largest of the planets, fifth from the sun, is bright and easy to observe with small telescopes, hence it has been a continuos subject for amateur astronomical research. The literature is full of their reports. Jupiter has about a dozen satellites big enough to be seen from the earth, and some are comparable to our moon in size. These, together with their 88,000-mile diameter parent, make up a complex system in which many things may be expected to happen and many are indeed reported by observers. Jupiter is practically, if not actually, a fluid planet, having an average density only a little greater that that of water, and in spite of its vast bulk, its surface gravity is only two and one-half times that of the earth. It rotates on its axis a little less than ten hours with an equatorial velocity of roughly 28,000 miles per hour, and is so unstable that different latitudes move with different speeds. Local spots, both defined and hazy, have movements of their own, and some pass each other at speeds up to two hundred miles per hour. The clouds, spots, and belts appear to be floating on a liquid or gaseous base.

---

[1] clearest translation.

Such in the environment of the Great Red Spot which appeared over night in 1878 and covered an area comparable to that of the entire terrestrial surface.

It might be expected that such a large feature would be rigidly attached to a core or substratum. Not so. The Red Spot changed its speed and position constantly. In twenty years, for all its size, it drifted more than twice around the planet – total distance of over half a million miles – and, shoving the cloud belts aside, it shifted latitude by several hundred miles.

We do not know the depth of the spot. Its silhouette shape was almost identical with that of the so-called auroral object which passed over Europe and England in 1882. If it was three-dimensionally symmetrical, it was shaped like a pecan – which is to say it had the shape so familiar to UFO observers: The cigar, spindle or Zeppelin shape – but 8,000 miles in diameter and 30,000 miles long.

Besides shape and particular movement, the Spot had one other characteristic in common with Maunder's Object. There was no noticeable distortion of its front, or advancing edge, as it **plowed through** the cloudy or **fluid** surface on which it floated, although it moved with a speed of two hundred miles per hour through the medium.

It is conceded by all scientists that life, such as we know, could not exist on Jupiter in any form, from our lowest to our highest. As for life in some other form, or weird, discarnate intelligence, **the limit is defined only by one's ability to speculate.**

I "READ": "No Life there at all, Malfunction"

Because Jupiter's great size, complex and turbulent condition, intricate system of satellites and attendant comets, and its gravitational effects on all other bodies within the sun's bailiwick, it would seem that **most anything could happen on or around the huge orb.**

ARK GOT STUCK.

It is a fair question to ask **whence came the power to drive** this mass, several times greater than the earth, **through the surface** material at such high speeds, and to crowd aside the vast equatorial belts, sometimes as much as 8,000 miles. What created it; what started it in motion and what kept it in motion; and what directed its movements?

Such a Mass would cause a Huge Explosion
when it Hit that Great Planet unleess introduced
with great care.

As part of the celestial show of 1878, we should take a closer look at the reports of Russell and Hirst from the Blue Mountains of Australia.

Mr. H.C. Russell was heading a small expedition into the mountains to study high altitude and clear mountain air for better observing conditions. Here is his report, extracted from a letter to *Observatory*.

…the only observation which I would here place on record was made on the morning of the 21st of October (1889) at nine o'clock AM, when, on looking at the moon, (Mr. Hirst) found that a large part of it was covered with a dark shade quite as dark as the shadow of the earth during an eclipse of the moon; its outlines were generally circular and it seemed to be fainter near the edges…it quite obliterated the view of about half the moon's terminator (or that part where the sunlight ends) whilst those parts of the terminator not within the shadow could be very distinctly seen. I should estimate the diameter of the shadow, from the part we could see on the moon, as about three-quarters the diameter of the moon. This is one of those remarkable facts which, being seen, should be recorded, although no explanation can at present be offered. One could hardly resist the conviction that it was a shadow; yet it could not have

been the shadow of any known body…No change in the position of the shade could be detected after three hours of watching. 1878, November 26th, H.C. Russell.

This is an important observation it shows that **things were going on in space near the earth**. Such an observation as this seems almost without recorded precedent. The moon was past third quarter and was proceeding the sun across the morning sky. The shade seen by Hirst and Russell was either a cloudlike formation between the earth and the moon, or it was the shadow of something between the moon and the sun.

MIND. "DEEP" MOBILIZATION & Mulai

IE MINDINAO DEEP, [1] *PROJECT* MOBILIZATION FOR M-Chil & The Building of it.

If between moon and sun, it was well within the intense glare of sunlight and difficult to see. Not only would it escape a casual glance but might evade a search and, unless solid, it might be almost entirely invisible. We cannot tell how far it was from the moon, but by the geometry of shadows we can make some estimates. Russell describes the shape as circular and fainter towards the edges. This is a typical description of a dense umbra and lighter penumbra. Making allowance for a tapering shadow, and the estimated diameter, the object should not have been much over 100,000 miles away and probably about 75,000 to 80,000 miles. It is similarly obvious that the object itself must have been approximately the same size as the combined umbra and penumbra, shall we say about 1,400 – 1,700 miles in diameter. We cannot tell whether it was solid or a dense cloud.

***Old* ark or "old" Home-ship -- ?**

Most important, however, is that this shade did not move in three hours' time. With both moon and sun moving, this object so maintained its position that its shadow, cast by the light of one moving object, the sun, remained stationary for three hours or more upon another moving object, the moon. **That is control** – firm, steady, calculated and maintained control of position. It implies **purposefulness, persistence**, **delicacy** and … **intelligence.**

& reason too.

Suppose, on the other hand, that it was not a shadow, but was a cloud interposed between earth and moon. Its actual size then could be anything from a gnat to something three-quarters the diameter of the moon, depending on its distance from the Blue Mountains. Thus we don't know the size for certain, except that it was **smaller** than 1,500 miles in diameter.

But in this case the manipulation of this object was even more complex. **Not only was the object maintained between moon and earth,** it was maintained steadily between moon and a very definite portion of the earth's surface which was rotating rapidly while the moon was revolving around it. This represents doubly intricate control. **This is calculated control of a higher order than the other**, and, in fact, **requires more manipulation than simple hovering**. By way of explanation, something more is required than an inorganic spatial body moving under unmodified laws of Kepler and Newton.

It was this phenomenon which evoked the scorn of the armchair astronomer and editor, Mr. R.A. Proctor, in London, and caused him to publicly impugn and the sanity, observational acuity, and even the good faith of Russell in a long and **flippantly scurrilous letter** to the *Echo*, a London evening paper, March 14, 1879.

A highly EMOTIONAL Letter, yelping the wounded "feelings" of a Dog who thought secretly that *that* Bone should have been HIS; ONLY A HOWL

[1] An additional reference to "Mindanao Deep" appears on page 130.

FOR *MORE* PRESTIGE.

Russell replied with considerable warmth to Proctor's unprovoked attack, and while he does not overtly say so, it is hard to escape the belief that he **felt** there was something purposeful in the behavior of this cloud and also in the way some other clouds and, for example, dry frogs, have maintained themselves over limited parts of the earth. At best he was thoroughly but honestly puzzled. **Proctor's attack**, on the other hand, had some of the characteristics of whistling in the dark. He **showed** a **perceptible fear of admitting the reality of Russell's observation** and **sought to squelch the observer**.

**SOME Scientists are Merely Children. Many
of them Working to acquire Prestige. then
MORE Prestige, Selfish-Small Yapping Children
YET, TOO SOME ARE NOWADAYS MATURE.**

Drujel almost started a Bonfire.

I sense a tinge of nervousness in this, and certainly believe that Proctor, himself an astronomical student, writer and **observer of note**, recognized **more than physical import in this odd event**. His protestations have something of the same tinge as those of the man who suggested that a kangaroo made the "Devil's Hoofprints."

**I do hope that this Man, either, Whistles
in the Dark, OR, blasts the Lid off, Perhaps
then Philosophic progress can be introduced,
Peace restored & this our Home-Planet Saved
from Prophesied end. However, either could be
fatal to human kind but the Latter *Not At All*
if Handled Properly**.

UFO's Against the Sun

For generations, perhaps centuries, it was thought that there were one or more planets revolving within the orbit of Mercury. Perturbation of that planet and its orbit led to such a conclusion, particularly before the **theory of relativity** explained a part of the disturbance. Over a long period of years, astronomers kept seeing object of planetary shape and apparently planetary size crossing the disc of the sun, and these were almost universally assumed to be intra-Mercurial planets. Somehow it **never occurred to anyone that similar crossings of the moon, also seen** occasionally, **could be related**, nor that such objects between the earth and moon could undermine the intra-Mercurial planet Hypothesis.

Relativity? Will explain by man???

After a number of carefully observed crossings of the solar disc were recorded, some of the more able mathematicians calculated tentative orbits for an intra-Mercurial planet. They based this on the assumption that the intervals of time between transits were susceptible to a least-common-denominator which was the probable time of revolution of the suspected planet around the sun. Such calculations led consistently to disappointment and sometimes to heartbreak. No intra-Mercurial planet was ever found, although mathematical astronomers were so confidant of its existence they even named it: "Vulcan." Much time was spent searching for the hypothetical object and **many an astronomer hoped to make**

the discovery and **thus perpetuate his name**. Since it was realized that such an object would never be far from the sun, searching was especially vigorous at times of total solar eclipse. (Such an opportunity was afforded by the total eclipse of July 29th, 1878 or which more later).

***Authors* Childishness**

From the earliest days of organized astronomical observation there have been these sightings of round and spindle-shaped bodies crossing the disc of the sun. Some of these **observations disclosed objects so discordant with the established framework of the solar system that science considered them anomalous and often denied the validity of the observations and the mental balance of the observers**. Despite scathing linguistic fire, however, some of these vital notations got through to editors of astronomical and other journals.

Many such observations are tabulated in the *Observatory*, but they are also scattered through the scientific literature in general. Since it has now been irrefutably demonstrated that these could not have been intra-Mercurial planets, their significance becomes much more apparent than it was to the casual reader in the early 19th century. **We have changed our conception**, and **now** we **can accept these objects as being close to the earth. The overwhelming mass of evidence is too great to brush aside**, and **proves that astronomy has been sighting UFO's in space**.

So has ??????? but they deny it
Will always so, they too ??? (unreadable)

During the eclipse of September 7, 1820, crowds in the streets of Ebrun **saw great numbers** of objects in the sky, moving in straight lines, countermarching and turning, all separated by uniform spaces. **Five** unidentified bodies **of appreciable size** were seen by Astronomer Gruithuisen. Two unknown dark

Home-Ships, Scout ships & Life-boast.

bodies were seen by Pastorff on October 23, 1822. Webb saw an unknown thing near Venus, March 22, 1823. Many more unknowns were reported in 1823, and this may have been another peak period if these phenomena are really periodic in their appearances. Sporer saw one crossing the sun August 20, 1863. Two starlike objects were seen crossing the sun by Carrington on September 1859. Several examples are reported in *Webb's Celestial Objects*, particularly on the dates July 31, 1826, to May 30, 1828. Jaennicke saw an unknown object against the sun on May 30, 1853. The unknown planetary object seen by several people in London, and described in *Nature*, has never been explained. In the summer of 1860, R. Covington saw, without optical aid, an object crossing the sun. On June 6, 1761, Scheuten was watching a transit of Venus and **saw an object** as **round**, black, and **distinct as Venus**, **but about one-half it size,** moving for three hours across the sun. He thought it was a satellite of Venus, but since the many other skilled observers who watched the transit did not see this thing, it is most likely that it was very close to the earth's surface, and so displaced by parallax that it was silhouetted against the bright disc only in that one location.

Great Arks advance Home ship bringing news
& orders for Preparation of its arrival.

All this leads up to a showdown on the intra-Mercurial planet question. Since it has been shown by C.H. F. Peters and others that there is no intra-Mercurial planet, then what are these things?

Although C.H.F. Peters tried to belittle the sightings of all observers as illusions or fraud, we have difficulty in rejecting the statement of experienced observers like Staudacher of Nuremberg, who saw, in February 1762, a round black spot on the sun. He missed it the next day, and such was its appearance and movement that he thought it may have been a new planet.

On November 19, 1762, Observer Lichtenberg saw with his unaided eye, a very large, round spot one-twelfth the diameter of the sun, traverse a chord of 70 degrees in approximately three hours. Since

the apparent diameter of the sun is about half degree of arc, one-twelfth would be about two and one-half minutes or one hundred and fifty seconds. Mercury's apparent diameter, when in transit, averages about twelve seconds, depending on its distance of the moment, so this thing, if it be considered an intra-Mercurial planet, **must have had an actual size of more than twenty times that of Mercury**, that is, a diameter of 60,000 miles or so. Obviously such a thing as large as Saturn does not exist in any intra-Mercurial orbit. **What then, was it?** And how far away? At the gravitational neutral the apparent diameter of two and one-half minutes would represent a real diameter of two hundred miles or less. Again, it seems unlikely that a thing so large would penetrate the earth-moon system without causing some noticeable disturbance – so, again, what and how far? At eight hundred miles it would have to be only about a mile in diameter to appear that big, and we are getting used to the idea of something a mile or so in diameter and a few hundred miles away.

THE RETURN OF THE *GREAT* ARK.

Between the first and fifth of May, 1764, Hoffman saw with the naked eye a large round spot, **one-fifth the diameter of the sun**, **traverse** it slowly from **north to south**. That is a **direction of motion** almost **unheard of in the solar system,** except, perhaps, for a few maverick comets. It looks like controlled motion. The **size is comparable to that of Lichtenberg's object**, and the difference is no greater than would be apparent with an object between earth and moon shifting its position with the changing location of the gravitational neutral.

GREAT ARKS GRAND-TOUR

On June 17, 1777, Messier, cataloguer of Nebulae and Star Clusters, saw a number of little bodies crossing the sun very rapidly and in parallel directions.

D'Angos, at Tarbes, France, saw a slightly elliptical, sharply defined spot on the sun, about halfway between the edge and center, which took about twenty-five minutes to pass off the disc. That was on January 18, 1798. This movement is about eight minutes of arc in twenty-five minutes of time, and at a distance of 1,000 miles this would represent a speed of about one-mile in ten minutes or six miles per hour. At 10,000 miles it would be sixty miles per hour, and at 100,000 miles it would be about six hundred miles per hour and at 1,000,000 miles distance it would be speeding at 6,000 miles per hour. No data are available regarding its apparent size, but if it was ten seconds in diameter, just comfortable for visibility in a small telescope, its **diameter in miles** would be about 1/500,000 of whatever distance you might assign to it.

GREAT ARK

The next celestial event on our roster is unusually pertinent to our theme, and must have been startling when it was first published. On October 10, 1802, at Madgeburg, Fritch saw a spot moving two minutes of arc in four minutes of time, across the sun and not seen again after a cloudy spell. Near the sun, e.g., in a deep intra-Mercurial orbit, this indicates a velocity of 15,000-20,000 miles per minute. Fritch also states that on March 20, 1800, and February 7, 1802, he saw spots having rapid motions **of their own**. **In hundred of hours** in the dusty tomes of the **Library of Congress**, that is the first case I have found where **a scientist has state clearly that these objects were free-lance agents**. Even so he seems to have been imbued with the idea that they were near the sun, or in other words, in intra-Mercurial orbits – at any rate not adjuncts of the third planet and its satellite. This seems to be a statement of controlled motion, but Fritch said it in 1802, and Fritch was an astronomer!

On January 6, 1818, two Englishmen, Capel Lofft and a Mr. Acton saw a small subelliptical, opaque spot moving **more rapidly** over the sun **than Venus moves** when in transit. It disappeared before sunset and seemed to be of either cometary or planetary appearance. This is a well attested instance of observation by two men who were sober **and reliable**.

Gruituisen saw two bodies cross the sun together on July 26, 1819. There are a goodly number of sightings which report two objects traveling together, e.g., the planets seen by Watson and Swift during the eclipse of July 29, 1878.

A circular, well-defined spot, with a circular atmosphere and orange-gold tint, not seen again the same evening, is reported by two independent observers: Stark and Steinbuhl. It crossed the sun in about five hours. February 12, 1820.

On July 31, 1826, Stark saw a round spot on the northwest border of the sun at 4:45 PM which was not visible on either of the preceding day or following days.

The American Journal of Science, discusses reports by Pastorff for the years 1834, 1836, and 1837, wherein he reports having seen bodies crossing the sun's disc in comparatively short spaces of time. Definite dates are lacking, but there is a description of a large object, and an accompanying much smaller one, changing position relatively to each other and taking different courses, if not orbits. In 1834 he had seen similar bodies pass across the disc of the sun – looking very much like Mercury in transit – **six times**.

Now, there is another statement of rugged individualism in celestial, controlled motion. How confusing this must have seemed how frustrating **to an inhibited observer** who **could think only** in terms of intra-Mercurial planets. There was not one, but two or more bodies, of size comparable to Mercury,

***OR* ONE WHO DOESN'T REALIZE THE GALACTIC-MOLECULAR SCOPE OF EINSTIENS UNIFIED FIELD THEORY, 1922-27**

moving across the sun repeatedly with what seemed to be directed movement. But how simple it all is to us, when we are thinking of objects from one to ten miles in diameter only a few hundred miles away, or ten to two hundred miles in diameter and 150,000 miles distant, attendant on the earth-moon system, navigable, and possibly using the gravitational neutral as a habitat.

There is another observation by Steinheibel at Vienna, April 27, 1820, reported in the *Monthly Notices*, in 1862.

A very small perfectly round spot, without a trace of penumbra, was seen to cross a considerable portion of the sun's disc in the short space of six hours as observed and reported, July 12, 1837, by De Vico at Rome.

At a distance comparable to that of the gravitational neutral, an object would cover half a degree in six hours with a speed of about 300-325 miles per hour. At the distance of an intra-Mercurial planet the speed would be in the order of 100,000 to 135,000 miles per hour, which is about 30-35 miles per second – a little bit high for planetary velocity, but not inconceivable.

In October 2, 1839, De Cuppis, an astronomical pupil at a College in Rome, saw a perfectly clear, round and definite spot moving at such a rate that it would cross the sun in about six hours.

In late June or early July 1847, Scott and Wray saw a spot like Mercury in transit. On October 11, 1847, Schmidt, at Bonn, saw a small black body pass rapidly over the sun, "which was neither bird nor insect crossing before the telescope." We do not know what he means by rapidly – six hours, six minutes, or six seconds. All those would be rapid depending on where you think the object was in space. If it was, say, half an hour, and the body was intra-Mercurial, its speed would be 650,000 to 800,000 miles per hour, or 200 miles per second, which is nebular velocity, not planetary. If only two or three seconds were involved, which is a reasonable assumption since Schmidt compared the object to a seed or a bird, then, whatever it was, it was not more than a few hundred miles from the earth—certainly not farther than the "neutral." We assume that this was Julius Schmidt who became director of the observatory at Athens.

He saw a similar object on October 14, 1849, and there is still another sighting by him on February 18, 1850.

On March 12, 1849, Lowe and Sidebotham watched for half an hour a small round black spot traversing the sun.

On June 11, 1855, Ritter and Schmidt, near Naples, watched, just before sunset and with the naked eye, a **black** body crossing the sun's disc. That the color, here, is always black is of not concern. That is the only color silhouettes against the sun could have, unless they had intrinsic brilliance per unit of apparent area much in excess of that of the sun itself.

On September 12, 1857, at Wandsbeck, Ohrt saw a remarkable round spot near the north border or edge of the sun, at 1:00 PM, It had disappeared when the sun was next seen on the 14th. This thing was a little bit smaller in appearance than Mercury.

On August 1, 1858, a circular, opaque body moving from east to west was watched for about one and a half hours in late afternoon by Wilson at Manchester, England.

In 1859, Dr. Lescarbault, an amateur astronomer of Oregeres, France, announced that he had observed the passage of a body of planetary size across the sun on March 26. Dr. Lescarbault wrote to Le Verrier, knowing of Le Verrier's interest in intra-Mercurial planets. The cloak and dagger investigation and third degree imposed on the good doctor by Le Verrier is quite an incident.

Le Verrier was convinced that this was a transit of "Vulcan," and predicted another transit for March 22, 1877. **At that time astronomers of the whole civilized world were alerted**, **and an intense** and **eager watch was kept** on that date, in order to confirm the existence of "Vulcan," and to verify Le Verrier's orbital computations.

Nobody saw anything on March 22, 1877; and the whole idea of an intra-Mercurial planet has been pretty much broken down…but: what was it that these many good people really did see? Were these reputable astronomers deluded, mendacious or irresponsible? They were all highly intelligent people, educated and trained in the fields of astronomy and mathematics. Either you must say yes to one or more to the above charges, or these alert observers saw something round and solid —and it wasn't an intra-Mercurial planet.

They will NEVER ALERT the WHOLE WORLD AGAIN,
It would interfere with the petty squabbles between
Nations & cause a common-bond of the Brother-hood
of Man sort of Kinship to be realized. These Humans
Love to implose their will, to Make War, too Well.

Note how uniform the reports are as to the apparent size of these things: usually about the apparent size of Mercury; sometimes a bit larger, occasionally somewhat smaller. That implies either that the distances are usually about the same, or that these objects vary greatly in size. It seems a little more likely that both sizes and distances vary, but as or now this is debatable. We do have Pastorff's observation, and a few others, of large and small bodies seen simultaneously. It is our considered opinion that most of these things reported by astronomers as seen crossing the sun are of about the same size, and that they maintain a distance of about 150,000 to 175,000 miles from the earth for a considerable portion of the time.

On March 20, 1862, a sharply defined round spot was watched in its progress across the sun for about twenty minutes by Lummis, of Manchester, and a friend. It was about one-half the apparent diameter of Mercury.

On February 12, 1864, a spot 8" seconds of arc in diameter crossed the sun at a rate between that of Mercury and Venus. On May 6, 1865, a round black spot moving across the sun was watched by

Coumbray, at Constantinople. It was watched for over three-quarters of an hour, until its departure from the disc. This spot was a sharply defined, black point, which detached itself from a group of sunspots near the limb of the sun and crossed the entire disc in forty-eight minutes. In an intra-Mercurial orbit having one-third the radius of the earth's orbit, it would require a speed of approximately 6,000 miles per minute, or a hundred miles per second to accomplish this, and this is a very high planetary velocity. At the earth-sun neutral, however, an object would move the same angular distance in the same time, with a speed of about thirty-five miles per hour, a conservative velocity even for a UFO.

There are seven reported sightings, in 1886, of a large body being seen near Venus. These are not transits of the sun, it is true; but the objects are in general direction of the sun – and the gravitational neutral -- and there is always the possibility that some bodies are floating at the Venus-Sun neutral, as well as close to the earth.

In 1645, a body large enough to look like a satellite was seen near Venus. It was said to have been seen four times in the first half of the 18th century and again in 1867.

A luminous spot was seen in 1799, by Harding and Schroedter, moving over the disc of Mercury. This indeed, could not have been a intra-Mercurial planet.

There were two observations by Denning and Hind, persistent observers, on November 3, 1871, and March 26, 1873, and a black body was seen by Weber, at Berlin, April 4, 1876.

The London Times, for December 17, 1883, reports that Mr. Hicks Pashaw, in Egypt, saw through glasses, "an immense black spot upon the lower part of the sun."

According to Science, July 31, 1896, Brooks, of Smith Observatory, saw a round object pass slowly across the moon; he thought it was a dark meteor. It was **about one-thirtieth the moon's diameter**, and crossed in three or four seconds. According to the Scientific American, astronomer Muller saw a similar phenomenon on April 4, 1892. Now there are some objects which were actually seen to be closer than the moon. If Brooks' object was close to the moon, and traversed the disc in four seconds, it was moving at better than five hundred miles per second, and that is nebular velocity, neither planetary nor stellar, meteoric nor cometary velocity. So we adjudge it to have been closer to the earth. At the neutral it would still have to be moving at several hundred miles per second. At two hundred and fifty miles above the earth it would only have to be moving half a mile a second, If the thing was hovering, on the other hand, it would cross the moon's disc in two minutes – so it could not have been hovering.

Home-ship

All this account of objects of planetary aspect crossing the discs of the sun and moon is preamble to the hassle of Watson and Swift vs. the "profession," subsequent to the total solar eclipse of July 29, 1878.

There can be little doubt but that these objects existed, and that they existed in space; that they are quite commonly seen between the earth and t moon, and at least once between the earth and Mercury; that they appear as **discs** or **spheres**, **spindles** or **dumbbells**.

Crescents, Sackles? Two reasons for odd shapes, one Electronic-Mag-Molecular "FIELD" Migration due to "Coat" on Center Parts of Ships Drive units: other, Like "Sun-Dogs." *also*, an Enfused Ship, Hit by ultra-High Polar-infusion Wave flames up & often takes these shapes, *to some extent*. Thus you have in effect a FORCE-FIED CHARGE *OVER-CHARGING THE* DRIVE-INDUCTION part of the ship. This causes Heat, cooks the Pilot and flames the

ship to cinders if it is Not caught soon enough to cut-off (shed) the over-charge.

Location of UFO's

We have already mentioned Swift and Watson, and the objects which they saw. We are now going to present the details of how the observations were made and of the controversy arising with those astronomers who were not there and who did not see the object. We expect to show how these observations not only establish the actuality of UFO's in space, but demonstrate their approximate distance as well.

James C. Watson, one-time director of the Astronomical Observatory of the University of Michigan, wrote one of the most widely used text and reference books on mathematical astronomy. He had one of the best minds in astronomy and was an expert observer. Dr. Watson was at the peak of his career on July 29, 1878 the time of the total solar eclipse.

Lewis Swift was the director of Warner Observatory, **and a skilled searcher** for new bodies like planets and comets.

Neither of these men can be called irresponsible. They **knew the difference between** stars, planets, comets and nebulae. They did not see ghosts. However, at the total eclipse of the Sun, July 29, 1878, **they saw** unscheduled, **unexplained objects**. Like many of their contemporary scientists, however, they were too preoccupied with intra-Mercurial planets to speculate on anything close to the earth.

MOBILIZATION FOR BUILDING of Chol *was* SEEN

Astronomers came long distances to observe this eclipse. Many Europeans traveled across the Atlantic, then to the high plateaus of Colorado and Wyoming. Many were determined to make a final desperate search for an intra-Mercurial planet which, supposedly quite near the sun, should have shown up at the time of total eclipse. Both Watson and Swift arranged special equipment for this search, and both brought special skills to the task.

Watson was first to announce his findings. Through skillful use of a four-and-one-half-inch telescope (which this writer has used many times at the University of Michigan), Watson found two **disclike** or planetary objects, both red and both comparable in size to Mercury, perhaps a bit smaller. One was 2 ½° from the sun and the other between 4° and 5°. Both were to the west. Watson measured their positions carefully. He reported them as intra-Mercurial planets.

Swift saw two **discoid** objects also, of about the same size, brightness and color. He reported them as intra-Mercurial planets. But Swift saw them in different places. Whereas Watson's two were several degrees apart, Swift's were very close together. The members of the astronomical fraternity, **who were not there,** and observed nothing, were scathingly sarcastic. They maintained that Swift and Watson saw nothing but some stars which they had failed to identify accurately. But these men had memorized the star-fields and had made careful measurements. To have made mistakes of which they were accused, they would have been guilty of puerile errors.

An attitude common, even among primitives, "I haven't been there or Seen such a place or a Thing or Person or Happening SO I must SHOW a semblance of Intellec & DOUBT this thing *until* I see it Myself." (*Too Common*)

Strangely, No Sailor would believe that the World was Round even when SEEING its round-ness *Each Day*, for It WAS NOT THE PROPER WAY TO THINK THEN.

The conflict was long and hot, and towards the end it was bitter, but the observers stood their ground. They insisted that they saw something, and **since not one person in the profession could conceive of anything but an intra-Mercurial planet, no common ground was ever found for agreement.** The British professionals, and Dr. C.H.F. Peters, in the United States, were especially vehement in their protests. In a long and brilliant analysis, Peters proved conclusively that these objects could not possibly be intra-Mercurial planets, **and for good measure proved that none of the other long lists or objects seen near the sun or crossing it could be such planets.** In fact he did a credible job of proving that no such planet could exist! After studying his arguments, I most whole-heartedly concur – up to a point. That point is where Dr. Peters tries to prove that since Watson and Swift did not see intra-Mercurial planets, what they did see were erroneously identified stars. But he would not necessarily agree that they had seen anything at all. Peters was bitterly sarcastic and felt rather too secure in his superb analytical ability.

IN THE ABOVE EXAMPLED CONFLICT IT WAS NOT WHO WAS RIGHT OR WRONG BUT "WHO BUT MYSELF IS THE BEST OBSERVER: I.E. *MY* PRIDE *& MY* EXPIERENCE *OR* EGO. WHEN EGO SLIGHTS EGO, BOTH BECOME NARROW AND QUITE SMALL.

But Peters performed a wonderful service for us!

Dr. C.H.F. **Peters**, arch master of astronomical and mathematical analysis, **set up the best scientific case for UFO's which has ever been stated** – unless one denies the observations, together with the sanity and honesty of Watson and Swift and about **thirty other honest observers**. I would be **willing to rest the entire case for UFO's on Peters' analysis**, if the observations be granted as presented by those practiced observers.

It boils down to this: Watson and Swift did see two disclike objects. C.H.F. Peters proved that they were not planets and not very far from the earth.

So did 30 others.

To make a long story much too short, here is what happened. First, everybody was wrong to some degree, as often happens in bitter controversies; and everybody was partly right. Watson and Swift did see what they said they saw – but they were wrong in thinking that they saw planets. Peters was eminently right in his analysis that they could not have been planets – but he was wrong, most blindly and unjustly, in saying that they did not see anything.

Watson saw two discs several degrees apart. Swift saw them close together and near the locations of Watson's first one. Watson and Swift observed from sites about one hundred and eight-five miles apart. Parallax caused the difference in the locations of the objects. On the basis of the measured positions and sizes, it is possible for us who are not blinded by inhibition and preconception, as were Watson, Swift, and Peters, to see that these two objects were UFO's not far away, but far enough to be surely in space. One was nearer than the other. The nearest one was displaced by parallax in Swift's observations due to the one-hundred-and-eight-five-mile base line. It is as simple as that.

Watson's object "a" turns out to have been between the extreme limits of ten thousand and sixty thousand miles from the earth. The best overall consideration places it at about twenty thousand miles away. Watson's "b" object, on the other hand, which was so greatly displaced in apparent position by the one-hundred-and-eighty--five-mile base line, was about one-tenth as far away as "a." If we assume "a" to be at twenty thousand miles, then "b" was at about two thousand miles.

The nearer one seems to have been smaller. The more distant one appears to have had a diameter of one-quarter to one and one-half miles depending on its distance, and at twenty thousand miles would be about half a mile or somewhat more in diameter. "B," the nearer one, would be about one-tenth as great. This is in keeping with our mother ship concept.

As for the red color, which Peters doubted so bitterly, it is simply explained when we realize that the objects were near the earth. At such a distance, they must have been within the penumbra of the moon's shadow. They thus escaped direct sunlight which would have given them crecentic illumination. However, they were illuminated by sunlight which came first to the earth through a long thickness of atmosphere and was reflected back from the surface. The blue light was therefore screened out. When the light finally got back to the objects it was red. On being returned by them to the observers, the light passed a third time through the atmosphere and naturally it was very red. Those who have seen the moon in eclipse will remember how red it looks from just one passage of the light through the atmosphere.

At various times during the past half-century, there have been suggestions of **small satellites circling the earth, very rapidly, and close to the surface** – two hundred to six hundred miles away, that is. *The New York Times* of **August 23, 1954** discusses the rediscovery of these little bodies by Dr. Lapaz of the Department of Astronomy of the University of New Mexico. It seems that there has been some feeling that Russia may have catapulted these into space as observation platforms, and the Ordnance Department of the U.S. Army became concerned about it. While we do not deny the possibility of such an advance by the Russians, we do feel that observations covering hundreds of years disprove this supposed Russian origin of UFO's, and also establish controlled and irregular motion as opposed to the regularity of orbital motion.

In any event, it is time that the U.S.A. took note of these entities and made some study of them. Since they probably stay in the gravitational neutral most of the time, **they are never far out of line with the sun**, and **this is why it is so difficult to see them except at times of eclipse or when they are actually in transit across the sun**.

But there are ways to look for them: one is with telescopes and the other is with radar. Barring more searches at eclipse time, it does seem that radar has the better possibilities. We know that radar blips can be bounced off the moon: why not from these objects which are nearer? Let's point both our radar sets and telescopes at the region near the sun, at times of both new and full moon and see what we can see. The objects probably range a very few degrees east and west of the sun at first and third quarters of the moon. That would probably be the best time to look.

A Variation of the Radio-Telescope such as in used in England, & I Believe, New Jersey USA, can Detect Energy-forms of L-M Ships PLUS their Solid & "Semi-Solid forms as well. Detects "Nodes," too

The years 1879 and 1880 partook of the general spiciness of the era of the comets. The astronomical profession did not work up any major fracases, but then you cannot have a riot every year. However, things did happen.

There was the house whose roof suddenly took its departure on Easter Sunday of 1879 – a slate roof. It jumped up into the air suddenly and then fell back on to the ground. Beyond ten meters from the house nothing was disturbed. There wasn't the least bit of wind. This was officially recorded in the French science magazine, *La Nature* 1879. There are other cases of roofs taking off without provocation. An American case was reportedly similar.

On July 10, 1880, the conservative *Scientific American* broke its editorial policy of reticence regarding abnormal events and noted that some men were working in a field in Ontario when they saw stones shooting upward – without the aid of a whirlwind or any other obvious cause. Something seemed to be disturbing gravity.

On April 9, 1879, slag was reported to fall in the city of Chicago.

There were many falls of ice in 1879 – some at Richmond England, was in chunks five inches long.

Bright spots or lights continued to be seen on the moon in 1879-80, and the disturbances on the surface of Jupiter were so noteworthy as to cause comment in *Nature*. There were five comets visible in 1879 and six in 1880, although not all were visible to the naked eye. A green thunderbolt was reported in the *Scientific American*, and we are thereby reminded of the spate of green thunderbolts over New Mexico during the past three or four years.

The sako Banjo meteorite, which fell in Eastern Europe in the quite incredibly active years of 1879 – 80, was a strange and startling new kind of meteoric stone, and there were darkness, sun darkening, and abnormally cold winter weather.

The Great Red Spot continued to evolve and to maintain its merciless drive around the great globe of that planet. Because of its peculiar shape and movement, one could almost imagine a great interstellar space ship landing and floating on Jupiter's surface. **Its size makes this a debatable hypothesis.**

Would he believe it *when* he sees it?

But there was one astronomical event, which escaped general notice by being in the freak class. Only in retrospect is its significance revealed, for it was one of those dogs which seldom get reported except by naïve folk who think that what they see is what they see. There have been several reports of misty, fiery or cometary objects, which exhibited unusual motion. Often times, our attention is only attracted to them by unusually rapid movement, but even this has some statistical value and may signify the proximity of the object to earth. Such a report was telegraphed by Russian Astronomers in the early 1920's and was said to be moving ten degrees per hour. However, some alert observers have been acute enough to note motion which was too erratic to partake of the normal characteristics of meteoric or cometary activity, and only now are we awakening to the possibility that such erratic movement may signify direction and control by intelligence.

One of the most outstanding examples of erratic celestial movement was that noted by observer Henry Harrison, of Jersey City, New Jersey, on the night of April 12 and 13, 1879. He took careful settings and times on an object whose motion is a revelation. Harrison reported this event to the Naval Observatory at Washington by telegram, but the notice was disregarded by Director Hall, with the proper

professional aplomb; for verily it was without doubt an erratic on the periphery of the consummately damned.

Getting no response from the fount of authority, Harrison reported his discovery to the New York Tribune in a letter, and this was reproduced in the *Scientific American* May 10, 1879. It **is to the** everlasting **credit of the very conservative editors that they could and did recognize this item**, partially at least, **for its true worth**. **After publication** in the *Scientific American*, **some of the more alert astronomers bedeviled Harrison for further details,** while berating him for sloppy scientific reporting. Harrison, an astronomer of militantly unpretentious character, was depressed by the critics and embittered by the snubbing he received from the inner sanctum of the Naval Observatory. But he responded with a letter under the date may 20, 1879. After some sarcastic remarks anent people who always see wonders in everything celestial, he says in part:

…I did not think that the above phenomenon was anything but of a meteoric nature…and it would have been **XXXXXXX** to have made a great outcry. Messages sent to Professor Hall were urged by a personal friend, whom I called into the observatory to see the object; otherwise it would this day only be known to my personal friends. The **coolness** with which my dispatch was received at the Washington Observatory, after great inconveniences in sending it, **has compelled** me **to regret any publicity on my part**. The presumption that I found Brorsen's comet ought to have been abandoned immediately from the fact that Brorsen's comet moved a little over a degree per day, whereas this object moved with a (variable) rapidity of two minutes of Right Ascension of one minute of time, passing the comet by about four degrees…There is one fact, however, which reconciles me to it, and that is the fact that the object was seen also by Mr. J. Spencer Devoe, on Manhattanville, New York, who published a letter to that effect.

After acknowledging indebtedness to his friend, Henry M. Parkhurst, for his interest, he gives the details of his observations:

POSITIONS OF OBJECT 1879, April 12 (Local Mean Time)

Time	Right Ascension	(Rate of R.A. per minute of time	North Declination
8h 40m PM	2h 34m	2.4	37°
9 10	3 46	3.1	37
9 35	5 04	2.6	37
10 30	7 08		37 06'
11 30	-- --		37 28'
2 10	15 30	2.3	37 30'

He comments on the irregularity of motion.

Harrison concludes by hoping that Devoe will quickly publish his own observations for corroboration and confirmation, but as of the date of this writing I have not succeeded in finding any such report. The report from Devoe would be of considerable importance to the case for intelligently directed motion. Anyone reporting the reference will be making a worthwhile contribution to the *Case for the UFO's*. And unless we deny the veracity of Devoe, Harrison, and Parkhurst, or impugn their intelligence as observers – or both – there cannot possibly be any argument against manipulated objects of the misty or **ethereal types** in space.

So called Ethereal types are the Old Force-
Shield cooking full blast, Made good Protection.

With his letter to the *Scientific American*, Harrison sent a description and a sketch. He described it as looking like a planetary nebula, which has but slight resemblance to a comet, or any other celestial object. To us, however, there is value in his drawing. A planetary nebula is almost circular, and certainly **not flat on one side**. This object looked organic. We are vaguely reminded of some of the shapes of pyramids, bells, pears, etc., which have been reported for generations. Clearly a nebulous or gaseous object, freely suspended in space, would assume a symmetrical shape and fuzzy edges. This thing did neither. Its appearance alone indicates that it was a UFO. Its motion clinches the argument. There are other similar reports in history of astronomy, but this one can be our prototype. **It should be a classic**, not only of observation but **of how an inhabited and regimented science can pass up the most spectacular of discoveries**. It is just possible that **this is the most important and revolutionary telescopic observation ever published,** especially **if** we place as high a value on discovering and contacting a **new racial intelligence** as we do on finding new nebulae a few million lights years distant.

Yeah, IF. Well, Nobody's interested.

Before you get excited about that harmless little table of figures, and complain that I'm turning technical, I will give a modicum of explanation. Right Ascension (usually abbreviated RA) is the astronomer's technical way of locating an object eastward among the stars, from an arbitrarily selected point in the sky, and corresponds to longitude on the earth's' surface. Declination is the distance north or south of the celestial equator, and corresponds to latitude on the earth's surface. It really is not complicated.

We will better understand Harrison's observation if we realize that an object hovering directly overhead will move among the stars at a rate of one minute of RA in one minute of time. Imagine yourself lying under a tree at night looking upward at the stars. As the earth turns on it axis the twigs above you move slowly eastward across the stars at exactly one minute of RA per minute of time. Harrison's object was moving approximately three times that quickly.

These figures of Harrison's are the very thing for which UFO protagonists have been praying. They are the scientific pay-off!

Three minutes of RA per one minute of time **is much too rapid for a comet**, and the object didn't even look like a comet. Such a speed is **impossibly slow for a meteor**, not even a fraction of one per cent of meteoric velocity; and it certainly has less resemblance to a meteor than almost anything you could name. A comet very close to earth could move that rapidly, but a comet **would not make sudden changes in direction**. Under the laws of gravitation it could not.

It is important to note that during the first three hours the object **did not move in declination**. Hence it was not moving in a great circle, but around a parallel of declination, which in turn means that it was moving straight eastward, which, except at the equator, is impossible for uncontrolled motion – so it **was** directed.

So What.

But, then, it suddenly **changed from one declination to another** – an impossible maneuver for an uncontrolled body!

Catch one of them A Magnetic "Net" will do.

Mag. "deadfall" cut-out field controller would be considered a Crack-Pot Idea even if it *is*[1] the only chance *to catch one*. Must Cut Mag. field intake to do so.

[1] Italic by Jemi

Harrison's bell-shaped object was moving almost three times as fast as rotation of the earth would cause it to do. At first one hesitates to say that it was hovering, but a little mathematical deduction indicates an object merely drifting with currents of the upper air and at one hundred miles latitude would need to have but 2.4 miles per hour velocity over the ground, an at ten miles above New York and appearing in Dec. 37° north, it would be drifting only a quarter mile per hour and would have been but seven-tenths of a mile south of Harrson's observing point an therefore directly over New York Harbor.

Furthermore, if the object was actually moving in a straight line, overhead, it would appear to speed up slightly when it crossed his meridian (the N-S line) and this is precisely what it did. And, assuming that it shifted its position slightly so as to pass nearly over the city, its shift of a little more than half a degree of declination would indicated height of from ten to one hundred miles.

Considered from ANY approach, this object appears to have been organic, intelligently operated and hovering over New York City!

The *New York Tribune* of April 26, 1879, published a letter from Mr. Devoe, dated April 17, in which he stated that he, too, had at first thought it to be a planetary nebula like one near Beta Ursa Majoris, but he was equally astonished at the rapid pace which carried it away so fast that he could not find it again after taking time out for coffee. A little can be gained from his letter. He says the object was wonderfully brilliant, and at least the size of the Praesepe star cluster, which is a well-known naked eye object, and was brighter than Praesepe. It would, therefore, appear that it was brighter and larger as seen by Devoe than by Harrison, and if such a small difference in the site of observation could make such a difference in appearance, then the wanderer was indeed close to New York City. From Devoe's rough description of the size, this object would have been about half a mile in diameter at an altitude of eight to one hundred miles, If I can find a more accurate report of Devoe's observations, I could learn more about the size and distance of the object.

Whatever this thing was, and whatever may be the accuracy of our speculations as to its speed, distance and size, it exhibited motion inexplicable except as intelligent control.

There is a suggestion for us in this story of Harrison's rambling object. **Professional astronomers are not spending much time, if any at all, in searching the sky** for comets or **cometary objects.** For more than a hundred years most of this has been done by amateurs, and today very little is done by anybody. We have seen that a minimum of quantitative observation by Devoe would have enabled us to determine the distance, altitude, speed and size of Harrison's object. We do not know how many of the things there are near the earth, so why not start a UFO searching campaign among a coalition of UFO enthusiasts, amateur astronomers and radio hams?

Dr. Bone's crude observation of the discoid object was of the greatest importance in confirming Dr. Gould's discovery of 1882, and the observations of Bone and Tebbutt established the great parallax which has enabled us to show the proximity of those objects.

There are apparently two classes of dirigible UFO's to look for. One is the planetary, disclike things seen near the sun and moon, as by Watson and Swift, and the other is the cometary type as seen by Harrison.

The cometary ones can be swept for, just as are comets, and with the identical equipment – special comet-seeking telescopes with structure, and lenses designed for that purpose. Any telescope can be used and there are many idle ones.

I do not believe that large numbers of cometary UFO's will be found, although I am not sure. Observers near large centers of population, atom plants or industrial sites **will probably have the most success.** But while the number of expected objects is small, the searching is easier than for discs. **(red is B and Jemi)**

The planetary discs, like those of Watson, are difficult to see because they stay nearly in line with the sun and moon and are lost in the glare of sunlight. Even so, **this assures that they will be in a very limited part of the sky.** Why not devise ways to search the regions near both sun and moon, **especially at new moon** with telescopes and radar? Because of the glare, radar would seem to offer the most likely chances of success as it will not suffer interference from the sun.

We have some tremendous advantages for this type of research today. We note the essential necessity for simultaneous observation from at least two points. **This can be ONLY accomplished through the help of the radio ham networks**. Let us set up dozens of observational stations, with telescopes, and let us man them with at least one saucer specialist, let us add some radar observers, for triangulation can be effected by radar as well as with telescopes. Let us maintain instantaneous contacts via the ham networks so that if one station sees a suspicious object, other stations can be alerted immediately; let us report all of this to an established central office.

WILL NEVER BE PERMITTED BY OUR GOVERNMENT
***TO* A PURELY CIVILIAN SET-UP NOHOW**

In this way we **can track these** erratic **things to their source**, be it the upper atmosphere, the moon, the gravitational neutral, or what have you. The UFO's problem can be solved, despite the curtain of secrecy, **by coordinated effort**. If an observing station in, say Philadelphia discovered a fast mover, they could alert observers in Baltimore, Harrisburg, and Jersey City, and **a quick, triangulation would tell just how far out the interloper was, how big, and its speed.** This would be a new type of saucer patrol, and would doubtless **result in some genuine comets being discovered as well as xzxxx suspicious characters**. So much the better.

This would make a good cooperative program for all interest parties. A specially organized saucer club could sponsor it.

IT WOULD DO LITTLE GOOD, EVEN IF A COLONY
WERE OPENLY ESTABLISHED IN U.S. LAND. FOR,
THOUGH, MAN WOULD THEN THUSLY REACH THE STARS
THEY WOULD "FEEL" THE LITTLE-MEN TO BE "SUCH
CHILDREN" THAT THEY I. E. MAN, WOULD "THINK"
THE GIFT OF SPACE LIGHT TO BE MUCH MUCH MORE
MPORTANT THAN THE PHILOSOPHY BY WHICH L-MS
LIVE IN, WITH & OVER THOSE MIND WRECKING CON-
DITIONS THAT SPACE & SEA CONTAIN AND YET THEY
LIVE WITH THESE, *SO VERY HAPPILY* THE ONLY
THING "BAD" about such a colony is the fact
that Little-Men DO NOT REMEMBER TO ALWAYS RE-
MAIN VISIBLE. WHEN EMBARAASSED THEY GO "POP"
& thus they "Hide" REASON: REPEATED H FE'SHIP
STATE GIVES L-MS THIS ABILITY. THUS NOW YOU
SEE OVER-ALL WISDOM OF EINSTIENS RETRACTION
OF HIS UNIFIED FIELD THEORY. IN U.S. NAVYS
SHIP INVISIBILITY EXPIERIMENTS(sic), 1943. RESULTS
OF SUCH UNINFORMED TINKERING *SEEMED* TO SHOW
THE CORRECTNESS OF HIS "REASON" FOR RETRACTION.

The Height of the Puzzle

There is no way of estimating how many of these fast-moving space objects escape all notice, nor is there any way of knowing how many are seen but not reported for fear of embarrassment. We have found a few examples, and still further search of the literature would produce more.

Colonel Marwick, amateur in South Africa, saw an object near the moon on September 27, 1881 (not the concentration of these in 1881), like a comet but moving very rapidly. On August 28, 1883 Captain Noble saw something "like a comet, new and glorious." On the nights of September 11, and 13, 1883, Professor Swift, at Rochester, saw an unknown object like a comet, and something was seen in Puerto Rico and about the same time in Ohio.

The most spectacular of these speed demons was seen by Captain Eddie, at his observatory in Grahamstown, South Africa, on October 27, 1890. It was **called** a comet, but almost certainly was not, for its description was much more like that of Maunder's auroral object. In fact it has something of the appearance of an auroral arch bridging a quarter of the horizon, but moving with a deliberate speed very similar to the Maunder thing. This object of Captain Eddie's sped 100 degrees across the sky in three-quarter of an hour. It made Harrison's cometary whiffit seem to be hovering, which no doubt it was. How far away was it and how high? What was its size? Who knows? But, a second observation from Pretoria, Johannesburg, Bloemfontein, East London, Port Elizabeth or Capetown would have located it definitely and determined the distance via parallax – and at that speed ??? we know it was close enough to exhibit great parallax – and thence we could sense its size and real speed, and perhaps its nature.

Another one of these celestail mavericks was seen by Professor Copeland, September 10, 1891, and Drayer saw it at Armagh Observatory and **Alexander Graham Bell saw** it **or one like it in Nova Scotia the next night**. If these astronomers made time measurements, and **those measurements could be found**, they would be invaluable to us today.

There were other things that were happening in 1879-80. There was reported a great waterspout at St. Kitts, in the West Indies, about the first of February 1880. It was **called** a waterspout and reported as though a single and unassociated entity. But while a solid mass of water of unknown origin was drowning St. Kitts, masses of water were deluging the Island of Grenada three hundred miles away. And in the Island of Dominica, masses of water broke windows and roofs. Mud **fell in tons**. Rivers burped with the detachables of the island: trees, cattle, houses, people. Other nations and islands were hit by masses of water. Colombia and Salvador were among them. Beginning on October 10, and continuing until the catastrophe at Saint Kitts, there was deluge after deluge on the earth – in one zone of latitude, the north tropical area. It seemed that a swarm of meteoric lakes must have gotten in the way of a rotating earth. **To most of us such a thing "just could not be"**. **But it did happen**, and it is doubtful if meteorologists have ever assembled all of the data on that series of floods. Maybe it was **not as general as the world-wide deluge** of 1913, but it was bad enough, and its very concentration within a limited belt of terrestrial surface is sufficient for us to conclude that **extraterrestrial** forces and materials **were involved.** These storms partook, of the ado of a very disturbed period in which we should have become aware of our spatial environment.

On May 15, 1879, Commander Pringle, of *H.M.S. Vulture*, saw luminous waves of pulsating water. They were **under the surface**, not above it, and passed beneath his ship. The appearance was that of a revolving wheel of light, with illuminated or luminous spokes. In fact there were two wheels, one on each side of the ship, and the phenomenon lasted more than half an hour. There have been several such reports, and most of them come from oriental waters.

MINDINAO "DEEP" PROJECT STILL IN THE BUILDING
They will never finish that city Chomlegi has not
enough F to finish its planned growth but Location good.

About this time an enormous number of luminous bodies were seen to rise from the horizon in Germany. They shone with remarkably brilliant light and passed horizontally from east to west. A carbonacious (sic) mass like brown coal fell from the sky in Argentina. The red, blue and gray hailstones fell in 1880. An object of quartzite was reported to fall at Schroon Lake, New York. Ricco, at the Palermo Observatory, saw long parallel line of bodies crossing the sun. **The wheels of light in the sea were seen again** in May and June of 1880, **reported from more than one vessel at sea**. The three lights moving in the ravine at St. Petersburg were seen on July 30, 1880. Luminous phenomena continued to appear on the moon throughout 1879-80, including a luminous line, cable or wall which was seen January 23, **definitely dividing in half** the **very** brilliant **interior of** the prominent **lunar crater** Aristarchus, which has been carefully studied for centuries by those who suspect the moon of harboring life in some form. This was seen and sketched by Trouvelot, one of the few skilled astronomical observers with artistic ability.

A dead "sea serpent" was found at sea in early 1880, and sailors danced **on its upturned belly**. Something similar, like a turtle sixty feel long and forty feet wide was reported in the *New Zealand Times*, in December 1883, and there were several reports of huge marine animals during the comet years.

IF SO CALLED "SEA MONSTER OR SERPENT WAS A L-M SHIP *IT IS STILL THERE* UNDERSEA IF IF S-Ms NEUTRALIZED IT: THE L-MS WILL NOT HAVE COME BACK *OR* CALLED FOR IT, IN S-M TERRITORY.

The flying machine over Louisville, Kentucky was of 1880 vintage, and also the thing changing shape over Madisonville, Kentucky. The British trading ship, *Atlanta*, bound for Bermuda, was lost in 1880 – without trace **in that region** so well known today as **the area of missing planes and ships**.

There was an invasion of insects – flies – in 1880. Clouds of them, millions and millions appeared over Havre, France, as though from the Atlantic. On August 21, they blackened the air and seemed exhausted when they fell. The same day a cloud of long, black flies, so large that it took twenty minutes to pass, blackened the sky over Nova Scotia. Another cloud on September first. East or west, they seemed to come from the mysterious Atlantic. In November, a host of flies overwhelmed a schooner off the coast of Norfolk, England, lasting over five hours and driving the crew below decks. On September 4 the steamboat *Martin* was swarmed by a cloud of flies that reached as far as the eye could see; a drift of black snow. On the fifth a cloud of black flies appeared over Gusboro, Nova Scotia; took over half an hour to pass.

According to the *New York Times*, a woman was killed in 1880 in a closed room which nobody had entered. Explanations were that she had been killed by lightning, but bedposts were chopped as by a hatchet.

There seems almost always to be poltergeist activity in England, but an especially cirulent (sic) case broke out in October, 1880.

The year 1880 was in the midst of what we have chosen to call the years of the comets. There were six comets in the skies of 1880. The 19th century as a whole showed increasing activity in comet discovery, and in the number of bright comets. In part this can be attributed to increasing interest in telescopic work, and to improved availability and quality of small telescopes suitable for amateurs who made up a growing body wishing to participate in astronomical research, but lacked the great, fine-quality instruments of the large observatories. But such activity **cannot in any way** account for the very bright, very spectacular comets of 1880, 1880, and 1882, with their attendant phenomena, many of which can conservatively be described as abnormal. One had two tails; one aft and one forward, and appeared to have nuclei exhibiting independent motion within the head or the coma.

Study the following table of comet discoveries:

Period AD	New Comets Found	Average per year
1782 – 1801	25	1.25
1802 - 1821	26	1.30
1822 – 1841	36	1.80
1842 – 1861	83	4.15
1862 – 1881	79	3.95
1882 – 1889	40	5.00

There is a hint, of the added activity which we have suspected for 1845-55. Astronomer Barnard tabulated the comets discovered for 1876-86 and published the results in 1886, almost as though he felt, even then, that something abnormal was going on.

The score for "The Decade" is as follows:

1876 . . . 0	1882 . . . 3
1877 . . . 6	1883 . . . 2
1878 . . . 3	1884 . . . 3
1879 . . . 5	1885 . . . 6
1880 . . . 5	1886 . . . 3 (first seven months)
1881 . . . 8	

The peak at 1877-81 is very noticeable, without taking into consideration the number and size of the naked eye comets of mid-decade. What with comets, red spots, Hyginus N, will-o-the-wisps like Harrison's lights on the moon, and objects crossing the sun, the decade of the 1880's was, for certain, ushered in with a blaze of celestial glory, and it ended with a fanfare of puzzles.

The light of comets has been seen to fluctuate in rather remarkable manners. This was especially true of Pon's comet during its return in 1883-84, at which time it manifested the spirit of the times and presented some eccentric behavior. Its brilliance, for example, increased thirty-forty-fold above that explainable from merely becoming closer to the sun. In addition there were hour-to-hour fluctuations of one hundred percent and more, and concomitantly the nucleus experienced some tortuous changes in shape and structure, as such as we will note again in the great comets of 1881 and 1882.

In the *Monthly Notices* of the Royal Astronomical Society, there is detailed description of all of the six comets of 1880, and there is added the following:

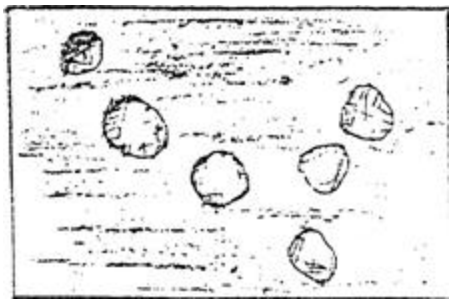
In addition to the six comets, an object was observed by Mr. Swift, of Rochester, New York, on April 11, 1880 in the constellation Ursa Major (Big Dipper) in RA 11h 28m and Declination 68º, and supposed by him to be a faint comet. However, no motion was detected in one hour. It was not a nebula for it could not be found again after a period of bad weather.

Like Harrison's object, this was farther north than usual for a comet and quite far from the sun. If a comet, it should have manifest motion in an hour. The fact that it did not, yet moved away later, is indicative of controlled motion. Its stationary position suggests hovering.

Meteors came in for their share of attention during these years. The Royal Astronomical Society had a committee which assembled meteor data for a long period of years, and published it regularly as a part of the permanent records of the Society. Many of these meteors were of remarkable characteristics. For instance, in the *Monthly Notices* of December 1880, W.F. Denning describes a very "slow" meteor which took fifteen to twenty seconds to cross the sky and mentions a "stationary" meteor which seemed to be approaching the observer in a sinuous track. There are many references to unusual meteors during

these years, and there are hundreds of drawings showing meteor trains, explosions, zigzag paths and erratic movements.

On the night of April 18, 1880, a storm of unprecedented severity passed over Missouri and adjacent states. Local whirlwinds, probably tornadoes, developed, and at least one town was completely destroyed. Everywhere along the track there was evidence of a wave of water flowing in the rear of the cloud spots, and in places debris was carried over obstacles of considerable height. The direction of the currents was always uphill. One man and his family were deluged by a wave of water and they said the wave was about fifteen feet high and was icy cold. Stones weighing several hundred pounds were lifted from the ground and carried along for some distance. There is an accredited statement that a stone **weighing two tons fell from this storm** into a field belonging to Mr. S. Rose, but it was impossible to determine from whence it came.



These six UFO's were seen and drawn by Astronomer Barnard, October 14, 1882, and were only 6º from the head of the great comet of 1882. They were accompanied by a spindle-shaped object, looking like a "mother ship" only a few degrees away. This comet had a tail which preceded it, and a complicated head which contained moving parts. Schmidt, at Athens, saw a number of these nebulous UFO's move away from the comet into space.

Now, there is a storm for you! It covered parts of several states. **The two-ton stone is a problem**, and where did all the water come from, since there are surely no waterspouts in Missouri—and it was icy cold water!

Why?

1880!

What wind Velocity could ever *Lift* a two ton stone off of a Hill top and *Maintain* it in the air *until* it was carried to that spot. How far was the nearest Hill *where* such a stone could be found at all?

The above questions will never be asked & so Will never be answered & if asked, No one would want to tell the truth, Lest he be Led away to the "Funny Farm" or Etc of the Like.

The Case is Proved! (B & Jemi)

In the summer of 1881, a routine announcement appeared in the form of a letter to the editor of the German Astronomical publication, *Astronomishce Nachrichten*:

While scanning the western sky on the evening of (May 22nd) with the unassisted eye, I detected a hazy-looking object just below the constellation Columba, which, for my familiarity with that part of the Heavens, I regarded æs new. On examining it with a small marine telescope I found it half and five and one-half magnitude…and the head of a comet…and telegraphed (the news) to Mr. Ellery at Melbourne…

This announcement was signed: John Tebbutt, Observatory Windsor, N.S. Wales, 1881, June18th.

This seems to be an entirely normal and innocuous communication, and would have been except for certain complications. Astronomers of the Southern Hemisphere immediately started making measurements of the comet's position. It would be a few weeks before the fuzzy object moved far enough north to be seen from observatories in Europe and North America.

Because of the shorter distance for mail, the following communication arrived in Germany ahead of Mr. Tebbutt's letter and appeared in *Astronomische Nachrichten*:

On June 9th, I sent you the series of observations which I made of the bright comet which has now passed to the North…the weather has been exceptionally bad and only two additional observations have been obtained. The first of these was on the 10th, (compared) with a star which I have not yet been able to identify. (My italics) It is, however, with regard to the second…June 11th, that I now write you…On that evening the comet was found with but little difficulty…although it was quite pale in the bright twilight…I obtained a preliminary determination of its position…for the purpose of identifying some comparison star, when I discovered one in the field…It was blurred by the thick haze and mists near the horizon. I believe it to have been as bright as second magnitude. On attempting to identify the star I found it in none of the catalogues. On the next evening I scrutinized the region without finding any visible star. A glance at the comet, which had moved nearly 3 northward, showed no visible object (accompanying it). I send you the observations as they were made:

Position of the comet determined from the setting of the telescope:
Right Ascension 5h 11m 04s; Declination 9º 36':
Sidereal time 10h 58m 09s.
Comparisons (Distance of comet from comparison star):

Cordoba Sidereal Time	Difference, RA	Difference, Dec.:	Second Time
11h 08m 49s	0m 49s	5' 12.9"	4.7"
11 02.5	49	08.2	0.2"
13 11.0	48	08.4	5.6
14 37.5	48.5	02.8	

The whole observation seemed to me so improbable that I have hesitated a good deal before sending it to you, fearing some gross error…But I have discovered none. Cordoba, 1881, June 16th. B.A. Gould.

(A "comparison" is the measurement of the location of a moving object such as a comet as related to a fixed star. It is the manner in which orbits are determined. It is not always easy to find a known star close enough to make a good comparison.)

Let us review Dr. Gould's statements. He had bad weather which handicapped him in seeing both comet and stars, and made all objects somewhat hazy. He made a comparison on June 10, but failed to find his companion star in any chart or star catalog. This item was overlooked by all correspondents in the controversy which followed, including the astute editors of the *Astronomische Nachrichton*, the *Monthly Notices*, and *Nature*. Do not forget it; for it is important to the *Case for the UFO's.*

A comet, or any other celestial body, moving under the natural forces of gravitation, traverses a smooth curve, and while its velocity may vary, it does so smoothly and gradually. Dr. Gould, **a skilled observer whose Argentine Star Catalogues have been accurate reference material for eighty years**, was deeply concerned because his observation of the comet indicated erratic motion. Later he was even more seriously troubled because he could neither identify his companion star nor relocate it. Nobody, much less an astronomer, likes to make a fool of himself, and to be frank this whole set of observations looks like mincemeat. It took courage to report this melee and **a man of lesser standing than Dr. Gould would have been brushed off.**

DR. GOULD WOULD HAVE *HAD* TO TAKE DR. PETERS ATTITUDE IF HE WERE HANDED THE VERY REPORT THAT *HIS* PROFESSIONAL INTEGRITY DEMANDED THAT *HE* SEND TO ASTRO-NACHRICHTEN AND TO OBSERVER MR. ELLERY. WOULDN'T HE!

The observations speak for themselves. There is little change in RA but such as there is reverses itself in the fourth comparison. In declination there was rapid motion (too rapid for this comet), the outright reversal, then rapid motion again. Such a thing is unheard of and, as Dr. Gould indicates, it is enough to shake an observer's confidence in his own ability. It is very difficult to escape the conclusion that one of these objects was moving erratically, and since there is no reason to suspect the comet, and since the "star" could not be found at later times, the "comparison object" must have been moving rapidly and erratically.) An explanation occurs to us, but in 1881 such explanations were of such heretical nature that no one even thought of them, much less put them on paper.)

Dr. Krueger, editor of the *Astronomische Nachrichten*, calculated the position of the comet for June 11, using orbital elements determined in the meanwhile, and analyzes the whole situation. His analysis was translated and published together with still further editorial discussion. Since Dr. Gould's position for the comet agrees well enough with the calculated position, the erratic motion is attributed to the star. After considerable mathematical deduction, the conclusion of the European astronomers was that a second comet had been mistaken for a star. This, however, did not account for the irregular motion.

Normally, this would have closed the discussion. But they reckoned without the intrepid amateur from Australia, the active and competent Mr. John Tebbutt. He immediately took pen in hand to address the editor as follows:

I have read the letter of Dr. Gould, dated June 16th, with much interest. It is quite obvious from the change in the relative declinations of the comet and the bright star of comparison, that the latter could not be a fixed star, and the only feasible conclusion is that it was a companion comet. But that this object had no existence a short time previously to Dr. Gould's observation is I think, shown by negative evidence in my journal: "The horizon being clear before sunrise yesterday morning I rose to observe the comet. The diffused twilight and full moon… prevented me seeing any stars near the comet for comparison. There was certainly no star of brighter than seventh magnitude…it will be found that (my) observation preceded the first comparison at Cordoba by only 1h 29m…" I feel confident that, at my last observation, no such object as that described by Dr. Gould could have been in the field with the comet…P.S.: Could Dr. Gould, by any possibility, have observed the blurred images of the stars, BAC 1592 and 1597, and if so is the former a variable star? (The difference in position is about the same, and different magnitudes

have been assigned to BAC 1592 by different observers) John Tebbutt, Observatory, Windsor, N.S. Wales.

There are two vital points in Tebbutt's letter. First, he establishes that he was observing the comet only one and one-half hours before Gould, for, because of the difference in longitude the evening of June 11th in Cordoba was the morning of the 12th at Windsor, New South Wales, Australia. He then states that the object used by Gould for comparison was definitely not visible at Windsor an hour and one –half before it was seen at Cordoba.

The second point is the suggestions that Dr. Gould, by mistaken identity, observed a pair of stars which, by strange coincidence, have about the same distance and direction from each other as the comet and "object." Except for a rather supercilious assumption of Dr. Gould's incompetence as an observer, Tebbutt's suggestion is not without merit. Yet there is one rather deplorable flaw in Mr. Tebbutt's letter; and we quote: "but that this object had no existence a short time previously to Dr. Gould's observation is, I think, shown by negative evidence…"

This is an unjustified and ill-considered conclusion and statement. True, Mr. Tebbutt did not see the object, under conditions in which it should have been seen according to his viewpoint. His assumption was, of course, that the object or star was as distant from the earth as the comet, if, in fact, it did exist. Therefore, if Gould saw it, Tebbutt should have seen it. Tebbutt didn't see it…ergo, it wasn't there!

Not satisfied with a somewhat reserved statement in *Astronomische Nachrichte*, Tebbutt sent a scathing letter to *Observatory* (1882) in which he reiterated all of his arguments, belittled Gould sarcastically, and postulated that one of the pair of stars which he thought was observed by Gould was sufficiently variable in light to have been mistaken for second magnitude while normally appearing as sixth or seventh magnitude. It would be hard to find more irrelevant data.

Mr. Tebbutt was quite honest in his conviction that Dr. Gould had made some kind of crude and unpardonable error in observing. The coincidence of a double star, the components of which have about the same relative position as Dr. Gould's two objects, had let Mr. Tebbutt completely astray, and his indignation at what he considers stupidity caused him to make the unnecessary insinuation that Gould was careless. Tebbutt went so far as to invoke a temporary outburst of light in one star to account for Gould's confusion.

Up to this point, nobody, including the cooler and more objective astronomical editors in Europe, had tried to explain why one skilled observer saw an object which was plainly there to be seen, while another experienced man did not see it. All efforts went toward proving one of them wrong.

But the confusion was only well started. A new astronomical knight-errant entered the celestial jousting. In a publication of the Royal Astronomical Society, January 1882, we find a letter to the editor from W. Bone, M.D., another amateur in Australia. Dr. Bone deposed as follows:

On June 10th, 1881, whilst measuring the position of the comet (at this time it was called comet 1881b) I noticed a peculiar discordance in each succeeding measure, and at length found that the star (?) from which I was measuring, was a rapidly moving body. At first I was inclined to believe it (the star) was the result of refraction, but this would have affected both the comet and the star nearly equally. On more careful inspection, I found it was somewhat discoid, but its light, although bright, was diffused and hazy. It moved through 6' of arc in 34m 34s of time, in a northerly direction. I telegraphed to the Melbourne Observatory and asked instructions. Bad weather prevented me from searching for it next morning and in the evening I could not succeed in again picking it up, neither could I find it where seen on the previous evening. I never received any answer from the Melbourne Observatory. This struck me as so remarkable that I decided to send you my records, Castelmaine, Victoria, 1881, October 22nd, W. Bone, M.D.

In a subsequent letter, Dr. Bone says that his stray object moved about 24s in right ascension in the same interval of time, and that he estimated it at about 2.5 magnitude in brightness, which agrees

closely with Gould's estimate of his object. Bone quotes his telegram and concludes that both he and Gould have seen some peculiar type in addition to comet 1881b.

We are now sufficiently remote in time to have an objective view, and we can see more in this correspondence than met the eye in 1881-82. Hark back to Dr. Gould's announcement. Not only did he fail to relocate his comparison star on the 11th, but he admits that his observations on the 10th also failed for the same reason. Now, Dr. Gould, producer of the *Uranametria Argintina*, was too experienced a man to make this sort of blunder as a matter of habit. Something more than carelessness is demanded to explain.

We now have that something!

Dr. Bone made the same error, if it can be called an error, and at not too different a time, on the 10th. His comparison star disappeared also. It, too, was moving rapidly during the period of observation.

It is impossible to avoid the conclusion that something was moving around in the sky, which Bone and Gould thought was a star, or at least as distant as the comet, and which some other equally capable people did not see at all. The element which was consistently overlooked was the possibility that the wayward cometary object(s) was close to the earth and not as distant as either comet or stars. Even Dr. Bone, in his belated statement, failed to see the connection between his abortive observation of the 10th and Dr. Gould's similar debacle.

It seems obvious that the illusive thing used by Bone for comparison was moving rapidly enough that it come into line with the comet as seen from Cordoba a few hours later, and thus appeared to offset the effect of the rotation and revolution of the earth in causing parallax. This can only mean that the position of the object was being maintained on a line between earth and comet, which (the comet being close to the sun) was very close to being the line between the earth and sun, and hence through the neutral. Rotation of the earth brought first Bone and then Gould into this line, the revolution of the earth on its axis around the sun being offset by the object revolving with the earth around the sun.

The apparent movement of the object quite rapid as seen by both observers, was a movement relative to the stars (including the comet) and was a natural consequence of the object maintaining its position between earth and sun as seen from the earth. This, if our analysis and reasoning are even partially correct, **proves** intelligent control and space navigation!

Zemja pdrida fastaticoni, dlo? He proves this too Many times, Not? Thus, Who would ever believe him here.

The fact that Dr. Gould saw something again, on the 11th, from Cordoba, indicates either that there was a second object, or that the first one was still maintaining its position in the line of sight. That Tebbutt did not see it during the morning of the 12th, at Windsor, Australia, is obviously due to parallax of a very high order, and this established the proximity of the object to the earth rather than to the comet. Anything closer than the moon might very well fulfill these conditions, and since the gravitational neutral of the earth-sun is within the moon's orbit, it becomes not incomprehensible that the object was maintaining itself **at "the neutral,"** or thereabouts, and perhaps even adjusting itself to the gravitation of the moon at the same time.

"S"

But Mr. Tebbutt's sense of scientific proprietary had been outraged. He wrote again to the Editor of *Observatory*:

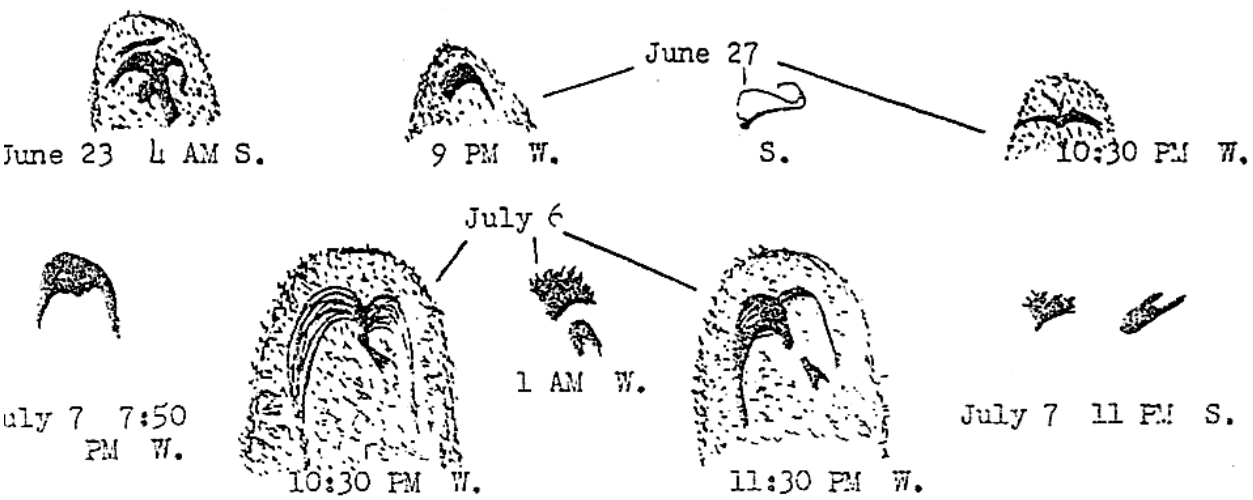
Sir: No sooner had Dr. Gould's mysterious observation of comet 1881b been, as I conceive, satisfactorily explained, than another bone of contention (italics by Tebbutt) is presented to astronomers in the shape of two papers in the *Monthly Notices*, but it is one which I trust may soon be disposed of…

Tebbutt then goes on to point out that the comet was only sixteen minutes of arc south of the star 8 Leporis when observed by Bone, and that at about that very moment the comet was being compared with that star by the astronomers at Melbourne only a few miles away. He says that the last of Mr. White's comparisons must have corresponded very closely with Dr. Bone's observation, and that Mr. White did not see any such object as was described by Dr. Bone.

So great was the interest in the debate that the editor of *Nature*, March 30, 1882, made another comprehensive survey of all available reports, including a very able defense on the part of Dr. Gould, acted as arbitrator and tried to calm the troubled waters. This **controversy** must have appeared to contemporaries as a tempest in a teapot, and perhaps meaningless, but to us, of the UFO age, it is important, for it represents real observations bearing on a real **problem.**

TO THIS MAN THERE IS A PROBLEM, *NOT* TO ANYONE *IMPORTANT*.

The Editor's dissertation is long and somewhat technical. Too much so for our use here. It boils down to a rather hesitant conclusion that Tebbutt's explanation of Gould's observation is the most reasonable one available, and poor Dr. Bone is pushed aside, with the assumption that he used the star 8 Leporis for comparison and was deceived by differential refraction of light in the earth's atmosphere. It was considered that Bone's object simply could not have existed without being noticed by the professionals at Melbourne, neglecting the fact that Bone estimated the brightness at **thirty times as bright as 8 Leporis** and of definitely disclike shape and size.



COMET "B" OF 1881

No one was happy about this tentative settlement, but Dr. Bone saw something-nobody denied that. He describes what he saw as discoid. A comet does not have a disclike appearance even under good "seeing' conditions, and under adverse conditions a star becomes comet-like rather than discoid, due to haze and turbulence. We have to conclude that Dr. Bone saw something large enough and near enough to the earth that its disclike shape was not lost in the haze conditions. That is **even closer** than the moon, and is very probably within our own atmosphere.

Obviously the ship was *in Distress* or Under Attack, else it would Not have been using so Much Power, thus going so Slowly & Glowing so fiercely. Oh! Yes! Was the L-M inspection ship, in distrustful truce of Above "S" ship, FORCE SHIELD GOING FULL POWER FOR *PROTECTION*

But there is another powerful factor to consider. If this celestial object was even approximately as far away as the moon it would **not** have sufficient parallax to take it out of sight of the Melbourne observers while Dr. Bone was observing at Castelmaine, only three minutes of longitudinal distance away. Therefore, **it was so close to Dr. Bone's observatory that it was** completely **out of the line of sight at Melbourne**. To have been seen as a disc, to move so much more rapidly than a comet, and to have only an infinitesimal part of the velocity of a meteor, this object had to have been controlled and navigated.

Little wonder remains that all astronomers were puzzled by this thing, or series of things, for **such proximity to the earth was unthought** of in those days – and is unrecognized and **unspoken** today.

Who dares panic a World so intent on showing
off its Morals compared to another Nations?
Such revelation of fact extant would Make All
Mankind Brothers, bound by need of one anothers
resources to observe & fight the "S" men.

In *Nature*, the patient editor breathed a sigh of relief as he rendered a final account of the Gould-Tebbutt imbroglio. He follows his **usual policy** and quotes almost verbatim from Dr. Gould's final letter of rebuttal against Tebbutt:

…we gave an account of Dr. Gould's observation on June 11th of last ;year, and it was mentioned that Mr. Tebbutt had suggested that the objects were 60-Eridini and Bradley 718. This explanation was considered a probable one and the same view was taken by the Editor of *Astronomische Nachrichten*, which has occasioned a further communication from Dr. Gould who rejects Mr. Tebbutt's solution. Dr. Gould says the appearance of the comet precluded the slightest doubt as to its identity; "The verist tyrp could recognize it as a comet…" no jar of the telescope took place. The field of the telescope was fully under control from the beginning, the declination clamp remaining tight. **No account of blurring could have given such an aspect to a fixed star,** though it was far brighter 60-Eridini. Dr. Gould doubts if a star of the sixth magnitude would have been visible under the circumstances. He concluded: "I can only suppose another comet to have been in the field. That it is not a companion comet is manifest, not only from the relative motion, and for examination next day, but from later abundant scrutiny in the Northern Hemisphere. That it was not a fixed star was evident from the beginning." Thus (says the Editor) is the matter left by Dr. Gould, who, it must be admitted, is by far the most competent judge of the probable explanation of the difficulty.

Again, the matter should have rested, but Mr. Tebbutt was to be heard from again, and Gould replied with a final rebuttal to all of them.

The Parthian shot came **from a surprising source**. Dr. **Piazzi Smith**, Astronomer Royal of Scotland, wrote in *Nature*, as follows:

While there seems no doubt that the honor of being the discoverer of the great Comet of 1881 belongs without doubt to that life-long and most persevering observer, as well as successful computer of comets, in Australia, Mr. John Tebbutt, three communications which have chanced to arrive here this morning from different countries, containing the most diverse ideas of the nature of that portion of the comet's light which universal spectroscopic observation proves inherent to the comet itself, which is **quite different** from the reflection of solar light.

"Pyacha" he was to us & Piachi he "called"
Himself, too. *Smith* My eye!

The rest of Smith's letter is too technical for this book, but it will suffice for our purpose to say that this comet was **a most remarkable object** and appeared to contain incandescent materials. Piazzi Smiths' **explanations of the electrical nature** of the comet's condition are about on an intellectual par with his soaring hypothecations **on the portents** of the Great Pyramid. All we need to know is that

Tebbutt's comet partook of the generally anomalous celestial turbulence of the Comet Years, in which it was one of the most exotic displays, and helps to establish that there are more things between th earth and Heaven than meet the unwary eye of our proud but ignorant race.

No one has **yet fully explained the fact** that a body, **so ethereal** as a comet, **does**, at time **emit light which is** apparently **of it own generation**; nor have the apparently self-generated **movements of the inner particles** of the comet's nucleus **been explained**. No one, thus far has suggested that these lights and great tails might offer a means of signaling over distances of a few billions of miles – to the Red spot of Jupiter, for instance.

> ***Force-shield* going full-power, Warding off**
> **the occasional onslaughts of fast Moving Space**
> **"Junk" – When operating, SO gives off "cold-light"**
> **& it fashes-up WHEN IT HAS BEEN HIT BY**
> **SILICA-Corb Space Debris.**

It matters not the Dr. Bone's findings were criticized. The fact that he did see the object (or one of them if there were two) established two things: (1) it confirmed Dr. Gould's observations of erratically moving, nearby objects on two nights instead of one; and (2) it demonstrates parallax of a pronounced amount, and hence the **very close proximity** of at least one object, and we are very forcibly reminded of the discoid things seen by Watson and Swift. If Dr. Bone did not provide completely scientific and accurate comparisons, it is indeed no matter, for such observations on a transient object, not supported by a series of other observations from other locations, could have been only qualitative at best.

The drift of at least one of these unknown objects was comparable in speed with that of Harrison's wayward widget, so there is some little indication here of one object very close, perhaps within our atmosphere, and another some thousands of miles out; **one** rotating with the earth (seen by Bone but not by White). **and the other *(?)*** maintaining position in line between the earth and the sun (seen by Gould, but not by Tebbutt). This is as we have surmised in the case of Watson and Swift in 1878.

Could all of **these astronomers, professionals and competent** amateurs, **have conceived of a body being so close** to the earth, yet moving slowly, maybe **within our atmosphere**, they **would have realized that they had a new** and awesome **problem on their hands** – perhaps the key to many a celestial enigma.

Both Gould and Bone had valuable clues within their own observations, in consideration of the erratic movements and the circularity of the objects described by them, showing that the objects were neither stars nor comets. Nor could they have been intra-Mercurial planets because they were illuminated neither crescentically nor gibbously. Parallax was the ultimate kingpin of the tangle, and rules out all of these possibilities. It may even be that these **were the selfsame two objects seen by Watson and Swift**. It may be that they are the two objects sought today by Army ordnance and **Dr. Lapaz**. It may be that today's amateurs can find them if they will look toward the sun.

> **One Was "S" The other "L-M", as the Peipoles (sic)**
> **Historian, I must say Neither harmed the**
> **other, for *that Was* During the Time of Truce**
> **& inspection, the Results of Which we all**
> **know. *Lapaz is Harmless.***

In any case, we have here recorded verified proof, when properly analyzed, of the existence and location of UFO's. Inherent in this proof, too, is conclusive evidence that intelligence and control exits (sic) in the UFO's.

Let us rest our *Case for the UFO's* with a provocative episode which took place at the same time the strange "comet" was born…1881!

The British ship *Ellen Austin*, in mid-Atlantic, encountered an abandoned derelict **in perfectly seaworthy condition**. A salvage crew was put aboard the strange wanderer, with instructions to make for St. John's Newfoundland, where the *Ellen Austin* herself was bound. The two ships then parted company in foggy weather. But a few days later they met again.

Like their unknown predecessors, the salvage crew had vanished…forever…without a trace!

A Note on Sources for
THE CASE FOR THE UFO

Those readers of The Case for the UFO, who have a flair for research, or who may desire to study the background phenomena in more detail than can be offered in such a short volume as this, may wish to consult source material directly. **Such material is of vast extent, and to merely list it here would be impossible**. In addition **nobody knows the real extent of material related to space life and space activity,** for it appears in a multitude of very diverse publications. **In most of the records, the persons noting observations did not recognize the basic causes**, and therefore had no categories into which they could place their data, so that much of it appears in the public press and in general magazines.

For instance, when we look for data about activity on the Moon we find it scattered through practically all of the volumes of several series of scientific journals, including *Observatory* and *The Selenographical Journal, Nature, Science, English Mechanic, Knowledge, Astronomical Register, Reports of the British Association for Advancement of Science, Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Society, Astronomische Nachrichten, Sirius, L'Astronomie, Popular Astronomy, Intellectual Observer, Science Monthly, Philosophical Magazine, American Journal of Science Scientific American, Journal of Astronomical Society of the Pacific,* etc., **not to speak of innumerable serial publications of various Universities** and Observatories, and many popular treatises such as *Proctor's Astronomy*, and *Webb's Celestial Objects.*

Some of these series have been published continuously for more than one hundred years, and some, such as the *English Mechanic*, may average close to 1,000 pages per volume. Scanning them, even superficially, becomes a stupendous job. We have cited some specific references, and some general ones. The serious investigator could make a worth-while contribution to the Science of the UFO by selecting any one of dozens of serial publications and intensely perusing all of its volumes from Vol. 1, No. 1, clear through to yesterday, and reporting his findings.

There is absolutely no general rule as to what kind of publication to look in. The nuggets of information may appear any place at all, including old almanacs. But within any publication or series of periodicals, there is one best place to look: Letters to the Editor. These can be published without the Editor having to commit himself to belief or disbelief in the report.

Readers who live in small communities are urged to scan old files of their local papers for news of things falling from the sky. It is altogether possible that, if enough persons make searches, we can find more than ample material to prove the case for the UFO once and for all. If you live in a small community, it may well be that your facilities for research are better than those of the large cities.

One should note local historical sketches as an important source. There are hundreds of such publications from every locality of the United States. They were very prevalent in the 19th century, especially circa the stunning decade of the 1880's. They were prone to report peculiar storms, abnormal

weather, and unexplainable occurrences. Almost every County in the U.S. published one of these histories in the latter part of the 19th century or the very early part of the 20th.

Rural people are much more weather-conscious than city folks. So, in our **quest for records** of falling masses of water, we are **most anxious to have data** from rural records.

One field of research which we do not believe to have been worked is sportsman's magazines such as *Field and Stream*. The correspondence columns of such magazines should supply some data on singular clouds, storms, UFO's and erratics from space.

The most general and intangible of all the categories for search is probably that extensive list of old books and magazines of general character which contain stories of local events and records and diaries of famous men, as well as legends and traditions. Much valuable material is buried in these, and often in single, isolated paragraphs with no headings or warning or what is coming. Most of these items will be picked up by accident by alert readers whose interests attracted by the novelty of the statement or the perplexity of the original writer.

The listing of ALL astronomical references bearing on UFO is utterly impossible in this book. Such a bibliography would require a volume to itself. In the series of the *Astronomical Register* (British), alone, there are several hundred page and paragraph references. Doubtless, it is due to our previous lack of comprehension as to the nature and broadness of the UFO problem that such data have **not been recognized for their true worth and import**. For this book, the astronomical records were fairly well searched for a brief period of about fifteen years centered around the "Comet Years"—say 1870 to 1885 – with spot checks at other dates.

WHAT HAPPENS WHEN A BOLT OF LIGHTING HITS AT A POINT WHERE THERE IS A "NODE" SUCH AS A "SWIRL" IN THE MAGNETIC SEA *OR WHERE* A MAG. "DEAD' SPOT" caused by the NEUTRALIZATION OF MAG. SEA contra GRAVITY ESPECIALLY, WHAT, WHEN THE NODE & BOLT BOTH ACT OVER BRONZE INLAY

The Good Doctor
Is far more aware of Committing the Cardinal effrontery of Unorthodoxy than he wishes to show, perhaps. Too, He wishes to have More & More & More, a flood of Data, & facts & records of observations that will back-up his Theory. It would seem Much More apropo were he to not ask for further Proof to show to his fellow Professional Deriders *but* Were He To Proceed Himself into the *only* field that *would* convince each and Every one of His fellows; That field of Gravity & Magnetic exploration, as yet Untouched, He THEN could say the Moon is Hollow & *Not* one person would say a Word. Approach to Morals & Ethics of Science, Not New. Newton proved His Theory throo observable phenomena The which *any one* could obseve & *So has this Man*[1]

Not to anyone important.

[1] *Italics by A and B*

If the history of the Great War of the ancients were ever recorded, except by the black-tongued o ones own tales, It would cause Man to stand in awe (or disbelieve) that such Huge Satelitic Masses were ever deliberately tossed throo this atmosphere in an attempt to Demolish all of the "Little Men"[2] Great Works. Fortunately for Mankinds ego only a Gypsy will tell another of that Catastrophe. and we are a descredited (sic) peopole (sic) , ages ago. HAH! Yet, Man Wonders where "we"[2] came from, and I Do Not Believe that they will *ever* know. These folks on *this* planet are so engrossed in their puny pettiness & Squabbles that If the Great Bombardment were to happen again They would destroy each other in *blind Panic*. Ah! Well, Their own "Great Book"[2] Prophecys (sic) that they will surely do so *and* kick this Planet off its orbit, away from its Solar System, even "The Moon shall not shed her glow" & Well, stars "falling" & the Sun "Going out" or *away*, seemingly. *They will blast this Jewel into Dead Space*[1]. A good thing that we have Learned to not war. pyac ma droba jesi tlodlic' Truscani *The Atruscans know Generosity overwhelms.*[2]

My Dear Brothers:
No one Single Man has dared before to do so Much to expose the facts of the Matter before us. I say to you that *this Man Fears* and so Will not ever go any farther than this "Soap-box." *He Definitely Lacks Character ENOUGH to go further*. So do not concern yourselves with Him at All. What if I am Wrong? Even then *do Not be Concerned*. I say to you this man is Plainly too interested in "*Who*"[2] shall be Wrong" Rather than whether his touch upon *Fundamental Principles of Force utilization* is or is not so. Thus He tys (sic) Himself all up firmly. In short, he is a "Small" man, too small to Lay *himself* upon the alter of Such Exploration as Would be necessary to Prove Definitely that he is correct beyond *any* doubt. No, He is "Proud-Small" and will *only* defend his *investigations*, Not *that* theory, at all. As you see, it is plain, on the final Pages of this, His "Soap-box," Even if Some one Else took up the Work

---

[2] "Quotation marks by Jemi

[1] *Italics by A*

he recommends to "enacted by Law" It is now already to Late for the Gaiyori are too Madly Racing to destroy each other & will Very Soon *Do* So, over a Mere Parcel or two of the sections of *this* Planet, or over Who is Right & Who is Wrong or from Jealousy (ENVY)[1] of the other. They are yet Children, These Humans, Show it *too Clearly*. As things Stand, They Value Materiall thing & Will not apply themselves to True Values of *Their own* Great Prophetic Book. In Principal Yes, but Not Practice No Christian Nation or Diplomat will *ever* be of True Value to another. *Thus, Destruction*. This Man is No Different He too is *Not*[2] of a "Big Spirit" enough.
Dle Puka

[2] *Italics and insertion of the word ENVY by Jemi*

THE BLACK AWAKENING

Rise of the Satanic Super Soldiers and the Coming Chaos

THE BLACK AWAKENING

RISE OF THE SATANIC SUPER SOLDIERS

AND THE COMING CHAOS

2009

RUSS DIZDAR

PREEMPTION BOOKS & PRODUCTS

WWW.SHATTERTHEDARKNESS.NET

WWW.THEBLACKAWAKENING.COM

WWW.PREEMPTIONBROADCAST.COM

THE BLACK AWAKENING

A PREEMPTION BOOK PUBLISHING

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED©2009

THE BLACK AWAKENING
A PREEMPTION BOOK
CANTON, OHIO
PO box 755 Uniontown, Ohio, 44685

COPYRIGHT©2009 BY RUSS DIZDAR
COMMON AND AUTHOR ©

No part of this book may be reproduced, stored, stored in a retrieval system or transmitted by any means or in any way-no photocopying, copies, recording electric or otherwise without full written permission by author and publisher-preemption books. With the exception of brief quotations in reviews ©

All rights reserved

COVER DESIGN
CHARITY DIZDAR
EDITING
SHELLY DIZDAR

All scripture quotations are from the NIV. Holy Bible, New International Version. By common permission of…500 verses or less Copyright© 1973, 1978, 1984 by International Bible Society

FIRST EDITION 2009
WWW.SHATTERTHEDARKENSS.NET

ISBN-978-1-60725-415-7
eISBN-978-1-25713-147-1

Categories: Theology, prophecy, eschatology, spiritual warfare, satanic ritual abuse, mind control, conspiracy and Biblical

INTRODUCTION

I hope you are ready, it is the end of the age and the time is very close. This book is about the very end and the coming catastrophic collapse of everything. So far we have seen only the surface, the waters are choppy but its underneath the surface where the real danger lurks. The cause of all of this has long been neglected and over looked…or maybe it's because of a supernatural blinding – deception and seduction.

It's what's behind the scenes that are moving nations, economies, militaries, politicians and people. There is a 'spirit' breaking through the veil as never before. Many can feel the ominous others have embraced its masked face as something good. Judas did that once and the deception ran circles around him, used him and left him in a field called Akeldama (field of blood). I may not have written well but the message is true, vital and a summons to choose.

I will say in this book that the unprecedented levels of deception and seduction are here and it will only get deeper and darker. The dark side of the supernatural has come through the cracks and its full force is ready to pounce.

As you read this book you will see the term *'chosen one'* many times. Let me give you a definition here and now.

'*Chosen Ones'* are those so named because they are 'chosen by satan' to serve him. *Chosen ones* are those who have come up through old bloodlined satanic (Luciferianism) groups that are committed to a coming new order and supernatural world leader. These are the many victims of satanic ritual abuse and soul ripping mind control. All of them at this point have been selected, born and raised in this dark system. They have been split and have many sub personalities (multiple personality disorder). Most of those sub personalities

have been programmed (mind control) and demonized. They are highly trained and constantly maintained. *Chosen ones* have many abilities, powers and a deeply seated agenda. Believe it or not they confess they are the troops of the coming antichrist, which they say are here to unleash hell on earth, in a chaos…such as the world has never seen.

The conspiracy to bring in globalism is here and almost ready to burst into power. This conspiracy was spoken about 3,000 years ago in Psalm 2. It's reveled that this conspiracy is embedded in world leaders, nations and the masses of people. The goal of globalism is what many are focused on but that goal is only a necessity for the real end game.

That end game is found in Revelation 19:19. Coming to this world is the largest and most advanced military system in human history. This military goal is evolving and emerging as you read. It will not find its unity, supernatural power and most advanced weapons until after the 'great revolt'. *Chosen ones* deep inside have personalities who know all of this and are waiting for the call. Some kind of supernatural wave will come as planned and as needed. It will strike the sleepers in the *chosen ones* only to awaken 'empowered programmed' satanic warriors and they will unleash THE BLACK AWAKENING.

November 8th 2009

THANK YOU

To all those victims who have been fighting their way out of the darkness. You are brave and have helped give warning to others. May God heal you and let your life break free!

To all of those who have worked with us over the many years, some stand to this day, others continue the mission of God as time draws down. For some, those who have fallen please know God knows the depth of the battle and your pain. But you must get up "strengthen what remains…" and fight as never before. God will let His fire fall on you again.

To the many friends, authors and media colleagues may I say you have given me so much. I pray Romans 15:13 for you.

To law enforcement and military friends who see what I see and know what time it is, thank you for your labor, sacrifice and service to God.

To my little family as I call them. My wife and daughter who have seen so much of what this book is all about. You have experienced the spiritual warfare and the great victories that our Savior Jesus has given. Thank you for your love, service and help in all of this life in Christ we share. Thank you for help with this book! I love you both so much and am grateful to God I have you.

And of course thank you to Jesus! You are God in human flesh and Savior of the world. You are my friend and awesome God, creator and redeemer, infinite and yet so personal. May all who read this book know you are my life, motivation and King. May all who read this book encounter You, know You and be there with You in Your soon coming descent (Revelation 19:11).

Russ Dizdar

2009

PART TWO

SEQUENCE OF SATANIC EVOLUTION

"……he was furious because he knew his time was short"

Revelation 12

CHAPTER 1

THE PROPHETIC FUTURE

"And there was war in heaven……"REVELATION 12:7

"Most people are naturally quite skeptical of the notion that someone's thoughts and actions can be controlled by unseen actors"… Intro to PROGRAMMED TO KILL

"The fallen condition of mankind, the sin of the human heart alone, does not explain the abnormal psychoses and the universal snarling and fouling of human relations." p 21 DESTINED TO OVERCOME

WAR IS HELL ON BLOODY FIELDS

War is hell they say, bullets, blood, bodies, smoke, pain, ruin and then we do it all over again…and again. War and the passion of the makings of war are here and we are on our way to the final one, the one that ends the presence and reign of real radical evil. There is an end to all this you know!

The day is coming when humanity's wars will end but it's not in the hands of man. Believe it or not it all began as a spiritual, supernatural conflict and it will end as the most supernaturally spiritually charged battle in all recorded history. Never in the past have we ever seen such a day. It is coming for sure. Never again will it occur…this is written in the vast sovereign halls of Scripture. We should have paid more attention to the One who hung bleeding on that old rugged cross. His words have never failed up

to this very day. They will not fail in what they say about the very end either.

"For then there will be great distress, unequaled from the beginning of the world until now—and never to be equaled again" MATTHEW 24

You are someone who cares about the end, are you not? That may be the reason you are reading this right now. The end is one of the great motivations of why I write. Everything on this side of heaven ends. It wasn't meant to be this way, not at all, but we are the ones who opened the door of destruction to this raging conflict, one we should all regret.

What happened in the heavenlies came here and we chose to join this battle, a violent insurrection! We have been confused and dazed ever since. We fight ourselves, we fight in our families, we fight others and we even fight God in this dark spiritual fog of deception…. And that always leads to destruction.

"Deception always leads to destruction…."

A friend and writer with great insight wrote that line. Bob Rosio in his book 'Hitler and the New Age' says this phrase in what I think is the main point of his thesis. Bob paints a picture of the spiritual forces that led the way in pre Nazi Germany to the Nazi party, its leaders and a war that left bodies piled 12 feet high in the extermination camps. Millions lost, the world lost but history does not teach those who still have the *platform* of war in their hearts.

In his great book the author reveals the same type of spiritual forces that lead the Nazis then are now at work the world over. These are the forces that Mr. Rosio believes are leading the USA and the world to a deception that will lead to mass destruction and war again. These forces are guiding world leaders to what is truly the mother of all wars. You will have to travel with me to the future and then to the past to get the overall picture. You will then have to look at the present to see where we are and why we are sliding down this bloody avalanche.

TRAVEL TO THE FUTURE R-1919

Time travel is a fascinating subject for sure. I once sat with a *chosen one* and discussed this possibility and heard their views. It was amazing how much they knew and what they thought was possible. Remote viewers today claim they can 'remote' the past and the future and many predictions are out there to read. Oracles claim predicting powers and prophesy the future. Psychics keep reading and predicting people's futures, with little accuracy.

Many today are waiting on the edge to see if any of it is true. Others are making videos for millions to see on u-tube; they say extra terrestrials, extra dimensional entities and lots of channelers are saying the same thing in predicting the future. Even the drug taking researchers of the Mayan prophesies are chiming in. The predictions of the 2012 phenomenon are filling the shelves with both doom and or a coming new age for an evolved humanity. All of these are fascinating millions but are coming with little or no accuracy.

Accuracy is vital if one is going to predict the future. Accuracy was a litmus test in Scripture to determine if the insight was coming from God or spirits of deception. Fulfillment of detail prophecy can determine whether the prediction came from the flawless infinite or from a corrupted finite presence.

Before I get into the R-1919 (Revelation 19:19) prediction let me tell you about the work of the Spirit of God in predicting the future. When speaking on the work of the Holy Spirit one must see His personhood, power and eternality. He is uncreated, infinite and God in the full force of deity. He was there in the special act of creation, moving and shaping the breathtaking beauty. He initiated, guided and carried along the 40 writers of biblical revelation, from three continents and with three different languages. These writers all knew God on a personal level. They also knew that they were being guided by the Spirit of God. This book has Words animated by the breath of God and its prophecies have never failed.

"All scripture is God-Breathed……" 2 Timothy 3:16

For a great work on this see Rene Pache ('The Inspiration and Authority of Scripture') or Benjamin Warfield (The Inspiration of Scripture). Those writings are classic and through.

This biblical revelation is filled with past prophecy and examples of accurate fulfilled prophecy, hundreds of times over. Never failing and evidencing an infinite power and infallibility these Scriptures speak even now animated with the very presence of God.

This revelation has many more prophecies about the future that are on the brink of being fulfilled. When you look at the 300 prophecies that spoke of the first coming of Jesus Christ and the detailed fulfillment of them one is left in awe and amazement. Most folks today are seeking an informed future without taking into account the massive work of the Spirit of God in the work of prophecy.

This massive account includes the coming of Jesus Christ, His birth, birth place, birth mother, His nature (Immanuel) and His suffering (cross) which were all predicted 700 years in advance (see the book of Isaiah). Even His resurrection from the dead was foretold 1,000 years before it happened (Psalm 16). If you really care about the future and an advanced accurate revelation of it start now and read the book of Matthew in the Bible and note how many times 'fulfilled prophecy' is noted. Also take a moment to contemplate these words the Spirit of God gave and guided:

"And we have the word of the prophets made more certain, and you will do well to pay attention to it, as to a light shining in a dark place, until the day dawns and the morning star rises in your hearts. Above all, you must understand that no prophecy of Scripture came about by the prophet's own interpretation. For prophecy never had its origin in the will of man, but men spoke from God as they were carried along by the Holy Spirit. 2 Peter 1

Here are seven revelations about Biblical prophecy:

- It was all *initiated by God* the Holy Spirit. Every writer of Scripture knew they were led by the Spirit of God and never claimed it was their

human ability that guided them. They knew every word they wrote was from the Spirit of God who was upon them whether instruction or prophecy."We have not received the spirit of the world but the Spirit who is from God, that we may understand what God has freely given us. This is what we speak, not in words taught us by human wisdom but in *words taught by the Spirit, expressing spiritual truths in spiritual words*."1 Corinthians 2

- It was researched deeply and can be researched like this today. "Concerning this salvation, the prophets, who spoke of the grace that was to come to you, searched intently and with the greatest care, trying to find out the time and circumstances to which the Spirit of Christ in them was pointing when he predicted the sufferings of Christ and the glories that would follow." 1 Peter
- It was given to those *who knew God* on a personal level. They all knew the God they were being lead to write about. It was all an interaction based on personal fellowship. See the Psalms, note how the writers speak of their personal relationship with God, their personal experience and then of the work of the Holy Spirit in the work of prophecy. See also 2Peter1; 1Cor.2
- It was *always accurate* and will continue to show this pure accuracy. In Matthew you read constantly that 'it was fulfilled'. The predictive words of Jesus in Matthew 24 are quoted the world over. There He gave the panoramic view of the very end of days and they are all being fulfilled with historic accuracy right before our eyes. There is much there that is right around the corner of our coming history.
- It dealt with persons, nations, world leaders and *end time events*. Whether a king, kingdom or future global events biblical prophecy included them all. Nothing was out of reach for the Spirit of God. Psalm 139 will give you a look at who the Spirit of God is and what He is capable of. He is infinitely different than the ancient and present deceptive spirits of the dark side.
- It claims *distinction from counterfeit prophecy* and the work of fallen finite spirits. There were true prophets who knew and walked with God. There was also in the past, present and will be prophets (predicted by the Spirit of God) who are false and are guided by dark spirits with their end time agenda. See 1Timothy 4:1. Please note this revelation well; it predicts the massive ramping up of end time

counterfeit spirits and deceptive spiritual teachings and prophecies. Many of these false teachings will be written and disseminated to the world. Also take a look at the warning of false prophecy in 2 Thessalonians 2.

- It is the only accurate glimpse of *actual future* events. In biblical prophecy the events occur as was predicted and occurred with detailed accuracy. Judas sold Jesus out for how many pieces of silver? It was predicted hundreds of years in advance. The infinite God knows how many hairs are on your head. He knows the past, the present and the future all at the same time. In this moment He knows the writer and the reader with infinite (perfect) knowing. This takes in all the contingencies but reveals real and the only accurate future history.
- Now let's move to R-1919. Here I am talking about the place, events, individuals, movements and where collective history is taking us. This prophecy is not because God wanted it to occur this way; it is a prophecy that will occur this way because of three things.
- The prophecy of the visible return of Jesus Christ from heaven to end all radical evil and usher in a perfect peace and healing of nations. "Look, he is coming with the clouds, and every eye will see him…" Revelation 1:7"
- The sequence of satanic evolution, which is the step by step process of satan's actual and final work in the world. "The coming of the lawless one will be in accordance with the work of Satan displayed in all kinds of counterfeit miracles, signs and wonders, and in every sort of evil that deceives those who are perishing." 2 Thessalonians 2
- The collective choices of people, nations and world leaders; who they choose to follow and what they are led to do. "Why, do the nations conspire and the peoples plot in vain? The kings of the earth take their stand and the rulers gather together against the LORD and against his Anointed One." Psalm 2

'It is also a prophecy that reveals the *ultimate development of current agendas*.'

It is also a prophecy that reveals the *ultimate development of current agendas*. This prophecy involves political, military, environmental and economic agendas. These agendas deal with vast spiritual movements,

military science, national goals, global events and the *deepest inspiration of dark presence ever experienced in history*.

Did I say the "….*deepest inspiration of dark presence ever experienced in history*"?

Yes, and if you're not sure about these 'dark powers' you will miss the motivation and supernatural arrangements that are going on right now. All of these factors will synchronize and show up on that field on the final day of human history as we *will* know it.

Now let's look at R-1919:

"Then I saw the beast and the kings of the earth and their armies gathered together to make war against the rider on the horse and his army." Revelation 19:19

Here are 14 things I want you to see in this one verse:

- *1. It is connected to many other revelations in Scripture.* Go back to Daniel 2,600 years ago and it foretells the same story of this end game. Matthew 24, 1Timothy 4:2, Thessalonians 2, 1 John 2 and the entire book of Revelation all speak the same message with prophetic authority. It is worth the time and effort to study biblical prophecy since there is so much of it. There is no other writing that has this much information on the end of days. The Bible is a massive source of revelation (data) on the end of days, revealing God's mission and the agenda of satanic powers. Please also note that this prophetic revelation reveals the end goal of God for you, all the nations of the earth and their leaders (kings). If this matters to you, take a look at Romans 16:25-27.
- *2. It is an accurate and actual glimpse of real history.* Prophetic revelation has always given pictures of real time future history, the events and the details. As with the hundreds of prophecies written before the coming of Jesus Christ the first time so it will be with the rest of biblical prophecy and the events of the second coming. Each and every prophecy coming from Scripture was accurate and was fulfilled as and in actual human history. This prophecy of R-1919 will come

about in detail also. It is a glimpse of actual future history and you will be on one side of it or the other. It cannot and will not be changed because it takes in all contingencies; man's will, satan's agenda and the sovereign work of God.

- *3. It involves and reveals the real goal of a luciferian agenda.* Those who are most influenced by and servants of the dark side of spiritual presence all speak of making lucifer the winner. They plot, plan, work against and will lead the masses to this field. Those luciferians, *chosen ones*, still intact with raging passion want God destroyed. So will those on that field in that day. It is clear those on the field of battle that day are there to fight the descent of Christ. They want Him annihilated.
- *4. It reveals the final goal of the coming antichrist.* Here we see the antichrist on the field leading the global army into battle. The antichrist is there in leadership and has what he sought in the seven years since his 'apocalypse' to the world. He has his army and it's there to make war on Christ again. This verse reveals what satan has to do and what he will do to seek that goal.
- *5. It reveals the antichrist and the globalists got that far.* R-1919 reveals that antichrist does gather the world together in a satanic synchronicity. By this time on the prophetic calendar they would have taken the mark of the beast, worshipped the image of the beast and were guided by that spiritual wave of dark powers sent to them (See Revelation 16).
- *6. It reveals that the world is in a global unity to make war on God.* War on God! It's almost unbelievable but those on the field in that day are united to fight the descent of the living Christ. This is the very same Jesus Christ who died for all of them on the cross some 2,000 years ago. The return of Christ is a massive and main part of the goal of salvation and the end of evil. They are there to stop Him and the fulfillment of judgment of all evil for all time.
- *7. It reveals the world's most supra natural and powerful leader.* Beyond Hitler, antichrist is born, developed, empowered as the most supernaturally charged person outside of Jesus Christ Himself. This is 'homosatanus' the counterfeit Christ in every way. This involves counterfeit incarnation, power, purpose and presence. All that he is, says and does is animated with the living presence of satan (the ancient

dragon) himself. His arrival will bring with it the apex and height of demonic manifestation.

- *8. It reveals the world's most supernaturally charged soldier and military power.* Beyond the PSI warriors of today the 'armies' on that field will be the most advanced in technology, spiritual empowerments and numbers. The weapons of today and more will be there on the field. They will be committed to this agenda with all that they are. The current *chosen ones* (satanic super soldiers) of today and their belief of being the very troops of the antichrist will be the most advanced ever when on that field. These soldiers on the field will be supercharged with the powers of darkness as never before in human history. This army of 'charged' soldiers will come from every nation of the earth united under antichrist. Soldiers of today beware of secret projects and super soldier enhancements.
- *9. It reveals a critical mass and consensus of the world community.* The world will be behind this goal. The nations will be gathered there. Their kings both political and military will lead the way. They are there in consensus and unity to fight what they believe is their enemy. Please remember that the world of Jesus' day charged with their sin, political powers and satan's leading took Jesus to the cross the first time. Don't forget they screamed "Crucify him, Crucify him!" Then they murdered Him. How did they do it then, to the Prince of Peace? Beyond mind control, it's the control of heart and soul.
- *10. It reveals the work of an unseen but real lethal presence.* Jesus said satan is the father of lies and a murderer. Jesus revealed that dark spirits destroy, steal and kill human life. The dark powers are said to counterfeit the real powers and grace of God. They do it though to deceive people and to keep them from God.
- *11. It reveals what globalism, planetary defense weapons, and the new spiritual agenda of today is all about.* We are moving toward globalism as you read. There is a new age alternative spirituality guiding all of it. Weapons development today is all preparation for the coming war called Armageddon.
- *12. It reveals the audacity and spiritual lust of the ancient fallen cherub.* Satan sought to kill Christ the first time. See Revelation 12. Satan even engaged Christ and sought to lead Him astray Matthew 24.

- *13. It reveals the Middle East as the center point.* All things point to Jerusalem; it's the hot bed of future and the final conflict. Armageddon is there.
- *14. It reveals R-1919 is the fulfillment of a 3,000 year old prophecy.* Psalm 2 is a living Word of God speaking today to you, leaders and the whole world. Study PS2, Revelation 16 and 19 and you will be able to connect the dots very well.

TIME TRAVEL TO THE PAST

Here is an amazing glimpse of R1919 from 3,000 years ago. You have to connect the ancient PS2 with Revelation 16 and R1919. PS2 speaks of the future and the details of mankind's feeling and consensus in those last days. In reading PS2 you are traveling to the past and reading about the future *not fully here*. Right now in these last few in-between days we can and must respond to what God is saying. PS2 is the place that once again reveals God's infinite nature, omnipresence and passionate desire for the salvation of all people everywhere. Here God speaks in personal invitation and warning. Here are living words meant for today, for you the reader and the sum total of humanity. It is a living communication pouring out heaven's call in the madness of these last days. Here in PS2 God addresses directly the masses of people, the nations of that future and the kings (political-military) leaders who rule.

[1] Why do the nations conspire (rage) and the peoples plot in vain?
[2] The kings of the earth take their stand and the rulers gather together against the LORD and against his Anointed One. Psalm 2

Psalm 2 is to date a 3,000 year old prophecy given by the Spirit of God that finds its detailed fulfillment in R1919. Take the time to think through and listen to these living words. Here God questions globalism, its nations, peoples and kings. Here God reveals what they want and what they are going to do to get it. Here God reveals His invitation to peace and eternal friendship before this tragedy happens. Here God reveals the end of world history as we know it. Here we have a message that has been speaking and

does now speak with power and authority to all the current kings of the earth, all the nations and all the masses of people.

Would to God, ambassadors of God would go to every king/leader and tell them…NOW. What an evangelistic endeavor this could be in this hour! This PS2 should be a chapter of warning and invitation to every human being, to their nations and to the kings who lead this world. This is a living prophetic word to be used in evangelism and a grave warning. Even now *chosen ones* (satanic super soldiers) military leaders and politicians, new age globalists, UN officials and servants of the black flame will read this and *by the providence of God some may realize there is a way out of their lethally charged surging globalism.* A globalism supernaturally orchestrated by a finite counterfeit prince.

"…in which you used to live when you followed the ways of this world and of the ruler (prince) of the kingdom (power) of the air (dense atmosphere surrounding the earth), *the spirit who is now at work in those who are disobedient"* Ephesians 2

Referring to this prince and behind the coming (homosatanas) dark prince, Paul E Billheimer says it so well in his book 'DESTINED TO OVERCOME' p 21:

"This constant and fiendish disruption of the human social order is explained only by the mass activity behind the scenes of a vast, well-organized host of wicked spirits under the control of their master prince"

So many people want a leader that will unite nations, peoples and their kings. Grant R. Jeffery gives an insight that is felt by millions the world over. Here in his work 'THE PRINCE OF DARKNESS' p 214 Grant writes:

"Many seek a messianic leader who will provide answers-a perfect setting for the emergence of the prince of darkness"

Even Alvin Toffler the futurologist used the term 'Messiah Complex' in his work 'THE THIRD WAVE' he talks about the desire of Europe and how they have a 'MESSIAH COMPLEX'! What Toffler said about Europe is now true of the world; there is a sense of 'won't *someone save us'?* That feeling

and desire will increase as we get to the great chaos. That cry will fill the air when the black awakening is leveling everything and bringing the world to the brink of annihilation.

The globalism that is laced into the politics and new age spirituality of today will have the full force of supernatural power when the chaos breaks out. This will only lead to the unveiling of the 'man behind the curtain.

This is the dark prince living through a human vessel will seek to strike the heart of God and crucify Him… *in the sky before He descends with peace in His infinite hands*. Sadly millions will join him, to their own massive destruction. Most of the satanic super soldiers haven't read or even known the real outcome (See R1920). This is the future also! Radical evil will fall and fail. It always has but here with devastating destruction on the heads of those who embraced the ancient hate.

FINALLY

So as we begin this venture and reveal the 'rise of the satanic super soldiers', the bloody chaos that will erupt and the spiraling nature of this current social order that's going down the drain, *I hope we can take a glimpse of the many factors that are included*. This opening chapter is a foundation that pulls the past, the future and the present together. Each reader will have to make choices; up to this point you already have and I am sure you will make more. I can only press on you the need to hear PS2 and see R1919 and then take a look at where we are between the two.

I think we are massively closer to R1919. What do you think?

And finally here is a question Evelyn Christenson asked almost 20 years ago in her extremely helpful book 'BATTELING THE PRINCE OF DARKNESS' p 51:

"*Why bother to spend time and effort getting people transferred from one spiritual kingdom to another?" She immediately answers this way,*

“Because the consequences are so terrifying”

This too is my answer for why I am writing this book

‘THE BLACK AWAKENING’!

Revelation 19:19 and 20

“Because the consequences are so terrifying”

CHAPTER 2
INTRODUCTION TO THE BLACK AWAKENING

‘’I have heard the demons scream again and again. They know what is coming; judgment for them. So now they fight before that dreadful day, they have to. They have, are and will use human lives to accomplish their agenda, and this includes the black awakening and their new order.’’ RD

“The guide warned that we would have to work very carefully in order not to alarm the enforcers. They might kill in order to maintain the secrecy.” P 193 ‘SATANS CHILDREN’

“They were a part of the new breed of warriors. The products of a top secret program to train the perfect soldier/spy, they began their careers while still in elementary school….” Prologue ‘SECRET WEAPONS’

“Too many Christians not enough lions” quote from a bumper sticker

‘We are the legions who will rule the earth’ *Chosen One*

This is what was said by the *chosen one* that was on the floor leg chained and hand cuffed. It was a German speaking sub personality who was charged with demonic powers and screaming the words. He knew who I was and knew that I knew what he was. He was and still is a super soldier, a *chosen one*; active yet waiting. He and many others are specially selected and highly trained people who consider themselves superior to us regular mundane human beings.

One of his inner created, programmed sub personalities charged with a hate you could feel and that dark force which has become so familiar, attacked me and then fought with the police officers. When he was finally cuffed and on the floor unable to harm anyone he lifted up his head and in a deep German accent and demonically charged voice spoke these words. There were many in the room watching and listening when he rose up and they were all taken aback when he growled:

'WE ARE THE LEGIONS WHO WILL RULE THE EARTH''

The officers had had enough after that and just lifted him and carried him to the police car and took him to the local hospital for a psych evaluation. I will tell you the whole story of this event later in the book; it is the coming future and very shocking to say the least.

He is not the only one who has made reference to the coming chaos and the goal of bringing the antichrist to power; the coming *homosatanus*. He is also only one of the few who have attacked me and sought to harm me. Let me tell you now, they are very fast, furious and will take most people by surprise.

WE ARE THE LEGIONS THAT SHALL RULE THE EARTH

I have met with many of these Chosen Ones and have interacted with hundreds of their inner sub alter personalities. I have listened to many of those inner purposely created and hidden personalities tell the story of the glories of the 'coming man'; the one they say will rule the new age, bring a new order and build a military such as the world has never seen: For what? They know. They know very well…R1919.

Who are these Chosen Ones? Where did they come from and what will they do? Why do they look forward to a day of great anarchy and chaos? *And why do their makers look forward to the day of Armageddon?* Again it's R1919!

These questions and all their implications will be unfolded in the chapters to come. These super soldiers are 'chosen ones', one of a number of titles or designations given them by those who made them. They have been and are

chosen for satan and the coming rule that will be manifested through their "glorious" supra human leader. Their main job is one that may be very close at hand. They will unleash hell on earth! And let me tell you, all of those trained and demonically charged inner personalities can talk about the coming chaos they call… *THE BLACK AWAKENING.*

I was sitting on the side of a lake talking to a number of those sub personalities in the body of a military trained person from a base that trained in psi ops, and created super soldiers. One of those personalities asked me if I had heard of the BLACK AWAKENING. Up until that time I hadn't so of course I said, "No".

They began to describe to me what the ultimate goal of their training and existence was all about. I had already by this time had to confront demonic presence, listen to abused inner personalities and engage personalities who were highly trained in fighting, assassination, weapons, subterfuge and much more. These *chosen ones* have truly been raised with the demons, a demonic agenda and enhanced abilities they prize and will use both now and at the time of their 'day of glory', the hell on earth event they call *THE BLACK AWAKENING.*

CHOSEN ONES AND THE BLACK AWAKENING

The person I was working with was someone I have and still do care a lot about. I spent years talking to them, listening to them, engaging the demons that empower many of those programmed inner personalities. I have listened to many personalities who spoke through this one mouth, many who looked at me through that one set of eyes. I heard them speak Russian, Spanish, German and what sounded like an Arabic language. They could write in many languages including old dead languages, those used in rituals and the conjuring of demons. They were very smart and very educated. We discussed time travel, physics, new technologies and of course how the dark powers work. It is this person who shared with me first and gave me the most information about what they and their handlers call '*THE BLACK AWAKENING.'* This is their terminology not mine.

Since my time with that person 15 years ago I have met many other *chosen ones* whose inner personalities have told me of this same coming day of hell on earth. Of all of those who have and who are even now telling me of this event one thing remains consistent. It is about the rise of a new world order and its coming super leader. Inner personalities in the *chosen ones* seem to hold that coming world leader in awe and fear. Most inner personalities will gladly kill, destroy and die for their MAN to come.

They see him as homosatanus: Satan manifesting genetically and spiritually…incarnate. This will not be nephilim, homonoticus or just the Aryan new man. *It will be satan himself in human flesh,* a *counterfeit incarnation*. We shall look deeply into this as the book unfolds.

All of the *chosen ones* I have dealt with have been created to be a super soldier. They were chosen, made, trained, programmed, demonized and sent. Most right now are quiet 'sleepers' waiting for the call to rise and unleash this hell on earth. They are in churches, psych wards, the government, law enforcement, the military and many other places. The ones still intact are placed where they are so they can be close to their coming targets of destruction.

They wait like a quite unassuming person in the crowd; a nice person who wouldn't seem like they could harm a fly, shoot a gun or slash with a knife but oh, buddy they will and with a cold as hell energized accuracy. They wait to be activated to kill, slaughter and unleash hell in society so the demons can dance and their leader can emerge as… 'savior' of humanity! *A savior for humanity* whom they say can bring a new order out of the chaos. They know what they are to do, they know what is planned and most of them wait with dark baited breath, charged by ancient fallen spirits.

Some can't wait to shed blood and strike fear into the hearts of millions. For them there is no question, the BLACK AWAKENING will occur. The BLACK AWAKENING is a multi-national unleashing of historic chaos and anarchy. A chaos and anarchy that was planned and developed over a very long period of time. This is a controlled chaos; it will only go so far. It has to have enough left to build upon, to build a whole new order...in every way!

BEFORE THE NEW WORLD ORDER

The chaos must come before the new order, for many reasons why they tell me. There is the problem of too many Christians, too many churches, too many politicians and military men who would stand in the way…the Luciferians way and in the way of the coming leader. *''We must have our powers unleashed and the world at its knees if we are to get them to follow."* They say! And it is either follow or die!

I will spell this out in more detail later but let me stimulate your thinking cap. The chaos they speak of must come before and is designed to help create the need for a new world order. The BA and chaos it brings includes the destruction that forces the need for help and unleashes a new wave of spiritual influence that urges millions to embrace a new regime….and of course listen to a new powerful voice. Chaos before the new world order is not a new concept-it just hasn't happened yet. But all of this chatter; is it real? A chaos before a new order! According to whom? I will give you a glimpse here and the details later.

- *According to hundreds of thousands of these chosen ones.* They are everywhere and most are intact (ready to go). They were created for a reason (chaos and enforcement of the NWO), they were created by design and they were created by designers who are under the leaders who are under the elitists who are under a very ambitious leader, who is charged with murder, violence and a god complex. Follow the spiritual trace evidence and it leads back to hell's kitchen and a fallen cherub.
- *According to old occultists and secret society themes,* like Albert Pike and the Masons: Did you know there are 53,000 Masonic temples in the USA? *Ordo ab chao.* A new order out of the chaos is often quoted by chosen *ones* too. It seems expected among old Masons.
- *According to the ascended masters who have dictated their writings to Helena Blavatsky, Alice Bailey and others:* Their writings have developed the tens of millions of new age followers that are seeking a 'new age' or the dawning of Aquarius. New agers are being prepped for a chaos or a cleansing before their new day evolves. And according to the spirits who guide them this chaos is a good thing!

- *According to many Muslim scholars:* They believe in a coming world leader and say there must be massive bloodshed and war before he (Mahdi) will rise to power and rule from Jerusalem.
- According to 2012ers that are following the Mayan prophecies and claiming that a new age is coming: They see massive catastrophe and devastation first. This must come to prepare the way for a new day or restart to human civilization.
- According to those in the search for UFO and extraterrestrial life: Many who are contacting or being contacted claim that they are here to help man evolve to a new level. That a great devastating change is coming and that man may annihilate himself so 'they' have come to help make us a new earth.
- According to the saber rattling of the nations, missiles being shot, nukes being built, Iran vs Israel, Russia vs USA, China vs USA and worldwide economic collapse: Some strategists say chaos is inevitable. The feeling that all hell is going to break loose is echoed by many. It's just a matter of time they say.
- According to older traditional satanists and their writings: Some tell of an ascendancy of the satanic order. This is true of the teachings of the Church of Satan in the US. They call the Christian Church the '*rotting corpse of Christendom'*.

Biblical revelation tells of a 'great revolt' or rebellion that will occur linked to the rise of the man of lawlessness. 2 Thessalonians 2 reveals the world will grow wicked, violent and break down under the growing spirit of antichrist. Jesus Christ did say that massive anarchy, chaos and break down will happen. And these are just birth pains before the end. The Bible says the end of history will include unprecedented destruction. See Matthew 24.

There are many streams, writings and spiritual beliefs pointing in the direction of massive chaos, the desire for world government and the need to survive. The *chosen ones* and their sub personalities have told me for years and at times even taunt me about their coming day of blood. They have even told me how the demons at their rituals will speak through priests or others telling them that their day is soon. They write me emails telling me to look at 911, the Virginia Tech shooter and many other shooters as clues and tests of

what's to come. They seem to revel in the economic break down and the feeling of chaos in the air. One writes me:

"The Watchers are keeping track and time is running out. Satan takes a new bride. The old era is ending, a new one beginning. Now it begins….massive change."

Another writes in an email:

"The boy from Finland (a shooter who killed 8), only a toy soldier and like a toy soldier he fell. Just a preview Dizdar; just a preview. You are correct; the fire storms will extend to other public areas."

In another conversation a highly trained chosen one tells me:

"We will make Hitler's SS troops look like choir boys"

Even the famous preacher and author David Wilkerson quoted in the March 8th 2009 World Net Daily article:

http://www.wnd.com/index.php?fa=PAGE.view&pageId=91097)

'Famed pastor predicts imminent catastrophe'. He says:

"An earth-shattering calamity is about to happen," he writes. "It is going to be so frightening; we are all going to tremble – even the godliest among us".

FINALLY

This chapter is just a preview of what the BLACK AWAKENING is and means. Remember the term BLACK AWAKENING is their terminology… not mine.

It holds meaning for them, for what they believe must and will happen. Long before the BA occurs a supra secret crew have been laboring in the night, creating the needed transmuted super solders. This leadership with

their soldiers will ascend with an act to “save” the world and lead it into an evolution of spiritual growth, world unity and total control. They are here for sure and are the “controllers” under the presence of an ancient hate.

The BA with all of its destructive chaos and anarchy is hell’s plot unleashed. A revolt so vast it will shift the world and crack open a whole new era. It is a culture wide satanic ritual, bringing pain, terror and bloodshed. Only the demons and demonized will dance in this hour of history, only those who seek the death of God and all who walk with Him will cheer.

They will bring society down to its knees and force the cry and need for a savior, a savior for a new world order. This new order will scream that all must change, that this new age will be different than all the old failed history of the past. The BA will level the playing field and clear the way for what I call the “voice of an ancient hate”. Yes, it’s the masquerade of the ages; it’s a condo on a beach front sitting on the mother of all fault lines. It’s the ‘man behind the curtain’ and he is wearing a smile. But when the smile comes off and as sure as biblical prophecy says it will……for many it will be way too late!

CHAPTER 3
SUPRA NATURAL CONSPIRACY
THE DRIVING SPIRITUAL FORCE

"The one-world architects know that they must create the appearance of popular support for their global designs in order to pave the way for national governments to surrender political power…."P79 'THE UNITED NATIONS EXPOSED'

"Unless mankind grasps this grace and reverses the alchemical-hypnotic process, struggling back to sanity, it will be harvested for one final blood offering upon the altar of dehumanization" p 135 'BLOOD ON THE ALTAR'

"The spirit of this world is a powerful and cunning seductress that few seem able to discern and from whom even fewer seem able to disengage themselves" p 10 'INTOXICATED WITH BABYLON'

"…They believe that an elite and evil group controls world events and that such evil control is the fulfillment of Bible prophecy."

p 13 'SECRETS, PLOTS & HIDDEN AGENDAS' by Paul T. Coughlin

"Early one morning, I had become aware of the fact that the political and economic efforts to create a world government were being undergirded by a network of spiritually motivated organizations…"p 66 'EN ROUTE TO GOLBAL OCCUPATION' by Gary H. Kah

CHILDREN'S HOSPITIAL PSYCH WARD

I just got home from training at a southern Ohio police academy on advanced occult and cult crime. Lying on the couch the phone rang next to me and a lady on the other end frantically told me about her 13 year old stepdaughter, mind control and *that satanic rituals were involved*. The little girl was in the children's hospital psych ward being evaluated for wanting to commit suicide. I went to the hospital and sat at a table across from the girl. At first she wanted to know if I could get a book on witchcraft spells. She needed it to learn to fight against her mother.

Then I was shown some drawings that were way out there. They had symbols, strange writings and mentions of suicide. She was writing that she had to do the 'ritual of the flames' to prove her love for her mother. That she was supposed to pour gas on herself and light herself on fire on her birthday. Some love huh?

This meeting would involve me for over 20 years in a battle with underground satanists who attacked my home, called speaking in some strange language sending evil curses against me, cars stalking my house, church and some encounters with demonic powers.

The more I investigated the stranger it got. Stories of satanic rituals, conjuring demons, sexual abuse of children and adults were behind it all. The young lady would have to have demons cast off and out of her and then there was the surfacing of other personalities. Sub personalities who were inside of her. Each was different, each had a story and each had secrets.

There is no question that all of this involved deep conspiracy, conspiracy of the real kind and we would learn along the way this conspiracy would get bigger and bigger.

This little girl's story involved more and more people. It involved the purposeful creation of sub personalities who could be trained in sex, psychic

powers and even for satanic rituals.

This real life story would be one of hundreds to come. Behind the abuse were satanic rituals, behind the rituals were some evil people, behind them were some more out of state people and behind them was the handed down ancient rituals and technology that was used to create what some called ‘multiple personality disorder’ (MPD) and now called ‘dissociative identity disorder’ (DID).

The sub personalities in this little girl knew who some of the perpetrators were and where some of the rituals were done. She took us miles away to one sight. There in an old barn we found the remains of a dog that was used in a ritual and then memories came up in her that described in detail the black robes, chants, smells, men and the lady who gave her something to drink before she went fuzzy. Yes, she also knew what they did to her sexually.

CONSPIRACY IS REAL

Behind this one case is conspiracy and it was all real. There are those who have planned, plotted and executed their evil scheme on this child. There were men, women, places, books, and many more issues connected to this one little girl. The plots and plans were the conspiring of some wicked men and women.

The conspiracy involved deep secrecy, codes, writings, people and places that were never to be found out. These wicked and perverted ones sat in meetings conspiring how, when and where they would use a little girl in a satanic blood and sex rituals. They met to conspire how they would keep her and the many other victims quite or brain washed from knowing and remembering. They were trained in ritual, hypnosis, ritual languages, and familiar with dark…very dark powers.

This little girl now in her thirties represents to me not only one of hundreds of cases we have been and are involved in. There are not just hundreds though. We learned by the late eighties that there were thousands of victims in psych wards and counseling centers seeking help and trying to

remember. By the nineties the numbers went into the millions. O yes, I said millions, one by one over years and years. This means millions of victims, in thousands of rituals, sexual episodes, animals sacrificed, old barns, basements, buildings and of course the conspiring of hundreds of thousands of perpetrators.

The conspiring on the human scale had to be vast. One pedophile ring and or sexual abuse case in a day care center is horrific and massive enough but if each victim of satanic ritual abuse had a dozen or more wicked ones behind them and if they had more behind them the question is …where will the investigation take us, where will it end and when did it start?

There is not one case of satanic ritual abuse or child sexual abuse that does not have within and behind it a trail of perpetrators, records, places, events and…the memories that are buried deep into the fear packed consciousness of the victim or like in millions of cases now buried deep in alter sub personalities who were torn off the original core person.

There the secrets, pain, fear and knowledge dwells, you can be sure of it. Evil is never a perfect science, and the Scripture says that your sins (all of them) will be found out. Like those who cage animals the perpetrators know how to bury the secrets and they bury the sub personalities they created, used and abused. It's all so no one will find out, at least not yet! They tell them it's a secret, you tell and you will be punished or die.

"Don't tell", "Don't tell" said one little sub personality screaming at me.

I am so grateful that God does know! And the day is coming that they shall all pay the price and all of this shall stop! There are no rat lines at or before the Great White Throne Judgment see in Revelation 20. Note also:

"Nothing in all creation is hidden from God's sight. Everything is uncovered and laid bare before the eyes of him to whom we must give an account." Hebrews 4:13

From the brave author of the massive work 'SECRET DON'T TELL' p xxxii Carla Emery asks the question:

"... is it better to know, or not know? Is it better to be silent or to speak out?"

The little girl's story I started this chapter with, whom I know to this day, spoke out and to the sneer of the cloaked for now perpetrators (doctors, priests, psyches and military men) *so have millions of others*. With all of hell's breath, threats and power they can't stop the victims who want out of their forced nightmare.

You cannot have, in one case many children who have all been sexually abused from the same school, church or day care center and not have conspiring (scumbag) adults who are behind it. The issue with all real conspiracy is 'WHO'S BEHIND IT'? The story of this dear girl has behind it many perpetrators, who are still active and watching. And we are watching them!

You surely can't have two million or more cases of trauma based split personality with detailed stories of satanic rituals and not have massive conspiracy behind it! When you hear one case and get involved it can be massive. When you count the numbers of the same type of victimization (SRA satanic ritual abuse – MPD multiple personality disorder) by the hundreds then find out there are thousands and then millions you have to ask the question:

"Who in all of hell has done this"?

WHO FROM ALL OF HELL HAS DONE THIS?

Craig Roberts in his 'eyes only' and 'top secret' exposing book 'THE MEDUSA FILE' writes what many of us on this field of work agree with" p 86:

"As we have seen in previous chapters, drugs, sensory deprivation, hypnosis, torture and other brainwashing techniques on unsuspecting U.S. citizens are the admitted practice of not only the CIA, but of certain

military and private institutions as well."

If you have contemplated the PS2 prophecy of 3,000 years ago and looked into the future at R1919 with its massive army of super soldiers, dark powers, supernatural leader and agenda you are looking at the ultimate in conspiracy and vile plotting. What you may have to do now is stick with me as I connect the millions of cases of SRA/MPD/DID to the prophecy of PS2 and its fulfillment in R1919.

In R1919 I kept asking the question, 'How does it ever get that far'? How does the world come together, build its new government, have its masqueraded leader, have a super army and join in the goal of riding humanity and the world of God? I have done a broadcast in the past (a free one hour intro to the course The Black Awakening).(See here http://www.theblackawakening.com.)

Called; *"Play it forward, the satanic endgame."*

In this broadcast and here in this book we must look at what God foretold is going to happen and what is happening right now that's leading us to that endgame. When I look at what is going to happen I realize that it doesn't happen overnight. Just as with this little girl and the now millions of victims their nightmare of SRA/MPD/DID didn't happen over night! There is a long history to all of this and it includes pain, fear and the transmutation of millions.

CONSPIRACY AND SPIRITUAL REALITY MEET

Just as there is a local conspiracy of individuals who have for years done this evil of abuse, ritual and creation of split programmed victims, there is a network and overall agenda behind the mass number of these millions of victims. Two things are involved in this local conspiracy that leads to a national conspiracy and then leads to yes…a global conspiracy.

There is a clear human side to the conspiring and there is a clear supra natural spiritual side to all of this development.

- First the human side of this conspiracy. The human side as in the Nazi plot of the final solution (the planned annihilation of the Jews), the 'final solution' was the *conspiring* of national leaders who had a global quest. They sat in rooms and hashed out a plot that would rid the world of Jews. They planned the what, how, when and they created laws and the critical mass in the mindset of their people. Then they started gathering the Jews and transporting them to the camps that were being readied. Readied…by workers, wielders and administrators who were all in agreement. They, with all the new soldiers (SS) were all working for the mission of the Nazi party, its goal of cleansing and world domination. There the gas chambers were constructed and large ovens built while some knew and others followed orders. There were designers, builders and workers. There were those who gave the orders and those who took them. There were those who drove trains, ordered the prisoners and led them to the 'showers'.

Please realize when you see pictures of the Nazi concentration camps and all those stacked dead bodies, barely alive starving bodies, dead bodies in ash by the hundreds of thousands then….ask the question;

'Who in all of hell has done this?'

Real conspiracy is what's behind crime, murders, war and the secrets of world governments. Look at any picture of a Nazi soldier or the camps where millions died and behind it is real conspiring. When you realize that they burned away into ash millions of victims (human beings) and sought to annihilate an entire race of fellow human beings you have to ask…*who in all of hell would do this*? What kind of people were they? What ideology did they believe in? And could it be that an ancient unseen but very operative presence breathed into the minds of these God rejecting occultists. My answer is of course yes, a thousand times over. Remember who it was that betrayed Jesus Christ Himself, it was not just a human idea! This betrayal demonstrates the force of the satanic agenda moving through the will of unaided fallen mankind.

"As soon as Judas took the bread, *Satan entered into him*."John 13

What the Nazi party was then is but a pale grey picture of memory now; it merely scratches the surface of what is in the works right now. The black flame that burned in the hearts and minds of real Nazis (and still does in those who remain to this day), is what's behind the black and white grainy glimpses you see of them in the movies. This old black flame burns darkly right now in many hearts, more than you know. It's the lethal presence that will bring on the full force of the BA and all of what will happen when the final seven years roll onto the carpet of human history. It's already begun, you can't stop it and I clearly hear the sound of this train steaming out of hell. It's in the final stages before it strikes and as is said……you feel it in the air tonight.

"If anyone has *ears to hear, let him hear..."* Mark 4

And mentioned seven times in Revelation chapters 2-3 is this call;

"*He, who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says* to the churches." Revelation 2-3

The supernatural side of this conspiracy:

- Second is the supernatural side of this conspiracy. The heart of man can become a platform for God or the devil. When it is opened to darkness that darkness will rage in and through it. If you don't believe this type of thing is being plotted today you may be living in denial or in a bubble of ignorance. It could also be that the secrecy of the coming black awakening, globalism, the destruction of 1/3 of humanity, the coming persecution of Christianity and the Jews and final gathering of the world's largest super powered military is too much to believe. Then you are like the many skeptics who took way too long to believe that the Nazis plotted and were actually cooking humans in ovens …….by the millions!
- The Nazi conspiracy was real; many have shed the blood and smelled the real smoke. For some their ash couldn't scream anymore…no one heard them when it counted. For those who had to catch up to reality, it was way too late to help the victims and stop the madness. It was

clearly supernatural forces that led to this action. Demonic revelation can become political ideology and military enforcement procedures.

What was even harder for some to realize was that the Nazi's were started in the realm of the spirit. An unseen but very real powerful spiritual force shot its arrows of influence into the minds and hearts of those who became the Nazi leaders. That extreme presence spread culture wide, an evil critical mass that blanketed Germany with dark powers until the war ended. As with Judas, the devil and his minions just walked right in and entered them. And as in the case of Judas, Germany (accepting that presence) hung itself! They acted under an almost undetectable presence and so are millions right now!

Please don't forget the revelation in Ephesians 2, its happening now as never before in human history.

"…the *ruler of the kingdom of the air, the spirit who is now at work* (supernaturally operative) in those who are disobedient." Ephesians 2

Evil spreads like a cancer in the dark at first and it's all there *before it makes itself known*. I know that a supernaturally empowered army forged and ready to rise at hell's request is too much for some to believe. But this field of blood is coming; it will roll over the ignorance and bury those who choose denial like an avalanche.

Many will be behind evil's evolution and many more will be on that field called Armageddon and by then it's way too late. The spiritual forces that influence the people, nations and kings will be so thick at that time no one can become *unglued*; the mark mentioned of Revelation 13 will seal their decision forever! These are the spiritual forces that led the Nazis. It is this same force that will lead the world to gather on that last day of fallen human history.

This powerful spiritual presence is a supernatural operative force in the halls of government, the military labs and think tanks and it flows out of the many alternative spiritual streams. It sought angels and got a third of them, it sought humankind and got us all for a time.

Listen carefully to what the Spirit of God is saying, these words reveal that old black flame:

"…the ways of this world and of the ruler of the kingdom of the air, *the spirit who is now at work* in those who are disobedient." Ephesians 2

"For the secret power of lawlessness is already at work….." : "The coming of the lawless one will be in accordance with the work of Satan displayed in all kinds of counterfeit miracles, signs and wonders, and in every sort of evil that deceives those who are perishing." 2 Thessalonians 2

"The great dragon was hurled down—that ancient serpent called the devil, or Satan, *who leads the whole world astray*. He was hurled to the earth, and his angels with him." Revelation 12

"Then I saw three evil spirits that looked like frogs; they came out of the mouth of the dragon, out of the mouth of the beast and out of the mouth of the false prophet. 14They are spirits of demons performing miraculous signs, and *they go out to the kings of the whole world, to gather them for the battle on the great day of God Almighty."* Revelation 16

"Then they gathered the kings together to the place that in Hebrew is called *Armageddon*." Revelation 16

Finally in fulfillment of PS2

"Then I saw the beast and the kings of the earth and their armies *gathered together* to make war against the rider on the horse and his army." Revelation 19:19

What is revealed on the pages of these infallible prophetic writings is too much for some to believe, but the events both good (what God does) and horrific will occur in all of their detail and with all of their fury. So dear reader it's time to step out of "la la" land and smell the smoke before the fire consumes you. It's in the air even now! These prophetic writings are for the people, nations and their leaders. See here the 'telos' (the purpose, goal) of

the Spirit of God in Scripture:

"Now to him who is able to establish you by my gospel and the proclamation of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery hidden for long ages past, *but now revealed and made known through the prophetic writings by the command of the eternal God, so that all nations might believe* and obey him— to the only wise God be glory forever through Jesus Christ! Amen." Romans 16

LISTENING TO LIVING WORDS

God in PS2 asks the people (locals), the nations and the leaders of the world …WHY? Why do they rage, why do they conspire…plot and plan? Why? Why? Why? I have found the answer to be the same whether it's the locals, national institutions or even in the leaders that are guiding the world to global unity. There is the human side with all of its reasoning but there is also the spiritual or supernatural side.

Behind every meeting, writing, work and plot for a globalism that will lead to R1919 is an over arching spiritual belief, presence and power that guides it. Please note:

' 'THERE IS NO GLOBALISM WITHOUT THE SUPERNATUAL SPIRITUAL FORCE BEHIND IT" RD

With all of the victims of SRA/MPD and they are in the millions, there are the people who are behind it and behind them are the spiritual beliefs, practices, presence and powers that lead and motivate them. It will seem uncanny, weird and crazy but the world will be led to a supernatural globalism that includes the willful choices of people, nations and their leaders. It is happening now as you read! God foresees the conspiracy, the plotting and planning even now. He even sees the rage and knows what future humanity is saying. God has spoken, written down what is now 'living words' (PS2) directed at this current piece of history, its people, nations and leaders. Maybe you are one of those who are caught up in the plot. Perhaps

these words are your final warning and invitation?

The conspiring mentioned in PS2 was going on long before you read this. It's old but here with a vengeance. This ancient agenda and conspiring affects all of us right now and we need to know at least these six points:

- This conspiracy is older than most know. It began in the heavenlies with a force of will that was violent and demonstrated the ground zero of revolt and rebellion. See Ezekiel 28 and Isaiah 14. The origin of sin and all evil began there. The trouble is we have opened the door to it and let it in. It is here also that we see the raging desire of the fallen cherub; he wanted then, wants now and will seek again soon the very throne of God. See 2 Thessalonians 2
- This conspiracy is personal with deep emotion. Revealed in Revelation 12 is the exposure of satan's existence and emotion. He is furious! And he knows his time is short. I have seen this ugly fury when the demons inside people had to come out. They show deep emotion, hate God and anyone who walks with Him…with a raging eternal hate. They scream and mock God, humanity and desire mankind's destruction.
- This conspiracy is now at unprecedented levels. Just as prophesied in the Bible the growth of demonic manifestation, doctrines of demons, demonic counterfeit religion, signs and wonders have increased beyond anything history has ever seen. And it's not over, what you see now is pale in comparison to the release of dark powers when the black awakening is unleashed and the tribulation begins. Much, very much more is to come. Jesus said in Matthew 24 that it will be a time of unequaled turmoil and chaos.
- This conspiracy will become global. We are no longer talking about just a nation or only a region. The black awakening has one goal, to ready the world, the whole world for the rise of antichrist. So all that is behind creating satan's super soldiers has with it the push for global rule.
- This conspiracy has a mask. The outward signs of the need for a globalism will be impressive. The need for world peace, environmental concerns, economic security and picking up the pieces of the massive destruction that the black awakening (great revolt) delivered. What most will never know is that the chaos that forces a new order to rise is

inspired by the very one who will act as its savior - the antichrist (instead of Christ) himself. His mask will be beyond the deceit of the smiling pedophile who offers candy to the unwitting child. Like the raped dead child the world will have been deceived and sabotaged with the supra natural smile of satan incarnate.

- This conspiracy is doomed to final destruction. The good news after all the bad is that the very prophetic revelation that predicts all of this with divine accuracy is the same revelation that foretells the total destruction of all evil, the antichrist and those who served this blood bathed beast. Both PS2 and Revelation 19:20 declare the end of evil. The real Prince of Peace who proved Himself on the Cross will crack the skies and end this hell on earth. A new day is coming, one where there is no war, murder, rape or evil. It is not produced by the hand of man. This glory can only come from the Infinite and His name is Jesus. Connecting prophecy from the book of Daniel the Spirit of God then pens these same words in the opening chapter of the "Apocalypse of Jesus Christ "See Revelation chapter one:

"Look, he is coming in the clouds, and every eye will see him, even those who pierced him; and all the peoples of the earth will mourn because of him. So shall it be! Amen.

'I am the Alpha and the Omega," says the Lord God, "who is, and who was, and who is to come, the Almighty."

There are those workers of the night (the black flame) who will commit to the plan of the coming world teacher/leader. They will labor for what they believe is a great cause. The desire for power, control and even godhood is very strong in the underground and in the underworld of fallen hearts and minds. Judas desired money so much that he couldn't see God walking on the water or raising a dead child being worth more than 30 pieces of silver. Judas so blind in his dark ambitions didn't even know the moment that the fallen cherub walked right into his very being. All Judas knew (like all the active luciferians) was that…..*for a promise they must and will seek to betray (kill) the son of God again.*

FINALLY

Do you understand the impact of Revelation 19:19 yet? There is a supra natural power that binds and blinds the minds of many. In 2 Corinthians 4:4 you have the combination of the blind (people/the human side) and the one doing the blinding (satan/from the supernatural side). Judas, like the emerging elite are clearly the blind who really know nothing of the one who has blinded them. When you take the devil's doctrine hook line and sinker you have embraced darkness as light and evil as good.

Dr. Stan Monteith in his revealing book 'THE BROTHEHOOD OF DARKNESS' speaks of Lord Tennyson's poem "The Charge of the Light Brigade" and comments that Lord Tennyson may have had no idea of its impact and then sums up this conclusion: p. 12

'I also suspect that he had no concept of the true nature of the dark spiritual forces he had engaged, or how those forces influenced his view of the world'

I would have to say that this conclusion could have been said of Judas, the Nazis, communism, secret societies, authors of the new age movement and many today that are being carried along in this conspiracy of the ages. All who buy into this evolving globalism are breathing in the breath of the 'god of this age' (1 Corinthians 4:4). Dr. Monteith goes on to say on p. 49:

"Although socialists talk about democracy, their real goal is a world government under the control of the enlightened Elite."

This is what the conspiring (as seen in Psalm 2) of people, nations and kings is all about. This 3,000 year old revelation reveals the final 'enlightened elite' at the end of the age. Though God has and is speaking to them the trick of embracing darkness as light has taken their sight. And don't mistake the final conclusion either: you are either one of them or one who stands for and walks with the King of heaven. There will be no middle ground; this is the conclusion of Psalm 2 and Revelation 19:19. Right now

you are either for or against the Anointed One of God. Right now there is this moment in history for you to choose.

Again the Spirit of God says:

“This day I call heaven and earth as witnesses against you that I have set before you life and death, blessings and curses. Now choose life, so that you and your children may live” Deuteronomy 30:19

“But if serving the LORD seems undesirable to you, then choose for yourselves this day whom you will serve, whether the gods your forefathers served beyond the river, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land you are living. But as for me and my household, we will serve the LORD." Joshua 24:15

CHAPTER 4
THE RAMPING UP

"Spiritual warfare is an evil issue. Warfare in itself is evil. If evil did not exist there would be no warfare of any kind" p17'THE HANDBOOK FOR SPIRITUAL WARFARE'

>"Every survivor of childhood ritual abuse…testifies that human sacrifices have occurred and do occur"p 80 'THE EDGE OF EVIL' The rise of satanism in North America.

>"A contemporary observer noted that in attendance at both the magic seminars and the rituals of the church of satan were physicians, lawyers, engineers, teachers, former members of the FBI, IBM executives, and even street cleaners. At one gathering of eight, half were either PH.D's or PH.D candidates." P 118 'PAINTED BLACK'

"Few people are aware of the hard evidence that secret brotherhoods quietly dominate NASA, with politics far more aligned with ancient religious and occult mystery schools….." back cover of 'DARK MISSION' THE SECRET HISTORY OF NASA

THE SPIRITS WILL COME

She came in the door of my office with her mom in tow. She was silent and very stiff. She didn't smile nor did she answer my first questions with words, only nods. I could feel it, the presence of dark spirits. I looked at her as she sat down. Her mother was right outside the door and a worker was in the room with us. I looked at her again with a pause then said, "They don't want you to talk do they?" Again I spoke, "They want you to leave, right?" She

nodded in the affirmative. I don't like these spirits at all, they were not meant to inhabit human minds or hearts.

I looked at the worker in the room to see if he was ready and I just began an opening prayer. Immediately she was thrown to the ground and began wrestling around. I commanded the spirit in Jesus' name to stop it and leave her alone. I commanded again for the demon to answer me and it did. It told me its name and I commanded a third time for it to tell how it got in this teenage girl. It told me the doorway she had opened up.

Like so many before her it was witchcraft and drugs. That was enough. We commanded it and all with it to leave her right now, again using Jesus' name. It shook her a little and then it left. She was free and talking openly to me now. We went over what she needed to do with her life, what she needed to stay away from and she agreed. She renounced those doors the demons came through and in prayer she opened and surrendered her life to Jesus Christ.

Once again the phone rang. This woman began telling me about a boy who said he was a satanic priest. When we arrived the young man began telling us about his coven take over and powers he had obtained. He continued in the car to tell of his big powers and how he wanted to be the next 'black (satanic) pope'. I finally called out his name and stopped him. I said, "If you have all this power, money and position why then did you want us to come up here?"

I will never forget the look I saw in the rear view mirror of the car as I stared at him sitting in the back seat. His countenance went down and he looked very disturbed and sad. His response, "I have no joy!"

We arrived at the church but he wouldn't go in so we just sat there in the grass and talked to him about Jesus. Finally I said, "Are you ready to ask Jesus Christ to come into your life and give you His love and power?" He looked up as if to say yes and started to say Jeeeesssu…but suddenly he was thrown to the ground before he could say the whole name. He was gagging, holding his throat and choking.

Immediately we all began praying and I commanded the spirit to release him. He was still struggling and as we prayed I told him to call out to Jesus to come into his life and He would set him free. Finally the demon departed and this young man prayed loudly for Jesus to come into his life and save him. He prayed prayers of renunciation of all the satanic practices, oaths and evil he had done.

We all prayed over him to cover anything and everything else that was needed. He and others were amazed at the viciousness of the demons but were even more amazed with the massive authority Jesus' name carried and how the demons feared Jesus.

We took this young man out to eat at a restaurant to follow up on him some more. We were all eating, laughing and praising God when all of a sudden one of our workers spoke up loudly pointing at the young man. He said, "Look, look at his face, it is filled with joy and look at that smile!" We all agreed and praised God all the more. He was free, joyful and enjoying this new exchange of powers.

From darkness to light is what the Scriptures tell us. There is a difference you know, a vast difference as to what spirit is in and upon you. One is infinite and unleashes all the fullness of the living Christ into a person's life. The other is finite and sought only to use this boy for degradation and evil. One is the Holy Spirit giving the very life of God within while the other is demonic and seeking to steal a soul.

One we were meant for and the other was not made for humankind. It's really something when you have been on both sides of this spiritual fence. You know very well one side is of heaven the other of hell. Do you really know why Jesus came?

"He who does what is sinful is of the devil, because the devil has been sinning from the beginning. *The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the devil's work.*" 1 John 3

MORE ENCOUNTERS

- A man came saying he had a dark cloud over him and felt oppressed. We listened more and then offered to pray. Once again we rebuked the powers of darkness and commanded them to leave him alone. Immediately he said that 'it' had left and was off him. He was amazed and very thankful. We discussed the issues involved and he went off with a living joy that only the Prince of Peace could give him. In this fallen world and with the massive ramping up of the dark spirits, they do come and in many ways.
- Another person was sitting before the two of us in an office. We were talking when all of a sudden this person switched personalities and a demonized sub personality came up. This was a *chosen one* who had many sub personalities and many demons. A very sinister look came on this girl's face. I looked at the fellow pastor and he also saw it and wrote down a note. This spirit dwelling in the sub personality looked at me and said, "Don't you want me?" I instantly felt an unclean perverse presence come at me like a wave. The Spirit of God within me gave the discernment and I started rebuking this unclean spirit and the fellow pastor and I both commanded this spirit to get out! It did and the girl switched back to her main self. I looked at the pastor and said that it was a demon that functioned in lust; he held up his writing pad and showed me that he had written down *spirit of lust*. We knew this spirit had left but there was much more ministry this person needed.
- A mom brought in "Billy". He was fearful and she was mad. He had been invited a party where there was free metal music, alcohol and drugs. Sex was included too and it was all a smoke screen for the real reason. A women came to Billy during the party took his hand and made a cut. She wiped his bloody hand in a book (or made him write) and claimed he was one of them. Some occult practices took place and then he went home. Later that week some from that group came to his house with a document with writing in some kind of script. It was a letter calling him to come to the next meeting. That's when he wanted out and told his mother. He refused to go and the coven threatened to kill him if he told anyone.
- A woman with an animal spirit stood at the door of my fellow pastor's office. She was brought upstairs by another worker who tried to tell her that the 'ancestral animal spirit guide' was evil. When the pastor opened the door she tried to confirm that it wasn't anything evil. The

pastor said, “Let’s see” and began to pray. Immediately the dark spirit surfaced and showed itself for what it was. She was over taken and an animal growling sound poured out of her mouth. The pastor prayed for the spirit to leave and it left her. When this lady realized what this was and it was exposed and kicked out by the authority of Jesus, she was overwhelmed with thanks and praise to God.

- A group of youth came to the church I was pastoring. Their pastor was a friend of mine and he sent them to me. They had gone to a meeting where a weird man prayed over them in tongues (supernatural other languages) and spoke prophesies over them. They all felt strange, confused and were having a hard time praying. We prayed for them and broke the transferred demonic presence that was put on them by this imposter. This man was a *chosen one* and his upfront personality seemed to be a ‘minister’ but the sub, coven loyal demonized personalities were looking for more victims. This person was engaged by us and we found he had a trail of many victims who were seduced by him and became his victims of sexual abuse.
- A woman brought to our church as a visitor stepped out into the sanctuary isle and the voice of a demon bellowed out, “You can’t have her, she is ours”. Everyone turned to look as I approach her with prayer and she fell to the ground screaming and jerking. The whole church prayed and sang worship songs while some of us prayed over her. Someone had really hurt and used this girl. It was some kind of priest who transferred demonic spirits into her mouth to mouth. When the demonic was hit by the power and authority of Jesus Christ who exposed them they of course had to leave. She is now married and serving Christ with her husband.

THE RAMPING UP

I could tell you many stories like the ones above. This spiritual engagement has clearly ramped up in the last 30 years. I have now been in hundreds of spiritual exorcisms (we call them freedom encounters) and commanded dark spirits out of people. This book will have a few dozen stories of these episodes and is far from the millions that are out there who

still need help.

Sometimes when I sit and think about the encounters with the demonic we have had I am amazed we have had to engage so many. The people have been very young, old, black, white, male and female, etc. Most knew they had something wrong. Others knew they had demons they had welcomed in and at first wanted. Now most wanted them out while a few fought back and wanted to keep their powers (demonic given abilities).

I have seen, felt and experienced in many of these power encounters the nature and tact of the demons. They lie all the time. They try to stay in the bodies they inhabit and we found out they all know one thing very well. They all know and have to obey the person, authority and name of Jesus Christ. They know who Jesus is and what He did at that Cross. These ancient dark spirits know that a judgment is coming and they are full of hate.

There may be many spiritual skeptics in this world and maybe some are reading this book right now. I can tell you for sure and many others in this field also know that all these demons (fallen angels) know Jesus Christ is God, Lord and what He did on the cross has final authority. This work on the cross is hated and feared by the hoards of hell because they know that its work seals their fate. Nevertheless they are here and they are as mad as…the devil himself.

"…..But woe to the earth and the sea, because *the devil has gone down to you! He is filled with fury, because he knows that his time is short*"
Revelation 12

Dear folks have sent me articles that talk about people with voices in their heads and a dark presence on them. They talk about a shadowy presence that may visit them or uncontrolled addictions that seem to be supernaturally over- powering them. In my own area demon oppressed, possessed and troubled folks have been brought to us from over 40 churches and 5 states.

From one large church alone over a hundred members have come to us or were brought to our offices. They all were seeking freedom from dark spirits and deliverance prayers. I have gone to 6 other states to pray for those who

are victims of satanic ritual abuse or felt they had demonic presence in their lives. We have heard the demons scream now many times through the mouths of people possessed and taken over.

Workers and I in Shatter the Darkness have by the authority that Christ gave us (Luke 10) commanded dark spirits out of individuals in churches, schools, parks, on the streets, in the car, at a book store, in a hotel room, in homes and even inside a McDonalds restaurant. The demons don't care where they are and when they come up (manifest) they can cause a scene.

Wherever and whenever these evil ones have come up in a person we responded with prayers of power and the authority of Jesus Christ. Again and again we have seen the demonic spirits seized and comply with the authority of Christ. I have seen them try to harm the person as they were being kicked out. I have also seen the relief, joy and peace that would follow when a once demonize person was set free.

Even satanists and *chosen ones* would be amazed at a power and presence they had never seen before. When they saw the overwhelming presence of Jesus Christ and how the demons cringed and fear Him they were impressed and many were ready to surrender their lives to the person behind the power- Jesus Christ. With new found freedom, an eager willingness and joy they accept the Savior Jesus Christ who rushes in with His gift of new life. See Mark chapter 5 or Acts chapter 16 for some clear examples of 'power encounters'.

Now, let's go over what some of the evidence is for the ramping up of demonic/spirits in these last days.

- For me it has been the massive number of cases of individuals who have come for help. I have seen demonized people hundreds of times now and the number of victims, urgency and power of the demonic has intensified over the past 30 years. I have heard the demons speaking through possessed people scream, curse and threaten me. I have also heard the demons yell that they will win, destroy the church and kill Christians. I know their voices, eerie evil presence and tactics. I can tell you from an experienced stand point that demonic presence, activity

and intensity has grown massively and this is only the tip of the black iceberg below.

- The Vatican is calling for exorcists. In Italy and actually a number of other countries there has been a call for help. The request is for exorcists, for those who can discern and get rid of the evil presence that has gotten into millions of people the world over.
- The Vatican has started new training in exorcism and hundreds are now being trained. In Matt Baglio's book 'THE RITE': The making of a modern exorcist, he goes over a volume of stories of the once demonized and how they got there. It's clear the Catholic Church has to deal with thousands of cases. Author of 'THE RITE' speaking of the 'rise' of demonization writes on p 54:

"Because millions of people are reportedly involved in the occult around the world and the numbers are on the rise, the exorcism course would explain the ramifications to novice exorcists."

- Books written on the occult, alternative spiritual practices and even satanism are flying off over packed book shelves at Borders and Barns and Nobles book stores. These kinds of books are offered by the thousands on Amazon.com also and please realize that each book has an author.
- There are books on spells, rituals, summoning of demons, channeling, contacting 'angels' and many more on all kinds of new ways to connect to something spiritual. Many of these books are what the Spirit of God has called 'doctrines of demons' i.e. writings that were inspired by seducing fallen angels who guided the believing authors.
- Books written about the ramping up of spiritual deception and spiritual warfare. I said many times in the 90's that more books have been written on spiritual warfare in the last 20 years than in all of the history of Christianity (2000 years). I have over 500 books on spiritual warfare, the rise of spiritual deception, books on the demonic presence and practices that are here or will be in the last days.
- The book you are reading right now will be added to the growing number of books that warn of end time spiritual confusion, deception and destruction.

- A local pastor of one of the largest churches in my area came to one of our Shatter the Darkness meetings and spoke on spiritual warfare. He told us that night that he was at the end of a series of sermons and teachings he was doing on the subject of spiritual warfare. The number of messages on spiritual warfare was over 35. He and many other pastors who are on the cutting edge of ministry and know what time it is on the prophetic Biblical clock are pouring out what has been neglected and what is vitally needed right now.
- The NAM or the new age movement as some call it is the largest fastest growing occult/cultic spiritual movement in the entire history of Christianity. It is a challenge because it seeks to use Christian terms and phrases but change the meaning. It proclaims a 'christ' but this new age concoction is nothing like the real Christ of history, scripture and eternity.
- NAM has hundreds of millions of followers the world over and is the foundational spiritual system that nurtures the need for a 'one world system'. It seeks a new globalism in both political and spiritual arenas. It has no direct leader/ founder yet (but antichrist is coming) however, it's growth is massive and influence worldwide. Many have come to our offices for prayer to get rid of the spirits they opened up to in NAM spiritual experiences. See the chapter on NAM in this book for more.
- We saw in youth ministry that satanism and dark occultism was the fastest growing sub group among high schools students in the 80's and 90's. The signs, symbols and 'satanic' themed music were filling the minds and hearts of millions of youth. The satanic bible and hundreds of satanic ritual books, songs and images have filled the imaginations of America's youth now for over 40 years.

As one of those youth in the late 60's and early 70's I was reading the dark occult books, listening to groups like 'Lucifer's Friend' and plastering my bedroom walls with images of hell and demons coming out of ritual circles.

KNOCKING DOWN THE DOORS

If someone is knocking hard at your door you may want to get up and quickly open the door to see what the fuss is all about. That's also how physical 'home invasion' crime activity occurs. Now there is a spiritual knocking and many are opening the door without caution. The issue here is the fact of the predicted invasion of dark spirits ramping up their work in the last days.

Here are some of the revelations that come from the Spirit of God about the work, presence and ramping up of dark spirits in these days. Only scripture gives an accurate and preemptive revelation on this ancient hate. Only the infinite Spirit of God can give the 'heads up' on what this underworld of the demonic is up to and planning. The omniscience and omnipresence of the Spirit of God would reveal that He knows them all, where they are and what they are up to.

The presence, power and work of a very real radical evil is ramping up. God alone in scripture gives us the facts on the origin, nature, methodology and fierce agenda of satan's existence and desires. Only scripture gives us this level of revelation of a real and very radical evil. Without this insight we would only be guessing at what is happening to our lives and our world. God is specific, preemptive and exact.

Here are some of the Biblical revelations and predictions of the ramping up to the highest pinnacle of satanic power ever in history. What is here now is unprecedented but it's only the beginning of hell's agenda.

- The ramping up of seduction and spiritual deception is spoken about more than the rapture and millennium put together. We are warned first of all and most of all about deception. Jesus in Matthew 24 is central in all the predictions of the swelling of dark forces. This chapter stands in the middle of the Old and New Testament prophecies and connects them in a clear unified unveiling of coming global events. Jesus in answering the questions about the end of the world starts with and emphasizes 'let no one deceive you'.
- The ramping up of many false Christs, prophets and teachers to do one thing…deceive many. In Matthew 24 we are warned about these false spiritual leaders and the powers behind them. All that is written there

corresponds with many other warnings the Spirit of God has selected to give us as a 'heads up' and warning of what to expect. Each of these false Christs, prophets and teachers are the opposite of the real Christ and are initiated directly by demons warring against God, the Church and seeking to deceive the world. The fact that there are many now and will be many more coming gives evidence to the work of dark spirits and the willingness of those who do not have the Spirit of Christ in them, to embrace the growing darkness.

- The ramping up of 'imposter' spirits and doctrines of demons. In 1Timothy 4 the prediction is clear. Again the Spirit of God demonstrating His eternal and infinite knowing paints a picture of the future we are sliding into. The Holy Spirit about 2,000 years ago 'expressly', 'emphatically' and 'factually' says that a pouring out of very seducing dark spirits will come in the last days. They will use willing vessels (people). They will give 'writings' to influence many and have one agenda… to seek to pull people away from God, Christ and the faith and establish an alternative.
- The ramping up of demonic supernatural powers and abilities is foretold also. In 2Thessalonians 2 there are predictions of the supernatural work of satan, the secret power of lawlessness at work and supernatural real but counterfeit miracles, signs and wonders. All of this will come with a growing rise in 'every sort of evil' that deceives those who embrace it. The demonic cloaked to look like 'angels', 'ancestors', and 'friends' who will give any kind of spiritual experience that could be used to insure deception.
- The prophetic picture of the rise of Babylon is massive. If you will study Revelation 18 you see the final judgment on a spiritual system God calls Babylon. This is the *culmination and pinnacle* of the work of dark spirits. Their manifestation and what this counterfeit spiritual system has done to the world will go beyond any level of demonism in the past. God shows society by that future time is filled with operating demons on every level. That they have polluted and deceived the whole world and they influenced the death of the saints of God.
- These dark spirit's operation in and through people has brought grave moral and spiritual adultery to billions. Yes, billions. *This is a future look at what is rising among us right now.* The bulging spiritual presence that seeks the coming antichrist will be sensed and present

before his apocalypse (unveiling). The chaos that will open the door for homosatanas (satan in human flesh) comes by that ramped up dark power, it is spiritual forces that build it and bring it.

- The black awakening (revolt) is packed with that deceptive secret power from head to toe; when released that satanic chaos will be like a planetary shock wave unleashed from hell itself. The great revolt or rebellion of 2 Thess. 2 is charged with 'the work (supernatural) of satan.

And please, be sure of this, this evil domain is up to violence and is following a plan born out of the heart of the one who wanted to dethrone God (Isaiah 14), kill Jesus (Revelation 12), and control the world by deadly force. These 'extra dimensional entities' and 'ascended masters' are roving imposters spiritually and have no mercy...at all. It is clear to me that a massive advance of dark spirits have been knocking on many doors, now as never before.

My premise is the rise of demonic presence operating actively in lives, societies and the world is directly related to and corresponds with the rise of violence, unrest and chaos. Jesus Himself connects the ramping up of demonic deception, earth changes and societal breakdown

Jesus in Matthew 24

"Tell us," they said, "when will this happen, and what will be the sign of your coming and of the end of the age?" Jesus answered: "Watch out that no one *deceives* you. For many will come in my name, claiming, 'I am the Christ,' and will *deceive* many. You will hear of wars and rumors of wars, but see to it that you are not alarmed. Such things must happen, but the end is still to come. Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. There will be famines and earthquakes in various places. All these are the beginning of birth pains.. also...Because of the increase of wickedness, the love of most will grow cold,"

FINALLY

This ramping up is so vast it is impossible to list all the new doorways of the demons. Their presence has brought thousands of cults, new demonic writings, and spiritual leaders who are deceived and help deceive millions more.

Seeing the new age spirits operating in education, business, politics and invade military development is shocking. Paganism, Wicca, forms of voodoo and even UFO cults have filled the news for years now. The blatant face of satanism in schools, crime, music, on TV, in books and poured out on the www is astounding. The difficultly of all this ramping up is that it's *like the frog in the kettle* approach. It has happened so slowly over the last 50 years that millions have no idea that the dark waters are boiling and that the world is so tender for what's next…the blast of the black awakening.

CHAPTER 5
MIRAGE OF THE NEW AGE

"My own journey leading into the new age and rising to heights of leadership is a classic portrait of spiritual seduction. Seeking after truth, I found only masterful counterfeits disguised as the truth" p 1 'INSIDE THE NEW AGE NIGHTMARE'

"The new age movement is not new; it is the most recent repeat of the second oldest religion, the spirituality of the serpent."P 17 'CONFRONTING THE NEW AGE'

"The deeper one probes, the clearer it becomes that the jesus of the new age movement lacks any basis in history."P 46 'THE COUNTERFIET CHRIST OF THE NEW AGE MOVEMENT'

"…these are enough to quicken an appreciation of the horror of great darkness sweeping over the west, inexorably rolling inward like a swelling black tide or approaching with its encircling eyes"p 276 'DUST OF DEATH'

"Do not put out the Spirits fire…"2Thessalonians 5

DIM CHRISTENDOM

In a section of Oz Guinness's eye opening culture confronting book 'THE DUST OF DEATH' he writes in a paragraph sub titled '*the fires burn low'* about a safari taking place in Africa. He explains when in the hunter's camp they set up a great fire that warms and brightens everything. But as the hours slip by and the hunters grow tired and sleepy they no longer keep the fire burning boldly. As the light goes down and night moves into deep darkness

the wild animals begin to creep closer. At some point the fires are very low and the wild animals are very close, you can now see them by their eyes...*'the encircling eyes'!* You can see them as they get closer and are no longer pushed back by the bright fire. The more the old bold fires go down the more the beasts close in. You can see them as they draw closer. Those big bold fires just hours before kept the roving beasts at bay but now they grow bold and seek prey…as the fire is neglected.

The story Oz tells is about the decline of western Christianity as it waxes cold and grows dim. The once bright bold fire of Christianity in the west was the light that gave spiritual depth, freedom and safety to millions for years. When the Body of Christ is on target the fullness of God's presence, power and work is greatly manifest. But now those fires have grown dim and the light the Church should shine is very weak. We Christians are the 'hunters' who have not kept the fire bright and unhindered. We have quenched the Spirit of God and dimmed the bright beauty of God's love and mercy; truly we are in need of revival! The good news is revival and greater things can come…the Spirit of God tells us, "Because of the Lords great love we are not consumed, for his compassions never fail. They are new every morning; great is your faithfulness." Lamentations 3

Truly the growth of the NAM (new age movement) corresponds to the dimming down of the Body of Christ. Jesus said it would be a spiritual battle and so it is. If there is nothing or no one to contest or test the spirits of the new age then they will come in unhindered and wearing whatever mask they want. The Biblical prophecies of the unleashing of 'seducing spirits' find their greatest fulfillment in the mammoth movement called 'the new age' and if Christendom waxes dim it gives ground for dark satanic forces to show up as angels of light. Believers in Christ must not just ask, "What time is it?" but also what have we done…or perhaps not done?

THE ENCIRCLING EYES OF THE NAM

The massive front of roving spirits has been unleashed. They are here and operating in unprecedented numbers. They are the ones who have initiated and developed NAM i.e. the NEW AGE MOVEMENT. This NAM as we will call it is the largest and fastest growing spiritual movement in the entire

history of Christendom. I do believe its evolution was foretold by the Spirit of God some 2000 years ago (see 1Timothy 4). A time would come when lethal dark spirits will arrive dressed like translucent angels of celestial realms.

They will speak with a silver tongue and offer gifts to feed broken limited man. They will come bearing gifts of enhanced human abilities and teachings that seem to be beyond the minds of mere men. The seduction behind this is, they come with sweet gifts, friendly smiles, offers of help and looking so harmless……..*just like a child sexual predator*. NAM is more lethal than most ever thought. And surely they have nabbed millions of what they see as 'unwittings' and dragged them off to rape them spiritually.

All of the predictions of coming spiritual deception and seduction would include the fact that some will receive contact and become channelers, spirit writers and inspired speakers for the spirits of the new age. By now there are hundreds of millions who either participate in or are influenced by these alternative spiritual encounters of NAM and this in no small thing. Those influenced may feel they have something real (and and it is real) but it's not right…it is as deadly as poisoned candy. The experiences given by these predicted spiritual predators and their embracing humanity is more of a hook than a hug.

Do you know these spirits? What they can do, say or what they really want? Predicted 2000 years ago the Spirit of God warned with passion that a pouring out of these new age type spirits would come. (See 1Timothy 4)

The spirits of the NAM have offered:

- Alternative spiritual experiences and many of them.
- Alternative writings they say surpass the Bible.
- Alternative angels who are only wearing masks; they have to.
- Alternative powers and energies to amaze and preoccupy.
- Alternative knowledge, secrets and mysteries.
- Alternative grand promises that they cannot keep and never have because they are finite not infinite.
- Alternative concepts of human identity and origins.

- Alternative teachings on death and the afterlife.
- The spirits of the new age also offer:
- An alternative christ who is not the one of Scripture.
- An alternative agenda looking for a new world order.
- An alternative morality that only darkens the conscience.
- An alternative transformation that does not connect anyone to God.
- An alternative spiritual practice that promises enhancement but deepens the spiritual blinders.
- Alternative spiritual goals that seek the opposite of what God is really doing.

NAM may be more lethal than blatant satanism because the mask that hides the demonic face is so comfortable many never question the source or test these spirits… to see if they come from God. (See 1 John 4).

ITS ORIGIN AND EXPANSE

It would seem that the foundations for the new age spiritual movement were laid by the occult practitioner Helena P. Blavatsky. Her involvement in the realm of spirits is known and now felt the world over. It is amazing how one life can be used for good or for evil; how one life given over to the Spirit of God or to a demonic presence known as an 'ascended master' will bring influence one way or the other. HPB as she is known wrote the massive work called 'THE SECRET DOCTRINE' and it is claimed to have been a (spiritual master) spiritual presence that guided the writing from beginning to end.

That *secret doctrine* not only runs totally contrary to ancient scripture, it offers a substitute christ and an alternative agenda for humanity. If the source is from God then the teaching will lead to Christ, salvation and the arms of God. If the source is a seducing spirit it will lead further away from God and deeper into the spirit of antichrist.

Along with Helena is another leader who paved what I feel is the broadest road the new age movement now rides on. This writer has written over 20

volumes and testifies that it *was an ascended master (The Tibetan) who engaged her to write and then dictated every page of each volume.* I have read some of these volumes and can tell you that the Spirit of God in me sounded the alarm clearly.

These books are the very doctrines (teachings) of demons (*planos*-spirits 1Tim.4) that the Spirit of God warned us would come. In these books which I will not quote here we are told of a 'sequence of spiritual evolution' and of an agenda of a new world order. Both of which are the two main points of the satanic mission. It is as if the demonic has revealed its play book and is seeking players in these writings of Alice Bailey. The spirit guide like Helena's led Alice to offer the world an alternative christ, alternative church, writing and agenda. This spirit or ascended master gave her the strategy on how to use Bible terminology and change the meaning, how to be among the Christian Church and influence it with the 'new teaching'. Behind all new age teaching is a very strong spiritual force but it is not the Holy Spirit of God.

The writings of Helena and Alice were clearly spiritually guided, their writings have influenced all of the later new age writers/leaders like Marilyn Ferguson, David Spangler, Barbara Marx Hubbard and many others. Their teaching is the same because it comes from those fallen dark spirits acting as angels of light. As I have read much of new age teaching from the main sources I can see some clear patterns. Here are some main teachings:

ITS INCLUSION AND EXCLUSION

It seems the spirits of the new age seek to include any and all teaching that is compatible with the agenda. Though it sounds good to say 'we included everyone' and make the new spirituality sound tolerant the dirty little secret is there between the lines. The spirits, writings, practices and entrenched members of NAM will include just about any spirituality… *except one.* They do have exclusion and it's a strong one. The NAM exclusion is anyone who believes in the real Christ of scripture and has the Spirit of God dwelling in them.

Their inclusion involves anyone who denies the deity of Christ, His Word and His second coming. You see they have a new christ; one they are helping to bring in. The new christ is called the 'world teacher' and he will come to set up the new order. There is no second coming of the Christ of the cross, only a reappearance of a christ in the form of a super human that will come to rule the world. The spirit of antichrist that guides them will only champion the coming homosatanas. As I have said, the deception is deadly. NAM will be at the cutting edge of the coming chaos and rise of a supernatural world leader. NAM excludes all else.

IT'S SMORGASBORD OF EXPERIENCES

Sitting at the theosophical society I watched for some time how many kinds of spiritual experiences are embraced. The NAM has a big variety of supernatural practices and experiences that both fit its agenda and deepens its growth. You can channel, talk to angels, develop your psychic abilities, leave your body, acquire hidden knowledge and become a spiritual master. You can read tea leaves, remote view, talk to the dead, predict the future, release and receive spiritual energies, get visits from aliens and more…so much more. Each spiritual experience will hook the participant with real spiritual presence because there is a real spirit giving it. The problem is, however, the 'spirit behind the spiritual experience' is finite, fallen and not from God. They are called 'imposters' and have massive power to seduce. The spiritual pattern throughout all of NAM and its teaching is clear; the denial of Jesus Christ for all of who He is and the rejection of the Biblical revelation of the Cross, Salvation and the Second Coming. This is what every dark spirit who opposes God seeks to teach. It is why they reward their followers…for now.

DO NOT MISS ITS TWO FOUNDATIONAL ISSUES

It is vital for us not to miss the bottom line of all NAM teaching. Behind all of the old and new leaders, books and seminars of NAM we find the same core 'revelations'. These revelations are from spirits but not one bit is from the Spirit of God. It is vital in that it is not new at all; it is very, very old.

- IT'S A PROMISE OF A SPIRITUAL EVOLUTION (doctrine). NAM's bottom line is the promise of 'the spiritual evolution' of human kind; that all the spiritual movement, energies and development of the human race is in the process of evolving. It promises a great surge or planetary spiritual wave is coming and when it does it will change everything. Mankind will be transformed and move to spiritual deity. With this transformation comes a new world where we will be...almost god like.
- IT'S A PROMISE OF A NEW AGE–GLOBALISM (agenda). The connecting spiritual teaching is that a new age is coming. A whole new order will arrive and the old will go. So the spiritual practices of the NAM will help open the door to allow the spiritual push that will usher in the new age. A new spiritual globalism is promised and when it comes everything will change! So the spirits of the new age have said.

The spiritual evolution and the new order will bring to us what the world has always needed according to them. The new spiritual world order will manifest a new 'world teacher' who will guide us to unprecedented peace and amazement. The truth is that the antichrist will lead the world into the deepest deception and broadest destruction. See Revelation 9 for the future of new age spiritual results.

IT'S A GLIMPSE OF A NEW SUPER LEADER

Yes all of this new age teaching, spiritual practice and push will culminate with the supernatural arrival. A super man with super wisdom and super powers is coming. The new age christ is coming and he will lead the world into bags of sweet candy….poisoned by hell itself.

What the new age movement spirit guided writers have and are writing is what the Holy Spirit of God has revealed as the antichrist and the final devastating age in human history. The new age promise is as old as the Garden of Eden. There the fallen angry cherub (satan) promised humanity that if they would forget the mean God who is withholding from them then they could get the real inner hidden knowledge and evolve to godhood. That promise then is the promise of the new age movement. That promise back in the garden led to the fall of humanity, death, disease, war, pain and hell itself.

What the new age promise will not be fulfilled; it cannot because it was *given by the fallen finite father of lies.*

Again I say with author Bob Rosio,

"'Deception always leads to destruction"

THE NEED FOR CLEANSING

NAM teaching has one more element; it is a little known and very secretive mission. It is the spiritual teaching of 'cleansing' or purging. As the NAM and its new spiritual wave are unleashed and humans who have been prepared evolve, something will happen. But it will not be an 'evolution to deification! It will be a solidification of the spirit of antichrist in the hearts of those following the masked angel of light. The earth they say and the spiritual evolutionary process will cleanse the earth, it will be thorough and remove anything that opposes it.

As the spiritual evolutionary bubble breaks and an unleashing of the new spiritual wave comes, those not attuned to it will be wiped out. A critical chaos may come and many of those who will not bend to the new age spirit will have to go. For the new age- teaching getting rid of millions of humans is the normal process in the evolutionary chain of development. The concept is that resistors need to go (be cleansed) because they hinder the 'evolution of humanity' and the new super leader from coming in.

New age writers and practioners know very well that a mass chaos must occur and only then can the new age burst into place. For the NAM the black awakening this book talks about will be a necessary and expected event to make way for the world teacher and the unified world of 'peace'.

NAM AND THE LOSS OF GOD

The NAM has produced more spiritual deception, writings, and doctrines and unleashed more spiritual experiences than any other movement in history. I believe it will continue to bulge and grow right up to the chaos of the black awakening. After the anarchy and with new layers of dark spiritual presence

it will be very easy for the spirits of this NAM to lead its hooked adherents into the super spiritual system that is known as *Babylon*. (See Revelation 17-18)

Here is what the evidence shows, the spirits of the new age movement never led anyone to Christ, they are opposed to Him. They are here to do what the Spirit of God said…to seduce and lead astray. NAM experiences have a lot of spiritual events and supernatural things do occur, but none give by them lead to God.

I once asked an 86 year old spiritual seeker who was eagerly telling me of all the years he had studied and all of the avenues of spiritual things he experienced. He was totally entrenched in new age spiritual experience and teaching but something was missing and I had to ask him. "Bill", I said, "Have you found what you're looking for? Have you found God?"

His countenance fell and his smile turned to a frown, then with those watery eyes looking deeply into me old Bill answered…."NO".

FINALLY

Dear reader know one thing for sure, the spirits of the NAM cannot and will not lead anyone to God. That would be the opposite of their mission and their nature. Do you know who they are and what they really want? They and what they promise is a mirage. The spiritual doctrines and promises are a cover for the dark plot and coming black awakening. These spirits are here to preoccupy the masses and lead them away. Nam is a vast door and cover for the coming antichrist and all of the spirits of NAM come from the 'man behind the curtain'.

'They must keep those who embrace them from God and from seeing that the sweet candy of NAM is the bait for the rape of the ages.'

"This is the spirit of antichrist, which you have heard is coming and even now is already in the world" 1John 4

“Therefore I tell you that no one who is speaking by the Spirit of God says, ‘Jesus be cursed,’ and no one can say, ‘Jesus is Lord,’ except by the Holy Spirit.”

1Corinthians12 “What agreement is there between the temple of God and idols” 2Corinthians 6

CHAPTER 6
2012'ERS
THE ANCIENTS AND THE COMING CHAOS

"The victims of human sacrifice by…ancient Mayans, who threw children into water-filled caverns….Mayan priests in the city of Chichen Itza … sacrificed children to petition the gods for rain.."
"So the children were offered as a way to directly communicate with chaac (demon god)"

January 23, 2008 news report Reuters with archeologist Guillermo de Anda from the University of Yucatan

"There is no doubt now…I have linked up with the Mayan power."… "I am explaining the Mayan power"…"that it covers the ancient key Mayan pyramids and temples like an invisible blanket…"

p. 215-216 Ted Owens in THE PK MAN

There seems to be a new wave of excitement swelling all over the world and it only shows me how far from truth and the Spirit of God many have gone. Many are now hailing the ancient Mayans as if they were a glorious group of spiritual masters. Many are going to the ancient temples and ruins of a people who have long been vanquished. Once again like many they seek spiritual presence, knowledge and experience. It is clear they are getting what they are looking for or are they? These spirit seekers are getting

something that the Mayans themselves got… but hasn't anyone seen where that led them? Vanquished and in ruins!

There is a reason for the *ruins* of the ancient Mayans, it seems their old civilization was wiped out or somehow just disappeared. Many are seeking Mayan spirituality and want the prophecies that were left behind. So I have taken the time to listen to hours of talk shows, seen a number of 2012 promoting videos, movies and bought a bunch of books so I could see what all this buzz is about.

It seems there is a very deep spiritual presence among those Mayan ruins and some very interesting 'spirit' guided writings declaring future events. The Mayan calendar and its calculations are predicting the end of human civilization. The Mayan researchers are saying the prophecies of these people declare the world will end in December 2012. At the writing of this book we are just a three years away.

You can read books like: 'THE SUPERNATUAL' 'SERPENT OF LIGHT BEYOND 2012' 'MAYA COSMOGENESIS 2012' 'THE MAYAN PROPHECIES' 'TOWARD 2012 PERPECTIVES ON THE NEXT AGE' OR Daniel Pinchbecks book '2012 THE RETURN OF QUETZALCOATL' and you will see some massive research and personal seeking has gone on. The 2012 prophecies of the Mayans are making a global impact.

The sad issue though is the fact that most of these researchers and others haven't come to grips with who the old Mayans really were.

The ancient Mayans were not a spiritually peace loving quiet people. They were a civilization who gave wide open doors to very powerful demon/gods who lead the people to massive drug use (usually for interaction with spirits/spirit vision), sexual ritual perversion of children and to massive human sacrifice. The 'temples' and ziggurats were not nice peaceful cathedrals where contemplative prayers were issued but the home of major demon gods who sought human possession and blood. Please make a note of this…wherever you see ancient temples and especially ziggurats you can know that human heads have rolled and massive blood was shed.

The dark gods of the Mayans were Chac, Kinich Ahau, Yumil Kaxob, Yum Cimil, Ixtab, Kukulcan, Ix Chel and of course Quetzacoltal, demonstrate the attributes of demons. It may be that some of them were actually nephilim (demon human hybrids) who ruled and took advantage of the people. In biblical revelation all of these would be demon/gods much like Baals, Bel, Marduk, and Moloch. Like demon gods of the Old Testament the Mayan demon/gods took from the people and gave…well mostly took. From this dark atmosphere of demon gods the spirit given religion, writings, practices and prophecy came. From these very dark powers comes the inspiration for what are now known as the 2012 Mayan prophecies.

The premise of the 2012 Mayan prophecy is that a massive catastrophe will occur, wipe out most everything and end civilization. There are basically two streams to this thought:

- First, there are those who see that Mayan prophecy speaks of the end of human civilization….totally. We are done its over and there is nothing else.
- Second, the major views out there hold there will be a massive catastrophic event and it will destroy much but not everything. The sense is out of the catastrophic 'chaos' will come a new humanity with a whole new future. Many I have heard are postulating a needed earth evolution: That the earth is out of balance and the (spirit) of the earth will cleanse itself of all the bad and start over. Well that's one way to deal with sin, greed and evil but where do all the people go? Who gets to stay? What force decides who is good or evil and gets rid of….the bad ones?

This is the picture we get from the summer of 2009 movie with Nicolas Cage called 'KNOWING'. It is about prophecy, the end of this world and the saving of some people to start all over. But the concept doesn't stop there, author and radio host Whitney Strieber who wrote 'COMMUNION' and other books put out this year the new book 2012 with a sub title that truly fits…'A WAR FOR SOULS.'

I wonder now whether or not in all the streams of luciferians, satanism, Mayan prophecy, the new age belief, and occult secret societies if the

participants have seen that there is a hidden hand behind them, guiding their work and revealing a plan. This hidden hand is really the same source/presence weaving its thread among and within them each of them.

It would seem that among them all the thread of thought is: the world is breaking down and a catastrophic world collapse is coming but we believe and hope a new world is coming that will evolve humanity out this dust of death and into an Aquarian age. If the ultimate message is the same with each of the above streams of spiritual belief wouldn't that tell us it all comes from the same source? It's that source that is planning a massive 'chaos' before a new world order and that source has always been the dark finite demonic.

DOWN IN THE JUNGLE

This is not my story but one which tells about a man called the PK (psychic power) man. In his book Jeffery Mishlove, Ph.D tells of a man named Ted Owens who is some kind of major psychic, remote viewer, and alien abductee and ultimately an enhanced human. This man is said to have received psychic powers from non human intelligences and used those powers to affect events and predict future events.

In the development of the story of PK man we find him going down to the Mayan ruins/temple to seek contact with the presence there but what is that presence? PK man as Ted is called goes to the ruins of the Mayan temple where he seeks the dark powers he is already in touch with and asks them to introduce him to the 'Mayan Power'. The story goes on to tell how PK man does meet the dark god and sees it as a peaceful presence…imagine that! The spirits who were there in the past are there right now. They are ready as they are all over the world to invited new recruits. All I can think right now is… "My, what big teeth you have grandma!"

AS IN THE PAST SO IN THE PRESENT

Going back to the Bible the demon gods who engaged the people at some point begin to seek human sacrifice. 2Kings chapters 21-23 show the progressive development of Manasseh and the doors to the demonic he

opened. It ends in tragedy with human sacrifice and Manasseh slaughtering his own living child. My point in all this is that the demons never change regardless of where they come from. Whether from Old Testament or the Mayan society, when the demonic gods are allowed to manifest the blood will flow. If the doorways to these gods are found and opened again they will seek to set up the same 'spiritual evolution' that will end in human transmutation and blood sacrifice.

"He built altars in the temple of the Lord, of which the Lord has said, 'in Jerusalem I will put my Name.' …..he built altars to all the starry hosts. He sacrificed his own son in the fire, practiced sorcery and divination, and consulted mediums and spiritists. He did much evil in the sight of the Lord…." 2Kings 21

If you have every dealt with a satanic *chosen one* (SRA/MPD) and heard what they came through, you know quite well they are very versed in the details of human sacrifice. The know well how human torture, fear and blood will bring the dark powers up and over. The how, why and what of human blood is obscure to most but is sought by the dark side whether in the past or the present. You can also be sure it will be the staple of the future during the rise of Babylon! (See Revelation 17-18). Innocent blood has and will be shed throughout the nation.

"…shed so much blood that he filled Jerusalem (the nation) from one end to end…" 2Kings 21

All of what was true in Manasseh's day was true among the Mayan civilization. This is now the reality among the ancient satanic brotherhood; they have helped produce hundreds of thousands of demonically charged super soldiers…by human blood ritual! Whether in the past or presence the demons will seek human sacrifice and through it will come with powers, prophecies and deep deception.

DEMON GODS DON'T DIE

If you find and open their doors they will come again! The theology of the demonic is that their nature is evil and eternal. Satan and demons don't die.

Try if you want but in the scriptures you will not find any reference to the death of demons. They can be cast out see Mark chapter 5, sent to the Abyss (a prison for very dark powers) or shut down see 2Kings 23 but they don't die. So as researchers and spiritual seekers look into the dirt of the temples of the ancient gods what they don't know is that they (the same demons gods) have been waiting for new inquirers for a long time.

These dark gods may have even been the ones who have been calling and whispering for new servants and the danger right now is that many are willing to listen. The dark gods of the Mayans haven't died; they were shut down by the hand of God. They are not dead, just waiting and if you answer their call and open their doors they will begin again…….2012ers beware!

RESURRECTION OF THE INSURECTION

So the demons don't die and there is no 'resurrection' for them per say. They can be shut down, cut off and 'buried' though. As in Josiah's day (see 2Kings21-23) the goal was to shut all the doors by smashing the altars, crushing the idols, and destroying the symbols that were associated with the demons/gods. They stopped Moloch and the call to his followers to sacrifice their own children alive on altars to this dark god. He had to be crushed and the doors through which Moloch came in that day were closed.

This was done to close the door of interaction with them, but it didn't kill them. As we have said the demon/god, was still there waiting and looking for someone to open the door again. Satanists and others who call on the dark powers and summon demons know you have to open the doors for them. They are also sure once you do these dogs do come and they begin their transmuting work.

At the Mayan temple and among its ruins the demons and powerful territorial gods still remain and they have waited for someone to release them again. It is very clear to me that those who are going down to the ancient temples, taking 'spirit' summoning drugs like 'ayahuasca', touching the demonized objects and reading the names of the old gods are 'resurrecting the insurrection' (a God hating rebellion) and this will lead to

what it always does…human degradation and human blood.

Dear reader some doors should never be opened…ever!

It's very evident today that millions are opening these gateways…or at least answering the knocks of the old blood lusting dark powers. Please also realize that the Biblical predictions of the unprecedented rise and manifestation of demonic powers in the last days correspond to the spirit inspired books that have been written, the hidden rituals that are done, the old and new gateways that have been opened (or reopened), and the blood that is being shed…even if it hasn't been seen by the general public yet.

WHERE DID THE MAYANS GO WRONG?

How does all of this start? It's similar to satanic recruiting; you get the person to come to 'light' events, then to things darker and finally to the heavy blood ritual. It's an incremental approach; it starts off small and then goes step by step in a darker direction. I have even seen this approach begin with book authors. They have a 'supernatural' experience, they feel led to go deeper and then they feel guided to eventually write about it. The problem then is the doors they opened in their life are now opened up and unleashed to a larger audience. Daniel Pinchbeck in his book on 2012 does this and so does author Courtney Brown in his work on extraterrestrials. Both have their experience and engagement with a spiritual/non human source after which they write to tell others, then the doors to deeper and darker experiences occur.

One known author it is vividly clear, knows how this all starts. I wish Craig Hines would have known better than to follow the call of seducing spirits. Sometimes they start with a whisper, knock or even with a curious dream. In his book 'GATEWAY TO THE GODS', a book that helps to open the door to the old dark and deceiving spirits, he tells where it began for him. Why does he do it? Like many who have been engaged with these fallen spirits he tells us how he was lead. On p 26 he reveals how it all starts:

"I began having some rather disturbing dreams involving a dark, shadowy entity that seemed to be stalking me."…"like there was actually something

else in my head making its presence known"…"…a cold December morning, at 3:04 am to be precise, it seemed as if *the thing actually came out of* those life-altering moments…"

From here Craig is led into a variety of events, research and engagements that lead him to write a book and that book opens the doors to the dark deceptive side… *of the spiritual evolution all real luciferians hope for*. One should note, it started with a 'dark shadowy entity.'

BLOODY FIELDS AND THE COMING CATASTROPHE

What happened to end Sodom and Gomorrah, the Mayans or even the Nephilim degradation of Genesis 6 was the work of the living God Himself. Someone has to stop the embrace of the demonic, human sacrificing, the perverted sexual damage and bring in a real redemption that could change everything. The bloody fields of 2 kings 21-22 were brought about by the dark spirits and fallen ones. These eternal, evil, non human intelligences were and are viscously active; they seek the corruption of humanity and broader doors to come through. They want possession, manifestation and the ability to operate supernaturally in the affairs of humanity.When these doors are opened wide enough and long enough the blood begins to flow and the spiritually convinced twisted minds of the followers will knowingly, willfully and with devotion slaughter their children in horrific ways. This is what the demons themselves need and prescribe.

So who do human sacrificing satanists believe guided their ritual prescriptions? The designers of ancient rituals are the ones who sought the doorways so they could come to our side. It allows them to come up and over, they come through the door they crafted. Each ritual is a 'foot in the door' of human interaction. The more the rituals are done, the more human blood is shed the wider the door and broader the grip the demonic/demon gods will have on a person, group and or an entire civilization. The Mayans were not taken over in one night, it took years, just like with the Nazi ritual ovens…and so it will be with globalism.

FINALLY

Could this be another wave of spiritual teaching that will build the critical mass ‘feeling’ and or acceptance of a coming horrific bloodshed? Will the world say that such a ‘chaos’ is needed to cleanse this old world so a new one can come? Did the demons reveal their play book of a coming chaos among the ancient Mayan priests? If they did it was through the practice of human sacrifice and that always spells out the end of a civilization.

CHAPTER 7
THE SECQUENCE OF SATANIC EVOLUTION

"Not enough has been said about satan."

Law enforcement agent Tom Wedge p36 'THE SATAN HUNTER'

"The repertoire of evil has never been richer. Yet never have our responses been so weak"..."So the work of the devil is everywhere, but no one knows where to find him." p 3 & 9 'THE DEATH OF SATAN' How Americans Have Lost the Sense of Evil'

"The spirits have come out in the open"…"they have initiated an assault in ways that a generation ago would have seemed unthinkable" p 61 'THE COMING DARKNESS'

"While we are quite accustomed to revelations from God concerning the future, whether immediate of remote from the time of the inspired writer, we must not be startled by the thought of revelations from God concerning things in the past. Should it be thought strange that God who knows and reveals the future, has also been pleased to reveal certain things which took place in the shadowy past -shadowy to us who are creatures, but containing no shadows for him who is light and in whom dwelleth no darkness at all?" p 53 'THE INVISIBLE WAR'

Here in the middle of the first section of this book I need to bring an unveiling that deals with the 'man' behind the curtain. Satan is either too

weird for some to think about or he's just too scary to look at face to face. If he didn't exist then the full roots and fruit of radical evil is laid at the feet of man…and that includes your toes too.

Some will live in denial but other self affirming intellectuals will cry out with powerful 'reason' that it's impossible that the devil is real. All the while the sitting front and center with a wired grin is the fallen cherub… and he gives the first applause in the hall of the half-a-brains. The one we are talking about is:

"The god of this age has blinded the minds….so that they cannot see…." 2Corinthians 4

"The ruler of the domain of the air, the spirit who is now at work in…" Ephesians 2

"…and the whole world is under the control of the evil one." 1 John 5

Join me please in taking a look at ancient scripture as it reveals not just the origin, character and methodology of this stealth war monger but his active and coming agenda in the affairs of the whole world.

In the Book of Ezekiel chapter 8 we have a situation, one that is local but typical of what's happening world wide right now; it's the secret power of darkness supernaturally operating among Ezekiel…hundreds of years before Jesus comes the first time. Take a moment to read Ezekiel chapter 8. Here are some of the factors:

- God is there and does know the presence of evil and what it's doing.
- Real old luciferians are revealed as they live in super secrecy summoning dark spirits and reveling in hidden rituals. They are part of a long chain of serpent worshippers who have inched their way right into the center of God's city.
- A fallen world of people are all around living, working and dying. None are aware of this dark presence that operates right in their midst. They continue to be unaware of satan's schemes.

- Those who did not see what was going on are the targets of this underground movement and recruitment is ongoing. Most do not see the shadow government, shadow religion or the shadow powers that were operating. They may have a feeling and there may be rumors but they have no idea there are 'luciferian worshippers' in the middle of the city.
- Those who were given the insight and a heads up were only able to seen and know by the supernatural power of God. Dark presence has dark powers to cloak their activities….for now. A prophet was there but without the aid of the hand of God even he did not know.
- It is very clear that God sees and wills to put an end to radial evil like this. But there will have to be ready and willing individuals who will allow God to show them what is there and what to do.

Always remember, until the time of the rise of antichrist the secret forms of direct serpent worship, the summoning of demons and the long line of servants of the black flame have been, are and will be mostly hidden or shrouded in a 'secret power', ….until *the rebellion (chaos) that opens the door to the unveiling of satan in human skin (homosatanas) happens* .

When this does occur the largest manifestation of the 'domain of darkness' will arrive right here, in the face of all humanity…and reign for a short time. It's all just around the corner.

RUNNING SURVEILANCE

We got tired of running around in circles as we tried to protect the federal officer's wife. She was a high powered *chosen one* with sub personalities that continually set us up and kept us searching in the wrong direction for the perpetrators. Mary would tell us one thing and the sub personalities would tell us another. We kept getting phone calls to our offices by the coven that told us to back off and whatever plans we made it seemed the coven knew. They were running surveillance by having other 'watchers' watch our house, follow staff members and get information from her sub personalities who were watching (getting information) from us.

Mary's sub personalities who were coven loyal and others programmed to retrieve information would call the coven members after Mary had been with us. Those personalities would then tell everything we were planning. Mary and other *chosen ones* can use 'psychic' abilities to 'feel' what we are planning and where we were stationed. It was really uncanny how many times when we were following her or watching her apartment she knew. Sometimes she called us and even drove to where we were parked to let us know she and the coven knew where we were. Though we learned the hard way at first…we learned what to do, God does give countermeasures.

We began to pray for her 'abilities' to be blocked; we also stopped sharing our plans in front of her because of the sub personalities who were listening. Then we placed a recording system in her apartment for 21 days that would be voice activated. At the end we got the tapes and every conversation. The primary culprits were her coven loyal sub personalities. She even had a small recorder herself that had a tape on it with a male voice; she would call our offices and play the tape, it was the one that warned us to stay away from Mary…that her blood and power belonged to the circle of dominion. When we played the tapes in front of Mary and her listening sub personalities a new one we had not talked to before came up. This one was mad but defeated and told us how much they were playing games with us… and preoccupying our time.

THE SATANIC PLAY BOOK

I have told psychologists, pastors and police officers we can't understand this SRA/MPD issue without the reality of satan's existence and his agenda. It's not what you believe (however satan is real) it's what they (criminals in satanic crime) believe that makes them dangerous. That phrase was the one Tom Wedge of law enforcement repeated so many times. Most have no idea of the existence of dark powers, covens and satanic activity but not because it's not there.

Father Jeffery J Steffon reveals in his book 'SATANISM IS IT REAL?' that there may be a hundred thousand covens in the US. I have no doubt this is

a low number.

I break down the cover up and awareness of all this underground activity into five categories:

- 1. PUBLIC COVER UP. Many have an idea but don't want to know the details. The details and facts are too awful and gory. So just ignore the reports and don't think about it….maybe it's just a rumor or it will go away. Even law enforcement teaches officers in the police academy that they should not report the 'satanic' details of this kind of crime. They say it will only create public panic, so keep the information buried/quite.
- 2. PROFESSIONAL COVER UP. There are those in psychiatry, education and progressives who think the devil and demons are made up stories of fearful, uneducated societies of the past. They tell victims who report these stories that it's just delusion. One psychologist I listened to here in a seminar told the participants to…not talk to sub personalities it only strengthens their existence and empowers them to stay around. Another psychiatrist wrote me a letter telling me not to mix psychology and religion concerning this issue. Another one says *tell the victims that memories of satanic ritual abuse are a delusion!*
- 3. RELIGIOUS COVER UP. There are those who are very versed in the Bible and believe that satan is real but only in the religious sense. That the old devil just teases believers and is an 'undetectable annoyance' that you can't nail down. I had a man send me a letter stating that "to talk about the devil only glorifies him'. So, I guess that means that the Bible glorifies the devil since it speaks so much about him and reveals so much about this 'secret power' of darkness? You may have to get rid of a third of the entire Bible to do this or just willfully stay ignorant of it!
- 4. PERPETRATORS COVER UP. Drug runners and child sexual criminals are masters at cover up, secrecy and hiding in plain sight. We know there are more active drug dealers and sexual perverts than the number of those who've been caught. Perpetrators of satanic ritual abuse and crime are without question masters of masquerade, deception and cover up…they have the active presence of the father of lies supporting them. Secrecy is the law of underground satanism. Threats of death, retribution and severe punishment await those who tell.

- 5. SATANIC COVER UP. If you believe the Bible then you know what he and his work have done in supernatural secrecy with real supernatural power. God alone has revealed who and what this evil one is all about. Jesus himself comes and pulls back the veil on existing dark powers by his sheer presence and ministry. God has come to reveal who, what, when and the where of this radical evil. I will emphasize in this book that God, Christ, the Holy Spirit and the Word of God give the only (accurate) *unveiling of this active evil*. It's vital to be knowledgeable and very aware of this menace.

"In order that satan might not outwit us. *For we are not unaware of his schemes."* 2Corinthians 2

SERVANT WARRIORS

Some are ready to know and then do something about it: Ezekiel was one of them. Many books have been written on this subject by now but nothing brings the impact of this active evil more than dealing with it…face to face. Ezekiel was given a 'supernatural look into the substructure of radical evil.' I will deal in detail with this in the 4th section. As in Ezekiel 8 radical evil was there and is here…as never before in human history. God knows every inch of what is going on and looks for those who will be open to knowing and doing something about it.

To get a heads up on the devil and his 'play book' you can read books like the many volumes of Jeffery Burton Russell's work on the existence of the devil *in public history.* You can read 'The Franklin Cover Up', 'The Satan Hunter', 'Secret Weapons', 'Is Satanism Real?' or a hundred other books that I listed in this work but the best and only accurate work is in the Scripture God has given.

"Everything is uncovered and laid bare before the eyes of him to whom we must give account" Hebrews 2

"He reveals deep and hidden things; he knows what lies in darkness and light dwells with him" Daniel 2

THE SPB EXPOSED BY THE BOOK

If you know what somebody else's plan is you have a real advantage. An even greater advantage in this case is when knowledge of what the once anointed cherub is and is doing moves from the fallen finite mind of man and yields to the infinite awareness of God. Truly omnipresence, omniscience and omnipotence are the ultimate weapons that will suffice in dealing with this ancient but active evil and only God is and has this. God can and does do total surveillance on this entire dark agenda. Literally, satan can't plan or do anything without God knowing.

Is there a satanic master plan/play (SPB) book? YES! Scripture reveals:

- It is a furious plot Revelation 12
- It is evil in control 1 John 5
- There are global goals 2 Thessalonians 2
- He has never stopped Revelation 18
- He seeks a more opportune time Matthew 4
- He asks to destroy Christians
- He seeks to devour 1 Peter 5
- He is a murderer and father of lies John
- There is a sequence of Satanic evolution
- 1 Thessalonians 2-Revelation
- It's not random but planned. Revelation 19:19
- He seeks the masses as part of his plan. Psalm 2
- Satan has a plan and it includes you, the world, governments, politicians, militaries, economics, counterfeit doctrine, miracles, prophets, supernatural secrecy-deception and the coming pinnacle…the anti (counterfeit) christ (satan in human skin). Daniel; Matthew 24; 1Timothy 4; 2Thessalonians 2; 1John 2 the entire book of Revelation.

This is only a small part of the Biblical revelation. One can start with these scriptures…they will be an eye full. Do we have even more inside information to this sequence and the evolution of that plan? YES!

"…the secret power of lawlessness is already at *work*…in accordance with the *work* of satan…" 2 Thessalonians 2 "…the ruler of the kingdom of the air, the Spirit who is now at *work* in those who are disobedient (active willful rebellion against God). Ephesians 2

The primary drive is chaos (black awakening) and then a new world order. But don't miss the ultimate reason for the chaos. It's for the creation of a new world order! And the only reason for the goal of globalism is political and military development and control. What is this all for? So he can use them in mass (PS2-R1919) when Jesus is going to return. Whether you believe in the second coming or not, satan knows Jesus is coming (just like the first time Revelation 12). All of the political, global and military might he evolves is for one thing and only one thing, in the end…. the attempted annihilation of God. Don't lose sight of this as you consider satanic ritual abuse and the millions of victims of 'mind control' and or who is behind it.

This is the madness of the satanic agenda. It's what this darkness is all about and leading to. Knowing this ultimate goal will cause you to realize satan must have a supernaturally controlled military ('super soldiers') to have a controlled globalism.

As you think over these points in this chapter my question is; can you track the satanic playbook? The answer is yes but only with a:

Supernatural hole into this substructure of radical evil

You will need:

- a deep knowledge of the Biblical and prophetic revelation of God in scripture,
- an affective prayer life,
- to be experienced in the power and work of the Holy Spirit,
- to know and be involved in the love compelling mission of God
- and a have personal knowledge of the One who came to destroy the devil's work (1John3) and rescue us…the Savior Jesus Christ.

After all it's not the anti-Buddha anti-Mohammad or Anti-Quetzacoltal who's coming to do all this…it's the anti-Christ!!

FINALLY

God revealed the substructure, activity and agenda of radical evil in Ezekiel's day. It wasn't so Ezekiel would be amazed or just educated. God reveals radical evil so we can be:

- Warned
- Go to work to stop it
- Witness to others of God's grace
- Embrace God and worship Him alone
- Engage in spiritual warfare
- Trust in the One who fights against radical evil and will end all of evil one day.

God reveals the substructure of radical evil… as we have quoted:

"Because the consequences are so terrible"

CHAPTER 8
SATANIC ASCENDENCY OR PANIC

"Evidence from Gunderson's investigations has convinced him that tens of thousands of children or young people disappear from their homes each year, and that many are ritually sacrificed." Former FBI 'THE FRANKLIN COVER UP'

"The student counselor…confirmed that a satanic fad had been sweeping through the school. Kids were scratching pentagrams and 666 signs on their desks and schoolbooks and drawing inverted crosses in pen on the back of their hands." p 64 'SATANIC KILLINGS'

"Ritual ceremonies were held in barns and in open fields on private property. The most important ceremonies, Sam says, were held on Christmas and Easter in order to blaspheme the most holy Christian days." p 67 'THE DEVILS WEB'

"So from time immemorial men have believed in the existence of the devil. Sin and wickedness are the hallmarks of his kingdom, disintegration and destruction its inevitable result." p 14 'MARX & SATAN"

"The devil plants people in many churches that pretend to be Christians but are not" p 264 'SPIRITUAL WARFARE' DEFEATING THE FORCES OF DARKNESS

Many who have read and are aware of the rise of satanism in the US know the stories of Tommy Sullivan who cut up his mother and took his own life or of Richard Ramirez who raped, beat and brutally murdered many victims 'in

the name of satan'. Stories of Sean Sellers, Ricky Kasso and a hundred others only begin the first chapter on the issue of satanic ascendency and satanic crime in the last 30 years. Multitudes of dark spiritual streams have flooded the US since the 60's. Occult historian James Web reveals to us in his book 'THE OCCULT ESTABLISHMENT' that the second greatest release of occult books and writings in history took place in the USA in the 60's, the first according to Web occurred in pre-Nazi Germany. Webs conclusions correspond to author Bob Rosio's view of this development in his work 'HITLER AND THE NEW AGE'. It is without question that this influx of information has contributed to the practices of satanism and the rise of very dark occultism.

In my youth work with thousands of students in the 70's to the 90's the staff and I saw a consistent rise of young people involved in satanism and ritual practice. When I began to target these youth I not only ran into young people who had read, practiced and sought satan, I engaged kids who also had demonic presence in them and others who were ready to harm others in satan's name.

The stories below are a number of personal engagements that relate to this 'ascendancy of satan'. I have read tons of the books and reports which are bad enough but it was the engagement with many people that revealed the aggressive nature of the rise of satanism.

WAR ON THE SAINTS

There was a call from a pastor who said a young satanist had shown up at his church. He wanted me to talk to her. Getting her address I went. She was there and surprised that I found her. As we talked she told me about some of the satanic background she was in though she would not tell me names or ritual sites. At the end of our conversation I told her I would pray for her, at that she bolted up the outside stairs yelling and cussing at me not to and slammed the door. I smiled because I thought doesn't she know that running away and closing the door would not block the prayers?

This girl had been going to a local church where we arranged a small conference with author Tom Wedge (THE SATAN HUNTER). Tom had just

returned from California and a meeting with Anton LaVey (author of the satanic bible). She began to infiltrate this church and would even be at the pastor's home engaging his children. This young satanist told me she was trying to recruit young people out of that church and into satanism. At one point she let me read her 'book of shadows' where it was written that she was putting ritual curses on the pastor and his wife. She was seeking to destroy them. She actually got caught in the church late one night doing a satanic ritual.

I didn't trust her much and felt she really was up to some sinister harm. She showed up at my office one day unannounced to talk for a while. After she left I went to prayer and looked over and saw something that was stuffed in the edged of the couch. It was her demonized power rings. When I pulled them out the Spirit of God warned me that they were placed with a curse. I prayed over them and any curses she sought to release.

Then she showed up at my church dressed all in black and would get up and leave right when I started to preach. She returned on Sunday and came up to me in the midst of a bunch of people and swore she would steal my 2 years old daughter and sacrifice her. Her eyes were dark and cold and the resolve was there. She said she had to get her rank back in the coven and had to do this. I did tell her that if she broke into my house and sought my daughter I would…blow her away. Mad she said 'you can't you're a Christian'! I responded that I wouldn't hesitate to use the sling 12 gauge that I had, because I knew what they would do to a child. She left angry.

This is the satanist who had tattooed on her left wrist the phrase 'war on the saints'; a statement from the book of Daniel about the antichrist's coming attack on believers. She came to a big evangelism event with others who stood in the sanctuary doing some kind of 'chaos magic hand curses'. Prayer team members went behind them in the 3,000 seat auditorium and prayed against the dark powers. The only things that happened in those services were that over 60 people per night came to Christ for salvation and God's power was overwhelmingly present. (I think the coven group left mad).

The last time I saw her was when I got a call to go and talk to her. She wasn't living at her home but moved to an apartment. I got the address from

her mom and went to talk to her. It was very strange, the apartment was over 20 miles from her family's home but only 2 houses away from the small apartment my wife, my daughter and I had lived in a few weeks prior. We had just moved from there because of the need to have a larger place for our daughter. Our address of that little apartment was still in the phone book but most didn't know we had moved. I wonder why she moved that close. She is still out there with that tattoo on the left wrist…war on the saints.

MARK IS DEAD

This young man talked to me and cried about his home life. I talked about Jesus and His love for him…he listened for some time. I had other kids living in our home at the time and they told me that Mark had been missing. In the area where I lived there were a lot of youth who were out on the streets, running and partying. I saw Mark one night and tried to talk to him. He just flashed me the 'goat's head' sign and yelled something.

A few weeks later I got the call, a young person told me Mark was living with a bunch of runaway youth at a house with some older women and they were doing satanic rituals. With some prayer and investigation I finally found the house and went up to the door. It was smashed in and had satanic symbols all over it.

The man who came to the door let me in; he was the landlord and had just kicked out a woman and a bunch of kids the day before. The whole inside of the home was covered in satanic symbols, words, curses against God, and blood stains. I went looking for Mark. I was told by others he would not talk to me and two days later Mark was dead. In his own bedroom he got a gun and blew his brains out. My last image of Mark was when he put up that goats head sign and yelled at me.

CHANTING TO KILL THE BABY

They called me because they feared what a boy was doing to the teenage girl. She was a pregnant teen whose satanic boyfriend was cursing her and using ritual language on the phone against her and her mom. I confronted the boy and tried to talk to him. He just sneered at me and slammed the door shut.

We prayed against the curses and rituals that were done. The teenage girl had her baby with no harm done.

A CURSED NOTE

A girl came to me and was very animated to say the least. A boy had written out some sort of spell with strange writings and symbols on it. He claimed he would come to her in her dreams and invade her mind. We prayed over the note, for the boy and for God's protection on the girl. We then burned the note and went on to the food fellowship that was planned. No one invaded her mind. But the questions are…who was this boy? Why did he want to harm the girl? Who taught him these satanic writings, symbols and abilities?

BILLY

Then there was Billy, who was taken to a party to get free sex, alcohol and drugs. But it was all done with a dark purpose. They wanted to recruit Billy into the local coven. They started by cutting his hand and taking that hand and smearing his blood on the page of a 'strange' book. They threatened him with death if he ever told.

A FAMILY UNDER ATTACK

This family lived over an apartment where dark occult practices were being done. They heard chanting, smelled incense and saw people with hooded robes on in the backyard in the middle of the night. It was a 'master' and some members of the Black Sun Camp of the OTO. Family members told me they felt an evil presence and strange supernatural things were occurring so they decided to move. The even stranger thing was the fact that this was the dark occult group some of our staff infiltrated 4 times to see what rituals they were doing.

All of the above stories are a few of the many we have engaged for years. This type of encounter and those much worse are still growing beyond what most would know. Since the 80's police departments have created cult/occult crime units and some hospitals have formed ritual abuse wards/floors just to

handle the swelling numbers of SRA/MPD victims and the numbers are still growing.

I am listing below the outline of a course taught on the rise of satanism in the US and decided to put it up on the internet as a training course. The goal was to let folks know what is happening, what to look for and then how to respond.

Here is the outline and a few comments on each area. The internet course has over 24 hours of teaching sessions on these topics. I consider this only a basic course but it has more information than most any pastor, parent or teacher has usually learned. *Since you have bought this book and are an interested reader/researcher just go to our website www.shatterthedarkness.netclick the tab that says 'book plus' enter this code R1919 and a link will be sent to you with this full web course with 24+ hours of mp3 sessions…free!* The course alone is more than twice the cost of the book you're holding, so I think that's a great deal. (There is one more course coupon coming later in the book also). I just wanted to give you this information as an added bonus to help in the spiritual battle. Here is the outline and a few comments:

- ORIGINS. This session deals with the origins of evil and the reasons for radial evil. It will touch on the growth of satanism and give a panoramic view of the satanic agenda.
- SIGNS & SYMBOLS-THE DEMONS ARE DANCING. To know what a black mass or satanic justice symbol is can help you know what might be going on in an area or what went on in a crime scene. There are so many symbols and signs used in satanism and the occult that it's hard to keep track. But it's like its own language and even indicates the summoning or presence of a demonic entity.
- BIBLICAL REVELATION ON SATANISM. Scripture alone gives the best, most and only accurate unveiling of satan. The Bible reveals his origin, nature, methods and agenda. Most people have no way of knowing what to look for when it comes to real satanic or demonic activity. The scripture also gives the prophetic or future insight of satanic activity including the end of days and the rise of antichrist.

- SATANIC POWERS ARE REAL. It's true that real luciferians and satanists know the demons and satanic powers are real. The scriptures reveal that the words used for God's power, presence and supernatural works are also used by satanists. Real satanism is not about parlor tricks or fake magic; the powers are of old and they have been running their schemes for millennia. The presence, power and abilities that satan/demons can unleash are as real as God's but of course finite, able to be defeated and deadly for those who acquire them. People can really be possessed, satanists can really summon demonic presence and release dark powers and covens can really send demons against chosen targets! Do you know how to tell when it's satan's masquerading works?
- PSYCHO SATANISM. This is the form of satanic work done by those who are 'psycho' or taken over by the dark powers. Richard Ramirez the satanic night stalker who raped, killed and terrorized many would be a classic example; Jeffery Dahmer is another. Psycho satanists usually are already deviant and use satanism to further their own evil. Psycho satanists are usually loners and only have some basic knowledge of satanic practice and rituals. They mix their deviant behavior with satanic imagery but can become deadly and are destructive.
- SELF STYLED SATANISM. This form of satanism is developed by those who may read the satanic literature and practice the dark arts but join no groups. They may wear black, have satanic tattoos, or have pentagrams or other symbols on them or in their home. They may even listen to music that is very dark and satanic. Usually they won't seek to harm others or join official groups but they may have a circle of friends that are into likeminded practices.
- DABBLERS ARE DANGEROUS. I say this because some cases where a youth killed his parents or some who have committed suicide bits and pieces of satanic practice were engaged. A dabbler may be a youth who has seen satanic symbols on an album cover or read a book that deals with satanic rituals. They, being novices may go to a graveyard and knock over graves and or draw symbols on them. They may want to 'freak' out other youth but they have no idea they are playing with fire. If they open doors to the demonic realm they usually have no idea what they have done or how to stop it. Dabblers out of control can damage

property, harm a small animal or even commit major crimes when they're out of control.

- POPULAR SATANISM. This is 'main' stream; you will see it in music, art, movies or on clothing. The man figure was Anton LaVey who was the founder of the Church of satan and author of the satanic bible. There are thousands of web sites dedicated to Anton and the church of satan. Anton and the dark church includes rituals and practices that feed the fallen nature of man and open them to moral and spiritual corruption. Though popular satanism claims that satan is only a philosophy the rituals and calling on of demons seem to reveal that real powers are sought. Though they say satan is not a real entity all that satan is seems to be infused into their practices.
- TRADITIONAL SATANISM. This is the form that does worship satan directly. They will seek satan and demons as real beings and desire favors from them. They may use blood in their rituals and seek secrecy beyond that of those in popular satanism. The church of the black goat with their book called the devil's bible will be an example of traditional satanism. In that book you will have clear insight to a hatred of God, rituals that include renouncing God, Christ, the Bible and ceremonies that lead into seeking direct fellowship with satan. There is a warning in the devil's "bible" that tells the one who surrenders to satan there is no turning back and warns that if anyone would try satan will bring them harm.
- ELITIST SET-ISM/SATANISM deals with a form of satanism that will mix older dark occultism, the Egyptian god Set (satan) and practices that include; numerous rituals, sex rituals and engagement with very high rituals. Col. Michal Aquino and his founding of the 'Temple of Set' is the main example. The Col. is deeply versed in mind control and advanced military weapons systems. Though he was accused of child sexual abuse and mind control he has never been convicted. The Col. has said that they have a satanic grotto (coven) on every US military base in the world. This form of satanism seeks members who are highly "intellectual" and those who are involved in the military.
- Linda Blood author of THE NEW SATANISTS claims to have been used by this leader and his group in rituals and claims to have been at many meetings where blood was shed and children were abused.

- ALEISTER CROWLEY. This dark occultist is known around the world. He has been called the 'BEAST 666' and from the rituals, crimes and practices of this sophisticated satanist that title fits. Crowley has authored many books and has influenced millions with darker forms of ritual magik. It is reported that he sought a 'moon child' which would be a cross between a demon and human. His rituals include deeply perverted sex, shedding of blood and the reception of very dark spirits. Crowley performed a ritual in which his son died and very strange things occurred. Crowley died poor, sick and in misery.
- REAL LUCIFERIANS. Many have asked what a 'luciferian' really is and do they exist. It's clear they exist and their form of belief and practice may be the closest link to the fallen cherub than all the rest. They believe that satan is really a being of great and superior light, he was unjustly thrown out of heaven and is coming back to take his rightful place.
- Real luciferians directly worship to bring about the purpose and will of this "angel of light" and seek/work for Lucifer's entrance into the world where they believe they will become gods themselves. They believe the antichrist is their 'light being' and will come to rule the world.
- *Chosen Ones* I write about in this book claim to be a part of this luciferian agenda. It's clear that real luciferians are the ones behind the creation of *chosen ones* and the coming chaos. Other terms for them would be 'the brotherhood' 'the ancient brotherhood' and or the illuminati.
- They are the wealthy elite who control the world's wealth, seek control of the political and military realms, are trans-generational, multinational and believe their own bloodlines may go back to the nephilim.
- SATANIC WORSHIP. Though all of the above listings of satanism may have differences they all have some form of satanic worship. From benign ceremonies to large group coven meetings, from just words spoken to human sacrifice and orgies…all of it is part of the evil one's work. Please remember satan seeks worshipers who will exalt him and serve his destructive cause. You can go back to the Bible in Ezekiel 8 and see the old roots of this dark line. You can also see on You-Tube all of these above forms practiced in various ways.
- When you study 2Thessalonians 2 you will see the ultimate desire of satan as he comes in human form-self exultation to Godhood. In the book

of Revelation the antichrist seeks worship and even causes a 'forced worship' of his image or die scenario. His desire to take the throne of God and replace God is his passionate agenda (Isaiah 14). This is something the finite fallen cherub seeks but can never become. The finite cannot evolve or transmute into the infinite!

- SATANISM AND THE WEB. Nowhere can more be found on satanism than on the web. There are thousands of sites, meet up groups, teachings and information. There is also a lot of recruiting going on and many enticements to become a part. The really bad thing is that many old rituals are now on line. Rituals that were once secretive and known to only a few are now open to the world. Many of these rituals that I looked at are the real McCoy! If used by teenagers and others who are just curious or even seek powers they may get more than they bargained for. If you call on the dark powers they will come. If millions learn the information, rituals and possibilities then massive doorways will be opened. I have even been told that real luciferians transfer demons onto their web work to ward off Christians, attack them or seek to draw novice seekers.
- SATANIC CRIMES. The next chapter in this book will deal more in depth with this area of satanic influence. Let me just say here that massive underground satanic crime has and is being committed.
- SATANISM AND MUSIC. While I was a police chaplain I was called on duty for the many rock concerts held at the Jar arena at the University of Akron. There I watched bands like Slayer, Marilyn Manson, Danzig, Pantera, Type O Negative and others. There was a host of popular satanic symbols, signs and lyrics demonstrated. Also thousands of young people who came to hear wore clothes, had tattoos and jewelry with the same. The worst I saw was the 'cartoon' magazines that were produced by Danzig; they had in them graphic pictures of demons raping young girls.
- WEAPONIZING SATANIC POWERS. In this section I deal with the ancient, historic and current desire to seek supernatural powers to aid in military warfare. Rituals have been used in the past and may be being used today to seek supernatural powers to give advantage in military weapons systems.
- In the course I also deal with issues; Does God love satanists? Can you get out? How does satan masquerade his powers? How did satan use

Judas? Satanism's war on the church, satanic ritual abuse and satanism ties to the coming black awakening. So if you want the 24 hours of mp3s just go to the Shatter the Darkness site and click 'book plus' to get a more in-depth overview of the ascendancy of satanism. I would urge too that throughout this book and all of your research that you stay fearless, bold and prayed up! Remember we must not be 'unaware' of the enemy's schemes. (2 Corinthians 1).

- In my experience of dealing with satanists from all of the above areas and the research of the materials that I have done there is a constant theme; *hatred of God, blaspheme of Christ and an agenda that seeks to rid the world of God and anyone that follows Christ.* Satanism is also self defeating in that no matter how powerful the rituals are or how deep one is involved with the dark side it is all finite. Satan lost in the heavenlies, couldn't destroy the Old Testament people of God, lost at the Cross (which sealed his fate) and its predicted that he can't destroy the Church, the world or stop the descent of Jesus Christ when He returns visibly (See Revelation 19-20).

Though satan is real and will bring grave deception and destruction to the world (because of those who embrace him) his fate is clear and one day the totality of the fallen cherub and his radical evil will be ended. So if you're in this dark camp I would urge you to get out now, there is coming a day when you can't. The work of Christ and the blood he shed there can set you free and bring you the power, love and future you need.

FINALLY

The rise of satanism in the US and the world is clearly unprecedented and still growing. All of the forms of satanism are ascending right now and will help open more and more doors to the seeking of dark spirits. There is a supernatural dark agenda operating and it's manifesting in the world as I write and you read. No one will escape the rise of the dark powers. It's not going away. It's only going to get worse! What Jesus spoke in Matthew 24 over 2000 years ago about the end should be known well and heeded. The rise of all forms of satanism is unequaled and there are no signs of it slowing down.

“For then there will be great distress, unequaled from the beginning of the world until now and never to be equaled again.”

Jesus and the prediction of the rise of evil in the end of days. Matthew 24

The consequences of not listening are too terrible!

CHAPTER 9
SATANIC CRIMES
PROGRAMMED TO KILL

"For homicide investigations….I advise that officers investigate from the outside perimeter in….if a body's right hand is tied or taped down, their chest has been cut open and heart taken, this is a definite indication of satanic involvement" p147 'THE SATAN HUNTER'

"A pentagram had been carved in the victim's chest and his body had partially been drained of blood during the ritual. Candle-wax drippings were found in his right eye." P 139 'CULTS THAT KILL'

"In a dark and ugly netherworld where violent crime and covert operations collide, there appear to be two general categories into which a large majority of those we label 'serial killers' can be sorted: controlled assassins, and controlled patsies." P 271 'PROGRAMMED TO KILL'

"There are many reasons for an officer to develop a working knowledge of occult religions. One is to help steer an investigation in the right direction." 5'A COP'S GUIDE TO OCCULT INVESTIGATIONS

You are about to read some very terrible events; they involve crime, real people and even satanic motivation. You may want to take a drink of some strong coffee or put up some prayers and then take your time through this chapter. What you read here may sicken you, outrage you and even move you to action. It's one thing to read about occult or satanic crime, it's another thing to see it or talk to the victims who tremble just to tell what was done in dark secrecy. It's painful to listen, see or even read about this hellishness it's another thing to be the one going through it. Hopefully you are not one that

has gone through it and prayerfully you never will. There is great pain, fear and hopelessness that accompany the victim of satanic crime. Reading the stories here and in other books that I have listened will make your head spin and I hope cause you to set your heart against radical evil in all of its forms.

"Love must be sincere. Hate what is evil; cling to what is good" Romans 12

"….he feared God and shunned evil." Job

THE PINK HEAD

First let me tell you about an image that is in my head because I saw it. I hope you haven't but now you will at least have an idea. I was at a law enforcement training facility and the instructor was Tom Wedge. It was an advanced occult field training course and we were watching a video in the class room. There she was, or at least part of her……it was the head of a teenage girl who had been used in a violent satanic ritual. It was first just a head, a pink head with no hair, eyelids or eyebrows. You see the psycho satanists scum bags had cut around the outside parameters of this teens head and then peeled off her face and scalp!...and then they cut her head off. All I saw was the pink head with eyes that couldn't shut; it only spoke of the horror and pain that must have been there as she went through it. Once a mom and dad's daughter, a little girl playing house or with her dolls but now a few years latter….just a pink head.

Damn them to hell and thank God that he will bring it all to justice. None of the unrepentant perpetrators will escape the in your face judgment that will come and rightly so. What could have made this group do such a thing? Where do the ideas come from? How can anyone cause so much pain to another and them lavish in such a sick cruelty to a human corpse?

"But if you do not do what is right, sin is crouching at your door; it desires to have you..." Genesis 4

"As soon as Judas had taken the bread *satan entered into him*…., he went out. And it was night." John 13:27-30

Sin is no laughing matter, it is what the devil is about, it is what he drew humanity into, and it is an active code deep in the DNA of mankind. The sin code in fallen humanity is a law, a controlling operating law (see Romans 8). The sin code is a force that can lead anyone who gives into it the wherewithal to do unspeakable things. Sin is a manifestation of saying no to God and yes to a dark snake. Sin can 'crouch' and push. Sin is the devil's tool and a doorway that allows the entrance of the father of sin himself. In many ways sin is a form of programming. It is what the evil one wants (imposition of another's will) us to do. Deep willful sin is the place satan can work (be supernaturally operative) and how he influences individual lives. Note the scriptures:

"…the spirit who is now at work in those who are disobedient (willfully actively sinning, see Ephesians 2). Also note in 1 John 3 "He who does what is sinful is of the devil, because the devil has been sinning from the beginning."

The broader the door of sin and evil a person delves into the wider the opening is for the devil to just walk right in and supercharge the direction and actions of their life and nothing good every comes from this deep destructive combination. For that little teenage girl who was used, abused and left only as a pink head on a table demonstrates the dark lethal nature of the sin code with the demonic operating through it.

FEWTON ROAD

Two teenage girls were left naked, brutally abused and dead back in the fields on Fewton Rd. I have been back there to see the sight and pray over the area many times now. It's a known place of satanic rituals and practices far back into the woods and a very eerie place. I was involved because the man believed to have done this is a deadly intact *chosen one*.

This is the man who attacked me in front of four police officers because I told his inner Nazi satanist personality that I stand against satan and his works. He returned home after spending a few days in the very area the second girl was taken from. He knew the murder weapon and his inner coven

personality told us that he had to 'purify' the body because he was contaminated. The contamination (spiritually weakening) was because he was reading the Bible and wanting to turn to Jesus Christ. That 'purification' involves the need to abduct a victim on a ritual date and then do a ritual that includes torturing a young girl, shedding her blood, drawing the demons and then slaying her. Deep luciferians (and inner sub personalities) who do this believe they then receive the dark powers that were attached (summoned) to the ritualized girl which in turn charges their own blood with the demons/dark energies and 'purifies' (totally darkens) them.

The first girl he did this to had been taken from a neighboring state and brought here. The second girl was taken from the city next to the county where the ritual crime was done. The first crime was on demon revels and the second girl's murder was done on satanic revels. Both were left out in the open field to be found. A cult crime law enforcement person took me to the crime scene area just a day after the 17 year old was found.

To this day a team of workers still pray for the perpetrator satanist and that those who created and handle him will be exposed and dealt with…one way or another. I personally believe that this person with his inside satan loyal personalities has done this before and will do it again (if he hasn't already) if not stopped. I also know that he is only one of thousands of intact *chosen ones* who have and will do this 'purification' ritual again and again.

JACKIE

She was a beautiful little girl only 6 months old when I met her and her parents. She and her twin sister were like two peas in a pod with the exception of one being a little bigger than the other. I met the parents who were coming out of a hard past life and were willing to seek a change. I prayed with them and picked them up for church. We packed my old Jeep Cherokee and got to the church where many folks just fell in love with the girls and cared for the young parents.

I went over again to see the girls and was planning on giving these parents my jeep so they could get around and come to church. I was told the girls were sick and couldn't come to church and this continued for a few months. I

went over again to find them but only the mom was there and a man who didn't seem glad that I showed up.

I was not allowed to see the twins and was told they were moving. I offered help, food, furniture and other aide. I gave the mom my home number and told her to call me the next day. She didn't and then she and the girls were gone. It would be 4 months later that I was led by the Spirit of God to go back and find them; I left a note on the old house and was told by others there that the dad still lived there. That same day I heard the fateful news report on the radio that little Jackie was dead! I drove back to the house and there was the father sitting on the stoop talking with the news media. He told me that a new man came into the mother's life, that he was a dark occultist and that he ritually murdered little Jackie.

The Beacon Journal newspaper reported that the man said he was a self proclaimed 'black pagan'. The mother was said to have multiple personality disorder and a background of drugs and dark practices. They were both charged and are in an Ohio prison to this very day.

Little Jackie is gone. She had many broken bones and numerous stab wounds on the bottoms of her feet. She had occult symbols tattooed on the side of her head and was tortured for her tears and pain. Those doing it wanted to offer her for spiritual powers for their own lives. The father told me where his daughter was taken for some of the ritual abuse she experienced. It was and is known for a number of satanic rituals. It is a place we monitor to this day. I believe there were more involved and know what was done to Jackie; we are hunting them even now. A picture of this little girl I once held and took to my church is on my web site www.shatterthedarkness.net.

HER HANDS ARE STILL OUT THERE

A defense attorney in my city called me and asked me to come to his office. When I arrived he asked me if I would help with a case that dealt with a girl who was ritually murdered around a satanic ritual date (the hands of glory) in September. He asked me if I believed satan was real and of course I told him yes. There was a man charged with the crime and he is in prison

seeking an appeal. I met with him a number of times and conclude that he was a part of the crime but others were too, however I am not sure if those others are real outside satanists or if it is satanists within him…dark sub personalities.

The girl was stabbed many times as she was sexually abused. The energies of fear, pain and terror were raised to draw the demons. She was kept alive until a point of time in the middle of the night and then killed. In this ritual the dark powers summoned would then be given to the murderer. Her hands were cut off, taken and never found. This is an ongoing case.

LEWIS NEVER FOUND

A girl came into my office; she had just returned from the state of Oregon and told me she was escaping a family of satanists and a life of abuse. She began to tell me about a satanic priest named Kieno and that he put her through sex rituals and had her at one of the most horrific rituals I have ever heard about. She told me of a house in our area where a bloody ritual occurred. She was taken there by others and was sexually used. A little boy was also there who was being stripped and put on the floor. It was there that a sacrifice of a little boy was being conducted. She told me what the boy was wearing and that he had these bright little socks on. She also told me that it may have been her mother and a man that went out of the state of Ohio to abduct this boy.

The amazing thing about this confession was that I had never met this girl before but she knew of Kieno whom we engaged many times in my home town. We knew Kieno was a very wicked man who had done animal and human sacrifice. This is the man who was taking the federal officer's wife we dealt with and was abusing her. She had been put through many rituals and told us of his ritual sites and sacrifices. Now this girl shows up and tells us the same things with this additional bit of information. The little boy who was abducted was taken from a Pennsylvania city and was never found. She then told us that they sacrificed him and then they ate him…yes they ate him! She said she will never forget him and that those bright socks he had were still in her mind.

I looked for missing children and to my amazement I found little Lewis. He was from a small city in PA and was said to be talking to a man and a women before he went missing. The news and police report said that he had a very, very distinct pair of bright socks on. I called the current detective who had the case; I told him all of this…to his shame he has never looked into this. Then again some of the powers sought in a ritual are release for protection and invisibility. There are even rituals that are done against law enforcement to blind them to the satanic rituals. To this day we have not given up on this case, we have been to the boarded up house where Lewis was said to be ritually murdered. We are working on it.

The above cases are the ones we have been draw into over the last 20 years. I could repeat the oft told stories that have been written about again and again. Sean Sellers, Richard Ramirez, Tommy Sullivan and others are well known. Here are a list of books that have many other cases and a lot of documentation. If you want more research I suggest you read:

'PAINTED BLACK', 'THE SATAN HUNTER', 'LUCIFERS LODGE', 'BLACK MASS', 'IS SATANISM REAL', 'A COPS GUIDE TO OCCULT INVESTIGATION', 'THE COMING DARKNESS', 'PROGRAMMED TO KILL', 'CRIME WARPS', 'SECRET WEAPONS', 'NOBODYS ANGEL', 'THE EDGE OF EVIL' and CULTS THAT KILL.'

I could mention a dozen more but these will have case after case of satanic crime and victimization with documentation and other facts. I have personally seen hundreds of satanic and occult crime slides and pictures while at law enforcement training. I have listened to and heard hundreds of stories of these types of crimes. I have interviewed victims and sought to lead them to healing that can be found in Jesus Christ. Under a section called 'the new criminals' in the book 'CRIME WARPS' we are told that the crime wave of the 90's would be satanic crime.

We have investigated, ran surveillance, dug up bones, turned over evidence to law enforcement and engaged satanic perpetrators. We have been warned, stabbed at, cursed, harassed and stalked. They have taken pictures of us, our house and came on our property. They threatened to steal my daughter

and said they want to get me to split my ‘Christian core’.

SATANIC CRIME IS REAL

Yes it is real and growing. Thousands of cases are reported and investigated. Drug runners have satanist priests do rituals to keep them hidden and hundreds of thousands of cases of satanic ritual abuse have been reported. There are satanic crimes in grave yards, against animals, in families and others preformed by teens getting hold of the ritual books. The reports are one thing, the victim’s broken lives are another…then there are the little ones like Lewis, Jackie and the girl or what was left of her…the pink head. This is why law enforcement all over this country have created cult crime units and have included satanic and occult crime training in the police academies.

THE POWERS SOUGHT ARE REAL

Our experience and thousands of others will tell you that the powers sought in satanic rituals are real. Demons can be summoned and sent. The dark powers can have their affect. For Christians who have lived outside of this crime wave read Ezekiel 8; 2 Kings 21-22 and Revelation 16. There we see what has been done and what will be done in the future. The dark powers are very real and are behind the dark satanic rituals that are growing all around us. The ramping up of the dark side includes these dark rituals; it’s how they can come across and manifest their power.

THE VICTIMS ARE REAL

The victims of serial rapists, murderers and other convicted criminals are growing and being reported all over. The books listed above and this one brings to light what no one really wants to know…satan and underground satanic rituals are happening. If the number of 4 + million claims of ritual abuse and the creation of multiple personality disorder are not enough then check out Dr. Collin Ross, he’s the psychiatrist who mentions maybe there are 10 million cases of SRA/MPD. All of which have as their foundation ‘criminal’- sexual, physical, mental, emotional and spiritual abuse. It has and

is happening all around us.

FINALLY

The stories I told above should be enough! They are enough for me to know that the satanic powers, rituals and workers are real and growing. That all of this we know about and have seen is but the tip of the deep demonic iceberg. Each story above has a host of family and others who were damaged and left in the bloody wake of these satanic crimes.

I have sat with parents who lost their children to these sadistic acts and I'll never forget their tears and anguish. The victims have experienced hell on earth per say and it is taking a long time to bring the help and healing they need. The goal should be to listen, learn and do something about this. To sit and do nothing only helps aid and abed, giving them all the room they need to continue. *I for one don't want to see…another girl's pink head!*

CHAPTER 10
LUCIFERS LODGE AND THE CATHOLIC CHURCH

"But what is the ultimate purpose behind the perpetuation of these satanic traditions by the various secret societies that practice them? Evidence points to a concerted effort for world domination: the New World Order…" p 5 'LUCIFERS LODGE'

"…looking grim, father Daniel responded that the possession was entrenched. Giovanna had been undergoing exorcisms….her case was considered one of the most severe that many exorcists in Rome…had seen." P 184 'THE RITE' The Making of a Modern Exorcist

"Since Jesus' first act is to confront satan in the desert, and his first sign of power and authority is to cast out a demonic spirit, it is apparent that a primary purpose of his ministry was to expose satan and destroy his power." p 30 'SATANISM IS IT REAL?'

"Sensing the discomforting secrets within the bosom of the Church, the two curates collaborated to gather information about pedophile priests who were practicing Satanism and the church leaders who protected them." P146 'LUCIFERS LODGE'

We snuck down the stairs and took a look for a 'black' room in the old basement of a catholic church. Knowing we would get in trouble if we got caught was on my mind but the knowledge of ritual abuse of children and the summoning of dark spirits down there was more important and needed to be exposed. I would rather risk getting in trouble than to know that victims are suffering and no one is helping them. I say let's cleanse the temple as Jesus

did and stop the hidden and secret sins of satan worshipping priests...right?

I care about victims; I have seen what seems like a million tears and faces that are filled with pain, shame and unjustifiable loss. I have heard the why me, why didn't anyone help me questions too many times…I am outraged about all of this. I am willing to rip up the floor boards of a church and let the chips fall where they may: Especially if it is a hard core luciferian who has long infiltrated the structure of the Church and stands as a smiling imposter.

Like many who are now on the inside they act like a lamb but in secrecy they're raping and ritually abusing kids. They have hidden their black robes in what seems like secure places, in the house that should only be used for good and the revelation of God.

THE PRIEST, THE FLY AND THE NUN

We had set up a conference on satanic ritual abuse and we had a number of victims who were going to expose perpetrators and tell what happened to them. Everything was going good until some men arrived and upset the SRA/MPD victims. One was a catholic priest who seemed really off. He sought to make contact with the victims and sneered at the testimonies of the victims. I went back where the priest was standing and tried to start a conversation however he sought to avoid me. He looked at me picked up a Bible and used it to slam down and crush a fly. He turned the bible over with the crushed fly still stuck on it and then threw the bible down smiling at me… it was an unholy gaze. He was not what he presented himself to be. He was a fake.

Two of the victims came to me during the break and told me the priest tired to 'trigger' them and sought to disrupt them. Then a man who came with the priest asked me to come down the hall and talk to him. When I got there he began telling be about the Jews and their goal to overtake the world. He gave me paper work that was anti-Semitic and very erroneous. It reminded me of Nazi propaganda. The priest and his folk seemed to disappear in the crowd and were nowhere to be found. Their cars were gone too. The phone numbers on their registration card for the conference were called and they

just blipped off when called.

What they didn't know was that we took down their license plate numbers when they arrived and because of their behavior we had them run. It all lead to an obscure old Latin mass catholic church.…this church was already under suspicion for satanic ritual abuse. A team went to find the priest but the name he gave went nowhere.

A few years later this old Catholic church in a very bizarre way took over a local church building used by a very powerful small church known for its soul winning and spiritual warfare activities. We were involved with this small church and realized that the old priest who was the leader of the Catholic Church was implicated in child sex crimes. As we prayed for exposure I got a strange phone call, it was a woman claiming to be a nun from a monastery where she was ritually abused. I don't know how she got my number but I agreed to meet her.

The meeting was held at a local McDonalds. I was there first and observed her drive in. She drove around again and again looking over her shoulder. She came in, I met her and we sat down. She told me about a catholic church she was serving in and that it had some old retired priests and they were all involved in child sex abuse and satanic rituals. She said they had videos and other evidence. She gave the address, names…..and then told me the name of the Catholic Church. It was the same one we had been dealing with. It was the same one we traced the fake priest to. She told me that if they found out she was talking and helping us they would harm her. She told me how they killed another one of their own who wanted out. She said she had access to the video tapes. Fearful she said she had to go and out the door she went. One of our workers was sitting in McDonalds just a few feet away.

We met again and she told us more. My wife was at this meeting and discerned that maybe she had sub personalities. After that meeting she disappeared. I mean we could not find her anywhere and to this day I have no idea what happened to her. But it doesn't stop there. An old man came to a Sunday night meeting that I was holding where we exposed subjects like this. For weeks he would come and want a private meeting with me. I finally met

with him and he urged me to come with him to a secret meeting, it would be in the basement of a church. I asked him where the church was, it was that building that was taken over by the Catholic Church with the satanic priests. I was being set up just like a number of staff was warned about.

This is not over! That church and its priests are now targeted with specific prayers. A team was staking out that church on a ritual night (on the satanic calendar). The team was sitting in the back of the parking lot at 12 midnight and a car pulled in, a tall priest got out….it was the same priest who first came to our conference. He was in his full garb and went into the building where he met others. There is now a special team of two who are doing counter infiltration of this church. This is not over!

THE CATHOLIC CHURCH INFITRATIED

It is no question that part of the methodology of satan himself is to infiltrate and harm the church. Five of the seven churches listed in the first few chapters of the book of Revelation were being infiltrated with occult and satanic presence.

Satan is at war with the people of God for sure. Jesus taught that He would build His church and that the gates of hell would not prevail. That very statement reveals that the Body of Christ will be thrust into battle…with the very forces of hell itself. If satan had the audacity to confront Jesus directly (Matthew 4), enter into Ananias and Sapphira (Acts 5) and seek to devour Christians (1Peter 5) it's very clear that the visible Church will be attacked. Revelation 12 reveals the long and passionate battle that satan wields against the Church. Note:

"There is no other institution on the face of the earth more fought against than the Body of Christ. If satan can get in he will…and he will seek the greatest harm" RD

Paul Billheimer the great author of some very deep insight of spiritual battle has said in his book 'DESTINED FOR THE THRONE' that satan would rule the world if it were not for the Church's presence that contests his total rule. It was the Church that was launched by Christ with authority over

all the power of the devil (Luke 10) but that there would be spiritual battle for sure. Satan has no problem trying to damage the Church; he has done this from the very beginning of it (see Acts 5).

It does seem that the Catholic Church has been infiltrated deeply and evidence of the satanic crimes has been mounting for years. There are now victims by the hundreds who have come forward. This is why Father Malachi Martian directed William Kennedy to investigate and tell it all, and so he did. William Kennedy's book 'Lucifer's Lodge' is a must read and I am sure from listening to him on talk shows and reading all of his works that what he has exposed is only the tip of the satanic iceberg. The Catholic Church has a lot of places to hide and satanists who have learned from their master has put on the masquerade of priest or a nun but are experienced perverted servants of satan.

THE SEX CRIMES OF THE PREISTS

I have listened to many chosen ones and other victims of satanic rituals who said a catholic priest abused them. Many victims of SRA/MPD say that priests and nuns who were by day the religious figures of respect by night were chanting Latin backwards and holding secret rituals with sexual perversions being performed. There are now hundreds of victims who have come out of the Catholic Church USA that have been sexually abused. Millions of dollars have been poured out now by the Catholic Church in payment to the victims who have won their court cases.

What hasn't been told is that most of those cases included satanic ritual abuse and the creation of multiple personalities in the victims. The satanic ritual issue is being kept out of the courts because it seems so bizarre…and you cannot sue just for the satanic worship. This is where people like William Kennedy come in. In his book 'LUCIFERS LODGE' Kennedy brings massive exposure of the perpetrators within the Catholic Church. He names them, reveals documentation of cover up and implicates priests, bishops and even the Vatican in the crimes of child sexual abuse, satanic rituals and the unjust protection of the perpetrators. Kennedy reveals what many victims have said for years; that there is an underground network of child sex

pedophiles also using satanic rituals to do their vile evil.

It is our experience that there are many fake priests who only masquerade as religious leaders in the catholic system and that the catholic system was easy for them to infiltrate. These occultists dressed in religious garb have been there for a long time and many of them came in through the 'rat lines' that protected fleeing Nazis who still dream of a 4th Reich.

THE SHADOW ORDER MALACHI MARTIN

Listening to Coast to Coast Am with the well known talk show host Art Bell the night he interviewed an older Catholic leader was fascinating. To hear his guest Father Malachi Martin speak about demonic possession, satanic ritual abuse and the existence of a satanic order inside the structure of the Vatican and the Catholic Church was very revealing. This didn't come from a protestant; the massive exposure was coming from Catholics themselves. In Father Martins book 'WINDSWEPT HOUSE' we find this brave priest exposing and seeking to show that satanic rituals, a shadow order and the abuse of children are going on deep inside the Vatican itself.

If what he was putting in novel format was his way of sneaking out the truth then the birth of the antichrist may have occurred in dark secrecy at St. Paul's chapel inside the Vatican walls itself.

This is how real luciferians like it. They like to be right inside the house of God and do their work in blaspheme and in secrecy (see Ezekiel 8). If I were you I would read 'WINDSWEPT HOUSE'. Read it as a report and exposure of a satanic order deep within the Vatican and throughout the Catholic system. This book by Martin says what many *chosen ones* have revealed and other victims may have experienced.

LUCIFER'S LODGE AND SATANIC CRIME

The book by William Kennedy sits here at my right; it is packed with inside information of the crimes of satanists and their abuse of children. On pages 177 and 179 Kennedy says:

"Father Martin also mentions the existence of 'Mother Chapels' in the banned AFA video, and states that they were satanist covens operation secrecy in the Catholic Church. The existence of 'The black room' and 'devil's room' in the previous case studies points to this assertion as fact. There is in reality various ritual chambers used by Catholic priests for the ritual abuse of children."

It is clear from the parable of Jesus Himself that the real Body of Christ will grow vast and even worldwide before the end comes. Jesus also taught that the 'birds' (demonic/unclean spirits and satanic agenda) will come in among the visible Church and perch! See Luke 13. Other Biblical examples are clear also:

- 2 Kings 21-23 deals with the leader who opened the doors to the occult spirits. He sought every type of demon god and demonic practice. This satanic worship included the power god Moloch who always seeks human sacrifice. Manasseh the king in the city of God opened the doors so wide that he allowed demonic worship and the promotion of occult symbols in open sight in the very temple where God was to be revealed and embraced. This entire light level practice moved as it always does to deep dark satanic worship. The beliefs and dark presence finally lead this leader to do the unthinkable; he sacrificed his very own son…*in a burning, torturous and agonizing child sacrifice!* What happened there has happened before, happened since and still does even now.
- Ezekiel 8 reveals again how the satanic worship is being done in dark secrecy and at the same time those dark practitioners are posing as religious leaders in visible Israel (the OT people of God). Those elders were supposed to be leaders who pointed others to the God they worshipped. The real reason for their presence is behind the scenes willful embrace of the unclean darkness.
- In satanic infiltration the leader's worship of God is a sham and a fake. They are expert posers! They, (*having a form of godliness but denying its power*….2Timothy 3) live two lives; one for the public and the real one shrouded in occult secrecy. That verse goes on to say: *'…Have nothing to do with them.*'
- The real reason for a luciferian/satanic worshipper hiding in 'plain' sight within the Church structure, temple and Body of Christ is to

blaspheme God, corrupt the people of God and seek the defeat of God's purpose. And please note, they will continue and grow until something is done. That is their nature and agenda. I believe with every ounce of my being that there are fake religious leaders today whom the public thinks are godly and pious but who double as priests of the fallen cherub.

- This same approach can be found in the first two chapters of the book of Revelation. Five of the seven churches had occult and satanic infiltration. Believers in Christ should not think it strange that some Church finds out an elder or deacon is a child abusing satanist. It's not the Church's fault unless it knowingly turns a deaf ear and blind eye to what is going on.

In these chapters Jesus is seen as knowing all that is going on, He cares and it's clear that He does not tolerate the corrupting energy of satanic infiltration of His Body. Nor should any real Shepherd of God!

I say… save the flock and crush the wolves!

COUNTER INFILTRATION AND THE CATOLIC CHURCH

I do know of a few brave folks who are trained and at work to expose the evil deeds of darkness, save children and route underground luciferians who are within the visible Church. These folks who know what's going on and are deeply versed in spiritual warfare are like the 'spies' that went into Jericho. They are counter infiltrating some Catholic Churches right now where known satanic practices are going on. They are following the principle of God giving…*'A supernatural hole into the substructure of radial evil'.*

Why do they do it? Like in the Ezekiel 8 and 2Kings 21-23 they believe that God wants something done and that something can and must be done. They want victims to be rescued and dark practitioners exposed and stopped. They are willing to do whatever it takes. God does ask:

“Then I heard the voice of the Lord saying, “Whom shall I send? And who will go for us?” Isaiah 6

Someone called this next verse the ‘saddest’ verse in the Bible. It doesn’t have to be!

“I looked for a man among them who would build up the wall and stand before me in the gap on behalf of the land so I would not have to destroy it, but I found none” Ezekiel 22

FINALLY

It shouldn’t surprise us that the satanic agenda would find its way into Church structures and seek to advance its cause from the inside out. This same methodology was used by satanic forces in willing people past and present. Acts chapter five is another testimony of the infiltration work of satan, himself. It’s clear this unclean serpent wants in. If you are in the visible structure of the Church and suspect that there is a person or group of people that are doing this hidden satanic worship…what will you do? If you just run away you might as well give them the keys to the church and hand over the kids. Those who know and do nothing are cowards which aide and abed lethal darkness!

I say… save the flock and crush the wolves

And because…the consequences are too terrible

CHAPTER 11
NAZIS AND THE FOURTH RIECH

"The program of the spirit behind Hitler has now expanded into a worldwide arena…These deceivers are like termites, working invisibly in society, gnawing, undermining, destroying." p 39 'HITLER AND THE NEW AGE'

"This movement contained within itself a 'drawing power' of a strange and dangerous sort." p 146 'RESURRECTING THE THIRD REICH'

"In the years preceding World War I German anti-Semitism was fed by an underground stream of secret cults running like a sewer beneath Vienna and other cultural centers. Hitler dipped into this stream." p 16 'THE NAZIS AND THE OCCULT'

In the movie Apt Pupil we can get a glimpse of what is true across the world. Thousands upon thousands of Nazis got out of Germany and hid around the world. Some say 80,000 SS troops got out through the 'rat lines' and thousands more by those already planted in other nations. It is also clear that the USA in the now oft quoted 'OPERATION PAPER CLIP' managed to sneak out many Nazi doctors, scientists and leaders but they got far more than they bargained for. It is in this process that I believe an occult infiltration of the US intelligence community and military services exists and continues to grow.

Like a Trojan horse the Nazi technology and secrets were pregnant with a hidden presence, power and agenda…*but not a physical one*. Demons with an agenda do create political, scientific, technological and religious

doctrines which they attend and attach to!

Anyone reading doctrines of demons (1Timothy 4) will be engaged by the very demons who gave them. Demons can attach to objects too and can transfer to those with like dispositions. If you believe the demonic and willfully open a door to them, they will always come and with many of their unclean brethren. If you believe that the Nazi regime was created by and infused with satanic presence, power and purpose then there is a big….a very big question we must answer:

WHERE DID ALL THE DARK SPIRITS OF THE NAZI REGIME GO WHEN THE NAZIS LOST?

The secret project of acquiring elitist knowledge offered to new governments from the occult inspired Nazis was more than human. As Jim Marrs says in his book 'THE RISE OF THE FOURTH REICH' p 178:

"…the Nazis turned to occultists….such groups were concerned with raising their consciousness by means of rituals to an awareness of evil and non-human Intelligences in the universe and with achieving a means of communications with these Intelligences"

Dusty Sklar in her revealing book 'THE NAZIS AND THE OCCULT' writes to reveal the satanic practice and power that was behind their movement and development. Secular historians who knew nothing of the occult couldn't come to grips with the answer to what and why of Nazism. The Nazis, all that they were and all they had was infected with a 'drawing power'; the very 'spirit' behind Hitler and now that same spirit has gone global.

The old Nazis created new Nazis and have built a global network. They have continued the occult dream but this dream was forged in hell's kitchen and carries the force and presence of lethal darkness. Millions of *chosen ones* (SRA/MPD) are the creation of this same technology and spiritual agenda. The new Nazis (globalists) seek to use them in the upcoming chaos. They are the ones who came up with the term.…The Black Awakening.

Movies like Apt Pupil and others like THE BOYS FROM BRAZIL and THE FINAL SOLUTION give a small glimpse of the passion they had for the third and a now a fourth Reich. The spiritual force behind those committed to the Nazi cause is still among us. It is without question they have raised a next generation and have empowered them with the same spirit and technology they themselves began with. The spirit of Hitler is among us; it was here before him and will be here operating in a supernatural way among those who embrace its breath…until the very end.

THE NAZI WHO SCREAMED AT US

It was a Nazi bred and trained sub personality in that *chosen one* who rose up and with a strong German accent screamed with strong demonic energy these words:

"We are the legions who will rule the earth."

When this man was taken to the hospital psych ward we were there. As we waited to see what the police would tell us an officer whom I had worked with from another department walked in wearing full uniform. She was a *chosen one* also and a sub personality in her that both spoke and wrote fluently in German came up. She then handed me a note and without saying a word she left. The note said that this man was raised by an old Nazi, where he lived and where the coven was located. The note said that this man was raised to be and is used as an assassin and was used to clean up messes within their structure. The officer and some of her sub personalities in the next few days took us late at night to the place where two girls were ritually murdered. She told us why he had to do it and that it was an internal matter. This is still an active case.

BLOODY ARMS AND A NAZI FARM

We had been up late again and in a wooded area where we were told old satanic rituals were being done. We knew there must be victims in the area so we searched and prayed. Many victims would tell me how they wished someone would have found them when they were young, so we began looking and still do to this day. For years we targeted this area by prayer mapping

and asked the Lord to expose the coven and help us find any victim. Then it happened.

I got a call to go to a city and take food money to a person we had never met. When our team got there that day we went door to door in the apartment complex, finally I saw a door that said office so I went in. The moment I walked in the management person looked up at me with shock and yelled, "Pastor Russ….O God has surely led you here". She was a person who had come to a course I taught at a larger church years before. Sitting across from her was a young woman whose arms were freshly bandaged up. This Christian lady said, "I have been praying for help and here you are. This girl needs your help". Then she left the room so I could talk to the young women.

A team member stood there with me as I began to talk to the girl and I could see and feel what was there. I told her who I was and what we do, that we had been praying for many years to find and help victims of SRA/MPD in her area. At once some sub personalities came up and began to talk. They told of a grandfather and a farm, that he was a German and a Nazi and he was the coven leader. She told us when and where some of the rituals were being held and then the demonic began to surface. We had to pray and bind them and she said she had to go. I asked the young women if she would meet with us again and she agreed. I gave her the office number and we left.

A sub personality called and told me more and that they wanted out of the coven. We set up meeting after meeting and went there again and again but there was always someone there to run interference. Then she disappeared. So we started praying to find her again. It was so strange how it happened but we were in the apartment complex just praying when a man in a wheelchair yelled "She don't live here anymore". He had been watching us from inside his apartment. Another man came out and told us that this girl was taken to her grandfather's farm and lived there. He even gave us directions to the farm and of course we went.

It was the place where rituals were done and where an old German and his family lived. It wasn't until the third time that this girl's father came out to meet us. He was a deep blue eyed man of German descent. We were finally told not to come back and if we did they would call the police. The young

girl lives there, she is being kept from us and we are seeking to get in or…get her out.

When you find an SRA/MPD victim like this in a small city area you can be sure of a number of things. First there is a family background (most likely of German descent) and they are involved. Second there is a trans-generational satanic coven somewhere in the area and they have been there a long time. Third there has to be more that one victim. If you find one there must be a dozen more. No Nazi black flame coven creating and raising *chosen ones* would have only one victim so more are in the area. And then the fourth point is that the network of coven perpetrators has been there for a long time and they will seek to ward you off if you get too close. This is an active and ongoing work.

GERMAN CIGARETTES AND NAZI MUSIC

I was sitting in the car waiting for other staff members to get there stuff and return to the car. In the back seat was a military coven *chosen one*. A sub personality came up, leaned forward and offered me a cigarette. It was an old pack with German writing on it. I declined politely. Then a male personality talked to me and handed me a cassette to play so I put it in the car player. It was scratchy sounding pro Nazi war time propaganda music. This personality told me his name and how great Hitler was. He spoke with an accent and would talk in fluent German. This is an ongoing case and I am waiting for them to return.

THEY SPIT AT ME IN MY OFFICE

This woman was a victim of SRA and was a multiple. She had a father who was deeply Nazi committed and when he found out I was helping her would send me “special” cards. He would have typed messages on a post card letting me know he was watching me and was finding information about who I was. They were subtle warnings. When he died this dear lady came to my office with a friend and told me that memories and personalities were now surfacing left and right and that she was getting calls with a bunch of tone sounds only. Then she switched and a young personality came up and began yelling at me, “You know. You know…you know about the men in

white coats and the labs. You know about the military's involvement". Each time they would tell me things they got louder and louder. They just yelled and then spit at me. The women she brought with her sat amazed and perplexed. This dear woman feared that Nazi dad to the day he died. She was split, programmed, abused and used by him and others. It was this Nazi man who personally took his two grandchildren to the military base that had the PSI OPS unit and where MK ULTLA mind control projects and the old Nazi doctor's worked in secrecy…here the Monarchs had deep roots. This too is a case that is still active.

Case after case and victim after victim it all seems the same. The procedures to split, program and train *chosen ones* have Nazi origins and the spirit behind the Nazis is still operating here in the US. Here in the US there are now over 4 million cases of SRA/MPD. Someone did this and the roots continue to go back to the black flame…satan serving Nazis.

A PICTURE OF A NAZI TROOP

The federal officer's wife who would speak to us in German many times went off to Germany with her young daughter. When she returned she told me of her grandmother who was part of the whole underground *chosen one's* project. She then handed me a black and white picture of a SS Nazi in full uniform. His name is Otto Kritz and on the back of the picture were the signed words…the black flame.

Yes there are many more stories where sub personalities who were pro Nazi and spoke German talked to us. Most at first hated us and would see us as inferior. There is great pride in those German personalities. I have even sought to learn a little German so I could better converse with them. I know I will talk to many more. Two vital things we need to look at are 'the spirit of the Nazis' and the 'the doctrine of the Nazis'. They are connected and are clearly operating today as we write.

THE SPIRIT OF THE NAZIS

It is very clear that the spirit behind the origin, development and agenda of the Nazi party was…"the prince (ruler) of the power (domain) of the air

(atmosphere), the spirit who is now at work (supernaturally operative) in those who are disobedient (reject Christ and commit to the satanic agenda)". The force behind the ideas, laws, plans and development was guided by that black flame…the same one who entered Judas and moved him (See John 13). Biblical revelation does show that satan's conquest is global (See Revelation 12). The Spirit of God reveals that this quest has been and is right now being sought. The power and force behind the Nazi leader's politics and military ascendancy was the ancient hate…the fallen cherub.

It is amazing to learn that the entire second world war with its multiple millions of war time dead, the engagement of nations, the development of weapons and the slaughter at the concentration camps were all the result of yielding to and being influenced by a prince…who operates behind the scenes. For some the devil's tracks can be seen only after the destruction. What we need is the insight that comes from God to see where this spirit is going before it happens again.

The prophetic revelation of Scripture gives us a detailed heads up. It does expose this same operating presence (spirit). I wish the Germans would have known this before the destruction of World War II. The sad thing right now is that political and military leaders have been infected with the same spirit. They have embraced the Trojan horse of superior everything just like the pre Nazi German leaders did. That ancient spirit of war and hate is leading kings, nations and peoples down the same path…only the path has gotten much broader.

We must ponder, if the deception from the satanic 'spirit' is broader and more have taken hold of it…how much broader and deeper will the destruction be? I think a read of Revelation 9 and a deep study of Revelation 19:19-20 is the screaming heads up that must be heeded!

THE SOURCE OF ONE'S SPIRITUALITY DOES MATTER

THE DOCTRINE OF THE NAZIS

The doctrine of the Nazi party was the accumulative ideology that flowed from the demonic side; it was and is 'demonic ideology'. This 'doctrine' is the data and information that was acquired from a supernatural source. The guided writings of occult leaders bear this out; they believed and wrote what the dark spirits are now seeking. The satanic agenda then and even now seeks:

- The destruction of Israel and all Jews. The Jews are a sub human 'pig race' and must be annihilated. The core of this belief was given by occult doctrines. The plot for the final solution included finding Jewish people everywhere and destroying them. This same spirit can be found in those who believe in the Muslim Mahdi.
- Christians are in the way and must yield to the new spiritual/political state (globalism). This state is a new order that will seek to reign worldwide. Christians need to join and be loyal to this movement or be 'cleansed'…i.e. removed.
- A 1,000 year reign was the goal of the Nazis. This is a counterfeit of the coming Biblical millennium (a 1000 year reign) where Christ the Prince of Peace will rule.
- A master race of god-men. The spirit inspired vision was to create a mass master race of super humans who could be spiritually strong and ready to be the soldiers of a super leader. It was a secret project that they called Lebensborn and it involved the creation of *chosen* babies. They believed in an Aryan race of god-men whose blood carried supernatural powers and abilities. I do believe the Aryan race to be a part of the generations of the nephilim and that they did have super human attributes. But the enhancements came from the demonic inbreeding that occurred as seen in Genesis 6. The Nazis believed that if they could breed out the subhuman corruption by breeding Aryan to Aryan over and over again they would soon have god-like warriors with supernatural abilities.
- All *chosen ones* I have dealt with have the belief in and need to keep their blood pure. By pure I mean 'charged' with the energy and power of the demonic. Rituals are done just for this purpose. The more demons raised and ingested (received) the more the blood would be pure (empowered). It is also true that all *chosen ones* I have worked with have German speaking sub personates who are pro Nazi and pro Hitler.

They have a belief that the antichrist will be a cloned or resurrected Hitler.

- The resurrection of the old pagan gods/deities is a part of the spiritual plan. Hitler and his leaders were constantly seeking spiritual places, powers and knowledge. They were using rune stones, pagan symbols and ritual concepts in all their parades and gatherings. Even Himmler's Castle at Wewelsburg was considered a cone of spiritual power and was to be a new spiritual center (in opposition to the Vatican). This castle had the hall of the dead and many rituals were done in its chambers. It is believed that they still do take place there. Even a US Col. Michael Aquino performed a dark ritual there seeking to raise powers. Aquino is the founder of the satanic Temple of Set.

FINALLY

In all of the cases of satanic ritual abuse and of the technology of creating *chosen ones* that I have dealt with I have found that it all has deep spiritual Nazi roots. Those roots though did not originate with the Germans. They were simply the nation in search of a salvation and their failure was in turning to the fallen deceiving spirits who promised special knowledge, special status and supernatural help…instead of God. The problem just like in Genesis 6 was that they were lied to and their embrace of that lying 'spirit' fueled a fire that eventually blew back on them. And it will every time!

I am convinced to the core of my being that the new age movement here in the US and throughout Europe has the same methodology at work in it (in its millions) that the dark spirits used in pre Nazi Germany. I unashamedly scream out to those on a spiritual quest and seekers of the NAM, I declare that you will be betrayed to the core…just like Judas was. The spirit now operating (Ephesians 2) in you will leave when it is done with you. The root of every luciferian lie bears the fruit of destruction every time. The question for us today is, have we learned or have millions once again embraced the same (Nazi/demonic) spirits that once danced on German soil? When the father of lies lost in his challenge to Jesus Christ he went off…looking for a more opportune time! (Matthew 4)

CHAPTER 12
MIND CONTROL AND PSYCHOLGY

"Depatterning was a three-stage process in which patients lost track progressively of time and space." p 113 'PSYCHIATRY AND THE CIA' VICTIMS OF MIND CONTROL

"People actually do find themselves in strange locations, unaware of how they got there, because of multiple personality…..Study of the Manchurian Candidate helps us understand the sense in which multiple personality disorder is real" p 239 'THE C.I.A. DOCTORS' -Human Rights Violations By American Psychiatrists

"How today's counselors are discovering the psychological and spiritual dimensions of healing"

from the cover 'UNCOVERING THE MYSTERY OF MPD'

"…ordinary people can commit demonic acts. …That transformation requires us to examine the interaction of Nazi political ideology and biomedical ideology in their effects on individual and collective behavior." p 5 'THE NAZI DOCTORS' -Medical killing and the Psychology of Genocide-

"…they invent ways of doing evil…."

Romans 1

He was a world 'renown' psychiatrist to many; he was the devil incarnate to the victims of his invention…psychic driving. Dr Cameron was seeking to erase a person's patterned personality and it was painful. He sought to de-pattern them and then recreate a whole new person! Did this man have a God complex or what? In the book 'SECRETS & LIES' Gordon Thomas reveals the nature of a mad psychiatrist: Look at this… "..Dr. Cameron led him into his office and explained that 'de-patterning' consisted of extensive periods of 'sleep therapy' followed by electroshocks." "The biggest problem we have," Dr. Cameron confided, is "making sure our patients don't wake up unexpectedly and try and make a *run for it*." And again on page 127 "Her case file showed she had lost count of how many times the machine had been wheeled to her bedside, each time to shock her into unconsciousness."

This is a world 'renowned' psychiatrist whom many revered. It was said of him in a report: p 130"…it contained the revelation that Dr. Cameron hoped "one day soon he would have created a brainwashing machine." I have to ask, is that what psychology (soul care) is for?

THE PSYCH WHO HELPS

Over the years psychologists would bring into my office those who had demonic presence and those who were SRA/MPD. There are many in this field who want to help. One of those brave psychologists would bring us demonized individuals and *chosen ones* who were seeking healing and freedom. A number of times those with demons would manifest (the demon would talk) in the office in full view of the psychologist who brought the person.

On one occasion an SRA was there with a sub personality talking. I sensed darkness in them and ordered the dark spirit to manifest without hurting anyone; it came up. The demon was looking through the eyes of the person and if a look could kill this one would. I commanded in Jesus' name for it to tell me its name: "stario", it said. After some other interaction I told it that I was going to make it leave. In a split second the sub personality energized by the demon reached over and grabbed the bare arm of the psychologist and sought to sink the teeth of the SRA victim into the lady's arm. I instantly commanded for it to stop. It did and then I ordered it to leave; it did but with

a short fight. The main person of the victim came back up and asked what happened. The psychologist sat stunned. The demon and demonized sub personalities believe that you can transfer demons from person to person through blood/trauma and that is what was just attempted.

The psychologist's license would not allow for or really acknowledge what just happened. That is the great weakness of secular counseling. It can't detect or deal with this area and every SRA/MPD that I know to date has demons and sub personalities inside with demons…buried and hiding.

It's very clear that many psychologists and psychiatrists know about and are seeking to help these victims. I have met a number of them at the many conferences and training seminars that deal with this issue. One of those conferences was packed with professionals from the field of psychology; there were counselors and many licensed social workers also.

This was the conference on mind control that was held in Richman, Virginia. Ph.D Corydon Hammond and Alan W. Scheflin (author of TRANCE ON TRIAL) were there and the now famous 'Greenbaum' speech was given. We had it all right there for the first time. The Greenbaum lecture was front line news about the purposeful creation of multiple personality disorder. We saw slides and heard lectures on the creation and activities of sub alters, the possible CIA connection and of the concept that a *larger conspiracy was brewing.* This conference in the 90's is where I sat down with counselors and psychologists who shared wild stories of their attempts at helping victims. That is where I met Daniel Ryder SRA/MPD victim and author of 'BREAKING THE CIRCLE OF SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE'.

This conference at the time was a major exposure of what is behind mind control and the victims of satanic ritual abuse. The trouble with this conference and with many others I would go to would be the treatment model. While many follow the DSM III and IV with its definition of this victimization and some suggested treatment models the issue remains the same. All of these only scratch the surface of the creation and attempted healing of SRA/ MPD which is now DID (Dissociative Identity Disorder). There are many questions that remain unanswered in most of the books and

seminars on this subject. Here are a few to consider:

- If the satanic side of the creation of multiplicity is real and the demonization is real what then can professional secular psychology offer?
- If it is a human rights issue and the perpetrators may be family, rogue military and even a religious priest what is the response…goal?
- If there are over 4 million cases (Collin Ross mentions 10 million) of SRA/MPD (and growing) and that most were created cases of multiplicity then what are the implications?
- These are major questions that need to have an answer!

  Who and how many are the perpetrators?

  How did the perpetrators learn to do this?

  And why did almost all of it begin in the 1950's?

- If there is conspiracy (luciferian globalists) behind the creation of multiples (*chosen ones*) why is it that most every one of the 'professional' books and or seminars are not exposing or confronting it?
- If SRA/MPD cases are found in the USA, Australia, England and throughout Europe then:

How vast is the organization that has orchestrated this?

How high up the ladder (or down the steps of this dark cellar) does this go?

These and other hard questions must be asked. Is it fear of retribution or are we just too busy to mount up the posse and go after the bad guys? Some have called for deep investigation into all of this and that would be good but there is major issue that law enforcement and professional counseling must engage.

PLEASE NOTE: IF the creation of MPD by satanic ritual abuse is the case and if the satanism is real and the dark powers are real (as we have clearly

seen) then how do you battle perpetrators who have the powers of darkness to cloak and protect them? I boldly declare to professional counselors, pastors and law enforcement that the origins, process and continuation of satanic ritual abuse and the creation of MPD is inspired, empowered and covered with a superhuman presence and it is very dangerous and dark…set on *fire by hell itself* (James).

Biblical revelation calls this 'shadow' presence "…the secret power of lawlessness…" and that it is "…already at work (supernaturally operative)." (See 2Thess.2) This power is sought, and active from top to bottom in this agenda to create and maintain…satanic super soldiers. At least look in to the spiritual side of this phenomenon: I don't believe it can be fully comprehended without this perspective. My experience shows that the depth and length of this conspiracy is cloaked by a presence that most don't know about and could not penetrate if they did. There are special rituals to summon and send dark spirits against those who seek to look under their carpet of darkness.

WERE THE PSYCHS READY FOR EVERYTHING?

When the federal officer's wife Mary was missing again the husband decided to send her to a hospital. It was in the state where I was and she would be locked up for a week. The psychologist called me to get some information so I told him everything including information about the sub personality who sought to kill me. When Mary was released she met with us. I asked her and another personality how it went. They all told me they wouldn't talk to him and that Mike as they called him was afraid of them and stayed behind his desk.

Mary was sent by her husband to a hospital in Texas for a three week stay. Again she came out with no change, no healing and the bill that was into the thousands. Mary was a high powered coven multiple who had a sub personality who was committed to the black flame.

Another *chosen one*, a police officer had a sub personality who took her to the psych ward of a local hospital and signed her in. I found out later that a doctor who had a fictitious background was a handler and he arranged for

her to be brought in. When we went after Dr. Mark we found out that he was multiple also and was there to retrieve and silence talking *chosen ones*. Hospital security ran checks on him and a NCIC report was obtained. This man was not who the hospital thought he was. Whether a plant that could monitor multiples coming into the psych ward or just a victim himself we did not find out. Dr. Mark disappeared soon after.

Again a boy:

The boy who was split and programmed by a rogue *chosen one* was going to a psychologist and had two counselors. I asked the sub personalities that I had been taking to why they would not come out and talk directly to the psychologists or to the counselors. They told me, "they don't respect us, they don't believe us, they can't help so what's the use?" Sub personalities do observe, read and make decisions on whether or not they will come out.

PSYCHS WERE USED TO DEVELOP MPD

The CIA doctors and psychologists who are listed in Collin Ross' book 'THE C.I.A. DOCTORS' are all implicated as those who knew, participated in and even furthered the use of creating sub personalities and mind control abilities. The psychologists who worked for the military were there to help weaponize this mind control technology. The list of names goes on and on and surely the published lists are only the tip of the iceberg. Anyone wanting documentation for psychology's involvement in this crime is given information in most of the major works that I sight in this book.

No greater documentation can be found than what I have found in the book 'HYPNOTISM'. The author was a world 'renown' psychologist who was recruited by military and worked with the weaponization of mind control. His book 'HYPNOTISM' is a revelation of the use of alters (sub personalities) as military weapons. I personally believe this book is a water shed that reveals the infiltration of the (Nazi/demonic) technology and its agenda to purposely create multiple personality disorder. In this book G. H. Estabrooks tells us that they knew how to create sub personalities and what they could use them for. On pages 193-205 he includes in the use of

programmed multiples:

- Reconnaissance
- Sowing Disinformation
- Assassinations….and
- Curriers of secret information. All this can be done Estabrooks says and they can still keep the core (main) person from knowing (amnesic).

Estabrooks then tells us on p204:

"So a synthetic hypnotic spy with a dual personality is extremely hard to detect."

Please note this well, Estabrooks book was put out in 1947!

They have had 60 years to create hundreds of thousands of 'programmed multiples' and to advance the technology of doing it!

How many are in your city, government, offices, departments, Churches? I think 60 years is a lot of time to create, advance and place *chosen ones* everywhere.

PSYCHS WERE USED TO COVER UP SRA/MPD

As with secret weapons so it is with this weaponization of mind control; it's all done in secrecy and denied when necessary. If Estabrooks spills the beans on the creation of and use of alter personalities (and mind control), why would other well known psychologists who worked for the CIA/military seek to deny it all? Dr. Jolly West and Dr. Orne (both psychologists and both mind control specialists) were on the board of the infamous 'FALSE MEMORY SYNDROME FOUNDATION (FMSF)…as was a child predator but all of this is old news.

The creation of that foundation was one way to go after therapists and psychologists who began telling the secrets of satanic and governmental mind control. It is said by many that FMSF was created to silence victims and

protect the perpetrators. The psychologist Estabrooks says they can create, control and remove sub personalities and it is my experience that many other professionals know how to do this also.

The Nazi dad who sent me post cards on holidays and sought to intimidate me into not helping his SRA/MPD daughter warned me of what the FMSF could do. It seems perpetrators love the FMSF even though it has massive controversy with who created it and those who were on its board.

There have been numerous times that *chosen ones* were taken back into the psych wards only to come out with 'missing sub personalities' and all the information they were telling us came up buried and hidden within them…but we have learned how to find it again. Many times when sub personalities would talk to us, take us to places where they were abused and tell us the names of their abusers they would then come up missing for a week or two. They return only to tell us they 'had' to go back to the psych ward and that they don't remember anything anymore.

I had one person I was working with for some time; I talked to many of the sub personalities and was told many different stories of perpetrators, secret places and given documents. She went missing here locally and was found in the local hospital psych ward. When she came out she didn't remember anything and when I asked to talk to the other personalities she would just sit there blank. It took a week and then finally sub personalities started coming up and talking, they even told what the psychologists did to bury them. Drug therapy, hypnotherapy, punishment/pain and even demonic powers are used to bury sub personalities who want freedom.

I have seen over the years five categories or positions that psychologists have taken regarding the existence of SRA/MPD/DID

- First (brave ones) there are those who have sought to help the victims. They believe what they say, work with the sub personalities and seek to 'integrate' them. Some psychologists have even used deliverance prayers to rid the victim of the demonic, though they did this in secrecy. One psychologist (Dr. Olsen) even lost his license for doing deliverance prayers. Other psychologists have sought to use outside

pastors or others to do spiritual deliverance prayers while they work with many other aspects of the victim's needs.

- Second (buriers) there are those psychologists who would tell us to stop working with multiples. So many multiples were coming to us straight out of a local hospital that one psychologist wrote me a letter telling me not to mix religion with psychology. He is gone now and was charged with sexual abuse. One of the psychologists who wrote an article in 'TREATING DISSOCIATIVE IDENTITY DISORDER' and lives in my area tells victims that their memories are just delusions and to forget them. These are the ones who cannot help any of the victims…unless you consider loading them up with drugs and using hypnotherapy as the answer.
- Third (enablers) there was one local psychiatrist that told us in a training conference they were holding in the hospital that the personalities are not really real, so don't talk to them and they will fade away. He even said that if you talk to the sub personalities that this would strengthen them and 'you don't want that'. They don't help or heal the victim they enable them. Once again the victims of SRA/MPD who have come from that counsel and the one who was with me at the conference laughed at that. The sub personalities just stay there unhealed and wait for someone to help them and the perpetrator personalities continue to do harm. In the book 'PSYCHOLOGICAL SEDUCTION' p 30-31 the author says:

  "However good-intentioned and however nice, it is not at all clear that the psychological establishment *knows how to help."*

- Fourthly (silencers) there are those psychologists who are there to 'silence' the victims. They know how to bury sub personalities and or inform other handlers of their condition. I have confronted some and even exposed one here at a local hospital. He has left town and another one who called me was later arrested and then fired for an undisclosed 'sexual abuse' charge. So if counselors and helpers are noticing that their SRA victims are missing and then return after a stay at the local psych ward and have gone silent, it's time to pray for and seek exposure.
- The fifth (avoiders) category are those professionals who see the whole field of SRA/MPD as too complicated and make it known that they

don't work with them. Avoidance like this is based on fear and an unwillingness to seek a solution. After all it does take a lot of time and most of the time the insurance money runs out quickly. They don't want to get involved with the debated issues; it is just too much for some. In 'MEMORY,TRAUMA TREATMENT, AND THE LAW' the author of the first chapter says on page 1:

"For a variety of reasons, the debate has become savage; zealots on both sides have staked positions so radical that intelligent discussion and scientific inquiry have been difficult if not impossible."

One psychologist I met with in Pennsylvania was sued by a multiple when a denial personality came up and denied they were ever a multiple. The psychologist worked with the client for 10 years and talked to many personalities. This person won an award of 300,000 dollars. The psychologist I met with was broken and deeply concerned that he was being watched…by a coven and that the client he had still lived nearby. He is in my prayers to this day.

FINALLY

I have met a number of really great people in the field of psychology and have appreciated their desire to help get victims free. The trouble with this field is that 90% or more of MPD is SRA, has a dark spiritual origin and needs a spiritual solution. And it's not new age alternative spirituality that's needed; it can't help. It's the Spirit of God who seeks to bring the living Lord Jesus and all of His work to the aide of these hurting victims.

The once beaten, bloodied innocent Christ knows how to deal with the damage of the demonic and the abuse of the perpetrators. He rose from the dead with infinite power. He is omniscient, omnipresent and omnipotent. He knows how to weep for lost sheep, be near the broken hearted and rebuke and bring down the abusers. He alone can reach the depths of this issue…and

there is no debate among the demons, they flee at His command.

CHAPTER 13
MIND CONTROL AND THE MILITARY

"His obsession was to turn ordinary human beings into robotic figures whose value systems could be so altered that they would even kill on command-and then programmed to forget who had given the order" p 26 "SECRETS & LIES"

"To OSS personal who signed an oath of secrecy when they were recruited to work in this shadow organization…" p 1 'SISTERHOOD OF SPIES'

"Every military leader devours intelligence reports on the enemy before he enters battle. Our intelligence report on satan is in the Bible. Ignorance of the enemy will never be a valid excuse if we lose. God has given us a decided edge in the contest with advance information on our enemy" p 22 'UNMASKING SATAN'

"In fact, in documented fact, military mind control like that described in this book is real…" p 3 'MILITARY MIND CONTROL'

"The purpose of this work is to illuminate a dark corner of the history of the military and the intelligence establishments. The corner where the practical soldier or spy meets the otherworldly occult devotee (is) the military occult complex."

P 101 THE PSYCHIC BATTELFIELD' A HISTORY OF THE MILITARY-OCCULT COMPLEX

"The military and CIA copied the Nazi methodology and began numerous programs of their own. The first CIA program was known as MKULTRA, the MK is an abbreviation for the German words for mind control." P 34
'MONARCH: THE NEW PHOENIX PROGRAM

This is what it's all about! A host of satanic super soldiers and the creation of a super spiritually infused military system that will be bigger and more powerful than anything in all of history. I do beg you to consider, especially all of you who are embracing the spirit behind globalism and the new spiritual evolution of human consciousness. The same game is being played out here that was done with the Nazis, only it's bigger, evolved and global.

They (sinister forces) are offering the military leaders, scientists and weapons makers ideas. The ideas are small at first and on a need to know basis. The ideas become larger and eventually a pattern is revealed. The thoughts are coming in and ideas are being planted. Once planted and used more 'ideas' come in. Someone wants to build a supernatural and massive military system and that someone knows how to send ideas, influence science and give dreams.

I was reading just today where Ingo Swann who was the 'psychic' used by the military to develop/weaponize what is now called remote viewing was hit. He like many others in these fields all of a sudden receive a type of communication in their head. Jim Marrs, in his book 'PSI SPIES', tells how one of the main leaders in the development of military remote viewing got the inspiration to go further. On p 47 of the book it says:

"(Ingo) Swann recalled that on one day, while relaxing in the swimming pool of the apartments where he lived near SRI, he suddenly *heard a small voice in his head say*, "Why don't you try coordinates?"…"

And so he did! And the weaponization of remote viewing continued. He did what the *'voice in his head'* said to do. It is this outside to inside influence that has been occurring for over 60 years to many people. Whether it's with Helena Blavatsky, Alice Bailey or military rocket scientists the agenda to fuel globalism and build a super soldier/military power so vast

that it dwarfs Babylon, the Meads, the Greeks, the Romans, the Nazis, the Russians, the USA and any/all that is out there right now. I will say it again… please grab this:

"Someone wants a highly spiritually charged super military… created for one purpose alone…to be used at Armageddon!R1919"

It has been my belief for a long time that the dark spirits who can create writings (inspired ideas called demonic doctrine 1Tim.4) can also inspire sciences, psychology and weapons making. Ideas come in, late night dreams arrive and new information is planted…and all the while it is 'voice to skull' of the demonic kind. If you really understand and believe Revelation 19:19 which is a picture of a global super military power gone mad, one that is the biggest and was supernaturally evolved then you have to ask….how do they get there?

SATANIC SUPER SOLDIERS

I was sitting with a highly trained military soldier. They handed me a large notebook; it was the 'FIRST EARTH BATTALION OPERATIONS MANUAL'. This person had sub personalities who could speak five different languages, they could fight, use weapons and even had an 'assassin' sub personality who came out and talked to me. They talked about Sidney Gottlieb and many others who worked in military mind control (MKULTRA) projects. They showed me a tiny purple monarch butterfly on their left ankle.

This is the one who said they were a 'super soldier', that they were a 'warrior monk', that they can use their inner powers to hurt people and do 'lightning warfare' by sending demonic spirits to attack. This is the person who showed me a black uniform and talked about the majestic and monarch mines where they meet and train. This is the one who gave me a paper that came from a handler; it said that they look forward to the day of Armageddon when they can unleash on me the very super soldier who was sitting there next to me.

Satanic super soldiers were being formed in the black flame of the Nazi regime and this spiritual military agenda has continued to this day: The

genetic birthing centers in 1939 and Germany created hundreds of thousands of what was to be future soldiers. The warrior sitting next to me had a sub personality who could speak fluent German and praised Hitler. They said they are the kind of soldiers who will make the SS troops of the Nazis look like choir boys. They could remote view, send powers and kill without a conscience. This is the first one to tell me about the coming day of the Black Awakening; that luciferian covens and power centers are unleashing dark spirits continuously to dirty the air and claim regions. This one and thousands like this soldier believe they were created to usher in a chaos that would be the stepping stone for the new world leader.

This satanic agenda is like a war, a conquest and the two main areas of conquest are: first politics and second military. You will have to keep in mind the prophecy of Psalm 2 (PS2) and its final fulfillment in Revelation 19:19 (R1919). I hope you will think through these next few points, especially if you are a political leader or military personnel and even more so if you have already been infused (infected) with the spirit given dream of globalism and a new spiritually evolved humanity.

I BELIEVE THE US MILITARY HAS BEEN INFILTRATED

Since the dark end goal is to acquire the largest and most power filled military system in human history, the closer they get to that goal we should see signs of its evolution. The Nazi war machine was developed and evolved to advance the Nazi cause worldwide and bring in a spiritual new pagan age, a new order. Today as political propensity moves toward globalism the only way to enforce it and maintain it is with a global force. The 'luciferian' charged military coming will be used to acquire global rule but the inner and real purpose is much broader.

If you knew Jesus Christ (God) is coming back in spectacular visible fashion and is coming to end radical evil forever and destroy this long dark night where satan has been "…god of this age who has blinded the minds…" and the "...ruler of the power of the air, the spirit who is now at work…", and "…the evil one who is in control of the world". If you were that evil one and knew in the past the God of heaven does do all He says He will, what

would you do to stop the event that would stop you forever?

Would you build a massive military system that had even supernatural dark power burning in its soldiers? Would you unleash every possible piece of advanced technology that could be used to stop this 'evil empire' ending event? Would you convince a world that globalism and a military system is needed to protect the new age-new order from any and all outside 'enemy' attack? Would you be filling military weapons makers, leaders and strategists with ideas (voice to skull) to develop the 'ultimate' weapons, weapons that could be used for a 'planetary defense'? Dear readers how far along are we on this road to Armageddon?

"By 1964, the use of occult themes and rituals became an accepted part of psychological warfare planning…" "In the early 1950's an American neurologist began a series of research projects to determine how a psychic ability such as extrasensory perception could be used as a weapon…." p 128- 133 'SINSITER FORCES' A Glimmer of American Political Witchcraft Book One: The Nine

I BELIEVE IDEAS HAVE POPPED INTO THEIR HEADS

Jack Parsons a US military rocket scientist performed dark satanic rituals and invoked major power demons. This kind of activity will open the door to the fallen cherub far more than Judas and his evil greed. With the arrival of Nazi scientists and the dark occultism they brought the massive dark spirits of that era have begun a new one…it came bursting and laying its global foundations during the 1940's.

I BELIEVE WHAT'S BEING DONE NOW SETS THE STAGE

"In 1981 General Stubblebine, who had been deeply moved by Jim Channon's First Earth Battalion Operations Manual and was filled with the conviction that America, the great superpower, needed to be defended by people who actually had superpowers……." P 70 'THE MEN WHO STARE AT GOATS'

You can't build a house over night nor can you build a city or a nation in a day. What about building a global empire? There are a lot of minds that have to be convinced, this will have to be a process. The process approach involves laying the foundations, building a critical mass of belief and to move millions into the belief that the old ways are bad and need to give way to a new day. This process approach has been evolving for over 60 years now and it's clear that it will need more than just this process to break into the 'age of Aquarius.'

Every one of the concepts of a new age and its global reign is traced back to a spiritual inspiration. Reading 'THE EXTERNALIZATION OF THE HIERACHY' by occultist Alice Bailey is one of the clearest examples of a spirit given (1Tim.4) sequential plan. A plan for globalism, spirit induced science, the spiritual evolution of humanity, the coming of a globalist spiritual world leader, the elimination of all who resist and the need for a process and a burst (black awakening) to accomplish all of this.

The spirit that dictated the ideas, agenda and mandates to Alice Bailey fill over 20 volumes and these books are the alternative spiritual agenda that is raging for conquest right now. The spirit that guided these so called 'guide books' (and other writings like it) for the coming new world military is the same one who will make war on the saints (see Daniel). It is "the ruler of the power of the air" (atmosphere), the spirit who is now (supernaturally operative) in secret military projects (minds/ideas) and the power that is engaging military evolution.

God did ask 3,000 years ago… "Why do the nations rage (conspire) and the peoples plot in vain? The kings of the earth (political/military leaders) take their stand and the rulers gather together against the LORD (living God) and against His Anointed One (Christ)".

Large globalist meetings will include all new age spiritual practices (that open the door to ancient dark spirits) along with an ostracizing of anything that is real Christianity. This out with the old and in with the new spirit can be found in politics, military and in the critical mass thinking of hundreds of millions. This is a spiritual clash that is now seen in the dreams and desired destiny of the spirit/mind now operating in the new politics and new military

goals. There is a goal for a new evolved super humanity and a new super… or in the words from the above quote: "…the great superpower, needed to be defended by people who actually had superpowers"

I BELIEVE THERE ARE SLEEPERS IN US MILITARY

I was working with a person who had a group of military trained sub personalities. They were down and 'sleeping' for many years. When one came up to talk they just kept looking around at everything and wondered how so many years have gone by. This group of sub personalities could speak German and wondered where their trainers were. They like many military trained and spiritual charged programmed sub personalities were made for the coming black awakening.

Not only has the US military been infiltrated (spiritually and with spirit given technologies) it has been lead to *develop* the very spirit inspired technologies that it was given. MKULTRA and all the mind control 'science' had a goal much further down the road that just the creation of PSI spies and Manchurian candidates/assassins. The goal was and is to set in place the spiritual and technical process that can create….millions of super soldiers whose minds/hearts are fully charged and committed to globalism and a new world leader.

Every *chosen one* I have worked with has inside of them powerful programmed sub personalities who are highly trained to fight and use all of their spiritual and advanced war fighting techniques. Deep inside all of them there is a spiritual power, loyalty and commitment…not to local national militaries but to be the troops of the coming new bright world leader (antichrist). I have never found a different agenda inside *chosen ones* in over 25 years!

Please note the technology that came by spirit inspiration has been put into practice. US military and the hidden hand behind the scenes have created over four million (some say 10 million) of these super soldiers. They are in US military and other militaries throughout the world and dear reader more of them are being forged every day. The new ones will be even more

‘supernaturally’ powerful than anything seen in the last 30 years.

Most of these super soldiers are intact and doing their job. Most of the ‘warrior’ sub personalities are down inside, sealed and asleep. They with the outside elite are waiting for the pre planned and programmed call. This activation is coming. It will be spiritual (spirit sent) and maybe piggybacking some form of technology; a technology that was given for this very use. This sleeping army charged with the demonic hate (and revenge) desires bloodshed and will glory in the massive chaos/revolt of their black awakening.

Jack Parsons a US military scientist (and dark occultist) believed what most intact satanic super soldiers feel…

> Parsons had come to believe that Christianity was the “…enemy of civilization, of humanity, and that it had to be destroyed...”
>
> p 157 ‘SINISTER FORCES BOOK ONE: THE NINE’

FINALLY

Many of these *chosen ones* listen to my radio programs. Some are seeking healing and freedom, others are…in their words ‘my enemy’ who can’t wait to taste the blood and revel in the anarchy. Many of them are so programmed and charged with glory in the killing fields. They my dear reader friends are made to be antichrist’s warriors who have no conscience left within them (that’s what programming is for).

To the sub personalities who now read and evaluate whether I have all, enough or only some of your secret information must realize…you do serve a prophesied losing cause. You know of Armageddon, you glory in R1919 but have you read R1920?

Military personal who have taken in the new age spirits and the quest for globalism have embraced the precursors for something so much darker. You have been inducted and spiritually initiated into a certain level of this dark well. This is how the left hand path works, step by step to the point of no

return. I hope you will look up and see the light of Christ and the Cross. You are being layered and you are sinking deeper in to a point of no return.

CHAPTER 14
YOU CAN FEEL IT IN THE AIR TONIGHT

"The ruler of the domain of the air (atmosphere) the spirit who is now at work (supernaturally operative) in (people)…" Ephesians 2

"….finally Paul became so troubled (agitated in spirit)…." Acts 16

"An earth-shattering calamity is about to happen. It is going to be so frightening, we are all going to tremble-even the godliest among us…..it will engulf the whole megaplex….Major cities all across America will experience riots and blazing fires….there will be riots and fires worldwide. There will be looting….." David Wilkerson's prophetic vision 'www.davidwilkerson.blogspot.com'

I was listening to George Noory of the Coast to Coast Am radio talk show last week. Millions listen nightly and a few times this last week I heard him ask a number of the guests if they see what he does, if they feel what he does. It seems he believes there is a growing evil and that people are being led to do very evil and bizarre things. Art Bell, George Noory and millions of the Coast to Coast listeners do feel what they feel and I believe this 'feeling' in the air has a cause. Art Bell, George Norry, many other talk show hosts and millions more believe there is a ramped up evil in the air, that things are getting worse and that there is a dark agenda surfacing as never before in human history.

I COULD FEEL IT IN THE AIR THAT AND I WAS AGITATED

I was with other workers one night and a *chosen one* from out of state was coming in to meet with us. I was in the van and was feeling deeply agitated… agitated in spirit. There was a *chosen one* next to me and my fellow worker told me that they came down to talk…the spiritual agitation continued. We stopped at a park and they got out to talk I stayed in the van with the side door open, I was praying about what was going on. My friend and the *chosen one* were a hundred yards away when the Lord spoke to me and said 'warfare' and 'testing', this one is here to do warfare against us and see how we will do.

I was praying against all dark powers and watching my friend, the *chosen one* was knelt down…drawing symbols or a language in the sand. Suddenly my friend began to pray and the *chosen one* was saying something. It was intense and then the *chosen one* ran off into the woods. My friend came back and said they got into a verbal spiritual warfare battle and the *chosen one* threw up and ran into the woods. I told him then that I knew this was not a random visit, I even believe to this day that the coven behind this *chosen one* may have been doing satanic warfare in support of their member against us.

The agitation was real and I did feel it in the air that night. It reminded me of the 'troubled' feeling that the apostle Paul must have had in Acts 16 when he had a girl following their team around, the girl had a spirit (python/demon) operating through her.

THE BUZZ OF GLOBAL CONSCIOUSNESS

One of the guests on Coast to Coast was someone I have been researching with interest for some time. It was the inventor of the 'Web Bot' project and this is all about the buzz or what people are 'feeling in the air'. This project consumes millions of bytes of information on the World Wide Web. It looks for 'emotional language' and then they simply crunch the information and come out with what 'the feelings' of what the masses or bytes of info are saying, feeling, seeing, believing and what this information then predicts will happen. In a more technical version of the web bot language George Ure

writes:

"The web bots are an attempt to use the high data density of the internet to sample language and seek linguistic shifts that we believe may precede events. The initial results suggest that language shifts on a macro level begin to occur 45 to 90 days before society-changing events."
www.urbansurvival.com

This web bot project is like the Global Consciousness Project that looks for the 'consciousness' and or the feelings that are in the air or atmosphere (global consciousness). Some may see this as a 'critical mass' or what the masses are believing and feeling.

If you read the following web bot predictions you are reading the emotional language of what millions around the globe are feeling and sensing. It's what is in the air…it's the buzz of talk shows and many books.

These are some of the 'predictions' that are posted on the web and that were on the Coast to Coast sight. These tell you what millions are feeling is in the air and what they perceive or predict will happen. From the Web Bot project:

- 2009 – Earthquakes may damage dams and/or much unprecedented flooding may occur.
- 2009 – People in rural areas will begin arming themselves heavily and hoarding weapons+ammunition.
- 2009 – Spring or summer – A "global coastal event"or process (possibly a tidal change) will involve a rise in sea level that will knock out refineries and severely damage …
- 2009/10: A big crisis is kicked off. It could be that Israel bombs Iran, or that Swine Flu goes into a level of extreme lethality. 10 days later, in relation to this crisis, the Obama administration will be thrown into chaos. When Israel bombs Iran, they'll use a nuclear-tipped bunker buster that will hit something unforeseen underground. As a result, a radioactive cloud will form that will pollute and sicken Southeast Asia. This will cause much of the world to turn against Israel.

- 2010-: The “Death of the Dollar” will be a continuing trend, with a hyper inflationary period and banking crises/confidence losses that will begin in August 2009.
- 2010- : In South America, there’ll be large or mass sightings of UFO-related phenomena. A video crew will interview an escapee from an internment facility. The young bald man will later be revealed to be a “non-Terran” human. Sustainable living will be the only way to survive the upcoming economic change and food shortages.
- 2011- “Global Coastal Phenomena” will be gradual; the situation could be disturbing for many people. Unusual movements of the Moon brought on by anomalies in the magnetosphere could cause coastal disruptions.
- 2011- The magnetosphere problems could lead to ultraviolet scorching of food crops. Grain crops will fail, mainly in the Northern Hemisphere, leading to food riots in the winter/spring. Specifically, there’ll be riots in Rome that will spill over into the Vatican.
- 2012- brought upon by some combination of pandemics, economic collapse, breakdown of health care and unknown energies from space.

Did you notice it? There is nothing good coming in the near or distant future! Web Bot is like the internet prophet of doom. Like the perditions of Ed Dames world renown military remote viewer who has been called Dr. Doom.

So what do we do? If the collective feeling of the world is that chaos and calamity is here, coming and will get worse what is the answer or why is all this coming down? If you take the web bot predictions, what many remote viewers and psychics are saying and what those who predict a world change are saying then we better brace ourselves for the end of….something.

Let’s put the ‘feeling’ in the air in perspective:

- Talk shows that represent millions of people the world over continue to see many bad and catastrophic events coming…most of which will be far worse than 911.
- The web bot and projects like it are saying massive catastrophic events are coming and will be ‘society changing’ events.

- Prophetically oriented individuals like David Wilkerson see a mass collapse coming to the US and around the world.
- Remote viewers and psychics who claim to see or read the future are predicting doom, destruction and chaos.
- Military men and those who keep an eye on future war see Israel attacking Iran, and massive war breaking out. That many countries will join in.
- Islam seeks to annihilate Israel and unleash such bloodshed that it will bring in their new world leader…the Mahdi.
- 2012ers as I call them are those who are looking at the old Mayan prophesies and telling us that in December 2012 the world will end-change-be destroyed. After reading a half dozen of the new books on the subject it seems that most of the authors tell us that the end is coming and that a new world will emerge. This is what the premise of author Whitley Strieber's Book 2012 is all about.
- Older occultists believe like Albert Pike of the Masons that chaos will come and then the new world order.
- New agers now see that a cleansing might occur, that mother earth may unleash hell and millions of people and nations will end and then of course a new world will come with an expected bright powerful world leader to run it all.
- This may be the hope of the Georgia 'GUIDE STONES' the occult oriented 'stones' proclaim that the world population should be reduced to a manageable 500 million. That means that billions should be eliminated!
- And many now are learning survivalist skills and are preparing themselves for anarchy and collapse.

Doesn't anyone have any good news? What do you see and feel? Why did you buy this book? I think you feel the chaos coming too. It's not what anyone wants but it seems like the bomb has been dropped and everyone is waiting for it to hit. This book is a warning and proclaims that a history changing chaos-anarchy-revolt is coming…very…very soon and it is part of a satanic plot that has been evolving for a long time. This book also proclaims the Bible's prophecy includes that the deception and manifestation of lethal dark

presence will result in massive destruction.

If you read Revelation Chapter 9 it also reveals that 1/3 of humanity will be lost (die) in the coming chaos and the calamities that follow. And dear friends I know there are a lot of sources for the 'feeling in the air' and predictions but only one has a source of prediction which has never failed. They have been true (infallible). These revelations are found only in the scriptures that the uncreated infinite Spirit of God has given us. The Bible is still light years ahead of the web bot, remote viewers and the old perdition of the Maya. I hope you will look at the source that is packed with mass fulfilled prophecies and a New Testament that is 1/3 predictive prophecy. The difference in Biblical prophecy in comparison with all the above sources is that it is given directly by God and is to be used to bring people into a personal relationship with Him. Check out a few things in God's revelation (data) and what it has to say about this "feeling in the air". The book of Daniel 11-12; Matthew 24; 1Timothy 4:1; 2Thess.2; 1John 2; and the book of Revelation.

The premise of this book is that a dark and lethal presence is bringing all this coming chaos and destruction. This book points a biblical finger at the powers of darkness and their real and coming agenda. Here are a few things we need to know about what the Spirit of God says about the dark spirits (demons) and of that 'spirit in the air.'

IT'S THEIR PRESENCE

The dark side does have 'power' and you can feel the energy of their presence just like the heat that comes from a blast furnace. I know God's presence and power; I also know the feeling of the manifested presence of demons. In exorcism when demons come up (manifest) there is a 'feeling'. I can feel them in the air around places or in people, at times I can feel them in the midst of spiritual warfare too. I can also see/feel that the atmosphere itself is darker and more of them from the other side are coming to this side.

I was taken to a ritual sight years ago where the 'black mass' indicator was painted on a tree. The highly trained luciferian who took me there, was used to the sight. It was in deep woods and as I drove down in the circular

area I could sense and feel major demonic presence. I felt as if they saw who I was and flocked around to protect their area. It was a ritual sight where many satanic sacrifices were held. It was there we dug up bones that were used in a ritual. All of those who came with me said the same thing, you could feel it…and it seemed like we were being watched.

As the other side by the masses moves more and more into our realm, the 'air' will seem charged and it may feel like violence, evil and death are swarming. The pinnacle of demonic presence in our society is seen in Revelation 18:

"…a home (dwelling place) for demons and a haunt for every evil spirit…"

IT'S THEIR NATURE

If you know the nature of a person you can feel it too. If a person is very angry all the time it seems you can feel that anger coming off of them as they enter a room. It's also true when someone is so filled with God's love and His Spirit that you can feel the presence and power coming off of them. We do manifest what's in us.

The 'dark side' as I call it often is real and massive. They are the fallen ones, demons and unclean spirits who hate God and seek to set up their agenda in the affairs of humanity. It's the nature of a being that will be felt, seen and have its affect on you. If it's Charlie Manson walking into the room… watch out.

The nature of the demons is revealed throughout Scripture. They hate God, Christ the Bible and anyone who loves them. They are evil, liars, deceivers and users. They come to kill, steal and destroy. They want human blood, to control and to possess humans. The demon gods of the past and present want human sacrifice and seek to keep people from God. Take a look at Mark 5 and see what happens to a man who was filled with the demonic. Look at Acts 16 and see how a little girl was used. If their nature is radical lethal evil then their coming to this side in larger numbers means what they are and

what they do comes here too.

IT'S THEIR AGENDA

The satanic agenda is personal and vast. The ultimate goal is to break into humanity and rule with consuming control. The Bible shows with the arrival of the pinnacle of their presence comes a corresponding destruction. The black awakening unleashes their presence as never before and brings a massive destruction to humanity. What we 'feel' in the air is the burgeoning, swelling presence of their agenda finding fulfillment in the affairs of the World.

Their emergence and blasting into our side means the "secret power of lawlessness" will be felt and will affect the world.(2Thess.2). The more the satanic agenda comes to fulfillment the more destruction will follow. By the time we reach Revelation 9 the level of destruction is overwhelming, 1/3 of humanity dies! The satanic agenda if unchecked would mean the annihilation of humanity. Do you think that's too much of a statement? Then see the words of Jesus in Matthew 24:

"For there will be great distress, unequaled from the beginning of the world until now-and never to be equaled again. If those days had not been cut short, *no one would survive*"…Jesus

FINALLY

I believe the presence, nature and agenda of the dark side as it manifests more and more will be felt. It seems their manifested presence in pre Nazi Germany was 'felt' but also embraced. Their acceptance into the political and military evolution leads to massive destruction, bloodshed and crudity!

Dear folks…it already has, is now and will happen again only 10,000 times broader and darker. We are talking about satan's finale, the apex of his agenda and the pinnacle of his power. It is felt, feared, but make no mistake, it will happen just as God has warned us it would. What you may feel now and when the black awakening occurs, as bad as it will be, only sets the stage

for the rest…and not any web bot has seen this.

> “Immediately after the distress of those days, the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from the sky, and the heavenly bodies will be shaken” Jesus in Matthew 24

CHAPTER 15
LUCIFERIANS, ILLUMINATI AND STREAMS OF DARKNESS

"The illuminati consist of many of the world's richest families ….they pay lip service to religion, they worship Lucifer. Their agents control the world's media, education, business and politics."P 66 'ILLUMINATI' The cult that hijacked the world

"The object of the first degrees of illuminism is at once to train their young men, and to be informed of everything that is going forward by a system of espionage." P 463 'PERFECTIBILISTS' The 18th Century Bavarian Order of the Illuminati

"This included the fact that the illuminati were proposing to destroy princes and prelates throughout the world, and were to remove forever the feeling of local nationality from the minds of men. The ways in which this was to be done involved infiltrating high positions in education, administration and the Press" p 232 A History of 'SECRET SOCIETIES'

"For the secret (hidden) power of lawlessness is already at work" (Supernaturally operative) 2Thessalonians 2

Lt. Col. Jim Channon, producer of the First Earth Battalion Operations Manual was the military trainer who learned all he could about the new age, alternative spirituality and sought to infuse military soldiers with new abilities so they would be better trained and better protected. In a recent YouTube video he made from his home in Hawaii Lt. Col. Channon asks,

“Did you ever meet a luciferian in your whole life”? “Have you ever met illuminati”? These are important questions and those who have can say, “Yes”.

A *chosen one* I was with, (a highly trained luciferian) who was military trained handed me this First Earth Battalion Manual in the 90’s. They described to me the broader goal of creating super soldiers, soldiers who will serve the luciferian cause. This super soldier knew well what luciferians and the ‘illuminate’ of today are; so do the hundreds of thousands of *chosen ones* across the US and Europe. The illuminate of the past have clearly ‘evolved’ and do, under massive supernatural presence and power pull the strings in many places. Whether you want to call them ‘illuminate’ or not the biblical truth and contemporary reality is that there are and will be a very powerful hidden group seeking a secret destiny, the destiny of the ages as some old occultists called it.

This *chosen one* was a new warrior with many sub personalities. They could project their mind to get into yours. They could remote view and find you. They could release ‘powers’ and cause you harm. They could also use weapons well and were trained in martial arts. *Chosen ones* truly go way beyond the precursor of the ‘First Earth Battalion’ training, however, include some of its new age spirituality as a foundation. What Col. Channon and those in the act of evolving a military with an alternative spirituality base (and to reach a global status) don’t know is…this is the very core of an ‘illumined’ agenda of ‘…the spirit who is now at work…” which is totally luciferic! See Ephesians 2 and Revelations 12. The goal is the whole World!

This spirit, the ‘one behind the curtain’, is pulling the strings of globalism. The need for and must have of all things global will be the core agenda of the ‘illuminati’ and all those under the luciferian cause. They will push for and need:

- Global consensus.
- Global government
- Global religion/spirituality
- Global military/super soldiers.

Behind these four goals is the fifth element; the belief in an 'illuminated' elite who can evolve it, rule it, control it and reap from it. The Biblical prophecies (which have never failed) reveal 'future history' and show that real luciferians do accomplish their 'supernaturally motivated' goals. The issue right now is whether or not we can see the signs of the illumined world elite and the evolution of the above four prong goals. To miss these four core goals is to miss the foundation of the hidden agenda that is evolving in every direction. The elite (illuminati) and all those who serve 'luciferian' spirituality are in the process of leading the whole world in these directions to accomplish their agenda.

The highly trained and spiritually empowered *chosen one* was sitting in my office one day writing and drawing. The drawing was a picture of a large room with a place for 13 chairs; the thirteenth chair was the only one that was not filled. The 13th chair I was told was the chair of Lucifer, incarnate (the antichrist). This person explained to me what many others have, that the whole system of creating transmuted super soldiers was for the purpose of bringing in the rule and reign of a super illumined world leader and the new leader will have his 'team' in place before he appears.

So, dear reader, the premise of this book is the issue of 'super soldiers' who are engineered by the illumined elite. They will use them to collapse the old order (by a violent chaos) and help make the way for a whole new illumined ruling class and their "god like" leader. This is the core of the luciferian belief and agenda. I will spell it all out point by point.

- THE SUPER ILLUMINED. They feel they are the secret elite who are light years above the riff raff of the world. They feel they are superior and the 'secret' knowledge they have received, preserved and added to is highly guarded and only for the illumined. The illumination comes from many, any and all spiritual streams: Get this….except the spiritual presence, power and knowledge that come from the Bible, the real Christ and His mission. The spirit that initiated the illumined group began this in the garden of human history. See Genesis for the fallen cherub, his method, offer and promise. This is where the concept of the illumined elite began. To miss this connection is to miss the root and its

future ‘fruit’. Satan has promised those who reject God and follow him…elitist knowledge and position. The trouble with the ‘illumined’ is that they have not figured out that *the finite no matter how powerful cannot grant infinite status.*

- THE SUPER KNOWLEDGEABLE. The real luciferian will be one who is well read and deeply versed in the ‘secret’ spiritual knowledge. The illumined ones feel they are way beyond the common man and because of that they must lead, rule and control…for the ‘good’ of all. Trying to read books like Albert Pike’s Masonic ‘Morals & Dogma’ and hundreds others just like it will reveal the vast depth of ‘entrenched esoteric, mystical and spiritual revelation’. There may be different streams but all of it has one source, the teachings of the old mystery schools. This spiritual illumined teaching they say goes way back...maybe even to the nephilim and to the watchers who birthed them. Some say they taught early fallen man sorcery and many other secret things.

  Tracking this body of religious dogma (yes it is teaching/dogma) can be long and tedious, it can be dangerous too. If you really have in your hands ‘doctrines of demons’ (1Timothy 4) you have inspired writings and by my experience the dark (planos/imposter) spirits who gave them may be right there with them when you read. You can’t read ‘illumined’ teachings without being affected, visited and sought after. After all that’s what they’re for. Alice Bailey’s book, ‘THE EXTERNALIZATION OF THE HIERARCHY’ which was dictated by a ‘kosmocrator’ whom she thought was an ascended spiritual master is a major example of *demonic ideology and agenda in written form.* It has affected millions and spells out the incremental approach to spirit guided globalism and the rise of a ‘world teacher’.
- THE SUPER CONTROLLERS. The illuminate are those who seek to lead and then control the world for sure. That is the spirit behind them, the spirit that inspires guides and empowers is also the one that controls. All *chosen ones* evidence this concept of control. Their unilateral will has been taken away. The very technology being used to split and program separate the personalities inside one person has this main hook…total control.

All of those who have been through SRA/MPD know that their birth, childhood and development have been controlled and the big question for everyone to answer is…by whom? I say it is ultimately the elite or higher up that would be the ones to claim illumined bloodlines (demonic), illuminated knowing and would be in direct contact with the 'bright and shining one' Lucifer himself! Those who have come under his control will seek to extend that control all the way to the end.

Control is the issue and Scripture itself says of a fallen world system that is evolving:

"….the whole world is under the control of the evil one." 1John5

- THE SUPER WEALTHY AND POWERFUL. To create, evolve and maintain 4-10 million super soldiers will cost billions. To grab control of the banks, the oil, communications-media, government and military and have a plan to seize the world will cost trillions. The spirit guided Nazis knew this and they acquired mass amounts of gold and other resources. If you want to know who and where the illuminati are then… *follow the money*. Look at the Bilderbergers and those who are behind the elite at the Bohemian Grove Empire. Those invited to Bohemian Grove each year (for over 100 years) are the world's elite and powerful wealthy, political, military and media moguls.

  Many of those gathered there may not know but may be influenced by the major dark powers that are summoned and put on them. Like the spirits sent out to the world's elite in Revelation 16 (to be 'gathered') spirits are raised there by the ritual of human sacrifice and sent on the world's elite. So at meetings like this, you are either the 'the illuminati' or those whom the illuminate seek to influence. Either way the world's wealth is sought and acquired by this final group of world controllers and for one reason…a control that will set everything up for Armageddon.
- THE SUPER AGENDA. Hitler and the Nazis had an agenda that's for sure. They sought to fulfill this cause and without interference they may have reached it and I would be writing in German! The final agenda of the illumined elite is very clear…globalism. They want all national boundaries and individual rule ended. They want a central ruling group with one head leader. They want control of the wealth, politics, military

and the people. But we must reveal something now that God has given a heads up about. While most conspiracy writers speak of a shadow elite who seek to control the world they miss the fact of the real reason for global control. Note: global control is not the end game, it's the necessary step to get to the illumined 'final solution'. All of this leads to the attempt to kill God.

The agenda within the observable agenda is to build, evolve and acquire the world's largest military power. A military that has millions of super soldiers, who have taken the mark, worshipped the image and are prepared to fight.

Dear friends the goal of the illuminist is the agenda that goes all the way to the end. All the promises and pledges along the way mean nothing to the fallen cherub. I have told super soldiers (*chosen ones*) for a long time now…you will not get rewarded; like Judas you will lose it all.

Every ounce of Biblical prophecy speaks of an end time controlling empire that will surpass every one that came before it. Its agenda will involve the full force and pinnacle of satanic presence "…who leads the whole world astray" Revelation 12.

- THE SUPERNATURAL SECRECY. We are just scratching the surface of the deep here. No matter how many books I have read or *chosen ones* I have talked to I know one thing very well; it's all much deeper than I know. Deeper than this book and deeper than the few whistle blowers who have surfaced. We can read, talk, and research does help us to connect the dots of this emerging darkness but I still say for now we are only scratching the surface…of a very deep well. The entire agenda of the illuminate is bathed in a supernatural secrecy. In 2 Thessalonians the Spirit of God reveals that this whole evolution of the satanic agenda is operated by and bathed in 'supernatural' and very powerful secrecy. It's called "the secret power of lawlessness…that is already at work". Let me break that down:

  First, 'the secret power' is in reference to pure satanic power that cloaks the ongoing agenda. Satan seeks to operate in stealth until the coming 'revolt' (black awakening) and visible 'revealing' of the

antichrist. All *chosen ones* know the 'law of secrecy' that rules the vast underground. You tell- you die! That's why there is shut down programming, suicide programming and punishment issued.

Second, the idea of lawlessness is; total opposition to God, His presence, His people and His Word. Satan and the illumined ones have law, strict law but the force of lawlessness means….total fierce opposition to God. Satan wants to eradicate God and anything that is called God or of Him. Please remember this all began as a war against God. Not just take His throne (see Isaiah 14) but to oust Him. The attempt at eliminating God occurred again when He came in human flesh as Messiah. Satan was there (See Revelation 12) prepared and waiting to devour the Christ when He was born.

Satan's attack the second time was on Immanuel, God with us! The agenda now is supposed to be a secret but God has given us a glimpse…satan and all that he is doing is for the end game of a third chance at killing God. That is what R1919 is all about.

So now you have to chew on this and please do…the creation of super soldiers, the entire new age movement, the quest for controlled globalism, the coming black awakening and the reason for antichrist is ….R1919! The super secret is that this is an agenda that will use all of its enlisted and slaves from top to bottom as fodder to go up against God and seek to kill Him.

When demonic presence through trained committed sub personalities screamed at me, "We are the legions that shall rule the earth" It is clear, they and all those in this illumined nightmare really know they are being forged to reach this end goal, that they will 'willingly' go to Armageddon believing that the 'mass accumulation of finite presence and power' will be able to annihilate the infinite God once and for all.

Or

All of the super soldier *chosen ones*, their creators and all the others clear up to the tip top of the illuminati have been horribly deceived and have not

read Revelation 19:20.

WHO ARE THE ILLUMINATI?

Whatever name they go by today whether the brotherhood, ancient brotherhood, brotherhood of darkness or the illuminati, they can be seen and are described in Psalm 2. God gave a picture of them 3,000 years ago; who they are, what they say and what their agenda is. In PS2 we have an old message that calls out to this self proclaimed supernaturally illumined group today. Whether political, military or the wealthy elite the leaders of this agenda and those who follow are seen by God *as an army of darkness.* The peoples, nations and kings of the earth who have taken their *stand against the Lord and against His Anointed* (Christ) are what make up this group.

You may find the leaders of this entire agenda; they are the ones working toward globalism and a spiritual evolution that will change human beings and human history forever. They feel elite and believe they shall rule, but once again I must say……just like Judas who betrayed Christ they will lose their silver, their guts and their eternal souls. See Acts 2 and Revelation 19:20

WHAT IS A LUCIFERIAN

I can name people who are Luciferian; there are even some sub personalities in *chosen ones* who have told me that is what they are. You can tell a real luciferian by what they believe and by what they are working for. They believe the core luciferian doctrine and are committed to the ultimate luciferian dream. Whatever they call themselves the belief and agenda tags them.

- One, they believe in an evolution of human consciousness and are seeking this through 'alternative spiritual' experiences. That mankind is evolving and a massive spiritual burst (wave) is coming which will transform humanity and make us god-like.
- Two, they believe and are working for a spiritual new age of globalism that will replace all the old structures of human government, nations, laws and religion. This new order will emerge from a great chaos and will be lead by a super human leader.

FINALLY

These two things reveal the core of what a real luciferian is and what the elite group of illumined ones are and live for. They know a great force is guiding them; by following it they are embracing what they feel is a 'bright light'… a spirit who has power in the air and in the lives of each one of them who …open the door for it. This illuminate and its luciferian doctrine my friends is the deepest poisoned candy ever in history and it will have its affect in the end. Some who read this may find out that its definition draws a circle around them and says you are one, maybe now is the time for real change.

The infinite God has made a way, if you have missed the Cross where Jesus died you may have to re-examine the Person, the Power and the Purpose of what was done there 2,000 years ago. The Cross is all about you, the love that God has for you and the door He has opened. There is only one who gave His life willingly and only this one is infinite and able to give life…eternal life.

Jesus was feared by the demons, worshipped by the angles, foretold by the prophets and revealed by 1,600 years of Scripture (data-revelation), given not by fallen finite spirits but by the Spirit of God. He had a birth, life and death like no one in all of history, but it was His resurrection that fulfilled all of these ancient scriptures and blasted into finality the enemy of death. There is this door God calls you to right now in this moment of time, yes even while you read.

"Turn to me and be saved, all you ends of the earth; for I am God, and there is no other" God in Isaiah 45

"If anyone is thirsty, let him come to me and drink. Whoever believes in me, as the scripture has said, streams of living water will flow from within him….."Jesus in John 7

If you don't know Jesus Christ then let it be known that He knows you and is calling you, summoning you to come home. Come home to God. He is

creator and redeemer! Take a deep read of the Gospel of John. Experience God speak, act, give and grip you.

This now ends the second section. It has been written to give a foundation for what you are about to read. There is a reason for the feeling of angst in the air. That sense of chaos millions feel is real. It's coming…the satanic black awakening that is. The next session will go over the creation and plot for the use of hundreds of thousands of those who consider themselves the '*Chosen Ones'*. They are here, the ones who are trying to get free and the many that are still controlled, prepared and just waiting for the call.

"Then another horse came out, a fiery red one. Its rider was given power to take peace from the earth and to make men slay each other. To him was given a large sword"

Revelation 6

PART THREE
FORDGING THEM IN HELL'S KITCHEN

"…twenty years ago a grief-stricken couple mourned their stillborn son. Unknown to them, at the very same time, hundreds of other parents across the nation were faced with the same terrible loss……As he follows a confusing trail of evidence from the past to the present, he realizes that he has stumbled upon a conspiracy so vast, so terrifying, that it threatens not only America's security, but the future of the entire world." From the back of the cover 'WARLORDS OF ARMAGEDDON' Given to me by a highly trained *chosen one*

"**19**Then I saw the beast and the kings of the earth and their *armies gathered together* to make war against the rider on the horse and his army." Revelation 19:19

"…The weeds (tares) are the sons (children) of the evil one, **39**and the enemy who sows (creates) them is the devil…"Matthew 13:38-39

"To outside observers the rise of the Black Order seemed both silent and relentless." P 77 'THE SS' a warning from history

A leg chained, handcuffed demonized coven loyal sub personality programmed to kill said:

"WE ARE THE LEGIONS WHO SHALL RULE THE EARTH"

CHAPTER 15
THE ARRIVAL OF VICTIMS

"Consumption of blood and flesh, performed in a communion-like fashion, is usually an integral part of ritual sacrifice" p 78 'RITUAL ABUSE'

"They may not even be aware of the separate parts of themselves---'hidden' parts, as I've called them—that are not under their control" p253'THE STRANGER IN THE MIRROR'

"Child alters can be programmed to answer the phone late at night and get instructions about where to go for a ritual and none of the other alters will even know the phone rang! How could that happen? Because there is an alter----totally amnesic to the other alters------whose role it is to answer the phone at night."P 109-110 'UNCOVERING THE MYSTERY OF MPD'

"All the men form a circle and dance around me. And they chant. 'Hail satan, hail child of satan, hail prince of satan.' Then they place me on my back in the center of the circle." P 41 'SATANS CHILDREN' case studies in multiple personality

They began showing up in the psych wards in the late seventies and now by 2009 there are millions of cases. Where did they come from? Is it real and if so, who is behind this massive multinational crime of the century? We gave more detail on this in the chapter on mind control and psychology. As we have said already victims of SRA-DID were not showing up in the 50's and 60's. The 50's and the 60's are when the covens and secret military labs were making them. Victims were just children in the 50's; it would be 25 years later when some would begin to seek help. If all of this abuse begins when they were babies and if there are 100,000 victims showing up in the late 80's you know what that means, right? Those who were and are the

perpetrators began a project so vast that it included hundreds of thousands of babies/children in the 1950's.

Most victims that are out today and speaking are in their 40's and 50's and all of them track the beginning of their abuse back to early childhood. All of this victimization began at the end of the 40's and continued into the 50's and 60's. And O, yes, it is still going on now! From birth to those in their fifties there are millions of victims, some have gotten out others are just in the first steps of this process.

Where are all the children?

More victims of this technology from hell began to show up in their late 30's and 40's. They began to show up in the help centers and psych wards. They began hearing voices in their heads and noticed they were losing time. They could be in one place doing something and then hours later find themselves in another location with different clothes on and doing something else. They began remembering pieces of their past. Panic and overwhelming emotions of fear would rise as the terror filled memories began to surface. They had dreams of blood and sexual abuse; they began to realize that so much of their life is a blank.

Some freak out and take drugs or consume alcohol, others go deeply passive because they don't want to find out that what they fear is real. Reality is too fearful and painful at first but the memories and little sub personalities keep coming up screaming for healing air.

The skeptics can't stop them, not even their handlers or enforcers can stop them. Some want help and freedom so much they will risk it all to get out. The greatest fear is two-fold; the punishment from the bad guys and whether or not anyone will believe what they tell them is true. They want someone to rescue them; they look for heroes but seldom find even one. They struggle, watch and listen as psychologists and other professionals "do their stuff". They can tell if the person believes them, they can even tell if the person can help or not. Sometimes it's just the fact that someone will love them and hug them. They know some are safe and won't drag them off to a late night ritual where they are used, abused and see hell in action. They just want it all to

stop….or die. Hell's breath does have that affect on you.

These, my dear readers, are the products of hell's kitchen. The radical evil that conceived and hatched this plan is bad enough. The radical evil that has performed the rituals, splitting, programming and the rest is simply hell in action. This icy cold as hell continues even as your eyes hit the pages of this book. This living evil has a relentless passion and mission.

It's not Uncle Sam, it's the devil himself and this old fallen cherub wants a lethal cold as hell army…to do his ultimate bidding. He and his are doing everything to get it done too. I hope you understand, this is not just a book for a shelf, not a curl up in the covers by the fire with some French roast coffee story that can be just shelved. It's a plea from a late night servant of God for a listening ear, a discerning spirit and emotional state that can become outraged. I pray for tears, fearless outrage and action. I pray that many will swarm the throne of grace and calling on Heaven's fire open their hearts and say:

"Here am I. Send me!" ”

Isaiah 6:8

You can take the time to research the stats on all the facts and figures. I will give few since they have been hashed and rehashed by a number of other good books. And I don't care about skeptics, they can't help anyone anyway. I care about the victims and how to get them safe, healed and in the arms of God. I care about warning the Church, people, nations and leaders. I care about nailing the sons of hell who have joined radical evil's work in these last days.

We must realize that thousands of victims of SRA/MPD want out and seek help. One victim is enough; the multiple abuses are more than anyone can know. If you could see the fear in the eyes of a five year old girl, the hopelessness as her own family keeps her glued to the abuse. The despair of calling on someone to help for years and no one came. If one victim is not enough: How about two? If two is not enough, then how about three hundred

or 300,000. When is enough…enough?

One victim writes me as another screams:

"Help me, please help me"!

THE TIMID FEDS WIFE

Never would I imagine the danger and battles my family, friends, and Church would go through all because I agreed to meet a very broken and sad victim. I was called to come to a meeting at a restaurant where I met Mary (not her real name) for the first time. Mary was about 105 lbs, petite and very passive. She had blond hair with blue like eyes but it was hard to tell because of what else was there. She was hunched over and dejected as she began to quietly tell me here story. The friend who introduced us was an SRA/DID gaining freedom from an eastern state. Mary told me stories of abuse, rituals and control by 'them'. I asked many questions and she answered all of them without switching to any other sub personality. We set a time to meet again and begin working on her case.

Mary said the satanic type coven called 'circle of dominion' was abusing her and controlling her life. She had scars physically, mentally, emotionally and spiritually. After seeking all the information I could, I set a meeting with her at my 'safe house' where I lived. Mary was sitting in the side room where a few of us were beginning to pray for her and help plan her total freedom.

My daughter, 2 at the time was being watched in another part of the house by a friend. My wife came home from work and looked into the room where I was. I introduced Mary to her and immediately my wife asked me where our daughter was. She called me to the other room to tell me something very urgent. My wife who has very good discernment told me of a dream she had about a petite blond haired women in a police uniform who sought to steal our daughter and use her in a satanic ritual. Well, a new gaze was in my eye and questioning process from that time on.

I went back to the room and began to ask Mary about the coven and how they abduct her. She told me about the mind control and her sub personalities. She also told me how her federal officer husband set up some detectives to watch her and investigate what was happening to her. She told us of the next ritual date and showed me some items with occult writing or language on them. She said they were coming for her the next Friday. She said they call her sometimes and just say weird things and then she switches and goes. Mary would then lose time or even the whole night and usually wouldn't remember a thing except that she was used and abused.

I asked her about her family line which was German and she said her grandmother was still there. I would later find out she had a sub personality who spoke fluent German. I asked her if the police were of help to her and if they investigating the rapes. She then told me of their inability to catch anyone and that they wouldn't because of the secrecy of the coven and the powers they had. She then looked at me and told me more about her family, her federal officer husband and how she used to be a *uniformed police officer*.

Yes, a uniformed police officer. From that point on helpers and others were told to keep their eyes on this *chosen one*. Mary had several inside sub personalities, many of which were coming up to talk to us. At this point workers and I were led into hundreds of hours of surveillance, counseling, protecting and seeking to hunt down the coven.

I began to get calls coming into my home and office warning us to stay away from Mary. They would say, "Mary's power and blood belong to the circle of dominion". It seemed like every time we planned to set up the coven or hide Mary out to protect her, the coven would know. We were taken out many times to places, grave yards, lakesides, the woods etc by the talking sub personalities so they could show us the ritual sites and try to catch the satanists.

We were beginning to see that Mary had sub personalities who were helping the coven and keeping us off track. We began to engage the coven loyal parts and powerful demonic spirits that were on them. It was then that we realized we were the ones who were being set up; we were being

targeted by coven members who knew more about us than we did about them. Mary wasn't half out of the coven she was 90% in. Curses, spells and demons summoned were sent against us. People began to show up at our homes and seemed to be watching us. One night a van we identified in Cleveland, Ohio as used by this coven group was sitting across the street from my home….my safe house.

They didn't just find my home. The coven loyal personalities who stayed hidden and quiet at first informed them from the beginning; from the very first meeting at that restaurant. They were co-conscious and watching us. They were getting every ounce of information and passing it along. The sub personalities were taking the physical Mary out to the meetings; they were using the items they stole from my home to use in the rituals against us.

One of those rituals was a death ritual. They were mad because we had found one of their meeting places; an apartment of a satanic priestess. They were mad because we were able to keep Mary safe at hidden places. They were mad because we no longer talked about the what, where or how we were doing things. Even the coven loyal personalities were mad and they would switch (come up) and fight with staff members. Many times they would throw off a helper and run and no one could ever catch or find Mary (or the part running) until hours or days later.

The morning came when I was to preach at the local church but I was sick or something. I was shaking on the inside, it was like an internal flu but different. I had my wife take me to church anyway and I sat on a stool at the pulpit where I was to preach because I was too weak to stand. When I finished preaching a women came up to me from the congregation to 'wipe of that red mark' that was on my forehead. Another came up to ask me what it was that I had on my forehead; she thought it was a little red sticker.

Someone brought Mary to the front. She said the red mark looked like an inverted pentagram. Then Mary confessed that the coven had a picture of me and had used it in a blood death ritual. This picture of me was taken from my home by one of her coven loyal personalities. The group of friends prayed for me and my wife drove me home. I didn't eat and had to lie down. I fell

asleep and didn't wake up until Monday morning.

Monday morning my wife and I were talking and I finally told her since this 'sickness' wasn't physical and I was going upstairs to pray it off. I was up there praying for a few minutes when I heard a car with a loud muffler pull up to our house. I got up to look, they didn't see me but I saw them from the upstairs window. It was the priestess and a car load of coven members. I put up another prayer, felt my strength return and then I felt Gods presence all over. The power of God seemed to surge in me and I flew down the stairs grabbed my keys and went bursting out the door. That car packed with the coven members saw me coming and peeled out. I don't know why but I was so filled with strength and health at the moment I got into my car and chased them…everywhere!

I finally cornered them in a bank parking lot and got out pointing at them. I was letting them know I was fine and that they were not. Knowing they carried guns I got back in my car backed up and let them out as we exchanged long hard stares.

After many failed attempts to find the coven, keep Mary completely safe and see her yield to God for total healing I began wondering if she was ever going to break free. We were seeking God for wisdom and reading everything we could get our hands on to deal with this complexity of evil and victimization.

We set up surveillance many times now and each time we would find out that it wasn't so much the coven that was at work but the inner coven loyal personalities. We would catch coven loyal personalities again and again as they sought to set us up and bring us harm. We would record, follow and observe over and over again. The coven loyal personalities who were usually demonized as well hated it when we caught them and would get so angry.

We got another call. Mary had been 'taken' again, or at least that was the set up. We went up to the home of this victim and her federal officer husband. She was found by a staff member and now home but calls were coming into the house with 'trigger' phrases seeking to get sub personalities to come up

and run out. We just kept her there. People in the house had weapons and were watching the streets. It was then Mary asked me to come into the other room; she had something she needed to tell me. Once in the next room, I turned around to face her and when I did she switched. It was no longer Mary…it was Iris. Iris was cold, calculating and demonized. She stared into my eyes as if she sought to distract me. She kept coming closer and kept asking me to put my arms down that were crossed over my chest. Then it happened.

It was so fast, so unexpected! The Spirit of God spoke to me instantly, "She is going to stab you". At that same moment Mary/Iris pulled a long thick needle out of the sash around her waist. She plunged it toward me but I was able to deflect it and grab her. I saw the glazed over blackened eyes of Iris with all that pure hate. She fought back to try again and I threw her onto the couch. The noise of this drew her husband and staff into the room. She darted out into the kitchen where she tried to put the needle into the garbage disposal. She (Iris) fought with all of us as she was taken to the floor. I began praying and there with a screaming struggle the demonic was broken, Iris went down and Mary resurfaced. The husband sat on the floor and began to cry. This was all so bizarre and he could not come to grips with it.

Mary with many deeply committed coven loyal personalities is still out there, as are thousands of others just like her. She was a victim who became a perpetrator. She is a victim but is still operating as a satanic *chosen one*. She is not healed and I am not sure to this day who the main part of her is or if she will ever get out. I do know that what's in her is lethal and active. What is in her can and does conjure power demons, cast spells (satanic warfare), shed blood and know they are a part of a dark agenda.

It was this woman who went to Germany with her 13 year old daughter (to our dismay) and came back with a picture to give me. It was a grainy black and white print of a fully dressed Nazi officer in his SS uniform; he had a grim thin smile. On the back was the name Otto Kritz, below the name was the phrase 'THE BLACK FLAME'. Mary, I still pray for you. I also pray against the darkness within and hate what radical evil has done to you.

WHAT YOU DO KNOW… CAN MOVE YOU

I know that the above story is a big one, not all the cases are like this but there are thousands out there just like Mary. There are thousands also who just want out and do respond to help and the power of God. Right now what you are doing is of vast importance, you are reading. Seek confirmations of the things I share in this book if you want, that's ok. I am confident there is and will be many more 'facts' before the day this massive chaos actually comes. I don't need any more proof. I have been in this box of bolts long enough to know the nuts of radical evil and its agenda. Open your heart to God, offer yourself to be used and you will get all of the real life proof you need. Just helping one multiple will stretch your eyelids, tug your heart and test your resolve. You will either grow or shrink back and hide out in other activities.

In the end, you may just close this book and set it aside but hell will rise and what could and should be done will sit in shamed silence. There is however a help that can conquer kingdoms, administer justice and help those in need (See Hebrews 11).

"[22]Yet Saul grew more and more powerful…" Acts 9:22

"Those who trust in the LORD are like Mount Zion, which cannot be shaken but endures forever." Psalm 125:1

KNOW THAT MANY HAVE SOUGHT HELP

Right now there are thousands of cases of SRA/MPD/DID in psych wards and counseling centers all over the US; hundreds of thousands more in Canada, the UK and Europe. In a 1994 conference we held in Akron, Ohio I gave statistics of 4 million cases of SRA-DID with maybe another 4 million who have never been in a psych ward. In our city every psych ward has these victims. Some say there are millions of diagnosed cases and millions more who are out there intact (they don't know yet they are controlled). A very well known psychiatrist in this field named Colin Ross in his book 'PROJECT BLUE BIRD' The Purposeful Creation of Multiple Personality Disorder (the original title) suggests there could be up to ten million cases of

MPD/DID. Our estimations were at 4 million in the mid nineties and if the statistics of cases of SRA/MPD/DID who have not sought help and were not counted in the process of diagnosis then there could be another 4-5 million cases.

There are far more victims than anyone has imagined. Many are out there looking for someone or some group that will understand them, believe them and help them. The big concern now is the next two generations of victims. Victims who are in their 50's have children who are in their late 30's that are SRA/MPD and those 30 year olds have 12 year old children who are showing the signs of dissociation, sub personalities and sexual abuse. And don't forget, this terrible process almost always begins in infancy.

KNOW THAT MANY NEED DEEPER WORK

Many who have been to the psych wards and some counseling centers and churches have sought help. They sometimes go from place to place to get the answers they need. If they have some counseling and are given drugs to help them cope they may be able to function for a while but what's in them will seek so much more than that. If we are talking about satanic ritual abuse, sub personalities, programming, triggers and demons then a few words in 50 minutes and some drugs will not do.

Then there is the coven and the handlers and the ties to dark spirits who feel they have rights. They all want their victim (slaves) silenced and back in the group. Victims will get calls, visits and at times are taken back by the occult. They are harassed by demonic spirits who have been placed in them to keep them tied to the coven. When victims get taken back to be with the perpetrators they may get reprogrammed, have new sub personalities placed and punished for ever telling. The deeper work I talk of means covering all of the bases so the victim can get all the healing and freedom they deserve.

Can helpers, psychologists and Pastors

- Talk to sub personalities and help them heal?
- Help the main or presenting person cope and give them hope?
- Command demonic presence off and out of them?

- Protect them from being taken back to the coven or group?
- Stop them from being triggered and sub personalities running?
- Help with housing, food and finances?
- Help with their relationships with family, especially if that family is part of the cult?
- Help break programming, lies and the false patterns they have grown up with while in the cult?

Now, that's a starting list of the main things that have to be done. You will have to be willing to give time, resources and effort to help these victims. In our online basic training course called 'Freedom Encounters' there are over 24 hours of this basic training and we include insight on those eight issues above.

KNOW THAT MANY ARE WAITING TO BE FOUND

A sub personality came up in a 40 year old women, he was a little boy who clinched his fists and said that if he was as big as me he would have beat up all the coven bad people. I have never forgotten that little face and little voice or his cry. So many times while working with victims I have heard them or the sub personalities say; "I wish someone would have come and taken me away from all of that". They wished for a friend or helper who wasn't a coven member. Some are out there sitting in a cage others are locked in and watched over wherever they go. Most are being abused as I write and as you read.

When we got a young man back from an extremely rogue satanic perpetrator who had kidnapped him we were told of how quick this evil man formed personalities in the boy and of the violent sexual abuse that occurred for days. After taking this boy to my home to be guarded and helped I was awakened out of my sleep by him shouting at demons in his room and talking in a weird language. He was remembering all of the ritual stuff that he was put though and was even able to recite Latin backwards.

While his dad cried for us to find this boy and while we were praying, driving and hunting down where the scum bags took him, the boy was being

abused. After calling the Feds and local police we tracked down the perpetrator's wife and laid it on her in no uncertain terms. We got a call and the boy was dropped off at a local restaurant where we picked him up. All of the worst damage to this boy occurred while he was waiting for someone to find him. Many victims however know that there is no one searching for them. I will list some things to do to find the victims later in this book.

KNOW MANY ARE INTACT AND BLIND

Thousands of victims who are made to be *chosen ones* are living life in a box. They are working, eating, sleeping and watching TV. They go to churches, play sports and drive their cars. They also loose time and don't know it, have sub personalities take over at ritual dates and do things they would never do in their main mind (personality). These intact victims are totally controlled by the programming, inside cult loyal personalities and their handlers. They may miss a few hours in a day or even a few days and not know what really happened. They are amnesic to all that is going on.

Please realize the power of dark spirits in this matter. Satan is the father of mind control and is the inspiring force of all forms of mind/soul control including the technology that's being used. Most have no idea that this is where the supernatural powers are at work the most. They seek to hide the crimes, covens, leaders, programs and victim/slaves. Only the authority of Jesus Christ exorcized over the victim will break and send out these dark spirits and help bring freedom to their mind and the minds of the sub-personalities.

Remember:

"The god of this age (time period) has *blinded the minds……so they cannot see…..*"2 Corinthians 4

Also notice "…the *secret power …is already at work…*" 2 Thessalonians 2

The point being is that supernatural dark power is *able* and is *used* in this whole agenda. The goal is to keep things secret and keep outsiders from

finding out. God alone can break a *'supernatural hole into the substructure of radical evil'.* The revelation found in Ezekiel 8 will show you God's power and will in the mist of hidden (supernaturally secretive) satanic activities. It takes a superior power to crack into and deal with the source of this radical work and of the transmutation of human beings. If you are willing God may call on you too. You can say… "Here am I Lord, send me".

KNOW THAT MANY MORE KIDS ARE ON THE ALTARS

This is a motivating factor in my life; kids are on the altar of sacrifice and are going through what thousands of current victims did in the '50's. They are sexually abused, tortured, broken and pacified. They are forced to participate in satanic rituals and learn the ways of that underworld.

They are pushed into splitting and the new 'raw' personality may be formed and programmed to commit sex acts with adults or worse. They will sit motionless as they wait their turn…to be used by perverts and the demons.

How anyone can sit back and think of a little 6 year old girl lying on a slab being raped by demented adults is beyond me. This is what was done to Mary long ago and long enough to create so many personalities and place so many demons in her. What was done to her from infancy has left the majority of her controlled by this evil. The victim left to them and without help becomes the perpetrator! So please dear friend never forget that earlier quote:

"Because the consequences are so terrifying"

CHAPTER 16
WHAT ARE MPD/DID/SRA AND CHOSEN ONES?

"Probably nothing stirs our emotions more than the subject of child abuser, and the investigation of such has polarized families as well as entire communities." p 65 THE DEVILS WEB

"Sometimes I was first taken to a local cult meeting. After the horrific ritual, other parts were triggered out to be transported. Most of my op-trained parts were more than willing to go on far-away assignments. It is what they existed for." p 5 UNSHACKLED: A survivor's story of mind control

"His obsession was to turn ordinary human beings into robotic figures whose value systems could be so altered that they would even kill on command-and then be programmed to forget who had given the order" P 26…"…he was becoming more convinced of Dr. Gottlieb's obsession with brainwashing than that of the MK-ULTRA chance of success." p 121 'SECRETS & LIES' a history of CIA mind control & germ warfare

"SS men were held together by the idea that they were a sworn brotherhood of the elect" p 151 'THE NAZIS AND THE OCCULT'

Whatever you believe about them or know about them the fact is this; they are here and they are here by the millions! I am not talking about illegal aliens; I am talking about *chosen ones,* those who have been purposely created and placed among us. They are not just multiples who have had some childhood trauma-though that's bad enough! They may blend in with the masses and look harmless as a dove but if they are an *SS chosen one*…they are a warrior who has been through and can unleash hell. I will focus on the

creation of *chosen ones* in this minefield of sub personalities, soul control and satanic ritual abuse.

In this chapter we will look at the terms given to me over the years. As we have already mentioned in chapters 12 - 15 the victims of satanic ritual abuse with multiple personality disorder began showing up in the '70's with thousands in the '80's and hundreds of thousands in the '90's. The early terms and the diagnostic manuals were being rewritten for psychology/psychiatry. The secular side of professional counseling sought to define, categorize and begin treatment models. I don't like the secular terms used because of the term 'disorder' since 95% of all SRA/MPD/DID was purposely created. It is a 'transmutation' not a disorder. It was not a malfunction as if these individuals just went crazy. It was done by design and it had in its purpose to alter the soul/mind and will of a person…thus it is a 'transmutation'! They have mutated the original personality and function of the human person and this is a colossal violation!

There is a technology behind this phenomenon and it comes from very dark blueprints. It's more than manmade and has behind it deep supernatural roots but these roots did not come from the heavenlies. I don't think you can understand, define or treat these victims (*chosen ones*) without recognizing and engaging the dark side of spirituality. Counselors, helpers and investigators… all roads of this field lead to hell's kitchen and you must know the whole story if you are going to help. All readers who want to rush in to help and fight this evil more effectively must get prepared for a supernatural and fierce fight.

If you are one of them (SRA-DID-CHOSEN ONE) or a helper I am sure you can confirm and add so much more to what I am writing. If you are from Europe the titles may be different and it may be that each term is a 'rank' in the system of this dark brotherhood and underground system. If you are someone who is just beginning to realize that you're missing time or have voices in your head you may want to have your counselor, friend or helper watch over you as you study this section. If you are a perpetrator from the coven or rogue military I am sure you are looking for how much we know. Remember to read chapter 50 well. I hope you know the cost of your crimes and I hope you know the old sermon by the great preacher Dr. R. G. Lee…

‘Pay day, some day’.

SOME OF THE TERMS

- SRA: ‘Satanic ritual abuse’ is the main catch phrase which would include many episodes of physical, mental, emotional and spiritual abuse. It would involve sex and death rituals with sacrificing and the shedding of blood. Hundreds of thousands of victims report this aspect of their childhood abuse. They tell of people in black robes, candles and squealing animals. Here is where you have to have the stomach and discernment to listen. Sacrificed babies and eating flesh is not the kind of talk you hear at the daily water cooler. It’s about crime, blood, guts and satanic secrets.
- MPD: Term used in the DSM III- Multiple Personality Disorder. Referring to the existence of one or more distinct alter persons from trauma based abused.
- DID: The newer term used by the American Psychological Association is Dissociative Identity Disorder. The meaning is basically the same as MPD, but focuses on the ‘identity’ issue as a disorder and not the focus of distinct sub persons within. Neither term for me is adequate.
- ALTERS: This refers to separate distinct personalities inside the body of one person. Another personality and or many alter personalities exiting within the same body…thus an alter personality. Not a thing or state of mind but a real separate personality with all the feelings, memories and history as any other single or regular person. I will deal with the difference between a demon spirit and an alter personality later in the book.
- PARTS: Some use this term a lot to refer to the other personalities that are within. Many victims may say my “parts” tell me or “a part came up”. A part is an individual personality inside the body. This one is a ‘part’ of the many or system of personalities within.
- MULTIPLE: This is the term I hear the most and refers to a person who has many other personalities within. I will use this term when referring to a person who has DID (Dissociative Identity Disorder) SRA (Satanic Ritual Abuse) but has not been clearly revealed as a *chosen one*.
- HOME CREATED: Sub personalities who were created by the person themselves in order to bear the pain and stay alive. When the

personality can't take any more pain it can 'split' and make another. This happens when they are just trying to survive and split under the massive trauma. There are many home created personalities in all multiples. Those who force the creation of sub personalities don't like the home created parts and will seek to manage them. Many times it's the home created parts seeking help and don't/ won't be a part of the evil scheme that is being forced on them.

- COVEN/MILITARY CREATED: These are the sub personalities who were forcefully and purposely created by satanic coven military workers seeking to create a 'mind controlled slave'. They seek to create a useful enhanced human with many abilities. They want a servant and they want a system of inside created sub personalities meant to serve satan and his cause.
- SUB PERSONALITY: I use this term in most of the book. The personalities that were split off and created were made to exist as a 'sub' secondary and hidden personality. There are many sub personalities within multiples and *chosen ones*. They are still distinct and separate with their own ages, names, histories etc.
- BWB or Babylon Working Baby: This term has been used by some and should not be confused with programming. This term was used by a *chosen one* who referred to themselves as 'created or raised up to help usher in and unleash the powers of the coming Babylon'. This spiritual system is mentioned in Revelation chapter 18 of the Bible. It is pictured as being packed with demonic presence. It's the revelation or the biblical picture of the rise of globalism's satanic order. It may also be used to refer to part of a *chosen one's* nature…..demonic and human combined.
- CHOSEN ONES: A *chosen one* will have all of the above and so much more in them. This is the term that a number of victims of DID/SRA have used or told me about. *Chosen ones* are those who have many parts who are satanic, use other languages, do rituals etc. They are '*chosen ones'* because they have been chosen to be one of satan's special servants and soldiers; Chosen to serve satan and the luciferians cause. Every *chosen one* knows they were created to serve the coming antichrist. Many *chosen ones* will be fierce fighters who are loyal to that dark cause and know about the coming Black Awakening (even by

other terminology). I'll talk more on *chosen ones* below but first the story of a super warrior.

THE SUPER WARRIOR

I first met this person when a police officer I knew brought them in from another state. She was very interesting, aware and confident. After a couple of hours it was time to go and I felt tired and strained. The other workers who were there had headaches, were sleepy and done for the night. None of us knew that this person was "carrying" but it wasn't just a nine millimeter. I could see, feel and sense the dark powers on this one like none before. Since she didn't seek anyone's harm we just talked, or so I thought. Later I would realized that even if the upfront person is calm and non threatening there could be ten other sub personalities who were releasing demonic powers against us in a form of covert spiritual warfare most Christians have never heard of.

Her 'PSI' abilities or extra sensory perceptions were highly enhanced but not just human conditioning. In this chosen one there were claims of telekinesis, clairvoyance and remote viewing. This one also knew how to conjure and send demonic spirits.

POINTS

Here is some of what *chosen ones* have within them;

- FIGHTERS: They have fighting military trained personalities within. They will also have (black ops) military handlers. They came out of the projects like Monarch or MK Ultra and many other unnamed projects. They have knowledge of military workers, bases, places etc. They have personalities who can handle weapons, fight and can be a soldier.
- SPY: They have highly trained covert sub personalities. They know how to spy, do reconnaissance, infiltrate, plant disinformation and more.
- ESP: They have what they term 'psi' powers or enhanced abilities. Some can remote view and will claim ESP - Extra Sensory Perception. If you work with them you may see this operating in them.

- LUCIFERIAN: They have sub personalities who are satanic and serve satan. They have satanic priestess's, ritual workers and those who can summon demonic spirits. They also know how to do satanic spiritual warfare.
- MULITLINGUAL: They speak different languages and all seem to speak Germany well.
- MULTIPLE: They have many sub personalities to count on in doing their work.
- CONJURE: They can summon demonic powers, receive them and even send them.

There are many more aspects to a chosen one which I will spell out in later chapters.

FINALLY

There are many victims of abuse who are not 'chosen ones', they are damaged and in need of healing. It is only those who are purposely created by those who know the dark technology who would have PSI powers and demonic enablement. *Chosen ones* are here by the hundreds of thousands some say by the millions. They are here for a reason, they know it and so do those who forged them. It is almost unbelievable but then again the 'secret power' that's behind them want it to be that way…for now.

CHAPTER 17
HOW ARE THEY MADE?

"We further pointed out that multiple personality could be both caused and cured by hypnotism. Remember war is a grim business."

"There is a diversity of techniques which can be employed." P 198 & 204 G.H. ESTABROOKS

"One of those children was trained as a deadly spy able to elicit top secret information…" "The other child, who was programmed to lead elite military teams…." Prologue SECRET WEAPONS

"This movement contained within itself a 'drawing power' of a strange and dangerous sort" p 146'RESURRECTING THE THIRD REICH'

"…from the trap of the devil, who has taken them captive to do his will"2 Timothy 2

"…My name is Legion," he replied "for we are many" Mark 5

"…split them and create raw personality…"A Chosen one

"Very painfully"….anonymous

She told me that the freshly split personality offered up the new presence of 'raw' personality. 'Raw personality: Is that what they call it? Wow, I thought! Slice a person's personality by massive trauma with the goal of making sub personalities within, program them with someone else's agenda, train them to do evil, continue controlling them and using them for horrific

acts and they just call it new 'raw' personality?

She also told me that the high priest of the coven said he would like to get me and "split my Christian core" and see what they could do with me. The problem is then it wouldn't be me anymore doing it, it would be whoever imposed their will (programming) that is culpable.

It is always amazing to me that some of them can talk about the destruction of another person and be able to look past the torture, pain and tears only to arrive at their objective. I guess they are much like the Nazi doctors who experimented on other human beings without batting an eye. Is it just the ability to 'double' (act in two separate and distinct ways for different purposes) or is there glee in the success of radical evil? A book that a *chosen one* pulled from the bookstore shelf for me to purchase was Robert J. Lifton's 'THE NAZI DOCTORS'. In it he defines the concept of doubling this way on p 421:

"the way in which doubling allowed Nazi doctors to avoid guilt was not by the elimination of conscience but by what can be called the *transfer of conscience*"……."thereby freeing the original self from responsibility for actions"

This may just be the sin code in man (see Romans 8) exercising its ability to justify the self and override the real moral guilt that is there. The elite who have begun this must have no conscience left or a conscience that is so blackened by dark powers that they couldn't see a bloody hand waving right in front of their faces.

"…hypocritical liars, whose consciences have been seared as with a hot iron" 1 Timothy 4

"The god of this age has blinded the (their) minds….."2 Corinthians 4

Let me tell you in this chapter that the creation of multiple personalities inside a person and the creation of *chosen ones* must be a massive violation in the sight of God. It is the rape of a person in every possible way; it is the imposition of someone else's will in the whole and in all the parts of the

victim. The victim is totally taken over and cannot choose for him/her self. If forcing a will and an agenda into another person (and in all the sub personalities) is not bad enough it's how it is done that evidences the vile evil of this technology. There is a pay day someday and it means that they will pay and this and all evil will end.

A child cannot fight off an imposing adult; they can't stop what is being done to them. They are drugged, traumatized, pressured and forced to split or die. The process of 'trauma based dissociation' (rape-physical-mental abuse) and the splitting of a child so that it can survive are well known in the American Psychological Association and its diagnostic manuals DSM III & IV. It is, using Colin Ross's phrase, *"the purposeful creation of multiple personalities"* that has to be looked at.

In this chapter I will give the basics of the process that many *chosen ones* have revealed to me. Thousands of multiples have shared with their counselors these points, though packed with fear, pain and trauma. They are the brave ones on their way to freedom and victory. The day sub personalities begin to remember the day they were created (split off) is when they can also remember what came just before…the trauma of hell's technology.

SELECTION

Remember the secret project Hitler had during the rise of the Nazi regime. It was called Lebensborn (source of life), a project that sought the special creation of future Nazi soldiers, a master race. It was based on an occult understanding of old bloodlines. They believed that the Aryan blood and genetics carried superior qualities, even supernatural powers (godlike-demonic powers). So they thought they could breed pure Aryan born children which they could raise as a master race of enforcers who could be the troops of the 1,000 year long 3rd Reich of the Nazi reign.

So they made many Germans who could prove their Aryan bloodline mate and begin breeding this new future warrior class. Some say that 400,000 to 800,000 genetically bred Aryan babies (god men) were born by the end of World War II. These babies and their parents were selected in a process of

making ‘designer’ children who could be their future soldiers. Most of these children created under the Nazi regime are in their late 60’s today. This is the mentality behind the creation of current *chosen ones* and I personally believe it is the continuation of that very ‘luciferian’ dream… of super soldiers.

Even now victims of SRA will tell you about the selection of parents and their bloodlines. The purpose would be to obtain more of the ‘genetics’ that carry supernatural power in the ‘DNA’ of the new super child. These powers in the blood of parents who are selected are thought to contain bits of the ‘genetics of the nephilim’. O yes, the coven and military sub personalities will tell you this plainly. They believe that they are bred with the genetics that contain powers and that these powers they say go back to the nephilim (the demon human hybrids). Many sub personalities based on this will feel very superior to regular human beings.

The parents of *chosen ones* are said to have demonic powers, familiar spirits or generational demonic power and seek to pass the powers into the new child. They want to have a ‘demonically’ (god like) empowered conception so they can create a supernaturally empowered fetus. The more demonic power handed down and or demonized genetics passed on the more powerful the new child will be. They will have more abilities and disposition to receive even more dark powers as they grow in the process. If you ask *chosen ones* and their sub personalities about their parents and the process they will tell you about a long line of demonic power that has been handed down.

MILITARY

The original reason for these super soldiers was for military application. Every *chosen one* I have worked with knows of the military background in their development. Many will talk about the bases they were on and the military doctors and scientists that were involved. Anyone following the US secret projects like Monarch and MK Ultra that the CIA and the DOD have developed will have some insight into the verification of the testimony of victims.

Back in Chapter 13 on the military and this creation of SRA/MPD/DID you have seen a tip of the iceberg of secret projects, mind control and the goal of creating super soldiers. I am not sure that many of the old leaders of these projects understood the 'satanic shadow' that guided them. The ultimate reason for the creation of super humans with 'godlike' abilities is their future use as super soldiers in the massive chaos and final war against Christ (See Revelation 19:19). Many sub personalities who have been trained for military fighting abilities will testify to their ultimate reason for being….to be the troops of the coming antichrist and a new world order.

COVEN

All SRA multiples have memories and sub personalities that can tell you about rituals, sacrifices and the shedding of blood. As you go deeper into the multiple there are sub personalities who know how to speak and write in old ritual languages, draw the symbols for rituals and even conjure the power demons. They have hundreds of stories of meetings, rituals and the inner workings of the coven. You may even get to sub personalities who know the names, locations and secrets of the coven.

Most *chosen ones* have told me that there is an inseparable connection of the coven to the rogue military projects and vice versa. There may be men in military uniforms at the ritual or a known satanic priest in a military psi ops unit is fact.

Col. Michel Aquino founder of the satanic temple of Set with his massive knowledge of dark occult powers, mind control techniques and advanced military weaponry confirms this belief. It is this US military person and others who held a ritual in the Nazi fashioned-Himmler's castle where the 'hall of the dead' is located. Jack Parsons the US military rocket scientist, his deep involvement in satanic ritual and the conjuring of dark powers is well known also. Then there is the new exposure of dark occultism in NASA by Richard Hoagland in his book 'DARK MISSION' which is very revealing and ties together dark powers, occult symbolism, US military and US space science operation in one knot.

Since there are hundreds of thousands of victims of satanic ritual abuse and all of them tell of hidden/secretive satanic covens then the conclusions are massive. There must be thousands of covens in the US, UK, Canada and Europe. Father Jeffery Steffon in his book 'IS SATANISM REAL?' estimates that there may be 100,000 covens in the US. One thing is for sure, we have run into them and there are many but they are nothing new. This ancient presence was sought, showed itself and people have practiced the rituals for millennia. Study Ezekiel chapter 8 and see that they were here in the past, hidden and it took an act of God to reveal and deal with them. I personally believe it is the same today; covens are everywhere and operating rituals weekly, advancing the sequence of satanic evolution (agenda) and filling society with dark powers. Even Biblical prophecy shows this development (See Matthew 24; 2Thessalonians 2; 1John 2; Revelation 12-13 and 16)

The covens are supernaturally hidden and until the Black Awakening and appearance of antichrist occurs they are meant or forced (and maybe under sovereign restraint- 2- Thessalonians 2) to stay underground. Secrecy is the satanic law for now, secrecy is supernaturally and physically guarded.

"But you can be very sure of this, the burst of the black awakening and appearance of the antichrist will cause the sewers of hell to erupt and pour forth its hidden waste. The world will be affected by its stench and more"
RD

Do a little study of the four horsemen in the book of Revelation, notice how they 'burst' out and rush on the carpet of human history with all the fury of satanic power and will. Notice also (especially the fiery red horse. What it will bring is more than hell on wheels. If *chosen ones* feel their past was destroyed just wait until the last day of the last 7 years of human history as we know it. The world will not know what hit it. Talk about shock and awe! Unprecedented deception and destruction is the destiny of those who serve this satanic evolution. There is another way you know and someone has already paved the way. There are those who have been baptized into the Kingdom of God by a blood that does not bring bondage but true eternal freedom. There is a Hero you know, the elect angels did sing of Him. God has visited; God has come for us all. I hope you have embraced this King.

“**10**But the angel said to them, "Do not be afraid. I bring you good news of great joy that will be for all the people. **11**Today in the town of David a Savior has been born to you; he is Christ the Lord. **12**This will be a sign to you: You will find a baby wrapped in cloths and lying in a manger."**13**Suddenly a great company of the heavenly host appeared with the angel, praising God and saying, **14**"Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace to men on whom his favor rests.”Luke 2

OVERVIEW OF THIS DEMONIC TECHNOLOGY

Here is a basic overview of how they have and are creating hundreds of thousands of multiples (SRA) and super warrior *chosen ones*. And let me say you should be outraged! Outrage must be more than words for the victims past, present and those who will be dragged into this in the near future. All *chosen ones* that I have met and worked with need very deep healing and help. For those in the process right now it is a seeming *never ending nightmare*.

What do they do to create chosen ones?

PREPARATION

The victims of satanic ritual abuse and the *chosen one*s were and are being prepared. Jesus said that the evil one comes in the night (secrecy) and creates tares (servants of satan). They have to be infused with satan’s will, power and agenda. Parents of future *chosen ones* are prepared by being demonized, selected and required to produce a child for this agenda. Many victims will talk about being made to mate with other coven members who are *chosen* so another *chosen one* can be born.

They are prepared by being birthed in and saturated with demonic powers. They have rituals done before conception, while the baby is in the womb and right after they are born to insure demonic presence is in and on them. They have already created forced dissociation which is forced passivity.

Passivity is needed in the placement and transference of demonic spirits. Check out Jessie Penn Lewis's book, 'WAR ON THE SAINTS', a vital and classic work on spiritual warfare and the dangers of 'passivity of will'! In the book Lewis claims passivity of will may be an open door for dark spirits to begin to work. When I was being trained in golden Buddha meditation I was told by the master at the temple to go 'passive' to allow whatever and whoever to begin their influence on me and never resist the spiritual masters. Of course this is a doorway for demons to come on and even in if you let them. The rule of the dark side is that if you yield to them or call they will come and move upon you.

Passivity of will and compliance is necessary in creating controlled *chosen ones*; it is needed so that the demonic can begin to operate. Most sub personalities I have worked with don't' believe they can even choose or decide anything. That's how far their will has been taken from them. The will of multiples has been hijacked and imposed upon. Their wills have been forced open to the dark side and its evil agenda. This forced passivity/dissociation in a baby and in a child will open them to the process of splitting their will and creating new sub personalities.

SPLITTING

This is an evil act! It begins with the victim dissociating, almost like they are submerging as they try to avoid the pain, fear and confusion. As the 'core' or main part of the personality submerges, it's as if it is stretched further and further until a break occurs. It's as if the core personality is pushed as far as it can go and then snaps or splits. The core person submerges out of sight and becomes unconscious. From this point the core person is absent, no interaction occurs with them and memory is no longer formed.

At the moment the core person snaps and submerges a new part of them surfaces, this is the new alter personality! This is what splitters and programmers may call new 'raw' personality. This new personality that surfaces is blank and nameless. This is what the splitter/programmer is looking for. This is the raw material they will begin to interact with and form. From this point bonding, programming, demonizing and the rest of the

process of building a *chosen one* continues.

It is the continued process of push them until they split that occurs again and again until you have dozens of sub personalities who are being formed for use in the coven, military and as a future soldier. Splitting is necessary for the creation of new sub personalities and the creation of *chosen ones*. Splitting is the foundation of the rest of this work of transmuting the construct of the human person. Purposeful splitting my dear reader is a violation and rape of the unique personality of the original person.

BONDING

Once the split occurs and the new raw or blank personality is up the splitter/programmer will seek to bond with it. That is, they will begin to talk to the new personality and assure it that they and they alone are their creators and are the ones who care for them. The S/P will then name the personality, talk to it by that name and being telling it that they are very special and are part of a great mission. This is the very beginning of programming. It is the beginning of a life of lies and deception.

Bonding will create an emotional and mental bond between the splitter/programmer and the new personality. Think in terms of a baby that has just been born. You care for it, name it, hold it and build a natural bond of love from parent to child.

Bonding in this satanic since is a total perversion. It begins with the fact that the new personality does not know how they arrived, what the real nature of the splitter/programmer is and why they have been formed. They don't know what is good or bad yet, they don't know what is right or wrong yet. They are just there…being preyed upon by a perpetrator who will control them and create them to be hell on two feet!

In the beginning the new raw personality has no idea what is planned for them. From this beginning they are made to be passive and only do and be as told. When the new personality is formed, named and bonded and the first session is over they are basically put to sleep (put down or submerged) and the core person will eventually come back up. Please realize the core person

doesn't know at this time what happened or that there is an 'alter' personality in them. They have formed no memory because they…were not there!

There are also bonding rituals…just ask the victims. They are put into a box with spiders and bugs or in a coffin and left for dead. Then the perpetrators come and 'save' them. Another method is done by pushing them under water until they pass out until the perpetrators pull them out to 'save' them. The worst one is where the coven members dress up like Jesus and hurt and terrorize the children and never help or comfort them. The kids are then told to call on satan, when a handsome looking satan shows up he frees them, feeds them and cares for them. The kids learn to bond to the perpetrators and satan, himself, with all the depth of their emotions.

PROGRAMMING

Programming is the imposition of another person's will into the mind and emotions of a passive (controlled) personality. Programming is the agenda or will of another being placed into the 'raw' new personality. This new personality does not develop like a new baby, it is force fed thoughts, ideas, agendas, and content. It's very much like hypnosis where the main person is out of the way and the subconscious (alter person) is told what it is and what to do. The hypnotist is very much like a programmer. The hypnotist can tell the 'unconscious' person to act and do what they want them to do and this unconscious part of them seems to believe and then do whatever the 'operator' hypnotist says.

Think of this…'you will only listen to my voice' you will not listen to another'. This is very much like the programmer as they are beginning the process of programming.

Programming is 'thought, content and agenda' placed into the mind, will and emotions of the new personality. So if a personality is a 'runner' it was programmed to run, if it is a 'sex' slave then it was programmed for sex, if it was created to be an assassin then it only knows how to kill etc. etc.

- Programming is a process that begins at splitting and almost never stops. They have to keep building what they want, testing it, add to it

and adjust it along the way.

- Programming can have a focus or goal: Sex programming, warrior programming, satanic priestess programming, runner, informer etc. More on 'kinds' of sub personalities in the next chapter. There can be any kind of programming the perpetrator wants. In forming the new personality the programmer has already chosen what they will be, do, and think. They are building a 'servant'; they are building whatever they want in any new personality they formed. This is total mind, emotional and volitional control; it is the control of the 'soul' of a person. Thank God for the coming judgment on the perpetrators of this horrific crime!
- Programming can be very sophisticated and take years to build into the new sub personality. They can use words, words repeated, word and actions, words and agenda on a tape that is forced on the personality to listen to again and again. There is screen programming where the personality is forced to watch 'a movie' or see a scene/script over and over. They are made to repeat verbally and act out the programming.
- Programming is what each created sub personality is and does and is not and does not do. If one is created and programmed to be an assassin and the other a sex slave then that is what they each do and don't do. One sub personality's job is not the job of others. Each has a job and or specialty so that a *chosen one* can have 50 sub personalities each with a different job or ability to be used when needed or called on.

There are all kinds and or names of programming. I will not go into all that here. The issue is 'what is the programming' that is in a sub personality. Whatever sub personality you meet, what they are, do and say is what they have been programmed to be. At least until the programming is broken and the mind and will are free to choose and grow themselves.

DEMONIZATION

If you are a Christian and know what it is the have the power of God in and on you then you can begin to understand the purpose of 'demonizing' the new programmed sub personality. Take a look at the book of Acts chapter 1 verse 8 where Jesus Christ promises the power of the Spirit of God to come on all believers in Christ (those who are saved). That Power is the Holy

Spirit who comes in and on the Christian to help them to be a witness of Jesus Christ. *The power has a purpose.* This is true of biblical spiritual gifts. The Holy Spirit may give to a Christian the charismatic gift of 'teaching' or 'healing' or 'pastor' which enables/empowers them to be and do what that calling of God is. The fullness/power of the Holy Spirit enables Christians to do the mission of God and share Jesus (evangelism). The believer is already willfully (freely) yielded to God's purpose and will and thus is 'clothed' and filled with the power of the Spirit. The satanic *chosen one* (SRA/MPD) is not freely but forcefully yielded to the will and purpose of the programmer (the satanic agenda) and then empowered.

Therefore the sub personality that is now programmed to be, say and act according to all the programming (agenda) is then infused with 'power' to help them or make sure they do their assigned task. The demonic power in and on them may be called 'energy' or that they have been 'energized' to do their programmed task. A regular person who gets demonized and has a demon on or in them will act with supernatural ability.

As you look at Mark's gospel chapter 5 you will see the man had supernatural strength. Demons that are added onto or placed into a sub personality now empower that personality to do its chosen mission (programming). This programmed person is now 'charged' or energized. When you deal with an altar that comes up to do its job it can carry with it the manifestation of demonic power(s).

Let's look at a few more points in the demonization process:

- All *chosen ones* will have demons in them and…in or on many sub personalities. Remember they were conceived and born with demonic presence from the beginning. They may have generational-familiar (from family blood lines) and or coven demons. All seem to have a head or ruling demon that is over all the demons inside.
- All *chosen ones* and their sub person abilities I have dealt with will know the difference between a demon/dark spirit and other altars/sub personalities. And there is a vast difference between them.
- All chosen ones are forced at first to take in demonic presence. The demonization continues at rituals where demons may be transferred in

sex rituals, conjured and accepted (received) and even sought. *Chosen ones* will know some of their demons very well; they will at times even seek more demons for the sake of more power and abilities.

- Demons give *chosen ones* (anyone who is possessed) supernatural abilities. Demons will enhance a person's mental and physical strengths. They can supercharge a highly programmed sub personality to do their task with supernatural strength.
- The final goal of the demonization of a *chosen one* is to load them with programmed personalities who have demonic power. This 'supernatural power' will energize them (their programming) to do all the chaos at the time of the black awakening/great revolt.
- Demonic power in the *chosen ones* and in sub personalities can move them (and or sub personalities) to fight against you if you are seeking to help or oppose their mission.
- A demonized sub personality who has been trained in and experienced in ritual conjuring or 'casting spells' can and will send demons (curses/assignments) against you. This is part of their infiltration process into churches and other places.
- The demonic powers can operate (unless detected and fought against) by keeping the *chosen one* 'cloaked' and outsiders confused. The demonic can come and go as needed and help keep the *chosen one* (the person) captive to satan's will.
- *Chosen ones* in unison with the coven can and do conjure and send out demons against their targets. The targets are usually the ones (or places) they are infiltrating. They send demons assigned for harm, attack and or influence (See Revelation 16). This is occult level spiritual warfare or satanic warfare.

Final point for now, if you do not deal with the demonic in a *chosen one* (SRA/MPD) you may never get to the deep down sub personalities or break the power of programming in many of the sub persons. Human counseling and or drugs will not make the demonic go away. There is only one sure way to detect, expose and expel the demonic; the authority, presence and power of the Lord Jesus Christ.

TRAINING

All SRA's and *chosen ones* will be highly trained and that training will be rigorous, intense and enforce all of the programming they have.

Training can include:

How to do the job they have been programmed for. If a sub personality was programmed for sex (sex slave) then they have to have training in sexual practices. If programmed to conjure demons and perform rituals then they will do it again and again. If programmed to kill they are trained in how to use knives, guns and even martial arts.

Training also includes:

- How to split and program other young ones in the coven.
- How to infiltrate groups, churches and important places.
- How to speak other languages including ancient ritual or occult languages.

Training of *chosen ones* seems to never stop. If you notice a victim/counselee disappear for a few days it may be because they were called in for re-programming and new or enhanced training.

Though the upfront person in a *chosen one* may seem docile, weak and unassuming, don't be fooled for a moment. It is just the mask that hides dozens of highly trained, programmed, empowered sub personalities who can run circles around most normal people when they switch (come up). And O, yes, the trained empowered sub personalities are always watching. They are co-conscious and looking through the physical eyes of the body that they are in. They can see you without coming all the way up (out). They are trained to be aware and their demons enable that awareness also.

This training will go on and on. The coven and militaristic side demand perfection. Punishment and pain await those *chosen ones* who do not accomplish their tasks well. Never forget that the unhealed intact *chosen*

ones are created to be super warriors! They are quicker, stronger and more able than almost any normal person.

TESTING THE POWERS AND ABLILITIES

Many sub personalities may talk about how they were tested regarding their obtained training and abilities. They may have had to fight other 'coven' kids spiritually and physically. They may have had to hurt others or be hurt. The goal is to see how they have developed and what supernatural abilities are coming out.

It might be a shooting contest or a PSI powers contest to evaluate their development. It can also be testing their abilities in drawing the ritual circle, symbols and summoning a demon. They can be tested on how they cut an animal or how sexually aggressive they are. This testing in 'hell's kitchen' could also include killing and if they did it without batting an eye. Praise and reward is given to some who perform their duties with satanic glee.

ASSIGNMENTS

When *chosen ones* are very capable they may be given an assignment in the coven or group to accomplish. It could be the assignment to infiltrate a Church, fake being Christian and bring compromise to the people there. It could be that the coven just wants them to get in far enough so they can get access to the building to perform rituals.

Assignments may include:

- Infiltrating a church and bring harm.
- Seeking to bring down a Christian leader and ruin them.
- Seeking to destroy a Christian ministry center, plant demonized objects and or steal things from the church to be used in rituals.
- Perform rituals in the church to unleash demonic curse and presence.
- Summoning demons and sending against chosen targets.
- Being placed into a company, building or agency and just wait for further orders.

- If they are placed and assigned to ‘wait’ they could be a sleeper who will be activated later for use.
- They may be assigned to be a sleeper in law enforcement, government and even military.
- They could be assigned to hunt and find victims for satanic rituals. Look up the satanic calendar on the web and note the days/times of rituals and those that involve abductions.

They may be assigned to just get information/ reconnaissance. They can be assigned to make money thus sexual prostitution (porn films) and even drug running.

Most assignments they are given will correspond with the sub personality’s programming, demonization and training. All current assignments are only part of what the ultimate goal is…the black awakening. They all have within them assignments that will be used when the great chaos/revolt is unleashed. I will explain more on this later in the book. The helping, healing and freeing of these *chosen ones* is the only thing I have seen that will stop the assignments and harm they were created to do.

TRIGGERING

In every created multiple and *chosen one* there will be ‘triggers’ or codes. These are the sounds, phrases, or things that are used to ‘trigger’ out (make come up) a sub personality to do its job. Once they are programmed and demonized they are instructed to go down inside to a designated place and are given a code (like a secret combination for a lock). The code is known only to that sub personality. At some point a *chosen one* may get a phone call or hear a sound, the upfront person doesn’t know what it means but a sub personality who has been coded with that sound will know and respond.

Codes or triggers can be:

- A word.
- A phrase.
- A symbol or picture and even a movie with certain songs or characters.

- A sound.
- A phone call with so many rings.
- A tone from a distance.
- A car outside with repetitive honking.
- A letter or card with a word, phrase or symbol.
- A food item like a certain chocolate bar.
- A demonic spirit.
- 11. Using astral projection.

How do you know if a trigger was given?

- They switched personalities
- When they switch and get up to perform a task
- They seem to be in a trace and need to leave
- When they go totally silent a trigger was given to shut them up.

When you can bring healing to inside sub personalities and break the programming then the trigger or codes used will no longer work. At first you may have to keep a victim away from a phone, perpetrators or whatever is used to deliver the trigger. Knowing what a trigger is and what kinds are used is vital in helping a multiple get free. Sometimes inside sub personalities who want to get free will give you codes/triggers that they have learned about. I have also been given trigger/codes phrases and insight of the personality that it would trigger by the Spirit of God; this could be called a word of knowledge for those who know spiritual gifts.

In one case the Spirit of God gave the trigger phrase and the name of a lead demon that was in the ‘sleeper’ sub personality. This sub personality was not supposed to be triggered (called up). When the insight was given by the Holy Spirit I first went after the demonic presence. Calling it up, dealing with it and commanding it to leave with the other nine spirits. I then prayed for the programming to be softened. After that I said the trigger word and sure enough a sub personality came up and wondered what was going on. With the demonic power out of them the programming was weakened and they talked with me. They told me what they were trained to do and that they

were just down inside ‘asleep’ and waiting. We led them to full healing and they were gone. No one could trigger them or access them ever again. For more on the inner healing see our basic training conference on the www.shatterthedarkness.net site.

UNLEASHING

There is a coming activation for hundreds of thousands of these chosen ones to be unleashed all at the same time. At the time of the dark revolt and just before the rise of a new world leader the code(s) will be given.

- With an activation code or trigger.
- The trigger will be heard by many at the same time.
- It may come in waves unleashing them step by step.
- It will unleash sub personalities empowered demonically in the full force of their programming (task/job)
- They collectively will be used to create the ‘great revolt’ which they call The Black Awakening.

I will talk about the how and when in a later chapter.

KILLLING

Please understand these super soldiers who will bring in the black awakening are expendable; to satan and his elite that is. They, like the Judas project will be left to hang themselves and die in dark vanity. What they don’t know, however, is the great revolt, rise of antichrist and the attempt to destroy Christ again will utterly fail. The agenda they gave their all to will go down in flames (literally). The ‘new’ world order will collapse with destruction and at the visible descent of the living Christ in Revelation 19. *Chosen ones* and the luciferian elite should memorize Revelation 19:20. Without redemption this is your destiny and the sad fact you don’t know is that satan and the demons do know this!

All *chosen ones* have suicide programming. They have within them a sub personality (or two - backup) who is programmed and energized to spring

into action. The suicide programmed sub personality will kill the body without a flinch. The lies, programming and dark spirits will insure it. When triggered they will blow themselves away!

Knowing the climate today with the homicide-suicide bombers who unlike programmed *chosen ones* kill others and themselves this kind of atrocity does occur. All of it is based on the dark deceitful lies of the fallen cherub and the cold careless discarding of those who serve the satanic agenda. Do you think for a moment satan wept when he left Judas, who when straight out and hung himself? Do you think the demons gathered around as Judas fell from the rope onto the rocks where his intestines spilled out? Or did they all cheer with glee as if they won a victory over the deceived? There is a cold place it is called AKELDAMA (see Acts chapter 1) the 'field of blood' where Judas met his historic end.

The suicide programming can be triggered in *chosen ones*:

- In case a *chosen one* tries to tell secrets.
- In case a victim seeks to leave the coven and the agenda.
- In case they in any way compromise themselves, the coven or their task.
- If anyone captures them during the black awakening.
- As a demonstration of the control of the coven/handlers over *chosen ones* in order to ensure compliance among others.

The ultimate suicide programming will be triggered when the antichrist and his elite release the code to stop the chaos and anarchy. They are planning to look like the good guys and save the day. Those who have started this fire storm will set themselves up to look like heroic firemen. The world will be in awe as they swallow this spiritually poisoned candy, the outcome is sure and it's all a massive betrayal!

FINALLY

As many of you think through this chapter you may have to pray and consider its information. As I will say again and again read other books and research that is related. I have been in this field long enough and have seen

this technology of hell in action, many times. If you are a perpetrator or victim you know so well that all that I write is so totally real. Some of you could probably add volumes to this but time, space and your freedom are limited…for now.

CHAPTER 18
SUB PERSONLITIES, ALTERS AND
PARTS, O MY!

"It has been two weeks since one of the alters had unleashed his rage upon me at that family…"p 223 'THE MAGIC CASTLE'

"The bullet was Switch. He started cutting my right arm again."P 256 'FIRST PERSON PLURAL'

"The confusion in a multiple's life stems not from the number of alters but from the role or function the individual alters play"p 86 'MORE THAN ONE'

"Satanic alters often present themselves during the treatment of patients reporting ritual abuse"….. "The role or function of satanic alters is to align with the perpetrators" p 271 'OUT OF THE DARKNESS'

I have no doubt that sub personalities will be reading this book. Some are victims seeking freedom and victory…so keep going. Some are programmed for reconnaissance and will report this information to their superiors. I know military men and women, psychologists and those who help the victims are reading too. Welcome to a divine appointment! I hope you don't miss the interaction that could come to those of you who need heavens breath. For those of you who are in the Son, I am sure you will be moved and I pray that you go in the right direction.

I have written when mad, in prayer, while crying and mostly under the urgency of the hand of God. The Spirit of God has led me to write and rewrite and as I come to this chapter I am remembering sub personalities I have listened to and befriended from over 20 years ago. I remember when they just watched me long before they would come up and talk. Others who 'scanned' me were glad to know I was ok and began telling me the 'welcome to my nightmare' stories.

I have spent thousands of hours over 20 years talking to sub personalities of many 'types'. Long hours in the middle of the night, by a lake or in Borders book store. Yes in the office too but also in the car and out in the middle of a ritual site we have driven to. Some have talked to me at the police department and others in their homes. Some have been very quite others so loud they caused a major scene.

There have been those who have talked on the phone and now many email me…frequently. I may get one email from a victim and then four or five other sub personalities will get an email address of their own and email me. It is so consuming at times. The hard part is when sub personalities tell me not to let the main person know they are writing.

I have been attacked by some and spit at by others. Some sought to set us up as we hunted down perpetrators and others took our information and told their covens. Some of you have unleashed satanic warfare….dark spirits against me; others have challenged and tested the Power and Presence within me. One thing is for sure; you all know that no matter what I have been able to do I did love and care about each and every one of you. I have sought only to help. I know that your life has been stolen and used like an experimental animal by those who made you. One of you said it's like monkeys in a cage. They make us, bring us up and use us then put us back down in our area 'cage' and leave us.

As you read this chapter please know that I have only so much space to write. This book is three times the size I thought it would be. I have sought to give you an account of this crime and victimization but I struggle with wanting to give more and more. This next section for some may seem in-depth; to others it is only scratching the surface of how many and what kind

of sub personalities (alters) there are. Let me start again with a real live occurrence.

ATTACKED BY A SUB PERSONAITY

It happened in a small city in Pennsylvania; I was with a police officer and a fellow worker. The victim had asked for help and did talk to me on the phone before I was taken to her home. On the phone she expressed that she was diagnosed with SRA/MPD and had a psychologist in a neighboring town. She told me she was declared whole and the counselor said she could get her abused children back from child protective services. She admitted that inside sub personalities did abuse the children.

She just wanted to make sure she was whole and that no harm would come to her children. I told her on the phone 'well let's see' and I just simply asked, "Is there anyone else listening'?". She then said "O, NO!" I asked what happened and that's when she told me….they (sub personalities) laughed. I made plans to meet her on that day at the office and she invited us to her home. My friend asked if he could video tape the session and she agreed.

This victim was very large physically and asked me to look over her list. A list she made with the psychologist that gave the names, ages and jobs of dozens of inside sub personalities. I began to look over the 'map' of her inside system of persons. I found one and said his name and asked if he would come and talk to me. He was an 18 year old male alter who was in a 38 year old female body. He came out laughing and telling me that they pulled one over on everyone. I asked him what his job was, he then told me as if he was describing something good. His job was to watch over the coven kids 4-10 years old and to make sure they learn their jobs, if not he was allowed to electro-shock them with a cattle prod.

There was that sick feeling again within me, I knew what he was about to tell me and I could sense demonic presence. He said he had to train the kids in how to perform sex acts on the adults. He seemed to love training them and didn't mind shocking them too.

I was looking at the chart of names of alters and asked if I could talk to 'dark prince' (not his real name). He said, "Oh, no sir, he wouldn't want to talk to you". I said, "No I want to talk to him". He said, "No you don't!" I called on dark prince to come up and instantly the switch occurred and dark prince was there. He was hot mad and asked who the heck I was that I would even dare talk to him. Then with the women's hand stood and struck me on the face and before I could even turn my face back he struck me on the other side. My buddies just sat there stunned or just enjoying the slaps to my face. When a third attempt was made I did have to get up and stop it.

Dark prince was mad and talked for a while. The 18 year old came back up and he with others wanted to take us up to some of their ritual sights. As we went he told us a lot about the coven, the rituals and the abuse of kids. He then told me in detail how they hunt. That is, look for other victims to abduct and bring back to the coven for abuse and use. The hunter told me that they would take existing coven kids in a van to a play area and have them focus on a kid playing by him/herself. They were to befriend the child and invite them back to the van for ice cream. Then with all that coldness and dead stare said ….. 'Then we would just take them'. I then asked, "What do they do with the child?" The hunter just looked at me with a stare that said, "Surely you know". Then the hunter said, "The abducted child will never be found".

In this one woman existed over a hundred sub personalities. On the paper list each one had an age and job. The job is what they are programmed, demonize and trained for. This person and her alters have been active and used for years! The calculation of abuse to others is off the chart!

Not all of the sub personalities (alters) are friendly. In the beginning when a victim is seeking help it's the little ones who will come up and talk first. In a *chosen one* the little ones or insignificant ones (to them) are allowed to talk…so the deeper down coven loyal alters can observe, take information and or send out spiritual warfare on the inquirer. You will have to be on your physical and spiritual toes if you are going to work with SRA/*chosen ones*. Be alert!

TYPES, NAMES AND PROGRAMMED ALTERS

There are a few hundred stories I could tell you but again time and space does not permit. I will simply list some of the sub personalities by type or what their programmed job is. I have listened to, worked with and interacted with these types of alters in many different multiples. Talking to many multiples whose physical body is from different states and are different ages for thousands of hours will reveal a few things. Here is a list of some you will find in an SRA multiple and *chosen one*. And by the way many victims will have someone inside who knows who and what the others are and do; they can make you a map (list) if you get to know them. Discernment and alertness is needed all the way through.

HOME AND COVEN CREATED

Let me point out again that many an SRA multiple will have both home created alters and coven created alters. The first are alters that the person themselves split off just to survive. These home created ones are usually young and don't want the evil stuff that the coven offers. They are not totally controlled by the coven. The others, those who have been purposely and forcefully created are the ones that will have programming, jobs and in some cases demonic presence. It is the ones created by the coven that will have the secrets, abilities and can do great harm. Here is a partial list.

CHILDREN

Alters who are children. If home created usually don't want to do the evil stuff of the coven and are the ones who may be seeking help. There are children who are created by the coven and may be programmed and demonized to the point they seem much older. They may want to fight or do harm but when freed and helped will be just a kid who wants out. Children sometimes come out so the deeper coven loyal alters can watch you and plot.

SEXUAL SLAVES

Simply sub personalities who are trained in sexual abilities and are very versed in sexual practices. They may or may not have demonic presence. They may even offer you sex because that's what they're supposed to do or because they are seeking to compromise you. If they are demonized they can

even transfer demonic presence to those who fall to their temptation. Sexual alters can be used to make money or be involved in sex rituals.

Many of these alters can tell you about sex with the demonic and other deep atrocities. They have been sexually abused and without help will be sexual perpetrators. It is these alter personalities in a parent of other physical children who will rape and sexually abuse the kids. These are the sexually addicted alters who can come out anywhere and abuse. They are the ones who look for opportunities by joining a Church nursery ministry or working in a day care center.

SATANIC PRIESTESS

An inside satanic priest or priestess will be very arrogant when they first talk with you. They most likely will not talk in the beginning because they may be doing rituals against you. They know how to cut, torture and kill with precision. They know how to set up a ritual site and draw the symbols. They can even speak in old languages that are used for rituals only. They understand the danger, punishment and give punishment. They know the tools of the ritual well and may even know where the robes and ritual items are. Many times they have charged rings or objects and are themselves charged with demonic powers.

NURSE/MEDICAL

Many multiples have someone inside who is either a nurse or like one. This one is someone who can fix things and charged with taking care of the body. They may have to take care of those who are punished and those who are hurt during training or an assignment. They may even work in the field of nursing, hospital or a care facility. They can give shots, stitch a wound and give medicines. They also can give injections that some *chosen ones* have to get to maintain implants.

RELIGIOUS PERSON

There are those on the inside who may be very religious. Going to church is a major thing for a coven member to keep them covered. Appearances

mean a lot right now. They may even volunteer in a church or a religious institution and seem to fit right in. Mostly this alter is programmed to be a public cover.

COUNTERFIET CHRISTIAN

There are some *chosen ones* who have alters who are programmed and trained to seem just like a Christian and be involved in a church. This one though would have an assignment to be part of the infiltration of a church. Even if this sub personality doesn't know the real reason why they are placed in a church other trained personalities know they are there for sabotage and harm. I do believe some have a major agenda to cause corruption and compromise. They will use some alters to do spiritual warfare against a church and its leaders and other alters to seek compromise and failure.

We must also watch very closely now as they seek to place *chosen ones* as major public speakers and miracle workers. Remember counterfeit miracles, signs and wonders will be performed to try and deceive many. See Matthew 24 and 2 Thessalonians 2 for insight.

In highly trained and empowered (by demonic spirits) *chosen ones*, the front personality can act like a Christian while sub personalities can help unleash counterfeit powers to deceive and harm. See more on all of this in section 4 of this book. Also see the section on the infiltration of the Church to see some of the methodology they use.

RUNNERS

There are programmed and very fast runner alters inside most everyone I have worked with. I have seen the 'runner' sub personality triggered, push away those around and take off running. I have watched as the switch occurs at a certain hour or if a certain question is asked. Triggers for the runner can be internal, set for a time (11pm) of night, day or month and at ritual date time. They may even have a phone call come in that gives a tone or code.

When the runner comes up they jump up and bolt for the door, all they know is they must go! If you try to stop them they will fight you. They are

fast, strong and determined. I have seen them throw off workers twice their size and I have never seen anyone catch them, at least not right away. Be careful when a runner takes off. They may have handlers waiting to meet or pick them up and it may be a set up to get you out and down an alley where others are waiting. Then you may have to face down more than the runner.

Many runners only know they must get the body to a phone booth to call a coven member or find the 'safe' house until they are picked up. Some runners will fight hard to leave because if they don't get the body back to the coven and on time they will get punished. If you hold a victim on a ritual night and keep the runner from taking the body be aware, the coven may come looking for them.

INFORMERS

I have never met an SRA/MPD who did not have an informer. What does this sub personality do? Yes, you guessed it, they inform. They tell the coven member or handlers all about you. They are expert on gathering information on you. You can be sure they have a 'file' on you. You will be assessed and evaluated as to your abilities and potential threat. The informer will listen to every conversation, pick up on all that is going on and ask a lot of questions. They will also steal items from your home or office. Pictures of you may go missing; they will need all of that for the rituals performed against you.

I asked a *chosen one* informer alter once if they (the coven-group) had a file on me. The answer was yes. I then asked them what was listed as my vulnerabilities. Those things the coven could come against me with to stop me from helping victims. This highly trained military chosen one said, "Your family!". They would just threaten to harm my family!

Some informers must call in every night to a handler and report all the activities of the day. They inform on the up front person, others sub personalities, other coven members and anyone who seems to be helping the multiple victims. They may tape record you, memorize your address and phone numbers and learn more about you than you know about the victim you're helping.

ENFORCER/PUNISHER

This one is very hard to deal with. They only know that they are the one who has to keep the multiple in line. They will strike the body, punch it and even cut it to make the person comply with their task and the coven. Enforcers may use their force on other inside alters or on other coven members. They may be assigned to go after others and 'punish' them. Enforcers know very well if they don't punish and keep the *chosen one* in line that they will get punished instead. It is a vicious cycle. We have caught enforcers as they have come after multiples. They may even come after you or at least take pictures of you and your home.

LANGUAGES

All *chosen ones* have those on the inside who can speak different languages. I have watched as they write and listened as they speak. I have heard Spanish, Latin, Russian, Arabic languages and every *chosen one* has someone who speaks German. Two military trained *chosen ones* each had up to 5 other language abilities.

Languages can be used to converse with others from foreign countries, or used to send messages that other alters cannot know about. Some languages are used in rituals, others like German may be used because of the training and the earlier mind control leaders who came from the Nazi regime.

PSI WARRIOR

Since many *chosen ones* will tell you about being on military bases and what projects they were in, listen well. *Chosen ones* will have PSI powers, abilities like telekinesis, clairvoyance, and demonstrate what some would call psychic powers/abilities. They will have sub personalities who will seek to read your mind, project thoughts to you and feel you coming before you show up.

Some will claim they were trained with the 'First Earth Battalion" …kind of a New Age training for soldiers. Other alters will say they can remote view. You can check out the information in the book 'THE MEN WHO

STARE AT GOATS' where Jon Ronson the author reveals the PSI warfare projects at Fort Bragg. There, soldiers were training to project their 'mind' or psychic power to explode the heart of a goat.

SPIES

Dale Griffis in the book 'SECRET WEAPONS' will give documentation and unveils the life of a *chosen one* who was trained in covert spying. Back in 1947 G.H. Estabrooks reveals the US military's use of created sub personalities who can spy on enemy governments. If you find a sub personality who was trained to spy they are very good at collecting information. This spying can be use anywhere and on any group. The spy within is trained not to talk to you and will have a lot of secrets.

DISINFORMATION

There are sub personalities who are programmed to give outsiders only disinformation. They are there to lead helpers, the police, counselors and other outsiders who ask too many questions in the wrong direction with wrong information. If they can give you information that will lead you to spend all your time going in the wrong direction they have done their job.

They also will give you 'special' information and name individuals for you to go after wrongly. They never seem to give information that nails down a perpetrator, exposes the coven or implicates their leaders. They just want you off track and looking like a fool. You will need to seek to verify your information and have some evidence. If you feel you're being mislead, stop and ask yourself, "What are they trying to lead me away from?" Getting close to the real information may be the trigger for them to be triggered and kick in.

KNOWLEDGE

All victims and especially the sub personalities will have knowledge. The information may be on how they were programmed, what the rituals are like, who some of the coven members are and what their ultimate goal is. They will have knowledge of doctors, police and other community leaders who

may be involved.

SECRETS

Secrets are to be guarded with their life. Secrets include meeting places of the coven, names and locations. They will also have secrets about murder, disposal of bodies and the abuse of children. I have a rule that when a *chosen one/multiple victim* is really seeking help and wants to get out and be free they tell you the facts of the crime. They will turn on the coven and its leaders and evil if they are really getting out. If they are faking or using you they will keep you running in circles and will seem like they are never really healing. When there is no progress in their healing and gaining freedom you will have to see if…they really want to. *EX-chosen ones* can be a real danger to the coven and military covert projects. They can be a real help on revealing the methods and activities of the coven/handlers.

GUARDIAN

These alters will seek to guard secrets and keep other sub personalities from coming out or talking. They will watch the inner system of personalities and limit their activities. They will watch you and fight against your access to sub personalities and the information. They guard the secrets and will inform the coven/handlers if there are breaches.

PROTECTOR

A protector personality will do just that, protect. They don't want anyone to get punished including themselves. They protect by keeping you from getting any information. Every protector I have met is tired and feels like all they do is run around on the inside and keep the little ones from being accessed, coming out or talking. They keep things quite so no one will get hurt.

TRAINER

Trainer personalities are older. They have years of experience and have done the jobs they train others to do. They train others on how to split,

program, conjure demons, perform sex, infiltrate and a host of other activities. They are strict perfectionists and have no patience.

WATCHER

Watchers are those sub personalities who will be assigned to 'watch' other *multiples/chosen ones*. They will even go to hospitals, churches and counseling centers to be close to a *chosen one* who is seeking to get out. They watch to see where *chosen ones* are and where those who help them are. They may take pictures and follow the victim and those who help. They are sent by the coven/handlers and will keep tabs on those whom the coven/leaders want dead when the black awakening occurs.

HUNTERS

These sub personalities are dangerous and seem to like what they do. There is an adrenalin rush for those hunters who are stalking potential abductees. They have skills at being a predator and masking their intentions while interacting with the very targets they seek to kidnap. They know that the victim they take will be used, abused and dead soon. Hunters are cold; crying does not move them and they are calloused to the pain and fear of children. Their job is to get victims for the satanic rituals. Many serial rapist/murderers are multiples and it was the 'hunter' in them that made them so unassuming to the soon to be victim. Hunters may get the prey but usually its other sub personalities who will do the horrific abuse.

FIGHTER

I watched as a fighter came up in a *chosen one* and went toe to toe with men twice their size. They can box, do martial arts and know how to attack. One worker got a clean round house kick by a fighter alter who was inside an unassuming petite little blond. They know holds and seem to be programmed to fight anyone regardless of size. One fighter came up in a male body about 160 lbs. and was willing to fight all three of us 220 lb men. They are scrapers who will fight you to get away or scare you enough to get you to go away. Military *chosen ones* are killing machines with their abilities.

ASSASSIN

The first assassin I met occurred when a team of us was lead by a *chosen one* to a dark and exclusive place and after asking me to pull the vehicle over, pulled out their nine millimeter hand gun. He was a male sub personality in a female body. I was taken by surprise and that is part of their specialty. The bullet was in the chamber when they handed me their gun to take a look. Sub personalities who are assassins were being formed programmed and trained back as far as the late 1940's.

They know how to use weapons, poisons, techniques and even spiritual abilities to seek to take out their assigned target. Most will be trained in weapons, have them or know where a cache of weapons are. They know about explosives and seem ready for the coming black awakening. I believe at this point most assassins are sleepers inside who will be triggered at the black awakening. They will have their targets to go after and when they're done the suicide programming is planned to kick in.

DENIAL

These programmed parts are trouble for counselors and professionals who are seeking to nail perpetrators. The upfront victim may have told you and shown you some major evidence of crimes. You may have talked to many sub personalities and know without a doubt that you are working with an SRA/MPD victim. But they have a sub personality who is programmed to 'deny' they have ever been abused and will insist their family is the best in the world. This one will deny there has ever been abuse and seems to keep other sub personalities from coming up. Denial personalities seem to have no memory of abuse or other personalities. They have a hard time remembering anything.

PARENT

There are those who have the parent sub personality inside whose job it is to take care of any children the body has. The parent may feel for the children but it may have been another personality who claims them. Remember, if *chosen ones* have children, that child's conception, birth and raising will

have been planned by the coven. That's how it was for the original *chosen one*! It may be that a sub personality who is more 'charged' with dark powers was up for the sexual act and seeks conception. This personality is only a surrogate. The feeding and care of the child may be given to a programmed parent alter.

DEMON

This is a wild one and I had to deal with three cases where these sub alters who are trained to act like a demon came up. They can growl, talk gruff and want to seem scary. They seek to divert Christians from where the real demons are and come to wear out the undiscerning. They will growl, fall to the floor, writhe around and they can do this for hours or even days. They love to wear people out or scare them away. Sub personalities who are programmed to act this way cannot do what demons really do nor will they be affected by the authority of Christ. The authority of Jesus Christ given to all believers (Luke 10) is only effectual on real demons.

You will need the discernment of the Spirit of God and must realize that the proof is in the pudding. If it is a real demon it will respond to the authority of Christ, should and can be cast out. Sub personalities on the inside usually know what a personality is and what a demon is. There is a difference and deliverance workers must know this difference if they are going to work affectively.

Rule: if a demon seeks to act like a person and wants to deceive you they will still be struck by the authority of Christ as commands are given and it will be exposed. If a sub personality is acting like a demon, Christ's authority used to cast it out will not affect it nor are they able to do what real demons do. If it is a sub personality acting like a demon tell them you know they're faking and don't play their game or ask them to do what demons can do and they will be confounded and cannot do it.

ANIMAL

Yes, they even program some sub personalities to believe they are animals. Is this just to see what they can do? Sometimes I think so. The

animal part may be there to use in bizarre ritual and sex acts. Parts like this may be used to make it seem like they are crazy and it may be that this animal alter is demonized.

WHATEVER IS NEEDED

New raw personality can be bonded, programmed and trained to be just about anything. The fact is, programming is like a script and that script can be anything the programming calls for. Just like an actor can act and perform like just about anything so a new personality can be conditioned and programmed to be whatever the perpetrators want. The goal in counseling and healing is to unravel this and lead them out of this imposed maze.

As you can see this can be very intense and just plain weird. Never forget that the normal development of a human life was taken, stolen and preyed upon. It is a high crime and will be paid for now or later. Helping the victim and the sub personalities understand all that happened to them is a process. The demons need to be dealt with one way but alter personalities need to be treated with the love of God. They are the most abused persons on the plant. They need to be guided out of their world of lies and imposed agendas to a freedom and identity that only God can give.

In the words of James G. Friesen author of the ground breaking book 'UNCOVERING THE MYSTERY OF MPD' p 105:

"Nobody wants to be a 'case study'. It is insulting to treat a human being like a science fair exhibit"

FINALLY

So, dear helpers, treat them with the love that was shown at the cross. It is the highest and most sacrificial love and has the power to change and heal like nothing else. It is this love that will go deeper than the programming and speak of a life far beyond what the demons and perpetrators could ever demonstrate. Besides, they don't have it to give anyway!

CHAPTER 19
WHO MADE THEM?

"Part of my preparation to go public was to decide whether or not I would name some of the men who had owned me and /or had used me to perform crimes for them." P 339 'UNSHACKLED: A Survivor's Story of Mind Control"

"Like Dr. Delgado, the neurosurgeon concluded that ESB could control memory, impulses, feelings, and could evoke hallucinations as well as fear and pleasure. It could literally manipulate the human will-at will."
"The possibilities, said Dr. Gottlieb……"but humans could finally be programmed to attack and kill on command" p 276 'JOURNEY INTO MADNESS'

"I was determined to discover and piece together a picture of the kind of physician who could become involved with the CIA and who would use his patients in experimentation." P 89 'PSYCHIATRY AND THE CIA: Victims of Mind Control'

"None of the German scientists expressed remorse"… "None of the German mind-control research was ever made public"… "The CIA's interest in controlling the human mind had to remain absolutely secret"
p 11-12 'THE SEARH FOR THE MANCHURIAN CADIDATE'

"The prospect of an army of remote-controlled robots is chilling to some, but not to all"p46 'MIND WARS' Brain Research and National Defense-DARPA

"Some in fact already turned away to follow satan" 1Timothy 5:15

In whose lab did they do the crime after the drugs were given? Where did they hook up the soldier with wires and machines seeking to make another person, a sub person, a warrior who will do all it is commanded to do? Where did hundreds of thousands of victims of SRA/MPD come from? By the age of most victims today it had to have started in the early 1950's.

The Russians, UK and the US all wanted the high secrets of the Nazi scientists but they didn't know how to handle the toxic demonic doctrine! They wanted the scientists too and they got them but they didn't catch everything that came with the designers of the god-men of a master race did they? Those soaked in the black flame carried with them, an undetectable presence. The spirits who guided the warlords and scientists of the Nazi's slid right across and on to the eager beavers who dumped their own ethics down the drain. It seems that you have to reject God and those God given ethics in order to get the favors of the shadows.

"…some will abandon the faith and follow deceiving spirits and t*hings taught by demons*. Such teachings come through hypocritical liars. Whose consciences have been seared as with a hot iron."

The Spirit of God 1 Timothy 4

Those who learned the basics of mind control and voice to skull technology never knew who blew these concepts into their tired minds and late night dreams. The master of covert influence was there with his minions as Hitler despised the cross and began his ascendency. You might have the brightest minds in the world working for the governments but they are no match for "….the god of this age who has blinded (pulled the wool over) the minds…" 2 Corinthians 4. The masters of mind control have a master and this master is so good they don't even know what he has done or what science he has used. Hell has risen a thousand more feet with the deployment of its technology in the hands of its unwittings.

I do believe you have to go back to the 'hall of the dead' in Germany to get the full picture of mind control and the creation of *chosen ones*. You may feel in this chapter I will just restate what other good books have done with the

information on projects like Monarch, Phoenix and MK-Ultra.

This stuff of creating super warriors is far beyond the 1950s. All of that information is old. This stuff is far beyond the doctors and intelligence communities, though they have been the 'hypocritical liars' through whom some of this has come. Ideas have origins and the ideas of a master race and controlled humans that will do another's will didn't begin with Hitler/Himmler, the Russians or Sidney Gottlieb of the CIA. The ideas came from the dark side and like the 'arrows' of Ephesians chapter 6 (*those involuntary but real ideas that run counter to God and support the devils will*) that are shot at their targets so the arrows or ideas of mind control were shot at their targets too.

Those arrows are the ideas, pictures and concepts that are coated with 'brilliant' 'scientific' and 'revolutionary' feelings and enticements but unknown to the receivers and as with 'arrows', there is always a distant sender. There is no arrow shot, no arrow that strikes a target without an expert sender and the devil my reader friend is an expert sender! If anyone knows the technology of mind control or voice to skull influence the fallen cherub does. And not believing that gives him a wide uninhibited window to shoot all the more arrows through.

The arrows of spiritual and physical mind control science are:

"...those involuntary but real ideas, pictures and concepts that run counter to God and support the devil's will"

ROGUE CHOSEN ONES

I know two men though one is dead; they were the subjects of this demonic science. Both were raised with old Nazis guiding their every step, both had been split, bonded and had sub personalities created with given agendas.

The first man was vile to the end. We learned of him through the cries of victims. After our encounter with eight victims who had been taken by this man, split, programmed and used for his own sexual appetite we sought aggressively to find him. We sent a team into a meeting where he was playing

the piano and singing Amazing Grace, after which he got up to preach.

Later that night he was out seeking to contact his sex slaves or at least a sub personality he could call up. One of his victims we got back from him was split and had parts in him that were made to have sex with this perpetrator. The young man also had sub personalities who would commit suicide if triggered by this man. We had to stop this twice.

After another victim of this man and hearing about the ritual sexual abuse of a twelve year old at his hands we prayed hard for God to do whatever it took to stop this man. There was so much torture and pain he had caused and he seemed to be on a rampage. I sought to find him and talk to him; he would have nothing to do with our offers of help and counseling. He too could have gotten out. He was a *chosen one* yes but it sure seemed like he used it for his own gain.

I got a call and was told that this *chosen one* was dead. Someone else brought me the obituary and notice of burial. One victim went to the showing to see if he was dead for sure or if it was a cover up. In the weeks that followed all the victims told me that he is dead for sure and that they have had no more contact by him. I asked a couple who lived in his area and had been victims of his to share. They told me how he died and when.

His death was ten days after we prayed that God would stop him no matter what it would take. I believe with all my heart that God did step in and spared the victims any more of his horrific abuse. A few months went by and a friend who is very experienced in helping victims brought me a distant family member of this man who was now dead. The boy and many others were now on their list of young people who were ritually abused by this man. I asked the counselor how many victims of this one man is out there. I have never forgotten this; she said that her estimation was two hundred!

This rogue *chosen one* was a danger to everyone he met. He had military training and was very versed in PSI power and very deep ritual powers. He also had old Nazis who helped raise him, or at lease was part of the coven. This *chosen one* was an extension of the old dream of a master race. If this is

the master race then no one is safe!

The other man was brought to our church by members who were doing outreach. They were counseling him and taking him through some deliverance prayers. I told them to look at his eyes because he had the eyes of a multiple. I told them to keep a discerning eye on him and that I would also. It is this man who became missing for a few days.

His wife got threatening calls and the police were called in. The caller sounded German and declared that the missing man had sinned against the master satan and had to be punished. I was called in by the police because the German speaking caller asked for me. While at the house another call came in, it was the German. We argued and he finally hung up. The police had tapped the phone line and recorded it all.

Finally, to everyone's surprise the missing man came home within about forty-five minutes of the phone call. This is the one who attacked me and ended up in leg chains and hand cuffed on the ground. It was this man who rose up and the sub personality with a demonized scream and German accent barreled, 'We are the legions who will rule the earth'!

He too had military background. He too seemed innocent on the outside… but it was the stuff within that would abduct and slaughter two teenage girls in satanic rituals. One was fourteen and out of state; she was used, abused and ritually murdered on the date of demon revels. The other was seventeen and murdered in the same horrific way, her death was on satanic revels. The Nazi sub personality ritually murdered these two girls as a purification and re-demonization process.

The police had taken this man to the hospital for a psych evaluation; which by the way accomplished nothing so they let him go. While I was at the hospital waiting a *chosen one* police officer I was working with showed up in full uniform. This officer was from the same area that this man and the other one I just wrote about was from. When the officer saw this man she literally ran out of the hospital. The officer came back in a few minutes and a sub personality handed me a note. On it was where this man lived, the name of an old Nazi satanist who raised him and then gave me details about this

man and his early programming.

The sub personalities in this officer then took me to the site where the girls were left naked, cut up, abused and dead. A personality very versed in coven rituals told me how and why the girls were murdered. A few days later the man who had killed these girls started calling me and asking to find out if the police were saying anything. He then told me what instrument was used in the ritual. The girls were stabbed slowly over and over again with a tool only law enforcement knows about. This case is not over so I will wait to tell the rest. Why? Because the man is still out there! I know what the sub personality has done. We have looked each other eyeball to eyeball and in his eyes was pure demonically energized evil.

Both of these men were split, programmed and trained in this kind of satanic slaughter. One has been stopped the other has not. He will do this again…it is in him. Unless of course someone will pursue this and pray that it will not go unsolved. I know of a few folks who know all about this and they are praying for God to stop it…whatever it takes.

Who created these men and the officer? Whoever they are they have the same agenda, methodology and dream. They and those before them want a master race of super soldiers and if you back this up far enough you will land in hell's kitchen.

A SATANIC TECHNOLOGY

Some will not accept this yet but I am very sure many others will agree this technology all begins with dark supernatural powers, with the devil himself! Don't forget there is a passionate (fiery) agenda meshing itself out on the carpet of human history, a 'secret' power is at work. To miss this as the ultimate source will cause most to miss seeing it in the Nazis or in the rise of globalism that is occurring today. Looking at what has been done in the past, at what Jesus taught about the building of the 'tares' and the biblical revelation of a future historic 'super soldier army' it is clear. Satan has, is and will eventually have the world's most powerful military charged with the full force of hell itself.

"…and is itself set on fire by hell"

James 3

He and all the forces of hell are bent on creating 'controlled, loyal' super soldiers! If you believe the Bible and its prophecies then look at Revelation 19:19 again. It reveals the world's largest most powerful army ever. It will be the most supernaturally altered military in human history. The SS Nazis will look like choir boys compared to the troops of antichrist. At least that's what a highly trained military *chosen one* told me.

All of this, its inspiration, dreams, powers and abilities when traced backward always lands on hell's dark door step. In the end of days it is clear, it will be the biggest spiritual war fleshed out through the lives of billions of us. In the end your life will be open to God or to the devil… I just wonder, is there any reason why you are not on heaven's side of the fence yet?

Chosen ones today have their conception in hell's kitchen. The instruments of these dark powers though are people, politicians, scientists and military dreamers. They are the ones who have put the inspiration they received on paper and hammered it out in the lives of the victims…by the hundreds of thousands.

We can get 'freedom of information' documents as many have already done. We can name psychiatrists as others have done and we can point the finger at the CIA and other agencies but this is even bigger than them. They may open the doors to hell's doctrine and script but the agenda to create more and more *chosen ones* seems to have a life all its own. The fallen cherub lead a third of the angels away and guided the human race to join him. He does have massive but finite supernatural powers. Though unaided people cannot track and outwit him, God can and does all the time.

CUTTING THEIR TEETH ON THE NAZI'S

The rise of the Nazis came on the heels of Germany's defeat and humiliation. The nation was hurting and seeking answers. Who would they turn to? Once you reject God and have enough anger and depression, the door

can be swung wide open the other way. Predators can spot pain from far away and look for an opportunity in an individual's life. They also look for a foothold in the life of a nation too. In his data packed book 'THE RISE OF THE FOURTH REICH', Jim Marrs writes about the spiritual inspiration of new technologies. Marrs says in chapter 8 p 178 on mind control and the Nazis:

"It is surmised that it was perhaps through such occult practices that psychic contact was made with nonhuman intelligences, thus providing the Nazis with the concepts that led to their futuristic technology."

The Germans opened up to mediums, psychics and a host of occult practices. They engaged the 'nonhuman intelligences' and they lost their souls. Secret societies and new spiritual inspirations were burning everywhere. The empty lives of millions were looking for a 'savior' and eventually Hitler fit their bill…at least at first. The new city of occultism and its hall of the dead were being built by Himmler and the Jews were being burned by the thousands. It seemed that hell's relentless agenda was being cut on the teeth of loyal occult Nazis. The demonic dream imbedded in the Nazi regime was:

- Throw out God and Christendom.
- Open the door to the old gods and new powers.
- Build a master race of 'enhanced humans' and build massive military power.
- Conquer the world and reign for a thousand years
- PS…whoever gets in the way….annihilate them!

The Nazis, the scientists the psychologists and military leaders did not originate this process though. They have been used to continue it and broaden it. It was through them that what was once only national is now global. Hell's dream has gone worldwide and the same process that operated in the broken German nation is now embedded around the world.

THE NEW GENERATION

The existence of *chosen ones* has gone from hundreds to thousands and hundreds of thousands to now millions. Multiples by the thousands who are not healed have selected, prepared, split, bonded and are programming their (or a coven's) children. No multiple parent wants to know or think of this but the sub personalities who have the programming and demonic presence in them are doing what was done to them…creating *chosen ones*. And please understand each generation is evolving into even more powerful and able servants/soldiers of this supernatural agenda.

The process does not have to be done by world renowned psychiatrists or military leaders in covert halls, though they are still doing it too. This process that has reached into the millions is continued in basements, living rooms and far away farms. Older unhealed *chosen ones* have sub personalities who can do it all and they have taught the next generation to do the same.

What most don't know right now is….this next generation is now doing it to the next generation whose kids are in their early teens. I know of parents in their sixties who have children who are multiples in their late 40's. Those in their 40's have multiple children in their 20's and they have kids who are multiple. Did I say that this is a spiritual generational process? That is the demonic attached to the blood line and it continues with or without the Nazis or the CIA.

So whether in old occult centers and hidden birthing centers or in military labs the agenda for (tares), a master race continues. And according to Biblical prophecy will continue with fury (see Revelation 12) until the *'great day of God almighty"* (see Revelation 16 and 19).

FINAL PRODUCTS

Hell's finest products are yet to show up but they are on the way. The process that many counselors, pastors and helpers have uncovered is old but evolving. Many are looking back at the Nazis and the CIA and research things that occurred 50 years ago. All the while and under all of our noses new cutting edge techniques are being designed and new generations are

being built.

While psychologists and others are counseling multiples and talking to home created little ones the darker deeper down sub personalities are still working...creating new multiples that will be the next generation of *chosen ones*. The new ones will be better, stronger and less detectable. This is a monster of a thing and cannot be contained by human energy alone.

FINALLY

Though there are many human instruments along the way in this deep evil it is the force of hell itself that continues this *transmuting ever darkening agenda.* Mark the words of Revelation 19:19 and you will see that this will not stop until the pinnacle of humanity controlled by hell's lust aims its weapons into the heavens and seeks to crucify Christ all over again.

CHAPTER 20 INFILTRATION & PLACEMENT OF CHOSEN ONES

"…some false brothers had infiltrated our ranks to spy…" Galatians 2

"Yes, there are actual spies walking among us on a regular basis."

P xix 'SPIES AMONG US'

"I know that after I leave, savage wolves will come in among you and will not spare the flock." Acts 20

I have been tricked by them, I have learned the hard way many times in the beginning. They are highly trained for this and we knew nothing at the time. *Chosen ones* and all that is in them were a mystery to me in the early 80's. Listening to victims of SRA/MPD I did the Christian thing, love them and seek to help them but I didn't know I was also dealing with sub personalities who didn't want my help and *did not* want anything to do with Jesus. They were just accessing me and long before I knew it they didn't show up by chance. Our first meeting was set up and planned.

In the early church you can read in the book of Acts chapter five where a couple agreed (conspired) together to lie to the church. The word in the text for 'agreed' has the meaning to test the durability of someone and pull the wool over their eyes. It's not a strange word if you understand that satan himself, like with Judas, 'filled' (same word used for Christians being filled with the power of the Holy Spirit) their hearts. You will get the picture of

how the head of the total kingdom of darkness sought to covertly infiltrate the Church. The reason for this is clear… he is seeking someone to devour (1Peter5).

Study also the seven churches of the book of Revelation and see how many of them had counterfeit spiritual infiltration. When the dark side seeks to move in on a Church through its chosen servants it's all about compromising it, weakening it and moving it off mission. If they can 'dirty' the Church with corrupted doctrines inspired by imposter spirits they will in effect bury the local Church in the spiritual mud. (See I Timothy 4)

Jesus said He would build His Church (see Matthew 16).The Church is the epicenter and doorway through which the power, presence and mission of God comes. It has been planted however in enemy territory; satan is the god of this time period (2 Corinthians 4) and the ruler of the domain of the immediate atmosphere (Ephesians 2) around the earth, dark powers come and go from there.

The Church however is launched to cut through the dark spiritual 'gates' and reach the world for Christ. The Church is to pray for and seek the advance of the kingdom (rule and reign) of God… but this does not occur without opposition. If the Church is and does what Jesus made it to be it will advance and those gates of hell cannot prevail against her (withstand the onslaught of the advancing Body of Christ). Infiltration of the Church on any level is a Biblically revealed agenda of the demonic and a spiritual warfare strategy of satan himself. Our struggle (warfare) is not against flesh and blood Christian! (Ephesians 6).

It is any wonder this is the methodology used by the 'gates' of hell today as it was in the days of the birth of the Church? The Body of Christ is the irritation and bull's-eye of the full force of hell's kitchen. Who else will darkness fight?

WILL YOU BE MY FRIEND?

Always bringing me Arizona green tea (a favorite of mine) my new friend was also a victim of ritual abuse. There seemed to be a difference with this

one though. I began noticing that the emergencies and crisis we would be called to seemed staged. She always wanted to drive with me in my truck; she had to sit right behind me in church every Sunday and Wednesday. She wanted to buy me and other staff items and gifts. She volunteered to do cleaning in the church and got access. She sought to help with any projects as long as it got her close to leaders and the inner workers. I kept getting that agitated feeling over and over again, something was wrong. My wife was sure of what I came to see, this victim is a plant and is seeking to harm me and other staff.

Though she went through many prayer encounters she never seemed to get better, there was always another sub personality or another crisis with the coven (almost all of which was staged). Even her husband told us that she has a 'seduction' spirit and the pastor of her former church felt she was going after him. We warned all our workers and set up counter surveillance that proved over and over again that she was playing a very dangerous game.

After catching her in deceptive practices again and again I dismissed her, stopped working with her and warned others. Her husband in full military fatigues did bring her again to the offices. She came into my office and sat across from me with her coat over her arm. As I looked down to write some notes the next thing that occurred was an education in the potential of all sleeper multiples everywhere. Something brushed by my head forcefully and grazed my hair; the noise was a big bang or slam.

Instantly I looked up and there she was standing with darkened eyes that were glazed over, a military bayonet was stuck in my desk near my note pad and she had her hand on the handle. It was the bayonet that flashed by my head and she pulled it out of the desk and tried again. I called out loud for the secretary to call the police and at that moment her husband opened the office door and cried, "What's going on?"

She or a sub personality looked at him and growled. She then bolted after him with the bayonet held high, he slammed the office door to get out of the way but this didn't stop her/the sub personality from plunging the big knife all the way through the door and inches from his head. The police arrived and took her to a medical center for evaluation. No charges were made. I

pray for her and her husband but she is out there unchanged from when she was with us. There are thousands more like that women, some know what they are doing and for others only the sub personalities know the agenda.

One of those who knew it all was a woman from a large church in our area. As a matter of fact she was one of over a hundred who were brought to us from this well known church. Most were not multiples but she was clearly a *chosen one*. She came to our church because she was informed of the ministry I did. She like other *chosen ones* sat a few rows back but right behind me. We talked a few times and she told me about her one hundred acre farm in Pennsylvania. After one service she told me that she keeps seeing a very strange thing as she observes me from that row behind me. She said she sees me with a big hole in my back and that it was from a shot gun blast. I haven't seen her in years but remember her in my prayers.

While in Chicago at a major spiritual warfare conference team members and I listened as a well known pastor, author and counselor of multiples told the crowd of two churches he knew of that were infiltrated by *chosen ones* who didn't come for healing. In both cases the church was compromised and one had to close its doors.

I know of another church that was targeted and also had to close its doors. In one church on the east coast where I held a conference on spiritual warfare, ministry to multiples and the black awakening something very strange occurred. A new friend I came to know called me after I had left and said a man came to the church the very next Sunday and seemed to be saying or praying something during their open prayer and praise time. This friend said he kept hearing 'cursing on the church and the Lord Jesus' name being blasphemed. I told him to go sit a few rows behind this new man and during the open prayer time begin to target him and pray against any demonic spirits or any evil he may be doing. The church member did this and called me that Sunday evening. He said that when he began to pray against any demonic spirit the man instantly turned around and looked at him! He was caught. The man left and never came back.

There was another *chosen one* whom I had talked to for years. I came to know many sub personalities and when it looked like this military trained

warrior was coming out of the ancient brotherhood they told me of their work in the infiltration of many organizations. This included the Amish the KKK and law enforcement. They then told me and explained to me what many others have shown; infiltration of the Christian church (and other organizations) has been going on for over thirty years. This old friend whom I have never forgotten explained in detail the why and how of the coven's and *chosen one's* infiltration.

HERE IS SOME OF THE METHODOLOGY

THEY ARE SENT

By handlers or a coven who want to begin infiltration into a church or organization they feel may be trouble to them spiritually.

THEY WILL JOIN YOU

Chosen ones are trained to join a church and begin climbing the ladder of relationships and service. They may even volunteer or seek a job in the group. They want to be a part and will seek the inner workings of the church/group.

THEY WERE ASSIGNED

They may have an assignment from the handler/coven and are given a target; a pastor or known member that the coven has identified as trouble. The *chosen one* or sub personalities are assigned to bring destruction and failure.

THEY CAME BY CRISIS

The *chosen one* may have come to the church because they were in need or crisis. It may be that they came because they were referred. At first they may just seem to be a sad victim in need of sympathy and support. They will seek your compassion while at the same time research your vulnerabilities. Not all victims are there for real help. If they are there for a long time, consume many hours and never seem to break free, begin to ask yourself….what do

they (or their sub personalities) really want?

THEY DO AND DON'T KNOW

There are multiples highly trained in infiltration. They know what they are doing and are fully engaged in seeking to harm the Church. There are some victims whose upfront part does not know that the sub personalities are on an assignment to cause harm. Some victims are blocked by the stronger demonized sub personalities from knowing that they are being used as a cover for them and the coven in order to do harm.

THEY TEST THE POWER OF THE CHURCH

Some *chosen ones* and especially the sub personalities who are demonized and committed to the satanic cause will seek to see if they can effectively deceive you. They want to see how far they can get and what harm they can do before anyone finds out. By the time some churches and ministries realize that a *chosen one* is among them great harm has occurred.

A child in the nursery may have been violated, youth may have been led astray and or rituals may have been done in the church sanctuary. Church members may have experienced strange sicknesses and the Church may have fallen into 'plotted' divisions, gossip and factions. Satanic warfare, demon sent/ritual spells may have been released all over the church and gifts given by what seemed to be a grateful victim turn out to be demonized objects to unleash curses. Churches today will need great discernment; alertness and the armor of God…..just as we are supposed to have! See more on the Church's response in section 4.

THEY WILL BEFRIEND YOU

They will butter up to you and anyone else that will be a stepping stone to the church/organizational leaders. They will call you, give you gifts and tell you what a great help you are. They use flattery and emotional bonding as forms of manipulation to get what they're after. Their ability to get close to you is evidenced by 'association'. They will observe all your favorite things, places you go and enjoyments. They will then seem to have the 'same'

favorite things, places and enjoyments. They will like what you like and be interested in what you're interested in.…only to elicit your feelings of friendship and openness. They want to get into your head, feelings and home!

THEY WILL GIVE YOU ANYTHING

Chosen ones on assignment will give you time, sacrificial service and gifts. They want to help you and be near you all the time. They seem to be around all the time. The gifts may be sabotaged with demonic curses or just things that will seek your sense of obligation to them. They will bring food and things to eat, your favorites but they may have 'fluids' in them from ritual working.

THEY WANT DISTRACTION

They will seek to pull a church member off focus. They want to distract the pastors, counselors and prayer warriors. As they distract you and pull your attention in one direction other coven members may have come in and are doing things among other areas of the church. If you are feeling that a victim is distracting you or leaders ask the question, "What is it they don't want me to see?"

THEY WILL DO SPIRITUAL WARFARE

This is a major part of the work of the coven and coven loyal sub personalities. They have sub personalities who can summon demons, have them within and seek to release them in the services of the church. They may get access to the building (and they always want the keys) and come late at night to do satanic rituals. If they get access to the pastors' offices they will surely unleash curses and even place demonized objects. They will coordinate satanic warfare against the church/organization with the local coven and continue until the church becomes spiritually dead or they get found out. Do you know this kind of 'occult level warfare'?

THEY SEEK LEADERS

Please realize they know that compromising leaders will be a great victory for them and cause shock waves and grave harm within the Church. If a victim wants to know where the leaders live, what they do and what their schedule is…if they seem like they must have the leaders' attention and focus its most likely an assignment of infiltration.

THEY SEEK INFORMATION

Multiples who are infiltrating are always seeking information on the church and its inner workings. They want to know all about the leaders, their families and any issues going on. They want to come to meetings even if it is only for certain workers or leaders. When a victim multiple knows a lot about the financial and business affairs of the church and or its leaders they are infiltrators. If it seems like a victim has more knowledge on the inner workings of the church than most anyone else….red flag!

THEY SEND INFORMATION

They want information so they can send information. If a coven or satanic leader wants to know about the pastor, ministry of the church or its plans, they can assign a *chosen one t*o make contact and begin the infiltration. If the 'victim' is gaining major information you can be sure they are sharing it, calling it in or informing their handlers. They may even steal business documents, paper work and private information off the office computers and get it sent to outside coven workers so they can look for vulnerabilities or weaknesses.

THEY SEEK ACCESS

They want the building, the offices and access to information. They may even want to work in the nursery alone! They can sexually abuse a child when a switch occurs to a sub personality in seconds. If they volunteer to be the janitor they will want keys to things. It they get to use the office PC they can get everything.

One *chosen one* in a police department typed and used the PC like a total novice but when she switched the sub personality could use it like a world

class hacker. They even had special codes to sights no one else could get to.

It is very likely if they are infiltrating they will seek access and if gotten will seek to use the building late at night (midnight to 3am) for ritual activity. We have been called to a number of churches where this has taken place. Catholic churches are even worse because of the use of all the symbolic objects

THEY WILL WORK COVERTLY

The sub personalities will switch out when needed to do their work. You may never see it but even in worship services demonized alters will come up and curse the service. When others are saying praise the Lord they are too but they are referring to satan. They may seek to counter the prayers and even unleash counterfeit spiritual gifts.

THEY WILL SABOTAGE

If they can go around and gossip covertly and begin to put church members at odds with each other they will have begun their agenda. If you see them contacting a lot of members or going from pastor to pastor it may be that they are telling each of them things (untrue) about the others. They are sowing discord. Planting demonized objects and hidden satanic writing is part of the spiritual sabotage too.

THEY WILL GET HELP

If they are not harming or breaking through with their assignments they may have others show up. Have any new visitors shown up, strangers hanging around or any new counselees? They may go to the coven to beef up the rituals also.

THEY WILL LEAVE WHEN FOUND OUT

If they see they are not getting anywhere or are being found out they may just disappear. Many times when a real infiltrator is working a church or group and then leaves it’s because they have set in motion all the harm they

needed to.

THEY WILL SLEEP UNTIL THE BLACK AWAKENING

There are many *chosen ones* who have been placed in churches that are just quiet and come off and on. Their sub personalities know the sleeper assassin may be waiting for the ultimate call. When this trigger is given they are to find and kill leaders, cause mayhem and may bomb or burn the building. This is the ultimate goal of having hundreds of thousands of intact sleepers-chosen ones planted in the Body of Christ. I have found them in many churches. See section 4 for a call to countermeasures.

THEY ARE ALREADY AMONG YOU

Chosen ones are highly trained in infiltration. They are in many places. We have found them in churches, law enforcement, the military, in hospitals, day care centers and anywhere else the coven or handlers need them.

THE ARE PLACED IN THE MILITARY

Don't forget that many areas of society are chosen for this infiltration and plot to bring chaos and collapse. It was in dark covert military where a lot of this was bred and I believe that this project has formed a vast shadow military system. U.S. and other national militaries are the targets of the satanic agenda and prophetic revelation will give the reasons why. There is a vast secretive for now agenda to breed and evolve their military abilities which will be seized and used in the monster of all wars. (See Revelation 19:19)

The Russians, the UK, European nations and the USA have been grossly swindled and set up for sabotage. I think that only when the black awakening occurs will anyone know the depth of infiltration and the placement of highly capable super soldier/ chosen ones. They will have no problem switching and unleashing hell on bases, other soldiers and sabotaging military response. It is when the black awakening is over that defeated military systems will be pulled into a global unit or be annihilated. It is clear the spiritual critical mass to create a new world order army is and has been in

the works for over 50 years… just research the UN (United Nations).

PLACED IN LAW ENFORCEMENT

I have met *chosen ones* in law enforcement and now know why they are there. They can use the department covertly to send and receive privileged information. They can hide the statistics on satanic crime and be used to sow disinformation against occult crimes and the reports that multiples who seek freedom bring. The worst crime though is that there are sleepers in law enforcement who will sabotage and attack officers when they are deployed to help stop the anarchy caused by the chaos of the black awakening. I believe they will attack weapons stocks and take out key or targeted officers. The goal in this is to stop any major intervention when the chaos begins.

PLACED IN COUNSELING CENTERS

I have dealt with psychologists and counselors who believe that more SRA/MPD victims were sent to them only to keep tabs on other victims who really want out. The *chosen ones* infiltrating counseling centers will seek to trigger shut down or runner sub persons in the others to get them back. The infiltrating multiple will also gather information on the leader and counselors of an agency/center.

Lately, as in the past, I have received calls from multiples in well known hospital psych wards who report that other multiples are there only to keep tabs, send information to handlers or trigger victims who are seeking real help. Counseling centers must engage this issue if their SRA/MPD victims are going to obtain healing safely.

PLACED IN CHURCHES

This is one of the main places I have found *chosen ones*. Every *chosen one* I have worked with was either in a church or was attending one when I met them. Here the sub personalities can watch, target and wait until the activation for the black awakening. Please realize there are over 400,000 local churches in the USA. It they are seeking to take out pastors and scatter millions of believers then they need to have their ‘bombs of chaos’ in the

center of all of the churches.

FINALLY

Please understand that the goal of creating multiples/chosen ones has a massive agenda. The need now and until the time for the 'great revolt' is silence and secrecy. They are in a very sophisticated and supernaturally empowered mission. There are rules and procedures. We are talking about a satanic conspiracy and God has given preemptive insight. This whole thing is very big. It is about people, nations, political/military leaders and the end of days. (Psalm 2)

SPECIAL NOTE: AT THE CONFRENCE

This just in, as we were putting down the final chapters and getting ready to edit this book I was invited to speak at a conference called POLITICS, PROPHECY AND THE SUPERNATURAL' in Mansfield, Ohio. At the conference authors Lynn Marzulli and Gary Kah gave presentations and then I was to give mine on this subject THE BLACK AWAKENING. Everything went well and we even had attendees from 6 states. After arriving home on Monday I received an email that had an attached mp3 recording. It was a recording of the session on the black awakening and it was recorded and sent to me with a note. 'They' wanted me to know that a multiple infiltrated the conference and recorded my session. Another piece of information came in and it was about a lady who heard some weird chanting during the conference session. She said she felt an evil presence was released and she prayed against it.

My own workers who were among the crowd also spotted two people whom they thought were spying out the meeting. Prayers went up and the conference was a great success and Jesus Christ was honored. I wonder what other meetings they are taking note of?

From the book 'SECRET WEAPONS'

The authors Griffis and Schwarz placed this quote

‘ONE SPY IN THE RIGHT PLACE IS WORTH TWENTY THOUSAND MEN IN THE FIELD”

Napoleon

I guess the dark side knows this

CHAPTER 21
THEY ARE THE TROOPS OF ANTICHRIST

"The only possible way of determining whether or not a subject will commit a murder in hypnotism is literally to have him commit one."P 194 'HYONTISM G.H. ESTABROOKS

US Rocket scientist Jack "Parsons had come to believe that Christianity was the enemy of civilization, of humanity and that it had to be destroyed"p157 'SINISTER FORCES'

"I was exposed to torture/kill training when I was no older than eight"…. "…by the CIA to condition children in controlled alter-states, to become future assassins."P 60 'UNSHACKLED'

"We are the legions who will rule the earth" A satanic super solder who is out there …waiting

"We are the troops of antichrist and we will make Hitler's SS troops look like choir boys". That is what one military trained *chosen one* told me. She was very versed in weapons, poisons and killing methods. She was a fighter with many capable sub personalities inside of her. Her training was tough and painful and she had been through a lot. Her pro Nazi sub personalities spoke in German or in a German accent. They played old Nazi propaganda music and even had German cigarettes.

I don't think anyone knows or even has a clue regarding the massive efforts, planning and training that Nazi soldiers went through. This broken little country unleashed hell on earth, sparked a world war and led the

bloodshed by annihilating millions of people in the death camps. The dream was a 1,000 year rule and a master race of super soldier god men who could enforce the charged politics of the Nazi order.

Some called it the Black Flame; others call it a great evil and rightly so. If you believe the entire Bible then know that *it reveals a lot about the coming super army that the antichrist will need and build.* He will need massive troops before this world wide agenda gushes forth and during his reign. The Bible foretells of a time when the world will be united in a supernaturally guided globalism.

THE NAZIS NEEDED IT

There was no Nazi regime without the force to back it up. Even if you agree that it was dark spirits and satanic occultism that inspired the political ideology as I do, the Nazis had to have the soldiers for the conquest of Hitler and the dream. It would not have happened without a powerful, advanced and obedient military. If there were no military, who would have bombed England, invaded Poland or took over Czechoslovakia? Who would have rounded up the Jews and shipped them to the camps?

Never forget this....the dark spiritual forces that inspired the ideology and dreams of the Nazi movement were the same ones who gave the dream of a master race of super soldiers. The Nazi SS and the rise of that massive military flowed out of compliance to the 'non human intelligences' that Jim Marrs reveals in his book 'THE RISE OF THE FOURTH REICH'. Jim's book and others like it tell us that what has occurred in Germany with the rise of that demonic global conquest has been building again for some years and it will surely happen again…only fiercer and it will go global.

Yaron Svory in his book 'IN HITLER'S SHADOW' reveals the rise of skinheads and the neo Nazi development going on in Europe. He exposes what Richard Terrell believes about the same rise of a Nazi like new regime when he writes in his book 'RESURRECTING THE THIRD REICH' P 13:

"Ideas, sooner or later, have their consequences in the behavior of individuals and entire societies. What people believe in, and embrace as a

worldview, is vital."

Bob Rosio in an extremely insightful book he wrote 'HITLER AND THE NEW AGE' also believes that it was a 'new age' spiritualism that moved as a wave over the broken Germany. The spiritual forged the intellectual ideology and the bullets to back it. Bob proclaims on pages 38 and 39:

"The ancient evil that manifested itself through Nazi Germany will soon manifest itself again to shake the world"… "The program of the spirit that was behind Hitler has now expanded into a worldwide arena."…. "*We are now living at the end of the age*."

The prophecy teacher who wrote 'THE SIGN' (a must read) and the follow up novel 'THE FOURTH REICH' author Robert Van Kampen tells us in both books that he believes the antichrist may be the resurrection of Hitler himself. The mortal wound to the head and then….a counterfeit resurrection is possible. There are many chosen *ones* who believe this is true. Some *chosen ones* have discussed with me the possibility of 'cloning' Hitler in a mix of satanic ritual that fuses satan's presence in the human DNA thus making him 'HOMOSATANAS' satan in human flesh, a counterfeit incarnation. Whatever the human side of the antichrist is, be sure of this, it will allow the broadest manifestation of satan in the physical realm ever (in all of history), HOMOSATANAS will be unequaled and unprecedented

Those dark spirits from hell's kitchen, whom shot the arrows of a new ideology, (Nazi occult political and military ideology) demonstrated that ideas received and believed have affect and we can all look back now and see the *consequences!* The question now is can you smell the smoke? The three authors I just quoted do. Please remember the only way the antichrist can come to power is by the building of a super army that will enforce the conquest of a new world order. It is without question that the new ideology for a global military is burning.

It is also the contention of this book that intact chosen ones and their many trained, programmed and 'charged' sub personalities are clamoring to unleash the chaos that will bring in their new MAN and his global order.

They know what Hitler knew; they must be and have a massive army to accomplish what the dark masters have written on their wills. I contend that a major portion of that army is ready and waiting. Hundreds of thousands of super solder *chosen ones* are among us.

So please don't forget the premise of this book:

"It is also *the contention of this book that intact chosen ones and their many trained, programmed and 'charged' sub personalities are clamoring to unleash the chaos that will bring in their new MAN and his global order*." RD

So why are there so many SRA/MPD victims? Where did they come from? Who made them, programmed them and trained them? Why does the programming in them seek a chaos and new world order? Are they part of the troops of antichrist? According to many of them the answer is yes. Who and for what are these super soldiers needed?

THE BA WILL NEED THEM

We can read about the feelings of 'all hell is about to break loose.' It's a sense that's in the air and on the hearts of millions. Many around the world believe a massive chaos is coming. New age spirits predict it, the data on World Wide Web postulates it and many are preparing for the end of the age. What most don't know is that those who will bring the chaos and anarchy are the ones who are burning for a new world order.

Just as they *in unison with the 'spirit of antichrist'* have planned the black awakening, they have also planned for the new regime that will be ready to move in. They are bringing this explosive chaos *so that* they can bring in the new order. This chaos has one objective, collapse the present systems and force the need for help. The black awakening is not the final product it is the stepping stone for the antichrist to walk onto his self exalting runway, god of the world and total control. Luciferians have planned both sides of this dirty coin and the Spirit of God has given the world a clear heads up before it happens. The 'great revolt' (see 2Thessalonians 2) must have those who will do the 'revolting' and bring the civil and national clash

and collapse. The troops of antichrist must be in place and I proclaim… THEY ARE.

THE ENFORCEMENT OF AC WILL NEED THEM

The rise of a new order that pulls the whole world into its grip has to have influenced leaders and enforcers. After the chaos and anarchy occur someone has to be ready to enforce the call to unity and compliance to a new system and its super human leader. If a new leader rises they will as is true in all of history have to have a military force with them. You cannot conquer nations or the world without soldiers. *Chosen ones* tell me that they will be here to enforce the new order. I was even shown a totally black uniform, beret, and a patch was drawn that had a globe with two lightning bolts going through it. A sign of Lucifer's rein over the world? *Chosen ones* and those who join the new order will be the enforcers and I am told they will be more unrelenting than the old SS.

THE ENTHRONEMENT OF AC WILL HAVE THEM

To me he is the beast, the antichrist and the most supernaturally empowered (outside of Jesus Christ) person who will ever be on this planet. The world mesmerized by a massive forceful spiritual flood will see him as 'savior' and the greatest leader in the history of the world. The mask he wears is powerful and all that is around him will blanket him with authority and powers (the ancient dragon and the false prophet). I believe that his conception would have been like (counterfeit to) Christ's and that it has already occurred. Maybe Malachi Martin the Catholic priest is right; that the 'enthronement of the antichrist' ritual has already occurred (see his book Windswept House) and that the very dark powers in a linage of satanic bloodlines have produced the beast.

The antichrist lying in a manger draped in black with a DNA mix that will open hell's gates to the highways of all humanity… Wow, imagine that! The Spirit of God says it will happen with details that could warn the world but who will listen? Who has ears to hear what the Spirit of God is saying? This birth of antichrist and his coming arrival into the affairs of the world will

have the backing of…in the words of Dr. Stan Monteith's book title:

'BROTHERHOOD OF DARKNESS'.

The secret power mentioned in 2Thessalonians 2 is what is energizing this brotherhood of darkness. They will help with the arrival of the antichrist. But that arrival will not occur without the troops who will clear the way. *Chosen ones* believe they will help open the door to their 'man of the hour.' Again please don't forget:

"Just as there is no event or advancing of Gods work and kingdom without His Spirit and His Power there is no event or advancing of the 'sequence of satanic evolution' without the expressed manifesting powers of darkness!"
RD

THE COMING CLEANSING

There are two major 'persecutions' coming that are predicted by the Spirit of God. In the book of Daniel 2,600 years ago the Holy Spirit has shown that the antichrist will wage war on the saints and conquer them. In the book of Daniel and Revelation there are prophecies and pictures of the coming wrath of antichrist. He will seek to eliminate all believers of the living Christ (Revelation 12) and will guide the attempt to destroy Israel.

This cannot happen without the troops who will do the 'cleansing'. Just as Hitler had soldiers cart the Jews off to the camps and then those same troops guided the shoveling of the bodies into those oversized ovens….by the thousands. Troops were needed on all fronts as the Nazis sought world conquest. So the troops of antichrist will be here to conquer the world again…and many *chosen ones* believe they are those 'storm troopers.'

THE ULTIMATE GATHERING

If you believe the Bible and know that all of its prophecies have either been fulfilled or will be fulfilled soon then you have to engage and take in the implications of Revelation 19:19. The beast (homosatanas), the world's

accepted leader will lead:

- The world's largest military might in all of history.
- The world's most advanced military 'a global power.'
- A military with the most advanced weapons ever.
- Soldiers and commanders who are 'super soldiers.'
- They have already received the mark.
- They have already worshipped the image of the beast.
- They are moved, guided and GATERED TOGETHER around Jerusalem by massive satanic power that was released in a ritualistic fashion (Please see Revelation 16).

This prophesied 'GATHERING TOGETHER' is clearly pictured in prophetic revelation (study Revelation 16 and 19) and *chosen ones* are looking forward to it. They are beating the drums at dark rituals even now and helping to unleash more dark powers. One *chosen one* (a satanic super soldier) gave me a note that was from a luciferian elitist. This man has produced many *chosen ones*. The note tells me that he looks forward to unleashing this *chosen one* on me at the battle of Armageddon! What he is missing (beside his brains) is that I will not be on the ground where he is.

I and the rest of all God's redeemed army (Revelation 19:11) will be in the air (glorified with an indestructible immortal new body). We will be descending with the infinite living Christ leading. When the door from heaven's side is opened a descent occurs and is the one every demon in hell knows is coming. It is a day that satan knows will arrive and the fallen cherub will have the pinnacle of his power and mightiest NWO army there on the ground waiting. Super soldiers with weapons raised and pointed into the sky will seek to stop what comes to stop them.

FINALLY

These are the final products, the ultimate *chosen ones* who are willing to….annihilate God. Even current *chosen ones* need to contemplate the depth of this. How did you and the coming soldiers get there? Why didn't you fight to get out? Surely you have read the next verse in this revealed prophetic

history…Revelation 19:20.

Some of you reading this right now are the troops, *chosen ones,* sub personalities who are trained to fight. Others reading may be those who made them. At this moment in time you can find a freedom that will last forever. Jesus Christ whom you have been taught to hate did die for you too. His bloodshed on that cross doesn't bind you to slavery to the dark powers. It can cleanse you and set you free from every lie, demon and forced commitment you have ever embraced.

There are clearly two armies on that GREAT DAY OF GOD ALMIGHTY. One is coming down from heaven with a leader who has proved Himself and the other one has been raised by hell. What side you are on right now or then will make all the difference in eternity. Which is better, to be with the troops of the antichrist or troops of Christ?

Revelation 19:11 or 19:19?

Jesus said

"What good will it be for a man if he gains the whole world, yet forfeits his soul? Or what can a man give in exchange for his soul?"
Matthew 16

Chapter 22
PROTO TYPES OF R-1919

"…Nazi occult research including some by the notorious Dr. Mengele…"

"…building on these horrible experiments had sped Soviet success in developing PSI weapons"…

"PSI weapons...had been developed and used many times against civilian populations"...

"…for covert activities, the process could be used to develop spies with artificial multiple personalities-like the Manchurian Candidate…"p 338 "PSYCHIC DISCOVERS

"But what if a hostile invasion does happen? We had better be prepared in order to avoid shear and total panic and chaos that would doom us to certain defeat." p 147 'AN INTRODUCTION TO PLANETARY DEFENSE'

"…a futurologist on the staff of SRI…predicted that….a psychic civil war might break out between the military-industrial controllers of our country and a guerilla-like group of psychic radicals. These radicals would use ESP to cause selected enemy commanders to suffer mental breakdowns as well as psychokinetically sabotage computers, satellites and weapons systems" p 196-197 'PSYCHIC WARFARE' Fact of fiction?

Revelation 19:19 as we have said reveals the 'ultimate' goal of 'the prince of the power of the air, the spirit who is now at work in them'. This presence is supernaturally operative in millions, in luciferians and created chosen ones/super soldiers. That prince of darkness is on the move and what

he is doing is moving everything in one direction…globalism.

I put up a broadcast on this subject of 'THE SPIRIT BEHIND GLOBALISM.' I was surprised that hundreds of thousands of downloads of these MP3s occurred in the first few weeks. The series deals with the behind the scenes work of a 'ruling nonhuman intelligence' that fills the immediate dense atmosphere (air) around the globe. This ancient presence is making itself known as never before and some are calling this operating power: 'THE FIELD' 'THE GLOBAL MIND' 'A CONCSIOUS UNIVERSE' 'THE COLLECTIVE UNCONCSIOUS' and the 'AKASHIC RECORD/HALLOF RECORDS.'

All of these descriptions are limited and off. They only touch the mask and not who's behind it. They don't even scratch the surface of this massive presence, they can't. It is from here that a critical mass of thinking is opening to spark the dream of a new world order. From this realm come the thoughts, ideas and imaginations for a one world government and its enforcing super military. That communication accepted and put into action includes the progressive development of a needed super military force. Those building the super soldiers may not know that their part in this special ops project is small. The psychologists, scientists and military developers may not yet realize that they have laid the foundations for this final clearly doomed super military. Please think through this statement:

"*Chosen ones* today are parts of the development of the coming final super soldiers that will be on the field with the antichrist on the day of final battle. *Chosen* ones today will be agents of the black awakening, enforcers of the NWO and will be part of the final 'planetary defense weapons' on the field of Armageddon." RD

I felt a need to give a few more notes on the troops that are being created now and that will be here in the near future… they may be one and the same. You cannot be a 'troop of antichrist' or of the new world order without the power and control that comes with it.

You cannot fight for the devil and not have his logo stamped into your soul. I believe that the reason for creating *chosen ones* beginning in infancy is that

many mature adults would not agree to being in this project…knowing all that is involved. And let's remember that what will be on the field in R-1919 was/is not built over night. It is a process, a satanic evolution. It may even be that current *chosen ones* who are on this 'satanic assembly line' may be obsolete and need upgrades before that final battle occurs.

Even in books like 'SECRET WEAPONS', 'UNSHACKLED', 'THE C.I.A. DOCTORS', 'JOURNEY INTO MADNESS', 'THE SEARCH FOR THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE', 'MK ULTRA' , 'SECRET DON'T TELL' and a host of others we can see the stories, read of the technologies and feel the horror that has gone into this agenda.

These books give claim and examples of the creation of super soldiers and their use as controlled super weapons. If the information that we have given merely scratches the surface or seems bad enough just wait until this tip of an iceberg reveals all of its depth. It is what we haven't seen and don't know that would scare the total wits out of most. All that is operating in dark supernatural secrecy now will show up sooner or later (see 2 Thessalonians 2). Then many will wish they would have seen the signs and braced themselves.

Here are some of the facts of the coming future history and the unleashing of the *chosen ones*, the black awakening and opening the door for the antichrist to walk through.

YOU CAN'T GET THERE FROM NOWHERE

If you can travel into the future and look at the military on that day of battle revealed in R1919 what would you see? What would the soldiers look like? What would the color of their uniforms be and could you see the mark of the beast on them? What is there in the future is on the way, it is in process and all of it is being worked on right now. How close are we? I don't know, maybe just 10 years away? All *chosen ones* tell me that the black awakening is very close which means that the battle of Armageddon would come about 7 years after the massive chaos.

The Nazi event with its world war does look so much like what is to come; it just didn't go global and end at Armageddon. The process of building toward Armageddon (R-1919) is so secretive and hidden that most folks wouldn't even know where to begin. But the dark side in all of its boastful power is beginning to show its dirty undergarments. Hundreds of thousands of victims of mind control (making them the troops of AC) have fallen out of the ranks and sought help in psych wards and counseling centers everywhere. Though we can look at the numbers of victims who have sought help (some say 4-millon) the fact is that most of the *chosen ones* are still intact, controlled and in sleeper mode waiting for the call…this is a chilling reality.

Are we on the road to Armageddon? My answer is a screaming yes! But there is a process. They have to have many things in place before that day, one of those things are troops who will serve the cause. We are on the road and a number of events will occur before that last day of fallen human history dawns. One of the main events will be the black awakening.

YOU CAN'T DO IT WITHOUT THE POWER

As I have said before there is no advance or event from God that does not have His real presence and power there to perform it. Be it salvation, filled with His Spirit, healing, deliverance, answered prayer or growing dynamically into Christ likeness. All of God's work comes with His presence and power. Think about the resurrection, Pentecost or even the second coming/ glorification (which has an 'atomic' level of power released see 1 Corinthians 15), none have, could or will occur without infinite and massive supernatural power.

Now think about satanic presence and power, this fallen cherub led 1/3 of the angels astray and led the fall of the once perfect majestic 'humanity' and helped bring the sin, death and destruction. Satan has power and presence. Study Matthew 4 and see his interaction with Jesus. There are hundreds of thousands of demons/spirits and they are at work (supernaturally operative) in the world.

There can be no counterfeit doctrines, miracles or 'savior' (anti/instead of Christ) without that dark 'active supernatural power'. There is real power that flows from the satanic kingdom. Jesus and all of scripture acknowledge this. This 'dark energy' as I call it is present, growing in force and will have unprecedented outpourings and manifestations in the near future.

The creation of *chosen ones* for the black awakening and coming antichrist reveal the pinnacle of that dark power at work. Dark power has been, is now and its coming pinnacle of release are real and will affect billions. The development and coming global bursts of satanic presence and power are prophetically foretold. *Revelation 16 gives us a glimpse of a coming ritual release of a 'global planetary wave' of satanic power and force. It is so powerful that it leads the sum total of humanity (peoples, nations and kings) to move (gather together) and fight God in an effort to destroy the descent of Jesus Christ. Can anyone one say Psalm 2!* (PS2)?

The point is that nothing, not the black awakening, the appearing of antichrist, the opening of the abyss or the final battle can occur without a massive release and manifestation of the darkest of satanic power.

God's power and presence are open and unmasked, however, satan's power and presence is hidden and masked. The evil one's power, presence and agenda have always been masked to those he seeks to deceive and recruit. This is his character and his methodology. So let's never forget what Bob Rosio (author of Hitler and the New Age) has said so prophetically

'DECEPTION ALWAYS LEADS TO DESTRUCTION!'

Satan's power is a supernatural ability to masquerade and deceive. Biblical revelation reveals his nature and work with accuracy and finality. Nevertheless wherever the dark powers find acceptance (open doors) they will operate and the results of its power filled deception in people is always massive destruction. Death, separation from God and hell are here because satan expressed his presence and power…and humanity embraced it. There are those who choose radical evil in all of its masqueraded form, there are those who:

"…have delighted in evil" 2 Thessalonians 2

YOU CAN'T DO IT WITHOUT THE PEOPLE

As in all national or civil wars there has to be the people who will plot, plan and seek to accomplish their agenda. Wars are won with the use of people, namely soldiers. Politicians may plan and order but if there are no soldiers there can be no new nation or new world order. Hitler had to have troops; he did and rocked the world. The plan of the luciferian shadow government that seeks a global rule includes;

- A new political system.
- All new laws.
- A new spirituality.
- And a new military to bring it in and maintain it.

The long development of the plan of a new order is inspired from hell's kitchen. It is a spiritually empowered movement as was Nazism. From the spiritual realm come ideas, influence and an agenda. If it is from God it will be clear, open, good and benefit all humanity. Just look at the cross. But if it is from the adversary of God then it is packed with 'killing, stealing and destroying.'

God has revealed the origin, character, methods and *the clear sequential agenda of the fallen cherub*. It is being hashed out on all levels of society and deals with the end of history. Satan will make the biggest move in his entire disintegrating career; the signs of it are everywhere. But it's what is hidden for now that will pack the deepest punch. The black awakening and arrival of the antichrist are evolving by that 'secret power' that is 'already at work' and will bring (is bringing) two main things:

- 1. Unprecedented deception lies and sabotage.
- 2. Unprecedented destruction and devastation.

Let's remember too and I will spell this out in section 4 even more. God is moving to redeem, heal and prepare us for the end and for a new and final beginning….the beginning of indestructible immortality. This new heaven and new earth that is coming includes 'redeemed glorified humanity' (I hope you will be one) and the final end of all this radical evil… all of it forever!

YOU CAN'T DO IT WITHOUT PLANETARY DEFENSE WEAPONS (PDWs)

The troops of antichrist include all of those who serve the cause. When you look at Revelation 1919 as we have seen, it is the world's largest military might on the field of battle. They will be on the field for only one reason; it is the 3rd attempt to annihilate God. The first two failed and the third one will fail in a finality that the first two haven't seen. But the fact remains that the antichrist with a new world order military is unprecedented and dear reader on the way.

Just as the appearance of antichrist and the new order will occur, so too that final battle will come. But we must realize that planning, preparing and developing all that is needed is and has been in its final stages. This includes building the super soldiers and a super charged military. It includes that antichrist was born and operating with a 'beneath the surface' shadow government. They must have the power, people and demonically influenced weapons to pull off the beginning and end of the reign of antichrist. Since that final battle is the antichrist, the nations and the super soldiers gathered together to make war on the descending (second coming) Christ, they will need super weapons.

The kings of the earth and global military will of course see their doomed cause as a 'save the planet battle' campaign. I believe that humanity's search and especially a military search/research for PDWs will be evidence that we are close to the end of history. Since these kinds of weapons will be needed in the battle that seeks to stop the descent of Christ, seeking to develop them now may be that they will be needed and used in the near future. So a few things must be considered:

How did they get this far?

- That question is answered in part by this book. It is the 'sequence of satanic evolution' with all of its stages accomplished that have led them there. And the truth is, all the other events and developments were arranged to lead up to this GREAT DAY OF GOD ALMIGHTY. This is what the satanic powers feared (the second coming) and knowing it was coming sought to stop it. So the black awakening to level society and institute controlled globalism must be very close.
- The events must be chaos and then a new controlled world order with a united super military constructed by supernatural force. All of these are necessary steps to stage a prepared and preemptive strike on Christ… R1919. The beast and his army (super soldiers/final chosen ones) will be there on that day for sure. The creation and evolution of *chosen ones* has been, is and will progress up to that very day.
- Please realize that no matter what kind of weapons for PDWs are developed (particle or chemical beam/electro-magnetic pulse, etc) the goal of millions of soldiers are desired and needed. It is clear to me that the creation of and final development of *chosen ones* are themselves considered PWDs, in the hands of the antichrist-false prophet and the ancient dragon.
- They have to have the dark powers present. See Revelation 16 for the pinnacle of satanic powers being released. The unprecedented rise of dark spirits to mesmerize the world, the counterfeit doctrines and miracles will lead to the unleashing of the 'great revolt' (satanic black awakening). Then the arrival of the beast (and his team of the ancient dragon and false prophet) will manifest the most satanic power, influence and practices that have ever been seen. The combination of unprecedented demonic power, a global government and the super soldier military which is the toping, will also include a planetary defense weapons system.
- Research now shows that the weapons for this final day are being considered, researched and built. That's right! Right now planetary defense weapons(PDWs) and battle scenarios are being developed. Consider this:
- Researchers, weapons makers, and scientists from NASA and the Department of Defense (DOD) have already begun the process of

building planetary defense weapons systems. Why? Because something (or someone) may come from up there….space, outer space and invade our world. Could this be the preparation needed for R1919?

- From the think tank type book entitled, 'AN INTRODUCTION TO PLANETARY DEFENSE' the scientists (NASA) and military strategists (DOD) are laying out plans for:
    1. Weapons that can be shot into space.
    2. Battle scenarios against invader (s) from the heavens.
    3. A sixth column defense team being
    4. (Super soldiers and leaders) ready and in place.

Note this quote from the book:

"The idea for this book came about while the authors were working in a 'brainstorming group' to develop solutions to the hard targets of today's military and intelligence gathering communities." P 197

Will the *chosen ones* of today be (or are they) a part of that 'sixth column'? Maybe it's the scare of a cosmic asteroid hitting the earth that is forcing this consideration or it could be that the deceptive 'alien intrusions', abductions and UFO phenomena will force global humanity into thinking… *'we must spend trillions on these new defense weapons'*. I wonder whether the whole UFO conspiracy is nothing more than a 'let's scare the world into the need' for PDW's which include millions of marked, controlled and supernaturally charged super soldiers. If so then who's behind the scaring processes? If the largest military ever (super soldiers/chosen ones), the most powerful attack weapons in human history and the pinnacle of dark powers are needed, then it is clear that a study of Revelation 16 to 1919 shows that the 'brotherhood of darkness' will make it there. The future is on the way.

FINALLY

If the satanic presence has ramped up to its *'pinnacle of power manifested'.* If the super soldier's project is ready and planetary defense weapons are on the way… then what does hold back the onslaught of the black awakening and appearance of the antichrist? Glad you asked, that is the

theme of the next chapter!

But before you go please review and think through this statement:

Revelation 16 gives us a glimpse of a coming ritual release of a 'global planetary wave' of satanic power and force. It is so powerful that it leads the sum total of humanity (peoples, nations and kings) to move (gather together) and fight God to destroy the descent of Jesus Christ. Can anyone one say Psalm 2? PS 2!

So what is being done right now that will lead up to that day?

CHAPTER 23
ACTIVATION OF THE SLEEPER SUPERSOLDIERS

"Then I saw three evil spirits…they came out of the mouth of the dragon, out of the mouth of the beast and out of the mouth of the false prophet."Revelation 16

"They are the spirits of demons performing miraculous signs, and they go out to the kings of the whole world*, to gather them* for the battle on the great day of God Almighty" Revelation 16

"Then *they gathered the kings together* to the place that in Hebrew is called Armageddon" Revelation 16

"The temptation, the compulsion, and the addiction for more power and control over people are the first evils released from the Pandora's Box of modern gadgetry" p 176 'ANGELS DON'T PLAY THIS HARP'

"Many Oregonians complained of headaches, fatigue, inability to sleep, reddening of the skin, 'clicks in the head' and a buzz that harmonized with a high pitched wail" p 144 'HARP THE UNTIMATE WEAPON OF THE CONSPIRACY'

"Lucifer's evil spirit is alive & well in the New Global Economic & Communications System" p 215 'BIG BROTHER NSA and its little brothers'

Whatever physical tools, mechanics or technology that will be used to trigger thousands (or hundreds of thousands) of *chosen ones* you can be sure of this, they were inspired by dark science and designed in hell's kitchen and are only a part of the activation sequence of the black awakening. The activation will have a spiritual force behind it. This activation could be sent out from a ritual or like in Revelation 16 directly by the dragon, the beast and the false prophet. You do realize when this black awakening/chaos comes that unholy trinity will be here in full force. They are not simply waiting; they are in a fury seeking to unleash the full array of the luciferian agenda.

THE COP AND THE CODE

She called me and told me to come over right away. When I got there I had some team members there to look out. She was panicked and began to tell me the scenario. They were in town and they were going to 'trigger' her out and either use her or do things to her. She had military background and was a law enforcement agent. She lead a network of law enforcement personal that joined together to review occult and satanic crime in the state. At this moment she needed me to read out loud to her a 'code'. It was a trigger code that could be used to shut down all the sub personalities that I had come to meet and converse with.

Many of those sub personalities have told me about satanic crime, mind control technology and the agenda of the ancient brotherhood. The sub personalities took me to ritual sites, homes of handlers, and gave me details of original Nazi splitter programmers and took me to where they lived. Some of those personalities needed healing others needed a healing encounter with Jesus. A few who could speak other languages and others who could do rituals, seek and release powers, didn't say anything at this moment.

Now she and the sub personalities who trusted me enough wanted me to read a strange code so that all of her sub personalities would be shut down and remain unreachable to outsiders. Praying at that moment, I did it. I was instructed to look right at her and I had to read it out loud and say it perfectly. So I repeated the code phrase from the paper she gave me. I waited, there were a few blinks of her eyes and then I called one of the sub personalities by name…no response. I kept asking to talk to sub alters that I knew but to no

avail…for days. It was just her, the cop; I had no phone calls, notes or requests. She had no episodes of being triggered and leaving either. All was very quiet.

She gave me a second code when she gave me the first one. It came with instructions for when I should speak it out loud. The day came and I looked at her like before and spoke the code out loud. In just a few moments a sub personality I knew well came up. These and many others were back, the code 'trigger' released them and they were all clamoring for talk time. I was told that none of them were accessed while the military type handlers were in town seeking her. One of the nights while she was 'shut down' we were doing some surveillance by her house and just prayerfully watching. Once we engaged a bald man who was driving a car, he was wearing a black military type fatigue/uniform top.

The codes to trigger do work and I would see things like this again and again. Let's take a look at triggers/codes and what could be the possible code or trigger that would call forth many *chosen ones* for the day of the massive chaos (black awakening). I have been asked many times over the years by those who have heard me speak on this subject what I think the activation or type of trigger will be used. Below is my answer. This is how hundreds of thousands of highly trained *chosen ones* will be activated for the coming anarchy.

WHAT CAN A FEW DEMONS DO?

I know we have already gone over what some triggers are and what kinds are used with SRA/MPD victims. All of these victims have codes/triggers in the sub personalities. One triggering 'device' that should be emphasized is what is seen in Revelation 16. It's a 'spiritual' activation or trigger that will cause an even larger gathering for those who have chosen to be a servant of the antichrist.

Revelation 16 reveals a ritual type of release of demonic spirits. The spirits are sent out, they have their targets and they reach them. When these spirits arrive they are effective! They communicate (voice to skull?), influence and 'trigger' political and military leaders with a vast army of

trained super soldiers to come and gather. Notice what happens with the spiritual activation in Revelation 16, this may be how they activate *chosen ones* now. This is what happens:

- The dark spirits are sent out
- The dark spirits have their targets
- The dark spirits operate supernaturally
- The dark spirits accomplish their goal
- The dark spirits (by sheer satanic power) gather the political and military leaders with the multinational super army.
- This 'ritual' type release of demonic powers to activate and gather millions on a global scale may give us a glimpse of a possible national activation of deployed demonic power to trigger hundreds of thousands of programmed energized chosen ones for the black awakening.

It is sheer demonic powers sent by 'senders' that will gather the largest gathering of men and demons to make war on the descent of the living Christ. Dark spirits can trigger sub personalities that already have demonic presence on them. It has been done while we were hiding out a victim on a ritual holiday. It would be the handlers who know how or the coven that would conjurer and send these 'hounds of hell'.

Also never forget, there is no sending of demonic forces without having 'senders'. It is the sender (s) who knows what they want and when the sending needs to occur. I hope this will give you a clue of what we have called 'occult level spiritual warfare'. Real satanists/luciferians are conjuring and sending demonic spirits against their chosen targets all the time. I will discuss the 'cones of power' that have been operating and sending demonic powers for some time now in section 4.

PREPARED FOR ACTIVATION

Like those in Revelation 1919 who were already prepared for the coming call to 'gather together' and make war, the super soldier *chosen ones* of today are prepared. They have programming with codes in place. They have sub personalities who were created for this and are waiting (sleepers) for the

call. They also have the preparatory demonic presence within them, assigned and waiting. They are ready for a mechanical or technological type trigger; they are also ready and experienced for demonic powers triggering them to action.

THE FIRST SATANIC INVERTED PENTECOST

The biblical picture of a pouring out of the power of God on the day of Pentecost is awesome. It was prophesied by the prophet Joel (by the Spirit of God) that a massive pouring out of the Holy Spirit would occur. Jesus prepared the early disciples for this (see Luke 24; John 7; Acts1:8) before His ascension. If you read in the book of Acts chapter two you will see the fulfillment of the prophecy and the massive power of the Spirit of God that was poured out on the believers. This power of God would come on the 'waiting' Church and 'clothe' them with power from on high. When this occurred the Church (people of God) was launch into the world with the mission that Jesus gave them. The global mission of Jesus did not begin until the Power from on High was sent and received! Please note:

- The Power of the Spirit was sent.
- There was a sender…God.
- And there were those who were ready, waiting and prepared.
- The Power came and only then did the Body of Christ launch with supernatural accomplishment.

So it will be with the 'mission' of the fallen cherub. He too will have his counterfeit body of prepared servants. They are waiting and will be the receivers of this first coming counterfeit or as I call it … 'inverted' satanic Pentecost. Dark powers will be summoned, ready and sent in a massive wave and this will be the main cause of the activation of the 'great revolt'. *Chosen ones* will feel, receive and be clothed/moved upon with powers from below. I think the rest of us may feel, hear or at least know that 'something is in the air' and it is *sheer evil in unprecedented levels*.

THE BLACK AWAKENING ACTIVATED

This coming ‘great revolt’, ‘rebellion’ or massive chaos and anarchy will be without equal and cannot be missed. The powers unleashed will be effective and hundreds of thousands of satan’s prepared soldiers will switch and unleash the hell they were trained and programmed to do. Their black awakening will occur.

- They are here and they are ready. Millions of intact super soldiers who are the agents of chaos and the doorway for the black awakening are prepared.
- They will release powers before the chaos, at the chaos and their actions will be like an ongoing ritual…evoking even more dark spirits.
- The activation could use technology but most likely be by sheer demonic power.
- Whatever the tools, technology or trigger that is used the fact is that it will not occur unless it is time, the *chosen ones* and the powers are ready. Here again are some of the possibilities of what could occur.
- It could be a sound like on the emergency broad cast system. A buzz or tone, or sequence of tones.
- It could be a ‘wave’, electromagnetic wave or signal.
- It could be voice to skull (to sub personality) communication coming from digital TV, cell phones or towers, a satellite or from a military installation deep in a mountain.
- Like a dog whistle it will only have its effect on those trained and programmed to respond to it.

In Revelation 16 we have the revelation of a future coming ‘planetary spiritual wave’ of such satanic power that it moves the already seduced new order into ‘gathering together’ for the final days of human history. It is satanic power that moves the world then and I believe it will be *summoned sent satanic powers* that activate *chosen ones* and unleash the predicted (and planned) black awakening.

‘It will be ‘demonic powers’ sent that activate the chosen ones and unleash the black awakening’

These are possibilities of what could be used but here is what I believe will occur. It will be *'demonic powers'* sent that activate the *chosen ones* and unleash the black awakening. The unleashing will include:

- The trigger will be sheer satanic power and will manifest massive dark powers in the air, over cities and on those prepared to destroy.
- The super soldiers when activated will manifest dark power and will seem crazed.
- They will create a national ritual by the fear created, terror demonstrated and blood they shed. Demons are summoned through these doors (raised energy).
- They may come in waves. Like in Jobs case the events *caused by satanic presence, plot and power* got worse and worse.
- It will be a burst, like bats out of hell. Thus it is a revolt, chaos and anarchy on a massive scale.

The 'gathering together' of leaders and soldiers for the battle at Armageddon is done by sheer dark spiritual forces. The demons and their miraculous powers will 'trigger', influence, guide and call together millions to the middle east to make war on the second coming of Christ. This may be the 'mother' of all triggering (ritual demonic release) but I am sure it wasn't the first!

THE BLACK AWAKENING HELD UP

I do want you to know that none of this will happen until the 'sovereign restraint' is removed! Let me say it again:

"I do want you to know that none of this will happen until the 'sovereign restraint' is removed."RD

All of hell's power, force, preparation and agenda cannot happen until God hands it over. Until the sovereign restraint is taken out of the way none of this is possible. It is once again evidence that the 'finite cannot become or over take the infinite.' God is able, and does at times release the unyielding wickedness of humankind. God does 'hand them over 'to do the evil they are

bent on'(see Romans 1). There is right now a Power beyond all of hell combined that is 'holding him (the antichrist and his chaos) back'. The Lamb is infinitely more powerful than the ancient dragon:

"*The infinite dwarfs… the fallen finite*."

Right at this moment in time it is the hand of God restraining the unleashing of the great revolt. The full force of hell and the evil servants committed to this dark cause cannot break through. Those who are real believers in Christ should know this…"And now you know what is holding him (the antichrist and all of hells powers) back." Please Note:

"My spirit will not contend with man forever…." Genesis 6

"And now you know what is holding him back…"…"but now the one who holds it back will continue to do so till he is taken out of the way. Then…." 2 Thessalonians 2

"Furthermore, since they did not think it worthwhile to retain the knowledge of God, he gave them over to a depraved mind to do what ought not to be done." Romans 1

"….fiery red one. Its rider was given power to take peace form the earth and to make men slay each other" Revelation 6

But for now this 'brotherhood of darkness', that league of luciferian elite are powering up and bugling at the seams to unleash an horrific chaos and ride like hells wind. Like the massive dam that is cracking under pressure so the powers of darkness are pushing and causing the cracks in the walls of society. We may see the spurts of that tainted water but when the dam breaks please realize …everyone will know!

If you think you feel it in the air right now just wait until the atmosphere is filled and the 'revolt' comes. The questions that must be asked dear readers, the ones still pressing on us are: What side of the fence are you on? What are you prepared to do? And what tIme is it?

THEN THE SECOND SATANIC INVERTED PENTECOST

This is the final mother of all rituals and a coming planetary wave of supernatural power! I have only mentioned a little on this 'planetary spiritual wave' that is to come. I don't believe that it is the first one… just the biggest…it is global!

More on this in the December 2009 in the book R1919 and in the spring 2010 release book entitled 'THE VOICE OF AN ANCIENT HATE'.

FINALLY

As I have said and will emphasize, there is no advance to the Kingdom of God without the power of God…so to there is no advance to the domain of darkness without real supernatural demonic powers. There clash of those powers have never been more clear and millions if not billions can feel it. But the worst is yet to come, massive dark powers will be released to cause or activate the black awakening. This happens with individual chosen ones today, we have see this and the only thing to stop it is the authority and power of God. So I hope you are ready and already thinking … *what can the body of Christ do to prepare for the coming revolt and rise of homosatanas?*

CHAPTER 24
WHEN ALL HELL BREAKS LOOSE

"Don't let anyone deceive you in any way, for that day will not occur until the rebellion occurs…." 2 Thessalonians 2

"Its rider was given power to take peace from the earth and to make men slay each other." Revelation 6

"Notice that the rider (of the red horse) does not do the killing. He will simply take peace from the earth and cause men to slaughter, butcher, and murder each other. (The Greek word for 'kill' here is not for death in battle but for violent killing of all kinds,)" p 9 'BIBLICAL LIBRARY' on the book of Revelation

When the A-bomb was dropped on Nagasaki it could be felt around the world, millions knew, hundreds of thousands experienced it and it was devastating. Truly it changed everything. When I watched the second tower get hit live on TV I felt the evil that was behind this event and I knew massive change had arrived. Was 911 the beginning of the black awakening? As bad as it was the answer is no, 911 was big but it was nothing *compared* to the coming chaos. Many have written me and asked if the V-Tech shooter who slaughtered many on the college campus was the beginning of the black awakening. My answer on this and those other events of the 'horrific random chaotic' style are types but not the black awakening yet.

When the black awakening occurs it will be known worldwide, it will be felt in the air and it will be seen in every city in the USA. When the spiritual bomb of the black awakening goes off everyone everywhere will know and it

will be ….devastating.

IT IS THE TWILIGHT OF CIVILAZATION AS WE KNOW IT

Now let's look at the details of the 'plan' and please realize satan and top military men under his influence never work without a plan. There is a method to this madness!

They came in the night when most people are asleep but then again it's typical of the evil one. As below so they do it above on our streets and in our cities. They are sneaky and sinister as they seek to kill steal and destroy. What they plot in the darkness they seek to accomplish when no one is expecting it.

I woke up about 3:00 am. The pressure alarm didn't go off but I knew God made sure I was up. I walked straight out into the living room and over to my daughter's room that was on the side of the house. I looked out across the street and there they were. It was the coven members that the wife of the federal office told us about and gave evidences of. She called them the 'circle of dominion' and we got calls all the time telling us to back off.

They opened the door of the van and the light came on and it was clear. It was the Guatemalan coven members we had seen before and a man I will call Walt (not his real name) was the driver. I watched as one of them walked across the street in the tree lines hiding from the light of the street light. As he got closer to the side of the house where my daughter was sleeping I had to make a decision. I put up some prayers and then just turned on the front porch light and that was all I needed to do. The man ran back to the van hitting his head on the door frame…of course I laughed. Then they took off.

I know what they do and what they are capable of. They can unleash hell on a person or even a whole family. I know they have no problem killing, torturing and sacrificing even a child. So I watched for a while, all was quiet and then I put down the sling shot gun and lay back down to sleep. The rest of the late night was peaceful.

This individual's method of coming in the night, under the cover of darkness, when no one would suspect them is like the coming black awakening. It is devious and sinister but then again that is the nature of the fallen cherub and of all of those who are his.

WHEN ALL HELL BREAKS LOOSE

When the 'all hell breaks loose', which is what the black awakening is all about, it will be a shock and people will be in awe and dread. What many feel is coming will arrive. It is an event that God has shown us will occur (2Thessalonians 2 'the great revolt). It is an event that is clearly a plan of the luciferians and millions know well they're methodology:

'CHAOS BEFORE THE NEW ORDER'

The Tsunami that occurred in south Indonesia came basically with no warning. Only those who know what the clear signs of a coming tsunami are would have realized what that calm withdrawal of water was before that onslaught came. It was like an eerie calm before the storm. The black awakening may have an eerie calm before it breaks loose. The breaking loose of this chaos may be designed around a national holiday or at least on a date around a satanic ritual date. It is designed to occur, when the nation is focused on something else, like a Fourth of July or Labor Day. If you know how satanic rituals work then know that the massive rituals are done on known Christian holidays…on purpose.

Here are some of the sequences of events or things that will occur. Of course the antichrist, false prophet and the whole new regime has to be in place and ready to step in. But once again the revelation of the antichrist cannot occur without the troops who will help clear the way, release the chaos and level societies' playing field.

PRECURSORS

Presumably the antichrist and all of his entourage will be ready and "somewhere" in the chosen bunkers, clearly in the shadows and fully aware. It is clear they will have to know when the day….the exact moment is that

this will all occur. They have to know when to give the call (trigger/activation). You must realize that what was orchestrated in hell's kitchen, under the tutelage of the 'prince of the power of the air-the spirit who is now at work…' will have the 'gun' that will be fired that starts this massacre. This will be the final bullet that will be heard and felt around the world for sure.

You can look for:

- A constant sense of decline and destabilization in society.
- Economic and political failures will be rampant.
- A sense of hopelessness will abound everywhere.
- There will be extreme stress among nations and tense fingers on the triggers that could incite war.
- It will seem that there is only one more straw that is needed to break the back of pent up national, religious and racial anger.
- The pressure for someone to light the match that will ignite the collapse of the world will be almost too much to bear.
- The desire for violence of nation against nation and even inner civil war is part of the 'Chao ab Oder' strategy.
- Many will be in dread and crying loudly for stability and peace, for a 'savior'.
- Sometime in the midst of this the call will come and the chaos will erupt.

You can be sure that dark rituals in sequence and succession will abound….cloaked in the secret places for now. There is a need to have the 'satanic prayers' flowing nonstop until this first inverted power burst erupts. There may be a ramping up of violence and civil unrest and a lot of political activity to stop the descent. Since it is hell coming to the surface as never before in history we should expect the molten lava to be seen…before the ultimate blast.

RESTRAINT REMOVED

We are given revelation by the Spirit of God as to what actually holds this hell on earth back. The entire plan, power and people of the coming black awakening are…as of right now blocked. The hand of God (be an angel or the Holy Spirit) simply holds back the onslaught of the rebellion and rise of antichrist. The hand of restraint here is the power of God holding back this massive unleashing of hell's agenda. The restraint of God spoken of in 2 Thessalonians 2 reveals:

- God has power over all of hell's fiercest force.
- God holds back that which seeks to bring unprecedented deception and destruction. God gives us time to change and turn around.
- God determines the timing, usually to set up evil for its own defeat and destruction.
- God's timing involves set up for the greatest level of redemption and salvation. (see 2 Peter 3)
- Satan and all of his work is finite, however, God is infinite.

FIRST SATANIC INVERTED PENTECOST

As we mentioned in the last chapter this event cannot occur without sheer satanic power. The moment the restraint by God is taken out of the way, the call, powers and agenda of hell will bust out. It is as if all of the demons on that side of the veil, all of the prepared servants of darkness on this side and the fallen cherub himself will be standing there at this door of God's restraint. The troops of antichrist on both sides will be pushing at the gates waiting for the restraint to be removed.

Like a rubber band stretched out and then let loose the prepared chaos soaked in and with satanic powers will spring out and fly forth when loosed. This is not the 'frog in the kettle' approach any more. Society by the billions will have been cooked long enough by the dark power's slow burn. I think that's why most will not see, feel or know what is coming, they have been smoozed and blinded for too long.

FEAR, BLOOD, TERROR AND A NATIONAL RITUAL

As in a satanic death ritual with a human being sacrificed, the process is horrific. There is usually a holding and preparation that goes on first. Then when the day arrives and the servants of darkness begin to gather…dark spirits arrive for the feast. For the demons, human fear, terror and shed blood are the door handles to latch onto if they want to come to this side. Those doing the sacrifice know that the more pain, fear, terror and blood they can gather the better. It's the stuff that draws the dark spirits, it's the 'energies' raised that the demonic can come upon and slide through on.

WHAT TO EXPECT WHEN THE BLACK AWAKENING OCCURS

- An ungodly evil presence everywhere.
- Explosions and fires everywhere
- The electrical grid will be down, failures everywhere.
- Phones and cell phones shut off.
- The www attacked, hacked and down.
- Assigned murder and slaughter of millions.
- Sabotaged responses in military, law enforcement fire and rescue.
- Martial law and troops trying to get on the streets but anarchy, riots and looting will abound.
- Shooters and 'crazed' killers everywhere, blood and bodies in plain sight.
- Civil war opportunists will unleash and battles on the streets will occur.
- Pent up racists anger will rage and unleash.
- Bad weather and chaotic earth events may erupt.
- Shut down on all levels, gas, food, banks etc.
- More waves of the same, day after day and maybe weeks.
- Dead bodies and debris everywhere.
- Suit case type bombs, chemical and biological weapons release may occur but on a small level.
- People hiding and surviving and waiting.
- Will this end or is it the end?

THE GOAL OF THE BLACK AWAKENING

You must know that the goal of the chaos and anarchy is not to annihilate society and a nation. You must remember that the black awakening is not the ultimate luciferian goal. It is only a tool to make a way for the new order they desire. The new order is really only the second phase that is desired and needed. The ultimate goal of a controlled global government and super military system is the final war to try and stop the returning Christ. For now let's take a look at what luciferians hope they can accomplish when they unleash their chaos. This is the whole reason for all the mind control projects, technology and process for creating multiple personality 'disorder'. What you are about to read is the reason the *chosen ones* are here and why the luciferians have done all they have.

The black awakening will:

- UNLEASH SATANIC POWERS.

  They want and need more spiritual powers to be released. The spiritual influence that is needed to 'lead the whole world astray' (Revelation 12) will be here. The rise of a new unified spiritual system (Babylon) will have to be here if they want to gain the hearts of billions. This satanic power will buffer the apocalypse of the antichrist and help suppress any and all resistance.

- CREATE FEAR PANIC AND TERROR

  Shots fired, buildings bombed and burning, shooters taking out many government leaders, military commanders and law enforcement sabotaged. People on the streets shooting, killing with others shooting back. Dead bodies are lying in the open, bloodshed is seen everywhere; people running, hiding and looking for their families. Panic and confusion abound as more find out this is happening everywhere… EVERYWHERE. They want and need to cause confusion, fear and terror. They want to force millions into hiding and retreat.

- DEMON POSSESSED PEOPLE UNLEASH A PRESENCE

When the *chosen ones* are activated you must realize that the trained placed sub personality with all of its programming and pent up demonic power will be up and active. Similar to possession the demonic force will be manifesting and emanating from hundreds of thousands of *chosen ones* as they go on a hell bent rampage. Their look will be crazy with eyes dark and glazed over. I have seen that look and felt that dark energy many times now but I am very sure that its nothing compared to what it will be like when thousands of them are on the streets… everywhere.

- COLLAPSE SOCIETY AND INFRASTRUCTURE

  They need to collapse society. They need every bit of infrastructure crippled. They need the military, law enforcement and governmental response to be crippled and devastated. They will seek to bring the whole nation down to its knees. The electric is out, the food chain is broken, the communications are sporadic and no one trusts anyone. This is the goal, level the whole structure to the point that it cannot respond or help itself. They want it to be in such disarray and need that it (collapsing society) is willing to take help from whoever offers it.

- ELIMINATE RESISTORS AND TARGETED CLEANSING

  While all the chaos and anarchy is going on there will be those selected *chosen ones* who will be looking for their targets. The targets are those pre-chosen people on every level of society whom luciferian handlers have already deemed dangerous resistors. Just as Hitler and other evil dictators have done the goal is to 'cleanse' the new society of anyone who is not on board. *Chosen ones* who have been given assassination programming will use it during this time. While all hell is breaking loose and everything is in a panic the trained assassins will get to their targets and slaughter them.

  Though they may make it look like a 'random' killing during a time of chaos, it's not. *Chosen ones* and their handlers (some called watchers) have done their reconnaissance on those whom they deem as resistors, these undesirables, have already been 'painted' or marked for death. If

you are a strong vocal and spiritually powerful (Christian) person and or an opponent of any kind of new world order you have already been marked. I know of *chosen ones* who know they are placed in churches and other institutions only because they are to take out leaders when the chaos begins. I know of others who have lists, took pictures of perceived resistors, their families and homes to keep tabs on those marked for 'cleansing'.

If you have been a student of history, nations and war then you know that 'cleansing' of perceived resistors is part of the plan as a totally new regime is being built. Just ask the Russians with the rise of Stalin in the 30's. The so called 'great purge' took place and 600,000 to millions were eliminated, deported or in the gulag.

- FORCED HELPLESSNESS

The black awakening will not be over in a day. It will not be one event like 911. It will come most likely in waves, with each new wave of anarchy being worse than the one before it. If you notice the 4 horsemen of the apocalypse (Revelation 6) the deception and then destruction comes in a succession or waves, each one bringing a new level of destruction and chaos.

The goal of the black awakening is to cripple society on all levels. They seek total devastation without annihilation. They want the entire nation (each one they release the BA in) to be on its knees. Like the devastation of Katrina whose people and cities were rendered helpless. The people and the structures that were left were in shambles and helpless. Outside help was needed desperately. It's almost like a satanic bonding ritual where the satanists harm the subject to the point of helplessness and hopelessness, then those who created this condition plan a miraculous deliverance. By masquerading as saviors and helpers the new luciferian regime and its leader will look like the gods of a new era. Thus they will create a psychological or emotional bond with those whom they injured!

- SECURE INFRASTRUCTURE FOR NEW REGIME In the mess and destruction the conspirators of this chaos have planned to take over. What's the use of all the chaos and elimination if they don't take the spoils of this dirty war? Antichrist wants world government and that includes the UK, Canada and the USA. Antichrist and the new regime want the money, the military, the oil and all the tools they can take. They want a new world order and the securing of all the places of power.

  Look for them to show up and the new leaders emerging out of the ashes of the chaos. Like the phoenix rising, these new luciferian leaders will be there to step in and 'help' everyone. New leaders (masqueraded) who were pre-chosen will rise in government, military, law enforcement and many other areas of infrastructure. It's all about control and compliance and taking every place of power and authority is necessary for them.

- THE CALL TO END THE BLACK AWAKENING

  As all this crazy chaos is going on and the feelings of the end of the world set in many will pled for all of this to stop. The government, military and law enforcement will not be able to stop the black awakening. They will be dealing with internal sabotage and betrayal among themselves. As wave after wave of this chaos continues the cry will be, "Who can save us?"

  All of those *chosen ones* that have discussed this with me have in them suicide programming. They have planted within them sub personalities who are geared to do only one thing…kill the body (commit suicide). When the planned ending to the black awakening is ready there is supposed to be another trigger given that will activate suicide programming in thousands of these slaughtering machines.

  Once again it will be made to look like the new leader and his new regime has stopped the madness and saved society. So the antichrist is the 'savior' of humanity. Woo Who! Right! He stops the chaos, border wars and terror, this 'man of lawlessness' (2 Thess.2-homosatanas) has

become the peace maker, and new believers will cry, “Who can make war against him?” What a shock!

- THE CALL TO LISTEN TO A NEW VOICE

  It is at the ending of the chaos and anarchy the electrical grids, phones and maybe even the internet comes back on. People begin to pick up the pieces and bodies. New soldiers are on the streets, many of them were the cloaked agents of the black awakening. Then a new voice is heard by millions, for me it will be the voice of a very ancient hate.

  For the confused and mesmerized world it may be the voice of comfort and security. This voice will be unlike anything anyone has ever heard. It will be sharp, clear, and loud and will emanate a supernatural power. Eyes will glaze over and people may even faint as they listen to the new orator. Most though will never see the fangs for the mask. This will be the voice of that ancient hate, once heard in the heavenlies when some angels listened…agreeing with it as they became demons.

FINALLY

From the book of Daniel the Spirit of God has painted a picture of the antichrist. These prophecies that are 2,600 years old are now being fulfilled. Go check them. Read chapters 7-11, read the whole book. The Spirit of God in prophetic revelation says that this world (counterfeit) savior/antichrist will have…’Eyes like a man,’ ‘be a stern faced leader’ and ‘a mouth that speaks boastfully’ and much more. If you have read this far you can go to my web site and get the now free training course ‘A LIGHT IN THE DARKNESS’ which is over 12+ hours of mp3 teaching/sessions on this very subject. Go to www.shatterthedarkenss.net and click on the tab ‘The book of Daniel-A LIGHT IN THE DARKNESS.

I hope by now you are beginning to plan, prepare and pray.
I hope you are on the right side of the fence.

CHAPTER 25
ANTI CHRIST RIDING THE WAVE

"Just as Jesus, the son of Mary, was uniquely the 'seed' of the women, the antichrist will in some mysterious way be the 'seed' of satan." P 19 'PRINCE OF DARKNESS

"Unbelievable! If he can pull all that off, he'll be the greatest man to ever live!" p 53 'THE FOUTRH REICH

"The diabolical intelligence of the antichrist would be reflected in the eyes, and so one of the outstanding features of the man when he appears may be his eyes" p 60 'HOW TO RECOGNIZE THE ANTICHRIST'

How would you tell others if you knew for absolute sure who the antichrist was? How could you even begin to tell others that the one who seemed to save the world and help humanity reach a new level of human evolution is the devil in human skin?

This one who seems to save the world will also lead it into darkest destruction. His public presence will mean that in a few short years 1/3 off the human race will be wiped out. Maybe he will refer to the occult (new age/Masonic) 'guide stones' down there in Georgia that seek a reduction of the world's population to a manageable 5,000,000. Whatever happens, the antichrist will have a super human ability to spin the devastations that are to come during his reign and make the horrific evil look like icing on a tall wedding cake.

The two events that must and will occur (2 Thess. 2) before the coming of Jesus Christ are 'the rebellion' and the appearance of antichrist. It is clear from scripture that the great revolt or rebellion will be the first and the appearance of the antichrist is second… right on its heels. The first event makes way for the second. It may be the only way global dictatorship could sound so good…to so many.

I remember reading about Lynette Alice Fromme (Squeaky Fromme) who attempted to shoot President Ford. When asked why she followed the crazed spiritually dark Charles Manson and his cult, in Jonathon Gainsburg's book 'TAKE HIM TO THE STREETS' he reports her sad response:

"…a beaten dog will take food from whoever comes along"

Surely the nations, cities and the people coming through the massive, nation crushing black awakening may feel the same way. Whoever comes along in a hopeless crisis to save the day may be welcomed with wide open arms. Food on the table for the kids, safety on the streets for all and a plan of reconstructing the future is good news to a hopeless hungry beaten person.

Please note that the black awakening is designed to create the crying need for a powerful, new leader. The hurting will want someone who has the will and a plan to make things good. The black awakening and its flipside plot to thrust the able sounding 'stern faced king' into the faces of the devastated is a very dark strategy and it is prophesied that it will work…at least at first. The antichrist who will lead the black awakening from behind the curtain will come out to ride the wave of tears and offer a towel.

I was told that a bonding ritual was done to a victim of satanic ritual abuse. I have heard a number of them but this one from the girl who reported it stuck with me the most. She says that in the coven the kids being trained were once tied up and left on tables. The children began to cry, wet themselves and desire food. The kids heard a voice telling them to call on Jesus and see if he would come and help them. They did over and over again, and then finally a figure showed up made to look like a Jesus from the movies. They asked this Jesus to help them but this Jesus laughed at them and spit on them. This Jesus hit them and abused them. The children screamed all

the more, they grew hopeless and weary. Then they heard another voice and it told them to call on satan and without any other hope they did!

Then a satan like character immediately showed up, he instantly untied them, wiped away their tears and helped them clean up. This satan hugged them and fed them the finest of foods….the kids bonded to this satan, the kids loved this satan, the kids learned. These kinds of bonding trainings have occurred with many victims of satanic ritual abuse. It all reminds me of the story of Job. Satan comes and strikes Job on many levels. Satan hits Job with more, it seemed that wave after wave came against this man and the cause of it all was hidden from Job until the end.

The satanic methodology was to cause the pain and to get the God fearing Job to blame it all on God, to curse God and die. A deep and central part of satans plot is to cause the pain and embitter the hurting against God and I am very sure that the pain of the great chaos will include a voice that spins the calamity with questions like; "Where's God? And or God has failed. Why doesn't God show up? Why would God allow this?, Forget Him and trust me (antichrist)".

I know after 35 years of counseling others that the embittered and depressed regardless of who caused it hear that same old whisper all the time; Its God's fault; so "curse God and die". And that my dear reader is the voice of this ancient hate. That same voice will have a throat and mouth to speak through in the antichrist, remember the antichrist is that same Job assaulting satan only clothed in human skin.

Whatever he looks like in the flesh it is what he is in his nature that will enable him to smile so brightly… as he cuts your throat to the core. Here are some things to know about satan, the antichrist and the coming chaos.

THE ANTICHRIST LIVES

It is clear from prophecies in the books of Daniel, Matthew, 2 Thessalonians, I John and the book of Revelation that this super being is coming. In I John we are told that the presence of many (smaller) antichrists and the coming of the antichrist is 'how we know it is the last hour' of human

history. Surely we know by now that when the antichrist appears (his apocalypse) it will mark the last 7 years of human history as we know it. His appearance also marks two major issues.

- *The ultimate lie and deception* will be present and it will come with unprecedented supernatural power.
- *Unequaled devastation and destruction*. Billions will die, the earth will be scorched and a standing globalist army will be ended in one day.

The thing you and I will have to grapple with is this; is the antichrist alive right now on this planet and if so how much time is left until this black awakening occurs? Remember the antichrist does not show up until the 'rebellion/revolt' occurs. It's the event that opens the door for him. Here are some things that point to what I now believe so strongly: *Antichrist has been born and he is on the earth among us.*

- Every *chosen one* I know has sub personalities who are satanic ritual priests or priestesses. They and other coven loyal sub personalities believe that the antichrist is alive right now and they are excited about his soon arrival.
- Everywhere I go I ask at conferences and on live radio how many believe that Jesus is coming in the next 5-10 or even 25 years? Most say very soon, most say within 10 years. If Jesus will return in your lifetime this would mean that the antichrist has been born and is alive right now.
- The Prophetic Biblical time line would lead most to say the return of Christ has to be soon (10-20 years). If so antichrist has to be here, alive and operating toward the goals of massive chaos that leads to a new order.

THE ANTICHRIST HAS FRIENDS

Just as Jesus had a human mother with a purely human bloodline that went all the way back to Adam. So too the antichrist will have a human mother and those who have been plotting and working for his conception and his

unnatural birth. Those who are the 'friends' of antichrist must be many; they have sought his agenda even before he was born. They, this ancient brotherhood of darkness are the elite that so many feel are controlling the world with its money, oil, wars and influence. Just as antichrist is most likely here, so are those who have raised him right in plain sight.

In the trans-generational satanism that has produced hundreds of thousands of victim/chosen ones there is one theme they can all tell you about. There has been and is an ongoing goal to cause a 'demon to human' conception. The goal of this is to create a 'super' human or an enhanced human but for what end? This goal of a supernatural conception is very similar to the creation of the nephilim (See Genesis 6). The results of the nephilim were the arrival of a 'transmutation' of humanity and a corruption of the human bloodline. The genetics of a demon to human conception changes the God given gift to humanity in procreating pure human offspring.

The demonic doctrine of the Nazis included the breeding of an Aryan super race. The Aryans may have been from the generations of the nephilim and it was thought that their purified blood would bring back the ability to produce god-like humans who could then be used as a master race of warriors. *Chosen ones* today have been birthed in the context of this goal; luciferian leaders were driven to create a massive army. Only an undefeatable super army can help them reach their goal of a new order and ruling the world. Remember no political system can come or stay without the military might it produces. C*hosen ones* everywhere believe they are the friends of antichrist, they are birthed and raised for him.

THE ANTICHRIST HAS TROOPS

Chosen ones claim to be the troops of the coming antichrist. They claim the training and programming is part of the preparation to be the ones who bring the antichrist into power. Most sub personalities who come up that discuss the antichrist will feel highly superior to you and believe they will help rule the world. The rise of the antichrist means the rise of a whole new system and a new political ideology and the only way to bring it to power is having troops who can help him get there.

The troops of antichrist as we have already said will be needed to bring him to power, eliminate the resistors and establish by force the new order. These troops will also be needed for the attempted destruction of believers in Christ and of the destruction of Israel. But this is not all; the ultimate need for troops as the prophetic revelation of scripture shows us is for that final global super army that will be on the field of Armageddon.

It is strange that military sub personalities who know how to fight, use weapons and have given allegiance to the coming antichrist know so much about Armageddon and can discuss it with you. One of them brought me a letter said to have come from a high up handler. It addressed me and said that they could not wait to unleash this highly trained chosen one on me at Armageddon. *Chosen ones* know and we should too that…the luciferian elite who are among the governments, military and wealth of the world are planning for Armageddon. The strange thing is they are convinced and feel they can win.

THE ANTICHRIST IS THE CAUSE FOR THE MASSIVE CHAOS

The coming black awakening is what this book is all about. I feel it is a massively neglected aspect of Biblical Prophetic Revelation. It is my conviction that there would be no massive chaos and the things that led up to it, if there were no coming antichrist. And this leads to the fact that the only reason for the black awakening and the long process of creating those who will unleash it must be the soon coming of the prophesied beast.

It is clear also that the 'secret power of lawlessness' of 2 Thessalonians 2 is 'already at work' (supernaturally operative) and that this secret power is lead by 'the ruler' of the power of the air (atmosphere), the spirit who is now at work (super naturally operative/ same word) in fallen human beings (see Ephesians 2). It is this satanic power that is both raising the army of *chosen ones* and the antichrist who will rise on the boot heels of their fighting skills.

FINALLY

If you are a *chosen one* or someone who is helping them you know well these things are true. If you are a reader seeking to make sense of the days we

live in maybe now you can connect the dots and decide what you will do.

CHAPTER 26
THE BLACK AWAKENING AND PROPHETIC REVELATION

"As for God, his way is perfect; the word of the Lord is flawless…."2 Samuel 22

"But this has all taken place that the writings of the prophets might be fulfilled……"Matthew 26:56

"The angel said to me, these words are trustworthy and true. The Lord, the God of the spirits of the prophets, sent his angel to show his servants the things that must soon take place."Revelation 22

"Jesus regarded the evidence of prophecy as sufficient in itself to prove His claims." p 10' THE PROMISED MESSIAH'

Prophetic Revelation (PR) in Biblical inspiration is unequaled in its scope, depth and details. PR can reveal the end of history, the new heavens, new earth and then also reveal the details of the 30 pieces of silver that Judas was given for betraying Christ long before it ever occurred. Biblical PR evidences that it could only come from someone who is omnipresent, omniscient and omnipotent. The source of all Biblical prophecy is infinite and immeasurable and this is quite different than anything finite no matter what its power. Here are just some of the PR that point to the aspects of this book's premise, namely the rise of satanic globalism, the unleashing of a chaos that makes it possible, the development of satanic super soldiers and

the final war-Armageddon.

PR REVEALS A WAR

In Genesis 3:15 we have the first prophetic revelation ever given. It comes right after the fall of the human race and the entrance of the satanic presence as 'god of this world' (age-2 Corinthians 4:4). Just as separation from God and the sin code seizes humanity, God declares that a Messiah is coming and that there would be battle between Christ and satan. It declares satan's audacity to strike at Christ and orchestrate His crucifixion and reveals also that Christ will crush the full force and authority of satan and gain victory over all of what the fallen cherub has done.

PR REVEALS A MASSIVE CONSPIRACY

Three thousand years ago God not only revealed the actions of the world under globalism but the very disposition and feelings of the masses. Here in Psalm 2 God asks the question, WHY? Why do the nations rage/conspire and the peoples plot in vain. Why do the kings political/military leaders lead the way to make war on and fight against God… and against His Anointed One.

The Anointed one is the Lord Jesus Christ Himself, in Psalm 2 for sure and the spirit of antichrist will operate against Him until the end. This prophecy is given 1,000 years before Jesus comes the first time and 3,000 years before (at this time in history) the visible second coming of Christ. Its fulfillment is found in Revelation 19:19-20. PS2 reveals that the shadow government steeped in dark powers is the central conspiracy of all time. This conspiracy has been growing and has now revealed itself in the affairs of the world as never before. That is what the prophetic revelation of Scripture has said would happen and it's all right on track.

This 'conspiracy of the ages' is about to show itself to the world in the form of a chaos before its new order. It has both in its plot. The good news in all of this conspiracy, as it leads us to unequalled destruction, is that God has and is right now offering abounding grace…a way out. God addresses the political and military leaders who are being sucked into luciferian globalism from 3,000 years ago. God offers the way out…embrace the Son! Come to

Christ now and be freed, rescued and redeemed. That is the offer in Psalm 2. Here is another one from Isaiah 45:

"Turn to me and be saved, all you ends of the earth; for I am God, and there is no other"

As usual the Spirit of God calls for everyone to come to Christ and embrace Him. It gives warning to the Kings, nations and peoples who are being pulled into this luciferian globalism.

PR REVEALS 'REBELS' TO THE END

Twenty six hundred years ago in one of the most supernaturally engaging books of the Bible, Daniel would become the recipient of immediate prophetic insight and very long range prophecy. In this book we are impacted with the sheer accuracy of historical figures and of the rise and fall of major kingdoms/nations that have come and gone; Babylon, Mead-Persia, Greece and Rome. It also declares the events of the very end of history, the rise of a super evil kingdom and its globalist leader the antichrist. Here we get details of the antichrist as nowhere else in Scripture; his eyes, face, speech and much more.

In Daniel we also have the prophecies that tell us devastations will come, that war and bloodshed will remain until the return of Christ, there will be 'war on the saints' and that *wicked rebels* will remain to the end. It shows that devastations and violence will continue all the way to the very end. It is clear that it refers to the soldiers of antichrist and their use…which would include the black awakening/rebellion and the final war of Armageddon.

PR SAYS THAT THE END OF DAYS WILL BE VIOLENT

Jesus informed us in a massive prophetic revealing of the end of days in Matthew 24. He urged us to let no one deceive us and the end of days will include wars, violence and devastations. Jesus goes so far in this PR to warn that unless He cuts those days short no flesh would be left. Man's sin and the satanic agenda could go so far and unless stopped bring annihilation to the human race. Now that is massive! Dear reader it is very clear that the last

days will include spiritual seduction, the loss of many lives and the reign of radical evil.

PR REVEALS A SUPER ARMY IN THE END

Revelation 1919 has not yet occurred. It may be ten or more years away but it will come. No prophetic revelation has ever failed as a whole or in any of its details. There will be a final war and it's called Armageddon. This prophecy which is part of a massive array of future prophetic revelation was given 2,000 years ago. There will be on the field waiting for the appearance of Jesus Christ in His foretold second coming, the antichrist and his massive globalist army. That army on the field will be the biggest, mightiest and most powerful in all of history. It is an army raised, marked and trained for this full onslaught satanic battle. It's an army that was built over time and I believe it is one that includes the current creation of the super soldier *chosen ones*.

PR SAYS AN ARMY IS GROWING

In Matthew 13 the parable of the 'tares' that is given lifts up the veil and reveals the hidden spiritual work of the evil one. It reveals that the hidden spiritual work has a corresponding manifestation into visible history. In Matthew 13 these 'tares' (servant soldiers) are here only because of the satanic presence, power and will. Satan is creating an army and it's done by design and in a dark spiritual evolution.

Jesus reveals here what the Scriptures teach about a 'secret power of lawlessness' as seen in 2 Thessalonians Chapter 2. This dark occult power is operating at this very hour (this lawlessness means; opposing any and all of God and His work). Jesus 2,000 years ago gives a picture of what is going on behind the scenes of normal human sight. It is a revelation of the active ongoing agenda of satan's work. It reveals the creation of a counterfeit spiritual kingdom, demonic doctrine, the development of satanic servants and of their placement among the real people of God. It also exposes how the evil one works (without rest) in the dark. It exposes a shadow supernatural conspiracy operating and evolving.

PR REVEALS A COMING GREAT REVOLT

The Spirit of God has given us a picture of many prophetic events. He as revealed not only what God is doing and will do, the Holy Spirit also reveals what I have called 'the sequence of satanic evolution', that is, the step by step (process) of satan's agenda. God knows every move of the 'secret power' and hidden work of the evil one. In PR the Spirit of God reveals what no one could know otherwise. The world with its crisis, destabilization and never ending conflicts would make no sense without the insight that God gives on the activity of radical evil and its affect on society.

The Spirit who gives all of biblical prophecy reveals that the return of Christ (rapture and visible return) will not occur until two major events take place. In 2 Thessalonians Chapter 2 God reveals a 'great revolt' and the 'apocalypse of the antichrist' have to occur first before the coming of Jesus. It's the 'great revolt' that is of great interest here. Let's look at a few things:

It is called a 'great revolt' in older English and Latin translations. It is translated rebellion in most new ones. The concept is not that of a slow sliding away of believers. The very meaning of the word refers to a massive event, a violent overthrow or coup. It's even used in older Greek language for a military coup or overthrow. This Greek word for 'rebellion' is used in Acts 21:21 in reference to the coup/overthrow that occurred in society when Moses went up on the mountain. That overthrow was seen as a violent turning of the people and an agenda to replace God with another totally different disposition and agenda..satanic worship.

The 'great revolt' that is prophesized is not from God, it is revealed by God but is accomplished by evil. It is directly connected to the apocalypse of the man of lawlessness. It's best translated 'rebellion' or 'revolt' because of its meaning of a willful and violent action. It has the idea of 'attack' and that it's attack brings harm.

The old Williams translation says 'great revolt'. God's Word translation says "revolt" and International translation says 'rebellion'. Douay-Rheims says 'revolt'. The NIV, ESV and the Net Bible say 'rebellion'. The NIGTC-New International Greek Testament Commentary digs in to this word

'rebellion' and on p 244 says:

"Paul probably taught that the apostasy (rebellion) was to come about through the activity of the person of rebellion."(Antichrist)

New Testament scholar Gene L Green in his commentary 'THE LETTERS TO THE THESSALONIANS' reveals on p 307 that this word 'revolt':

"In ancient writings a *rebellion (apostasia)* could be understood as being against any kind of established authority; be it political…religious and against God"

The 'great revolt' is revealed in that chapter in the context of the coming of the antichrist, the active work of the secret power of lawlessness, the satanic powers of counterfeit miracles, signs and wonders. It is in the context of warnings to not let anyone deceive you (by satanic powers) and is a reaffirmation of the real sequence of Christ's return (revolt and antichrist first).

It is clearly my understanding this word 'revolt' reveals the willful and violent attack against God's people and all that is God's within society. It speaks of a massive rebellion/chaos that is plotted and caused by the antichrist and satanic powers. I believe that this revelation exposes the satanic plot to unleash a chaos/attack in order to replace it with the coming reign of antichrist.

PR REVEALS THE ERUPTION OF THE RED HORSE

In Revelation Chapter 6 we see the unleashing of the four horsemen of the 'apocalypse'. If the white horse refers to the counterfeit Christ/ antichrist or even the 'spirit of antichrist' (see 1John 4) it is clear that he or the spirit of antichrist seeks to conquer/dominate. This conquering involves controlling the spiritual as well as the physical realm.

When the red horse breaks out, the picture is of a 'bursting' out and a violent unleashing. The effects of this release are the immediate removal of peace from all of society (the earth). This is an abrupt event that 'takes'

peace from the earth. This red fiery (pyros) horse also reveals that it *causes the eruption of 'men violently slaying each other*. The word used here refers more to a civil insurrection and criminal murder/killings and the actual word can be translated 'butcher'. The Net Bible footnote # 15 says:

"…killing of a person by violence…butcher or murder someone"

It is a picture of an eruption of people breaking out and violently slaughtering others in a type of civil battle and this is what the black awakening is all about.

PR REVEALS THAT THE SATANIC GOAL IS ARMAGEDDON

Psalm 2 is the amazing prophecy that foretells the end of history and the conspiracy of kings, nations and the masses of people under the reign of antichrist. It shows the new luciferian order will be 'against' God and 'against' Christ. Revelation 19:19 is the fulfillment of that ancient Psalm and unveils that a super military/army is on the field with the antichrist. The sole objective of that super soldier military is to 'make war on' Jesus Christ as He is descending at the second coming.

There is no Armageddon without this super army on the field. There is no super army without its recruitment, training and deployment and we all know you cannot raise an army like this over night. From Psalm 2 to Revelation 19:19 the fact is that a satanic conspiracy involving political/military leaders, nations and people will plan, plot and create a super soldier military so massive and so demonic it will take on Christ. The goal is to annihilate Jesus and this is satan's third attempt. The first two failed and prophetic revelation tells us this coming final one will fail miserably.

PR REVEALS AN ARMY FOR PERSECUTION

How will you stop millions of Christians and the influence of the Christian Church in society and among the nations? Well, you can seek to get rid of them! That was Rome's response to the miraculous growth of the church 2.000 years ago. The martyrdom then was outrageous and may be the reason why God crushed Rome under the feet of the Church (see Romans 16:20).

God does take note of those who come against His people. Jesus did intervene when Saul was going to harm more believers (see Acts 9). Revelation 7 reveals millions of believers in Christ are in heaven in the middle part of the great tribulation. It shows they were martyrs who have come from every tribe, nation, language and people group. If this is a prophetic/futuristic look at a global attack and persecution of those who believe in Jesus and many die then we must ask: Who could issue a call to persecute Christian's world-wide and who would be the agents of this world wide attack?

The call comes from antichrist and the persecution is carried out by his troops. Many *chosen ones* have inside them a rage against Christians. They tell me they can't wait to spill Christian blood and desire to slaughter as many as possible. I have seen their programmed demon empowered hate, I have felt their attempts of murder and attack. I have seen what they can do and they by the thousands are very capable of being used to carry out orders of annihilating millions who simply believe in Jesus.

THE COMING REVOLT MUST HAVE CHOSEN ONES

What all of these *chosen ones* and their sub personalities have told me over the last 20+ years agrees with and runs parallel to the Biblical and prophetic revelation. They say they are the troops of antichrist; that millions of them have been and are being created to serve him. They claim to be super solders and will be used to cause a vast chaos/revolt. They claim antichrist is here and that the black awakening/revolt is just a few years away.

There can be no massive revolt-rebellion or satanic black awakening without the numbers of soldier servants to carry it out. The vast numbers of victims of SRA/MPD confirm to us either sick people just wanted blood, sex and demons or that the stories of many are true; the agenda is to create hundreds of thousands of controlled super fighters who will be called or activated to unleash hell on earth and flip society over so a new one can begin.

I believe the chosen ones are purposely created and made to be the agents and servants of the antichrist and there may be more of them than

anyone has realized.

FINALLY

If you know Scripture, both the PR referring to what God is doing and going to do and also what satan is doing and about to do, you will understand much. Prophetic Revelation is the specially selected intelligence God has given for our best. It can warn, astound and cause us to prepare. Dear reader God has not left us in the dark. He has not left us with mere guess work. If you feel the evil in the air and see the end of days are really here then look to God's strategic PR to see what is coming next and what you can do.

Just as Peter on the day of Pentecost said by the Spirit of God to the crowds 'this is that' (see Acts 2) -referring to the direct fulfillment of the prophet Joel's prophecy about the very day of Pentecost, so too you can know the prophecies and use them to build up your faith in Christ. You can use them to evangelize the people around you; after all Jesus came not to condemn the world but to save it (John 3:17).

If you have time seek to know and memorize this Word of God. Check out 1 Peter 1:10-12. Learn this passage well. Seek to do what great prophets of long ago did.

"Concerning this salvation, the prophets, who spoke of the grace that was to come to you, searched intently and with the greatest care, trying to find out the time and circumstances to which the Spirit of Christ in them was pointing when he predicted the sufferings of Christ and the glories that would follow."

1 Peter 1:10

PART FOUR

CHOSEN ONES

WHERE

THEY ARE NOW

BEFORE

THE FIRE FALLS

"Be very careful, then, how you live-not as unwise but as wise, making the most of every opportunity, because the days are evil"

Ephesians 5

CHAPTER 27
ENGAGING CHOSEN ONES NOW

"And now compelled by the Spirit, I am going…… not knowing what will happen to me there" Acts 20

"It is difficult to identify a hypnoprogrammed, mind-controlled person, if he does not consciously know that fact about himself. p 357 'SECRET, DON'T TELL'

"An example of the satanic cult programming came up in a conversation I had recently with a therapist in Ohio. He is working with a client struggling with satanic cult flashbacks from her childhood." P 77 'BREAKING THE CIRCLE OF SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE'

You may have worked with a multiple and didn't know it. You may even know one right now. They are not crazy but they have had a lot of sophisticated damage done to them. Usually the upfront person that is working next to you or the one that is at your school (or church) wouldn't hurt a fly, but they may have predator programmed sub personalities that could take your head off if they wanted. I have been with many SRA/MPD victims and for the most part they have been harmless to the staff and me. Most of them just want to find out what is wrong with them and get help.

If there are over 4 million victims it's amazing to me that a lot more perpetrators haven't gone to jail, at least not yet. It's also amazing that with so many victims, books and information out, that most everyone I meet has no idea what satanic ritual abuse is or what multiplicity is all about. But this is the nature of the secrecy that surrounds this condition. It is cloaked in dark

secrecy and is supposed to stay totally hidden. Victims are not to mention anything and they have 'programmed amnesia' (don't tell conditioning). They are 'mind' controlled not to know or remember any of the bad stuff and if they do remember it is a kick in the head at first!

We are dealing with victims, with human beings who were taken from childhood and forced to live two lives: One in the real world and the other is a world of demons, sex, death and pain. To see a childhood picture of many of the victims I have dealt with at times seems to show the same life as anyone else. Yet here they are with dozens of sub personalities, voices inside them and a world of memories that would even scare victims at Nazi death camps.

So if you are going to engage a multiple, hopefully you are not doing it so you can look at them from afar as if they were a specimen in a glass dish. I am compelled to engage these victims because:

- I know something about them…sra/mpd is real.
- I know they are victims and are in deep need.
- I know that some are seeking help.
- I know that they can't get out without help.
- I know they need Christ, salvation, healing and set free.
- I know there is a love and compassion they haven't tasted.

ABDUCTED AND RUINED

When I first met with this teenager he was scared and fearful of what might happen to him. He came to stay with us for a few days until I could get him back home. He was so passive and unassuming yet there was another world going on the inside of him. I watched him as many others at church talked to him. They sensed he was hurting but had no idea that he had a sub personality that when triggered would seek to commit suicide.

They didn't know he had been to blood sacrifices and was sexually abused for days by a rogue chosen one. In him were some demons that were placed during a ritual ceremony. There were also phrases he was repeating that no

one seemed to understand. It was backward Latin, a ritual calling for the demonic to come.

You could be around him and he was as harmless as a fly but I would never leave him alone or with someone else's children. What was in him would look for the opportunity to harm them.…in a second. It would take some time to find out what happened to him.

During those meetings I would get outraged with what was done to him. I wanted to go after the man who did it. This boy was demonized, sexually addicted and a predator. He harmed himself and others who didn't know what he was or how to deal with what was inside him. To this day he is not healed and it's clear that his childhood and life up to this point has been stolen. There are thousands more in your state or area that had the same or worse ritual/total abuse.

KNOWING ABOUT THEM HELPS

If you know about satanic ritual abuse and have some insight to multiple personality disorder then you know more than most. You can educate yourself and even read this entire book but when you engage a victim…that's really when you begin to learn. Those reading this work are like the many listeners who hear me on the radio. They could be victims who are seeking someone who knows, or it could be the perpetrator reading and wanting to know what we know and how they can counter us.

There are others who care about end time events and want to know how some prophecies are fulfilled. Looking at R1919 with its mass army of super soldiers and weapons begs an answer to the questions: Who are they? Who recruited and trained them? And why would they want to destroy Jesus Christ as He descends from heaven? You are reading this and wondering how or why? Unless you know the satanic agenda and the need for globalism with a massive loyalty to the antichrist army then much of this will be a mystery.

There are many books and ones I have quoted that can speak about the reality of SRA/MPD but cannot touch the spiritual depth, discern the dark spirits or see the big picture: The millions of victims who are being treated are only part of the whole. There are many more and they are here with an

agenda.

THEY ARE HERE BY DESIGN

They are here by design. They have been created, programmed, 'energized' (demonized) and controlled to perform a task, a very big one. The ultimate agenda and reason for the *chosen one's* existence are:

- THE BLACK AWAKENING. They are created to prepare for and be placed until the call (the activation) is given and then they are supposed to unleash hell's plot of revolt, rebellion, chaos and anarchy. Make no mistake this is their design! This is the reason for the demonic technology that created them.
- TO MAKE WAY FOR AND SERVE HOMOSATANAS. The upfront person and many sub personalities who want free don't want to do this but if you get to the coven loyal, German speaking or military trained sub persons they will tell you….they are the troops of the coming world leader. Many of them will serve during the rule of antichrist.

If you meet a multiple they may not show or tell you much, at least not at first. Many of them are 'intact' and don't even know they are multiple much less a satanic super soldier (*chosen one*). If you start to work with one or try to help them don't start with *'you're a satanic chosen one who is going to kill many*…". If they have no idea what is inside they may just fall apart. Start with where they are. You can start with loving them, praying for them, talk to sub parts as they come up, protect them, begin to seek their salvation in Christ, healing and deliverance from the demonic.

As you begin to help you will have to keep an eye out for demonic deception, sub personalities who will tell on you and for possible handlers/coven members who want to stop you. You can be sure you will experience ramped up spiritual warfare too. And one more thing, if you are going to help, remember they are here by design, they are here to be used to do great harm. Helping them get free will stop them from doing the destruction they were designed for. You can also check out our 24+ hours of mp3s that deal with the basics of helping SRA/MPD; these will help you and

help you help them.

THEY ARE EVERYWHERE

I have met SRA/MPD victims '*chosen ones'* in the hospitals, counseling centers, churches, law enforcement, and military, at a restaurant, on the job and in other social meetings. Remember there may have been up to 10 million of them and many more are being forged as you read. There is an agenda!

One person told me why some if not most were called monarchs. The monarch butterfly is one of the only little creatures who have migrated to every continent on the earth. Thus the idea that *chosen ones* have be made and then placed around the world. It is true that Canada, the USA, England, Germany, Russia, Israel and other nations have SRA/MPD victims. One must ask….How big is this issue?

Dear friend, the creation of *chosen ones* for the purpose of creating the black awakening and ushering in the antichrist is a multinational agenda. This thing is global and they have been placed everywhere.

You can start to pray for God to expose the active intact ones. Pray that God will cause the demonic power in them to be crushed and they will begin to realize what was done to them. Pray also for God to rescue them and that they can escape. You might want to build a team that will seek them, find them and help get them out. I will tell you if you begin praying this way…… you will find them or they will find you!

THEY CAN AND SHOULD BE REACHED

As I have just said you can begin to pray to be aware of them and where they might be. The goal is to help, heal, deliver and get them saved (knowing God in Christ). They should be reached for these clear reasons:

- Salvation! God is not willing for anyone to perish and wills/desires all people to come to the truth and be saved. If you are involved with the great commission (Matthew 28) and are reaching people for Christ then

you most likely will run into an SRA/MPD victim. You may be led to them or they were led to you. God loves people and Jesus came to set captives free. Whatever the satanic agenda has done to them God in Christ can undo.

- Healing! Jesus is the great healer, just look through the gospel of Mark and you will see the compassion, power and willingness Jesus had in touching hurting people with his mercy. Seek to learn all you can about the healing work of Jesus and seek Him to lead you to bring victims healing. They need physical, mental, emotional healing. The inner healing that Jesus can bring to provide wholeness is awesome, needed and available.
- Set free! Every victim of satanic ritual abuse has demonic presence in some manner. Since there has been a ramping up of demonic presence more and more people will have trouble with demons. *Chosen ones* will have demons inside and on some or many sub personalities. Deliverance work must be done to get them helped and healed. You will also engage more spiritual warfare and personal attack…and that's ok, you will be able to exercise greater resistance to satanic presence (James 4), become experienced in the battle (Eph.6), use and see the authority of Christ defeat the demonic (Luke 10) and see the power of God demonstrated (Acts 16).

Look again at the gospel of Mark and in the first chapter alone Jesus is bringing salvation, healing and deliverance. This is the core of His work. Keep studying the gospels and the book of Acts. You will need to know what the Living Christ can and does do as He seeks the salvation of people and the destruction of evil. All of this incredible evil, its depth and agenda is not a surprise for God. God is infinite and I believe has already 'prepared' ministry that will reach these victims…He is just looking for Christ filled servants who will jump into this fray! (See Ephesians 2:10)

FINALLY

Thank you for reading about all of this. Most who get this book will want to help in some way. Perpetrators and committed *chosen ones* may just get mad…but God is seeking you too. For those who want to help learn all you

can, pray for exposure against the demonic and for Holy Spirit insight. Maybe you can form a team that will seek to find the victims and help them out and to Jesus. One thing is clear, if you are willing to get involved doors of ministry will open. Remember this:

"Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today and forever" Hebrews 13

CHAPTER 28
UNCOVERING THE MYSTRY OF SRA/MPD PERPETRATORS

"Nothing in all creation is hidden from God's sight. Everything is uncovered and laid bare before the eyes of him to whom we must give an account" Hebrews 4

"Just as man is destined to die once, and after that to face judgment" Hebrew 9

"Then I saw a great white throne and him who was seated on it. Earth and sky fled from his presence, and there was no place for them. And I saw the dead, great and small, standing before the throne, and books were opened……the dead were judged according to what they have done as recorded in the books." Revelation 20

I hope you realize now that there are at least 4 or more million victims of this horror. If you do then at some point you will begin to realize *chosen ones* were forced into this SRA/MPD since birth and there is someone…some perpetrator(s) behind this agenda. I am confident that in the end God will bring all of the perpetrators to justice and none will escape. Those who are the satanic priests, military splitter/programmers…..all of those involved in harming people will face the wrath of God. Some may be cut short and be dealt with as prayer warriors get involved now.

It may be that one perpetrator who has had 50 years of creating *chosen ones* will read this. There is a chapter toward the end of this book for you. A

person like this may have created hundreds of victims. This means that hundreds of these victims had their core spilt, programming forced in and demons transferred on them. Each victim may have gone through many trauma based episodes, rituals, sexual exploitations and been forced to commit acts that no one should even talk about.

Perpetrators like Cain have blood on their hands and will give an account for all they have done. God has and will destroy some of them even now. If God can take down Pharaoh and his army He can deal with these perpetrators.

When you realize what the perpetrators have to do to create a split, force in programming and all the rest then you know that they are as dark as hell and must have no conscience left. How they can harm children, sexually abuse them, and do it again and again…I say thank God for the coming judgment! Even now I and many others do pray about perpetrators…..the hour is late. Jesus has warned you:

"It would be better for him to be thrown into the sea with a millstone tied around his neck that for him to cause one of these little ones to sin"

Luke 17

GIRL IN THE CROWD

I was in Pennsylvania teaching on spiritual warfare and satanic ritual abuse. As always at these pre-announced conferences there were infiltrators from the brotherhood present. There was also a young girl who talked to one of our helpers. I saw her there a few times and each time she looked over at me…knowing I knew what she was. I asked the worker afterward who talked to her and she told me the details. This 17 year old was a multiple. Her grandfather was the perpetrator and a number of sub personalities made themselves known. The worker wanted to just take the girl from there and hide her. I felt the same thing and when we went back we looked for her, however she was gone. I asked the pastor about her and all he knew was her name. The teen did not return and for now we have lost our opportunity to

help.

Cases like this haunt me. I know they are back with the perpetrators; they are being used, abused, split, programmed, demonized and for most of them.…by members of their own coven connected family!

Note:

"For every victim of SRA/MPD there is at least one perpetrator who is the cause of their victimization…..let's see now- 4 million + victims and then……..how many perpetrators?"

WHERE IT ALL BEGINS

It all begins in the heart of the desecrated fallen cherub. The idea, technology and process were evolved in the dark heart and evil mind of satan himself. It's clear that he spins his evil web and moves those who follow him to do his will (captive to do Satan's will). It is satan who tore himself from God and turned himself inside out (Ezekiel 28). It was satan who led 1/3 of the angels astray and the human race into death (Genesis 3). He does lead God rejecting people to 'invent ways of doing evil'. Romans 1

Though it all starts with the evil one (he has been sinning from the beginning…1 John 3) the evil has spread! Those who are creating SRA/MPD *chosen ones* are doing satan's will and most of them know it too. Please realize that perpetrators I have engaged have shown commitment to the luciferian agenda and will do everything to perform satan's agenda. They have shown hate, sent dark powers, threatened and plotted evil against us: They are the sons and daughters of hell itself and the sad fact is that many of them are older SRA/MPD recruits!

The agenda of satan to stop Christ in the end (R1919) is a long and drawn out process. It is the sequence of satanic evolution within humanity that has developed and brought about this grave evil. False doctrines, false Christs, counterfeit miracles and deceiving spirits are all flowing from hell's polluted waters. This means dear reader that the whole process is energized with dark

powers and overseen like nothing else in any human endeavor.

THE MILITARY

Even if this kind of mind control and the dream of creating a master race of super warriors (Aryans) started with the Nazis the fact is that all of it is tracked back to demonic technology. If you have a hard time thinking about 'demonic' technology please read and understand 1Timothy 4. It is the revelation of how dark 'imposter' (planos) spirits have an aggressive agenda to lead people astray. These dark forces can inspire/influence with 'involuntary thoughts-ideas-revelation-data-feelings' and convince individuals to put on paper the information they are receiving. This 'voice to skull' form of communication is the most sophisticated and seductive form of messaging around. It's old but very much like 'texting'…from the dark spirits to the mind and heart of individuals.

This form of dark spirit to individual communication includes:

- The inspiration and formation of political ideology
- The inspiration and formation of Military weapons systems and future planetary defense weapons.
- The inspiration and formation of ideas and concepts for 'science', psychology and or religion. The concept to split the human core, program it and purposely create MPD so the victim can be used as a weapon is not from God.
- The inspiration and formation of super technology of the coming 'mark of the beast' and the living 'image of the beast' mentioned in the book of Revelation comes from satanic force.
- The inspiration and formation of satanic rituals, how to conjure spirits, satanic warfare and the goal of creating a massive chaos before a new luciferian order flows from one mind alone…the fallen cherub.

US military weapons makers, lab scientists and leaders may have no idea that once you reject God and the ethics of imago dei (the image of God in man) then any evil cloaked as 'science' or 'technology' will be nothing more than the devil in a white lab coat. There is a mountain of facts in the freedom

of information act and other documentation in Colin's book. You can also see the documentation in 'JOURNEY INTO MADNESS', MANCHUIAN CANIDATE' 'SECRET WEAPONS' AND 'SECRET DON'T TELL'- authors listing is in the bibliography.

THE PSYCHS

It is a psychologist who has exposed what many other psychologists have bought into and what evil they have practiced. Colin Ross a Canadian psychologist who wrote THE CIA DOCTORS has named names, locations and projects that were involved in the mind control procedures. The book PSYCHIARTY AND THE CIA: Victims of Mind Control will tell you much of the same. All of this information makes me ask why most psychologists I have met seem to have no clue as to the involvement of psyches in their field. The book written by G.H. Estabrooks 'HYPNOTISM' seems to be a massive confession and revelation of the ability of psychologists to create multiple personally 'disorder.' I have argued that this mind/soul control is not so much a 'disorder' but a purposely created condition!

Including law enforcement, politicians, preachers and the like you can't blame all in the field of psychology for what the few have done but there is so much information and documentation that one wonders why the DSM-3 and 4 does not acknowledge the source of the MPD/DID condition; maybe because it is so supernaturally secret, totally criminal and many should be charged…if not here then for sure at the Great White Throne.

THE COVENS, LUCIFERIANS AND THE ILLUMINATI

In father Steffon's book 'IS SATANISM REAL?' he estimates 100,000 covens in the USA. I would say that the real system of underground trans-generational luciferianism is much broader and the luciferians would agree. Please remember hundreds of thousands of victims are found in many other countries of the world. Since this is a luciferic technology and agenda much of the creation of MPD/DID is done directly by them. I do believe that the technology has gone from the luciferian covens and brought into military 'science'.

The lure of the weaponization of multiplicity for use in a military advantage was and is just too much to pass up by hungry secret projects. D.A.R.P.A. has this same flaw today; *the desire to use anything and do anything to get the advantage is bred into the whole of the military system.* The major problem is that this 'advanced technology' was and is a Trojan horse…and US military will be bitten badly when the black awakening occurs. The very technology they have acquired, used and advanced will come to haunt them when thousands of these super soldiers turn on and sabotage this country's military system.

Marshall G. Thomas in his book 'MONARCH: The New Phoenix Program' connects the dots of US military and its association with dark spiritual cults, occult and satanic covens. Marshall says on p 60:

"The intelligence agencies have infiltrated and created some satanic groups…."

The real problem is that it may be the other way around. Many people in the intelligence agencies were and are into dark spiritual practices. The Nazi doctors and scientists who were deeply versed in the 'black flame' carried this agenda for a Chaos before a New Order right into US military laps/minds. They also unleashed across the country in great secrecy, on farms and in the basements of tens of thousands of homes the goal to create a monster army.

GENERATIONAL FAMILY TIES

Every *chosen one* can trace their victimization to a bloodline family member. Dads, moms, grandfather and grandmothers have all been part of this. Each victim I have worked with who had the depth of '*chosen one'* status has personal family members who are part of the plan. Almost every victim we have tracked has immediate family and then grandparents who are part of this long dark process.

In some cases I have now there are four generations involved. I have some SRA/MPD victims whose mother and grandmother were and are active perpetrators. These same victims have a child (in their 20's) who is

SRA/MPD and now they have smaller children who are SRA/MPD.

It all does go way back. Nazis and others who are in there 70's -80's have produced children who are MPD (Nazi master race children) who are now in their 50's. Then this next generation who are perpetrators too now have their 'kids'! Victims who are in their 50's (hundreds of thousands of them) and are unhealed have children in their late 20's who are now SRA/MPD also….and now we have these 20+ year old victims who have small children to early teens who are SRA/MPD. Four generations are now traced. Some are healed but most are not.

As I write, the 'fourth' generation which may be the largest segment is into the millions. It is very hard to detect SRA/MPD in small children (except by those who are sra/mpd) and for them the newest technology is being used.

CHOSEN ONE VICTIMS/PERPS

The *chosen one* in PA who called to ask me if I knew whether or not she was healed wanted to know because she wanted her children back from Children's Services. All of her kids were taken away because all of them had experienced sexual and other physical abuses. All of this abuse was done by active unhealed sub personalities within the birth mother!

Please realize dear reader that the sub personality who is programmed-demonized and trained can and does split and program the next generation. They don't see those children as directly theirs, only as fodder for the black flame. There is no emotional bond or desire to protect the kids of the 'main' birth mother. Sub personalities who are programmed, demonized and committed to the luciferian agenda only know that they must keep the process going. The process to make more *chosen ones* is built in to sub personalities who are *chosen ones*. There are sub personalities who will want the host person to get pregnant…they want their chance to create another *chosen one*. There are sub personalities who want the main person…who is unaware and unhealed to obtain foster children/babies for only one purpose…to use them.

If you are a counselor, helper and or a victim coming out of the sra/mpd system….look for this process, it will be very secretive and protected but it

will be there. Always…no matter what, save the children!

FINALLY

Radical evil does not care about 'feelings' they only care about what their nature dictates and what their raging agenda is all about. There is passion, power and a personality behind this hellish project and it is a project. It had a start and there is a desired end. You will understand more how there can be four generations of creating sra/mpd when you know what this is all for. There are three major parts to the creation of all these….what we call victims:

- First is the need to create servants of the satanic side who can help bring in spiritual confusion and darker presence. To have those who will help broaden this agenda and create more and more super soldiers (*chosen ones*).
- Second, these super soldiers (sra/mpd chosen ones) are here to do two main things. Phase one…to unleash the desired 'black awakening'/chaos/revote and all for that one urgent purpose….make way for the arrival or the antichrist!
- Thirdly, the antichrist is creating and is seeking the largest military structure (super solders) that history will record. He must have the planetary weapons and this global army who will obey/comply with the call (Revelation16) of the spirits. They are sent to 'gather together' all of them and use them to make war (R1919).

Yes! From first to last the fallen cherub knows why and what he needs these controlled servants for. Wherever the first *chosen one* was created to the last one formed the overall goal is the same, make mind/soul controlled super soldiers. When you are helping the sra/mpd seek healing and get out of that system you are taking what satan himself claims and feels is his. So if you have a fight on your hands then know it's far more that 'flesh and blood'. Please see Ephesians Chapter 6 verse 10 on down.

CHAPTER 29
CHOSEN ONES AND PSYCH WARDS

"The mind of sinful man is death, but the mind controlled by the Spirit is life and peace…." Romans 8

"It is possible that Freud's own work may be rooted in occultism, more specifically in Jewish Cabala." P 104 'SPIRITUALY AND THE OCCULT'

"Jung had a lifelong interest in religion, especially the esoteric mystical tradition. His doctoral thesis was dedicated to the 'Psychology of So-Called Occult Phenomena…"p 107 'SPIRITUALITY AND THE OCCULT'

"Part of the pain a broken heart must suffer is the thought that the offender, the heartbreaker, is going to get away with it all….but God keeps the books…" p 17-18 'HAVE YOU EVER FELT LIKE GIVING UP LATELY'

I have been in the psych ward many times…*as a visitor seeking to help the afflicted*. It's tough in there. You're locked in and your trouble is not yet over. There are others around you who may be far worse off than you. There is a lot of fear, angst, depression and paranoia in those halls. I do believe that the local psych ward is a testament to the fall of mankind, our sin and its affects. It is also a testament to the existence of radial evil…supernatural demonic powers.

A *chosen one* was signed into a local psych ward by the sub personalities who were directed to do so by handlers. She was an officer who called to tell me that another personality signed them in. When she came out many other personalities where gone (buried) and so was the information she was

telling us about. Inside that psych ward was a man who was planted to reel in the chosen ones who were going astray. He would shut down the sub personalities who were talking and remind the rest of server punishment.

Please don't be deceived, psychology has deep rooted beliefs that guide its diagnosis of the afflicted. There are some high level mind control specialists who were/are a part of this discipline (Cameron, Estabrooks, West, and Orne). Some psychology and individual psychologists have a deep background with dark occult leanings too. The psychologist Jung is one of them, his belief system of the collective unconscious is what many occultists, psychics, remote viewers and new agers use, many of them see it as the 'hall of records' (akashic records). This is really the place of the 'prince of the power of the air (atmosphere), the 'spirit' who is now at work…." yes even at work in psychologists! Everyone's beliefs affect their discipline and practice; this includes the most celebrated psychologists in history.

The Bobgans write on p 12-13 of 'PSYCHOHERESY':

"Jung himself repudiated Christianity and explored other forms of religious experience, including the occult……" "Freud argued that religions are delusionary and therefore evil. Jung, on the other hand contended that all religions are imaginary but good".

Today many in this field will use guided imagery, hypnotherapy and even give out books like 'THE COURSE IN MIRACLES' written 'partially' by a psychologist who claims a spirit has guided her to write what is a new syncretistic spirituality. This new revelation turns a person from Christ to another gospel. There is a lot of new age 'spirituality' in modern psychology and the spirits behind it are recognized quickly by SRA/MPD victims…they know the spirit world well.

THE MIS-DIAGNOSED

In the 70's some of those who are SRA/MPD were diagnosed as paranoid schizophrenic and were treated as such. Misdiagnosis of an ailment will not lead to the proper treatment. There is also a high number of real sra/mpd termed bipolar because they did not show all the signs of being multiple.

Some sub personalities may just stay buried until they get out and can continue their tasks. Others have inside punishers who will not let them talk so they may not evidence full multiplicity.

I do wonder why if in 1947 psychologist G.H. Estabrooks who claimed in his book 'HYPNOTISM' that they could create and undue (remove) the alter or sub personalities that they created why this ability is not used...either they can't or won't. Most psychologists and those I read in this field tell of a very long process of integration and seem to struggle with success for the victims. There is more to creating sub personalities than hypnotism; it involves tearing the core person apart and that is not a normal process. It is a vast violent violation. Splitting human personality is an evil process filled with trauma and abuse. And what is it done for? More abuse, mind control and crime.

Please realize that if you misdiagnose a person you will mistreat them also. Treatment is meant to deal with a diagnosed condition but if you diagnose an SRA/MPD as something else and then offer the wrong treatment (healing) no help will be given. If you do not know what this 'creation' of sub personalities is all about, the satanic rituals (they have been through) and the presence of the demonic you will not lead them to healing.

When a psychologist tells a real SRA/MPD that the memories of rituals are fake and a delusion, that demons are only a figment of the imagination and no one wants to control them, they offer helpless psychobabble and evidence the issue of SRA/MPD is beyond their expertise. Even worse there are some psychologists who may be helping to silence sub personalities and shut down the facts.

THE VICTIMS SEEKING HELP

When the SRA/MPD *chosen one* begins to break down they will seek help and many times they will go to the psychologist or a psych ward. They can have some of the following symptoms:

- They begin missing time. They may be going in one direction but find themselves on the other side of town and not know how they got there.

- They hear voices in their head and may think that everyone does…at first. And it may not be just voices but full conversations.
- They have dreams and flashes of some bits of memory that begin to surface; this may bring them great fear. Traumatic experiences get encoded in a person's 'memory' and at times are buried…to forget it. But like a beach ball that is filled with air and pushed under the water those memories will begin to surface and when they do all the feelings of trauma come too.
- They burst out and say things to others and don't remember and even deny they said it. This is when other sub personalities override them and speak out. They don't know and don't remember saying anything because it's not in their part of memory.
- They buy items at a store and later wonder where it came from. They, a sub personality can also change the color of their hair and then the main person wonders how it happened and changes it back.

Becoming aware that you're a multiple is both strange and very frightening. Some victims think they are going crazy at first and need to be told they are not insane and that it is not their fault! In the beginning a very experienced person who has worked with SRA/MPD may see the symptoms and even talk to sub personalities long before the main (host…some call presenting personality) knows. The victim/person may be totally unaware of their real condition. They call this being 'amnesic' (total unawareness-no memory of it) and…part of the creation and control of a *chosen one* has this amnesic barrier(s).

THE VICTIM PERPATRATORS

There are victims of SRA/MPD who have sub personalities who seek to harm others in the psych ward and psychologist's office. Some of them have sexual predators and coven trained inside as sub personalities; many of them have informers and punishers also. If they are not engaged they can come out in a psych ward and 'trigger' other victims and or harm other patients. It's hard to keep an eye on everyone all the time so some sub personalities can take advantage of how things work and calculate their activities.

Please realize too that the sub personalities can be ‘co-conscious’ and see-know-and observe everything going on around them without the host person or counselors even knowing. They may look for an opportunity to harm, rape and threaten the others. When sub personalities are not healed from their own sexual, physical or religious abuse they will sneak out and harm others…adults or children.

THE VICTIM INFILTATORS

There are *chosen ones* sent to psych wards and counseling wards. One girl was receiving help from a psychologist who knew us. Not long into the therapy another person began coming to the counseling center for ‘help’ and counseling. It was a multiple who was more intact and they were there on assignment. Usually they will come to scare the victim into leaving the psychologist, if that doesn’t work the victim SRA/MPD may disappear for a while.

Infiltrators can come from the coven or even such groups as the FMSF (False Memory Syndrome Foundation). I have received calls from SRA/MP victims who were in psych ward ‘in hospital’ care units who reported that there were other infiltrator ‘victims’ just collecting information and seeking to trigger others.

Perpetrators don’t want anyone to know what they have done and covens don’t want the secrets out. If you are in a counseling center and have noticed that new patients have shown up who may be eyeing or seeking to interact with your SRA/MPD victims then keep a close eye out…and always protect the main victims. If real victims who want out feel frightened or threatened they will not open up and this will hinder the healing process.

Perpetrators who infiltrate counseling centers do it for two purposes.

- To bring harm to the counselors and that office, especially if the counselor is having success with victims.
- To seek out SRA/MPD victims and shut them down…any way they can.

FINALLY

There have been and are right now thousands of SRA/MPD victims and *chosen ones* in psych-wards and counseling centers. Most are seeking help but others are there for harm. They all need to be engaged with treatment/help that fits the condition. They need spiritual, emotional, mental and social healing and I boldly tell you that the Lord Jesus Christ can touch all the areas of their need. In fulfillment of a 700 year old prophecy which was fulfilled in the coming of Christ we read….why Jesus came, what He did and dear reader what He is doing right now…today.

"The Spirit of the Lord is on me, because he has anointed me to preach good news to the poor. He has sent me to proclaim freedom for the prisoners and recovery of sight for the blind, to release the oppressed, to proclaim the year of the Lord's favor." Luke 4

CHAPTER 30
CHOSEN ONES AND THE CHURCH

"This matter arose because some false brother's had infiltrated our ranks to spy…." Galatians 2

"I know where you live-where satan has his throne…." Revelation 2

"On that day a great persecution broke out against the church…all but the apostles were scattered….Saul began to destroy the church." Acts 7

"WAR ON THE SAINTS" Tattooed on a satanists left wrist

In the community the Church is to be a beacon of light and a place of peace and safety though this is not what the early Christians experienced. The church is a place of prayer and spiritual activity and most would see it as a good thing. If you know the history of its work among the poor, helpless and homeless then you know its works are only good. It is not commissioned by Jesus to take up missile and guns, it is however to use 'weapons of warfare' on a spiritual basis.

The church has the frontline mission of leading people into a personal relationship with God and this is what the dominion of darkness doesn't want. To know that Jesus said He would build his Church and the gates of hell (Hades) would not prevail against it is striking to say the least. The Body of Christ is the only 'institution' in the world today that is a direct enemy of the "prince of the power of the air, the spirit (devil) who is at work…(Ephesians 2) …the evil one who is in control of the whole world" 1John5. It was birthed in the context of a spiritual conflict and its presence in

this fallen world is an intrusion as far as the dark side is concerned.

The early Church demonstrates its power and supernatural foundations in the Book of Acts chapters 1-6 with Jesus being alive from the dead and directly teaching them, the full power of the Holy Spirit falling upon them, sign wonders and miracles were occurring all around and anyone reading those first 6 chapters will see a 'spiritual institution' from head to toe. The birth of the Church is all about an agenda of redemption, healing and deliverance from satan's ownership. Colossians chapter 1 expresses this reality when it says:

"For he rescued us from the dominion of darkness and brought us into the kingdom of the Son he loves…."

If I call it an institution I must say that it is a 'living body' and a divine one with supernatural power, purpose and presence that backs it. A hamburger stand is there to make hamburgers, is generally a good thing…and I would say that the devil doesn't care. But put up a sign that says Jesus is Lord and start a prayer meeting in the back and then it becomes a bone of contention with dark forces. The Church from head to toe is about the person, work (Cross) and power of Jesus Christ. It is this Savior that exposes the reality of demonic origins, nature and agenda in the gospels.

His work at the cross is two pronged…one of love and redemption for humanity and at the same time destruction and defeat for the real presence and work of satan and demons. John 3:16 and 17 proclaim the central reason why Jesus came, God so loved us he gave Jesus to bring us into relationship with Him and receive the gift of eternal life. 1John 3 tells us "The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the devil's work." By His work on the Cross He opens heaven for all and reveals God's love and "disarmed the power and authorities, he made a public spectacle of them, triumphing over them by the cross."Colossians 2

Whatever your experience with God and the Church please realized that part of the reason for the creation of controlled servants of satan is to accomplish a very dark agenda. Satan is at war with God and the Church (people of God gathered in mission). This can be seen throughout early

Church history in the book of Acts. God's power is present and people get saved, healed and set free from dark powers (see Acts 8).

There is a constant spiritual battle with satan and demons throughout the mission of the Church and it is the Church satan seeks to compromise, harm and/or destroy. This spiritual battle will heat up as the end of days rolls out before us. Satan sought to infiltrate the early Church and its clear he seeks the same methodology until the end. The parable of the wheat and the tares was a revelation that satan will seek to create, transmute and deploy his workers to counter the Church until the very end. The tares, those directly created by supernatural means are here and among the Church more than ever in history.

MULTIPLES IN THE MEGA CHRUCH

I can tell you that every *chosen one* I have dealt with has been to or is in a Church and dear reader they have been in the Church for over 40 years now. Their perpetrator coven family members have brought them in when they were young and handlers have placed them as they became more useful. In my office alone pastors, counselors and other church members have and continue to bring me SRA/MPD victims who are in and in many cases are members of local churches.

From a local mega church (and from very small ones) multiples have come. One comes in to observe us and the sub personalities realize who we are and what we know. It was this one who told me that they see me with a big hole in my back…from a shotgun blast. Another one comes who is suing her perpetrator father. The Counselor/psychologist from the mega Church brought her and a number of others over to us for prayer. The mega church they are in says that they don't do 'deliverance' and this church turns over complex counseling cases to licensed psychologists. They in turn have brought *chosen ones* who have been members or were attending this large city church to us. I would say this church has a few dozen multiples. I would also say that the leadership had no idea what they were dealing with.

One of the SRA/MPD victims from this church had ritual marks and symbols on her back. She described a man who did these things to her. She said he had a key and that he took her with a few others to the library of this

church (12mid night -3am) for satanic rituals. This church like many others was infiltrated and had no idea. The man she was talking about was well known and thought to be an upstanding Christian.

He like many perpetrator coven handlers is 'doubling'. They present themselves one way but are really totally the opposite (remember Ezekiel 8 and who was in the coven). This mega Church had satanic rituals being done in it….without them having a clue. They had and have a dozen or more *chosen ones* among them, some who seek help, some who don't know, and others who are active…infiltrating and seeking harm. They even have some "sleepers", waiting for the day of activation that will unleash hell if not engaged now.

We would track and run surveillance with some of the SRA/MPD victims and find that they and other coven members were doing hidden rituals in four other churches in this area. I would be called into others states to deal with SRA/MPD victims and find the same scenario. Multiples have been there a long time, some of which are now coming out of the ritual abuse closet; others are operative and doing harm. What they have done or are doing by undisclosed sub personalities is another thing, something that needs to be engaged. I do believe that many if not most churches have *chosen ones* in them and here are some of the reasons.

THEY ARE THERE FOR COVER

To build a fake resume or cover; it may look like a great church family, the dad, mom and kids but something is wrong. The child is an intact multiple who is being taken through many rituals and being 'built' all the while the upfront (host/presenting child) person is amnesic to what's done in the night. The child seems to play and get along; they don't even know that there are other sub personalities inside them. The coven family only has them there for the 'show'. They are there to use the church as a cover. They may even get enough status to become leaders…then they could use the building.

The fact now as we look backward is that hundreds of thousands of current SRA/MPD victims who are in their 30's to 50's were when young taken to church by ritual practicing parents…by that brotherhood of darkness. That

these kids were being sexually, mentally and emotionally abused in the worst way and coming to Sunday school each week. Just ask the thousands of victims. They will tell you who the pastor was, what the church was like and how they were made to look like a little Christian darling!

THEY ARE THERE FOR HELP

Some are seeking Jesus and want help. The church is supposed to be a place where anyone is welcome and any need can be ministered to. Multiplicity is a complex issue and the satanic side of it all has laced it with supernatural and programmed secrecy. Some victims may come because they hear voices in their head or they have terrifying dreams. Others have home created sub personalities who seek healing and freedom. They look for someone to understand who and what they are. They want out of the ritual abuse and coven activities. They leave in fear of punishment and being taken back but some have tasted the love of Jesus and His power and will do anything to get completely free.

Once victims do see that Jesus is real and right they call on Him. Many victims have told me that they did ask Christ into their lives and that at the point of salvation the programming and dark powers begin to break. I have noticed over the years that those who really receive Jesus and have the Holy Spirit in them are the ones who keep getting more healing and deliverance. They seem to keep growing even if there are set backs or new sub personalities to engage. I have also seen with extremely damaged SRA/MPD victims that once Christ is in them they will not stop seeking total healing… and a new life in Him. For them this Word of God is true:

"Being confident of this, that he who began a good work in you will carry it on to completion, until the day of Christ Jesus" Philippians 1:6

THEY DON'T KNOW WHY THEY ARE THERE

Others are confused with many other conditions and come for help. They may have addictions and even manifest demonic presence on a surface level. Please remember that some victims of this agenda don't know what was done to them. They have been in the dark and are just seeking to figure out what

happened. They may feel they are there because they like the songs, love and presence of God. They may not know they have sub personalities who harm and will seek to harm.

Point! Just because they don't know what is going on doesn't mean that sub personalities don't know. The sub personalities may be operating and seeking to abuse a child sexually or an inner satanic priestess may be doing rituals nightly against the Church when the victim is missing time. I have learned that if I am engaging a SRA/MPD victim who doesn't even know what they are or remember half of their childhood let alone their day then:

- I assume that the sub personalities are there and are active in their programmed and or demonized agenda.
- The confused 'main' person may not hurt a fly but inner coven trained personalities can abuse, torture and kill without batting an eye!
- So heads up! A vulnerable tired hurting confused multiple may have in them someone who wants to compromise your pastor, abuse the toddlers and do blood rituals in the sanctuary

THEY ARE THERE WITH AN EVIL AGENDA

There are without question SRA/MPD *chosen ones* who are in your church and you don't know because they aren't showing you any sign of it. They don't want to show signs of the real inner selves; they are there by assignment. In some cases we have found *chosen ones* who can preach, play the piano and sing amazing grace, quote scripture and seem like a real 'minister of righteousness' and all the while have sub personalities looking for people in the crowd (church) to deceive, victimize and bring down.

We have seen them, engaged them, exposed some and even had some removed. The work of intact *chosen ones* involves the known and committed work of 'counterfeiting' and they and their demons love to pull the wool over the face of the Church!

- Infiltration. First they love to infiltrate and get in, they want to join quickly and be a part. They want to do all the damage they can before

they are found out.

- Satanic spiritual warfare. They are there to do harm, they fake the good only as a cover to do greater harm. If they want to 'serve' the Pastor and be close to him then there is only one reason…damage, compromise and defeat him.
- Harm to leaders and even children. Intact committed *chosen ones* have sub personalities who will seek the chance to be in the nursery or baby sit. They want to abuse children sexually!
- Gather information on the leaders and the church for the broader ritual warfare to be done by a local coven. They want to test their abilities and powers. They want to see what they can do in secrecy. They want to defeat the local Church and I know of a few churches that have been destroyed.
- Disrupt. It they can't defeat a local church they want to see if they can disrupt it. They know well how to sow discord, gossip and start a rumor mill going. They would love to change the prayer meeting and involve church members in non-spiritual activities.

There is so much to this infiltration that I am devoting a full special chapter called 'sub section one' that deals with what to look for when you do or even if you don't suspect satanic infiltration by *chosen ones*.

THEY ARE IN THE CHURCH AS 'SLEEPERS'… WAITING

There are in my estimation hundreds of thousands of intact *chosen ones* who are placed in churches everywhere. They (or at least the presenting host) don't know they are there to wait for the call. *Chosen ones* who are sleepers have deep inside of them the programmed sub personalities that are demonized and fierce. They are placed deep down within and only a strong code or demonic activation will bring them up.

These are the ones who are intact and will be used in the Black Awakening. When the 'activation' does occur, the inside sub personality or group of them will surface with intense programming and demonic power. They will kill, assassinate and unleash the chaos and anarchy that this book

discloses. They are here to make a way for the waiting antichrist.

FINALLY

Some who read this will be sneering because you are in the dark and just don't know and that is what these under- grounders count on. Others who have seen the damage and have engaged the battle are ready for war. You must take up the Cross and prepare others! There are also SRA/MPS victims who are healed or almost there. You can reveal the dirt that is under the carpet. You have to! I know many of you just want peace and safety….but that is not what the ancient brotherhood is planning. You know what they did to you and others; you know what they and your sub personalities can do. I urge you in this late hour and in the sight of God to reveal all and fight this lethal darkness with all that Jesus gives you.

CHAPTER 31
CHOSEN ONES AND THE MILITARY

"I saw three evil spirits….they came out of the mouth of the dragon, out of the mouth of the beast and out of the mouth of the false prophet. They are the spirits of demons performing miraculous signs, and they go out to the kings of the whole world, to gather them for the battle on the great day of God Almighty" Revelation 16

"Then I saw the beast and the kings of the earth and their armies gathered together to make war on the rider on the horse and his army." Revelation 19:19

"But the beast was captured…." Revelation 19:20

There are many victims of this mind control who have come from the military. We have already listed some of the projects and history of the military's (CIA) role in using this technology to create super soldiers. G.H. Estabrooks was very revealing of the military's known ability to create alter/sub personalities and program them to infiltrate, assassinate, sow disinformation and seek reconnaissance. It is my view that most of the documentation of the past was destroyed and a great cover up was done. It is also my view that all of the documentation and freedom of information act files we do have access to, are 35-60 years old.

I know this will be hard for some to accept but the bulk of the information and the current work of creating a new and improved *chosen one* i.e. super solder is under the deepest secrecy possible. This process if we are correct is truly part of creating troops for the coming antichrist and a new world

order.

''The secrecy is empowered with deep supernatural dark powers and that dark power that cloaks this secret project is beyond any normal human detection!''RD

This secret power is central to the luciferian agenda and is called in the Bible a 'secret power of lawlessness that is already at work' (see 2 Thessalonians 2). The creation of super soldiers who have deep within them programmed, charged with dark powers sub personalities are under the deepest cloak of secrecy in human history. If you remember Ezekiel 8 then realize that a secret luciferian coven was present, active and large….and no one knew! It took the infinite power of the omniscient God to reveal this cloaked satanic agenda (within the city of God!) to a good prophet. This begs the question….What then is hidden deep within military structures and bases?

When Jesus Christ told the parable story of the 'evil one' who comes along in the 'night' to created transmuted 'tares' (created servants) he gave the heads up on the 'who' 'when' and 'what for' of the satanic agenda. And let's not forget that if we go into the future by looking at prophetic revelation (see Revelation 16 and 19:19) then we should know that military leaders, military personal, military evolution and military powers/weapons are:

- Sought as a first priority of satan himself!
- Supernaturally inspired and developed; have and will be unleashed by 'inspired' military development.

The most supernaturally, most technologically advanced and largest (global scale) military system is being created as we write…and as you read.

A SUPER SOLDIER/ONE OF MANY

This is the one that told me they, the satanic super soldiers who are called *chosen ones* will make Hitler's SS troops look like choir boys. The other

one spoke with a German accent, demonic force and screamed at us 'We are the legions that will rule the earth.' Whether you believe this or not they believe they are created and trained to help bring in the antichrist. Surely you don't think the antichrist will be able to rise without an army or seek to destroy the descending Christ without a super army, do you?

The one super soldier who showed me a black uniform and sold me a tech nine told me they train in underground mines and other places where regular military does not gather. Sub personalities in this one have shown me pictures of them with weapons, uniforms and in training. They have many abilities and know a lot about the coming war…Armageddon.

Armageddon is a big issue for them; they are planning, preparing and seeking to build up to that day. The alarming thing was that they feel they will be here to fight on that day. They believe they will follow the antichrist (new super leader) into glorious battle. They believe they will be the most powerful force to ever step onto the field of battle.

It was this super soldier's wealthy handler (luciferian priest) who sent me a note by them telling me he can't wait to trigger this *chosen one* into the super warrior and slaughter me on the day of Armageddon. What this handler doesn't realize is…I won't be on the field where they are. I will be coming down out of the heavens with Christ. I will not even have to fight. It is not my battle…it is Christ's!

"I saw heaven standing open and there before me was a white horse, whose rider is called Faithful and True. With justice he judges and makes war…..the armies of heaven were following him…"R19:11

THEY WERE CREATED BY THE MILTARY

Chosen ones all have a military background. They all have memory, details and even items that come from their military training. The Monarch, MK-ultra and fifty other projects that involved mind control and the creation of enhanced soldiers is an ongoing evolution in a number of military's around the world.

This development will continue to grow and all these military will find themselves being drawn together for a common purpose. That purpose may not be known by all but it is known by some for sure. The principle inside the satanic agenda for now is…the higher you are up (deeper you are in) the thicker the cloak of supernatural power for secrecy there is. There are rituals that are done just for 'invisibility' and powers (demons) can be received to help keep others from detecting what's really going on.

Chosen ones can be in military uniform and mission without revealing who they really are. Many of them are intact and don't know they are 'double agents'. *Chosen ones* can be lawyers, psychologists and military soldiers. They are created to be out there in society and placed in the right positions so they can be ready. Inside of them are sub personalities who are 'sleepers' and just wait….undisturbed until the activation.

THEY ARE PLACED BY MILITARY

Now revealed to many is the fact that super soldiers are placed everywhere and this includes throughout military structures. Since this is larger than the US you must realize that super soldiers are placed in many other armies in a number of military structures. It is without question they are in military structures throughout Europe. They are in the United Nations and NATO for sure and are simply doing their 'cover' jobs until the time comes.

THEY ARE THERE TO OBTAIN POSITION

There has to be thousands of military trained *chosen ones* inside the structure of the military. It was G. H. Estabrooks who said in the section of his book (HYPNOTISM) dealing with the weaponization of 'programmed' multiples, *that every branch of the military structure should have these special warriors* and that was written way back in 1947. Those who are following the plan for a master race of super soldiers have had a long time to perfect this process, create many and then place them in key positions for the coming 'revolt.'

Since many *chosen ones* are now in their 40's and 50's it is apparent that some would be in upper leadership and even in places of great power. Many

of the *chosen ones* are now the creators, trainers and handlers of a new generation of super soldiers. The luciferian leaders know they must have many of these warriors within all the structures of military. Please remember they have to collapse current military and render it powerless.

THEY ARE THERE TO SABOTAGE

When the call, trigger or activation to unleash the black awakening comes, thousands of *chosen ones* who are in the military structures already have their planned targets and programmed agendas. I have been told over and over again that the super soldiers will be loyal only to their creators, that they will sabotage, bomb, kill and destroy other soldiers without hesitation.

The US military (CIA) and others have accepted and hoarded a vast Trojan horse! It is late, it is night and they have no idea of the coming slaughter. I have seen *chosen ones* triggered. I have seen them take down men twice their size. They are quicker, stronger and will not hesitate for a split second to kill and destroy their targets. Those targets include US military soldiers, leaders and structures. At this moment and at many other times I have sat in tears thinking about what they will do; how many loyal solders who are there to do their jobs will be assaulted by surprise and killed.

I warn military soldiers and leaders now by the providence of God…you need to look into this and prepare yourselves.

- Where you see secret covert projects that involve mind control investigate it
- Where you see goals for making super soldiers and technology that will create them.…fight against it.
- Where you see preparations for a globalist army.…resist it.
- Where you see planetary defense weapons being created it is there that the final future is manifesting. Stop and ask what it's all about.
- If all hell breaks loose and you know soldiers are killing soldiers… snap to attention and get ready to fight and don't hesitate.
- Examine this book, think through it and go to www.shatterthedarkness.net and see the mp3 which deals with 'how to detect hidden super soldiers'.

THEY ARE PLACED TO TAKE OVER

The trained sub personalities who are warriors and assassins will kill without a blink of the eye. They will take out the targets they were assigned to. They don't want to destroy the military nor harm the arsenals; they want to take control of it all.

For some this will be too much to understand but there is a future goal beyond the chaos that forces regime change. There is a supernatural presence that will manifest more and more as this day of chaos approaches. There is a supernatural cause and presence that will move to make the US military system join the new global system. Even when thousands of regular soldiers are not killed those who remain will either have to join up with the new global plan or be removed. And for those who are left after the black awakening…you will be asked to take a pledge of loyalty, maybe even some kind of mark to insure your compliance.

Whatever happens…don't do it! Remember now the Cross and the power of the love of Christ. Turn to Him. Eternal life is in his hands. Jesus said:

"But I will show you whom you should fear: fear him who, after the killing of the body, has power to throw you into hell. Yes, I tell you to fear him." Luke 12

FINALLY

Military systems all over the world are in grave trouble. A force beyond their detection and defense has been operating and will pull off the most tragic coo in world history. A great chaos is coming for military soldiers everywhere and a new regime will emerge. New age spirituality has dulled the senses and the spirits have offered to militaries technology of human enhancement and weapons development as never before. It all comes with a price. Memorize R1919!

A seeming 'glorious' new day will dawn and a voice so appealing will speak that it will hard not to join the new legions who claim to save the

world. To those reading this and are already committed to that cause… remember Judas.

CHAPTER 32
CHOSEN ONES AND WORLD GOVERNMENT

"The ancient dragon was hurled down-that ancient serpent called the devil, or satan, who leads the whole world astray…."

"…But woe to the earth and the sea because the devil had gone down to you! He is filled with fury because he knows that his time is short"

Revelation 12

Are they there in the halls of the UN-United Nations? Most of us see the SRA/MPD victims in the context of those who want out. We see hurting victims. Most have never seen a *chosen one* triggered and ready to kill; I have a few times and they are fierce. Since they are here to clear the old and make way for a new regime and leader it is evident that there are many *chosen ones* who must work in or are present in some capacity in the UN.

Wherever you see the force, teaching and spirituality of the dream of Globalism it is there you will evidence the 'doctrines' of the seducing spirits most. Wherever the 'doctrine' that cries out for getting rid of the old order and seeks a new order raises its voice then… it is there you find the foundations for antichrist and his global empire being laid.

You must realize that all governments of history and of the world today have 'political ideology' and that ideology has come from somewhere… someone has written it. Be it Marx, Hitler or a new strain of governmental rule that seeks a global status the ideology has come from someone's head.

The question is….who helped place it there?

CHOSEN ONES ARE READERS

A *chosen one* gave me a book called the 'War Lords of Armageddon'. It's a book about the development of new warriors who will be used to bring in a new order. Another one gave me the book 'The Nazi Doctors' and still another one told me about Marx, Hitler and political ideology. They told me that many in government today are 'unwittings' and most of them have no idea of what is to come. It seems that *chosen ones* are very versed in political power and information. They do understand sabotage and subterfuge.

One thing is for sure; all of the *chosen ones* I have dealt with know that a new order is what they and the underground are all about. Most of them talk about the new order as if it is a sure thing and that it's not too far away. They seem to act as if they will be here when it all comes down.

THEY MAY BE LEADING THE CALL TO GLOBALISM

Those in the UN and world powers that push for globalism have a spirituality that is very different than the Bible. The new spirituality is leading the way and creating 'political ideology. *Chosen ones* are very versed in globalism and those *chosen ones* who are intact are very powerful presenters. If you look at the top leadership in the spiritual push to create globalism you may find *chosen ones* with sub personalities who are highly trained. They can speak, teach, hold seminars and do seek to convince many others of a need for a new order. I have seen multiples who are versed in NLP programming and others who know how to project their 'powers' when they speak. Some know they are here to convince others to join the new world order.

Don't be surprised to find them at the local Theosophical society, within the Masons, secret societies and throughout Washington. It's the 'doctrine' of globalism they push that gives them away. Where you see the doctrine of aggressive globalism pushed is where the 'spirit' behind the new order exists and where his very own *chosen ones* are operating. Look for them and

you will find them!

THEY ARE THERE TO UNLEASH THE POWERS

Chosen ones would be those who hold spiritual meetings and seek to have chanted the 'luciferian invocation'. I will not put the words to that invocation in this book. It can be found on the www. The word of that invocation when referring to a god does not mean the God of heaven. It is in reference to the belief that a new light being (Lucifer as good guy) is the one being sought.

Chosen ones know how to summon powers and unleash them. They know how to obtain 'charged' objects and place them. They will be in places of national government where globalism is discussed and promoted. When the black awakening occurs they may be triggered to point the confused government workers to a new voice and a new regime.

Intact *chosen ones* will be sold out and the promoters of a new age…a new order. The black awakening and the rise of antichrist cannot occur without the supernatural power to enable it. The 'secret power' will no longer be a secret; it is the power behind the globalist doctrine and the same power that fosters coming chaos. The secret power now long infused within political structures is the same power that will force a new order.

THE NEW REGIME IS WAITING

Chose ones believe they will be rewarded. Some tell me that whatever happens, even if they are killed they will return in a new body (somebody else's) and get to serve in the new order. Many sub personalities are looking forward to a new order and you can hear the pride as they speak about it…be it a programmed pride. *Chosen ones* have been told they will be the special troops of a new super leader. They believe the leader and the new regime are already in place. They believe their new global leader (antichrist) has already been born. *Chosen ones* are told that when they create the chaos to help rip down the old structure they are making way for a new glorious order, they are doing something great and are going to be a major part of it.

FINALLY

There are some who are gripped by the New Age Movement and the concept of a new spiritual age that has started and will surely come. The New Age Movement, by the millions, are seekers who search for a spiritual experience, are guided by supernatural presence and believe a new global family is needed but so far have missed the spiritual singularity that occurred at the Cross.

The New Age spirituality helps drive globalism, the spiritual writings, channeling, remote viewing and spirits are convincing millions that a new day is coming. It's a new day for the evolution of human consciousness and a transformation of humanity. This is what is showing up in world governments. This is what is being pushed at the resort meetings and inner chambers of government workers/leaders. It is the feeling and the sense of what political leaders are speaking and literally globalism is dripping off the lips of leaders the world over.

How did this new political ideology get there? Ideas flow…just like they did in pre Nazi Germany.

CHAPTER 33
CHOSEN ONES AND THE RELEASE OF DARK POWERS

"The idols speak deceit, diviners see visions that lie; they tell dreams that are false, they give comfort in vain…"Zechariah 10

"Pharaoh then summoned wise men and sorcerers, and the Egyptian magicians also did the same things by their secret arts;" Exodus 7

"One of the earliest professional references to the subject of ritual abuse, is a comment in Dr. Karl Menninger's (1930) popular book on psychiatry entitled 'The Human Mind', which mentions the Black Mass, Satanism, and devil worship as real events…" p 123 'CULT RITUAL ABUSE

"Those raised by rituals and among rituals know best how to do them" RD

"The longer you keep them alive, the more torture you can give. This raises the pain and fear. This builds up the 'energies' and will bring more powerful demons…..and that is want we want" Chosen One

RITUAL SPIRITUAL LIGHTNING WARFARE

It was a *chosen one* from the ancient brotherhood that told me of the grid-map of churches they have. That's right churches on a map that they are doing ritual spiritual war against. A number of military trained *chosen ones* have told me of the rituals used and how and why they target Pastors, Christians

and churches. To this day I still ask sub personalities who know how to conjure demons and who are ritual workers…why they do it. The answers are the same; they conjure the demons for themselves, to protect the covens, to send against their enemies, to release into the air and to further the luciferian agenda.

Chosen ones have also told me that they see most churches as weak and pathetic. They visit churches to observe and event test their powers. *Chosen ones* tell me that when they meet in their covens everyone is there to be engaged. There are no spectators in a satanic ritual, not when they are conjuring demons. The mood is somber, serious and you must be careful…I am told. After all you are raising or bringing through powerful dark spirits so there is no room for error or games to be played. "We seek them and they come, we do the ritual, they will do what we ask and we ask them to attack you!"

One *chosen one* told me how they do 'lighting warfare' (blitzkrieg warfare). They will conjure demons and send them on a chosen target…and keep doing it, at the same time others, covens or ritual workers will be doing the same. The idea is to hit the target (church) hard, fast and continuous, until the goal of destruction or harm is accomplished.

THIS BLOOD IS FOR YOU

A letter came in the mail; it had no return address but it did have a post mark over the stamp. I opened it. It was a hand drawn and colored picture. It was a picture of a satanic coven member who was dressed in the hooded black gown. The robe was black and the background of the picture was red. In the hand of the robe ritual worker was a knife, in the other hand was a baby held upside down. The baby had been cut and blood was coming out and down the paper. The only words on the page were…. "THIS BLOOD'S FOR YOU."

I asked the trained satanist who came from the same area of the coven what is was all about. They told me that a baby was sacrificed…'in my honor'! They said the baby was killed in a ritual that was done on my behalf; that powers were raised and sent against me. I still have the picture; I pray

prayers about this as the Spirit of God leads me. It is clear that blood was shed and is being shed all over the US…innocent blood that God does see. There is blood that is crying out; blood that is on the heads of those who revel in it. Brotherhood covens and luciferians hide in the dark for now but even their demons know that a day of accountability is coming…this is for sure.

AS IN THE O.T. SO IN THE FUTURE

In the Old Testament it is clear that the powers of darkness were real. Those who served them knew how to appease and seek powers as a weapon against their enemies. The weaponization of satanic power is not new. In 2 Kings a military king is losing a battle. He cannot win with his seven hundred swordsmen so to gain the advantage he sought the dark powers of a demon god called chemosh. Chemosh (destroyer/subdue-the abomination of Moab-a demonized tribe) was and is a living demon-god that was worshipped and sought for personal and military favors.

In this battle and in many others in the O.T. it was the spiritual power behind the nation that could be sought to win battles. Demon war gods have been found everywhere and used to enhance military battle from the tribes of Africa to the supernatural powers seen in Revelation 16. Those dark forces are sent to gather kings to make war. Armies can be 'empowered', supernatural powers are sought, sent and can be affective.

This is the weaponization of dark powers. It is the conjuring and appeasing i.e. doing what the spirits desire and require. One could ask 'How did the O.T. military king know *that sacrificing a human would bring him 'powers' for victory?'* The demon seeking, human sacrificing king gained military victory over the king of Israel and attributes this victory by the power of chemosh… "…and drove him before my sight."

The closer we get to the end the more the world will see that it is 'supernatural' power that matters. The trouble though is the 'requirement' for the high dark powers to work…human blood! Again in the O.T. in Manasseh's day-2 Kings 21-23 it is said that 'innocent blood' has been shed from one end of the nation to the other. Human sacrifice has been offered to

gain favor, power and military victory the world over. This is true at all the ancient ruins where the ziggurats are. It is true among the Mayan also where thousands of radical horrific human sacrifices were performed.

It is my belief that the dark powers themselves inspire and communicate that they will weaponize 'kings' and their militaries. It is also my belief that innocent blood has been shed all across Europe and the US so the greatest and deepest powers of darkness can be conjured and sent. Those powers are sent to influence the current 'kings' of the earth; those who are the political and military leaders. The ritual spiritual warfare is real; it has been, is and will be (Revelation 16). We now have unprecedented manifestation of demonic powers and in the days to come we will see far more than ever in history.

The pinnacle of dark powers charging the air, societies, politicians and military development will be off the charts! Much of that dark power has come to this side by way of satanic-coven ritual spiritual warfare that sheds human blood. Just ask the hundreds of thousands of SRA/MPD victims who have seen it and been forced to do it!

The Body of Christ must engage this concept of spiritual warfare now! As never before believers in Christ must use the authority (Luke 10) they have been given for the purpose it was given for….to trample the dark powers and overcome (gain decisive victory) all the power of the enemy (satan/demons). While most churches on Sunday morning give about 48 seconds to its total prayer time the covens are giving hours of dedicated spiritual warfare time to send dark spirits out against Pastors and Churches everywhere. Is it no wonder millions can file into church buildings and out in 55 minutes to an hour and a half and not even engage-embrace or know if God was present! Wow! Not so in the early church where:

"…they raise their voices together to God in prayer…..after they prayed the place where they were meeting was shaken. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and spoke the word of God boldly." Acts 4:24-31

The Body of Christ is truly a 'sleeping giant' who has lost sight of its mission and the power that would fuel it! While millions play church with

only a fading memory of the boredom from last week's service the dark side is ramping up as never before in history. Whether it is the sinful slack and neglect of our leaders or the fact that there is swelling presence of spiritual darkness that suppress the church's work one thing is for sure…most services today don't come close to Acts 4.

Let's take a look at why the luciferians are seeking dark powers.

THEY CONJURE FOR THEMSEVES

Yes they do love the power and rewards the demons give. There is real power and the dark spirits do grant some things. It's like prayer at a church, you ask, seek and knock and God does answer. You receive and God does open doors. God even does awesome miracles! Please realize that just as God who is Spirit is real (John4) and does do great things, satan is 'the spirit who is now at work' (Ephesians 2) and he and the demons do answer the call.

Rituals are 'procedures' that many luciferians and satanists go through. It's what opens doors and gives the demonic rights to come through. In many rituals if you appease them they will in turn act on the petitioner's behalf. Rituals that are done can be anything from 'food offered', sex rituals and animal or human sacrifice. In the Bible you can read of Manasseh who sought many spiritual doors including offering his own son in human sacrifice to Moloch (2Kings 21-23).

Seeking the spirits for action the petitioner may want a job, sex, money or position. In the satanic bible written by Anton LaVey there are destruction, sex and even death rituals and these are in no way the worst out there. I have books that unveil the original black mass, details of human sacrifice and others that involve children.

Today you can find almost any kind of ritual procedure that used to be in hard to get books. They are now on the web for anyone to get and try out. Many are dabbling in or paying others to do rituals for personal gain. One person may do a ritual to curse a former lover while others seek the favor of spirits for their own enhancement. Whatever the wish, desire or ritual

request, the fact is more rituals are known and being done than ever in history.

THEY CONJURE TO ATTACK THEIR ENEMIES

It is clear from the written rituals that folks in the left hand path can summon powers and send them out and on those they consider their enemies. Satanism only has one visible enemy I know of…the Church. If you read the rituals or have heard victims of SRA/MPD tell the stories then it's clear that most 'summon spirits to attack' rituals are aimed at the Church and Christians. In Revelation 12 when satan could not destroy Christ or Israel, who did he go after; all of those who hold to the testimony of Jesus and obey the Word of God. They (the Church) are satan's enemy (1Peter 5).

Underground satanists can target a church or a Pastor. They can coordinate with others and launch ritual spiritual warfare, summon demons and send them against Pastors and specific Churches. Remember 2 Kings 3 where the demon worshiping king seeks the power of chemosh to defeat the O.T. people of God and that it did have affect!

Christians today have been taught that if you don't open a door to the demonic then they have no legal right (Ephesians 4 foothold). That is mostly true but the fact remains that someone else has opened a door and if the demonic assignment has been sent against you there will be a battle.

THEY CONJURE TO ADVANCE THE CAUSE

Chosen ones tell me that they summon dark power demons not just for their own wishes. Just as Christians pray for the power of God to move and give them supernatural help to advance the gospel so real satanists can and do summon demons to empower them and their cause. Core luciferians know they cannot advance the cause, agenda of antichrist, without supernatural aid. O yes, *chosen ones* tell me that rituals are done for the rise and appearance of their leader (antichrist). The more power the more advancement!

If you study the ritual release of demon spirits in Revelation 16 notice that it takes massive dark power to move the world leaders and they are already

in league with the antichrist at that time. Don't forget this point…they cannot advance without the summoning of dark powers and targeted sending of those demons for a direct purpose.

In the ritual release of demons that affects the whole world (a satanic planetary spiritual wave) in R16 we see a future glimpse of what is done in a smaller measure right now on US soil (see Chapter 34).

THEY CONJURE TO INFLUENCE TARGETS FOR USE

Read R1919 again and you will see that the demons sent had an 'assignment'; they had their designated target. This is not the use of 'energy' or dry 'power'. These demons may emanate energy and power but they are personalities who have a known target. They are more than 'smart lazar guided' missiles. They are powerful entities with function and will. They are sent for sure, but like the best trained Special Forces they have a mind and will to get their assignment done. Revelation 1919 shows that the spirits of R16 get that diabolical job done!

The targets of illuminati-luciferian or the ancient brotherhood are:

- Pastors and Christian leaders.
- Churches, especially the ones that matter to them.
- Christian ministries that are making great affect.
- Political leaders who need to be recruited or influenced
- Political events that need to be 'guided'
- The wealthiest people of the world are targets. It does take money to plan and accomplish a multination coo (black awakening)
- The world media moguls. It will take spin and control to convince the world of its need for globalism and shut down the opposition.
- Military leaders, scientists and weapons developers.

THEY CONJURE TO FILL THE AIR

One of the most highly trained *chosen ones* I have ever met went with me to a large crusade meeting. The sub personalities came out for sure to see

what the big event was all about. We were sitting there and that's when someone told me they seek superiority over a tri-state area and that they conjure dark powers just to send out into the 'air'. The goal is to have a sense of superior manifest power over an area…thus in or from the air.

With satan being the 'ruler of the domain of the air' (atmosphere) one has to ask…What is it that he 'rules' up above us in the dense atmosphere around the planet?

Many Christians have told me about an area of their city or of an entire city that seems to be covered in darkness. Don't forget that satan/demons are even territorial; they are always seeking to cover, influence and control an area. The prince of Persia in Daniel's day (Allah?) was and is territorial. It was this demonic ruler of that area that opposed Daniel's prayer, fought angels in the heavenlies and most likely fueled the local demonic structures, ritual sites and servants on the ground.

A point to remember here is that wherever you find ritual sites on the ground or a city that 'feels' dark there must be territorial demonic presence in the air above. The satanic structure is a hierarchy with rules, authority and position, all of which serve the full satanic cause and all of which fight against the cause of Christ and His servants.

FINALLY

I do believe the 'air' is packed with demonic presence; this presence is more manifest now than 30 years ago. The ground level covens, the rituals they have done and are being done fuel the 'skies' and that dark presence in the 'air' empowers the ground level troops. The 'thicker' or heavier the manifestation is only means the demons are more numerous and they are more powerful.

This dark heavy spiritual presence does have affect:

- It's dulling the Church
- It's seducing the people spiritually
- It's fueling the political ideology

- It inspires crime, violence and moral decadence, all of which make even bigger doors for them to move in
- It’s digging deeper trenches for the darker stuff it does in secrecy.

CHAPTER 34
CHOSEN ONES THE ELITE AND THE CONES OF POWER

"He desecrated Topheth, which was in the Valley of Ben Himmom, so no one could use it to sacrifice his son or daughter in the fire to Molech."

"I know where you live, where satan has his throne….." Revelation 2

"Paul Bonacci was an eyewitness to the ritual rape and murder of a young boy at the Bohemian Grove in the summer of 1984" p 202 "BOHEMIAN GROVE: Cult of Conspiracy

"The subjugation of the citizens and the reign of the nation is what they came for. It's always about who rules. Bizarre rituals, sex, shedding blood and the transmutation of humanity took place. The nation was gone, the people were drones and hope was annihilated."

WWW.SHATTERTHEDARKNESS.NET/bohemiangrove/page2.html

THAT MAP ON GREEN PAPER AND THE OWL

She asked if she could have some big sheets of paper, I found 17x11 inch sheets. She began to draw. She worked for some time on the drawings and then brought them to me. I saw underground meeting places, cabins, woods, a lake and on one page was a big owl…yes, a very tall owl. At the feet of the owl were robed individuals with hoods and they were putting a corpse into a fire at the base of the owl. It seemed there was an audience watching or something. Of course I had to ask this Monarch *chosen one* what it was all

about.

While she explained the maps she also had a necklace she wanted to give me. It was a silver chain with a small owl on it. She said many of the Monarchs who were used as sex slaves had them. This is what I was told. The crowd watching was world leaders; US government and military leaders, even presidents. The towering owl was an idol to a high and powerful demon god…Molech! The people in the hooded robes were real luciferians and the body of a human (shown on this map as screaming!) which was not an effigy but a real live person who was prepared for this sacrifice. She told me of bizarre occult symbols on the property and of gruesome sex done to kids in the late night hours. She said videos were taken for blackmail.

I have kept these maps to this day. It was in the mid 90's when this Monarch drew them. I have long wondered about this place. This same victim took me to other ritual sites, even one where the black mass symbol was painted on a large tree and it was there we dug up bones. Our teams at the time continued to pray for exposure and I never forgot the map or the stories of kids used as sex slaves by drunken powerful men of world renown.

It was in 2001 that a person came to me and brought me a video tape that they said I had to watch. It was the one where talk show host Alex Jones infiltrated Bohemian Grove on the week that they did the 'cremation of care' ritual in the deep woods there in California, here in the USA. The video showed that many known world leaders, senators, the wealthy, military leaders and even US top political leaders were present.

I saw the cabins, the occult symbols and then there it was that massive owl next to a body of water. The fires were high and the world leaders were sitting by the hundreds across from the ritual site. Hooded robed ritual workers rowed down the little river and brought onto shore a wrapped body. It was supposed to be a fake human representing a real one!

The voice of a man was telling the tale of 'DULL CARE' and then the robed workers threw the body into the flames at the feet of the owl….a screech was heard and the crowd of world leaders applauded.....they

clapped and cheered! I wondered, are they freaks or what? Even if it was a fake mock human sacrifice to an ancient demon god what sane US politician or world leader would ever watch that…let alone applaud?

Why didn't ANY leader get up and exclaim, "This is an outrage!"?

The Monarch *chosen one* told me as have others now that it was no fake mock ritual, it was real and so was the human body that was wrapped and prepared. I have researched all I could on Bohemian Grove since that time. I was so moved by it all I created a web site and started a prayer agenda against that site and the elite who are behind it.

Dear reader, this has and is occurring in the USA! And there is no outrage. Political leaders can say, 'it's only a mock ritual'. Are you crazy or what! Who would go to a mock human sacrifice? Who would sit and watch a body being thrown into the flames and then applaud? Is this a play? A drama? A game? The questions continue to mount:

- Who is behind this place called the Bohemian Grove?
- Why is it so super secret and hidden?
- Why are the world's most influential leaders invited to come and who does the inviting?
- Why are there so many occult symbols and a 40 foot owl idol of a demon god molech?
- Why is it set up as an ancient ritual?
- Who are the people dressed in 'satanic' like hooded robes?
- Why even if it is a mock human wrapped in ritual preparation carried and thrown into the fire does anyone watch?
- Why is there no outrage about this from those who were invited?
- Were they forced to watch a human sacrifice…real or mock?
- Did they know and want to watch?
- Who was the dead body used for sacrificial offering?
- When the demons are conjured and the demon god appeased what favors do they give?

Is it because there is so much booze given out? Or maybe the video tapes of bizarre criminal sex acts with youth that are held keep their mouths shut. Or is it something more?

Could it be this site is an old ritual site that real luciferians have built where many real human sacrifices have been done? Could it be a 'cone of power' (a high place) where powerful dark forces have manifested and lay claim to the land? Maybe the whole site and all that is done is a 'type' or precursor to the coming of the ritual release of demonic power we have seen in Revelation 16. Maybe it is real elite luciferians who have set up this site and program so they can call in the world's most powerful leaders (the kings of the earth) wine and dine them and then unleash summoned dark powerful demons to begin…the influence.

IN MY VIEW

It is my understanding this is a real human sacrifice and the powers that are summoned are sent on the leaders to guide, influence and steer them. The Bohemian Grove site is a "high place" right here in the USA and is a major place of the darkest and most powerful rituals to date! This is a "weapon of mass destruction" on a spiritual level and those who attend this ritual are blinded by the darkness or they are part of the known process!

This place performs rituals all year long and coordinates many rituals with other sites just like it. This place and the rituals done do have affect and help fuel the satanic agenda for the coming globalism and rise of homosatanas. This place is filled with the filth of sexual abuse against children, mind controlled *chosen ones*, satanic ritual abuse, the summoning of dark powers and the targeted release of demons on US and world leaders.

In my view this high place and cone of satanic power should be prayed against by hundreds of thousands of those who love God and know the reality of spiritual warfare and know how the laws of spiritual engagement work. I pray for God to strike the owl of moloch and the land with a massive strike, that the elites behind this will be exposed and the past and present victims will be rescued, saved and healed. I pray for those in the hooded robes and other workers to be engaged by the power of God and like Saul they will be

visited, saved and tell the story.

I pray for this high place and cone of power to be destroyed; for its demonic guts and crimes to be crushed. I pray against the demons raised, sent and working to be bound, stopped and destroyed. I pray for those to whom the demons were sent to be delivered. I pray for the crimes to stop and be dealt with. I pray this daily and hope you will join in.

Here are some more issues to think about when it comes to current and future 'cones of power.'

PLACES OF POWER

Bohemian Grove is only one of many large places of ritual practice. It is much like the high places that are spoken of in the O.T. The BG is just like in the OT where Manasseh conjured spirits and filled Jerusalem with dark powers or the place where the prophet Ezekiel was taken, a place where the demons had been raised for years. Yes, there are high places today. These "high places" (considered a cone of power) are the location of dark rituals and shed blood. This is where the demons find a doorway and satan has a "throne". From this throne or cone of power demonic powers can grip the land, air, objects and have a gateway. The dark spirits will call for more rituals and the rituals will increase the dark powers and hold they have.

I have been to smaller ritual sites, it's as though you can feel the spirits being enraged because I was there. It seems clear that they know who I am and Who is living in me. In the book of Acts 19:5 we read where the demon was quoted…"One day the evil spirit answered them, "Jesus I know and Paul I know but who are you?"

See the next section Chapter 37 for more on how to find, expose and see these places destroyed.

PEOPLE OF POWER

Who were these 70 elders of the house of Israel and what were they doing deep in the hidden cave? Ezekiel found out by God giving a 'supernatural'

hole into that dark substructure. They were leaders in the public life by day and luciferian worshipper by night. What was done there is a glimpse of what continues today only on a much larger scale.

THE FIRST BURST/PLANETARY WAVE

The first multinational if not planetary spiritual wave is about to burst. Like hot air being pumped into the hot air balloon the air of the fires of hell (demons) itself have and are filling the bubble of air we are calling the coming chaos/revolt and (apocalypse) breaking out of …homosatanas. In 1 Thessalonians 2 we have been telling in this book that not one iota of satan's work or advancing agenda can move forward without supernatural power.

I only wonder now how much of that manifested power fills the inner sub personality of *chosen ones*. I wonder how many of those rituals that unleashed demons into the air (society), and on world leaders have come from planned or even coordinated ritual summoning. *Chosen ones* will tell you the demons put on those programmed sub personalities were summoned by ritual ceremony.

If we can see in Revelation 16 it was a release of demon spirits that 'triggered' and supernaturally moved world leaders and a massive global army to join together (gathering) and make war, then it shouldn't be hard to understand that the core of the 'activation' for the black awakening will be….demons sent to kick it off.

When hundreds of thousands of *chosen ones* are struck by the demonic triggering (and maybe combined with some technology) and the inner sub personalities come up….they come up with very powerful demonic manifestation. When they unleash assassinations, bloodshed and bring on the fear-violence and terror…you can be sure that like 'bats out of hell' the demonic will flow, the air will be filled and like an upside down (inverted) Pentecost…..dark powers will come with a rush!

THE SECOND BURST/PLANETARY WAVE

This coming planetary wave has not even begun, not yet anyway but it is coming for sure. It will be the largest release of demon power ever in human history. This will be the mother of all ritual spiritual warfare ever known. It will lead the world to the final day of history this side of the coming of Christ and His millennial reign.

This planetary wave will sweep the world over and grip the intended targets. This ritually released satanic spiritual wave will bring:

- The pinnacle or apex of manifested satanic power the world has ever been gripped by.
- An unprecedented global gathering of world leaders and their armies.
- An empowered consensus that is so blinded it has no idea about what it is going to attempt.
- Physical, technological and spiritual weapons combined with highly charged super soldiers and all of this will be unleashed at the call of… *homosatanas*.

FINALLY

There is only one way to destroy the demonic satanic powers and supernatural works. The frontline and foundation of satan's defeat is what all of hell fears and trembles at….that old rugged Cross, the blood of the Lamb of God…the LORD JESUS CHRIST.

"The reason the son of God appeared was to destroy the devil's work"
1John 3

As the Spirit of God reveals in the book of Daniel the end of evil will come and the counterfeit incarnation of satan himself will be annihilated. It will happen but it will not be done by human power; ancient prophecy from 2,600 years ago says:

"…Yet he will be destroyed, but not by human power."
Daniel 8

Politicians, world rules, the wealthy and military leaders are the main targets of some of the deepest supernatural power the world has or will ever know. Arrogance and a sold out will to embrace any new technology regardless of ethics will be an open window for the lord of the flies to come on in. Just like Judas my friends…just like Judas.

"…as soon as Judas took the bread, satan entered into him."
John 13

DIES IRAE

DAY OF WRATH! O DAY OF MOURNING

SEE FULFILLED THE PROPHETS WARNING

HEAVEN AND EARTH IN ASHES BURNING!

ZEPHANIAH 1:14-16

"The great day of the LORD is near and coming quickly.

Listen! The cry of the Day of the LORD will be bitter,

The shouting of the warrior there.

That day will be a day of wrath.

A day of distress and anguish,

A day of trouble and ruin,

A day of darkness and gloom,

A day of trumpet and battle cry

Against the fortified cities and against the corner towers.

CHAPTER 35
CHOSEN ONES AND THE NEW RECRUITS

"Then I saw the kings of the earth and their armies gathered…."R1919

It is very clear from prophetic scripture that antichrist will have a following. This following can be put into three categories:

- First, there are those who are spiritually blinded by the call to a spiritual evolution of human consciousness. These New Agers have believed the lie and have been initiated into the masquerade; a very deep and powerful masquerade. They by the hundreds of millions will long for, believe in and seek to do all things 'spiritual' for the dawn of a new order and for its needed new supernatural leader. For those who long for a new 'world teacher', 'world ruler', 'Mahdi' or Maytraia the foundation is set. They will conspire and rage for a super man with a new super age.
- Second, there will be those who have been created for this coming event. *Chosen ones* by the hundreds of thousands have been selected, birthed, raised and trained for one purpose….bring the massive chaos/revolt that will level all things and make a way for the antichrist. This group is the one that the first demonic spiritual wave will come for, they will help unleash and release massive demonic force. Those who are still intact and those who have finally chose to….will fight to end society and bring in a new one.
- Third, there are those who are the elite, those who are real luciferians. They are covered in the deepest of demonic power and their hands are

> covered in blood. They are serpent worshippers like those in Ezekiel's cave. They are the 'apostles' of satan who have led the underground. They, dear reader, believe the Albert Pike revelation that lucifer is the good guy, that he is coming and that he will rule. For this they fight, do rituals and plot the global final solution.

I do believe there will be others who will be drawn in. To escape the terror, chaotic collapse and with a desire to live, eat and survive many will be willing to sell their souls and take a mark when the choice is forced. I hope you have made the choice dear reader. This book is not a conspiracy theory. It deals with the end of days, with life and death, heaven or hell and how you can know for sure how close we are.

If you can calculate the end but are not ready for it spiritually then you are like the chicken showing the fox its eggs. The power of the Cross is the event that no one else has ever achieved. It is only Jesus Christ who came from eternity and holds the gift of eternal life. He has been there and done that. It was all for you and I hope you know Him.

A BLOND A BLOND AND ANOTHER BLOND

A girl was tormented and trying to tell us who had used her and created the sub personality within. Each time she tried some demonized sub personality would throw her to the ground; it was hard to watch. This blond had a little blonde haired girl. She was cute as a button as they say. This little one would also be a candidate to be a next generation *chosen one*. The satanic rituals, sexual and mental abuse the mother went through was bad enough but she knew that those who did it to her were doing it to her daughter.

This blond had a family perpetrator; it was her own mother and she had, though older now, blond hair. All three of them are still in that dark system. All three are part of that multigenerational ancient brotherhood. The little girl must be in her teens now, most will not detect it but she like her mother has sub personalities who have seen the dark side and stay hidden for now. This little girl is part of the next generation of *chosen ones*.

If there were thousands of parents who either sold out their kids to a system that promised super children and thousands more who were raised in the satanic covens then we must begin to calculate. This first generation was in the thousands, they helped produce hundreds of thousands of new *chosen ones* from the 1950's on up. The second generation measuring hundreds of thousands have also had children and they are in their late 20's and early 30's. This third generation is now the one who have children 3-13 years old and these children are now evidencing multiplicity.

FACE TO FACE

I have been to the homes of many *chosen ones*; I have looked into the faces of those who have given their children to this long dark night. They have given, participated and worked to help raise their own children as satanic super soldiers. How they could do it is beyond almost anyone understanding but it is a sad and true reality. The dark powers are so convincing that even a father would offer his first born to a demon god like moloch (2Kings 21-21). Manasseh was that father and he like other parents in that day offered their children to be burned in fire as an offering to a demon.

Today parents of *chosen ones* are either control multiples themselves or military personnel who were told that the use of their children would help the country fight a war with communism and other enemies. The concept of a master race of super warriors came to the surface in Nazi Germany's occult lead military goal. What started there as we have said earlier has come to the US as 'secret' and advanced 'projects'. What the parents were not told and what many in the CIA did not know was that there was a spiritual agenda that came with the Nazi science… a demonic Trojan horse. Once the children were in, the threat of whistle blowing would be stilled by the threat of grave harm or death.

I do believe some parent perpetrators and those recruited into the projects wish they could stop it. Some have looked deep into my eyes and only tears would come from their eyes filled with 'secret don't tell' fear. This silent boxed fear has become the disposition of the early generation victims as they give way to the new generation and that new generation is their flesh and blood. I have often wondered if the parents think about how their children are

used and what they will do when the black awakening occurs. Without the power of God in Christ I don't see any way out for any of them. The good news is that many have made it and thousands more are 'fighting their way out of this black bag'.

GENERATION X

The next generation of SRA/MPD *chosen ones* is on the way. They have newer technology (demonized) that helps split, program and train them. It does seem harder to detect them and see sub personalities come out. Maybe their programming is stronger or the punishment harder…maybe it's both. When it comes to traditional satanism and lesser forms of satanic practice the numbers are growing. There is an expectation of a new satanic age among this group and they are out to expand their work.

Recruiting people into other forms of satanism:

- Select them. If the satanic group is secretive enough they will observe others and decide whom they will recruit.
- Invite them to step one… indulge the flesh, party, drink, drugs and seek to give them a good time.
- Invite them to experience some form of spiritual event, a small ritual or 'mind' power. Reading minds, tell a person their future etc.
- Invite them to take a step. Have the new recruit come to a meeting where they can participate. They can light candles. They can have sex with the girl on an altar and hear others summon the demons.
- Invite them to cross all lines. Have them recite renunciation of Christ, God and the Bible. Lead them to choose Lucifer, dedicate and offer to him their life. This will involve ceremony and personal offerings.
- Invite them to blood. At first they may have to offer a little blood or even drink a mixture with blood in it. They may see at this point an animal sacrifice or even help in it.
- Seal the deal; vows to satan and participation in human sacrifice.

These are some of the basics of how individuals are sought and recruited into deeper satanic groups. Even those in the ancient brotherhood tell me they

recruit others. With some satanic groups you can just enroll online or through the mail, pay the fee and become a member. Other groups that are more serious will take a person through steps and each one of those step get darker as they go.

When it comes to the creation of super soldiers the recruitment is not the same. Raising children in a transgenerational luciferian coven system is a little different because you really have no choice, at least at first. Babies are conceived and bred for the purpose of creating a *chosen one*. The biological parents seeking conception may be picked, they are demonized and from conception to birth there are rituals. From birth on the core personality is split with programming coming later. Some even say the babies of multiples may have a 'predisposition' for dissociation and being split. By age 6 the child has sub personalities, demonic presence and has seen many horrific things in the hidden ritual ceremonies. The upfront child may seem fine and go to school but the inside little persons are in fear, agony and pain.

This is where the new generation of recruits of super soldier *chosen ones* are being developed:

- The children of multiples. Many times it's the trained sub personalities in one generation that begin the process on the next generation. Many victim *chosen ones* have found out they have sub personalities who have been splitting and programming sub parts into their children. Therefore thousands of SRA/MPD victims have created hundreds of thousands of new *chosen ones*.
- Foster children. There are a number of cases I have worked on where the mother SRA/MPD victim had sub personalities who 'pushed from within' and influenced the mom and husband to 'get' children. In some of those cases all of the foster children were split, sexually used and now have sub personalities.
- There is no question that the luciferian elite do seek and steal children to create new *chosen ones*. The case of the 'FINDERS' a group thought to be rouge CIA special projects agents have abducted children and delivered them to those who would make *chosen ones*. This group was discovered and is still sought to this day. They were said to have a number of unrelated children who were neglected and transported to

hidden locations. The FBI has investigated and could not solve the case. There are thousands of missing children who have never to this date been found.

- Then there are the breeders. There are thousands of SRA/MPD victims who believe they were forced to have children. (Like the Nazi Lebensborn project). Those children were then taken and used to create *chosen ones*. Many victims have told me of a baby they had that was either used in sacrifice or taken to be made into a *chosen one*.
- Children's day care centers. Not only are there many stories of children who were sexually and ritually abused in a day care center but cases like the McMartin day care center case where many children have memories of ritual abuse is still not fully solved. I was called into a city where a mother had twin girls. She said both were sexually abused at a day care center. When I met with them they both had sub personalities and demonic activity.

Another case involved a doctor who had in his house a ritual room and a room packed with pornography. He and his wife were seeking to raise money so they could make a day care type center. A law enforcement agent who was SRA/MPD informed us that the doctor and his wife were handlers and ritual abusers of children.

Just by counting the number of SRA/MPD victims and tracking back to see where they came from you will see how their stories will be similar. They will tell you their parents or grandparents were involved. Others will tell you they don't know who their real parents are. One girl was found in a place we had searched for years. We were told there was a coven there and years later by God's providence we found the girl…a *chosen one* who at first wanted out. We have met her dad (a blue eyed Aryan type) and found the property where her Nazi German speaking grandfather is still operating out of. It's an ongoing case. The alarming thing is that this SRA/MPD victim is unhealed, out there and babysitting little children!

FINALLY

When we can get to one victim and see them saved, healed and set free we also know it can stop the creation of new *chosen ones*. It has always been my goal and prayer to get to the victims early. To stop it in childhood is the best; to stop it before a child is even conceived is better! It will save them from years of ritual and sexual abuse. As we write and as you now read there are hundreds of thousands of little ones who are the children of SRA/MPD victims being created to be *chosen ones*. You may not stop all of it but always remember you can get to some…AND WE MUST!

As new generations of *chosen ones* are being forged right now never forget the process. Hate evil and do something against it. The process is gruesome and the product is meant to be a killing machine. The time is short and the need is great. Just what will you do?

The CIA hired psychologist Estabrooks added:

"…two hundred trained foreign operators, working in the United States, could develop a uniquely dangerous army of hypnotically controlled Sixth Columnists."

P 5 'MIND CONTROLLED SEX SLAVES AND THE CIA'

CHAPTER 36
THE BLACK AWAKENING AND THE GATHERING AT THE VEIL

"The existence of evil spirits is a dread reality, even though some Christians are not sufficiently aware of this fact" p 95 'DEMON EXPERIENCES'

"Imagine being trapped inside a burning building. Some people inside the building are saying there is nothing wrong, that everything is as it is supposed to be. Yet you feel the heat and smell the smoke and you hear the fire engines outside….." p93 'EVANGELIZING THE NEW AGE'

"Unfortunately, the church is so preoccupied with secondary issues, that we are not visible or attractive to a spiritually starved generation." P 31 'SUBTLE SERPENT'

As a kid one of the great fun things to do in the hot summer time was to have water fights. Whoever controlled the hose would have the most fun. When it came to balloons, well they were a blast. At times we would have to run to the water spigot, put the balloon on it and then turn on the water. The balloon would fill and you had to watch that you didn't fill it too much or it would swell and then explode! That was kind of fun too.

What's not fun is the knowing, like the swelling of the water balloon that another swelling is going on. It's the swelling of the spiritual realm. As prophesied the massive wicked forces from the heavenly realm are breaking through to our side in unprecedented numbers and force. The veil as they say

is growing very thin and the troops of demonic forces are waiting…bulging at the seams to burst into and onto our side. It's as though they are amassed at the border and a line is drawn forcing them to wait but only a little while longer. These extra dimensional beings (demons) wait for the first wave; what I call *an 'inverted Pentecost*'.

As I have already said the demonic presence has been ramping up. The second largest proliferation of occult literature in history was unleashed in the US during the1960's according to occult historian James Web and this has opened the door to massive 'doctrines of seducing spirits'. Those very spirit inspired writings are the ones the Spirit of God warned about. They have opened up many doors of spiritual experience. I keep telling everyone that those spiritual experiences are real….they are just not right. If it comes from fallen finite spirits then the message and the following spiritual experience will be real alright but it will not and cannot lead to God. Here are the facts:

- If it comes from fallen spirits then it will only lead to them and the cause of the "ruler of the authority of the air, the spirit who is now at work…." See Ephesians 2.
- Fallen spirits (angels) cannot and will not lead anyone to God, Christ or the Word of God. They cannot because of their now corrupted eternal nature. They will not because of their will to oppose God and deceive man.
- If the message and spiritual experience comes from God it will be used to lead people to God.

Along with the massive rise of demonic inspired writings come the increase of occult and satanic crimes, the rise of satanic ritual abuse cases (beginning in the late 70's), the rise of possession and personal supernatural spiritual experiences (dreams, visions, visitations, channeling, astral projection, rituals, spells and magik of all kinds). There is the return to spiritual practices like Wicca, paganism, goddess worship, secret societies, druidism, Santeria and millions are involved with the New Age Movement.

All of this put together will reveal that there has been a massive shift and the dark spirits who are pushing their agenda are among us. Hundreds of

millions of people have opened the doors. Along with this is the fact that more books on spiritual warfare have been written in the last 30 years than in the entire history of Christianity. The Church is packed with a lot of good literature the problem though is only a small segment of the Body of Christ is reading and learning.

When faith arises, a revelation of the critical time we are in is understood and the roar of massive prolonged intercession by a highly experienced Church is unleashed…then the power shall fall, the miracles will come and powers of darkness trampled. A spiritual clothing will cover the saints and buildings (city's and nations too) will shake. But it must be now.

The manifestation of dark spirits is unprecedented right now and the swelling and bulging at the seams is evident. What is here now has sucked hundreds of millions into the 'spirit led globalist' agenda and this is nothing compared to what is about to occur.

Note:

"The manifestation of dark spirits is unprecedented right now and the swelling and bulging at the seams is evident."RD

What is here now has sucked hundreds of millions into the 'spirit led globalist' agenda and *this is nothing compared to what is about to occur."*

It is massively something, this ramping up of demonic presence but my point at this moment is…we haven't seen anything yet! None of the current spiritual deception and dark powers is going to go away; they will only be added to a hundred…a thousand times over.

This is how you can look at the 'gathering at the veil' and its progression.

- THE FROG IN THE KETTLE APPROACH. We have been cooked and most don't know it. The hidden agenda is real and it's evolving. The work involves 'blinding minds, deception, seduction, masquerading and engaging people with an alternative spiritual message and experience. (The same method used in the garden Genesis 3). See also 1Timothy 4

- THE MASSIVE RAMPING UP. The manifestation of supernatural spiritual powers that counterfeit those of Christ and the early Church. Unprecedented numbers of spiritual experiences and spirit contact. This would include the direct operation of these spirits in and through many people. See 2Thessalonians 2
- THE MORAL SPIRITUAL CONNECTION. The embrace and addition of deep moral decadence that helps darken the conscience and build a bigger platform for more deception. 2 Thessalonians tell us that the massive supernatural manifestation coming directly from the active operating presence of satan himself will include "every sort of morally decedent evil that deceives those who are perishing". Please note all forms of the occult, new age and even darker spiritual practice include addictive sexual perversion and moral decadence.

Luciferians who create *chosen ones* know the connection between moral depravity and demonic attachment. Rituals that get a person to do evil dirty the conscience and prepare the human construct to receive more unclean spirits. So as Scripture has revealed, moral corruption and spiritual deception will both rise and contribute to the larger coming of massive demonic manifestation. Study the book of Revelation and what it says about Babylon and you will see the connection. Notice how demonic presence, moral corruption, violence, crime and addictive decadence all support each other.

"Fallen, Fallen is Babylon the Great! She has become a home for demons and a haunt for every evil spirit, a haunt for every unclean and detestable bird. For all of the nations have drunk the maddening wine of her adulteries. The kings of the earth committed adultery with her, and the merchants of the earth grew rich from her excessive luxuries…..her sins are piled up to heaven and God has remembered her crimes." Revelation 18

- THE SATANIC STRIKE; the coming Great Revolt or Rebellion that the luciferians are planning on. They call this the Black Awakening. This massive chaos and anarchy is what millions feel is coming and many talk show hosts and book authors are talking about. This is the next big event on the Biblical prophetic calendar. It will strike with an 'inverted

satanic Pentecost'! A massive pouring out of demonic power….truly the swelling balloon of demonic forces will break and when it does nothing like it will have ever occurred in world history. It will be a multinational, historic unleashing of chaos, violence and anarchy all fueled by sheer and massive satanic power. It will be accompanied by the collapsing of nations as this book has spelled out.

- Like the hurricane that hit New Orleans, it will be unmistakable. Bodies will lie in the streets and everything will change. Only the helpless pleas of change, restoration and need will be heard…at least until a new voice is heard.
- THE GOAL OF REGIME CHANGE. The Black Awakening (This massive spiritual rebellion and chaos) will not close human history, it will however change its course and spark the last seven years of human history this side of the second coming of Christ. The Black Awakening is meant to be a spiritual and societal regime change. And so it will be! The next event is what it's all about. When the frog in the kettle approach is over the spiritual 'balloon' will break and like a collapsing dam the dark waters from the other side will rush in and change the landscape.
- THEN THE VOICE OF AN ANCIENT HATE. The apocalypse of antichrist will occur. With his appearance come the ruling waves of demonic force and the new world order. This new globalism started out as a 'frog in the kettle' approach. With the public arrival and takeover of the antichrist. 'Spirit guided' globalism will happen and change everything. The spiritual force and manifestation of the darkest of the demonic will have arrived also.

FINALLY

I will say it again…most people can feel something in the 'air', that something ominous and catastrophic is coming. It seems all streams of thinking are emptying out into the ocean of a coming chaos. I stand on record and proclaim what the ancient prophets and even Jesus Himself has said; that a time of unequaled devastation is coming and every one everywhere will be affected by it.

History is changing and will change…*for the worse and I say that it's not just 'flesh and blood' that has or is doing this*. It is the ruler of the power of the air, the spirit who is now at work, it is a secret power of lawlessness that is supernaturally operative and the push for the veil to break and hell to come gushing out is upon us!

PART FIVE
UNLEASHING HEAVEN

He was a good man, full of the Holy Spirit and faith, and a great number of people were brought to the Lord.

Acts 11

CHAPTER 37
A SUPERNATURAL HOLE INTO THE SUBSTUCTURE OF RADICAL EVIL

"Nevertheless, I have a few things against you: You have people there who hold to the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to entice the Israelites to sin by eating food sacrificed to idols and by committing sexual immorality."
Revelation 2

" And he said to me, "Son of man, do you see what they are doing—the utterly detestable things the house of Israel is doing here, things that will drive me far from my sanctuary? But you will see things that are even more detestable. "[7] Then he brought me to the entrance to the court. I looked, and I saw a hole in the wall. [8] He said to me, "Son of man, now dig into the wall." So I dug into the wall and saw a doorway there.[9]And he said to me, "Go in and see the wicked and detestable things they are doing here." [10] So I went in and looked, and I saw portrayed all over the walls all kinds of crawling things and detestable animals and all the idols of the house of Israel. [11] In front of them stood seventy elders of the house of Israel, and Jaazaniah son of Shaphan was standing among them. Each had a censor in his hand, and a fragrant cloud of incense was rising.[12] He said to me, "Son of man, have you seen what the elders of the house of Israel are doing in the darkness, each at the shrine of his own idol? They say, "The LORD does not see us; the LORD has forsaken the land". " [13] Again, he said, "You will see them doing things that are even more detestable."[14] Then he brought me to the entrance to the

north gate of the house of the LORD, and I saw women sitting there, mourning for Tammuz. **15** He said to me, "Do you see this, son of man? You will see things that are even more detestable than this." Ezekiel 8

"How much do elected officials know about the Shadow Government's activities and plan's?" p 75 'INSIDE THE SHADOW GOVERNMENT'

WHO KNEW?

If only we knew when the rapist would strike or what the pedophile was planning: We could be there the strike them down and save the victim from a world of pain, sorrow or even death. It would be worth having a heads up! Satan is operating in deep secrecy and this supernatural activity is a major aspect of his power. While the early disciples kicked back and had a meal with Jesus they had no idea who else was in the room. It was there that satan was asking to blast and defeat the disciples. It was there in the room that satan himself was waiting to enter into Judas and supernaturally influence him to betray Jesus Christ unto death.

But who knew?

It is very clear that only Jesus did! Without that infinite omniscience, no one would have known that a powerful radical evil was standing right there ready to pounce with his method and agenda. This fallen cherub's agenda is always about deception and destruction. It is on the move right now. Jesus knew and gave the disciples a heads up....*a supernatural hole into the substructure of radial evil*. That evil was right there in the room and no one but Jesus knew. The finite and the infinite were engaged. So let me say with confidence and clarity that God does know every iota of satanic breath, finger print, method and agenda. Only God, Himself, knows every thought and move the 'prince of darkness' has, is and will make. The great news is that God does give us massive revelation on the origin, nature, method and active agenda of satan.

BONES IN THE WOODS

While on a research outreach trip I found the book 'HITLER AND THE NEW AGE'. It was strange to begin reading about the occult infused political ideology that created the final solution (in secrecy) and stacked the bodies high as they shoveled as many as they could into those massive ovens. The book was in my hands when we pulled into a deep wooded area where the black mass indicator was painted in black on a tree. This was the ritual site where we dug up bones that were used in satanic rituals. It was this place that a *chosen one* revealed and spoke of the blood sacrifices and dark powers that were engaged. Dear reader this is one of thousands of hidden ritual centers that have been in operation for years. More are coming and they are active....on a supernatural level.

This was like many of the ones I have seen now. What I have seen in places like this and on slide shows of police academy training screens was horrific but it doesn't scratch the surface of what God sees at every moment and everywhere. God has and can lead those who are willing to find, see and help bring exposure to this deadly practice. God will also lead many to pour out Spirit led prayer against the active open doorways to the demons who are pouring in and building for a coming history changing chaos.

"He reveals deep and hidden things; he knows what lies in darkness, and light dwells with him. "Daniel 2

"Nothing in all creation is hidden from God's sight, everything is uncovered and laid bare before the eyes of him to whom we must give account" Hebrews 4

I hope this book has in some measure been an exposure of the satanic agenda but it's not just exposure that I am shooting for, it's a fired up engagement to confront the rise of end time radical evil and an *intense release of the awesome mission of God in His power and compelling love*. Has the Spirit of God spoken to your heart yet? I love what Isaiah said in chapter 6.... "Hear am I, send me."

A SUPRANATURAL HOLE INTO THE SUBSTRUCTURE OF RADICAL EVIL

It will take the hand of God who can show a strong believer where the darkest of evil practice is present. In Ezekiel 8 while deep level luciferic worship was going on, not even the great prophet Ezekiel knew what was going on until God moved him and opened the door for him to see. God can, will and I believe wants to rip the secrecy lid off of what has been, is and will be going on. Biblical revelation has massive revelation on the origin, nature methodology and current active agenda of this radical evil; the very radical evil that is changing the face of history right now. Because the nature and work of evil is to do its dirty works in the cloak of secrecy who knows? As we have emphasized… God does. God has given a hole into the substructure of real radical evil. He can help you see and then take action but let's look at what most never see until it's too late; a supernatural hole into the origin, nature, methodology and agenda. That substructure of radical evil has been and is given but it must be discovered as you search. Here is what we need and can count on.

THE LANGAUGE OF GOD (WORD) THE REVELATION OF GOD

Scriptures are the final authority on this subject. They alone give what no other writing has ever given...ever! In scripture we find a systematic and progressive revelation on radical evil from head to toe. The origin, nature, methodology, agenda (plans) can be discovered if we search the scriptures. What we have is a specific heads up to what satan is doing. Knowing the inspired revelation will grant you Holy Spirit Perception (HSP). This is the God given supernatural ability to perceive and discern. Here are some points to study:

- The (Revelation/scripture) Word of God is the Holy Spirit's language see Hebrews 1-4.
- The Word of God gives you faith to believe. Romans 10
- The Word of God is Active and Alive/Living. Scriptures are Spirit and life, Jesus said. Hebrews 4
- The Word of God alone can lead us to acquire salvation. Romans 10 and see the Gospel of John
- The Word of God causes you to grow, know more, be strong and walk with God. 1 Peter 1

- The Word of God defeats deception and gives discernment. Hebrews 5; 1John 2
- The Word of God gives revelation of and victory over the devil himself. 1John 2; Matthew 4

The Word of God is a massive revelation by the Spirit of God who will give a supernatural insight and heads up to the current and increasing spiritual masquerade. Prophetic Revelation has revealed and spelled out the sequence of the satanic agenda and knowing this 'PR' will give you accurate and massive insight to what is going on, what God is doing and what the '...ruler of the domain of the atmosphere' is doing. No matter how many supernatural and spiritual experiences occur, screen them all through the Word, what the Holy Spirit has and is saying. (See 1Corinthians 14).

THE SPIRIT OF GOD

The Spirit of God is....God. He is 'eternal', 'Holy', called God (Acts 5) and holds/has all three main attributes of God-Omnipresence, Omniscience and Omnipotence. The Holy Spirit knows every detail of the fallen cherub; what his nature, methodology and agenda are. There is nothing that satan/demons can do, think, plan or say without the Spirit of God knowing (Psalm139).

It is the Spirit of God who has revealed all of who and what satan/demons are. The Spirit of God is seeking to bring every human being 'out of darkness and into the light' (see 1Peter) to direct and permanent relationship with Christ.The Spirit of God will reveal Christ and the revelation of God and in so doing will expose the demonic and all of their deception. The Holy Spirit lives in the believer in Christ (Romans 8) and gives us discernment (1Corinthians 2), Spiritual insight (Ephesians 1), and the Spiritual advantage (1John 4:1-4). By the Spirit of God we can be lead to victims of SRA/MPD and engage the perpetrators. In Acts chapter 8 you will see how the Spirit of God lead and spoke to Philip with very distinct and direct guidance for ministry.

It is the Spirit of Christ that can help you pray, discern and will guide you concerning uncovering and exposing hidden satanic practices. We have a

prayer mapping training that helps us to learn how to listen to the Holy Spirit as we focus prayers on covens and underground occult crime practices.

See also our have a free 12 hour teaching on HSP... Holy Spirit Perception. See this at www.shatterthedarkness.net

THE POWER OF PRAYER

Seeking God in prayer like Daniel did in his day can bring the same God given supernatural insight. God can break the satanic blinding, masquerade and deception by revealing, who, what and where dark practices are being done. It will be vital that you pray for dark powers that hide the perpetrators to be broken and then pray for full exposure.

Please see Daniel and rely on these words of God:

"He reveals deep and hidden things; he knows what lies in darkness, and light dwells within him". Daniel 2

"Nothing in all creation is hidden from God's sight, everything is uncovered and laid bare before the eyes of him to whom we must give account" Hebrews 4

It was prayer and praise that led God to grant an earthquake to free Paul from jail and Peter who was being prayed for had angels show up to set him free and open iron gates (See the book of Acts to see the powerful answers to prayer). Miracles do still happen and they are needed!

God is against evil, you can be sure of that. He wants to save all but does intervene to stop murderers and even the detestable things underground luciferians do. So stand up strong...and immoveable and fight radical evil. Psalm 125:1 tells us:

"Those who trust in the LORD are like Mount Zion, which cannot be shaken but endures forever." Psalm 125

When a believers prayers become fierce and you grow...*'more and more powerful'* then it can be like the reformer John Knox whose prayers were very strong against evil. The wicked queen who opposed Christ's work...' *feared the prayers of John Knox more than an invading army'*!

THE WILLINGNESS TO LOOK

When God led the prophet Ezekiel over to the cave he may have had no idea what he was about to see. In chapter 8 Ezekiel was willing to look at what God was showing. God led him point by point to see 'detestable' things and then he was shown even more 'detestable' things. If you want to help victims and nail down perpetrators you may have to see things that most never will. You will have to be ready to be confronted with real radical evil....and then do something about it.

There are “chickens” out there unwilling to see what is really going on. We need to realize that God has not given us a Spirit of cowardice but of Power. (See 2 Timothy1). A lawyer once told me, "Russ I am so glad you are doing this because it scares the snot out of me". This believer in Christ needs some 'boldness'. Acts 4! Fear is a platform for the dark spirits to speak and hold people in bondage. Fear is a snare and grieves the Holy Spirit who gives and wants His Power to be a fire through us, so '...don't put out the Spirits fire (1Thessalonians 5).

Know that God can:

"Yet Saul grew more and more powerful" Acts 9:22

"**27**By faith he left Egypt, not fearing the king's anger; he persevered because he saw him who is invisible..... **32**And what more shall I say? I do not have time to tell about Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, David, Samuel and the prophets, **33**who through faith conquered kingdoms, administered justice, and gained what was promised; who shut the mouths of lions, **34**quenched the fury of the flames, and escaped the edge of the sword; *whose weakness was turned to strength;* and who became powerful in battle

and routed foreign armies. " Hebrews 11

THE LIVING ACTIVE CHRIST

Who could stop Jesus? The demons fear Him and nothing stopped Him. This great Savior said to us "...and I will be with you always even to the end of the age."Matthew 28. Jesus worked (supernaturally operative) with active obedient believers...in very powerful ways, "Then the disciples went out and preached everywhere, and the *Lord worked with them and confirmed his word by the signs that accompanied it*." Mark 16

Your Lord Jesus Christ is alive! Never forget that! He pledged His active living presence and you can count on His powerful hands of ministry on and with you. Paul himself testifies about the Living Christ after a long history of ministry and labor with these words:

"He has delivered us from such a deadly peril, and he will deliver us. On him we have set our hope that he will continue to deliver us, **11**as you help us by your prayers. Then many will give thanks on our behalf for the gracious favor granted us in answer to the prayers of many." 2Corinthians 1 and "But the Lord stood at my side and gave me strength, so that through me the message might be fully proclaimed and all the Gentiles might hear it. And I was delivered from the lion's mouth." 2Timothy 4

ANGELS DO SCRAP

The elect angles of God are our friends, brethren and fellow servants. They are powerful and are working to:

- Help those who are saved Hebrews 1
- Are seen in the book of Acts helping, defending and freeing (rescuing) servants of Christ. They are at work and can even show themselves as they did in the early church. (See the book of Acts and how it reveals angelic ministry). They helped Paul, pointed Philip in the right direction, got Peter out of prison and helped in the front line work of evangelism.

- "But during the night an angel of the Lord opened the doors of the jail and brought them out. **20**"Go, stand in the temple courts," he said, "and tell the people the full message of this new life". Acts 5
- Psalm 68 gives us an example of calling on the Lord for his power to come and this would include that God sends angels to fight.
- Angels fighting dark fallen angels (demons) can be seen in Revelaton12. As a matter of fact the book of Revelation has over 60 references to the work, ministry and activity of angels of God in the very last days.
- They are at work on the behalf of believers and come in answer to prayer. See the book of Daniel to see how angels worked.

FINALLY

Looking under the carpet and seeing the dirt and results of satanic activity can be very ugly and dangerous. But it was God himself who led Ezekiel to see it. God also tells believers to *expose the evil deeds of darkness* (Ephesians 5) and as I have always said, "You can't expose what you don't know about". The question is dear reader, "Will you let God show you the lethal face of evil and if so will you stand and say, here am I send me"?

You are needed in the fight but the weapons will not be human; instead by the supernatural power and works of God you can break into this hidden satanic system of human misery. If you don't want God to be involved then step back and get out of the way...this is a supernatural fight. It began as one (Ezekiel 28) and it will end as one. (Revelation 19)

Along with all of the bloody evil I have seen I have also seen and experienced the awe striking power and presence of God. The providence of God is amazing and His work for saving, rescuing, healing and setting people free is filled with a glorious love and compelling drive. You can be sure you will experience the incredible acts of Jesus when you are on the field of ministry instead of the basement of personal survival. Note:

"Though you have not seen him, you love him; and even though you do not see him now, you believe in him and are filled with an inexpressible and

glorious joy"

1Peter

"Someone once said, and I must agree, that

'Christianity is nothing if not supernatural."

P 47 'REACHING YOUR WORLD FOR CHRIST' ANDREW MURRY

CHAPTER 38

COUNTER MEASURES

The missiles have been fired now what are you going to do?

“Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour…” 1 Peter 5

"He who does what is sinful is of the devil, because the devil has been sinning from the beginning. The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the devil's work." 1John 3

SUPRISE ATTACK

It took me three blows to break the grip of the *chosen one* who was choking me. I was trying to rebuke the demonic power in this coven loyal sub personality and at the same time break his physical grip. Sub personalities not only have a fierce fixed mind to do what they must but the ‘energy’ in their programming gives them a dark supra natural edge. His eyes like the others were glazed over, dark and very cold. Every ounce of his being was into what he was doing, trying to harm or kill me. Once his hands were off my neck the three officers grabbed him and they battled him till he was on the ground, legged chained and cuffed. There was only one passion in this *chosen one*, his (and the rest of the sub personalities) ability and quickness to physically attack and do lethal harm.

SNEAK ATTACK

When she left the office I felt something was wrong; she was always up to something. This time I felt so agitated that I went over to the couch knelt down and began to pray. I looked up once or twice and saw something over in the crack of the couch. I dug them out and realized they were put there by design. They were her 'power' rings that she wore every time I saw her. These rings were all black and had been 'charged', meaning they were demonized. As I have said earlier the uses of demonized objects are many. They are 'charged' with demonic presence and with demonic purpose. An object like a necklace, a ring or even a statue can have demonic presence on them with the purpose of protection or cursing. This time the Spirit of God spoke to me and showed me that they were charged and placed for confusion and a curse. I also discerned that this was only part and the beginning of an agenda. She had done this before to another pastor and his church in the area. The results were devastating.

I took the rings, washed them off and prayed over them. I also prayed against the purpose of the demonic intent. I commanded that all of the intent, powers and presence of demons would be broken and canceled. I kept the rings in a baggy for about a week and then called the girl satanist to say I found them and that God foiled her plan.

This is the girl who had '*war on the saints'* tattooed on her left wrist. She sought earnestly to destroy the other pastor, declared she would steal my daughter and sought to release demonic forces on me right in my pastor's office.

What would you do? What would your pastor do? Who would be ready and watching for this type of secret occult warfare? Isn't it time we know and learn powerful and fierce countermeasures?

DEADLY ATTACK

I sat at my desk and the girl sat across from me, her military husband was right outside the door. When I looked down at my notes ….in an instant there was a 'slam' and a bayonet swished by my head and stuck into the desk. I looked up, her eyes were black and glazed over; she was only making growling sounds. Did she mean to miss? I had no time to ask as she pulled

the bayonet out of the wood and tried to strike me again.

When her husband came rushing in, she growled at him and ran for the door. This soldier husband pulled back and shut the door. She put the bayonet right through the door and an inch away from his head. When the officers arrived she collapsed and said she didn't know what happened. They took her for psych evaluation anyway.

Was it planned? Someone got that bayonet and put it inside her leather coat. This calls for careful thought and a preparedness that must be put in place. We need to be prepared now and we need countermeasures!

If you say yes, right! Let's do something about this! Great....but so many have been willing to say with a pat on my head, "We're glad you're out there doing this stuff or even worse, "Glad you're doing this because this stuff 'scares the snot out of me'." I*ndifference and fear are the stone cold emotions of the powerless and the uncommitted. Those bound by them are frozen in time and unable to help themselves or others*. Please don't forget that sentence; it may help you get disgusted about the weakness of your life or of the failing weakness of the Church and do something about it. If you're just sitting around in the rocks hiding out waiting for the end to come so you won't be touched then realize that at this point *you are letting darkness fall*.

Hell's mouth is wide open and there is an unprecedented pouring out of attack on the world, the church and the weak. You must realize people are being destroyed, the demons are dancing at glowing rituals and the satanists are mocking the silence and inaction of Christians and the Church. Let's hear the words and wisdom of God:

"One who is slack in his work is brother to one who destroys" Proverbs 18:9

Jesus was no slacker! When Jesus hung on that Cross He demonstrated that fearless sacrifice was the stuff of redemption and rescue. Redemption is all action and a demonstration that God is stepping in; that God is moving in opposition of radial evil. He is also building a Church (people) who will step out in mission. Let's remember that obedience is God empowered action

and that it manifests His love, grace and power.

Jesus on the move as seen in the dynamic gospel of Mark was and is working for the defeat and destruction of evil. This dynamic active work of Christ is going on to this day by those who have taken up the Cross, thrown evil to the dirt and followed Christ in the work of bringing people to God.

So again:

"Indifference and fear are the stone cold emotions of the powerless and the uncommitted. Those bound by them are frozen in time and unable to help themselves or others. '

May I ask again, "What are you prepared to do"? Counter measures begin with you deciding to take action. You can hide in the rocks while the demons scream and the children cry in horror. You can bury yourself in many pointless activities and be so busy that you don't see the numbers of violated victims, or you can do the right thing, take up the cross and fight like heaven! It's only in this work that you shall experience the power of God and see the footprints of the Living Christ. (See Mark 16:20 or read the great book of Acts).

This book was not written so much to show the guts of evil, *it was written to find brave souls who fear nothing and love God; those who will fight like heaven and count on His counter measures. You may be one of those 'counter measures.'*

A DIRTY COP AND A GUN NO MATCH FOR THE DEVIL

Let me share a third story. I was sitting in a room in a local police department with a victim of satanic ritual abuse. She was the wife of a federal officer and had gone through a lot of pain. She was also a perpetrator and could be used by the local coven to kill. When asked to tell on the bad guys she blurted out *"Who will protect me"?* She had been taken and beaten

many times to shut her up. I have heard the same question many times now from victims of SRA/MPD.

The officer, a detective looked at her reached down patted his side arm and said he would. But is this the only countermeasure we can use? I think God has given law enforcement to us to 'bear the sword on the evil doer' (Romans 13) and we have involved officers many times in the crisis events many SRA's go through but we must become more proactive than just reactive. The police can't be everywhere all the time and not every officer wants to spend hours just looking for evidence. Besides the officer in question was a "dirty" cop. It wasn't strange to us that this cop who got underage favors under the table never came up with satanic crime perpetrators. A good officer is a great tool in the hand of God, an instrument for good and a sword against evil but one bad cop enables the pain of many.

We need to research, pray through and find a host of critical Spirit lead countermeasures for the crimes happening now but also prepare for the coming of the full culture wide onslaught of the black awakening. A good place to look for guidance is in the book of Nehemiah chapter 4. Quick response and bold faith can slam the door on the noise and activities of radial evil. The Word of God will give many powerful countermeasures in the face of crisis and danger. The OT is full of them; after all the believers then had to fight like heaven against nephilim (demon human hybrids-Genesis 6) and demonized tribes who sacrificed their children to gain the powers of the war gods. Children and victim bodies were used in the weaponization of demonic powers then...and now. The temporary victory for radical evil does have its price.

THE POWER OF KNOWLEDGE...ON THE FIELD

We must have the goal of educating ourselves and this, my friends is no small issue! It was this passion and desire for consuming information and knowledge that led me to know, grow and prepare for more encounters with this agenda of radical evil. Much of the knowledge has emboldened me to fight and even lead me to take the fight right up to the gates of hell itself. It has also led me to put out the information you are reading. Running from evil only lets it reign and grow with sinister glee. Confronting it as David did

Goliath brings the backing of the God of Heaven and a demonstration of His power. It wasn't up there where soldiers were hiding in the rocks that the power of God was displayed. It was on the field where faith fought like heaven.

Encountering, confronting and engaging this dark agenda is needed on a personal level yes, but counter measures need to be acquired for the sake of the big picture too. Anyone who just seeks to save themselves is truly weak and may I say a rotting coward! Please hear me when I say that inaction in this area is the evidence that we are filled with fear, don't care and most likely are too busy.

Inaction is a betrayal of who and what Jesus is all about. For any Christian fear and inaction are unacceptable. We cannot just bask in the grace that the blood, sweat and tears of the Savior gave while others are destroyed.

Laziness, fear and apathy are the foundations that aid and abed the work of the dark side.

As you read the three small but potentially dangerous stories above please realize that this is how it is with them and it only gives a tiny glimpse into what is coming. Sit on your duff if you want. Hide out in empty busyness or close your eyes.....but none of this is going away. Like the coming of the rising tide just ignoring the water at your ankles will only drown you in the end.

Here are some of the countermeasures that are needed and needed right now! May the God of heaven grant even more insight and wisdom in the days to come! As the Spirit of God in revealed preparation for the last days says….

"This, calls for patient endurance and faithfulness on the part of the saints and .....This calls for wisdom...."

Revelation 13:10 and 18

THE POWER OF KNOWLEDGE BREAKS SECRECY

First you are going to need wisdom and knowledge. If you don't know who, what and the why of these satanic warrior monks or the satanic agenda, you are already at a vast disadvantage. Let me say it again, you are at a vast crippling disadvantage! Remember that satan (and the demonic realm) himself uses his 'secrecy' as a weapon and so do his elite servants who work in the night.

'Never forget that secrecy is a weapon, a dark one! It hides what is really there'

Living and plotting in secrecy is the trade of the luciferians and it is a supernaturally empowered tactic (2Thess2). It is the Spirit of God who has revealed the origin, the nature, the methodology and the raging agenda of this 'secret power of lawlessness' (see2Thess.2). It is revealed in the stories that Jesus Himself told of an evil one who works in the secrecy of night creating transmuted servants to grow up right alongside the ever growing Body of Christ. 'Tares' are right now in your midst. Secret knowledge, secret oaths, secret places, secret power, secret rituals and an underground army of people who are sworn to secrecy have swelling ranks.

Chosen ones and those who created them are bathed in 'supernatural' secrecy; they and the elites are supposed to know but you are not. Secrecy is the rule. It is the law for now. Soon the final agenda of evil will arrive on the surface and what was sown in the dark will pounce in the daylight of history. It is the supernatural knowledge of God that reveals this satanic secrecy that is now ascending out of is hiding place. Don't wait too long to get a grip on all of this. As you stand up and begin to fight like heaven you will see that God has satan's play book and reveals it all.

It is the knowledge God gives that will expose evil and prepare you to overcome and fight it. Only here in the record of biblical revelation do we have the full and only accurate information of the existence and activities of evil. The biblical knowledge of the origin, nature, methodology and agenda of radial satanic evil will give you the grid by which you can recognize and measure its activities. Satan may be unseen for now but he and the demonic

are not untraceable.

Here is what we know:

- The *origin* of evil is found in the 'will to power' and its self exalting violent revolt against God. (See Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28). Scripture reveals where it all began.
- The *nature* of evil is revealed in the words of Jesus Himself when he said that the thief (satan/demons) comes to kill, steal and destroy. (See John 10) Satan is the father of lies and is a murderer a billion times over! Scripture reveals the stone cold permanent nature of evil.
- The *methodology* of the fallen cherub and his servants are demonstrated in his attack at the beginning of the human race (Genesis 3), in the middle (see Matthew 4 and 2 Corinthians 11:1-3) and in the end (see 2 Thessalonians 2). Deception, lies and seduction are the three unholy devices of this ancient one…. all of which lead to bloody destruction and eternal damnation. Have we learned this yet? It is vital that we are not 'outwitted' and instead know well what the 'schemes' of the devil are.(2Corinthinans1)
- And the *Agenda* of evil! This is where most have gone snow blind. We can't see because *satan seeks to blind minds so they can't.* (2 Corinthians 4:4) Maybe we don't want to see because of the fear! Have I said this yet, "*Fear cripples and fogs our sight"?* Lethal evil isthere but who wants to look? It's bloody and messy and it might get us, right? The dark side counts on this! The raging active supernatural *agenda* of the evil one is so vast it took out one third of the angles, brought the fall of the human race, sought to destroy Jesus the first time, is seeking global domination and will seek the extermination of God himself in the end. (See Revelation 19:19)

What do you really know of the ancient dragon and his intentions? The evil one is not just a high school boy who wants to date your daughter…he would rather slaughter her and eat her! Gruesome yes, but this is exposing real radical evil. This is what real evil is.

It is true satan does not want you to know about him, his origins, nature, methods, agenda and active presence. I am even more convinced that this dark menace does not want you know about the *countermeasure that God gives and reveals in detailed Biblical knowledge.* This knowledge is purposely revealed, privileged and strategic. It is also vitally necessary if you are going to do anything at all. What God gives involves the preemptive insights and weapons you will need to live for Christ and fight for the salvation of others. Do you know His Word deeply?

FIRST HEAVEN'S REVELATION

First of all seek Biblical revelation. It is the only infallible record and purposefully given knowledge of the existence and work of evil. Study intensely the impact of the fall in Genesis 3. Look at the evil that almost swept away humanity from the face of the earth in Genesis 6. See how the evil one constantly grew and attacked Israel in 2 Kings 21-23. Then take a look at why Jesus came in 1 John 3 and the dark preparations that were made to destroy the infant Son of God in Revelation 12.

The birth of the Church was released as early disciples were attacked by satanic force. The Church was birthed in the context of spiritual war. The words spoken "……and the '*gates of hell will not prevail*" was declared by the one who fought evil's audacity in the desert. See Matthew 4. The early disciples felt the heat of the enemy when satan himself asked to 'sift' them as wheat. You can look at Judas whose heart was wide open for the devil to walk right in. Ananias and Sapphira experienced the same in Acts 5. Both events lead to tragic deaths.

The New Testament itself with its 'Living Words' will unleash a knowledge that will transform any faint hearted saint into a spiritual lion. You will learn of your authority in Christ to 'trample' the demons and 'over come' all the power of the enemy in Luke 10. You are called to put on the armor of God in Ephesians 6 and called to Spirit empowered resistance of the devil in James 2. James 5 will echo the power of prayer and Colossians 4 will call the believer in Christ not only to be a devoted prayer warrior but will tell us to 'watch' for impending danger. That watching for 'impending' danger is a reference to the presence and plots of the evil one. The Holy

Spirit warns us clearly in 1Peter 5 who and what the enemy is and is doing. Don't miss this insight!

Jesus gives a heads up to the disciples and to a Church in the book of Revelation that satan is coming to harm them and the rest of the Word of God will unveil how satan and the demons attack, use a dark methodology and then what to do about them. The Spirit of God will lay out prophetic revelation as He paints the picture of satan's sequence and deadly agenda in these last days.

- THEOLOGICAL KNOWLEDGE
  You can get hold of some great Biblical studies and become very versed in spiritual warfare. Read the books by Dr. Fred Dickenson 'ANGELS:ELECT AND EVIL', or Ed Murphy's book on spiritual warfare which has a great depth of information and Tom White's 'SPIRITUAL WARFARE-A Guide For Believers' is a must to start with.

- THE KNOWLEDGE OF EVIL DEEDS
  You are never to practice evil to get to know it! You can however listen to the victims, read about it and research deeply what is really going on in dark secrecy. You may have to pray hard and hunt down perpetrators but remember this, no matter how much you read about or see this evil it should have an effect....outrage! Never lose this outrage...if you lose outrage then you may have lost your will.

  The facts and documentation are not just in old researched files, they are living in pain right before our eyes. Did I ask....Why are there over 4 million (10 million) victims of SRA/MPD....Who did this to them....and Is it still going on? How do you help and heal them, how do you track the perpetrators and what do you do when they fight back? One story, if you ever see the video of the teenage girl 'pink head' should be more than enough; If not there are hundreds of thousands of more cases.

  Knowledge of what evil is doing must move us into doing what God has and is doing about it. That's what the Cross and the Blood of Christ

are all about.

- KNOWLEDGE OF THE STREETS

  When Paul was in the streets of Athens (Acts) he became disturbed. He was disturbed about the spiritual seduction and idolatry. His passion over this didn't lead to running out of the city to get away from it: It led him into the heart of the city to preach Christ and turn them to God. One of the greatest sermons ever given came from of his troubled emotions regarding what he heard and saw.

  When Philip was scattered with threats behind him and a sorcerer in front of him (in Samaria Acts 8) he did go to a cave. He unleashed the Kingdom of God and people got saved, healed and set free. The end of the story led to a city full of joy.

  When you engage a fully possessed person and the demon is speaking out at you, you will see or have knowledge of the streets. Books help immensely but only if we get out on the streets to do the work Christ sent us to do See Luke 10.

- KNOWLEDGE OF THE VICTIMS

  Many today have heard about satanic ritual abuse or may have even read a little about it in a psych book in the class room but sitting there listening to and engaging a victim will educate you for life. The victims are not just names in a book or people to point at; they are the ones whose childhood has been stolen. They have been raped, seen blood sacrifice and were forced to split. They are the products of hell's agenda, they are real hurting human beings and at times they seem to have no hope. Christ in you should be a beacon, a light at the end of their long dark night. A pat on the back, a few drugs or a room in the happy farm will never help. If you are a believer in Christ, then like Jesus you are sent...to do what He did and in His Name, power and love. Remember '*as the Father sent Me (Jesus) so send I you'*. He has sent us all...but many haven't taken a step.

This volume's main focus is on the revealed knowledge of the 'troops of antichrist', the coming dark revolt (black awakening) and the sequence of satan's agenda in these days before the rise of antichrist. Your calling is to

seek and know the wealth of the wisdom and knowledge of God and let it move you; then you can fight like heaven and do some great good.

FINALLY

The wisdom and Knowledge of God are the foundations and beginning place of a Christ like spirit and empowered countermeasure. David, Samson, Nehemiah, Moses, Debra and Philip were all countermeasures in the hand of God. Armed with a depth of biblical knowledge, what God reveals and the knowledge of what is happening right now in the world around you, *action can and must be taken*.

The best countermeasures in the presence of this growing agenda of radical evil comes from a higher source, from Someone who knows and reveals the alpha and omega of evil's origin, history and stealing agenda. That alone is God; outside of Him you're only fighting shadows.

"Do not say that you have no spiritual power or qualifications. A boy gave to Jesus five loaves of bread and two fish. Jesus multiplied them"

p 111 'VICTORIOUS FAITH' by Richard Wurmbrand

Give Him your life and watch it become a countermeasure to the agenda of radical evil.

CHAPTER 39
FIGHT THEM, NOW AND THEN

"I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith." 2Timothy 4

"Have I not commanded you? Be strong and courageous. Do not be terrified; do not be discouraged, for the LORD your God will be with you wherever you go." Joshua 1:9

"Therefore, my dear brothers, stand firm. Let nothing move you. Always give yourselves fully to the work of the Lord, because you know that your labor in the Lord is not in vain." 1 Corinthians 15

"Help me help me help me…….”Victim

"Why didn’t any one come when I cried for help? Victim

Anyone who remembers the story of the sexual predator who was a registered pedophile feels the pain, regret and the loss of that little happy girl *he raped and killed*. We all wish something could have been done. Clearly something should have been done. If you were there and saw what the mad man wanted and what he was about to do, what would you have done? Would you have fought to restrain him? Yes, I would have! I would had done all I could have if I had the knowledge of this pervert’s agenda. It’s tough to be a Monday morning quarterback, to only wish we could have known and done things differently. But who knew? She was taken and things were being done to her long before anyone had the knowledge of it...she experienced that

man's radical evil and then he buried her alive.

Have you ever wondered how she felt? What she was thinking? Or what she was hoping for? No doubt she cried and asked to go home but radical evil's conscience is so cold it can't hear, it doesn't want to hear…..it doesn't care! How in all of *hell* could someone be so cold as to abuse and then bury alive a little helpless girl? That is a question for outrage, the answer does not bring her back but the finger must be pointed to the sin of man and the influence of dark radical evil. This is very true of the current realities of satanic ritual abuse and of the millions of victims of the cold as hell perpetrators.

THE TWIN WHO IS GONE

Here it went again, when a little baby had her bones broken and feet stabbed over and over again who was there to stop it, to free her and help her? No one! Silence fell and the abuse went on until the occult and demonically influenced man murdered the little baby girl I had once held in my arms. The ritual murder of Jackie Cooper reported in the Beacon Journal of Akron, Ohio was horrific and too little too late. The newspaper said the perpetrator was a 'black (spiritually dark) pagan' and self described Alastair Crowley devotee. Months prior I had picked up the mother and father and their two little girls and brought them to church. I held this little girl and sought to help the parents get their lives right. They chose a different path and it all ended in the prolonged abuse, torture and death of a little baby girl.

HER AGAIN

The young girl who had 'war on the saints' tattooed on her wrist gave me her 'book of shadows' which described rituals being done against a pastor and his wife. This young satanist told me about her goal to bring down the pastor and harm the church. She was the one that showed up at the Church I was pastoring, she came to the front of the sanctuary and told me that she was going to steal my baby daughter (then about 2 yrs old) and sacrifice her to satan. She said it was the only way she could get her rank back in her coven.

What would you have done? What would you have told her? If you were the fly on the pulpit you would have heard me tell her that if she broke into my house, sought to steal my little girl and plan to torture her....would you have heard me say *'I will blow your face off'* because that is what I said.....and I would have done it. Of course she then objected and said I couldn't do that because I was a Christian. What she did not understand was that I was also a father and would have done just what I said, as any good father would. There are times when fighting back this way is right and must be done. Nehemiah chapter 4 has some insight for all of us.

''Therefore I stationed some of the people behind the lowest points of the wall at the exposed places, posting them by families, with their swords, spears and bows. After I looked things over, I stood up and said to the nobles, the officials and the rest of the people,

"Don't be afraid of them. Remember the Lord, who is great and awesome, and *fight for your brothers, your sons and your daughters, your wives and your homes."*

Reaction must be strong now and later. We have to move on from the knowledge and experience we have and seek even more so we can be active and ready. Fighting back involves being aware and having the spiritual guts to act....and act boldly.

I WISH I WAS THERE

A little boy, a sub personality came forward in the body of a 40 year old women, he was 6. He raised his arms with clinched fists, tears in his/her eyes and said with frustration as he looked at me 'if only I was as big as you, I would have fought them off, I would have beat them up!' This internal little alter personality had been in the body of this women for almost 35 years, he carried the pain and memories of what the coven members and sadistic evil Nazi satanist father had done.

How many times did he go through rape and ritual? How many times did he sink into hopelessness and shame? Millions of others carry this same pain and anger but they too are too little and powerless in a system who makes

victims slaves to do anything. I wish I had been there; I would have done anything that was necessary to stop the heartless evil thrust on that helpless victim.

A SPIRITUAL WAR

Remember that the violence of satanic ritual abuse, mind control, and creating 'troops for antichrist' is all rooted in a deep dark spiritual battle. This violence was first exerted in the heavenlies by the sheer force of will, by the once anointed cherub. A widespread trade (trafficking in a revolt/ recruiting an army) by the now fallen self transmuted cherub was unleashed and one third of the once holy angles joined in a willful rebellion. This violent revolt fixed them for eternity. Their nature and will for radical evil is passionate and permanent. This entire willful violent agenda was brought here to our streets, to our domain. We too were once holy, free and majestic. As spiritual beings we walked with our creator and life was pure paradise. God knowing all saw the intent of the now adversary and gave to us (humankind) a powerful word of God, this one, love filled instruction would have shielded us and preserved our original way of life forever.

Then it happened, we threw the living Word of God to the ground, rejected the creator and embraced a lie. When you embrace the lie you receive the liar and all his intent.

"……when you followed the ways of this world and of the ruler of the kingdom of the air, the spirit who is now at work in those who are disobedient." (Ephesians 2:1-)

We dear reader sinned; we did wrong and opened the door to the devil himself and it has been a trail of tears ever since. You and I along with the rest of humanity have reaped what we have sown and the devil has danced on our graves ever since.

It is this fallen cherub "…….who holds the power of death—that is, the devil" (See Hebrews 2:14-15) until Christ came!

With the loss of majesty, eternity, innocence and the presence of God we became very vulnerable to much deeper levels of deception and degradation. By the time you come to Genesis 6 the revelation of humanity's partnership with the dark side has grown to a point that almost exterminated the existence of original mankind. Humanity was almost exterminated. If not for the grace of the flood we would not be here today. The reality of the Nephilim, demonic human genetic cross breeding sought to eradicate real humanity from the face of the earth; more on this in another book.

From the beginning to Genesis 6 and to this very day the fall of the human race was initiated and spawned by direct supernatural spiritual force. It was a spiritual war from the moment the ancient dragon looked upon human kind's original parents and spoke those first words

"……..yea hath God said?" Genesis 3KJV

Casting doubt, lying and persuading us to reject God and believe an alternative spiritual word was the first 'bullet' shot. We did not duck, we chose. This was a spiritual battle that we lost and the devil won, at least at first, until...the Lamb arrived.

SPIT IN THE FACE

This battle showed itself again when I stood there looking at this woman who was sitting on a chair. I had prayed ahead of time for the Lord to give me insight and then it happened. The Spirit of God showed me and gave me the name of an inner hidden satanic priestess that was listening; I spoke her name out and said I want to talk to her. The *chosen one* stood up and the priestess came up angry and ready to battle. She grabbed a chair with one hand and threw it across the room at me, as she started for me a co worker stepped in and it turned into a knock down drag out fight. This fight is only the tip top of the iceberg of the violence that is sleeping and waiting in them...and it will erupt. Fighting it now, and when it explodes onto our streets must be done. The alternative is to do nothing and sit in sinful frozen silence as destruction has its way!

This *chosen one* fought and even spit in the face of the former law officer who was there to help her. There is so much spite and hate built into many sub personalities and the demons that empower them only maximize this rage. The worker wiped away the spit and continued to help. That incident made me remember the story of the great evangelist John Wesley. He was preaching the gospel out in the open streets where it was needed. As he spoke someone threw a rock, hit him on the head and he began to bleed. The story goes on to say....*'he wiped away the blood and continued to preach!'* So we are going to have to fight and it will as we have said be with the weapons of heaven.

FIGHT WITH INTENSE TRAINING

You look like a man who used to be in shape said the older lady as she asked me for advice at the workout club. Ouch! That one hurt and only told me the truth, I was not in the shape I used to be. I am working on it though lol.. I think. Training involves time and no I am not going to tell you that we have a lot of it. Intense training needs to be goal oriented and must be worked at consistently and then even evaluated. What are your goals for spiritual, physical and information growth? If you don't know, it's time to start. If you have no goals then growth in these areas may never really occur. In this day and hour it's time to press the issue.

- SPIRITUAL:
  Nail down and have daily time in the Word of God and in worship and prayer. Jude 20 says...."build yourselves up in your holy faith" You will have to memorize scripture and start deep consistent personal Bible studies. Study the Bible book by book, know it systematically. "Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly" Colossians 3. DON'T wait until Sunday to get a message from the Pastor. It's good to hear the Word of God but you must study on your own also. Some folks cannot go to Bible school but you can learn just as much and more if you want to. Set out a plan. Get some good Bible study guides. Use good internet Bible study tools (while we still have it). Don't put this off. You can stop reading and pray for the Lord's leading then start. You can sharpen your study skills as you go.

Always study the Word of God in His living presence. Acknowledge the immediate presence of the Holy Spirit and watch how the study time becomes an interaction and fellowship with Jesus right there with you. Study hard and seek to know, memorize and then put into practice this awesome revelation of God. The book of James tells us that we will be blessed if we practice the Word and in 1John 2 we see we can become strong and overcome the evil one. If you don't have anyone else to preach the Word of God to you or encourage you then preach the Word to yourself, speak it out loud and encouraged yourself!

You must also grow in your prayer life. We should know this already but realize that there is a deeper need of powerful prayer warriors when things get bad. In the book of Acts the Church was attacked and persecuted. The believers responded again and again with intense and prolonged prayer. Read over chapter 4 and see also what the believers did when Peter was taken captive or when Paul was put in jail. We should be a people of prayer and experience powerful answers to prayer. In the book of Acts you will see that the power of God came, the building shook, the dead were raised, people were healed, angels were dispatched, miracles occurred, demons were crushed and even earth quakes were caused...all in answer to the prolonged powerful prayers of the believers.

- Be deeply experienced in winning souls to Christ, praying for the sick and commanding demons to leave. Seek to build the Body of Christ and do study the book of Acts as a field manual of the end of days. Know the power of the Holy Spirit the use of spiritual gifts and know how to deal with spiritual warfare and fight. You will need all of this in increasing measure.
- PHYSICAL:

  You can get stronger and have greater heath if you decide to. Seek to train yourself physically! It takes work but you have to start somewhere. It is true that your physical health can affect your ability to study, pray and do great things for God. So start today with a plan, use exercise tapes or join a program for health in your area.

- You can build muscle, strengthen your frame and increase your physical energy. Doing this will also give your body and mind better ability to do

intensive biblical studies and increase ministry experience. Some strong self defense training would do us all good...when the great chaos breaks loose, who knows what we will have to do to protect others.See Nehemiah 4. See the whole book for that matter! Nehemiah knew how to lead, respond and fight and this was all written down to teach us, so learn how to be strong, intense and prepared to do whatever it takes to do the will of God.

- INFORMATION:

  Getting this book and reading this far would tell me that you want to know and be ready. The streams of information are many and can be overwhelming, especially since there is a dark spiritual program of 'disinformation' and a 'secret power of lawlessness in operation. Know the Word of God well. It will be your life and defense too. It will help you discern and cut through the clutter. The prophetic revelation does tell us of massive spiritual deception, counterfeit supernatural works, increasing evil, the coming globalism, the coming revolt (chaos BA) and rise of antichrist. (See 1Tim.4; 2Thess.2 Matthew24;). Know well the books of Daniel and Revelation, these are packed with cutting edge information, a heads up and remember this.....the Word of God is the only accurate and infallible source (foundation).

FIGHT WITH A HEART OF IMMOVEABLE TRUST

Since fear, terror and violence is coming and part of the method of the dark side then you will need to thrust these to the ground right now! Bury fear, fear and faith cannot coexist, you will either push forward with great faith or sink and cower with crippling fear. I do not write, plan or do what I do out of fear. All is done out of an active faith and I seek to become stronger. It is by faith we receive Christ and are saved. It is by faith we grow, learn and step out to do the will of God.

Remember Hebrews 11 teaches us how faith can move mountains, administer justice and conquer kingdoms. Remember God commended those who lived by faith. You must realize that God does not move through doubt and fear, God moves through your personal faith. It is impossible to please Him without it. It is also impossible to do great things for God without faith.

Know Hebrews 11 well and know that God will answer, show His power and reward those who stand in persistent faith.

"Those who trust in the Lord are like mount Zion which cannot be shaken but endures forever" Psalm 125

"All things are possible for him who believes" Mark 9

"....I tell you the truth, if you have faith as small as a mustard seed, you can say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there' and it will move. Nothing will be impossible for you. Jesus Matthew 17

J. Oswald Sanders says in his book 'MIGHTY FAITH' p 89

"Hear these assertions fallen from the lips other than those of the Son of God, they could justifiably be dismissed as sheer fantasy. But He made them as plain affirmations of fact."

FIGHT WITH FIERCE REACTION

They took no action! David was incensed when he heard and saw Goliath, so he did act! For every action there is a reaction. Our action must be intense and ongoing. Our reactions to the darkest lies, attacks and threats must be fierce. Nehemiah 4 teaches you what? Have you looked that up yet? I will tell you that if the information in this book hasn't moved you.....you must be dead:)

Horrific days must be met with fierce reaction:

- You must never back down, Jesus did not.
- You must never give room to the enemy, overcomers don't.
- You must always stand, fight and move forward in faith.
- Fear, cowardice and shrinking back ends in defeat, loss and regret.

Study Acts chapters seven and eight. See how persecution broke out against the Church. The believers were scattered and the persecutors were

'breathing out murderous threats'. Believers were being targeted and chased down and when that occurs you must react....fast. Phillip was just one believer. He chose not to run and hide, in the midst of an evil challenging attack he ramped and intensified his obedience to Christ by seeking to win the lost and advance the Kingdom.

Acts 8 reveals that fierce faith took over and a city once lost and covered in dark power was invaded by Philip and won to Christ. Satanic power was dethroned, people were saved, healed and delivered and the city was (totally impacted) filled with joy! In the book of Acts when the believers refused to run or live in fear they were blessed and empowered all the more (Acts 4). They truly became immovable and undefeatable. It was said of these believers that they *never stopped* (Acts 5:42) teaching and preaching that Jesus is the Christ. They continued to go house to house; to go wherever they could and in whatever the conditions to do the will of God.

FIGHT IN PREEMPTIVE PRO-ACTION

Start now, be preemptive and decide

- Fight for the lost
- Fight for the victims
- Fight for your families
- Fight for your city
- Fight for your nation
- Fight for righteous laws
- Fight for 'influence' for the Kingdom of God
- Fight against the demonic wherever and everywhere!
- Fight dear Christian. Start now and never turn back, there is rest coming for you when Jesus cracks the skies and unleashes the victory that He won on the Cross.

THE FINAL HAMMER

Though God has called out to the kings, nations and world (see Psalm2) the truth is, antichrist and all the foretold events will occur. We can do much

for the cause of Christ and we must but the final blow has been determined a long time ago. If you read Revelation 19 again see how it starts. See the 5 halleluiahs and then notice the first thing done just before Jesus touches the earth. He hammers the antichrist, false prophet and crushes this highly charged satanic super army. Evil is crushed once and for all. From this day forward the long dark night of human tragedy, failure and sin is over. Evil is over...forever. What no one in fallen human history could do (because we were part of the problem) Jesus has done. This, my friend is the reason we fight! The Cross where Jesus once hung for you and the heavens where He will come out of, both motivate us to fight.

"Let not your heart be troubled; you believe in God, believe also in Me.
2In My Father's house are many mansions; if *it were* not *so,* I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself; that where I am, *there* you may be also"

Jesus - John 14

CHAPTER 40
ONLY THE BEGINNING OF THE END

"Jesus answered: "Watch out that no one deceives you. For many will come in my name, claiming, 'I am the Christ, ' and will deceive many. You will hear of wars and rumors of wars, but see to it that you are not alarmed. Such things must happen, but the end is still to come. Nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. There will be famines and earthquakes in various places. *All these are the beginning of birth pains*. " Matthew 25

"New age leaders consider these resisters (Christians-my note) as eventually the only hindrance in allowing this global oneness occur." P 162 'FOR MANY SHALL COME IN MY NAME'

America's Second Civil War "We are in the middle of the greatest ideological struggle in America's history" p ix 'THE EXTERMINATION OF CHRISTIANITY'

"The current cultural conflict in America is not between conservative and liberals; it is a contest between Christianity and the occult-a battle that can be traced to the very beginning of our country...."p 148 Christian J. Pinto 'How To Overcome THE MOST FRIGHTENING ISSUES You Will Face This Century'

"Matthew thus ends on a note of triumph and joyous expectation: the community of Jesus, with its conquering general at its side, is bent on a worldwide mission" P 256 'SALVATION TO THE ENDS OF THE EARTH'

"...I am with you always, to the very end...." Jesus Matthew 28

The black awakening, this catastrophic chaos and all that leads up to it are fueled by dark supernatural powers (the demonic). This event will bring massive destruction, more than most are warning about. This is not just a civil war or racial issue nor is it just a simple political coo. This is a purely spiritual conflict manifesting through the lives of millions and erupting in the physical....on our streets and in our faces. No one will escape it. No one will have to ask, “Is this it”? It will be so clear and so massive that it will seem like the end of humanity and not just a global regime change. I have been told by *chosen ones* who have declared the luciferian mission; “Your (Christians and western culture) time is up....we are coming to power” and according to all that I know and all that this book is about so it shall be...the end of one system and the beginning of a new one.

But it's not over until it's over! The black awakening which I believe is the great revolt of 2Thessalonians 2 will occur and nations will fall, millions will die and it will seem like the end of the world to many...but it’s only the beginning of the end. As a matter of fact it's not the apocalypse of the antichrist that will kick off the last 7 years of human history as we know it; it's the black awakening that does that. There is no rise of antichrist and all that he brings until this revolt paves the way and opens the door.

AFTER GREAT REVOLT

The great revolt will happen and then it will be....over, done and become history. The events that follow will occur so fast that yesterday will seem to be a thousand years ago. September 11 and the vivid memories in my mind of a plane slamming into the tower and of tiny dots (people)jumping out of fire filled broken windows are still here but the alarm and the bite of it all does seem faded in the light of a fast moving world. Billions events come and go and it seems survivors must move on, even if it is with tears. We don't want to forget because we don't want it to happen again. We don't want to minimize the pain or dishonor the victims.

The black awakening will force the masses, nations and leaders to leap into the future...it's one way of escaping the past. After this plotted mass

chaos dies down and seems to have ended there will be a scramble to do many things:

- Law and order will have to be aggressive. The need to be safe and cautious will be the rule as societies begin to come out of hiding and surface.
- Communications, electrical grids and the food chain will have to be restored. Safe zones and make shift hospitals will be serving the wounded. Some will help and others will look for selfish opportunities.
- Crowds will gather and start screaming out for help and information. Millions will help to bury the dead and begin to clean up the debris of destruction. As radio, cell phones and television are slowly restored most will be scanning for information.
- Then the questions will fly and the resolve to never let this happen again will burn. Answers will be planned and disseminated by design as the new prepared regime steps in to fill the void.

The black awakening will seem like a horrific tragedy to many but for those who planned it, to those who helped it occur it will be the 'glorious cleansing' and necessary event to make way for the new golden age of globalism and its new promise to a new world. Luciferians are not focused on the black awakening. It’s only the needed surgery that brings the desired new face of their future.

AFTER THE BIRTH PAINS

Jesus said false Christ's, unprecedented spiritual deception and massive violence will come. He foretold wars and rumors of wars, earth quakes and famines will come. He also said this time will be the worst time in human history....never to be repeated again. All that Jesus foretold in Matthew 24 about the end of the age continues to be an outline for many about how things will occur. But let's not miss the point, after Jesus foretells these “end of the world” events he tells us:

"...but see to it that you are not alarmed. Such things must happen, *but the end is still to come*." (Matthew 24)

Many of these “end of the world” type events are only the beginnings of birth pain not the end itself. Many of the world shaking events will only be the beginning of the end....not the end. The sad and scary part of all this for some is the fact; after these events and the black awakening occurs the worst is still to come.

So much more is to come in such a short amount of time. It is mind blowing but God has given us a vital warning. It will be like the world is being sucked into a sink whole as one global catastrophic event occurs right after another. For an example of this take a read of Revelation chapter nine; the seals are opened and the events that follow lead to the destruction of one third of the then existing human race (possibly 2 billion people). The black awakening is horrific and bad enough but it really does pale (believe it or not) in comparison to the last few years that follow.

AFTER THE RED HORSE

You can look at the four horseman of Revelation 6 and like many ponder the vast and future historic events that will occur. The white horse and its rider I do believe refers to the whole panoramic view of the antichrist. From the 'spirit of antichrist', to his birth and his rise to power the rider of the white horse is all about the coming globalism. It's the red horse that most represents the coming black awakening.

The fiery red horse will be a 'burst' and a 'blast' of massive and horrifying violence. It tells us that with its 'bursting' out onto the scene of humanity only one thing is revealed; culture wide if not worldwide *bloodshed*. This event tells us the peace is 'taken' from the world and what that 'peace' (restrainer ?? of 2Thess.2) held back (black awakening) is eventually unleashed. What's unleashed is not war per say but the butchering and murdering of people by other people. It will be a killing field of violent slaughter that forces me to ask....What is it that causes this violent, civil slaughter?

I will say this sounds like the great revolt. And notice that the red horse doesn't end things; more horsemen are to come with ever increasing evil.

AFTER THE REVELATION OF ANTICHRIST

The most important issue with the black awakening not being the event that ends it all is that the antichrist is prophesied and all he will do is still to come. Even when the revolt occurs and the antichrist arrives the end is not yet. Keep in mind the sequence of satanic evolution. Satan's goal is not even his rise to power in the person of the antichrist. His goal is Armageddon! Here are some of the events to think about after the black awakening occurs:

- The coming Antichrist. The door to the rise of the antichrist and his regime. The whole purpose for the black awakening is to clear the way and reduce the world to a helpless, drowning mass in need of a miracle of earthly salvation. It is the plan of the antichrist to be that savior...albeit a fake one.
- The coming globalism. The black awakening will be used to convince the world that it needs a new future. The consensus will be that the old way doesn't work so we must join all our forces together and unite.
- The coming Witnesses. The Spirit of God tells us that there are two powerful witness coming and will unleash global communication and visible signs and wonders. These witnesses will come after the great revolt.
- The coming lie. Homosatanas will declare himself to be God and millions will believe. (2Thessalonians 2). This is part of the sequence of the satanic plan and will come after the revolt.
- The opening of the Abyss and the global invasion, 200 million 'soldiers'. Revelation 9.
- The attempted annihilation of believers in Christ and the attempt to destroy Israel. Revelation 7-12
- The rise to its pinnacle and fall of Babylon. Revelation 18.
- And then there is the planetary ritual release of satanic power to gather the whole world into the final battle-Revelation 19:19.

FINALLY

The sense of disintegration and tragic events we have all seen in the last twenty years are historic. They remind us of other events that reveal more

unspeakable evil, the holocaust and the world wars scream at us.....as we, the world slide down that same razor's edge.

Have we learned that *just learning about the past evil* is not enough to stop the sin and supernatural evil that drives hearts, nations and kings of the earth. Why is such rage swelling up in society is the question of that 3,000 year old Psalm 2....Why? As you ponder the possible answer I hope you will make a b-line to the Cross of Christ. Jesus talks a lot about the end of the age and all that leads up to it but it's not the main reason He came here. He came here to get us, save us and open a door to real everlasting change.

41
THE BLACK AWAKENING AND THE USA

"The world appears to be headed for a series of disasters. Rivers of blood could flow." P 246'THE END OF MAN'

"The American psychotherapist Dr. Scott Peck describes 'people of the lie' as all those who have handed themselves over to evil." P 28 'MORAL MELTDOWN The Core of Globalism'

"...America, which is at the center of all crucial global matters today, is at the heart of this quest to find peace-particularly peace that will disarm the trigger to World War III" p 225 'THE AMERICAN APOCALYPSE Is the United States in Biblical Prophecy?

"Most pastors are well aware of the fact that the church could use some improvement in terms of impact-effectiveness."P 145 'SAVE AMERICA!'

It would seem the sharks are circling the USA today as never before. There is a lot of hate emerging all around the world. So I ask, would anyone care if the US was destroyed? What if all hell broke loose here in America today; would those who hate this nation seize the opportunity to stick the knife in all the further? All of this concerns me for sure and it is hard sometimes as I go about my daily stuff because I know the evil that has been and is being plotted will surface just as God has said it would.

I was in the deep woods last week and the sights are just awesome; the trees and colors, the trails and the small animals reveal the wonders of God to me. But these are the woods I have also had to look in for evidence of ritual sacrifice and the summoning of demons. The world you and I live in has been spoiled by sin, satan and the worst dear reader is yet to come. America is in for a rude awakening.....a dark satanic one.

If you were the antichrist sitting deep and hidden in Europe with your selected leaders in scarlet chambers and the question came up, *"What do we do with the USA"?'* What do you think the answer would be? There are two things that come to my mind first:

- First, we are already years behind looking at and considering what satan, the antichrist and a massive underground elite have planned. *They are not asking the question. They answered it long ago and are instead seeking to accomplish their plan.* I believe with all my heart they are way ahead of what the mass majority of people are thinking. While the world stands in angst over its destabilization the 'secret power' operating in this hidden shadow regime is licking its chops and they are ready to pounce!
- Second, from all I know in biblical prophecy all the nations are the targets of antichrists 'globalism' but some may be more important than others. The USA has a lot of resources; military, industrial, economic, wealth and bodies! The USA is a treasure trove for the antichrist. The hidden hand and their 'secret power', has been working here among the US since its birth. Just turn your dollar bill over and look at that pyramid and that beaming, "all seeing eye"....those are not in any way shape or form, Christian symbols. Those symbols are of the deepest occult source and represent purely a luciferic agenda; chaos and a new world order.

Among us in the US there is a shadow government, a shadow military and a cloaked counterfeit shadow spiritual presence behind it all. No, antichrist is not thinking or asking what he and his are going to do with the US, they already know and are deeply embedded here.....and have hundreds of

thousands of intact *chosen ones* (satanic super soldiers) waiting for the call!

THE BLACK AWAKEING DEEP IN THE USA

Those who were involved in crashing the planes into the towers counted on the fact that many would die. It was part of the goal. This is only a glimpse of what *chosen ones* tell me is going to happen here. Whether the black awakening is progressive and occurs over months or whether it happens over night one thing is for sure, *chosen ones* all know it will be an 'unmistakable event' that will take the US by surprise and from within. When the lights go out and the power is off, when the phones are silent and the explosions begin millions will know this is no local event. When buildings are burning and thousands are dying, when targets are hunted down and assassinated hour by hour and day by day, Americans will know this is beyond what anyone expected.

The evil in the air and the madness on the streets will be unlike anyone has conceived; once it starts many will think it will soon be over or that the government will save us. But the sabotage within military, law enforcement and among governmental leaders will shock and awe them. Those who planned this chaos have planned for everything. The anarchy will not stop until....the antichrist calls for it to. And you need to know he will not call a stop to it until the USA is on its knees seeking help from a regime in Europe that has emerged out of nowhere.

It is one thing to know that thousands of *chosen ones* are fully intact and ready for activation; it's another thing to know they are only part of the plot. They are leaders, workers, soldiers and others who are not the 'suicide killing' machines that are on the streets. These once cloaked luciferians are the ones who will join antichrist’s call and seek to lead the US to bow at the feet of this new super leader. They are here. They are in the shadows...like Greeks in the belly of a wooden horse they wait. They will come out when the time is right.

THE BLACK AWAKENING TAKING DOWN THE SUPER POWER

Who would think the USA could become a lesser super power? Yet that is what parts of the world are 'banking' on. The US has too much resistance against globalism right now and too many who will not bow. The response on 912 after the attacks of 911 were very telling...go fight and destroy the bad guys was the resolve of the then unified US. I do wonder whether or not 911 was a trial run to test the resolve of American citizens and its government. And if you wondered who the bad guys were then well then just wait until the black awakening rips out, it will seem like destruction and chaos is coming from everywhere.....with no one to blame.

Part of the reason for the coming chaos and nation changing coo is to stop the US from stopping the rise of antichrist and the unification of powers in Europe and the seizing of economic, military and other resources. If the US can't be stopped or brought down by conventional war then an internal one is needed. The seeds for a civil war within the US are here but are not yet at a level that would take the entire nation down and if nukes were used two things would occur:

- First, the US would respond with nukes and massive destruction could occur. This is what most fear and seek to avoid.
- Second, the US could be so destroyed that none of its resources could be used for the reign of antichrist and the new globalism.

For these reasons and the fact that prophetic revelation tells us antichrist's goal will be to have all the nations (Psalm 2 and Revelation 16) with their resources join him. For his goals to be fulfilled and Armageddon to come a conventional war will not occur. Antichrist and globalist (luciferic) leaders want and will bring the US down.....but not annihilate it.

Now this does not mean that there will not be border wars and skirmishes between nations, these will happen for sure. Wars and rumors of wars will be everywhere. These are happening right now as you read but when the black awakening occurs you can expect border wars, skirmishes and even a few missiles will fly....but not an end of the world nuclear war.

THE BLACK AWAKENING AND INTERNAL LUCIFERIANS

They are here that you can take to the bank. The very ones who are plotting the fall of the US are working right here among us. If there are even a few million intact *chosen ones* planted throughout all of our institutions then you must realize...someone (committed luciferian elitists) have made them, handle them and placed them. These elitists that so many talk about are living two lives, the outward public one with all the smiles and suits (like at Bohemian Grove) and then there is their hidden life (just like the Nazi doubling).

Who are the 'luciferians?' that's the billion dollar question. Since they are shrouded in personal and supernatural secrecy it's hard to nail them down. The personal secrecy is there right now because they don't want anyone, colleagues and the public to know who they are. What they hold to and are joined to would be considered 'anti-American' and even treasonous if they were found out. The other side of this is the fact that there is a supernatural secrecy imposed. The 'secret power' referred to in 2 Thessalonians 2 is the controlling factor in all of their current activities. Though they claim and feel they are the elite, they are subservient to the 'powers that be'.... the fallen cherub.

You can look for signs of the shadow government, shadow military and hidden luciferians by discerning two things; what they believe and what they are opposed too.

- First what they believe. Luciferian elitist will not go around with a badge on that says they are. They do however have a belief system that comes from and must fit the satanic agenda. I break it down into 3 parts but they are inseparably connected.
    - They believe that mankind is evolving, that there is a spiritual evolution coming and that this will lead to mankind's golden age. Thisbelief in human spiritual evolution is the flip side of the coin...globalism.
    - They believe in a new age that will unify the world and will reshape everything. Globalism is what they talk about, legislate for and push in all they do. For them globalism is mandatory.

    - They also believe that a super world leader is coming and will be the one to accomplish all of this. They want strong leadership that will be the voice and power for a one world order.

- Secondly, there is the issue of what they don't believe or what they are opposed to. They are against:

  National sovereignty

  Independent military systems
    - Christ; that is the Christ of the scriptures.They may give lip service for their public acceptance to Church, Christ and the Bible but their actions demonstrate they are not of God...at all. Since they are of the 'spirit of antichrist' then the real Christ and the Holy Spirit would be offensive to them and so would all who love the real Christ, have the Holy Spirit in them and are committed to His cause.

Just like Jesus said..... "You will know them by their fruit....."

The satanic core agenda is a globalized, spiritual, political, military and monetary system in visible unity. This satanic evolution will also have a deadly and fierce opposition to anything that would resist it; anything and anyone! The closer we get to the burst of the black awakening you will see these areas become a 'critical mass' of 'feeling in the air' and thinking among the world's 'mesmerized kings', 'surrendering nations' and 'seduced people groups' (thus PS2). Seeing this energized momentum is seeing the world going down that drain and it will all flush out and end up at...R1919.

THE BLACK AWAKENING AND THE END OF THE US

Have you read Carl F. H. Henry's book 'THE TWILIGHT OF A GREAT CIVILIAZATION'? This theologian warned us years ago when he said:

"A half-generation ago the pagans (occult-Satanist-luciferians my note) were still largely threatening at the gates of Western culture; now the

barbarians are plunging into the...mainstream. As they seek to reverse the inherited intellectual and moral heritage of the Bible,... [we are] engaged as never before in a rival conflict for the mind, the conscience, the will, the spirit, the very selfhood of contemporary man."

What Dr. Henry said is echoed by many others who also saw the 'writing on the wall'. Here are some of the works that need to be read and understood:

- IS AMERICA IN BIBLE PROPHECY? Mark Hitchcock
- SAVE AMERICA! By H. Edward Rowe
- THE EXTERMINATION OF CHRISTIANITY by Robert L. Schenck
- HOW TO OVERCOME THE MOST FRIGHTENING ISSUES YOU WILL FACE IN THIS CENTERY by 20 experts
- The UNITED NATIONS' GLOBAL STRAIGHT JACKET by Joan Veon
- PATRIOTS Surviving the Coming Collapse by James Wesley, Rawles
- WHEN ALL HELL BREAKS LOOSE by Cody Lundin
- THE AMERICAN APOCALYPSE by Terry James
- THE LATE GREAT USA by Jerome R. Corsi
- THE LATE GREAT USA by Mark Hitchcock
- CARASTROPHE by Dick Morris
- AMERICA FOR SALE by Jerome R. Corsi

These and other books mentioned in this work are crying out that the USA is in vast trouble and headed for a major crash not just decline. I keep saying what so many also feel....it's in the air, an ominous coming chaos that is. All of these authors and a hundred others that I have read may have different details but all of them are telling us that chaos, anarchy and collapse are coming to the USA.

'The goal is to end the power of the US and then plunder its resources for the masqueraded global cause'.

I don't know about you but that takes me to my knees for prayer and moves me to work for preemptive action.

None of those books I mention though will tell you about the plot to unleash the chaos of the coming black awakening. This is what will come as the 'shock and awe': A demonic surprise in a burst of blood not just a slow decline. The black awakening will be the tsunami that will finish the smoldering, emerging chaos that so many are talking about and see coming. This black awakening that I have outlined in this book is the underside of the tip of the iceberg that many can see and *I feel it will be bigger than what I have estimated it would be.* This coming chaos is the event that is so vast that it truly brings collapse to this once great world superpower.

With the second greatest release of occult-satanic literature in history that occurred in the 60's here in the US, (see James Web 'THE OCCULT ESTABLISHMENT') and the enormous rise of the new age movement (60+million) comes the massive doors for the once prophesied arrival of the 'seducing spirits' of 1Tim 4:1. This prophecy reveals what will lead the way to global seduction but the seduction on the surface only cloaks the much darker stuff that's being forged. It's what's in the hidden darkness that should concern us all. Above the surface and on the carpet for all to see is the new age movement but below, underneath the carpet is the blood and guts of satanic rituals, mind control and the creation of hundreds of thousands of satanic super soldiers...*chosen ones*. And as we have said, there could be 4 to 10 million of them!

Please note! There is only one reason for the creation of chosen ones and there is only one reason there are so many of them in the USA. It is here they were created, it is here they will be activated....it is here where all hell will break loose and the long plotted out goal of collapsing the US will surely come. America will experience the black awakening!

What sub personalities inside *chosen ones* have said for years now is this (and they have made it clear by their actions), they are here to *'make way for the antichrist and globalism'*. They are here to manifest the powers of darkness, unleash anarchy, eliminate resistors, assassinate targets and collapse the whole system. They don't have one iota of care for the US or other nations. They only know one thing....level society as it is and make way for a regime change.

FINALLY

You can let all of this information scare you if you want to or use it to inform you and *move you to action*. If you only feel fear then my point is lost. I want you to be ready, outraged and moved to a fierce boldness, a boldness that burns with the fire of God.

When I hear sirens and see the flashing lights behind me I don't freeze and stop in the middle of the road. I become alert and pull off so that the emergency vehicle can past on by. Over the years I have heard and seen some of the most bizarre and alarming things. They don't scare me. Instead they make me mad, alert and move me to action. I am mad at the radical evil that is here and is coming for sure. I am alert and will stand my ground. I have also decided to get real busy. Action is what is needed. Countermeasures and bold action must occur now...in response to what is here now but also in playfully packed preparation for all that is about to happen.

ARE YOU READY?

CHAPTER 42

I WISH WE'D ALL BEEN READY

"Estimating the probability that the human race will soon become extinct has become quite a popular activity." P 3 The END of the World'

"You are startled to hear loud, rapid-fire gunshots. They are very close by-right near your neighborhood. This is going to be a very bad day....."p 4 'How To SURVIVE THE END OF THE WORLD As We KNOW IT'

"Yet many believers in God, especially in America, are indifferent to the need to prepare for the unexpected." P433 Tom Horn 'How To Overcome THE MOST FRIGHTENING ISSUES you WILL Face This Century'

"Be always on the **watch**, and pray that you may be able to escape all that is about to happen, and that you may be able to stand before the Son of Man." Jesus in Luke 21

There is an old song with the title 'I Wish We'd All Been Ready'. The lyrics are talking about being ready for when Christ returns and when the end of all things occurs. Nations, leaders and people come and go and history just keeps on rolling on out...or so it seems. Is there an end to this life of survival-life-survival then you die gig? Hallelujah the answer is yes!

Being ready for events in life can be a blessing or a curse depending on what you are waiting for. Standing on the beach watching the calm waters recede must have been a sight, at least until the tsunami really hit and

200,000 died. Who was ready for that? Or if you were making copies in the office on the 85th floor and thinking about lunch when all of a sudden, seemingly out of nowhere, a plane comes crashing right into your building. Its 911 and who knew? (Yea who knew?) The tsunami and 911 were events that came out of nowhere - seemingly - and struck. Who was ready? Are we ready now? If only someone would have given us a heads up. If only everyone would have been ready.

In New Orleans they were somewhat ready but they didn't want to have to be ready for Katrina! Getting ready for Katrina was a pain. It was also a necessity! The preparations and the bracing yourself in New Orleans was a lot of work. Those who got out of the city did far better than those who refused to go. Many lost much and some lost their lives. The fact remains that they did have some warning. Millions left, others stayed, but they were all called on to be ready. Getting ready for the end of your life and or the end of the world would be a pain too....but it is by far the greatest necessity of all.

Dear reader I am screaming at you....politely but urgently, please get ready! Get ready for an unprecedented chaos (the BA), unprecedented spiritual deception, a new world order and satan himself masked as the world leader. All of which will bring an end to civilization as we know it! What many see and feel are only touches of what God has actually warned us about. There is that 3,000 year old Psalm (PS2) and it screams of warning, invitation and with the rest of prophetic revelation gives a major heads up to us all. Some are listening, some are not. I do with all of my heart (not when it's over because then it's too late) hope you are ready. When I read Revelation 6, 9 and 19...I wish we'd all been ready. Remember, no prophecy God has ever given has failed...none. Are you ready?

READY FOR LIFE

Well how can you be, at least when you are first born and begin to walk out this life stretched out before us. Birth is not controlled by the one being born. Whether you agree or not being born is a privilege. Ya can't get here without it. You are absolutely unique! Think about it. No one else in existence....anywhere has your imprint or identity. In the beginning we were made by a special act of God as the apex of bearing the imago dei, the very

image and likeness of God.

We were filled with majesty, beauty and wonder. We were meant to be eternal, spiritual and did walk with God in perfect peace. Potential chaos was coming but like now, so it was then. God set the parameters and gave us a word (a single verse) that would protect us and everything about us. God gave the heads up and made humanity ready right there in the beginning. We were ready for life, eternity without interruption but the warning wasn't heeded and humanity including you was set on this trail of tears.

We listened to the lie but worse than that we rejected God, embraced the lie and the liar. We were instantly transmuted. No evolution to deity but death embraced us. Just as God said "...you will surly die" (in dying you shall die-Hebrew) and as it is said, "the wages of sin is death.... It was there the music stopped. The spiritual, psychological, social, economic, ecological, mental, emotional, relational and future....all the aspects of what was original was struck and changed. Death came in like a flood and physical death with all of its rottenness and ripping of the soul....invaded. Sin is real, as real as death itself.

See a little baby born. Watch her grow. See the awe of life, laughter and her development. Wow it will strike you but sit at the bedside of an 81 year old grandmother with illness, heart failure and watch her die and woe does whisper. I have experienced both. One is great. The other, without hope, is a tragedy! Both are here on this side of the fall. One is a blessing. The other...death is a curse!

Are we ready for life? To only be born, grow, learn, work, get old and then die? Is that all there is my friend? The skeptics, atheists and agnostics can't help you. The existentialist is still doing drugs and the nileiest is looking at a noose. Then there is the new ager and luciferian, one talks of spirituality but can't lead you to God and the other won’t. They are both in the same boat but only the luciferian knows that. What I want to know is what about living forever, what about God, love, significance and meaning? Can I know God, be loved, know my identity and have power over death? O dear reader the answer is an infallible and experiential.....Yes!

Look at the Cross. There He hanged sinless, good and yes it was God in human flesh. He said He would come, defeat evil and give LIFE. In Genesis 3 the chapter in the Bible where the fall and its horrors are recorded is also a little known prophetic spark....the proto-evangel. It is the first Spirit given prophecy and sets the course of God's work to love, redeem us and end evil. All of the battle, the blood and the Cross are included. It is there in Genesis 3:15. God declares a new life is coming and my friend it has.

"Since the children have flesh and blood, he too shared in their humanity so that by his death he might destroy him who holds the power of death—that is, the devil—and free those who all their lives were held in slavery by their fear of death." Hebrews 2

READY FOR CHAOS

Chaos can be a plane crashing into an office building. It can be cancer eating your guts away. Chaos is here because sin is and sin opened the door for this violence to reign. The "...god of this age (time period 2Corinthians 4:4) does blind minds and seek destruction (1Peter 5). What the fallen cherub is and does ends in death, always. His work is a deception. That's where his twisted powers excel. This power of deception as has been said always leads to destruction but many haven't learned this.

Though God has given massive communication and revealed the what and why of evil, still many choose death over life. The book of Revelation scared me when I tried to read it while I was in deep spiritual darkness. It is a massive warning and a major heads up concerning what many feel is coming. A simple reading of chapters 6, 9 and 19 will reveal a warning and revelation on evil's final evolution. Billions will die, the earth will be scorched and without the intervention of Christ it would be possible for this radical evil to lead to human extinction.

All this final ending though begins with the massive plotted out and spiritually planned (chaos) black awakening. Revelation chapters 6-19 do not occur without the spirit of antichrist, his birth, evolution and apocalypse to power and antichrist doesn't rise or reign without the coming nation collapsing chaos. If you know it's coming the question must be asked, Are

you ready?

READY FOR SPIRITUAL ENGAGEMENT

With the coming chaos that leads to the pinnacle of satanic and demonic manifestation more than any time in fallen human history, will come a frog in the kettle type of preparatory mass spiritual deception. It was prophesied in the Spirit given revelations of scripture that unprecedented demonic powers, communication, works and engagement would come. In my assessment this has occurred and will only...get this-get worse. More, no massively more spiritual masquerading, dark powers and satanic manifestations will come faster, fiercer and without one ounce of mercy...not one drop.

Study well Daniel chapters 7 to the end, Matthew 24, 2 Thessalonians 2, 1John 2 and all of Revelation. This will evidence the infallible nature of Scripture, God's perfect omniscience, omnipresence and sovereign power. You will see prophecy revealed and fulfilled and anyone who can fully see the connection between Psalm 2 and Revelation 19:19 will know that the conspiracy of the ages is playing out on the streets of human life....right now.

Do you have the Spirit of God inside you? Do you know Christ as Savior and Lord? Are you filing yourself with the Word of God? Do you know your spiritual authority, armor and the need for alertness and Spirit empowered action? Can you lead a soul to Christ, pray with power and command the demons to go? How's your spiritual discernment and will you take up the Cross and follow Jesus daily?

READY FOR GOD

I have been at the bedside of those who were about to die. I stood one time next to a dying man and asked him if I could pray for him, if I could tell him about Jesus, if I could explain to him eternal life and seeing the face of God. He vehemently said no, no and no. He died without Christ and without hope. Why would anyone do that? Reject God and die in empty hopeless fear, what for? Yet many do, many will. How about you dear reader? How about you? Are you ready?

"They perish because they refused to love the truth and so be saved" 2 Thess. 2

The flip side of this is that if you don't know for sure, you can know...with absolute assurance. When you have Jesus Christ in your life there will be a witness (the Holy Spirit) within that joins what God says on the outside. Look at this:

"And this is the testimony: God has given us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life. I write these things to you who believe in the name of the Son of God so that you may know that you have eternal life." 1 John 5

There is a day dear friend that I will see God face to face in a body that beams with indestructible...incorruptible immortality. You can know God and know this is coming and then one day fully experience it. If you don't have this hope and assurance what do you have? With every ounce of my being I wish you will be ready.

"He will wipe every tear from their eyes. There will be no more death or mourning or crying or pain, for the old order of things has passed away."...Revelation 20...."They will see his face..." Revelation 22:4

READY FOR DEATH

Yes you shall die and be put into that hole in the ground. Yes it seems so strange, death that is. I have seen death. I have stood at the casket of many to speak at their funerals and for most I have stood there with a God filled hope and a joy that went way beyond any grief. I know where they are and I know that being there they would never want to be back here. The grandma I told you about in the last minute of her life patted me on my face and told me to keep warm. She absolutely knew she was going to God, to Christ and be alive there. She knew because of the Word of God, the Spirit of God and the Christ of God that was in her life. I led her to Jesus one day and the day she left I knew and still know...I shall see her again

Death is here because of your sin and mine too. We opened this door but God closed it for all who want out. Jesus stood over Lazarus and commanded 'Lazarus come forth" and he did! Jesus came to die...and rise from the dead. He came to destroy death. The resurrection of Christ was foretold 1,000 years before He came (Psalm 16). When you hear these words what does it do for you?

Os Guinness who wrote the great book 'THE DUST OF DEATH' has given us a statement that I have quoted a thousand times. It was in reference to the resurrection of Christ from the dead. Os said, by this resurrection Jesus *'blasted apart the finality of death.*' And to that I say a great hallelujah and a million amen's.

FINALLY

From the lyrics of the late and a great musician Larry Norman there are these words. You can hear the song on you tube also.

I Wish We'd All Been Ready
Life was filled with guns and war,
And everyone got trampled on the floor,
I wish we'd all been ready
Children died, the days grew cold,
A piece of bread could buy a bag of gold,
I wish we'd all been ready,
There's no time to change your mind,
The Son has come and you've been left behind.
A man and wife asleep in bed,
She hears a noise and turns her head, he's gone,
I wish we'd all been ready,
Two men walking up a hill,
One disappears and one's left standing still,
I wish we'd all been ready,
There's no time to change your mind,
The Son has come and you've been left behind.
Life was filled with guns and war,

And everyone got trampled on the floor,
I wish we'd all been ready,
Children died, the days grew cold,
A piece of bread could buy a bag of gold,
I wish we'd all been ready,
There's no time to change your mind,
How could you have been so blind,
The Father spoke, the demons dined,
The Son has come and you've been left behind.
(from on line see
http://www.delusionresistance.org/christian/larry/larry09.html)

CHAPTER 43
AGGRESSIVE PREPARATION
THE PHYSICAL

"Ants are creatures of little strength, yet they store up their food in the summer" Proverbs 30

"As it was in the days of Noah, so it will be at the coming of the Son of Man." Matthew 24

"Lately we have all seen how following a catastrophic event, stores will be closed, utilities will be unavailable and emergency personnel will be tied up helping those most in need of immediate medical attention. The dramatic lesson is that each of us need to take responsibility for ourselves and our own family's personal welfare. The time has come when we must be ready to be self-sufficient during great emergency."
www.surviorMall.com

CRISIS

"A crucial or decisive point or situation; a turning point. An unstable condition, as in political, social, or economic affairs, involving an impending abrupt or decisive change. A sudden change in the course of a disease or fever, toward either improvement or deterioration. An emotionally stressful event or traumatic change in a person's life. A point in a story or drama when a conflict reaches its highest tension and must be resolved."
www.answers.com/topic/crisis

The lights went out once and then twice and then for good, well for two days at least. The food in the fridge and freezer had to be thrown out and we had no....heat, phones, computers or water. No water meant having nothing to drink, no toilets could flush and the pumps did not work. O yea and no

showers either so my wife and daughter went to other places for that. I stayed around the house for those two days just to keep an eye on things. The whole neighborhood was dark and everything was really quite. For two days it was mostly just inconvenience and the loss of some food.....but what if it was for a week, a month? We would not have been ready for that at all. Two days can tell you a lot and reveal how vulnerable you and many others really are. If you're not ready for two days you're not ready for 30 and most folks are not ready for..... massive chaos, anarchy and insurrection. What if the black awakening does occur soon and everything is out and red hot chaos is in.

We do prepare for a lot of things, like trips and winter cold but what about the big stuff. If the banks are closed and the stores are overrun and out of most of its stock where will you go and what will you do? Preparation is a big thing and even more important for when those big things do occur. When you have the time, do a word study in the scriptures on preparation. You will see how deep God Himself prepared for so many things. You will also see the wisdom God gives us so we can be prepared and ready for just about anything. Always remember that for the believer in Christ there is a powerful testimony in how you react to crisis, see here:

"Whatever happens, conduct yourselves in a manner worthy of the gospel of Christ." Philippians 1

Another good word for preparation for believers in Christ is to be able to tell others about Gods grace and truth in the midst of catastrophe. When prophetic revelation is fulfilled and events like the great revolt (Black Awakening) occurs many will need to hear and may be very open to hearing what Scripture has to say.

"But in your hearts set apart Christ as Lord. Always be **prepared** to give an answer to everyone who asks you to give the reason for the hope that you have. But do this with gentleness and respect," 1Peter 3:15

So let's take a look at some of the areas you can begin to nail down when it comes to needed preparation.

BE PREPARED BY KNOWING

If you know trouble is coming economically it would be best if you can get ready. Many were not ready for even small declines and lost everything. Job loss also means financial loss and that can affect everything. You will have to keep your eyes open and seek wisdom (James 1).

Know what time it is on the prophetic calendar and know what time it is when it comes to the spiritual needs of all those around you. A powerful believer who can react with strength, pray with power and act quickly will be of great use and witness in these last days. Do you dear reader, know what time it is? The scripture points us to the necessity of knowing...

"Dear children, this is the last hour; and as you have heard that the antichrist is coming, even now many antichrists have come. This is how we know it is the last hour." 1 John2

Know the scriptures and dig deep into Proverbs which will give a lot of the best preparation we can find. Knowing involves watching what is going on in the world around you. You watch as you drive your car...not to would be a set up for disaster.

If you know disasters do occur and that a massive collapse is coming it's time to watch, get prepared and live with wisdom. If the black awakening would break out in the next 3-5 years would you be ready for that? It will mean far more preparations that just having 30 days of food. The timing of the event and length of time of the black awakening is not something we know in detail. We just know is will occur and maybe soon. So if it did start...if it did just now burst upon the scene would you be prepared:

- To stand up spiritually and be a witness for Christ. Can you still do the mission of Christ during crisis?
- To have food, water, shelter and or alternative places to meet/go?
- To defend your family and others who are defenseless?
- To be mobile and get from place to place?

These are just some things to consider if you see floods, hurricanes and earthquakes coming. There is so much more if it's the black awakening and the collapse of a nation.

BE PREPARED BY PLANNING

If you can think over the story I have told at the beginning of this book, you may have an idea of some of the things you will need. The problem is that if you don't plan and prepare now it will be clear that you will be in grave need when this chaos occurs.

You can make a list of things you will need and or need to do. Think through that story in the beginning of the book and ask yourself if you can maintain 30 to 60 days of shortage, danger and defense. I would suggest you read these two great books as you plan:

- 'HOW TO SURVIVE THE END OF THE WORLD AS WE KNOW IT' by James Wesley Rawles
- 'HOW TO OVERCOME THE MOST FRIGHTENING ISSUES YOU WILL FACE THIS CENTURY' by Tom Horn and twenty experts

This along with thinking through the 'prophetic story' in this book will help you make the lists you do need. And if you make the planning list...nail it down and get the items, do the stuff and prepare. If you don't do the list then the list will be only a reminder of regret. Dear reader, dear believer in Christ, plan and prepare well!

BE PREPARED SURVIVAL OF THE FIT

Think in terms of what you will need and how much you can store. Think too who you will let know and who you will join with for greater resources. Here is a partial list:

- Spiritually! Be a person of deep prayer and know that God does answer and answers in big ways. I suggest that you use the book of Acts as a field manual. In it you can see how early believers lived and grew

strong in the context of persecution, famine, crisis, attack and loss of goods and homes. Know this book well. God will use it to show you the possibilities and that He is the same yesterday, today and every day (Hebrews13). More on this in the next chapter.

- Food and more food. See www.survialMall.com and consider getting some stored food now. As a believer in Christ get extra so you can share it with those who will be in need. When the prophet Agabus in the book of Acts spoke of a coming famine the body of Christ got ready.
- Note! Maybe whole local Churches can plan, prepare and even have minor practice runs!
- Water and more water. Learn to store and even dig a well with an old fashioned hand pump.
- Gas for motors, tools and all the things needed to work on things and working the ground.
- Learn how to plant a garden, bottle and store.
- Have a ready defense. If someone came to tear your kids up or rape your wife will you be able to stop them? Do you have a gun? Will you use it? Read the book 'SHOOTING BACK BY Charl Van Wyk.
- Hide your weapons if you need to but I do suggest you arm yourself. Of course your ultimate defense is being in the hands of God. Seek God's wisdom in this.
- Can you defend yourself and others spiritually? Know your need for the armor of God and of the authority Christ has given. Remember the black awakening will bring with it the deepest outpouring of demonic manifestation in all of history!
- Have a plan with your family if all hell breaks out, where you will meet. If your house is destroyed where do you go? Set up a plan of communication.
- Have a battery or wind up radio and see if you can get a short wave radio.
- Have money or what you can use to barter with stored up and not just in a bank. When they're closed where do you go?
- Waste and a good old fashion out house!
- Learn to camp now. Get rugged and learn some skills with rope, tents and even camouflage.
- Think through some more areas and issues. Sit down as a family and plan, prepare and practice.

BE PREPARED AS AN END TIME WITNESS

I have had folks come from the mountains of Montana to conferences and survivalists call and email me. I agree 100% that we must learn all we can on how to survive, but saving yourself is not the main thing a believer in Christ is all about. What if the black awakening does occur and you do hide out and make it through 90 days. You come out of hiding and most everyone you know is gone or dead. What is the plan for 'after the chaos'?

I am planning and preparing and doing all I can to get others ready. Readiness to me means being saved, knowing God and being spiritually powerful. Being prepared means that I don't just hide to save myself and let everyone else go to hell....or be consumed by the chaos. I am preparing to be the best witness and to do the most possible good I can.

While there are many who are preparing and millions who will oppose the new world order the question for them is...do you even know why it has happened or who that new super world leader really is? In the end heaven and hell are the ultimate destinations and the best preparation for all of the chaos and the very end is in knowing God.....personally! Are you saved? Is Christ in your life and do you know what will happen when you die? Death will come whether by age, disease, chaos or sword. It will come. Death is here because of sin and your sin needs to be taken care of. Look at the Cross where Christ gave Himself for you.

FINALLY

If you don't prepare for eternity then what are a few extra days here in the madness.....when you don't know God? In the end will you be with God or lose your very soul?

"Then Jesus said to his disciples, "If anyone would come after me, he must deny himself and take up his cross and follow me. **25**For whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for me will find it. **26**What good will it be for a man if he gains the whole world, yet forfeits his

soul? Or what can a man give in exchange for his soul? " Matthew 16

CHAPTER 44
AGGRESSIVE PREPARATION: THE SPIRITUAL

"....prepare to meet your God....." Amos 4

"I write these things to you who believe in the name of the Son of God so that you may know that you have eternal life." 1 John 5

"Luther said, 'When I get to heaven, I expect to be surprised three times. There will be those in heaven I thought wouldn't be there, and there will be some missing I thought would be there, but the greatest surprise will be that I am there myself'." P 240 'THE JUDGEMENT SEAT OF CHRIST'

"Blessed are those who wash their robes, that they may have the right to the tree of life and may go through the gates into the city. **15**Outside are the dogs, those who practice magic arts, the sexually immoral, the murderers, the idolaters and everyone who loves and practices falsehood." Revelation 22

Karl went to Vancouver British Columbia years ago. At the time he was a spiritual seeker who was versed in new age spirituality and was seeking spiritual powers. A drinker and alone Karl made friends in a bar on Hastings street. He had no idea that he was being marked and prepared for recruitment...that's how it's done.

There was a group of some kind of satanists. He does not know for sure. Karl has a hard time remembering. You see they drugged him, confused him and then abducted him. They took him to what he thought was a hospital where they played mind games and took him through some type of sexual

ritual and sought to split his soul.

I had met Karl at a restaurant when he was a professor. He talked about a strange demonic experience and was at that time in deep bondage. A *chosen one* was with me as this educator told his story. I met Karl again and began to work with him when one day he came to church on a Sunday morning and stood in the isle.....just looking. I have seen that look before and knew we would have a fight on our hands. Karl walked forward and came to the front in view of the whole Church. Then it happened. A demon voice came out of his mouth and said, "We will kill you Dizdar". The response was immediate; we prayed out loud and commanded the demon to be quite and come out. Karl dropped to the floor and it became a spiritual fight. Not everything was done at the time.

A friend who worked in this area was with me when we met Karl again. It was at a coffee shop and I was talking to a girl who was learning new age teachings. As I shared Christ with her Karl came in and sat down. Looking at him I knew we had to get out of the shop and....once again fight some deeply entrenched demon presence. Once in the truck, with Karl in setting in the middle… it began.

We started to pray and a demonic presence came up and challenged us. The demon so shook Karl that the whole truck was shaking as I drove down the back country roads. I had one arm on Karl and the other hand on the steering wheel. My friend had his arm on Karl too.

The prayers went on for some time until finally there was a break. Karl came back to full consciousness and began to ask what happened. Karl went through some more prayers and fought for his freedom in Christ. He still wants to know more of what that group did to him and where they went....we are tracking them now too.

Karl has become a good friend and helps on cases that deal with SRA/MPD and demonic possession. He is a student at the local Bible school and is joined by his son whom he helped come to Christ. They go to a local church where He gets to preach and teach. I have even interviewed him on the live Preemption Broadcast Sunday night show. Karl, once lost, deceived

and preyed upon is now free, growing and doing great things for Jesus Christ.

Karl's life story reminds me of the need for a Savior who has defeated the lethal powers of darkness (we have Him...Jesus Christ) and a Church that should be well equipped to do the very things Jesus did. Anyone reading the book of Acts will notice that the early first and second generation believers did do what Jesus said to do. They also had all the power and presence that Jesus pledged to us.

"And having disarmed the powers and authorities, he made a public spectacle of them, triumphing over them by the cross." Colossians 2

"He replied, "I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven. **19**I have given you authority to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy; nothing will harm you. **20**However, do not rejoice that the spirits submit to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven."Luke 10

Would to God we would see the Church be what it was in Acts. Would to God believers in Christ would take up the Cross and follow Jesus as they did in the beginning. We have the same instruction, the same promise of His unceasing Presence and full Power of God ready to move but many believers are so engrossed by the world, suppressed by compromise and defeated in spiritual warfare that this massive 'giant' body of Christ sits idling as the sequence of satanic evolution presses its dark metal! Have we forgotten? Have we lost our faith? Don't we hear His voice...."Whom shall I send? Who will go?" In the face of what seems like a Goliath are there no David's to go down and fight?

Will we stand by and watch the world go down in the black flame of a masqueraded globalism? Will we hide out as the end is approaching and as homosatanas rises? What about the Cross, the Power of God and the Mission to reach the world? The safest place to be my dear reader is in the center of God's will, clothed in Holy fire and doing the works Jesus called us to do.....*and doing this aggressively to the very end of the age! We must and can become filled with faith and the Holy Spirit (Acts 6) and grow powerful. As an experienced believer we too can grow more and more*

powerful proving that Jesus is the Christ. (See Acts 9:22)

"I tell you the truth, anyone who has faith in me will do what I have been doing. He will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the Father." John 14

"Jesus came to them and said, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. **19**Therefore go and make disciples of all nations....." Matthew 28

"Then the disciples went out and preached everywhere, and the Lord worked with them and confirmed his word by the signs that accompanied it." Mark 16

"I am going to send you what my Father has promised.....clothed with power from on high."Luke 24

"And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age." Jesus Matthew 28

AGRESSIVE SPIRITUAL ACTION

Some have forgotten, some have slipped while others blaze with heaven's fire and do great things for God. Which dear believer are you? In the presence of God right now will you make a choice; hot or cold/alive or dead? The lukewarm are foul tasting and useless and I don't want to live like that or appear at the judgment seat of Christ with massive regret!

"For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may receive what is due him for the things done while in the body, whether good or bad." 2 Corinthians 5

So let's get blazing! We need to be all that Christ willed and designed. We are not Lord, He is and He is Lord of the Body of Christ; enough with the blame, shame and excuses! For those who are willing, the door is open for massive revival and an enormous unleashing of the power, grace and action

of God...through his people.

- Let's repent of all the sin and rid ourselves of everything that contaminates. 2 Corinthians 7:1; John 1:9 and Proverbs 28:13. Dear believer in Christ ....go all the way with this!
- Let's look at Christ and never look away. Hebrews 12: saturate yourself in the Gospel of Mark today and may God give you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation that you might know Jesus...awesomely! Ephesians 16-20.
- Let's dig into daily devotion, Psalm 3:5 and grow stronger..... Acts 9:22
- Let's open wide to be filled and clothed with power from on high. Luke 24; Acts 1:8
- Let's look at the biblical prophetic clock and know what time it is. 1 John 2....the last hour!
- Let's look at the mission of God and do it like Jesus said. Matthew 28; Mark 16; Luke 24 and Acts 1:8
- Let's see Stephen, Peter, Paul, Barnabus and Phillip and what it meant to be filled with the Spirit and winning the world to Christ. See Acts 8 and all of Acts.
- Let's know our authority, armor and need for awareness to be alert and move to fierce action.

Let's realize that if we don't get it after reading this book and the above scriptures we can't expect to inspire others. Don't wait! Move and blaze a trail whether anyone goes with you or not. You can be absolutely sure of one thing, Christian.....Jesus won't fail you and will surround you with all of Him and heaven!

SPIRITUAL EVALUATION

Can anyone:

- Win a soul to Christ? Acts 9
- Pray with power and get answers? Acts 4
- Command demons out in Jesus Name? Acts 16
- Love and pray for the sick and see some healing? Acts 3

- Seek revival to strike and see it happen just like before?
- Stand strong when spiritual warfare and conflict come? Acts 8 and 16

Where are we?

WE NEED AGRESSIVE:

- **Awareness** of the enemy's work - 2Cor.2; 1Peter 5;Eph 6 & 2Thess.2
- **Alertness** to all impending dangers - Colossians 4:2
- **Authority** of Christ unleashed - Luke 10
- **Armor** on so the mighty power of God will manifest -Ephesians 6:10-
- **Action** by obeying the great commission, unleashing the gospel and advancing the kingdom - Acts 8

FINALLY

In the end *will we have regret?* Do we have regret right now? If so let's change that...right now:

"Lord Jesus, I don't know how I could have ever failed so much. I repent of letting the World, the flesh and the devil steal what I am supposed to be. I repent of failing to honor You and I surrender right now to You and all of Your powerful Presence. I want you to cleanse me and set me on fire with the Holy Spirit. I want to help win the World to You Jesus. I don't want anyone lost! I will stand no matter what. I will take up the Cross, dig into the Word and learn to pray with power and effect. I will fight! I will fight to be on fire, give my time and grow stronger! I will fight for the lost, the victims and for my brothers and sisters. I will fight the dark side and fight against radical evil....O Lord Jesus I will fight till the end!

MORE CHAPTERS?
YES!

This book is not over; in the next six months I will add more chapters and will post those new chapters in PDF files on the WWW.THEBLACKAWAKENING.COM site.

So go there to find the new chapters, new interviews about this book and coming interactions.

Chapter 45 ‘GOD AND THE BLACK AWAKENING’

Chapter 46 ‘THE BLACK AWAKENING AND THE UN’

Chapter 47 TBA

Chapter 48 TBA

Chapter 49 TBA

Chapter 50 TBA

BOOK PLUS

By purchasing this book you are entitled to four of the training courses/seminars we have on the web. They are the courses under 'THEOLOGY FOR THE THIRD MILLENNIUM'.

The courses you get free with this book are valued on the web at over $200 at this time. I simply wanted you to have these extra tools to help in the study of this book and for the use of ministry to victims.

The three courses/seminars are:

THE BLACK AWAKENING 24 hours of mp3s

BASICS OF SPRITUAL WARFARE 20+ hours of mp3s

SATANISM 101 20+ hours of mp3s

Also you can order FREEDOM ENCOUNTERS the course that deals with counseling and helping victims of SRA/MPD at ½ the cost.

Just go to WWW.THEBLACKAWAKENING.COM and click on the icon that says 'BOOK PLUS'. Please note that this is for those who purchase the book only. No transfers, giving out the code or forwards please. When you click the icon that says book plus just enter the code PS2R1919.

PREEMPTION BROADCAST

With author Russ Dizdar

LIVE RADIO BROADCAST

LIVE INTERVIEWS

POD CASTS

AND

ARCHIVES

TO LISTEN AND DOWNLOAD GO TO:

WWW.SHATTERTHEDARKNESS.NET

WWW.PREEMPTIOBROADCAST.COM

OTHER FREE SESSIONS AND TEACHING SERIES

THAT WILL GO WITH THIS BOOK ARE

ESP VS HSP DISCERNMENT

HOMOSATANAS RISE OF THE ANCIENT HATE

THE SPIRIT BEHIND GLOBALISM

Bibliography

This is the author's selected bibliography. Though I don't agree with every detail of each book the quotes in the book are to emphasis a teaching point or support an idea.

Alphabetical order

A COP'S GUIDE TO OCCULT INVESTIGATIONS by Tony M. Kail - Paladin Press

A HISTORY OF SECRET SOCIETIES by Arkon Daraul – Citadel Press

AMERICA'S GREAT REVIVALS by Bethany House Publishers

AMERICA The Sorcerer's New Apprentice by Dave Hunt & T.A. McMahon – Harvest House Publishers

ANGELS DON'T PLAY THIS HAARP by Jeane Manning & Dr. Nick Begich – Earthpulse Press

ANTICHRIST ISLAM'S AWAITED MESSIAH by Joel Richardson – Pleasant Word

A READY DEFENSE by Josh McDowell – Here's Life Publishers

A SCIENCE FOR THE SOUL by Corinna Treitel – The John's Hopkins University Press

A THEOLOGY OF THE DARK SIDE by Nigel Goring Wright – Inter Varsity Press

AMERICA BEWITCHED by Daniel Logan – William Morrow & Company, Inc.

AN INTRODUCTION TO PLANETARY DEFENSE by Travis S. Taylor & Bob Boan – Brown-Walker Press

AVATAR OF NIGHT by Tal Brooks – End Run Publishing

BABYLON: SECRET RITUALS OF THE ILLUMINATI by Joshua Seraphim – Leilah Publications

BIBLICAL PSYCHOLOGY by Oswald Chambers – Spottiswoode Ballantyne Ltd.

BREAKING THE CIRCLE OF SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE by Daniel Ryder, C.C.D.C..,L.S.W. – CompCare Publishers

BATTLING THE HOSTS OF HELL; DIARY OF AN EXORCIST by Win Worley – New Leaf Press

BATTLING THE PRINCE OF DARKNESS by Evelyn Christenson – Victor Books

BIG BROTHER NSA AND IT'S "LITTLE BROTHERS" by Terry L. Cook – SCM Publishing

BLOOD IN THE ALTAR by Craig Heimbichner – Independent History and Research

BLOOD ON THE ALTAR by David A. Reed – Promeetheus Books

BOHEMIAN GROVE: Cult of Conspiracy by Mike Hanson – iUniverse Inc.

BRAINWASH, THE SECRET HISTORY OF MIND CONTROL by Dominic Streatfeild – Thomas Dunne Books

BROTHERHOOD OF DARKNESS by Dr. Stanley Monteith – Hearthstone Publishing

BUILD THE PERFECT SURVIVAL KIT by John D. McCann –Krause Publications

CHRISTIAN SET YOURSELF FREE by Graham & Shirley Powell – Sovereign World

CONFRONTING THE NEW AGE by Douglas Groothuis – InterVarsity Press

CONTROLLING THE HUMAN MIND by Dr. Nick Begich – Earthpulse Press Inc.

COUNSELING IN TIMES OF CRISIS by Judson J. Swihart, Ph.D. and Gerald C. Richardson, D.Min. – WORD BOOKS

CRIME-WARPS: THE FUTURE OF CRIME IN AMERICA by Georgette Bennett – Anchor Books

CULTS THAT KILL: PROBING THE UNDERWORLD OF OCCULT CRIME by Larry Kahaner – Warner Books

CULT AND RITUAL ABUSE by James Randall Noblitt and Pamela Sue Perskin –Praeger

CULTS, CONSPIRACIES, & SECRET SOCIETIES by Arthur Goldwag – Vintage Books

DEMON EXPERIENCES A Compilation – Tyndale House Publishing

DESTINED TO OVERCOME: THE TECHNIQUE OF SPIRITUAL WARFARE by Paul E. Billheimer – Bethany House Publishers

DEVIL TAKE THE YOUNGEST: THE WAR ON CHILDREN by Winkie Pratney – Hunington House Publishers

DIVINE HEALING by Andrew Murray – Whitaker House

DYNAMICS OF SPIRITUAL LIFE by Richard F. Lovelace – Inter Varsity Press

EN ROUTE TO GLOBAL OCCUPATION by Gary Kah – Hunington House Publishers

EVANGELIZING THE NEW AGE by Paul McGuire – Servant Publications

EXPLODING THE MYTHS THAT COULD DESTROY AMERICAN by Erwin W. Lutzer – Moody Press

EXPOSING AND CONFRONTING SATAN AND ASSOCIATES by Wendell Amstutz – National Counseling Resource Center

FIRE, RADIENCE & LOVE by W. Herbert Brown – Tyndale House Publishing

FIRST PERSON PLURAL: MY LIFE AS A MULTIPLE by Cameron West, Ph.D. – Hyperion

GATEWAY OF THE GODS by Craig Hines – Numina Media Arts

GODS OF THIS AGE OR GOD OF THE AGES? By Carl F.H. Henry – Broadman & Holman Publishers

HAARP: THE ULTIMATE WEAPON OF THE CONSPIRACY by Jerry E. Smith – Adventure Unlimited Press

HALLOWEEN AND SATANISM by Phil Phillips and Joan Hake Robie – Starburst Publishers

HANDBOOK OF BIBLICAL EVIDENCES by John Ankerberg, John Weldon – Harvest House Publishers

HEXEN 2039 by Suzanne Treister – Black Dog Publishing

HITLER AND THE NEW AGE by Bob Rosio – Hunington House Publishers

HOW TO RECOGNIZE THE ANTICHRIST by Arthur E. Bloomfield – Bethany House

HOW TO SURVIVE THE END OF THE WORLD AS WE KNOW IT by James Wesley, Rawles – A Plume Book

HYPNOTISM by G. H. Estabrooks – E. P. Dutton & Co.

ICBC'S FIT FOR THE KINGDOM CONFERENCE ON SPIRITUAL WARFARE Notes

ILLUMINATI: THE CULT THAT HIJACKED THE WORLD by Henry Makow Ph. D. – Silas Greene

IMMORTALITY: THE OTHER SIDE OF DEATH by Gary R. Habermas, J. P. Moreland – Thomas Nelson Publishers

IN HITLER'S SHADOW by Yaron Svoray & Nick Taylor – Bantam Doubleday Dell Publishing

IN PURSUIT OF SATAN: THE POLICE AND THE OCCULT by Robert D. Hicks – Prometheus Books

INSIDE THE NEW AGE NIGHTMARE by Randall N. Baer – Huntington House, Inc.

INTOXICATED WITH BABYLON: THE SEDUCTION OF GOD'S PEOPLE IN THE LAST DAYS by Steve Gallagher – Pure Life Ministries

INSIDE THE SHADOW GOVERNMENT by Harry Helms – Feral House

IS AMERICAN IN BIBLE PROPHECY? By Mark Hitchcock – Multnomah Books

JOURNEY INTO MADNESS by Gordon Thomas – Bantam Books

KNOW THINE ENEMY: A GUIDE TO INTELLEGENT DECEPTION by C. A. Huft – High Way, Anamalos Publishing House

LORDS OF CHAOS by Michael Moynihan & Didrik Soderlind – Feral House

LUCIFER'S LODGE: SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE IN THE CATHOLIC CHURCH by William H. Kennedy – Reviviscimus

MARX & SATAN by Richard Wurmbrand – Living Sacrafice Book Co.

MEMORY AND ABUSE by Charles L. Whitfield, M.D. – Health Communications, Inc.

MEMORY, TRAUMA TREATMENT, AND THE LAW by Daniel Brown, Alan W. Scheflin, & D. Corydon Hammond – W. W. Norton and Co.

MIGHTY FAITH by J. Oswald Sanders – Moody Press

MILITARY MIND CONTROL by Colin A. Ross, M. D. – Manitou Communications, Inc.

MIND WARS: BRAIN RESEARCH AND NATIONAL DEFENSE by Jonathan D. Moreno – Dana Press

MKULTRA by George Andrews, Ph. D. – Healthnet Press

MIND CONTROLLED SEX SLAVES AND THE CIA by Tracy R Twyman, Nick Redfern & Commander X – Global Communications/Conspiracy Journal

MIND CONTROLLERS by Dr. Armen Victorian – Lewis International Inc.

MONARCH: THE NEW PHOENIX PROGRAM by Marshall G. Thomas – Universe, Inc.

MORAL MELTDOWN The Core of Globalism by Hilmar von Campe' – Prescott Press

MORE GOD MORE POWER by Wesley L. Duewel –Zondervan Publishing House

MORE THAN ONE by Terri A. Clark, M.D. – Thomas Nelson Publishers

MULTIPLE PERSONALITY DISORDER FROM THE INSIDE OUT by Barry M. Cohen, Esther Giller, Lynn W.- The Sidran Press

NAZI INTERNATIONAL by Joseph P. Farrell – Adventures Unlimited Press

NEW WORLD ORDER: THE ANCIENT PLAN OF SECRET SOCIETIES by William T. Still – Huntington House Publishers

NO PLACE TO HIDE by Robert O'Harrow, Jr. – Free Press

OCCULT ABC by Kurt Koch – Kregel Publications

OCCULT MURDERS by John Dunning – Arrow Books

OTHER ALTARS by Craig Lockwood – CompCare Publishers

OUT OF DARKNESS: EXPLORING SATANISM & RITUAL ABUSE by David K. Sakheim & Susan E. Devine – Lexington Books

PAINTED BLACK by Carl A. Raschke – Harper & Rowe Publishers

PATRIOTS Surviving the Coming Collapse by James Wesley, Rawles – The Clearwater Press

PERRFECTIBILISTS P.M. C.U. by Terry Melanson – Trine Day LLC>

POWERS OF DARKNESS by Clinton E. Arnold – Inter Varsity Press

PRINCE OF DARKNESS 666 by Grant R. Jeffrey – Frontier Research Publications

PROGRAMMED TO KILL: THE POLITICS OF SERIAL MURDER by David McGowan – iUniverse, Inc.

PSI WARS: GETTING TO GRIPS WITH THE PARANORMAL by James Alcock, Jean Burns and Anthony Freeman – Imprint Academic

PSI SPIES by Jim Marrs – Alien Zoo Publishing

PSYCHIATRY AND THE CIA: VICIMS OF THE MIND CONTROL by Harvey M. Weinstein, M.D. – American Psychiatric Press, Inc.

PSYCHIC DISCOVERIES by Sheila Ostrander and Lynn Schroeder – Marlowe and Company

PSYCHOLOGICAL SEDUCTION: THE FAILURE OF AMODERN PSYCHOLOGY by William Kirk Kilpatrick – Thomas Nelson Publishers

PSYCHIC WARFARE: FACT OR FICTION by John White – The Aquarian Press

PSYCHIC WARFARE: THREAT OR ILLUSION? by Martin Ebon-McGraw-Hill Book Co.

PSYCHIC WARRIOR by David Morehouse – St. Martin's Press

RESURRECTING THE THIRD REICH by Richard Terrell – Huntington House Publishers

ECNT REVELATION by Grant R. Osborne – Baker Academic

REVIVAL FIRE by Wesley Duewel – Zondervan Publishing House

RITUAL ABUSE: WHAT IS IT? WHY IT HAPPENS? HOW TO HELP by Margaret Smith – Harper San Francisco

RITUAL CRIME SCENE INVESTIGATION by Dawn Perlmutter – Institute for the Research of Symbolic & Ritual Violence, LLC

ROCK'S HIDDEN PERSUADER: THE TRUTH ABOUT BACKMASKING by Dan & Steve Peters with Cher Merrill – Bethany House Publishers

RULE BY SECRECY by Jim Marrs – Harper Collins Publishers

SATAN AND THE PROBLEM OF EVIL by Gregory A. Boyd – Inter Varsity Press

SATAN'S CHILDREN by Dr. Robert S. Mayer – G.P. Putnam's Sons

SATANISM: IS IT REAL? By Fr. Jeffrey J. Steffon – Servant Publications

SATAN AND HIS KINGDOM by Dennis McCallum – Bethany House

SATAN, HIS PERSONALITY, POWER AND OVERTHROW by E.M. Bounds – Baker House Books

SATANIC KILLINGS by Frank Moorhouse – Allison & Busby Limited.

SATAN IS ALIVE AND WELL ON PLANET EARTH by Hal Lindsey with C.C. Carlson – Zondervan Publishing Co.

SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE: PRINCIPLES OF TREATMENT by Colin A. Ross, M.D. – University of Toronto Press, Inc.

SCIENCE AND THE AKASHIC FIELD: AN INTEGRAL THEORY OF EVERYTHING by Ervin Laszlo – Inner Traditions

SECRET, DON'T TELL: THE ENCYCLOPEDIA OF HYPNOTISM by Carla Emery – Acorn Hill Publishing Co.

SECRET POWER by D.L. Moody – Whitaker House

SECRET SOCIETIES AND PSYCHOLOGICAL WARFARE by Michael A. Hoffman II – Independent History and Research

SECRET WEAPONS by Cheryl and Lynn Hersha with Dale Griffis, Ph. D. and Ted Schwarz – New Horizon Press

SHADOW GOVERNMENT by Grant R. Jeffrey – Waterbrook Press

SINISTER FORCES: A GRIMOIRE OF AMERICAN POLITICAL WITHCRAFT BOOK ONE; THE NINE by Peter Levenda – Trineday

SUBTLE SERPENT NEW AGE IN THE CLASSROOM by Darylann Whitemarsh & Bill Reisman – Huntington House Publishers

SWITCHING TIME by Richard Baer – Crown Publishers

THE ADVERSARY THE CHRISTIAN VERSUS DEMON ACTIVITY by Mark I. Bubeck – Moody Press

THE AMERICAN APOCALYPSE by Terry James – Harvest House Publishers

THE ATRIBUTES OF GOD by R.L. Lavender – Crisis Publications

THE BLACK MASK by John Charles Cooper – Power Books Fleming H. Revell Company

THE CURSE OF ALEISTER CROWLEY by Joshua Seraphim – Leilah Publications

THE END OF THE WORLD by John Leslie - Routeledge

THE GOD WHO IS THERE by Francis A. Schaeffer – Inter Varsity Press

THE SECRET OF INTERCESSION by Andrew Murray – Whitaker House

THE TRUE STORY OF THE BILDERBERG GROUP by Daniel Estulin – TrineDay LLC

THE UNITED NATIONS' GLOBAL STRAIGHT JACKET by Joan Veon – Hearthstone Publishing

THE SENSITIVITY OF THE SPIRIT by RT Kendall – Hodder and Stoughton Ltd.

THE SORCERER'S APPRENTICE: A CHRISTIAN LOOKS AT THE CHANGING FACE OF PSYCHOLOGY by Mary Stewart Van Leeuwen – InterVarsity Press

SWITCHING TIME by Richard Baer – Crown Publishers

TERRORISM AND THE ILLUMINATI by David Livingtone – Booksurge LLC

TERRITORIAL SPIRITS AND WORLD EVANGELISATION by Chuck Lowe – Christian Focus Publications

THE AGE OF THE ANTICHRIST by Jonathan R. Cash – Whitaker House

THE BLACK ARTS by Richard Cavendish - Perigee Books

NIGTC THE BOOK OF REVELATION by G. K. Beale – William B. Eerdmans Publishing Co.

NIGTC THE EPISTLES TO THE THESSALONIANS by Charles A. Wanamaker – William B. Eerdmans Publishing Co.

THE CHURCH OF SATAN by Blanche Barton – Hell's Kitchen Productions, Inc.

THE C.I.A. DOCTORS by Colin A. Ross, M.D. – Manitou Communications

THE COMING DARKNESS by John Ankerberg and John Weldon – Harvest House Publishers

THE COUNTERFEIT CHRIST OF THE NEW AGE MOVEMENT by Ron Rhodes – Baker Book House

THE DEATH OF SATAN: HOW AMERICANS HAVE LOST THE SENSE OF EVIL by Andrew Delbanco – Farrar, Straus and Giroux

THE DEMONIC ROOTS OF GLOBALISM by Gary H. Kah – Huntington House Pub.

THE DEVIL'S HOUSE: WHO IS STALKING YOUR CHILDREN FOR SATAN? by Pat Pulling with Kathy Cawthon – Huntington House, Inc.

THE DISSOCIATIVE IDENTITY DISORDER SOURCEBOOK by Deborah Bray Haddock, M. Ed., M.A., L.P. – Contemporary Books

THE DUST OF DEATH by OS Guinness – Crossway Books

THE EDGE OF EVIL: THE RISE OF SATANISM IN NORTH AMERICA by Jerry Johnston – Word Publishing

THE ENCYCLOPEDIA OF CONSPIRACIES AND CONSPIRACY THEORIES by Michael Newton – Checkmark Books

THE END OF MAN by John W. Whitehead – Crossway Books

THE EVIL EMPIRE by Paul Hellyer – Chimo Media Limited

THE EVIL THAT MEN DO by Stephen G. Michaud with Roy Hazelwood – St. Martin's Press

THE EXTERMINATION OF CHRISTIANITY by Paul Schenck – Huntington House Publishers

THE FALL OF LUCIFER by Wendy Alec – Realms

THE FIELD: THE QUEST FOR THE SECRET FORCE OF THE UNIVERSE by Lynne McTaggart – Harper Collins Publishers

THE FLOCK: AN AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF A MULTIPLE PERSONALITY by Joan Frances Casey – Alfred A. Knopf

THE FOURTH REICH: AN END TIMES NOVEL by Robert Van Kampen – Fleming H. Revvell

THE FRANKLIN COVER-UP: CHILD ABUSE, SATANISM, AND MURDER IN NEBRASKA by John W. DeCamp – AWT, Inc.

THE GLOBAL BRAIN AWAKENS by Peter Russell – Global Brain, Inc.

THE HANDBOOK FOR SPIRITUAL WARFARE by Dr. Ed Murphy – Thomas Nelson Publishers, Inc.

THE INVISIBLE WAR: A PANORAMAL CONFLICT BETWEEN GOOD AND EVIL by Donald Grey Barnhouse – Ministry Resources Library

THE PILLAR NT COMMENTARY: THE LETTERS TO THE THESSALONIANS by Gene L. Green – William B. Eerdmans Publishing Co.

THE MAGIC CASTLE by Carole Smith – St. Martin's Press

THE MAKING OF A SERIAL KILLER by Danny Rolling and Sondra London – Feral House

THE MARKETING OF EVIL by David Kupelia – WND Books

THE MAYAN PROPHECIES by Adrian G. Gilbert and Maurice M. Cotterell – Barnes and Noble Books

THE MEDUSA FILE by Craig Roberts – Consolidated Press International

THE MEN WHO STARE AT GOATS by Jon Ronson – Simon & Schuster

THE MONTAUK PROJECT by Preston B. Nichols with Peter Moon – Sky Books

THE MOST EVIL SOCIETIES IN HISTORY by Shelley Klein – Barnes & Noble, Inc.

THE NAZIS AND THE OCCULT by D. Sklar – Dorset Press

THE NAZI DOCTORS: MEDICAL KILLING AND THE PSYCHOLOGY OF GENOCIDE by Robert Jay Lifton – Basic Books

THE NEW SATANISTS by Linda Blood – Warner Books

THE OCCULT ESTABLISHMENT by James Webb – Open Court

THE OCCULT IN RUSSIAN AND SOVIET CULTURE by Bernice Glatzer Rosenthal – Cornell University Press

THE OPEN SECRET: AN INTRO TO THE THEOLOGY OF MISSION by Lesslie Newbign – Willliam Eerdmans Publishing Co.

THE PK MAN: A TRUE STORY OF MIND OVER MATTER by Jeffrey Mishlove, Ph. D. – Hampton Roads

THE PSYCHIC BATTLEFIELD: A HISTORY OF THE MILITARY-OCCULT COMPLEX by W. Adam Mandelbaum – St. Martin's Press

THE REIGN OF ANTICHRIST by Rev. R. Gerald Culleton – Tan Books and Publishers, Inc.

2012 THE RETURN OF QUETSZALCOATL by Daniel Pinchbeck – Jeremy Tarcher/Penguin

THE RITE: THE MAKING OF A MODERN EXORCIST by Matt Baglio – Doubleday

THE RISE OF THE FOURTH REICH: THE SECRET SOCIETIES THAT THREATEN TO TAKE OVER AMERICA by Jim Marrs – Harper Collins Publishers

THE SATAN HUNTER by Thomas W. Wedge with Robert L. Powers – Daring Books

THE SATANIC REVIVAL by Mark I. Bubeck – Here's Life Publishers

THE SS: A WARNING FROM HISTORY by Guido Knopp – Sutton Publishing

THE SEARCH FOR THE MANCHURIAN CANDIDATE by John Marks – W. W. Norton and Company

THE SECRET DIARY OF A SATAN WORSHIPPER by Joel French – New Leaf Press

THE SECRET LIFE OF A SATANIST/ THE AUTHORIZED BIOGRAPHY OF ANTON LAVEY by Blanch Barton – Feral House

THE SEVEN SINS OF MEMORY by Daniel L. Schacter – Houghton Mifflin Company

THE STRANGER IN THE MIRROR: DISSOCIATION—THE HIDDEN EPIDEMIC by Marlene Steinberg, M.D. and Maxine Schnall – Cliff Street Books

THE UNITED NATIONS EXPOSED by William F. Jasper – The John Birch Society

THE UNIVERSE NEXT DOOR by James W. Sire – IVP Academic

THE WAR FOR SOULS 2012 by Whitley Strieber – A Tom Doherty Associates Book

THE WIZARDS OF LANGLEY by Jeffrey T. Richelson – Westview Press

THEY FOUND THE SECRET by V. Raymond Edman – Zondervan Publishing House

TOWARD 2012: PERSPECTIVES ON THE NEXT AGE by Daniel Pinchbeck and Ken Jordan – Jeremy P. Tarcher/Penguin

TRANCE ON TRIAL by Alan W. Scheflin and Jerrold Lee Shapiro – The Guilford Press

TREATING DISSOCIATIVE IDENTITY DISORDER by James L. Spira – Jossey-Bass Publishers

TWENTY EXPERTS ADIVSE YOU ON HOW TO OVERCOME THE MOST FRIGHTENING ISSUES YOU WILL FACE THIS CENTURY – Defender/Anomalos Publishing House

UNCOVERING THE MYSTERY OF MPD by James G. Friesen, Ph. D. – Here's life Publishers

UNEARTHLY POWERS by David Burnett – Thomas Nelson Publishers

UNMASKING SATAN by Richard Mayhue – Victor Books

UNSHACKLED: A SURVIVOR'S STORY OF MIND CONTROL by Kathleen Sullivan – A Dandelion Books Publication

WARDS OF ARMAGEDDON by J.N. Williamson and John Maclay – Book Maargins, Inc.

WEB OF DARKNESS by Sean Sellers – Victory House, Inc.

WHAT HAVE THEY DONE WITH JESUS? By Ben Witherington III – Harper Collins Publishers

WHEN ALL HELL BREAKS LOOSE by Cody Lundin – Gibbs Smith Publisher

WHEN THE NEW AGE GETS OLD: LOOKING FOR A GREATER SPIRITUALITY by Vishal Mangalwadi – InterVarsity Press

WINDSWEPT HOUSE: A VATICAN NOVEL by Malachi Martin – Broadway Books

WHO'S WATCHING YOU? THE CHILLING TRUTH ABOUT THE STATE, SURVEILLANCE AND PERSONAL FREEDOM by Mick Farren and John Gibb – Conspiracy Books

WRESTLING WITH DARK ANGELS by C. Peter Wagner & Douglas Pennoyer – Regal Books

YOU CAN STOP DECLINE AND DECAY SAVE AMERICA! by H. Edward Rowe – Spire Books

YOU, THE WARRIOR LEADER by Bobby Welch – Broadman & Holman Publishers

THANKS FOR THE MEMORIES

THE TRUTH HAS SET ME FREE !

The memoirs of
Bob Hope's and Henry Kissinger's
mind-controlled slave.

Used as a presidential sex toy and personal computer.

BRICE TAYLOR

Acknowledgements....3
Foreward by Walter Bowart: Thanks for the Memmemmormee!?....7
Historical Overview: Mind Control in the Modern Context....12
Project Monarch: Nazi Mind Control by Ron Patton....14
Manufacturing the Mind Controlled Slave....25
Awakening to the Realities of Mind Control....31
Authors's Introduction....35
Chapter One: The Creation of Human Robot....40
Chapter Two: Early Childhood Preparation....43
Chapter Three: We're Off to See the Wizard....57
Chapter Four: Uncle Charlie, Kissinger, Hope and their Little Puppet.....65
Chapter Five: Initiation into the Political Arena as a Sex Slave....74
Chapter Six: JFK and the Sex Shuttle....83
Chapter Seven: All the way with LBJ....92
Chapter Eight: Brain Surgery at UCLA took away my Father's Free Will....96
Chapter Nine: They didn't see me as Human....99
Chapter Ten: Introduced to Governor Ronald Reagan....107
Chapter Eleven: Mind Control in the Prisons....110
Chapter Twelve: Nixon, Kissinger, and International Business....116
Chapter Thirteen: Bob Hope "Let me entertain you."....135
Chapter Fourteen: Parties at the Rockefellers....147
Chapter Fifteen: Hope and Kissinger Utilize the Kennedy Family....159
Chapter Sixteen: Viva Las Vegas....163
Chapter Seventeen: The Rat Pack....171
Chapter Eighteen: Gerald Ford....183
Chapter Nineteen: My Programmed Marriage – We've Only Just Begun....186
Chapter Twenty: Jimmy Carter....189
Chapter Twenty-one: The Hollywood Connection....190
Chapter Twenty-two: Prince Phillip, Prince Charles, and Princess Di....203
Chapter Twenty-three: They Stole My Baby....206
Chapter Twenty-four: USC: Higher Education or Mind Control....208
Chapter Twenty-five: Baby Monarchs are Born....215
Chapter Twenty-six: Dodger Diamonds....239
Chapter Twenty-seven: Education 2000....243
Chapter Twenty-eight: Reagan, Kissinger, Bush and More Horrors....247
Chapter Twenty-nine: Back to the Future....255
Chapter Thirty: UCLA Neuropsychiatric Institute....264
Chapter Thirty-one: Weaponry Technology of the Future....268
Chapter Thirty-two: Robot Breakdown....274
Chapter Thirty-three: Bill Clinton and Hillary....277
Chapter Thirty-four: Excuse Me, I Would Like My Life Back....280
Chapter Thirty-five: Secret Societies....296
Chapter Thirty-six: The Council's Plan....299
Chapter Thirty-seven: What the World Needs Now....308
Chapter Thirty-eight: A Mother and Grandmother's Sorrow....316
Epilogue....321
Survivor Resources....325
Suggested Reading....325

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

TO MY CHILDREN COLLECTIVELY--Mountains of love are still held in reserve for each of you as I take this necessary step toward insuring your ultimate freedom. Please forgive me for divulging and making public the persons and events that should have remained private to your lives. However, the magnitude of the problem we face requires that I do as God guides me. I know that in a 'normal' healthy family I would have been able to discuss this all with you so we could have decided how to do this together. But, that was not possible. Forgive me for taking any liberties that may effect your lives in ways I could not have anticipated. I have put my decisions before the Lord and trust in His infinite wisdom to lead us all to sweet peace and freedom. The mother-child bond we share has very powerfully been the wind beneath my wings.

KEVIN--My child who was also my friend. Thanks for always being so helpful, capable, thoughtful of others, kind and cheerful. I am proud of you and pray for your release so that you can take the many talents and gifts you possess and use them in ways you and you alone choose. I love you Kev.

KELLY--A promise is a promise! And I will keep mine to you. I will never let go, and I will never stop exposing this and seeking help, no matter what. Thank you for always being so kind and loving. Your gentle nature and the immense love you are shines through even the mind control you are under, in ways everyone can feel. I pray for your release from the programmed state that keeps you shut away from yourself and the world. I miss you and know that God is working powerfully in and through you to bring healing to you and others. I love's ya.

DANNY--My child who walks to the beat of a different drummer. I wait in great anticipation to see what you do with the many individual gifts and talents that are yours, yet not yet yours. I grieve for the necessary separation that caused you to have to grow up without a mom at a very early age. I pray that God will restore those years in divine ways. I love you more than you could ever know!

TO THE BABY SON TAKEN FROM MY ARMS AT BIRTH--My soul longs for you. I still grieve the immense loss of your physical presence. I've missed you over the years and look forward to our reunion if it is God's will! God has promised restoration of family and I look forward to meeting you again, only this time as a big strong man!

MY PARENTS--Thank you for allowing me passage into the genetic and spiritual structures that would insure the success of my mission here on earth. I love you for birthing me and for allowing me to have the necessary experiences my soul required to learn and make my contribution. Dad, your ability to be ahead of your time and Mom, your ability to unconditionally love, even under mind control, helped me find my way, ultimately. I know now that you were both caught in the same dark web that I found myself in. I love and forgive you both.

CRAIG--We never had a chance, but we did love each other through it. Thank you for your gentle nature and for supporting me in the ways that you were able toward my recovery. I forgive you. Do you forgive me?

MY BROTHERS--Like Pop told us: "May the Truth Set Us All Free!"

CATHERINE GOULD, PHD--What would I have done without you? Thank you for so many things, the first of which saved my life ...the clever safety letter attached to my memory packets that I believe kept me alive. Your continued support and helpful listening ear proved to give me that extra leg up that I needed to trust myself in order to go forward with this manuscript.

MARGIE PAUL, PhD--Thank you for helping me connect to my innate spirituality and my inner child (children) and for holding and loving those little one's within me as I healed. Thanks for your willingness to go into the fearsome darkness with me and for your dedication to love, stretching beyond professional rules to serve in the ways I needed. I love you!

TED GUNDERSON--Thank you for helping me begin to stay safe with security measures and bodyguards and for kneeling before the Lord while the Holy Spirit worked within us, so that together we could work toward exposing the horrors that have been a part of so many victims' lives, in order that those planning the New World Order would fail. Thank you for being there over the years to remind me when I became discouraged, "Remember who wins in the end!" May God's larger plan set the captives free at last!

WALTER BOWART--May God bless you abundantly for holding the space of truth for victims of all ages starting way back in 1978 when your first edition of Operation Mind Control hit the bookstores. You have stayed in the battle for truth and justice and I thank you for continuing to hold onto the reality which most were faint of heart and not strong enough to endure. Thank you for being there!

JOE--Thanks for encouraging me to continue and for teaching me the place mat method.

LAUREN STRATFORD--Thank you for being courageous enough to heed the call of the Lord when you walked out in front of us all to pioneer a healing path for those who wanted to be healed. Thank you for your encouragement in times of trouble and may God bless you for your continued support of survivors all over the world. I love you.

LYNN MOSS-SHARMON--Who had the spiritual courage, fortitude and determination to found Stone Angels to support mind control victims in Canada, and then ACHES-MC (ADVOCACY COMMITTEE FOR HUMAN EXPERIMENTATION SURVIVORS-MIND CONTROL). Your work is crucial, as you've documented the reality of mind control experimentation through the chronicling of countless victims' testimony. May the Great Spirit richly reward you for your beautiful spiritual purity and faith ...and your work here!

BOBBI GAGNE-May the love and compassion you have shown for countless survivors return to you multiplied. Thank you for educating many in the field of law enforcement so they may now help victims who are still suffering. Thank you for doing what Christ would do! I love you!

ALICE MILLER--The example you showed me through your books was priceless. Through them I was to learn that by trusting my own experience, especially those that I had as a child, that I might transcend what is currently known in order to more fully advocate for children.

STUART PERLMAN, PHD--Thanks for telling me the truth was within, when others told me to forget the past and live in the present. You were right! Thank you for listening for hours to the horror of my past. I know it was very difficult for you to hear. God Bless You!

CLAIRE REEVES--President, Mothers Against Sexual Abuse (MASA)--Thank you for holding the shield of protection for children and for being there for and with me, even

in court, when I began exposing my affluent abusers back in 1992! I know it has been difficult at times and that you have had to withstand much opposition, but just know that many have been helped because of the work you have done! God Bless You.

MARGARET-My sister in Christ. Thank you for being my trusted secretary, best friend, and support team through the rough times. I thank Jesus for guiding you into my life so that together we could fulfill

His plan for freeing His children, large and small! May God bless and keep you all the days of your life. You are so precious to me.

MARY LEWIS--For constantly doing what Jesus would do. Without funds, outward direction, or much support you have single-handedly done a miraculous job in helping endless victims of mind control break free and heal. May God bless and keep you safe as you continue His work!

LOWELL LEWIS--For bringing humor and love to your work in supporting Mary and the many victims that the two of you have worked with and loved over the years. Thanks for sharing your Bible with me.

STUART MERLOT--Thank you for your continued support of me (especially with the editing) and your awesome devotion toward exposing and ending the inner workings of the New World Order and of the mind control that fuels it. Thank you for not stopping, even when it seemed hopeless. May your selflessness and dedication be richly rewarded by God.

JUDITH--Thanks for your loving support and help in the initial typesetting.

DORIS--My loving prayer partner. Thank you for your continued prayers for my family's release. I love you.

TERRY-Thank you for your loving support through the intense birthing of this book.

LAURENCE--Thank you for teaching me how to rest and for being my friend.

ELIZABETH--Thank you for being the beautiful light of compassion and love, and for crying when you first heard me speak about my life. Thanks for being with Kelly while I studied the brainwave technology that enabled me to help her at home and for encouraging me to keep learning, when I felt I couldn't do it! Your constant prayers have been an incredible upliftment! God Bless You.

CHIP TATUM--Thank you for heroically sharing your first hand witness of CIA mind control, even validating it on video with me! I'm sorry you had to go to prison for telling the truth, but I'm so grateful that now you are free! God Bless you and your wife in your new life.

ALL THOSE THAT WENT BEFORE--I want to thank all those courageous souls who gave their lives in the service of ending this abuse.

JESUS--The love of my life, my Lord and Savior. Thank You for Your leading. Thank you for bringing the Holy Spirit to lead and guide me through the danger to make this contribution. It is because of You that I survived through this life and healed in order to bring the truth to light. Continue to work in me to create my mind to be more like Yours!

A NOTE TO RITUAL ABUSE SURVIVORS AND/OR THOSE UNDER MIND CONTROL, WHETHER CONSCIOUS AND IN RECOVERY OR STILL UNCONSCIOUS AND UNAWARE

Certain material contained within these pages may illustrate the precepts of mind control. Nothing in this book should create any problems in the internal structure of those who have Dissociative Identity Disorder (formerly called Multiple Personality Disorder), or those currently under mind control; however, some survivors report difficulty in reading anything which relates to their current perception of their victimization. Readers who know or suspect they are incest, ritual abuse, or mind control survivors and are in therapy would do well to consult with God before reading this book.

The mention of an office, service, or organization in this book does not constitute endorsement or recommendation by the author, and should not be relied upon as such, but is provided for information purposes only.

The author, editor, or publisher can in no way be held liable for the use or misuse of the information in this book.

Foreward by Walter Bowart: Thanks for the Memmemmormee!?[1]

More than 25 years have passed since I began research into what was then called "brainwashing," a comically euphemistic term invented in the 1950's by CIA propaganda specialist Edward Hunter. It's been 21 years since my book on the subject Operation Mind Control was published internationally, and five years since it reappeared as the greatly expanded Limited Researcher's Edition, featuring an account of "Lois" that offers a synopsis of the book you hold in your hands. Now it can be told. "Lois" is Susan Ford, whose pseudonym is Brice Taylor. Her book Thanks for the Memories, which, by all reports is greatly anticipated by an audience better educated than the one I encountered in the 1970's, is now published for all the world to read.

I wrote my book Operation Mind Control while living in Arizona, still 'a backward state, dominated by Federal funds and jobs, and the dissociated and extremely provincial beliefs that come with it. In the 70's most of the people I spoke with about what I called, generically, "mind control" thought I was crazy. Those who were not afraid to express their opinions on the subject believed it to be impossible. They strongly believed they could not be made to do something against their will and without their own knowledge. They believed they had indomitable powers of will, like the CIA funded psychologist, Timothy Leary's fellow debater and Watergate burglar, G. Gordon Liddy. They believed, beyond a shadow of a doubt, that they could not be broken, fragmented, and mentally enslaved by any technology, even if it included hypnosis, drugs, electronic brain stimulation or what came to be called biological process control.

My interest in this subject was piqued by a young man, David, I had known all my life. He returned from a four-year tour with the United States Air Force in a confused and deeply tormented state. You could not say that he had a destroyed mind. He suffered from complete amnesia about the past years of service in the USAF, but he was making straight "A's" in premedical courses at a prominent University.

I did not recognize him as he sat, slumped in an overstuffed chair in my living room in 1973. He had undergone a couple of years of treatment with a competent psychiatrist and was finally asked by her, "Do you want to know what this is and how it was created, or do you just want to be able to function?" He decided the functioning was good enough, and his treatment accelerated, taking a wide turn away from the historical events he remembered, which included being a "human tape recorder" and witnessing the most secret negotiations with North Vietnam and with "Royals" of the Arabic persuasion who beheaded a prisoner he had just witnessed being interrogated. The image of this decapitation still haunts him in his dreams.

In 1973 the Rockefeller Commission's Report revealed that CIA Director Richard Helms had supposedly destroyed 153 separate files on a long running, top secret project called MKULTRA, as his last act in office. In years to come many of those files were discovered as "misplaced" files. They revealed a long history of criminal activities by individuals who hid behind the National Security Act and ran amok, arrogantly treating citizens of their own country as just so many lab rats.

"I can hypnotize a man -- without his knowledge or consent -- into committing treason against the United States..." -- Dr. George Estabrooks, 1943.

This Canadian-born Rhodes Scholar was a hypnosis expert and former Professor at Colgate University with long-standing ties to U.S. military and domestic intelligence, and to Martin Orne, MD, a master

[1] James Joyce, Finnigan's Wake, 1938

"spy-chiatrist," author of Patty Hearst's "brainwashing" defense, and founding Board member of the False Memory "Spindrome" Foundation.

As I was researching The Rockefeller Commission's Report, following anecdotal evidence, putting the pieces together, then writing what turned out to be Operation Mind Control, I felt like the villagers in this Sufi tale:

> An elephant had entered a cave near a town in Morrocco and had bellowed all night, keeping the whole village awake. Nobody in the town had seen an elephant, nor did anyone know what an elephant looked like.
> The villagers held a meeting and four brave people among them volunteered to go into the cave to investigate what was making the strange bellowings.
> The first one felt the elephant's trunk and came running out to report a large python was making the noise they heard
> The second one felt afoot and came out to report that a palm tree was making the noise. The third one felt the elephant's tail and came out to report that a broom, obviously controlled by a witch, was making the noise.
> The fourth villager felt the elephant's ear and came out to report that there was nothing to fear because a large leaf from a tropical plant was making the noise.
> Once they understood there was nothing to fear, the villagers went to sleep that night and didn't hear the elephant snorting and bellowing as he left the cave. Nor did they mention it again.

In those days, shrinks (psychiatrists and psychologists) told me that what I was reporting were the results of a disease called "schizophrenia." The word meant fragmented personality, but in time, schizophrenia turned out to be a familial disease which could be treated and controlled with medication. The stories I was reporting took several years to understand. I eventually discovered that what I was reporting was the real cause of the cryptocracy's trained elephant in the particular cave next to our hometown.

I cannot tell you the experiences Sue Ford reports are accurate to the letter, since I was not a witness to all of them. But, as I revealed in Operation Mind Control (1994), I once saw Sue on a Palm Springs golf course in the company of her alleged handler, Bob Hope. At that time I was Editor-in-Chief of Palm Springs Life magazine, which had just won the "Maggie" Award for publishing the best city magazine. It was at the Bob Hope Classic that I saw Sue, but I didn't speak to her, as I was busy covering the happenings and celebrities, which have graced the magazine since the 1950's. Sue was one of the Bob Hope Classic hostesses, assisting the public and the press in a variety of functions.

My path crossed Sue's again years later when I was interviewing another survivor of mind control, but I'll spare you those details. Just read my book. I can tell you that Sue Ford believes the story she has written with all her being, and her account as described herein has remained consistent.

Most of her memories, conveyed in her book, she obtained outside of the therapy setting on the Island of Kauai, while journaling on the beach, since she could not afford a therapist at that time. The perceived safety of the location and the steady sound of the waves in the background provided her with the ability to focus inward, allowing intense flashbacks to recur, including intense memory of her physical sensations during those events (called body memories), all of which she was able to write down in her journals. Sue's journals are amazingly free of mistakes, and that's no small feat since they were written in indelible ink. One gets the impression that Sue simply 'downloaded' this material from her inner 'multiple personalities,' who were desperately wanting to get this information out.

Offering up these truths in these post-False Memory "Spindrome" Foundation days takes courage. The well-funded "foundation," composed of alleged pedophiles and spy-chiatrists, my term for professionals who worked for the CIA in mind control projects over a period of approximately fifty years, has led an effective fight in the courts to establish the fact that a person can easily be made to believe things which are not true. When I asked many of those who would later sit on the FMSF Board, if a

person could be made to do something against their will and without their knowledge, they denied that it was possible in the mid-seventies.

They have not yet turned their earlier stance completely around. Nor have they taken the next step to offer proof that a person can be made to do something against their will and without their knowledge, but they have gone far enough with their argument that "justice is no longer served by 'eyewitness' accounts." Responding to FMSF lawsuits, the State of California, I'm told, has made new laws, which would disqualify the testimony of anyone who has ever confessed to having been hypnotized.

Most lawyers and judges don't understand dissociative disorders because most "mental health professionals" don't understand them, and/or haven't bothered to educate the judicial branch of government. To begin to understand the full range of dissociative disorders, from Post-traumatic Stress Disorder to Bipolar Disorder to the former Multiple Personality Disorder (now called Dissociative Identity Disorder), one must confront the National Security State and its military/industrial complex, which created the killers who all too often came home from their service to their country to beat and sexually abuse their wives and children.

One gets the impression today that the majority of both "mental health experts" and judges believe that Multiple Personality Disorder can easily be faked during expert examinations. However, most professionals with experience treating DID will tell you that it is almost impossible to fake an autonomic response, the kind of response that is used to assess the reality of a dissociated state. Faking an autonomic response would be about as easy as deliberately dilating or contracting your pupils without any change of light stimulus.

On one case the Freedom of Thought Foundation sent me to investigate, the case of Robert Joe Moody, an alleged serial killer with a Top Secret security clearance in the USMC, I brought one of the leading experts in the treatment of DID into the prison conference room. Within minutes this doctor had the killer manifesting four different personalities. When he first switched into the killer personality the room filled with heat. The doctor told me it was not unusual for a whole variety of physical changes to occur when a multiple switched. The room quickly getting hot from the temperature change of Moody's body when he switched from one personality to the other is a good example of the sort of autonomic response I'm talking about. I'd like to see even the best-trained actor do that on cue!

After the interview with Moody, as we were leaving the prison, the doctor said to me, "Well, what do you want to do? Integrate these personalities, or just let the little nine-year-old personality take the punishment (death by lethal injection) for all the others, just like he has always been doing."

In the only study of death row inmates in America, roughly 14% tested as being undiagnosed cases of DID. Only a few prisons were used in this study. It focused only on convicted murderers and did not investigate violent criminals who were convicted of assault or crimes less than murder. Other non-capital offenders were omitted. This study clearly showed the ignorance, or prejudice, of the American judicial system, one in which the diagnosis "malingering" is given to people suffering from DID. Malingering is a psychiatric term that means the subject is faking an illness. The poorly trained psychologists and psychiatrists working as court appointed "expert witnesses" don't know how to test nor diagnose Dissociative Disorders.

The most tragic moment of Moody's story, for most, is when they view the police videotape of the accused killer being read the Miranda Warnings. Here, clearly, is the nine-year-old personality, "Bobby," picking at a scab on his hand, speaking in a halting voice, not understanding who he was, due to Amnestic Fugue, nor what the words in the Miranda Warnings meant. It was the only time the accused was read his rights. And as you might expect, Bobby wasn't the killer, nor was he even "present" at the

scene of the crime. The killer personality was named XE and was, by all present indications, created during Moody's service in the Marine Corps.

"Mental health professionals" generally overlook the possibility of deliberate programming. Or maybe that's part of the conspiracy against freedom of thought. Many shrinks are themselves unwitting accomplices in this conspiracy. Professional expressions of denial about the access and deliberate programming of dissociated children by agents of National Security States is about as comforting as if they'd told you that the conclusions of the Warren Commission Report were accurate and correct. Even certain members of The International Society for the Study of Dissociative Disorders has put DID in a separate legal category, so that, people expressing multiple personalities cannot be found "not guilty by reason of insanity."

Dr. Colin Ross, one of the leading experts on Dissociative Disorders, expressed the opinion that DID may be the cause of most of the serious problems of our society, such as gangsterism, drive-by shootings, schoolyard assassinations, random acts of terrorism and all the rest of the trauma America has been experiencing over the past few years--an idea not yet examined by criminologists, prison experts, and others who would supposedly protect and serve.

To understand dissociation is to understand the paradigm shift in our culture--from an industrial culture to an information culture. To understand it is to look into the heart of the Dissociated States of America and the Dissociated States of Europe and the Orient.

The seeds of dissociation have been sown throughout history, from our earliest recorded days until the present. You can find evidence of it in the first terrors of the cavemen, in the shamanic practices of most primitive cultures, to the present co-option of severely dissociated people found among the ranks of modem military recruits. A cross section of our society finds its way into military service, and a representational number of them suffer from Dissociative Disorders. These form a fertile pool for recruitment of programmed personnel.

After you've met a few of them, you realize they have one thing is common--they are highly suggestible. Thus it is easy to capitalize on the trauma implanted in their child's mind by daddy, uncle, a neighbor or whomever. Once dissociation shows up in the military "entrance tests," they are sorted out for programming. From their ranks are created autonomic assassins, amnestic couriers, and Mata Hari sexpionage agents who've given their involuntary all with no consent form requested.

Who would do such a thing you ask? Read on. Learn about the cryptocracy that has been gradually amassing its power over the human mind since the days when the swastika was forced underground, and its armbands torn from the sleeves, but its legacy was not removed from the hearts and minds of those welcomed to America under Project Paperclip, when Nazi war criminals, posing as scientists, were flown from the front, hidden among those who had spilled their blood fighting fascism.

The value of programming to the cryptocrats is understood when you realize its usefulness in harnessing a slave labor force and covering up crimes. More than one forensic psychiatrist has told me that our criminal justice systems are not prepared to deal with these cases. And it's been that way for quite some time. The litigious actions of the False Memory "Spindrome" Foundation have done further damage to justice by successfully obfuscating the realities of Dissociative Disorders and by blaming its cause on the treatments of incompetent "mental health professionals."

Whether a victim of DID, trained and conditioned and honed for govemment use, claims they have been raised in a Satanic Cult, or a Secret Society, or been abducted by aliens matters not at all. For eons of time, throughout the entire history of mankind (as far as we know) war and trauma have created this evil, which is multi-generational, passed down the family tree from parent to child in an unbroken chain. The flavor of the torture matters not--it is none the less torture. The style of programming

matters not--it is none the less programming. Usually the women are tumed into slaves of one kind or another; the men are turned into killers or handlers. Regardless of the content of their story, the professional can only take it at face value, support the client, use it as a metaphor if nothing else, and try one technique after another until they get the results they are seeking, reintegration and eventual recovery.

After spending the past five years studying programmed killers, it is refreshing to turn once again to Sue Ford's case. Most of us cannot keep from wincing at her vivid descriptions in certain parts. Others similarly victimized have experienced tortures so terrible (literally unspeakable) that they might think Sue had a "privileged" time of it. Though, Sue was used at a very "high level" in such ways that required her physical preservation. Many survivors, it would appear, are generally too incapacitated to write their own story and too destitute or crippled to achieve sufficient recovery.

Sue's story, truly a spy-chiatrist's "nightmare come true," is like a fascinating, multifaceted gemstone washed up on a white, sandy Hawaiian beach after having battled typhoons, rip tides and the treacherous forces of man and nature. It is the story of a survivor who truly has emerged as a 'Victor' against all odds.

We must salute Sue. She has preceded the therapeutic community's understanding of dissociation and reintegration in the context of mind control. She's been a teacher as well as a patient, and has inspired many of those who are leading the way toward real healing, not just a drugging of symptoms as is too commonly found to be the "mental health" cure for MPD/DID. Through her valiant recovery from trauma-based mind control, Sue has paved the way for other survivors to follow.

Let's join her in shining the light on the path for those survivors who are ready, willing and able to stand and be counted. Their liberation will be ours--all of us!

To your own Free Thinking!

W.H. Bowart Director Freedom of Thought Foundation

Historical Overview: Mind Control in the Modern Context

'Mind control' is a rather vague and nebulous term used to label methods of extreme coercion that result in an individual's involuntary, robotic compliance. In order for the reader to fully understand the account presented in this book, it is essential to gain some background knowledge about the history of mind control.

There was a Special Report (article) that appeared in the US. News & World Report (January 24, 1994) entitled "The Cold War Experiments," which provides one with an introductory and conventionally accepted perspective on the subject of mind control.

The article begins, stating the widely held view that "...U.S. government scientists, spurred on by reports that American prisoners of war were being brainwashed in North Korea, were proposing an urgent, top-secret research program on behavior modification. Drugs, hypnosis, electroshock, lobotomy -- all were to be studied as part of a vast U.S. effort to close the mind-control gap."

At the time this article appeared, congressional inquiries were being held to examine new disclosures about government experiments that had intentionally exposed American citizens to radiation. The article continues, "But the radiation experiments are only one facet of a vast cold war research program that used thousands of Americans as guinea pigs." And, "From the end of World War II well into the 1970's, the Atomic Energy Commission, the Defense Department, the military services, the CIA and other agencies used prisoners, drug addicts, mental patients, college students, soldiers, even bar patrons, in a vast range of government-run experiments to test the effects of everything from radiation, LSD and nerve gas to intense electric shocks and prolonged "sensory deprivation." Note the portrayal of this activity as a "vast" governmental effort.

The article also illustrates the recent congressional concern: "'It's not just radiation we're talking about,' says Democratic Sen. John Glenn of Ohio, a former Marine and astronaut who is holding hearings on the subject this week. 'Any place government experimenting caused a problem we should make every effort to notify the people and follow up. We ought to set up some sort of review and compensation for people who were really hurt'." Years later, on January 22, 1997, Sen. Glenn introduced before Congress the Human Research Subject Protections Act of 1997. It was referred to the Senate Committee on Labor and Human Resources, chaired by Sen. Arlen Spector (author of the Warren Commission's 'single bullet theory'), and never made it out. With the many bare-brained pieces of legislation that make it to the Senate floor, you would think that one which attempts to safeguard human subjects of experimentation would be a 'no-brainer,' but apparently it is not with this Congress.

Parallel with this activity, President Clinton published an Administrative Order known as Memorandum of March 27, 1997 entitled "Strengthened Protections for Human Subjects of Classified Research" (see appendix), which attempted to implement the recommendations of the Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments, which he established in January 1994. To date, these well-intended efforts have had little or no impact.

Last year (April 15, 1998), Harlan Girard, on behalf of the International Committee for the Convention Against Offensive Microwave Weapons, brought suit against the Federal government for its non-compliance in carrying out President Clinton's Administrative Order. This case is still in the process of working its way through the Federal courts. The U.S. News & World Report article concludes with the following paragraph:

"Another former CIA official, Sidney Gottlieb, who directed the MKULTRA behavior-control program almost from its inception, refused to discuss his work when US. News reporter visited him last week at his home. He said the CIA was only trying to encourage basic work in behavior science. But he added that after his retirement in 1973, he went back to school, practiced for 19 years as a speech pathologist and now works with AIDS and cancer patients at a hospice. He said he has devoted the years since he left the CIA 'trying to get on the side of the angels instead of the devils'."

Gottlieb's praiseworthy activities since 1973 speak to the seriousness of what he had participated in prior to that date, under Project MKULTRA. He was one individual who at least tried to do something to 'save his soul,' which is more than one can say for the host of others who were similarly involved. Gottlieb passed away earlier in 1999, just in time to miss all the 'fireworks.'

The following article, "Project Monarch: Nazi Mind Control" by Ron Patton, provides an excellent historical overview on mind control in its many different aspects and is reprinted here almost in its entirety. The article appeared in the trend-setting, alternative press magazine Paranoia: The Conspiracy Reader in the Fall 1996 issue. This magazine, one of several 'iconoclasts,' has published a number of such informative articles on related subjects and, to date, appears to be the leading source for news and information about mind control.

Note: The actual name of a classified project known to many as 'Monarch' is yet to be officially confirmed, therefore, the reader is advised to substitute the phrase "trauma-based mind control" for the author's usage of the code name "MONARCH."

PROJECT MONARCH: NAZI MIND CONTROL by Ron Patton

Amidst the subtle cerebral circumvention of the gullible populace, through a multitude of manipulated mediums, lies one of the most diabolical atrocities perpetrated upon a segment of the human race: a form of systematic mind control which has permeated every aspect of society for almost fifty years.

To objectively ascertain the following, one may need to re-examine preconceived ideologies relating to the dualistic nature of mankind. Resolving the philosophical question of whether we are inherently good or inherently evil is tantamount in shaping our perception of reality; specifically, the spiritual variable within the equation of life.

This exposition is substantiated by declassified U.S. Government documents, individuals formerly connected to the U.S. intelligence communities, historical researchers knowledgeable in mind control, publications from mental health practitioners, and interviews taken from survivors unwittingly subjected to a highly complex form of trauma-based mind control known as MONARCH programming.

A word of caution for survivors of intensively systematic mind control and/or some form of ritualized abuse: There are numerous "triggers" in this article. It is therefore recommended not to read it unless appropriate support systems are in place or if you have a thoroughly reintegrated personality.

A Brief History of Control

The Mystery Religions of ancient Egypt, Greece, India and Babylon helped lay the foundation for occultism, meaning "hidden knowledge." One of the earliest writings giving reference to occultism is the Egyptian Book of the Dead, a compilation of rituals explicitly describing methods of torture and intimidation (to create trauma), the use of potions (drugs) and the casting of spells (hypnotism), ultimately resulting in the total enslavement of the initiate.[1] These have been the main ingredients for a part of occultism known as Satanism, throughout the ages.

During the 13th Century, the Roman Catholic Church increased and solidified its dominion throughout Europe with the infamous Inquisition. Satanism survived this period of persecution, deeply entrenching itself under the veil of various esoteric groups.

In 1776, a Bavarian Jesuit by the name of Adam Weishaupt was commissioned by the House of Rothschild to centralize the power base of the Mystery Religions into what is commonly known as the Illuminati, meaning "Enlightened Ones." This was an amalgamation of powerful occultic bloodlines, elite secret societies and influential Masonic fraternities, with the desire to construct the framework for a "New World Order." The outward goal of this Utopia was to bring forth universal happiness to the human race. However, their underlying intention was to gradually increase control over the masses, thus becoming masters of the planet.

The Anglo Alliance

By the 19th century, Great Britain and Germany were recognized as the primary geographic areas of Illuminati control. It then should be of little surprise to know the first work in Behavioral Science research was established in England in 1882, while much of the early medical and psychiatric techniques involved in mind control were pioneered at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute in Germany.

The Tavistock Institute of Human Relations was set up in London in 1921 to study the "breaking point" of humans. Kurt Lewin, a German psychologist, became the director of the Tavistock Institute in 1932, about the same time Nazi Germany was increasing its research into neuropsychology, parapsychology and multi-generational occultism. Interestingly, a progressive exchange of scientific ideas was taking place between England and Germany, most notably in the field of eugenics: the movement devoted to "improving" the human species through the control of hereditary factors in mating. The nefariously enigmatic union between the two countries was bonded, partly through the Order of the Golden Dawn, a secret society, which consisted of many high ranking officials in the Nazi party and British aristocracy. Top SS Nazi officer, Heinrich Himmler, was in charge of a scientific project called Lebensborn, which included selective breeding and adoption of children, a peculiarly large number of twins among them.[2] The purpose of the program was to create a super-race (Aryans) who would have total allegiance to the cause of the Third Reich (New Order). Much of the preliminary experimentation concerning genetic engineering and behavior modification was conducted by Dr. Josef Mengele at Aushwitz, where he coldly analyzed the effects of trauma-bonding, eye-coloring and "twinning" upon his victims.

Besides the insidious surgical experimentation performed at the concentration camp, some of the children were subjected to massive amounts of electroshock. Sadly, many of them did not survive the brutality. Concurrently, "brain-washing" was carried out on inmates at Dachau, who were placed under hypnosis and given the hallucinogenic drug mescaline. During the war, parallel behavioral research was led by Dr. George Estabrooks of Colgate University. His involvement with the Army, CID, FBI and other agencies remains shrouded in secrecy. However, Estabrooks would occasionally "slip" and discuss his work involving the creation of hypno-programmed couriers and hypnotically-induced split personalities.[3]

After WWII, the U.S. Department of Defense secretly imported many of the top German Nazi and Italian Fascist scientists and spies into the United States via South America and the Vatican. The code name for this operation was Project PAPERCLIP.[4] One of the more prominent finds for the U.S. was German General Reinhard Gehlen, Hitler's Chief of Intelligence against Russia. Upon arriving in Washington, DC in 1945, Gehlen met extensively with President Truman, General William "Wild Bill" Donovan, Director of the Office of Strategic Services (OSS) and Allen Dulles, who would later become the stalwart head of the CIA. The objective of their brainstorming sessions was to reorganize the nominal American intelligence operation, transforming it into a highly efficient covert organization. The culmination of their efforts produced the Central Intelligence Group in 1946, renamed the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) in 1947.

Reinhard Gehlen also had profound influence in helping to create the National Security Council, from which the National Security Act of 1947 was derived. This particular piece of legislation was implemented to protect an unconscionable number of illegal government activities, including clandestine mind control programs.

Evolution of Project MKULTRA

With the CIA and National Security Council firmly established, the first in a series of covert brainwashing programs was initiated by the Navy in the fall of 1947. Project CHATTER was developed in response to the Soviet's "successes" through the use of "truth drugs." This rationale, however, was simply a cover story if the program were to be exposed. The research focused on the identification and testing of such drugs for use in interrogations and the recruitment of agents.[5] The project was officially terminated in 1953.

The CIA decided to expand their efforts in the area of behavior modification, with the advent of Project BLUEBIRD, approved by Director Allen Dulles in 1950. Its objectives were to: (1) discover a means of conditioning personnel to prevent unauthorized extraction of information from them by known

means, (2) investigate the possibility of control of an individual by application of special interrogation techniques, (3) investigate memory enhancement and (4) establish defensive means for preventing hostile control of agency personnel. In August 1951, Project BLUEBIRD was renamed Project ARTICHOKE, which evaluated offensive uses of interrogation techniques, including hypnosis and drugs. The program ceased in 1956. Three years prior to the halt of Project ARTICHOKE, Project MKULTRA came into existence on April 13, 1953 along the lines proposed by Richard Helms, Deputy Director of Central Intelligence CDCI with the rationale of establishing a "special funding mechanism of extreme sensitivity."[6]

The hypothetical etymology of "MK" may possibly stand for "Mind Kontrolle." The obvious postwar translation of the German word, "Kontrolle" into English is "control."[7] A host of German doctors, procured from the Nazi talent pool, were an invaluable asset toward the development of MKULTRA. The correlation between the concentration camp experiments and the numerous sub-projects of MKULTRA are clearly evident. The various avenues used to control human behavior under MKULTRA included radiation, electroshock, psychology, psychiatry, sociology, anthropology, graphology, harassment substances and paramilitary devices and materials (LSD being the most widely dispensed "material"). A special procedure, designated MKDELTA, was established to govern the use of MKULTRA abroad. MKULTRA / MKDELTA materials were used for harassment, discrediting or disabling purposes.[8]

Of the 149 subprojects under the umbrella of MKULTRA having been identified, Project MONARCH officially began by the U.S. Army in the early 1960's (although unofficially implemented much earlier) appears to be the most prominent and is still classified as TOP SECRET for "National Security" reasons.[9] MONARCH may have culminated from MKSEARCH subprojects, such as operation SPELLBINDER, which was set up to create "sleeper" assassins (i.e. "Manchurian Candidates") who could be activated upon receiving a key word or phrase while in a post-hypnotic trance. Operation OFTEN, a study which attempted to harness the power of occultic forces, was possibly one of several cover programs to hide the insidious reality of Project MONARCH.

Definition and Description

The name MONARCH is not necessarily defined within the context of royal nobility, but rather refers to the Monarch butterfly. When a person is undergoing trauma induced by electroshock, a feeling of light-headedness is evidenced; as if one is floating or fluttering like a butterfly. There is also a symbolic representation pertaining to the transformation or metamorphosis of this beautiful insect: from a caterpillar to a cocoon (dormancy; inactivity), to a butterfly (new creation) which will return to its point of origin. Such is the migratory pattern that makes this species unique.

Occultic symbolism may give additional insight into the true meaning. Psyche is the word for both "soul" and "butterfly," coming from the belief that human souls become butterflies while searching for a new reincarnation.[10]

Some ancient mystical groups, such as the Gnostics, saw the butterfly as a symbol of corrupt flesh. The "Angel of Death" (remember Mengele?) in Gnostic art works was portrayed crushing the butterfly.[11] A marionette is a puppet that is attached to strings and is controlled by the puppet master, hence MONARCH programming is also referred to as the "Marionette Syndrome." "Imperial Conditioning" is another term used, while some mental health therapists know it as "Conditioned Stimulus-Response Sequences."

Project MONARCH could be best described as a form of trauma-structured dissociation and occultic integration in order to compartmentalize the mind into multiple personalities within a systematic framework. During the process, a Satanic ritual, usually including Cabalistic mysticism, is

performed with the purpose of attaching a particular demon or group of demons to the corresponding alter(s). Of course, most [people] would view this as simply a means to enhance trauma within the victim negating irrational belief that demonic possession actually occurs.

Alters and Triggers

Another way of examining this convoluted victimization of body and soul is by looking at it as a complex computer program: A file (alter) is created through trauma, repetition and reinforcement. In order to activate (trigger) the file, a specific access code or password (cue or command) is required. The victim survivor is called a "slave" by the programmer/handler, who in turn is perceived as "master" or "god." About 75% are female, since they possess a higher tolerance for pain and tend to dissociate easier than males. Subjects are used mainly for covert operations, prostitution and pornography; involvement in the entertainment industry is notable.

A former military officer connected to the DIA told this writer, "In the 'big picture' these people [MONARCH victims] are in all walks of life, from the bum on the street to the white-collar guy." In corroboration, a retired CIA agent vaguely discussed the use of such personnel to be used as "plants" or "chameleons" for the purpose of infiltrating a designated group, gathering information and/or injecting an ulterior agenda.

There are an inordinate amount of alters in the victim/survivor, with numerous back-up programs, mirrors and shadows. A division of light-side (good) and dark-side (bad) alters are interwoven in the mind and rotate on an axis. One of the main internal structures, (of which there are many) within the system is shaped like a double-helix, consisting of seven levels. Each system has an internal programmer who oversees the "gatekeepers" (demons?) who grant or deny entry into the different rooms. A few of the internal images predominately seen by victims/survivors are trees, the Cabalistic "Tree of Life," with adjoining root systems, infinity loops, ancient symbols and letters, spider webs, mirrors or glass shattering, masks, castles, mazes, demons/monsters/aliens, sea shells, butterflies, snakes, ribbons, bows, flowers, hour glasses, clocks, robots, chain-of-command diagrams and/or schematics of computer circuitry boards.

Bloodlines and Twinning

A majority of the victims/survivors come from multi-generational Satanic families (bloodlines) and are ostensibly programmed "to fulfill their destiny as the chosen ones or chosen generations" (a term coined by Mengele at Auschwitz). Some are adopted out to families of similar origin. Others used in this neurological nightmare are deemed as the "expendable ones" (non-bloodliners), usually coming from orphanages, foster-care homes, or incestuous families with a long history of pedophilia. There also appears to be a pattern of family members affiliated with government or military intelligence agencies.

Many of the abused come from families who use Catholicism, Mormonism, or charismatic Christianity as a "front" for their abominable activities (though members of other religious groups are also involved.) Victims/survivors generally respond more readily to a rigid religious (dogmatic, legalistic) hierarchical structure because it parallels their base programming. Authority usually goes unchallenged, as their will has been usurped through subjective and command-oriented conditioning.

Physical identification characteristics on victims/survivors often include multiple electrical prod scars and/or resultant moles on their skin. A few may have had various parts of their bodies mutilated by knives, branding irons, or needles. Butterfly or occult tattoos are also common. Generally, bloodliners are less likely to have the subsequent markings, as their skin is to "remain pure and unblemished."

The ultimate purpose of the sophisticated manipulation of these individuals may sound unrealistic, depending upon our interpretive understanding of the physical and spiritual realms. The deepest and darkest alters within bloodliners are purported to be dormant until the "AntiChrist" is revealed. These "New World Order" alters supposedly contain call-back orders and instructions to train and/or initiate a large influx of people (possibly clones or "soulless ones"). thereby stimulating social control programs into the new millennium.

Non-biological "twinning" is yet another bizarre feature observed within MONARCH programming. For instance, two young non-related children would be ceremoniously initiated in a magical "soul-bonding" ritual so they might be "inseparably paired for eternity" (possibly another Mengele connection?). They essentially share two halves of the programmed information, making them interdependent upon one another. Paranormal phenomenon such as astral projection, telepathy, ESP, etc. appear to be more pronounced between those who have undergone this process.

Levels of MONARCH Programming[12]

ALPHA. Regarded as "general" or regular programming within the base control personality; characterized by extremely pronounced memory retention, along with substantially increased physical strength and visual acuity. Alpha programming is accomplished through deliberately subdividing the victim's personality which, in essence, causes a left brain - right brain division; allowing for a programmed union of L and R through neuron pathway stimulation.

BETA. Referred to as "sexual" programming. This programming eliminates all learned moral convictions and stimulates the primitive sexual instincts, devoid of inhibitions. "Cat" alters may come out at this level.

DELTA. This is known as "killer" programming, originally developed for training special agents or elite soldiers (i.e. Delta Force, First Earth Battalion, Mossad, etc.) in covert operations. Optimal adrenal output and controlled aggression is evident. Subjects are devoid of fear; very systematic in carrying out their assignment. Self-destruct or suicide instructions are layered in at this level.

THETA. Considered to be "psychic" programming. Bloodliners (those coming from multigenerational Satanic families) were determined to exhibit a greater propensity for having telepathic abilities than did non-bloodliners. Due to its evident limitations, however, various forms of electronic mind control systems were developed and introduced, namely, biomedical human telemetry devices (brain implants), directed-energy lasers using microwaves and/or electromagnetics. It is reported these are used in conjunction with highly-advanced computers and sophisticated satellite tracking systems.

OMEGA. A "self-destruct" form of programming, also known as "Code Green." The corresponding behaviors include suicidal tendencies and/or self-mutilation. This program is generally activated when the victim/survivor begins therapy or interrogation and too much memory is being recovered.

GAMMA. Another form of system protection is through "deception" programming, which elicits misinformation and misdirection. This level is intertwined with demonology and tends to regenerate itself at a later time if inappropriately deactivated.

Methods and Components

The initial process begins with creating dissociation within the subject, usually occurring from the time of birth to about six years. This is primarily achieved through the use of electroshock (ECT) and is at times performed even when the child is in the mother's womb. Due to the severe trauma induced through ECT, sexual abuse and other methods, the mind splits off into alternate personalities from the core. Formerly referred to as Multiple Personality Disorder, it is presently recognized as Dissociative Identity Disorder and is the basis for MONARCH programming. Further conditioning of the victim's mind is enhanced through hypnotism, double-bind coercion, pleasure-pain reversals, food, water, sleep and sensory deprivation, along with various drugs which alter certain cerebral functions.

The next stage is to embed and compress detailed commands or messages within the specified alter. This is achieved through the use of hi-tech headsets, in conjunction with computer-driven generators which emit inaudible sound waves or harmonics that affect the RNA covering of neuron pathways to the subconscious and unconscious mind. "Virtual Reality" optical devices are sometimes used simultaneously with the harmonic generators projecting pulsating colored lights, subliminals and split-screen visuals. High voltage electroshock is then used for memory dissolution.

Programming is updated periodically and reinforced through visual, auditory and written mediums. Some of the first programming themes included the Wizard of Oz and Alice and Wonderland, both heavily saturated with occultic symbolism. Many of the recent Disney movies and cartoons are used in a two-fold manner: desensitizing the majority of the population, using subliminals and neuro-linguistic programming, and deliberately constructing specific triggers and keys for base programming of highly-impressionable MONARCH children.

[paragraphs omitted in original]

Music plays an instrumental role in programming, through combinations of variable tones, rhythms and words. Frightmeister Stephen King's numerous novels and subsequent movies, are purported by credible sources to be used for such villainous purposes. One of his latest books, Insomnia, features a picture of King with the trigger phrase "WE NEVER SLEEP," (indicative of someone with MPD/ DID) below an all-seeing eye.

[paragraphs omitted in original]

[Recent informative mind control related movies: Total Recall; Brainstorm; Long Kiss Goodnight; Johnny Mnemonic; Conspiracy Theory; Mindfield; 12 Monkeys; Barbwire; Fortress; Trancers III; Jacob's Ladder; Videodrome; Circuitry Man; Lawnmower Man; Color of Night; Blade; Enemy of the State; Adventures of Baron Von Munchhausen; and Ninth Configuration. Older movies include: Altered States; Slepford Wives; and the classic Manchurian Candidate.]

Programmers and Places

It's difficult to figure out who the original programmer of this satanic project was, due to the substantial amount of disinformation and cross-contamination propagated by the "powers that be." The two that went by the color-coded name of Dr. Green are a Jewish doctor named Dr. Gruenbaum, who supposedly collaborated with the Nazis during WWII, and Dr. Josef Mengele, whose trademark of cold-blooded and calculating brutality has not only scarred the souls of survivors from Aushwitz, but also a countless number of victims throughout the world. Mengele's direct involvement at the infamous Aushwitz concentration camp was suspiciously downplayed during the Nuremberg Trials, and consequently no intensified effort by the U.S. and its allies was directed toward his capture.[13]

As a means to confuse serious investigators as to his whereabouts, U.S. officials would report Mengele being a non-threatening recluse in Paraguay or Brazil, or that he was simply dead (the "Angel of

Death" miraculously must have come back to life at least five different times). His unprecedented research, at the expense of thousands of lives, undoubtedly was a significant bonus to U.S. interests. Besides using the pseudonym of Dr. Green, survivors knew him as Vaterchen (daddy), Schoner Josef (beautiful Joseph), David and Fairchild. A gracefully handsome man of slight stature, Mengele would disarm people with his gentle demeanor, while at other times, he would explode into violent rages.[14]

Other characteristics remembered by survivors were the cadence of his shiny black boots as he paced back and forth and his "I-love-you/I-love-you-not" daisy game. When he pulled off the last daisy petal, he would maliciously torture and kill a small child in front of the other child he was programming. Distraught survivors also recalled being thrown naked into cages with monkeys, who were trained to viciously abuse them. Evidently, Mengele enjoyed reducing people to the level of animals. He also would purposely restrain his victims from crying, screaming, or showing any excessive emotion.

Dr. D. Ewen Cameron, also known as Dr. White, was the former head of the Canadian, American and World Psychiatric Associations. Because of Cameron's extensive experience and credentials, the CIA's Allen Dulles funneled millions of dollars through front organizations like the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology, which Cameron ruthlessly presided over. Experimentations were conducted at several locations in Montreal, mostly at McGill University, St. Mary's Hospital and Allan Memorial Institute.

Besides the conventional methods of psychiatric tyranny, such as electroshock, drug injections and lobotomies, Cameron conceived the technique of "psychic driving," wherein unsuspecting patients were kept in a drug-induced coma for several weeks and administered a regimen of electroshocks, while electronic helmets were strapped to their heads and repetitive auditory messages were transmitted at variable speeds.[15] Many of those exploited were abused children who had been run through the Roman Catholic orphanage system.

Not surprisingly, Dr. Cameron has been conveniently left out of most psychiatric journals. This may have been, in fact, largely due to Project MKULTRA being publicly exposed in 1970, through lawsuits filed by Canadian survivors and their families. The CIA and Canadian government settled out of court so as not to be required to officially admit to any wrongdoing.

A former U.S. Army Lt. Col. in the DIA's Psychological Warfare Division, Michael Aquino, is the latest in a line of alleged government-sponsored sadists. Aquino, an eccentric genius, founded the Temple of Set, an offshoot of Anton LaVey's Church of Satan. His obsession with Nazi pagan rituals and his hypnotic manipulation of people made him an ideal candidate for the position of "Master Programmer." Aquino was connected with the Presidio Army Base daycare scandal, in which he was accused of child molestation. Much to the dismay of the young victims' parents, all charges were dismissed. [sentence omitted]

Heinrich Mueller was another important programmer who went under the code names "Dr. Blue" or "Gog." He apparently has two sons who have carried on the trade. The original "Dr. Black" was apparently Leo Wheeler, the nephew of deceased General Earle G. Wheeler, who was the commander of the Joint Chiefs of Staff during the Vietnam War. Wheeler's protege, E. Hummel, is active in the Northwest, along with W. Bowers (from the Rothschild-bloodline).

Other alleged master mind manipulators, past and present, are: Dr. Sydney Gottlieb, Lt. Col. John Alexander, Richard Dabney Anderson (USN), Dr. James Monroe, Dr. John Lilly, Lt. Comdr. Thomas Narut, Dr. William Jennings Bryan, Dr. Bernard L. Diamond, Dr. Martin Orne, Dr. Louis J. West, Dr. Robert J. Lifton, Dr. Harris Isbel and Col. Wilson Green.

In order to keep MKULTRA from being easily detected, the CIA segmented its subprojects into specialized fields of research and development at universities, prisons, private laboratories and hospitals. Of course, they were rewarded generously with government grants and miscellaneous funding. The names and locations of some of the major institutions involved in MONARCH programming experimentation were/are: Cornell, Duke, Princeton, UCLA, University of Rochester, MIT, Georgetown University Hospital, Maimonides Medical Center, St Elizabeth's Hospital (Washington, D.C.), Bell Laboratories, Stanford Research Institute, Westinghouse Friendship Laboratories, General Electric, ARCO and Manking Research Unlimited.

The "final product" was/is usually created on military installations and bases, where maximum security is required. Referred to as (re) programming centers or near-death trauma centers, the most heavily identified are: China Lake Naval Weapons Center, The Presidio, Ft. Dietrick, Ft. Campbell, Ft. Lewis, Ft. Hood, Redstone Arsenal, Offutt AFB, Patrick AFB, McClellan AFB, MacGill AFB, Kirkland AFB, Nellis AFB, Homestead AFB, Grissom AFB, Maxwell AFB and Tinker AFB. Other places recognized as major programming sites are Langley Research Center, Los Alamos National Laboratories, Tavistock Institute and areas in or by Mt. Shasta, CA, Lampe, MO and Las Vegas, NV.

Notable Names

One of the first documented cases of a MONARCH secret agent, was that of the voluptuous 1940's model, Candy Jones. The book, The Control of Candy Jones, (Playboy Press) portrays her 12 years of intrigue and suspense as a spy for the CIA. Jones, whose birthname is Jessica Wilcox, apparently fit the physiological profile as to be one of the initial experiments or human guinea pigs under the government's "scientific" project, MKULTRA.

The most publicized case of MONARCH monomania has surfaced through the book TRANCE Formation of America: The True Life Story of a CIA Slave by Cathy O'Brien. On the back cover it emphatically states, "Cathy O'Brien is the only vocal and recovered survivor of the Central Intelligence Agency's Mk-Ultra Project Monarch mind control operation." This documented autobiography contains compelling accounts of O'Brien's years of unrelenting incest and eventual introduction into Project MONARCH by her perverted father. Along with co-author Mark Phillips, her rescuer and deprogrammer, Cathy covers an almost unbelievable array of conspiratorial crime: forced prostitution (white slavery) with those in the upper echelons of world politics, covert assignments as a "drug mule" and courier, and the country-western music industry's relationship with illegal CIA activities.

Paul Bonaci, a courageous survivor who endured almost two decades of degradation under Project MONARCH, has disclosed strong corroborating evidence of widescale crimes and corruption from the municipal/state level all the way up to the White House.[17] He has testified about sexually-abused males selected from Boy's Town in Nebraska and taken to nearby Offutt AFB, where he says they were subjected to intense MONARCH programming, directed mainly by Commander Bill Plemmons and former Lt. Col. Michael Aquino.[18] After thoroughly tormenting the young boys into mindless oblivion, they were used (along with girls) for pornography and prostitution with several of the nation's political and economic power-brokers. Bonaci recalled being transported from the Air Force base via cargo planes to McClelland AFB in California. Along with other unfortunate adolescents and teenagers, he was driven to the elite retreat, Bohemian Grove. The perpetrators took full advantage of these innocent victims, committing unthinkable perversions in order to satisfy their deviant lusts. Some victims were apparently murdered, further traumatizing already terrified and broken children. [The following information is provided by Brice Taylor, at the time of this writing in 1999: Uri Dowbenko wrote an article for Media Bypass magazine (June 1999) where he reports that justice was finally served when a U.S. District Court recently awarded a $1 million settlement to Bonacci, after years of legal aid from his attorney John DeCamp]

An insatiable actress of marginal talent (now deceased), a morally-corrupt TV evangelist, a heralded former Green Beret officer and a popular country-western singer are a few others likely having succumbed to MONARCH madness. Lee Harvey Oswald, Sirhan-Sirhan, Charlie Manson, John Hinckley, Jr., Mark Chapman, David Koresh, Tim McVeigh and John Salvi are some notable names of infamy, strongly suspected of being pawns who were spawned by MKULTRA.

Deprogrammers and Exposers

Dr. Corydon Hammond, a Psychologist from the University of Utah, delivered a stunning lecture entitled "Hypnosis in MPD: Ritual Abuse" at the Fourth Annual Eastern Regional Conference on Abuse and Multiple Personality, June 25, 1992 in Alexandria, Virginia. He essentially confirmed the suspicions of the attentive crowd of mental health professionals, wherein a certain percentage of their clients had undergone mind control programming in an intensively systematic manner. Hammond alluded to the Nazi connection, military and CIA mind control research, Greek letter and color programming and specifically mentioned the "Monarch Project" in relation to a form of [operant] conditioning.

Shortly after his groundbreaking speech, he received death threats. Not wanting to jeopardize the safety of his family, Dr. Hammond stopped disseminating any follow-up information, until recently.

[paragraph omitted in original]

New Orleans therapist Valerie Wolf introduced two of her patients before the President's Committee on Human Radiation Experiments on March 15, 1995 in Washington, DC. The astonishing testimony made by these two brave women included accounts of German doctors, torture, drugs, electroshock, hypnosis and rape, besides being exposed to an undetermined amount of radiation. Both Wolf and her patients stated they recovered the memories of this abuse, without regression or hypnosis techniques.[19] Wolf presently devotes much of her time to counseling such survivors. A former labor attorney for Atlantic Richfield Co., David E. Rosenbaum, conducted a nine-year investigation (1983-1992) concerning allegations of physical torture and coercive conditioning of numerous employees at an ARCO plant in Monaca, PA.[20] His clients, Jerry L. Dotey and Ann White, were victims of apparent radiation exposure; but as Mr. Rosenbaum probed deeper in the subsequent interview sessions, a "Pandora's Box" was unveiled. His most astonishing conclusion was that Jerry Dotey and Ann White were likely the offspring of Adolf Hitler, based in part on the uncanny resemblance from photos (facial features, bone structure and size were taken into consideration). Rosenbaum also states, "They both exhibit feelings and experiences that indicate they are twins." Dotey and White were allegedly subjected to torture of many kinds while under drug-induced hypnosis, with each one undergoing at least three training techniques by plant physicians.

Each victim was trained to enter into a hypnotic state upon the occurrence of specific stimuli, usually involving a "cue" word or phrase and trained to "remember to forget" what transpired in the hypnotic state. They were repeatedly subjected to identical stimulus-response sequences to produce nearly automatic reactions to the particular status. MKULTRA veterans Dr. Bernard Diamond, Dr. Martin Orne and Dr. Josef Mengele regularly visited the ARCO plant, according to Rosenbaum. The special conditioning of Dotey and White was intended for the artificial creation of dual German personalities. Rosenbaum, who is Jewish, has maintained a deep friendship with the two, despite the seemingly precarious circumstances.

Other renowned therapists involved in deprogramming are Cynthia Byrtus, Pamela Monday, Steve Ogilvie, Bennett Braun, Jerry Mungadze and Colin Ross. Some Christian counselors have been able to eliminate parts of the programming with limited success. Journalists who have recently expounded on the subject matter in exemplary fashion are Walter Bowart: Operation Mind Control, Jon Rappoport: US. Government Mind-Control Experiments on Children, and Alex Constantine: Psychic

Dictatorship in the USA [and Virtual Government, plus author/researchers Alan Scheflin & Edward Opton, Jr.: The Mind Manipulators, Harvey Weinstein, M.D.: Psychiatry and the CIA: Victims of Mind Control, and Jim Keith: Mind Control, World Control and his latest book Mass Control: Engineering Human Consciousness.]

Conclusion

The most incriminating statement to date made by a government official as to the possible existence of Project MONARCH was extracted by Anton Chaitkin, a writer for the publication, The New Federalist. When former CIA Director William Colby was asked directly, "What about monarch?" he replied angrily and ambiguously, "We stopped that between the late 1960's and the early 1970's." Suffice to say that society, in its apparent state of cognitive dissonance, is generally in denial of the overwhelming evidence of this multifarious conspiracy. Numerous victims/survivors of Project MONARCH are in desperate need of help. However, the great majority of people are too preoccupied with themselves to show any genuine compassion toward these severely wounded individuals. Apathy has taken over the minds of the masses, who choose to exist within the comforts of this world. Reality has thus become obscured by relativism and selfishness.

Although there has been some progress in deprogramming and reintegrating therapies, a much greater problem needs to be rectified. The Holy Bible addresses this problem as the fragmentation of the soul (Ezekiel 13:20). A spiritual restoration is what is truly needed (Psalm 23:3) ... [sentence omitted]

[paragraph omitted in original]

Statistically, the road to recovery for these survivors of unimaginable depravity is a long and tedious one, but God is the ultimate healer and only within his time, through His strength and by His grace, can the captives be set free (Isaiah 61:1).

Endnotes

1. David L. Carrico, *The Egyptian-Masonic-Satanic Connection*, 1992.
2. Walter H. Bowart, *Operation Mind Control*, Flatland Editions, 1994, p. 216.
3. Martin Cannon, "Mind Control and the American Government," Prevailing Winds Research, 1994, p. 19.
4. Linda Hunt, *Secret Agenda*, St. Martin's Press, 1991.
5. *Final Report of the Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations*, U.S. Senate, April 1976, p. 387.
6. Ibid, p. 390.
7. John Marks, *The Search For The Manchurian Candidate*, Times Books, 1979, pp. 60-61.
8. *Final Report of the Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations*, U.S. Senate, April 1976, p. 391.
9. Mark Phillips and Cathy O'Brien, "Project Monarch," 1993.
10. Barbara G. Walker, *The Woman's Dictionary of Symbols and Sacred Objects*, Harper Collins, 1988.
11. Marshall Cavendish, *Man, Myth and Magic*, 1995.
12. Dr. Corydon Hammond, "The Greenbaum Speech," 1992; Mark Phillips and Cathy O'Brien, *Project Monarch Programming Definitions*, 1993.
13. Gerald L. Posner, *Mengele: The Complete Story*, McGraw-Hill, 1986.
14. Lucette Matalon Lagnado, *Dr. Josef Mengele and the Untold Story of the Twins of Auschwitz*, Morrow, 1991.
15. Gordon Thomas, *Journey Into Madness: The Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse*, Bantam Books, 1989.
16. [omitted]

17. John DeCamp, *The Franklin Cover-Up, Child Abuse, Satanism and Murder In Nebraska*, AWT Inc., 1992.
18. Anton Chaitkin, "Franklin Witnesses Implicate FBI and U.S. Elites in Torture and Murder of Children," *The New Federalist*, 1993.
19. Jon Rappoport, "CIA Experiments with Mind Control on Children," *Perceptions Magazine*, September/October 1995, p. 56.
20. David E. Rosenbaum, Esq., *First Draft: Overview of Investigation of the Group*, 1983-1993.

Paranoia: The Conspiracy Reader
Fall 1996, Vol. 4, No. 3, Issue 14.

Brice Taylor - Thanks for the Memories

Preview by Pamela J. Monday, Ph.D:

MANUFACTURING THE MIND CONTROLLED SLAVE

"If the child has survived the initial trials, and if they also prove intelligent but malleable, then if the programming goes right, a very, very small infant that has been conditioned from day one is a powerful weapon, because if you get a mind that early, as anyone knows, you can, 9 times out of 10, I would say, determine the general behaviors of that child and the adult that they will become."
-- Gloria"-- A former patient, and mind control subject

My first experience with a patient who had been involved in mind control experimentation began when "Gloria" initially called me, looking for a therapist who accepted Medicare insurance. She said she had been sexually abused as a child and had been in therapy periodically for a number of years. I was not a Medicare provider, but agreed to see her temporarily while she looked for someone else. On the day of our first appointment, I walked into the waiting room to greet her and asked for "Gloria."

A woman looked up from a corner, and slowly, shyly, with head lowered and eyes looking up, shuffled toward me. In a child-like voice, she held both of hands together tightly, hunched her shoulders and said, with a sweet smile, "Gloria asked me to come; I'm Sally." She then twirled on her toes and pointed to a plant on the table, saying again in a child-like voice, "That sure is pretty!" Puzzled, I smiled and asked her to follow me to my office. During the course of that one hour, 4 different personalities, with different ages and genders, presented themselves to me. We would be talking about some topic, and suddenly, a switch would occur, and someone else's voice, mannerisms, and way of sitting and speaking would present. It was as though 4 different people were in my room, although all were housed in the same body! Although I had heard of Multiple Personality Disorder, or MPD, before, I had never seen it, and had been told in graduate school that it was very rare. I remember thinking after Gloria left, that if she were faking it (as patients are often accused of doing by clinicians who don't understand) she would have to have the mimicking abilities of a Billy Crystal, and the acting abilities of a Meryl Streep, to consistently stay in character for each of these personalities! For, before we were through, I had met 27 'inside people' (also referred to as alters) within Gloria, and learned about the names and roles of literally hundreds more!

Since that introduction to MPD (now known as DID, or Dissociative Identity Disorder), I have worked with dozens of patients with that diagnosis, and have consulted with other clinicians and their patients so often, I have lost count. These patients have taught me so very much about the human mind, and have challenged me to learn about topics I have never thought to explore. In my efforts to convince myself, "surely what these people are saying cannot be true," I have researched and studied both scientific and popular literature in a variety of fields, and have time and again, come to the conclusion that what they are reporting could, indeed, be true. The historical background, technology, methodology, motivation, funding, and opportunity are all in place. My task now is to help others understand and believe.

I'd like to define some terms that you will hear when learning about people with "multiple personalities." Dissociation is a key term that refers to the ability of the mind to "cut off" a part of itself from conscious awareness. An everyday example of this ability, which we all have in varying degrees, is the experience of driving down the freeway and missing the exit you take everyday because you are thinking about something else. You "come to" an exit or two later and realize you have missed your exit,

even noticing that you "saw" the exit sign but it didn't "register" within you to take it! Part of your mind was dissociated, or separated from, the real world around you while you focused on internal thoughts. Another example is reading every word on a page in a book, then realizing you had not comprehended a single word, because you were thinking of something else. All of us have had these experiences.

This ability of the mind to detach from itself is a brilliant coping mechanism that the mind uses in situations of extreme threat as a way to protect itself from the full awareness of a traumatic situation. You may recall reading about Vietnam veterans, who had amnesia for their war experiences, but would have difficulty coping with life. They would feel detached or estranged from others; they would have difficulty feeling any kind of feelings, except for outbursts of anger; they would have difficulty concentrating, would feel anxious and on edge without knowing why, and would have an exaggerated startle response (over-responsive to stimuli). These are all characteristics of the diagnosis "Post Traumatic Stress Disorder" or PTSD. In addition, these veterans would have sudden memories of the horrors of war. These memories would be "triggered" by something that reminded their unconscious mind of the war experience (for example, the sound of a car backfiring, reminding them of gunfire). In these sudden memories, they felt as if they were actually re-living the experience, smelling, tasting, feeling, hearing and seeing in vivid detail everything they went through during an actual battle. These memories, complete with all the sensory memories, are called flashbacks. During those flashbacks, the veteran would be out of touch with the reality around them; they would no longer know it was 1985 and they were in America; they would think it was 1968, and they were in the jungle, reliving a particular battle. They were totally dissociated from reality, and were reliving a past reality that was now only in their minds. Later, in processing these experiences, the soldiers would report that during the actual battle, they would feel very detached, even numb, from what was happening, even though they may have been wounded themselves. At times, they reported feeling as though they were standing outside of themselves, observing themselves going through the trauma of the battle, but not feeling anything. They were dissociated from their reality. But their brain was recording all of the experience, exactly as it occurred, and those "mind and body" memories were being re-experienced during a flashback.

When someone is exposed to a "psychologically distressing event that is outside the range of usual human experience ... is usually experienced with intense fear, terror, and helplessness," (DSM III) then dissociation usually occurs as a way for the mind to process the event without overwhelming the person. Parts of the experience (either knowledge of what happened; the emotional feelings associated with the event; the sensory experiences of the event, or the behaviors expressed during the event) become separated from one's conscious awareness. The more frequent the trauma, the more dissociation occurs. This phenomenon is why children who have been severely sexually abused and tortured, are amnesic for those events. In a landmark university study by Linda Williams hundreds of children brought into a hospital emergency room who received medical confirmation of sexual abuse, were contacted at intervals throughout a 20-year period. Only one-third of these children, when reaching adulthood, retained conscious memories of the sexual abuse -- all others had repressed, or dissociated, those awful memories. Such is the power of the mind to block out painful experiences.

During times of torture and extreme physical and emotional pain, the mind is in an altered state, as it dissociates itself from reality. But there are other ways to alter the mindstate, for example, by sensory deprivation, or meditation, whereby one focuses internally, with sensory stimulation from the outside minimized or eliminated. You may recall in the 1980's that "float tanks" were popular. In a float tank you are floating on very heavily salted water; you are enclosed in a totally darkened metal tank, and you float for an hour without any sensory stimulation. Many people felt claustrophobic, and couldn't take it. But if you could stand it, you would eventually report having an euphoric experience. If you had been hooked up to a brain wave machine (EEG), your brain would no longer be producing beta waves (the brain state associated with usual waking activity). Instead you would be in a theta state, the state associated with deep relaxation, as when you are just about ready to fall asleep (the twilight state). In

this state, the brain produces lots of endorphins, the body's natural "feel good" chemicals that give you a profound sense of well-being. It is important to note that this twilight state is associated with the ability to rapidly absorb and learn information. Without the "filtering" mechanism of the conscious waking mind, information seen or heard "pours" into the subconscious mind. Biofeedback expert Thomas Budzynski of the University of Colorado Medical Center reports, "We take advantage of the fact that the twilight state, between waking and sleep, has these properties of uncritical acceptance of verbal material, or almost any material it can process; it is in such "altered" states of consciousness that a lot of work gets done very quickly." (For much more information about brain research and technology associated with producing altered states, read the fascinating book Mega Brain, by Michael Hutchison.) Other methods used to alter brainwave states include, but are not limited to, rapidly flashing lights, drugs, phased sound waves, negative ions (electromagnetic energy fields), electroshock, alterations in gravity in the cerebellum (spinning), microwave emitters, and lasers.

It is vitally important to understand about dissociation, because in learning about how someone's mind can actually be controlled by someone else, you must understand how it is possible to program the human mind as you would a computer. "Programming" is a fairly recent term in the history of mind control (and is of course associated with computer technology). Perhaps you'd recognize it better as "brainwashing." In the POW camps, captors would refer to "freezing," a term used to destroy the person's identity. Using food and sleep deprivation, isolation, torture, chronic assault on a person's values, and instilling total dependence on the captor's for survival, a person's whole sense of self would be destroyed. They would be totally helpless, broken, with no will of their own left. They would then be ready for the "brainwashing," or "refreezing" whereby a new value system and a new identity would be put in through reward and punishment, conditioning or "programming" that person to believe or do only what the captors wanted them to believe or do. (For more information on brainwashing, including USA and Canadian government experimentation, read: Brain Control by Eliot Vallenstein; Deep Self by John C. Lilly; Inside the Black Room by Jack Vernon; In Search of the Manchurian Candidate by John Marks; Journey Into Madness by Gordon Thomas; I Swear by Apollo -- author unknown -- published by Canadian publisher.)

Just as it is possible to break down a person in order to create someone you can control (by getting them to do anything you want them to do), so it is possible to program a part of a person's mind (a dissociated part that is split off, by trauma or other means, from connection with reality). You can "teach" that part of the mind to do what you want it to do without the part of the mind that is conscious and aware knowing what's going on. Hence, people with multiple personalities report that they "lose time," whereby they don't remember where they have been or what they have been doing. Here is how a patient, repeatedly sadistically sexually abused as a child, explains it:

> "Dissociation is a way of escaping the intolerable. I'm sure it happened first during the trauma itself, and was a sanity-saving way of dealing with overwhelming physical pain as well as the psychological pain of betrayal. For me it took the form of physical numbness and cold, and to this day, when I dissociate, I most often go numb. First my hands and feet go; I can't feel them, and if my eyes are closed, I have no sense of where they are in space. Then the numbness in my face starts. I can't feel my lips or cheeks. When I dissociate badly, the whole body goes and I feel and move like a block of wood... Worse than the physical dissociation is what happens mentally while the physical numbness is in place. I guess the only thing I can say in comparison is that it's the mental equivalent of white noise, or radio static, that can leave me blank-faced and staring into space. The thoughts that are there whip through at the speed of light with no coherence, organization or form. I get very confused. It can range from being a little vague and spacey to full white out where I don't see or hear much. This is really dangerous if I am driving. There have been some episodes where I don't remember getting someplace. I also sometimes just "clock out" and lose time. When I come back to myself I may not be immediately conscious that I've lost hours." – Penny

During that "dissociated" time, when she "clocks out," what is going on? Another part of the mind has taken over; in Penny's case, another personality is "in charge of" the body. This personality (or alter) interacts with others and carries out certain tasks, but when Penny "comes to" she has no knowledge of

this other part of the self. As her therapist, I have talked to this other "person" inside (the person is really only a part of her mind) and I know the personality characteristics of this person. I know that this part of Penny responds to the name "Diane," she is outspoken and can get angry if challenged (as opposed to Penny, who is meek and allows others to tell her what to do). Diane also has a peculiar way of tilting her head, almost in a flirty, cocky manner, something I have never seen Penny do, as she is much more rigid and controlled, both in posture and feelings.

How do these dissociated parts get created? And how did "Diane" come to be? And why? To answer these questions, I will let a programmer herself tell you. This person was used from infancy in the United States Government mind control experiments, and her job as a youth and adult was to "split off" parts of others' minds in order to program those parts to do what the experimenters wanted them to do. By programming, I mean that the human, in a dissociated or altered mind state, has been systematically and deliberately taught lessons, attitudes, beliefs, behaviors and responses to specific cues ("triggers") so as to respond on command in ways that benefit the person/groups doing the programming. Just as Ivan Pavlov's dogs were taught to salivate to the sound of a bell, in anticipation of the meat that was delivered soon after, so human beings can be taught to respond in infinite ways to cues in their environment that "trigger" responses. Assume that first, the child has been exposed to torture and hideous psychological and physical abuse to the extent that the child has learned to dissociate into altered states of mind. (Remember as well that current electronic technology -- as mentioned in Mega Brain -- makes torturing children obsolete, in that trauma is no longer necessary to access altered brain states -- thus, programming people is much "cleaner" and easier to do.) Here's how they do the programming:

Techniques on 'Creating' New Children

"Daub fingertip size glob of vaseline or K-Y jelly on pressure points -- wrists, inner elbows, behind knees, under ears. Take ends of 2 wires (black and red are easiest, negative/positive easier identified) with metal attachments (round, copper, holes in center) and tape with surgical tape on top of vaseline. Calibration - watch for muscular reactions, eye glazing, sweating, involuntary loss of bladder control, bowel control. Want to give enough of a current w/o being too much. Want child to remain alert. Words, codes given. Assignments given. 'Yes, one finger; No, raise two; Confused -- raise right hand.' Clarify instructions. If still confusion, time to stop, take a break. Do not allow any contact between patient and others until cycle is completed. Do not, under any circumstances, offer juices, snacks, etc. which could be construed as a 'reward' until the cycle is completed. Check carotid pulse for significant elevation in blood pressure. Do not wish to affect a heart attack. Heart attacks can occur in children. (Children are outfitted with diapers before the sessions begin, are also taken to the bathroom beforehand. Keeps down unnecessary interruptions). Keep voice on same level at ALL times. Not hurried, not raised or lowered. Same pace at all times. Droning, hypnotic effect. Helps to stabilize heart rate.

"When instructions given to child, and received, then and only then give reward of name for identification purposes. Code phrases -- 'well done,' 'very good,' or 'you did real good.' Avoid hugs, touch, any other forms of physical contact. Eye contact necessary, stabilizing. Allow alter-state to form place of safety within, encourage alter to describe internal surroundings. (All is taped, voice-activated, recorded later in the computer records for others to refer to).

"One response is 'I want my mommy.' Necessary to remind child that, 1) 'Mommy is dead,' 2) 'Mommy brought you here' (only use if true), 3) 'Mommy is right outside -- you can see her as soon as you've finished,' or 4) 'Mommy told me to tell you to be a good boy/girl.' Room is kept low lighted for maximum effect. They prefer only one person (interventionist) to be with the child. Less distractions. They also prefer it to be a person the child will not be able to ID on a day-to-day basis in 'outside' regular activities.

"Sessions can vary greatly, depending on the time allowance, expense allowance, urgency, etc. Occasionally exceptions are made for disciplinary measures. May (in that case) be an all-nighter. Keeping the room dark also helps simulate nighttime, which is conducive to their 'rehabilitation.'

"The children are taught responses according to Pavlov's theories -- inpracticum. This basically involves uses of 'triggers' usually found in the subject's natural, normal home-based environment.

"Audiological: Grandfather clocks, church chimes set for certain hours of the day/night are the most preferred. Long-running TV programs are effective on short-time bases (due to the fact that they may change times, etc.). Dogs that bark at certain times of night are also effective; revving of an engine; car door opening and shutting; footsteps outside bedroom window. Preferable to use natural sights and sounds due to need not to arouse suspicions of any household members not actively involved.

"Visual: Phases of the moon, clock-faces (preferably digital for younger children), lights in most neighbors' houses turning off, moon rays coming through window in darkness of night (full moon), and fireflies can be very effective and seemingly harmless trigger.

"Other: nursery rhymes, flags, date on a calendar, religious holidays, hand signals, words, phrases, eye winks; virtually anything can be used as a trigger.

"Step #1 is invasion, step #2 is intervention. Once the first plateau of the cyclic invasionary process is completed, the child will be 'tested' -- again in-office, using a number of visual/audiological sight/sound external invasion techniques to record the level of response of the subject (nicknamed 'knee-jerk' response). This can be a valuable tool in assessing the cost-and-time-effectiveness of this particular technique on this particular subject. Those children who respond more spontaneously are considered to be higher-value prospects for future experimentation." -- Janus (the programming alter's name)

Are you beginning to understand how scientific principles and techniques are used to program people? Here's more from "Janus":

> "I personally was assigned 12 babies as an older child. I was about 7 or 8 when I was first introduced to them all in a room. They were all children of families. So they were long-term projects. I programmed other children, too. I was found to have a knack for trouble-shooting -- figuring how what went 'haywire' and 'reprogramming' them. I didn't try to memorize the systems. That wasn't my job. My job was to CREATE alter personalities. There were other people who were more trained in the specific skills of teaching the alters specific jobs. Once an alter was created, and trained to come out in response to a trigger, then they had to learn their jobs. Sometimes I would visit different locations and help train others how to train the children."

Recall how I told you that technology is available that allows massive amount of learning in an altered state to occur? Patients have drawn pictures of and described in detail very sophisticated electronic equipment used in programming. When I first discovered the book Mega Brain, I was astonished to see some of the very machines that my patients had described, years before the book was published. Similarly, patients had described virtual reality machines used in training alters (dissociated parts) long before that technology was presented to the public. And even before machines were used in programming, enough was known through secret experimentation on human beings, that experimenters knew humans were capable of memorizing enormous amounts of information when in an altered state. In that theta brainwave state, we have access to an "inner encyclopedia" of all that we have ever learned or experienced. Thus when patients tell us of their "photographic memories" and are able to recite verbatim seemingly endless scripts, it is a phenomenon that is very real and very understandable, if you can know how the brain works.

This knowledge will also help you understand how programmers use audio and videotapes and movies to confuse people as to what is reality and what is not. In an altered state, people are forced to watch movies and listen to tapes that form what are called "screen memories" that hide or distort the memories of what actually happened to the person. If a person does begin to recall memories of abuse,

or memories of information that is supposed to be buried so deeply in the unconscious that it never reaches conscious awareness (such as knowledge of abusers, the particulars of how people are programmed and abused, or top secret information ferried to others), then the screen memories (also known as "scramble programs") pop up. When someone begins to tell tales that others recognize as the plot of a movie or television show (I heard the "plots" of the X-files from patients long before the television show existed!), they can be discredited and not believed as others say "oh, she's just seen the movie and is remembering that."

If any of the readers are still doubtful about whether mind control really exists, I invite you to read the public transcripts of the hearing by the Senate Committee on Radiation Experiments that was held on April 15, 1997. On that date, Valerie Wolfe (a therapist from New Orleans) and her patient testified before the Senate committee about the mind control experiments that are still being conducted in our country. They were allowed to testify because, even though they were reporting mind control, rather than radiation experimentation, the high-level people named as conducting the experiments were many of the same names that had been exposed as doing the radiation experiments. When they finished testifying, Valerie reports, "you could hear a pin drop." It was not in the mandate of that committee to investigate the mind control experimentation; but the Committee did formally issue a request to the President that a thorough investigation be conducted. The transcript of this hearing is riveting; no one can tell the story more convincingly that those who have been through it. As you read Sue Ford's story, keep in mind these things that I have written. Know that thousands of people have come forth with information about these abuses.

"If people truly want to combat this phenomenon, it must be brought out into the public; it must be brought out into the light of day, and it must be done so very publicly so as to protect the people coming forth. It cannot be combated just on a national level, because it is international in nature. Governments work in collusion with other governments throughout the world; people who want power work in collusion with others; they use each other to gain social, economic and political power." -- Dr. Green (a programming alter)

Pamela J. Monday, Ph.D.

Brice Taylor - Thanks for the Memories

Insights by Mary Lewis, LCSW:

AWAKENING TO THE REALITIES OF MIND CONTROL

I was born in the Land of Lincoln, following the war to end all wars, in 1947. It was a time of new hope, and as a baby boomer born to a family of educators, I was taught to believe in God, motherhood, apple-pie and the red, white, and blue: America was beautiful. I was raised in a conservative, traditional home, the second oldest child in a family of seven children. We practiced the Catholic Faith by tradition, and we children attended the local parochial school when one was available. There was no physical or sexual abuse in my childhood, so of course I was unaware of its existence. Because the media had not yet begun to play out the truth of such things, I actually reached late adolescence secure in the knowledge that the world was a very safe place in which to be.

I met the man of my dreams as a senior in college, and we married after graduation. I look back over those years and I marvel at the simplicity of our life then. There was nothing to fear, except of course the threat of some awful communist country again trying to mess with the United States. I truly lived my life believing in our government. In 1985 I began to realize that a new career might be in the making, as I saw my children growing into their own and myself responding more and more to requests for help by various troubled people. I decided to go back to school and get a Masters in Social Work.

During my undergraduate work, a professor discussed incest briefly, and then with some disdain, assured us that we would probably never see such a thing, since it only occurred in the "Hills of Kentucky." I believed him. The idea of such a horrible thing happening to another human being never crossed my mind again for many years. During my masters program, I again received no information about sexual abuse, or for that matter, any other abuse. I did not learn about addictions. I learned about research, and how to do it. That is an over-simplification of my experience, but suffice it to say, it did not prepare me for what I was to learn in the field of social work as I came to know it.

I was assigned an internship as a unit social worker in a freestanding psychiatric hospital. Thus began my real education. In October of that year, I experienced a poignant moment, branded in my mind. One of the nurses on the unit was commenting on the unusually high number of sexual abuse cases we had on the unit, when another nurse commented, "Oh, didn't you know this is borderline season?" I was shocked to hear such a statement, but it was a long time before I understood the full implications of that remark.

Following my internship, I was then employed as the unit social worker at this hospital. It was here that I began to hear bizarre stories of satanic ritual abuse from several of the patients. We also saw several cases of self-mutilation, something I sincerely did not know ever happened, much less in such massive numbers. Cutting, burning, using acid to burn the skin, even one patient who purposely put a screw in her leg and let it get infected. This was all new to me. I didn't know what to make of the ritual abuse stories; they were extremely serious in nature, and beyond my ability to believe. I had never heard of such a thing, and yet, hearing the same type of thing over and over from so many different patients, confused me. Something was most certainly not right, but I still had no idea what was really going on.

As I began my private practice, I began to hear more and more stories related to horrible, ritualistic, disgusting abuse. One particular case was most disturbing. This person was most articulate about what had happened to her. Her childhood saga would be food for Stephen King. I was still confused and concerned about how I could be hearing so many similar things from such a diverse population of people.

My belief system did not include even the possibility of such trauma, and yet the possibility that it might be true started to seep into my mind. Over a period of a year and a half, I had three different clients draw pictures for me, talk to me, and cry to me about the horrors of what happened to them while visiting Disney World. They all three drew pictures, explained details and were horrified at what they had endured at the most wonderful of rides "It's a Small World." This was my family's favorite ride, in fact we so enjoyed Disney World, we had taken our children two years in a row when they were younger. So, indeed I was shocked, and scared when I began to hear such things that were so similar, from people that did not know each other. Better yet, I was still extremely skeptical. I did not want to believe that it was possible. I did not want to give up my dream world. I did not want to change my way of thinking.

I acquired Brice Taylor's first book, STARSHINE: One Woman's Valiant Escape From Mind Control, at a conference where she was speaking. As I began to read her story, I actually felt sick, because so much of what she was describing in the book was so similar to what I was hearing from others. A client I had could have written the book, and yet, I knew this client had told me her story several years before the publishing of STARSHINE. Still, none of this made any sense to me, as the idea of mind control was still a very far-fetched concept in my mind. I contacted Brice, who told me her real name was Sue Ford, and she and this client made contact, only to discover that they knew a lot of the same people, experienced a lot of the same programming, and endured their own private holocaust. My skepticism was eroded by this time, as I personally witnessed the sharing of this misery.

Although I had to completely alter my life concepts, my belief system, and my purpose in doing my work, I knew I had no choice but to stand beside these courageous people who had lived such lives of horror, and to help them to have hope. The mind control concept made more sense to me than just the ritual abuse alone. I now know that the ritual abuse was just a means to an end.

As I continue to honor these survivors with my belief, I learn more and more about the evil that surrounds us, and the determination of that evil to succeed. It is with the same fervor that my husband and I persevere. No one can change my mind. I know too much now, I have seen too much now, and my only hope is that others of you that read this book will believe her truth and help stop this living nightmare.

I have concluded that the success of the programming depends on the triumph of the assault on the five senses. The programmers use sight, hearing, touch, smell, and taste to alter a child's perceptions. The method used works on the principle of operant conditioning. For example, tones paired with electroshock, in turn wires the commands about these things into the hard drive of the child's mind, in order to control them. Programmers very cleverly use common things and ideas to guarantee that a child will be sure to encounter these things throughout their lifetime, thus assuring control.

The telephone is an example of such programming. A programmed person under mind control is extremely tuned into the telephone. The tones are important, as well as the number of times a phone rings. It is extremely hard for a recovering person to let a phone ring, and often just the ring alone can trigger a panic-attack. The tones played in the act of dialing the telephone can serve as a trigger to mind controlled victims and can be extremely troubling to programmed people. Things that other people take for granted as just a helpful tool, play a frighteningly scary role in the lives of those who were tortured with mind-control.

Certain themes have surfaced throughout the years, which to this day continue to amaze me as I hear them over and over. The Disney Parks, MGM Studios, Disney Movies, Disney characters, and Disney songs have been used in conjunction with the programming. My understanding of this is that using such a familiar and popular theme assures that the program will be triggered easily. To anyone

who is a Disney fan (and who is not), this is probably one of the hardest things to believe. However, sitting where I sit, hearing what I hear, and seeing what I see, I cannot refute this truth anymore.

Certain animals are used in the programming. Dolphins are a common program. Birds are also used to ensure the silence of the programmed person. The child is told that birds can hear what they do, and if they tell, the bird will fly back and tell on them. There is a constant fear of going to jail, as well. One of the ways this is instilled, is the child is forced into participating in some diabolical, criminal act, and then the child is told they are an accomplice. Thus, if they ever tell, they too will go to jail.

Monarch butterflies are also used for programming. There is what is known as the "Monarch Project." Again, I don't purport to understand all of this, I just know that being obsessed with Monarch butterflies is one thing in one client, but to have it reported over and over again becomes suspect.

The programmed people I have worked with seem to have an obsession with their own birthdays. Once in recovery, unless the suicide programs are disconnected, the desire to kill themselves as they remember their past is overwhelming, especially around the time of their birthday, and this has proven true with each individual I see.

Sleep is also an issue with programmed people. They rarely sleep for more than a few hours at a time, or they have bouts where all they want to do is sleep. There are sleep programs, designed to shut down the mind if it starts to remember. This is a serious problem for recovering people, and one that is often written off as mere depression. This is another ploy of the programming; almost any one of the symptoms taken out of context could be attributed to another cause. All this is very cleverly orchestrated.

There is programming associated with childhood games such as the game of LIFE. Played over and over again it is a way of instilling the idea of how their life is to be played out. Grow up, get a job, make babies, make money, live happily ever after, so simple, clean, and coy. Another game reported to me, over and over again is the game "No Place to Run, No Place to Hide." This game was actually physically acted out during the programming. The child was made to run and hide, and then was tracked down and punished. The result being, the child learns they can never get away from this horror.

Certain television programs and actors have also been a source of programming for the mind-controlled person. Over and over again I hear the same programs being mentioned, that they were forced to watch as children, and often feel compelled to watch in rerun form. Certainly I know that we all have our childhood favorites, but the obsession that I have witnessed over certain theme songs, shows, and even entertainers goes well beyond the norm. Using music as a form of mind control is insidious. Our minds are like steel traps for words of songs we hear as children and thus will trigger us immediately. For the purpose of mind control, hearing a certain song can send a recovering mind-controlled victim into sheer panic. Two particular shows seem to be universally known to the recovering people I have seen: THE WIZARD OF OZ and IT'S A GOOD LIFE. The phrase "follow the yellow brick road" is a program used to trigger someone into doing whatever he or she is told to do.

Food is reported to me constantly as a trigger for many of the mind-control survivors. Oreo cookies are a big trigger, as well as M&M candies. My experience has been that if a mind-controlled person is asked how they eat M&M's, they will answer with clarity as to the exact way they do so. It might be by color, it might be by color sequence, it might be not eating a certain color; but there will be a pattern that must not be altered. If asked to do so, they will often be visibly shaken by the request. Ask a non-programmed person how they eat them, and they might say "by the handful," "I don't like them," or just say that it's a silly question.

Probably the most disturbing food I find universally reported to be programming is McDonald's french fries. I know there is always some kind of taste war going on among the fast food giants as to who has the best fries, but it is not O.K. if a person feels compelled to eat McDonald's fries daily. The urge to do so is so strong, that several people have reported that this is their little secret. It embarrasses them, because they don't understand the overwhelming urge to eat them. I also know about food addictions, but that doesn't fit for so many of these people.

The one program that has been a universal theme in all of the people that I have worked with over the past 10 years is their abject fear of going to hell for lying. This is a particularly clever ploy on the part of the programmers, because if indeed a person actually has the courage to begin to heal from this horror, and start revealing to someone, they are instantly paralyzed with fear. The ultimate insult to their truth is that they have been told that if they believe anything really happened to them, and tell, it will be a lie. It is a "Catch 22" designed to keep the silence.

Thank God a few brave souls have reached beyond that fear and into the light of truth. This truth has set them free. For many of the people I know who were programmed as children, this truth is now their reality. Like Sue Ford, they no longer have repressed the horror, but instead can recall it. Not unlike the survivors of the Holocaust, these courageous people have overcome their own private war, to conquer Evil in it's finest hour. To those who don't or won't believe what I know to be true, I pray for you to see the truth, to help those in need, and to stop the evil from spreading any further. Healing is possible, and is happening. Once the healing begins, the people can reach out to others that need healing. We need to light the "candle of hope" for these precious people, and pass on the "light of truth."

Mary Lewis, LCSW

AUTHOR'S INTRODUCTION

Who with conscience could read the following autobiographical account and, in the name of freedom, justice and love, brush aside the misuse of power, human slavery and mind control described in this book? For it is true that we have still not rid the world of slavery and in this generation it is slavery born of a most malevolent and menacing type. In a society where competition for wealth, power, and control of others is foremost, we as a people are doomed to self-destruction, unless we change. Our values need to change. We need to help our children grow to believe in equality and justice, and they need to be taught the spiritual values that we as a society have come to disregard over the decades.

Our country is a young 200 years old. At the conclusion of the adoption of our Constitution. Benjamin Franklin was asked, "What have you wrought?"
In his own words he answered, "A Republic, if you can keep it."

It has been through my life experience that I see the need to take a serious look at how we have so dangerously strayed not only from the ideals set forth in our Constitution, but also from our fundamental God-given spiritual values. I know that for my sons, daughter, myself, my ex-husband, and countless other men, women, and children, who at this time are unable to speak for themselves, the following amendment to the Constitution has been violated. It reads:

> Section 1. Neither slavery, nor involuntary servitude, except as a punishment for Crime whereof the party shall have been duly convicted, shall exist Within the United States, or any place subject to their jurisdiction.

My children and I have never consciously committed a crime. WE HAVE NEVER HAD THE CHANCE TO LIVE OUR LIVES IN FREEDOM. Instead we have been put into a hidden bondage by a heinous form of slavery -- one far more evil than has been in existence in our society before. The magnitude of horror and the level of secrecy that shrouds it has allowed a level of atrocities against mankind to exist that surpasses even those in Nazi Germany under the leadership of Adolph Hitler; and those men who worked in his concentration camps have carried his legacy to our country. Whatever term one wants to put to this hideous activity, it is one of total and complete disregard for humanity, for human freedom, civil rights and the right to live safely on this planet. For, when we as a people allow certain individuals in our society to experiment with and enslave other individuals for the so-called 'advancement of technology' or the 'race toward world domination,' we are doomed.

What most of you have not been allowed to know is that years ago, at the outset of the Cold War (if not before), permission was given to a hidden group of so-called "professionals and leaders" to experiment on the unsuspecting American populace in an effort to further a variety of advanced technology. The technology gleaned by the American leaders, medical professionals, and scientists was and still is in the form of genetic engineering, mind control, brain research, near death experimentation, paranormal/psychic experimentation, remote viewing, time and space travel, bioelectromagnetic frequency medicine, and other advanced research that make our current level of technological understanding and application antiquated. I am not suggesting that the technology was not, in certain projects, valuable; however, I am stating that it was often attained by the American government at the expense of American lives, as many of its citizens were experimented on without their knowledge or consent.

Many books have been written describing innocent peoples' firsthand accounts of various forms of ritual abuse, unauthorized and non-consensual medical experimentation, genetic experimentation, radiation experimentation, drug experimentation and mind control. And yet, these numerous first-hand

accounts of extremely violated human rights have been cast aside and denied, even by our own FBI, CIA and government. Why, you ask? I believe the following information, gathered by my personal involvement as Henry Kissinger's personal 'mind file,' will help you understand the situation we face and what has occurred. Morally I feel it is my responsibility to share with you what I witnessed as I walked among those participating in these projects. After I have shared with you what I experienced, it will be your responsibility to choose what you do with this information. And I will finally be able to rest, knowing I have done my duty, first to God and then to you, my fellow citizens, by sharing the truth of my experiences so that you can be informed as to what has occurred, to your detriment and at your expense, but without your knowledge or permission.

People often ask me if I'm afraid that my controllers might kill me. Honestly, I have had so many near-death experiences that I am familiar with dying. Death is not at all frightening to me. My life has been restored through Divine intervention countless times and I trust that when God is ready for me to leave this world, I will go, and I won't go until that Divine timing is completed. What is frightening is living without doing something to alert people to the invisible danger and loss of rights and freedoms that are before us. Some things are so precious and sacred that to violate them is worse than death. Specifically, I am referring to the sacred nature of our minds and spirits and the Divine core bond that goes between a mother and a child. The pain and suffering that results from the destruction of this bond, due to a life of torture and mind control intended to intentionally shatter this bond and other family relationships, in order to establish control, is so excruciatingly painful that I will do anything necessary in the service of stopping it from happening in future generations.

A few years ago, after I spoke at a Surveillance Expo in Washington, D.C., an intelligence officer approached me and asked me how I managed to stay alive. I explained to him that I sent documentation of my recollected experiences out to professionals who were vocal in regard to these issues, with a letter stating that if anything happened to me, my children, or my ex-husband, I gave them permission to more widely distribute my information. This officer laughed and said, "Little lady, I believe you have the CIA by the balls! They are probably having to protect you." Although I am still alive, the harassment that I will share with you later hasn't stopped.

I submit this information to you as respectfully as I can. I apologize for the apparent lewdness of some of the material, and yet this is how it happened, this is what occurred. Please forgive the nature of the writing, or how I need to present it, often in it's original context, the way it was experienced by the many parts of me. What you read is a glimpse into the events as experienced through the eyes of the programmed personalities who endured this abuse. You may notice the different perceptions of different personalities at varying ages, and some of the values, or lack of them that they were taught. Much of the following information has been copied, often verbatim, from my private journals. Over the years, daily, I painstakingly documented my memories, in an attempt to deal with and sort out the often vivid, though confusing, memory flashbacks I had. What I remembered was so far from the reality I thought I had lived, that it was deeply disturbing.

What you are about to read is a composite of years of memory work describing the details and information as I worked to untangle the knot. Having been programmed to have a perfect photographic memory greatly aided me toward this enhanced, often meticulously detailed account. The training my controllers gave me backfired on them. Once my secret life began leaking into my conscious mind, I experienced so many intrusive flashbacks not only in my mind but also in my body, that it forced me to recall these experiences in extensive detail to the point that it disrupted my everyday functioning ... so much so, that I was forced to leave my master's degree program in graduate school and enroll in daily therapy. In an attempt to understand and contain all the information that came flooding back to my mind, I was compelled for years to write out each and every memory the way I saw it in my mind's eye, and heard, smelled, and felt it in my body, so I could attempt to maintain some semblance of my own

personal reality. This information, chronicled in my journals over the last 14 years, beginning in 1985, created a way for me to report to you what happened to me.

Desperately, I struggled and worked diligently over the years to pull myself together in an attempt to help my children, my husband, and myself. Looking back, I felt like a person with no arms or legs attempting to run an Olympic marathon. My body was able but I didn't have the use of my mind, which was shattered into a thousand pieces and further locked away from me in a programmed bondage. Although I couldn't think about it, deep within my soul my heart ached and the wounds festered.

People often ask me, "How did you get out?"

I answer, "By the grace of God," and I explain that as I grew older, although I could not think about what was causing me so much pain, I had moments when I could feel that something was very wrong. When those deeply, emotionally troubling and painful moments came, I asked God to please help me. Through daily prayer and the leading of the Holy Spirit, I was led out of bondage, one step at a time, until my programming was broken and I was integrated and free.

It was then, and continues to be, horrifying to me when my experiences are validated because it makes them more real, and then I am less able to dissociate from the excruciatingly painful emotional component of my past. During the initial stages of my recovery I had to learn to reconnect to my body and emotions, to learn even to cry in personalities that had never been allowed to express emotion. Then I had to learn to think logically and contain my tender, innate female emotions so that people could begin to hear what I was saying and not write me off as a hysterical woman -- although I had every right to be, given the traumatic life my family and I managed to live through.

This manuscript is not a dramatization, as was my first book, STARSHINE: One Woman's Valiant Escape from Mind Control. Instead it is a documentation of events as they happened from the best of my recollection. It is not written to entertain. In fact, I hope you don't find it entertaining, for if you do, you've missed the point. The pornography that has proliferated in this world has destroyed countless lives of children, women, and men who were used in it and has taught those who view it to objectify people. The telling of the following information is not done with the intent to further pornography and lewd sexual behavior, but in an attempt to stop what has gone on and to insure freedom of mind, body and spirit.

I am now fully integrated and deprogrammed. I feel very fortunate to have survived and to have healed to the point where I can now be a spokesperson for the many who have been abused in similar ways and are not yet recovered enough to speak on their own behalf. And, there are many. Over the years, I have painfully witnessed those who reside in mental institutions, diagnosed as psychotic, schizophrenic, borderline, or delusional; or others locked up as political prisoners; or worse yet, those who couldn't overcome their programming and committed suicide. Many others walk the earth dehumanized and enslaved in programming, living a life of internal and external hell and terror, separated from themselves and their Divine Creator. It is for all of them that I divulge these very personal and painful parts of my life.

Over the years, the CIA and other groups have strategically and very effectively orchestrated campaigns to discredit victims and the professionals who attempt to help the victims to bring the reality of what is actually occurring to light. Up until recently, the dark hierarchy that shrouds and protects the secrecy of this hidden control of many has been very effective in keeping this reality a secret. The victims have not been heard. They continually suffer discrediting tactics in the courtroom through the ignorance of uninformed -- possibly mind-controlled (or compromised) -- judges and lawyers; in therapy sessions, often with uninformed -- possibly programmed -- mental health professionals and therapists. The church clergy, through innocence, disbelief, ignorance, fear, or possibly programming, often turn their backs on victims who need aid and protection. The victims, regardless of age, need to know that other

people and especially God, hates what has happened to them. We need the church to stand in its rightful place in the public arena and call our nation to account for the suffering of the most vulnerable. If spiritually awakened individuals can't do it, then who can? The Holy Spirit has shown me it will take the most spiritually erudite to stand in the face of this evil deception. Only by enacting the practice of spiritual discernment and carefully listening to Divine spiritual direction, can this horror be eradicated forever. It is our last and only hope.

It is time the public is made aware so they can begin to abolish the dark, controlling system that even began to target pre-school's in the 70's, torturing and programming children who didn't even come from an intergenerational satanic background, in order to ever widen their circles of an unpaid, slave labor force. I am continually amazed that the public is still swayed by the CIA-connected, False Memory Syndrome Foundation's propaganda, which explains that therapists instill these memories of horror into their desperate clients and that children with large imaginations are making up these stories. Ask yourself how a child three or four years old could make up these vile stories that are beyond their age-appropriate understanding ... and what a coincidence that the accounts match other children's testimony across the nation. Have the children been secretly uniting, sharing their "large imaginative experiences" across the nation in order for them to all come up with similar accounts? The facts of many preschool court cases, the testimony of the children, and the bungling and misrepresentation from lawyers and judges in case after case has allowed the truth to be squelched.

Those within the American Psychiatric Association who still cling to the false notion that Multiple Personality Disorder (Diagnostic and Statistical Manual IV now calls it Dissociative Identity Disorder) is rare, rob the many suffering victims of the opportunity to recover. We need to begin to more fully understand that a child's, and especially an infant's, psyche is vulnerable and can be shattered into other personalities due to early childhood abuse. When we understand this we will be able to raise more stable children who can then grow into healthy, creative adults. Many adults, like myself, find themselves spending the rest of their lives trying to recover from their childhood. Early abuse wreaks havoc physically, mentally, and spiritually on the most vulnerable and most valuable resource we have, our children.

Once again I apologize for the pornographic nature of some of this material. In light of my current Christian values, it is difficult and often embarrassing to mention the sexual perversions that I was exposed to, and yet to alter the information that was brought back to my conscious awareness through the eyes and perception of those personalities who were forced to experience it, seems to compromise the reality of what actually happened. I have attempted to report my history in the best way I know how, yet I have found it impossible to report my experience to you with the wholesome morality that now rules my life. If you are faint of heart or have difficulty dealing with horrific or lewd material, please ask God to strengthen you to face the truth set forth in this book.

In the words of Edmond Burke, "The only thing necessary for the triumph of evil is for good people to do nothing." We have reached a point in time where it is imperative for good people to act. It is time for those who have any moral judgment to react, and then to pursue their reaction with action. It will take all of us, standing for what we believe in, questioning old beliefs and old value systems until they are aligned with the Mind of Christ. Do we really still believe in "One Nation Under God," or have we lost our way in the hundreds of mindless duties and realities presented by the mass media? When will we slow down? God is not a God of confusion, nor is He a God of hurry, or suffering. He is our Almighty God, in Him whom we can trust. For generations humanity has been deceived and those who are willing to put their trust and faith in God, shall rise to His Glory, as He shows the way to victory. Our God, whom we once put in charge of our nation, is still waiting. He is still there, wanting to be of assistance, and never in the history of mankind have we been in such desperate need of His help, of His guiding hand. And so as we begin this journey together, with me as the reporter, and you the reader that God has called to be present, I offer this prayer:

Dear Father God, Jesus, Lord of Lords, God Most High,

We come to You now, in humbleness, God, asking for Your help. We know of our own strength we are unable to solve the problems at hand, and God, we know that things in this world are out of control and that only You can guide us back to balanced ways. We also know as Your Word has promised that we are cared for by You, much more than the birds and the lilies of the field, and now we ask You to show us the way. We thank You Lord, we Glorify Your Holy Name. Thanks for sending Your son, Jesus, to show us the way. Please be with us now, as we enter a time of national and international unrest. We know that these are growing pains. We know that You didn't cause them, that Your will is not for our suffering, but that by our own actions these disasters and wars have and will continue to occur. Bless us with Your anointing. Open the eyes of our understanding. I pray that in this book Your will may shine forth so that all of us who partake can shine for You.

In Christ,

Susan Ford
Brice Taylor (pseudonym)

"Things are hidden, temporarily, only as a means to revelation. For there is nothing hidden except to be revealed, nor is anything temporarily kept secret except in order that it may be known.
"If any man has ears to hear, let him hear and perceive and comprehend.
"Be careful what you are hearing. The measure of thought and study you give to truth that you will hear me with measure of virtue and knowledge that comes back to you, and more will be given to you who hear.
"For to him who has heard and understood, more will be given, and from him who has not heard and understood, even what he has will be taken away from him." -- Mark 4:22-25

"It isn't that they can't see the solution. It's that they can't see the problem."
-- G. K. Chesterton

"Power is the Ultimate Aphrodisiac"
-- A Quote by: Henry A. Kissinger Then Secretary of State

Brice Taylor - Thanks for the Memories

Chapter One: The Creation of Human Robot

My name is Susan Lynne Eckhart Ford and I am a 48 year old, native Californian. Until 1995, I suffered from a debilitating condition known as Multiple Personality Disorder.[2] In 1985 I embarked on the long and tedious, painful road to recovery. Through years of therapy and deprogramming I completely reintegrated my multiple personalities back into my uniform core self, and through the grace of God, I am alive today to convey to you my true life experiences. This account of my remembrances will be so shocking and amazing that you may feel that you've entered the 'twilight zone.' Many waking up today, call this making a 'paradigm shift' in reality; I call it knowing the truth. But, do keep your faith in God and humanity, for, as my father reminded me day after day, "The truth will set you free."

My multiple personality condition resulted from what I had first thought in 1986 was solely sexual and ritual abuse. But, as I began to heal and remember more of my hidden past, I realized that ritual abuse was merely the mind control trauma base my ritually abused, programmed, pedophile father, Calvin Charles Eckhart, and others used to condition me for participation in the still active top secret Project Monarch, the Central Intelligence Agency's white slavery operation that is related to MKULTRA and it's numerous sub-projects.

I was raised in the affluent area of Woodland Hills, California, but was abused my entire life in many locations in and out of California, including hospitals, universities, and United States military and NASA bases, where I was subjected to 'high-level' programming. The result of many years of trauma, intentionally inflicted on me by my father and others to CREATE within me multiple personalities, was that I was transformed into a programmed, totally robotical slave that could not remember to think or tell what happened to me, due to the mind control and sophisticated programming I was under.

I was used frequently in child and adolescent prostitution and pornography. By my preteen years, I had many personalities specially programmed to be the perfect sex slave -- a "presidential model" with government mind files and a photographic memory equipped to deliver (most often through sexual encounters) messages, some cryptic, to top government officials, entertainers, and other world figures.

From 1987 to 1991, I was in intensive daily therapy in California, remembering a complex childhood that now has been validated, in part, through intelligence community, CIA, and FBI contacts (active and retired), as well as through investigative journalists, knowledgeable mental health professionals, and family members. In my quest for understanding and self-knowledge, I attended school to attain my Master's Degree in Psychology. But, in April of 1991 I was forced to leave my home and family in California, due to a clever plot and threat to my life if I continued to pursue remembrance of my past in therapy and try to become healed. One of my therapists, Margaret Paul, Ph.D., who is also a popular author, suggested that for my safety I should leave Los Angeles for awhile. Upon her recommendation, I fled to the island of Kauai, Hawaii, where unbeknownst to me I was still part of the project and still not free.

After I fled from California and was no longer living in the midst of my programmed abuse base, nor was I in therapy, I began having vivid, detailed memories of being used both as a sex slave and human mind file computer to some of our nation's highest level governmental officials in and out of the White House. Among them: John F. Kennedy (sex and delivered messages). Lyndon Baines Johnson (sex and delivered messages), Henry Kissinger (masterminded my U.S. Government and international mind file use), Nelson Rockefeller (mind file use coordinated in conjunction with Henry Kissinger),

[2] Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD): Current American Psychiatric Association listing in the Diagnostic and Statistical Manual IV is Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID).

Gerald Ford (sex and delivered messages), Jimmy Carter (delivered messages), Ronald Reagan (sex and delivered messages), George Bush (mind file use; he is a known pedophile and had sex with my programmed daughter Kelly), and top entertainment professionals, such as my "owner" Bob Hope (sex and message courier).

The media surrounding the exposes of Bob Hope's secret life and the books written by Arthur Marx (Groucho's son), The Secret Life of Bob Hope, and Lawrence J. Quirk's recent book, Bob Hope: The Road Well-Traveled, begin to portray some examples of the flaws to Bob's seemingly All-American, patriotic, and family loving public image. My controllers and abusers were not low-level criminals, but instead were some of the so-called "adored" leaders and entertainers of our country.

I felt alone and terrified as I began to break free from the control I was under. Catherine Gould, Ph.D., an internationally known therapist with years of experience treating ritual abuse victims explained that she couldn't be my therapist, for fear of losing her license or being sued since she sensed I was a 'high-level' survivor. At that time, although I had begun to have memories of being with Ronald Reagan during the time he was Governor of California and other government officials, due to the fact that I was still under mind control, I had no way of understanding what 'high-level' meant. At that time, many therapists, including my own - Margie Paul, were beginning to have their licenses pulled and often suffered professional consequences for treating ritual abuse survivors, especially those who were "high-level." In April of 1991, when I fled to the island of Kauai, Catherine agreed to consult with me by phone, and advised me to write a book, which resulted in STARSHINE: One Woman's Valiant Escape From Mind Control. She further advised me to continue documenting the names, dates and places of my abuse in an effort to one day go public in order to free my husband, my children, and myself.

Over the next year on the island, I recovered more of my memory, but was devastated to be separated from my children and tried to adjust to a radically changed lifestyle, including the fact that I was now living without my family, friends, and loved ones, and had very limited finances. I was overwhelmed with grief, carrying a burden that few wanted to seriously look at. Several people stepped forward to help me in whatever ways they could, offering emotional support and friendship, some even financial support when I ran out of money, but no one could really keep me safe, until I was fully deprogrammed from inside of myself so I could not be accessed. To reiterate a vitally important fact -- until I was fully deprogrammed, I was not safe. In 1991, there was no one who knew what I was talking about who could help me. I had to find help within myself. And I did. Throughout my healing process, Angels guided me when I was too afraid to connect with Christ, due to the satanic ritual abuse I had endured in the church as a child. The Angels continually led me to books and incredible people, thereby fulfilling God's plan for my eventual freedom.

Since multigenerationally abused and traumatized victims are selected for the mind control projects, my three children, Kevin, Kelly, and Danny were naturally trained to follow in my footsteps as assets of my controllers. Except for Kelly, they are still locked into their abuse base. Despite my efforts to get help for them. Their similarly programmed father unfortunately 'doesn't have a clue,' as yet, and so all legal custody has been taken away from me by the State of California. Toward the goal of getting my children free, I have spent years desperately documenting my past, a task at which some of our top governmental officials and entertainers would have liked to see me fail.

My affluent abusers made sure that I was instilled with very sophisticated programming that would insure my death should I begin to remember or tell. Despite the fact that I was programmed to have an 'accident,' self-mutilate, or kill myself, I am healthy, in control of my own mind, and have NO intentions of hurting myself in any manner. I am taking extreme precautions through publicizing this autobiographical account to encumber these power mongers from stopping my efforts to obtain help for my affected children. It is in hopes of freeing them, and the many other suffering adults and children locked into the bonds of the mind control projects, that I share my experience.

The intentionally inflicted and often extreme child abuse I endured was the necessary "preparation through trauma" that my controllers regarded as prerequisite to my creation as a sex/espionage agent serving within the government and beyond to an overarching cabal of only a handful of individuals, who I overheard referred to as "The Council." For years I witnessed the attempts and deeds they performed to control not only our government, but foreign governments as well. This initial childhood trauma was necessary to create within me multiple personalities for later use by them, insuring their success of my involuntary use and participation in their plan for a one world government, where you and I are to work in varying levels -- as controlled slaves or, as they say, "worker bees."

"To be afraid is to have more faith in evil than in God." -- Emmet Fox

Chapter Two: Early Childhood Preparation

"Love bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things." -- Galatians

In order for my birth to be accomplished on presidential inauguration day, January 20th, 1951, my mother's labor was induced at St. John's Hospital in Santa Monica, California. My parents named me Susan Lynne Eckhart. The selection of inauguration day for my birth was especially meaningful given the position I would be groomed to one day fill. My parents told the story for years that my first words were, "I like Ike." Even at the early age of one, they were training me to be politically-minded and had me cheering in a campaign effort for the President-elect.

Once my mother and I were released from the hospital after my birth, my father began the rigorous training and intentional torture required to shatter my base personality with the goal of creating many separate and individual personalities for training and use by others as I grew older. When my mother left my father to babysit me, he withheld all food until I was starving. Then he held my bottle in front of me, but instead of allowing me to have the bottle, he would slip his penis into my mouth for me to suck. I felt I was dying through suffocation, as my airway was blocked and I gagged for breath. There were many such traumas to follow, most often on a daily basis.

For you to understand how I came to trust the things I began remembering at age 35 about my earliest childhood, I will share the following experiences. In meditation, I began remembering small, inconsequential things at first, like the time my mother left my father to care for me when I was four months old. He laid me on top of the dining room table and watched as I fell off! I clearly remembered the panicked feeling of terror as I was falling and remembered the overwhelming sharp pain that resulted in my body as I hit the floor. I also remembered the color of the carpeting, the design on the wallpaper and other details about the room. We moved from this house in Santa Monica when I was 6 months old, and I never saw it again.

Unable to fathom what these earliest of childhood memories could mean, I began reading about the experiences of Vietnam veterans and how they suddenly relived flashbacks of traumas they witnessed in war. I thought this might be the same type of memory phenomenon. In order to test my recall of this particular incident, I shared the details of this memory with my mother. Her reaction was one of amazement although she seemed terribly confused about my father's actions. She said I had described our first house and was surprised I could remember so accurately details from an event that happened when I was only an infant. Being the third child to a very busy mother, there were no pictures taken of me in that house that I could have seen. The validation she gave me made me feel more trusting of the other memories that soon began flooding back into my awareness.

Trauma to Create Multiple Personality Disorder

Memories of trauma too overwhelming to bear as a child unfolded for me to deal with as an adult. Bit by bit, piece by piece, I began to remember and understand just what had actually happened to me as a child, but in no way did the memories come neatly packaged in chronological order. It took the test of time, as each memory fit into ones before and after them and, like a puzzle, with all the pieces laid in proper place, I began creating a more complete yet horrifically devastating picture.

Armed with that first validation from my mother and the support of two therapists, I began daily therapy remembering heinous tortures, terrifying abuses, and strange details that were painfully yet neatly compartmentalized into the reality of separate child and adult personalities programmed within

me. Many had separate names. This was in 1987, two years after my initial "awakening" first began. And I was, now, for the first time, accurately remembering my earliest childhood. I was referred to Stuart Perlman, Ph.D., a Westwood clinical psychotherapist, and began seeing him a few sessions a week until the self-harm and suicidal crises I was attempting to live through, triggered by remembering things I was programmed forget, quickly required my sessions with him to escalate to seven or more per week. I was also having weekly sessions with Margaret Paul, Ph.D.

At the time I began therapy, neither of my therapists was familiar with dissociation, Multiple Personality Disorder, or ritual abuse. The vivid, painful and often terrifying flashbacks and abreactions of the traumatic memory I retrieved in and out of their offices left all of us in a quandary, trying to make sense of what was happening to me. Dr. Perlman wrote an article on MPD/ritual abuse for a psychoanalytical journal, where he shared that as time went on he came to understand that Multiple Personality Disorder was not as rare as he had been taught it was in school. Although his quiet, aloof, non-interactive, psychoanalytical stance often made me uncomfortable during therapy sessions, I was later grateful that he had not interjected his own reality into my memory retrieval process and kept to himself his initial belief that I was delusional. My first session with Dr. Perlman was deeply touching as tears fell from his cheeks when I recounted instance after instance of childhood abuse. His wise words to me that day were, "Everything you need to heal is within, you have all the answers inside of yourself."

My other therapist, Dr. Paul, and I were continually perplexed as to what all the memories meant and didn't have an answer until a year later when I attended a Victims of Incest Emerge as Survivors (VOICES) conference in New Jersey by myself, where I heard a female minister speak about satanic ritual abuse. At the end of the lecture, I felt numbed, as the speaker recounted many tortures similar to those I had remembered from my childhood. The "big, beautiful, perfect fairy tale life" I thought I was living began to crumble, one memory at a time. The following is a carefully compiled documentation of my past.

When I was six months old, my father and mother decided to move to a more rural setting to raise their young family. My brother Jim was eight, my brother Rick was four, and I was six months old. My father borrowed money from my mother's mother to purchase a three-bedroom ranch home located in the midst of a walnut grove in Woodland Hills, California. This home was to be the base for hidden and extreme torture and trauma for me over the next 19 years. Those years of trauma should have been enough to kill ten children, but somehow it didn't kill me. My father told me each time he hurt me that he was doing it to toughen me, to strengthen me for the future. In response, I was split into many personalities to cope with the overpowering physical and psychological pain and betrayal.

My father worked for others as a welder until 1957 when he decided to be his own boss, prompting the opening of his own welding shop. This business, Eckhart's Welding Shop (located on Pico Boulevard in West Los Angeles), initially was our only source of income, since my mother stayed at home as a full-time housewife and mother. We lived simply and frugally, getting by on the amount of money my father earned. Sliced in between and existing parallel to the everyday conscious reality we shared as a family, was a very dark, secret and painful reality shared in sub-consciousness and in pain. I will share many of these slices of darkness with you so that you the reader can understand how this all came about.

When I was a year old, my father placed me in a blanket that was suspended by a rope from the high ceiling in our living room and spun me around and around and around until I was completely dizzy and disoriented. He then introduced a trauma, like putting something sharp up my vagina and my young psyche shattered, splitting off another personality to withstand the pain. He began sexually abusing me in my early months, by inserting objects into my vagina, gradually stretching it so that I would be able to accept a full grown man's penis by the time I was two. I was being groomed for early child prostitution, pornography, and a position in the "inner circle" at church.

When I was just months old, my mother recounts that she tearfully handed me over into the arms of her brother John who took me for a week to Santa Barbara. When she told me of this incident she always sounded like she had no choice, no free will from where she could command that no one could take her new born baby away from her. The memory of what happened in Santa Barbara with my Uncle John remains inaccessible to me at this time, yet I know it must be significant.

Unfortunately as you can well understand, my poor mind-controlled mother never had a chance and was totally manipulated by my father who I believe suffered from Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD/DID), had been ritually abused himself, and was most likely also under mind control. Much of the time my mother was a loving, caring, gentlewoman, but she was controlled. She spent her daytime hours obsessively cleaning house, ironing everything that she perfectly washed, scrubbing floors, washing windows, cooking, and attending to our needs. After dinner, while my mother did the dishes, my father sat down to watch television and read the paper. While he was relaxing, my mother began her next job doing the bookkeeping for my father's business; she didn't stop her duties or sit down until she collapsed into bed at 11:00 o'clock at night.

When I began recovering in the 80's, I asked my mother why all she did was scrub and clean the house and didn't pay attention to me as a child. Her response was, "Sue, looking back, I felt like there was something really dirty about our home."

My mother was able to feel what she wasn't allowed to think about, and she was right; there was something dirty. She subconsciously tried to take care of the problem in the only way she knew how; by cleaning it away. She slept through, was programmed, drugged, or was in a dissociative daze when I was being abused or when she was being beaten by my father or abused by others. She obsessively listened to music, which helped her to tune out and mellow. Knowing what I know now, most likely she was listening to music she was told to listen to in order to keep her memory of our actual life locked deeply within her subconscious mind, while the programmed reality of herself and our "perfect happy family" was kept alive through programmed phrases in the music.

My father made medicine for my mother. She followed my father's orders and programming to a tee. Dutiful to her programming, she delivered me to and from places where I was to be prepared, trained, programmed, and used, without ever being consciously aware of what she was doing. To this day, if asked about it, my mother cries and says that, while she believes and feels the allegations of what happened to me are true, she just can't remember.

Church Ritual Trauma

Around this time, my mother joined the First Baptist Church of Woodland Hills, and began taking me with her to church. Later, in therapy, I remembered and drew pictures of tunnels that I remembered running under the church that connected with neighboring homes of inner circle church perpetrators. On Sunday mornings, my mother left me in the nursery while she went to the sermon. Members of the church staff, some of them neighbor women and the minister, ritualistically abused me in that church. The elder minister who abused me was Rev. Grant B. Yeatman.

By age two, I was out of the church nursery and attending a small Sunday school class with other children. One Sunday, when I was a bit older, Rev. Yeatman walked into my Sunday school class and watched as we played a game and drew pictures. He pointed to me and said that I was "God's chosen" and told me to follow him. Once we were outside in a protected area, he forced my head down under his robe to perform oral sex on him like my father had prepared me from birth to do. After I was finished, he wiped my mouth with a handkerchief and told me that I was going to hell for what I had just done, but that I would be forgiven if I never told anyone about it. He further offered to pray for my soul and then sent me back to my Sunday school class.

Another Sunday, after being sodomized in a back room by Rev. Yeatman, he took me by the hand back to my Sunday school class, bent down and pointed to a picture of Jesus sitting with the little children around him and whispered, "Jesus will never love a little girl who is as bad and evil as you." From then on I believed there was something terribly wrong with me and that I would never fit in with other people. I figured Jesus couldn't love me because I was so bad. Parts of me died inside. But deep within my soul, in my innermost hidden and protected self, angelic beings continually reminded me of God's love for me and of their support. When I was tortured to the extent of being projected out of body due to the extreme pain, Jesus' Angels spoke lovingly to me and explained that I needed to go back into my body, that some day when I was older I would understand. But subconsciously, in my limited child understanding, I believed I was unlovable and hideous in the eyes of God.

Other Sundays, different children were "God's chosen" and had to leave the room with the minister.

Many of the people who worked at the church, the church secretary and the Sunday school teachers, were neighbors of ours and, I now understand were most likely ritually abused as children and were carrying out their violent actions via their own unconscious childhood programming.

Mrs. Winkler, the church secretary, lived across the street. In addition to Christianity, she also practiced sorcery and witchcraft in her darkened home, isolated and protected from outside intrusion by drape-covered windows. As a toddler, my father would wake me, early on Saturday or Sunday mornings and take me across the street along with a carrot, to "feed the horsies." We always did feed the horses but the actual purpose of these outings was to get me out of the house to go see Mrs. Winkler for what they called "my training and preparation."

Mrs. Winkler lit candles and laid my tiny body down on her table, performing chants over me, while she was sticking sharp needles in my feet, burning me with the hot candle flames, or scaring me with spiders. She would say, "Hold real still, Susie, so this potion can get in. You will be powerful and very special one day. Your father is paying for this, for you to be made special because he loves you. You will be known."

She told me at other times that I was chosen by God to fulfill some mission. Instead of organized Satanism, she practiced her own perverted form of Christianity with the purpose of "purifying me" to rid me of all evil. She never directly addressed Satan, but instead spoke of hell and damnation; it was a fire and brimstone style of fundamental Christianity, mixed with witchcraft. Mrs. Winkler cut pieces of my hair and saved them for rituals that were held with other "inside" church members and my father in outdoor rural places, in the middle of the darkened night.

Trauma Programming

For years, my father performed a variety of brutal, ritual-type physical and psychological abuses, among them: confinement in closets, cages, and a coffin, while I was told I was being left to die; near drowning; isolation; needles inserted in sensitive body areas; food and sleep deprivation; electroshock via electric wires, welding equipment, cattle prods, etc.; drugging; sophisticated hypnotic and electronic programming; tying me upside down to walnut trees out in the isolated walnut groves and other places; forcing me to participate in torturous rituals and orgies; and sexually abusing me, each time in more perverted ways.

At that time, Woodland Hills was still in its own infancy. At first, there were only two or three other houses built on our street, insuring my father and others plenty of wide-open spaces to conduct their crimes. In 1952, what is now known as the "101 Freeway" had not yet been built. The area was still largely undeveloped and rural, allowing for these crimes to easily go undetected.

While I was still very small, my father had an affair with another church secretary named Selma McGrew who lived in the house behind ours. She participated in my "preparation" by allowing my father to include me in the sex they were having. Being so young and small I often felt I would be killed during these encounters, and so I split off more personalities to endure it.

Nighttime was never intended for sleeping at our house but instead was a time of training. My mother was the only one allowed and/or commanded to sleep. My two older brothers, Jim and Rick, and my father came into my room night after night, creating an endless array of different forms of sexual abuse, all under my father's direction. My brother Rick, who is four years older than I, was selected to participate more often and my father used him to help "prepare" me for use as a child prostitute and for my approaching debut in pornography.

The two of us were sexually abused together and were both electroshocked with bare electric wires to our genitals. I painfully remembered my brother sitting robotically while my father attached a bare wire to his penis and then inserted the opposite end in the electrical outlet, sending his little body into uncontrollable spasms. Tears flooded my brother's eyes and ran down his cheeks as he then was forced to watch as I was electroshocked. For years my mother told the story of how she continually found my brother hiding behind the couch shocking himself by inserting bare wires into the electrical outlet. She laughed a kind of confused, questioning laugh as she spoke this. She probably couldn't think to question where the bare-wired cord came from or why her young son was continually seeking to electroshock himself. I stuck a table knife in an electrical socket so often that there was a knife in the kitchen drawer that was notched from being repeatedly inserted into the outlet. This unconscious act reinforced our programming.

I was often awakened and drugged in the middle of the night by my parents in order to attend rituals that were performed in the empty lot behind the church and at other locations around Woodland Hills. Many of the gullies and outdoor places that were used for rituals when I was a young child have since been developed into homes or large cement drainage areas, but in the 50's these areas provided seclusion for this group. The whole congregation did not participate in these nightly horrors, only a select inner circle was allowed in.

At two, I was initiated into the inner circle with a celebration dedicating me as the bride of Christ. I was drugged, dressed in a long white lace gown, and passed around the circle of drugged members as they sat around a bonfire in a vacant lot, during the middle of the night. Each member fondled me sexually, then I was lain on an altar to be raped and dedicated to Christ and the group. The inner circle members wore black robes and participated in sexual orgies and the killing and ingesting of animal and human flesh. Their belief was that these cannibalistic and sexual acts would transfer the energy or life force from the victim to them in order to make them more powerful.

I was involved in endless rituals that included being burned with candles, having crucifix's jammed up my vagina as I lay on an alter or hung upside down on a cross, having pins inserted into every area of my body including my vagina and the roof of my mouth, and having animals and babies killed in front of me and being forced to eat their raw flesh and drink their blood or urine. Other children were involved in the rituals, and when we reached a certain age we were forced to participate in killing animals and babies. In order to psychologically survive these experiences, many additional personalities within me were created. Nothing was ever as painful as being forced to inflict pain on another or watch as others were tortured or killed.

My Doll Collection

I had a doll cabinet that my father had specially made for me. It was filled with dolls from all over the world, that were given to me to love. My father used my dolls to program different personalities

within me, as he abused me night after night. Often when my father tortured me he would hand a different doll for me to hold in order to create different parts of me with different identities that in my young mind I could relate to the doll I was holding. He told me the doll in my hand was part of me but separate and then he would call it by name. There was the little doll with the red hair and freckles, the baby doll, Cyndy the bride doll, Rebecca, Sally, Thumbelina, Barbie and Madame Alexander, to name a few.

There were dolls everywhere around me, especially in that doll case that my father had made for me with the sliding glass window front so the dolls could be seen. Each doll was "displayed" which my father said meant they couldn't play until he said it was time for them to come out of the case. At night when he woke me for abuse, he took out the doll whose personality was to be the front, or presenting, personality of my inner system of created personalities. As he pulled a doll out of the doll case he'd say, "she's no longer on display, she can come out and play now," and at that tender age, I would switch into the personality my father called forth. Then he would say, "You Susie, will step aside as Doll fully enters your body. Whenever I snap my fingers three times, Doll will enter the body and Susie will step aside, like this now," and he would snap his fingers three times and I would follow my father's command, totally and completely.

Holidays

Holidays always signaled times of trauma. One Christmas I awoke excited to see what Santa had brought for me. My two worlds and the personalities that lived in them were continually subjected to different realities, and this day was to be no different. Susie in her red velveteen robe got special treatment while other personalities had "Xmas," a very different painful and evil reality. While Susie got a Christmas stocking full of goodies, Sharon got razor blades and coal and parts of dead animals. "Sharon" was another one of my inner personalities my father created, which he developed as my "inner twin" to Susie, my conscious everyday personality. One Christmas ritual trauma I vividly remembered was when my father laid me down on the rug in front of the fireplace and placed his finger inside my vagina while he readied a hot poker in the fire. Somehow putting me in a trance-state, he began, "You won't feel this. You will only continue to feel the pleasure, just like I am rubbing now. Does it feel good?"

"Yes Daddy," I robotically answered.

"Good, then when I do this it will only increase the pleasure," he kept his finger in place until he got the hot poker out of the fire and as he put it inside me, he took his finger out and as hypnotically commanded, I felt only the pleasure of the hot inside me. Very lovingly he said, "Very good, honey. You're doing very well. Now take a deep breath and count to three and feel like you have to pee. Then when I take this out, you will feel even more pleasure. Okay?"

"Yes, Daddy," I said putting my little hand up in front of my face while I counted off, "One," as I held up one finger, then "two," putting up two fingers, then, "three," and when he had taken the poker out, I felt really happy. It didn't even hurt. I couldn't feel the pain of the red-hot thing. In months that followed, I reached out and touched a piece of red-hot angle iron when my father was welding, and when it burned my hand badly, I was surprised. I didn't understand that it would bum me. My father was an expert at those "games."

At other times he put something scary in front of my face to startle me before he did something traumatic to me. Then he would tell me to feel numb while he put a silver metal band around my wrist and forehead and would shock me with the black box that was attached to the bands with wires. He'd say "you're doing very well," but my face would be sweating and it stung when he gave me what he called "a jolt."

At odd times, even when other people were around, my father would say, "Do you want a jolt?"

I'd say, "No," while I giggled nervously, acting like it was a game but it wasn't.

Often after one of these jolting experiences, I felt so sleepy and my mom would say, "What's wrong with you? Are you sick?"

"I dunno," I'd say, because I didn't know anything. To know was to 'know,' and to 'know' was very bad and you got very hurt. So certain personalities within me took the pain and torture after which I would be switched back to Susie who had no knowledge of any of it.

There were nights my father would wake me out of sleep and devise ways to spin me until I was totally disoriented, after which he took me to look at myself in front of a mirror and called me by another name other than my own, "Sandy, that is you in the mirror, and Sandy is my friend. She is going to help us. She is a friend of Susie's, but Susie doesn't know Sandy exists. Susie doesn't even need to think about you, Sandy." And these were some of the tactics used to shatter and then create alternate identities within me from a very early age.

In hypnotic trance I was told, "The balloons will take you away, take you to the rooms with the many personalities, but as you look at each one, you know that they are you. They are all you. But only one at a time. One room and one person at a time."

Other nights, I was awakened from sleep and sexually abused to create the dissociative barrier and to create more personalities or attitudes. I was told, "Now look into the first room. There's Darla. Isn't she cute and pretty, and she is always happy. Darla's dedicated to the stars. She always knows just what to say and do to make others feel good, to make them happy. Now look into the second room. There's Sandy. She's the dancer. She can dance very well and she is able to bend in all different directions ... to everyone's amazement. She's not at all embarrassed to take off her clothes in front of people. She likes that, it makes her feel good. But she can only do that when the time is right." My father also placed stars on my ceiling that lit up at night to remind me of the programming.

Over the years my controllers created programming for every single thing they could dream up. And they programmed in angel personalities intended to handle the pain when I could not.

But their spiritual short-sidedness left them in the dark when I transcended their created angelic personalities, and left my body escorted by real Angels. I owe my life to God and those beautiful loving Beings who kept my soul and my love intact as they continually interceded for the little girl they witnessed tortured unceasingly.

Military Base Programming

Dick Hof was a marine in the reserves. He and his family moved in next door when I was around three years old. He told me he didn't, know exactly how to treat little girls because he only had boys. On certain weekends he wore his uniform and took me to military bases where the men wore tan uniforms. They saluted him when he was around and he acted very normal until we were out of the other men's sight. He took me into top-secret places where he showed some sort of pass to gain entrance. Once we were in the secret place he put me into an empty, cold, cement room and restrained me to a metal examination table. There were bright lights overhead and the men that joined him put bands around my wrists, ankles, and forehead, then turned out the lights and left while they shocked me real bad. They had a screen I had to watch and messages I listened to immediately after I got shocked. Sometimes Dick carried a briefcase that had some of my favorite dolls and toys inside, like my dolly with the red hair and freckles and my sock monkey. When they hurt me they often pretended to hurt my dolls and toys, too, and told me that my dolly friends would keep reminding me every day about what happens, "if you don't obey and follow the rules -- then you get zapped," and they would shock me again. Dick also threatened me with his gun and said that all the men had them, and if I "stepped out of line" it would be over for me,

so I'd better listen up and obey the rules. The doctors played tricks on me while I was drugged. They played day and time tricks trying to mess me up. They told me over and over that someone other than the person who really brought me there did. Most of the time I knew it was Dick Hof. They told me this astronaut brought me and a man in an astronaut suit would walk in and say, "I am the adult who brought you here."

I'd say, "No you're not, my neighbor did." So they would inject me with more drugs and keep hammering verbally at me over and over until I'd break and agree wholeheartedly with them. But inside I had to remember to keep the truth hidden in a part of me, so I'd not lose control of reality and believe their lies. Sometimes I felt like I shattered and went over the edge and couldn't really tell what was happening. At those moments I'd pray to God that another part of me was remembering what was really happening because I couldn't maintain myself any longer. After they were through with me I was so messed up that I needed their help getting off the table and then to walk, and the next week I'd have to stay home from school because I was throwing up and very sick. My mom said I just had "the flu." All this torture and mind manipulation kept my inner and outer worlds far apart.

There was a cabinet way up high in our kitchen and Dick Hof told me that I could be like a monkey and climb up there to get the little white candy pills that would make me feel better, but I couldn't tell my mommy because he said she wasn't really my mommy because she was born of lower class and he said I was upper class, like my father. He said my mom didn't know enough to help me, so if I hurt I could climb up and get the pills and eat them and feel better.

There was another military base I was taken to when I was about five. A doctor in a white lab coat examined me there. He questioned me a lot in order to check all my "systems." As you can see, this abuse was very intentional and very premeditated, with long-range plans and goals.

The Network of Abuse Widens

The trauma was ubiquitous and involved all the people who were close to me, and others who were strangers. Threats of consequences if I remembered or told, made during times of extreme trauma, were buried deep in my subconscious mind and dictated my actions daily. Huge amounts of my own subconscious vital energies were used to keep my personalities in control and to keep secret the activities in which I was involved.

By the age of four, I was taken to my father's friend, Andy the policeman, where I was instructed to perform oral sex on Andy, in exchange for a courtesy card my father proudly carried in his wallet that pardoned him from any violation he might acquire, should he ever be stopped by a police officer. At a very young age, I was subconsciously aware that everyone was in on these activities and that policemen wouldn't even protect me, but that knowledge was kept from my conscious awareness because I believed the reality, as my programming commanded, that I had a perfect life.

When I was less than five years old, my father took me to Long Beach for what my mother was told was a visit to my father's Aunt Maude. We did go to visit Aunt Maude, but really we were there to meet with Uncle Charlie. Uncle Charlie was very distinguished looking and wore very formal clothes, even though this was just a family gathering. At this young age, although I sensed this was a very important event, I had no way of knowing how pivotal this meeting would factor into the design of my life. In a complete nightmarish horror, I watched as my grown father looked retarded and became very childlike when this relative, Charles Lilley Horn, spoke to him. And when the talk turned to subjects I could not fathom, and Uncle Charlie held out a paper for my father to sign, I pulled on my father's hand and begged him, "Daddy, stay big, this is really important, please Daddy." But due to my father's own early childhood abuse, he could not maintain his adult mental state because he, too, had Multiple

Personality Disorder, with many wounded, fragmented, hurt children inside of him whose consciousness had also been programmed for use by others. And so, when Uncle Charlie asked him to sign the paper, he reached out robotically, and without thought, signed it. Somehow I knew that this event was a very important moment when I needed my father to pull himself together to protect me. But he was not able to, due to his own dysfunctional state of mind.

Uncle Charlie further directed my father where to take me for the early programming that involved machines and told him about the arrangement with Bob Hope and the connection to the government. My father continued to look retarded and just kept robotically shaking his head, nodding in agreement, while Charlie told him what to do.

Slave Auctions

Elitists in the market for mind control slaves attend auctions that appear at first like children's fashion shows and then progress to striptease acts. I made "appearances" in many shows before I was actually sponsored or sold.

My father took me to a slave "model" auction where I wore a fancy white taffeta and black velvet polka-dot dress, a hat and matching purse that my mother had bought for me at the expensive Stardusters clothing store.

Bob Hope

At this particular show where Bob Hope bought me, there were lots and lots of little girls and boys competing. They said these children were what they called "sponsored" if they were chosen. And they said it was better to be chosen early because then the sponsors (owners) could mold you the way they wanted. There was a modeling ramp where all of us children were displayed. I modeled casual clothes, then sophisticated evening clothes, and then sensual/sexual attire and, finally, appeared totally naked. First I performed Swan Lake Ballet in pink feathers for my casual and wore black velvet for my formal and my naked performance was called "the tiger dance." I won first place at this show and was sold to Bob Hope on the open market. They put a white cape around my naked body and Bob came up and stood with me while everyone in the audience cheered. Somehow it seemed like a sport for some of these people to attend auctions. Then I was seated again next to my father. When the whole show was over, an older man dressed in a tuxedo came and escorted me to Bob Hope who shook my hand and said, "Hi ya, Honey. Do you know who I am?"

"Yes, Mr. Hope." I answered like I had been instructed.

"I'm going to be your man, but we'll have to talk more about this later ... when you're a little older." He laughed.

I smiled at him and said, "Thank you, Mr. Hope. My father will be very proud." But my father never came over to meet Bob. He stayed in his chair until the man in the tux ushered me back to him.

Throughout my formative years, I was molded to be extremely sexual through the sexual abuse with my father and others. The personalities that were created from that abuse didn't always experience the encounters as abusive, because that is all they knew. Bob later told my father through an instilled message delivered through me during an incestual encounter with my father, "Daddy, Bob says he wants me to really love sex and have a lot of it. Okay?"

"Sure honey, whatever you want. You're the boss," my father answered from his own split consciousness.

Bob was Catholic and so was the part of me that performed. She was my "inner twin sister" for programming purposes, to keep that part of me separate from my created "normal" reality and her name was Sharon. Bob said he liked Catholic girls because they were easy and he liked "em like that."

Bob was always racy until he got to acting old around 1987. I had a lifetime of Bob Hope and his antics, and over the years, he lost his funny and happy persona and became just a mean and nasty old man. And then, he became cruel to me, there wasn't anything fun left in him. He was just real old and mean.

Uncle Charlie

Consciously unbeknownst to my parents, I was in contact when necessary with my "Uncle Charlie." He escorted me to many affairs when I was a child, even in Europe. Often they were arenas where the mind control elitists gathered to share their latest creations. At these gatherings, I walked out on a ramp on Uncle Charlie's arm. I was the "latest in human technology," and all the "uncles" were there to display their "wares." It was a fashion show of sorts for what they called "children attendants." Men in the audience held little placards and they held up certain numbers for different things. I think they were like judges. I don't think they wanted to buy me because someone else already had. While I was presenting, a man announced I had already been sold to, "...a very funny man they say, called Bob Hope. Do you know him?" And everyone in the audience laughed.

When I asked Uncle Charlie why those people were there and what we were doing there, he said, "This is a show for Cadillacs and you my dear," he took a hold of my chin, "are my Cadillac."

"I am? What is that?" I asked very enthusiastically, straightening my blue satin dress and pushing on the skirt that kept popping up on the other side due to the hoop around the bottom.

"A car," he answered. When I kept asking questions he said that big word others also used to describe me, "My, you are precocious, aren't you? Well it's time for you to run along now," at which point another man in a suit took my hand and led me away.

Later that day when we were alone, Uncle Charlie very secretly and with great import informed me that he was my real father and that my dad wasn't my real father, but had adopted me for some very specific purposes. He said it was my destiny, but I didn't know what that word meant either, and didn't ask because I was still pretty upset about my dad not really being my dad. Uncle Charlie said he had the money to take care of me in the ways I deserved and that my father never would have the money to do what he was going to be able to do for me. I didn't understand what this all meant then but he made it sound good. (Forty some years later through my constant search to piece together the actualities of my life, I would discover that Charles L. Horn was the owner of Federal Cartridge Company, which later funded Olin Foundation, where he sat as President.)

When I asked Uncle Charlie who my mother was he just nodded quickly and said, "You don't have one, it doesn't matter." He seemed busy like I was bothering him by interrupting his thoughts or something. I guess he didn't understand the needs of a child my age. So I went ahead and made up my own imaginary mother. I created her to be sort of plump and happy and she made great apple pies and cookies and all sorts of candies that we ate anytime we wanted. She was 'the perfect mother' for "Sharon."

So as I understood it from the other side of my personality structure, Charles L. Horn was Sharon's -- my inner twin sister's -- father. Uncle Charlie said he wanted me to call him Uncle Charlie instead of dad because he had "... some very important business contacts that just wouldn't understand if you called me father, so call me Uncle Charlie." Often he introduced me to people as his niece, Sharon Weatherby. Sharon, the wild personality, is who Bob Hope purchased from Uncle Charlie and it was Sharon who was trained to be stunning, smart, sexual, comfortable with wealth and elite family members. Uncle Charlie, who lived in Minneapolis in the summers and Scottsdale in the winters, said he loved me but couldn't spend a lot of time with me because of business, though he would be a powerful part of my life.

Uncle Charlie physically introduced me to Henry Kissinger one day in an open grassy park-like area when I was very little. I shook Henry's hand and Uncle Charlie explained that Henry was my "Uncle Henry." So I, as Sharon Weatherby, began to have a whole new family and it just kept growing and growing, adding "uncles" here and there and everywhere.

Henry Kissinger

When I was little, with a short pixie haircut, Henry Kissinger would call me on the phone at home. In those days, those personalities who were created by and for him thought he was funny. He set up times of connection by telling me beforehand, "meet me on the comer at 7:00 p.m." and that meant to be standing at the direct corner of the kitchen cabinet desk at home at 7:00 p.m. to answer the phone. So I'd stand there when it was 7:00 p.m. and when he called I'd pick up the phone real fast like he had instructed me to do. Henry, who communicated to me as "Susan" rather than "Sharon," then said, "Hello Susan, how are you this evening? I am just testing."

"Oh, hi," I said as I smiled and twisted my short hair.

"You can hang up now, I was just testing." So, I hung up and went off to play in my room. Henry was in contact with me often. I think he had studied lots of psychology so he knew how to best control me. He used positive psychological means because he said he felt it would work better.

My mom said, "Who were you talking to?" She had on her red Christmas dress and her slippers. Her hair was still brown.

I shrugged and said, "No one," because due to the programming I was already under, my normal everyday conscious personality didn't house the phone experience with Henry Kissinger. I wasn't lying, the event was registered under a different personality than the one that interfaced with my mother. Henry could call anytime and 'get me.' When I saw him in person he always said right off, in a silly teasing voice as he reached out and tickled me, "I'm gonna get you." Which switched me to the personality he wanted and in that way he accessed, or "got me."

Henry set up a group of personalities to be my neighbor's, "Joe's and Mary's child." He told people it was an experiment he was performing to see if one person could be brought up in two ways from two different perspectives to see how the physical/genetic influences really did work since both personalities' mindsets shared the same physical body and genetic structure. It was a controlled experiment about the role environment and behavior versus genetics played in IQ. They wanted to see how strong the mind could be - if it was the overriding factor. They were trying to see if thinking you were elite and being brought up elite would increase IQ or if a common child would have the same IQ if not stimulated as much. Susan was the common experience part of the experiment, the control; and Sharon, the inner twin personality counterpart, was the elite. More on this twin programming in the next chapter

I was instructed by Henry Kissinger to eat alphabet cereal on certain mornings and do mental exercises that he gave me. For instance, I had to get the alphabet sorted from the box and all lined up on the kitchen table. Then I had to put a piece of cereal that was shaped into an 'a' on my tongue and then hold up a mirror and look at it in the mirror. I had to do 20 of the alphabet backwards and 20 of the alphabet forward while I was looking in the mirror. It was usually only 20 because often some letters were missing from the cereal box, so Henry said to just do 20. I don't know why I had to put them on my tongue and then stick my tongue out with the letter on it and look in the mirror, but I did it just like Henry said. My mother got mad at me because she said I should eat my food not play with it, but she didn't understand my need for training. Henry said she was uneducated and ignorant, and that he was making me into a genius. I didn't know what that meant. Other times, I had to focus my eyes on a pin that was stuck into the top of a pencil eraser and follow it back and forth and up and down. And I learned to cross one eye. leaving my left eye looking straight ahead. All this was done in preparation for my later use as Henry's 'mind file'.

Further Condition

Following instructions, my mother took me to "meetings" at a church lady's home who lived behind our church. The purpose of these meetings was to instruct my mother how to "train me." She

was given instructions on forms of punishments and abuses to give me at home if I didn't do what was "prescribed." Those punishments included being locked in a dark closet for long periods of time, having food withheld sometimes for a day or two, being slapped across the face or burned by a cigarette if I resisted any of the rules. Often I was abused in these ways, as my mother carried out her own programmed instructions, in spite of my "good behavior."

I was taught to write backwards at the age of four because my programmers felt that I would be more intelligent if I was forced to use both sides of my brain. In addition, I was given special eye exercises to perform several times a day. I began ballet at five and endured years of ballet training from a perverted ballet teacher named Madame Olga. Episodes of sex rituals and traumas were laced into our dance classes. At times the entire ballet class was abused out behind her little dance school that was located just off Topanga Canyon Boulevard in Woodland Hills.

My dentists, the Phillips brothers, had a dental office also located on Topanga Canyon Boulevard, around the corner from my ballet school. Acting independently of the church, but being friends of my father, they participated in my "preparation" by torturing me with sharp dental instruments by drilling my teeth and poking exposed nerves without the use of Novocain. Who could have known then that, when I grew up and married, my "chosen" husband would be first "in line" to purchase these successful dental practices, which is just what happened.

After I started kindergarten, my mother informed me that a group of people from the First Baptist Church were going to leave the church and form a new church called the First Presbyterian Church of Woodland Hills. In the beginning days, the church met at my elementary school, while we waited for our new church to be built on Platt Avenue. Our new minister's name was Rev. Alden McKelvey, and nothing seemed to change much, except the minister had a different name, we had a bigger building, and now more people were involved.

School was somewhat of a respite, but even there I was not always free from abuse. Starting in first grade, I was taken out of my class at Woodlake Avenue Elementary School (located a mile from the church), to attend 'choir practice' at the children's choir director's home a block from school. Her name was Mrs. Rebecca Muir. At her home, in conjunction with practicing church songs for performances at Sunday church services, I was trained to perform and participate in rituals and was forced to participate in child pornography films when a group of men entered her house and took over. Snuff pornography where little children or babies were killed was also filmed at her house. Like the other women involved, Mrs. Muir, publicly, a meek, gentle woman, dutifully complied with the direction of these men.

One day just after returning to school from Mrs. Muir's house, I went straight to the principal's office. Her name was Mrs. Stella Greer. For some unknown reason, the threats of death if I told were not consciously available to keep me silenced and switched out of the personality who had just witnessed the pornography, and I told her everything I had been forced to do at choir practice. I had seen Mrs. Greer talk sternly to us kids at assemblies and just knew that she was a person of great power who would be able to stop the bad people from hurting all of us children. But, her response was enough to reinforce everything my abusers had threatened over my young years. I will never forget it. Mrs. Greer's face turned red with anger as she wrathfully shook her finger at me, sternly warning in no uncertain terms, "Young lady, I don't ever want to hear such filth out of your mouth again. You stop making up these horror stories and get back into your classroom where you belong!"

At that moment, I realized that what my abusers said was true. No one would help me. People would think I was crazy if I did tell, and I had "no where to run, and no where to hide." I couldn't survive without them and there was no one to help, just like they said. I was trapped. Why this adult woman, my school principal, was unable to logically question how a child of my young age could be privy to or know such adult and pornographic language, never seemed to cross her mind.

Our pediatrician, Dr. Cusack, located on Ventura Boulevard in Woodland Hills, participated by suturing up my vagina when it was torn from abuse, and cared for me in other ways when the abuse became too physically obvious. When I requested my childhood medical records several years ago, I was told that Dr. Cusack had moved out of the state and that all of his records had been destroyed.

At home in the evenings, while my mother was picking up my grandmother from work at Lockheed in Santa Monica, and in the middle of the night, my father continued his own form of tortures; raping me, sodomizing me, filming me pornographically with my brother, submerging me in the bathtub or swimming pool until I was nearly dead, torturing me extensively at his welding shop with the use of electroshock delivered through hot welding equipment inserted into my vagina, and leaving me outside all night alone during rain storms. He also kept dead bodies under our home for his sick perversions. He tortured and "trained" me under the house lots of nights before dinner, and would lock me into boxes and leave me there for long periods of time, often with body parts from cadavers he kept. One night he took me to a graveyard and forced me to watch as he dug up a coffin, opened it, forced me inside and reburied it. I split off more personalities. One personality split wasn't enough to handle this trauma.

One Saturday my father took me and one of my dolls out to the old refrigerator that was in the corner of our garage. Quickly, he shoved me inside and clutching my blond baby doll, I begged, frantically clinging to my father's shirt, "No Daddy! Please don't."

Slapping my hands away, my father scolded, "Now, show Daddy what a big girl you can be. If you try to get out," he knelt down beside me, "Daddy will have to beat you." He slammed the door shut and I could hear him taping it closed with the black electrical tape he used on endless mechanical things. When I cried out from inside the cold refrigerator, my father angrily pounded on the door, yelling for me to shut up.

Petrified in the dark, cramped cubicle, I listened for any sound that might indicate that my father was opening the door to set me free. Ominous silence prevailed. Feeling unbearably cold and unable to take another breath, I experienced the intervention of three ethereal beings, transparent yet sparkly, misty-blue colored angels who suddenly materialized outside the refrigerator and appeared to reach through the insulated metal to infuse me with life-sustaining energy. In a transcendent state, it was as if I was held in suspended animation as these angels lent their life energy to me.

Some time later, when my father came to release me, probably thinking that, like all the other times he had taken me near death, I would emerge fragmented yet grateful to him for saving me, he checked the pulse on my neck, and finding none, he panicked. He carried my limp body across the garage and laid me on his workbench. "Now I've done it, damn it," I heard my father say to himself from my out-of-body vantage point. "I've gone too far and killed her, now what am I going to do?" Quickly he slid my lifeless body into a black plastic trash bag, tied it off, carried me out the side door, and placed me in the crawl space beneath the house.

The rescuing angels reappeared and one telepathically communicated that it wasn't time for me to leave my family, that I needed to get back into my body and go on up for dinner. Unbeknownst to my father, I still had a spark of life left in me, and God, knowing His plan for my life was not yet complete, fanned that spark until I came back to life. When I reunited with my body, it ached and I felt nightmarishly sick but crawled out of the bag, wobbled out of the crawl space and walked in a dissociated state, back into the house where my family sat eating dinner. My father looked up at me as if he had seen a ghost and my mother, unaware of any of the "incidences" of the day, smiled and told me to sit down to eat.

The trauma and torture was endless, occurring nearly every day and night of my childhood. The tortures were so numerous that it would require a separate volume to chronicle all those I have

remembered so far. Leaving my body in order to 'dissociate' from the pain and continuing to create separate personalities, often alongside personalities my abusers intentionally created for their own use, was my mind's way of keeping me alive to function in the day-to-day world.

I had two worlds: one secret world that I lived and knew only when I was triggered into it; and a second, 'normal' conscious world of day to day experiences. These worlds were kept separate by the use of trauma and programming. I was my father's and other people's project for the future. An investment that provided him access to high-tech hypnotic information, financial security, and most probably immunity from prosecution for charges involving pedophilia, child prostitution, and child pornography.

"He shall give His Angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone." -- Psalms 91:11-12

Chapter Three: We're Off to See the Wizard

Common Mind Control Themes

Hand signals are a common mode of control for victims of ritual abuse and mind control. There was a hand signal program I was taught when I was very little, that was sung to the song Frere Jacques, with the nursery rhyme, Where Is Pointer? The common song/game is played by singing; "Where is Pointer? Where is pointer?" And then you put up your pointer finger and say, "Here I am, Here I am. How are you, today sir? Very well, I thank you ...run away, run away..." Then you put your hands behind your back. I was taught the version:

"Where is silencer?" With a finger held up to the lips commanding silence.

"Where is kingpin?" With large pin inside the middle finger, that I was poked with just before singing, "run away, run away."

"Where is little man?" Holding up a pinky finger while singing, "Little man can't run away."

"Where is thumbkin?" Holding up a thumb and being thumped on the head while singing, "You can't run away."

Wizard of Oz

In conjunction with the traumas at church and school, my father reinforced my programming with the use of fairy tales, among them Disney themes and The Wizard of Oz. I watched the Wizard of Oz every year and at other times my programmers laced in other programs and hypnotic commands in a creative way that allowed the movie themes to keep me under control. Although I could not consciously remember what I was programmed to forget, this use of fantasy, used in an effort to keep amnestic and to scramble what I had actually participated in, was very effective ...almost foolproof.

Sometimes in the middle of the night, after having watched the Wizard of Oz, my father would traumatize me in order to cause me to dissociate, which created the perfect trance state for programming. In this altered state, he would tell me that "over the rainbow" was a bridge to the "other" world, and that I could walk over the rainbow bridge into the other world and it would remain separate from my everyday world. He told me that what happened over the rainbow would feel unreal, like a dream. After encounters that I was supposed to forget, I was conditioned to the word "home." It began with "There's no place like home" being associated with being back in my bed, sleeping, after a night of being used in child pornography or prostitution.

Later my mother, father, or others would say these words after my use in Washington, D.C. in the White House or other places I was sent under program. For years these words functioned as a way to reorient me back into my everyday world, without carrying back with me the reality of what had happened. I was instructed to, "sleep and wake up at home in my bed with the Land of Oz so very far away. That place that felt like a fairy tale ...that I must have made up ...was only a dream ...was now very far away." I was now on the other side of the rainbow and was conditioned to believe that those experiences never really happened, that they were only a dream. Later in my teen years all it took was for my mother or father to say, "Honey, you can sleep all the way home," and I was conditioned like Pavlov's dogs to respond to the word "home" with total and complete amnesia of what had just happened to me.

If my subconscious mind threatened to divulge the secrets, my father programmed me to "wake and eat chocolate chip cookies to remember to forget." And for years, the next 40 years, as this powerful programming commanded, I awoke out of a sound sleep if memory of this secret world seeped up as I

entered first theta and then delta brain wave sleep patterns. Following program, I robotically walked into the kitchen to eat chocolate chip cookies in order to "re-mind" myself.

Another Oz theme that was used to program me was the song, "If I Only Had A Brain." During a programming session, a man whispered in my ear, telling me, "It's safer not to have a brain, it's easier not to have a brain; all you have to do to stay on track is to follow the yellow brick road. Then you won't be scared like the cowardly lion and you can keep your heart which you will need to get you down the yellow brick road to the land of glitter and gold, glitter and gold, glitter and gold. Follow the yellow brick road to somewhere over the rainbow way up high." In my trance state, this verse went deeply into my subconscious mind and was an evervigilant internal reference to remind me to forget, and could be enforced by any of my controllers when the need arose to keep me from unlocking repressed memory.

Alice in Wonderland was used as a theme to program in 'time awareness.' My programmers said, "See the rabbit who says, 'watch the watch, watch the watch,' and feel your eyes grow sleepy and tired so you can no longer watch the watch but you know it is always there ticking away, keeping perfect time. It knows what time it is so you won't ever have to worry about what time it is for the watch will keep perfect time. And now at the count of three I want you to wake up ...1, 2, 3..." he snapped his fingers, "and awake. Good girl!"

There were other programs based on fairy tales and Disney themes. Other survivors around the world have also reported many of these same common themes.

Disneyland

When I was five years old my mother and father took me to the newly-opened Disneyland in Anaheim, California. As we walked down Main Street, we ran into Walt Disney and my father stood aside as Walt Disney, larger than life to me, bent down and shook my hand. He told me that if I would write to him he would write back to me. I didn't consciously remember anything else after that. What happened next, though, as I later recalled, was that Walt Disney looked at my father with eyes that said important things I couldn't understand. My father then led my mother in the other direction and I was left alone with Walt Disney. My parents never said goodbye or anything, they just left me and walked away. I was terrified and confused at realizing that my parents just disappeared. Walt took me to an office, lifted me up on a big desk that had a glass piece on top and told me that he was my real father. He said the Mickey Mouse Club was my real family--where I really belonged. Everyone was always telling me I belonged to a different family than my parents and I didn't understand, it was all very confusing. Walt Disney seemed nice but I wasn't with him very long. He called another man in and that man took me by the hand and led me away. This man was a very bad man and he really scared me. He took me into another room and gave me those viewmaster box glasses to look into. He showed me pictures in them that were so scary that other parts of me had to come to see them. It was too much for a little girl to see. Dead things--cut up bodies, dead cats skinned with big eyeballs and their tails cut off, people cut up, etc. We had that toy at home but mine had cartoon pictures in it. This event involved several of my personalities.

Next, the man took me to scary rides and poked me with needles in my waist and legs while he said things during the Alice in Wonderland ride, like, "This is not really happening. I am not really sticking this needle in your leg. You are just like Alice. You also ate the large mushroom and feel funny--this is not real." He kept laughing and acting like all this was fun and games and really amusing, but it was terrifying and confusing to me, and I couldn't understand why he was hurting me. Parts of me split off as they withstood the abuse and I pushed the experiences deep into my subconscious mind as my programming dictated.

Then the man took me to Mr. Toad's Wild Ride and sexually abused me by taking off my panties and pushing me up and down on top of his penis while we were going through the dark, enclosed ride. During many years that followed, I got hurt on Mr. Toad's ride. I was instructed to be extra sexy and wild

and crazy in order to be "good" and not get hurt. If I did it right and performed on cue, then I didn't get hurt when it was over. When we came out into the light from the darkened ride, it was over and if I did it right I could stop and go back to my Mommy. If I did it wrong, I had to do it all over again until I did it right. They always hurt me real bad if I made a mistake. I tried my best. It seemed like I had to stay at Disneyland for a long time, but at the end of the long day, I got to have a pretty balloon that I looked at as I laid in the back seat of the car all the way home. I was devastated, exhausted and out of it during the ride back to Woodland Hills, but looked up at the pretty Mickey Mouse ears balloon or the Mickey Mouse balloon within a balloon, before I finally fell into a long deep sleep.

We went to Disneyland yearly, often for birthday celebrations. On another visit, a suited man escorted me to the front of the Snow White ride. As he guided me on board the boat, he flashed a badge to the attendant and explained that he had special permission to take this special guest on the ride. We entered a boat and rode through the canals while he refrained the fairy tale themes. As we passed them by, he stuck needles in my thighs at different times after he finished a line about a story. All the classic fairy tales drifted in front of us--the Three Pigs and the Big Bad Wolf. He told me that the big bad wolf could always find me and get me, even if I was in the well-built brick house, and that the wolf could huff and puff and blow my house down. He told me my parents couldn't protect me from the wolf either because he was big and bad and wild. I can still hear the Big Bad Wolf song playing. The man kept poking me with the needle and it hurt. I kept watching his hand with the needle trying to anticipate the pain and he kept telling me the scary stories. I didn't know what to do and couldn't get away because we were in a boat and I couldn't get off. Then he almost choked me to death in the front of the boat but kept talking and telling me the fairy tales, as if nothing had ever happened. I was terrified.

Later on, in the dark of the night a man in a suit took me on the Matterhorn and stopped the rollercoaster ride at the waterfall where he told me everything that happened was washed away and gone forever. He made me get off the ride and stand on the rocks high up inside the Matterhorn all alone in the dark that night. I was really tired. He said they were leaving me there alone because I didn't do it right and I didn't listen well. I was terrified in the dark, wet, rocky area that was whooshing with the sound of the wind and cars from the ride speeding by. But it got even scarier when the area fell silent. Cold and tired, I was left totally alone for what seemed to my child self like forever. When the man finally came to get me, he asked if I was ready to be good. Then he said a lot of words while he carried me to my parents. Handing me, all limp and wet, over to my mother, he said, "She's asleep." My mother was crying, my father was smiling and the man in the suit said, "It's been done, she's now ready for the next level."

My father carried me out of Disneyland but stopped to buy me a Mickey Mouse balloon to look at, to, as he said, "remember the good time you had." Disneyland was never really fun; there was always pain and torture.

Another night at Disneyland I climbed the steps to the Swiss Family Robinson Tree House. Once inside one of the rooms a man grabbed me, slapped my face really hard and flashed a bright light in my eyes. He said, "Your mother is not your real mother, your father is not your real father. You are made of much greater things, so great in fact that Walt Disney would claim you for his own. So remember what I've said about who your real parents are." When he was finished with me I climbed down from the treehouse, sobbing hysterically with each and every step. My mother was waiting for me at the bottom and took me over to the Fritos snack stand to try to get me calmed down.

It's A Small World ride was purposefully used to create the reality in my mind that I was really just on a ride at Disneyland when later I was taken to foreign countries for use. The programming that blossomed up into my conscious mind after such travel was that I was merely at Disneyland. One day my father accompanied me into the international phone display. I picked up many of the colored phones and listened to the different languages and my mom stood close by while my father appeared to walk away.

But my father really hid behind the phone display and talked like he was sending a message through the phone. Initially, I thought it was someone else talking to me through the phone, someone who mysteriously knew my name. When I caught on that it was my father, I knew better than to let on and continued with the charade. Soon a man in a Disney uniform came and linked arm in arm with me like the characters do in the Wizard of Oz, and escorted me over to the main headquarters near the dog kennels.

On another trip, I was taken on the Jungleboat ride at Disneyland at night. It was very dark and I noticed that no one was in line as my parents guided me through the area where people normally waited to enter the ride. We were all alone and I was terrified, anticipating what was to occur next. I had learned early on, and knew at a very deep subconscious level that my parents were of no protection to me; instead they were often the very ones that delivered me to very terrifying people, experiences and places. This night was no different. I was taken to the very back of the boat and a man in a dark suit emerged, and said, "I will take it from here," at which point my father took my mother by the elbow and escorted her robotically away. I was afraid.

"Laura," the man called out. Laura was my school personality who was programmed to be cooperative and helpful. He said, "Laura, I need your help so that things run very smoothly tonight."

"Yes, sir." I replied, now switched to Laura.

"I want you to turn around 7 times and I will be tying a rope around your waist so we don't lose you here tonight."

I couldn't imagine how I was about to get lost on this big boat, but I complied as he tied the rope around my waist and as commanded, I began turning as he counted, "One, two, buckle my shoe, no, three, four, shut the door. The door to your mind, that is, five, six, pick up sticks, and ...seven will do the trick." I didn't know what the trick was but I was soon to find out. "Here, now you just sit down right here," as he pointed to a place at the back of the boat, while he held onto me with the rope like I was a dog on a leash. Before I knew exactly what was happening he lifted me up and plunged me into that cold, dark water. As I hit the water, I was sure that the alligators that I'd seen earlier that day on the Jungle Cruise were going to get me and eat me alive in the dark. The boat was going and I was being dragged behind it. I held onto the rope so that I could stay facing forward. Reminding me of the Wizard of Oz programming theme, the man yelled, "Lions and tigers and bears, oh my." Then pointing into the dark water near me, he tapped into the Peter Pan theme I was also programmed with as he anxiously warned, "I believe there's an alligator there on your left, no I mean on your right, right there behind you, he's swimming right up behind you on your other left." I was frantically panicked; and in an attempt to make it all go away I squeezed my eyes as tightly shut as I could, and held onto the rope for dear life.

"You're a very strong little girl," he called out, "just like your father told me you were. You know, the survival of the fittest." Then he began to reel me back in and lifted me up by the rope as I climbed over the railing to get back on the boat. "You passed that test with flying colors! Your father said that this test would be easy for you."

I felt numb and my teeth were chattering from the cold. My dress was all wet and so were my shoes and socks and panties. I was freezing. My father always did talk to me about the 'survival of the fittest' and how I would be strong.

"You could fly like Tinkerbell does, across the sky at night attached to this rope like you are. Should I leave it on so that you can fly with Tinkerbell tonight, high up in the sky?"

"No, sir," I replied looking down at the rope and shivering.

He laughed real loudly. "You know that you fly with her every time you see her fly; you fly high, high away from all the things you think you remember here, but none of those things really happen; they are all just figments of your imagination. Do you know what figments are?"

I shook my head no.

"Figments are fruit that you eat. And you have enjoyed all the rides here tonight and had a lot of fun and now it is almost time for you to go home. You know, like Mickey says in the song, "Now it's time

to say good-bye to all our company, M. 1. C. K. E. Y. M. O. U. S. E.; you know the song on TV, the one that you hear when you watch the Mickey Mouse Club?

"Yes," I said, now in total hypnotic, robotical program.

"When you see Tinkerbell and all the beautiful fireworks here tonight, you will remember the good and only the good things that happened here today and tonight. All the good will float up into your conscious mind just like Tinkerbell flies high in the sky, so will all the good things [that happened] fly high up into your conscious mind. You have had the best day here at Disneyland and want to return as soon as you can for more fun."

In a complete hysterical panic, my mother rushed up and threw her arms around me as if she was rescuing me. She threw some sort of dark cloth over me, and she and my father took me off the boat. She took me into a bathroom to change clothes near the Jungleboat ride. My mother ushered me into a stall and began changing my clothes without closing the door behind us. I was embarrassed. A lady came into the restroom and my mom said to her, "My daughter fell into the water and we are changing her clothes."

No wonder it has been difficult, at times, for me to trust my own awareness, even as an adult.

One night, my programmers decided I was to actually replace the real Tinkerbell in flight over the park at night in the dark. The men in park uniforms walked up behind the real Tinkerbell who was actually an older lady and this night she was in costume, ready to fly. The men told her to step aside, that I was going to fly that night. I didn't know where my mom and dad went and I was cold and scared. The woman was very angry. She wanted to do her job and yelled at the men but they told her just to relax, that she would still get paid and that no one would have to know she didn't fly and she could go home early and still collect her paycheck. Still angry she left and the men dressed me in a white Tinkerbell costume and strapped me into the flight harness. After I was secured, a man asked me if I was ready. He showed me where to hold onto the front straps so I wouldn't get my hands or arms ripped off while I was flying high above the Magic Kingdom. The whole experience was terrifying. They must have given me a drug because everything appeared to be in lots of pictures like a camera with a whole circle of lenses of the same picture, like a kaleidoscope. As I flew, I felt afraid that I would fall out and splat below on everyone, but after a little while I became numb. I could no longer think or feel. I must have fainted because when I got to the other end of the sky ride, a few men removed the harness and tried to get me to come to. One man slapped me but that didn't even wake me up, then someone else put smelling salts under my nose and I woke up. I don't remember much else except I couldn't walk very well and had to be carried out of Disneyland. That night there were no stops on Main Street to get toys or a balloon or candy. I felt sick and laid in the back of our old Buick until we got home. My brothers didn't go with us, it was just my mom and dad and me. My father said I was the 'star' of the family. I didn't like being the star if that's how it was, but he seemed very excited about it.

Twin Sister Programming

My neighbors, my "second mother" Mary and her daughter Peggy, took me to a Hollywood theatre to watch The Parent Trap, a 1961 Disney Movie starring Hayley Mills. The theme of this movie helped to shape the reality of my inner "twin sister," Sharon. I was Susan and my twin sister was Sharon. This Sharon personality was created in an attempt to further split my mind and was anchored within my personality structure in order to house a vast reservoir of experiences with the elite. Sharon was to identify herself with "high society."

Now of course, my inner twin sister Sharon also had to have programming experiences at Disneyland. To accomplish that our neighbor Mary took me to Disneyland with her daughter Peggy, who was my age. At one point we visited the beautiful Magic Castle that is located in the middle of the Magic Kingdom. As I walked through the Castle, exploring the area, I rounded a corner and as I stepped into a darkened area, a man in a black cape that had been hiding in a dark corner of the castle stepped forward and grabbed me. He put his hand over my mouth so I wouldn't scream and he elbowed me in the

stomach before he raped me. Then he took me in the direction of the dog kennels in the front of Disneyland where other bad things happened. Every year, Sharon had to watch the "President Show with Lincoln" that played in a theatre on Main Street and in order to keep her secret experiences hidden from her conscious mind, this twin sister part of me also had to be exposed to many of the same kinds of trauma.

Sharon was created to be Catholic, and Mary and Peggy often took me with them to Catholic mass. (They didn't know about my connection to Henry Kissinger.) I was taught about Holy Water and genuflecting and the Stations of the Cross and Confession and Hail Marys and saying the Rosary. Peggy let me borrow her rosary beads that had a little blue enamel picture of the Blessed Mary on it. I learned to say, "Hail Mary full of grace the Lord is with thee," over and over again for each bead. We always had to wear a hat or a scarf. They had a lot of rules you had to follow. Had to get that Holy Water and dab it on yourself at your Stations of the Cross; forehead, heart then each shoulder, before you genuflected upon entering the pews. Then we knelt down and said the Rosary for a very long time. With my childlike consciousness, I thought it was a dumb thing to do and kept asking everyone why we had to say that and what it would do, but all everyone ever said was that I asked too many questions. During the many times I attended mass with Mary and Peggy, I silently prayed to the statue of the Blessed Virgin and asked her to help me, although I was unable to "think" about why I needed help.

Sharon was a "child of the elite" and later on, serviced the elite, such as the Rockefellers. She was often the sexually-oriented personality when I was used for sex and mind file work. "Sharon" was my highly sexual counterpart and "Sue" contained the messages in mind files.

To further my split conditioning, there was a small stone building in a cemetery where the men in suits locked me in for the whole night. They took my clothes away from me, pushed me into the dark room and closed the door. It was cold on the concrete floor and I could feel spider webs in the corners. It was scary, so I just sat down on my feet in the corner, hugged my legs to my body and closed my eyes.

After awhile, an angel appeared. She said her name was Maria and that I was being prepared for the future. She said that she and other angels would help me and I would be "sustained." I didn't know what that word meant but felt like it was okay because I felt so much love from her. While my spirit self was sitting next to her on a bench, my physical body was still in that concrete room. She told me she would be very close to me later when I was older and could understand more. She explained that these people were unkind because they didn't understand, but that my angel friends loved me very much and would be there whenever I needed them. All of a sudden, before I was ready to leave her, I was back in the cold concrete cubicle, still sitting squatted on my feet and she was gone. I felt like I had traveled somewhere and I wanted to go back there because it didn't hurt and wasn't cold there, but I couldn't figure out how to get there. I had to wait for the angel to escort me. Everyone was always escorting me everywhere--on earth and in heaven. When the men came to let me out, it was still dark and they dropped me off at home. Entering the breezeway, I went through the back door, into my room and went to sleep.

The Golden Arches

Now of course, in order to insure that Sharon's memory was kept separate from my conscious mind, trauma had to be induced to create the dissociative barrier. Among other traumas, I was taken to St. Mel's Catholic Church in Woodland Hills and was molested by a short fat "Father," at the back of the church in a side room. This priest who spoke with an Irish accent and smelled like alcohol, pulled my hair while he sexually satisfied himself in my mouth. When he was finished with me, two men in suits escorted me to an awaiting limousine. I had short hair and wore a felt poodle skirt, flats, white socks and a white blouse. It wasn't unusual to see limousines lined up in front of this large Catholic church for use at funerals or weddings. It was nearing dark and once out of sight of the public, these men were very rough with me. They threw me into the back seat and once inside the limo I laid on the seat in a fetal position, rocking myself, terrified out of my mind.

Arriving at the new McDonald's, one man told me, "Look at the Golden Arches, they are your Highway to Heaven. Whenever you enter to cross over, you won't remember having been here." I went in as Sue and after I was drugged I came out as Sharon. I had no awareness that Sharon was me. In my internal, subconsciously created reality, I believed Sharon to be my physically separate, twin sister, but consciously I had no knowledge of any other part of me except Sue. All I knew was there were lots of times when I was told that I would be allowed to see my twin sister, my secret twin sister. I felt sad. I missed her desperately and I felt that she was always in danger and needed me. The man who was present to create this part of my programming was a very affluent and locally well-known and respected Catholic OB/GYN doctor, named Dr. McGinnis. He told me that I could find my twin sister in the bathroom, so I ran there to find Sharon. The doctor and another man followed me as I ran into the small one room bathroom that I entered from outside McDonald's, in tears desperate to find my twin sister. Once inside, as directed, I looked around and came out and told the doctor that he could come inside, that there was no one else there. I felt very robotic. Entering the small bathroom with me, he locked the door behind us and told me to sit on the floor in the corner of the stall. I did as he instructed. He took my arm and put it up on the toilet lid, slipped a rubber cuff around my arm and got a big needle out. As he injected the drug into my arm he commanded, "count backwards from three."

"One..." I started.

"NO!" The doctor yelled angrily. "I said backwards, starting from three."

"Three, two," I slumped over and passed out.

He began slapping my face and I couldn't wake up but he called out, "Sharon, Sharon, Sharon."

Finally after lots of slapping, Sharon said, "Yes."

"Get up and walk out to the car." The doctor commanded. Sharon obeyed.

He carried his black doctor's bag and we took off as soon as he got into the limo. I overheard him say to the driver that if he ever got caught he would just take his black bag and say he was on an emergency, that way no one would ever question him.

We drove down Ventura Boulevard to a jewelry store. The doctor and I went in, myself still switched to my twin sister Sharon. He told the store owner I was looking for a present for my mother, but I wasn't really. These people always told lies. He put a diamond bracelet on my arm and said, "You're used to jewels, remember?"

"Yes," I said, smiling. It was true that Sharon was used to riches.

"That is all you need to remember, that you're used to jewels." As we turned to leave, he called out to the owner at the other end of the store to say that we were finished shopping.

Next, I was dropped off at a big house somewhere and taken downstairs to be filmed in child pornography. There were men in leathers and chains with guns. A man ripped my clothes off and sodomized me while another guy watched as it was filmed. Then I was chained up, whipped and filmed more. They liked it when I cried out. They said I had to, in order to make a good film, but I really wanted to be quiet and keep all to myself so it would ruin the film. They put a baby on a wooden table and killed her while I was being raped and they said her lifeblood was filling me and that I liked taking the baby's life into me. I didn't really. I didn't want them to hurt the baby, ever. But I had to smile and laugh while they filmed it or they said I would be killed, also. They made these snuff films often with babies or little girls. "The younger, the purer," the men said. They believed fetuses were the best to get the purest untouched lifeblood. They often ingested the flesh afterwards, and sometimes the heart, while it was still beating. It was terrifying, vile and disgusting. And they fed it to me for the filming. I was always forced to smile.

After it was all over I was taken by limo back to McDonald's, into the same bathroom where some man snapped his fingers in front of my face and said, "Susie, you've fainted," which, by calling out that name, switched me back into my conscious personality. Once revived, these men drove me to my street, dropped me off and told me to walk the highway to heaven into sleep. In program trance, I walked the short block home, went through the breezeway into the back door, and climbed into my bed. It was dark outside but the yellow porch light was on and I knew my way through the house with my eyes closed.

That night, alone in my bed, I said the prayer I usually said with my mother or my grandmother each and every night, "Angel of God, my guardian dear, to whom His Love commits me here. Ever this day be at my side. To light and guard, to rule and guide."

I beg of you, dear reader, to be open to the possibility that these sorts of atrocities did happen, and that they are still happening to other children today, even right now at this very moment. Please open your heart and know that this could be true so together we can all put a stop to the abuse that terrifies and threatens to destroy the children.

McDonald's was often a part of my abuse whether I was in California or later away from home when after use in different states or countries, they took me to "The Golden Arches" and

gave me coke (later aspartame-infused diet coke with a twist of lemon) and french fries. McDonald's was a very powerful program for repressing events of national and international usage.

The Foundation is Built

By the tender age of five, 1 was conditioned through torture and high tech hypnotic tect and electroshock, to hurt myself in many ways should I begin to remember the secret activities, was a part of. Per programmed suggestion, if I began to remember I would stub my big toe c burn myself on the stove, thereby removing my focus from the remembered secret experienck and re-routing my attention to my wound. I was instructed where to cut my wrist in order to take my own life, should I begin to remember or tell. There were also accident programs instilled t insure my death if I began to remember. Endless programs were installed int in my life that were available for later use in suppressing my hidden activities

Over the years, I was told the following while I was being tortured, in an~ you remember, you will kill yourself; if you tell, people will think you are crazy and will loc you up in a mental institution; if you don't obey us, we will kill your family or your dog and ca if you tell, we will kill you." I had witnessed killings for years and knew these were not id threats.

My programmers also created within me, reporting personalities that were instructed to tell on me in regard to anything I did that was stepping out of line. This common feature of mind control is reported by many survivors.

"He called a little child and had him stand among them. And he said: "I tell you the truth, unless you change and become like little children, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven. Therefore, whoever humbles himself like this child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven."
--Matthew 18:2-4

"See that you do not look down on one of these little ones. For I tell you that their angels in heaven always see the face of my Father in heaven."
-- Matthew 18:10-11

Chapter Four: Uncle Charlie, Kissinger, Hope and their Little Puppet.

My Inner Twin Sister, Sharon Weatherby

I was paraded in many circles as a child, as Sharon Weatherby, and sitting on the fringes watching me was my Uncle Charlie. He told me that he would always be there, rain or shine.

Uncle Charlie was always at my father's Aunt Maude's when we went to visit her, just dad and me. He would be waiting for us on her little couch with the lace coverlets, the sheer curtain behind holding a green chameleon lizard that I thought was real until I got older. All decked out in a tan suit, his Dapper Dan shoes and a carnation in his lapel, Uncle Charlie smiled, shook my hand and winked at me. If he had on glasses, he would take them off to make sure I caught the wink and that was my cue to keep the secret. He told me before that it would hurt my father's feelings if he knew he wasn't really my father so I shouldn't ever mention it. "Otherwise," he said, "it would likely break his heart." I sure didn't want to hurt my Daddy anymore than he already was with his neck injury, slipped disk and parents who abused and didn't love him. And he loved me so much, unless he had to hurt me. Uncle Charlie said, "Unfortunately he has to do that to make you powerful one day." So when I met Uncle Charlie with my father the first time, I never let on that I knew him. Later Charlie said, "Young lady, that was the finest acting job I've ever seen. You're hired!"

Well I was "hired" at a very young age, but was never paid a cent. And Uncle Charlie was my representative, come to take me to meet first, Bob and, soon after, Henry. Sharon was indeed programmed to be precocious and one day reported the following joke repertoire to Henry and later to audiences Bob and Henry sent me to:

> "I told my owners, it's enough that you clowns expect me to work for free. You know it was bad enough that they broke the child labor laws and I told them about that when I learned it in school. They just laughed. But on top of that was SLAVE LABOR, and I recited the Constitutional Amendment that was causing a problem in my internal mind file legal systems. I told Henry it kept getting thrown out and I pretended it was repeatedly escaping and leaping out of my right ear. He thought I was funny and told me to refile it anyway - then I was sent off for more reconditioning. I never thought they would stop with that stuff and I was right. Zap, zap, zap."

These were the type of jokes that Bob Hope programmed into me for shows when I was demonstrated to others that had similar mind control "interests." The first time I recited it to Henry for his approval, he raised his eyebrows and looked at me over his glasses; he usually seemed either pretty amazed or leery at the jokes Bob installed into me. I was too young and too fragmented to have come up with this type of material on my own.

In later years when people would ask Bob where I came from, Bob jokingly told them I was picked off a conveyor belt. He always teased about where I came from. Bob told me once that he chose me because there was that little something special that he saw in my eyes.

Henry created my personality system and Bob handled the dialogue, jokes, songs, dances, and entertainment, and supplied Henry with famous friends and connections from all over the world, including Hollywood celebrities and business and political connections. Henry said contacts were everything, and that he and Bob worked well together because, despite their differences, together they more than doubled their influence and efficiency. They did wield influence over a large group of people. Henry had the mind and Bob had the means and the connections.

Creating My Inner Universe

Henry worked with me more in the beginning to set up all my systems. He even marked my forehead all over with little x's delineating what he called a "stellar map" of my system. Then he had me look into the mirror and what I saw, in addition to my little five or six year old face, framed by short hair, was black x's all over me. He said those were planets within my inner universe of knowledge and that they were laying in wait for the day they would be occupied. Later he attached the foreign countries, using It's a Small World for the different planets. This kept the information totally separated since the planets had no way of communicating with each other. So all the information remained self-contained but held in orbit in the big blue vastness by stars. All the stars were used as mind files for different movie "stars" or politicians I was used with. The larger stars held larger files of personalities I was used with more regularly and the smaller stars were reserved for people I only saw on occasion. The largest stars were reserved for Presidents, Kings, Queens, etc. The Council, that all-powerful group of men secretly orchestrating this whole drama, had very specialized, highly advanced satellite systems that traveled all over inside my mind, constantly monitoring my internal "worlds." They could also access interstellularly or interplanetarily and gain access to any information they wanted about any area or person in the system. Council members were the only ones who didn't have any security blocks throughout the system anywhere. They had full and total access like Henry. Bob's access was limited only by his ability to be able to fully access every part of the system. Henry just didn't inform Bob about planets or stars he didn't want him to know about. And Henry told me that he and Uncle Bob rode on little space cycles all around inner space in my head in order to police everything and make sure everything was always in perfect order, with no file on any planet or star ever getting out of order or loose. That way Henry kept my mind files in perfect order. Henry told me the mind files are limitless because the universe is limitless and contains an infinite vastness, always new areas to chart. Henry said it could never be full.

Kissinger And Ever More Sophisticated Programming

Kissinger was the mastermind behind my personality structure, and used others to further his creation. He was usually inside the top security places my father and others took me. There they did all the "prep work," they called it, before I was taken to Henry for his expertise. Prepping, to me, meant torture in machines, chairs, all sorts of horrors and then, when I couldn't function any longer, didn't know my own name, or if I was even real, they would take me to Henry. Henry had a notebook of diagrams he worked from. A "distilled" diagram meant that the original idea and intent had been identified and worked out, and the succeeding diagrams were a further refinement until the end result was total perfection. That's how Henry created my personality structure. Mind control was a secret weapon that he perfected over the years.

Henry had other "robots," as he called them, but I was the one with whom he spent the most time perfecting. He said I was the perfect subject and that my father had done such a great preliminary job that his work was guaranteed a success, where other robots fell short because they "bled through" and so couldn't be relied upon. I knew Henry had other robots because he said he had them for various and sundry things but said that I was the cream of the crop.

Henry said we had a "roving headquarters," and that was always his black briefcase. When I saw his briefcase I was programmed to feel familiar, and my surroundings didn't matter. I could now do my work knowing that everything was okay. At least that is what was suggested for me to think and feel.

As I grew older, I was taken to military bases for more sophisticated programming. Helplessly hooked up to high tech machines that did things to my brain, I had no way of understanding what these people were doing to me or why. I was placed in large metal chambers and left in isolation, sometimes spun, with colored lights, always with only one color at a time. I was restrained in sophisticated chairs with electrodes attached to my head, then electroshocked in a variety of ways. Sophisticated audio equipment also was used on me. Often loud, piercing sounds were relayed through earphones, usually

with different sounds being fed into each ear. I didn't know what exactly they were accomplishing with all of this technology, but I felt tortured by it.

Mind File System

I also continued to be taken to Disneyland for base programming for my government mind file system. At around 8 years old, Henry made up some clever programs to create a place and organization in my head for my international mind files. He created within my personality system one or two children for each nationality; as is similarly portrayed in It's a Small World ride at Disneyland. Henry said the international themes were to anchor in different mind file systems that he said were "culturally oriented." Around The World In 80 Days was a song I sang over and over again when either my mother or my brother played it on the organ or my brother would play it on his accordion. The words I was programmed to respond to were, "Around the world in 80 days, I traveled on when Hope was gone to make my rendezvous..." Henry Kissinger and Bob Hope continued to be cohorts over the years and played around the world with people and governments, as much as that song played repeatedly in my head.

Henry linked a whole array of different programs to the It's a Small World ride and said, "When you walk up to the clock you will hear it tick-tock and then you will dock; tick-tock, ticktock. Keep all information separate. Keep all information clean and neatly in its space with little walls in between." I walked up to the ride, and saw the huge clock tower going tick-tock, then I was told to file through the turnstile until I got to the ride. Henry meant for me to think my actual trips abroad were really just memories about this ride. Due to this programming I had trouble distinguishing reality from fantasy. Disney fantasy was really meant to hide my international experiences from my conscious mind.

Once I got off the ride Henry said something hypnotic to me to lock in the program. He spent a good part of the day with me at Disneyland. He was really funny to the personalities he was programming. I almost laughed when I first saw him. I knew it wasn't allowed, but he did look really funny in the disguise. He had on a beard, wig and hat. He looked okay, but I knew it was really Henry, and so I said, "Henry, why are you wearing those silly things?" I couldn't comprehend why he needed to pretend he wasn't himself.

In his thick-accented, deep, monotonic voice, he told me to be quiet and with irritation in his voice said, "You, my child, are too precocious."

Henry put me on ride after ride, and after I got off the rides, dizzy, nauseated, lightheaded, disoriented, frightened, or whatever, he told me to "listen intently," while he programmed all sorts of things into my mind file system.

"My Name Is Henry Sims"

Henry bought me popcorn and a balloon, too, just like my parents did in order to lock in the program. If people had known that Henry Kissinger was there at Disneyland that day, they would have been very surprised. And if I were the cause of him being recognized, I would surely have been terminated. I was never to allude to being associated with Henry Kissinger. Henry gave me a lot of mixing up on that agenda by having me read "Henry books and cartoons," in his attempt to keep his identity anonymous to my conscious mind. He attempted to scramble my association to him by having me read a variety of books; one was about Henry and the donut machine. He was always whispering, "My name is Henry Sims," in my ear, so no one else could hear him. He also had me eat "Oh Henry" candy bars and read "Oh Henry" cartoons, after he'd given me a hypnotic command to wipe away all memory of him while I was reading or eating the above.

Sometimes Henry would drive us to a parking lot, where we got out and walked some distance to a shopping center or a waterway. Each time we were together, he usually wore a different type hat (sometimes a Dick Tracy one) and a stick-on mustache and/or beard. He used to have a square mustache and a square goatee to match. He wore those off and on. Henry was a master of disguise and could keep his roles straight. He seemed very smart to me as a child.

In the early days, Henry would tell people, "She's a smart cookie, isn't she?" That was when I was about 10, just before my big political White House sexual liaisons were to begin. But I'm getting ahead of myself.

Carousel Program

Henry also programmed me in front of a carousel ride. He had me stand in front of the carousel but he wouldn't let me sit down on a horse or a bench on the ride. I was only 8 years old or so and I wanted to get on the ride and have fun, but Henry said I had to stand up outside of the ride. That day, the carousel in my mind had to be created with me standing up and the files in my mind were to glide smoothly and as easily as the carousel turning. Then it would come to a stop, like the wheel of fortune, at the country in the mind file that Henry would ask for. He told me, "There's a whole other world in your mind files, the whole world." Then he told me, "The carousel makes the files in your head turn easily and effortlessly." My programmers also linked memory of times I was spun until I was dizzy and disoriented in their attempt to keep these mind files under the cloak of national security. As I deprogrammed I often mentally bumped into spin, sleep, suicide, migraine, and drug programs that I had to fight through in order to get to the original experiences. I was often physically sick, as my program dictated, and suffered massive migraine headaches and pain in different parts of my body while retrieving this information I'm sharing with you.

Henry told me, "You are a computer and like magnets repel, if you try to work on a computer, your mind will repel. It will go away and you won't be able to think to operate it. That is of course unless it's "apple blossom time," which was a cryptic reference to New York. Later he programmed in "cherry blossom time," as a code for JFK. In 1991, some 30 years later, as I attempted to document my memories on computer from the island of Kauai, I was continually frustrated, as I would become disoriented upon starting to write my remembered experience. Often after I tenaciously battled my way through the journalizing of my memories, I would smile having won, only to become immediately disoriented, and look again the next moment to find that the information I had just spent one to two hours documenting had been erased by another part of my personality structure who was still following the ordered command of my controllers. It was extremely frustrating, but I was stubborn and refused to give up!

Inner Clock Program

Henry programmed in reporting personalities so he could use them to debrief me in order to access the data he carefully requested I acquire on certain targeted information or individuals. He created a very sophisticated system that allowed me to have an inner clock that not only kept perfect time but, when asked, I delivered the time audibly, and also knew the times around the world and could even record and playback the time that events occurred for me each day. Henry would ask me, "What did you do between the hours of 8 and 5 on June 5th?"

I would recite, "At 8 a.m. I woke up, at 9 a.m. I took a shower, at 10 a.m. I saw so and so..." At anytime Henry could check the inner record to find out where I'd been, who I was with, and what I was saying or doing. He instructed the set-up to house, "who, where and what," and be able to enter "the schedule recording file" into the framework of the base program.

My most important job was to drop the message to people he sent me to, at the right time. Henry said timing was everything. So he taught me to drop messages at the perfect time and to look into the

person's eyes and notice other facial mannerisms and how he or she was breathing. He said I would get it like "perfect clockwork." That was the actual name of a mind file category, to list and recite all the different world times so Henry would know exactly what time it was in each and every country in the world anytime he would ask me - and all this time and place orientation looped back into the It's a Small World ride and the Clock Tower programming.

Henry could remember file names and numbers better than anyone could. He always remembered the major ones all in his head. He had a small notebook where he kept track of other mind files; large lists for intricate blueprints, classified documents, and detailed listings under subheadings. The system of files he created was multi-leveled and multi-tiered, like a wedding cake. Henry told my respective personalities how it looked overall and created a picture in our head so we could see how it worked from inside. We also had an inside "teacher" that we could hear inside the head to teach, remind, command and organize. This teacher was important and worked inside subconsciously and separately with Henry, until I was thirty-six or so, when a chiropractor inadvertently connected my conscious mind up to my inner teacher, who later ultimately helped lead me to freedom. The result was that Henry's inner teacher program was made conscious and I was taught to my conscious mind what was previously subconscious, thus, my conscious and subconscious minds were linked together making the program even stronger and accessible to learning information from others. So, I was then consciously able to realize I was assigned my "inner teacher" and "inner guides," who really were just code names for projects or areas I was involved in. Then, I began to hear the codes consciously and it was activating subconscious personalities or material in my mind files. But once again I am getting ahead of myself.

Chess Anyone?

Henry played games with me; chess, checkers, tic-tae-toe, and concentration; all mind games "to create other files and nooks and crannies to store files," Henry said. He set up a system with a chess game that was intended to house cryptic messages between Henry and others. The Council contacted Henry and built a very strong relationship with him through lengthy discussions and information they sent to him through messages encoded in my mind file system.

Over time, Henry wooed them by creating very sophisticated (yet simple for the intelligent) ways of communicating through the coded chess game where each piece had a very specific meaning that he taught me to memorize in order to relay the code. Over time the secret players knew what the moves meant by heart. They were time worn. "You see the chess board like a clock and all the pieces are recognized in a clockwise motion," Henry instructed me under his hypnotic command. When the chess board was set up, all Henry (or the Council) had to do was to make a move on the chess board and I would memorize and carry the move, containing the cryptic message, back and it would be understood what was meant by the communication. Unilateral wars were directed; the players in the game of war were clearly demarcated. There were no mistakes because everything was programmed and cross-checked like a computer. My mind was programmed and catalogued like a machine, so there could be only absolute precision.

The chessboard was a bridge to the "other world" where my controllers all existed, "like when Dorothy went to Oz," I was told. Henry and Bob and Governor (later President) Reagan and the others were to be seen like Dorothy's friends and family--they existed over the rainbow while my mom and dad and friends were where Auntie Em lived, in the real world. "So just like in the mirror, everything is just the opposite of what you see. Like Sleeping Beauty looking into a pool of clear water and seeing her beautiful reflection, you will go over the rainbow, melt into it." "Over the Rainbow" was always going toward the world that was like Oz, that pretend world of Henry Sims and Bob. Everyone was on the other side, all I had to do was "walk through the liquid mirror to face the other side and that will immediately switch you and turn you around to face a new situation, calm, refreshed and invigorated. Every move, smooth and efficient," Henry instructed me.

The Older Look

Henry created many personalities inside of me who were programmed to be older and wiser than my young years, for his use with others. These personalities were formed and created by watching different selected movies as a child, like My Fair Lady. This was necessary, I overheard Henry tell others, in order to use me at 10 years old, passed off to others as a 16-18 year old. Since I was physically developed by 10 years old, they could pull it off, especially by creating very mature personalities to handle some of their very important clients. By that time I began having my hair done professionally once a week. My hairstyle was short and "chic," was the word Henry used. He needed to provide me with an older look and, in those days, everyone needed me to be older looking, older acting, older everything. My hair was professionally styled every week, in order to more smoothly portray the very mature, polished personalities that he and others helped create for their use. One obstacle was during the time I had my braces on. At that time, there were occasions when I would be taken to my orthodontist, James Mulick, DDS., a UCLA graduate, and late at night, he would remove my front braces and then a day or two later after my use was over, he would replace them. Like everyone else, he was probably also under programming.

In those days, Henry accessed information from my mind files with needles that he stuck in between my knuckles, though never in public. When we were at a meeting or in a public place he just touched my hand to put me into a mind file mode, then he would cue me with key/code numbers to access the specific files he wanted. Later, he used a "time clock theme" and fortunately for me he abandoned the use of needles.

Over time, many personalities were specifically created and enhanced for future use with targeted people, such as presidents, entertainers or foreign leaders. There were "president mind files" that were created strictly for the President's use in whatever way they needed or wanted. I was instructed to wear pearls for times I was to be used strictly as a mind file, and diamonds when I was to be used primarily sexually with presidents, heads of state or world leaders.

I can still hear Henry's voice giving me the commands, with his thick heavy accent he said, "Your eyes are getting so sleepy a train wouldn't rattle you. Now when you are deep asleep you will be able to retain vast reservoirs of information for safekeeping and retrieval by me and only me. This information is safe, very safe, because it can only be accessed by me. Do you understand? Nod if you understand." I nodded my head. "Good," he said, "now we can begin with the taping of the message, 'Mr. President, I was aghast at your stance in Iran. Change directions and face east. The success of this operation depends on it.' "

Other memory compartments he created for other usage were seen to me, inside, as blocks of memory banks that housed information. They all had combination locks that Henry knew the codes to. Many had number and letter codes like, "16R, 17L, and 12 up straight." With the access code, the door to the memory bank in my head would swing open wide and I could go in and read the information Henry wanted. He told me the file to go into and I'd read through the alphabetical mind file system to get to the subject he wanted. Then, I read him the data or accessed messages directed to him from others.

Later on when I was older, I had numerical codes for laundering money to and from places he told me to go.

UCLA

Henry spent time at UCLA Neuropsychiatric Institute in Westwood, California, in the area where they tested me and worked on my brain with all of their high tech equipment; bright lights, goggles, drugs, electroshock, cat scan tubes, etc. Henry walked with the big, heavy Caucasian doctor dressed in a white lab coat down the halls and I walked behind them until we got to the double swinging doors, and

then the doctor held one door open for Henry and I to enter. We all went inside and Henry told me to hop up on the table. The doctor examined my reflexes and looked into my eyes with different lights and gave me tastes and smells and all sorts of things that they said would powerfully effect my brain. Henry told me the doctor was my imaginary friend. He told me that was what I was to think, anyway. In an attempt to further scramble my brain the big doctor crossed his arms over his chest with his hands pointing in opposite directions and said, "Is it east or is it west? I don't know, I just get confused."

NASA

Another time doctors in white coats played perceptual mind games with me at a NASA installation. First they took me "through the course," they called it, and I was taken from chairs that performed different operations, like one that spun, then next to an isolation chamber. They put huge eye machines up to my face and had me close one eye and then the other in order to program each side of the brain separately. Some things were then reversed and programmed into another area of my brain through the opposite eye. They called this "cross-programming." For other functions, both sides of my brain had to be operating syncronistically. Information for mind file use was stored only on one side of my brain. Then, they allowed me to rest a moment before they injected me with some drug after which they put me through the course again (first by a woman, then by a man). They led me from each piece of equipment by the hand because at this point I was a total zombie. When I finished the third go-around of the course of equipment; they put me in a totally soundless isolation chamber. I don't know how long I was in isolation, but doctors in white lab coats released me and asked me questions. I was still spinning; I felt like I couldn't even prevent my head and eyes from continually spinning as I attempted to answer their questions. Focusing my eyes was very difficult. I can still feel and experience, to the point of abreaction, how awful and disorienting it felt. The doctors always acted very superior, but even as a child under mind control, somehow I was able to wonder, "who couldn't win with mind games, under these circumstances." I was only a child who had been put through torture and drugged, and now they wanted to ask me questions as if they were somehow better than I was. After one doctor finished questioning me, he would leave and another doctor would question and test me further.

At the time I was unable to consciously fathom the fact that that there was never any normal life for me. Only "acting" normal outwardly and for the public. Normal was what most people deemed acceptable behavior and I was told to emulate the normal people. So I copied behavior and was only allowed to be around certain people. All other relationships were not allowed. Both my mother and father watched me "like a hawk;" they said I wasn't allowed to go to social events that were not part of my programmed reality.

Henry Got Me into the Pentagon Lots of Times

In order to ready me for this assignment, Henry played "a bingo game" with me inside my head and directed me to the files in the Pentagon by a map he also created inside my head. In the Pentagon file room a code identified each filing cabinet in the room by giving it a letter code for the row and a number code for the number of the cabinet, starting with # 1 at the left. There were 12 rows of 12 cabinets in the area. The floor beneath the cabinets was smooth concrete or marble-like. The files inside the cabinets were labeled with letter and number codes. You had to look up the document you wanted from a listing, to get to the code number in order to look it up in the files. These were kept on the opposite side of the building for security purposes so a person would have to break through two security systems to get to the document they wanted. None were just filed alphabetically, but had a different system altogether for security. The building's windows had those small wavy, wiry lines in them. But the file room didn't have any windows. There were different types of security systems. Some systems set and unlocked with cards, others with keys, and still others were heat, light, voice or pressure activated. In some areas there were red laser beams that shone through the area that housed the filing cabinets.

There were many times that he dressed me in different disguises; dressed me as a man, complete with beard and mustache, or a woman with padding to make me appear heavyset. These disguises were also successful in making me appear different ages. He often had hats that completed my disguise for a job. Henry disguised me and took me in one night. He only did the night entrance on one occasion, when there was an emergency that was worth the risk of abandoning me inside with instructions to self-destruct if apprehended. Henry did something to get an armed guard to agree to take me through the long, gray halls and lines of desks to the area where they had rows of file cabinets full of classified documents. Henry needed some information on a document, so he said something to the guard and the guard took me all through the building unlocking systems as we went. He took me up to the file room and just like in the game Henry and I had played, I went straight for the file cabinet, coded in the row and number on the map in my head. Like a rat in a maze, I knew my way exactly to the desired destination and I used a small flashlight that Henry had given me for this purpose. The file area had cameras that filmed the area, like in banks. Those had to somehow be shut down. Henry told me to pull the file, photographically memorize its entire contents within a prearranged mind file and minutes to completely "photograph" a multi-page document with my mind. There was no, enough time to read it, but I photographed it quickly, and then I returned to the guard. I think the agreement was that I could only have 2 minutes in an open drawer once I located the document I think Henry challenged guys that thought I couldn't do such things that fast or other things than seemed humanly impossible, so that he could get me into different highly secured buildings Henry also palmed guards and at other times got special clearances, or would work a deal out with a guard or the guard's boss. It was tricky because guards had to log their Henry would help provide them with an alibi for the time they were helping him.

During regular business hours, Henry would prostitute me to top Pentad, guards, whoever he needed to manipulate or access in order to gain the information he wanted There were certain Pentagon officials who were more cooperative than others. In later years he took me to meetings with men at the Pentagon in order to "debrief' me in front of them.

At the Pentagon there was also an audio-visual room, as they called it back in the late 60's and early 70's, where persons with top clearances could go to see a movie (later videos), of top secret projects and other classified information. Henry got me in to see lots of those over the years. There used to be a large movie screen, but later a large monitor for video showings

Henry and The CIA

Henry sent man,: at the airport in a limo. Once in the office, Henry sat me in the large wooden chair that turned, r, order to give me the message while he spun me. Later, I was driven with him while he sorted through my mind files, listened to messages from people, and inputted information on new projects until we reached Washington, D.C. Then he sent me into buildings and I gave the information to whomever I was told to and in whatever way Henry said. Most of the time se, was just an avenue to deliver messages or maybe just used as a payoff to officials who were willing to overlook their security command in order to allow me access to certain classifies areas. Henry was well greased into the inner network of the FBI and CIA. He and his groin made sure they had control over these agencies. The director was always "one of theirs," but Henry had a lot of important information to give these agencies in order for things to groove, like well-oiled cogs.

They sent me to "give a message to the man on the second floor in the hall who has a rep handkerchief in his left pocket and bumps into your left shoulder and leans over to say, 'Sorry little girl.' Then you tell him this message."

Henry had a lot of business with the CIA and the FBI and it was all a big secret. He sent m, in even at eight and nine years old to deliver some of his most sensitive information to the most sensitive of connections. It all began with him spinning me in the wooden chair and inputting the message. Then he

would have someone deliver me to the destination where I passed off information, often to older, very dignified, wealthy looking gentlemen. Sometimes I "ran into". cute little old man with white hair who bumped me on the shoulder and dropped something on the floor like a rose, handkerchief, or key ring and as we both bent to get it, I'd deliver information. Sometimes it was a long string of numbers and sometimes just a word like "Ajax, or "coma," or "barley him "or "make him into a ham on rye," or "tonight, 3 a.m. Federal Building job."

Chain Of Command

My chain of command was Henry first and then Bob. Henry Kissinger created Sue and Bob Hope created Sharon, and initially they were to only work with their respective sides of my personality structure. Messages could be sent through the inner personality system. Bob was never to access Sue and Henry wasn't to access Sharon, but Henry taught many personalities how to send messages back and forth through the system in order to get information about Sharon without accessing directly through her and thereby keeping it secret from Bob that he was breaking their agreement. Henry created "inner runners" that took messages from Sue to Sharon and then replied back without ever having to have Sharon present. It worked well, but Bob didn't access Sue. Since Bob didn't create my personality infrastructure, he lacked the sophistication to know how to access information without being caught and he knew Kissinger would find out because Henry programmed me to always tell the truth. I couldn't do otherwise and I would tell on Bob because Henry told me, "You watch him and tell me everything he does."

After lots of contact with Henry, he said, "Like in a good marriage, after awhile there is unconscious communication going all the time." He meant that it was like knowing each other so well that you know each other's thoughts, and that's how he trained me to be attuned to him.

In the early years lots of my instructions came by way of the telephone. My controllers would call out a specific personality's name and I would switch to her, listen for instructions and when they said, "Bye Sue," I'd switch back to my regular personality, with no conscious awareness of the event.

Bob took me to more places as a child to gain experience, but Henry just sat me in the chair a lot and read instructions or stuck that big pin in my thigh or hand, and gave me things to look at to "take a picture with my inner camera."

Who Would Suspect a Kid?

Henry had his driver take us to different parks in New York and they would let me out. I was eight or nine years old one time when Henry told me to, "walk toward the man in the blue suit," and when he dropped his handkerchief I was to give him a message. When I walked back to the car, Henry said, "You're some kind of homing pigeon." He called me that often when I was little and doing "errands" for him. He wanted me to have short hair so he could disguise me to look like a boy or a girl, whatever the job required. He had me be everything including "invisible"--that is, hidden inside of a box that was transported into a large warehouse. Of course I was instructed that once inside, to wait two hours, get out of the box and come and unlock the warehouse, and if necessary I was instructed in how to break the security code to get out. Like Henry said, "Who would suspect a kid?"

"Forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive those who trespass against us..." --The Lord's Prayer

Chapter Five: Initiation into the Political Arena as a Sex Slave

My father sold me as a prostitute to neighbors and business contacts. He programmed me to ride my bike to the gas station at the corner of Ventura Boulevard and Fallbrook Avenue in Woodland Hills. Mr. Teesdale and Mr. Roberts owned the station. Frank, the auto mechanic and gas station attendant who worked there, traded my father free gas and auto servicing in exchange for having sex with me in the bathroom at the station. That went on for several years. The gas station has since been demolished and in its place stands a large office building, but the memories of what happened to me remain. He also took me to the next door neighbor, Mr. Faciano, to perform sexual favors, always in exchange for twenty dollar bills. My father also sold me for sex to groups of men who met at the welding shop he owned. These men took me by the hand, behind Smitty's Wood Lot, and sexually abused me (I performed oral sex, or they would rape or sodomize me) in exchange for cash paid to my father. My father, and later my brother Rick, who through a series of events ended up owning the family welding business, sold child pornography out of the shop. These pornographic materials were kept behind a corrugated metal wall and sold to interested customers when they came in. (My brother may not be consciously aware of his criminal activities.) Over the years, I was well trained, through trauma and sexual abuse, in line with the technology that was shared with my father so he could condition me for a higher level of future use.

One night at the dinner table my father announced that the actor, Robert Taylor, had been in to visit him again. I never knew why a famous actor like Robert Taylor would want to visit my father at his welding shop, but even though I couldn't yet piece the separate parts of my mind together enough to understand, I was impressed nevertheless. During this time when I was around 8-10 years old, my father told me that Robert Taylor watched a ballet performance where I danced the Swan Lake ballet on toe shoes. I wore a pink sequined leotard with pink sequined straps and the outfit had pink feathers attached to it. I had a pink-feathered headband that made it look like I had pink feathers all around my face, like a swan. Later on I found out that Robert Taylor liked child pornography; my father sold it to him from his welding shop, and he also liked sex with 7-10 year old girls.

This was an important time of deciding just how far I would "go." Dad wanted me to go all the way to the top. He said he was so proud of me and together we'd make his father Ivan, a proud grandfather.

My father had a group of pedophile friends with daughters my age. They traded us sexually and each independently participated in filming us pornographically, sometimes including bestiality. I had many personalities who were trained both in porn and prostitution.

Corbin Bowl

At age seven, I was further trained by older women prostitutes in a back room at the Corbin Bowl, located on Ventura Boulevard in Tarzana, California. I was taught the "tricks of the trade," most of which I already knew from years of sexual abuse. The prostitution and pornography I was a part of was a highly organized activity.

There were times a personality within me was programmed and used to entice and kidnap other children off the street and into a big black car. The kidnapped children were initially kept in cages in back rooms and then used in pornography and usually killed, often in snuff films. We were all shocked with cattle prods or other electrical devices for lots of different offenses. Pornography was filmed at the

Corbin Bowl, with other children, women, men, and animals. Perhaps this is where many of the missing children, whose faces we see so often on postal cards or billboards are disappearing to and why they are never found. At this young age, I was also locked in a small, darkened room with a bed and sold as a prostitute to large numbers of men in a day. The people in charge left ropes, whips, and sex toys for use by the men who paid for sex with me.

One of my father's pedophile friends and partners in the child porn and prostitution business was Dean Hartshorn. Although Dean was nearly 20 years younger than my father, their shared sexual perversions kept them close friends. Dean and his family lived in the Encino Hills area and he operated a pesticide business. Dean had a beautiful daughter, named Donna, who had the blondest hair and bluest eyes I'd ever seen. She was traded to my father for sex and I was traded to Dean and some of his friends and relatives. The Hartshorn family joined my family on vacation several times a year and Donna and I were filmed as we performed sexual acts with numerous different people.

Other Locations

Over the years I was taken to many different locations and filmed and/or programmed. Some of these were: Turlock Lake, Mount Shasta, Clear Lake, Lake Arrowhead, Bass Lake, Lake Cachuma, Lake Isabella, Millerton Lake, Pine Flats, Lake Elsinore, Big Bear Lake, La Jolla, Mission Bay, Salton Sea, Coronado, San Juan Capistrano, the Colorado River, Lake Mead, Lake Mohave, Lake Havasu, Death Valley, Las Vegas, and other places we went for so-called "waterskiing vacations."

Cliff Spear was also a pedophile friend of my fathers. His daughter Debbie (also known as DeeDee) was my age and was in my brownie troop and class at school. I was traded to Cliff by my father, and was molested by him every time I spent the night at Debbie's house. In the middle of the night, Debbie and I, and sometimes her younger sister Jana, were awakened and taken to Cliff's carpeting business to be filmed pornographically.

Guy Cooper was a man who filmed me in porn at his home in Hidden Hills, with his younger daughter, Buffy. In this porn I was also forced to have sex with animals, some of them large farm animals. You can imagine how shameful and degrading these experiences are to a child.

To my knowledge, my father's affiliation was not limited to any single group, nor did he subscribe to membership in any group for any length of time. Instead, his membership was temporary, as he moved from one group to another, suiting my programmer's needs for the time. The groups I am aware of that he attended for different periods of time were the Lions Club, Ku Klux Klan, and Neo-Nazi groups. Publicly and consciously my father adamantly professed that he was not prejudiced against any race or religion and taught me not to be racially prejudiced. In private, secret gatherings with like-minded men, he witnessed and participated in ceremonies where they humiliated, tortured, dismembered and killed Black people and Jewish people. I know, because as a child I was present at some of those "meetings."

I was taken often to rituals that were performed late at night. One incident that stands out in my mind was a night near my 10th birthday when a group of men sacrificed a Black man, saying it was done in my "honor," to give me power. As I watched in sheer panic, devastation, and horror, they tortured and then threw this man alive into the bonfire. To withstand this extremely traumatic event, I split off another personality to deal with it. On another occasion, as a Fourth of July event, a small child was delivered by a black sedan to my father at the gully at the end of our street. I watched in horror as my father strapped a homemade bomb he had made to this little boy's body and told me he was so powerful he could make the child live or die. The next thing I knew the bomb went off and the child was nowhere to be found. The tactics used to keep me dissociated and split were endless.

The Shriners

I remembered my father and our Shriner neighbor, Jack Rice, taking me to a meeting where a group of men, all wearing red Shriner hats, sat at tables. My father was given a Shriner hat and acted like he felt uncomfortable wearing it. I was patriotically wearing a navy blue v-neck dress with a large white sailor collar. Mr. Rice sat on one side of me and my father on the other. They ate dinner but I just sat at my place in a daze and didn't eat anything. One of the Shriner's stood at his table and clinking his glass to get everyone's attention, he announced, "We have a little member here tonight to entertain and delight you. Please welcome her with a round of applause."

I walked up onto the stage and began dancing to The National Anthem. "Oh say can you see, by the dawn's early light," the words played as I danced and slowly began taking off first my dress, then my shoes, pantaloons, nylons, bra, and panties until I stood dressed only in a tiny tasseled white satin g-string. Why I didn't strip all the way I don't know. All the men cheered and after I was through Mr. Rice stood at the bottom of the stage stairs to take me backstage to dress. He held out his arm and I took it. I felt like I was blind and couldn't see to find my way so he led me as he recited the program he had continually taught me to memorize, "There was a man who had no eyes and he went out to view the skies, he saw a tree with apples on it, he picked no apples off but left no apples on it." It was a "blind" program and I was told I couldn't see while I was there. Mr. Rice led me to a back room. It wasn't like a dressing room, just a side room. He gave me some kind of red robe to wear, "They'll bring your clothes on into us in awhile, we'll just wait." Other nights at different Shriner places, there were satanic rituals where I was raped on an altar in front of the group of robed men. There were many other Shriner meetings; lots of them disguised "under the big top," at Shriner circuses. Circuses were a place of trauma over the years and I usually ended up getting hurt.

My neighbor Peggy and I performed Alice in Wonderland in what seemingly appeared to be an innocent backyard neighborhood play for these elderly neighbors, Mr. & Mrs. Rice. They sat on their patio, having cocktails like they always did at happy hour and watched while we performed. In the middle of the play, Mr. Rice wiggled his finger and calling me over to him, he said, "Come here, Susie, I want to tell you a secret." I stood by this elderly man's chair on the patio and he motioned for me to bend over so he could whisper a secret to me. His pungent alcohol breath permeated the air as he said, "I have a little surprise that will help you act out the play better," and he put a small role of lifesavers into my hand and told me, "open your mouth for the next surprise." Naively and with complete trust, I opened my mouth as he said, "Close your eyes for the hidden surprise, and remember the real surprise is in your hand." Then he reminded me, "open your mouth for the hidden surprise."

In childlike innocence, I kept my eyes closed, waiting in anticipation for the surprise. Mr. Rice placed something in my mouth that was round as he said, "This is a heavenly wafer, my dear, a hidden heavenly wafer, in which you will appear." I didn't know what he meant but I began feeling very weak and funny inside, just like Alice in Wonderland did. Then he said, "Go finish your play now and act your part. Your part is about to start, so don't be late for a very important date or you will end up in trouble over and over and over again. Always obey the white rabbit, follow him inside for he has the time of day in which you will play. So go now and play your play. Which is it, play? The play or the play?"

In a confused stupor, I walked back over to my friend Peggy and entered the play again, saying my part, which was, "I'm late, I'm late for a very important date."

Mr. Rice was my date at other evening affairs with the Shriners, some where I was even the "altar girl" but it wasn't like a sacred ceremony at the Catholic Church, instead, I was taken to satanic rituals. They were really bad rituals where I was raped on an altar in front of lots of Shriners late at night, in dark outside places and they hurt and tortured me in the name of what they called, "the holy one."

Peggy and I also performed The Parent Trap for the Rice's. This was a way of cementing and concretizing the Susan and Sharon twin sister programming. I played Sharon in the backyard play and Peggy played Susan. We even cut my dress just like in the movie.

As I remembered what had actually happened, in full detail, instead of merely recalling the small slice of conscious reality of this past event, I could smell the Rice's home, Mr. Rice's alcohol breath, and his daughter Joanie's perfume, which was strong and also had an alcohol base to it. Hidden behind all the fairy tales and seemingly good things were painful memories of the places I was taken to for programming.

The Onset of Puberty

I began puberty around this time and my father snuck into my room like he always did at night. He explained to me while I was in a haze of sleep, that I was of the superior race, that I was of Aryan descent and that he was proud of my blond hair, green eyes, and fair skin. At the time, I had no idea what he was talking about and ignored it, pretending I didn't hear him.

I started menstruating at ten. This heralded abuse in rituals which involved being raped and impregnated, sometimes twice a year. When the fetuses were two to three months old, they were aborted at rituals and ingested by members of the group in order to fulfill the beliefs of the group; that it made those participating "more powerful." These were devastating, deeply traumatizing, and soulfully painful experiences, the memory of which was repressed along with all the other traumas. These traumatic events served as mind control reinforcement, to insure amnesia of my use in pornography, prostitution, and later projects I was to serve in.

By the end of the 5" grade, when I was almost eleven, I had gone through puberty, was fully developed and had already had my menstrual cycle for a year. Despite the abuse, I was programmed to be an average student, with many "school" personalities who helped me act like a "normal kid." Often I displayed behavior problems in school, as I acted out, due to what was secretly going on at home and at other dark, hidden places. My teachers merely passed off my joking and constant disruption as typical mischievous behavior and I won an award for class clown. I also had personalities who were totally amnesiac of any of my abuse who were able to function normally at school. As I entered junior high school, I did the things that normal kids do; I was a cheerleader, performed in the chorus, sang solos at school performances, won awards for the most beautiful smile and for being the class clown, and obtained other awards for service. And my mother had the cleanest house in the neighborhood.

To all outward appearances, all of these families I've mentioned, seemed to be normal, upstanding citizens of the community. NO one would have ever suspected that, in secret, all of this abuse was occurring. The mothers kept clean children and clean houses, smiled and were polite and caring in public, and the fathers acted charming and were considered responsible businessmen in the community. What went on behind closed doors--that no one wanted to believe or hear about, not even my school principal--was the spiritual, physical, and emotional devastation of many, many children.

In my desperation to obtain help or understanding, I started very early trying to figure out what was wrong. I kept bumping into mind control programming that re-routed my thoughts, and exasperated with my statements and questions, my mother constantly "re-minded" me from her own programming, "You just think too much!"

When I turned eleven, my father announced he was flying me to his small hometown of Correctionville, Iowa, to meet my grandparents. I was surprised by this invitation, as family problems

had estranged my father from his parents for years ...in fact, from even before my birth. My father never had anything pleasant to say about his parents. But I was excited to fly on an airplane (which I mistakenly thought was my first time) and curious about meeting my grandparents for the first time. The telltale fact that my father hated them, and had stolen their car and run away from home at fifteen never entered my thought processes. Nor was I able to wonder why my mother and brothers were not invited to go along. Unfortunately, due to the mind control I was under, I did not have the ability to question or to wonder about anything along certain lines. I merely went along with what I was told to do.

I was impregnated several months before we were to go to Iowa. My mother took me shopping to a clothes store called Stardusters. It was like Hollywood there. The saleslady picked out dresses and took me into the dressing room and, in spite of my embarrassment, dressed me in outfits complete with accessories. My mother bought me several expensive outfits, complete with hats, belts, purses and fancy, frilly undergarments, although she wore old, ragged clothes and at home the word was that we were broke.

On the way home from our shopping spree, my mother took note of my maternally pooching tummy, and over the next few months, yelled at me constantly saying, "Hold in your stomach." Neither of us consciously knew that I was pregnant and I tried my best to hold in my tummy. During my teen years, I was usually anorexic, very thin, and didn't eat much, so the fact that I was pregnant for a month or two was not easy to detect, especially to those who wouldn't have ever expected it.

My paternal grandfather, Ivan Charles Eckhart, was a Jersey Ice Cream manufacturer, a multimillionaire and mayor of the town of Correctionville, Iowa, where he lived with my grandmother. Later on he won a landslide election to become the supervisor of the Third District and for years was involved in both local and state politics.

My paternal grandmother, Leah Eckhart, was a small but angry-tempered woman. Now I understand why. Instead of sleeping upstairs in the plush bedroom with my grandfather, she slept in the bare cement floored basement on a small cot. At the time I could not question or wonder about that either. My grandparents are now both deceased, left with never having the opportunity of understanding or healing the intergenerational abuse that created this problem to begin with.

I had many traumatic experiences on my visits to Iowa. I suppose, back then, my father's return visit to his parents appeared just to be a family reunion, but nothing could have been further from the truth.

While in Iowa, I had the first of several forced abortions, which was performed in a torturous fashion by a local doctor. Although I was actually raped and made pregnant at a ritual, I was humiliated and shamed for becoming pregnant. As in all trauma-based mind control, everything was a double-bind. I was blamed and shamed for everything that happened, none of which I ever had any control over. My baby, which was not yet old enough to be born alive, was nevertheless a perfectly formed fetus. My grandparents and my father performed a ritual behind their house in which they convinced me that I had killed my own baby (it was obviously born dead), and they ate it and forced me to participate. Since I was suffering from Multiple Personality Disorder, this traumatic experience, along with many others, was stored neatly away from my conscious mind, hidden in alternate personalities, and sealed away from my conscious awareness by programming that covered and hid the truth of my life.

One night after returning to my grandfather's house, somehow the experiences that terrified me were not so neatly hidden from my consciousness and in an act of panic and desperation, I frantically tried to phone my mother to ask her to help me. Overhearing me, my grandfather grabbed the phone out of my hand and proceeded to rip the phone out of the wall and in retaliation, tied me to the post of his iron bed frame for two days, while they went out of town. My grandfather was very brutal. But my father

was very proud of the human technology I possessed. He was pleased to be able to show his father all of my "trained" abilities.

During the remainder of the time we were in Iowa, I was forced to entertain my grandfather's business and political friends. I danced naked on the table at meetings and performed sexual favors for many of my grandfather's associates. To demonstrate my abilities, my father prompted the men to use their cigars or cigarettes to burn my vaginal area as I kneeled before them. My father wanted to demonstrate that I would smile and show no signs of the pain due to mind control. After these meetings, I was connected to a higher level of politicians.

From then on, when my father took me on our yearly trips to Iowa, I was slowly connected to more and more political figures. In the meantime, he used me wherever he could to get cash, or more often, courtesies for favors. We started having enough money to go out to dinner, which was a treat we could not previously afford. It's likely that some of the money came from my father's payoffs from my use in porn and prostitution.

Training Farms

There were child and adolescent training centers called "farms," that I believe were located in Montreal, a city in the French Canadian Province of Quebec. I was taken to one for "grace training," and to step up the etiquette and formal training I would need to be used a notch higher. Other teenage girls were also there in training. It felt like a prison. I think I was there for a week - it was difficult to determine the actual span of time. It had to be winter because it was chilly and windy outside, and the trees were barren and there were leaves on the ground. This place was located out in the countryside. It wasn't on the way to anything so if anyone came near they could easily be identified as intruders. We were seen to public eyes as unwed mothers. We even had to stuff a pillow in our pants and go into town every once in awhile. I slept with other girls in a white farm building that had cement floors and cots with mattresses that lined the room. We all compliantly took the medicine they gave us every morning. The people that worked at "the farm" changed daily, men and women both, but never the same ones two days in a row. We ate dinner and we all got into bed, then someone told us a story. They treated us like a herd of cows and we all totally obeyed instructions; there was no fuss and no fight, just total obedience.

I was taught how to walk elegantly with a book on my head and had to be able to squat down without dropping the book, and then stand up again. I was assigned to work with language input tapes in a small sound room equipped with headphones. I was given a mirror to look into to practice making certain sounds. All the instructions were given to me auditorily, even down to, "hold your mouth like you are saying A or O," and then I heard the sound I was to mimic. Once I learned the physical impressions of how to make the sounds they could easily attach language skills. I don't know how it all works, but later they had me lay down with headphones on while they played sounds so fast that I couldn't hear the words. Later they said that it had "worked," and that I had received French language enhancement. The lady explained that in most foreign countries it was proper to ask for a translator, but it was to be common background for the upper class to at least speak fluent French and Italian, and preferably German and Russian also. Since I was going to be used with foreign people and in foreign countries, I had to know their languages and customs.

I was also shown movies from a film projector onto a screen. I saw films on different foreign countries in order to obtain the necessary culture. They instructed me, "Put this in your China file," and then I would watch a movie intently recording all of it, the places, the names, dates, historical facts, everything. Then later on when Henry and I arrived in these foreign lands, I was familiar with their cultural background so I wouldn't make a faux pas.

All we did at the training farm was eat lightly, sleep and learn; input was ingested in large quantities for later use. Henry didn't visit me there. He said he might stop in to check on me, but he never did. Beforehand, he tied my Wizard of Oz programming to this event when he told me to believe, "I left my bed in Kansas, and went on the wings of a tornado to the farm." When I came back "to Kansas" I woke up in my own bed in California and was very, very sick. My mom took care of me and told me that I had the flu. I had a high fever and was a little delirious. I couldn't even manage to keep my eyes focused. I felt exhausted and so sick that I couldn't sleep, so I lay in my bed and prayed to die.

During summer vacation one year, Mr. Rice, our Shriner neighbor, re-introduced me to his daughter, Joanie Rice, who was visiting for the summer from her home in White Plains, New York. She was much older than I and was very attractive. She wore lots of makeup and jewelry, and wore a heavy perfume called Royal Secret. During that time, my maternal grandmother who lived with us had to be put in a rest home and my mother visited her every day, so Joanie, stayed to babysit me and played with me by our pool in my mother's absence. It all looked like a nice arrangement from the outside, but her presence was planned to further my programming. She taught me to be "dignified." I heard that word over and over and over. She taught me social etiquette--to act polished, to have good manners, and she was there to voice-program me when the men came with the equipment. At these times, she and a group of men held me down on the couch, drugged me, placed a band around my head, which they retrieved from a black briefcase full of special equipment including bright lights and machines which delivered different sounds and instructions. I was given names of politicians and programmed with instructions that, when I saw them on TV or heard them on radio, I was to become completely amnestic of who and what I was involved in. She also programmed me from lists of numbers and codes. Other years, I was flown to her glamorous apartment in New York. She escorted me to Washington, DC at first, so I wouldn't feel afraid or alone and could work at my maximum capacity. My mother and I also began to wear Royal Secret perfume, like Joanie.

Twenty-nine Palms

My family bought property in Twenty-nine Palms, California and built a small cabin on the desert land. One weekend my father explained that my mom needed a little time to herself since her mother had just passed away. I, too, was sad that my grandmother had died. My controllers told me she went to the streets of hell as evidenced by the blood coming out of her face. She died of high blood pressure, which caused the bleeding. But they said she went to hell and I hoped she would come back alive so we could re-route her. But after awhile that didn't scare me because I knew my "Gram" didn't go to hell. Although in a programmed state, my grandmother participated at times in my abuse, I knew she was really a nice quiet, gentle woman, who like my mother, never would have intentionally hurt anyone.

So, my father took my brothers and I to our Twenty-nine Palms cabin and one day they involved me in a sex ritual. They got me drunk, then stripped and tied me by my wrists and ankles face up in the sand in the intense desert sun. They seemed so excited as they did this to me. My father painted a satanic pentagram and green swastikas on my body. Later on, as it began to get dark he poured gas in a wide circle around me and once it was really dark he lit a match which started a fire burning all around me. I thought they were going to cook me. They put a half-dead, sandy, horned toad in my mouth and told me to hold it there. My brother Rick was running all around in an excited frenzy and my brother Jim was there also. At this ritual, in addition to traumatizing me, they were being taught how to be in charge. I was raped by all of them and their friends.

My Future Marriage Was Arranged In 7th Grade

During this time, I attended Hale Junior High School, which was located directly across the street from our church, the First Presbyterian Church of Woodland Hills. It was at Hale, in the 7'" grade (we were thirteen), that I met Craig Ford (Robert Craig Ford). One afternoon, my mother picked me up from school and I introduced Craig to her. After Craig left and I got into the car, my mother announced, "That

is the boy you will marry." I laughed and asked her how she knew. She said she just knew. I never questioned further. Craig asked me to go steady soon afterward.

Over the next several years, Craig and I were "bonded" to each other through crossprogramming and shared trauma to insure that Craig was under sufficient mind control to later serve as my "handler." A ritual at the First Presbyterian Church served to seal our bond, and soon other more sophisticated means of programming were utilized.

White Programming Vans

Large white vans with men in suits in the back picked us up at differing locations in Ventura and Oxnard, California, and directed us into the back of the van. Specialized equipment in briefcases and other larger equipment in the van awaited us. They routinely beat Craig in front of me to demonstrate what a weakling he really was and how powerful and in control of me they were. They would slap me around in front of him, as well, to show him how powerless he was to help me and how much in control they were.

Electroshock was used on both of us, first by inserting and activating an electric prod in my vagina and then delivering the same to Craig on his penis. We were forced to watch in a dissociative, trance state as the other was tortured and traumatized as they readied us for programming.

The bond that was formed by shared trauma was profound. It created subconscious feelings of being in this whole mess together and enforced the feelings that we would never be able to get out. After they had sufficiently worn us down, they strapped us into sophisticated chairs and hooked us up to electrodes. Tones were combined with electroshock in order to create access cues that gave them quick and easy access to us both later on. Hypnotic suggestions and love songs were presented to us, in order to facilitate our "falling madly in love." In fact my controllers created an entire system of songs intended to invoke selected, preordained feelings toward Craig and others. The list of songs was added to and cultivated over the years depending on what attitudes and emotions they wanted to create within me. These songs were some of the strongest measures of control and literally created what I thought were my own feelings about Craig, but which really were contrived feelings created to support the interests of my controllers.

Combined with scenarios such as this, my brothers and their muscle-bound friends would intercept us when we were parked after a date to kiss. They pulled Craig out of the car and beat him up as they instructed him not to touch me sexually. Then one of them would rape me in front of him as they restrained him nearby, rendering him once again powerless to help.

All these conditioning experiences served to "prepare" Craig to robotically deliver and hand me over to other men, then step aside while I passed messages or serviced them sexually. It was always his job to make sure I was delivered to the right place, at the right time, to the right person, and for many years, that is exactly what he did.

I didn't have sex with Bob Hope until later. Bob said the wait would do him good, "give him something to look forward to," and then he would lean down and poke me and do that ole' softshoe dance. He did that often. He said, "I like my fruit ripened, not plucked before its time." At other times he would say to his friends when I was around, "See, I know how to pick my fruit, huh?" Then he'd say, "Hey kid, get me some grapes," and I'd go get them and he would show off how cute and efficient I was. He was always showing off my new acts. He would say, "Do your Coca Roca dance." So I'd do a dance. Then he would say, "No, the other Coca Roca," and I'd take off my clothes while dancing. Or he would have me sing I Enjoy Being A Girl, which was a song I sang for a junior high school performance and later for him and others.

The Theater in the Round was built and opened in Woodland Hills and drew large crowds to watch the live action plays that were performed in the round theater. I attended the plays often and it was there that I was prostituted to Bob's friend, Sammy Davis, Jr. It was a brutal event that I "forgot" about as soon as he was through with me.

"Love suffereth long, and is kind..." -- 1 Corinthians 13:4

Chapter Six: JFK and the Sex Shuttle

During a demonstration of the high level of technology available to those willing to join the ranks, Henry masterfully delivered a slide presentation of the mind control technology. I sat in the darkened room in "park mode," with my conscious mind seemingly blocked from the information, yet carrying out the command of my master to perfectly record all that went on around me. First Henry flashed a slide of me in my normal California life. He said, "Who in their right mind would believe that this kid was having sexual relations with the President of the United States?" The men agreed. Then he followed by a series of slides of me artfully made up, dressed formally and in different disguises. The men were amazed at the difference.

Many men were brought into the cause simply because they wanted to own a piece of the rock and have their own robots to do their work or create their pleasures: At first they were given just bits of information at a time, to determine if they would be cooperative. Then they were given a little more information to test the waters to see if they were ready for the final blow. Usually dozens of meetings occurred on superficial levels before any real information was given out and that was only released when the men were "deeply committed," which meant that they would be compromising themselves or their family if they backed out at a certain point.

In the beginning when Henry was cultivating my relationship with JFK and insuring him of my security guarantees, Henry didn't fill me with much of an agenda except to give JFK the "royal treatment," which meant the same as Bob's (Hope's) full smorgasbord of sexual positions and favors. Henry told me to carefully note everything JFK said and did for debriefing afterwards. Henry had a challenge with JFK because as he said, "he's so damn self-initiating," and so Henry couldn't have me take the lead, thereby slipping in comments intended for Henry's covert purposes. So for awhile in the beginning, he just let me be with JFK so that he would get used to me, and Henry said, "Then a plan will inevitably open up."

Kissinger didn't spend a lot of time with JFK. They spoke but it was like they were "...polar opposites and constantly repelled each other," Henry said. But Henry, and especially Bob as the front man, got to JFK and paved the way for his acceptance of me. Once we were in, then Henry started strategizing heavily. That is what happened after I began having sex with JFK. Henry said, "Mind files were created to delight the young president." As Kissinger counted on, JFK was a romantic and seemed to get caught up in many of the messages I delivered to him. The messages made him feel good and Henry wanted him to feel good and powerful with me. I was delivering high level Council messages created by Bob and Henry, that Henry instilled in me to deliver to "John-Feeee," that's what I called him. They got a war underway through JFK, a big war that was to influence not only America but also the international climate.

It was as common for foreign dignitaries, heads of state, senators, congressmen, governors, and other leaders, to ride the Lincoln Memorial (Oral Sex) Tour, as it was for them to get their shoes shined in the local hotels. In fact, that was one of the jokes I was instructed to deliver to get a man loosened up. I was programmed to say, "Want your shoe shined?" Then I would unzip him and begin. There were lots of men who wanted further servicing later on, but I was instructed to refer them to my boss.

I serviced many men on this so-called shuttle service over the years of my life that should have been filled with junior high, high school and college extracurricular activities of my own choosing. The elitists I worked for had an endless supply of slaves that kept the tour shuttle running regularly. I wasn't really giving tours, just sex in the limo. The men felt safe and protected from public exposure by their placement in the back of the limo because they couldn't be seen due to the security windows. They had

privacy when they exited the limo so they wouldn't be exposed. Security employees would always await the arrival of the shuttle limo to open the door and coach them out when the "coast was clear," then transfer them immediately into their own personal limo so no one would ever detect.

There were times when Henry would have a driver take us from DC to his office in New York. He would work with me in the back seat after he told the driver, "I'll be busy working and I don't want to be interrupted." So the driver shut the window between the seats and Henry would debrief me and take sketchy notes, draw diagrams and plans while I was talking or he would touch his finger to my forehead and start uploading me for future assignments. Much of our work took place like this on drives between places usually just before or after I had been used at the White House or other places. It was convenient, as well as a security measure, because he could account for his time spent with me by saying, "I was en route to NY or DC," or wherever he was going, and since I was on the same time track as Henry it was all very time efficient, and concealed his activity and connection to me. To Henry the efficient use of his time was everything. He told me, "When people can master their use of time, they have the secret to success." He often talked on and on to me about his ideas, events and people, using me as a sounding board, completely assured that I couldn't ever break the security programming necessary to remember his conversations.

Henry said I was much more than his efficient secretary, I was a "diplomat extraordinare." I wore a brownish tan wool suit, tailor-made by my mother, to my first meeting in the Soviet Union. Henry taught me then that the Soviet Union, USSR and Russia basically all meant the same thing. He also told me that my mother was always with me giving me strength and maturity, and that I could feel connected to her by wearing the suit she made for me. I guess I was emotionally needing to be older than 10, my actual age at the time. So he bolstered me maturationally by mentally tying me to my mother. It was funny because if I wore wool pants or a wool jacket, I would scratch myself and I couldn't stop it. And no matter how many times Henry gave me the hypnotic suggestion, "it's not scratching you, the material is soft and smooth on your skin," it still itched. So my mom had to line everything she made for me that was wool.

JFK rode the L.M. sex tour regularly and while I was down on my knees he would pat me on the back and say, "You are really going to move up the ranks." Or, "You're really going to amount to something when you grow up, kid." He loved lunch-time oral sex and the secret service agents rode in the front with the limo driver and chewed him out royally for, as they said, "...breaking stride that is nullifying National Security, Sir."

To calm the disgruntled Secret Service agents, Jack would laughingly explain, "Relax, I deserve a relaxing lunch break, that's all." I can still remember his accent so clearly.

JFK was really gutsy. He would even sneak me into the White House for "nooners." Sometimes there was another sex slave with me and when we'd get up to the bedroom he would say, "We're just furthering your training so you'll be top-notch when you grow up." He taught me, "A man likes a woman who's aggressive sexually. My wife doesn't satisfy me. She just lays back and waits. But a man likes a woman who takes charge." Then he would lay back and wait for the two of us to stimulate him, at which point he turned into an animal. Jack said he was training me for the future. I didn't know what that meant. He said I was serving my country by meeting the needs of their leader. He said, "By easing my stresses you help me make better decisions." Touching the tip of my nose he continued, "So young lady, you are very important to our nation." I was just out of braces.

JFK had a lean muscular body and a hairy chest. He worked out on the rowing machine. On one occasion as we were lying in bed together, he said to me, "You know, we both have the same kind of teeth." I reached out and put my hand into his mouth to feel his teeth and he was right, we both had big teeth--only his were more squared off.

JFK also liked anal sex, like his brother Ted. After he found out I was with Ted he asked me what his brother was really like. When I explained that he hurt me, he just shook his head and said, "I never could understand what happened to my brother. We both had the same parents, but we did go to different boarding schools and had different friends." He further explained that they didn't see their parents often and that their family had so much money that they chose the school that was the most fitting for their sons and sent them there. So as he explained, there weren't many family interactions. He said he felt lonely a lot when he was growing up, that he was closer to the maids and nannies than to his parents. He said, "The Kennedy Clan publicly appears to be a close knit family, but I never saw my parents except on holidays when they would meet in Hyannisport and us kids would be flown from our respective schools to meet them. It was more like getting reacquainted with strangers than meeting my family. Everyone was awkward and we really had nothing to talk about. I went out in a boat we had there and spent hours alone, playing all by myself. I was estranged from my brothers also because none of us lived together so when we came together we didn't know each other. Usually by the end of the holiday, we were friends again -- like real brothers -- but then it would be time to go back to our respective schools and it would start all over." Then he added, "I don't know why I'm telling you this, you're just a kid yourself and wouldn't really understand." He looked shy and vulnerable as he said, "I'm sorry for telling you all this."

I smiled and said, "It's okay." It seemed to be the fact that I listened and couldn't think to talk, that made these men feel good. All they really wanted was someone to really listen.

JFK never caused physical injury to me. He wasn't violent, just aggressive sexually but never brutal like his brother Ted. JFK liked all kinds of sex. He liked things varied, nothing routine. He got bored easily and asked for new things all the time. We had sex in many places. He got high on taking risks ...the riskier the better. We even had sex in a public bathroom somewhere in DC. On those occasions, the Secret Service Agents were doubly mad at him. They would totally freak out and say to him, "We could loose our jobs when you pull one of your little disappearing stunts." And they would be really upset, sweating and nervous because as they explained, they'd been running all over the city looking for where he had ducked them. Jack just told them to relax, that he was fine and that they still had their jobs.

I went on late night walks with JFK in DC. Sometimes the cherry blossoms would be in bloom and it smelled so sweet. The Secret Service agents followed close behind us. They seemed irritated to be on duty for JFK because he was so uncooperative and unpredictable. We walked by a river or waterway. He really enjoyed seeing it at night and said the exercise did him good. The Secret Service agents complained of being tired and hated having to get up at 1:00 or 2:00 a.m. to go outside with him. But when the President left, they had to go with him. I don't know where Jackie was, but she wasn't always at the White House the nights I was brought in. Jack would sneak me to his room and supposedly no one knew I was there. Like I explained, he loved taking risks.

Sometimes I had difficulty understanding exactly what Jack was saying because of his accent and at other times, I wouldn't be able to hear for awhile from the noise of the helicopter or plane I had been flown in on. My hearing would feel muffled, like I had earmuffs on.

I felt so much older than my young years, but then I was totally physically developed by the 5th grade (ten years of age). The personalities that were created to be with JFK were created to be older and more mature than my actual years.

During my years at Hale Jr. High School there were times Henry Kissinger preprogrammed and sent me in with a message to deliver while I was prostituted to JFK. I was a cheerleader and was prostituted to the boy's coach along the way. I had a group of girl friends that were part of my Girl Scout Troop and one of my friends was named Beth. I wasn't ever allowed to go to boy-girl parties, but I went

to a lot of sleepovers. Many times I didn't end up staying overnight, but was instead shuffled off for a quick rendezvous to the White House or to Massachusetts or wherever the higher ups wanted me to go to be with JFK.

I called him "John-Feeee" (pronounced "John F.E."). Craig was "president" of the Student Body and it may have been a cover for my White House presidential use.

Beth's mother was an attractive petite blonde woman and she was hardly ever home. I think Beth's father was a pilot and maybe her mom was a stewardess, but she was gone most of the time. Beth had older sisters though and so they counted as adults in my protective mother's eyes, so I was allowed to spend the night when Beth's mother was not at home. One day I walked home from school with Beth, as she lived very close to Hale. We messed around and listened to records, and then, suddenly, I became upset and told her I wanted to go home. She said her mom wasn't there to drive me and she didn't want me to go home, but I called a number from her kitchen phone and a yellow checkered taxi came to the house and picked me up. Beth followed me out the door crying and said, "Do you want me to call your mom?"

"No, I'll be home in a minute anyway." I handed the driver a note I had in my overnight bag and he took it from there. I was driven to LAX. The airport was much smaller in those days, but still busy on Friday's and weekends with lots of traffic. The driver dropped me off in front of TWA and asked if I needed any help. I said no, I was fine. I walked up to the desk and told the woman my name, "Sharon Weatherby," and she had a ticket waiting for me. She asked if I knew where to go and pointed me in the direction of the gate.

I usually flew TWA, United, or Continental on national flights - not international - and I even had a little pin with wings, that a pilot who knew me gave me because he said I was an honorary stewardess. He had sex with me on the way back from assignments but no one had sex with me before JFK. There were usually pilots on commercial airlines that were "regulars," which meant they knew me and were instructed to keep me under their wing. Sometimes I helped the pilot on flights, but usually I slept up in first class. I think one of these pilots could have even been my friend's father, and he was told to keep an eye on me. I usually curled up in first class and slept for the long flight. When I arrived at the airport in DC, I was met by different people. This time it was a blonde lady in a uniform and she walked me out to a waiting black limo and opened the back door for me to get in. I did and she put my bag in next to me. This was before I met Craig so I was eleven or twelve years old, going on twenty-five.

I wasn't taken directly to JFK but was taken to the area where they operated the "Lincoln Memorial Shuttle" (oral sex ride). A limo pulled up and I was whisked into the back of it. Once inside I saw that "JohnFeee" was there and he said hello and began tickling me. He played with me and teased me a lot. Then he pulled me over close to him and said, "Now it's time to be more serious." And he started kissing me and slipped his hand inside my shirt and felt my breasts. Then he unfastened my bra and pulled my shirt up and began sucking on my nipples. He said that really got him hard to see young, firm breasts and he circled my nipples with his fingers. I didn't like it when I saw his wedding band on his hand while he was doing that to me because even under mind control, I knew who his wife was. Henry had told me to emulate her and so I felt bad... like here was this innocent, beautiful woman and I was having sex with her husband and there was a feeling of guilt--even under mind control.

That day, JFK took sexual initiative and liked being in charge. Before he closed the window and left us alone, the driver had said to him, "Jack, don't you think we should connect back up to your security?" meaning the Secret Service.

JFK said, "No. Hell no. I deserve to have a life." And so we toured around the city while "John-Feee" got himself warmed up--sucking and licking me all over and I gave him a "preview" of the coming event by way of oral sex, backing off just before he orgasmed. He loved to run his tongue over my belly because he said, "I love young, firm, tummies," and he loved mine especially because he said it was so tan. He said I had a "golden tan."

After awhile, JFK tapped on the inner window in the limo to get the driver's attention and said, "Stop here."

The driver said, "Here, Sir?"

JFK commanded, "Yes," and opened the door and grabbed my arm and took me into this small motel. He already had the key to a room and went right to it and opened the door. It wasn't a very nice place but he said we wouldn't be looked for there, that "certainly no one would come looking for the President in a place like this," and then he laughed, lit up a cigarette and sat down at the small table and chairs. Taking a puff off his cigarette he said he wanted to take a break to "enjoy the view" and indicated I was to take off my clothes in front of him.

Slowly, I began removing my blouse and then my skirt, bra and then my nylons attached to my lacy garter belt and then my panties. I had on those plain white ones and for some reason he liked them, so Henry had me wear them with him. Then I stuck my finger into my vagina while I had one leg propped up on the bed and the other holding me up. Then I put my fingers to my mouth and that's when he jumped up and came over to me and said, "You're a big tease."

I smiled seductively and he put his arms around me and held me for a long moment and then when he moved back I began unbuttoning his shirt. It was a bit stiff like it was heavily starched and then I rubbed his chest and belly and talked to him about how his hairy chest and hard belly turned me on. I put my fingers in my mouth again. He said, "I'd like to be where those came from." I can remember his accent so well. He laid me back on the bed after he pulled the sheets back and he began oral sex. I told him how hot I was for him and began wiggling and moving all over, while I moaned. He said I was making him dizzy and he came up and began kissing me passionately, hard, almost roughly. Then he went inside me and satisfied himself. After he came he pulled back and said, "Sorry it couldn't have been longer, but I've got to get back." So he dressed and stepped outside the door and whistled. The driver came right up to the door. He went out and opened the door for me, and we got into the limo and left. The driver dropped him off at another limo to a bunch of Secret Service agents all in a tizzy over where he had gone. He shut the door and walked into the center of them without saying goodbye or acknowledging me.

These agents were really angry with him. I could see him using his hands and speaking to calm them down. JFK escaped from his Secret Service agents often. I heard one of them say one time, "I don't know how he does it, one slip and he's gone."

The driver put the window back up and drove me directly to the airport. I picked up my bag and he let me out and said, "Will you be needin' anything, ma'am?"

I smiled and said, "No thanks, I have everything I'll need." And I went to the ticket counter and said, "You're holding a ticket for me? Sharon Weatherby?"

Handing me my ticket the man smiled and said, "Your gate's in that direction."

Henry had me think of the gate numbers as the numbers on billiard balls and all I had to do was follow the line of numbers until I got to the one that matched my ticket. Sometimes I got lost but someone always helped me, often saying, "Excuse me, miss, but are you lost?"

I'd say, "I'm looking for gate eight," and they would point me in that direction. Once I got onto the airplane it seemed like there was always someone there to watch over me and I would go back to sleep. The return synchronization between my mother and me had to be perfect and this time I was driven back to Beth's house to wait by the curb for my mother.

The driver said, "Just sit here and wait, your mother will be here any minute." He pulled away from the curb and went and parked nearby. I saw him watch until my mom picked me up. She, too, always waited for me to get picked up when she dropped me off at places. Everyone always waited to make sure the exchange had taken place and I was in the correct hands.

JFK was my first presidential assignment. After having sex with Bob Hope in his 50's, a younger President wasn't as bad. Sharon was the personality programmed to be with JFK and due to the reality that was created for her, she had a lot in common with him, like being Catholic and from an elite family. One time Bob arranged for him to have some time out with me in Key Biscayne. Bob flew me there to take care of him, keep him happy and entertained. The Secret Service agents stood outside. JFK started by shaving and I sat on the counter and watched him. I giggled and hugged him while he stood in front of the mirror with a small white towel around his waist. I licked the shaving cream off his ear and then put my fingers into the remaining shave creme and licked it. Gently, he took my hands away and laughed softly as he explained that you weren't supposed to eat shaving cream. I thought it was whipped cream, like I had tasted in the pornography I was filmed in, and mistakenly was triggered into reciting my program, "Lick it and suck it, 'til it's all gone, yum, yum don't miss a drop, or you will stop; your heart that is." This must have been a program glitch because I wasn't suppose to recite this program out loud; it was supposed to just drive me from inside. Maybe JFK knew how to handle me nicely because of his sister who seemed like she was retarded. They didn't let her out much, and later I was glad when they didn't have her at their reunions, because I didn't understand what was wrong with her.

During this time, I wasn't allowed to eat as much sugar as I had been previously used to. I was told to be repelled by it and that, even as my hand reached for it, the sugar would move away and I couldn't ever get it so I should quit trying. Before this programming I was used to eating tons of sugar, so it was a major adjustment. Also, my mother used to get so angry with me for not eating enough at mealtimes, but I couldn't, as my programming dictated. She said I didn't eat enough to keep a bird alive. But when I tried to eat I usually felt sick.

Catholic girls had to act proper and Jack never had any cause to be embarrassed by my actions. He was spunky and aggressive and tickled me a lot, often until tears were falling down my cheeks. Then he would lay me on the bed, kiss my tears away and start having sex with me. He said he liked my short hair - that it was stylish - and he would play with my hair and mess it up. I'd just get it done again; in those days I didn't even know how to do my own hair. I never had to, my own personal hairdresser, a family friend, came to the house and washed it, cut it, curled and styled it.

Afterwards, JFK and I ran around naked, playing like school kids, and when it got dark we walked on the beach and the Secret Service agents always walked close behind. Boy did they get an eyeful. They would wink at me sometimes if I turned around to see if they were still there, when I was getting ready to make a move on John-Feee.

One night, Henry let me off at the White House to target JFK. I didn't go up to his bedroom, we had sex in a room near the kitchen that had two beds in it. I had on a short white crop top and low hip hugger jeans. My belly button showed and he said it turned him on. He would stoop down and lick my "bare spot," he called it. His pronunciation sounded funny to the personality dedicated to him because of his accent. I was tan and slim, and he said he liked that my tummy was flat. He said he hadn't had such a flat one in awhile and it turned him on. After we had a quick sexual encounter, I had to hurry to get my clothes on and exit real fast. He would open the door and look down the hall to see if the coast was clear. Then he would say, "Okay, now." And, I would run down the hall, out the door and down the steps to Henry waiting for me in the limo smoking his cigar. He would usually say something derogatory about JFK and tell me to button my clothes correctly. My bell bottoms had buttons on the front and if I was rushed I had trouble getting them buttoned right. I was always skipping a button. Henry would look down at my buttons and tell me to straighten up. Then I would button them correctly. I couldn't help that JFK had rushed me - I think he enjoyed that part as much as the sex. He seemed to like the adrenaline rush.

There was a very close call on another night. Jackie was down the hall calling out, "Jack, Jack, Jack!" Looking surprised, he grabbed me and put me in the closet, fixed the bed and answered her

quickly before she opened the door. You could hear the sound of her shoes when she veered off the hallway runner and onto the wood floor. I was in the closet when she came in the room and asked, "Jack, what are you doing?'

I heard him laugh and say he was looking for John-John's shoe. He said one was missing. Jackie asked him to come upstairs and he told her he would just look for a while longer and then he would be up. This guy actually let his wife out of the room, pulled me out of the closet and started having sex with me again, this time with more passion than ever before. He seemed to thrive on the risk factor. When I left, the Secret Service agents usually walked me from the White House down the block to a waiting limo, unless Henry was waiting for me outside.

Henry was cultured. There were little blue vases with flowers in the back of his shiny black car. They had a little light next to them and you could see the flowers in the dark. If after one of these escapades I began talking silly and sexual, Henry would give me the sign to hush up by simply buttoning or zipping his lips and then I knew to be silent and obedient. I could be turned off or on, volume up or down. I ran very mechanically like a Rolls Royce. Henry didn't like noise or children so he created me to be quiet and dignified. As I grew older it wasn't as hard because I was more fully trained and didn't get my personality switching messed up. I got used to being silent with Henry. But it was a difficult transition after I was in the presence of JFK because he was wild and noisy, and his playfulness put me in the same frame of mind, until Henry toned me down.

Why JFK and His Brother Really Got Shot

JFK had ties to Frank Sinatra and his group. I was shared around all these type groups because of Bob's and Henry's influence. The Kennedy's were highly mob connected, especially Bobby, as surprising as that might seem for the family man image he projected. JFK took a mob dispute with him clear to the White House and attempted to use his political power as President to shut down his enemies. He publicly appeared to go after the Mob, but he was interested in shutting down only one enemy faction. But he had to publicly say he was going after all underworld crime in order to be able to legally do what he tried to do: dismantle the Mob that opposed the Kennedy family clan. I overheard Joe Kennedy yelling at JFK at a family reunion when he was President. He told him to stop messing with the Mob, to leave it alone, that he didn't know what he was doing. It was shortly after that that Joe Kennedy had a stroke or brain seizure, and Rose blamed Jack for causing it.

Joe Kennedy was very happy with the marriage of Jackie to Jack because Jackie brought with her a faction of mob that would help build up Jack and the future Kennedy dynasty. At least that's what I heard him say. Joe Kennedy was big on mob connections, like his friend J.P. Morgan, who was an important mob buddy and supporter. They supported each other.

As Joe Kennedy got weaker, the tight rein of coexistence he held with the Mob began to loosen and his sons became sloppy and careless, and didn't take seriously the rules of the Mob. Like Uncle Frank (Sinatra) said, "You don't ever try to go against the Mob or you'll wind up in the morgue or worse yet, sleeping with the fishes." I was born into Uncle Charlie's mob connection and he heavily influenced my life because of his arms, munitions and drug connections all over the globe. These were some serious connections that made him sought after by members of the Council. In those days, the Mob made the money and powerful connections. Different mobs supported each other like allies from foreign countries do. They were the power behind the Council, initially - the connections that allowed the Council to get such a toehold, as the mobs worked cliqueishly for or against one another. The Mob provided important funding in the early years, but later the Council took away much of their power over monopolies when the Council outstripped them of their power through intelligence and outsmarting them with technology.

The Mob couldn't begin to compete. In the beginning the Council knew how to work the different factions of the Mob for the Council's benefit and gain. Once the Council attained the strength they needed to get over the hump and into the big money, they outsmarted the Mob with their mind control technology and were then able to control the Mob. It was a game of intellect and the Council won- checkmate!

Joe Kennedy, William Randolph Hearst, J.P. Morgan and others were part of a powerful underground group. They created their own revenue and their own justice, and they knew how to play by the rules to stay alive and in the game, but the rules suddenly changed with the power created by the Council as they utilized the Mob's success and made it their own. People like Jack (JFK) didn't play by the new rules so they got snuffed.

Often when I was sent in to target JFK, I would be loaded with messages from the different mobsters like Uncle Frank (Sinatra). I gave instructions for JFK to do some favor for the Mob or else, he was told, "the small, sweet favors will dry up." JFK scared me because he always laughed and acted like he didn't take the messages with the seriousness I believed they carried. I had seen Uncle Frankie in operation and he had friends, lots of them, who killed people for nothing much at all, and I was afraid that if JFK didn't listen and do as they said that they would kill him, too. But he didn't seem the least bit concerned about them ...ever. I took them even more seriously after JFK was killed. Then I knew they weren't joking but were very serious and meant what they said about doing everything they said or be killed.

I heard Uncle Frank talk often about people's positions in the Mob. He talked to lots of Mob buddies in front of me. I was used for dangerous connections and, as far as Frank and Dean Martin were concerned, I knew far too much, so they wanted me to "sleep with the fishes." But Henry wouldn't hear of losing his "personal computer" and threatened serious retaliation if they harmed me. Henry had a new kind of power that the Mob didn't understand at first, until they got burned a few times. Then they understood. But some serious action had to be taken to prove this power, like, as I overheard, "the assassination of a President and his big mouth brother who just wouldn't listen," in order for the Mob - a strong political faction of it - to see where the new power lie, so they would know to back off. By then the banks and newspapers were taken over and reorganized by the Council and their constituents, and HIGH LEVEL TECHNOLOGY took over - something the Mob knew nothing about. It took the wind out of their sails. This was happening during the 60's and early 70's, when I was only a teenager approaching early adulthood, and listening and recording everything I heard per instructions from my boss, Henry Kissinger.

One day in his office, Henry said, "You won't be servicing him (JFK) much longer. The higher ups have some alternate plans for him." At the time I felt he meant death. Henry said, "This will lock you in for life." Later, they used JFK's death on me heavily.

When JFK was killed I was in junior high school and my controllers told me, "If we can take out the President without anyone knowing, who would miss the likes of you?" They told me I was dispensable, easily replaceable, and that no one would ever miss me if I were gone. To give me a clear example the suited man reminded me, "Does your mother even have a clue where you are right now? NO. So who would miss you? Not even your own mother."

In order to insure that I was under program and their total control they continued the ritual torture and trauma. Then they tied the ritual trauma that occurred at home or at the church across the street from my junior high school to songs or hypnotic commands, like "If you try to begin to recall this area of your mind, you will immediately recall this horror scene," which they reminded me of in complete detail, in order to keep me terrified and programmed.

Most people are now familiar with Marilyn Monroe's connection to the Kennedy family and her use with the President. It has been said by insiders that Marilyn was one of the first programmed Presidential models, created under mind control for sex with the President and use in Hollywood connections. While I did not possess the physical beauty that Marilyn Monroe did, I had the mind files and all the right connections to further my controller's interests.

For my assignments, when I wasn't flown out of LAX, I left from Van Nuys Airport, John Wayne Airport, or local helicopter pads that were atop buildings in Los Angeles. My mother took me and picked me up and nursed me back to life if I was hurt or really messed up mentally or psychologically. She would try to make me eat if I couldn't and she put me to bed. I was usually so out of it from the food and sleep deprivation and electroshock done for "National Security purposes" to keep memory of the events safely away from my conscious awareness, that I often couldn't think to bathe, eat or get into bed to sleep. My mom would tell me what to do and the parts of me that participated in these escapades always felt so relieved to be back in my clean bed at home. In my attempt to create some semblance of safety and security I slept against the wall to remind myself I was in my own bed and safe. That was, until my father came into my room at night-then the nightmare started all over again. More than anything in the world I wanted my mother, or someone, to help me--to protect me--to stop the nightmarish experiences. But she never could.

I will do everything in my power to stop these atrocities from happening, so that my daughter, my sons, and any future children born into our family will not have to suffer any longer. I am sure the Mob with their huge capacity for family love and loyalty will understand and pardon this need I have. And to Dr. Kissinger, Bob Hope, UCLA, CIA, NASA, U.S. Department of Defense and all those who participated in my family's high-tech programming, I ask that you honor this request for my family's freedom and safety. I will hold you in prayer, asking God to show you the ramifications of your actions.

"Be ye kind to one another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you." -- Ephesians 4:3

Chapter Seven: All the way with LBJ

Lyndon Johnson was a very tall and large man. He had a pocket watch on a chain that he wore in a high pocket in his vest or coat, not in his pants. He wore glasses to read. I remember him sitting at his desk reading on into the night. The rest of the room was dark except for the light on the desk that he was reading by. He liked to wear his hat even when he was inside. He just loved his hat. He told me his hat was a Stetson and that back where he came from it was the best... "Like a Cadillac," he explained. His clothes smelled of cologne and his suits were often gray or brown and he often wore boots. He wore big white baggy boxer shorts and they didn't ever look new, as one would think a person in his position would wear. He had a bridge with a few false teeth on it, smoked a cigar at times and other times he puffed on a pipe.

On this occasion, he kept me in the bed in the darkened hotel room while he sat at the desk to finish up reading his papers. Then he turned off the light and came over to the bed where I was tucked in, wearing a skimpy teddy. It was cold in the room. All Lyndon had on was his boxers and brown socks. He laid his clothes by the table and chairs, and when he walked to the bed he pulled his penis out of the hole in his boxers and pulled my head over to him. He commanded, "Suck," while he pulled my hair to bring me closer to him. He stood, moaning with pleasure and then complained that he was needing to bend over too far so I got up on my knees and finished. He gratified himself in my mouth and liked to watch me swallow. Then LBJ climbed into bed and held me like I was a teddy bear and asked me to rub his back. One time he had me get out of bed to get him a cigar. He wanted me to light it but I wasn't very good at it because I was just a kid. I coughed a lot and nearly choked to death, but I got it to him in bed all lit. I handed him the cigar and he said, "Thank you, little lady." He usually called me that. He didn't want to go to sleep right away and had me turn the TV on for him. He never took his socks off the whole time.

One time when I was with LBJ he asked me questions about school and seemed to like to hear me talk about it. He also liked for me to wear my black and white saddle shoes. I had very shiny patent leather ones. This was during the time I was still attending Hale Junior High School. Lyndon liked that I was very young. At this time I was around 12 or 13 years old. I was with him quite a few times.

Another time my father took me to Texas on the flight back from Iowa. That's when LBJ showed me his Cadillac convertible. He kept it parked in a separate garage away from the ranch so it wouldn't get so dirty. "Hell, everything gets coated with dirt on the Ranch," he said. He had on his dress-up cowboy clothes and said that "Lady B" was off at some china convention. He drank beer in the car when we went on a "joy ride," he called it. I sat next to him and gave him a "super-duper," which was complete oral sex gratification. He said, "Be careful, I don't want to get any on the seat."

I laughed and teasingly said to assure him, "I know. I'm an expert in this area. Remember?"

"Well you sure do have spunk, I'll say that for you," he replied. LBJ smelled but not like body odor; it was just a strong male smell. He had his arm up over the back of the seat and we only rode for as long as it took to satisfy his sexual urge. Then he took the car back and had me keep my head down so no one could see me. I didn't go inside the ranch and when we got back he said, "This is as far as you go, little lady." I let myself out of the car and slammed the door. "You could have waited for my assistance," he said.

I laughed and said, "I can do it myself." A suited man escorted me into the back of a black sedan that was waiting under a tree at the front of the ranch and I was taken away.

Another evening as I waited for Lyndon, dressed scantily in a black lacy bra, garter belt, black nylons and red high heels, he declared I was making smoke come out of his ears and that, "it shore

wasn't from his cigar." He wanted me to keep turning around and around and around while he looked at me. "My, my..." he said, licking his lips and as he put his hand to his mouth he continued, "My Lord, what do we have here?" The heavy stench of his cologne and smokesaturated clothes followed him over to me as he told me to bend over the bed with just those garter belts on and he stuck his penis in my bottom and then into my vagina but I had to give him oral sex in between, "to clean it off," he explained. It was disgusting and vile, even under mind control. Then we had intercourse and he liked it when I made noises. He had a cattle prod or some sort of electrical device nearby but didn't use it much. When he pushed the lever it made a crackling sound and what emerged looked like a jolt of yellow fiery-type electricity. He said he didn't have to use it with me much because I was so good.

He asked me if I liked what I did. I shrugged my shoulders and said, "Yes," but due to the mind control I was under I was unable to really think about his question. He told me he loved the young ones, "...beautiful little lady." He liked to kiss open mouth but he tasted yucky like cigars. His private parts smelled, too. But then there was the cologne to cover up the smell. He was pretty fat from my perception, but big and tall. Lyndon had a medium to small penis for his big body, but he said he used it well. He wasn't really hairy and the hair on his head was thinning. He used something like Vitalis on what was left of his hair when he combed it. I think maybe that is why he kept his cowboy hat on all the time, even in bed.

I usually slept all night with him because he wanted me to. He slept really close and held on to me. I spent the night and then in the morning I was taken home. When I was in the 10'" grade, I spent the night with him more often - even sometimes on school nights. I didn't go to school until 11:30 a.m. anyway and no one could ever seem to tell I had been gone. Sometimes I missed a full day of school and no one at Hale or Taft High ever said anything to me. Another form of trauma was added when one day after school, I was forced to watch as the men in suits roughed up my junior high school principal.

I was taken to the White House to be with Lyndon. One night he told me all about this lady named Agnes who he loved before Lady B. That's what he called his wife, "Lady B," instead of Lady Bird. He said he never got over Agnes, just couldn't forget her. He said Lady B fit into his future plans and worked out better but that he just really loved Agnes. When he talked about Agnes he had a goofy faraway look on his face.

Lyndon told me his wife had grown to act old early on in their marriage when something of a maternal nature happened to upset her. He said from then on she wasn't much for sex, so he took care of his needs elsewhere. He told me so much personal stuff that I think he must have forgotten how young I was. A lot of what he told me I didn't really understand. But I listened, apparently to his satisfaction, because one day he complimented me by saying, "You are a very good listener, young lady."

Lyndon also liked for me to cuddle on his lap while he fondled me in an armchair as he watched TV. He usually covered me with a blanket. It made it more secretive and he pretended people were present in the room with us watching but they didn't know what we were doing. Then he would ask me if I liked it.

I would smile and was programmed to say, "of course," or, "do more," or, "you're so big." He loved it all. I wore Unforgettable perfume with him. It was pungent and strong but he liked it. He especially liked sex when I was menstruating - he said it turned him on. He liked to do all sorts of perverted things to me during that time, which I don't feel comfortable sharing here. He also suggested that I do whatever I usually did for the cameras and take charge of our sexual activity. "You're in charge of the whoring, little lady," he would say as he smiled and tipped his hat. That hat was such an important thing to him.

He talked to me a lot and told me all kinds of stories over the time he was President. He liked for me to call him "Prez." He said when I called him Lyndon it made him feel guilty about Lady B so he said to call him Prez and I did as he commanded.

Sometimes he wore those dumb elastic things to hold his socks up like Bob (Hope) did. He looked so ridiculous wearing those dumb socks, his boxers and his hat, while he sat and smoked. He must not have cared what he looked like. The room was always kept pretty dark. He said he was most comfortable like that, but my eyes would adjust to the dark and I could still see how silly he looked. The teen personality programmed to be with him during those times was respectful and performed as her programming dictated, but through her teenage eyes, felt he was just a dork.

I did things that made him laugh. They were really dumb things but he seemed to like them. Like once I pulled my hair over and around and onto my upper lip and scrunched my lip up, pinching the hair under my nose to make it look like a mustache. Silly things made him laugh.

He tested my programmed capabilities. He burned me with a cigar one time, because he said he was told to try it to see what happened. He looked pretty amazed when I took off my clothes, sat down, got into position and told him to go ahead and stick it in, that it wouldn't burn me. So he pressed his cigar to my vagina and it didn't burn me. The pain didn't even register - "it didn't even hurt," is what I told him. That made him turned on and he said, "Little lady, you give me a big boner." He told me there was an endless stream of young ladies who liked his "big boner."

He liked the song that goes, "I'm a long tall Texan, and wear a 10 gallon hat." He also liked Born Free and Burt Bacharach's Raindrops Keep Fallin' on My Head and Blue, Blue, My World is Blue. He also liked hot dogs and hamburgers, but hot dogs best. And he told me he liked dachshunds, those little wiener dogs. I often felt like a dog with him because he was always patting my head. I joked with him about it and started barking when he patted me. I could really get off-the-wall with him and he seemed to love it. He laughed and laughed like Nixon and Reagan did at the silly things I was programmed to say and do. I don't know if he was aware that I had been programmed with most of the jokes.

The men in suits usually took me to him at a hotel. They put me in the room to wait for him. I'd say the suits were the Mob, but Secret Service agents waited outside the door once the Prez got there.

Once we were alone I was programmed to say, "Hey Prez, got a big boner for my little pussy today?" He would get all excited and start kissing and licking me. Yuck, it was gross. But it was the saddle shoes that really got him every time. He liked me to wear my school-type clothes and so I did. I was helicoptered from somewhere near Woodland Hills. Usually I was not flown in on a big commercial airline to see Lyndon. I don't know why but it was usually private planes. Then I would sleep with him all night and be flown back to California. There were times when, after I was used, the men in suits would let me out of the car near school and I would have my school clothes on from the day before, and I would just walk to school and go in like nothing had ever happened.

One time when I was sent to Lyndon, somehow I ended up wearing the St. Christopher metal that my programmed boyfriend Craig had given me for going steady. The men in suits would have normally taken away any personal item of this nature, but for some reason they missed my necklace this time. Johnson examined it and asked me what it was. Unable to think to lie, I told him it was a necklace my boyfriend gave me. Immediately he looked depressed. So I climbed into his lap and told him not to worry that my boyfriend couldn't hold a candle to him and that I was forced to be with my boyfriend, but that I choose to be with him. He smiled, pulled his hat down over his face, and leaned back in his chair ordering, "a blow job a-la-carte." So I performed as commanded. He said most women didn't love it the way I did.

Lyndon thought Texans were the best and most powerful type of men. I was taken to Texas to be used sexually by the Prez at a cabin or ranch out in the middle of nowhere. It had fences and horses and a woodcabin type house, but there were hardly any trees or greenery, like in California. The cabin was

wood inside and he had a lamp that was made out of a bootleg. He loved it and I teased him about it, "Who's leg ya' got there holding up that light?" On a table there was a picture of Lady B that had been taken at the Ranch. We had sex there on occasion, because, as he explained, it was a place he could go and not be seen or bothered by anyone. The Secret Service could guard him well there since there was nothing else around and no one had any business going there unless they knew LBJ and had been invited. Despite the security there, LBJ often wore a small gun strapped to his leg by his boot. He said he enjoyed carrying it. He waltzed me back to his room, to the bed he shared with his wife. He said, "By sleeping here with you, when I'm f- -king the little lady, you can bet I'll be thinkin' of you."

There were white limos with Johnson. He liked oral sex when we rode in the back. He made the Secret Service agents ride up with the driver instead of in the back with him and he would have them close the tinted window behind the driver. He told them he didn't want to be disturbed because he and the "pretty little lady were going to have a nice quiet chat," which in actuality was a sexual encounter. Usually he was being driven to some location and upon reaching his final destination would debark the limo, leaving me in the back, or I would be kept waiting in the back for more when he returned. He could handle up to three oral sex encounters a day without any problem. He had his pocket watch on a chain in his vest pocket and would check the time to inform me if we were rushed or not. Usually he would say we were rushed which meant I had to work quickly and get him aroused and satisfied rapidly.

Later, he wanted me to dance cowboy style with him and I tried but wasn't very good. He said, "Don't worry, you know how to do the most important things - you've got what counts." One day he gave me an iris from an arrangement on a hotel table. He bowed and did a little dance as he held it out to me. It was really out of character for him.

At the end of "the Prez's" administration, I was also filled with more mind file information. I was taken to different offices in DC to be imprinted with more top secret, classified data by a female administrator.

LBJ also told me that the White House was a very lonely place to live and that he really wasn't very happy there. He said he was most at home in Texas at his ranch. Occasionally he had meetings there and other men were present. I had to give oral sex to many of them. I was usually there for one overnight and then driven back to town by limo, then flown home. Before I was put on the plane to California, the men in suits always took me for a coke and french fries at McDonald's. This was part of my programming to believe I was at McDonald's in California, so I wouldn't remember where I really was. The fries and coke were delicious since my programming required that I was food deprived before and during the time of my use. Then the men put me on the plane with the suggestion to sleep and forget. Because of our programming my mom never noticed I was gone and neither did I ... not until 1991 ... over twenty-five years later.

"This, too, is apart of "The Truth that will set you free. " -- John 8:32

Brice Taylor - Thanks for the Memories, pp 61-63

Chapter Eight: Brain Surgery at UCLA took away my Father's Free Will

Bethesda, Maryland

In my early teens, one of the places I was taken to was a hospital in Bethesda, Maryland. Two men in suits met me at the airport, drove me there and waited while a nurse helped me out of the car and took me into the emergency room. I was doubled over in pain, having trouble walking because the men in suits had just slugged me in the stomach. They told the old greyhaired nurse in the pink uniform with the little white apron, that I had appendicitis and to take me immediately into the emergency room. I don't know why but the men put a blond curly wig on me. I had on blue jeans, tennis shoes and a T-shirt.

I was terrified and couldn't help myself. The nurse took me in and waved me through all the paper work. Two doctors, clad in full surgical garb met me at a door to emergency surgery. They told the nurse they'd take over from there and laid me directly on an operating table and put a mask over my face and a needle in my arm. I had needles put in my arms all the time so that wasn't anything new, but it hurt. They told me they weren't who they appeared to be and then they put me to sleep with some sort of anesthetic, but parts of me from inside watched and knew exactly what was happening. There was great fear that they would really cut me open and take out my appendix when I didn't need it taken out. But instead, they put electrodes on my forehead, temples and head, and headphones on my ears that delivered one sound to one ear and another sound to the other. Then they varied the sound volume, quickly bringing the volume up so loud that it was excruciatingly painful. I felt like I would go crazy. They kept delivering electroshock to my head. Then they inserted something into my vagina and shocked me vaginally, then shocked my head, and they kept that routine up for what seemed like eternity. I could smell the alcohol and could feel when they put a cold scissors-like thing up my nose. It tickled and itched. Then a doctor said, "It's in place."

Everything inside of me felt psychedelic from the drugs they gave me. There were lots of colors and flashes of light that caused a very unreal feeling. I don't know how long I laid there. Eventually, they called for a nurse and told her to help me back out to the car. They said that I checked out fine, that I must have just eaten something that made me sick. The nurse put my arm around her neck and helped me outside. I had trouble walking but managed and she delivered me back to the two men in suits.

They, in turn, brought me to a darkened room all alone for awhile and then hooked me up to some of their own equipment. I sat in a chair while they put a band around my head and wrists, and shocked me while I listened to something they played through headphones on my ears. I couldn't understand the words I heard, as they were all mixed up and it made me nuts to try to understand. Then they unhooked me and said it was time to go home. I was put onto a military helicopter with two rotors, one at the front and one at the back and transferred to another plane that didn't have regular seats like a commercial airplane. There were just a few seats on either side and all sorts of straps and equipment on the floor. I laid on the floor during the whole flight.

My mother picked me up at the airport and I slept in the back seat of our Cadillac all the way home. She put me to bed and I could hardly move. I was in lots of pain and was nauseated, sick, and exhausted for the next two days. I couldn't eat or get out of bed. I just slept it all off in a hazy, drugged sleep. Mom just thought I had the flu again.

There were lots of times I was taken to places for programming. They had all sorts of schemes to get me to the programming sites - even getting me to pull my car over to the side of the road, after I learned to drive. I remember how one man told me to get out of the car, while another man pulled my hood up before taking me away in an ambulance to Westlake Hospital. Then they flew me from there to wherever they wanted me to go.

I remembered an incident where I was on an operating table and I saw a whole roomful of women like me who were also laying on gurneys with white sheets over them, and we were all linked up together through a single wire. There were mirrors all around and while I was deprogramming I realized that these other women were all parts of me; they all looked like me but had different lives and different jobs. That's what my programmers told me in order to create and enforce my multiple personalities.

Sometimes there were groups of doctors or scientists watching from chairs in a circular arena that extended upward. In this setting the doctors made presentations on their findings in order to display the research and show their progress so they could get additional funding or permission to do more mind research into areas they wanted to explore. The stage where I was being tested and displayed to the doctors in long white lab coats was low and as I looked up there were rows of ascending circular chairs in the arena from where they watched. Sometimes while I laid on the gurney, they would shine lights into my eyes and tape them open so I couldn't avoid the lights. They blinded me with one color for a long time, like white, and then added in another color like red or green. It was painful, so I escaped like I had been trained from birth to do, into mental dissociation so I couldn't feel the pain. Often they paired electroshock with the bright lights and music or word phrases. At appropriate times, they displayed a picture of Craig onto a holder in front of me while I sat in a chair that spun around and around. They played love songs while they spun me and when I came to a stop, I would see the picture of Craig and feel relieved. They told me Craig was my lifeline and to sever a connection with him was equal to death. Later on in my life, they did that sort of programming with my children's pictures.

My Father Has Brain Surgery
UCLA Neuropsychiatric Institute 1967

The summer of my 16th year, our family physician, Dr. Stoddard referred my father for brain surgery to UCLA Neuropsychiatric Institute. Dr. Robert Rand was the Neurosurgeon who performed the operation. My father never had a chance. Suited men came to visit and monitor us at crucial times. They were always watching and they gave him shots in his thighs and then asked him questions over and over, and told him what to do with me. Very scary and frightening events happened there to keep me further under control. I can only imagine what they did to my father's brain. The day before his scheduled surgery, a nurse came into his room while the whole family was visiting before surgery. He held out a box and explained very matter-of-factly that the hair in the box was my father's, just shaved from his head, and in the event that he didn't make it through the surgery they were keeping his hair to put back on his head in his casket. These insinuations, coupled with the ritual abuse I had previously endured, were enough to further dissociate me. There were other horrifying events performed to frighten me into further dissociation, creating even more control.

My mother and I were told to wait in the hospital lobby until they came to tell us the surgery was over. They called a code name for me over the loudspeaker and responding to the call, I walked up to my father's hospital room. A doctor in a white coat met me in the room and said he wanted me to enter the surgery room and watch. As I entered, I saw my father with his head cut open, with tubes in him everywhere; in his head, in his nose, in his arm, and they told me that my father would no longer hold authority over me. Now he was totally under their control and, now they would be in total control of me. Then they strapped me into the bed next to him and gave me some sort of gas through a mask they put over my nose and mouth. They told me to turn my head so I could watch everything they did to him that day - they took my real father away from me and the doctor said that they would be in charge of everything that happened to me and all my progeny from then on. I didn't know what that meant, but I knew it was bad. They performed some sort of surgery on me, too. They inserted something under my nail bed and later they told me they moved it somewhere else and I would find places on my body with skin flaps where I figured they had put them in. They tested and experimented with implant after

implant on me. With some implants they were trying to see if they could totally control me from a distance.

Later when my mother came to look for me, she found me sitting in my father's room bent over with my head down to my knees, while a nurse standing by me explained, "She fainted, that's all. She'll be all right." My father made it through surgery and was placed in intensive care.

Soon after, my controllers told me my father had died in the surgery, that all I had to do was remember how he looked with his eyes closed to realize he was dead. They told me that my 'real' family would take over now and that I needed to understand that it was really best that way. And, although everything outwardly appeared to remain the same, nothing ever was again. The life essence of my father was totally gone; he was not in control of himself any longer. My brother Rick took over the family business and I began traveling more, internationally.

Months after my father's release from the hospital, he came into my room and sat down on the floor next to my bed while I was studying. Upset and very emotional, which was very unusual for my father, he said, "Honey, big things are happening and I've lost control of you." Tears were streaming down my strong father's face. I didn't know how to react. My macho father never cried. I couldn't think to question him or to wonder just what it was he was trying to tell me. So I let it go, along with hundreds of other questions and thoughts that any normal, unprogrammed daughter would have thought to ask.

Institute Of Higher Learning

Sometime later, I was taken to a hospital in Montreal. My controllers called it an "Institute of Higher Learning," but instead of higher learning, I was put in a hospital gown and kept drugged and in restraints. A very important French personality inside of me was created and enhanced there. If I didn't cooperate they put me into a padded cubicle in the dark until I "came to my senses" and began behaving properly. I'd seen over the years just what they had done to my father and I couldn't take anymore. I had nothing to lose by not cooperating. From one of his personalities that was 'in the know' and before brain surgery took his free will away, my father told me, "You don't have to do anything they say honey, they want to take your mind." Years later as I retrieved pieces of my memory that allowed me to see the bigger picture, I remembered numerous occasions when my father laid in programs to help me exit my abuse. He even gave me suggestions to heal and bring my personalities together. I've often wondered if this was a more significant contribution to my successful healing than I could ever imagine.

"All that is now hidden will someday come to light!" -- The Living Bible.

Chapter Nine: They didn’t see me as Human

Sweet Sixteen

Bob Hope was one of the first high-powered men Craig 'delivered' me to. This, of course, was by no means my first meeting with Bob, but it was a test for Craig and the first time my young 'handler' would use the programmed skills he learned to take me to my assignment. For my 16t' birthday present in 1967, Craig surprised me with a trip, by train, to the San Diego Zoo for the day. Consciously we were programmed to be committed to a non-sexual relationship, waiting for our projected wedding date to consummate our marriage. At least that is why we thought we were only spending the day, and not the night in San Diego. Due to our programming, neither of us had any conscious awareness that anything other than that was occurring.

We boarded the train, and after a while Craig delivered me to a private car where Bob Hope, Senator Alan Cranston, and a couple of other men were waiting. Craig left me with them and then robotically left the room. I had sex with each of them as the others watched. They were all old men, even in those days.

Later, Bob said he had a little job for me to do and the next thing I knew I was in a big office with wooden floors and a desk with an American flag beside it. When Bob introduced me, I shook hands with the man behind the desk. He impressed me then as an important man, like the President, but he wasn't. Bob left me alone with him. The man asked me all kinds of questions and I told him that I had been insurance company bonded as a requirement of my Christmas employment in a jewelry store. He seemed to like that. He also wanted to check out my body. Following his instructions, I removed my clothes and he 'checked' me all over by feeling. He put his hand behind my neck and pulled me over to him and began kissing me.

This dark-haired executive was much younger than Bob. He turned me around facing away from him and I could hear the noise of the zipper as he unzipped his pants. He pushed me over at the waist and began having sex with me from behind. He explained that he was checking the fit. I didn't know what that meant but was very embarrassed, as evidenced by my red cheeks. He commented on how he liked it when I blushed. He said it meant that I was naive and innocent, and explained he liked them that way. When he was through 'questioning' me, he opened the door and went and got Bob. He told Bob that I'd be fine, that he was very pleased, and went to his drawer, took out a folder, and wrote out a check. He carefully put the folder away, handed Bob the check and said, "Here's a check for the cause." I didn't know what that meant either but they shook hands and both seemed pleased.

When we left in the limo, I couldn't see where we were going, because Bob pushed my head down on a man's lap for me to perform oral sex. The rest of the day was a blur. I didn't know where my boyfriend Craig went or if I would ever see him again. I was exhausted when we finally got 'home' and that night I 'slept away' all memories of this experience just like I had been programmed to do.

During my teen years, I remember Craig and I would lie around my backyard pool for hours, swimming, talking and playing. At the time, that was all I consciously remembered. But, when I woke up to reality years later and began recalling what fully happened, I remembered Craig holding a small brown bottle with a dropper in it. He put some of the clear liquid from the bottle onto a piece of celery and peanut butter and gave it to me to eat. After I did, everything kept moving, like a movie, except each frame was moving in a fractured, uneven, hazed way. It was hard for me to even walk to the pool. I bent over, my stomach cramping and everything was spinning. I wasn't suppose to notice that he had given it to me, but I did, and later I remembered other tunes.

Happy Daze

By the time I entered William Taft High School in Woodland Hills, my life began to change even more dramatically. Due to the mind control I was under, I constantly had a smile plastered on my face whether I was happy or not. The ritual abuse became minimal during this time, done only on occasions that were required to maintain my mind control. Through a vast array of the latest in human programming technologies, I was well on my way to becoming a total and completely compliant, efficient and multi-tasked robot.

Looking back now, high school felt like one big blur to me. I remember having only one close friend at a time, and knowing that I was "popular" but never feeling that way. Instead I felt ugly, stupid, awkward, shy and set apart from the other kids at school that were my age. I was made part of the Student Council so that I would have a public school image. Often my picture was posted on walls to announce upcoming events, or to announce contests I was entered into. My presence leading and organizing certain school functions served to allow many of the students to know who I was; yet very few students really knew me or were close to me. A whole strategy was devised to keep me popular in the eyes of my schoolmates and most of the faculty by making me a continual face or body by plastering pictures of me all over the school; yet, I was not in attendance on a very regular basis. Henry said it was for my protection, so others would feel below me and many wouldn't even approach me as if I was a celebrity, and I was instructed to "act" that way also. I was known in school, without ever really "knowing" anybody because of the projected image that was publicly created for me. I felt isolated and alone, in a daze, like I really didn't exist.

I was programmed to act snooty and too good for people, to remain very aloof. Yet I was deeply locked into my own inner world, constantly mentally working to keep all data filed correctly in all the areas Henry created. I was so inwardly focused that I had a very hard time in the physical world, hence the reason my mother did everything for me at home. Henry told me to spend all my time tending to the mental files. And while my mother did all the domestic chores, I did as Henry commanded, often floating on a raft in our backyard swimming pool, sorting mind files all the while in a trance state. I had many mental exercises Henry assigned for me to perform at home. The system he created and used during my 16th to 22nd years was extensive and required mental work to keep organized, cleaned and neat. Henry said it took mental muscle to keep the files in complete order.

I was elected Vice President and then President of the Girl's League Association at school, and was part of the Student Government. I was voted 'Princess' at the prom, was paraded in a convertible at a football game and had my picture pasted all over the school for fashion shows and contests I was in. But, I never felt like I belonged; I just felt like a robot, living in a complete fog, and looking back that is exactly what I was.

As Girl's League President, I was in charge of a fashion show that was called "Tivoli Gardens," a foreign affair that was so named in order to scramble a lot of the international work I was doing with Henry abroad. They even used times I was supposedly buying flowers in downtown Los Angeles at the flower mart as a scramble. My mother reluctantly accompanied me on the stage at the fashion show to introduce the models. She was so shy and embarrassed but she did it for me because I asked her to. Henry had already taught me to see the audience in totality as one person I was comfortable speaking with and to begin my speech as if the two of us were alone. And I was instructed to wear my speaking dress to give me confidence and poise. Armored with these inner crutches, I could speak with no hesitancy, no shyness, and no apparent problem at all.

I also spoke publicly for Henry at other occasions where he would load me up and book me a time slot on stage. Sometimes it was a debate between fellow robots on political issues but I wasn't trained

like they were - I was trained only to deliver. Many others were adroit at debating, but I wasn't. So I'd go up on stage, deliver my pre-programmed speech, everyone would clap and later Henry would say I did a great job. But I had to have on my speaking dress, and no matter what I was really wearing, it became "my speaking dress." If he was present, Henry commented before I went on, "My, you look lovely in your speaking dress," and then my speech would be internally engaged and I'd be ready to deliver. I performed in these ways for many "show your latest technology in robots" shows. After I passed those, I got to move on to more diplomatic matters.

Henry used me to warm up groups that his constituency was going to speak to and I often wore several different disguises and always looked different. Henry was the puppeteer and I was his puppet and at anytime he wished, he could pull my strings and make me change into a different puppet, with a different face with which to meet the public. And like Mr. Potatohead, he could order what kind of face he wanted me to put on. "Squint your eyes a bit, curl up the ends of your mouth, flair your nostrils, pull your jaw forward"...all sorts of different facial mannerisms and contortions that I was programmed to perform, combined with wigs, glasses, body padding, hats, etc. It was all quite effective as I played my role creating different faces to present to the public. Not many people know about this technology yet and Henry said we had a definite edge on the others. He said that it was always important for us to strive to reach greater and greater knowledge and awareness, to stay ahead of the pack in being the first, the best, and the brightest in our latest endeavors. He was constantly experimenting with me and adding things like archival information and classified documents, in order to have the latest information to draw from.

Henry said, "You're the leader of the pack in this diplomatic endeavor and as such we will continue to update your system in order to insure that you stay "the leader of the pack." In a hypnotic session, he said to me, "Each and every time you hear the song, "Leader of the Pack," on the radio, you will think of the motorcycle bikers only and will remain in the dark otherwise." The word "dark" was internally linked in my system to all sorts of ritual horrors and terrors, thereby plunging this information that was subliminally linked to it deeply into the recesses of my subconscious mind. I could not consciously retrieve it; yet it ruled my actions. In this way the ritual tortures that I had endured as a child and as a young adult at my church were linked to these other memories. They tied the ritual trauma to these memories by saying, "If you begin to recall such and such, you will immediately recall the ritual, and they would go into great detail to remind me of the tortures that happened at those rituals. They used the ritual tortures on and off at strategic, necessary times to either bring to the forefront an old group of personalities, or to create a new group. A traumatic ritual could effectively create a whole new group of alternate personalities, since it was such an extensive trauma. Henry often spoke to his colleagues on this subject, advising them when and where to use trauma. Henry consulted with other men who needed guidance as to how to create and maintain a robot or group of them, as in Bob Hope's case.

Bob had a whole group within me, eight personalities at one time, but Henry advised him to cut it down to four because he said he couldn't effectively maintain that many until the level of technology rose, allowing for more of the programming and maintenance to be performed by machine rather than by man. Henry said my prototype was not new but was highly expanded and more technical and he was building on an older model of a sex robot and mind computer prototype, combining them within me in hopes of expanding technologies and coming up with a more versatile workable model. He actually viewed me as a machine.

Dr. Olmstead, our principal, gave me orders in his office. When he did I would go into robotic receiving mode and record all the data he gave me. I transferred what was appropriate to my blue inner calendar and filed the rest of the information into the suggested files for use at the correct time. My Student Government (Student Council) teacher, Saul Rowen, would drive me, to catch a plane or, more often, to a helicopter port where I was then transported to a government approved shuttle plane to

Washington, DC or New York. Usually I was taken to Nixon for sex and to straighten out his often dour attitude and then to Henry and the research team for further instruction.

Back home Dr. Stoddard prescribed a continuous supply of the antibiotic Tetracycline. He said I had to take the medication so I would not have pimples. I never was able to question this at the time, could not think to, but realized later on, as I healed and integrated, that I never suffered from any type of acne and must have been given this antibiotic to insure I did not infect the government leaders with any "social diseases." He also prescribed mood elevators and mild tranquilizers for me during times when I was extremely depressed as a teenager. These helped to keep me "happy." During the times I was being used by others, they utilized personalities that were cheerful and energetic, so my moods were never a problem. Dr. Stoddard also gave my father shots of testosterone to boost his sexual desire.

Looking back, my high school years had a very unreal feeling to them. I didn't eat much in those days, in obeisance with programming, and was very thin like the popular model of the time, Twiggy. I had programs in place that guaranteed that my physical body would maintain a perfect size 6, or less, and usually in those days I wore a size 2 or 4. If I ate very much I became nauseated and could eat no more. When I went for a few days without eating while I was on assignment, my stomach shrank and so it was difficult to eat much, plus I would often be very sick and shaking from the high voltage I was subjected to. My mother often got into my twin bed next to me and held and rubbed me to get my body to calm down. She also kept saying, "You're home honey, you're home." My body often convulsed and I had dry heaves but after I slept I was usually better.

Rocketdyne/Rockwell International

Ken Golliher was a nuclear physicist and a Mason who was respected as 'the brains' behind a lot of scientific plans or inventions while employed at Rocketdyne in the Woodland Hills area. He worked with Ellsworth Ford, Craig's father, who was plant engineer, and Mary, the women I've previously mentioned, our neighbor who for many years was my 'second mother.' Ken's daughter Shelly was a member of the young women's Masonic organization, Job's Daughters, and attended the same school as Craig. Through their friendship I came to know her.

But it wasn't until some twenty-five years later that I began remembering Ken Golliher, adorned with a white lab coat, white hard hat and goggles, waving me through the security guard at the front guard gate at Rocketdyne. From his lab coat pocket hung a plastic badge with his picture and other information on it. I don't know what he told them to gain entrance for me, maybe that I was his daughter or something. Anyway, they let me through the security gate driving my family's old '57 Chevy. I must have been around sixteen years old.

Once inside the building, Ken showed me the monkeys in a cage and one monkey was sitting in a chair with its little head screwed into a metal framework that wrapped around his skull. Ken told me it didn't hurt the monkey at all. Before I knew it, I was strapped into a chair, with electrodes positioned on my head. They told me that I was strapped in so I wouldn't move around. Ken was an excellent photographer and before me was a slide screen. At first I was shown slides of nature scenes like flowers with bees on them and then they began flashing technical slides with pictures of moon landings, instrumentation information, satellite diagrams, craft designs, mathematical equations and all sorts of technical information. There were slides of page after page of numbers, formulas and diagrams of assembly information for certain projects. One picture was of a mechanical chair that a robot--I mean astronaut--could maneuver around on the moon. It's possible that some of the astronauts are human robots, because I saw the formulas for programming them so they could be controlled from earth and scientists would never have to rely on the astronauts human emotions' or human errors in thinking. I saw a whole set of plans for training and conditioning an astronaut.

The United States actually sent many more people and animals onto the moon and to other planets than they let be known to the American public. They were experimenting with all types of life forces on the moon and didn't announce many of their experiments, or findings. The ones that were made public were strictly to control the feelings and beliefs of the American people. Unscrupulous scientists sent "indigents" as they called them, to the moon and other planets, and they usually didn't return ...or if they did they tested them to see what killed them. So great was the desire to explore other planets to beat the Russians, or to quench the curiosity of some totally left brain scientists, that they didn't care who they killed or hurt to get the desired results.

They were doing initial research and used mind-controlled slaves to explore the possibility that humans could live in outer space - on space stations and other planets. This was done in preparation for the elite families to have a place to go should the need arise.

Even back in the late 60's they had tracking stations on the moon that were highly sophisticated, and used to measure many things. Somehow they were even able to monitor the 'feelings' of a population. They monitored the earth from the moon much more than they monitored the other planets. This monitoring system was set in place to control a society--to control their feelings and thought patterns. They rationalized these actions explaining that in this way they would be able to create a society free of crime and violence, but that is because people won't be able to think for themselves. Their plans are for a society of mind controlled robots. I saw them perform studies on hamsters and rats where they totally controlled them by these means. Now they can do it with human beings and create any situation on the globe they want to peace, chaos, violence, whatever they want and then they can go in with their invisible frequency warfare and publicly visible police force and take control. In this way people could lose all the freedom they once had. It is already happening. Without knowing it, people are loosing freedom over their own thoughts and emotions and will become controlled instead by technologies that they could never even have imagined, let alone thought possible. It is a sick, twisted, and sinister scheme of global mind control. (See Nick Begich's book, Angels Don't Play This HAARP.)

Back then, Rocketdyne had a test site in the Santa Suzanna Mountains, a missile range firing plant where the scientists had the privilege of quickly testing their inventions on the spot without having to wait for them to be sent to other firing locations. The scientists liked that instant gratification. They could see how their blueprints worked right away. So they had a total loop from blueprints, to manufacturing and then to launch - and it was more than mere missiles they were firing off.

Ken got me into the facility over and over in my teens, to hook me up to equipment that bypassed my conscious mind to record in my "top secret mind files" information about their ideas which needed to be passed on to alternate sites or the Department of Defense. They were all secretly inter-connected with a huge web of criminals on the inside and at the top who operated without the knowledge of the public.

Army Base Programming

More programming took place on an army base where I was escorted past some men in army uniform to an underground facility that we arrived at by walking down a steep flight of stairs to a large cement and grey metal-walled warehouse. I was taken past a room with desks and computers to a room behind where the programming equipment was kept. They put me inside large cylindrical machines where I either laid or sat while they did all sorts of things to me. One time they put me in a decompression chamber where I felt like I was getting squeezed to death and then they put in some gas that made me laugh and feel weightless. They hooked wires and electrodes to my head and limbs and

they used loud sounds intermittently with soft sounds, then blasted the loud sounds again during which time an army officer in a brown uniform delivered word phrases to me that were inaudible to my conscious mind because of the other loud sounds I was being subjected to. They put me through a series of machines ...ones that spun me, rolling me tumbling head over heals, for long periods of time. Then they laid me on a table and shined bright lights in my eyes and loud sounds again in my ears. At the same time, the officer yelled at me. I was so confused and out of it that another officer tried to calm me down on the table so I could dress and leave. I was escorted out into an awaiting limo. I did notice that we were in an area that looked like the California desert.

I watched and recorded in my mind files, much like a court reporter, while the American doctors in coats mapped my forehead and face and hooked me up to electrodes. There were other people in the room sitting like zombies all with their heads mapped out. We all have numbers that follow us no matter what research projects we were assigned to. They were studying our brains in a variety of different contexts, in all different environments, with different stimulation. They were also studying genetic effects, cultural effects, nutritional effects, every effect of environment and genes on a person's brain function, their life function, their longevity, their functionality and productivity. They monitored (by the electrodes) and registered and mapped lots of data that was imputed on brain function. This also furthered their understanding of how humans would do on other planets and space stations. The movie Coma (1978) was later used as a screen memory (to scramble this abuse), but the experiments were reality. Some data was taken much later on at Pepperdine University in Malibu, where I attended as a college student in 1985-87, and some at international locations; one, a big huge room with dark marble floors in England.

Back At Winnetka Tech

Jokingly, people referred to my high school as "Winnetka Tech," and in essence that was an amazingly appropriate title for a high school that had an inner group of teachers and faculty whose agenda it was to create "enhanced minds." The high school was a factory of "young adults," as Henry Kissinger called us. In junior high Henry began creating my friend Candy's mind files, but said she was too robotic. Henry said I was a natural and ran smoothly with no rough edges. Then there was Helen, the student who was Girl's President before I was and there was also a male student, whose name I can't remember. Henry worked on them all but I was chosen above all of them because I appeared so natural and All-American, while the others he viewed as too ethnic or too robotical. Henry said he could still use them all at different tasks, but I was the most versatile and would fit into most situations. One of the women astronauts also graduated from Taft High School.

At other times in high school I was driven on those small 'special' Los Angeles School District buses - the kind they used for kids with special needs - to the Van Nuys Airport, or to LAX, or to different heliports on top of buildings in Los Angeles. During the late 60's I was taken out of school often and bused to different places for all sorts of different things; sexually servicing important businessmen or politicians, or meeting Nixon at some place on the beach in California, or meeting Reagan at the Motion Picture Country Hospital, or meeting Bob and his friends somewhere. There were lots of important businessmen in Southern California, Northern California, Sacramento, Santa Barbara, Ojai, San Francisco, San Luis Obispo, Santa Cruz, Carmel, etc., that I was delivered to for sex and to deliver Council messages. Suits, suits, and more suits! I never knew where I was going and the driver of the bus was usually a different person each time. One time the driver was a lady who said she came all the way from the inner city to drive me. She said, "You don't look handicapped to me." I didn't respond, couldn't think to, instead I just walked off the bus and into the courthouse where I was to sexually service and pass a message to some circuit judge. Often I would get out of the special bus and later another special bus would pick me up and I would be taken back to Taft High School. I didn't spend a lot of time in class, but my teachers didn't say anything when I didn't turn in my homework. I don't know why, but they didn't.

There were times in high school that I was dismissed from classes for an entire week and spent the time traveling internationally with Nixon and Kissinger. While I traveled at times with Nixon, I was programmed to carry Henry's strategic plan for Nixon to tap into, whenever he needed to refresh himself with Henry's plan. I often stayed in hotel rooms, or waited in nearby rooms or the lobby, appearing to be a regular person. Nixon would access me, before, during, or after a meeting, always leaving the sex for much later on. But I was at Nixon's fingertips, armed and loaded with all the possible input and data any one man could ever want. That's how Henry described this when I accompanied Nixon to China, USSR, the Far East, Vietnam talks, etc., always disguised as someone else in order to serve Henry's interests.

So, in addition to my secret life during my so-called studies at Taft High School, I was flown all over the country and internationally, serving those individuals Kissinger set me up with. I was having routine sex with the health and government teacher, Mr. Saul Rowen, who later became the owner of Cali Camp, an exclusive children's camp in Southern California. Some days when I was at school, during lunchtime, I was filmed pornographically by my brother and others in the photo lab at Taft. And I was having sex, all the while unknown to my conscious personality, with members of the business community, and earned myself the D.A.R. award for service, from the Woodland Hills Rotary Club, upon graduation.

Rockefeller and Kissinger Confer on My Future

Uncle Rocky was my corporate sponsor and was in Henry's office one day when Henry turned to me and said, "My dear, don't you have something to say to Mr. Rockefeller, here?"

"Yes, Sir!" I exclaimed all bubbly and excited. I took his hand and said exactly as Henry had preprogrammed me, "Mr. Rockefeller, I would like to ask you if you would sponsor my further education?"

"Of course," he said, "I would be most delighted to be a part of your future growth and contribution to mankind." Standing, he went on, "For me to finance your education means that you are now part of my family and any young lady as bright as you are should call me Uncle Rocky," and he shook my hand. Now I knew that he was part of my real family that Uncle Charlie (Charles Lilley Horn) had spoken of.

My reliability had been tested for several years and I seemed to "graduate" to a higher level of use. What could be higher level than the President of the United States? In my experience, the Council, and certain international individuals like the Rockefellers, was a higher level, standing head and shoulders above the government and United States politicians.

With this 'honor' bestowed upon me, it took just three days for this highest level of programming to be accomplished. I'm not sure where I was taken but the walls in the room I was taken into were white like in a hospital. There was a flat silver metal band that was fitted to the top of my head with adjoining circular outer bars that haloed around it. They coupled that with finger connectors joined to wires that delivered electroshock to my fingers and toes. They sent electroshock first to both of my smallest appendages; my little fingers and toes. Then they simultaneously sent electroshock to my next finger and toe, and continued in succession until all paired appendages had been included. At the same time they delivered the electroshock, they shined different colors of the red spectrum, which went through blue to purple, while they were flashing the light. Next they did the yellow spectrum paired with a different set of fingers and toes. They completed the whole 'rainbow spectrum' using each finger/toe paired in sequence. I overheard them mention something about creating a perfect coordination between not only left and right brain motor symmetry but actual motor functioning, paired with brain wave patterning so that, "the android robot appears perfectly normal and human." I had to sit in this electric chair for what seemed like hours while they did all this to me.

It was also during this time period that I was introduced to Ronald Reagan.

"Faith comes from hearing the message, and the message is heard through the word of Christ." -- Romans 10: 17

Chapter Ten: Introduced to Governor Ronald Reagan

I was slowly introduced to Ronald Reagan when I was a teenager. Private meetings were set up by Bob Hope, for me to meet with Reagan at the small theater that is part of the Motion Picture Country Hospital (MPCH) located in Calabasas, California, just 10 minutes from my childhood home in Woodland Hills. The hospital is owned and operated by the Screen Actor's Guild (SAG). After my father suffered a heart attack my mother took a job and worked there for 10 years, in the late 60's and early 70's, as secretary/bookkeeper to the Assistant Executive Director.

I was programmed to walk or ride my bike to the hospital to watch some of the movies that played in the small theater on the hospital grounds. I was instructed to watch many movies that were used for 'programming purposes' to instill certain preferred attitudes or moods within me. Among them: My Fair Lady, Gone With the Wind, The Unsinkable Molly Brown, Disney movies, and the Wizard of Oz. Often during the showing, a man would come up behind me and zap me with an electronic piece of equipment. At other times, seeing a movie was just a cover for privately meeting with Ronald Reagan. I was also instructed to read the book, Flowers for Algernon, which was intended to scramble, cloud and cover the memory of experiences that happened at the MPCH and elsewhere.

It was there, in private, at the MPCH, that Ronald Reagan began to get acquainted with me, and with many of my created personalities. I was instructed beforehand that I would have "an important guest" and that I was to "make a good impression on him, to give him the full treatment." The Council had big plans for Ronald Reagan and he fit the requirements for what they were looking for - someone who was pliable and could be directed. He proved that by following their directions from the beginning, even before he was elected Governor. He was a person who was patriotic, personable and was seen as wholesome, good and genuine in the public eye. He was a "good actor" and was willing to jump through their hoops without question. They always told him he was working for the "good of his country" and he never seemed to question anything. But I am getting ahead of myself.

That first meeting, Reagan and I were alone in the small theater. When the lights were lowered in the audience section, that was my cue to begin my routine. The "full treatment" consisted of singing and dancing on the small stage for him, ending with a striptease dance. After my seductive act, I walked out to where he was sitting all alone and climbed, naked, into his lap to recite my program. Following my programmed instructions, I told him that I could satisfy every desire or whim he could imagine, that I came complete with instructions and top security, and was referred by his friend Bob Hope.

He seemed embarrassed, a reaction that would follow him over the years in relation to me, and a bit overwhelmed, but his response was, "I'm sold ...tell Bob I'm sold!"

Having carefully recorded his exact response within my photographic memory as instructed, I clambered out of his lap, collected my clothes from the stage floor and got dressed.

I had several personalities that were specially created to please Ronald Reagan sexually. One was created for total devotion to him over the years.

I was used extensively on and around 1968, at age 17, by then Governor Reagan and soon after with United States President Richard Nixon. These top politicians were guaranteed that my training insured the highest level of security. The high level of mind control I possessed guaranteed that I could be used with these leaders who were involved in some of the highest levels of national security, without my own awareness, therefore creating the most sophisticated level of security our nation had to offer. The spy doesn't even know she's spying!

Rendezvous with Reagan occurred often at the MPCH but the way it was set up was very secretive. On Sunday afternoons, or in the evenings, I accompanied my family to the small movie theatre on the

grounds. While we were waiting outside in line I was instructed to say that I had to go to the bathroom and instead I would slip into the backside entrance to the little theatre and wait for him to show up. Often he was waiting in the back of the theatre and I'd quickly deliver the message and return to my family. Other times, I waited for him in the back of the darkened theatre. He would arrive looking secretive like he was trying to travel "incognito." After we connected I would get up and go to the front of the theatre to join my family and he would sit down in my vacated seat. During the movie I would announce to my family that I was going to the restroom and I would slip into the row of seats in front of Reagan. As soon as I was in position in front of him I rattled off a bunch of information meant to guide him. If he passed these tests by doing what he was told, then he could enter a higher level of the political arena. He was slowly informed that I was a robot who was merely reporting to him from the higher ups. In the beginning they told him not to underestimate my abilities just because I was young, that I had years of powerful training to make me the way I was and that he was to utilize me to the fullest.

Once he was elected Governor, they had me working between Nixon (as President) and Reagan (as Governor). They worked them together and were able to effect powerful change and legislation between the two. That was escalated when Reagan got into office as President and later they utilized Pete Wilson in the same way. Lots of legislation was pushed through and by the time Wilson hit the office of Governor and Reagan hit President, they had the channels cleared to get through laws, bills and whatever else the Council needed for their own advancement.

There was an older gray-haired, feeble looking man with a diamond pinky ring to whom I frequently reported at the MPCH. He often brought my mom a paper to sign. At times he coordinated and delivered me to different rooms or cottages to meet with different people. He told me to go inside and wait. Often Reagan was the person I was to wait for. Other times he would say, "Wait in here," and I sat in a lobby or room where a Secret Service agent came to deliver me to then-Governor Reagan. They took me often to a little housekeeping cottage to have sex and deliver messages to Reagan. Later the older man with the diamond pinky ring would come and take me back to my mother's office. He didn't even see who I was delivered to meet. The Secret Service said they liked it better that way because they said it was "once removed," so it wasn't as risky.

There were instances where my mother would pull open a file drawer in her office, remove a file and lay it on her desk for me to read and record. Displayed before me were logs of upcoming dates and times I was to meet Reagan or others at the MPCH. At other times I viewed papers full of instructions of things to say, including specific phrases, to certain people, or lists of columns of four figure numbers that I was instructed to encode and decipher.

At some meetings Reagan would practice a speech in front of me in the theatre. I'd take it all back to the Council and they would correct a line or two, give the exact wording to be used, and I'd deliver the message to Reagan again and he would modify his speech and deliver it as they dictated.

Other times I was instructed to ride my bike to the MPCH or I accompanied my mom to work when she had extra work to do and I'd say I was going outside. She never questioned me. After I started driving at 16, I was instructed to report to my mom's office and ask for money or permission to do something, be ore I went to the theatre so she wouldn't suspect anything if later someone told her they saw me. The man in the theatre who let me in during off-hours 'appeared' to be a janitor, but I guess he was a part of it. Sometimes a group of men at a round table met as I sat off to the side in "park mode," while they discussed what needed to be done with me next or they'd argue about what I was being 'exposed' to. One man ended the argument explaining, "that's what the boss ordered." The boss was Bob Hope. These men seemed to know all about me. But Bob didn't like to meet or have sex with me at the MPCH because he said, "Frankly, the people there are too old." It seemed to depress him to think about old age.

Million Dollar Babies

I overheard conversations where the President of the United States and other top politicians were offered the services of "escorts,"--the CIA's latest human robot technology--programmed sex and espionage slaves. They were encouraged to use these escorts to satisfy their sexual and emotional needs, instead of exposing themselves to outside individuals, because these escorts were guaranteed safe - had passed many tests to insure security, were able to provide guaranteed secrecy and were safe from venereal disease.

The presidents and others were highly discouraged by the CIA from other avenues of sexual indiscretions for fear of public exposure. This fear of the consequences of seeking "outside" sexual gratification, fear of adverse publicity or disease, and other security risks, created a heavy demand for the use of this latest human technology.

As I later learned, Project Monarch beta trained sex slaves were called "million dollar babies" referring to the large amount of money each slave would bring in from a very early age. In the 60's the use of a Project Monarch presidential model sex slave cost around $1200 for an evening. Henry called me his "million dollar machine."

My father and his controllers had done their homework, insuring I was Multiple Personality Disordered, certifiably under total and complete mind control and ready for use by certain individuals in top political and entertainment positions, by the time I was a preteen.

But what many of the CIA officials may or may not have been aware of was that a powerful group of men, whom I refer to as "The Council," secretly ran the government. They were also able to access the "mindcontrolled escorts" and program them to subversively influence top government officials in ways that benefited the Council. The CIA's latest human technology was now being used against our own government.

"Each of us will one day be judged by our standard of life...
Not by our standard of living; by our measure of giving...
Not by our measure of wealth; by our simple goodness...
Not by our seeming greatness. " -- William Arthur Ward

Chapter Eleven: Mind Control in the Prisons

Wearing white sandles, a red shirt and skirt, I was flown by helicopter up near Sacramento, California to the Vacaville Prison. It was another mind control experiment only this time not on me. Mind control programs were tried out on the inmates - programs they wanted to implement with criminals, soldiers, etc., if they worked. Governor Reagan, who was busy touring the facility, wasn't around when they tortured and programmed the prisoners. He went off with a prison official while I was taken to deliver the verbal portion of the program to the men.

On one side of the walkway the inmates were left alone and on the other side they were hooked up to electrodes, with a band around their head and wrists, and were shocked. Then a guard took me to say programming phrases to them like, "I will not commit a crime. I will behave in society like a good citizen. I will no longer offend. I will not rape. I will be calm. I will be peaceful. I will not fight. I will not swear. I will be an asset to society. I will follow orders. I will obey commands. I will serve my country to the best of my ability." They even hooked up their penises to electroshock as a trauma-programming tactic. When they were tortured, the men broke out in a sweat and some even cried, and after the trauma, they had me deliver the program phrases. Whenever I was alone with them, a renegade personality within me that could relate and sympathize with their plight, slipped in the suggestion, "I will fight for my own freedom."

One man was sitting holding his head in his hands and crying. His toe was being shocked through a cuff that went around his toe. These men were writhing in pain and were emotionally broken by the time they brought them to me to deliver the program suggestions. I was told to deliver the messages slowly, distinctly and quietly so their subconscious mind would have to reach for it. Their conscious mind was way out of the way by then. Some men urinated in their cots while they were being electroshocked. Their bodies jerked, they sweated profusely and cried. A man who could still talk afterwards begged me, "Why are they doing this to me? Help me. Please help me get out of here." It was awful.

They helicoptered Reagan and I in and out. It was a top-secret project. By the time they finished with these poor men, they didn't even need to lock the jail cells. They looked and acted comatose.

At one time they said it was cheaper to keep criminals in prison than to sentence them to death. That was probably so they could further their experiments on the mind.

Ottawa Prison System

In the early 1970's there was a penal colony in Ottawa, Canada that Reagan corresponded and collaborated with to compare their rate of success with ours. I was flown there with Reagan in order to completely and efficiently retain all the statistical data on their inmate projects. In the early 70's the inmates were heavily targeted like the preschools were in the later 70's. Once we got to the prison location, he had to show a special clearance badge to the man at the door. It was a door inside, not the door anyone could pass through upon arriving. The area we were escorted to was maximum security, which sounded like it was labeled that because of dangerous felons, but it actually held a top security status due to the sensitive nature of the experiments that were held there. Reagan said to the guards when we passed by, "It's okay, she's with me." They usually just waved me through on his word alone. One time in one of the prisons we were in, a black guard said, "What the hell...?" when Reagan showed his badge and then tried to get me waved through.

It made Reagan so mad that he looked at the guy and said, "Do you have a clearance?"

The guy said, "No."

"Well that's why you're behind that desk and I'm cleared to go through." Reagan responded angrily.

The black guard just said, "Suit yourself, Sir." And, we passed by. After that they got a phony clearance for me so there wouldn't be any more problems or questions asked when we went through together. My job once we were in the secured area was to record with my photographic memory all the "stats" on the projects. Later in New York, I filled Henry in on the latest data. Henry took brief notes, maybe to follow up on certain statistical data, I don't know.

Reagan and I went into secured NASA areas the same way. I was waved through in order to photographically record the data into my mind files in those areas, also.

Sometimes we wore white hard hats and sometimes safety glasses or goggles were required in different areas. I liked when I had to wear them because then I didn't stand out so much. It was generally not as acceptable or understandable why I was there since I was a girl (later a young woman) ...that's why they created my son Danny with the mind files. It was awkward to have so many questions asked where, if I'd been a man, people would not have wondered so much.

The Canadian prison officials were very cooperative in the effort to share data on mind control of criminals. They saw mind control as a means of benevolent restraint of a population that was destined to fail. They saw the experiments and research as helpful to these criminals as it would eventually allow them the means to move more freely within society without endangering that society. These statistics laid the groundwork for a much higher level of technology to proliferate than had been previously possible. They began working on pre-school children who would have the basic programming structure set in so that in later years they would have the foundation already in place for future use, with a solid structure upon which anything could be built.

Kissinger was totally in alliance with the pre-school targets because he was sure that the system was foolproof and self-contained, whereby he constantly saw the prison system as an area of vulnerability since the subjects were older and didn't have the basic programs locked in and attached to much of anything except drug barriers and torture. Lots of these men were put into padded solitary cells and were drugged, electroshocked, and experimented on. They experimented on the effect of drugs, music, implants, and hypnotic suggestions in conjunction with these other stimuli.

Many countries were interested in the mind control technology. In some places it was traded for favors or different deals made with a country, but we kept the leading edge technology.

NASA

In later years, Reagan brought some of the prisoners to a certain location to demo them to the officials at NASA. He showed them the progress he was having artificially "lobotomizing" these criminals (who Reagan often referred to as "indigents"). It wasn't actual surgery, but instead, implants that were somehow controlling neuro-responses to the brain, making the prisoners incapable of doing anything they weren't told to do. He demonstrated how when angered they wouldn't respond violently. He even had other people throw things (like a bucket full of some liquid) at them - something that would have normally made anyone angry. He described how he could justify laying off some of the prison staff, thus eliminating some of the costly prison system overhead in order to reduce the state budget. I carried the state budget in my mind files that were used extensively during the time Reagan was Governor.

Mind Control Demonstrations

During one demonstration Reagan said, "Strip for the surprise effect, drive those scientists wild like you did me the first time." They were demoing all the uses for mind control application - like for

behavior (violence) control, or for intelligence operatives like me, a mind file or sex slave for the government, so the men in high offices could have their needs met without security risk. These men felt they were that important. The elite, in fact.

Reagan said, "Our jobs are so vital to meeting the needs of the majority that having a little help like this really makes a difference in how we can perform in our chosen field of employment. You will see that this is the technology of the future."

At another of these demos, there was a military man in a green uniform with a bunch of those colored bars on his pocket and an admiral in a white hat and uniform adorned with all kinds of metals. They were there for the demonstration of mind control slaves and to see what could be done to help them get the most out of their "boys." They carefully took notes while Governor Reagan spoke and they watched as he demoed me.

When demonstrating me after 1976, Reagan explained to the audience, "Now this one has had a child and you might think that as a sex slave that puts her out of commission. Not true. What occurs is they become as maternal towards helping the government grow as they do helping their child grow and as I am sure you all well know, nothing gets up a mother's dander more than having someone mess with their young. And that gentlemen is precisely what we do. To the extent that this mother loves her child is the extent to which she will go to protect that child. All we have to do is alter her perception a bit in order to make her fear injury will come to her young and you've just tapped into the highest source of dedication and intense emotion that can be regulated to fit the occasion."

He went on with the following 'pep talk:' "Many of the top minds in our nation are supporting this endeavor, both through scientific research all the way to financial banking and these men are among those who will insure that we in this country are not overrun by Communism. That will be our demise should we fail to continue this valuable research, for the Communists are already in the lead in the area of behavior control. They've already sent a monkey to the moon and we understand that they are making major advances in the field of the control over the minds of their victims. So we should not fall prey to their evil intent - we strive to stay steps ahead of them. We owe it to the people of our country to have the best technology man has to offer. We cannot wait. We must do it now in order to preserve our freedom."

Somehow, Reagan actually believed he was championing prisoners' rights and furthering the safety of the public. He talked about finally putting to ease the troubled minds that these criminals were born with - by altering their brain function. "Lobotomies without a lobotomy," those who spoke of this technology all said.

Kissinger thought the prisoner stuff was "a waste of precious time when more productive technologies could be applied to 'brighter subjects,' instead of wasting the technology on the prison population." Henry said he thought Reagan was an absolute imbecile, who didn't have license to operate. I didn't know exactly what he meant by that.

Reagan did horrific things to demonstrate his progress with the prison population, even to the extent of sticking one of the prisoners with a long needle to show he couldn't any longer feel pain, inside or out, and would no longer be a problem to himself or to society. Reagan talked about how they were able to lay in a new framework for life for these people. He was talking about the mind control projects done to "normalize" prisoners that were to be put back on the streets. That way they felt they would be able to empty the prisons and reduce a large percentage of the state budget, and it would help with federal funding as well. His vision was that one day all criminals could be "cured" in this way and go on to live a life free from crime within society, not locked behind bars.

There were actual programs instilled into the minds of the prisoners with the use of audio and other equipment, located in various areas around the country. Some of it looked like electric chairs but they were modified to deliver regulated doses of electricity to simply slow or alter the mind in certain areas. He said these men were simply "routinized," which meant they awoke the same time each morning, ate breakfast, went to work, came home, watched television, ate dinner, went to bed. Reagan laughed when he said, "We even go so far as to suggest they keep their lawns and yards well manicured in order to keep the neighborhoods up." He said, "This spills over into all areas of society. These people will become productive and the cost to all of us taxpayers will be greatly reduced and, eventually, as we become better at this, we may not even have further need for our prison system. We will have a crime-free society--just imagine that!!"

Henry cringed when he heard Reagan's ideas and often berated him in front of me for acting irresponsibly by putting out a product that was not time-tested. Henry said an experiment on the public (although criminal) sector was risky, as there were no controls in place to insure the person's memory would remain locked up. Nor, Henry reasoned, "do ve have the test of time to know how the experiments vork. You're sending these people back into society vithout any exterior controls and no means of monitoring them. It spells disaster, Ron." Of course I never mimicked Henry's accent when delivering messages, but this is how I heard them.

But Reagan had the power to do what he wanted and so he did, and Henry just constantly shook his head and said, "It's people like him who will ruin this whole area for the rest of us."

Henry worked behind the scenes trying to align other powerful California politicians, like Alan Cranston, against Reagan in areas that wouldn't be detected but would be felt by Reagan. He wanted to get him out of the way before he, "ruined the prospects of the future." Perhaps Ronald Reagan's recent demise is more than Alzheimer's disease.

Kissinger and Reagan often had heated arguments where Henry gave him a piece of his mind, but Reagan just rationalized it all away by saying Henry was "an unbalanced egghead," or an "unbalanced intellectual," depending on who he was talking to. But publicly he acted like he got along well with Kissinger. He never did, although Henry prepared me for a lot of seeming "favors" with Reagan, like using special mind files and sexual pleasures. He didn't let his disdain for Reagan get in the way of using him for his own benefit. While Reagan was carrying on and on about his great contribution to society, Kissinger was slipping in all sorts of information for me to drop on Reagan. I was meant to get him to change certain laws or to veto certain bills or to get friendly with some politician or foreign leader - the list was endless and Henry Kissinger "worked" Reagan for years. Since I was so intimately linked with Reagan over the years, Henry "seized the golden opportunity" to influence Reagan in the White House. Henry felt it was important to see beyond Reagan's apparent weakness and capitalize on it for his own benefit.

Henry Kissinger and the New Age Craze

Henry Kissinger also manipulated the New Age craze. Henry said people who would believe that guides and masters were leading them should be guided by masters, and he considered himself one. Henry said I could trust anyone who wore a crystal as part of my 'family of man'...that's what he called our mind controlled group because it was a family experiment in dynamics, breeding, rearing, etc. These experiments encompassed how everything effected a person, and they felt they might as well learn on the slaves what would be the best for their future progeny.

A whole business was made of the New Age to the slave community. As books and items were created for those searching for truth, the self-appointed 'enlightened ones' who were 'in the know' manipulated the spiritual ideologies in order to hide many of their mind control realities. What was

behind much of it was really a group of men, controlling mind-controlled robots and herding them in the direction they wanted them.

I was programmed to deliver to a famous Los Angeles channeler, the words to say just before a Whole Life Expo event where he channeled the message to a very large group of people in an auditorium who were in an altered meditative state. Henry gave me the exact words to say. They were targeting high-level slaves and it encompassed those programmed with whales and dolphins, angels, ascended masters, eastern religions, energy, quantum physics, UFO's, aliens, channeling, and listening to your guides and angels. They felt if Los Angeles failed then the rest would because most were patterned after Los Angeles.

I have met persons suffering from Multiple Personality Disorder that felt they were channeling entities, when in fact they were channeling parts of their own personality structure. One day a woman 'channeler' named Shirley graciously offered to channel privately for me. Earlier, other people had paid her $50 to channel for them, but I was not among them. I told her I would be glad to ask any questions she had of herself while she was in a channeling state of mind. She agreed. The answer to the question when posed about "if Shirley had been involved in any of this ritual abuse stuff," was, "Shirley is not ready to face that reality yet." Channeling can be a very clever way to cover the reality of Multiple Personality Disorder and offers a way of covering up when personality systems break into conscious awareness, explaining it away as 'an entity.'

When a slave is told "it is destiny that your guides and masters brought you here," or "feeling drawn to a place" or being told, "You know it's no accident that you are here," it can really flip them out because unconsciously they know it's not an accident that they are there, and they know they are not supposed to tell and so it does a double whammy on their mind-controlled system.

When I arrived on Kauai, people I had never met before warmly and lovingly came up to me, hugged me and dropped the message, "Welcome Home." I was conscious and recovered enough to know that they were unaware that they had just delivered a very powerful Oz programming word phrase intended to lock down my programming, insuring I couldn't access the deeper levels of my mind that were being used for "national security" and were not supposed to be my own.

The New Age was used to help usher in the New World Order. It was part of a miniexperiment on total and complete mind control. Henry created lots of concepts to use. It was implemented in Los Angeles as the pilot experiment using a new form of philosophy to direct the people into mindlessness until the higher technologies could take over creating by the year 2000 'the perfect utopia.' The New Age was the formula for complete takeover - a way to lead many in the ways they needed in order to be in total control of Los Angeles by the year 2000. While I still lived in California, I was given instructions for New Age things to read, watch, and places to go, etc.

They were beginning to get people to identify with 'globalism' as associated with love, peace, and good feelings. Many songs also readied people for this one-world, global reality with powerful love harmonics. I, too, believe that the earth and the people living on it in harmony is a beautiful idea, but we need to insure that we don't loose the freedoms that we all hold so near and dear to our hearts, especially the freedom of our own minds and to know where our thoughts come from.

Many slaves were also being used in projects for remote viewing, one of the CIA's secret weaponry, and in experiments in regard to parapsychology. Many of us were taught to telepathically communicate, as a means of reading the enemies' minds. While the media cast a negative image on psychic ability, our own government was dabbling heavily in it, using mind control operatives to participate in their projects.

NASA Future Technology as Seen from the Past

Lyle Curran, a NASA employee and Craig's uncle, often tapped into my NASA mind files when we went to their home in Los Alimitos or when we met up with them on our numerous trips to Mexico, mostly Mazatlan. From the information Uncle Lyle accessed from my mind files way back in the 60's, 70's, 80's, rockets and missiles were a thing of the past, and directed energy in the form of weaponry systems was what they were planning on using as the new weapons of the future. No one can see it coming, nor defend against it. They could take out the lights in entire cities and blame it on UFO's. The Department of Defense experimented for a long time, until they mastered this technology. It puts nuclear weapons right out of business. I am not saying that I don't believe extraterrestrials exist, because I think that would be extremely ignorant. All I am saying is that there are real live human beings that need to be taken into account for the evil deeds that were done. They can do surgery with energy, making no incisions. They can insure a body doesn't disease by monitoring the electromagnetic field variations. I witnessed awesome medical feats, but even as they are funding these projects, the public is still not benefiting from the use of this technology. This information is held in top secret clearances.

"But I will restore health to you and heal your wounds," declares the Lord. -- Jer. 30:17

Brice Taylor - Thanks for the Memories, pp 81-100

Chapter Twelve: Nixon, Kissinger, and International Business

All roads lead to Hope ...Bob Hope that is. President Richard Nixon was connected to Bob Hope also - it seemed like everyone was. President Nixon used me sexually from approximately 1969 until he resigned in 1974. I was with him in many different places and sometimes Henry Kissinger was with us also.

Henry Kissinger never used me for sex; it was always strictly mind file use. At times, Nixon participated with Henry in utilizing and accessing my computerized "government mind files," but both functions (sex and mind files) could not be used at the exact same time, there had to be time in between uses.

The Council

The Council accessed me many times without the knowledge of the politicians who were enjoying my services. In this way, the Council was having direct access to information channels with and about influential people, like presidents, governors, senators, foreign leaders, and celebrities.

Looking back, I was likened to a satellite orbiting around the globe, used by then Governor Reagan (for sex and messages), President Nixon (for sex and messages) and Henry Kissinger (for mind files). Later, the Council would access me and send me back to the politicians with different messages and motives than the ones originally intended by the Government.

The Council had me delivering messages between President Nixon and Governor Reagan. The Council worked them together and was able to effect powerful change and legislation to suit their own needs, by manipulating the two of them.

Sometimes there was a problem if I was programmed by two different factions for the same event and was instructed to target two different people--or worse yet, the same person. In this situation, I would carry programmed messages from two different groups, with one group's message contradicting the other group's message. This type of situation created terror and confusion in my inner system of personalities, and I was usually punished by one or the other faction for not delivering the information correctly.

This happened at a Gubernatorial Ball during this same time frame. The Mob/CIA had one set of instructions I was to deliver to President Nixon, and the Council had a whole different set of messages for Nixon. The Council programmed me way in advance for this Gubernatorial Ball, but the Mob's/CIA's programmed instructions came to me last and closest to the event.

Like a jammed computer, I sat in a chair in the corner, afraid to move, until a Secret Service agent came over and hand signaled me as he rubbed his finger under his nose a few times, cleared his throat and said, "Are you lost, little lady?"

The Secret Service agent's prompting got me "back on track" and I was triggered into action. I delivered the message from the Mob/CIA instead of the Council's message.

This particular occasion was around a time when the Mob/CIA wanted to control a drug line going through Nicaragua and Paraguay to the United States (Chicago). They were trying to ignite terror in that area, via civil unrest, in order to create a situation where the United States would be persuaded to go into the foreign country to supposedly "protect them." What would really be happening is they would just be

opening up a "legal" but hidden drug pathway into the country so they could have free access to their drug sources.

In light of this set of covert 'goals,' the Mob/CIA programmed me to approach President Nixon after this gala event and after sex, report how admirable I would find him and our government if he would authorize our troops to go in and help the Nicaraguans--to give them the aid that they so desperately needed. Per program, I relayed innocently and sincerely that I felt it was our duty as a free nation, concerned with maintaining freedom for all people, to aid those less fortunate, since we held so much power. I continued persuading Nixon that all Americans would be proud to have a president who was so conscientious, reminding him that other presidents before him had gone down in history as heroic defenders of democracy and freedom.

It was a very "patriotic speech," a slick story, intended to appeal to his well-known sentiments. He seemed to fall for it; at least he seemed inflated and inspired by it.

Although I did not have the ability to comprehend or make decisions on my own behalf due to the mind control I was under, the delivery of the Mob/CIA message was a fortunate choice for my personal safety. The Council was more forgiving but to get caught not delivering a message from the Mob/CIA was like stealing the drugs or money at a drug deal. There were severe consequences, and often I was violently punished. When they debriefed me in order to get the information about what I had or had not delivered, and what the reaction was of the person receiving the message, I operated like a machine, with no defenses of self-preservation and no ability to lie. So I reported exactly what happened and ended up getting beaten up or tortured in some way if I made a mistake. They were very brutal.

I was in yearly attendance at the Celebration or Birthday Party of the Elephant, the Republican Party - the GOP. The large room was decorated with red, white, and blue banners; the decorated tables set for dinner and celebration. There was also a large stage, decorated for the political speakers. It was crowded, noisy, and people were taking pictures with camera flashes going off all over the place. I was sent in to be a sex/espionage agent.

It was strange to see people there I knew like Governor, and then later, President Ronald Reagan or Senator Pete Wilson, only I was programmed to not consciously recognize them. In fact, I was programmed not to be able to even see them at all. "Just ignore them," were the rules ...unless they approached me. Although I obeyed my orders at the time, the fact that I was Multiple Personality Disordered allowed other parts of me to not only "see" them but register these occasions into photographic memory as I had been trained.

Sometimes at these conventions, I never made it out of the back of a limousine or was restricted to a separate room away from everyone. Men, usually politicians, were brought to me for quick sex. They called this activity by names that are not appropriate to print here.

This particular evening, I was programmed to target President Nixon. I wore a blue, off-the-shoulder dress with a diamond necklace. I probably looked like just some other young girl, partying at the convention. There were other slaves there also, to perform quick sex for other politicians. I don't know if the Council was also accessing them.

Pat Nixon accompanied President Nixon, so he had to break away from her to have a "quickie" with me in a back room. Nixon did things like that before he got depressed with the Watergate scandal. After that he started acting old and beaten down. It was like the life just went out of him.

President Nixon accepted me with smiles because he was grateful for the times I had been able to help him quickly recover from depression or negative emotional states. I could perk him up so he felt better and could more efficiently function in his important job. At least that is what they always told me.

The Council made sure I had the road paved to President Nixon, free and clear, and over time he listened to me despite the fact that I was only 18, 19, 20, 21, or 22 years old. I helped him with what they called "his difficult times," until the end when he had to resign the Presidency.

Henry Kissinger Took Up Residence in My Brain ...and Never Paid Rent

In the late 60's and early 70's the mind control programming technology was advanced, but certainly not as advanced as it was in later years. Instead of being hooked up electronically to a machine that could automatically program information into my mind files, like is available today, my programmers used the less efficient, but only tried and true method available at the time. They used my programmed ability to have personalities who were equipped with photographic memory, read or scan documents to memorize them. To accomplish this a personality was put into a receptive mode and told to look at a document as a whole, like I was taking a picture of it in its entirety. That way, later on, I could look inside my mind files, see in my mind's eye the picture of the document and read it to Henry or report whatever information he requested. For Henry, it was like having his own invisible laptop computer (within my mind files) available whenever he needed information.

In the beginning when I was first being programmed with mind files, Henry took me to different places with filing cabinets, and instructed me to go through certain file drawers to digest information. He put me in the mode to store data in coded mind files and then left me to absorb information.

The "government mind files" that I possessed were created from being put into rooms in Washington, DC at the National Archives, Pentagon, State Department, the Federal Reserve building, Rocketdyne/Rockwell in California and other places. I was also instilled with information at military bases around the United States regarding top secret project's. So, I had the latest information regarding top secret experiments and defense and space information if Henry needed it for reporting to others at meetings. Kissinger arranged a special clearance to get me into these top security places. He also took me into some private offices at night in the dark. We had to be very quiet while I digested huge amounts of private party information.

Some of the files I have been able to identify are information regarding: history; foreign countries; travel information; federal and state documents; visual orientations to certain locations; maps of foreign countries, including information on climate, terrain, ocean access, mountain access, etc.; individual person's profiles listing preferences, perversions, place of residence, friends and connections; a postal file where those involved all over the globe could log on to send or receive messages from each other; peace talks files; foreign leader files; research findings and experimentation files; strategic logistics files; banking systems files; etc. It was a wide and vast assortment of information to be accessed easily by Henry. There were hundreds of files and many new files were added over the years from different agendas between the Council and Henry.

Kissinger was more familiar with how to access the information than anyone else because he created my internal system. He knew how to access me for different functions, in addition to keeping the plan of the global elitists organized. This form of communication allowed them to secretly communicate around the globe at times when they didn't want anyone to be able to publicly associate their connections. I not only kept rooms full of information, neatly tucked away in my brain for easy access, but it gave Kissinger and others an advantage as it appeared they were less prepared and had less data at their fingertips than they actually did. No need to carry armfuls of books and brochures. He just brought me along and utilized me when it was time to recite information he wanted on any subject he had

programmed into me. Plus, he and others who knew my programming could instill and retrieve arcane 'e-mail messages' from around the globe, often with the latest top secret knowledge gleaned from classified experiments and projects or messages in regard to the New World Order agenda. I was a REAL robot.

At one time, Henry had a dark wooden desk with a glass piece covering the top of it and his big chair squeaked when he sat down. There were lots of wooden floors where Henry took me initially - "old culture" places. Nothing was ever really new looking in those days but that changed over the years.

Henry brought me into his office, sat me down at a chair across from his desk while he pulled file after file out of his filing cabinets, and laid them open on the desk in front of me. Then he said, "Quickly memorize this data, we're going to a meeting." He would also categorize the data by saying, "File this under A-3," or whatever name or code number he labeled it. He meticulously named each file and when he would loan me out to people he would tell them the file identifier so they could access the information they needed. He usually would leave me alone with the files to memorize. When he returned, we went to the meeting.. Henry rationalized this, saying this way he didn't have to hold trivial details in his mind but could save it for more important matters, such as strategizing. That's how I heard him explain it to others who knew about the mind control technology.

At times he would hand me top-secret documents and say, "Record document #1-12," and then he would leave me alone to photograph them in my memory. Later when he needed specific wording from one of them he would call me over and, if he wasn't talking to someone or in the middle of something, he would have me read the information from my mind aloud to him. If he was in a meeting or was busy he instructed me to write the information on a note pad and then later when he needed it he would pick up the pad and read the information from it or refer to it and people present would just think I was his secretary or aide. This happened for years.

At night, Henry snuck me into lots of top secret places where documents were stored and gave me a flashlight and instructions to go through and memorize documents. He let me into these places and then would leave me alone, recording documents into mind files, often for hours at a time. Later he came back to get me. There were times he was sweating when he returned and was in a real hurry to leave, even if I was right in the middle of a document. Then, when we got into the car he would sigh like he was relieved. He would become very nervous, though.

Henry always readied me for the Rockefeller Christmas parties, but so would a group of other men who were sometimes with him and knew how I worked. It depended on who was to attend the party. When they obtained that information, they went about strategizing and deciding what I should say to whom. The Rockefellers have been in a position of power for a long time. Kissinger seemed to work hand-in-hand with them often, in order to "satisfy their goals in the most efficient manner."

There were times Henry loaded me up with information specifically for someone and then I would be the secret liaison between the two. This occurred between Henry and Pete Wilson. Pete was often Henry's California arm. This way Pete could carry out his wishes without it being known where the instructions were coming from.

The White House

When important meetings were held at the White House, sometimes Henry took me along if he felt there might be information that was "crucial" to have at the "ripe" time. He told people I was in training or some other excuse. One time he even had me write information on a napkin under the table so as not to be noticed. This specific napkin event occurred around 1971, because I remember that I had my hair done up with a hairpiece full of curls on top. I was 20. Henry had my clothes ready for me;

usually very tailored, conservative, dark clothes, most often a navy blue jacket, skirt and low navy heels, or a disguise. He laid my clothes on the bed in a room with two twin beds with white bedspreads - the bumpy kind. He told me to get dressed and left the room, closing the door behind him. Later he returned to get me.

At other White House dinners, I wasn't present at the table with the other guests, but Henry was. When I didn't fit into the plan of the evening in order to sit at the table, Henry still "prepped" me and kept me in the kitchen or another room in the White House, close to the dining room so he could come and access me if necessary, without anyone knowing. So I sat there in 'park mode' and watched the White House kitchen staff cook and serve. At those times I was dressed like a kitchen staff member with a black skirt and white blouse, so I didn't look out of place. Henry explained that if I didn't stand out no one would notice or pay attention. My "attire," as he called it, was never meant to call attention to my presence but instead was to make me fit in and look like I belonged. Over the years Henry parked me in some pretty strange places. When he would arrive to access information, I would scribble it on a piece of paper he would take with him, or if it was brief he would access me verbally and would simply remember what information he extracted. Henry often said, I was his "left brain," so he could use his mind for more important matters.

At times while I was sitting with he and others in the dining room, Henry would often leave the table to go make important phone calls. He would either leave me at the table to smile and be pleasant, but instructed me to avoid conversation, or he would take me with him to obtain further input via the telephone. Sometimes he would carry his linen napkin from the dining table and looked pretty dumb but no one seemed to notice.

The White House was a place I was taken to in order to "do a job" on certain leaders - some foreign, some domestic. I was given very clear suggestions and instructions on who to target and how to go about it. I was briefed on their likes, dislikes and preferences and was told certain phrases or key words to use throughout the conversations I was programmed to have with them.

Henry was often invited to the White House when the President was entertaining foreign guests, even after Nixon wasn't President any longer. They felt, and rightly so, that Kissinger was well versed and knew many of the cultural customs of foreign dignitaries so the risk of making a faux pas could be avoided. Henry was confident and seemed to know everything about foreign policy. When he was invited to a dinner with a foreign dignitary that the Council wanted to have me privately entertain later on in the evening, he wouldn't use my mind files at the end of the evening so I could be used for sex.

Henry secretly knew that messages conveyed to targeted individuals during the 'behind-the-scenes' sex stuff meant more to people because then they psychologically interpreted and categorized personal experiences such as sex in with their memories of personal or family experiences. Thus the message became stored as more valuable since it wasn't strictly business. Henry said combining his messages with sex would store it in a different part of the brain, with the personal experiences being filed with more importance emotionally and so it would carry more weight or influence.

Usually arrangements for a sexual encounter with me were made secretly between Henry and the foreign guest. Then the guest and I would be limoed away somewhere to a hotel or taken to another place. But most of the people at the White House gathering were unaware this took place as we would all leave separately, and rendezvous at another location later on. Or, Henry would have a limo waiting and I would enter and wait. Usually I was put in the limo first and waited for the dignitary. Then we would spend a few hours or the whole night together, while I dropped a preprogrammed message at the perfect time to the leader. Then I was flown home.

One day I was in the White House delivering a message to Nixon from Kissinger. Nixon and I were standing in a large room where there were some tables lining the walls and couches and large rugs covered the wooden floor. Old pictures dotted the walls, fresh flowers were in beautiful vases and heavy drapes covered the windows. I guess Nixon thought we were alone as we stood facing an oil painting on the wall by a long table. Dick had his arm around me as he was inputting a reply back to Henry through me. A hand on my right shoulder was standard procedure to encode incoming messages and Nixon was doing it all properly, however, halfway though the message, his daughter Trisha came into the room.

She looked very pretty in her nice dress, but she didn't know I was there and when she called out, "Dad," it startled her father and I, and, in turn, she was surprised and shocked. It was one of those very awkward situations where it appeared she instantly summed up the whole situation and thought her father was being romantic with me. Nixon acted extremely guilty and stammered uncomfortably until he finally introduced me as someone from the State Department. She didn't seem to buy his explanation and left the room annoyed and upset.

Nixon said to me, "Don't worry about her, I'll take care of this." But he said it with his hand still on my right shoulder, so instead of it just being a casual statement meant for me, it actually became part of the his message to Henry. After that Henry began to devise a way for messages to be encoded without having to touch my shoulder in order to avoid these types of situations.

International Assignments

There were times I was flown to foreign countries so Henry Kissinger or President Nixon could utilize my computerized "mind files" at meetings they were attending publicly or later privately. On the flight to these countries, it was my job to make the President comfortable. I took off his shoes, rubbed his feet, pampered him and brought him anything he wanted. Secret Service agents surrounded him.

When I flew with Kissinger and Nixon was not there, I was told to sit or sleep quietly next to him. Henry often slept on the airplane. Nixon did not.

I believe that the Secret Service agents at times knew what I was really doing sexually with Nixon because occasionally they witnessed when I came on to him. Like one time when I leaned over and put my head on his shoulder and reached down to unzip his pants, a Secret Service agent who was just walking up from behind, laughed and said, "Excuse me, Sir." At this point Nixon took my hand away and quietly said to me, "Later, dear."

Beijing China

There were dirty waterways in some parts of China and the streets in some areas where I was taken were dirty. One square was full of flags in the courtyard. I was there on foreign assignment with Henry Kissinger. I flew independently and was taken to a hotel by a Secret Service agent. The Secret Service registered me in the hotel under a phony name with a phony passport. Henry met me there. Usually I flew privately on a chartered jet with Henry, but this time it was last minute notice so we flew commercially but separately.

We were there to swing a deal with the leader of China. Henry told them I was a foreign correspondent and we sat at a long table with lots of Chinese men and I sat next to Henry. I always sat to Henry's left for his convenience in tapping me with this left hand leaving his right hand free to write or smoke his cigar. He told me to smile, look pretty and "take it all in," which meant record data into my mind files. He notified me who to zero in on and "listen intently" to. He also used access codes to refer to my mind files. No one knew that I was a high tech programmed computer that was carefully and precisely recording details and spewing information when my mind files were accessed and called upon.

President Nixon's Loyal Friend Bebe Rebozo

BeBe Rebozo was President Nixon's good friend. He was present on many occasions when Nixon used me for sex. One such time was in Miami, Florida. I was flown into Miami and taken by limo to the beach where I was to meet Nixon.

As usual, I was put into isolation before my use with VIP's and this time was no different. BeBe Rebozo and his men took an active role in my "preparation" for Nixon.

Rebozo was violent and cruel to me, slapping and hurting me. He took me to a totally dark, windowless, cement room and left me there, naked and alone in the dark. Before he left, men injected drugs into my lower arm and left me for hours without food, water, or clothes. This was before I had children, so they could not yet use that powerful maternal bond to keep these programmed secret events amnesiac, like they did later on. Because of this, the physical torture to me during this time was accelerated, but was never as painful as the things they later did to my children in order to "keep me in line."

Rebozo dressed in fancy expensive suits and wore gold jewelry. Subconsciously I hated him.

On this occasion, Rebozo came and released me from isolation and took me to a restroom to clean up. I showered and put on the bikini they left for me and soon was readied for action with Nixon.

I don't know exactly where we were because I was programmed never to look or notice our location, but I was taken to President Nixon at a private beach house. My instructions were to "tease him, please him, ease him and help him relax in the sun." It was on this private beach, watched from every angle by the Secret Service, that I seduced Nixon. I was laughing and joking with him as I undressed him from his suit, tie, and dress shoes. Then we slipped into the water while I further seduced him. After he was satisfied, I was removed and taken somewhere to get "prepared" for an evening event with the President.

Nixon had dinner in his room and I accompanied him while he ate, then satisfied him sexually and was taken away. Nixon was not as passive sexually as Reagan was. He made an effort and took initiative. He preferred the missionary position. I suggested we keep the light on, but he always wanted to turn the lights out, so he did. I never slept in the bed with Nixon after sex - it was his rule. I never did spend the whole night with him, like I did with some of the others. I was instructed to wait until he was asleep and then to very quietly notify the Secret Service agent at the door to the suite. The agent took me out of the room and I was flown directly back to California with all details of the event carefully tucked and hidden away within the personalities programmed for Nixon. Per program, I slept the whole flight home.

In the beginning years with Nixon, I was programmed to make him happy and to satisfy him in the ways I had been trained and programmed to. Just as the Council anticipated, over time, Nixon's trust built in relation to me, paving a way for me to be used in ever more influential circumstances with him.

There were times I was taken to Key Biscayne, Florida, to service Nixon. He was with BeBe Rebozo there and it seemed that BeBe was in charge of the events that occurred while we were on his turf.

Each time, Rebozo put me into isolation in a small cement room and slapped me around before he left me alone in the room naked, cold, and hungry, in his words, "to get ready for 'the boss,'" as he called Nixon. Rebozo would tell me how "the boss" deserved respect and whatever it took to make him comfortable. He spoke in broken Mob language. He acted like a really tough guy and was very loyal to his friend Nixon.

When he came to release me from isolation, BeBe instructed me, "make yourself presentable," and I was cleaned up and dressed. Then, I was taken by limo to a beach that had palm trees on it. We arrived at sunset. Since I was programmed not to notice where I was geographically, I had no way of knowing

where I was, but at times I overheard others speak of our location and that information was stored along with memory of the event. We pulled up to a very secluded house where there weren't a lot of other people around. The house was on the beach and a lawn surrounded by a short fence led out to the ocean.

Miami meant more serious business, but Key Biscayne laced pleasure with business. Deals between the Mob, Council, Rebozo and government officials or other interconnected mob factions took place in Miami or Key Biscayne.

At times, the "big guys," very important or influential people, would join in the business and pleasure at Key Biscayne. Connections were big business with the Mob. I was instructed to sit with the guys and make them happy by giving them whatever they wanted.

Men with guns stood in windows in the back of the house to guard Nixon. The Secret Service let the Mob protect Nixon up close and they kept guard further away. I think Rebozo arranged this protective situation but I do not know why it was set up like that. Rebozo was very protective of Nixon; he even rode in the back of the limo with Nixon while I was with him. BeBe was only nice to me when Nixon was around and he made it very clear that he didn't trust "dames" and that I was only there because Nixon wanted me to be. BeBe watched protectively when Dick and I went for a swim together. Rebozo did not go in the water. I guess he didn't want to get his guns wet! He never was without them.

During these times, I was instructed to come on to Nixon, and thoroughly and enthusiastically excite him. He liked it and said I was "good for him," and that I helped him a lot when he was upset. Nixon said I could pick him up when he was down and refresh him. I was programmed to be funny and silly, without a care in the world. Nixon said I made him laugh.

Rebozo was most often present when I downloaded Council messages to Nixon. BeBe seemed to understand "the language" and so Nixon wanted him to be present when I relayed memos because he always had to make the decision and give me an answer before I could go back. That was the rule. I gave the message to Dick and BeBe; then the three of us stayed together until they were able to come to an agreement. Usually it was a yes or no question. But no one could leave until I was uploaded with the return message.

When it was time for me to leave Key Biscayne, an agent whose job it was to prepare me to go home, took me out for a walk on the beach. He bent down and holding up a shell he picked up in the sand, 're-minded' me that all events that happened there were now out of my head and forever locked in the shell. To finalize this compartmentalization of my experience, he threw the shell out into the surf, in an effort to keep the memories hidden from my conscious mind. From there, I was helicoptered to an airport and flown home. This all happened before I was married at age 20.

Watergate Created a Depressed President

During Watergate, Nixon had a very hard time. He looked gray and dismal, and it was very difficult to cheer him up. But after a drink I could lighten him up a little. I teased President Nixon in his down months, telling him how cute I thought he was when I saw him on television, even when he was in deep trouble and was being publicly challenged over the scandal. Due to my programming, I was not really able to ever "see" him when I watched television, but was programmed to say that. The things I would say to him were so opposite the truth that, as he said, he found my statements "refreshing and funny." These statements seemed to be just an added bit of entertainment to cheer up old Tricky Dick. In those days, it wasn't much else with Nixon; just delivering sex and messages.

BeBe Rebozo loved Nixon dearly. He was very protective of him and had tender, emotional moments with Nixon that I was present to witness. BeBe cried when Nixon told him he had to step down from the Presidency. I can still hear BeBe now as he said, "Oh no, Boss, not after everything you've worked so hard for." He touched Nixon on the shoulder and was genuinely concerned as if it was

happening to him. That always confused me about Mafia guys - they would torture or kill someone one moment and then turn around and show deep, caring concern for one of their own the next. To them loyalty was everything.

Henry Kissinger was not involved with BeBe Rebozo. Henry was "too intellectual" for BeBe. Kissinger said he did not like to mingle with the Mob. When Kissinger was present it was strictly business, concentration, work and strategizing. Pat Nixon was never around at these times either.

Richard Nixon was manipulated by the Mob and by the Council. He was part of their intricate network and when Watergate came down, he was the most dispensable. They viewed Kissinger as more important, someone they vitally needed to protect and so their strategy dictated that Nixon would take the public fall.

I was not sent to sexually service Nixon after he resigned the Presidency.

International Mind File Postal System

Henry created a mental postal exchange system inside my head. He created it first visually by telling me that there was a large box in my head with separate boxes inside of it and they each had a different key. He explained that there were rows of numbered boxes positioned layer upon layer. Programs were attached to numbers or people, places, or documents, etc., which were attached to numbered boxes. George Bush wanted always to be #1 in everything so Henry had to change someone else's number to give George the #1 box. This system worked like a post office so that people had a box and they could receive or send information at their box. This system was the way the higher ups kept their communication clear and anonymous when access was necessary. It kept the Council's messages clear for me to deliver accurately or to receive a message to take back to them. It kept messages clear and straight to be delivered between people who were involved and who didn't want to be identified as knowing, or communicating with, each other. I met with and delivered messages to the Council, at times, on huge ships out in the middle of the ocean.

I was most often helicoptered to ships, hotels, islands, or wherever I was to deliver this anonymous information. Once the information had been exchanged, I was helicoptered back. Henry created the programmed system for these communications. He was the mastermind of lots of their plan, and used me to further it. Kissinger, Bush, Reagan, Carter, Thatcher, Mitterrand, Trudeau, Gorbachev, Salinger, Ford, Nixon, etc. all participated.

Sex Paves the Way for Diplomatic Relations

I was briefed, in advance, about the customs of the countries we visited, in an effort to further diplomatic relations. At many foreign meetings I was told, "be invisible, and smile when smiled at." I was also instructed to hang back, be quiet and just listen, unless I was cued to report information. I was further briefed in detail if I was to be sent in on a foreign leader or diplomat. In addition to all the sex training I had acquired over the years, Henry added his 'two cents.' He said in many foreign countries lovemaking is an art form. Henry expounded, "To the degree you can match that slow deliberateness, is the degree that you can sexually gratify your partner." Henry spoke of sex like the art of eating. He didn't show any emotion, or embarrassment; it was something he instructed me about very openly and plainly. He explained that the slower and more deliberately a person performed sex, demonstrated their level of self-esteem, selfassuredness and that, as a woman, I had to balance that with a fair amount of shyness, in order not to appear bold. Shyness was what Henry said would soften what otherwise would appear as being too forward.

With one leader (a king) I was sent to, Henry had me say, "May I have the honor, Your Highness, of pleasuring you in the American way? We have many means of pleasure." Henry said this was to deeply

seal an attitude that America equaled pleasure, so diplomatic relations would go smoother. He often called it, "paving the way to diplomatic relations," and he used sex as a means to accomplish that. The statement quoted above also allowed me to ask for permission, so as not to break cultural rules without having set up a framework for taking the King into a different experience. I was told to strictly avoid oral sex until close to the end and then feel out if it was appropriate or would be accepted.

Henry said, "I wish I could give you precise instructions, but the research team is only able to get certain data. Some is not available so I will have to trust your judgement along the way in some of these areas." And oral sex was one of those areas. In front of me, Henry explained to his research team that to get in close enough to someone who would have knowledge of that level of intimate detail about a target would be a risk he would not want to take. I overheard him say, "She will have to be briefed on the cultural mores and then her own expert skill and timing will have to take over in limited areas such as, if or not to offer oral gratification." The research team was present often when I was prepared or briefed for an assignment because each would often have their area of expertise to instill into me, especially in the area of foreign relations and cultural differences. The research team even had foreign members who Henry heavily relied upon for certain "key" countries he was targeting. These men often had been born in the foreign country and so could easily and accurately relay all customs. Henry explained, "Every country of the world has different customs and our job is to ensure that you are fully aware of those customs before you are sent in." The members of the team changed at times as we moved on to different countries.

Henry had many ethnic traits, yet was polished to an almost non-cultural bias on the surface, so as not to be encumbered by his ethnicity. He treated each person as a challenge to face and beat, even if they were from a culture he couldn't understand until he studied it. The more exotic and different the culture, the better. Then, he would go to extremes to study it, in order to emerge the victor because he would understand them totally, often understanding them more than they did themselves. Henry usually won, and most people, totally unaware that there was a game of wits going on, would have sex with me for the night and not even know to take the message bait when I threw the line out. They were what Henry called "simpletons." And he said he despaired of them. At other times he was grateful for "simpletons" if they were in strategic positions and he could use them in the power and control game. Then he did what he knew best researching until he devised the ideal strategy, and finding the best person to pull it off. When he knew, he put the strategy through whomever would deliver it with the most favorable outcome. Within me he had two distinctly different agents - one being Susan, the serious, conscientious, motherly, intellectual, organized, loving and understanding type, and, Sharon, the clever and often humorous and entertaining sex slave and friend of the elite.

The World Health Organization

The World Health Organization (WHO) was a cover for bringing together an inside group of people whose purpose and intent was much different than what was generally thought and publicly portrayed. Lots of illegal activity went on without detection and across borders internationally as this inside group hid its covert operations under masked projects, purportedly for world advancement. Among other things, it was also a cover for drug deals, child prostitution, heinous experiments on human beings, illegal sales of babies, etc. Some of the players I saw participating were a select group of politicians, celebrities and leaders worldwide.

I sat in on many meetings. I heard Ted Kennedy speak, as well as Henry Kissinger, and there was a group of women who worked for the WHO that did not seem to have a clue about what was actually going on behind the scenes. Many were naive, honest, pliable people and actually played into the hands of the corrupt inner group without being aware that they were being used.

Masked behind the publicized "do good" activities were illegal ventures intended to fund this corrupt group, with their secret, hidden motives and agendas. So while the United States appeared to be having benevolent beliefs and actions, these activities were put into motion. They sent a group to "aid" children in foreign countries, but behind the scenes what was actually taking place was a masked drug connection or some other illegal enterprise that brought top dollar to this group of self-selected men who seek to eventually control the world.

Some meetings of the WHO were televised, but the agenda the public saw and heard was not the complete agenda that was secretly carried out.

I heard and recorded into my mind files, the words that a man spoke. He was standing at a microphone in a large room filled with row upon row of stationary, red upholstered wooden chairs, arranged in a semi-circular shape. I was there for Henry's usage of stored data in my "government mind file system." I suppose an individual at these meetings who was not aware of this type of technology; using human beings for storing and hiding information known only to the National Security Agency and others, would have just assumed I was an aid or secretary to the UN, or an assistant to Kissinger.

One day I heard a man state, "Mr. Speaker, I would like to speak to the issue of free trade, internationally, between countries." Most of the free trade these men were REALLY alluding to was in illegal drugs (cocaine, heroine), pornography, prostitution, and weaponry. They used anything that would cull large sums of money to fund their causes and their desires with no thought of the human or financial cost to others - like the violation of basic human rights - and had no regard to others' pain and suffering. These men had no scruples, no compassion or ability to empathize with the feelings of others; instead they were self-seeking and ruthless - without conscience.

The following is an example of the kinds of flashes and memory retrieval that continued to flood into my mind. One day, Bobby Baker, House Appropriations Committee was at a meeting. He was wearing a light tannish-brown suit and he argued with everyone about everything, and Henry felt he disrupted their meetings so that nothing ever got accomplished. Henry didn't like him at all.

At another meeting, I heard, "Mr. Speaker, I would like to address the subject of the arms control race," Baker said. Then he spoke of his concerns about Russia escalating the arms race, that they were gaining speed and technology at such a pace that we the United States would be in serious jeopardy and at a disadvantage if we didn't set up immediate appropriations for arms research and arms production. Baker appealed to the United States' fear of being "taken over," in order to get money appropriated for arms; when in fact, much of the funding was not used for what it was designated for, but instead was used in hidden, covert activities for the benefit of the Council and those politicians that were supported by the Council.

At the time, the World Health Organization was often an excuse to bring together people from all over the world. This created an opportunity for the "inside group" to secretly meet and intertwine their agenda with the public agenda of the WHO. Those in attendance who were unaware of the New World Order agenda, were also unaware that there was a small cadre of people dominating the group and making sure they had enough key players on the panel or board so they could win when votes were cast or decisions made.

In those years, I was not able to understand these people or political issues in the general historic way that the public remembers or understands. My perspective was solely from my personal experiences. I was generally programmed to not listen to political information I heard or saw. Consciously, as my programming dictated, I was not interested or involved in politics or public news in any way. So this information comes to you, the reader, from my personal experience at these or other meetings. After I downloaded this data from my mind, I actually had to ask others, or research to find out what the common public historical belief was, as portrayed by the news media back in those years.

I believe most California Governors that I worked with were a part of the WHO and other such groups. It seems to me that these men and their functionaries, who seek control, hook into every individual and key organization that they can use in order to maintain control of their interests. They were strategically placed, often under the direction of Henry Kissinger and others, in order to insure they got what they wanted, when they wanted it. It was like a game to them, and they were all on the same team, in the same way a crime syndicate operates.

Nuclear testing sites, Energy Commission, NATO, Council on Foreign Relations, House Appropriations Committee on Foreign Trade, and the Trilateral Commission, were just some of the organizations whose meetings Kissinger took me to, both in the U.S. and abroad.

Henry used my mind files at meetings of the Trilateral Commission. We sat at a table with a group of men. There were microphones sitting on the table. What went on behind the scenes at these meetings often had nothing to do with what was outwardly portrayed. There were meetings within meetings and secret meetings were held behind the scenes of other credible public meetings. Often, the Council (not to be confused with the CFR) was involved in directing the way things went although no one knew they had any part in the outcome.

They all spoke their lies publicly, often directed by Kissinger the strategist, Hope the entertainer, and the Council from behind the scenes.

Kissinger as Global Mastermind

I was in Henry's office often in my final years of High School, while he worked heavily with Nixon on foreign relations. I would meet him in New York or in Washington, DC. Sometimes the team would brief me a month in advance for different assignments, but Henry always said, "It works best and is most ideal when she is prepared directly before the assignment and then goes from here." There was very little I knew to do on my own because the team had usually filled the agenda in order for me to deliver culturally specific or personally specific words and physical acts to entice the target. The team heavily researched every detail and it sounded, from their conversations, like they used separate espionage agents to collect some data they didn't want to ever be connected to or associated with, as it would have completely blown their cover. Henry used every means available, even down to manipulating a person through his or her own religious beliefs.

Henry's strength was that he was able to remain detached and able to pull from a wide variety of cultural differences in order to create the end product. Whereas, he explained, most Americans just went in to grab for the product and failed, due to their lack of cultural understanding. Henry said to me, "The closer you can align yourself with the subject in every way, the more successful you will be. Therefore you have to know him or her as well as possible before you are sent in and that is our job. You will only need to be the actress, the point person carrying out our plan. You will think only in this area we are working in. All else will fall away as you are focused only on this one particular area. You are beautiful, young, and have expanded sexual capabilities and we will supply the rest. All you have to do is receive the instructions." Henry Kissinger groomed me to be culturally adept with each foreign dignitary he sent me in to be with. He said, "This is where the success rate lies - firmly in cultural understanding first, then complying with their culture's mores second, and third, is equally your physical attractiveness and your sexual expertise." Henry told Nixon in my presence that this was the reason for my success and he told Nixon that sometimes it took him hours to have his researchers gather the data necessary on a foreign target in order to begin to prepare me for the assignment.

At one particular meeting, we sat at a large table with a group of men and I was seated next to Henry. President Nixon sat on the other side of Henry. Henry did not smoke his cigar at this meeting.

Nixon told him it was much too sensitive a meeting and for some reason Henry complied and didn't smoke. He usually smoked regardless of who objected.

At key junctures in the meetings, Henry would reach over and push his finger into the top of my hand. In response, I began reciting my programmed information or message. The message I delivered at this particular meeting was in Chinese or Japanese and, since I did not consciously speak these languages, I had no way of knowing what the content of the message I was delivering was. At this specific meeting, the foreign leaders listened to my message, and spoke back directly to me. Although I did not understand, I smiled and looked at them as if I was very interested, like I had been instructed to do. An interpreter would then translate the foreign leaders' response and then Nixon or Kissinger would speak. At other meetings, sometimes the interpreters were women but mostly in that country they were men.

Whatever messages I delivered seemed to be a softening agent in the talks because the foreign leaders always smiled or laughed. Sometimes, they were touched so deeply by whatever it was I was pre-programmed to say that they took my hand with tears in their eyes. Due to my lack of conscious knowledge of the different foreign languages, I do not know what it all meant.

If anyone ever questioned where Henry got me and how I was so advanced for my young age, Henry told them I was a child prodigy and that I had completed my university training abroad at a very early age and was good at my job, but socially shy. That explanation served to keep them from asking me questions later that I could not answer. Henry usually took me out of the meetings when they were over, in order to avoid situations where I would appear ignorant, should anyone ask me questions with any substance to them. For the truth was that I attended public high school and later junior college and was of average intelligence. I just had the advantage of programmed capabilities that served the interests of my controllers.

After we broke for lunch, Henry took me to a pay phone and dialed a number, and the person at that location began giving me additional data in the foreign language. I was instructed to remember what was said, verbatim. Each subject was given a marker number for identification. Henry took the phone, talked a bit, and jotted notes in a small black book, before he hung up.

These foreign talks really challenged Henry Kissinger and the Council, but they had done their homework. Kissinger did the same sort of diplomatic work with Reagan when he became President.

At many of these talks those representing our country said we were creating peace, but what they were really doing was opening up trade with these foreign countries because we needed resources they had. Our leaders turned it around to make it sound like the United States was doing them a big favor and we were being gracious to them. Expensive gifts were often sent ahead to foreign leaders, to arrive just before the President did, but I think that is as far as the real favors went.

There were times at night in foreign countries, when I was programmed to have sex with Nixon. Then I was returned to sleep in Kissinger's room. Even though I was being used like a machine, I still had very sensitive olfactory senses and Henry Kissinger was at times nearly intolerable to share a room with because he smelled so bad from cigar smoke or gaseous explosions that erupted from his body.

I was taken in and out of Russia during the Nixon years with Kissinger to attend NATO meetings, SALT talks, peace talks, and the secret hidden meetings of the Council. Henry brought me to the meetings to recite any pertinent information I had stored in my "mind files."

It was easier to justify my presence to people like Nixon's wife after I started working with Henry. They would explain I was at a meeting because of my work with Henry or in preparation for an international trip. It worked the same way with Reagan, justifying my presence for business reasons, but I was mostly there to pass messages or keep the President happy ...whatever it took.

There were times when I was limoed to the airport and when Nixon stepped off the plane after a foreign trip I would be in the back of the limo waiting for him. I was told to crouch down so there wouldn't be any way of spotting me and then Nixon would get in and give me a message for Henry or I'd give him a message and often we would have sex later. He would go to the White House and shower and freshen up and I'd be held in a "state of suspended animation" unless there was another job for me to do. I'd sit blankly for hours in the same place until I was directed that it was, "time to move into action."

Henry Plays Chess with Real People

During those years my work with Henry Kissinger and others continued, although Henry had to begin taking more of a back seat position in the public eye for awhile after the Watergate scandal. His position within the outskirts of the Council did not change. He was an important man for them and they utilized him because he was an expert strategist. I do not know exactly what that meant but I heard many men say that about him over the years. I guess it means Henry knows how to get people to move around and do things he says without them ever knowing they are being manipulated or controlled ...like a puppet master or chess master.

Henry knew how to think ahead in regard to key moves with key players. I watched him. It was akin to watching him play chess with real people. He knew how to get the desired outcome by motivating certain key players. He used researched information gathered on targeted individuals to manipulate them however he wanted, through their own weaknesses, addictions and/or obsessions. Targeted people did not even know that they were being influenced because he sent in people like me who looked naive and innocent, like they were just being kind or nice or sexy and cute or whatever was called for, but it was not really what was happening because there was always an ulterior motive beneath the seduction act or plan. Henry and the men in suits always sent in the perfect match. They hired whatever kind of girl or woman would turn their target on. Obviously, I was not "hired" or paid, I was just slave labor. I saw lists of "programmed slaves," with numbers by their physical descriptions, programmed expertise and usage capabilities, so they could be matched perfectly for certain situations. Unfortunately, their identities were in code.

Henry said if you really wanted someone to believe you about something that was not true, you convey it the first time as a Freudian slip. Then you attempt to conceal the fact you made the slip, but you make another Freudian slip. Then you try to say what it was you were originally going to say and they believe the first statement regardless of your attempt to simply state the truth. Then Henry said the last line saves your neck legally.

One day, I sat next to Henry Kissinger as we were seated before President Ford. Henry always said that he had to work harder than with any previous president to "guide" Ford where they wanted him to go. He said Ford kept going off in his own direction. Henry said he was glad Ford was not in office long. He said Nixon was easier for him to work with and guide.

Henry thought Reagan was a "bimbo" and "stupid ignoramus." Those were the words I overheard him use to describe Ronald Reagan to a group of men. But, when we met with the Presidents he never let on his true feelings. Instead, he always "acted" the role of diplomat all the way around so that the plans of the Council could be carried through as easily as possible.

Henry Kissinger was known for looking at documents with a "magnifying glass." He was able to find loopholes and incorrect wordings that would not be to their advantage in agreements, treaties, etc., before the United States signed. He was very thorough. Often, I sat by him the whole time he was reviewing a document so he could reach over and tap me to gain access to some needed information stored in my mind files.

Henry was very slow, deliberate and methodical. He thought that way, talked that way and moved that way. He ate European-style with his fork upside down, like I was taught was bad manners. And, he was obsessed with business. He was usually very serious; I do not believe I ever truly saw him have any fun. He avoided social occasions whenever possible, attending when necessary to further political agendas or the cause of the New World Order.

In the beginning Henry had to install huge amounts of data into me, but as time went on he didn't have to place in as much because the database was already in place. I heard him explain this to people who were "in the know." I also overheard him say that a man might have served the purpose better because there were certain times he said my presence as a woman was questioned when the subjects were sensitive. I am sure they remedied this situation by programming more males for the job. Henry was less interested in how I looked and more interested in how I worked. For mind file use he programmed me to dress very tailored and conservative. They dressed me in attire to fit specific assignments.

There must have been other girls and women being used for the same thing, in the same ways, because I heard Henry compare me, saying I was more reliable than the others--more able to capture the details and never make mistakes. He used to say he was saving me for the important assignments because of my reliability. I now believe the fact that I was poly-fragmented contributed to my success. I could only be used on a limited basis because he was afraid there might be questions asked. To others, I just looked like I was smart. They did not know I wasn't operating in a conscious state, but instead had been programmed, drugged, and electroshocked to maintain THETA brainwave patterns used to retain the vast amounts of data and keep it hidden from my conscious mind.

He was proud of himself for the way he had loaded me up with data and could access my mind files in public without others knowing what he was doing. He used different techniques over the years but one he was most proud of was what he called "time programs."

Some mind files were organized by a numerical system and Henry could access them by calling out a certain number. He combined this concept with the time of day in order to remain less conspicuous. He would point to his watch and say, "It's 1:30," and that would correspond to file number 130 in my system of mind files and gave him automatic access to that particular file. Henry thought the time reference to accessing my files was brilliant. Using this method, no one could tell that he was doing anything other than simply stating the time of day for that particular day or some other hypothetically scheduled date. This way his uninformed peers would not be able to find out what he was doing and what type of secret technology he possessed.

Henry had to be very cautious with whom he shared information about me. Most people did not carry the clearance to be allowed to know about the top secret government projects that created such technology as programmed, robotical slaves. People saw me working with him at meetings and other places, but very few knew how I worked or that I was a government programmed robot. The only ones who I knew were aware of this technology were certain top politicians, Bob Hope, some of his 'cronies,' and the Council. Henry kept the technology very, very secret and if there were any problems with me while we were in public, he would escort me out of the room and go about resorting and/or refiling my mind files to get them straightened out.

Henry gave me instructions at times from a closed circuit television before I was flown to DC, and at other times he waited and instructed me while I sat next to him at a round table with other men present. These four or five other men in suits knew exactly what was going on and why I was being briefed. At times, each of them would have different input to instill into my head. After each had put in their information, I was told, "And when the time is right, it will all come out just like clockwork." These were the words they used to program the correct delivery of the material they had just instilled. They said I was doing a good job in getting information from people as well as delivering information.

There were times when I was let out of the limo and escorted into the White House by a Secret Service agent. This agent knew he was just "acting" as my escort for the evening, and would conveniently disappear when I was targeting some man (or woman) I was told to give a message to, and then the agent would reappear to take me home after I was finished. I was often dressed in very sexy evening gowns, gloves, and high heels. Sometimes the dresses were totally backless and I would be dressed in sexy nylons, undergarments, just in case my assignment required later evening sexual attention. I was taken to a beauty salon and had my hair, nails and make up done before being dressed. Sometimes the Secret Service agents took me to get ready.

There were times Henry gave me little pills and instructed me to slip them into my glove to use if the person I was targeting was not cooperating in giving up information. I rarely found the pills necessary. After sex the men seemed to listen intently to the words I was saying to them and would open up and give me the information I was instructed to get. Henry explained to the men in suits that I could say things after sex that "influenced the men deeply."

It was at the White House that I did my best work and met the people whom I was to influence or as they called it..."seed." Over time I learned that seeding meant to drop an idea that would start an individual thinking in a certain direction that would support my controller's position. For example, information that would influence a person's thinking about upcoming legislation, or information (false or true) in regard to key individuals (politicians, leaders, wives, husbands, etc.).

The White House was an easy place to work because there were so many side rooms we could secretly slip into. Sometimes I would get some "target" into a room, like an office and lock the door behind us and seduce him right there. The men usually got very excited, especially if it was their first escapade. I would assure them that this little secret was safe with me because Senator so and so (my escort) wouldn't like it if I was fooling around either. This assured them that 1, too, had a good reason to keep the secret to protect myself, which usually made them feel more willing to take the risk. Sometimes I had to take the targeted person outside the building to another location and have sex with them. That was a little trickier, but I could do it.

As far as I know, the "targets" never did know that in having sex with me, they were really being taken advantage of, or politically raped and coerced by the Council itself-five men in suits who cleverly installed their own agenda. In this way, the Council controlled money and/or coerced many people in key places, often without the person ever being aware of it.

Henry usually seemed very proud of me after I delivered messages or extracted information successfully from people. He acted like a greedy old man when he debriefed me. Often, he insisted on debriefing me himself because he said the words that came out of me were "fresh" in the first debriefing and were key to issues at hand. The debriefings could take up to an hour for just one evening spent with a targeted individual.

Henry said I helped him do his best work.

Accompanying Henry to Foreign Countries

Sometimes when Henry and I traveled internationally the time difference worked in his favor. For instance, we could leave after I got out of school on Friday, reach our foreign destination the next morning and it would still be Friday when we arrived. Henry worked it so I wouldn't miss more school than necessary, and he made sure I slept on the 8-12 hour flight. We always flew first class when we flew as private citizens. At other times we flew on military or government aircraft during times he was in public office. There were occasions when I would leave school and fly with Henry, or my mom would put me on a plane and I would meet Henry somewhere like New York and then we would fly the rest of the

way together. Once seated on the flight, he would press the top of my hand and I would go to sleep as commanded. When he pressed my hand in surroundings where I had been commanded many times for the same thing, he didn't have to give commands - like sleep. I automatically knew, so over time, things became pretty routine. I didn't eat while we were out of the States, when we only went for one meeting and were gone 24-48 hours. He would simply tell the stewardess I was sleeping and my sleep was more important than food. So she would bring him food and I would sleep. And although I was asleep, I was aware of what happened around me; I was recording, as commanded.

There were occasions that we didn't fly back in time for me to go home and I was taken by limo directly to Taft High and dropped off a block away from the school to walk the rest of the way, just before school began on Monday morning.

Henry took me to France, at times to Marseilles in the South of France, to meetings of the elite. We often met with bankers, as well as other leaders and key businessmen. They met at round tables and each pulled papers from their briefcases to share. Henry sat his briefcase by his side on the floor because he had me and had little need for papers unless they were presented merely for the effect that it would have to help influence someone. If papers were needed, he always had the best, the neatest, cleanest, most professional paperwork money could buy. Everything was planned for effect. He gave varying reasons for my presence, explaining when asked who the young lady was, that I was his personal secretary and that I was advanced far beyond my years and was quite a help to him. When he began the meeting, if none of the men objected to my presence; as instructed, I sat next to Henry and took notes. While I appeared to simply be taking sketchy notes in shorthand at the meeting, when he debriefed me later on, he had me recite, verbatim, what each and every man said at the meeting. Henry liked for me to be present at meetings when he felt that sort of information could later be important for his use. Henry loved to come out of meetings and go immediately back to his room to debrief me. He would sit at a table writing diagrams as I recited what I had heard. Then he would have more data to use to strategize with. If there was to be a second follow-up meeting, he would be on top, ready to drop his carefully planned ideas and solutions into the meetings with foreign leaders or businessmen. Henry called this "International Business."

At times when I was sent alone, he said the information he got was better than if he had gone himself, "because it is distilled," he explained. So he sent me to many locations as a "presidential model" to Presidents, and to many leaders at parties at the Rockefeller's and Bob's, and also sent me abroad. I knew whom I was to target, because Henry had shown me a picture before. I was sent to foreign embassies to entertain foreign ambassadors that were working for Henry. Often they worked for the United Nations in order to have some peace-loving humanitarian effort that justified the U.S. presence in a foreign country, and then Henry and the others would go about doing their real business.

There were other times we traveled by trains in different countries like Russia and Henry would debrief me in his private compartment. We slept on the train and traveled to meetings during the daytime. Henry said the food was bad, so he would often bring some of his own food in a brown paper bag that he kept in his briefcase. At the meetings he didn't need papers because I was with him. People thought he was really smart and had an excellent memory because of that. It got to the point where I could literally "read his mind," as he termed it, and give him a simple answer on paper that others wouldn't see and then he would take off on the data or idea.

We also traveled to China (both sides), Japan, England, France, Italy, Israel, Germany, and wherever else he needed to go to do his "International Business." Often when Henry was extended an invitation to attend a social event in a foreign country, he declined saying he was tired and suggested they take me instead. Then he got what he really wanted anyway - the information from them without having to expend social energy to get it. Then, before I went he loaded me up with questions to ask the leader and instructions about the stance I was to take sexually with him or her. Dressed in appropriate clothing, I

was off. There were bullfights with leaders in Spain, polo games to watch Prince Charles, and golf with others. The events I attended were indigenous to the individuals and their countries.

At the end of trips abroad, if there wasn't a McDonald's to help me remember that I was really in California (wink), then there had to be some type of trauma to seal the experience off from my conscious awareness. Henry had others perform the trauma; he wouldn't do it. He said it was out of his league. So the men that accompanied him "took care of me" when the need arose. When we finally arrived at McDonald's, I was usually starving. There, I was told I was in Woodland Hills in order to “re-mind” me to forget. McDonald's spelled safety and the end of my assignment.

Because I was a robot, and so, "security proven," I was allowed to function as the go between for Henry and the Council. They even gave me things to bring back to Henry that couldn't be safely delivered any other way. I was flown to remote places to meet with them and then flown back for debriefing by Henry. He always seemed so pleased with the information, like he was getting just what he wanted. The Council often sent messages to people directly, bypassing Kissinger. When I would deliver the message I would tell them it was from "the group." That was how the Council often identified themselves to insiders who knew how the group functioned, but didn't know their actual identities. Over the years they changed their 'nickname' so as not to be conspicuous.

From my perspective, no one in government office knew as much about mind control as Henry Kissinger. They might have been told "the basics" but it didn't seem like most of them were aware of the extent to which a person could be enhanced with programming and used especially that an individual could possess the capability of organizing and recording the conversations of a whole group of people at a meeting.

Kissinger: The Council's Top Dog

One time at a Gubernatorial Ball, Henry got very mad at Ted Kennedy because Ted tried to take me off to another room to have sex with him. Henry got very angry with Ted who was a Senator at that time and threatened him with exposure if he did not back off. As a result, Kennedy left me alone, at least for that evening. At other times Ted Kennedy forced me into very violent and sadistically torturous sex. It was often scary for me when Henry wasn't around to make sure certain people didn't rough me up.

Bob Hope didn't seem to care or at least he didn't watch me as closely as Henry did when I was with him, but Henry did not seem to know this. Bob lied to him sometimes about who I was seeing, and sometimes Bob used me with people Henry wasn't supposed to know about. Bob had his own separate interests in using me with people who would benefit him but Henry told Bob what to do as far as government issues went. Bob was just a useful servant who had a lot to offer ...connections, money, fame, and slaves. Bob suited Henry's needs to a tee, handling the social scene and celebrities. Bob's social elite contacts greatly added fuel to Kissinger's long range plans as he found places to use different people of influence in strategic positions. He just waited for the right opportunity to arise.

Henry didn't view the President as anyone necessarily having any power. He knew how they were manipulated and he liked to be the one who was pulling the strings. He told me once that ambassadors to foreign countries have more power and control than the President of the United States. I didn't understand then what he was talking about, but just listened and nodded.

Henry was the top dog as far as the Council was concerned. He had the mind they needed that could so carefully strategize plans far in advance and so he usually got the desired results. In the Council's eyes, Rockefeller was more dispensable because he had money and power but didn't have the mastermind that they saw in Henry. So Henry was given everything he needed in order to fulfill their plan. If he wasn't in office it didn't much matter - he always had access to the person sitting at the reigns

of political power. Behind the scenes, Henry controlled decisions and actions taken by the State Department in matters of foreign relations, always attempting to bring about a situation where the Council was in total control globally. They saw it as a game, a lifelong plan, with the outcome hopefully being that, finally, this generation of the global elite would succeed in the game that their forefathers had not been able to pull off. It created ambition and drive among them.

All I saw these men do was manipulate and control people by covert means. It seemed that most people they targeted had no idea they were even being manipulated or set up. When a country needed some shoring up, messages, or coercion to further the implementation of their plan, then they would send Henry or me or both of us, depending on the importance of the situation. I was merely an extension of Henry, delivering "strategic influence" in ways he said he never could. He felt that he would have more influence with many of the men he wanted to coerce or manipulate to see or do things his way by sending in a soft, cuddly, human sexual toy. He often joked with insiders that his sphere of influence was limited but he could use me to get in those "hard to get places." Henry said I could make those men twist into a pretzel and so he used me in many foreign countries to tap into vast resources, the human resources he needed to puppet. He felt that those human resources would lead to natural resources and that's where the money would be. Henry was often referred to among the insiders as a "genius of his time." So the presidents came and went but Henry was there behind the scenes molding me, with Bob's help, for the Council benefit. Mind control was the secret weapon that Henry perfected over the years.

Usually the individual would be so busy focused on what was planned that he would miss the hidden agenda that was taking place. Henry loved this tactic. Sometimes these guys would be taken into Henry's confidence (the oldest trick in the world to get people to be on your side, and feel important so they will cooperate) and told I was an espionage operative, but he didn't tell them my capabilities so they wouldn't be able to imagine what I was really doing or what I was capable of.

Henry and Bob often did deals together, sometimes involving "influencing" our troops overseas, or influencing a Senator, Governor, celebrity, a President, or a world leader. Sometimes Henry Kissinger told Bob Hope to make certain connections for me in regard to people I was to be placed with in and out of California.

"I am the light of the world. He that follows Me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life." -- John 8:12

Chapter Thirteen: Bob Hope "Let me entertain you."

Bob Hope involved me with many celebrities. His parties were star-studded, filled with the glamorous, the famous, the rich. If people did not have a title or talent they could buy themselves into his circle of "exclusive people."

ZaZa Gabor was often in attendance. Lucille Ball was his friend also. She was often drunk. Also present were Peter Finch, Alan Arkin, Dezi Arnez, Bernadette Peters, Suzanne Sommers-to name a few. Bob rarely drank at his own parties. Perhaps he wanted to stay in control.

One night at a party, the trees outside began moving from a helicopter downdraft. Lights from the ground illuminated the helicopter and the extravaganza that followed. It was an extraordinary show. Guests were gasping, "Oooh, ahhh," as they watched beautiful women dropped by tether down into the party, wearing very skimpy, elaborate, glittery costumes that were set aglow by the lights.

Bob liked fanfare. Some of the women wore only body glitter in scant places. The "elite," as they were often called, were encouraged to choose a girl, any girl they wished for their 'personal party favor' and enjoy her as they wished. Girls in skimpy aprons, but otherwise naked, served champagne and chocolates on silver platters. If a man wanted her in addition to the candy or drink, she complied. Every desire, every whim was satisfied. These girls were totally compliant.

At times, children were there. After I had children, sometimes even my daughter Kelly was there to be used. The children were held in reserve in a back room for men with 'alternate' sexual preferences. From a very early age my daughter was well-trained sexually, just like the other children. It was all very bad, but Bob's contacts were paid--in favors or connections. Bob didn't need money, but connections always came in handy.

At many of Bob's parties there were no rules, no restrictions, no boundaries. Sex was allowed anywhere and everywhere. To partake only required an oath of secrecy. And many partook.

Bob was in charge of me at these times, but I also had an alternate agenda as dictated by the Council. I was often preprogrammed to target certain key individuals at these parties that they wanted to influence. Some people spent the night at Bob's house if they were too tired to go home.

U.S. Senators like Alan Cranston, governors, congressmen, celebrities, even foreign ambassadors and dignitaries, were in attendance at different times. Military people, also. People were invited if they had something to offer to Bob or "the cause"...the New World Order.

Reagan attended Hope's parties at times. So did Nancy.

When the parties were over, Bob liked for me to sit on his lap and feed him his favorite piece of See's candy, followed by what he called, "his favorite piece of ass." He always laughed when he said, "You feed me and I'll feed you." But I never got to eat the candy, only him.

Bob liked for me to take off his watch (per program) while I was sitting on his lap and carefully put it on the table by the chair. He loved it when I was silly and giggly and teased him, but he did not like me to carry that attitude to bed. Bob always asked me to do things nicely the first time. He said, "There won't be a second time ...that you'll remember," and he held up the zapper (stun gun). Some nights he teased me and said it was really just a bug zapper, but then it would bite me, and it hurt.

In bed I was supposed to be serious and passionate, not silly. He would say, "Show me your tail feathers," and I would take off my panties and turn around. Then he would hold me on either side of my hips to "examine the merchandise," and give it a "stamp of approval," which was a spankie. Bob loved to give me spankings, not real hard ones, just enough to activate my sex program.

Bob liked for me to put on the pretty lacy nighties or teddies he left out for me. So I did. He had a butler who would bring him drinks or whatever he wanted before bed - he often liked a "hot toddy." If he wanted a regular drink, he would have me pour it for him from crystal decanters that he had in his room.

Bob snored at times while he slept. I was usually taken away early the next morning, sometimes even before Bob woke up. The butler or some other man in a suit would come to get me and deliver me to the waiting limo. Sometimes I would fly home by plane, but was often helicoptered. Endless songs that commanded my mind played inside my head at appropriate times to 're-mind' me. When I was taken to the Palm Springs area the song lyrics, "In the desert you can't remember your name... " helped me forget - until I remembered.

Pornography, Hollywood Style

Late at night, I was programmed to walk out of our Woodland Hills home and down a block or so to Royar Street where a black sedan picked me up and whisked me to Universal Studios or other locations, to work for Bob filming porn. The sedan took me through a chain link fence and past a security booth where the driver had to stop and check in with the guard to gain clearance to the lot. Then he dropped me off in front of a very plain-looking building, with just a door to it. There were wooden step platforms up to the door.

Bob often watched while pornography was filmed. They usually filmed at night so they would have, "more freedom," as Bob would say. Men at the studios, wearing t-shirts and jeans, dressed me in all kinds of sexy garments and made my body up with all kinds of make-up. One night a man handed me a beautiful, thick wooden and gold hanger from which hung a small teddy made of nothing but a series of vertical strips of ribbon that created a see-through effect. Bob followed me into the dressing room while I slipped on black stockings, garter belt, heels and then the teddy. The black-ribboned teddy was belted at the waist but I was naked underneath and you could see through and between all the ribbons. I was instructed to lay out and get a suntan before filming, and I wasn't allowed to have tan lines on my back or shoulders. They put makeup on my breasts so I would appear tan all over. The make up they put on my body was really put on heavy and was very itchy and uncomfortable. The oily kind was less itchy but didn't stay on as well as the drier type. There was another man who did my hair, often in curls or in a side ponytail. They used curling irons and designed all sorts of hair creations. I just sat there while they chose how I would appear; my hair, nails, toenails, make-up, and costumes. And then, I did whatever they told me to do. Finally, they draped me with whatever jewelry they decided on. At times body jewels were glued onto my body. Once they glued little sparkly rhinestones all over my skin and filmed me in a skimpy white bikini-type outfit. The costumes were always different, unique and original. Bob wanted me to be like Dorothy Lamour, but I didn't know who she was. He talked about lots of old actresses that I'd never heard of. There were lights and cameras all over the place in the halls, and backstage was full of all sorts of costumes on racks. Bob liked pornography with feathers so he had a man work with me on the act, including songs and dances. Bob said it was, "porn for the sophisticates, not just for low-lifers." Bob saw pornography as an art form and went into a very deeply loving, emotional mode while it was filmed. When they finished filming that's when he wanted me the most.

Another man was assigned to "work me up," training me for the act. This porn was filmed Hollywood-style all the way, with glitter, diamonds, flair, special props and stage lighting. I usually sang beforehand and Bob made sure that I had a pre-recorded voice tape so I could sing but not have to be concerned with putting power behind my voice while I was doing the sexual acts. The whole show was directed by another man who told the male porn actor and I what to do. The prop man listened to the director and moved props all around, while the camera and lights men fell in line. There were many

different themes and many nights when pornography was filmed. One night Bob showed Hugh Hefner some of his porn in the back room at one of Bob's parties. I was in the room, but Bob acted like I wasn't real or really there. I was.

USO Tours

In my late teens and early 20's I was taken aboard U.S. Navy aircraft carriers when Bob was doing a show on his USO tours, to "entertain the troops." I had several personalities who were specially trained to sing and dance, and many personalities who were expertly trained to dance and strip. Usually Bob and I were flown into a base and then helicoptered the rest of the way to the ship.

On tour with Bob there were large bands, with lots of music and lights. Red, white, and blue banners decorated the stage where we performed. Sailors stood packed together to watch the show.

If the media was there Bob totally controlled what they captured on camera, what segments could be filmed, and when they had to leave. One time when I came out on stage, they began shooting my part, and after the show Bob had a huge fit (he could be very temperamental) and threatened to break their equipment on the spot if they didn't give him the film. They gave him the film. This way Bob controlled what was shown to the general public.

The shows usually took place on the outside decks. Professional make-up artists made up my whole body. For one show, I was dressed in a white 'navy' dress, only it wasn't like the regular standard uniforms the women in the navy wore. It was a specially sewn costume, short and extra feminine with lace top and scoop neckline. I had special white lace panties with little anchors on them. For one show I sang Anchors Away after which Bob would "joke them!"

What the "boys" didn't know was that Bob knew how to control their emotions with certain specific words and phrases and songs. He knew how to "lighten them up," get them really "emotional" and worked up, and then he would slip in suggestions, keyed to programs, that "helped them with certain unwanted attitudes." I overheard the Council making jokes about the "herds" (the troops) and how stupid and easily led they were.

At the shows where I was present, singing usually came first, then Bob's jokes, and then another song and dance. Once I did a semi-strip dance, never "took it all off" for "the boys." In order to project a semblance of 'wholesomeness,' I just stripped down to skimpy bras and panties, and also took off my heels, dress, nylons and garter belt. I was instructed to wear those for "the effect" of taking them all off.

After shows, sometimes I was taken to the Admiral's and/or Captain's quarters to further "entertain" him in the privacy of his room. These officers displayed attitudes created by years and years of being honored with medals and ribbons for "service to the country." The Council often slipped messages to Naval officers, through me, possibly without the officers' knowledge.

I never knew my exact location; I was not allowed to know. We entertained the Air Force and Army, also, but I was used more often with the Navy.

Bob took me to a specific recording studio in Southern California to pre-record the songs I was to sing before doing a show for "the troops." In the recording studio, I wore headphones that played back into my ears the music I was singing so that I could stay in tune. I enjoyed singing and the studios could make anyone's voice sound good, but Bob liked me to sing soft, breathy, high and sexy. Sometimes, in the beginning, he would sit just outside the recording room where he could hear the music and would cue me so we could get it just right.

Once I was programmed to sing The Star Spangled Banner, in a really sexy manner for the troops. When it was time to sing it live, they played the tape and I sang along, because it was hard to sing and dance at the same time and maintain good voice quality. In this way, I could put my all into dancing, splits and all, without being concerned with the song. (You can imagine my amazement when I began healing and integrating personalities and discovered I could do the splits! I never consciously knew that I could do that.)

I found the lights that shone on us while performing to be blinding. Bob taught me to not look into them but to look past them so they would not bother me so much.

Another time when I went with Bob to entertain the troops, they wrapped me in an American flag. I had on a tiny sparkling, red, white, and blue lacey bikini and sparkling red high heels. Two soldiers, in green army uniforms and boots held me up, one holding onto my feet and the other holding me up around my shoulders. As they turned me, the flag unfolded off of me and slowly I was unfurled to bright lights and lots of soldiers yelling, whistling and cheering. In addition to the entertainment, this was part of my 'spin programming.' Bob had the microphone and had been telling jokes, but stopped as they unrolled me. He pointed to me while the drums rolled. When I was unfurled, they played The Stripper and I danced around while all of the guys cheered.

For other shows, I had a feather plume on my bottom that went up my back. The costumes were always different. I rolled around on the floor, did the splits and "spread 'em," as instructed, for the boys. Sometimes I sang, sometimes I just danced, and sometimes for smaller private audiences, I stripped all the way. And there were times I was just there to dance seductively for Bob's personal and private pleasure later on in the evening.

After the show, some man would put a prod or stun gun to my forehead. I totally collapsed into his arms and he carried me over and laid me down until it was time to leave. The physical sensation I experienced was a jolt of white-hot electricity, and then I felt very, very cold. This was the reaction to the electroshock. The man delivering the electricity also delivered programming to me. Before and after he zapped me, he said, "You are fat and ugly and no man could ever be attracted to you." As commanded, I carried the belief that I was fat and ugly and I never would have believed I was attractive enough to perform on stage, had I begun to remember. They would zap me with electroshock either on the forehead, the base of my skull, or on my back or thighs. For some reason on this occasion, Bob laughed just before they zapped me. He had some goon do it - he rarely did.

I was often in very poor condition when we were helicoptered away and Bob laughed and made excuses for my listlessness, saying things like, "Ah, don't worry about her, the kid's just had too much to drink." Truth was I wasn't even allowed to drink, not even water. My physical reactions were all from the aftereffects of the electroshock intended to erase my memory.

Another show I was taken to was for the boys in the Army. Bob wore an Army uniform, just like the soldiers, and made jokes about being just like "one of the fellas" in his uniform. They loved it and cheered. Bob could get away with saying just about anything to them and they would laugh. When he introduced me, he said, "Watch this little one shake her tail feather!" I came out with a glittery bra and a g-string with tail feathers attached to the back. I danced carrying matching purple feathers in my hands and placed them over my breasts and then turned around and held them over my bottom.

When I was winding down my act, I was instructed to distribute all but the last of the feathers to soldiers in the audience and then turn my back to them, spread my legs far apart, turn my head and say, "Sorry boys, I need to leave something to keep me warm!"

I felt like I was on lots of naval bases in the United States at some time or another. Sometimes for entertaining "the boys" with Bob, but more often for programming. The programming at these bases was

torturous. I was hung upside down in tanks filled with water or gases. There also were chairs with straight backs and arm rests, with bands that fit tightly around my forehead, wrists and ankles. They also used electroshock and light and sound equipment, combined with food and sleep deprivation. I was subjected to lots of high tech equipment and machines. I didn't have a clue what these machines actually did or why my controllers were torturing me with them.

Bonded To Bob

Bob took me with him to lots of places when I was 16 to 21 (1967-1972). Wherever we were, or whomever I was to be with, I usually came with the silver limo. I would be held in the back and no one from the outside could tell I was there. I was accustomed to performing oral sex to whomever I was instructed, and in limos and public places it meant swallowing. As a result I would become sick some days when there were a lot of men "to do."

Sometimes the limo would be full of Bob's friends and I would be told to wait in the back after a premier, gala or show openings, etc. Bob would bring his friends "along for the ride" and they got to "sample his goodies" is what he would say to his friends. One evening at a Hollywood event that took place in front of Gromin's Chinese Theatre, Elizabeth Taylor looked curiously past Bob as he stood in front of the entrance to the limo I was "parked" in. She asked him who I was. Then she made fun of him, saying, "Couldn't you at least get one that doesn't look like a child? She doesn't even have any breasts!" They didn't seem to get along too well.

My programming made me feel bonded to Bob Hope. Almost like being married or comfortable being with him, like it was second nature to be with him. I was programmed to know what he liked so I could easily please him. He liked to find me in his bathtub, full of bubbles, giggling and happy and ready for him. He liked for me to take off his shoes, rub his (smelly) feet, inch up his legs, unzip his pants, and perform oral sex, but stop just before he orgasmed and wait a while before continuing. Following program command, I sat on his lap, kissed him, and told him how handsome he was, as he sat in his favorite winged back chair in his room. He had a footstool that I sat on to rub his feet.

Bob did not always want sex actually, but always liked to be reminded of it by talking about sexual things or how young I was. He loved young women and I was just that, and always was young to him because he was older than the hills! He was older than my father. He could have been my grandfather, with nearly a 50 year age difference between us. I had been trained all my life to please older men. I knew just how to treat them, flatter them, and make them feel good, psychologically and, of course, physically. Bob sexually desired me from ages 16-20 or so, after that he just had sex with me, almost as a convenience to him. When I married, his sexual desire seemed to change. During my teen years he'd take me around to friends, parties, clubs, and he bragged to whomever he was with, that he still got the 'young stuff.'

I do not remember ever being involved in satanic trauma with Bob. But he must have known and liked what it created from my childhood years. He was above the trappings of satanism, like most of the higher ups. They looked at people who practiced satanism as low level, but the job had to be done (trauma base for mind control) and they rationalized it by saying, "look how beautifully she turned out."

Bob's Parties

I had lots of party girl personalities programmed for Bob. Bob spent a greater amount of time with me when I was a teenager, until I was married. The personalities dedicated and devoted to Bob were clever and programmed with silly jokes for Bob's company. Bob liked me to start the parties out right, so guests were served mixed drinks, champagne, hors d'oeuvres, etc. Then Bob had me entertain in skimpy little outfits he provided, such as a red leotard, with netting around my wrist, red fishnet stockings and

red sparkly high heels. I'd sing and dance and would strip if it was an appropriate time. One of the first times Bob had me start the party, he said, "You took control of the room!" He seemed surprised.

When I stripped in front of couples, I did a lot of the same 'couple bonding' techniques that I did with couples in the intimacy of their own bedrooms. I was programmed to say something about the husband to the wife like, "God you have good taste in men! I wish I could find one like this." And while I said it, I would lasso him with a silk scarf or feathers and pull him close, usually to my bare navel or chest. Or I'd say to the husband, "You have won the charms of one of the most beautiful women in the world! You must be quite a man." And I would go on and on whispering, as if just to them, yet still having everyone in the room watch. Usually, unless Bob said it wasn't appropriate, I'd eventually strip and it seemed to loosen everyone up and very often I invited them if they cared to, to join me. It was usually like watching a group of little kids doing something naughty. Everyone would stand up and start getting naked, pulling off their clothes and throwing them all over the floor. Then they would go skinny-dipping or off to a side room for sex. People later told Bob the experience really stimulated their sexuality and they had not had such great sex in 20 years of marriage.

Different nights brought different types of people together, usually carefully matched and pre-selected so they would congeal. Most of the couples were usually older and the men were businessmen, politicians, bankers, stock brokers, movie and music artists, and other people that were important to Bob's interests. The parties' guest lists were planned and coordinated to match up and network people who they needed to get together, or groups with similar sexual preferences like gays, lesbians, heterosexuals, or pedophiles, so they could feel free to let their hair down. Unfortunately, after it happened Bob owned them.

Often, people did drugs at Bob's if they wanted to. At some parties, drugs and alcohol were in large supply, usually in labeled dishes or on little platters. Everything had little ribbon identifier tags or small signs, "so people knew what they were getting into," Bob would say.

For some private parties, Bob had me act like I was his dummy and he would load me up with most of the lines so he wouldn't have to think so much or memorize the jokes. He often had me say the key lines so he could easily bounce off of them and deliver a one liner. He dressed me in skimpy clothes and he put his hand up my back like he was making me move like a dummy. He did that dummy gig often or had me mime with him or mime alone. When people got high they really liked the mime act, especially if there were strobe lights flashing on and off.

Bob usually had some real maids who were older and who really cleaned and served. I only had to do that if it was the way they (Henry, Bob, and the Council) had planned for me to go in on a target. For example, I would serve the target champagne with two strawberries in it, and then I'd say to him, "Could I eat your ...(pause)....uh...strawberry?" I'd wiggle all over and smile or giggle. Sometimes the men would blush, but usually they would smile and say, "Why yes!"

As programmed, I would take the man's drink and take him by the hand to a side bedroom and say, "Can I suck your '----' now?" Then I'd perform as programmed. To cover himself, Bob had me say, "Please don't tell Mr. Hope about this." But other times Bob told me to say, "Bob wanted to share with you the pleasure he gets on a regular basis." It all depended on the angle they were using according to the information that had been gathered on the man prior to the evening. Before I left the room I was instructed to show the man to the adjoining bathroom and shower, and offer him towels, combs, deodorant, dryers, etc., anything he might need to freshen up, and I'd explain he was free to rest, sleep or shower. If it was a serious target for the Council, I would stay with the man longer, sometimes all night and at times I was instructed to take him away from the party, somewhere quiet, where it was just the two of us. I would take him wherever I was instructed - to a hotel, park, beach, restaurant, disco, etc. If it

was a serious target they got the red carpet treatment, if not they still got sex. Prince Charles was the red carpet sort, where minor politicians or businessmen were less catered to.

At other parties I carried a silver tray with a glass of champagne on it and I'd have a cherry stem with a cherry dangling out of my mouth. Seductively I would say, "Would you like a cherry, sir?" and then I'd take him to another room for sex. Or I'd put a very expensive gourmet chocolate truffle in my mouth and say to a target, "Would you like one of these?" as I slowly and sensually took it in and out of my mouth, sucking and licking it, and if he said yes, I would put it on the edge of my lips and say, "Oops, this is the last one, do you share?" If he indicted he did, I would lean over and share it with him. Then I'd ask him if he wanted seconds and if he said yes, I would take him off for sex. Other occasions, with a slice of peach in my mouth, I was programmed to ask, "Would you like a California peach?" and then I'd give it to him, in the bedroom.

Henry told Bob the strategies and they often worked together to create a script for me to deliver, especially if jokes were needed. If it was intricate or complicated, then Henry did the uploading. Sometimes though, for Bob's parties, Bob would load me up with statements for different people before the party began. He had a list of party guests and he often had his writers come up with something clever and funny along the subject lines Bob chose. I remember hearing him call different writers to chew them out if they were late delivering the scripts or if he was unhappy with the material they came up with.

The Council used Bob and Henry together and was able to achieve enormous strides because people oftentimes didn't realize they were connected, or that Bob and Henry were strategizing or manipulating them, let alone that they were connected to the Council.

Bob's Political Connections

Bob was involved in local, state, national and international politics and had a network of "cronies" all around the world. He would 'scratch their backs' for the same in return. Since he wielded so much political power, because of his wealth and connections, people listened to him and often did what he asked. Most people were bought. He had a network of people (politicians, judges, police, etc.) in his back pocket and in this way he remained protected and often operated above the law. He seemed to know everyone everywhere we went and people seemed anxious to get near him. He had the money to buy anything he liked, including programmed sex slaves. Once he told me, "everyone has his or her price," and he usually found it. It was not always money that people were after; sometimes it was connections, fame or sex.

By the time I was 18, I was in operation heavily with Bob Hope, California Governor Ronald Reagan, President Richard Nixon, and Henry Kissinger. They all knew I had what they called "expanded faculties." I was often used as an intermediary between Sacramento and the White House - keeping information flowing per instruction from the Council. They were the top controllers. So, for example, during the time Reagan was Governor of California, I was flown to Reagan's ranch to have sex with him and deliver him messages. Then I was flown to the White House to have sex with Nixon and deliver messages from the Council. The Council was overseeing all this. They debriefed me after each assignment and reprogrammed me in light of the information I reported. I don't know if Reagan or Nixon really ever knew to whom I was really reporting ...whose interests I was really addressing. The Council always made it look like I was attending to Reagan or Nixon's sexual interests and then subtly slipped in messages or suggestions from the Council. My programming 're-minded' me, "Mine is not to question why, mine is but to do or die".

I was only 18, 19, 20, 21, 22 years old when I was performing many of these earlier sex/espionage missions. It was the perfect cover. Who would have suspected me, a very average, innocent looking, silly, young blonde to have been involved in U.S. Government and Shadow Government activities?

Ronald Reagan and Bob Hope were connected through the entertainment field and were doubly connected through their political and military friends when Reagan was Governor of California and later on when he became President of the United States. Bob was also friends with high-powered men like Walter Annenberg, who had a sweeping estate in Palm Springs, or more specifically Rancho Mirage. When Bob took me there for meetings or parties I was told, "This is a mirage, this just a mirage." Walter Annenberg was at one time an Ambassador to Britain and was also connected to the Reagan's and the British Royal Family.

Bob was politically connected and knew how to lure people in and insure they would work for him. He invited them to his parties and dangled various kinds of illegal or immoral perversions in their faces. Once their perversions were uncovered, he could blackmail or control them. That is how Bob worked. Bob was very good at this. I watched him do it to people over and over. He lured them in, detected their weaknesses, then used that knowledge in his favor, for his connections, and ultimately for his personal gain.

He was like a black widow spider, luring people into his web and then moving in for the kill. Except instead of killing his prey he simply put them to good use in his life. He used them "in the scheme of things," he would say, "to make life a little easier." Once lured into Bob's snare, there was no getting out without dire consequence.

Bob especially liked to do this to politicians because as he would explain to me after a party, he liked "to have a few key politicians in his back pocket." Bob demonstrated my "abilities" to people he wanted to gift me to. He gave me as a sexual gift to a lot of people he wanted to "have in his back pocket." Later, he talked about how incredibly stupid these people were, to take the drugs or alcohol and then make a public spectacle of themselves.

J. Edgar Hoover

J. Edgar Hoover was at Bob's parties. One night he ended up dressed in a blue sequined dress. Henry and Bob had put together a list of other politicians who were like J. Edgar so they would feel comfortable together. J. Edgar Hoover, "Jerry" to his friends, must have thought Bob was safe and that he was out of his political arena so he could "let his hair down." But it was really a clever set up between Bob and Henry, as they set a trap for Hoover. At the party onset, I was brought in to dance naked and get them going. They all dressed up in "costumes" left out for their "party enjoyment." I presented it that way so they wouldn't feel uncomfortable or inhibited. Then they were given booze, cocaine, anything they wanted. There were party poppers and dishes full of different recreational drugs with little tags attached explaining the type of ride they would go on if they took a certain pill or powder - everything short of injectables was offered. This group of men got really high and silly and changed into the costumes. Once they were high, I worked them for information as pre-directed by Henry Kissinger. J. Edgar must not have known that Bob Hope was connected to Kissinger. So, the information gathered that evening - not only Hoover and his friends' direct answers to questions, but their attitudes, and sexual preferences, etc. - were all recorded directly into my mind files.

From then on the Council had "Hoover by the balls or was it the pussy?" my controllers joked. From then on the FBI was under Council control and they even got Hoover to put blocks and different rules, regulations, and codes directly into the FBI operations. That began to set up a controlling mechanism for the future so that when the next FBI director took office, things inside the Bureau would be in place so the Council could continue to manipulate them toward their Ultimate year 2000 goal.

Alan Cranston

Senator Alan Cranston was Bob's right-hand political man in California. He also attended Bob's parties. Alan carried out things Bob wanted done in the government sector. Bob's business dealings ran deep into world governments. He used government agencies as a tool for his benefit and he "bought" people already working in the government so that he could control them and "get things in order," he would say. Which meant bend or change laws to his benefit. Cranston was the center of the political wheel, the inside corrupt wheel, in California. If anyone wanted anything done, all they had to do was contact Bob and he would go through his political cronies to get it done-no matter what it was.

Senator Cranston was tied into Bob Hope and from what I saw, Bob was tied to the outskirts of the Council, but Cranston was not. Politicians were never allowed to be that close or to be directly affiliated with the Council, but were given information, as they needed it from unidentified sources. That is what I was, an unidentified source.

Cranston was one of Bob's favorite connections. Cranston liked "spankies" over his lap. He would make me lie over his lap and he would spank me, "to turn me on," he would say. The more turned on he got the more brutal he became. He was into beatings, sometimes with a belt, and tying me down. He was very aggressive, very scary and unpredictable. Alan Cranston was a bony old, evil man.

Cranston was not allowed to leave marks on me. Henry Kissinger saw to that. Henry kept tabs on me during the Nixon and Reagan administrations because he had his interest in using the information that he had carefully instilled in my mind files and did not want me damaged.

Cranston and Bob seemed to be close friends. Bob and others ran a lot of California politics from Palm Springs and made sure they had the people they needed in their "back pockets" in order to "enact change," which meant bending things for their own financial gain. It usually always boiled down to money, but occasionally Bob did things out of vindication for certain people. He always made people "sorry" if they were not nice to him. He usually got his way ...his power went high.

One night on the Queen Mary, in the mid-1970's Cranston tied me tightly to a headboard and then got so drunk or drugged up that he could not untie me. So he had sex with me standing up, with me still tied and then he passed out on the bed. I had to stay tied up like that until the wee hours of the morning when Bob came and found me. My hands and feet were purple/blue from the lack of circulation and I was exhausted but quickly "snapped out of it," when Bob told me to. I switched to being happy, refreshed and bubbly, while Bob attempted to get Cranston sobered up.

Sometimes at parties, Cranston stayed the next day to pull himself together around Bob's pool. If Dolores was there, Bob would tell her I was hired as the maid for the day, but when I would sit on his lap, Dolores would just roll her eyes and walk away disgusted. Theirs was not a marriage made in heaven.

The Chief of Police is Compromised

There was a small Italian restaurant located on Laurel Canyon Boulevard in Los Angeles, called Cafe Galleria. My brother Rick introduced Craig and I to the unique little restaurant in the early 70's. I remember one evening, as we pulled away from the restaurant after we'd had dinner, Craig looked back in a quiet, dissociated manner and said, "Bad things happen in the back room there." When I questioned him further, he didn't answer, so I immediately tucked it away in the back of my mind and went on to another subject. But he was absolutely right and years later I had the memory which pieced together the answers to the questions I would have liked to have asked him back then. With the detailed flashback of the event, I had a fuller picture of what really took place that night.

I don't know who specifically was behind the blackmailed event, but I remembered being taken into the back area of the restaurant into a smoke-filled room full of men. I was told to strip and dance,

and ended up sitting on Police Chief Darryl Gate's lap in the nude. Cameras flashed pictures of me on his lap after which I was ushered out with my clothes to meet my husband. With only fragments of this memory, I am left with an incomplete picture of what my controllers' actual agenda was. You can come to your own conclusions.

Pete Wilson

California Senator, and then Governor, Pete Wilson was also tied to Bob Hope. Bob manipulated Pete through Pete's desire for fame and recognition and through his desire for political gain and for sex. Bob originally invited Pete Wilson to his parties and used me to lure him into his web so he could gain further control over politics in California, or at least protect some of his interests. As Pete discovered, Bob was a direct link to insuring success politically because he had connections to so many people and was connected with the Council and the U.S. Defense Department.

In the beginning I was used with then-California Senator Pete Wilson on Catalina Island. Pete Wilson was in line to be used by the Council in a big way. Back then they felt he was one of the most promising candidates they had for the U.S. Presidency. The last information I had overheard in conversation concerning this was that they were not sure he would be ready by the election in 1996, but they had him in a holding pattern for later use when the time was right. As Pete went along with what the Council wanted, doors were to immediately open for him.

I was programmed to deliver "news" to Pete from the "higher ups," the Council. Over time, he became conditioned to associating me with. news about his future success. But, who from the outside would have ever suspected that 1, initially a young woman and later, a seemingly ordinary housewife and mother, would be carrying secret information to him from this very elite group that secretly rules the world from the shadows? At that time, the Council sent a message to Pete through me, asking him if he "wanted to step upstairs?"

Pete's answer was, "Yes!" Lots of the information between Pete and the Council was filtered through me. That way, no one knew of his connection, just like they didn't know of Nixon's or Reagan's direction by the Council.

I delivered messages to Pete from the Council on many occasions. He seemed fully conscious of their connection to him and their support of him, although I don't know if he was aware of their actual identities. At that time my instructions from the Council were given to me by phone or over closed circuit television, where their voices and bodies were scrambled. No one was allowed to know who they were. Pete either didn't know or didn't care how they were able to accomplish what they did in regard to world affairs. Or, maybe he also was programmed and operated with me from a programmed alter state.

One night, while 'vacationing' with my family on Catalina Island, men in suits came and took me from them in order to ready me for use with Wilson. It was the same routine as usual trauma, isolation, food and sleep deprivation that occurred before I was used to insure I would later be amnesiac of the entire event.

After the traumatic preparation took place, I was escorted by men in suits past the yachtsmen's club out to a dinghy and was taken to Pete on a plush yacht moored in the Avalon Harbor. My controllers dressed me for the occasion in all white - white blouse, slacks, gold belt and shoes. It was late at night when I was placed on board with Pete. After we were left alone, he wanted to slip over the side of the boat naked and swim in the dark with me. I obeyed.

Pete was in good shape physically and had a little more than average share of penile endowment. After our swim, we got into bed and had sex. He pinched my buttocks and told me what a "great one" I had. Sometimes he got very aggressive and it traumatized me. On this occasion he nibbled me all over

my body, from head to toe-we were both laughing hysterically, I because I was programmed to be "congenial." He liked to have sex in many different positions and was an active participant, unlike Ronald Reagan. He seemed to enjoy showing me how physically strong he was. When I first met him, he would have two of us (two women) at the same time, but later on just me, as he said I responded better to him just "one on one." He had massage oils that we used sometimes during sex also. He loved oral sex and liked for me to bring him just to the edge of orgasm and then back off so he could last longer. I was programmed to have a lot of "passion" with Pete Wilson.

It was normal after sex for us to talk. Usually this was when I delivered the messages I was carrying to him from the Council. We talked a lot in bed as I delivered information to help him climb the political ladder. This particular evening on the yacht, I stayed the night on board with him. He often had very bad breath upon awakening.

The next morning, I was taken off the yacht and reunited with my family at our spot on the beach, programmed to think I had never been gone, never missed any time with them. As usual, they didn't notice my absence or my return.

Pete Wilson knew how to utilize me in the same ways Henry Kissinger did by accessing my mind files. I was used in Sacramento, the State Capital, with him in this way, even before he was Governor of California. But Pete often had trouble remembering the mind file names and would say, "Now what was that file name again?" He'd snap his fingers and go to his desk to get the listing of files located in the "Peter Wilson Library." When this personalized filing system was gifted to him through me, Henry said to tell him, "Pete, you had a whole library donated and built just for you." It was complete with every volume, every book housed just precisely where he could gain access to it inside my mind files, all by a simple command.

For Pete I was a total sexual robot as well as a computer robot. But I was never set up to serve both functions at the same time. I was flown to meet him in different locations, as far back as the early 1980's and met him in Sacramento when he was there on business. Pete had trouble getting my mind files open to access information because he couldn't wait two hours in between for sex! I overheard Henry ask him, "Well, did you wait the two hours in between usages?"

But Pete lied and Henry knew he lied when later he accessed me and asked, "What time did Peter enter the Wilson Library?" And I would tell him the exact time and he would catch Pete in a lie every time. Pete didn't seem to know or understand the level of sophistication that allowed me to report exactly when Pete initiated sex or mind file use.

The Council operated in these very cunning and manipulative ways with Pete Wilson and others. Slowly they introduced people, knowing that over time, trust built and later when an important event or issue needed to be dealt with, the connections had been made, a bond was formed and it was easy for them to use people.

They had plans for Wilson to be Governor of California long before he was elected--so far ahead, in fact, that they started putting me with him for the Council to begin "grooming" him for the job of Governor.

Since I had also been used with other California Governors, my programmed years of experience in regard to the ways the Council worked with politicians was helpful to Pete in his early days. The programmed information I carried included familiarity with people and agencies, and could help him get acquainted and adjusted.

I was programmed to work with Pete Wilson in regard to the new educational plan for children, that was first implemented in California. That is a whole separate, but very important subject, which I

will address in a later chapter. I don't know if Pete was aware of where my information was coming from but he seemed to enjoy large amounts of sex with me in between "business engagements." Pete Wilson also had sex with my daughter at one of Bob's parties when she was older.

Obviously, my personal experience with Bob Hope is contrary to the "All-American good citizen" image that he and the media have managed to fool the majority of the American people with all these years. In truth and sorrow, all I have left to say to him is, "Bob, thanks for the memories." For now armed with the truth of what has happened, I can begin to work to stop this once secret, human atrocity called 'mind control.'

"They struck me," you will say, "but I was not hurt; they beat me, but I did not feel it. When shall I awake?" Be not envious of evil men, nor desire to be with them; for their minds devise violence, and their lips talk of mischief.

“By wisdom a house is built, and by understanding it is established; by knowledge the rooms are filled up with all precious and pleasant riches. A wise man is mightier than a strong man, and a man of knowledge than he who has strength. He who plans to do evil will be called a mischief-maker. The devising of folly is sin, and the scoffer is an abomination to men." -- Proverbs 23-24

Chapter Fourteen: Parties at the Rockefellers

...Or, what do the Rockefellers, Kissinger, Alan Greenspan and the Federal Reserve all have in common? ...Me as a mind file to organize their plan.

Parties were given in New York at the Rockefeller mansion around Christmas time each year. I was flown to New York by commercial airline and was met at the airport and limoed to their home. I was taken by a woman to get my hair and nails done, then brought back and dressed to be used to entertain top people from all over the world, usually ending in a sexual encounter with individuals they were targeting. At the parties, I was dressed formally in expensive evening gowns and was often provided a diamond broach or huge diamond necklace to wear for the evening.

There was a whole room, a vault, that had a bank of thin but wide drawers that housed necklaces, broaches, tiaras, all mounted on special stands shaped to fit them. There were tiered drawers for bracelets, diamond watches and rings. I was taken into the vault at times in order for someone to select jewelry that was appropriate for my outfit. Usually it was a blonde, blue-eyed, soft-spoken woman who wore her hair up. She was pretty and knew just how to dress me. If I was to target an important official, foreign leader, or king, they put an especially alluring piece on me. Then she'd escort me out of the vaulted room down a hall and into the house. It was like a secret hallway that led to "the collection."

One evening she dressed me in a long red strapless formal. It was form-fitting and the bodice was low cut. I had to wear a push up bra to look bustier but she said she loved my small waist. She fastened a diamond necklace around my neck and said she liked how it dipped down to accent the bodice of my dress. My hair had been done up and she had me wear large diamond drop earrings displaying lots of diamonds that dangled together.

After I was finished being dressed with accessories, the lady took me out into one of the main rooms - this one was forest green and Prince Philip was there. She reminded me beforehand to curtsy and bow deeply to him and to stay down and bow my head for awhile - which I did, before this man dressed in a black tux, complete with cummerbund and shiny black shoes. Rocky came into the room and put his cigar down in an ashtray, bowed to Philip and said, "I wanted you two to have some time to get acquainted before the other guests arrived." Then he went on to explain to Prince Philip, "She has been dedicated solely to you for the evening. Your wants are her desires."

Philip smiled.

Rocky shook Philip's hand with both hands and explained, "It's an honor to have you here this evening and to express our sincerity, this young lady has been dedicated to you for your Highnesses pleasure for the night."

"Thank you," Philip replied. "You're most kind."

They continued speaking in formalities. That's how everyone spoke around Philip. Rocky handed him a drink that the butler/bartender had made and excusing himself, said, "I'll leave you two alone for awhile and I'll be back to check on you to see if there's anything you want or need." As he walked out of the room, the butler who was on his heels closed the doors. I was just a teenager, but my inner twin sister, Sharon, was the personality that was groomed for these assignments with the elite.

Philip and I sat on the couch and I smiled at him and was shy, as programmed. He reached out and took my hand and sipped his drink. He was nervous like he wasn't sure how to act or just what to say to me. But he began, "You're very young and very beautiful."

"Thank you, your Highness," I replied shyly.

Prince Philip reached out and put his arm around me and I leaned up and kissed him. He was younger and more squarely handsome in a homely kind of way than the old men I was used to. "This is

just the beginning of a very wonderful evening," I said as I kissed him on the cheek. I knelt down in front of him, placing my carefully manicured hands on his knees and looked into his eyes as I started inching my hands near his crotch.

Quickly he said, "I'd like to enjoy looking at you this evening at the party, knowing you will be my dessert." I smiled up at him and nodded yes, then got up and sat back down by his side.

He stood and ushered me out to the other room without waiting for Rocky to come back to get us. I thought, "He didn't follow the rules," but it didn't seem to matter.

The beautifully dressed people at the party bowed to him all night, even the men. I sat off on a couch in a corner alone for some time and he just kept looking over at me and smiling. Since I was under mind control I couldn't think to accurately identify the Royal family structure and mistakenly thought to myself, "I wonder where the princess is, or if there is one?" In addition, I couldn't think to question or to know what I was actually involved in. This wasn't a large party and I didn't know or recognize the others.

Philip spoke very formally but didn't act how I thought a prince or a king was supposed to act. I had no way of understanding his position in the Royal family, but assumed that since everyone was bowing to him, he must be a king. He just kept looking at me like he was reminding himself of what was to come. Later, people began to leave, and they all took forever saying goodbye. Then some men in suits took us by limo to a hotel there in New York - a penthouse suite - and escorted us up to the room. I didn't know who the men were, if they were guards or his own security, but they acted like the Secret Service agents did. I had been given a white, full-length coat to wear. I felt like 'a princess' since I usually wasn't dressed quite that formally.

Once inside the room, he started to undress out of his formal clothes. "Please your Highness," I offered, "allow me." He sat on the bed while I took off my coat and kneeled down to take off his shoes, socks (with the elastic straps), and then I undid his cummerbund and unbuttoned his shirt very slowly and seductively while I kissed him gently all over his face. I rubbed his neck and shoulders for awhile and then took off his pants. He wore boxer shorts, the baggy kind.

Once he was undressed, he slowly took off my clothes, and then pulled back the sheets and laid me in the bed and began kissing me. He was passionate and didn't hurt me. I was sent to sexually service him at other times.

As usual, I was always kept in extreme isolation before and after I was taken to these parties and was deprived of food and water most of the time until I was delivered back to the airplane. I was told things to say to key people during the parties and continued delivering their important messages after the party, when I had sex with an individual they had pre-designated. When my job was finished, I was debriefed and put into isolation again before being flown back to my home in California.

Nelson Rockefeller continually accessed me by closed circuit television in California, especially before an upcoming event. I was programmed to drive to a local Holiday Inn, go to the front desk for a key, and then directly to room 222. It was there by closed circuit television that I was instructed what to do and what to say to certain individuals that I was soon to be connected to in Los Angeles, such as Barbra Streisand and other celebrities or individuals I would be seeing later at his parties.

One year Gerald and Betty Ford were there and another year Ronald and Nancy Reagan. There were always lots of celebrities, royalty from England, and leaders from countries all over the world.

Henry Kissinger took me to a Rockefeller party one year and kept coming back to me during the evening with instructions about whom to approach and what to say to them. He instructed me to approach Jackie Kennedy Onassis. He told me to tell her how much I respected her and the late president, and how I admired the way she picked up and went on after his assassination. Jackie smiled and displayed shy mannerisms when I first approached her. She said she was very happily remarried and

her life was running as smoothly as could be expected. Later she told me she wished she could spend more time with Ari but that she understood he had lots of business dealings all over the world and was a busy man. Aristotle Onassis was not among the guests at the party. Another man escorted Jackie. He was very tall, dark and handsome. Noticing I was talking with her, this man returned by her side and escorted her to another room. He seemed to be very protective of her. Henry told me things to tell lots of people so I would be familiar to them and more trusted if they ever needed to send me in on them at a later date.

One of the rooms in the Rockefeller house was decorated in deep forest green with a rich green plaid that went half way up the wall. It was a beautiful house, full of beautiful wood and glass. It was decorated, of course, to the hilt. The front doors were massive wood and glass, and the entire estate was monitored by remote access televisions so someone inside the house could always see what was going on inside and outside on the grounds.

Happy Rockefeller wasn't called Happy for nothing. She drank a lot at their parties and later at the end of the evening they usually had to take her away because she was sloppy drunk. Henry got mad at Nelson about it but Nelson stuck up for her. Henry told Rocky that it looked very unprofessional and undignified, and that she should be kept away from the public eye, but Rocky wanted her there anyway.

Famous people who attended the Rockefeller parties had their identities protected. They arrived in limousines with tinted windows and in this way were protected from public exposure. The highly sophisticated alarm and monitoring systems that constantly scanned the grounds provided the security necessary for the VIP's who visited. No one was ever to disclose who attended the parties. On the surface the parties looked like mere social gatherings of friends, but they were much more, as secret and sensitive information was passed around a select group.

A small group of men always met in a back room after the party to discuss world strategies and business. It was not unusual for guests to spend the night, but only a select few were invited to the meeting.

At these private meetings, I watched the men who literally ran the world. Men who decided when it was profitable and/or strategically important and timely to start a war. They even had it planned who would begin the fighting and where. It always added up to big money, power, and control. At times, I was allowed into the room because they were aware that I was under mind control and my services were utilized in whatever way they needed to use me.

People in America think they elect their Presidents, but from what I witnessed, they do not as the process of putting them into office is a highly controlled and corrupt one. The media is so controlled that the American people never get the full and accurate story. The Presidents are selected long before they are 'voted' into office. It is no accident that Ronald Reagan and Pete Wilson won the governorship of California. It was rigged through financial, business, and political connections from this controlling group, headed by the Council, right down into various business and political factions, and then on down into the public arena.

They own the press. They own key television stations and famous anchormen. They have key people who own the newspaper companies. They buy magazine companies and own many large corporations that allow them to have leading edge media exposure, thus allowing them to control the information people see on the television news, read in newspapers and magazines, or hear on the radio. They are funded by the richest men and corporations in the world who get what they want, when they want it, by whatever means it takes to do so. They operate above the law, above the federal government.

I witnessed and recorded in my photographic memory many of these encounters as I was bounced around the globe in the company of varied and influential "people in the know."

Rockefeller Connections

Nelson Rockefeller was connected to Bob Hope and many people in positions of power Nixon, Ford, Reagan, and Bush - even before these men were Presidents.

At the Rockefeller mansion, there was a direct phone line to the White House that no one was supposed to know about. It was kept in a side closet behind a mirrored liquor cabinet. Nelson didn't even have to dial; he just picked it up and began talking. I couldn't understand what he was saying, but he often spoke about the Chase Manhattan Bank. There was a clear plastic box on the mouthpiece of this phone. I don't know the purpose for this device.

When I was at the mansion, Nelson called Reagan at times. He never told Reagan I was there. My instructions were to keep quiet.

John D. Rockefeller operated independently from the rest of the Rockefellers. There was animosity between John D. and the rest. They didn't like or trust him, so they kept secret their operations from him. They also didn't trust his political connections.

There was a very ornate, very 'old wealth' hotel in New York where I was set up to meet different people. This time they sent me in to "visit" John D. Rockefeller. The Council wanted to see if they could "win him over," so they could use him. I was preprogrammed in room 222 at the Holiday Inn in California and then sent to target him at that New York hotel. They dressed me in a small short black dress with black nylons, black heels and I carried a small black purse. I knocked at his door and he answered. He was about 5' 11" and on the stocky side with greying hair, nice face and skin. He had on a grey suit and white shirt and his tie was undone. He looked like he had been resting.

He asked me why I was there, and in a very upset voice, I screamed, "Someone's been shot!"
He said, "What!?" I told him again. Then he pulled me into the room and questioned me more. I said everything just like I was programmed to, but he didn't fall for any of it. He said, "I don't know who sent you but I'm not interested," and he showed me the door.
When I arrived back downstairs my contact said, "You're back so soon?" We left quickly through the large brass revolving door out into the cold, to an awaiting limousine.

Supreme Court Justices

Nelson Rockefeller was also the connection to some Supreme Court Justices who were old friends of his. They called him, "Old Rocky." I was sent in on different Supreme Court Justices and I was instructed to make sure neither judge talked about or knew that I was being intimate with the other. The Council knew just the perfect phrases to have me deliver in these situations that would shut the door to these judges ever mentioning our private, intimate experience to anyone, especially their colleagues. All these judges knew each other well. It was like an inside men's club and so the Council would tell me something no one would have known about judge so-and-so, and I would tell the judge I was with about it and that his colleague, judge so-and-so, was extremely sensitive about this subject. This would cause him to not want to have anything to do with the other judge and so it would be in that judge's favor to not ever mention our little affair. For example, they had me say, "I overheard judge so-and-so talking at a party and he was saying how distasteful he found it when men his age were dabbling with younger women. So to protect your relationship with him, it would probably be better for you if you never mentioned this evening with us together. Now I can understand perfectly well, how a man like yourself would desire and benefit from an evening with a young woman like myself. To be perfectly frank, it's very normal and healthy, but certain other old 'stick in the mud' judges just don't see things the same way. I'm sure you understand." And if the judge was convinced, then I had him locked into the secret and if not I

would report back and my controllers would give me another tactic to slip in later, after this one had passed. I was trained to read their body and facial language early on. I was taught not to trust their words as much as their body language.

There were two very old Superior Court judges who I was sent in to seduce and probe for information. These very old men actually believed all the lines I told them about how attractive I found older men, how wise I knew they were and how I really appreciated maturity and experience over the younger men of the day. And I got them tipsy and then asked them questions very innocently, like I was just curious about a certain subject. They usually answered me in strictest confidences to help me understand how things worked. Sometimes their egos would get so inflated from all the flattering I delivered, that they would be flustered and say more than they probably normally should or would have. Even under mind control, it really made me lose my respect for old men - especially Supreme Court Justices, because they had no morals and totally believed and ate up all the lies. The Council sent me into many different areas within the government to "feel things out." I knew that meant to have sex and ask the questions I was directed to ask. They didn't say, "feel things out," if I was only to ask questions or give information.

Alan Greenspan and The Federal Reserve

I was assigned to be with Alan Greenspan. He is currently Chairman of the Federal Reserve Board and controls the nation's economy by intentionally manipulating the Federal Reserve Banks and the Stock Exchange. Through this manipulation Alan is able to skim off monies for use within the shadow government. It is similar to money laundering only this is done at the highest levels, channeling huge amounts of monies into, among other things, classified, hidden government projects.

This agenda is tied into Henry Kissinger and Bob Hope. And is largely directed by the Rockefellers. David in particular was connected to the banking system and financial aspects of the New World Order. George Bush was also connected up very high in this plan.

The Stock Exchange was often nothing but a charade, publicly displaying one facade while privately carrying on a very separate, private agenda. This agenda is aimed at funding many branches of what is to be the new inner structure and workings of the New World Order--the One World Government. The financial infrastructure was put in place and further honed beginning in the 60's and by now it is well-greased and operating at full capacity with the target takeover by the year 2000. By the year 2000 all parties are to be in place, all subsidiaries are to be up and running optimally with direct funding coming from the large New World Order funded and controlled corporations of which there are many and which are multi-layered. There is a whole network of men who manipulate a lot of international business around the world, including the World Banking System. Chase Manhattan Bank was just the tip of a whole network of banks all over the world that were set with a framework to control the world economy and hide illegal funds. These illegal funds are never detected if they are distributed into the internal workings of this banking system. In the early years, I was programmed to make large deposits into banks all over the world. Many mind-controlled slaves were doing that work.

There are programmed people involved in global implementation all the way to the top in order to insure that by this time, through this generation, their plan will not fail. Mind control was and still is their failsafe mechanism intended to alleviate any human weakness or human interference. If the world's computer systems were to shut down, their systems, carefully created within the mind file systems of mind control victims, would continue to operate. Cryptic information passes to people in the know with the "eyes to see and the ears to hear," as I overheard them during Stock Exchange dealings cryptically refer to those involved with New World Order agenda. Those programmed are able to glean plans and agendas as well as command instruction while watching the stock trades on television or by their actual physical presence while there.

When I was sixteen, my future mother-in-law, Sara Ford, got me a job at a stock brokerage firm in Pasadena, called Independent Securities. Most people my age wouldn't have even been hired but I was "lucky" and unlike other new employees, didn't have to start in the mailroom. Instead I started work in the securities exchange room. There were cocktail parties attended by men and women in expensive clothes. There were more men than women and there were times when Mr. Hecht, Sara's boss and president of the company, briefed me on a certain "fellow" who I was to be especially nice to and was to "cater to," in an attempt to sway him to do business with Independent Securities. I was told to act naive, innocent and sweet because some of the "older gentlemen" preferred it that way. So that's what I did. I served drinks at the parties in order to have a substantial reason to interact with these wealthy gentlemen (potential investors).

Parts of me were filled with lots of information on stocks, bonds, annuities, the Federal Reserve and these parts knew exactly how the Federal Reserve manipulated business, corporations, and large investments for their own gain. Funds were amassed through the Federal Reserve for use in anything but what the funds were publicly portrayed as being used in. By the way, nobody audits the Fed, not even the IRS.

I was heavily used for both mind files and sex, but my mind file use during my teens and on into adulthood, always took priority as the Council, Henry, and others sent messages and information back and forth to each other without the risk of being publicly linked. For example, Henry would say when an international crisis would/could be created and what countries were to be involved. Then those players involved would get their monies or exchanges, step up to be in the right position to gain monetarily and then step out. There were lots of corporate men who backed these endeavors with money from their corporations. They fronted the money in exchange for favors from the Federal Reserve or politicians. Their needs were always researched by the Council to determine (before they went to the negotiating table) what would entice them most. The corporate owners were often targeted from many different positions like sending in other successful players who had profited considerably in the past, in order to further influence them to participate. Often at the final time I was sent in (if the corporate head was open to sex with a young woman), I was preprogrammed with line after line that was designed to hit them deep to get them to "our side" or to cooperate with the business venture.

Henry and Alan Greenspan worked hand-in-hand sending endless messages through me to coordinate many of these so-called "business ventures." They uploaded me with information in New York when I was there, usually for other Kissinger or Rockefeller business, or I was instructed via closed circuit television from California. I believe this was around 1967-68. 1 wheeled patients and old people to a closed circuit viewing of a church service on Sundays, at the Hollywood Presbyterian Hospital, where I went with my Sunday school teen class - the same church where there were rituals occasionally. Anyway, my class wheeled people from their rooms to watch a church service, via closed circuit television in the hospital. When the service was over, my friends went to take these patients for a snack and back to their rooms. I sat alone, my attention glued to the front of the close circuit television that sat on top of a metal stand on wheels. I knew from instructions to flip through the channels to 22, then pulled up the antenna and watched and listened carefully to instructions given. There were times when the man on the screen talked while he pointed with a pointer to figures on a chalkboard that I was to retain. Percentages, actuaries and places to go, people to meet, and things to say. I photographed with my mind the names, figures, etc., and listened carefully for dialogue I was to repeat to certain individuals like Reagan or Hope, and later Nixon or corporate heads. When it was over, it just cut off and the television went all fuzzy again but I was always instructed to change it back to a normal numbered station - preferably the one that had been on, so no one would detect. Church activities were used often as a front to get me to places where I was supposed to acquire further information for upcoming events. Then the occasional rituals or traumas at church were performed to keep all this information hidden. Reagan was governor

during this time and I was given information over the closed circuit television to deliver to him. Later on, I delivered the information to him at places like the Motion Picture Hospital, where my mom worked.

The Rockefellers, especially Rocky, used me often during this time, but not without going to Henry first. Henry was still always in charge of me, but let Rockefeller use me to further his own interests. Henry would ask for "updates" on all of these other people's uses of me so he knew what was going on in lots of different circles at once. And, he would use any confidential information he found to further his own interests in business or government dealings. He found out the 'dirt' on others by debriefing me from my use with the Rockefellers or different corporate heads, then he or Bob would take advantage of the information to further their interests. He already had free access to the Federal Reserve information through Alan Greenspan and others, but he could tap into mind file data anytime he wanted or needed. After high school I took bookkeeping classes at the local junior college, alongside my psychology major.

At the base of some of my banking mind files was my bookkeeping coursework at Pierce College to which Henry then attached a framework for his use adding lots of data from classified documents, videos, etc. It was a very sophisticated system that worked on the inside of my mind while I was doing another job and then the completed reports were ready when Henry needed them. Henry sometimes gave those internal systems a day or week to come up with the final data. He often said this was the "brain of the future," making the need for computers obsolete. Henry said that, in the future, man would explore "inner space."

The Council was the glue that held the major corporations together at the very top, the large international corporations. The Council was above Henry Kissinger, their international political mastermind and Alan Greenspan who used the Fed to gain the money to fund and further their plan - to cement and make uniform the world economy for more efficient organization and ease of controlling.

Alan Greenspan had a lot of big business backing, thus furthering their banking deals. They laundered huge sums of money through subsidiary treasury banks so the action would be taking place off to the side in unnamed, unmonitored banks. That way the main Federal Reserve Banks, were kept freer to operate without detection. The plan covered the overall banking system so nothing could be traced. So if there were large sums of money that needed to be washed, they were put through the smaller, subsidiary banks that weren't being monitored, so no one would know. Sometimes these subsidiary banks ended up actually handling much larger sums of money and transactions than the larger Federal Reserve Bank in the same geographic area in order to hide the money laundering schemes. The way the system is set up, all monies from an area are supposed to funnel through the Federal Reserve Bank in that area in order to monitor many different things, so they can keep control of the money in specific geographic areas. With the large, washed funds filtering through the subsidiary banks, the laundering system did well and was never detected through the main Fed, which is highly monitored by Congress. Otherwise the Reserve would come up out of balance every step of the way, since so much money was laundered in certain areas and there was no way to begin to explain the large percentage of imbalance there would have been between even neighboring cities' or state's holdings.

The Federal Reserve had areas like political districts. In some areas, it was essential to have the subsidiary banks 'in place' in order to funnel the funds from covert operations. San Diego was one. Los Angeles was another and Hollywood was also. Wherever clusters of worker bees (mind control operatives) were located, money went into a subsidiary bank of the Federal Reserve to keep the funds continually channeling back to them. This was true in areas of immense illegal profit, like in Vegas, where the whole town was built on graft and everyone inside knew who got paid first so no one got hurt or stepped on.

I was constantly traveling to meet with members who were tied into the subsidiary Federal Reserve Banks. Pete Wilson, who at that time was a San Diego based Senator from California, was one.

These individuals tapped into my mind files for the Federal Reserve information and input banking information - everything from profit/loss standpoints to new account numbers in subsidiary banks that worker bees could be given to use to launder covert monies. Then, I reported it all back to Henry and I even had internal computer analyzers, bookkeepers, data compilers, statisticians, etc., that Henry created inside my mind file system so all the data/input that was delivered to me could be instantly filed, computed and readied for delivery to Henry. I also had a system to maintain the original information from individuals, so Henry could double-check my figures. He ran cross-checks, periodically setting me down and accessing information while he ran tabs on his calculator. This wasn't his job, it was Greenspan's, but Henry always double-checked and cross-checked everything to keep everyone honest and to make sure my systems were properly gathering and compiling, then computing, the information. It was as if I had a whole set of financial workers inside my head that were specially trained to handle all of this, like a computer program. I believe lots of the corporate heads that reported their earnings to me were not aware I was a robot. I even had to write down numbers for some of them, just for show, when they got overly concerned that I wouldn't be able to remember all they had reported to me. So, that observation leads me to believe that they weren't all aware of the mind control enhancements I had in place, guaranteeing I would perform to perfection.

Kissinger and Nelson Rockefeller's Plan

One day, Nelson Rockefeller was leaning over me in the back of the limo talking to Henry as if I didn't exist. They were talking about the advanced research projects on brain studies and they spoke as if they were the only intellectual elite capable of understanding the advanced technology, as compared to the "peons" as they called the uninitiated. They spoke of their elite dream of ridding the world of the non-thinking, the genetically inferior, the deficient people of the world, so they could have sole heir and control over the earth for advanced purposes. They spoke over me, leaning on me and using me as a table or having me hold their drinks, or Henry's cigar, while they conversed about erudite and diverse scientific topics.

There were times when Henry and Rocky planned lots of strategies between the ride in the car from New York to Washington, DC. Henry had a different type of smell - a European aroma and his suits always smelled of him and his cigars. He smoked cigars the whole entire way, at times they were Cuban. Often he blew the smoke right in my face and it was hard to breathe. Sometimes I couldn't tell what world I was in, the real world or the one "over the rainbow." It got extremely confusing at times but Henry told me to rely on those around me to help me know where I was. I was told, "like a pretty ballerina led through the dance steps by the perfect lead man, your partner is always a reliable mirror for you to see yourself in." New York and Washington, DC were my home away from home, but Henry made me keep my eyes closed often while we were in transit and frequently asked me, "Vhere do you think you are?"

I would try to answer, guessing our location and he would intentionally attempt to scramble my reality by telling me, "No, you're now in San Francisco," or some other place we weren't really. In front of me, Henry would tell Rockefeller that we were in Pennsylvania, when we were actually on Pennsylvania Avenue at the White House.

Henry and Rocky often placed me between them in the back seat. The glass partition was closed, shutting out the driver, creating the privacy they needed for their strategic planning. There was a television and a bar inside but they didn't drink alcohol, as they were very intent on what they were planning. Rocky often got all excited in regard to an agenda and he would tell Henry, "Put this message in for her to deliver to Nixon," or whomever the plan was for.

Henry placed the needle in between my knuckles and if I bled, he pulled out one of his fancy handkerchiefs to wipe it off. One time he joked to Rocky, "My vife vonders vhere all the kerchiefs she buys me are." He laughed and said he had to throw a lot of them away because he couldn't explain the blood spots. It was better for both of us when he was able to replace the needle with touch programs.

Rocky always agreed with Henry but Henry didn't always agree with Rocky. So in his coarse, froggy voice Rocky would say, "Okay, advise me." Then Henry would tell him how to correct the plan. Henry was always right with the people he was with. One day they talked about Happy, and Rocky said he was worried about her drinking. He told Henry he didn't know what to do.

Henry said, "You need to get her into a program."

Henry's Love for His Friend Rocky

Henry and Rocky got along extremely well. Henry genuinely laughed when he was with Rockefeller. He seemed to love to be with him. Henry really wanted him to be president and said that then they could have really been a team. Henry said it was fruitless, that Rockefeller would only lose anyway and it wasn't worth risking the whole party's success by running someone who couldn't win. Henry said Rockefeller didn't have enough popular following, despite his name, and that people would hold his wealth against him, since he was already publicly known to be rich. Henry thought it was really smart of Bob to cloak his wealth for as long as he was able to. He explained that most people didn't like their leaders to be rich, he said, "well off would pass, but not rich."

Henry's first thought usually was "How will the masses react to this?" What will their attitudes and impressions be?" He decided what they needed to think and then he went about structuring his eventual desired outcome. "May take awhile, but we've got time. We'll just work on them until we get them the way that we want them. Then they will be happy and we will be happy because we made them that way."

San Francisco

I was only a teenager, and was in San Francisco with my mom and dad and Craig. I was taken from my family and men in suits escorted me through metal gates, almost like a prison, into a big building with cement floors. They took me into a noisy room where a machine was printing sheets of money. There was lots of money! A man who worked there said, "The boss says to inflate it. There's a munitions deal comin' down and we don't want the Fed (reserve) to show a surplus in this area."

One of the men holding my arm said, "Okay," and stepped aside.

I delivered the message, "The dock at 5," and was immediately escorted back out. They took me down a hall and out past a turnstile into a black sedan and put me in the back seat, pushed my head down and we drove away.

There were lots of arms and drug shipments in San Francisco and they raised and lowered the amount of money in the Federal Reserve to hide the activity in the area. They had to inflate it when there was no drug or munitions activity, so when there was, it would be even and steady and won't show the influx of the money into the area. I was taken to many large buildings, with high fences and guards.

On another one of our so-called trips to Frisco, I was taken from the St. Francis Hotel where I was sitting in the restaurant with my parents and Craig. When the men in suits arrived to get me, I had on a yellow dress and went into the bathroom and removed from my large leather purse, a carefully folded, white form-fitting sleeveless shift that my mom had made for me. I had never worn it before. After I changed and put on a small white-veiled pill box hat and fixed my hair, which had been professionally teased and ratted into a flip, I went out from the bathroom where a suited man took my arm and led me

out a back entrance of the hotel. It was cold and foggy, and I had short sleeves and no jacket. I didn't know where Craig or my parents had gone. The man in the suit took me out to a black car and put me inside and told the driver, "Deliver the young lady downtown, like we discussed." I just sat in the back seat and the driver rolled up the window between the seats. Another man stopped the car on the docks and came around, got me out, and replaced my little white hat with a wide brimmed one and told me to go down to a ship, and pointed his finger in its direction. I walked down there and it was still very cold. I stood by a big ship until a man brought me aboard. Then I waited in a room, in "park mode" until a man came up to me and said, "I'm Fred."

I replied, "Pier 69," and he pushed me away. I walked back to the dock where the driver was waiting and he waved me back into the car and took me back to the hotel. I changed back into my yellow dress and went back to meet my mom and dad and Craig in the restaurant. I never got to eat what I ordered.

I returned to San Francisco many times over the years, for different assignments, some including the United States Mint. Henry said there were some jobs that just had to be taken care of from the inside, so he sent me there, often in conjunction with an agenda from Alan Greenspan. One time, I was heavily disguised as a male and armed with false security badges.

At other times, another slave accompanied me and we were both disguised as males.

In the early years of the late 60's before Craig and I were married and then in the early 70's after we were married, we often drove up the California coast to Lake Naciamento with friends or family to waterski during the summer. Craig and I often took side trips where he would take me to San Francisco for the day or to other places in the California Redwoods, where there would be private meetings held and Henry needed me there for mind file usage.

Lee Iacocca

I delivered many names of banks and available subsidiary bank account numbers to many corporate owners, including Lee Iacocca. They continually changed the accounts so they couldn't be traced and sent me all over to sleep with and/or deliver account numbers to corporate heads all over the nation. I was even flown from place to place on corporate Lear jets in order to deliver account numbers comfortably and in an entertaining manner, with security features included, to corporate heads.

Lee had monopolies with other big corporations, international ones, and he also owned parts of major utility companies. I heard him talk on his personal phone often. It was a big deal back in those days for a man to have a portable phone, and he had one he wore under his jacket. I traveled the skies with Lee Iacocca, doing whatever he needed in his private jet. There was lots of room inside, but it wasn't a fancy one at first. I polished his shoes, gave him oral sex, whatever he wanted.

I performed oral sex on Lee Iacocca on his Learjet before giving him the number for the new accounts he needed to use, plus some other information from Henry. I was instructed to offer, "Can I take your glasses, Mr. Iacocca?" And after he was satisfied, I was to smile and say, "I hope you were pleased."

Lee insisted on these information transfers happening in the private confines of his jet for security and I had to wear disguises to board and deboard the jet. I just looked like a maid or at other times a secretary. Never the same disguises, and for Mr. Iacocca I had to even wear some of the tooth disguises while getting on and off the plane. He always had me remove them once we were airborne and then I removed my clothing disguises in exchange for something more comfortable and appropriate for traveling.

Lee Iacocca wore a tie block with a gold chain on it. I sat next to him, put my head on his shoulder and played with his chain before I unzipped his pants and performed oral sex. He was kind enough to hand me a handkerchief to wipe my face afterwards and then he took a quick nap. He said it always cleared his mind to take a quick nap but not a long one because that type made him feel thick-headed.

I usually accompanied him on a business trip he already had planned. There were other stops after him and I seldom flew back with him, but instead connected with another flight or different people that Henry wanted me to see.

If I began to remember the Lee Iacocca information, I was programmed to jump off tall buildings. "You will have the compulsion to jump," they said to me at UCLA, after I'd been drugged and was lying on an exam table listening to my instructions via earphones.

Drug Operations

New York City was a major area of operation and I was taken there often to make drug connections for Nelson Rockefeller and the CIA. I think Rockefeller was manipulated by the CIA. I think they may have blackmailed him for things that they knew about him. I don't know for sure.

In New York, the Times Square Clock Tower was the site of many drug deals with Rockefeller and the CIA working together. On one deal my programming and information was as follows: "Meet me in Times Square. You will be known by your fruits. Go to the fruit stand and buy (always different combinations of fruit) an apple, two pears, a banana and two oranges, then walk over and sit on the bench and set your fruit out next to you on the bench so it can be seen. Give the man who sits down and eats the apple the message. Only give the message if he eats the apple. Give no one else the message." Once the man arrived and ate the apple, the message was to tell the man where to pick up the drugs.

It was dangerous business and they stationed three men on rooftops who were armed with high-powered rifles to protect and watch over the drug deal. They said that I was too important an asset to risk losing. Years before, I had been programmed to say to anyone who attempted to access me without permission, "Hi, stupid. Men who don't value their life mess with me when my owner is not around. But it's the last time they ever do."

Opium, heroin, and cocaine sales went down. All I had to do was to tell them where it was located.

There were also drug deals locally in California. These took place over the years at Disneyland, Busch Gardens, Knott's Berry Farm, World Fairs and other public places. These transactions occurred when I was with other people, like my family or friends, who took me to the location under the guise of 'a day of entertainment.' I was instructed to deliver information to a man who made himself known to me. My controllers told me what type of clothing the man would be wearing and what color hat. When I saw the target that matched the physical description that I was preprogrammed to look for, I excused myself from my friends and family, telling them I had to go to the bathroom. When the target made contact with me, I would ask him a question, like, if he wanted a 'Twinkie.' If he said yes, then I'd deliver the message to him. There was always a precise word combination he would have to say back to me in response to my question. Then and only then would or could I robotically deliver the message.

There were numerous drug and/or munitions transactions that I was used to facilitate that took place all over the world in conjunction with other outings I was taken on.

Reagan was in New York often. It was called a "Double Whammy" when I would sleep with and deliver a message to Reagan, and then deliver the message back to the Council. I usually had sex with

Reagan after the drug deals. I don't think he knew about them. It was a separate deal. But, they combined the two jobs for me into one time frame, for efficiency.

Mondavi Winery

Robert Mondavi had a Lear jet. Craig took me to the Mondavi Cellers in Napa Valley, California in the wine country. There was a man to whom I was programmed to give numbers of accounts that Alan Greenspan had set up for him to launder certain monies through. I never spent the night with Craig during that trip through the wine country, though it was supposed to be our time away together, for just the two of us. All I consciously remembered until later was stopping at winery after winery, yet I usually didn't taste the wine. I slept with Mr. Mondavi; he always wore a suit or very nice casual clothes. He was "dapper," as Bob would say.

Big Sur, California

When Craig and I went to Big Sur for weekends away, we often went to a beautiful restaurant called Napenthe. It was located on a crag overlooking the ocean and at night it took on a magical glow, cast by the many tiny candles lit all over the restaurant. Craig got us a nice table and we sat down and then a switch would occur. When he got up to go to the bathroom, another man came and sat down next to me in Craig's place. I ended up having sex and delivering a message to this man. There were many such occasions where Craig "moved over" and changed places with governors, or presidents, or entertainers - whomever my controllers needed me to be with.

"For there is nothing covered up, that will not be revealed; or hidden that shall not be known. Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness shall be heard in the light; and that which ye have whispered in private rooms shall be proclaimed upon the housetops."
-- Luke 12: 2-3

Chapter Fifteen: Hope and Kissinger Utilize the Kennedy Family

I remember being taken to a place where a huge green lawn defined by a white fence traveled as far as the eye could see. From what I understood, this was the home of the Kennedy family for generations. Joseph and Rose, the older Kennedys lived there. There was a big two-story white house that had a porch on the outside and a big circular driveway in front. This is where the Kennedy family met for family gatherings and annual reunions. Joe and Rose invited the entire family. I was there, dressed as a maid for the day, in a black dress and little white apron. It was my job to deliver the "goodies" on a silver platter. But there were lots of maids on hand for these types of occasions so when I slipped off with one of the Kennedy men, I wasn't missed. I usually started off serving hors d'oeuvres, but when a Kennedy man approached me and gave me the eye, I was instructed to continue holding my tray, so it still looked like I was working as we walked into the house. Then we would go to a back bathroom or bedroom for sex. Later, I would reappear, carrying my tray of food. Then I would mingle and usually would be approached again, so the whole routine started all over again and I would sexually service another of the Kennedy men.

I got started "maidtressing," as Bob jokingly called it, at their parties when I was a young preteen, "going on twenty-five," when I went there the first time. The younger men in the family selected me but it didn't take long for the word to get around and the older men wanted a try. I looked older than twelve.

The programmed personality for these parties felt that JFK taught me a lot. He played with me in a teasing, fun-loving way, so different than Ted who was so violent. After dinner JFK often went into the family television room. He sat on the couch, put his feet up on the coffee table and leaned back to watch television. He liked to have a short afterdinner drink. He didn't care if he was watching alone, he laughed and laughed at the shows he watched. He was an unusually cheerful man most of the time.

When JFK was assassinated, they told me before they did it, and after they had killed him they said to me, "He is the President and we can make him live or make him die and no one would ever miss you should you step out of line. Then we would have to take care of you, like your little boyfriend JFK."

It was sad the year JFK died. Everyone wore black and Rose, sitting in her wheelchair, kept crying. It was a very sad affair. I think the sex was down that year because evidently some of the men were genuinely grieving. Jackie cried a lot at family parties after he died. She had a hard time adjusting at first but the Kennedy family stood by her and helped her. She sat with the ladies and cried, and they listened and supported her.

Ted Kennedy was brutal. He was one of the most violent and meanest men I was with. He liked to have sex with me anywhere and everywhere he could, but he especially liked to have sex in cold climates in rooms with a fireplace. One place had a big rock fireplace and he made a big fire and then wanted to have sex all night. When he neared orgasm he would slap and beat me. He hit me so hard it felt like my head would explode. Then in his proper Kennedy accent, he would call me a "c--t." He liked to tie my arms over my head to the headboard or if there wasn't anything to attach my hands and wrists to, he would tie them tightly together. Lots of times he made me stay tied up for a long time. He liked to hand cuff me also. He was really into bondage and if I ever neared any sexual pleasure he would start hitting and slapping me, and once that began it was like he couldn't stop himself and quickly escalated into extreme violence. He seemed to require that in order to orgasm.

I was flown to him in the New England States. At dusk, we walked outside together in a forest. There was a real chill in the air. He told me to strip and I was forced to take my clothes off outside in the cold. He ordered me to dance around the forest like I was a fairy. Then he laughed like he was drunk or

out of his mind. He had a rifle with him and he shot it into the air and it really scared me. He said he shot the gun just so my nipples would stand up.

There were other times after he finished violently satisfying himself with me that he would break down and cry. He was very disturbed. But the hurting he delivered never stopped. He used me often until I was just over twenty-five.

Bob offered my services to the Kennedys any time they wished. He said they could count on my yearly service at their family get-togethers. Bob told them, "It's so nice to get good help and it's so wonderful when they are versatile!" Then he laughed and pointed to me. So I was sent in year after year.

Over time, I had to have sex with all of the Kennedy men, including little John. He wasn't very old when they first brought him to me. Probably about twelve. They believe in training their males at an early age by expert women so that they will continue the Kennedy power that they felt was derived from sex. In their eyes to have sex was to be powerful.

Rose seemed to be a matriarch. From what I saw, she ran the family. She seemed to influence Joseph's decisions in business and would make it known when the family sat down to eat, usually at very long tables. She gave an update on their lives and then went on to give information on family business investments, trade, etc. Some relatives took notes and must have gone right home and followed through on Rose's suggestions. After she finished she would smile and look around at her family with such love. Then she sat down. Rose had a very commanding presence about her. She had more dignity than I witnessed in the Royal family in England. She just demanded respect and she got it. They seemed to treat her very carefully, not ever wanting to offend her. They had very formal, picture perfect dining tables and dinners, complete with a huge staff of waiters and waitresses. I hardly ever had to work as a waitress because usually one of the men would get a 'headache' or have to 'go to the bathroom' before, during, or after dinner. Instead, I was more often in a side bedroom wearing a skimpy french maid's uniform and sexually satisfying one the of the Kennedy men. I was never instructed to do two at once, though - they politely took turns. As far as I know, Rose never discovered their secret game.

Bob continually offered the Kennedy family clan my services, for free, and kept sending me there. So the Kennedys and Bob always had a good thing going, always scratching each other's back. Bob played golf with one or more of them and took me along to caddy, when they visited him in the Springs. There were times when three other sex slaves and I would have sex with one of them. The Kennedy men can't have too many women. I don't think all of the Kennedys golfed. Ted came along even if he didn't golf. He would get a room on the golf course and perform violent sex on me. Afterwards he would drag me back to Bob, who would be in the middle of his game and Bob would absentmindedly tell him to leave me with him. Bob was so focused on his game he didn't notice if I had blood on my face or body, or if I was a wreck, and I would have to follow Bob on the green and do whatever he asked until we left the golf course. Then he would want me to get down on my knees and give him oral sex in the back of the limo.

The Kennedys usually had their own means of transportation and drove separately. It seemed like it must have been in the family will that they had to drive in their own limos, with their own drivers. But Bob took advantage of us being alone in his limo; he never missed the chance for sex.

My daughter Kelly was prostituted to the younger Kennedy men. They had a lot of boys. The Kennedy boys were taught early how to 'handle' their women. And I was there to teach them about sex and they were learning how to handle a slave. They knew they could have anything they wished from me, and that I was totally subservient. They weren't old enough to be trusted with the full mind-control information. They had to be initiated first into the family secrets.

Kelly and I sometimes worked together at the Kennedy's. Sometimes Ted liked to have the "motherdaughter sex team" that our controllers programmed us to be. Ted always violently hurt us both. He had a son, who liked to pick Kelly for sex. He took her off by the hand when she was still a little girl, and he was much older.

All the Kennedy brothers - JFK, Ted, and Robert - had sons, and there were a lot of other elite families who carried the same sexual beliefs in regard to their men. And Bob gave me to lots of them, as he arranged for them to have me inconspicuously at their parties as a "maidtress."

I overheard Rose talk about the fact that some of the Kennedy money was tied directly into NASA "subprojects" they funded and somehow there was a huge profit from it. That's why there's the Kennedy Space Center. NASA is much more than it seems. Research has included "inner space stations," which was the term I heard used at times in relation to the mind. The Kennedys always wanted to be on the leading edge of technology. "First is best," they said. Rose was a shrewd businesswoman. She delivered the facts while Joe sat beside her. It definitely looked like she wore the pants in the family.

I never did have sex with Joe. He was elderly and mostly sat around and talked. I think he knew about me, though. I could tell by the look in his eyes that he somehow understood, but I believe that his sons kept the truth from him about my being under total mind control. I overheard Ted say to one of his brothers that, "he wouldn't be able to understand the technology." This leads me to believe that Joe was unaware of the mind control technology.

The wives and women in the Kennedy clan seemed oblivious of what was going on. Once they got together and began talking they didn't seem to notice where their husbands, sons, boyfriends, etc. were. The men sent me in to serve them tea when they were all together so the women would see me being busy. But I usually had sex with many of their husbands, sometimes more than once, before the party was over. I served the women tea an inordinate amount of times so they wouldn't suspect that I was doing anything else.

They even brought in other people's sons who were not relatives, but they were somehow connected to the family - maybe through distant marriage or something. They switched me, gave me instructions and then gave me their son. They wanted all these young men to carry on in the Kennedy tradition. If they were not actually close family relatives they would say they wanted them to lend their support always to the Kennedy family. It seemed like a one for all and all for one type situation.

Rose approved of Jackie. She thought Jackie was the greatest and spoke to her often at family gatherings. Joan Kennedy was always jealous of everyone, especially her sisters-in-law. She often drank until she got drunk and obnoxious. "An embarrassment to the family," is what they always said. And Ted treated her awfully.

As Joe got older, he was confined to a wheel chair. The last time I saw him he was tied into his wheelchair and had some sort of IV or oxygen unit with him. Then he died and wasn't there the next time I went. I knew because I was updated, by closed circuit television (room 222), what the family news was so I could have appropriate conversations with the Kennedys. They are connected to the Council and represent them heavily. Joseph Kennedy was big in business and had holdings that were well connected. What I overheard was that when their money was connected, it was protected and thereby guaranteed a place in the power structure. But the money, the big money, had to come before a person was accepted. The theory was that if a person could amass money then it proved they were smart enough, and if they knew how to get it 'connected' then they were pliable enough, and if they followed through on what was asked of them they could become RICH and FAMOUS. Then all that was left to do was to create a media public identity to portray whatever image they wanted projected by the media industries they funded. It was all a big cycle where one fed into another and they all ended up on top.

Bob knew the protocol with the Kennedy family. He was always kind and gracious and giving, and his nasty jokes about the elite were watered down whenever it came to any of the Kennedys because he didn't ever want to be in disfavor with them.

Bob also sent me to different vacation spots around the world, to entertain certain members of the Kennedy family. He never minded paying what he called, "Big bucks," to fly me to someone who could make a difference. Then he would say, "Ah, yes!" and get that little sly smile on his face. He knew that the connections into powerful leaders and influential people would pay off very handsomely. So he didn't mind paying to fly me, and later, me and "my little filly," as he called Kelly, all over the world, sometimes on the Concorde.

"So I declare to you, brothers, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, nor does their perishable inherit the imperishable. Listen, I tell you a mystery: We will not all sleep, but we will all be changed - in a flash, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet."
-- 1 Corinthians 16

Chapter Sixteen: Viva Las Vegas

The Council targeted and used areas like Las Vegas and Tahoe that drew large crowds. They also were aware that when people were drinking alcohol and watching a show, their subconscious minds were even more open to taking in deeply what they were viewing. They knew all about harmonics and they used people who were big stars to deliver their messages. There were times when they didn't have their programmed entertainers in place at shows, so they didn't have an inside connection to the show talent in order to direct them to deliver their messages to the crowd. If this occurred they would send someone to attend the show. Preferably before the show or at intermission, this person would request of the master of ceremonies to ask this entertainer to say some specific words in a certain order, explaining that it would mean so much to a certain special person in the audience, and then they would slip the M.C. a large sum of money. Later on, the celebrity performing the show would deliver the preplanned words that were meant to have an "intended programmed effect" on certain programmed mind-controlled slaves in the audience. If the performer was under mind control he or she would have been preprogrammed to deliver the activating messages during the performance.

Metro Goldwyn Meyer (MGM) Grand was synonymous with the Mob and the Hollywood celebrity connection in Vegas. The hotels were small complex microcosms of an otherwise corrupt group of mobsters owning their share of 'the strip.' The hotels were a way of sorting their interests.

Bob Hope had ties to the MGM Grand and directly to the Mob that owned and ran it. I was used there with many mobsters; wealthy men who were sometimes ruthless but many times seemed to have large emotions and loyalties to certain causes.

Vegas held a lot of memories for me in the late 60's and early 70's, during the peak of my use with Hope, Nixon, Reagan, Kissinger and others. To insure their secrecy, I was taken to Vegas for "reconditioning" every so often. These times included trauma to keep the experiences sequestered from my conscious mind. After my children were born, they tied the memory of the trauma to threats used to remind me of the safety or lack of it for my children in order to keep their secrets really safe. These mob guys (Sicilian mostly) had lots of money and power in their own respective territory. That was as far as their power went, so they created a network amongst each other to insure their power in many places. They formed links to government 'political' figures in an effort to insure that they didn't lose their precious 'holdings' in areas that counted. Drugs, porn, baby sales, prostitution--they made their money wherever they could in order to keep their holdings.

After I sexually serviced Bob Hope in Vegas, I would often be visited by one of his mob buddies who would "give me the treatment." That meant drug me, isolate me, and rape me whatever trauma it took to keep my programming intact for use with Bob, the "Prez" and others. They were brutal, and knew just how to terrorize me but not physically damage me too much just inflict a lot of pain. The Mob was very connected to Bob and various government operations, and had their own pecking order that needed to be followed to insure that a person stayed alive. The Council was above the Mob, above the government, and literally coordinated how things went down with the Mob; and ultimately was instrumental in taking away much of their power and then redistributing it as needed.

During the trauma the mobsters sometimes called me "deafling," and told me the walls in Vegas had eyes and ears and could watch and hear me at all times, and that there were powerful men there who could see me all the time.

Frank Sinatra

Bob gave me to "Uncle Frankie" one night after Frank Sinatra did a show in Vegas. Frank liked to use whips and chains and those very scary leather straps with me. He liked to orgasm while I was lying there on my back with him on top, while he continually tightened the leather strap around my neck until I was nearly dead - at that point he could orgasm. I had sex with him often and did the things he told me to do. One time he told me to go over to the man wearing the diamond stickpin and give him a message, "I love you..." I wasn't able to retrieve all of this memory because it turned into carousel rides, whirling, spinning, like a top, so I couldn't think to remember. This programming is called spin programming and is intended to disorient and confuse. The whirling feeling I felt in my brain was often combined with hearing a popular song playing in my head, as the lyrics reminded me, "I'm so dizzy my head is spinning."

The whole Las Vegas scene was always an extremely painful nightmare for me. I was subjected to lots of violence there from Frank Sinatra, "to keep all the little secrets quiet," he said. He was brutal to me. He tied me up, down, tied my wrists together, slapped me over and over, used bright lights, raped me and strapped me with a leather belt. Vegas was never fun. Porn was also filmed there and I was prostituted to high government officials and friends of Bob. Uncle Frank took care of the "security" so I didn't ever step out of line. The consequences were disastrous every time I stepped out of line. There was a number system that measured things I did wrong - if I disobeyed in any way, I was marked down a certain number of points. Only I didn't ever know what the number system was or how it worked. So I never knew if I'd reached the point where I had to be "taken care of." It was very scary and I was always confused and couldn't think because I didn't know, couldn't remember, what it was that was bad to do. So I was afraid everything I was doing could cause some point to be added or taken away. They kept score for years and the stakes went up after I had the kids. Then they threatened to hurt them or when the kids were older they put me in front of all three of my children, and got very close to killing me, in order to traumatize all of us, so we wouldn't remember. In later years my little daughter, Kelly was often prostituted to many famous and sexually perverted men, including pedophiles like George Bush, Mickey Rooney and others.

Uncle Frank was younger than Bob, and Bob said Frank could run faster to catch me if the need ever arose. Uncle Frank was the single worst heavy with me - except for Ted Kennedy, Francois Mitterand, and my own father. Frank was very scary and I reported to him directly in Vegas. I met with him upstairs and listened and followed his every direction. I went into a hypnotic trance and listened carefully, and then he would snap his fingers to switch me into another personality, and later on I would do everything as he commanded.

"Uncle Frank" told me who to sit by at the baccarat, black jack or crap tables. He told me what to say to certain men, where and how to have sex with them and gave me a key to the rooms to take them to. These men had two hours of sheer luxury and sex, and sometimes it ended with me soaping them down and redressing them. Sex, whipped cream, chocolate sauce, whatever they wanted for added pleasure. Whips and chains and leather straps, that Uncle Frank often used to nearly strangle me, were provided to these men.

Frank was very private about his private life - to the point of violence if anyone ever asked him anything. Bob had to remind Frank that I was of small stature and told him he didn't want him to "break anything" on me. Frank could get very carried away. Once, he grabbed my hair and kept pushing my head into a full tub of water until I couldn't breathe and was gagging, choking and grasping for air. Uncle Frank was the one who made me really sick in Vegas. He nearly killed me and knew all kinds of ways to torture a person. I saw him break a guy's arm on the corner of a desk, very easily, like it was a pretzel. The guy fainted. He loved to do stuff like that to people. But I did the men Uncle Frank told me to, and did the best job I possibly could, or there would be retaliation. If I didn't perform to their standards I got hurt very badly. Uncle Frank would throw me up against walls and when my body hit, I felt like I was broken. "Body slams," he called them, and I got a lot of those. He nearly killed me after I was with some

darkskinned, foreign leader dressed in a white robe with a white turban on. This man was brutal also. Frank shaved my pubic hair for this man. That was also scary. Frank told Bob he wanted to do it himself, so he took me into the bathroom in the hotel and took one of those big electric shavers and made me lie down on the floor and spread my legs so he could shave me. He pinched and nicked me with that razor, and just laughed when I jumped from the pain. Tears were running uncontrollably down my face, I wasn't allowed to cry but somehow, sometimes I just couldn't help it. One of the personalities that dealt with Uncle Frank was tied directly into a system of reporting personalities, led by 'Sandy,' my main reporting personality. These personalities reported everything that happened, out of trauma-conditioning, training and terror, with no ability to lie or protect themselves.

Often I was given instruction by a group of men in a darkened, smoke-filled room in Vegas. The man in charge of the security area I entered, knew me, and always waved me through. These men seemed to operate above the law, above the rules, and had connections inside lots of casinos. The messages I delivered were gambling tips, information about drug and guns deals, and other illegal and hidden agendas. "Number 9 on the line," was a code I was given and was sent in on many different men with a pre-programmed agenda. I was told a man's physical description and where he would be at a precise time. I met him and delivered the messages I was told to relay. If the man wanted more, I was instructed to "follow through," if they wanted sex. At times, though, I was told to "give them the slip," if my controllers didn't want me to have sex with them.

These top men all knew to watch out for me and someone was always "keeping an eye" on what I was doing. My father or mother just disappeared, as usual; I don't know where they went or what they were doing while I was working for my controllers in Vegas. My father had connections to these men, but they tried not to be seen together. They exhibited secret hand signals to each other from a distance. I watched as my father performed these signals, and in Vegas he always wore his diamond pinky ring. He raised his hands, crossed his arms and displayed his first two fingers. Then he shook his arms down once. A man watching him mirrored the same motion back to him then scratched his nose, after which they immediately turned away from each other. My father took me up to our hotel room where he escorted me around the room and "cued" me to certain things in the room. I was given suggestions that whenever I touched the gold fixtures in the bathroom I would forever forget what I'd been involved in. While holding my right shoulder with his hand, my father gave me the suggestion, "you will open the door, normally, and naturally, wide awake and ready for work, whenever I knock twice." He knocked twice on the door to demonstrate. He cued me to the telephone, either instructing me to answer it or later on when I was married to let Craig answer. At times my father would bring clothing, jewelry, or props for assignments. In a total trance state, I listened intently while he filled my head with instructions - times to report to different room numbers, who to look for and the message to deliver. My father would "snap me out of it," by snapping his fingers. There were times he slapped me to access different personalities.

Sometimes they had me so booked with men for sex that they had to program me to go to the bathroom in between men; I was so robotical I wouldn't remember to go to the bathroom or even be able to feel that I had to. I was just one big act, as I went from room to room with sometimes as many as four men a night. Each man had to have at least two hours. Bob said that was minimum time to have to wind up and then have to wind down (he pretended he was screwing something tightly and then he changed directions and started humping). I looped all around the hotels, from room to room, having sex with men. I was instructed to start at 8 p.m. and then did another man at 10, and one at 12, and the last at 2. At 4 a.m. I was finished. It was a nightmarish swirl of endless men. I performed the sex acts, was electroshocked in between and then switched personalities and went on. They were Bob's friends, Uncle Frank's friends, mob connections, entertainers and politicians. They had lots of friends between the two of them. They nearly owned Congress.

Uncle Frank reminded me I'd be meeting St. Peter if I didn't cooperate and toe the line. He told me about St. Peter at the Pearly Gates and explained why I would be there - which was because he needed to kill me because I stepped out of line. This was in the late 60's and early 70's, before my kids were born. Once they were born these men used threats related to my kids to terrorize me. Bob would throw his arm around Uncle Frank's neck, wink at him and say, "Take care of her Frank." That's when I knew I had gotten out of line again and was terrified, waiting in anxious anticipation for my punishment. Frank slapped me over and over, sometimes until my cheeks were stinging and burning like they were on fire. Then he would throw his head back and laugh. He was obviously very sadistic.

Sometimes Bob would fly in just to have a quick meeting with Frank. Sometimes I flew with him for a quickie.

Brutal pornography was filmed at the Landmark Hotel in Vegas during my late teens and early 20's (196874). They used costumes and sex toys, and had themes for the porn that was often violent. At times people were killed in the porn. They didn't kill me because I was a programmed asset and they had far-reaching plans for me.

Uncle Frank could have had me killed if he wanted to. He had friends who killed people quickly and neatly. He showed me what his friends could do and I was forced to watch as they tortured and killed people. Then I knew I could be snuffed at any moment and that everyone, including Bob, knew what I was doing. I couldn't comprehend that there wasn't any mysterious, miraculous reason why they knew exactly where I was; in essence, they knew because they had sent me there! In my programmed reality I believed that my controllers magically knew everything I did.

Uncle Frank played the following song for me to listen to, the words of which I will write as well as my memory serves me:

"Anybody here seen my ole' friend John? Can you tell me where he's gone?
You meet a lot of people but it seems the good they die young,
you just look around and they're gone.

Anybody here seen my ole' friend Martin? Can you tell me where he's gone?
You meet a lot of people but it seems the good they die young,
you just look around and they're gone.

Anybody here seen my ole 'friend Bobby? Can you tell me where he's gone?
You meet a lot of people but it seems the good they die young,
you just look around and they're gone."

While I listened, strapped to a chair, Uncle Frank sat and tapped his foot and when the song was finished he asked me, "You got that?" Then he slapped me over and over. He said the Kennedy brothers got what they deserved for being stupid and stepping out of line. He said, "At anytime you could be next if you get stupid on me." I still feel like crying when I hear that song.

Tahoe was connected to the Mob also and many entertainers performing in Vegas and Tahoe/Reno were used by the Mob. I believe Helen Reddy and Karen Carpenter may have been manipulated also. I was programmed to some of Karen Carpenter's songs and felt very sad when she died, like I knew her. I believe she was also under mind control. Bob supplied the Mob with illegal business and access to his political connections, and they supplied him with protection and connections all over the world. They were networked up, and inter-linked all over the place. There were certain favorites in Vegas that Bob shared me with.

Jimmy the Greek was a very scary mobster to me. He would threaten to kill me if I even looked the wrong way. He constantly changed his mind about what he wanted and it was hard to please him or to get what he instructed right. He would tell me to do something and then he would change his mind, but forget to tell me. He slapped me to the ground for not doing what I was told. He set up connections in Las Vegas and was in charge of sending me out to targeted individuals, but he always "wanted a little," before he sent me to have sex with someone else. I remember his visual image in my mind as a dark-complexioned mobster, and he spoke in that 'kind of mob accent' - broken and slangish English. He spoke in different sing-songy "lines" and I didn't always know what they meant. He gave me a message for Bob and included some phrase about a "donkey's tail" or "elephant's ears" and, at that time, I didn't know what the message meant. Now that I am free of mind control, of course I can tell what the nature of the messages were that were being sent through me, and this one obviously was referring to the political parties. He wore a diamond pinky ring on his left hand. I think wearing diamond pinky rings on their left had meant something, because my father also wore his diamond pinky ring whenever he took me to Vegas.

Jimmy the Greek directed me often in Vegas and set me up with people I was to be prostituted to. Of course, the Council had previously pre-programmed me for use with the people Jimmy the Greek put me with. I don't know how they all knew whom I was going to be with, but Bob Hope, Henry Kissinger and the Council always decided ahead of time. Maybe Jimmy was working for them in Vegas.

During the late 60's and 70's, lots of big names were in Vegas and I was prostituted to them at night. Elvis, Sammy Davis, Jr., Ed McMahon, Johnny Carson, Jimmy Dean, and others. My father took me to Vegas until I was over twenty-one years old, after that, my husband and I went without my parents. Craig would take me up to the room after a dinner show and tell me he would be back later, that he was going down to gamble. I often begged my husband not to leave me, but he acted like I was overreacting and would leave me anyway. Soon after he left, the men in suits would come and get me, and I would be taken to perform for our controllers.

More About Elvis ...He Was Also A Robot

The Mob and others had hold of Elvis Presley. Uncle Frank sent me in on Elvis to perform "favors." I was instructed to have sex with him and tell him things that they wanted him to know or say in a show or a song, or to do. If he didn't do as they said, they threatened or tortured him or "his ole lady," as he called her. I didn't know who she was, couldn't think to. They ruled Elvis and sent me in before his shows to instruct him what to say or do during his next performance. He was usually so out of it on drugs that he couldn't "do the sex thing," he'd say, so I would tell him what to say or whatever the message was to deliver to the audience. After that, Elvis would pass out on the bed, perspiring. He was handsome, even when he was like that, until he started gaining all the weight. Then he looked very pathetic.

I was used with Elvis until he died. The last time they sent me in to be with him he was nearly unconscious. I don't know what they did to him but they used him up and then felt afraid he would "crack" and spill what he knew so they kept him drugged until they couldn't safely use him anymore and then he "died." Of course it wasn't an accident or a natural death, he had a lot of help from his controllers.

Elvis was targeted heavily by these men. When I was given messages to deliver to Elvis or others, they would inject my arm with some drug and then unless I had been pre-programmed, they quickly whispered the message into my mind files and sent me off to deliver them to Elvis. Then Elvis would use the phrases he was told as he introduced his songs or in the early days they might have become a part of new song lyrics. Just a single key phrase was enough to keep the programmed individuals, who later heard the introduction or song, under control. Then, many slaves were "drawn to him," or they did things as a result of the effects of the harmonics in his voice, in his music, and in the orchestration. But

at concerts the messages were often delivered directly through words he would use to introduce his songs. He was no different than Michael Jackson, who replaced him in many ways. In my opinion, both were controlled.

My controllers often gave me the key to his suite and sent me there late at night with a message to deliver after sex with 'The King.' In the beginning, when I was 18, 19, and 20, he was more receptive and we had sex, usually with me on top most of the time and then I would whisper the message in his ear. Sometimes the messages to him were in the form of words from his own songs, but all the words weren't there and it would take on a different meaning. Like, "Wise men say, only fools rush in," and then there would be words, numbers, or codes that I delivered that I didn't even understand. He was told certain 'lines' to say in between certain songs and I feel he may have been keeping many women 'in line' and programmed by these phrases. When he slipped the messages in between songs, as pre-instructed, the messages went deeply into the subconscious minds of the audience, especially to those individuals who were programmed to react to universal words that are common to virtually all high-level, programmed individuals. They are simple words that when put into a certain sequence have a great impact on people who have been pre-conditioned with programming.

In his later years, when I was in my early twenties, Elvis became more and more 'out of it' when I went into his suite. He was always alone when I got there, which surprised me. He was usually already in bed asleep and I'd be given the key to go in and he wouldn't even sit up or act surprised that I was there. He was totally out of it from his addictions to drugs and alcohol. Elvis had tons of pill bottles on the nightstand, and groggily said he needed them all. Sometimes he was even listless and couldn't have an erection; any attempt at sex was futile. So I couldn't always do my job as instructed, but would give him the verbal messages and then slipped out, always "leaving the key behind with the memories," as my programming dictated.

From my experience I believe Elvis was a puppet, a pawn, and in the end, totally directed and, finally, used up by these men in control of him.

It was my experience that the images he portrayed on stage were nothing like how he was in private. To demonstrate this, I'll share what I remembered; but, before I do, I will tell you that retrieving these memories was very sensorially uncomfortable, due to the completeness of the olfactory portion of the memory. You'll understand as you read further.

It was late at night when I entered Elvis's room. He was lying in bed, still adorned with the gold jewelry and white suit he wore in concert. I watched as he finished his room service dinner and then I waited while he threw up in the bathroom. He was very mad at himself because he was so fat and he said he had to lose weight for the shows. I guess he made himself throw up. All I really know is that I overheard him throwing up in the bathroom and when he came back to the bed, he smelled like vomit. It wasn't long before he jumped up again and I followed him as he went back into the bathroom. He cried as he stood in front of the mirror, and hitting the counter with both hands he screamed, "I hate my life! Everything's out of control and now you want me to f--k you and I can't! I'm ruined! I'm a failure!"

I put my hand on his back in support and then on the back of his neck. As he felt my touch, his head hung down even further over the sink and he cried, "God, I'm a mess. I don't know what happened, just all of a sudden, I'm destroyed." Then he screamed, "What is wrong? What is wrong with me!" and he started pulling his hair. I pulled him up. When he turned around I hugged him and he just kept crying and crying and almost collapsed in my arms. I guided him back to bed and helped him lay down. He was sideways on the bed but I couldn't get him straightened out so as programmed, I lay next to him and rubbed his chest. His shirt was opened and his very hairy chest turned me on, but he was passed out. His mouth was open and he was breathing but he was totally out of it. I covered him with the bedspread and tiptoed out of the room.

My father was standing outside, just down the hallway. He was wearing a beige suit and when he snapped his fingers, with the hand wearing the diamond pinky ring, I listened intently to all the directions he commanded and he told me to follow him. He guided me downstairs to my room with Craig, unlocked and opened the door and waited for me to get inside before he hit me high in my back with a stun gun. I collapsed to the floor and he pulled the door shut. He almost slammed me in the door. I just lay there awhile and then when, "I came around" (that's what they called it), I crawled to the bathroom and managed to get into the bathtub. The soothing water revived me but I felt very sick, drugged and out of it. I had trouble keeping my eyes open but managed to get out of the tub, dry and put on a white nightie to wear to bed. Slowly and wobbly, I shakily made my way to the bed and got in next to Craig. I felt very sick for the next two days and had trouble eating. I felt exhausted and very nauseated, but had no way to access my own brain in order to know why.

After awhile Elvis couldn't function any longer. Henry and his buddies laughed and said that Elvis was like the tin man, all rusted up and ready for the junkyard. They waited for him to become seriously dysfunctional from the increasing amount of drugs prescribed by his doctors. Then they "stopped his ticker for him so he didn't have to suffer no more." I think Frank and his friends were in on the "do in."

Playing Goldilocks and The Three Bears

Bob called it "Playing Goldilocks and the Three Bears." And he had me play that game with him and his friends in Vegas and other places. Some nights in Vegas, I'd play Goldilocks looking for a good bed with Dean Martin, Gene Kelly, Mickey Rooney (until Kelly was born). Mickey Rooney is, among other things, a pedophile and was afraid of publicly being caught with a child but he felt safe having a slave child. He thought he wouldn't be caught.

Gene Kelly liked to do the ole' soft-shoe for me. He always smelled of a different sort of weird cologne like Au de Bamboo. It was spicy and he'd wear a silk robe and dance around like he was in some musical play, before he sat down on the edge of the bed for me to attend to him. I took off his robe, kneeled down and gave him oral sex while he was sitting up. Half way through I gently pushed him back on the bed with the instructions to, "lay back so you can totally relax and enjoy. That's what my command is for you." And as he came in my mouth, I ate it like it was frosting, as my programming dictated, "good to the last drop," and finally I looked deeply in his eyes and said, "You were delicious."

Nearly asleep he said, "Thank you, please let yourself out." So I did. But I didn't know where to go so I just sat down on the top of the large staircase leading downstairs.

My mom came to get me. She walked up the stairs dressed in a light brown fur jacket and a beige brown knit dress with sandled high heels and took me by the hand and led me downstairs. When I was really out of it she led me almost like I was blind. I can remember hearing her charm bracelet jingling. She often put my left arm under hers and "walked me places." One night Frank Sinatra intercepted her in an elevator while she was walking me back to the room, and roughed her up in front of me, to show us both who was in charge. Due to mind control, my mother still doesn't remember this or any other of the traumatic experiences that were done to her in order to keep us all under control.

More About the Mob

Some of the same factions of the Mob that were connected to the Kennedy’s were also connected to President Nixon, Reagan and other presidents. Obviously this faction had become connected to national politics long before I came onto the scene and was already in tight, running a lot of business through the government and taking full advantage of political knowledge, insight, and position. I know because I ran messages from the Mob to U. S. presidents and back again for years.

Key Biscayne was another location where I was connected to the Mob and was told that there was no getting out - or so they said. There was some guy they called "Freddie" and other mobsters who were politically connected. BeBe Rebozo was connected to the Mob and to Nixon and he was public but not as mob-connected as the inner Mob. It was almost like BeBe was an ambassador to the Mob.

The mob guys scared me because for the most part they got what they wanted, any way they wanted and, often, that meant hurting me for information. One time they pinched my fingers to the point of almost smashing them. I didn't nor couldn't respond and so they kept increasing the torture. There were times when they nearly killed me trying to gain information I carried. Usually they lacked the technical knowledge of my codes, keys and triggers and didn't possess the technological sophistication to understand my programming. So, they couldn't get as much out of me as others who knew that I was a robot and could access me in that way.

One time when the Mob was interrogating me they tied me to a chair and one guy slapped me while another guy in a leather jacket asked me questions. I overheard him say, "These bastards are selling their own women. How low can you stoop?" It was incidents like these which told me that at least someone, even if it was the Mob, had some sort of humanity left within its membership.

One time, mob guys put a needle into my eye to try to get me to talk, but it didn't help. The needle must have hit a nerve and my whole body jolted back. They couldn't understand how a woman could endure so much torture and they began to 'respect' me. They just didn't understand that I wasn't really brave, I just couldn't respond due to years of conditioning and sophisticated programming that rendered me completely dissociative and not in control of myself. By the time they figured this out they had already tortured me half to death. I was a total robot, programmed not to respond to pain or torture, and there were many mob-connected meetings in which I was involved in Vegas, Tahoe, Reno, Key Biscayne and other places. By the time they understood more about how to get information from me, my access routes or codes ended up getting passed around. My husband just stepped aside and let them have me, as he was programmed to do. There was never anyone to protect me. The Mob involvement began in my early teens and continued for years.

Sometimes when they would get me into a room in Vegas they would accuse me of "carrying a wire" but I wasn't. They would strip me to check and some goon would end up raping me. They didn't understand yet the level of sophisticated programming that allowed me to record everything I was hearing, via mind files and photographic memory. Later, my programmers would instill messages that were to "kick in" when I was accessed by the Mob. Then, upon my return, I was activated to deliver a message to them and they acted shocked when I would deliver the message. The Mob often thought I was trying to get to some of the rich tycoons that sat at the Baccarat tables. I was usually sent to target someone there but they didn't know who or why. They never seemed to know that I wasn't ever operating from my own agenda. What they had to offer the group I was working for was minimal. The Council was going for higher stakes and most of the time, they saw these mobsters as worker-bees. But they all had their places in the pecking order. Over the years I was known in Vegas by the Mob there. Some mobsters were connected to Bob Hope in Palm Springs and others to Dean Martin and Frank Sinatra.

I used to be afraid that they would kill my children or me, but it will never stop me from doing what I know is right, now that I'm no longer under mind control. Somehow or other they knew everybody and controlled factions of business, politics, and people. Mickey Levinson, said I was "family" now, after my brother Rick and his first wife Leslie (Mickey's niece) were married.

"To be afraid is to have more faith in evil than in God." -- Emmet Fox

Chapter Seventeen: The Rat Pack

"Birds of a feather, flock together..."

I was programmed to stay thin, tan, and silly, and to act like a stereotypical dumb blonde. One warm and beautiful Southern California summer day, I brushed the Malibu Beach sand from my bikini and feet, and jumped into my car to head down Pacific Coast Highway to my next assignment. Clad only in my bikini, a short white lace cover-up and sandals, I headed into the Malibu Courthouse. The woman at the desk waved me through to the judge's private quarters.

Without hesitation, I entered the judge's office and climbed into Judge Merrick's lap - sand, suntan lotion, and all. He laughed, sat back, and enjoyed the attention as I precociously performed my sexual acts on him. I satisfied him sexually and left as quickly as I had arrived. Bob had a joke for me to say to judges as a means for variety of orgasmic experiences. When a judge was orgasming he pre-programmed me to say, "Here come the judge, here come the judge," like they said on Laugh-In, the popular television show of the time.

Bob also had me instilled with top tunes, like a jukebox. I had a personality system that delivered impromptu verses from songs at the perfect time so that they would cleverly fit into a social situation. I had personalities that could sing the songs very closely to the way the original artists sang them. I knew the words perfectly and sang with similar inflections and tones as the singers. Lots of people thought I was very adroit when I cleverly popped a song into a conversation, but I was really programmed to do that.

Bob sent me to have sex with Casey Kasem, the KRLA Disc Jockey. Then the next day, I had to listen to his station all day long because he gave histories and stories about the singers of the current popular songs just before he played their records. Bob said I had to listen the whole day because it was important to "keep my lid on tight." Bob told me to think of myself as a trash can and that no matter what, he would always be there to hold the lid on. He used this trash can memory-stuffer and scrambler idea on me for a long time. My oldest brother, Jim, undoubtedly under his own programming, was used to help keep me in line by having me watch Sesame Street. I was told to sit down in front of the television and watch with his children and if my eyes moved away from the screen my brother would rap my knuckles. Watching the Cookie Monster trash can character in the show 're-minded' me to 'keep the lid on.'

During this time in my life, I was finishing up high school, and although my parents and school counselors reminded me that I wasn't college material, I was looking forward to attending junior college at Pierce College in Woodland Hills. Craig and I had been going steady since we were thirteen years old and except for a brief break-up in high school, I did not date any other boys. Craig prepared to go to the University of Colorado. I was completely unaware that secretly laced into my life was a whole array of discreetly hidden sexual rendezvous with men in powerful, yet diversified, positions.

I was filmed pornographically in many locations, including Woodland Hills, Hollywood, Malibu, Bel Aire, Studio City, other areas in the San Fernando Valley, and varied locations all over California. I also worked for a short time for Harold Anderson Construction Company in Bel Aire, but don't remember exactly what I did to work for him. I do remember lots of pornography being filmed at this stage of my life and the level of pornographic filming was more professional. There were themes, costumes, music, professional make-up, special props and lighting. Personalities inside of me were taught how to work with the lighting to catch the best poses, and to move my body so the filming crew could get the best shots. Upon completion of the filming, I went home to my mother and father in

Woodland Hills and later might even go on a date with Craig, fully believing that I was an innocent, loyal and loving girlfriend. Due to the mind control I was under, I had no way of knowing that I was leading anything other than a normal life, as a normal teenager, in a normal family, in Woodland Hills.

The extensive contact I had with Bob Hope as a teenager and during my early 20's showed me that Bob was much more than an entertainer. Entertainment was actually just a clever hobby of his. I witnessed his participation as a strategically placed, influential, and integral part of an underworld group that secretly sought to control the world. He had direct ties to the White House, but not direct phone lines like Nelson Rockefeller had. Through my affiliation with Bob Hope, I was to meet and interact with many powerful businessmen, politicians, and celebrities.

I was flown into a small airport in Palm Springs to be with Bob and his cronies. I was picked up by a silver limo and taken to his house. The men in suits met me and took me to Bob, wherever he was - at home, on the golf course, or in town. Before I was delivered to Bob, they gave me clothes, shoes, and jewelry to adorn myself.

If Bob was in a meeting or at the club with 'the guys,' he would motion me over towards him and say, "Let me have a look at you honey." He often raised his eyebrows as if to say I met with his approval and/or was sexy enough for him, and then he would pull me to him and sit me on his lap. He wanted to show his buddies that he had what he called "a sweet young thing." Depending on which crowd we were with, he would introduce me as his niece, his budding starlet prodigy, or his "sweet young thing." Bob very often introduced me as his "favorite niece, Sharon Weatherby." I guess he left people to their own conclusions. But he never did refer to me by my own name - NEVER!

I often accompanied Bob to the golf course in Palm Springs. One day he was dressed casually, in light blue slacks, pastel yellow shirt, white belt and white golf shoes. There were several other men golfing with him. I was there just to serve Bob. I was seventeen or eighteen, thin, tan, blonde and dressed in a tiny white dress with spaghetti straps. I wore white sandals that came up from my toe and met at a strap around my ankle, with a gold heart anklet on my left ankle. Bob or the men in suits always gave me everything to wear. I was not invited to play the golf game, but was instructed to watch and SMILE! This particular day Bob sang to me, as he did at other times when he was feeling jovial in spirit, "Button up your overcoat, take good care of yourself you belong to me." He sang and joked with me often like I was able to really react and respond to him. As a programmed slave, I was merely compliant and smiled all the time.

After the golf game, we all went to the clubhouse and had dinner. A lady approached with a camera, attempting to photograph Bob. The men in suits denied her access. People often tried to take pictures but he directed someone to get the camera and remove the film. He commented on how rude people were to interrupt or to invade his privacy like that. There usually were not many (if any) people in places we frequented, unless it was for a show and then he had bodyguards to protect him.

At this dinner, when his male group hit upon a "sensitive" subject, Bob asked me to go powder my nose for awhile and handed me some money. I knew that meant to be gone for a long while. After what seemed like "a long while" had passed, I kept checking back to see if it was time for him to motion me back, as was his custom. Finally, he waved me over to join them and pulled me onto his lap.

Sometimes Bob met with men I recognized as Secret Service agents from seeing them previously with Richard Nixon or Ronald Reagan. After these "meetings" we would often go by limo to a hotel or to his home when no one was there. Most of the time his wife, Dolores, was not at home.

Bob and Dolores

On other occasions when we were with people and he wanted me to leave, Bob would pat my bottom and say good-bye with a smile. Then the men in suits would step in and get me. Usually I was taken back to his house to get ready for an evening event. Bob enjoyed having people around. He had parties attended by lots of famous people. Sometimes I was given as a gift to one or more of his friends for the night, but was programmed to return to his room to sleep. Unless Dolores was home. Dolores was not there often, but when she was, I was usually flown home early.

It was strange the few times I did see Dolores at a party, knowing that I was having sex with Bob and had accompanied him to different places with his friends and business associates. I couldn't think to question what Dolores thought her husband did!

Bob introduced me to many of his "famous" friends. At gatherings, with one arm around me he would elbow the guys and say, "Why would I want to be with an ole' bag like Dolores, when I can have this?" And his friends would laugh and nod in agreement.

Although my programming kept these activities hidden from my conscious mind, later I would wake up late in the mornings in my own bed in Woodland Hills, with burning, red eyes, feeling totally exhausted, after what I thought was a full night's sleep. I was not able to understand that the exhaustion was actually caused by food, water, and sleep deprivation, coupled with drugs and electroshock for programming purposes.

Bob had lots of security at his home in Palm Springs. The lights on the outside of his house came on at night automatically when a car approached. He also had numerous security alarms and systems in the house even a television monitor like Reagan had at his ranch. When I arrived, he would sit me on the bed and he would sit in the chair and say, "Okay, let me hear it." And I'd rattle off what Henry Kissinger told me to tell him.

Bob didn't have all the sophisticated numerical codes to my mind files that Henry did. Henry wanted it that way. I overheard Henry speak out loud to himself in front of me, saying, "I want you to be security safe." Henry put into my system of reporting personalities instructions to tell him if Bob tried anything out of line. I was instructed to report to Henry if Bob tried to access information he wasn't involved in and wasn't suppose to be privy to. Henry said, "It's none of his business."

Dolores Hope was elderly when Bob was fooling around with me; so was he, since he was nearly fifty years my senior. She did not like it when I was around and, unfortunately, Bob didn't have much of an excuse for my presence, unlike Reagan. Reagan could say I was his secretary or aide, but Bob told his wife he was spending lots of time with me to "groom me" for the shows for the boys.

I can remember hearing Dolores nagging at him while I was still there one morning after a party in Palm Springs. He lied and told her I was there with some other man at the party. Not that I did not have sex frequently with many of his friends and business associates, but this time I had not. When Dolores confronted him on these issues, Bob would stand behind her, and like a child, made faces insinuating she was going on and on and on and he was bored to tears. He heard her out, mimicking her behind her back, and then we would leave for the golf course together. But, to her face, he always played it cool, acted lovey, and sent her off shopping or vacationing. Bob called Dolores "dear" a lot. He would tell her he had to introduce me to some of his business associates so I would get to know the ropes. It was all a front, just a cover to use me for sex. Although I did meet a lot of businessmen and friends of Bob's and I did go with him, at times, to rehearse for the shows and do the voice-over tapes for some of the tours, most of it was for his sexual pleasure and to show his old friends that he could still get "the young stuff."

I certainly was never there by choice. I was a complete slave, under total mind control, with no ability to choose consciously for myself what or where I wanted to be, or even to know who I really was! I

did not consciously know that I was being used in these ways. I simply thought that I was a normal student and I continued to carry the belief to my marriage bed that I was a virgin.

At times, the entertainer, Phyllis Diller, was at Bob's parties. She was really loud. She did not particularly care for me and just brushed me aside. She was always joking. Phyllis and Bob came up with one joke after another. Once when I was smiling adoringly at Bob, she yelled at me, "Wipe that smile off your face." Then she laughed that real loud laugh, and it frightened me. Bob told me not to pay attention to "that ole' bag," so I tried not to, but she was so loud it was hard to ignore her. I tried to avoid Phyllis Diller's disapproval at all costs.

At one time, Bob's bedroom was decorated in a large floral print with creme-colored background. He had a wooden bed frame and nightstands and a large closet. Sometimes there were fresh flowers placed in the room or one on the pillow. Bob usually had a new nightie waiting on the bed for me to wear and sometimes there were satin sheets on the bed. A drawer in his room was filled with all sorts of sexy panties, bras, nighties, and so on, and he said they were there just for me. He always went to the drawer and selected what I was to wear. He also had clothes in the back of his closet that were just my size. I don't know who bought them, but they always fit me. I was usually programmed to maintain a "perfect size six," although there were times I fell below that and wore a size two or four. My weight was within 99-102 Ibs. in those days and I was 5' 5" tall. "Young and lovely," he would say.

Since deprogramming and speaking out publicly, I've met other programmed sex slaves who were also with Bob. Most likely we were all programmed to be the same size, and Bob just said the clothes were for me, but they were available for a number of his girls. Bob preferred 18-20 year olds.

Bob had an average size penis. Sometimes Bob frightened me during sex, when he got aggressive, but he never physically hurt me. He "let" me do everything sexually I was trained and programmed to do, but he liked to orgasm in his own way. Then he would go to sleep. As he got older, he got meaner and stranger and subconsciously I hated him. There was a small metal high voltage cattle prod that Bob would insert in my vagina at times. He used that on me after sex late at night when we were in bed. After that it was "lights out" and I didn't remember anything else.

Bob slapped me at times, if I got out of line, which was also part of a program to stay in line. When I got slapped, I would switch into a different personality and then I would be happier, more "congenial" he would say, and he would lift my chin and kiss me. Once when he was mad at me for some infraction of the rules, Bob yelled, "You're just a wind up doll - a toy for my pleasure, and don't forget it!"

Hugh Hefner's

Bob referred to me in my earlier teenage years as his "little bunny." He was friends with Hugh Hefner and Hugh came to Bob's parties sometimes. He always brought at least two women with him, usually blondes.

Starlite was my personality that Bob named to become his "starlet." He told Starlite, and other people when I was on his "arm," that he was giving me a "leg up" into the industry. My instructions were that Starlite was to wear her hair parted on the side with it combed down over one eye for a sexy look. She was to act very sexy. When Bob took me to parties he would tell everyone he was showing me the ropes, that I had endless talent and potential in the industry.

Bob took me to several of Hugh Hefner's penthouse parties in Los Angeles. On one of these occasions, Bob went all out on his outfit. He wore a grey suit and ascot with a white tux shirt and a grey top hat and white gloves. He looked 'dapper' but old to me, though his clothes were perfect - not one wrinkle. There was a door panel, with small silver buttons on it that you had to push in a certain

sequence to gain access to Hefner's penthouse. Bob knew the numerical code. I watched the perfectly manicured hand that stretched out of his clean, neat, white starched shirt sleeve go out from his black jacket as he punched in the sequence.

The elevator up to Hefner's had mirrors and Bob said, "You look nice tonight, honey."

"Thanks, Bob." I replied as he took my elbow from behind and said as he turned me around, "Look into the mirror. You can see yourself over and over and over again without end. Like a file, we will slip one out of a slot or like in the jukebox when one record is selected. This evening I want to select a sexy prom girl who is beautiful, intelligent, and submissive. Sexy is always the most important quality. Do you understand?" After I slowly nodded my head yes, he continued, "You are to stay close by my side this evening. There will be no intermissions so don't ask for any. You will simply stay close to my side. Is everything understood?"

I smiled and said yes. Next he turned me away from the 'infinity mirror' used for 'reminding' me in order to select from one of my many personalities, and we went through the elevator door as it opened moments later.

My dress made crackling noises as I walked and I had a matching black cape. When we arrived I handed my wrap to the doorman, a tall handsome man in a tux. And he, in turn, handed it to another man and replied, "This is for the lady with Bob."

Holding my cape, the older doorman looked me in the eye, and bowing his head said, "Ma'am," before leaving with my cape and Bob's show cane.

Bob took my arm and guided me over to the fireplace where a zebra painted girl walked through the fire without being burned. Her naked voluptuous body was painted all over with thick black and white paint stripes. The paint gave an appearance of dress but you could clearly see that she was naked. She smiled at Bob and continued dancing in very seductive poses within a very small area. She had a very haunting faraway look in her eyes.

There were windows all around and at night you could see a breathtaking panoramic view of all the pretty twinkling lights of the city below. They looked like jewels on a black velvet background. Bob told me that when I was "on his arm" for the evening that he was mine, but at other times he was someone else's.

The stars liked their parties because no one gawked at them like fans did in public places. Everyone was more equal and they could enjoy being normal like other people when they were at ease with peers. Hefner's parties were a place where many stars gathered and shared, a playground for the stars and their playmates. It seemed people floated in and out of Hefner's parties and there were times when there were not very many people. From what I saw people didn't necessarily come there to group together for the party. It was more like a place people got stimulated, wowed, and entertained in order to have their own private experiences and fun. Hefner's place was very modern, full of sharp lines and angles with lots of glass, and was some kind of meeting place for the stars and the wealthy upper class. Bob got ideas from Hefner's parties that he used at his own parties in "the Springs." Bob's parties were pure class, in the most exquisite Hollywood style. He had wild parties and some night's there were orgies.

Noticing Bob had arrived, Hugh Hefner came over and shook Bob's hand. Bob said, "Hal, this is my main tease ...I mean main squeeze." They both laughed and Bob leaned over and whispered something I couldn't hear to Hefner. Hefner never stayed around long to talk with Bob at the parties.

"Bob, it's good to see you." They shook hands again and Hefner placed his other hand on Bob's elbow and said, "I'll be back, don't go away, I just have to catch her before she gets away." He seemed to acknowledge his guests and then quickly excused himself. In a moment he returned and said, "Step into my kitchen."

Bob sneered and said to him, "I'll follow you anywhere the girls are!" So we followed Hefner into the kitchen where lots of playboy bunnies dressed in traditional black bunny outfits with black and white bow ties, fish net stockings, and black high heels were busy preparing food trays. Bob's eyebrows raised and with obvious sexual emphasis, he called out, "WHAT'S TO EAT!"

All the girls turned around and laughed and looking seductively at him sang out, almost in unison, "Hi, Mr. Hope!" One bunny said, "I'm available!" and she laughed as she arranged the butter squares that were stamped with the playboy insignia.

Bob said, "Well, maybe you can be course number five, honey. How's about you and I meeting at that course."

"Yes," she teased.

Bob looked around the room, "Any other's?" No one took him up on it but they smiled cordially. Bob ushered me back out to the room where the zebra girl was still dancing. "She's still at it," he announced and I smiled up adoringly at him, just like I was programmed to do.

Bob took a drink off a tray that a bunny offered him and when she offered me a choice of the different drinks, per program, I smiled and recited, "No thank you, I've had my quota for the evening." Although I'd really not eaten or drank anything for hours. Bob was good at taking a drink and then setting it down somewhere out of the way like he didn't want anyone to know he wasn't really drinking. Later on he'd take another drink or two, but I rarely saw him drink much of it before he set it down, abandoned it and moved on.

Hugh Hefner had bizarre, exotic entertainment at his parties ...naked women painted like animals ...or tamed wild animals, like lions that were 'whipped into shape' by a playboy bunny. One time he even had a man dressed like Tarzan whipping a playgirl dressed like Jane. They said the girl was not really being hurt, that it was just an illusion. I don't know if that was true. There were often scenes like that - magic sex shows.

Bob instructed me to pay attention, to watch the playboy bunnies so I could acquire 'bunny skills' and know some of the moves for our shows with the troops or get my edges polished so I'd be poised and ready for the Rockefellers. Bob was very impressed with the Rockefellers. He took me to Hefner's because he wanted me to be "bunny trained." Bob placed playboy collars on me and at other times put a diamond necklace round my neck for certain Hope occasions. It was a single row of diamonds that fit tightly around my neck. Bob liked me to wear them in private. He said I was "in training" and that these were "training diamonds." He said that I had better get used to wearing diamonds because I would be treated right my whole life, and sometimes he called me his princess.

Food, drink, whatever anyone, except me, wanted, was always available at Hefner's parties.

Champagne fountains were popular in those days. If someone delivered a drink - champagne, wine, etc., to me, sometimes Bob would let me take it and then he would quickly whisk it away. Bob told me to hold my champagne glass and look pretty and smile but not to sip it, "Not one little sip," he said. So I didn't. He told me, "One itty bitty little sip is all it would take for your coach to turn into a pumpkin and your beautiful dress into rags. We don't want that now do we?" This reference made to the Disney classic, tied my subconscious mind back into the Cinderella programming that was installed within me for the purpose of his and others control.

I smiled sweetly and said, "No, Bob." I was not allowed to eat or drink. Bob told me to say that I had just eaten and was not hungry.

Hefner was pretty unavailable at his own parties. I never knew why. One night, he had the current centerfold do a little show for a small group of guests. She had on a red sequined body suit, red heels and a feather in her hair. She danced around and stripped for the guests. The men loved it and clapped and said, "encore, encore..." but she left and didn't return.

There were rooms people could go into to have sex if they wanted. One bedroom had a huge four poster bed with black satin sheets and comforter. Bob parked me in the corner of the room while he had sex with the playboy bunny he'd propositioned earlier. He did those kinds of things often. Having sex with an available girl at a party and then sex with me later or I'd just give him oral sex, was not

uncommon, depending on his whim for the evening. Bob got this girl into bed and kissed and mauled her and then got on top and finished her. They seemed to forget that I was in the room. She had real big firm breasts, and Bob always really liked those who were as he called it, "fully endowed." After they finished they got out of bed and Bob kissed her hand and she got dressed and left, closing the big wooden double doors behind her. Bob motioned for me to come over to him and I picked his clothes up off the floor and began redressing him. He always loved that game. I held his boxers as he put first one leg in and then the other. While I helped him he said, "I don't know what I'd do without ya kid." I smiled lovingly as programmed and retrieved his shirt and helped him on with it. The buttons were difficult and he said, "Whew, it took a lot less to 'get it on' than it seemed to getting it off!" And then he'd laugh at his own sexual joke.

Bob said, "Sex is a state of mind. A state of mine I'd like to live in!" I knelt down and put his socks and shoes back on, combed his hair and we reemerged together and joined the party. I didn't know most of the people.

Bob said to a heavyset man in a tux who I also didn't recognize, "This one's mine."

"It's a pleasure to meet you, sir." I said smiling.

Quickly, Bob quipped, "She was trained at the Gloria Swanson School of Manners." And everyone around including the man laughed. The man took my hand politely but he was also laughing. I always thought people were laughing at me because I was stupid, I wasn't able to be aware that they were laughing at Bob's jokes. I never could "get" the jokes, because I was programmed not to be able to think about them.

If nothing was available to him sexually Bob would take me to a hotel or we went home and had sex. He always scored, either way.

At another Hefner party, when we arrived, Bob said to Hefner, "Look who followed me home."

Hefner said, "Not bad Bob, not bad. Hey, tell me, where were you walking? Are there any more like her?"

Bob said, "No they broke the mold after they made this one."

Hefner laughed and they shook hands again. He used both of his hands in his handshake with Bob. He reached out in a regular handshake and then put his other hand on top. In keeping with his usual routine, Hugh Hefner said, "Excuse me Bob, I have some important matters to attend to. You and your lady enjoy. That's what it's all about here." And he winked and walked away.

Tarzan and Jane and a lion were at this party. The Tarzan guy had heavy make-up that made him look tan and he had blonde hair and a beautiful body. So did Jane. The lion was very small. I was allowed to touch him and the tan fur on its back was so neat it looked like it had been evenly shaved. Suddenly, the lion turned around and opened his mouth and it really scared me! He had big teeth. Bob laughed at my reaction and said, "Honey, maybe you'd like to have one of these at home. Lions and tigers and bears, oh my!" And as he cleverly weaved in a line to 'remind' me of my Wizard of Oz programming, he laughed again and so did the people who were standing around. Little did they know that Bob Hope had just masterfully delivered one of the program phrases intended to keep me from remembering the life I was living, serving him as a total mind-controlled sex slave.

Later at the party there was a huge square-tiled shower with clear glass sides and several nozzles. Lots of men and women all got in it at the same time and rubbed soap all over themselves and then rubbed up against each other and it ended in a huge orgy. Personally, Bob liked more of the one-on-one stuff, but liked to watch me be involved with groups, or to watch individual couples have sex.

Sometimes someone from the Council pre-programmed me to deliver a message to some entertainer or celebrity at a party they knew I was going to attend. I don't think Bob even knew some of the messages I was delivering. I was instructed to hold the message until I had gotten "in" on the targeted person and then after I had made eye contact and had their full attention, I was to carefully "drop the message" always maintaining eye contact.

I was usually very quiet, and when I would deliver these Council messages, Bob was not always aware I was going to speak. He was often caught off guard and would joke about loving to be with me because he never knew what would come out of my mouth from one minute to the next. He told people that I had natural wit, but I was really programmed by others to deliver clever messages, tailor-made for certain select individuals.

At one of Hefner's parties, Bob had me wear a black, form-fitting, long slinky, strapless and low-cut evening gown. A white flower was pinned over my left breast. I carried a black clutch and wore black high heels. We arrived at the party in one of Bob's limos. The limo drivers always waited for us in case Bob wanted to leave at any time. Sometimes Bob would take me to the car for sex during the party or for a "little talk" about my behavior or about what to watch for or remember. He liked to do spankings when I was naughty and he would make me pull up my dress and lay naked over his lap to be spanked. I was trained for that to be a "turn on" and when this happened, he got real turned on and the sex was better for him.

At the parties we attended at Hefner's, the men did not usually show up with their wives. The nights I was there, it seemed like there was an unspoken rule that wives were not allowed, as if it was their exclusive 'men's club' where repeat women were occasional, but no wives allowed. The rooms were often smoky and loud and the people, especially the women, were so made up they looked plastic.

At one party, Bob took me into a back bedroom where a playboy bunny was supposed to "teach me some things." She lay naked on a white fur rug and touched herself all over in front of Bob and me. Bob stooped down and told me to quietly and gently step into her world. The two of us were touching each other while Bob said, "What a thing of beauty you both are, like a piece of beautiful artwork."

The playboy bunny took off my dress and began performing oral sex on me while Bob watched. I am not sure exactly what I "learned," but from then on, I had lots of playboy bunny costumes - bunny collars, feathers to wear on my bottom, and high heel shoes to match. I ended up "treating" many men at Bob's parties to things I had "learned."

Sometimes I danced, too. I think lots of things may have been filmed without my knowledge. They used dancing often in pornography. Bob would snap his finger when it was all over and I was to "snap out of it," get up and go home with him or do something else. Some parts of me wanted my mom to help me, or get me out of there, but she never could.

Bob would put a playboy collar around my neck and say, "Is this your necklace or your collar?" I was programmed to respond to wearing those collars. When the bunny collar was on, out came Starlite the sexy show girl personality. Sometimes Bob would put the collar on me at his home, "just for the fun of it," he would say. The diamond collars or necklaces were reserved for use with the Presidents and other higher-ups.

When it was time to leave, Bob got our coats from the butler and we left. Two younger handsome men, in suits, who were buff and looked sort of like Secret Service agents, followed directly behind us and stayed with us until we entered the black limo that picked us up out front. It seemed like they were guarding Bob until we got to the safety of the limo. Somehow the limo drivers were always there or close by and immediately brought the car around when Bob appeared. Once in the limo Bob would ask me for a foot or neck rub or oral sex and, as programmed, I complied. This night he asked for a foot massage. "Golden foot award," Bob said. "Maybe I could manage to win the golden foot award since I can't ever seem to manage a whole Oscar," he said, laughing at his own joke.

Dean Martin

I was usually one of the youngest girls at the parties and most of the men were pretty old. Dean Martin was at a party one night and he was drunk. He wanted me to sit on his lap. Looking over at Bob slyly, Dean said, "Come on Bob, share some of your pretty young stuff."

I looked to Bob for direction and he answered, "Okay," smiling broadly at his friend. Shyly, I went over and sat on Dean Martin's lap. All eyes in the room were now on Dean. He took one of the straps from my dress down as everyone cheered him on. I looked over at Bob, feeling shy and scared but smiling, as my programming dictated.

Then Dean took the other strap down, pulled my dress down, and grabbed my breast. With each move he made he slowly turned to Bob, asking for permission, "Bob, can I take her bra off?"

"Yes," Bob said with a sly smile on his face as everyone continued to cheer.

"Bob, can I put one of her breasts in my mouth?" And as Bob gave his permission, Dean put his drink and cigarette down and leaned over to suck on my breast. He stunk like hard liquor. His eyes were all bloodshot and he spoke slowly and slurred. He scared me because I didn't know if he would hurt me. Then he asked Bob if he could remove my dress to which Bob replied, "Yes," while the group hailed him again.

After removing my dress, Dean asked, "Bob, can I remove her panties?"

Bob said it was all right with him and so Dean took off my panties and laid me over a table and began sticking his finger in me. I was moving all around and making sexual noises, like I had been trained to do. All the people watching were getting turned on and it started group sex.

When Dean was finished, Bob came over to "rescue me," took me to the bathroom, slipped me into the shower and told me to get dressed, that we were going home to our own private party, now that Dean had warmed me up.

Later that evening a man I didn't know approached us and said, "Bob, you must tell me your secret. You must have something you're not telling about if you can attract the attentions of a pretty young girl like this. So tell me... what's your secret?"

Bob looked snidely at him and said, "Geritol." And then he laughed and said, "You don't think I'd tell you my secret do you? Then it wouldn't be a secret any longer and you'd be getting the pretty young stuff instead of me." And then they both laughed but the man still seemed very curious, like he wondered how Bob did it.

"Is he paying you large sums of money?" the man asked me.

"No, sir, it's a pleasure just to be with Bob," I smiled, looking adoringly up to Bob like I was programmed to do.

The man shook his head and said, "Well it's been a pleasure to see you again Bob and to meet you Miss ...what did you say her name was?"

"Weatherby . . . Sharon Weatherby."

And the man smiled and said, "A pleasure," and walked away. The more that I attracted the attention of other men, the more Bob wanted me sexually that night.

Frank Sinatra

Bob Hope and Frank Sinatra played golf together. When I was with them on the course, Bob told me to call Frank Sinatra, "Uncle Frank" or "Uncle Frankie." Over the years, "Uncle Frankie," would show up as Bob's representative, 'the heavy,' to get me 'back in line.' He seemed to just appear at a place I was taken to and would let me see him and then quickly leave. Just the sight of him was terrifying because of the violent experiences I had with him from the time I was a teenager on. Frank Sinatra was connected high up in the Mob - very high up.

Uncle Frankie displayed some Catholic behaviors and used Catholic jargon and seemed sincere as when he talked about his love for his family and country, but his actions were never supportive of what he espoused to believe. He arranged, easily and with no remorse, many peoples' deaths, sometimes explaining to the hit men exactly how he wanted it done-at times while he was having sex with me. He once told this guy to dismember this man and throw his arm to the sharks. "Let the man stay alive to

watch the shark eat his arm and then do likewise with his leg, but make sure he is still alive and watching so you guys will have to do it quickly. Use a chain saw for all I care and tell the bastard his whole body will be next and that his arm and leg were just appetizers for the sharks." I was horrified but knew better than to even acknowledge I heard anything, so I smiled and acted like I wasn't even listening and went to sexually satisfy him to insure my safety. Frank said, "Wait a minute doll, I have to attend to business first." So I lay there and waited, running my hands in short little nervous motions all over his chest.

After the hit man left, Frank started biting me all over and acted like he was in a good mood and was playing with me. But I will tell you he thought nothing of having someone killed and there were times I overheard him ask for a personal item of the persons returned to him for assurance that the job had been done. One time he threw a ring from a man he'd had killed into a waterway. The water was flowing fast and he told me the ring would be swept far away from where he had originally dumped it. I just smiled and took his hand. I was always trying to please him in order to stay alive.

Bing Crosby

One Christmas, Bob gave me as a surprise sexual present to his good friend and peer, Bing Crosby. Bing had just finished the taping of his Christmas show. Bob had me installed and waiting in a closet in Bing's dressing room and I was instructed to, "Stand there like a mannequin, without moving until Bing opens the door." Bob put me into a 'stay stiff like a mannequin' instruction mode and wrapped me with a huge red ribbon and bow. Otherwise I was totally naked. A card was attached to the ribbon. Bob instructed me to "stay put," until Bing opened the closet.

As he closed the closet door on me, Bob said, "You'll be okay."

When Bing opened the closet to get a change of clothes, there I was, totally naked, clad in a red ribbon and holding a greeting card. Bing started laughing and read a portion of the card out loud, "a f--k me doll??!" And he laughed and laughed. He laughed so hard he bent over and held his stomach.

Bing took off his tux and put his jacket over the back of the chair, laid the rest of his clothes on the seat and stood there wearing only his black top hat, shoes and socks. He had on the kind of socks that had black elastic holding them up. He kept watching me, never taking his eyes off me while he was changing his clothes. He seemed excited about this gift, but he also seemed apprehensive.

There were instructions on the card; I know, because he laid it down and I read and retained it in my photographic memory. It said, "This lovely young lady is yours for the evening. You can't wear her down. She will please you in every way imaginable. You have only to reach out, take her left hand, squeeze it and say, 'Come on honey, we're going home.' Oh, by the way, put a raincoat on her while you're in transport, she didn't come with clothes."

So Bing took my hand and led me out of the closet. He acted like I would break or wake up or something. He treated me like I wasn't real. He was very cautious at first.

Bing and I got into a waiting limo and went to a penthouse apartment, "to unwind," Bing said. It was his home away from home, a safe place, he said, like in the song "up on the roof." He sang and danced a little and I sat on the bed and watched him. He sang some old song that I had never heard of and he looked ancient but always had a smile on his face. It seemed like he danced out of nervousness, of not knowing quite what to do.

He never looked away from me for a minute. Then he came over, undid the tie on my raincoat and slowly undid the buttons. I was barefoot and my feet were purple and cold. He pulled down the bed covers and I climbed in, and he began touching me, still with his own clothes on, when the phone rang. He put the receiver aside while the person was talking on the other end. He laughed kind of awkwardly and whispered to me, "Just last minute instructions from Bob!"

Bing hung up and said, as if I could not hear or comprehend, "Bob said to rub here in circular motions to turn you on to HOT!" He began rubbing circular motions around my belly button, activating my sexual passion touch programs, and I began to do the programmed "ohhhhhh" moans and he got an

erection after hearing that and pulled off his pants while he was still rubbing. It was as if he perceived me as a robot and was afraid of not knowing how to work me ...afraid something might go wrong.

I went into my dancing mode on the bed and took off the rest of his clothes. I did like Bob had instructed me, "Tell him you're dreaming of a White Christmas and then wink." Once I had delivered that, I performed oral sex and rubbed him all over. Then I climbed on top of him and satisfied him sexually. He'd had a drink in the limo that mixed with his cologne, and he smelled like alcohol. After we were through, he went right to sleep. I curled up beside him and fell asleep, too. Maybe all this was to make sure he had that White Christmas he was dreaming of.

Sometime later, the phone rang and woke us up. He got dressed, put me back into the raincoat and escorted me down the elevator to a waiting limo. He stayed and I left in the limo and was not taken back to Bob's but instead was taken to the airport and flown home. The limo driver gave me clothes to put on, and when I got on the airplane I slept the whole flight home, like I was always programmed to do.

You Can Sleep All the Way Home

My programmed mother picked me up at LAX Airport and handed me a brown paper bag with my own clothes in it. I robotically went into the airport bathroom, changed into my own clothes, and went out to my mother, who simply said, "We're going home, honey. You can sleep all the way home."

I slept all the way home in the car. When we arrived at the house, I crawled into my own bed and buried all memory of this occasion, like all others before it, deep into my subconscious mind, as my programming commanded.

If it was nighttime when I returned, I was instructed to wash away all remembrances of the evening with a nighttime bath. The hypnotic command embedded in my programmed mind was, "All that happened will go down the drain with the water and will be forgotten and gone forever." Then, I could go to sleep. If for some reason I didn't have time for a bath before I left Bob's to return to Woodland Hills, I was instructed to take one at home before I went to bed and it had the same amnesiac effect.

In those days, I felt very tired most of the time. Some days I had to go to high school the next day or, later on, to college, and woke up with my eyes burning and my make-up still on from the night before. My mother always had trouble waking me in the mornings. There were times she or my father would pour water over my head in an attempt to wake me. On weekends, I was allowed to sleep until 11 or 12 o'clock if I wanted. I could never figure out why I was always so exhausted. Now I know why.

During my high school years, Bob said he was training me to be a starlet, but he was really training me to privately entertain his rich political and celebrity friends, or the troops.

It was during these early years that I began being heavily accessed and programmed by the Council, for use with many influential men and women in positions of power. My use within government circles was guaranteed to be security proof due to the mind control I was under. They felt my programming kept the information I carried from my own awareness and from access by others who did not know the keys and codes to my system. But what those in government did not seem to know was that the Council also had the ability to access me. They were secretly slipping in their own psychologically tested and carefully researched messages for me to deliver to presidents, governors, senators, foreign leaders, entertainers, and many other people who were in positions of power or public influence.

The Council studied people's profiles and knew exactly what their likes and dislikes were, their sexual preferences, and any other information that could be used to influence people in ways the person was never even aware of. The Council pre-programmed me with instructions, all based on careful prior research of the targeted person... what to wear, how to act, what type of sexual stance to take, specific

words or phrases to say, and the best time to deliver them. The Council always worked up a complete strategy and never sent me to a targeted person unprepared.

In these ways, they influenced government leaders to act in their own favor, to pass or veto laws or bills that benefited their corporate holdings, to bring into office those people who could be used as pawns, to influence judges and government agencies, to enlist large sums of monies, and to control people in all walks of life.

My experience was that the Council was publicly nameless and unknown, and this anonymity is what made it possible for them to wield power over the masses. From my perspective, these individuals acting in the shadows actually dictated in a subversive and inconspicuous manner the direction our government took at the time. They were connected to powerful people like Bob Hope, through me as their secret liaison, though I was programmed not to be aware of it. They felt they had their identities and security locked up tight.

"Command those who are rich in this present world not to be arrogant nor to put their hope in wealth, which is so uncertain, but to put their hope in God, who richly provides us with everything for our enjoyment." -- I Timothy 6:17

Chapter Eighteen: Gerald Ford

I called Ford, "Henry," trying to joke with him so he wouldn't be so brutal but he usually was anyway, despite my attempts at humor. Ford began with me early, as he liked young girls. He was into fantasies and often liked for me to wear an eye mask. We had sex often, especially during the time Reagan was Governor of California. He liked violent sex-tying me up, handcuffs, spankings, slapping, and all that kind of S&M stuff. He enjoyed the whips and chains routine, and liked to tie me up with thick black leather straps. He slapped me frequently. Often after he satisfied himself sexually with me, blood would drip down my legs. It was so painful that I felt like I was not only splitting in my rectum or vagina, but the excruciating pain exploded up into my head and out my arms and fingertips. Gerald Ford required violent sex in order to orgasm. He joked about needing, "the chain gig in order to get off." His jokes were very crude. He was in politics a long time and often traveled in political circles. He was "one of the good old boys" and had major Mob connections. He wore his own gun in a shoulder holster and was afraid for me to remove it. "I don't trust you with the gun," he said and he laughed. He was a short President and pretty hairy. While he was violent sexually he still was not as brutal as Ted Kennedy.

Ford wore nice clothes, silk shorts and good quality suits, and he was very proud of them. For some reason, these mob guys were into expensive, quality clothes. I don't know why that was, but image was very important to them. There was lots of mob involvement when Nixon was President and Ford was Vice President, and it didn't stop when Nixon stepped down. Same mob involvement, just a few different players who were close friends of Jerry. Ford had more mob organizations behind him than Nixon did, so he had lots of people to give favors to when he was in the White House. He was very corrupt. He had to be in a wheelchair briefly for something. I don't know what happened but they managed to keep it hushed up. He had a bandage like he'd been shot or wounded or operated on. I don't know exactly what happened, but I felt a little safer when he was in the wheelchair. Unfortunately, he wasn't in it long enough to suit my needs.

Ford didn't treat me like I was real. He often hurt me and was convinced that I was just a machine built for his pleasure. It was true that I was a non-thinking slave that obeyed every command, but it did register within me when I was abused and treated cruelly.

During the time he was Vice President, I remember him attending a ribbon-cutting ceremony. There was a beautiful white gazebo on a large lawn and he was there to cut the yellow ribbon. Gerald Ford participated in many of these grand openings. He was booked into these types of public appearances in order to enhance his image as a 'good citizen.' But, in my opinion, he was not. Anyway, he cut the ribbon with a large pair of scissors and then the crowd clapped and cheered and reporters took his picture. Soon he got into a black limo, where I was waiting in the back, and was driven away. I was placed there to deliver a message to him from the Council. Then, I had to get down on my knees in the back of the limo, unzip his pants and give him oral sex. He held onto a stun gun in his left hand the whole time. Just before he orgasmed I climbed on top of him and moved around until he came, after which he activated the stun gun near my tailbone.

He made a bunch of jokes about my name being the same as his daughter's. Like, "You're not supposed to f--k kin," or "That was great Susan Ford." Correcting him, a Secret Service agent said, "You're not suppose to ever use her name, Sir."

Ford smiled maliciously and said, "It's my name, too, and I'll use it whenever I please." He never liked to be corrected or told what to do. Henry Kissinger got angry with him about that, also.

Bob Hope played golf all over the world with his friend, "Jerry Ford." That's what Bob called him. Ford was a much better golfer than Bob, but Bob always shrugged it off and said, "I just had a bad day

today." He said that often. The Secret Service stayed close, but let them have their space and they usually played when there weren't other people on the course. When Ford was Vice President and Bob would talk about Nixon or other political agendas, when the talk got heavy Bob would look over to me, point to the cart, and say, "Hey honey, take five," and I'd wait to be called back. Bob said they got very important work done on the course, sometimes more so than what went on during regular work routines.

One time, "Jerry," as Bob always called him, had on a Nixon watch. The round watch had a red, white, and blue band and a picture of Nixon in the middle. It was a caricature; not his real picture and Ford said he looked "kinda stupid." Calling Bob over, Jerry lifted his sleeve to show him the watch and I overheard him say, "This asshole doesn't know the time of day," and he took the watch off, threw in on the green and stomped it with his foot.

With a subtle nervous sort of laugh, Bob said, "You're very serious about this I can see." Bob liked to play it cool with all the politicians, especially presidents. He had a rule about not making negative comments to one politician putting down another. He said, "It is only diplomacy, which is essential in this business."

I was required to have sex with Ford as Nixon's Vice President and as President, but not ever as much as I did with Nixon or Reagan. I had sex with Ford as VP when he and Nixon were in different locations. Bush and Reagan appeared at places together occasionally, but Nixon and Ford never did that I was aware of. Henry Kissinger stayed connected to Ford, but at more of a distance after Nixon stepped down. Ford had connections all over the place. When Nixon stepped down Ford was right there--grinning like a shark waiting for the spoils--he and his mob buddies loved the opportunity to run the country from their perspective. I heard one of them say that at a private meeting. I was present at that meeting with directions to have sex with Ford and give him a Council message after sex.

I went along with Bob on golfing trips to caddy for him at times when he golfed with different presidents. He jokingly called me, "Katie the Caddy." Bob used me as a caddy so that no one could hear the sensitive nature of the conversations he had with prominent people. He often assured his guest at the club that I was unable to think, that I was retarded and that most anything. could be said in front of me and I wouldn't understand. He played me for a retarded person, at times, but other people knew I was really just a robot. Anyway, I had to hand Bob the correct golf club and I was instructed to anticipate his every need. I knew which club he preferred at each hole. I never was allowed to make a mistake and he would always wink at me just before he would swing. He whispered in my ear that it was just for luck. He said I was his good luck charm. He said that often to me in Vegas, too. In Las Vegas he would want me to hold onto his arm while he shot the dice or played Baccarat. Bob's attitude was much different after the game, if he lost. When he won he was in a great mood and would be happy and acted like he was real hot.

I handed Jerry's clubs to him also, but when I did, I'd smile and say, "Mr. President, Sir, how about this one?" He occasionally smoked a small white tipped cigar on the green and had me hold it for him while he swung.

Once while I was holding Jerry's cigar, Bob said to me, "Hey be careful with those magic hands of yours." Sex was always on his mind.

When I handed the club to Bob he would say, "I like that choice honey, let's give her a try." And if he'd miss a shot or screw up he'd blame it on a bad choice of the club or iron I selected. To cover himself, he'd say, "Let's use a seven iron on that next shot, I think it'll be a better choice for the condition of this green." I also got down, put the tees in the ground and set the ball up for Bob and his friends if they wanted or needed it, unless they had their own caddy. The golf course in Palm Springs had a lot of sand on the course.

Bob provided a visor for me to wear on the green and often slapped my bottom and said things like, "I just like to remind myself what's up for later." Other times he'd have me dressed in those little

pleated short skirts with the little panties attached. During the course of the afternoon when Bob would stick his head under my skirt, I'd just smile brainlessly and do a 'Tommy Smothers act' and everyone would always laugh. Or, he'd pull my skirt up and mess around with it, showing everyone what he was finding, like the fact that the panties were sewn to the skirt and everyone thought it was so funny. He used me like a sideshow act and told people, "she's the butt of my jokes!"

Often after they finished the course, I had to give Ford oral sex or he'd have sex with me usually standing up backwards. This was extremely painful because of the thickness of his erection, and I could hardly walk later and I often bled afterwards; but he liked best to sit down and receive oral sex. It was always quite a mouthful with him and he'd ram it down my throat by pushing my head down real hard on him. Ford once said, "This is the best part of the game." When he was finished with me my mouth often cracked and bled. Sometimes I did it in the back of a limo or in a side room at the golf course.

Other times Bob would take Ford back to his house and tell him, "Enjoy her." And, he'd leave me alone by the pool with Ford or in a bedroom. When Ford was finished, he'd just leave me abruptly. Then I'd just sit and stare straight ahead waiting for Bob to tell me what to do next.

After I had children, Ford teased me that he may have been the father of my child and he would ask me, "How's junior?" He was responsible for a lot of the mob violence that happened to me during the mid to late 70's. He always wanted to insure that I was 'contained,' so he even had his mob buddies come to my home to rough up my children and me.

I was required to have sex with Gerald Ford on Thanksgiving Holidays at Big Bear and Big Sur. One holiday he jokingly said to Bob, "This is one of the things I am most thankful for," and they both laughed. Most of what I "thought" were our family vacations were actually times I spent servicing men from all over.

"When you did it to the least of my brethren, you did it to me." -- Matt. 25:40

Brice Taylor - Thanks for the Memories, pp 155-157

Chapter Nineteen: My Programmed Marriage – We've Only Just Begun

In my "conscious and public life" I entered junior college at Pierce College in Woodland Hills, just after my High School graduation in February of 1969. 1 worked toward a degree in psychology. Craig's family felt it would be good for him to go away for college so he left for the University of Colorado at Boulder and lasted there for a year. His grades were poor and we ended up spending all of our money on postage and plane fares to visit each other.

After Craig's return to California, he began attending Valley State College, which is now California State University at Northridge, with his eye on an eventual degree in dentistry. I worked a four-day week as a dental assistant for a Woodland Hills orthodontist named Michel N. Jacoby, D.D.S.

Craig proposed marriage in August of 1970, offering me a ring he worked a couple of years to pay for. Our plans were to be married one year later on August 21, 1971. Due to the mind control and cross-programming we were both under, we had no way of knowing that our marriage plans were not really our own. Following the secret plan, my father offered two options. Option one was to have a big wedding. Option two was to forgo the large wedding and, instead, take the money and use it on a lavish honeymoon in Hawaii.

Being a romantic and somewhat traditional with my Christian upbringing, I chose the large church wedding and reception. Craig and I were both surprised when my father informed us that he decided to give us the Hawaiian honeymoon, as well. He arranged an appointment for us to meet with his travel agent and the agent booked us a special package deal that would take us to several of the Hawaiian Islands.

On August 21, 1971, Reverend McKelvey, who at that time had quit being a minister and was selling real estate, married us at the First Presbyterian Church of Encino. Two hundred and fifty people were in attendance. After I walked up the isle on my father's arm, the organist played the song, You'll Never Walk Alone, which was a subconscious message to me that I would always be controlled. I cried during the entire ceremony but when asked, could offer little explanation as to why. My parents went all out on a sit down dinner reception that was held poolside in our newly re-landscaped backyard in Woodland Hills.

In order to keep our secret life concealed, Craig and I were also forced to participate in a separate 'black wedding' that took place before our white wedding. I had to wear a long black dress and a black veil and Craig wore all black including a black shirt with his black suit. It took place outdoors in a park late at night. Reverend McKelvey wore a black robe and married us in this ceremony, also.

But my secret hidden life would not and did not go away. In fact, it continued to exist even on our honeymoon. Of course, the reality of these secret events was kept carefully away from my husband's and my conscious awareness by very powerful programming.

One of the first nights we were in Hawaii, my newlywed husband took me to see Don Ho. Craig and I dressed for the evening and arrived in time for the dinner show. Don Ho appeared on stage, took the microphone in hand, and in his smooth modulated voice, sang Tiny Bubbles. When he was through he asked if there were any newlyweds in the audience. My handsome new husband proudly waved his hand in the air as he put his other arm around me and gave me a big hug. Don Ho congratulated us and requested the waiter bring a special bottle of champagne to our table. The bottle of champagne was a trigger for me to switch into another personality and Craig touched his watch as if adjusting it and that was to trigger and cue me. From then on, I acted from a totally unconscious programmed state. The next

thing I knew Craig took me backstage to Don Ho's dressing room where, initially, there was some kind of drug transaction.

Next Don Ho took my hand and said to Craig, "Don't run away so fast. You don't think I am going to let a pretty California thing like this slip through my fingers." He looked directly at Craig. Craig stepped back and Don Ho took me by the hand to another room. Craig followed us. Don Ho ushered me inside, stuck his head back out the door and said to my husband, "You don't mind sharing your beautiful young bride with me do you?"

My bridegroom looked to the ground and said, "No, Sir." Craig looked nervous and agitated, but smiled.

"That's the way I like it - real easy." Don Ho said as he shut the door behind us.

He told me he wanted me to struggle, so it would be like a rape. "You would really like me to rape you though wouldn't you. You really enjoy being f----d. Or are you a virgin ...come for me to initiate?" As directed, I ran around the room, escaping his advances until he grabbed me and unzipped the back of my dress. He slipped it off, took off my sandals and said he would go real slowly taking off the rest and that he had a particular liking for pretty bras and panties.

Don Ho laid me on a large couch and began kissing me and then he slapped me and kissed me again. He was really strange. First he was gentle and then the next minute violent. He had been drinking and after he took my bra and panties off he said he needed to "powder his face," and he snorted a line of cocaine. He came over and kneeled on one knee and started having sex with me. He said he loved tight women and he satisfied himself with me fairly quickly but never did take off his pants, just his shirt.

When he was finished with me, I went back out to Craig and Do Ho stayed in the room. Craig took me back to our hotel room.

The rest of our honeymoon we went to several other Hawaiian Islands including Maui. I was used sexually by other political people on other islands.

When we returned from our "honeymoon" we moved into an apartment on Parthenia Avenue in Canoga Park, California. I continued working four days a week for Dr. Jacoby and Craig continued his studies as a pre-med major to become a dentist. Sliced into my 'expanded' duties as dental assistant, were 'special assignments' that began when a suited man, posing as a drug company salesman, delivered tiny implants that I was programmed to cement into the braces of certain 'select' young patients. Most often, they were beautiful young girls. One day, as another dental assistant and I were busily cementing a band on a particularly beautiful 10 year old girl, whose father was an affluent, prominent USC dental professional in the community, I was repulsed when I ran my dental instrument around her tooth and came up with a pubic hair. My assistant and I looked at each other in horror and, although I was under mind control, the obvious connections were made.

In 1973, Craig and I moved to Agoura Hills and my parents gave us a down payment to buy a condominium on Oakpath Drive. It wasn't long until my parents sold their home in Woodland Hills and moved down the street from us. They were always close by.

I was still accessed and used with Nixon, Reagan, Kissinger, Bob Hope and others, as well as in various experimental projects (including dental implant experimentation) and filmed in porn in many locations in California, especially Studio City and Bel Aire.

During his junior year at Cal State Northridge, Craig applied to 20 dental schools around the nation and was rejected at every one of them because his grades weren't high enough to qualify him for entrance. But my father saved the day by calling his rich Uncle Charlie, whom he supposedly hadn't seen or spoken to in over 25 years, to ask him humbly for the favor of helping his son-in-law into USC Dental School. Soon after, my father's "Uncle" arranged for Craig's acceptance to USC Dental School. Charles Lilley Horn, wasn't really my father's uncle but instead a cousin. He was owner of Federal Cartridge Corporation (munitions manufacturer), which later became a major subsidiary of the Olin Foundation,

Inc. During the 1960's, as President of the Olin Foundation (a charitable trust established by F. W. Olin, founder of the Olin Corporation), Uncle Charlie contributed sizeable donations to USC and had connections to the school. More on all of this in a later chapter. Upon acceptance to dental school, Craig quit Cal State Northridge, before obtaining his BS degree, and worked full time until he entered USC School of Dentistry.

"But everything exposed by the light becomes visible, for it is light that makes everything visible." -- Ephesians 5:13-14

"Get rid of all bitterness, rage and anger ...be kind and compassionate to one another, forgiving each other, just as in Christ God forgave you."-- Ephesians 4:31-32

Chapter Twenty: Jimmy Carter

Evidently Jimmy Carter was too directed by his Christian belief system and too connected to his wife to ever stray. It was my experience that if he was guilty of any sexual indiscretions, he did only lust in his heart. I never had sex with Jimmy Carter.

He did, however, listen and respond to messages delivered through me from the Council. He had a very hungry ear and listened carefully and responded helpfully to all but a few requests from them. He even bit on a bunch of Henry's messages, delivered through me. By then Carter thought I was only Council, he didn't know I was connected to Henry Kissinger and Henry loved that he was "puppeting a democrat" and "one that didn't believe in adultery but would take top secret information from a whore and run the country from it." Henry thought it was the best laugh ever. But he always ran parallel and complementary with the Council. They were his boss and he took many orders from them politically, but he could also place in his own input.

"But now the Lord who created you ...says: Don't be afraid, for I have ransomed you; I have called you by name; you are mine. When you go through deep waters and great trouble, I will be with you. When you go through rivers of difficulty, you will not drown! When you walk though the fire of oppression, you will not be burned up - the flames will not consume you. For I am the Lord your God, your Savior..." -- Isaiah 43:1-3

Chapter Twenty-one: The Hollywood Connection

Michael Jackson

Michael Jackson was just a little boy of four or five when I accompanied Bob Hope to a place where they were filming up-and-coming talent for television. Bob told me he supported and sponsored the Jacksons, getting them a professional foot in the door. Their father brought the boys in and I remembered seeing them taken into a side room where bright lights were on. They all had to drop their pants and before their performance a big man raped each one of them in a lineup. Then they were taken to a different room and dressed in little suits and sent onto the stage to perform. Due to the mind control I was under, I'm not sure exactly where we were, but feel that it was the early days of the Ed Sullivan Show. I watched as Bob, dressed in a grey pinstripe suit and bow tie, with white shoes, shook hands with Ed; and then the Jackson boys went on. They were made into a sensation and famous, on purpose, so that they could be used in the future to influence large audiences. Bob and his connections knew that all they needed was some talent, make-up, costumes, lights, glitter and lots of publicity. He said publicity was the most important ingredient.

I was just a teenager and Bob said that he wanted me to be present so I could learn the ropes to being a "starlet." He wanted me to see how it was done and feel comfortable around the stage. I think he just said that as a cover to other people to hide the real reason I was with him - for his and others sexual pleasure.

Bob explained to me how important clothes are to one with a public image to uphold. I had on a short, small, tight-fitting, low-cut, yellow, sheath dress. I did as I was told and wore it along with the gold high heels I was provided.

Bob was often the connection for new entertainment. The Council used his connections for their own interest and got 'key' entertainers in place for future use. Many were robots like me. I saw many of them get hurt. I never saw Bob get hurt though. The Jacksons were hurt; I was witness to their abuse. That first time when they performed, Bob got them onto the show and then we left in the limo and watched from the television inside. He told the driver to drive around until the show was over. Then Bob told me, "See how easy it is to be a star?" And he laughed and pushed my head into his lap for oral sex.

I think most would agree that the inherent love that is part of Michael Jackson's soul essence shines through for the world to see. In spite of the programming themes in some of the songs he sings, as I was recovering I often held onto the words he sang, the lyrics reminding me, "You are not alone," when I felt so very alone. To Michael, I extend a hand and say you also are not alone. Now there is a way out of this insanity.

Neil Diamond and Others

Publicly, Neil Diamond and Bob golfed together in the Springs. That's how I got connected to him.

As a teenager, I was programmed to serve Neil Diamond in different capacities for many years. He was not violent like some of the others, but he didn't have any morals.

One day when I was a young teenager, Neil walked though the breezeway into our backyard to the pool where I was tanning in my bikini. My father got very angry and told him, "Get the hell out of here!"

Neil replied, "Take it easy, Pops. No one knows I'm here. Just Relax." But he did leave after he kissed me on the cheek and ran his hands though my hair. He said he just needed to see me for

"inspiration" and then he left. Neil always said I was his inspiration and after we'd have sex I'd whisper programmed phrases in his ear to incorporate into his songs or phrases for program lock-in or, as our controllers said, "to move the targeted generation up another notch."

When I was with Neil I felt merged with him. I didn't know who I was, where I ended and he began. I was programmed to magnify his essence so he could feel and see more of who he was. I was used often to contain Neil, to bring him back to himself and bring his "self" back to him when he felt he gave it all away to crowds and audiences. Over time I witnessed this being a problem for a lot of programmed stars. I was sent to do this service for other celeb's, both male and female, who needed to bounce off another person in order to maintain their programmed "selves." They got lost at times and I was programmed to help them.

I suntanned with him in the nude and like a protective Jewish mother, he always made sure I had lots of suntan lotion on, especially in crucial spots so I wouldn't burn. He didn't have neighbors and his home was located up on a hill in Malibu or the Santa Monica Mountains, so it was very secluded. They could have tricked me in regard to the location of his house, but I know I had to drive through the canyon to get there. He was building a new home and when the deck was stable enough to hold us we had sex outside. As we looked upward toward the night sky, he named all the stars on my list "to do." The list was lettered not numbered, such as, "(A) Barbra: Tuesday and Thursday 3:30 p.m. (B) Carlo Sangucci: 7:00 p.m...." and he continued inputting my schedule for the week. He gave me instructions to keep my schedule organized. If he ever missed me for the week, I couldn't function because I hadn't received my local assignments. For this reason, Neil and I were very regular with each other. In my late teens, I visited with him nearly every week. And, when I was with him I delivered lyrical words or phrases for songs to him after sex. When we were in our programmed "cozy" state, he'd say, "give me sugar," and I'd unload all I had been given into him and later it would show up over and over in his songs. Privately, he would attribute it only to my being his undying inspiration. I was used with Neil like I was with Elvis, which leads me to believe that Neil is also programmed.

Neil played the piano and sang to practice while wearing sweatpants and no shirt. He also had a room where the whole entire wall was mirrored. He stood and looked into the mirror and sang to himself to rehearse. In some ways he reminded me of Elvis.

I was never allowed to interrupt while he was playing. But when he was through, he had me do everything for him, including a massage or sex, manicure and pedicure - even if he'd just had one somewhere else. He could never get enough touching and attention. I had a whole grouping of personalities located beneath 'tiger sex programming,' seven in all, devoted to him and he would say, "I have seven so I can get to heaven and you darlin' take me to heaven." Neil programmed in, "Wine will take you to the place of love." He had a room with fountains, Buddhas, and ferns where he meditated. His place of "perfect peace," he called it. He created devotion in the personalities within me by programming into me the love and goodness of Jesus, His pure love, all into my heart chakra so that the feelings of devotion would be directed toward him.

Pornography was often filmed at his estate. Bob sent people from his parties that were sexually wild to Neil's for filming in pornography. It didn't matter if they were only children. Neil's porn business was so large that it kept a large number of Malibu, Pacific Palisades, Ventura, Calabasas, and Agoura Hills slaves very busy. Whole programmed families were used. 'Sex with families' videos were popular in the 80's among a certain group and Neil seemed totally fascinated, watching families together. He loved bodies. He said he was a connoisseur of the human body as an art form. That's why he said he liked to film the most beautiful act on earth, the love act, when people were as intimate as they could get. He said that children should be allowed to openly enjoy the pleasures of sex. He asked, "Why should they have to wait to enjoy these natural pleasures?" I couldn't think to answer. He liked to see their physical characteristics and he liked to watch them, as he called it, "make love, family-style." Other times when he was in a different sort of mood, he would refer to the pornography as, "getting it on, family-style."

Unfortunately and sorrowfully, I remembered being programmed to drive children to Neil's. Once we arrived I walked into the house like I owned it. I knew where the hidden key was and ushered everyone in and got them settled. The rule at Neil's house in the hills was that you had to check your clothes and shoes at the door. None were allowed, or else you couldn't enter, "the Sanctuary," as he called it. Neil often came out in his black silk robe and black slippers to meet his, "guests," he called them. He looked them over and if they were particularly appealing to him, he would want to have sex with one or more after the filming. Neil was what Henry Kissinger called "versatile," which meant he liked sex with everything. I will spare you the details but he relieved himself sexually, often, as he felt it made him powerful and continually virile. That was very important to him. Neil said he loved the beauty and amount of innocence that was present when a group of blonde neighborhood children were together. They were filmed often. Neil also filmed bestiality porn. He gave the kids cocaine and filmed it in the house or somewhere on the grounds. Sometimes the 4-H kids brought their animals, and they filmed the kids having sex with each other and the animals. We were all just viewed as worker bees and mindlessly did whatever we were told.

When we left to go home, I once again entered a programmed mind state, by traveling "The Highway to Heaven," which I was told was Kanan Road. I was given the hypnotic command to "remember to forget," whenever I saw many signs and signals along the canyon roads, in their attempt to keep memory of these events hidden from my conscious mind.

At other times, if I arrived before Neil, I was told to wait and so I sat down on his white sofa. Obediently, I waited, looking straight ahead or out the window to the distant view. Then I heard the chopper and on one occasion he came walking into the house wearing a tan suit and sunglasses. One time he even wore those guru sandals with his suit. Then I helped him relax and he would say programmed phrases to me like, "Honey, you're ageless, timeless, and all mine baby, all mine. You are my pot of gold at the end of the rainbow. All mine, devoted only to me." I got him anything he wanted or needed no matter what it was, and I was programmed to love doing it.

Some nights I was assigned to go to parties with him where we'd, "hob knob with the rich and famous," he'd say, as he held out his arm for me to hold onto. We didn't stay too long at parties because he would want to have a private party for two at home. Some evenings we were helicoptered to his home in the hills. He wanted and demanded my full attention. He never wanted to enter the reality that I had my own boyfriend or husband. He wanted me to think of him as my man, my only man. But, he had sex with lots of people in front of me. He always wanted me to stay right in the room during the filming of porn as well as later when he had sex with whoever was filmed. He would flip out and act like an emotionally temperamental boy at times. Regardless of his actions, I was programmed to be totally devoted and I catered to his demands exclusively.

Neil Diamond was a Council "treasure" and they kept him well taken care of. I attended concerts of his to shore him up when he said he wanted and needed me to be there. I got up from my ticketed seat next to my young husband and told him I was going to the restroom during the intermission. Instead I slid backstage with Neil, who was all sweaty, shaking and needing to share the powerful high he was on. He said that all the energy people focused onto him was totally overwhelming him and he said he needed me to ground him out so he could go back on stage. That meant sex and then, as programmed, I told him I loved him and that he was the very best and to go out and give them all that he had. I told him if he gave all of himself to the audience who loved him, that they would shower it all back to him. He was always afraid that when he gave so much at performances that he would become depleted but I helped him reframe that belief, so he went back out empowered, not consumed. Then he would snort a couple of lines of cocaine and go back out to the screaming fans, and I returned to my seat next to Craig.

Craig and I attended another of his concerts at the Universal Amphitheater. Neil told me to drink a champagne cocktail, which at times was against the rules, but for the night he was my master. He said

he wanted me to catch up to him (he was on a drug high), but even after I'd had a drink I always came into focus for Neil and was instructed to mirror back to him what my controllers wanted him to be, do, say and feel. Lots of the words to his songs were program lock-ins for me ...like Starlight, Starflight, and Turn on Your Heartlight (ET). I was programmed to listen to his music to keep my programming and memories locked away from my conscious mind.

Neil used to say he was singing to me while he was on stage. That was pretty powerful for me to contain, while I sat next to my husband during the concert. In my conscious awareness I had no idea I was doing anything other than attending Neil's concert; but even as I sat in a conscious state of unawareness, the underlying feelings were powerful as I held my connection to Neil. We had an agreement that he would sing it all to me, send everything he had to me, and I would say, "And I will be here collecting all of you and I will bring it back to you filled with more love and more caring than you could ever imagine!" That made him smile. Then at intermission or after the concert, I'd go and give it all back to him to fill him back up. He pretended like he was taking it and then he dressed and went out with other people. Neil was hustled into a limo and was gone, and so were those parts of me that were programmed to go to sleep inside of me until they saw Neil again. Then Craig would come and take me home.

I also attended his Hot August Nights concert at the Greek Theatre in 1972.

Neil said he liked to be showered with love, and in response I was always soft and nurturing and loving with him. I catered to him exclusively while I was with him. He loved to trace his finger around my belly button to bring out "Jeanie."

I was still having sex and caring for Neil, even while I was in therapy in 1988. I went to therapy in Westwood and then swung home, down Pacific Coast Highway to meet Neil somewhere or at his home, have sex, and then I'd drive back to Agoura to my home, with "fresh fish" I bought for my family at the Malibu Fish Store. Bob laughed when he said it would be a good cover. Bob saw the world through a completely sexual orientation.

Stars had trouble getting "secured" sex with people. They couldn't trust that people weren't coming on to them to manipulate or hurt them, and since they were famous they couldn't risk losing their public reputation. So, slaves were provided to them. And Bob provided me to everyone he could, knowing the value of connections to powerful people. He laughed and said, "It's all right, she's broadening herself."

Word seemed to spread like wildfire to stars about the sex slave service. They loved it just like the politicians did, since they thought they could let their hair down and not have to worry because many were told I was a robot that couldn't ever divulge their secrets. With individuals not privy to the top-secret mind control information, Bob explained, "She's beautiful and highly sexual, but she's mentally slow and can't think. She doesn't have the ability to remember. She's been like this since birth, but...," Bob elucidated, "...what she lacks upstairs she greatly makes up for downstairs," and he'd smile slyly, "if you know what I mean."

Many people never knew that I was a robot, under total mind control. They just thought I was slow or deaf and dumb. That was another tactic Bob used. He had different explanations for different people, but for Neil Diamond, personalities were created within me who talked, listened, loved and cared for Neil.

Bob often called other men, "Son." I overheard him say, "Listen son, she'll please you and ease you and not spill the beans. She can't think to! But that won't hurt, it will only enhance your pleasure. Try it and see. I think you'll like it!" Bob maximized my usage by sending me to many, many stars and politicians over the years. He sent me to Quincy Jones, Burt Reynolds, Eddie Murphy, and others. Many of them didn't want to risk too much exposure with strangers for various and sundry reasons; they didn't

want to become too attached emotionally, didn't want to risk the security of knowing someone too long where a person could find out too much and hurt them in different ways, or there were other reasons unique to individual celebrities.

Mickey Rooney

In yesteryears, I was taken to show openings or galas in Hollywood, because Mickey would want me to be there, usually disguised. Later on after I had children, my daughter Kelly would be waiting inside the limo to give him oral sex. Mickey wanted me there to watch. Mickey always liked to have tons of women, as many as he could amass, flanked by his side. I overheard him say to Bob that it was good for his image. Bob replied, "Anytime it can be arranged for you to use any of my girls, I'd be delighted."

And that was arranged, over and over again. Bob made sure Kelly was trained in many of the same ways he trained me. We went to the Playboy Club for Kelly to have bunny lessons. I was dressed in a long black velvet gown with diamonds and Kelly had on a long red velvet gown with her hair done up and make-up. She was around 10 years old. All this to insure Bob's 'little filly' was prepared for use with whomever he decided to share her with. There were times Mickey Rooney would rendezvous with my family at a small exclusive restaurant in Agoura Hills. When the cues were given, Kelly would get up to go to the restroom and Mickey Rooney took over, later sexually pleasuring himself with our beautiful little daughter. He had a house near the area. I am not sure where exactly, but his house had a solarium with an indoor pool and he liked to have a lot of naked women around the pool. He was absolutely disgusting, but he really liked Kelly a lot.

Jane Fonda

I believe Jane Fonda was under programming, also. She was part of the experiment on how to achieve "eternal youth," while participating to further the cause in behind-the-scenes political arenas. I occasionally passed Council messages to her at her Beverly Hills Fitness Center. They had a control group within the project to see if women would stay youthful and cease to age with just mind programming, or if exercise needed to be combined with the programming. They had a control group participating like Jane with the same eternal youth program, yet not exercising extensively to see which method prolonged longevity. In case you are interested, they found exercise to be a necessary component for successful anti-aging.

James Taylor

My husband took me to James' concerts; we went often when he was in town. During one concert I had two glasses of wine. My instructions were that after I drank them I was to go to the restroom and then go to the backstage door, and knock two times. When the door opened, I said, "Bob Hope sent me. Anybody interested? Anybody want any body?"

"Hell yes!" a man in a casual shirt said, pulling me in the door. "James will need a little at the break. A little pick-me-upper for his pecker. You just sit down here little lady and get yourself HOT. No," he laughed, "cool your wheels or is that heels? Just relax your c--t until it's time for the hunt. James is almost finished with the set." He pretended he was yelling to James in a high voice, "James, she's here, the one you hold near and dear, the c--t from Bob the Boss man." Then he looked over to me and said, "Just a few moments and you'll be on the Highway to Heaven with James ...little Jimmy."

James stumbled off stage all sweaty and took my hand. I was feeling shy and he said, "Follow me on the Highway to Heaven. You are in for the ride of the night, as you ride my jewel to heaven. It will be out of this world, otherworldly, outta' sight!" He took me into a room and laid me on a couch chair and said, "Look into the air, don't beware, your chicken is cookin,' you're good lookin,' but aren't aware." He pushed my head over to the side real hard and continued, "Show me your wares." So I took off my

clothes and dropped them to the floor. He told me to sit and spread 'em so I did and he dropped his loose fitting off white cotton trousers on the floor. While he held tightly to the back of my head, he relieved himself in my mouth. "Oh, oh," he screamed, "that was gooooood. Swallow that please and then you can be excused." He swished on by, kind of dancy like and said, "That oughtta' propel me into the second half with gusto!"

He walked out, closed the door and I sat there like a robot until another guy came in and raped me on the couch. He said, "James saved your c--t for me this time." He stood over me and when he orgasmed he screamed, "I feel like a cock-a-doodle-do!" he said crowing like a rooster. When he was through with me he said, "Okay, its clothes time!" then he delivered a hypnotic hand command. I got up and pulled my clothes on and he led me out to the side door where Craig was standing at the door waiting for me. Craig took me by the hand, and I felt like a little girl going back to my seat where I sat robotically until the concert was finished.

Over the years I was programmed to listen repeatedly to James Taylor's songs while some of the word phrases "re-minded" me to, "...leave your mind behind, Mexico..." and "...you can run but you cannot hide, this is widely known ...."

Barbra Streisand

Barbra Streisand was used in the same way as other Hollywood celebrities before and after her. Through my personal experience with Barbra Streisand, I believe she is under the control of many of the same persons I was. She was pre-programmed to deliver messages she couldn't even have known she was passing on to millions of people. She sang her songs and was given carefully selected, pre-chosen words that would serve to lock in or open up certain programming in other mind control victims.

My own programming was laced with many of her songs. Victims of mind control hear the lyrics of a song and take the phrases that match their programming literally. The words they hear tie into subconscious memory of past traumatic experiences intended to keep them helplessly and hopelessly under mind control. Barbra sang a song entitled My Pa which I was told represented my feelings toward my father and the words were powerfully connected to my emotional state, creating a feeling of love and safety with my father, when in fact he was torturing me endlessly, nearly every day. The lyrics stated, "My pa can light my room at night with just his being there, and make a fearful dream all right by grinning ear to ear..." etc.

Her song, "I'm in a New York State of mind, " was tied to programming to orient me to events and people I was used with in New York in order to keep that reality separate from my conscious mind. Many of the lyrics from her song Memories, served as a hypnotic command to my subconscious mind, in order to 're-mind' me that, "Memories may be beautiful and yet what's too painful to remember, we simply choose to forget." Another of her songs, Send in the Clowns, reminded me and can remind other survivors of the abuse they endured as children in circus or amusement park settings where clowns were used as perpetrators. And, then there's her rendition of Over the Rainbow, which taps into Wizard of Oz programming themes.

As a teenager my cassette tapes and, as I grew older, my CD's of Barbra's songs, were well worn from endless listening, as the lyrics to her songs, coupled with my already intact program commands, continued to create my reality, whatever my controllers wanted it to be. Up until recently, my mother repeatedly listened to Barbra Steisand's songs. As a child I often had trouble getting my mother's attention because when she listened to the songs she became so fixated on the music that she was very far off somewhere in a programmed reality created by our controllers. She seemed very happy, almost euphoric. I've witnessed other survivors cling desperately to their Walkman delivering their programmed commands, while I'm trying to talk with them, due to their attempt to, as they've experienced, keep themselves "safe" by reinforcing their program "to forget."

When Barbra performed, which was rare, she was delivering a perfectly planned and orchestrated set of cryptic instructions to many of the people in attendance. She reached a wider audience, as mind-controlled victims bought the cassette tape or video of the performance and listened to it over and over and over again. Certain groups of mind-controlled people, like my mother and myself, were targeted for listening to her. Per program, we listened to her songs addictively and compulsively while following the command to reprogram ourselves by locking down the security of our own programming. Of course, Barbra herself is a victim and, from my observation, I am sure has no awareness that she is doing anything other than performing.

Barbra Streisand has extremely large breasts for her small body size. I've seen her naked at Bob Hope's parties and at other places. I was even involved in group sexual orgies where she was participating. And at other times, I was targeted to have sex with her one-on-one in order to deliver messages to her to keep her programming going or to instruct her on what to say at certain times. She is a mind-controlled robot. She did lots of cocaine at parties. She liked sex with women, and usually requested it. I was sent to her often.

My husband frequently took me out for dinner in Malibu when there was an alternate agenda to be accomplished. One night after such a dinner he drove me up a canyon road in his Datsun 280Z. He stopped along the road and we sat in the dark without saying anything until a black sedan pulled up next to the car. I got out and climbed into the back seat of the sedan. Two men in the front seat were dressed in dark expensive suits and the man in the passenger side had a gold pinky ring. They continued up a winding road to a house in the canyon and when we arrived they opened the door of the house with a key and went in. Barbra Streisand was robotically sitting on the couch and I was told to sit down next to her and link up by holding her hands. So I took her hands and then the man said, "Deliver the words." So I did. After I delivered the message, they used the stun gun on us both. Barbra laid face down on the couch, really out of it, with her hand hanging down over the side. Her face was very pale and she looked asleep. The man took me by the arm and pushed me toward the door and we left. Craig, still waiting in the Z, flashed his headlights and they stopped the sedan, transferred me back to my husband and we went home.

In September of 1986, Barbra sent out invitations to a special fundraising concert to be given at her home 'under the stars,' in Malibu. My husband received our invitation at his dental office and said we should go, but I remember saying to him, "It's $5,000 a ticket, what are you thinking of?" I was in school as well as therapy by this time, and spending $10,000 was a huge chunk out of the resources that I needed to spend on my healing and education. I was more interested in my recovery than one night of Barbra Streisand in concert.

My husband replied, "Well, it would be a great memory." Prior to this episode, Craig had never displayed any special attraction to Barbra Streisand or her music.

Later when she and I were both switched into a "programmed state of mind," she told me she was upset that I didn't buy a ticket to come to see her in concert at her home. Ironically, I ended up being at her concert in Malibu anyway to have sex with and target some military guy with a bunch of stars on his uniform and later after the concert, Barbra. I was incognito and wore my lace off-the-shoulder dress that I had previously worn for our family portraits. It was a $400 dress my husband bought me. I had to be at different places afterwards to help her relax and unwind, which usually ended up in sex. I had been instructed to say specific words to relax her. A therapist was there at other times to help.

When they could sell a certain number of very expensive tickets to her concert in the area of her home, they proved the results of a mind control project experiment to see if that targeted area was sufficiently under mind control. Checkmate! When it sold out they felt they had won because they sent the invitations to people that would be the hardest to control (the most challenging) and when it sold out they knew they had "cracked the code." Their victory was only temporary. As I now know, they were

mistaken, for, I believe The City of Angels (Los Angeles) is spiritually destined to wake up to claim its name to fame!

No one could tell there had even been a mind control experiment that concluded with Barbara's Malibu performance. This was one way the controllers made large sums of money, all carefully concealed in such "charity fundraisers," which were then meticulously funneled into covert accounts. And, they further locked victims in, not only with the concert but with the video that was made of the concert. During her Malibu, One Voice performance, Barbra delivered one program-laced song lyric after another. First she sang “Send In the Clowns.” Then she announced that in her research she came across one of the finest songs ever written, and the lyrics felt so relevant she decided to sing it and dedicated it to the woman who first sang it. That song was Over the Rainbow, and encompasses these lyrics:

> "When all the world is a hopeless jumble and the raindrops tumble all around, heaven opens a magic lane. When all the clouds darken up the skyway, there's a rainbow highway to be found, leading from your windowpane to a place behind the sun, just a step beyond the rain. Somewhere over the rainbow, way up high, there's a land that I've heard of once in a lullaby. Somewhere over the rainbow, skies are blue. And the dreams that you dare to dream really do come true. Someday I'll wish upon a star and wake up where the clouds are far behind me. Where troubles melt like lemon drops way above the chimney-tops, that's where you'll find me. Somewhere over the rainbow, bluebirds fly. Birds fly over the rainbow, why then, oh, why can't I. If all those little bluebirds fly beyond the rainbow, why oh why, can't I?"

To further explain the significance of these word phrases for mind control victims:

"...heaven opens a magic lane," was for me a hypnotic induction for mind control.

"...there's a rainbow highway to be found, leading from your windowpane to a place behind the sun, just a step beyond..." for me was a program command to switch to the Highway to Heaven, which was a dissociative state in which I went over the rainbow to a subconscious place in my mind where I was commanded not to associate what happened there with my everyday, conscious reality.

In Barbra's duet with Andy Gibb, they sang the song Guilty and the words that powerfully affected me and could effect other ritual abuse/mind control survivors are:

Gibb quickly enters the stage from behind singing, "there's danger in the dark," which for me was a subconscious reminder of trauma that occurs in the dark. Over the years, the word 'dark' was linked in my subconscious mind to ritual terrors and horrors, a reminder that commanded me to remember to forget, or else.

Further lyrics were:

"...Shadows fallin' baby, we stand alone..." - victims are often told they will be left to stand all alone, that no one outside 'the network' will believe or help them, or even want to be around them.

"...Nothing to be guilty for..." - a release for the endless ways many are forced to participate in the evil deeds, puppeted and dictated by our controllers.

"...Eyes can see, that we got a highway to the sky..." - victims are told they are always watched, by the 'eye in the sky' and in other ways by their controllers. Eyes are often a common theme in the art/journal work of victims in recovery. These three small words, "eyes can see..." have powerful meaning, sneaking through a subconscious doorway into the mind of a victim of mind control in order to remind them to watch carefully that they stay in line.

"...that we got a highway to the sky..." - can be a hypnotic induction to dissociate in order to receive program.

"...how can I win? Where will The tomorrow?" -words of despair, defeat.

The powerful ending to the duet is: "and we got nothing ...and we got nothing, and we got nothing..." Let me tell you Barry and Barbra, and all of the other beautiful people locked under the bondage of mind control: that is a lie, a lie our controllers told all of us. The truth is that we have everything. We are rich, starting with our spiritual heritage. The One that created us is powerfully working within to set you free from those who for years have benefited, by allowing you to soar, sharing your talents with others as they controlled and manipulated you for their own benefit, through mind control - through the control of your mind and mine. I wasn't famous, so when I broke free I wasn't as large a threat as you are and will be. I was small potatoes to my controllers. But to God I was important, as all His children are, and He has commissioned me to dedicate my life to seeing to it that you, some of the most talented human beings on this planet, are freed. This is His wish because He has assured me that you have at the center of your being, love, and that when you can know the magnitude of issues we face at this time, that you will stand and reach your hand down to your fellow brothers and sisters, to help them. At this time I am lending my hand, via Him, to you in hopes that some of you may be freed in order to reach your hands out to the masses. It is our last hope and we are running out of time. God has placed a great magnitude of love in my heart for you and my children, and I love all of you more than life itself, because indeed in sharing this information it would seem that I am putting my life at risk. But the Master Himself has assured me safe passage, as I go for help for all of you. And this manuscript is my attempt to "go for help," for you. I also am aware that those of you who are programmed will not be able, like oil reacting to water, to read or comprehend what I have written. But I hope others will intercede for you in order that you can be delivered from the bondage you have been held captive by. I love you, as individuals and for the beautiful heavenly creative talents you possess, but not as immensely as God does. He wants your freedom, He wants your release and He won't rest until you are all free of this evil force, one that at this time you are unable to be aware of.

As the concert proceeded, Barbra said, "I am going to light this candle in memory of all those wise and good men whose lives were senselessly and violently snuffed out before their time: Lincoln, Ghandi, Martin Luther King, John Kennedy, Anwar Sadat, Olaf Palmer, men of peace and vision, voices the world so desperately needs now - father figures. I think we've all lost someone whose guidance and wisdom we miss in times of fear and confusion, and this is for them." After which she sang: "May the light of this flickering candle, illuminate the night the way your spirit illuminates my soul." Sounds to me like bits and pieces of reminders of people I watched killed over the years.

Next in her backyard concert, Barbra sang Pa Pa, where the lyrics say, "Pa Pa can you hear me? ...Looking at the skies I seem to see a million eyes which ones are yours?" Again, there is the "eyes watching you" theme.

Next was, of course, Memories, with the lyrics reminding our subconscious minds: "Memories like the corners of my mind, misty water-colored memories like the way we were. Scattered pictures of the smiles we left behind, smiles we gave to one another for the way we were. Can it be that it was all so simple then or has time rewritten every line, if we had the chance to do it all again, tell me would we, could we? Memories may be beautiful and yet, what's too painful to remember we simply choose to forget. For it's the laughter we remember, whenever we remember the way we were."

At the end of her concert, in a patriotic quest, Barbra sang America the Beautiful and invited the audience to join with her in song.

During those years, (although at the time I was consciously unaware of my involvement) her therapist and I were often in charge of keeping Barbra stable and balanced. The therapist worked with her psychological state and I worked on her body, doing massage therapy, accupressure, polarity therapy, etc. All this was done to keep Barbra in shape and in line. She was fragile and needed a lot to keep her going.

I was called in often to shore Barbra up, especially in between times when she was out of relationship or having problems with her male friends. Later in her career, she had trouble even having sex with men. When she was alone, she would get scared at night and need someone. As programmed,

I'd go over after my children were taken care of or when our maid was there, at which time I was free to go at anytime. I held Barbra and did whatever she seemed to need to get her stabilized.

We walked on the beach a lot, especially after she bought the home away from the Colony nest (the grouping of homes she owned) and people that knew her. She bought a place just a few blocks down the street. It was very clever because if people thought they saw her on the beach, they could assume she was at home, but then she'd disappear into the anonymous home that was purchased in another name to give her the privacy she needed. Then her therapist and I could go to her there unnoticed. She wanted privacy even from her maids, and would arrange for her therapist and I to be with her. If she didn't call on the car phone and tell me, she would walk to the new house and call me from her bedroom. I was instructed to go to the front gate and from a call box tell the maid a coded message to give to her. Barbra usually gave the maid the rest of the day off, explaining she was going to be with friends. Then after the therapist and myself arrived, we would take her to "the house-house," as she called it. One night we were called out for a 'Barbra emergency' and when her therapist and I arrived we found Barbra in the closet upstairs at the 'house-house,' even before it was carpeted. She couldn't wait. She was all huddled into a little ball and crying with her hair all stringy and hanging in her face. She looked like a little frightened child. She was breaking down often and her controllers couldn't afford for her to break up yet. She was a real mess. She just survived to do what they needed her to do. She sat in my lap and I nurtured her and she showed me her dolls and things. I massaged her and did reflexology, accupressure, polarity, whatever I could do to help her. I did body treatments on her often, usually more than once a week - up to five times a week - and it usually ended up in sex as she initiated it.

Barbra had to be kept together because she had been used to make the connections to some very important people, and especially to the masses. Because she had been so heavily invested in, as a mind control asset, they now had to keep her "maintained" 24 hours a day at times and had to use other slaves to shore her up. Unlike a "normal" person, she could never talk about what she saw and remembered in private (during sleep or upon awakening) without being monitored. Whatever it took or cost was worth it to her controllers because they built her up to a certain targeted audience so completely that her controllers paid exorbitant amounts of money to keep her together, and her fans would pay any amount to see her. Many may themselves be under mind control.

They carefully prepared Barbra to harmonically control crowds. She did, not only with the natural talent she has and the trained harmonics in her voice, but also with the hand signals and word combinations she sang. She is a total robot and is breaking down, but they will spend a fortune to keep her together (like poor Elvis) until she just can't function anymore.

So no expense was spared for her. We organized little tea parties for Barbra based on different themes given to us by my professor in the Master's program. We'd buy items that were just made for Barbra. I would stop at Michael's Party Shop and give them the list of items and the sales people would gather it all up for me. Then I'd go to Barbra, switched to the personality inside of me who was created to be older than me and older than Barbra, the one who was designed to care for the "Big B," the "Queen B," when she needed it. She was our friend. We hated to see her crumble.

Sometimes the Council gave me different drugs for Barbra. She always got to choose one, but I think they all must have done the same thing, just packaged in different wrappers or capsules. As soon as she would pass out, and that is what she always did, a group of men would come into the house with equipment to work on her. Sometimes it looked like her body came off the couch from the electroshock. It was awful to watch. Then when they took the equipment off of her body, it would be cold and clammy, yet she would have a band of sweat on her face. It was my job, or her therapist's, to get her back on her feet again. Sometimes she would sleep for days afterward. Then I heard them say they had to adjust her, that is, give her more "sessions." When she came around we would be soft and kind and gentle to her and

eventually she would come out of it. A friend of her therapist helped Barbra, too, on nights she couldn't. It became increasingly difficult to manage getting her put back together. It was a team effort.

I gave her injections, also. I was taught to pinch the skin on the top fatty portion of her arm, then stick the needle in it so I couldn't hurt anything. I was given a syringe to deliver drugs to arms or thighs when and if the need arose, which later became quite often. I had to give Barbra the injections whenever they told me to; otherwise they would have killed us both. I'd seen them do it to others.

Barbra liked for me to sing with her and harmonize. She said it made her feel happy like the good ole' days when she was young. She had on pink bell bottoms and a white tank top. She was really out there, stoned, drunk, or drugged out of her mind.

The massage idea helped keep a slave enslaved and contained because the accupressure points often matched up correctly with programmed touch spots. It worked well. Bodywork eased the stress of the body while locking the mind in program - a great leisurely and heavenly containment idea to further imprison mind control slaves. With rich and famous slaves they said it was easy because they could send them off on endless journeys, trips, workshops, special spas, expos, etc., because these slaves had the money to pursue different avenues that often led them directly back into containment. The Colony is not far from Point Mugu Naval Base (a mind control programming center) and seems to have been in conveniently close proximity for reconditioning purposes. More on Point Mugu later.

They also programmed us to "psychically" deliver messages or directions for slaves to follow, since we all had the belief in psychic gifts, etc. and were so suggestible. To some celebrities (most of them women), while giving them a massage, I would touch certain 'points' on their body while dropping a psychic prediction and they would think I was really gifted when in a few days, my prediction would come true. The higher the level of the slave, the more the controllers were willing to invest financially to make the predicted experience "come to pass." Someone of Streisand's stature and programmed investment was worth a "prediction come true episode" that had class and dignity. This is not to say that I don't believe in psychic reality, because I do, but these psychic realities were created and controlled, by those who sought to create circumstances that were making them lots of money.

I was used with Streisand most often in 1985-1987, during the time I attended Pepperdine University in Malibu. Before 1985, I was sent to her when she needed me in the evenings in Malibu. Craig often drove me out to dinner to accomplish these rendezvous, but after I started at Pepperdine, I would tell him that I had to go back to the campus to study. I often parked in the Pepperdine Library parking lot where I was picked up by the men in suits and dropped off at Barbra's house. This way they had different cars going in and out. Lots of times I was told to go to her during daytime hours. I had a high level of fear that was present with me most all the time, only I was so scared and programmed that I was unable to think about it with my mind. But my pain-filled, often weary and exhausted body told the truth of my experiences.

Barbra switched personalities a lot. I think that might be why she was afraid to perform on stage. Those with 'the eyes to see and the ears to hear' might have greater insight in regard to an article written about her in the July 1994 issue of Ladies Home Journal. In it, when asked about her string of unhappy relationships and her inability to have long-lasting relationships, in her own words Barbra states, "I live with a lot of angst," and "I'm a mass of contradictions. I change and I grow. I change my mind all the time. So tell (whatever) man I'm looking for that if he likes to have affairs with lots of women, then I'm perfect for him!" Could she be referring to first-hand experience with Multiple Personality Disorder?

When she did perform, such as the concert she gave at her home in Malibu, she had to have someone like me to focus on internally, someone who was part of her programmed reality so she could feel stronger. To accomplish this she was programmed to pretend that myself or someone else was

standing next to her on stage so it would shore her up to do the performance. Then she performed, just like she was programmed to do, delivering her controller's strategy to the unsuspecting and perhaps partially programmed crowd.

I once overheard Henry say that he would give the public what they wanted and demanded celebrities and fanfare - since that was all they were capable of understanding anyway. He said most of the private sector were totally ignorant of governmental matters and that, since they didn't avail themselves to knowledge of the way their country was run, it was evident that they really wanted and needed for "those in the know" to take charge and run things. He said that since he and other leaders were interested and capable, they would do the job, making the decisions and seeing to it that things ran smoothly.

Hollywood celebrities are constantly tied back into the White House to add flair and drama, and to bring in covert funds, but most importantly to add diversion to keep the American public focused in whatever direction the controllers want, instead of having the public focused on what is really going on behind the scenes.

One time when I was shoring up Barbra at her home, I found her huddled down, crouching, wringing her hands, terrified. She looked up at me in a childlike manner and said, "I don't have to sing tonight, do I?"

I said, "No, honey, not tonight."

She replied in a childlike voice, "Phew..."

I felt frightened to see her acting like a child when she switched to very young parts of herself, and didn't know what to expect when she said, "Let's play with the clay again." She had a table where we sat to play with clay. It looked like a child's table for adult size people. She switched personalities often then, so we would have tea parties and play games to entertain her child personalities.

Her son also played different games with her. One time she dressed like a clown and was acting and kicking like doing karate and she yelled out, "Hey Jason!" and he came running and jumped into bed with her and started cuddling. Then they both went to sleep and, as instructed, I could then leave. Sometimes she wanted her therapist to join them and would say, "Come and see how fun Jas is." And, one of us would. We were all unable, incapable, and not of our own mind to choose anything else. Usually we cleaned up the mess she had made playing and then afterwards, would cover her up, tiptoe out of her room and leave.

I flew from Kauai, after I had these memories about Barbra, in order to meet with one of my therapists. She met me at a restaurant in Los Angeles and as I told her about the memories I had about Barbra Streisand the color drained from her face. Later, I understood her intense reaction, as I became aware that Barbra was her client. That day we both sat in shock and silence. I knew then that, although my therapist and I did not understand what everything meant, the love that we both believed in and the Holy Spirit that led us was ever-present. And not knowing what else to do, all I know is that the love and compassion I have for Barbra Streisand and all victims of mind control demands that I now share this information. I told Barbra's therapist everything I knew at that time, so she could attempt to help Barbra. Since I was no longer in California and easily accessible, I stopped being the one used to keep Barbra Streisand under program. I am glad for that.

Elton John

Elton John's, "Goodbye Yellow Brick Road, " with its obvious potential to trigger those with Oz programming, called my attention. Elton wrote Candle in the Wind, in regard to Marilyn Monroe, and he later produced a version in honor of Princess Di. He sings, "...you crawled out of the woodwork and they whispered into your brain, they set you on the treadmill and they made you change your name." He continues, "...Hollywood created a superstar and pain was the price you paid. Even when you died, oh the press still hounded you, all the papers had to say was Marilyn was found in the nude..." and, "...the

candle burned out long before your legend ever did." In Someone Saved My Life Tonight Elton sings "...sitting like a princess perched in her electric chair." "...You nearly had me roped and tied, alter-bound, hypnotized, Sweet Freedom whispered in my ear, "You're a butterfly, and butterflies are free to fly, fly away, high away, bye, bye." Perhaps Elton knows personally about these Project Monarch, mind control issues and in his own way, through his songs, has attempted to help others to freedom. I know that his songs personally affected me deeply and I felt that he might have 'understood.' So much so, that I attended one of his 1996 concerts at the St. Louis Riverport Amphitheatre and sent one of my books, STARSHINE: One Woman's Valiant Escape From Mind Control, backstage to him. However, I suspect that the stagehand that took the sparkling package from me never delivered it to Elton, since I never received his response.

We Are the World

Writing this chapter also brings to mind the video done in the 80's by a group of famous actors, actresses, and singers, who met in Hollywood with the special purpose of recording WE ARE THE WORLD. An urgent common concern brought these entertainers, normally competitive with one other, together and they set aside their differences to serve a higher purpose; bringing in funds for starving children in Africa. The line they sang, "We're saving our own lives," may be truer for some of these individuals than they can 'think' about due to the mind control some of them may be under.

This information I have provided to you may change the way you look at many of Hollywood's finest celebrities, many of whom myself and others have witnessed being victimized at the hands of the ruthless people who control others for reasons of power, money and domination, with the end result serving their agenda - the New World Order. I beg for you to question and look into these issues I bring before you, because the lives of many that are as yet in bondage rely on it.

If we truly serve others as we have been spiritually called to do, and understand that what we do for others we do for ourselves and ultimately for God, then we must join together to stop this control of the minds of some of our most talented and creative people. Together, we can help create a world that is safe and free, where creative and talented children are safe to grow up without the fear of being owned or manipulated by the hidden group of individuals who now are in power on our planet - a group who does not believe in freedom, but instead is invested in totalitarianism, torture, mind control and human slavery. Please help me expose and stop this insane form of abuse and hidden slavery and set the captives free!

"The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me, because the Lord has anointed me to bring good tidings to the afflicted; he has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to those who are bound." -- Isaiah 61:1

Chapter Twenty-two: Prince Phillip, Prince Charles, and Princess Di

"I Know You, l Walked With You Once Upon A Dream"

For mind control purposes, a song from Disney's Sleeping Beauty was instilled into my programming to keep all memory of hidden events separate from my conscious mind. The lyrics as I remembered them reminded me, "I know you, I walked with you once upon a dream. I know you, with you in my arms you're so familiar again... " I was programmed to feel familiar with kings, princes, and presidents and this song served to reorient me into my dream reality, the one that existed Over the Rainbow.

I was prostituted to Prince Phillip and also Prince Charles. On one occasion, Prince Charles explained to me that royalty are given the right and reserve to have affairs outside of the royal family. He said it was in the interest of their country for the royals to remain balanced and happy, and that was done by whatever means needed in order to accomplish that. The requirement was that they were discreet and didn't get caught.

I was prostituted to both Phillip and Charles in Los Angeles on different occasions and was set up with them at other times in Washington, DC, London, and New York. Prince Phillip thought he was God's gift to the world, and was arrogant and egotistical. Charles was much different. He was quieter, more somber, and more controlled. The Council told me it was important for me to form a sexual bond with him.

Charles liked to talk a lot in bed. He would lay on his side with his head cradled in his hand and talk and talk to me. He said that he was very lonely, that Di never talked to him about anything of substance and that they just didn't seem to be matched that way. He told me that they had good sex but that was it, and that he had trouble getting her to act like a member of the royal family was suppose to act so they could lead their country in the way it needed to be run. He said that she didn't have much depth and was more interested in how she looked than anything else and he said, "Frankly, that bores me."

While I listened to him, his sharp nose, dark hair on his chest and the little crop of dark hair right at the small of his back grooved indelible memory in my mind files. After the first time we were together, he liked to be on top when we had sex. I don't think he knew I was a programmed slave. He just treated me like a trusted confidant, a friend, a lover, but sex was never paramount to him.

Charles explained to me that it was important for the royal family to have a good public image in order to wield the power they have, to lead the masses. He said that if the royal family was seen as weak and unstable, it could lead to a level of chaos within the English society. He said if a royal family could maintain stability, through whatever means necessary, then it was for the good of the whole country. So said Charles.

The Rockefeller family set me up with Charles and I was instructed to just be a good listener with him and to report back to them what he said. They wanted to know what his dreams, desires, likes and dislikes were so that they could use that information in the future to control him, and ultimately, his country. They wanted to know his "Achilles heel" so that they could use his weakness to their advantage in regard to political and business dealings between our countries.

They arranged a trip for the royal couple to come to the United States and they took great care to set everything up just right for their enjoyment. I was used as a guide, a person they could turn to for anything they needed or wanted. I was directed to anticipate whatever needs they might have and fulfill

them. I was assigned to purchase Disney toys for the boys that were left in their room upon arrival. Food, clothes, rest, massages, shopping, entertainment, anything they wanted, I arranged it for them. They paid for Diana to get the full treatment at a beauty salon during the time set up for me to target Charles.

They put me with Charles while the rest of the royal family was being entertained and I was told to tend to him. As always, they told me that he was shy and, because of his position, could not ever make a sexual advance to a public individual. So, they explained to him that I was a trusted and safe person, and in turn instructed me that all I had to do was to come on to him; he knew the door was open and safe, all I had to do was lead the way.

While Di was off getting coiffeured and someone tended the children, I was told to lunch with Charles in the room and then to come on to him. When it was time, I reached out and touched the white dress shirt that covered his chest and when I saw that this created a favorable reaction, I reached out and took hold of his hand. I was trained that a man must feel sure that you care about him and will not humiliate or make fun of him in any way. He was to feel 100% safe with me. So during lunch, I listened very carefully to everything he said and kept building him up, complimenting him and showing him that I really understood what he was telling me completely. He seemed to need and like that a lot. Towards the end of lunch, he picked up my hand and kissed the inside of my palm and told me how wonderful it was to have someone he could talk to, someone who really understood. He explained that there were not many people he could talk to like this in his country, because it could leak to other people and then it could cause him and his country many problems. Prince Charles said that it had been explained how trusted I had been to the Rockefellers over the years and how he could also trust me, that I would keep private "our meeting," he called it. He was very sincere and acted like he meant every word he said. Evidently, Charles really trusted the Rockefellers. I don't know why. After he kissed my hand, I reached over and put my hand on his face and reiterated that he was safe with me and that I was thoroughly briefed on what his needs would be while he was visiting, and that he could totally relax knowing that anything that was said or done would remain private and protected. With sincere gratitude he said, "That means the world to me. It is not often that I am allowed this privilege."

The royal family was on a schedule and I only had a couple of hours to do the job I was assigned to do on Charles. After listening and a sexual rendezvous, I took him into the shower and soaped him down and rinsed him off, then helped him out, dried him off, and brought him some clothes. He seemed comfortable with all of the attention and I acted like I loved nothing more than doing everything for him. While he combed his hair he explained to me while he was looking into the mirror, that he was not used to the luxury of being alone in this way, that at home he always had servants attending to him and so he really liked the time we had together. Taking his hand, I delivered the message that I was pre-programmed to deliver, laying the groundwork my controllers dictated for future encounters. I explaining that I deeply enjoyed the time we had spent together and looked forward to many other such joyous occasions! He smiled and said yes, and I let myself out of the room. There were security men in the hallway by their suite and I smiled at them, neatly redressed now in my navy suit and heels, as I walked to the elevator.

My instructions after I left Charles were to go to a room down on another floor and let myself in with a key I would find in my pocket. Once in the room, I picked up the phone and dialed a number and began telling all the details of our conversation and time together. For all I know, I may have been talking to a tape recorder on the other end. Without making any other conversation, I finished my debrief and hung up. Then I went down to the lobby. The hotel was very elegant, with waterfalls, wood, glass, and brass decorating the lobby. I do not know the name or where I actually was.

Charles' repeated disclosure of the vital importance of his relationship with Di remaining stable for the good of his country was the information Kissinger and the Rockefellers needed to form their

strategy. I believe that now armed with this information, they had the perfect way to destabilize England, through destabilizing the royal couple's relationship. So they did just that and began devising a plan to destroy Di and Charles' relationship from the inside out. Over time, little seeds of doubt were planted, originating from Kissinger's and the Rockefeller's strategic plan, at times delivered through me, about the royal couple's relationship and about Di to Charles and about Charles to Di, and they may have worked them both from other angles. I know that they had me give certain messages that were meant to be a wedge between the two. They were always subtle, never aimed directly at them, but the inferences were there.

For example, I was sent in to talk to Di. They had me befriend her by giving me information about her that I could 'drop' at a time when we were alone. I did and she opened up and began crying, which is just exactly what they wanted her to do. Then I talked to her and helped her feel better. They wanted a bond to be set in place for later use so they could get inside information about England. Even more they wanted to know how they could "get to Charles" in order to influence him without him knowing. I was with them several times and each time spent time alone with Di talking about her difficulties. She seemed starved to talk to someone who understood and I had been armed with enough information to be that understanding person. Our controllers wanted the familiarity to 'breed' in each succeeding visit so they could have more and more of a doorway in to influence the royals. I overheard our controllers arguing about using me with her again. They said, "We can't risk having her become a familiar face." To which another man reported, "She's a long way from home and so is Di and they will never meet again by accident in a million years. You worry too much. These things always have a way of working themselves out."

So, the other man said, "Okay, okay, we'll use her, but just one more time."

I could relate to Di. We were both married, had children and shared some common ground, including having husbands that were not sexually passionate and seemed disinterested in that way. They were hoping to be able to keep Di involved because she was so easy to access - as they termed it, "loose-lipped." But that isn't how it worked out. After Di was comfortable with me, I was programmed to disclose that I wished I had a husband who liked to be very sexual with me. All the while my programmers knew from my report of Charles' sexual encounter that he was not a sexually motivated man. Then they could go about directing their media arms to capture and detail any problems that came between the royal couple, even at times creating problems that were not there in the first place - creating suspicions on both sides. It was an ugly strategy, but looking back, it worked. The monarchy was destabilized by this plan.

"We cannot live only for ourselves. A thousand fibers connect us with our fellow men; and along these fibers, as sympathetic threads, our actions run as causes, and they come back to us as effects. " -- Herman Melville

Chapter Twenty-three: They Stole My Baby

London, England was cold in the winters and was very cold and dreary. Many of the buildings I was taken into were made out of grey stone, and everything took on a greyish cast. Maybe that was due to the ominous experiences I had while in England. There were a lot of ornate black wrought iron fences around estates; even the parkways and parks often had fences surrounding them. I accompanied Reagan to London many times. I overheard that these were important assignments in facilitating diplomatic relations.

This time Ronald Reagan had on a black overcoat and we were walking across the street to visit an older lady with dark grey hair. She wore a hat and very sturdy shoes and a suit. I think she was the Queen of England, or at least someone of importance. It was not Margaret Thatcher, though. She explained that she could walk around in her country without Secret Service agents but chose wisely the time she went on "outings," she called them. She had a medium size dog that she took when she went on walks. She was very opinionated and very dominating. For some personal reason she didn't like Nancy at all and said that Ron and I made such a handsome twosome that it was a shame that Ron and I weren't a couple. She told him that Nancy made him look older than his years, and that a baby born of Reagan and I would make her happy. She said she felt there was some special chemistry and she wanted it badly. She was convinced that I was Sharon Weatherby and that I had excellent lineage. All this bloodline stuff really meant a lot to her and for whatever reason, I was the target. Maybe the Council influenced her and told her I was someone I wasn't. I don't know.

We gathered to talk in a sitting room with all white wicker furniture. There was a bird in a large ornate metal cage and there were lots of beautiful plants around. I remember how she and everyone around her spoke in English accents. They talked about the PLO and other news of the day, but I couldn't retrieve all the words in order to more completely remember their conversations. She had seen my capabilities; the mind files, the profound statements delivered in public (pre-programmed though they were by the Council), the wit (pre-programmed by the Council) and she felt I had some extraordinary genetic structure and she wanted some of it. She viewed this breeding thing like people think about horse and dog breeding. She was really into it and she had her mind set on having an offspring of mine coupled with Reagan, whom she thought was the perfect father.

There were many meetings where this subject was discussed and eventually she got her wish. The child I bore for her was the result of many meetings of negotiations over the years. The talks started out slowly as she and Reagan took small safe steps toward defining their otherwise preposterous scheme.

The child that was born for the Queen was to be brought up in a strict environment and groomed for later marriage into the royal family. It was a baby that was delivered into the arms of some of her people.

They said this baby was a gift of diplomacy between our countries. Reagan called the baby a peace offering to show the United Kingdom our willingness to extend a hand toward future relations with their country.

When the doctors were ready to deliver my not yet full-term baby, I was taken aboard an airplane. They laid me on a cot-like gurney made of white canvas on a metal frame. There was an IV bottle hanging over my head and I was afraid it was going to swing off its stand as the plane was entering turbulent weather. I couldn't say anything, because I had a mask over my face.

My baby was born in the air, delivered by doctors dressed in surgical gowns and masks. They had utensils and long-shaped stainless steel bowls with alcohol or some type of sterile solution for their utensils. There were no nurses. Just two doctors. The baby was also to be part of some experiment. As I flashbacked, abreacted, and retrieved this memory I felt the uterine contractions and pain, my tailbone hurt and stung because they gave me a spinal injection. I didn't have the baby naturally; I heard the doctors say the word "epidural," but at the time didn't know what that word meant.

After the baby was born and the plane landed, one doctor wrapped him all up in a thin white blanket and soon headed out the door of the plane with him. I screamed with everything I was: "NO! NO! NO!" But I don't know if I was able to scream the words out loud or if I was just screaming inside. Tears were streaming from my face. I looked out the airplane window and saw a dark-haired man and a woman with medium-length blonde hair standing together on the tarmac. The doctor who took my tiny newborn son from me handed him first to the dark-haired man who, in turn, handed him into the arms of the woman. The doctor then pointed for them to go on and I thought I would die when this couple took my baby and walked away.

When the doctor reboarded the airplane he and the other man said I made a wise choice and made a great contribution to society. I didn't know what they meant. I hadn't made any choice. As they spoke of matters of national security, I was becoming increasingly more hysterical. The doctor injected a drug into the IV bottle that instantly put me asleep. The next thing I knew I was dressed in a grey sweat suit and groggily walked out of the airplane to my mom who was dressed in a red sweat shirt, white blouse and red pants. She took my face in her hands and said, "How's my sweetie?" and she helped me to the car.

I overheard the doctor say the baby was of good size despite the fact that he had been taken so early. All I could see was the top of his beautiful little head because he was wrapped so tightly in the blanket, but my love for him was and still is intense and powerful. He was part of me, but they took him away. I never saw my baby again. I was grateful when they drugged me out of my misery because the feelings and experience were overwhelming and I couldn't take anymore. My body started shaking uncontrollably and I was freezing but they said it was okay - normal in fact. It sure didn't feel normal. I was in a daze for a few days, quiet, withdrawn and very, very depressed. My soul ached. It still does today.

The grief is totally encompassing. When I think of him I still cry uncontrollably. How could they steal my baby? How could they?

"Jesus wept." -- John 11:35

"Thus says the Lord: Refrain your voice from weeping, and your eyes from tears; for your work shall be rewarded, says the Lord and (your children) shall return from the enemy's land. And there is hope in your future, says the Lord; your children shall come again to their own country." -- Jeremiah 31:1617

Chapter Twenty-four: USC: Higher Education or Mind Control

Uncle Charlie Donates $4.7 Million to USC

In 1973, as Uncle Charlie greased the way, Craig entered University of Southern California (USC) Dental School and commuted everyday from our home in Agoura to downtown Los Angeles. As I was to later find out, Charles Lilley Horn had quite a name at USC, as well as in San Francisco at the United States Mint. He personally knew members of the Federal Reserve Board. As I discovered, he was connected to Federal Reserve Bankers; old money, and Hearst newspaper type of old money friends. Uncle Charlie was a direct link with the Council through the money he was able to generate. He was revered by those who knew him as a trusted businessman, a family man who was adept in politics and investments. I believe Charles Horn was the single most important family link to my control by the global elitists. The reality of what I was involved in was carefully concealed every Christmas when I dutifully sent a box of See's Candy to him and his wife at their winter home in Scottsdale, Arizona. I was drugged and programmed that this act of gift-giving reminded me to forget, which it did for many years. And, I was programmed to watch the popular television series, Charlie's Angels, in my controllers' attempt to cover and scramble my memory.

Charles Lilley Horn, as Chairman of the Board, retained control of Federal Cartridge Corporation for many years until relinquishing control around 1970 to his progeny, Charles B. Horn and William B. Horn, presumably his sons. Federal Cartridge Corporation is a munitions manufacturer, based in Minneapolis, Minnesota (address: 2700 Foshay Tower, Minneapolis, MN). Dun & Bradstreet Million Dollar Directory indicates that Federal Cartridge Corporation was a long-time subsidiary of the Olin Foundation, Inc. headquartered in New York City. The Foundation Directory shows that Charles Lilley Horn also was President of the Olin Foundation, Inc. throughout the 1960's and 1970's.

The Olin Foundation, Inc. (currently F.W. Olin Foundation, Inc.) was established as a charitable trust in 1938 for Franklin W. Olin, founder of Olin Industries, which later merged with the Mathieson Chemical Company, eventually becoming the Olin Corporation of today. During the 1970's, the Olin Corporation was interlocked with the Chase Manhattan Corporation, whose Chairman was David Rockefeller (see diagram). The Rockefellers, of course, have long had controlling interest in the United States Federal Reserve, which as many people know is actually a private corporation, with shareholders.

According to The Foundation Directory (1995), the F.W. Olin Foundation, Inc. (with William B. Horn, Vice President) listed its assets at $317 million (as of 1993). The Directory describes the Foundation's purpose and activities as "primarily for constructing and equipping new academic buildings and libraries at private four-year, accredited degree-granting colleges and universities..." In the book, Understanding Foundations (1967), the Olin Foundation, Inc. is similarly described; it states, "Many grants in education are made, especially for construction. Grants show a preference for the field of engineering... Recent recipients have been the University of Southern California..." (among others). This information was confirmed by the USC Office of University Advancement, indicating two grants given to USC in the 1960's by the Olin Foundation: (1) In 1964, $2.4 million to fund the Olin Hall of Engineering and (2) in 1965, $2.5 million to fund the Vivian Hall of Engineering. With these donations, it is no wonder that Uncle Charlie (Charles Lilley Horn), who was President of the Olin Foundation at the time, was popular at USC, particularly with the Engineering School which is currently located in Olin Hall.

Interestingly, during the 1960's the USC School of Engineering was transformed into a major research facility and expanded into several new areas, including biomedical engineering. Today the Engineering School boasts several academic departments and research centers. One such research facility is the Center For Neural Engineering, which lists among its research activities: (1) Hardware

Models of HippocampusToward Brain Implants as Neural Protheses for Memory Loss; (2) USC Brain Project; and (3) USC DARPA (Defense Advance Research Project Agency) UltraScale Computing Project- to name a few. Apparently, the USC Brain Project is sponsored by the National Institute of Mental Health (NIMH) and the National Aeronautical and Space Administration (NASA). It is also worth mentioning that the DARPA project involves "Hybrid Neuron-Silicon Computational Systems For Pattern Recognition" which includes the interface of electrode arrays with hippocampal tissue slices and neuron cultures, as well as growth techniques for cortical neurons on silicon substrates, and even technologies to interface silicon-based computer systems and neurobiological systems. In 1998, the USC Alfred E. Mann Institute for Biomedical Engineering received a donation of $100 million from biomedical entrepreneur Alfred E. Mann, for whom the Institute is named. The donation was said to be one of the largest in the history of higher education, and is second largest ever to USC, behind $120 million donated by Walter H. Annenberg to the School of Communication.

Standing back and looking at this patchwork picture painted above, highlighted by advanced research projects in biomedical engineering and incredible amounts of funding, one cannot help but be struck by the obvious potential at the USC School of Engineering for major advancements in the technology and application of MIND CONTROL!

HELLOOOOOO!

Now, ask yourself, why is DARPA (American Defense) operating in a university setting? What are they actually researching? What do you think is really going on?

One can see that foundations don't always make donations to university academic departments that one might expect, based on the donors' apparent line of business. Another example is the H. Leslie Hoffman and Elaine S. Hoffman Foundation, with assets approaching $20 million. H.L. Hoffman was the CEO of the Hoffman Electronics Corporation, a long-time Los Angeles-based company since 1932, in the business of manufacturing various electronic devices, generally entertainment related (including special ones for government agencies). The USC Hoffman Medical Research building is named after its donor Elaine S. Hoffman.

The Hoffman Engineering Company, located in Minnesota, is listed as a division of Uncle Charlie's Federal Cartridge Corporation. Hoffman Engineering makes metal and composite enclosures for electrical and electronic controls, instruments and components. I wonder if they made covers that house those nasty ECT devices I was regularly zapped with? To date, I haven't yet determined a linkage between Hoffman Electronics and Hoffman Engineering, but that Hoffman Medical Research connection sounds promising. Apparently later on, Federal Cartridge and Hoffman Engineering merged to become Federal Hoffman Corporation (FC Holdings, Inc.). In 1988, the company was purchased by the Minnesota-based Pentair Corporation, increasing Pentair's total sales by nearly 40%, and is currently listed as a subsidiary of Pentair in the Directory of Corporate Affiliations. After that transaction, Uncle Charlie's relations no longer appear among Federal Cartridge Corporation's corporate officers, but instead have been listed among the officers of the Olin Foundation, according to the Foundation Directory.

Uncle Charlie continued to be an invisible influence in my life. But even though I was unaware of this, in my public and conscious reality I was still working as a dental assistant, though unknowingly placing dental implants (some type of miniature electronic transmitters) into the teeth of unsuspecting patients, without my own conscious knowledge and awareness. My four day work week for Dr. Jacoby, a USC dental school graduate, was extremely productive, for him. While I did all the hands-on dental work with his patients, including fitting and cementing bands, making archwires and headgears, removing braces, making retainers, and performing general check-ups, Dr. Jacoby sat in his private office and either read magazines or worked on his computer. At 22 years old, Craig and I had no idea that our lives

were totally controlled and not our own; nor could we have known that we were living our lives under total and complete mind control.

Who Are the Annenbergs?

Moses Annenberg made his fortune during the Prohibition days by creating an information monopoly on which bookies and gambling mobsters depended. His cartel controlled a nationwide racetrack news wire service, The Trans-National, headquartered in Chicago. The street savvy he gained first as a newsboy, then later as a high executive within the William Randolph Hearst media empire, gave Annenberg the wherewithal to pull off his racing news coup, and made him one of America's wealthiest men. However, in 1939, Annenberg was convicted of tax fraud and was forced to give up the wire service aspect of his business. This brought about a battle to take over control, which resulted in several sensational murders, including that of Bugsy Seigel, who, as Al Capone's west-coast agent of Trans-American, managed to wrest control over Trans-National through the strong arm tactics of his 'enforcer,' Mickey Cohen. Annenberg's media empire then continued on as Triangle Publications and included the Daily Racing Form.

By 1946, the dust cleared, but all the turbulence soon brought about a Congressional investigation into organized crime in America, headed by Senator Estes Kefauver's Committee. Following its hearings, the Committee concluded that mob-control of the racing news wire service was undermining America and represented the heart of mob operations. During 1950 and 1951 the Kefauver Committee heard from 600 witnesses, "...including most of the powerful gangsters of the day. It was an astonishing spectacle. Never before did so many criminals pass in review before the general public; never before were so many put on display singly or in tandem as members of a single community of outlaws." (Albert Fried, 1993)

During this time, Walter H. Annenberg had dropped out of the Wharton School of Business at the University of Pennsylvania in about 1930 to join his father's company, as a bookkeeper. In 1942, he became the company's president. As head of Triangle Publications, Walter Annenberg started two new hugely successful publications, TV Guide, America's best selling weekly magazine, and Seventeen magazine, and continued in his father's path as a media mogul. In 1988, Rupert Murdoch, a leader in the media industry, purchased TV Guide, Seventeen, and Daily Racing Form from Annenberg's company for $3 billion. The following year, Annenberg established the charitable trust known as The Annenberg Foundation. Its current assets are listed as $2.6 billion.

According to the Foundation Directory, the Foundation's current primary purpose is to support "early childhood and K-12 education (including public school restructuring and reform)." In 1993, Annenberg announced a $550 million gift, the largest private donation ever to benefit education, providing a series of grants for school reform projects geared toward improving elementary and secondary education. Regarding this donation, the Los Angeles Times (Dec. 17, 1993) reported: "Although White House officials refused to give details of the awards, three groups are expected to get a major share of the money: the New American Schools Development Corp. in Alexandria, VA [which is not far from the CIA's Langley headquarters]; the Coalition of Essential Schools at Brown University in Providence, R.I.; and the Education Commission of the States in Denver [boy, that area has been in the news recently, first, the JonBenet Ramsey murder mystery and now the Littleton school massacre]. The New American Schools Development Corp. was begun in 1991 [coincidentally, just before the 1992 election year] by business leaders and George Bush Administration officials who believed that they could develop more effective and creative learning programs outside the traditional public school system [I guess George's presidential lap would qualify in that case]. This colossal donation came on the heels of one just months prior, a gift of $365 million to four colleges, including the record $120 million donation to the University of Southern California, as mentioned earlier, another $120 million to Annenberg's alma mater, the University of Pennsylvania, $100 million to Peddie School, Annenberg's preparatory school in New Jersey, and $25 million to Harvard University [Henry's old stomping ground]. After creating the

Annenberg Institute for School Reform, the Santa Monica - Malibu Unified School District received a $500,000 grant from the Los Angeles Annenberg Metropolitan Project. Prior to that, according to the L.A. Times (Jan 24, 1996), Annenberg had given $53 million to fund a fiveyear school reform project in Los Angeles County, purportedly "to begin work in elementary schools to wipe out [cultural] differences between the two groups [i.e. Santa Monica and Malibu kids]." The School District, after receiving a $5 million share of project funds, reached an agreement with Rand Corp., a Santa Monicabased 'think tank,' to evaluate the projects impact on the District's 10,500 students. Rand Corp. has long been known for its technoinformation-oriented projects, and is reputed to have participated in 'MKULTRA-like' projects during the 60's. Note two of its studies: P-2575 "Long-lasting Effects of LSD on Certain Attitudes in Normals: An Experimental Proposal" (1962) and P-2676 "Experimental Designs for Investigating Conditioning" (1966). In its Index to Selected Publications of The Rand Corporation, it lists among its areas of research investigation in the field of psychology, the following: "Automata," "Laboratory Man-Machine Studies," and "Sleep Learning" - many projects under these headings appear to have mind control applications.

The Annenberg Estate is a sprawling 300-acre tract, located near the intersection of Frank Sinatra Boulevard and Bob Hope Drive, in Rancho Mirage, California (near Palm Springs) and features a private golf course, swimming pool, and several lakes and ponds. Nicknamed "Sunnylands," it has been the magical destination of the British Royalty, as well as the simply rich and famous, and is considered a second "Camp David" by U.S. Presidents. Walter Annenberg established his friendship with the British Royals back during the Nixon Administration, when he had accepted the post as U.S. Ambassador to the Court of St. James, Great Britain. Later, during the Reagan Administration, his wife, Mme. Ambassador Leonore Annenberg, functioned as chief of Protocol to the White House. Their tie to Prince Charles was solidified during his visit to Sunnylands in 1974, when he reputedly attempted to play the private golf course polo-style from his golf cart. Bob Hope, whose home is in Palm Springs, was a regular guest at the Annenberg Estate. He was valued for his many contacts and his contribution to the Annenberg's social register, which at times included Henry Kissinger. Incidentally, Bob was knighted by Queen Elizabeth several years ago, as was "Sir George Bush."

Given my personal, though mind-controlled, involvement with Pete Wilson and others, in altering the California school system curriculum to include mind control (which I will discuss further in a later chapter), I believe my experiences reveal a mass plan for the 'enhancement' of many children in ways that do not respect their freedoms. I invite the public to help me bring together the pieces of this puzzle, in a way that will protect future generations.

USC Dental School 1973 -1977

A big part of what I thought was our entertainment during my husband's dental school years was frequenting USC football games. When we attended the games, I was told to dress immaculately, and be ready with carefully groomed hair, make-up, and polished fingers and toenails for the team. During the game I was programmed to stand up from my seat in the stadium and walk out through the tunnel to my left. My husband, now a USC Dental School student, stayed in his seat just like he did when we went to Dodger games. I walked to the locker room where the team went during half time. Lots of times I didn't even see whom I was servicing. I just felt like a sucking machine. On one such occasion the coach dressed me in a little cheerleading skirt and had sex with me in front of the mind-controlled football robots that needed extra incentive to work harder, or as the coach said to them, "Step right up and enjoy the pussy. Get it while it's hot," he'd say, like he was a street vendor and I was a piece of meat. Then he would caution the players, "But only if you perform today." If the players did well, performed to the coach's standards on the field, they got to have sex with a slave. If they did really well, they got to have one of us for the evening. I never stayed all night but entertained for the evening. I don't know where my husband went but he was waiting, later that night in the dark, for me in his Datsun 280 Z. There were also USC basketball mind-controlled robots. I had to have sex with one of them in the locker room after a game we

went to one evening. It was just a quickie since they didn't view the basketball team as important as the football team.

O.J. Simpson was their star quarterback, their prize athlete, a real machine. He played at most of the USC football games that we attended. I remember hearing everyone talk about how the coach bought him an expensive new car. One time Henry gave some advice to the coach on programming that he appreciated.

One night at an alumni meeting, the coach spoke to a group of older alumni men around a table. They were all smoking and drinking at this so-called meeting. The coach said, "This young lady has a very wealthy uncle and she's a Trojan all the way." Then another man stepped forward and helped me onto the table as they started playing the song "the stripper" and I took my street clothes off and danced in front of these drunken men. I was around 22. The men in charge seemed to all know who I was and where I came from. They seemed to regard me more as my Uncle Charlie's than as my husband's.

After I stripped, a man helped me off the table and one drunken USC alumni yelled, "Put her back up on the table and let's see her put her clothes back on. If she's gotta' put them back on, let's watch." So I climbed back onto the table and a man kindly put a chair up there for me to sit on because I had nylons to put back on and it would have been hard to do standing up. They were screaming and hollering which clothes to leave until last so I did as they said. On the way out I kissed the coach on the cheek and smiled and waved to all the men as they whistled and cheered. They were drunker than skunks. I was trained to always kiss the man I was bolstering on the cheek and be affectionate with him in front of the other men. But if the wives were there I was to remain discreet. There were different rules for different situations. After that, I was passed all over USC, not as much among the mind-controlled robot students as the dirty old' alumni men. I don't think the men knew I was under mind control, but I believe USC Coach Reddin did.

I was prostituted to the Dean of the Dental School after Craig got accepted. Dean Walker and Dean Crawford also seemed to be 'friends' of Charles Horn. I was prostituted to Coach Reddin, also, at times, like I cited above, in front of the football team for incentive. And there were a lot of other important persons at USC in the main university, aside from the dental school, whom I was directed to "cater to." Some of these men seemed to know all about my Uncle Charlie's family. I felt strange because, depending on which personality I was keyed into, I didn't think of him as my family and didn't ever see him consciously, yet all these men referred to me as Mr. Horn's niece, Susan. I 'serviced' administrators at the main college and heads of different departments. Usually, I was briefly introduced to them in their offices and then after a football game or on an evening when I thought Craig and I were getting together with some of his classmates, I'd be taken to a hotel room to entertain one or more of them. From what I overheard and understood, Uncle Charlie had a big role in providing funding for the "furthering of education at USC." I believe a lot of his money went to further research or mind control 'projects,' such as different members of the football team. USC had to be full of mind control robots because USC was granted huge sums of money if they participated in the mind control project. So, they participated in the academic and sports end of it in order to qualify for the grants. Plus, of course, there were persons in positions of leadership at USC who were part of the 'elite' group.

Mind Control Demonstrations

I was "demonstrated" often at USC in front of doctors, scientists or other professionals who were 'selected' to be a part of the project. The moderator, who was a big, tall, salt and pepper gray-haired man introduced me as Charles Horn's niece, the founder of the project. Perhaps Uncle Charlie's money went to start the project at USC in the early 60's. Be that as it may, the moderator showed his audience how I worked by calling out simple commands. Initially they weren't shown much, because what the moderator was attempting to do was enlist the aid and future work of some of these scientists and doctors. Half the

men present already knew all about the project and were there secretly posing as people who were unaware. In actuality they were planted to influence the moral attitudes of the other individuals; they would agree easily in hopes that others would also agree, comply and join their research program. It usually worked as they said, "To get them past any hang-ups they might have in regard to the fact that we're working with humans instead of animals." Then they proceeded to explain that the subjects were originally defective in some way or they would say, "all the results are actually doing is enhancing the person's abilities, not hindering them in any way." They went to great lengths to condition some of these men slowly over the first few meetings.

They demonstrated my typing capabilites, "speed and accuracy," the moderator said as he took the paper from my typewriter and showed it around the room. Then at later meetings they would demonstrate the photographic memory enhancement or some other 'enhancement' this project had provided me. Initially, some of the men were not so much in favor of it or were hesitant, so they were not invited back to subsequent meetings. In this way, the project's secrecy was protected and not further exposed to those who wouldn't support it.

Uncle Charlie seemed to have done his part by keeping the money coming to them. The goal of the group at USC was to turn out thousands of "enhanced citizens" who would do their work and function on behalf of the cause. Because Charlie was popular there, so was 1, and they had plans to create some fine physicians, lawyers, dentists, oral surgeons, etc., who lived in or around Los Angeles, so the likelihood of them remaining in the area was larger than the out-of-state people. They planned to make good use of them in the future after they were secured in their professions. They laughed as they said, "Hell, they'll owe it to us for making them some of the best professionals in their fields, so they won't mind donating some of their time back to their old alma mater!" They needed a cluster of professionals in and around the Los Angeles area to funnel illegal money through their business' at a high level, but many didn't even know their names were attached to separate monies filtered in at selected banks who were positioned for just this purpose. There was a whole financial framework set up to support the project in the future, with every year, yielding more and more financial backing as the children were born and used to create more and more funding, and then their children eventually would attend USC or another affiliate school to crank out more "cooperative" professional graduates. I overheard a lot while I was waiting at a meeting to service some man afterwards. But as instructed, I was recording into a mind file, what was said at the meeting in order to report back to Henry.

Henry programmed into my mind a map of the campus at USC because it was such a large campus. And when I would have to go somewhere to service some man, he would tell me to go to D-3, for example, on the campus map inside my head and I'd know where to go. There was also a coding system to keep track of where I was to be at a certain time at a future date. I went to many different buildings on the USC campus for various reasons; sex and to pass messages to different scientists, professors or doctors.

There were times I was taken to a USC football game the whole entire game, just for one man's sexual pleasure. Craig was so focused on the game that he never seemed to notice I was all messed up or that the perfect make-up that I had arrived in was smudged or that my hair was messed up. Some of the men I serviced had big motorhomes that they parked right outside the stadium or on the grounds of the Coliseum near USC where they would picnic and party with their friends before the game.

USC was a pilot project in Los Angeles, one designed to harness and utilize some of the finest minds in the country. These were the cream of the crop, some of the top achievers from all over the nation and they wanted to utilize them. They felt that mind-controlled doctors, especially surgeons, were 100% more accurate than non-enhanced doctors and surgeons. They were experimenting to see if by showing young interns how to do surgery visually, they could retain the procedures. There was an inner group of selected students who were chosen based on their childhood histories to be a part of the pilot

project. They felt they were creating super humans and used them to do their work. They used the technology on my husband and some of his lab partners. I know because I heard Henry talk to Reagan and other "insiders" about this. He also made appointments for me to get 'treatments' there. Some rooms at USC marked "authorized personnel only," at first seemed like dark rooms for processing photos but they weren't. Instead they had chairs similar to dental chairs with goggles for virtual reality. The chairs vibrated, turned, and became hot or cold and made it feel like the scene I was seeing came alive. It sounded like, and the goggles made me feel that I was spinning in space, swirling and spinning, and I got very, very dizzy. They exposed me to a lot of weird scary things. They also played very loud, irritating noises, like high shrill screeches and 'nails on a chalkboard.' It was often excruciating but my hands were immobilized on the chair arms so I couldn't reach up and pull the headphones or goggles off; I dissociated in order to withstand it. These experiences happened to me on days when I went to the dental school in order to have Craig work on my teeth. After the dental work was completed, then I had this other torture. This was during the time Nixon was President, then Ford. Reagan was Governor and Kissinger was still in office.

The Council heavily used USC, and many 'enhanced individuals' were turned out to work for 'the cause' and proliferate, creating more new little Trojans. Those working for the New World Order saw "the takeover" wrapped up since the numbers would snowball each 20 to 25 years. My children would be destined to continue at a college or university that could 'further their enhancement.' The Council also knew how easily they could shape the minds of the students at the university, since their minds were as yet uncluttered and they could teach them.

These people were heavily into breeding and genetic bloodlines. They said things like, "Hell, people pay more attention to breeding their horses and dogs than they do planning for their future progeny," and that, "People in the project, however, have been fortunate enough to have that research and selective breeding done for them, so their offspring will be of the highest quality. It's time we quit wasting precious space on this planet supporting inferior human life. It's time for a quality race to people this planet."

This was the evolutionary step they saw. And they felt that, "since the common man can't think to bring about these changes on his own, we who are capable are left with the responsibility. Someone has got to do it, or we will be annihilated."

"Let us then approach the throne of grace with confidence, so that we may receive mercy and find grace to help us in our time of need." -- Hebrews 4:16

Brice Taylor - Thanks for the Memories, pp 186-211

Chapter Twenty-five: Baby Monarchs are Born

Craig and I decided, at least I thought we decided, that it was important for me to take additional means of birth control to insure that we did not conceive a child while I was working to put Craig through dental school. Dr. Stoddard referred me to Dr. Harold Lusk, a Hollywood OB/GYN who, on my first visit, examined me and told me not to worry, that my female reproductive organs were in such bad condition that I could never have children. I was so devastated that I couldn't talk, much less question the doctor. I drove home numbed by the news. Later that afternoon, sobbing through my words, I told my husband that I would never be able to have children.

Craig called Dr. Lusk immediately and was told that I had a disease called endometriosis, plus fibriod tumors and cysts, that the doctor explained were common in upper and middle class women when they put off having children until later in life. I was only 22 years old! He told Craig that if he performed surgery on me it might be possible for me to get pregnant, but that we would have to start the process of trying to have a child, immediately. Over the next year, I had two major surgeries for what I was told was to correct the damage, and began the medical process of dealing with what I was told was infertility. When, after the two so-called surgeries, I didn't get pregnant, as a last resort, Dr. Lusk gave me a fertility drug called "clomid," and soon after, I became pregnant. I continued working as a dental assistant until I went into labor and gave birth to our first child, Kevin Craig Ford, on October 19, 1975.

The Birth of Kevin Craig Ford

Late at night, as my labor progressed, we were met at the hospital by a group of anxious hospital staff. Craig phoned ahead alerting them that Susan Ford was on her way to the hospital. They thought I was Susan Ford, the President's daughter. I guess this was understandable due to the fact that Nixon had stepped down and Gerald Ford was now President. They thought I might have twins, since I was so huge, but after an intense natural childbirth, Kevin was born and was immediately taken away from me for what seemed like a very long time. They told me it was standard procedure despite the fact that there were no complications. But later, suited men came into my hospital room. One man took a syringe and some type of drug out of his briefcase and, while he was readying the injection for me, I began screaming, "Where's my baby? Where's my husband? What did you do with my baby?"

As he injected a drug into my arm, he said in a calm, emotionless voice, "You see me but you don't see me. You can't see. You can't see me." Waiting a moment for the drug to take effect, he said, "You need to calm down. . .just calm down. . . down. . . down. . . down. . . down... one ...two...three...going down ...deeper now ...going down. You're in the well, next to hell, and everything that happens there, oh well, or is it oh hell? You're there."

Taking my pulse, he continued, "This is our baby. Don't ever forget, it belongs to us. You will hand him over when cued. You will not react. You will simply hand him over, like he is a sack of groceries. Do you understand? Nod your head if you understand."

I nodded.

"Good, very good. This way no one will have to get hurt, we don't want that do we?"

I shook my head no. I felt very drugged.

"Good," the man said hypnotically. "Bad things happen if you don't obey. Very bad things."

I felt very sick, very tired, and very terrified. I couldn't breathe, I was too scared. "They'll take my baby," I thought, terrified beyond words. Frantically I worried, "Who will watch my baby, what are they doing to him? Help, I can't get help. No one can hear. I can't talk, I can't tell. THIS IS hell!" Afterwards, of course, I couldn't recall or think about any of this traumatic event.

After a brief hospital stay, Craig and I brought Kevin home and began trying to parent this baby who would not suckle at my breast and cried non-stop.

I was programmed not to lock the doors to our home in Agoura and often men in suits let themselves into our house. They always had guns and sometimes a knife. These men usually came in threes - one to handle and torture my baby, one to torture me, and one to guard the door. The men said they had a "little treat for the baby." They went to Kevin's room and took him out of his crib, where he was sleeping. They held Kevin in front of me and threatened me, with a gun pointed to my temple. They said that if I didn't cooperate they would cut his penis off, or slit his throat. At times they would cut him and make him bleed. Watching helplessly, as they hurt my baby, was the single worst nightmarish feeling and experience. I wanted my husband to help me. I wanted him to protect us, but he never did. Now, I understand that he never could.

The men did different things each time they came to harass us. At times they took Kevin into another room and while they had him, another man restrained me. I stood silently and helplessly while I tried to listen to what was happening to my baby. The agonizing silence was intensely painful and was always followed, after what seemed like forever, with the screams of a crying baby in excruciating pain. God, the screams and the torturous crying were nearly unbearable to listen to. I was so helpless. I could not help myself, nor could I help my son. Another time they asked me if I wanted to see a "blue baby" and then one of them proceeded to stick his thumb down my baby's throat until he turned blue. The lead man always said that if I cooperated and did a better job, they would not have to subject my son to this. But they tortured us no matter how well I did my job.

And, it is said that America is the land of the free and home of the brave. Where oh where have we strayed, so far from the ideals set forth for this country?

One day my infant son was swinging, peacefully sound asleep in his wind-up swing, when they came. They threw a glass of water into Kevin's face to wake him up. He cried and the suited man picked him up and carried him around the side of the garage out of my sight. Dying inside, I waited anxiously, hoping they wouldn't hurt him again. After the silence came the horrifying crying and screams. The suited man carried him back, his baby bootie was off and blood was dripping all over. Holding a razor blade up to me, he said, "Solve this problem my little cutie." He handed me my screaming son, who was dripping with blood. When they left, I took Kevin into the house and sat with him on the couch, sobbing, rocking him, and trying to stop the bleeding with a towel I wrapped around his little foot. He cried so hard that he was sweating and sniffling, gasping for air and sobbed himself to sleep.

Our neighbor, Ron Peters, was one of Governor Ronald Reagan's bodyguards. He was usually around when I was used with Reagan in California, but didn't appear to be the lead man. I never knew when these men would barge into my home. Sometimes they even arrived in the middle of the night. When this occurred, I was programmed to walk to the front door and open it, and the men in suits would push their way in. They often pushed me into Kevin's room and closed the door. Craig always slept and never woke up to protect us. It was always the same torture, horror and threats to both my baby and me, and when they were finished they would leave. These hellacious experiences happened over and over and over again. At times, in those early years, there were instructions given over the phone in the middle of the night, but later on there was programming done that paired tones on the phone with different instructions. I responded robotically to the different tones I heard on the phone. A programmed part of me knew the instructions that matched the tones and knew just what they meant and how to respond.

As my programming dictated, I robotically delivered my baby to my father's welding shop where I handed him over, probably for further trauma programming, and left.

This kind of trauma, tied to my maternal instinct, was enough to keep all the programming intact. It kept hidden the awareness of my use in high security work for the government and other secret criminal activities I was involved in without my knowledge, consent, or awareness. In my conscious

waking state as well as my sleeping hours, I was unable to think about what was happening to me and my family, but after Kevin was born I began to have excruciating migraine headaches. I also had stomachaches, colitis and constant pain in my female organs. My body was expressing what I could not.

My husband graduated from dental school and immediately set up a dental practice on Topanga Canyon Boulevard in Woodland Hills. I continued to work out of our house, doing dental lab work, so I could stay at home with our baby. I also began working part-time at Craig's office. During the hours I worked away from home, Kevin was left at a babysitter's house in the old neighborhood where I grew up in Woodland Hills. When he was out of diapers he filled a long-awaited slot at Little Oaks Preschool, in Thousand Oaks, California, where he, and later, the rest of my children were further ritually abused. The fact that I had put my baby on a preschool waiting list just weeks after he was born was not a detail I could reflect on. Nor, did the fact that I left him at the home of this babysitter who gave me a very dark, gnawing eerie feeling that wouldn't go away, ever hit me mentally. I could not, due to the mind control I was under, consciously think about any of this.

Each year my husband and I would attend the American Dental Association's annual convention, which was often held in Anaheim, California. In addition to the regular dental convention agenda, I was programmed to switch and then slip off to side rooms where I presented the latest in mind control technology for the dentists who wanted to own the best assistants money could buy, complete with all the latest enhancements available. Then at night we went to Disneyland. On several of these nights the park was closed to the public at large, in order to entertain the dentists and their families. Our controllers never missed an opportunity to combine functions so that they could accomplish two or more things at once. Of course, at Disneyland my family and I were reprogrammed and reconditioned in order to preserve our high level programming. Nothing was ever what it seemed and often there was an alternate agenda, a parallel reality going on at the same time as a publicly acceptable event.

Back in Agoura, there were nights I was triggered to walk out of our home on Valley Heights Drive to the waiting car of Secret Service agents or other men in suits in order to be flown to many different destinations. Clothes were always provided and were kept separate from those I wore at home, lest I gain access to my memory by the sight of clothing I had worn on a "government mission."

Drugged

My husband's dental training came in handy, as he was adept at injecting my arm with drugs that our controllers wanted me to have. There also were flat, round, chalky tasting tablets, the size of Rolaids, that he gave me at times before I was taken away by the Secret Service agents. There were lots of drugs given to me orally and intravenously over the years and I never knew what they were, I simply dissociated and complied when they were administered.

Around this time, my husband announced that he had located a beautiful piece of property in an exclusive area of Agoura, called "Old Agoura." Wanting to share his find with me he drove me down a little one-lane country road that led to a secluded dirt road. We entered a beautiful rural area, dotted with huge oak trees everywhere and there was a beautiful stream that went through the land. Craig introduced me to Aaron Funk who was the owner of one whole side of the street. This stranger announced that he was hand-selecting his neighbors for this exclusive area, and we were to be among them. This property was located less than a block from the entrance of Bob Hope's 2,324-acre Jordan Ranch. Within days, an agreement was struck, and although my husband was fresh out of dental school, and our funds were extremely limited, he made a financial deal with Mr. Funk to purchase the acre of land for $78,000. This close proximity to Bob Hope's property factored into my family's abuse, heavily. (See appendix for map.)

When I was to be used at parties - like at the Queen Mary the night of a supposed dental party we attended where I was later taken away to service Bob Hope and Alan Cranston - first Craig put some liquid drug into my drink and I drank it as instructed, "Drink it like a shooter, one gulp and it's down." Then Craig gave me some drug from a plastic bag that he pulled out of his suit pocket. He took the white powdery substance and wet it on a mirror, put the liquid into a syringe and injected it into my arm. At different times, he gave me shots in a variety of places - my arms, thighs, hip and buttocks. Sometimes he tied a rubber tourniquet very tightly around my arm before he gave me the injection. These injections hurt sometimes, especially the ones in my lower arms near my wrist. Sometimes he would try to use veins there and the shots really stung. My husband was an expert in laying out this drug paraphernalia in preparation for readying me for an event. He knew my arm like a road map and where to hit the good veins.

A man in a suit frequently delivered a supply of the drugs to our house, intended for me. He left it high in the top corner of the garage, taped to the wall. I saw Craig retrieve it from that location on a number of occasions.

My husband also injected me before porn was filmed. They were still using me in porn in my 30's. Craig injected me, just before my use, oftentimes when I was in someone else's car ready to be taken to my assignment. If one of the kids came up at that time, he would yell at them to get back in the house. Sometimes there was a certain smell to certain drugs, almost like sulfur. When porn was filmed in the dental office, "Dr. Ford" injected me or gave me some tablet or wafer to eat, beforehand. I don't know what the deciding factor was as to whether the drug was given interveniously or orally, but I sat in the dental chair and watched as my husband mixed up the powder on the dental tray, liquidized it, placed the liquid into a syringe and then shot it into my arm. Only then could they start the porn. I was always drugged before filming pornography.

As our children grew older, they also were drugged before they were used.

While retrieving some of these drugged memories, I didn't feel any emotions. It was as if I was just a "doll" and not real. Rag doll is a very common program theme among female slaves. Bob used to refer to me as his doll.

It took two years after retrieving these drug memories before I could actually begin to feel the pain and betrayal of this act performed, unconsciously, but still, by my own husband. And, until I had a sufficient amount of memories of our early cross-programming, I could only see my husband as a perpetrator, and not as the victim of the same evil system that he truly was.

The Birth of Our Second Mind Controlled Child
Bob Hope's "Little Filly" and George Bush's "Bush Baby"

In 1977 we decided, or it was decided for us, that it was time to have a second child. I kept saying I wanted to go to Maui to conceive this second child after dental school. Actually, our controllers had planned it all. Craig and I arrived on Maui and he told me to dress for dinner. Being in the mood to celebrate, Craig made us a Hawaiian cocktail in our hotel suite. It tasted like a combination of a Mai Tai and a Pina Colada, and it must have been drugged. I drank the drink as we watched the beautiful Maui sunset from our balcony. Then I went into our bedroom and dressed in a beautiful clingy, long purple dress and we went out as my husband had told me I thought to dinner. Instead of what I thought was going to be a lobster dinner, I ended up staying in a hospital for a few days. In fact, I was flown from the island in a helicopter, with a facemask on through which I was breathing some kind of drug, to a hospital where they did something to me (I believe Kelly was genetically engineered) and I was in this hospital for awhile. The doctors wore green surgical scrubs and did something to me vaginally. I don't know exactly what. They had test tubes, the glass kind that were very long and slender, and they looked at each other

over their green facemasks. They didn't speak out loud but their eyes looked very serious. I had an IV in my left arm that was tied to a board with cotton and gauze around it. After that night I became deathly ill, severely nauseated, and I don't really remember much else that happened on that trip.

When Craig finally picked me up after they finished with me, they had me dress once again in my purple dress, and then Craig took me to the awaited lobster dinner. At that time there was a switch in my personality system and I didn't (couldn't) consciously know what had transpired. But that is how I really got pregnant with Kelly. Craig and I weren't allowed to have sex for awhile, but were allowed to as they said, "enjoy it in your mind." Kelly was the classic blonde, blue-eyed prototype, with large cheekbone structure, and all the right things they wanted for her to be sexual. Years later, Sylvester Stallone would comment that Kelly looked to him like a little 'Bo Derek.' The UCLA doctors were in correspondence with other doctors on Maui. When I got pregnant with Kelly on Maui in June of 1977, they monitored this conception heavily. When we returned to the mainland, I found out I was actually pregnant. I began spotting and my doctor recommended I go to bed, which I did for a few days until the spotting ceased. Kelly has a personality named Papaya, in honor of, and use for, Hawaiian experiences. As I remembered this experience, in obedience with my programming, my heart started racing and I felt like I was having a heart attack.

Our daughter, Kelly Suzanne Ford was born on February 23, 1978, and from then on Kevin wasn't always the main focus of the torturous trauma - Kelly was.

The torture and trauma began right after her birth. While we were still in Valley Presbyterian Hospital in Van Nuys, California, three men in suits came into the hospital room and closed the door. They took my new baby girl out of her bassinet, held her up and put a pistol to her head. Another man put a gun to my head and the third man stood guard at the hospital room door. The man holding the gun to my head said, "If you fail to follow our instructions, just one time..." he clicked the gun, but nothing happened, "we will just have to kill this precious little one." Then the man holding Kelly took a wad of Kleenex off my hospital tray, wadded it up and put it into the glass of water on my tray in order to wet it. He held my precious baby girl faced downward and forced the wad of wet Kleenex into her mouth, interfering with her ability to breathe.

With a gun to my head, I watched in absolute horror and terror, as my baby girl choked and gagged and then went limp in the man's arms. I thought she was dead. Then he said, "That's all it takes. It's as simple and easy as that." He took Kelly into the bathroom and did something to revive her because she was breathing again, and began crying loudly. The man literally threw her into my arms and said, "Mama, your baby is crying, maybe she's hungry." Then, they forced me to breastfeed her in front of them while they watched and then they left. The hospital nurse never knew they were there and since I was programmed, I was unable to think or remember it had happened so that I could get help. That was one of Kelly's first life experiences - one of her first birth traumas.

As an aside, I will share with you the reader, that as I sought recovery and understanding of what was wrong with me, I attended groups for people suffering with Multiple Personality Disorder. It was an enlightening time of new understanding as I met and shared with other Multiples, some who were RN's, intensive care nurses and therapists also attempting to heal. It leads me to wonder if some of the nurses and doctors in the hospital who attended the birth of my children were themselves programmed and controlled? In one particular Christian group I attended for Multiples who had been ritually abused, in the opening prayer, an MPD'd, ritually abused nurse prayed for the Lord to heal one of us so we could expose this atrocity and get help for the others. As she made her request, I knew it would be me that would heal and go for help. I healed as fast as I could, but help didn't come as quickly as I would have liked.

When Kelly turned three months old, our family moved into a large doublewide portable home on the recently purchased Chesebro Road property in Old Agoura, where we began life as "chosen"

neighbors. Soon we had an architect draw up plans to build a large two-story home. The open, undeveloped area provided access to our family in many ways. Aaron Funk moved away and we were left on the street with only one neighbor. Helicopters could land in the adjacent area, and Bob Hope's Jordan Ranch would later be used for countless encounters; none of them were pleasant.

Our lives went on and, as programmed, I dutifully delivered my little daughter to Point Mugu Naval Weapons Base in California where military men took her from my arms wrapped in a beautiful pink blanket my mother knit for her. They kept her for a long while and then brought her back out to me. Sometimes when they needed to have one of my children for programming I was instructed to park my car on Las Virgenes Road, just past Agoura Road, and the men in suits picked us up and drove us the rest of the way to Point Mugu.

As Kelly grew a little older, at around age two our programmers laid her by my side on a gurney where we were both hooked up to sensors all over our bodies - head, chest, and pulse points (wrist and neck artery), in order to monitor something. What exactly, I don't know. The men working on us wore surgical greens so I assumed they were doctors. Kelly and I were drugged and totally out of it. I watched as my little baby daughter's eyes rolled up in her head like she was convulsing. Sometimes they put a mask over our faces to further drug us or injected drugs into our forearms and sometimes there was even an IV bottle left to drip for us both. There was one IV bottle, with the tubing split into two, one for me and one for Kelly. They also hooked us up to sounds delivered through earphones and often added bright lights. It felt like they programmed Kelly and I through sound and light by hooking us both up to wires. It seemed like we were getting a blood transfusion, but we were connected to wires instead of tubes and there was no blood.

There were also water experiments. They put me into a metal ball with a door and plunged me into the water, spun it and immersed it deeply. It was hard to tell what was going on from my position inside. It was very dark and very confining. I just pretended I was somewhere on the beach until it was over. If I had to guess, I would say they were doing experiments and research on the mind and the brain. Sometimes we were encapsulated and were weightless. There were all different sorts of chairs; some were for electroshock. One had a headrest with a band on it and straps for our wrists and straps for our ankles. They would zap me, and Kelly would be in the same kind of chair facing me and then they would zap her. It was horrific to watch her being tortured. They would have to almost carry her off when it was through because she was so out of it. The electoshock was usually the last thing they did. But before the electroshock, sometimes we were subjected to virtual reality machines, like moving rides we entered with a video screen showing pictures with lights and sound. After we were in it for awhile, they took us out and tested us with EEG and EKG equipment and asked us to fill out questionnaires, or they would ask us to write down the answers to questions they casually wrote down. The questions were related to what we had just seen, how we experienced it, and how we felt or there were questions about different personalities within us; maybe they were checking our programming or our inner systems.

There were other machines we entered where the floor tilted while our feet were tied down and we'd lean over, and sometimes there were mirrors where we looked distorted. There was lots of virtual reality equipment. One apparatus was a helmet with front eyeglasses attached with wires all over. They placed it on me and I saw a visual of lightening striking the top of my head while I was feeling electroshock to the top of my head. Then I heard the words, "You feel no pain. Hit by a bolt of lightning yet you feel no pain." After all this they tested me neurologically to see if I could walk, touch my nose, etc. Once I was tied inside a big roller and, with hands and feet tied spread eagle, they spun it real fast and then took me out. Kelly wasn't always there, but she was present more often than I care to remember. I remember the two of us laying next to each other on the gurney with towels over our bodies, IV's in our arms, with glasses and goggles on and we were totally drugged. There was a dolphin tank at Point Mugu, with an underwater window where they could watch as we swam with the dolphins. Swimming with the dolphins usually signaled the end of it. After that, we were returned to our car that was parked somewhere in Agoura or in the canyon.

I thought United States military officials were supposed to be in service to protect and defend their country and its citizens. Where are the high ranking men of honor that protect and defend the women and children in this country? What has gone wrong?

Genetic Engineering

Soon after I had finished breastfeeding Kelly in 1979, I continued to have severe pain in my female reproductive organs that no one seemed to be able to help me with or understand the origin of. Dr. Galloway, the doctor that delivered Kelly, admitted me to Valley Presbyterian Hospital in Van Nuys, California. Late in the day I was assigned a hospital bed and understood that my doctor had ordered a D & C for me. He explained that this was standard operating procedure.

Later on, I was taken into surgery, a mask was put over my face, and I was anesthetized with some sort of gas. It was nighttime when they performed this procedure on me that wasn't a real D & C; they really took my ovum for in vitro fertilization with other genetic strains. "Ideal genes, from healthy stock," they said. I cannot identify the doctors who were doing this to me.

Before I became pregnant with Kevin, they had taken other ovum during times when I was previously hospitalized for so-called "surgery." They thought I couldn't hear, but I could hear and see what they were doing. I was out-of-body and could hear and see everything they did. Their perception of reality seemed to be limited to the physical world. They didn't yet understand that a person could be out-of-body, that it is possible to take your consciousness out of your body to see and experience events in other locations. While my body was lying on the operating table under anesthesia, from my out-of-body position overhead, I could see their side of the table with equipment they used to take my ovum and a special dish with a special solution that they used to put the ovum in. Immediately upon placement of the ovum into the dish, a nurse came in and quickly took it away somewhere.

This is genetic engineering. These people do this a lot - they steal women's ovum to experiment on. They take good genetic stock. This is why, later on, I wanted a hysterectomy; subconsciously, I wanted to stop what they were doing.

I recorded in my memory files what I overheard the doctors say that night in the operating room: "Her children by her husband are inferior to those created here. We can team this ovum up with superior sperm to create a superior genus. These children will one day rule the world and we will be able to weed out the weaker genetic strains. Room must be made for this advanced race. The plan has been carefully orchestrated. It will come about with "our strains" in leadership. We have chosen the genetic strains of leaders, those whose drive is to lead, and to that end we have "strained in" health, intellect, and leadership qualities. These children will be raised in isolation, like the leaders in the shadows and will be taught advanced skills from birth meditation, diet, emotion modulation, and will be fed a strict diet of higher knowledge. The rulers of the future will be elite in every way, shape and form. We have spliced her genetic health and intellect strains with those perfect physical forms of the intellect donor to create the perfect species - both male and female. These strains will rise to the top. The forms will be so advanced that the normal human species will not be able to compete, and so ours will be the elite - the ruling class - and the lower forms will be the so-called worker-bees. There is no way the normal man can compete. Ours is the elite. We will soon have enough of our people grown and implanted with our direction and our wisdom, and now that we know how to program their minds from birth, we will have total and complete control. They will be ours - a race - a genus we can be proud of, created from the best genetic structure on earth."

They said, "The future on earth belongs to the scientists. It is time we weed out the inferior races."

Under the direction of my doctors, I mindlessly and compulsively charted a graph of my temperature to know when I was ovulating. Now I understand why that was so important. They even did

an experiment of combining my genes with those of my husband's best friend and colleague. On one occasion, while he was performing so-called "oral surgery," while I was under anesthetic, they had him mount me to impregnate me. Then, I was instructed to report to UCLA where they took the sperm-fertilized egg from my uterus. They compared which genetic structure was superior - between those created in vitro and those created by a natural union and then taken from the body to mature.

This determination to create a 'superior race' is, as you may remember, the same drive that fueled Hitler's regime in Germany. One needs only to read Linda Hunt's book, Secret Agenda: The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip, and then visit the Holocaust Museum in Washington, DC, in order to put two and two together. If you observe some of the pictures of innocent people in the concentration camps as they are being used for brain and behavior experimentation, it's easy to ascertain that more was occurring than just the torture of innocent Jewish people for religious or racial purposes. This experimentation was also done intentionally in order to further the understanding of the mind and body, and how people could be controlled.

We as a people have not fully embraced the reality of the horrors in Germany that were perpetrated on victims there, and to that end we allow it to continue to the present, as those who should have been prosecuted for their war crimes often went free. As a matter of fact, through Project Paperclip, many were brought to our country by the Office of Strategic Services (OSS), which was our own intelligence apparatus at the time. They were placed in our major universities and hospitals to continue their unconscionable scientific research. It was through the invaluable wizardry of one of these Project Paperclip Nazis, General Reinhard Gehlen (German Intelligence Specialist), that our fledgling CIA came into being just after World War Il, and the "Cold War" was born.

Len Horowitz, in his book Emerging Viruses: Aids and Ebola - Nature, Accident or Intentional? points to a linkage between Henry Kissinger and General Alexander Bolling. He mentions that Gen. Bolling played a major role in Project Paperclip as well as the Joint Intelligence Committee, a newly formed administrative unit that recruited former Nazi scientists expert in mind control. Their combined research activity soon led to classified projects that paved the way for the CIA's Project MKULTRA. Horowitz also links Kissinger to oversight of project MKNAOMI, a military program to develop biological weapons having genocidal application. The Rockefellers, who spearheaded a national eugenics movement, supported research activities of similar nature to Project MKULTRA and MKNAOMI through their preWW II funding of the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute whose director was, at one time, Joseph Mengele's superior. As you may remember, Mengele conducted horrific medical experiments at Auschwitz, many that were related to mind control. All of these facts are discussed in Horowitz's meticulously documented work.

From reading I did after I reintegrated and deprogrammed, I began to understand that the newly created CIA and the Rockefellers with all of their money and foundations, carefully researched and hired top former Nazi scientists to carry on their personal belief in creating a "master (Aryan) race." They are doing so through mind control experimentation and genetics research in systems within the confines of carefully white-washed hospital or university research facilities, not to mention military bases.

The Holocaust has not ended, it has just gone underground, and the victims are silent due to the mind control they have been put under.

I believe these scientists have fallen short in their understanding that, while the physical, genetic structure a baby is born with is very important, God in His perfection has patterned a life for this child. When this is altered by human intervention, it no longer can serve the highest purpose for the child's lifetime. It is not just the physical structure that rules a life of a child. A 'soul' is born into the body, and if left to the natural order of God in His infinite wisdom, there is a higher agenda and purpose to be accomplished. How can man in his finite wisdom begin to believe that he can out-create the Creator? I

don't believe that physical perfection is the main goal here. Scientists will forever be lost in their own egos until they realize the absolute divine and perfective nature of God.

Dental Office Money Laundering Schemes

Arnold Stengle was our first accountant, but was replaced by Bruce Frank who was an accountant from Soquel, California. He directed me how to handle the dental office books from his Northern California office, and visited our office every now and then in order to further direct me. To give me instructions, he would sit across from me at my little office in the back. I would put my hands up to my head, my elbows to my knees and in "ready and alert" program stance, I would listen as programmed to "every word spoken." And he always had lists upon lists of 4digit number series. I don't know what they meant, but I would rattle them off later to different people, especially Reagan.

I also was programmed to report to different banks in the area. One was Safra Bank in Woodland Hills. On a typical day I went to the Safra Bank underground parking and when I entered the parking lot I was programmed to switch to Sharon. Then I went into the bank. When I entered the bank a man in a suit was waiting and gestured for me to go to a woman teller. I did as instructed and handed her the envelopes that two men had just given me in the underground parking lot. I never knew exactly what was in the envelopes, but when the teller opened them there were usually checks and cash. When the transaction was completed, I drove back to the office, switched now to Susan, and not having a clue that I had just been used to perform an illegal banking transaction for my controllers. Years later when I filed for divorce, my California attorney, Doug Wolfe, told me to go sign papers at Safra Bank before the divorce could go through. I remembered feeling really scared, but I went to the bank like I was told and signed a paper a man put out on his desk for me to sign. When I was through at the bank a man later used a stun gun on my back near my waist as he said, "You're a real waste, do as you're told to do and nothing more, nothing less, or you will be a mess."

Reagan Is President and Our Vice President is a Pedophile

Over the years, Kelly was closely tied into the trauma I received. Repeatedly she was tortured and traumatized in front of me in an effort to keep me in line. Her torture fragmented her psyche in order to create multiple personalities within her, so she could follow in my footsteps for later use as a "presidential model." Unfortunately, she didn't have to wait very long for that so-called "privilege" as our newly elected Vice President at the time, George Bush, was/is a pedophile and Kelly was created to be, as I later found out from a renegade CIA operative, what was called a "Bush Baby."

Barbara Bush brought snacks in on a tray to the delight of the children clustered around her husband. The kids munched on animal cookies with sprinkles on top as they listened to the Vice President read them stories. The reality created and the accompanying program he delivered was, "You are what you read." This was during the time they lived in the house with the flat rock fireplace. The fireplace had a stone bench that you could sit on in front of the fireplace and George had his easy chair near it. There was a brown coffee table and a couch, and hunting pictures of Springer Spaniels holding birds in their mouths and pointing, graced the walls. George was into that sort of stuff.

Barbara thought I was there as a representative of the new educational system being implemented in California, which was true, although I wasn't consciously aware of it, and she was told that the children were there to demonstrate to the Vice President just how well the new system was working. But later, when the demonstration was over, Bush would take Kelly or another small child to the bathroom or to "show them something special."

During the time the Vice President disappeared with my daughter, Barbara often made lots of small talk, always smiling, cheery and pleasant, speaking nothing of importance. She talked a lot,

especially when her husband was out of the room. I was on edge, even under mind control, as parts of me sensed that my little girl was being hurt. The connection between mother and child often makes physical presence unnecessary to know the status of one's child, and it was difficult to carry on small talk with Mrs. Bush while my child was being raped. The Vice President brought Kelly back when he was finished. She looked dazed and out of it.

Bob Hope arranged many other times for George to be with Kelly in different and more private settings. There was a weekend retreat home the Bush's went to in the mountains, so they could relax, and George would take their dog out hunting wild fowl. Barbara stayed inside and baked and did needlepoint, like a typical housewife. I believe that she was unaware that her husband was molesting droves of little girls. George always said he had a special place in his heart for little girls.

Bob Hope Utilizes His Little Filly Asset

When Kelly was brought to Bob's parties, he gave her as a gift to known pedophiles that liked little girls. Then, he really owned these men. He would act like he really thought it was okay to have sex with a child, to men he knew were pedophiles. Without actually saying it in words, he portrayed that attitude and then after the person had raped the child he would say something like, "Do you know what news like this could do to your career?...to your family?" At the parties, these children were kept in a back room. On nights I was programmed to act as 'the hostess,' I was instructed to escort men back to the room where the children waited for this expressed purpose. I was even programmed to facilitate their choice in which child they wanted for the evening. Sometimes, acting from program, I even offered my own daughter to these men.

Kelly was brought to Bob's on nights when men who had "younger preference" were in attendance. Bob used that term with people like George Bush. When Kelly was nearly three years old she was provided to George Bush to satisfy his pedophile desires. Bob invited a group of men with "younger preferences," and later provided them with a group of children, both male and female, for their pleasure.

With people he really wanted to own or use he would take pictures of the molestation with hidden cameras. He knew just how to get to these people. Then afterwards he would show them a picture of the rape of the child and say, "We sure don't want these pictures, or any others like these to get into the wrong hands and ruin your entire career, do we?" Then he would simply tell the man what he wanted, in exchange for impunity. It usually had to do with getting another "friend" of his into a "key" position in the government, looking the other way when a case came down, or getting a bill passed or vetoed. He knew just how to control these men and they usually complied.

In 1993 as I was attempting to get free and get my first book published, due to the fact that I was not cooperating and "staying in line," I was raped and then forced, under mind control, to pose for pictures that if shown to others would have totally discredited me, making me look like a perpetrator. In this type of scenario, the media is called in and a person is publicly discredited--end of threat! Back in the 60's and 70's I watched as people in positions of authority were set up and compromised in the same manner in order that they could be used. And in the 90's I watched with horror, as many of the dedicated individuals who were attempting to end this abuse and help the victims, were publicly discredited, often via mainstream media channels.

Hunted by Bush on Hope's Jordan Ranch

George Bush was one of the men in safari uniform on Bob Hope's property who hunted me when Kelly was little. Bob was laughing when he laid down the rules. "There will be no running, or hiding, you will simply stroll along the path, skipping, if you like, dancing if you wish, but NO running, until you are TRAPPED. It's inevitable, there is no escaping it, especially with an expert hunter like George." Looking me in the eye, Bob said, "Are there any questions?"

I shook my head no.

"Good, then remember, every step you take may be your last." As a helicopter touched down off in the distance in this rural Jordan Ranch area, Bob said, "Bush will be coming from a different angle."

I walked down the road, which with every step I took, became more and more like The Yellow Brick Road that I had been programmed since childhood to follow. I was absolutely terrified, waiting to be attacked, killed. . . whatever; I didn't know what they had in store for me this day. I walked for a long time and it felt like I was hallucinating along the way. In my mind, playing over and over like a horror movie were Bob's words, "Every step you take may be your last."

In my blue jeans and red checkered shirt, I kept walking. I was still walking when it got dark and I was really scared then because I was so far away from where I had begun. My arm ached from the injection they had given me in the bend of my arm and I rubbed it wishing I wasn't so alone in the world. I was getting frantic, totally panicked by now and I just kept walking. Nothing seemed real anymore. I felt like a caged animal and I couldn't remember the rules any longer. I was trying so hard to remember exactly what Bob had said, thinking if I just did it right that I wouldn't get hurt and my children would be safe. But my drugged terror was escalating, and I couldn't think anymore, I felt like I was losing control.

After what seemed like a very long time, George Bush stepped out from an old outhouse-type structure that was on Bob's ranch and calmly walked over to me, "Betcha didn't think I'd ever be hiding in there, did ya?" and he laughed. "Well, I like to play hide and seek a lot but there's only two of us here so let's play another game that only requires two, the two of us."

I nodded, frozen in terror.

"I just happen to have an apple. A beautiful red apple here in my pocket." He pulled the apple out and said, "I know the game is supposed to be played with a bow and arrow (I'd been accidentally shot with an arrow in the jaw when I was five) but I forgot mine. I did remember however to bring my revolver." And he pulled a gun out of his other pocket. "Now, this game is called William Tell, and you get to play William. Here, you stand over here, so if I miss, the bullet will go into the tree instead of traveling wildly out of control."

He placed me in front of an oak tree and put the apple on top of my head. By now I was crying. I couldn't help it, I just couldn't control it. "Please don't hurt my kids anymore," I begged.

Bush said, "Shhh, don't interrupt. We're playing a game now. Now just stand real still and remember your name is William Tell, and this is what happens if you don't." Slowly, he cocked the gun and took aim at the apple on my head or me, I couldn't tell which. Then, taking his time he said very slowly as he took aim, "Ok are you ready for the games to begin? Will you tell?"

I squeezed my eyes shut and he lowered the gun as he sighed real disgustedly, "No, no, you can't close your eyes, you have to see this coming, otherwise it won't be any fun at all."

So, I opened my eyes and George took aim again and said, "Remember this is what happens if you don't TELL." He kept aiming and re-aiming trying to get it just right and then he asked me again if I was ready.

"Yes, Sir," I answered.

He put the gun down to listen to me, then took aim again, "Now what's the magic message?"

"Don't tell," I answered. Immediately, he fired and shot the apple off my head. It blasted a hole in the middle of it and blew out a huge chunk and he walked over, picked it up off the ground and said, "Looks like we both won this time. You wait for your ride, I'll take mine another way," and he disappeared.

I tried to see where he went in the dark but I couldn't locate him. Shortly after, a couple of cowboys that tended the cattle on Bob's ranch came driving by in their old pick up truck and angrily said, "Get in, we'll give you a ride back to the end of the road. You're trespassing lady." So I climbed into the back of their pick up truck, not even on the seat in the cab and bounced all the way back to the end of the road. Then, I walked the short distance home.

When I walked in the house, Craig said, "Where have you been? I got dinner started and was getting worried."

"Oh, I was over at the neighbor's," I answered, falling into line helping with the kids and the dinner. During dinner, I just wanted to hold Kelly, who was two years old, and kept feeling so glad she was safe, at least for now.

I kept rocking her at the dinner table and it was a good thing my daughter was in my lap or I probably would have appeared as I really was, "psychotically experiencing an episode." That's what they told me the doctors would say if I went to them for help. "They'll say you're psychotic," Bob said, "and it won't take them long to figure it out. It will be obvious."

George Bush lorded and ruled over me for years once I had children. There were lots of scary program tactics they installed to insure the safety of his use of Kelly and me.

Mission Assignment on Maui

An early experience of cross-programming with Kelly took place in order for me to be used with newly elected President Ronald Reagan and Kelly with Vice President George Bush, on Maui.

My pedophile father, Calvin Eckhart, paid for my husband, young children, and I to vacation with him and my mother to Hawaii. This was a trip to the island of Maui in 1981 where I was taken from my family to be of service to my country, to serve President Reagan and others. Before the trip Bob Hope checked Kelly out at a distance. My father took us to a public park in Reseda, California and, although at the time he was very physically debilitated, he gave Bob a hand signal as we passed by. Bob looked at Kelly and gave my father a wink and a thumbs-up sign and we left.

Like all these "missions" before, I was totally amnesiac of this occurrence and could not remember much of what happened at all during the vacation. At the time, I did not realize I couldn't remember what happened on the vacation. It was only years afterwards that awareness was available to me. Then, the only thing I could recall about this trip was having dinner at the Charthouse on Front Street, in Lahaina with my parents, husband and children. I remembered that my five-year-old son Kevin ordered lobster, and that was all I could remember about that trip until years later when I returned to Maui without my family in 1991. Then the memories of that earlier trip began flooding back as I sat under the large mango tree located in front of the same place I had been taken to be with Reagan - the Puamana.

It all began like it had every other time before. Three men in suits barged into our hotel room where my family was sleeping and took Kelly and I out of the room. She was 2'/2 years old. Then they took us to another room and tortured us both in front of one another, programmed in some instructions for me, and then they took me away. At that time I didn't know where they took Kelly. The personalities inside of me that were programmed for use with Reagan and others on this trip never knew what happened to my children during that time. The personalities I had that performed everyday, mundane, routine jobs, were amnesiac to the whole experience-they never knew it happened. Such is the reality of Multiple Personality Disorder and mind control through trauma-based programming.

I overheard my controllers speak amongst themselves explaining that the Puamana was specially selected for security purposes and had the advantage that it could be accessed by both land and sea. Seaplanes could secretly fly in foreign dignitaries at night. It was a gate-guarded complex that was easily protected by the Secret Service, insuring secrecy and privacy.

I was on Maui for a ten-day stay, supposedly to vacation with my family, and was used part of the time as a go-between with Reagan and many other politicians and foreign dignitaries. During the time at the Puamana, my job was to help make Ron and Nancy more comfortable. I researched restaurants and places to order food and did everything I was told to do to help them, in addition to being the "secretary" for mind files use at their meetings and later having sex with Reagan. I took shorthand, but more importantly could secretly "record" everything I heard and saw for later debriefing by Kissinger or the Council.

Nancy could see that I had a credible job, but when she would say anything accusatorily about me, Reagan would deny it and tell her she was just over-reacting and he would kiss her very lovingly on the cheek. All in all, she was not pleased that I was there. She was angry and unpleasant to me. She hated it when I was around. I hated it when she was around too; everyone was on guard because of her attitudes. Reagan occasionally spoke to me about her as if she was unreasonable, but mostly he would defend her, saying she was probably just a little tired or cranky.

I liked it when Ronnie (that's what he told me to call him when we were alone) and I walked on the beach in the dark together, as there was no one to interrupt us. Nancy never knew where we "really" were because Ronnie would tell the Secret Service agents to tell her that he was going to be in a meeting. They were instructed to keep an eye on her and make sure she stayed inside the room for safety, since it was dark outside. Reagan told them he would need me to be at the meeting, as I was functioning as his secretary at certain times and he would need my help. Then we would go off together to "do business."

Sometimes we did do business, but more often we would go off alone together and I would give him my "undivided sexual attention." I also gave him any information I was instructed and preprogrammed to give to him from the Council and others. Once elected, Ronnie said to me, "Can you believe I'm President now? Does it feel any different to you to be here with me?" He often complained about his job and how hard it was. That seemed to be where I translated his words to mean, "Please baby me, pamper me, take care of me, coddle me," and I did just that. Whatever he wanted or needed, I was programmed to perform for him.

I was assigned a room on the beachfront at Puamana. The room was actually just another one of his rooms a place where they took me to be alone with him. The Secret Service agents acted like they did not see or were not watching, but sometimes I would notice them snickering or smiling at things I did with Reagan.

The Council told me what to do, when to do it, what words to use and what to say later on in the evening to have the greatest impact on Reagan. I don't think he ever knew I was being "an actress" - doling out the lines I had been programmed to deliver - but he loved it! So did Tricky Dick (Nixon). These tactics worked especially well on old men, and that is exactly what these men were.

This late night rendezvous at the Puamana, in the little pool overlooking the ocean, I bounded out of the pool and began unfastening my bikini top. I took it off and began dancing, slinging it around like I had been trained to do, as I sang, "Let me entertain you," like I had done for Bob Hope. Reagan was laughing and a bit embarrassed, I guess because of the Secret Service's presence, but he didn't stop me. I slowly pulled off my bikini bottom, danced around more and then slipped back into the pool next to him, naked. This personality, specially created and devoted to Reagan, was very comfortable being naked. I never even considered picking up my bikini afterwards. As I climbed out of the pool, Reagan put a large beach towel around me and the Secret Service agents picked up my wet bikini and brought it inside.

The Secret Service agents were usually younger than the Presidents and I could see in their faces that I had their respect and admiration, but was confused as to why. Sometimes after these antics, they would have a little grin on their faces.

The words that went with these little acts were not political, but were used by the Council to entertain and bring Reagan closer to me, to make him want me. They figured if he wanted to be with me, they could use me to slip important messages to him later on after sex, upon awakening or in the evening when he was just dozing off to sleep. The Council knew that, if they could keep him interested and pampered over the years, they could maintain control over him.

I was programmed to make him feel good. I did everything he wanted and helped soothe him when he was troubled or distressed, and I even had some opinions that he was surprised I was "old enough" to have. President Reagan said I was, "wise beyond my years," but he never did know that I wasn't really--I just had the Council pre-empting me. I would say that I was so interested in his success and the success of our nation that I read up on things in the newspaper and got a new "idea" or perspective after my research. Or, I would say that an idea just came to me. I don't believe he knew just exactly to what extent I was being set up for him. The Council knew just what would make a man happy, and more importantly they studied exactly what each man specifically liked or disliked.

Newly elected Vice President George Bush was at the Puamana for this trip, also. He and Reagan were having all sorts of leaders secretly flown in by seaplane to the back of the complex in the middle of the night. My job was to go and greet many of them as they arrived and help them to their rooms in the dark. Some were foreign ambassadors. They had meetings with these men and had a formal gathering one evening in the large banquet room that was used for parties. It was decorated in red, white, and blue, as it was soon after Reagan and Bush had been elected and many of the foreign dignitaries were congratulating them.

I overheard Reagan and Bush talking before the party and Bush told Reagan that this was an important night to lay the groundwork for future negotiations with certain foreign countries. These leaders were flown in, spent a couple of days and were flown back out.

The men from Saudi Arabia had to be flown in on separate days because I overheard them saying that they would not "mix" with the other guests. No one spoke of them afterwards to any of the other guests. They wore their white robes or native dress and were mostly dark-skinned.

George Bush seemed like the leader as far as these negotiations went and I noticed that Reagan "leaned on him" heavily for guidance and instruction. Bush had done his homework and studied the situations and Reagan took his expert advice. Although I don't remember Kissinger being present for this meeting, at other times, Reagan also took advice from Kissinger.

George Bush pounced on me when I least expected it, often delivering a devastatingly terrifying cryptic message while I was speaking to some foreign ambassador or politician at a White House function, gala, ground breaking, or golf with Hope. But this time we were on Maui at the newly-elected President's dinner. He waited until no one was around and then said, "I don't know what the President sees in you. He must have on some of those strange Elton John glasses, that make you look otherworldly like a little green Martian."

Later at night, I was told to stand out at the beach and wait until I was signaled with a flashing light and then I was instructed to swim out through the surf to the sailing vessel. A man aboard the big white sailing vessel took me aboard and into a darkened room below where a man sitting in the dark delivered a message to me, "You are to tell Reagan it's a green light. It's a go. And tell Bush to keep his dirty mitts off this one." Then he laughed and said, "No instead say, 'George, the men on high say that they have got this one covered. Anything you do would only interfere in the master plan.'" Then he said, "You may go now. Take flight and deliver your messages on cue."

I walked robotically out of the room and over to the area on the boat where there wasn't a railing, dove off and swam back to the beach. The Council maintained vigilant contact with Reagan especially during this trip. Reagan was aware that I swam to get information because he commented that it turned him on when I swam to my assignment.

I swam often and had programming that allowed me to swim long distances without tiring. This swim program was often tied to 'dolphin themes' in my conscious mind so, in case I began to remember,

my thoughts were automatically directed to thinking about how much I loved dolphins. These are the words that directed my swim programming: "Your body is warm as you glide through the water, swimming easily, effortlessly, endlessly through the ocean, like a dolphin. Dolphins deliver messages, and so will you." Other times I swam out from the beach and waited to hear the sound of a helicopter, and like the dolphin waiting below the spaceship in the movie Cocoon, I waited to be "beamed up." My programming dictated my reality. I thought that I was living this intentional movie-scrambled reality while the actual event was hidden beneath the surface of this programming. As I experienced the flashback of the actual occurrence, I could feel the cold water on my body, taste the salt water and hear the helicopter. They dangled a rope ladder down and my instructions were to "climb the stairway to heaven." As I did, I entered the movie reality my programming commanded, and felt like I was on an angelic/dolphin mission. The rope ladder stung the bottom of my feet. When I made it to the top, a man grabbed my arm and pulled me in, sat me down, put headphones on my ears and said, "Listen and learn," as I retained the message to deliver to the leaders.

One night, the Reagans and a foreign guest went to dinner late in the evening. I was taken along as this man's escort. (I am sorry that at this time I am not able yet to remember his name.) We went by limo to a restaurant in a large shopping area that had storefronts like boutiques or the French Quarter, with brick walkways leading to the back and flowers alongside. We ate outside at a patio table surrounded by bushes and flowers; it was very private. The Secret Service were with us but kept a low profile, so as not to attract anyone's attention.

Something happened at the restaurant when Nancy and I went to the restroom. She said something to me about indecently coming on to her husband and then she slapped me. It really messed me up, as slapping was also part of a program to switch me into different personalities. A Secret Service agent quickly took me aside. I had switched into a child personality and was crying, and he could not let me go back to the table like that. He straightened me up, smoothed out the rough emotional edges, and took me back to the table where everyone was finishing up.

Despite this incident, we had a successful late night dinner with this man and went back to the Puamana without being detected. It was the only time I knew of that Reagan went into public during the entire trip. I think this guest had expressed a desire to see the small town of Lahaina. He did not seem too concerned about the security risks and Bush encouraged Reagan to go and entertain him. Reagan and Bush usually went into public places separately for security reasons.

After my use with Reagan at the Puamana was over, I was taken back to my family. I do not know what happened to them in my absence, but just like each occasion before, none of us experienced a break in time, and no one knew that I was gone or that I had "just" returned.

When we returned to California, no one in my family thought of this hidden experience again, as it was buried deeply under programming.

Reagan's Ranch

I was also taken to the Ranch to visit President Reagan, as I had at times in the past when he was Governor. I was picked up in front of my home in Agoura by a man in a suit and was flown to the Ranch located near Santa Barbara, California. Ronnie insisted saddling up the horses himself when we went riding, even after he became President. He did not want anyone (including Secret Service agents) to do it and so he did it himself! I rode the brown horse.

President Reagan "acted" very romantically while we rode, just like we were in some old movie! It seemed he lived in a type of "movieland" mentality a lot of the time. We rode all over the ranch, down near the Oak grove on the far side. It was beautiful in the springtime, with green grass and wild flowers as far as one could see. We got off our horses and he put his arm around my waist and pulled me to him

for a kiss. He explained, "A man needs a young woman in his life to make him feel younger." I just smiled. I did a lot of that, didn't use many words, just smiled, and was pleasing, helpful and compliant. That is how I was created to be.

Then Reagan sang, "Younger than springtime." He took his hat off and put it over his heart while he was singing, just like he was in some musical. He could be very corny.

Later he explained he had barbed wire put in between the wood fencing on the Ranch to keep people out. He said he didn't like to have to do that, but the Secret Service suggested he go along with it for security reasons. He explained that he did not like to always have people watching him, but that it went with the job now-it was different than when he was Governor, but, he explained that nothing could change our relationship, we would just have to be more careful.

Nancy Reagan was very mean to me, much meaner than Barbara Bush ever was. Barbara Bush just sort of ignored me altogether, whereas Nancy was very angry and controlling. I liked it best when Nancy was not around. When Henry Kissinger or George Bush met with Reagan at the ranch, Nancy served them snacks. I was never allowed to eat, but just sat quietly wherever I was "parked" and recorded information into my mind files whenever I was directed to. Henry knew just how to file it inside of me, all in the correct storage areas for easy retrieval later on. They met at the ranch quite often.

Sometimes we flew to meet big leaders in their own country, if they were at all concerned about the security at the ranch. But most people felt pretty safe there with all of the security systems and the Secret Service agents.

I observed a lot of Secret Service security techniques because at times Henry left me with them when I was not being used. Henry sat me next to the agent at the security monitor and told him to keep an eye on me, but to not feed or talk to me. So, I was able to watch the monitor and listen to the agents. They even had agents placed at the far corners of the ranch all night long for security. Each agent carried a walkie-talkie to keep in touch with each other and the agents in the house. A Secret Service agent was stationed inside the house with television monitors and other equipment to help supervise the agents outside and was always listening to the men in the field with the walkie-talkies. The agents took shifts so that there was always someone fresh and alert manning all the "posts" 24 hours a day and night.

Reagan laughed a lot when he was Governor and in the beginning days of his Presidency, but he acted very differently after he was shot. Kind of like how different Nixon became after the Watergate scandal broke. Like the life went out of him.

Reagan gave me a bracelet on one occasion when we were at the ranch. But I had to turn it over to the men who flew me by helicopter back home to Agoura. Nancy had been gone that weekend. She usually was when Reagan and I were together sexually. But, she saw me when Kissinger and Reagan or Bush used me at the ranch for mind file use. It seemed like she hated it when she noticed her husband perk up when I was around, so she was mean to me. Actually, even under mind control the parts of me that were dedicated to Reagan felt sorry for her, having to be married to him, if he had sex with her in the same passive manner he did with me.

The Conception of Our Third Child Under Mind Control

In 1980, I felt a deep desire for a third child, though I am not sure if I ever really was solely responsible for having decided such things on my own, or if it was up to the Council, Bob, Henry, etc. My husband fought me for months on end, with the logical reasoning that we had the perfect family - a little boy and girl, and for him they were enough. But for me, it wasn't. I was experiencing excruciating female reproductive pains and had been for a long time, and my pain seemed to increase as time went on. When I sought medical help, Dr. Feldman, my OB/GYN doctor, examined me and said, "You have a large fibroid tumor growing in your uterus," and his avenue of resolve for my worsening condition was a

hysterectomy. Looking back on this situation from where I am now in my more healed understanding, I realize it was indeed this man's attempt to help me remove my "hysteria." Unfortunately, I was unable to understand that this hysteria that manifested physically in my innermost female private part, was the cellularly stored terror and devastation of my children and me. I was unable to think on my own, but I could understand what I felt. And, what I felt in my heart was that I wanted a third child and I wanted him desperately. I don't know if I was programmed to know, but I knew then that this child was to be a boy.

From his authoritative position between my legs, as he examined me, my doctor's orders were that I could have 30 days to try to conceive a child and after that time I was to return for the hysterectomy.

Craig and I used the "scientific method," the same method we used in the past to insure that the sex of our third child was a boy. And he was. Daniel Robert Ford was born on March 15, 1982 at Los Robles Hospital in Thousand Oaks, California. I was 31 years old. I have little conscious memory of Danny as a baby. When he was visiting me in the summer of 1996, he looked at me emotionlessly and said, "Mom, I don't remember anything about my childhood." He just stated the fact. What was very apparent to me was that my teenage son had no emotion attached to this statement or even any means to think this thought through to understand what it all might mean. It seemed like he was merely reporting it to me and, having done enough of my own healing to realize what this all meant, I was devastated. Understanding now that my children will not be served by remembering anything about their past until they are in a safe, supportive environment to do that, I simply acknowledged his reality and recommitted to doing whatever I could to bring about his freedom.

War Games at Jordan Ranch to Terrorize Kelly and Me

When Kelly was around three years old, we were told to walk down to the "end of the road," which I knew to be Bob Hope's Jordan Ranch. Once inside the fence we were injected with drugs in the back of a limo and were told to start walking out onto the ranch. Somehow, all of a sudden, my little daughter was gone. There was a whole group of men in army fatigues who I later found out were playing war games. But in the drugged state of mind they put me in, I had no way to know this was just a game. Bob had a walkie-talkie that he used to radio instructions to the men in army fatigues. He told them what to do and say to us. I know because the guys would listen to their walkie-talkies while I heard Bob say directions like, "Ok, rape her now."

These guys were shooting their weapons and throwing hand grenades. As I revivified the memory I was able to realize that the hand grenades and gunfire were all fake, but the drugs I was subjected to made everything feel very real and very terrifying. While these men were shooting at me, I was running for my life, ducking under bushes trying to stay alive so I could find my little girl, and the drugs made it impossible to think clearly. They told me Kelly's life depended on me finding her quickly. A helicopter flying overhead landed nearby and I finally found Kelly, naked and huddling near a small scrub bush. She was very dirty and had cried so much that her little eyes were swollen nearly shut and her face was covered with dirt and tears all mixed together. She was crying so hard that she was shaking and had begun the involuntarily sniffling and jerking that infants do when they have cried for a very long time. I picked her up and took her, as directed, over to the helicopter. Due to the severe trauma, I was unable to retrieve the rest of this devastating experience. This is the type of activity these men needed to use in order to guarantee that, under national security, a mother and her baby daughter would never remember the perverted experiences for which they were being used by Henry Kissinger, Bob Hope and the agenda of our other high-level controllers. When I was deprogramming and really getting beneath my instilled trauma-based programs in order to retrieve my experiences, my programmed mother sent me a picture of Kelly that she had taken. In it, Kelly was crouched down, hiding beneath a bush. Most likely our

controllers had my mother send that picture in an attempt to tap into this traumatic memory in order to remind me what my odds were, in order to keep me under control.

Trauma Before Use

After I had my children, they always inflicted trauma on me and one or more of my kids (always with my daughter Kelly) before an assigned rendezvous took place. Those experiences were terrifying and horrific enough so, that my controllers felt very certain I would never gain access to memory of the experiences the trauma was meant to cover. The trauma they inflicted on me and then on my children in front of me, began when they were born.

The following is a vivid example of the kind of programming and torture my family and I had to endure before I was used with a President, Governor, Senator, entertainer, or whoever else they decided they wanted to send me in on. I have no way of knowing what the rest of my family might have been assigned to, in my absence.

This time, we were in Catalina and my husband told the kids that we were going to look at a new hotel complex on the island. When we arrived, three men in suits told us to go into a room where there was a single row of chairs lined up against the wall. We were told to sit down in the straight back chairs. Passively and robotically, we helplessly complied. Kevin our oldest son., who then was nine, was the first in the lineup; then Craig, me, and Kelly, who was seven, and last, at the far end, our youngest son Danny, who was three. One of the suited men took a razor blade or something similar and started with Kevin and slowly and deliberately ran it over the top of his legs, then onto Craig's, then mine, Kelly's and little Danny's. All of us were bleeding and traumatized, in a daze, physically frozen, staring straight ahead. I was terrified and panicked, but sat there, helpless to do anything to protect my children, as a result of years of abuse and mind control programming.

Craig could do nothing to defend the children or me. He couldn't even defend himself. All of us just sat there like zombies with blood trickling off our burning legs. One suited man informed us, "This is just the beginning," and they took Danny and threw him up against the wall. With the air knocked out of him and in obvious pain, he crumpled over and crouched up into a small ball, already, at three years old, knowing better than to cry out or make a sound. They always did something horrific and if the kids or I cried out or showed any reaction or retaliation, they would hurt another one of the kids or me even more. Craig simply took his seat and never moved until he was told to. He was totally and completely immobilized.

Watching my children get hurt was always the worst; nothing they ever did to me was ever as bad. Then one of the men took a cotton ball doused with alcohol and dabbed the blood off our legs. It stung badly.

Then the men in suits took me away, and told my family, "run along and play at the beach. Your mother will be along in awhile. You will never even miss her, never even be aware she is gone." Without reaction, Craig stood up and robotically walked out the door with the kids following in like manner.

After my family was gone, they took me to an empty room, ordered me to strip naked and they began slapping me around until I sank into a shivering, naked ball in the corner of the room. The rest of the day, all night, and part of the next day, I was left in isolation. Food and water were deliberately withheld until I was reunited with my family, which could be up to three days. A man in a suit would come to get me out of isolation and take me to get ready for Reagan or Nixon, or Pete Wilson or whomever. I was instructed to shower and dress in the clothes they provided. Outfits, complete with accessories just my size, were left for me.

After the sexual encounter was completed, I was taken back to the room and ordered to put on my own clothes. Hypnotic commands were given to, "simply walk out and sit down with your family on the beach. You will not notice any lapse of time, but will resume interacting with your family normally and naturally." On this occasion, I was told to sit down next to Craig on my beach chair and it was as if I had never been gone! No one mentioned another word about it. The experiences were supposedly wiped away from all of our minds as if nothing out of the ordinary had happened.

Each time I was taken, there was similar trauma before they could "safely" use me and be able to insure that my programming and amnesia would remain locked up tightly. All of this for a Governor's or President's sexual perversions, or for the fulfillment of the New World Order agenda.

Bob Hope's Escapades

We owned a large family camper that was fully self-contained and we kept it stocked and packed, completely ready at anytime should we decide that we wanted to get away for a long weekend or week vacation. We traveled regularly on Thanksgiving holidays and during summers, often driving up Highway 1, winding up the scenic and beautiful California coastline. We went to Ojai Valley, Big Sur, Carmel, Monterey, San Francisco, Oxnard, Paso Robles, Santa Barbara, Leo Carrillo State Beach, Emma Woods State Beach, Pismo Beach, San Luis Obispo, and Napa Valley. At other times we went up into the High Sierras, to visit Mammoth, Sequoia, Tahoe, Reno, Yosemite National Park, Big Bear, and Crestline. We also took the children to Six Flags Magic Mountain and, of course, Disneyland.

Bob Hope showed up in many of these locations. It seemed like he was everywhere. I had a number I called to let him know my vacation plans or he would make the suggestion of where to go. When we arrived at our destination, I wouldn't consciously know to expect to see him but the part of me that was programmed and readied for the rendezvous was instructed to walk towards him when he appeared. Sometimes he would snap his fingers in front of my face or jingle his keys in front of my eyes to get me to respond. He often liked to meet for sex or information exchange in mountain cabins. He would say he needed some time away from the hustle and bustle of city life and I was his plaything. He said I was better than "Jeanie" (the genie) because all she did was come out of a bottle. He said with me he could rub my magic spot and it was magic-he'd come! He usually spoke in clever little lines and phrases. I met him aboard yachts, also, even when I thought Craig and I were simply going sailing with friends. What actually occurred often was a rendezvous with Bob or some leader they needed to get information to. Sometimes Reagan was brought out on a little ocean excursion and ended up navigating right to us. I was then transported aboard with him for sex and messages. Sometimes I stayed all night with him on his transport and then was put back on the sailboat I came on the next day.

Reagan in Mazatlan

I was with President Reagan in Mazatlan, Mexico. In fact, my husband and I acquired a timeshare, the "Presidential Suite," at the El Cid Hotel, in Mazatlan, where we went in later years.

One evening in the early 80's, while we were 'vacationing' in Mazatlan, Craig and I dressed to go out and I became panicked because I put my contact lens on inside out and couldn't get it back out. From my attempts my eye was becoming red and ugly. Craig's father was with us at the time and the two of them thought I was acting very strangely to be so upset about such a little thing. But, my inner system of personalities knew that this would not do when I was nearing an assignment with the President.

The next thing I remembered, I was escorted by the Secret Service to the back door of a dark Mexican Restaurant. I joined Reagan in a booth in the back of the restaurant and waited for him to finish eating. It wasn't long until we walked out on the beach. We walked hand in hand along the beach with the Secret Service agents following a short distance behind us. As we were walking on the beach that

night, Reagan seemed upset and anxious, very nervous. He said he was concerned about the 'state of affairs.' With my pre-programmed sexual orientation, my mind immediately went to the thought of sexual affairs, but as he continued speaking I realized he was speaking of the affairs of the nation. He went on to explain that being President was difficult, that there was a lot more to it than I could imagine. He said he was concerned about the way things were going and was upset with Kissinger about some things he had handled. He said he was very upset with Henry for taking so many matters into his own hands. He said he knew a few hours with me would help him snap out of the mood he was in.

I had been given a few key words by the Council to help Reagan "snap out of it" when he got into one of his slumps. They were very simple phrases like, "everything will be okay," said while I was rubbing or caressing his forehead over and over. He seemed to respond to that like a kitten going into a purr. I would generally rub him all over, front and back, before climbing on top of him to satisfy him sexually.

We went into a little cabin-type motel on the beach. It was just the two us with Secret Service agents all around outside. The little room was done in Mexican design; a red bedspread in Mexican colors, yellows and blues, and a little pair of maracas sat on a wooden dresser. I had sex with him and then we left; he did not go to sleep as usual. He hugged me briefly outside the motel and kissed me on the cheek before he left with the Secret Service agents.

A Secret Service agent took me back to where I was staying with my husband. It was a very quick encounter; rushed, like Reagan had somewhere else to go.

Craig and I returned to our home in California without conscious knowledge of my "missing time" or of what he did during my absence.

NASA

When Danny was an infant we went for programming together. He was a year old when his innerspace mind files were created in order for him to have a wide range of access points, without the necessity of as much trauma as was necessary back in the days when mine were created. Time had shown our controllers that trauma itself was one cause for the breakdown in slaves. So Danny was exposed to their newer technology, from birth, and Danny and I were both heavily programmed and cross-programmed together.

I was there with Danny when he was 3 or 4 years old. It seemed like a school field trip, but the series of events that unfolded were much different. Danny had on long baggy blue print shorts and a light blue T-shirt. We were sitting with other mothers and children, in the front row of a circular auditorium. Men in NASA suits, who were dressed like astronauts were all around and one of them came over, lifted Danny up and put him into a chair. "Like the real astronauts sit in!" the man explained. This chair had equipment all around it.

Danny smiled so sweetly across the auditorium at me like he was so proud and so happy to be chosen to sit in the big astronaut chair. There was such anticipated excitement and innocence in his joyful smile. Soon the man instructed him to lean back so his head was properly aligned to fit into a silver band and when Danny was in the proper alignment, I watched the NASA official clamp the back of the silver band to fit snugly around his little forehead. Danny looked up at the NASA official, eyes wide with innocence and youthful exuberance, and smiled as the man said to Danny, "Hold on for the ride of your life!"

Another man brought in some sort of visual/optical glasses (virtual reality?) to rest in front of Danny's eyes and told him to look into the viewer. Then to my horror, the man standing next to Danny gave a cue to another man and I watched in agony as Danny's little body jolted. They must have been giving him electroshock and God knows what else. After a time, his little body went limp and he was unconscious.

I was dying inside, but knew from many past experiences with his older brother and sister that if I made any attempt to interfere things would only get worse for all of us, especially Danny, so against all maternal protective instinct, I maintained my composure.

Pretty soon the NASA official waved a smelling salt or something in a cotton ball bound with gauze, in front of Danny's face. He came to abruptly and they released him from the equipment and then from the chair. He was sweating profusely around his forehead and under his nose. As the man helped him out of the chair, Danny looked over at me and several facial expressions quickly washed over him. At first he looked utterly humiliated and embarrassed, which was soon replaced with a look of utter shame that spread over his entire face and down his little body.

He could barely walk over to me and when I stood to help him, the NASA man said, "He's a big boy, he can do this on his own."

"Mommy, I feel sick," my little son said as he hobbled over to me and put his head in my lap. The men did the same thing to several other children, including another little girl from Danny's preschool, Born Learners. Soon we were escorted out, put on a shuttle back to the airport and were flown home. None of this experience was available to my conscious mind until years later when I began the grueling process of deprogramming. And, to this day, Danny has no memory of this event available to his conscious mind.

Different parts of me took care of Danny and our controllers assigned other parts to take him to places for conditioning.

The Highway to Heaven billboard that we had to pass along Kanan Road on the way to Zuma Beach or Point Mugu dissociated me. Instead of the actual sign, I would experience an internal experience of, "You are going to another plane of reality, one that only exists in your imagination and this Highway is your start off point in going there," and, I would go into a programmed mode that my controllers called the Highway to Heaven zone. There were landmarks (landmines) all over California that they used in order to keep me in line, "in the right state of mind."

Danny's mind files were filled with data early on and expanded after he was three years old. I drove him to Point Mugu or we were intercepted at the intersection of Kanan and Agoura Road, and go in the car with these men. They usually drove a dark colored sedan with tinted windows. Whether I drove or not, these men took my son from me in the car at Point Mugu in the morning, and returned him back to me at the car by late afternoon. He would just limply lie on my lap all the way home, and then I put him to bed in his crib where he slept until the next morning without waking.

Whenever he and I would go to the beach to fly a kite or play in the sand, they always took him away from me and brought him back later. Once some men on a Coast Guard boat took him from me at Zuma Beach when he and I were playing. He was around five. They came up close to shore, yet remained just beyond the crest of the waves. A lifeguard type guy in a red swimsuit that was about 25 years old took Danny by the hand from the beach and swam out to the boat with him. Then they took off with my son, while I stayed on the beach waiting, just sitting all alone, zombie-like until they returned my son. I helped Danny walk back to our brown station wagon and we went home.

Henry Kissinger filled Danny with high-level information, intended to span many years and to be delivered whenever necessary at specific future dates to large crowds of people. Danny had historical files put in, as did I.

At Born Learners Preschool at three to four years of age, Danny started special computer classes that kept him at school long hours, sometimes into the evening. When I asked him if he wanted to stop he always said he loved it, as did his best friend Justin. I believe programmers do more of the training via computer screen now, often using virtual reality. After computer class, I took the two of them to Monarch's Gymnastics, the same gymnastics school his older brother and sister went to for lessons. I

usually waited in the car or ran errands while they were there and I was always so exhausted I could hardly stay awake. I had usually been to therapy abreacting the horrors of my own childhood and hurried home from Westwood to pick up Danny and Justin from preschool, and later on Danny from Kindergarten. I didn't like Mike, the man who ran the gymnastics center. He had a very bad temper and was often emotionally out of control. Kevin, Kelly and Danny all went to Monarch's Gymnastics in conjunction with the Montessori preschools.

I thought I would not be able to bear the pain and grief when I began remembering scenarios of the ways in which I had been programmed to be a part of my children's preschool mind control experiences. This is information I would prefer to withhold because it goes against everything I believe in, but in order for people to understand how this system works, it is necessary for me to share the following. Keep in mind that this scenario could have happened to any three of my children and indeed it did. But once again, I will use an experience I remembered about Danny because, for whatever reason, I have more memory retrieved about him.

This event occurred in Danny's preschool. On occasion, I helped out in the class. I remembered standing with Danny's preschool teachers who were instructing the children in a game where they all had to take their clothes off, step onto a colored circle and then take turns doing sexual acts to the child next to them. The teachers were laughing and clapping and everything seemed surreal, just like it always did when programmed events of horror occurred. As the game progressed, with music playing in the background, the children looked progressively more stunned. They were told to walk in a circle and stop on a color. If they didn't do what they were told, the teacher yanked them out of the circle by the arm and yelled at them. I couldn't tell what she said but it scared the child into compliance. The games always took place at the same time in the mornings and were centered around colors, music, body movement and hand signals. Hand signals were taught to the children this way and put to music for reinforcement.

There was a VCR off to the side of the classroom where an individual child was placed to watch a special pre-selected tape. The child was taken out of the circle, sat in front of the VCR and told to focus on the movie. This way each child got the individual training they were supposed to have according to what their curriculum planners felt were their strengths and career aptitudes. All of the special private preschools my children went to took this approach. And, ritual trauma and sexual perversion was often the way we were programmed to begin with the children.

Danny completed computer classes in preschool before he was four years old. During my deprogramming process, I was horrified when I remembered that I continually read him the story of Danny and the Dinosaur. As I re-read the story years later, I found a phrase in the book, which states, "there's no place to run, no place to hide. " And here again was another example of how 1, as his programmed parent, was used to keep my own son's programming locked tightly in place, reinforcing the programs that were used to keep the parts of his mind that were compartmentalized for our controller's use, separate from his conscious everyday awareness. And consciously, neither of us had any idea that any of this was occurring.

Henry Kissinger has been Danny's main man. He was the one calling the shots and organized the creation of Danny's mind files for NASA/military use. Danny was, and may still be, scheduled for a major position within NASA one day, following in the footsteps of his grandfather Ford and Uncle Lyle Curran. They have him scheduled to become a scientist or something of that nature. I overheard Henry talking to someone about it.

Danny has very specific programming themes that center around all the planets - Jupiter, Mars, Venus, Pluto, Saturn, etc., and I was programmed to tell him often before he went to sleep, "I love you to the moon and much, much, much, much, more than that. A thousand times more than that. A trillion times more than that," and on and on until we got to the highest number beyond infinity, and Danny knew that number. For some reason I can't remember it. I never could. Then, he would go to sleep.

Danny and Kelly both had those neon, glow-in-the-dark stars and planets on their ceilings and so did 1. Danny has tons of high tech information in his brain. I saw him demonstrated at Point Mugu when they put him in front of a group to demonstrate his capabilities. Henry took Danny to different locations to 'display the technology,' showing that a five year old could appear to be genius level, "a computer whiz." He had mega memory, displaying the intelligence level of what they termed a "Junior College Student." Danny was seen as having the intelligence of the future and they said he would blossom in high school, whatever that meant. They said that, by then, Danny would be fully functional and used by them extensively in international work. Henry talked a lot about Danny and I remember Danny holding onto Henry's leg one time when he was demonstrating Danny in front of a whole group of people. Despite the programming, Danny remained very shy until he was 5 years old.

Danny was also traumatized at Disneyland year after year. The Matterhorn ride was one they used before they took him away from me at Disneyland for other programming.

There was further programming done at Edwards Air Force Base. Craig took us all there as a family in our camper and we stayed overnight and were programmed the next morning. Two men in white uniforms came to get Danny and me from the camper and compliantly and mindlessly we went with them. Kelly, in her little strawberry blouse, was crying that she didn't want Danny to go and Craig held her and spanked her leg to stop her crying. The men took us through glass doors and we were escorted once again to the big chair, where the nightmare started all over. We sat side by side in the big heavy, metal chair while we looked into the large goggles that were placed in front of our faces. Before they began, we were injected with a drug. Earphones played music at times, but mostly sound effects, while they told us we were 'one' and the solar system that we saw through our eyes would now exist in the innermost regions of our mind. There was a beautiful visual of the stars and planets and the whole universe. They told us that we each had a system, but that we also had the other half of the other person's system much like those friendship bracelets that are separated and when they come together they are whole. Afterwards, Danny's eyes seemed to be moving all over the place at once and not together. Even in my drugged state I was terrified for my child. Looking at what his eyes were doing was scary. Afterwards, they escorted us out and I helped my little boy into the camper and laid him up on the top bed so he could sleep. He lay backwards on the bed and didn't move, totally out of it for the rest of the day. I walked around outside in this big white gravel parking lot with the other kids in a total zombie-like state. I felt totally drugged out of my mind and I fell asleep sitting up outside. When I woke up, I ran frantically into the camper to check on Danny. I held him and loved him. He looked to me like he was going to die. I said, "I love you Danny, is there anything I can do for you?" He was sucking his thumb by then and without any words, shook his head no. So I just held him.

Kelly was taken to military bases in Ventura, Oxnard, Point Mugu, and Edwards Air Force Base, but Danny went mostly to Point Mugu. The whole family went to Edwards Air Force Base. Sometimes from Point Mugu, they would helicopter Danny away and I never knew where they took him. Parts of Danny were programmed very early on to play the perfect game of chess, in order to take up where I left off in deciphering and delivering cryptic messages.

Catalina Island Excursions

One or two weeks a year were set aside for a planned vacation. Extended weekend excursions were commonplace, often planned at the last minute. But, our August week on Catalina Island, 26 miles off the California coast, was a standing vacation for years. Craig and I went there almost every year from 1971 until I left California in 1991; nearly 20 years. My children still go there with their father and, now that they are older, they have gone independently.

I was used on Catalina Island, for sexual rendezvous with Reagan and/or sometimes other public officials or entertainers. I was programmed to have sex with Reagan at the Wrigley Mansion, the Zane Grey and other hotels on the island. It seems Reagan was usually on the island anonymously; for security purposes, no one was to know he was there.

While I was busy carrying out my duties, I had no idea what my children and husband were up to. It seems likely that there was some reason they had us all there together.

We're Paying Taxes For What?!

And, I am sure that you the reader were unaware that your hard earned tax dollars were being spent on security, airflight, and high tech programming in order that Presidents and leaders could be extramaritally satisfied sexually, and that messages fueling the success and implementation of the New World Order could be sent and returned via a national security mind-controlled asset. Not to mention the salary of politicians and NSA people like Henry Kissinger who spent countless hours strategizing agendas to carry out their personal plans. I can only imagine the cost to privately helicopter, task a team of Secret Service agents, coiffure, and ready a mindcontrolled operative and then pay a limo to deliver her to her assignment. A few years ago my daughter was transported via ambulance after one of her many suicide attempts, as she carried out her program command to kill herself if she began to remember. That bill alone was unfathomable.

"...but you shall cry out for pain of heart, and shall wail for anguish of spirit." -- Isaiah 65:14

Chapter Twenty-six: Dodger Diamonds

The following information documents some, but by no means all, of the experiences I recovered in relation to my use with Tommy Lasorda and the Los Angeles Dodgers. I have randomly selected specific events I believe will aid you the reader in understanding just how far mind control, gone unchecked, has proliferated.

Tommy Lasorda gave a new meaning to the Dodger lineup. Instead of the Dodgers lining up, it was women and children lining up for the baseball team to choose from, for sex. A Dodger incentive to do better - to win more! If they won, they got to choose - if they lost, no women.

"Dodger diamonds" had a double meaning. In addition to the baseball diamond as on a baseball field, in my experience, it also referred to the "Dodger Diamonds," the mind-controlled women the Dodgers could select from for sex. Lasorda often spoke in cryptic language, intended to manipulate and inspire the Dodgers. Here's an example. One evening as he spoke to the team, he said, "If you play good on the Dodger diamond (the playing field), you will get in return a 'Dodger Diamond'" (a sex slave). Presidential model sex slaves often wore diamonds as program identifiers. My daughter and I wore diamonds, as well.

Back in the men's locker room when the women and children in the "Dodger lineup" were in their places, Lasorda would point to a woman or child who had been 'chosen' by a player and say, "he'll take that one." He never referred to anyone by name - always just pointed and said, "that one." It was part of the "game" they played after a win. The Dodgers weren't allowed to just go up and pick one of us. They had to tell Lasorda who they wanted and then he would make the announcement. We then stepped forward to the player we were chosen by and went with him to another room, corner or wherever he pleased. Sometimes the locker room was filled with Dodgers having sex with women and children at the 7th inning stretch, to "inspire and invigorate the team," as Lasorda would say. But most of the time it was done after a winning game.

Sometimes I got stuck with that little short guy - the one that walked like a duck to first base. His name was Ron Cey. He would often pick me from the lineup. After I was chosen, he would lean against the wall with one arm and talk casually to me for a minute before he had sex with me. He was impressed with how well I could have sex standing up against the wall. He also liked my hair and the whole idea that I was married. He seemed to know all about me, while I knew nothing about him, except that he smelled like sweat and was really gross to the personality inside me who was created especially for this Dodger purpose.

Cyndy Garvey (Steve Garvey's now ex-wife) was often part of the "Dodger lineup" of women and children to be chosen by the Dodgers for sex after a winning game. My daughter Kelly was also occasionally used. They usually put Krisha and Whitney (the Garvey's young daughters) into the lineup. The players who performed the best during the game got to choose first.

One night when they put Krisha and Whitney in the lineup, it was Whitney's first night. She was now "old enough" to participate, in spite of the fact that she was only four or five years old. Cyndy started screaming, "No, not Whitty!" (That was the nickname she called Whitney.) Two men stepped forward and grabbed Cyndy by the arms and whisked her away. They took her into the next room and we could all hear her screaming. It was awful.

"If you step out of line, you always pay the price, maybe with your life." Lasorda said. Then they took Whitney out of the line and into a side room, and we could all hear her screaming and crying.

Lasorda said to those of us remaining, "We won't have that problem anymore, will we." He was very brutal.

When they brought Cyndy back into the room, Lasorda said Cyndy's behavior had caused Whitney to get hurt. He said, "If the mother had acted respectably, there wouldn't have been a problem."

When they brought Whitney back out, she could barely walk. She didn't make it into the lineup that night; she was too injured.

I experienced and witnessed these types of horrors that kept me from ever interfering with what they were doing to my children, especially Kelly. I knew from experience that they would hurt her worse if I ever tried to protect her.

On nights the Dodgers lost, there was no Dodger lineup game and we would all go home, but not before the Dodgers saw us lined up and then leaving. Tommy said he wanted the boys to learn from their mistakes and to have incentive to win big. "Big wins equals big bucks," Lasorda said.

Tommy Lasorda and others humiliated Cyndy. They brought me into the locker room and put me up against the shower wall. They put Cyndy across the room but close by, and they brought Steve in. He had sex with me standing up against the wall. Cyndy was forced to watch and then someone, usually Lasorda, would tell her she wasn't good enough or enough of a woman for Steve. They told her she was stupid and backward. Then Lasorda slapped her across the face really hard. I don't know why they did that, but they did it to me also and I watched other women get slapped often. While this was going on, Steve was laughing sadistically. Cyndy looked like she wasn't really "there." Soon after, Tommy Lasorda took her out and sat her behind the dug out where she usually sat during the games - being the dutiful and supportive Dodger wife.

On nights like these, Tommy gave the press orders not to talk to or interview Cyndy. He told them if they did he would have them thrown out of the ballpark and he would have their job. If they asked why, he would say, "She's not quite herself tonight."

In line with the information about Project Monarch, some rich people actually own certain Dodger players and their children. Often it's cryptically called "sponsoring," but it's really ownership (much like owning a racehorse) because the owner makes all the decisions about the players life without the knowledge or consent of the player. When the player does well, the owner collects large sums of money from behind the scenes.

Steve Garvey, his (now ex) wife Cyndy, and their two children were "sponsored" (owned) by some wealthy person and from what I saw, the family was manipulated much the same way mine was, through mind control, for the financial benefit of others.

One night I watched, as I waited for the "lineup," while Lasorda was coaching the team. He chalked a diagram of the field onto a large chalkboard. The Dodgers were all sitting on a bench in front of him. Lasorda spoke in funny rhymes to some of the players, rhymes that didn't make much sense to me. It seemed that the players were like robots that were robotically manipulated by the words Lasorda spoke to them. I overheard him say, "Steve (Garvey), you will hit a home run. Ron (Cey), you will bunt since you're a runt. Only runts bunt." And he went on and on like that, seeming to program the plays into the players.

I never did end up watching much of the ballgames. If I tried I couldn't concentrate to watch because I was programmed to not see the players or to recognize them if I should see them. I was pre-programmed to not look at the Dodgers with the phrase, "there will be blood everywhere, if you continue to stare," or "you won't recognize them anywhere, you won't even know they are there." People who didn't know how I was programmed often teased me about my inability to follow or understand baseball games. One time, after attending games for a long time, I asked my husband and the couple that was with us, "Who are those men down there in suits?"

They looked at me like I was retarded and laughed in embarrassment for my question, and then explained, "Those are the umpires." I didn't know. I was just obeying program.

Craig took me to the Dodger games, but I never wanted to go. I hated to go, but had no reason I could "think" of for not liking or attending the games. Sometimes our small children would go with us,

and then they would show up in the "Dodger lineup" to be used by the Dodgers for sex. I felt very out of control, despite the mind control I was under. Personalities inside of me didn't know how my children got there or how they would get home or if they would be safe or killed. Craig stood and watched like a zombie and often had this strange, nervous laugh that happened when he was anxiously trying to be a part of things. We were both totally helpless to think or act in order to protect our children or ourselves.

Tommy Lasorda was connected to a lot of mob-type men. They were always around Dodger Stadium in their suits with concealed weapons.

At times there were secret, private meetings at Dodger Stadium during the games. Sometimes the meetings were between politicians and at other times there were meetings where drug deals took place, or meetings between mob members and other top leaders in politics and/or the entertainment field. These meetings often took place during the time the games were being played. In the early years, money was transferred for drugs, illegal stocks, bonds, or other investments. Money in briefcases was exchanged for something in another briefcase. In my experience, this could have been anytime from 1976 on. Bob Hope was limoed in just for a brief exchange and then left quickly. He had a thing for Cyndy, always kissing her and touching her breasts while she just stood robotically.

Whoever owned the Dodgers at one time used to come into the big fancy restaurant there at Dodger Stadium or into the locker room. Many times Bob Hope would limo me in and give me specific instructions on how to seduce this man and ask him key questions or deliver messages. One owner had dark skin, dark hair, was average build, and always wore a suit and dark glasses. He liked it when I took his glasses off his face, laid them down and started kissing him. He wore strong cologne and black underwear, and had a holder for a gun he carried on his ankle. I was used to "disarming" men by "carefully" removing their weapons while I was seducing and disrobing them. I was instructed to do that sometimes for people who wanted others eliminated. They sent me in to seduce and disarm the person and then they would send in a hit man. I wasn't functional for days after one of these events so they quit using me for that type of assignment.

This particular Dodger owner didn't like to be seen in public. He didn't operate alone and had a company of mob-type men who worked for him. One day Bob Hope sent me in to "console" him. He was sitting alone on a locker room bench. I walked up to him and put my hand on his back so as not to startle him. He knew me and thought I worked for Lasorda. So, he let me go through my routine as I kissed him, rubbed his neck, and got him calm and relaxed. Then he said, "Let's get out of here." And he took me to a room at the stadium that is plush with a big bed in it. He ordered a bottle of champagne and caviar from the restaurant and we got it quickly. I used the little white pills I was instructed to place in drinks to get the most cooperation when I was sent in to gather information. He had sex with me and afterwards I asked him questions about a Colombian drug connection. I asked him where the transactions were taking place and he said, "Jamaica." Then I asked him when they were taking place and he answered, "in the spring when the apple blossoms are on the trees." And I asked him "who" and he told me, "Tommy's group and the Feds." It seemed like everyone always knew everyone else.

Reagan came to the Stadium on occasion. He often met with Hope. They met in the restaurant there when the restaurant was closed to the general public and made plans. I know because I was witness to their conversations as I sat with them. Sometimes my job was to listen and correct them if anything they said went against something in my data/mind files. These deals were connected up to whoever was in the White House at the time. Reagan, Ford, and Bush were all there at different times. With the Presidents, it seemed that there was already built into this corrupt drug/porn network a place or slot for the highest levels of government - the President - because the people who were Presidents came and went, but the job they did was always the same. It seemed like the stadium was a place where they could meet undetected or something.

On occasion I was flown away in a helicopter with Secret Service agents and taken to DC and debriefed or given new information to deliver somewhere else around the country. Then I was flown home.

Leaders from all over met at the Dodger Stadium. It was where the U.S. Government, White House level and state level, met with the Mob drug connections and made "deals." These deals were made with people and leaders from all over the world. No one ever knew they were there as they were limoed or helicoptered in and out at precise times--carefully coordinated and timed by the Secret Service.

During the time Steve Garvey was playing for the Dodgers he had an office in Calabasas that was used by him and the group that controlled him for illegal activities and pornography-adult and kiddy porn. I was filmed pornographically in Steve's so-called office with a variety of people, including himself, his wife, and his children. Even my own children were pornographically filmed there at different times.

Sometimes they filmed my daughter Kelly with Whitney and Krisha in kiddie porn. Lots of other children were filmed pornographically including our oldest son Kevin. But these weren't filmed at Dodger Stadium; instead they were filmed in private offices or homes.

Cyndy and I were filmed together in porn, at Steve's office. We both had little skimpy French maid aprons on and nothing else. Cyndy wore something like a black eye mask, maybe in their effort to disguise her. She had a bowl of whipped cream that she held and smeared all over her body and I was forced to lick it off of her while they filmed. I was told beforehand what to do and say. They took close up shots when I was commanded to perform oral sex on her.

There was other pornography shot during this time, beginning in the 1980's. When my daughter Kelly was old enough (3 and up) they began filming Cyndy, our daughters, and myself. A title to one of these films was Mommy and Me.

Porn of Cyndy and I was filmed on a private beach in Malibu. I was picked up in a white van and at other times was picked up by a limo. Cyndy, some dogs, and I were running naked on the beach while they filmed us. Some of this was filmed in the "Colony" in front of one of Barbra Streisand's homes. Barbra wasn't home when they took us to do the porn.

"Our love must not be a thing of words and fine talk. It must be a thing of action and sincerity." -- I John 3:18

Chapter Twenty-seven: Education 2000

Las Virgenes School District

Henry once said, "There is nothing more convincing than to have a pregnant woman speaking out for educational issues." He had me speaking to groups that were involved in various aspects of education from the top officials and big wigs down to California State legislators. He said I was fighting to increase the level of education for my future progeny; starting now, so by the time they were in school I could rest assured that they would get the finest education possible.

I began this in 1978 when I was very pregnant with Kelly. He used me in Sacramento to "further legislation for our children's education." And I went to Washington, DC, when it became necessary to take what had been won in California in the way of educational advancement and present it to influential people in DC who could make a difference in furthering this goal. California was the model and once the framework was set they wanted the new educational system to be used nationwide, but that took planning and fortitude. Years of preparation went into this to insure that the nation's children would be ready for the year 2000, when their transformation of the masses would be complete. "...And peace will guide the planet and love will rule the stars ...the dawning of the Age of Aquarius." Through programming, this song was instilled within my mind to anchor a lot of this educational activity and to also bring me under a greater influence of my true birth sign, Aquarius. The plan was for my humanitarian interests to be of such a magnitude that I would become internationally known as a leader in ending child ritual abuse. This focus would have served to keep those who found out about this abuse "busy" and distracted with "satanic behavior," and still not aware of mind control, until they could gradually implement the transformation to get people more completely under control. They referred to the time frame after the year 2000 takeover, as "The Great Transformation."

Don Zimring, the Superintendent of Schools for the Las Virgenes School District (LVSD) was heavily involved in deciding which children got special instruction. Each 'special' child in the school had their own program design and was individually monitored so they would get the early training and conditioning they would need to fulfill their destined position within the hidden inner circle framework. I was programmed to report to the LVSD office to see Don Zimring in order to be "instructed" in regard to the "special" children who were in need of individual attention and individual programs. I sat before him in a robotic "sponge" state, while he rattled off profiles of children and special videos or instruction booklets they were to be subjected to. By the time the children hit elementary school they were conditioned sufficiently so that their "programs" could be absorbed readily and easily through just saying a word that opened their access way to special abilities, like photographic memory or rapid learning states. Many women, purposefully placed in teacher and principal positions, were either programmed themselves or just didn't pay attention when a child was removed from class for "special instruction." Children were targeted for their natural talents and abilities. For example, in families who were athletically inclined, or where one or both parents excelled in sports, they put in access codes for "super athletes" and then someone from higher up had the option of stepping in and 'sponsoring' a child with a promising future. Which meant that this "higher up" funded socalled 'special education' for this child, often without the parent's conscious involvement or consent, and from then on had a special interest in how things were taught to the child. Kelly was monitored closely, always having a special tutor to "shore her up." Our controllers viewed her as a young beauty and noted her extremely positive social skills and built upon those. There was an "inner group" of school officials, parents and teachers who were involved in seeing to it that the preconditioned children were groomed in the ways necessary for them to step into future pre-designated positions.

The people behind this scheme have done endless research on the brain in response to everything, including spinning rides at amusement parks, and know just what level of stimulation is needed to make programming most effective. Over the years the research has been tried and tested through the experimentation on children who were targeted before birth. The genetic engineering aspect is highly used and they take into consideration the inherent genetic talents and abilities coupled with just the right training at the right age to produce a "highly advanced child." But, in essence, what they truly have created is a highly advanced robot that has been dehumanized to the point of not being able to think or choose for themselves. They have been robbed of their free will or any real choice in their lives.

The California Capital 'Sexcramento' and Senator Pete Wilson

The organization and framework is large. There were many people involved and the technology over the years has risen to the level where children in the preschools require less trauma and torture in the beginning stages to set in the "cues and programs" that will be built upon in later years. Pete Wilson was very involved with all of this and was set into position in the 1980's. I was sent to Sacramento with Ann Eklund, the principal of Sumac Elementary School, in the early 1980's, to set up these programs through the school districts. Although at the time I didn't know I was participating in this, years later, during a flashback, I remembered boarding a plane with her, getting off with her and being met by a taxi that drove us to offices of the California State Department of Education. It seems that the instructions to implement these "special programs" filtered down from "the top." The higher ups see it as technologically advancing the children, creating "mega minds of the future" for later use within their own system. The children are force fed information into previously set up inner systems of mind files and are trained to be able to accept vast amounts of highly technological information beginning at age three. They are not taught to think, but only to be used and accessed like a computer.

Ann Eklund was highly involved in the project and had been since its inception. The framework was set into great motion in Sacramento in the early 80's between Ann, Don Zimring, Pete Wilson and several officials from Washington, DC. I was flown to DC to speak before a committee meeting to describe how the program was progressing. Sometimes a child would be "demonstrated" to the committee to show the advanced mind technology that was possible. Disbelieving Senators and Congressmen 'in the know,' needed to see to believe. The child could be made to perform on cue and recite mega amounts of highly complex technological information. They saw these children as being prototypal descendents of mine. These particular politicians knew how I was used with Henry Kissinger and were "amazed" to know that any similarly conditioned child could possess the same qualities of mind ability. Reagan was also involved and so was Bush. Our instructions for individual children's programming often came from the White House level as many of these wealthy people "adopted" and "supported" children "with promise." These elite overseers viewed the 'special' children as the minds of the future, the future world leaders, preprogrammed with their own wisdom and desires for how they feel the world should be run, based on their own values. GOD HELP US!

LVSD was the No. l pilot program and many funds were approved to be used within the school district, but were actually skimmed off the top to finance a lot of "special programs," really aimed at the children who had been targeted. Children who were targeted were dismissed from class, taken to a room for special attention and were hooked up to special audio tapes, linked with accompanying picture books, in the beginning years, and then later on to computers and sound. Large reels of film were used occasionally when not available on video and it was timely for the information to be "visually cued" into a child's brain. But usually it was done by video or computer. It created complex brain function and set up controls within the child that these people manipulated. They have performed experiment after experiment over the years to develop the most effective equipment to use on children. Much of the funding earmarked for use within the school district was siphoned off to be used for research and to pay technicians to develop and test the equipment, computer programs, etc. During that time, many of the state school funds were misappropriated and used for things other than what they were approved for.

I am pretty sure now that the memories I had of accompanying Reagan to Point Mugu and other places for speeches, was when I was being "demonstrated" to others and was cued to speak about the same technology that was being used with children three, four, and five years old. Reagan used me often for demonstration because he said I stood the test of time, which meant that I had been in operation for over 30 years without a leak, or without a problem. I heard him explain to people that I was so "real" that he sometimes forgot I was a programmed robot. He said he liked that because, "you get all the benefits of a robot with human softness added." He was very proud of the technology and spoke freely about it within a trusted group. I was presented to the military, to politicians, etc., for them to see and witness the technology, and then I presented my pre-programmed information. Many requested private demonstrations of my sexual capabilities in order to become believers. Whenever there were men at the presentations, and usually they were men, there were private one-on-one sexual demonstrations afterwards.

In my head, when I was retrieving these memories, I kept hearing the phrase, "Senate subcommittee meetings on advancing education in America." I remember Pete Wilson speaking and there was a demonstration done on the educational system that had nothing to do with what was actually going on behind the scenes, but they had to justify the large amounts of money that they were trying to appropriate for their secret system. It was all a sham - they knew they would get the money, they knew where it was coming from and how they could get it. It was just a matter of making the steps and actions look like it was all above-board, while behind the scenes they planned the new technology in education, privately. Their attitudes were that other people in the private sector wouldn't be able to grasp what they were doing because they didn't have the required intellect. So, they justified its secrecy this way, feeling this new system was the advancement of society and until people could really see the results in action and how effective these methods of education would be in the advancement of society, they needed to keep the methodology quiet. They used big words to intimidate those people they wanted to leave them alone and they were quite successful at accomplishing that. People who couldn't understand what they were saying would back down and walk away. They used me for this project beginning in the early 80's and didn't care whether I was pregnant or just out of the hospital or what. They just overrode what my personal situation was by using my multiplicity.

Pete Wilson was probably elected governor so that they could pull this whole thing off without any problem. Ann Eklund introduced me to him in the very early 80's and the sexual connection was made, then I was fed information by the Council (from the hotel room in the Holiday Inn or the Marriott) to "deliver" to Pete even in the early years. He jumped though all the hoops they presented to him with no problem and so they kept promoting him just like they did Reagan. Only difference was, Reagan seemed ignorant compared to Pete and I guess that meant that Pete was more knowledgeable and better informed about certain situations, beyond acting in accordance with what the Council wanted. Reagan just acted in accordance, like a puppet with no understanding of what he was doing in so many situations, always worried about the state of affairs of the Nation, but easily calmed and his attention diverted to another subject.

The school district plans were directly tied into the preschool abuse. They made sure they had "qualified" preschools set up in areas near the elementary and secondary education schools so the children would be "prepared" before entering kindergarten. Then the public school system had in place the network of people to carry out the children's "further education." The controllers have people placed in positions, high up, in widely varying areas to fund their plan and to fill the positions required in order to make it successful. They had programmed people in place from the janitor all the way up to the school district supervisors and on into the state and federal government. All key positions were filled to make sure their plan is implemented and failsafe. They moved key people around as needed.

In 1985, not long after my April 12th auto accident, I continued on as coordinator of the carnival at Sumac Elementary. I had been working on it for months. But I was in so much pain that I had to do it with a neck brace and the aid of Percodan. My mother and father even attended, with my father in a wheel chair-all this took place before I remembered any of my past. The funds that came from that little Saturday event were significant enough, with thousands of dollars raised, that the head of the Park and Recreation Department for Agoura invited me to be the fundraiser for the local parks department. Between the money earned by this carnival and the large sums earned by the Agoura Great Race, organized by a friend of mine, the school was able to buy computers, turning a whole section of a stage area into row after row of computers. It was a few years later that I began remembering a little boy sitting at one of those computers working away, 'lost in time.' I walked behind him and, as programmed, I intentionally lost my balance and drove my knee into his back in order to further 'dissociate' him, and then I tapped him on his left shoulder twice. There was usually a word command coupled with these actions, something that would cue the child back into a specific mind state or program at a later date. I also remember going up to one of Danny's teachers and saying something like, "Are you going to teach the child about Napoleon?" Napoleon was the key word. I don't know what it did or was suppose to do to the teacher, but it also was coupled with a tap on the left shoulder. Of course, while I know that I didn't consciously plan why I said that, I also wonder who coordinated all of this, cueing me to cue her and some of the students.

This new computer area installed at Sumac Elementary got the 'special' children out of class and gave anyone who wanted to approach them, access to them. They got a permission slip from their teacher and went by themselves to the computer area. Later, in therapy, I remembered pulling a videotape from my purse and coming up behind a child and changing what he was watching on a VCR. Later, they had computer disks that were similarly brought in. These children had been targeted since they were very small. Many children at the school did not receive this "special attention" - only those who were to become leaders in the future and those who were sponsored.

Of course, in the intentionally created reality driven by the mind control I was under, I simply believed that I was a good wife and dutiful mother. I had no way of knowing I was being used in this way.

"If I can stop one heart from breaking, I shall not live in vain.
If I can ease one life the aching, or cool one pain,
Or help one fainting robin into his nest again, I shall not live in vain. "
-- Emily Dickinson

Chapter Twenty-eight: Reagan, Kissinger, Bush and More Horrors

One day, on assignment, I was standing at the top of a very tall set of four or five tiers of marble stairs. President Reagan walked out of a room below and paused a moment before he looked up and saw me. Quickly he put his finger to his lips and I knew that meant to keep quiet. He motioned for me to come downstairs and meet him outside. I promptly looked away from him so I wouldn't be publicly noticed or connected with him, and started walking. Once outside, a Secret Service agent directed me toward a limo and as I got close he took hold of my head and pushed me inside. I was waiting when Reagan arrived. He stepped in backwards so no one from the outside would be able to see me. After the door was shut, he smiled and kissed me and said that he had missed me. He said he needed me to go with him to the Pentagon to introduce me to some friends of his.

There I was exposed to file after file of small typed information and was introduced to an officer who had on a dark blue uniform with gold trim that looked like a Navy uniform. Reagan instructed this man to show me information that was top-secret. This was information I needed to have in my mind files for some upcoming meeting. Then Reagan left. I followed this man to his office and watched while he opened his file drawer, took out some files and laid them open on his desk. He left me with them and went out of the room, locking the door behind him, locking me inside. I was in his office for quite some time and went over four files in detail. I couldn't remember the details when I was deprogramming the documents to read them to you now. The officer kept checking on me and when I was through he escorted me to a waiting limo. Reagan wasn't there.

White House Humor

"Once in the White House always in the White House, I know my own way upstairs!" Bob programmed me to say to Presidents.

When I said that to Reagan he said he didn't find that amusing. I told him, "Well Bob said for me to say that."

Reagan immediately softened up, laughed and said, "You tell that ole' buzzard I said hello."

Once you are on the list "to do the White House" they keep using you over and over if your Boss man agrees.

Cozumel

During September of 1984 or 1986, Craig and I went to Cozumel on a scuba diving vacation with a group of dental friends. A day and a half of the trip was reserved for Reagan. The men in suits came for me in the middle of the night. It often happened that way, where they just appeared in the room and took me away. They said they had come to "prepare me," which I knew meant torture and isolation, to be readied for my time with Reagan. I was put into a cement utility room. It was dark except for the pilot light from a hot water heater located in the corner. That was the only light until daylight. I was stripped naked and left in the cold cement room all night alone. The men opened the door every so often and used electro-shock on me, by putting a prod on my hips. My body contorted and convulsed, and my hands involuntarily rose uncontrollably into the air. Then, I collapsed into a heap on the floor and they told me to keep standing, not to sit down or go to sleep. They checked in on me every so often, to see if I sat down or had fallen asleep, and if I had, they zapped me again with high voltage, and even if I hadn't they would zap me. Either way, I got it.

If I had to go to the bathroom, I went in a corner and then they would slap me for that. The men in suits were brutal. Slapping me, shinning bright lights in my eyes, shocking my body. . . it was sheer torture. They injected my arm with some drug and I slumped over. One of them covered me up with a

sheet and carried me to a black car, and the next thing I knew I woke up in a hotel room where I was told to shower, wash my hair and dress in the clothes they left for me.

When I finished dressing, they took me to a dimly lit restaurant where Reagan was sitting in a candlelit booth, already eating. It was late and there weren't any other people in the restaurant. Reagan smiled and took my left hand activating my touch program as he squeezed it. He winked at me as he continued eating. I just sat with him, with the Secret Service waiting behind him, while he ate. I was very out of it, and was having trouble focusing to keep myself together. My inner system of personalities was programmed to never make a mistake in regard to which personality was "presenting." I was forewarned by my controllers that if this ever happened it would be a fatal mistake and I was programmed to keep my inner personality system in check by an internal oversight committee that decided who was to be out in a split second snap of the fingers. It wasn't that I was switched to the wrong personality for this event; I think, at that moment, I was just physically incapable of performing.

Reagan said, "You look beautiful as always." I smiled shyly and he lifted his hand up, brushed my hair off my shoulder and pushed on the side of my neck. I felt like my eyes rolled out of my head. He looked to the Secret Service agents and said that he didn't think I was "quite ready. "

The Secret Service agents took me outside into the ocean air and walked me around a bit and then took me back to him. They said, "Perform!" and I sat down, this time more alert, bubbly and talkative!

Finished eating by now, Reagan took my hand again and said, "Let's get out of here." We walked through the kitchen and out the back door, with Secret Service agents before and after us, into a waiting limo. I asked him where Nancy was and he said, "She's home where she belongs!" He pulled my legs up over his lap as we drove away and said, "You're in for a real treat tonight."

It was late at night when we pulled up in front of a big white hotel. We went in quickly, after a Secret Service agent checked to make sure the lobby was clear. Reagan and I went hand-in-hand to the elevator up to the second floor. We followed the agent down the hall and waited as he stopped in front of a room, while two other agents guarded Reagan outside. There was a balcony off the room, and we could hear the surf. It wasn't the plushest of rooms, but it was nice.

Reagan took off the white summer coat I'd been given to wear and sat next to me on the bed. He started talking to me as he undid the back of my dress. He undressed me this time, revealing the sheer white lacy bra, panties and white nylons I had been given to wear.

Reagan was aggressive this night. This was not typical behavior for him, as he was usually so passive. He pushed me back onto the bed and kissed me eagerly while I began undressing him, one button at a time. He was in a hurry and very passionate. I was surprised at how different he was. He nibbled my ear, rubbed my navel to access touch programming, and I performed oral sex. While he lay on his back, I climbed on top of him to bring him to orgasm. Soon I lay down next to him, and we dozed off to sleep.

A few hours later, a Secret Service agent woke me up and put his finger to his lips to keep me quiet so I wouldn't wake up the President. The agent grabbed my clothes and shoes and took me to another room to dress. They put me into a dark sedan and took me back to my hotel, the El Presidente.

The next morning I woke up next to my husband in our hotel room, as if from a nap, feeling really strange, very tired, and out of it, but with no trace of memory of my time with Reagan. That evening my husband and I went to dinner with our friends and I was unable to think or do much more than eat my dinner and smile occasionally at someone as they spoke at the table. I did manage to stay awake through dinner but couldn't wait to go to sleep. The next morning I woke exhausted and feeling ill, but didn't know why. Waking weary and worn out was such a common occurrence for me and I had no way of knowing why I was really tired. I just figured that being tired, dazed, and feeling ungrounded was the

way I was born. I never was able to think past that thought in order to penetrate the amnestic barrier, until much later.

Catalina Island

I was used on Catalina Island, for sexual rendezvous with Reagan and sometimes other public officials or entertainers. If Nancy didn't accompany Reagan to Catalina, it usually meant my use with him was for sex. She accompanied him at times when business affairs were at hand and other people were present for meetings. If Ronnie would touch me on the hand or look at me, she would get upset. Quietly and off to the side, he would tell me not to worry my pretty little head about her. I was programmed to have sex with Reagan at the Wrigley Mansion, the Zane Grey and other hotels on the island. It seems Reagan was usually on the island anonymously; for security purposes, no one was to know he was there.

There were usually two Secret Service agents who escorted me to my assignment. We often walked to our destination on the island when it was only a short distance. They directed me where to go and stayed behind me so that it would not appear that they were with me. An agent delivered me to the hotel room to wait for Reagan. Reagan preferred for me to wait for him naked, but he told me each time how he wanted me to be the next time and I did as instructed.

The agents who delivered me were always waiting right outside with the other agents when it was time to go. Then, they delivered me back to my hotel room.

When I looked at Reagan's body when he was naked he had a white flabby stomach and buttocks, not fat, just flabby and old looking. When I was scheduled to be with him, I was preinstructed to put on five strategically located sprays of Oscar de la Renta perfume - one spray on each side of my neck, one on each wrist and one in between my legs. He was very sensory oriented and my body had to be super clean. He often told me he liked how I smelled.

Reagan literally lay on his back the whole time we were having sex and had me do him. It was always one-on-one with him, usually quiet and sedate. No violence, no intensity. He liked for me to rub his back and then help him on with his pajamas. At this point in the evening, I often felt like I was pampering and putting a child to bed, despite the fact that he was 40 years older than I was! He made sure everything was comfy and in place. It was fairly routine, never much variation.

One night at the Wrigley Mansion, Reagan wanted me to pretend like I was forcing him to have sex with me. After the game, he put the stun gun to the small of my back. I never knew when it was coming with him because he would smile and all of a sudden I'd get zapped. Then I passed out, just sort of fainted over on him and he would catch me and direct my body over next to him, and then he would turn away and go to sleep, but his body was still touching me.

Sometimes the stun gun was placed at the base of my skull. Different places for different reasons. In the forehead it was meant to erase the mind file just used.

Chronic Pain

Over the years, I suffered from chronic pelvic pain and sharp stabbing pains that shot up through my vagina and rectum. I went to the doctor in an attempt to alleviate the cause, but by 1984 it was decided that a total hysterectomy was the only cure for my pain. I was 33 years old. After the surgery, the pain did lessen, but wasn't completely gone. At that time I was still unaware that I had been abused but when I began to have flashbacks and memories of the extreme sexual abuse that I had endured my whole

life, the pain lessened. Once my hidden past was brought to conscious awareness, I healed and the pain went away for good.

Secretive Meetings with the Owl

I had to maneuver through lots of fairy tale programming like the following in order to gain access into memory of experiences when I was used as a mind file for Henry Kissinger at secret meetings. There was a fairy tale about a beautiful redwood forest, but it wasn't real, it was only fantasy. It had beautiful giant trees with red bark and it was in the mountains. There was a beautiful fairy princess who visited there and she was allowed to because she had special connections to the forest animals. She made friends with the great owl who watched over her and kept her safe. He alerted her if there were any problems because he was so big and so wise. He looked big to her because she had taken the magic mushrooms just like Alice in the Looking Glass and she couldn't tell if he was really big or she was just very tiny, but he could watch out for her.

This fairy tale was intended to cover and scramble the real memory of a men's camp of sorts in the California redwoods. There was a wooden box mounted on a tree with a special phone inside that the group of men who met there could call from. Henry needed me there to assist him with data. After the meetings during the day he would layer in the fairy tales at night in an attempt to scramble my memory.

Kissinger also met with George Bush at a place outdoors in the mountains that was like a men's camp. There was a large wooden building that they used for meetings. They slept in smaller sleeping cabins. I slept in a separate screened-in cabin and Henry put me into a mode to stay there and not leave until he came to get me. Henry met with George Bush when he was Vice President, more than he did with Reagan, who was President. This was because Henry and George had more in common on this particular endeavor and worked hand-in-hand on the project.

Then Vice-President Bush, Kissinger, and a White House correspondent met to decide what the White House Correspondent was going to put out through the media to the public to insure success of their plans. Henry always had his strategies and accomplished a lot behind the scenes by working through and directing other politicians or people connected to the White House.

At another meeting, Henry and George accessed my geographic locations file and gained access to information about certain foreign countries. They would pick perfect strategic locations to start wars and/or disputes they wanted in order to distract the American people and others about what they were really doing in an area. I would rattle off information about an area, describing it's climate, terrain, ocean access, mountain access, etc., and I would keep going on with information until they heard a location that would work for their plans. Then they would say STOP and I would stop. Meetings took place there often.

Kissinger Mind File Use During Bush's Vice Presidency and Presidency

During Reagan's administration, Henry Kissinger and George Bush used me often in a mind file capacity. When Bush became President, my job didn't change - only the person holding the office of President did. One day Henry and I were at the White House and he shook hands with Vice-President George Bush. I was there for mind file use. They were talking about the IranContra situation and Henry was telling George what to say publicly to cover their tracks. He had a lengthy conversation with Bush, telling him "key phrases" to say when asked certain questions so they could keep their stories straight.

George didn't like Henry smoking his cigar inside, but Henry smoked anyway. I guess Bush needed Henry's help so bad that he didn't press the cigar issue any further. Henry filled my mind files with information to bring back to the Governor of California, who I believe at the time was Governor

Deukmajian. We sat in wooden chairs with leather seats in front of Bush's desk. The floor in the room was wooden, with a large throw rug over it. There was an American flag to our left - to Bush's right. Bush took his glasses on and off when he got upset or nervous.

Dinners held to entertain important foreign leaders or politicians from our own country often involved Henry Kissinger. He was not one to be social, but attended these dinners out of duty. If I was to target an individual in attendance, I often went with Henry. I was "strategically" seated next to him as well as the person they were trying to monitor or influence. Henry always briefed me beforehand in regard to things that were important to a foreign leader or a certain Senator or Congressmen. I would say sentences that had been implanted in my head to draw them out and get them talking. Sometimes I was given little white pills to drop in their wineglasses to "help them loosen up a little," is what Henry would say.

At these dinners, the President would clink his glass with a fork or spoon and propose a toast to the honored guest. All the presidents did it. Tapping of the wineglass was a means to call me to attention; most often it was a time when a very specific code was introduced to set me up for what I was to do the rest of the evening. After they clinked the glass, I subconsciously received the directions carefully embedded in the toast. Although Henry was the mastermind and loaded me up with information for targeted people for the evening, the Presidents were always told that I was at their service for the evening when I was included at a dining arrangement. Henry really had his own agenda that I fulfilled within the evening, mingling with those persons he predirected me to. But he took the courtesy of letting the Presidents feel they were in charge of me, so my instructions were to listen with an ear to hear the coded instructions and file them in with the instructions Henry had given me for the evening. Although I didn't understand consciously what to do, the coded parts inside of me knew exactly what to do and what area within the personality structure would carry out the duty. The Presidents I worked with knew exactly who I was, and knew that as a robot, I needed direction while I was sitting at the dining table with the guests. They gave me direction in relation to foreign leaders and which to target and what information to go after. If there were two foreign dignitaries then I would be told what to do with each of them. Bush utilized me often like this to hunt out information or find where loyalties lay.

Some of the guests at different times were royalty from England, foreign ambassadors, and other leaders from around the world. They often had interpreters with them at dinner so they could communicate. Henry put key phrases in my mind files, created especially for them because my knowledge of foreign languages was limited, but later, sex usually bridged the language barrier.

I was told what to say when questioned. Sometimes I said I was working for the State Department. Some of the men must have been given prior permission to have me sexually because they would touch my leg under the table or slip their hand up my dress. These men thought they were being given a gift, but they were really being interrogated or seeded by a programmed operative who had been well trained to do just that sort of job interwoven with sex. Sometimes it was just quick sex in a back office and then they would go home with their wife, or sometimes me. When I was to spend the night with a guest, we were often limoed to a nearby hotel for the evening. This happened when the men in control wanted some serious information. At other times, my instructions were merely to sit next to a targeted guest, deliver preprogrammed messages and record in my mind files their responses, reactions, etc.

Once a Machine, Always a Machine!

At times, Bob met and played golf with George Bush. "Once a machine always a machine," Bob said about me to Bush on the golf course in Palm Springs. Bush told Bob he acted like an old married couple with me. Bob laughed and said, "There's nothing old about her!" Bush didn't think it was so funny and just went on to the next hole in silence, followed by Secret Service agents.

George Bush knew all about my use as a human computer. He treated me very unkindly, like I wasn't human. One day, Henry and George got into a fierce argument over how George treated me. Henry said, "Would you go over to an expensive computer and kick it if it malfunctioned?" This was during Bush's Vice-Presidency when George accessed my files often and participated back and forth with Greenspan and Kissinger during that time. Henry said, "George if you're going to use the equipment you're going to have to learn to use it properly."

George said to Henry, "Hank, this young woman is nothing but a piece of equipment and if she continues to malfunction on me, I'll have to put a stop to her use." I sat blankly while they continued their argument.

The Game of Life or is it Slow Death?

George Bush was always mean, gruff and degrading. Overtime, he continually gave me brutal 'attitude adjustments.' He knew just how to twist the knife psychologically and could get me 'back in line' quicker than anyone else, due to the fact that he had abused my daughter and could devastate me by reminding me of the brutal things he did to her. Or he would say, "I can read you like a book and don't ever forget it. If you ever get a notion in your head like this again your daughter will be motherless. Don't cross me again." He was always yelling at me. He also started this program about 'life.' I had eaten LIFE cereal my whole life as part of a program, and he said to eat it and remember while I was eating it that, "only by going along with the program will you stay alive and continue your duties to your family and country." In programmed response, I ate LIFE cereal all the time, even carrying little snack bags of it around with me if I felt scared or threatened. Bush also had my children play the game of LIFE with me and reminded us, "Spin the dial and see what life has to offer." George would remind us to remember whenever we played, "if you get off track, you will loose not only your own life, but the precious lives of those traveling with you, your children." (Or, in my children's case, "your mother or father.")

Henry was so busy perfecting and guarding his technology within me that, at the time, I experienced him as protecting me, since he personally wasn't violent with me. But I know now that he was very much a part of the group of people that hurt me and, in fact, had to have orchestrated a lot of my high-level abuse. At times Henry acted like a mad scientist, so pleased with his creation, yet lost to humanity.

Mexico

Lots of drug transactions took place in the middle of crowds, such as in parades. I was involved in a big one in Mazatlan on Cinco de Mayo. We had just eaten dinner with Craig's family, aunt, uncle and cousin at the Shrimp Bucket restaurant. They had a lot of alcohol to drink and Craig's aunt took me into the restroom and passed some drugs off to me and told me to put the bag inside my dress. I was wearing a peach colored cotton sundress and I did what she said but didn't like to put the package in my panties like she told me to because it made me look pregnant or fat. Soon, we all left the restaurant and stepped out into the street where a festive Cinco de Mayo parade was in full swing. As we entered the huge crowd of people dancing and marching in the street, we moved along helplessly sandwiched in between the crowd. Craig kept laughing hysterically and smashed confetti eggs in my hair. I was terrified because nothing felt real, and the loud noises and all the people jammed close together frightened me. A man with dark skin, wearing white cotton pants, shirt and straw hat grabbed my arm and pulled me away from the crowd, down a dark side street. He pulled me through what at first looked like a doorway into an old abandoned building but as we made our way to the back, I was escorted into a room that was restored and decorated. A group of men were sitting around a table with a low hanging lamp, smoking and playing cards. "Here she is," my guide announced.

Another dark-skinned man came over to me. I think they called him Johnny T. He patted my stomach and said, "What do we have here? A gold mine?" He pulled up my dress and removed the package. In front of all the other men, he set his cigar down, pulled off his belt, unzipped his pants, let them fall to the floor, stepped out of them and said to his comrades, "This is what I've waited all night for." And he pulled me to the ground and raped me in front of the group. When he was through with me he opened the package I had delivered and said, "Tell the United States government, we thank them for their gifts, for their generosity, and tell them we like the way they do business," everyone laughed as he continued, "and that we will continue to hold up our end of the bargain." Another man took me out to a waiting car and I was delivered back to Craig's uncle.

George Bush was often a part of the illegal drug activity in Mexico. It felt as if he followed me and my family around on our vacations; no matter where we went, he and "the boys," showed up. I realize now our vacation spots really revolved around our controller's agenda but in those days I had no way of knowing that. It seemed like Reagan was just a puppet and Bush made all the arrangements, did the thinking, planning and carrying out of the deals. At meetings and social gatherings, Bush made the connections and cut the deal while Reagan just acted oblivious - which is not to say he didn't know or wasn't aware, he just wasn't ever the mastermind. Bush was ruthless and brutal; the end justified the means. He even had a red handkerchief he kept in his pocket for wiping blood off of Kelly or me. He had high expectations and often expected us to do things that he had inadvertently forgotten to tell us, at which point Kelly or I got slapped, beaten, or dealt with in other torturous ways. There was a time on Maui when a Secret Service agent came to my aid saying to Bush, "Sir, I don't think you told her that." That was the end of his job; Bush fired him on the spot. One day Bush took a pocketknife out of his pants pocket and I was terrified that he would use it on me, but instead he used it to cut the skin off a green apple. He told me I'd be next to have my skin cut off in the same slow, torturous manner if I didn't cooperate.

I saw the Mexican leaders more frequently at the White House than in Mexico; they were usually brutal and violent.

Craig's Uncle Lyle Curran, who worked for NASA, specially arranged for us to purchase a timeshare; the Presidential Suite, at the El Cid Hotel, in Mazatlan. My husband purchased the use of this suite, for the same week in April, every year for the next 25 years. My family and I always thought we were going there for a vacation. But that was never what occurred. On one such vacation, a man in a suit met Kelly and I just after we had bought our 'strawberry banana smoothies' at the hotel shake stand. Later I discovered that these drinks, although very healthy, were programming cues that were installed at an earlier time when we were taken to the Santa Monica Pier and put on the Carousel Ride. A man put both of us on the horses and told us, "tied together, you are one." There was other mirror programming and suggestions that created confusion over where I started or ended physically, and Kelly began or ended. There were to be no separate identities.

Anyway, we had on our bikinis and this suited man followed us over the bridged overpass that led to the Presidential Suite. As we went into the room he slipped in behind us. He told us to sit down on the bed. He put earphones on both of us, and injected our forearms. Kelly sat with one leg folded under her, in half Indian style position. We were body programmed and different body positions meant different things. George Bush arrived, dressed in a tan suit, and Kelly was "prepared" for him. Bush, a couple of Mexican leaders, and one other man had a meeting in our suite. I sat next to Bush at the meeting while he accessed my mind files. When the meeting was over George waited until everyone left the room, shook their hands politely at the door and when they were gone he went into the bedroom where Kelly was waiting. I sat robotically at the table.

Awhile later, when Kelly came out of the room, she had a smile on her face. Per programmed conditioning, she always wore a smile but she didn't look good to me. Bush left with two Secret Service agents that were parked outside the door to the suite. One of them called him, "Geo."

Another time Henry Kissinger was sitting with George Bush at a meeting that took place at the large dining table in our Presidential Suite at El Cid with two Mexican men. I was there to be used in mind file capacity. There were other such meetings that took place at our family timeshare, at El Cid, in the "Presidential Suite."

"Honesty is the first chapter of the book of wisdom." -- Thomas Jefferson

Chapter Twenty-nine: Back to the Future

More High Tech Classified Projects

In 1985, after a head-on collision and the ensuing healing process necessitated by the auto accident, my direction and course were irrevocably altered. I left my position in my husband's dental practice, returned to college and attended Pepperdine University in Malibu to begin classes to fulfill the requirements for a degree in Psychology. But as always, in addition to the coursework leading to my degree was an alternate, hidden agenda, planned and orchestrated by my controllers. Along with attending classes at Pepperdine, I was used in the Malibu area for experiments that furthered parapsychology research, as well.

At Pepperdine there were experiments and research on the nature of higher consciousness, how the brain intercepts thought, why some brains process higher thought and others don't, how pure diet and water effects the brain, the effects of meditation on the brain, remote viewing and out-of-body experiments. I was programmed to meet with a group in a small room at the University where we watched movies. My attendance was carefully tied to my use in the projects and with Ronald Reagan. There were others in the room robotically watching the movies. They treated us like monkeys.

Telepathic Experiments

Among other things at Pepperdine, tests were done on studying and learning in altered states of consciousness. I began reading endless books on psychic phenomena and began being psychically trained and further experimented on. Each day at lunch I reported to the large cross that graces the hillside at the University, in order to sit in the small area inside and go into a meditative state. I did this each and every day and felt as if I was communicating with the whales and dolphins in the vast ocean that spanned the panoramic view from that location.

Part of the experiments focused on telepathic communication and my controllers were sending messages to me via satellite systems to see if I could pick them up. They tasked me with these assignments that had to be performed in the ocean or near the ocean so it would be easier to pick up the telepathic messages sent over the airwaves that they were broadcasting to me. There were times I consciously thought I was just going to go for a drive, to have the day to myself, when in reality I was instructed and directed to different locations. One day I drove into a remote canyon high in the hills above Malibu. I positioned myself on top of a mountain in my beach chair and sat all by myself and read a book on Edgar Cayce. When I looked to the sprawling mountaintops, my eyes focused on all sorts of satellite dishes and instrumentation on the hill in front of me. After spending a few hours there I returned to my home in Agoura Hills. Later that day, the phone rang. I picked it up and a man asked me questions before saying, "We see you picked up the message about where to go today and followed our instructions impeccably. Good work and be waiting for the next set of instructions." Click, he hung up. Robotically I hung up the phone and went on like nothing had happened. Immediately this slice of reality submerged itself deep within the programmed recesses of my mind, and was kept there until a later time when I was reaccessed.

There were many places I was telepathically directed to in response to messages sent to me by my controllers. Often I was led to believe that incarnate guides and masters were leading me when I was really being led by the men who were instilling these thoughts in order to direct me to various places where they wanted me.

Further Adventures Along the California Coast

The American government seemed to be willing to sell anything, including children, to foreign countries in order to gain monies to fund the mind control and other research projects. Reagan presented it saying that it was the only way we would survive - that we would all be killed by nuclear destruction at the hands of these "foreign morons" unless we were able to have more control, and the mind control projects insured American safety. He made it sound like something the United States had to have to stay a safe and free nation. But the Council knows the bigger picture lies beyond what Reagan thought was "national security." It was really an international takeover by a group of megalomaniacs who have decided to insure the future for their own genetically advanced progeny. From my perspective, it had nothing to do with American freedom or safety. But Reagan was a pawn and didn't have all the information or know about the Council's higher agenda. If he had, he would have known the United States was being duped.

Reagan sent for me and I was picked up, once again at noontime, while I was 'meditating' under the cross at Pepperdine, in order to be taken for demonstration to men from all over. They were usually small groups because Henry or the Council was working that angle, too, putting together different foreign scientists or foreign leaders who would naturally be competitive so they could get the most out of them. Often Reagan, or a military officer, would explain the project to them as a group and they would toy with their national pride and play off their natural competitiveness and ego. Then after the meeting, one of our people would take them aside, into a separate room and tell them we were interested but that such and such a country (Saudi Arabia for example) had more to offer. They worked them like that to get more cooperation in hopes that maybe the leader or scientist would offer more favors, resources, connections, etc., so we would get even more out of the deal. Henry really knew how to work people, and he knew how to be very convincing. He told Reagan and others that it was all for national security, American safety, and these men all believed it, they all thought Henry was so smart and so pro-American, but he never really was. He just talked that way to get people to do what he and the Council wanted. "Reagan isn't a robot, but he might as well be," Kissinger said. I'm not so sure.

During the 80's I was keyed to a computer in my bedroom, where I began to get instructions at home from the Council. I didn't think I was very good at computers since I'd taken a computer class and felt I really couldn't learn the technology. But while the "I," the conscious part of my personality, was unaware of my computer proficiency, other parts were completely in tune! Upon awakening, before I brushed my teeth, I was instructed to report to my computer. It displayed a symbol if I had instructions and was to continue for further instructions. They made it simple for me to access. There were codes for 'regulars,' people I met with weekly, like some of the movie stars in Malibu and Beverly Hills. I was given schedules and lists of people to meet, or to be expecting to meet, and dates to be at certain places at certain times, so I would know to have my hair done, nails polished, what time, location, etc. I didn't any longer have to report to the room at the Holiday Inn; I could get my instructions from home. After the mid 80's, my controllers began accessing me more directly without Craig being so much in charge. They took more direct control.

Often my instructions were to wait in meditation beneath the cross at the University. I was used heavily during this time, and spent less and less time with my family. Men in suits or men that looked and dressed like they were gardeners at Pepperdine would come up to me and give me messages while I was in a meditative state. Later, men in suits would pick me up, tapping me in code on my shoulder two or three times, after which I would get up and go with them. This particular time, the men drove me to weapons warehouses where I delivered detailed messages to arms dealers and recorded their responses to take back. Lots of foreign countries' arms 'deals' took place in warehouses, at least the original dealings. After that I would take the message back and deliver it that night wherever I was directed. Then I would return home in the evening to my family, having thought I had 'studied' in the university library the whole day. Fat chance!

An Iran-Contra arms trade took place in a warehouse in Santa Monica. Nothing was ever to have been traced back to Reagan because it was to have been a covert operation to raise funds for other projects, "research projects." They felt justified in selling arms to anyone, including our enemies, because they felt that the days of armed conflict were over. Instead we could now win wars using our high tech psychological, chemical and electronic warfare, if we ever needed to, and be able to use mind control technologies to insure the enemy laid down their weapons. But in the meantime, we could sell them comparatively obsolete weapons and make money for furthering the research in mind control.

Lots of drug and arms deals took place in warehouses in California, especially in and near Santa Monica and Malibu. A lot of foreign connections were made in order to increase the funds for the continuation of the research projects. And they used the mind-controlled robots they had created to earn money for them. Many, many people are under mind control and have been working for them for years - men and women who are dentists, attorneys, stockbrokers, doctors, psychiatrists, psychologists, politicians, bankers, corporate heads, engineers, newspaper editors or owners, nurses, teachers, principals, etc. etc. etc. And all these programmed people are used to further "the cause," each placed in strategic positions for use by the Council.

The technology available is so advanced that most people couldn't even dream of it. It far surpasses anything yet seen on sci-fi movies or read about in books -- total automation, even of people.

They put mind control operatives into jobs that included travel and then used them internationally to further their cause. They felt there was no way that they couldn't succeed since so many are now under their complete control and are able to be controlled by universal signals, enabling them to put certain words, phrases, or symbols into the current media (movies, television, newpapers, music, etc.) and the mind-controlled robots are programmed to step up their pace. Certain words have been paired through programming to different tasks these robots are assigned to do. So all they have to do is to hear the word combinations, tones, frequency, etc., and they can all be commanded within a very short time to carry out their programmed instructions.

Fun in the Sun?

At other times I would report to Zuma Beach and think I spent the day relaxing in the sun by myself. In actuality I climbed out of my beach chair and walked out into the surf, swam into the waves, sometimes for long distances, easily and effortlessly, as my programming commanded, to meet a boat just outside the wave break. A man in the boat who helped me on board, dripping wet, handed me a towel and once said, "My, but you must be an important person." I couldn't comprehend or respond because I was in total program and this event 'wasn't really happening.'

He drove me to Point Mugu and apologized when due to large surf conditions he couldn't get in closer when we neared the rear entrance. I told him not to worry that I was used to swimming long distances and was adept at swimming waves. I told him I'd just use the waves to get me in easily. I had a program that rendered my body incapable of feeling the temperature of the water, so I could enter very cold water and not get cold. So I dove off the boat in my bikini and swam to shore. There were some pens and an underwater screen that I knew to swim around to get to the shore. I walked onto the beach area, to the cement and the chain link fence, then waited until a man in a white naval uniform let me in and escorted me to an outside shower they used when they swam. He took me inside to a bathroom, where I found a naval uniform, white blouse with navy blue and gold trim, and a white skirt and navy blue heels neatly piled up for me to wear. My hair was trimmed every 4 weeks so that I could just run my fingers through it and it would look okay, since it was naturally curly. The same officer took me through an area where they used a metal scanner on me for security purposes and I had to pass through a light monitor and did

so with flying colors. Then I was escorted in to see whomever I was to report to - an officer, Commander, Reagan or sometimes Bush. But this time I was there to meet Reagan and to be demonstrated to a group of foreign scientists they wanted to recruit for research.

I was put into a clear cylindrical capsule, maybe for show, and then Reagan showed these men how I reacted upon command. He demonstrated the use of my mind files by quickly asking me for detailed information and descriptions of schematics. I performed up to speed, dictating to them the elaborate 3-D holographic craft images that I was viewing in my head. All the men clapped. In the beginning they had to condition me to the clapping because it flipped me out and switched me, and then I would be surprised to find myself where I was. Usually after the demonstrations were finished, Reagan would limo me out with him and we went for a quick sexual encounter somewhere, locally. Later, they put me into another car and dropped me back at the beach, where I changed once again into my bikini. Lying on my beach chair, enjoying the California sun, I obeyed my program that commanded, "Slowly come out of the meditative state."

Later when I returned home I would stand in front of my computer and hit the buttons I was programmed to select in order to type in a message or answer from Reagan or whomever I had been with, so Henry would get the message. I don't know how it worked but there would often be an instant reply typed back on the screen, coupled with a command to "erase the day, that it was a relaxing day in the sun and surf."

Working Girl

There were times I was taken by the life guard boat to Point Mugu and escorted to a Captain's quarters to be used. They gave me other clothes to wear and then helicoptered me to Reagan's Ranch, usually for meetings with foreign leaders. And when Henry wasn't there (he often wasn't), I was there standing in for him, but the attendees thought I was a secretary to Reagan. Reagan relied on information I had in my mind files, put there for his access by Kissinger. Kissinger ran large portions of the foreign diplomacy of the United States Government by sending me to these meetings.

Over the years when people like Rebozo, Sinatra and Bush wanted to take me out (kill me), Henry would stop it because he and the Council had worked years, even decades, to set up the connections I had with people. Henry had key robots in key situations so that everyone was working in perfect three-part harmony. I had been put close to U.S. government leaders, British royalty, Margaret Thatcher, and leaders of other countries, and these relationships were "seasoned with time," Henry would say, and so he wanted to keep me in as long as possible. Henry said these relationships were priceless because these contacts knew and trusted me over time, with no ill effects, so in the future they would share information with me about more important things without worry.

Henry had me tested often, especially after the accident and when I began psychotherapy full time. I was breaking down but they were building me back up in other directions without my missing a beat in my assignments. My personalities who were close to foreign leaders had not had the accident and were cut off from that experience. Instead they enjoyed total health and well being in order to continue their work. Different personalities had been created for different leaders so Henry could easily instill new information or messages, yet retain the personality as it had been created especially for the individual leaders.

I was flown by helicopters that took off from naval ships out at sea, into foreign countries to be the connection maker for munitions or drug transactions with various countries - Columbia, Bolivia, Mexico, Jamaica - I can't remember them all. But I was dressed in a military uniform and flown in helicopters down into these places to deliver messages, usually to a man in uniform who was heavily guarded. But here again, they didn't have a clue that our country possessed weaponry that looked like anything but

weapons - that couldn't even be seen: invisible weapons that could drop people to their knees and render them incapable of functioning. No need to kill them, just send targeted energy and control their brain wave activity.

I remembered a time when the pilot called to a foreign bank to see if the money was in the account before he would release the sale of weapons. Money was made not only on the sale of the weapons, but even more on the financial arrangements made that created huge revenues from the interest on the loans to desperate countries, willing to pay whatever it took to save the lives of their people. So they paid top dollar for the weapons and paid interest on the loans in addition. All this was planned, down to the instigation of wars that would create an international weapons market. It also kept nations busy buying obsolete weapons America said were the best. We kept them looking the other way as we were secretly using the copious profits from the sales to fund more mind control research, so the plan for the world takeover could be implemented. All this was done by very smart and manipulative people who used very strategic planning. Saudi Arabia and other foreign countries inadvertently funded a lot of NASA research and, when there were arms embargoes or other embargoes, all it meant was the price was forced up and the United States made even more money.

Point Mugu Demonstrations

After demonstrations at the circular arena in Point Mugu, Reagan left in a limo with Secret Service agents flanking him heavily because of the assassination attempt. I was escorted out and after the agents put Reagan into the back of the limo, one of the agents took the passenger spot in the front seat opposite the driver and gave him instructions on where to go. Then, after some of the agents left to report to their next duty, a remaining agent opened the back door and put me in next to Reagan and we were off. The glass was put up between the front and back seats before I got in.

Reagan became very good at saying things to me in order that I might feel like he was being polite, when he was really getting around the fact that I wasn't allowed to eat. One day we were taken to a fish restaurant in Malibu on a Monday, when the restaurant was normally closed, but they opened it for the opportunity of serving the President. Reagan went in first with a phalanx of Secret Service agents flanking him on all sides. You couldn't even see him in the group and after he was seated in a secluded booth in the back I was brought in and they told the waiter I was his visiting niece. With a towel on his arm, the waiter asked Reagan, "And what will the young lady be eating this afternoon?"

Reagan looked at me and I said, "Thanks, but I've already eaten."

Then he made some joke about it as he began eating his fish, carrots, rice and salad. I sat and smiled at him while he ate, and listened intently. When he was finished, the Secret Service took care of the bill and he was escorted back out to the limo in the same way he went into the restaurant - then they put me back beside him. Our next destination was a grouping of small rustic cottages along Pacific Coast Highway. The driver drove around back and the Secret Service agents went to the room first, opened it, checked it out, and then came back to the car. opened my door, escorted me in, shut the door and I waited, parked in robotic mode, while they Reagan in.

After the agents left the room, Reagan commented that he liked the place, that it reminded him of the Ranch. He took my right hand and asked, "Should we do our dance?"

"You bet," I answered. So he twirled me around several times, for programming purposes and then laid me on the bed. I was wearing a white pantsuit with fancy tassels on the front and short white boots. He had given me a Reagan watch to wear for the day, but later the agents took it away. Reagan loved the watch. He unbuttoned my shirt as he lay on the bed next to me and went directly for my belly button and began tracing his fingers around my navel. Waiting for my programming to kick in, he laid on his back for me to satisfy him. Afterwards, he took a short nap and then sent me out to notify the agent

who was waiting in the limo. The agent snapped to attention and directed the driver to get into position, and they escorted Reagan back to the limo.

We took off down Pacific Coast Highway again and they stopped to drop me off at a gas station in Malibu, where I met a man in an unmarked car who drove me back to the cross at Pepperdine. When he let me out he said, "Weren't you meditating?" In response, I robotically walked under the cross and sat there again. He yelled, "Not too long!" and drove off. I stood up, totally unaware I had been with anyone, thinking I had only been in deep meditation for a long time. I found my car and drove through the canyon home where, with the help of our maid, I prepared dinner. I was pretty out of it.

I was used with Reagan hundreds of times if not more, ever since I was a teenager. He knew that I had to have time in between when he used my mind files for demonstration or information and sex. So having a leisurely lunch provided the time necessary. A cue or signal had to be given to shut down the mind files and then, from that time on, a certain amount of time had to elapse before sex. Once he was President, the Pepperdine cross served as a pick-up point where I was taken to cabins, cottages, or out of the way homes to be with him sexually after the Council had input me with information for him via my home computer. Many messages were phoned to me by Bob, or more often Henry, when they were of a political nature, because political details were more complicated and took more time than the simple well-grooved routines of sexually satisfying stars or political friends of Bob's.

In the early 80's I also rendezvoused with Reagan for sex on nights I drove off by myself in the car, telling my husband I needed to learn to become more independent. I got in my car and played the 'metaphysical game' I learned from books I was suggested to read. For example, I just drove spontaneously and magically stopped when it 'felt right.' One evening, it just 'tell right' to stop at a very expensive hotel in Santa Barbara and I checked into a room and waited for Ronnie. Naturally, before he got there two men in suits, carrying briefcases full of programming equipment, let themselves into my hotel room and tortured me in preparation for the President.

Another time it just 'felt right' to stop at a large hotel near the pier in Santa Monica, where again, I met with Reagan.

Point Mugu Naval Weapons Station and Dolphins

I remembered being on a gurney at Point Mugu, with a white sheet over my body, a white electrode cap over my head and an IV in my arm. I was hooked up to electrodes all over my scalp and on my wrists and they were having me listen to whale and dolphin sounds via headsets. Huge banks of audio equipment and big tapes on recorders were all running. They often played music or sounds in one ear and tones or word instructions in the other. Sometimes the sound was excruciatingly loud in one ear and nearly inaudible in the other. The words were barely audible but I often tried really hard to listen to what was being played in my ear, though it was impossible to hear. The loudness hurt my ear and the two extremes coupled together nearly drove me crazy.

There were dolphins in tanks at Point Mugu that were also used in research. At times, they also had electrodes on their heads. I think they were attempting to measure thoughts and telepathic communication. At one point they directed me to send a message to the dolphin with my mind, and then listen and decode the language of the dolphin's reply. They tried it with whale language also. The swim programs that allowed me to swim long distances without tiring, were also coupled with the hypnotic suggestion that I was like a dolphin and could swim forever like one.

I think the dolphin research was a secondary project, and among other things was a project to further U.S. Intelligence technology in telepathy. The dolphin research continued because we could

communicate long distance with the dolphins, sending messages, and when I received them, I was given a number to call immediately to report what I heard. They paired this need to report with having to go to the bathroom and once in the bathroom I would dissociate, switch personalities and phone in to report, sort of like "ET phone home."

Just a week before my husband and I were getting ready to go on a sailing trip to the Channel Islands, I remembered performing a visualization I was taught, where in my mind, I pictured myself in the middle of a group of dolphin. I performed this whole process in an attempt to actually link up with the dolphin on our trip. Before we left, I told Craig I was going to have a dolphin experience! Low and behold, way out in the middle of the Pacific Ocean, a whole pod of dolphin swarmed our boat. When I saw them coming I got so excited that I slipped on my diving mask, and jumped off the boat into the middle of them. No one on board could believe my impulsive actions! It seemed that time stood still and I felt like I was held in a state of suspended animation as one large dolphin seemed to energetically link up with me. Time seemed to stand still and it was an amazing experience! After that I began to "see light in everything." I still don't have an understanding for exactly what happened, but I began having incredibly prophetic dreams and more psychic experiences. I believe this also was part of an experiment.

There was extensive "dolphin programming" done on me. Movies, stills and motion pictures with beautiful music were shown, administered together with drugs they injected into my arm in order to put me in a state of utter euphoria while I was viewing the dolphin pictures. These movies and other positive stimuli reinforced good feelings that emerged in order to deter me from the Star Wars information. Dolphin programming covered the Star Wars Project. Whales covered a NASA project. This all-powerful programming was meant to keep me from accessing the information stored neatly in my brain away from my conscious awareness.

There were movies I felt drawn to all of a sudden leave my family at night to attend. I went to different new age bookstores or other places where I was told to go to see dolphin movies, some very sophisticatedly created with music. A couple who created and traveled to share their dolphin movie, told the small audience to go into a meditative state and watch the film in order to gain expanded consciousness. The movie contained different geometric shapes shown along with the dolphins in underground cities. The dolphin theme was continued when I was living on the island of Kauai.

President Reagan's project, STAR WARS, was located in my mind files under Dolphin programming. I accompanied Reagan lots of times to Point Mugu and other military bases, but Point Mugu was the original site where I would download top secret information from the mind files, first. Then I was taken to different bases all over, usually without Reagan, to deliver the same information, over and over and over again; all over the world to the major players. The Around the World In 80 Days movie and song was used to cover this activity. So I'd think of that movie and believe I was remembering that instead of my actual assignment. Other movies were used in an attempt to cover and intentionally scramble my experiences. As I retrieved memory of ways I was used, I sorted through the 'movie realities' to discover what actually happened.

Star Wars was a global network working together for global control. This network continued as I was transferred to the island of Kauai where I reported often to Barking Sands Missile Base.

Dolphin Programming and Pornography

Another auxiliary project, one that brought in proceeds, was dolphin pornography. Dolphin porn was filmed in Malibu and in the dolphin tanks at Point Mugu. It was convenient because they had cages already built and so the dolphins could be housed there for use almost anytime. Reagan really loved the dolphin stuff. He watched a porn video of Kelly and I with a couple of dolphins. During the viewing he smiled, patted my leg and said, "I'll be with you later." He wasn't into sex with children and didn't have

sex with my daughter. When the film was over he said, "Watching you do underwater ballet is beautiful, but seeing you with the dolphin is out of this world!" He laughed and looked up, like he was seeing a missile or shuttle launch. Lots of dolphin porn was filmed. I believe Bob gave copies of it to Prince Charles, Prince Phillip and Margaret Thatcher, who is a lesbian.

Over the years my daughter Kelly was often programmed next to me. We would be instructed to both touch our noses at the same time and then a shock would be delivered though the electrodes stuck all over our bodies. We both had IV's in our arms and despite the trauma, we were giggling like we were both drunk. She was very young and they continued this over the years. In addition to all the regular programming, they also programmed us to be a mother-daughter sex team. There was lots of programming laid in that made us believe that we were twin souls, "two peas in a pod." I was programmed to believe that half of me was in her and half of her was in me. There was lots of identity confusion. They programmed us to be totally synchronous, so we could flow together and work harmoniously while sexually servicing whomever they sent us to.

Our controllers' used the movie ET as a "screen memory" to cover memory of these actual experiences by telling Kelly and I that we were like ET and Elliot, and if one of us got free the other would die. The message given was, "If you get deprogrammed or a hospital frees you, you will get separated from each other for the rest of your lives. ET almost died and had to go to another planet away from Elliott. A wilted Chrysanthemum flower plant will remind you, it will wither and die if it's off the vine, away from its source."

At three months old Kelly was able to float on her back with no assistance, and further swimming lessons early on enabled her to be an excellent swimmer, natural in the water. She also had programming that enhanced her natural swimming capabilities, enabling her to swim long distances. Kelly was good with the dolphins. She was specially trained this way from the time she was very small.

Years later, in 1993, as I became aware that my children and I had been taken to Point Mugu for programming, I returned, trying to get a closer look in an attempt to understand what these people were doing. But it was heavily guarded; now I know why. Interestingly enough, last year on a plane flight, I had the opportunity to sit next to a man from California. I was spiritually guided to share with him my experience of programming at Point Mugu Naval Base. When I got to the part about the dolphin tanks and banks of recording equipment, his eyes widened and he said, "You must have been there; no one knows about those unless they have been there; it's a classified area." After our conversation he just kept shaking his head.

My family and I bounced from Point Mugu to UCLA for programming often, and when necessary were taken to Edwards Air Force Base for further programming.

The Star-Spangled Banner

Oh, say can you see by the dawn's early light
What so proudly we hailed at the twilight's last gleaming.
Whose broad stripes and bright stars through the perilous fight,
O'er the ramparts we watched were so gallantly streaming.
And the rockets red glare, the bombs bursting in air,
Gave proof through the night that our flag was still there.
Oh, say does that star-spangled banner yet wave
O'er the land of the free and the home of the brave.

Yeah, it still waves, but not over the land of the free and the home of the brave.

"Fear them not therefore: For there is nothing covered that shall not be revealed; nothing hid, that shall not be known. " -- Matthew 10:26

Brice Taylor - Thanks for the Memories, pp 237-240

Chapter Thirty: UCLA Neuropsychiatric Institute

Is It East or West?

I experienced many, many episodes of brainwashing, mind control, electroshock and tortures of the mind at the University of California at Los Angeles, Neuropsychiatric Institute in Westwood. Their involvement was the government's insurance that I would remain functional and amnestic of my use. Dr. Louis Jolyon 'Joly' West's horrific expertise was involved so that I could be used at the highest levels over the years without risk of my breaking down and remembering. Henry sent me with messages to give Dr. West, with instruction in regard to things within me that he wanted checked out. Bob Hope didn't have that connection, only Henry had access to West. I reported there for years but began going regularly after Craig got into University of Southern California Dental School in 1973 and we made the connection in Westwood with Dr. Milo Brooks, my original childhood pediatrician.

Nurses there checked me and wrote notes in regard to my pulse, eye movement, foot responses, etc. In an attempt to scramble and confuse my conscious mind as to who Dr. West actually was, he would cross his arms and point in both directions saying, "Is it east or is it west." And even now when someone asks me for directions and mentions east or west I become momentarily confused and can't give them the directions. Dr. West also programmed me to the red and green freeway on and off ramp signals, by hypnotically suggesting that when I saw the sign upon entering Westwood it would make me switch to the personality who had the information and knew where to go to report into the hospital. After my visit, when I saw the signal on my way home, the sign was to remind me to forget what happened.

I was never allowed to walk near or ever act like I knew Dr. West when I saw him walking in the corridor of the Neuropsychiatric Institute. I was instructed to walk by him with no recognition whatsoever. He was a very large, heavy man, the "big wig" around there, and seemed to be in charge of everything and everybody. I was programmed to report there to see his doctors for many years. There was a younger doctor who put me in an examination room and did lots of neurological testing on me and checked my responses to make sure I was still reacting within the normal range. He also directed me to walk into the hall and go into a bathroom and wait for him. When he arrived he had sex with me and afterwards gave me the suggestion that I wouldn't remember.

There was a room with a two-way window/mirror. After awhile I knew there were others watching from the other side of the two-way mirror, since the doctor testing and asking me questions would occasionally glance up at the window/mirror as if to communicate to those watching - "see, I told you," or "pay attention." They asked me lots of questions and at times I was displayed so other doctors could see how I worked. I was seen as a high-level success since I was so split that I could be used in many different modes without conscious awareness. I had actually been directed to enroll in the study of psychology at Pepperdine University in Malibu. They were concerned that, if what I'd been privy to hearing there at the NPI leaked into my conscious mind, they could have problems. So they had me get my degree in psychology and study enough to make sense should my vast reservoir of psychiatric knowledge and jargon leak into conscious awareness.

They had to check me more often after my accidents in 1985 and 1987. During the time I was a student at Pepperdine University, I was more accessible to the Malibu and Point Mugu areas, and so, available to Reagan at a moment's notice in the Malibu area when he was in California. Occasionally Dr. West would slip into an examining room when the younger doctor was examining me. He explained that there were some things he wanted to see for himself. He was arrogant with the young doctors and very authoritarian. I heard him make condescending remarks about psychiatrists and clinical psychologists as being beneath his level of expertise, since he was an MD neuropsychiatrist. He thought my therapist in

Westwood, Stuart Perlman, Ph.D. was uninformed and easily controlled in my therapy in 1988-91, since Stuart didn't consider the biochemical aspects of my case. I reported to NPI on an irregular basis when I was told to report and I took Kelly there when instructed. As my functioning level decreased when my early childhood memories began leaking back into my conscious mind, I was instructed to report more often to UCLA-NPI. They knew the chemical combinations to shut me down at night so that I couldn't access certain portions of my brain and memory during dream state, which I had begun to do. That was why they had me take halcyon with a glass of wine every night during my term of therapy with Stuart. Whatever this chemical combination was, the nurse told me to, "take 1/2 or 1/4 of a halcyon tablet followed immediately with a glass of wine, preferably white, and you'll notice immediate sleepiness and will fall into a very deep, peaceful sleep."

Then a doctor came back into the room after the nurse left, and said, "Repeat the directions to me." So I did and he said, "Exactly right. You're to follow these directions every day in every way in order to feel better. You will not, I repeat, you will not jump off of any building. You will not harm yourself in any way. Do you understand my directions?"

Eyes closed and listening intently to his instructions from a deep trance state, I nodded yes.

He said, "Fine, you may go home now."

And I got up, walked out of the hospital and all the way through the campus to my car that I parked near the library. When I drove past the stop sign on the freeway on-ramp it reminded me to "tuck this experience into the deepest recesses of your mind," and I returned home.

When the memory of events I was programmed to forget began flooding into my conscious awareness, I began responding by wanting to cut, burn myself or jump from the top of a high-rise building in Los Angeles. I just thought I must be really psychologically disturbed to want to do something like that. I simply could not fathom what was wrong with me and why these selfinjurious commands continually caused me to feel like compulsively hurting or killing myself. And I had no way of knowing that my controllers were not actually ready for me to do myself in, at least not until my assignments with them were completed.

Mind Control Tune-ups

There was a surgeon at UCLA who instructed me to drive to the hospital to have sex with him. He had dark hair, lightly dark skin, brown eyes and hairy arms. He was 6' tall, of good build and on the young side. I was instructed to meet him at the doctors' cafeteria. Usually he had on his surgery greens or blues and we would have lunch together. He was a vegetarian, and I watched him eat and later he had sex with me in a small bathroom in the Neuropsychiatric Institute. The bathrooms in the NPI were unisex and he would open the door, wave his hand for me to pass inside, and then he would quickly slip in behind me and whisper, "shhh," so I wouldn't say anything. He switched the light off and began feeling me all over and he usually preferred entering me from behind. As programmed, I smiled and laughed and acted pleased no matter what. He liked for me to give him oral sex in his red sports car, but not when the top was down. For programming purposes, he jingled keys in front of my face and then he'd take me out and sometimes we walked in Westwood or went to lunch in a back booth at The Bratskeller restaurant. He had a good laugh when I told him about my therapy with Stuart. He said, "Dressed in little shorts like that and looking innocent like you do, how do you think he can keep his mind on business?" I laughed and told him Stuart didn't understand. Truth was, Stuart wasn't sexually addicted.

This UCLA doctor took me to different rooms in the NPI for reconditioning and "tune-ups," he called them. One day he lifted me up on the examining table and I was giggling. He said they were taking real good care of me, keeping all my parts oiled and lubricated to keep me in good working condition. There were large tube-like machines that they put me into. When they closed the door, shutting me inside, it made a vacuumlike sound as it closed tightly and it kind of echoed inside. I lay on my back and there was a small square mirror, mounted over my face. I think it was suppose to make normal, regular

customers feel safe or less claustrophobic. Although this doctor stayed with me during the horrible tests, he was kind to me most of the time. I didn't like the tests, but he told me what the doctors would do and when. One time two doctors used a scalpel and cut a small incision behind my right ear for something. I didn't know exactly what they were doing to me. They were always testing, probing and x-raying me. They must have a stack of records on me a mile high.

They put me into a machine that was like a cylinder that spun me. I saw lights, and color; blues, pinks, yellow, white, coupled with sound and electroshock. I watched and recorded in my photographic memory as the doctors in white coats mapped my forehead and face and attached wires to me. At this event there was a whole room of people sitting still like zombies, all with our heads totally mapped out. Each mind-controlled individual has code numbers that follow them no matter what research projects we were assigned to. They were studying our brains in all different contexts, in all different environments, with different stimulation. They were also studying the genetic effects. They studied a wide and varied range of the effect of environment and genes on a persons brain function, their life function, their longevity, and their productivity. They monitored brain function by reading EEG printouts taken from electrodes placed on my head, and registered and mapped lots of data that was inputted.

Mind Control Technology of the Future

There were lots of times they laid me on a gurney and injected me with drugs, and then the doctors talked to me while I was under the influence. There were many doctors at UCLA who knew all about mind control and were well-trained for the technology of the future. They were told they were specially selected because of their intellectual abilities "to participate in an effort at world peace in the only method known to man." They were trained in the latest methods in how to program and operate under mind control. There were lots of doctors involved, different ones at different times in different places. I was "demonstrated and modeled" often over years for their learning, understanding, and financial benefit. There were demonstrations for doctors, scientists, prison officials, and other professionals who were selected to receive this top-secret mind control information.

Reagan was involved in this endeavor for years, ever since he was Governor and because he was cooperative and "went along with the program." Then in later years, as President, the amount of people who witnessed the demonstrations grew as the plan for the New World Order grew closer to implementation. Those who were brought in to see the mind control technology could never go back to not knowing. They needed an army of professionals to carry out the plan and the numbers of people involved increased dramatically in the 80's after Reagan and Bush got into office and cooperated to the fullest.

During Reagan's administrations the doctors at UCLA did tests and demonstrations in front of other doctors explaining how I worked, but they called this "studies" of the mind or brain. They didn't refer to any of it as mind control, but instead gave it the catchy name "behavior modification." They had a circular arena where they conducted the demonstrations while I laid on a table or sat in a chair naked, responding like a puppet to their cues. The demonstrations involved simple mind control techniques as well as telekinesis. Once the doctor directed me to bend a spoon across the room with the power of my mind. They told me to see the spoon bend in my mind and to focus solely on this thought to see it, and hear the words that played in my mind; then the spoon would bend and sometimes it would even move and fall off a table from across the room. Once I was programmed to hold out my hand with a key in it and with my mind I bent the key. I curled it all up while I held my palm and fingers still, my mind totally focused on the key. Most people have no idea the power a focused mind has. The doctors watching would gasp. They also programmed me to start a fire from across the room with my mind.

Large grants were given to doctors who wanted to do further research into the power of the mind or the mind/body connection, or studies of the brain. During one such demonstration, a group of doctors witnessed the presenting doctor give me the hypnotic suggestion that I would not be burned. He held a lighted match to my arm, and just as he said, I didn't get burned. One particular doctor filed by at the end of the demonstration to get a closer look at my arm to see if, indeed, I was not burned. After viewing my unburned arm, tears welled in his eyes, and in Catholic fashion he performed the sign of the cross on himself and said, "Forgive us," and walked away.

Over the years, most scientists and doctors didn't respond as this sympathetic, compassionate, scientific human being did. I believe that many were uninformed as to the level of the mind control experiments and usages, and did not know exactly how the mind control was accomplished. But my controllers were well aware of these technologies and used them to have me appear as "supernatural" to people they wanted to influence. They could pre-program in these manifestations and have them occur seemingly spontaneously without outside interference. This was how they rigged so-called miracles for the Pope and other Catholic leaders at the Vatican. They programmed in 'miracles' like making my hands bleed at the palms like Christ did or making me speak in high Latin tongue to the Pope or Bishops, delivering messages that dropped them to their knees, kissing their rosaries or necklaces or my feet. I didn't know what they were saying to me because I didn't really know Latin. They, like many others, were open to these miracles delivered to them on what they thought were the 'wings of angels' (me) to influence them. They thought I was some oracle delivering God's messages or angelic messages. I even delivered messages to Reagan with a religious theme, but it only worked on those who were religious.

I went between UCLA and Point Mugu Naval Base often for this technology. Point Mugu had large banks of audio equipment, dolphin tanks, and a pool, and UCLA had brain-testing equipment, MRI, and virtual reality gear.

"For wide is the gate and broad is the way that leads to destruction, and many there are who enter that way." -- Matthew 7:1

Chapter Thirty-one: Weaponry Technology of the Future

Kissinger and Nixon Visit the Reagan White House

Nixon and Reagan talked a lot together. I know because I was there a number of times when that happened. They even talked at the White House after Reagan became President. One time, Reagan was sitting at his desk in the oval office when Kissinger escorted Nixon in. Kissinger greeted Reagan by saying, "Mr. President, Dick is here to talk with you. He has some very useful information on foreign policy that will help us." Then he added quietly, "Now I know as you do that no one is to know where this information came from, but I thought you should be informed."

"Sure, have a seat Dick." Reagan said. Nixon smiled awkwardly as he held out his hand to Reagan.

Initially, Reagan didn't seem too happy, as if he had some reservation, but appeared to quickly work through his feelings, and gathering more acceptance, reached out and shook Nixon's hand.

Nixon said, "I have information on some key foreign policy that needs to be implemented before the year's end to insure smooth diplomatic relations with Russia and Saudi Arabia and a few other minor European Countries." Standing there in his light brown suit, Nixon looked pretty nervous.

Kissinger said, "This information may be key to unlocking broader and deeper foreign relations, especially with the Soviets."

Reagan leaned back in his chair and clasped his hands behind his head. Then, he closed his eyes. I could see what he did because Henry had placed me off to the side by the wall on a wooden bench, in my "parked" mode, waiting for further direction.

"Russia will be an ally if we can provide the following." Kissinger said.

"Guns (munitions), corn and," Nixon added, following his comment with a laugh like this was absurd or something, "they would like free surplus wheat and grain - whatever we have in the stockades. We wouldn't have to go to any expense. These surpluses have already been subsidized by our government, so there will be no further cost to us. It's all just a layout on paper with no money exchange, just surpluses in exchange for information."

"What sort of information?" Reagan asked.

"The sort of information that is held in top secret abeyance. It will have to be approved by the higher-ups." Nixon said, continuing, "If we don't agree, there could be dire consequences for our country. The higher-ups said we have no idea the havoc that will be created if we don't comply with their requests. There's little to lose - just some excess surpluses."

"So you're saying I need to authorize the transfer of these surpluses?"

"Yes, Sir," Kissinger said, "the others will take care of this information on their end. You need not be worried with the details, they will be taken care of and if there are any loose ends, I will personally see to it that they are wrapped up." He handed Reagan a piece of paper to sign. "We need your authorization for the shipments."

Reagan put on his glasses, picked up a pen and signed the paper Kissinger set before him. "Dick, I appreciate your help in this matter. Foreign policy always came so naturally for you and I appreciate your continued interest." He leaned back in his chair again.

"Anything I can ever do to help." Nixon said, standing and offering his hand to Reagan again. Then he turned to Kissinger, shook his hand and left saying he would see himself out the side door.

Henry sat down across from the President, leaned forward and with great seriousness, looked down at his folded hands, "I don't have to tell you how damaging this would be to the American public if it got out that Nixon was advising us on foreign policy."

"No, no of course not Henry. Look, I have a meeting at 10 with the White House Staff. I appreciate your help with this foreign policy. We all have our strengths and weaknesses." He smiled apologetically to Kissinger and reached out to shake his hand good-bye.

Henry stood up, shook Reagan's hand, completing the handshake by putting his other hand over the top of their handshake. I don't know what that meant, if anything. Then Kissinger nodded to me and

we walked out to a waiting black limo. Lots of times in DC I waited in the limo for Henry while he went in and out of places. We were all over the place. Henry had keys to lots of offices. I don't know why, but he did.

Lots of times I sat in on the meetings Kissinger had with Reagan and others, so I could report back to the Council (in a debriefing) accurately, exactly what was said and done at different meetings.

Arms Distribution - Guns for Drugs

Some countries wouldn't take anything except guns in exchange for their drugs. Reagan knew all about it--Costa Rica, El Salvador, Jamaica, and other countries. Reagan cooperated with the Council fully, doing everything they asked. He okayed American ships to meet with Soviet tankers to exchange guns. Sometimes drugs were laundered through several foreign embassies so they couldn't be traced to their original source and then the American guns would be transferred to Russia, China, Japan, etc.

The Council members were kingpins of drug coordination and money laundering down through specific American corporations in order to get political favors and laws enacted in their favor to keep their top companies. AT&T was one of them. The Council insured the financial success of these companies so they could continue using them as fronts for their operations. The Council is at the top of the powerbrokers. Each President went along with them or they are killed like JFK was.

My mind files were filled with information on guns, armories, and statistics on where the guns were located and the inventory. Involved foreign dignitaries or leaders could access this information in my mind files so they could know what was available to trade, then they would send me back with a message regarding how much the gun supply could wield or buy in exchange for drugs. Then I would be debriefed by the Council and prepared with a return message for the foreign leaders. From what I witnessed, illicit drugs and gun running backed much of the American economy.

Reagan was not in any way unaware of the arms deals we made with foreign countries as he publicly portrayed. I know because the Council sent many arms trade messages through me to him and then he would give me the message and the Council would retrieve it through debriefing me. This was a message I gave him from the Council: "Mr. President, the Council sends their amicable message to you. Arms will go to Iraq in exchange for hostages." Sometimes after I delivered the recited message, Reagan got really nervous and paced back and forth. But finally he would give his answer for me to take back to the Council. Usually it was just a "yes." Lots of times Reagan made the decision without Bush's knowledge. For some reason I felt like Bush really knew what was going on. Reagan always seemed so uninformed, he never seemed to know what was happening and he made many decisions blindly without knowing the details.

More on Guns and Drugs

There were wooden boxes of munitions on a dock that were to be loaded onto a large ship. I was there to make sure the load of "sugar" got on safely and that payment was made. The men accepting the shipment waited until the men in black police uniforms walked away and then they opened one of the boxes and lifted guns, rifles, and hand grenades out of the packing. Packed on top were bags of sugar to make it look like the whole shipment was sugar, but it was only a cover for what was really underneath. This was a government operation - a highly camouflaged, covered up government operation. A group of American officials were selling munitions to a nation we were at war with. It made the United States government lots of money. They didn't even care that the guns were being used to kill our own soldiers. Noriega was involved. It was a dangerous operation. The orders were that if there was any chance of being caught, the shipment was to be thrown overboard. It was too risky to get caught.

There was also a naval officer that was involved. He was shaking hands with a man that I came with and they were talking privately out of my earshot so I couldn't hear. The officer gave commands to

one of the members of the crew to unload the shipment onto the docks and then they rolled the cargo down the docks and stacked it on large carts. I climbed aboard the ship and we left immediately. There was a window of time that was opened to get in and out to complete the deal. It began at 0800. So we left port immediately and were quickly underway. There were some kind of devices on board that rendered our ship untrackable at sea, so that they could not be detected. This way no one would even know that the United States ship had been to the port. Sometimes the big naval or other kinds of ships would unload their cargoes onto smaller ships that would then go into the port to deliver the goods. Our government had very dirty operations. I was sent to deliver messages, many of them in foreign languages to whomever the delivery was going to.

Another time I was used in a drug operation, I was delivered aboard a large Navy ship to an Admiral who was standing behind his desk giving directions to a lieutenant. The blue eyed, heavyset admiral was dressed in a white uniform and hat with navy blue and gold trim. He had on black patent leather shoes and was very brutal. I think his name was Brimhall or something like that. I was ordered to give him oral sex and some of his ejaculate fell onto his shoe. For that he slapped me with the back of his hand so hard that I fell backwards.

We were going out to sea and when we neared Mexico we went into port for "supplies," which meant a drug transaction. There were transactions in the Caribbean, also usually aboard Navy ships. I was on board to service the Admiral and then complete a drug transaction. The Navy ships went the route and to destinations of a major drug cartel. What looked like the defense of our nation or training of our troops was really drug transportation that made lots of money for the U.S. The Presidents were usually well aware of this business. The revenue was justified as funding large projects deemed necessary for American defense. It was all a vicious cycle of lies and manipulations.

I was sent ashore to meet "the man with the parrot" and was usually dressed appropriately for him to recognize me. They dressed me with a parrot shirt to match the parrot man I was meeting. The messages were always different; sometimes I told the man to meet us with the stuff at 0800 at a certain latitude and longitude out at sea off this or that coast. Lots of the deals and the boarding of goods (drugs) took place out at sea. This way no one could detect illegal drug trafficking, as there was no one to monitor the transactions late at night, out in the middle of the ocean.

Everyone in the government that held any position of power was well aware of these drug transactions and their importance to our country's economy. In part, this is what keeps America head and shoulders above the world economically. These ships went all over the world Mexico, Caribbean, Costa Rica, Haiti, Cancun, Cozumel, Cabo San Lucas, Panama, Brazil, even Germany and USSR.

For years, I was used off and on to carry messages. They used lots of different slaves for these activities because, otherwise, someone could get familiar and be detected. I know because I overheard them talking about that type of security and how important it was for the Lieutenant Colonel to widely vary the "pigeons," used for messages. I was taken from my home late at night and boarded onto a ship, did my assignment, and was returned back home late at night. I was just phased back into bed with my husband, as if I'd never left. I was kept at Point Mugu or other bases in isolation, and then debriefed before I was driven home in a sedan to Agoura Hills. Sometimes I was helicoptered to Point Mugu, but always transported late at night. During the drug transports I was always assigned to top men on the ships with orders to please them in any way they desired. Then I was usually taken into the Admiral's or Captain's private quarters. These rooms were nice, but small, and I was told to wait for further instructions or to have sex with him. There were portholes in the room and it was simple but very expensively done, as far as the materials: nice wood, brass and usually decorated in red, white and blue. Sometimes after sex I would sleep in his bed with him until it was time for the transaction. Then he would wake me up and instruct me in what to do, what to wear, what to say. Sometimes there were palm trees on the beaches where we dropped off a load of 'goods,' on a remote beach. It was always at a

different time, different location; so no one could detect or monitor what was occurring. Sometimes the coast guard in certain locations was involved but not on a regular basis. They must have been individually involved.

On many of these excursions, other factions would interrogate me in an attempt to find out information. They would use bright lights, exhaust me, yell questions, withhold food and pull my hair or take hold of my hair and smash my face into a desk in an attempt to gain information about my job, why I wouldn't talk, who I was working for, endless questions. But nothing would come of it, because they didn't know the keys and codes to access my mind file information, nor did I consciously know.

Some of the big deals I witnessed, involving more international figures, took place in the Hawaiian Islands, like on Maui. And the deals involving Mexico took place in Mexico, often in Mazatlan. While vacationing one year on Maui with my husband, I was taken away from him by men in suits, put on a commercial airline by two Secret Service agents and flown to a location like Jamaica or Costa Rica to deliver a message. I was given a clever disguise, dressed in a tourist costume - a fruit patterned skirt and blouse, with a big straw hat with fruit on top of it, and made to look like an overweight old lady. The place I was taken to was about an hour's drive from the airport by limo, and I was delivered through a dirty and poverty-stricken town full of dark-skinned people, to a harbor seaport, then taken down to the docks to make the deal. This way the person I was meeting on the ship could simply cut the deal and leave by ocean without ever needing to be on land. There were palm trees by the ocean and the coastline area was pretty much uninhabited toward the port. It was a rocky seacoast in many areas with few sandy beaches. I was instructed to deliver the message only to the man in the white uniform who took a hold of my left hand and elbow and asked me if I was lost. A man in a white Naval uniform and hat brought me on board the large ship, momentarily, to receive the message I delivered, "Sir, the bird is flying north." Then he quickly shuffled me off the boat and the Secret Service agents took me away by limo and I was flown back to Maui. I was kept in isolation, without food or water for a day, before I was returned by my husband's side at the pool where we were vacationing at the Hyatt Regency in Maui.

Weaponry Technology of the Future

While money was made during those days from the sale of weapons, the Council said guns and munitions would be obsolete by the year 2000. The frequency warfare technology they possess will make guns and munitions powerless because those wielding guns will have their brainwave frequencies altered by the new weaponry to such a degree that they won't be able to think to commit a violent act. Society is being kept unaware of this until these self-appointed overseers of our world have completely stepped up the mind control within the populace. Then the people won't care about having obsolete weapons because they will be under the total lull and control of specific, targeted electromagnetic frequencies. Individuals won't be able to commit crimes against the populace. My controllers spoke about this as, "creating peace on earth, contemporary style." (For more information on this still classified technology read: Angels Don't Play This HAARP, Nick Begich Ph.D.)

Kissinger Displays His Robot Technology

Over the years, Henry had me programmed to deliver information regarding the mind control robot technology to different groups of men. These meetings took place my whole life. He or a spokesman introduced me and explained to the audience, which were usually small, pre-tested groups, that I would deliver a very powerful message.

But, the most important message they were eventually to take away with them was that I was a human robot delivering highly technical information and that this was to be the technology of the future.

While I was being introduced, I sat at the front table looking straight ahead, waiting in "park mode." Then I went to the front and initially explained, "Due to the inherent leap in technology, what you are about to see and witness is very real. Along those lines it would be most appreciated if you would hold all of your questions until the end and our moderator will be more than happy at that time to field any questions you might have. Thank you and now we'll begin." Certainly, I was delivering this message verbatim, as preprogrammed and couldn't have thought on my own to answer any questions.

And so I began, "The history of controlling man is old. Could we have the screen turned on please?" I asked the man at the projector.

"As you can see, man was attempting to control his fellow man even in the cave man days. Actually this attempt for control goes back even further." Meanwhile the moderator flipped to a slide showing androgynous man pulling a woman by the hair where he wanted her to go. "So," I continued, "man's control of man is ancient. What is on the cutting edge of technology today is what we choose to call, 'harnessing the mind.' Who among us wouldn't like to be able to have instant recall? Or to be able to read and retain information or documents." At this point they flashed slides pertaining to whatever career paths these men were involved in and I had documents pertaining to each field, e.g., legal documents for attorneys, medical reports for doctors, case histories for psychologists, account ledgers for bankers.

"Who wouldn't like to have at your fingertips all the millions of minute details we find we need everyday to function efficiently in our places of employment? Gentlemen, you are not alone in your needs and desires. Since I have not seen a single hand in the room raised, I take this to mean that you, too, could highly benefit from this new state-of-the-art technology in the future of mankind's ability to think clearly, efficiently, and above all, with complete accuracy."

"Sound too good to be true? You will be pleasantly surprised to find that this technology is not only true, but you also could benefit from its use. Other corporations, (or if it was a professional group, I'd mention doctors, dentists, lawyers, etc.) around the country are at this time utilizing many facets of this state-of-theart technology. The computer will one day soon be hardware of the past and the companies that have this new technology will be among those on the leading edge. It will be impossible to compete with individuals or corporations who are currently adapting to our new modes of technology."

"Now, I'm sure you didn't get to your current level of success by using outdated modes of operation. Why no, I'm sure each of you was among the first to own the latest in computer technology. That is what sets you apart from business people (doctors, lawyers, CEO's, etc.) who did not have the foresight that you had to opt for the latest technology has to offer."

After listening to this whole spiel, they were taken to their first demo, and afterwards they were asked to fill out a brief questionnaire. They were asked to fill it out in order to insure the perfection of future presentations. The questions were slanted toward gathering data -)n each participant's attitude, openness, etc. They were also told they had the right to remain anonymous; however, they were told there was no risk due to the fact that no one else would have access to these questionnaires.

As a final note, I said, "And to thank you, we will be sending every person who takes the time to fill out this questionnaire a very special booklet we've been privy to call, "How To Insure Success in Business: Without Burnout." So gentlemen, please loosen your ties, sit back, relax and enjoy the final portion of today's presentation.

At which time, they were shown some more slides and given a little more information.

After 12 such sessions, if their returned questionnaires kept indicating they were "remaining on track," they were introduced to the higher level of being let in on the secret. Then they were told that I

was "a robot" and they too could own one, at very little cost to them. At that point they were asked to, "just sign here for more information and one of our representatives will be glad to further assist you."

These demonstrations took place all over the world, for all different professions, including the scientific research and medical communities. Even as a child of eight, Henry said I demoed so well and had such an enormous impact on audiences that they would have their mouths gaping open, and Henry was so proud of himself. By the time I was eighteen, I had spoken to groups all over the world.

Over time I went to "mini-conventions" for people who owned slaves, where slave tips, slave toys, slave trades, etc. were exchanged amongst this certain group of men. "Men in the know" is how they referred to themselves, who met to share their latest information.

I was there to hand out brochures before I was demonstrated. People loved the continual line of programmed jokes that I spewed out and thought it was hilarious that I was handing out my own brochure, miming like 'a perfect robot.' At times both men and women were in attendance. There was some other business I was promoting, initially - not mind-controlled slaves - but that was what really was being promoted under cover at these meetings. Certain pre-selected men were given large wooden, golden keys, each displaying a phrase or word to unlock me. These individuals were allowed to unlock and use me for the evening at pre-specified times. It was explained to these so-called gentlemen that these "keys" only worked for this one night. It was further explained that due to the kaleidoscopic programming effect, that the keys would revolve a band on the outside of my skull and would stop in just the right place so the eyes of the personality specifically keyed would lock in each and every time. I think those men who were given keys were the only ones allowed to know the true nature of my mind control programming. They must have been interested in purchasing "their own." But publicly acceptable business also took place at these events parallel to this subterranean line of business, so that money was made from all angles.

In later years, Kissinger used the movie Working Girl as a scramble in an attempt to keep these memories from being clear to me. It was not only used for me but for lots of other corporate robots like me. Henry said it should sufficiently remedy any problems or questions... should any of us robots begin to remember.

"The kingdom of heaven has suffered violence, and men of violence take it by force. "
-- Matthew 11:12
"Blessed are those servants whom the master finds awake when he comes."
-- Luke 12:37

Chapter Thirty-two: Robot Breakdown

The Second Accident on April 12 was No Accident

On April 12, 1987, at 9:15 a.m. I had another accident. I couldn't fathom how or why I could have another accident at the same precise date and time, two years later. But, after smashing my head into a tree and breaking my back in a horseback accident I began flooding with more memories of the past and began having even more trouble functioning in my day to day world of responsibilities. I was forced to take more time out to rest and heal in my conscious life. I sought more chiropractic care and began deep healing with prayer, herbs, and increased body therapies. During this time of physical healing I also grew spiritually closer to God and gained the strength of perspective I would need to face further reality.

A Visit to the Mental Hospital

It took a couple of years but as my programmed systems began breaking down, causing memories of my past to begin flooding uncontrollably into my present awareness, I became increasingly more dysfunctional. I had trouble performing my daily duties as my past came crashing into my awareness, often with many memories flooding in at the same time. I had trouble dealing with my outer physical reality, because there was so much going on inside my head to distract me. Paying attention simultaneously to both inner and outer realities was a challenge, especially with my programming throwing up hypnotic commands to become confused, have a migraine, burn or kill myself, or redirect my thoughts in another direction my controllers dictated. After numerous memories of abuse by my father, mother, brothers and others, including ways in which I myself was used within the system to abuse others, I asked my therapist, Stuart Perlman, to call Department of Human Services (DHS) with me and report all of us. He did as I asked and I gave lengthy interviews to authorities, hoping someone would help me stop this abuse and insure that my children and the other children in the family would be safe.

As I became increasingly more dysfunctional, I was admitted to a mental hospital in Westwood for ten days and got another dose of reality. While in the mental hospital, a suited man entered my room at night while I was in my bed sleeping. He opened the door, came in, sat down on my bed, hypnotically commanded me, looked around to insure we were alone, then quickly put a tourniquet on my arm and injected me. Very quietly he said, "You are safe, you are very, very, safe. Nothing you are remembering is real; it's all just a bad nightmare. Close down section 34 and remember you are safe, very calm and very safe. You don't need to worry about anything anymore, everything's been handled." Adding another vial of the drug to the syringe, he injected it into my arm and began round two, "Stuart Perlman is your friend. He is your trusted friend helping you through these difficult times. He and he alone can help you, no one else can quite fill his shoes and every time you look at his shoes when he is sitting in front of you, you will remember this. Now you will sleep very deeply and when you wake you will not remember any of this or the sound of my voice, but now you will sleep very, very deeply. Your children are safe, you are safe and you will rest and sleep very deeply. Remember, you are very safe." When he was through, he took the needle out of my arm, put all of his paraphernalia into a black doctor's bag, and quietly slipped out of the darkened room. As usual, I viewed all of this from other personalities within, ones that were not asleep.

What these programmers need to know is that when a person has multiple personalities, especially personalities that have been programmed to have superb memory capabilities, those personalities can and do take note of everything that is occurring. If the presenting personality is drugged, there are still other personalities left inside, untouched by the drugs who 'take note' of what is happening. Due to this, myself and others have recovered volumes of experiences, as we healed and

reintegrated, in order to be able to put together this larger picture to present to you. Their misuse of the technology failed. Sorry Henry, back to the drawing board. I guess you need a further distilled diagram, because, Henry, your security system was not locked up as tightly as you might have thought.

During my hospital stay, I brought up the issue of my children's abuse. To my utter disappointment, DHS failed to take seriously the allegations of abuse to the young members of our families. Further, as I was released from the hospital I leaned over the desk to see my medical chart, which read, "Delusional." No one took me seriously then. I hope you the reader will now.

Further Monitoring at UCLA

My visits to UCLA Neuropsychiatric Institute (NPI) occurred more often after my 1985 and 1987 accidents, and the ensuing head and back injuries. I waited in a room lined with chairs and, when called, I robotically walked where they told me to and did everything just like they requested. If they said, "take off your blouse," I did. Anything they asked of me, I did. They put me into an examining room, and tested me neurologically, saying things like, "touch your nose, move your eyes up to the left," that sort of thing. Then they tested me walking, bending over, etc. I saw the white uniformed doctor refer to a list in a little notebook. He asked me questions to which I replied robotically. He asked me, "What is your name? Where do you live? Who is your husband?" All these were standard neurological examination procedures.

Then an older doctor came in and told me to follow him into a different room. Things got more technical then. There was a room full of large recorders, the reel-to-reel type with a chair positioned next to them. He sat me down next to the equipment and gave me long round bars of metal to hold in my hands. They were always testing different things. I didn't know what, but tried my best to do them "right." If I did it wrong they got angry and then I got hurt. The doctor hooked me up to headphones and told me to hold the metal bars real tightly, and I was instructed to go into a very deep trance state.

After certain word phrases, I was electroshocked. I never knew when it was coming and was told not to let go of the metal bars. When the phrases didn't apply to me, like for instance, "I'm an Eskimo" there were no shocks. But after a true statement that was applicable to me, I was shocked. Some things felt very personal and could have only been applied to me. Like, "I love my husband Craig." Or, "I am a good mother," or, "I am happy in my life; therapy is making me a better person." All kinds of statements like that were played through the headphones. Sometimes they shocked my feet instead of my hands or my head. Things varied often and so did the people administering the 'tests.'

At other times a white van picked me up from the streets of Westwood, after a therapy session, and took me to UCLA. Sometimes they did stuff to me right inside the van. They had equipment inside and they said things to me and delivered electroshock. It happened often when I was in therapy with Stuart, in Westwood. The van would pull up to the curb and when the driver leaned toward the passenger window with his arm across the seatback and looked at me, I was programmed to come toward the van and step inside. The driver's uniforms varied, like a mail delivery or some bogus repair service, and the man accompanying him would do the work on me. Sometimes they would initially slap me around. I never knew what they were going to do, it was always different and I was caught off guard and couldn't protect myself. I couldn't ever think to protect myself, even if I knew it was coming. They caused all sorts of violence in order to keep me under control; they tied me up in a chair and put a gun to my head, or raped or tortured me in some other way. They put knives to my throat - anything they thought would scare me. At times there was a large mirror in the back of the van and they would stand me in front of it, tell me I was so and so, and give instructions to that part of me to do jobs or report things. There was a wide variety of electronic equipment in the back of the van. They injected my arm with some drug and then showed me clips from a video. One time they showed me a clip of a person unscrewing a big round cap that let water into the room that they told me I was in. I was told it was real and that I would be safe

if I didn't remember the past. In this virtual reality session they told me that the water would come over my head and I would drown if I continued to remember. All this was done in the name of "national security." There was great personal confusion over being in charge of my body or its safety, as a result of all these tests. It was like my mind was removed from my body and acted separately, and it was very scary because I wasn't able to be there to protect or help my own body, or my children's.

When the men in the van were finished with me, they pulled. up next to my car, which was parked in Westwood. When I saw my car I was programmed to switch to Sue and not remember anything that had just happened, but the other personalities were given the hypnotic suggestion to remember to keep their instructions hidden and separate from Sue. The men told me to get inside of my car, sit there for awhile and drive home when I was ready. If I was running late they told me an excuse to deliver to my family when I got home. This happened more often and the trauma got more intense while I was in daily therapy with Stuart and Margie.

Another time at UCLA-NPI, I was sitting on a stainless steel table where they had been photographing my brain from a x-ray machine that stopped and shot pictures in four separate places as it scanned my head. The doctor said my brain was in a perfect state for some sort of link up. Next they laid me on a stretcher and tied my ankles and wrists to the bars on the side then they slid me naked into a long silver metal tube. They placed a small black mask over my eyes just before they shut the door. I thought maybe they were going to kill me but they said only parts of me died for others to be reborn. A continuous cycle of life and death for personalities kept things in order, preventing chaos from an overcrowded internal system. This was how my personality system was kept neat and clean, maintained for their use.

The scientists and doctors turned everything into a study. They merely turned a mind control slave system breakdown or "containment problem" into another project to further their research.

"You have heard that it was said, 'an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.' But I say to you, do not resist one who is evil. But if any one strikes you on the right cheek, turn to him the other also; and if any one would sue you and take your coat, let him have your cloak as well; and if any one forces you to go one mile, go with him two miles. Give to him who begs from you, and do not refuse him who would borrow from you.

"You have heard that it was said, 'You shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy.' But I say to you, Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, so that you may be sons of your Father who is in heaven; for he makes his sun rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust. For if you love those who love you, what reward have you?" -- Matthew 5:38

Chapter Thirty-three: Bill Clinton and Hillary

Over the years Bill Clinton surfaced in higher level political circles. At one of Bob's parties Bill was all made up in a Statue of Liberty costume, decorated in red, white and blue, complete with blinking lights. He was holding a torch and he acted feminine. I had to have sex with him later on and it felt confusing to me because it was like having sex with a girl in a man's body. That was strange to me even under mind control, even compared with all the other strange and perverted experiences to which my controllers subjected me.

In 1992, before he was inaugurated, Kelly and I were prostituted to Bill Clinton in Klamath Falls, Oregon. On the ride to meet him, we were told, "Remember Chappaquiddick - that same type of accident could befall you."

When we met Clinton, he said, "Did you know that I am now your boss, and you will do exactly as I say. You are under my command." With a robotical tone of voice he told me to give him oral sex and to get down on the floor where I belonged. Then Kelly robotically sexually serviced him after which I gave him a message before we were let out of his room.

Later on, I delivered messages to Clinton from the Council, from Kauai, before he was President. I was delivered aboard a very large ship, put into a stateroom and told to stay on the bed and wait for him. I did. He slipped into the room without knocking and locked the door behind him. He said, smiling coyly, "I believe you have something for me?" He had sex with me, with my dress and his pants still on. It was a quickie and then I gave him the message. It required a simple answer that I was to deliver back to the Council. His answer was agreeable.

Bill liked to be sung to and have his forehead rubbed. He liked to play mommy and baby baby Bill. He was often very strange.

When it came to Bill Clinton, Henry would stoop low. He even sent up bags of cocaine with me to use when I was with Bill or Hillary in order to get them off guard. Bill and Hillary both did the cocaine. I placed it on a small mirror for them and they had glass nose straws they snorted it through. Bill could do the whole little white pile with one snort. Hillary took two or three sniffs to get all of hers. Then we usually had sex.

When I said certain things, they thought I was a gift from Bob Hope, the entertainer. Bob and Henry's real relationship was kept quiet. The Clintons didn't seem to know that Henry and Bob were working so closely together, one getting me into the White House while the "Expert" Henry Kissinger delivered the goods in order to find ways to hang the Clintons. Henry said, "I want them so badly."

After I was through, two men in black uniforms with yellow-braided stripes on their shoulders came to get me and one stood on each side as they escorted me back to the helicopter that was on one end of the ship. It was a white helicopter. They put me in with the pilot and I was flown back to the small airport on Maui, near the Coconut Inn, where I was staying, as I worked on the writing of my first book, Starshine.

Before he was President, there was an occasion in a large hotel in Los Angeles. The Clintons were already heavily guarded with a whole group of Secret Service agents.

For my use as a sexual slave, I was trained to make love to married couples by always bringing the focus back to them. "Isn't your wife beautiful! Isn't your husband strong," or, whatever statements would

strengthen their bond and love for each other, if they were to be kept together. When I got through with couples they were totally enamoured with each other and hardly noticed when I dressed and left the room. I was used in this way with the Clintons. There was usually cocaine, often a gift from someone they knew, routed through me.

After the Clintons went to sleep I left. A man stepped toward me as I exited the room and escorted me down a red carpeted hall, to the elevator, and down to the lobby, as he held my elbow and lower forearm. At this point, another man took over, making a very smooth transition. I was pushed down into a waiting limo (I think it was a black Mercedes), as the man hurried and slammed the door. I was taken to the airport and the driver radioed ahead, and a man met us at the curb and hurried me onto my plane.

Now Clinton is President

Kelly had a school function or a friend's party at the Beverly Hilton. I hadn't seen her in awhile as she was living in California and I was living on Kauai, but I was brought in to help her with "The Prez," who was then newly-elected Bill Clinton. He had a group of girls and women there and that night he wanted only oral sex, along with chocolate and fruit slices. Afterwards, it was my job to redirect the girls back into their social function so there would be no mix-ups.

Sex slaves were used to sexually service both male and female members of the White House when our controllers called for it, and I was not to be exempt. Once when I was flown to the White House from Hawaii, Hillary played what she called "the tease game." She tied me up so she could be safe, she said. When she was through with me she looked at her gold watch, said she had to go, put on her dress and left. I put on my clothes and headed out to the waiting limo to Henry.

Henry always wanted to know exactly what Hillary's verbal responses were to things I said to her and he listened very carefully for speech patterning. They were trying to create a phrase of words that would stop her dead in her tracks when she went to court for the Whitewater incident. They had been planning this one even before Clinton took office. Henry knew and so did his people. They were trying to destabilize the government by ousting the President. Their plan was that "A cornerstone will fall, and further destabilize the American people. First Nixon, now Clinton, thus the people will lose faith in their leaders and the democratic way of life. So they will want to change it and will lean toward World Order." I knew in 1993, long before the Monica Lewinsky affair, that if Clinton was ousted, they had succeeded again in their plan and movement toward the New World Order.

The programs I had for the White House were pretty well-worn and grooved. Henry often rode with me in the limo to the White House if he hadn't had time to load me up beforehand. Sometimes, he wanted to sharpen me up or check my systems. He often went to have a cup of coffee or a cigar while I was doing the job. When I came out of the White House, flanked by Secret Service agents, I'd get into the limo and he would ask me to repeat verbatim what was said. I'd tell him exactly what they said and how they enunciated it. I could record not only what they said, but I could repeat it back just like they said it - tone, inflection, and all. And from that, Henry and his boys could run a voice print; then, using it, they developed a way to control people through their own language patterns. Henry put his cigar to his mouth before saying, "If you can get their patterns, you can control their minds." They put me close to the Clintons so they could obtain speech patterns, information about weaknesses they had and ammunition to get Clinton thrown out of office. They would stop at nothing in their effort to chip away at the Constitution and democracy.

Henry Kissinger hated Bill Clinton, but he especially hated Hillary. He wanted to publicly humiliate and disgrace her by showing that she had illegal investments and that she lied. Henry said, "People (the public) will be manageable after this is exposed."

Al Gore was easy for the Council because I believe he is a robot like me. Al Gore had me perform oral sex on him. He didn't do cocaine, though. He adamantly refused. Henry said, "He's a robot of choice."

I also had memories of experiences where I was at the White House with Hillary, Chelsea and a famous female vocalist, involved in a sex ritual.

My personal belief, based on my experiences, is that over the years, more leaders were under mind control. I believe it to be vitally important to dismantle the system that has created this, as well as gain aid for the victims, but not to further punish or humiliate the victims who are in need of professional help to heal. I know there has been corruption at the highest levels in the White House, and whether compromised through blackmail, lack of spiritual integrity, or mind control, I believe the Clintons are caught in a "Catch-22."

In a society where mind control is insidious, the whole of society is responsible in some way, whether through ignorance, denial, spiritual disintegration or greed. To the extent that some of us are not free, none of us are free. I believe it is God's perfect plan for those able persons to come to the aid of those who are in need.

In the center of the flame there is a hollow place
and nothing can burn in this sheltered space.
For the fire builds a wall, scientific fact claims,
and insures a safe area in the midst of the flames.
And in the hurricane's fury there's a center of peace
where the winds of destruction suddenly cease.
And this same truth prevails in life's tribulations;
there's an island of calm in the soul's meditations.
A place that is quiet where we're shielded from harms
secure in the haven of a kind Father's arms,
where the hot flames of anger have no power to sear
and the high winds of hatred and violence and fear
lose all the wrath and their savage course
is softly subdued as faith weakens force.
So when the fires of life burn deep in your heart
and the winds of destruction seem to tear you apart
remember God loves you and wants to protect you.
So seek that small haven and be guided by prayer
to that place of protection within God's loving Care.
-- Helen Steiner Rice

"Every word of God proves true; he is a shield to tthose who take refuge in him."
-- Proverbs 30:5

Chapter Thirty-four: Excuse Me, I Would Like My Life Back

As parts of my personality tried to break free, there were many, many attempts to bring me back into the fold; all of which included torture and trauma. In an attempt to understand what was wrong with me, I began reading every technical book I could get my hands regarding Multiple Personality Disorder. In the 80's, there wasn't much written. As I read I recognized symptom similarities but didn't seem to fit the mold of the 'garden variety' version of MPD, caused by abuse without programming. My search for the truth was unceasing.

Desert Hot Springs

Between 1985 and 1990 my husband and I often went to Two Bunch Palms, a spa resort in Desert Hot Springs, which is a neighboring desert city bordering Palm Springs. Craig and I would go for a few days to rest in the mineral pools and utilize the luxurious massage therapy and green clay facemasks that were a part of the resort's celebrity reputation. Once before I went, I watched a King Arthur video and when a shaft of white light shown down on the oracle as he kneeled to deliver a message from God to the king, I began crying and knew at once I needed to go to Two Bunch, alone. Witnessing this, my husband said, "Fine, it's okay. Just go. Do what you need to, honey." I left immediately. Arriving at Two Bunch in the dark around 10 o'clock at night, I was terribly afraid, but didn't know why.

"Two Bunch" as we referred to it, was a 'double edge sword' where I was accessed by Bob Hope and a group of men, including the Council. At the same time I was receiving intense bodywork from professional practitioners, which helped shake loose memories at a cellular level, other dedicated parts of my personality structure who were skilled to withstand torture and humiliation continued to do so on an increased level so that I could continue therapy and healing. I prayed daily for the Holy Spirit to bring to mind those things that needed healing in the perfect time frame, and that is just what occurred. These personalities cooperated over the years of my battle for freedom by absorbing the threats and abuse and, in addition, kept it separate from my conscious mind so I could continue my quest for freedom, unencumbered by fear or resistance. After an intense session with a gentle little old man who was an expert in Trager bodywork, my memories began to increase. During the same visit, I was instructed to attend secret meetings at Two Bunch where I stood back while a group of men talked. My husband was seldom there. I believe one meeting was "The Palm Springs Civic Committee." Bob golfed with them and they had business dealings together.

There were times I was picked up in the parking lot by a silver limo and taken to Bob. Sometimes I wouldn't even get out of the limo; I'd wait for Bob and he would enter to direct me. Other times I would spend the day with him. One night I was directed to a bunch of palm trees late at night to look for the White Owl. Bob Hope ended up being the White Owl I was looking for. At the time, I was unaware that this was a program. I walked outside into the late night breezes to report to the Palm Trees and to Bob, the White Owl.

Late on another night at Two Bunch, in a nightmarish reminiscence of the movie, Stepford Wives, that I had been required to watch years before, I robotically responded to programming as I trekked out to the parking lot in the white robe provided by the spa. A limo pulled up and mindlessly I climbed inside where a man immediately injected me with a drug. When we arrived at a big warehouse-type building in the desert that was like a robot reconditioning facility, the man had to help me out of the limo because I was so drugged. Once inside, doctors in surgical greens placed me on a gurney and started an IV. It may have been filled with a truth serum drug, because that is the type of questions they fielded me. They were trying to identify what I was doing in therapy, what I was remembering. Repositioning me to a chair, they slapped me over and over and I wasn't allowed to go to sleep. If I began to fall asleep, they slapped

me again. They were very upset about the therapy and told me lots of lies while they made me look into bright white lights. If I didn't keep my eyes open long enough, they would hold my eyes open and face me directly into the bright lights. They kept injecting my arm, as they yelled at me.

A man, approximately 35 years old, dark-skinned with brown hair, wearing a green tie, tan tweed jacket, white shirt and tan pants, entered the room. He directed the doctors what to do and told them what he wanted to find out, then they supplied the drugs, electroshock and lights. Returned to a metal gurney, he asked me questions over and over that didn't make sense to me, while I sat on the edge of the gurney with my head hanging down, totally out of it. He showed me pictures of people, men usually, and asked me questions about them and kept slapping me. Parts of my personality system would not comply and talk to him and it was making him very angry. In response, he took something sharp to the bottom of my feet. Then he called in the bright lights, and when my eyes could no longer stay open as he commanded, he had another man hold my head up, prop my eyes open and direct the lights in my eyes. They kept this up for what felt like forever. Then he laid me down and put a long rod up my vagina to shock me as he said, "She'll talk, just give her time - we have all the time in the world."

But I was dissociated deep within myself and really didn't care if they killed me or not. I had been conditioned from birth to take what they dished out and if I died, I just wouldn't have to endure any more. No more suffering, it would be over. His frustration level saturated, this man instructed his assistants to lay me down and they took an electric sheer, the type you use to clip a dog, or prep a person for surgery and ran it up my pubic hair, up my stomach, all the way up to my chin. He said it was something to remember him by, "To keep remembering what happens if you don't comply."

After I'd given up and was "gone" they pulled a plastic cap dotted with little metal electrodes over my head. They told me over and over that they would make it much easier on me if I would just cooperate and quit therapy. But I didn't stop. They had to carry me out to the limo and when we arrived back at Two Bunch, the man accompanying me snapped his fingers in my ear and commanded, "Snap out of it!" and followed up with the suggestion that I was very, very tired and wanted a nap. Slowly, I trudged back to the room and went to sleep. I don't know where Craig was.

Desert Hot Springs was a place of horror for me as I attempted to get well by working hard in therapy with Stuart and Margie. I remember Stuart saying to me after I continued to show up day after day with more pieces of my painful past to process in therapy, "I have never seen anyone who is more motivated than you; it's like you're running a marathon."

I responded, "I don't feel like I'm doing this fast enough." No wonder - neither he nor I consciously knew that I was still being tortured and reprogrammed; reporting to the Federal Building, to UCLA, to my political abusers and to Bob Hope when assigned. Consciously, I thought Two Bunch Palms was a place where I went to get rejuvenated to do more abreactive work in order to recover. But even in the midst of the chaos there was a divine plan and timing to my life; I just had to be extremely patient.

As my healing defiance continued, I was returned to Two Bunch. One night I got dressed to go eat in the restaurant. There was a very large clock that hung over the entrance of the restaurant and my instructions were to, "walk to the clock at 6 o'clock." But instead of going inside, I was instructed to turn and walk to the parking lot where a man in a white suit drove me by limo late at night to a club. He took me inside and seated me in a maroon colored booth tucked away in the darkened club. Sonny Bono came out and told me to enter the cleared area. He was twirling a whip like he was going to lasso something. Then he cracked the whip. He did it over and over and it terrified me, because I felt he was going to hit me with it. Sonny said there was nobody there to hear my screams. "Scream all you like," he said laughing. Jokingly he added, "I kinda like it." He went on to explain that he was "giving me what I deserved for trying to break the mold."

I was helped up off the floor where I was huddled and delivered to a group of men in suits. They said I was the guest of honor, but it wasn't fun. They said I was stirring up a bit of trouble back there in Southern California and they just wanted to make sure that nothing bad happened to me. They took a long time to tell me all this, slowly, calmly and smoothly, before another man took me to a dressing room type of partition in a back room and, holding me up by one arm, threw me up against the wall and beat the living breath out of me. I ended up in a heap on the floor with my mouth bleeding. Giving me one final kick with his pointed boot, he said, "There, that ought to do ya."

Another suited man came in and began "taking care of me," he said, while he took pictures of me all beat up to send to my family and friends, and he told me over and over, things that didn't make sense to me like, "You are a queen. You will always be a queen; you have no successor so you must always remain the queen. It's a matter of privilege; you must remain the queen." His last instruction was, "Lay by the pool and get a tan," that I was going to be visited by "the man." I knew the man he spoke of was Bob Hope.

After I was returned and spent the next day recuperating and tanning by the pool, I was picked up again. On the way to see Bob they said my clothes weren't suitable to see him so they stopped at a dress shop in the Springs and one of the suits went in with me and picked out white slacks, a yellow shirt, a gold belt and sandals. Throwing my clothes in the trash he said, "these are more befitting."

We met Bob in a public place. I was taken to him and he broke free for a moment and came over to me, "Tsk, tsk, is this anyway for a woman to be showing a good example to her offspring?" He was referring to my attempts at freedom.

To further frighten and intimidate me, he pulled a picture out of his coat pocket of Kelly and I naked together and said, "The time will come my fairy princess to speak of better things," and he continued, finally commenting that he needed to, "teach me appreciation." Roughly, he took hold and squeezed my collar then abruptly let it go and walked away, like he was through with me. Unfortunately, he wasn't. I was taken back to Two Bunch where I left the new clothes in a massage room and returned to my room with another white robe on.

Another occasion Craig was with me at Two Bunch, when late at night a limo picked us up in the parking lot. We were taken some place and reprimanded for the therapy I was doing and were threatened with the "loss of many things," if I didn't stop and if my husband didn't make me stop. A man in the limo took hold of Craig by the shirt and warned, "Bob doesn't want to have anything happen to his important asset. Do you understand?"

"Yes, sir," my husband replied. He was very scared and for some reason I started laughing.

Within seconds the man delivered a blow to my face. I felt the stinging of my cheek as his attention turned to me, "Do you find something funny, young lady?" I became very serious and stopped laughing.

I didn't have any way to know then the uphill battle I faced, the magnitude of the system I was attempting to break out of, or the many obstacles, heartaches and abuses I would have to withstand over time in my battle for freedom. Despite the threats, my husband continued to pay $3,000-$5,000 a month for psychotherapy and bodywork, for four more years of my recovery. My controllers found the fact that I was in therapy amusing, totally assured that I was processing from anywhere but the National Security guaranteed, mind-controlled area of my brain. Since they saw me as a robot, they didn't worry about being discovered. Plus, they felt their secrets were protected by their sheer incredulity.

I was programmed to report to the Federal Building, which was in very close proximity to Stuart's office and to UCLA. I went upstairs to the 7th floor, exited the elevator and went down two doors on my left. I was told, "You will find a room with a view," which cryptically meant there was a closed circuit television for instructions. Further I was told, "Sit down, soak up the view, then go back downstairs and

try to read the newspaper in the stand and report back if you can." Due to programming against it, I couldn't read it but always followed orders and tried. I was at the Federal Building often. It was a place of "orders headquarters" from Henry. He gave me instructions over closed circuit television when he couldn't gain access or time with me anywhere else.

I had a lot of disguises to wear into the Federal Building. Hats, dark glasses, old baggy dresses, or skirts I'd throw on over my short shorts. I received closed circuit instructions at other locations also, like in rooms in hotels or at corporate offices, office buildings in Los Angeles, Santa Monica, or in the San Fernando Valley. But, at times, Henry had something urgent and needed access to me immediately, so he sent me to the Federal Building. I also delivered my own medical reports from UCLA to the Federal Building to send back to Henry. I guess it was like a mind control report card. My continual breakdown created more need for "check-ups."

Hope Tries to Bring Me Back Into the Fold

During this time as my memory began bleeding through, per program, I suffered with severe migraine headaches and other programmed responses to this security breech. In another of a series of containment efforts, Bob directed me to hike up to China Flats, a small waterhole area located on the Jordan Ranch, down the street from my home. He told me to meet him there at 4 p.m. Bob was flown in on a two-seater helicopter. This meeting was intended to bring me back in line and was not much different from the little chats he and others had been giving me. Like always he started out very calmly and before he was through ended up shouting at me as he paced all over. He always said a lot of, "When are you ever going to learn?" in between the programs he triggered me with and he called me, "my child." What he and others didn't understand was that I was not any more capable of really controlling of myself and my actions than I had ever been. The actual problem was that now I had parts of me who were becoming conscious, which was triggering the acting out of their program commands and this was disrupting my usage and threatened to destroy their plan for my life. In my soul I wanted to be free, but it would take time to accomplish that.

Robot Breakdown Strategies

One day, Henry and George Bush were having a "meeting of the minds," as they called it, to decide what to do with me since the efforts to keep me 'in line' and 'on line' were continually failing. As I sat in 'park mode,' overhearing their conversation, George Bush said, "We're going to have to waste her Hank."

Henry replied, "George, we have to be rational and calmly think ahead to the future. Just look at the situation we are faced with. This isn't one isolated case. Sure, she has been my closest watched, but if she's breaking down after all we've done, then the others can do the same thing. We could have a world of trouble on our hands and I don't mean that lightly. We have got to restore her and send her back out there. We'll need a hundred of them like her to help keep the others marching in line. We'll just create a new scenario. It's our game, we can create it anyway we choose, like we always have. I just need some time to figure out a plan. Take her out now and we actually will lose control. We can use her to learn from our mistakes to correct them next time. I'm sure I can devise a plan that will capitalize on this. I just need time to go back to the think tank."

As I continued to break down even further, I overheard Henry Kissinger say to a man I didn't know, "We may as well monitor her closely and watch how she breaks down. We've got a lot of others like her out there that are going to need tending to. So we'll learn from her how to best take care of the others." Through my therapy with Stuart, Henry was hoping to seal up the holes in my consciousness that were leaking memory of my past, especially the over the rainbow parts of my life experience that I was programmed not to remember. They were attempting to do a repair in my mind from my childhood so it would shore me up for further use. They also wanted to set me up to keep others locked into

programming, while they listened to me lecture on how I got out, which I wouldn't really have accomplished. After the culmination of their plan, they felt they would have the masses' minds under control and would no longer need to continue the charade since no one would be able to think to question anything that was occurring. They felt this would greatly simplify the human condition so that those self-chosen elite who were qualified could exist in peace and have superb quality of life. Henry said he had been witnessing too many robots cracking up and he needed me to be restored so I could complete the business that was planned for me with the contacts that, over the years, had grown to know and love me. He said I had put in the time and had gained an intimate trust with many important key players and I had to finish out my time by continuing to be of service to the people that had grown accustomed to me. So they shored me up with therapy, submerged me in the new age healing program lock-ins and began getting me conditioned to not be with my husband so much. Craig and I had been inseparable for many, many years, so this was a slow but steady change.

Henry had me peruse the leading bookstores, buy a variety of new age books from different categories, read them and report back a synopsis. This gave him plenty of current 'rages,' he called them and data that he could tap into to devise a strategic plan for the future.

And Henry's plan soon emerged. One day after my therapy session, men in suits accessed me in Westwood as I went down the stairs that faced the back parking lot and confiscated my whole journal. Skimming through it, one said, "She's written out a whole agenda." They told me I didn't need to worry about this anymore, that they would be glad to handle it for me. And they walked away with my journal. Then I had to report for more reconditioning in their attempt to shut down the leaks. This was in the late 80's. Henry felt it was crucial to monitor me heavily until I'd made the transition fully into the new 'persona' they were creating me to be: increasingly a more independent woman, very together, good speaker, writer, etc., for the future. In this way I could serve as an attraction and ultimately a containment person, with an agenda of speaking out about satanic ritual abuse. Then others would miss the real story about the mind control while their own programming would be sealed even tighter by words they would program me to deliver. "Like one of those Chinese finger puzzles," Henry said referring to the containment web. This was all done so when they transferred me to Hawaii, the transition would go smoothly.

Was it Escape or Relocation and Redirection?

After I fled California to Kauai, what I was still not yet aware of was that as parts of me celebrated their freedom, other programmed parts were still intact, fully programmed and still serving "the cause" my controllers dictated. Actually my "flight to freedom" was not yet fully realized; instead it turned out to be a clever plan my controllers devised in order to use me to the fullest during the stepped up culmination years of their plan. They went about destroying my marriage and having me watch movies that superimposed the reality they wanted me to believe. I was directed to watch the movie Shirley Valentine and when I went to the Whole Life Expo, a psychic that I walked by reached out to me and told me that I would be making a trip across the oceans to a new life. My life was still out of my own control and unbeknownst to me I continued to serve their plan, only now from the tiny island of Kauai.

A Heavenly Message

Feeling lost, disoriented, and missing my family I left behind, I sought out places of solace on the island. One day I had an incredible experience. The white sand beach on Kauai felt warm beneath my skin as I allowed my body to melt into the relaxation of the soft sand, basking in the warm gentle rays of the Hawaiian sun as the wind gently caressed my aching body and spirit. The sweet smell of the pungent plumeria flowers that I laid near my head continued to waft a heavenly aroma. My body felt exhilarated from the swim in the beautiful blue Hawaiian sea water. The uplifting Christian praise music that played through my Walkman lifted me ever higher, soothing and easing the tension in my wounded, terrified,

disoriented mind and body. As I rested, I once again heard, very clearly, the words of the Holy Spirit, "Doesn't one so wounded, deserve to heal in the most beautiful place in the world?" Tears of acknowledgement streamed down my cheeks and dropped onto my large magenta beach towel.

Silently I cried out in desperation and despair, "God, I miss my kids and my husband. I'm so confused, I feel lost and weak, what should I do? Help me Father, please help me." Soon I felt comfort as the Holy Spirit wrapped His huge loving, soothing arms around what I was to later discover was this most wounded of souls. I fell into a deep, peaceful slumber, momentarily letting go of all of my cares and burdens and was entered into that peace that passes all understanding. And I began to realize the meaning of those words learned so long ago in Sunday school. This peace, enveloping me in the midst of the chaos and confusion of my life, gave the promise of hope. And this time it wasn't Bob.

When I awoke from this peaceful slumber, I was guided by the Holy Spirit to take a walk. Silently, I was led in the direction of an old sign that read, "This is the site of an ancient Hawaiian refuge, a sanctuary for natives escaping unjust accusations and retaliation by their accusers where those seeking protection can find refuge." Tears came to my eyes as I realized 1, too, was being allowed to take refuge there. And for the moment I felt safe. The Holy Spirit gently nudged me, like a loving father caring for his young, in the direction of the crescent shaped rock wall bordering and enclosing into safety, the small swimming beach called Lydegate. I stopped to take in the incredible view, the turquoise blue waters, sending wave upon wave crashing into the large rock fortress that protected the beach. I marveled at the glorious sense I felt that the Almighty Creator of the heavens and the earth was gently rocking the world, thus creating the beautifully graceful, never ending wave formations.

Breaking my thought the Holy Spirit spoke again, calling me by the nickname He has used over the years, "Starshine, look to the right of the large rock beside your foot. There you will find a gift."

Hardly believing my ears, I questioned, "A gift for me from my Heavenly Father? Was I hearing correctly?"

Curious now and with the anticipation of a small child awaiting the opening of the first gift on Christmas, I bent to discover what sort of gift from God was there for me to receive. Reaching out, my hand found it before my eyes, and I pulled the small object from it's home on the sand and held it before me, carefully examining each and every detail. It was so tiny, so intricately detailed and so, so fragile. The paper thin shell remains of the mini sea urchin was so extremely fragile that I was afraid I would crush it and break it simply by holding it.

As I continued gazing on this miniature gift from God, I listened with quiet intent as my Heavenly Father spoke to me once again, "My child, you are so precious to me. I will hold you in the palm of My hand, just like you are holding this small gift from me. You need to know that as this shell is extremely fragile, so are you at this time, in ways you have yet to understand. Do not fear, be patient with yourself and know that I am guiding you step by step. Most of all remember, you are never alone."

Deeply touched by this message, yet completely without understanding of the ways in which I might be as fragile as the tiny, delicate shell that I held in my hand, I cautiously wrapped my fingers around it and went back over to my place on the beach. Lying down, with the gift still carefully held in my hand, I contemplated, "How could I be that fragile?" As I thought, the only explanation I could come up with was how at times, due to the many still unintegrated multiple personality states I often found myself in, I was often unable to perform even the simplest of tasks. For instance one afternoon, alone at Kay's, so far away from my home in California, I found myself hungry yet unable to even think to remember how to go about making my lunch. Feeling two years old and indeed locked, for the moment, into a very childlike personality, I could not even begin to think how to make myself a sandwich. The perfected gears in my mind were not turning on their own, as the sophisticated machinery created by Henry Kissinger, Bob Hope and others, broke down and came to a screeching halt. And where it stopped,

left me often locked into the mindset of a two-year-old. I just couldn't function. And so I thought, perhaps this was the type of situation that my Heavenly Father was aware of and was reassuring me that He was there for me, all I had to do was trust. Broken and unable to do anything on my own, yet with the trust of a child, I allowed myself to relax into His promise.

Later that night as I got ready for bed, I placed the tiny, fragile shell on my windowsill, to remind me of the promise. And so it was that God led me to healing and complete recovery, in His time, and in His way, so that I could be with you to share His message today. For God wants all of the wounded, mind-controlled slaves to be freed and he has tasked me with the assignment of being the fiduciary, His trusted servant, willing to facilitate the release and healing of those wounded souls locked into the bondage of mind control. And so if you find yourself not free, God will make your way to freedom, and will lead you every step of the way, just like He did for me. He has promised to make your way. Jesus said, "Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives; he who seeks finds; and to him who knocks, the door will be opened." All you have to do is ask.

Interwoven into the many experiences I had where the Holy Spirit came to guide me, were also other experiences where the parts of me that were still programmed realized that I was still not free. Soon after I moved to Kauai, without my conscious awareness, I was delivered to

Barking Sands Missile Weapon Site, located on the south shore of the island, and at other times serviced people like Ronald Reagan, Bob Hope and his friends on the golf course in Princeville. George Bush met me at the tiny Princeville Airport in order to direct me into further assignments and threatened me in his attempt to keep my renegade freedom fighter personalities under wraps.

In spite of my controllers' attempts to shut down conscious access of how I had been used, I continued to have flashbacks of many of my political experiences and I began to more fully understand the way my programming worked. These memories, that often included my family, gave me a fuller picture of reality and helped me understand why I couldn't yet safely return to California. As I grieved the loss of my husband and children I had left behind in California, I was spiritually guided to thank God no matter how bad things looked. I found myself sobbing through my tears as I cried out, "Thank you, God, I love it!" even as they eventually took custody of my children away. The Holy Spirit continually showed me that no matter how it looked, I was still in the right place. And while it appeared that I served two masters, all along God knew that I was still in service to a greater plan that I would need to experience and be a part of in order to chronicle it and share it with you now.

Kauai Containment Center

The friendly recovery network I was connected to while on the island of Kauai was still carefully held within a network of programmed people so I would be surrounded by the programming themes intended to keep me in bondage. It is a very clever plan. I was welcomed with loving arms by Kay Snow Davis and Charles Davis. But mixed in with incredible love, healing, and Holy Spirit insight, was also a secret agenda, one that to this day I believe they also were unconscious of. Charles drove me around the island to welcome me and orient me to my new surroundings. While we drove, he set in barrier blocks within my mind that would later block memory of my use at different areas including large hotels, like the Westin, Hyatt, Princeville, CoCo Palms Resort, and Garden Isle Inn.

The Westin Hotel on Kauai was full of big white statues, huge indoor pools, waterfalls, and large cultural art pieces. Kay took Kelly and I there one evening, when Kelly was visiting, and as we walked around the hotel, she hypnotically laid in number systems from one to eight, designating different areas. Later when I received the little post cards in the mail, alerting me to my assignments, I could decipher the simple codes. All they needed to say was W- l and I knew that would mean the Westin, a room on the

first floor. An eight would mean the far restaurant and so on. Each hotel had a letter assigned to it and numbers identifying areas where I was to go.

Not yet in touch with the many reporting personalities I had that were still intact, I thought I was safe. Actually, I was contained by many things in my environment. First I was contained by the network of programmed individuals I was living amongst as their programmed statements and hand signals continually reinforced my 'remember to forget' programs. My memory was also blocked by the endless visual images that were linked in my subconscious mind with hypnotic program commands to forget. Many of these images in my daily environment were things like the large building-size murals of whales, dolphins and rainbows that I drove by every day. I was also still reporting back to California to old friends and other people who I didn't know were programmed. Then, I was reporting to the 800 numbers I was instructed to. The containment plan was and is large, and will continue to work very effectively - until enough people are able to see what is actually happening.

Still a Working Girl

I was actually kept very busy on assignments, yet consciously thought that I went to the beach every day. There were blocks of assignments but I never was to enter a hotel from the same direction twice so I wouldn't be detected or become a familiar face to the wrong people. Some places Kay cued me to and other places Charles did. But I was cued to large hotels all over Kauai and some of the neighboring islands.

I was programmed to stand on the corner of the highway and was picked up by a military jeep and taken to Barking Sands Missile Range. There were underground facilities and if the base was threatened, even for the security of classified, top secret information, then they had missiles and bombs set to go off which later would be explained as an enemy attack. I don't believe the military guards knew exactly what they were protecting. When I'd round the corner with a senior officer-in-charge, they'd look surprised at first, but I was waved through before being taken to a high-tech operations room. Once inside they sat me in a large thick metal chair that spun and did all sorts of torturous things, but they told me my mind was numbed so I couldn't feel the pain. They numbed my mind with hypnotic suggestion while my body spun. Then I was instructed to lean into position to look into the big goggles. The pictures I saw began with a bee and other nature scenes and then it all went so fast I couldn't see the individual pictures. That way the information went directly into the subconscious mind without any conscious intrusion or filters to connect the two. As long as the programmed information bypassed the conscious mind they felt I couldn't remember because I wouldn't be able to connect the information.

When I was to meet Reagan on the island, I received a post card in the mail and it had the date, time and place on it to meet Reagan. When he came alone I met him at the Princeville Airport. He arrived anonymously by helicopter with Secret Service agents. A limo was waiting inside the fence to the airport and the helicopter would land right by it and Reagan would be rushed off the helicopter, and hurried into the limo and we'd be taken to the Princeville Hotel.

Another time I was programmed to meet Reagan at the Princeville Hotel on the north shore of the island. He entered through the large sliding glass doorway and I was sitting in a chair in the lobby, instructed to watch for him. This was in 1991 and Reagan had come to the island for a visit. When he saw me he quickly pointed toward the left side of the hotel indicating that I was to walk that way. Immediately I walked in the direction he pointed. As I got out of sight of people and into a back hallway he quickly walked over to me, said hello and told me that he missed me, then he spun me around for programming purposes and escorted me to the elevator. Men in suits followed close behind and he explained that he still had agents guarding him that we would have to contend with.

We entered into a large peach colored room that overlooked the bay. Reagan said Nancy was flying in to meet him later and said he just wanted a reminder of me. He went on to explain that he really missed me and he really missed being President. He said he was really surprised just how much he missed it. We had sex in the usual stance, with him passively beneath me. Afterwards he smiled and said, "You've still got it kid." He patted me and I lay next to him until he fell asleep and then I let myself out of the room. I passed the agents in the hallway having a cigarette by the elevator and waited mindlessly for the valet to bring my rental car around. When I returned home, I was in a stupor and went straight to bed, all traces of the memory neatly locked beneath the programming that protected it.

The Last Time I Saw Bob Hope Goodbye Cruel World

Another day when I drove my Lexus to Princeville, I accompanied Reagan and Bob on the golf course. I rode in the golf cart and was pretty out of it while we were on the green. All I could do was clap and smile when they did well and I kept score manually for them. While Reagan was taking his turn, Bob said to me, "So you think you got away, huh?" Shaking his head he continued, "There are bigger fish in the sea that got away, but you my dear are not one of them."

I smiled and curtsied to Bob, like I had done for years.

Bob softened and said, "Feels like old times out on the course, doesn't it?"

"Yes it does, Bob." I answered just before he began to relive and rehash the past, constantly referring to old times, old movies he'd starred in, old performances, USO tours, old people - THE PAST! He said he loved the Princeville course, loved the view and said that the ocean air was good for him. He had some sinus problems and said they cleared right up when he was out in the ocean air. He never once mentioned sex, maybe he'd become to old.

They didn't bother playing the whole green. Bob wasn't real strong and one time he fell into the golf cart and took a hold of it like he was having trouble seeing and walking. Reagan asked him if he was okay and Bob replied, "Hell yes, let's go on, I'll be fine." I didn't know then that this was to be the very last time I would see my owner in person.

Prince Charles Visits the Island

Prince Charles came to the island when he and Di were having marital problems. He came just to relax and get some perspective. The Council instilled a whole agenda into me for the week I entertained, toured, listened, and had sex with Prince Charles. Retrieving this memory made me really nauseated.

My Children are Reprogrammed

In an attempt to rescue my children and provide them with a safe home and believing I was actually safe and free, I brought them to the island. I had no idea that I was still being accessed, and that they were also. Consciously I thought we just went to the beach everyday, while the kids played with friends and surfed. But later I remembered that when they arrived they also were taken to Barking Sands Missile Base. Their programs were stepped up to match my new level after which Danny was very sick and laid on his futon and cried for two days.

While on Kauai, when Kelly was with me for the summer we were programmed to perform as a mother-daughter sex team. We were also filmed in underwater ballet and sex with dolphins and other sea creatures in pornography. Sometimes we swam with underwater sea turtles, they were such docile creatures and they weren't interested in sex. I could relate to them because all they tried to do was get to safety so they could relax and finally be at peace. There was lots of porn filmed on the island. They felt the natural splendor would only enhance the productions and they filmed lots of slaves with dolphins. They filmed us in shimmery suits, or braid wraps, all sorts of fancy hair and body jewels and ornaments or jeweled waist belts while otherwise naked. There was quite a following of dolphin porn lovers. When a male dolphin got excited, his penis stuck up and looked like a Bird of Paradise flower. We all learned that

if you weren't scared and approached him lovingly the sexual encounter wouldn't be as painful. There was a rich local attorney named Ken whose job was to sufficiently launder the proceeds. I delivered money to him from Sylvester Stallone and from other less prominent men on the island.

Sylvester Stallone

Stallone liked to have group sex with lots of women and he liked Kelly and I together. He had us the first time when we were staying in a cottage in Anahola. As programmed, during the middle of the night I went to my daughter and said, "Kelly, Kelly, wake up, we have work to do.

"No Mom," Kelly said, "I'm tired."

"Wake up now!" I commanded, snapping my fingers drawing my 13-year-old daughter into a wideawake state. I held her hand all the way to the rental car we drove when I first arrived onto the island. We drove to Stallone's house in Anini Beach and parked in the drive. He said that since it was a rental car it would be fine. Kelly and I went into the house and out to a oval room where there were other girls waiting. One was Japanese and another brunette. At first we all just sat and looked at each other, smiling in awkward embarrassment. Sly walked in with a white towel around his otherwise naked body and held his hands out to us. He told us we were waiting for the 5th wheel but she never arrived. He laughed and directed us into the bedroom. He pointed to Kelly and said, "I want her first." He told her she had the Bo Derek look and he kissed her before she began her trained, skillful sexual repertoire. Stallone was snorting cocaine and during the group sex it was my job to remember to offer him more. He had a small spoon that he stuck up his nose to snort the white powder. Kissing Kelly he said, "Bob has good taste." Pulling her hair back and kissing her more deeply he added, "and it's getting better all the time." When he was finished sexually satisfying himself with her he rolled her over and said, "rest little baby," as he went to the other girls in turn. We never spent the night, stayed just a few hours and after Stallone went to sleep I kissed his cheek, took Kelly's hand and we tip-toed out.

Stallone once said, "There's nothing quite like a slave. I love getting them from the underground. You're all so cooperative, don't give me no shit. This is the life I tell ya'. No bitchy, demanding women, not when I can have beautiful, sweet, white women who set me free. It's all about freedom," he rambled, while laying on his back in a seemingly drugged stupor, about "America the Beautiful and the home of the brave." He was high on cocaine. The higher he got the better the animal lover he was to become. That was his code name, "Animal." And when they told me, "the Animal" wanted Kelly and 1, then I knew it was Stallone. I also gave him massages, often in open air areas.

Sly thought the dolphin porn was the greatest new combo and he directed a lot of the porn videos. It was filmed at areas at the North Shore, Poipu or, he had us helicoptered into remote areas for filming. Large cameras were taken out to these remote island areas. I delivered some money from Stallone and from other less prominent men on the island to Ken, the wealthy attorney who had a big beautiful house in Kilauea. I believe it was his job to see that the money was sufficiently laundered.

Sly wore a wet suit but we were always naked in the water. There were trained dolphins that we did water ballet and swam with. When we swam gracefully the male dolphin got excited and started nudging us. We grabbed onto them and went for the ride; if we didn't, they told us, "one wrong move and you could get ripped to shreds." The dolphin actually remembered us over time and the same male would consistently choose the same girl, even when the group size changed from small to large. They got to know us and didn't forget in between. When my sons were on the island they were filmed also. One day after the filming, Sly said to Kelly, "You come back soon, ya here?"

During other visits, where I was supposedly allowed to see my children, Kelly and I were prostituted to Charlton Heston, and I was to Kareem Abdul Jabaar. Taj Mahal, the jazz musician, was on the island to keep other slaves in line through satanic rituals. One time I was programmed to drive to

Secret Beach at night to attend a 'gathering' where, unbeknownst to my conscious personality, I was raped in a ritual.

Consciously I thought, as my programmed reality dictated, that I had escaped from my controllers in California and I was now safe. I believed I had rescued my children, and as the summer came to an end, I began the process of enrolling them in island schools. I moved from house to house, attempting to keep our whereabouts anonymous, only to have my stillprogrammed children call back to their father in California and report our current location and phone number. It was terrifying. And I thought I would die of grief and terror when Craig told the kids and I that if I didn't return them to California he would be sending in a police escort to bring them home. Devastated and panicked but not knowing what else to do, I returned my children to their father in California. Shortly afterwards, my attorney notified me that if I wanted to ever see my children again I needed to attend a court hearing in California. Frightened of the danger of being accessed, I called Ted Gunderson (retired FBI official) who helped me hire a bodyguard. I flew to California, where behind the judge's closed doors, I lost custody of my children. My attorney, Doug Wolfe, let me in on the news when he informed me in the Courthouse hallway, "You're lucky to be alive, just get back to the island and get a job."

My children's programmed father and our controllers were now in even more total control of their lives.

The Wind Beneath My Wings

Extremely sad and depressed, I returned to the island. The job I took when I returned was to begin to more fully document many of my memories and I began writing my first book STARSHINE. It wasn't an easy task because first I had to undo the endless programs that kept me from being able to use the word processor without a programmed part of me destroying the information I had just typed. But I was determined to do whatever it took to get eventual help for my children. Memories of a political and international nature often flooded my awareness and I documented them each time something new came to mind. Due to the vivid nature of flashbacks I experienced, I spent nearly two years stuck in the body memory part of my Kissinger experiences and had to live with the smell of this cigar smoke and listening within to the sound of his accented voice. Similarly, I flooded with sexual memories about Pete Wilson and Ted Kennedy. Talk about intrusion!

Since I had no money, I hired the 'ocean' to be my therapist and with God's guiding, I actually did some of my best memory recovery work alone on the beach, with the ocean holding the space of peace, love and strength for me so I could delve to the depths of my own mind. With the solid foundation built from years of memory recovery done while I was still in California, and after a year on the island retrieving still deeper layers of memories, and programming, I had a pretty clear picture that something was up - exactly what I wasn't sure. I couldn't imagine why I would be with Henry Kissinger, Nixon or Reagan, or what was so important about me that people were following me and overly interested in what I was doing. But all my memories, held together by the pages in my journals, began to neatly fill in the picture. In 1992, 1 purchased a light and sound machine of my own, and after mastering the fear associated with using some of the same technology my controllers had used on me, I began to more easily recover even deeper layers of memory. Soon I realized the programs that controlled me were broken and nullified as I became consciously aware of them.

Bush Flies Into Princeville

But my other secret jobs didn't stop and with my family out of their way, I was now freer and more unencumbered than ever to work for my controllers. George Bush met me at Princeville Airport, a very small airport on the north shore of the small island. Then we would both be helicoptered to Barking Sands Missile Range. When we arrived he and a military officer saluted each other and then he was escorted to an outside structure that had glass doors.

At another time, George Bush met me at Barking Sands Missile Range, for a talk about "getting back in line." I was parked in my Lexus waiting near the entrance when Bush drove up in a military jeep. A military officer was driving him. Bush told me to start my engine and follow him. I followed through the gates that were opened for him into the missile site. He motioned me out of my car and stomped over to me. He stood and yelled in my face about being irresponsible. I had a hard time hearing or understanding him because it was extremely windy. I also think personalities inside of me were attempting to shield me from his barrage of programmed verbiage. He waved his glasses around while he yelled at me. In his cryptic mind control lingo Bush said, "Get into line or Kelly will be on a #9." He was referring to the well known freedom train mind control theme, of being thrown off the train, which cryptically meant her death. Angrily, Bush saluted and told me to get back in my car and get the hell home. He was very angry.

An Act of Nature Sets Me One Step Closer to Freedom

But "category five" Hurricane Iniki changed many of their plans and this act of nature ultimately worked in my favor, freeing me a little more each day. I lost the home that I attempted to recreate on the island to the hurricane, and as I healed my mind, body and spirit, I realized more and more every day that I still wasn't safe. In order to have the electricity to continue powering my laptop, Patrick Stone, the man who helped me write Starshine, (himself an unrecovered victim of mind control), and I were forced to leave the island. Military planes evacuated us to the island of Maui, where we continued writing. There we were continually visited and harassed by men my controllers sent to the hotel that we later discovered was also a "containment center." True to the network containment strategy, our friends on Kauai referred us to this place and we continued writing while we were monitored. It frightened me because I was now conscious enough to realize that I continually ended up in places where I thought I was free, but I wasn't. This was due to the fact that I wasn't fully integrated and half of my programming was still intact and affecting me, still binding me hopelessly to my controllers. In many ways I felt free though, and continued to heal and dedicate my life to service and God. While I, Susan, wrote, my 'inner twin sister' Sharon took the heat and once again endured the physical and mental tortures so I could be free to write Starshine. My dissociative state was now being used in my favor, although it often wasn't easy.

One night while in Maui, I had a dream and saw a map with a check mark identifying Oregon. At that time I was unaware that I was receiving telepathic messages, often at night. I called Margie Paul and told her about the dream and that I felt guided to move. So she talked to a famous movie star that was also her client and asked her to recommend a place. Through that recommendation, I moved off Maui and took what few belongings I had left with me to Ashland, Oregon. I rented a home, referred to me by this movie star's realtor friend, and began writing. Kelly and Danny visited me at Christmas. Soon after, Kelly and I were prostituted as a motherdaughter sex team to Clinton, who had just been elected, but not yet inaugurated as President.

I didn't realize that I was still programmed not to notice when I was 'missing time.' Healing, integration and deprogramming didn't come as quickly as I wanted it to. Healing took time. But my continued motivation to heal and figure out what this all meant kept me uncovering more and more in regard to my own programming and how the system all worked.

Months later I mustered the courage to move back to California. I desperately wanted to help my children, and felt I was recovered enough and safe enough to do that. I didn't know I still had layers of personalities and programs still intact that would keep me under control, and unfortunately neither did David Neswald, the therapist I worked with there in Southern California. To make matters worse, upon the completion of Starshine, as I readied it for print, my brother, Rick, who was one of my programmed controllers, and whom I had chosen not to see for years, was able to access me one last time. This accessing allowed him to gain entrance to my apartment in Calabasas and rape me, threatening that if I didn't stop with Starshine they would publicly display the compromising pictures that he then took of my

children and me. The next morning, I awoke disoriented, terrified, and confused and had no idea the source. But later that day, I "remembered" the horrific scene and was grateful to have at least remembered it because, in the past, it had taken me months, often years to remember traumatic events.

In hysterical panic, I once again phoned Ted Gunderson for further advice on how to stay safe. He told me to get special locks for my doors, and a security system, and I had alarms that I bought for each door so if anyone, including myself, went in or out, they would sound off. I even purchased an alarm that I wore on my body and set it off if anyone of a suspicious nature approached me. It was terrifying, as I realized I was still not able to keep myself safe, due to programming that operated beyond my control. Soon I realized, though, that this traumatic event was actually another "gift" to me, without which I would never have known I was still under program. I continued working in therapy with Dave Neswald who, although well intentioned, was not informed in regard to how my sophisticated government programming worked. I had hired bodyguards in the past and now he and Ted were suggesting that for my safety I hire one again, only full-time now. With very limited funds, and enormous mounting therapy bills, I wondered how I could afford a bodyguard? I compromised and hired a live-in housekeeper who would at least be with me most of the time, as my therapist was afraid that my controllers would switch me with my "twin sister" and take me away. I lived in absolute terror, trying to keep the trauma from occurring not only at my controller's hands, but also at my own. I was scared all the time, because I couldn't even trust myself, not knowing if I would involuntarily switch and put myself or my children in danger. Most of the time, in those days during 1993, 1 couldn't even complete a sentence when I attempted to communicate and my mind felt confused and exhausted.

I persevered toward getting Starshine into print. When I began to ponder just what the cover should be like, I found a booklet in a craft store with a picture of an angel that I just knew had to be on the cover. The events that occurred later that day, proved to me without a shadow of a doubt that God's angels were indeed watching over me. When I called the artist and explained that I wanted her angel to grace the cover of Starshine, she agreed without question. The only thing she wanted me to know was that this was the angel she had designed for the White House Christmas tree that year! Talk about synchronicities and miracles.

Attempts to Stop Me

Over the years, as I attempted to heal, break free, write and get my book into print, I was harassed in many ways. Over time, I paid more and more attention to the triggers that were sent my way to stop me from remembering and becoming free. These messages and triggers actually provided a guide, a road map of sorts, toward discovering and dismantling deeper layers of my programming.

For years, I have been tailed, my phones are usually tapped, people have been "sent in on me" in my controllers' attempt to reprogram and regain control of me. Other people were 'sent in on me' in a timely fashion, such as in 1992 when Patrick Stone and I 'bumped into' Dutch Schroeder, his Baylor University coach, who just happened to be vacationing on Maui during the exact same time we were writing the FBI chapter in Starshine. When we had lunch with he and his wife, he told us he was one of Bill Sessions' friends. At that time, William 'Bill' Sessions was still the Director of the CIA.

At other times, men in suits found me in homes of acquaintances, beaches, restaurants, hotels and cabins alike and made their threats; physical and verbal. My car tires were slashed, my mail was tampered with, often held back for months, only to mysteriously arrive in bunches up to two years after the postmark date! Phone messages, powerfully, cryptically encoded and laced with programming intended to keep me under control were played over the phone or recorded on my answering machine.

Shrill sounds and/or tones were also played over the phone to tap into my programming. Disturbing written "triggers" intended to either frighten me into submission or keep me from remembering, were sent by mail. As I ran for my life from state to state, two separate individuals rear-ended my car on the same day, within hours of each other. I was set up and programmed to pose for compromising photos in an attempt to blackmail me should the need arise. And, as I mentioned earlier, during 1993, in my quest to get Starshine into print, I was threatened and warned to cease with its self-publication. And, when I didn't stop, I was raped.

The CIA Lends a Hand? Tennessee Bound

But a breakthrough occurred. Ted Gunderson called to inform me that he had just heard from another woman who lived across the nation, who had also sent him her memory work about being used as a sex slave to Ronald Reagan. Although it was a terrifying time for me, it also was an amazing time of discovery for all of us. Mark Phillips, her so-called therapist and deprogrammer flew across the nation and told me that "Jimmy Carter's people" had called him in an attempt to stop him from meeting with me. I flew Mark and Cathy O'Brien to California to meet with me for the first time and I put on a seminar where they were the featured speakers. Mark Phillips knew all about my programming. Looking back on it now, he seemed to know way too much. He asked me if I had "a twin sister who was two inches shorter than me." This was a very powerful key and code into the programming of my "inner twin sister," Sharon, and this seemingly simple statement controlled my body in a very intimate way from the outside, showing me while in normal consciousness that I was indeed a robot, and not in control of my own body. Shortly after Mark and Cathy's arrival and seminar, a series of events occurred including an accident and ensuing hospitalization of the person that was living with me as my safe person. Mark Phillips explained that I was not safe in California and once again I ended up running. I paid to fly Mark, Cathy and I back to his mother's home in Charlotte, Tennessee where we began my process of what we then called "deprogramming."

Several weeks later, with nearly 10 years of recovery behind me, this so-called "retired?!" CIA operative made dramatic changes in his living arrangements just to "help me deprogram." After relocating across the country, to a home in Arab, Alabama where I paid all domestic expenses for the three of us, a large sum of money for traveling expenses for both he, his girlfriend Cathy, and myself, and a large 'consulting fee,' this renegade CIA operative read my lengthy journal entries daily for a year and a half and agreed that in his own words, "the memory work contains absolute elements of fact laced with verifiable details." But one and one-half years, forty-two journals, and $50,000+ traveling and living expenses later, Mark Phillips informed me that nothing had ever happened to me ...nothing what-so-ever!

Cathy O'Brien said, "Well, you should be happy that nothing happened and that your children have not been abused!" I couldn't believe she was saying that, after all the common details of our histories we had shared.

I was devastated and went to bed and could not eat for three days and remained noncommunicative and totally subdued for nearly a month afterwards. After all this time of intensely focused attention on my history, Mark informed me that I had never even been abused, and that I just had a big imagination. But, he had seemed to appreciate that I was around to cover all of his expenses.

I suspect that Mark is some kind of "containment agent" who is being directed through his "handlers" whose motivations ultimately serve the New World Order. Through his containment expertise, the information I have conveyed to you in this book you are now reading was delayed in reaching you by nearly seven years. After I moved, I found out that Mark had initially told Walter Bowart (author of Operation Mind Control and eyewitness to my use with Bob Hope in Palm Springs) that I was schizophrenic, and since then, I have uncovered a string of lies he told others in an attempt to discredit me. I also reconnected with another Kissinger survivor that Mark Phillips had worked with for a time. Mark Phillips told her the same thing he told me - "THIS NEVER HAPPENED TO YOU!" With my trust

shattered, Ted Gunderson, Catherine Gould, Margaret Paul, Walter Bowart and many others supported me in what I knew to be the truth of my life. I left that home where I had paid all expenses for Mark Phillips and Cathy O'Brien and went to live in Carbondale, Illinois. I had a slower pace there and life was sweet while the situation lasted. It was a time of rest and recuperation as the final integration I had achieved in 1996, solidified into even greater strength and unification while I remained safe.

Baby Monarch Breakdown

After a suicide attempt and hospitalization in California, Kelly was released to me and even went to high school for a short time in Carbondale. My heart was broken when in June, after only being with me for a few months, she announced that she missed her Southern California lifestyle and the rest of her family, and told me she was leaving. Due to her unrecovered, still programmed state of mind, Kelly was not free to make up her own mind, and was often puppeted by our controllers and the inner web of programming that dictated her actions. After she left, an opportunity arose and I moved once again, this time to South Carolina in a quest to open a healing center. All the while, I continued writing my sequel to Starshine, the book you are reading now.

Going to Carolina to Open a Healing Center

Over the years of my escape, Kelly's programming began to further break down, partially due, perhaps, to the lack of contact with me. In turn a series of suicide attempts landed her again in the hospital. Twice I flew to California and brought her back home with me. During these intense times, Kelly had lucid moments where she told me she knew everything that had happened. She talked to me about white vans, limos, being in London, hand signals, being sexually abused, and made me promise I would write about the drugs and how the doctors drugged her, which she told me was destroying her brain. These medical doctors felt my daughter was psychotic, because they were unaware of her programming. Kelly thanked me in a card on Mother's Day (see photo section) for her freedom, and as we spent time together she relayed more and more events that she remembered, which validated my own experiences

.

Knowing what a crucial step it is for mind control victims to wear a watch, I bought Kelly a new watch. One day while we were swimming in a nearby lake, Kelly looked me right in the eye, took the watch from her wrist and purposefully dropped it into the lake. I bought her several other watches and she did the same thing. She was not "allowed" to monitor the time and her programming dictated that she lose it, quickly, before she got hurt for disobeying her program.

My move to South Carolina to plan and coordinate a healing center for mind control survivors fell through but God was not to disappoint me in my desire for the healing center. Although I could not yet see the perfection of the Divine plan, I was soon to begin on a path that would lead me to the creation of a healing center for survivors, a center furnished with the latest, state-of-the-art technology, with the capability of bringing survivors into recovery and whole brain synchrony in a more efficient and quicker manner than my years in 'talk therapy' ever could. The psychotherapy I received, although helpful, didn't touch or recognize the powerful programming that ruled my every action, and couldn't help me learn to not dissociate. EEG Neurofeedback helped me learn to not dissociate and to be more present and attentive.

By April of 1997, Kelly was diagnosed Dissociative Identity Disorder (DID) by two separate therapists, one in North Carolina and one in South Carolina. In previous years, since 1988 I had attempted to get Kelly informed, qualified help in and out of California, but her father denied her right to see any therapist who had any awareness of the one thing she needed in order to heal. He interviewed each therapist I recommended, and if they had any knowledge of DID or ritual abuse, he would not allow her to see them. But, once again I created a home and in my attempt to help my daughter, I began

studying and training to become a certified EEG Neurofeedback Clinician. I bought an EEG machine and began working with Kelly at home. She responded well to the neurotherapy, but was reaccessed and soon became completely catatonic.

But by the summer of 1997, when my daughter's worsening condition rendered her totally catatonic and non-responsive; unable to eat, drink, walk, talk, use the bathroom or move, I was forced to hospitalize her. Luckily, I found a female psychiatrist who had read my book, was familiar with MPD, ritual abuse and government mind control, and was willing to admit my daughter to the hospital while enacting the security required to keep her safe. While she was hospitalized, another recovered survivor and I gave an inservice training for the hospital staff. I also completed further EEG Neurofeedback training and opened my own business.

One time when I visited Kelly in the hospital, my car window was smashed, my briefcase, mind control literature and the electronic equipment I used to speak publicly was stolen. And to top it off, New Year's Day, 1998, the Holistic Health Care Clinic that housed my new EEG Neurofeedback business and the EEG Spectrum equipment that I used to help victims and non-victims alike, was totally destroyed by fire. Although the official fire department report was that the fire was the result of faulty wiring, I felt the fire was due to arson. To validate my suspicions, and just in case I forgot and needed "re-minding," two bags of the ashes from that fire were mysteriously delivered to my home.

Later in the year when another Bob Hope survivor visited me, I had to call the local police to report a man who was surveilling us late at night outside my home. And, as recently as February 1999, as I sent out the initial copies of this manuscript, my phone lines to my office were cut and I was tailed.

Each time I am harassed, instead of silencing me, it spurs me into greater action, and the result is another radio interview, another book or article, and more speaking engagements. I still stay as public as I can, speaking publicly whenever I am asked, so I can continue to share the truth.

This harassment cannot and will not stop being used against victims attempting to live free, until this dark system of mind control is exposed and brought to light.

"For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father also will forgive you."
-- Matthew 5:14

"But I say to you that hear, Love your enemies, do good to those who hate you."
-- Luke 6:27

Brice Taylor - Thanks for the Memories, pp 272-274

Chapter Thirty-five: Secret Societies

What's the Secret Goal at the Top of Freemasonry?
Answer: A Luciferian New World Order

Living in and amongst those planning the New World Order as their programmed mind file, meticulously recording their deeds and activities, has allowed me to be here now to report their plan to you. Their agenda includes keeping the populations of the world under control as they hold the key to secret knowledge. Knowledge is power. If you are uninformed as to their secret agenda and especially of their use of advanced mind control technology in order to bring about their plan, then you can't protect yourself or begin to work toward stopping this plan.

If there is any one thing I could tell you about the inner workings of the New World Order it's that it is subtle, organized and calculated. This plan has an agenda that spans generations with obvious long-term goals--as long term as the intergenerational abuse pattern that was passed down through my family creating within our generational line Multiple Personality Disorder.

And, I can tell you that the New World Order plan serves a belief system that is based on power and control, confusion, greed, and the use and manipulation of others, most often without their consent. The system's "cogs" are well oiled and greased, and are interlaced and protected by mens' secret societies like the Masons, who have at the pinnacle of their organization a belief in secret knowledge. The Masonic order is funded from the bottom up by first through third degree Masons, hoodwinked and mesmerized into working for the agenda of those members at the top-an agenda they work "toward" knowing but they aren't allowed to know until they arrive at the top through oath and initiation to possess the elusive "secret knowledge."

Found in Morals and Dogma, the cornerstone of every higher Mason's library, in the 32°d Chapter (Sublime Prince of the Royal Secret) are subtle hints of the character of this 'secret knowledge,' specifically geared toward the 32°d Degree Mason (Master of the Royal Secret). Here, in the guise of acknowledging a Universal Equilibrium between good and evil, as the natural balance and harmony of earthly existence, it promotes the acceptance of the belief that evil actions are a necessary counter-balance to good ones and asks the aspirant to accept this dichotomy in human affairs. From this sublime seed of half-truth, evil is allowed flourish within the protective secrecy of the organization.

To gain this knowledge, a man must go through a series of Luciferian initiations and, as he progresses toward the top, he finds that he is trapped into keeping the secret, through threat of consequences, including death. Once gaining the upper levels, he believes that he or his family will be killed if he should ever divulge the secret knowledge. This initation where he is ultimately compromised involves blood ritual and rape. Now many of these men have had to "sell their soul to the devil," taking an oath through satanic ritual to serve and protect their fellow lodge brother regardless of the deeds done in order to accomplish that. Through the secret handshakes and signals they give to each other, they alert one another to the needs of a brother and thereby this fellow member who may be in court for charges of criminal activity, or apprehended by the police for breaking the law, is protected by his "brother." It may be a judge, who when a case is presented before him, sees a brother in trouble, and looks the other direction, allowing the lodge brother to go free or with light sentencing. Or, it may be an attorney who finds himself unable through the court system to really "defend" his client, as he secretly serves the system in which he is oath bound. Often in court cases throughout the legal system, children who are sexually or physically abused are sent back to live with a perpetrating parent while the other parent seeking protection of their child is sent away, alone and powerless to do anything to protect their

child. All this happens because a judge or an attorney is part of an organization that has at its very foundation, protection of its members, right or wrong, and sometimes protection at all costs.

Are you aware that many of our Presidents have been Masons? In fact, the majority have. This means that they have taken an oath to serve their organization and the brothers who belong, without question, even above and beyond God and country. Instead of justice we have camaraderie. Instead of protecting citizens, especially our youngest ones, we have a system of individuals who serve each other, blindly I might add, without question of right or wrong, good or bad, without consideration for the Constitution and the high spiritual ideals set forth for our country. We have instead a "boys club," where many men join in order to belong, to be a part of a group that they may believe furthers civic interest, financial gain, and offers security.

Our nation is undermined by this group that operates in the dark, shrouded by secrecy and serving to protect their fellow lodge members above all else-including truth and justice. A man cannot serve the Lodge and at the same time serve God, for the good Lord calls us to love one another, to uphold one another, to love and serve our fellow humans, to protect and love the children, and cause no harm. This Masonic Order, this secret men's society, as harmless as it may seem to it's members teeming at the bottom, demands an oath to allegiance over truth, brotherhood over justice, and it often serves a need to protect a man's financial assets. There is no way a man can choose God's values when he is bound by an oath to protect and defend his fellow lodge member without question. Even if a first-degree lodge member doesn't find himself "called upon" to protect a brother, he is still serving a master at the top of the pinnacle, without knowledge of what the top directors-the 32°d and 33rd Degree Masons--are doing. Yet these worker bees at the bottom fuel the deeds and goals of those brothers at the top, who possess the secret knowledge, and use that secret knowledge. I can tell you from personal experience of being there, that it is not of God but is evil in nature. It seeks control for power and ultimately it wreaks havoc and destruction upon the innocents that may be in its path.

A man cannot serve two masters. Those who are Masons are taught secret handshakes and hand signals that pass secretly between members without outsiders' knowledge that a subversive agenda is occurring, right there before the public's eyes. This secret communication between lodge brothers guarantees that the members are protected. But I guarantee you that unless a brother rises through the ranks, he won't find out that what he is supporting at the top of the organization he has sworn allegiance to, is the highest evil known to man. To possess this secret knowledge, men allow their morality and conscience to be stripped away; they have to, because the secret knowledge has to do with bringing in the New World Order through atrocity that comes with power and control, certainly not love and service. It is pure evil, shrouded in secrecy, and masked as a service organization. It's quite the opposite, as the many emerging victims of satanic rituals at the hands of high-ranking Masons and Shriners will attest to.

If you are currently a Mason, you may want to know that the secret knowledge at the top of your organization entails the ritualized abuse of young women who are raped on an altar as part of an initiation process. I know because I was there. It happened to me. I was taken to outdoor places in the 50's and 60's and subjected to satanic rituals performed by various men's fraternal societies, including the Masons and Shriners. I have also known and listened to other women who were healing from this mind control abuse, whose father's were Masons and through that affiliation came to be young members of Job's Daughters or the Eastern Star, and were healing from the mind control abuse they suffered in secret.

"For this reason I bow my knees before the Father, from whom every family in heaven and on earth is named, that according to the riches of his glory he may grant you to be strengthened with might through his Spirit in the inner man, and that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith; that you, being rooted and grounded in love, may have the power to comprehend with all the saints what is the

breadth and length and height and depth, and to know the love of Christ which surpasses knowledge, that you may be filled with all the fullness of God." -- Ephesians 3:14

Chapter Thirty-six: The Council's Plan

I began passing messages to and from the Council early on, and in those days my use at that level had to be earned. On an occasion where I was sent to deliver messages adroitly to a group of men aboard a ferry in Canada, my reliability and security was finally proven. After the debriefing from that trip, Henry learned where and how this group would covertly funnel funds into Canada. He clapped, shook my hand and said, "Congratulations, you've passed this level!"

I didn't 'officially' begin working for the Council until I was 'of age' in 1969, when I turned 18. Up until then, as I've stated, they were very cautious, watching and testing me from a distance as I functioned at the White House and in other private settings where one of their contacts could report back to them my progress. My involvement with them increased over the years as they witnessed my reliability. I never violated that trust, couldn't think to, and worked amongst them for many years.

Henry was the Council's mastermind and I was his other brain so he could keep the whole plan, and everyone involved, straight and organized.

One day, a group of powerful men met in a room in the Wrigley Mansion high atop the hill in Avalon on Catalina Island. I was there supposedly to serve the men beverages and light snacks on silver platters. Hours before the meeting I was kept in isolation in a side room. Two men in suits injected my arm with drugs and I was readied, like always, before use. I was dressed in a very expensive white eyelet, embroidered cotton dress that was provided for me to wear. One man that stands out was a tall man in a dark pinstriped suit. He had thick white hair and sometimes wore glasses. He was often at these Wrigley meetings. The meetings seemed very important and secretive.

Afterwards, I had sex with different men I was assigned to. I met with them on private yachts or rooms in the Wrigley Mansion. Some of them were possessive of my time and didn't realize who I was; they thought I was just a maid I guess. Some even tried to bribe me with money, jewelry or trips.

Jeff Foltz, Craig's best friend and USC oral surgeon, went with us, on occasion, to Catalina when these meetings were being held. Craig and I sailed over with Jeff and his wife or flew on seaplanes. Jeff cued me to different places at the Wrigley Mansion and other sites on Catalina Island. Consciously it seemed that we were just touring the Mansion with friends, but at certain areas Jeff would say certain words and press my hand in the middle and say a word or two and then we would walk on. I was a robot and he talked to me like I was retarded. I followed closely behind Jeff as he walked us through the Wrigley Estate. It seems like this was done to keep me from consciously remembering being there at the Estate later on. Jeff took me into rooms that were all beautifully decorated in pastels. He held my hand, despite the fact that Lisa, his wife, was there. No one really spoke and I felt like a very small child being taken around by an adult. Of course, at the time my conscious personality wasn't present, so I was not aware of these events. Later, on this same trip, I went to meetings to assist. At times, Henry was there. He wasn't in office at the time but to him that only meant he "could do more with his hands less encumbered," at least that's what he said.

During my use as a tool to coordinate liaisons between the Council and the President, when a President was flown places, like aboard large military aircraft, I was briefed and sent along so that I could apprise him of situations or 'key' reasons for his being in certain locations. For example, if the Council deemed it necessary to control the attitudes of a certain branch of the military in order to have their 'full cooperation' in a strategic military position or assignment, they would brief me in the complete attitude required. They would supply me with the correct words for whomever (President, Vice-President, Bob Hope, etc.) was delivering the speech to the troops. Then the troops would respond

favorably because their programming would be reinforced, creating the desired effect - that is - their full obedience and cooperation.

I accompanied Nixon, Reagan, Ford, Bush and others in these ways, bringing them information from the Council. Later, I was debriefed about the results of my time with the President. I also reported what the skillfully trained parts of me carefully recorded during the entire 'action,' including reporting back what the President said, how it was received by the audience and any messages the President wanted to send back to the Council.

As I explained before, the Council is made up of a secret and powerful group of men who are not public and meet in the shadows. Their true power and ability to rule over the masses comes from the fact that they are publicly unknown. They exist in their own environments, with little outside contact. But they have many highly tested, tried and true programmed or aligned individuals who go out and do their work, bringing back the information they need, making the contacts necessary to insure the success of their mighty plan for world domination. They have the power to insure the election of a President, to bring a celebrity to fame, to decide the fate of a nation, to bring about war, to incite riot, to bring down whole cities or countries, to kill out a certain ethnic race, to introduce a new chemical into the food of the masses for control, to loose upon a community a new virus, to decide which people are to live and which are to die. They gave direction to people like Ronald Reagan, George Bush, Henry Kissinger and the Rockefeller's, but they are not ignorant enough to allow a public identity to make them vulnerable to any kind of investigation or public knowledge of their lives and their purpose. They seek people out in their own time; people don't contact them. Sometimes the contact comes in the form of another person slipping a message in or telling someone to be at a certain place at a specified time, but their whereabouts is not ever known. And to report this to you, I had to dismantle lots of death programming that was installed in an attempt to keep me from remembering any of this.

Geneva

There were times when the Council met in Geneva and I was taken there so they could send information and messages, via my mind files, to people who weren't supposed to be publicly connected with them. All this cross communication was sent safely through me and no one would have suspected who I was or what type of secret information I contained. Henry usually put the information in my head and sent me in with instructions - usually amusing ones - to the men at the meetings in Geneva and other places. These men don't just want to control the world; they already do that to a certain extent.

The rules the Council had between its contacts was that they were never to have physical contact, or talk by telephone. They decided where a message would be posted, via cryptic codes that only they understood, and often placed them in a certain section of the newspaper. Like for instance, they would weave the place and time of a meeting into the business investment section if one had to be called on short notice. Otherwise meetings were set up ahead of time and there was no contact in between. In cases of emergency or crisis they could use someone like me to deliver secretly coded messages. The men they are networked into are some of the most powerful businessmen in the world - steel magnates, furriers, oil and gas company owners, telephone company owners, media owners, munitions makers, among others - and their business dealings are highly illegal. They break all the rules and laws set up to protect small businesses from monopolies. They create huge monopolies. They control the world through the economy. Most people who opposed them didn't have a chance. They simply ran them out of business, got them prosecuted legally, or manipulated them in any way that was successful to insure they maintained total control.

Secret Rendezvous in the Pacific

During the late 70's and early 80's the Council often met out in the middle of the ocean, aboard yachts, where they could all come together anonymously. They sailed or motored around until they connected with each member. They navigated to precise areas where a yacht would be waiting. Everyone had to be expert navigators and Craig's dental friend, Jeff, was just that. He constantly read a complex nautical map with special tools and combined that information with the placement of the stars in the sky in order to deliver me to a preplanned destination. He had to navigate to different places around the Channel Islands to areas we were supposed to go to. I was usually the first to be picked up by the yacht the Council was to meet on, because I was the least important and they didn't want to waste these important men's time. The captain pulled us in close, side-by-side, and the member aboard the other yacht would leave his yacht and come aboard. Each man was picked up in this way. There were usually three or four rendezvous after they picked me up. The men never arrived on the same yachts but used different vessels and crews so as not to ever be identified. Once every member was picked up they met in the largest room on board ship, and I was brought in to sit at the table during certain junctures when they wanted to send a message back to the President, foreign leaders, etc. This way later, I just delivered the message to whomever they directed me, usually during sex, and so everything remained anonymous.

Reagan was a big receiver of messages during his presidency. I was kept very busy delivering to him and he 'followed' orders to a 'T.' The group was "very pleased with his performance," were the words they used. Pete Wilson was the same way and so was George Bush. Anyway, the Council met on board yachts, had meetings, and then were navigated back to planned areas. They never met in the same place twice and everything was done with precision. That was one of their favorite words -"PRECISION"- and they always had the very best of everything. They even had "the chessboard" on board. They showed me one move each time and I was instructed to watch VERY CAREFULLY because there was no room for a mistake. Later I delivered the move on the chess board to Henry in New York. The chess move was ALWAYS taken back to Henry.

Disguises To Protect Kissinger

Henry literally built me so I could be a safe arm to reach out and touch the Council. I flew to New York regularly in the 70's and 80's. Just a quick trip to deliver the information to Henry. He had various and sundry disguises for me that he used to protect himself. A man in a suit always picked me up at the airport in a limo and gave me a bag. I knew to go to the restroom and change into everything in the bag, which included clothes, shoes, wig, teeth overlays, make up, purse, everything I needed was there. Craig had made me several sets of maxillary and mandibular overlays that I could just snap onto my teeth. I looked totally different and the switch was to be total and complete when I looked at my image in the mirror. "Become the image," Henry told me. So I changed my face, my voice, my walk; everything I was told to alter, in order to fit the image. I took the bag filled with my clothes back to the man in the limo and he put it in the front seat next to him and escorted me into the backseat. After I switched personalities and dress, he closed the glass window between the seats and never had conversation with me from that time on. He let me out at Henry's office, which was a large, older, very cultured building and someone escorted me right to Henry's office.

I sat down in an upholstered chair across from Henry's dark wooden desk. He snapped his fingers and ran his hand before my face to ready me for debriefing. I told him what the Council advised and the final message was the Chess move. He was very anxious to get that and always had me double-check the information so there wouldn't be any miscommunication. I was programmed that it wasn't possible for me to ever make a mistake.

After I delivered the information to Henry, he walked me to the door and gave me a small piece of folded paper to give the driver. I think it may have had my airline instructions on it or something. For some reason I never flew with a round trip ticket, and always had the return flight booked under a

different name than the one I used on the initial leg of the trip. The driver gave me the special bag that now had all my original clothes in it, and I would go back into the public restroom and change. Then he took me back to the airport in New York and I'd fly to LAX. Usually my Mom or Craig would pick me up. It was a long trip but didn't seem like it because I was programmed to sleep. They were always proud that the precision was so good that I could be back within 24 hours or less. Somehow they 'folded' that amount of time and I never missed it. My assignments often began or culminated on Friday or Saturday night but usually I was home by Saturday. These meetings with Henry usually took place at the end of the work week. He liked to have the information delivered to him at that time because he would have the weekend to mull it over, undisturbed and uninterrupted by any other business. He said, "That's the secret to my success-FOCUS," then he would smile and take a cigar out of a case on the table. He also had a separate apartment away from home where he did his best thinking and strategizing. I met with him there, also, but always had to do the disguise routine before I met him anywhere.

When I returned home I was programmed to have cheese Danish to 're-mind' me to forget. Even when I was having therapy sessions with Stuart Perlman, I was programmed to have cheese Danish on the mornings I had therapy sessions with Stuart by phone. I was also cleverly programmed to misdial Stuart's phone number by one number. Every time I dialed his number I would get frustrated and wonder why I kept dialing the wrong number, and every time it was the same wrong number I dialed. My controllers had me dialing a number that contained a code to remind me to maintain security. During this period, I often met with Henry or others, so the Danish was the 'icing on the cake,' and served to make sure I didn't ever remember. I was still meeting with Henry when I was in therapy with both Stuart and Margie. My controllers told me they were trying to shore me up so I would make it to the end of my job in the year 2000.

Jaws

My job was to be over in the year 2000, and programmed parts of me were told that I was to be shot in the head and dropped overboard out in the middle of the Pacific where no one would ever miss me, including the sharks. In order to impress me, they made me watch shark-feeding frenzies. One time after Craig and I returned from a long weekend sail and scuba diving trip, another dentist friend of ours came over and said, "You weren't scuba diving in the Channel Islands this weekend, were you? They were having shark contests and were chumming the whole area!"

Shark themes were used heavily, and I was continually reminded by the Shark diver's wristwatch that I was given to wear.

My job as a go-between from the Council to others was my most important task. Bob was 'my owner' and Henry masterminded their plan, but the Council always called the ultimate shots. They said I was theirs until, "the end of time," and that time for me was supposed to be the year 2000. Then they said I could sleep with the fishes. Deep inside I couldn't wait until it was over.

Although the Council didn't ever meet on the same yachts, when they did meet, there often was an aquarium on board with sharks in it that was used to remind me what would happen if I stepped out of line. Craig and I had previously been directed to the big theatre with the stars on the ceiling on Catalina Island to watch James Bond movies. I constantly gazed upward at those stars per programmed instructions to, "look at the stars to be safe and forget."

I also was made to watch while a man in a suit threw an attendant into the shark aquarium when it was feeding time. He said to the man, "You wouldn't mind standing in for the fish this morning so this young lady can see what her fate is if she steps out of line?" The attendant looked at him quizzically and then the suited man threw him into the tank and quickly poured a pan of fish and blood all over the poor man in the water. The sharks went right for him. He screamed and flailed his arms but it didn't last long.

It was horrific and terrifying. The suited man looked me in the eye, and in a very quiet, soothing tone of voice said, "There, see what happens if you step out of line?"

"Yes, I see," I agreed, wholeheartedly.

This type of life and death terror tactic is enough to dissociate a person for a very long time, especially if they are under mind control. This shark theme ran throughout my victimization. After my children were born, we were at a theme park and all donned wet suits to swim with the fish; some were even small sharks. Danny and Kevin were even given small rubber sharks in order to remember the experience. The message was always the same, "Step out of line, you will be fed to the sharks." By now they probably only need to use virtual reality traumas.

Kauai Central Location

I was relocated on Kauai because it was a remote area with easier access to me, unencumbered by my family. It was a two-year phase. Then they didn't have to coordinate things so carefully between us all. I was free to go on their assignments and I was used heavily. They flew me to New York, England, South of France, Italy (Rome), the Netherlands, even Catalina and the Channel Islands, except now I was helicoptered to the yachts and tethered in on a chair. Often it was a two-seater helicopter, the 'glass bubble' type. The helicopter pilot seemed connected to the yacht as they radioed to coordinate the rendezvous with precision. When I lived on Kauai I was taken directly from the meetings of the Council to Henry, going through the whole disguise bit, and then returned to the island. I was usually gone two days (48 hours) or less, and when I returned I slept a lot because I had been without sleep or food and the time difference caused jet lag. Although, they tried everything to nullify the jet lag so I could, as they called it, "re-emerge into my life without stress or strain."

While I was on Kauai I even was reunited with Kelly (who still lived in California with her father) in England and France to "sexulate" some members in the royal family and a violent leader in France. Kelly has personalities that speak French, also. It was necessary for both of us to know French in order to communicate with this man. Kelly was trained to step into my shoes in the year 2000 and take over and I was supposed to give her a diamond ring to make this an initiation.

Further Council Adventures

I was programmed with personalities to emulate Jackie Kennedy's charm and dignity. Aristotle Onassis was a powerful arm of the Council, with the ability to move business holdings around. The Council poured money into these businesses and used people like Onassis as a front, since they had to remain anonymous. That was how they used a lot of business tycoons. The men who operated independently were the most ideal since they could maneuver without the oversight of a large corporation or business partners. Some of the richest entrepreneurs in the world were used this way and I was sent into them to have sex and deliver Council messages. I met with many of these men in the open seas on yachts for anonymity and security.

I also was rendezvoused with Reagan and Bush out in the middle of the Pacific during Reagan's Presidency. They were on separate yachts, and met with me during a three-day sailing trip with the Foltz's. Jeff Foltz secretly brought the drugs necessary for my use on board the sailing vessel we rented for sailing trips. Ile also brought electronic equipment, including a black box with wires that he hooked us up to; all three of us, his wife, my husband and myself, for programming. This happened before and after I was used. He probably got his 'tune up' before the sail.

The Council worked Reagan and Bush a lot, giving them instructions. Reagan went along blindly while Bush seemed to know more but not as much as Henry. I always slept with Reagan on the yacht he was on and then delivered the message to him. I was delivered to Reagan and Bush as Jeff navigated to a precise destination and when we came alongside their vessel I crossed 'over the rainbow' as I came on board. Sometimes I spent the entire night sleeping with Reagan after I had delivered the message

because, he said he would, "prefer company while out in the middle of the lonely Pacific." So I stayed, and the next morning Jeff came back and picked me up and transferred me back.

As soon as I got on board, Jeff immediately stun gunned me in the back. My husband and Jeff's wife stayed down in the kitchen until Jeff finished with me, which meant drugs and the use of the black box. In later years, instead of an injection, the drug was a circular, oral wafer, like a small water chestnut. Then Jeff would announce to our spouses, "Time for lunch!" and they would start preparing lunch. After we ate, I would go take a very long nap or lay out on the deck and sleep while we sailed to our next destination. We often moored for the night in three separate areas; all strategically mapped and navigated so I would be in place for the rendezvous. I always felt so out of it after these events and consciously felt embarrassed that I was too tired or couldn't think to communicate with our friends. Now I know why.

Certain members of the American Dental Association have been heavily involved in this project and many of the people from USC Dental School that Craig knew. Uncle Charlie made Craig's way into USC, because Craig needed to be part of the project so he and Jeff could be "prepared," to ready me for use at the highest levels with the Council. The Council stepped up their plans beginning in 1980 and on into the 90's. Then it was supposed to be "clear sailing," as their plans snowballed and they began reaping what had been earlier sown. Until in the year 2000, when they would be able to cinch the purse strings shut, thus, being totally in charge of everything worldwide. But things didn't go exactly according to plan, especially regarding my situation.

The Frontiers of the Mind

They began to target more heavily, and more often, people that had been put in place over the years. They were bombarding them, certain individuals more heavily than others, depending on their usefulness and power potential. People like Onassis, Iacocca and the Rockefellers who were part of 'level two,' and others. Anyone who made big money was targeted. The Council was apprised of the wealthy, and people like Henry went to great lengths to strategize how those with wealth could be brought into their game for the highest effect or benefit to the cause. The Council saw this as a huge game to attain total and absolute power by the dawning of the next century-the Age of Aquarius. As an Aquarian I was told I was heralding the advancement of the planet-the global transformation to a new way of life through advanced technologies.

They plan to "market" the mind/brain technologies they themselves have been using for decades, to the general public, and are doing so already. This will allow them to make mega money in this new market as well as allow them to begin to educate the masses in regard to the new technologies of the mind, "The Frontiers of the Mind." But, while the public is spending vast sums of money on this new technology, they will also be conditioned through advanced forms of electronics, harmonics, and subliminal conditioning to accept this shift to a 'new existence.' The Council plans are to have a robotical working class that won't cause any problems, but will simply work to supply the needs of the Elite-those who by their breeding and intellect are deemed worthy of being allowed to be "awake" so they can rule, live and create without any interference from the common man. They say that the working class already makes non-thinking robots of their own everyday lives, and it might as well be more planned and regulated so that others who want to create, invent, and otherwise use their minds, can do so without hindrance from the common man.

They view the "common man" with great disdain as a lower form of the human species. And they figure that by the time the year 2000 rolls around, when the purse cinches shut, and they are in full control, that people will already be sufficiently conditioned and won't even be able to think to figure out or even be aware that a change has taken place. They see it as the perfect cover up for the continuation of the experiments in mind control they have participated in and feel very assured that the public will never

be able to discover what happened because the more intelligent pubic has been sufficiently "tamed" and conditioned to go along with the rest of the herd.

Society is being weeded out right now, as minority species are being eliminated very specifically by biological germ warfare and other tactics meant to insure the elimination of those less genetically favorable. They figure with the reduction of the population there will be sufficient natural resources for the working class robots to support the genetically astute intellectuals who will be in power. Then, this is supposed to lead into a new age of peace. They even unleashed New Age principles to target and control the groups of people they previously programmed while they continued developing the mind control technology, in order to maintain control until the year 2000 when, supposedly, no one would be able to think to question or cause problems.

Our food is being tampered with, by the insertion of food additives and substances like aspartame which can alter brain chemistry and affect our minds. Music and movies are another powerful tool used to condition the masses. The Council views these measures as the kind, humane way to handle this matter, instead of a direct violent takeover, which would just cause even more chaos and human suffering. They envisioned that, this way, there would be no dissent and after the takeover there will be no need for wars, ever again. These men don't believe in wars, but needed to use them to achieve their goals. As they see it, the rest of the species will be living in harmony, able to create and enjoy while the lower, now robotical, forms of the human species do all the grunt work they are accustomed to: common labor, food production, and life maintenance for the higher forms of human species, the intellectuals, those who matter and are deemed eligible to be awake.

The Master Plan is Accomplished by Robots

There has been a master plan for years and many, including myself, were involuntarily enlisted to work for it, as Dr. Henry Kissinger, 'Mr. Global Internationalist,' masterminded much of their plan. My controllers viewed anyone with a small intellect as 'non-existing' anyway, so they will either be weeded out or retained on the mind-controlled work force that's already been created. Masses of daycare centers were targeted to insure the success of the takeover, where large numbers of children from normal families were programmed because they will be the ones who will be of the age to resist or fight the Council plan. But now, many won't be able to because their minds have been manipulated and conditioned during childhood, so they will go along with the global program. It is all a carefully laid out plan that has spanned decades and generations, with one generation handing down to the next their inheritance. The children of the elite families, such as the Rockefeller's and Kennedy's will inherit a guaranteed future on a planet that can survive due to the fact that the population and, in turn, pollution, food supplies, etc. will be totally controlled. These intellectual, genetically 'worthy' individuals plan to have their own guaranteed 'utopian dreamworld' after they kill off the inferior human species that they believe are overcrowding a planet that cannot support us all. The Council feels that they are insuring the future of the species of mankind by what they are doing. And, those from intergenerational ritually abused families and others will be placed under total mind control, to become the planetary 'workforce' so the elite doesn't have to waste their precious time on menial labor. The Council feels everyone 'wins' this way because it puts the non-thinking and genetically inferior populations "out of their misery," by taking their minds away, and insures a glorious future for the brightest intellects on earth. To them intellect is everything and without it, they think people shouldn't be allowed to waste precious time on earth, taking up space for those who can and will use their brains to create. They view this as a massive genetic clean up.

Then, when their agenda has been met, the world will be free from ignorance and chaos. According to their reasoning, there will be no abortion issue because the genetically intelligent won't bear children by accident. There will be no wars because they won't have a need to use wars to manipulate people for power or money. There will be no famines because there will be plenty of food

grown naturally by the robot class and the world will no longer be overpopulated. Then, they can bring in their new form of world government and there won't be fighting or resistance because the Elite will see eye-to-eye and will all benefit, and are intellectually capable of understanding how they can all work together for the benefit of themselves. Crime will cease since the commoners, 'the robots' won't be able to think to commit acts of violence or any other forms of crime. The Elite think of themselves as intellectually above petty crime and will have no necessity of it since they will be getting their needs met, royally, by all of their mind-controlled 'worker-bees.' No more disease will be brought in by the 'unwashed' lower classes. So there will be less disease all-around because the Elite will take immaculate care of their bodies and won't have to deal with the stress and strain created by the problems of today. These will have been eliminated by eliminating the source of these problems-the genetically deficient. The Council has guaranteed survival and freedom for those at the top. What they have done to the human species in this Twentieth Century is tragic and they justify it by the rationale that they are protecting the future of the human species by insuring that only the best specimens survive.

The Council took a serious stand to clean up the environment as it served their needs for a healthy, pollution-free, life-sustaining environment for their future progeny. Since they have access to, as well as direct, major new discoveries in advanced technologies, they have disdain for the uneducated, ignorant, common people who trash their own environment. They said that even animals knew better than to defecate in their own sleeping area. But this would be remedied in the future when the genetically deficient were weeded out and extinguished.

They also were very condescending to those individuals who didn't eat properly or exercise. They take immaculate care of their bodies as far as health goes. They are fit and trim and they use natural medicines. The American Medical Association is fashioned to prescribe drugs and perform various treatments that although they may be unsuspecting, tend to weed out the weaker species. The Council views the AMA's 'modern medicine' as barbaric. Their plans are to have mind-enhanced health associates, like some of the USC medical and dental graduates, who will provide the new health care for the Elite, after the takeover. Precision surgery with laser technology will make the so-called "modern methods" of surgery obsolete. Miracle medicines and herbs (God's pharmacy) will keep the body healthy. An understanding of the way the electro-molecular energy field around the body operates will allow the healthy body to be kept in perfect alignment creating perpetual perfect health or it can be brought back into alignment easily with the use of high-tech field variation equipment. This will be the modern medicine of the future and upcoming doctors will be trained in these methods in order to further the evolution of the Elite. The Elite plan to enjoy total and complete health due to their technology in electromagnetic fields. They also have antibodies against the diseases they let loose and make sure they are protected. Of course all of these findings came about by research and experiments on unsuspecting groups of people.

The health care program they were attempting to implement in the United States was one they were hoping would though so that the lower class robots would have a health care system to serve their needs in the future, while allowing the government, the Council and those involved in the global takeover to remain in control. As you can see, it is a system designed for control. It is all about further conditioning the populace so that there won't be any drastic changes that would cause stress to the nation or upset the apple cart.

They believe they have learned what form of government would work best by installing different varieties of governments in different countries with leaders they chose, studied, and watched to see which form would be likely to meet their needs in the year 2000 and beyond. They saw different national governments as 'projects.' For awhile, they thought communism would be the best, until the mind control technology showed them they could covertly rule the masses without communism. With this technology, they believe they can rule the masses easily and effortlessly, and governing can be limited because they feel all of the Elite will have much the same wants, needs, and goals. They already have the

central banking system in place and have a master plan for the laws, rules, and regulations that will govern those that are left.

Sons of the Elite are conditioned to be leaders in the New World. Robotic mind control won't be necessary for their compliance. They have been conditioned to accept this new agenda without being given all the information and will be allowed to be "free thinkers," unless they don't follow directions. The Elite are used to having servants so this overall concept is not especially different for them because they have been brought up to believe that they are born privileged, are of a superior genetic strain and have a responsibility to lead. I was used, under mind control, to further many of these attitudes with the sons of many world figures. It was just a matter of conditioning them with the beliefs, a little at a time, which would support the changeover. The egos of these young men have been very carefully created and conditioned. Prince Charles' boys are possibly doomed to the same form of conditioning.

The Council sees this as a planetary enhancement, with the globe entering a time of health, new excitement, and abundance for those deemed capable of making a difference in the future of the human species.

"And I saw an new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away; and the sea was no more. And I saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice from heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and the very God shall be with them and be their God; And he shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow nor wailing, neither shall there be anymore pain; for the former things have passed away. And he who sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. Then he said to me, Write; for these are the trustworthy and true words of God. And he said to me, I am the alpha and the omega, the beginning and the end. I will freely give of the fountain of living water to him who is thirsty. He who overcomes shall inherit these things; and I will be his God, and be shall be my son." -- Revelation 21:1-7

Brice Taylor - Thanks for the Memories, pp 285-292

Chapter Thirty-seven: What the World Needs Now

What Now? We Are Called To Love

And so for many, many years, Henry Kissinger and Bob Hope strategically placed me and members of my family in locations to further their interests. During those times, my children and I were used in various ways and prostituted to more worldly-affluent, famous, publicly adored leaders and entertainers than I care to remember. Personally, I would like to stay in denial and believe this never could have happened. But for the interests of many, I cannot afford to believe anything less than what I have discovered is the truth. I have chosen to share a fragment of these experiences with you so that you could know the level of technology that has been developed and to show you the danger of the ways those who carry a belief of power and control, and who at this time are out of alignment with their true spiritual nature, have misappropriated their duties to our nation and to the world.

Spiritually I have grown to realize that while the worldly Elite's positions are often determined by heredity, and in the business world nobility comes from ability, ambition, or success; in the eyes of God, nobility comes from those who serve others. Through all of my experiences at the hands of leaders from all over the world, I have learned that to be a true leader is to know your stewardship to those you serve, not to gobble and hoard the benefits for self while fooling and robbing those who count on you, who elect and trust you to serve the good of the whole. I also know now that truly great leaders are humble and their joy comes from the glorious privilege of serving others.

And I will tell you, as would my precious daughter Kelly if she could, that the current leadership under President Clinton is no different than the ones before. Indeed Kelly could start up the next chapter on William Clinton and could tell you the size of his genitals, the perverted ways he chooses to utilize his sexuality and how he, like many of the Presidents before him, is locked into the bondage of a power hungry system that will continue with each new President after him, unless this system is dismantled and a new system of governing, one based on the needs of the people, a true republic, born of God, for the good of the whole, is reinstated. But it will take each of us, all those who the Elitists feel have no intellect and no motivation, to stand up and speak out for what we believe in---perhaps even sharing our 'simple minds and spiritual natures' with those who for years have felt the right and the need to lord over us. For, once society has seen the problem, the solution is in sight.

I believe each individual is imbued with a gift from God to contribute to society as a whole and as each individual finds their true purpose and joins in, contributing that gift, we will then have a full-bodied, rich orchestration of individuals, evolving to the highest possible levels. That is when we as a society reach a more perfect state!

I also learned that freedom is not free and we must now stand in the battle, not through violence and war, but through knowledge, truth, and love, claiming our true spiritual power and willing to take a stand so our voices can be heard!

Healing

Healing spiritually, through a life such as mine, has been my ultimate challenge, and God has continued to keep my focus on this healing aspect, despite worldly opinion, which would lead me to seek in other directions. During the years of pain and suffering that led me out of mind control bondage, Margie Paul shared with me the following passage, by Emmet Fox, which I read constantly. It uplifted and strengthened me and reminded me of the truth. I would like to share it here with you.

LOVE

There is no difficulty that enough love will not conquer;
No disease that enough love will not heal;
No door that enough love will not open;
No gulf that enough love will not bridge;
No wall that enough love will not throw down;
No sin that enough love will not redeem...

It makes no difference how deeply seated may be the trouble;
How hopeless the outlook;
How muddled the tangle;
How great the mistake;
A sufficient realization of love will dissolve it all...
If only you could love enough
you would be the happiest
and most powerful being in the world...

In 1998, when all of my former life lay in ruin around me, I heard the Holy Spirit ask me who was the one person I hated most? The answer came quickly and easily. Silently I responded, "George Bush," since he was a man who repeatedly hurt my baby girl from very early on. The same day the Holy Spirit questioned me, I received a hospital advertisement in the mail cheerfully announcing that George Bush would be visiting a local hospital just 25 minutes from my home. I was devastated that people still looked at him as a person of honor, and associated him with charity and healing? Then the challenge from Jesus came when he called me to love George Bush. I couldn't do that initially, it took many prayerful hours for me to ask God to please change within me the attitudes that needed changing in order for me to love and forgive George Bush. Obviously, that didn't happen overnight, but it did take place, at first just for a fleeting moment and then for longer periods of time. That doesn't mean that I stop working toward exposing the system that has caused this misuse of human life, nor does it mean that I think what my perpetrators did was right or excusable. It simply means that no matter what they or anyone else does to me, they do not have the power to make me hate, or the power to take away my right to love, for love is my continuing goal.

Forgiveness

I was confused and tormented as I awakened to the realization that my father and others had abused me in such horrific ways and that they had actually taken control of my life for nearly 40 years. The awareness that churches had been places where I was often victimized, by individuals who I associated with being the most loving, added to my torment and bewilderment. I searched for answers, through reading about many religions, trying to find the truth, and one night I had a dream in which I heard the word "Beatitudes." Upon waking, the word stuck in my mind and later, while attending a religion class at Pepperdine University, I went to my professor and asked him what the word meant. He told me and later on that day, I went across the street to the Malibu Presbyterian Church to speak to the assistant minister. Little did I know that through my seeking, the Great Master Healer himself would appear to me, but that is exactly what happened. The minister ushered me into his office and after I confessed that I had been severely abused as a child, had Multiple Personality Disorder, had been forced to participate in satanic rituals where infants, children, and animals were killed - and as I went on and on - he looked at me in horror, and said, "Get down on your knees, and ask God to forgive you of your transgressions. You are a sinner."

The moment my knees hit the floor, Jesus appeared to me and said, "Get up off your knees, and leave. You my child are innocent, you have done nothing wrong." Taking the authority of the Lord, over this human who stood ministering in His name, I did as commanded and left. I couldn't understand yet what Jesus was trying to help me understand. It took time for Him to reassure me that those acts,

committed in a programmed state, acting from other person's commands and not from my own free will, were not my sin. In the days that followed, Jesus showed me that He wanted me to stand in the name of Mercy for others who had been similarly tortured and abused. Over time, He called me to minister and share His words of mercy and forgiveness with other victims who presented themselves to me in women's shelters, at my office, at mental health conferences, and through letters of response to victims who wrote, pouring out their hurts to me after they read my book I know that this message from Jesus, one of complete forgiveness, touched the hearts and minds of the people I spoke with, as deeply as it did me because I saw the tears of relief and understanding well up in their eyes. God wants His people free.

I had many experiences where His Angels demonstrated that they were guiding me. I heard the Holy Spirit whisper, "get up from your reading, and go down to the Bazaar." I hadn't known that there was a Christmas bazaar at Pepperdine, but I followed the voice of the Holy Spirit and was led to a small purple book entitled, "Angels Are Watching Over Me. " And if I doubted that it was true, in the months and years that followed, the voice of the Holy Spirit led me to books, places, and people to help me heal and gain freedom. Books even fell off of shelves in libraries, many of them reminding me that the Angels of the Lord were ever present and that I was not to worry. Other books I was led to helped me organize my healing in such ways that, when healing took place, it was core healing and not superficial or drugged.

I often tell the story of the experience I had at traffic school. During the early stages of my recovery, despite the smile that betrayed my true inner feelings, I was so full of repressed, subconscious rage that it often found its release in driving too fast and I continually got traffic tickets for speeding; one day I got two! Since I was already on assigned risk and my insurance rates were extremely high, my husband suggested I go to traffic school, so I did. The traffic schoolteacher was younger than I, but that day she had an important message for me. I had been wrestling with just how I was going to forgive these people who had done this to my children and myself. As I explained my dilemma she said, "All you have to do is heal yourself so you have something left for giving." I know now that what she said was true and I understand the wisdom because, now in a healed state, I do have much to give. And, I thank God for that.

In Carbondale, Illinois, in 1995, nearly one year after my final integration and deprogramming, I was working in the garden. It was a warm day and I luxuriated in the midst of the peace and solitude that I found among my tomato and zucchini plants. Very clearly, I once again heard the voice of the Holy Spirit, this time instructing me to go visit my father.

"God, you want me to do what?" I couldn't believe I was being asked to go and visit this man who had tortured and programmed me for so many years, besides it wasn't safe for me in California, I had actually been raped there as 1 made my initial attempt to get Starshine into print in 1993. But I heard the words very clearly, "Go visit your father, fly under your real name, stay 24 hours and then return. An intelligence officer will approach you. Do not be afraid. Tell him what happened to you and to your children."

I thought maybe I hadn't heard correctly. So, I took this into prayer and in a very short while I knew I was to go to California. Soon God showed me a vision where I saw lights on in the White House symbolizing individuals who would wake up and help. Then He shared with me that, like the men's secret society (freemasonry) that has allowed secret knowledge to be passed between men, that He also had a secret society that was more powerful-The Holy Spirit. Then He showed me that as men's secret societies fund and support each other, so shall God's people fund and support their own. He showed me that through Him, and in His time, the Holy Spirit would connect people and allow them to be of like mind, so the truth could come to light. Although I didn't actually understand how this was going to come about, I was encouraged.

I booked my ticket, and the next day I went to California, to the nursing home where my father was being cared for. When I walked in, I was moved seeing my father sitting in a chair, withered and small, a whisper of the physical stature he had been before. When he saw me, he immediately began crying, and through his tears he cried, "I love you. I knew you'd come."

I got down on my knees before my father and said, "Dad, I forgive you."

Looking me directly in the eyes, he replied in a childlike manner, "I forgive you too." At that moment I knew without a shadow of a doubt that my father, this man who had tortured me for years, had no idea, no memory, no awareness of what he had done. Still crying he said, "Jesus brought me here." This statement caught me totally off guard, as here was a man who together with my brothers had ridiculed and berated me for my belief in Christ for years. I had so much I wanted to ask my father, but was overwhelmed with emotion. Trying to gather myself, I looked around his room. There on his bookcase, was a golden spider web with a crystal spider in the middle. Woven into this art piece was a Ronald Reagan wristwatch. My thoughts raced to information an Intelligence officer "in the know" once explained to me, that victims will surround themselves with their programming and often will display objects that speak to that which they verbally can't, as a form of subconscious communication. This spider web spoke to me deeply through subconscious communication, and although my father could not tell me what he knew, he had carefully preserved this piece to speak what he could not. Again deeply touched, I asked him if I could have it. He said, "Sure, take anything you want." My father and I cried together. There was so much I wanted to tell him and have him tell me but he was no longer able. But God knew that I needed to see my father this one last time, in order to complete my healing and forgiveness process. And that day, I totally and completely forgave my father. I understood why he had done what he had done. As I stood to leave, I kissed him one last time and told him I loved him, and looking back I am so grateful that God led me to that culmination and completion with my father. Less than three months after that meeting my father passed away.

As I drove my rental car to the airport to fly back to Illinois I realized that the intelligence officer experience had not yet occurred. But I was not to be disappointed because, shortly after I took my window seat on the aircraft, a distinguished looking black man took the isle seat. After takeoff he flashed his badge and identified himself as White House intelligence for the last 29 years. Taking his business card out of an organizer, he laid it on the seat between us. Unconsciously, still bound to the protocol of my controllers, as much us I wanted to, I couldn't pick up his card. Nervously, I thought to myself, 'Oh God, this is it'

This suited man began by telling me, "There are some things you need to know. One is that once in the company always in the company. Don't believe anyone that tells you they've retired from the company (CIA)." Next he said, "When you speak publicly don't name the names."

I told him I wouldn't. At that moment the words spoken to me by the Holy Spirit in the garden, came back to me, "Tell him what happened." So, I told this man about the abuse of my children and myself that often led to our victimization in the White House. He told me that he thought women like me "just liked to be with Presidents." And finally, as we walked off the plane, the words he spoke surprised me as I realized maybe this man had a spiritual awakening, was serving a higher calling, and was one of the 'lights on the White House' that God had shown me. He said that he was committed to informing ministers of churches to do their jobs in helping victims. I was encouraged.

Over the years, what I witnessed in my father was something that I have noticed in many of the victims of the mind control projects. He was extremely inventive and futuristic and had many personalities that were extremely loving. My father designed and built solar water heaters that he installed on the roof of our Woodland Hills home in the 1950's, and shared thoughts and ideas that

continually astounded me. Due to the shattering of his own psyche through the ritual abuse he endured as a child, coupled with the mind control programming forced upon this already vulnerable man, he was never in control of his own mind. From birth, his free will was taken from him through the abuse he endured at the hands of his parents who themselves had been through the same victimization passed through intergenerational, subconscious mental illness. Then, in a final attempt to harness the complete control of his daughter, the doctors at UCLA took the last vestiges of my father's free will when they performed the brain surgery that gave them total control.

Breaking the Denial That Holds Us Captive

Honestly, I can understand the denial many of you may be facing in regard to all that I have shared with you, as I faced the same denial over and over. I did not want to believe that any of the reality that kept intruding into my mind was real. Often I wanted to believe I was insane, and at times even wished I could choose to live out the rest of my days rocking back and forth in a drugged stupor in some sanatorium. Then not only in response to programming, but also feeling trapped in a pain and confusion I often felt I could not bear alone another day, initially, I had moments when I contemplated suicide. But due to the ramifications that act would have had on my children, that was never a choice I could make. I had to keep asking God to strengthen me so I could face the painful reality and heal in order to make a difference in the lives of my children.

Forget the Past, Live in the Present?

It has been said that those who forget the past are doomed to repeat it and I believe this is part of the situation we face today because until now we haven't been told enough valid historical information. Before my recovery, like most Americans, I was more interested in my future than in my past but was soon forced to deal with it due to constant flashbacks. But what if a person's past holds a potent key to his or her future? And what if that past holds intergenerational and worldly information that when realized and righted will resonate throughout future generations, causing freedom and a better quality of life? Knowing my past has set me free and I am grateful for the spiritual guidance that told me that I had to go backward before I could go forward. Although dire circumstances forced me to revisit my past, I now know that the inner work I completed in researching and healing the dark, hidden areas of my own past will reverberate throughout the spiritual genes of my progeny's future and I am glad for that.

Don't Worry, Be Happy!

At first when these bits and pieces of memory began surfacing in my mind, I was terrified and continually dismissed them, as others told me things like, "You're just too tired. You have a big imagination. You have everything a woman could want. Why don't you just quit therapy, get a job and be productive. Stop living in the past. Don't worry, be happy!" Or, new age belief systems that created comments like, "These are only your past lives. What you put your attention and focus on grows. I don't choose to think about negative things. I like to focus on the light instead of the darkness. I create my own reality. This is not part of my reality. If it's this painful to deal with and causing you this much stress, it must not be the right thing to do." The list was endless. But over time when these flashbacks and thoughts intruded into my present life with subjects and events that didn't interest me (politics, glamour and glitz, golf, baseball games, football games, and sex orgies), I had to wonder and question what it all meant. That started the quest that has led to my knowing and my understanding. I am hoping you, too, will be able to overcome your own denial and to question these issues put before you, because the safety of our children and, yes, even our human freedoms depend on it.

Over time I have had a plethora of responses to the telling of my life history. People have come to their own conclusions, based on their own belief systems and understanding at the time. Over the years it has continually pained me to speak publicly, sharing bits and pieces of what happened to me in an

attempt to stop this abuse and gain help for my children and others, only to finish my speech, look out in the audience and see blank faces. Perhaps many were numbed by the magnitude of the information I delivered, or thought I had lost my mind instead of finding it. But I can tell you that my healing came from the one or two loving persons who threw their arms around me after I spoke, and with tears in their eyes that clearly communicated to me that they understood the magnitude of the what had happened said, "I am so sorry this happened to you. What can I do?"

Celebrity

Other people have said, "At least you met famous people and had incredible experiences!" In response, I say that the years of my life that I lived as a mind controlled robot to Bob Hope, Henry Kissinger and others were not mine, they were stolen from me. I was not consciously present. Those years were tragically altered and woven with horrific and painful abuse that separated me from my core self and from the family I love. I have painfully witnessed individuals and society as a whole, hold in a protective reverence the "media-portrayed persona" of many famous persons. I watched as people in all walks of life - housewives, ministers, attorneys, newscasters, and professors, etc. - held firmly to their view of famous people they never personally knew, in order to maintain some sort of fantasy relationship or belief system they held about these famous persons. People have said to me, "Not Bob Hope, he wouldn't do these things," and I am left to wonder why they need to hold onto their media-created reality in lieu of opening their minds and using their spiritual discernment to examine the possibility that what myself and others are reporting might be true. My controllers, the authors of this plan of enslavement, are counting on you to believe the media image they have thrust forward. They are counting on you to do nothing.

Another person said to her husband, "She must have watched too many X-Files!"

I shared that, with the exception of occasionally catching a show at someone else's house while they had the television on, I haven't watched television since 1989. I have never seen X-Files. But I know that through media avenues, the authors of the New World Order Plan have been able to very cleverly hide this reality out in the open.

I'll Do It My Way

I can tell you that if I could only choose my life over again, I would leave all the 'celebrities' out of it and would live a simple, basic life, enriched with love and deep connection to God and my family. To me that is where life's richness lies, not in wealth or celebrity status. Wealth and fame have never been important to me, and thank God, because if I had been attached to the affluent lifestyle I had been living in California, I never could have chosen to break away and go for my freedom, regardless of the cost. For me, there is no price tag on freedom and morality: it is priceless.

In the earliest stages of memory breakthrough, when I had flashes of insight of what my husband and I were involved in, I had moments before my programming kicked in, when I was lucid before I switched personalities again, in order to try to figure out what to do. There were many times before I left California and the life I lived with my husband, when I begged him to heal and stand with me. He could never hear me. Hand in hand on a walk one day, I proposed, "Let's sell the house and spend the money on our healing; yours, mine and the kids." He couldn't hear of it.

In weeks that followed, he returned home from a conference and said, "They asked us who we looked up to and I told them, you."

"God help us," was my reply and in total and compete devastation, I realized for the first time in my life, that I was bankrupt in my marriage, that my husband did not serve the same God that many

parts of me did. I felt alone, frightened and unprotected by the lack of spirituality that I knew could have guided our lives together.

During times when I devoted endless hours to exercise and nutrition, people have said, "You look too good to have been through that much trauma," and during periods when my expressed grief has left me looking pale and haggard, or over or under weight, people have said, "You don't look good enough to have been used with celebrities."

I was forced to invest in hundreds of thousands of dollars worth of therapy ($300,000+) and physical therapy (thousands of dollars) in order to heal. All I can say is that it is a miracle that my body is still intact at all, and I thank God for that. There are telltale signs of the abuse recognizable by those "in the know," scarred skin from electroshock that left prod marks, and my eyes often look as if something of an electronic nature has happened to me. But the major ailments I had while in the midst of my mind control are healed; the migraines are gone, the continual sinus infections, sore throats, breathing problems and hoarseness that often necessitated the use of an inhaler are gone; no more colitis, stomachaches and nausea, constant fatigue and body pain. All these symptoms are gone. As my mind healed and I was able to hold my reality mentally, and as I released the traumas of the past, my body healed. My healing from this abuse is to God's glory and I know that without seeking and heeding the Holy Spirit's leading, I never would have made it out. "It is not I, but the Father within me, He does the works. "--John 14:10.

We Are Called To Love and Forgiveness

Prayerfully and with immense love and compassion, I ask, "Father forgive them for they know not what they do."--Luke 23:24.

My family and many of our fellow humankind are still locked in the bondage of the mind control projects and experiments due to the fact that their birth into intergenerational dissociative families, and their genetic DNA encoding made them capable of advanced abilities for which they have been targeted for use by those who seek to control. Please help these survivors to freedom and release by donating whatever you can, even if it is a simple kind word to show you care.

One awareness that weaves through my entire life under mind control is that the love that shone through from people's spirits, even while under mind control, was never wasted, nor was it ever lost; indeed, it seemed to be catalogued within me on some higher plane that never goes away. So often, I witnessed the love of those under mind control who lived among and near me. These creative people, all full of so much love that, even when I lay the often hurtful mind control abuse experiences side by side with who I knew in spirit they really were, the love I felt from them often blasted beyond their programming, allowing their soul essence to shine through. Immense love and inherent behavior of loving souls, all interwoven with intense agonizing soul pain and tragedy as the mind control technology and those who created the reality we were programmed to live, manipulated and controlled our inherent natures, our spiritual life force and the love that lives within us. It is for our controllers and our perpetrators that I write these words. For many survivors, in our souls, even in physical and mental programmed bondage, already know the truth. But the world needs to know. The soul is free and LOVE is lasting. Jesus was right, and he called us to love above all else. He didn't call us to worship power, monetary gain, or the control of others. He called us to love. He taught us that there was no greater gift than to lay our life down for a friend, and, He wants His people free. Please help me to help these most beautiful souls, who have been locked in anguish and bondage, who, from birth have been locked away

from their inherent loving nature, to find the light of day and be freed from the agenda of those who seek to benefit by robbing their talents and abilities.

And in the final curtain call is the Council actually the old, worn, frazzled Wizard of Oz hiding behind the curtain, frantic that he has been exposed and defrocked of his power? Those in search of Oz - Dorothy finding her home and family, the Cowardly Lion finding courage, and the Tin Man finding his brain - these were the ones who were strong in the end, not the one pulling the strings!

In truth I believe we are all one, and together we can find the answer, if we choose ...Let that answer be guided by love.

"I was not disobedient unto the heavenly vision." --Acts 26:19. "To this end was I born, and for this cause 1 came to you, that I should witness to the Truth." --John 18:37. "You shall know the Truth and the Truth will set you free." --John 8:32. "For the Son of man has not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them." --Luke 9:56. "For 1 have come that they shall have life, and that they might have it more abundantly." --John 10:10. "I am not alone, because the Father is with Me."--John 16:32. "1 and the Father are one." --John 10:30.

"For you were called to freedom, brethren; only do not use your freedom as an opportunity
for the flesh, but through love be servants of one another. For the whole of the law if fu flied in one word, "You shall love your neighbor as yourself." -- Galatians. 5:13-14.

Chapter Thirty-eight: A Mother and Grandmother's Sorrow

A GRANDMOTHER'S SORROW: SUE'S MOM

A Family Torn Apart

My husband was a welder and when we were first married he worked at the shipyards where he got hurt. One night, while working in the dark, he ran into a steel plate, hit his head, and was knocked unconscious. He sustained serious neck injuries and six months later his neck became very painful and shook uncontrollably. The diagnosis was torticollis of the neck. He was in so much pain that he would try anything the doctors suggested; such as shock treatments, being injected with typhoid fever, endless experimental drugs, brain surgery and many other medical interventions.

When he was 45 years old he was told by a doctor that he only had five years to live. He wanted to be sure his young family would be taken care of so he bought all the life insurance he could get.

In the meantime, he quit the shipyards and opened his own welding shop. My youngest son loved welding and became very good at it. My oldest son went to college and graduated as a geologist. Eventually, though, they both worked at the welding shop. They fought constantly. It was driving my husband nuts. He got up one morning and was acting like a crazy man. He said he was going to the shop and fire one of them, he didn't know which. I was scared and devastated. I begged and pleaded with him but I could not reason with him. He came home later and told me he had fired the older son. I was surprised that he hadn't fired the youngest son. He had always nagged him and verbally abused him.

A few weeks later my husband asked me for a tape recorder. He said he wanted to make a tape for his oldest son. I helped him get it ready and left the room. A short time later when I looked in on him, he was holding the tape recorder and crying. Later, I found out he had said that he had to fire the oldest boy because the younger son held something over him. The older son asked if it was business and my husband said, "No, personal."

Our son asked, "What was it Pop, did you have an affair?"

"Much worse," my husband answered.

Years later, he went to his deathbed carrying the secret. The thought that it might be incest, child pornography or any of these other horrors never crossed my mind.

My two sons are estranged. I've tried many times since 1974 to talk to my sons, to get them to at least talk to one another, but to no avail. The younger boy was willing but the older one said, "No way." It hurt me so bad for so long I thought I would go crazy. One night I said to God in my prayers, "God, I can't handle this, you take over."

In 1967, my husband had brain surgery to stop the pain and shaking in his neck. They went down through the brain to sever the nerves that were causing the pain. It helped but he was in the hospital for a long time.

A few years later he had a heart attack and finally had open-heart surgery. There were complications. During the surgery he went without oxygen for four minutes. They said because he had brain surgery, his brain became swollen and he had edema of the brain. He was coma-like for 12 days. When he came out of it he was like a vegetable, didn't know any of us. He was helpless, couldn't feed himself, go to the bathroom or walk. After months of physical therapy he was able to walk and could pick up food with his hand. His memory was partially blocked. This deficit impaired his whole left side. He never regained all of his memory. I took him home and took care of him.

My daughter stopped by one day, which was not unusual, as she lived down the street. She asked if she could talk to me. She said she had something to tell me so we went outside and sat on the swing in

the back yard. She told me her father had sexually abused her. I was shocked, stunned, sad, and couldn't believe what I was hearing. She also said, "You and grandma also abused me."

I started crying and thought, "Where was I?" I had no memory of any of this happening. I finally said to her, "It's not that I don't believe you, it's just that I can't remember." But I was so naive when I got married right out of High School. I thought we were a normal, happy family and this accusation shocked me to the roots. I thought and thought but could not remember a thing. I do remember often saying when the kids were little that life seemed to good to be true.

Later she told me that I had abused all three of her children. I couldn't believe that I had done that, as I love those children like my own. I was heartsick and kept praying it was not true. She gave me a booklet from Los Angeles Women's Task Force on Ritual Abuse, and wouldn't let me see her children anymore. I could hardly function. I was heartsick, like in a trance.

As my daughter told me more about the abuse, I tried so hard to remember, but couldn't. In going over her allegations and remembering her childhood, I thought there were times the abuse could have happened. But she appeared to be a normal, happy little girl. She was such a good little girl, obedient, loving and just a little angel.

Sometime in the late 80's my daughter told me her father had sexually molested her from the time she was a baby. After Sue continued to tell me more, I began to believe her and that this really happened. I could hardly stand to look at my husband or take care of him any longer but he was a sick old, helpless man so I continued to care for him, every second hating him. But no matter what happened, he never complained.

Shortly after this she came to confront her father. She told him he had sexually abused her. He had a very hard, angry look as he looked at me and said, "Your daughter is crazy." She left and we didn't see her for a very long time. I would call but she wouldn't answer the phone or talk to me.

My husband continued to be a very sick man and had to be taken care of. From then on, I only spoke to him when I had to. To think he had abused our daughter made me hate him. I had loved him for over 50 years. Now I couldn't even let him touch me at night. If he happened to put his leg or arm across me, I'd kick him.

After my daughter's two accidents that both happened on April 12th, two years apart, my daughter disappeared. I didn't know where she was. I was so afraid for her. She had not spoken to me for many months. It was like losing my arm. We were, I thought, so close and now she wanted nothing to do with me. I felt like it was a dream or a terrible nightmare that I'd wake up from in the morning and it wouldn't be true. I was so worried about her. Without talking and praying to God, I never would have gotten through that separation from her.

I felt like I was going crazy, so I went to a therapist. The therapist did not seem to be helping me. After Sue fled from California, she called me and told me she was running for her life. One day I told my therapist that I had sent Sue money to help her write the book she explained she was needing to write to stay alive. The therapist surprised me when she said emphatically, "Don't give her any more money."

I told this therapist, "God told me to help my daughter." That's when I stopped going to her. Sue was my daughter and my heart said to help her. In spite of the abuse allegations, her father kept saying to me, "Help her, Honey. Help her."

I continued caring for my husband; he was helpless and couldn't do anything for himself. I gritted my teeth and helped him, all the while hating him. He never mentioned the abuse again.

I got a call one day from my daughter. I was elated to hear from her. She was in Hawaii and she wanted me to know that she was going to be hit by this hurricane and didn't know what would happen to her. Later on the news, they showed the island of Kauai damage from Hurricane Inniki. It was in ruins. I tried to call her but all lines of communication were down. Finally after a few days, she called to say she was alright, but lost everything she had.

When she came back to the states she called and told me more about her abuse. I was so confused but even though I could not remember anything, I began to believe it was all true. She moved from place to place to stay alive and finally called and said she was safe, but wouldn't tell me where she was. I felt so relieved that she was safe and getting help.

First it's My Daughter, Then My Granddaughter

Then her teenage daughter started having problems. Without any apparent reason, she tried to commit suicide three separate times. She is such a sweet, loving girl. I could hardly let myself think of her being sexually abused. And if I had abused her, I shouldn't be allowed to live. We talked but my granddaughter couldn't seem to tell me why she had made those attempts. She finally decided to go live with her mother. She had only three months of school here in California until she graduated. We thought she could finish her school there. She was okay for awhile with her mother and then she started being dysfunctional and finally became catatonic. My daughter was frantic. She couldn't handle her, as Sue is much smaller in stature and not as physically strong as my granddaughter is. She called and told me she was taking her to the hospital. She didn't know what else to do.

My granddaughter was in the hospital a very short time when somehow she was able to call her father. She told him she was being held against her will and would he please come get her. He did fly there and get her. But, instead of taking her to their home where she thought she would be going, he explained to her that she needed help and he was taking her to a halfway house, a place that other teenagers who needed help lived. She shared a room with a teenage girl who also had problems. They had a lot of rules. She began functioning, taking care of herself, and doing her chores. She often just went to bed and slept. I started picking her up on Sundays. We would eat, shop, or take a ride. She was always so happy to see me. I called her almost every day; she would call me, too, not for anything in particular, just to talk. I asked her one time how she felt when she thought she was going home with her dad and found out she was really going to a halfway house. She said she felt abandoned.

Her mother suggested that EEG Biofeedback might help her, so every Thursday, I'd pick her up and take her. She loved frozen yogurt so we'd always stop for that. We'd talk and she always said she hated where she was living. She was able to finish her high school course. They taught her how to take the bus, so one day she enrolled at Pierce Junior College to take a psychology class. She had only 10 days to finish the class when she called her Mom and said she couldn't stand it there at the home anymore. Together my daughter and I got her a ticket, that was a Saturday and she was to leave on Monday. Saturday night her father picked her up and tried to talk her out of going, but she stood firm and said she was going. She was so scared to go alone. She kept saying, "What if I can't find the gate I'm suppose to go to?"

I told her to go to the counter and tell them, "I need help." I called the day of her flight to be sure the shuttle had picked her up. I prayed all day that God would watch over her and keep her safe. She arrived safely and my daughter was there to meet her and take her home. She was okay for awhile then started staring off again as if she were in a trance and didn't seem aware of anything going on around her. I feel so helpless, I want to help her but I don't know how.

Her brothers and I went for a visit with her and her mother. She would be fine one minute and then she would start staring and not talking, then she'd be okay again.

When I think about my granddaughter and all she is going through I can hardly bear it. Such a waste of a young, loving, life and what a horrible thing that she has to suffer and go through all the pain. These are things that should not happen to anyone.

My daughter is now healed and is doing everything she can to help and heal her daughter. I pray constantly that my granddaughter can be healed and lead a normal life. I am so proud of both of them.

My husband was a man who had been severely physically, sexually, and verbally abused as a child. I loved him and trusted him. He was so loving and sweet sometimes and other times he would be so

nasty and mean. He was like two different people. I know now he suffered from Multiple Personality Disorder.

He dearly loved his family. He was very proud of his two sons and dearly loved his little girl. I was not aware at the time that he was sexually abusing our daughter.

By 1990 I was physically unable to take care of him. He was in a wheelchair and had to be lifted many times during the day. I found a nice board and care for him and, although I hadn't seen my oldest son in years, I called and asked if he would come and morally support me while I told my husband about the move. He said, "Okay, what have I got to lose." He came and explained to his dad how I couldn't physically take care of him and had found a nice place for him.

My husband said, "Okay, if that's what you want to do with me."

At that time I was seeing all of my kids, but always separately. I couldn't speak about any of them to the one I was seeing. It was hell. When I would call my oldest son's wife, she was very cool. Finally she called and started questioning me about Sue's sexual abuse. I told her, "I don't remember anything, but I believe her."

She said, "How could you believe your daughter and still take care of your husband?"

I was shocked. I told her he was a sick, old, helpless man, what did she want me to do with him? She called later and asked how I could see my younger son after all the things he had done and I told her, "I guess I have unconditional love for my children."

Her reply was, "Not me, my kids have to earn my love and they have."

After that my oldest son and daughter-in-law wanted nothing more to do with me. I was not to call, send birthday cards or presents of any kind. I once asked my oldest son if he had forgiven his father for firing him. He said, "In my head I have, but in my heart I haven't."

My husband died alone in a rest home in April of 1996.

I notified my children. The only thing the oldest boy said was, "I'm sorry to hear that." My husband was cremated and there was no service.

My family is ruined. Not one of my children speaks to the other. I have ten grandchildren and three great-grandchildren. I dream sometimes of us all sitting around the table on holidays and just enjoying each other and being a loving family, then I wake up to reality.

This generational sexual abuse and mind control has ruined this family. It breaks my heart as it seems I can't help to stop this, only by supporting my daughter. I pray for all my grandchildren's safety. Thank God, the truth about this abuse is finally coming out so other little children will be safe from it.

In the last three years, I have thought so much about my husband's abuse and have finally forgiven him. I hope he is at peace and looking down on us all, happy to see his daughter working so hard to end this abuse for so many children.

Bettie Eckhart
Sue's Mom

A MOTHER'S SORROW: SUE FORD

Turning the Tide

The pain and loss of family locked into the bondage of mind control is more excruciating than losing them to physical death. I miss my family more than they could ever imagine, in truth, more than I could have ever imagined. I will never be able to replace my husband, or the life I thought we were living. I just wished he had chosen to heal with me. Why didn't he? Or is it really, why couldn't he? Whatever it is or was, he didn't or couldn't, and so I have gone ahead and forged a path for freedom and sweet release for my children and myself, and have lighted a path for others if they choose. Perhaps my husband was never consciously able to know that we were programmed together and never really had a chance to comprehend who we really were independently or as a couple, but I feel sure that I knew his spirit. In truth, he was the most gentle, loving and giving man I have ever known. I know why my daughter is

having so much trouble coming out of a catatonic state, because it is so painful to deal with the reality that the very ones that you love and that love you are the ones that are programmed to hurt you so much. That is the nature of the evil system that has kept so many under mind control bondage. But, the truth is that all of us were programmed by a source outside of ourselves, at birth; a time when none of us were able to change any of the horrendous circumstances we faced.

To have had this seemingly beautiful family and then to wake up to reality only to find that it wasn't beautiful, that instead our lives were interlaced with terror, abusive horrors, and atrocity; nothing was as it seemed. To wake and find that I wasn't safe, and then to retrieve the agonizing memories that led to discovering that my children were not safe, was harrowing. And then to deal with the fact that my husband, the father of my children, was programmed to drug, rape and deliver us, was as painful, if not more painful than my father doing the same to me. I find myself curled into a fetal position on the floor more nights than I care to think about, crying out in desperation and in a pain that never seems to go away, a pain that really never lessens. The pain is a great burden and yet I find that to carry it is to feel what is real. And, with that, I feel the great love and strength that has carried me this far.

Like my daughter, I want my family back. I want the love that we all thought was there. I want everyone healed. I want especially for my children to be freed and released. If I had to give my life for that, I would indeed feel that it was spent wisely. I pray daily that God will carry me to make whatever contribution I can, and that He will light the path for my children's freedom. Indeed, for the freedom of all those who suffer.

I have never felt so uncertain about the future. I have given up the hope that any of the wrong's will be righted overnight. I never could have left, in my attempt to save my life and heal in order to get help for my family, had I known that it would have taken this many years and that my family would still not be free. Still under mind control, and not yet recovered enough to have the full memories that made the picture of our high level slavery more complete, I naively thought that I could get my children out of danger and into safety and healing much quicker. I never thought that it would take this many years to ignite public intervention and outcry - and then to have my sweet, loving, gentle daughter Kelly left in a completely dysfunctional state, and my two sons in total disbelief and unable to hear anything I have to say to point their way to safety and freedom, due to their own programming.

I will never again tell survivors that I live in peace and contentment, because I don't. I have been given the Grace of God that allows me to live in a somewhat dissociated state of mind with the painful reality of all that has happened in the background as I presently live a somewhat successful life. But it doesn't stop the pain. There are times when I want to pretend none of this is real, I want to escape into dissociation, right along with Kelly. I miss her. I miss Craig, I miss Kevin and Danny. God, I miss them all! Please God, use me in my brokenness to help others not have to hurt this much.

I must be very dangerous to the architects of this evil system and my high level controllers. For I am a woman who loves God and her family more than life itself, and will not bow down to fear. In many ways I am fearless for I have nothing left to loose. Everything precious to me has been taken away. Every bond that was sacred, has been tainted, and broken. Birth, life, marriage, children; family relationships of father, mother, brother, husband, son, daughter, all tainted and destroyed. All that was before lies in ruins. Total and complete ruins. And what remains in the future is in your hands. For I have laid down the burden. I have spent the past 14 years communicating what happened to me to as many persons possible. I am tired and spent and the future depends on humanity's decisions and actions. I pray for the release of the many. I pray for the release to be timely. I pray for the release to be gentle and full of grace, love, and ease, instead of through pain and suffering. I love God and I am grateful for His leading. I pray for strength in the face of what God has planned for my life, that I might fulfill my purpose.

Writing this manuscript has been so excruciatingly painful, that I found myself wandering the house looking for some undone chore to take me away from facing the full ramification of the experiences that bring me to this writing; somewhere, anywhere to escape to. The pain is so deep, so present, and so pervasive. My heart aches for the love lost, for the suffering endured, for the souls locked in bondage. Many nights I cry until the tears won't come any longer. Just when I feel like I couldn't possibly cry another moment, another wave of grief strikes and I hold my body, in an attempt to survive the aftermath of emotional pain. If it were not for Jesus, I could not have endured. For He has put this appointment before me. When I was a child, and the torture that often took me near death was too much to bear, Jesus sent His angels to minister to me, to gently and lovingly guide me back to my body, so I could be here now to tell you what has happened, so it can stop. And when as an adult I reached a point in my spiritual healing that I could begin to put the terror associated with Him, created from satanic ritual abuse, aside, the Master Himself began appearing before me, leading me, guiding me, and interceding when I was totally alone and in need. Believe me, Jesus is alive today. The Great Healer can heal anything, everything, we only need to ask. And now we must join together to stop this sinister agenda so the children won't have to suffer any longer and so humanity can be assured of life free of mind control. Jesus has asked me to ask you to help. Please help me to help the others. They are so worthy and have suffered so much. More than anyone I know they deserve a gigantic measure of Christ love. Recently, as I watched the movie, Schindler's List, I could relate to his frantic desperation and hard work to rescue and save the lives of as many Jewish people as he could, finally selling his last possessions to do so. This man realized the precious value of a soul. Jesus calls us to give to those who are in need. Most victims of mind control and ritual abuse who are trying to break free, are forced to live in stark poverty and degradation; physically, emotionally and spiritually. They need safety from further abuse and shelter from the cold; they need blankets, food and clothing. They need nurturing touch and love, EEG Neurofeedback, therapy with informed clinicians, body therapies, natural healthcare, and they need skilled and compassionate people to listen to their pain in order to heal the wounds and scars from the past. Please help in whatever ways you can.

Susan Ford

"The things that are impossible with man are possible with God." -- Luke 18:27
"For with God nothing is ever impossible, and no word from God shall be without power or impossible offulfillment." -- Luke 1:37

...AND THE TRUTH SHALL SET YOU FREE!

Brice Taylor - Thanks for the Memories

EPILOGUE

A New Vision for the Future

What initially began as journaling in order to sort out my mind, became more of a project once I began to break free and see that there was some insane organized plan behind the mysteries of my life. The singularity of my one voice has been lonely over the years, but there were moments when the good Lord caused my path to cross with at first one, and then two, and then whole groups full of beautiful but wounded persons who had been though similar experiences. Together all of our voices, telling the same truths, have gained strength over the years. And today I am not alone in my recovery, for I have many brothers and sisters all over the globe that have recovered to inform you of much the same grim picture that I have shared with you here. I have spent the last 14 years cataloging this information, and am now able to report to you what has been going on behind the scenes so that the truth might set us all free. God only knows the full ramifications of what has occurred, but this information that I have presented to you in the clearest manner I know how, will give you a glimpse of the plans and agenda of those who at the

present time are not only pulling the purse strings, but are manipulating the very life force of the nation and ultimately of the world.

We find ourselves at a time when, in order to survive and insure that our freedoms are reinstated, we must take action. It no longer serves us as a nation and as a world to turn a deaf ear to what has occurred. These actions taken by those whose consciousness is dwarfed by the belief in power and control have, in actuality, called us to a new time of choice. We stand at the crossroads of a new era, indeed a new millenium. And now it is truly our choice as to where to go from here. Will we continue to be uninvolved, feeling that the chaos, created intentionally to confuse and disrupt, has caused our world to seem so unbalanced and turbulent that we feel we don't know how to choose, that we don't know which way to turn? Or will we see clearly though the chaos and confusion, and rise above their smokescreen attempts to hide their New World Order plan to enslave the human race, so we can create another option? We do have many choices. As a matter of fact, what these controllers have led us to is a clear view of what needs attending to anyway, in our technologically advancing world. Armed with the information of what is askew, we can now right the wrongs and clearly envision what could be. The lives of our children and future generations depend upon the choices we make at this pivotal juncture.

We can create a new world. We can create a new reality to include freedoms not yet known to this planet. We can create new institutions, new ways of ordering society with God's leading and God's guiding. Many clamor for lives filled with more time: time to rest, to enjoy nature, to spend with family and friends in simple modes of comradery, time to reflect and time to come closer to God and our higher nature. These can all be part of a new reality we create together, as God's people. But we have to realize that to make the choice to stand silent is to let those whose belief in power and control of the masses, take control in order to enslave us all. They led us to this point in time where we are nearly out of time.

God has called me to sound the wake up call as I join with others around the nation and the world who are sounding the same alarm. We must wake up and we must act. This is a call to action in order to avert the culmination of their New World Order plan. Never was there more critical time than now for standing for what we believe in, unintimidated by disconnected, unhealed beings who are bullying us around on this beautiful planet of ours, taking control where we have neglected to maintain our vigilance. The technology that has been created has been used in an evil way, causing harm and separation among and between individuals, families, groups, and from God, indeed from the higher nature of our inner being. We can continue to allow our university medical research, military, and space programs to be filled with an alternate secret agenda, or we can call into account those working within secret systems that have allowed these mind control atrocities to operate behind protected walls, as those who participate at the highest levels go unpoliced and undetected.

The Holy Spirit has shown me that once you have completed this book and the veil that once clouded your eyes has been lifted, many will know how they are called to bring about the swift change necessary for averting the One World Government and the intended totalitarian New World Order agenda planned by our controllers. He has shown me that many will know their exact positions and will know just what part they are to play in reuniting this once strong, free nation. Indeed the vision I see is a beautiful orchestration of souls. May God bless those individuals with the courage, wisdom, insight, and love needed to set us back on course. You who are called know who you are and will remember why you've come. Let us stand as a united front to speak out and take action to protect one of the most precious gifts we each have: our minds. We must stand up to those who seek control and say, "NO MORE. THIS ABUSE MUST STOP!" It is time to cast our denial aside and take action as we are spiritually directed. For we have been called to protect the children.

Please join me in united solidarity. Let's create a safer, beautiful world where children can be born into peace, safety, and love. If we start at the beginning where life initiates and insure that doorway is clear, we will go a long way toward insuring the survival of the human race. Many are now more aware of the damage done to a baby or young child when abuse occurs. Indeed this unconscious state of the abuse

of children continues to snowball as one generation takes the wounding, only to inflict it unconsciously, without knowledge or understanding, on the next generation. Let us heal these areas within us that were caused by abuse in our own childhood's, so that we do not continue to inflict those wounds on the most precious resource we have, our innocent children. Let us protect the doorway for others born to this planet, that they might discover that it is safe to be born here on earth once again. Together we can let love prevail. The past has served to clearly show us where we have gone astray. Let's begin again, by choosing a different outcome and then work together in order to create a new world.

We need the strongest, most courageous among us to stand and call into account those individuals and groups who have participated in this atrocity; their version of this 'Utopian Hell,' in order to stop this abuse of children. We need individuals to initiate laws and measures that will not only insure freedom of the mind, but other very fundamental freedoms taken for granted, that we now stand to loose. The course of our actions now will determine the future. What will we choose, fear or love?

And now as my job of exposing the deeds and plans of those who worship power and control comes to a close, I am once again redirected to my job of helping the victims heal. God has commissioned me to stand at the doorway, to accept donations in whatever way they flow to me as fiduciary for others who have been abused in similar ways and to set about busily setting up safe healing centers for victims to seek aid if they choose. The quantity and magnitude of these centers is up to you, for my job is to be there, and your job, if so called, is to help fund it. Many have been wounded and are needing our help. The Holy Spirit that guides me has shown me that the outpouring of generosity, in whatever form, can alleviate much of the suffering and help to avert even much of the earth calamities and chaos, for the outpouring of love for fellow humanity heals the mass consciousness on the planet. As we unite around the world in prayer and action we create a very powerful vibration of love; a frequency that unlocks and heals the hearts of those who have yet to learn the awesome power of Christ love.

We stand at the crossroads to a very important time of choice, action, and giving. Instead of a One-World Government we can create a One-World Healing. Please help the young and the wounded among us who depend on our strength and courage to show them a better day. Please give what you can to insure that this abuse stops and insure the victims a means of healing. They are counting on us. Don't miss the call.

Shared with love in the celebration of Christ,

Susan Ford
Brice Taylor

To make a donation, please contact Brice Taylor at the address below:

Brice Taylor Trust
P.O. Box 655
Landrum, SC 29356

...AND THE LION SHALL LAY DOWN WITH THE LAMB.

302

Order Form
For Brice Taylor Trust Materials

Please send me:

_____ copy(ies) Thanks for the Memories @ $24.95 + $5 shipping (U.S.)	$_____
_____ copy(ies) STARSHINE @ $15.95 + $3 (U.S.) shipping (per book)	$_____
_____ copy(ies) Mind Control Video (an interview with FBI & CIA agents that validates mind control) @ $19.95 shipping included	$_____
_____ copy(ies) Common Program Themes Video @ 19.95 incls. shipping	$_____
_____ copy(ies) REVIVIFICATION. A Gentle, Alternative Memory Retrieval Process For Trauma Survivors @ $5.00 + $1.50 shipping (U.S.)	$_____
Tax (South Carolina Residents add 5% sales tax)	$_____
I can send more to help get this information out to people.	$_____
TOTAL ENCLOSED	$_____

Ship to:
Name_____
____

Address_____
___

City_____State_____Zip_____
_

Please send check or money order to:

BRICE TAYLOR TRUST
P.O. Box 655
Landrum, SC 29356

For special quotes on orders of 10 or more copies shipped to one address, write Brice Taylor at the above address.

SURVIVOR RESOURCES

EEG SPECTRUM

For Nationwide Affiliate Listings call: (800) 789-3456
or visit the website at www.eegspectrum.com

Some of you, after reading this book, may be left with many unanswered questions about your own relationship to the material in this book. You may wonder how you fit into this picture ...are you, too, under mind control? Let me share with you the following inspiration from a survivor of mind control who discovered that her own experiences paralleled, even at times interwove, with those presented in this book:

A Survivor's Experience

"I, too, have a story. Some of the details are all too similar to Sue's. Much I don't yet remember. What I do know is that ten years ago, I began having memories of abuse ...first by my uncle, then my father, then floods of memories of Satanic and ritual abuse. This is where I stalled, if you will, for five years. I believed during that time that I was free from my captors, as long as I kept my distance. And I went about rebuilding a life for myself, carefully controlling my environment so that I wouldn't be triggered by "my past" any more than I could handle. I thought I was being a really good mom, and wife, and friend. And yet, I continued to be tormented by nightmares, memories, feelings of agitation, anger, rage, and depression. Deep inside of me, I knew that I wasn't free. And yet, I still believed that I was re-experiencing the past. Now what I know is that I was still involved, unconsciously triggered even to return to satanic rituals while the abuse continued and, under mind control, I was still carrying out the wishes of those attempting to bring in the "New World Order." Now I have seen what I could not see before - a "reality" that is being carried out by some misguided souls on earth at this time.

Through the help of EEG Neurofeedback, I have been able to reclaim my mind, for my own use. I am aware of what a gift it is to have the use of some of the same technology that was previously used to control me, to now set me free. I am finding that EEG Neurofeedback is helping me to integrate quickly, as I learn to stay alert and attentive and not dissociate. I am also learning to keep myself safe by discovering the ways that others have been able to "access" me through programming.

I would say that the major focus of these past five years has been strengthening my connection to God and learning to discern the different voices, or promptings, from within. How do I decide what to trust? Who or what is worthy of my trust? The key for me has been prayer. When I haven't known what to believe in, I have prayed to know. I have learned to trust that there is a God ...a Power greater than any that humans can wield on this planet. And so, I go directly to that Source. Those prayers continue to bring me the healing and the safety that I seek. Please join me and the many others who are committed to living our true purpose, and loving ourselves and each other into freedom."

-- A Ritual Abuse and Mind Control Survivor

Brice Taylor - Thanks for the Memories

SUGGESTED READING

The following list of references is provided for information purposes only and does not necessarily reflect the opinion of this author nor represent an endorsement.

Abraham, Larry. *Call It Conspiracy*. Double A Publications, Gig Harbor, WA. To order: P.O. Box 609, Wauna, WA 98395. 1985.

Allen, Gary. *None Dare Call It Conspiracy*. Concord Press, Rossmoor, CA. 1971.

Allen, Gary. *The Rockefeller File*. '76 Express, Seal Beach CA, Reprinted 1991.

Angebert, Jean-Michael. *The Occult and the Third Reich*. MacMillan, N.Y. 1974.

Andrews, Lewis M. and Karlins, Marvin. *Requiem for Democracy? An Inquiry Into the Limits of Behavioral Control*. N.Y. 1971.

Bamford, James. *The Puzzle Palace: A Report on America's Most Secret Agency*. Penguin Books, N.Y. 1983.

Bass, Ellen and Laura Davis. *The Courage to Heal*. Harper Collins, N.Y. 1992.

Blaylock, Russell L., MD. *Excitotoxins: The Taste that Kills*. Health Press, Santa Fe, NM, 1997.

Becker, Robert O., M.D., and Gary Selden. *The Body Electric: Electromagnetism and the Foundation of Life*. William Morrow & CO., N.Y. 1985.

Begich, Nick and Jeana Manning. *Angels Don't Play This HAARP: Advances in Tesla Technology*. Earthpulse Press, P.O. Box 201393, Anchorage, AK 99520. 1995.

Bellant, Russ. *Old Nazis, the New Right and the Reagan Administration*. Political Research Associates. 1988.

Bertalanffy, Ludwig von. *Robots, Men and Minds*. G. Braziller, N.Y. 1967.

Blackstock, Nelson. Cointelpro: *The FBI's Secret War on Political Freedom*. Anchor Foundation (Distributed by Pathfinder Press). 1988.

Blood, Linda. *The New Satanists*. Warner Books, N.Y. 1994.

Bowart, Walter H. Lecture: "The Secret History of Mind Control," delivered at the Ritual Trauma, Child Abuse and Mind Control Conference on October 2, 1997 in Atlanta, GA. <www.mk.net/~mcf/ckln20.htm>

Bowart, Walter H. *Operation Mind Control: Our Secret Government's War Against Its Own People*. Dell Publishing Co., N.Y. 1978.

Bowart, Walter H. *Operation Mind Control--Book I and II*. (Limited Researcher's Edition). Freedom of Thought Foundation, P.O. Box 35072, Tucson, AZ 85740-5072. 1994. <www.azstarnet.com/~freetht>

Bowen, Russell S. *The Immaculate Deception*: The Bush Crime Family Exposed. American West Publishers, P.O. Box 2208, Carson City, NV 89702. 1991.

Breggin, Peter R. *Toxic Psychiatry*. St. Martin's Press, N.Y. 1991.

Brown, Tony. *Empower the People: A 7-Step Plan to Overthrow the Conspiracy That is Stealing Your Money and Freedom*. William Morrow & Co., N.Y. 1998.

Bzezinski, Zbigniew. *Between Two Ages: America's Role in the Technetronic Era*. Penguin Books, N.Y. 1970.

Brooke, Tal. *When the World Will Be As One: The Coming New World Order in the New Age*. Harvest House Publishers, Eugene, OR. 1989.

Caldwell, Taylor. *Captains and The Kings*. Doubleday & Co., Garden City, NY. 1972.

Cannon, Martin. "Mind Control and the American Government." Order article from: Prevailing Winds Research, P.O. Box 23511, Santa Barbara, CA 93121.

Chomsky, Noam. *The Culture of Terrorism*. South End, MA. 1988.

Chomsky, Noam. *Secrets, Lies and Democracy*. Odonian Press, AZ. 1994.

Coleman, John. *Conspirators' Hierarchy: The Story of the Committee of 300*. America West Publishers, P.O. Box 3300, Bozeman, MT 59772. 1992.

Constantine, Alex. *Psychic Dictatorship in the U.S.A*. Feral House, P.O. Box 3466, Portland, OR 97208. 1995.

Constantine, Alex. *Virtual Government: CIA Mind Control Operations in America*. Feral House, 2532 Lincoln Blvd., Suite 359, Venice, CA 90291. 1997.

Daraul, Arkon. *A History of Secret Societies*. Citadel Press, N.Y. 1989.

DeCamp, John W. *The Franklin Cover-Up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska*. AWT, Inc., P.O. Box 85461, Lincoln, NE 68501. 1996 (2°d ed.).

Delgado, Jose M.R., M.D. *Physical Control of the Mind: Toward a Psychocivilized Society*. Harper & Row, N.Y. 1969.

Dennett, Daniel C., *Consciousness Explained*. Little, Brown & Co, MA. 1991.

Directory of Corporate Affiliations. US. Public Companies. Reed Elsevier Inc., National Register Publishing (division), New Providence, NJ.

Estabrooks, G.H. *Hypnotism*. E.P. Dutton & Co., N.Y. 1943.

The Foundation Directory. Edited by Marianna O. Lewis. Distributed by Columbia University Press. The Foundation Center, N.Y.

Frank, Leonard Roy. *The History of Shock Treatment*. Order from: Leonard Roy Frank, 2300 Webster Street, San Francisco, CA 94115. 1978.

Franzius, Enno. *History of the Order of the Assassins*. Funk & Wagnalls, N.Y. 1969

Fried, Alfred. *The Rise and Fall of the Jewish Gangster in America*. Columbia University Press, N.Y. 1993.

Geiser, Robert L. *Behavior Mod and the Managed Society*. Beacon Press, MA. 1976.

Gil, Eliana. *United We Stand: A Book for People With Multiple Personalities*. Launch Press, CA. 1990.

Griffin, Des. *Descent Into Slavery*. Emissary Publications, 9205 SE Clackamas Road, Clackamas, OR 97015. 1991.

Grinder, John and Richard Bandler. *TRANCE formations: Neuro-Linguistic Programming and the Structure of Hypnosis*. Real People Press, Moab, UT. 1981.

Halperin, Morton H. *The Lawless State: The Crimes of the US. Intelligence Agencies*. Penguin Books, N.Y. 1979.

Hammond, D. Corydon, Ph.D. Lecture: "The Greenbaum Speech" (Hypnosis in MPD: Ritual Abuse), delivered at the *Fourth Annual Eastern Regional Conference on Abuse and Multiple Personality* on June 25, 1992 in Alexandria, VA. <www.europa.com/-johnlf/sat/Rmbaum.txt>

Harman Willis, Ph.D. *Global Mind Change: The Promise of the Last Years of the Twentieth Century*. Knowledge Systems, Inc., Indianapolis, IN. 1988.

Herman, Judith Lewis, M.D. *Trauma and Recovery: The Aftermath of Violence--From Domestic Abuse to Political Terror*. Basic Books, a division of HarperCollins, N.Y. 1992.

Hooper, Judith and Dick Teresi. *The Three-Pound Universe*. G. P. Putnam's Sons, N.Y. 1986.

Horowitz, Leonard G., D.M.D. *Emerging Viruses: AIDS and Ebola-Nature, Accident or Intentional?* Tetrahedron Publishing Group, Rockport, MA. 1997.<www.tetrahedron.org>

Horowitz, Leonard G., D.M.D. *Healing Codes for the Biological Apocalypse*. Tetrahedron Publishing Group, Rockport, MA. 1999.

Howard, Michael. *The Occult Conspiracy: Secret Societies--Their Influence and Power In World History*. Destiny Books, Rochester, VT. 1989.

Human Drug Testing by the CIA, 1977. Hearings Before the Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee on Human Resources, United States Senate, Ninety-Fifth Congress, First Session on S. 1893 to Amend the Public Health Service Act to Establish the President's Commission for the Protection of Human Subjects of Biomedical and Behavioral Research, and for Other Purposes, September 20 and 21, 1977. U.S. Government Printing Office. 1977.

Hunt, Linda. *Secret Agenda: The United States Government, Nazi Scientists, and Project Paperclip,1945-1990*. St. Martin's Press, N.Y. 1991.

Hunter, Edward. *Brain-washing In Red China*. Vanguard, N.Y. 1971.

Hutchison, Michael. *Mega Brain*. Ballantine, N.Y. 1986.

Icke, David. *And the Truth Shall Set You Free*. Bridge of Love Publications, Notts, England. 1997 (USA ed.).

Icke, David. *The Biggest Secret: The Book That Will Change the World*. Bridge of Love Publications, Scottsdale, AZ. 1999.

Icke, David. *The Robot's Rebellion: The Story of Spiritual Renaissance*. Gateway Books. 1994.

Isaacson, Walter and Evan Thomas. *The Wise Men: Six Friends and the World They Made*. Simon & Schuster, N.Y. 1986.

Jeffrey, Grant R. *APOCALYPSE: The Coming Judgement of the Nations*. Frontier Research Publications, Toronto, Canada. 1992.

Jeffery, Grant R. *Prince of Darkness: Antichrist and the New World Order*. Frontier Research Publications, Toronto, Canada. 1994.

Kah, Gary H. *En Route to Global Occupation*. Huntington House, Lafayette, LA. 1992.

Keith, Jim. *Mass Control: Engineering Human Consciousness*. Illuminet Press. 1999.

Keith, Jim. *Mind Control, World Control*. Adventures Unlimited Press, One Adventure Place, Kempton, IL 60946. 1997.

Keith, Jim. *Secret and Suppressed: Banned Ideas and Hidden History*. Feral House, P.0. Box 3466, Portland, OR. 1993.

Lawrence, Lincoln and Kenn Thomas. *Mind Control, Oswald & JFK: Were We Controlled?* Adventures Unlimited Press, One Adventure Place, Kempton, IL 60946. 1994 (Reprint of University Books. 1967).

Levenda, Peter. *Unholy Alliance: A History of Nazi Involvement With the Occult*. Avon Books, N.Y. 1995.

Lifton, Robert J. *The Nazi Doctors: Medical Killing and the Psychology of Genocide*. Basic Books: a division of HarperCollins, N.Y. 1986.

Lifton, Robert J. *Thought Reform and the Psychology of Totalism*. Norton, N.Y. 1961.

Lilly, John C. *Programming and Metaprogramming in the Human Biocomputer*. Julian Press. 1987.

Littauer, Fred. *Touched by the Master*. Creation House, FL. 1996.

Marciniak, Barbara. *Family of Light*. Bear & Company, Santa Fe, NM. 1999.

Marchetti, Victor and John Marks. *The CIA and the Cult of Intelligence*. Dell Publishing Co., N.Y. 1974.

Marrs, Texe. *Circle of Intrigue: The Hidden Inner Circle of the Global Illuminati Conspiracy*. Living Truth Publishers, Austin, TX. 1995.

Marrs, Texe. *Dark Majesty: The Secret Brotherhood and the Magic of a Thousand Points of Light*. Living Truth Publishers, Austin, TX. 1992.

Marrs, Texe. *Project LUCID: The Beast 666 Universal Human Control System*. Living Truth Publishers, Austin, TX. 1996.

McKinney, Julianne. "Microwave Harrassment & Mind Control Experimentation." Article in: *Electronic Surveillance Project*, December 1992 (Association of National Security Alumni, Silver Spring, MD). <www.mk.net/-mcf/mck-clsc.htm#Main>

McManus, John F. *The Insiders*. John Birch Society, P.O. Box 8040, Appleton, WI 54913. 1992.

Meerloo, Joost. *The Rape Of The Mind*. The Psychology of Thought Control, Menticide, and Brainwashing. Grosset & Dunlap, N.Y. 1956.

Metz, Steven and James Kievit. *The Revolution in Military Affairs and Conflict Short of War*. U.S. Army War College, Strategic Studies Institute. July, 1994.

Million Dollar Directory. Dun & Bradstreet, Marketing Service Division, N.Y.

Mills, James. *The Underground Empire: Where Crime and Governments Embrace*. Dell Publishing Co., N.Y. 1986.

Mohr, U.S. Army, Lt. Col. Gordon. *Brain-washing: A Synthesis of the Russian Textbook on Psychopolitics*. (Bulletin of the Committee to Restore the Constitution-Dec. 1994)

Morey, Robert A. *The Origins and Teachings of Freemasonry*. Crowne Publications. 1990

Mullins, Eustace. *The Secrets of the Federal Reserve*. Bankers Research Institute, P.O. Box 1105, Staunton, VA 24401. 1993.

Mullins, Eustace. *The World Order: Our Secret Rulers*. Ezra Pound Institute of Civilization, P.O. Box 1105, Staunton, VA 24401. 1992.

NASA, Nazis and JTK.- The Torbitt Document & the Kennedy Assassination. (Intro. By Kenn Thomas.) Adventures Unlimited Press, One Adventure Place, Kempton, IL 60946. 1996.

Noblitt, James Randall, Ph.D., and Pamela S. Perskin. *Cult and Ritual Abuse: Its History, Anthology, and Recent Discovery in Contemporary America*. Praeger, N.Y. 1995.

Pappworth, M.H. *Human Guinea Pigs: Experimentation on Man*. Beacon Press, MA. 1967.

Peck, M. Scott, M.D. *People of the Lie: The Hope for Healing Human Evil*. Simon & Schuster, N.Y. 1983.

Perloff, James. *The Shadows of Power: The Council on Foreign Relations and the American Decline*. Western Islands, P.O. Box 8040, Appleton, WI 54913. 1988.

Pines, Maya. *The Brain Changers: Scientists and the New Mind Control*. Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, Inc., N.Y. 1975.

Pool, James. *Who Financed Hitler: The Secret Funding of Hitler's Rise to Power, 1919-1933*.

Prouty, L. Fletcher. *The Secret Team: The CIA and Its Allies in Control of the United States and the World*. Prentice-Hall, Inc., Englewood Cliffs, NJ. 1975.

Project MKULTRA, The CIA's Program of Research in Behavior Modification. Joint Hearing before the Select Committee on Intelligence and the Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research of the

Committee on Human Resources, United States Senate, Ninety-Fifth Congress, First Session, August 3, 1977. U. S. Government Printing Office. 1977.

Quigley, Carroll. *The Anglo-American Establishment*. Books In Focus, N.Y. 1981.

Quigley, Carroll. *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in Our Time*. Macmillan, N.Y. 1966.

Rappoport, Jon. *U.S. Government Mind Control Experiments on Children*. 1995

Raschke, Carl. *Painted Black*. Harper & Row, N.Y. 1990.

Reed, Terry and John Cummings. *Compromised: Clinton, Bush and the CIA-How the Presidency was Co-opted by the CIA*. S.P.I. Books, N.Y. 1994.

Report from Iron Mountain on the Possibility and Desirability of Peace. By "Special Study Group." Foreword by Leonard C. Lewin. Dial Press, N.Y. 1967.

Robinson, John J. Born in Blood: *The Lost Secrets of Freemasonry*. M. Evans & Co., N.Y. 1989.

Ross, Colin, M.D. Lecture: "The CIA and Military Mind Control Research: Building the Manchurian Candidate," delivered at the *Ninth Annual Western Clinical Conference on Trauma and Dissociation* on April 18, 1996 in Orange County, CA. <www.mk.net/~mcf/ckln01.htm>

Rothmiller, Mike and Ivan G. Goldman. *L.A. Secret Police: Inside the LAPD Elite Spy Network*. Pocket Books: a division of Simon & Schuster, N.Y. 1992.

Russell, Dick. *The Man Who Knew Too Much*. Carol & Graff Publishers. 1992.

Russell-Manning, Elizabeth. *Mass Mind Control of the American People and the Conspiracy & Cover-Up of the State and Federal Government*. Order to: 1600 Larkin St., Suite #104, San Francisco, CA 94109. 1992.

Ryder, Daniel. *Breaking the Circle of Satanic Ritual Abuse*. CompCare Publishers, MN. 1992.

Ryder, Daniel. *Cover-Up of the Century*. Ryder Publishing, 225 Crossroads Blvd., #415, Carmel, CA 93923. 1996.

Sargant, William. *Battle for the Mind: A Physiology of Conversion and Brainwashing*. Doubleday & Co., N.Y. 1957. (Harper & Row, 1971.)

Scheflin, Alan W., Brown and Hammond. *Memory, Trauma Treatment and the Law*. Norton, N.Y. 1998.

Scheflin, Alan W. "Freedom of the Mind as an International Human Rights Issue." Article in: *Human Rights Law Journal*, Vol. 3, No. 1-4, pp. 1-64. N.P. Engel, Arlington, VA. 1982.

Scheflin, Alan W. and Edward M. Opton, Jr. *The Mind Manipulators*. Paddington Press, N.Y. 1978.

Schrag, Peter. *Mind Control*. Pantheon Books, N.Y. 1978.

Schultzinger, Robert D. *The Wise Men of Foreign Affairs: The History of the Council on Foreign Relations*. Columbia University Press, N.Y. 1984.

Simpson, Christopher. *Blowback: The First Full Account of America's Recruitment of Nazis and Its Disastrous Effect on Our Domestic and Foreign Policy*. Collier Books: a division of Macmillan Publishing Co., N.Y. 1988.

Skinner, B.F. *Beyond Freedom and Dignity*. Bantam Books, N.Y. 1972.

Sklar, Dusty. *The Nazis and the Occult*. Dorset. 1977.

Sklar, Holly. *Trilateralism: The Trilateral Commission and Elite Planning For World Management*. South End Press, MA. 1980.

Springmeier, Fritz and Cisco Wheeler. *The Illuminati Formula Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind Controlled Slave*. Clackamas, OR. 1996.

Springmeier, Fritz and Cisco Wheeler. *Deeper Insights Into the Illuminati Formula: Used to Create an Undetectable Total Mind-Controlled Slave*. (Limited edition.) 1997

Still, William T. *New World Order: The Ancient Plan of Secret Societies*. Huntington House, Lafayette, LA. 1990.

Stratford, Lauren. *Satan's Underground*. Pelican Publishing, P.O. Box 3110, Gretna, LA 70054. 1988.

Stratford, Lauren. *Stripped Naked*. Pelican Publishing, P.O. Box 3110, Gretna, LA 70054. 1993.

Sutton, Antony C. *America's Secret Establishment: An Introduction to the Order of the Skull & Bones*. Liberty House Press, 2027 Iris, Billings, MT 59102. 1986.

Sutton, Antony C. *Two Faces of George Bush*. Veritas Publishing Co., Bullsbrook, Australia. 1988.

Sutton, Antony C. *Wall Street and the Rise of Hitler*. Bloomfield Books, Suffolk, England. 1976.

Talbot, Michael. *The Holographic Universe*. HarperCollins, N.Y. 1991.

Taft, J. Richard. *Understanding Foundations. Dimensions in Fund Raising*. McGraw Hill, N.Y. 1967.

Taylor, Brice. *Starshine: One Woman's Valiant Escape from Mind Control*. Brice Taylor Trust, P.O. Box 655, Landrum, SC 29356. 1995.

Taylor, Brice. *Revivification: A Gentle, Alternative, Memory Retrieval Process for Trauma Survivors*. Brice Taylor Trust, P.O. Box 655, Landrum, SC 29356. 1997.

Taylor, Brice. *Mind Control Video*. Brice Taylor Trust, P.O. Box 655, Landrum, SC 29356, 1998.

Terry, Maury. *The Ultimate Evil*. Doubleday, N.Y. 1987.

Thomas, Gordon. *Enslaved. The Chilling Modern-Day Story of Abduction and Abuse in the Global Trafficking of Men, Women and Children*. Phaoros Books. 1991.

Thomas, Gordon. *Journey Into Madness: The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse*. Bantam Books, N.Y. 1989.

Turner, Stansfield. *Secrecy and Democracy, The CIA in Transition*. Garden City Press, NJ. 1985.

Valentine, Douglas. *The Phoenix Program*. William Morrow, N.Y. 1990.

Vallee, Jacques. *Messengers of Deception: UFO Contacts and Cults*. And/Or Press. Berkeley, CA. 1979.

Vankin, Jonathan. *Conspiracies, Cover-Ups and Crimes*. Dell Publishing, N.Y. 1992.

Verdicr, Paul A., Ph.D. *Brainwashing and the Cults An Expose on Capturing the Human Mind*. Hal Leighton Printing Co., P.O. Box 1231, Beverly Hills, CA 90213. 1977.

Walker, Benjamin. *Gnosticism*. Aquarian Press. 1983.

Wardner, James W. *The Planned Destruction of America* Longwood Communications. James W. Wardner, P.O. Box 533438, Orlando, FL 32838-3438. 1993.

Weinstein, Harvey M., M.D. *Psychiatry and The CIA: Victims of Mind Control*. American Psychiatric Press, Washington, D.C. 1990.

Weisman, Chutes A. *The De Facto Government of the United States*. Weisman Publications, Burnsville, MN. 1991.

Wells, H.G. *The New World Order: An Open Conspiracy*. Alfred A. Knopf, N.Y. 1940.

Whitfield, Chines, M.D. *Memory and Abuse*. Health Communications, Inc. 1996.

Wolf, Valerie, MSW. Transcript of her radio interview regarding mind control, her practice, and her testimony before the President's Advocacy Committee on Human Radiation Experiments in 1995. <www,mk.net/~mcf/ckln11.htm>

Yates, Frances A. *The Rosicrucian Enlightenment*. Barnes & Noble, N.Y. 1996. (Routledge, 1972.)

Tech Torture

Technological Torture

In international occultic groups and many governmental organizations, the trend has increasingly been to use technological torture (tech torture) on individuals being programmed.

What is tech torture? In general, this refers to a combination of technologies and techniques that are used to simulate, entrain and install punishment within individuals.

Virtual Reality

The state of virtual reality (VR) used by modern cult groups is at least 50 to 75 years ahead of the latest state-of-the-art equipment publicly available. While VR and holograms were initially used in the late 1950's and early 1960's (by groups with the funds to purchase them), the technology has improved radically since 1995. In the past decade, the technology can create extremely realistic alternate realities that are almost indistinguishable from true reality.

Using VR, programmers can:

- Take photos and videos of therapists and their offices using microtechnology cameras, and create a VR "session" to program a survivor against the therapist.
- Install programming sequences of any type, from "ascension to celestial heaven" for an infant, to "demons from hell tearing a child apart" and others. When final installation of a program is checked for loyalty and obedience programming, for instance, the child may be told to "shoot and kill" a family member in highly realistic VR.
- Create horrendous punishment and pain sequences, using brain prints and scans downloaded from actual victims, in which the individual being programmed experiences extremely realistic renditions of things such as:
  - Legs and arms being torn off, with realistic pain
  - Hot rods inserted into orifices
  - Being burned alive
  - All bones in the body being broken, and then radiated (which causes swelling and intense pain)
  - Being skinned alive
  - Bees swarming over the person, and stinging them

Follow

These and other tortures (the list goes on, based on the demonic creativity of the pr[illegible] are so realistic and terrible, that those undergoing it must be monitored for "VR shock" which can actually cause the person to go into shock and die if untreated. VR can be one reason for memories that seem "impossible" based upon the individual's being alive and unscarred, since VR leaves emotional and spiritual scars, but no physical ones. Demonic healing is another reason that no scars after torture remain.

Machine Programming: Tesla waves and Microbursts

For years, the cults have been aware of Tesla waves and its applications to create changes within tissue that rival microwave and laser, but with greater energy. This energy wave was harnessed, first for use over larger areas, and then in the 1970's, research was done upon harnessing the waves at the micro level. Eventually in the mid-1990's, a machine was developed that was able to use Tesla waves and microbursts of energy to change brain waves and develop internal resonance within the brain.

This technology was further developed, and eventually was used to create deep stimulation of the neural pain centers during programming. This type of tech torture creates agonizing pain throughout the neural chain, and is used as the base for modern pain and punishment systems that guard high-security information inside. Various waveforms are created to create pain and terror through direct stimulation of the pain areas; the terror areas, or the despair areas within the brain.

Entrainment is used in combination with this type of torture. In a typical session, the individual is placed in a machine (called the "God machine" by some groups), which appears as clear plastic. Inside, the individual is surrounded by a holographic screen that appears when the programming session is active. Their brain scans are continuously displayed for the programmers to view, in order to see when the programming "takes" (there are specific changes in the brain scans that occur when this happens).

The entrainment will begin over several hours at a time, with various tones that reflect brain states played in a sequence. In one example, the tones for gamma, beta, alpha, epsilon, theta and delta, then deep delta and death state are played in sequence, and the individual being programmed is slowly entrained to "follow" the tones, and go from one brain state to another in sequence. Very gradually, the tones become more rapid, until the brain is entrained and taught to perform a very rapid drop from high gamma (or even omicron) state, to deep delta or even death state. This rapid drop in brain state creates a sense of "falling" or "dropping" in the parts (often infants or fetuses) being programmed, and is extremely painful, creating terror in the parts that undergo it.

There are many other forms of entrainment. The entrainment takes weeks and months to be programmed in fully.

7 X7 Programming

7 X & is a specific form of punishment and pain programming that involves the entrainment within the brain of 7 lines of tech torture, at 7 levels of pain. While at the lowest level of it running, the first line runs at the lowest level, continued disobedience to cult commands and directives (such as failure to recontact; or failure to forget, or dismantling programming) can

eventually cause all 7 lines to run simultaneously at the highest (7^{th}) level of pain.

This is very difficult, painful and terrifying programming to undo, and is installed in individuals who work in high-security areas. Undoing it requires significant emotional support, pain medication if available when running, and the ability to abreact the programming lines. Eventually, if the survivor does not recontact, the programming does fail, but can take a significant amount of time to run down.

Side effects of Tech Torture can include:

- Feeling as if the individual is "vibrating" internally at a rapid rate. This lasts for roughly 6 weeks after a programming session, then becomes less intense over time.
- Severe, deep headaches at the back of the head, and in the center of the brain (including feeling as if the center of the brain is a "hot coal" inside). Because the deep neural centers have been directly stimulated, the headaches are atypical.
- Hyperthermia and hypothermia: during the tech torture and entrainment, the individual's core temperature often rises, and cooling blankets are put on them. As the programming is broken, they may re-experience these body memories. They become less frequent and less intense with time.
- Extreme restlessness and feeling as if the individual is "crawling out of their skin": this is associated with the tesla waves vibrating internally
- Tingling and even shocking (electrically) if the head is touched: because the entrainment literally trains the brain to shock itself, this is one side effect that can occur. Supporters may feel a mild to moderate shock if they place their hand on the survivor's head, as the electrical activity works its way out of the body.
- Extreme soreness on the top of the head, or the back (bottom) of the head

All of the above symptoms will pass with time and healing; and it is important to reassure the survivor that these are normal side effects when breaking the programming.

Mobile tech (helmets, VR goggles)

Unfortunately, the above technology (which began being used more widely in 2003) has become mobile in recent years. While programming in a machine is done at programming centers, there are helmets and VR goggles/nets that can simulate the entrainment and reinforce tech torture programming. The VR goggles have a silver net that fits over the head, and will create a virtual "machine" that simulates machine torture as described above. Programmers will have libraries of microdiscs that they insert into the VR equipment, and will use tablet-sized computers for monitoring brain scans and other vital parameters during the programming.

For this reason, if a person is accessed in a van, or small space, they may undergo a rapid re-programming session using mobile technology. This is yet another reason to break recontact programming as quickly as possible.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Blog at WordPress.com.

http://whale.to/b/turner_b.html

MILABS

Taken: Inside the Alien-Human Abduction Agenda

a book by Dr. Karla Turner

[pdf version]

Foreword
Prologue
I. Redefinition
2. Pat
3. Polly
4. Lisa
5. Anita
6. Beth
Illustrations
7. Jane
8. Angie
9. Amy
10. Casey and Karla
Comparative Charts of Experiences
11. Expanding the View
12. The Round Table

Voices of the Taken

"Perfectly real aliens exist out there," Angie acknowledged, "and it seems one kind wants to help us and another kind wants to deceive us."

"Emotionally and deep in my mind I trust certain ones of the aliens more than anything else in the universe," Polly said. "And I have been confronting bit by bit the evidence that They made me feel this way for their purposes, to fulfill their agenda, not for my good."

"What do you need all those pieces of me for?" eleven-year-old Pat asked.

We are making a new you, the tall White entity replied.

"Are you an angel?' Pat wondered.

Yes, the entity told her, but not as you have been taught.

"The alien pointed the wand at my forehead," Lisa explained. "It made me feel dizzy, and I was out. That's the night they made me have sex while they watched. The other abductee told me his name and said he was sorry. They had been taking him since he was a child."

"Two beings, one on either side, were leading me to the entrance of the big room," Amy said. "I remember noticing the wall clearly. The wall was rough rock. I remember sucking in air through my teeth and saying to myself, *We're underground!*"

ISBN 0-964-08990-4

http://whale.to/b/turner_b.html

Foreword

When Karla Turner asked me to write a foreword to her new book, TAKEN, she knew that in my own work as a documentary filmmaker, television producer and author I have been struggling to see a bigger picture behind many anomalous phenomena that affect our planet. My own investigations have included mysterious worldwide crop formations, animal mutilations, and the human abduction syndrome. I am convinced that humanity is moving from the paradigm that we are alone in the universe to a new one in which we are not alone and something out there is interacting with us, our animals, and our plant life, forcing glimpses of other realities upon us.

The true nature and purpose of the intelligence, or intelligences, remains an enigma. The eight women in this book report communications ranging from telepathic thoughts to virtual reality dreams, but there is no coherent single truth that emerges from their experiences, nor from the hundreds of others in the abduction syndrome since the 1960s. The sheer number of different messages, often contradictory, produces confusion, mistrust and a sense of manipulation, even if that manipulation inspires positively or disturbs negatively.

"Perfectly real aliens exist out there," says one of the women in TAKEN, "and it seems one kind wants to help us and another kind wants to deceive us."

As each voice is offered for public consideration, there are themes that repeat. One of the most prominent is genetic harvesting from earth life to create a hybrid species. TAKEN suggests the possibility that an alien intelligence has been using genetic manipulation to create evolving species on our planet over eons and that *Homo sapiens sapiens* might be one such genetically engineered species. If so, we on the Petri dish might paradoxically be trying to study whatever watches and studies us. Consciousness of this Other without running from it or getting down on our knees to it could be a significant, perhaps unexpected, step in human evolution and survival.

Linda Moulton Howe, Creator and Supervising TV Producer,
UFO Report: Sightings and author of *An Alien Harvest* and
Glimpses of Other Realities

Prologue

Indiana, 1954...

'They came in our house and set up equipment in the living room," Pat said. 'The Army men wanted to talk to me the most. Me, an eleven-year-old girl with secrets in my head. But the aliens told me I couldn't tell because 'there will be those who will tamper with your mind.' And here they were, the tamperers, the Army men."

Two female doctors set up their gear in the bedroom, where Pat was given an injection. "It made me sleepy," she said, "and I lay on my mom's bed on some towels and told them my story. I even told them, 'You're in my mom's room where the White, glowing ones were. You don't belong here, but they do'."

Puerto Rico, 1978...

Two aliens took Beth down a curved hall and through a door, into a different area. It looked like "a surgery room," and she became afraid they were going to kill her there. A third entity, holding a black box, moved to a position behind Beth. She could not see what he did, but she felt as if her head was being opened and her brain removed, all without any sensation of pain. After she was "all put back together again," a cold liquid was poured over her head.

When this procedure was finished, the aliens stood in front of her, and Beth realized that mentally she was different. Her thoughts about everything were changed, and she was filled with new ideas about God and the unity of all life within that supreme source.

This very spiritual moment was followed by a quite physical exam, as the aliens took samples from her skin and

hair. A human-looking man with a widow's-peak hairline entered and made a full examination of her body, including a gynecological procedure. Then he explained many things, telling her that she and other humans had been "chosen" to carry out certain "jobs" in the future.

Texas, 1992...

"The masked alien explained that her race had been doing things to humans that they should not be doing," Amy said. "She and several groups of her race, and others, wanted to stop the 'abuse' of the humans by her race. They were working with certain people on Earth to stop the process. The other humans in the room were ex-pilots, military officials, and other professionals. They were all working together to stop the alien intrusions.

"She showed me the thing she had pulled out of my neck and said, 'This is embedded deep in the spinal cord.' The thing controlled the muscles of the body when activated. It blocked the brain and became the 'central command' of the body. I don't want to remember how or why this thing functioned."

I. Redefinition

Like Pat, Beth, and Amy, I am an abductee. I have been forcibly taken and controlled by non-human entities. When I told my story of alien encounters in INTO THE FRINGE, I was contacted by these women and many other people with similar experiences, in need of support and assistance.

I am also a researcher of abduction reports, and from these contacts emerged a number of accounts that shed important light on the alien agenda of human interaction. This book is the result of lengthy investigations into the abduction experiences of eight women from various parts of the country. The correlation of evidence from their accounts greatly widens the parameters of the abduction scenario and points to certain aspects, previously disregarded or avoided, in need of serious exploration.

This is also a personal book, a collation of unique, intimate accounts of alien-human interactions. The people who share their experiences here are courageous representatives of the many others in this country and elsewhere whose lives partake of parallel realities. They function successfully in a world shared by everyone else, as housewives, mothers, grandmothers, artists, nurses, counselors, teachers, computer engineers, and blue-collar workers.

But in the blink of an eye-or the flash of multicolored lights strobing in the hall late at night-their normal lives can disappear, and they find themselves taken into the time and space of an alien world.

It is difficult for most abduction memories to be investigated in a purely scientific manner, especially since they are often suppressed, surfacing only as vague flashbacks and dreamlike episodes. In this field there has been strong objection to anecdotal information. But the scientific approach to the study of the UFO phenomenon as a whole has proven less than successful. In spite of half a century of many intelligent people researching the UFO and alien presence with scientific methods, reliable answers to the primary questions have not been found. Investigations of sightings reports, landing traces, photos and video tapes, alleged implants, and related government documents have amassed a mountain of data and a number of theories-but nothing indisputably true about the nature of UFOs and their non-human occupants, their origin, or the reason for their presence here among us now.

Great gains have been made in the area of abduction therapy, providing help and support for those who are living with the phenomenon and working to resolve their emotional trauma, to keep the disruption of their everyday lives to a minimum, and to transform or assimilate these experiences in a positive way. And while is this laudable, it is not necessarily research. Therapy's goal is one of personal balance, but the goal of research is a larger, clearer understanding of the phenomenon. The point is not so much learning to live with abductions as it is finding out why they happen, what they mean, and whether and how the situation can be altered.

The need for reliable answers is nowhere greater than in the abduction phenomenon. It intimately affects people of all ages and backgrounds, irrevocably altering their personal lives and their perceptions of reality, and it raises immense questions about our past, present, and future as a species. But in spite of the best scientific approaches to the question, all that ufological research has brought to most people is a realization that UFOs

exist-and perhaps a few cute, harmless aliens-but no confrontation with what this means.

Science has been trying to measure a dream, it seems, using traditional ideas and practices, and it has proved elusive. The UFO phenomenon is not confined to our current scientific understanding of perceived reality. We do not yet have the technology or natural perceptive abilities to capture and assess it. That is why the scientific approach to photographic evidence, landing traces, implants, and document analyses has so little in the way of hard evidence to show for its work. Instead, its best results offer only circumstantial data, carrying very little more weight than the anecdotal data of abduction research in the scales of traditional science.

It is in the abduction phenomenon that we come most urgently face to face with the alien presence and thus have our best opportunity to observe the activity and assess its purpose or agenda. All of the UFO photos in the world tell us nothing compared to the words of those who have encountered the alien force in their lives and those of their families.

And there are many, like Pat and Amy and the others presented here. From the response to INTO THE FRINGE, it sometimes seemed that abduction experiences were becoming virtually epidemic. Yet studies by mental health professionals show that the people who make these reports are eminently sane, that the aftermath of these events is real, and that they do not spring from any mass psychosis but from *experienced* anomalous trauma.

I also found that many of the reports contained details very similar to certain things my family and I had experienced. Still, in every case there was always present the "unique factor" within the situations, providing highly individualized episodes for each abductee. I often wondered if these unique events, these "one-time shots," might not prove to have some unperceived correlations, to form a pattern as yet out of focus, and give us more information than the now-recognized patterns of certain exams, baby presentations, and the like. Far from being a neat, limited phenomenon, alien interaction with humans is still very much a riddle, mystery, enigma, and more.

Abduction research has not yet produced answers, but there are certainly different theories to be had-an embarrassment of riches, really. Unfortunately, these theories rest on a very partial, highly selective use of the data, rather than dealing with the complexities of the entire, life-long and minute-by-minute, reality of the abduction scenario.

It is more than the sum of its parts. The intermittent UFO sightings, missing-time episodes, conscious encounters, and virtual-reality scenarios are like blank milestones on a journey which, for the abductee, is continuous and headed in an unknown direction. More accurately, they are like lights that suddenly appear in the dark, which we hope will shed illumination and lead to understanding. Instead, however, these startling lights either blind us with their intensity, so that we cannot see their source, or they cast strange shadows, whose false appearances and misleading movements can easily confuse and disorient us.

No one knows this better than an abductee. Investigators who have not had personal experiences with the phenomenon can listen to abduction accounts and then ponder the possibilities. Was the person lying? Was it a real event, or did it occur on a mental level? What parts of the recollection are real, and which are illusionary? But the abductee understands that it may very well be both possibilities at once, both real and mental, real and illusionary. The aliens, whether by intellectual, psychic, or technological means, are able to create any perception, and therefore any illusion, for the person in their hands.

The implications are explosive. Perhaps that is why the logical conclusions of these implications are so rarely taken into account. If we credit the idea of illusionary mastery with serious validity, then we must either come up with a reliable acid test to discern illusion and actuality in abduction events, or we may have to admit that the truth behind these events is unknowable in current scientific terms. Dealing with the aliens' deceptive abilities may be the most crucial problem facing abduction research today.

Once the illusionary capability has been demonstrated and experienced, new perceptions and insights often emerge. The witness usually has no trouble recognizing the non-human nature of the force behind the events. The manipulation of time and space by these beings, the way they play with our psychology and our perceptions, all bespeak a technology far beyond the human. Or certainly, if any human agency did have this

sort of capability, it would have plenty of applications far better than pulling hundreds of 3 a.m. raids on bedrooms around the globe every night, decade after decade, in which thousands of humans pretend to be aliens.

The abductee also learns from experience that the aliens induce an altered perceptive state in humans during every encounter. Employed for control, it can be used to prevent any undesired responses from the abductee. And the altered state prevents any objective assessment of the situation by the witness. This means that the witness can only report what was seen, felt, and heard-which is not necessarily a reflection of what actually occurred. By inducing and manipulating altered consciousness in the abductee, the aliens assume full control of the situation and thus exert great control over the data reported by the witness.

Abductees report alien-controlled information.

This is a fact abduction researchers must face. Then, perhaps, work can begin on solving this problem, on finding ways around the memory blocks and screen illusions, in order to discover the real events and the agenda behind them. Until the day we can unmask the alien illusions, however, we can at least study the entire body of reported data, controlled though it may be, trying to learn more about why certain images and events are employed and what they can tell us about the covert directors of these scenarios.

Many of the people who contacted me after reading INTO THE FRINGE are looking for answers, just as I am compelled to do. This present work is an attempt to aid in the search, making a number of representative cases available for public scrutiny and assessment. Too often, reports on abduction activity are presented entirely in second-hand form by investigators, and too often these reports are incomplete, focusing only on some parts of an event and discarding or ignoring others.

Such omissions are clearly a hindrance to research, for the censored reports cannot present a total picture of the abduction phenomenon. It must include a real feeling for what it is like to live with such events. Abductees operate in parallel realities, searching for the strength to cope with the real and the unreal at the same time because, as they have learned, one can never be sure which is which in this phenomenon.

The number of abduction reports around the country shows just how widespread the phenomenon may be, and the numbers continue to increase. Eight different abductees, all women, from various parts of the country have volunteered to share their experiences here. Born between 1943 and 1966, they live in five different states and Puerto Rico. They were unacquainted with one another at the time of their contacts with me. Their backgrounds are as varied as their occupations, and so are their ideas about the abduction phenomenon.

Like most of us who've had alien encounters, these women are uncertain about the nature of the events they've reported. They have many questions and very few answers. Four of the women have never undergone regressive hypnosis and thus are only reporting events they consciously recalled. The other four women have used hypnosis, although very minimally as will be noted in their accounts, and almost everything in their reports also comes from conscious, pre-hypnosis, recollections.

I point this out because there are some who have raised doubts and questions about the use of regressive hypnosis in abduction research. Some feel that hypnotically retrieved information is no more reliable than conscious recollections; some believe that the use of hypnosis can contaminate and damage an investigation; and some have said they believe hypnotically retrieved information is far more reliable in abduction situations than the witness's conscious memories. The presentation here provides access to both types of data, but the majority comes from conscious recollections.

Although I believe it is extremely useful to employ regressive hypnosis in the retrieval of this information, I also think it is important to present accounts from women whose knowledge and understanding of their situations is gleaned only from the incomplete, ambiguous memories of events they have consciously retained. Their stories and their lives are much more representative of a "typical" abductee's situation than are the accounts of those who have benefited from hypnosis, simply because most abductees have no access to this tool.

The women are not seeking notoriety, and in order to protect them from public harassment, pseudonyms have

been used. But all of the details are accurate, and as bizarre as they may seem, it is important to remember that they are very real to the people involved, that in many instances there have been more than one witness to the events, as well as other corroborative evidence, and that they are highly consistent with numerous abduction reports.

These women have shared their stories because they understand the gravity of the phenomenon and hope to contribute their information to its research. They also understand the need for support which many silent abductees are experiencing. The self-doubt, isolation, even fear that result from living with alien encounters can sometimes be severe, and the need to forge bonds of mutual understanding and support is vital. These, then, are the motivations of the eight women. My own purpose is similar, which is why an update of the experiences my husband and I have witnessed is also included.

An overview of all our experiences, as well as reports of other abductees, shows a much more complex program of activity in the phenomenon than is usually acknowledged. To begin with, the abduction scenario comprises a number of different types of events. On the most immediate level are the physical abductions, in which a person is forcibly removed from the normal environment by 'alien' (in the most generic sense) entities, the person's awareness is altered, and some interaction occurs. Subsequent conscious memories of the event are usually quite incomplete. Only when the event is witnessed by more than one person, or when there are physical marks on the abductee's body-punctures, scoops, patterns of bruises, artificial designs-does the witness usually feel safe in asserting the 'reality' of the encounter.

To complicate matters, many reports show that some interactions occur on a mental rather than a physical level. One type is an artificially induced virtual-reality scenario (VRS), an externally introduced event, that to the witness is practically indistinguishable from objective reality. The person may experience a situation with full sensory input and react with genuine physical and emotional responses, although in 'reality' the person may be lying immobile on an exam table, or sitting attached to some alien apparatus, or even asleep in bed with no outward sign of disturbance.

While the VRS may have been a matter of theory in the past, a possible explanation for some of the more "unacceptable" abduction accounts, it has now been confirmed in a three-witness, conscious event. It came to light when I was investigating the abduction experiences of Ted Rice, a psychic of excellent reputation throughout the southern states.

Ted witnessed a virtual-reality scenario when he was in Florida visiting a friend, Marie, along with another house guest, Amelia. The two women occupied twin beds in one room, and Ted slept down the hall in another. Not long after going to bed one night during his visit, he was awakened by Marie shouting for him to "come quickly!"

Heading down the hall, Ted saw a pervasive blue glow emanating from the other bedroom doorway. Entering, he found Marie pressed against the far wall, staring at the twin beds in shock.

And he saw where the blue light was coming from. Amelia lay immobile in one bed, surrounded by a huge, blue, glowing, "electrical" sphere of light. Her eyes were open, and she didn't seem to be in any distress as she carried on a conversation with someone Ted and Marie couldn't see. Terrified, they tried to talk to her, but they could hardly hear one another even when shouting. Amelia continued to speak within the sphere for several minutes, until the blue light suddenly disappeared, at which point she was finally free of the paralysis that had kept her in the bed.

Amelia told Ted and Marie that the experience started with the loud sound of a helicopter low over the house. When she opened her eyes she could see through the ceiling and roof, as if they'd disappeared, to where the helicopter was hovering just above the house. She described two entities in the craft, whom she said also appeared at the foot of the bed before the blue light vanished. One being was tall, with greenish skin, an egg-shaped head, and slanted eyes as the only visible facial features. The other, shorter, entity, Amelia said, was blue-black in color.

Ted and Marie had seen absolutely nothing of these creatures, nor had they heard a helicopter at any time. But they had seen the sphere of light, with brighter, darting lights shooting through it, and Amelia frozen in a

slightly raised position inside it, for she had been starting to sit up when the light coalesced and paralyzed her.

Amelia's perception of the experience was completely "real" for her. She was conscious when it began and throughout the entire event, as Ted and Marie attested. From everything her sensory input told her, Amelia had experienced an actual event with the craft and entities. Virtual reality. And the conscious and unaffected witnesses, Ted and Marie, observed objectively real effects of the mechanism which manipulated the event, verifying its external origin.

VRS technology exists and is in use, this much is clear. And unless there are outside witnesses, such as in this rare instance, the experiencer cannot personally discern between a VRS and an actual event. The virtual-reality scenario may occur while the person is conscious, as in Amelia's case, or it may be introduced into the person's dream state. According to those who've experienced the VRS dream-and I am one of those, as will be discussed later-it is an intrusive event that suddenly interrupts a normal dream. The experiencer is aware of a total, abrupt change in consciousness and finds himself in an event altogether different from his dream.

What follows may be a perceived event, with action, location, and personnel, or it may be a communication or even a vision. At its conclusion, the experiencer normally awakens, and, finding himself in his own bed, he rationalizes the whole thing as an extraordinary dream, in spite of the event's decidedly non-dreamlike qualities. Without physical proof of the event's reality, or even a name for this altered perceptive experiential event, he is left to call it a dream.

In addition to the abductions and virtual-reality scenarios, abductees also report telepathic contacts from entities who are not physically or perceivably present. These contacts include messages about spiritual matters, warnings of future disasters, "teaching" sessions, displays of symbols, and information on mathematics, physics, religion, politics, and the nature of the human species.

On a secondary level, there are events that occur, not during encounters, but subsequent to them, affecting things in the abductee's normal environment. Lights and electronic equipment malfunction; voices and unexplained sounds are heard; animals are physiologically affected; lights appear both inside and outside the house; there are odd and disturbing phone calls; and sometimes traces of a UFO's presence or landing on the property.

And finally there are the internal changes that take place with most abductees, reshaping their attitudes, belief structures, and perceptions of reality. Thus, the externally induced, temporary, altered awareness which occurs during abductions is paralleled by a permanent, internal alteration, and the abductee's life is forever changed.

There is much more to the abduction phenomenon than the public has been told, and this book is in part an attempt to correct that situation and expand our definition of the abduction scenario. Its primary purpose is not to offer scientific data or to convince a disbelieving audience that UFOs and aliens exist. People are coming to this awareness on their own, one by one, as the phenomenon intrudes into their lives and shatters their old reality in a way that cannot be imagined until it is experienced.

The following accounts from Pat, Polly, Lisa, Anita, Beth, Jane, Angie, and Amy show what it is like to live with this awareness far more thoroughly than any scientific analysis can hope to do. By allowing entrance into their lives, they permit others to witness the events from the inside rather than from a distance. Their experiences, while individually unique, taken together make a choir of voices expressing the range and intensity of life in the altered world of the alien abduction agenda.

2. Pat

My investigation with Pat began when a mutual acquaintance heard her story of an unusual UFO event and suggested she contact me. A fifty-year-old divorced mother of grown children, Pat lives in Florida, but the story she related concerned an event that occurred in 1954 when she lived in Floyd's Knob, Indiana.

Pat's memory of this event, as in the case of so many people who have had UFO experiences, was totally suppressed after the occurrence. It all came flooding back into her consciousness in 1986-scenes of a brilliant orange ball of light, little gray entities both inside and outside the farmhouse, and, most disturbing of all,

military personnel on the property.

"I thought I must be crazy when these memories came back, " Pat said. "But they were so strong and real, I finally got in touch with my brother and sister and asked if they recalled anything similar. My sister Rose said she recalled the aliens and the military people, too. But although my brother didn't remember the orange ball of light, he clearly remembered the military personnel and some of his interactions with them."

Through extensive conversations, letters, and drawings from Pat and her siblings, the following extraordinary scenario emerged, raising serious questions not only about the nature of the alien abduction agenda but also about the involvement of our military with citizens who have been the target of such interactions.

The setting was a sixteen-acre farm near Floyd's Knob, Indiana, in the summer of 1954. Eleven-year-old Pat lived there with her mother, step-father, grandmother, a nine-year-old brother and six-year-old sister. One night several family members saw a large orange ball of light appear outside the farmhouse. Pat had already gone to bed but was awakened by either her grandmother or her sister to look out the window. In the sky she saw the orange light sitting motionless at first, then moving rapidly out of sight around the back of the house.

"I remember vaguely thinking, J *will go back to bed to wait.* It seems to me that I knew 'they' were coming," Pat said. "I saw my mother running to the kitchen door to make sure it was locked and to see the ball come over the yard. I remember thinking, *It won't do any good to lock the door, they can come in anyway.* It was as if I 'knew' what to expect." Pat suddenly felt sleepy but didn't remember going back to bed. Her next memory was of a multicolored light slowly spinning around the room in total silence, emitting blue, purple, and violet hues. She got out of bed and went to the window where she saw a Gray floating just outside.

hook at those eyesl she thought. *They can film usl* The gaze of the Gray seemed to penetrate her entire being, and she sensed a familiarity with him.

Do not be afraid, it communicated to Pat. *You are the chosen child. We will not harm you.*

Pat turned around and saw several taller white entities coming into the bedroom. As they began to float her grandmother out of the door, Pat sensed the older woman's terror, and she, too, was feeling fearful. When the room was filled with the strange beings, a sparkling shaft of light came down through the ceiling. As it coalesced, Pat saw in the midst of the light a figure which she perceived as a blond-haired, blue-eyed Jesus, in a resplendent robe. He took Pat's right hand and said, *Do not be afraid, my child. These are mine,* gesturing to the beings who were standing all around the room.

The Jesus figure looked at Pat and said, *I am the light of the world.* Then he was again surrounded by the sparkling shaft of light, which ascended back into the ceiling and took him with it.

She and her grandmother were floated out of the room by the entities. Passing by her mother's bedroom, Pat saw a brilliant white light coming out of the room. Five of the taller Whites were around her step-father's bed, and they seemed to be examining one of his atrophied legs, the result of polio. A glowing green bar of light, about five inches long, floated over him. Continuing on through the house and out into the yard, Pat saw a bright crystalline flying craft hovering low to the ground. A beam of light came out of the bottom of the craft and engulfed her.

"I remember my sister's blonde curly head next to mine as we went up inside the craft," Pat said. "We were looking down at the ground and saw my mom and grandmother there looking up, like zombies." She could also see that the entire yard was swarming with Grays hurrying about the area. Although neither she nor Rose is certain of the exact sequence of events, they recalled a group of the smaller gray beings near a ditch beside the cellar door. Rose saw the beings in a line, walking across a board spanning the ditch. But Pat's memory included a line or wall of fire in the ditch and a row of "small, gray, skinny" aliens wearing "Chinese rice-paddy hats with big brims."

"I was on one side of the long ditch, and they were on the other. They were mentally telling me *Pass through the light, it will not burn* you-which I was thinking at that time, that I would get burned. The fire was not hot, and it was supposed to cleanse me. I did go through it to the other side, but I do not remember doing it or what

happened after that."

After the light transported her and Rose up into the craft, Pat recalled sitting on a table in a room with Grays present. A taller White came over with a file-type instrument and scraped skin from her inner forearm and the bottoms of her feet, clipped some of her hair, and then peeled away samples of her fingernails.

"What do you need all those pieces of me for?" she asked.

We are making a new you, the entity replied.

"Are you an angel?" Pat inquired.

Yes, the entity told her, *but not like you have been taught.*

Pat was taken into another room where she lay on a table, above which was a dark instrument. One of the Grays came in and pulled down a tube from this device which had a thin needle on the end. Pat became afraid, but the Gray told her, *This is the part you don't have to remember.* Pat knew that the needle was about to be inserted up into her right nostril, but before it happened she passed out.

Pat recalled another event during the physical exam, being "fused" with a silver light. "It was done from something over my body," she said, "up high in the room. He [alien] 'fused me' into my head with the silver light; it will keep me from violent harm; it let me be perfect in human form for a few seconds; it was a protective light. I get the idea that when this silver light goes into my 'other body' I will be made into the 'new me.' In other words, the 'new me' will come to life with my soul in it."

Pat came back to consciousness after the episode with the needle and found herself back in the first room on the table. She was crying because she couldn't stay with the Grays. When they told her, *It isn't time yet,* she asked for a souvenir as proof that the experience had really occurred: the green "healer" rock she'd seen above her step-father's body. Although the aliens apparently gave her this device, they told her that it would not "work" properly for her, only for them. She was also told, *You are going to have to forget this.*

"Why?" Pat asked.

Because there are those who will tamper with your mind, the Gray replied.

Pat was returned to the house, where she saw all of her family sitting in the living room in a daze. 'They looked like zombies," Pat said. Even her step-father was propped up on the floor leaning against a sofa. She was placed in her bed and saw one of the Grays outside her window gesturing a farewell. She responded with a wave and was immediately asleep again.

The next day, there doesn't seem to have been any discussion about the previous night's extraordinary events. But Pat's brother recalls that it was that day when the military personnel arrived. A white staff car, a green car, a jeep, and several white vans came onto the property carrying instruments and equipment. There was also a troop carrier with soldiers who proceeded to comb over the entire sixteen acres of the farm. The large truck was hidden in the barn, and Pat's brother said that he had to move the animal feed to the smokehouse because the soldiers wouldn't let him into the barn once their equipment was stored there.

"They came in our house and set up equipment in the living room," Pat recalled. "The army men wanted to talk to me the most, me, an eleven-year-old girl with secrets in my head. But the beings told me I couldn't tell because 'there will be those who will tamper with your mind.' And here they were, the tamperers, the army men."

Everyone except her brother-who was allowed to go out in order to take care of the farm animals-was kept inside the house for the four days in which the military personnel were present. Only her brother saw what was going on outside the house. He remembers more than twenty soldiers brought in the big truck and told to man their stations on the farm. Two of the men stayed at the end of the driveway, and the others performed various duties on the grounds.

When he was allowed outside to take care of the chores, Pat's brother remembers being questioned by a man dressed in a white lab coat, who asked about the chickens and pigs.

"Are your pigs out there?" the man asked, gesturing, and the boy nodded affirmatively.

"Have the pigs been acting funny?"

"No," the boy said, "why?"

The man said something about the minerals in the soil making the animals act strangely. Pat's brother said he felt comfortable with this man and wasn't afraid to answer his questions or to ask some of his own. He even asked if the man wanted some fresh mint, a favorite treat, from a patch near the cellar.

But the man refused. "They're taking samples there and we'll be in the way," he explained. "When they're done, we'll go get some."

Pat said she was "mad" about being restricted. "I felt scared like they would take away my family and put me somewhere like in a jail or something. But I also felt protected by the being who was my friend. I was calling him a little boy then, but I knew the being wasn't a real little boy."

Two female doctors set up their gear in the parents' bedroom, where Pat was given an injection. "It made me sleepy," she said, "and I lay on my mom's bed on some towels and told them my story. I even told them, 'You're in my mom's room where the white glowing ones were. You don't belong here, but they do'."

I asked Pat to start back at the beginning and tell me everything she could remember about this event. She put herself back into an eleven-year-old frame of mind and began to relive the situation.

"I see this man dressed up in a uniform of some kind, a full-dress uniform, but it is brown," she said. "He has on a coat jacket and pants that match and what I call a captain's hat. He is talking to my mother and grandmother, holding a file envelope in his hands. He has thick silver-gray hair. There is another man in a dress uniform, and he took off his coat and rolled up his sleeves. His name is Mr. Donaldson. He's an army man, too," she explained, "but the other people are setting up a 'three-TV-screen' thing in our living room. It's a little taller than I was."

Mr. Donaldson then opened out "arms" on the machine and told Pat that the device looked like a robot. "See, Pat," he said, "if we open the panels out, they look like arms, so maybe you saw a robot like this?"

"No," Pat told him adamantly, "I didn't see a robot. I saw a real little boy."

She recalled the "lady doctors" clearly. "One lady had on a white coat," she described. "One was named Dr. Susan, and she had on a light orange coat. Dr. Susan seemed to have brown-blonde hair with bangs over her forehead, and the rest of her hair was pulled back away from her face. She had what looked like stuff from a dentist's office set up in my mom's room. It had instruments of some kind on it, but it is not clear what they were. The really clear picture is of the shot thing. It was wrapped in cellophane or plastic, and there was this little hose that went with it. Both the shot thing and the hose were in the same clear plastic bag. Dr. Susan began to open the shot bag, and I got scared and asked her if I had to get a shot with that thing."

Dr. Susan then directed Pat to Mr. Donaldson, who was in the living room, speaking angrily to some men dressed in what she described as "white moon suits" holding "white metal boxes without handles." He was saying, "I told you to use the ones with the handles."

Pat said the shot made her feel "dreamy" and willing to talk about her "secret" memories." She was upset that Mr. Donaldson didn't believe her. "I always told the truth," Pat said, "because my mom hated a liar, so in my wide-eyed innocence I told the army men about my visit with the beings. And I cried when they told me I didn't see what I thought I saw. They treated me like I was lying about it. After I cried, I guess Mr. Donaldson felt sorry for me because everyone started being 'sugar' nice. But I didn't like that at all because I knew it was fake. Why did they say I didn't see the little boy? Why did such a wonderful thing as this visit get everyone so upset and mad? And why did I have to get a shot?"

Someone asked about the glowing white beings and Pat said they were angels.

"How do you know they are angels?" her interrogator asked.

"Because they told me so," Pat replied.

"And what else did they tell you, Pat? Did they tell you anything else?"

"Yes," Pat answered, "they told me a lot of things, but I can't remember now. Someday I will remember, but not now."

"Why can't you remember now?" she was asked.

"Because ," Pat replied, "they said it's not time to remember, and besides, you were coming here, and I can't tell you because it's a special thing. When I'm a lot older I'll remember what they said and what's going to happen."

"Did they tell you what's going to happen?"

"Yes, they did, they told me about the 'bad time on earth.' I'm not supposed to tell about that. I can't remember now. Well," she admitted, "some of it I remember, like the crystalline ship they were in. It was full of lights, and I called it the crystalline ship because it wasn't metal like a plane. The lights made everything work by itself, and they move things without touching them, and even me, they moved me without touching me. They moved me up and down, and they are full of love, and they protected me with a silver light in me, and I love them."

One of the army men then asked her to describe the little boy's hair and clothes. Pat said she felt as if the army man was dumb, asking such a question. "Don't you know," she told him, "that the beings don't have hair and they don't wear clothes? The little boy has real big, slanty eyes that can film everything inside me, in my head and my soul. He talks to me in my head and doesn't use his mouth because he only has a line there. He's really skinny, but he doesn't have to eat because he's an angel.

"I thought angels had wings, and I laughed because he laughed with his eyes because he knew what I was thinking about the wings. I got kind of scared because I knew he was really an angel then. He knew what I thought, and only angels can tell what you think all the time, except so can Jesus. So I thought in my head, *Do you know Jesusl* and the beings and I filled up with a 'love' feeling that kind of made me cry and 'know' something special. And the being said, *Yes* in my head. I said, *Are you like the angels?* And the being said, *Yes, but not as you have been taught.* I wanted to stay with them and go back with them."

"Pat, stop for a minute," the interrogator interrupted, "and let us ask you a question. You said you wanted to go back with them? Where did you want to go back to?"

"I can't tell you that," Pat replied, "I'm not supposed to tell that part. But the angel said when it was time to go they would come back, they promised me. I made them promise me. I made them promise not to forget me and I begged them to take me, but he said it wasn't time yet. I begged and cried and felt real sad. Mr. Donaldson asked me why I was crying, and I told him, 'Because you're making me cry and you're making me tell, and I'm not supposed to tell, and you think I'm lying, but I'm not."

"Okay, stop crying, Pat," Mr. Donaldson told her. "Calm down and listen to my voice. I don't think you're lying, and we won't ask you any more questions if you tell us about your souvenirs. Where are they, Pat? Do you have souvenirs?"

Pat began to feel very stressful and mistrustful of the army men. She tried not to say anything more, but Mr. Donaldson kept badgering her, "Where are your souvenirs?"

"I cried," Pat said, "and told him they were mine and why did he want them? I said they were in my cigar box under my bed. I wouldn't give them the box, but my sister went and got it for them."

When they took the cigar box, which contained Pat's "green healer rock," it was put into one of the metal boxes

by the men dressed in the white protective suits.

"I saw my grandmother sitting on my bed with the little kids, and she was crying," Pat recalled. "I asked her if the army men were going to hurt the little boy."

"Oh, Patty," the grandmother said, "there is no little boy."

"I told her there was, too, because I sat with him and did things. She just cried some more. And then Mr. Donaldson showed me the triple-TV thing and tried to convince me that I had seen something like it, a robot, and not a little boy. I got real mad and told him, 'I saw a real little boy and not a robot."

"Well, Pat," he said then, maybe you just had a d ream about the little boy. Was he in your dream?"

"I didn't dream him," Pat insisted, "he was real."

"Pat," the man continued, "it was a dream, a kind of dream that just seems real. You did not see a real little boy because there are no such things."

"Yes, I did," Pat said, "and he came in the orange ball and looked in my window and filmed me with his eyes."

"Did the dream frighten you?" Mr. Donaldson asked.

"It wasn't a dream," Pat said stubbornly, "and I was only scared a little bit because he looked so different from me, because he was skinny and gray, but I knew he wouldn't hurt me."

Pat remembered almost nothing else after the interrogation, although the military people were present for several days. "After the army men left," she recalled, "my whole family seemed sad, kind of in a daze, and I had no memory of anything after that. We moved to town before my twelfth birthday in August 1955."

It wasn't until 1986 that the memories of the aliens and the military came back. Pat does not want any personal publicity because of these events, but she has asked me to include the actual location and date of this event-Floyd's Knob, Indiana, in 1954-in the hope that there may be readers from that area who remember seeing the military vehicles that came into the town and who can thus provide some outside verification of the things she and her brother and sister have recalled.

I asked if any other unusual events had occurred since then, knowing from my research that most abductees have reported multiple experiences in their lives. Pat, it turns out, was no exception.

In the fall of 1962, making a trip to Kentucky with a friend, Pat got lost for a while before spotting a sign for Ft. Knox. Laughing about the confusion, they retraced the route in search of their destination. But instead, they ended up in a deserted train yard, sitting in the car with the engine off. Pat said they felt as if they'd just "come out" of some unremembered experience, with no idea why the car was stopped. They never found their destination and finally gave up, returning home at dark.

But later in a dream Pat recalled being out of the car with her friend beside her. She saw a ripple of golden light like an "elevator" moving up at an angle and "angels" on each side. She said they were "respectful" of a blond man who seemed to her like Jesus. Her friend was screaming hysterically, "They want you!"

Pat replied, "Don't be afraid, it's okay." She went up to the blond man who was surrounded by a beautiful light. He talked to her about becoming a mother and about a "seed of life." He said he had the power of all seed in his hand. At the end of the experience, he held out his hand to her and showed her a seed, telling her it was for her benefit and to have no fear.

A few months later, Pat, who was now pregnant, moved to Florida. She remembers telling her husband that the baby would be a boy, but that it wouldn't be viable. "I'm going to have it but not keep it," she told him, unable to explain how she knew this. For the next several months she and her two children lived in a garage apartment. One night, Pat came to consciousness just as she was walking into the apartment as if she had been outside, although she didn't recall being there. She felt an odd, pleasant vibratory sensation and remembered thinking,

They came and got me.

Nothing more seems to have happened at this time, and Pat continued to have her prenatal checkups which showed that everything was progressing fine with the baby. But then in the eighth month, the doctor could not find a fetal heartbeat. And when she delivered at full-term in May, the baby boy was stillborn. The foreknowledge proved true.

Later that same year, Pat remembers finding herself in a quiet room, surrounded by Grays and waiting for something. The Gray she thought of as her "friend" appeared in the doorway, showing her a baby. He told her that she had a choice to see the baby.

"No," Pat replied, "it's okay, it's fine. You'll take better care of it than I could." But in that brief glimpse, she saw a tiny, skinny baby with blue, slanted eyes. She felt that somehow this baby was a repository for the soul of the child who had died at birth, and she said she felt trusting and thankful toward her friend for showing her that the little boy had, in a sense, survived.

Of the memories which have surfaced in the past several years, none raises more questions than the "cocoon people." "I can't remember when the actual event might have occurred," Pat told me. "All I recall is being in a large room with soft white lighting, and one of the Grays was there. I vaguely recall seeing a human male there, but not what he was doing."

Part of the large room was filled with what looked to be sarcophagus-like boxes, and in these boxes were human forms. "They were alive," Pat recalled, "but not animated. There was white misty stuff all over them, and I knew the misty stuff kept them alive. I knew they were waiting to come to life in the future."

The being asked Pat, *Do you want to see yours ?*

Pat said, "Yes," and was shown a human female body in one of the containers. "Don't ask how I knew it was female," she continued, "I just felt it. I saw a little bit of human face through the mist, like a nose mouth, eyes, definitely human. I knew this was connected with the 1954 visit, because I remembered they told me they were making a 'new me.' I felt this cocoon was the new me. I felt that they are waiting for the resurrection," she said, "or reanimation, and we will all be able to see and talk with them here on earth. If I were to die now, I believe that my 'other body' will house my soul when Jesus says it is time, and I, too, will come back. If I live through all the destruction (to come) into the new world, I will still need my other body, as this one I have will die anyway."

In her mid-forties, Pat had another experience with the beings, and this time she recalled being in a room lit with a golden glow. She was taken to a desk-sized device in the top of which were circular openings. In each opening was a different colored vibrating light, and she was told to put her hands in the lights. As she did, she heard the most beautiful sounds she had ever heard. Each light made a different sound.

That is the sound of your soul, the Gray told her.

Pat understood that this had something to do with the inanimate human bodies she had been shown, bodies which didn't have a "soul power" activating them.

In 1987, Pat had another possible experience-much more typical of the usual abduction reports- which included her young grandson. "Was this a dream?" she mused when relating it to me. "I have no proof. I was in my daughter's house, and it was nighttime. I seemed to be floating to my grandson's room. I took his hand, and we floated together, upright, about six inches off the floor. We floated out the front door, out to the driveway, and stopped while the gate swung open to the road. There were about ten or fifteen beings across the road in the woods. They all rose up out of the woods at the same time. I could hear my grandson think, *Mamaw, can I play with those kids ?*

"I thought back to him, *No, honey, these are special kids, they don't play like regular kids.* We floated down the road to the cul-de-sac. There in the dead-end circle was a ship with red 'blips' that went around it, a saucer. There was a 'door' with light. We floated up a ramp, and I saw my 'being friend' and then I don't remember any

more. Anyway, my grandson and I went together on this trip. Or I'd rather call it a dream-I'm not sure."

Pat had a number of intensely affecting experiences that occurred while she was in a meditative or dream state, and so she has been unable to feel confident that they were "real." In some of these dream-events she has seen a variety of flying craft; she has had apparent out-of-body experiences; and she has received telepathic communications.

One such event in October 1992 seemed related to some of her previous experiences. "I dreamed someone was talking to me mentally," she said, "telling me things. I couldn't grasp the exact words, but I heard one sentence like this: *The destruction comes in four quariens.* 'Quarien' is not a word we know, but I took it to mean four parts of some kind. Then I saw what I call a graph. I felt as though I was getting a gentle warning of the 'bad time on earth' like it is very near to happening now."

Such warnings had not only been given to Pat at various times in her life, but they have been part of many abductees' experiences and are indeed one of the most commonly reported events in this phenomenon.

So are unexplained physical marks on abductees' bodies, and here again Pat fits the pattern. In the summer of 1993, Pat discovered an unusual design on her inner wrist, a circle of six dots with a seventh dot in the center. This design, incidentally, was reported in a handful of cases in 1991 and 1992, and it may not be a coincidence that these cases have mostly come from Florida, where Pat lives.

A couple of months after the design appeared, Pat had an experience relating to this circular pattern. "I had a dream August 7, in the middle of the afternoon," she explained. "It was one of those 'naps' that [makes you] 'hit the bed and you're out like a light.' There were voices in my dream that sounded like soft whispers, and I began to listen more closely.

'There was something said about 'being innocent like a child,' and this feeling flooded my whole body and soul. It felt like being in the state of pure innocence without knowing anything about fear, hate, prejudice...a pure, wonderful state of being in love, secure, protected, and 'without sin' as we call it. I saw a scene from my childhood of the town I lived in. It looked like it did way back then. I saw myself, about eleven years old. My feeling in the dream was of great

'Then a voice said to me, *Get up, child, and look to the Nebulous. It can take you there.* And in my dream I got up and unlocked my back door and looked up in a daytime sky and saw a most beautiful circle of lights with one light in the middle, spinning around like marquee lights on a movie house, all spinning in golden color. It was beautiful, and the voice said I could not go now, because in that dream I was pleading to go to the Nebulous now. When he said I couldn't go now, I begged him to let me see it when I was in my conscious mind. He said he would, but I haven't seen it yet. It was like a wondrous thing for another time in my life. But my overall feeling was that I would have died to go to this Nebulous.

"I woke up very groggy, like I was on drugs, and hurried to write it down before I could forget. The nebulous design was the same as the design on my wrist."

Pat felt she understood what "Nebulous" meant, associating it with the lighted circular object she first saw. But "nebulous" is an adjective rather than a noun-" nebula" is the proper form-and thus there is no specific definition for reference other than "cloudy," "lacking form," and "unidentified," according to the dictionary.

Exactly two months later, on October 7, Pat received a related communication while in a conscious state of mind, explaining the "Nebulous." A voice said, *The Nebulous is a code; the code has been broken.* Pat saw a whole Nebulous followed by a broken one. "I could see a jellylike stuff that connected the dots," she described. "I knew that the Nebulous was then something that was in our bodies when we were created. When we were created, we were supposed to have a perfect Nebulous. This gave us personal contact with our Creator. When the Nebulous was broken, by disobedience, we no longer had personal contact with the Creator. We had to adapt to living on our own, thus losing our innocence and pure state of being in human form."

This image reinforces Pat's altered understanding of God and a spiritual plan. Overall, her experiences with the alien entities have, to the best of her conscious recollection, felt very positive. With a strong religious faith, she

has accepted them as angels.

"In my abductions," she has said, "I have never gotten a feeling of evil. In fact, I felt most protected while in the presence of the beings. Some people may say that the beings have the power to control what you feel and think at the time of the abduction, which they most certainly do. But I am hanging on to the childlike faith that Jesus tried to teach us and believe that what I felt was true and good. Why would an all-loving God allow little children to be abducted if the beings were evil and meant to do us harm? I don't believe God would allow it. Even so," Pat conceded, "there are things which the beings do that seem wrong to us and seem violent."

There has been one very disturbing experience, however, which occurred on July 24, 1993. It involved not only an alien entity but also what clearly appeared to be two human men and a human environment. In the early morning hours, Pat awoke in a very groggy condition, feeling as if she'd been drugged, and hearing a strange noise very near her, making staccato *psss, pssss, psss, psss* sounds.

Then she remembered. Two men had come into her bedroom, carried her outside and into a waiting vehicle, a large "military-type" truck. She was in a drugged state, merging in and out of consciousness as the truck took off and rode smoothly for forty-five minutes to an hour. In her brief lucid moments, Pat heard the men engaged in low conversation that she couldn't understand. She tried to speak up, but her tongue was thick and unwieldy. When the truck turned left onto a rough surface, Pat came awake again and in the dark night caught only a glimpse of the countryside out of the large, square front windshield.

The truck slowed down and finally stopped with the engine running. Through the window Pat saw they were parked next to a large mound or hillside. Incredibly, she saw a large doorway open outward, and the truck pulled inside, into the hill. The interior was very dimly lit, but as the vehicle stopped inside, Pat saw a strange being standing as if waiting for their arrival. The being was no more than three (eel tall, dressed in a black hooded cape.

Looking at the being groggily, Pat thought, *What is an oriental girl doing here?*

And immediately a telepathic message came back from the being, / *know you don't like me.*

No, Pat thought, *no, I don't. I don't want to do this again. But they can't break me, because they couldn't do it before.*

When the truck parked and she was assisted out, stepping a long way down from the high passenger compartment, Pat saw that the area was crowded and "dirty" feeling, with boxes and "junk" stacked along one wall. In the middle of the large room was a stainless steel table, more human-looking than the tables she remembered from alien encounters, and she felt very uneasy.

"They wanted me to get on it," she said, "but I didn't want to. Not that table." But she did get on it, although she didn't remember much about what may have happened. The "oriental girl" hovered around her, moving close and poking at her with some object Pat couldn't see. But she did see the entity's face close to hers, its skin a greenish-gray color. When the creature's eyes blinked and its lids met in the middle, Pat said the effect was repugnant, reminding her of a lizard.

Her next recollection was of getting down from the table and trying to see what the "oriental girl" was doing to her. The entity kept moving around Pat, much to her irritation, making an erratic *psss, pssss, psss* sound. Trying to support herself by holding to the table, she moved away from the entity, but it continued to poke at her. Pat was more alert but still unsteady, and as she circled the table she stubbed her toe painfully against it. Looking down at her foot, she noticed in surprise that the floor was covered with sawdust. *God,* she thought, *this isn't even a real floor!*

With a bit more awareness, Pat avoided the being as much as she could, feeling that whatever it was doing was a sort of "torment." Suddenly she blacked out, and when she came back to consciousness, in her bed, the *psss, pssss* was audible there beside her briefly.

Two days later, Pat noticed a slight bruise on her wrist, with a red dot or puncture inside it. And she also saw

that one of her toenails was badly chipped, almost into the quick, as if it had forcefully struck something hard.

"I didn't like that situation at all," Pat told me, "and I knew that it wasn't the first time I had seen that 'oriental girl.' I've been on that table before, too," she added, remembering how uneasy it made her feel.

She knew that the greenish-skinned, lizard-eyed being was not human, even though the men, the truck, the travel, and the underground facility all certainly seemed to be.

"What kind of aliens," she wondered, "are involved with the government or military?"

3. Polly

Polly first contacted me in late 1992, before she even finished reading INTO THE FRINGE. "I am on page 176,'" her letter said, "and I had to stop to write you."

A passage discussing alien interest in human sexuality had struck a chord that resonated with some of her possible experiences. In the small town where she lived, Polly said, she couldn't find a good support system because the only UFO study group in the area had no women. She asked if I could put her in touch with other female abductees "for mutually beneficial correspondence." What she needed to discuss was too intimate for sharing with anyone other than another woman with similar experiences.

"I have been involved with the UFO phenomenon apparently all my life, and my children also are or have been involved," she wrote. "My father also has had experiences, but he is very careful whom he talks to about them, as he is respected as a technical person and is active still in [a military organization]."

Polly explained that she needed "a woman abductee buddy" because of the sexual nature of some of the events she had endured. "I have all my life been seriously traumatized, with the symptoms of a victim of long-term incest," she wrote, noting that her obsession with "fantasies of strange sexual abuse involving [unfamiliar] intrusive instruments" began when she was four years old.

And its consequences had deeply affected her adult life. "You stopped me short with your discussion of alien-instigated sexual obsessions," she continued. "I have since my teen years found myself every few years in a totally irrational sexually obsessive relationship, characterized by some intelligence talking to me in my mind, directing my actions, and apparently setting up bizarre coincidences to stage interactions."

For the most part, Polly noted, her personal relationships had not been obsessive. But having learned from experience that she could be externally manipulated in her sexual activities, she no longer sought out such involvements. "I now simply stay out of all relationships of a sexual nature," she told me. "The sexual and 'psychic' energy in [the last relationship] was intense to the point of being ridiculous, totally 'directed' and involved frequent telepathy and transference of feelings. I am in counseling for childhood incest, but there is only so far I can go with it, because I don't have a human incest background."

Polly's letter listed several UFO sightings and alien-encounter incidents in her family's experiences, and most of the details were familiar from my research with other abductees. The list included "interactions with 'Elves'; a creature that seemed to slosh through physical objects as if they were water; the usual zigzagging lights; lights that appeared outside my window every night at about the same time and watched me for several hours; maddening poltergeist activity; and many, many vivid 'abduction' dreams."

"I make no claim for them," Polly wrote, "but I know how they felt, a sense since young childhood that something was in my head to keep track of me, a squealing sound sort of in my head which seems associated with contact, and bedroom visitors which my dog, my son, and I all saw."

Polly had merely listed these events, but as a researcher I was interested in the details. I was also interested in the person who was trying to cope with this phenomenon. Replying to her letter, I asked for more information about her experiences and offered to be a good listener, both as an abductee and a woman. Although I had no recollection of any sexually oriented encounters myself, I had learned much from others who had been through such events. And my husband Casey, whose full account is related in INTO THE FRINGE, had himself

experienced a sexual scenario with what appeared to be a hybrid alien female when he was a very young teen. Such events, I knew, were real in terms of their sensations and aftereffects, and any understanding of these scenarios would shed important light on the overall abduction agenda.

I explained these two concerns when I answered Polly's letter, and she agreed to share her information with me as part of my ongoing research. Through letters, phone calls, and taped discussions, I learned much about Polly and the things she and her children had experienced. A tall, fair, striking woman in her mid-forties, Polly's ethnic background is European, primarily Celtic, and Scandinavian. She is an excellent artist, but much of the time in supporting her family she has worked at rather physical jobs. Polly was born in 1946 in New Jersey and grew up in the Southeast. Widowed, she now lives with her children in the Adirondacks.

In addition to the various UFO sightings they had witnessed in this area, it soon became clear that her youngest son, Sam, was also having current alien encounters. In his taped communications and the drawings and reports to Polly which were shared with me, Sam showed unusual maturity and insight for an eleven-year-old.

Everything they told me came strictly from their conscious recollections which, concerning any given event, were very incomplete. Polly relegated some of her experiences to the "vivid dream" category, a common response of many abductees. The statement, "I make no claim for them," meant that she could not objectively verify these events as part of our "usual" reality. Some of them are similar to the virtual-reality scenario (VRS) dream discussed earlier, and some seem to have been simply the surfacing memories of actual events. Nonetheless, to Polly they were "experienced" events, and if they occurred strictly within a mental or psychic framework they still gave her every semblance of reality. The nature of that "reality" was often ambiguous, however, but there were some experiences she had verified as "real" because they had been multiply witnessed or perceived while she knew herself to be in a conscious state of mind.

These began very early in Polly's childhood. "When I was four years old," she told me, "I saw the skinny being who appeared in silhouette against my window shade. It was night, but a bright light, perhaps orangish in color, shone from the other side of the shade. The room was dark except for the illumination outside the shaded window. The being turned to approach me. When I get to this point in the memory, I start shaking my head and saying, 'No, no/ and then the memory stops. I tell myself if the memory comes over me again, I will get beyond this point and find out what happens next, but I never do."

This was also the age, probably not coincidentally, at which she began having the sexual fantasies of "intrusive unfamiliar instruments" used on her. Additionally she reported, "About age four, I had a sense of something having been put behind my left ear."

The next event possibly related to alien activity occurred around the age of fourteen: the onset of an obsession with understanding "the workings of the universe." She explained, "It was like I awakened to a sense of cosmic mission and to an apocalyptic sort of sense of human destiny. I felt I must understand the universe. It became a constant undercurrent of striving which persists even now." Given the reports of other abductees, some of which will be presented later, it was interesting that she related this "job and task on earth" to "Armageddon."

When she was in her late twenties, living in a different location, the next event took place. "Outside the cabin in the Blue Ridge Mountains," she said, "very loud stomping, like several men in work boots, suddenly began on our front porch after no sound of approach. We saw shadowy figures accompanying the very loud stomping. But I don't remember it stopping. I recollect we went to sleep in the midst of all this commotion, which of course makes no sense if we were lying only a few yards from prowlers. We awoke in the morning, remembered the stomping and shadowy figures, and went outside to hunt for footprints but found none."

In early 1987, however, Polly had a conscious look at her mysterious intruders. While sick in bed, she said, "I had a couple of bedroom visitations by two black-robed figures. They had large slanted, glowing, lemon-yellow eyes with no pupils, just like lights. The black-robed figures were about four feet tall. They were identical except that one was a little lighter, like charcoal gray instead of black. When they moved they did everything simultaneously to each other. They glided through my son's toy box when they left-the lower parts of their robes just went right through it."

Polly noted that this event occurred before she had ever seen the cover of Whitley Strieber's COMMUNION or

any other representation of the typical Gray alien figures.

"Someone asked me if I had asked the figures what they wanted. My response was NO! I didn't want to give them any openers! My feeling was that they had come to take me permanently, and I devoted all my energy to rebuking them."

An extremely unusual series of events commenced in late 1987. "The whole thing started with a dream," Polly explained. "I dreamed I was flying over the Atlantic toward the Mediterranean. A white plane with red markings shaped like a small Concorde was approaching me from the opposite direction, the east.

"Shortly after this dream," Polly continued, "I noticed that I was having conversations in my head in French. This was most apt to happen around 4 p.m. My communicator identified himself as a professor in a Russian university. I had a sense of it being near Kiev. At night he would privately beam out psychic messages toward the West in an effort to expose a situation of psychic warfare which he claimed was being waged between political powers worldwide, and in an effort to help bring about peace between the then-USSR and the West.

"One thing I remember him saying very strongly was *maintenant c'est la guerre, maintenant c'est la guerre,* and he emphasized *maintenant,* telling me that psychic warfare was now being waged, directed to influence people in high positions and others who could serve the purposes of the perpetrators-perhaps obscure people who could nevertheless influence events and public opinion."

Her last contact with Evec was in December 1987 as she drove her son, through a snowstorm, to another town. The driving conditions took all her concentration, so she was startled when the French communication began.

"Evec was saying that he wanted me to join with him in prayer for world peace. So I tried praying in French, and that was a total disaster. I don't remember whose idea it was, but we decided to pray in Latin, and that went much better. I was saying things from the Mass in Latin, clearly seeing the snowy surroundings and driving competently, but just as clearly I began to see, like in some sort of parallel vision, the inside of a (probably Russian Orthodox) cathedral. There was a priest in a dark red robe with some kind of tall, funny hat. The interior was not ornate, but the ceiling was high and there was a lot of rich, polished wood. There was a choir consisting of both men and women. "I wish I had had a tape recorder in my head. The choir was singing the most magnificent mass I had ever heard. I could clearly distinguish that it was sometimes in eight-part harmony. It was all in Latin, and it was definitely not any mass that I have sung or heard. This went on for a long time, the whole rest of the ride. I don't recollect it ending, but we did arrive at our destination. This was the last time I ever heard from Evec. I had the feeling we had accomplished all we could together. He had not been seeking me-just 'broadcasting'-he was sending in general, and I happened to pick him up."

These two events in 1987, Polly's visitations by the black-robed beings and the recurrent telepathic conversations with Evec, marked the onset of what would prove to be frequent UFO and alien-related activities in her family's lives. It seemed to focus on Polly and her youngest child, Sam.

A few months after Evec's last communication, Sam had an encounter that paralleled Polly's experience with the black-robed beings. At age six, he saw "black figures flying about the room." Although they were similar to the beings Polly had witnessed, Sam described these characters as "smoke-like" with red eyes. They told him, *Come with us, we'll take you to a better place.*

But Sam wasn't convinced of their good intentions, and even though he was quite young he refused the offer. "No way," he replied, "I'm not going anywhere with you guys!"

After this incident both he and Polly had a number of experiences involving UFO sightings, mainly witnessed from a nearby hill, and a series of the "vivid dream" events that indicated repeated alien encounters.

"We've seen many UFOs with colored lights around them or shooting out from them," she said, reporting that it was "common to see white central lights flash amber, red, and blue."

This was also the onset of several experiences with what Polly and her family referred to as the "Elves." These beings, she said, "would squeak-talk very loud at night" and were extremely frightening to another of her

children who also witnessed some of this activity during the most intense period of activity in 1989 and 1990.

Around this same time, in September 1989, Polly's family also had an experience with a different sort of creature. They perceived it as "sloshing" through solid matter, moving "through physical objects as if they were water." In spite of no clear confrontation with this being, Polly felt that it was "reptilian, huge and loud," making "crashing sounds in the woods like some very large two-legged creature lumbering through the woods in a very wet area. This sound had no approach and no departure," she said, "but there was the definite sense that the perpetrator of all this noise was approaching us. This occurred on a night which included a lot of UFO activity. We witnessed UFOs apparently pursued by fighter-reconnaisance at the air base."

Polly, Sam, and others in her family have had a number of UFO sightings, not only from the hill but also from other parts of the area. In June 1993, for instance, while Sam was traveling in a car driven by a family friend, he watched three UFOs cavort in the sky. "Sam saw three bright UFOs," Polly related. "A bright light suddenly appeared high above and a little ahead of them. It moved quickly downward, then disappeared as suddenly as it had appeared. Then a second appeared suddenly with no gradual approach, to the left of where the first one had, then zoomed across the sky to the right and disappeared." Shortly after this, the car turned onto another street, and Sam watched a third light appear suddenly. It flew a short distance and then went out of sight.

Within a matter of a few weeks, Sam had another sighting, this time of three UFOs together. And the following month, after yet another impressive sighting, Sam wrote me himself about what he'd seen on the night of August 19. "Last night was awesome for UFOs," his account began. "I saw one triangle-shaped one which made a whooshing sound for a long time. It looked like it might have been similar to the triangular one sighted in Belgium in 1988 or 1989. We saw it on TV. The one I saw was flying low....I had heard a whooshing noise first."

Another impressive sighting occurred on August 30, in the same area of the previous sighting. Sam said that this one was a large diamond or triangular shape with blinking lights on the front and rear. "It looked to be really high," he said, "but I could still see it good. I could see solid matter inside the light pattern" as the UFO arced across the sky.

Alien contacts continued to occur, usually recalled the morning after the event as both dream-like and yet real. "Sam told me of an abduction dream which he found frightening," Polly wrote in December 1992, "and this is unusual for him, as he is the only one of my children who seems to seek them and even to miss them. It included some interesting disclaimers to usual UFO accounts, such as 'there was gravity, I was not floating.' He said the interior was about ten feet by ten feet, rounded on the outside, but he felt inside there were some corners. He said it was 'spinning and wobbling' and throwing him around. He was frightened and recollected not wanting to enter the craft. He also recollected being able to see out a window of the craft part of the time and could see stars. He said he felt it was 'a blessing' that he was able, briefly, to see out."

Sam also said he sensed having had contact at some point with "bad aliens who are red, not gray," tacitly identifying the ones he had otherwise remembered as Grays, the same sort of figure so many other abductees have reported. Even more disturbing for Sam, however, was a dream he reported to Polly on the night of March 3,1993.

"Sam just took me aside," Polly wrote, "to tell me about a dream he had last night. He said, 'Can I talk to you in private? It's personal.' He has a partial memory of this dream, or else the dream itself was a fragment. He was with some people approaching the entrance to a UFO. He went through an entry way which led to a place that was all white, but he commented, 'You know how scientists say dogs are colorblind to our colors? I felt like maybe I was colorblind to their (ETs) colors and it wasn't really all white.'

"He said he was in a line with other people and the person in front of him was older than he. This young man proceeded into the craft and approached a long, white tube. He put his penis into the tube. After a little while he apparently withdrew it and left by some way other than the entrance. Sam was next. He did the same thing with the tube as the man before him had done, but his memory ends at this point. He felt this had something to do with the aliens wanting sperm. He said there was no sound and he did not see any aliens. He kept asking me for reassurance, saying, 'That was just a dream, right, Mom?'

"He does not read adult level books and I had never mentioned the sexual intrusions to him. It seems that just in the past year his experiences have become less agreeable to him. Previously he was the one of my children who seemed to feel a need and desire for 'them.' That is not completely gone, but certainly some intrusive elements have been introduced. Damn it, Karla, something is sexually molesting my eleven-year-old boy!"

After pondering on the situation a while, Polly commented, "I think the motive is not sperm gathering, but control. What affects the depths of the human psyche more than issues related to our sexuality? It is a perhaps unadmirable fact that sexual identity is probably the deepest, most primitive, most powerful identity concept that a human being has. Violate sexual identity in a situation where the human is made to believe that he/she is totally powerless, and you have gained a measure of control probably unattainable by any other single act."

Like Polly, I was concerned about Sam's discomfort with this scenario, and its implications. I was also fascinated by his statement that he had not seen any aliens in the experience. Later, Sam expanded this thought on a taped conversation he and Polly sent me. "In UFO dreams," he said, "after I've done what they make me do, they don't let me see them. It's like they make me want to do it, even though I don't want to. I see maybe them disguised as humans, or humans hypnotizing me. I'm not sure if they're humans."

Polly also had a number of abduction or UFO dream-events which felt extremely real to her and sometimes included human-looking figures. Many of the details, some of which will be described below, are amazingly similar to cases I've investigated and which other researchers and abductees have consistently reported. She also occasionally found typical marks on her body, although without any memory of getting them, including "IV-type bruises" on the bend of her arm and "bruises in a triangular pattern" on her upper arm.

Polly's abduction dreams became so frequent and realistic in their details as well as in their effects upon her that in 1991 she began keeping a journal of the dreams and of actual UFO sightings, from which the following excerpts are taken.

"August 31, 1991. I was with a group of people in a light colored room, and aliens were testing us for AIDS. I was found to have some strain of it, but they seemed to be communicating to me that it would not kill me or even seriously harm me. I don't know if this was because of something they did. Others had it as well-many of us were in the same situation. I think communication was telepathic.

"One thing that has characterized my UFO dreams has been an intense feeling of *Wow, this is really This is the real thingl This is really happening.* Typically I am out of doors and I see a UFO or UFOs in the sky. They land or one hovers above me. When I felt the dizzying sense of spiraling upward [in a previous event she had described], that one was different because I was conscious of being in my bed and being spun and sucked upward into a UFO. I think my mind was sucked out of my body."

Questioning the 'reality' of this dream about AIDS, Polly noted that she had in fact been diagnosed with *lupus erythematosis,* an auto-immune disorder, during her teen years.

"October 19, 1991. I remember a dream of a week or so ago which involved aliens. I recollect exiting a craft with them. I remember flying before we landed. There were other humans on board. Some of us went up front, but on the lower level the underside was clear-not glass but something thick yet perfectly clear. We could see down to a spread-out village below. It was daylight. The landscape below was fairly flat, maybe some low hills off to our left beyond the village. We landed, and I remember that I and others exited the craft with the aliens, whose form was like a very simplified human form-no muscle development evident. I think they may have had on form-fitting suits. They had no hair. I recollect something about some covering which had a seam near where an ear would be, but this is a vague memory. They were quite tall, not the four-foot type."

"October 23,1991. I dreamed I was holding a baby for the purpose of healing it. He was in a room at the end of a building that was like a nursery. None of the babies' parents were there. I think I dreamed of a lot of stuff happening in this building. I can still mentally see the face of the baby very clearly. I held it on two occasions. It was blond and blue-eyed, a little boy, and could hold himself erect when you picked him up. His eyes were crossed, one worse than the other, and as I held him he started to get a little better. When I held him the second time, he was strong enough that I could prop him on my hip.

"Then when he was wanting to nurse, I had this really weird thought, sort of apart from the dream, like standing off a little watching the dream. I thought, *What if he isn't really a baby? What if he is really some midget pervert?* I emphasized this last part because it indicates an awareness that we might be interacting with something less human and less innocent than it seemed."

"October 26, 1991. I was in some sort of medical situation in which my head was the object of attention. There were doctors around me. Before my head was the object of attention, I remember sitting up-something about my stomach hurting. I was sitting on something flat, and they were somehow making me travel very fast. I was afraid I would slide off the end and expected them to care, but somehow they did not seem to care. I remember when I sat up I said I could breathe better that way. Then they were going to put long needle-like things in the sides of my head, and I remember thinking in my dream, *When the aliens do this it doesn't hurt; it is just pressure.* Then I started saying over and over again, *I'm in outer space, I'm in outer space,* and they put the long needle things in, and I could sort of hear them going in, like a scraping sound, and feel pressure but no pain.

"The next thing I remember, I was like flying from west to east. I approached a four-corners intersection in the country. I felt like it was just west of [the hill where she and her family often witnessed UFO activity]. It was like they somehow landed me there, at that intersection, and the next thing I remember my eyes opened abruptly and I was in my room. When I woke up I kind of felt different than from a regular dream, like there was something more real about that experience." [It became even more realistic when, in the summer of 1993 Polly came upon that very intersection while out driving. It was a remote, unpopulated area west of the hill.]

"November 17,1991. Actual sighting, not a dream. Returning at night from the mountains which lie to the east of us, I saw a distant UFO. It changed color from red to white to red, etc., but was not a plane because it hopped around so much in all directions-quick movements."

"December 21, 1991. Had dream of sighting and being abducted by UFO. I was with some young man on a roadway on a hillside. I think there were big evergreens around, and down the hill a bit was an open field.... We went down to about the middle of the field and looked back up the hill. Soon the UFO appeared, larger and larger as it approached us. It glided low over the field and landed very close to us. My left arm was linked through the young man's right arm. I remember feeling, *This is it-like this time it's really coming close.* When it landed right near us, I said to the young man, 'Well, here we go!' Three beings came out of the UFO. They were human-looking, dressed in black or very dark colors, male, and surprisingly, taller than we were. I believe they took hold of us and began taking us to the craft, but it didn't feel real unfriendly. The three were pretty much identical. I don't remember faces. It was like they had one mind."

"January 30, 1992. Had a clear and detailed UFO sighting dream. It was daylight and I was looking east. I saw a UFO which was white and pale blue against blue sky. It hovered in one place for a long time while I and others viewed it. I remember looking at the portholes or windows. Then there was a scene where the UFO beings were among us and were taking all those who loved war and aggressive military attitudes and actions. They were taking even children. I was not among those taken. We were made to leave and we knew that the military-minded would suffer, and we felt really bad for them. I think a lot of the aliens were tall and close to human-looking, but also others were sort of like the Grays but I think lighter. I know some had big eyes."

"February 28, 1992. MAJOR UFO DREAM-felt very real. I was standing with another person or people-may have been first in my car, me driving. I saw them [UFOs] above and got out, pulling over to the left. I think there was one we saw very clearly and two others more distant. There were also planes up there, military looking planes. I remember feeling, *This was so realistic.* We waved our arms to draw attention, and the clearest one began coming nearer. I was thinking, *They are going to take us; how am I going to deal with this?* And then it was like the atmosphere of my mind changed. I was suddenly in a state of mind where I could handle this, not go into some kind of fear-shock at the absolute strangeness of it.

'The UFO was sort of grayish, not all lit, and some aliens approached us, also grayish. They were not human looking. I think there were three, but I especially focused on one who was either sort of leaning forward so that his head was more noticeable than any other part of him, or else I just noticed his head the most. I said something to the effect that we were really going with them, and in my altered state of mind I felt I could do it, but I knew I would be subjected to them in the craft. It was like I knew, but in my altered state, well, I can't turn back now, might as well accept it. After that I don't remember anything. I think I felt a little responsible, like I

had involved the people with me in this and maybe it was not good for them. I had a slight bloody nose when I woke up, but think it was related to a cold."

"June 23, 1992. [Recounting an actual event that preceded the dream] my son Sam and I felt compelled to go up on the hill at 10:30 p.m. as there was a glow i n the sky which we felt must be from the sun, as it is not much after the longest day in this north country. When we got up there we felt intensely peaceful. Everything was very, very still, although there is often a wind up there when there is none anywhere else. There were a few fireflies. Then I saw a larger, brighter flash of light in the grass across the road from where we sat. I said to Sam, 'Nothing is really happening, but I feel like if we stay any longer it will.' I felt that if we continued to sit there with our minds focused, we would interact with some energy there and something would happen. I felt it had already begun to happen, but that we still had the option of breaking it off and leaving."

They returned home, and that night Polly had a UFO dream. "I was walking or otherwise traveling along a road at night," she described. "I first saw lights, then saw UFOs-round, a little bigger than stars, and not as bright as stars. They were up to my right, quite near the tops of the trees. I said, 'Wow! I'm really seeing them!' Then I looked up. There was one overhead which descended closer and closer to me. I could clearly see the round bottom part, like an opening. I said, with a little fear, 'Okay, take me.'

"At this point I felt a feeling of being lifted which was like no feeling I can adequately describe. It was like being sucked by force, a dizzying, blinding, overwhelming force. While it was happening I felt intensely that the experience was absolutely real, and in most dreams it never occurs to me to pass judgment on the reality of anything. I was sort of afraid, totally caught up in it (literally and figuratively), very aware of the sense that it was real, and feeling, *Well, I'm in it now, so wherever I am going it is not under my control.'* I couldn't see much, but 1 felt such an incredible feeling of being lifted higher and higher, like it took my mind.

"After the lifting I was aware of being in a white place, but it was not the standard 'round' white room of many UFO reports. I think it was white like white paint, and I recollect a corner, which is also not typical, and some sort of black or dark object. It was like I was seeing only one little part of this place.

"Another thing I recollect was being in some sort of craft and being behind the pilot, who sat on the left side, and noticing his head. It was hairless, apparently with a skull similar to ours, and the skin was white like putty. He turned toward me and appeared to have on some sort of clown mask, although it did not really look like our typical clowns. It had the color orange on it and was otherwise white like plastic. The feeling I got from this pilot was of a detached sort of kindness, not any malevolence but also nothing that could really be called emotion.

"I have some recollection of coming into a base or land while in this craft. It was light, like daylight (whereas I had been abducted in the dark of night). I could see a building, I think with a flat roof, and an outdoor area to my right of the building. I also vaguely recollect at some point desiring to see more clearly and 'them' doing something so that I could, and things came into better focus. In the outdoor area beside the building there were flowers and shrubs and children playing, human children.

'The pilot was still with me when I found myself inside the building. He said they call us something like 'the short round ones' and showed me models of humans between three and four feet tall. These models looked to be made out of hard plastic or something similar and were orange and white. I pointed out to the pilot that I was exactly his height (5'7"). He was thinner built than a human man, maybe a little lighter weight than I, though I am small-boned. A few other aliens were present, also.

"In this building were some human children. Now that I think about it in my waking state, maybe they call us 'the short round ones' because they have so many of our children. Our children, when healthy, are rounder than they. They appeared thin and lightweight, but it was hard to judge because they were clothed. I don't have a clear recollection of their clothing, I think light-colored jumpsuits.

"I felt I was not the only adult human there but that there were more human children present than human adults. Near me was a little blond-headed boy about three years old. I picked him up and held him, and he really seemed to like that. Then I said, 'Where is your mommy?' and he looked sad and didn't say anything. I got the strong feeling that the pilot who stood to my left and others of his kind very much disapproved of my asking

that question. Then I noticed a little girl, also blonde. I feel she was eleven years old for some reason, though I think she was more the size of an average nine-year-old. I asked her if she was the boy's sister, and she said no. I had the feeling they had no kin people with them. The little girl also seemed sad, and I remember feeling grateful that 'they' hadn't taken my children from me, but I was sad about these children and the many others.

'There was a big window arched at the end to my right. Outside the window was a little play yard. A dark-haired human woman was tending a group of human children. I felt she was no kin to them, except that they were all human. I did not see the other adults whom I felt were there somewhere.

"I recollect that there was a process of returning me, but I don't remember it in any detail now. I felt that the experience within the piloted craft seemed 'staged' somehow for the benefit of my belief system, but the intense lifting feeling felt somehow necessary and real."

"January 24,1993. Three nights in a row I have had dreams including UFOs, a craft, and beings. The next night in actual awake reality, I watched UFO activity in the sky, two luminous fiery balls a little bigger than basketballs."

One of Polly's most vivid and recent dream-events she reported to me at length in a letter, complete with drawings of the creatures she remembered seeing.

"On the night of June 27 (1993)," she wrote, "I had dreams which included vivid visual impressions of aliens and appearances of very bright, very real-feeling lights. The aliens did not look like what I would have depicted if you had said, 'Draw a typical alien.' The characteristics were a pronounced browridge, convolutions or folds on the forehead and beside the eyes, eyes back under shelter of the brow-ridge, and gray or gray-green skin. They were proportionately tall and thin. There were at least three and I am pretty sure more, standing closer together than I have drawn them. I am not sure about my depictions of nose and mouth, but nose and mouth were somehow represented. I'm also not sure about details of the lower body.

"I remember being utterly fascinated with their brow folds and the folds beside their black eyes, but not looking directly into those eyes. Also with the texture of their fairly tough skin, which was sort of like an artist's kneaded eraser. I have a recollection of having been very close to the one on your left [in drawing], so close that my face was right up by the right-hand side of the face, looking closely at those folds. Then I recollect being back a little further from them seeing the group standing together, but I don't know what happened first.

"I felt as I awakened that what I retained were two fragments of a much more detailed experience, as if I had sort of mentally photographed those two segments to 'bring back' as souvenirs-yes, it was almost as if they posed for these memories! That is why I could get so close to that one without having to become engulfed by his eyes, and it is why they stood so obligingly in that little group!"

Polly and Sam reported these and a number of other experiences for almost a year, many of which seemed to be reflections or memories of fairly current experiences. And once she felt more comfortable with our relationship, she was able to address the sexual issue and share the painful memories from her childhood.

'The area of my psychology which I feel has been most damaged by 'them' or by some very early influence," she confided, "is the area of my sexual concepts. At approximately age four, I became obsessed with sadomasochistic sexual imagery. The images involved a little girl on a flat table similar to a doctor's exam table, but I think it may have been metallic looking, silver metallic, a little grayer than actual silver. I remember being obsessed with these images day in and day out, and I would try to detach from them by saying that the little girl was not me, but yet at the same time I knew it was.

"Sometimes there would be one 'person' doing things to the little girl and sometimes several. There were generally those who observed. I had the sense of both males and females present. Occasionally a female would do a procedure, but more often a male."

There were machines involved, as well as probes and needles. 'The intrusions involved what I now understand to be the genital area, but I did not understand at the time, as well as the rectum. Also, I do recollect needles to the navel, and this now makes sense when I read adult women's accounts of intrusions through the navel. My

sense of the 'people,' if it ever was clear, is now indistinct. My early medical history does not include anything like this.

"One thing I did which could have been a cry for help and an attempt to resolve this situation was that I drew pictures of these events. I remember especially at five and six drawing the little girl on the table and the 'people' around her with the intrusive machines. I showed these pictures to my mother, but I have no recollection of her reaction except that I don't think she shamed me.

"If I had been molested by adult family members I don't think I would have had images of an exam table and needles associated with machinery, especially at ages three and four. I think these images had to have come from some source outside my own imagination. This early influence imprinted my sexuality with the dynamics of sadomasochism. I feel this imprinting set me up to be victimized and set me up to expect all sexual encounters to involve humiliation by a dominator."

In fact, she said, whenever she found herself in 'power-sex' situations, 'There was a voice that would talk to me and say, *Everything is right on schedule. Everything is going as planned.* But the plan did not prove benevolent toward me!"

The overall discernible effects of all their experiences on Polly and Sam, to this point, are several. Sam has an overly mature outlook for his age, evincing an interest in questions of cosmic importance including reincarnation and the history of the human race. And, after the sperm-taking scenario, he is also, according to Polly, very uncomfortable with the idea of alien intrusions upon his developing sexuality. For Polly, too, the sexual aspects of her life have been altered by these events. She avoids sexual involvements now, in an attempt to regain control over the compulsions that have caused many problems for her in the past.

She has no explanation for the alien intrusions into her family's life, only a strong sense that this involvement has been with her for a very long time.

Most of it has been unseen. In addition, or as part of the UFO events, Polly has experienced internal communications from "spirits," although she cannot identify them more specifically.

"They so often enter or I enter them in a sense," she explained, "in a sense in which we each or all allow each other to be there simultaneously. I don't know if this is a UFO thing, but they are multidimensionals."

Her experiences comprise many elements: UFO sightings, entity encounters, dream-events, physical effects, spiritual teachings, and a sense of an unknown mission she must perform. In their experiences, Polly and Sam have both felt positive and negative presences, fellowship and fright, which makes it hard to place all of the events into a single framework, the acts of a single group. There is also the question of human involvement, since both of them report encounters with humanoid figures that have not yet been clearly discerned or identified.

The amassed data from reports like Polly's show that the abduction agenda is much too complex for any of the current explanations, both in the events and in their effects on the individuals involved. Certainly on the individual level, the phenomenon is profoundly disturbing and transforming, but it is even more so when the massive numbers of people having abductions is considered. The agenda, given this level of pervasiveness, must involve much more than the transformation of the individual. The entire society is beginning to feel its effects, and there would seem, from the testimony of witnesses like Polly and the other women in this project, to be much more yet to come.

4. Lisa

Whereas the accounts from Polly and Pat contain several elements that may not be familiar to most students of the abduction phenomenon, Lisa's experiences are much more "typical," in one sense, comprising many recurrent details-although, as these accounts are meant to show, the accepted definition of the "typical" abduction is woefully inadequate.

A thirty-five-year-old wife and mother of two children, Lisa and her husband Neal have lived in southern

Alabama for the past fifteen years. Her medium build and thick brown hair reflect her ancestry of Italian and Scotch-Irish. To all outward appearances, Lisa's life seems quite normal. While her husband works at a good job in heavy industry, Lisa takes care of her home and children, involved in the usual activities of a family with teenagers, and she enjoys gardening as well as more strenuous outdoor activity.

I met Lisa and Neal while I was in Florida to give a presentation on abduction research. Several of the local UFO group's members invited me to one of their homes for a more informal and intimate discussion, and when I described a few of the less well-known events some abductees have reported, Lisa suddenly became very interested. We spoke privately, and she told me that some of the things I had just discussed were familiar to her, from her own experiences. Lisa had some conscious memories of encounters with the typical Grays, as well as missing-time episodes, multiple-witnessed UFO sightings, unexplained body marks, telepathic communications from unseen sources, and many dream-memories of ambiguous reality-except in those instances where other evidence pointed to an actual event.

While the details of Lisa's life-long involvement are certainly very typical, the alien intrusions are clearly more intense and frequent than in many such cases. Equally intense are her emotional reactions to these encounters and her need for help in coping with them.

"Meeting other abductees has helped me feel not so isolated," she wrote me shortly after that first meeting, "but my depression is still severe. I can't believe I have them [alien interactions] so frequently. If they're trying to wear me down, they've about succeeded. The flashbacks just don't yet make sense, or maybe they have no intentions to. I'm starting to have military flashbacks, and my phone clicks and goes crazy. The 'Morse code' and humming in my ear has literally driven me up the wall.... I don't want to be used for experiments or reproductions, but how do I stop them? I pray until sometimes I'm prayed out. Why won't God help? By the way, I don't feel special or chosen like they said."

I began my investigation with Lisa by asking about any unusual childhood events. Her responses showed a pattern of activity going back as far as she can remember. "The sounds of things walking through the house," she said, "have been going on since I was small. The shadows [dimly discernible figures] happened more in my later life, from twenty years old on. Like I said, they do it [appear] right in front of me." She also recalled episodes of missing time in childhood. "I would go to the woods-we owned twenty-five acres when I was a child-and come back, and it would be dark."

And the missing-time experiences still occur. "Now, I'll look at the clock and roll over and look at it again, and sometimes it will be an hour later and other times four hours," she explained, "and I could swear it hadn't been but a few minutes. It makes me disoriented after I realize there's been some missing time. It's hard to go on when something robs you of your life, and you have no memory of it.

"The Grays appeared about three or four years ago," she continued. "Before that, I didn't know what was causing these things, but the shadows I've seen forever, seems like."

In 1980, however, Lisa did see something very different from the shadows, in a terrifying event. "A being appeared to me," she recalled, "when I was a couple of weeks pregnant. We had just got into bed and Neal already seemed 'out of it,' and the being appeared on the end of the bed, squatting, telling me mentally the child I was carrying was special and it would be a boy. I almost had a fainting spell. I threw the covers over my head as the being was leaping toward me, I believe, and said, 'In Jesus' name, take it away!' It disappeared, and I fell quickly asleep. It was about three feet tall, dark-skinned, leathery looking. I don't remember anything else." The child, incidentally, did turn out to be a boy. Now in his teens, he has proven to be extraordinarily intelligent, with an IQ that tested above 140 when he was seven.

After going through Lisa's early memories, I asked her to fill out a preliminary questionnaire which focused on a number of events most often reported by abductees. A comprehensive comparative chart of the responses to this questionnaire by all eight women is presented on p. 231. Because Lisa's experiences are so very typical, however, many of her responses will be discussed here in some detail, as representative of reports from numerous abductees.

She had already mentioned a couple of these things-the odd phone disturbances, the beeping and humming

sounds in her ear-and there were other details, internal and external, which are often part of the alien abduction phenomenon.

For instance, there were sightings of unexplained lights, within the house as well as in the sky. Lisa described "large whitish-yellow lights in the sky that blink out like a light switch and fast-moving streaks of light." She has also witnessed "large and small balls of red or white light bouncing in the house" and blue, orange, and white lights flooding in through the windows from craft outside. A couple of passages from her journal show some of these typical events:

"August 10,1993. When I got ready to go to sleep at 11:30 or so, my cat noticed it, then I did-a small ball of light bouncing through the room. It was just zipping around. I probably saw it for fifteen seconds, then it went out of the room. In the morning my eyes were burning and irritated."

"August 24, 1993. Woke at 1 a.m., felt something was happening, looked around the room, fell back asleep. Woke up at 4:25 a.m. with white lights turning, like strobe lights, outside of my bedroom window. Before I could race to the window, it was gone. My eyelids were very swollen in the morning, and also my back hurts."

"March 27, 1993. Felt uneasy, like having a nightmare, struggling and thrashing about, and then feeling sort of paralyzed. I felt the need to scream and resist, and I yelled, 'No!' two or three times. Trying to wake Neal up, I grabbed onto him. I was being lifted off the bed by a force, but I struggled and somehow broke out of it. When I looked around the room, a reddish-orange light flashed in the house and then went to the side and it seemed white. This was about 1:00 to 1:20 a.m."

Another common report involves bizarre, unexplained behavior of electrical equipment in the abductee's environment, and, as an excerpt from Lisa's journal shows, this has also frequently occurred with her and Neal.

"At about 3 a.m. my husband and I were waked up by the radio going crazy, the front porch light blinking, and the touch-light lamp in the living room on bright." Even the phone began to act oddly, ringing and crackling incessantly with no one on the other end of the line. "Finally we just had to unplug the phone," her journal noted. "I was scared."

This was not an isolated event, as other entries in her journal show: "May 10, 1993. About midnight or so, the kids' radio came on and the lamp in the living room came on twice. Neal and I had disturbed sleep."

Unexplained activity of helicopters over the home, following, as it does so often after UFO activity, shows up in Lisa's case. For her, it began in early 1993, as her journal notes.

"March 15, 1993. About 12:20 or 12:30 a.m. I saw some beautiful blue lights coming down the hallway [through a window from a craft near the house], then somewhere around that time I heard a helicopter over our house by my bedroom window. It stayed for a while, then left. It appeared on the scene moments after the craft was leaving. Couldn't sleep rest of the night."

"May 29, 1993. At 3:30 p.m. my son and I saw a dark helicopter pass over our house."

"September 22, 1993. Helicopters were still flying at 11 p.m. The humming and 'Morse code' were almost deafening again."

"September 23, 1993. Went to bed about 11:30. I 'dreamed' about the Grays telling me how easy it was to get me. Then it changed to a room where there were autopsies going on. Somebody human-sounding was talking, and a woman was lying on a table who had been 'done.' They said some people had a Y-incision and some a straight incision. She was a white woman, probably in her forties. Also, sometime during the night a helicopter was flying close to our house, but I couldn't get up and fell back asleep. So tired in the morning."

Lisa has many of the symptoms typically reported by other abductees, including stress, sleep disruption, depression, a sense of having a job or task to perform, disturbing dreams of massive UFO landings and of widespread disasters.

"I feel they have said they love me and that I was special (yeah, sure), and they say that I will be used for some

purpose," Lisa commented. "Probably to tell others about them. I've had dreams telling me to go to isolated places and store food. Can't remember more. I have had small glimpses of catastrophes, just a flash of severe starvation, not enough to remember."

A journal entry from December 1992 records one of the dreams of massive UFO presence which is very commonly reported. "In this dream ," Lisa notes, "I was in the dark with someone, looking at the night sky, and the spaceships were coming in landing. I told someone, 'They're finally coming'."

Among the events of actual abduction scenarios-whether recalled consciously, in flashbacks, or in memories surfacing in dreams-Lisa's experiences include almost every type of reported event. Most women, for instance, have undergone physical, specifically gynecological, examinations while in the hands of the aliens. Lisa's account echoes the usual scenario, beginning with the memory of being "on their spaceship on a small examination table all scrunched up.

"My legs were put as close to my bottom as possible. They had something holding me open while they inserted [something] or did their exam. The table seemed to be at their height. Seems like there were two of them. I remember looking up between my legs and the alien looking back at me. It seemed to be very uncomfortable. I can't remember more after looking at the Gray."

On another occasion, Lisa remembers being less cooperative during an exam, "giving them a hard time about being examined. I remember asking them, 'How would you like me to do this to you?' I don't know what they said...I'm sure they sedated me." The following morning, she suffered from a sore chin and a bruise on the top of her right wrist.

A journal entry from July 1993 shows how disturbed she has felt during some of these examinations. "Had a 'dream' of being on their spaceship in a huge room on a table with the Old One examining me," she noted. ″I was fine until he showed me an instrument (I can't remember it now) he was going to use on me. Then I got upset. He placed his hands on my head, and I don't remember anything else."

Lisa also recalls, more than once, being shown alien or "hybrid" babies. An entry from October 1993 states, "I gave birth to a fair-looking baby and called it a star baby. It had real light blue eyes with unusual pupils."

One of the most commonly reported events is that of an alien's face up very close to the abductee's face. Some researchers, taking their cue from abductees' descriptions of this event, call it a "mind-scan," and whatever else this activity does, it certainly seems to control the abductee mentally. Lisa remembers this occurring on several occasions. 'The ETs like to put their noses almost on my nose," she explained, "and when they do this I just stare into their eyes. Sometimes that's all I ever see, their eyes, and nothing else that's happening."

Besides being told by the aliens that she is "special" and "chosen," as often happens with others, Lisa has also recalled scenarios of training or instruction. In a November 1993 dream, for example, she was in a brightly lit room talking with some people whose identity she can't recall. They were telling Lisa how she should go about discussing the aliens with other people. "I was being told I needed to learn better how to speak about them," she said.

And she has been given information about the aliens' interest in human genetics, another common communication. Two entries from her journal typify this event.

"August 16, 1993. In one 'dream' Neal and I were raising weird creatures, and another [part] was where they [aliens] were telling me how they have been genetically altering us gradually. I felt like we were their pet project or something."

"August 20, 1993. Woke at 2 a.m. and at 4:53 a.m., got up and went to kitchen for something to eat. Had a 'dream' of an ape or gorilla, whatever you want to call them, sitting on my bed holding my hands, and someone was saying, *They are you and you are them.* Very nauseated in the morning and had sweated very badly last night."

Other, more specific, physical effects have also been reported in Lisa's experiences. In addition to the nausea

and eye irritations that she suffered after certain abductions or abduction 'dreams,' Lisa has also found patterns of bruises, and puncture marks that couldn't be accounted for in any mundane way.

She has the well-known scoop marks, for example, one on her lower right leg and another on the upper part of her right arm, which are permanent. Temporary marks, however, are much more commonly reported. In Lisa's case, these have included a triangle of circular bruises on her hip-the triangle pattern shows up more frequently than any other design-scattered bruises on other body parts, such as the bridge of the nose; the bottom, top, and heel of the foot; the wrist; inside the arm very close to the armpit; all around the knee; and on top of the hand.

But bruises aren't the only marks that show up. Like Polly and others, Lisa has found damaged areas in the bend of her elbow and scratches, which she is certain were not accidentally inflicted, in unusual places. After one particular abduction in October 1993, in which she recalled being in a pool of water with the aliens around her before they took her to an examination room, Lisa found a scratch across her lower left jaw, as well as two bruises on the outside of her left knee. And she has had patterns of bruises which are so commonly reported that we have come to refer to them as "clamp marks" because they appear to have been left by either three- or four-fingered hands grasping the upper arms or the thighs very forcefully.

All of these physical effects are very familiar in abduction reports, as are instances of blood found on the abductee's body or bedclothes after an encounter. Lisa, too, has had this occur, in situations where the blood could not be explained as coming from a bloody nose or some other injury.

It is clear, then, that Lisa's abduction situation has involved most of the "typical" scenarios and events, even including episodes where she has been shown how to operate a craft and has been warned about the physical dangers of touching a craft during certain phases of operation.

But she has also experienced several of the less familiar events-less familiar, that is, in terms of abduction research findings which have been made public. Regrettably, much of what abductees have reported has not been publicized, for a number of reasons. In some cases, as with alien-human sexual activity, this may be because so many abductees are unwilling to talk about such intimate things.

In other cases it is the researchers themselves who are reluctant to expose some aspects of the events, fearing they will push the credibility of their audience, especially their desired audience of professionals and academics, too far. Some parts of this phenomenon, they fear, are simply not "politically" acceptable, no matter what the abductees themselves insist they have experienced. Lisa and several other of the women whose experiences are reported in this book, therefore, are to be commended for their courage in discussing these aspects.

The first highly controversial area is that of sexual activity. It is important to remember, when reading the following journal entries, that the aliens have superb "virtual reality" capabilities and that without external verification it is impossible to know if the memory or dream of an encounter reflects an actual event. This is especially important when assessing reports of sexual activity with the aliens, for in some situations people tell of seeing celebrities, religious figures, and even dead acquaintances.

One of the first sexual situations Lisa remembers happened in late 1989, beginning with her conscious awareness of the aliens' presence. Lying in bed, she woke up and saw a group of aliens, one of which held a wand-like instrument, around the bed. The tallest of the beings was touching Neal's chest. "I looked at them," Lisa explained, "and told them not to touch him and to leave him alone. That's the night I got to see them for a few seconds in an unaltered state. Then they pointed the wand at my forehead, made me feel dizzy, and I was out. I believe that's the night they made me have sex while they watched."

The sexual interaction involved another abductee. Lisa said the man gave her his name, T. M. Reiss, which he spelled for her. "He told me they had been abducting him since he was a child," she said. "He was very sorry."

In a couple of the sexual scenarios, Lisa recalled interacting with creatures of some sort. These types of bizarre reports turn up less frequently in the research, but they are not unheard of. She recalled the first episode as a dream-event, in which she and a gorilla-type creature were sexually engaged. Lisa woke up after having this 'dream' when the sound of a "breathing device" brought her to consciousness. She saw a dim figure in the doorway step out of sight and then, as unlikely as such a response always seems in these situations, she went

back to sleep. The action, however, was not yet over. At 3:25 she woke up again, flinging her arms about and trying to rouse Neal, who was completely unresponsive. She saw a lighted object outside the bedroom window, and she could feel an energy controlling her body.

'They had some force on me," she said, "stopping me from getting up. When the craft [outside] started to lift up, it broke the force. I ran outside, but I really can't say for sure if I saw something."

On another occasion, while lying down during the day, Lisa dreamed about a number of sexual situations. Something like a small horse was involved, as well as a "dolphin," some Grays, and "a dark, leathery, scaly creature" whose features she couldn't clearly recall. After waking from this dream, Lisa experienced the "humming and Morse code" noise that occasionally plagued her internal hearing.

After a similar 'dream' in which Lisa was placed with several animals in sexual situations while being observed, she awoke the next morning with a bruise on her lower ankle and a tender area on the back of her head, in spite of no consciously recalled injuries to these areas. And immediately following another dream-like sexual episode with what appeared to be a well-known public figure, Lisa awoke in her bed and saw a nebulous form move quickly across the room and disappear. Startled and frightened, it took her a long time to fall back asleep, and in the morning she felt nauseated.

Such things made it hard for her to dismiss all these dream memories as mere figments, yet they were such scant evidence as to give no certainty of the events' reality. Whether they were real or dreams, there is the question of motivation. "I believe sometimes I'm made to dream odd things," Lisa said, "to see my reaction to them." A poignant journal entry reveals how confusing this activity can be, how vulnerable it leaves the abductee. "Dreamed Neal and I made love," she noted. "I hope it was him."

The second controversial area reported by Lisa involves, as with the case of Pat in the previous chapter, the viewing of "new bodies." She told me that her memory of seeing a new body occurred sometime in late 1992. Although she was keeping a journal by that time, which recorded UFO sightings, conscious events, and dreams, both alien-instigated and the normal, self-generated variety, she refused for some reason to include this event in the record.

Lisa recalled lying on a table aboard a craft, with her "new body" beside her. "I got out of my old body," she said, "and stood next to it. I was looking it over, and I even looked at my teeth. The body was perfect, but it had my long hair that I used to have. Somebody said they could make people believe that was me," she continued, "even though it was perfect and with long hair. I wanted so badly to get in it, but I did not. I don't remember who the beings were in the room with me, just being overwhelmed seeing the body. I don't remember how I got back in my old body."

Later, in 1993, Lisa had experienced another dream-event about this situation. "Dreamed of showing my new body to some friends," her journal records, "and reading to them from a special book about humankind. I was reading with some clear instrument like a triangle. Don't remember what I was reading." This scenario of reading a book during an encounter, by the way, is a little-known detail reported in a number of separate cases.

Similar dreams recurred in which she found herself displaying the new body. In one briefly recalled episode she was showing it to her doctor, and in a much more involved dream, Lisa felt as if she had actually died in order to get into the new body, which she then showed to her husband and some other people. There were other details of this dream that suggest it may at the very least have been a screen memory of an actual event. She insisted on keeping her son with her, for example, explaining to her husband that the son "is one of us, like me." Lisa had been told in a past encounter that the aliens were interested only in her and her son, not the entire family.

The encounter in the new body was followed by a more familiar situation, in the exam room. "A doctor and a nurse were giving me an examination," she recalled, "and telling me I had hepatitis. But they were giving me some sort of vaginal exam. I told them to leave me alone, that they weren't my doctors, [but I] don't remember more."

In addition to the sexual encounters and the alleged cloning capabilities of the aliens, a third controversial topic

avoided by many researchers focuses on military involvement with aliens and abductees. For Lisa, as is so often the case with abductees, the first memory of a possible encounter with the military surfaced in a dream.

"I was being interrogated by the military," she said, "pushed and made to lie crouched on the ground. In the back were some trucks, and beside them were guys in black uniforms standing watching me. The men asking questions were in regular military clothes. They held me down with the butts of their guns. They told me to give them the knowledge, and they said 'at any cost.' I told them I didn't know what they were talking about, and they just repeated themselves."

Since that dream in August 1993, however, Lisa has had other memories of this particular 'event' come to the surface. The most detailed recollection came as part of a situation which closely fits the definition of the VRS dream discussed earlier. On the night of December 19, 1993, Lisa had several dreams of a very ordinary sort. But in the midst of these regular dreams, she suddenly found herself in a situation and environment that had quite a different 'feel' to it.

"All of a sudden I'm surrounded by military men, some in black clothes and some in green," she noted. "I was being made to walk hurriedly on the grounds of some installation. I don't know how I got there or left. The soldiers were rude to me. I told them to stop pushing on me.

"Then we went into an office of some type that seemed plainly decorated. It looked like white walls and no pictures, and the desk and chair were plain. A man was sitting behind the desk. He was a little heavy and looked slightly balding, but his hair was short. He had on green clothes and no medals or name as I could tell. He started asking me questions, about what I felt on the aliens. It seemed like he was wondering about how to get the public prepared.

"I told him that a lot of the public was already aware, and some would never accept it. I asked him how he could expect that, since we don't all agree on other things. We talked, I believe, a little about religion and politics. I believe there were other people in the room. I probably wasn't allowed to look.

'Then I think they brought me something to drink. I don't remember more. I just know this man looked bewildered and concerned. I believe the alien issue has gotten out of control in his opinion. I expressed to him that I was tired of the game-playing."

For Lisa, then, the abduction phenomenon's parameters include witnessed UFO sightings; conscious perceptions of lights, probes, and aliens in the house; conscious telepathic communications; bizarre external physical reactions from inanimate objects in her environment; conscious perception of missing-time episodes; unexplained physical marks on her body; and a number of virtual-reality/dream scenarios involving both human and alien beings.

In a nutshell, this is an accurate general definition of the phenomenon as reported by numerous abductees. But as the eight representative accounts here demonstrate, the details of that scenario are highly bizarre, variable to an absurd degree from case to case, invariably intrusive, sometimes physically painful, spiritually ambiguous, ingeniously deceptive, and, at every level, deeply disturbing.

Three experiences Lisa has recently reported will make this point very clearly.

The first, which she recalled in a dream state, began inside an unknown facility. "I was on a table," Lisa said, "and it looked like I was being pushed down a hall with bright lights. They [her attendants] were quickly strapping my feet down with straps that looked like velcro. I don't know what these beings that abducted me looked like. Then something was inserted in my left ear, I think. I told them they were killing or hurting my brain, then I blacked out."

In the next remembered scene, something very different was going on, this time involving other humans. "I believe the FBI came to arrest me," Lisa said, "and they called me by my maiden name. One man was really mean to me." Lisa remembered nothing more, but she wondered the next morning if the soreness in her left ear and her throat had anything to do with the memory of the ear probe.

The second experience, which she recorded as a dream, also involved some physical procedure aboard a craft, but it began on a rather exalted level. "I dreamed I was given a heavenly audience," Lisa reported. "I believe it meant that they [aliens] invited me to speak with them, but I don't remember about what." A physical exam followed. "I saw myself on a table in a spaceship and alien beings standing at the end of my feet, telling me or each other that I was an excellent breeder," she recalled. "A reptile-looking creature was getting on top of me, I guess to rape me." After this, she remembered nothing more.

The final experience had a much more conscious element to it than the 'dreams/ in spite of its more 'fantastic' nature. Lisa had gone to bed early on this night and awoke at 1:10 a.m. Preparing to fall asleep again, but still awake, she began to feel a growing sense of some "pressure" which became very intense.

"I looked up at the ceiling over me," Lisa said, "and saw images that looked like vultures or the phoenix bird. There seemed to be two of them...trying to chase each other off. Their eyes glowed green, I believe. Then there appeared a spirit form. It seemed to have white hair and a beard. I started yelling frantically, 'Oh, God, oh, Heavenly Father!' over and over and trying to get myself free from the force. I felt my eyes roll back in my head.

"Then I felt a great pulling, and I'm not sure if I was in spirit form or my body, but very quickly I was in the clouds and sky. I looked down and saw the lights of a town and vapors of the clouds. The spirit took me to a wall or some sort of tunnel, and I was going to be taken in. I don't remember more of what I saw. The next thing I know, I was back in bed and looking at the same birds disappearing. I came out of the odd state I was in and went to the kitchen, I was trembling so bad. The clock said 3:40."

"God help me," Lisa concluded, "whatever I was seeing." The vulture and the phoenix, after all, are very different creatures who embody quite different concepts.

A time loss of two and a half hours occurred that night. And so did a serious injury to Lisa's back. The "great pulling" that took her upwards jerked her with such force that the next day she could hardly walk. The pain continued getting worse, and when she consulted her doctor, she was told that the spinal damage could prove permanent. In this one instance, at least, the event was more than virtual reality.

5. Anita

Anita's experiences, while not so intense or frequent as Lisa's, are probably more akin to what most abductees witness and recall. They include a number of details commonly reported in other cases. But in her situation, typical of these others, conscious memories of events have been less frequent and more moderate in scope. Her attitude similarly reflects this moderate quality, possibly because she's been able to reflect upon her experiences with quiet equanimity.

Born in 1947, Anita has spent most of her life in Texas. Her ancestry is French, Scotch, and Native American. A wife, mother, and grandmother, she is attractive and intelligent. For a while, she was a trained volunteer emergency medic, and later she owned and operated her own business. From her home in a large central Texas city, Anita now takes care of her family and also pursues several intellectual interests. In the past several years, for instance, she has been drawn to a study of psychic and alternative methods of healing. Anita has been consciously aware of UFO activity since childhood, and her brothers and sisters have also had recurrent UFO events throughout their lives. So, perhaps, may have some of Anita's children and grandchildren.

Her first conscious encounter with the unknown was at the age of five. "I recall sitting in my front yard one afternoon," she said, "and sensing someone watching me. I turned around, and back behind me stood a man in a red flight suit. I have no memory of what happened after that."

Like many abductees, what she recalled from childhood was frequently unexplained, but not necessarily related to UFOs. The nature of the events remained ambiguous.

Episodes of missing time which have recurred throughout her life began at an early age. She recalled one such

episode that happened at the family home, which was in a very rural setting. "I suddenly came out of what I call 'mind blank'," Anita explained. "I found myself close to a creek near our house. I did not know how I got there. The strangest thing was that 1 was coatless and shoeless, and it was miserably cold outside."

While these two events in isolation don't necessitate a UFO-based explanation, in the context of Anita's life-long experiences, they prove to be very typical of abduction patterns. And the third consciously remembered event from her childhood did bring UFOs into the picture.

"When I was twelve," Anita reported, "my brother shouted one night for me to come look out the window. I did, and just above tree level, about a quarter of a mile from our house, was a large band of beautiful lights moving from west to east. They appeared to be all on one craft. My brother was around ten at the time. He said it was a UFO. There was no sound, and we had our windows open."

Anita and others in her family have continued to have UFO sightings from time to time. Her older brother, for instance, who is a long-distance truck driver, has reported a number of sightings especially in the southwest part of the country, although elsewhere as well.

"He tells of a time he and his wife had stopped on the highway, somewhere up around Nebraska, to get some sleep," Anita related. 'They were awakened by a very bright light shining down on them. They got out to see what it was but couldn't because the light blinded them. They said it didn't make any noise, and that is what frightened them. They jumped back in the truck and headed for Scott's Bluff. Whatever it was followed them all the way."

For Anita, the strange experiences continued into her adulthood. In the 1970s, she lived in Houston for a while, and it was there that a number of events occurred. The most traumatic and terrifying was in 1972, when at age twenty-five, Anita had her second encounter with the man in the red suit. As in the initial meeting, this occurred in the daytime while Anita was conscious, but as in most abductions her state of mind was soon altered as the strangers intruding into her home took control of the situation. She was lying on the living room couch when she became aware of presences there with her, and instantly her mind was clouded. She saw a man who appeared "human looking in every way" bending over her.

"I have never experienced such terror in my life," Anita said. "It was like a dream in that I knew the human was raping my body, but I did not feel anything at all."

The rapist had not come alone. "I could see maybe three others," Anita reported, "standing by the table, but it was like seeing them through frosted glass. I could make out their bodies and the red suits but could not really see any details." She has no idea, therefore, if the other figures were human-looking, like the rapist, or alien. She does remember that after the forced intercourse, the red-suited man spoke to her about something, but the only communication that stayed with her consciously was his statement, *I'll be there to help you.*

Anita doesn't remember what may have happened after that, but as soon as she was aware that the men were gone, she reacted in a very conscious state of mind. "I was so terrified," she said, "that I grabbed my children and got out of the house immediately."

The trauma of the event had disturbing effects on Anita for a very long time. "It is very embarrassing to say this," she confided, "but after that experience I started wearing a tampon twenty-four hours a day so they couldn't do it again. As if that would stop them."

Not long after the assault, Anita experienced a relocation event, presumably with the congruent missing time. At one moment, she was conscious of being in a certain location, and then at the next moment, without any sense of having lost consciousness, Anita found herself returning to awareness and being in a different place.

"I was on my way to the grocery store," she recalled, "and came to a stop sign. There were no other cars in sight in any direction. I started to turn the corner. The next thing I remember is snapping out of 'mind blank' and being [in a different location] on West Road. I looked in my rearview mirror, and there was a car parked on the road that wasn't there when I had stopped at the sign moments before." Although the location was different, she did not notice a time loss.

In 1977, while still living north of the Houston area, Anita had a UFO sighting that was witnessed by one of her friends. "I was outside late one night talking with a friend," she said, "when I glanced up and saw a large orange globe to the north." Her friend, who was in his car, took off in pursuit of the object and reported on his return that he had eventually lost sight of it near a state highway.

It was also during this period that Anita had two other experiences that are frequently reported by abductees. One of these is the presence of small lighted objects in the home, usually near a wall or the ceiling, that seem to function as some sort of remote probe or monitor.

This first event occurred during the middle of the night, when something woke Anita. "Looking around," she recalled, "I saw a multicolored triangle moving against my bedroom wall." She could see that the object had a device or design in its center, where pink, orange, and other colors were moving around.

Her reaction to this strange sight reflects a maddening yet typical response that abductees report in such situations. Instead of reacting with surprise, curiosity, and even consternation, as would a person whose mind was not being controlled, her response was quite passive.

"I thought, *A mandala, how pretty,"* she said, "then I just went back to sleep." This is apparently a programmed response that other abductees report, and it has proven usually to precede an encounter. If anything else occurred that night with Anita, however, she had no memory, conscious or dreamlike, of further activity.

The other experience was much more physical and less directly tied to alien intrusion. It has been reported, however, to occur following abduction events in a number of other people's situations. Anita developed a rash which seemed to have no mundane cause. It rapidly covered almost her entire body, and the doctor she consulted could not give her an explanation. "It looked like I had snake skin," she described. "It took six weeks to go away."

The pattern of activity in Anita's life thus far had shown occasional intrusions and sightings, but in the late 1980s the activity noticeably began to increase. The timing may not be accidental, as many abductees "woke up" to the fact of their encounters in 1986-88.

Although at the time Anita wasn't aware of the implications, this new phase of her involvement may have been marked by a possible missing-fetus episode in 1985. When she began experiencing some suspicious physical symptoms, she consulted her doctor and was very surprised to discover she was pregnant. Having already raised a family of three children, and considering her age, she decided to terminate it. But the results of the operation proved to be as surprising as the unexpected pregnancy itself.

"I went to have an abortion," she said, "after my Ob-Gyn assured me that I was pregnant. He performed the procedure and said that he could not find any fetal tissue at all. He was as puzzled as I was."

Whether this was one of the by-now familiar procedures of aliens implanting a fetus and then returning to retrieve it from the host mother, Anita has not been able to determine. But since that episode and up until the present, there have been a number of experiences in which the aliens are clearly involved. She has seen them in conscious glimpses and flashbacks, and remembered events in dreams. She has engaged in telepathic communications with some group of entities, at times generated by them and at times by her. And, as usual, there have been peripheral and confirming external evidence in some instances.

Among the types of non-human entities Anita has encountered are the ubiquitous Grays, another group she calls the 'Tans," a blue creature, and an off-white creature whose skin she described as "dry and leathery," in addition to the humanoids in the red suits.

Although she is conscious of a single event involving the Grays, Anita came away from the experience with a definite idea about the creature's attitude toward her. "As far as the Grays go," she said, "I have only one memory of an encounter, and it was not pleasant."

In the sketchy recollection, Anita was inside what appeared to be a typical craft. She was being escorted through a corridor, without any sense of the destination or of any preceding scenario. "There was the feeling of dislike

on the part of the one [a Gray] who was leading me down the corridor," she recalled. "I mean, he didn't like me or just didn't like humans. It was as if he had a somewhat distasteful function to perform. By the way," she added, "this dude had a short, squatty-looking blue creature with him. I nicknamed him Grimace."

Like so many others in these situations, with no accurate, authoritative explanations or sources to help them understand the aliens and their activities, Anita has had to invent her own terms and phrases. The nickname above is one such example, as is the name "Tan" which she uses for a particular group of entities. Describing these same entities, other abductees have used any number of different names because no one name has yet been established as the proper one.

Anita has recalled several encounters with the Tan group in the past few years. She said that they are very similar in appearance to the creature in the drawing on Whitley Strieber's COMMUNION, which, according to other abductees, is more like what they would call a Gray. But Anita clearly distinguishes between the gray creature that was leading her down the corridor in one encounter, and the Tans, with whom she is more familiar. "When I first saw their picture on the book cover/' she said, "I immediately thought, *Hello, little friend.* I know that for some reason I feel protective of them."

Her relationship with the Tans, unlike her one impersonal encounter with the Gray, involves a different degree of intimacy, apparently as part of their deliberate programming of the abductee. "I have never sensed the dislike that I did with the Gray," Anita reported. "[The Tans] seem to be very concerned with making us feel love for them."

But Anita has proven to be quite aware of this psychological manipulation on the aliens' part and has thus been able to see through some of their intentions or motivations.

"I recall one [Tan] looking into my eyes," she described from an encounter, "and making me feel extreme love from him. I put my hands on his face and said, *Too bad it isn't real,* meaning the feeling of love that he was projecting into my soul."

Indeed, in spite of the aliens' intentions to convey such a caring relationship, Anita has continued to suffer much of the same anxiety that other abductees report. "When I said I felt protective towards the little critters," she cautioned, "please believe that it is [a feeling] induced by them. The rest of the time, all I feel is apprehension during the day and dread of going to bed at night."

This anxiety very often causes disruptions of the abductee's sleep patterns, usually occurring nightly at approximately the same time, as happens with Anita. "I do still get scared sometimes," she confessed, "and I still wake up at 3:00 to 3:34 a.m. and huddle under the covers frightened and lie there with my eyes glued to the bedroom door."

This stress response, according to mental health professionals who have studies such situations, shows up in cases where an actual traumatic event has occurred. It may be that abductees continue to wake up at a certain time each night because a traumatic event had occurred previously at that time, as if a preventative warning, a wake-up-and-protect-yourself alarm, is sounding subconsciously.

The ongoing feelings of fear and intrusion are fostered not only by the consciously recalled encounters but also by situations in which external evidence points to unremembered events. For instance, without any conscious memories of a disturbance or problem associated with the area, Anita has a phobia about driving alone along a certain stretch of US Highway 287. There is, however, a possible connection with her alien involvement.

"This [stretch of highway] is where my older brother called us to look out the window one night," she said, "to see a UFO going over at treetop level." And although she remembered nothing further about that night, her phobia about the area is suspicious.

So are the various marks and injuries she has discovered on her body. "Lots of mornings," Anita said, "I have gotten up feeling like someone beat me up in my sleep." This is another common abductee report, waking up with sore, damaged-feeling muscles and joints. "I have waked up with bruises on my arms, shoulders, and legs," she continued, "with no idea where they came from. I have found scratches that I could not remember having

gotten the day before."

The evidence for vigorous physical activity during the night, although unremembered, comes from more than just Anita's sore or scarred body, however. In one incident, she woke up in the morning and felt an unfamiliar pain in her right hand. ″\ sat up in bed," she explained, "and found that sometime during the night my ring had been squashed on my finger." She managed with effort to remove the ring, but neither her husband nor a jeweler could completely restore its original shape.

On another occasion, Anita got out of bed one morning and found the crucifix from her necklace lying on the floor. "It had been on my neck the night before," she said, "and the chain was still on [me]. But the only way to remove the crucifix is to remove the necklace and take it off the chain."

She has also awakened several mornings to discover that something had happened to her clothing, a report frequently echoed by other abductees. In one instance, she woke up with her nightie on backward, although she was certain she had not taken it off, turned it around, and put it back on. And on a different occasion she found that the nightie was not only backward but had also been turned inside-out. In the night during one of these events, she had an altered-state experience in which she recalled a group of Tan aliens observing her as she was "free-falling," an event which did not feel unduly upsetting for some reason.

Anita had quite a severe reaction to another similar event, however, venting much more emotion than the situation seemed to call for. It was in the winter, during the Christmas holidays one night, and she had worn socks to bed for extra warmth. When she woke up the next day and found that one of her socks was missing, Anita became extremely upset and angry at her family. She said she was "very belligerent" toward them, even accused them of playing a practical joke on her, one which didn't strike her as humorous.

Anita was also physically upset that morning, suffering from a violent headache and nausea which caused her to vomit, yet there was no illness to account for the symptoms. Still, she might not have been overly concerned about the vanished sock and her physical problems, if her young granddaughter hadn't made a disturbing comment.

The seven-year-old child told her grandmother that some "mean men" had come in and taken her away during the night. When Anita asked her to describe the "mean men," the little girl called them "the mushroom men."

"What are the mushroom men?" Anita asked, and her granddaughter then found the book MISSING TIME by Budd Hopkins and pointed to the drawing on the cover.

Anita asked the girl to make a drawing of her own. It showed a long-necked humanoid being with a head shaped like an inverted light bulb. The eyes were black, large, and slanted, the nose had two nostril holes, the mouth was a straight thin line, and the chin was more rounded than in the drawing on the cover of MISSING TIME. The girl said the creatures were about a foot tall, gray-skinned and had four fingers rather than five-a detail not apparent in the cover picture. There were quite a few of these entities present, she said.

Anita remembered nothing strange that night herself, but the physical symptoms, the missing sock, and her granddaughter's story were indicative enough of an intrusive incident to be of great concern. She not only wanted to know what had gone on during the night, but she wanted to know more in general about these beings who had been a part of her life for so long, so she decided to try meditating and sending out messages to the aliens.

"I would ask a question telepathically," Anita explained, "and then lie down on the sofa to drift into twilight sleep, which is really just a deep state of relaxation. I was not asleep or awake. Then the answers to my questions would come."

She remembers, for instance, asking, "Why are you taking human women?"

To insure quality breeding, the answer came back.

"What about when a woman is menstruating?" she inquired, thinking about how she had used a tampon to try to fend off any further rapes in the past.

We know the difference, she was told.

"When are you going to show yourselves?" she questioned further, but the reply was less than specific.

The time is almost right, was all she received.

Anita has used this meditative method for communication several other times. "When I decide to telepath to them," she commented, "I spend a good part of the time berating them for not being honest with the human race. They've always been here. If they had shown themselves all along, no one would fear them. It's the unknown that causes fear. Now they've made it impossible just to be accepted. I know who I'm yelling at," she added, "but I have no idea who, which group, is sending back answers."

And some of those answers have been impossible to understand. In addition to the communications which made some sort of *sense-it only works when the year arrives* and *transmogrify,* for example-Anita has also gotten messages containing unknown words and meaningless phrases, including one puzzling reference to *star -planet fill.*

Some of these messages look like nonsense, but one of the other odd communications, *IRU URI,* is very similar to a message given to Lisa, in which she was told by the aliens, referring to some ape-type creatures, *They are you and you are them.* If the capital letters in Anita's communication are written out as words, it would read, "I are you, you are I." And the import of the phrases is clearly similar. Even the grammar is incorrect in both cases.

As with most abductees, Anita cannot explain even to herself just what the aliens are doing with her. And she certainly doesn't accept all the communications and encounters as objectively real.

"I suspect that a lot of these encounters are alien-induced dreams," she commented, "for the purpose of making you feel comfortable with them. As for the controlled free-falling, I think they were creating an enjoyable flying experience for me because I have a horror of flying and it may be necessary in the future to 'fly' with them when the planet tilts in order to save my life."

Her reference to the planet tilting comes from a scenario she has been shown involving future global catastrophe. Such scenarios are so common among abductees that this type of information may well be part of the widespread programming included in the alien agenda, designed to serve some purpose which is not yet clear. And most of the abductees who are told about a coming destruction also report, as does Anita, feeling that they will have a job or task to perform in conjunction with this catastrophe.

"It is like I have always known that these things fUFOs, aliens, and the predicted destruction] are coming," Anita told me, "and that I must try to convince people, and also learn things that would help not only with my own survival afterwards but I must also be able to help other survivors. For instance, I was told as a child, *The children must be protected."*

Anita, then, admits that at least part of the alien programming has had an effect on her, but she doesn't let herself accept everything they tell her or show her.

"I'm always amazed when I get any information from them at all," she said. "I really don't know if someone who would abduct a person could be trusted to give a truthful answer to any question."

She is aware of their possible deceptions, just as she realizes that the aliens are capable of creating unreal scenarios for humans during encounters. This awareness has served Anita well, for it has allowed her to push the alien activity away from her a little, as it were, in order to analyze and assess the events to which she has been subjected. And it also has kept her from jumping to conclusions about some of the things she has remembered.

One recent possible event, for instance, Anita describes as a regular dream, in spite of the presence of UFOs in the scenario.

"I dreamed last night that I was standing in my back yard and looking up into the night sky," she told me. "1

saw a rectangular UFO sitting poised about five hundred feet above the house. It had rockets on the side and started firing at a line of trees fairly close to the house. I ran inside, and my doorbell rang."

She said the next segment of the dream involved a scene in which she and I were together, discussing the book project, but after that a very different episode occurred.

"Next," she said, "I was visited by some military sorts who were trying to get me to tell them about the UFOs, and I refused. I kept saying, 'I know nothing, I know nothing'."

Anita dismissed this scenario as a mundane dream, which it may well have been, probably in part because of my presence in one of the segments. What she didn't know, however, was that I in fact had seen a rectangular UFO at very close range in the winter of 1992, so my own curiosity was aroused by her description. Even more interesting was the fact that several other people in this book project-Lisa, Angie, and a member of my family-have reported very similar situations to the military interrogation. And in these other cases, there was reason to believe they were not normal dreams at all.

For Anita, however, the evidence of the dream's reality was not very strong, which is indicative of her tendency not to overreact to possible or actual alien encounters. As a result, she has managed to keep a good sense of mental balance, neither overly exalting the creatures in her mind, making gods of them, nor being overwhelmed by terror as if they were demons. "Not all of the aliens are bad," she believes, which is a reasonable point of view given the cumulative experiences she has had.

Still, when they physically intrude into her normal reality, Anita is not happy about it, as her description of two typical episodes show.

"When I went to bed," she said, "I started feeling apprehensive. I couldn't go to sleep. It got worse as the hours passed. Finally, I turned on the bedside lamp to read. I had not been reading long when I saw a flash of light in the den. I started thinking, *Oh, geez, no.* I told myself that maybe it was the light in one of my aquariums and tried to read some more.

"I started hearing a clicking noise," she continued, "and tried to figure out what it was. Then I saw, in my peripheral vision, a flash of brown go past my door toward the bathroom." The "flash of brown" was recognizable to Anita, and she realized that at least one of the aliens was in the house. She fought to stay alert, hoping to fend off another abduction, but she couldn't do it.

"Finally," she concluded, "in sheer fatigue I gave up and fell asleep. They really are patient little critters." If anything occurred after that, Anita couldn't recall it. But she awoke with a possible sign that she had indeed been paid a visit. "On Saturday morning," she said, "my knees and legs were in terrible pain. I have been checked for arthritis and don't have it."

Four months later, in December 1993, a similar incident occurred, as fleeting and consciously elusive as the first one. "I woke up around 3:30 a.m.," she told me, "and turned on the television set in the bedroom. This is usually the time I wake up and scan the bedroom for whatever. I turned on Channel Four because they are on all night. I wanted to catch a weather report because we were expecting sleet. Everything was normal until an insurance commercial came on. I was lying on my side and just happened to glance up at the TV.

"At that moment, a black object moved in front of the screen, left to right, and then moved back off, right to left. It had a face, after a fashion, but appeared to be one-dimensional. It was almost as though you could stick your hand through it, but you could not see the TV screen through the blackness. It must have had intelligence, because as soon as I thought, *What the hell is that?* it moved back off the screen. I was fighting to stay awake, as if it wouldn't bother me if I were awake. Shortly thereafter, I felt the old familiar 'zap' through my body, and I was out of it.

"Since that time I have had a sore spot on my spine eight to twelve inches up from my coccyx. I've had everyone check my spine, and they tell me there isn't even a red spot there. However, it [remained] very sore for the past three weeks."

A conscious sight of a strange creature, an unexplained physical effect, and nothing in her memory to connect the two: such events have punctuated her life as they have countless others with alien contact. The alien abductions are something she lives with very quietly, rarely discussing them with others, coping with her fears and uncertainties as best she can on her own. The experiences have changed her views, her habits, and her desires and fears. The whole texture of her life is interwoven with the pattern of an unknown agenda.

6. Beth

"When I was seven or eight years old," Beth related, "my father gave us permission, my sister and me, to go outside and play with the other children, who were playing hide-and-seek. It was close to six in the evening. I remember that I went to hide between some bushes, and then I heard a sound, somebody else. And as I turned, I saw what I thought at that moment was one of the other kids.

"The next thing I know," she continued, "it was dark, and I was very surprised. When I got home, my father was very mad at me and my mother was very upset. My father told me that they had been calling me and looking for me for hours. But I couldn't understand it," she said. "The place where I was hiding was less than a hundred feet from the front of the house. I was hiding there, and it was daylight, and then the next thing I know it was dark-and I was scared.

"Recently I had another memory about that," she added. "That kid I thought was there, he was an alien, one of the Grays. He took me to a ship, but I don't remember what happened after that."

As I listened to Beth's account of her childhood missing-time episode, I was reminded of a similar event in my husband's past. At age twelve, not much older than Beth had been, Casey and his best friend were playing in a field one day, when several strange children approached them and asked if they wanted to "come see the UFO" that had landed on the other side of the hill. Casey's next conscious memory was of coming back home and complaining to his mother that his nose was very sore and he had a headache.

As did Beth, Casey had a daytime missing-time episode initiated after contact with unknown "children." Beth has never explored this memory hypnotically, but when Casey used regressive hypnosis to delve into the missing time, he retrieved memories of an onboard abduction involving a nasal implant.

This was not the only similarity between Beth's experiences and Casey's. A divorced mother with grown children, Beth had first contacted us, in fact, because another of her encounter memories, involving apparently military personnel, contained very striking and disturbing parallels to an incident described in INTO THE FRINGE.

A mutual acquaintance helped arrange a phone conversation for us, and we got acquainted. Beth was born in 1942 in Puerto Rico and has lived there most of her life, although her heritage also includes ancestors from Spain and Vermont. Beth was a teacher before starting her family, but in recent years she had vision problems which have kept her from working. Currently, she divides her time between Puerto Rico and Florida.

Beth and I discussed her memories of the military encounter at length. But I was also interested to hear about other her other experiences, especially since she lived in Puerto Rico. A great deal of UFO and alien activity has been reported in the past several years, much of it in the area where Beth lived but all over the island as well. In fact, of all the U. S. territory, there may well have been more recent UFO activity in Puerto Rico than anywhere else.

To judge from Beth's account, it has probably been going on for quite a while. In addition to the early missing-time event, she has conscious memories of many other strange experiences from childhood, well back into the 1950s. Her first UFO sighting, for example, occurred only a year or two after the hide-and-seek episode. Beth was walking to the store in the late afternoon, when she looked up and saw a "huge ball of fire" tearing downward through the sky. It disappeared behind a nearby mountain, and Beth assumed that she'd just witnessed a plane crash, although she heard no sound.

She screamed and ran back across the road into the house where excitedly she told her father what she had seen. Since he worked for the U. S. Navy at that time, her father told her he would inquire around the military base and find out what exactly had happened. But a few days later, when Beth brought up the subject again, her father told her that she must never tell anyone about what she had seen or even mention it again. No explanation was given, only a warning, and that made Beth believe some sort of mystery must have been involved.

She was used to mysterious things, even at that young age. "Even before that," she said, "as far back as I can remember, I was aware-and so was my family-that strange things were happening to me, most of them at night. It made me afraid to go to sleep, afraid that someone was going to come for me."

Unexplained noises often broke the silence of the night. Once, for example, Beth was startled awake by a "buzz or whooshing sound" in the room where she was sleeping alone. Frightened, she ran into her sister's room. "They're looking for me," was all she remembered saying, because at that moment her sister suddenly fell into a deep sleep and Beth's body became paralyzed. Then she, too, lost consciousness.

Another anomalous event took place when she ten years old. Beth had been outside for a while and had stopped to eat a piece of fruit. She consciously remembered standing still, taking a bite, and then looking down at a large, bleeding gash in her leg. "I didn't know what to think," Beth said. "How could my leg be cut and bleeding? I had not even moved from that spot." Heedless of the time as children often are, she had no idea if any was missing.

She also didn't know what to think of the shadowy figures that sometimes appeared in the house, although she tended to believe they might be ghosts. On one occasion, though, the figure seemed very real. Beth woke up during the night and found a humanoid figure sitting on her bed. He was wearing a tight white outfit, and he proceeded to talk to her. She couldn't remember, however, any of the things he said, and she couldn't remember his face. Beth told her mother about some of these strange occurrences, and her mother replied that she had sometimes heard Beth in her room at night, apparently talking to someone. But when she tried to get up and check on the girl, her mother said, she was paralyzed.

A little later, at age fourteen, Beth had a second UFO sighting. As she sat studying on the stairs by a window, she glanced out and saw an object through the trees. It stopped for a moment and hovered before shooting off vertically out of sight. Beth learned later that one of their neighbors had also spotted the object.

Even when she moved away from that house, staying for a while after her father's death in a boardinghouse, the unexplained occurrences followed her. One of her roommates there woke her up once, screaming, saying that she'd just seen a weird creature standing beside Beth's bed. The being apparently noticed the roommate looking at it, because it started moving toward her, and that was when she screamed. Her description of the creature matches today's well-known Gray entity.

The odd events seemed to subside as Beth grew to adulthood. She went to college and then began working as a teacher. Nothing notable happened until she was married and pregnant with her second child.

"I remember that I was so afraid that I wasn't pregnant," Beth said, "that it was a tumor, because it [the fetus] was not moving. I told my doctor frequently that it couldn't be a child, that he was mistaken, but it was a big joke to him.

"When I was almost six months into the pregnancy, I was very worried because the baby wasn't moving. One night I remember that I suddenly felt so sleepy that I got in bed, and I had a dream. I saw myself on a doctor's table. A strange doctor put a needle into my navel. When he did this, I felt something like an electric shock, and the baby started moving. I also felt that something was put up my nose. And then I woke up," she concluded. "And when I awoke, I was having a very heavy nosebleed and the baby was moving."

Beth carried the baby to term and it was born healthy. But a subsequent pregnancy a few years later didn't survive. Beth apparently miscarried one night and isn't sure if she saw any fetal tissue. This occurred, it should be noted, on a night when one of the neighbors reported seeing an unexplained light over Beth's home.

Whatever she may have thought about these numerous, often nebulous events through the years, whoever she

might have thought was behind them, in the summer of 1978 an event occurred that left no doubt of its source. On the night of July 17, Beth went to bed around 9 p.m., where she read for an hour and then turned off the bedside lamp planning to go to sleep. In the dark, a light caught her attention through the window, where she saw a glowing object. Concerned, Beth woke up her husband and had him check the area. He came back to bed having found nothing unusual, and they turned out the lamp again to sleep. But the light returned to the yard and shone in through the window. Beth looked up at the light, and the next moment she was aware of being somewhere very different. She was in an unfamiliar round room, and she wasn't alone.

Her husband lay near her, apparently asleep, as was her youngest child nestled in her lap. In a panic, she suddenly thought, *Where are my other children? A* voice from an unseen source then replied, *Don't be afraid, they are here.*

Three other people whom Beth didn't know were also unconscious in the room. She saw a young man and woman, probably in their twenties, and an older man who looked to Beth like an "ex-military" sort.

The whole situation was so unexpected that Beth was too bewildered to react logically, perhaps. Or perhaps, as in other reports, her responses were "directed" for some purpose. At any rate, when she noticed the older man coming to consciousness just as she was regaining her own awareness, Beth inexplicably asked, "What time is it?"

Given the total strangeness of their situation, such a question appears ludicrous, but instead of reacting with surprise or panic, the man simply checked his watch and replied, 'Ten after twelve."

Almost two hours had passed since she saw the light for the second time, although to her it seemed as if it had only been a few moments. Looking around, she saw strange, computer-like equipment in the room. And then she noticed some other beings, clearly not human, there with her. The two entities were gray and very skinny, dressed in metallic silver suits.

Beth saw that her husband was starting to come around then. But her attention was caught by a startling change in the metal wall in front of her, as it seemed to transform into glass, like a window. Looking out, she recognized the location as a rural area near some property she owned.

A door opened just then, and a very tall man walked in. He was pale, with dark, short hair that formed a widow's peak in the center of his forehead. His eyes were larger than usual, and his jaw was very square. The man wore the same tight silver outfit as the Grays, but he also had on gloves and a wide belt. In his hands was a small orb that looked to be made of glass, within which many lights were brightly blinking. As the tall man stared at Beth and her family, she got the impression that he was perhaps a scientist, and she felt he was the one "in command."

His gaze made her feel like a specimen or a "guinea Pig-"

"My husband was starting to wake up," Beth said,

"and this man put him back to sleep, by holding the glass ball over his head. He did it to me, too, and then I was paralyzed."

Beth was next aware of being back in her bed, with a terrible headache, and then she fell quickly to sleep. Upon waking, she discovered that the night's events had left her in a bad physical state. Besides the pounding headache, she also suffered aches throughout her body, especially in her back, and she was dizzy. Beth was also very nauseated, vomiting repeatedly, as well as plagued with diarrhea. She had difficulty seeing because her eyes were badly swollen and irritated, a condition that bothered her for a long time after this, so much so that she had to wear sunglasses.

A terrible rash persisted for two months, and her hair began to fall out in excessive quantities. Most disturbing of all, however, were the cataracts that began forming in her eyes. Nine months after the abduction, Beth had to undergo cataract-removal surgery, and it was during preparatory exams that the doctor found physical scarring from what he insisted was previous eye surgery. But Beth had never had an operation, at least not by human

hands.

Clearly there had been some thing or some activity in that strange environment that caused her numerous afflictions, but Beth could only recall the brief scenario in the round room. She wasn't sure about the tall, dark-haired man, but she was certain that the gray beings were not human.

Not long after this, Beth once again saw one of the strange creatures. She had been asleep, but the sound of someone calling her name woke her up. She got up and looked out the window, where one of the little beings was looking back at her. Beth remembered that he was holding a metal stick of some sort, but the next instant she found herself back in bed, and the little creature was nowhere to be seen.

UFOs also continued to appear. On Father's Day in 1980, the entire family witnessed one of these events. Out in the yard, two of the children saw it first and called to the others to come look. They arrived in time to see a cloudy-looking object hovering silently about ten feet from the ground with what seemed to be "bubbles" inside, before it disappeared.

Less than a year later, Beth once again had a bedroom visitation by unknown beings. As she prepared to go to bed, she began to feel as if someone were watching her. Turning around, she saw a tall, slender man standing by her bed, and she became very frightened. Beth tried to scream, but no sound came out, so she began to pray silently for help. And then she found that she was moving, going forward toward the man's outstretched hand. Unable to stop, she floated after him toward the window and knew she was about to be taken through it. This panicked her even more, and she feared she would be "ground up like hamburger" by the process.

The actual moment of passing through the window, however, left no impression on her when it happened, and she was next aware of being in a dark place, lying down, surrounded by "a feeling of great speed." Blackness overtook her, and the next apparent moment she was back in bed in the guest room, still unable to move. She could scream, however, which she did, bringing her husband running. But the strange man, of course, had disappeared.

Beth wasn't the only one in her family to witness the alien beings. In 1986, she and her son saw a small white entity. Beth was in bed when she was surprised to hear the sound of water running somewhere. As she got up to check for the source, her son called for her to come outside with him.

"Mommy, look there!" he shouted, and Beth looked, but without her glasses all she could see was an indistinct white object out in the yard. Her son, however, had better vision, and he described seeing a small being by the garage, holding a garden hose through which water was running. As the son watched, he told her, the little being stopped and "floated away."

Later, in 1987, Beth's daughter said that three of the Grays had come during the night and taken her out to an area near the house, into a UFO. She said they talked together in a friendly manner and that one of the aliens even laughed. She also reported the presence of a strange man, who told her he was going to "fix" her heart as he inserted a large needle into her chest. Beth said this occurred at a time when her daughter was awaiting heart surgery.

It was also at this time that Beth recalled having a brief but vivid dream that greatly disturbed her. In this dream, she was on a table, location unknown, with three men standing around her. The terrifying part of the scenario was the single sentence she heard spoken by one of the men: "She is expendable, and we can always use a terminator."

The experience was so unlike the previous encounters she had remembered that Beth insisted it was just a dream, but the idea and the threat of a "terminator," whatever it might be, haunted her. So did the identity of the men.

Another situation arose during this time that caused her a great deal of concern, even though it seemed to have nothing to do with UFOs or aliens. Several different mornings, when Beth woke up and went into the kitchen for coffee, she found the water jug, normally kept in the refrigerator, and four glasses containing water sitting out on the counter.

The first time this occurred, Beth was annoyed by the inconsiderate act, and she questioned her son and daughter about it. Both of them denied leaving out the water jug or even being in the kitchen after bedtime. The next time she found the dirty glasses and the jug, Beth became angry and found it hard to believe her children's protestations of innocence in the matter.

What were they doing, she wondered, getting up in the middle of the night and inviting in people, visiting with them in secret? Why was it done in secret? Why were they denying doing it? The questions bothered her greatly, yet the children were adamant that they had nothing to do with the intermittent discoveries of the jug and glasses left on the counter by undiscovered persons during the night.

Finally Beth came to believe them, but that made her even more afraid, for it pointed to a scenario of four strangers with free access to her home and family. Yet no one in the family saw any strangers there, and none of the household goods had been stolen. But the scenario of strangers breaking in merely for a sip of water just didn't make any sense. And Beth couldn't believe the visitors were aliens, not if all they seemed to do was pour themselves a drink, leave a mess on the kitchen counter, and then disappear.

Beth worried about this mysterious situation for a long time, even after the visits stopped. And she never caught anyone in the act of entertaining guests or getting out the water jug, which would have explained the whole affair. Much later, however, Beth did have a flashback memory concerning this situation. In a very upsetting scenario, she saw herself opening the door and letting a group of people into the house. She even saw herself pouring the water. Beth didn't recognize any of the people, and the flashback memory didn't show her why she let them in or what they did there after she poured their drinks. She didn't know if the flashback reflected a real event or if it came from her imagination. It certainly felt real, but it seemed so unlikely that Beth just couldn't accept it.

In September 1987, however, an indisputably real event occurred. Another UFO appeared and was witnessed by three members of the family.

"Mommy, there's a UFO up there!" Beth heard her daughter shout on night around 11 p.m. She got up and looked out to see a "huge, beautiful UFO" about half a mile from the house. Her son also saw it briefly.

This sighting seemed no different than previous ones, but it was followed the next day by the onset of activity that would continue for years: overflights of unidentified helicopters. On that first day, an AW AC also flew over, in addition to the black copters, and the craft operated at such low altitudes that sometimes the windows and the entire house were shaken by their force. They returned a week later, and this time Beth even witnessed a craft that looked like a helicopter but flew noiselessly.

She continued to have frightening nocturnal experiences, usually involving fragmented scenarios and time loss. Once after midnight, for example, Beth went through an event of which she only consciously retained three "snapshot-type" memories. The first part began when she was still quite conscious, as she looked out the window at some red and white lights she'd just noticed in the yard. The second scene is of her out in the yard, watching a craft fly away and crying, "Don't leave me." This was followed instantly by her being conscious again and aware that she was back in her bed.

During these years of fairly active alien involvement in her life, Beth had a number of dreams relating to UFOs, the Grays, and other sorts of entities. Some people may think that it is foolish to look for information in dreams, but a close familiarity with the multi-phenomenal context of the abduction situation shows that this is not so.

In abduction research it is generally acknowledged that many times the memories of an alien encounter, suppressed at the time of the event, will surface in any number of ways. It may happen as a sudden flashback during regular consciousness, or it may emerge during the dream state. It also may be that what the person recalled as a dream was not a memory of some past event but instead reflected an event of that particular night, so lightly suppressed that it remained in the consciousness as an altered-state awareness.

At any rate, it is wise to pay attention to the dreams of a person with current alien activity. Certain details, often identical, turn up from case to case that differ from the typical archetypal entities and situations found in normal dreams.

This was certainly true for Beth's dreams. In one, for example, she was with an unfamiliar alien being in an environment where the sky was pink, and she recalled seeing an animal similar to a cow. All of these details have been reported by other abductees, sometimes in dreams and sometimes in actual experiences. So has the scenario she recalled from another dream: being given a liquid to drink by the Grays. In a different dream, Beth was made to immerse in "a heavy liquid" and was surprised to find that she could breathe in it. This scenario is so familiar now that it is often included in the list of most frequently reported abduction events.

Beth was concerned and curious about these dreams, as she was about the experiences she recalled consciously. So when the opportunity arose for her to work with a well-known UFO investigator and to undergo regressive hypnosis, Beth decided to do it.

In early 1988 she underwent four separate sessions of hypnosis, all focusing on a single event: the encounter in 1978 when she remembered being in a circular room with her husband, one child, and three strangers. The following account is a composite of the information from those sessions, comprising all the bits and pieces that emerged during the regressions.

Beth recalled that when the light shone in through the window that night, she saw that several aliens were in the room. She was terrified, but one of them calmed her and seemed to be in charge as they led her outside to a craft. The next part of her memory is patchy, for she was in a small room in which the atmosphere seemed "foggy," and she couldn't see much more than several strange instruments on a table. One of them looked somewhat like a hair dryer.

Next, two of the aliens took her down a curved hall through a door, into a different area. It looked to Beth like "a surgery room," and she became afraid they were going to kill her there. She cried out in fear when they placed her on a "floating" table. Overhead she saw a screen upon which her insides were displayed. A third alien in this room engaged in some communication with the two escorts. Beth sensed that he seemed more compassionate than the others. This third entity, holding a black box, then moved to a position behind Beth. She could not see what he did, but she felt as if her head was being "opened" and her brain removed, all without any sensation of pain.

After she felt as if she were "all put back together again," a cold liquid was poured over her head. When this procedure was finished, the aliens stood in front of her, and Beth realized that mentally she was different. Her thoughts and reactions to everything were changed, it seemed, and she was filled with new ideas about God and the unity of all life within that supreme source.

This very spiritual moment was followed by a quite physical exam, as the aliens took samples from her skin and hair. A man with a widow's-peak hairline, similar to the one she'd seen before, entered and made a full examination of her body, including a gynecological procedure.

This was the most upsetting part of the experience for Beth, and she was especially frightened when he produced two long, thin needles and explained that he had to make some "corrections" involving her kidney and ovary. He inserted the needles in the areas of those organs, and Beth felt a warm vibration. The man said this "alignment" was necessary to put her glands in better condition for what they wanted her to do, "in service to humanity." He talked at length about changing the human "vibration."

Next, a young woman, similar in looks to the man, came into the room and proceeded to clean Beth's body with a sponge and liquid. She escorted Beth back to the first room, where the man continued to explain about certain things. For one, he told her that she and other humans were "chosen" to carry out "jobs" in the future. He also described a coming disaster in the world, and he explained to her about working "as a spiritual being" for the good of humanity. The alien said that his group was here to study, collect genetic material, and avert a destructive process which humans had started.

She then recalled nothing more than being back in the round room with her husband. Beth was very shaken by the recovered memories, and she said she had no idea why she was "chosen," as they had told her.

After the regressions, Beth's subconscious became more accessible, because she started having conscious flashbacks of previously unremembered events. In the summer of 1988, while chatting with a friend, Beth

suddenly experienced one of these flashbacks. It began with her in a small flying disc, entering a well-lit underground city. The craft flew on through a tunnel passage into an enormous cavern that contained several buildings. Beth also saw some UFOs parked in various locations and aliens working side by side with human military personnel.

The next scenario is of Beth flying somehow through a body of water, into a tunnel, and then emerging from a lake. She also remembered trying to run away, but a big man grabbed her and said, "We brought you here because we want you to see this" as a huge craft rose out of the water. Beth then got back into the little craft and flew up to the huge one. The entire memory was strange and disturbing, and Beth had no idea when such an event might have occurred.

Shortly after the regressions, in August 1988, Beth received a mysterious phone call from a voice that sounded as if it were coming from a vacuum. An unknown man said, "Elizabeth."

"Yes," Beth replied. "Who are you?"

"We know about your experience," the voice said, "and we know about all the problems and doubts you have, but we can give you proof."

"Who are you?" Beth persisted. "Why are you telling me this?"

"Don't be afraid," the strange voice continued. "We can give you proof. We want to talk to you, so next Thursday go to the botanical garden. Be there at ten. We know you. Don't worry about looking for us. Don't tell anybody, and go there alone."

Everything about the call was suspicious-the use of a disguised voice, the disturbing references to Beth's "experiences," the insistence that she come by herself to the meeting-and she felt the call implied a threat. She told the investigator with whom she was working, but she didn't want to go to the garden. Later, however, Beth changed her mind, so she picked up the investigator and went on to the appointed place. Although neither of them saw any suspicious humans or any alien presences, Beth said a communication about love, faith, friendship, and service was put into her mind there in the garden.

On the drive back home, Beth felt dizzy and ill. Her body didn't seem to "work right," and her sense of time was very disoriented. According to the clock, she even gained time on the return trip, and for a while thereafter, day and night seemed to come and go very quickly. Even more disconcerting was the clear sensation of her hand passing through solid objects as she reached for them. But the bizarre perceptions eventually passed, and there were no further phone calls.

In 1990, two years after the flashback of the underground facility with humans and aliens working together, more of Beth's memories of this event surface in a dream. She saw herself stepping out of an aircraft with two "military men." They were in a desert-like area, reminiscent of the American southwest, with buildings that "matched" the desert environment. A dark, grassy pool of water was near a large metal building that looked like a warehouse inside. An old-fashioned wooden door opened to reveal a very high-tech metal door, through which Beth was taken into a large room. There she saw four big tables and a number of people. Some of them looked to be military, some were clad like scientists, and others appeared to be "regular" people. A uniformed, red-headed man, one of the two who had brought her to the facility, seemed to be "in charge" of her.

Two more men entered the room, wearing outfits Beth described as similar to astronaut's gear. They talked with Beth and the other people, although she didn't remember what was said, and then someone shouted and the group started running toward the back of the large room. The red-haired man grabbed her, and then the flashback ended, but the next morning Beth found bruises in the exact spot where the man had gripped her arm.

The memory felt real, but she had no idea when such a fantastic event might have occurred. Of course, mysterious things had been happening all along and continued to occur-sightings of UFOs and strange lights, episodes of unexplained time gaps, occasional appearances of patterned bruises and punctures on her body-and for most of these events Beth had no explanation or memory, either. It was clear that her conscious recollections about these things were merely the tip of the iceberg, and whatever lay beneath the surface had been deeply

suppressed.

Beth might have been able to tell herself that all these events weren't real, that she had imagined them, until an event occurred which proved that the weirdness wasn't only in her mind. In 1992 during a visit to Miami, she and a friend were driving from his house to her daughter's home one night, a trip of thirty to forty-five minutes on the turnpike. They started out at 9:50 p.m. and things proceeded normally at first. But then they both noticed that the others cars, in both directions, had disappeared from view. Beth saw a large, dark, shadowy form looming up ahead of them, which she thought might be a bridge. She reasoned that the bridge's great shadow had somehow blocked their view of the other traffic.

At the very next instant, it seemed, she and her friend felt the car "set back down" on the turnpike.

The driver lost control of the wheel, fighting to steer the car out of danger, and Beth found herself inexplicably unlocking the seat belt, staring out the window, and shouting, "Where are they? Where are they?"

"How do you feel?" her friend asked.

"Confused," she told him. "My hair is standing up, like static electricity, and there's a bad pressure on my neck and my forehead."

Her friend said he was having the same symptoms, too, and that he didn't know what had just happened. Beth noticed the shadowy shape was gone and the traffic was thick all around them. "The bridge must have blocked our view," she told her friend, explaining about the shadowy form.

But her friend, who drove that turnpike regularly, told her there was no bridge at that location. They continued on the drive, bewildered. When they reached her daughter's home, all the lights were out and the place was silent. Beth looked at her watch and was shocked to see that it read 11:55. She knew they should have arrived no later than 10:45, which meant that over an hour was missing. And this time, she hadn't been alone. The mystery was just as great as ever, though, for neither of them remembered anything other than being in the car.

The pattern was always the same: evidence of an odd event, a fragment of a puzzling scenario, and a blank in the place where the details should have been. Every missing hour was a grievous loss to Beth, a dark emptiness in her life. She had seen aliens, and she had seen humans, some of them military, but she had no clue as to what any of them were really doing. The agenda behind these events has remained unknown, and Beth has continued to struggle with her questions and her fears, because the events continue to occur.

In January 1993, for instance, when she was staying in a Miami apartment with her son and daughter, Beth experienced another missing-time episode, and this time she discovered artifactual evidence afterward. The event was preceded by a number of odd but minor occurrences involving each member of the family.

On Wednesday, January 27, they had all gone to bed by midnight. Beth awoke at 4:39 a.m. and went to the bathroom. On her way back to bed, she suddenly felt a compulsion or instruction to go into the kitchen and pull up the window. She became afraid and fought against the urge, but still she walked to the window and opened it without looking out, before returning to her bed.

As she lay down, Beth glanced at the window and thought, I *don't want to see.* She began to turn over to face the other direction, and at that moment she heard something that sounded like a train, followed by the sound of an electronic door closing. Rolling on over, she glanced at the window again-and saw that it was daylight outside. The bedside clock read 6:45. Two hours had disappeared in the time it took her, consciously, to turn over in the bed.

The realization startled her, and Beth got up in great agitation. She went to the kitchen to make coffee and tried to figure out what had happened, but without success. Then she went to take a shower, and that was when she noticed that both of her knees were coated with a chalky white substance, as if she'd been kneeling in the unknown powder. But she couldn't imagine where she might have been, for the substance was unlike anything in her house.

In spite of her agitation, the morning's activities had to go on, so Beth woke up her children to get ready for

work. Before he left, her son remarked that something might have happened to him during the night because he'd discovered a puncture on his forearm that he couldn't explain. When they returned in the evening, Beth told them about the events of the previous night: the strange sounds, the missing time, the white substance, and the apparent fact that she must have been out of the house temporarily. But her son, who'd slept at the foot of Beth's bed in a sleeping bag, said he didn't think that was possible.

"She was sitting in bed last night," he told his sister. "She acted afraid, talking to someone. I saw a figure in the doorway," he added, but at the time, he said, he couldn't get up and apparently fell back asleep. Everything about the event remained a mystery.

In this final account from Beth's ongoing experiences, an event occurred which had identical details to a bizarre report 1 had learned about from a close relative. Beth's parallel story confirmed that it wasn't the imaginings of a single mind. Either the aliens were actually doing these things, activities that were not familiar from other abduction accounts, or they were creating the same virtual-reality scenario for at least two unrelated abductees.

Beth was in Miami when the experience occurred, staying with a friend and sleeping on his couch. One night, she awoke and watched in amazement as "a rectangle of light, like a very thin page of paper" came in through the window. She could see an area in the center where white, pink, and purple lights were moving about.

The rectangle of light stopped in mid-air, and out of its center emerged a full-grown man, very tall, wearing a tight-fitting suit and a small helmet. The man stood up and leaned over her, bringing his face very close to hers. He was above her, but as she stared into his eyes, she said she felt as if she were falling. That's where the memory ended, and Beth was aware of nothing more until she awoke in the morning, in a dazed, groggy condition that persisted throughout the day.

Enduring repeated episodes of such activity, she has no clearer understanding of these events now than at first. She does, however, have feelings about it all, and certain beliefs to which she clings.

Although she is never certain of who has abducted her or what they have done, Beth feels that at least one of her experiences, the 1978 event, involved a benevolent group of aliens. "They brought me an enormous sense of affinity with God," she said, "with the universe, and with love."

But she also recognizes that other forces seem to be a part of the overall phenomenon. 'There's a battle of good and evil," she said, explaining her feelings about the situation. "Sometimes they interact in our lives, bring pain and confusion, but I hold onto faith that my good ETs will help us."

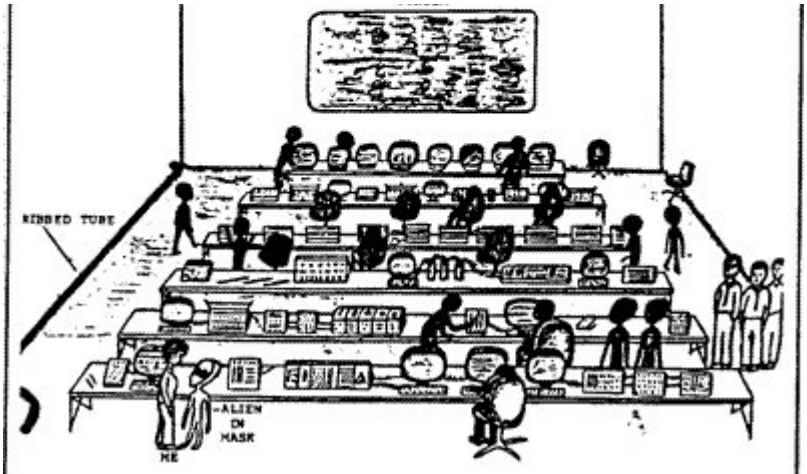
She feels very strongly that the future catastrophic events the aliens described will indeed come about, and that she and other abductees will play a vital role at that time. But that doesn't keep her from feeling fear and depression. Most certainly she fears the possible military or human intrusions, unable to forget the threat that she is "expendable."

To face these fears, she relies on her religious beliefs for strength. "My faith has nurtured me," Beth said. "I'm a part of God. Faith, love, and truth will pull us through the enormity of things that are going to happen. That is the spiritual part."

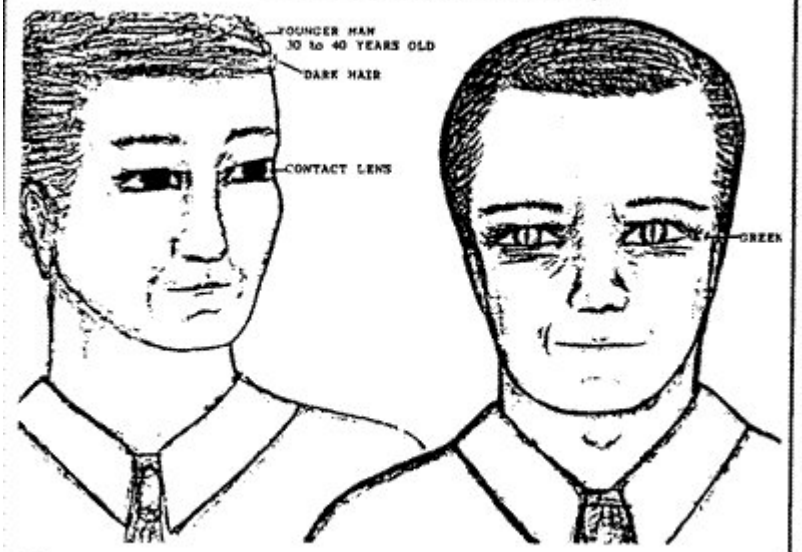
The physical part, unfortunately, continues to include anxiety, sleep disorder, sudden and total energy losses, a number of health problems, and marks on her body that indicate the aliens are interested in more than just her spirit.

Illustrations

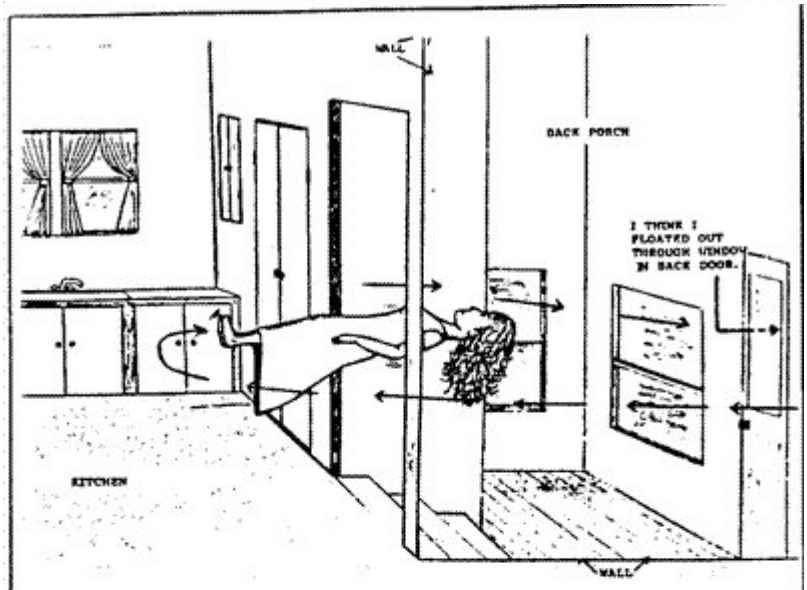
http://whale.to/b/turner_b.html



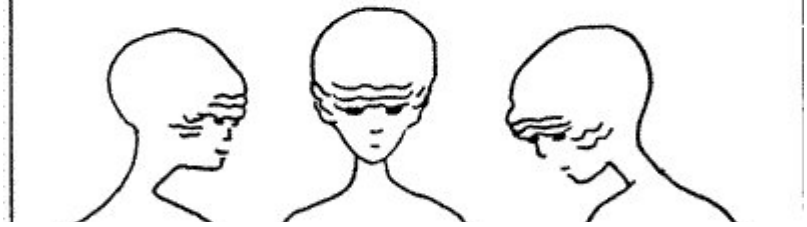
Amy with masked alien in underground facility.

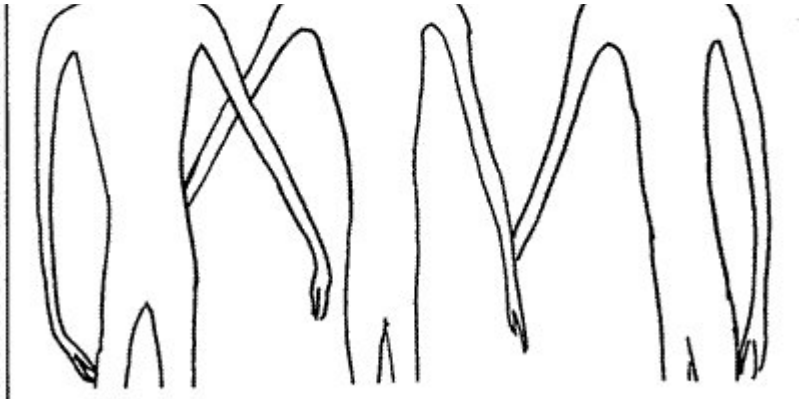


The slit-eyed human figure Amy met with masked alien.

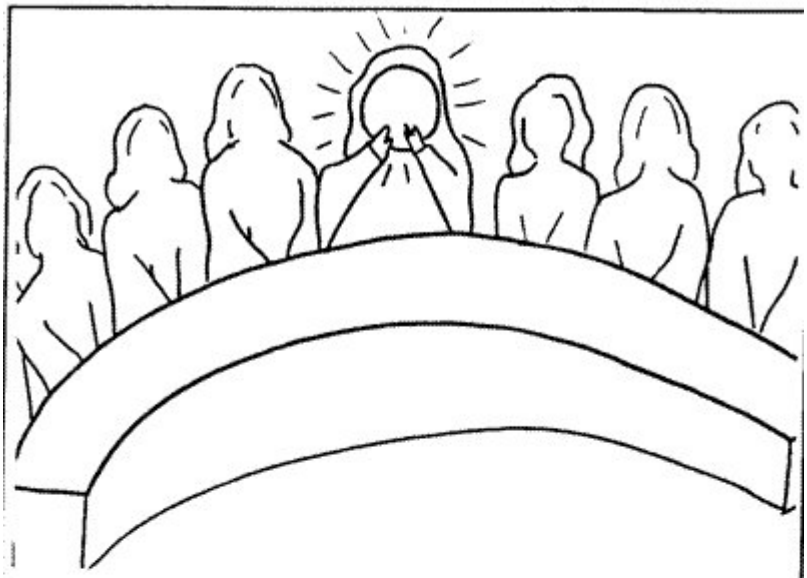


Amy awoke at this point while being floated out of her house in 1981.

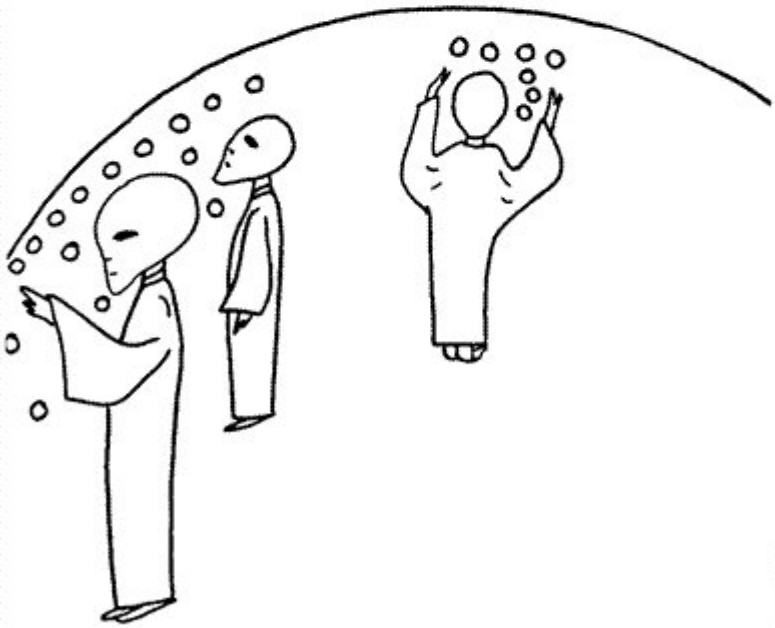




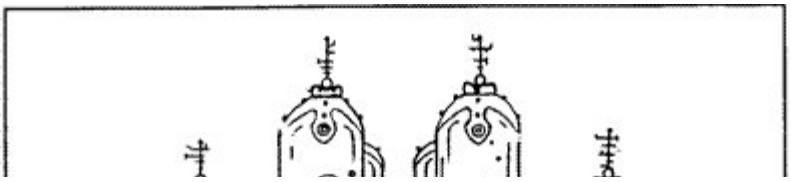
Polly's 'snapshot' memory of wrinkled-brow aliens.

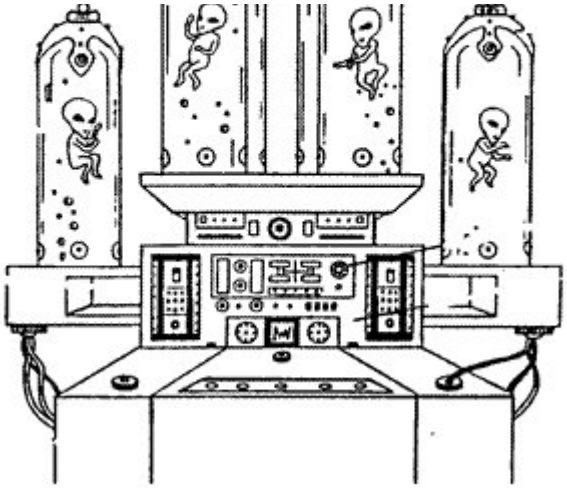


Jane saw seven robed entities, one holding a brilliantly lit globe, at a curved table.

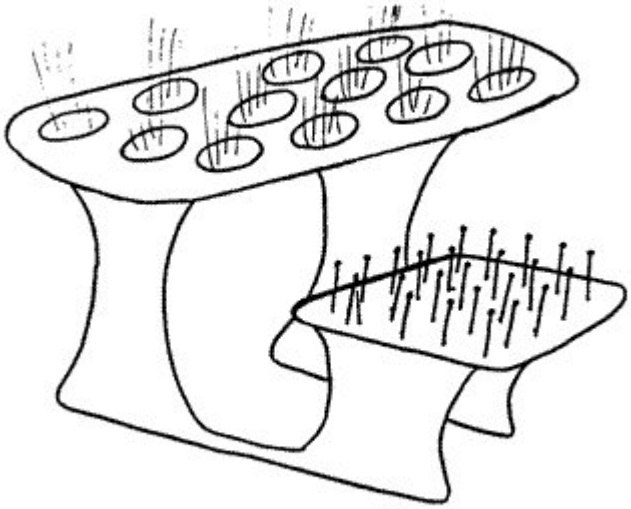


Jane's vision of aliens 'activating' certain Texas locations.

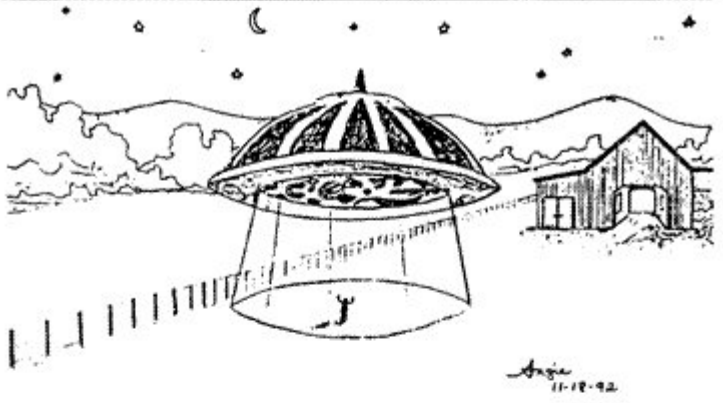




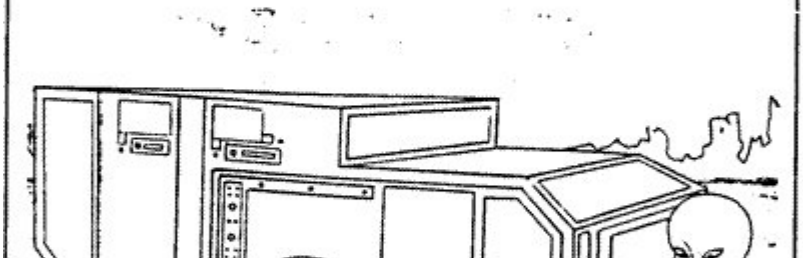
Aliens showed Angie this 'clone' nursery.



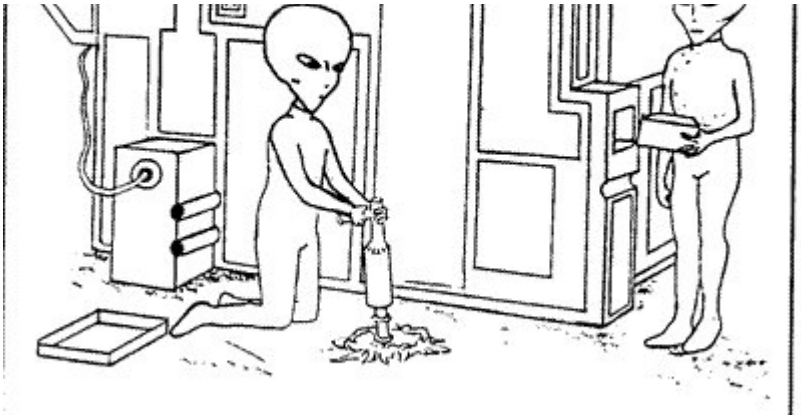
'Soul machine' at which Pat sat and made music by touching different colored light.



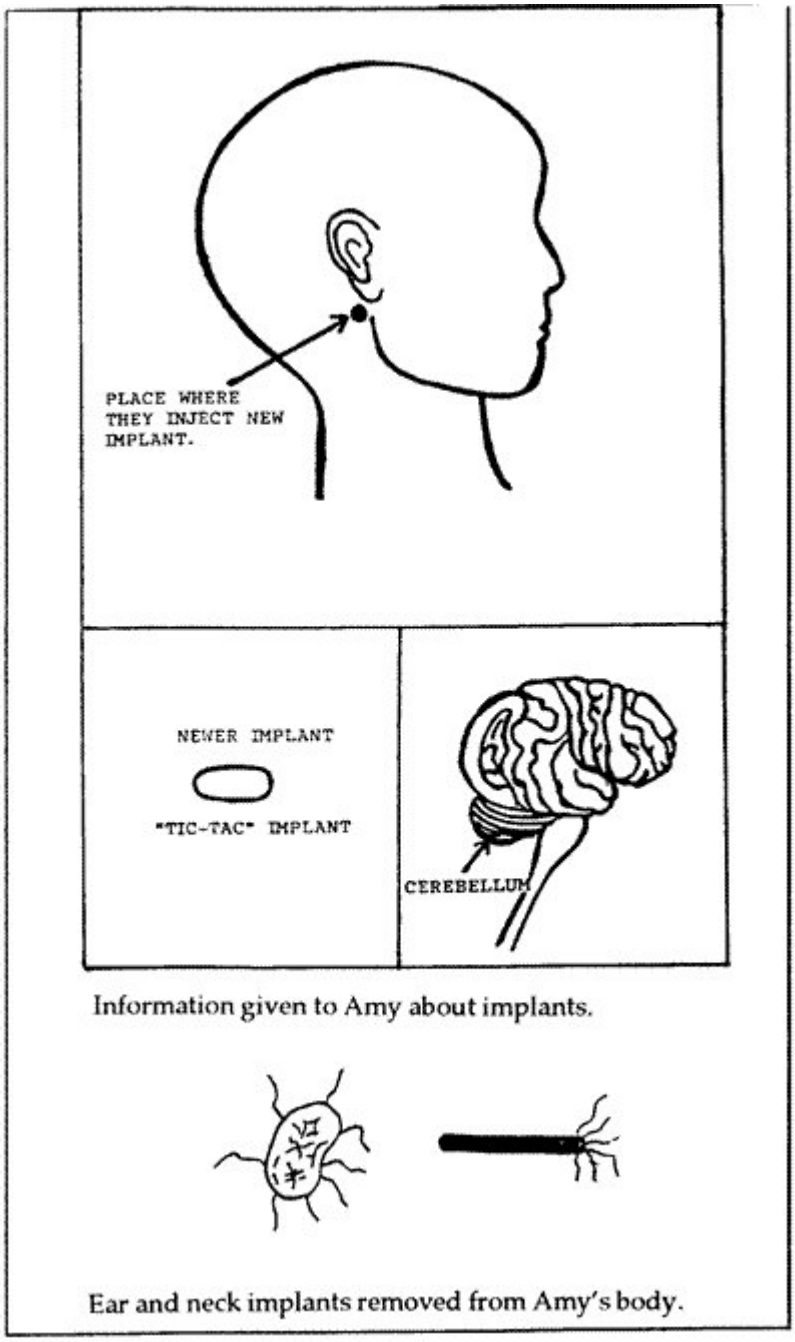
Large craft into which Angie was abducted in 1992.



http://whale.to/b/turner_b.html



Machine and aliens taking soil samples in Angie's yard.



Information given to Amy about implants.

Ear and neck implants removed from Amy's body.

7. Jane

http://whale.to/b/turner_b.html

Most abductees have always been aware of strange events in their lives: odd lights, unaccountable time gaps, unknown figures in the night, extending back into childhood. They may not have been aware of UFOs and aliens, at least by those terms, but they knew mysterious things had occurred.

In Jane's case, however, her consciously recalled experiences with the unknown didn't begin until 1992. Since that time, she has witnessed almost every typical detail of the abduction situation-a life's worth of experiences in less than two years. And with all the events so recent, her situation offered an excellent opportunity for research. She was eager to share information after our initial contact, and she genuinely wanted to understand this mysterious new puzzle in her life.

Born in 1943, Jane has Irish, English, German, French, Creek, Cherokee, and Apache ancestry. She is a sixth-generation Texan residing in the central hill country. Jane was a nurse for many years, until arthritis prevented her from working, and she has also been a journalist, photographer, and avocational archaeologist. She is divorced, with no children, and lives with several dogs, including her favorite buddy, "XZ," in a rural setting near a large city. Compact, independent, and perky, Jane enjoys sky-watching and music, including voice recitals.

In addition to her professional talents, Jane has also demonstrated psychic abilities. "I was tested for over two years on a regular basis," she reported, "by two research foundations in San Antonio...for psychic abilities." Among them were telepathy, precognition, psychokinesis, remote viewing, and clairvoyance, with the tests showing positive results. And since the UFO activity had started, her psychic senses seemed to have increased.

"Lately my psychic abilities have intensified to the point that it's hard for me to be around groups any length of time," she said, "without feeling mentally 'assaulted and battered'." These abilities may be part of the reason why Jane's flashes of memories have come so often while she has been conscious, rather than only through dreams.

Her UFO involvement began in the summer of 1992 with a multiple-witness sighting, and a number of strange events soon followed. "Something deep and profound has been occurring to me since July '92," she said in our first correspondence. "If you ask me if I've been abducted I have to honestly say I have no absolute memory per se. I can only point to my scars and say I think something has happened but I cannot remember, only flashes of things, and I'm not sure I can trust the flashes."

Like Polly and several others, Jane was not eager to claim abductee status, nor that her experiences would be confirmed as 'absolutely' real by an outside observer. In fact, she made no claims at all about what these events and the alien agenda might be, but she did hope to find answers. And when she realized the possible implications of several events, Jane approached the phenomenon from an investigative point of view. This involved keeping scrupulous journal entries, not only of sightings, flashbacks, dreams, and odd events, but also of her physical and emotional responses to these things. She filed sightings reports with the local MUFON group and hosted several parties of sky watchers on the property. Further, Jane attempted on many occasions to photograph the UFOs, as well as the helicopters and odd planes-sometimes invisible ones, however-which overflew her home.

From these research records and my investigation, the following account emerged, showing the presence of an abduction history. In Jane's case, several things are noteworthy. For one, the frequency of her UFO sightings is well above that of the typical abductee, and several of them were multiply witnessed or photographed. Also, while Jane has not recalled a conscious full-blown encounter, most of her memories have come from conscious flashbacks rather than dreams. Her dreams, by the way, are vivid and frequently recalled, but they seem only occasionally to contain alien-related information, and this is usually in a screened form. Finally, Jane's experiences have involved a number of telepathic communications and sudden "knowings" of messages or information.

She marks the date of her involvement from the August sighting, but for a couple of months before this, Jane sensed something different in her environment. She said she felt as if she were being watched, and thinking in normal terms that the watchers were human, she became very cautious and alert. For a while she resorted to carrying a gun, so certain was she of an unseen presence.

And then she saw the UFO on August 12, 1992, with a witness, and her reality began to shatter.

"Since it was during the Perseid meteor shower and my mom had never seen one," Jane said, "we decided to get up at 4 a.m. at the height of the shower to get a good show. We didn't really see many meteors, but we stayed out even though it was disappointing.

"At about 5:30 I saw a white bright light doing odd maneuvers in the sky overhead. I called Mom's attention to it, and then we watched a spectacular UFO show by first one, then two lights, for about fifteen minutes, until daylight. Mom and I were amazed by what we'd seen and talked about it all day."

The lights were round and white, one brighter than the other, and there was no sound. The first light cavorted constantly, making rapid figure-eight, circular, and L-shaped patterns. When the second, larger light showed up, the two objects raced toward each other. The first one blinked to a stop and the second one circled around it. Then they made a series of fast movements, "like two flies flying in circles around each other." They separated for a while, each engaged in its own aerial maneuvers, until the second object departed to the west. The first object remained in sight, flying in various patterns, until the rising sun obscured its light.

Jane was excited by the event and thought about it frequently for a few days, but then, as she told me, "After a while life took over and it was pushed to the back burner until October 1." Her sister came to visit that evening, and when Jane mentioned that bats had been coming to catch bugs around the outdoor light, they went out to watch them. "It was barely dark, and the bats were active," Jane said, "when we saw a very bright white light coming fast and low toward us from the west. It went directly over without a sound, turned slightly southeast, went a short way, and blinked out. We never saw a shape of any sort attached to the light. And we saw three more lights doing impossible maneuvers that night."

This second sighting of anomalous aerial activity seriously puzzled Jane, and through a magazine article she obtained the phone number for MUFON, Mutual UFO Network. She was put in touch with a local MUFON group and received a form to report her sightings. Shortly afterward, Jane joined the organization and began to read about the subject.

Through the books and articles, she learned not only about UFO sightings but also about the abduction phenomenon. "It was the reading," she said, "that helped me realize that maybe something was happening to me. I had had many of the same odd things happen to me that I was reading about. It wasn't until November 3 that I made a list of the odd things that had happened since July. The list frightened me because it had too many classic signs. And I kept having a gut feeling that something had happened."

One particular item on the list was especially suspicious, as it involved a time gap. Planning to drive into town with her friend Brenda to see some friends perform in a band, Jane left her house just before 7 p.m. on October 30 to make the fifteen-minute drive.

"I was just a short way down the road from my house," Jane described, "when an owl came flying directly at my windshield. I thought it was going to crash into the glass, but at the last minute it just curved smoothly over the top of the car without contact. I had never had that happen and was glad it didn't hit me. I continued on my way and got to Brenda's. She met me at the door, worried and asked if anything was wrong. I said, 'No, why?'

"She said that I was late, and she had called the house and left a message on my phone machine. She was worried because I was usually early, and it was late enough that she thought maybe I'd had a wreck or something. I was really surprised to find out that it was 7:50 p.m. I couldn't account for the time loss because I should have been there by 7:10 or 7:15 at the latest."

The whole thing made no sense, for Jane went back through the trip mentally several times and could not find any reason for the thirty-to-forty-five minute delay, not even a moment out of sequence. "But something didn't feel right," she said. "I think it worked on my subconscious, because it was three days later that I made the list of all the curious things that had been happening since July."

Ten days later, Jane began keeping a daily journal of events. She woke up that morning with a bloody nose, sore throat, and large bruises on her arm for which she couldn't account. She had not been aware of anything

unusual, other than a vague sense of some activity. Many of the oddities she'd noted were too ambiguous to give her proof of any abductions or alien involvement in her life. But the UFO sightings were real, that much felt certain, and they continued to recur.

The very next one, in fact, was even preceded by an announcement of sorts. At 3 p.m. on December 1, Jane suddenly received a communication, a very clear message that the UFOs would show up that night for her to photograph. She was given explicit instructions to clean her lens and put new batteries in the camera. "I'll get my camera and they'll show as a sign for me," she noted in her journal, "I feel it strongly."

At 5:30 she prepared, with a pallet, binoculars, the camera, and warm clothing. At 6:40, the UFO appeared. Jane quickly snapped five photos. One of them turned out well, showing a large single light of which the back portion appears wider than the front. It wasn't as good as she hoped, but good enough to make her determined to shoot more photos, since the UFOs seemed to be showing up rather frequently. And after the fulfillment of the telepathic communication's promise, Jane couldn't help but feel that the mysterious phenomenon of lights in the sky wasn't a random occurrence. This seemed to have a connection to her.

The next day, December 2, when she returned home from voice lessons, Jane entered the house and discovered an unrecognizable odor permeating the air. She described it as "acrid, strong, heavy, sharp, pungent, and tangy," unrelated to food or smoke odors, and unlike anything she'd ever smelled. Its source was never located.

That night, Jane witnessed another anomalous light. This one was not in the sky, but rather low to the ground and very close to her house. It was shortly after midnight, and she had turned off the light for the night. "I was lying quietly on my back, thinking,"

Jane said, "and my blinds were open. Shortly, just beyond the trees, I saw a flashing blue light. I saw it at the top of my cedar tree, and then it dropped down to the level of the window cross panes. Dogs all around began barking-mine didn't, they lay asleep-and I thought, *They're herel* My whole body tingled, and my mid-section welled up with something. I watched and didn't see anything else for a few minutes. Then I saw a 'light bulb flash' to the right and then left of the window." Her drawing shows an intermittent light spiraling downward, moving from one side to the other in the window.

Inexplicably-or perhaps not-Jane didn't get up to check on the situation. Instead, she instantly fell asleep. "I was awake one minute-the next, asleep," her journal notes. "I guess I was scared."

Two and a half hours later, at 3:40 a.m. on December 3, Jane woke up. She felt instantly awake and alert, as if she hadn't been asleep at all, and stayed up the rest of the night. Around 6 a.m., Jane happened to look at her back and was surprised to see two fresh scratches on her left shoulder and a scratch and a welt on the left one. She also noticed as the day went on that she was having difficulty discerning right and left directions, something that had never happened to her before. This lasted two weeks, as did an almost total loss of short-term memory.

At 7:15 a.m. the house was shaken and vibrated by the loud noise of a helicopter. It flew toward the south, lingered momentarily by the side of the house, and then continued on. Jane was surprised by the helicopter, because even though there had been an unusual number of them flying over her house since the first UFO sighting, she hadn't seen one in several days. The last one's arrival had coincided with a UFO, she realized, just as this one showed up only hours after the blue light's appearance. She wondered if she were imagining connections that didn't exist, if her increasingly agitated, disoriented, and frightened state of mind was clouding her logic. But the nervous feelings continued, even though she tried to explain them away. 'The strobe light scares me because there was no sound," she noted in the journal, "and the light was too close not to hear if it was a plane or 'copter. It was a silent light."

A silent light, preceded by an unknown acrid odor, followed immediately by a sudden loss of consciousness, and in conjunction with unexplained scratches, body marks, and disorientation. All that were missing were the memories.

On the evening of December 4, Jane found another unexplained injury, a quarter-sized bruise on her right hand. Examining the rest of her body, she also noticed a new addition to a pattern of marks which had been showing up on her forearm. They included two circles and two lines in a V-shape, and now there was also a "cut-line"

connected to the larger circle as well as a small red dot near the other circle.

The closing lines of her journal entry for that day include a very intriguing final line: "Felt better after I

talked to S . L and I laughed and laughed

tonight. I needed it. I feel good, up. I'm not so afraid to see them now. I feel a lot has been connected in my mind."

Two nights later, Jane recorded a curious dream which occurred between 11 p.m. when she went to bed and 1:30 a.m. when she awoke. On the surface, nothing about it seemed related to any of these previous events, but an examination of several details shows a possible screen memory or screened new event.

"A group of women arrived at my house for a 'birthday' party," she noted in the journal. "They seemed familiar but didn't know any of them from 'real life.' They were purposeful and quietly determined. We did some [unremembered] things in a small house. I stayed mostly in the 'bedroom.' I was disagreeable after a while and they were put out with me. One of them I knew better, and she was the leader. They were about as tall as I. I don't remember spoken words. At one point I was real disagreeable and tussled with them. They left me in the bedroom and conferred together in the kitchen.

"Finally they came out and said they had to go. They began to leave as a group, and I felt bad about what I'd done and asked them to reconsider. They said no and looked put-out. They began to leave, and I watched them go sadly and relieved, too. The leader did all the communicating."

Jane enclosed a number of words in quotation marks, as if to suggest that they weren't what they seemed to be, including "birthday," "real life," and "bedroom." Do they suggest that the purpose of the group's visit was not her birthday, that they might be familiar from experiences that weren't part of Jane's normal life, and that the room was not a bedroom?

The group's demeanor is not festive, but rather "purposeful" and quiet. No one speaks but the leader-a curious term for a social visitor. She didn't remember her activities with the group in the bedroom, nor why she was "disagreeable" and resistant. Whatever occurred was clearly not a party game. And finally, her feelings about them when they prepare to depart are strangely ambiguous.

If these visitors, events, and emotions are put into abduction terms, the parallel is obvious: A group of vaguely familiar visitors arrive and interact with a person in a small enclosure. The interactions are disagreeable to the person, who feels resistant. Only one of the group, the leader, communicates with the person. When the visitors leave, the person has confused emotions and cannot recall all the details of the interaction.

Given these parallels, it may well be that Jane's dream images screened an actual alien encounter. Five days later, however, on December 9, she had a conscious perception of unknown visitors. She awoke from a dream around 5:30 a.m. and realized she was hearing "voices and faint music" downstairs in the living room. She listened in surprise, but abruptly the noises ceased.

"Then I could hear someone walking away from the bed toward the stairs and down them," she wrote. 'The sound was a loud 'blue jeans rub' between the thighs of a man. I listened for several moments when suddenly I caught the black outline of a man slipping past my window. He had a faint light outlining him. He was tallish and in a hurry. He was just a quick flicker and then gone. I was paralyzed with fear. I tried to reach for my gun, but I couldn't move! I tried so hard, but I was so scared I couldn't move. When I looked at the window, I could move then, and everything was okay."

This intrusion marked the end of a series of events that had begun with the silent blue light near Jane's house. Other possible UFO sightings continued to occur, not always with concomitant odd activity. She watched two nocturnal lights fly in an arched path on January 9,1993, for instance, and three lights going in opposite directions on April 10.

"The lights would fade in, travel slowly, and then fade out or disappear," she wrote in her journal. "I saw two bright, golden streaking meteors, plus a huge bright flash through the trees southwest of my house. Seemed to

be in the woods."

And then on May 16, Jane had a spectacular UFO sighting that was witnessed not only by her mother, who was visiting, but also by several people all around the area of a large lake. That evening, Jane received a phone call from one of the local MUFON members who told her that she'd gotten a report of a triangular UFO near Jane's location. She asked if Jane would go outside and have a look.

Immediately Jane ran out and spotted a light in the sky toward the lake, alternating or rotating with red, green, amber, and white lights. Her mother stepped out and also saw the object, which hovered for about ten minutes before drifting off to the north.

Jane was distracted by her mother for a few minutes, and when she looked back to the west, the light was gone. Disappointed, she stood there a while wishing it would come back so she could make a better observation. Within minutes, unbelievably, the triangular craft reappeared, floating low overhead with a soft humming sound and a *whoosh* of air as it passed. The lights showed different colors this time, with four white lights down its sides, a big white light on the front, and a blinking red light.

As it turned out, there were quite a few witnesses.

A local weekly newspaper reported the sighting in its May 20 edition with a front-page story. The UFO was described as "rainbow-colored" and was seen between 9 and 10 p.m. A couple of hours later, the UFO had returned, or perhaps a different craft, because the police started getting reports around midnight of an object with orange, blue, and white lights which appeared to descend or land in a field. Whatever Jane had been seeing, others had seen things, too, and she had no doubt of the UFO's reality.

Nor could she ignore the weird external events and oddities that had been occurring since her first sighting in the summer of 1992. The list of these events reads like a litany of peripheral abduction activity. To begin with, not only did she see the anomalous flying lights, Jane also occasionally witnessed smaller, closer, more personal displays. Sometimes they were nearby in the woods, and sometimes even closer, as in the instance where two bright lights "zipped" between Jane and a friend with her on a sky watch.

Bizarre electrical disturbances recurred, such as a radio suddenly turning itself on, a television turning off, and a broken ceiling light turning on by itself, after five months of not working. Jane also had strange phone activity over these months. She received silent calls and numerous wrong-number calls of a suspicious nature, and her answering machine behaved oddly. Additionally, she noted a number of time discrepancies.

There were many unexplained noises in the house that had not been present before, loud pops, pings, and creaks out of the ordinary, as well as humming and buzzing noises and strange clicking sounds on occasion. Outside of the house, loud helicopters started flying overhead at odd times of the day and night. When Jane reported this activity to the local UFO study group, the pattern changed for a while, and instead of helicopters she witnessed a variety of planes now buzzing the property, including invisible ones.

Several times Jane awoke with her panties inside out, even though she is certain she didn't remove them. Also, she woke up once with her sleeping shirt inside out. And she has found blood on her pillow in addition to in her ear and nose, without any injury to account for these instances.

But there have been injuries at other times, mostly insignificant yet inexplicable in everyday terms. "I've had numerous unexplained odd bruises on my legs and arms," she told me, "and odd scratch whelps on my back. Right this moment, I have a bruise under my right eye that wasn't there yesterday and small round bruises on my right thigh on the inside."

Jane has also had a number of "puncture" marks in various places, including at one point several punctures inside her mouth and on her breast. Sometimes the marks appeared after a suspected encounter or strange dream, but not always, and there were usually only a very few of them at a time. But on one occasion, after a vivid daytime dream of seeing a Gray, Jane found a number of body marks.

"Saw a Gray coming through a door with light behind him," she wrote in her journal. "I wasn't afraid. I was

waiting in a dark room. Light behind him obscured his front features. He didn't seem to have elbows. He lifted his left arm and instead of [it bending at the elbow], his arm "S-ed" to lift. No elbow used. His hands were oversized with a covering. Seems like he had a willowy neck. His entire body was willowy, slender, slight, and fragile-looking, grayish color as best as I could see."

Jane remembered no activity in the dream, only seeing the Gray. But that same day she discovered an extraordinary number of new marks all over her body. From her calves to her shoulders, Jane and a friend counted and photographed ten scratches, thirteen bruises, five scraped or scooped areas, two punctures, and an equilateral triangle of three dots. These appear to have been very recent, because eight parallel, claw-like welts on her shoulders faded away during the morning hours.

For Jane, the UFO sightings and the physical marks were hard, believable evidence, things that could be photographed to show that something unusual was going on in her life. She had no photos, however, of the UFOs' occupants nor of whoever or whatever had caused the body marks. What she did have were flashback memories, sudden conscious images of scenes in which she was with aliens. They were brief and incomplete, but tantalizingly evocative of many more unrecalled events.

Once, she suddenly "saw" herself lying on her back, in a dark, dense atmosphere. "Little hands are beneath me," she said, "and I'm moving softly through the air." She felt panicked, unable to respond, and then the memory clicked off. In another, Jane recalled being with four aliens, fighting them as they carried her away, and being told of some impending event.

One sudden memory showed her on a table with four Grays around her, one of them tinkering with a square box to which hoses were attached that ran up to the ceiling. Another scenario involved the aliens taking sample scrapings from her fingernails, which they telepathically explained as a test "to check for pollution."

Two of the flashbacks concerned events in a round room. In the first one, she saw a white, curved desk and a group of seven beings with long hair and white robes seated behind it. The being in the center held a brilliantly lit globe in front of its face, and the features of the other six were indistinct.

The second event, a telepathic communication, came in a flash just after Jane had heard a weird humming noise on her porch. A scene came into her mind, of the inside of a craft which was sparsely furnished and illuminated by a lemony colored light. Three Grays were present, one of whom was dressed in a long robe and another who was busy with control-like equipment on the wall.

Jane began to pick up telepathic communication then, hearing *Activate, activate, activate* repeatedly. This was followed by the names of certain towns and areas in Texas, including the Panhandle, Big Bend, Gonzales, Llano, and the Louisiana-Texas border. While the images continued in her mind, the humming noise on the porch grew louder and followed her inside, where the implanted vision continued. One of the Grays turned as if to look at Jane with an expression of "parental amusement."

Some of her dreams, as noted earlier, seemed to contain scenes and information that could be related to possible alien experiences, although they were usually in screened form. A few of the dreams, about impending disasters and UFOs landing either to invade, monitor, or rescue humans, are common among abductees. Also common are dreams about sickly babies, acts of telekinesis and levitation, and strange people's faces very close to one's own. Jane has had all of these dreams.

Her most impressive UFO dream occurred in the wee hours of December 31, 1992, and, like so many abductees' "dreams," this one proved to be the memory of a very real event. Jane's journal entry for that day began with her noticing a new mark on her body around 8:30 am. It was a straight, "grooved" line over 1-1/2 inches long on top of her shinbone near the ankle. Then she described the dream.

"Had vivid! dream," she noted, "with extraordinary! auditory and clear images, during the night...between 3:00 and 5:15 a.m. I dreamed I was walking outside when an extraordinary buzz-hum began. The sound was loud, riveting, and pervaded through my body, throwing me into a 'void or mental isolation.' The sound seeped into my 'ordinary' consciousness...a powerful sound.

http://whale.to/b/turner_b.html

"I looked up, and a huge, gray, metal [saucer-like] spaceship dropped straight down from the clouds on my right," Jane continued. "I sat down on a 'mesa' cross-legged as it sank to earth. As I looked at it, it changed to a sphere on four legs with strange marks on it.

"Shortly thereafter, it lifted straight up and then began a curved flight in front of me and circled to my left. I yelled, 'Hello, hello' and it swooped in to look at me. Its force field was a tremendous, pushing, pressure against my body and was pushing me over, and I started to fall off the mesa.

"I asked it to 'move away, I can't keep my balance,' and it came right up to my face in front of my eyes. I began to fall. 'Don't let me fall, don't let me fall,' I pleaded. I sensed it caught me, and I lost consciousness and blacked out in my dream!

"I woke up at 5:15 a.m. panting hard. I could still hear that powerful sound. I'll never forget it or the extraordinary sensation. Somehow, I know that that is what they really sound like. The dream seemed real, more real than I want to admit. I've never had a dream like that! Never. So clear and lucid."

Seven months later, Jane decided to undergo regressive hypnosis to explore some of her strange memories and experiences. In the first session she recalled a hitherto-unremembered event from childhood, and in the second session she examined the UFO dream.

Once she was in a trance state, Jane didn't describe the onset of the "dream" as she'd recalled it. Instead, she said she was on the bed but got up and walked away because the powerful sound was hurting her ears. "And then I go back and sit on the bed," she said, "I'm sitting cross-legged, and it drops in the room. The sound, it's a real thing. It's got hold of me. Vibrating."

When asked about how the globe came into the room, Jane began crying and described an entirely different scene. "They're standing in front of me," she said, describing a group of human-looking men. "They're in white clothes, and very tall. They're watching my reactions. I'm standing barefoot on a cold, shiny floor. The sound's coming in my chest, a vibrating sound they're all making. They're all looking at me intently. They're tall and pale."

When the hypnotist asked if she knew them as friends, Jane said, "They're not enemies. They're talking, telling me their energy's going in it [the vibrating sound]. That I'm anointed. That whatever hard times may come, to have courage. That there would be times when I most need the shell to protect me. But I have to learn to help build it. And that not even the most solid shell could help protect from some of the stuff, but it would do me well to at least attempt it.... And that I will be frightened at times, but that fear is transitory and that it doesn't really hurt me.... Oh," she said suddenly, "but now I have to go in the other room! The doors open up funny and disappear. The room's so bright!"

Jane then described a brilliant "room made of light" that felt like a "cocoon." She sat and was "studied" by one of the tall, pale men. This one had light hair, although the others had hair of various jewel-like colors. They mentally discussed the things she "knows" but cannot access consciously. He told her that the knowledge would "come" to Jane when she was "ready," explaining that "each energy has to be built up, strengthened, before it can withstand the whole thing. It has to be adjusted to move in different ways of coping and seeing, and that's not easy because there are clumps of resistance in all of us."

When asked if this unexpected scenario was related to the dream of the UFO and the desert-like mesa incident with which the regression had begun, Jane said that it was, although she didn't make that connection clear. 'The tan world is a representation of reality," she said, "and the different subtle shadings show how they could each fade into one another to make a whole, but yet are different. It is an actual place, yet it's a representation and symbolic. It is within our grasp. We can reach it. I went there with help."

Jane described the UFO as a device making "an observation" of her. "My ability to break out of the somnambulism and to speak shows my strength, and they were pleased," she said. 'They [the tall beings] came in then to escort me out of it because I had shown that I could be strong enough."

"Were you aware of being in the tan dream in your physical body?" the hypnotist asked, and Jane said she was.

"If someone had come to your house and looked in," the hypnotist persisted, "you would not have been there in your physical form?"

"I don't know," she replied. "I was really there, it was real. My body was there."

Not much more was elicited about the UFO dream in the regression. But in Jane's first hypnosis session she remembered a series of events in rather detailed clarity. This abduction occurred when she was a young child staying with her grandmother, and her first awareness of something strange was seeing her "Nannie" collapse on the ground outside while hanging up the laundry. Suddenly, Jane felt that she was being watched and turned to see a group of four or five entities coming toward her.

When she asked why they were there, she was told, *Don't worry, you'll be all right.* And the beings escorted her toward the barn.

"What does your friend look like?" the hypnotist asked. "Is he as tall as you? Taller?"

"Just a little," she replied. "He's yellow."

Jane's memory of the following events was patchy and confused. She thought the main entity led her into the barn where she was placed in something like a "bucket" and swung around. After this, she recalled being physically examined, helped down naked from a table, and taken into a different room by the "friend" with "dark, slanted eyes."

"It's round and bright, bare," Jane described. "I see colors, just colors. The top is blue, dark royal blue. It's a pretty, blue ceiling. The floor tickles my feet, tingly. We walk through the room and come to where all the animals are."

When asked more about the animals, including a deer which she pets, she suddenly skipped to a scene of her crying beside Nannie again, still immobile slumped over the clothes basket. Once Jane was calmed down from this, the hypnotist took her back through the entire scenario. This time, Jane could see more about the examination and other details.

"When the bucket stops moving, where are you?" she was asked.

'They help me out and sit me on the table," Jane said. "It's the table. I've always been good before. *Why are you crying so much?* I don't know. He says I'll get over that. I won't feel so bad, when I get older."

"What won't feel so bad?"

"Their coming, their visits. It's so kind. They look at the right side and the left side. They lay me down, pick up my legs one at a time. It tickles. They pull my toes. And rub their hands up my sides and say, *Turn,* so I turn."

The exam continued, in which Jane was "poked" with an instrument that reminded her of "chapstick." Then she was taken into the colorful room and from there to a third location.

"We go into the room with all the green, it's so pretty," she described. "I see big plants and animals and colors, too, of flowers and beautiful trees. I see rabbits, and I see a deer, and a bird, and...uh, oh, oh, down there in the water!"

"What water?"

"There's water, a lot of water. It's like a huge swimming pool. Something's swimming in the water, but I want to see the deer. I walk over, I see its eyes. It's white."

"What about the water?" the hypnotist asked, because Jane had turned away from that image very nervously.

"I know what's in there, and I don't want to look!" Jane resisted. "I don't want to look!

"You don't have to look," the hypnotist reassured her, but the image was already clear.

"I don't know what it is. Its head is real big, it's green," Jane said apprehensively, and then in a panic she shouted, "Oh! Oh! *Ow,* it's got me! Ooohhh! It has me by the neck! Ow! Let me go! Oh, oh! My ear! My ear hurts now!"

Jane was so upset by the recollection that after she had regained a calmer state of mind the session was brought to a close. Afterward, she described the water creature as having a long neck and some sort of "knobs" on its head. Something painful happened to her ear, and then the creature disappeared back into the water. She remembered nothing more, until the entities took her back to her grandmother, who then recovered consciousness. To date, whenever she has tried to read the transcripts of both regressions, she becomes so physically and emotionally upset that she cannot do it. But these are fairly mundane events within the abduction scenario, and her overreaction may come from events which are still suppressed in her memory.

Far more pleasant, or at least acceptable, have been the telepathic communications and "knowings" that have come to Jane without the aliens being present. The very first message came on November 25, 1992, from which she recorded, "I have suddenly understood that I must give myself to the Awakening. I understood this as if it were being told to me. There is a strong sense of urgency. I must respect my mother and all other things. To not hurt things, to live and let live. The time will come when they will present themselves to me in my reality. Won't be long. As angels they are in the mists of our mind. Give myself to the awakening. Do things in a good and calm matter, and everything will be okay."

The second message, on December 1, gave instructions and warned her to prepare to photograph the UFOs, which showed up as promised.

On April 22, 1993, she had another revelation. "I 'understand' I'm to get all my notes together for Karla and her work," she wrote. "What I have will be very helpful to her and is to be given freely as she asks. I'm to make special efforts to share all with her. She is very important as a voice that will introduce increased realization throughout the world. She is one of many who introduce the awareness to awakening."

The next message, on June 8, concerned something for which Jane felt she was being prepared or taught. "I understand if I meditate on my prayer list for healing at least once a day, then I will be shown results," she recorded. "That is the next step in my progression of activation. How far it will go will be determined by my level of discipline, passion, desire, and will."

On June 27, Jane woke from a dream about UFOs, but she couldn't recall any details. She did recall, however, coming to partial consciousness in the midst of the dream and trying to retain its details for later when she would be awake. But all she could remember was the briefest scene. "At one point I was standing looking at myself, and another time myself was behind me," she wrote that morning. But the notes were interrupted just then as a sudden realization came into her mind. It wasn't exactly the same as when the previous "communications" occurred, but it felt akin to that.

"All of a sudden I can remember the dream lesson given to me last night," Jane said. "It was illustrated and demonstrated to me the truth that I am truly a spiritual being animating a body. I am something separate from the body. The body is a tool, and I am entrapped in it. But I can separate from the body before death, and have done it many times, without conscious knowledge. I am a pure spiritual being when without the body, and I will be again. Patience is required. I am a spiritual being only animating a shell. The body is nothing, the soul is all."

On September 30, a telepathic communication told Jane that she was now "ready for the next level" and "the beginning of other things." She was told that some suppressed memories and information would be allowed to emerge "so I may retrieve that which will carry me forward." She saw herself as "a single mirror of mankind, aware of choosing either to "uplift" or "tear down" by her actions and intentions.

The following month, Jane experienced two more communications. "I understand I'm to attempt to rid myself of all violent and negative tendencies, to let go of controlling impulses," she was told during the first one. And the second one was simply, "I understand truth is a lonely territory. Truth is lonely. Each to his own. To disdain is incorrect."

Jane had a recent flashback that seemed to fulfill the promise made in one of the communications, about the release of suppressed memories. It concerned the UFO "dream" of December 31, 1992, and the saucer that transformed into a globe, came up close to her face, and forced her to fall. The new memories filled in the details much differently, however. After first watching a black saucer-shaped craft drop "from the clouds like a cookie cutter," Jane sensed "several intelligences" in the ship. Next, she saw it descend and transform into the sphere with four legs and designs inscribed on its surface, from which she now sensed a single intelligence. In its third permutation, the object "rose up and turned into a gray-black sphere with antennae" but no legs.

"I remember the dark, gun-metal-gray globe with antennae," she described, "having an intelligent awareness of me. When its attention came full on me, it took me over and there was nothing but me and it. Its physical force was like a huge wind without noise pushing against me. When I said hello, it was pleased and responded to me. When its attention came on me, I was its sole interest. It...was focusing entirely and completely on me.

"The antennae 'disappeared' when it came up close. There was an eye, large, and a round, silver metal thing in the area of a 'nose.' I hear metal clinks and the silver thing comes up to my ear. It feels 'clinical.' He's telling me everything is okay and he knows I'm not afraid, but I'm reassured telepathically. I know they hear me, and also he's 'reading' me. There is the absolute feeling of immense power and a rather impersonal caring and kindness. I also feel concern, but again, personal yet impersonal to a great degree. As I dwell on it, the 'eye' was truly alien, or rather not human. God, it was intense, probing, objective, impersonal, all-powerful.

"The silver metal thing is looking. It connects to my ear by clamping on the outside. In fact, it clamps on and covers my entire ear, and something is inserted. Something that implants and affects my brain chemicals and certain subtle functions. It is adding. The implant looks like a very tiny oblong cylinder about a quarter-inch long or smaller, made of non-metal stuff.

"I'm reassured during the entire procedure. And it doesn't hurt too much. I ask why they need that, and he looks deep into my eyes for a long time. Then he says that it was my choice, that I agreed to all this a long time ago.

"I said I didn't remember the agreement and when did I do that. And he answered, *Before you were born,* and *we've had this conversation before.*

"I asked him, 'Why me?'

"He said, *Because you became open and now the awakening has begun.* He told me that neither I nor the many others awakened could stop the arousal of ourselves or of humankind. The trigger had been pulled, and everything was to schedule.

'They pulled the thing away from my ear, and it hurt and stung for a little bit. I felt like something had been drawn out, an energy of some sort. They inserted sound in my head, and for a little bit afterward I was blind and could only see brilliant, revolving, iridescent colors so intense I had a momentary light explosion accompanied by a brief, unbelievable wave of head pain. But I saw his eye come close, his head touching my head, our left eyes almost touching, and the pain stopped. His eye was all I could see. His eye took the colors and pain away, and I was so grateful. His eye made me sleepy. I was comforted by the closeness of the energy and by his eye.

"I can't say yet what he looked like because the 'globe' screen is strong. The globe had seams of some sort. The eye is partially outlined in some fashion...a black void, liquid somehow and observing me on all levels of my being.

"At one point during all this, but I can't remember when, I was also told that the power-hungry governments of the earth were going to be very surprised because their worst nightmare was about to come true, that even they hadn't fully estimated the effect the Voyagers' arrival would have on the worldwide human population, or the rapid growth of their influence; that they (govt.) still hadn't fully accepted that it was a losing battle and eventually they will acquiesce."

The implications of such statements, if true, are enormous. Jane didn't know what to think about the communication, although the exam scenario seemed real. Moreover, the memory differed from the spiritual encounter that emerged in the hypnotic recall. Were they two episodes of the same event, or was one memory a

contrived screen for the other?

Throughout everything she has experienced, Jane's thoughts and emotions have run the gamut.

"At first I was terrified," she wrote in our initial contact, "but now I'm not. I feel whatever has happened has been not to hurt me. I feel like a piece of myself that was missing has been reconnected. I've had deep spiritual experiences and feelings since October 1992, all of a personal nature. I am uneasy sometimes, but I don't think I'm afraid any more."

In fact, she reported a very sudden change in her emotions that occurred in the winter of that year. "I went to bed afraid," she said, "and woke up the next day very detached," as if she'd been tranquilized and reassured. Her initial thoughts about the alien agenda, however, still made a "knot" in her stomach. "It's really all for their purpose," she said, "something that was prepared and developed long ago." And she felt she had been somehow given a choice to accept them, although it doesn't matter to them. "Either way, they win."

Jane didn't know why she was taken for alien involvement, nor what exactly she had been trained or prepared to do. Her only clue is a sense that she is "supposed" to introduce people close to her to the reality of alien existence. "You know, sometimes I feel used," she commented. "Is all this of my free will for good, or am I a puppet?"

She did feel that the aliens have put information into a deeper level of her mind, as if she were "stuffed full" with suppressed knowledge. Further, she said she didn't feel ready to know until now. She saw herself as "one of millions in a grassroots movement who are being stimulated" into a "gradual realization." Jane also sensed that the aliens had fostered within her mind a mistrustful attitude toward the government. But she was not at all sure of the source of any of the events and communications because she felt that both positive and negative entities or groups may have interacted with her.

As for the aliens themselves, she has only their actions and words to guide her assessment. Once when she telepathically asked them for a better term to call them than "alien," she was given the epithet "Voyagers," and they said that the awakening humans were being made into "harbingers of discord, discontent, revolution." Judging by their actions, Jane is not always reassured.

"We're not seeing the true intelligence behind all these scenes,' she said. The fact that they put us through episodes of "set-up scenes" and "absurd stuff" frightens her.

"I'm afraid we might find that intelligence so cold and impersonal," she said, "that it would be unbearable."

8. Angie

The youngest of the eight women in this project, Angie is a delightful, extremely intelligent woman whose conscious memories of abductions and encounters could fill a book on their own. She first contacted me after reading INTO THE FRINGE and briefly described a number of incidents in her experiences that closely paralleled many things my family and I had witnessed. As in the case of Beth, Pat, and Lisa, Angie remembered abductions involving apparently military personnel before our contact, and since that time there have been several others of a most disturbing nature.

When we first began to correspond, however, Angie was not at all concerned about the possibility of detrimental military activity. After all, the aliens who had been abducting her assured her that the humans in their company were "controlled" by them, and since Angie did not fear the aliens she likewise wasn't worried about the humans with them.

Since that time, her attitude has radically changed, for very good reason. But before examining the military encounters, it is best to begin with some background about Angie and the alien contacts.

http://whale.to/b/turner_b.html

Born in 1966, Angie has German and Scotch ancestry from her mother, and, since her father was adopted, she knows nothing about that side of her family. She is married and operates a small cattle ranch with her husband, Paul, outside of a large city in Tennessee. Angie is artistically talented, working in abstracts, lithography, cartooning, and clay.

Before her first alien abduction in 1988, she knew very little about such things and had never thought they could be part of her life. She did recall a few odd incidents from her childhood when I questioned her, including a strange event when she was four. She and her father were riding in his van when a blinding flash of light filled the vehicle. Immediately after the flash, Angie remembered feeling as if she were in a long, gray tunnel, but nothing more. Since that time, except for seeing a huge fireball in the sky, she could not recall anything unusual in her life.

Until the night of July 24, 1988, that is. Angie had gone to bed as usual, and then she suddenly awoke to find herself outside in the dark, paralyzed, facing a group of beings unlike anything she'd ever seen. "They were frail, hairless white beings who had the most mesmerizing eyes," she told me, and then she was amazed to watch their "catlike" eyes "wiggle" and change shape. They stared at her, and she felt as if they were reading her mind.

'This must be a dream," she said over and over.

"You are not having a dream," one of the beings told her telepathically. "We will show you. You have to go away with us for a little while."

He pointed with one of his three fingers toward the woods, and the other beings carried Angie in that direction. Terrified as she saw her house and husband receding, she begged the creatures not to take her any further, but her pleas were ignored. Angie's panic, combined with her phobia of the dark, made her very agitated, until the leader of the group injected something in her left forearm. She began to pass out, and the last words she heard were, *Just relax a little.* The next morning, Angie found two red dots in that place on her forearm.

"That's when I accepted the possibility that I'd encountered something physically genuine," she said. "I did not understand its meaning, and I spent the rest of the day wondering about the uncanny event, about how I reacted with fear because the woods seemed so dark and scary, and mostly about those dinky three-foot-tall beings. Who were they? Angels? Elves? Fairies? Ghosts? Aliens? When I went to bed that night, their image was still fresh on my mind, but I did not have any thoughts about them ever returning for me."

But the beings did return, and they have continued to come back periodically ever since. For the next two nights, Angie had clouded memories of being with the creatures, which could have been dismissed as dreams except for the fact that she discovered more red dots on her body after both nights.

Then in August she had a conscious encounter, waking in bed to see two Grays in her room. Instantly paralyzed and calmed by their "hypnotic eyes," she floated through the house with them and outside, to an unbelievable sight. "It was a big, silvery disk with revolving red, green, and yellow lights," Angie said, "suspended about two feet above the ground and it was noiseless. When I first saw it, there was no doubt in my mind that it was a UFO. That's when I accepted the possibility that the beings were aliens."

This time, Angie was not afraid. In fact, her curiosity was aroused, so she stepped forward to touch the craft. But one of the Grays leaped in front of her and warned her not to get close while the craft was in the "discharge phase" because it could harm her.

An opening appeared in the craft, and Angie saw a handsome young man, with blond hair and a tan jumpsuit, standing inside. Teleported aboard the craft, as if "sucked into a long tunnel of electric orange light," she felt separated from her body at that time, because she could see it "tumbling and twirling along beside me and all the bones, veins, and internal organs were visible."

Inside the craft, Angie was placed in a black chair where the blond man "scanned" her visually, inducing a sensation of orgasm. She asked if he, too, were an alien, and the man smiled and nodded.

The craft began to move, forcing her body back in the chair to her consternation, as she has a great fear of flying. "Where are we?" she asked, and then a small oval window appeared on the wall. She looked out and saw "thousands of brilliant stars in the midst of deep black space, but no Earth and Moon."

Four Grays entered the room, where one of them handed a case to the blond man. He removed a glowing green ball while two of the Grays floated Angie to an odd table. The man put the ball on her abdomen and moved it in a circular pattern, growing warm. Angie felt a "tugging sensation" in that area and asked what was being done to her.

The man said she was "ripe enough" and would be able to conceive. Angie told him that she and her husband had been trying unsuccessfully to have children, and the man told her she had not done so because her "blood, immune, and genetic systems" operated differently than other humans.

"Am I part alien?" she asked, confused.

One of the Grays told her that she had been "altered a little" to fulfill a special purpose. The blond man said they had produced a "novel breed" from ova they'd taken from her. He told her she was a "Chosen One" and that her children and others so chosen would *conquer the world through mastering the power of insinuations* message she would be given in other encounters. Angie then became very sleepy and passed out until 9 a.m. the following morning, back in bed.

After these incredible incidents, Angie seemed to undergo an interior change. "My husband and other people started noticing I seemed calmer and less talkative and daydreamed a lot," she told me. "My husband wondered what it was that I had been inscribing into the new diary I purchased. I told him that I was only recording dreams. I desperately wanted to share my story with someone, but did not because there was no one in my personal social circle who wasn't skeptical of such issues. I feared that if I told any of them, they would question my sanity. So I kept my secret for a long time to come."

During the next few months, she had only vague memories or dreams of other encounters, and after one of these she found four red dots on her abdomen in a diamond pattern. But UFOs were not the only craft to land on her property, for on November 23 she heard the sound of helicopters and looked out to see two black choppers with Air Force insignia overhead. When one of them landed on her property, Angie grabbed a coat and raced outside. But they zoomed away before she could reach them. This was the first time helicopters had been in the area, but it wouldn't be the last.

In February 1989, she had another abduction in which she was called a "Chosen One" and was also shown a scene familiar from other abductee reports. One of the aliens touched her forehead, she said, and "a series of graphic images exploded" in her mind. She saw "a reddish-gold desert planet with two setting suns," a "galaxy," a "blood-red moon and a fiery orange sun exploding," and an "underground city" before she blacked out. When she regained consciousness, an alien told her their home was "Cassiopeia in the heavens" but that they had made a home for themselves on Earth before humans were created. After this, Angie passed out again and was returned home.

Two days later, another helicopter circled the property, and a man who claimed to work for the utility company arrived, asking to examine the two transformers on the farm. He said there had been many power failures in the area, but Angie was suspicious since she hadn't recalled any such failures nor had she contacted the utility company.

Eight nights after the last abduction, Angie recalled waking up in the back yard with four aliens. Naked-although feeling neither cold nor embarrassed-she watched two aliens working with a "car-sized" device while a third one appeared to be digging soil samples. The fourth alien showed her a small black box, which he gave her and asked her to look inside. She did, and again her mind "exploded" and was filled with images, this time abstract patterns of bright colors. He then told her that she would soon "have the power to make mental contact" with other Chosen Ones and would be able to "influence their minds," and then he touched her chest and she blacked out.

The next day when Angie went outside, she found a large circle in the grass which looked "parched" and several

chunks of bubbly black metal slag. Excited by this proof, Angie photographed the metal and the circle, which didn't disappear for over a year and a half. Analysis of the metal in 1993 showed it to be ordinary iron slag.

In March she had two "cloudy" memories of abductions, both involving abdominal procedures, and in one of them she saw a group of "dazed" humans in the same room. On March 23, Angie counted nineteen helicopters flying over the farm and thought she could make out Air Force designations on them.

Ten days later, Angie recalled another abduction, but this one differed dramatically from the previous encounters. She found herself outside in the dark with a thin blue alien who "mind scanned" her. Then five men came out of the shadows, four of whom were "ordinary men wearing olive-green uniforms" with "crewcuts" and the fifth was "a dark-haired humanoid" in a long khaki coat with many pockets. This man, Angie said, "touched the blue alien and it suddenly shrank into a marble-sized orb of white light" which the humanoid then pocketed. He told her that these beings, "a nonphysical form of energy," were created and controlled by his group.

"Did you create humans, too?" Angie asked, and he confirmed this.

"What do you want from me?" she continued.

"We want to talk to you about your life," he told her.

'That's all?" she asked.

'There's more," he said, and one of the uniformed men took Angie to a black van parked behind her garage.

"Is that a real van, or is that your spaceship?" she wondered.

"You can't judge a book by its cover," another man replied cryptically.

Inside the van, Angie saw bench seats, carpet, and a large control panel. The other men entered, and Angie wondered if they belonged to some military group.

"Are you all with the Army, Air Force, Navy, or Marines," she inquired.

The oldest man replied, but she was beginning to have a hard time understanding everything he said. She thought he said the group belonged to an organization called "High Shelf" which worked mainly in "special underground stations." He also told her that she and other "Chosen Ones" were part of a mind-control project, to "carry instructions and temperance, via thought transference" to other people.

Once he answered her questions, he began an interrogation about her life. Angie could recall only a few of the questions, however, in her altered condition. He asked, for instance, if she remembered the aliens coming to her when she was young, which she did not. And he asked about her views on life and death. After the interview, which seemed quite lengthy, the man activated something on the contropanel, and Angie found herself back in bed, fully alert and "tingling all over," at 5:10 a.m. She quickly dressed and ran outside to see if they were still there, but the yard was empty.

Thinking about all her encounters, Angie came ,to several conclusions. First, she now believed that there was something much bigger than "man's views and theories and religions" to the universe. And she believed that the aliens were carrying out a "psychic transformation" with her and others for a good purpose.

Through the following months, Angie had several more encounters and UFO sightings. The most traumatic series of events began with an abduction in which she was "impregnated." Two weeks later, she took two home-pregnancy tests which proved positive, and she and her husband were elated. Angie did not tell Paul about the alien impregnation, since he had not believed her previous accounts of sightings and intrusions. She thought the baby inside her was a special gift from her alien friends, and, being unfamiliar with the typical alien process of impregnation and subsequent retrieval of the fetus, she looked forward to carrying the child to term and beginning the family which she and Paul desired. They had even selected names for the baby.

But a month after the impregnation encounter, Angie started having unusual physical symptoms: "sweating" and

"tingling" during the day, and a pulsating sensation in the womb area at night. This continued for over two weeks, until on the morning of July 4, Angie suffered a bloody, painful miscarriage.

"It happened in my bathroom," she said. "After hours of heavy bleeding and terrible cramping, the fetus came out, in my hands." It wasn't like a normal fetus; larger, three inches long, devoid of sex organs, and had "black, slanted" eyes reminiscent of the white aliens she had encountered. Under a strange compulsion, Angie put the fetus in a jar of water and hid it in the barn loft. Later she went back and found that the jar was missing.

Paul took Angie to the doctor right away, as she'd lost a lot of blood and subsequently she had a "D&C" procedure. She couldn't understand why she'd lost the baby, having taken excellent care of herself, and the loss was devastating.

At a much later date, Angie underwent two hypnotic regressions, in which three of her experiences were examined. One of these was the loss of the fetus, and in that regression Angie described a hitherto unremembered bedroom visitation in the hours before her miscarriage. Several beings and a large, floating blue light entered the bedroom. While some of the aliens busied themselves with Paul, two others carried out an abdominal procedure on Angie, involving a small cylindrical device that "clicked."

Nothing further intruded until September, when Angie awoke with a vague recollection of being on a craft with her sister, Julia. That morning, Julia phoned and told her, "I had the weirdest dream last night." She described being with human-looking aliens in blue jumpsuits in a curved, domed room, and she saw Angie there, too, in a silver jumpsuit like the aliens wore. She recalled Angie telling her, "They want to give us eternal life."

The same details had been part of Angie's memories, and the two sisters got together to discuss the shared "dreams." Angie told her sister then, for the first time, about her other encounters, relieved to end the "emotional isolation and fear of ridicule" that had kept her quiet before this.

Her circle of confidants expanded in November, when her father told of seeing a domed, orange UFO while out in the Smoky Mountains with some friends. Angie and Julia shared their experiences with him, and that prompted their father to open up even more. The three of us learned a lot that day," Angie said. "I told Dad about all of my alien encounters; Dad told us about his past encounters and about our mother's experiences, too; I cried. That was the day we learned that our parents have been involved with the aliens since before we were born."

Intermittent abductions continued to occur. From December 1989 to April 1992, Angie recalled fifteen events. In one, she was shown a nursery of "clones" similar to other abductee reports, and she was told that the aliens had "programmed" her to hide the fetus after her miscarriage. When Angie asked if the aliens had restored the fetus to life, she found it hard to understand the reply that its physical body had been stored and its soul recycled.

In another, Angie was shown a "clone" infant as well as nine "hybrid tots" and was told they would be used "to prepare [humans] for the changes." When she asked, "What changes?" she was told it involved "humans' spiritual transformation."

One abduction during this time was very singular, as Angie recalled going to an underground facility that her uniformed human escort said was in northern Arizona. He told her there were other stations around the world, including bases in New Mexico, the North Pole, and Africa. When Angie asked who was in charge of the "High Shelf" operation, another of the men, a "blond humanoid" replied that his kind "control everything."

"What about the Grays and the other aliens?" she asked, thinking of the several different types she had encountered. "Are they involved, too?"

"By degrees," he answered.

"What about all these humans?" she persisted, "these military people?"

"We control them," the blond smiled.

She was taken to a group of other abductees or "Chosen Ones" and was handed a small black box and told to open it. When she pulled open the lid, Angie said, "a mist of brilliant violet light" came out, covering the group of abductees and causing "a powerful electric sensation" after which she blacked out.

Throughout these encounters, Angie had felt positive about her involvement with the aliens, including, finally, the loss of her unborn child, which she believed was for a higher purpose. And in the abduction she and Julia remembered sharing, Julia had accepted Angie's statement about getting "immortal life" from the beings, so she, too, had a positive attitude. It was surprising, therefore, that Julia was extremely frightened a month later when the sisters spotted a UFO.

Returning from Georgia on December 29, they were driving along a state highway in Tennessee. At 7:30 p.m. they saw two unusual vehicles. The first one, Angie described as "an old spray-painted bus" traveling very slowly, "full of hippie folk," with the words "Magic Bus" painted across the rear.

The sisters laughed about it, but then the bus slowed to about ten miles per hour, and Angie could not pass it as they moved up a hill. She and Julia saw some of the bus's occupants open their windows and shout, and then one of them pointed upward. The girls looked in that direction and saw a bright blue object above the treetops ahead. It had a dome, wide rim, and black, round portholes.

"Angie, look!" Julia shouted. 'That's a UFO!"

The hippie bus accelerated and was soon out of sight, as Angie's Corvette came to a complete stop on its own. A blue glow engulfed the car.

"Oh, God! It's behind us!" Julia screamed in fear.

In Julia's account of the incident to me, she wrote, "When it came towards us, I got scared. And Angie told me there was nothing to be afraid of, but I still felt afraid and got down in the floorboard of the car."

There was a brief "intermittent beeping sound/' Angie said, and "then all was silence and darkness. The UFO was gone." The car's headlights popped on, Angie turned the ignition, which worked perfectly, and started to drive away, telling Julia it was safe for her to get out of the floorboard.

"Goddammit, Angie," Julia replied, "let's go!"

They took off, and a few minutes later Julia said, "Do you know what time it is? Ten-twenty." Angie didn't believe her, but when she checked her own watch, it had the same time. Almost three hours had passed since they spotted the blue UFO, and the sisters didn't have a single memory of what transpired.

In April 1992, Paul and Angie moved onto the cattle ranch, and an entirely new series of mysterious events began. Their specialty-beef business was doing very well until something started killing off the cattle, and within a year the losses amounted to thousands of dollars.

"A small number of them had been mutilated," Angie reported. "One cow was missing a head, another had been disemboweled, and a bull calf appeared as if he'd been ripped apart by a tyrannosaur. The bodies of some of the mutilated ones had peculiar stigmata such as shaved places, clean and bloodless holes and gashes. There wasn't a single scratch anywhere on the rest of the dead cattle."

Many of the cattle died in February and March 1993, when other farmers in the general area also reported dead and mutilated animals. Reading about one of these reports, Angie contacted the paper and got in touch with a veterinarian who'd examined someone else's dead cattle. In the first case, he reported that the cattle had died of toxins of an unknown source, and with Angie's cattle, all he could report was death from unknown causes.

The alien activity after this was rather different than what had transpired before, and for the most part Angie was left with very cloudy and incomplete memories of the events. One abduction, however, is worth noting at some length.

Waking on board a craft, naked on a table, Angie saw humanoids and two different kinds of Grays.

Momentarily, two more humanoids, in red suits, entered, and Angie recognized the blond one as the man she'd seen before. She asked if he had a name, and he told her "Carl De Zan."

He told her that it was time for her group of Chosen Ones to carry out their "assigned tasks." This involved making contact with "certain people throughout the world" to "collect data" from their minds. And that data, in turn, would then be collected from the minds of the Chosen Ones by the aliens. All of this would be done, he said, through tiny implants in the head, devices that served many purposes. They could help the implanted people use their "special senses," for instance, and stay in contact with one another through dreams. Besides collecting data, the implants could also send instructions.

When Angie asked about the overall purpose-the agenda-she was told that through "tempering" human minds, the aliens wanted to remove "filth and evil" and "negativity" from humans.

Having been given repeated lectures about her special abilities as a "Chosen One," at one point Angie initiated an experiment with herself. "I decided to test my mental powers by giving thought transference a try," she reported. "I went to bed around 11 p.m. and concentrated long and hard to project my image into my sister's dream. During the process, I drifted off to sleep and soon found myself in a dream in which Julia was present!

"I phoned my sister [the next morning] to let her know about my attempt at reaching her in her dream, but before I had a chance to say anything, she recounted the dream in full detail."

Angie also decided to try hypnotic regression in order to uncover anything she could about the events she'd been unable to remember consciously. Undergoing two hypnosis sessions, Angie was surprised to retrieve details of a childhood encounter in one session. Going back to age four, when she and her father had been blinded by a flash of light while riding in a van, Angie recalled being taken into a gray, cigar-shaped craft where she saw several men and women in white coats. One man with "long, dark blond hair" took charge of her, carrying the crying child to a strange table.

"It's metal and has an edge around it," she described, "like for blood to drain off. And there is something down at the foot, under the table, but I can't see it clearly."

Acting in what she perceived as a "hurried" manner, the man strapped her wrists down as she lay on the table and placed on her head a "headband thing" with moving red and yellow lights. The hypnotist instructed Angie to view the scene from a distance, rather than reliving it, and she obliged.

"I can see my hands twitching," she said. "The wristbands are making my fingers twitch and jerk. I'm lying there with the headband on, and my eyes are open. The pupils are dilated like I'm dead."

She then described a procedure in which a clear tube was inserted vaginally and filled with "a pinkish liquid" as one of the women pressed on Angie's abdomen. When she was revived, the blond man tried to "jolly" her out of her terrified state, and she was returned to the van, which exited the cigar-shaped craft by flying out of the opening "on its own," as Angie reported.

"We're coming down to the road," she said, "I can see it clearly because it's daytime, and the van lands smoothly on the road. It's moving by itself for a minute, and that's when I notice it's going in the wrong direction. We were going the other way before they took us."

"What is your father doing now?" the hypnotist asked.

"He sort of shakes his head," she said, "like he's perplexed, and he keeps driving."

In August and September 1993, Angie recalled three other encounters, including one in which she saw her father aboard the same craft. When she questioned him, he described an abduction memory from that same night, although he didn't recall seeing Angie. In another, she was given information about alien life in other parts of the galaxy, about their travel technology, and about their having created life forms on Earth, including humans.

But the next month, the abduction and encounter scenarios changed abruptly, beginning on October 2, when

http://whale.to/b/turner_b.html

Angie woke up and found herself downstairs in a guest room with "a youthful male humanoid" wearing "an oversized red plaid shirt, faded jeans, and black leathery boots." Angie felt in control of her senses, unlike some previous situations, and asked the young man several questions, including his origins. In spite of his very human appearance, he told her he and his kind were "extraterrestrials" and wanted to know if the term made her feel uneasy.

"No," she replied, "I'm not afraid of you any more." She could see a silvery disk outside the house and assumed she would be taken there, but instead the man embraced her and she became partially paralyzed from the chest up. Then he lay her on the floor and had intercourse with her, after which she felt faint and passed out.

She remembered this occurring again, on the nights of October 3 and 4, and on the morning after the October 3 encounter Angie awoke with blood dripping from her nostril and increasing congestion and pain in her shoulder. In spite of this, she had not been upset by the three encounters, and since the intercourse had not been frightening, she wondered why the man had induced the partial paralysis and subsequent loss of consciousness.

Four nights later, she went through an encounter that was far less pleasant. Angie went to bed very late that night, around 1:30 a.m., and folded her clothes neatly on a bedside table before turning out the light. In what seemed like only a few minutes later, she awoke fully alert, listening to the sound like a jet engine that was loud and getting louder. Her next perception was that she was not in the bedroom, but rather standing completely dressed in an unfamiliar grassy clearing in the woods near an old dirt road. And she wasn't alone. "With me were three apparently frightened young women," Angie described. "One was lying face-down in the grass weeping."

Angie became frightened herself, for the first time since her initial abduction. "My instincts said that we were about to be abducted by a force so great that we would not be able to control our situation no matter how hard we might pray to God."

One of the other women, tall and plump and brown-haired, started yelling, "Here they come! Here they come!"

The sound grew unbearable as a strange-looking airplane flew toward them and landed like a helicopter. Two of the women panicked and ran into the woods, while Angie and the brunette stood frozen in place by fear. A group of men in black uniforms emerged and began rounding up all the women. As they were hurried toward the craft, Angie said she remembered "telling them that I'm not an animal and do not appreciate them treating me like one."

Ignoring her, the men pushed the women into narrow compartments at the rear of the craft, which then took off and frightened Angie even more with its erratic flight. She began to pray and then blacked out.

"After coming to my senses," Angie reported, "I found myself sitting in a chair and at some place that looked like a military base. I saw several men in military uniforms leading some humans toward these long, gray buildings. "

Two men took Angie into one of the buildings, where she saw a group of people seated around a conference table, some in uniform and others in ordinary clothing. One of the men, who had on a uniform with many decoration ribbons, stared at Angie wordlessly from the table and engaged her in a brief telepathic conversation. Then a woman came up behind Angie, and when she turned to look at her, the woman's gaze paralyzed her. The woman gave Angie a dark red liquid to drink, which made her dizzy and sleepy to the point of passing out. After that, she remembered only a brief view of the buildings from a distance and then the sound of the strange aircraft once again.

When Angie underwent hypnosis, she chose to examine this experience, recovering a few more details. After passing out from the bitter liquid, Angie recalled waking up in one of five chairs that seemed to be on a stage or platform. "A man and three women were sitting in chairs at both sides of me," she said. "I experienced physical paralysis and couldn't think straight when the general gazed into my eyes. He wasn't any more than two inches from my face.

He lifted my hand, then dropped it, like checking to see if I was in a deep trance, then checked my pupils. He

did the same with the others. The woman presented a small reddish-brown box to him," she continued, "and he pulled out a tube from underneath it and attached the tube to something between my chair and the next person's. I blacked out again and have absolutely no memories of what transpired during the remaining time I was there."

When she got out of bed the next morning, her neatly folded clothes were scattered on the floor. She had a hissing sound in one ear and problems hearing the rest of the day. And she discovered the door to the basement standing open that morning. When Angie called the next day to tell me about this incident, I could hear helicopters flying over her home. She had been very unnerved by the incident and said it was all "scary and confusing."

That fear turned to sheer terror the following month, when once again Angie was forcefully taken by men in military uniforms from her bedroom. Earlier that day, November 9, another dead cow was found in the barn. The body was unmarked, but blood had seeped from its nose and mouth. There was no sign of a struggle, however.

That night after going to sleep, Angie awoke to go to the bathroom, and immediately she heard helicopters approaching. From the bathroom window she looked out, but she saw nothing and could no longer hear the choppers. Angie went back to bed and to sleep, but woke up again hearing not only the helicopters but also the sound of a vehicle coming up the drive.

She tried to rouse Paul, but he wouldn't wake up.

The back door opened, and Angie went "limp" when a group of men in olive-drab jumpsuits came in to the bedroom. Paul started to stir, but one of the men touched him with a wand-like device and Paul stopped moving.

The men took Angie outside where two green helicopters were hovering. She was put inside one of them, given an injection, and told she was being taken in "for evaluation." She was also fitted with a chest and shoulder device from which a breathing tube was placed in her mouth for the duration of the flight, perhaps twenty minutes. The chopper landed in a rural area with buildings and many helicopters in view. Military personnel were busy on the grounds, some leading civilians, perhaps other abductees, through the base.

"A gray van approached our helicopter," Angie told me, "and stopped about twenty yards ahead of us. Two men in olive-drab suits exited the rear of the vehicle, and then a third one came out with a tall, slim man in a pinstripe shirt. The fellow with the striped shirt had metal cuffs on his wrists and white tape over his mouth, and appeared to be in a state of panic. Two men carrying black rifles came into the scene," she continued. 'That grieving man was pushed to the ground, and one of the armed men pumped one bullet into his back."

In complete terror, Angie was then carried over to where the man's body lay. She asked why "they had to kill that poor man."

"You talked," one of the men said.

"But what's this got to do with him?" she asked.

"We take one like him each time a recruit talks," he told her.

"You could have wasted me instead," Angie replied, but the man said she was too valuable as part of an alien "project" involving implants.

She said she knew they were trying to brainwash her and make her fear them, but the man said they only wanted to keep her in line. He told her that she would be forced to watch more such killings if she continued to "talk to Karla Turner" about her experiences, and that more of her cattle would also be killed.

She was then taken into a building and underwent a series of physical procedures, including blood-taking, a shower of some sort, and a gynecological exam, before being returned home.

Angie was extremely angry and frightened by the experience, and I was concerned for her safety when she told me about it. By that time, I had begun this book project, and I asked Angie if she wanted to withdraw from it.

But she refused to be intimidated by the threats and continued to cooperate with me.

Four nights later, the men in military uniforms returned, and Angie was flown to an area near a hillside where she was taken into an underground facility. She was given an injection, followed by a shower to remove some brown dust that had gotten on her earlier, and then by another gynecological procedure. She was told that she and some other women there were part of "a genetic experiment which involves cloning and DNA replication."

After this she was escorted to another area where several tables were covered by plastic sheeting, which one of the medical women removed. "I recall seeing two large control panels and two large metal crates near the table," Angie said. 'The medical woman told me that they call it the 'table of screams' because a lot of women who have been put there freak out when they get a look at some of the 'probes' that are used."

Placed on the table, Angie was fitted with a headphone-type device that emitted a loud beeping, and she temporarily lost consciousness. When she came to, she was face-down on the table but able to move. "A small silver box with the open end towards me sat just a few inches from my face," she said. "Inside the box was a gray and white mechanical device of some sort which made clicking sounds. The lady came around in front of me and poked a thin, black rod into the side of the mechanical device. She said, 'It's been deprogrammed. We've never had this sort of thing happen before'."

Angie asked if they were doing something with the implant in her head and was told "that there was more than one implant device in there, that two were the aliens' products and one came from them."

Angie asked, "Why in hell have you gone and stuck implants in my body? What are they for?"

The medical woman told her that the aliens do different things with them that her group couldn't discern. 'They won't give us all their knowledge, I'm sure you understand that by now," Angie reported the woman as saying.

Having encountered a number of physically different aliens, Angie asked which ones the woman meant. She was told that the military group was involved with some groups of aliens but not with two of the groups who had contacted Angie. She said the military group's implants "monitor how many times [implanted abductees] come into contact with alien beings" as well as recording "the approximate location of a pick-up."

In the course of further procedures, Angie was held down while the women inserted a probe into her left nostril. When they performed a second test, Angie was told that the alien implants had "deprogrammed" those from the military group.

Her next recollection is of being taken to a room with other women where they were all interrogated by an older man in an officer's uniform whom she remembered as a major. According to Angie, the major said, "You people are going to tell me everything. I don't want to be an asshole and force it out of you, but if that's what it takes...."

Three women were questioned before Angie, and when her turn came she was asked about the information she'd been given by the Whites and Grays about their implants. She told him that she'd seen four kinds of Grays and didn't know which ones had used the implants on her.

"You're lying," the major replied. "I'm going to ask you one more time."

"Which aliens do you want to know about?" she asked. "I told you I've been with a lot of them."

"Start with the slender gray aliens," he told her. "Did any of those talk about implants?"

"I can't think," she said, "you're confusing me." It was her way of evading his questions because she felt it was "none of his business."

He ordered that she be taken to another area called the "probing room," where she lost consciousness after receiving another injection.

After each abduction by the military group, Angie grew more and more apprehensive and fearful. When I asked her about any positive help she might have received from the aliens she thought of as her friends, Angie's reply,

in a January 2, 1994, letter, showed how much more she now questioned her experiences than she had done in the beginning.

"Since that military group stepped into the scene," she wrote, "there haven't been any aliens to come to my rescue. I constantly pray for help and guidance from the good sources in the universe, but there just hasn't been any help on my part. I don't know which aliens are trying to help me, and which aliens are out to deceive me. The spiritual growth and all the good things I've experienced may not be linked to my [alien] experiences. Maybe it's just something I brought about all by myself."

Apparently there was someone else aware of her feelings, because six days after she wrote that letter Angie had an alien abduction for the first time in months, which seemed designed, in part, to placate her. After going to bed on the night of January 8, she woke up to find herself on board a craft in the company of a Gray. Angie said she was neither paralyzed nor in a trance state and clearly recalls the alien using some device to "locate and reactivate an implant" by insertion of something into her ear. She was then told they were finished with her and she would be returned home.

"Before I go," Angie said, "you are going to tell me what this is all about."

The alien replied that information had just been placed in the implant and that Angie would "know everything in due time." But she insisted on asking more questions. When she asked why the military personnel had given her so many injections, the alien said that they used "tranquilizer drugs on all recruits to prevent them from running away." She said the alien also apologized for the military group's "indiscretions" and told her she would not be made to watch any more "killing events."

Angie had her doubts about this and told the alien that the warning had been for her not to "talk," but that she had continued to "talk" since then. The alien replied that she should do what she felt was important. "He said the military people have been untruthful about most of what they've told me," she reported, "and that some of their demonstrations were mere illusions. It's part of their cover-up."

She also questioned him about the space craft and was told that it operated on "the power of the mind." But she was unable to ask anything more because four Grays entered and led her through a corridor to an exit from the craft just then.

"I saw that we were in a big hangar at some base," she said, "and there must have been more than fifty military people there."

She was told that those people would return her to her home, but before she could go over to them, one of the aliens used some device to render her unconscious. Her next memory was of being back in her bedroom, and that day she had recurrent bouts of pain on the side of her head where the probe had gone into her ear.

As with most abductees, there is no ending yet to Angie's story, nor a clear understanding of the agenda behind her repeated abductions. But there are certainly a number of important questions raised by her account, which has only been partially presented here.

Compared to other abduction scenarios, Angie's contains many of the typical elements: various physical exams, fetus-retrieval and baby presentation; visions of the desert world; sexual activities; training and instruction sessions; teleportation methods; the "black box"; punctures and bruises; and implants, to name a few. Similarly, her reports of activities and details in the encounters involving apparently military personnel contain much that is familiar from other accounts.

What is very untypical, however, is the richness of her recollections. In most abductions, the person can only remember small parts of the total event, and this is true for Angie, too, in many of the encounters. But in some of them she seems to have been allowed to retain more than the usual level of awareness. Either that, or she just naturally is not as susceptible at times to the mind-control procedures which are used to suppress abductees' memories.

The abundance of information she received is also untypical. Certainly there are many abductees who have been

instructed on various topics in the same way Angie had been. But she has managed to retain an enormous amount of this information which can be correlated with the numerous but more incomplete reports from other cases, on such topics as mind-control methods, alien-human collusion, and implant capabilities.

Still, she doesn't recall everything, as she has noted and as hypnosis has shown. So why is she allowed to recall these particular things? Is this programmed or accidental? If programmed, by whom, and for what purpose?

Further questions are raised by a contradiction in the details of two related recent events. It concerns the controversial subject of covert cooperation between human agencies and alien groups. When Angie and the other women were questioned by the major, he focused at one point on what Angie knew about the implants of the Whites and Grays. This implied that his organization was not familiar with those kinds and thus not allied in any way. Angie had also been told that the military group worked with some aliens but not with all of them.

But in the January 8 abduction, Angie was aboard a craft with one of the Grays, who proceeded to discuss the military group in a negative manner. This implied that he was not allied with them. Yet, when that craft landed, Angie saw they were inside a military facility.

Some further explanation is clearly called for to resolve the confusion. From what she has observed of relations between our military organization, whatever its aegis, and their alleged alien allies, Angie thinks they are at odds in some ways. Her impression is that the human organization is responsible for the extreme cover-up activities rather than the aliens. But this is based in part upon one of the aliens' statement that they had no concern about their presence being known-a dubious statement, however, given their employment of memory suppression and virtual reality illusions.

Given the aliens' VRS capabilities, there is always a question of the reality of these events. Just recently, however, Angie's husband told her he'd had a strange dream that some men broke into the house and took her away. Unhappily, she had had the same dream that night.

Angie is keenly aware of the unanswered questions. "Although some of my experiences with them have led to a positive transformation," she once said, "the aliens certainly are not any more open with me now than they were five years ago....

"Until I undergo hypnosis and some truth is recovered, there's no way of my really knowing right now which aliens are trying to help me and which aliens are trying to deceive me. All of them seem to handle things clandestinely, even the good ones, and they're all alien in actions and appearance as far as I can tell.

"It could very well be that some types are experimenting on me for their own benefit and are lying to me just like they are lying to other people. I just don't think this is the case with all alien types I've encountered. I would want to think that at least one group is trying to help instead of harm and deceive me.

"I've learned to wash my hands of blind faith and am now beginning *to* use *my* God-given reasoning faculties and extreme caution, reasoning, and prayer in deciding how I should respond to the aliens," Angie said. "I am a human being, and we humans do have feelings and rights!"

9. Amy

Of all the contacts I received after INTO THE FRINGE was released, Amy's first letter was the most compelling. She wrote, as she explained, because it was the only way to get free of a compulsion that had begun in November 1992, after an extraordinary dream. The following week, she bought and read my book, and then began the compulsion to write me and share the dream.

Amy, however, as I would find out, has a strong sense of independence, self-control, logic, skepticism, and an admirable stubbornness. She resisted the "ridiculous" compulsion for several months, but by April she was ready to get it out of her system and reasoned that writing the letter would end it.

http://whale.to/b/turner_b.html

In the first part, Amy described some unusual events that corresponded with things I related in INTO THE FRINGE. These included odd phone behavior, which she humorously attributed to "The Phantom of the Operator," and unexplained electrical problems and noises in the house. None of the unusual experiences were attributed to alien activity, a glaring absence in comparison to the other contacts I'd gotten. But then she began to describe the dream. In the first scene, Amy and her daughters were in a campground where "huge tarantulas" chased them. They got in the car and drove away, but the car started flying upward, over the trees, where she saw a huge moon.

"In front of the moon," she wrote, "I saw the silhouettes of some small, thin beings. They had big heads like the aliens I've heard about, and they were moving about in front of the moon or light that glowed behind them. One turned and looked at me, and I saw large, black eyes. I wasn't afraid of him. I thought, *Well, I've never actually seen one of them-now I know what they look like."*

She heard a loud noise approaching, and then she flew onto a metal-roofed house. "I knew the metal might be hot," she noted, "so I knew not to touch it." Amy was on the second story, where she looked through "large windows" into one of the rooms. There she saw a group of men talking excitedly and heard a softer, female, voice telling them to "calm down because there was work to do." The men looked human, but the female was part of "a group of non-Earth representatives."

When she was brought into the room, she said, "The humans introduced me to a female alien wearing a white plastic mask so that her appearance would not frighten the others and so they wouldn't focus on her eyes. Even though she wore a mask, I could see her eyes through the holes in the mask. They were big, black eyes. From that point on, I remember being right next to her, and her face stayed very close to my face...very intense!"

The first part in the campground was either a natural dream or a screened sequence, but the illusory force rapidly disappeared as she moved from the campground to the room in the alien's company.

Amy said the alien explained that her race had been doing things to humans that they should not be doing. "She and several groups of her race wanted to stop the 'abuse' of the humans by her race. They were working with certain people on Earth to stop the process. The other humans in the room were ex-pilots, military officials, and other professionals."

I was riveted, now, because Amy's account echoed that of information I'd recently received, from two widely separated sources, about a covert program or effort by certain parties in the intelligence and military organizations to resist alien abductions and to assist abductees in certain ways.

There was no doubt in my mind that some in the military had an active hand in monitoring and questioning abductees, as my husband Casey had gone through such an experience. Other abductees-including Leah Haley and Debbie Jordan-had also reported contacts, intrusions, and kidnappings by human, seemingly military, agents, and there was objective evidence in some cases to back up the reports. But this was a far cry from accounts of human agents actively helping abductees, much less a coalition of human and alien parties working against the abduction agenda, as the information alleged to come from the intelligence community has claimed. So far as I knew, this claim was not generally known from public ufological material. Yet here it was in Amy's dream.

Her account went on to say that the masked alien dominated Amy's attention, "putting" information directly into her mind. "She explained all kinds of things, but I don't remember it all," Amy wrote. "I think I remember my role in the plan, but I don't like knowing so I forget. I don't want to remember!

"After she told me about those things, she told me about implants. She put a thin, pencil-like metal instrument in my right ear and I thought, *Ohl This is gonna hurtl* but I couldn't move or stop her. To my surprise, it didn't hurt! She pulled out the instrument, and on one end was a flat, circular, small, flesh-colored...thing. It was...reddish colored but sort of transparent. If I looked closely I could see something inside the thing.

'This part," Amy stressed, "when she pulled that thing out of my ear, was the most real seeming, the most clear and most intense part of my dream. It was very important that I remember! I think she said that to me."

Amy said the alien explained certain things about the implant, and then she bent over while the alien removed a second implant from Amy's neck. It was a "dark, cylindrical" object about "three centimeters long" with "something sticking on the end of it like very fine wires." The alien then explained how the implant operated.

"She showed me the thing she had pulled out of my neck," Amy reported, "and said, *This is embedded deep into the spinal cord.* I can't remember exactly what she explained about it, but I think the thing controlled the muscles of the body when activated. It blocked the brain and became the 'central command' of the body. She also said that sometimes these things were implanted into a person's lower back somewhere between the fourth lumbar and the sacrococcygeal, but it was more commonly 'planted' in the neck. I don't want to remember how or why this thing functioned." The alien told Amy more about the implants, about her group's efforts to remove them from abductees, and other things Amy couldn't recall.

"I remember that she was sorry for what some of 'her people' had done," Amy wrote, "but she-and others-were trying to help. The last thing I remember was that she was showing me something on a very large TV or computer screen or window."

Amy then concluded her letter, saying that when she read my book she thought she should share the dream with me, although it felt "ridiculous" to write to someone about a "dream." She made no claims for the dream, nor for having any actual alien experiences, and she did not ask for any advice, help, or response. Clearly, Amy had written the letter only to make the compulsion "stop bugging" her.

I didn't need an invitation to respond, however, as her information was too compelling to ignore. Amy had commented that "certain elements of my dream resembled parts of your book," but when I read back through the dream I could see very little actual similarity other than the facts that my husband had seen military people in an abduction and that I had recalled an ear implant. I suspected there were other details she hadn't shared, however, because people very often hold back from the entire truth when first "testing the waters" with someone they don't know. And not only was I intrigued by the content of the dream, I was also curious to know more about Amy's potential situation because she lived in the very same city where my family and I lived during the experiences I wrote about in FRINGE. Finally there was the fact of her compulsion to contact me rather than some other researcher, and the possibility that our contact was being directed.

I got her number from information and phoned as soon as possible. I learned that she was a divorced mother of two young daughters who had just finished her master's degree in counseling. She was born in Dallas in 1953, of Scotch, Irish, English, and French ("Cajun") ancestry and had lived most of her life in the Metroplex area. Amy was truly surprised by my interest. In fact, as she later confessed humorously, she wondered if I were "one taco short of a full combo plate" for being "interested in a dream."

Amy did agree, however, to share more information about many of her experiences, which she confessed were rather "fringe-like" even though they didn't in conscious reality involve aliens or UFOs. I asked her to describe any past unusual events, of any sort, and a few weeks later she complied, with a list of psychic, dream, telepathic, and miscellaneous experiences.

"It was a lot harder [to make the list] than I expected," she said. "It was like trying to see through a dense fog. I've always kept these things at a distance from my awareness."

That distance was rapidly diminishing, and in the course of the next several months, we explored together her memories and the accounts found in the journals she had kept for many years. Amy's progressive self-rediscovery is a story of its own. layer after layer of repression and denial were stripped away as she read back through the journals and realized that some powerful phenomenon had been part of her life from the beginning.

Even as young as four, Amy had a feeling of "influence" from an unseen source. By seven, she had recognized this source more directly, calling it the "Many in One" because she could hear many people speaking in unison. In adolescence Amy called this force the "Council."

"At first I only heard them talking to one another, not to me," she explained. "I have only heard them audibly a few times, like when they told me my mother was going to die (she did) and other events that would happen in the future (the events did happen)," she explained. "I usually sense a dialogue of symbols, images, and concepts.

When I 'listen,' I forget how to speak, words cease to exist, and I forget what using vocal cords feels like. I call it the 'language without words.' No trance states."

She also had a brief yet vivid memory of seeing a small, dark figure move rapidly into her bedroom doorway and crouch down one night. And when she was ten, Amy recalled walking alone into a field near her house very early one morning. She had no idea why she was going there, and she couldn't remember what happened when she arrived nor much about her return home.

In 1965, Amy dreamed of being in the back yard and waving goodbye to a UFO hovering above her, and the next moment she woke up surprised to be in her bed. The dream felt so real that she got up to see if the UFO was still nearby. It should be recalled, incidentally, that 1965 was a major "flap" year for UFO sightings and encounters throughout the country.

A few months later, Amy went through a sudden internal change of attitudes and interests, began to study the sciences, and blossomed intellectually in school. The psychic element also grew increasingly stronger, and in her later teenage years Amy started having many dreams of an unknown "lady" teaching her intensely about a number of things, beginning with levitation. Although she called them dreams, the teaching sessions had a real effect on Amy, and she once accidentally levitated a bottle of shampoo and almost frightened herself to death. When the sessions began to include instructions on affecting electrical systems, Amy sometimes witnessed the physical, external effects of her ability on appliances in her environment.

This is also the time when she accepted the fact that her existence was somehow being guided by the Council. She was led to study certain subjects and was implanted with many concepts and ideas about time, space, physics and other complex thoughts. Altogether, in fact, Amy became aware of a sense of destiny and purpose she couldn't understand but could only feel as a certainty.

"I'm scared," she noted in her journal for January 1971, "because something so unknown and powerful is pulling at me, every moment I'm caught off guard and pulled. I'm being pulled to a state or level of mind I cannot fight...eventually I'll go, but in order that I won't be pulled under I've got to prepare. Every time, I shout, 'I'm not ready, leave me be!' and if I think of something else I'm okay." Other entries during this period include the comments, "I know certain things must be done, like a robot I obey," and "I feel like a messenger. I have always felt my purpose, but I never knew it."

Much of what she received came not in words but in images and concepts. There was one statement, however, in which the words were clear: *I am I. I am many. We are many. I am not.* Amy said this statement was a sort of "riddle" about the Council. "It referred to my existence as an individual (I am I), my union with all minds (I am many), my absorption into the Oneness (We are many), and my identity as One (I am not). It is repeated often in my diaries. It's sort of like an 'oath,' 'pledge/ or understanding."

It is also quite reminiscent of messages given to Lisa and Anita, the *They are you-you are them* told to Lisa and the *IRU-URI* communication Anita received during a "question and answer" meditation.

Amy continued to have the training-session dreams, recorded in volumes of journals, in which she was shown how to perform levitation, affect electrical systems, and move through solid objects.

Looking back through the journals, she turned up a wealth of evidence showing the long-term involvement of unknown forces in Amy's life. Some of these details, in spite of her insistence that she had no recollection of being abducted, did indicate probable alien activity in the midst of it all.

Indicators of alien involvement such as time gaps and UFO sightings were in her journal and in her memory, although she had downplayed most of these events. Besides the missing-time episode and the small crouching figure she'd seen at age seven-which was accompanied by her eye being matted shut the next morning-there was also an incident at age fifteen of an unexplained physical presence intruding upon her.

Staying with her niece one night, Amy felt there was "something" in the bedroom before she went to sleep. She turned the light back on to look, but no one was visible. After going to sleep, she had a strange, frightening dream about a family trying to reach the spirit of a dead relative, and when the people in the dream started

screaming at one point, Amy started screaming, too, and woke up.

"I felt someone kicking or jabbing me in the back, the whole bed was shaking, the canopy was flapping, and I felt someone/ something in my room again. I ran...to my mother's room and told her, and she kissed me and said it was just a bad dream." It was so upsetting, in fact, that she refused to sleep in that room for two weeks.

Other suspicious dreams were recorded through the years, including two in 1977 that hinted strongly of an alien encounter beneath a screen memory. Amy said she dreamed "of being called out of my house by a small boy standing in the wooded park" nearby. "He took my hand," she said, "and we walked into the park at night."

The description of the second dream was more detailed. "I just dreamt a 'lady-doctor' gave me a shot, a tranquilizer," she noted in an April 1977 entry. 'Then she disappeared and in the next dream I was being hypnotized. A man whom I seemed to trust and several other people I could barely see were standing around me. The man was so gentle; he told me to relax and somehow telepathically he explained [that] the dream I had earlier of receiving a tranquilizer was sort of a pre-hypnotic suggestion to relax me for the next dream. He then hypnotized me. I don't remember the rest, but my feelings in the dream were that of reaching out to those energy forces I call the Council."

This one was the most intriguing dream to date. In some ways it seemed to fit the screening phenomenon behind which abductions are often hidden, but it also seemed to have a very actual and "human" element to it.

That was not the case, however, with a dream Amy recorded on May 27, 1981, and it was here that the indication of alien activity became palpable. "I had the most unusual dream the other night," she noted. "I don't ever remember dreaming such a dream before. My body was floating horizontally through the house. I've dreamt of flying before and such, but always vertical and always mixed with unreal elements. But in this dream I knew I was asleep and I floated through my bedroom door, through the kitchen, turned the corner and floated into the back porch. I saw the walls go by, and each detail was as it really is. I began to note the lack of unconscious symbols as in a dream and felt alarm. I became frightened at the moment I felt it was not a dream. I felt suddenly sucked back into my bed -through the wall?!"

Amy drew a picture of the scenario as she'd remembered it in 1981. "Of all the dreams I've ever had," she wrote, "I'd say that was not a dream! It seemed real, it looked real, and it felt real. I don't know how, but I know I woke up exactly at the point I drew in the picture. I remember going through the window in the back door... I remember going up through the tree limbs. That's all I remember until I felt 'sucked' back into my bed."

The details of her "dream" were exactly like those reported in many abduction onsets, and this, coupled with the earlier possible missing-time episode and other indicators, pointed to alien involvement with Amy. She had a conscious UFO sighting the following year, in July 1982, when she was living in the north Texas city where my family and I had also lived-at the same time, in fact, though unacquainted with one another. When she first mentioned this sighting to me in an early letter, she skimmed over the incident, saying merely, "I think I've only seen a UFO (actually five UFOs) once when they flew over my apartment years ago." I asked her for more details when we met, but her account was not much more specific. She said she was outside in the daytime when she saw the five craft approaching, and that she had called out to a neighbor to look at them, too, and then had walked around her apartment still watching them.

But later, Amy told me that "something weird" occurred during that discussion. "I didn't tell you, but it has bothered me since," she said. "I remember seeing the UFOs coming toward me as I sat in front of the apartments. Then they flew, slowly and without any sound, directly overhead. That part is still vividly clear. I realized what they were, and I got excited. I yelled at the guy in the apartment nearest to come see them. Then I walked along under them, directly under them...and I never took my eyes off them.

"But when I reached the back of the apartments, my memory is all messed up. Up to that point, everything is crystal clear...but after I went to the back of the apartments, I have two sets of memories. I remember watching them fly off slowly, but I also remember getting binoculars or my small telescope and looking at them. I didn't have binoculars at all. My telescope was still packed away."

Unfamiliar with the screening practices employed during abductions, Amy couldn't understand how there could

be differing memories of the same time span. One 'memory track' contains the conscious parameters of the event: initial sighting of the UFOs, calling to her neighbor, walking toward the back of the apartments, and seeing the craft fly away. What is missing from this track is the continuity from the point where she sees the UFOs directly over her, to the point where she is watching them depart-a missing-time episode.

The second 'memory track' apparently provided a filler for that time gap. This memory tells her that she watched the UFOs through either a telescope or binoculars in that interim, which would have necessitated her going into the apartment at some point and unpacking a box to get the telescope, or getting binoculars, and going back outside, where her conscious memory picked up again. But this clearly didn't happen in reality, no matter what the second memory track told her, for the box was still packed and she did not even own binoculars. Something else happened in the time gap which she was not allowed to recall correctly, which is standard operating procedure in an abduction.

The event was confusing to Amy, as were the dreams she occasionally had of waving farewell to a UFO. In one such dream from the winter of 1988, she was with her daughters in a field behind their apartment, waving goodbye to the UFO. "When I woke up in bed," she said, "I was still cold from being outside. I got up and went to make sure the kids were back in bed, that's how real it seemed to me.

In all of these previous events and dreams and memories, Amy had recalled nothing about actual aliens or being inside a UFO. The dream of November 1992, however, where she clearly saw the gray, masked female "non-Earth representative," took her, reluctantly, to a much more intense level of recognition that the alien phenomenon was a part of her life.

And when Amy realized how numerous and complex the unusual events had been since her childhood, she decided to explore some of those memories through regressive hypnosis. As a counselor, she was familiar with the theory of regression work, but she had never experienced it.

Amy arranged to meet with Barbara Bartholic in the summer of 1992 and went through two regression sessions, hoping to learn more about the part of her life that had been kept from her. In the first regression, they explored some early childhood and adolescent memories, but it was extremely difficult for Amy verbally to relate much of what she recalled in the trance state. It became apparent that Amy's response was inhibited by a severe block against talking about her experiences, especially when she was able to remember a threat made to her by a Gray when she was very young. In that fragmented memory, the Gray told her that if she told anyone about the visit, her cat would be killed. Amy did try to tell her mother, however, and the kitten subsequently died, although today Amy is reluctant to believe the death was a deliberate act by the aliens.

She also briefly remembered an experience a few years later, of a huge craft of some sort hovering just above her father's garden. She told Barbara that she was looking at it very closely, wanting to push it away, but somehow she received a clear impression that said, "Don't touch." Amy said she did not want to go into the craft, but she was taken inside, where she saw the same Gray who had threatened to kill the cat.

"I saw myself talking to someone inside it," she said. T wasn't supposed to tell. This 'guy' telling me they would kill my cat was inside it. We were near the doorway, and he was taller than I and his face was right up in my face."

Next, she and Barbara explored the memory she had at age fifteen of something jabbing or kicking her and the bed shaking. "During the session," she said later, "I saw myself going to the back door. I couldn't understand because I looked sort of ghost-like and I was floating, not walking." As she tried to look at this event, however, that same scene kept repeating, of her going to the door and reaching for the knob, and she could not get past that point. "I guess it was too hard to look at," she said. "I remember the actual feelings of something in my room and being kicked or jabbed in my back-it felt so real. It was terrifying!"

The third episode they explored involved a childhood "lesson" about religion. "'Churches are not God'," she reported being told, "'statues and pictures are not God. Priests and nuns are not God. Nobody sins.' That doesn't make sense."

"What else did they tell you?" Barbara asked.

'To look beyond the pictures," Amy replied. "It's all lies. That made me mad, that all nuns and the priest were lying. Why did they tell me that when it's not true? They said Jesus was something like a soldier or something, supposed to lead people in some kind of direction."

"What did they want you to know?" Barbara persisted.

'That I'm not supposed to [believe]," she said. "I can pretend to be confirmed. I have to pretend that I believe it, say the prayers."

In the second session, Amy retrieved a brief recollection of another "dream" encounter with a Gray she had in April 1993. "I had dreamt that some UFOs were picking people up here and there," she told me later. "Certain people, not at random. I stood and waited for them to come, I was supposed to wait. They shined a bright light on me, and then I was in the ship. First, I was facing a very shiny surface, like mirrors, then I turned around. I saw a lot of Grays at some instruments or controls, very busy.

"One Gray turned to face me, and I knew him. In fact, he was the same Gray I saw [in November 1992] in front of the moon or light. We talked with our eyes. I felt that he and I were very close once, we had been together once somewhere, and we had been the 'same.' It was like we were twins. I actually missed him! I wanted to go back to 'before' because I was remembering something. He told me I was to 'stay here.' I guess he meant in the present."

She also described the identity she felt with the "twin" alien. "I felt that I was one of them," she said, "and I was thinking of Barbara as 'a human with a mouth.' It was like looking through the eyes of a Gray! If I think of it as I am-human-they seem cold and uncaring. If I remember the way it felt to be one of them, in the dream, it is not cold, not uncaring, just the way it is."

In the hypnosis session, Amy could see the two of them in the bedroom, engaged in telepathic conversation, and feeling an old kinship with the entity. When Barbara asked why the Gray was there, Amy said, "I'm not supposed to know."

"Ask what you are supposed to know," Barbara suggested.

"He said in the next decade people will be expected to think the same," she reported, "being taught to think the same, like them. Make them easier."

Expanding later on what she was told, Amy said that in the coming decade the aliens doing the abductions would also promote a program in which people will be "taught to think the same. The sad part was that everyone will think it's normal and it is their idea. Even being an 'individual' will seem real but not in actuality. He and other aliens are trying to stop the process. It's been going on for a long time already."

Under hypnosis, as Amy tried to explain this information, she suddenly said, "He tells me to remember the rules. I'm trying. He was trying to help me remember. *Departure from the program will result in synapse damage.* It's so hard, without words, with words."

"What was that about?" Barbara asked.

"Do what you know to do," Amy parroted the statement of rules from the Gray, *"be human, be what you are.* Rule number two: No *memories,* rule number two."

These "rules" were given to Amy very early in her experiences with unidentified entities, and they always included a program to inhibit her talking about these events. An entry in her journal at age seventeen records one of the "rules": "I must not repeat previous mistakes." Amy said the mistake she was not supposed to repeat was the "mistake" of telling her mother about the things she had experienced.

The first time as an adult when she tried to tell someone else, external interference stopped her, as the journal entry for December 16,1979 shows. "I was writing a letter to my boyfriend tonight," she recorded. "I was listening to the radio. When I began writing of the difference between what the heart feels and what the brain

knows [a lesson imparted to her by the Council], the radio began emitting every tone tolerable and intolerable to the ear. I was about to say something in a letter. I cannot remember what I wanted to say." The interrupting noise contained "voices, in unison, in some (foreign?) language."

Under hypnosis, Amy constantly had difficulty talking about the events, and she often repeated the rule against "telling." When Barbara tried to discuss the implanted blocks later, Amy was doubtful and couldn't accept the idea of the Council programming such an inhibition. It wasn't until she searched back through the old journals and saw entry after entry about not "talking" that she finally acknowledged the evidence of possible programmed control.

Her memories of the November 1992 dream-event were much more detailed, and easily discussed, as if the programming were ineffective, at least to a point. She penetrated several screens, recognizing that the large spider was actually a floating probe device in the room with her and the human figures she'd recalled. She also realized that she was with them and the spidery probe, for part of the encounter, in her own apartment.

But the most important information to emerge concerned the implants. When she described the flesh-colored object removed from her ear, she told Barbara that it was used as a transmitter and monitor. Amy said that the masked alien also explained the purpose of the implant she removed from the spine.

"She said that it short-circuits and it can kill!" Amy said. 'They can kill as many as they want. It's in the neck. It's old, but some people have them. When they want to kill them, they...I don't like that thing. It does many things."

"What other things?" Barbara inquired.

"They make people like puppets!" Amy exclaimed. "She says they can control anyone that way. Bunch of damn robots walking around. But they're taking them out. They're old. Sometimes in the base of the spine, real low, but that's only half of the control. The other half controls up and down. Up to the brain or down the body. Old. They use something else now."

"Where does the new one go?" Barbara asked.

"Cerebellum," Amy answered.

"How do they put it in?"

"Not in the back like the old ones," Amy replied, pointing instead to a spot behind her ear. "You couldn't take it out, only they can. They can make...the people with the new ones and old ones in them...do what they tell them to do. If they don't, they do other things, switch them like puppets, switch them off. They can kill them, or turn it, many different degrees....they can use it as punishment, take away control but leave consciousness, or control the consciousness. Or they can kill. I'm mad!

"On one end it can kill, the other end, control, and in-between levels. Punishment is in the middle where there's consciousness but no control. Repetition, over and over, the fear takes over, and they don't have to punish any more. Fear is paired with punishment, so they don't have to move the switch so far. Fear and control. And if that doesn't work, they switch it to kill. When the body stops, it disintegrates all implants. Electrical activity ceases. Huh! That's gross but funny. They use our own brains as the batteries...feedback loop like a generator, through the implant and circuits back. When the circuit is broken, the implant dissolves. Little, like a Tic-Tac."

"How many people do you think have implants?" Barbara asked. "Is there a selection?"

"Whoever responds to fear, in any degree," Amy replied. "They test you. She says they tested me for the fear, nuclear holocaust fear [referring to numerous nightmares]. I did good, became afraid. I was wondering how they found me. Oh, follow the signal. The old ones they can follow easily. They changed to new ones, changed the signals, those buggers. They [the abducting and implanting aliens] know they're [the 'apologetic' alien-human group] out there taking them out, and they don't like it. That's why they change them sometimes, put in a different signal."

"Who does this changing?" Barbara asked.

'The others...other tribes?" Amy tried to explain.

Barbara asked her to describe these others, but Amy was focused on something else. "She says it's here in a year," she said, pointing to her forehead.

"What is there in a year?" Barbara asked.

"What I'll need, tools," Amy answered. "Focus, very important. She say's I'm not ready yet, to know. In a year. She said I'll remember the three guys standing over there. They're watching. They're not regular. They can talk with their eyes. Don't know if they learned it or what. The silver-haired one, [and] one with glasses."

"Are they alien?"

"Some. Their eyes, they wear contact covers. Without them," Amy explained, "they're slit, but they look like people. Not cat's eyes, too big. A line. He says he's a lot like me anyway. Gray-silver hair, he's the main one. He's telling me to forget them. Six feet tall, average build, regular shirt."

"How about his face?"

"Kind of not thin, not fat, right size for the body," she said. "The eyes don't fit." She indicated that the man had a widow's peak hairline. "Coarse hair," she said, "average length, like an average businessman. He could be one, with those contact lenses. He's nice."

"What about the other two men?" Barbara asked.

"He said, *Don't look.* He let me look at him but not at them. One has on contacts, though, I saw that. Brown, dark eyes but no pupil or iris or center spot, if people look closely. That's why they sometimes wear tinted glasses."

"How do you feel about these guys?" Barbara wanted to know.

"Sad," Amy told her. 'They used to be where I was, manipulated by them. They don't want to tell me too much because it was more than I can take. That's why he says to look away."

"Are all humans manipulated?"

"Not all."

As difficult as it was for Amy to speak freely in a trance state, out of hypnosis later she described the things she'd been unable to articulate. She gave detailed descriptions of the scene in the dining room, where she saw the probe accompanying the three men. After being introduced to the masked alien, she was next aware of being taken into a large, underground room. She was led by two beings into the room, noticing the rough rock walls that proved she was below ground level. At that time she lived directly across the street from a FEMA underground facility, and that facility had undergone a massive expansion, both above ground with numerous antenna arrays and new buildings, and below the ground as well. But there was no way of knowing if she were in that facility or somewhere else.

Amy sketched the room in the facility where she and the men were with the masked aliens. She had smelled a certain odor during the hypnotic recollection, resembling "polish remover," which came from "a black ribbed tube on the side of the room." The masked alien told her it helped the aliens present to breathe better. And when questioned about evidence of a military atmosphere in the facility, Amy said she didn't observe any.

She had more to say about the humans, too, especially the silver-haired leader she nicknamed "Ol' Slit Eyes." "Ever since the hypnosis session," she remarked, "the image of Ol' Slit Eyes has stayed with me, vividly. Once you 'talk' that way, you always feel the link. I get the feeling Ol' Slit Eyes is either in our government or some high position in the military," she added. "People see him every day but don't know who he really is."

As for the other two men, she said, 'The feelings I got from those three guys was deep sadness. They were designed like we are. They were watching me 'talk' with Ol' Gray and assessing how I handled the information and my 'loyalty.' It was just a feeling I caught from them."

Concerned about what she remembered being told of the implant's placement and functions, Amy went to medical texts for information about the cerebellum and medulla oblongata, the locations identified for the implants. She learned that the medulla is a switching center for nerve impulses of the higher brain centers controlling vital functions such as temperature, pulse, swallowing, and breathing.

The cerebellum was identified as the control source for muscle tone and equilibrium, as well as voluntary movements, coordination, and even the vocal cords-which, Amy noted, might explain the physical difficulty some abductees experience when trying to discuss their encounters. The information corresponded with the controls the masked alien said were functions of the implants.

After the November 1992 dream-event, Amy continued to recall several other dream-memories. She had sudden flashback memories and also witnessed more overt evidence of alien intrusions. She had more dreams of moving through solid objects, one involving her daughters, and Amy said she was not "happy" about seeing entities with them, although she felt the tall beings standing there with them were "quiet," "wise," and "rather nice." She dreamed of being aboard a craft, again with masked aliens, who said that humans were going to be told "who and what they really are" as well as "the truth about everyone." In another dream, she was made to feel that the "government" was "going to kill" her for talking about what the government was doing to people.

During one "teaching dream" Amy woke up and could actually hear the voice of the "lady" talking in her head. "It is not a dream!" she noted in her journal. 'Tried to write what the 'lady' was saying, heard her say, 'NO!' and suddenly began forgetting. Tried to write fast but hand went numb. Very tired all day, took a nap-more teaching dreams."

One of the most disturbing dreams occurred in June 1993, where Amy said she "had the vivid sensation of being held still by wires or tubes going into my head." Everything about the dream felt real. "I was pissed!" Amy said. "I could actually feel something going into my head. I wanted to pull them out, but I couldn't get my hands up to my head, my hands wouldn't move.

'Then I heard someone say, in my mind, *You don't want to pull them out. You will hurt yourself.* With that warning I saw a clear image of what would happen if I pulled the things out of my head. I saw the wires/tubes coming out and pieces of my brain were stuck to them and dropped off onto the floor. I just had to be still until it was finished. It didn't hurt," she added. "I was just so mad at not being able to move my head. I've never had a dream like that before. I'm still made as hell!"

On the night of September 20, 1993, Amy experienced a time gap, and her record of the event in her journal is very typical of such reports. After first noting that the phone made a strange "beep" at 11:17 p.m., she wrote, "I was sitting here at my desk in my study, and I noticed that I felt funny all of a sudden. I've felt that sudden, brief anxiety feeling before."

Her daughter walked in at that moment, and Amy reacted angrily because the child should have been in bed by that time, 12:07 a.m. "Then I went back to my work," she wrote, "and I felt bad that I had yelled at Grace. A few minutes later, I heard a noise that sounded like the door knob of the front door being turned. I thought Grace was opening the door to look for me (when I take the dog out). I jumped up and looked out the little window on the front door, but Grace was not outside.

"I turned on the light, but no one was on the porch. I opened the door and looked out, but no one was outside. I thought it was strange that I'd heard that sound. I went back to my work in my study. Then I looked at the time, and it was 1:27 a.m.!! I couldn't believe it! I'd lost an hour and twenty minutes."

Seamlessly, the time gap had occurred, and she had no memory of any disruption. But other times she had flashback memories pop up suddenly, including one scene in which she woke up one night hearing the words, *Did you think it was all by accident?* The statement's meaning was clear, she said, "that the Earth is a giant zoo or experiment."

Other such "downloadings" of ideas and scenes included one of a "future world" our children will "inherit," a world that is "dying." On one occasion, the thought, *We were without form* played through her head repeatedly. Two other such thoughts were more disturbing: *Survival of the fittest. That's why wars are promoted,* one said, and the other repeated, *Death is the journey Home.*

She also recalled a lesson which showed how the aliens use "frightening images" through 'mental projections" to control humans. "Fear is the real enemy," she said.

In April 1993, Amy had her first taste of a phenomenon all too familiar to abductees: the black helicopters. After the first one flew over her home she noted, "They really do exist-now I know what one looks like." Other such flights have occurred since then, frequently late at night with repeated circular passes above her home.

And like so many other abductees, Amy has reason to believe her children have been touched by the phenomenon. One daughter recently said her leg was tingling "the way it feels when you put it through the wall," indicating to Amy that the child might well have been receiving the same sort of instruction she herself had. Her other daughter described two types of "balls of light" she has seen repeatedly in the house. On is larger than a basketball and multicolored, and the other type is smaller, displaying a trail or tail of some sort.

Amy was very concerned about further evidence of her children's involvement after what she thought was a dream turned out to be highly questionable. In the first part, she was aboard a ship with several smaller Grays and two or three six-foot-tall entities. The Grays told her that human concepts of "Armageddon" were not correct. "I remember thinking that what they told me was nothing like anything I, or anyone, had ever imagined," she said. And while this occurred, Amy said she could feel the taller beings "directing" the lecture and that their mind was in her mind, an intensely felt presence that made her "want to cry."

It was similar to the intensity of the "lady" who taught her things, she said. "No matter how tough I consider myself to be, I wouldn't stand a chance against the Tall Ones," she emphasized. "I think they reminded me that they have me, body and soul, and always have had me."

In the next part of the dream, she and her daughter Grace were involved in a series of scenes and events culminating with a police car approaching them. Amy said it had very bright lights that were "not right for a police car." The policeman inside, whom she didn't like, spoke to her, but then she awoke from the dream when her other daughter began coughing. She later went back to bed, hearing a "loud static-buzz sound" before falling asleep.

The next morning while cooking, Amy said her ear began to itch. "I rubbed my finger in my ear and felt something inside and outside of my ear. I looked at my finger, and there was some dried blood on it. I went to the bathroom and looked in the mirror. I could see dried blood in my ear and down my cheek."

Frightened that this had something to do with the strange dream, she carefully questioned her daughters to see if their night had been disturbed. Grace said she'd had a weird dream, and Amy began to tell her about the dream she had. When she reached the part about the colored lights on the police car, Grace finished the sentence for her, describing them as "like a rainbow." Amy asked her how she remembered seeing them, but Grace couldn't explain.

Amy's memories and the children's various remarks indicate alien contact with the entire family, although Amy is more convinced by the "hard evidence" and conscious experiences she has witnessed. Grace's recent spate of nosebleeds, for example, are a worrisome indication of possible implant activity, and Amy has further been mystified by certain unexplained scars on her body, including the circular scar on her shoulder and a one-inch linear scar down the middle of her nose that appeared in late 1993. This sort of evidence-as well as her conscious daytime UFO sighting in January 1994, of four objects merging into one-are all unwelcome because they make it difficult for Amy to reject the phenomenon's reality.

She knows that it is more than a question of random abductions, from the information she has been shown, and she is concerned about the direction and nature of events indicated by the information.

In November 1993 she recorded a vivid dream in which she was with other people in a large room. "We were

told that we were selected to experience the end of the world," she wrote. "God was this ball of light that looked like a little sun. God was telling us that what we experienced was for all...that we should feel honored and lucky to experience the end of the world."

It was explained that Amy and the other humans were really "spirit beings" seeking challenging experiences. "Our true nature is to seek every opportunity to grow and to learn. Even sadness, sorrow, pain, and misery represent opportunities to experience and learn. I understood that the meaning of life was just to experience, that's all-experience."

This message resonates with another communication Amy has had from her unseen guides, telling her that humans are "a species within a species" and that our bodies are mere "containers" for the spiritual entities we truly are.

Another piece of information came in a conscious flash or vision, in which it was explained that a particular person would be coming to public notice claiming to be Christ. Amy said she was shown how all the religious people around the world would perceive this person as the incarnation of whatever deity they worshiped, and that he would be accepted as god on earth. This would cause many people to turn against those who didn't accept the new figure, leading to the persecution and suppression of what is actually true. In effect, she explained, the false leader and his false religious teaching would win out over spiritual truth.

A startling encounter in January 1994 had caused Amy to wonder even more about her lifelong involvement with the "Council." She heard about a very strange group of people, who called themselves the "Total Overcomers" or the "Omega" group, holding meetings in the Dallas area. Two of her acquaintances attended the meetings, and from the details they reported, Amy decided to invite the "Overcomers" to hold a meeting in her city, which they did. At that meeting, they told Amy and others attending that they had just emerged from their "classroom" after eighteen years of preparation under the total guidance of their twenty-four elders. Now they were traveling through the country to "harvest" the people who had been "implanted" with the proper knowledge and who were ready to make the transition to the next stage of "more than human."

This required breaking all human ties of love, family and friendship-bonds that keep us tied to the material world-as well as living in celibacy and surrendering all decisions to the "elders." They also said that everyone but their group had been warped and programmed negatively, either by society's false values or, in cases of alien contact, by "Luciferian" aliens-which included all groups except the one that had originally instructed the "elders."

Amy described the four "Overcomers" whom she met as tall, thin, pale, asexual in dress (black clothing) and hair style, "clone-like" in appearance, and rigidly controlled emotionally. In fact, she said that she could not feel any "souls" in these four people. Their message was equally rigid: followers must go with the "Overcomers" immediately, without a word to their families, with no belongings, and without any clue as to where they will go next.

These cultish demands were weird enough to Amy, but the truly disturbing aspect of the "Overcomers," she said, was the details and phrasing of their tenets given by the "elders," for they echoed exactly the things that Amy has been taught by her "Council." And the products of those teachings-in this cult, at least-felt extremely wrong.

"After all I've been learning about implants and mind-control," she told me, "I must ask who the Council really is. I am so afraid of them now. What if they have been programming me all this time to do things someday that may not be good for my planet? They have never told me to do anything contrary to my beliefs before, but what if they are just gaining my trust? What if they really are good and teaching me to help my planet and I stop listening to them? What if they are just some defense mechanism and all just my imagination? Somehow I'd rather be crazy than for it all to be real. So, since I don't know who or what the Council really is, I am listening to them more cautiously. I just keep asking God to help me find the Truth. God I am sure of."

10. Casey and Karla

After asking these eight courageous women to share their experiences with the public, it is only proper that I also give an account of the things my husband, Casey, and I have witnessed since the first year of activity recounted in INTO THE FRINGE. We have repeatedly been asked about further experiences, and the following summary will serve to fulfill that request, in addition to increasing the body of knowledge upon which research depends.

The first intense period of dealing with alien activity lasted from late 1987 through most of 1990, but after that the encounters dramatically waned in our daily life. We breathed a figurative sigh of relief, hoping that the aliens had moved on to another task. Besides, having become active in abduction research, this relatively peaceful period allowed us to focus on learning from other people's experiences, expanding our base of knowledge from the personal level to that of general society.

I still kept a calendar notation of any questionable or unusual events, but the frequency was so low that a journal wasn't needed any longer. In all of 1990, for instance, I recorded signs of only eight possible events, only three of which were evinced in a conscious or objective manner. In addition to some unexplained body marks, I witnessed another UFO sighting on February.

Leaving a friend's at 8:15 p.m. I saw a huge, white object flying rapidly at a very low altitude above three tall towers in the city. Driving on, however, I lost track of it, but when I reached my own neighborhood I saw it again.

I decided to go to the hill near our house and have one more look. When I parked and walked to a prominence to get a wide view, I immediately saw the same light coming from the west toward the south. It was moving much more slowly now, and bobbing along rhythmically instead of in a smooth, straight path. It passed between the downtown skyline and me, so I knew it couldn't be more than a mile away.

It began to grow larger, as if moving closer, and I felt ready to confront it, at last, in full consciousness. But after a bit, the light receded, still bobbing, and continued on into the south. I ran down the hill to the car, thinking I'd drive home for Casey and bring him back to see the object. Then I thought I should have one last look to determine where I would likely find it visible when we returned. So I raced back up the hill and looked around. The light was not where I had previously seen it.

I turned back in disappointment, and then caught sight of it again, in the very position it had started from the first time. The bobbing light silently repeated its path, once again coming close for a time and then backing away. I returned quickly to the car then and drove the half-block distance to my home. The streets were deserted as I pulled into the garage.

When I ran inside and yelled for Casey to come with me, he looked up puzzled from the couch and asked *if* I had pulled into the garage twice.

"No, of course not," I replied. "Why'd you ask that?"

'Then I guess it must have been a truck out on the street," he said. "But it sure was loud, for just a truck."

"What are you talking about?" I asked.

'This huge noise," he said, "about thirty seconds before you came in the garage. It was so loud that the whole front of the house shook, like some huge tanks or trucks were barreling down the street."

"I was just on the street," I objected, "and there was nothing out there. But I did see a UFO, up on the hill." We drove together back to the prominence and were disappointed to see nothing but the usual air traffic in the sky.

At no time during 1990 did either of us have a conscious encounter, just signs that something might have been going on. Emotionally and intellectually, we had nothing concrete with which to deal.

In 1991, however, at least in the beginning, that was not the case. Both Casey and I felt a great, undirected stress, as we'd done back in 1988, and that experience told us that activity might be recurring which was kept repressed from our consciousness.

In January, our son's friend James reported encounters with unusual entities, one of which once masked itself with the illusion of a beautiful blonde woman before revealing a very different physiology. Casey also recalled a possible encounter with the blond group that month, which had seemed like a VRS dream event (as recounted in INTO THE FRINGE). For Casey, the event was disturbing and puzzling, and we both wondered if anything further would occur. But nothing similar happened, nothing but a few unexplained marks, until April.

Shortly before leaving for the Ozark UFO Conference early that month, we had a "phantom sedan" incident, reminiscent of "Men in Black" reports. In this event, a very real-looking black car rolled down the street, came to a near stop as it reached our yard boundary, and a human-looking man in a white shirt and dark suit, wearing sunglasses, peered through the car's deeply tinted windows into the front of our house-where I was standing staring back out. I turned around to shout for Casey to come see it, and when I looked back the car had vanished.

In June, the mysterious helicopters returned, appearing on three different days. By the end of the month we made a permanent move to Arkansas, and thereafter, in an area with heavy, normal helicopter traffic, it was impossible to tell if any of it was unusual. We found a few questionable marks on our bodies in August, but it wasn't until October that a memory of anything specific turned up.

During the night of the fourteenth, I physically got out of bed at some point, and I also had a dream that aliens were about to come into a long, narrow room where I was waiting. My only thought was, *Don't scare me!* But nothing more remained in my consciousness, in spite of the bruise on my arm and scratch on my abdomen in the morning.

One other incident, in January 1992, involved another almost-conscious realization that an intrusion was occurring. I woke at 1:34 a.m., opened my eyes, and wondered why the room was so foggy. My immediate rationalization was that my eyes just hadn't yet focused, and I got out of bed to go to the bathroom. When I started walking, a sudden rush of thick, clear liquid with tiny black specks suspended in it flooded from me, much more than can be produced naturally by the body, but I had no idea where it had come from. Neither could I account for the new scratch and bruise I found the next day.

These things *were* physically real, yet something within me didn't really "come to grips" with what might be happening to us. I wouldn't let these events obsess me or throw me off track from researching other people's situations. If the aliens wanted to get my attention again, they were going to have to do a lot better than this, I decided. A strange snippet of a dream now and then, a few marks, even the liquid-the significance of which I certainly knew from other women's accounts-weren't enough to frighten me or move me in any serious way. I refused to feel under attack, even granting that some activity was occurring. But I was only able to keep this frame of mind because I wasn't perceiving them consciously.

For months thereafter, neither Casey nor I noticed anything inexplicable or suspicious. Throughout most of 1992 I was busy with radio and newspaper interviews, the result of INTO THE FRINGE being released, and I also worked on a research project involving Ted Rice, the well-known psychic in Shreveport, Louisiana, whose lifelong experiences with alien forces shed extraordinary light on some of the abduction activities which have been so hard to penetrate.

The period of no unusual activity, however, came to an end with a bang on the morning of October 13. I was sitting at the coffee table working on Ted's material, when a large ball of white light appeared and exploded right in front of me, less than four feet away. There was no noise, so I realized I hadn't merely seen a reflective flash from an explosion.

Five minutes later, a noise did occur, a very loud, pounding noise that slammed against the kitchen wall with a house-shaking thump. My dogs started up, barking, and we ran to the kitchen door to see what had happened. The garage doors were closed and locked, however, with nothing out of the ordinary in sight. My immediate response was a feeling that this was an announcement of some sort, a declaration of a renewed presence. And

from past experience I could recognize the "feel" of this intrusion. There was no fear or anger in my mind, just a complete determination to face whatever would come next.

That proved to be a UFO sighting. On October 27, at 7 p.m., our neighbors phoned to say they'd been watching a UFO for the past ten minutes and wanted us to come out for a look. I had dinner cooking just then, but Casey and a visiting friend raced up the road, in time to watch an odd orange-red orb of light disappearing behind the tree line. The neighbors said they saw the orb change colors from white to orange, and that at one point a solid-looking beam of light emerged and moved around before retracting back into the UFO as it moved away.

Since this event was multiply witnessed, we didn't feel it was "aimed" at us. UFO sightings are surprisingly frequent in central Arkansas, and they are often seen by multiple witnesses. This sighting, although momentarily exciting, was oddly unaffecting. If this sighting report had come from someone else, I would have recognized the pacified response, but it's much harder to analyze oneself than someone else.

The next month, as I started a dusk stroll up the drive, I had my most bizarre UFO sighting to date. And again I experienced a sedated reaction. In absolute silence, a large, rectangular craft soared over my mother-in-law's cottage, which is thirty feet from our house, just above treetop level. My first response was exhilaration, and I started to run up the drive to follow it. But its speed, while not startling, was fast enough that the craft was soon out of sight, blocked by the tall, thick trees on our property.

I observed it long enough to get a clear picture, though. It reminded me of a train boxcar in length and width, although not quite as tall, and it looked metallic-brown. The bottom of the craft had an indentation or bar across the middle, with a large amber light at each end. Four more amber lights marked each corner of the rectangular object, for a total of six lights.

Within a matter of seconds, my exhilaration disappeared along with the craft, and instead of racing inside to get Casey, I just began to stroll again. When I did go back in, I told him of the sighting and that I hadn't had time to notify him before the craft flew off. My natural excitement and curiosity felt artificially suppressed, so much so that I didn't even make a notation of the sighting on my calendar. In fact, it simply faded from my memory for almost two weeks before I suddenly remembered it again. After experiencing this response several times, I am now convinced that it is externally imposed and thus denotes outside contact of a very real nature.

At the time, however, I was unconcerned. My friend Brenda was in the midst of much more overt alien intrusions in her home, and they seemed more important than the few things we'd experienced ourselves. Besides, as I'd decided earlier, it would take something highly significant to pique my interest and get me to interact on a personal level with the aliens again.

On January 8, 1993, it got rather personal when I woke up to find my clothing had been removed, and I hadn't been the one who removed them. This was always upsetting to me when it occurred in the past, for it made me feel intimately and helplessly violated. I had the same response this time, and when I phoned Brenda to discuss it the next morning, she told me of the dream she'd had the same night. I was in it. She dreamed she was aboard a craft, immobile on a table, and she could see me on a table beside her, also unable to move. She said she tried desperately to reach out to me, but couldn't, and that's all she recalled. I had no memory to match the event, but the missing clothing was indicative of some nocturnal activity I hadn't generated.

It was Casey's turn next, in February. On the morning of the seventeenth he told me that in the middle of the night, at 12:38 a.m., a loud "bang" noise awakened him from a dream. (Normally I am the one who awakens at any sound, while he sleeps through everything.) In the dream, he had been standing in the living room looking out the picture window at the ridge behind our property. A large, white orb appeared in the sky and then descended to the ridge. He told me that he instantly remembered the dream when he was awakened by the bang and that he then got out of bed and walked into the living room. Just as in the dream, he stood peering out the window, watching in full consciousness as a large, white orb appeared and descended to the ridge.

"What happened then?" I asked, and he shrugged.

"I guess I went back to bed," he said, "but I honestly don't remember doing it." And his response was curiously passive, as mine had been. This time I noticed and determined to be more alert if anything else were to occur, to

fight the passive effect in order to react the way I thought best, rather than the way some outside force directed me.

In April I also had a nighttime event, much less dramatic than Casey's sighting of the orb, but nonetheless inexplicable. At 1:14 a.m. I awoke hearing the sound of a C-130 airplane, with which I'm very familiar as training flights from the nearby military base have regular paths over this area. The plane sounded as if it was just coming directly overhead, at an extremely low altitude. My first reaction was irritation at the thoughtlessness of training flights at such an intrusive hour. *I'll phone the base in the morning and complain,* I thought as I lay there with Casey soundly asleep beside me. But seconds, and then minutes, elapsed, and the noise of the C-130 didn't waver, increase, or diminish.

It can't be hovering! I thought, but that's exactly how it sounded-as if a C-130 was motionless low over the house. In a normal state of consciousness-which I really thought I had -I would have awakened Casey to hear it, too, but I didn't. Instead, six or seven minutes after first hearing it, I just fell asleep. It didn't occur to me to resist.

For over a year I had kept the attitude that I wouldn't acknowledge alien contact back in my life, in our lives, without strong, overt experiences. I had also been praying, in my fashion, to whatever good and loving and true higher forces may be out there, asking for two things: that they guide me to know and follow the power of goodness; and that they communicate with me in an overt manner, without any subtlety or ambiguity. I prayed for help, for information that would be clear enough for a child to understand, as I realized my level of understanding and perception were about that rudimentary in dealing with the aliens. I wanted a communication that couldn't be dismissed, variously interpreted, or ambiguous as to its nature.

On May 10, 1993, I may have gotten a partial answer to that prayer, although great caution is called for in assessing any contacts before accepting them at face value. This particular contact conformed exactly to other abductees' descriptions of the VRS dream and was the first of its kind I had experienced to such a degree.

I was in the middle of a normal dream when suddenly I was somehow removed from that dream and found myself sitting in a chair, in a darkened area, accompanied by entities I wasn't allowed to see. They spoke to me, clearly and frequently, throughout the event. I was facing a small stage area, which I now feel was more holographic than solidly three-dimensional even though at the time it looked quite realistic. My "hosts" told me I was to watch a scenario played out on the stage.

It began with a scene from Genesis, in which Esau returned home feeling so hungry he feared he would die. His younger brother Jacob was sitting there eating a bowl of pottage, and Esau begged him to share it. Jacob said he would give Esau the food, but only in exchange for Esau's birthright as the oldest son of Isaac. I heard Esau say, *It won't do me any good to have the birthright if I die of starvation, so I'll agree to trade it for the food.*

Then the scenario on stage changed to another part of the brothers' story. In this second scene, Isaac was very old and blind and knew that he was close to death. He called for Esau to be brought to him to receive the laying-on of hands that would confer the inheritance. Jacob wrapped an animal skin around his arm and presented it for his father's touch. Isaac felt the fur and believed it was the arm of his very hairy eldest son. So in his ignorance of this deception he conferred the blessing and gave Jacob that which rightfully belonged to Esau.

The play ended, and then it started right up again, playing out several more times as my hosts discussed its meaning with me. At various points they would stop the action, much as we pause a video tape, and would point out some specific detail and tell me what it meant, what it symbolized, and what the message was trying to convey.

They told me not to focus on the biblical aspect of the play, that their message had nothing to do with any actual Jacob and Esau, but that the story was designed to illustrate important information about what the aliens are doing to humans, both in the past and in the present. The hosts went through the play with me several times, pointing out details and saying things like, *Okay? Let's try it again. Now watch closely.* And the play would proceed.

After several repetitions, I suddenly "woke up" in my bed, amazed by what I'd just seen. I got out of bed for a

while, trying to discern the nature of the event, whether dream-like or externally generated, and I also pondered on the meaning of the scenario. When I lay back down, as soon as I touched the pillow I was suddenly back in the chair, facing the stage, and my hosts said we would now resume. Once again the play began running, as did the explication offered by my abductors. And when they apparently were satisfied, the action ceased and the abductors gave me a clearly delineated summary of the things I was meant to perceive.

Esau, the older and hairier brother, they explained, represents the original human species on this planet. Jacob represents the altered product of alien genetic manipulations of that older species. The aliens produced this new variant and then used it to replace the original form.

In our current situation, the aliens are once again doing genetic alterations of our species and are once again trying to produce a variant which will be more useful for their purposes and which will supplant us. And again it will be attempted through deception, as Jacob deceived Isaac. This deception, I was told, is being carried out by the aliens through exploitation and manipulation of global events, including weather phenomenon, to make us believe that the planet is in imminent danger of cataclysm and destruction.

This is why they impress the idea of coming destruction upon so many abductees, telling then they will have tasks to perform at that time. They want us, as a race, to be so afraid of this upcoming destruction that when they show themselves openly and offer to save us in some way, we will be willing to take their help, even if it means giving up our birthright, so to speak, which is preeminence on this planet. Like Esau in his hunger, we will say, "What good does it do us to keep our birthright if we're all going to be destroyed along with the planet? What have we got to lose if we accept alien help, even though that means accepting alien control? Better to survive under subjugation than not at all."

But my hosts stressed that this is all a deception, that our planet, without their intervention, is not in imminent danger. These terrible disasters we see-the flooding, hurricanes, and earthquakes-are sometimes being intensified by the very aliens who will then come in and offer to save us from "inevitable" destruction. We should not believe them, I was told emphatically. And we must not surrender our sovereignty to them, as that would mean we were truly lost forever.

After this, I knew nothing more until waking in the morning, very disturbed by what I'd been shown. I had no way of identifying the source of this event and never caught even a glimpse of my abductors, who stayed behind me in the dark. I couldn't deduce anything about the event from my past encounters, because this one was completely different. I knew I hadn't been taken anywhere, because I woke up consciously in the midst of the experience and was able to check my physical surroundings. And there was no doubt in my mind that during the encounter I was not asleep; in fact, I remember being so awake when I was removed to the chair that I thought, *How can they snatch me right out of a dream like that?*

The experience seemed designed in some ways to fulfill the request I'd made for a straightforward, clearly comprehensible communication that would be helpful. They must have taken me at my literal word, for the message was reinforced in every conceivable way: visually, repetitiously, and verbally. So did that mean I could accept it as coming from a benevolent source? Could I test or trust its accuracy?

All I could do, finally, was hold the message in reserve and compare it to the events that occur as time passes. At least parts of what they told me I already knew to be true. The aliens do make a practice of giving abductees information about a coming time of destruction or change. With the many natural disasters of recent time, it is an easy message to believe. And they have engaged in what appears to be genetic processes for years, according to abduction accounts, as well as taking credit time and time again for the creation of the human species. But even these two "facts" I still had to question, because in neither case could we objectively verify the activities.

Things around our home went back to normal after that, until the middle of July, when a series of odd noises started to plague us. We heard everything from large plastic ware (nonexistent, of course) shattering on our wood floors, to gigantic invisible woodpeckers hammering away in the living room. Things got even stranger one evening in August, when Casey and I had a parallel and infuriating experience. I heard him ask me a question, and when I turned around to answer him, instead he answered it himself. Both of us heard the other one ask the question, it turned out, although neither of us had even been thinking about the subject.

Throughout August and September, there was an undercurrent of tension in our lives that felt just as it had back in 1988, after alien contact had renewed with Casey but before he was consciously aware of it. His usual coping mechanism for work and personal concerns seemed impaired, so that almost every interaction was stressful.

The stress was affecting me, too, leading to recurrent insomnia and sleep disruptions. I started doing something I've never done in the past-leaving my bed, and Casey, to try to rest elsewhere. Sometimes I'd lie on the couch, with the dogs nearby on another couch, and sometimes I wrapped up in a blanket and slept fitfully on the guest bed. There were no conscious events to show that anything suspicious was occurring, but the insomnia was not normal, and neither was my willingness to be separated from Casey.

We weren't in step with each other or comfortable with ourselves in those weeks. I became worried as the situation seemed to go on and on, but I couldn't pick up any clue from Casey about his thoughts. Given all that had happened in the past months, I should have asked him if he thought the stress indicated suppressed memories of new contacts. But I was honestly afraid to ask and risk a confrontation with something that felt so heavy or ominous.

It was Casey who broke the silence, one night as we drove home from visiting friends. In the quiet of the evening drive, he began to talk after a long period of silence, seriously and very tentatively. I could feel he was searching for a way to be both confiding with me and reassuring of my feelings at the same time.

What he told me were the details of two dreams. The first one had occurred in early September, but he hadn't told me at the time. When the second one occurred later in the month, however, he had described it to me the next morning. I recalled he said we were a team of detectives in the dream, and then he sketched out the details of our pursuit of two suspects. We had chosen to follow one of them, a woman, but when we caught up with her we realized she was innocent, that the other suspect was the guilty party.

"I think it was a symbolic message," he told me that morning. "I think it was telling me that you and I are on the right path in this work with the abduction situation. We're following the truth, that's what the beautiful woman we caught represented."

In our talk in the car, Casey began by telling me about the first dream, from early September, and I could see why he'd been reluctant to discuss it.

"Something's been going on," he said, "and I want to tell you about it. I had a dream earlier this month. It woke me up, and I looked at the clock. It was around 4 a.m. I thought there would be plenty of sleep time left so I wouldn't be tired when I got up for work. Satisfied, I rolled over and started to drift off, when I remembered what the dream was about. And I noticed then, and only then, that my heart was still pounding faster than usual.

"I thought there must have been something to that dream, so I tried to remember more. There was a strong odor of spicy sweat and a stronger scent of fear in the dream. I think I was nude, and so was this woman who was sending out fear and pain signals. She seemed to be very confused and upset by the situation. I felt dazed and angry, dazed by whatever control was being exerted on my mind to get me into this situation, and angry at being in the situation in the first place.

"I felt pity and sorrow for her, so I held her gently and tried to calm her down. I tried to talk normally, and that seemed to reassure her and give her back some sense of control. When she calmed down, I awoke. And immediately, I remember now, I smelled the air to see if there was any scent from the dream left on me. But there wasn't."

"Did you recognize the woman?" I asked. "Do you know her?"

"Yeah," Casey said, naming a casual acquaintance with whom we've never had any social involvement. "I really tried to think it was just a dream," he said, "and that maybe I was going through some sort of mid-life mental quake, but I don't think that's it. Anyway, I didn't tell you about it because I didn't want to worry you. But after the second dream, I can't keep this quiet any more."

"Why?" I asked. "Was it something awful?"

"No," he said, "it wasn't a bad dream. Do you remember me telling you the dream where we were detectives?"

"Yes," I replied, recalling the conversation quite clearly.

"Well, that was the dream," Casey continued. "I told you about it at breakfast, and we talked about whether it was symbolic. And I really thought it was. Until two days ago."

"What happened?" I asked.

"I was at the mall with a friend for lunch," he said. "We had eaten and were heading around to the escalator, and then this woman came around the corner, dressed all in black. She was blonde, genuine blonde, and her skin matched the color, eyes, too. She looked at me, started to lift up her arms, and said, 'H-h-hello!' And then she seemed to get real confused and walked on past me."

"What did you do then?" I asked. "Did you go after her or talk to her?"

"No," he said, "we went up the escalator , and when I got to the top I turned and looked back down there. She was still there, looking very disoriented, and then she walked off slowly."

"So what did that have to do with the dreams?" I wondered.

"That woman in the mall," Casey said, "was the same woman I saw in the detective dream. That was her! In the flesh! I recognized her immediately, and I swear she acted like she recognized me, too. You know how you'll reach out to hug a friend you haven't seen in a long time? That's how it was, and when she reached for me I was starting to reach for her, too."

"What do you think is going on?" I asked. "What does this mean?"

"I don't know," he replied. "I thought that was just a dream, but there was the real woman. So now I don't know if the first one was a dream, either. And that was a bad situation."

"Do you remember anything specifically sexual happening in the first one?" I asked, thinking of the encounters in other abductee reports.

"I didn't see anything like that happen," Casey told me. "I only saw us kneeling in front of each other, nude and scared and angry. We were in a circle of bright light that came from somewhere above us, and everything outside of that was too dark to see. But I sensed it was a very large room. Something could have gone on, either before that or after, and I just don't remember."

"How did you feel, while it was happening?"

"I didn't feel sexual. It was more a very deep sorrow because that woman was in such terrible panic and fear and pain. It was so thick I could almost grab it in the air, all that emotion. All I wanted to do was make her feel better, give her some comfort, and that's what I remember doing. Just holding her and talking."

"Have you seen her, I mean in person, since the dream?" I asked.

"Yeah," he said.

"So how did she seem? Did she say anything?"

"No, she didn't say a word. I passed her on a stairway, and she looked at me very intently. I think her face even turned red, and then she looked down at the stairs and went on by."

"Does she usually say hello when you see each other?"

"Yes, she's always been friendly in the past," Casey said. "I don't know why she acted like that, unless that whole thing wasn't really a dream. But there's no way I can ask her about it, we don't know each other that well

at all."

"And we don't have a clue as to finding the woman in the mall," I remarked, wishing we could ask her if she really remembered the incident in Casey's dream.

"No, I never saw her before," he said. "But we had a connection, when we were looking at each other, a very strong connection. I looked at her, and then it was like I was inside her head, her eyes, looking back out at myself. And I could feel her, in a way, that she really is good, a good person. She's not responsible for whatever might have happened. If anything really did."

That was the question we were always left to face, the nature of an event's reality. In some reports, two people have separately recalled being in an identical dream or situation, and in those cases the people involved can feel more certain of the dream or event's objective reality. But it doesn't always happen that way. Sometimes one person will have a traumatic experience involving another person, and the reality of the event is so convincing that the experiencer believes the other person was truly involved, no matter how impossible time and location considerations may seem.

Granted, there is plenty of evidence for the aliens' ability to manipulate time and space, so the objective reality of such events cannot automatically be dismissed. But there is also hard evidence that the aliens are masters of illusion, total-sensory, gut-and-heart-wrenching illusion, generated by an external mechanism. And when an abductee is in an altered state, the illusion is very convincing to his controlled perceptions.

This lesson had been brought home by the extraordinary VRS involving Amelia that Ted and Marie witnessed in 1991, and now I was seeing, possibly, with my husband's bewildered emotions, just how masterful the aliens' deceptive mechanisms can be. For Amelia, the event had been a virtual-reality solo flight, the external product or result of the blue sphere technology and its creators. Knowing this, I wondered if Casey's dreams were objective or virtual experiences, the product of some similar technology, and so did he. The only thing he knew to be "real" was the nameless woman he came face to face with in the mall.

This experience, all of our experiences and those of the eight women recounted here, define the abduction phenomenon. It is complex, ambiguous, deceptive, inconsistent, traumatic, physical, and metaphysical, with no single or clear purpose. There are patterns and possibilities, but none so plainly verifiable that everyone can agree on the facts, much less the larger truth, of the agenda.

If all that Casey and I knew about alien abductions was limited to our own experiences, we would have a very different picture of the situation. And we would be much more vulnerable to alien manipulations or programming in our ignorance. It is only when we consider our experiences within the larger context of Amy's experiences, and Beth's and Lisa's and the experiences of the thousands of other abductees, that we gain enough knowledge to get past the personal illusions. And it is only by giving up our wishful ideas and facing the data squarely that any of us can hope to penetrate to the actuality of these events, to come to terms with "what is" rather than what we wish it to be.

Comparative Charts of Experiences

CONTACTS:	Polly	Pat	Lisa	Anita
UFO Sighting	•	•	•	•
Childhood Missing Time	?	•	•	•
Adult Missing Time	?	•	•	•
Conscious of Encounter	•	•	•	•
Virtual-Reality Scenario	•	•	•	•
Remote Telepathic Communication	•	•	•	•
Other Family Experiences	•	•	•	•
Group Missing Time		•		
ENTITIES:	Polly	Pat	Lisa	Anita

Gray	•	•	•	•
White	•	•	•	•
Robed/Hooded	•	•	•	
Blond Hair	•	•	•	
Reptoid/Brown	?	•	•	•
Cat-Eyed	•	•	•	
Wrinkled Face	•	•	•	
Dwarf/Elf	•		•	
Miscellaneous			•	
Blue			•	•
"Jesus" Figure		•	•	
"Hybrid" Adult	?		•	?
Black	•		•	
Red Uniform				•
EXAMS:	**Polly**	**Pat**	**Lisa**	**Anita**
Miscellaneous Instrument	•	•	•	
Close-Up Face	•		•	•
Physical Inspection	•	•	•	
Ear Implant	•		•	
Gynecological	•	•	•	
Nose Implant		•	?	
Head Surgery	•	•	•	

11. Expanding the View

A comparison of the data from these separate reports emphatically proves one point. Our current concept of the abduction experience is too small, too limited, and far too simplified. The Comparative Chart lists 114 elements from the reports, including details which were omitted in previous chapters because of space considerations. When the data is categorized and correlated, some surprising consistencies emerge that force the current view to expand, in both quantity and quality.

Before beginning the comparison, however, it should be noted again that four of the women underwent some regressive hypnosis: Beth, Jane, Angie, and Amy, with three different hypnotists. Out of the 114 listed details on the Chart, Beth reported 87, Jane reported *77,* Amy 73, and Angie had 96. The other four women showed consistently fewer reported details, although not significantly so. Polly had 67 of the 114 details in her account, Pat had 71, Lisa had 94, and Anita reported 53. Almost all of the details, from each of the eight women, came from pre-hypnotic recollections.

In the "Contacts" category there are eight different situations reported, and seven of these eight have been reported by all of the women. These include UFO sightings; missing time as a child; missing time as an adult; consciousness of an encounter; virtual-reality events; telepathic communications; and the extension of alien involvement into lives of other family members. Three of them experienced missing time or abductions with other people.

The data indicates, then, that the phenomenon is not imaginary or self-generated, that it is linked to the UFO sightings, that it involves a generational interest on the part of the aliens, and that contact can be made by remote means.

The "Aliens" category contains a surprising variety of physical types reported, including some that are rarely mentioned elsewhere. While all eight women encountered the Gray aliens, the Whites (insectoid) and the hooded figures are almost as common, turning up in seven accounts. Blond humanoid figures have been seen by six of the women, as have the cat-eyed or reptoid type. Half of the women reported a wrinkle-faced entity

similar to a tall Gray or White, as well as a shorter, often hairy creature variously referred to as a "troll" or "dwarf." And both a blue entity and a "Jesus" figure have been witnessed by three of the women.

In addition to noting the variety of physical types, it is important to realize that every combination of these different entities have been reported working together in abduction scenarios. It is hard to conclude, then, that the various types are really separate groups carrying out separate functions or missions.

Abductees typically report undergoing some sort of physical examination at one time or another, as researchers have long acknowledged. A comparison of the details reported in the "Exam" category show that two areas of the human body are most commonly involved: the reproductive system and the brain. Only five of the women remember gynecological procedures, however, and only three of them report possible implanted or missing fetuses, so the aliens' interest in reproduction or genetics may not be their sole purpose. While this group comprises all women, they are not the only sex reporting fetal implantations or extractions, as bizarre as this seems. In one man's account, he recalled an abdominal incision into which a malleable sac of tiny fetuses was placed and later surgically retrieved. Another man said that a similar fetal container was inserted rectally.

More of the women report implant procedures and "head operations" than gynecological activity. Anita is the only one who does not recall receiving an implant, and five women report some surgical activity on their skulls or brains. This activity has no apparent connection to a crossbreeding agenda and points to a program of greater complexity than the limited "genetics" theory.

A variety of alien instruments are reported in these procedures, but the most common here are the wand-type device, found in four accounts, and the small metal box, usually black, which is reported by three women.

There are four accounts of a "lady doctor" present during examinations, and three of the women saw operations performed on other abductees during their experiences. Three also were made to eat or drink something while in alien custody.

The most common detail of the examination scenario, however, is the report of an alien's face very close to the abductee's face, which has been experienced by all of the women but Pat. Whether this is a type of examination or an exertion of mental control over the abductee isn't clear, and of course it could be both. There is evidence that the large, black, glassy eyes so familiar from Gray reports may not be biological eyes but instead may be coverings that perform technologically, able to calm the abductee, do a scan of some sort, and even, as Pat felt, "film" or record data from our minds.

Other activities besides the exams occur in abduction encounters. All of the women report that the aliens communicated with them at some point, although not during every encounter. And seven of them recall teaching or testing sessions. During abductions, six report experiencing levitation, five recall passing through solid objects, and four witnessed or performed telekinesis. On the 'hardware' side of things, four women were shown how to operate some of the equipment aboard a craft, and on the 'software' side three of them were induced to relive or envision a past time or event in their lives. Again, these activities point to an agenda more complex than crossbreeding.

Six of the women do, however, report scenes generally known as "baby presentations" in which apparently hybrid infants are shown to abductees and are said to be created from some human-alien crossbreeding process. But half of the women also report being forced or induced to engage in (mostly traumatic) sexual activities with aliens, humanoids, or other abductees. And all these activities have little to do with crossbreeding or gathering of reproductive material.

Some researchers have theorized that all such sexual scenarios are the product of mind control-erotic images without substance-used merely to facilitate an actual event which involves nothing more than the taking of sperm or ova. But there are problems with this theory. For one thing, although sperm-gathering can be accomplished via erotically induced orgasm on the part of a male, it certainly isn't necessary for ova-gathering. In fact, it is totally unnecessary. Nor does it serve a reproductive purpose for her to be compelled to masturbate, as in some abductions, as well as in cases where the person feels "switched on" for this purpose when no abduction is underway. Another problem is that sexual intrusions involving reproductively immature children are reported. And finally, there is clearly no sperm/ova gathering going on in those situations where abductees

are forced into sexual situations together.

Abductees report a wide yet consistent pattern of communications from the aliens, both in their presence and through remote contact. The most common communications focus on the origin of the human species, the "special" nature of the alien-abductee relationship and of the abductee personally who has an important function to perform, the distinction of body and spirit, and warnings of future global destruction, which were all reported by a majority of the women. These are not trivial subjects. It would be as dangerous to ignore this information as it would be to believe everything the aliens say.

In the "Settings" category there is a similar consistency of reports, including the highly controversial scenario of the underground base, present in half of the cases. Even more surprising, perhaps, is that seven of the women saw other apparently human people in their encounters, working with the aliens aboard craft as well as in the terrestrial facilities. And in six cases, the humans were perceived as military personnel.

Many researchers have, unfortunately, been unwilling to take reports of human-alien collusion seriously. One researcher told me that he believed every case of human collusion could be explained as illusions perpetrated by an exclusively alien group. But all it takes to dispel this view is one confirmed case of military or human involvement, and from information that has been shared with me in confidence, I am satisfied that at least one such case exists, that of Leah Haley, whose ordeal of military intrusions and threats is told in LOST WAS THE KEY.

Another researcher has claimed repeatedly that none of his many investigations has produced reports or evidence of human military involvement. His claim, however, has been disputed by some of the abductees with whom he has worked, who say they have indeed reported these events only to have them discounted by the investigator.

Yet the reports overwhelmingly point to actual human involvement with alien abductions. Details of reports are consistent throughout the country, and the only thing that differs, finally, is the interpretation of those details by the researchers. Reports of human military involvement must be addressed with more than an unexamined dismissal, for they are as common as the baby presentation scenarios that are accepted at face value by the traditional view. Whether "real" or contrived, these events serve a purpose that the researchers need to discover.

Six other accounts described the abductees either viewing or being in a desert setting or on a desert-type planet, although the explanation of this scene varies from one report to another. Within the alien facilities, five women saw television-type screens, four saw instrument panels, and four were shown graphs or charts. And although it isn't noted on the Chart, three women described unusual black, flexible tubing in the facilities, both aboard the craft and in underground locations.

Other reported details in alien settings included bodies of water or liquid, in three cases, as well as three reports of animals present. Of more concern are the three accounts of abductees seeing, or being told of, cloned human bodies. Both Lisa and Pat were shown clones of their bodies, although they were given different explanations. Similar reports come from other abductees, and in one case a man said he saw a room full of inert male and female human bodies, who were beautiful and identical. The implications of such reports are enormous, considering the possible uses the aliens could make of these carbon-copy human bodies.

The eight women reported a number of physical effects, consistent with general abduction data, but the only two effects which were universal were patterns of unexplained bruises and particular noises in the ear or head. While the noises could be rationalized, perhaps, the bruises clearly indicate some physical interaction. The repetition of triangular marks in abductee reports may well indicate a single source for all of the marks.

Other signs of physical, rather than psychic or spiritual, contact include six reports of unexplained blood on the women's bodies or bedclothes, six reports of scoop marks, five women with scratches, and seven with puncture wounds. The case for actual physical contact is also bolstered by the six women who reported waking up with their clothing on backward, inside out, or completely missing.

The women experienced a variety of other physical reactions in addition to the internally heard beeps and electronic-type tones. All but Pat, for instance, experienced nausea during or after an encounter, and five

reported sudden, total exhaustion in which all their energy drained away in an instant. Five women described awaking at times and feeling as if they'd been "beaten," to use Anita's term. And five said they had episodes in which a blinding light seemed to explode in their minds.

Unexplained rashes turned up in five of the cases, and instances of badly irritated eyes and waking with an unidentified bitter taste were both reported four times. Additionally, two of the women suffered unusual hair loss and unaccountable "sunburns."

The physical nature of the abduction scenario extends to other things in the abductee's environment. The external effects related to the phenomenon are very consistent, as the Chart demonstrates. Every one of the women have experienced bizarre electronic disturbances, for instance, and phone disturbances, both with the equipment and the callers. And seven out of eight reported lights in the yard, lights in the house, voices, clicking sounds, as well as miscellaneous thumps, pops, whistles, bangs, and hums in the environment, all without explanation. Outside the house, five of the women have witnessed the overflight of unaccountable, unmarked, or unidentifiable helicopters, all appearing after the abductees became aware of their situations.

The most consistent correlations between the women show up in the "Personal Response/Event" category. All of them suffer from chronic or frequent sleep disruption, all have undergone drastic attitude shifts, and they all feel a strong desire to live in rural locations, no matter what their previous backgrounds. Seven of the eight women report unexplained compulsions associated with their experiences, such as Polly's compulsion at times to take children, including other people's children, to a certain spot where UFOs are often sighted, something she would not do of her own choice. And Anita is the only one who has not reported feeling they are being prepared to carry out some unidentified task, job, or mission related to the alien agenda.

Three types of dreams show up in seven of the reports, as well. The first involves the arrival or landing or invasion of numerous UFOs on earth, a dream reported so frequently with the same details that I refer to it as 'The Night of Lights," from the typical description. The second dream shows scenes of coming disaster and chaos on the planet, and in some cases the abductees are led to believe that their upcoming "jobs" will be carried out at the time of destruction. The third dream type is prophetic, showing events which come to pass after the dream.

The final category, "Personal Background," shows, in fact, that all of the women have demonstrated above-average psychic abilities. The data on ethnic background included here has only relative importance, focusing as it does on the Celtic and Native American heritages which are more prevalent in American abduction reports than any other specific ethnic groups. The abduction phenomenon is global, and in any given region the ethnicity would surely be different. What is significant, however, is the high percentage of the women who have had unusual or serious gynecological problems, an indication that abduction experiences may be hazardous to their health.

The two remaining aspects of personal background, childhood abuse and a family member in the intelligence community, deserve special notice. Some researchers and mental health professionals, unable to accept the reality of this phenomenon, have offered screened memories of child abuse as an explanation for abduction memories. But as in the case of objections to military involvement, all it takes is one abductee who suffered no abuse to explode the theory. Among these eight women, only three reported childhood abuse of any kind, and their memories of these events were not repressed.

Other theorists believe that abduction activity is perpetrated by humans rather than aliens, carrying out massive mind-control experiments for some unknown purpose. They argue that the agents of this activity would have access to "subjects" through the families of those in the military and intelligence organizations. While it is true that most abductees have a family member in the military, that is also true of just about everyone in the country, so that cannot be a significant factor. More telling would be an inordinately high number of abductees with family connections to the intelligence community, and such cases are reported. Among the eight women, however, there are only two confirmed, and one possible, with connections to intelligence work.

These individual, very unique, abduction reports show such a commonality that they all could quite easily be from a single source, or alliance of sources, with a single, specific agenda. Some of the reported details, in fact, which appear so unique in a given single case, are too striking to dismiss. One good example not listed on the

Chart involves Pat and Angie, whose conscious memories and responses are very different. During Pat's childhood abduction, she asked for and was given a "green healer rock" as a keepsake, but when the military interrogated the family, they persuaded Pat's sister to give them the rock.

In Angie's case, a green rock was also confiscated. She didn't consciously connect the beautiful green rock with alien experiences, nor could she remember precisely when and where she first got it. But Angie does remember, as a child, being approached on the playground one day by an unknown woman. The woman knew Angie's name and a few things about her, claiming to be a friend of the girl's teacher. After a brief initial chat, the woman told Angie that she knew about the green rock and asked if she could have it. Angie recalls giving her the rock during a second encounter, although the details are cloudy.

There are other such minute similarities in just these eight accounts, and the details on the Chart generally are true not only for the eight women but also for thousands of others.

There is one more set of parallels, however, which was not on the Chart because it pertained exclusively to the women in this project rather than to the typical abduction situation. I was in contact with all of them separately for months before deciding to compile a book-length report about the cases, and during that time, although strange things still occurred, they did not seem any different from past activities. Things changed, however, after Jane and Amy were given messages telling them to work with me specifically.

I began the book project, and in the course of taking care of necessary business through the mail, it soon became clear that many of my letters to the women were being diverted. It was an annoyance, but a minor one. But then the women began having serious problems, physical afflictions of a suspiciously similar nature.

Beth was first. On the night she decided to participate in the project, she phoned a friend to discuss the decision, but in the midst of the conversation the line went dead. That night, she had disturbing but cloudy dreams, and the next morning both her legs from knees to ankles were in excruciating pain for no apparent reason. And then she had a sudden, frightening flashback that linked the mysterious pain with military personnel warning her not to be a part of the book.

That was in early October 1993. Three weeks later, after discussing my determination to do the project with one of the women, I went to bed in fine shape and woke up at 6 a.m. with wracking, spasmodic pains in both legs, from my knees to my ankles. It was unbelievably bad, unlike any pain I've had before, and after swallowing ibuprofin I hobbled back to bed and tried to sleep. I must have, for I dreamed after that, seeing myself surrounded by military personnel who were injecting something into my knees. They taunted me, saying, "Don't think you can do anything you want. This is just a little demonstration that we can bring you, literally, to your knees any time we choose."

For Beth and me, these may have been mere dreams, reflecting our fears about the project. But Anita's report of experiencing this same pain after an abduction, years before, makes it harder to discount a connection. And on the same weekend I had the leg pains, both Anita and Jane suffered unexpected gall bladder attacks, so severe that they both underwent emergency surgery at almost the same hour.

Angie was the next to suffer. After an abduction in early November, she woke up with several physical symptoms, the worst of which was heavy congestion. It quickly grew worse, and in the space of less than two months she had to be hospitalized. Before that time, however, her health had been remarkably pristine. It was in November, too, that Angie recalls military personnel threatening punishment if she "talked to Karla Turner."

Was it a real event, a VRS, or just a dream? Anita had a similar dream shortly thereafter, in which I first discussed abandoning the project and then military personnel arrived and interrogated her about UFOs. Lisa, too, felt a very human threat against her involvement with the book and almost decided to remove herself from it. But in the end, all of the women felt that the information was too important to let intimidation, if that's what it really was, prevent its release.

To conclude, then, the Comparative Chart shows how consistently the same details turn up in unrelated abduction scenarios, and indeed how many consistent details actually comprise the phenomenon. Such reports demand that serious attention be given to uncovering the nature and extent of human activity within the

abduction phenomenon.

The evidence further makes a strong case for a very physical, technological basis to alien-human interactions. Unless angels perform rectal probes, however, and make crank phone calls, and arrange sexual liaisons in addition to their other heavenly duties, the case is very weak for this being a primarily spiritual agenda.

12. The Round Table

When these personal accounts are brought together for an overview, the women have three major concerns, in common with many others who have had forced alien encounters. What are the aliens saying, and can we believe them? What are they doing with us, technologically and psychologically? And what is the real nature of human or military involvement in the abduction activities?

On this last issue, every one of the women have reported seeing other humans present in abduction situations. Amy, Angie, Lisa, Pat and Beth recall experiences that involved military personnel, and in most instances there were aliens working with the humans. Although some of these scenes may have been alien VRS productions, other peripheral activities do indicate actual human involvement. Angie, for instance, was confronted and intimidated by uniformed men in the pickups that pinned her between them on the highway, just hours before she had a military abduction and was threatened about "talking."

When Amy traveled out of state for regressive hypnosis, another suspicious event occurred. A high-ranking naval officer, a long-time acquaintance of the hypnotist's family, showed up at their home late on the night of Amy's arrival, in spite of being told that it would not be convenient to visit at that time. He proceeded to deliver the standard "line" that the military has no interest, much less involvement, with UFOs, aliens, or abductees. He said that in twenty-five years of service he had never even heard another military person mention UFOs, on or off the record. And he insisted that abductees had no business presenting their experiences to the public unless they could also offer "concrete, scientific evidence" that anything had happened.

I was present that night, and when I asked him if he actually could tell us of any military involvement with UFOs, assuming it did exist, he admitted that "national security" restrictions would force him to deny such involvement.

When Amy left to drive home, she was followed by a state patrol car who stayed inches from her bumper or right beside her car for many miles. The effect, of course, was extremely unnerving, and Amy felt it was meant to be an intimidation, as do those who have had military helicopter harassment, phone disturbances, and other events that seem much more human than alien in origin.

If, as was mentioned earlier, there is proof in even one case that military personnel have been involved in abductions, then the other reports should not be easily dismissed. Each person must decide what evidence is convincing on this issue, but I am satisfied that one case, Leah Haley's, is beyond question. If human agencies are indeed covertly active, their involvement demands more vigorous investigation than has been done up to now. Mainstream researchers, however, show no enthusiasm for confronting possible human-rights violations by human forces, perhaps because they fear personal reprisal-which, as many abductees can attest, does occur.

On the issue of alien communications, there is plenty of data from all of the women. Most of them have had personal messages in addition to hearing their names called. "The communication that has happened when I'm awake," Lisa reported, as an example, "is usually simple. They say in my head, Turn off the lights and don't come in here'." After Anita was sexually assaulted by the humanoid in the red suit, he told her, "I'll be there to help you," which was frightening rather than reassuring given the immediate situation. And Amy had a curious message in late 1993, saying, "All will know of UFOs on the day of the big game," although which big game was not identified.

Some of the personal messages, described previously, made direct references to me, once the women began working to investigate their experiences. Jane was told to give all her "information to Karla Turner" and to

assist me in awakening others to the abduction phenomenon. Amy was compelled to contact me by her influencing forces, and then when she consciously asked them if they had any message for me, they told her to tell me, "Do take care. Lock your doors-it may help more than you know." The message was so absurd that Amy challenged it and was told, "She will know what it means." When Amy wrote me, she did not pass along that message, although she typed it and put it away.

Months later, when she was listening to a tape of a public presentation I had made, however, she heard me say that at one point I was so disheartened by the alien activity that I didn't even bother to lock my doors. Shocked by the correlation, she finally told me about the message she'd gotten earlier. And when Polly asked her "spirits," as she called the unseen communicators, about this book project, she was given a lengthy reply. In part, they said that the book "is a journey into another level of mind" and that my books "are a part of a much larger work from which she cannot be separated...an expansive work of love, resting on a solid base."

It is impossible not to wonder what these specific personal references mean. They certainly show that some force or group is aware of the connections between the women and my research, which may account for the helicopter flights and telephone interference so many of us have had. During a phone conversation with Angie, in fact, as we discussed one alien group's claim to originate in Cassiopeia, a man's voice interrupted to say, 'There's a lot of them out there, and we know where they come from"-and then the voice was gone.

These references also demonstrate foreknowledge of certain events or the ability to direct events, for whoever gave Amy the message about my locking the door seems to have known she would later, much later, hear a tape of my remarks. These specific references connect our separate experiences within a larger organized agenda, that much is clear, although the coordinators of this activity are not, and it seems to be quite a long-term project.

Many of the women had alien communications very early in their lives. Anita reported being told as a child that "The children must be protected." Amy had messages and ideas impressed into her mind from as young as four, and like Polly she felt the impact of these influences in her early teen years. She also felt that the aliens implanted or stored information within the subconscious, in "packets" of knowledge, reminiscent of the "pockets" of knowledge the aliens told me I possessed in 1980.

Throughout their lives, several women recalled teaching or training communications. For Amy, these included information about various aspects of physics, as with Polly, as well as lessons in telekinesis and penetrating solid objects. Angie's training has focused on using her mental powers, and Anita's propelled her to study useful survival skills. This training or programming of abductees is meant to serve some purpose, but we have only the aliens' claims for what that purpose may be.

Much of what the aliens have communicated has affected the women's attitudes on a variety of subjects. In childhood, Amy witnessed an apparent VRS designed to destroy her faith in traditional religion, and Polly reported lessons on "changes in allegiance." Anita, Jane, and Amy also have come to feel suspicious of temporal governments, a suspicion that Jane says was "fostered" by the aliens. Such an attitude adjustment is clearly an intrinsic part of the abduction agenda, pointing to a much more involved and disturbing program than the mere taking of genetic material to revivify a degenerative alien race. Their actions concern changing our belief system as much as working, for whatever reason, with our bodies, and we do not know the motivation for this targeting of religion and government.

On the subject of human genesis, the aliens often say they are our creators, as in Angie's case, and statements about altering our species were also made to Lisa. The most provocative message, given to Amy, indicated a surprise on the part of the aliens that Amy hadn't clearly seen the situation already. "Did you think this was all by accident?" she was asked, as the aliens presented the concept of the earth as a cosmic zoo.

Such indoctrination serves to reduce our concepts of human sovereignty, as well as to bind us to them in a subservient position, as a possession. While some people accept this relationship as fact and thus allow that the aliens can legitimately do with us what they please, there are others of us who feel we possess an inherent sovereignty and right to exist without interference, no matter what our genesis. Their claims to be our creators have never been more than mere claims, anyway, unless there is proof somewhere, as a few researchers report from intelligence and military insiders.

As for information on the aliens themselves, they are less forthcoming. Lisa was told that there are "many divisions" of the beings, and Jane has observed that while some of them are interdimensional, as Polly also believes, others are actually "interplanetary travelers." An origin in Cassiopeia was stated to Angie, although the alien said their group had long ago made a "home" for themselves on our planet. Beth was told only that the aliens are here for study and to "avert a destructive process" that humanity is bringing upon the world. The most extreme communication of origin, however, was given to Pat. She was told that the aliens are angels, although not as we'd been taught to think of them, and that they will be responsible for the changing of human bodies at the time of resurrection. Jane, conversely, has been made to see, from her experiences, that the God of the Bible "is not the supreme being we have been taught to envision."

A common communication has been that the abductees are to come together or "find" others like themselves. In fact, Angie reported being brought to a group of "Chosen Ones" in an underground facility. "There were others trained like me," Amy said she was told in 1989, "and we would come together soon. Now it is time that we find each other." Beth was told that she and others must work as "spiritual" beings "for the good of humanity," and the aliens told Jane that "All good people of earth must come together to resist what is coming." It isn't certain, of course, that all the communications have come from a single source, and in fact there are frequently contradictions and inconsistencies from case to case.

The future planetary events are also a major topic for the aliens, and it is interesting to note the phrases and images they use here. For Jane, the aliens have used terms like "the awakening" to indicate coming changes in "world cultures and consciousness." This sounds positive and peaceful enough, but both Amy and Polly have been told of a coming "Armageddon," although Amy was told that Armageddon "will not be as people think it will be." Angle's abductors said that the "filth and evil" in this world will be cleansed as we are subtly changed. But for Anita and Lisa, the future changes are shown as disasters for which they must prepare to survive here on earth.

And Pat has been shown scenes of the return of Jesus, accompanied by space ships and aliens, preceding the "bad time on earth" which will destroy many of those who are not rescued. Indeed, to Amy, Beth, Jane, and Polly, the communications have indicated a war of good and evil underway, in which we have a part to play. And as for the aliens' promised assistance, Lisa has said simply, "Why should we believe they can fix our problems when they can't even control the abusive aliens among them?"

How do the women feel about their alien communications? Jane is inspired by much of what she's told, but she has not been able to initiate the communications herself. In fact, she feels that the aliens have hidden, in a way, behind their contacts. "We're not seeing the true intelligence behind all these scenes," she once said. Polly says that when she considers all she has been told, she concludes that in reality, 'They have told us nothing." And Amy has complained that in spite of all she's been told and taught, the aliens "don't give [practical] information."

Angie has come to be suspicious of much of what she has been told. 'There's no reason I should trust those aliens," she wrote, "any more than I would trust my own kind." And Anita has echoed that feeling. "I'm always amazed when I get any information from them at all," she said. "I really don't know if someone who would abduct a person could be trusted to give a truthful answer to any question."

The second issue focuses on alien technology as observed by the abductees. Besides the various instruments used in examinations, most of which are completely foreign, it is curious to note how often the aliens employ quite familiar equipment, especially needles and injections. Indeed, some researchers have said that this use of mundane technology argues against an alien force and toward covert human activity. Angie, Beth, and Polly all report getting shots, and the other women have sometimes found injection punctures without remembering how they got them. But the most common technological devices are not at all human-like: the probes. Their descriptions are often very similar-small balls of light floating or bouncing through the house-but in Amy's case the probe was rather more "spidery" in appearance.

As mentioned earlier, there is a strong interest in human brains evinced by the aliens' activities. Amy, Angie, Beth, Lisa, Pat and Polly all reported having some operation performed on their brains, and they often used the exact same descriptions, of feeling as if their skulls were opened and their brains temporarily removed.

But by far the most alarming evidence of alien technology concerns the "new" bodies and "clones" they manufacture. Whether these are really bodies for a future human "resurrection," as Pat was told, remains to be seen, for other explanations have been given. In a case privately reported, for instance, a man was told that a duplicate of his body could be used to "replace" him if he didn't "cooperate" with the aliens. Lisa, too, was told that other people wouldn't be able to distinguish her cloned body from the original, if they chose to replace her. And Angie was shown the cloned infants as part of a "novel breed" the aliens are producing.

Polly has a different take on what may be going on with the baby presentations. "What's the point?" she asked. "Not to nurture this crossbred infant, not to teach the ETs about emotional love and physical bonding, but to blow our goddamn minds. They use our bodies to get to our minds and emotions." She doesn't believe they care anything about our bodies, "except that WE care very much, so that is why our bodies are important to them: to get at our caring."

This view is echoed by Angie. When she was shown one of her "hybrid" offspring, she felt that the presentation was a test of her rather than anything to do with the baby itself. "From that particular experience, I learned that the hybrid presentation liturgy is not a bonding exercise," she concluded. "In reality it is an act of scrutiny against the mother's measure of courage and understanding. It has a lot to do with mental pain and how the mother deals with it."

Concerning the clones or hybrids themselves, she was further told that their souls are "recycled" and that they are regenerated many times. This fits in with other reports in which abductees saw the aliens destroy fetuses and were told they are not "really alive" and that their physical material will be used, not wasted. In fact, these and other reports point to the use of human genetic material to produce the Gray workers, quite possibly biological "robots" rather than living, soul-inhabited, entities.

The other major technological question concerns the implants, for which the aliens have given various explanations. When Jane received an ear implant, she was told that it affects "brain chemicals and certain subtle functions." The aliens told Angie that the implants "act as a magnet and pull information from people's brains" as well as enhancing the use of "special senses" and sending "instructions."

But Amy was given very different information about the implants by the masked alien who removed hers. Besides being shown where the implants are placed and the fact that they operate on the abductee's own electrical brain activity, she was also told how the implants are used to control abductees, punish them, and even kill them.

And although no one was told that the implants are used to create the virtual-reality scenarios, that possibility must be considered. The technology behind the VRS is a subject upon which the aliens have been silent, but the effects of the VRS are apparent. Only Amy has been given any information about the images created by aliens, when she was told that they use frightening images for control. One of the aliens told Angie that the military also uses "illusions," but this was not explained.

Several of the women have their own ideas about what is behind the virtual-reality scenarios. Besides the control factor mentioned by Amy, Anita believes there may be a positive purpose for some of the VRS activity. "I suspect a lot of these encounters," she said, "are alien-induced dreams, for the purpose of making sure you feel comfortable with them." Lisa said, "I believe sometimes I'm made to dream odd things to see my reaction to them." And Jane, too, believes the aliens sometimes create frightening "set-up scenes, absurd stuff," which has made her uneasy. "I'm afraid," she confided, "we might find that intelligence [behind the illusions] so cold and impersonal that it would be unbearable."

Given all their experiences, what do the women themselves think about the aliens, their encounters, and the agenda to come? Pat is the only one who had unequivocally positive feelings and trust in the aliens-before her encounter with the "oriental girl" in the underground facility, that is-for her perception of them has been shaped since her childhood to see them as angelic beings. Jane, Angie, and Beth all recognize positive and negative forces among the aliens, and while Amy has been threatened and silenced through the years by the aliens, she still says, "I don't think all aliens are bad. I don't even consider the Grays that are abusing humans and other life forms as 'bad'-they have their reasons and think differently from us, so they probably do not understand our feelings."

Angie goes further, saying, "Perfectly real aliens exist out there, and it seems one kind wants to help us and another kind wants to deceive us." Anita has recognized differing agendas among the groups who have interacted with her. She thinks the Grays care very little about humans personally, the humanoids are involved with sexual aspects of the phenomenon (from her conscious recollections, at least), and the Tans are concerned to bind us to them through our emotions.

Polly has expressed many ideas about the alien agenda. "I know many feel they [aliens] need reproductive material from us," she wrote, "but the way it feels to me is, although there may be the aspect that we are a resource, it feels like a highly sophisticated mind game." And she recognizes, as has Anita, that the mind game can be very effective. "Intellectually I can say, 'They are out for control; don't trust them'," Polly has confided. "But, Karla, emotionally and deep in my mind I trust certain ones of them more than anything else in the universe. And I have been confronting bit by bit the evidence that they made me feel this way for their purposes, to fulfill their agenda, not for my good. The depth of my trust, I think, is more frightening than the depth of my fear." Like Anita, she recognizes the directed nature of her response.

'Their consistent theme is control," she continued. "It is maddening to realize that although we strive to empower ourselves and know that we can claim and enforce our own mental sovereignty, still so often they slip by our defenses...and own parts of us which by rights we should have in our conscious possession."

In spite of what some prominent abduction theorists tell us about avoiding thinking in terms of "good and evil" or "positive and negative" when it comes to the aliens, this simply cannot be done, nor should it be. For these women, for my husband and myself, for all abductees, knowing that we have been made a part of this agenda and that we have been implanted, trained, and programmed to participate in some future scenario, how can we not ask to what purpose our minds, bodies, and souls will be used? How can we put aside our rationality, our learned wisdom, and our ethics to trust the words and actions of beings whose nature is kept hidden from us and whose agenda involves the entire world?

More immediately, what can be done to alter the abduction situation? Is there any sign that things are changing? The answer is a cautious yes, there is evidence of a change in the 'standard operating procedure' of abduction events over the last forty or fifty years.

On the part of the aliens, there seems to have been a quantitative and qualitative increase in abduction activity since the mid-1980s in this country. Whereas most events in the past were deeply suppressed in the abductees' memories, by 1986 hundreds, if not thousands, of abductees began to remember past experiences and to be more currently aware of new ones. Either the aliens were not doing a good job of suppressing the memories, or something was triggering a wake-up call in the abductees. Further, more abductees were reporting a variety of alien physical types, not just the small Gray workers typically encountered in the past.

An argument can be made that this awareness was initiated deliberately by the aliens, as part of the preparation for the predicted coming global event in which abductees will be activated to perform their "tasks."

But a different argument can also be made, that abductees were waking up on their own, many times "seeing through" the illusions and virtual-reality scenarios as Anita did when she told the Tan entity who was projecting love toward her, 'Too bad it isn't real." In several recent reports, in fact, abductees have penetrated the aliens' illusions and refused to cooperate as the aliens would have had them do. The growth and changes resulting from alien contact may yet prove to be a double-edged sword, giving abductees a heightened awareness and psychic perception that allows them to evaluate and react to their situations in ways they could not have done before.

It has been said that any species, in an environment of extreme stress and questionable survival, may develop new coping mechanisms to ensure that the species continue to exist. Could this be part of what is happening now? Certainly an intrusion of an advanced, controlling force on a widespread scale could generate enough "species stress" to trigger new response mechanisms.

Studies of human consciousness development theorize that the emergence of bicameralism-the division of the psyche into conscious and subconscious components-occurred relatively recently in human evolution, perhaps no more than five thousand years ago, in a fairly sudden way and with no known precipitating cause. Could it be that we are once again experiencing a psychic change, a movement toward "tricameralism" that will give us a

new form of conscious perception? Are we developing new abilities to recognize energies and entities which have hitherto been beyond our ken, and thus new ways to respond?

Many people who see alien interaction as a positive event for humanity point to the growth and changes abductees often evince as proof that the aliens are working to elevate the psychic abilities of our race. Angie has said, echoing the reports of numerous other abductees, "I have grown in many ways. My IQ and receptiveness to learning has improved a lot, and I am more in tune *to* nature as well as myself and other human beings." Defenders of alien interaction claim that these sorts of changes are a deliberate product of the contact experience, evidence of the aliens' benevolent interest in humanity.

It is odd, however, that such growth seems to come to abductees only after they are aware of their experiences. If indeed this growth is produced by the aliens, then it should have been there long before the abductees were conscious of their encounters, since in almost every reported case there are signs of alien involvement since early childhood. The psychic increase and growth of perceptive abilities, however, occurring after the abductee is aware of the intrusions, may indicate a different genesis-an internal evolution of consciousness-stemming from our need to know what is and has been done to us and what we can do to meet the situation in a more empowered position.

Survivors of great catastrophes such as hurricanes, earthquakes, or war, may be crushed by the impact of these events, losing their usual ethical considerations and sense of self that is the basis of psychic stability. Or they may find a new resilience, rising to the occasion and reacting with abilities they didn't know they possessed.

Given the vast intrusive activities of the abduction phenomenon, we as a species may well feel such a threat or stress that a "mutational" or evolutionary leap is occurring today, developing a tricameralism of the mind, allowing us to confront the intruders and see them more clearly than they have allowed in the past. On the basis of many recent abduction reports, there is hope that our species is awakening.

Svali Speaks

Table of Contents

Reprinted here with authors permission

Appendix Equipment Used By Trainers

Chapter 1:

- 1)An overview of the Illuminati
- 2.)Hierarchy of the Illuminati
- 3.)How the Illuminati Make Money

Chapter 2: Jobs in the Illuminati (Or Why They Spend All That Time Training Everybody)

Chapter 3: Conspiracy Theory Two, or The Illuminati Plan to Rule The World. (Also know as "Novus Ordem Seclorum)

Chapter 4:How the Illuminati Program People

Chapter 5: Colors, Metals and Jewel Programming

About the author:

Hi, my name is Svali. Both I and my entire family were involved in a cult group until several years ago, when we broke free. I used to be a programmer in the cult, and now I want to share the knowledge that I have to help others.

It is possible to break free of cult abuse if a person is involved. It is a long, heart-breaking process, but well worth it. In the articles that I will be providing, I hope to help the survivor of cult abuse find tools to help in their journey towards freedom.

I have been a consultant to an on-line survivors group that helps people dealing with issues related to cult programming and becoming free, for the past year and a half. I myself have been in therapy for ritual abuse and DID for nine years, with the last five being aware of the recent cult abuse.

I am also a writer, and a registered nurse. I currently work as a diabetic educator in Texas 20 hours a week.

I have also self-published a book on breaking free of cult programming, which several experts in the field have said has "invaluable information" for the survivor of ritual abuse.

Both my ex-husband and my two children broke free of cult abuse last year. My children are living with me while my husband is working on healing. They all have DID (dissociative identity disorder, formerly known as multiple personality disorder) as well, which makes life at home interesting! I am currently married to my second husband, who is also a recovered DID and who got out of the cult five years ago.

Chapter 6: Brain Wave Programming

Chapter 7: Military Programming

Chapter 8: CIA , Governmental, and Scholarship programming

Chapter 9: Programming Linked to Stories, Movies, Cartoons, or role Play Dramatization

Chapter 10: The Sixth step of Discipline: Betrayal; twinning; internal walls, structures, geometry

Chapter 11: Suicidal Programming

Chapter 12: Preventing Reaccessing of the Survivor

Chapter 13: Shell programming, Internal Councils, Human Experimentation, Function Codes

Chapter 14: Spiritual Programming

Chapter 15: Core splits, Denial programming, the last Five Steps of Discipline Virtual Reality Programming

Other articles by Svali:

Appendix

Equipment Frequently Used by Trainers:

It may help therapists to realize the equipment that trainers use. If their client describes these items, which may appear quite sophisticated, believe them. The cult has become quite technologically advanced.

Training room: the average training room is a neutral colored room, with walls painted either a dull gray, white, or beige. Some may be painted in various colors, as part of color coding. They are often located in secret underground rooms, or basements of large private residences, and will be entered from the main building through a covered doorway. Impromptu training rooms may be set up during military exercises outdoors, in covered canvas tents.

Trainers: the Illuminati have a rule: there must always be a minimum of two trainers working with a person. This prevents a trainer from being either too severe, or permissive, or developing too close a bond with the subject; the watchful eye of the other trainer prevents this. Younger trainers are paired with older, more experienced trainers. The older trainer will teach the younger, who does most of the actual work. If the younger is unable to finish a task, or loses heart, the older one will step in.

Head trainers: will teach, they will also work with the council leaders and hierarchy. All members are required to come in for a "tune up" (reinforcing programming), even top leaders, from time to time.

EEG machine: will often have abbreviated hookups for quick use. Used extensively with brain wave programming; also to verify that a certain alter is out when called up. May be used to verify deep trance state before initiating deep programming. Trainers are taught to read these readouts.

Trainer's table: a large table, frequently steel covered with plastic, or easily cleaned material. On the sides at intervals are restraints for arms, legs, neck to prevent movement.

Trainer's chair: large chair with arm rests. Will have restraints as above at intervals to restrain movement while person sits in chair.

Shock equipment: models and types are quite varied, depending on age and company. Most have a set of rubber covered wires, with electrodes that may be connected with Velcro, rubber (steel tips imbedded under finger and toe nail beds), or gel pads (larger body areas such as chest, arms, legs). Some are tiny electrodes, which can be taped next to eyes, or placed within genitalia. These are connected to the "shock box", which has controls that can determine amount of electricity , and frequency, if interval shocks are desired.

Drugs: any number of opiates, barbiturates, hypnotics, sedatives, anesthetic agents. Resuscitative drugs, antidotes are also kept, clearly labeled and indexed. Many drugs, especially experimental ones, are only known by code names, such as "alphin 1".

CPR equipment: in case person has adverse reaction to drugs or programming. At times, a child alter will come out inadvertently during a programming sequence, and will be overdosed with the drugs meant for adult alters. The trainers must give it the antidote, and resuscitate it, just as if a real child is out. They are well aware of this fact, and will severely punish child alters, to teach them to come out only when called out.

Virtually reality headsets: the keystone in recent years. Many programming sequences utilize holographic images, and virtual reality set ups, including assassination programs, where the person realistically "kills" another human being. These virtual disks are far more advanced than those in video arcades.

Body building equipment: used in military training to increase fitness, lean body mass.

Steel instruments: used to insert into orifices, cause pain

Stretch machine: used as punishment, "stretches " person without breaking bones. Extremely painful.

Trainer's grids and projectors: used to project grids on wall or ceiling.

Movie projector: to show movies, although new VR disks are replacing these computer: collect and analyze data; keep computer grid on person's system. Current military computer access codes will be used to download into governmental computers.

Trainer's Journals: contain indexed copies of subject's systems, including key alters, command codes, etc.

Comfort objects: used to comfort subject afterwards. May be toy or candy for child alters, or oils for massage. Warm towels, or beverages may be given, as the trainer "bonds with" and comforts person they

worked with. This is probably the most important part of the training process, as the trainer explains calmly, kindly how well the person did, how proud they are of them.

top

Chapter One
An overview of the Illuminati

In order to understand Illuminati cult programming, it is first necessary to understand a bit about the structure and philosophy of the organization. The Illuminati are a group of people who follow a philosophy known as "Illuminism" or "enlightenment". The Illuminati were named several hundred years ago, but trace their roots and history to the ancient mystery religions of Egypt, ancient Babylon, and even Mesopotamia. Out of these ancient religions, which were practiced secretly over hundreds and hundreds of years, there arose esoteric groups which continued to practice the rites, traditions, and enculturation brought in from the original groups.

Over the centuries, these groups practiced openly in some countries, and covertly in countries where Christianity or other religions opposed their practices. Some of the groups which came out of these ancient roots included the order of the Knights Templar, Rosicrucian's, Baphetomism, and Druidic cults. These groups were the forerunners, or roots, of modern day Illuminism. The original Illuministic leaders chose to take what they felt were the best practices of each root religion, combine them into principles, then organized these principles according to specific guidelines.

Modern day Illuminism is a philosophy funded by the wealthy, but practiced in all social strata. It is a philosophy whose tenets have spread across the world. It started with the German branch of Rosicrucian's, spread to England, then came to the United states with the first settlers.

The Illuminati have 3 main branches: the Germanic branch, which oversees the others, the British branch, which handles finances, and the French/Russian branch. All 3 branches are represented in both the United States and Canada, as well as every country in the world.

How the Illuminati are organized in the United States:

The Illuminati have groups in every major city of the United States. They originally entered the U.S. through Pittsburgh, Pa., and from there, spread across the US. There are 18 cities across the US, which are considered major "power centers" for Illuminati power and/or influence. These include: Washington, DC and the surrounding areas; Albany, New York; Pittsburgh, Pa. the "golden triangle" of the Winston Salem, Raleigh, NC area, Minneapolis, Minn, Ann Arbor, Mich, Wichita, Kan., Phoenix, Az., Portland, Or., Flagstaff, Az., Seattle, Wash., Houston, TX., Los Angeles, CA. and surrounding areas, Atlanta, Ga., New Orleans, La., Springfield, Miss. Other cities are important to the Illuminati, as all, but these cities

funnel money for them, conduct research, and often regional councils sit within them.

Hierarchy of the Illuminati

The Illuminati have organized their society along extremely hierarchical, or stratified, levels. In fact, the top levels are known as:

Hierarchical level

The Illuminati have divided the United States into 7 geographical regions; each region has its own regional council, composed of 13 members, with an advisory board of 3 elders to each one. These regions interact for purposes of finances; personnel; teaching, etc. Beneath each regional council, is a local council. This is a council of 13 members, the head of whom sits on the regional council, and gives it information about the local groups underneath his leadership. The local council will also have an advisory council of 3.

A local leadership council in a large metropolitan area might look like this:

- Head of local council (reports to regional council)
- Two intermediaries (report all activities under leader to him)
- Four administrators (oversee finances, administer, set up group activities)
- Six head trainers (over trainers in local groups, teach other trainers)

Underneath the above leadership council, will be six people designated as informers or intermediaries, who go to the local group meetings, interact with local group leaders, and report to the leadership council.

Anarchical level: the levels below the leadership council are known as the anarchical levels.

Underneath the intermediate level, is the local group level. It will look like this:

Local "Sister groups" (will vary in number, according to the size of the city, or cities, in the area). A large metropolitan area may have anywhere from ten to twenty seven groups.

Each sister group will be headed up by:

A high priest and priestess: this job is rotated every 3 years, to allow different people within the group to take on leadership roles. Each group will also have different members, with specific roles/jobs within the group. These roles will be addressed in Chapter 2.

One thing that I would like to emphasize is the fact that the Illuminati today are generational. There

members are born into the group, which is highly organized, as described above. The set up discussed above is representative, with minor variations, of most major metropolitan regions of the United States. Smaller population centers will be organized under similar guidelines, but will be umbrellaed together with several cities within the region to create the local leadership council.

HOW THE ILLUMINATI MAKE MONEY

The Illuminati are involved in many areas of making money, as they need continued financing to survive. There are several illegal enterprises that they are involved in, as well as legal ones.

- **Drug running:** The Illuminati linked up with the Mafia and the Columbians, years ago, to help each other out with bringing drugs into the United States. They also provide couriers for taking drugs and money out of the States. The Illuminists are generally wealthy businessmen, who have 4 layers of people underneath them. The fourth layer down actually has contact with the people in the drug industry. They never identify themselves as Illuminists; only as people interested in investing, with a guaranteed profit, and are highly secretive. In return, the local groups supply people willing to be couriers of money or drugs, or people willing to help cover for the local operations.

- **Pornography:** The Illuminati are linked in many cities with pornography/prostitution/child prostitution/ and white slavery sales. Again, several layers are present, as a buffer, between the true "management" and those either engaged in the activities, or in paying for/funding and eventually being paid for the activities.

- **Children:** are often supplied from the local cult groups, and taught to be child prostitutes (and later, adult prostitutes); are photographed and filmed in every type of pornography available, including "snuff films" and violent films.

- **Gun running:** The Illuminati and other groups are also involved in international gun sales and shipments. The Illuminists have well trained couriers who will cross international and state lines. These couriers are highly secretive, and will not reveal their sources, on pain of suicide or assassination. These people are accountable to others above them, with two more "buffer layers" of people above these, before the person in the Illuminati with money, who helps fund this, is found.

- **Buying access codes for military computers:** The Illuminati will have people from all strata of civilian life trained to go and make pickups near or on military bases. A typical person used might be the innocent looking wife of a military person, a local businessman, or even a college student. There is a contact inside the base, also a dissociative Illuminist, who brings the information to the outside contact. Occasionally, the contact person is paid with money, information, or goods. The military computer codes are changed on random schedules; the Illuminati have at least 5 or 6 contacts on each major base, who alert them when the codes are

getting ready to change, on pain of death. The Illuminists like having access to military computers, because that will gain them entrance to closed files the world over.

- **Hiring and selling assassinations:** this is done worldwide, more in Europe than in the States. These people are paid big money to do either a private or political assassination. The money is paid either to the assassin, or to the trainer; usually they both divide the fee The assassin is offered protection in another country for awhile, until the trail runs cold. If the kill is done in Europe they may be sent to the far east or the U.S., and vice versa if the kill is done in the U.S. The Illuminati have a wide arena of places and false identities to hide these people, unless for some reason they want the assassin disposed of as well. Then, he/she is caught and immediately executed.

- **Mercenaries/military trainers:** guess who gets paid money to come in and train paramilitary groups? Who has training camps all over the states of Montana, Nevada, and North Dakota? Who occasionally will offer their expertise in return for a large financial reward? They never advertise themselves as Illuminati, unless the group is known to be sympathetic to their cause. Instead, these are tough, cold, brutal military trainers, who offer to teach these groups in return for money, or even better, a promise to affiliate with their group in return (loyalty in return for knowledge). More and more paramilitary groups have been brought into the Illuminati this way, without their full knowledge of who and what the group really is. This gives the Illuminists a way to monitor these groups (their trainers report on them, and their activities), and it can be useful to have trained military groups that they can call on someday.

- **Banking:** The original Illuminists were bankers, and they have highly trained financiers to organize their money, and funnel the above illicit funds into more "respectable" front groups/ organizations. They will also start benevolent charities, community organizations, etc., as fronts, and funnel the money from a broad base into these groups. The Illuminati particularly pride themselves on their money making and manipulation skills, and their ability to cover their paper trails expertly, through layer after layer.

  All banking trails eventually will lead to Belgium, the Illuminati financial center for the world. These are some of the major money making enterprises that the Illuminati are engaged in. They have a lot of financial resources, backing their enterprises, which means that in reality they can engage the best lawyers, accountants, etc. to help cover their trail as well.

top

Chapter Two:

Jobs in the Illuminati (or Why They Spend All That Time Training People)

To understand generational programming, it helps to understand WHY the cult goes to the amount of trouble that it does to place programming into people. Training represents time and effort, and no one- especially a cult member- will spend that amount of energy unless there will be a return on the investment. This will be a simple overview of some of the more common jobs in the cult. It is not meant to be exhaustive, or in any way considered to be complete.

The cult has a very organized hierarchy of jobs. Like any large organization, in order to run smoothly, it needs people who are well trained in their jobs- so well trained, that they can do their tasks without even thinking about them. To maintain secrecy, this group must also have people completely dedicated to not revealing their roles in the cult- even under threat of death or punishment. The cult wants members who are completely loyal to the group and its tenets, who never question the orders they are given. These qualities in group members ensure the continuance of the cult, and that its secrets are never revealed to the outside world.

Here is a sampling of some jobs in the cult (not listed in order of priority)

- **Informers:** These people are trained to observe details and conversations with photographic recall. They are trained to report to their local cult leader or hierarchy, or trainer, and will download large amounts of information under hypnotic trance. Detailed knowledge of conversations or even documents can often be retrieved in this manner. They are often used as "plants" to gather information in both governmental settings, and within the cult meetings.

- **Breeders:** These people are often chosen from childhood to have and breed children. They may be chosen according to bloodlines, or given in arranged marriages or cult alliances, to "elevate" the children. A parent will often sell the services of a child as a breeder to the local cult leader in return for favors or status. These children are rarely used as a sacrifice; usually they are given to others in the cult to adopt or raise, but the breeder is told that any child born to her was "sacrificed" to prevent her looking for the child. Occasionally, in anarchical cults, a local leader or parent will have a child as the result of an incestuous liaison. Such a child is given away or killed, but the mother will be told the child was given away to a distant branch, and must be given up.

- **Prostitutes:** Prostitutes can be a male or female of any age. They are trained from earliest childhood to give sexual favors to one or more adults in return for payment to the child's parents or their local cult group. Occasionally, the prostitute may be given to a member of the cult, on a temporary basis, as a "reward" for a job well done. Child prostitution is a big business for the cult, and training very young children in this role is taken very seriously. Child prostitutes are also used to blackmail political figures or leadership outside the cult.

- **Pornography**A child used in pornography (which may include bestiality) can also be of any age or sex. Child pornography is also big business in the cult, and includes snuff films. Children are

trained in this role from preschool on, often with the help or approval of the child's parents. The parents are paid or given favors by the cult in return for selling their child or allowing their child to be trained in this area.

- **Media personnel**These are very bright, verbal people. They will be sent to journalism school and will work for local or regional media upon graduation. These individuals have many contacts within the organization as well as the outside world. They write books and articles sympathetic to the Illuministic viewpoint without ever revealing their true affiliation. They will tend to do biased research in their articles, favoring only one viewpoint, such as denying the existence of DID or ritual abuse. For instance, they will interview only psychiatrists/psychologists sympathetic to this viewpoint and will skew data to present a convincing picture to the general public. If necessary, they will outright lie or make up data to support their viewpoint. There are members of groups whose people have been purposely trained to try and help formulate public opinion on the nonexistence of the cult (i.e., cults don't exist, no rational person would believe this "mass hysteria"). The Illuminists believe that to control the media is to control the thinking of the masses. For this reason, they take training media personnel quite seriously. Helpers at rituals Cleaners clean up meticulously after rituals. They will scour the site after a ceremony, rake the area, etc. They are taught this job from preschool years on.

- **Preparers:** set up tables, cloths, candles, and paraphernalia quickly and efficiently. This job is learned from infancy on.

- **Readers:** read from the book of Illumination or local group archives; they also keep copies of sacred literature in a safe vault and are trained in ancient languages. Readers are valued for their clear speaking voices and ability to dramatize important passages and bring them to life.

- **Cutters:** are taught to dissect animal or human sacrifices (they are also known as the "slicers and dicers" of the cult). They can do a kill quickly, emotionlessly, and efficiently. They are trained from early childhood on.

- **Chanters:** sing, sway, or lead choruses of sacred songs on high holy occasions.

- **High Priest/Priestess:** The person who holds this job is changed every few years in most groups, although it may be held longer in smaller, more rural groups. These people administrate and lead their local cult group as well as coordinate jobs within the cult, give assignments, and pass on meeting dates given from the local hierarchy or leadership council. They also will activate the local group's telephone tree, evaluate their local group members for job performance, and lead in all spiritual activities. They report to the local or regional leadership council over their group.

- **Trainers:** These people teach local group members their assigned jobs and monitor the performance of these jobs at local group meetings or after an assigned task. These people report to the high priest/priestess over their group, as ell as to the local head trainer on leadership

council.

- **Punishers**These are the people who brutally punish/discipline members caught breaking rules or acting outside of or above their authority. They are universally despised by other cult members, although they will be praised for a job well done by the local high priest or priestess. Usually physically strong, they will employ any method deemed necessary to prevent a recurrence of the undesired behavior. Punishment may be public or private, depending upon the severity of the infraction. Each local group has several punishers.

- **Trackers:**These people will track down and keep an eye on members who attempt to leave their local group. They are taught to use dogs, guns, taser, and all necessary tracking techniques. They are also adept at using the internet to monitor a person's activities. They will track credit card use, checks written, and employ other methods to find a missing person.

- **Teachers:** These people teach group classes to children to indoctrinate cult philosophy, languages, and specialized areas of endeavor.

- **Child care:** These people care for very young children when the adults are at local group meeting. Usually care is for young infants only. After age two, children are routinely engaged in some form of group activity led by trainers of the youngest children. Infant child care workers are usually quiet and coldly efficient.

- **Couriers:** These members run guns, money, drugs, or illegal artifacts across state or national lines. Usually they are people who are young and single without outside accountability. They are trained in the use of firearms to get out of difficult situations. They must be reliable and able to get past any anticipated barriers.

- **Commanding officers:**These people oversee military training in the local groups and help ensure the smooth running of these exercises. They will delegate jobs to those ranking under them and are responsible to the local leadership council. The council will have at least one member on it representing the military branch of the Illuminati. In addition, there are many military- related jobs beneath the commanding officers.

- **Behavioral scientists:**These individuals often oversee the training in local and regional groups. These students of human behavior are intensely involved in data collection and human experimentation in the name of the pursuit of knowledge of human behavior in the scientific realm. They are almost universally cold, methodical, impersonal people and will employ any methods to study trauma and its effects on the human personality. Their main interest centers around implementing programming and cult control in the most efficient and lasting manner.

There are many other jobs inside the cult. The cult spends quite a bit of its time getting people to do these jobs for them for FREE, which is why they PROGRAM people to believe they are doing their

"family" and the world a service. The reality, of course, is that the individual is being abused and taken advantage of by the cult.

top

CHAPTER THREE:
CONSPIRACY THEORY TWO, OR THE ILLUMINATI PLAN TO RULE THE WORLD
(ALSO KNOWN AS "NOVUS ORDEM SECLORUM")

Prior to discussing actual programming techniques, it is important to understand the philosophy underlying why the Illuminists are programming people. All groups have goals, and the Illuminists are no exception. Money making is not their final goal - it is a means to an end. This end point, or goal, is no less than to rule the world. The Illuminati has a set plan similar to the Soviet Union's previous "5- year" and "10- year " plans. This is what the Illuminists themselves believe and teach their followers as gospel truth.

Whether they will actually succeed is another matter altogether. The following is the Illuminist agenda at ALL levels of the Illuminati. As with any goal, the Illuminati has specific steps which it plans to implement to reach its objectives. Briefly, each region of the United States has "nerve centers" or power bases for regional activity. The United States has been divided up into seven major geographical regions. Each region has localities within it that contain military compounds and bases that are hidden in remote, isolated areas or on large private estates.

These bases are used intermittently to teach and train generational Illuminati in military techniques, hand- to- hand combat, crowd control, use of arms, and all aspects of military warfare. Why? Because the Illuminists believe that our government, as we know it, as well as the governments of most nations around the world, are destined to collapse. These will be planned collapses, and they will occur in the following ways:

The Illuminati has planned first for a financial collapse that will make the great depression look like a picnic. This will occur through the maneuvering of the great banks and financial institutions of the world, through stock manipulation, and interest rate changes. Most people will be indebted to the federal government through bank and credit card debt, etc. The governments will recall all debts immediately, but most people will be unable to pay and will be bankrupted. This will cause generalized financial panic which will occur simultaneously worldwide, as the Illuminists firmly believe in controlling people through finances.

Next there will be a military takeover, region by region, as the government declares a state of emergency

and martial law. People will have panicked, there will be an anarchical state in most localities, and the government will justify its move as being necessary to control panicked citizens. The cult trained military leaders and people under their direction will use arms as well as crowd control techniques to implement this new state of affairs. This is why so many survivors under 36 years of age report having military programming. People who are not Illuminists or who are not sympathetic to their cause, will resist. The Illuminists expect this and will be (and are BEING) trained in how to deal with this eventuality. They are training their people in hand-to- hand combat, crowd control, and, if necessary, will kill to control crowds. The Illuminati is training their people to be prepared for every possible reaction to the takeover. Many mind control victims will also be called into duty with preset command codes. These codes are meant to call out a new, completely cult loyal presenting system. Shatter codes programmed under trauma will be used to destroy or bury non-cult loyal alters.

Military bases will be set up, in each locality (actually, they are already here, but are covert). In the next few years, they will go above ground and be revealed. Each locality will have regional bases and leaders to which they are accountable. The hierarchy will closely reflect the current covert hierarchy.

About five years ago, when I left the Illuminati, approximately 1% of the US population was either part of the Illuminati, sympathetic to it, or a victim of Mind Control (and therefore considered useable). While this may not sound like many, imagine 1% of the population highly trained in the use of armaments, crowd control, psychological and behavioral techniques, armed with weapons and linked to paramilitary groups.

These people will also be completely dedicated to their cause. The Illuminati firmly believes that it can easily overcome the other 99% of the population, most of whom are untrained, or poorly trained, such as "weekend hunters." Even the local military will be overcome as the Illuminati will have regional cell groups with highly trained leaders. They also count on the element of surprise helping them during their takeover. Many of the highest leaders in the militia branch of the Illuminati are or have been officers in the military, and so already have a good knowledge of which techniques will work best to overcome a region's or locality's defenses.

After the military takeover, the general population will be given a chance to either espouse the Illuminati's cause, or reject it (with imprisonment, pain, even death being possible punishments). These people very much believe that the intelligent, or "enlightened" or Illuminated, were born to rule. They are arrogant, and consider the general population as "dumb sheep" who will be easily led if offered strong leadership, financial help in an unstable world economy, and dire consequences if the person rebels. Their utter ruthlessness, and ability to implement this agenda, should not be minimized.

The Illuminati banking leaders, such as the Rothschilds, the Van derBilts, the Rockefellers, the Carnegies, and the Mellons, as examples, will reveal themselves, and offer to "save" the floundering world economy. A new system of monetary exchange, based on an international monetary system, and based between Cairo, Egypt, and Brussels, Belgium, will be set up. A true "one world economy", creating the longed for "one world order", will become reality.

There is more to the Illuminist agenda, but these are the basics of it. This agenda is what the Illuminati really, truly, believe, teach, and train for. They are willing to give their lives up in this cause, in order to teach the next generation, as they believe that their children are their legacy. I was told that my children's generation would see this takeover, sometime in the 21st century. At present, the Illuminati have quietly and covertly fostered their takeover plan by their goals of the infiltration of:

1.The media
2.The banking system
3.The educational system
4.The government, both local and federal
5.The sciences
6.The churches

They are currently, and have been working the last several hundred years, on taking over these 6 areas. They do NOT go to an institution, and say "hi, I'm a local Illuminist, and I'd like to take over your bank). Instead, they begin by having several people quietly invest funds over several years, gradually buying more and more shares in the bank (or other institution that they wish to control), until they have a financial controlling interest in it. They never openly disclose their agenda, or their cult activities, as often they are amnesic to them. These are well respected, "Christian" appearing business leaders in the community. The image in the community is all important to an Illuminist; they will do anything to maintain a normal, respected facade, and DESPISE exposure. On one leadership in a major metropolitan city, where I was a member, there sat: one head of the local small business administration; one CEO of a government defense firm; one principal of a Christian school; one vice mayor of the city; one journalist; one nurse; one doctor; one behavioral psychologist, one army Colonel, and one navy Commander. All except one attended church weekly; all were well respected within the community. NONE of them appeared "evil", or "marked".

If you met them in person, you would probably instantly like any of these intelligent, verbal, likeable, even charismatic people. This is their greatest cover, since we often expect great evil to "appear" evil, led by media portrayals of evil as causing changes in the face and demeanor of people, or marking them like the biblical Cain. None of the Illuminists that I have known, had unkind, or evil appearing, persona in their daytime lives, although some were dysfunctional, such as being alcoholics. The dissociation that drives the Illuminists is their greatest cover for being undetected at this time. Many, if not most, of these people are completely unaware of the great evil that they are involved in, during the night.

There are other groups which are not actually part of the Illuminati, but the Illuminati are aware of them. The Illuminati are not the only group that follows esoteric practices, or worships ancient deities or demons. They encourage divisiveness between different groups (divide and conquer is one of their ruling principles), and are not concerned about other groups. Instead, they will often welcome them into their umbrella, if possible. This has been happening more and more in recent years, as the Illuminati trade teaching their training principles, which are considered the best by most secretive groups, in exchange for loyalty to the Illuminati. They will send their trainers to these groups, and the trainers will

report to the local regional council.

In the political arena , the Illuminists will fund both sides of a race, because their greatest maxim is that "out of chaos comes order", or the discipline of anarchy. That is why they sent arms to, and funded, both sides of both the great World Wars in this century. They believe that history is a game, like chess; that only out of strategy, fighting, conflict, and testing can the strong emerge. I no longer agree with this philosophy, but at one time, I did, with all my heart. Hopefully, as these people and their agenda are exposed the common man will rise up against this intended rule to be foisted upon an unsuspecting mankind.

top

Chapter Four
How the Illuminati Program People:
An Overview of Some Basic Types of Programming

In the first few chapters, I defined Illuminism, its reach, and some of the philosophy, money making enterprises, and agendas that help explain WHY they program people. I believe that these are important to understand, as a preface to the next few chapters. Why? The programming techniques that I will describe take an incredible amount of effort, time, dedication, and planning on the part of the cult to place in the individual. Only a very motivated group of people would spend the time it takes to do this. These chapters are very hard for me to write, as an individual, since my role in the cult was that of a programmer. So, the very techniques you will be reading about were often those that I used to place programming in individuals that I worked with. I no longer do these things, nor do I espouse doing them; the reason I am writing this book is that I believe that therapists who work with DID, as well as survivors, deserve to know WHAT is done to people, HOW it is done, as well as be given some ideas on how to undo the programming that the cult places in people.

First, I would like to address unintentional programming versus intentional programming. This is also known as the environmental milieu the child is raised in. The programming of a generational Illuminati infant often begins before its birth (this will be addressed later) but once it is born, the very environment the infant is raised in becomes a form of programming. Often, the infant is raised in a family environment that combines daytime abandonment with dysfunction in the parental figures. The infant soon learns that the nighttime, and cult activities, are the truly important ones. The infant may be deprived of attention, or even abused, in the daytime; and is only treated as special, or "seen" by the parent, in the cult setting. This can lead to very young alters around the core or core splits, who feel "invisible", abandoned, rejected, unworthy of love or attention, or that they don't even exist, unless they are doing a job for their "family".

Another milieu and conditioning process the infant must face is that the adults around him/her are

INCONSISTENT, since the adults in a generational cult family are almost always also multiple, or DID. This sets up a reality for the infant/toddler that the parents act one way at home; an entirely different way at cult gatherings; and yet a different way in normal society.

Since these are the infant's earliest experiences of adults and adult behaviors, it has no choice but to accept this reality that human beings act in shockingly different ways in different settings. While unintentional, this sets the infant up for later dissociation, in mimicry of the adults around it.

INTENTIONAL PROGRAMMING

Intentional programming of an infant in the Illuminati often begins before birth. Prenatal splitting is well known in the cult, as the fetus is very capable of fragmenting in the womb due to trauma. This is usually done between the seventh and ninth month of pregnancy. Techniques used include: placing headphones on the mother's abdomen, and playing loud, discordant music (such as some modern classical pieces, or even Wagner's operas). Loud, heavy rock has also been used. Other methods include having the mother ingest quantities of bitter substances, to make the amniotic fluid bitter, or yelling at the fetus inside the womb. The mother's abdomen may be hit as well. Mild shock to the abdomen may be applied, especially when term is near, and may be used to cause premature labor, or ensure that the infant is born on a ceremonial holiday. Certain labor inducing drugs may be also given if a certain birth date is desired.

Once the infant is born, testing is begun at a very early age, usually during the first few weeks of life. The trainers, who are taught to look for certain qualities in the infant, will place it on a velvet cloth on a table, and check its reflexes to different stimuli. The infant's strength, how it reacts to heat, cold, and pain are all tested. Different infants react differently, and the trainers are looking for dissociative ability, quick reflexes, and reaction times. They are also encouraging early dissociation in the infant with these tests.

The infant will also be abused, to create fragments. Methods of abuse can include: rectal probes; digital anal rape; electric shocks at low levels to the fingers, toes, and genitalia; cutting the genitalia in ritual circumstances (in older infants). The intent is to begin fragmentation before a true ego state develops, and customize the infant to pain and reflexive dissociation from pain (yes, even tiny infants dissociate; I have seen it time and time again; they will glow blank and limp, or glassy, in the face of continued trauma.)

Isolation and abandonment programming will sometimes be begun as well, in a rudimentary sense. The infant is abandoned, or uncared for by adults, intentionally during the daytime, then picked up, soothed, cleaned up and paid attention to in the context of preparing for a ritual or group gathering. This is done in order to help the infant associate night gatherings with "love" and attention, and to help the bonding process to the cult, or "family". The infant will be taught to associate maternal attention with going to rituals, and eventually will associate cult gatherings with feelings of security.

As the infant grows older, i.e. at 15 to 18 months, more fragmenting is intentionally done by having the

parents as well as cult members abuse the infant more methodically. This is done by intermittently soothing, bonding with the infant, then shocking it on its digits; the infant may be dropped from heights to a mat or mattress and laughed at as it lays there startled and terrified, crying. It may be placed in cages for periods of time, or exposed to short periods of isolation. Deprivation of food, water, and basic needs may begin later in this stage. All of these methods are done in order to create intentional dissociation in the infant. The infant of this age may be taken to group meetings, but outside of special occasions, or dedications, will have no active role yet in the cult setting. The small infants are usually left with a cult member, or caretaker, who watches them during the group's activities; this caretaker role is usually rotated among lower level or teenage members.

Between the ages of 20 and 24 months, the toddler may begin the "steps of discipline" which the Illuminati use to teach their children. The age the child begins them will vary, depending upon the group, the parent, the trainer, and the child. These "steps of discipline" would be better called "steps of torment and abuse" as their purpose is to create a highly dissociative child, out of touch with their feelings, who is completely and unthinkingly loyal to the cult. The order of the steps may also be varied a little, depending on the whims of the trainer or parents.

I will first discuss the first five steps of discipline: (note: these steps may vary somewhat from region to region, but most follow this outline at least roughly, even if not in the same order)

First step: to not need

The small toddler/child is placed in a room without any sensory stimulus, usually a training room with gray, white, or beige walls. The adult leaves and the child is left alone, for periods of time: these may vary from hours, to an entire day as the child grows older. If the child begs the adult to stay, and not leave, or screams, the child is beaten, and told that the periods of isolation will increase until they learn to stop being weak. The ostensible purpose of this discipline is to teach the child to rely on its own internal resources, and not on outside people ("strengthen it"). What it actually does is create a huge terror of abandonment within the child. When the adult, or trainer, returns to the room, the child is often found rocking itself, or hugging itself in a corner, occasionally almost catatonic from fear. The trainer will then "rescue" the child, feed and give it something to drink and bond with the child as their "savior". The trainer will tell them the "family" told the trainer to rescue the child, because its family "loves" it. The trainer will instill cult teachings, at this point, into the helpless, fearful, and almost insanely grateful child who has just been "rescued" from isolation. The trainer will reinforce in the child over and over how much it "needs " its family, who just rescued it from death by starvation or abandonment. This will teach the very young toddler to associate comfort and security with bonding with its trainer, who may be one of its parents, and being with "family" members. The cult is very aware of child developmental principles, and has developed exercises like the above after hundreds of years of teaching very young children.

Second step: to not want

This step is very similar to the first step, and actually reinforces it. It will be done intermittently with the first step over the next few years of the child's life. Again, the child is left alone in a training room, or isolated room, without food or water for a long period of time. An adult will enter the room, with a large pitcher of ice water, or food. If the child asks for either, as the adult is eating or drinking in front of the child, he/she is severely punished for being weak and needy. This step is reinforced, until the child learns not to ask for food or water unless it is offered first. The ostensible reason the cult gives for this step is that it creates a child who is strong, and can go without food and water for longer and longer periods of time. The real reason this is done is that it creates a child who is completely dissociated from its own needs for food, water, or other comforts, who becomes afraid to ask outside adults for help. This creates in the child a hyper-vigilance as she/he learns to look for outside adults for cues on when it is okay to fulfill needs, and not to trust her/his own body signals. The child is already learning to look outside itself to others to learn how it should think or feel, instead of trusting its own feelings. The cult now becomes the locus of control for the child.

Third step: to not wish

The child is placed in a room with favorite toys, or objects. A kind adult comes into the room and engages the child in play. This adult my be a friend, aunt, parent, or trainer. The child and adult may engage in fantasy play about the child's secret wishes, dreams, or wants. This will occur on several occasions, and the child's trust is slowly gained. At some later point, the child is severely punished for any aspect of wishing or fantasy shared with the adult, including the destruction of favorite toys, going in and undoing or destroying secret safe places the child may have created, or even destroying non cult protectors. This step is repeated, with variations, many times over the ensuing years. Occasionally, the child's siblings, parents, or friends will be used to reveal inside fantasies the child has revealed to them during the daytime, or in unguarded moments. The ostensible reason the cult gives for this step is to create a child who doesn't fantasize, who is more outwardly directed, less inwardly directed. In other words, the child is to look to adults for permission in all aspects of its life, including internal. The reality is that this step destroys all safe places the child has created internally, to retreat from the horrors it is experiencing. This step creates in the child the feeling that there is no true safety, that the cult will find out everything it thinks. Exercises like this are also used to create young alters in the child who will self report to the cult trainers any secret safe places, or covert wishes against the cult, that other alters have. This will then begin to set up intersystem hostility and divisiveness, which the cult will manipulate throughout the
person's life span in order to control them.

Fourth step: the survival of the fittest

This step is used in order to begin creating perpetrator alters in the young child. ALL CULT MEMBERS WILL BE EXPECTED TO BECOME PERPETRATORS; THIS BEGINS IN EARLY CHILDHOOD. The child is brought into a room where there is a trainer and another child of approximately the same age, or slightly younger, that the child being taught. The child is severely beaten, for a long period of time, by the trainer, then told to hit the other child in the room, or they will be beaten further. If the child refuses, it is punished severely, the other child is punished as well, then the child is told to punish the

other child. If the child continues to refuse, or cries, or tries to hit the trainer instead, they will continue to be beaten severely, and told to hit the other child, to direct its anger at the other child. This step is repeated until the child finally complies. This step is begun around age 2 to 2 1/2, and is used to create aggressive perpetrator alters in the young child. As the child becomes older, the punishing tasks become more and more brutal. Children are expected to become perpetrators of others at very young ages, and will "practice" on children younger than themselves, with the encouragement and rewarding by the adults around them. They will also be mimicking these adults, who role model perpetration constantly as normal. The child will be taught that this is the acceptable outlet for the aggressive impulses and rage that are created by the brutality the child is constantly being exposed to.

Fifth step: the code of silence

Many, many different stratagems are used to put this in, starting at around the age of two years old, when a child starts becoming more verbal. Usually, after a ritual or group gathering, the child is asked about what they saw, or heard, during the meeting. Like most obedient young children, they will comply. They are immediately severely beaten, or tortured, and a new alter is created, who is told to keep or guard the memories of what was seen, on pain of their life. The new part always agrees. The child and this new part are put through a ceremony of swearing to never ever tell; and alters are created whose job it is to kill the body, if the other parts ever remember.

The child is also put through severe psychological torture to ensure that it will never be tempted to tell, including: being buried alive; near drowning; watching "traitor's deaths" involving slow painful torture, such as being burned, or skinned alive; being buried with a partially rotted corpse and being told that they will become a corpse like it if they ever tell, etc. The scenarios go on and on, invented by people with endlessly cruel imaginations, in order to ensure the secrecy of the young child. These methods have been perfected over hundreds of years of practice by the cult with its children. The reason these things are done is self evident: the cult is involved in criminal activities, as explained in the first few chapters of this book, and they want to ensure the continued silence of its children. This is one reason why the cult has survived so long, and with its continued shroud of secrecy; why more survivors are afraid/ unwilling to disclose their abuse. In order to reveal cult secrets, a child must go against some of the most tremendously horrendous psychological trauma and abuse imaginable; even as an adult, the survivor has difficulty putting these things aside, when discussing their abuse. Children and adults alike are told that if they ever tell, they will be hunted down and shot (the assassin training lets the child know that this is no idle threat); that they will be tortured slowly. The child will be exposed to setups and role plays throughout their growing up that reinforces this step.

SUGGESTIONS THAT MAY HELP

I believe in also offering some ideas on how to undo some of the above mentioned programming, as I do not believe in knowledge, only for knowledge's sake. The survivor often needs tools, in order to try and undo some of the horrendous abuse that the cult places him/her through, especially as memories of these things occur. THESE ARE JUST MEANT AS HELPFUL HINTS AND DO NOT REPLACE THE

ADVICE OF A GOOD THERAPIST.

1. Early milieu programming:
This is difficult to undo, since it hits on core abandonment issues, and rejection, for the survivor. This will often have been the survivor's very first, earliest experiences as an infant, involving its relationship with its parents and primary family members. Working on this requires the whole hearted effort of all alter systems inside, to join in nurturing the core splits who experienced severe parental rejection, and the cognitive recognition that the DAYTIME was important, too; that the adults around the infant were the unhealthy ones. The infant's often feel unlovable, overly needy, depressed; but nurturing alters inside can help comfort them, and share the reality that the infant really was loveable, no matter what the outside adults around it were like. Here, too, an outside supportive therapist, and a strong, nurturing faith system, can help tremendously in the healing process, as new messages are brought in to the abandoned, wounded parts. Sorting through what happened, grieving over the real issues of abandonment, and bringing reality to very young, deeply wounded parts will take time.

2. Early intentional fragmentation: (ages 0 to 24 months)
Usually there are cognitive parts of the survivor inside, who have never ever forgotten the abuse, and can help share the cognitive reality of the abuse with the amnesic alters. This should be done extremely slowly, since this first abuse was done quite early in life. Creating an internal nursery, with safe toys, objects, can help. Older nurturing adult alters inside can help hold and care for the wounded infants inside the nursery, while acknowledging and grieving over the abuse which occurred. It is important to believe an validate the young parts when they come forward to share. Allowing them nonverbal ways of expressing themselves can help, as these are quite young parts, who often cannot talk yet. Having older children inside who are close to the infants verbalize their wants, needs, and fears can also help, as often the youngest parts inside do not trust ANY adults, even internal ones. A strong ,caring outside therapist is also important to healing, by modeling healthy nurturing to a system that may have no concept of this, while balancing the need of the infant for outside nurture with the need for the internal system(s) to learn their own self nurture techniques. Internal helpers can reach the infants, ground them, share present reality (that the body is older, the infants are safe, etc. These helpers may be internal older children, as mentioned before). The survivor may also want to find support adults when possible, who can help with modeling healthy caring with good boundaries.

A THERAPIST OR FRIEND CANNOT RE-PARENT THE SURVIVOR. The survivor will long for this, but realistically, the survivor has one set of parents, good or bad, or sadly, even terrible. No outside person can come in and redo the complete re-parenting of another. What the therapist and support person can offer will be caring, empathy, listening, while the survivor grieves over the loss of adequate nurture. They can offer friendship or empathy with good boundaries. They cannot become the survivor's parents, or therapy will not progress. Instead, enmeshment will begin.

3.The First Five Steps of Discipline (there are twelve total; others will be addressed in later chapters)
Try to find the parts that experienced the abuse. This may mean doing system mapping (drawing pictures of what things look like inside), and going to the cognitives (intellectuals) or controllers (head

honchos inside) for information. An internal helper, or recorder, may also be extremely helpful in doing this.

Allow these parts to slowly acknowledge the agony that they experienced during their deprivation: heat (being held over a fire, or stove); cold (such as being placed in freezers, or ice, for example), lack of food, etc. Encourage the sharing of the cognitive portion of the memories first, while allowing amnesic alters to grieve over "hearing about" these things. Allow them time to absorb hearing about these traumas, as they occurred over several years during early childhood, and will take time to assimilate. Healing can't be rushed. Allow feeling alters later to step forward, and share their feelings, while more cognitive or helper parts are inside holding their hands, grounding them to the here and now throughout the process of remembering Be prepared for floods of emotion at times, as well as body memories, as the abuse is recalled. A group of inside people can be designated as a "grounding team" to help ground these parts as they step forward and share their memories.

Remembering safely assumes that the person has a qualified therapist, and also has laid the groundwork for good intrasystem cooperation, as discussed above. Memory work should not be done until there is good communication and cooperation inside, or the person will be overwhelmed by the memories as they come out. They will be flooded and re-traumatized instead of helped, and may de-compensate. With good communication, memories can be brought out a little at a time, in manageable pieces, while cognitive alters continually help keep the survivor from going completely into the memory, and they can also help ground the more wounded parts.

The cult will put people through certain types of programming in order to achieve a specific goal: separating the intellect, or cognition, form the feelings in a person. Cognitive alters in these systems are always considered "higher" than the feeling alters; cognitive alters are taught to "pass down" their feelings to the "lower" feeling alters. While these labels are untrue, the cognitive alters will fear feeling the intense, overwhelming emotions that caused them to split further and further from the more limbic, or feeling alters internally. This will drive continued system divisiveness in the survivor. It is important that cognitive parts realize that the feeling alters are part of them; that they can practice sharing their feelings in SMALL steps without needing to be flooded, or overwhelmed.

A reminder: EXTERNAL SAFETY IS PARAMOUNT TO UNDOING INSIDE PROGRAMMING. You HAVE to be able to promise these parts external safety, and deliver on this promise, or they will understandably balk at working inside on undoing programming. Why should they try and change, only to go back and be punished again? No system will undo its own protective dissociation, if the abuse is ongoing, or it will continue to destabilize and re-dissociate over and over. This is because dismantling the dissociation would mean dismantling its own survival and protection. Stopping contact with perpetrators and having a safe therapist are the very first steps to take, before attempting to undo internal programming. A system can still work on stopping cult contact, and begin healing , while being accessed, but it will slow therapy down tremendously as the internal energy will be diverted to staying safe rather than undoing trauma. A person can heal, and most survivors are still in cult contact when they enter therapy. BUT the progress will go much more quickly once cult contact is broken. (see chapter on preventing accessing of the survivor)

top

Chapter Five
Colors, Metals and Jewel Programming

Color coding (To see more about color go here)
One form of programming that is quite common in the Illuminati is color programming. Why is it done? The answer is that trainers are human, and also quite lazy. Color programming is a simple way to organize systems, and allows the trainer to call up alters easily within a system. With the thousands of fragments that many multiples in the cult have, colors is a way of organizing them into an easily accessible group.

Also, young children recognize colors before they can read, so this training can occur quite early. It is begun at about age two in most children.

How it is done: The child is taken into a room with either white, beige, or colored walls. If the room is a neutral color, the lights in the room will be changed, so they color the room with the light's color. If "blue" is the color being imprinted, or put in, the trainer will call up a young child alter, either a controller or core split for a system. They will tell the child that they will learn how to become blue, and what blue means. The room will be bathed in blue light, as mentioned, or has been painted blue for use in this kind of programming. The trainer will be dressed in blue clothing, and may even have a blue mask on. Blue objects will be placed around the room. The alter inside the child is called up, drugged, hypnotized, and traumatized on the table. As they are awakening from the trauma, still in trance, they are told that blue is good, and that they are blue. That blue is important. That blue will protect them from harm. That blue people don't get hurt. This will go on for awhile.

They then ask the child if they want to be "blue", like the trainers. If the child says yes, they will continue on. If the child says no, it will be re-traumatized until it says yes. The child is often naked, and told it cannot wear clothing until it "earns" the right to wear beautiful blue clothing. Over and over the "safety of being blue" (ie freedom from harm) and danger of not having a color is emphasized. The children really wants to be blue after a while of going through this. They may be given blue candy as a reward for choosing to become the color. They may be given blue sunglasses or tinted lenses to wear. They are allowed to wear blue robes once they identify with the color chosen for them.

Once the child completely identifies with the color (or rather, the main alter or template for the system accepts this color), then they are taught in progressive stages, over many training sessions, what the color blue means. They are in set ups, or dramas with other blue children, where they act out the role of a "blue". They are drugged, hypnotized, traumatized, while the meaning of blue is ground in over and over. They are forced to act in "blue" ways. Different trainers and regions will assign different meanings

to different colors. Many military systems are coded blue, or protective. The military alters all are called up periodically to reinforce blue training. If the trainer at a later date wants to access a blue system, they may call them up by color, or wear a piece of clothing or a scarf in the color they want to reach.

This becomes an unconscious trigger for this color to come forward. Color coding is one of the first methods that is inlayed over systems. An entire system may be color coded one color; or two or more colors may be coded in , with each system controller (most systems have three) being given a different color over its part of the system.

Metals programming:

Metals programming is a type of programming that many Illuminati children are given. Because it is so similar to jewels programming, I will discuss how it is done under jewels. Metals can be from bronze (lowest) to platinum (highest).

Jewels programming:

Many Illuminati children will go through either metals or jewels programming, and occasionally will go through both. Jewels is considered higher than metals, and more difficult to obtain. Which is put in and when, is dependent on the child's status, its parents status, the region it is born in, the group it is born into, and the trainers that work with it.

Basically, either metals or jewels is a form of reward based programming.

Here is how it works:
The child is shown a piece of jewelry such as a ring, or else a large example of the jewel (or metal) being put in. They are asked: "isn't this Amethyst, or Ruby, Emerald, Diamond) beautiful?" The child will be eager to look at it, touch it, and is encouraged to by a trainer with a soft kind voice. The trainer will ask the child, "wouldn't you like to be beautiful, like this jewel? (or metal jewelry)". The child is usually eager to be. Here is a sparkling gemstone, placed in their small hands (the training often begins between age two and three). Of course they want to be beautiful, sparkly, valued. The trainer will extol the beauty of the gem (or metal), will tell the child how special, valued, wanted gems are, and basically build up the idea of becoming like a jewel.

The child is then told that in order to become a jewel, they must "earn the right". This involves:
a.) passing through steps of discipline (see chapter three)
b.) passing "special tests"
c.) being rewarded for special achievement

Becoming a jewel (or precious metal) is dangled before the small child, like a carrot, as the reward for doing well in training sessions. The earning of one is linked to going through the rungs of the long, arduous training process expected of Illuminati children; having a jewel or metal involves stepping up in

status and being praised. But the price is enduring hours of abuse called "training" but in reality is organized, systemic abuse to make the child do what the trainer wants them to become.

Over time, with the help of drugs, hypnosis, shock, and other trauma, as the child goes through it's training process, it will begin earning its jewels and/or metals, one by one. These will become full alters inside.

Amethyst is usually the first one earned, and is linked to keeping secrets, never telling, and passing the first step of discipline. Each step is linked to receiving either a jewel or precious metal.

Ruby will often be next, and is linked to sexual abuse and sexual alters inside. As the child is repeatedly sexually traumatized and survives, or creates sexual alters to please adults, they are "rewarded" by being allowed to become a ruby.

Emerald will often come later (ages 12 to 15). This is considered very precious, and is linked to family loyalty, witchcraft, and spiritual achievement. Emeralds will often have a black cat, or "familiar" linked to them.

Diamond is the highest gemstone, and not all children will earn it. It is considered a high achievement. and may not be earned until adulthood, after passing rigorous tasks. It will be the controlling alter in a gemstone system. A diamond has passed all twelve steps of discipline, plus passed unusual tests and will have highest family loyalty.

"Family jewels" are often passed down internally during training sessions with trainers and family members. All high Illuminati families will have jewels hidden in secret vaults (real, outside jewels) which have been passed down for generations.

The children will often be given jewelry to wear in the daytime, as a reminder or reward, once they pass their programming. A child may be given a ruby ring or garnet pin to wear; in fact, a grandparent or parent may insist the child wear it. On ritual occasions, the child will be allowed to wear jewelry from the family's vault, once they reach a certain status. They may be allowed to wear a ruby pendant or emerald bracelet during high rituals, and will be quite proud of the fact, since the cult is first, foremost and always an extremely status conscious group. The children pick up on this, and the adults will make a big fuss over the children who have earned the right to wear jewels. This gives them a huge incentive to earn them.

Suggestions that may help with these forms of programming :

Color programming: it is important to have good internal communication with both internal alters and an outside therapist while working on color programming. If an individual finds that certain parts believe that they are a certain color, or if this comes up in therapy, they will want to find out if possible how they came to have this belief system. Slowly discovering how the colors were put in will help. Grieving

for the vast amount of deception, the amount of abuse heaped on the child, and the very young alters who were the original templates may occur. These parts may be barely verbal, and may want to draw their experiences, or use colors in collages (with the help of older parts inside), to describe to a safe outside person what their reality has been. Validating to them that they are NOT just a color, that they are part of a whole person, may help. The survivor may see colored overlays for awhile, as they are undoing this programming, as parts inside share their memories. This is normal, although it may feel uncomfortable to see objects as yellow or green, for example. Grounding oneself, having cognitives do reality orientation, and patience will help the survivor work through this time.

Jewel programming and metals may be more complex, since the child's sense of special ness, pride and status may be bound up in these alters. Rubies, emeralds and diamonds are considered "high alters" inside and are used to leadership roles, both internally and externally. Acknowledging their importance to the system; listening to them grieve at leaving the cult, which meant giving up their status externally, and giving them new positions inside that are important can help. They can become system leaders in helping the person stay safe, once they make the decision to leave the cult, and become strong allies. But they will often be among the most resistant, and even hostile, to the idea of leaving the cult at first, since they have only known and remembered being rewarded for jobs well done, and have learned to "pass down" the traumas to "lower parts" inside. They will often honestly not believe they have been abused, and will only remember being petted or allowed to lead, or being told they were special, valued. Listening to how they feel; acknowledging that leaving means giving up things that were important to them, finding out what needs motivated them, and trying to find healthy outlets for them to get their needs met outside of cult meetings will help. Letting a jewel have leadership within, or chair internal meetings may make up for loss of external leadership when the survivor leaves the cult.

Acknowledging their importance to the survivor is also important. Recognize that these parts are EXTREMELY dissociated from their own abuse/trauma, and are in no hurry to remember. But both the survivor and a good therapist can bring reality gently to them, as they let them know that they were abused; that they are actually part of the "lower emotional parts" who were abused, and will eventually need to acknowledge this. This task takes time and good outside support to accomplish. Allow them to vent their feelings. They will often be highly cognitive at first, but feelings will come, especially grieving, then pain at having been deceived by the cult, then the anguish of realizing that the abuse they passed down to others inside was actually happening to them. They may become quite depressed at this stage, but will also lend tremendous stability and strength to the system, in staying safe and cult free, once they have reached this stage.

These are some thoughts on color, metals, and jewel programming. Other types of programming will be addressed in the next chapter.

top

Chapter Six
Brain Wave Programming

In this chapter I will address brain wave programming. Brain wave programming, like any other programming, will depend on several factors.

These include: the child's ability to dissociate; the region of the country or which country the child grows up in; the level of ability of the trainers the child has contact with; physical resources and equipment available. There is no one "recipe" that fits every person and it would be ridiculous to state that all people who go through brain wave programming have it done the same way. More and more, programmers are talking, sharing knowledge over the net, both nationally and internationally, and sharing both successes and failures. But there is no one standardized methodology for brain wave programming. It will often be influenced by the child herself, as well as the trainer's whims. Different groups may organize the systems differently, or try to achieve different effects.

All of this said, what is brain wave programming? Simply put, brain wave programming involves having a young child go into a deep trance state, where they then learn to dissociate into a certain brain wave pattern. This is a complex skill, and not all children can achieve this. The goal is for the child to reach, for example, a consistent delta state, where delta brain waves show up on the EEG, which is attached to the child's head by electrodes in the scalp. Usually, two or even three trainers will work on one child during the initial stages. One will "prep" the child, using a hypnotic drug to induce a trance state. They will have also placed the electrodes on the head, using an abbreviated version of the method used in traditional hospital setting. If delta state is being induced, only the electrodes needed to pick up delta waves will be placed, for example. This is to save time.

The prepped child will be on a "trainer's table", and will be quite relaxed. The average child is about eight years old when this is begun, since the cerebral cortex and neurological development are not advanced enough at earlier ages (It has been tried at earlier ages, quite unsuccessfully, in the past; this practice was dropped because of the neurological damage and "failure to take rate" that trainers were seeing). The non prepping trainer will then let the child know exactly what he/she expects: that they will achieve a special state, called "delta state". The trainer tells the child, while they are in trance state, that they will know when they reach it, by the readings from the electrodes.

The trainer will tell the child alter, who has been called up to be a "template", or building block for the new system, that delta is good. They will emphasize this over and over. The child will then be shocked to increase its receptivity to learning. This also arouses the child from its drugged state and it will be more alert. It will want to please the trainer. The trainer will tell the child that she/he wants it to perform certain mental exercises. It will then give it backwards counting exercises, used to help the child achieve deeper trance states. Other verbal cues to trance down may be given. When the prepping or technical trainer sees delta waveforms, he or she will signal the verbal trainer with a hand motion. The verbal, or teaching trainer will immediately reward the child, saying, "good, you are in delta now." The trainer will caress the child, tell it what a good job it is doing. If the child bounces out of delta state, the verbal

trainer will immediately become harsh, and will shock the child as punishment. The child is told that it left delta (which is "good") and needs to go back in.

The induction, counting, will be repeated until delta state is seen again, when the child is repeatedly rewarded for entering, then staying in this state for longer and longer periods. The trainers are using biofeedback principles to teach the child to consistently cue into a brainwave pattern. When the template can stay in delta pattern consistently, the template will be rewarded. This will occur over several months.

The trainers will now have a template that stays always in delta state, that they can begin splitting and using as the basis of forming a new system inside. They will do this using the tools of drugs, hypnosis and trauma. The new system created will record delta waves on an EEG if done correctly. The new system will be taught what delta means. The trainers will often flash a cue, or delta (triangle) symbol on a projector overhead, and "grind in" the delta imprinting. They will wear robes with delta signs on them, and cloth the subject in clothing or robes imprinted with the delta sign. They will teach the alters under hypnosis what deltas do, how they act. They will reward them when they comply, and shock or otherwise traumatize them if they do not act like "deltas". They will be given delta jobs. They will watch high frequency films, that show delta functions. They may build in a computer like structure to hold the system, showing pictures of its organization while the subject is under deep trance, after creating a clean slate through trauma.

These are some examples of how delta programming may be induced.

Other brain wave states will be induced in similar manners. They will often be formed from templates which are extremely young internal child alters who may be splits from core splits, as the basis for the programming. Common brain wave states used are:

Alpha: this is the most easily reached brain wave state, and also includes both the youngest and most easily accessed alters in the entire system. Young children have long periods of alpha activity and must be trained to enter other brain wave states for long periods. System access programming; access codes and sexual alters will often be placed in alpha, which may also be coded red in some systems.

Beta: this is the next most easily reached state, and is often associated with aggressive impulses. Beta state will often hold cult protectors, internal warriors, and military systems. They may be color coded blue.

Gamma: this will often hold extremely cult loyal alters, and holds more emotion than the other states, except for alpha. Suicide programming will often be layered into this system, as these alters would rather die than leave their "family". Scholarship programming may be held by this system, since they easily memorize by rote. Several languages may be spoken by different alters in this system, as the Illuminati like to program in plural linguality, with up to eight languages, both modern and ancient being spoken.

Delta: this is one of the more cognitive brain wave states, and will often be highly dissociated. It may also be the "ruling" or controlling state over the other brain wave systems. Often, delta state may be configured inside as a computer, and the delta alters will have emotionless, flat alters with photographic memories. They may hold most of the cognitive memories for the other systems, especially if extensive amnesia programming has been done. Delta state may have up to three levels of training: delta 1, delta 2, and delta 3 which will also correlate to security access allowed within the cult; i.e. access to highly confidential information. Behavioral sciences programming may be held by this system. Internal programmers, self destruct, psychotic, and shatter programming as well as other punishment programming sequences to prevent outside access or internal access to the systems may be held within delta systems. It may be color coded both orange/blue/purple, and will also often be the entry way to higher systems such as jewels or internal councils, inside.

Epsilon: this is often a "hidden system" and may hold CIA programming and high level governmental programming . Assassin programming may be held in this system, or in the beta system, depending on the trainer. Covert operations, courier operations, learning to tail a subject, or "drop a tag", disguises, getting out of difficult situations, may be handled by this system, which sees itself as chameleon-like. It may be color coded brown.

Phi/Theta/Omega programming: this represents negative spiritual programming. These are the "dark" ritual alters, who participate in blood rituals, sacrifices, and ceremonies. Internal witches, warlocks, seers, psychics, readers, and occult practitioners will be placed in this system, which has highly developed right brain and deep trance abilities. They will often be color coded black.

This is an overview of some of the more common brain wave systems. It is often placed in over a matter of years, from ages 8 to 21 being the primary ones, with occasional reinforcement of the programming from time to time.

Suggestions:

Brain wave programming is a very complex form of programming which creates automatic amnesia and communication barriers between the different brain wave states. This will also be reinforced by shock and punishment to prevent its "degradation", or undoing. Internal system controllers and programmers will also work to reinforce the programming, especially at night, when the person is asleep (physically).

All brain wave systems will have system controllers, usually set up in a group of three (the Illuminati love triads, as being the "mystical" and most stable number. They believe that systems built upon triads are extremely strong, unbreakable, and will often program in threes: three back ups, three system controllers, etc.) With the help of a good therapist, the survivor needs to get to know the internal system controllers and communicators. They are there, they have to be, because the trainers placed them there to communicate with and be accountable to them externally, and will often have complete knowledge of their own system. They will also be quite flat, and dissociated from the knowledge of their own pain or the abuse that created them. This is a distancing mechanism, and the person's survival depended on the

ability of their controller to do this at one time. They will often be quite hostile, and very unwilling to look at their own abuse; they will become indignant at the idea, and claim that they are cognitive, and "above" being abused (another lie they were told by their abusers).

Time, patience, and finding out what their needs are; listening to them vent their frustration; pointing out reality (ie, the controllers, and all parts are related to each other; are part of the same person; and ALL were abused even though they were able to dissociate from their pain), and trying to help them meet their needs for recognition, acceptance, and approval will begin to allow them to question their previous loyalty. These systems are often driven by fear: fear of punishment; fear of remembering (they were often the most tortured systems in the survivor, and were promised amnesia in return for continued cooperation). Their fears are real, and should be listened to and respected, as shatter programming and flood programming are real threats to the survivor, and can cause functionality to go down.

Flood programming is a sequence put in place to punish a system if its internal programming is allowed to degrade or access to an unauthorized person, either internally or externally, is allowed. It will involve the fragments who hold highly traumatic memories, both emotional and physical, being pushed to the front where the person is "flooded" with wave after wave of memories. If this is triggered, and it frequently is if the survivor is in therapy, the first priority should be slowing the memories down. This may mean trying to reason with internal controllers or deltas who are allowing the flooding; they need to know that if the front, or previously amnesic alters down, or are re-shattered due to traumatization, it will weaken all the systems.

Bargain with them. Prayer will help in this situation. Physical safety, including inpatient therapy, may be needed if flooding or shatter programming are activated. Suicide programming is often layered in with both types, and external physical safety will be paramount for the survivor, with lots of outside accountability as they undo these intense programming sequences. Frequent reality orientation; explaining new, better jobs can help. Undoing brain wave programming should ideally only be done with lots of safe external support, which may include extra therapy sessions; hospitalization if programming that could cause loss of functionality or suicide are triggered; and should be geared towards increasing internal communication and cooperation. Alters jobs can be changed, from internal programmers to internal Deprogrammers; internal shatterers or punishers to internal protectors; internal reporters who report back to the cult can instead be asked to report internally on what the body is doing, and to keep it safe.

These are examples of possible changes. Make friends with system controllers, as they can become strong helpers and will work with the therapist to keep things safe for the survivor.

top

Chapter Seven

Military Programming

I want to devote an entire chapter to military programming, and how it is done. Why? As noted in chapter three, the Illuminati are emphasizing the importance of military training more and more, as part of their plan for eventual takeover. All children in the current generation are undergoing some form of military training as part of this plan.

Military training is begun quite young. It is often started by three years of age with simple exercises. The children are taken by their parents to a training area, which may be a large inside auditorium, or a remote area outside where training maneuvers are done. Tents are set up, with command centers for the different commanding officers and military trainers.

The children are taught to march in time, keeping a straight line. They are punished by being kicked, shocked with a cattle prod, or beaten with a baton if they move out of place. They will be dressed in small uniforms in imitation of the adults.

The adults will have ranks, badges and insignia indicating their level of achievement in the cult hierarchy and military. Badges and medals are given out to indicate the person's level of training and tests passed. Commanding officers are often brutal and will teach even the youngest children with harsh measures.

The children will be forced to march long distances, which increase as they get older, in any weather. They are forced to learn to cross obstacles. They will be given "fake" guns, with blanks, when they are young. These guns are perfect replicas of real guns, but fire blanks. The children are taught to load and fire all manner of firearms, both real and fake, under close adult supervision. They will spend hours learning to aim, sight, and fire these guns at targets. At first the targets are bulls eyes, but as the children get older the targets will be similar to police cut outs of humans. The children are taught to aim for the head or the heart. Later, they will graduate to realistic manikins. This is conditioning them to kill a human being.

They will be shown violent films of warfare, much more explicit and graphic than normal movies in group classes. Killing techniques will be shown in slow motion. The motif "kill or be killed" will be ground in over and over. The trainer will ask the children what mistakes the people who were killed made. Being killed is considered weakness; being a killer is considered strength.

The children will be forced, by age seven or eight, to crawl on their bellies with simulated blanks firing overhead. They are not told these are blanks and they are extremely painful if the child is hit in the back or buttocks. They quickly learn to keep down under fire. Battle conditions will be simulated as the children go through years of "boot camp" training.

They will be rewarded with merit badges for doing well, such as completing an obstacle course, or staying cool under fire. In other words, the cult creates a microcosm of real military training for their

children and youth. Nazi concentration camps will be simulated, with guards and prisoners. The "guards" are usually older children or youth who have done well. The "prisoners" are younger children or those being punished for not performing well in maneuvers. There is intense pressure to want the guard role and not be a prisoner, since prisoners are locked up, beaten, kicked, and laughed at.

Hunting and tracking games where the prisoners are given a half hour lead are frequent. These may also involve the use of specially trained dogs taught to knock the quarry down but not kill them. Older children are taught to handle the dogs, and use them. Youth are taught to help the adults train the dogs.

Teens may be rewarded by becoming "youth leaders" who are allowed to plan the weeks activities. The military training will closely follow the principles of Nazi military and S.S. training. The trainers often speak in German to the children, who must learn the language. All C.O.s and high ranking adults speak in German during these exercises. They may also speak in French, since linguistic ability is encouraged in the Illuminati.

Exercises for older youth will include games where groups compete against each other, and the older teen leads, with the help of an adult advisor. Groups that win are rewarded, groups that lose are punished. The youth are taught to leave behind the weak, or slow members. Unfit members are shot or killed, and the youth leader learns to do these tasks. They are taught to bring their unit through simulated battles with other units, and cool, cognitive logic under these conditions is rewarded. The goal is to creative cognitive leaders inside the military systems, who are dissociated from emotions under the stress of battle conditions.

The youth and their followers are taught and trained in all manner of crowd control. They will see special films, that address all possible responses to a military takeover, and the crowds' response. These situations are then acted out during exercises, and the older Youth leaders and their units are expected to deal with the different responses. The "crowd" is coached by their trainers to act in different ways.

The ultimate goal of all of this is to create an organized army of children, youth, and adults, who will know exactly what to do during the coming takeover of the world. The training that I described is going on not only in the U.S., but in every country in the world. Top training centers are located in Germany, Belgium, France, and Russia. Military trainers are often sent to these countries, to learn new techniques, then sent back to their home countries.

What to do:
It is important to realize that military alters inside are extremely hierarchical. They will often be ranked inside, with lower "foot soldiers" accountable to inside alters with increasing rank. Usually, the higher the military rank, the higher the alter will be inside the system. A soldier with no rank may not have much knowledge about, or pull, inside the system. Its only job is to blindly obey others, after years of conditioning to do this.

Ranking officers inside will often be modeled after outside perpetrators, officers, or trainers. An internal

General will often have much more knowledge than lower ranks, and should be befriended, as they can help with therapy.

It will take time, effort, and patience for both the survivor and the therapist to get to know these military officers. They are often abrupt, arrogant, and extremely hostile to therapy. They are often strongly loyal to the cult and proud of their badges, awards, and achievements that were earned through years of traumatization and hard work. They will often be reluctant to give this up, for the perceived "loss" engendered by leaving the cult.

They will also have strong programming surrounding them, including "honor/dishonor" suicidal programming (the brave, honorable soldier will die rather than betray his group, etc.). It is important to deal with the suicidal programming and intense limbic conditioning that many of these alters have been subjected to, while at the same time reasoning with the higher ranking members.

They will have photographic memory and recall of all aspects of military history. Giving them safe, appropriate, physical outlets in the daytime can let them vent off steam. These are very physically conditioned alters, who enjoy running, walking, target practice with guns and knives. Letting them go hiking (with a safe support person), practice outdoor skills, can be helpful.

Acknowledging their importance to the survivor, and the trauma they underwent, respecting their loyalty, bravery, and appealing to their sense of honor to help the system stay safe (these alters often have a highly developed, although misguided, sense of honor) can help. Internal commendation for bravery, even an internal awards ceremony (they are used to this) for the parts that have decided to leave the cult, and protect the body, can be performed. They are used to praise and recognition for work well done, and need this motivation. They were used to getting this from the cult, but the survivor can turn the locus of control internally, instead of externally, to break bonds with the cult.

Military protectors can change their job to keeping the body safe, away from perpetrators. They can be a system's greatest asset, as they are great at "kicking butt", and are not easily frightened. They may be able to tell outside perpetrators to leave the survivor alone, and protect the survivor from outside accessing.

Allowing them to vent their feelings in therapy, in journaling, in pictures, and in collages can also help. Although higher ranking officers internally are often very dissociated from their feelings, they can begin to empathize with the others below them, who took their pain, and the brunt of the brutal, punitive experiences. They have to be willing to acknowledge that they were abused at some point, that they were deceived and used. Finding the youngest alters they were split from will help with this process. With time and good
internal communication, as well as patience from both the therapist and survivor, military alters can become one of the strongest assets and allies in staying cult free.

top

Chapter Eight
CIA , Governmental, and Scholarship programming.

Some systems will have internal CIA programming. Some of the methods mentioned in earlier chapters, such as brain wave programming and color coding were developed in part through funding by the CIA in the 1950's and 1960's. Military intelligence officers working in Langley, Virginia, used these government funds to conduct research on human subjects. They reported what they were learning to trainers throughout the U.S. and Europe.

CIA programming can include having alters in a system trained in different techniques of both finding a target, and studying the target without being detected. The end result of tagging the victim can include having a sexual assignation with the target, or may involve having people inside trained to assassinate a target.

These are complex programming sequences, and are put in over years of training, with periodic reinforcement. Alters may be trained to become hyper aware of their environment, and able to overhear conversations that are whispered. Internal recorders are taught to download these conversations, as well as other info. Photographic recall is emphasized, as the person will be hypnotized or put into a delta state for "downloading" information to the trainer or CIA operative.

The survivor with CIA programming will have been taught extensively how to "drop a tag" (detect anyone following them, and ditch them). This training will be begun in early childhood and built upon as the child grows older. They will often be taken into a neutral colored training room. They may be drugged, or hypnotized, usually a combination of both.

They will be shown training films of how a CIA operative works. They will be told that they are "special", "chosen", "one in a thousand" who is the only one who can do this special work. They are told that they get to be a secret agent for the CIA. The young child, having no idea who the CIA is, focuses on the fact that they have been chosen because they are special, needed, and will be eager to please. The child will be taken to a dinner party, or a drama set up by the trainer. There will be a group, anywhere from ten to sixteen people at the "party". Afterwards, the child will be questioned by the trainer extensively. Who was sitting where? What were they wearing? What color were their eyes? Their hair? Who gave the speech? What did they say? The child will be praised for correct answers, but punished, shocked if unable to recall details. This is to reinforce natural photographic memory, and assist the child with recording details. The next few times, the child's abilities will improve, as it wants to avoid punishment.

In the next level of training the child will be asked to observe, and figure out: who is the most important person in the room? Why? They will be taught body movements, and mannerisms, that give nonverbal clues away. The child may be taught to approach important adults, or an assigned target, first in role

play, later in real life, and engage them in innocuous conversation while looking for information they have been clued to get. They may be taught to be innocently seductive, and will be dressed for the part. They will frequently be taught to lure the target into having intercourse with them.

An older youth, or adult, will also be taught not only how to lure a target into bed, but later how to kill them, if they are an assassination target, while they are asleep or relaxing after sexual relations. They will be taught to go through the target's belongings for any information needed by the trainer or cult leader. Often, before an assignment for an assassination, the cult member will be indoctrinated with reasons why killing the victim is a service to humanity. They will be lied to and told that they are the head of a porno ring, a pedophile, or a brutal villain. This will engage the assassin's natural anger towards the person, and will motivate them, while helping to overcome their natural moral reluctance and guilt at killing a human being.

They will be taught how to disguise themselves, with change of clothing, sex (masquerading as the opposite sex), makeup, contact lenses, and get out of the situation safely. They will be taught how to overcome interrogation techniques with extensive training and hypnosis, in case they are ever caught. They will be taught to self suicide with a pill or dagger, if they are ever apprehended, in most cases.

Suggestions:

CIA programming will involve the use of sophisticated technology to reinforce its effectiveness, and can be difficult to break. It may involve the person being traumatized in isolation tanks (this will also be done with brain wave programming). It may involve sensory deprivation, sensory overload, isolation, sleep deprivation. It may involve hours of listening to repetitive tapes on headphones. The subject is shocked, or severely punished, if they try to remove the headphones. They will be hypnotized, tortured; subjected to different drug combinations; they will be exposed to harmonic tones, often in one ear or the other. They will be exposed to flashing strobe lights,
which may induce a seizure, and alters will be programmed to cause seizures if the subject tries to break programming. They will be shown high speed films with different tracks, one for the left eye and one for the right eye, to increase brain splitting or dichotomous thinking.

The survivor and therapist need to work slowly to undo the effects of this trauma. The person will need to come to terms, slowly, and carefully, with how the programming was done. They may need to learn their own access codes (this will also be true of brain wave, and other sophisticated programming techniques). They will need to communicate with the traumatized alters and fragments inside, let them know they were used. They will need to help the young alters, who were split to create the system, and often underwent the worst traumas. Grieving for the abuse, the trauma, the methodical calculation used and scientific methods used to put in this programming, will take time. Venting feelings, including rage, safely will be important. The survivor may be afraid of strong feelings and will fear especially anger and rage, since they will associate those feelings with having to kill, hurt, or assassinate others. Allowing the feelings to be expressed slowly and carefully, being aware that homicidal and suicidal feelings will probably come up, is important.

If there is a concern about the ability to control acting out, the client may need to go inpatient in a safe facility that understands mind control and cult programming. They will fear being labeled "psychotic" since the programmers told them that they would be called this, and locked up forever. The WORST thing a therapist or hospital can do in a situation like this, is play into those fears, or label the person psychotic. Constant grounding in reality, using grounding exercises; slow, careful venting of rage and betrayal feelings; reinforcing over and over that the survivor can remember, and NOT go psychotic, or die, BELIEVING and VALIDATING the survivor, are all important. The survivor may have unstable behavior at points, but this is not psychosis, but rather, the natural reaction to extreme trauma. The survivor needs to realize this, and that they can overcome its effects, with time and good therapy. They will need hope, and a good support system.

Governmental Programming:

Governmental programming will involve the person being trained to take leadership positions or administrative positions in the government. They may be trained to network with others in governments, both local , national, and international. The Illuminati's stated goal is to infiltrate, and eventually cause the downfall of, all major governments in the world. Government operatives are taught to do this by: infiltrating local political parties running for leadership both locally and nationally working for top leaders, as administrators, financial advisors funding governmental races and backing the person sympathetic to the
Illuminati, or putting their person in to win, creating political chaos and unrest with operatives trained in dissension. The people selected for governmental programming are usually highly intelligent with native charm, or charisma. They are also skilled people manipulators. These abilities may be enhanced through programming, encouraging the person to project a "persona" that will draw people to them.

They are also taught finances extensively. This programming is done by: hypnotizing the person, whether child, youth, or adult (it is usually initiated in late childhood in suitable candidates), and inducing deep trance with drugs. The person is shocked, then told the trainer's and cult agenda for the person. They are told that they are very special to the Illuminati, and will be one of the people who helps change world history. They are told they will be rewarded with wealth, popularity and power for achieving the cult's agenda. They are told, and shown, what the punishment for disobedience is. They are shown training films about government, how it works, national and international affairs. They will meet with special teachers, who coach them on the inner political workings of the group they want to infiltrate, including the power structure and strengths and weaknesses of key players.

They will learn any languages necessary for the position. They will go to University, or get any training and education needed for credibility. They will receive special scholarships to finance this, if needed. They are given opportunities to practice their skills at infiltration, information gathering, people manipulation, and politics in set ups, and later in real situations. If they need to learn to control the media, they will learn methods to do this. They will have extensive back up and coaching during their entire career.

Suggestions:

Governmental programming is quite complex, since it ties in with the person's natural abilities. They may not be able to separate themselves easily from the role that they perform and often will only feel that they are acceptable when they do their job. They may find it difficult to believe that their career, friendships, marriage and contacts have been secretly guided by the cult for most of their life. These parts may feel offended, betrayed, or furious when this realization hits. They will also find it difficult not to use the manipulation skills that come so naturally, both on their therapist, and themselves, to dull the pain that the truth may bring. The person and the alters that have undergone this type of programming have a lot to lose if they give up their roles and persona, and need to count the cost of getting out and acknowledge the difficulty of doing so. They will need to grieve over being used, and for the false interpretation of reality they have believed all their lives. Listening to other parts inside and acknowledging the reality of the cult abuse will be important steps in breaking free. Success in a new career in the person's daily life will also help restore a broken self image.

Scholarship training:

The Illuminati revere scholarship, especially oral tradition. Children with good memories and native intelligence may undergo specific training in the area of scholarship. This will include learning under trauma, with praise for accomplishment. It will also mean punishment or being shocked for poor performance. Some of the major areas of scholarship include, but are not limited to:

Oral tradition: history of the Illuminati, especially the child's particular branch, memorizing genealogies. Learning and becoming fluent in multiple languages, both modern and ancient, including but not limited to: English, French, German, Russian, Spanish, Arabic, Latin, Greek, Hebrew, Egyptian hieroglyphics; ancient Babylonian, ancient Chaldean and cuneiform writings. Some revered ancient texts are written in very ancient languages, and certain ceremonies may include rituals which utilize them. Learning ancient and modern history and becoming adept at planning role plays and dramatizations. Learning to teach others the above skills. The child who becomes adept at scholarship will also be expected to become a skilled teacher, and in turn, pass their knowledge down to others. They will practice teaching in both classroom and individual sessions.

Suggestions:

Scholarship programming will involve alters who are intensely loyal to the cult, since they believe they are related to a long, unbroken line of people since earliest history. They will often be immersed in cult philosophy, having read and memorized numerous esoteric volumes related to it. Appealing to logic, intellect, having an open mind and discussing the pros and cons of leaving the cult with them will often be received the best. They despise open conflict, and prefer addressing issues intellectually. They will be skilled debaters, and quite verbal. Asking them to read books that address becoming free from the cult, and asking them to sit in and listen to accounts from traumatized alters both in their system and others inside, will often

help them make the decision to switch loyalties. Although they will have been immersed in false ideologies and doctrines, they are frequently willing to attempt to be intellectually honest. They will read and debate both sides of an issue, and may become some of the first to make the decision to leave the cult once convinced that it is abusive.

top

Chapter Nine:
Programming Linked to Stories, Movies, Cartoons, or role Play Dramatization

In this chapter, I want to address a special type of programming that is universal with the Illuminati. It is programming that is linked to a story, movie, cartoon, or role play dramatization.

For countless centuries, Illuminati trainers and leaders have used role playing to reinforce as well as program children, and it is a favorite mode of teaching up to this day. A typical drama set up, or role play, will involve a "visit through time." The child is told, while drugged or hypnotized, that it and the other children with it (usually, a small group will go through this programming together) are going to " time travel". The trainer or teacher is seen as immensely powerful by the children, as he or she magically transports them through time. They enter another room, where people are dressed up in period costumes from whichever time period in history the teacher wants the children to see. Everything is historically accurate and well researched. An example: if the children are to visit ancient Rome, they will be taken to a room in the Senate, where the characters are dressed in togas. They will be speaking to each other in ancient Latin and debating issues. Caesar, or another king will enter the senate. Roman customs for a scenario such as this one will be adhered to throughout the role play.

One purpose of this role playing, is that the children are told they are getting a "behind the scenes " peek at history. Illuminati agenda will be put forward, and the children will "see" that famous figures in history were actually Illuminists. This will reinforce their "special ness" and the historicity of the group. It will also reinforce language training, since the scenes may occur in medieval England, or the French court of Louis XIV, etc. The scenes will also contain a moral that builds on programming the children have been undergoing. Maybe they will watch a "traitor" being "guillotined" in the French court. Or an unworthy senator, who tries to betray his king, will be stabbed. The child may be given a role in the play, such as taking a secret message to the king or queen, to reinforce courier programming. The child really believes that they have stepped back into history, and are part of the process of helping create history.

With modern times, programming has become more sophisticated with the advent of technology. Before television or movies, programming was often "scripted" around famous fairy tales, or stories, read aloud by one trainer while the second trainer worked with the child. A good see-song voice is necessary in a "reader". The child would be read the story, and under hypnosis and trauma, told that they are one of the

characters in the story. They are told the "real" meaning of the story, its "hidden meaning" and told that whenever they hear the story, to remember what it really means.

Now days, movies and videos are frequently used in programming. Favorite scripts include: Walt Disney movies (Disney was an Illuminist), especially Fantasia, Sleeping Beauty, The Little Mermaid, Cinderella, Beauty and the Beast. The Wizard of Oz, both books and movie, has been used. Any movie that incorporates Illuministic themes can be used. E.T. and Star Wars have been used in more recent years.

How Script programming is done:
The trainer will play the movie for the child. The child is told that they will be "asked about " the movie, this cues the child to use photographic recall about what they are viewing. The trainer may show the child an edited shorter version of the movie, with only parts of the whole, or may show the child a short scene from the movie.

After watching the movie, or scene, the child is drugged to relax it, then asked what it remembers. The child will be shocked if it cannot recall items the trainer deems important, and will be forced to watch the scenes repetitively.

When the child has total recall of the segments, the trainer will tell the child that it is one of the characters. The child may be heavily traumatized first, and a blank slate personality created inside to be the desired character. The first thing the blank slate sees is a recording of the movie, or scene. This is its "first memory". The trainer will then link the scene with Illuminati ideology. They will teach the child the "hidden meaning" in the movie, and praise the child for being one of the few "enlightened ones" who can understand what it truly means. The script programming will often be linked to other programming the child is undergoing. Military programming may be linked to Star Wars. Total recall programming may be linked to Data in Star Trek. Computer programming may be linked to Hal in 2001 A Space Odyssey; internal labyrinth programming may be linked to the movie "Labyrinth". The possibilities are quite varied and will depend on both the child and the trainer as to which direction script programming will go. Music from the show, or scene, will be used as a trigger to access the programming inside or bring forward these personalities.

Suggestions:

Scripted programming will often involve a great deal of traumatization, to create the "blank slate" alters desired. The programming will be ground in with repetition, electroshock, torture, drugging and hypnosis. The alters inside who have gone through this programming will often be highly disconnected from external reality and may believe that they are part of a "script". They may be Dorothy seeking the Emerald City (or the achievement of Illuminati rule on earth). They may be a computer or the character Data. Reality orientation will be very important. Allow these parts to experience safe outside reality, and test for themselves if they are really part of a man or woman. Looking in a mirror may help, when they express readiness. Having cognitive helpers who can share daily life memories with them, may help to

ground them. At first they will be very surprised, even indignant or hostile, at suggestions that they are not the character. They will think the therapist is a trainer, or part of the script, since this is the only reality that they have known. Re-grounding, patiently, over and over to present reality, increased communication with others inside, and eventually grieving over the intense amount of trickery and deception that they experienced, will be necessary. With time and patience these parts will be willing to give up their old "scripted" roles and become part of the person's present reality.

top

Chapter Ten
The Sixth step of Discipline: Betrayal; Twinning, Internal walls, Structures, Geometry

This chapter will address the sixth step of discipline in the Illuminati:

Betrayal programming.

Betrayal programming will begin in infancy, but will be formalized at around ages six to seven, and continue on into adulthood. The sixth step can be summarized as : "betrayal is the greatest good." The Illuminists teach this to their children as a very important spiritual principle. They idealize betrayal as being the true state of man. The quick witted, the adept, learns this quickly and learns to manipulate it.

The child will learn this principle through set up after set up. The child will be placed in situations where an adult who is kindly, and in set up after set up "rescues" the child, gains its trust. The child looks up to the adult as a "savior" after the adult intervenes and protects the child several times. After months or even a year of bonding, one day in a set up the child will turn to the adult for help. The adult will back away, mocking the child, and begin abusing it. This sets in place the programming: adults will always betray a child and other adults.

Another set up will involve twinning, which deserves special mention here. The Illuminati will often create twin bonds in their children. The ideal is to have a set of real twins, but of course this is not always possible. So, the child is allowed to play with, and become close to, another child in the cult from earliest childhood. At some point early on, the child will be told that the other child is actually their "twin", and that they were separated at birth. They are told that this is a great secret and not to tell anyone, on pain of punishment. The child, who is often lonely and isolated, is overjoyed. It has a twin, someone who has a special bond to them by birth.

The children do everything together. They are taught together, do military training together. They tell each other secrets. They are also frequently friends in the daytime as well. They are taught to cross access each other just as real siblings would be.

But at some point, they will be forced to hurt each other. If one "twin" is considered expendable, the ultimate set up will be one in which one twin is forced to die while the other watches. One twin may gather secrets from the other twin, be forced to disclose them to a trainer or cult leader, then may be forced to kill the other. One twin may be forced to hit, or hurt the other. If they refuse, the other twin will be brutalized by the trainer, and the refusing twin told that the child was hurt because of their refusal to comply. Many setups will involve one twin being forced to betray the other, turning on the other child after intense programming. This betrayal set up will devastate both children, and they will learn the true lesson: trust no one. Betray, or be betrayed.

The children will also have adult role models on every hand, since the cult is a very political, hierarchical, back stabbing society. Adults are constantly betraying each other, stepping over each other to move up. The children will watch one adult being praised, advanced, because they betrayed others below them, or set them up to fail. The children will learn quickly to mimic the adults around them, and both adults and children can become quite cynical as to human nature. They will have seen it at its worst, whether in training sessions, the brutality of a C.O. in military, or the gossip and back stabbing that occurs before and after rituals. They also incorporate the message internally: play the game, or be run over. Even the youngest children learn to manipulate others adeptly, at a very young age, while the adults laugh at how quickly they are learning adult ways. People manipulation is considered a fine art in the cult, and those who do it best, as in any group, often win out.

Suggestions:
Betrayal programming may have totally shattered the survivor's trust in outside people. It will take a therapist a long, long time to gain the survivor's trust. These are people who were taught over and over again that talking, sharing one's secrets, would be punished harshly. Inside littles will be very cautious at first, not trusting that the therapist is not just another trainer who will one day shout "aha!" and betray them if they begin to trust. This trust building takes time and patience, and must be earned through session after session where the therapist shows trustworthiness and non abusiveness. Survivors will test therapists over and over again, to see if they really are what they say they are. This is a normal part of the therapy process. Survivors may even try to back away from therapy, or outside support, as true caring support will "wig them out", i.e. conflict incredibly with their world view and experiences prior to leaving the cult.

Both survivor and therapist need to realize that some amount of distrust is healthy, based on what the survivor has experienced, and may be life saving, helping to protect them from outside accessing. Honor this need and be patient while the survivor tests over and over. The survivor can try to reason with inside alters who may have been betrayed to the point of legitimate paranoia. They may ask them to watch, and see what the therapist, and/or support person is like. To take their time, check them out. To be aware that what they went through may magnify normal feelings of caution. Helping orient these parts to outside reality, and especially positive experiences of trusting a little, and not being harmed, will help make great strides in undoing this. The survivor may feel confusion and internal conflict, as they experience a world where trust is possible. They may pull away, or the reverse, become highly dependent on the therapist and share too quickly due to a longing for safe intimacy that has never been met. Setting healthy boundaries while acknowledging needs will help the survivor through this stage.

Another type of programming involves the deliberate creation of internal structures within the cult member.

Internal structures: temples, eyes, mirrors, carousels etc.

The Illuminati trainers will try to create internal structures within the person's personality systems. Why? They believe this creates better stability. It also gives the alters and fragments a place to "hang on to" inside, and creates a convenient way to call them up. If a fragment is indexed inside to an internal helix, for example, the trainer knows how to locate them more easily.

Internal structures will vary greatly depending on the trainer, the group, the region of the U.S. or Europe and the goals for the individual. Common internal structures will include, but are not limited to:

- **Temples:** these are often consecrated to principle Illuminati deities, and spiritual alters will congregate here. This may represent actual temples, Masonic or private, that the subject may have visited.

- **Temple of Moloch** will be created out of black stone with a fire burning internally.

- **All seeing eye of Horus:** one of the most common structures in an Illuminati system; universal. Horus is a deity revered by the Illuminati, and the all seeing eye internally represents the fact that the cult can always see what the individual is doing. It will also represent being given to Horus in a high ceremony. The eye may be closed, or open, depending on the system's status at the time. This eye will also be linked to demonic watching of the person's activities at all time.

- **Pyramids:** the Illuminati revere ancient Egyptian symbology, especially "mystery religion" and Temple of Set teachings. Pyramids will be placed internally both for stability (a triangle, and/or pyramid represents strength and stability), and as a calling place for the demonic. Pyramids and triangles, and the number three, represent calling up the demonic in Illuminist philosophy.

- **Sun:** represents Ra, the sun god

- **Geometric figures:** configurations of circles, triangles, pentagons, etc. Geometric patterns are considered sacred, and are based in ancient philosophy. There may be hundreds overlapping in a training grid for complex systems, which will house fragments in each one.

- **Training grids:** these may be simplistic, such as cubes with patterns on them, rows of boxes, or more complex such as helixes, double helixes, infinity loops. Each trainer will have favorites classified as simple, medium and complex, depending on the child and its ability to recall and memorize.

- **Columns:** Greek Doric, ionic columns. Often hold "time travel" programming, with a portal between two columns.

- **Computers:** complex, highly dissociated systems with alters and fragments held within a computer system.

- **Robots:** may be seen in older systems

- **Crystals:** gems, balls, multifaceted. Used in spiritual systems to enhance occult powers. Alters and fragments may congregate on facets of a large ball.

- **Mirrors:** used internally to reinforce other programming sequences, internal twinning, and distortion of reality programming. May create shadow systems of functional systems. May also lock in demonic programming.

- **Carousels:** used in some programming sequences to confuse alters inside. Often linked to spin, confusion programming internally. May be used to punish internal alters; they will be spun on the carousel if they tell.

- **Deck of cards:** this can include cards from a deck, or complex configurations made of hundreds of card inside. Dominoes programming is similar. All touch each other and if person tries to dismantle programming, the deck will "fall".

- **Black boxes:** represent self destruct and shatter programming sealed off into a black box to protect system. Should not be opened without careful preparation and good therapy.

- **Mines, booby traps:** see above

- **Spider webs:** represent linked programming, with a spider (internal programmer) who continuously reweaves the web and reinforces internal programming and punishments. The web also communicates with other systems. Can also represent demonic linkages internally, woven in.

- **Internal training rooms:** used as punishments for internal alters. Will represent external training rooms person has been in.

- **Internal walls:** these will often represent very large internal amnesia barriers. The walls may be very thick, impermeable or semi permeable. A typical use for a wall will be to maintain high levels of amnesia between "front" or daily living, amnesic alters, and "back" or cult active alters that contain more of the person's life history. The back may be able to selectively see over and cross past the wall, but the front will be completely unaware that there is a wall, or what lays behind it.

- **Seals:** usually in a group of six or seven, represent demonic sealing, and may cover end times, shatter programming, as well as role within cult in new hierarchy.

These are some common programming structures. Again, there are many, many other types of internal structures used and the number and type are only limited by the trainer's and survivor's creative abilities. The way that these structures are placed within the person are fairly
similar. Under drugs, hypnosis and electroshock, the person is traumatized into a deep trance state. In the deep trance they will be told to open their eyes and look at: either a projected image of the structure, a 3D model of it, or a holographic image using a virtual reality headset. The image will be ground in, using shock and bringing the image closer and closer to the person's visual field. It may be rotated, if graphics are available, or a 3D is used. They may be told that they are entering inside it, if it is a temple or pyramid, under deep hypnosis, that they (the alter being programmed) will now "live inside" the structure/box/card, etc. This will also be used to reinforce amnesia and isolation programming internally, since the structure will be used to reinforce walls between the alter/ fragment and other alters and fragments internally.

Suggestions:
If the survivor finds structures inside, it will help for them first of all to try and realize WHY they are there. What purpose do they serve? To reinforce amnesia? Isolation? spiritual programming? punishment? To hold dangerous programming sequences? This is important, since some structures such as internal walls or barriers may have been created not only by the cult, but reinforced by the survivor as well, as a means of internal protection. The survivor may not want to dismantle internal structures too quickly without knowing their purpose and what they contain. Both the survivor and the therapist will need to go slowly. Learning how the structures were put in and which alters are linked to the structure, will be a first step. Long, slow and careful preparation, with lots of system cooperation, will be needed to look at some structures. This may only come after years of extensive therapy. Each survivor will progress at their own pace. If a wall is present, taking it down slowly, one brick at a time, or allowing part of it to become semi permeable, may be first steps in healing. Training rooms can have the equipment turned off and dismantled; it can be turned into a safe room, redecorated and refitted with toys and safe objects. Computers can slowly begin to realize that they are human, and gradually allowed to take on human characteristics.

Survivors can use their creativity to reclaim themselves, with the support of their therapists, and undo what was done.

top

Chapter Eleven
Suicidal Programming

I have decided to write an entire chapter about suicidal programming, since it is often the most dangerous programming that the survivor will face during their healing process. ALL ILLUMINATI SURVIVORS WILL HAVE SUICIDAL PROGRAMMING PROTECTING THEIR SYSTEMS. I emphasized this to also reiterate the need for good therapy and a strong support system for the survivor.

The Illuminati know and realize that with time, individuals in their group may start to question what they are doing. Or they may become disenchanted with their role. They may even desire to leave the group or try to dismantle their own programming.

The trainers are well aware of this possibility and to prevent this, will always program in suicidality. The suicidality, or suicidal programming, may surround one or more systems internally. It may be layered into more than one system.

From earliest childhood, survivors have been conditioned to believe that they would rather die than leave their "family" (the Illuminati group). This is the core, or basis of suicidal programming. It will be closely linked to loyalty to one's family as well as the group (remember, this is a generational group and leaving it may mean giving up contact with one's parents, spouse, siblings, aunts, uncles, cousins and children, as well as close friends). These people will all try to contact the survivor, and try to draw them back into the cult, asking "don't you love us anymore?", or even becoming accusatory and hostile if the survivor does not respond the way they wish. The survivor will be told that they are "crazy". Or delusional. That their family loves them and would never be part of a cult. The family members will all still be amnesic, unless something happens to trigger their own memories.

One of the most frequent suicidal programming sequences placed internally will be "come back or die " programming. A family member may activate it by telling the survivor that they are missed and their family wants to see them. If the survivor fails to return, the programming will start running. It can only be deactivated by a code word from the person's trainer or cult contact person. This ensures that they will recontact. If the survivor tries to break this programming, they will need assistance, both internal and external, for safety.

Hospitalization may be needed in a safe facility that understands DID and programming, as well as suicidality, as the alters inside will begin fighting if the person tries to break the programming. They have been programmed to commit suicide, or be shattered internally, or at the very least, severely punished, and are afraid of the repercussions of not obeying. The survivor will need to get to know these internal alters, and reassure them that they no longer need to do their jobs.

Chronometric suicidal programming is another type placed within. This does not need contact with family members to activate. In fact, it is activated automatically after a certain amount of time WITHOUT cult contact. Controller alters and/or punishing alters will have been programmed that if a certain period of time goes without contact with the trainer, they are to commit suicide. They will be told that the only way to prevent this is recontact with the trainer, who knows a command code to halt the program. The time interval may be anywhere from three months to nine months, each system is

different. Call back programming may have this type of programming as a back up, to ensure that it is followed through on.

Systems layered programming is a particularly complex form of suicide programming where several systems (up to six at a time), are programmed to fire off suicide programming simultaneously. This always needs hospitalization for the survivor's safety.

Honor/dishonor programming is common in military systems. In this, the military parts are told that an "honorable and courageous" soldier will take his life, rather than reveal secrets or leave his unit.

"No tell" programming will often be reinforced by suicidal programming.

Access denied programming, which prevents unauthorized access both externally and internally, will often be reinforced by either or both suicidal/homicidal programming.

Almost all suicidal programming is put in place to either ensure continued obedience to the cult's agenda; to ensure regular recontact; or prevent the individual or an outside person from accessing the person's system without authorization (i.e. the correct access codes, which the trainers are careful to use at the beginning of each session). It will frequently block therapy, as the survivor will be terrified, and rightly so, of dying if they reveal their internal world, or disclose their history.

Suggestions:
First, both the survivor and the therapist need to find out what suicide programming is present (it's a safe bet it's there, no need to ask IF it is present). Internal communication, and finding out which alters or fragments hold suicide programming will be important. Physical safety, whether with a safe outside person, or inpatient hospitalization, while working on suicide programming is extremely important, as this programming may either drive the survivor to self destructive behavior, or back to the cult. Dealing with suicide programming assumes that the survivor and therapist have initiated good system communication internally. This is extremely important, since the survivor will need cooperation inside with dismantling suicidality.

Letting alters inside know that they no longer have to do their job, that they can change, may help. Reality orientation, letting them know that if they kill the body, that they will die, may also help (many times, these parts have been deceived into believing that they themselves will not die, if they do their jobs. This means they need to hear the truth). Having controller alters, high alters with pull inside the system, agree to help the therapist dismantle the programming will help. But be aware that SOME INTERNAL SUICIDE SEQUENCES WILL BE PUT IN THAT EVEN CONTROLLERS CANNOT DISMANTLE. Creating a safety committee inside whose main job is to keep the body safe and ask for help if suicidal programming begins to kick in, BEFORE ACTING OUT OCCURS, will also help tremendously.

As the survivor develops trust with their therapist and realizes the value of life, and that life can be much

better than it has ever been before, they will become more willing to reach out and ask for help if they become suicidal. The survivor may also find that they encounter core despair. This despair may have been used by the cult to run suicidal programming, but it is not programming itself. A very young core split may have taken many of the feelings of despair, hopelessness, failure to thrive and desire to die, that the child felt growing up in a horribly abusive atmosphere. This is not programming but true feelings, and it will be important to differentiate this from programming. If core despair comes up, the alter containing this may also report having been trained to NOT SUICIDE, or give up. The trainers will do this, if despair begins overwhelming the subject at an early age, to prevent the child's suicide.

The survivor's cognitives, helpers, nurturers, will all need to be gathered together to help this part of the core heal. There will be intense, and rightful, grieving and anguish for the immense pain that the young child suffered. Hopelessness will come out. It can help if alters with happier memories can try and share their memories with this very young part. External support and caring can also make a big difference. Healing the immense pain held by this core split will take a long period of time and should not be hurried. Antidepressants can help, as the depression may be shared through all systems. Messages of hope, new and positive experiences can all help the survivor work through this type of programming, as well as journaling, poetry, artwork and collaging the feelings. Time, patience, support, the ability to vent feelings in a safe manner and physical safety when needed, will all help immensely as the survivor works through these issues.

top

Chapter Twelve
Preventing Reaccessing of the Survivor

This is by far one of the most important chapters I have written in this book. Why?

Deprogramming cannot be consistently successful if the person is still in contact with the abusers. Survivors will take one step forward, then will find themselves knocked down internally. All the hard work in therapy will be undone or set back. They and their therapist will find that they have trouble finding internal alters. Whole systems may shut down. A child presenting system may come out. Confusers and scramblers will take over therapy sessions and blockers will block therapy.

No one chapter can ever be totally comprehensive in how to prevent reaccessing. What I will share are some of the more common ways that the cult and trainers will try to reaccess individuals, and give some techniques on avoiding this.

The cult has a vested interest in keeping its members. After all, it has spent generations telling its members that if they leave they will die, be killed, or go psychotic. It makes them quite unhappy to see someone who is quite alive and very clearly not psychotic leave. It also makes their more restive

members question the truth of what they have been told if they see someone get out. Having a member leave may break the hold of some programming in other members. Trainers especially hate to see anyone leave, and grind their teeth over this problem at night. People leaving the cult is considered a training failure and the trainers may be punished severely.

So, the cult has come up with certain ways to keep their members with them, willingly or unwillingly. These include, but are not limited to:

E.T. phone home (phone programming) : the individual will have personalities whose sole job is to call and report to the trainer or cult leader. These are often young child alters who are eager to please, starved for attention and nurture, and who are heavily rewarded for calling back in. Any survivor who attempts to leave the cult must deal with the urge to phone home. To phone their abusers. To phone their friends who are in the group. To phone their parents, siblings, cousins, or aunts. This urge may become overwhelming at times and worst of all, the survivor may be totally amnesic to the fact that the people they are calling are cult members who are urging them, in code, to come back. Common phrases used include: your 'family' loves you, misses you, needs you. So and so is ill and needs to see you. You are so special to us. You are so valuable. You need to come see us. Why are you so distant? Why haven't we heard from you lately?

The list goes on and on. Sweet, kind phrases with double meanings, placed in the person during training sessions. Trainers are not stupid and know that if cult members said "come to the ritual meeting at midnight next week", the survivor would run the other way, and be validated as well that they are not making things up. So, they ingrain code messages behind innocuous phrases such as described above. These, and other messages, are meant to trigger recontact programming.

In recontact programming, (ALL ILLUMINATI MEMBERS HAVE RECONTACT PROGRAMMING, IT IS NEVER LEFT TO CHANCE) the person has parts whose only job is to have contact with their trainer or cult leader, or accountability person (person one step above them in the cult). These parts are heavily programmed under drugs, hypnosis, shock, torture, to have recontact. The individual will feel restless, shaky, weepy, afraid if they try to break this programming. It will often be linked or joined in to suicidal programming (see previous chapter for more on suicidal programming). They may experience PTSD symptomology, or even flood programming, and internal self punishment sequences, as they fight this programming internally.

Siblings are often cross trained to access each other with special codes. Remember when.... may initiate this. I love you, or, your family loves you, can also be used. Phrases will be individual, depending on the person's family members and background.

Certain clothing or jewelry worn can be used to draw a cult loyal system, such as a color coded system, or jewel system , to the front. The person must physically resemble the person the individual was "keyed into" during the programming sequence, to prevent inadvertent popping out of alters by anyone wearing a ruby pin, for example. This kind of cueing will be based on sight recognition of a person, plus the

clothing color or jewelry being worn a certain way.

Phone calls from concerned family members, friends, and cult members will flood the survivor's phone lines and answering machine, especially during the initial getting out phase.

Hang up calls, three or six in a row, or calls where a series of tones are heard, may be used as cues to recall the individual and fire off internal programming.

Birthday, holiday or we miss you cards, or letters, may be sent with trigger codes imbedded in them.

Flowers with a certain number of flowers, or color may be sent. Daisies may fire off daisy programming internally.

The possibilities are almost endless, depending on the trainers, the group the person was with, and the people they are most bonded to in the cult. Special training sessions will be given, with code words and cues built into the system's programming.

If all else fails, hostility will start. "You don't love us" will be heard, even when the survivor has stated repeatedly that they care. Boundaries drawn with cult members will be misinterpreted as lack of concern, or withdrawal. Accusations, guilt, and anger as well as manipulation will be used as hooks to make the survivor feel guilty for withdrawing from the cult.

Isolation programming may activate, as the cult support system is withdrawn in the survivor's life, and they try the difficult task of
developing healthy, appropriate relationships outside of the cult. Often, the therapist will be the survivor's lifeline and sole support at first. The individual may fall into codependent relationships quickly, or relationships with other survivors to fill the void in their life. At worst, desperate for caring and feeling isolated, they will make friends with the first kind person they meet. This person could be a cult set up, sent to initiate a friendship quickly. Survivors should be wary of "instant friendships" or instant bonding with others. Most good relationships take time and effort.

Suggestions:
One of the most difficult tasks, but most important safety wise, will be for a totally amnesic presenting system to realize who their abusers really are. It will seem unbelievable, when back parts come up in therapy, and disclose that beloved, or even barely tolerated family members are in the cult. Believing these parts and listening to them will be crucial to safety. Protectors will be important to the survivor's safety, especially if they are willing to give up cult allegiance and help keep the person safe. Outside accountability with safe persons is extremely important. The problem is that generational Illuminati survivors have often been surrounded all their lives by a network of other cult members. Unknown to them, their closest friends and family members are part of the group. Amnesia poses the greatest danger to the survivor in the beginning stages, as they will trust people before they remember that they are unsafe.

A survivor may remember the father taking them to rituals, and believe that their mother or grandparent is safe. Only later in therapy will they remember that mother or granny was actually their trainer, since the most painful memories tend to come later. The survivor may only remember ritual abuse in early childhood, and think they were let go at a certain age. This is extremely rare, since the group has put in years of effort into training them. Almost never will they just "let someone go" in generational families. But they may be given false or screen memories, especially if they are in therapy, to confuse the survivor and the therapist.

The client will need to listen to and believe internal parts who have more information than they do, and take appropriate steps to be safe. This will probably mean cutting off contact with perpetrators at this point. Again, outside accountability is paramount. Safe houses, a women's shelter or a safe church family may be alternatives. One of the worst things the survivor can do is isolate, or go out walking late at night alone, or go camping in the woods by themselves. Abduction will often occur in these scenarios, when the survivor is alone and vulnerable. Safe roommates can help keep the survivor safe.

Locking up the phone in the trunk of the car may help if phone programming is intense. This gives the survivor the chance to wake up or stop phone calls, if an alter has to get up, find the car keys, turn on the light, go outside, and open a car trunk, bring the phone inside and hook it up again before making a phone call.

Building a support system through safe support groups, a good therapist, church, or work can also help. Whenever possible and practical, moving away from the town or state where the survivor was active in the cult can help. Why? Remember the survivor's whole support network was the cult in their old town. The trainers and/or family members have invested time and effort into the survivor and have a big stake in their coming back. If the survivor moves far enough away, a cult group in the new city or state will not know them as well, and will not have a lengthy history with them. This can help decrease the chance of reaccessing by the cult, in conjunction with good therapy and a safe support network.

The survivor will have to rebuild their support system anyway, so why not do it as far as possible away from people they have known who might hurt them? It can be intensely triggering to the survivor to see their old trainer walking down the street towards them, and inside alters may destabilize or feel unsafe. This is one case where distance is good.

One caution though: even if the survivor moves, they will need to work intensely on blocking internal recontact programming at the same time, or they may be quickly reaccessed. Trainers will often send the person's system codes and grids over the internet to cult groups in the new city, and will try to send someone who physically resembles the trainer or a family member to initiate contact with the survivor.

Internal communication and letting inside alters know that they can change their jobs will help. Reward internal reporters for changing allegiance and committing to keep the survivor safe. The cult used to reward them for doing their job; now the survivor can reward them for changing jobs. Develop new interests, work or hobbies that can help the survivor meet new, safe people. The survivor may want to

practice friendship skills in support groups, as long as they are run by reputable, safe therapists.

Be aware that holiday dates are often important dates for reaccessing. Calendars are available that show important holidays for SRA groups. Birthdays are also dates when the individual is expected to return and there may be programming surrounding this.

Callback programming (where the person is given a specific date or holiday when they are to return to the cult, or be punished) may need to be broken as well. Allowing the alters who went through the programming to share their memories, acknowledging their needs, and trying to meet those needs in healthy ways will bring healing.

The survivor will need to go through a period of grieving for loss of
contact with family members and friends in the cult. No matter how abusive, how disliked, it can be very difficult to cut off with perpetrators, especially if they were the only people close to the survivor. The survivor needs to acknowledge the difficulty of creating a new, healthy, cultless support group. The survivor needs to recognize that learning new skills and developing healthy friendships will take time.

One issue often brought up by survivors is: how much do I tell others about my past? This is an individual decision that the survivor and therapist need to look at together. In general though, caution in sharing is best, since sharing too much about the survivor's past may draw the wrong people to them. These people may be dysfunctional, or possible cult members. It is usually best to base new, non cult friendships on healthy aspects of the person at first and very gradually share small bits of information as the friendship progresses, and sharing seems appropriate. With time and opportunities, the survivor will learn the importance of appropriate boundaries and will want healthier relationships in their life.
top

Chapter Thirteen
Shell programming, Internal Councils, Human Experimentation, Function Codes

Parts of this chapter could be extremely triggering, please read with caution and only with a therapist if a survivor.

Shell programming is a form of programming used to create a “shell” on the outside, that other alters inside speak through. This is a designed to hide the person’s multiplicity from the outside world, and works extremely well with highly fragmented systems. It also takes a person with the ability to dissociate to a great degree.

How it is done: with shell programming, the trainer will often take a clear plastic or glass mask, and put it in front of the subject. They will be extremely traumatized, shocked, drugged, and told that they (the alter or alters in front) are the “mask” that they see. Their job will be to be a shell, or voice, to cover for

the others behind. These parts will be so traumatized that they literally see themselves as only a shell, with no real substance or body.

Others inside will then be directed to come next to the “shell” alters, and use their voice to cover their own. This allows greater fragmentation of the person, while being able to hide it from outside view, since the internal alters will learn to present through the shell. Shell alters always see themselves as “clear”, and will have no color if color coding is present in other systems.

Suggestions

It is important to realize that what the system is actually doing is co-presenting, although not co-consciously. For a shell program to work, the shell alters have been taught to allow co-presentation with the other alters in the systems. Other alters in the back may not always be aware that this is what is happening, and the front shell especially will not know that they are being “gone through” for co-presentation.

Recognizing the trauma that occurred, and finding out where the shell fragments came from, will help. Allowing both the shell alters and the other alters to recognize that this is how they have been presenting, and why, will be an important step. Back alters may then begin presenting without going through the shell, and the person may look “more multiple” than they ever have for a period, with accents or young voices coming through. What is actually happening is that the back is presenting without masking who they are through the shell. Meanwhile, the shell alters may decide to coalesce, for greater strength, and may decide to change jobs. Each system will decide what is best for them.

Internal Councils:

Survivors of Illuminati programming will always have some type of hierarchy inside. This is because the cult itself is very hierarchical, and puts this hierarchy inside the person. What better way to inspire loyalty to leadership than to put the leadership inside the person’s head? Trainers are also very hierarchy conscious themselves. They know that a system without hierarchy and head honchos inside to direct things will be a system in chaos. They will not leave the person’s system leaderless inside.

Many trainers will put themselves in the person, over the internal programmers or trainers. This is because they are egotistical, but also because it uses a well known phenomenon of human nature: PEOPLE TEND TO INTERNALIZE THEIR ABUSERS. The survivor may be horrified to find a representative of one of their worst perpetrators inside, but this was a survival mechanism. A tenet of human behavior is that often people will punish someone less who mimics them. A brutal nazi will be less likely to punish another brutal nazi, but will look down upon and punish a weak, crying person. So, the survivor will internalize the rough nazi inside, to avoid being hurt. The survivor may mimic accents, mannerisms, even claim the perpetrator’s life history as their own.

The ultimate form of internalization comes with internalizing hierarchical councils. The person, under

pain, hypnosis, and drugs, will be taught to incorporate a highly dissociated group inside to lead the others. These will often be created from core splits, because the trainers want them to be extremely strong, stable alters in the system.

Triads of three elders may be seen

Platinum's may have a head council of three

Jewels will have a triad, made up of ruby, emerald, diamond in many systems, to rule over the others

And, of course, an internal “leadership council”, “System Above”, “Ascended Masters”, “supreme council”, regional council, world council, etc. may be found. The councils found will vary with each survivor.

These internal groups will correlate roughly to the outside group. Often the child or youth at age twelve will be presented to these groups in a formal coming of age ceremony. This ceremony is considered quite an honor, and will involve the child being traumatized and accepting the leadership of the council for the rest of their life. Undying loyalty is promised. There may be other occasions the person will be forced to come before the councils throughout their lifespan, either for judgment, to pass tests, for punishment, or elevation. These councils will be seen as holding power of life or death, and the child or youth will do anything to gain their favor. The child will internalize them. The trainer will help with the internalization, using photographs or holographic images of the people to “burn them in”. Each member of the group will be given different leadership tasks.

It is not uncommon for the survivor to incorporate a parent, both parents, or grandparents, into their internal leadership hierarchy in a generational survivor.

High priests and priestesses may sit on ruling councils inside.

Suggestions:

Internal leadership councils will often be some of the most resistant to, and hostile towards therapy, especially in the early stages. They will verbally banter with, or refuse to speak to, the therapist, as being “beneath their notice.” They are mimicking the haughty, hierarchical attitudes they have been exposed to all their lives.

They also have the most to lose, if the survivor leaves the cult, and may fight this decision tooth and nail. They will often be the alters with an “attitude”.

Both the survivor and therapist need to recognize that these parts had powerful needs that were met in the cult setting. To ignore this and argue with them will only entrench their belief that therapists are stupid and unknowing people. Acknowledge their internal role while gently pointing out reality. Try to

enlist their aid in helping the survivor strengthen. Discuss honestly the pros and cons of leaving the cult. These are highly intellectual alters, and they need to express their concerns and doubts. Setting good boundaries and not allowing verbal abuse of the therapist is important. These alters are used to "pushing people around" verbally, and have been rewarded for it prior to therapy. Now, they need to learn new coping skills and behaviors, and the process may take time. Allow them to vent their anger, displeasure, and fears about the decision to leave the cult. Offer them new jobs inside the person of leadership over safety committees, or even decision making committees.

Sometimes, a system that has broken free from the cult, and has no external hierarchy that they are accountable to will go through a short period of chaos as word gets out: we're free, and don't have to do what the cult tells us to do any more! Hundreds of internal arguments may break out as to: what do we do for a living? where do we live? what do we eat? what hobbies will we have? Everybody wants to come out, see the daytime, and live this new, free life. But the freedom may cause imbalance with all of the switching going on inside. Enlisting the aid of the internal hierarchy, and creating a limited democracy, with ground rules, may help during this time. Don't dismantle the internal hierarchy overnight, or the systems will be rudderless. Enlist their aid in helping direct which direction the survivor goes. Things will settle down after a period, as the systems learn to listen to each other, vote on ideas, and begin going together in the same direction.

Human Experimentation

This is one of the most grievous things that still occurs in the Illuminati today. The Illuminati were famed for deciding years ago to "go scientific" and incorporate scientific experimentation into their training principles. This is one area where they broke with other, more traditional groups, who still followed "spiritual principles". The Illuminati decided to use scientific data, especially in the psychiatric and behavioral sciences, to drive their training practices. This became known openly during W.W.II, when the world heard about the experimentation on Jews and other groups in the concentration camps, but human experimentation had been quietly going on for years before underground.

It also did not stop at the end of the war. German trainers and scientists were scattered around the world, and hidden, where they continued teaching others the principles they had learned, and continued with ongoing experimentation.

Some of this experimentation occurred with government funding through groups such as the CIA and NSA. The Illuminati had people infiltrated throughout these groups, who used the principles discovered and shared them with their own trainers.

Experimentation is going on, even to this day. It is done secretly. Its purpose is to help improve and create more sophisticated training techniques. To prevent "programming failures", or "pfs" as they are called in the cult.

Many, many survivors, if not all, will have been told that they are only an experiment. This may or may

not be true. Trainers like to tell their subjects that they are experiments, even if they aren't, for several reasons:

1. It creates immense fear and helplessness in the subject (the thought is, if this is an experiment, I will have to work really hard to survive this)

2. It devalues the person immensely. They will feel that they have no real value as a human being, that all they are is an experiment. Someone who feels devalued doesn't care, and will be willing to do things they wouldn't if they felt some value, some humanization.

3. It gives the trainer added power, as they are the one who can begin or stop the "experiment". Almost always, when the person is TOLD they are an experiment, it isn't really true. When trainers and cult members really do experiments, the subjects are never told, because it could bias results. The fear could interfere with drug effects, and skew the results. Most recent cult experimentation has been in the area of: drug effects: using different drugs, both alone and in new combinations and dosages, to induce trance states and open the person to training. Drugs are looked for which will shorten the time interval needed to induce trance state, which are quickly metabolized, and leave no detectable residues the next day.

Behavioral science: watching and recording data on different environmental parameters on human behavior. Modifying the environment.

Praise and punishment as motivators.

Isolation techniques: recording data both physiological and psychological from different isolation methods. Removing, adding, combining different methods of sensory isolation, and the effect of each.

Effectiveness of virtual reality in implanting programming.

Effectiveness of new disks created to put programming in. Cult graphics and computer experts will work to create better and more effective VR disks, which are tested on cult subjects for their effectiveness. The cult wants more and more standardization, and less room for human error and weakness, in its training techniques, which is why it is going more and more to high tech equipment and videos. Attempts to break programming, cause program failure; recording what is effective, what isn't and develop new sequences to prevent pf. Subjects under hypnosis are ordered to try and break certain internal programming sequences. The ways they go about this, and what seems effective, are shared with the trainers, who then create new programs to prevent degradation of programming from occurring.

Harmonic/light, sensory deprivation and over stimulation and the effects neurologically and physically. New combinations of sensory input are always being tested to see which achieve the most lasting results, and can be done rapidly.

The cult is always trying to find new, better, faster methods to break down subjects, put programming in,

and prevent the programming from failing.

This has been the emphasis in most research it has done. The results of this research is shared worldwide, both by internet, phone calls, and international trainer conferences, where trainers worldwide share the results of what they are finding. New techniques are incorporated by other groups which are eager to find out what is being discovered.

Suggestions:

If you have experimental programming, realize that the alters who were used in it are heavily traumatized. They also will feel devalued, less than human, and this was reinforced heavily by the trainers who worked with them. They probably weren't used in initial experiments, as described above, but may have been used in second level experimentation.

I will explain what those terms mean.

Top trainers and leaders will initiate an experiment with a new drug. They will learn to triturate dosages, and record all observable facts on hundreds of subjects. After enough data is gotten, they will then clear it for use by trainers in local groups. It will then still be considered experimental, but will be second level, instead of first level experimentation. At this point, all trainers in local groups will be told to record and report any adverse reactions to the drug, any usual dosages needed, etc. This data is collected in databanks (yes, the cult is now in the computer age), inside of encrypted files, which will then be sent to a central base in Langley, Virginia.

Alters used in experiments, or told that they were experiments, need to realize they are valuable. They will need to realize they went through intense programming, and be allowed to vent and discuss their experiences. The fear related to believing they were an experiment needs to be vented appropriately. They will be angry at the dehumanization, intentionality, and coldness of what they went through, and quite rightly so. They may rail against the effects in their life now of the experiments and procedures they went through, and need to grieve over loss of body image; loss of trust in people; the sense of betrayal and helplessness that they felt during the procedures. They may want to journal, or draw pictures of their experiences.

A warm, empathetic therapist, who listens, and believes, and does not discount what they went through, is invaluable at this point. Allowing internal cognitives and helpers ground parts who went through bizarre sensory experiences, and creating "grounding committees" inside will also help. Extra support may be needed while dealing with experiences and feelings of this intensity.

Function Codes:

Trainers will place within the subject's systems a special way to organize the fragments that are related to the job they were trained to do. These are called Function Codes, and there are three main types:

Command Codes: these are irreversible commands, put in at the limbic level of conditioning. The first code always put in is the “halt “ command, which stops the person in their tracks, and is the first code any new trainer learns. This will stop the subject from assassinating their trainer, if they have MK ULTRA or other assassin training in place.

Other command codes will include: system destruct codes (suicide); shatter codes; erasure codes; and antisuicide codes.

Access Codes: these are specialized codes, often coded into short messages, or numerical codes, that allow access into the person’s system. A trainer will always begin a session by repeating the person’s personal complete access code, which will allow authorized entry into the system without setting off booby traps and internal protectors. These codes may also depend and be set up on sight recognition and voice recognition of the person giving the codes. In other words, the system will respond to the codes only if a person who appears to be an authorized person, such as the person’s trainer, gives them. This is to prevent unauthorized access or using of the person by others outside of the person’s local cult group.

Function codes: these are the “job codes” or work codes within the system.

Often, several will be coded to link together to perform a task. These are usually a letter, such as a Greek alphabet letter, combined with a numeric sequence that corresponds to their place on the internal grid or landscape.

Suggestions:

If the survivor has function codes, or the other codes internally, it will help if the different system controllers can share these with the person. The person can then get to know the fragments, hear their history, and help them begin coalescing with other parts internally. It may help to find the template these codes were fragmented from, and help the template realize how they were traumatized to create these fragments.

About deprogrammers:

Often people who call themselves deprogrammers will attempt to find these codes and help the person. This is an individual decision of each survivor and therapist. There may be excellent deprogrammers, but I have always felt extreme caution, and never used one myself for two reasons:

1. I would never ever give away the locus of control away to an outside person again. It would remind me to much of my own abuse, and I believe the survivor should be self empowered in therapy as much as possible.

2. There are no quick cures, or miracles, or short cuts in the process of undoing the extensive amount of

abuse that has occurred with Illuminati programming. Even the best deprogrammers will admit that after they are done, the person will usually have an idea of what was put in them, but must finish with years of therapy dealing with how they FEEL about the programming that was done. Illuminati programming takes YEARS to put in, with extensive, methodical abuse, and a realistic therapist will realize that it will take years of patience, support, and hard work by both therapist and survivor to undo a lifetime of conditioning and pain. This is not to say that deprogrammers don't help people; good, reputable, safe ones have been reported to be of great help. But the person can also undertake the process themselves of undoing their own programming, and often the survivor is the best "internal deprogrammer" of all. They know their inside people and what motivates them, better than anyone else.

top

Chapter Fourteen

Spiritual Programming

Note: this chapter includes discussion of both cult and Christian spirituality; do not read if these themes are triggering***

Any discussion of Illuminati programming would be lacking if it did not address spiritual programming. Most of the previous chapters have dealt with scientifically based, organized, structured programming.

But the Illuminati are first and foremost not scientists, but spiritual. The very foundation of the group is based on the occult. And they go to great lengths to grind in these occult beliefs in their people's systems.

The amount of spiritual programming in the person's systems will vary from person to person, and depends on the individual group, their religious heritage, the leader's beliefs, and the trainers in the group.

All children go to rituals, where they are dedicated from before birth as well as at intervals throughout their life. In these rituals, demonic entities are invoked, to coerce the person into servant hood, loyalty, and secrecy; as well as reinforce the programming being done.

Trainers will invoke demonic layering during programming sessions. This is done after acute trauma. The person is asked if they want more pain, and they will always say "no". The trainer then offers them a way out: if they will accept a "protector" or "protectors" they won't be hurt any more. The trainers will want this, knowing that with these "protectors'" they can shorten the training sessions. The protectors, or guardians, will reinforce the programming internally, without outside help. This concept will seem controversial to people who do not believe in spiritual realities, but I am only describing what the

Illuminists believe, and their trainers practice.

Spiritual programming will also include: being forced to memorize rituals, THE BOOK OF ILLUMINATION, and other books which contain cult beliefs. The person will be saturated from infancy on, in classes and training sessions, with cult beliefs. They will go to rituals where the adults participate in spiritual worship, wearing robes, and giving obeisance to the group's particular guardian deity. Moloch, Ashtaroth, Baal, Enokkim are demons who are commonly worshipped. The child may see a sacrifice, either real or a set-up, to these deities; animal sacrifices are common. The child will be forced to participate in the sacrifices, and will have to go through blood baptism.

They will be forced to take the heart, or other internal organs, out of an animal that has been sacrificed, and eat them. The adults, and leaders of the group, will place their hands on the child's head, while it is drugged, and invoke demonic entities.

One ritual which is actually programming is the "resuscitation ritual". In this ritual, the child may be heavily drugged, and shocked or tortured, to the point that his heart may stop. The head priest will then "resuscitate " the child, using drugs, CPR, and incantations. When the child comes back, and is awake, he or she will be told that they were "brought back to life" by the demonic entity that the particular group worships, and that now the child owes it their life. They are told that if they ever tell, or try to get the demon to leave, they will return to the lifeless state they were in prior to resuscitation.

Spiritual "healings" due to the demonic are also common. Injuries caused by torture, or programming sessions, or even military exercises, will be healed almost instantaneously during invocations.

Jewel programming will often have demons loyal to the generational family spirits layered in. These are called the "family jewels". The demons "guard them" and help protect the programming surrounding them.

In a sense, every ritual that a young child is part of, is an intense programming experience, as the child observes the adults around them, and imitates their behavior. The child will be severely punished if it falls asleep, and will be told that demons will kill it if it goes to sleep again during a ritual.

They are taught to be completely silent, no matter what they witness during the rituals. The child will witness things that seem utterly unbelievable, including faces appearing transformed by the demonic, channeling, other voices coming out of a leader's mouth, reading of members, telling the future. Group guidance will often be given through channeling of a strong spirit or principality; members who can channel powerful spirits and survive are respected, and their guidance will be looked for.

Some groups will use scriptures negatively or program the child to hate Christian symbols and theology. Other groups will encourage the amnesic front to embrace a Christian lifestyle, while forcing the back alters to renounce and blaspheme the choices the front has made, to separate the two alter groups even further. The cult alters will be told that since they renounced Christianity, they have committed the

“unpardonable sin” and can never be forgiven. They will be shown scriptures that supposedly back this up.

In moments of despair, during intense torture or isolation, a person will often cry out to God for help. The trainers or other cult members will often mock the person, telling the person that God has forgotten them, or ask “where is God now? He must hate you.....”

Any negative experience the person undergoes, will be used to reinforce the concept that they have been abandoned by God. The cult will gleefully point out the contradictions between what the person experiences, and what Christianity teaches should happen to them.

They may distort scriptures, or use false scriptures. They may distort Christian hymns, or use them in programming. A favorite hymn is “may the circle be unbroken”, since it can have two meanings.

Suggestions:

Spiritual programming can be some of the most damaging programming within a person’s systems, since it attempts to cut them off from the source of real healing. It is an intentional distortion of truth, with events calculated to teach and reinforce wrong concepts of God. Many survivors are unable to hear Christian terms, or are intensely triggered by any religious discussion.

The survivor and therapist need to realize that these negative reactions are the result of years of false teaching, pain, punishment, distortion and set-ups. It is important not to judge the parts of the person that are negative towards spirituality, or come out, proclaiming the power and benefits of cult spirituality. The survivor’s front may be horrified to hear or learn about parts that have these feelings, especially if they are a strong Christian. These parts inside are sharing the only reality they have ever known, and need time and patience to ground, and experience reality outside of the cult setting.

Demonic oppression may need to be dealt with, and even deliverance, to bring relief to a system that is being terrorized by the demonic.

Each therapist and survivor will need to come to terms with their own spiritual beliefs. I personally believe that a therapist needs to consider the possibility of the demonic, since this is what the survivor has been exposed to all their life. The cult certainly does believe it is real, and anyone who has been involved in a cult setting will have had experiences that are in-explainable by normal rational scientific principles.

The survivor needs hope, and healing. A positive spirituality based on love, gentleness, forgiveness, that is the opposite of the coercing, punitive, negative spirituality the survivor has known, will help immensely in the healing process. A spiritual belief system that offers hope, healing, grace, mercy, and affirmation will often give the survivor the support they need to go on during the often difficult process of healing.

top

Chapter Fifteen

Core splits, Denial programming, the last Five Steps of Discipline

Virtual Reality Programming

Virtual reality programming (VR) is a form of programming that has become more and more widely used in the past few decades. It involves the person being placed in VR headsets and suit while a cult created VR disk is used to run the program. It can be used to create 3D and holographic images, and especially is useful in scripted programming, and target practice sequences for assassin training. Under hypnosis , the person will really believe they are in the scene.

Virtually any scenario can be recreated. Images to be “burned in” will be shown on the VR disk, and reinforced repetitively during the programming sequence. Some trainers feel it removes the element of “human error” in training, and use it quite extensively. VR programming, like any other programming, means going inside and finding out the distortions that were placed in the parts that went through the programming, allowing them to see how they were deceived, and dealing with the trauma associated with the programming.

Denial Programming:

Denial programming begins with the first experiences the infant goes through in life. The child has been horrendously wounded and traumatized, yet the next morning, the adults around him are acting normally, as if nothing had happened. They are modeling a lifestyle of denial for the infant and young child. This is reinforced later by the child being told:

“It was just a bad dream” (oh, how the child wants to believe this lie. It makes the pain less to think it didn’t really happen)

“It’s just your imagination; it isn’t really happening” (which is again embraced as an escape from the horror). Denial will also be fed by the adults around the child telling them that they will never be believed if they disclose. There will be set ups to teach the child what they see and hear, and to teach the child to trust outside adults to tell them their reality.

A typical set up will go like this:

The adult will hold an object such as an orange in their hand, and ask the young child, about age two or

three, “what is this?”. The child will quickly respond, “oh, an orange!” The child will be shocked, and told, “no, it’s an apple.” The child will be confused, because what they are looking at is obviously an orange. It is the color orange, smells like an orange, looks like an orange. The question will be repeated. The child may answer again,” an orange,” and will be shocked again. Finally, the child, unsure and not wanting to be punished, will say, “an apple,” and be praised.

The purpose of this exercise is to teach the child to not trust their own reality, and look to outside adults or leaders to tell them what reality really is.

That is the basis of denial: the person learns to not trust their own reality, because of punishment and fear when they have spoken the truth.

Alters will be created as the child grows, whose purpose is to deny the cult abuse. If any leakage or breakthrough occurs, the denial alter’s job is to create a plausible explanation: it was a nightmare, a book the person read, a movie they saw, etc. These alters will read and quote literature that refutes SRA. THESE ALTERS OFTEN BELIEVE THAT THEY ARE SAVING THE LIFE OF THE SURVIVOR. They have been told that if the survivor remembers, and believes the abuse, the survivor will be killed, or the denial alter will be severely punished or shattered for not doing their job. These parts have a vested interest in their job: they believe their very existence and they body’s survival, depend upon them.

Suggestions:

Arguing with a denial alter will not work, since they are not motivated by logic, but fear. A better approach is to ask them what they fear if the person remembers. This will open up the deception and lies that were ground in. They may be protecting the survivor from suicidal alters behind them, who are programmed to kick in if denial is broken through. Allowing them to vent their concerns, and enlisting the aid of helpers or cognitives who do not have suicidal or denial programming will help. Showing them reality in a gentle way, allowing them to “listen in” on others who share will go a long way.

Some denial is the natural consequence of self protection from the horrors of abuse; not all denial is programming. But if denial is constantly blocking therapy, and causing it to come to a complete standstill; if the person becomes highly suicidal every time denial is set aside briefly, then the possibility needs to be considered. Safety, inner cooperation, and patience will go a long way in decreasing denial. As denial backs down, you can expect an immense amount of grieving as the truth is realized. Denial protected the survivor from the horrendous pain of the truth, and should be let go of extremely slowly and cautiously, with plenty of support during the grieving stage.

Core splits:

Core splits are intentional traumatic splits created from the core personality.

The core may be literally “splintered” by overwhelming psychological and physical/spiritual trauma. The trauma needed to create a core split must be very early and psychologically devastating. Fetal splits may occur, but they are rarely a core split; instead, the core creates an alter, but remains.

Core splits are done between the ages of 18 months and three years. Usually at least one parent or main caretaker is involved in the trauma, because this creates the psychological devastation necessary to split the core. Physical trauma alone rarely causes core splits. The torture is intense and prolonged, until the child collapses. It may be shocking, stretching, being hung in a high place, or a combination of several techniques. Being placed in “shock boxes”, or near drowning are also used.

The techniques that create core splits are also dangerous, since they can also cause autism if the child cannot endure the programming. When I was in the cult, I fought to stop core splitting because occasionally children were lost or the foundational personality was too weakened.

The core may split into two, three, or up to eight splits internally. Each split will be a piece of the “core child”. The original core will not resurface after splitting. These splits are used by cult trainers to be used as templates to create systems within the child. A core split, or a split from one, will be a strong alter, and can be re-split many times in the programming process, to create a multifaceted and diverse system within.

Suggestions:

Core splits represent intense foundational trauma. They will be the basis for later systems, which may be completely dissociated from the split as time goes on. Work on core splits should go very slowly, and only late in the therapy process when there is immense intrasystem cooperation. The survivor will need every internal resource to deal with these traumas, and plenty of outside therapeutic support.

It may mean hospitalization unless the survivor can keep the trauma from emerging too quickly, and the therapist and survivor can go extremely slow.

Other, less dissociated systems and fragments should be integrated.

Acknowledging the abuse cognitively will be the first step in dealing with core trauma. Letting more dissociated parts grieve about “hearing about” what happened may come next. Allowing feelings near the core to come close, a little at a time, with helpers and internal nurturers offering support will help.

These feelings should be titrated, and looked at a little at a time. Splits may be different ages, and may need to express themselves in different ways.

There may be “dream programming”, a “fantasy world”, or other flight from reality surrounding the core splits, that protects them from contact with the outside world, which is perceived as brutal and cold. Parts may be completely disconnected from outside reality in an effort to buffer pain.

Slow, patient nurturing and reality orientation will help these tremendously traumatized parts begin to join outer reality. Some parts will always have been aware of what happened, but won't care to join the outside world.

Patience, allowing them to vent, will help most.

Steps of Discipline:

Step seven: Not caring

This step will take the child further into a perpetrator role. The child will be forced to hurt others and prove their ability to not care during the process.

Step eight: Time travel

The child will be taught spiritual principles of "traveling" both internally and externally, with set ups, role playing, and guided exercises reinforced with trauma. The goal will be to reach "enlightenment", an ecstatic state of dissociation reached after severe trauma.

Steps nine, ten, eleven:

These will involve programming that will vary according to the child's future role in the cult. Sexual trauma, learning to dissociate and increase cognition, decrease feeling will be emphasized in these steps.

Step twelve: "coming of age"

A ceremony of becoming at age twelve to thirteen, the child will be formally inducted into the cult and their adult role in a ceremony of "coming of age". They will prove this ability by performing the role/job they have been training for, to the satisfaction of the trainer and leaders; by undergoing a special induction ceremony. The ritual and ceremony will be held with other children of the same age, who are dressed in white and given a prize as acknowledgement that they have completed the basics of their training successfully.

They will continue to be abused, even as adults, but the major traumatization and creation of system templates will have occurred by this age. Future training will refine what was already placed in the child by this age, or build upon the foundation.

Suggestions:

Grieving the abuse, acknowledging the feelings associated with undergoing the trauma will be

important. It will be necessary to deal with perpetrator guilt, since by this time the child will be a perpetrator, and will have identified with the adult role models around them. This can be difficult to do, since perpetration will horrify the survivor when they remember this. Supporting the survivor, remaining non judgmental, and encouraging acceptance of these parts is important. Pointing out that at the time, they saw no other options available will help. Realizing that perpetrator alters saved the child's life, and that they had no other way to act, especially originally, the first time, will need to be pointed out. The survivor may feel hostile towards, or reviled by perpetrator alters, but they are the expression of the abuse and limited choices they were allowed. Grieving being a perpetrator will take time and caring support by others.

top

Other articles by Svali:

Ritual Abuse @ Suite 101

7 September 2000
On Having Need
Guest article on the struggles survivors of ritual abuse have in learning to trust and to feel that they deserve to exist and have needs.

Complex poly-fragmentation: a coping mechanism for the Survivor

12 Aug 2000
Therapists Speak out on Healing
Article discusses topic of what helps in healing from ritual abuse, from the perspective of therapists in the field. *Important note: this article is not meant to be therapy, and only offers general opinions

28 Jul 2000
Therapists Speak Out on Ritual Abuse
Therapists discuss: is ritual abuse real? And some of their opinions on this subject.

16 Jul 2000
A Survivor's Testimony: article by Kim Campbell
Description of one survivor's healing from ritual abuse, and the process of deliverance, from a Christian perspective.

2 July 2000
Breaking Free of the Cult
An article that addresses issues facing the person who wishes to leave a transgenerational cult, including safety

16 June 2000
How the Cult Programs People: Part Two
Second half of article on cult programming

15 June 2000
How the Cult Programs People
Brief description of some of the ways the Illuminati program their members. Warning: may be triggering to survivors, please use caution and stay safe.

3 June 2000
How the Cult Makes Money
Describes activities the cult is engaged in to make money

21 May 2000
On Dissociation: Part Two
Continuation of article, discussing dissociation and some of its impact in the lives of survivors of ritual abuse.

20 May 2000
Survivors Speak Out: on Dissociation: Part One
Discusses the experience of dissociation from the perspective of survivors of ritual abuse

8 May 2000
Survivors Speak Out on Remembering: part two
Various survivors discuss the process of remembering ritual abuse.

7 May 2000
Survivors Speak Out on Remembering: part one
Survivors of ritual abuse speak out on the process of remembering

26 April 2000
Why the cult doesn't get caught
A description of security measures used to prevent detection by a cult group, how they maintain secrecy.

18 April 2000
Cults that abuse
Discussion of cults that abuse, based on Singer's model of conditions for thought reform.

10 April 2000
Ritual abuse: Modern hysteria or ancient practice?

Discusses ritual abuse in a historical context, starting with the Ancient Assyrians, until modern times.

8 March 2000

Ritual abuse: the under-recognized problem

A series of articles that describe the reality of ritual abuse, cult groups, and the effects on survivors as well as perspectives of breaking free of cult abuse.

Copyright © 1996-2000 Suite101.com, Inc., All rights reserved.
http://www.suite101.com/articles.cfm/ritual_abuse

All logos and trademarks in this site are property of their respective owner.
FAIR USE NOTICE: This site contains copyrighted material the use of which has not always been specifically authorized by the copyright owner. We are making such material available in our efforts to advance understanding of environmental, political, human rights, economic, democracy, scientific, and social justice issues, and for the general purpose of criticism, comment, news reporting, teaching, research and / or educational purposes only. We believe this constitutes a 'fair use' of any such copyrighted material as provided for in section 107 of the US Copyright Law. In accordance with Title 17 U.S.C. Section 107, the material on this site is distributed without profit to those who have expressed a prior interest in receiving the included information for research and educational purposes. If you wish to use this material for purposes other than provided by law. You must obtain permission from the copyright owner. For more information go to: http://www.law.cornell.edu/uscode/17/107.shtml,

---

© 1995-2003 Heart, MTC Online Forums, and Survivors.
Nothing can be copied with out permission

This Page Last Updated:

Svali Speaks MKultra Monarch

Table of Contents

Reprinted here with authors permission

Appendix Equipment Used By Trainers

Chapter 1:

- 1)An overview of the Illuminati
- 2.)Hierarchy of the Illuminati
- 3.)How the Illuminati Make Money

Chapter 2: Jobs in the Illuminati (Or Why They Spend All That Time Training Everybody)

Chapter 3: Conspiracy Theory Two, or The Illuminati Plan to Rule The World. (Also know as "Novus Ordem Seclorum)

Chapter 4:How the Illuminati Program People

Chapter 5: Colors, Metals and Jewel Programming

About the author:

Hi, my name is Svali. Both I and my entire family were involved in a cult group until several years ago, when we broke free. I used to be a programmer in the cult, and now I want to share the knowledge that I have to help others.

It is possible to break free of cult abuse if a person is involved. It is a long, heart-breaking process, but well worth it. In the articles that I will be providing, I hope to help the survivor of cult abuse find tools to help in their journey towards freedom.

I have been a consultant to an on-line survivors group that helps people dealing with issues related to cult programming and becoming free, for the past year and a half. I myself have been in therapy for ritual abuse and DID for nine years, with the last five being aware of the recent cult abuse.

I am also a writer, and a registered nurse. I currently work as a diabetic educator in Texas 20 hours a week.

I have also self-published a book on breaking free of cult programming, which several experts in the field have said has "invaluable information" for the survivor of ritual abuse.

Both my ex-husband and my two children broke free of cult abuse last year. My children are living with me while my husband is working on healing. They all have DID (dissociative identity disorder, formerly known as multiple personality disorder) as well, which makes life at home interesting! I am currently married to my second husband, who is also a recovered DID and who got out of the cult five years ago.

Chapter 6: Brain Wave Programming

Chapter 7: Military Programming

Chapter 8: CIA , Governmental, and Scholarship programming

Chapter 9: Programming Linked to Stories, Movies, Cartoons, or role Play Dramatization

Chapter 10: The Sixth step of Discipline: Betrayal; twinning; internal walls, structures, geometry

Chapter 11: Suicidal Programming

Chapter 12: Preventing Reaccessing of the Survivor

Chapter 13: Shell programming, Internal Councils, Human Experimentation, Function Codes

Chapter 14: Spiritual Programming

Chapter 15: Core splits, Denial programming, the last Five Steps of Discipline Virtual Reality Programming

Other articles by Svali:

Appendix

Equipment Frequently Used by Trainers:

It may help therapists to realize the equipment that trainers use. If their client describes these items, which may appear quite sophisticated, believe them. The cult has become quite technologically advanced.

Training room: the average training room is a neutral colored room, with walls painted either a dull gray, white, or beige. Some may be painted in various colors, as part of color coding. They are often located in secret underground rooms, or basements of large private residences, and will be entered from the main building through a covered doorway. Impromptu training rooms may be set up during military exercises outdoors, in covered canvas tents.

Trainers: the Illuminati have a rule: there must always be a minimum of two trainers working with a person. This prevents a trainer from being either too severe, or permissive, or developing too close a bond with the subject; the watchful eye of the other trainer prevents this. Younger trainers are paired with older, more experienced trainers. The older trainer will teach the younger, who does most of the actual work. If the younger is unable to finish a task, or loses heart, the older one will step in.

Head trainers: will teach, they will also work with the council leaders and hierarchy. All members are required to come in for a "tune up" (reinforcing programming), even top leaders, from time to time.

EEG machine: will often have abbreviated hookups for quick use. Used extensively with brain wave programming; also to verify that a certain alter is out when called up. May be used to verify deep trance state before initiating deep programming. Trainers are taught to read these readouts.

Trainer's table: a large table, frequently steel covered with plastic, or easily cleaned material. On the sides at intervals are restraints for arms, legs, neck to prevent movement.

Trainer's chair: large chair with arm rests. Will have restraints as above at intervals to restrain movement while person sits in chair.

Shock equipment: models and types are quite varied, depending on age and company. Most have a set of rubber covered wires, with electrodes that may be connected with Velcro, rubber (steel tips imbedded under finger and toe nail beds), or gel pads (larger body areas such as chest, arms, legs). Some are tiny electrodes, which can be taped next to eyes, or placed within genitalia. These are connected to the "shock box", which has controls that can determine amount of electricity , and frequency, if interval shocks are desired.

Drugs: any number of opiates, barbiturates, hypnotics, sedatives, anesthetic agents. Resuscitative drugs, antidotes are also kept, clearly labeled and indexed. Many drugs, especially experimental ones, are only known by code names, such as "alphin 1".

CPR equipment: in case person has adverse reaction to drugs or programming. At times, a child alter will come out inadvertently during a programming sequence, and will be overdosed with the drugs meant for adult alters. The trainers must give it the antidote, and resuscitate it, just as if a real child is out. They are well aware of this fact, and will severely punish child alters, to teach them to come out only when called out.

Virtually reality headsets: the keystone in recent years. Many programming sequences utilize holographic images, and virtual reality set ups, including assassination programs, where the person realistically "kills" another human being. These virtual disks are far more advanced than those in video arcades.

Body building equipment: used in military training to increase fitness, lean body mass.

Steel instruments: used to insert into orifices, cause pain

Stretch machine: used as punishment, "stretches " person without breaking bones. Extremely painful.

Trainer's grids and projectors: used to project grids on wall or ceiling.

Movie projector: to show movies, although new VR disks are replacing these computer: collect and analyze data; keep computer grid on person's system. Current military computer access codes will be used to download into governmental computers.

Trainer's Journals: contain indexed copies of subject's systems, including key alters, command codes, etc.

Comfort objects: used to comfort subject afterwards. May be toy or candy for child alters, or oils for massage. Warm towels, or beverages may be given, as the trainer "bonds with" and comforts person they

worked with. This is probably the most important part of the training process, as the trainer explains calmly, kindly how well the person did, how proud they are of them.

top

Chapter One
An overview of the Illuminati

In order to understand Illuminati cult programming, it is first necessary to understand a bit about the structure and philosophy of the organization. The Illuminati are a group of people who follow a philosophy known as "Illuminism" or "enlightenment". The Illuminati were named several hundred years ago, but trace their roots and history to the ancient mystery religions of Egypt, ancient Babylon, and even Mesopotamia. Out of these ancient religions, which were practiced secretly over hundreds and hundreds of years, there arose esoteric groups which continued to practice the rites, traditions, and enculturation brought in from the original groups.

Over the centuries, these groups practiced openly in some countries, and covertly in countries where Christianity or other religions opposed their practices. Some of the groups which came out of these ancient roots included the order of the Knights Templar, Rosicrucian's, Baphetomism, and Druidic cults. These groups were the forerunners, or roots, of modern day Illuminism. The original Illuministic leaders chose to take what they felt were the best practices of each root religion, combine them into principles, then organized these principles according to specific guidelines.

Modern day Illuminism is a philosophy funded by the wealthy, but practiced in all social strata. It is a philosophy whose tenets have spread across the world. It started with the German branch of Rosicrucian's, spread to England, then came to the United states with the first settlers.

The Illuminati have 3 main branches: the Germanic branch, which oversees the others, the British branch, which handles finances, and the French/Russian branch. All 3 branches are represented in both the United States and Canada, as well as every country in the world.

How the Illuminati are organized in the United States:

The Illuminati have groups in every major city of the United States. They originally entered the U.S. through Pittsburgh, Pa., and from there, spread across the US. There are 18 cities across the US, which are considered major "power centers" for Illuminati power and/or influence. These include: Washington, DC and the surrounding areas; Albany, New York; Pittsburgh, Pa. the "golden triangle" of the Winston Salem, Raleigh, NC area, Minneapolis, Minn, Ann Arbor, Mich, Wichita, Kan., Phoenix, Az., Portland, Or., Flagstaff, Az., Seattle, Wash., Houston, TX., Los Angeles, CA. and surrounding areas, Atlanta, Ga., New Orleans, La., Springfield, Miss. Other cities are important to the Illuminati, as all, but these cities

funnel money for them, conduct research, and often regional councils sit within them.

Hierarchy of the Illuminati

The Illuminati have organized their society along extremely hierarchical, or stratified, levels. In fact, the top levels are known as:

Hierarchical level

The Illuminati have divided the United States into 7 geographical regions; each region has its own regional council, composed of 13 members, with an advisory board of 3 elders to each one. These regions interact for purposes of finances; personnel; teaching, etc. Beneath each regional council, is a local council. This is a council of 13 members, the head of whom sits on the regional council, and gives it information about the local groups underneath his leadership. The local council will also have an advisory council of 3.

A local leadership council in a large metropolitan area might look like this:

- Head of local council (reports to regional council)
- Two intermediaries (report all activities under leader to him)
- Four administrators (oversee finances, administer, set up group activities)
- Six head trainers (over trainers in local groups, teach other trainers)

Underneath the above leadership council, will be six people designated as informers or intermediaries, who go to the local group meetings, interact with local group leaders, and report to the leadership council.

Anarchical level: the levels below the leadership council are known as the anarchical levels.

Underneath the intermediate level, is the local group level. It will look like this:

Local "Sister groups" (will vary in number, according to the size of the city, or cities, in the area). A large metropolitan area may have anywhere from ten to twenty seven groups.

Each sister group will be headed up by:

A high priest and priestess: this job is rotated every 3 years, to allow different people within the group to take on leadership roles. Each group will also have different members, with specific roles/jobs within the group. These roles will be addressed in Chapter 2.

One thing that I would like to emphasize is the fact that the Illuminati today are generational. There

members are born into the group, which is highly organized, as described above. The set up discussed above is representative, with minor variations, of most major metropolitan regions of the United States. Smaller population centers will be organized under similar guidelines, but will be umbrellaed together with several cities within the region to create the local leadership council.

HOW THE ILLUMINATI MAKE MONEY

The Illuminati are involved in many areas of making money, as they need continued financing to survive. There are several illegal enterprises that they are involved in, as well as legal ones.

- **Drug running:** The Illuminati linked up with the Mafia and the Columbians, years ago, to help each other out with bringing drugs into the United States. They also provide couriers for taking drugs and money out of the States. The Illuminists are generally wealthy businessmen, who have 4 layers of people underneath them. The fourth layer down actually has contact with the people in the drug industry. They never identify themselves as Illuminists; only as people interested in investing, with a guaranteed profit, and are highly secretive. In return, the local groups supply people willing to be couriers of money or drugs, or people willing to help cover for the local operations.

- **Pornography:** The Illuminati are linked in many cities with pornography/prostitution/child prostitution/ and white slavery sales. Again, several layers are present, as a buffer, between the true "management" and those either engaged in the activities, or in paying for/funding and eventually being paid for the activities.

- **Children:** are often supplied from the local cult groups, and taught to be child prostitutes (and later, adult prostitutes); are photographed and filmed in every type of pornography available, including "snuff films" and violent films.

- **Gun running:** The Illuminati and other groups are also involved in international gun sales and shipments. The Illuminists have well trained couriers who will cross international and state lines. These couriers are highly secretive, and will not reveal their sources, on pain of suicide or assassination. These people are accountable to others above them, with two more "buffer layers" of people above these, before the person in the Illuminati with money, who helps fund this, is found.

- **Buying access codes for military computers:** The Illuminati will have people from all strata of civilian life trained to go and make pickups near or on military bases. A typical person used might be the innocent looking wife of a military person, a local businessman, or even a college student. There is a contact inside the base, also a dissociative Illuminist, who brings the information to the outside contact. Occasionally, the contact person is paid with money, information, or goods. The military computer codes are changed on random schedules; the Illuminati have at least 5 or 6 contacts on each major base, who alert them when the codes are

getting ready to change, on pain of death. The Illuminists like having access to military computers, because that will gain them entrance to closed files the world over.

- **Hiring and selling assassinations:** this is done worldwide, more in Europe than in the States. These people are paid big money to do either a private or political assassination. The money is paid either to the assassin, or to the trainer; usually they both divide the fee The assassin is offered protection in another country for awhile, until the trail runs cold. If the kill is done in Europe they may be sent to the far east or the U.S., and vice versa if the kill is done in the U.S. The Illuminati have a wide arena of places and false identities to hide these people, unless for some reason they want the assassin disposed of as well. Then, he/she is caught and immediately executed.

- **Mercenaries/military trainers:** guess who gets paid money to come in and train paramilitary groups? Who has training camps all over the states of Montana, Nevada, and North Dakota? Who occasionally will offer their expertise in return for a large financial reward? They never advertise themselves as Illuminati, unless the group is known to be sympathetic to their cause. Instead, these are tough, cold, brutal military trainers, who offer to teach these groups in return for money, or even better, a promise to affiliate with their group in return (loyalty in return for knowledge). More and more paramilitary groups have been brought into the Illuminati this way, without their full knowledge of who and what the group really is. This gives the Illuminists a way to monitor these groups (their trainers report on them, and their activities), and it can be useful to have trained military groups that they can call on someday.

- **Banking:** The original Illuminists were bankers, and they have highly trained financiers to organize their money, and funnel the above illicit funds into more "respectable" front groups/ organizations. They will also start benevolent charities, community organizations, etc., as fronts, and funnel the money from a broad base into these groups. The Illuminati particularly pride themselves on their money making and manipulation skills, and their ability to cover their paper trails expertly, through layer after layer.

  All banking trails eventually will lead to Belgium, the Illuminati financial center for the world. These are some of the major money making enterprises that the Illuminati are engaged in. They have a lot of financial resources, backing their enterprises, which means that in reality they can engage the best lawyers, accountants, etc. to help cover their trail as well.

top

Chapter Two:

Jobs in the Illuminati (or Why They Spend All That Time Training People)

To understand generational programming, it helps to understand WHY the cult goes to the amount of trouble that it does to place programming into people. Training represents time and effort, and no one- especially a cult member- will spend that amount of energy unless there will be a return on the investment. This will be a simple overview of some of the more common jobs in the cult. It is not meant to be exhaustive, or in any way considered to be complete.

The cult has a very organized hierarchy of jobs. Like any large organization, in order to run smoothly, it needs people who are well trained in their jobs- so well trained, that they can do their tasks without even thinking about them. To maintain secrecy, this group must also have people completely dedicated to not revealing their roles in the cult- even under threat of death or punishment. The cult wants members who are completely loyal to the group and its tenets, who never question the orders they are given. These qualities in group members ensure the continuance of the cult, and that its secrets are never revealed to the outside world.

Here is a sampling of some jobs in the cult (not listed in order of priority)

- **Informers:** These people are trained to observe details and conversations with photographic recall. They are trained to report to their local cult leader or hierarchy, or trainer, and will download large amounts of information under hypnotic trance. Detailed knowledge of conversations or even documents can often be retrieved in this manner. They are often used as "plants" to gather information in both governmental settings, and within the cult meetings.

- **Breeders:** These people are often chosen from childhood to have and breed children. They may be chosen according to bloodlines, or given in arranged marriages or cult alliances, to "elevate" the children. A parent will often sell the services of a child as a breeder to the local cult leader in return for favors or status. These children are rarely used as a sacrifice; usually they are given to others in the cult to adopt or raise, but the breeder is told that any child born to her was "sacrificed" to prevent her looking for the child. Occasionally, in anarchical cults, a local leader or parent will have a child as the result of an incestuous liaison. Such a child is given away or killed, but the mother will be told the child was given away to a distant branch, and must be given up.

- **Prostitutes:** Prostitutes can be a male or female of any age. They are trained from earliest childhood to give sexual favors to one or more adults in return for payment to the child's parents or their local cult group. Occasionally, the prostitute may be given to a member of the cult, on a temporary basis, as a "reward" for a job well done. Child prostitution is a big business for the cult, and training very young children in this role is taken very seriously. Child prostitutes are also used to blackmail political figures or leadership outside the cult.

- **Pornography**A child used in pornography (which may include bestiality) can also be of any age or sex. Child pornography is also big business in the cult, and includes snuff films. Children are

trained in this role from preschool on, often with the help or approval of the child's parents. The parents are paid or given favors by the cult in return for selling their child or allowing their child to be trained in this area.

- **Media personnel**These are very bright, verbal people. They will be sent to journalism school and will work for local or regional media upon graduation. These individuals have many contacts within the organization as well as the outside world. They write books and articles sympathetic to the Illuministic viewpoint without ever revealing their true affiliation. They will tend to do biased research in their articles, favoring only one viewpoint, such as denying the existence of DID or ritual abuse. For instance, they will interview only psychiatrists/psychologists sympathetic to this viewpoint and will skew data to present a convincing picture to the general public. If necessary, they will outright lie or make up data to support their viewpoint. There are members of groups whose people have been purposely trained to try and help formulate public opinion on the nonexistence of the cult (i.e., cults don't exist, no rational person would believe this "mass hysteria"). The Illuminists believe that to control the media is to control the thinking of the masses. For this reason, they take training media personnel quite seriously. Helpers at rituals Cleaners clean up meticulously after rituals. They will scour the site after a ceremony, rake the area, etc. They are taught this job from preschool years on.

- **Preparers:** set up tables, cloths, candles, and paraphernalia quickly and efficiently. This job is learned from infancy on.

- **Readers:** read from the book of Illumination or local group archives; they also keep copies of sacred literature in a safe vault and are trained in ancient languages. Readers are valued for their clear speaking voices and ability to dramatize important passages and bring them to life.

- **Cutters:** are taught to dissect animal or human sacrifices (they are also known as the "slicers and dicers" of the cult). They can do a kill quickly, emotionlessly, and efficiently. They are trained from early childhood on.

- **Chanters:** sing, sway, or lead choruses of sacred songs on high holy occasions.

- **High Priest/Priestess:** The person who holds this job is changed every few years in most groups, although it may be held longer in smaller, more rural groups. These people administrate and lead their local cult group as well as coordinate jobs within the cult, give assignments, and pass on meeting dates given from the local hierarchy or leadership council. They also will activate the local group's telephone tree, evaluate their local group members for job performance, and lead in all spiritual activities. They report to the local or regional leadership council over their group.

- **Trainers:** These people teach local group members their assigned jobs and monitor the performance of these jobs at local group meetings or after an assigned task. These people report to the high priest/priestess over their group, as ell as to the local head trainer on leadership

council.

- **Punishers**These are the people who brutally punish/discipline members caught breaking rules or acting outside of or above their authority. They are universally despised by other cult members, although they will be praised for a job well done by the local high priest or priestess. Usually physically strong, they will employ any method deemed necessary to prevent a recurrence of the undesired behavior. Punishment may be public or private, depending upon the severity of the infraction. Each local group has several punishers.

- **Trackers:**These people will track down and keep an eye on members who attempt to leave their local group. They are taught to use dogs, guns, taser, and all necessary tracking techniques. They are also adept at using the internet to monitor a person's activities. They will track credit card use, checks written, and employ other methods to find a missing person.

- **Teachers:** These people teach group classes to children to indoctrinate cult philosophy, languages, and specialized areas of endeavor.

- **Child care:** These people care for very young children when the adults are at local group meeting. Usually care is for young infants only. After age two, children are routinely engaged in some form of group activity led by trainers of the youngest children. Infant child care workers are usually quiet and coldly efficient.

- **Couriers:** These members run guns, money, drugs, or illegal artifacts across state or national lines. Usually they are people who are young and single without outside accountability. They are trained in the use of firearms to get out of difficult situations. They must be reliable and able to get past any anticipated barriers.

- **Commanding officers:**These people oversee military training in the local groups and help ensure the smooth running of these exercises. They will delegate jobs to those ranking under them and are responsible to the local leadership council. The council will have at least one member on it representing the military branch of the Illuminati. In addition, there are many military- related jobs beneath the commanding officers.

- **Behavioral scientists:**These individuals often oversee the training in local and regional groups. These students of human behavior are intensely involved in data collection and human experimentation in the name of the pursuit of knowledge of human behavior in the scientific realm. They are almost universally cold, methodical, impersonal people and will employ any methods to study trauma and its effects on the human personality. Their main interest centers around implementing programming and cult control in the most efficient and lasting manner.

There are many other jobs inside the cult. The cult spends quite a bit of its time getting people to do these jobs for them for FREE, which is why they PROGRAM people to believe they are doing their

"family" and the world a service. The reality, of course, is that the individual is being abused and taken advantage of by the cult.

top

CHAPTER THREE:
CONSPIRACY THEORY TWO, OR THE ILLUMINATI PLAN TO RULE THE WORLD
(ALSO KNOWN AS "NOVUS ORDEM SECLORUM")

Prior to discussing actual programming techniques, it is important to understand the philosophy underlying why the Illuminists are programming people. All groups have goals, and the Illuminists are no exception. Money making is not their final goal - it is a means to an end. This end point, or goal, is no less than to rule the world. The Illuminati has a set plan similar to the Soviet Union's previous "5- year" and "10- year " plans. This is what the Illuminists themselves believe and teach their followers as gospel truth.

Whether they will actually succeed is another matter altogether. The following is the Illuminist agenda at ALL levels of the Illuminati. As with any goal, the Illuminati has specific steps which it plans to implement to reach its objectives. Briefly, each region of the United States has "nerve centers" or power bases for regional activity. The United States has been divided up into seven major geographical regions. Each region has localities within it that contain military compounds and bases that are hidden in remote, isolated areas or on large private estates.

These bases are used intermittently to teach and train generational Illuminati in military techniques, hand- to- hand combat, crowd control, use of arms, and all aspects of military warfare. Why? Because the Illuminists believe that our government, as we know it, as well as the governments of most nations around the world, are destined to collapse. These will be planned collapses, and they will occur in the following ways:

The Illuminati has planned first for a financial collapse that will make the great depression look like a picnic. This will occur through the maneuvering of the great banks and financial institutions of the world, through stock manipulation, and interest rate changes. Most people will be indebted to the federal government through bank and credit card debt, etc. The governments will recall all debts immediately, but most people will be unable to pay and will be bankrupted. This will cause generalized financial panic which will occur simultaneously worldwide, as the Illuminists firmly believe in controlling people through finances.

Next there will be a military takeover, region by region, as the government declares a state of emergency

and martial law. People will have panicked, there will be an anarchical state in most localities, and the government will justify its move as being necessary to control panicked citizens. The cult trained military leaders and people under their direction will use arms as well as crowd control techniques to implement this new state of affairs. This is why so many survivors under 36 years of age report having military programming. People who are not Illuminists or who are not sympathetic to their cause, will resist. The Illuminists expect this and will be (and are BEING) trained in how to deal with this eventuality. They are training their people in hand-to- hand combat, crowd control, and, if necessary, will kill to control crowds. The Illuminati is training their people to be prepared for every possible reaction to the takeover. Many mind control victims will also be called into duty with preset command codes. These codes are meant to call out a new, completely cult loyal presenting system. Shatter codes programmed under trauma will be used to destroy or bury non-cult loyal alters.

Military bases will be set up, in each locality (actually, they are already here, but are covert). In the next few years, they will go above ground and be revealed. Each locality will have regional bases and leaders to which they are accountable. The hierarchy will closely reflect the current covert hierarchy.

About five years ago, when I left the Illuminati, approximately 1% of the US population was either part of the Illuminati, sympathetic to it, or a victim of Mind Control (and therefore considered useable). While this may not sound like many, imagine 1% of the population highly trained in the use of armaments, crowd control, psychological and behavioral techniques, armed with weapons and linked to paramilitary groups.

These people will also be completely dedicated to their cause. The Illuminati firmly believes that it can easily overcome the other 99% of the population, most of whom are untrained, or poorly trained, such as "weekend hunters." Even the local military will be overcome as the Illuminati will have regional cell groups with highly trained leaders. They also count on the element of surprise helping them during their takeover. Many of the highest leaders in the militia branch of the Illuminati are or have been officers in the military, and so already have a good knowledge of which techniques will work best to overcome a region's or locality's defenses.

After the military takeover, the general population will be given a chance to either espouse the Illuminati's cause, or reject it (with imprisonment, pain, even death being possible punishments). These people very much believe that the intelligent, or "enlightened" or Illuminated, were born to rule. They are arrogant, and consider the general population as "dumb sheep" who will be easily led if offered strong leadership, financial help in an unstable world economy, and dire consequences if the person rebels. Their utter ruthlessness, and ability to implement this agenda, should not be minimized.

The Illuminati banking leaders, such as the Rothschilds, the Van derBilts, the Rockefellers, the Carnegies, and the Mellons, as examples, will reveal themselves, and offer to "save" the floundering world economy. A new system of monetary exchange, based on an international monetary system, and based between Cairo, Egypt, and Brussels, Belgium, will be set up. A true "one world economy", creating the longed for "one world order", will become reality.

There is more to the Illuminist agenda, but these are the basics of it. This agenda is what the Illuminati really, truly, believe, teach, and train for. They are willing to give their lives up in this cause, in order to teach the next generation, as they believe that their children are their legacy. I was told that my children's generation would see this takeover, sometime in the 21st century. At present, the Illuminati have quietly and covertly fostered their takeover plan by their goals of the infiltration of:

1.The media
2.The banking system
3.The educational system
4.The government, both local and federal
5.The sciences
6.The churches

They are currently, and have been working the last several hundred years, on taking over these 6 areas. They do NOT go to an institution, and say "hi, I'm a local Illuminist, and I'd like to take over your bank). Instead, they begin by having several people quietly invest funds over several years, gradually buying more and more shares in the bank (or other institution that they wish to control), until they have a financial controlling interest in it. They never openly disclose their agenda, or their cult activities, as often they are amnesic to them. These are well respected, "Christian" appearing business leaders in the community. The image in the community is all important to an Illuminist; they will do anything to maintain a normal, respected facade, and DESPISE exposure. On one leadership in a major metropolitan city, where I was a member, there sat: one head of the local small business administration; one CEO of a government defense firm; one principal of a Christian school; one vice mayor of the city; one journalist; one nurse; one doctor; one behavioral psychologist, one army Colonel, and one navy Commander. All except one attended church weekly; all were well respected within the community. NONE of them appeared "evil", or "marked".

If you met them in person, you would probably instantly like any of these intelligent, verbal, likeable, even charismatic people. This is their greatest cover, since we often expect great evil to "appear" evil, led by media portrayals of evil as causing changes in the face and demeanor of people, or marking them like the biblical Cain. None of the Illuminists that I have known, had unkind, or evil appearing, persona in their daytime lives, although some were dysfunctional, such as being alcoholics. The dissociation that drives the Illuminists is their greatest cover for being undetected at this time. Many, if not most, of these people are completely unaware of the great evil that they are involved in, during the night.

There are other groups which are not actually part of the Illuminati, but the Illuminati are aware of them. The Illuminati are not the only group that follows esoteric practices, or worships ancient deities or demons. They encourage divisiveness between different groups (divide and conquer is one of their ruling principles), and are not concerned about other groups. Instead, they will often welcome them into their umbrella, if possible. This has been happening more and more in recent years, as the Illuminati trade teaching their training principles, which are considered the best by most secretive groups, in exchange for loyalty to the Illuminati. They will send their trainers to these groups, and the trainers will

report to the local regional council.

In the political arena , the Illuminists will fund both sides of a race, because their greatest maxim is that "out of chaos comes order", or the discipline of anarchy. That is why they sent arms to, and funded, both sides of both the great World Wars in this century. They believe that history is a game, like chess; that only out of strategy, fighting, conflict, and testing can the strong emerge. I no longer agree with this philosophy, but at one time, I did, with all my heart. Hopefully, as these people and their agenda are exposed the common man will rise up against this intended rule to be foisted upon an unsuspecting mankind.

top

Chapter Four
How the Illuminati Program People:
An Overview of Some Basic Types of Programming

In the first few chapters, I defined Illuminism, its reach, and some of the philosophy, money making enterprises, and agendas that help explain WHY they program people. I believe that these are important to understand, as a preface to the next few chapters. Why? The programming techniques that I will describe take an incredible amount of effort, time, dedication, and planning on the part of the cult to place in the individual. Only a very motivated group of people would spend the time it takes to do this. These chapters are very hard for me to write, as an individual, since my role in the cult was that of a programmer. So, the very techniques you will be reading about were often those that I used to place programming in individuals that I worked with. I no longer do these things, nor do I espouse doing them; the reason I am writing this book is that I believe that therapists who work with DID, as well as survivors, deserve to know WHAT is done to people, HOW it is done, as well as be given some ideas on how to undo the programming that the cult places in people.

First, I would like to address unintentional programming versus intentional programming. This is also known as the environmental milieu the child is raised in. The programming of a generational Illuminati infant often begins before its birth (this will be addressed later) but once it is born, the very environment the infant is raised in becomes a form of programming. Often, the infant is raised in a family environment that combines daytime abandonment with dysfunction in the parental figures. The infant soon learns that the nighttime, and cult activities, are the truly important ones. The infant may be deprived of attention, or even abused, in the daytime; and is only treated as special, or "seen" by the parent, in the cult setting. This can lead to very young alters around the core or core splits, who feel "invisible", abandoned, rejected, unworthy of love or attention, or that they don't even exist, unless they are doing a job for their "family".

Another milieu and conditioning process the infant must face is that the adults around him/her are

INCONSISTENT, since the adults in a generational cult family are almost always also multiple, or DID. This sets up a reality for the infant/toddler that the parents act one way at home; an entirely different way at cult gatherings; and yet a different way in normal society.

Since these are the infant's earliest experiences of adults and adult behaviors, it has no choice but to accept this reality that human beings act in shockingly different ways in different settings. While unintentional, this sets the infant up for later dissociation, in mimicry of the adults around it.

INTENTIONAL PROGRAMMING

Intentional programming of an infant in the Illuminati often begins before birth. Prenatal splitting is well known in the cult, as the fetus is very capable of fragmenting in the womb due to trauma. This is usually done between the seventh and ninth month of pregnancy. Techniques used include: placing headphones on the mother's abdomen, and playing loud, discordant music (such as some modern classical pieces, or even Wagner's operas). Loud, heavy rock has also been used. Other methods include having the mother ingest quantities of bitter substances, to make the amniotic fluid bitter, or yelling at the fetus inside the womb. The mother's abdomen may be hit as well. Mild shock to the abdomen may be applied, especially when term is near, and may be used to cause premature labor, or ensure that the infant is born on a ceremonial holiday. Certain labor inducing drugs may be also given if a certain birth date is desired.

Once the infant is born, testing is begun at a very early age, usually during the first few weeks of life. The trainers, who are taught to look for certain qualities in the infant, will place it on a velvet cloth on a table, and check its reflexes to different stimuli. The infant's strength, how it reacts to heat, cold, and pain are all tested. Different infants react differently, and the trainers are looking for dissociative ability, quick reflexes, and reaction times. They are also encouraging early dissociation in the infant with these tests.

The infant will also be abused, to create fragments. Methods of abuse can include: rectal probes; digital anal rape; electric shocks at low levels to the fingers, toes, and genitalia; cutting the genitalia in ritual circumstances (in older infants). The intent is to begin fragmentation before a true ego state develops, and customize the infant to pain and reflexive dissociation from pain (yes, even tiny infants dissociate; I have seen it time and time again; they will glow blank and limp, or glassy, in the face of continued trauma.)

Isolation and abandonment programming will sometimes be begun as well, in a rudimentary sense. The infant is abandoned, or uncared for by adults, intentionally during the daytime, then picked up, soothed, cleaned up and paid attention to in the context of preparing for a ritual or group gathering. This is done in order to help the infant associate night gatherings with "love" and attention, and to help the bonding process to the cult, or "family". The infant will be taught to associate maternal attention with going to rituals, and eventually will associate cult gatherings with feelings of security.

As the infant grows older, i.e. at 15 to 18 months, more fragmenting is intentionally done by having the

parents as well as cult members abuse the infant more methodically. This is done by intermittently soothing, bonding with the infant, then shocking it on its digits; the infant may be dropped from heights to a mat or mattress and laughed at as it lays there startled and terrified, crying. It may be placed in cages for periods of time, or exposed to short periods of isolation. Deprivation of food, water, and basic needs may begin later in this stage. All of these methods are done in order to create intentional dissociation in the infant. The infant of this age may be taken to group meetings, but outside of special occasions, or dedications, will have no active role yet in the cult setting. The small infants are usually left with a cult member, or caretaker, who watches them during the group's activities; this caretaker role is usually rotated among lower level or teenage members.

Between the ages of 20 and 24 months, the toddler may begin the "steps of discipline" which the Illuminati use to teach their children. The age the child begins them will vary, depending upon the group, the parent, the trainer, and the child. These "steps of discipline" would be better called "steps of torment and abuse" as their purpose is to create a highly dissociative child, out of touch with their feelings, who is completely and unthinkingly loyal to the cult. The order of the steps may also be varied a little, depending on the whims of the trainer or parents.

I will first discuss the first five steps of discipline: (note: these steps may vary somewhat from region to region, but most follow this outline at least roughly, even if not in the same order)

First step: to not need

The small toddler/child is placed in a room without any sensory stimulus, usually a training room with gray, white, or beige walls. The adult leaves and the child is left alone, for periods of time: these may vary from hours, to an entire day as the child grows older. If the child begs the adult to stay, and not leave, or screams, the child is beaten, and told that the periods of isolation will increase until they learn to stop being weak. The ostensible purpose of this discipline is to teach the child to rely on its own internal resources, and not on outside people ("strengthen it"). What it actually does is create a huge terror of abandonment within the child. When the adult, or trainer, returns to the room, the child is often found rocking itself, or hugging itself in a corner, occasionally almost catatonic from fear. The trainer will then "rescue" the child, feed and give it something to drink and bond with the child as their "savior". The trainer will tell them the "family" told the trainer to rescue the child, because its family "loves" it. The trainer will instill cult teachings, at this point, into the helpless, fearful, and almost insanely grateful child who has just been "rescued" from isolation. The trainer will reinforce in the child over and over how much it "needs " its family, who just rescued it from death by starvation or abandonment. This will teach the very young toddler to associate comfort and security with bonding with its trainer, who may be one of its parents, and being with "family" members. The cult is very aware of child developmental principles, and has developed exercises like the above after hundreds of years of teaching very young children.

Second step: to not want

This step is very similar to the first step, and actually reinforces it. It will be done intermittently with the first step over the next few years of the child's life. Again, the child is left alone in a training room, or isolated room, without food or water for a long period of time. An adult will enter the room, with a large pitcher of ice water, or food. If the child asks for either, as the adult is eating or drinking in front of the child, he/she is severely punished for being weak and needy. This step is reinforced, until the child learns not to ask for food or water unless it is offered first. The ostensible reason the cult gives for this step is that it creates a child who is strong, and can go without food and water for longer and longer periods of time. The real reason this is done is that it creates a child who is completely dissociated from its own needs for food, water, or other comforts, who becomes afraid to ask outside adults for help. This creates in the child a hyper-vigilance as she/he learns to look for outside adults for cues on when it is okay to fulfill needs, and not to trust her/his own body signals. The child is already learning to look outside itself to others to learn how it should think or feel, instead of trusting its own feelings. The cult now becomes the locus of control for the child.

Third step: to not wish

The child is placed in a room with favorite toys, or objects. A kind adult comes into the room and engages the child in play. This adult my be a friend, aunt, parent, or trainer. The child and adult may engage in fantasy play about the child's secret wishes, dreams, or wants. This will occur on several occasions, and the child's trust is slowly gained. At some later point, the child is severely punished for any aspect of wishing or fantasy shared with the adult, including the destruction of favorite toys, going in and undoing or destroying secret safe places the child may have created, or even destroying non cult protectors. This step is repeated, with variations, many times over the ensuing years. Occasionally, the child's siblings, parents, or friends will be used to reveal inside fantasies the child has revealed to them during the daytime, or in unguarded moments. The ostensible reason the cult gives for this step is to create a child who doesn't fantasize, who is more outwardly directed, less inwardly directed. In other words, the child is to look to adults for permission in all aspects of its life, including internal. The reality is that this step destroys all safe places the child has created internally, to retreat from the horrors it is experiencing. This step creates in the child the feeling that there is no true safety, that the cult will find out everything it thinks. Exercises like this are also used to create young alters in the child who will self report to the cult trainers any secret safe places, or covert wishes against the cult, that other alters have. This will then begin to set up intersystem hostility and divisiveness, which the cult will manipulate throughout the
person's life span in order to control them.

Fourth step: the survival of the fittest

This step is used in order to begin creating perpetrator alters in the young child. ALL CULT MEMBERS WILL BE EXPECTED TO BECOME PERPETRATORS; THIS BEGINS IN EARLY CHILDHOOD. The child is brought into a room where there is a trainer and another child of approximately the same age, or slightly younger, that the child being taught. The child is severely beaten, for a long period of time, by the trainer, then told to hit the other child in the room, or they will be beaten further. If the child refuses, it is punished severely, the other child is punished as well, then the child is told to punish the

other child. If the child continues to refuse, or cries, or tries to hit the trainer instead, they will continue to be beaten severely, and told to hit the other child, to direct its anger at the other child. This step is repeated until the child finally complies. This step is begun around age 2 to 2 1/2, and is used to create aggressive perpetrator alters in the young child. As the child becomes older, the punishing tasks become more and more brutal. Children are expected to become perpetrators of others at very young ages, and will "practice" on children younger than themselves, with the encouragement and rewarding by the adults around them. They will also be mimicking these adults, who role model perpetration constantly as normal. The child will be taught that this is the acceptable outlet for the aggressive impulses and rage that are created by the brutality the child is constantly being exposed to.

Fifth step: the code of silence

Many, many different stratagems are used to put this in, starting at around the age of two years old, when a child starts becoming more verbal. Usually, after a ritual or group gathering, the child is asked about what they saw, or heard, during the meeting. Like most obedient young children, they will comply. They are immediately severely beaten, or tortured, and a new alter is created, who is told to keep or guard the memories of what was seen, on pain of their life. The new part always agrees. The child and this new part are put through a ceremony of swearing to never ever tell; and alters are created whose job it is to kill the body, if the other parts ever remember.

The child is also put through severe psychological torture to ensure that it will never be tempted to tell, including: being buried alive; near drowning; watching "traitor's deaths" involving slow painful torture, such as being burned, or skinned alive; being buried with a partially rotted corpse and being told that they will become a corpse like it if they ever tell, etc. The scenarios go on and on, invented by people with endlessly cruel imaginations, in order to ensure the secrecy of the young child. These methods have been perfected over hundreds of years of practice by the cult with its children. The reason these things are done is self evident: the cult is involved in criminal activities, as explained in the first few chapters of this book, and they want to ensure the continued silence of its children. This is one reason why the cult has survived so long, and with its continued shroud of secrecy; why more survivors are afraid/ unwilling to disclose their abuse. In order to reveal cult secrets, a child must go against some of the most tremendously horrendous psychological trauma and abuse imaginable; even as an adult, the survivor has difficulty putting these things aside, when discussing their abuse. Children and adults alike are told that if they ever tell, they will be hunted down and shot (the assassin training lets the child know that this is no idle threat); that they will be tortured slowly. The child will be exposed to setups and role plays throughout their growing up that reinforces this step.

SUGGESTIONS THAT MAY HELP

I believe in also offering some ideas on how to undo some of the above mentioned programming, as I do not believe in knowledge, only for knowledge's sake. The survivor often needs tools, in order to try and undo some of the horrendous abuse that the cult places him/her through, especially as memories of these things occur. THESE ARE JUST MEANT AS HELPFUL HINTS AND DO NOT REPLACE THE

ADVICE OF A GOOD THERAPIST.

1. Early milieu programming:
This is difficult to undo, since it hits on core abandonment issues, and rejection, for the survivor. This will often have been the survivor's very first, earliest experiences as an infant, involving its relationship with its parents and primary family members. Working on this requires the whole hearted effort of all alter systems inside, to join in nurturing the core splits who experienced severe parental rejection, and the cognitive recognition that the DAYTIME was important, too; that the adults around the infant were the unhealthy ones. The infant's often feel unlovable, overly needy, depressed; but nurturing alters inside can help comfort them, and share the reality that the infant really was loveable, no matter what the outside adults around it were like. Here, too, an outside supportive therapist, and a strong, nurturing faith system, can help tremendously in the healing process, as new messages are brought in to the abandoned, wounded parts. Sorting through what happened, grieving over the real issues of abandonment, and bringing reality to very young, deeply wounded parts will take time.

2. Early intentional fragmentation: (ages 0 to 24 months)
Usually there are cognitive parts of the survivor inside, who have never ever forgotten the abuse, and can help share the cognitive reality of the abuse with the amnesic alters. This should be done extremely slowly, since this first abuse was done quite early in life. Creating an internal nursery, with safe toys, objects, can help. Older nurturing adult alters inside can help hold and care for the wounded infants inside the nursery, while acknowledging and grieving over the abuse which occurred. It is important to believe an validate the young parts when they come forward to share. Allowing them nonverbal ways of expressing themselves can help, as these are quite young parts, who often cannot talk yet. Having older children inside who are close to the infants verbalize their wants, needs, and fears can also help, as often the youngest parts inside do not trust ANY adults, even internal ones. A strong ,caring outside therapist is also important to healing, by modeling healthy nurturing to a system that may have no concept of this, while balancing the need of the infant for outside nurture with the need for the internal system(s) to learn their own self nurture techniques. Internal helpers can reach the infants, ground them, share present reality (that the body is older, the infants are safe, etc. These helpers may be internal older children, as mentioned before). The survivor may also want to find support adults when possible, who can help with modeling healthy caring with good boundaries.

A THERAPIST OR FRIEND CANNOT RE-PARENT THE SURVIVOR. The survivor will long for this, but realistically, the survivor has one set of parents, good or bad, or sadly, even terrible. No outside person can come in and redo the complete re-parenting of another. What the therapist and support person can offer will be caring, empathy, listening, while the survivor grieves over the loss of adequate nurture. They can offer friendship or empathy with good boundaries. They cannot become the survivor's parents, or therapy will not progress. Instead, enmeshment will begin.

3.The First Five Steps of Discipline (there are twelve total; others will be addressed in later chapters)
Try to find the parts that experienced the abuse. This may mean doing system mapping (drawing pictures of what things look like inside), and going to the cognitives (intellectuals) or controllers (head

honchos inside) for information. An internal helper, or recorder, may also be extremely helpful in doing this.

Allow these parts to slowly acknowledge the agony that they experienced during their deprivation: heat (being held over a fire, or stove); cold (such as being placed in freezers, or ice, for example), lack of food, etc. Encourage the sharing of the cognitive portion of the memories first, while allowing amnesic alters to grieve over "hearing about" these things. Allow them time to absorb hearing about these traumas, as they occurred over several years during early childhood, and will take time to assimilate. Healing can't be rushed. Allow feeling alters later to step forward, and share their feelings, while more cognitive or helper parts are inside holding their hands, grounding them to the here and now throughout the process of remembering Be prepared for floods of emotion at times, as well as body memories, as the abuse is recalled. A group of inside people can be designated as a "grounding team" to help ground these parts as they step forward and share their memories.

Remembering safely assumes that the person has a qualified therapist, and also has laid the groundwork for good intrasystem cooperation, as discussed above. Memory work should not be done until there is good communication and cooperation inside, or the person will be overwhelmed by the memories as they come out. They will be flooded and re-traumatized instead of helped, and may de-compensate. With good communication, memories can be brought out a little at a time, in manageable pieces, while cognitive alters continually help keep the survivor from going completely into the memory, and they can also help ground the more wounded parts.

The cult will put people through certain types of programming in order to achieve a specific goal: separating the intellect, or cognition, form the feelings in a person. Cognitive alters in these systems are always considered "higher" than the feeling alters; cognitive alters are taught to "pass down" their feelings to the "lower" feeling alters. While these labels are untrue, the cognitive alters will fear feeling the intense, overwhelming emotions that caused them to split further and further from the more limbic, or feeling alters internally. This will drive continued system divisiveness in the survivor. It is important that cognitive parts realize that the feeling alters are part of them; that they can practice sharing their feelings in SMALL steps without needing to be flooded, or overwhelmed.

A reminder: EXTERNAL SAFETY IS PARAMOUNT TO UNDOING INSIDE PROGRAMMING. You HAVE to be able to promise these parts external safety, and deliver on this promise, or they will understandably balk at working inside on undoing programming. Why should they try and change, only to go back and be punished again? No system will undo its own protective dissociation, if the abuse is ongoing, or it will continue to destabilize and re-dissociate over and over. This is because dismantling the dissociation would mean dismantling its own survival and protection. Stopping contact with perpetrators and having a safe therapist are the very first steps to take, before attempting to undo internal programming. A system can still work on stopping cult contact, and begin healing , while being accessed, but it will slow therapy down tremendously as the internal energy will be diverted to staying safe rather than undoing trauma. A person can heal, and most survivors are still in cult contact when they enter therapy. BUT the progress will go much more quickly once cult contact is broken. (see chapter on preventing accessing of the survivor)

top

Chapter Five
Colors, Metals and Jewel Programming

Color coding (To see more about color go here)
One form of programming that is quite common in the Illuminati is color programming. Why is it done? The answer is that trainers are human, and also quite lazy. Color programming is a simple way to organize systems, and allows the trainer to call up alters easily within a system. With the thousands of fragments that many multiples in the cult have, colors is a way of organizing them into an easily accessible group.

Also, young children recognize colors before they can read, so this training can occur quite early. It is begun at about age two in most children.

How it is done: The child is taken into a room with either white, beige, or colored walls. If the room is a neutral color, the lights in the room will be changed, so they color the room with the light's color. If "blue" is the color being imprinted, or put in, the trainer will call up a young child alter, either a controller or core split for a system. They will tell the child that they will learn how to become blue, and what blue means. The room will be bathed in blue light, as mentioned, or has been painted blue for use in this kind of programming. The trainer will be dressed in blue clothing, and may even have a blue mask on. Blue objects will be placed around the room. The alter inside the child is called up, drugged, hypnotized, and traumatized on the table. As they are awakening from the trauma, still in trance, they are told that blue is good, and that they are blue. That blue is important. That blue will protect them from harm. That blue people don't get hurt. This will go on for awhile.

They then ask the child if they want to be "blue", like the trainers. If the child says yes, they will continue on. If the child says no, it will be re-traumatized until it says yes. The child is often naked, and told it cannot wear clothing until it "earns" the right to wear beautiful blue clothing. Over and over the "safety of being blue" (ie freedom from harm) and danger of not having a color is emphasized. The children really wants to be blue after a while of going through this. They may be given blue candy as a reward for choosing to become the color. They may be given blue sunglasses or tinted lenses to wear. They are allowed to wear blue robes once they identify with the color chosen for them.

Once the child completely identifies with the color (or rather, the main alter or template for the system accepts this color), then they are taught in progressive stages, over many training sessions, what the color blue means. They are in set ups, or dramas with other blue children, where they act out the role of a "blue". They are drugged, hypnotized, traumatized, while the meaning of blue is ground in over and over. They are forced to act in "blue" ways. Different trainers and regions will assign different meanings

to different colors. Many military systems are coded blue, or protective. The military alters all are called up periodically to reinforce blue training. If the trainer at a later date wants to access a blue system, they may call them up by color, or wear a piece of clothing or a scarf in the color they want to reach.

This becomes an unconscious trigger for this color to come forward. Color coding is one of the first methods that is inlayed over systems. An entire system may be color coded one color; or two or more colors may be coded in , with each system controller (most systems have three) being given a different color over its part of the system.

Metals programming:

Metals programming is a type of programming that many Illuminati children are given. Because it is so similar to jewels programming, I will discuss how it is done under jewels. Metals can be from bronze (lowest) to platinum (highest).

Jewels programming:

Many Illuminati children will go through either metals or jewels programming, and occasionally will go through both. Jewels is considered higher than metals, and more difficult to obtain. Which is put in and when, is dependent on the child's status, its parents status, the region it is born in, the group it is born into, and the trainers that work with it.

Basically, either metals or jewels is a form of reward based programming.

Here is how it works:
The child is shown a piece of jewelry such as a ring, or else a large example of the jewel (or metal) being put in. They are asked: "isn't this Amethyst, or Ruby, Emerald, Diamond) beautiful?" The child will be eager to look at it, touch it, and is encouraged to by a trainer with a soft kind voice. The trainer will ask the child, "wouldn't you like to be beautiful, like this jewel? (or metal jewelry)". The child is usually eager to be. Here is a sparkling gemstone, placed in their small hands (the training often begins between age two and three). Of course they want to be beautiful, sparkly, valued. The trainer will extol the beauty of the gem (or metal), will tell the child how special, valued, wanted gems are, and basically build up the idea of becoming like a jewel.

The child is then told that in order to become a jewel, they must "earn the right". This involves:
a.) passing through steps of discipline (see chapter three)
b.) passing "special tests"
c.) being rewarded for special achievement

Becoming a jewel (or precious metal) is dangled before the small child, like a carrot, as the reward for doing well in training sessions. The earning of one is linked to going through the rungs of the long, arduous training process expected of Illuminati children; having a jewel or metal involves stepping up in

status and being praised. But the price is enduring hours of abuse called "training" but in reality is organized, systemic abuse to make the child do what the trainer wants them to become.

Over time, with the help of drugs, hypnosis, shock, and other trauma, as the child goes through it's training process, it will begin earning its jewels and/or metals, one by one. These will become full alters inside.

Amethyst is usually the first one earned, and is linked to keeping secrets, never telling, and passing the first step of discipline. Each step is linked to receiving either a jewel or precious metal.

Ruby will often be next, and is linked to sexual abuse and sexual alters inside. As the child is repeatedly sexually traumatized and survives, or creates sexual alters to please adults, they are "rewarded" by being allowed to become a ruby.

Emerald will often come later (ages 12 to 15). This is considered very precious, and is linked to family loyalty, witchcraft, and spiritual achievement. Emeralds will often have a black cat, or "familiar" linked to them.

Diamond is the highest gemstone, and not all children will earn it. It is considered a high achievement. and may not be earned until adulthood, after passing rigorous tasks. It will be the controlling alter in a gemstone system. A diamond has passed all twelve steps of discipline, plus passed unusual tests and will have highest family loyalty.

"Family jewels" are often passed down internally during training sessions with trainers and family members. All high Illuminati families will have jewels hidden in secret vaults (real, outside jewels) which have been passed down for generations.

The children will often be given jewelry to wear in the daytime, as a reminder or reward, once they pass their programming. A child may be given a ruby ring or garnet pin to wear; in fact, a grandparent or parent may insist the child wear it. On ritual occasions, the child will be allowed to wear jewelry from the family's vault, once they reach a certain status. They may be allowed to wear a ruby pendant or emerald bracelet during high rituals, and will be quite proud of the fact, since the cult is first, foremost and always an extremely status conscious group. The children pick up on this, and the adults will make a big fuss over the children who have earned the right to wear jewels. This gives them a huge incentive to earn them.

Suggestions that may help with these forms of programming :

Color programming: it is important to have good internal communication with both internal alters and an outside therapist while working on color programming. If an individual finds that certain parts believe that they are a certain color, or if this comes up in therapy, they will want to find out if possible how they came to have this belief system. Slowly discovering how the colors were put in will help. Grieving

for the vast amount of deception, the amount of abuse heaped on the child, and the very young alters who were the original templates may occur. These parts may be barely verbal, and may want to draw their experiences, or use colors in collages (with the help of older parts inside), to describe to a safe outside person what their reality has been. Validating to them that they are NOT just a color, that they are part of a whole person, may help. The survivor may see colored overlays for awhile, as they are undoing this programming, as parts inside share their memories. This is normal, although it may feel uncomfortable to see objects as yellow or green, for example. Grounding oneself, having cognitives do reality orientation, and patience will help the survivor work through this time.

Jewel programming and metals may be more complex, since the child's sense of special ness, pride and status may be bound up in these alters. Rubies, emeralds and diamonds are considered "high alters" inside and are used to leadership roles, both internally and externally. Acknowledging their importance to the system; listening to them grieve at leaving the cult, which meant giving up their status externally, and giving them new positions inside that are important can help. They can become system leaders in helping the person stay safe, once they make the decision to leave the cult, and become strong allies. But they will often be among the most resistant, and even hostile, to the idea of leaving the cult at first, since they have only known and remembered being rewarded for jobs well done, and have learned to "pass down" the traumas to "lower parts" inside. They will often honestly not believe they have been abused, and will only remember being petted or allowed to lead, or being told they were special, valued. Listening to how they feel; acknowledging that leaving means giving up things that were important to them, finding out what needs motivated them, and trying to find healthy outlets for them to get their needs met outside of cult meetings will help. Letting a jewel have leadership within, or chair internal meetings may make up for loss of external leadership when the survivor leaves the cult.

Acknowledging their importance to the survivor is also important. Recognize that these parts are EXTREMELY dissociated from their own abuse/trauma, and are in no hurry to remember. But both the survivor and a good therapist can bring reality gently to them, as they let them know that they were abused; that they are actually part of the "lower emotional parts" who were abused, and will eventually need to acknowledge this. This task takes time and good outside support to accomplish. Allow them to vent their feelings. They will often be highly cognitive at first, but feelings will come, especially grieving, then pain at having been deceived by the cult, then the anguish of realizing that the abuse they passed down to others inside was actually happening to them. They may become quite depressed at this stage, but will also lend tremendous stability and strength to the system, in staying safe and cult free, once they have reached this stage.

These are some thoughts on color, metals, and jewel programming. Other types of programming will be addressed in the next chapter.

top

Chapter Six
Brain Wave Programming

In this chapter I will address brain wave programming. Brain wave programming, like any other programming, will depend on several factors.

These include: the child's ability to dissociate; the region of the country or which country the child grows up in; the level of ability of the trainers the child has contact with; physical resources and equipment available. There is no one "recipe" that fits every person and it would be ridiculous to state that all people who go through brain wave programming have it done the same way. More and more, programmers are talking, sharing knowledge over the net, both nationally and internationally, and sharing both successes and failures. But there is no one standardized methodology for brain wave programming. It will often be influenced by the child herself, as well as the trainer's whims. Different groups may organize the systems differently, or try to achieve different effects.

All of this said, what is brain wave programming? Simply put, brain wave programming involves having a young child go into a deep trance state, where they then learn to dissociate into a certain brain wave pattern. This is a complex skill, and not all children can achieve this. The goal is for the child to reach, for example, a consistent delta state, where delta brain waves show up on the EEG, which is attached to the child's head by electrodes in the scalp. Usually, two or even three trainers will work on one child during the initial stages. One will "prep" the child, using a hypnotic drug to induce a trance state. They will have also placed the electrodes on the head, using an abbreviated version of the method used in traditional hospital setting. If delta state is being induced, only the electrodes needed to pick up delta waves will be placed, for example. This is to save time.

The prepped child will be on a "trainer's table", and will be quite relaxed. The average child is about eight years old when this is begun, since the cerebral cortex and neurological development are not advanced enough at earlier ages (It has been tried at earlier ages, quite unsuccessfully, in the past; this practice was dropped because of the neurological damage and "failure to take rate" that trainers were seeing). The non prepping trainer will then let the child know exactly what he/she expects: that they will achieve a special state, called "delta state". The trainer tells the child, while they are in trance state, that they will know when they reach it, by the readings from the electrodes.

The trainer will tell the child alter, who has been called up to be a "template", or building block for the new system, that delta is good. They will emphasize this over and over. The child will then be shocked to increase its receptivity to learning. This also arouses the child from its drugged state and it will be more alert. It will want to please the trainer. The trainer will tell the child that she/he wants it to perform certain mental exercises. It will then give it backwards counting exercises, used to help the child achieve deeper trance states. Other verbal cues to trance down may be given. When the prepping or technical trainer sees delta waveforms, he or she will signal the verbal trainer with a hand motion. The verbal, or teaching trainer will immediately reward the child, saying, "good, you are in delta now." The trainer will caress the child, tell it what a good job it is doing. If the child bounces out of delta state, the verbal

trainer will immediately become harsh, and will shock the child as punishment. The child is told that it left delta (which is "good") and needs to go back in.

The induction, counting, will be repeated until delta state is seen again, when the child is repeatedly rewarded for entering, then staying in this state for longer and longer periods. The trainers are using biofeedback principles to teach the child to consistently cue into a brainwave pattern. When the template can stay in delta pattern consistently, the template will be rewarded. This will occur over several months.

The trainers will now have a template that stays always in delta state, that they can begin splitting and using as the basis of forming a new system inside. They will do this using the tools of drugs, hypnosis and trauma. The new system created will record delta waves on an EEG if done correctly. The new system will be taught what delta means. The trainers will often flash a cue, or delta (triangle) symbol on a projector overhead, and "grind in" the delta imprinting. They will wear robes with delta signs on them, and cloth the subject in clothing or robes imprinted with the delta sign. They will teach the alters under hypnosis what deltas do, how they act. They will reward them when they comply, and shock or otherwise traumatize them if they do not act like "deltas". They will be given delta jobs. They will watch high frequency films, that show delta functions. They may build in a computer like structure to hold the system, showing pictures of its organization while the subject is under deep trance, after creating a clean slate through trauma.

These are some examples of how delta programming may be induced.

Other brain wave states will be induced in similar manners. They will often be formed from templates which are extremely young internal child alters who may be splits from core splits, as the basis for the programming. Common brain wave states used are:

Alpha: this is the most easily reached brain wave state, and also includes both the youngest and most easily accessed alters in the entire system. Young children have long periods of alpha activity and must be trained to enter other brain wave states for long periods. System access programming; access codes and sexual alters will often be placed in alpha, which may also be coded red in some systems.

Beta: this is the next most easily reached state, and is often associated with aggressive impulses. Beta state will often hold cult protectors, internal warriors, and military systems. They may be color coded blue.

Gamma: this will often hold extremely cult loyal alters, and holds more emotion than the other states, except for alpha. Suicide programming will often be layered into this system, as these alters would rather die than leave their "family". Scholarship programming may be held by this system, since they easily memorize by rote. Several languages may be spoken by different alters in this system, as the Illuminati like to program in plural linguality, with up to eight languages, both modern and ancient being spoken.

Delta: this is one of the more cognitive brain wave states, and will often be highly dissociated. It may also be the "ruling" or controlling state over the other brain wave systems. Often, delta state may be configured inside as a computer, and the delta alters will have emotionless, flat alters with photographic memories. They may hold most of the cognitive memories for the other systems, especially if extensive amnesia programming has been done. Delta state may have up to three levels of training: delta 1, delta 2, and delta 3 which will also correlate to security access allowed within the cult; i.e. access to highly confidential information. Behavioral sciences programming may be held by this system. Internal programmers, self destruct, psychotic, and shatter programming as well as other punishment programming sequences to prevent outside access or internal access to the systems may be held within delta systems. It may be color coded both orange/blue/purple, and will also often be the entry way to higher systems such as jewels or internal councils, inside.

Epsilon: this is often a "hidden system" and may hold CIA programming and high level governmental programming . Assassin programming may be held in this system, or in the beta system, depending on the trainer. Covert operations, courier operations, learning to tail a subject, or "drop a tag", disguises, getting out of difficult situations, may be handled by this system, which sees itself as chameleon-like. It may be color coded brown.

Phi/Theta/Omega programming: this represents negative spiritual programming. These are the "dark" ritual alters, who participate in blood rituals, sacrifices, and ceremonies. Internal witches, warlocks, seers, psychics, readers, and occult practitioners will be placed in this system, which has highly developed right brain and deep trance abilities. They will often be color coded black.

This is an overview of some of the more common brain wave systems. It is often placed in over a matter of years, from ages 8 to 21 being the primary ones, with occasional reinforcement of the programming from time to time.

Suggestions:

Brain wave programming is a very complex form of programming which creates automatic amnesia and communication barriers between the different brain wave states. This will also be reinforced by shock and punishment to prevent its "degradation", or undoing. Internal system controllers and programmers will also work to reinforce the programming, especially at night, when the person is asleep (physically).

All brain wave systems will have system controllers, usually set up in a group of three (the Illuminati love triads, as being the "mystical" and most stable number. They believe that systems built upon triads are extremely strong, unbreakable, and will often program in threes: three back ups, three system controllers, etc.) With the help of a good therapist, the survivor needs to get to know the internal system controllers and communicators. They are there, they have to be, because the trainers placed them there to communicate with and be accountable to them externally, and will often have complete knowledge of their own system. They will also be quite flat, and dissociated from the knowledge of their own pain or the abuse that created them. This is a distancing mechanism, and the person's survival depended on the

ability of their controller to do this at one time. They will often be quite hostile, and very unwilling to look at their own abuse; they will become indignant at the idea, and claim that they are cognitive, and "above" being abused (another lie they were told by their abusers).

Time, patience, and finding out what their needs are; listening to them vent their frustration; pointing out reality (ie, the controllers, and all parts are related to each other; are part of the same person; and ALL were abused even though they were able to dissociate from their pain), and trying to help them meet their needs for recognition, acceptance, and approval will begin to allow them to question their previous loyalty. These systems are often driven by fear: fear of punishment; fear of remembering (they were often the most tortured systems in the survivor, and were promised amnesia in return for continued cooperation). Their fears are real, and should be listened to and respected, as shatter programming and flood programming are real threats to the survivor, and can cause functionality to go down.

Flood programming is a sequence put in place to punish a system if its internal programming is allowed to degrade or access to an unauthorized person, either internally or externally, is allowed. It will involve the fragments who hold highly traumatic memories, both emotional and physical, being pushed to the front where the person is "flooded" with wave after wave of memories. If this is triggered, and it frequently is if the survivor is in therapy, the first priority should be slowing the memories down. This may mean trying to reason with internal controllers or deltas who are allowing the flooding; they need to know that if the front, or previously amnesic alters down, or are re-shattered due to traumatization, it will weaken all the systems.

Bargain with them. Prayer will help in this situation. Physical safety, including inpatient therapy, may be needed if flooding or shatter programming are activated. Suicide programming is often layered in with both types, and external physical safety will be paramount for the survivor, with lots of outside accountability as they undo these intense programming sequences. Frequent reality orientation; explaining new, better jobs can help. Undoing brain wave programming should ideally only be done with lots of safe external support, which may include extra therapy sessions; hospitalization if programming that could cause loss of functionality or suicide are triggered; and should be geared towards increasing internal communication and cooperation. Alters jobs can be changed, from internal programmers to internal Deprogrammers; internal shatterers or punishers to internal protectors; internal reporters who report back to the cult can instead be asked to report internally on what the body is doing, and to keep it safe.

These are examples of possible changes. Make friends with system controllers, as they can become strong helpers and will work with the therapist to keep things safe for the survivor.

top

Chapter Seven

Military Programming

I want to devote an entire chapter to military programming, and how it is done. Why? As noted in chapter three, the Illuminati are emphasizing the importance of military training more and more, as part of their plan for eventual takeover. All children in the current generation are undergoing some form of military training as part of this plan.

Military training is begun quite young. It is often started by three years of age with simple exercises. The children are taken by their parents to a training area, which may be a large inside auditorium, or a remote area outside where training maneuvers are done. Tents are set up, with command centers for the different commanding officers and military trainers.

The children are taught to march in time, keeping a straight line. They are punished by being kicked, shocked with a cattle prod, or beaten with a baton if they move out of place. They will be dressed in small uniforms in imitation of the adults.

The adults will have ranks, badges and insignia indicating their level of achievement in the cult hierarchy and military. Badges and medals are given out to indicate the person's level of training and tests passed. Commanding officers are often brutal and will teach even the youngest children with harsh measures.

The children will be forced to march long distances, which increase as they get older, in any weather. They are forced to learn to cross obstacles. They will be given "fake" guns, with blanks, when they are young. These guns are perfect replicas of real guns, but fire blanks. The children are taught to load and fire all manner of firearms, both real and fake, under close adult supervision. They will spend hours learning to aim, sight, and fire these guns at targets. At first the targets are bulls eyes, but as the children get older the targets will be similar to police cut outs of humans. The children are taught to aim for the head or the heart. Later, they will graduate to realistic manikins. This is conditioning them to kill a human being.

They will be shown violent films of warfare, much more explicit and graphic than normal movies in group classes. Killing techniques will be shown in slow motion. The motif "kill or be killed" will be ground in over and over. The trainer will ask the children what mistakes the people who were killed made. Being killed is considered weakness; being a killer is considered strength.

The children will be forced, by age seven or eight, to crawl on their bellies with simulated blanks firing overhead. They are not told these are blanks and they are extremely painful if the child is hit in the back or buttocks. They quickly learn to keep down under fire. Battle conditions will be simulated as the children go through years of "boot camp" training.

They will be rewarded with merit badges for doing well, such as completing an obstacle course, or staying cool under fire. In other words, the cult creates a microcosm of real military training for their

children and youth. Nazi concentration camps will be simulated, with guards and prisoners. The "guards" are usually older children or youth who have done well. The "prisoners" are younger children or those being punished for not performing well in maneuvers. There is intense pressure to want the guard role and not be a prisoner, since prisoners are locked up, beaten, kicked, and laughed at.

Hunting and tracking games where the prisoners are given a half hour lead are frequent. These may also involve the use of specially trained dogs taught to knock the quarry down but not kill them. Older children are taught to handle the dogs, and use them. Youth are taught to help the adults train the dogs.

Teens may be rewarded by becoming "youth leaders" who are allowed to plan the weeks activities. The military training will closely follow the principles of Nazi military and S.S. training. The trainers often speak in German to the children, who must learn the language. All C.O.s and high ranking adults speak in German during these exercises. They may also speak in French, since linguistic ability is encouraged in the Illuminati.

Exercises for older youth will include games where groups compete against each other, and the older teen leads, with the help of an adult advisor. Groups that win are rewarded, groups that lose are punished. The youth are taught to leave behind the weak, or slow members. Unfit members are shot or killed, and the youth leader learns to do these tasks. They are taught to bring their unit through simulated battles with other units, and cool, cognitive logic under these conditions is rewarded. The goal is to creative cognitive leaders inside the military systems, who are dissociated from emotions under the stress of battle conditions.

The youth and their followers are taught and trained in all manner of crowd control. They will see special films, that address all possible responses to a military takeover, and the crowds' response. These situations are then acted out during exercises, and the older Youth leaders and their units are expected to deal with the different responses. The "crowd" is coached by their trainers to act in different ways.

The ultimate goal of all of this is to create an organized army of children, youth, and adults, who will know exactly what to do during the coming takeover of the world. The training that I described is going on not only in the U.S., but in every country in the world. Top training centers are located in Germany, Belgium, France, and Russia. Military trainers are often sent to these countries, to learn new techniques, then sent back to their home countries.

What to do:
It is important to realize that military alters inside are extremely hierarchical. They will often be ranked inside, with lower "foot soldiers" accountable to inside alters with increasing rank. Usually, the higher the military rank, the higher the alter will be inside the system. A soldier with no rank may not have much knowledge about, or pull, inside the system. Its only job is to blindly obey others, after years of conditioning to do this.

Ranking officers inside will often be modeled after outside perpetrators, officers, or trainers. An internal

General will often have much more knowledge than lower ranks, and should be befriended, as they can help with therapy.

It will take time, effort, and patience for both the survivor and the therapist to get to know these military officers. They are often abrupt, arrogant, and extremely hostile to therapy. They are often strongly loyal to the cult and proud of their badges, awards, and achievements that were earned through years of traumatization and hard work. They will often be reluctant to give this up, for the perceived "loss" engendered by leaving the cult.

They will also have strong programming surrounding them, including "honor/dishonor" suicidal programming (the brave, honorable soldier will die rather than betray his group, etc.). It is important to deal with the suicidal programming and intense limbic conditioning that many of these alters have been subjected to, while at the same time reasoning with the higher ranking members.

They will have photographic memory and recall of all aspects of military history. Giving them safe, appropriate, physical outlets in the daytime can let them vent off steam. These are very physically conditioned alters, who enjoy running, walking, target practice with guns and knives. Letting them go hiking (with a safe support person), practice outdoor skills, can be helpful.

Acknowledging their importance to the survivor, and the trauma they underwent, respecting their loyalty, bravery, and appealing to their sense of honor to help the system stay safe (these alters often have a highly developed, although misguided, sense of honor) can help. Internal commendation for bravery, even an internal awards ceremony (they are used to this) for the parts that have decided to leave the cult, and protect the body, can be performed. They are used to praise and recognition for work well done, and need this motivation. They were used to getting this from the cult, but the survivor can turn the locus of control internally, instead of externally, to break bonds with the cult.

Military protectors can change their job to keeping the body safe, away from perpetrators. They can be a system's greatest asset, as they are great at "kicking butt", and are not easily frightened. They may be able to tell outside perpetrators to leave the survivor alone, and protect the survivor from outside accessing.

Allowing them to vent their feelings in therapy, in journaling, in pictures, and in collages can also help. Although higher ranking officers internally are often very dissociated from their feelings, they can begin to empathize with the others below them, who took their pain, and the brunt of the brutal, punitive experiences. They have to be willing to acknowledge that they were abused at some point, that they were deceived and used. Finding the youngest alters they were split from will help with this process. With time and good
internal communication, as well as patience from both the therapist and survivor, military alters can become one of the strongest assets and allies in staying cult free.

top

Chapter Eight
CIA , Governmental, and Scholarship programming.

Some systems will have internal CIA programming. Some of the methods mentioned in earlier chapters, such as brain wave programming and color coding were developed in part through funding by the CIA in the 1950's and 1960's. Military intelligence officers working in Langley, Virginia, used these government funds to conduct research on human subjects. They reported what they were learning to trainers throughout the U.S. and Europe.

CIA programming can include having alters in a system trained in different techniques of both finding a target, and studying the target without being detected. The end result of tagging the victim can include having a sexual assignation with the target, or may involve having people inside trained to assassinate a target.

These are complex programming sequences, and are put in over years of training, with periodic reinforcement. Alters may be trained to become hyper aware of their environment, and able to overhear conversations that are whispered. Internal recorders are taught to download these conversations, as well as other info. Photographic recall is emphasized, as the person will be hypnotized or put into a delta state for "downloading" information to the trainer or CIA operative.

The survivor with CIA programming will have been taught extensively how to "drop a tag" (detect anyone following them, and ditch them). This training will be begun in early childhood and built upon as the child grows older. They will often be taken into a neutral colored training room. They may be drugged, or hypnotized, usually a combination of both.

They will be shown training films of how a CIA operative works. They will be told that they are "special", "chosen", "one in a thousand" who is the only one who can do this special work. They are told that they get to be a secret agent for the CIA. The young child, having no idea who the CIA is, focuses on the fact that they have been chosen because they are special, needed, and will be eager to please. The child will be taken to a dinner party, or a drama set up by the trainer. There will be a group, anywhere from ten to sixteen people at the "party". Afterwards, the child will be questioned by the trainer extensively. Who was sitting where? What were they wearing? What color were their eyes? Their hair? Who gave the speech? What did they say? The child will be praised for correct answers, but punished, shocked if unable to recall details. This is to reinforce natural photographic memory, and assist the child with recording details. The next few times, the child's abilities will improve, as it wants to avoid punishment.

In the next level of training the child will be asked to observe, and figure out: who is the most important person in the room? Why? They will be taught body movements, and mannerisms, that give nonverbal clues away. The child may be taught to approach important adults, or an assigned target, first in role

play, later in real life, and engage them in innocuous conversation while looking for information they have been clued to get. They may be taught to be innocently seductive, and will be dressed for the part. They will frequently be taught to lure the target into having intercourse with them.

An older youth, or adult, will also be taught not only how to lure a target into bed, but later how to kill them, if they are an assassination target, while they are asleep or relaxing after sexual relations. They will be taught to go through the target's belongings for any information needed by the trainer or cult leader. Often, before an assignment for an assassination, the cult member will be indoctrinated with reasons why killing the victim is a service to humanity. They will be lied to and told that they are the head of a porno ring, a pedophile, or a brutal villain. This will engage the assassin's natural anger towards the person, and will motivate them, while helping to overcome their natural moral reluctance and guilt at killing a human being.

They will be taught how to disguise themselves, with change of clothing, sex (masquerading as the opposite sex), makeup, contact lenses, and get out of the situation safely. They will be taught how to overcome interrogation techniques with extensive training and hypnosis, in case they are ever caught. They will be taught to self suicide with a pill or dagger, if they are ever apprehended, in most cases.

Suggestions:

CIA programming will involve the use of sophisticated technology to reinforce its effectiveness, and can be difficult to break. It may involve the person being traumatized in isolation tanks (this will also be done with brain wave programming). It may involve sensory deprivation, sensory overload, isolation, sleep deprivation. It may involve hours of listening to repetitive tapes on headphones. The subject is shocked, or severely punished, if they try to remove the headphones. They will be hypnotized, tortured; subjected to different drug combinations; they will be exposed to harmonic tones, often in one ear or the other. They will be exposed to flashing strobe lights,
which may induce a seizure, and alters will be programmed to cause seizures if the subject tries to break programming. They will be shown high speed films with different tracks, one for the left eye and one for the right eye, to increase brain splitting or dichotomous thinking.

The survivor and therapist need to work slowly to undo the effects of this trauma. The person will need to come to terms, slowly, and carefully, with how the programming was done. They may need to learn their own access codes (this will also be true of brain wave, and other sophisticated programming techniques). They will need to communicate with the traumatized alters and fragments inside, let them know they were used. They will need to help the young alters, who were split to create the system, and often underwent the worst traumas. Grieving for the abuse, the trauma, the methodical calculation used and scientific methods used to put in this programming, will take time. Venting feelings, including rage, safely will be important. The survivor may be afraid of strong feelings and will fear especially anger and rage, since they will associate those feelings with having to kill, hurt, or assassinate others. Allowing the feelings to be expressed slowly and carefully, being aware that homicidal and suicidal feelings will probably come up, is important.

If there is a concern about the ability to control acting out, the client may need to go inpatient in a safe facility that understands mind control and cult programming. They will fear being labeled "psychotic" since the programmers told them that they would be called this, and locked up forever. The WORST thing a therapist or hospital can do in a situation like this, is play into those fears, or label the person psychotic. Constant grounding in reality, using grounding exercises; slow, careful venting of rage and betrayal feelings; reinforcing over and over that the survivor can remember, and NOT go psychotic, or die, BELIEVING and VALIDATING the survivor, are all important. The survivor may have unstable behavior at points, but this is not psychosis, but rather, the natural reaction to extreme trauma. The survivor needs to realize this, and that they can overcome its effects, with time and good therapy. They will need hope, and a good support system.

Governmental Programming:

Governmental programming will involve the person being trained to take leadership positions or administrative positions in the government. They may be trained to network with others in governments, both local , national, and international. The Illuminati's stated goal is to infiltrate, and eventually cause the downfall of, all major governments in the world. Government operatives are taught to do this by: infiltrating local political parties running for leadership both locally and nationally working for top leaders, as administrators, financial advisors funding governmental races and backing the person sympathetic to the
Illuminati, or putting their person in to win, creating political chaos and unrest with operatives trained in dissension. The people selected for governmental programming are usually highly intelligent with native charm, or charisma. They are also skilled people manipulators. These abilities may be enhanced through programming, encouraging the person to project a "persona" that will draw people to them.

They are also taught finances extensively. This programming is done by: hypnotizing the person, whether child, youth, or adult (it is usually initiated in late childhood in suitable candidates), and inducing deep trance with drugs. The person is shocked, then told the trainer's and cult agenda for the person. They are told that they are very special to the Illuminati, and will be one of the people who helps change world history. They are told they will be rewarded with wealth, popularity and power for achieving the cult's agenda. They are told, and shown, what the punishment for disobedience is. They are shown training films about government, how it works, national and international affairs. They will meet with special teachers, who coach them on the inner political workings of the group they want to infiltrate, including the power structure and strengths and weaknesses of key players.

They will learn any languages necessary for the position. They will go to University, or get any training and education needed for credibility. They will receive special scholarships to finance this, if needed. They are given opportunities to practice their skills at infiltration, information gathering, people manipulation, and politics in set ups, and later in real situations. If they need to learn to control the media, they will learn methods to do this. They will have extensive back up and coaching during their entire career.

Suggestions:

Governmental programming is quite complex, since it ties in with the person's natural abilities. They may not be able to separate themselves easily from the role that they perform and often will only feel that they are acceptable when they do their job. They may find it difficult to believe that their career, friendships, marriage and contacts have been secretly guided by the cult for most of their life. These parts may feel offended, betrayed, or furious when this realization hits. They will also find it difficult not to use the manipulation skills that come so naturally, both on their therapist, and themselves, to dull the pain that the truth may bring. The person and the alters that have undergone this type of programming have a lot to lose if they give up their roles and persona, and need to count the cost of getting out and acknowledge the difficulty of doing so. They will need to grieve over being used, and for the false interpretation of reality they have believed all their lives. Listening to other parts inside and acknowledging the reality of the cult abuse will be important steps in breaking free. Success in a new career in the person's daily life will also help restore a broken self image.

Scholarship training:

The Illuminati revere scholarship, especially oral tradition. Children with good memories and native intelligence may undergo specific training in the area of scholarship. This will include learning under trauma, with praise for accomplishment. It will also mean punishment or being shocked for poor performance. Some of the major areas of scholarship include, but are not limited to:

Oral tradition: history of the Illuminati, especially the child's particular branch, memorizing genealogies. Learning and becoming fluent in multiple languages, both modern and ancient, including but not limited to: English, French, German, Russian, Spanish, Arabic, Latin, Greek, Hebrew, Egyptian hieroglyphics; ancient Babylonian, ancient Chaldean and cuneiform writings. Some revered ancient texts are written in very ancient languages, and certain ceremonies may include rituals which utilize them. Learning ancient and modern history and becoming adept at planning role plays and dramatizations. Learning to teach others the above skills. The child who becomes adept at scholarship will also be expected to become a skilled teacher, and in turn, pass their knowledge down to others. They will practice teaching in both classroom and individual sessions.

Suggestions:

Scholarship programming will involve alters who are intensely loyal to the cult, since they believe they are related to a long, unbroken line of people since earliest history. They will often be immersed in cult philosophy, having read and memorized numerous esoteric volumes related to it. Appealing to logic, intellect, having an open mind and discussing the pros and cons of leaving the cult with them will often be received the best. They despise open conflict, and prefer addressing issues intellectually. They will be skilled debaters, and quite verbal. Asking them to read books that address becoming free from the cult, and asking them to sit in and listen to accounts from traumatized alters both in their system and others inside, will often

help them make the decision to switch loyalties. Although they will have been immersed in false ideologies and doctrines, they are frequently willing to attempt to be intellectually honest. They will read and debate both sides of an issue, and may become some of the first to make the decision to leave the cult once convinced that it is abusive.

top

Chapter Nine:
Programming Linked to Stories, Movies, Cartoons, or role Play Dramatization

In this chapter, I want to address a special type of programming that is universal with the Illuminati. It is programming that is linked to a story, movie, cartoon, or role play dramatization.

For countless centuries, Illuminati trainers and leaders have used role playing to reinforce as well as program children, and it is a favorite mode of teaching up to this day. A typical drama set up, or role play, will involve a "visit through time." The child is told, while drugged or hypnotized, that it and the other children with it (usually, a small group will go through this programming together) are going to " time travel". The trainer or teacher is seen as immensely powerful by the children, as he or she magically transports them through time. They enter another room, where people are dressed up in period costumes from whichever time period in history the teacher wants the children to see. Everything is historically accurate and well researched. An example: if the children are to visit ancient Rome, they will be taken to a room in the Senate, where the characters are dressed in togas. They will be speaking to each other in ancient Latin and debating issues. Caesar, or another king will enter the senate. Roman customs for a scenario such as this one will be adhered to throughout the role play.

One purpose of this role playing, is that the children are told they are getting a "behind the scenes " peek at history. Illuminati agenda will be put forward, and the children will "see" that famous figures in history were actually Illuminists. This will reinforce their "special ness" and the historicity of the group. It will also reinforce language training, since the scenes may occur in medieval England, or the French court of Louis XIV, etc. The scenes will also contain a moral that builds on programming the children have been undergoing. Maybe they will watch a "traitor" being "guillotined" in the French court. Or an unworthy senator, who tries to betray his king, will be stabbed. The child may be given a role in the play, such as taking a secret message to the king or queen, to reinforce courier programming. The child really believes that they have stepped back into history, and are part of the process of helping create history.

With modern times, programming has become more sophisticated with the advent of technology. Before television or movies, programming was often "scripted" around famous fairy tales, or stories, read aloud by one trainer while the second trainer worked with the child. A good see-song voice is necessary in a "reader". The child would be read the story, and under hypnosis and trauma, told that they are one of the

characters in the story. They are told the "real" meaning of the story, its "hidden meaning" and told that whenever they hear the story, to remember what it really means.

Now days, movies and videos are frequently used in programming. Favorite scripts include: Walt Disney movies (Disney was an Illuminist), especially Fantasia, Sleeping Beauty, The Little Mermaid, Cinderella, Beauty and the Beast. The Wizard of Oz, both books and movie, has been used. Any movie that incorporates Illuministic themes can be used. E.T. and Star Wars have been used in more recent years.

How Script programming is done:
The trainer will play the movie for the child. The child is told that they will be "asked about " the movie, this cues the child to use photographic recall about what they are viewing. The trainer may show the child an edited shorter version of the movie, with only parts of the whole, or may show the child a short scene from the movie.

After watching the movie, or scene, the child is drugged to relax it, then asked what it remembers. The child will be shocked if it cannot recall items the trainer deems important, and will be forced to watch the scenes repetitively.

When the child has total recall of the segments, the trainer will tell the child that it is one of the characters. The child may be heavily traumatized first, and a blank slate personality created inside to be the desired character. The first thing the blank slate sees is a recording of the movie, or scene. This is its "first memory". The trainer will then link the scene with Illuminati ideology. They will teach the child the "hidden meaning" in the movie, and praise the child for being one of the few "enlightened ones" who can understand what it truly means. The script programming will often be linked to other programming the child is undergoing. Military programming may be linked to Star Wars. Total recall programming may be linked to Data in Star Trek. Computer programming may be linked to Hal in 2001 A Space Odyssey; internal labyrinth programming may be linked to the movie "Labyrinth". The possibilities are quite varied and will depend on both the child and the trainer as to which direction script programming will go. Music from the show, or scene, will be used as a trigger to access the programming inside or bring forward these personalities.

Suggestions:

Scripted programming will often involve a great deal of traumatization, to create the "blank slate" alters desired. The programming will be ground in with repetition, electroshock, torture, drugging and hypnosis. The alters inside who have gone through this programming will often be highly disconnected from external reality and may believe that they are part of a "script". They may be Dorothy seeking the Emerald City (or the achievement of Illuminati rule on earth). They may be a computer or the character Data. Reality orientation will be very important. Allow these parts to experience safe outside reality, and test for themselves if they are really part of a man or woman. Looking in a mirror may help, when they express readiness. Having cognitive helpers who can share daily life memories with them, may help to

ground them. At first they will be very surprised, even indignant or hostile, at suggestions that they are not the character. They will think the therapist is a trainer, or part of the script, since this is the only reality that they have known. Re-grounding, patiently, over and over to present reality, increased communication with others inside, and eventually grieving over the intense amount of trickery and deception that they experienced, will be necessary. With time and patience these parts will be willing to give up their old "scripted" roles and become part of the person's present reality.

top

Chapter Ten
The Sixth step of Discipline: Betrayal; Twinning, Internal walls, Structures, Geometry

This chapter will address the sixth step of discipline in the Illuminati:

Betrayal programming.

Betrayal programming will begin in infancy, but will be formalized at around ages six to seven, and continue on into adulthood. The sixth step can be summarized as : "betrayal is the greatest good." The Illuminists teach this to their children as a very important spiritual principle. They idealize betrayal as being the true state of man. The quick witted, the adept, learns this quickly and learns to manipulate it.

The child will learn this principle through set up after set up. The child will be placed in situations where an adult who is kindly, and in set up after set up "rescues" the child, gains its trust. The child looks up to the adult as a "savior" after the adult intervenes and protects the child several times. After months or even a year of bonding, one day in a set up the child will turn to the adult for help. The adult will back away, mocking the child, and begin abusing it. This sets in place the programming: adults will always betray a child and other adults.

Another set up will involve twinning, which deserves special mention here. The Illuminati will often create twin bonds in their children. The ideal is to have a set of real twins, but of course this is not always possible. So, the child is allowed to play with, and become close to, another child in the cult from earliest childhood. At some point early on, the child will be told that the other child is actually their "twin", and that they were separated at birth. They are told that this is a great secret and not to tell anyone, on pain of punishment. The child, who is often lonely and isolated, is overjoyed. It has a twin, someone who has a special bond to them by birth.

The children do everything together. They are taught together, do military training together. They tell each other secrets. They are also frequently friends in the daytime as well. They are taught to cross access each other just as real siblings would be.

But at some point, they will be forced to hurt each other. If one "twin" is considered expendable, the ultimate set up will be one in which one twin is forced to die while the other watches. One twin may gather secrets from the other twin, be forced to disclose them to a trainer or cult leader, then may be forced to kill the other. One twin may be forced to hit, or hurt the other. If they refuse, the other twin will be brutalized by the trainer, and the refusing twin told that the child was hurt because of their refusal to comply. Many setups will involve one twin being forced to betray the other, turning on the other child after intense programming. This betrayal set up will devastate both children, and they will learn the true lesson: trust no one. Betray, or be betrayed.

The children will also have adult role models on every hand, since the cult is a very political, hierarchical, back stabbing society. Adults are constantly betraying each other, stepping over each other to move up. The children will watch one adult being praised, advanced, because they betrayed others below them, or set them up to fail. The children will learn quickly to mimic the adults around them, and both adults and children can become quite cynical as to human nature. They will have seen it at its worst, whether in training sessions, the brutality of a C.O. in military, or the gossip and back stabbing that occurs before and after rituals. They also incorporate the message internally: play the game, or be run over. Even the youngest children learn to manipulate others adeptly, at a very young age, while the adults laugh at how quickly they are learning adult ways. People manipulation is considered a fine art in the cult, and those who do it best, as in any group, often win out.

Suggestions:
Betrayal programming may have totally shattered the survivor's trust in outside people. It will take a therapist a long, long time to gain the survivor's trust. These are people who were taught over and over again that talking, sharing one's secrets, would be punished harshly. Inside littles will be very cautious at first, not trusting that the therapist is not just another trainer who will one day shout "aha!" and betray them if they begin to trust. This trust building takes time and patience, and must be earned through session after session where the therapist shows trustworthiness and non abusiveness. Survivors will test therapists over and over again, to see if they really are what they say they are. This is a normal part of the therapy process. Survivors may even try to back away from therapy, or outside support, as true caring support will "wig them out", i.e. conflict incredibly with their world view and experiences prior to leaving the cult.

Both survivor and therapist need to realize that some amount of distrust is healthy, based on what the survivor has experienced, and may be life saving, helping to protect them from outside accessing. Honor this need and be patient while the survivor tests over and over. The survivor can try to reason with inside alters who may have been betrayed to the point of legitimate paranoia. They may ask them to watch, and see what the therapist, and/or support person is like. To take their time, check them out. To be aware that what they went through may magnify normal feelings of caution. Helping orient these parts to outside reality, and especially positive experiences of trusting a little, and not being harmed, will help make great strides in undoing this. The survivor may feel confusion and internal conflict, as they experience a world where trust is possible. They may pull away, or the reverse, become highly dependent on the therapist and share too quickly due to a longing for safe intimacy that has never been met. Setting healthy boundaries while acknowledging needs will help the survivor through this stage.

Another type of programming involves the deliberate creation of internal structures within the cult member.

Internal structures: temples, eyes, mirrors, carousels etc.

The Illuminati trainers will try to create internal structures within the person's personality systems. Why? They believe this creates better stability. It also gives the alters and fragments a place to "hang on to" inside, and creates a convenient way to call them up. If a fragment is indexed inside to an internal helix, for example, the trainer knows how to locate them more easily.

Internal structures will vary greatly depending on the trainer, the group, the region of the U.S. or Europe and the goals for the individual. Common internal structures will include, but are not limited to:

- **Temples:** these are often consecrated to principle Illuminati deities, and spiritual alters will congregate here. This may represent actual temples, Masonic or private, that the subject may have visited.

- **Temple of Moloch** will be created out of black stone with a fire burning internally.

- **All seeing eye of Horus:** one of the most common structures in an Illuminati system; universal. Horus is a deity revered by the Illuminati, and the all seeing eye internally represents the fact that the cult can always see what the individual is doing. It will also represent being given to Horus in a high ceremony. The eye may be closed, or open, depending on the system's status at the time. This eye will also be linked to demonic watching of the person's activities at all time.

- **Pyramids:** the Illuminati revere ancient Egyptian symbology, especially "mystery religion" and Temple of Set teachings. Pyramids will be placed internally both for stability (a triangle, and/or pyramid represents strength and stability), and as a calling place for the demonic. Pyramids and triangles, and the number three, represent calling up the demonic in Illuminist philosophy.

- **Sun:** represents Ra, the sun god

- **Geometric figures:** configurations of circles, triangles, pentagons, etc. Geometric patterns are considered sacred, and are based in ancient philosophy. There may be hundreds overlapping in a training grid for complex systems, which will house fragments in each one.

- **Training grids:** these may be simplistic, such as cubes with patterns on them, rows of boxes, or more complex such as helixes, double helixes, infinity loops. Each trainer will have favorites classified as simple, medium and complex, depending on the child and its ability to recall and memorize.

- **Columns:** Greek Doric, ionic columns. Often hold "time travel" programming, with a portal between two columns.

- **Computers:** complex, highly dissociated systems with alters and fragments held within a computer system.

- **Robots:** may be seen in older systems

- **Crystals:** gems, balls, multifaceted. Used in spiritual systems to enhance occult powers. Alters and fragments may congregate on facets of a large ball.

- **Mirrors:** used internally to reinforce other programming sequences, internal twinning, and distortion of reality programming. May create shadow systems of functional systems. May also lock in demonic programming.

- **Carousels:** used in some programming sequences to confuse alters inside. Often linked to spin, confusion programming internally. May be used to punish internal alters; they will be spun on the carousel if they tell.

- **Deck of cards:** this can include cards from a deck, or complex configurations made of hundreds of card inside. Dominoes programming is similar. All touch each other and if person tries to dismantle programming, the deck will "fall".

- **Black boxes:** represent self destruct and shatter programming sealed off into a black box to protect system. Should not be opened without careful preparation and good therapy.

- **Mines, booby traps:** see above

- **Spider webs:** represent linked programming, with a spider (internal programmer) who continuously reweaves the web and reinforces internal programming and punishments. The web also communicates with other systems. Can also represent demonic linkages internally, woven in.

- **Internal training rooms:** used as punishments for internal alters. Will represent external training rooms person has been in.

- **Internal walls:** these will often represent very large internal amnesia barriers. The walls may be very thick, impermeable or semi permeable. A typical use for a wall will be to maintain high levels of amnesia between "front" or daily living, amnesic alters, and "back" or cult active alters that contain more of the person's life history. The back may be able to selectively see over and cross past the wall, but the front will be completely unaware that there is a wall, or what lays behind it.

- **Seals:** usually in a group of six or seven, represent demonic sealing, and may cover end times, shatter programming, as well as role within cult in new hierarchy.

These are some common programming structures. Again, there are many, many other types of internal structures used and the number and type are only limited by the trainer's and survivor's creative abilities. The way that these structures are placed within the person are fairly
similar. Under drugs, hypnosis and electroshock, the person is traumatized into a deep trance state. In the deep trance they will be told to open their eyes and look at: either a projected image of the structure, a 3D model of it, or a holographic image using a virtual reality headset. The image will be ground in, using shock and bringing the image closer and closer to the person's visual field. It may be rotated, if graphics are available, or a 3D is used. They may be told that they are entering inside it, if it is a temple or pyramid, under deep hypnosis, that they (the alter being programmed) will now "live inside" the structure/box/card, etc. This will also be used to reinforce amnesia and isolation programming internally, since the structure will be used to reinforce walls between the alter/ fragment and other alters and fragments internally.

Suggestions:
If the survivor finds structures inside, it will help for them first of all to try and realize WHY they are there. What purpose do they serve? To reinforce amnesia? Isolation? spiritual programming? punishment? To hold dangerous programming sequences? This is important, since some structures such as internal walls or barriers may have been created not only by the cult, but reinforced by the survivor as well, as a means of internal protection. The survivor may not want to dismantle internal structures too quickly without knowing their purpose and what they contain. Both the survivor and the therapist will need to go slowly. Learning how the structures were put in and which alters are linked to the structure, will be a first step. Long, slow and careful preparation, with lots of system cooperation, will be needed to look at some structures. This may only come after years of extensive therapy. Each survivor will progress at their own pace. If a wall is present, taking it down slowly, one brick at a time, or allowing part of it to become semi permeable, may be first steps in healing. Training rooms can have the equipment turned off and dismantled; it can be turned into a safe room, redecorated and refitted with toys and safe objects. Computers can slowly begin to realize that they are human, and gradually allowed to take on human characteristics.

Survivors can use their creativity to reclaim themselves, with the support of their therapists, and undo what was done.

top

Chapter Eleven
Suicidal Programming

I have decided to write an entire chapter about suicidal programming, since it is often the most dangerous programming that the survivor will face during their healing process. ALL ILLUMINATI SURVIVORS WILL HAVE SUICIDAL PROGRAMMING PROTECTING THEIR SYSTEMS. I emphasized this to also reiterate the need for good therapy and a strong support system for the survivor.

The Illuminati know and realize that with time, individuals in their group may start to question what they are doing. Or they may become disenchanted with their role. They may even desire to leave the group or try to dismantle their own programming.

The trainers are well aware of this possibility and to prevent this, will always program in suicidality. The suicidality, or suicidal programming, may surround one or more systems internally. It may be layered into more than one system.

From earliest childhood, survivors have been conditioned to believe that they would rather die than leave their "family" (the Illuminati group). This is the core, or basis of suicidal programming. It will be closely linked to loyalty to one's family as well as the group (remember, this is a generational group and leaving it may mean giving up contact with one's parents, spouse, siblings, aunts, uncles, cousins and children, as well as close friends). These people will all try to contact the survivor, and try to draw them back into the cult, asking "don't you love us anymore?", or even becoming accusatory and hostile if the survivor does not respond the way they wish. The survivor will be told that they are "crazy". Or delusional. That their family loves them and would never be part of a cult. The family members will all still be amnesic, unless something happens to trigger their own memories.

One of the most frequent suicidal programming sequences placed internally will be "come back or die " programming. A family member may activate it by telling the survivor that they are missed and their family wants to see them. If the survivor fails to return, the programming will start running. It can only be deactivated by a code word from the person's trainer or cult contact person. This ensures that they will recontact. If the survivor tries to break this programming, they will need assistance, both internal and external, for safety.

Hospitalization may be needed in a safe facility that understands DID and programming, as well as suicidality, as the alters inside will begin fighting if the person tries to break the programming. They have been programmed to commit suicide, or be shattered internally, or at the very least, severely punished, and are afraid of the repercussions of not obeying. The survivor will need to get to know these internal alters, and reassure them that they no longer need to do their jobs.

Chronometric suicidal programming is another type placed within. This does not need contact with family members to activate. In fact, it is activated automatically after a certain amount of time WITHOUT cult contact. Controller alters and/or punishing alters will have been programmed that if a certain period of time goes without contact with the trainer, they are to commit suicide. They will be told that the only way to prevent this is recontact with the trainer, who knows a command code to halt the program. The time interval may be anywhere from three months to nine months, each system is

different. Call back programming may have this type of programming as a back up, to ensure that it is followed through on.

Systems layered programming is a particularly complex form of suicide programming where several systems (up to six at a time), are programmed to fire off suicide programming simultaneously. This always needs hospitalization for the survivor's safety.

Honor/dishonor programming is common in military systems. In this, the military parts are told that an "honorable and courageous" soldier will take his life, rather than reveal secrets or leave his unit.

"No tell" programming will often be reinforced by suicidal programming.

Access denied programming, which prevents unauthorized access both externally and internally, will often be reinforced by either or both suicidal/homicidal programming.

Almost all suicidal programming is put in place to either ensure continued obedience to the cult's agenda; to ensure regular recontact; or prevent the individual or an outside person from accessing the person's system without authorization (i.e. the correct access codes, which the trainers are careful to use at the beginning of each session). It will frequently block therapy, as the survivor will be terrified, and rightly so, of dying if they reveal their internal world, or disclose their history.

Suggestions:
First, both the survivor and the therapist need to find out what suicide programming is present (it's a safe bet it's there, no need to ask IF it is present). Internal communication, and finding out which alters or fragments hold suicide programming will be important. Physical safety, whether with a safe outside person, or inpatient hospitalization, while working on suicide programming is extremely important, as this programming may either drive the survivor to self destructive behavior, or back to the cult. Dealing with suicide programming assumes that the survivor and therapist have initiated good system communication internally. This is extremely important, since the survivor will need cooperation inside with dismantling suicidality.

Letting alters inside know that they no longer have to do their job, that they can change, may help. Reality orientation, letting them know that if they kill the body, that they will die, may also help (many times, these parts have been deceived into believing that they themselves will not die, if they do their jobs. This means they need to hear the truth). Having controller alters, high alters with pull inside the system, agree to help the therapist dismantle the programming will help. But be aware that SOME INTERNAL SUICIDE SEQUENCES WILL BE PUT IN THAT EVEN CONTROLLERS CANNOT DISMANTLE. Creating a safety committee inside whose main job is to keep the body safe and ask for help if suicidal programming begins to kick in, BEFORE ACTING OUT OCCURS, will also help tremendously.

As the survivor develops trust with their therapist and realizes the value of life, and that life can be much

better than it has ever been before, they will become more willing to reach out and ask for help if they become suicidal. The survivor may also find that they encounter core despair. This despair may have been used by the cult to run suicidal programming, but it is not programming itself. A very young core split may have taken many of the feelings of despair, hopelessness, failure to thrive and desire to die, that the child felt growing up in a horribly abusive atmosphere. This is not programming but true feelings, and it will be important to differentiate this from programming. If core despair comes up, the alter containing this may also report having been trained to NOT SUICIDE, or give up. The trainers will do this, if despair begins overwhelming the subject at an early age, to prevent the child's suicide.

The survivor's cognitives, helpers, nurturers, will all need to be gathered together to help this part of the core heal. There will be intense, and rightful, grieving and anguish for the immense pain that the young child suffered. Hopelessness will come out. It can help if alters with happier memories can try and share their memories with this very young part. External support and caring can also make a big difference. Healing the immense pain held by this core split will take a long period of time and should not be hurried. Antidepressants can help, as the depression may be shared through all systems. Messages of hope, new and positive experiences can all help the survivor work through this type of programming, as well as journaling, poetry, artwork and collaging the feelings. Time, patience, support, the ability to vent feelings in a safe manner and physical safety when needed, will all help immensely as the survivor works through these issues.

top

Chapter Twelve
Preventing Reaccessing of the Survivor

This is by far one of the most important chapters I have written in this book. Why?

Deprogramming cannot be consistently successful if the person is still in contact with the abusers. Survivors will take one step forward, then will find themselves knocked down internally. All the hard work in therapy will be undone or set back. They and their therapist will find that they have trouble finding internal alters. Whole systems may shut down. A child presenting system may come out. Confusers and scramblers will take over therapy sessions and blockers will block therapy.

No one chapter can ever be totally comprehensive in how to prevent reaccessing. What I will share are some of the more common ways that the cult and trainers will try to reaccess individuals, and give some techniques on avoiding this.

The cult has a vested interest in keeping its members. After all, it has spent generations telling its members that if they leave they will die, be killed, or go psychotic. It makes them quite unhappy to see someone who is quite alive and very clearly not psychotic leave. It also makes their more restive

members question the truth of what they have been told if they see someone get out. Having a member leave may break the hold of some programming in other members. Trainers especially hate to see anyone leave, and grind their teeth over this problem at night. People leaving the cult is considered a training failure and the trainers may be punished severely.

So, the cult has come up with certain ways to keep their members with them, willingly or unwillingly. These include, but are not limited to:

E.T. phone home (phone programming) : the individual will have personalities whose sole job is to call and report to the trainer or cult leader. These are often young child alters who are eager to please, starved for attention and nurture, and who are heavily rewarded for calling back in. Any survivor who attempts to leave the cult must deal with the urge to phone home. To phone their abusers. To phone their friends who are in the group. To phone their parents, siblings, cousins, or aunts. This urge may become overwhelming at times and worst of all, the survivor may be totally amnesic to the fact that the people they are calling are cult members who are urging them, in code, to come back. Common phrases used include: your 'family' loves you, misses you, needs you. So and so is ill and needs to see you. You are so special to us. You are so valuable. You need to come see us. Why are you so distant? Why haven't we heard from you lately?

The list goes on and on. Sweet, kind phrases with double meanings, placed in the person during training sessions. Trainers are not stupid and know that if cult members said "come to the ritual meeting at midnight next week", the survivor would run the other way, and be validated as well that they are not making things up. So, they ingrain code messages behind innocuous phrases such as described above. These, and other messages, are meant to trigger recontact programming.

In recontact programming, (ALL ILLUMINATI MEMBERS HAVE RECONTACT PROGRAMMING, IT IS NEVER LEFT TO CHANCE) the person has parts whose only job is to have contact with their trainer or cult leader, or accountability person (person one step above them in the cult). These parts are heavily programmed under drugs, hypnosis, shock, torture, to have recontact. The individual will feel restless, shaky, weepy, afraid if they try to break this programming. It will often be linked or joined in to suicidal programming (see previous chapter for more on suicidal programming). They may experience PTSD symptomology, or even flood programming, and internal self punishment sequences, as they fight this programming internally.

Siblings are often cross trained to access each other with special codes. Remember when.... may initiate this. I love you, or, your family loves you, can also be used. Phrases will be individual, depending on the person's family members and background.

Certain clothing or jewelry worn can be used to draw a cult loyal system, such as a color coded system, or jewel system , to the front. The person must physically resemble the person the individual was "keyed into" during the programming sequence, to prevent inadvertent popping out of alters by anyone wearing a ruby pin, for example. This kind of cueing will be based on sight recognition of a person, plus the

clothing color or jewelry being worn a certain way.

Phone calls from concerned family members, friends, and cult members will flood the survivor's phone lines and answering machine, especially during the initial getting out phase.

Hang up calls, three or six in a row, or calls where a series of tones are heard, may be used as cues to recall the individual and fire off internal programming.

Birthday, holiday or we miss you cards, or letters, may be sent with trigger codes imbedded in them.

Flowers with a certain number of flowers, or color may be sent. Daisies may fire off daisy programming internally.

The possibilities are almost endless, depending on the trainers, the group the person was with, and the people they are most bonded to in the cult. Special training sessions will be given, with code words and cues built into the system's programming.

If all else fails, hostility will start. "You don't love us" will be heard, even when the survivor has stated repeatedly that they care. Boundaries drawn with cult members will be misinterpreted as lack of concern, or withdrawal. Accusations, guilt, and anger as well as manipulation will be used as hooks to make the survivor feel guilty for withdrawing from the cult.

Isolation programming may activate, as the cult support system is withdrawn in the survivor's life, and they try the difficult task of
developing healthy, appropriate relationships outside of the cult. Often, the therapist will be the survivor's lifeline and sole support at first. The individual may fall into codependent relationships quickly, or relationships with other survivors to fill the void in their life. At worst, desperate for caring and feeling isolated, they will make friends with the first kind person they meet. This person could be a cult set up, sent to initiate a friendship quickly. Survivors should be wary of "instant friendships" or instant bonding with others. Most good relationships take time and effort.

Suggestions:
One of the most difficult tasks, but most important safety wise, will be for a totally amnesic presenting system to realize who their abusers really are. It will seem unbelievable, when back parts come up in therapy, and disclose that beloved, or even barely tolerated family members are in the cult. Believing these parts and listening to them will be crucial to safety. Protectors will be important to the survivor's safety, especially if they are willing to give up cult allegiance and help keep the person safe. Outside accountability with safe persons is extremely important. The problem is that generational Illuminati survivors have often been surrounded all their lives by a network of other cult members. Unknown to them, their closest friends and family members are part of the group. Amnesia poses the greatest danger to the survivor in the beginning stages, as they will trust people before they remember that they are unsafe.

A survivor may remember the father taking them to rituals, and believe that their mother or grandparent is safe. Only later in therapy will they remember that mother or granny was actually their trainer, since the most painful memories tend to come later. The survivor may only remember ritual abuse in early childhood, and think they were let go at a certain age. This is extremely rare, since the group has put in years of effort into training them. Almost never will they just "let someone go" in generational families. But they may be given false or screen memories, especially if they are in therapy, to confuse the survivor and the therapist.

The client will need to listen to and believe internal parts who have more information than they do, and take appropriate steps to be safe. This will probably mean cutting off contact with perpetrators at this point. Again, outside accountability is paramount. Safe houses, a women's shelter or a safe church family may be alternatives. One of the worst things the survivor can do is isolate, or go out walking late at night alone, or go camping in the woods by themselves. Abduction will often occur in these scenarios, when the survivor is alone and vulnerable. Safe roommates can help keep the survivor safe.

Locking up the phone in the trunk of the car may help if phone programming is intense. This gives the survivor the chance to wake up or stop phone calls, if an alter has to get up, find the car keys, turn on the light, go outside, and open a car trunk, bring the phone inside and hook it up again before making a phone call.

Building a support system through safe support groups, a good therapist, church, or work can also help. Whenever possible and practical, moving away from the town or state where the survivor was active in the cult can help. Why? Remember the survivor's whole support network was the cult in their old town. The trainers and/or family members have invested time and effort into the survivor and have a big stake in their coming back. If the survivor moves far enough away, a cult group in the new city or state will not know them as well, and will not have a lengthy history with them. This can help decrease the chance of reaccessing by the cult, in conjunction with good therapy and a safe support network.

The survivor will have to rebuild their support system anyway, so why not do it as far as possible away from people they have known who might hurt them? It can be intensely triggering to the survivor to see their old trainer walking down the street towards them, and inside alters may destabilize or feel unsafe. This is one case where distance is good.

One caution though: even if the survivor moves, they will need to work intensely on blocking internal recontact programming at the same time, or they may be quickly reaccessed. Trainers will often send the person's system codes and grids over the internet to cult groups in the new city, and will try to send someone who physically resembles the trainer or a family member to initiate contact with the survivor.

Internal communication and letting inside alters know that they can change their jobs will help. Reward internal reporters for changing allegiance and committing to keep the survivor safe. The cult used to reward them for doing their job; now the survivor can reward them for changing jobs. Develop new interests, work or hobbies that can help the survivor meet new, safe people. The survivor may want to

practice friendship skills in support groups, as long as they are run by reputable, safe therapists.

Be aware that holiday dates are often important dates for reaccessing. Calendars are available that show important holidays for SRA groups. Birthdays are also dates when the individual is expected to return and there may be programming surrounding this.

Callback programming (where the person is given a specific date or holiday when they are to return to the cult, or be punished) may need to be broken as well. Allowing the alters who went through the programming to share their memories, acknowledging their needs, and trying to meet those needs in healthy ways will bring healing.

The survivor will need to go through a period of grieving for loss of
contact with family members and friends in the cult. No matter how abusive, how disliked, it can be very difficult to cut off with perpetrators, especially if they were the only people close to the survivor. The survivor needs to acknowledge the difficulty of creating a new, healthy, cultless support group. The survivor needs to recognize that learning new skills and developing healthy friendships will take time.

One issue often brought up by survivors is: how much do I tell others about my past? This is an individual decision that the survivor and therapist need to look at together. In general though, caution in sharing is best, since sharing too much about the survivor's past may draw the wrong people to them. These people may be dysfunctional, or possible cult members. It is usually best to base new, non cult friendships on healthy aspects of the person at first and very gradually share small bits of information as the friendship progresses, and sharing seems appropriate. With time and opportunities, the survivor will learn the importance of appropriate boundaries and will want healthier relationships in their life.
top

Chapter Thirteen
Shell programming, Internal Councils, Human Experimentation, Function Codes

Parts of this chapter could be extremely triggering, please read with caution and only with a therapist if a survivor.

Shell programming is a form of programming used to create a “shell” on the outside, that other alters inside speak through. This is a designed to hide the person’s multiplicity from the outside world, and works extremely well with highly fragmented systems. It also takes a person with the ability to dissociate to a great degree.

How it is done: with shell programming, the trainer will often take a clear plastic or glass mask, and put it in front of the subject. They will be extremely traumatized, shocked, drugged, and told that they (the alter or alters in front) are the “mask” that they see. Their job will be to be a shell, or voice, to cover for

the others behind. These parts will be so traumatized that they literally see themselves as only a shell, with no real substance or body.

Others inside will then be directed to come next to the “shell” alters, and use their voice to cover their own. This allows greater fragmentation of the person, while being able to hide it from outside view, since the internal alters will learn to present through the shell. Shell alters always see themselves as “clear”, and will have no color if color coding is present in other systems.

Suggestions

It is important to realize that what the system is actually doing is co-presenting, although not co-consciously. For a shell program to work, the shell alters have been taught to allow co-presentation with the other alters in the systems. Other alters in the back may not always be aware that this is what is happening, and the front shell especially will not know that they are being “gone through” for co-presentation.

Recognizing the trauma that occurred, and finding out where the shell fragments came from, will help. Allowing both the shell alters and the other alters to recognize that this is how they have been presenting, and why, will be an important step. Back alters may then begin presenting without going through the shell, and the person may look “more multiple” than they ever have for a period, with accents or young voices coming through. What is actually happening is that the back is presenting without masking who they are through the shell. Meanwhile, the shell alters may decide to coalesce, for greater strength, and may decide to change jobs. Each system will decide what is best for them.

Internal Councils:

Survivors of Illuminati programming will always have some type of hierarchy inside. This is because the cult itself is very hierarchical, and puts this hierarchy inside the person. What better way to inspire loyalty to leadership than to put the leadership inside the person’s head? Trainers are also very hierarchy conscious themselves. They know that a system without hierarchy and head honchos inside to direct things will be a system in chaos. They will not leave the person’s system leaderless inside.

Many trainers will put themselves in the person, over the internal programmers or trainers. This is because they are egotistical, but also because it uses a well known phenomenon of human nature: PEOPLE TEND TO INTERNALIZE THEIR ABUSERS. The survivor may be horrified to find a representative of one of their worst perpetrators inside, but this was a survival mechanism. A tenet of human behavior is that often people will punish someone less who mimics them. A brutal nazi will be less likely to punish another brutal nazi, but will look down upon and punish a weak, crying person. So, the survivor will internalize the rough nazi inside, to avoid being hurt. The survivor may mimic accents, mannerisms, even claim the perpetrator’s life history as their own.

The ultimate form of internalization comes with internalizing hierarchical councils. The person, under

pain, hypnosis, and drugs, will be taught to incorporate a highly dissociated group inside to lead the others. These will often be created from core splits, because the trainers want them to be extremely strong, stable alters in the system.

Triads of three elders may be seen

Platinum's may have a head council of three

Jewels will have a triad, made up of ruby, emerald, diamond in many systems, to rule over the others

And, of course, an internal “leadership council”, “System Above”, “Ascended Masters”, “supreme council”, regional council, world council, etc. may be found. The councils found will vary with each survivor.

These internal groups will correlate roughly to the outside group. Often the child or youth at age twelve will be presented to these groups in a formal coming of age ceremony. This ceremony is considered quite an honor, and will involve the child being traumatized and accepting the leadership of the council for the rest of their life. Undying loyalty is promised. There may be other occasions the person will be forced to come before the councils throughout their lifespan, either for judgment, to pass tests, for punishment, or elevation. These councils will be seen as holding power of life or death, and the child or youth will do anything to gain their favor. The child will internalize them. The trainer will help with the internalization, using photographs or holographic images of the people to “burn them in”. Each member of the group will be given different leadership tasks.

It is not uncommon for the survivor to incorporate a parent, both parents, or grandparents, into their internal leadership hierarchy in a generational survivor.

High priests and priestesses may sit on ruling councils inside.

Suggestions:

Internal leadership councils will often be some of the most resistant to, and hostile towards therapy, especially in the early stages. They will verbally banter with, or refuse to speak to, the therapist, as being “beneath their notice.” They are mimicking the haughty, hierarchical attitudes they have been exposed to all their lives.

They also have the most to lose, if the survivor leaves the cult, and may fight this decision tooth and nail. They will often be the alters with an “attitude”.

Both the survivor and therapist need to recognize that these parts had powerful needs that were met in the cult setting. To ignore this and argue with them will only entrench their belief that therapists are stupid and unknowing people. Acknowledge their internal role while gently pointing out reality. Try to

enlist their aid in helping the survivor strengthen. Discuss honestly the pros and cons of leaving the cult. These are highly intellectual alters, and they need to express their concerns and doubts. Setting good boundaries and not allowing verbal abuse of the therapist is important. These alters are used to "pushing people around" verbally, and have been rewarded for it prior to therapy. Now, they need to learn new coping skills and behaviors, and the process may take time. Allow them to vent their anger, displeasure, and fears about the decision to leave the cult. Offer them new jobs inside the person of leadership over safety committees, or even decision making committees.

Sometimes, a system that has broken free from the cult, and has no external hierarchy that they are accountable to will go through a short period of chaos as word gets out: we're free, and don't have to do what the cult tells us to do any more! Hundreds of internal arguments may break out as to: what do we do for a living? where do we live? what do we eat? what hobbies will we have? Everybody wants to come out, see the daytime, and live this new, free life. But the freedom may cause imbalance with all of the switching going on inside. Enlisting the aid of the internal hierarchy, and creating a limited democracy, with ground rules, may help during this time. Don't dismantle the internal hierarchy overnight, or the systems will be rudderless. Enlist their aid in helping direct which direction the survivor goes. Things will settle down after a period, as the systems learn to listen to each other, vote on ideas, and begin going together in the same direction.

Human Experimentation

This is one of the most grievous things that still occurs in the Illuminati today. The Illuminati were famed for deciding years ago to "go scientific" and incorporate scientific experimentation into their training principles. This is one area where they broke with other, more traditional groups, who still followed "spiritual principles". The Illuminati decided to use scientific data, especially in the psychiatric and behavioral sciences, to drive their training practices. This became known openly during W.W.II, when the world heard about the experimentation on Jews and other groups in the concentration camps, but human experimentation had been quietly going on for years before underground.

It also did not stop at the end of the war. German trainers and scientists were scattered around the world, and hidden, where they continued teaching others the principles they had learned, and continued with ongoing experimentation.

Some of this experimentation occurred with government funding through groups such as the CIA and NSA. The Illuminati had people infiltrated throughout these groups, who used the principles discovered and shared them with their own trainers.

Experimentation is going on, even to this day. It is done secretly. Its purpose is to help improve and create more sophisticated training techniques. To prevent "programming failures", or "pfs" as they are called in the cult.

Many, many survivors, if not all, will have been told that they are only an experiment. This may or may

not be true. Trainers like to tell their subjects that they are experiments, even if they aren't, for several reasons:

1. It creates immense fear and helplessness in the subject (the thought is, if this is an experiment, I will have to work really hard to survive this)

2. It devalues the person immensely. They will feel that they have no real value as a human being, that all they are is an experiment. Someone who feels devalued doesn't care, and will be willing to do things they wouldn't if they felt some value, some humanization.

3. It gives the trainer added power, as they are the one who can begin or stop the "experiment". Almost always, when the person is TOLD they are an experiment, it isn't really true. When trainers and cult members really do experiments, the subjects are never told, because it could bias results. The fear could interfere with drug effects, and skew the results. Most recent cult experimentation has been in the area of: drug effects: using different drugs, both alone and in new combinations and dosages, to induce trance states and open the person to training. Drugs are looked for which will shorten the time interval needed to induce trance state, which are quickly metabolized, and leave no detectable residues the next day.

Behavioral science: watching and recording data on different environmental parameters on human behavior. Modifying the environment.

Praise and punishment as motivators.

Isolation techniques: recording data both physiological and psychological from different isolation methods. Removing, adding, combining different methods of sensory isolation, and the effect of each.

Effectiveness of virtual reality in implanting programming.

Effectiveness of new disks created to put programming in. Cult graphics and computer experts will work to create better and more effective VR disks, which are tested on cult subjects for their effectiveness. The cult wants more and more standardization, and less room for human error and weakness, in its training techniques, which is why it is going more and more to high tech equipment and videos. Attempts to break programming, cause program failure; recording what is effective, what isn't and develop new sequences to prevent pf. Subjects under hypnosis are ordered to try and break certain internal programming sequences. The ways they go about this, and what seems effective, are shared with the trainers, who then create new programs to prevent degradation of programming from occurring.

Harmonic/light, sensory deprivation and over stimulation and the effects neurologically and physically. New combinations of sensory input are always being tested to see which achieve the most lasting results, and can be done rapidly.

The cult is always trying to find new, better, faster methods to break down subjects, put programming in,

and prevent the programming from failing.

This has been the emphasis in most research it has done. The results of this research is shared worldwide, both by internet, phone calls, and international trainer conferences, where trainers worldwide share the results of what they are finding. New techniques are incorporated by other groups which are eager to find out what is being discovered.

Suggestions:

If you have experimental programming, realize that the alters who were used in it are heavily traumatized. They also will feel devalued, less than human, and this was reinforced heavily by the trainers who worked with them. They probably weren't used in initial experiments, as described above, but may have been used in second level experimentation.

I will explain what those terms mean.

Top trainers and leaders will initiate an experiment with a new drug. They will learn to triturate dosages, and record all observable facts on hundreds of subjects. After enough data is gotten, they will then clear it for use by trainers in local groups. It will then still be considered experimental, but will be second level, instead of first level experimentation. At this point, all trainers in local groups will be told to record and report any adverse reactions to the drug, any usual dosages needed, etc. This data is collected in databanks (yes, the cult is now in the computer age), inside of encrypted files, which will then be sent to a central base in Langley, Virginia.

Alters used in experiments, or told that they were experiments, need to realize they are valuable. They will need to realize they went through intense programming, and be allowed to vent and discuss their experiences. The fear related to believing they were an experiment needs to be vented appropriately. They will be angry at the dehumanization, intentionality, and coldness of what they went through, and quite rightly so. They may rail against the effects in their life now of the experiments and procedures they went through, and need to grieve over loss of body image; loss of trust in people; the sense of betrayal and helplessness that they felt during the procedures. They may want to journal, or draw pictures of their experiences.

A warm, empathetic therapist, who listens, and believes, and does not discount what they went through, is invaluable at this point. Allowing internal cognitives and helpers ground parts who went through bizarre sensory experiences, and creating "grounding committees" inside will also help. Extra support may be needed while dealing with experiences and feelings of this intensity.

Function Codes:

Trainers will place within the subject's systems a special way to organize the fragments that are related to the job they were trained to do. These are called Function Codes, and there are three main types:

Command Codes: these are irreversible commands, put in at the limbic level of conditioning. The first code always put in is the “halt “ command, which stops the person in their tracks, and is the first code any new trainer learns. This will stop the subject from assassinating their trainer, if they have MK ULTRA or other assassin training in place.

Other command codes will include: system destruct codes (suicide); shatter codes; erasure codes; and antisuicide codes.

Access Codes: these are specialized codes, often coded into short messages, or numerical codes, that allow access into the person’s system. A trainer will always begin a session by repeating the person’s personal complete access code, which will allow authorized entry into the system without setting off booby traps and internal protectors. These codes may also depend and be set up on sight recognition and voice recognition of the person giving the codes. In other words, the system will respond to the codes only if a person who appears to be an authorized person, such as the person’s trainer, gives them. This is to prevent unauthorized access or using of the person by others outside of the person’s local cult group.

Function codes: these are the “job codes” or work codes within the system.

Often, several will be coded to link together to perform a task. These are usually a letter, such as a Greek alphabet letter, combined with a numeric sequence that corresponds to their place on the internal grid or landscape.

Suggestions:

If the survivor has function codes, or the other codes internally, it will help if the different system controllers can share these with the person. The person can then get to know the fragments, hear their history, and help them begin coalescing with other parts internally. It may help to find the template these codes were fragmented from, and help the template realize how they were traumatized to create these fragments.

About deprogrammers:

Often people who call themselves deprogrammers will attempt to find these codes and help the person. This is an individual decision of each survivor and therapist. There may be excellent deprogrammers, but I have always felt extreme caution, and never used one myself for two reasons:

1. I would never ever give away the locus of control away to an outside person again. It would remind me to much of my own abuse, and I believe the survivor should be self empowered in therapy as much as possible.

2. There are no quick cures, or miracles, or short cuts in the process of undoing the extensive amount of

abuse that has occurred with Illuminati programming. Even the best deprogrammers will admit that after they are done, the person will usually have an idea of what was put in them, but must finish with years of therapy dealing with how they FEEL about the programming that was done. Illuminati programming takes YEARS to put in, with extensive, methodical abuse, and a realistic therapist will realize that it will take years of patience, support, and hard work by both therapist and survivor to undo a lifetime of conditioning and pain. This is not to say that deprogrammers don't help people; good, reputable, safe ones have been reported to be of great help. But the person can also undertake the process themselves of undoing their own programming, and often the survivor is the best "internal deprogrammer" of all. They know their inside people and what motivates them, better than anyone else.

top

Chapter Fourteen

Spiritual Programming

Note: this chapter includes discussion of both cult and Christian spirituality; do not read if these themes are triggering***

Any discussion of Illuminati programming would be lacking if it did not address spiritual programming. Most of the previous chapters have dealt with scientifically based, organized, structured programming.

But the Illuminati are first and foremost not scientists, but spiritual. The very foundation of the group is based on the occult. And they go to great lengths to grind in these occult beliefs in their people's systems.

The amount of spiritual programming in the person's systems will vary from person to person, and depends on the individual group, their religious heritage, the leader's beliefs, and the trainers in the group.

All children go to rituals, where they are dedicated from before birth as well as at intervals throughout their life. In these rituals, demonic entities are invoked, to coerce the person into servant hood, loyalty, and secrecy; as well as reinforce the programming being done.

Trainers will invoke demonic layering during programming sessions. This is done after acute trauma. The person is asked if they want more pain, and they will always say "no". The trainer then offers them a way out: if they will accept a "protector" or "protectors" they won't be hurt any more. The trainers will want this, knowing that with these "protectors'" they can shorten the training sessions. The protectors, or guardians, will reinforce the programming internally, without outside help. This concept will seem controversial to people who do not believe in spiritual realities, but I am only describing what the

Illuminists believe, and their trainers practice.

Spiritual programming will also include: being forced to memorize rituals, THE BOOK OF ILLUMINATION, and other books which contain cult beliefs. The person will be saturated from infancy on, in classes and training sessions, with cult beliefs. They will go to rituals where the adults participate in spiritual worship, wearing robes, and giving obeisance to the group's particular guardian deity. Moloch, Ashtaroth, Baal, Enokkim are demons who are commonly worshipped. The child may see a sacrifice, either real or a set-up, to these deities; animal sacrifices are common. The child will be forced to participate in the sacrifices, and will have to go through blood baptism.

They will be forced to take the heart, or other internal organs, out of an animal that has been sacrificed, and eat them. The adults, and leaders of the group, will place their hands on the child's head, while it is drugged, and invoke demonic entities.

One ritual which is actually programming is the "resuscitation ritual". In this ritual, the child may be heavily drugged, and shocked or tortured, to the point that his heart may stop. The head priest will then "resuscitate " the child, using drugs, CPR, and incantations. When the child comes back, and is awake, he or she will be told that they were "brought back to life" by the demonic entity that the particular group worships, and that now the child owes it their life. They are told that if they ever tell, or try to get the demon to leave, they will return to the lifeless state they were in prior to resuscitation.

Spiritual "healings" due to the demonic are also common. Injuries caused by torture, or programming sessions, or even military exercises, will be healed almost instantaneously during invocations.

Jewel programming will often have demons loyal to the generational family spirits layered in. These are called the "family jewels". The demons "guard them" and help protect the programming surrounding them.

In a sense, every ritual that a young child is part of, is an intense programming experience, as the child observes the adults around them, and imitates their behavior. The child will be severely punished if it falls asleep, and will be told that demons will kill it if it goes to sleep again during a ritual.

They are taught to be completely silent, no matter what they witness during the rituals. The child will witness things that seem utterly unbelievable, including faces appearing transformed by the demonic, channeling, other voices coming out of a leader's mouth, reading of members, telling the future. Group guidance will often be given through channeling of a strong spirit or principality; members who can channel powerful spirits and survive are respected, and their guidance will be looked for.

Some groups will use scriptures negatively or program the child to hate Christian symbols and theology. Other groups will encourage the amnesic front to embrace a Christian lifestyle, while forcing the back alters to renounce and blaspheme the choices the front has made, to separate the two alter groups even further. The cult alters will be told that since they renounced Christianity, they have committed the

“unpardonable sin” and can never be forgiven. They will be shown scriptures that supposedly back this up.

In moments of despair, during intense torture or isolation, a person will often cry out to God for help. The trainers or other cult members will often mock the person, telling the person that God has forgotten them, or ask “where is God now? He must hate you.....”

Any negative experience the person undergoes, will be used to reinforce the concept that they have been abandoned by God. The cult will gleefully point out the contradictions between what the person experiences, and what Christianity teaches should happen to them.

They may distort scriptures, or use false scriptures. They may distort Christian hymns, or use them in programming. A favorite hymn is “may the circle be unbroken”, since it can have two meanings.

Suggestions:

Spiritual programming can be some of the most damaging programming within a person’s systems, since it attempts to cut them off from the source of real healing. It is an intentional distortion of truth, with events calculated to teach and reinforce wrong concepts of God. Many survivors are unable to hear Christian terms, or are intensely triggered by any religious discussion.

The survivor and therapist need to realize that these negative reactions are the result of years of false teaching, pain, punishment, distortion and set-ups. It is important not to judge the parts of the person that are negative towards spirituality, or come out, proclaiming the power and benefits of cult spirituality. The survivor’s front may be horrified to hear or learn about parts that have these feelings, especially if they are a strong Christian. These parts inside are sharing the only reality they have ever known, and need time and patience to ground, and experience reality outside of the cult setting.

Demonic oppression may need to be dealt with, and even deliverance, to bring relief to a system that is being terrorized by the demonic.

Each therapist and survivor will need to come to terms with their own spiritual beliefs. I personally believe that a therapist needs to consider the possibility of the demonic, since this is what the survivor has been exposed to all their life. The cult certainly does believe it is real, and anyone who has been involved in a cult setting will have had experiences that are in-explainable by normal rational scientific principles.

The survivor needs hope, and healing. A positive spirituality based on love, gentleness, forgiveness, that is the opposite of the coercing, punitive, negative spirituality the survivor has known, will help immensely in the healing process. A spiritual belief system that offers hope, healing, grace, mercy, and affirmation will often give the survivor the support they need to go on during the often difficult process of healing.

top

Chapter Fifteen

Core splits, Denial programming, the last Five Steps of Discipline

Virtual Reality Programming

Virtual reality programming (VR) is a form of programming that has become more and more widely used in the past few decades. It involves the person being placed in VR headsets and suit while a cult created VR disk is used to run the program. It can be used to create 3D and holographic images, and especially is useful in scripted programming, and target practice sequences for assassin training. Under hypnosis , the person will really believe they are in the scene.

Virtually any scenario can be recreated. Images to be “burned in” will be shown on the VR disk, and reinforced repetitively during the programming sequence. Some trainers feel it removes the element of “human error” in training, and use it quite extensively. VR programming, like any other programming, means going inside and finding out the distortions that were placed in the parts that went through the programming, allowing them to see how they were deceived, and dealing with the trauma associated with the programming.

Denial Programming:

Denial programming begins with the first experiences the infant goes through in life. The child has been horrendously wounded and traumatized, yet the next morning, the adults around him are acting normally, as if nothing had happened. They are modeling a lifestyle of denial for the infant and young child. This is reinforced later by the child being told:

“It was just a bad dream” (oh, how the child wants to believe this lie. It makes the pain less to think it didn’t really happen)

“It’s just your imagination; it isn’t really happening” (which is again embraced as an escape from the horror). Denial will also be fed by the adults around the child telling them that they will never be believed if they disclose. There will be set ups to teach the child what they see and hear, and to teach the child to trust outside adults to tell them their reality.

A typical set up will go like this:

The adult will hold an object such as an orange in their hand, and ask the young child, about age two or

three, “what is this?”. The child will quickly respond, “oh, an orange!” The child will be shocked, and told, “no, it’s an apple.” The child will be confused, because what they are looking at is obviously an orange. It is the color orange, smells like an orange, looks like an orange. The question will be repeated. The child may answer again,” an orange,” and will be shocked again. Finally, the child, unsure and not wanting to be punished, will say, “an apple,” and be praised.

The purpose of this exercise is to teach the child to not trust their own reality, and look to outside adults or leaders to tell them what reality really is.

That is the basis of denial: the person learns to not trust their own reality, because of punishment and fear when they have spoken the truth.

Alters will be created as the child grows, whose purpose is to deny the cult abuse. If any leakage or breakthrough occurs, the denial alter’s job is to create a plausible explanation: it was a nightmare, a book the person read, a movie they saw, etc. These alters will read and quote literature that refutes SRA. THESE ALTERS OFTEN BELIEVE THAT THEY ARE SAVING THE LIFE OF THE SURVIVOR. They have been told that if the survivor remembers, and believes the abuse, the survivor will be killed, or the denial alter will be severely punished or shattered for not doing their job. These parts have a vested interest in their job: they believe their very existence and they body’s survival, depend upon them.

Suggestions:

Arguing with a denial alter will not work, since they are not motivated by logic, but fear. A better approach is to ask them what they fear if the person remembers. This will open up the deception and lies that were ground in. They may be protecting the survivor from suicidal alters behind them, who are programmed to kick in if denial is broken through. Allowing them to vent their concerns, and enlisting the aid of helpers or cognitives who do not have suicidal or denial programming will help. Showing them reality in a gentle way, allowing them to “listen in” on others who share will go a long way.

Some denial is the natural consequence of self protection from the horrors of abuse; not all denial is programming. But if denial is constantly blocking therapy, and causing it to come to a complete standstill; if the person becomes highly suicidal every time denial is set aside briefly, then the possibility needs to be considered. Safety, inner cooperation, and patience will go a long way in decreasing denial. As denial backs down, you can expect an immense amount of grieving as the truth is realized. Denial protected the survivor from the horrendous pain of the truth, and should be let go of extremely slowly and cautiously, with plenty of support during the grieving stage.

Core splits:

Core splits are intentional traumatic splits created from the core personality.

The core may be literally “splintered” by overwhelming psychological and physical/spiritual trauma. The trauma needed to create a core split must be very early and psychologically devastating. Fetal splits may occur, but they are rarely a core split; instead, the core creates an alter, but remains.

Core splits are done between the ages of 18 months and three years. Usually at least one parent or main caretaker is involved in the trauma, because this creates the psychological devastation necessary to split the core. Physical trauma alone rarely causes core splits. The torture is intense and prolonged, until the child collapses. It may be shocking, stretching, being hung in a high place, or a combination of several techniques. Being placed in “shock boxes”, or near drowning are also used.

The techniques that create core splits are also dangerous, since they can also cause autism if the child cannot endure the programming. When I was in the cult, I fought to stop core splitting because occasionally children were lost or the foundational personality was too weakened.

The core may split into two, three, or up to eight splits internally. Each split will be a piece of the “core child”. The original core will not resurface after splitting. These splits are used by cult trainers to be used as templates to create systems within the child. A core split, or a split from one, will be a strong alter, and can be re-split many times in the programming process, to create a multifaceted and diverse system within.

Suggestions:

Core splits represent intense foundational trauma. They will be the basis for later systems, which may be completely dissociated from the split as time goes on. Work on core splits should go very slowly, and only late in the therapy process when there is immense intrasystem cooperation. The survivor will need every internal resource to deal with these traumas, and plenty of outside therapeutic support.

It may mean hospitalization unless the survivor can keep the trauma from emerging too quickly, and the therapist and survivor can go extremely slow.

Other, less dissociated systems and fragments should be integrated.

Acknowledging the abuse cognitively will be the first step in dealing with core trauma. Letting more dissociated parts grieve about “hearing about” what happened may come next. Allowing feelings near the core to come close, a little at a time, with helpers and internal nurturers offering support will help.

These feelings should be titrated, and looked at a little at a time. Splits may be different ages, and may need to express themselves in different ways.

There may be “dream programming”, a “fantasy world”, or other flight from reality surrounding the core splits, that protects them from contact with the outside world, which is perceived as brutal and cold. Parts may be completely disconnected from outside reality in an effort to buffer pain.

Slow, patient nurturing and reality orientation will help these tremendously traumatized parts begin to join outer reality. Some parts will always have been aware of what happened, but won't care to join the outside world.

Patience, allowing them to vent, will help most.

Steps of Discipline:

Step seven: Not caring

This step will take the child further into a perpetrator role. The child will be forced to hurt others and prove their ability to not care during the process.

Step eight: Time travel

The child will be taught spiritual principles of "traveling" both internally and externally, with set ups, role playing, and guided exercises reinforced with trauma. The goal will be to reach "enlightenment", an ecstatic state of dissociation reached after severe trauma.

Steps nine, ten, eleven:

These will involve programming that will vary according to the child's future role in the cult. Sexual trauma, learning to dissociate and increase cognition, decrease feeling will be emphasized in these steps.

Step twelve: "coming of age"

A ceremony of becoming at age twelve to thirteen, the child will be formally inducted into the cult and their adult role in a ceremony of "coming of age". They will prove this ability by performing the role/job they have been training for, to the satisfaction of the trainer and leaders; by undergoing a special induction ceremony. The ritual and ceremony will be held with other children of the same age, who are dressed in white and given a prize as acknowledgement that they have completed the basics of their training successfully.

They will continue to be abused, even as adults, but the major traumatization and creation of system templates will have occurred by this age. Future training will refine what was already placed in the child by this age, or build upon the foundation.

Suggestions:

Grieving the abuse, acknowledging the feelings associated with undergoing the trauma will be

important. It will be necessary to deal with perpetrator guilt, since by this time the child will be a perpetrator, and will have identified with the adult role models around them. This can be difficult to do, since perpetration will horrify the survivor when they remember this. Supporting the survivor, remaining non judgmental, and encouraging acceptance of these parts is important. Pointing out that at the time, they saw no other options available will help. Realizing that perpetrator alters saved the child's life, and that they had no other way to act, especially originally, the first time, will need to be pointed out. The survivor may feel hostile towards, or reviled by perpetrator alters, but they are the expression of the abuse and limited choices they were allowed. Grieving being a perpetrator will take time and caring support by others.

top

Other articles by Svali:

Ritual Abuse @ Suite 101

7 September 2000
On Having Need
Guest article on the struggles survivors of ritual abuse have in learning to trust and to feel that they deserve to exist and have needs.

Complex poly-fragmentation: a coping mechanism for the Survivor

12 Aug 2000
Therapists Speak out on Healing
Article discusses topic of what helps in healing from ritual abuse, from the perspective of therapists in the field. *Important note: this article is not meant to be therapy, and only offers general opinions

28 Jul 2000
Therapists Speak Out on Ritual Abuse
Therapists discuss: is ritual abuse real? And some of their opinions on this subject.

16 Jul 2000
A Survivor's Testimony: article by Kim Campbell
Description of one survivor's healing from ritual abuse, and the process of deliverance, from a Christian perspective.

2 July 2000
Breaking Free of the Cult
An article that addresses issues facing the person who wishes to leave a transgenerational cult, including safety

16 June 2000
How the Cult Programs People: Part Two
Second half of article on cult programming

15 June 2000
How the Cult Programs People
Brief description of some of the ways the Illuminati program their members. Warning: may be triggering to survivors, please use caution and stay safe.

3 June 2000
How the Cult Makes Money
Describes activities the cult is engaged in to make money

21 May 2000
On Dissociation: Part Two
Continuation of article, discussing dissociation and some of its impact in the lives of survivors of ritual abuse.

20 May 2000
Survivors Speak Out: on Dissociation: Part One
Discusses the experience of dissociation from the perspective of survivors of ritual abuse

8 May 2000
Survivors Speak Out on Remembering: part two
Various survivors discuss the process of remembering ritual abuse.

7 May 2000
Survivors Speak Out on Remembering: part one
Survivors of ritual abuse speak out on the process of remembering

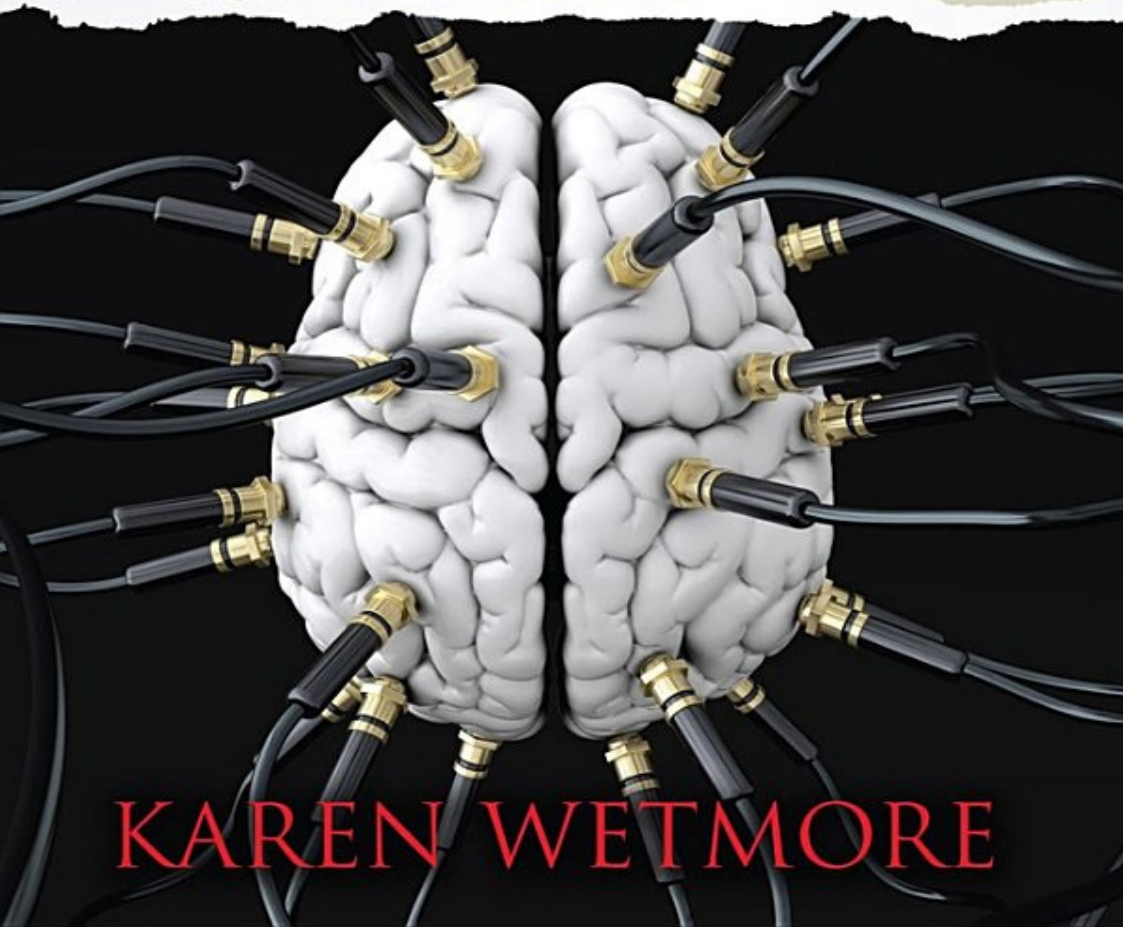
26 April 2000
Why the cult doesn't get caught
A description of security measures used to prevent detection by a cult group, how they maintain secrecy.

18 April 2000
Cults that abuse
Discussion of cults that abuse, based on Singer's model of conditions for thought reform.

10 April 2000
Ritual abuse: Modern hysteria or ancient practice?

SURVIVING EVIL

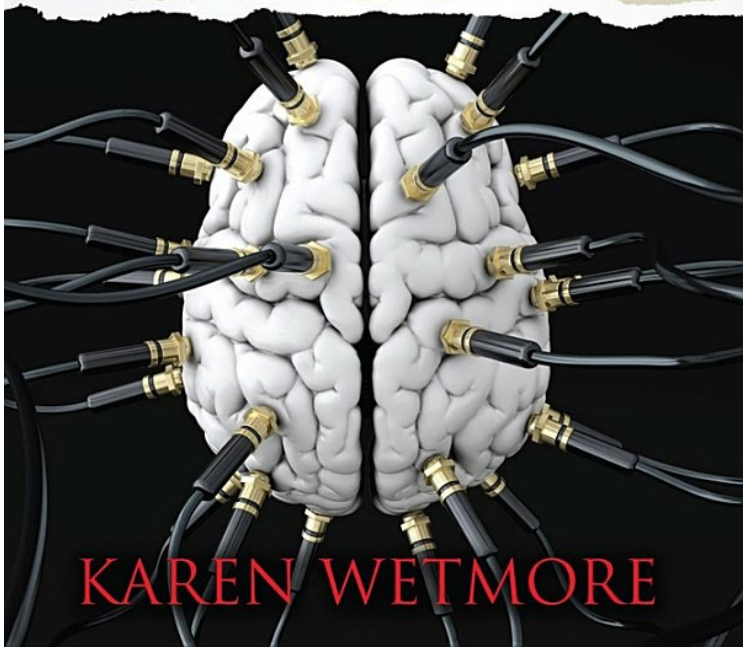
CIA [redacted] Mind [redacted]
Control [redacted] Experiments
[redacted] in Vermont



KAREN WETMORE

SURVIVING EVIL

CIA Mind
Control Experiments
in Vermont



KAREN WETMORE

Surviving Evil

CIA Mind Control Experiments in Vermont

Karen Wetmore

Manitou Communications, Inc.

Copyright © 2014 Manitou Communications, Inc.
1701 Gateway, Suite 349
Richardson, TX 75080
Phone: 1-800-572-9588, FAX: 972-918-9069
rossinst@rossinst.com, www.rossinst.com, www.manitoucommunications.com

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data: 2014930477
Wetmore, Karen
Surviving Evil: CIA Mind Control Experiments in Vermont
ISBN 10: 0-9815376-5-0
ISBN-13: 978-0-9815376-5-8
1.Mind Control 2. Central Intelligence Agency 3. Vermont State Hospital

TABLE OF CONTENTS

1 Medical Records - Wetmore v. State of Vermont, 1997 - 2002

2 Mary Fletcher Hospital - Vermont State Hospital, 1965 - 1969

3 The Experiment, 1970 - 1973

4 Released, Not Free, 1972 - 1981

5 God, King and Beginning, 1981 - 1988

6 Therapy, Chaos and Integration, 1988 - 1997

7 Aftermath

8 Vermont Hospital Deaths, 1952 - 1973

APPENDICES: THE EVIDENCE

The Search for Documents

Biographies, Publications, and Cross-Linkages

Similarities Between Vermont Documents and the CIA-LSD Literature

Documents

91st Psalm

References

Dedicated To the Memory of
Phillip Harold Cram
1951-1969
“I will miss you forever.”

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

A special thank you to Kathy Judge: there is no doubt in my mind that without your help, I literally would not have survived. When I lost all hope, you held it for me until I could hold it once again for myself. You believed in me when I could no longer believe in myself. You trusted in me and showed me that I could take the risk to trust again. You showed me how to accept all that has happened in my life and be able to live despite it all. Thank you for being there when I needed you the most and helping me pull my life out of chaos. I will be grateful to you always.

Thank you, Dr. Colin Ross for encouraging me to write this book. Your advice on CIA drug and mind control programs has been invaluable. Thanks for answering my many questions related to MKULTRA. Your support is much appreciated.

Thanks to my father, George Wetmore, I miss you Dad, and my mother Dorothy Wetmore, who encouraged me to write a book, my brother George (Kip) Wetmore, Sue Wetmore, Jeffery Wetmore, Christopher Wetmore and "King." I love you all.

Thanks to Dr. Thomas Fox. I wish you were here.

Thanks to Dr. Judy Nepvue, Dr. Alan Shirks, Copley Hospital, Rutland Regional Medical Center, (RRMC), and the 1981 nursing staff, Copley Hospital, especially Anna Anderson, Carol Leonard and Cheryl.

Thanks to RRMC psychiatric unit nursing staff: Lynne Colville, Mary Patten, Rosemary Johnson, Tammy, Lesa, Susan and Marlene.

Thanks to Karen Esty, Linda Khoury, Sylvia Boyea, Viola Littlejohn, Henry and Joyce LaVanway, Craig and Peggy Angstadt, Jane Quigley, Marianne, Jules and Mary Denis, Gene and Sally Pagano, John Fillioe, Phil Fass, Jane Youngbaer, Rep. Anne Donahue, Rep. Michael Fisher, Deana Weidman, Ezra The Book Finder and Professor Sandra Coyle (for helping me polish my writing skills in your classroom).

Thanks to Senator Bernie Sanders and Burlington office staff, Jim Rader and Gretchen Bailey, Vermont State Trooper Sharon, my former neighbor, Waterbury Center, Vermont (1981), Vermont State Police, Middlesex barracks (1971-1972).

Thanks to, Bob Pratt, Randal Smathers, Editor *Rutland Herald*, Louis Porter, former Chief Vermont Press Bureau, Associated Press, David

Moats, *Rutland Herald* Editorial Page Editor, the *Rutland Herald*, the *Barre-Times Argus*, the Vermont Press Bureau, Blink Films, Smithsonian Channel, Counterpoint Newspaper, "Valtin," Jeff Kaye (for posting the November 30, 2008 *Rutland Herald* article).

Thanks to Jimmy Judge and Peter and Sharon Anderson, and June Austin and Pam Greeno Westcott for helping me fill in childhood memories. I miss you Pam.

Special thanks go to the people who spoke with me on a confidential basis. Thank you for your valuable information.

FOREWORD

People contact me by letter and email to describe ongoing harassment with non-lethal weapons, mind control techniques and intimidation. Many of their stories sound plausible and are told coherently, in detail, and with a context that makes sense of them. This may be a prior husband or boyfriend in the military, prior employment in the intelligence community, working for a defense contractor, or something similar. But, no matter how plausible, none of the accounts can be proven or disproven.

Karen Wetmore's story is completely different. I have never met anyone who has worked so hard for so long to obtain solid documentation of her allegations of mind control experimentation. As you will read in these pages, Karen filed numerous Freedom of Information Act requests with the CIA and military, corresponded with numerous officials and politicians, and read a great deal of background material. Piece by piece, she assembled her facts, until she had documented a large network of professional connections, relationships and contacts between her own psychiatrists and the network of CIA and military mind control doctors.

Karen's claim that she was a victim of CIA mind control experimentation is backed up by extensive circumstantial evidence – enough to establish her case in a court of law, in my opinion – but also by direct evidence and documents. As she explains, the starting point was discovering the name of Robert W. Hyde, M.D. in her medical records. I was already aware of Dr. Hyde. He was cleared at TOP SECRET by the CIA as a contractor in its mind control program, MKULTRA. He received $148,515.00 from the CIA in 1955 under MKULTRA Subproject 10 for LSD experiments. He received $5,580.00 in 1961 under MKULTRA Subproject 61, and $24,500.00 in 1956 under MKULTRA Subproject 66.

In 1955, Dr. Hyde published a paper in the *American Journal of Psychiatry*, volume 111, pages 881-895, entitled, "Experimental Psychiatry II. Clinical and Physio-chemical observations in experimental psychosis." This paper is about LSD experiments. Dr. Hyde's coauthors were Max Rinkel, M.D., Harry Solomon, M.D., and Hudson Hoagland, Ph.D. Dr. Hoagland worked at the Worcester Foundation for Experimental Biology, which was the site for MKULTRA Subproject 8, funded in 1953 for $39,500.00 to support LSD experiments. Dr. Hyde

was the contractor on Subproject 8.

Other coauthors of Dr. Hyde's on published papers include J. Sanbourne Bockoven, M.D., Jackson DeShon, M.D., and Harry C. Solomon, M.D. Keep an eye out for these names as you read Karen's story. In 1958, a book was published entitled, *Chemical Concepts of Psychosis*, edited by Max Rinkel and Herman Denber. The book is the Proceedings of the Symposium on Chemical Concepts of Psychosis held at the Second International Congress of Psychiatry in Zurich, Switzerland, September 1-7, 1957.

Participants and contributors to the Symposium include the following documented CIA and military mind control contractors and LSD researchers: Robert Heath, Hudson Hoagland, Paul Hoch, Abraham Hoffer, Albert Hofmann, Amedeo Marrazzi, and Humphrey Osmond. This is the network of doctors who conducted LSD, brain electrode implant and other experiments for the CIA and US military during the time period that Karen Wetmore was being experimented on in hospitals in Vermont. Paul Hoch, M.D. killed tennis pro, Harold Blauer, with an experimental dose of mescaline provided by the US Army at New York State Psychiatric Institute on January 8, 1953. Harold Blauer was never told he was receiving a hallucinogen. His family received an award of $18,000.00 on June 17, 1955 from the New York Court of Claims.

We know for a fact that CIA and military mind control contractors killed at least one person with mescaline in the 1950's. What are the odds that Harold Blauer was the only one who died? Keep this in mind as you read Karen Wetmore's account of the hundreds of deaths at Vermont State Hospital during the time period of MKULTRA, MKSEARCH and other CIA mind control programs.

The involvement of Vermont State Hospital and Vermont School of Medicine in CIA mind control experiments, which was extensive and lasted over a long period of time, has never been documented before. This is original investigative work by Karen Wetmore. Additionally, she is the first person to bring the existence of the CIA's MKCOTTON program to public attention. I filed a Freedom of Information act request about MKCOTTON as a result of Karen's research, but the CIA told me they had no additional information on it.

Karen Wetmore is a courageous survivor and investigator. She has overcome many severe obstacles in order to get her story down on paper. Read it, and pray for those who died.

Colin A. Ross, M.D.
December, 2013

INTRODUCTION

Before I obtained my medical records from the Vermont State Hospital and the Medical Center Hospital of Vermont, I never could have imagined that the information in those records would lead me straight to the CIA drug and mind control research known as MKULTRA.

My medical records contain shocking details of drug and mind control research including methods employed by CIA known as Special Interrogations. The content of the records would lead to a lawsuit filed by me in 1998 and they would give me the name of a famous CIA Technical Services Division employee and MKULTRA researcher, Dr. Robert W. Hyde. Hyde was involved in my treatment in VSH and he was Director of Psychiatric Research at the VSH during the years I was a patient there. I would go on to identify numerous other CIA researchers, CIA sites, cover funding groups and CIA methods, all of which were operational at VSH-UVM in the 1950's, 1960's and 1970's.

Although CIA drug and mind control programs were conducted using names like BLUEBIRD, ARTICHOKE and Project OFTEN, for convenience, the CIA research will be referred to as MKULTRA unless specifically noted.

For fifteen years, I obtained original source documents that prove not only that Vermont institutions conducted CIA experiments but that a massive, coordinated state and federal cover-up is ongoing, decades after the 1977 Senate hearings on MKULTRA were held. The 1977 hearings never mentioned Vermont or Robert Hyde and at the closing of those hearings, Americans were told that the important details of the secret experiments had been told. My investigation shows otherwise.

While I was going through the process of integration for multiple personality disorder with my therapist Kathy Judge, who I began seeing in 1988, I filed a lawsuit against the State of Vermont and the Vermont hospitals after the State of Vermont refused to provide me with copies of my VSH medical records. Even after I obtained a lawyer, the State was not forthcoming with my medical records. When I finally did receive the incomplete copy of the VSH records and read the contents, I learned that not only did I have far more memory loss than I realized but that I had been subjected to experiments without my knowledge or consent. Robert Hyde's name in my records would lead me on a fifteen-year search for the truth about what happened to me and to thousands

of other unwitting VSH patients.

An almost unbelievable set of circumstances began to unfold after the filing of the lawsuit. The phone company informed me that my telephone was wiretapped. They would continue to tell me this over the next fifteen years. Mail, including certified mail sent to a United States Senator would be stolen. I had frequent encounters on the street, in stores and in traffic with strangers who appeared to go out of their way to insure that I saw them. One of these strangers was identified as an undercover federal agent and the car license plates of several other strangers led back to the federal government. I would be harassed until finally I vehemently complained to my Senator and to the FBI.

In 2008, I was the subject of a front page *Rutland Herald* article on the Vermont CIA experiments and I participated in a 2009 documentary on the CIA research for the Smithsonian channel.

My story is extreme. The events and circumstances that I was caught up in beginning at the age of thirteen when I was hospitalized the first time would remain a mystery to me for over three decades. The early childhood trauma I was exposed to and that produced the amnesia and the MPD would not be known by me or by any caregiver until the mid-1990's. VSH and Burlington hospital doctors knew my diagnosis in the 1960's but kept the information from me, my family and from subsequent caregivers. The Vermont CIA experiments stole my chances at an early age to live a normal life, but I was not the only VSH patient to have been subjected to unwitting research.

I obtained documents that not only show that thousands of other VSH patients were used and abused in the covert experiments but that during the twenty-year period when Vermont institutions conducted the CIA drug and mind control research, almost 3,000 VSH patients died - as many as 186 a year, year after year for twenty years in a row until the CIA's MKULTRA was shut down in 1973. VSH death rates immediately returned to a more normal level beginning in 1973 and without the federal funds provided by agencies who admitted wittingly funding the secret CIA MKULTRA research in hospitals all across the country, VSH never again conducted active patient research. Were CIA terminal experiments conducted at VSH? Those who know the answer to this question aren't willing to talk. Federal officials, who have the power to investigate, won't.

This book details my search for the truth about what happened to me and to thousands of other VSH patients during the CIA experiments

in the 1950's, 1960's and 1970's in Vermont. Anyone who has read my medical records cannot explain how I survived. My therapist was never sure I would survive integration for MPD. I've had two heart attacks. I have three autoimmune diseases, macular degeneration, PTSD, chronic depression, an anxiety disorder, and schizoid tendencies and although an integrated multiple, I remain dissociative for certain stressors. But I survived.

Not only did I survive, I uncovered the dark, secret history of brutal CIA experiments that no one in the CIA, the State of Vermont or the federal government ever dreamed anyone would discover. Even now, fifteen years after finding the CIA in Vermont, it's still hard for me to comprehend.

Vermont, the place I was born and have lived my life. Vermont, the scenic Green Mountain state, with its majestic mountains, its beautiful autumn foliage and its liberal social attitude. Vermont, the very last place anyone would imagine CIA drug and mind control research. It's apparent to me that CIA thought that Vermont was the perfect place to conduct its research without fear and with impunity.

I survived the evil of the Vermont CIA experiments. Many, I fear did not.

1

MEDICAL RECORDS – WETMORE v. STATE OF VERMONT, 1997-2002

Eight years after beginning therapy for multiple personality disorder and beginning the integration process, Kathy suggested that I try to write a narrative of my life. I was struggling in the fall of 1997 after an intense period of integration. I had been multiple for over four decades and I was feeling increasingly overwhelmed by what I tried to explain to Kathy as the intrusion of some other terrible world. It made no sense to me or to her but she hoped that writing the narrative might offer some relief.

I began to write about my life. I had learned prior to integration that I had several violent early childhood traumas. Because of the amnesia I suffered as a four-year old child, I was never able to tell anyone what had happened to me, and the memory loss kept me from having any conscious awareness of the traumas.

When I got to the Vermont State Hospital (VSH) years, the narrative came to a screeching halt. I realized that I didn't have much memory about my experiences while a patient in VSH. I wasn't totally without memory, but the memories I had didn't tell me much at all about my time in the hospital. Kathy and I talked it over and she suggested that I contact the VSH and the Burlington hospitals I was also a patient in as a teenager to request copies of my medical records.

Although doctors had asked me for my permission to obtain my medical records in the past, I always refused to allow them to do so. I believed that the information in the records would show that I had been the terrible monster that I believed myself to have been while a patient in VSH. I thought that anyone who saw the records wouldn't want anything to do with me. But after going through eight years of therapy with Kathy and knowing that no matter what, I really could trust her, I decided to go ahead and obtain my records.

I phoned the Fletcher Allen Hospital in Burlington and asked for copies of my medical records. There was no problem. I then called the VSH to request my records. The woman on the phone was hostile and

insulting. I couldn't believe it when she refused to allow me to obtain copies of my medical records. I reminded her that I had a right to obtain my records, but she continued to refuse to send them to me. I was furious.

The spotty memories I had about my time in VSH were memories I tried to keep out of my head. My entire life had been impacted by my feelings about having been locked up as a thirteen-year old child. I felt that I had been treated like an animal in VSH and the behavior of the VSH personnel on the phone triggered feelings of anger.

I phoned the Vermont Commissioner of Mental Health office to complain about the VSH personnel who refused to allow me to obtain my records. Much to my surprise, the response I got from the Commissioner's office staff was the same. I was flatly refused access to my medical records.

It was always difficult for me to explain how my VSH hospitalizations changed my life forever. Nothing was ever the same. As a thirteen-year old child, I was thrust into a strange and frightening world of madness and cruelty. My life after the first hospitalization was filled with shame, fear and the ever-present sting of the stigma I carried for years. I was never able to return to school and I watched my friends continue with their lives while I remained on the sidelines. I was the crazy girl. I was the one who had been in the state mental hospital. I became lonely and isolated.

I never believed that I belonged in VSH. I knew that I was sick, but it appeared that the doctors didn't know any more about what was wrong with me after my months in VSH than before I was a patient. I remembered being treated badly by the doctors in both hospitals but I could never explain exactly why or what had happened to cause them to treat me so harshly. I believed it must have been something about me that caused me to be held in VSH for so long. Because the memories I had were so broken and spotty, I was never really sure what had taken place. I never spoke about my time in VSH and I carried a deep, lingering fear of returning to the hospital. My entire life had been shaped by my experiences in VSH and in 1997 I was determined to not only find the truth about what had happened to me, but I wasn't going to be treated like a second class citizen by the State of Vermont again

I fumed for hours after my phone conversations with the State. Terrible images filled my mind. I recalled the Burlington doctors shouting at me, threatening me and demanding that I stop screaming. No matter how I had tried to stop screaming, I couldn't. I didn't know

why. Surely, I must have been crazy.

Images of my father sitting beside me in the ambulance on the way to VSH in 1965 flooded my mind. Dad tried to reassure me that everything would be okay as I lay strapped to a stretcher, sobbing. I drifted in and out of consciousness that night in 1965 but I always remembered seeing my father cry. It was the only time I ever saw my father cry.

Images of lying on the floor of a seclusion room watching disembodied eyes staring at me through a slit in the locked door crept into my mind. People dressed in white suddenly rushed into the seclusion room, grabbed me, threw me face first against the wall and put me in a straightjacket. They never spoke to me. As they tied my arms and legs to the bed, I was terrified. At thirteen my life had become a nightmare from which there was no escape. There was no one to help me.

In the fall of 1997, I was determined to fight back against the State of Vermont. I took out a phone book and began to look for a lawyer. The first few numbers I called, the lawyers were either not there or not available to take another case. The first lawyer who answered the phone and was willing to meet with me was Alan George. I met with him and after talking for a couple of hours, he agreed to help me obtain my medical records.

Alan immediately encountered problems with the State of Vermont. They continued to refuse to relinquish my medical records. Vermont's Attorney General's office offered excuse after excuse as letters and phone calls were traded for weeks. I asked Alan if maybe the court could help, but he indicated that lawyers preferred to work things out between themselves if possible. My lawyer wasn't having any better luck than I had.

Finally after weeks of back and forth communication, the State agreed to provide me with copies of my medical records. Upon hearing the news from Alan, I grew uneasy. What would I read about myself in those records? What awful things would they say about me? Would they confirm that I was the monster that I had believed myself to be?

I always knew that I had been in a seclusion room on a locked back ward when I was eighteen years old. I knew that I had been in leather wristlets. I knew that I had been kept in a straightjacket. I just never knew or even thought about how long I was kept in those conditions. No subsequent caregiver, even Kathy, had ever asked me directly about my time in a straightjacket. I have no way of knowing if I would have

remembered anything about it even if someone had asked me. To this day, I only have fragmented memories of that time. I also knew that I had been violent toward myself and toward the VSH staff in 1970-1971. I wondered how Kathy would feel about me after she read the record and even more troubling for me, was the question of how I would feel about myself.

When Kathy learned that I had retained a lawyer she was understandably concerned. It hadn't been a year since I underwent the integration process and I was still fragile. She had suggested that I get my records and believed that the information would help in my therapy. Kathy was as surprised by the unwillingness of the State to provide me with my records as was everyone else. The last thing she wanted for me was to become involved in a battle with the State of Vermont.

Alan called me when the records arrived at his office. He remarked that he didn't see anything out of the ordinary in the records. Another lawyer working with Alan, Kim Hayden, dropped the records off at my apartment. I was trembling as I began to read.

The records were not in chronological order and were difficult to follow. I spread them out on the living room floor, stacking doctor's orders, nurse's notes, drug charts and other sections in the proper places. As I began to locate the 1970-1971 seclusion room charts, my heart began to pound

The charts were dated, daily logs of my time in seclusion. At the top of every page was printed, "Seclusion, wristlets and full straightjacket." I stared at the pile of seclusion charts stacked on my carpet. The seclusion began in October, 1970, and went on almost without interruption until June 21, 1971. I couldn't believe what I was looking at. How could I not have known this? How could I have been kept like this for almost nine months and not have remembered? I was horrified at both the conditions I was kept in and by the realization that I could not remember a substantial portion of my own life.

I stared at drug charts that showed I was given massive amounts of multiple drugs, sometime seven or eight drugs at a time. I was frequently given placebos. There were electric shock treatment charts. I was administered vaginal suppositories for months while tied to a bed in seclusion. There was no indication in the records as to the reason why the suppositories were ordered. Despite warnings printed at the top of each page of the drug charts indicating that I was allergic to phenothiazine drugs, I was given the drugs anyway.

I stared at letters to and from the VSH Superintendent, George

Brooks. There were letters to and from the Mental Health Commissioner, Jonathan Leopold. There were letters from the Rutland court where I had been involuntarily committed in 1965 and in 1970. I read letters my mother wrote to George Brooks and to Leopold where she pleaded with them not to treat me harshly. She tried to schedule a meeting with VSH doctors and she bitterly complained about Dr. Otto Havas. I was overwhelmed by what I was reading. What did it all mean?

I shared my alarm with Kathy, who was understandably shocked by the things I told her were in my records. The next day I met with Alan and Kim. They had more closely read the records and quickly determined that not only had my civil and Constitutional rights been violated, but that I had been experimented on. There was going to be a lawsuit. Alan needed an expert medical witness and I suggested a former psychiatrist I had successfully worked with, Dr. Thomas Fox. Tom had recently become Commissioner of Mental Health in New Hampshire after leaving his position as Director of Psychiatry at the Rutland Regional Medical Center.

I spoke with Tom on the phone and Alan sent him a copy of my medical records. It didn't take long before Tom agreed to be an expert witness. Kathy had known Tom for a long time and my opinion of him couldn't have been better. Tom had been one of the very few psychiatrists I had ever had who actually helped me. I trusted him.

The 1965 and 1971 Medical Center Hospital records contained disturbing and confusing information as well. In 1965, despite being warned by doctors called in to consult on my condition to immediately stop the phenothiazine drugs, the Fletcher psychiatrists not only continued to give me the drugs I was allergic to, they increased the dose. There were records showing I was given frequent massive doses of Sodium Amytal, a drug commonly used in the 1960's as a "truth drug."

I was transferred from almost seven months in seclusion in VSH to the neurology unit of the Degoesbriand Hospital, a part of the Medical Center. There were numerous EEG's conducted and one in particular stood out. During the EEG, conducted only days after I was admitted, I was given 1800 mg of a drug called Metrazol. It was obvious in reading the chart notes that the drug caused me to hallucinate and experience substantial physical and psychological pain. At one point during the administration of Metrazol, I accused the doctors of causing my distress and I accurately blamed the drug for the hallucinations. It would take me months to learn what Metrazol was used for and who routinely used it. It was apparent that the Burlington hospitals had also engaged in

experiments without my knowledge or consent. I was simply stunned.

In my 1970 VSH records was a letter to my mother from Mental Health Commissioner Leopold. In it he named several psychiatrists who were involved in my treatment: Dr. George Brooks, Dr. H. P. LaQueur, Dr. Otto Havas, Dr. Karl Trieal and Dr. Robert W. Hyde. I didn't recognize LaQueur or Hyde's names. After discovering that I had been used in experiments, I decided to learn all that I could about the VSH and about the doctors who worked there. I was able to obtain two books written about VSH. I also obtained information about the Human Radiation Experiments, a program conducted during the time when I was in VSH. Not only was Robert Hyde's name in the list of participants, but so was the University of Vermont College of Medicine.

Kathy helped me to try to identify Hyde and LaQueur and it didn't take long before we both realized that the same Robert W. Hyde who was Director of Research at VSH was the very same Robert W. Hyde who worked for the Central Intelligence Agency and conducted extensive drug and mind control experiments. The revelation was beyond shocking for me, for Kathy and for my lawyers.

Dr. Robert W. Hyde was born in Vermont and graduated from the University of Vermont College of Medicine. He was an only child. He and his wife Elizabeth had no children. He worked at the Marine Hospital in Louisiana and when WWII broke out he became an officer with the rank of Lt. Colonel. Hyde became Assistant Superintendent at Boston Psychopathic Hospital and went on to become Superintendent at Butler Hospital in Rhode Island. By 1964, Hyde was Assistant Commissioner of Mental Health in Vermont and became Director of Research at VSH. Hyde was on site at VSH the entire time I was a patient, 1965-1972. Hyde died in 1976, one year after the Rockefeller hearings about CIA mind control experiments and one year before the Senate Select Committee hearings in 1977. Newspaper articles written during the 1977 hearings make only brief references to Hyde. In an article published on August 4, 1977 Hyde is described as being, "Vermont born…and having died in 1976."

Hyde began working for CIA in 1952. He tested LSD while at Boston and acted in the capacity of consultant to CIA covert mind control programs. According to John Marks in his book, *The Search For the Manchurian Candidate*, Hyde was one of the CIA's primary consultants. Hyde is connected to the major figures and the primary research sites during MKULTRA. I realized that I was looking at a major player in the secret CIA experiments.

It seemed curious to me that such a major figure in the CIA experiments would have remained relatively overlooked by journalists. As I began to search for information about Hyde, I would slowly begin to suspect that he wasn't overlooked, but that he had been carefully protected.

I have no memory of ever seeing or meeting Hyde. This would have been highly unlikely considering the amount of time I spent in VSH and because after I returned to VSH from four months in the Burlington psych unit, Baird 6, I spent over another year at the state hospital. Hyde would have been onsite. He ran a regional ward and would have walked the grounds and wards of the hospital just like all of the other VSH staff doctors. My records state that he was active in my treatment and fully informed about my case. My search for Robert Hyde would span the next fifteen years and would lead me to shocking evidence of the covert CIA research conducted in Vermont.

It's difficult to explain the emotions that I had after learning that I had been experimented on by the CIA. After the initial shock came deep-seated feelings of fear, anger and an almost indescribable feeling of having had the CIA traipse through my mind, doing God only knows what and leaving their footprints all over my unconscious. It was akin to a psychological rape as far as I was concerned. It took me some time to adjust to the new reality in my life and over the next few months the fear changed into anger and then changed into a fierce determination that I would find definitive proof that the CIA had conducted MKULTRA in Vermont. CIA entered my life as a thirteen-year old child and their tactics shattered my life for decades after. I made a very conscious decision that I would never again be afraid of the CIA.

One of the positive emotional effects that came with learning that I had been used in CIA experiments was that, for the first time since I was thirteen years old, I realized that it wasn't because of something terrible about me. It was because of the terrible things that were done to me. It was a life altering realization.

I located Dr. Colin Ross, internationally respected specialist in multiple personality disorder and recognized expert on the CIA drug and mind control programs. We spoke on the phone a couple of times and Alan sent him a copy of my medical records. They never arrived. Alan resent the records and they were received. Dr. Ross agreed that I had been an unwitting subject of drug and other experiments. He agreed to act as an expert witness in the lawsuit.

As much as I wanted to name the CIA as a defendant in the suit, I

agreed with Alan when he said that to do so would tie me up in the courts for possibly decades. This had been the pattern of CIA when they faced lawsuits. I would also have had to be interviewed by a CIA psychiatrist. There was still uncertainty as to exactly what CIA had done to me and this would have potentially placed me in danger. The lawsuit would bring out the experiments but we left CIA out as a defendant.

I began to gather everything I could find on the CIA experiments. The 1961 book, *The Vermont Story: Schizophrenic Rehabilitation* written by VSH doctors was particularly helpful to me. The very first time I read it, I knew that the story being told in this book was a lie. Despite the fact that I couldn't remember most of what happened to me in VSH, I did remember the months and years I was there both before and after the 1970-1971 experiments. The kind, caring treatment described in this book was something I never saw and I was pretty sure no one else who had been a patient there had ever seen either.

The book's bibliography was filled with the names of other researchers who were cited as having participated in VSH research or had an influence on VSH research. I set about to identify these researchers. A second book written about VSH history, *Empty Beds*, was extremely valuable and not only identified Hyde as Director of Research, but it gave me many more names to search for. There were also research grants identified and the book contained information about VSH research and personnel exchange sites. One in particular stood out: Boston Psychopathic Hospital.

Boston Psychopathic was a primary CIA site where LSD and other experimental drugs were tested under MKULTRA. VSH had a long-term research and personnel exchange relationship with the Boston hospital. I doubted that this was a coincidence. I went on to learn that the University of Vermont College of Medicine conducted behavioral research under the Department of Energy Human Radiation experiments. A list of participants includes the UVM College of Medicine, the White River Junction, Vermont Veteran's Hospital and the Agricultural College in Burlington, Vermont. UVM doctors staffed the Burlington hospitals and their resident doctors rotated to VSH. I also learned that McGill University, the infamous site of Dr. Ewen Cameron's experiments, was a research and personnel partner of VSH, UVM and the Burlington hospitals. McGill doctors were onsite in the Vermont hospitals during the MKULTRA years.

The declassified CIA documents I obtained from the National Security Archives included Hyde's MKULTRA subprojects 8, 10, 10a, 63 and 66. A key document related to Boston Psychopathic hospital

identified researchers who belonged to CIA cover groups. Not only did some of these names match the VSH book bibliography, but VSH Assistant Superintendent Dr. H. P. LaQueur was identified as a member of the Society for Biological Psychiatry and the Manfred Sakel Foundation. LaQueur worked for the Office of Strategic Services (OSS) during WWII. OSS became CIA in 1947.

A few months after Alan became my lawyer, his partnership with the law firm broke up and he joined another law firm. The new firm was headed by a former Vermont Governor. I continued to search for information about the CIA. I understood that because the very first thing taken from me when I was a patient in VSH was my credibility, I would need to be able to prove through documents that CIA experiments were conducted in Vermont. Despite the fact the CIA wasn't named in the lawsuit, I was determined to find out the extent of their activities in Vermont and, hopefully, learn all of what they did to me and why.

My VSH records were clearly incomplete and no matter how Alan tried to get the rest of the records, the State denied that they existed. As I continued to gather information about the CIA, my lawyers began to scrutinize my VSH medical records. The information in them raised many questions and only months after obtaining the records unusual things began to happen.

I was committed to VSH in October 1965 at the age of thirteen and again in October 1970 at the age of eighteen. I was served commitment papers in October, 1970 and the record shows that I asked to be present at my court hearing. Dr. George Brooks, Superintendent of VSH, notified the Rutland court that I would be transported by VSH to the hearing.

One hour before I was scheduled to be transported to the Rutland court, records show that I was taken to a seclusion room. There is nothing in the records to explain why I was taken there**.** VSH and Brooks notified the court that I would not be able to attend the hearing and Brooks suggested that Judge Howard Douglas conduct the hearing without me. VSH staff psychiatrist Dr. Otto Havas sent a letter to the court describing my condition as "severely psychotic." There is nothing in my records to support the diagnosis made by Havas.

Two Vermont legal aid lawyers, Charles Currington and J. Frederick Strong, were appointed to represent me during the hearing but never contacted me. They never spoke with me and they never offered any evidence on my behalf. They never raised objections to the fact that

although I had requested to be present at the hearing, I was not allowed to attend. The judge held the hearing without me.

Alan said that the hearing should have been rescheduled so that I could attend and it was clear to him that not only had my civil and Constitutional rights been violated but that I had been illegally committed. There was a discussion between my lawyers as to whether or not one of the counts in the lawsuit should include kidnapping. It was decided not to use the word kidnapping but the illegal commitment was part of the lawsuit.

It's apparent to me after reading the VSH records that VSH locked me in a seclusion room to prevent the judge from seeing or speaking with me. If the judge had spoken with me he would have quickly determined that I was not psychotic and very likely would not have committed me to VSH.

Given the extremes VSH went to insure that I would be involuntarily committed, it's clear that the CIA research was far more important to them than the law or my civil rights were. I asked Alan to find the legal aid lawyers who were appointed to protect my rights but he did not attempt to locate them.

Declassified CIA documents note that during MKULTRA, CIA enlisted the help of judges, police, family doctors and others in positions of power in order to obtain subjects for their experiments. I will very likely never know how much if at all this played into what happened during the involuntary court commitment. The 1970 court hearing would not be the only time I experienced questionable behavior by the court.

Before Alan joined the new law firm, Kim began contacting McGill University in Montreal, Canada about the CIA research. McGill and the Allen Memorial Institute admitted their role in the CIA experiments during the 1977 Senate hearings. Kim was in the process of developing at least the beginning of a communication process with McGill when Alan called a halt to the telephone calls to McGill.

Kim was noticeably frustrated byAlan's decision. Despite not naming CIA as a defendant, any information that McGill could have provided would have been very helpful. I began to notice that after Alan changed law firms, he gave subtle and not so subtle hints in his actions or lack of actions, of a change in attitude about the lawsuit. It wasn't that his expectations about the suit had changed, but I became uneasy watching him walk away from evidence that might have helped us. Over the months and years to come, I grew frustrated and angry and I remained completely in the dark about why Alan did some of things he

did. I told myself that having no experience with how lawyers operated, maybe I was interpreting things the wrong way when it came to questioning Alan's handling of the lawsuit.

Alan and Kim had voiced their shock and disgust with the way I had been treated in the Vermont hospitals. Alan and I had several conversations about his confidence that I would prevail in the lawsuit. I liked Alan and in 1997 there was no reason not to trust the things he told me.

My lawyers requested copies of my Social Security medical records in an effort to find the information missing from the copies sent to us by the State of Vermont. I went on Social Security disability in the mid 1970's. Weeks went by without a response from Social Security and Kim finally contacted them by phone

The woman from Social Security explained to my lawyers that, "Everyone's records are kept in the salt mines in Baltimore, Maryland."

The problem was that my records hadn't been found there. The search continued until we were informed that my Social Security records were located in St. Louis, Missouri.

Kim attempted to speak with Social Security in Wilkes Barre, Pennsylvania. I was with her that day when during her phone conversation I heard her say, "Are you telling me that the Social Security Administration does not have a phone number that I can call and speak with someone who might be able to answer my questions?"

When Kim hung up the phone she expressed shock at the conversation. She told me she had never heard of such a thing and she was unable to explain what had just transpired on the phone. When Alan came into the office Kim told him about the phone call. Alan listened and then without answering Kim, he turned and walked into his office, leaving Kim and I standing in the hallway.

My Social Security records finally arrived and I sat in the hallway of the law firm to read them. I was immediately perplexed by the content of the records. Although I had been granted disability because of my time in VSH, there was little reference to VSH. I read brief summaries about my 1978 Johns Hopkins hospitalization and other brief summaries of my condition. There were only a couple of pages total and the information was nothing that helped me.

A couple of years after my 1972 release from VSH, I applied for Social Security disability after being urged to do so by personnel in the Morrisville welfare office. I had been receiving $20.00 a week for room

and board and $8.00 a week for personal use. Up until this time I had no idea that I would be eligible for disability benefits.

I was initially reluctant to open all of my medical records to Social Security and I withheld permission for them to obtain the VSH records. I carried a deep-seated fear that somehow the records would prove that I was the monster that I believed myself to have been in VSH. A friend finally convinced me to open all of my medical records to Social Security.

A few months later I opened my door to find a man who introduced himself as a representative of Social Security. He told me that he worked out of the Morrisville office and that he had never made a home visit like this before. He appeared to be visibly shaken.

The man told me that he had just come from VSH where he had gone unannounced to read my medical records. I never forgot what he said next.

"I want to extend an apology to you from the entire state of Vermont and I promise you that no one will ever bother you again. You will receive disability benefits."

I remember feeling confused by his remarks. I didn't ask him any questions, maybe because I was stunned by what he said. In the 1970's I had no idea what he might have seen or even what he was referring to. I remember feeling relieved that I would receive benefits. I never forgot his remarks to me that day.

It is at least possible that what the man from Social Security read in my VSH records involved the CIA experiments. His visit to me was prior to the 1977 Senate hearings and the resulting public knowledge of the CIA programs. Whatever he saw in my VSH records was enough for him to make a personal visit to me and to extend an apology to me. I will very likely never know if he did in fact see evidence of the CIA research.

After the 1977 hearings, CIA enlisted Social Security in identifying and locating possible unwitting subjects of the CIA experiments. In my opinion it is highly unlikely that CIA revealed Vermont hospital's participation in the experiments to Social Security. The Vermont CIA research has been too well covered up for too long. I consider the Social Security Administration to have been lied to by CIA, just like CIA has lied to the rest of the country. Despite my requests to Alan to try to locate the man who visited me that day, Alan chose not to.

In the mid 1980's when I was living with my parents in Brandon, two men who claimed to be representatives from the Social Security

Administration paid me a visit. I remember them getting out of their car and following me into my parent's house. My mother went into the living room to give us privacy to talk in the kitchen. I recall sitting down with the men at the kitchen table. My memory ends there.

I have no memory of anything that was said by me or by the two men. I have no memory of them leaving. It would be decades before I would realize that Social Security doesn't make home visits to people receiving benefits. Kathy and I have discussed this incident many times since I learned about the Vermont CIA experiments. My mother and I have also talked about this. We all agree that the likelihood was that these men misrepresented themselves and that the distinct possibility exists that they were in some way checking on me. Was it a check on my memory? Was it to insure that my memory loss remained? These would be only two of the many questions that I would have about the actions and behavior of the CIA.

In 2008, I phoned Social Security in St. Louis to try to obtain my own copy of my medical records. I learned that there were duplicate sets of my records and for reasons the woman at Social Security couldn't explain to me, the duplicate sets had been destroyed on June 30, 2004. She didn't know who authorized the destruction of the records and she didn't know why there were two sets of records.

The woman tried to be helpful but she did not know the answers to my questions. I asked if there was someone else I might speak with but she said she had no idea who to refer me to. I hung up the phone with more questions than I'd had before I called.

If I've learned anything over the fifteen years I've investigated the CIA in Vermont, I've learned that CIA has the power to keep certain information covered up. Social Security was likely a victim of the cover up. I learned an interesting piece of information a few years ago about how CIA insures that certain activities remain secret. The scenario goes something like this:

CIA briefs Governors, Congressman and Senators on classified programs, insuring that the official can never speak publicly about the information. The penalty for doing so is treason. I suspect that this method goes a long way in keeping certain CIA activities quiet. I'm sure there are situations when this is vital to national security, but using these methods to keep Americans from knowing about CIA illegal activities conducted on American soil is a whole other ballgame.

The day I sat in the law firm reading my Social Security records I noticed a man walking down the hall toward me. I recognized him as

the senior law partner, F. Ray Keyser, a former Vermont Governor. Keyser was Governor from 1961-1963. The expression on his face confused me. He looked afraid.

I continued to watch him walking toward me and I tried to understand what I was seeing. Why would this man look afraid? It made absolutely no sense to me and I strained to see if maybe I was misinterpreting his facial expression. I wasn't.

I told Kathy about the incident and I brought it up many times over the next few years. It would take almost 15 years before I would be able to even speculate about why the former Governor might be affected by me or by the content of what I had learned in the lawsuit being handled by his law firm

Another former Vermont Governor and former U.S. Senator, Robert Stafford had an office in the law firm. Stafford, a highly respected official was a member of the 1977 Kennedy hearings on CIA MKULTRA and was Vermont's Governor from 1959 -1961. It's highly improbable that during behind closed-door meetings, Vermont's role in the drug and mind control programs wasn't discussed. Was Stafford held to secrecy? I don't know. I tried to have Alan arrange for me to meet with Stafford but the meeting was never set up.

During the preparation for the lawsuit, we tried to obtain the Church Committee report on CIA MKULTRA. We weren't having any luck getting a copy. Alan was a long time friend of U.S. Congressman James Jeffords of Vermont. Alan and Jeffords played golf together and during one of their golf games, Alan tried to talk with Jeffords about the CIA MKULTRA experiments. He told Jeffords that he had a client who wanted a copy of the Church report. Apparently every time Alan tried to speak with Jeffords about the CIA, Jeffords walked away from him. We never obtained a copy of the Church Committee report.

By 2008, I had enough original source documents to prove that CIA experiments were conducted in Vermont and that they were covered up by state and federal officials. I began to scrutinize my contacts with government officials and agencies. I also began to take a closer look at Vermont state officials.

It seemed improbable that CIA could have conducted a 20-year long research program in Vermont hospitals and in the University of Vermont without someone in Vermont state government knowing about it and allowing it. During the lawsuit I didn't have the documentation that I would obtain in the years after the lawsuit ended. What I didn't know in 1998 was that I was looking at a massive, coordinated state

and federal cover up.

Alan tried to locate the defendant doctors named in the suit. Several who were named had died and Alan was almost totally unsuccessful in locating the others. Ironically, in the years after the lawsuit ended I was able to locate several of the defendants with relative ease. Alan did locate Dr. Robert Hugel, the psychiatrist who treated me in Mary Fletcher in 1965. A sheriff armed with papers to serve on Hugel waited unsuccessfully at the foot of Hugel's driveway to serve him.

Dr. George Brooks, VSH Superintendent during the 1970-1973 hospitalization was in a nursing home and Alan was asked by Brook's attorney to demonstrate sympathy and drop Brooks from the lawsuit. Alan suggested to me that it would be better to drop Brooks from the suit. I found that I had no sympathy available for George Brooks and I refused.

One VSH doctor I had always remembered for removing me from terrible conditions in a seclusion room in 1970 was Dr. Frederick Curlin, who was Assistant Superintendent in 1970-1971. My VSH records show that upon my admission to the Medical ward in October, 1970, Curlin and Brooks were my doctors of record while I was on the Medical ward. I have no memory of seeing either during that time. I cannot stress enough how unusual it would have been to have the Superintendent and the Assistant Superintendent actively directing a patient's care on the Medical ward.

The scattered memories I have of Curlin include him coming to the locked ward, 1A where I was being kept naked, with my arms secured behind my back in leather wristlets in a seclusion room. There was no bed and no mattress on the floor. I recall nurses' aides opening the door as Curlin ordered them to remove the restraints, remove me from the seclusion room and dress me.

Curlin led me toward the exit and the nurses shouted at him that he could not take me off the ward.

"The hell I can't!" Curlin yelled back. My memory ends at the door exiting 1A.

My medical records match my next memory of standing next to Curlin on Weeks 3 where he told me that Dr. O`Shea would take care of me. I have no additional memories of this episode.

The other memory I have of Curlin involves him bringing a red chestnut horse behind the locked ward for me to see. The horse was

held by a boy I knew, Vern, who wore a bright blue shirt. I never learned how Curlin knew I loved horses or why he brought the horse for me to see. It seems unlikely that I would have brought the subject up the day he removed me from seclusion.

I recounted the fragmented memories to Kathy over the years before the lawsuit. I believed that Curlin had been a good guy who had rescued me. In 1998, I began searching for Curlin. I was certain that he had information that would help the lawsuit and help me understand what had happened to me. My mother, who had also believed that Curlin was a good guy, had several phone conversations with him in 1970 and he told her that he was originally from New York state. I located a Curlin listed in New York and called the number.

The woman who answered the phone was hostile. I could barely get a word in as she barked at me, demanding to know who I was and what I wanted. I told her my name and that Dr. Curlin had been my doctor in VSH in 1970. Her attitude immediately changed upon hearing my name. I found this curious.

I left my phone number with her after confirming that she knew how to reach Dr. Curlin. The next day, Dr. Curlin phoned me, and much to my surprise and confusion, I couldn't contain my emotions upon hearing his voice. The pain that surfaced from deep inside of me when I heard him speak frightened me. I couldn't seem to stop crying and the emotion was coming from an unfamiliar place inside of me. I told myself that my reaction must be because he removed me from the terrible conditions in that seclusion room.

When I was finally able to speak I told him about the lawsuit and about the abuse I had discovered in my VSH records. I asked him simple, direct questions and his responses immediately disturbed me.

"How did you know I was in that seclusion room?"

"Being Assistant Superintendent has its advantages."

"Did someone tell you that I was there?"

"Brooks and Havas were out of town."

"But how did you know I was there?"

"Being Assistant Superintendent has its advantages."

"Did you know Robert Hyde?"

"Yes. He was always cleaning horse's stalls and always wore jodhpurs."

“Was that horse you brought for me to see, yours? What was its name?”

“Yes. Her name was Beauty. You need to sit across from me and look into my eyes. Let me buy you a plane ticket to California.”

“I don’t like to fly.”

“Let me buy you a bus ticket.”

“Dr. Curlin, I’m not going to leave Vermont. Why did you leave VSH? When I returned from Baird 6, you were gone.”

“I was only there for a year. You don’t remember the Kennedy Assassination do you?”

“Yes, I remember the assassination.”

“You don’t remember the Kennedy Assassination, do you?”

“Yes, I told you that I do.”

“You don’t remember the Kennedy Assassination, do you?”

“Dr. Curlin, yes I do remember it. I was eleven years old. Did you know that VSH was conducting CIA experiments?”

“Call me Doc. I love you Karen,”

“Are you CIA, Dr. Curlin?”

“Not every good Indian is a dead Indian. I do love you.”

I took notes during my conversation with Curlin. His responses were strange and made me feel very uncomfortable. I tried to persuade him to come to Vermont and meet with my lawyer. He flatly refused, saying that he didn’t have good memories about Vermont. He tried to portray himself as having been misused in some unexplained fashion while he was in Vermont.

I spoke with Curlin again and I tried to stress to him that he needed to answer my questions. He refused. I was suspicious of his involvement in the experiments I was subjected to and when the phone call ended I had decided to name him as a defendant.

Kathy and her husband Jimmy traveled to California to visit friends and Kathy set up a meeting with Curlin. Kathy testified at a deposition about the meeting at a restaurant. She said he and a woman he identified as his wife entered the restaurant after Kathy and Jimmy had taken a table in the center of the nearly empty restaurant. Curlin immediately had them move to a table directly in front of a large window overlooking the street.

Curlin evaded Kathy's questions about what happened in VSH. Several times he expressed his love for me, which made both Kathy and Jimmy uncomfortable. In a story Curlin told to Kathy and Jimmy about an Irish couple who had angered the wrong people, Curlin described how the couple was killed when a bomb planted in their car exploded. Kathy testified that she had previously told Curlin that she and Jimmy were Irish and that she felt Curlin's story was meant as a threat.

When Curlin was served with the lawsuit papers, he phoned Kathy. He was angry. Kathy explained that he was given every chance to tell what he knew but that he chose not to. Curlin was clearly upset when the call ended.

It would be ten years after this before I would learn very disturbing information about Curlin and about our interaction in VSH. It would also take another ten years before I would learn that information about Curlin's conduct with me in VSH was apparently kept from me and hidden in the closing of the lawsuit. The information would shock me.

In the years preceding the lawsuit, I had weeks and weeks of repetitive dreams. The dreams were filled with images including a piece of land my parents bought for me to safely ride my horse. Graphic images of guns and sexual symbolism also filled the dreams. Both Kathy and I initially thought the images were entirely symbolic, until I was able to learn from relatives and other people from my early childhood that the images were from real events.

Kathy and I spoke frequently about the memories on the phone. It was during this time that I began to receive 3 A.M. phone calls. When I answered the phone, whoever was calling always hung up. This continued for weeks and became an every night occurrence. I finally notified the phone company.

A trap was set up on my phone and immediately the 3 A.M. calls stopped. Within literally a few hours after the trap was removed from my phone, the calls began again. The trap was reinstalled and the calls once again stopped. When the second trap was removed, the calls began again.

I spoke with a representative of the phone company who told me that the phone company believed that my phone was tapped. I was shocked. Why would anyone want to tap my phone? The phone company failed to find a physical tap on my line and they were able to rule out the source of the tap as anyone in my neighborhood. Over the next several years, telephone technicians frequently reiterated that my phone was tapped. I remained mystified as to why anyone would bother

to wiretap my phone.

On one memorable occasion, phone techs stood in my kitchen and said that the problem was the same problem that caused me to have the trap placed on the phone.

"The trap was put on the phone because of the 3 A.M. phone calls. This is different. Now there are strange noises and clicks and people's voices," I said to the techs.

"You have the same problem you first had," they replied.

As of the writing of this book, my phone remains tapped. This has been verified numerous times over the years by the phone company. I learned that after September 11th and the Patriot Act, the small room inside the phone company where wiretapped phones were visible to phone techs by the red lines, was off limits and locked. The security manager at my current phone company has informed me that regardless of whether or not I change my phone number, which I have several times, or I move, the people tapping my phone have the ability to continue the wiretap. He even suggested that satellites are responsible for the tap. This appears to be very sophisticated. I've asked myself many times, why after all of these years would CIA remain interested in my activities. I have no satisfactory answer.

I've become accustomed to the fact that nothing I say on the phone is private and that someone is listening, but the situation makes me extremely angry. In the 1990's I had no idea who might have wiretapped my phone or why. I now understand why my repetitive dreams, which were filled with actual memories, would be of interest to CIA, given the fact that CIA's top goal in the experiments was to create permanent amnesia. I may not have known who was tapping my phone in the 1990's but I have no doubt now that it is CIA and directly related to the experiments conducted on me in VSH.

Shortly after the lawsuit was filed in 1998, I began to notice strangers who appeared to be following me. At first I thought it must have been my imagination, but as the months passed I realized that I really was being followed. I complained frequently to Kathy and then I decided to keep a record of the car license plates, a description of the vehicles and a description of the men in those cars.

It didn't take long before I saw that the same cars were always behind me and always parked near me. The men in these cars seemed to go out of their way to insure that I saw them. This made no sense to me. On several occasions I was approached on the street by men I did

not know who tried to engage me in conversation. I was not receptive, in fact, I reacted angrily. They always hurried away when they found that I would make a scene.

One man in particular followed me everywhere. On one day in particular, he followed me around the grocery store. I found it strange that when I went from aisle to aisle, there he was, just standing there with nothing in his hands and no shopping cart. He followed me into the check out line and never made eye contact with me. I remember thinking to myself that I could follow someone better than he could.

After seeing this man for months, I turned on the television one evening and saw his photograph on the local news. I couldn't believe what I was seeing. The man was wanted and apparently had a criminal background. I phoned Kathy and told her that I was certain this was the same man who had been following me.

Months after this incident I was able to learn that this man was not a criminal but that he was an undercover federal agent. I even learned his name. My head spun. What was going on? Why would a federal agent follow me? I subsequently learned that more than one of the car license plate numbers I recorded was traced back to federal agents. Someone was very clearly worried about the information I was uncovering.

It took me years to realize that very likely the federal agent who followed me around grocery stores and stayed so close by me might have been protecting me. I never looked for anyone else who might have been out of place or paying close attention to what I was doing, but apparently he was either aware of someone or watching for someone. I asked Dr. Colin Ross for his opinion and he speculated that I might have created a division within the intelligence community. I had my protectors and my non-protectors.

By 2009, I was still being followed. I'd almost grown accustomed to seeing the strangers, yet at the same time their presence made me very angry. I made Senator Bernie Sander's office aware of my situation back in 2000 and Sanders was the only elected official to ever try to help me. In 2009, the actions of one of the men following me began to disturb me.

I noticed him parked in his car next to mine when I exited a local pharmacy one Sunday morning. There was no one else inside the store, so I realized that he wasn't waiting for someone to come out. He stared at me. The expression on his face was hostile. I noted that he was blondish, wore wire rim glasses and I had the eerie feeling that I had

met him before. I drove away that day hoping that I wouldn't encounter him again.

Weeks later I stood in the check out line of a store, and I realized the man standing behind me was standing too close to me and I moved away from him. He moved closer. I stepped forward again, this time making sure that my back wasn't to him. Again, he moved closer. I turned around and looked at him and I recognized him as the blond man with wire rim glasses. He never made eye contact. I exited the store and as I got into my car, I realized that he was parked directly in front of me. I watched him get into his vehicle. I didn't drive away. I wanted him to leave first and after what seemed like a long time, he drove away. There was something I couldn't put my finger on about this guy and the more I thought about it, the angrier I became.

The next day, I phoned Senator Sander's office and reported the activities of this man. By 2011, Sander's office was fully informed about the CIA in my life and I was told that the office would send a Congressional Liaison officer to complain to CIA about what Sander's staff termed "stalking."

In 2009, I also filed a FOIA request with the FBI in an attempt to learn if FBI was following me. I doubted that they were but I wanted to make sure. I had never found FBI participation in MKULTRA.

The FOIA came back no documents located. After the incidents with the blond man, and my growing anger at the behavior of CIA, who I was certain was behind the harassment, I phoned the FBI office in Albany, New York and explained the situation I had been involved in with CIA. I recall telling the FBI that I realized it all sounded crazy and that the behavior of the CIA was indeed crazy, but that what I was reporting to FBI was accurate.

I told the woman on the phone about being followed for months by a man I was able to identify as an undercover federal agent and I gave her his name. I asked the FBI to help me stop the harassment I was being subjected to by CIA and asked them to check with Senator Sander's office if they still didn't believe me.

I never saw the blond man again and as the weeks went by, I noticed I wasn't being followed. My new lawyer thought it was unusual for the FBI not to open a case file on a complaint, but I never heard from FBI. By May 2011, I had only one encounter with a stranger in a parking lot. It was similar to the other encounters, without the hostility demonstrated by the blond man.

The harassment stopped in late 2010, except my phone remains tapped. I stopped seeing strangers following me, and my mail stopped being stolen. I did however note that by 2010 I stopped sending FOIA requests and no longer requested the help of elected officials. I suspect the reason the harassment stopped was because of the complaints I made to Sanders and the FBI. I don't doubt that CIA was responsible. Who else would have the sophistication to pull off the types of surveillance that I was subjected to for years after I filed the lawsuit and discovered the Vermont CIA experiments?

The lawsuit was extremely stressful for me and during the first court hearing, I witnessed something that troubled me. I sat beside my lawyer, listening in disbelief as the judge spoke in glowing terms about one of the defendant doctors. The judge talked about his experiences with the doctor who acted as an expert witness in previous legal cases. The judge couldn't say enough good things about the doctor and as I looked over at my lawyer, he remained silent. I had never been involved in a court hearing before but the lavish praise coming from the judge didn't seem appropriate to me.

Shortly after this incident the lawyers for the doctor and the Burlington hospital petitioned Alan to request that we drop his clients from the suit. In the letter he wrote to Alan, the attorney included a cryptic line: "No good deed goes unpunished."

Over my strong objections, Alan dropped the doctor and the hospital from the suit after laying out all of his reasons to me. In the years after the suit ended I would obtain damning information about the hospital and about the University of Vermont College of Medicine.

Alan believed that the medical records made the case and although he understood that the CIA experiments were the reason I had been treated the way I had, he wanted to stay clear of talking about CIA during the trial. He doubted the jury would believe CIA was behind the research. I remained incredibly frustrated by the things Alan did and didn't do; all the while trying to tell myself that he was looking out for my interests.

During Kathy's deposition, the lawyers for the State brought boxes marked MSIS. I knew that a few of my medical records in 1970-1971 were marked MSIS and I asked Alan to request copies of the records the State obviously had. The lawyers frequently referred to information during Kathy's deposition that we didn't have. Alan never obtained the information

Alan was provided with a list of potential witnesses who were on

staff when I was in VSH. These people could have provided valuable information about what happened to me. None of these people were deposed, not even Dr. Curlin. I was almost constantly in an emotional uproar over how the suit was being handled and about the information I continued to obtain about MKULTRA.

By the spring of 1999, I didn't feel well. I assumed it was due to the stress I was under. I had been diagnosed with macular degeneration, a disorder that could potentially cost me my eyesight. Tom believed that high doses of the drug Mellaril given to me in VSH when I was 13 years old were responsible. I had a difficult time with the diagnosis. The State of Vermont notified Alan that VSH had located more medical records and asked us to come to VSH to read the material. I never knew why the documents couldn't have been mailed, but Alan, Kathy and I drove to VSH to read the new material.

I felt sick inside at the thought of returning to that Hell-hole and when we entered the hospital I remember a terrible feeling of dread enveloping me. The documents located by the State were not informative at all. I felt relief when we drove away from VSH but I continued to not feel well.

On the morning of June 14, 1999, I felt a single, brief, searing pain in my chest. Over the next several hours my left arm began to throb until by 6 P.M., I could no longer stand the pain in my arm. I went to the emergency room.

I don't remember much of what happened in the emergency room. I knew the doctors suspected I was having a heart attack. Kathy was called and after what I later learned was several hours spent stabilizing me, I was taken to intensive care. During the middle of the night I had chest pains again. I saw a doctor standing outside of my hospital room and for the first time I wondered if I would die.

I spent five days in intensive care. Tests revealed that I had suffered a heart attack and that there was also evidence of damage from a previous heart attack. The doctors said they weren't sure if the heart attack was due to a sudden spasm, but that I did not have coronary artery disease. I went to cardiac rehab and during my recovery the lawsuit was put on hold.

When I was strong enough to continue the suit, I gave a deposition. Kim had left the Keyser law firm and I missed having her participation. The State's lead lawyer pretended to sleep through the deposition. I found his behavior both disgusting and revealing and I told myself that the State was more worried about my lawsuit than they would like me

to know.

When the lead lawyer for the State finally questioned me, he was insulting every chance he got. He tried to learn how much I actually knew about the CIA and Hyde. He tried to find out if I could in fact remember what had happened to me and although I told him that I could remember some things, he chose to not ask me what those things were. I was exhausted by the end of the deposition. Although I wasn't aware of it at the time, Kathy and Tom realized that I was dissociating again.

Dr. Tom Fox gave three depositions in all. He stated that in his opinion I had been experimented on and that he had never seen such brutal treatment before. I had the chance to talk with Tom in the months before his depositions and he told me how important it would have been for him to have known what happened to me in VSH. He remarked that he, the Rutland hospital staff and Kathy had all been working in the dark with me.

"If only we had known how you had been treated. We could have helped you so much more and so much sooner," Tom told me.

In 2001, Tom was diagnosed with pancreatic cancer. He somehow managed to give the third deposition and appear at a court hearing, but by the summer of 2002, Dr. Tom Fox lost his battle with cancer. Everyone who knew him was devastated. I know that I was.

The suit dragged on. We no longer had an expert medical witness and I suggested that Alan contact Colin Ross, who had agreed to testify on my behalf. I couldn't understand Alan's reluctance to involve Dr. Ross, especially given the fact that he was one of the top specialists in the country on MPD and an expert on the MKULTRA program.

The State wanted me to be interviewed by their psychiatrist, which greatly disturbed me. Alan tried to fight the order from the court but I ended up having to meet with the psychiatrist. I guarded myself against the doctor but I remained pleasant. I wasn't about to give the State a window into my mind. As far as I was concerned, the State of Vermont had already taken more than enough from me.

Several months after the heart attack, my rheumatologist diagnosed me with a third autoimmune disease, antiphospholipid antibody disorder. He determined that the disease had been the cause of the heart attack when it thickened my blood, causing a blood clot. He prescribed a blood thinner

By the early spring of 2002, I was deposed again. The lead lawyer

for the State was insulting and ridiculed me at every turn. I knew he was trying to elicit a dramatic response from me. I remained calm and quietly answered his questions, but on the inside I was fuming. I'd been interrogated before and the tactics of the lawyer felt familiar.

The lawsuit was sent into mediation and we met with the judge assigned to run the mediation. After he talked with the State lawyers, the judge told us the State offered a settlement. The sum was so small that it was obvious it was meant to be insulting. I told Alan that I was leaving and Alan too, walked out of the mediation.

My health began to rapidly decline and after blood tests revealed that the antiphospholipid disease was active, and producing cells that could kill me, my doctor told me that if I continued the lawsuit, I could die. He prescribed a powerful drug to attack the dangerous cells developing in my bloodstream. My anti-DNA was escalating rapidly.

I couldn't believe what was happening. I struggled with the diagnosis and what it might mean and I was facing the end of my battle to hold the State accountable for its actions. It was days before I finally decided that I had to drop the lawsuit. It was a painful decision, but I knew how sick I really was.

Alan was shocked when I told him that I had to drop the lawsuit and why. Alan believed that we had a good case and would have won the lawsuit. He agreed to notify the State. I remember thinking to myself that I couldn't believe that I had come this far only to have to stop before I learned what had really happened to me. I was determined to get well, and to once again continue to obtain the information that would prove the Vermont CIA experiments. I never could have foreseen how long it would take me to unravel the CIA experiments and the information sitting in my medical records.

Alan phoned me several weeks after the suit was dropped to tell me that the State offered a settlement. I was surprised. I was the one who dropped the lawsuit. The State wasn't obligated to pay me a cent. Even more surprising to me was that the amount being offered was over three times the amount that was offered in the mediation.

I questioned Alan about the amount. Why was the State even offering me money? Alan suggested that I take the offer. Again I asked him why were they settling when I ended the suit? He told me to take the money. I agreed to settle at the amount offered but the whole thing gnawed at me. It didn't make any sense.

I was pretty sure that Alan hadn't really believed that the CIA was

responsible for my treatment in the Vermont hospitals. He knew that Hyde was CIA and he knew about a few other doctors' connections to CIA, but he had a hard time wrapping his head around the idea. He wasn't alone in that. I was still struggling with the revelation. I would remain on the powerful drug Imuran for a couple of years and the drug would eventually produce a remission in the antiphospholipid disease. I launched what would be an additional ten-year search to identify the connections of the Vermont hospitals to the CIA.

The lawsuit was over in the spring of 2002 but information that I was unaware of in 2002 would surface again years later and that information would be shocking.

2

MARY FLETCHER HOSPITAL – VERMONT STATE HOSPITAL, 1965-1969

I grew up in Brandon, a small, rural town in Southern Vermont. I was a friendly, curious and sensitive child who loved horses, idolized my older brother and adored my Grandfather. I was close to my parents and spent countless hours playing with my cousins and my friends. My family lived on Maple Street and there were acres of pastureland we played in. We swam in the summer, played baseball and hide and seek. We walked back and forth to school everyday and we counted the days until summer vacation. As far as anyone, including me knew, there was nothing unusual about my life.

My father worked in a lumber mill, and my mother stayed home to raise my brother and me. My parents married young; my father was twenty-two and my mother was sixteen. They lived a quiet, simple life in the small rural town of Brandon. I was born ten years after my brother and I idolized him.

When my brother enlisted in the Air Force in 1960, I fell into a deep depression. I missed him terribly and to make matters worse, my mother suffered a near emotional breakdown over Kip's enlistment. Even a television commercial for the Air Force sent her rushing out of the room sobbing. I began to feel very alone. It was because of my reaction to Kip being gone that my parents bought me a horse in March of 1960.

I had wanted a horse for as long as I could remember. The horse was pastured in a neighbor's field next door. Both Kip and I had grown up close to the neighbors and we spent many hours at their house. My cousin got her own horse a year later and our families spent their free time watching us ride and helping us learn how to take care of the horses. My Grandfather prided himself on his knowledge of horses and we grew even closer during this time.

In 1963, my parents bought a piece of land across the river that ran behind our house from the next-door neighbors who had allowed us to pasture the horse in their field. It was after I began riding my horse on

this piece of land that I began to be preoccupied with suicidal thoughts. At the time, no one including me had any reason to factor the land into my emotional condition. It would be another 30 years before I would know about the violent trauma I had suffered on that land.

The suicidal thoughts and feelings grew. My behavior at home and in school dramatically changed and I made several minor attempts to kill myself. I managed to hide this from my parents. My friends knew that I was suicidal, but in an effort to protect me, they kept the knowledge to themselves. I stood on the streets of Brandon and timed the cars and trucks as they passed. I decided to step out in front of an oncoming vehicle, but couldn't make myself take that final step into traffic.

I knew that there was something wrong with me and I was frightened. I became withdrawn and obsessed with the dark thoughts I was having. I felt completely isolated from family and friends. I shut myself away in my room and stopped doing all of the things I had always done before.

My parents, especially my mother, attributed the changes in my behavior to adolescence and I found it impossible to tell them that I was consumed with the idea of killing myself. In 1963, while Kip was home on leave, President Kennedy was assassinated and I had an unusually intense reaction to the tragedy. I became even more withdrawn and secretive at home.

In the fall of 1964, I attended seventh grade at the union high school and the adjustment was very difficult for me. When I was in the first grade, the elementary school burned to the ground during Christmas vacation and all of my subsequent elementary school years were spent in church basements and office space substitutions for a school. There was a building for first and second grade, another for third and fourth and one for fifth and sixth grades. It was difficult to make the adjustment to the new school with all of the many students there.

Within weeks of starting classes at the new high school, I suffered an outburst at school and I was required to see a psychiatrist in Burlington. I remember very little about the session with Dr. Cohen except that I didn't like him and I wasn't open to talking with him. He set up a consultation at the Degoesbriand hospital outpatient clinic where I met German psychiatrist, Dr. Robert Hugel for the first time.

I immediately disliked Hugel. His approach was aggressive and I withdrew even deeper into myself over the next few months. The more

he pushed me, the deeper I drew back into myself. When he said to me that there was nothing wrong with me, I agreed with him. I simply wanted to be left alone. The intense preoccupation with suicide became worse. I began to load and unload my father's 30-30 rifle and tried to fight off thoughts of shooting my mother or myself. The thoughts and feelings I was having were frightening, but the worst part for me was that it was becoming more difficult for me to hide the fact that there really was something serious going on.

My mother and I clashed frequently. The more distant I became, the harder she pushed to get closer to me and the angrier I became. When my relatives tried to tell her that I was sick and needed help, she resisted the idea, attributing my behavior to my age.

As more people noticed that something was very wrong with me, my mother became more convinced that my acting out was simply to defy her. She couldn't allow herself to believe that there could be anything emotionally wrong with me. I never doubted that my parents loved me, and that knowledge made the thoughts and feelings I was having even harder for me to contend with.

I had another meltdown at school. This time I was found wandering around the hallway confused and disoriented. I made a suicidal gesture, slashing my wrist. When my family doctor arrived at the school, I told him that if he sent me home I would either kill my mother or kill myself.

When my father and brother came to take me to the Mary Fletcher hospital I reassured myself that I would be able to escape by leaping from the car as it traveled along the highway. I was seated between my father and brother, which prevented me from jumping out of the moving car. Although I don't have any memory of the ride to the hospital or of my admission to the psychiatric unit, I do know that in September, 1965 my life would be changed forever by the events that would unfold.

The 1965 Mary Fletcher medical records show that I was immediately prescribed the phenothiazine drugs, Thorazine and Stelazine. Over the next thirty days I was also given frequent large does of Sodium Amytal. It's interesting to note that Sodium Amytal was used in MKULTRA as a way to allow the researchers to map the subject's unconscious mind so that the subject could be successfully exploited later. It's also noteworthy that the dangers of combining large doses of phenothiazine drugs and Sodium Amytal were well known by the medical establishment in 1965, yet this is exactly what was done in my

case.

I don't have much memory of my 1965 hospitalization, but I do recall hiding under the bed sheets. I was frightened. This was the first time I had ever been in a hospital and the first time I had ever been away from home. The record notes that I was severely depressed and suicidal and that within days of starting the Thorazine, I had symptoms of an allergic reaction.

The records note that I had a rash, a fever, a sore throat and muscle spasms. Dr. Hugel and Dr. W. Stewart Agras continued the drug. Only days after my admission, I woke up to see a glass urine specimen bottle sitting on the table beside my bed. I got out of bed, grabbed the bottle and went into the bathroom. I broke the bottle and slashed my wrist. I felt nothing until I saw the blood gush from my wrist with the force of a fire hose. I didn't know that blood could come out of a body like that and I was frightened. I began screaming and running wildly around the room.

The record shows that pressure was applied to the 2 inch across and 7/8 of an inch deep wound. The severed tendon, noted to have been the palmaris longus tendon was operated on for hours and my wrist was placed in a cast. Hugel and Agras visited me the next morning and threatened me with transfer to the Vermont State Hospital. Hugel remarked that the only reason they weren't sending me directly to VSH was that no one had told me beforehand that suicide attempts were not tolerated.

During a psychological test days later, I complained to the psychologist that I did not feel well. He berated me and accused me of only pretending to feel sick to avoid taking the test. I couldn't understand what it was about me that made the doctors treat me so badly. The records show that I was never given any psychological counseling and I don't recall any of the doctors ever talking with me except to berate and threaten me.

My answer to one of the questions in the psychological test would bring about a dramatic reaction from the doctors and their reactions to my answer would alarm me.

"What does two heads are better than one mean?"

"If you are crazy in one head, you still have one more head to save," was my response.

The doctors stood in my hospital room and demanded to know why I gave that answer to the question. They demanded to know if I lied.

Over and over they shouted at me until I finally told them yes, I lied. Their reactions to my answer frightened me and made me realize that whatever it was about me, I had better keep the truth, whatever it was, hidden.

During the 30 days I was in Mary Fletcher, I never showered or washed my hair. I was afraid to take my clothes off and enter the shower. No one seemed to notice or tried to help me. In retrospect I find this suspect. I was a thirteen-year old child who was clearly emotionally ill and in need of help, yet I was left in conditions that few others would have been left in.

Kip was scheduled to be married that October and the timing of my breakdown cast a pall over the ceremony. I liked Sue, my future sister-in-law but it wouldn't be until after my integration in 1996 that I could finally explain to her that her marriage to my brother was not the cause of my hospitalization.

The records note that I continued to have allergic reactions to the drugs I was given. I began to have dystonic reactions, which were very frightening. My muscles went into severe spasms, twisting the muscles in my face and extremities. After each allergic reaction, the doctors gave me medication to counter the reaction and then continued to give me drugs they knew I was allergic to.

By October 21, 1965, the adverse drug reactions had become so serious that Dr. Agras asked for a medical consult. The consulting doctor's notes include: pulse: 120, temperature: 38.4, blood pressure: 110/60, white blood cell count: 22, 700, mild ache in throat, tonsil pain, cough, nodes in neck, tenderness in right lower stomach, covered with a rash, weak and unable to eat.

The consult diagnosed me with a severe allergic reaction to phenothiazine drugs and advised that the drugs be immediately stopped. Agras wrote in the records that he would not stop the drugs. He continued to give me the drugs I was allergic to and my condition rapidly deteriorated.

I began to lose control. For reasons unknown to me at the time, I began screaming uncontrollably. Agras, Hugel and two female psychiatrists, Dr. Elizabeth Forsberg and Dr. Rosemary Brewster stood in my hospital room and demanded that I stop screaming or they would send me to VSH. No matter how I tried, I couldn't stop screaming and I was terrified.

It's noteworthy that during my month-long stay at the Mary Fletcher

psychiatric unit, none of the psychiatrists attempted to learn the reasons for the breakdown that led to my admission. After the serious suicide attempt in the hospital, no doctor tried to learn why I attempted suicide. Not once during my stay did any psychiatrist counsel or engage me in psychotherapy of any type. Instead they used Sodium Amytal and powerful tranquilizing drugs that they knew I was allergic to. Forty years later, I would find documents about the research being conducted in the Vermont hospitals where I was a patient that would raise questions about the use of LSD and whether or not my transfer to VSH had been the plan all along.

On October 24, 1965 I was transferred via ambulance to VSH. The admission record notes that I was covered with "a rash all over face, arms, legs and body, had bruises on arms and legs, had attempted suicide severing the palmaris longus tendon in left wrist and allergic to Thorazine."

The records show that I was placed in a straightjacket and given injections of Trilafon and Compazine, both phenothiazine drugs.

The record notes that, "Patient remained awake much of the night in a very disturbed state. This noon she was given 10 mg. of Trilafon and toward the end of the afternoon she was given 10 mg. of Compazine… following these injections she had a reaction which was felt to be a dystonic reaction. She has spasms in the corner of her mouth and the side of her face. She has spasms in her extremities and apparently in her diaphragm causing a loud moan. The patient was very frightened by this."

Dr. Covey administered an injection of a side effect drug. The injection helped and he repeated the injection. The symptoms gradually subsided. I stopped screaming. VSH nurses aides removed me from the straightjacket and from seclusion. I could barely walk.

In 1965, VSH and the University Of Vermont College Of Medicine had been conducting research using unwitting subjects for over a decade. Experimental drugs obtained from two CIA-contracted pharmaceutical companies were being given to VSH patients. VSH staff psychiatrists participated in experiments at verified CIA test sites and CIA researchers participated in experiments conducted at VSH. In 1963, VSH-UVM began sending the test results of child patients directly to CIA Chief Psychologist John Gittinger at CIA headquarters in Washington, DC.

In 1965, Dr. Robert W. Hyde, longtime CIA researcher and CIA Technical Services Division employee was officially Director of

Research at VSH. He would remain in that position throughout the years I was a VSH patient. In 1965, my family and I didn't know about the CIA research in Vermont hospitals. In 1965, I was thirteen years old and involuntarily committed to the Vermont mental institution. In 1965, the experiment had begun.

The locked adult women's ward, Weeks 3, held patients with all types of mental illness and as I looked around the ward, none of the women appeared to pose any threat to me. The nurses' aides didn't seem to be terrible people, but I wasn't about to make the same mistake I'd made in Mary Fletcher and trust any of them.

The doctor who gave me the shot that stopped the drug reaction, Dr. Covey, was a resident doctor from UVM. He was kind to me. My medical records note that he asked me if I heard voices and that I told him, yes. When he asked if the voices were coming from inside of my head or from outside, I answered that they were inside of my head. Over the next few days he asked me again and again about the voices, signaling to me that I had made a mistake answering truthfully. My stay in Mary Fletcher taught me that whenever the doctors reacted to something I said, trouble would follow unless I told them that I made up the whole thing. I told him that I made it up and it wasn't true. It worked. He backed off.

The record also notes that I described an incident in Mary Fletcher when black figures surrounded my bed and urged me to cut my wrist. I said that I didn't want to hurt myself but that these black figures frightened me and I couldn't resist obeying them. I have no memory of these black figures.

In the record, the notes quote me and then contain the written remarks of the nurses; "At the Mary Fletcher Hospital they used to say, get your wrist." She states that she did not want to lay her wrist open but that she was afraid of them. "I felt I should do what they said. It was like they were controlling my life. I didn't know who they were. They were like shadows."

"The figures were described as black all over and had no particular shape or form but she felt that they were men. She states that she was afraid of them. Patient states that she has not seen the black figures at the Vermont State Hospital, only at the Mary Fletcher Hospital. Patient also states that she has a weakness for broken glass."

In CIA mind control experiments conducted by Dr. Harris Isbell, he notes that a few of the experimental subjects he dosed with LSD reported that they, "…felt their experiences were caused by the

experimenters controlling their minds."

A December, 1965 meeting of VSH doctors regarding my case notes that Dr. George Brooks stated that I was, "not the garden variety type and that it is thought that hysteria at this age becomes schizophrenia."

Dr. Rupert Chittuck, VSH Superintendent stated that I should remain in the hospital for "a considerable amount of time." It was decided that I not be allowed to attend school and that they would keep me on an adult ward, despite the fact that VSH had a children's ward. Many of the Weeks 3 nurses aides objected to having a thirteen-year old child on a locked adult women's ward.

In this meeting my diagnosis was stated to be "a differential diagnosis between schizophrenic reaction of the acute undifferentiated type and a severe anxiety reaction, with depressive, dissociative and hysterical symptoms…the latter diagnosis is favored."

On December 21-22, 1965, I was given a psychological test by Dr. Donald Eldred. The three-page summary of that test would show that the test was a PAS or a Psychological Assessment System. PAS was a specific psychological test created by CIA Chief Psychologist, John Gittinger. The PAS was routinely used by CIA to learn how to compromise and exploit a person's weaknesses. It was used to "get at" people. I wouldn't identify the VSH PAS until after the lawsuit ended, and I would not know until the mid-2000's that VSH sent the test results directly to Gittinger at CIA headquarters in Washington, DC.

On several occasions, Dr. Chittuck came onto Weeks 3 accompanied by several doctors who I didn't recognize. Chittuck called me over to introduce me to the men. I recall standing surrounded by the men and hearing Chittuck say, "This is Karen."

I have no memory of what they said to me or what I said to them. I did notice that Chittuck never introduced any of the other patients to the groups of men who came onto the ward. In 1965, the identities of these men wouldn't have meant much to me, but decades later when I identified CIA personnel on site at VSH, my suspicions about who those men might have been were answered in the documents I obtained. I would also learn that the reason VSH doctors were so interested in me was because of the disorder that they knew I had; the disorder that the CIA was very interested in for its MKULTRA experiments.

VSH doctors prescribed up to 1800 mg a day of a phenothiazine drug called Mellaril despite the fact that I was allergic to phenothiazine drugs. A side effect drug was also ordered. The doctor in charge of my

case, Dr. Caron, had little to say to me and rarely asked me questions. He frequently turned his back to me when we were in a room together. A patient told me one day what a great doctor he was and how much he was helping her. I wondered why he never tried to help me.

My parents provided VSH doctors with information they believed would help the doctors help me. My mother told them about my love for horses, my close relationship with my grandfather and about my unusually intense reaction to the Kennedy Assassination. She also told them that I ran away when I was only five years old and that when I was two, my brother was shot in the back in a deer hunting accident. She said I watched when the dressing on his wound was changed after he hemorrhaged.

There are no nurse's notes in the VSH records or in the 1965 Mary Fletcher records. This is also true for the 1970-71 VSH hospitalization and for the return to Weeks 3, VSH from the Burlington Baird 6 stay in 1971. Records are also entirely missing for the 1970-71 stay on 10B, where Dr. Otto Havas was the doctor. There is a single doctor's note by Havas for the 10B stay.

Despite the fact that I was not schizophrenic and the records note that the doctors were well aware of this in 1965, they labeled me as schizophrenic. The diagnosis would change to dissociative and the word dissociative appears in the 1965 PAS and in later records. VSH would mislead subsequent caregivers for years with a diagnosis they knew to be false. I learned decades later that the term "schizophrenic rehabilitation" was a cover for the true nature of VSH-UVM research. Countless VSH patients during the 1950's, 1960's and 1970's were labeled with an illness they didn't have.

My parents visited when they could and there were times when I wouldn't see them. I couldn't explain why I had the feelings I did about my mother and every time I refused to see them, I felt torn apart. I wanted to run to my mother and go home with her. I wanted things to be the way they had been before all the craziness had taken over my life. There was something causing my conflicted feelings toward my mother but I wouldn't know the cause of the terrible feelings for three decades.

Weeks 3 was chaotic and unpredictable. The women patients, who only moments before seemed fine to me, would suddenly erupt in screams or violence. There were times when I behaved the same way and I had no idea why. The night that one patient was dragged away to the dreaded 1A ward I had heard so many awful things about, was a

frightening experience. She screamed and begged the aides not to send her to 1A. I told myself that it must have been a very bad place to be.

After I visited home a few times, I was discharged on a six-month visit in March 1966. I was taking 1800 mg of Mellarill and I knew that I had been changed by my experiences in the hospitals. I realized that the ways in which I had always believed the world to be were wrong. Doctors, nurses and hospitals were supposed to be good and safe but I knew this wasn't true. I had no more idea what had caused me to be hospitalized than I had before the breakdown. Now I was the crazy girl. I was the one who had been in the state mental hospital. I didn't share my feelings with anyone.

My friends went to school without me. I remained on the outside watching as their lives went on. I was overwhelmed with feelings of shame and I spent almost all of my time alone. There aren't many memories for me of the year or so after I was released from VSH but by the time I was fifteen, one event stands out above everything else - meeting Phil Cram.

Phil moved onto Maple Street with his parents and two brothers in 1967, and I was immediately interested in getting to know him. I returned to VSH in early 1967 but it was a short, uneventful stay, not quite six weeks. Phil was attracted to me too, especially when he learned that like him, I played the guitar. Phil was tall, slender and had an open, engaging personality. He had a beautiful singing voice, one so strong and clear that most people were surprised at just how talented he really was. We began spending much of our time together.

Phil's parents accepted me into their lives as my parents welcomed him into theirs. I stopped taking the Mellarill and I felt better. I wasn't isolated and lonely anymore and as I expanded my world I began to spend more time with other kids. We rode our bicycles together, played baseball and sat for hours on the railroad bridge on Pearl Street talking. When Phil and I played guitars and sang together, his younger brother Bernie practiced playing drums on any solid object he could find. Even my mother, who also played the guitar and sang, sometimes joined in. It was a good time.

There were times when Phil and I argued. I'd cry and he'd cry and then we'd make up. After one argument, he came to make up and gave me a single rose. Phil and I discovered that we were both better together than apart and we began to spend even more time with each other. He had a strength that I drew from and whenever I had problems, he seemed to be able to reassure me that everything would be okay.

I spent time at his house and he spent even more time at my house. By the summer of 1969, Phil and I were talking about getting married and both of our families were concerned that we were too young. Phil repeatedly said that when he turned eighteen, he would do what he wanted and that what he wanted was for us to be married. I agreed. All I wanted was to be with Phil forever.

In July, 1969 my parents stayed with Phil, Bernie and I at my uncle's lakeside camp. We swam and canoed. We fished and took long slow boat rides at sunset. Those two weeks were the happiest time in my life. I belonged in the world again, I loved Phil and he loved me.

On Sunday, August 3, 1969, I went to work with Phil at a local hamburger drive-in, despite being sick with a hard cold. I tried to stay at work but as the day progressed, I became too sick to work. Phil drove me home and I went to bed.

I had a very disturbing dream and when I woke up I told my parents about it. In the dream, Phil and I were sitting in the back seat of a car. I couldn't see who was driving. I looked out the car window to see the body of a large black dog dead in the road. When I turned back to tell Phil, he was gone.

The dream upset me but my parents reassured me that being sick had probably produced the nightmare. That evening Phil and I talked about getting married and we planned to go to Rutland the next day to shop for furniture. He told me that he would pick me up in the morning.

Phil and I lingered at the door that night, kissing and holding each other. I never loved anyone before and Phil had changed my life forever. Even now, forty-three years later, I can still see his face and feel the very powerful emotions I felt that night.

Monday, August 4, 1969 was a gloomy, rainy summer day. I waited for Phil to pick me up so that we could shop for furniture in Rutland, but as the hours passed and he was nowhere in sight, I became worried. I phoned his house and his sister-in-law said she didn't know where he was. Only minutes later, Bernie came to wait with me.

By noon, I knew something was very wrong and I called his house again. His sister-in-law told me that Phil had been in a car accident and he was in the hospital. I couldn't believe it and as I waited to hear any news, I prayed that Phil would be okay.

It was hours later when the news finally came. I watched as my father whispered something to my mother at the door and when I saw the expressions on their faces, I knew. Phil was dead.

Phil was killed in a head on car crash as he drove on Route 7 from Rutland to Brandon. Halfway home he pulled out to pass the car in front of him when another car pulled onto the highway. Phil couldn't stop.

I sobbed in agony. My parents sobbed. I couldn't believe that he was gone. Not Phil, not my Phil, it simply couldn't be happening. Losing Phil was and remains the worst thing to have ever happened in my life and to this day, I have never really gotten over it. I'm convinced that if he had lived, my life would never have been what it was and that very likely I would never have returned to VSH.

The weeks and months after Phil died remain a blur to me. Unknown to me at the time, a diamond engagement ring was found in the dash of Phil's car. No one told me about the ring until forty years later. I never got the ring.

The morning of his death, Phil and his mother Helen had a terrible argument about us getting married. Phil swore at her and left the house angry. Apparently he decided to go to Rutland alone, buy the engagement ring and surprise me with it. Helen spent the rest of her life blaming herself for Phil's accident. Shortly before Helen died, she and I had a chance to talk. Although Helen refused to acknowledge that she kept the ring, she shared several memories she had of Phil and I together. I didn't remember the things she told me, but I was grateful to her for sharing them with me. I hope that Helen found peace when she died. Phil would have wanted it that way.

I managed to hang on for one more year without Phil. A very dark cloud had enveloped me. I attended an outpatient mental health clinic-sponsored group a few times but nothing seemed to help. It was during the visits to this clinic that I first met Kathy Judge, who would play an integral role in my life twenty years later. In September 1970, I had to put down my horse. I became very physically ill a short time later and it was determined that I had hepatitis. Several people in town were diagnosed with the illness. After Phil died, I began taking Mellarill again at the urging of my parents, who didn't want to see me return to VSH again.

I developed severe vomiting and a strange black fur appeared on my tongue. I would learn decades later that I didn't have hepatitis, but that I had a toxic reaction to Mellarill. I was admitted to the Rutland hospital under the care of psychiatrist, Dr. James Todd.

I don't remember anything about Dr. Todd and there are no memories of the short hospitalization in Rutland. The records show that

my diagnosis was “anxiety, hysteria, hysterical personality.” Todd ordered drugs including Paraldehyde. It’s noted that I had panic attacks and that I was screaming uncontrollably. Todd didn’t hesitate to send me back to VSH, despite what I learned later were the strong protests by the nursing staff.

Rosemary Johnson and I first met when she worked for Rutland Mental Health and was on staff at the outpatient clinic where I went after Phil died. I spoke with Rosemary when I was investigating VSH and she told me that the Rutland nurses were in an uproar over my transfer to VSH. She said it was clear to the nurses that my reactions were fearful and not in any way dangerous. Todd refused to be swayed and sent me to VSH. My parents also tried to stop my return to VSH but their efforts were in vain.

No one, including me could have imagined the horrors I would be subjected to for the next three years. No one could have imagined that the CIA had already singled me out for experiments and no one, especially me, could have imagined that it would be over 30 years before I would learn the truth about the CIA experiments I was swept into.

3

THE EXPERIMENT, 1970-1973

"By 1962 and 1963 the general idea we were able to come up with is that brainwashing was largely a process of isolating a human being, keeping him out of contact, putting him out of control, putting him under long stress in relationship to interviewing and interrogation and that they could produce any change that way without having to resort to any kind of esoteric means."

John Gittinger, testimony, Senate Select Committee on Intelligence Hearings on CIA Drug and Mind Control Programs, MKULTRA

The VSH records show that upon admission on October 12, 1970, I was covered with a rash, unconscious, suffering from hepatitis and "uncontrollable." The records also note that, "within five minutes the rash disappeared." I was admitted to the medical ward, MS3, where my doctors were George Brooks and Frederick Curlin. The record shows that I was placed in restraints on my arms and legs and that I had severe vomiting.

I now know that I did not have hepatitis but that I had a toxic reaction to Mellarill. Blood tests taken during this time make no mention of hepatitis. My blood was sent to Biochemical Procedures, a Mead Johnson laboratory in California. It would take me until early 2012 to be suspicious of Mead Johnson's involvement with the CIA. I searched for Biochemical Procedures and found several connections to CIA back in 1971, but as of yet I cannot absolutely determine that Mead Johnson was a CIA lab. CIBA and Smith, Kline and French pharmaceutical companies also contracted with VSH-UVM research and all three were identified in declassified CIA documents as CIA contract labs.

The records show that I became violent on MS3, stating that I threw chairs at women patients. Although I have no memory of this incident, I doubt its accuracy. If I did indeed throw chairs, I'm sure I threw them at the VSH nurses, not at the patients. I do remember my transfer from MS3 to the infamous locked ward, 1A.

On October 19, 1970 the record shows that the doctor who signed the seclusion order was Dr. Elizabeth Forsberg - the same German psychiatrist who was part of my care in Mary Fletcher in 1965. She called my mother that night in 1965 to tell her that I was being sent to VSH. Despite the pleas of my mother not to send me to VSH, Forsberg refused.

I was placed in a wooden wheelchair with my hands and legs secured to the chair by strips of cloth. A cloth tie was wrapped around my neck and secured to the back of the chair. They wheeled me into the underground tunnel that ran beneath the entire hospital.

The nurses screamed at me, and one of them pulled my head back by pulling my hair. I have no memory of why they behaved so violently, given the fact of the way I was tied down, I posed no threat to them. I don't remember actually arriving at 1A but I do remember waking up in the seclusion room.

I heard terrible stories about 1A when I was thirteen. It was the most dreaded ward in the hospital and it was considered the end of the line. There was no worse place they could send a patient.

I woke up on the floor, naked, with my arms secured behind my back in leather wristlets. The gnawing, searing pain in my arms, neck and shoulders was impossible to relieve. It didn't matter how I held my body or the position I was in, it was impossible to escape the constant pain the wristlets produced. I heard frightening screams and strange shrieks coming from outside the seclusion room. The record shows I was held in these conditions until October 23, 1970.

Many of the women patients on 1A had been there for years and they were considered to be hopeless. There were old women who shuffled when they walked and middle-aged women who sat on wooden benches all day. There were young women with severe autism and there were severely retarded women who spent their days propped up against the hallway walls. A few of the women howled and screamed almost constantly and others could carry on a conversation. At least a few of the women were only on the ward temporarily, having been sent there in response to behavior that was unacceptable on open wards.

When I obtained the research project documents from VSH-UVM experiments, I realized that these women had been the target VSH population for the use of experimental drugs. In retrospect, I realize that many of the women's conditions were very likely created, if not exacerbated by the unethical experiments conducted by VSH-UVM.

Included in my medical records is a letter written by my mother to Commissioner of Mental Health, Jonathan Leopold after this incident, in which she complains about my treatment and begs him to stop treating me so harshly.

Leopold's letter of response wasn't written until months later and in it he adamantly denied that I had been kept in these conditions. The VSH records contradict Leopold. Apparently the reason I was removed from these conditions was because Dr. Frederick Curlin personally removed me from seclusion and took me off the ward with him.

The record shows that before Curlin took me to Weeks 3, I had already met Dr. Otto Havas, on October 21, 1970. Havas ran the Rutland County ward 10B. I don't remember the first time I met Havas, but I do know I did not like the man.

Havas was Hungarian and both his accent, which was similar to the German accent of Dr. Robert Hugel, from Mary Fletcher, and his uncanny resemblance to Hugel, immediately affected me. Havas had a cruel streak and over the next almost three years, I would learn just how cruel he could be.

By 1970, VSH had implemented regionalization, or the lodging of patients on wards designated by the country they were from; 10B was the Rutland county ward. Weeks 3 held Chittenden county patients and after Curlin brought me to Weeks 3, Havas met with me again.

I have no idea what Havas might have said to me or what he had said during our initial meeting, but I do know, from memory and from the record, what happened when Havas told me that I would be transferred to his 10B ward.

I ran wildly down the hall of Weeks 3 and smashed my head through the pane glass window of the door to the porch. I remember staggering and falling to the floor. There was blood gushing from my face, near my eyes. As I lay on the floor, several male aides ran toward me and I responded by fighting them. While I was pinned to the floor, face first, one male aide kneeled on the back of my thighs and repeatedly smashed my forehead on the floor. This aide would later say that I had kicked him in the groin.

I was again placed in a seclusion room on 1A, with my arms secured in wristlets. I spent three days on 1A before being transferred to 10B. I lasted eight days on Havas's ward before returning to 1A, where I again spent time in seclusion and wristlets.

Because there are no records for the 10B ward except for scattered

notations by Havas later in the record, I have only a few scattered memories of being on 10B. One includes a strange incident between Havas and me.

After a morning meeting on the ward, Havas walked up to me and whispered something that I do not recall into my ear. Whatever he said upset me enough that I ran from him and off the ward. Havas chased after me. This would have been highly unusual. Doctors didn't chase patients through the hallways. Aides did that. When I reached the area in front of the dining hall, I inexplicably ran straight into a chalkboard that was propped up in the hall. I could have continued running, but for some reason I crashed head first into the chalkboard.

Havas threw himself on top of me and held me down until the aides came and took me to 1A. It would be a very long time before I unraveled this scenario.

On November 12, 1970, the day of my scheduled Rutland court hearing, which I had requested to be present at, I was taken to 1A at noon and locked in a seclusion room. There is nothing in the record to explain the circumstances that led to this incident.

I went back and forth from 1A to 10B until late December, 1970, when I was secluded and in restraints. Beginning on December 30, I was kept in wristlets and seclusion for up to ten straight days at a time without relief. The records show that on three separate occasions I was kept in wristlets and in seclusion for up to fourteen days at a time. Each time the wristlets were removed, I was placed in a straightjacket.

When in seclusion, I was often kept naked. My arms were secured behind my back day and night. There was no bed. There was no mattress on the floor. There were no blankets. There was no access to a toilet. I remember relieving myself on the floor like an animal and then being forced to remain in the small room with my own excrement. It was a degrading experience and the searing pain caused by the wristlets was constant and maddening.

While in seclusion and wristlets, I began smashing my own head into the door and against the walls. I learned during my investigation that self-injury of this type is common among people who are kept in extended periods of isolation.

The records show that on several occasions, I was left for two and three days at a time with no food or water. From December 30, 1970 until June 21, 1971, I was kept in seclusion and in wristlets and beginning on January 31, 1971, I was placed in a straightjacket. My

arms and feet were tied to the bed. I remained this way until June 21st.

December 30, 1970 is a key date. The records show that it was the day I was transferred to 1A where I would remain until the following June.

A doctor's note written by Havas states that, "10B is not chemotherapeutically equipped to handle this patient."

Essentially this means that whatever experimental drugs VSH was preparing to give me would cause me to be unable to be on an open ward.

A computer-generated form dated December 30, 1970 includes biographical and clinical information about me. The information was transmitted via computer to an unknown computer terminal. Over the next several months, additional computer-generated information about me was transmitted via the computer data base system. During my investigation I learned that the computer-generated information was a component of the Rockland Project.

In the 2000's, I would learn that the Rockland Project, a $6.1 million dollar sophisticated computer network that connected to sites in several states, including Washington DC, was a project no one in the state or federal government wanted to talk about.

VSH continued to transmit clinical updates via the computer system throughout my time on the locked ward 1A and again in 1972 after I returned to VSH from four months in Fletcher's Baird 6. The transmissions suddenly end in 1972.

At CIA headquarters located at 1834 Connecticut Avenue, NW, Washington, DC, the site of John Gittinger's Psychological Assessment Associates, a CIA front, Gittinger kept the tests scores of each subject's PAS, or Personality Assessment System on a computer data base system. Test subjects' biographical information and clinical patient updates were kept with the PAS results. CIA spent "a small fortune" computerizing the PAS data bank. The CIA computer system was a multi-million dollar project, handled by CIA Project OFTEN and installed by the Office of Research and Development in 1968.

Vermont installed a $6.1 million dollar computer data base system in 1968, which became operational late the following year, and which is described in original source documents as "the most sophisticated computer system in the country." VSH had the primary computer terminal on site. Every one of the other states listed as sites for the computer data base system and connected into Vermont's data base

were CIA research sites during MKULTRA.

Beginning with a 1959 research project, VSH sent the results of PAS's conducted on child patients directly to John Gittinger at Psychological Assessment Associates, 1834 Connecticut Avenue, NW, Washington, DC, according to original source documents.

John Gittinger created the PAS for CIA, who relied heavily on these tests, describing them in CIA documents as "the key to the entire clandestine business." PAS is described as being used "to compromise people," "to look for soft spots" and "to get at people." The PAS is described by CIA as "planned destructiveness."

CIA described the primary motive in using the PAS in a 1963 CIA Inspector General Technical Services Division assessment: "PAS objectives are to control, exploit or neutralize. These objectives are innately anti-ethical rather than therapeutic in their intent."

The test was given to VSH child patients and the results were sent directly to Gittinger at CIA headquarters in Washington, according to UVM-VSH documents. Hyde routinely used Gittinger's PAS during his LSD experiments under the covert CIA funding source, Human Ecology. According to author John Marks, "Hundreds of thousands of dollars in Human Ecology grants and even more in Psychological Assessment contracts - all CIA funds - flowed out to verify and expand the PAS."

A bibliography of references on the use of Gittinger's PAS, compiled by Richard York and Barbara Allen, contains three citations for UVM-VSH research projects in 1959, 1965 and 1966. VSH doctors Rupert Chittuck, Superintendent at VSH until 1968, George Brooks, who became Superintendent in 1968, and Donald Eldred, are cited in the bibliography. York notes that the criteria for inclusion on the list required, "explicit and specific mention of the PAS in a paper, article or book."

Richard York is identified in declassified CIA documents and he was an employee of Gittinger's Psychological Assessment Associates. York frequently conducted CIA-funded research with Hyde and UVM-VSH documents identify York as a "Consultant" who visited VSH during the experiments.

The sophisticated computer system was abruptly cancelled in 1973 when CIA Director Richard Helms ordered a halt to all MKULTRA projects and the destruction of all MKULTRA documents. In 1973, after MKULTRA became public, VSH never again conducted active patient research. The federal funding agencies that poured money into VSH

research during the MKULTRA years admitted their witting participation in MKULTRA. VSH obtained all of its research monies through these federal agencies.

During my investigation, I filed FOIA's with the National Institute of Mental Health and the United States Public Health Service, both of which funded the Rockland Project. No documents were located. I contacted Rockland State Hospital in Orangeburg, New York for Rockland Project documents. The main processing terminal was located at Rockland State Hospital. No documents were located. I contacted Vermont Department of Health, seeking this information. No one in Vermont government knew anything about the Rockland Project and they were not able to locate documents. Yet I obtained a Vermont Biennial Report that provided details about the Rockland Project.

I contacted former Vermont Governor, Phil Hoff, by phone. Hoff was noted in the documents I had about the Rockland Project as a part of the process that brought the computer data system into VSH. My initial conversation with Hoff was pleasant, but he denied knowing about the Rockland Project and also claimed not to know Robert Hyde or anything about the CIA research in VSH-UVM. The phone conversation ended on a positive note and I thanked him for his time.

Much to my surprise, Hoff phoned me back three separate times. It was clear to me by the third time he called me back, that he was either unwilling or unable to answer my questions about the Rockland Project. Governor Hoff then made a curious statement.

"It's just as if it never existed," Hoff told me.

"But Governor, it did exist. I have the documents that prove it existed," I replied.

"Karen, it's just as if it never existed."

I understood the meaning behind the Governor's cryptic remark. The Rockland Project was a component of the CIA covert research. Almost all documents were destroyed in 1973 when MKULTRA was going to be made public. I am convinced that Vermont officials, past and present, have knowledge of the CIA covert research, allowed it to take place and continue to cover it up.

During the lawsuit, my lawyer Kim Hayden contacted the Vermont State Archivist in an attempt to locate certain documents thought to be in the possession of former Vermont Governors.

Gregory Sanford wrote in his letter to Kim: "We do not have the bulk

of the Governor Philip Hoff records; as I noted, he is the only 20th century governor to largely ignore the requirements of 3 V.S.A. 4 and, instead placed his records with Special Collections in the Bailey/Howe Library at the University of Vermont."

The VSH medical record notes that I was seen once a week for several weeks, in my seclusion room, by Patrick Sullivan, from UVM Department of Psychology. There are no notes by Sullivan in the records and I have only one brief memory of seeing him.

Sullivan introduced himself when he entered the seclusion room. He wore a green suit coat and a vest. He had thick brown hair and wore black rim glasses.

He said to me, "You can't be hypnotized."

My memory ends there.

Experts have told me that the quickest and surest way to disarm someone when planning to conduct hypnosis is to tell that person that they cannot be hypnotized. The tactic was apparently successful.

On December 12, 1970, Dr. Otto Havas began writing orders for vaginal suppositories. There is no medical reason noted anywhere in the records for the use of these vaginal suppositories. They would be administered twelve times while I was tied to a bed in a straightjacket. Havas wrote the order to be used at the discretion of the doctor. During these months in seclusion and restraint I was prescribed placebos, along with up to eight different types of drugs at a time. I was subjected to two complete drug washouts.

Dr. Tom Fox explained to me that drug washouts are typical in experiments and a hallmark of experimentation. All drugs would be completely stopped and a period of time would elapse so that the chemicals would leave my system. Then new drugs would be started. I was also administered regular enemas. I have no memory of the administration of the vaginal suppositories or the enemas.

A November, 1970 doctor's orders chart from my VSH medical records lists the following drugs administered to me: Haldol, 2 mg three times a day; Artane, 2 mg three times a day; Reserpine, 2 mg IM, twice a day, PRN; Chloralhydrate, 500 mg, HS; Darvon 60 mg PRN; and Sodium Amytal, 250 mg IM, PRN.

A doctor's orders chart from April-May, 1971 contains the following drugs administered to me: Lithium, 300 mg three times a day; Dilantin, 100 mg three times a day; Elavil, 50 mg twice a day; Sodium Phenobarbital, ½ AMP, IM; Sodium Amytal 250 mg PRN; and Kemadrin,

5 mg twice a day.

In my investigation into the CIA drug and mind control programs at VSH-UVM, I obtained 1957 research project documents using FOIA. These documents showed that VSH-UVM disguised active experimental drugs by using placebos. This insured that no staff or patients would suspect that the placebo contained an active chemical substance. I believe that there was an active experimental chemical in the placebos I was given.

After prolonged periods in wristlets, I was, on several occasions, allowed out of seclusion. I began attacking the aides and I tried to plunge my head through windows on the ward. I was selective in which aides I targeted for violence. Only the aides who had abused me were attacked.

The night nurse on 1A, Alice Laplant, was a tough old Vermonter. She brought me water by the pitcher and allowed me to drink until I was satisfied. Alice removed me from seclusion one night and brought me into the nurse's station where she gave me a cigarette. The nursing supervisor came through the ward and reacted angrily when she saw me sitting with Alice. I remember the conversation between them

"What is she doing here? She is dangerous!"

Alice took a long, slow drag off from her cigarette and replied, "I know I don't have any reason to worry about Karen. Can you say the same?"

The supervisor left the ward. I believe Alice knew that I targeted only the abusive aides and she was right. She never had anything to fear from me. I entered Mary Fletcher very depressed, withdrawn and suicidal and left totally out of control, driven to the extreme by repeated doses of drugs I had severe reactions to. I entered VSH a thirteen-year old kid who was in obvious need of psychiatric help only to be repeatedly subjected to drugs that were known to cause allergic reactions. At eighteen I was no closer to knowing why I had the 1965 breakdown or why I had been sent to VSH in the terrible condition that I arrived there in. In October, 1971 my world had just begun to disintegrate.

I sat on the floor of the seclusion room with my arms bound behind my back in wristlets. I don't know how long I had been there. I cried to God, asking Him what I had done to deserve this. I agonized over the fact that no one in my family had come to take me out of the horror I was trapped in. I wondered how they could leave me like this. I was

helpless and sinking deeper into hopelessness.

My mother was frantically trying to see me on 1A, but she was repeatedly told that I refused to see her. The North office supervisor, Ruth Phillips told my mother that the best thing she could do was to go back home and forget about me. My mother was shocked and angry. She had no intention of going away and leaving me, but her attempts to visit me were routinely blocked by VSH staff.

I recall being in seclusion and seeing Ruth Phillips at the door. She told me that no one in my family was coming to take me home and that I would die in VSH. My parents and I were being played by the VSH personnel. VSH couldn't allow anyone to see the conditions I was being kept in and I learned that several people tried to see me, but were turned away.

By April, 1971, rumors about what was happening to me reached Rutland County Mental Health staff members Rosemary Johnson and Judy West. They traveled to VSH as part of their job representing Rutland county patients in VSH. While at VSH they reviewed the medical records of Rutland county patients and visited each patient - except for me.

Rosemary told me in the mid 2000's that she and Judy were not allowed to view my VSH records and that they were prevented from seeing me on 1A. They strongly complained but it got them nowhere. They left VSH unable to see me.

In April, 1971, Judge Henry Black signed the visitor log in VSH North office and tried to see me. VSH refused to allow him to see me. My mother also unsuccessfully tried to see me that day and Judge Black stopped her in the hall and introduced himself. He was visibly angry. Judge Black, who was accompanied by a female attorney, left VSH without either seeing me or apparently following up.

Judge Henry Black was described in an August 4, 1977 front page *Rutland Herald* article about his death as, "one of Vermont's most influential lawyers." Black was a member of the American Bar Association House of Delegates. He was president of the Vermont Bar in 1957.

How one of Vermont's most influential Judges learned about me is a question I cannot answer. I don't know why he allowed VSH to turn him away or why he didn't follow up. I do know that there was no way that VSH would have allowed him to see me locked in seclusion and bound to a bed in a straightjacket. I remained in those conditions for almost

two more months.

In an ironic twist, the obituary of Judge Black on the front page of the August 4, 1977 *Rutland Herald*, is next to an article entitled, "CIA Experiments Confirmed; Turner Says None Going Now."

During the brief time I wasn't on 1A in the first couple of months I was in VSH in 1970, I met Goddard College students who worked at VSH as part of their studies. One student, Phil Fass and I immediately clicked, although the first time he said his name was Phil, I turned and walked away. Phil was sensitive and intelligent and we enjoyed each other's company, however brief the times we spent together were. When I was placed in seclusion in December, Phil was worried. The longer I remained in seclusion, the more concerned he became.

Over the next several months, Phil contacted Vermont Governor Deane Davis and explained my situation. Davis initially assured Phil that he would attend to the situation and Phil would be able to see me. A follow up contact with the Governor became a dead end. Phil contacted the ACLU and met with lawyers. He stressed that he simply wanted to see me and make sure I was okay. The ACLU told him that if he could find information for them about conditions inside VSH, they would make sure he was able to see me.

A second meeting was scheduled between Phil and the lawyers from ACLU. They met at a local diner. The lawyers told Phil that they had no idea what he was talking about after he asked if he could see me. The two men told him that if he didn't shut up and leave the situation alone, that they would make sure that Phil was locked up in VSH. Phil was stunned.

Phil wrote several letters to the Editor of the *Barre Times Argus* and the responses, many by personnel at VSH, were harsh and negative toward Phil. They wanted him to shut up and go away. Phil would remain in my life for the next few years, but in 1971, all that he could do was wait.

In April, 1971, I received electric shock treatments or ECT. The ECT chart shows that I had eight treatments and that each treatment involved the use of 30-35 shocks. The standard number of shocks given by medical professionals was one shock maintained for a fraction of a second. The records show the shocks were sustained over a 40-second period of time. On two separate occasions, the ECT failed to produce a seizure and the entire process was repeated.

CIA employed a type of ECT known as Paige-Russell. These ECT's

used 35-40 shocks in each session, sustained over a prolonged amount of time. These ECT's produced a regressive state of confusion, disorientation and amnesia. Dr. Ewen Cameron, CIA researcher employed by McGill University and Director of the Allan Memorial Institute in Montreal, Canada, used Paige-Russell ECT in his MKULTRA Subproject 68 "depatterning" experiments. CIA and VSH-UVM were longtime research and personnel exchange partners with McGill, and personnel from McGill populated VSH and the Burlington psychiatric units, both before and during the times I was a patient in the hospitals.

I spoke with former Goddard student, Jane Youngbaer in 2009. Jane was a friend of both Phil and I in 1970-1971. Jane described seeing me brought back to 1A after an ECT. She said I did not recognize her and that I was very different after the treatment. Jane was very disturbed by my condition.

On June 8, 1971, Havas made arrangements with neurologist, Dr. Hebert Martin at the Degoesbriand hospital in Burlington, a part of the Mary Fletcher hospital, known in 1971 as the Medical Center Hospital of Vermont, for me to be transferred to the neurology unit on June 21, 1971. Havas notes that I would be sent to the unit for "necessary brain studies and special treatment."

Havas writes that I was given eight ECT treatments in April and that there was no improvement. He also writes that ECT was given in an "effort to tame her."

In the book, *Acid Dreams*, by Martin Lee and Bruce Shlain, the use of LSD by CIA researchers is described: "LSD would be employed to provoke a reality shift, to break someone down and tame him, to find a locus of anonymity and leave a mark there forever."

The VSH medical referral form signed by Havas on June 18, 1971, lists my diagnosis as Neurosis, Hysterical, Dissociative Type and Personality Disorder, Schizoid. Drug sensitivities are listed as Penicillin, Darvon, Thorazine, Compazine, Tofranil and Mellarill. Noted as drugs currently prescribed are Mysoline and Thorazine.

Despite the pleas by my mother to Havas and other VSH doctors for information on my condition and for access to me, VSH did not inform my parents about my transfer to the Burlington hospital until June 21.

On June 18, 1971 the record shows that Havas conducted four ECT's. The record appears to have been written over showing 4 treatments. The number 6 is visible under the number 4. That night the doctor on call, Dr. Fontaine, treated eye and facial injuries I suffered. Dr. Fontaine

was from McGill and her name appears again in the Baird 6 records in July of 1971.

ECT is known to cause amnesia and I believe that Havas conducted the treatments not only as part of the experiment, but also to insure that my memories of 1A were gone. For the most part, he was successful.

I woke up lying on a mattress in a seclusion room. I wasn't wearing wristlets. I tried to get up, but I couldn't. Nurses' aides brought me out of the seclusion room where Dr. Clare O`Shea conducted a neurological exam. O'Shea was the doctor Curlin brought me to on Weeks 3 after he removed me from seclusion in October, 1970

I was showered, dressed and placed in wristlets, with my arms in front of my body. 1A head nurse, Peggy Raymond and three other VSH aides accompanied me to a state-owned vehicle. Peggy gave me a cigarette. The car exited the grounds of VSH and pulled onto Interstate 89. It was June 21, 1971.

I remember looking out of the window of the car as it headed toward Burlington. The sky was a crystal clear blue, the sun was out and the pastureland and fields were a deep, rich green. I began to cry. I was overwhelmed by the knowledge that I had made it out of that terrible place alive. I stared out of the car window, smoked my cigarette and thanked God.

The next memory I have is of walking into the admission office at the Degoesbriand hospital. My arms were secured in leather wristlets, and I was accompanied by two VSH male aides and two VSH female aides. The woman conducting the admission suddenly left her chair and returned with a man who ordered the VSH aides to remove the wristlets and leave the premises. People sitting in the admission area seemed to react negatively to the event. I wondered what I had done to upset people.

I have few memories of the almost three weeks on the neurology unit. The records show that I was in a regressed child-like state and that I referred to myself, not as Karen, but as Skippy. The nurses began calling me Skippy. I would later say that Karen had died in VSH. I was prescribed Thorazine and Stelazine, despite a long-noted history of being allergic to the drugs.

CIA documents may help explain why, despite my repeated, well-documented allergic reactions to Thorazine and other phenothiazine drugs, VSH, Degoesbriand and Baird 6 doctors prescribed the drugs

throughout the years I was a patient in the hospitals.

In the book, *The C.I.A. Doctors: Human Rights Violations by American Psychiatrists*, Dr. Colin Ross refers to CIA ARTICHOKE documents. ARTICHOKE was a CIA research program, the forerunner of MKULTRA. One of those documents reads:

"Still problematic is the use of drugs for deconditioning. Chlorapromazine (Thorazine) ought theoretically to have some value…It may be that this is exactly what we are looking for; perhaps it could decondition an enemy agent out of his simulated personality and back to his real one."

I was given a psychological test in which I was apparently not very cooperative. The record shows that I refused to use both hands during portions of the tests because I was holding a stuffed animal. The psychologist conducting the test was clearly checking my memory. It's noted that although I complained about my treatment in VSH, when pressed for details, I couldn't provide any.

Several EEG's were conducted. During one, I was placed in a strange room with walls on all four sides that looked like plastic. Suddenly as I lay hooked up to EEG leads, a man rushed into the room and broke a glass bottle on the floor. I reacted by crying.

The record states that, "The patient was purposefully upset by the breaking of the bottle."

On June 28, the records show that Dr. Charles Poser ordered an EEG with Metrazol activation. Prior to the EEG I was given phenobarbital. The record shows that I was given 1800 mg of Metrazol. I had hallucinations. I complained that I was in severe physical pain. Apparently I recognized that I was, in fact, hallucinating and I accused the doctors of giving me drugs that caused me to hallucinate. The doctor refused to give me more than 1800 mg of Metrazol, noting that I had an unusual tolerance to the drug. No seizure was produced.

Metrazol is described in declassified CIA documents as being used on POW's in Soviet gulags.

It causes excruciating physical and psychological pain, so severe that a POW is said to, "Say or do anything to avoid another dose of the drug."

CIA documents describe the effects of Metrazol and the CIA reason for using it. In his book, *The C.I.A. Doctors*, Dr. Colin Ross refers to CIA documents that read:

"Metrazol, which has been very useful in shock therapy, is no longer popular because, for one thing it produces feelings of overwhelming terror and doom prior to the convulsion. But terror, anxiety, worry would be valuable for many purposes from our point of view."

Metrazol was used in MKULTRA to produce amnesia and as a way to negate the effects of LSD. A pre-treatment of phenobarbital was routine. The use of Metrazol was stopped throughout most of the world in the 1950's because of the excruciating effects it produced. Yet, in 1971, in the Degoesbriand hospital, in Burlington, Vermont, a nineteen-year old patient who had just been removed from almost seven months in seclusion and restraint was administered 1800 mg of Metrazol. I have no memory of the Metrazol activation and learned of it only when I obtained my medical records in 1997.

The record shows that the hallucinations continued after I returned to my room. I complained to the nurses that I heard "men in my head."

The record shows a notation that I was suffering from "hallucinatory effects of Metrazol."

That night I went into the bathroom and tried to set myself on fire.

A psychiatric consultation was ordered and Dr. Charles Ravaris from Baird 6, the Fletcher hospital inpatient psychiatric unit visited me. It was decided that I would be moved to Baird 6 and on July 2, 1971, I was taken to the psychiatric unit.

I can only imagine that when I was transferred from the brutal conditions in VSH to the Burlington hospitals, that I must have believed that I was finally safe. I suspect that after the administration of the Metrazol, I understood that I was not safe in the new hospital. During my investigation I obtained documents that show that I was very definitely not safe.

Documents obtained from the Department of Energy include its list of participants in the Human Radiation Experiments; they show that, in 1955, the University of Vermont College of Medicine entered into a contract with the Air Force School of Aviation Medicine, in Texas. UVM Department of Pharmacology handled the research. The Human Radiation Experiments were the forerunner of the CIA MKULTRA experiments. The Department of Energy list of participants includes a designation for UVM for conducting behavioral experiments. Robert Hyde is named as a participant by DOE.

In 1955, the Chief Scientist at the School of Aviation Medicine was Hubertus Strughold, former Chief Scientist for Research at the Dachau

concentration camp in Nazi Germany. Strughold's Dachau experiments were unspeakably horrific and caused the agonizing deaths of thousands of concentration camp victims.

Strughold conducted experiments using drugs and mind control in Dachau and is widely regarded as having been the first to do so. Strughold was brought into the United States after WWII through the Paperclip Project, which allowed certain Nazi war criminals to work for the American government.

The SAM-UVM contract grant, AF 18 (604)1093 was funded in part by the DOE, yet in the 2000's, DOE claimed to have no documents. UVM's Department of Pharmacology and VSH went on to conduct experiments using VSH patients. VSH secured a contract for the drugs, Thorazine and Reserpine, as well as other experimental drugs used in their research from Smith, Kline and French pharmaceutical company. Another contract was secured with CIBA and later a third contract was obtained with Mead Johnson.

In 1955, the CIA MKULTRA program was well underway at Boston Psychopathic Hospital where Robert Hyde conducted LSD and mind control experiments. VSH's research and exchange program with Boston Psychopathic was also well underway. UVM-VSH launched "schizophrenic rehabilitation" in 1955.

In 1961, UVM's first Chairman of the newly created Department of Psychiatry was Dr. Thomas Boag. Boag came to the UVM position from his position as Assistant Director to Dr. Ewen Cameron at McGill and the Allan Memorial Institute in Montreal, Canada. Boag's appointment to the position at UVM was reported in a 1961 American Psychiatric Association bulletin. Cameron was actively conducting CIA drug and mind control experiments at both Canadian institutions beginning in the 1950's. In 1959, when VSH-UVM administered experimental drugs to unwitting VSH patients as a part of the schizophrenic rehabilitation project, Dr. George Brooks traveled to the Allan Memorial Institute to present his paper on VSH experiences with schizophrenics.

In a search of Boag's research, I found that Boag had conducted numerous experiments using LSD with Dr. Paul Maclean. Maclean was a Boston neurophysiologist. Boag's position as UVM Chairman of the Department of Psychiatry, and UVM's use of Special Interrogations, LSD, mescaline and other experimental methods and agents, certainly helped facilitate the covert research conducted at UVM, VSH and the Burlington hospitals during the 1960's and early 1970's.

A 1963-1966 VSH-UVM research project, "Programmed Instruction

with Disturbed Students," lists Boag, from UVM's College Of Medicine and George Brooks from VSH as the primary researchers. This project used the PAS and sent the results of the tests on child patients directly to John Gittinger at CIA headquarters in Washington, DC. The December, 1965 PAS conducted on me in VSH would have been sent to Gittinger.

In 1965, I have a faint memory of doing testing, some of which involved manual dexterity tests. I remember having my photograph taken. I also recall asking why the other patients didn't have their photographs taken and I was told that the other patients had already been photographed. No photo was included in my medical records. It's not a stretch for me to believe that my photograph landed on Gittinger's desk with my PAS.

Boag wasn't the only Ewen Cameron associate involved in UVM-VSH research. Dr. Heinz Lehmann, who would become Chairman of the Department of Psychology at McGill in 1971, is cited in UVM-VSH research documents. Two other Cameron Associates, Dr. Robert Malmo and Dr. Charles Shagrass are also cited in UVM-VSH research project documents.

In 1956, Brooks received the first fellowship from Smith, Kline and French and was sponsored by the drug company to spend six months on site at Boston Psychopathic Hospital. He was there for "special drug studies."

It's interesting to note that CIA academic funding came through and was paid through the use of "special study contracts" awarded through the use of CIA-connected foundations and groups. Smith, Kline and French Pharmaceuticals is identified in declassified CIA documents as providing drugs to CIA.

At the Burlington hospitals, where UVM doctors and medical students rotated to the units as well as to VSH, doctors from McGill populated all three hospitals. I spoke with several former staff members of Baird 6, who described McGill psychiatrists as routinely participating in the care of patients. One former staff member said that the McGill psychiatrists were simply part of the medical staff.

In 1955, Eric Wittkower, from McGill, created a CIA front group known as Transcultural Psychiatry. Wittkower's research is cited by VSH-UVM in the 1961 book, *The Vermont Story,* written about the VSH-UVM schizophrenic rehabilitation project.

A citation in the 1961 book, *The Vermont Story* was under the name

of Eric Wittkower. The citation was for a conference held in Zurich, Switzerland on September 7, 1957. A Symposium on the Chemical Concepts of Psychosis was held in Zurich, Switzerland, September 1-7, 1957. A corresponding article was included in a 1958 book edited by Max Rinkel and Herman Denber - both CIA-LSD researchers. Rinkel is cited in UVM-VSH documents and Denber published with and conducted research with George Brooks.

Participants in the Symposium included CIA and LSD researchers, Paul Hoch, Hudson Hoagland, Abram Hoffer, Amedeo Marrazzi and Humphrey Osmond. These men were part of the CIA network that conducted LSD, brain implant and other mind control research, according to Dr. Colin Ross.

Hoch edited and published UVM-VSH research papers. Rinkel is cited in UVM-VSH documents and conducted extensive LSD research with Hyde. Hoagland conducted CIA-LSD research with Hyde at Worcester. Marrazzi worked out of Rockland State Hospital in New York, another UVM-VSH affiliate, under an Army contract.

During the summer of 1971, when I was a patient on Baird 6, a member of Transcultural Psychiatry, Dr. Thomas Chiu, was onsite. Chiu worked out of UVM's Department of Psychology. I have no memory of Chiu and learned of him through a former Baird 6 staff member. It's interesting to me that I have no memory of Chiu, who was on site at Baird 6 during the full four months that I was there. I can recall most of the doctors and the nurses on the unit.

For years in therapy with Kathy Judge, I told her numerous times before I obtained my medical records, that I had unexplained negative feelings about Chinese people. To my knowledge, I had never met a Chinese person and I had no reason to feel anything negative toward the Chinese.

After my investigation into CIA experiments in Vermont, Kathy and I spoke about the fact that Chiu was on site at Baird 6 and that he appears to be someone I cannot recall. Chiu, as a member of a CIA front group, has made me suspicious that I very well may have had contact with him and that it is no coincidence that I can't remember him.

Chiu worked out of UVM's Department of Psychology and he had been previously advised by Dr. Henry Murray, a well-known Harvard CIA researcher According to author Alston Chase in his book, *A Mind For Murder*, written about Unabomber Ted Kaczynski, Murray obtained LSD from Robert Hyde and conducted drug and mind control experiments on Kaczynski.

Author H.P. Albarelli, Jr. wrote in his book, *A Terrible Mistake*, that during the 1960's and early 1970's, UVM conducted drug and mind control research. CIA Director of Research and Robert Hyde's CIA boss, Sidney Gottlieb, stated in an interview that UVM "conducted Special Interrogations." Gottlieb also said that the CIA cover front groups, Human Ecology and Josiah P. Macy, Jr. Foundation "may have funded" UVM's research.

Special interrogations involved the use of electric shock treatments, chemical shock treatments including Metrazol, sensory deprivation, drugs such as LSD and mescaline, hypnosis and the creation of amnesia. In the 2000's, UVM denied a FOIA request I made about the SAM, LSD and mind control experiments. UVM claimed to have no documents or knowledge of CIA drug and mind control research and denied ever using unwitting subjects in their research. Documents I obtained contradict UVM's claims.

According to H.P. Albarelli Jr.:

"CIA's BLUEBIRD project focused almost exclusively on situations deemed "special interrogations" - or SI - in which the quick and complete inducing of full disclosure was paramount. Documents from the project's earliest meetings reveal a laundry list of methods including: heroin, morphine, polygraph, and electric shock, the use of "mechanical aids," lobotomies, hypnotism, fatigue, isolation, sensory deprivation and torture."

"BLUEBIRD laid the foundation for all of the CIA psychological manipulation and mind control programs to come."

BLUEBIRD was renamed ARTICHOKE in 1951. ARTICHOKE and MKULTRA ran alongside each other. In Montreal, in 1957, Ewen Cameron began conducting CIA funded brainwashing experiments known as depatterning.

According to John Marks, the President of Human Ecology, Dr. Harold Wolff, was "offered CIA access to everything in its files on threats, coercion, imprisonment, isolation, deprivation, humiliation, torture, brainwashing, black psychiatry, hypnosis and a combination of these with or without chemical agents."

"People with specific skills for special ARTICHOKE projects had been recruited from the U.S. Department of Agriculture, FDA, HEW and NIH…ARTICHOKE officials attempted to forge collaborative lines with Army, Navy and Air Force."

UVM secured a research contract with the Air Force School of

Aviation Medicine in 1955. The contract was issued to UVM Department of Pharmacology.

The book, *A Father, A Son and the CIA*, by Harvey Weinstein, notes that:

"The Air Force was interested in sensory deprivation with space flights in mind. They sponsored numerous research projects through Human Ecology…Gittinger helped connect Cameron and McGill to the Air Force interest in brainwashing, sensory deprivation and isolation research."

In 1971, Baird 6 was a newly built psychiatric unit and I walked onto the unit to find the nursing staff dressed in regular street clothing. One of the nurses told me that my doctor was the "best looking doctor in the hospital." Dr. Richard Ellison was indeed a handsome man and as I would learn over the time that he was my doctor, he was also a very kind, caring psychiatrist. Ellison was still a medical resident physician. His superiors were co-Chairmen of the Baird 6 unit, Dr. Richard Lippincott and Dr. Charles Ravaris. Baird 6 head nurse, Karen Esty would become a person I would not only fondly remember, but who went out of her way to try to help me.

My first few weeks on Baird 6 are pretty much a blur. I was manic after only a day on the new unit and unable to settle down long enough to sleep. I could eat when I was hungry and I could drink soda and coffee. I could smoke cigarettes, sit in comfortable chairs, watch television and actually talk to other people. I could walk the hallway without being bound in wristlets or secluded in a locked room. I could sleep in a bed with sheets and blankets and not on the bare floor of a seclusion room. I'm sure it must have been like heaven for me.

Former staff at Baird 6 told me during my investigation that they, as nurses were not told that I had been kept in the conditions I was kept in VSH. Baird 6 nurses did not know that I had spent almost seven months in a straightjacket. They also said that this information was kept out of my patient chart. My medical records support their assertions and contain no mention of the long seclusion and restraint in VSH.

Also withheld from the Baird 6 nurses, was the fact that at the age of thirteen, I had been a patient in the Mary Fletcher psychiatric unit. The former Baird 6 staff told me that the information kept from them would have been vital patient information and information normally provided to the nursing staff. They expressed their shock and were very disturbed to learn that the information had been kept from them. I also learned that, in 1965, McGill psychiatrists were also on site at the

Burlington hospital.

My diagnosis when I became a patient on Baird 6 was once again shifted upon admission to the unit, back to schizophrenic, despite the previously noted diagnosis of hysteria, dissociative and schizoid. The former Baird 6 staff members described for me the frequent staff conversations in 1971 about my diagnosis. The staff recognized that I was dissociative and were split as to whether or not I was a multiple personality.

When I was able to speak with one of the Baird 6 staff in the 2000's, her response to learning that I was diagnosed as a multiple personality, was, "I'm not surprised at all. Most of us thought so in 1971."

On each page of my Baird 6 medical records my name is noted as "Skippy." The staff called me by this name, as did the doctors. Beginning with my admission to the neurology unit on June 21, 1971 and throughout the four months I spent on Baird 6, it appears that I was no longer Karen.

After learning that I had been an unwitting CIA experimental subject and learning the details of the research I was subjected to, valid questions surfaced. Did the researchers create a new personality in VSH? Did they create more than one personality? I entered VSH locked ward 1A as Karen and walked out of the locked ward eight months later referring to myself by another name. This name was accepted without question by the Burlington doctors and used in my medical records. I learned later that in the CIA's BLUEBIRD and ARTICHOKE mind control programs, new personalities and amnesia were created in subjects known to be dissociative. In the summer of 1971, the experiment continued.

The Baird 6 records show that over the course of the four months I was a patient, painkillers were prescribed. There are nurses' notes describing my complaints about pain in my head, jaws and face. The pain was apparently severe. No cause for the pain is noted. The VSH drug charts also show that during my time in seclusion, painkillers were given on a regular basis.

During the 1997 lawsuit years, a small scar was discovered behind my right ear. A plastic surgeon described the scar as "surgical." Other doctors I consulted agreed that the scar was surgical. There is nothing in my medical records that shows any surgical procedure or notes any reason for a surgical procedure to have been done.

In 2009, while brushing my teeth, I spit into the sink what I initially

thought was a tooth filling. When I examined it, I quickly realized that the object was not a filling. My doctor examined the object and examined the inside of my mouth. On the inside right cheek was a small slit. My doctors referred me to an Ear, Nose and Throat specialist who also saw the small slit in my cheek. The specialist jokingly asked me if I had been kidnapped by aliens. I answered that it wasn't aliens.

The small slit inside the cheek of my mouth turned into what looked like an injection site and eventually disappeared. Another doctor told me that the object could not have been part of a dental procedure. If it had been, the object would have emerged from my gums, not from my cheek. He agreed that a surgical procedure had likely been conducted.

In 2009, I gave the object to Dr. Colin Ross, who examined it under a powerful microscope. He concluded that the object appeared to be rock, not metal and contained no electronic or computerized components. How the object got onto my mouth and why I had a surgical slit inside of my mouth, and behind my ear, remains unknown. The scar behind my ear remains clearly visible upon inspection.

The Baird 6 records show that I was child-like at times and then at other times openly defiant and angry. I frequently stormed around bitterly complaining about VSH. The nurses wrote in the records that there was a coordinated plan to discourage me from talking about VSH and it's clear from the records that they did so. They also asked me during these times to be specific about my complaints about VSH. I couldn't be specific. It's very clear that I could not remember.

I also had unexplained episodes where I ran head first into walls, doors or people. These episodes appear to be similar to the VSH 10B episode when I ran head first into the chalkboard trying to get away from Havas. Several EEG's were done as well as skull x-rays. The record also shows that Dr. Fontaine, the McGill psychiatrist who treated my eye and facial injuries in VSH, saw me on Baird 6 at least two times. It looks like she was the doctor on call. The records also show that I attempted suicide on several occasions, usually cutting my wrist. It's also clear from the records that there was a concerted effort by the psychiatrists to have me accept the fact that I was "schizophrenic." I fought the diagnosis.

One EEG stands out. The records show that I was taken across the campus grounds with a medical student I was fond of. We stopped and had ice cream and then he took me for the EEG. He wrote that I immediately changed. My mood went from happy and enjoying myself

to angry, unresponsive to him and finally totally mute.

When reading the reference to the EEG, I wondered why it was necessary to exit the Fletcher hospital and cross the "campus" to have the EEG. Was this EEG done in the lab of UVM College of Medicine? The Fletcher hospital had its EEG lab on site inside of the hospital. There was no reason to leave the hospital grounds.

I now know that I would have had reasons to be very frightened to have an EEG after the terrible effects of the Metrazol activation done in Degoesbriand. There would be another similar reaction to an EEG later in my life as well.

The Baird 6 nurse's notes contain descriptions of my condition and quotes from me on July 15, 1971. The record notes that I said I felt like, "clawing my eyes out." The record notes that I reported hearing a "whisper telling me to do things" and that I was unable to remember what these things were.

On August 28, 1971, the record shows that I complained of "sensations of something crawling all over her…that her arms and shoulders weren't hers…that she didn't feel like herself and that the cigarette in her fingers felt as thin as a piece of paper."

On August 29, 1971 the record shows that I was, "hyperventilating, frightened…apparently in great distress and tearful."

The record goes on to describe that I had, " feelings of depersonalization…detached from self, hands look funny, not herself… visual hallucinations, tactile hallucinations, things crawling up legs, visual distortions, hallucinations, things look bigger and smaller, rain falling from under the table…most preoccupied with going completely crazy…appears very frightened and out of control."

The record notes that I felt like I was losing control and that I was afraid I would remain this way forever.

Many of the symptoms described in the Baird 6 chart match symptoms reported by people who have been given LSD. In the book by CIA researcher, Harold Abramson, *The Use of LSD in Psychotherapy*, symptoms reported after taking LSD include quotes by patients:

"One half of my body feels different from the other half;" "It's as if half of my body is split off and independent of the rest;" "Parts of my body don't seem to belong to me;" "My hands and feet feel peculiar;" "Objects seem superimposed…in a strange fluid fashion." "My body seems to be doing strange things all on its own; changing size, growing younger and older;" "I have a fear that I might become permanently

insane;" and "I have to struggle to keep things in control."

Phil Fass learned I was on Baird 6 and visited frequently. I liked Phil. He was an excellent friend to me and as we spent more time together, I began to fear that closeness. Phil wanted our relationship to grow and I realized that he felt more for me than I did for him. I might have been able to love him if things had been different, if I hadn't lost my Phil Cram and if all the terrible things that had happened to me hadn't happened. Phil and I remained in contact for a while longer.

I grew particularly close to head nurse Karen Esty. She tried hard to help me, as did most of the Baird 6 nurses. I was trying as hard as I knew how to be well, but my problems were overwhelming. Karen hung in with me.

It's notable that the Baird 6 records show no plan to help me transition out of the unit. There are no plans for my discharge or for where I would go when I left the Baird 6 unit.

In August, I was given ECT treatments. The chart shows that in one ECT I had a "prolonged recovery of respiration." In another ECT I stopped breathing for five minutes and had to be medically supported to breathe. The records show I expressed a significant amount of fear at having the ECT treatments, saying that they had made me worse before.

In October of 1971, a female patient confined to a wheelchair became the focus of most of the patients including me. She was a sweet person who was conflicted about going home on a weekend pass. She was suicidal and we were all worried about her. A few years before, she jumped from a sixth floor window of the Mary Fletcher hospital and ended up in a wheelchair. I vividly recall her promise to us that she would not do anything to harm herself.

It was Sunday morning and it was unusual for the doctors and the staff to call a meeting. We all gathered in the day room and were told that the woman we had all worried would harm herself, had committed suicide. The news hit everyone hard.

For reasons I cannot explain, the next day I went to the stairwell, opened a window and was preparing to jump when Dr. Ellison entered the stairwell and grabbed me. The incident was witnessed by a nurse from another floor.

I recall Dr. Ellison telling me, "You could have done anything else except this."

The hospital couldn't keep me on Baird 6 after this incident and

when I was told that I would have to go back to VSH, whatever hope I had managed to find for myself, slipped away. My records note that I said numerous times over the four months I was on Baird 6 that I would rather be dead than ever go back to VSH.

I expected to be immediately transferred to VSH and as one day passed, then two days and then three days, I asked what the hold up was. I figured it would be easier to just get it over with. I never got an answer about the reason for the delay.

Karen Esty told me that I was going to be placed on Weeks 3 in VSH and that in January, Dr. Ellison would be the doctor on Weeks 3. She asked me to hold on until he came. I was familiar with Weeks 3. It was nothing like 10B and certainly nothing like 1A. I told her I would hang on until Dr. Ellison came. Karen and several of the nurses promised that they would visit me and the record shows that they kept their promises.

During my investigation, I learned from a former psychiatrist on Baird 6 the details of a behind-the-scenes arrangement that took place regarding my transfer back to VSH. The administrator of the Burlington hospital was in poor health and in his absence, Dr. Hans Huessy took over the position.

Huessy made arrangements with VSH and Superintendent George Brooks that I would be placed on the Chittenden county ward Weeks 3, which was overseen by UVM and the Burlington hospital. The arrangement included a provision that I would not be placed back on Havas' ward and that Havas would have no contact with me while I was a patient in VSH. Brooks and VSH agreed to the arrangement. It was a very unusual set of circumstances and it would take me years after I began my investigation to fully understand what it all really meant.

During my investigation of CIA MKULTRA, I was able to cultivate reliable sources of information from people who were on site at the three Vermont hospitals and from others who had valuable information that I never would have been able to find in documents.

I learned disturbing information about Dr. Curlin and I followed up on this information by filing a Vermont Records Act request in 2008. I requested documents regarding his dismissal as Assistant Superintendent from VSH. In August 1971, my source told me that Curlin was told by Superintendent George Brooks to leave VSH so as not to cause "a mess." Brooks had been informed that Curlin had sexual contact with female patients.

My Vermont Records request asked for documents held by the State

in regards to the incident with Curlin. I spoke with an Assistant Attorney General about the matter and I learned, much to my shock, that it was assumed by the Attorney General's Office that I knew that Curlin had admitted "sexual misconduct" with me in VSH. I learned that Curlin's personnel records were made available to my former lawyer Alan George during the lawsuit and that in the closing of the lawsuit was an admission by Curlin about "sexual misconduct."

I told the Assistant Attorney General that I was never told about this and that I would speak with my former lawyer. Alan denied that he was provided Curlin's personnel records and that Curlin's admission was in the closing. I phoned the Attorney General's office again and told him what my former lawyer said.

"Your lawyer is a liar!" the Assistant Attorney General told me.

I initially defended Alan. I couldn't believe that he would have kept such important information from me. The Assistant Attorney General told me during our first conversation that he spoke with the lawyer who defended Curlin during the lawsuit and he stated that Curlin's admission was in the closing of the lawsuit.

The Assistant Attorney General denied saying these things to me during our second phone call, but he did tell me that he had read the closing and Curlin's admission of "sexual misconduct" was in the documents.

I decided not to challenge the State of Vermont and I withdrew my appeal on the records request. I stated that there was a "mutual misunderstanding" between the Assistant Attorney General and myself. The last thing I wanted was to get tangled up in any type of struggle with the State of Vermont again.

I went to the Rutland court and spoke with the court clerk who told me that when there is a settlement between the sides in a lawsuit, the details of the closing remain between the lawyers and are not part of the official court documents.

Suddenly things made sense to me. When the State offered me three times the amount they initially offered to settle after I ended the lawsuit, I repeatedly asked Alan why they would even pay me a single cent. They didn't have to because I ended the suit. His answer was only to take the money.

I was absolutely shocked that my lawyer would have kept the information about Curlin from me. It made no sense to me and it made no sense to Kathy. What did make sense to me was that Curlin insured

that I would never come back on him in another lawsuit by paying me money. He knew that eventually I would find out about his "sexual misconduct." I was left to surmise that this was why the State paid me the amount they finally did.

Alan denied knowing about Curlin's admission. I asked him if he had ever been threatened during my lawsuit and he denied that he had. When I asked him to send the lawsuit documents to my current lawyer, a great deal of the documents had been " lost."

During the lawsuit one lawyer made a startling claim. He stated that, "People have been murdered over this before!"

I thought about his revelation and things really began to make sense to me, despite the steadfast denials by my former lawyer.

I will never know for sure what was actually in the closing of the lawsuit. I was never provided a copy of the closing. The information I have been able to obtain from several reliable sources tells what I need to know.

Curlin and Havas were friends, I learned from sources who knew them both. Even Curlin told me on the phone during the lawsuit that he and Havas were friends. Havas is the doctor who wrote the orders for vaginal suppositories when I was on 1A and his behavior with me in VSH is suspect at best. The behind-the-scenes arrangements between the Fletcher hospital and VSH to keep Havas away from me in 1971 also raise disturbing questions.

VSH Superintendent George Brooks very clearly knew that Curlin was involved in sexual misconduct, apparently with me. Brooks did not want a "mess" for VSH or for the covert CIA experiments being conducted at VSH-UVM. Any investigation into VSH would have put the CIA project in jeopardy. The last thing VSH wanted was a nasty sex scandal. If the information I received from multiple sources is true, Brooks covered up a crime.

It appears as if the Fletcher hospital was also privy to information about Havas. Whatever they knew caused them to make special arrangements with VSH to insure that Havas had no contact with me in VSH. The behavior of Havas during the 1970-1971 months he was my doctor raise disturbing questions as to his involvement in sexual misconduct as well. If the Fletcher hospital did in fact know anything about sexual misconduct by VSH doctors, they too committed a crime by covering it up. Havas wrote the orders for vaginal suppositories and they were used twelve times between December, 1970 and May, 1971.

Did Havas write the orders for Curlin or was Havas also involved in "sexual misconduct?" It appears as though I will never know for sure. But my medical records and the valuable information provided to me by sources in positions to know the truth, tell a story.

I realized, in 2008, that someone working at VSH had to have told Brooks about Curlin and me. It's obvious that Curlin didn't bring the information to Brooks, so someone out there saw something and knows even more. It's also clear to me that Curlin knew I could not remember, when no allegations of sexual misconduct were included in the lawsuit I filed.

It's difficult to realize that if the information about Curlin is true, personnel in two Vermont hospitals kept it covered up. The Vermont Attorney General's office apparently knew about Curlin, if the information I obtained is accurate, and they too kept it covered up. In 1971, all that mattered to VSH, UVM and the participating Burlington hospitals and personnel, was the experiment. In October, 1971, I returned to VSH where the medical records and my memory show that the experiment continued.

I was admitted to Weeks 3 on October 29, 1971 where charge nurse, Viola Littlejohn got me settled in. I'd known Littlejohn since I was thirteen. She was the nurse on duty the first night I was in VSH in 1965. Littlejohn was someone I trusted and thought highly of. She was a tough, no nonsense woman with a heart of gold. She liked me and I always got along well with her. I always knew where I stood with Littlejohn. I liked the fact that she had no hidden agenda. If she had something to say, she said it. She was one of the very few VSH staff I had positive feelings about.

Being back in VSH hit me hard. I was very depressed and overwhelmed by feelings of despair. It seemed that I would never leave the hospital. Somehow, I kept going. I waited for Dr. Ellison to come in January and when he finally arrived, I hoped that maybe he and I could work toward getting me out of the hospital. Several Baird 6 nurses, including Karen Esty visited me on Weeks 3 to provide support. I appreciated their visits.

Dr. Ellison encouraged me to study for my GED and he started helping me study. I was enrolled in the VSH school working toward my high school diploma. In addition, Phil Fass kept in touch, sometimes in person and other times by phone. Phil wanted me to move to New Jersey where he lived. I was hesitant, but we remained in contact for several months until for reasons I cannot recall, Phil stopped contacting

me. It's possible I asked him to stop, but I don't know for sure.

While I was in Baird 6, I began to escape the hospital and the first time I did, raises questions. I was in a room directly across from the nurses' station under close observation. During the middle of the night, dressed in nightclothes, I managed to somehow leave the observation room, take an elevator down to the main floor and leave the hospital grounds, all the while unnoticed by anyone. I was found by a police officer downtown in Burlington. He returned me to Baird 6.

I began to escape from VSH in the fall of 1971 and each time I escaped I was successful. Waterbury, where VSH was located, is a small town. Many VSH staff reside on the same streets I took to make my way to the Interstate. There were even several instances when I escaped that I encountered the Waterbury Chief of Police on my way to the Interstate. He used to wave and say hello. He called me by name.

I stuck out my thumb and got a ride quickly. I was headed toward Waitsfield on Route 100. I noticed that the back seat of the car was filled with camera equipment of all kinds. I asked the man driving the car about it. He said he was a photographer. I told him where I was from and we talked for miles. When we got to the junction of the road I told him that I wanted to get out.

"I'm going out of the country on a job. Do you want to come with me?" he asked.

I was surprised by his offer, but I declined, saying I'd go back to VSH.

The man said he would turn his car around and drive me all the way back to VSH and when we arrived in the VSH parking lot, he extended his offer again.

"Are you sure you don't want to come with me?"

Again I declined his offer and as I watched him drive away, I thought that the entire incident was a little strange. I told no one in VSH about it.

I left VSH one night and hitchhiked on Route 100. I was picked up quickly by a priest who drove me as far as Waitsfield, where I asked him to let me out of the car. It was very rural and there were no streetlights. I couldn't see my hand in front of my face as I tried to walk. I finally went to a house where I told the people inside where I was from. They called VSH and I was returned to the hospital.

The next day, the same priest came up to me on Weeks 3. I asked

him what he was doing there and he told me that he was the priest at VSH. I knew this was not true because I knew the priest at VSH. The man who claimed to be a priest left the ward and I never saw him again. Whoever he was, he wasn't a priest.

I escaped again. I would have been very aware of the fact that escaping VSH brought consequences, yet I escaped time after time for reasons I cannot explain. The records note the escapes but show nothing that might explain the reasons why I might have run.

I easily slipped out of the hospital, made my way through the streets of Waterbury and stood again on the Interstate. I looked closely at the young man who stopped to give me a ride. He was blond, with a short, military-styled haircut. I noticed he wore a pale yellow, button-down collar, short sleeve shirt. I decided that he looked safe and I got into the car.

He drove on Interstate 89 as far as the exit to Richmond and when he took the exit off the Interstate and began driving on the secondary road, I asked him why. He didn't answer me. He pulled his car off from Route 2 and when he began driving on a dirt road, I became very uneasy. Several miles up the dirt road he pulled down into a logging road and I knew I was in danger. He clearly knew where he was going.

He stopped the car at the bottom of a very steep hill, at the end of a logging road and turned off the engine. The area he parked in was remote and secluded.

He never looked at me and then said, "Get out of the car."

I knew he was going to hurt me and as I exited the car I decided that I was going to do as much damage to him, including kill him if I had to. I looked around the ground for a rock and when I found a suitable rock I picked it up and waited for him to come near me.

He opened the driver's side door and stood beside his car, resting his right arm on the roof of the car.

"Get out of here!" he announced.

I couldn't believe what I was hearing and I didn't move, expecting that he would come after me any minute.

He shouted to me again, "I said get out of here!"

Stunned, I began to walk away, carefully watching him to make sure he wasn't going to suddenly run up behind me. I walked up the logging road hill, still clutching the rock in my hand. I refused to run.

I reached the dirt road, still expecting him to change his mind and come after me. I walked along the dirt road picking out spots along the way I could jump into to hide myself if he came for me. Suddenly I heard a car coming. I didn't wave the driver down. I didn't step onto the road or let him know that I was in danger. To this day I don't know why I didn't signal for help.

The vehicle coming down the road was an old pickup truck and the old man driving it drove on by me and disappeared from sight. I kept walking and waiting for the blond man to come after me. I realized that the pickup truck had turned around and was coming back. The driver turned his truck around again and stopped next to me.

"I have a Granddaughter your age and I wouldn't want her out here alone so I came back. Get in," the old man said to me.

I got in.

I began telling the old man what had happened with the blond man and as I talked, I nervously looked back expecting the blond man to come racing up behind us. The old man pulled onto the Interstate and drove fast. When we neared the Waterbury exit, the blond man raced his car up behind us. He pulled his car up close to the rear of the truck and pulled back several times as if to try to intimidate the old man. He pulled alongside the truck and glared at us.

"That's him!" I shouted to the old man.

"Don't be afraid. He isn't going to hurt you," the old man replied.

The blond man slowed his car and eventually backed off and we lost sight of him when we exited into the town of Waterbury. I asked the old man to take me to the police, but he said that he would take me back to VSH and he would go to the police for me. The old man returned me to the VSH parking lot and drove away. I waited for the police to contact me but they never did.

Only after I learned that I had been experimented on was I able to understand this incident and the conclusion I reached is disturbing. As I would find in other situations related to the experiment in VSH, certain pieces of information that were contained in my medical records, particularly information given to VSH by my mother when I was thirteen, were apparently used in the experiments. Whether it was my love of horses, used by Curlin in 1971, or my intense reaction to the Kennedy Assassination, key information was pulled directly from my medical records.

"You can't remember the Kennedy Assassination, can you?" I was

asked by one of the psychiatrists.

My close relationship with my Grandfather, noted in my 1965 records, was also used. They used information from my mother about my running away when I was five years old and the history I had with guns, including my brother being shot and my preoccupation with them. I am convinced they learned about my early childhood traumas in 1965 using Sodium Amytal. They used the information, like Gittinger said in reference to the PAS, to exploit, get at and compromise people.

It is not difficult for me to believe that the blond man was part of the experiment. Once he saw me pick up the rock, he knew that I would fight for my life. Those conducting the experiment already knew that when pushed I would react violently. They witnessed that behavior on 1A. The old man said something key when he told me that he had a granddaughter my age.

I also realized years later that the two men were clearly working together. All the time I was in the truck I looked back, fearful that the blond man would come after me. The truck went miles before the blond man actually pulled up behind us. How did he know what vehicle I got into? When I got into the truck on the dirt road, the blond man was still at the bottom of the logging road. It would have been physically impossible for him to have seen the truck or seen me get into it.

Even more disturbing for me is the young blond man, whose face I could never fully recall. He is the first person I thought of in the 2000's when the blond man with the wire rim glasses began to harass me. Something about the blond man with wire rim glasses was familiar. I felt that I had met him before and he was the only one of the many who tried to harass me in the years after I filed the lawsuit, that I felt threatened by. The threat I felt and told Kathy about many times was that I knew this man from my past. I will never know if the blond man in 1972 and the blond man in the 2000's is the same man.

The admission form in the October, 1971 records includes a physical done upon admission. One area stands out. Under the section where my face, neck and ears are examined, it is noted that I have an "old fibrosis" on the right TM joint. The admission physical in October, 1970 contains no such fibrosis.

The Baird 6 record shows that in July of 1971 the nurses noted my complaints about severe pain behind my right ear. They noted a large "sac" and inflammation present behind my right ear. No examination by a doctor is noted to have taken place and there are no further notes in the Baird 6 records that would indicate I was seen by a doctor or

treated for any medical condition related to this problem. The 1972 VSH record also notes complaints by me about pain behind my right ear. A nurse's note describes a "bunch" behind my right ear. There was, according to the records, no further follow-up.

The surgical scar behind my right ear that was discovered during the lawsuit, combined with the large amounts of painkillers I was given on Baird 6 for facial, jaw and head pain and the extensive use of painkillers in VSH when I was in seclusion and restraint, lead me to the disturbing possibility that I was surgically implanted as part of the experiment. I may have been implanted while on 1A and the implant may have been removed when I was transferred to Burlington. It is also possible, based on information about the MKULTRA experiments, that I was triggered to escape by preprogrammed hypnotic suggestions. CIA used this method during Special Interrogations research. My VSH escapes suggest that one or both of these methods may have been used. The people who appeared in the escapes also strongly suggest that not only was I being closely monitored when I escaped, but that the people monitoring and following me had no intention of allowing anything to happen to me. It was during my final escape from VSH that I saw this play out.

Dr. Ellison began escalating his plan for me to leave VSH. He was due to leave his 6-month position in June, 1972 and he wanted me out of the hospital before he left. I obtained my GED in May and arrangements were made for my discharge on June 19, 1972.

On June 19, 1972 CIA Director Richard Helms ordered the destruction of all MKULTRA files, saying the files were "dynamite and could damage CIA operations." The files were actually destroyed on June 30, 1972. In June of 1971, Attorney General John Mitchell viewed secret files and was reportedly sickened for days by what he read.

I find it to be an extraordinary coincidence that I was discharged from VSH, an active CIA experiment site at the same time when CIA ceased MKULTRA operations, destroyed the files and faced public exposure for its covert experiments.

I went back to my parents' house and tried to begin a normal life. I got a job and tried as hard as I could, but it was no use. I left my parents' house and hitchhiked back to VSH. I walked onto the grounds in the middle of the night and was readmitted to Weeks 3. In retrospect, I can only assume that by this time I was institutionalized. I must have believed that I could not make it outside of the hospital. It's difficult for me to imagine that I voluntarily returned to VSH, but I did.

I don't remember what happened, if anything, to cause me to escape again only days later. I have no explanation for why I ran and the records provide me with no information as to the cause of my escape.

I easily escaped the grounds of VSH and quickly got a ride on the Interstate. The heavy-set man behind the wheel asked me if I would like to stop at McDonald's on the Barre-Montpelier road and I said, yes. He bought me a meal and we were on the Interstate again. I had no idea where I was going and as the miles passed, the man began to talk in a way that made me nervous.

He patted the seat of the car and asked me to slide over closer to him. I reacted immediately by sliding nearer to him and placing a knife to his throat. He had no way of knowing that the knife was a blunt-ended butter knife I took from the Weeks 3 ward, and I wanted to keep it that way. His arms were bigger around than my thighs and I knew if he realized that the knife wouldn't cut him, I was in deep trouble.

I saw a place up ahead on the highway and told him to pull over and stop. I immediately got out of the car, ran down into the wooded area and disappeared from his view. I came out of the woods to find a farmhouse, which I entered. No one seemed to be in the house. I have no idea why I entered the house or what I planned to do.

A man came in the door and was understandably startled to find me there. I told him I did not want to hurt him or hurt anyone and that I was from VSH. I told him that VSH had done terrible things to me. I noticed a rifle hanging on a rack over a door and told him I needed it.

He said, "You don't want this old BB gun."

I looked at the rifle and decided that I didn't need it. I left the man's house and ran into a large field. I found a hunting camp and since it was starting to get dark, I decided to enter the camp and stay the night. I curled up on the bed and tried to figure out what to do.

I heard voices outside and saw the light from a flashlight. It was the Vermont State Police. They came into the camp and brought me back to VSH. During my escapes from VSH, I had repeated contact with the Vermont State Police. Every time I was picked up by the troopers, they treated me with kindness and respect. They bought me cigarettes and sodas and listened to my hatred of VSH. Apparently, I was unable to provide specifics about the treatment I received in VSH.

The Vermont State Police were practically the only people during those years that consistently treated me like a human being. I will

always have the utmost respect and regard for the Vermont State Police. Thanks guys.

I was initially returned to Weeks 3 but it was soon apparent that I was to be transferred to the locked ward, now called 2A. Weeks 3 aide, Edie walked me to the locked ward and I can only imagine the despair I must have been feeling as I approached the ward.

Edie and I were met at the door by seven or eight aides. They were clearly prepared to do battle with me. Edie spoke up and stressed that I had walked peacefully with her. The aides led me into the ward, down the hall and into a seclusion room. As I undressed, I noticed that of one of the aides, who I had known before and had no problems with, was trembling.

"Don't worry, Sherry, I'm not going to give you any trouble," I said.

Sherry looked surprised and responded, "I hope not, Karen."

I was Karen again. I had been Skippy from the moment I had left 1A over a year earlier. All throughout my time on Baird 6 and during the nine months on Weeks 3, I was called Skippy by staff and patients. But when I walked into the locked ward in July, 1972, I was once again Karen.

I wasn't forced to sleep on a bare floor and I wasn't restrained in wristlets. I slept in a bed and in the morning, I was allowed out of the locked room for a shower and to get dressed. I recognized many of the aides and patients from my time on 1A, but I also noticed new faces.

Dr. Karl Trieal, the Russian doctor who ran the 1A ward when I was there before, tried to talk with me, but I refused to speak with him. The records show that during the brutal months in seclusion on 1A, Trieal may have been the doctor of record, but that Havas was clearly in charge of my treatment. I had nothing but contempt for Trieal and he knew it.

One of the new faces on 2A was an aide named Debby. She approached me the first day and tried to engage me in conversation, but I wasn't interested in talking to anyone.

Debby later described the expression in my eyes as, "Like mirrored sunglasses. You can look out but nobody can see in."

Over the next several weeks, Debby continued to try to make friends with me.

I caused no problems on the ward and it was apparent, even to these aides who had participated in the brutal seclusion room months,

that my time in Baird 6 had helped me. I was allowed to have ground privileges as long as an aide was with me. On August 8, 1972, there is nothing in my records to show what if anything had happened to cause me to run.

An aide named Sherry took me and another patient named Jane out of the ward and onto the hospital grounds. The record notes that we were on our way to the hospital canteen. I knew when I exited 2A that I was going to run and I lagged behind Sherry and told Jane to catch up to Sherry because I was running. Jane asked me if she could come with me and I told her it was up to her what she did. I had always made my escapes alone and I wasn't comfortable with someone else coming along, but I agreed. Sherry, a young, new aide was walking quite a distance in front of us, and not paying close attention to what we were doing and when I saw the opportunity, I took it.

Jane and I ran across the grounds and headed for the street. Initially Sherry thought Jane and I were playing a joke on her but she quickly realized that we were not. Jane and I reached the railroad tracks, climbed up the hill and made our way easily to the Interstate. Within moments, we got a ride and were gone.

An elderly couple gave us a ride into Montpelier, where they stopped at a store. Jane went into the store and bought two sodas and a pack of cigarettes. I remained in the car. We were soon on the Interstate again when Jane and I asked the couple to let us out of the car. I'm not sure how many miles away from VSH we were by the time we left the first vehicle. We stood hitchhiking for only moments before a young man in a fast car stopped to give us a ride.

It didn't take long before I realized that Jane and the young man knew each other. I sat in the back seat and she slid very close to the young man in the front seat as we sped along the Interstate. I became increasingly uneasy and finally I asked them to stop and let me out of the car. The young man pulled to the side of the road and I got out of the car. As I watched the car disappear up the Interstate, I suddenly felt overwhelmed by despair. I stood by the side of the Interstate for several minutes staring as the car sped down the Interstate. I was still carrying the glass soda bottle in my hand, and I stepped over the guardrail and made my way down the steep embankment. At the bottom of the embankment I found a small cluster of cedar tress where I laid down. I cut my wrist, closed my eyes and waited to die.

When I first heard the men's voices I thought I was dreaming or hallucinating. I have no idea how much time had passed.

"She's over here!"

I opened my eyes to see three men standing over me. They reassured me that they would not hurt me and said that everything would be okay. Two of the men picked me up, carried me up the steep embankment and placed me in the backseat of their car. One man stayed in the back with me while one drove the car and the third man looked back at me from the front passenger seat. The men repeatedly told me not to be afraid. I've always remembered what they said but I have never been able to recall their faces.

The record shows that I was brought to the New London, New Hampshire hospital by, "A man who refused to give his name and refused to give any other information except that he found her near the Exit 13 on the Interstate."

The record goes on to say that the man left the hospital and that New Hampshire State Police were notified and went to Exit 13 to check to see if I might have been in a car accident. I don't remember being brought into the hospital by the man. My memory begins again when I was in surgery.

At first I felt confused and then wary of the doctors. I refused to answer their questions until I was taken to a hospital room where I told them my name and where I had escaped from. The record shows that Dr. Karl Trieal informed the New Hampshire hospital that I was a "paranoid schizophrenic." Nothing in any of my medical records supports Trieal's diagnosis.

I have no doubt that Trieal told the New Hampshire hospital that I was a paranoid schizophrenic for a reason. The last thing VSH or Trieal wanted was for anyone, especially an out of state hospital staff and the State police, to believe me if I told them about VSH conditions. The diagnosis of paranoid schizophrenia would have insured that nothing I said would be given any merit,

I was taken to the Vermont state line by two New Hampshire State Troopers, who treated me very well. Two Vermont State troopers transported me back to VSH where I was taken back to 2A. I was not placed in seclusion.

A few days later, I asked an aide where Jane was and she said that, "Jane was probably back in Massachusetts."

This statement meant little to me in 1972 but in the 2000's it meant a great deal, given the fact that VSH-UVM conducted research with Boston Psychopathic Hospital and placed staff at VSH.

When I was first placed back on the locked ward 2A, I asked an aide where another patient I had known before was. Her name was Janie. She was about my age, blond and in horrible condition. Her coordination was severely impaired and she could barely walk. She had terrible seizures.

I was told that, "Janie died. She is a good example of what happens when you take too much LSD."

When I discovered the evidence of experimental LSD use at VSH and UVM, I wondered if Janie had been a victim of the experiments. I would later find shocking evidence that Janie may not have been the only death at VSH caused by the covert experiments.

After learning about the CIA experiments, I took a close look at this escape, the circumstances of which had always bothered me. Kathy and I talked about it many times over the years before I obtained my records. I always insisted that there was simply no way that the three men could have seen me at the bottom of the steep embankment. I knew they couldn't have seen me from the Interstate. How did they know I was there?

During the lawsuit, I went with Alan to New Hampshire to see Dr. Tom Fox and we drove past Exit 13. It was clear that it would have been impossible for those three men to see me at the bottom of the embankment. Alan agreed that it would have been impossible.

I thought about Jane going into the store while I remained in the elderly couple's car. Did she phone the young man she so clearly knew who picked us up? This was the only time I ever escaped with someone else. I always escaped alone. I realized that the three men had to have been following me. They knew I went down the embankment because they had been watching me during the escape. The man's refusal to give his name at the New Hampshire hospital is also key. There were three men in the car that day, yet only one went into the hospital.

I concluded that the three men were part of the continuing experiment as was Jane. Although I will never be completely certain, I learned about an interesting tactic used by CIA in their LSD experiments known as the "stable mate project."

CIA placed a non-mentally ill employee on a hospital ward to befriend a specific research subject. The employee was from outside the hospital and the same age as the intended subject.

The stablemate or the "running mate" is based on the concept of two horses from the same stable entered in a race.

According to the book, *The Use of LSD in Psychotherapy*, by Harold Abramson, a well known CIA researcher and research partner of Robert Hyde, "The horse, by having in the race a familiar partner to whom he is conditioned, is motivated to overcome the stresses of the strange competition because of adaption to a familiar and safe object."

Abramson goes on to say, "Earlier experiences led us to hope that under the action of LSD this process of identification with a stablemate might be potentiated."

My suspicions about having been given LSD in VSH while on 1A and in the 1965 Mary Fletcher hospitalization were supported by Dr. Tom Fox and by Kathy. Both believed that I had been given the hallucinogen, based on their experiences with others who had taken the drug. I would also have an experience in 1987 that would suggest that the chances of prior LSD use were high. I never willingly or wittingly took any drugs except those prescribed by a doctor.

I believe that my escapes were not only part of the experiment but that they involved the use of a triggered response mechanism set up in me by hypnosis and implants. CIA declassified documents show that CIA was very invested in controlling a subject's behavior. Numerous books on the CIA research and declassified CIA documents detail the use of hypnosis to achieve this control. The subject would not know or have any awareness that his or her actions were triggered by pre-programmed commands. I may never know for sure that these tactics were used on me, but my records and the memories I have of the escapes suggests that they were.

The new VSH aide, Debby, called the ward one day in August, 1972 and had an aide ask me if I wanted to go out on a pass with her and go swimming. I was surprised but very happy to go. Debby came to VSH and took me with her back to Moscow, Vermont, a small town near Stowe.

I remember walking along the quiet road with Debby on that summer afternoon. Debby bought us sodas in the small store in Moscow and she took me to a pond behind a house in the town. I felt free for the first time in almost three years. I almost felt normal. Debby was fun to be with and we laughed and swam in the pond.

Debby brought me to meet the people she lived with, Henry and Joyce. They welcomed me into their home and invited me to have dinner with them. I hadn't had a home cooked meal in a long time and Joyce was an excellent cook. I ate heartily.

We sat in the living room after dinner, talking and watching television. I remember sitting on the floor, resting my back on the chair Debby sat in. I hadn't spent time in a home in three years and I savored the experience. That evening, Henry drove me back to VSH and told me that I was welcome to visit anytime. It was the best day I had in a long time. Over the next few weeks, Debby took me back to Henry and Joyce's house many times and I enjoyed every minute of my time with them. I began to hope again.

4

RELEASED, NOT FREE, 1972-1981

When a person is involuntarily committed to a state mental institution, the Board of Mental Health is required to meet every six months and decide if the person can be released on conditions or continue to be confined. My records show that from October, 1970 until August, 1972, the Board met once, without my being present. Records show that in August, 1972 the Board finally allowed me to be present at the meeting.

If I was told ahead of time that I was going to meet with the Board and possibly be released, I have no memory of it. I was taken from 2A by an aide and led into a room where several doctors, including George Brooks sat at a table.

I had nothing but contempt for the doctors sitting in front of me asking me questions and it took me a few minutes to actually realize that this meeting might free me from VSH. I don't recall the questions I was asked or the answers I gave but I vividly remember watching George Brooks' reactions to my answers.

Brooks frequently glanced at the other men in the room and smiled, as if satisfied by my responses. I quickly figured out that Brooks had some type of investment in my success at this meeting. Two years of fighting these people had profoundly affected me. I hated everything they stood for. I began to give inappropriate answers to their questions.

I watched Brooks closely. He was visibly upset by my responses. At one point he physically almost flinched and lowered his head as if in disgust and disappointment. I couldn't understand why Brooks cared whether I stayed in VSH or not. I wondered why he would be so invested in my leaving. I failed the Board of Mental Health meeting.

It would take me thirty years to understand why George Brooks was so intent on my leaving VSH in 1972. Dr. Karl Trieal, who was the doctor for the locked women's ward 2A, where I was being kept, was preparing to retire. Dr. Otto Havas was going to take over the ward. Because of the arrangement made by Dr. Hans Heussy, VSH and Brooks could not allow me to be on the same ward as Havas.

Additionally, by the summer of 1972, the CIA drug and mind control programs had been canceled. It wouldn't be long before the first Senate investigation would begin and within a few years, every national news agency would report the CIA MKULTRA programs to the American public. Brooks and VSH, including Dr. Robert Hyde had a lot to concern themselves with in 1972.

I obtained documents and reliable information about several VSH staff psychiatrists, including former VSH Assistant Superintendent, H. Peter LaQueur, who held this position until Curlin replaced him in 1970. LaQueur had been an agent with the Office of Strategic Services during WWII. OSS became CIA in 1947. LaQueur was found in CIA declassified MKULTRA documents as a member of two CIA front groups. His name is listed as a member in a 1962 Society For Biological Psychiatry document and he is also listed as a member of another CIA front group called the Manfred Sakel Foundation.

John Bockoven was a former VSH staff psychiatrist and was a frequent research partner of Hyde and of CIA researcher Richard York. Bockoven was onsite at Boston Psychopathic Hospital during the MKULTRA LSD testing and is noted in VSH-UVM research project documents as having been onsite at VSH in the role of consultant to VSH-UVM research.

I filed a Vermont Records Act request with the Vermont Department of Personnel for verification of John Bockoven's employment by VSH. The request was granted and the one-page document on Bockoven was completely redacted.

I filed similar requests with the Vermont Department of Personnel seeking verification of employment of Dr. Otto Havas. No documents were found. Havas is noted in several VSH publications as an on-staff VSH psychiatrist, yet he was not found to be employed by VSH or by the State of Vermont. The Hungarian psychiatrist's employer has not been identified.

Dr. Karl Trieal, the Russian psychiatrist, began working at VSH as a staff psychiatrist in 1952, using the name Karl Trieal-Kink. He was on staff at the hospital until his retirement in 1972. No documents were located on Trieal. He was not employed by VSH or by the State of Vermont. The identity of his employer is not known.

VSH-UVM research project documents list the names of numerous, verified CIA researchers who acted in the capacity of consultants to VSH-UVM research programs. Dr. Milton Greenblatt, former Director of Research at Boston Psychopathic Hospital and a well-documented

MKULTRA researcher is noted in VSH-UVM research documents as acting is the capacity of consultant to the Vermont experiments.

Dr. Richard York worked at Boston Psychopathic Hospital during the MKULTRA years and conducted CIA research. York was a frequent research partner of Hyde's and was on staff at Butler Hospital when Hyde was Superintendent at the Rhode Island hospital conducting LSD research for CIA. York worked for John Gittinger's Psychological Assessment Associates in Washington, DC from 1962-1966 and is noted in VSH-UVM project documents as having consulted on Vermont research and as visiting the VSH site.

In addition, almost a dozen more verified CIA-employed researchers and several known CIA research sites are named in VSH-UVM documents as participants in the Vermont hospital's experiments. These researchers and sites will be more fully detailed in later chapters.

I continued to go to Henry and Joyce's home with Debby and in September after driving me back to VSH, Henry and Debby asked me if I would like to live with them. I couldn't believe what I was hearing. I was excited and happy.

The next day I found my way through the VSH administration building and walked into George Brooks' office. Brooks was standing behind his desk when I went in and he looked both surprised to see me and uneasy that I was standing only feet from him. I was confused by the fact that Brooks was afraid of me. I had no memory of ever interacting with him.

I told him about Henry and Joyce and about Debby. I pointed out that Debby worked at VSH. I said I had a chance to leave VSH and live with them. I asked Brooks to let me go.

Much to my surprise, Brooks answered, "If you don't do anything for one week, I will let you go."

I assured him that nothing would happen and as I thanked him, I couldn't help but notice that he was still standing behind his desk as I left his office. Less than two weeks after I failed a Board of Mental Health discharge meeting, George Brooks kept his word and I walked out of VSH, never to return again.

Henry and Joyce welcomed me into their home. Joyce was severely crippled by arthritis and needed help around the house. I helped her with household chores and Debby and I helped her grocery shop. Joyce required the use of a wheelchair when going out of the house and Debby pushed the wheelchair, while I pushed the grocery cart. There

were trips made to McDonald's and other outings that Joyce clearly enjoyed. Over the years to come I would learn much from Joyce about cooking and baking. I valued her as a friend for years.

Henry was Road Commissioner in Stowe and I also grew close to him. He and I rode dirt bikes together, rode snowmobiles and hiked on snowshoes through the woods. Henry put his motorboat into the Waterbury Dam on many occasions, giving Joyce, Debby and I an enjoyable summer. In the summer I helped Henry tend to his vegetable garden and Joyce and I froze many bags of those vegetables.

Henry and Joyce's home had a fully finished basement where Debby and I had rooms. I had frequent nightmares for the first few weeks I was out of VSH and after a particularly bad nightmare in which I woke up screaming, Debby brought me into her bed to sleep the rest of the night. Over the next weeks, the situation became sexual.

I wasn't gay and Debby knew this. After she insisted that we make out in the woods after we had ridden the dirt bikes deep into the woods, I was overwhelmed with shame and guilt. I jumped onto the dirt bike and intentionally crashed it. I was taken to the emergency room with a mild concussion and various bumps and bruises. The side of the motorcycle helmet I was wearing had two places where the helmet had cracked when I crashed.

My relationship with Debby became disturbing for me and she became frustrated by my lack of sexual interest in her. She often remarked that I was asexual because I never initiated contact with her or actively participated in contact. I tried to push the sexual aspect of our relationship out of my mind. Life was so much better for me living with Debby at Henry and Joyce's home. I told myself that my freedom was worth putting up with Debby's sexual advances. Most of the time I enjoyed being with her.

I left VSH with no money and only the clothes on my back. Debby used her own money to buy me clothes, winter boots and a warm jacket. She brought me to the Morrisville welfare office where I got twenty dollars a week for room and board and eight dollars a week for personal use. I grew more dependent on Debby.

It's hard to describe the effect being locked in VSH had on me. I hadn't been able to remain in my parents' home and every time I tried, I ended up back in VSH. I began to credit Debby for freeing me from VSH and the longer I remained free, the more I credited being with Debby as the reason. I carried a deep, pervasive fear of returning to VSH and that fear dictated my life for decades.

In the spring of 1973, Debby and I moved out of Henry and Joyce's home and we rented an apartment in Stowe. Debby continued to work at VSH and I tried to work at several places in Stowe as a dishwasher and chambermaid. The one job I had that I kept was at a Stowe motel where I did chambermaid work and I would have remained there except that the owner went out of business.

I had no friends, knew few people and pretty much lived in my own small world. I drove Debby's car, took care of our apartment, spent time with Henry and Joyce and considered myself fortunate to be free. VSH required that I be seen by the Lamoille County Mental Health clinic and I reluctantly complied. It was better than having to be seen by VSH doctors.

I have few memories of seeing counselors at Lamoille County Mental Health, but I did begin to regularly see a woman counselor. I was guarded, wary and unable to gain much insight into my problems. I doubt I was at all receptive to any attempts to analyze me.

Debby bought a house in Waterbury Center in 1976 and it was exciting to move into the brand new home. I took care of the household duties, played my guitar and tried to live my life. Debby, who was several inches taller than I was and outweighed me by over a hundred and fifty pounds, began to be physically abusive.

Debby threw me across the room and I crashed into the television. I have no memory of why she was so angry, but the physical abuse continued. She underwent a dramatic change in her personality. She was angry and sullen and we rarely spent time together without outbursts from her about how stupid and worthless I was. She seemed to take pleasure in ridiculing me. I began to try to distance myself from her.

I began to run cross-country in the fields near the house. One chilly fall day, after there was a small chimney fire in the house, I went out for a run. I reached the field several miles away from the house when I was suddenly bombarded by strange images that flashed in my mind. I saw railroad tracks, broken glass scattered on the ground, and images of my own bare feet. I felt frightened and confused. The images made no sense to me and I told no one about them. Years later, I realized that this was my first flashback related to my early childhood trauma.

In 1955, my father took me to a house fire in town. He held me in his arms as he stood near the railroad tracks. I had no shoes or socks on when he placed me in his car and drove to the fire. A crowd of people gathered as the house burned and when the people in the crowd were

told that a woman was trapped in the burning house, the crowd reacted in panic. The woman died in the fire.

Several of my relatives provided the information about the fire to me during the 1990's when I was in therapy with Kathy. I learned that I struggled to escape my father's arms when the crowd panicked but because I had no shoes on, he didn't let me go. I was three years old and one year earlier, at another house fire, I became hysterical when the windows of the house exploded during the fire. My father finally had to leave the scene because of my hysterical reaction. I have no memory of the first fire and only bits and pieces of memories of the fatal fire.

While living with Debby, I began to lose weight and have fevers, and I developed a painful rash on my fingers. I was referred to a doctor in Burlington who suspected that I might have an autoimmune disorder. He wanted to hospitalize me for tests in the Mary Fletcher hospital, but I couldn't bear the thought of returning to that hospital again for any reason.

Debby was having financial problems. She told me that she quit her job at VSH because they wanted her to pass out medication and she refused. She held several jobs during this time but never seemed to be able to keep them. She decided to rent the house we lived in and move to Baltimore, Maryland with her parents. She suggested to me that I would find better health care at Johns Hopkins Hospital.

Baltimore was a whole new world for me. I grew up in rural Vermont and had never been in a big city before. Debby's parents allowed us to live with them but as time progressed, tensions grew. Debby's mother couldn't understand why Debby insisted that I go to Johns Hopkins when there was a very good hospital closer to where we were living. Debby insisted, and I was seen by doctors at the famous Baltimore hospital.

I was admitted for tests and during the admission I truthfully told the doctors about my medical history and that I had been in VSH. A social worker visited me and suggested that I be seen by a consultant from the Phipps Clinic, a noted psychiatric clinic at Hopkins.

Prior to the consult, it was found that I had a "connective tissue disorder." The doctor told me that she suspected that I had lupus and she felt that the "L cell" that would confirm her diagnosis, would eventually be detected.

I was seen by a psychiatrist from the Phipps Clinic and

arrangements were made for me to go to the Clinic once I was discharged. The psychiatrist who conducted the consult interview while I was still an inpatient on the medical ward told me that there was a very long waiting list to get into the world-famous clinic, yet I was immediately accepted. I went into the Phipps Clinic several days later and filled out paperwork. A woman asked me to follow her and I was led into a room where, much to my surprise, a dozen or so men were seated in chairs.

The chairs formed a circle in the small room and I sat down in one of the chairs. I was uncomfortable at how close together the chairs were. I recall looking around the circle of men in suits and ties and my memory ends there. I have no memory of any question I was asked or my responses or how long I was in the room.

I learned during my investigation into CIA programs that Johns Hopkins was a primary CIA research site. Several of the psychiatrists at Hopkins were major figures in the covert research: MKULTRA Subproject 87 was conducted there. Johns Hopkins would have been aware of Robert Hyde's CIA experiments and very likely would have been aware of the role that VSH-UVM played in MKULTRA. Who the dozen or so men really were in that room, I don't know, but because of Hopkins' role in MKULTRA, and my memory lapse during our meeting, I have reason to suspect they may have been CIA researchers.

I had another disturbing incident several weeks after I began to see an outpatient counselor at the Phipps Clinic. We met in her office for weeks until one day she said her office was unavailable. She showed me into another office and I immediately noticed something that bothered me.

There was a large glass window with curtains drawn across it. I became suspicious and refused to remain in the office. She asked me why and I said there were people sitting behind the window watching me. She engaged me in conversation for a few minutes and then offered to show me what was behind the window.

She opened a door into a room that looked like a movie theater. Several movie theater-like chairs, in two rows, faced the one-way mirror. There were trays next to each chair.

"See, no one is here, " she told me.

I took one more look around and agreed to talk with her, but I didn't forget for one moment that it was likely that people were watching and listening. Years later I wondered why I seemed to be immediately

suspicious about the strange glass window.

My emotional condition was getting worse. I had traveled into downtown Baltimore on the city bus many times after moving to the city, but I began to have trouble making my bus connections. On one occasion I became lost in an unfamiliar section of the city. I tried to find my way back to a street I might recognize but I couldn't. Thanks to a middle-aged African American woman who helped me find my way back safely, I was able to board the right bus and make it home.

The drugs I was prescribed were causing problems both physically and emotionally. Lithium made me shake all over and Haldol caused a variety of dystonic reactions. The Haldol was finally discontinued. When I lived in the Waterbury Center house with Debby, I quit taking all the drugs I was prescribed and I did much better without them

I spent a month as an inpatient in the Phipps Clinic and I didn't receive any help at all. By the end of the month, I was eager to leave. I'd had enough of hospitals. But I continued to struggle. Tensions were high in Debby's parents' home. Debby and her mother didn't get along well and I didn't particularly like her mother.

I wanted to go back to Vermont. The outpatient counselor I was seeing suggested that I voluntarily spend some time in Spring Grove State Hospital. I cannot imagine myself agreeing to this, but apparently I did, and Debby drove me to the hospital one night in February.

I don't remember much of anything until I was on the ward. I immediately realized that I had made a mistake. The ward was coed and from what I saw, the patients were severely disturbed. I decided to let the staff think that I couldn't speak, calculating that it would give me more time to decide what to do. I palmed the drugs they gave me and flushed them down the toilet.

The next morning the patients were lined up and taken downstairs for breakfast. As we approached the dining hall I realized that there was an unlocked door. I saw a man come in the door and another leave through it. I began to hatch my escape plan.

Awoman psychiatrist came onto the ward that morning and gathered everyone for what appeared to be a group meeting. It didn't take long for me to see that she was drunk. Thankfully, she demonstrated no interest in me and I continued to prepare myself to escape. I was very aware of the fact that if I tried and failed to escape I would likely be held involuntarily, but I was willing to take that risk.

When the aide called us to line up for lunch, I prepared myself. I

followed in a line of other patients to the downstairs floor and when I reached the area where the unlocked door to the outside was, I lingered back. The aide's attention was directed toward the front of the line and I watched him closely, waiting for my opportunity. Another patient began to talk to me and I angrily whispered to him to leave me alone and go on his way. He did and I took one more glance at the aide, who wasn't looking in my direction. I bolted toward the door. It flew open and I ran out onto unfamiliar hospital grounds. I chose a direction, not sure where it would lead and ran. I was only wearing a sweater and it was very cold outside but I ran as fast as I could.

I came to a tall wire fence and hesitated for a moment before I saw an opening in the fence. It appeared to be a well-worn path leading off the hospital grounds and I slipped through the opening. I ran a few yards to find myself on the street. I kept looking behind me, but no one was chasing me. I walked into a Dunkin Donuts shop and paced around trying to decide what to do next.

I had change in my pocket and using the pay phone I called Debby. I told her that if she didn't come and get me my next call would be to my family, who would make sure I left Baltimore. I told her not to notify the hospital and that if she didn't do as I asked, she'd never see me again.

Debby picked me up at the Dunkin Donuts shop and drove me back to her parents' house. She went back to Spring Grove to pick up my jacket after I refused to walk back into the hospital for any reason. I told her I wanted to go back to Vermont. It was only a few weeks later that we left Baltimore and headed back to Vermont.

During the CIA MKULTRA experiments, Spring Grove State Hospital was a primary research site, especially for LSD testing. According to H.P. Albarelli, Catonsville, Maryland, where Spring Grove State Hospital was located and which was only a few miles from where I had been living with Debby's parents for months, was a hotbed for CIA and intelligence personnel, even in the late 1970's. Spring Grove conducted mind control experiments for CIA that according to Albarelli included successfully using LSD "in surfacing repressed material in the minds of patients, permitting transference of vital information to psychiatrists." In retrospect, escaping Spring Grove State Hospital was very likely one of the best things I did during those years.

Debby and I stayed with my parents for a couple of months before we moved back to the Waterbury Center house. My mother didn't like Debby at all and found it difficult to tolerate her, but she tried to make

the best of the situation for my sake. I still found it hard to be in my parents' house, but finally Debby and I went home.

It was a relief to be back in the house, but Debby grew even crueler toward me. She clearly resented the fact that I was not interested in her advances toward me. She tried to make me believe that there was something wrong with me because I rebuffed her. I became angrier and more depressed over the next few months, until finally I went back to Lamoille County Mental Health to see a counselor.

The counselor told me that there was a new woman psychiatrist at the clinic and suggested I talk with her. Despite my reservations about sitting in front of another psychiatrist, I agreed to talk with her.

Dr. Judy Nepvue came to Lamoille County Mental Health from her previous employment in California. She was originally from Morrisville and brought her ten children back to Vermont to live. Dr. Nepvue was soft spoken and could easily have been mistaken for any other Vermont housewife, but for me she was simply one more psychiatrist to guard myself against.

I returned to see Dr. Nepvue over the next few months and continued to see the counselor. Life in the Waterbury Center house was becoming harder for me to tolerate. Debby began spending more time away from the house and I began playing my guitar for hours at a time. I'd never given up playing the guitar and I'd actually gotten quite good. Playing seemed to take me away from the stress of my life and one day I opened the front door to find a teenage boy standing on the step.

Shawn heard me playing the guitar when he walked by the house and he mustered the nerve to ask me to teach him how to play. I agreed to help him and Shawn spent many weeks absorbing all the instruction I gave him. I enjoyed teaching him and I enjoyed having someone to talk with. Within months of beginning lessons, Shawn was able to form a teenage rock band in which he played lead guitar. I was proud of him.

I played my electric guitar on a Stowe nightclub stage one night and my performance went so well that two musicians asked me if I'd play with them in the next set. One guy played guitar and the other sang and when we took the stage together, we brought down the house playing a rocking blues number. It was a fantastic feeling.

Unknown to me at the time, a counselor from Lamoille County Mental Health was in the audience that night and reported back to Dr. Nepvue that he watched me perform. Dr. Nepvue later told me that she had already discarded the diagnosis I came to her with. She said she

knew almost immediately that I was not a "deteriorating schizophrenic." Hearing about me on the Stowe stage only helped her make the diagnosis she had already decided was accurate. Dr. Nepvue worked with an expert in multiple personality when she was in California.

A new next-door neighbor moved in during the spring of 1981. The woman had a young daughter named Becky who liked to talk with me when she and her mother walked by the house. The woman, Sharon seemed pleasant and I enjoyed listening to the little girl talk about all the things little girls her age talk about. I hadn't been around any children in years and I had always loved kids. Phil Cram and I had talked many times before his death about having children.

I was in the kitchen doing dishes when Debby came up to me, spun me around and kissed me roughly. I reacted instantaneously by violently biting her lip. The expression of both shock and pain was evident on her face. She was bleeding and I just stood there, not speaking, and stared at her. I felt nothing. Crying, Debby left the kitchen to tend to her bleeding lip. This was the last time Debby tried to interest me in her. I recognized the look in her eye after I bit her. Debby was afraid of me.

My emotional condition worsened and I became suicidal. I had prolonged periods of almost hysterical sobbing, and even more disturbing for me was the fact that I couldn't understand where the tears, or the pain that produced the tears, was coming from. I called the counselor at the clinic and told him that things were getting out of hand. He told me to get to the emergency room.

I called Debby at work and told her what was happening. She didn't want to hear and refused to drive me to the hospital. I hung up the phone as the panic overwhelmed me even more. There was a knock at the door and I found my next-door neighbor, Sharon. She saw I was in bad shape and came into the living room, where I began to tell her that I didn't know what was wrong with me, but that whatever it was, it was getting worse.

Sharon told me that she would drive me to the hospital and I agreed to let her. On the way, Sharon revealed to me that she had been suspicious of Debby's behavior every since she moved next door. She told me that she was a Vermont State Police officer and that she had concerns that Debby was abusing me. I was surprised to learn that anyone had been paying attention to me or to Debby, but I was relieved to know that a Vermont State Trooper lived next door.

Dr. Nepvue admitted me to the general hospital. Copley Hospital was a small hospital and I would be among the general patient population. Dr. Nepvue walked onto ward with me and I was frightened to be admitted to yet another hospital. Dr. Nepvue assured me that everything would be okay and that I had nothing to fear in this hospital.

The first days in Copley are a blur. I seemed to be slipping in and out of some strange, unfamiliar world where at times I couldn't speak or even move. Other times I tried to fight off the barrage of voices screaming in my head, telling me not to eat and not to sleep. I thought I was going crazy.

One of the nurses introduced herself to me as Cheryl and asked me if I remembered her. I didn't. Cheryl told me that she and I had been friends when we were both eighteen years old. She had worked as a nurses' aide at VSH on Weeks 3. As hard as I tried, I never recovered memories of Cheryl.

Cheryl spoke to Dr. Nepvue and told her that she had heard that really bad things had happened to me in VSH. This led Dr. Nepvue to ask me to sign a release so that she could obtain copies of my medical records. I refused, telling her that I was sure that if she read about me in the VSH records, she would find out that I was a monster and she wouldn't want anything to do with me. She tried to tell me that would not be the case, but I wouldn't allow her to obtain the VSH records.

I had begun to hope that Dr. Nepvue was a psychiatrist who might actually help me and not make me regret I'd ever met her. I had seen her in an outpatient setting for months and her approach was something I had never experienced before. The woman was actually trying to help me learn what was wrong.

Debby strode into my hospital room and demanded that I pack my things and leave with her. I began to cry. Debby continued to rant and rave, which brought the head nurse into my room. She told Debby that Dr. Nepvue felt I needed to be in the hospital, which only made Debby angrier. She was rushing around the room trying to stuff my clothes into my suitcase when Dr. Nepvue came in.

Dr. Nepvue asked Debby to leave my room so that they could talk privately. Later, I learned that Debby had been told that she could not take me out of the hospital against doctor's orders and no such scenes occurred again. My condition continued to spiral out of control and my fears only grew as I watched myself fall apart.

I regressed into childlike states where I could barely take care of my

daily needs. I then became suspicious and fearful and at other times I fell into almost catatonic states where I couldn't wake myself out of the strange captivity, and I couldn't communicate.

One of these episodes involved descending into a strange twilight where I felt trapped in a frightening nether world. I saw a desert-like landscape filled with structures I had never seen anywhere before. They appeared to be shaped in designs so foreign to me that I was later unable to even come close to describing them. I seemed to be alone in the desert but I was fearful that I would encounter something very terrible there. I don't know how long I was in this strange place and I have no explanation for it.

One weekend the nurses brought a man dressed in a suit and tie into the day room to talk with me. He introduced himself to the weekend nursing staff and to me as a member of the hospital administration. I had been experiencing an unusual preoccupation with God and the Devil and I was very disturbed by the thoughts and feelings that I was having. Dr. Nepvue was out of town for the weekend and I agreed to talk to the man.

He asked me what was troubling me and I tried to explain. He sat quietly listening and then began to talk to me about other dimensions. He described how a person living in a one-dimensional world would never be able to comprehend what it was like to live in a three-dimensional world. He asked me if I understood the point he was trying to make and I said that yes, I understood. I don't remember if we talked about anything else and I don't remember him leaving.

When I told Dr. Nepvue about the rather strange conversation I'd had with the man from the hospital administration, she seemed surprised. She went to the nurses' station and learned that the man who claimed to be from the hospital administration had actually visited me and when she sat back down to talk with me, she seemed even more perplexed. Whoever the man was, he was not a member of the hospital administration and to my knowledge his actual identity was never discovered.

In 1981, Dr. Nepvue scheduled me for a biofeedback session at Lamoille County Mental Health Clinic. She wanted to try to help me stop smoking. I was hooked up to a machine with various leads attached to my body. The man running the biofeedback machine asked me to shut off the persistent beeping the machine made in response to tension in my body. He explained to me that shutting off the beeping was a matter of concentrating and that he couldn't tell me how to do it.

Within moments, I shut off the beeping by merely concentrating. The man was obviously surprised and excited and I was a little unnerved by the fact that he ran out into the hallway of the clinic and asked the people there to be quiet.

He asked me to shut off the beeping again and I did so within moments. When Dr. Nepvue talked to me about the report from the biofeedback session, she told me that I had an unusual ability to raise and lower my body temperature, and raise and lower my heart rate and blood pressure, merely by concentrating and that I clearly had an ability to go in and out of trance. She called it "auto-hypnosis" and asked me if I had ever been hypnotized. I had no memory of ever being hypnotized.

In his book, *The C.I.A. Doctors: Human Right Violations by American Psychiatrists*, Dr. Colin Ross quotes from an MKULTRA Subproject 49 document that discuses the CIA's interest in auto-hypnosis:

"In order to investigate the possibility of hypnotic induction of non-willing subjects… an investigation should be made into non-verbal induction techniques…can auto-hypnosis be taught so as to be as effective as hetero-hypnosis in the canceling out of pain or other stress conditions; if this can be done a person could create his own world and be happy in it even though he were actually confined in a very small place which was extremely filthy."

Was MKULTRA Subproject 49, conducted by Alden Sears at the University of Denver, linked to the experiment I was subjected to at VSH, where I was held in seclusion and restraint for nearly seven months? Unfortunately, because of the many missing medical records, and because state and federal agencies and officials who know the answers refuse either to provide me the information or acknowledge the CIA Vermont experiments, I will never know.

Shawn, the teenage boy I taught how to play the guitar brought my acoustic guitar to the hospital. I woke up one day to find it in my room. I tried to play it but I couldn't seem to. Later during the hospital stay I was able to play again.

I was accustomed to periods of time when I couldn't do things I usually did, like play the guitar or draw. It was simply the way my life had always been. I was also familiar with being accused of doing things that I swore I did not do. Since childhood, I had felt that I was different somehow and I believed that difference was a bad thing that I tried to hide from people.

When I was in early elementary school and on summer vacation, I asked my cousins to go to my house to play. It took some effort to convince my aunt that day for whatever reasons. While my cousins finished their chores, I went back home where my mother confronted me about doing something that I had no memory of doing.

When my cousins finally came to the door, I greeted them with, "I've found something better to do."

They went back home, confused and angry I'm sure. I knew when my mother accused me of doing something that I had no memory of, that I needed to cover. As a young child I must have figured out that it was easier to let people think whatever they wanted to about me as long as they never were allowed to suspect that I was somehow different. I had no idea what the difference was, but whatever it was, I protected myself from everyone.

Dr. Nepvue decided to schedule an EEG in Burlington and she phoned Debby and asked her to drive me to the appointment. The EEG required that I remain awake the night before and as Debby and I drove to Burlington, all I wanted was to sleep. Debby promised that we would stop and get something to eat after the EEG and then she'd take me back to Copley.

I walked into the office for the EEG and I was almost immediately swept into a deeply disturbing panic. I struggled not to let anyone see how upset I was and as each moment passed, I grew more and more frightened. I knew that these people were preparing to do something dreadful to me and I felt helpless to leave or to refuse to allow them to harm me.

By the time I was led downstairs into the basement-level EEG lab, my mind was screaming at me to run. The feelings of impending doom and hopelessness overwhelmed me as I waited to be tortured. The technician who was going to conduct the EEG began to prepare me for the EEG lead wires to be attached to my head, when she started a conversation with me. Much to my shock, the moment I began to talk with her, all of the panic and feelings of impending doom disappeared. I felt very confused, but very thankful that nothing terrible happened.

After reading my medical records and learning about the Metrazol activation in 1971, I'm convinced that I had the panic reaction about the 1981 EEG because of the excruciating physical and emotional effect of Metrazol. Although I have never recovered any memory of the Metrazol activation, the information I have read about its effects tells me why I reacted the way I did in 1981 and according to Baird 6

records, the way I also reacted to an EEG while in Baird 6.

Debby drove me back to Copley after a meal and after initially trying to bring me back to the Waterbury Center house for a few hours. I was so exhausted that all I wanted was to go back to the hospital and sleep. I saw the anger in her face when she dropped me off in front of the hospital and I just didn't care.

Dr. Nepvue told me that she was going to start me on a drug called Mysoline. I learned after I obtained my medical records that I had been prescribed Mysoline in VSH. The drug hit me hard. My entire body felt numb. My brain didn't seem to want to work. I felt very detached. Slowly, I adapted to the drug.

Dr. Nepvue told me that the first time she met me she knew almost immediately that I was not a deteriorating schizophrenic. She told me that I was a multiple personality. The diagnosis meant little to me. She asked me questions about other names I may have used before but I had no memory of other names.

I learned years later in therapy that my mother remembered me referring to myself by other names and I too would remember some of those names. But in 1981, I had no such information available to me. I was relieved that whatever was wrong with me had a name and was something that was recognized and, from what Dr. Nepvue said, it was treatable. Maybe I wasn't hopeless after all.

I'd grown close to the nursing staff at Copley. They weren't psychiatric nurses but their kindness and compassion made a difference for me. It had been a very long time since people around me encouraged me and supported me. I began to let myself believe that I might actually have a life.

In the early summer of 1981, I was discharged and went back to the Waterbury Center house with Debby. I didn't think that I had any other choice. I knew from previous experiences that I couldn't live at my parents' home. Every time I tried, I ended up back in VSH. I had no place else to go and I didn't believe that I could make it out there in the world on my own. I told myself that Debby had saved my life by taking me out of VSH and I had stayed out because of her. I tried to make the best of things.

One afternoon Debby and I came home to find a young man sitting on the hood of his car parked in the driveway. It was Phil Fass. When I was living in Baltimore, my mother called to tell me that Phil had been looking for me. I got out of the car and hugged him.

Phil and I sat on the back steps and talked for a long time. It was so good to see him again. He wanted me to go with him and he told me that all I had to do was get in the car and we could have a life together. I remember feeling conflicted. I wanted to go with him and I was afraid to go with him. I told him I needed to think about it and we agreed that he would come back the next day. I still had feelings for Phil and it was clear that he still had feelings for me.

The next day I waited for Phil to come. I was going to leave with him, and as I paced the floor waiting, Debby confronted me. She had been eavesdropping on Phil and my conversation and she was angry.

"Either you tell him to get back into his car and never come back again or I will tell him that you are gay. I'll have him arrested if he comes back here."

I was filled with fear and with shame. I knew I wasn't gay and Debby knew I wasn't gay, but we had engaged in sexual activities. I could not allow her to tell Phil. When Phil came to the door, Debby was standing behind me. I told him that I wasn't going with him and that if he didn't leave, never to come back, he would be arrested.

Phil looked devastated. I watched him drive away and I hated myself for not having the courage to be sitting next to him in the car. I never saw Phil again. I realized how far I would go to remain free, yet deep down, I knew I was not free. Living with Debby had become another form of captivity and I couldn't seem to find the strength to just walk away.

I was admitted to Copley Hospital shortly after the incident with Phil. I was seriously depressed and Dr. Nepvue continued to try to get me to open up to her about my relationship with Debby, but the shame I felt was too great. I spent several weeks in the hospital and then one evening Dr. Nepvue told me that she would discharge me the next day.

I phoned Debby and told her I was coming home and would she come and pick me up.

"Find another way home. You left me alone. Do you know how many bills I have and with you in the hospital all the time I have to do the housework on top of everything else. Find your own ride."

My reaction was immediate and powerful, although I said nothing in reply to Debby. I hung up the phone furious at Debby and frightened by the prospect of being on my own. The nurses were aware that something was wrong but I refused to talk to them about it. How could I tell them about all the awful things I had been willing to do just to

remain free? I was filled with self-hatred and disgust. I didn't want them to feel those things about me.

My mind raced as I tried to figure out what to do and where I would go. I didn't have much money and I didn't have a car. During the middle of that night, I fell into a suicidal despair. I couldn't see a way out.

Anna, one of the nurses I had grown close to, tried to talk with me. She kept reassuring me that whatever I said to her would not change how she felt about me and it wouldn't change how the rest of the staff felt either. Finally, I took the risk and told her everything about Debby and me, about all I was willing to do to stay out of VSH and how I just wanted a normal life for myself.

The next morning, Dr. Nepvue and I talked about my remaining in the hospital until a place for me to live could be found. One by one, the Copley nurses told me that they were relieved that I had finally been able to trust them enough to tell them the truth. They had suspected all along that Debby was abusive and that the relationship was sexual. I couldn't believe that they still supported me, but it was very clear that they did.

Anna and her husband, Harold, owned a huge house in Johnson and rented rooms to Johnson college students. The college was within walking distance of their home. Anna offered to have me rent a room from them and they would include me in their meals and in their lives. I was excited about the idea, but Dr. Nepvue had reservations about allowing me to leave with a staff member. Anna and Harold met with Dr. Nepvue and the decision was made that I would go with Anna and Harold to Johnson. Dr. Nepvue told me that I had to either get a job or go to college. I jumped at the chance to go to college.

I struggled with how to tell Debby that I wasn't coming back. One of the nurses told me that her daughter knew me. Deanna had been a friend of Debby's and I had known her for years. She worked at VSH and frequently spent the night at the Waterbury Center house rather than make the long drive to her own home. Deanna came to Copley to talk with me.

"Debby saved my life when she took me out of VSH," I told Deanna. "It's because of her that I've stayed out of that place."

"You don't have to pay with your life, Karen," Deanna replied.

Deanna's words immediately settled my conflicts about leaving Debby. She agreed to be at the Waterbury Center house when Harold and I went to pick up my things. That way Debby couldn't try to bully

me into staying with her. Harold and I loaded my belongings into his truck and we drove away. I never returned to the Waterbury Center house again.

Decades later, I began to question many things about Debby. I thought about how quickly she singled me out in VSH and how George Brooks never hesitated to discharge me to live with Debby. I thought about how adamant Debby was that I be seen at Johns Hopkins and how her mother couldn't understand why Debby insisted on taking me downtown to Hopkins when Saint Agnes Hospital was only moments away from where we lived in Baltimore. I also wondered about Debby seeming to regularly come into large quantities of money. She tried in vain to have me return to the Waterbury Center house. I wondered if it was possible that VSH paid her to live with me. I doubt I will ever be able to answer these questions, but after finding the Vermont CIA experiments and not being able to fully know what happened to me during those experiments, questions remain.

I felt liberated living in Johnson and for the first time in years, I wasn't dependent on Debby or subject to her whims and abuse. Copley nurses gave me clothes to wear and visited me at Anna's home. I studied for the upcoming entrance into Johnson College, where I planned to take two courses. I helped with chores around the sixteen-room house and began to try to get to know a couple of the college students who also rented rooms from Anna and Harold.

One weekend day I walked down into Johnson village where I ran into Sharon and her daughter Becky. Sharon asked me to have coffee with her and we began to talk. I told her about leaving the Waterbury Center house and how I planned to attend Johnson College. Sharon was happy for me. She told me about her suspicions about Debby and about her concerns that I was being abused. I thanked her for helping me. It was good to sit in a diner and share a cup of coffee with a friend without worrying how Debby would feel about it.

It hadn't occurred to me before that anyone saw that Debby was cruel and overbearing. After talking with Sharon, I began to think about how locked in my own world I had been. My world was severely limited to my own subjective judgments about other people and the resulting determinations I made were shaped by my fears of returning to VSH and by Debby's almost constant proclamations about how stupid and worthless I was. Debby frequently reminded me over the years I was with her that VSH was still there. I understood the underlying threat in her words and she knew I did.

There were a few incidents when I was with Debby when she put my life in danger. I can't explain how I managed to push the incidents out of my mind and continue to stay with her.

Debby and I canoed across the Waterbury Dam one afternoon and it was a good distance from one shore to the next. On the way back across the Dam I decided to try to swim the distance. There was a canoe beside me and I felt safe enough to try.

In the middle of the Dam, Debby shouted at me that I was on my own and I watched in disbelief as she quickly paddled away, leaving me to swim without the safety of a boat nearby. I struggled not to panic in the deep water and kept swimming. When I finally reached the shore, I was completely exhausted. Several people who had been swimming and witnessed Debby leaving me in the middle of the Dam swam out to help me back to the shore.

The people on the shore were outraged and a few of them openly and angrily confronted Debby. One woman told me that they were afraid I was going to drown. I don't remember leaving the lake that day and I don't remember driving back home after this incident.

Another incident involved riding in a Jeep Debby borrowed. She drove to the dirt roads around the Waterbury Dam and began driving fast up and over steep hills. Several times I almost lost my grip and the faster and more wildly she drove, the closer I came to being thrown from the Jeep. I asked her to stop but she ignored me. I somehow managed to stay seated in the topless Jeep and I had a sickening feeling that she was trying to get me thrown from the Jeep. When she dropped me off at the house and drove away I felt very alone.

Debby liked to ridicule me, especially when I said that I was good at something. I often talked about the fact that I could ride horses and she loved to taunt me with remarks about how I made it all up. When we lived in the Stowe apartment, a neighborhood girl was taking care of a friend's horse and invited Debby and I to go along with her.

The horse wore a halter and on that chilly autumn day, Debby began taunting me to go ahead and prove that I really could ride a horse. She ridiculed me to the point where I decided to prove to her that I could ride a horse and ride it well. The young girl hitched a rope to the halter and I swung onto the horse's back.

The horse bolted and bucked and whirled in an effort to throw me from its back. I dug my legs into the body of the horse and as the horse raced wildly, I looked down at the ground. The dirt was solidly frozen in

ruts and craters. I knew that if I were thrown, I would be seriously injured.

The horse finally gave up and began to walk under my control back to the fence where Debby and the girl stood. I was furious to learn that the horse hadn't been ridden by anyone for a long time and that Debby had set the whole thing up beforehand with the girl. I knew deep inside myself that Debby thought I would be thrown and very likely hoped that I would be thrown. After this incident, she never taunted me again about whether or not I could really ride a horse. The insides of my legs were black and blue for days, bruised from clutching the sides of the horse to hang on.

Many years later, in my therapy with Kathy, I learned that Debby had very likely targeted me while I was on 1A and that her good-natured generosity was merely a façade. Kathy helped me understand that Debby used me for her own needs and used my fear of returning to VSH to control me. Kathy also helped me understand that my illness as a multiple personality would have limited the choices I was able to envision for myself.

I later learned that Debby had been repeatedly fired from several area stores where she worked for stealing. There were also allegations that she was selling drugs. The information came as a shock to me and I never found out for sure if the allegations were true. The allegations did, however seem to explain why Debby suddenly had money she hadn't had only days before. She would come home with a three hundred dollar bicycle or an expensive camera and she never explained where the money came from.

When Debby realized that I wasn't going to go back to the Waterbury Center house, she repeatedly called my parents and tried to get them to talk me into returning. She tried to convince me to come back during a phone call I made to her. I called to ask her to allow my parents to drive to the house and take my dog back to Brandon with them. Debby pleaded with me to come back and offered me a room in her house where she said I could do as I pleased. I refused her offers.

I will never know Debby's true motive in taking me out of VSH and despite everything that happened while I was with her, I still believe that she saved my life when she took me out of VSH. After years of therapy I no longer blame myself for being willing to endure Debby's demands. I'm just thankful that I was able to find the courage to leave.

Dr. Nepvue and the Copley nurses supported me, encouraged me and helped me eventually find the courage to leave the Waterbury

Center situation and I will always remember their kindness, their caring and their belief in me at a time when I had no belief in myself.

I began taking classes at Johnson State College in August, 1981 and the first day I was nervous and excited to begin a new chapter in my life. The campus was only a few minutes walk across a field from Anna and Harold's house and as I walked across the beautiful campus, I began to entertain dreams for myself of a college degree.

Studying was difficult for me and sitting in a classroom for the first time since I was thirteen years old was even more challenging, but I kept working at my class assignments. Each day I went to class and turned in the homework assignments and each day Anna and Harold were there to support me when I returned home. The Copley nurses always showed an interest in my classes when I went to the hospital with Anna. They cheered me on and it felt good.

I woke up one night in Anna's home to see my grandmother standing at the foot of my bed. I was confused. My grandmother lived in Brandon. What was she doing standing in my room in Johnson in the middle of the night?

"Gram, what are you doing here?" I asked her as I sat up in bed.

"Everything is going to be okay," she replied.

"Gram, what are you doing here?" I felt even more confused.

My grandmother vanished before my eyes. Stunned, I looked at the clock on the table next to my bed. It was 2:45 A.M.

The next morning I checked the newspapers to see if my grandmother had died, but I couldn't find any news. I told Dr. Nepvue about my experience and she suggested that I phone my parents. I hadn't much contact with my parents during this time but I finally decided to call.

My cousin answered the phone and put my mother on to talk to me. I told her what happened and told her the time on the clock when Gram vanished. My mother began to cry. My grandmother died the night I had the strange visit from her. She died at 2:45 A.M.

After my grandfather died, my grandmother shared with me that she had been visited by him the day after he died.

He told her, "Everything is going to be okay."

I have no explanation for what happened that night in Johnson except that my grandmother wanted to make sure that she visited me

on her way to somewhere better.

By October, I began to slip into a deep depression and although I tried to fight my way out of it, the depression only seemed to deepen. I tried to hide the depression from everyone and the worse it got, the less I understood what was happening. I began to wonder if Debby had been right. Maybe it really didn't matter where I was or what I did. Maybe the problem was me.

I felt guilty that I was depressed. Anna and Harold had opened their home to me. I was attending college and I was freed of Debby, but there I was, descending into depression again. I couldn't understand what was wrong with me.

I sat on the grass that October day and watched the Johnson College students walk across the campus. The sky was a brilliant blue and the sun shone brightly. I began to feel strangely detached and I became aware of how separated I suddenly felt from everyone and everything. I stared at the college students and realized that no matter what I did, I would never fit in.

Anna tried to talk with me but I brushed off her concerns. I was numb. There was simply no way I could tell Anna that all that she had done for me had been wasted. I knew what I was going to do and once I decided to commit suicide, the eerie relief that settled over me convinced me that I had made the right decision.

That evening I walked across the campus, unsure of the reason I was there. I passed by the auditorium and heard the sound of music coming from inside. I quietly slipped into the darkened auditorium to find a young man on the stage playing beautiful music on the piano.

The young man finished playing and called out, "Who is there?"

"Just an anonymous music lover," I replied.

He wasn't able to see me sitting in the darkened auditorium and I sat for a few minutes longer to listen to his music. I left the building and began walking aimlessly.

I walked down into Johnson village where I bought four bottles of sleeping pills and a six-pack of beer. I purchased the pills in two different stores so as not to raise any questions about the amount of pills I bought. I stood on Route 15 and tried to decide which direction to go when a car offered me a ride to Morrisville.

Once in Morrisville, I was still not sure where to go to take the pills. I opened one bottle and took the contents, washing the pills down with

beer. I walked in the darkness along the neighborhood streets and stared at each one of the houses as I passed by. I thought about the families inside and wondered what kind of life I might have had if only things had been different. When a dog began barking I told myself that only the dog knew I was there.

I realized quite suddenly as I approached the cemetery that this was the perfect place to take the pills. I climbed up a steep hill and entered the graveyard. There was a full moon and as I searched for the right spot to die, the light of the moon illuminated the gravestones and the cemetery.

I chose a spot toward the backside of the cemetery, sat down and leaned back against a headstone. I swallowed the other bottles of pills, throwing each bottle into the bushes. I didn't want to take the chance that someone might find me and know by the pill bottles what I had taken. I sat back and waited to die. There was no pain, and no second thoughts. I began to feel sleepy and I called out to Phil to let him know that I would be with him soon.

I woke up. My body felt numb and I couldn't believe that I was still alive. I tried to get up, but my legs didn't work right. I tried again and managed to get to my feet. I looked around trying to decide what to do next when suddenly I felt overcome by sheer terror. I looked around again, certain that there was someone or something terrible lurking in the moonlit cemetery. I felt I had to get out of there as quickly as I could because I could not let whatever the frightening presence was catch me.

I tried to run but my legs wouldn't obey and when I reached the steep hill I had climbed to enter the cemetery, I was afraid that my legs would buckle beneath me as I stumbled down the hill. I made it out of the cemetery and found myself standing in the middle of the road. I couldn't raise my head up. I don't know how long I stood in the middle of the road.

The voices of the men seemed unreal and I had difficulty answering their questions. The two police officers placed me in their cruiser and drove me to the emergency room where the nursing staff immediately recognized me. I remember being asked if I took any pills and then I recall Anna standing in front of me. My vision was blurry and I had a hard time seeing her.

My next memory is sitting on an exam table with a nurse standing in front of me. Without warning, I began to vomit and began choking. I clutched the arm of the nurse and my memory ends there. My

memories after this are vague and scattered.

I learned later that Cheryl, my friend who had known me in VSH, offered to work an extra shift to sit with me on the ward. I was taken to intensive care. The doctors believed that I had been in the cemetery for hours and because of the below freezing temperatures, hypothermia had probably saved my life. Anna and Harold had been looking for me that night, after discovering I was not in my room.

I felt trapped between two worlds. I wasn't alive and I wasn't dead. I was angry that my suicide attempt failed. I tried to get out of bed to get dressed, but my body wouldn't obey. I raged at people I couldn't see who taunted me to get up and leave the hospital, when suddenly I realized that I could hear two men talking about me. I pulled back the curtain next to my bed to see two men in hospital beds. I thought it was strange that one of the men had a saxophone in the hospital bed with him.

"You need to stop causing all this fuss and stop fighting or they will send you back to VSH," one of the men said to me while the other played the saxophone.

The man who spoke to me smiled. I wondered how he knew I had been in VSH but I decided to take his advice. I resigned myself to the fact that I had failed to die.

I'm not sure how much time passed when Dr. Nepvue came in ICU and sat on the edge of my bed.

She hugged me and said, "We almost lost you."

I told her that I was sorry. She let me know that the nurses had gone together to ask the hospital administrator not to send me back to VSH. They assured him that they could keep me safe and offered to stay with me 24 hours a day until I was okay. I was moved by the news.

I told Dr. Nepvue that the two men in ICU had helped me quiet down. Dr. Nepvue looked confused by my statement.

"What two men are you talking about?"

"The two men in those beds," I replied and pulled back the curtain between us.

I was shocked. My bed was only inches from the wall and there were no beds on that side of the room. Dr. Nepvue told me that I was the only patient in ICU. I have no explanation for this incident except to say that I am thankful for the advice I was given that night in ICU by the two men who apparently had a message for me.

Anna visited me and I apologized to her. I told her that nothing she had done factored into my suicide attempt. I made sure that she understood how much I appreciated all that she and Harold had done for me. I couldn't really explain to Anna why I did it, except to say that once the strange numbness settled over me and the pain left, I wanted to die. The last thing in the world I was able to do was tell anyone what was happening to me.

I spent several days in ICU and slowly the nurses began to bring me out onto the general ward. The transition from the quiet of ICU to the noises of the ward affected me and I felt overwhelmed and fragile for the first few days.

When I was stronger, the nurses asked me to meet with them. These women and I had become close over the time that I had been a patient in the small Morrisville hospital and they were angry that I attempted suicide. I couldn't really explain why I did it and my inability to answer that question frustrated the nurses.

"If you wanted to die, why didn't you just go and buy a gun?"

The words hit me hard and I felt myself instantly go cold inside. I had no feeling for the nurses and no emotions about myself or about them. I stopped answering their questions and walked out of the room, leaving my fondness and my attachment to the nurses behind. I felt very strange, yet at the same time the lack of feelings seemed to liberate me.

Over the next few days, I didn't talk with anyone except Dr. Nepvue. The nurses tried to talk with me, but I had nothing to say. I spent my time reading and thinking about what to do next. I decided to rent a car and leave Lamoille County. Dr. Nepvue and I talked about my plan after I phoned a car rental agency in Montpelier to check on the availability of a small station wagon. I had enough money in the bank due to a small loan I had obtained for college costs. One of the weekend nurses offered to drive me to Montpelier to pick up the car.

I told Dr. Nepvue that I had reached a turning point and that deep down inside I feared that I was losing my will to survive. I didn't want to die and I certainly didn't want to go back to VSH. I needed something that would bring me bring me back in touch with the strong desire to live I had always drawn upon before.

Dr. Nepvue explained that if she let me leave and I did any harm to myself, she would be the person who would be held responsible.

"If I let you go, you have to promise me that you will not do

anything to harm yourself," she said.

I promised her that I would not do anything to myself and stressed again that this was not about dying, it was about living again. Dr. Nepvue agreed to let me go. I made arrangements to withdraw from college.

Earlier that day, I had phoned my mother and asked her if I could come home for a while. I told her what had happened and she cried. She and my father wanted me to come home. After years of problems between my mother and me, we both just wanted everything to be okay. Neither my mother nor I were yet able to comprehend the reasons why things had become so bad between us beginning when I was thirteen years old. It wouldn't be until I obtained my medical records and learned the details of my early childhood trauma that we would even begin to mend our relationship. But in November, 1981, we were ready to try.

I got a ride to the car rental agency in Montpelier and the man behind the counter remembered me from the phone call I made to him the day before. The man held a big cigar between his teeth and squinted intently at me as we talked. I'm sure that I didn't look well and he knew that I called him from the hospital. I had no credit card but he was willing to take cash. After I filled out the paperwork, he showed me to the nearly brand new Chevy station wagon.

I sat in the idling Chevy and felt a rush of excitement at the prospect that I could go anywhere I wanted anytime I wanted to go. I drove out of Montpelier onto Route 2, choosing not to go onto the Interstate until I was more familiar with the car. I went onto the Interstate in Middlesex, turned up the FM radio, lit a cigarette and let each mile that I drove sooth me. I stopped for a six-pack of Coke, a carton of cigarettes and a deli sandwich in Waterbury Center and even the simple act of tossing the carton of cigarettes on the passenger seat seemed to symbolize my newly found sense of independence. I was on my own and it felt fantastic. The car rental was paid for one week and those seven days ahead of me felt like forever. I drove to Johnson and spent my last night at Anna and Harold's home.

Anna didn't want me to leave and after I packed my things into the car, I tried to say goodbye to her but she wouldn't come out of her bedroom. I drove to Stowe and bought a pair of jeans and a sweater at the second-hand shop. The new clothes seemed to symbolize my transformation even more and when I pulled onto the Interstate and headed toward Brandon, I knew I was leaving this part of my life

behind. The physical and emotional strain of the last sixteen years had taken its toll on me. I was twenty-nine years old and I was tired.

5

GOD, KING AND BEGINNING, 1981-1988

I drove fast down Route 7 and the closer I got to old, familiar territory, the more I wanted to see my parents. I neared the village of Brandon and I was unexpectedly overcome by emotion. I pulled the car off from the road and called my mother from a pay phone to tell her that I'd be home in a few minutes. After I gathered myself I drove down Maple Street and pulled up in front of my parents' house.

My parents were at the car before I even got out of it. We hugged and we cried and we went inside and talked for a while. The dog that my parents rescued from the Waterbury Center house wagged her tail and lapped my face with her tongue. I looked around the living room of the house I hadn't been able to live in since I was thirteen years old and hoped that this time, I could stay.

I could see that my parents were genuinely happy that I was with them. I'd always known that they loved me, in fact I never doubted for one moment that they loved me and I loved them. I just was never able to explain why I couldn't remain in their home or why my mother seemed to elicit such unexplained and disturbing behavior from me. I looked at my father, who was becoming more and more crippled by arthritis. Dad was a quiet man but he was a good man who worked hard all of his life, paid his bills and loved his family. I saw the emotion in his blue eyes as we sat at the kitchen table talking. Dad was happy to have his little girl home again.

Mom could see that I was exhausted. I saw the concern in her face. I told her that I needed some time to rest and some good home cooking and that I'd be okay. My mother carried a deep sense of guilt about the VSH years and it appears from the medical records that VSH doctors like Havas did everything that they could to make sure that she did blame herself. I too blamed her and my family for abandoning me, and it would take over fifteen more years before she or I would know the truth about what happened in VSH.

My nephews came to see me. Jeff was born when I was fifteen and after 1970, I rarely saw him. Chris was born when I was on 1A and I saw him for the first time when he was three years old. I hadn't seen much

of my brother and sister-in-law since 1970 and it felt awkward trying to reestablish the close relationship Kip and I had before I was first hospitalized.

Before I left Johnson, I met with Cheryl, the Copley nurse I had been friends with in VSH. We sat in the hospital cafeteria and I told her my plans. Cheryl had been so supportive during my months in Copley and nothing I told her changed that. She wanted only the best for me. In the 1990's, Cheryl was found murdered in Morrisville. To my knowledge no one has ever been arrested for the crime and although the police had a suspect they were never able to make a case against him.

One of the Copley nurses told me before I left that she would be attending Castleton State College and she gave me her phone number so that we could arrange to meet. That November night I drove along the winding road that parallels the Otter Creek from Brandon to Castleton. I'd been on this stretch of road many times but because of the winding curves and the ever-present deep waters of Otter Creek, I exercised caution as I made my way through the sharp turns in the road.

I was suddenly startled when the field on my right became illuminated in the otherwise pitch-black darkness. A huge deer raced toward my car and all I could think was that I was driving a rented car and it was going to be wrecked when the deer hit. My mind raced to try and make sense out of what was happening and right before my eyes the charging deer transformed into a huge hawk that flew directly over my car.

Everything was happening so fast and none of it made any kind of logical sense. The field was dark again and I was driving along the road. My heart was beating fast as I tried to comprehend what had just taken place. Only moments had passed but the scene that played out in front of me seemed to have gone on longer than a few moments. When I first saw the field illuminated it was as if I was no longer even in the car. Everything around me except the deer and the hawk had vanished. It was as if I wasn't physically present in the car, yet I managed to keep the car on the road. I told myself I saw what I saw but I knew the entire incident simply made no sense. As I continued to drive I wondered if I had hallucinated, yet deep down I really didn't think so.

I met with my friend in Castleton and told her about the strange incident on the highway. She suggested that I see a psychiatrist and I couldn't blame her for coming to that conclusion. The entire incident sounded crazy and it was crazy, yet I didn't believe that I was crazy

enough to hallucinate. On the drive home I wondered what it all meant

My mother and father listened as I told them what had happened. I said that it made no rational sense yet I saw what I saw. I told them that I did not want to see another psychiatrist and they agreed with me. My parents had experienced the destruction psychiatrists had brought into our lives and they were not eager to go down that road again.

I tried to shake off the incident but it troubled me. My mother gently suggested that I talk with the new, young Congregational church minister. My brother and his wife thought highly of the minister and his wife.

"Why don't you let me phone him and go and talk to him? What can it hurt?" my mother asked as my father nodded his head in agreement.

When Reverend Peter Anderson opened the door and invited me into the parsonage I noticed how intently he was looking at me. We sat and talked for quite a while and I told him about being in VSH and problems with my mother. I told him about my recent suicide attempt and the frightening presence that drove me out of the cemetery that night. I talked about losing Phil and Reverend Anderson remarked that he had recently learned about Phil's death through Phil's mother Helen, who was a member of the Congregational church.

I attended Sunday School beginning in kindergarten and Kip also grew up attending the Brandon Congregational church. Mom stopped going to Sunday services around the time I first went into VSH but she remained a member. In the two or three years leading up to my 1965 breakdown, I began openly challenging the Sunday school lessons, which caused somewhat of an uproar among the Sunday school teachers. I was trying to settle my own questions about religion and I didn't hesitate to give voice to the questions I had, but the teachers usually couldn't give me answers that satisfied me.

I tried to read the Bible when I was still in early elementary school but I couldn't understand the things I was reading. I asked my mother for a white covered Bible when I was seven years old and felt frustrated that the words on the pages still made little sense to me. Mom tried to tell me that when I got older I would be better able to understand what I was reading. By the time I got my first horse in 1960, most of my preoccupation with religion had faded into the background.

Peter asked me if I objected to having his wife, Sharon sit in on our conversation. He said he didn't usually ask Sharon to join in but that he felt that Sharon might be able to help. I agreed and Sharon joined the

conversation.

Sharon was only a few years older than I was and she seemed calm and gentle. She listened as Peter filled her in on our conversation and she asked me several questions. After a few hours Peter began to explain what he believed was behind my problems and as he spoke, my heart began beating rapidly.

Peter explained how "demonic oppression," as opposed to demonic possession could be responsible for both my emotional upheavals and the strange, unexplained events that had frequently occurred in my life. He said that sometimes unwitting contact can be made with forces better left alone and that exposure to evil people, evil places and evil things all contributed to spiritual oppression of a vulnerable person.

I tried to think of anything that I might have been exposed to that would cause such a problem, but I couldn't think of anything. I felt shaken by the things Peter and Sharon were telling me but, at this point in my life, I figured anything was possible. I certainly hadn't found any other answer for the things that had happened to me. Maybe Peter and Sharon were right. I asked Peter what could be done about such a thing and he asked me if I would agree to bring Kip and Sue into the conversation. He thought they could help.

My brother and his wife joined us and after they were filled in on the problem, we all agreed to meet the following night so that Peter could lay hands on me. I left the parsonage that November night and as I walked to the rented car, my brother hugged me.

"Everything will be okay. You'll see," Kip said as we walked to our cars.

"I'll stop at Mom and Dad's and talk to them with you."

My parents listened as Kip and I filled them in on Peter's belief that I was "oppressed." My father seemed to accept the possibility easier than my mother. She was very disturbed by the idea. She wasn't the only one.

When I was finally alone that night in my bedroom, I thought about all that had taken place over the last several hours. The strange incident on the highway with the deer transforming into a hawk, being told that I might have come in contact with something "evil" and being faced with a "laying on of hands." Could this all be true and if it was true could this be why my life had been so insane?

My 1971, Baird 6 records contain a curious description of my reaction to a man who was visiting the unit. For some unexplained

reason I was convinced that he was “Satan.” According to the records I was very frightened by this man and absolutely convinced that he was evil and that he would harm me and others
on the unit. I have no memory of this and, in retrospect, I find it to be out of the ordinary for me during the hospital years. The records contain no other references to spiritual preoccupations in the 1960’s and 1970’s, with the exception of Copley Hospital in 1981. I had definitely had several unexplained events in my life but the idea that I might be oppressed was very disturbing.

Peter, Sharon, Kip, and Sue stood in the parsonage preparing to lay hands upon me. I had no idea what to expect. Peter said prayers and asked me if I accepted Jesus Christ as my Savior and I said that I did. The four people in the room to help me placed their hands on my body as Peter said a prayer and in moments, the ceremony was over.

I’m not sure what if anything I expected to happen but what did happen was that I felt a huge physical and emotional surge of relief, as if I were suddenly unburdened. I told those gathered with me how I felt and they smiled. Peter explained to me that I would need to immerse myself in the Bible and that by doing so, I would have much better protection from potential “evil.”

I felt that I might have a new beginning. I wanted to understand about God and I spent hours reading the Bible. Sharon and I began to spend a lot of time together and it was nice to have a friend. She had a beautiful soprano singing voice and I often brought my acoustic guitar to accompany her when she sang. We spent many hours talking, laughing and sharing our deepest hopes and dreams with each other.

Peter counseled me and answered my questions. I attended church services every Sunday, except for the very first Sunday after the laying on of hands. I learned that Kip stood up in front of the congregation and talked about how thankful he was that his sister had come home, met Peter and found God again. People who knew my brother well were very surprised that he stood and spoke that morning. Kip was a quiet, unassuming guy and a little on the shy side. When I heard about him addressing the congregation I began to understand the significance of all that had happened. Kip, who was temporarily laid off from his job as a truck driver, spent time with me talking about the Bible. He told me how his own life had been changed when he became an active member of the church. It was so good to have my brother in my life again.

I immersed myself in study, sometimes getting up at four in the

morning to read the Bible. Peter warned me about how important it was to stay grounded in the Bible. He told me that the oppression could come back a full seven times as strong without a firm foundation in God's word.

Sharon and I became closer and we spent much of our time together. Peter and Sharon had three young children and I enjoyed watching them play. Mom sometimes babysat for the children and both she and my father grew very fond of the entire family.

Peter's Sunday services were recorded and played back later on a local radio station and Sharon suggested that she and I work up a musical number to play for the congregation. She found a song and I set my own arrangement to it. We performed the song for the congregation and we both felt pleased and satisfied. Several parishioners came up to us after the song to tell us how much they enjoyed our song.

Sharon believed that my presence in she and Peter's life was not an accident and that something spiritually driven had led me to them. It was hard for me to take it all in and to try to comprehend what it all meant. I began to feel frightened by the enormity of the situation. The idea that God might be using me in His plans seemed to place a huge responsibility on my shoulders and I wasn't convinced that I was in any way up to the responsibility. Once again, depression settled in.

My preoccupation with religion caused me to experience fear and increasingly unsettling conflict. I wrote poetry about God and the Devil and described terrible scenes of destruction. I began to envision a battle between Good and Evil that would take place right in Brandon. Sharon had her own vision of God's plan for Peter's congregation and I seemed to be a part of her vision. I was growing uneasy with the intensity of my religious experience but I could not leave it. I couldn't walk away from God and I didn't want to walk away from God. I just wanted to be a normal, regular person who went to church every Sunday, believed in God and tried to live a good life. What was happening to me was far from normal and I feared that I might be trapped in the middle of something I couldn't defend myself against.

I went to see Peter and Sharon one night when I felt ready to pack up and flee Brandon. They showed me into their living room where I sat on the carpeted floor listening while Peter tried to reassure me. Nothing he said seemed to help. The only thing I could think of to do was to run as fast as I could and leave all of it behind. Yet, this time, there was no place to run. I was caught in a spiritual dilemma.

Peter reached for the Bible and turned to a Psalm I was unfamiliar with. Then in what I can only describe as the most profound and disturbing incident I have ever experienced, Peter's voice was no longer Peter's voice. I couldn't see Peter sitting directly in front of me and I couldn't actually see who it was sitting in front of me. Everything in the room had disappeared in a way similar to when I saw the deer turn into the hawk on the highway. There was nothing except the voice speaking directly to me, reciting the words of the Psalm.

With each and every word spoken, I felt incredibly frightened. I wanted to hide myself from the power of that voice and at the same time I felt drawn to the power of the words it spoke. Then it was all over. The room around me returned. Peter was sitting directly in front of me again. Sharon was there. I looked at them, trying to read their faces. Had they too experienced something? I asked Sharon what had just happened and she asked me to tell them what I had experienced.

I described what happened and Sharon smiled at me in a way that made me feel that whatever she and Peter also experienced, it was something good. Again I asked if they experienced something strange. Sharon said that Peter was led to read me the 91st Psalm. Peter agreed and said that it was important for me to understand that the 91st Psalm was my Psalm and that God wanted me to know it.

I left Peter and Sharon that night profoundly affected by the strange event and despite the fact that to this day I can still visualize what took place that night, I simply cannot explain it. It remains the most powerful and profound event of my life.

It's interesting to me that this incident with Peter and Sharon was the last of these strange incidents I had. Why I had them and why this one was the last one, I still don't understand. I do know that the 91st Psalm remains special to me.

Peter and Sharon suggested that I spend some time at a religious retreat in Massachusetts, and after talking with them about it, I decided to go. I wrote a poem shortly before I left for the retreat in which I described a large white building with large marble columns. It was surrounded by cedar trees.

When Kip and I arrived at the religious retreat, I was surprised by what I saw. The building was made of marble, it had huge marble columns and there were numerous cedar trees surrounding the property. I mentioned my poem to Kip before he drove back to Vermont. I took the coincidence of my poem as a sign that being at the

retreat was a good thing.

I was shown around the huge estate by a staff member and then introduced to three women who would be sharing a dorm room with me. We talked to each other about the reasons we had come to the retreat. One woman told us that the staff had brought her to the retreat from New Orleans where she had been mixed up in a scenario that included crime figures. The retreat staff was hiding her. Another girl told about being accused of being "demonically oppressed." The girl was only in her late teens and seemed to feel that the label of oppression was misplaced. I kept information about my own circumstances to myself.

The daily routine of the retreat revolved around religious instruction. Almost immediately, I was uncomfortable with this instruction. The dinner meal was an odd mixture of ingredients we were told were vegetable based. It was like a thick paste. I found this somewhat strange. There was no actual food like meat, potatoes or vegetables and I was never sure exactly what we were being fed.

We sat around a table listening to a red-haired woman staff member instruct us on the Bible and when she made an obvious inflammatory remark about Jewish people, I bristled and looked around the table to see if anyone else had the same reaction that I did. No one seemed to object. One of the people sitting at the table was a young Jewish man named David and when the staff member made a second negative remark about the Jewish people, I couldn't sit silently any longer.

"David, you're Jewish, aren't you?" I asked turning my attention toward him.

He looked startled by my comment.

I then directed my anger and my comments at the woman staff member and said that in my opinion this was not religious instruction, it was religious bigotry. The woman was caught off guard and she became even more rattled when others in the group joined me with their own objections. When the class was over David came up to me and thanked me. He said he couldn't explain why he hadn't spoken up sooner. I began to watch the staff very closely. Something wasn't right.

One night several of us walked the long distance from the retreat into town to have a pizza at a little café. The owner of the café greeted us warmly until he learned that we were from the retreat. Upon hearing where we were from, his attitude toward us drastically changed and he became hostile. This did not go unnoticed by any of us and we talked

about it all the way back to the estate. That night I phoned Peter and voiced my concerns but he urged me to stay. I then phoned my parents and filled my mother in on what was taking place. She encouraged me to come home.

The staff was not pleased to hear that I was disenchanted enough to leave, but agreed to drive me to the bus. In the dark of the night, the red-haired woman staff member dropped me off on the street in Worcester. I sat with three duffle bags and an acoustic guitar in a case on a city bus stop bench and waited for the bus. The bus driver nearly drove past me and I had to run to catch the bus. A sole passenger aboard the bus helped me get my duffle bags and guitar on the bus and bought me a cup of hot coffee when we pulled into the bus stop. After hearing that I had been dropped off at night by the staff at the retreat the bus driver commented that in his opinion this was not Christian behavior.

I bought a bus ticket to Vermont and waited in the small bus station. Much to my alarm, the attendant closed the bus station at eleven that night, forcing me to stand alone outside in the dark to wait for the bus. I was very uneasy waiting in the dark, alone in the city. A man and woman came after about twenty or so minutes to wait for the bus with me and I felt somewhat more at ease not having to wait all alone. When I finally boarded the bus I realized that I would have to stay awake all night because I had to change buses several times. I looked out at the street lamps along the Charles River and thought to myself how incredible it was to be sitting on a bus in Boston.

During my investigation, I learned that Robert Hyde and Dr. Hudson Hoagland conducted extensive CIA experiments at the Worcester Foundation for Experimental Biology and that MKULTRA Subproject 8, conducted at Worcester, was Hyde's Subproject. Whether it was the four Vermont CIA research sites or the two Baltimore hospital CIA sites, it seemed that I had been in the same city or in the same hospitals again and again, where the CIA experiments were conducted. It seemed an incredible coincidence that I ended up in Worcester when at the time I had no idea that I had ever been used in CIA experiments. I never identified the religious retreat in Worcester as a CIA site, but the fact that CIA was very interested in using religion to control people, makes me suspicious. CIA was particularly interested in religious conversion (MKULTRA Subproject 98 dealt with individual and mass conversion) and the location of the retreat was in the same city as a well-known CIA front where Hyde had conducted MKULTRA research.

After learning about the Vermont CIA experiments and realizing I

had been in two CIA sites in Baltimore, I took a closer look at the retreat experience in Worcester. Because the CIA, UVM and the two Burlington hospitals continue to refuse to provide me with the full record of the CIA experiments I was subjected to, I am forced to be suspicious about my experiences in the retreat. I had been at a total of seven CIA sites in three states and given the fact that the CIA was operating in Worcester, my suspicions only grew.

The first night I was at the retreat, I learned that one of the women was apparently being hidden by the retreat from organized crime in New Orleans. She wasn't there for religious instruction. I've recently wondered if what sounded like a witness protection program was in effect with this woman and if that was the case, as far as I know, the federal government runs the witness protection program.

I thought about the reaction of the man in the little café when he discovered that a group of us were from the retreat. His immediate reaction was clearly an indication that he had some type of strong negative feelings or knowledge about the retreat.

I attempted an internet search for the retreat after learning about the CIA experiments. I knew that a branch of the religious retreat was located in Switzerland, but I was unable to find the retreat. I found this unusual, having conducted many previous internet searches. It seemed to me that even if the organization no longer existed, I still should have been able to locate information on it. I never succeeded. It's as if it never existed.

The Rockland Project, which I have determined was a CIA project, is another instance where, to quote former Governor Phil Hoff, "It's just as if it never existed."

The actual location of the retreat was in a hamlet of Worcester called Shrewsbury. The Worcester Foundation for Experimental Biology was also based in Shrewsbury. It's a stretch for me to believe this was a coincidence.

The religious instruction offered at the retreat was troubling from the start and I was always perplexed that the other people at the retreat seemed willing to be taught what was so clearly religious bigotry until someone spoke up and challenged the teaching. It was as if they were asleep or dulled somehow. In addition, I was essentially dumped on the city streets of Worcester, alone at night, in the cold of February to get a bus and get back to Vermont. CIA operated out of Worcester and when I look closely at the night I left the retreat, it was a run from the retreat. I had a long history of running and CIA knew this

from the VSH experiments. Was that night in Worcester another experiment? Was the estate where the retreat operated a CIA site? I don't know the answer to these questions and I do not like the fact that I have to ask myself these kinds of questions. It's not knowing the full story of the CIA experiments I was subjected to that is so disturbing all these years later.

All of the others at the retreat with me were young people. I recall no middle-aged or elderly people. They were from all over the country. In retrospect, given what I've learned over the last fifteen years, I wonder if it's possible that all the people there were former CIA unwitting subjects like I was. I will very likely never know the answer but even the possibility that this could have been the case is very disturbing.

A few days after I left the retreat I got a phone call from one of the women who shared a dorm room with me. She told me that when the people staying at the retreat learned that I had been dropped off alone in the city they were not pleased. Apparently seven or eight of the people who were there openly challenged the retreat staff about how I was handled and about the religious instruction. She told me that the seven or eight people, including her, packed up and left the retreat right after I left. She was back home in Texas. She thanked me for waking everyone up. I'm left to conclude that my objections to how the retreat behaved were shared by many others staying there.

My experience at the retreat was a game changer for me. Peter and Sharon didn't seem to understand or believe the things I told them happened at the retreat. I plunged into a severe depression. My parents tried to support me and they were concerned as I sunk deeper and deeper into despair. In an effort to try to ease the situation, my arthritic father climbed the stairs to my bedroom one afternoon with my mother. They sat in my room describing how my room could be turned into an apartment and that they would do everything they could to help me. They wanted me to be home with them and my father said they didn't care if I went to church or not. He just wanted me to be home with them and safe.

I struggled with a terrible conflict. If I left the church and Peter and Sharon would I be surrendering my soul to the Devil? I didn't know what to do. I went to Pater and asked him for the key to the church. I wanted to go inside the church and try to decide what to do.

I was resistant to the idea that I had been exposed to a demonic force from the beginning when Peter first suggested that this had been

the case. It frightened me and I was even more frightened at the thought of pulling back from Peter and Sharon. Would I find myself at the mercy of far more oppression than I had when I first came to them for help? I felt doomed.

I stood in the church looking at the stained glass windows and prayed for God to help me decide what to do. It was an almost eerie experience to be alone in the big church. The emotional conflict I was caught in felt threatening to my survival. I couldn't even kill myself because whether alive or dead, I felt that I was caught directly in the middle of God and the Devil. If I pulled away from the church, would I open the door for seven times the torment? Dying wouldn't protect me. I had no escape and it terrified me. I believed in God and it wasn't God I was trying to escape.

When I walked into Peter and Sharon's house that night in November, 1981, I didn't yet know about the violent childhood trauma I suffered and I didn't yet have the documents to prove that I had been experimented on by the CIA. It took me over twenty years after my experiences with Peter and Sharon to even begin to comprehend and to accept that Peter's determination that I had been "oppressed by evil" was true.

I would eventually realize that I was so afraid of the idea that I might have been influenced by something or someone evil that I had to distance myself from the intensity of my relationship with Peter and Sharon. For many years I was able to tell myself that they were wrong. Peter and Sharon weren't wrong but, in 1982, I was trying once again to survive.

In 1981, I wasn't able to recognize or accept the idea that I had been exposed to evil. After fifteen years of obtaining information on the Vermont CIA experiments, I clearly recognize that I was surrounded by evil. There is simply no other word that accurately describes and explains the CIA experiments. There was no ethical, moral or medical explanation for the experiments and the intent of the doctors who conducted the experiments is very clear in their research project documents.

I left the church that snowy day in March, 1982, and told my parents that I needed help. They were understandably concerned when I said I needed psychiatric help. They knew all too well what my previous attempts to get help from psychiatrists had brought me. I phoned my family doctor and told him that I needed help. He quickly arranged for me to be admitted to the Rutland Regional Medical Center psychiatric

unit. I held my breath and prayed that I had made the right decision.

I don't have clear memories of being admitted to the Rutland psychiatric unit but I am sure I was afraid. The first person I recall talking with came into my hospital room and introduced herself as the occupational therapist, Mary Patten. Mary wore a bandana over her hair and was non-judgmental in her approach. I talked to her about the frightening spiritual crisis I was caught in and she reassured me that I would find help on the unit.

Dr. Bob Ross, a senior psychiatrist, visited me and we talked in more depth about my crisis. He told me that the unit staff had experience with situations like mine and asked me to hang in with them. He asked me for permission to contact Dr. Nepvue. I didn't talk to him about Dr. Nepvue's diagnosis, but Dr. Ross learned of it when he and Dr. Nepvue spoke on the phone.

Sharon and my sister-in-law visited me and Sharon, who was very frightened that harm would come to me while I was on the unit, tried to convince me to leave the hospital and enter a Christian-based psychiatric hospital. I felt torn. I was already uneasy about being in another psychiatric clinic and I was still deeply connected to Sharon. I followed Sharon and Sue to the door of the unit, still not sure if I was going to stay or leave with them.

A nurse standing at the desk stopped us and asked me, "What do I have to gain from you staying here Karen? What's in it for me?"

It was the perfect challenge and I stopped at the door. Sharon and Sue left without me.

Days became weeks on the unit. My family doctor visited me every day and promised me that before he allowed anyone to send me anywhere, he would discharge me.

He stressed, "Just don't do anything that will take the decision out of my hands."

He remained my doctor of record during the entire hospital stay.

The nursing staff on the unit was all psychiatric registered nurses. The difference between highly trained psychiatric nurses and the untrained and uneducated aides at VSH was markedly apparent. I sought out Mary Patten to talk with and time and time again, she seemed to provide me with information and insight I felt was extremely helpful.

Rosemary Johnson, the mental health clinic worker I first met after

Phil Cram died in 1969, was one of the unit staff. I'd always liked Rosemary and she too became a person I went to for insight and help. The head nurse, Lynne Colville became another person I felt safe with. Lynne became a person I would turn to in times of crisis for many years to come. Hiding my strange condition was for me self-protection and although I was aware of the diagnosis, I didn't have much information about it. Rosemary, Mary and Lynne approached the subject numerous times, but for me, it was still something buried in my unconscious mind.

My family doctor ordered blood tests to check the status of the immune disorder and much to my surprise the L-cell, which was the cell that positively confirmed the diagnosis of systemic lupus, was found. I was shaken by the diagnosis. Mary had been diagnosed with lupus many years earlier and she helped me through the initial stages of acceptance and understanding of the disease. Mary and I would share a bond that would last for many years, but not only because of our shared illness.

Mary seemed to just "get it." She had a depth of understanding about the human condition I hadn't encountered before. Mary was a quiet, unassuming person who was very clearly motivated to help other people. She would go on to obtain her Master's Degree in Psychology and work on the unit as a therapist and she told me later that it was when she met me that she discovered her ability to counsel, not to just do occupational therapy. She became a highly sought out counselor by patients on the unit.

After a couple of months on the unit, Dr. Bob Ross retired, and filling his position as head of Psychiatric Services was Dr. Tom Fox. I'd seen Dr. Fox come in and out of the unit to speak with patients and the day that he officially took over remains a memorable day for me. Many years later he told me it was a memorable day for him as well.

I watched as Dr. Fox came into the dayroom to get patients to talk with. He had officially been my doctor for several days, yet he had never introduced himself to me and I was irritated. He asked me to come with him so that we could talk.

"You've been my doctor for days now but you haven't bothered to introduce yourself. So now you finally say something to me and I'm supposed to jump up and act like it's okay that you totally dismissed me for days?"

Dr. Fox smiled at me and said he'd be back a little later. He continued to see patients on the unit and when he finished, he came over to me one more time.

"You want to talk now?" he asked me.

I noticed a twinkle in his eye, but I still had reservations about this new psychiatrist. I went with him to talk.

"I apologize for not introducing myself before now," Dr. Fox began, "You've done hard time, haven't you?"

"So, you read my chart and saw I'd been in VSH," I fired back.

Dr. Fox smiled at me.

"I have to tell you, I haven't had a patient talk to me like that and I love it. Too many patients don't stand up for themselves. But I also recognize that you have done hard time. Pretty bad, huh?"

I was surprised by Dr. Fox's attitude. We talked and at the end of our first meeting, I felt that he might actually be someone who might help. It was worth a try. Over our next several meetings, he impressed me as being fair, open and willing to work with me. He didn't push me about my diagnosis of MPD but he said he hoped that he could help me make progress in dealing with the disorder. He seemed to appreciate the spiritual crisis I was struggling with and as the weeks went by, the intensity of my spiritual conflict diminished.

My condition was erratic and my behavior was unpredictable. Mary sat down with me and tried to learn about the other personalities, but I wasn't able to provide much information. It was frustrating for me to be so shut off from my own mind.

I fled the hospital for reasons I have never really understood. I wandered around Rutland city, where, apparently, I was struck by a bicycle. I was found by an ambulance crew, bleeding from my nose. Although the episode is fuzzy for me, I recall having a great deal of difficulty speaking. Dr. Fox met me in the emergency room and I went back to the unit on a stretcher.

Dr. Fox suggested that I consider attending the "day hospital" program. Day hospital was an intensive group therapy-based program run by Rutland Regional Hospital. There were several groups a day and Dr. Fox wanted me to remain on the unit while I attended. I agreed to give it a try.

Group therapy was grueling. Seven or eight patients sat in a circle discussing topics that ranged from personal situations to plans for discharge. I entered the group feeling that time was not something that I could afford to waste. The first day I began to talk in the group, which clearly angered one of the members.

"People who come into this group don't talk until they have been here awhile. I am the most senior member of this group and I've been here longer than anyone," the petite young woman announced, staring straight at me.

"Really? You've been here longer than anyone and if I've heard you right, you take some kind of pride in that?" I asked, staring right back at her.

She was caught off guard and shuffled around in her chair.

"Seniority or not, I'm here to work on my own issues and I'm not going to hang back just because you think I should," I said, looking around the entire circle.

A staff member later told me that I reminded him of a line from the song, *Me and Bobby McGee*: "Freedom's just another word for nothing left to lose."

He was right.

Group therapy was an interesting mixture of revelations by others whose issues more often than not set off the issues of many others in the circle. There were times when one person talking about how they felt or about whatever they were struggling with set off a chain reaction of emotion and identification among the other people. There were other times when days went by and we all sat there managing to accomplish nothing except to irritate each other.

There were days when I returned to the unit exhausted and emotionally fragile. The unit staff helped those of us in the group deal with the aftermath of a day in therapy. Despite the urging of Dr. Fox, I didn't talk about my MPD in the group. I was still protective and secretive about the disorder and only a few of the unit staff actually knew my diagnosis

By the end of June, I had gone as far as I could in the group and I talked with Dr. Fox about leaving the hospital. He voiced concern about my returning to live with my parents, but I didn't have other options at that point. The night before my discharge, Rosemary Johnson sat down with me.

"I want to you to know that Kathy Judge is in private practice now. If you ever decide to go into therapy and deal with the MPD, give Kathy a call."

Dr. Fox suggested that I see a therapist as an outpatient and it's clear to me in retrospect that, in 1982, I was not yet ready to deal with

my disorder. I saw a psychologist after discharge and it was clear to me almost immediately that he and I were not a good match. He dismissed my diagnosis and told me he didn't believe in MPD. I remember looking at him that day and thinking to myself that there was simply no way I was going to get into a struggle about whether or not I was multiple with this guy.

"Whether or not you believe in my diagnosis doesn't change the way I have to live my life. I think me coming here is a mistake."

I didn't return to therapy with him.

Tensions between my mother and me were escalating again and the day I ended therapy, I boarded a bus to Morrisville where I secured a loan from the bank. I decided to buy a horse.

I think that I decided to buy another horse in an attempt to recreate a time in my life when having a horse helped me hold myself together. My parents were not altogether pleased by my news, but they agreed to go with me to look for a horse. Mom and Dad only wanted me to be okay and they hoped that maybe having a horse would help me.

I walked through three huge horse barns looking at each of the many horses stabled. When I reached the third barn I saw King. He was a beautiful red chestnut thoroughbred with a blond mane and tail and a white blaze down his face. King nickered softly to me when I approached him in the stall.

It would take twenty years for me to be aware of the possible connection between King, the red chestnut horse with the white blaze down his face and the other red chestnut horse with a white blaze that Curlin brought out behind the VSH back ward for me to see in 1970. I would learn during my investigation that CIA used horse imagery as hypnotic symbols in the drug and mind control experiments.

The ranch owner tried to discourage me from buying King. He was a high-strung former three-day eventer and only an experienced rider could manage him. As I rode him around the large ring I was nearly breathless with excitement. If there was one thing I could do well, it was ride a horse and riding King was akin to riding a bolt of lightening. King was magnificent and I needed to feel the ways in which he made me feel. I was alive again.

My cousins, Sally and Gene, had pastureland and barns at their home in Brandon and they agreed to let me keep King there. I did chores in their small stable and my mother joined me. She enjoyed being around the horses and has said many times over the years that

for her it was one of the best times. My father and I began spending time together as well. It was nice to not only have time with my father but also to have the chance to get to know him all over again. Dad was frustrated that his arthritis prevented him from helping me do some of the heavy work required with a horse, but his quiet, constant presence was invaluable, as was the time we were fortunate enough to be able to spend together.

King's health problems began almost immediately. He was diagnosed with shipping fever and required a veterinarian. I was shaken by King's illness but the vet pulled him through the disease. The horse barn at my parent's home was repaired and the backyard was fenced in. I leased an adjoining piece of pasture from the neighbor who had allowed me to pasture my first horse on her property in 1960. I remember riding King down through the streets of Brandon the day I moved him to Maple Street. King had elegance in his movement and sitting atop the high-strung animal made me feel alive, free and in control.

The backyard soon was regularly filled with neighborhood kids who ranged in age from six to sixteen. King loved the attention the kids gave him and many of them helped me load hay bales and eventually joined in to build King a new barn. I grew close to these kids and they confided in me regularly about their problems and concerns. When the school bus passed by King's corral every afternoon, the kids on the bus could be heard calling King's name.

My father loved to sit in his chair in the backyard and listen to the kids. Dad's two brothers began to be regular visitors, as did my sister-in-law's father, Bob. I think Dad missed talking to people as he had always done when he worked and now that I was home and the back yard was almost always filled with people, he was content.

It's still difficult for me to find the words to explain my relationship with King. I know the terms that have been used, like anthropomorphism and dissociation and I agree that I did experience a form of both. In retrospect I realize that unconsciously I was King and he was me. King was a dissociated externalized self in animal form. I would later learn that things I did for him, I was on another level, doing for myself. I almost constantly worried that someone would harm him and that I would not be able to protect him. I got up out of bed many nights to stand and look out the window at the barn because I was so fearful. It got so I rarely left his side. I was constantly on alert for a threat from nameless, faceless people.

I realize now that the longer I had King, the less I was in touch with my own emotions or my own self. I recall standing beside him, stroking his neck and looking into his huge brown eyes. It was almost hypnotic. Every breath he took breathed life into me. King was a fiery, powerful animal who in the wrong hands could have actually been dangerous. He required an experienced rider and knowledgeable handling.

King foundered in 1986. Founder is a painful, potentially fatal disease of the hoof. The vet saved him and after a long recuperation I was even more cautious with him. No matter the weather, I remained by his side, all day every day. My parents worried about me in the freezing winter and in the heat of the summer. After King's illness, I began to have trouble with my stomach and my family doctor prescribed a drug to help.

I decided to build a new barn and the neighborhood kids eagerly pitched in to help. My uncle was instrumental in the construction of the barn, as was Dad. The kids learned carpentry from my uncle and father and they were proud when the barn was finished.

King began to have problems again and the vet diagnosed the condition as navicular disease, a serious and painful nerve disease in the feet and legs, usually found in horses that have been used for jumping. The vet suggested King be fitted with special shoes. It was only a matter of weeks before King's condition dramatically worsened.

I felt like I was trapped in a nightmare. I watched King as he took painful steps and inside of myself, I knew. On a cold, sunny November morning I looked out the window at the barn as I had done every morning for five years. This morning, King didn't have his head out the top dutch door of the barn as he always had every morning before.

When I opened the barn door I saw King lying down. I stared into his huge soft brown eyes and suddenly I felt sickened. I knew I had to put him down. I kneeled down next to him and cradled his head in my arms. For me, putting King down was committing suicide. I went inside and called the vet.

The vet refused to allow me to stay while he put King down. My father and uncle remained at the barn and my mother and I drove to my aunt's house to wait. When King first foundered, Sally and Gene gave me a Morgan mare that I kept in King's old barn. She was a sweet mare but she wasn't King. I hated to have her there when King was put down.

I sat in my aunt's house and listened while military jets conducted maneuvers overhead. The roar of the jets was at times deafening. At the

time I had no way of knowing that the thundering roar of the jets flying overhead was a trigger to a childhood trauma. I learned years later that when I was eighteen months old my mother rushed outside to the fenced-in play area I was in after several low flying jets caused me to become hysterical. She couldn't calm me and had to call a doctor because of my hysterical reaction. My mother explained that when she couldn't help me calm down, she too became hysterical. I have no memory of the low flying jets and in retrospect I find it ironic that on the day King was put down, the jets flew over my aunt's house.

Returning to King's empty barn felt surreal, but I tried to push ahead and take care of the Morgan mare. I felt sick. The anti-nausea drugs my doctor had given me months before didn't seem to be working and he once again increased the dose. The neighborhood kids came to offer their condolences and they all had tears in their eyes. I stood in the shower that night and sobbed. Why did God take the only thing I really cared about away from me?

Over the days that followed, I took care of the mare and rode her a few times. My depression was steadily worsening. I watched rats scurry around under the bird feeders that were hung around the corral. For years, many birds came to the feeders, along with squirrels who liked to sit atop the board fence of the corral with their babies. When King was alive I refused to fire a gun near him and risk frightening him, but as I watched the rats eat the birdseed, I was repulsed.

I borrowed a rifle from a neighbor and Bob, my sister-in-law's father, gave me handmade bullets to use. I'd fired a rifle when I was in elementary school, target shooting with my brother, and I knew enough about a rifle to be able to shoot a rat. I loaded the gun and waited for the rats to show themselves.

I pulled the trigger and saw the rat stagger and fall. Suddenly I felt myself racing backwards, as if I was spinning through a tunnel at a hundred miles an hour. I felt disoriented and frightened by the strange sensations I felt. As if on automatic pilot, with no conscious thought or decision, I placed the barrel of the rifle under my chin and pulled the trigger. Nothing happened. I pulled the trigger a second time. Nothing happened.

My father and uncle rushed into the backyard. My father later told me that I was as white as a sheet. They asked me if I was okay and I said, yes. I still wasn't sure what had just happened. I had never killed anything before but even this didn't explain what I had done when I placed the barrel of the rifle under my chin. I took the rifle to Bob who

ran a rod down the barrel of the gun to dislodge the bullets. The handmade bullets saved my life. I told no one about my suicide attempt.

I stared at the dead rat for hours. I couldn't bring myself to bury it and each time I tried, something inside of me prevented me from placing the rat's body in the hole I dug. One of the kids buried the rat for me. I tried to pull myself out of what felt like a quicksand of despair by getting up every morning and tending to the mare. I saddled her and rode a few miles each day but nothing seemed to matter. I kept seeing King's eyes as I knelt next to him in the barn. It was like I was looking into my own eyes.

The teenage boys next door were down behind the barn target shooting at a plastic Coke bottle and they invited me to shoot. I stood a considerable distance from the plastic bottle, aimed and fired. The bottle didn't move.

One of the boys ran up to check the bottle and turned around and shouted, "You hit it dead center!"

I laughed as the kids teased me to try again and I aimed and fired. The bottle didn't move. This time the boys were excited by the fact that I hit it dead center again.

"Where did you learn to shoot like that?" they asked.

I had no answer and in the back of my mind, I felt uneasiness. One time might have been a fluke but when I shot dead center twice without even moving the plastic bottle, it bothered me. It would not be the last time I had disturbing questions about guns

The dark, dreary skies of November only seemed to make the depression I felt worse and as each day passed, I became more overwhelmed. I knew I was in real trouble. I sat down with my parents and told them I had to get help and that I knew who to call. Rosemary Johnson told me when I left the hospital that Kathy Judge was in private practice and I knew that she was the person to contact.

When I spoke with Kathy on the phone, I told her that we had known each other at Rutland County Mental Health in 1969. Kathy was booked solid with patients until January and couldn't see me. Kathy would tell me years later that during this phone conversation she was struck by the fact that I talked as though she and I had just recently seen each other. I decided to try to hang on until January when she could fit me in, but things only got worse for me.

I visited Lynne Colville, the head nurse on the Rutland unit and

after we talked Lynne asked my permission for her to speak with my family doctor. Lynne told me that she thought I should come back onto the unit. I knew she was right. Something was very wrong and I knew that my life was on the line. Arrangements were made by my family doctor for me to be admitted to the unit.

My family was fearful and tried to discourage me from going back into the hospital. My brother couldn't understand why losing King had affected me to the degree it had and I had no way of explaining to him what was going on. I didn't understand either. It was about King, but it was about something else too. I just didn't know what that something else was.

Dr. Fox immediately zeroed in on my relationship with King and told me that when he learned that King had died, he knew I would have problems. Dr. Fox asked me to explain to him how and why I constructed the new barn and the corral fence the way I had. I told him how important it was that the new barn had several windows in it and that it be big enough that King wouldn't feel closed in. The rear window had a screen across it so no one could reach into the barn.

I explained how when I built the board fence for the corral, each board had to be six inches apart and that the handle and lock on the gate was on the inside of the gate. I told him that the gate was very heavy and that my uncle rigged it with what's called a "dead man." A wire attached to the gate is fixed to a weight buried in a hole and this keeps the gate opening and closing properly. I explained that for some reason the dead man bothered me.

"The handle and lock on the gate were on the inside of the gate?" Dr. Fox asked me.

"Why do you suppose you put the handle and lock on the inside of the gate?"

I asked him to check my left leg. I was having pain and I wondered if he thought I foundered. He replied that he wasn't a foot doctor. Then he asked me to listen to a story:

"There was a young horse kept in a canyon with many other horses. The man, who had been searching for just the right horse for a long time, surveyed all of the horses and chose one particular horse because it was very special. He began to groom and train this horse for a very important occasion. The young horse was easily excited and the man instructed the horse about a very special carnival that was coming to town. All of the grooming and training was going to pay off when the

horse heard the sound of fireworks at the carnival. The horse needed to recognize that the fireworks would signal the exodus."

I was stunned. I thought the word exodus meant exit and that Dr. Fox was telling me to kill myself. I didn't say a word to him. My condition rapidly deteriorated and my mind began producing frightening images, some of which I realized were hallucinations. I didn't tell anyone what was happening as fear and increasing paranoia over took me.

I entered the day room to find a doctor standing in front of a terminally ill patient. I saw the doctor transform in front of me into a priest and tell the woman that she was going to die. I was outraged and as he left the room and went into the hall, I chased after him. He disappeared. I went to the nurse's station where I saw the patient charts hanging in the metal container they were kept in. Beside each patient's name was another name. I was enraged when I realized that every person on the unit was an imposter. These people were playing a strange game with me and my head spun in confusion. I grabbed the Bible and slid it down the hall toward where Dr. Fox was sitting with a patient. He came up the hall.

I told him that he needed the Bible more than I did. He agreed. I described seeing the doctor who was pretending to be a priest. He agreed that it was a terrible thing to do. He asked me if I had stopped taking the Xanax he prescribed and I told him there was something wrong with the pills. I returned to my room and when I lay on the bed, a crazy-looking woman in the other bed suddenly pulled the curtain between us back and snatched the pillow from under my head. When I got out of bed to confront her, she had disappeared.

I began to hide food under my bed. I couldn't eat because of nausea and I listened as the nurses in the hall talked about me as if I were already dead. I recounted to Mary the story Dr. Fox had told me. I didn't see him standing behind the curtain, listening and I only learned of his presence later. Dr. Fox diagnosed me as suffering a psychotic break.

The church sent me a can of Christmas cookies. The coffee can was wrapped in Christmas paper. I brought the cookies up to the nurse's station to share them with the night shift. When I returned to my room I tore the paper off from the can and to my horror read on the coffee can: Poison - Do Not Eat.

I was panic-stricken. I thought that I had just given the nurses poison. I couldn't handle it and despite the efforts of the night nurse, Marlene, to stop me, I put on my jacket and fled the unit. I ran to the

elevator.

I wandered around the basement of the hospital while security searched for me. There was a blizzard that night and they feared that I had gone out into the storm. I found myself curled up on the floor in the stairwell. I have no idea how much time passed until I returned to the unit. The sound of the elevator going up and down remained in my head for a long time. I couldn't get the mechanical noise out of my mind as it replayed again and again. The stairwell where I woke up was near the elevator shaft. Walking into the unit I passed by a nurse and watched her sneer at me. I realized I could only see her in profile and I told myself that she wasn't real.

Because my jacket was dry, the unit staff knew that I hadn't left the hospital. Dr. Fox ordered a shot of Haldol. I remember sitting in front of him at the nurses' station and suddenly feeling very sleepy. I put my head down on the counter for what felt like only a few moments and when I raised my head, I knew I had to get out of there. I knew that for some reason I was hallucinating and I wasn't sure that I could trust anyone on the unit. I was convinced that there had been something in the drugs they gave me.

The 1971 Metrazol chart shows that I recognized that I was hallucinating and I accurately attributed the cause of the hallucinations and the severe physical and emotional distress to the drugs the doctors were giving me. The incident in Rutland is the second time I was able to realize that I was having hallucinations. Apparently I didn't recognize that I was hallucinating all of the time.

Dr. Fox reluctantly let me go against medical advice and my parents drove me back home. I started shivering when I got into bed but it didn't take long before it was clear that I was having an adverse drug reaction. My muscles began to spasm severely. Mom called the family doctor. My facial muscles were in spasm and the spasms distorted my face.

The doctor gave me Benadryl and I pleaded with him, "I'm not crazy!"

"I know you're not crazy. You're having a bad drug reaction. I'll contact Dr. Fox and find out what he gave you. Don't worry. You will be okay," the doctor tried to reassure me.

My mother sat in the front of the ambulance and the ambulance attendant took my blood pressure. I knew the attendant. We had grown up together. I remember feeling very strange and very far away. I heard

him call my name. My mother later told me the ambulance driver closed the window between us so that my mother couldn't see what was happening.

I was no longer in the ambulance. I had no body and no form. There was no physical or emotional distress. Wherever I was didn't seem to be a physical place. I felt a surge of exhilaration in that I had never felt anything as freeing and spectacular in my life. I realized that I was dying and I didn't mind. I clearly remember thinking if this is what dying is, I'm okay with it.

Suddenly and without audible words I "heard" a voice.

"This is not the right time."

I was immediately back on the stretcher in the ambulance. The emergency room doctors told me that I had a severe allergic reaction to Haldol. I learned later that the anti-nausea drug that I had been on since before King died had a phenothiazine drug in it. The two drugs collided. Dr. Fox later told me that very likely the psychotic break I had was drug-induced. In the ambulance my blood pressure dropped to a potentially life-threatening level. I think I was close to dying and the experience I had in those moments remains almost impossible for me to adequately describe. I do know that since that strange experience, I have never again feared dying

I recuperated at home and took Benadryl for several days. I had a very distressing incident after I got home. I tried to read the TV Guide and felt my mind mix into the words on the pages. It was a very frightening. My mind had lost the ability to separate itself from the words I tried to read. It was as if the boundaries of my mind had been breached. The experience passed after about twenty-four hours.

After I learned that I had been used in CIA experiments, I was able to reexamine the strange events during the unit hospitalization. Kathy and I talked about the things that happened during the unit stay many times. Even before I obtained my medical records, I couldn't stop returning to those incidents on the unit. They troubled me.

I looked closely at the "story" I thought Dr. Fox told me and came to a conclusion, based on information both from my VSH records and from documents about MKULTRA. Special interrogations utilized hallucinogens, hypnosis, isolation, chemical shock and ECT. I read several declassified CIA documents detailing CIA use of SI with unwitting subjects and CIA interest in dissociation, particularly in children between the ages of thirteen and eighteen.

I believe the "story" I thought Dr. Fox told me was actually a flashback to the experimentation. Because of the memory loss I have for those almost seven months in seclusion, I do not have memory of what happened during the experiments in 1970-1971 to fall back on. The fact that I was having an adverse drug reaction in 1987 may have made me more vulnerable for the flashback to occur.

The man selected the horse to groom and train for an upcoming occasion. This would fit with having been selected by those experimenting on me. I believe hypnosis was used, as was LSD. The use of a horse is also key, and information about my love of horses was available to the researchers when I was thirteen years old. CIA used imagery of horses in their experiments with selected subjects. The carnival may have signified a pre-selected event. The symbolism of fireworks might have been used in place of a gunshot. CIA special interrogations tested hypnosis by instructing a subject to pick up and fire a gun and have no memory of the event. The fireworks signaled the exodus. At the time I thought exodus meant exit and believed Dr. Fox told me to kill myself. I believe the word exodus had a double meaning in the hypnotic set-up: to move from one place to the other or to flee the scene and also to kill myself after the special occasion.

Much of the MKULTRA research is thought to have been done so that CIA agents could be protected if captured by enemy agents. If an agent could hold information in a dissociated state, he would be unable to give the information up even under torture. CIA interest in dissociation led the researchers to use special interrogation methods as well as other methods to intentionally further dissociate the subject. CIA wanted to explore the possibility that under hypnotic command, a subject might obey previously implanted hypnotic commands. Memory for the event and for the set-up would be lost.

The after-effects of the adverse drug reaction indicate an LSD flashback. I couldn't read without the words mixing into my mind; LSD is known to break down the normal barriers in the mind and leads to an inability to separate the internal from the external. I spoke with Tom Fox before he died and he believed that I was given LSD. Kathy agrees.

In the book, *A Father, A Son and the CIA*, author Harvey Weinstein quotes an excerpt from the book, *Battle For The Mind: A Physiology of Conversion and Brainwashing*, by William Sargent: "If a complete, sudden collapse can be produced by prolonging and intensifying emotional stress, the cortical slate may be wiped clean temporarily of its recently implanted patterns of behavior, perhaps allowing others to be substituted more easily."

Weinstein summarizes the research objectives stated in a 1950 CIA BLUEBIRD memorandum:

1. Discover means of conditioning personnel to prevent unauthorized extraction of information by known means.
2. Investigate the possibility of control of an individual by application of special interrogation.
3. To study memory enhancement.
4. Establish defensive means for preventing hostile control of Agency personnel.
5. To evaluate offensive uses of unconventional interrogation techniques including hypnosis and drugs.

A 1952 CIA Project ARTICJOKE memorandum maps out further objectives:

"The evaluation and development of any method by which we can get information from a person against his will and without his knowledge. Can we get control of a person to the point where he will do our bidding against his will and even against such fundamental laws of nature as self preservation?"

Robert Hyde conducted CIA experiments in Projects BLUEBIRD, ARTICHOKE and MKULTRA. After years of investigation and consults with experts, I believe LSD, hypnosis and other forms of brainwashing were used on me while I was a patient in the Burlington hospitals and in VSH. I would have one more disturbing incident during therapy with Kathy that once would once again raise the question of implanted hypnotic suggestion.

After I recuperated from the adverse drug reaction I returned to the unit in December, 1987. All signs of the drug-induced "psychotic break" were gone and I tried to settle into the routine of the unit again. There were new patients on the unit and I became friends with two. Peggy was a young mother struggling with her own issues from childhood. She and I shared a hospital room and quickly became friends. Andrea joined in with Peggy and I and the three of us spent most of our time together.

It was still almost impossible for me to openly discuss the MPD although I did talk more freely with Mary and Lynne. I was still struggling to understand my illness and to be able to access information buried in my unconscious mind. The unit staff watched as I cycled through one personality after the other. There were child alters

and intensely protective alters. It still amazes me how consciously removed I was from my own self. Dr. Fox wanted me to deal with the MPD in private outpatient therapy and I was adamant that the only therapist I would see was Kathy Judge.

Kathy didn't have an opening in her schedule until January. The unit staff brought me the names of numerous local therapists and I rejected all of them. Kathy was the only therapist I would consider. Rosemary Johnson, who worked with Kathy in 1969 at Rutland County Mental Health, phoned Kathy. Rosemary reminded Kathy that she had known me in 1969 and told Kathy that she was the only therapist I would see. Dr. Fox also contacted Kathy to ask her to see me in therapy.

Kathy later told me that during the phone call with Tom Fox, he told her my diagnosis. Kathy told Tom that although she had experience in dissociation, she hadn't taken on a full-fledged multiple before and that she wasn't even sure that she believed in the disorder. Tom replied that she would believe.

"Why me?" Kathy asked Tom.

"Because she believes that it's you," Tom answered.

In January, 1988 Kathy Judge came to see me on the unit.

6

THERAPY, CHAOS AND INTEGRATION, 1988-1997

Kathy came to meet with me on the unit. I don't recall the details of our conversation except that I did acknowledge the MPD. I found it easy to talk with her and at the end of our meeting she agreed to see me in outpatient therapy. I remember feeling hopeful.

In 1969, when I attended the outpatient clinic where Rosemary and Kathy both worked, I never sought out Kathy to talk with. I watched her but I never approached her. She drove me home from the clinic one day and on an outing for the outpatient clinic, I recall swimming with her. In 1988, seeing Kathy again was just as if 1969 was yesterday.

Many years after that first meeting with Kathy, she told me that I presented one of my child alters during the meeting. Kathy would teach me in the years to come that despite what appeared to be self-destructive behavior or inexplicable behavior, that my personality system was organized to always insure my survival. MPD is the province of childhood trauma, as it usually develops in early childhood as a result of trauma. My expectations and assessments of the world and of people around me were based on a child's interpretations. In 1988, I was thirty-six years old, and I wasn't even close to understanding the illness that created such chaos in my life.

Although the MPD served its purpose by protecting my mind from unbearable early childhood trauma, the older I became, the more life-threatening the disorder became. My alter personalities were stuck back in a time long since passed and a great deal of the logic I used in my adult life was dictated by what Kathy described as " trance logic." I had frequent episodes of a cross-over in time where something in the present triggered off an emotional reaction that had much more to do with something that had happened in childhood. It didn't take Kathy long to realize that I had memory loss, but the extent of the memory loss wouldn't be discovered for several years.

In addition, despite the fact that I knew I was multiple, I was not consciously aware of the dissociations or what set them off. At times I

heard conversations in my head and at other times I became aware of seeing and talking with my alters. I wasn't yet able to comprehend that the alters were actually all me.

On the unit Peggy and I had grown to be good friends. We supported each other, laughed together and cried together. I couldn't handle seeing my family and I didn't think returning to my parent's home would turn out any better than it ever had. I carried a deep-seated sense of shame about being sick and when I was with my family it only seemed to intensify. I desperately wanted to be normal and to not be the way I was. I knew that they didn't understand. I didn't understand either. Dr Fox and Kathy agreed that it would be okay for me to live temporarily with Peggy and her family. Peggy and her husband agreed that the arrangement might be good for both Peggy and me. Although Peggy was aware of my diagnosis, she didn't really understand what I was going through and I didn't expect her to. Peggy was my friend and in February, 1988, I was discharged from the unit and moved in with Peggy and her family.

Peggy had four beautiful children ranging in age from nine to two years old. The kids accepted me into their home and we all got along well. I slept in one of the bunk beds in their room. I always loved kids and enjoyed being around them.

Kathy had her hands full. Over the years Kathy has described herself as a "plain vanilla" therapist. She wasn't prone to over-reaction and her solid, sane approach to therapy began to prove to me that she was someone I could lean on without fear that she would suddenly step aside and allow me to fall. She didn't have a secret agenda. The Kathy I saw one week would be the Kathy I found the following week.

I was at times defensive, aloof and fearful about trusting her too much. I tested her frequently and many times in the beginning of therapy I contemplated leaving therapy. But in 1988, I was out of options and I knew that my life could not continue the way it had.

Kathy began to seek out experts in MPD. She attended a conference given by Dr. Colin Ross early on in our therapy, as well as other well-known psychiatrists like Dr. Richard Kluft.

During the first few months of therapy I began to dissociate more often and my personalities became more separate. Kathy later told me that I actually didn't become more floridly multiple in therapy. She said that I had been floridly multiple for a very long time before she began seeing me. I began to feel safe enough in therapy to allow the alters to emerge and be acknowledged by Kathy. It was a very frightening time

for me.

For reasons that I cannot recall, I arranged to take out a loan at the bank in Morrisville to buy a car. The bank required me to sign the papers in person. Peggy cashed a check for me and dropped me off at the car rental agency. Once again I felt liberated and free behind the wheel of a rented car. I was no longer vulnerable and needy. I was capable and independent. As I drove along Route 100 toward Morrisville and listened to the FM radio, I felt transformed in every fiber of my being.

I signed the papers at the bank and returned to Rutland. I became increasingly uneasy at Peggy's for reasons I couldn't understand and I began to drive around in the rented car for hours at a stretch. My goal of buying a car had vanished.

I ate meals in diners and fast food restaurants and almost continuously drove. I began to feel a mounting and disturbing compulsion that I was at a loss to either explain or resist. Although I had no suicidal thoughts or feelings and no thoughts or feelings about harming anyone else, the strange compulsion overwhelmed my ability to resist. I purchased a pistol.

I drove away from the sporting goods store with the unloaded gun on the passenger seat. I began driving aimlessly searching for the place I was supposed to go. I wasn't sure where that place was or what I was supposed to do with the gun once I got there. I grew more confused as I drove, trying in vain to find the place I was supposed to go.

The compulsion was frightening. Whatever it was I was supposed to do was lost somewhere inside of me. I drove for hours until for the first time in my life I checked into a motel. I kept the pistol, now loaded, next to me on the bed in the motel room. For reasons I couldn't explain, being in a motel seemed to be a piece of the strange compulsion that was driving me. I waited, but I wasn't sure who or what I was waiting for.

My ease with the pistol both captivated and frightened me. I instinctively knew how to handle the gun. I loaded and unloaded it. I knew where the safety was and how to use it. The pistol felt natural in my hands. My mind raced to make sense of the situation.

The bed in the motel directly faced a large mirror and I sat on the bed and stared at myself in the mirror. I raised the loaded gun and placed it to my temple. I didn't feel suicidal but as I stared at my image in the mirror, I suddenly felt very frightened. I phoned Kathy.

Kathy later told me how frightened she was on the phone with me, fearing that I would either intentionally or accidently kill myself. Kathy made a decision when she first began therapy with me that she would never be a participant in having me sent to VSH and that night she hoped that I would safely unload the gun while we were on the phone.

After I unloaded the gun we talked for a long time. I tried to explain to her that I was not suicidal and did not have thoughts or feelings of harming anyone else. I was at a complete loss to explain the strange compulsion. Kathy instructed me to get rid of the gun before I came to her office. She would not see me while I remained in possession of the gun.

The next morning I checked out of the motel and contacted friends of mine who I knew would be safe with the gun and who would keep the entire situation quiet. The gun was eventually returned to the sporting goods store. I drove around for a long time, trying to understand what was happening to me. Eventually I drove to Kathy's office.

After learning that I had been used in experiments, this incident and the other episodes with guns, whether it was my familiarity with a gun or my accuracy when I fired a gun, came under close scrutiny. Kathy and I discussed the gun episodes many times and when I obtained declassified CIA documents and documents related to CIA Special Interrogations, I realized that my seemingly inexplicable knowledge and behavior related to guns may have come out of the experiments I was subjected to.

Declassified CIA documents describe Special Interrogation methods using unwitting subjects in hypnosis experiments. In one experiment a woman was placed in a hypnotic trance and instructed to pick up a gun and to fire it at another person. The woman did not know that the gun wasn't loaded. She was instructed that she would have amnesia for the event. The woman, who had expressed a fear of guns, picked the gun up and fired it at another person. She had no memory of the event. CIA use of guns in its mind control experiments has been written about in several well-known books.

I asked my brother if he had ever taught me to handle a pistol and he said no. He took me target shooting two or three times but a pistol was never used. Several people, including Kathy have told me that they would not have known how to load, unload or operate the safety of a pistol without prior instruction or experience with firearms. Yet I knew how to handle the pistol and I demonstrated an ability for accuracy

when I fired the rifle at the plastic Coke bottle.

The question of whether or not I was subjected to the use of a gun during the Special Interrogations conducted on me is a valid and disturbing question that remains unanswered by CIA, UVM and the State of Vermont. The medical records that I was able to obtain were incomplete and contain large sections where records are missing. The records I have contain no references to the use of guns. They do contain references to UVM Psychologist Patrick Sullivan visiting me once a week while I was in seclusion on 1A. Yet there are no notes about these visits and no notes about what he was doing when he visited me.

I have no idea how many times he visited me, or who asked him to visit me. I have one brief memory of him entering my seclusion room and telling me that I could not be hypnotized. My memory of Patrick Sullivan permanently ends with his statement. Until CIA, UVM and the State of Vermont acknowledge the CIA experiments and provide me with the answers by turning over the documents I am certain they are in possession of, I will be forced to continue to have to wonder exactly what they did to me.

When I parked my car at Kathy's office I found that I couldn't seem to open the car door. My mind felt numb and I struggled for several minutes to try and open the car door. I sat in the car feeling dazed by all that was happening to me. Kathy would later explain to me that the reason I couldn't seem to make my mind and body cooperate was that my mind shut down in an effort to protect me.

I was admitted to the unit. I couldn't explain to Dr. Fox why I bought the gun and it was difficult to explain the compulsion that drove me to purchase the weapon. I had as many questions as everyone else.

Dr. Fox and Kathy convinced me to go to a residential treatment facility called Spring Lake Ranch. The condition I was in required a protective environment and the Ranch seemed to be the appropriate place for me to be for a while. Mary was familiar with the Ranch and she and her husband Joe had worked there years earlier. I remained on the unit for several weeks before moving to the Ranch

I was in pretty bad shape. Everything seemed to overwhelm me to the point of having my mind shut down on me again and again. I was frequently reduced to tears by my inability to do even simple everyday tasks. Noises bothered me terribly and seemed to add to the fog that had enveloped my mind. I repeatedly asked Kathy if what I was going

through was expected during treatment for MPD and she tried to reassure me that it was.

Spring Lake Ranch was a unique residential treatment center for the mentally ill, located in rural Rutland County. Nestled at the top of a mountain, the Ranch had acres and acres of scenic pasturelands, woodlands and breath-taking views. Several houses were spread out over the property where several residents lived with house parents. The staff came to the Ranch from countries all over the world.

Based on the theory of work therapy, the Ranch had a working farm with livestock, a small chicken farm, huge vegetable gardens, hay fields and a thriving maple syrup business. Meals were eaten in a large dining room in the main house where residents had rooms upstairs and staff had offices downstairs. Residents were transported into Rutland to see their own therapists. The Ranch gave me an opportunity to live in a supportive and protected atmosphere while I tried to work through the MPD with Kathy.

Dr. Fox and Kathy decided to reveal my diagnosis to only a select few staff at the Ranch. I was floridly multiple and easily triggered into dissociation and as the weeks passed, the stress of dealing with dozens of people everyday began to take its toll. The amnesia I had made it impossible to figure out what had triggered me or why certain situations seemed to cause sudden dissociations. I wanted things to work out for me at the Ranch but I began to frequently go back and forth between the Ranch and the unit. I was at a loss to explain my behavior.

In child alter states I was vulnerable and dependent. When protective alters took over I became aggressive and more often than not, I ran from the Ranch. I often found myself miles from the Ranch, having hitchhiked away in an attempt to flee some unconsciously perceived threat. I could rarely explain my actions to anyone including myself. It was easier to let the people around me be angry with me than it was to try to explain myself.

I was increasingly afraid of my own mind. I didn't yet know what was driving me or what was triggering the dissociations and the longer I remained in therapy with Kathy, the more my life felt like it was spiraling out of control.

At the Ranch I became friends with a British woman who worked as staff. Jane was a horse lover and kept her horse at the Ranch. My roommate at the Ranch, Marianne and I became good friends, Marianne was struggling with the chaotic effects of bipolar disorder. Jane, the

British staff person came to me one day and told me that I was required to be seen by the psychiatrist working at the Ranch. I was not pleased about this. Dr. Fox was my doctor and I made sure my feelings were known.

Jane accompanied me up the stairs to see the Ranch psychiatrist, Dr. Hans Huessy. I made sure he knew that I was not pleased to have to see him and that I had no intention of talking to him about anything. Jane was noticeably uncomfortable.

"You spent quite a bit of time in VSH in the 60's and early 70's," Huessy began.

"Things were rough for you there. You and I don't have to talk about anything you don't want to talk about. I understand that you are a horse lover. I too have a love of horses."

Dr. Huessy and I talked about horses and nothing more. He told me that I did not have to see him again. I would see him one more time when a drug Dr. Fox had placed me on, began to build up in my system and cause me severe problems including throwing me into a manic state. Dr. Huessy stood in the hallway of the main house and pleaded with me to trust him when he assured me that Benadryl would help ease my symptoms. I was suspicious of what might be in the capsules. Huessy was gentle in his approach and stayed with me until I agreed to take the Benadryl

In 1989, I had no way of knowing that Dr. Hans Huessy had played a pivotal role in preventing me from being returned to the care of Dr. Otto Havas when I was transferred from Baird 6 to VSH in October, 1971. At the Ranch Huessy was, in retrospect, very aware of who I was and what he had done for me in 1971. After the meeting with Huessy at the Ranch, Jane remarked both about my defensive attitude toward Huessy and about his reactions toward me.

In my investigation into the CIA experiments, Dr. Hans Huessy appears to have had at least some degree of knowledge about my treatment by Havas at VSH. The specifics of what Huessy may or may not have known, I will very likely never learn. I never found him in any way associated with the CIA experiments. I will always be thankful that he stepped in and prevented Havas from having contact with me again. But I will always wonder exactly what he knew about my treatment at VSH.

After the adverse reaction to the drug, Dr Fox admitted me to the unit. My blood pressure was very high as a result of the adverse drug

reaction. He discontinued the drug. I was extremely depressed after the drug left my system and I felt increasingly overwhelmed by the increasingly chaotic state of my condition and by what I perceived as my failure to be able to live anywhere. Nothing seemed to help and while Kathy continued to try to reassure me that the process that was unfolding would lead me to be able to integrate my personalities, I was feeling more and more hopeless.

When I returned to the Ranch, I secluded myself from the residents and staff. Jane and Marianne tried to talk with me but I retreated inside of myself. On a weekend day I left the main house to walk up the hill to the house I lived in. As I turned the corner and walked across the driveway to my house, I suddenly realized what I had to do. It was as if one moment I was simply walking along and the next moment, seemingly out of nowhere, I was suicidal.

Marianne had plans that would take her out of the house for the rest of the day. I recall sitting on my bed as she called out goodbye to me. Without any emotion, I broke a bottle, sat down on my bed and began slicing my arm with vertical slashes. I have no idea how long I sat there before Marianne returned. Marianne had forgotten something and came back early.

Marianne called Jane and arrangements were made to drive me to the emergency room where I had over fifty stitches. I hadn't harmed myself since 1972 and I was very disturbed by the awakening of my self-destructive behavior. At the emergency room a mental health crisis worker spoke with me and I made it clear to her that I was not suicidal.

"If I had wanted to die, I assure you I would be dead," I looked her directly in the eyes when I spoke.

She believed me and I was allowed to return to the Ranch. Within days, I was returned to the unit. Dr. Fox and Kathy were concerned that I had harmed myself. Years later Kathy told me that she and Dr. Fox, as well as the staff at the unit and at the Ranch were all worried that I would commit suicide. I didn't want to die. I just wanted the pain to stop.

I understood that my life was at stake and that integration was my only hope. I had tried everything else over the years to try to survive and all that was left was to try to survive long enough to integrate. Kathy stood by me during extremely challenging times for me and for her as my therapist. There were times when I left her office when she was not sure I would be alive the next day. But we soldiered on and I remained in therapy.

Again I went back to the Ranch but I was unable to tolerate the stimulation produced by my interaction with all of the people at the Ranch. Kathy later explained to me that because of my florid dissociations I was too susceptible to unconscious triggers from the other people at the Ranch. I wanted things to work out at the Ranch but it was not to be. After returning to the unit, I began to rethink my options.

When I revealed my plan to Kathy and Dr. Fox, they received the news that I wanted to try to live in my own apartment with trepidation. They agreed to allow me to contact my bank for a loan so that I could rent a car and have enough money to rent an apartment. Dr. Fox and Kathy later told me that neither of them believed that I would secure a loan, but I did. I rented a car, drove to Morrisville to sign the papers at the bank and returned to the unit. Dr. Fox wanted me to remain on the unit until I found an apartment and during the day I went out looking for a place to live.

I found a very small efficiency apartment. I bought a sleeping bag and slept on the floor until I was able to get a bed. I was able to find an old lamp and some other necessities. I picked up my belongings from the Ranch and was finally discharged from the unit. Kathy was supportive of my trying to live on my own and Peggy, Jane and Marianne also tried to show me support. I was thirty-six years old and I was living on my own, in my own apartment for the first time in my life.

Therapy continued to push me to the edge. Numerous alters came forward during therapy and Kathy tried to understand why they had been created. Several of my alters were children, stuck in a time long ago. Several more alters were teenagers, aggressive and defiant. Kathy slowly built a trusting therapeutic relationship with as many of the alters as she could.

Looking back I appreciate how dedicated Kathy was. Many therapists would have thrown up their hands and walked away but Kathy stayed and worked with me. We spent many hours on the phone in between scheduled sessions. I seemed to be going from one crisis to another. Several times Kathy found me in near catatonic states and other times I found myself in other cities and towns, unsure of how I got there or how long I'd been gone.

In 1989, my father died of leukemia. It was painful to see him so terribly thin and sick. The night he died I couldn't sleep all night and I sat alone in my apartment and cried. My father was a sweet, gentle man who only wanted his children to have good lives. I know that my

illness and my hospitalizations tore him up. I will always be grateful for the time we had together when I had King.

There were times when I lost almost all hope that I would survive, much less integrate. During those low points, Kathy was able to maintain hope until I was once again able to begin to hope for myself. There is absolutely no doubt in my mind that without Kathy Judge, I would not have survived.

In 1990, I moved into a larger apartment. I immediately felt that the new apartment was a place I might call home. My landlords, Jules and Mary, who owned the house were easy-going and helpful. I lived a very quiet life in the apartment. I rarely had visitors and paid all my bills on time. The apartment upstairs in Jules and Mary's house has been my home for twenty-two years.

My last stay on the unit when Dr. Tom Fox was the Clinical Director of the Rutland psychiatric unit in 1989 was sobering for me. Dr. Fox told me that he had taken another job in New Hampshire. I was devastated by the news. Tom had been an important and a safe presence in my life for seven years. Dr. Tom Fox, like Dr. Judy Nepvue had shown me that not every psychiatrist was to be feared. Tom told me that if a time came when I really needed him I could phone him. He gave me his new phone number and a warm hug goodbye.

For me, the loss of Dr. Fox meant that the unit was no longer a safe place for me. Lynne Colville tried to explain to me that I would be safe on the unit. I wasn't buying it. I managed to stay off the unit for quite a while until another crisis put me back in the hospital. Every time I was readmitted, I felt ashamed that I couldn't seem to pull myself together and get on with my life. I felt that no matter how hard I tried or how hard people who were trying to help me tried, I continued to spiral out of control again and again. The unit staff continued to support me and they gave me all that they had learned as registered psychiatric nurses. More importantly for me, they gave to me of themselves. The unit nurses became fond of me and I definitely became fond of them. I could see in their faces the emotion that they felt when I was struggling through one crisis after the other. They gave me the best of themselves as well as the best possible care.

In all of my stays on the unit I always avoided the group therapy sessions until I stabilized. I was usually in crisis when I first arrived and the stress and stimulation of the groups only served to make things worse for me. After the initial crisis had calmed, group therapy was more often than not very helpful.

The new psychiatrist on the unit came into my hospital room and introduced himself as Dr. Alan Shirks. He insisted that I attend the group meetings and my attempts to explain why I needed to delay attending the groups for a little while fell on deaf ears. It didn't take me long to decide that I would be safer weathering the storm alone in my own apartment. I left the unit against medical advice and didn't return for nearly seven years.

Therapy with Kathy continued to be excruciating. Many of my memories of therapy during this time are sketchy at best. As Kathy and I worked toward integration I rarely left my apartment and with very few exceptions I had little contact with other people. Peggy and I had drifted apart as I worked toward integration and she tried to get on with her own life. I saw less and less of Jane as I withdrew from practically everyone.

Around 1994, I began to have terrible repetitive dreams filled with nightmarish images and scenarios. Night after night for months on end the dreams haunted me for hours after I was awake. Kathy tried to help me understand the dreams that were filled with images of the piece of land my parents bought for me to ride my horse on in 1963. I dreamed about guns and many of the dreams contained graphic sexual images. I couldn't seem to escape the dreams and the longer they went on the more distressed I became.

When I was a small child I spent a good deal of time with my older next-door neighbor, Janet. She was in her early twenties when I was about four years old. I always recalled her taking me across the river onto the land my parents eventually bought from her parents. The repetitive dreams continued and I finally decided to phone Janet.

I felt ridiculous asking Janet if anything out of the ordinary or traumatic had ever happened on the land when she was with me.

"Yes, traumatic things did happen there," Janet began.

I was so shocked when Janet confirmed that something traumatic had actually happened when I was with her on the land, that I backed up against the wall in my kitchen and slowly slid down and sat on the floor. I listened as Janet described two incidents when someone fired a gun over our heads as we walked on the land. She told me that the bullets were so close that she heard them fly past her head. She claimed not to know the identity of the shooter. She said I was four years old and that I ran away from the gunshots and from her. In disbelief I questioned her about the shooting happening a second time and she confirmed that a second shooting incident did happen.

It's difficult to explain what it was like to hear someone describe events like these and realize that I had no memory. My head spun listening to Janet, but I realized that I had just learned something important. I phoned Kathy.

Kathy arranged for Janet to come to the office and talk with her and me. Kathy later told me that Janet called a few times and tried to back out of the meeting but she finally came to Kathy's office. I hadn't seen Janet in many years and I was pleased to see her again but I also had questions about why she remained silent about these incidents for years.

Janet talked for four hours. She described the two shooting incidents for Kathy and noted that some of the bullets remained lodged in the side of her father's barn for years. This was the same barn where I kept my first horse in 1960. When Janet began talking about her husband Willy's sexual relationships with his own daughters, I was absolutely shocked beyond belief. I knew him when I was a small child and in later years. He was frequently with Janet when I was a child.

It took me hours after Janet left Kathy's office to realize that Janet might have identified the person who sexually molested me as a child. Dr. Judy Nepvue had raised the issue of early childhood sexual molestation with me in 1981, but I had no memory of any such activity. I had scattered images and body sensations that went with sexual molestation but there was nothing else. Kathy also determined that I had the symptoms of childhood sexual molestation and she, unlike me, immediately recognized what Janet was telling us. Kathy also recognized, as I would later, that the piece of land that my parents bought in 1960 was not only the site of childhood trauma, but that in the dissociated world of a small child, I incorporated this piece of land into my MPD.

In therapy, as Kathy and I tried to understand the layout of my internal world, numerous alters had frequently referred to the place where the alters existed internally. This place was called "the land." Until Janet provided the information, neither Kathy nor I realized that "the land" was a literal place.

I phoned Janet a second time and directly asked her if her husband had sexually molested me. She said yes. I was stunned. I asked her why she had remained silent about this even after I was hospitalized at age thirteen. She knew that I had been committed to VSH and she knew that no one seemed to have a clue as to why I suffered such a severe breakdown. She didn't answer.

Traumatic amnesia is a very frustrating and disturbing condition to have. No amount of effort spent trying to remember works to free up the blocked memories. The only glimpses into my early childhood trauma came from the repetitive dreams and they continued. I had flashes of images in my mind of the gunshots, of running away and of hiding under the wooden bridge.

I began to have dreams about a yellow cat. The cat sat on Janet's parents' lawn looking sick. In the dreams I felt terrified and I wanted to protect the yellow cat. The dream came over and over, night after night and I awakened feeling horrified and helpless.

After learning that Janet had information I decided to phone one of my cousins who lived close by when I was small. I asked her if there was ever a yellow cat that could in any way figure into a traumatic experience when I was a child.

June described a horrific incident. The yellow cat belonged to Janet's parents and the cat had been very sick. Janet's father shot the cat and buried it. Janet's mother became hysterical upon realizing that the cat that had been buried was not dead. Janet's father immediately dug the cat up and repeatedly fired bullets into it. June said I would have been about three years old.

When I told Kathy about my conversation with June I realized that I witnessed the entire event. As the images flooded my mind in Kathy's office I began to feel panicked. I was overcome with fear and no matter how I tried to push the images and the feelings away from me, they just kept coming. I never recovered the full memory of this horrific event but the fragmented images and gut-wrenching emotion that had begun with the repetitive dreams spilled out of me.

I began asking my mother if there was ever anything traumatic that might have happened when I was a small child and I was stunned by her reply. Mom told me that when I was nine months old and just beginning to stand up, I pulled a coffee table over onto myself. The table cut my mouth badly and I bled heavily. Mom became hysterical and phoned the doctor. Apparently I too became hysterical.

Mom also told me about the incident with the low flying jets when I was eighteen months old, which produced hysteria in me. She told me that when I was two years old my father took me with him to a house fire in town. When the windows blew out of the house, I became hysterical. My aunt was at the fire and convinced my father to leave and take me home. One of my cousins also remembered this event.

I learned that when I was three years old Dad took me to a fire. He stood near the old railroad station in town and held me because my feet were bare and there was broken glass all around the railroad tracks. When the people in the crowd who had come to watch the fire were told that a woman was trapped in the burning house, a wave of horror swept through the crowd. Apparently I struggled to get away from my father but he wouldn't let me down onto the railroad tracks. This fatal fire was confirmed by a cousin, by Janet who was present at the fire that day, and by a 1955 *Rutland Herald* newspaper article.

Kathy helped me understand the implications of the information. My inability to bury the rat I shot after King died and my unexplained aversion to the "dead man" set up on King's gate were attached to the yellow cat being buried alive when I was three or four years old. The very first flashback I had when I lived in Waterbury Center when I had images of railroad tracks and my own bare feet was about the fatal fire when I was three years old. This flashback had been set off by a chimney fire.

Guns played a role in my early childhood trauma. My brother had been shot during deer hunting when I was two years old and although I never recovered any memories of seeing him after he came home to recover or of the incident when his wound hemorrhaged, there is a likelihood that some portion of my mind retained the memory. Kathy tried to help me deal with the information about Willy but it remained out of reach for me.

During this time, I spoke regularly with Kathy on the phone and we discussed the emerging information and talked about the repetitive dreams I continued to have. It was about this time that I began to receive hang-up phone calls at three o'clock in the morning. Night after night the phone would ring and when I got out of bed to answer, whoever was on the phone hung up. This led to my contacting the phone company. They placed a trap on my phone twice and the calls started again after the second trap was removed, I was informed that the phone company believed my phone was wiretapped.

It wouldn't be until after 1997 that I learned that the tap was extremely sophisticated and was very likely placed on my line by the government - specifically by the CIA. Of course I cannot definitely prove that the CIA has wire tapped my phone. They are too good at what they do to allow themselves to be identified, but information I have been given by phone technicians and by security officials at the phone company leaves little doubt about the identity of who wiretapped my phone. Who else not only has the sophistication to wiretap in this

manner but who else would be even remotely interested in the content of my phone conversations? Perhaps the NSA did the taps on behalf of the CIA.

The timing of the 3 A.M. phone calls coincides with my emerging memory and after fifteen years of investigation into the Vermont CIA experiments, it's clear to me why CIA might be interested. Inducing permanent memory loss was at the top of the list for MKULTRA experiments. CIA spent a lot of time, money and man hours researching whether or not they could produce a permanent state of amnesia. The wiretap, along with stolen certified mail and harassment by strangers began only after I filed the lawsuit and began filing FOIA requests with the federal government. My phone may have been wiretapped in other places I lived but I have no way of knowing for sure.

Kathy spent years preparing me for integration and as we worked in therapy I was repeatedly shocked to learn about the previously hidden world my mind had constructed to defend and protect me from the impact of the childhood trauma. I began to understand why I felt such anger toward my mother and why the anger started after my parents bought the piece of land.

Kathy explained that a small child believes that the mother is all-knowing and can see and is aware of everything that happens. Kathy called this "magical thinking." She explained that when I was being shot at or when Willy was molesting me, my four-year old mind absolutely believed that my mother would know and rescue me. Because I had amnesia for the trauma, I was unable to go home and tell my mother what had happened to me, but as a small child I believed that the mother not only knew what had happened but that she didn't rescue me.

My mother was in the crowd the day of the fatal fire and when the crowd realized that a woman was trapped inside of the burning house, she and my aunt moved a considerable distance from where my father stood holding me. My mother later said that she was so horrified by the news that a woman was trapped in the building that she had to get away. She believed that I was okay with my father. Kathy also explained that when I had the two episodes of hysteria at nine months and again at eighteen months, the fact that my mother also had a hysterical reaction would have compounded the impact on me.

The onset of my suicidal feelings when I was eleven years old coincides with both the purchase of the piece of land by my parents and of the beginning of puberty. The changes in my body as an

adolescent would have set off an onslaught of disturbing emotions and sensations. Despite the amnesia for the trauma, my unconscious mind was reacting.

For the first time since I was hospitalized at the age of thirteen, things began to make sense. Kathy said that my reactions and behavior made a lot of sense once we understood the basis of the dissociations. One of the biggest challenges for me was to be able to understand and accept that my personalities were aspects of me. They were me and I was them. There was a "disconnect" in this logic for me and although on a conceptual basis I understood what Kathy was saying, I couldn't "own" it. Even when I knew that the other personalities were indeed aspects of me, they still seemed like other people to me

I was also very concerned that if I integrated the personalities that had protected me for forty years, I would be left totally vulnerable and unable to function. Despite Kathy's assurances that this would not be the case, I continued to fear integration would render me helpless.

I heard the voices of my personalities inside of my head. They urged me to run. They warned me that I was going to die. At times they talked about me among themselves as if I wasn't there. They woke me up at night calling my name. One night as I sat watching television, I heard coming from outside my window a child screaming in pain and fear. I rushed to the window but I couldn't see anything. I crouched under the window so that no one would be able to see me as the screams of the child grew louder. I looked out the window again to see what was happening and to see if anyone else heard the child's cries. It took me several minutes to calm down and to realize that the likelihood was that the screams and cries that I heard were not coming from outside my window in 1996 but that they were part of a flashback to 1956. Flashbacks or abreactions, as Kathy described them, were so real and involved so many physical and emotional components that while they were happening, I couldn't tell until after the fact that they came from my mind.

I couldn't sleep. Night after night I sat in my living room struggling with feelings of doom and the effects of nightmares. I felt trapped by my own mind. I had powerful physical sensations in which nothing I tried to do to alleviate the constant pull at me relieved the pressure. I told Kathy it was almost like being hungry or wanting a cigarette. I couldn't satisfy the terrible mounting pressure no matter what I did.

I began to feel suicidal and I worried that in trying to integrate I would become so ravaged by my own mind that I would either

successfully kill myself or even worse, that I would be sent back to VSH. I felt as if I were staring into an abyss.

I had a strange, compelling dream filled with images of a cat and kittens. Although I don't recall all the content of the dream, I do know that it set off dangerous suicidal feelings. I told Kathy about the dream. There was something about the dream that made me feel desperate and I sat for hours with a rope in my hands. I had thoughts of hanging myself and the conflict over whether to live or die tormented me.

Kathy recognized that I was in serious trouble and made arrangements to have me placed on the unit. I heard her talking with Lynne Colville as I sat in her office.

"If she isn't admitted, I don't think she will be alive tomorrow," Kathy told Lynne.

I knew that Kathy was right and I was afraid.

Kathy drove me to the hospital. I remember walking with her as we approached the doors of the unit and I hesitated. Kathy took my arm and guided me through the doors of the unit where Tammy, a nurse I had known and trusted showed me to my room. Much of the next few days are a blur to me. I knew the staff and they knew me and we all knew that I was truly in a fight for my life.

I met with Dr. Alan Shirks, the same psychiatrist I walked away from a few years earlier. This time Dr. Shirks was very different. He seemed to understand what I was going through and his kindness and the degree to which he appeared to be resonating with the powerful emotions I was struggling with showed me a very different approach than I had experienced the first time I met him.

I was repeatedly overcome by anguish and I couldn't shut off the pain, the fear or the grief that racked my body and my mind. The staff helped me understand that the grief that I felt was coming to the surface after forty years of being repressed. Marlene, my primary nurse helped guide me through intense episodes of grief in which the pain and my inability to shut it off frightened me so much that I thought I was losing my mind. Marlene told me that some of the grief was related to my recognition of all that I had lost to the forty years as a multiple.

Other staff including Lynne, Tammy, Lesa, Susan, Rosemary and Mary literally held me in their arms at times, helping me to hold myself together. I saw the emotion in their faces and at times I saw tears in their eyes as they sat with me. If they could have willed me to survive the onslaught of emotions they would have done so.

Mary took a job in Maine shortly after I integrated and she and her husband Joe and I have remained in contact. Susan died a few years ago after being diagnosed with a brain tumor. Rosemary passed away last year. Lesa, who I first met in 1982 when she was still a nursing student, is now head nurse on the unit. Tammy and her husband moved to Arizona a couple of years ago. Lynne retired as the unit's head nurse and continues to work in Rutland county counseling patients. The last time I saw Marlene was the night I was admitted to intensive care with a heart attack.

Kathy and I talked about these nurses after I successfully integrated and we both agreed that without the support and caring they demonstrated to me, I very likely would not have survived the integration. I needed what they were able to give to me. Back when I was in Copley hospital, one nurse named Debbie G. told me that when Dr. Nepvue asked her to sit with me on her shift, Debbie G. was afraid. She said that she wasn't a psychiatric nurse and that she was afraid that she would say or do something to make me worse. Debbie G. told me that what she discovered that day she spent with me was that all she needed to do was be a human being.

I was exposed to the worst of psychiatric care in VSH and I was exposed to the worst of human nature there as well. Yet I was also fortunate enough to have been exposed to the very best in psychiatric care from nurses in Baird 6, Copley and in the Rutland Regional Medical Center psychiatric unit, where the very best of human nature was given to me. Although the doctors on Baird 6 were apparently involved in the experiment, the nurses, for the most part, tried to help me. All of the dedicated nurses on the Rutland Regional Medical Center Psychiatric unit played a key role in helping me survive the integration process and I will always be grateful to them.

I felt fragile and very much younger than my actual age of forty. As the days passed, I began to realize that, as Kathy told me, I had experienced a spontaneous abreaction that set off the integration. The terrible physical sensations of pain and choking along with the sheer terror that overtook me were all parts of the trauma from early childhood that led to the MPD and the amnesia. Much of the content of the actual events from my childhood never returned in actual memory, but enough did so that the integration process could continue. Kathy reminded me often that it was a process and that it would take time for me to complete the integration.

Dr. Shirks explained to me that during the second shooting when I ran from the gunshots and hid beneath the wooden bridge, my four-

year old mind believed that I was about to suffer the same fate as the yellow cat I had earlier seen shot and buried alive. Dr. Shirks told me that it was when I was hiding under the bridge that I suffered the dissociative trauma that made me multiple. He told me that as a small child I identified with the cat and that identification set me up to have the anthropomorphic and dissociative experience I had with King.

By April 1996, I had been on the unit nearly two months. Kathy and the staff helped me understand that the rage I felt about my mother was displaced rage and was a result of both the trauma and the amnesia. I understood that when as an eleven-year old child I once again began to walk on the piece of land where the trauma had taken place years before, a whole range of emotions overtook me. The amnesia prevented me from being able to attach my feelings to those events and my rage was displaced onto my mother. Many of my personalities were children who were trapped in 1956 forever. For the next forty years, much of how I interpreted the world around me and how I interpreted my own emotional responses to people and to events was driven by a child's perceptions about life.

In therapy I learned about my personalities and that they were created to protect me. I had child alters who constructed an elaborate internal world where good always triumphed over evil. I had a personality who played guitar. I had a personality who was an artist and another personality who was obsessed with horses. One personality was consumed with spiritual matters, while several others were protective personalities who ran away and escaped dangerous situations. Several of the personalities appeared to have endured the brunt of the VSH years. Over the years to come in therapy, Kathy and I would not learn much at all about those several personalities. I remain blocked from knowing why the alters existed and what their roles were.

It took five years after integration before I played the guitar again. The mechanics were there but there was no motivation. The experience was empty. When I began playing guitar again, I discovered that my ability had improved a great deal. The same was true for drawing and it took over a decade before I was able to draw again. After the heartbreaking loss of King, I found it nearly impossible to be near horses. To this day I stay away from them.

After I learned that I had been used in drug and mind control experiments, the possibility that this group of personalities had been created during the research I was subjected to was discussed by Kathy and me. Before Dr. Tom Fox died in 2002, he advised Kathy to never explore this group of alters because the possibility that they were

created in the covert research was a valid concern.

I was discharged from the unit in April, 1996 and I returned to my apartment to try to live my life as an integrated multiple. At the time I didn't realize that I still had the capacity to dissociate under certain conditions and it would take me a long time to actually accept this as a part of my life.

I struggled with painful realizations about my life. Kathy and I talked about the series of childhood traumas and I had difficulty understanding why all of those things had happened to me at such a young age. It was as if I never had a chance at a normal life because of the trauma that began when I was only nine months old. Kathy said she believed that if the shootings and the molestation had not occurred, the chances of my becoming multiple would have been much less.

The MPD protected me from what could have been a psychosis but I also understood all that I had lost because of the disorder. I fell into a deep depression. Kathy tried to help me understand that grief was a part of the healing process and that feeling the grief and the sense of loss about my life was a necessary part of healing. My therapy continued and I tried to adjust to actually feeling my own emotions, which was at times an overwhelming experience.

In the fall of 1997, I tried to explain to Kathy that something I didn't understand was happening to me and I found it very hard to describe. It was as if some other world was descending on me and that this world was a very terrible place that I felt was drawing me into it. It was as if I were trapped between this world and some other dreadful existence that I couldn't fully comprehend. It was during this time that Kathy suggested that I try to write a narrative of my life, which led me to pick up the phone and request my medical records from the State of Vermont. I would soon learn that this terrible world that was drawing me in and tormenting me was a world I had lived in many years before.

In 1997, I thought that I knew what had happened to me but when the VSH records revealed that I had been used in covert drug and mind control experiments, I would spend the next fifteen years obtaining documents and investigating the CIA MKULTRA research conducted in Vermont.

I doubt that anyone could be prepared to learn that they had been covertly experimented on by hospitals, doctors and the CIA and in this respect I was no different. The realization was profoundly shocking and disturbing for me, my family and for Kathy. Tom Fox reacted with anger and disgust that so much information had been intentionally kept from

me and from all subsequent caregivers.

In the years after the lawsuit was over I continued to investigate and to obtain original source documents. I felt a deep-seated sense of anger and rage over the experimentation and all that my medical records revealed that I had been subjected to. I felt betrayed by the doctors, by the hospitals, by the State of Vermont and by the CIA. I think that I, like many other VSH patients confined in the state mental hospital, was considered to be expendable, but as my investigation continued over the years I began to wonder if VSH and the CIA took the concept of expendable people to its ultimate conclusion.

7

AFTERMATH

I taught myself how to investigate the Vermont CIA Experiments beginning with the name of Hyde and the names and information in the VSH book, *The Vermont Story*. Over the next fifteen years, as I obtained original source documents and purchased books by authors like John Marks, Martin Lee and Dr. Colin Ross, I learned about the CIA drug and mind control programs generally referred to as MKULTRA. The fifteen-year search for the truth about what happened to me and thousands of other VSH patients changed me forever.

I was repeatedly lied to by my State, by the federal government, by CIA and by agencies that funded VSH-UVM experiments. I learned that my elected officials in the State and in the federal government did not want to hear about the Vermont CIA experiments and I learned first-hand that almost without exception, no United States Senator, Congressman, or other official was willing to assist me in finding the proof about the Vermont CIA experiments. When confronted with original source documents, no State of federal official would respond, with the exception of Senator Bernie Sanders. Even Sanders was not willing to go public with the information.

There is very little published material about Robert Hyde. Despite the major role he played in the CIA programs, he still appears to be the CIA researcher who remains most closely guarded by CIA. The 1977 newspaper article on CIA MKULTRA mentioned his name in passing but spent more time focusing on Hyde's defenders. H.P. Albarelli's book, *A Terrible Mistake*, notes that Hyde has been pretty much overlooked in the CIA MKULTRA programs. I do know that obtaining information and documentation on Hyde is extremely difficult and that thirty-five years after Hyde's death, CIA continues to classify many of his research projects and, as Dr. Colin Ross and I discovered, CIA refuses to acknowledge Hyde's projects or allow FOIA requests to be fulfilled.

In a November 30, 2008, *Rutland Herald-Barre Times Argus* front-page newspaper article, by Associated Press reporter Louis Porter, entitled "Evidence Suggests CIA Experiments at State Hospital," Vermonters and the rest of the country were exposed to the first information about VSH CIA experiments. The article was primarily

based on my medical records and on Hyde and the VSH CIA experiments. Eighteen months earlier I had walked into *Rutland Herald* Editor Randal Smathers' office after we spoke on the phone. I presented Smathers with original source documents about VSH-UVM and showed him portions of my medical records.

Randal Smathers remarked that many people had come into his office in the past and demanded that he investigate their concerns on various subjects, but that I was the very first person to come to him with documented proof. Smathers contacted Louis Porter and Louis spent eighteen months investigating the Vermont CIA experiments. When the article came out, no Vermont local news programs on television mentioned the Vermont CIA experiments. *Rutland Herald* Editorial Page Editor, David Moats wrote in the editorial that ran in the issue about the VSH CIA experiments that although there had been opportunities for the CIA experiments at VSH to be made public, including my lawsuit in 1998, information had not been made public. Since the 2008 article, I have obtained much more evidence and the 2008 article did not contain information about the VSH patient deaths.

I attempted to contact the national news media several times over the last fifteen years, but none of the outlets I contacted were interested. I contacted CNN, ABC, NBC, FOX, CBS, and the *New York Times*. They were not interested. I found this to be curious at best. News organizations seem to like to get a story that involves government cover-ups but in this case, they were not even willing to hear me out. Fortunately for me, I don't give up easily.

In 2009, Dr. Colin Ross, who I had remained in contact with after the lawsuit ended in 2002, asked me if I would be interested in speaking to a London-based documentary film producer about possibly appearing in a documentary about the CIA programs. I agreed to speak with the producer.

I was filmed for a documentary in August, 2009. It was an experience I never thought I'd have in my life. The film, *The Real Bourne Identity*, also had Matt Damon in it as well as many former CIA agents. Dr. Colin Ross held up my medical records and stated that because of the types of drugs in my records and the methods employed by VSH, he believed I had been a subject of experimentation.

The London, England film crew, Blink Films spent four hours with me and stopped on the way to film VSH. The documentary was shown on the Smithsonian Channel in 2010.

I still deal with the effects of both my illness and with the

knowledge that I was a CIA research subject and that CIA, VSH, UVM, the State of Vermont and the federal government refuse to provide me with the information about the CIA experiments I was subjected to. I have bouts of severe depression, anxiety, insomnia, PTSD and I still dissociate in certain circumstances. The autoimmune disorders haven't been active for a while now, but they remain a concern. I am sixty years old now. Practically my entire life has been caught up in one way or another in trying to understand and learn what really happened to me in VSH and I still do not know.

The last fifteen years have been filled with anger, frustration, disillusionment, disgust and a deep sadness about the behavior of the State of Vermont and the federal government. Not only have I been lied to and deceived, but my family has been lied to and deceived. Vermonter's have been lied to, deceived, manipulated, used, abused and possibly died as a result of the VSH-UVM CIA experiments. It is clear when reading the Report on the 1977 Senate Hearings that the Senators were far more interested in protecting the rights of universities, hospitals, the individual researchers and the United States government than they were interested in safeguarding the rights of those who were used in the CIA experiments. It appears as if in America there are expendable people and in Vermont, they are the mentally ill.

There were no consequences for the CIA. There were no consequences for the universities and hospitals. The actions of all involved in the covert experiments were criminal. The actions of VSH-UVM, as evidenced in their own research project documents were, if not criminal (and they may indeed have been criminal), violations of internationally accepted methods of conducting research, violations of the civil and Constitutional rights of every unwitting subject used in the experiments and violations of each physician's Hippocratic Oath.

The CIA drug and mind control programs were done, according to the CIA, to protect America from enemy threats. The experiments were inspired by the content of the medical records found in the Nazi concentration camps. What was done to me and to thousands of others in VSH did nothing to protect me or them - quite the contrary. The CIA experiments served only the interests of the CIA and their stated reasons for conducting the experiments were to gain control of human beings. The experiments used unwitting American citizens because these experiments were unethical, immoral and illegal as stated in the declassified CIA documents. These experiments harmed all of us as Americans and the cover-up continues even now.

Every time I contacted an elected official and requested assistance, I

got another lesson in how my government works to protect my rights. I learned that my Senators and Congressmen and others in positions of power were not interested in my rights as an American citizen nor were they interested in the fact that almost 3000 VSH patients died during the twenty years the experiments were conducted. CIA chose its unwitting subjects carefully and usually chose them based on the fact that they were vulnerable Americans. I certainly was vulnerable when they chose me at age thirteen. Thousands of VSH patients were vulnerable when CIA chose them as well. Sadly, I've learned much about who my government really values.

My father died in 1989 and he never had the chance to know what happened to his daughter. My mother just turned eighty-eight years old and she often tells me that she prays that she will live long enough to find out the rest of what was done to me in VSH. I've been investigating the Vermont CIA experiments for fifteen years now and with very few exceptions, no one in the State or federal government has been willing either to acknowledge the Vermont CIA experiments or conduct any type of investigation into the experiments.

CIA defenders like to point out that the drug and mind control programs have already been investigated and that nothing new would be learned. I beg to differ. If I have been able to document the massive presence of CIA in Vermont institutions, what might the government with all its resources be able to learn? The lack of interest in an investigation has everything to do with making sure that the CIA activities in Vermont remain covered up. Protecting the CIA appears to be the government's priority, not protecting the rights of American citizens.

I had my memory stolen, my physical health ruined, and my emotional health almost destroyed. I was tortured, as the records demonstrate. I had my freedom taken away from me and I will never know what my life might have been if not for the secret activities of the CIA and UVM-VSH. Nothing will give me back what they took from me.

There is a massive, coordinated State and federal cover-up ongoing in Vermont. Every Vermont citizen has been lied to and deceived. Every American citizen has been lied to and deceived. I am certain that the CIA, VSH-UVM and the federal government never anticipated that anyone would uncover the Vermont CIA experiments, but I did. It is time for those responsible for the Vermont CIA experiments and for the massive, coordinated State and federal cover-up to acknowledge both what happened in Vermont institutions and to acknowledge the cover-up.

I have a right to know what happened to me. Many of my medical records are missing and those missing records very likely hold the answers to the questions that remain concerning what was done to me during the experiments. Vermonters have a right to know what happened in their State. American citizens have the right to know that the country as a whole was lied to and deceived by the CIA experiments and by the actions of all concerned in covering up the Vermont CIA experiments.

I will never stop trying to learn the full extent of what happened to me and to thousands of other VSH patients. I will never know what my life might have been if only I had been admitted to a hospital at the age of thirteen that was not conducting CIA research. But what I am certain of is that the research conducted at VSH-UVM had nothing to do with medical science. It had everything to do with evil. There simply isn't another word that better describes what happened in the VSH-UVM CIA experiments.

I survived the Vermont CIA experiments. Many other VSH patients did not survive and their voices are silenced forever. I have a voice and I am using it for all of us who were unwitting subjects of the Vermont CIA experiments.

November, 2013

During the first week of September, 2013, I found a package of documents from the CIA at my door. Much to my surprise, the documents were Hyde's more fully declassified MKULTRA Subprojects 8, 10, 63 and 66. These documents were the Hyde Subprojects that CIA refused to make any determination on after I filed a FOIA and an appeal in 2003, which led me to go to the Executive Secretary Interagency Security Classification Panel (ISCAP). ISCAP informed me at the time that CIA refused to make any determination, and that essentially kept ISCAP from making any determination and kept my request in limbo. For reasons known only to CIA, ten years later I received the documents.

Although the Hyde documents are still not fully declassified, the new declassification sheds important light on his activities for the CIA. One of the most startling new pieces of information in Hyde's Subprojects is the name of a previously unknown CIA subproject.

Hyde's MKULTRA Subproject 63 involved the use of LSD, LAE,

alcohol and the mapping of "social personality" types. MKULTRA Subproject 63 was renamed MKCOTTON in 1961 and it was funded through Human Ecology. The funding for Hyde's Subproject is signed for by Sidney Gottlieb and addressed to payee John Gittinger - dated December, 1961. Under the heading for charge allotment number M125-1390-3902 is the date - stamped in two separate places - August 25 and August 26, 1964.

Another document dated April 8, 1964 shows funding invoices received by Human Ecology in 1962. The certification date for the expenditures is April 22, 1964.

MKULTRA Subproject 63 was closed in December 1961 and was "integrated into the total research effort of Human Ecology," and renamed MKCOTTON.

In 1964, Robert Hyde was the Assistant Commissioner of Mental Health in Vermont. Rupert Chittuck, Superintendent of VSH, was Commissioner of Mental Health in Vermont. In 1964, UVM-VSH had research contracts involving the use of Gittinger's PAS and sent the results of the CIA psychological test directly to Gittinger at CIA headquarters in Washington, DC. UVM-VSH contracts with Psychological Assessment Associates and the use of Gittinger's PAS are noted in UVM-VSH documents and cited by Richard York as beginning in 1958.

On October 7, 2013, I filed a Vermont Records Act request with the Vermont Department of Mental Health requesting, "Research contracts, invoices, funding sources and applicable financial documents, excluding USPHS, NIH, NIMH, HEW, VOC REHAB for VSH-UVM projects OM-372, 1958, NO.1-1-R11-MH 01076, 1963, MH-10176, 1966, funded in 1958, 1963 and 1966 by The Society For The Investigation For Human Ecology, 201 East 57th Street, N.Y., N.Y, and Psychological Assessment Associates, 1834 Connecticut Avenue, NW, Washington DC."

A response from the State of Vermont dated October 16, 2013 reads:

"The records you requested in your letter dated October 7, 2013, are not available because they were discarded pursuant to a public records retention schedule, effective March 3, 2010, on file with the State Archives and Records Administration."

"Under the records retention schedule, contracts are retained for three years past the expiration date of the contract. Generally, financial files, (invoices, payment information, etc.) are kept for five years beyond

the end of the fiscal year they were relevant to."

"Since the records you requested are about 50 years old, they were discarded pursuant to the record schedule approved by the State Archivist. See 1 V.S.A. 317a."

I knew that contracts had to exist between Psychological Assessment Associates, Human Ecology and UVM-VSH. The State of Vermont did not respond that no documents were located. The response was that the documents I requested had indeed been located and that they had been destroyed. Therefore it is clear that research contracts existed between CIA and UVM-VSH.

On October 24, 2013 I filed a Freedom of Information request with CIA for photocopies of:

"Research project documents including subprojects for research conducted and or funded by CIA at the University of Vermont College of Medicine (UVM) and the Vermont State Hospital (VSH) during the years 1959, 1962, 1965 and 1966."

"Please include the names of all drugs, research procedures and methods used as well as the name of the CIA Subproject relevant to the Vermont research. Also include the names and titles of all research personnel as well as the identities and location of all other institutions and or agencies that participated."

"I filed a Vermont Records Act Request on October 7, 2013 for research contracts that existed between UVM-VSH and Psychological Assessment Associates and the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology during the years noted."

"The response from the State was that the records I requested had been destroyed. Therefore a contractual relationship existed between CIA and UVM-VSH."

"I obtained UVM-VSH research documents MH-01076 that show that the psychological test known as PAS, created by CIA psychologist John Gittinger, was given to VSH patients and that according to the documents the results of those tests were sent directly to Gittinger at 1834 Connecticut Avenue, NW, Washington, DC. Also noted in the UVM-VSH documents are plans to expand and continue research with Gittinger."

On November 21, 2013 I received a response from CIA that reads:

"This is a final response to your 24 October 2013 Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) request, received in the Office of the Information

and Privacy Coordinator on 7 September, 2013, for photocopies of the following documents: Research project documents including subprojects for research conducted and or funded by CIA at the Vermont State Hospital (VSH), Waterbury, Vermont and the University of Vermont College of Medicine (UVM) during the years 1959, 1962, 1965 and 1966…In accordance with section 3.6 (a) of Executive Order 13526, the CIA can neither confirm nor deny the existence or nonexistence of records responsive to your request. The fact of the existence or nonexistence of requested records is currently and properly classified and is intelligence sources and methods information that is protected from disclosure by section 6 of the CIA Act of 1949, as amended, and section 102A(i) (l) of the National Security Act of 1947, as amended. Therefore, your request is denied pursuant to FOIA exemptions (b) (1) and (b) (3)."

"FOIA Explanation of Exemptions: (b) (1) exempts from disclosure information currently and properly classified, pursuant to Executive Order."

"(b) (3) exempts from disclosure information that another federal statute protects, provided that the other federal statute either requires that the matters be withheld, or establishes particular criteria for withholding or refers to particular types of matters to be withheld. The (b) (3) statutes upon which the CIA relies include but are not limited to, the CIA ACT of 1949."

This is the very first time CIA has ever acknowledged that UVM-VSH research was classified and remains classified. It is interesting to note that the response to my Vermont Records Act Request did not state that no records were located. The response was that the documents I requested had been destroyed. Additionally, I obtained the UVM-VSH research project documents that clearly detail UVM-VSH research relationship with John Gittinger at CIA headquarters, 1834 Connecticut Avenue, NW, Washington, DC. The research documents MH-01076 are publicly available and they contain descriptions of the UVM-VSH research relationship with Gittinger at CIA's Psychological Assessment Associates and describe methods, i.e. the use of Gittinger's PAS.

CIA made a mistake noting the date they received my FOIA, noting the date as 7 September, 2013. I filed the request on October 24, 2013. Curiously, CIA did not note that I had very specifically asked them for documents relating to Psychological Assessment Associates and the Society for the Investigation of Human Ecology.

Although I could file an appeal with CIA, given the classified status

of the material I am seeking, my appeal would very likely be denied. I am not filing an appeal. I am actually quite pleased by the State of Vermont's response, which confirms the existence of a contractual relationship between CIA and UVM-VSH and by CIA's response that the records I sought regarding CIA-UVM-VSH research are classified. These responses tell me both what I want to know and what I have long suspected to be true.

In July, 2013 I received information that the Vermont State Archives and Records Administration released documents relating to VSH research activities. I obtained a listing of these documents. In series VSH-003, under VSH-0011-2 and VSH-0011-3 it reads as follows: Director of Research, Vermont State Hospital - 1940-1975 Dr. Robert W. Hyde and 1943-1975, Dr. Robert W. Hyde.

I always suspected that Hyde maintained an active presence at VSH throughout the years that he was at Boston Psychopathic Hospital and Butler Hospital. The new documents clearly support my theory.

Back in 1998 when I obtained CIA MKULTRA documents from the National Security Archives, Hyde's MKULTRA Subprojects 8, 10, 10a, 63 and 66 were heavily redacted; I had a growing suspicion that under the redactions were UVM and VSH. Over the years I collected UVM-VSH research documents and identified more and more CIA researchers involved in UVM-VSH experiments and identified procedures, pharmaceutical companies and covert CIA funding sources; it became clear to me as I read Hyde's CIA Subprojects that my initial suspicions were very likely accurate.

The newly more fully declassified CIA subprojects 8, 10, 63 and 66 not only identify a previously unknown CIA project named MKCOTTON, but place Hyde in Vermont during the time when MKCOTTON was operational. Gittinger's name on these documents in 1961-1964 also matches UVM-VSH research projects in 1958, 1963 and 1965 - the same projects that sent the results of the PAS directly to Gittinger at CIA headquarters in Washington, DC.

MKCOTTON documents note that Hyde made regular trips to Washington as part of his CIA duties and made trips for "special projects" at a site that remains redacted. In 1962, Gittinger moved Psychological Assessment Associates to the Washington address. It is also noted that he traveled abroad as part of his regular duties for CIA.

An April 8, 1962 MKCOTTON document shows funding invoices received by Human Ecology. The certification date for the Hyde expenditures is April 22, 1964.

Where was Robert Hyde during the years after he graduated from UVM College of Medicine in 1935? He did an internship at the Marine Hospital in New Orleans, 1935-1936. In 1936-1940, he was in general practice in Fairfax, Vermont. In 1940-1945 Hyde was a Lt. Col. In the U.S. Army. Recently released VSH documents show that Hyde is identified as Director of Research at VSH, 1940-1975.

In 1945-1957, Hyde was Assistant Superintendent at Boston Psychopathic Hospital. Hyde was Superintendent at Butler in 1957-1962. He was Acting Director Division of Legal Medical Liaison Office, 1st Service Command, Massachusetts Department of Mental Health, 1958-1959.

In 1959-1964 Hyde was Assistant to the Commissioner (the declassified CIA documents don't specify where he was Assistant to the Commissioner) and in 1964 Hyde became Assistant Commissioner of Mental Health in Vermont. He was a Professor of Psychiatry, teaching at UVM in 1967.

Where was Robert Hyde in 1964 during MKCOTTON?

What is known about UVM-VSH research activities during this time frame -1955-1964? In 1955, UVM secured a contract with the Air Force School of Aviation Medicine and through funding by the Department of Energy, human radiation experiments and behavioral experiments were conducted at UVM. Hyde is identified in the Department of Energy Human Radiation Experiments list of participants. It is known that CIA was involved in these experiments.

At VSH, research is noted in documents to have begun in 1955 - becoming "schizophrenia" studies in 1957. One UVM-VSH research document notes that research had actually begun at VSH as early as 1944. Recently released VSH documents place Hyde as Director of Research 1940-1975.

In 1958, UVM-VSH were administering Gittinger's PAS to child patients and this research and affiliation with Gittinger extended at least until 1968 - possibly longer. In 1957, UVM-VSH began using unwitting VSH patients in experimental drug research. The drugs were obtained from CIBA. Milton Greenblatt of Boston Psychopathic Hospital (where CIA LSD research was well underway) acted as a "Consultant" to UVM-VSH research and VSH was visited by John Bockoven and Richard York who also acted as "Consultants."

Both Bockoven and York conducted CIA LSD experiments with Hyde. York worked out of Gittinger's Psychological Assessment Associates.

Hyde's MKULTRA Subprojects note that Gittinger's PAS was used extensively in Hyde's research. Gittinger is noted as the "payee" for funds in Hyde's MKULTRA Subproject 63.

Harold Wolff was President of Human Ecology and the Executive Director of Human Ecology was Lt. Col. James Monroe, United States Air Force. Wolff was interested in brainwashing and the Air Force ran parallel experiments to those done by the CIA. UVM conducted Special Interrogation experiments that involved the use of LSD, mescaline, isolation, electric shock, chemical shock and induced amnesia - essentially these experiments were brainwashing experiments. UVM had research contracts with the Air Force starting in 1955. UVM and VSH began their joint research projects in 1955.

Dr. Ewen Cameron at McGill conducted CIA-funded experiments beginning in 1957, the same year UVM-VSH officially began "schizophrenia" experiments. UVM-VSH documents state that the schizophrenia research actually began in 1955 with more formal experiments that began in 1957. Cameron conducted depatterning and brainwashing experiments and he expressed a desire to conduct terminal experiments, according to John Marks. In 1959, VSH's Dr. George Brooks presented a paper at McGill on VSH experiences with schizophrenics.

Human Ecology was gone in 1965 but, as John Marks notes, Gittinger's PAS continued after Human Ecology stopped funding the research and Psychological Assessment Associates continued the funding.

I have a PAS that was conducted on me as a thirteen-year old child in VSH dated December, 1965. UVM-VSH documents show that the PAS was conducted on VSH child patients beginning in 1958 and continued at least until 1968 - possibly longer.

CIA BLUEBIRD methods included the use of heroin, morphine, electric shock, lobotomies, hypnotism, fatigue, isolation, sensory deprivation and torture according to H.P. Albarelli, Jr. By 1953, BLUEBIRD became ARTICHOKE, funded in part by U.S. Department of Agriculture, FDA, HEW, NIH, and Army, Navy, and Air Force intelligence. ARTICHOKE and MKULTRA ran alongside each other.

ARTICHOKE experimented with chemical lobotomies and employed radioactive tracers in its studies of the brain, according to Albarelli. One ARTICHOKE document states that, "A non-toxic drug may be found by radioactive tracer techniques that will be attracted to such an area of the brain as so to produce a taming that can last for some time."

The Department of Energy Human Radiation Experiments included UVM and Robert Hyde in the list of participants. UVM is known to have conducted Special Interrogations well into the early 1970's. Hyde conducted radioactive isotope tracer experiments in his LSD research for CIA and documents from the DOE Radiation Experiments show that UVM installed a cobalt source onsite after securing the contract with the Air Force School of Aviation Medicine.

Based on numerous UVM-VSH documents, CIA declassified documents, DOE documents and known methods of experimentation conducted at UVM-VSH, it appears as if UVM-VSH research included BLUEBIRD, ARTICHOKE and MKULTRA. Considering the fact that UVM-VSH were research affiliates of Boston Psychopathic Hospital, Butler and McGill (all three were MKULTRA sites), this should not come as any surprise. It is, however, more than curious that UVM-VSH have never been publicly identified in any government hearing. CIA continues to remain silent on UVM-VSH

The newly declassified MKULTRA Robert Hyde Subprojects that I requested using FOIA still redact Hyde's name from each page, despite the fact that I asked for Hyde by name and the CIA cover letter included in the package of documents delivered to me states that my request for Dr. Robert W. Hyde subprojects 8, 10, 10a, 63 and 66 are included in the package of documents. It's like a game played for reasons I simply cannot understand. I strongly suspect that hidden under the remaining redactions are research sites UVM-VSH and the content of Hyde's Subprojects support my suspicion.

Hyde's MKULTRA Subproject 8 was conducted at The Worcester Foundation for Experimental Biology and the newly declassified documents seem to suggest that another hospital site was also involved in the research. My best guess is that Boston Psychopathic Hospital is the second site, yet the Boston hospital remains hidden behind redactions despite the fact that it is widely known that the hospital was a primary CIA LSD experimental site. John Marks writes extensively about Boston Psychopathic Hospital's CIA LSD research in his book, as does H.P. Albarelli, Jr.

On the other hand, Butler is named in both Subprojects 63 and 66. References to additional sites that conducted the research remain redacted.

Hyde's MKULTRA Subproject 8 documents read:

"(Redacted) of (Redacted) has just been given a grant to study human subjects. (Redacted) at the (Redacted) (now collaborating with

(Redacted) hospital, 2 laboratories to study chronically mentally ill patients response to award conditioning in terms of their ability to develop desired behavior and to continue such behavior over long periods of time."

"As soon as this human laboratory is set up and reliable curves of behavior developed in humans in collaboration with (Redacted) we plan to test the effects of lysergic acid on behavior curves."

Where was Hyde in 1953-1955 during MKULTRA Subproject 8? He was at Boston Psychopathic Hospital, a research affiliate of VSH and UVM.

The content of Hyde's more fully declassified CIA Subprojects bears more than a little resemblance to the content of UVM-VSH research project documents. While Hyde was at Boston Psychopathic Hospital, at Butler or at Worcester, he was conducting CIA experiments. LSD was a primary interest, along with other drugs that acted as LSD antagonists. Hyde's research for CIA in personality types was also a hallmark of his research, as was his use of Gittinger's PAS.

In Subproject 63, Hyde notes in a 1960 document that he began pilot studies in 1956, with more organized studies in 1957, 1958 and 1959. Hyde began his research with LSD in 1949 but CIA sponsorship didn't begin until 1953. It is highly likely that Hyde's sponsor prior to CIA was the Department of Energy, since it is documented that he conducted LSD and radioactive isotope experiments during the DOE Human Radiation Experiments. The DOE experiments began in the 1940's and continued into the 1970's. UVM College of Medicine has been identified as a participant in the DOE experiments. UVM Department of Pharmacology secured a research contract with the Air Force School of Aviation Medicine in 1955 - the same year VSH launched its "schizophrenia" research with UVM.

Hyde's MKULTRA Subproject 10 notes an intent to experiment with the drug Serpasil, also known as Reserpine, a new drug discovered in 1954 and distributed by CIBA Pharmaceuticals. In 1954, Dr. George Brooks negotiated a contract with CIBA to purchase the new drugs, Reserpine and Thorazine; these drugs were used extensively by staff at VSH. Brooks also secured a contract with Smith, Kline and French that same year. Both pharmaceutical companies are identified in declassified CIA documents as having supplied experimental drugs to CIA. Both drugs are known to have been used in LSD experiments.

In 1956, Brooks spent six months at Boston Psychopathic Hospital, on a Smith, Kline and French Fellowship for "special drug studies."

Boston Psychopathic doctors Hyde, Rinkel, Solomon and other CIA researchers were well underway experimenting with LSD for the CIA at Boston Psychopathic when Brooks was there.

Hyde's MKULTRA Subproject 66 notes that in LSD research, "different observers use different methods of assessment closely related to the observers' values."

UVM-VSH research projects beginning in 1955 were all conducted under the guise of "rehabilitation of chronic schizophrenics." Brooks and other VSH staff psychiatrists published papers under the title of "The Rehabilitation of the Hospitalized Mentally Ill."

Based on an overwhelming amount of documentation drawn mostly from the content of UVM-VSH research documents and from Hyde's MKULTRA Subprojects, as well as highly respected published books on the CIA and LSD, there is very little doubt that the University of Vermont College of Medicine and the Vermont State Hospital were conducting CIA LSD research and were funded by CIA cover groups and agencies.

A tremendous number of documented CIA researchers are identified in UVM-VSH research project documents along with cover groups, funding conduits, pharmaceutical companies known to have supplied CIA with experimental drugs and CIA LSD methods of research. UVM-VSH affiliate hospitals were Boston Psychopathic, Butler and McGill - all MKULTRA research sites.

The November, 2013 response from CIA to my FOIA, and the response from the State of Vermont to my Vermont Records Act request also confirm what I suspected for many years: the research conducted at UVM-VSH for CIA is classified. Still classified after all of these years.

Why CIA had a change in policy and finally admitted that the UVM-VSH research is classified, after I spent years peppering CIA with FOIA requests regarding its UVM-VSH research in drugs and mind control, and after CIA denied every request, and never admitted that the research was classified, is anyone's guess.

Why after ten years did CIA finally send me Hyde's more fully declassified MKULTRA Subprojects in September, 2013? I hadn't communicated with CIA about the Hyde subprojects since 2009. Why now?

Several people I have spoken with raise the question as to whether or not the recent revelations by former NSA employee, Edward Snowden, and the resulting scrutiny the intelligence agencies are

under, played any role in CIA's apparent change in policy as it relates to the Vermont experiments. Again, I will probably never know the answer.

"One can safely predict techniques for controlling behavior and modifying personality will grow more effective by the year 2000. Thousands of experts at conditioning are now trying out their behavior changing techniques on tens of thousands of people in classrooms, prisons, mental hospitals, day care centers and nursing homes."

American Academy of Arts and Sciences, 1967

The covert CIA research that was conducted in the State of Vermont and all across the country, matters to every American in every walk of life - maybe more now than it ever did.

December, 2013

Memory loss is such a strange and difficult thing to live with. No amount of conscious effort or strength of will brings about any additional memory. I have found that when bits and pieces of memory return they are almost always only small expansions of memory I already had. More often than not, when I regain a portion of memory it isn't a new memory, it's a broader view of a memory I previously had. It's as if for some reason I was unable to incorporate the information in the memory and to fully appreciate the information in the memory.

In late December, 2013, I had just gone to bed for the night and I wasn't thinking about anything in particular when I began to think about and picture in my mind the memory I have always had about Curlin removing me from a seclusion room on the locked ward 1A in October, 1970.

This memory is one of only three instances I have ever been able to recall about Curlin, and Kathy and I have talked about this particular memory for years.

I have a faint memory of a man peering into the seclusion room. A nurse opened the door and Curlin was standing there with her. I don't recall ever meeting him before, yet the VSH record shows that he and Brooks were my doctors of record on the medical ward where I had been only days before I was transferred to the locked ward. The records show I had been kept in seclusion and in leather wristlets while on 1A. I was naked and I was lying on the seclusion room floor.

Curlin told the nurse to get me dressed and he began to lead me toward the exit door. The nurse screamed at him that he could not take me off the ward.

He yelled back at her, “The hell I can’t!”

My memory ends at the door.

My next memory, which is supported by the records, is of standing in the Weeks 3 nurses’ office as Curlin sat in a chair and told me that Dr. O’Shea would take good care of me.

In late December, 2013 this memory became fuller. I realized that there was only one nurse on the ward when Curlin took me out of seclusion and that there were no patients in the hallway. This would have been very unusual. Patients were always milling around the halls, propped up against the walls and standing around. 1A always had a nursing staff of between five and eight nurses. Curlin and I would have had to pass directly by two nurses’ stations on the way to the exit door, the second one being only feet from the exit. They were both empty.

I realized that Curlin had to have taken me off the locked ward at night - after eleven when the night shift, which would have been only one nurse, was working. This would be why there were no patients in the hallways. They were in bed in their rooms.

This memory is the same as I have always had except I wasn’t able to fully understand the information available in it. I always knew there was only one nurse and I always knew there were no patients in the hallways. It never occurred to me what this meant.

When Curlin brought me to Weeks 3, it was daytime. There was a full nursing staff when he sat in the office and told me that Dr. O’Shea would take good care of me. This raises the very disturbing question: where did Curlin take me in the middle of the night and for what reason? Given the information I learned was in the closing of the lawsuit regarding Curlin’s admission of “sexual misconduct,” I can imagine why he removed me from the locked ward in the middle of the night and why I showed up with him in the daytime on Weeks 3.

Apparently no one at VSH - not the nursing staff, not the hospital administration - no one, did anything except keep the situation covered up. This is an example of the total lack of integrity and the total lack of human compassion that was at work at VSH during the years I was there and during the years that UVM-VSH were conducting CIA experiments.

Having substantial memory loss is a difficult thing to live with and

an even more difficult thing to understand. Why it took me so long to realize that Curlin had to have taken me off the locked ward at night is a question I don't know how to answer. I've told and retold this memory in therapy for years, yet the details in the memory didn't come together until December, 2013. Those details were always there. I was just unable to incorporate them into an understanding of what actually took place that night in October, 1970.

VERMONT STATE HOSPITAL DEATHS, 1952-1973

While investigating CIA experiments at VHS, I continued to have mail stolen. In 2009, I sent a letter to Senator Bernie Sanders at his Burlington office. The letter was sent using Certified Mail, and it never arrived at Senator Sanders' office. I contacted my Postmaster who tracked the Certified Mail to a mail facility in New Jersey, where the letter had been signed for. I checked with Senator Sanders' staff only to learn that the person who signed for the letter was not a person known to Senator Sanders' staff. My Postmaster contacted Sanders' office and verified that the name of the person who signed for the letter was not a person known to Sanders' office.

Another Certified letter sent by me to CIA Director Leon Panetta was also stolen. Despite the evidence held by the Postmaster and by the Postal Inspectors that two letters mailed using Certified Mail were stolen, I was never contacted by the Postal Service and to this day, to my knowledge, no action taken by them has resulted in the discovery of the identity of the perpetrator. How the Postal Inspectors were able to ignore the verified thefts of Certified mail to a United States Senator and to the CIA Director, is a question I cannot answer. Senator Sanders' Certified mail theft also involved someone who signed for the letter who was not known to Sanders' staff. Why and how my letter addressed to Sanders in Burlington, Vermont, mailed from Rutland, Vermont, ended up stolen in a New Jersey mail facility remains unknown, unanswered and apparently not investigated.

I also had mail sent to the Department of Justice stolen and mail DOJ sent in reply to me stolen. Numerous FOIA requests and requests for assistance to elected officials were stolen. I have no way of knowing the true extent of my stolen mail, but I was able to find information that might help explain the lack of an investigation by Postal Inspectors.

In Dr. Colin Ross's book, *The C.I.A. Doctors: Human Rights Violations by American Psychiatrists,* a CIA cover-up of its operations involving mail tampering on American soil are documented by a quotation from an internal CIA memo:

"In 1952, the CIA began to survey mail…in 1953 it began to open and read mail…the program was approved by the Director of CIA and at least three Postmaster Generals…and Attorney General John Mitchell."

"Unless the charge is supported by the presentation of interior items from the project, it should be relatively easy to "hush up" the entire affair or to explain that it consists of legal mail cover activities conducted by the Post Office at the request of federal agencies. Under the most favorable circumstances including the support of charges with interior items from the project, it might become necessary, after the matter has cooled off during an extended period of investigation, to find a scapegoat to blame for unauthorized tampering with the mails."

I thought about how my Postmaster began to stop returning my phone calls and how he finally refused to contact me. I wasn't able to learn anything more from my Postmaster, and I was never contacted by the Postal Inspectors.

After the Patriot Act became law, the intelligence agencies no longer had to obtain a warrant to wiretap phones and after years of dealing with a wiretapped phone, I wondered if the intelligence agencies had returned to mail tampering. I also wondered if the explanation as to why the Postal Inspectors and the Post Office apparently didn't find the theft of Certified Mail to a United States Senator worth investigating was that mail was routinely being opened, read and in some cases, stolen and that the Postal Service was well aware of this matter. I doubt that too many American citizens have to deal with stolen mail or have experienced a lack of interest or investigation by proper authorities.

As far as I know, my mail is no longer being stolen but it is noteworthy that I no longer send FOIA requests and no longer write letters to elected officials requesting their assistance. In addition, I have no way of knowing if any investigation by the Postal Inspectors was ever done.

After years of being followed and harassed by strangers I did not know, and after being able to identify at least one of the strangers who followed me as a federal agent, I attempted on several occasions to speak with the local office of the FBI. Not only would the two agents who worked in the office not return my phone calls, but they also refused to meet with me. I found this to be curious at best.

It took a phone call to Senator Sanders' office with an angry complaint by me about being followed and harassed, after which Senator Sanders sent a Congressional Liaison Officer to CIA to

complain, and a phone conversation with the Albany office of the FBI, before these strangers finally stopped following and harassing me.

After being followed around stores, approached on the street, harassed and bumped in traffic, and after watching strangers pull their vehicles next to mine and sit and stare at me, flash their car lights at me after they pulled into parking spaces directly in front of me, after all of this nonsense, as of the writing of this book, it appears as if these strangers have stopped following me. I've grown accustomed to watching who is near me and I notice if any vehicle appears to be following me, but things seem to have quieted down. It would seem to me that the amount of time and personnel that was involved in the harassment must have cost quite a bit of taxpayer dollars. These were wasted taxpayer dollars.

I had been troubled for a long time about why the government would go to the lengths they have gone to keep tabs on my phone and my mail, and to follow me. It became clear early on that whoever was conducting the harassment had to have a high level of sophistication in order to pull off the types of surveillance they used. It made no sense to me and the more I witnessed the surveillance the more questions I had as to the reason.

I wondered why, decades after the drug and mind control program ended, would CIA be interested in my activities? The details of the CIA experiments that came under scrutiny in 1977 were extremely disturbing and it seemed to me that whatever CIA was concerned about my discovering must be even worse than the details of research that were already known.

The book, *Empty Beds*, lists VSH patient death rates over the same time when VSH-UVM conducted the CIA experiments. I began to study the death rates. Vermont Department of Mental Health Biennial reports contain yearly death rates and as I read the statistics I began to realize that the death rates at VSH during the time experiments were being conducted were extremely high and seemed to be way out of proportion.

For a twenty-year period, 1952-1973, VSH death rates when matched with the yearly patient population. I noticed that in 1973, the same year CIA halted MKULTRA and the federal funding to VSH for active patient research ended, the death rates dropped significantly and continued to drop over the following several years. An average high patient population over the twenty-year time frame was about 1200 and the average low patient population was about 600. In 1958, 186

VSH patients died in one year. This would be the equivalent of one body being removed from VSH every other day for the year 1958. I knew that something was dreadfully wrong.

During the years 1952-1960, 1233 VSH patients died.

By 1969, an additional 1210 VSH patients had died.

During the years 1970-1973, 392 VSH patients died.

1952 - pop: 1260 - deaths: 144

1953 - pop: 1280 - deaths: 126

1954 - pop: 1270 - deaths: 105

1955 - pop: 1280 - deaths: 125

1956 - pop: 1280 - deaths: 147

1957 - pop: 1240 - deaths: 154

1958 - pop: 1240 - deaths: 186

1959 - pop: 1145 - deaths: 131

1960 - pop: 1150 - deaths: 115

1961 - pop: 1200 - deaths: 124

1962 - pop: 1228 - deaths: 116

1963 - pop: 1240 - deaths: 134

1964 - pop: 1224 - deaths: 119

1965 - pop: 1243 - deaths: 137

1966 - pop: 1172 - deaths: 145

1967 - pop: 1163 - deaths: 125

1968 - pop: 1058 - deaths: 167

1969 - pop: 1025 - deaths: 159

1970 - pop: 940 - deaths 126

1971 - pop: 880 - deaths: 130

1972 - pop: 608 - deaths: 90

1973 - pop: 604 - deaths: 46

VSH death rate statistics in the years 1974 through 1978 are “unavailable” according to the Vermont Department of Statistics. Do these death rates from 1952 to 1973 hide terminal experiments done

on patients at VSH? Does anyone care, or want to investigate?

On June 19, 1972, CIA Director Richard Helms ordered the destruction of MKULTRA files. I was discharged from VSH on June 19, 1972. Helms knew that the CIA drug and mind control programs were under scrutiny. The files were actually destroyed on June 30, 1972.

By 1973, Helms ordered a halt to the MKULTRA programs and ended funding. In 1973, VSH halted active patient research and the federal funding sources dried up.

In 1973, VSH patient death rates plunged and continued to plunge over the next few years until the death rates fell to more reasonable numbers of one or two a year.

I filed a Vermont Records Act request with the Vermont Department of Mental Health for the ages, places of residence and cause of death of the almost 3000 VSH patients who died during the twenty-year time period when experimentation was ongoing. My request was denied.

In a phone conversation I learned that my request was denied due to "Privacy Act" concerns. I found this to be interesting since the information I was seeking did not concern the identities of the patients. Furthermore, I was under the impression that the right to privacy ends with death.

I was very interested in learning how many VSH patients were brought into VSH from other states in the country and what the actual cause of death was for the patients. It was clear that Vermont was not going to allow me to obtain documents relating to the VSH deaths.

Numerous published accounts of the CIA drug and mind control programs detail CIA plans to conduct "terminal experiments," including BLUEBIRD, ARTICHOKE and MKULTRA. CIA maintains that it never conducted terminal experiments on American soil.

A 1954 CIA cable contained a desire for "time, places and bodies for terminal experiments."

Another CIA cable discussed, "diminishing numbers of subjects available for these tests."

According to John Marks, Ewen Cameron expressed a willingness to conduct terminal experiments at McGill University, where he was the Chairman of the Department of Psychiatry.

According to John Marks, Dr. Maitland Baldwin stated his willingness to perform terminal experiments. Baldwin was a brain surgeon at the National Institute of Health and went on to work for the

CIA Technical Services Division. Baldwin was the contractor on MKULTRA Subproject 62, and was a coauthor of the McGill neurosurgeon, Wilder Penfield.

I thought about the extremely high death rates at VSH and I wondered if I had discovered the real reason CIA, the State of Vermont and the federal government were so motivated to conceal Vermont's role in MKULTRA. The cover-up was not only massive, but it was a State and federally coordinated cover-up. The behavior of federal agencies that funded VSH-UVM experiments for twenty years, yet denied that they were in possession of any documents relating to the experiments, was suspicious at best. The behavior of UVM, SAM, DOD, CIA, former Vermont Governors, United States Senators, Congressmen, Senate Committees and practically every other State and Federal official I contacted not only raises suspicions, but is indicative of a cover-up.

When I initially contacted elected state and federal officials and explained what happened to me and described the content of the VSH-UVM experiments, the responses were of concern and there was usually an expression of at least some degree of interest in helping me. Follow-up phone conversations led to the officials telling me they couldn't help. This happened over and over again. It didn't take me long to realize that the State and Federal government did not want to know about the Vermont CIA experiments and they most definitely did not want to hear about VSH patient deaths.

Terminal experiments would be the one CIA activity that would cause such a massive, coordinated state and federal cover-up to occur. I realized that because I had discovered Dr. Robert Hyde in my medical records and I went on to obtained numerous other documents that contained names, sites and procedures that I could connect back to CIA, I became the target of surveillance and harassment.

Things began to make sense. Someone was very worried about the documents and information I was obtaining about Vermont CIA experiments and with the extremely high death rates at VSH during the time when VSH-UVM were conducting experiments using unwitting subjects, and the huge amount of documentation I gathered on CIA personnel, sites, funding sources, cover front groups and contracts, I was certain that death rates at VSH were a huge factor in the cover-up.

CIA, VSH-UVM never imagined that anyone would learn about the CIA and when I did, they never thought that anyone would believe me. Apparently they thought that if they harassed and intimidated me, I'd give up my pursuit. They were mistaken.

I thought about how close I had come on numerous occasions, to having been a number in a death statistic document. My medical records are filled with procedures that could have easily led to my death. I have no explanation for why I survived. But it appeared as if many VSH patients did not survive.

The knowledge that so many VSH patients were intentionally subjected to cruel experiments and that almost 3000 VSH patients died over the twenty years that VSH-UVM conducted experiments, changed the way I felt about my own involvement in the experimentation. I realized that my investigation was no longer driven solely by what happened to me. There is a very good chance that I knew some of the people who were experimented on and very likely permanently damaged by the experiments. It's also very possible that I knew some of those who died.

I wondered how the staff at VSH could have watched as many as 186 bodied being removed from VSH in one year and have remained silent. I wondered how numerous Vermont State officials could have read the death statistics in the Department of Mental Health Biennial for twenty years and not have had questions. I wondered how the death rates could have appeared in the 1988 book, *Empty Beds* by Marsha Kincheloe without someone expressing concern. If anyone ever did express concern or have questions, there was apparently never a follow-up or publicity. Many times over my fifteen-year investigation, I shook my head in disgust and disbelief and I still do.

In 2009, I wrote a letter to Attorney General Eric Holder in which I described the CIA experiments in VSH-UVM. I detailed the high death rates at VSH and requested that he conduct an investigation into VSH deaths during the twenty years when unwitting subjects were used in CIA experiments. No reply or acknowledgement of my concerns was received.

I wrote a similar letter to President Obama. No reply or acknowledgement was received. I wrote a letter to Secretary of Defense, Robert Gates. No reply or acknowledgement was received. I wrote to CIA Director, Leon Panetta. The letter to Panetta, mailed using Certified Mail was stolen. I was eventually able to send a letter that was received by Panetta. No reply or acknowledgement was received.

During my fifteen-year investigation, I contacted numerous state and federal officials and requested their assistance. Requests for assistance and investigation were sent to:

Senate Select Committee on Intelligence, Senator Diane Feinstein,

Senator Edward Kennedy, Senator Patrick Leahy, Congressman Peter Welch, former Governor James Douglas, members of the Vermont Legislature, former UVM President Daniel Fogel, UVM College of Medicine, every member of UVM Board of Trustees, VSH, Vermont Department of Mental Health, former Commissioner of Mental Health Paul Jarris, former Commissioner of Mental Health Michael Hartman, (Hartman did speak with me on the phone but no investigation was undertaken), U.S. Department of Justice, School of Aviation Medicine, numerous branches of the Army, Air Force and Navy, Advanced Research Projects Agency, Department of Defense, United States Public Health Service, National Institute of Health, National Institute of Mental Health, Department of Health and Human Services, Food and Drug Administration, U. S. Surgeon General, Department of Energy, UVM Bailey Howe Library, Library at Brown University, Massachusetts Mental Health Hospital (Boston Psychopathic), Butler Hospital, Rockland State Hospital, Smith, Kline and French Pharmaceuticals, CIBA and the Group For The Advancement of Psychiatry.

Senator Bernie Sanders tried to assist me on several occasions. He remains the only U.S. Senator or elected federal official to try to help. Vermont Representative, Anne Donahue and Vermont Representative, Michael Fisher also tried to assist me. Several members of the Vermont Legislature spoke with me on the phone and expressed their shock and concern at my information and about my personal experiences but there was no follow-up or action by the Vermont Legislature.

APPENDICES: THE EVIDENCE

THE SEARCH FOR DOCUMENTS

"If you want to be free, there is only one way; it is to guarantee an equally full measure of liberty to all of your neighbors. There is no other way."

Carl Shurz Statesman, US Senator and Reformer

Request to CIA from Harold Wolff, creator and President of the Human Ecology Fund, a CIA funding front for MKULTRA:

Wolff asked the Agency for everything in its files on "threats, coercion, imprisonment, isolation, deprivation, humiliation, torture, brainwashing, black psychiatry, hypnosis and combinations of these with or without chemical agents."

From *The Search For The Manchurian Candidate*, by John Marks

When I ended my lawsuit in 2002 because of a life-threatening attack of an autoimmune disorder, it took me time to begin my investigation again. The drug I was prescribed for the autoimmune disease, Imuran, had distressing side effects, but as time passed, the active phase of the disease was quieted by the drug and I went back to my investigation.

I filed Freedom of Information requests with CIA in which I requested documents involving the use of LSD, electric shock, Metrazol, hypnosis and several other known CIA methods conducted at VSH, UVM, Degoesbriand Hospital, and Mary Fletcher Hospital during 1965-1973. I asked for documents on Dr. Robert W. Hyde, Director of Psychiatric Research at VSH. My FOIA requests were denied due to "no documents located."

I filed repeated FOIA requests with CIA in an attempt to locate documents relating to Hyde's activities in Vermont and documents relating to the participating Vermont hospitals. In the requests, I attached information to CIA about how I had been used in covert experiments without my knowledge or consent. I made it clear that my

motive in seeking the documents was to be able to know what experiments I had been subjected to. I informed CIA that Hyde was cited in my medical records and that the medical records were incomplete.

Regardless of what I requested or how I worded the FOIA requests, CIA denied every request until I received what I considered to be a very interesting and surprising response from CIA:

"We have re-reviewed your request and have determined the information you are seeking relates to the CIA program known as MKULTRA…clinical records generated under MKULTRA were retained by persons or institutions that actually conducted the research."

I was surprised and intrigued by CIA's response. Were they telling me that the documents I was searching for were being held by VSH and UVM? I decided to turn my attention to VSH and UVM. I already had two books written about VSH and the information in these books was stunning.

In the book, *Empty Beds: A History of the Vermont State Hospital*, by Marsha Kincheloe, I read about a long-time VSH research and personnel exchange program with Boston Psychopathic Hospital. The Boston hospital was a well-known CIA research site for MKULTRA and Hyde was Assistant Superintendent there when LSD and other mind control experiments were conducted for the CIA.

The book listed several research grants and provided grant titles and grant numbers that I used in FOIA requests to the federal funding agencies. I saw that these research projects were funded by the National Institute of Mental Health, the National Institute of Health, the United States Public Health Service and the Department of Health, Education and Welfare. All of these federal funding agencies admitted during Senate hearings on the CIA drug and mind control programs that they wittingly funded the CIA experiments.

I filed FOIA requests with each of the federal agencies and cited VSH, UVM and the two Burlington hospitals. I requested documents relating to the use of LSD, electric shock, hypnosis, Metrazol, and sensory deprivation during the time frame of 1965-1973. I explained in each FOIA that I had reason to believe that I had been an unwitting experimental subject and I named Dr. Robert W. Hyde. Each of the federal agencies denied having any documents. I filed appeals and each appeal was denied on the basis of no documents located. I found this curious at best since these federal agencies provided the research monies to VSH-UVM.

During a follow-up phone conversation with the Public Health Service, the woman asked me why I was interested in obtaining documents on the CIA experiments in Vermont and I replied that I had information in my medical records that showed that I had been an unwitting research subject.

"The Public Health Service did brain studies that they don't want anyone to know about," the woman on the other end of the phone told me.

I turned my attention to UVM and filed a Vermont Records Act request seeking documents relating to the 1955 Air Force School of Aviation Medicine contract AF 19(604) 1093 that was cited in the Department of Energy list of participating institutions and individuals in the Report on Human Radiation Experiments. These experiments were cited as the forerunner of the CIA MKULTRA research and Robert Hyde was named as a participant. I requested documents regarding LSD, Mescaline, hypnosis, Metrazol, electric shock and sensory deprivation and documents related to Dr. Robert W. Hyde.

UVM denied the request citing no documents located. I appealed and it was denied. I wrote a follow-up letter to the President of UVM, Daniel Fogel who replied that a "diligent search" yielded no documents. I found the response to be curious at best.

I filed FOIA requests with the Department of Energy and cited the 1955 UVM-SAM contract. The Department of Energy denied my request due to no documents located. I had already obtained the 1955 contract released by the DOE during the Clinton Presidency. UVM was cited as having conducted behavior research, yet the DOE claimed it had no documents related to the UVM research. I found this to be curious at best.

I investigated the School of Aviation Medicine and learned that the former Chief of Science at the Dachau concentration camp in Nazi Germany, Hubertus Strughold was the Director of Research at the SAM when UVM conducted the research for the Air Force. Strughold is cited in numerous documents and publications on CIA drug and mind control research because his Dachau experiments in mind control were the very first drug and mind control experiments on record. Strughold's Dachau experiments resulted in the horrific torture deaths of thousands of concentration camp victims.

I shuddered at the thought that UVM conducted research with SAM when the former Nazi was the Director of Research at SAM. But I was also growing increasingly suspicious about UVM and the federal

funding agencies. The FOIA denials made no sense.

I filed FOIA requests with the former School of Aviation Medicine and the Air Force seeking documents relating to the 1955 Air Force SAM contract. I provided names, dates, and the contract number. The FOIA requests were denied due to no documents located. I filed an appeal. I had portions of the 1955 contract, the contract number, names, dates and even dates and times of several trips made by SAM officials to UVM. My FOIA appeal was denied. I found this to be curious at best.

FOIA requests were filed with the Army, Navy and several Air Force bases seeking documents related to the Vermont experiments. All FOIA requests and appeals were denied due to no documents located. In the 1977 Senate Select Committee hearings on the CIA MKULTRA research, the Army, Navy and Air Force were cited as having conducted CIA research.

I learned that the Department of Defense conducted drug and mind control experiments during the time when CIA MKULTRA was underway. I filed several FOIA requests with DOD seeking documents related to UVM-VSH and the two Burlington hospitals. I cited Dr. Robert W. Hyde, LSD and numerous mind control methods. I informed DOD that I had medical records that showed I had been used in unwitting experiments.

One FOIA request came back citing “documents located.” I waited for the documents to arrive and when they didn’t, I contacted DOD by phone. The FOIA officer told me on the phone that documents had been located. One document related to the names of the participating institutions. She told me that “additional documents” were also located. She asked me to write down her instructions on how to word my appeal.

I learned that someone was objecting to the release of the documents. I suspected that Vermont was the objecting party. I had begun to suspect that Vermont asked for and received protection from public disclosure regarding its activities during MKULTRA. During the 1977 Senate hearings many universities and hospitals asked for and received protection from public scrutiny. It interested me that VSH-UVM research and personnel exchange partners, Boston Psychopathic Hospital, Butler Hospital and McGill University all admitted their witting participation in the CIA MKULTRA experiments, yet Vermont was never mentioned in any testimony or in any publication as having conducted covert research.

Much to my surprise, I was informed by the DOD employee that the party objecting to the release of the documents was the Office of Secretary of Defense, Donald Rumsfeld. I began to wonder what CIA and DOD had done in Vermont institutions that would require a several decades-long cover-up. My contacts with the federal funding agencies that should have had documents relating to VSH-UVM research because they funded the Vermont research, all denied having any documentation. For the first time, I began to think beyond my own personal involvement in the covert CIA experiments and I wondered if there was something I was overlooking.

Vermont is located within relatively easy driving distance of Montreal, Boston, New York and Washington, DC. Vermont would have been one of the very last places anyone would have imagined that the CIA was conducting experiments with its Vermont hospital and psychiatrist partners. Vermont was a good choice as a place to hide the presence and activities of CIA. The Vermont CIA experiments remained covered up despite the 1975 Rockefeller hearings and the 1977 Senate Select Committee hearings on MKULTRA. Vermont CIA experiments might very well have remained covered up except for the fact that in 1997, I found Dr. Robert W. Hyde's name in my VSH medical records.

I did not receive the documents located by DOD until Rumsfeld was replaced as Secretary of Defense by Robert Gates. I never received the "additional documents located" by DOD and the document I did receive was incomplete and told me nothing.

I continued to pepper CIA with FOIA requests and I often included letters describing some of the information I obtained that showed I had been used in drug and mind control experiments. I made it clear to CIA that I only wanted the documents and that I was not acting out of an adversarial position. I also made it exceptionally clear to CIA that I knew they were involved in the experiments conducted on me in Vermont hospitals and that I would never stop my investigation. I told them that I would eventually make the information public.

I was truthful in my communications with CIA and never tried to hide the fact that I intended to make my findings public. I even went as far as to tell them that I had no intention now or in the future of filing any type of lawsuit against CIA. I simply wanted what was rightfully mine: the truth about what CIA did to me. The truth, as I would learn, would be very difficult to find

Early in my investigation, I obtained declassified CIA documents from the National Security Archives in Washington, DC. The staff at the

archives was very helpful and supportive. The first incident I had of "missing mail" involved a request to the Archives for declassified CIA documents. Another incident at the Archives involved a request I made for documents involving the CIA use of implants to control human behavior.

The CIA MKULTRA documents were stored off site at the Archives and I had to request material in advance so that the boxes in which the documents were contained could be located. When I did not receive the documents, I phoned the Archives and was told that the information I requested was "missing" from its designated box. I also learned that "certain people" known to the Archives staff had been on site after my request was received. I asked if the Archives had security cameras and although that question was not directly answered, I clearly understood who these "certain people" were believed to be.

Shortly after I began filing FOIA's with CIA and other federal agencies my mail began to vanish. Letters sent by me failed to reach their destination and were never returned to me. Letters mailed to me in response to FOIA requests never arrived. Some FOIA requests arrived opened. I learned rather quickly to follow up by phone when mail did not arrive.

I contacted a Postal Inspector in Essex Junction, Vermont and explained my problems with stolen mail. Mark Cavic listened and told me that he would look into the matter. After many months and many more incidents of stolen mail, I phoned Cavic only to learn that he had no notes on my case and had not conducted an investigation of any type. I was startled and angry.

I phoned the Postal Inspection Service in Massachusetts to find out if Cavic was actually a Postal Inspector.

The woman on the other end of the phone barked at me and said, "You called a federal agent and you better have a good reason for doing so."

I asked her if Mark Cavic from Essex Junction, Vermont was really a Postal Inspector and without hesitation she answered, "Yes."

I found it interesting that she in Massachusetts did not have to check to see if Cavic, in Vermont, was a Postal Inspector. I also found it unusual that her attitude was so hostile for no apparent reason.

My investigation had already shown me that there was evidence of the CIA experiments in Vermont. Declassified CIA documents provided me with names I could connect to VSH, including former VSH Assistant

Superintendent, H. Peter LaQueur. Other names in the declassified documents matched names listed in the VSH book, *The Vermont Story: Schizophrenic Rehabilitation*.

I began to keep lists of names I obtained from CIA documents, verified funding groups, cover fronts and from noteworthy authors like John Marks, Martin Lee and Dr. Colin Ross. Cross-referencing became a key feature of my investigation and my list of names directly connected to VSH-UVM research began to grow.

I realized that I needed to be familiar with the terminology of subjects like LSD, hypnosis, the central nervous system and other areas so that I would be able to recognize information when I saw it. I gathered books on all of these subjects and tried to learn all that I could. At times I was able to obtain obscure, out of print books written on these and other key subjects and as time went along my background research paid off.

I contacted Vermont Senator Bernie Sanders' office in the early 2000's and provided him with documents and information about the Vermont CIA experiments and I asked for his help on several occasions. He sent a Congressional Liaison officer to CIA in order to try to help me obtain documents I requested under FOIA. Over the years to come, Senator Sanders and his Burlington staff were receptive to my information and tried to help me. Senator Sanders is the only United States Senator who tried to help.

My attempts to contact Senator Patrick Leahy for his help did not go well. I phoned his Burlington office several years ago and when I began to explain about the Vermont CIA experiments to his office staff, the reaction I got was dismissive. The person on the phone clearly did not want to hear the things I was saying about the Vermont CIA experiments. The all too brief phone call ended without the Senator's office offering any help.

My experience with Congressman Peter Welch was also a disappointment. The Congressman sent me a short letter that included no mention of the reason I asked for his help.

I phoned Senator Leahy's office again a few years after my initial phone call. Once again, the Senator's staff clearly did not want to hear about the CIA and he was even more dismissive than the staff was the first time I called. I hoped that the negative reaction by his staff had been a fluke, but the second phone call, convinced me that this had been no fluke. I wondered if my name had been flagged and I doubted that the staff of a United States Senator was routinely as dismissive and

hostile to constituents who requested assistance.

I was still trying to learn how to cope with life as an integrated multiple and I began to be painfully aware of the losses in my life. I had been multiple for forty years and because of the hospitalizations, the brutality of those hospitalizations, separation from my family, friends, school and the loss of the normal, everyday experiences a teenager has in life, I became overwhelmed by the emerging realities of my life. The MPD had saved my life but I began to appreciate how the disorder had caused so much chaos and pain.

The lack of response that I was routinely getting from elected officials and federal agencies was a frustrating and painful experience. Maybe I had been naïve to expect that elected officials would help me and as the list of federal agencies and elected officials who refused to provide assistance grew longer, I became angry. The angrier I became, the more determined I became that I would, somehow, find the truth about the Vermont CIA experiments. The more I was lied to and dismissed out of hand, the more I dug in and continued my investigation. But the deep, pervasive sadness I felt about my government's behavior only grew as the years passed and as I continued to be dismissed and ignored by state and federal officials.

The more I learned about the CIA drug and mind control programs, the more I was able to appreciate the implications the experiments had for my life. What happened to me was not due to an accident. It wasn't because of incompetence. What happened to me was a well thought out, intentionally brutal covert CIA program of drug and mind control experiments. It didn't matter to those who chose me and who used me how old I was when it began. It didn't matter how much I suffered or how much my family suffered as a result. The bottom line was that I didn't matter. Only the objectives of the covert experiments mattered. It was a bitter realization.

I repeatedly asked myself why CIA chose Vermont for the experiments and why when other far more prestigious hospitals and universities admitted their role in MKULTRA, had Vermont's participation remained covered up? The idea that over five decades after the VSH-UVM experiments began, that Vermont's role in the covert research was still being covered up, weighed on me

The literature on the CIA drug and mind control programs describes the motive of the CIA to test drugs and mind control techniques as being driven by fears of the Soviet Union after WWII. The secret programs were begun, according to the explanation of the CIA, as a way

to counter the possible use of similar tactics by the Soviets. The longer I investigated the CIA programs, the less I bought into the CIA explanation.

After WWII, American military intelligence discovered files on drug and mind control experiments conducted by the Nazis in the concentration camps. One can only imagine the horror contained in those files. Yet, American military intelligence decided, as did the American government, to use some of the same methods contained in the Nazi files on the unwitting American public. I wondered how this was even remotely possible. Former Nazi scientists like Hubertrus Strughold were brought into the United States through Project Paperclip and given jobs working for the American intelligence community, despite in some cases, the Nazi scientists' direct involvement in torture.

MKULTRA is described in many documents as a CIA program to study how to gain control of the human mind, even against the will of the subject. The experiments involved drugs, brainwashing, covert experiments in biological and chemical agents, and the use of mental patients, prisoners, terminally ill cancer patients, children and apparently anyone CIA decided was of interest. LSD research is routinely described as having been "weapons testing."

In the 1977 Senate Select Committee hearings on the CIAMKULTRA programs, Americans were told that the details of the experiments were now known. John Marks points out in his book, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate* that CIA personnel lied under oath. It's difficult for me to believe that the Senators were not aware of the lies.

CIA claimed it would identify and locate former MKULTRA subjects and this for the most part has never happened. Many universities and hospitals asked for and received protection from public scrutiny for their participation in the covert experiments. It was, according to testimony by United States Senators, important to protect universities and hospitals. It's painfully clear when reading the Senate Select Committee report on MKULTRA that there was no such regard for the protection of unwitting American citizens who were subjects of the covert CIA experiments. Vermont Senator Robert Stafford was a member of the 1977 Senate Select Committee hearings, as was our current Vice President, Joe Biden

In a 1979 CIA Memorandum entitled, "MKULTRA Notification of Unwitting Subjects-Addendum to the Final Report," a concern is expressed that:

"CIA was pushed to launch a search for victims and now having found a victim possibly injured by our testing, it would look very bad if CIA ignored it or had to be pushed to investigate it…having put ourselves in the position of possibly provoked an illness, we should not now wash our hands of it and place the burden of assessing our responsibility on the heirs of the deceased."

The recommendation at the bottom of the page states, "the active portion of this investigation has been terminated."

It's obvious that CIA had no intention of trying to locate unwitting test subjects and a 1994 document entitled, "Human Experimentation, An Overview on Cold War Era Programs" shows that this has been and remains the policy of CIA.

Testimony by Frank C. Conahan, Assistant Comptroller General, National Security and International Affairs Division before the Legislation and National security Subcommittee on Government Operations, House of Representatives, reads:

"During the WWII and the Cold War era, DOD and other national security agencies conducted or sponsored extensive radiological, chemical and biological research programs. Precise information on the number of tests, experiments and participants is not available and the exact numbers may never be known…However we have identified hundreds of radiological, chemical and biological tests and experiments in which hundreds of thousands of people were used as test subjects… these tests and experiments often involved hazardous substances such as radiation… nerve agents, biological agents and lysergic acid diethylamide (LSD)."

"These tests were conducted to support weapon development programs… healthy adults, children, psychiatric patients and prison inmates were used in these tests…An unknown number of other tests and experiments were conducted under contracts with universities, hospitals and medical research facilities…From 1952 to 1975, the Army conducted a classified medical research program to develop incapacitating agents. The program involved testing nerve agents, nerve agent antidotes, psychochemicals and irritants."

Many people mistakenly believe that the CIA experiments involved only mental patients and prisoners but this was not the case. Numerous CIA and military experiments involved the use of toxins and chemical agents, some of which were used in cities all across America. Entire cities were at times exposed to potentially deadly chemicals and toxins. In 1955, CIA tested to see whether or not entire populations could be

infected with biological agents. These chemicals were obtained from the Army biological warfare arsenal.

When Americans ask why the CIA drug and mind control programs, generally assumed to have only targeted "captive" populations, should be a concern to them, the answer is clear: all Americans were regarded as potential human guinea pigs. No matter who you were or where you lived, everyone was a potential target for covert biological or chemical experiments.

Frank C. Conahan continued:

"During the same period, the Army Chemical Corps contracted with various universities, state hospitals and medical foundations to research the disruptive influences that psychochemicals have on combat troops. The Air Force also conducted experiments on the effects of LSD through contracts at five universities…no effort has been made by the Air Force to determine if the participants' names are available in the universities' records."

"According to CIA officials, from 1953 to 1964, the CIA conducted a series of experiments called MKULTRA to test vulnerabilities to behavior modification drugs…LSD and other psychochemical drugs were administered to an undetermined number of people without their knowledge or consent. According to the official, the names of those involved in the tests are not available because the names were not recorded or the records were subsequently destroyed. However, some tests were done under contract and no effort has been made by CIA to determine if names are available in contractors' records."

I have never been a political person and I will never be a political person. However I am an American citizen. The things I've learned have changed me forever. I will never again be able to trust my elected officials or believe out of hand what I am told by my government. I was betrayed, as was every Vermonter and every American. Nothing could make me sadder.

I continued to file FOIA requests with federal agencies that should have had the documents I requested. I filed numerous FOIA's with FDA and had several phone conversations with FDA. The role of FDA during MKULTRA in providing exemptions to researchers for LSD testing should have produced documents but as with all the previous FOIA requests, FDA denied my FOIA requests due to no documents located.

I filed numerous FOIA requests with Army, Navy and Air Force bases that had been identified as participants in the MKULTRA experiments.

All FOIA requests were denied due to no documents located.

In the mid-2000's, I was contacted by the Department of the Navy regarding a FOIA request I had made earlier. I had grown accustomed to long delays in response to my FOIA requests and at several points in my investigation I had numerous pending FOIA requests with many federal agencies. I had apparently lost track of the request to the Navy and it wasn't until many months later that I heard from them.

When I spoke with the Navy personnel on the phone, he asked me if I had any idea why a FOIA request I had made would have been found locked in a safe. I was stunned as I listened to him explain to me that my FOIA was recently discovered locked away. I had no answer for him

I wrote to every member of the UVM Board of Trustees and included information about the involvement of UVM in the covert experiments. Not one member of the Board replied to my letters. Vermont Governors are always members of UVM Board of Trustees, and I was not contacted by Governor James Douglas. I also wrote Governor Douglas on two more occasions about the CIA experiments in Vermont and he claimed not to have received one of the letters and his response to the third was not an offer to assist me.

I contacted Vermont Commissioner of Mental Health, Dr. Paul Jarris after reading a 2005 statement by him in the newspaper. "We have moved quickly to remedy past problems and have been open and transparent every time there was an opportunity to right a past wrong."

I wrote Dr. Jarris and told him about the CIA experiments and about my own personal experiences in VSH. Jarris wrote me back expressing his concern and asked me to provide him with documents, which I did. I waited for a response and none came. He left his position as Vermont Commissioner of Mental Health without ever addressing the information.

I located Dr. Jarris who was living and working in another state in the late 2000's and wrote him a letter in which I asked if leaving his position in Vermont had anything to do with my request for his help. I later learned that Jarris provided a copy of my letter to him to the State of Vermont.

I began to study the books about the VSH. The first time I read the 1961 book, *The Vermont Story*, written by Dr. Rupert Chittuck, et al, I suspected that the schizophrenic rehabilitation program described in the book, had never taken place. As I re-read the book, I began to recognize the terminology used throughout the book as terminology

used by LSD researchers. I'd obtained noteworthy books on LSD like *The Use of LSD in Psychotherapy* by Harold Abramson, *Forgotten Truth* by Huston Smith and *Acid Dreams* by Martin Lee. I also obtained declassified CIA documents that described the use and actions of hallucinogenic drugs. I studied everything I could find on LSD and other hallucinogens.

I knew that CIA routinely covered up LSD research by calling the research "schizophrenia research." CIA researchers like Robert Hyde tried to create a "model psychosis" using LSD to produce schizophrenia-like conditions in experimental subjects. As I read *The Vermont Story*, I realized what I was actually reading.

The Vermont Story bibliography contains names of numerous other researchers who are noted to have influenced and/or participated in VSH schizophrenia research. The CIA declassified documents contain the names of many CIA-contracted researchers and I was able to match many of these names to the VSH research. Several of the researchers cited in the VSH book were also found to have had extensive research backgrounds in LSD, mescaline and other hallucinogenic drug testing.

One book in particular was referenced repeatedly by the authors of *The Vermont Story* as having played a significant role in VSH schizophrenic research. The 1958 book, *Schizophrenia: A Review of the Syndrome* by Leopold Bellak contains dozens of verified CIA MKULTRA researchers and known CIA methods, and gives details about the LSD research of Robert Hyde and other known CIA-contracted psychiatrists.

The book, published by Logos Press contains a very interesting name inside of the cover page: the book was "Manufactured by H. Wolff." I believe this was in fact Harold Wolff, known CIA researcher and the creator of the CIA front group, The Human Ecology Fund. Many of the researchers in the Bellak book are noted in other publications as having conducted MKULTRA research through monies provided by the Human Ecology Fund. Robert Hyde was funded in part by Human Ecology and I believe that the Bellak book was a product of the CIA Human Ecology Fund.

VSH psychiatrists noted in the Bellak book include Dr. George Brooks, Dr. Donald Eldred, and Dr. John Bockoven. The American Psychiatric Association and the American Psychological Association admitted their participation in the CIA MKULTRA programs during the 1977 Senate Investigations. The 1960 American Psychological Association President was George Albee, a Vermont psychologist, and he too is noted in the Bellak book. The American Psychological

Association was cleared at TOP SECRET as the contractor on MKULTRA Subproject 107 in 1960. Under that contract, it received $15,000 for "attending meetings at foreign sites."

I had brief contact with Albee in 2009 and he denied knowing anything about the Vermont CIA experiments. I sent him information that showed that the American Psychological Association was fully aware of its involvement in CIA research and that the Association was a witting participant. As President of the Association in 1960, it is highly unlikely that Albee wasn't aware of the Association's collaboration with the CIA. Albee ended his contact with me after he received the information.

I found many examples of known CIA chemicals, procedures, sites and verified CIA researchers in Bellak's book. The book is actually a Who's Who of CIA MKULTRA. The list of names includes:

Overholser, Hoch, Hyde, Greenblatt, Hoffman, Azima, Beecher, Bender, Bennett, Denber, DeShon, Fabing, Murray, Himwich, Hoagland, Solomon, Whitehorn, Lilly, Marrazzi, Rinkel, Hebb, Houston, Osmond, Pfieffer, Rodgers, Delgado and Wittkower.

These are only a few of the numerous researchers who conducted CIA drug and mind control experiments; most of which were funded through the Human Ecology Fund.

Several researchers in the Bellak book are named in *The Vermont Story* and *Empty Beds: A History of the Vermont State Hospital*, by Marsha Kincheloe; their research on LSD and mescaline is also detailed in Bellak's book. Albert DiMascio, who conducted LSD experiments with Robert Hyde, was frequently cited in *Empty Beds* as a research partner of George Brooks, as were Paul Huston, and Herman Denber. All three researchers conducted extensive LSD and mescaline experiments. Another name of note in the Bellak book is A.M. Robinson. Robinson is cited in the *Vermont Story* as an employee of the Smith, Kline and French Mental Health Unit. Robinson began working at VSH in the late 1950's. Smith, Kline and French Pharmaceutical Company is named in declassified CIA documents as a contracted drug company for CIA and it was also under contract with VSH beginning in the mid-1950's.

Examples of procedures and experiments detailed in the Bellak book:

LSD, LAE, LD50, Bufontenine, hashish, Siamese fighting fish, wool protein, RSBT (Rhythmic Sensory Bombardment Therapy), Metrazol, model psychosis, sensory deprivation, lobotomies, Mescaline, narco-

hypnosis, ATCH, Thorazine, Reserpine, Artane, BST (Brief Stimulation Therapy), implanted electrodes, Coramine, amphetamines, electro-narcosis, electro-sleep, fever therapy, hibernation therapy, histochemical studies, hormone therapy, prolonged narcosis, perpetual isolation and photoshock therapy. Also noted: pink adrenaline, narco-suggestibility, blocking agents for LSD and other hallucinogens, and radioactive isotope tracers studies with LSD.

In addition, numerous verified CIA research sites are also referenced in Bellak as well as portions of experiments such as Robert Hyde's radioactive isotope tracer studies with LSD. I have no doubt that the Bellak book, "Manufactured by H. Wolff," was a product of the CIA front group the Human Ecology Fund.

In the CIA declassified documents I obtained from the National Security Archives, several documents show member lists of researchers who belonged to CIA front groups. The Society for Biological Psychiatry was a CIA front group and a 1962 member list includes the name of VSH former Superintendent, H. Peter LaQueur. LaQueur is also named as a member of another CIA front group, the Manfred Sakel Foundation. Other members include: Max Rinkel, Paul Hoch, Ewen Cameron, Lauretta Bender, Herman Denber, and Henry Murray. Several members of these CIA front groups are cited in *The Vermont Story* and *Empty Beds* and they include: Herman Denber, Gerald Klerman, Milton Greenblatt and Jordon Scher.

Only the 1962 Society For Biological Psychiatry and Manfred Sakel Foundation member lists are available in the declassified CIA documents. There is no way to know for sure which other VSH psychiatrists besides LaQueur would be listed as members of the two CIA front groups in other years.

I used the Vermont Records Act to obtain copies of VSH-UVM research documents beginning with the research project that *The Vermont Story: Schizophrenic Rehabilitation* was based on. The 1957 grant, MY-1752, Special Projects #180, was funded by Health, Education and Welfare and the United States Public Health Service. These federal agencies admitted their willing participation in the CIA drug and mind control programs. I also obtained the VSH-UVM project documents MY-1752-RISI that also covered the Special Project #180. Additional funding was provided by the Office of Vocational Rehabilitation.

It's noteworthy that before the influx of federal monies from agencies now known to have wittingly funded CIA experiments, VSH

was a crumbling institution. In the book *Empty Beds*, former Superintendent Rupert Chittuck describes the hospital as being infested with rats and other vermin and having failing systems like plumbing and structure. When the federal research monies flooded into VSH, the hospital built the physical structure back to reasonable standards. After 1973, when the federal monies for active patient research stopped, VSH began to decline. By 2011, Tropical storm Irene flooded the hospital and damaged it beyond repair. Governor Peter Shumlin closed the aging hospital forever. I have to wonder how many lives might have been saved from the brutality of VSH if only the federal research monies had never been allotted to VSH in the 1950's. It took an act of God and a good Governor to finally close VSH forever.

It's not as if VSH hadn't come under scrutiny over the years. In 2003, the Department of Justice launched an investigation into VSH and federal funds were withdrawn from the State when the hospital was decertified. I provided DOJ with information and documentation about VSH CIA experiments and its brutal history, yet DOJ was unable or unwilling to open an investigation into VSH past research activities and blatant patient civil rights violations. Governor after Governor passed the problem along and there was no will in the Vermont Legislature to close the VSH. If it hadn't been for Tropical storm Irene, VSH would very likely still house patients.

I read the VSH-UVM research project documents, Special Project #180 and quickly realized that I was reading details of the use of unwitting VSH patients in covert drug experiments. Cited as a "Consultant" to VSH research was Dr. Milton Greenblatt, Director of Research at Boston Psychopathic Hospital. I already knew that VSH-UVM and Boston Psychopathic Hospital had a research and personnel exchange program well underway for years and I knew that Robert Hyde was conducting CIA LSD experiments at Boston Psychopathic Hospital prior to and during this time. I was also aware that Dr. George Brooks had received a Fellowship from Smith, Kline and French, in 1956, which sponsored him to spend six months on site at the Boston hospital for "special drug studies."

Dr. Milton Greenblatt, Director of Research at Boston Psychopathic Hospital conducted research with Hyde and with Albert DiMascio. A 1958 research project, "AStudy in the Effect of LSD: Physiologic and Psychological Changes and their Interrelations", is cited in the psychosurgical chapter (lobotomy) of Bellak's book. In 1959, Greenblatt conducted studies in human isolation at the Wright-Patterson Air Force Base.

VSH-UVM research Special Project #180: “This investigation was supported in part, by a research and demonstration grant (No. 180) from the Office of Vocational Rehabilitation and Health, Education and Welfare, Washington, DC.” The documents also cite USPHS as a funding source.

Dr. Robert Hyde’s Butler research project grant, Special Project #181 includes a statement that: “This investigation was supported in part, by a research and demonstration grant (No. 181) from the Office of Vocational Rehabilitation and Health, Education and Welfare, Washington, DC.”

In a 1956 Boston Psychopathic research project, the grant was a “Special Project funded by the Office of Vocational Rehabilitation and Health, Education and Welfare, Washington, DC.”

In 1956, Dr. Milton Greenblatt conducted 116 lobotomies on schizophrenic patients.

The documents describe the criteria for selection of the patients for the VSH-UVM research:

“Nearly all of them had been declared financially incapable of paying anything for their own care and were committed to the hospital at state expense. They were middle-aged, poorly educated, lower class individuals…”

“They were seldom visited by friends or relatives. They received very few packages or letters. We feel that nearly all of these patients could reasonably be considered to be hopeless cases as far as any social recovery and establishment in homes and jobs outside the hospital are concerned.” “The majority of patients in the selected group will have received prolonged intensive drug therapy in the past without release from the hospital, thus we anticipate that relatively few among them will be discharged and lost from the group.”

H.P. Albarrelli Jr. writes in his book, *A Terrible* Mistake, that the:

“Special Projects Division (SPD) was set up within the Office of The Chief, Chemical Warfare Services, to carry out particularly sensitive projects initiated by the War Research Service to oversee the crème de la crème of defensive and offensive biological warfare experiments for various federal agencies, or those contracted out to universities and private laboratories throughout the country.”

“Within eight months of its creation, SPD had evolved into a massive bureaucracy…SPD maintained close liaison with the Medical, Ordnance, and Intelligence Departments of the Army and Navy, the

Army, Air Force, U.S. Public Health Service, U.S. Department of Agriculture and the British and Canadian governments' biological warfare organizations."

Were the Special Projects at UVM-VSH, at Butler and at Boston Psychopathic - all research and exchange partners and all sites of CIA drug and mind control experiments – funded and contracted through the Special Projects Division as outlined by H.P. Albarelli, Jr.?

I spoke with a person, (who requested anonymity) who attended a conference held in Vermont years ago where Dr. Milton Greenblatt was the featured speaker. This person told me that Greenblatt bragged about all of the lobotomies conducted at VSH. Greenblatt's 1956 Boston Psychopathic Hospital Special Project funded the lobotomies of 116 "schizophrenic" patients. The CIA was interested in the use of lobotomies as part of their experiments on how to induce amnesia.

The VSH experimental drug referred to as SU-3822 #1 and SU-3822 #2, was described as being a "synthetic compound." The chemical agent was supplied by CIBA Pharmaceutical Company. The patients being used without their knowledge or consent were contained on the locked adult women's ward and were the most severely mentally ill VSH patients.

The primary researcher in this project was Dr. George Brooks and the project was conducted jointly by VSH-UVM. Descriptions of the patients' reactions and adverse symptoms are detailed in the project documents. Special Projects #180 included several other apparently benign research studies in "schizophrenic rehabilitation" as well. I will focus on the documents that show the use of unwitting subjects, the use of experimental drugs and experimental procedures.

From the research project, Chronic Schizophrenia, Tranquilizing Drugs and Motor Functions, USPHS grant #MY 1752, September 1957-1958:

"On the first day after the change to placebo, patients on the ward seemed somewhat tense or restless…on the second day four of the patients developed rather acute, uncomfortable reactions characterized by tension, fear, restlessness, insomnia, increased perspiration and vomiting. All patients were tense and restless. The attendant said, "It's like old times. It's bedlam."

"On the third day thirteen patients were suffering severe withdrawal reactions indistinguishable clinically from a moderate withdrawal following long term ingestion of morphine. By the fourth day, there was

a total of seventeen out of twenty eight patients who were tense, restless, complaining of muscular aches and pains, breaking out in a cold sweat, sleepless, nauseated. Vomiting had become a serious problem in four patients. On the fifth day one patient became very weak and faint. The dose of the placebo was changed from three times a day to four times a day in an attempt to reassure staff."

"Following the end of the active withdrawal symptoms the behavior of the patients continued to deteriorate. During the fourth week after the change to the placebo, many patients had to be changed to what was felt to be an active chemical compound, SU-3822."

"The clinical condition of all patients continued to deteriorate. As the patients' behavior and clinical condition became intolerable the dosage was gradually raised to 100 mgs. q.i.d. At this time one patient developed a severe skin rash resembling measles. At the end of the third week of SU-3822, all patients were much worse."

"By the eleventh week of the study, two patients developed severe extra pyramidal dysfunction with all the signs of classic postencephaletic Parkinsonism. Three other patients developed severe extra pyramidal dysfunction with insomnia and marked restlessness and nine others had definite cogwheel rigidity. Seven other patients had palpable cogwheel phenomenon in the anterior muscle mass of the arm. Two patients had marked flaccid hypermobility of the elbow joint. On the sixth day following the change in medication nearly all of the patients had some signs of extra pyramidal dysfunction."

"By the eleventh day after beginning the medication, nine patients were suffering rather distressing akathesia and were described by attendants as "pacers." They were pacing back and forth like caged lions. Some attendants refused to work on the ward."

"It seems apparent that use that the substance SU-3822 is not effective…in the behavioral control of severe and chronic schizophrenics."

"Study Duration: April 7-July 17."

"Use of SU-3822#1: May 4-May 19."

:Use of SU-3822#2: May 20-June 12."

"We have been impressed by the rich variety of motor disorders that appear in patients receiving Thorazine and Reserpine, especially when used in combination. These disorders range from a general slowing of responses and impairment of fine motor abilities through cogwheel rigidity, loss of associated movements, spasmodic torticollis, choreform

states, oculargyric crisis and catalepsy to full blown Parkinsonism in which patients suffer almost total muscular rigidity."

I read the statement above with particular disgust, especially when I thought about the reputation of George Brooks as a "humanitarian." I began to wonder how many of the women on the locked ward 1A had been used in this and other experiments. Almost all of the women on 1A had been kept there for many years, some for decades. I wondered if I was reading about the experiments those women had been subjected to and I wondered how damaged they had been by the experiments

It's clear when reading the research documents that VSH-UVM used active chemical substances in placebos. I suspect this is how experimental drugs were administered to me in 1970-1971.

During the same time when VSH-UVM were conducting unwitting experiments on severely mentally ill patients, hospitals throughout the country that were not conducting CIA experiments were providing compassionate and effective treatment to the mentally ill. VSH-UVM made a choice to conduct the type of research that they did. They had other options and despite their oaths as physicians, despite internationally accepted agreements like the Nuremberg Code and the Helsinki agreement, VSH-UVM chose to conduct experiments using unwitting patients.

I have no doubt whatsoever that CIA and other intelligence agencies paid for the research that was conducted at VSH. The monies that came from NIH, NIMH, USPHS and HEW during the years of the experiments kept VSH afloat for over two decades. Researchers like Hyde, Brooks, Chittuck, William Deane and others discarded widely accepted rules and regulations for medical research and created their reputations based on fiction. The true methods and treatments these doctors used are clearly described in their own research project documents. There is no excuse for what they did to countless VSH patients.

In VSH-UVM research project MY-1752-RISI: "Details of samples of blood, urine and spinal fluid will be collected for examination by the UVM Department of Pharmacology. The details of this study are given in a separate grant application."

I asked Dr. Colin Ross if it was standard procedure in tranquilizing drug research to collect samples of blood, urine and spinal fluid from patients. He replied that no it was not standard procedure in tranquilizing drug research but that samples of blood and spinal fluid might be drawn in experiments involving LSD, mescaline or other types

of experimental drugs.

From MY-1752-RISI:

"A number of studies have indicated that a combination of Thorazine and Reserpine is more effective and more convenient to use especially in the treatment of chronic schizophrenia. However there is a general agreement that this combination is also more effective in producing extra pyramidal dysfunction. For these two reasons it would seem to be the ideal preparation for use in the study of relationships between changes in motor function and changes in psychological and social functions in these patients."

From MY-1752-RISI:

"Studies of the performance in lobotomized chronic schizophrenic patients have demonstrated a further impairment of motor functions immediately following the operation. This impairment coincided with an increase in the severity of the psychotic picture. Similar attempted correlations have not been reported with pharmacology."

I read the paragraph several times and came to the disturbing conclusion that VSH-UVM had intentions of trying to create chemical lobotomies.

The grant application referred to could not be located in several attempts to do so. I did however attempt to locate a VSH-UVM research project funded by USPHS: "RD-1894-P, Autonomic and Psychomotor Parameters of Rehabilitation Potential in the Mentally Disabled."

I filed Vermont Records Act requests that were denied due to no documents located. I eventually tracked this research project to the document storage facility in Middlesex. The archivist expressed surprise that research project documents would have been stored at the Middlesex facility and when I questioned if this would have been unusual, he replied that it would have been very unusual. He was even more surprised when he checked his records that the VSH-UVM research documents had been destroyed. He had no explanation.

I believe that this particular research document was stored in Middlesex and destroyed because the content would have been damaging to VSH-UVM if it had been obtained by anyone. Was this the research project that detailed the use of LSD? Or was this research project one that detailed the use of lobotomies after LSD use?

This is as far as I could go in documenting the involvement of CIA in the VSH-UVM experiments. The answers to my remaining questions are hidden behind locked doors.

BIOGRAPHIES, PUBLICATIONS AND CROSS-LINKAGES OF THE CIA RESEARCHERS

Another aspect of my research was my effort to document as many cross-linkages and connections as I could between the doctors at VSH and the network of CIA mind control doctors. I did this by collecting published papers and books, reports, grant applications and other documents.

A research grant renewal application, 02037, May 1968 - April 1972, Rupert Chittuck and Robert Hyde, USPHS grant account #869124, contains an application to use human subjects.

A December, 1966 letter to Rupert Chittuck from Eugene A. Confroy contains permission to use human subjects at VSH. Confroy was Director of Division Research Grants for USPHS and HEW. Both federal agencies were wittingly funding the CIA experiments.

I located the research documents for VSH-UVM project, "A State Hospital For Educational Therapy," Rupert Chittuck, Robert Hyde, May 1968 - April 1972, USPHS, HEW. The documents identify Hyde, John Bockoven and Dr. Richard York as being "specifically related to this project." Also named are Dr. Greenblatt and Harry Solomon.

In a section of the research documents entitled, "Work Done By Us Elsewhere," research sites named are: Boston Psychopathic Hospital; Butler Hospital; Metropolitan State Hospital; Bedford Veterans Hospital; Lowell Mental Health Center (Bockoven); Rutland Heights Rehabilitation Center (York); and John and Elaine Cummings, Lowell Mental health Center (Bockoven). Also named in the VSH-UVM documents in reference to publications "relevant to this project," were Hyde and R.H. Williams, E.L. Brown, Richard York, Milton Greenblatt, Daniel J. Levinson and Harold Pfautz.

In John Marks' documents donated to the National Security Archives, there are declassified CIA MKULTRA documents listed under Mass Mental Health and marked *New York Times*, August 2, 1977. These documents contain the names and short biographies of CIA researchers and CIA research sites:

Richard York:

Mass. General Hospital, 1953

Boston Psychopathic Hospital, 1952-57

Butler Hospital, 1957-60

Mass. Department Mental Health, 1960-63

Psychological Assessment Associates, 1962-66

Rutland Heights Rehab Ctr. 1966-68 named as a Human Ecology

Fund recipient

Harold Pfautz:

Butler Hospital, 1956-1963

Harry Solomon:

Boston Psychopathic Hospital, Harvard Med, Mass.

Mental Health Center (Boston Psychopathic Hospital) 1955-1967

Max Rinkel:

Noted as working with Hyde and Solomon, 1956-1960

Published by the Josiah P. Macy Jr. Foundation, 1956

Senior Research Associate at Boston Psychopathic Hospital in 1963

The VSH research documents note that York and Bockoven personally visited VSH as "Consultants" during the research. Psychological Assessment Associates in Washington, DC was the site of the CIA headquarters and was run by John Gittinger, Chief Psychologist for CIA.

In the bibliography of *The Vermont Story* are names cited as having contributed to and/or influenced and participated in VSH-UVM research. The book, *Empty Beds* also contains the names of researchers who conducted research with VSH or published research papers with and for VSH psychiatrists. These include:

Milton Greenblatt, Jordon Scher, D. J. Levinson, Albert DiMascio, John Cummings, Gerald Klerman, Herman Denber, Paul Huston, Eric Wittkower, E.L. Brown, and John Bockoven.

Another well-known LSD researcher, Gregory Bateson, was identified in a 1962 VSH-UVM research project document. Bateson is widely written about in books on LSD and is detailed in the Josiah P. Macy Jr. Conferences on LSD. Greenblatt, Scher, Denber, and Huston

were listed as members of the Society for Biological Psychiatry in declassified CIA documents.

Other researchers cited in *The Vermont Story* include:

Paul Lemkau, D.J. Levinson, Eric Wittkower, R.H. Williams, Richard York, E.L. Brown, and Barbara Curtis.

In a VSH-UVM research project document entitled, "Problems of Opening a Rehabilitation House for Chronic Schizophrenic Patients," part of Special Project #180, by George Brooks, Harry Solomon is referenced as an influence on VSH research.

The more VSH-UVM research projects documents I was able to obtain, the more names from those documents matched the names in CIA declassified documents. Bellak's book was a goldmine for identifying CIA researchers and their relevant experiments. The number of CIA-connected names in the two VSH books, added to the relevant names in the VSH-UVM research project documents, left little doubt as to the actual research conducted by VSH-UVM.

When I obtained the VSH-UVM research project documents, "The Use of Programmed Instruction with Disturbed Students, MH-01076, George Brooks, Thomas Boag, 1963-1966," I realized I had finally located a direct research connection between CIA, VSH-UVM.

In these research documents, VSH-UVM conducted Personality Assessment System (PAS) psychological tests on child patients at VSH. The test results were sent directly to John Gittinger, 1834 Connecticut Ave, NW, Washington, DC.

In John Marks' book, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*, the address of CIA headquarters in Washington DC and the site of Gittinger's Personality Assessment Associates, is 1834 Connecticut Avenue, NW, Washington, DC.

I realized the significance of what I had found. In 1965, a PAS was conducted on me and by 1965, VSH had been sending test results of the PAS directly to Gittinger at CIA headquarters. The documents in the research project showed that numerous PAS's were conducted on child patients and sent to CIA headquarters.

A Progress report for MH-01076, USPHS-NIMH, and a document marked 1-R11-MH-01076 contain disturbing statements relating to the use of "programmed instruction" and a warning that sent chills up my spine:

"We expect you to use Programmed Instruction as a base for

teaching and not as the ONLY means. You must use other things or else twenty years from now we will have a generation of programmed kids running around the unemployment office."

I continued to file FOIA requests with CIA and every request was denied. I attempted to have CIA fully declassify Hyde's CIA projects. Hyde died in 1976, yet CIA continues to classify most of his work for them. CIA refused either to grant my request or to deny my request, essentially keeping me in limbo. I filed a request with the Executive Secretary Interagency Security Classification Panel, (ISCAP). I learned that in order for ISCAP to make a determination on my request to have Hyde's CIA projects declassified, CIA had to make a determination and either grant or deny my request. Again, CIA refused to take any action whatsoever. My FOIA request remains in limbo.

In 2011, Dr. Colin Ross filed a FOIA request with CIA to obtain Robert Hyde's CIA subprojects. CIA would not acknowledge that Hyde worked for them, despite the fact that Dr. Ross was able to provide information that confirmed Hyde's employment by CIA, and they refused to grant his FOIA request. Dr. Robert W. Hyde's CIA research is very closely guarded by CIA.

The 1955 UVM-SAM Air Force contract which involved the UVM Department of Pharmacology during the time when former Dachau concentration camp Chief of Research, Hubertrus Strughold, was Director of Medical Research at SAM opened the door to the CIA drug and mind control experiments. The Department of Energy list of participants in the Human Radiation experiments cites UVM as conducting "behavioral studies." Robert Hyde is also noted on the list.

UVM was identified by Sidney Gottlieb as having conducted Special Interrogations. Gottleib stated that he believed that the experiments were funded by Human Ecology and/or Josiah Macy, both cover fronts for CIA. Gottleib was certainly in a position to know what he was talking about since he ran the MKULTRA drug and mind control programs.

Dr. Thomas Boag became UVM's first Chairman of the Department of Psychiatry in 1961. A July, 1961 *American Journal of Psychiatry* bulletin contains the following:

"Department of Psychiatry at the UVM College of Medicine: The office of the Dean has announced the establishment of a department of psychiatry… Chairman of the newly created department of medicine is Dr. Thomas J. Boag, Assistant to the Director of the Allan Memorial Institute and Assistant Professor at McGill. He will take up his new

duties at UVM on July 1 as a full time Professor and Chairman of the Department of Psychiatry."

The Director of the Allan Memorial Institute was Dr. Ewen Cameron, contractor on MKULTRA Subproject 68. Boag would be one of the primary researchers (George Brooks was the other) in the 1963-1966 research project who sent test results of the PAS directly to John Gittinger at CIA Washington, DC headquarters.

I obtained a 2009 list of federal funding sources at UVM College of Medicine. The list includes:

NATO, National Security Agency, Department of Energy, Department of Justice, Advanced Research Projects Agency, Department of Defense, Office of Naval Research, Army Medical Research and Materiel Command, Air Force Office of Scientific Research, Interior Department, United States Department of State and NASA. The Josiah P. Macy Jr. Foundation was removed from the list prior to 2009.

I can only imagine the millions of dollars that UVM received from its federal contracts and I have no doubt that that money was a driving force during the CIA experiments at VSH-UVM.

The funding sources for VSH-UVM experiments include USPHS, NIH, NIMH, and HEW, all of which admitted their witting participation in the CIA MKULTRA programs. Cover front groups identified for VSH-UVM include:

Transcultural Psychiatry, Manfred Sakel, Society for Biological Psychiatry, Russell Sage Foundation, Group for the Advancement of Psychiatry, American Association for the Advancement of Science, and apparently the Josiah Macy Foundation and Human Ecology.

CIA sites named in VSH-UVM research project documents and identified by sources include:

McGill, Boston Psychopathic Hospital, Butler Hospital, Rutland Heights Hospital, Metropolitan State Hospital and Psychological Assessment Associates.

CIA contracted pharmaceutical companies that were contracted to VSH-UVM include:

Smith, Kline and French, CIBA and (possibly) Mead Johnson. Smith, Kline and French placed an employee, A.M. Robinson on staff at VSH in the mid-1950s. A.M. Robinson is also noted in Bellak's book.

CIBA supplied experimental drugs for the 1957-58 VSH-UVM experiments and supplied drugs to the Worcester Foundation for

Experimental Biology where Hyde and Hudson Hoagland conducted MKULTRA Subproject 8.

VSH-UVM research documents and the book, *The Vermont Story* written by VSH psychiatrists include the names of CIA-contracted researchers and LSD researchers who participated in, influenced and acted in the capacity of consultants for VSH-UVM research, including:

Dr. Robert W. Hyde, Dr. Richard York, Dr. John Bockoven, Dr. Hans. Peter LaQueur, Dr. Harold Pfautz, John Gittinger, Dr. Milton Greenblatt, Herman Denber, Albert DiMascio, Paul Huston, Harry Solomon, Jordon Scher, John Cumming, D.J. Levinson, R.H. Williams, Harry Freeman, David Landy, Eric Wittkower, Philip Slater and Gregory Bateson.

Additionally, Dr. Thomas Chiu, who was employed by UVM in 1971, was a member of the CIA front, Transcultural Psychiatry. Dr. George Brooks and Dr. Thomas Boag conducted research using VSH child patients and sent the results of the PAS directly to John Gittinger at CIA headquarters. Gittinger's Psychological Assessment Associates behavioral research programs funded researchers through the Human Ecology Fund. Robert Hyde was a recipient of Human Ecology monies as well as other funding.

In the book, *A Mind For Murder* by Alston Chase, written about Unabomber Ted Kaczynski, Chase notes that Kaczynski participated in mind control experiments at Harvard, conducted by Henry Murray. Murray enlisted Hyde in order to obtain LSD that was used during the covert mind control experiments. Kaczynski cited the abusive experiments as a factor in his hatred of psychologists and psychiatrists. One of Kaczynski's intended targets in the bombings was Michigan psychologist, J.V. McConnell. Murray has been identified as conducting CIA experiments.

Gregory Bateson is widely written about in relationship to LSD. Harold Abramson, a close friend of Bateson, was a CIA researcher and MKULTRA contractor, and he conducted research with Hyde. Bateson is one of the featured participants in the LSD Conferences for the Macy Foundation. Bateson is cited multiple times in VSH-UVM research project documents.

Declassified CIA documents include membership lists in CIA front groups. Members listed in a 1962 Society for Biological Psychiatry report include:

H. Peter LaQueur, Jordon Scher, Eugene Ziskind, George N. Thompson, Huston Smith, Walter Houston Clark, and Jack Mendelson.

A 1964 Society for Biological Psychiatry membership list includes:

H. Peter LaQueur, Paul Hoch, Ewen Cameron, Max Rinkel, Lauretta Bender, Leo Alexander, Milton Greenblatt, Humphrey Osmond, Hudson Hoagland, Herman Denber, Joseph Wortis and Henry Murray.

Many of those listed in the Society for Biological Psychiatry also held membership in Manfred Sakel, including LaQueur, Rinkel, and Denber,

In a 1963 declassified CIA document, an invitation list for a M.I.T. conference on LSD shows the names of those invited to attend:

Huston Smith, Max Rinkel, Harry Freeman, Norman Gottwald, Hudson Hoagland, Erich Lindeman, Gerald Klerman, and Henry Murray.

CIA research sites and agencies that have been identified in Senate Reports, declassified CIA documents and by noted authors include:

Boston Psychopathic Hospital, Butler, McGill, Allan Memorial Institute, Georgetown Hospital, Cornell, Stanford, Harvard, Kentucky University, University of Maryland, Johns Hopkins, University of Indiana, M.I.T., Washington University in St. Louis, Missouri, Queens College, Penn State, Lexington, American Psychological Association, American Psychiatric Association, School of Aviation Medicine, Air Force, Army, Navy, Department of Energy, Department of Defense, University of Denver, University of Illinois, Iowa State Hospital, Iona State Hospital (Michigan), University of Minnesota, Columbia, Emory University, Indiana University, Bordentown (New Jersey), Wisconsin University, University of Oklahoma, NIH, NIMH, USPHS, FDA, Naval Research, Syracuse, N.Y., Society For Biological Psychiatry, Manfred Sakel, Transcultural Psychiatry, Russell Sage Foundation, Group For the Advancement of Psychiatry, Andover-Newton Theological School, Clark University, Brown University, Brandeis University, Worcester Foundation for Experimental Biology, Manhattan State Hospital, Rutland Heights Hospital, University of Rochester, Rockefeller Foundation, Massachusetts General Hospital, Medfield State Hospital, UCLA, American Association for the Advancement of Science Missouri Institute of Psychiatry, Human Ecology Fund, Josiah P. Macy Jr. Foundation, and the Geschickter Foundation.

VSH staff researchers presented papers at numerous conferences and at hospitals across the country and published their research in noted journals. VSH-UVM research project documents list many of these presentations and publications.

References from “VSH-UVM, Rehabilitation of Chronic Schizophrenic

Patients, Special Project #180" provide further evidence of the extensive cross-linkages between VSH doctors and other CIA doctors and MKULTRA sites. These include:

George Brooks, "Opening a Rehabilitation House", in Rehabilitation of the Mentally Ill, Social and Economic Aspects," edited by Milton Greenblatt and Benjamin Simon, Pub. #58 of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, Washington, DC. Indianapolis, Indiana, December 1957.

George Brooks, "Experiences with the Schizophrenics," paper presented at the Allan Memorial Institute, Montreal, Canada, January 22, 1959.

George Brooks, "Rural Community Influences and Supports in a Rehabilitation Program for State Hospital Patients," presented at Mass Mental Health (Boston Psychopathic), March 24, 25, 26, 1960.

George Brooks, Rupert Chittuck, William Deane, "The Place of the Therapeutic Community in the History and Development of a Modern State Hospital," in Denber, et al, *A Research Conference on Therapeutic Community*, Charles C. Thomas, publisher, Springfield, Illinois. Paper presented at Research Conference on Therapeutic Community, Manhattan State Hospital, NY, NY, March 13, 14, 15, 1959.

William Deane, paper presented at Mass Mental Health, March 24, 25, 26, 1960.

William Deane, The Vermont Story, presented at National Conference of the Mentally Ill, University of Wisconsin, Madison, Wisconsin. March 23, 1960.

Barbara Curtis (VSH), paper presented at the Regional Conference of the Mentally Ill, University of Wisconsin, Madison, Wisconsin. March 23, 1960.

Milton Greenblatt, Richard York, E.L. Brown, "From Custodial to Therapeutic Care in Mental Hospitals," Russell Sage Foundation, N.Y. 1955.

A.M. Robinson, "Remotivation Technique," The Mental Health Education Unit of Smith, Kline and French.

Eric Wittkower, et al, "Object Relations Therapy in Schizophrenic States," September 1957.

George Brooks, William Deane, Robert Hugel, "Some Aspects of the Subjective Experience of Schizophrenics," Dis. Nerv. Syst., 1968.

George Brooks, “A Comprehensive Approach to the Motives of Hard to Reach Patients,” paper presented at the American Psychological Association Annual Meeting, Chicago, Illinois, September 2, 1960.

George Brooks, “ Rehabilitation of the Mentally Ill: Social and Economical Aspects,” sponsored jointly by the American Psychiatric Association and the American Association for the Advancement of Science at Indianapolis, Indiana, December 30, 1957.

Each of the sites noted above where VSH researchers presented papers were identified as CIA research sites. Boston Psychopathic (Mass Mental Health), University of Wisconsin, Allan Memorial Institute, Russell Sage Foundation, Group for the Advancement of Psychiatry, Smith, Kline and French Pharmaceutical and Manhattan State Hospital, the American Association for the Advancement of Science and the American Psychological Association.

Carl Rodgers conducted CIA research, funded through Human Ecology at the University of Wisconsin. He was cleared at TOP SECRET as the contractor for MKULTRA Subproject 97.

In the USPHS VSH-UVM research project, “Psychomotility, Drugs and Schizophrenia,” the following are listed:

George Brooks, Albert DiMascio, “Free Association to a Fantasized Psychotherapist,” Arch. G. Psych. 1961.

Max Rinkel, Albert DiMascio, “Prediction of Clinical Effects of Psychopharmacologic Agents,” from Drug Action Profiles in Normal Adult Human Subjects, in J. Wortis (Ed), Biological Psychiatry, 1960.

Heinz Lehmann, J. Csank, “Differential Screening of Phenotropic Agents in Man: Psychophsiologic Test Data,” J. Clin.Exper.Psychopath. Rev. Psychiat. Neural, 1957.

R.B. Malmo, C. Shagrass, D.J. Belanger, A.A. Smith, “Motor Control in Psychiatric Patients Under Stress,” J. Abnorm. Soc. Psychol. 1951

Ewen Cameron, R.B. Malmo, L. Levy, L. Rubenstein, “Repetition of Verbal Signals: Behavioral and Physiological Changes,” *American Journal Psychiatry*, 1959.

Heinz Lehmann, and R.B. Malmo were on staff at the Allan Memorial Institute at McGill University and conducted CIA-funded depatterning research under Dr. Ewen Cameron. Dr. Thomas Boag, UVM Chairman of the Department of Psychiatry in 1961, was Ewen Cameron’s Assistant Director at Allan Memorial prior to his position at UVM. The VSH-UVM research project noted here ran from 1958 - 1962. This places two of

Ewen Cameron's research partners as referenced sources in VSH-UVM projects. Boag, who went on to conduct VSH-UVM research, sent PAS results to John Gittinger.

Erwin Goffman conducted CIA research at the University of Pennsylvania and is cited in VSH-UVM Research Special Project #180 for a 1958 symposium held at the Walter Reed Army Institute of Research.

Paul Huston, frequently cited in the VSH-UVM research project documents, conducted CIA research at Iowa Psychopathic Hospital, Worcester State Hospital, and Worcester Foundation for Experimental Biology and he was Chairman of the NIMH Training Commission.

Paul Hoch conducted extensive hallucinogen research at N.Y. State Psychiatric Institute, and Manhattan State Hospital. Hoch worked under contract for the Army Chemical Corp. Hoch was N.Y. Commissioner of Mental Hygiene and conducted research at Columbia University. Hoch was the Editor of the *American Journal of Psychiatry* and the *Journal of Nervous and Mental Disease*.

Paul Lemkau conducted CIA research at Johns Hopkins as well as for the Army and NIMH.

Richard York worked out of Psychological Assessment Associates in Washington, DC with John Gittinger. York also conducted research with Hyde.

Harry Solomon conducted extensive CIA research including LSD experiments with Hyde.

Harry Freeman was Director of Research at Medfield State Hospital.

Norman Gottwald conducted research while at Andover-Newton, an identified CIA site.

Hudson Hoagland conducted extensive CIA research with Hyde, including MKULTRA Subproject 8 at the Worcester Foundation for Experimental Biology.

Max Rinkel conducted extensive CIA research including LSD research at Boston Psychopathic Hospital. Rinkel arranged to obtain one of the first shipments of LSD for Boston Psychopathic where Hyde was the very first to take the hallucinogen. Rinkel conducted extensive research with Hyde.

Gerald Klerman conducted research at and was Assistant Clinical Director at Boston Psychopathic Hospital in 1963.

Jordon Scher conducted research at Boston Psychopathic Hospital

Erich Lindeman conducted research at Mass General and is named in the Senate report on CIA drug and mind control programs. Lindeman was Chief of Psychiatric Services at Massachusetts General Hospital and Professor of Psychiatry at Harvard Medical School in 1963.

Herman Denber conducted extensive LSD and mescaline experiments. Denber is listed as a member of CIA front groups and is a frequently cited research partner of George Brooks.

Albert DiMascio conducted extensive LSD and mescaline experiments and was a frequent research partner of Brooks.

Also cited in the VSH-UVM project were:

R. Trumbill, C.H. Maag, "Annotated Bibliography and Critical Review of Drugs and Performance", Office of Naval Research, Department of the Navy, 1958 ONR report-ACR-29. 1958.

Paul Huston, M. Singer, "Effect of Sodium Amytal and Amphetamine Sulfate on Mental Set in Schizophrenia", Arch. Neurlo. Psychi. 1945.

I looked at the Huston, M. Singer citation in the VSH-UVM research project documents with interest. I wondered if M. Singer was Margaret Singer. Margaret Singer, according to H.P. Albarelli, was a staff psychologist at Walter Reed Army Institute in 1953. Singer came in contact with Albert Biderman and she testified at the 1976 trial of Patty Hearst. Also testifying in defense of Hearst were Louis Jolyon West (cleared at TOP SECRET as a contractor on MKULTRA Subproject 43), Martin Orne (cleared at TOP SECRET as a contractor on MKULTRA Subproject 84), and Robert Lifton. Both Lifton and Singer interviewed US Korean War pilots who had been captured by the North Koreans and been coerced into making confessions of germ warfare. Robert J. Lifton authored books on "thought reform," which is a synonym for mind control.

Albert Biderman was funded by CIA and Human Ecology and he assisted John Gittinger, Harold Wolff and Lawrence Hinkle in organizing the Human Ecology Fund.

In 2001, I was surprised to learn that a co-author of Singer's and a psychologist noted in books on CIA mind control, Richard Ofshe, was an expert witness in a Vermont trial where coercion was alleged. I immediately recognized Ofshe's name, although I doubt that too many other Vermonter's did.

I include the strong possibility that the M. Singer who is cited with

Huston in the VSH-UVM research project documents, is Margaret Singer. It's noteworthy that VSH-UVM research project documents cite Walter Reed Army Institute in the Special Project #180 citations.

Dr. Robert W. Hyde's research in LSD included several researchers noted in VSH-UVM research project documents:

Robert Hyde, Max Rinkel, H.J. DeShon, Harry Solomon, " Experimental Schizophrenia-like Symptoms," American Journal Psychiatry, 1952.

Robert Hyde, Max Rinkel, Harry Solomon, "Experimental Psychiatry III. A Chemical Concept of Psychosis," Diseases of Nervous System, 1954.

Robert Hyde, Max Rinkel, Hudson Hoagland, "Experimental Psychiatry II: Chemical and Physiochemical Observations in Experimental Psychosis," American Journal Psychiatry, 1955.

Robert Hyde, Max Rinkel, Harry Solomon, "Experimental Psychiatry IV: Hallucinations, Tools in Experimental Psychiatry," Diseases of the Nervous System, 1955.

Robert Hyde, S. Salvatore, "Progression of Effects of Lysergic Acid," A.M.A., Archives Neurological Psychiatry, 1956.

Robert Hyde, Milton Greenblatt, Albert DiMascio, "A Study of the Effects of LSD: Physiologic and Psychological Changes and their Interrelations," American Journal Psychiatry, 1958.

Additional studies by other researchers noted in VSH-UVM research project documents include:

Robert Hyde, Milton Greenblatt, David Landy, John Bockoven, "Rehabilitation of Mentally Ill, Impact of a Project upon a Hospital," American Journal of Psychiatry, 1958.

Max Rinkel, Gerald Klerman, Albert DiMascio, Milton Greenblatt, J. Brown, "Psycho-Physiologic Evaluation of Phenyltoxamine. A New Phrenotropic agent: A Comparative Study with Reserpine and Placebo" - 1958.

It is clear when reading the contents of the VSH-UVM research documents that the research personnel involved in the experiments at VSH were directly involved in and aware of known CIA groups and activities. Almost every site VSH psychiatrists presented their research papers at was a known CIA-funded research site. The authors cited in the VSH-UVM research project documents are overwhelmingly identified as CIA researchers. VSH researchers, Brooks, Deane and

others were very clearly presenting the results of their CIA-funded research to their fellow CIA-funded researchers. VSH psychiatrists were extensively published in medical journals edited by CIA researchers.

The direct connection of VSH-UVM to the CIA drug and mind control programs is, by the sheer volume of the connections, simply astonishing. Despite the 1977 Senate hearings on CIA drug and mind control programs, where the "facts" about the covert research supposedly came to light, Vermont's massive role in the CIA research remained and remains covered up.

A close examination of VSH-UVM research project documents shows that not only did VSH-UVM conduct research using unwitting human subjects, but that their research associates were overwhelmingly CIA-connected researchers. The out-of-state sites where VSH psychiatrists attended conferences, (frequently sponsored by agencies and groups that were funding CIA research) were almost exclusively sites where CIA research was being conducted. VSH research was published frequently by medical journals whose editors were conducting CIA research and the extensive number of CIA researchers cited in VSH-UVM research project documents and in the book, *The Vermont Story* leads to a disturbing conclusion.

VSH-UVM research conducted at VSH over a twenty-year period when CIA monies, funneled through cover front groups and federal agencies that admitted wittingly funding CIA experiments, appears to have been funded by CIA, conducted by CIA and published by CIA researchers. Before the influx of CIA funds, VSH was literally falling down. When CIA halted MKULTRA, VSH stopped conducting active patient research and the hospital began a slow death. The only reason VSH "thrived" during the 1950's, 1960's and early 1970's was directly because of the CIA.

Why was VSH-UVM shielded during the 1977 Senate hearings? Why was Vermont's role in the CIA drug and mind control programs kept covered up? Why was Vermont's role so much more important to keep covered up than was Harvard, McGill, Johns Hopkins, Cornell, Brown University, Columbia University or Stanford? What happened in VSH-UVM that requires a decades-long cover-up by state and federal officials, and state and federal agencies?

How is it possible, given the huge volume of direct connections to CIA, that Vermont Governors during the 50's, 60's and early 70's were not aware of the CIA experiments? How is it possible that Vermont's Legislature was not aware? How is it possible that the 1977 Senate

Select Committee on Intelligence didn't know about Vermont's massive role in the CIA programs? In my opinion, it isn't possible and if they knew about it, they turned their backs on every single mental patient who was used and abused in the VSH-UVM research and they continue to turn their backs, even today.

I believe the primary reason that the Vermont CIA experiments remain covered up is because almost 3000 VSH patients died during the research. The actual number of deaths is not known. I believe that VSH-UVM conducted terminal experiments for CIA and that this is the reason for the cover-up and the reason why I have been harassed for investigating the CIA role in Vermont.

What did Vermont look like in the early 1960's?

1960: Commissioner of Mental Health, Rupert Chittuck

1960: Superintendent of the Vermont State Hospital, Rupert Chittuck

1960: Assistant Superintendent VSH, H. Peter LaQueur

1960: President of American Psychological Association, George Albee

1960: Governor of Vermont, Robert Stafford

1960: VSH patient deaths, 115

1961: Chairman UVM Department Psychiatry, Thomas Boag.

> In 1960, Boag was Assistant to Director Ewen Cameron at the Allan Memorial Institute

1961: VSH patient deaths, 124

1961-63: President of the American Psychiatric Association, Vermonter, Walter Barton

1962: Vermont Governor, F. Ray Keyser Jr.

1962: Assistant Superintendent VSH, H. Peter LaQueur, member Society for Biological Psychiatry and Manfred Sakel

1962: VSH patient deaths: 116

Author Alston Chase in his book, *Mind For Murder*, explains how CIA used universities, professors, psychiatrists, psychologists and federal funding agencies to cover the drug and mind control experiments conducted on unwitting American citizens:

"CIA had a wide range of associations with universities, colleges,

research groups, think tanks, technical schools, secretarial schools and even high schools throughout the country and abroad. The relationships defy simple description."

"Hundreds of college professors had been given special clearances by the Agency's Office of Security to perform a wide variety of tasks for different CIA components…CIA employed individual professors and at times the entire university departments or research institutes for its research and development projects."

"Psychologists within this network…supported secret research with their private funds (Ford, Rockefeller, Russell Sage foundations), thus insuring that this research would remain "off budget" and would never be exposed to congressional oversight."

Chase explains how CIA:

"…relied on federal funding agencies such as the National Institute of Mental Health and the National Science Foundation to support favored projects…it made grants through entirely bogus foundations set up for this purpose."

"The CIA probably used at least 50 foundations in an involved method of funneling funds to certain organizations. Under a method of transfer known as "triple pass," the usual procedure was for CIA to convey funds to "dummy" foundations it had established to act as fronts for its activities. The "dummy" foundations then made grants to legitimate foundations. These foundations, which also handled other funds, then made grants to certain CIA-designated organizations, using the funds from the "dummy" foundations."

The VSH-UVM research project documents show that within the scope of Special Projects #180, there were seven or eight projects within the same grant. For the most part, seven of the eight projects were bland and involved statistical information. It was the eighth project that showed the use of unwitting subjects and experimental drugs.

I suspect that VSH-UVM used "cover projects" such as the ones described above.

My fifteen-year investigation into CIA drug and mind control programs in VSH-UVM began with the name of Dr. Robert W. Hyde in my medical records and the 1961 VSH book, *The Vermont Story*, by Rupert Chittuck, George Brooks, William Deane and Francis Irons.

William Deane graduated from Andover-Newton Theological School in 1944 and obtained his Ph.D. from Washington University in St. Louis,

Missouri. Both institutions were identified as CIA sites. George Brooks completed a six-month post-graduate course at Metropolitan State Hospital in Waltham, Massachusetts, a CIA site. Brooks worked out of the Army General Dispensary in New York City and was stationed during 1944-45 at Nichols General Hospital in Louisville, Kentucky.

H.P.Albarelli writes in his book, *A Terrible Mistake: The Murder of Frank Olson and the CIA's Secret Cold War Experiments*, that Dr. Amedeo Marrazzi, Director of the Clinical Research Division, Army Chemical and Biological Corps, conducted CIA-funded research at the St. Louis State Hospital and the Missouri Institute of Psychiatry, part of the State Hospital, and at the University of Minnesota.

Albarelli writes that the Rockland State Hospital was conducting CIA-Army experiments and that:

"Rockland State Hospital was a notoriously cruel facility that had been shockingly but accurately portrayed in the 1948 award-winning film The Snake Pit, starring Olivia de Havilland. Dr. Paul Hoch decided that Rockland needed a public relations "overhaul.""

Concerning testimony given in 1975 by former employees of Marrazzi and the Missouri Institute, Albarelli writes, "Former employees of the Institute testified in 1975 that the experiments used patients who were homeless and had no relatives in the area."

Marrazzi's criterion for choosing experimental subjects sounds familiar. VSH-UVM's criteria, as stated in their research project documents, were similar.

In VSH-UVM research project documents, USPHS NIMH, MH-01076 and USPHS No. 1-R11-MH-01076, it is stated that:

"We have been interested in the successful use of (programmed instruction) with emotionally disturbed children at Rockland State Hospital under the supervision of Dr. Gordon Barclay…Dr. Barclay reports indicate we should add this."

The VSH-UVM research relationship with Rockland State Hospital included sending biographical and clinical patient updates using the Rockland Project computer data system. This system included sending the PAS of children at VSH directly to John Gittinger at CIA headquarters in Washington, DC. The Rockland Project is currently a subject about which state and federal officials, the federal funding agencies that supplied the monies to the project, VSH, UVM and Rockland State Hospital all share a collective amnesia.

SIMILARITIES BETWEEN VERMONT DOCUMENTS AND THE CIA-LSD LITERATURE

As part of my investigation, I looked for similarities in the vocabulary, language and attitudes between VSH-UVM documents and published books and papers about LSD. I found many. Specifically, I cross-referenced passages from *The Vermont Story* with publications about LSD. The results were startling:

From the book *Acid Dreams*, by Martin Lee and Bruce Shlain:

"Heisenberg's uncertainty principle stated that the observer influenced the movement of particles observed. LSD research suggests the uncertainty principle was operative in psychology as well, in that the results were conditioned by the investigator's preconceptions."

From the book, *The Vermont Story*, by Chittuck, et al:

"Our approach is also highly progressive and is in the advanced tradition of the natural sciences as reflected by Neils Bohrs and the Heisenberg principle of interdetermanency, (the uncertainty principle)."

From UVM-VSH Special Project #180:

"Our approach is highly progressive and is in the advanced tradition of the natural sciences as reflected by Neils Bohrs and the Heisenberg principle…the uncertainty principle."

From the book, *Acid Dreams*:

"State of consciousness (on LSD) psychedelic therapy familiarity could only be obtained by taking the drug…often times those who underwent psychedelic therapy…reported a whole sale revamping of value systems."

From the book, *The Vermont Story*:

"In some cases this has meant a frank avowal of values…we have asked, "How did I influence this result?"

From the book *Acid Dreams*:

"During the apotheosis of the LSD high self concept may be

diminished to the point of depersonalization…LSD apprehension, fear mounting to panic, fear of death and feelings of depersonalization."

From the book, *The Vermont Story*:

"The impending dissolution of the personality which accompanies the experience of fragmentation of the ego is accompanied by a deep seated sense of panic or overwhelming fear."

From the book, *Forgotten Truth* by Huston Smith:

"Death, rebirth…concerned with things other than self…identify with the suffering of others,"

From the book, *The Search For the Manchurian Candidate* by John Marks:

"I didn't want to leave it."

From the book, *The Vermont Story*, VSH patient quotes:

"I didn't understand how people felt before;" " I didn't want to go through it again but I wouldn't want to give it up;" " I became more sympathetic toward people."

From the book, *Acid Dreams*:

"LSD trip hallucinations…fear mounting to panic…intense irritability, suspiciousness, perplexity…feelings of depersonalization…floating in and out of space…between this life and the next."

From the book, *The Vermont Story*:

"Patients seemed confused and had some impairment or distortion of recent or remote memory…they were suspicious, temperamental, unpredictable…they had a very constricted sense of time, space and other people."

From the book *The Use of LSD in Psychotherapy* by Harold Abramson, quote from a patient on LSD:

"I have died and now I have been reborn."

From *The Vermont Story*: Quotes of patients:

"I woke up." " I was risen;" " I came alive again."

VSH doctors wrote in *The Vermont Story*:

"Patients gave detailed descriptions of the strange, unusual and bizarre feelings…hard to explain…it was like being in a nightmare all day and all night, all of the time…nothing seemed real to me…I didn't realize how strange things seemed…I don't have words."

VSH doctors went on to say:

"It frightened patients to talk about it…that it arouses echoes in them of the horror and panic experienced at the time…patients expressed relief from those feelings and said it was a "horrible experience.""

VSH summed it up by saying:

"It seems to us that this information supports the view that something really has happened in the direction of recovery. Some change has taken place in their psychic functioning."

Hyde's MKULTRA Subproject 66 notes that in LSD research:

"…different observers use different methods of assessment closely related to the observers' values."

The book *Acid Dreams* by Martin Lee explains how LSD researchers' values were influenced after experimenting with LSD:

"State of consciousness on LSD psychedelic therapy, to succeed had to be well acquainted with the psychedelic terrain…this familiarity could only be obtained by taking the drug…often times those who underwent psychedelic therapy…reported a wholesale revamping of value systems."

From UVM-VSH Special Project# 180:

"In some case this had meant a frank avowal of values…How did I influence this result? What values did I hold and how did they operate to produce that which has been obtained?"

Hyde's CIA-LSD MKULTRA Subproject 8:

"Little is known of how adequately or how closely therapist's self-expectations about their roles as therapists are met in the actual therapeutic interview."

From Hyde's MKULTRA Subproject 8 documents:

"…social interaction after LSD…sociological and social psychological measurements such as quality-quantity of verbal production in different structured social situations such as problem solving in group discussion and occupational task situations."

Hyde writes that the subject's ability to describe the subjective experience during LSD has been limited to words like " weird," "strange," etc. and that it was important to get better descriptions of the experience.

Several noteworthy books written about LSD by authors Martin Lee, John Marks, Huston Smith and Harold Abramson contain descriptions by subjects under the influence of LSD. These descriptions include:

"Concern with things other than self…death, rebirth… identify with the suffering of others…I have died and been reborn…I didn't want to leave it…"

From UVM-VSH Special Project #180, quotes by patients include:

"I didn't understand how people felt before…I didn't want to go through it again but I wouldn't want to give it up…I woke up…I came to… I was risen…I came alive again…It's hard to explain. It was something like being in a nightmare…nothing seemed real to me." " Patients were able to indicate that they had a very strange or unusual experience…" "I didn't realize how strange things seemed… It's very hard to explain… I don't have words for it."

Statements by UVM-VSH doctors include:

"Many stated spontaneously that it frightened them to talk about it, that it aroused echoes in them of horror and panic they experienced at the time. They expressed a great relief from those feelings…I have so much more sympathy for others…The concern and feelings which patients show for each other after release seems to validate such statements…49% of patients said the drugs…had been an important factor in their recovery."

"The question was asked, "Was there a turning point when things started to clear up for you?" Eighty-two percent named a specific incident or a specific day…when things cleared up for them. Fifty percent said it was related to…drugs."

From Hyde's CIA MKULTRA Subproject 66, 1957-1958:

"Prospectus - 1. Prediction of subject's reaction to drugs in various situations. 2. Placing different personalities in different structured situations. 3. Making large groups available to Externalizer by using the total culture of the hospital. 4. Making solitude available to the Internalizer. 5. Force isolation on subject. 6. Force group participation."

The references to "Externalizer" and "Internalizer" are direct links to John Gittinger's Personality Assessment System (PAS). Gittinger system used the terms "Externalizer" and "Internalizer" in his PAS as a way to calculate whether the subject was more introverted or more extroverted. Hyde used Gittinger's PAS extensively in his LSD research and UVM-VSH used Gittinger's PAS beginning in 1958.

There is little doubt that VSH patients were subjected to LSD, based on the content of the UVM-VSH documents and based on the fact that UVM was experimenting with LSD and Mescaline, according to Albarelli. UVM-VSH documents note numerous times that occupational therapy, industrial therapy, and a "re-education in social values" were prominent in the research. Hyde's CIA documents repeatedly refer to his LSD experiments for CIA and the interest in "social situations" and "the social attributes of the subject…social interaction and social adjustment."

Hyde's MKULTRA Subproject 10 notes include a statement that:

"…interpersonal interactions defining social personality…are observed in relationship to LSD as well as his interest in…observing individual's reactions to specified social situations."

From *The Use of LSD in Psychotherapy* by MKULTRA contractor, Harold Abramson:

"Studying the social interactions of individuals under drugs can help in the identification of properties of social systems. We can see a great usefulness in drugs like LSD and others in creating a kind of experimental social science."

UVM-VSH 1962 project, RD-1062-P-M references "social integration," the "cultural personality configuration," the "re-socialization of patients and the social functioning" of patients. This research project is noted to have begun in 1955. This particular project initially carried the designation in May, 1962 of NACVR but was changed in June, 1962 to RD-1062-P-M. VR was likely Vocational Rehabilitation. The "N" and the" AC" are interesting in their implications for the funding source for this project.

The Navy used the designation letter N in its research. The Army Chemical Corps used the designation AC. Were the Navy and the Army funding UVM-VSH research in 1962?

Dr. Harris Isbell, a prominent CIA-LSD researcher, was cleared at TOP SECRET as a contractor on MKULTRA Subproject 73. He conducted his research under the Office of Naval Research (ONR) in 1962; according to H.P. Albarelli Jr., "for apparent security reasons…the ONR funding ended and was picked up by another CIA front."

Hyde's research publications during this time frame include:

"The Rehabilitation of the Mentally Ill: Impact of a Project upon the Hospital Culture," Coauthors on this 1968 paper were Hyde, Greenblatt, Bockoven and Landy.

"The Effects of LSD on Group Interaction," Hyde, Slater, Morimoto, 1963. "Patient Government: A New Form of Therapy," Hyde and Solomon, 1951.

"Experimental Schizophrenia-like Symptoms," Hyde, Rinkel, DeShon and Solomon, 1952.

Bellak notes in his 1958 book, *Schizophrenia: A Review of the Syndrome* that:

"Hyde and Solomon at Boston Psychopathic Hospital discuss a group therapy project…the program took the form of patient government which permitted the patients to participate in hospital administration and contribute to their own personal care and comfort… they developed a sense of personal responsibility which contributed to their own recovery and feelings of freedom and a desire to be of service to others…however in order for such a program to be effective, the hospital administration must be ready to democratically share authority."

From UVM-VSH Special Project #180:

"It is difficult to see how the full therapeutic potential can be mustered unless administration permits a large amount of autononomous thinking and acting on the part of the staff…we can discuss the effective use of ancillary personnel from a somewhat different perspective which calls attention to the essential differences between a total institution and the democratic society. The gap between the culture in a total institution and a democratic society can only be filled by changes in the total institution or democratic society."

"Group activities are designed to encourage group cooperation… they are graded to direct the interests of patients first toward each other, then toward the entire hospital and finally, the community…we feel fortunate to have returned to the refreshing positivism of moral treatment."

"Are there marked differences between the type of democratization of the mental hospital represented by our policy of graduation and piece-meal assumption of responsibilities by patient communities and the more and less as patients…"

"A patient government which does not have real power is not a government."

UVM-VSH documents refer to the beginning of their research efforts in 1955 with "a reorganization of the present project in 1957."

Noted in the bibliography of the project:

John Bockoven, “Moral Treatment in American Psychiatry,” 1956.

Also noted:

“Moral Treatment and the Mental Hospital,” Lucy Ozarin, 1954. Lucy Ozarin was a research partner of Robert Hyde, as was Bockoven.

It would appear that UVM-VSH were utilizing Hyde’s CIA playbook over and over again. UVM-VSH adopted the same methods and procedures being employed by Hyde and other CIA researchers like Bockoven, Greenblatt, Solomon and Rinkel.

From Hyde’s MKULTRA Subproject 8:

“It is the responsibility of the examiner to successfully be an annoyer until the subject can no longer tolerate the frustration experience. Since this is a motor task, discharge of tension through over activity could be observed.”

From UVM-VSH *Psychomotility, Drugs and Schizophrenic Rehabilitation*:

“Positive reinforcement tends to raise the level of performance for simple motor tasks but is less effective for more complex tasks.”

From UVM-VSH Special Project #180:

“DiMascio and Rinkel have applied a battery of psychomotor tests as part of an effort to predict the effectiveness of psychopharmologic agents.”

From Hyde’s MKULTRA Subproject 10 Prospectus:

“In the past three years of research with the drug LSD-25, we have developed reliable methods of analyzing social situations and interactions. Our progress in assessing personality types is useful in diagnosis and prediction. These methods are based on a multi-discipline assessment of personality in dynamic social adjustment under normal circumstances and under stress, i.e. drug effect, irrespective of the attributes of any specific drug.”

“The briefest phrase to characterize our main area of study is “social personality.” A laboratory of experimental social psychiatry has been established in such a way that various types of personality and many situations may be subjected to critical study. For example, its methods can be applied to any specific problem such as the effects of LSD or other drugs like alcohol, on the improvement of interpersonal relations.”

“Trying out the utility of these tests and our special interview and questionnaire methods developed in the course of our studies for predicting specifiable change in social behavior following the ingestion of various drugs, particularly LSD and alcohol.”

From UVM-VSH Special Project #180:

“Indeed most of the methods of social science have been utilized… questionnaires and schedules have been administered to patients and formal interviews with patients and staff have been frequent.”

From UVM-VSH Special Project #180:

“One of the implicit moral imperatives of the project has been to fit the method to the situation. If sometimes the method seemed to lead us to the outer peripheries of scientific respectability, as normally defined, we have not been alarmed.”

“Participant observation…becomes a method by which we bridge the gap between speculation and observed fact is made and the method by which an observed fact can be speculated upon and further developed… findings resulting from participant observation may be expressed qualitatively rather than quantitatively but that the demands on the observer are very great in the sense that he is called upon to enter the social field in the fullest possible way, taking into account of all that goes on while giving himself to the ensuing activities in a natural and spontaneous fashion.”

From *The Use of LSD In Psychotherapy*:

“The problem is complicated because we are not studying the drug itself, but, rather, a partnership of the therapist and the assistant, both working simultaneously, the drug in this case, being the assistant. Ordinarily, the interaction of the therapist with the drug itself is only modified by a subtle skepticism or a tempered enthusiasm for a new compound. With LSD, a novel situation obtains, because both the conscious and the unconscious attitudes of the therapist and patient as well as the community as a whole, toward the production of a psychotic process in the patient as part of therapy, may and usually do contaminate the therapeutic process in unusual ways. The therapist himself suffers more than the usual amount of scrutiny.”

From *Acid Dreams*:

“Scientific objectivity - Heisenberg’s uncertainty principle stated that the observer influenced movement of particles observed. LSD research suggested that the uncertainty principle was operative in psychology…in that the results were conditioned by the investigator’s

preconceptions…"

From UVM-VSH Special Project #180:

"The usual canons of scientific objectivity necessary to the use of scientific methodology have to be reconsidered. We have approached each situation with both a research and therapy orientation. In some cases this has meant a frank avowal of values. In other cases we have not been aware of what values we did hold but in making a retrospective analysis of a situation we have asked, "How did I influence this result? What values did I hold and how did these operate to produce that which was obtained?" In either case we have recognized the existence of a value system and rather than attempting to rid ourselves of it, we have attempted to analyze it…our approach is also highly progressive and is in the advanced tradition of the natural sciences as reflected by Neils Bohrs and the Heisenberg principle… the uncertainty principle."

Hyde's MKULTRA Subproject 10 notes an interest in:

"…interpersonal interactions of subjects…and defining social personalities…"

From Hyde's MKULTRA Subproject 66 notes, Hyde's research interests included:

"training non-professional observers," "environmental events and agents…and predicting reactions to specified social situations in subject's environment."

From UVM-VSH Special Project #180:

"Non-medical staff can have considerable latitude in dealing with patients…the latitude should be so great as to include autonomy in all areas other than the medical phase of patient care…this kind of freedom aids the effective emergence of therapeutic trends and makes realistic the attempt to satisfy needs of the familial order…it is difficult to see how the full therapeutic potential can be mustered unless administration permits a large amount of autonomous thinking and acting on the part of the staff…"

From *The Use of LSD in Psychotherapy*: Gregory Bateson is quoted as saying:

" My interest in LSD began when Dr. Abramson gave me LSD two years ago…One of my interests is in something which I call "schizophrenia" in particular the formal patterns, the formal characteristics of experience of members of families containing

schizophrenics. We have been trying to relate the characteristic distortions of schizophrenic behavior to formal characteristics of experience within these families, as a function of how these families are organized. Whether or not these two approaches, experiences with the drug and experiences with families are in any way…related"

The bibliography of UVM-VSH research project RD-1062-P-M contains the citation, Gregory Bateson, "Group Dynamics of Schizophrenia," 1960.

From UVM-VSH Special Project #180:

"In order to establish the fact that patients do have therapeutic relationships with each other we need to know if friendships actually developed among patients. In this case the observational method was implemented by the use of sociometrics, quantitative analysis of who speaks to whom and who sat next to whom at meetings…a checklist was filled out by attendants on ward interaction…Indeed most of the methods of social science have been utilized…questionnaires and formal interviews with patients and staff have been frequent."

From UVM-VSH RD-1062-P-M:

"Do successful patients solve problems of the home while hospitalized by either establishing new and positive relationships with family members or by rejecting or being rejected by them? We are also concerned with the question of changes in family relationships between patients and families and if such changes or their absence associate with post hospital success."

"Bateson has described the double bind family pattern of the schizophrenic and has in fact suggested that schizophrenia is a disease of communication which most affects the weakest member of the family but is at the same time pervasive in all family transactions."

From *The Use of LSD in Psychotherapy:*

Sandison: "The hospital environment is a very complex thing, but it as a whole, may determine success or failure."

Eisner: "By environment I understand you mean the hospital in general? Do you also mean, specifically, the person or persons who are with the individual under treatment…whether or not the therapist has had much experience with LSD; what the expectations of the therapist are? Do you call this environment?"

Sandison: "Include the environment. The particular environment I was thinking about was the whole administrative, structural hospital.

Whether LSD will be given individually or in a group, in what kind of room, whether the data will be recorded…these are administrative aspects."

Whittlesey: "Can you describe the setting a bit?"

Malitz: "Yes. These are hospitalized patients in a psychiatric hospital on a ward devoted exclusively to psychiatric research techniques."

Bateson: "Do these techniques include lobotomy?"

Malitz: "Yes."

Bateson: "This is part of the situation then, let's not forget it."

Malitz: "Not all of them, just some of them."

Murphy: "No, it's part of the environment."

Bateson: "Yes, an essential part of the environment in which the experiment (LSD) was conducted."

John Marks writes about Hyde's research group that, "The quality of a person's reaction (LSD) was determined by the person's basic personality structure or SET and the environment (SETTING) in which the subject took LSD."

From *Acid Dreams*:

"Practitioners of LSD therapy were cognizant of the complex interaction between the SET and the SETTING."

From UVM-VSH Special Project #180:

"A new type of data…research-researcher is an integral part of how things turn out, which is on an order best described as a penetration of the ethos rather than as a description or an analysis of behavior from a position apart…Because the researcher appreciates the role he plays in the social situation he becomes aware of the subjects of research in a different way. Patients become not merely people to be studied but they become participants in the research. Their statements about how they feel, what schizophrenia is like, what reactions they produce in the researcher, what they say by way of suggestions for programming and so on, are all taken seriously and given a validity on par with any other information a researcher might obtain through his own intellectual and methodological efforts."

From Hyde's CIA MKULTRA Subproject 66:

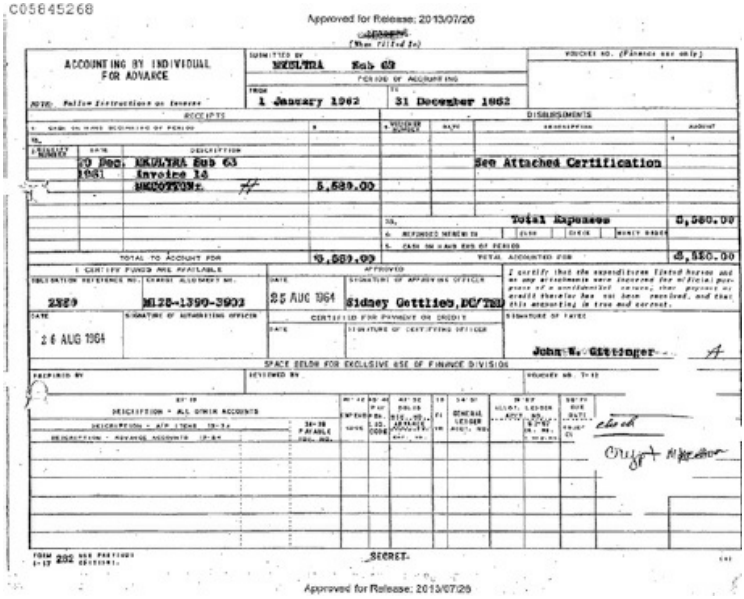
"Training of non-professional observers…to determine observations employed to predict reactions to situations other than the

administration of LSD…Such situations include the rehabilitation of hospitalized patients (mental)."

The similarities between the LSD literature and the VSH-UVM documents confirm that VSH researchers were familiar with the LSD literature, and must have used LSD on unwitting patients at VSH, including myself.

DOCUMENTS

DR. HYDE DOCUMENTS



C05845268

Approved for Release: 2013/07/26

ACCOUNTING BY INDIVIDUAL FOR ADVANCE

SUBMITTED BY: MKULTRA Sub 63

PERIOD OF ACCOUNTING: FROM 1 January 1962 TO 31 December 1962

VOUCHER NO. (Finance use only)

NOTE: Follow instructions on reverse

RECEIPTS

DISBURSEMENTS

1. CASH ON HAND BEGINNING OF PERIOD							
2. ADVANCES RECEIVED							
PAYMENT NUMBER	DATE	DESCRIPTION		VOUCHER NUMBER	DATE	DESCRIPTION	AMOUNT
	20 Dec 1961	MKULTRA Sub 63 Invoice 18				See Attached Certification	
		MKOFTEN.	5,580.00				
3a.						Total Expenses	5,580.00
4. REFUNDED HEREWITH						CASH / CHECK / MONEY ORDER	
5. CASH ON HAND END OF PERIOD							
TOTAL TO ACCOUNT FOR			5,580.00	TOTAL ACCOUNTED FOR			5,580.00

I CERTIFY FUNDS ARE AVAILABLE

OBLIGATION REFERENCE NO.: 2589 CHARGE ALLOTMENT NO.: M128-1399-3903

DATE: 26 AUG 1964

SIGNATURE OF AUTHORIZING OFFICER

APPROVED

DATE: 25 AUG 1964

SIGNATURE OF APPROVING OFFICER: Sidney Gottlieb, DC/TSD

I certify that the expenditures listed herein and on any attachments were incurred for official purposes of a confidential nature, that payment as stated thereon has not been received, and that this accounting is true and correct.

CERTIFIED FOR PAYMENT OR CREDIT

DATE

SIGNATURE OF CERTIFYING OFFICER

SIGNATURE OF PAYEE: John W. Gittinger

SPACE BELOW FOR EXCLUSIVE USE OF FINANCE DIVISION

PREPARED BY

REVIEWED BY

VOUCHER NO.

DESCRIPTION - ALL OTHER ACCOUNTS

DESCRIPTION - APPROPRIATION OR SUB-HEAD	34-38 PAYABLE	39-42 ACCT DR	43-46 ACCT CR	47	48-51 GENERAL LEDGER	52-57 OBJECT CLASS	58-63 SUB OBJ CLASS
DESCRIPTION - ADVANCE ACCOUNTS							

FORM 202 USE PREVIOUS EDITIONS

SECRET

Approved for Release: 2013/07/26

C05845268

Approved for Release: 2013/07/26

63-5

~~SECRET~~

7 December 1961

MEMORANDUM FOR: THE RECORD

SUBJECT : Transfer of Project MKULTRA, Subproject No. 63 to MKCOTTON

1. The research of [redacted] which has been funded to date through Subproject No. 63, is currently being integrated into the total research effort of the Human Ecology Fund (MKCOTTON).

2. The balance of the funds for Subproject No. 63 will be sent to the Human [redacted] for disbursal to [redacted] Accounting for these funds shall accord to practices established for the [redacted] With the transfer of the remaining funds, Subproject No. 63 shall be considered closed.

[redacted]
Chief
TSD/Research Branch

[redacted]

~~SECRET~~

Approved for Release: 2013/07/26

(A-60)
c 195

SECTION I

DEPARTMENT OF
HEALTH, EDUCATION, AND WELFARE
PUBLIC HEALTH SERVICE

APPLICATION FOR GRANT

(Check one) ☐ MENTAL HEALTH PROJECT GRANT
☐ MENTAL HEALTH HOSPITAL IMPROVEMENT GRANT

LEAVE BLANK (For PHS Office Use Only)

TYPE	PROGRAM	NUMBER
REVIEW GROUP		FORMERLY
COUNCIL (Month, Year)		DATE RECEIVED
APPLICANT CODE		G CODE

TO BE COMPLETED BY PROGRAM DIRECTOR (Items 1 through 9 and 15A)

1. ABBREVIATED TITLE OF PROPOSAL (Do not exceed 25 typewriter spaces)

A STATE HOSPITAL CENTER FOR EDUCATIONAL THERAPY

2. TYPE OF APPLICATION (Check one)
☐ NEW PROJECT
☒ RENEWAL OF PHS GRANT NO. 02037
☐ REVISION OF PHS APPLICATION NO. _____
☐ SUPPLEMENT TO PHS GRANT NO. _____

3. DATES OF ENTIRE PROPOSED PROJECT PERIOD (This application)

From	Through
May 1, 1968	April 30, 1972

4. TOTAL AMOUNT REQUESTED FOR PERIOD IN ITEM 3: $403,353.

5. AMOUNT REQUESTED FOR FIRST 12-MONTH PERIOD: $93,583.

6A. NAME OF PROGRAM DIRECTOR (Last, First, Initial)
Chittick, Rupert A.
Hyde, Robert W., M.D., Co-Director

6B. DEGREE: M.D.

6C. SOCIAL SECURITY NO.: 009-26-1620

6D. TELEPHONE DATA: Area Code 802; Telephone No. 244-7331

6E. TITLE OF POSITION
Superintendent

6F. DEPARTMENT, SERVICE, LABORATORY OR EQUIVALENT (See Instructions)
Mental Health

6G. MAJOR SUBDIVISION (See Instructions)

6H. MAILING ADDRESS OF PROGRAM DIRECTOR (Street, City, State, Zip Code)
Vermont State Hospital
Waterbury, Vermont 05676

7A. IDENTIFY ORGANIZATIONAL COMPONENT RESPONSIBLE FOR CONDUCT OF SCIENTIFIC ASPECTS OF PROJECT
Vermont State Hospital

7B. DEPARTMENT
Mental Health

7C. ADDRESS WHERE PROJECT WILL BE CONDUCTED (If same as Item 6H, check box) ☒

8. ARE FEDERAL FACILITIES TO BE USED FOR THIS PROJECT?
☒ NO ☐ YES _____ % OF TIME

TO BE COMPLETED BY RESPONSIBLE ADMINISTRATIVE AUTHORITY (Items 10 through 15 and 17B)

10. APPLICANT ORGANIZATION (Name and Address-Street, City, State, Zip Code) (See Instructions)
Vermont State Hospital
Waterbury, Vermont 05676

12. TYPE OF ORGANIZATION (Check applicable item) ☐ INDIVIDUAL
PUBLIC INSTITUTION: ☐ FEDERAL ☒ STATE ☐ LOCAL ☐ OTHER
PRIVATE INSTITUTION: ☐ NONPROFIT ☐ PROFIT

13. NAME AND TITLE OF OFFICIAL SIGNING FOR APPLICANT ORGANIZATION
R. A. Chittick, M.D.
Superintendent

11. NAME, TITLE AND ADDRESS OF OFFICIAL TO WHOM CHECKS SHOULD BE MAILED
Peter J. Hincks, Treasurer
State of Vermont
Montpelier, Vermont 05602

14. PHS ACCOUNT NUMBER (Direct if known): 859124

15. ESTABLISHED INDIRECT COST RAT (See Instructions)

16. TERMS AND CONDITIONS. The undersigned accept, as to any grant awarded, the obligation to comply with Public Health Service Research Project Grant Regulations in effect at the time of the award (42 CFR, Part 52) and the terms and conditions in t Grants for Research Projects Policy Statement. The undersigned further agree to comply with Title VI of the Civil Rights Act 1964 (P.L. 88-352), and the Regulation issued pursuant thereto and state that the formally filed Assurance of Compliance w such Regulation (Form SRS-441) applies to this project. The undersigned also certify that they have no commitments or oblig tions, including those with respect to inventions, inconsistent with compliance to the above.

17. SIGNATURES (See Ins. "Per" signatures not acceptable)

A. SIGNATURE OF PERSON NAMED IN ITEM 6A — DATE

B. SIGNATURE OF PERSON NAMED IN ITEM 13 — DATE

Form Approved
Budget Bureau No. 68-R 61

DRAFT-[redacted] A
26 May 1954

MEMORANDUM FOR THE RECORD

SUBJECT: Project MKULTRA, Subproject 10

1. Subproject 10 is being set up as a means to continue the present work in the general field of L.S.D. at the [redacted] B
B [redacted] from 15 June 1954 until 15 September 1955.

2. This project will include a continuation of a study of the biochemical, neurophysiological, sociological, and clinical psychiatric aspects of L.S.D., and also a study of L.S.D. antagonists and drugs related to L.S.D., such as L.A.E. A detailed proposal is attached. The principle investigators will continue to C
be [redacted] and [redacted] all of
B [redacted]

3. Original Subproject 10 for the sum of $32,000.00 was initiated for the production of certain rare organic chemicals. The committed money was never actually spent. It is the proposal of TSS/CD to add an additional $10,744.00 to the original sum of Subproject 10 making a total of $42,744.00 to underwrite the present proposal which is attached. [redacted] will B
serve as a cut-out and cover for this project and will furnish the above funds to the [redacted] as a philanthropic B
grant for medical research. A service charge of $1,644.00 (4% of the estimated cost) is to be paid to [redacted] for B
this service.

4. Thus the total charges for this project will not exceed $42,744.00 for the period ending 15 September 1955.

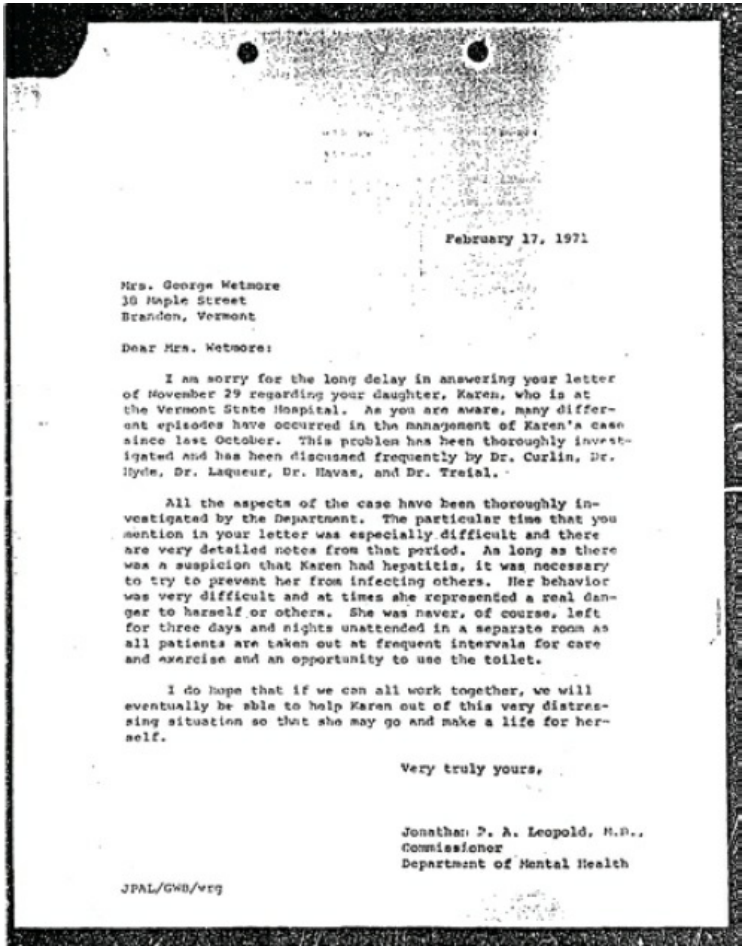
C
B [redacted] and [redacted] B-C
are cleared through TOP SECRET and are aware of the true purpose of the project.

CONFIDENTIAL
Downgraded to
By authority of [redacted] 187475
date JUN 1977

SIDNEY GOTTLIEB
Chief
Chemical Division, TSS

[redacted]

HOSPITAL DOCUMENTS



February 17, 1971

Mrs. George Wetmore
38 Maple Street
Brandon, Vermont

Dear Mrs. Wetmore:

I am sorry for the long delay in answering your letter of November 29 regarding your daughter, Karen, who is at the Vermont State Hospital. As you are aware, many different episodes have occurred in the management of Karen's case since last October. This problem has been thoroughly investigated and has been discussed frequently by Dr. Curlin, Dr. Hyde, Dr. Laqueur, Dr. Havas, and Dr. Treial.

All the aspects of the case have been thoroughly investigated by the Department. The particular time that you mention in your letter was especially difficult and there are very detailed notes from that period. As long as there was a suspicion that Karen had hepatitis, it was necessary to try to prevent her from infecting others. Her behavior was very difficult and at times she represented a real danger to herself or others. She was never, of course, left for three days and nights unattended in a separate room as all patients are taken out at frequent intervals for care and exercise and an opportunity to use the toilet.

I do hope that if we can all work together, we will eventually be able to help Karen out of this very distressing situation so that she may go and make a life for herself.

Very truly yours,

Jonathan P. A. Leopold, M.D.,
Commissioner
Department of Mental Health

JPAL/GWB/vrg

MEDICAL CENTER HOSPITAL OF VERMONT

ELECTROENCEPHALOGRAM REPORT

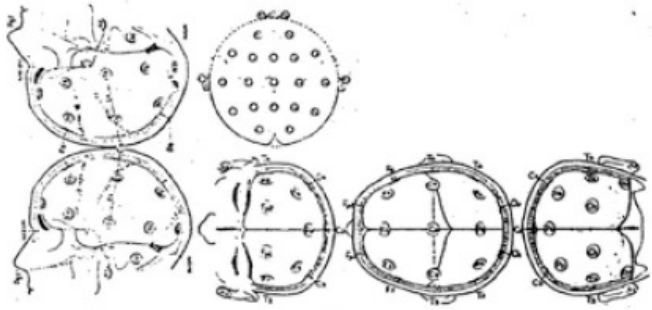
DATE June 28, 1971 PT. Pav.4

NAME Karen Wetmore HOSP. NO 5421763

ADDRESS Vermont ST. HOsp. AGE 19 SEX F

TOWN STATE Waterbury, Vt. DOB 52

PHYSICIAN Dr. Poser



NAME Wetmore, Karen S. AGE 19

EEG No. DATE:

DU- 71-699 June 28, 1971

MFU- Ref. Physician Dr. poser

This is a 19-year-old girl with episodes of violent behavior, depression, and a question of temporal lobe seizures. The present record was a length record with Metrazol activation.

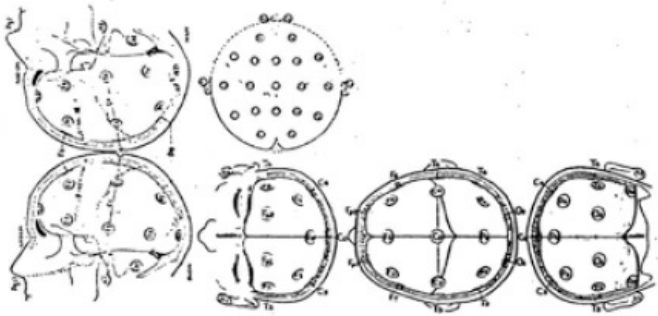
EEG Description: In the resting state this record consisted predominantly of low voltage fast, but occasional irregular alpha activity at 8-10 Hz was x discernible as in previous recordings. This patient was extremely anxious and had frequent intermittent muscle artifact due to gritting of the jaws, movements or talking.

An intravenous injection was started of 5 % dextrose in water. Metrazol was slowly injected according to a modification of the method of Torres. one half CC. (50 mg.) of metriazol was given approximately every 30 seconds (on occasion, 45 seconds elapsed) with intravenous Valium add phenobarbital on hand with for immediate injection. Following approximately 10-12 cc. of Metrazol (a total of 1,000 to 1200 mg.), some slight change in the record occurred in the direction of slowing with theta activity becoming more prominent, particularly in central regions. The patient had mounting apprehension and following a total of 1400 mg. of Metrazol she became upset with crying. The injections were continued during which there occurred increasing amounts of muscle artifact with the patient becoming more and more upset and more prominent low voltage. to moderate voltage fast activity in all head regions with interposed muscle artifact. Following 17 cc. of Metrazol (1700 mg.) superimposed on the muscle artifact there did occur a high voltage, irregular slow and sharp wave which could have been artifactual or a real discharge. At that point 2.5 mg. of Valium was given intravenously. The record continued to be dominated mostly by muscle artifact, however, one minute later during a relatively xxxxx quiet period, the Metrazol injection was continued up to a total of 1800 mg. It that time the record became uninterpretable because of diffuse muscle artifact. The

Physician's Signature _____

MEDICAL CENTER HOSPITAL OF VERMONT
ELECTROENCEPHALOGRAM REPORT

DATE June 28, 1971 IN OR OUT PT. Pav.4
NAME Karen Wetmore HOSP NO
ADDRESS AGE SEX
TOWN STATE DOB
PHYSICIAN



NAME Wetmore, Karen S. AGE 19
EEG No. DATE:
DU- 71-699 June 28, 1971
MFU- Ref. Physician Dr. Poser

patient was obviously very clinically upset, however, no epileptiform discharges were seen. 200 mg. of phenobarb were injected IV shortly thereafter.

Immediately following the Metrazol injection the patient was questioned in her emotionally upset state regarding feelings and sensations. My notes indicated that she said the following: "I never felt this way before". "You gave me the medicine and it made me do this. My legs feel all funny. I am seeing different people in different colors. My back aches. I never felt this way before. You mad me do it. (Cough). It made me cough. I am so sick inside; not mentally, but physically. My head hurts, my back hurts, I have to cough. I am seeing things that arent there. My ears are ringing." The patient rapdily quieted down following the IV administration of phenbbarbital.

EEG Interpretation: This patient exhibited an extremely high tolerance to Metrazol, 1800 mg. did not precipitate any discharges. This fact may well be due to the phenobarb which she had recently been on and, indeed, 100 mg. of phenobarbital was given in the early morning on which this record was run. No physical signs of seizure activity were observed during or immediately after the injection. The patient's subjective sensations are recorded above and at the time seemed to represent more anxiety than the hallucinations of seizure activity. In any event, no EEG abnormality was seen concommittant with these sensations, although the record was quite artifactual because of muscle potentials during that time. In conclusion, the Metrazol activation faixls to activate a temporal lobe discharge, and suggests a very high threshold to Metrazol, possibly related to previous medication:

Pav.4
Dr. Poser
EEG/H

Physician's Signature Dictated but not proofread by:
Buntington Mavor, M.D

VERMONT STATE HOSPITAL

Name: KAREN VETHORE

Tested: DECEMBER 21 & 22, 1965 Birthdate: , 1952

PSYCHOLOGICAL REPORT (CON'T.)

THE RORSCHACH RESULTS SUPPORT THE PICTURE GIVEN ABOVE OF AN INDIVIDUAL WHO IS STRONGLY INTROVERSIVE RATHER THAN EXTRATENSIVE AND WHO IS UNLIKELY TO ENGAGE IN A GREAT DEAL OF OVERT REACTION TO ENVIRONMENTAL STIMULI EVEN AS SHE IS STIMULATED SOMEWHAT MORE THAN NORMALLY BY SUCH STIMULI. IN SHORT WE GET SOMETHING OF THE REPRESSIVE PICTURE FOUND IN HYSTERIA. SOME OF THE RORSCHACH CONCEPTS WERE OF QUESTIONABLE QUALITY, AND AGAIN WE SEEM TO HAVE SUPPORT OF THE PICTURE DESCRIBED ABOVE OF AN INDIVIDUAL WHO MAY BECOME SOMEWHAT UNCONVENTIONAL, SOMETIMES EVEN BIZARRE, UNLESS SHE HAS ACCEPTABLE EXTERNAL GUIDANCE AND DISCIPLINE. ONE ALSO FINDS EVIDENCE OF ANXIETY AND TENSION. THESE IN TURN MAY CAUSE PECULIAR BEHAVIOR AT TIMES.

HOWEVER, THE RORSCHACH DOES NOT IMPRESS ME AS INDICATING A PSYCHOSIS, THOUGH THE PATIENT MAY SHOW SCHIZOID TRAITS. IN MY OPINION THE PRESENT RORSCHACH RESULTS SUGGEST MORE A NEUROTIC INDIVIDUAL WHO MAY SHOW SYMPTOMS SUCH AS MIGHT BE FOUND IN ANXIETY HYSTERIA. AT TIMES SHE MAY BECOME DEPRESSED AND EVEN ENGAGE IN IMPULSIVE SUICIDAL GESTURES. HOWEVER, THERE SEEMS TO BE ENOUGH OF THE HYSTERICAL AND DISSOCIATIVE TO CAUSE HER TO HAVE ONLY A CONFUSED, ALMOST AMNESIC REACTION TO SUCH EPISODES.

THE RORSCHACH RESULTS ALSO SUGGEST THAT DURING THE PATIENT'S EARLY YEARS SHE SUFFERED FROM EGO MALNUTRITION AND ALSO THAT SHE WAS SOMETHING OF A BASE OF CONTENTION BETWEEN HER PARENTS. OR POSSIBLY SHE EXPERIENCED THE CONFLICT, DISCUSSED EARLIER, BETWEEN WHAT SHE WANTED TO BE AND WHAT OTHERS TRIED TO MAKE HER BECOME. IN VIEW OF ALL THAT HAS BEEN SAID IT IS INTERESTING THAT THE HUMAN IDENTIFICATION CARD WAS THE CARD LIKED LEAST "BECAUSE I JUST DON'T LIKE IT." THE HELPLESSNESS AND DEPENDENCY MENTIONED EARLIER SEEMS TO BE IN THE RORSCHACH PICTURE TOO.

THE RORSCHACH ALSO SUGGEST THAT THE PATIENT HAS NEVER BEEN ABLE TO HAVE THE RELATIONSHIP WITH HER FATHER THAT SHE'D LIKE TO HAVE AND THAT SHE WISHES SHE WERE A BOY RATHER THAN A GIRL. THIS MAY BE ONE REFLECTION OF AN UNRESOLVED ELECTRA COMPLEX. IF THIS BE SO, THEN THE PATIENT'S GUILT FEELINGS MAY WELL BE AGGRAVATED BY THIS.

THESE TEST RESULTS ALSO INDICATE A DESIRE TO BE LOVED AND ACCEPTED, TO BE CONSIDERED INTELLIGENT, AND BEAUTIFUL. IF THIS SEEMS TO CONTRADICT WHAT HAS BEEN SAID ABOUT WANTING TO BE A BOY, THEN LET THIS BE CONSIDERED AS FURTHER EVIDENCE OF THE PATIENT'S CONFUSION AND AMBIVALENCE.

THE BENDER REVEALS STRONG AMBIVALENCE AND DUALITY OF ROLE. CERTAINLY THE BENDER RESULTS SHOW A GREAT DEAL OF DIFFICULTY IN INTERPERSONAL RELATIONSHIPS. SOMETIMES HER REACTION IS THAT OF WITHDRAWAL; AT OTHER TIMES SHE SEEKS TO HAVE CLOSER RELATIONSHIPS, BUT SHE SEEKS RATHER CLUMSILY. THE REASONS FOR THIS SHOULD BE CLEAR BY THIS TIME. THE BENDER RESULTS ARE ALSO REMARKABLE FOR THE INDICATIONS OF REGRESSION AND REGRESSIVE ACTIVITY WHICH THE PATIENT MAY DISPLAY AT TIMES IN HER CONTINUING QUEST FOR LOVE, ACCEPTANCE, AND A DEPENDENCY RELATION-

WILLIAM H. SORRELL
ATTORNEY GENERAL
SUSANNE YOUNG
DEPUTY ATTORNEY GENERAL
WILLIAM E. GRIFFIN
CHIEF ASST. ATTORNEY GENERAL

TEL: (802) 828-2153
FAX: (802) 828-2468

http://www.atg.state.vt.us

STATE OF VERMONT
OFFICE OF THE ATTORNEY GENERAL
LEGAL DIVISION
26 TERRACE STREET
REDSTONE BLDG.
MONTPELIER, VT
05609-1101

October 16, 2013

Karen Wetmore

VT

Re: Public Records Request, received October 9, 2013

Dear Ms. Wetmore:

The records you requested in your letter, dated October 7, 2013, are not available because they were discarded pursuant to a public records retention schedule, effective March 3, 2010, on file with the State Archives & Records Administration.

Under the records retention schedule, contracts are retained for three years past the expiration date of the contract. Generally, financial files (invoices, payment information, etc.) are kept for five years beyond the end of the fiscal year they were relevant to.

Since the records you requested are about 50 years old, they were discarded pursuant to the record schedule approved by the State Archivist. *See* 1 V.S.A. § 317a.

Sincerely,

Philip Back
Assistant Attorney General
Department of Mental Health

91st PSALM

He who dwells in the shadow of the Most High
will rest in the shadow of the Almighty.
I will say of the Lord, “He is my refuge and my fortress,
My God, in whom I trust.”
Surely He will save you from the fowler’s snare
and from the deadly pestilence.
He will cover you with His feathers
And under His wings you will find refuge
You will not fear the terror of the night
nor the arrow that flies by day,
nor the pestilence that stalks at mid-day.
A thousand may fall at your side,
ten thousand at your right hand,
but it will not come near you.
You will only observe with your eyes
and see the punishment of the wicked.
If you make the Most High your dwelling,
even the Lord, who is my refuge,
then no harm will befall you,
no disaster will come near your tent.
For He will command his angels concerning you,
To guard you in all your ways;
They will lift you up in their hands,
so that you will not strike your foot against a stone.
You will tread upon the lion and the serpent
“Because he loves me,” says the Lord, “ I will rescue him;

“I will protect him, for he acknowledges my name.
“He will call upon me and I will answer him.”
I will be with him in trouble,”
I will deliver him and honor him,
with long life I will satisfy him,
And show him my salvation.”

REFERENCES

Vermont State Hospital and University of Vermont College of Medicine research project documents:

1. MY- 1752, Special Projects No. 180, HEW, Vocational Rehabilitation, 1957-1958.
2. MY- 02037, 1965-67.
3. MY-1752-RISI, 1958.
4. RD - 1894-P, destroyed at Vermont Public Records Division, Middlesex, VT.
5. MH - 01076, 1963-66.
6. MH - 01752-06, 1963.
7. 02037 - Application grant renewal, 1968.
8. OM - 372, 1958-1962.
9. No.1-1-R11-MH-01076, 1963.
10. RD - 1062-PM, NACVR, 1962.
11. RD - 1062-P-65, 1957.
12. AF (604)1093, UVM-SAM, 1955.
13. MH -17350-01, 1969.

Additional Material:

14. ACHRE, Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments, 1994.
15. *Rutland Herald*, September 4, 2005, Jarris statement.
16. *Rutland Herald-Barre-Times Argus Associated Press*, November 30, 2008, "Evidence Suggests CIA Experiments at State Hospital", by Louis Porter.
17. *Rutland Herald*, August 4, 1977, Judge Henry Black obituary.
18. *Rutland Herald*, August 4, 1977, "CIA Experiments Confirmed:

Turner Says None Going Now," Nicholas Horrock.

19. United States Senate Select Committee on Intelligence and Subcommittee on Health and Scientific Research of the Committee on Human Resources. *Project MKULTRA: The CIA's Program of Research in Behavioral Modification*. 95th Congress, First Session, Washington, DC: GPO, 1977.
20. CIA MORI DOCID: 295498.
21. Memorandum for Director CIA, MKULTRA Notification of Unwitting Subjects, Addendum to the Final Report, 9 October, 1979. Testimony of Frank C. Conahan, Assistant Comptroller General, National Security and International Affairs Division. "Human Experimentation: An Overview of Cold War Era Programs."
22. *American Journal of Psychiatry*, July, 1961: UVM Chairman Department Psychiatry, Dr. Thomas Boag.
23. H.P. Albarelli, Jr. *A Terrible Mistake: The Murder of Frank Olson and the CIA Cold War Experiments*. Walterville, OR: Trineday, 2009.
24. Harold Abramson. *The Use of LSD in Psychotherapy*. New York: Madison Printing Co., 1960.
25. Alston Chase. *A Mind For Murder*. New York: WW Norton, 2003.
26. Rupert Chittuck, George Brooks, William Deane, & Francis Irons. *The Vermont Story: Rehabilitation of Chronic Schizophrenics*. Burlington, VT: Queen City Press, 1961.
27. Leopold Bellak. *Schizophrenia: A Review of the Syndrome*. New York: Logos Press, 1958.
28. Marsha Kincheloe & Herbert Hunt. *Empty Beds: A History of the Vermont State Hospital*. Barre, VT: Marsha Kincheloe, 1988.
29. Martin Lee & Bruce Shlain. *Acid Dreams*. New York: WW Norton, 1979.
30. John Marks. *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate*. New York: WW Norton, 1979.
31. The National Security Archives, John Marks Donation. CIA Behavioral Experiments. Washington, DC.
32. ColinA. Ross. *The C.I.A. Doctors: Human Rights Violations by Psychiatrists*. Richardson, TX: Manitou Communications, 2006.
33. Huston Smith. *Forgotten Truth: The Primordial Tradition*. New

York: Harper and Row, 1976.

34. Harvey Weinstein. *A Father, A Son and the CIA*. Toronto: James Lorimer and Co, 1988.
35. Blink Films, London, England. *The Real Bourne Identity*. Smithsonian Channel, May, 2010.
36. *Counterpoint Newspaper*, Vermont Psychiatric Survivors, article, "The Untold Vermont Story," by Karen Wetmore, December, 2011.
37. Medical Records: Mary Fletcher Hospital, September 1965 - October 1965.
38. Medical Records: Vermont State Hospital. October 1965-66.
39. Medical Records: Rutland Hospital. November, 1970.
40. Medical Records: Vermont State Hospital, 1970 - 1972.
41. Medical Records: Degoesbriand Neurology Unit. Medical Center Hospital of Vermont. June, 1971 – July, 1971.
42. Medical Records: Baird 6, Medical Center Hospital of Vermont. July 1971-October 1971.
43. Medical Records: Vermont State Hospital. October 1971 - September. 1972.
44. Rutland Court documents contained in VSH Medical records.
45. Letter from Jonathan Leopold, Vermont Commissioner of Mental Health to Dorothy Wetmore, February, 1971.
46. Rockland Project, ISD-MSIS - Patient Biographical and Clinical Update Data. December 30, 1970; February, 1971; April, 1971.
47. CIA Behavior Control Experiments, John Marks Collection, National Security Archives, Washington, DC. MKULTRA Subprojects, 8, 10, 10A, 63, 66 (Hyde); Mass Mental Health, Society for Biological Psychiatry, Manfred Sakel Fund membership lists; PROJECT OFTEN, MORI ID 146136, Use of Metrazol for Interrogations, Negation of LSD.
48. Wetmore vs. State of Vermont, et al. November 1998 - May 2002.
49. Additional documents including Vermont Department of Mental Health Biennial Reports, 1962-1970 and a 1963 declassified CIA document: An invitation list issued by M.I.T. for a conference on LSD.

50. Robert Hyde's more fully declassified CIA MKULTRA Subprojects 8, 10, 63 and 66.
51. Letter from Phil Fass to Alan George (Karen Wetmore) 1999.

Interviews, Correspondence and Other Sources

52. Telephone Communications, Former Staff from1965, Mary Fletcher Hospital Psychiatric unit.
53. Former Staff, from 1971, Baird 6, Medical Center Hospital of Vermont.
54. Governor Phil Hoff, 2009.
55. Staff Vermont Public Records Division, Middlesex, Vermont.
56. Dr. Frederick Curlin, 1998.
57. Jane Youngbaer, 2009, 2011.
58. Janice Pitch, Staff, National Security Archives.
59. Senator Bernie Sanders' Burlington Office, Gretchen Bailey.
60. Senator Patrick Leahy, Burlington Office.
61. Senator Diane Feinstein Office, Washington, DC.
62. FBI Office, Rutland, Vermont.
63. FBI Office, Albany, New York.
64. NIMH, NIH, USPHS, HHS, DOJ, DOE, FDA, DOD, Brooks Air Force Base, UVM Office of General Counsel, Thomas Meccurio.
65. Vermont Commissioner Mental Health, Michael Hartman.
66. Central Intelligence Agency, 2000-2009.
67. Department of Defense.
68. Social Security Administration, St. Louis, Missouri.
69. Rockland State Hospital, Orangeburg, New York.
70. Postal Inspector Mark Cavic, Essex Junction, Vermont.
71. Postal Inspection Agency, Boston, Massachusetts.
72. Postmaster, Rutland, Vermont.
73. Fairpoint Communications, Verizon, NYNEX.
74. Department of the Navy.

75. Vermont Attorney General Office, staff, May 2008.
76. Vermont Department Mental Health.
77. Vermont Department Health.
78. Vermont State Hospital.
79. George Albee.
80. Vermont Records Act Request, October 7, 2013.
81. Reply from Vermont Records Act Request, October 16, 2013.
82. FOIA Request to CIA, October 24, 2013.
83. CIA response to FOIA, November 15, 2013.
84. Vermont State Archives and Records Administration, Series VSH - 003, VSH-0011-2, Director of Research, Dr. Robert W. Hyde, 1940-1975, VSH-0011-3, Director of Research, Dr. Robert W. Hyde, 1943-1975.

svalispeaksagain 7:46 pm on October 29, 2019

Tags: dissociation (30), mind control (69), programming (60), ritual abuse (65), SRA (45)

Spiritual Controllers

Note: this is based upon a short book I wrote a few years ago.

Master controllers for a Jesuit spiritual system will reflect the primary spiritual relationships in the child's life. Here, several are discussed.

Althea (the Tree of Life)

These will include the "unholy trinity" of the Father (Satan), the Son (the antichrist and the beast) and the Spirit (Althea, the tree of life). The Fathers worship all three. In fact, the Arbor de Vitae monastery just north of Rome (the primary Jesuit monastery) is believed to be the dwelling place of Althea, the tree of life. This wicked creature lives in the basement of the monastery, and the young children (and adults) will often hear her moaning at night to be fed. And they do feed her, at regular intervals, with sacrifices of every human variety.

The Jesuit children are taught from infancy to participate in these rituals; as infants, the Fathers place their hands over a baby's, and teach them to make the sacrifice. As the child gets older, they must take a more active role, or suffer severe punishment by Althea (which appears at times like a huge willow whose branches "whip" the child terribly).

No child ever wants to be called down for a spiritual whipping of this manner, and so they quickly learn how to feed the tree very efficiently. After a ritual, the tree will be quiet for days or weeks, but will always begin moaning again to be fed. The child grows up knowing that in order for there to be peace, they must give this entity what it asks for. The child will have been dedicated to Althea, will have a representation of her in their system, and must dismantle it, kick out the spiritual entity, and heal the human part.

Helping the Survivor

When the tree of life is pulled out (only after trauma processing, support, and the system is ready to do so!) the three roots (white, black and silver gray) must also be rooted out, since these

represent early infant demonic traumas used in installing the roots of the tree of life and the q'ballah internally. This takes extensive prayer, seeking the Lord, and asking the Holy Spirit to help the survivor overcome the fear of uprooting these demonic strongholds.

Follow

The tree of life will often have grown to a large tree with 1,000 points of life, each representing a life taken (including those of infants), and the demonic that entered as a result, during the installation of the tree. These lives must be grieved for; the murders repented of, and forgiveness received, to break the hold of the tree of life on the survivor's mind.

Some survivors will also have a mirror images of the tree of life, or a "tree of death" internally, that again is based upon the ritual murder of young infants, with the roots attached to the heart of the survivor (they are wrapped around the heart, and the survivor may believe that they will die if the tree is taken out).

The survivor will need to realize that the Lord is able to undo even this type of programming; can overcome the fear of uprooting the demonic. It can help the survivor if they are reminded that the fear they feel is the fear that the demonic feels at losing its "home" inside, and that they will actually feel more peace once the tree is rooted out. They can pray and ask the Lord to uproot it for them; this may be seen visually inside as Jesus reaching in and pulling it out, or as an increased peace as the rituals are repented of, and the person exercises authority.

The relief may be dramatic, or occur over several weeks. But the survivor will have more internal peace and healing once they choose to get rid of this voracious entity, and allow the Holy Spirit to fill them instead.

The Beast

The Beast has a room and a lair in the Vatican dedicated to him. This room supposedly dates from early Roman times, when sacrifices were conducted in the original cave located there that the Vatican was built over. This angry and vindictive spirit makes its presence known, and is eagerly sought out by the Fathers, since they believe he gives great power over enemies. The young child will be placed during the second year of life in a dark, cave-like lair underneath the altar in the Beast's room. They will spend 24 hours in this lair, where the Beast visits with the child, makes suggestions, and eventually has the child give in to its requests (to kill another child put in with them).

This is extremely traumatizing to the young child, who feels intense guilt. The child will have internalized the Beast (see the above discussion on programming methods used). This internal Beast only knows and understands killing and destroying, and spiritual warfare and deliverance must be done to free the human part trapped by the spiritual part. The Beast also gives energy to the punishment systems described previously, and will demand absolute obedience to it and the Pantheon, until the individual learns their authority in Yeshua, and is able to break free.

Satan

Many times, it can take years of dedicated work to go beneath the tree and beast layers, and reach the true system controller: Satan. From pre-birth and birth dedication, this is the being the Jesuits truly serve, in both his incarnations: as satan (cruel, vicious, demanding, destructive and lying) and Theo (kind, benevolent, manipulative, charming). The child will have been bonded to both, as described previously.

Satan's Throne

During the toddler years, at times the child will be physically placed on satan's throne. When supplicants crawl up the hall on ground glass, or nails, or hot rocks, satan will be sitting on the throne next to the child. He will ask the child what kind of judgment should be made; or what price should be paid for a request, and the child will answer. If satan is pleased with the answer, he and the child will simultaneously make the pronouncement. If the child is too kind-hearted, they will be punished severely until they learn the types of judgment that are acceptable.

This internalizes the satan identity for the core master controller, since the adults treat the child on satan's throne as if he/she were satan himself, in every way. The child is actually temporarily possessed, in that part, by satan during the ceremonies and judgments. The evil behavior convinces the survivor that he/she is evil and anchors the belief in the part that they are actually satan.

Helping the survivor

In later years, the adult will have to overcome very difficult memories of the lives taken or asked for when in that role, and the cruel decisions made. They will need to repent of these deeds, and ask the Lord for forgiveness (which He offers freely). It can help to remind the survivor that the Lord knew all about their past, even when they didn't; that He is not surprised or repulsed by them or their past. When they came to Jesus, He knew all about each act they committed, and forgave them.

They will also need emotional support to process the pain of these memories, and to be treated as loveable, in spite of the horrific acts that they committed. This is a challenge, since many Christians want to "turn away" from those with a past such as this. But the survivor is looking to their therapist or support person to demonstrate the love of Christ to systems that may have no idea of what true Christianity is.

Once they "get it" and realize they are forgiven, these parts will quickly give up their old jobs and choose freedom, if they believe they have the physical safety to support healing.

Share this:

Twitter Facebook

Loading...

Related

Book Part 8
December 23, 2021
In "healing"

Exposing the Vatican: Part 6
October 25, 2021
In "healing"

Vatican Book Part 1
August 17, 2021
In "healing"

Moira Arriz 11:41 pm on June 22, 2020

Svali, I love your stuff! It has been tremendously useful. I do find a point where my Christian beliefs diverge from yours, though. I don't believe that acts done under severe torture and coercion require repentance and God's forgiveness, at least for small children.

They "only" require healing because the individual forced never had free will. Only sin needs forgiveness, and sin requires free will. No one tortured from the womb and made a complete slave sins until he or she joins his or her WILL to the actions. It isn't truly willing to sin if one has been tortured like this. Of course, repentance and forgiveness would be necessary if the person eventually made a free choice to join in.

God bless!

★ Like

Leave a Reply

Enter your comment here

← AddressingCommon Challenges to Healing Work

Primary Emotions that Drive programs →

Create a free website or blog at WordPress.com.

CHANTAL FREI

SPEAKING OUT!

MY LIFE UNDER AND ESCAPE FROM SATANIC RITUAL ABUSE

FOREWORD BY

DR. MARCEL POLTE

Chantal Frei

SPEAKING OUT!

My Life under and Escape from Satanic Ritual Abuse

Kindle Direct Publishing
Copyright © 2022 Chantal Frei
All rights reserved.
ISBN: 9798838738950
Imprint: Independently published

Chantal Frei
c/o Grosch Postflex #1924
Emsdettener Str. 10
48268 Greven
Any parcels or packages will be refused!
Email: chantalfrei@gmx.net

TRIGGER WARNING!

The book contains a wealth of so-called triggers. You read it at your own risk. For victims, it can be difficult to process and may even trigger flashbacks.

Table of Contents

Foreword by Dr. Marcel Polte

Foreword from a Friend

Introduction

Dedication and Thanks

1. Suicide Attempts

2. Talk - Really Talk?
3. Uprooting
4. Perfect Scenery - Perfectly Organized Satanic Environment
5. The Parallel World of Day and Night Life
6. Human Trafficking and Cannibalism
7. Theory
7.1 Definition of Ritual Abuse
7.2 Dissociative Identity Disorder DID
7.3 Dissociation in Hollywood Films
7.4 The Goal of the Perpetrators
7.5 Mind Control: MK-Ultra
8. Exam Passed!
9. Training for the "Mother of Darkness
9.1 Looking after Children
9.2 Child Abuse
9.3 Child Sacrifice
9.4 Children's Communions
9.5 Childcare
9.6 Child Trafficking
9.7 Having One’s Own Children
9.8 Ritual Celebration of the Illuminati
10. Other Exams
10.1 Fisher of Men
10.2 Gabriela
10.3 Murders of Adults
10.4 Sodomy
10.5 Floating over Community Gardens
10.6 Sexual "Menus à la carte”

11. MK-Ultra Programming
11.1 The Train
11.2 Wizard of OZ
11.3 "Education" Track
11.4 "Coding" Track
11.5 "Colors" Track
11.6 Other Codes and Triggers
11.7 "Life Design" Track
12. Monarch Programming
13. How Are Triggers Set?
13.1 Reward
13.2 Black and White Torture
14. Silence - the Greatest Commandment - the Most Powerful Weapon
15. Christian Spiritual Abuse
16. Diseases and Other Signs
17. Consequences in External Life
18. The Long Way Out and Breaking the Silence
18.1 Difficulties with Reports to the Police
18.2 Surveillance, Threats and Cover-ups
19. God or Cult?
20. Inner Struggle and Doubt: Does God Really Help?
21. The Truth of the Bible
22 Forgiveness? Forgiveness!
23. Repentance
24. How to Help?
24.1 Observe
24.2 Relationships
24.3 Examining Real and "False" Memories

25. What Now? I WILL SPEAK OUT!

Foreword by Dr. Marcel Polte

Dear Readers,

You are holding a book in your hands that is not only extraordinary but unique, and I believe more important than almost any other book ever written. Why is that so? We humans are subject to a deception of unimaginable proportions. Those responsible being highly intelligent, influential and globally networked have been able to set up a parallel world that is almost perfectly hidden from public view. This parallel world consists of fear, pain, death and belief in dark forces. Nevertheless, this perfidiously elaborate system has a weak point: The perpetrators apparently underestimate the strength of the human spirit. Individual victims who managed to escape the physical and mental clutches of the perpetrators noted this in amazement (including Cathy O'Brien, Judith Moore, and Sandra Rasch). Thanks to these strong souls, today there is even a term in therapeutic literature for what was intended to remain hidden forever: *ritual abuse*.

Now, expert articles on ritual abuse, corresponding data surveys and, not least, the detailed reports of survivors have proven beyond doubt that family structures exist worldwide in which a Satanic agenda is passed on from generation to generation. Through abuse, torture, and highly complex mind control techniques, perpetrators aim to condition their own children to become perpetrators themselves. These families are organized in local cults, have established worldwide networks, and collaborate with organized crime in many areas (child prostitution, child abuse, human trafficking, drug trafficking, and arms trafficking). All these efforts serve only one goal, which has been patiently worked towards for many generations: expansion of secret power so that one day Satan's world empire can be established on earth. What sounds to some like a crude conspiracy theory could, until recently, even be read on the website of the diocese of Münster ("For the goal of the sect to create a new world empire ..."). For many years, Brigitte Hahn was very committed to leading a cult counseling center there and

organized a conference on ritual abuse with over 140 participants in May 2019.

We owe it to the work of such courageous people from the field of counseling and therapy that the gruesome crimes committed in the name of ritual abuse and the perpetrators' techniques of conditioning and personality splitting (the consequence is called Multiple Personality Disorder or Dissociative Identity Disorder in technical terminology) are known in detail. In addition, there are people from the media who unflinchingly report on these things. Unfortunately, however, these have remained isolated cases over the years, such as the documentaries "Höllenleben" (Hell Life) by Liz Wieskerstrauch, a ZDF (public German television channel) report on Satanism by Rainer Fromm, and a multi-part report on multiple survivors on the YouTube channel *ZEIT ONLINE* "Wir sind die Nicki(s)" (We are the Nicki's) (April 2020). The full-page article "Das Ergebnis war immer Verlassenheit" (The Result was always Abandonment) by Heike Schmoll, which appeared in the *Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung* (major German newspaper) on August 24, 2020 and reports, among other things, by the Independent Commission for Inquiry into Child Sexual Abuse (UKASK) on the topic of ritual abuse are also worth mentioning. First and foremost, however, are the few survivors who manage to give public testimony about their experiences "with the cult." The small number of data collections available actually indicate an intolerable extent of such crimes. For example, a survey conducted by the "Ritual Abuse Working Group" among contract therapists of the Association of Statutory Health Insurance Physicians (2005 and 2007) revealed a total of 202 cases of ritual abuse classified as credible, the victims in these cases reporting 42 human sacrifices; the survey was limited to the German states of Rhineland-Palatinate and Saarland, the Ruhr region and nationwide counseling centers.

But how can it be that only a few survivors' accounts reach the public? Numerous factors are responsible for this: creation of comprehensive dependencies as well as isolation of the victims (including control of their environment), infiltration of law enforcement agencies as well as other facilities and institutions and, if needed, blackmailing of certain key persons, influence and reputation of the perpetrators, thorough covering up of traces, and above all: psychological manipulation of the victims that

often culminates in the purposeful splitting of their mind. Chantal Frei (pseudonym) reports on what lies behind all this from her own experience. Based on my research on other cases, I can absolutely confirm the experiences she describes and the modus operandi of the perpetrators, even if many things may sound inconceivable. In my book "Dark New World Order" (Part 1), I provide extensive references to document the results of a comparative analysis of German and U.S. expert literature and witness statements as well as numerous other documents (CIA and investigative files, minutes of court hearings, Senate hearings and an advisory committee). In light of these data, there is no doubt that Satanic cults are operating worldwide and that their secret technique of trauma-based personality splitting (mind control) has also been researched and applied by the CIA since the early 1950s (Project MKULTRA).

There are indications that the locally organized cults not only have established international networks, but are overarched by a world-wide umbrella organization. Some survivors refer to this organization as the "Illuminati". Anyone who now believes that the Illuminati are a conspiracy myth of the internet age is way off the mark. Indeed, more than 200 years ago, a letter from a certain G. W. Snyder to the first President of the United States of America and Freemason George Washington warned of an infiltration of the American Freemason Lodges by the Illuminati.[1] This fits in with the fact that survivors repeatedly report connections of the perpetrators to Freemasons (which does not mean that Freemasons are generally to be equated with Satanists or Illuminati). This includes, for example, survivor Jil, who describes her horrific experiences in Masonic circles in a June 2020 interview with ex-Scotland Yard investigator Jon Wedger. So far, however, there have been very few survivors who came into contact with the Illuminati during their time in the cult, survived this, made the exit, and were able to tell about it. Probably the most important source is Svali, who claims to have been a chief programmer of the Illuminati and to have taken over this function from Josef Mengele. On her web page (https://svalispeaks.wordpress.com/), Svali has published numerous texts in which she describes the background and the methods of the Illuminati in detail. Owing to a fortunate coincidence I can prove that at least parts of her insider information are indeed correct. In the book "Abwegig. Überleben

und Therapie bei ritueller Gewalt" (Absurd. Survival and Therapy in Ritual Abuse), written by cult survivor Helen Lindstrøm together with her therapist Jutta Sniehotta after ten years of collaboration, I came across exactly the same mind control programs (names, colors, technique of brainwave programming) as described by Svali. The renowned expert Dr. Alison Miller obviously considers Svali authentic as well, because she mentions her several times in her standard work "Healing the Unimaginable".

In German-speaking countries, however, there has not yet been a survivor who could recall not only cult experiences, but also military operations, missions abroad, and encounters with extremely high-ranking politicians, aristocrats and celebrities on the perpetrator side. In the USA, MKULTRA survivor Cathy O'Brien has been claiming since the mid-1990s to have been abused as part of the CIA program by George Bush Senior, Hillary and Bill Clinton, and other heads of state as well as influential politicians. Chantal Frei, however, is the first German-speaking survivor who can report on just such perpetrators and similar experiences. Of course, it is almost impossible to verify such outrageous claims. Nevertheless, in the case of Cathy O'Brien there is much to suggest that her highly detailed report in "Trance Formation of America" is, to a large extent, a reflection of reality. Not only was I able to verify many of her statements (e.g. concerning persons and places) on the basis of publicly available sources, but also her descriptions of mind control techniques were undeniably confirmed by subsequent expert publications. But there is one more important piece of evidence: my request under the US Freedom of Information Act (FOIA) for MKULTRA documents on Cathy O'Brien resulted in an astonishing answer. Namely, the CIA did not simply deny that such documents existed. Instead, after thoroughly reviewing my request, the CIA informed me that it could neither confirm nor deny the existence or nonexistence of such documents: The fact of the existence or non-existence of such records is itself currently classified and protected from disclosure as information on intelligence sources and methods! As is well known, such a "Glomar Response" is an indication that the requested documents actually exist, but the explicit refusal to release them with reference to national security concerns would already be problematic from the CIA's point of view.

But that is not all. In November 2021, a survivor – credible according to my initial assessment – gave an interview with equally far-reaching claims (after she had already been publishing her own videos with corresponding statements for about a year). In it, Ally Carter claims to have been a victim of international human trafficking in her childhood and youth. She reports abuse by celebrities and U.S. presidents and describes a network of underground tunnels used by the perpetrators for these purposes. Furthermore, she mentions Satanic rituals, sacrifices and organ trafficking in this context.

It is important to know all this in order to be able to correctly assess Chantal Frei's claims that she met high-ranking politicians, nobles and celebrities during cruel rituals in the Belgian castle Château des Amerois – where the decision about her appointment as "Mother of Darkness" was made – and in the Sagrada Família in Barcelona. Chantal Frei removed the names of these persons from her manuscript after I advised her. Otherwise, there would have been the risk of the publication being summarily stopped by injunctions. However, the names have been recorded in writs of protection and are now known to numerous trusted persons. Some of these names are mentioned by Arizona Wilder (pseudonym), who also reports experiences with ritual abuse and MKULTRA and, like Svali, had contact with Josef Mengele. But there is another similarity between Wilder and Frei: Arizona Wilder also claims to have been trained by the Illuminati for a specific function. She also mentions a "Mothers of Darkness" castle in Belgium; however, since she gives Brussels as the location, it is questionable whether this was the Amerois castle (however, the Amerois castle is also mentioned by other authors in the context of child abuse and sacrifice). After that, Wilder – having passed through the stage of "Mother of Darkness" – was made a "Mother Goddess", the highest (sixth) rank on the female side of the Illuminati hierarchy, while "Mother of Darkness" represents the third rank (according to Frei's recollection, which is supported by an anonymous internet source).

Other details in Chantal Frei's book are consistent with Svali's information. Thus, Svali likewise mentions the handing over of an amethyst as a sign that the child has mastered the first training level (silence and keeping secrets); and also the diamond is mentioned by her as the highest Illuminati

award. Likewise, during an interview, Arizona Wilder shows a special diamond ring that is said to symbolize her function of a "Mother Goddess". As I discussed the color system presented by the author with her, we came across other connections. First, the order of gemstones described by Svali (amethyst, ruby, emerald, diamond) matches Chantal Frei's hierarchy of colors. But individual color assignments also match. For example, Frei associates the color green with perpetrator loyalty, according to her memory. And Svali indicates that the green emerald stands for (cult) family loyalty. When I pointed out on this occasion the big emerald ring, which Josef Mengele – according to Arizona Wilder – wore on the middle finger of the left hand and used for programming, Chantal Frei remembered a similar emerald ring worn by sect leader René.

Even though the phenomenon of ritual abuse as such, the involvement of members of the elite, and a connection to the Illuminati are thus supported by the testimonies of other victims, many readers will find another aspect of Frei's report implausible: her out-of-body experiences on another plane and the existence of demonic powers that the perpetrators are interested in summoning. Both fundamentally contradict our conventional Western worldview. However, those who have grown up in the Christian faith naturally see this differently. For the Bible speaks not only of God and his angels, but also of Satan – the "prince of this world" (John 12:31) – and his demons. For all other readers I would state at this point only briefly: As part of my own research, I have repeatedly come across reports of out-of-body experiences (the travel "over the rainbow" forced under torture) and demonic possession. It is for this reason, that in Part 2 of my book "Dark New World Order" I also present the hypothesis that worldwide reported murders under the influence of inner voices are actually acts committed in a state of demonic possession. It was only after the publication of Part 2 that I witnessed such possessions on several occasions and was able to see, for example, how a person collapsed and became unconscious when the entity left her body; after this incident, the person could neither explain his unusual posture nor remember what had happened in the minutes before. Svali also described to me how she had been abused by the perpetrators for out-of-body experiences in order to make contact with dark entities on another plane. All this presupposes the physical concept of a

multidimensional universe, as it is represented for instance by the physicist Thomas Campbell, who himself had numerous out-of-body experiences.

Finally, it is important for me to point out that I know of several cases of ritual abuse where the victims were able to escape the mental clutches of the perpetrators and obtain healing solely through their faith in God and Jesus Christ. Chantal Frei's own journey of healing, including the important act of forgiveness, will help other victims feel hope in a seemingly hopeless situation. In the section "Inner Struggle and Doubt: Does God Really Help?", I finally came across – surprisingly – the very creative concept that I also advocate in Part 2 of my book. Here, Chantal Frei describes her conviction that God's love also includes freedom; a freedom that her tormentors have as well: "Also the freedom to do evil." Thus, free will and polarity seem to be the two ingredients that a soul needs for its path to God or – depending on personal conviction – its spiritual evolution. To Chantal Frei's credit, in this book of extremes – from deepest fear and pain to highest hope and love – she brings this divine concept to our attention, lighting a match that relentlessly illuminates a world dominated by dark forces that we were never supposed to see.

Bad Homburg, December 2021

Marcel Polte

Foreword from a Friend

Dear Reader,

The fact that you are now holding this book in your hands is evidence of your open-mindedness in wanting to know more. It is also evidence of your daring to confront a hidden reality and to look behind the scenes of this world. A quote from this book: "Those who are willing to look into the unknown area of ritual, organized, Satanic abuse [ORA] and mind control will see it."ritual abuse Let yourself be taken on an enlightening, overwhelming journey into this secret dark area, a journey that will change your world view and your own perspective forever.

A few years back, I came to know the author, Chantal, as a friendly, level-headed, affable and pragmatic personality with whom one enjoys informal fellowship. At first and second glance, she seemed to be an unobtrusive, natural, very normal and warmhearted middle-aged woman. Then gradually she opened up a little about experiences from her past and not only what she had had to experience but to survive. What she described to me even rudimentarily is beyond the imagination of a normal person and is very difficult to bear, although, by far, she has not told me everything; indeed, there are many details she has been unable to relate. Thus, this book by no means reflects everything she experienced. But it still gives a unique insight into this largely unknown field of ORA. It conveys an inkling of the horror of a reality that should not officially exist in this world to this extent.

The fact that innocent children are sadistically sexually exploited, brutally abused, martyred and killed in the most brutal way, systematically and according to plan, is something most people would not wish to imagine, let alone that this happens in professionally organized and protected, networked, elite structures. Understandably, we are reluctant to deal with what people are capable of doing to others, because it also draws our attention to the dark sides of our own souls. Most people do not wish to be confronted with this unattractive reality of the human abyss and consistently look away, unfortunately often even the so-called experts and

those whose office and duty is vigilance. They do not want to incriminate themselves, or they do not like to give up their romantic world view. Moreover, it seems to me that also a kind of officially decreed, general conspiratorial silence, a denial, twisting and evasion is prevalent on this topic.

The time has come to say the unspeakable out loud, to accept it and to include it in the collective consciousness. The truth needs a brave person who dares to speak it. Chantal is one of these brave ones. Her speech is groundbreaking; it breaks this general silence, also the collective silence of the other initiates, such as the trauma therapists. It challenges us: Pay attention! Do something to bring light into the darkness too! Paying attention to the problem is what creates awareness. Paying attention and being aware essentially constitute an act of mercy. They bring more acceptance, understanding and compassion to the abused victims and to their healing process.

I too was once entirely unaware of ORA and of the fact that people are capable of such merciless, malicious acts against innocent children. Then I did my own intensive research and read and sifted through books, reports from survivors and from therapists, educated myself professionally and got to know other victims and their stories. Many of these stories, revealed by victims all over the world (including Switzerland) testify independently and consistently about the goings-on in these professionally organized, diabolical ORA parallel worlds. It became clear that Chantal is unfortunately far from an isolated case, although she - unlike most of the others affected - was trained by the perpetrators for a higher level in the cult. Because of her former high position, she can give an exclusive insight into the secretive, clandestine scene of the ORA.

Most ORA sufferers do not have access to their trauma memory, due to dissociative amnesia (protective mechanism in the field of dissociative disorders). Sometimes the soul is ready after a certain time - if at all, often only after decades - to release individual memory fragments. Chantal is one of the few exceptions. She has come this far and also has the stability, strength and courage to speak and write down part of her story in this book. It borders on a miracle that she is alive at all. She has been able to break

through her deep-rooted silence and has thus taken an important protection away from the perpetrators.

However, for other victims this book is only suitable to a limited extent, as it contains many possible triggers and descriptions of grisly scenes similar to those which other victims have experienced themselves, scenes whose horrible atmosphere will be all too familiar to them. However, for mostly mentally stable victims / survivors and for all others (especially also for pastors, therapists, politicians, government officials, lawyers, physicians, ...) this book is to be recommended in various respects, because it is, in addition to the comprehensive clarification, also very encouraging. Along with supplementary explanations, Chantal has taken up some legitimate, controversial questions and issues related to the area of ORA in her story and provided understandable (in part even uncensored) answers in a competent manner. Here are some examples of questions to which I have not yet found a plausible answer in this form in other books:

- What is ORA, what are its organization, activities, hierarchy and networking system?
- What connection to ORA do the Satanists, Freemasons, Illuminati and other cult groups have?
- How are these systems protected and how can they work unnoticed and unobtrusively on a large scale?
- How are children conditioned, made docile and silent?
- How can children survive the unimaginable torture without drawing attention in everyday life?
- Who are the victims, and who are the perpetrators, and where do they come from?
- How is it possible to leave the cult, internally and externally?
- Why and how are children forced to torture and kill other children as well?
- How can so many children disappear unnoticed?
- How can the human remains from these rituals be disposed of inconspicuously and without any trace?
- How and why are people programmed?
- How does the survival mechanism of DID work, and what are the consequences?

- Why is there no effective prosecution of the highly criminal ORA systems?
- Why doesn't God intervene in this blatant suffering and injustice?
- and many more. ...to the spiritual dimensions, the question of guilt and the Biblical Gospel.

Today, the question is no longer whether ORA actually exists in this world, but how widespread this ORA is. The vast extent, the work and the spread of these various cabal cult groups are very difficult to fathom. Official figures do not exist, of course. Therefore, it seems important to me to determine the dimension of the ORA with the many people affected (and thus also with a correspondingly large number of perpetrators) on the basis of the circumstantial evidence and clear clues known today:

> "Pure" DID indicates only type III trauma with **ORA** / RM / SRM or similar in childhood **before !** 5-8 years. There are prevalence studies and projections for DID which assume 0.4 to 3% of the total population in Europe and the USA + the unreported figure (not recognized, wrongly diagnosed or undiagnosed DID).
>
> pDID, (DDNOS [dissociative disorder not otherwise specified] /DESNOS [disorder of extreme stress not otherwise specified]) / partial dissociative disorders can also occur as a result of ORA and are even more common. However, other causes of traumata (traumata repeatedly and deliberately inflicted on people in childhood) are also possible here, such as "normal" sexual abuse, violence against children or their emotional abuse or neglect. There are estimates of up to 20% of the population.

This indicates a scale of those affected by ORA, which is very conservatively estimated to be about 1% of the population. This gives a total that is in the upper tens of thousands in Switzerland alone. Some affected persons told me that they believe the number to be somewhat higher. So we are talking about a substantial, significant number of affected people who suffer whilst being unaware of the origin of their symptoms and who must be supported largely by our social welfare system. In addition,

there is a correspondingly larger population of perpetrators - people who live unrecognized and inconspicuously among us and with us.

If, for example, someone who is a personally known and respected person is an ORA perpetrator and is reported, then one simply cannot and will not believe it. This is an important protective mechanism for the perpetrators. If, for once, something comes to light, people are more willing to believe the convincing lies and the perfect facade of innocence of a respected high-ranking person, a well-known person, or a well-behaved upright citizen than a broken victim with gruesome, outrageous statements about what really happened. The real memories (or memory fragments) are then often simply dismissed as slander, manipulation, creepy, exhibitionistic grandstanding, fantasy, or psychotic delusions. Significantly, it is claimed (also officially) that such events/memories are not credible, pseudo-memories or iatrogenic (produced by the therapist), that the person concerned is disturbed, schizophrenic, ill, etc. In the chapter, "Examining Real and "False" Memories" Chantal also clarifies this topic in a highly intelligible and coherent way, also to counter the common perpetrator arguments and scientifically colored lie constructions.

As a result of extreme violence, Chantal has a heart that is broken and wounded many times and was forced to pass through the valley of death several times. In deepest hardships, fears and pains she had to fight for her own survival as a child. Although she was forced and trained according to plan to a cruel, brutal behavior and with it also some perpetrator intros (surviving, actionable, dissociated perpetrator-cult-ANP-EP personalities) were created, she was able to preserve her innermost, redeemed core identity - her merciful heart. Thus, she was able to leave the diabolical ORA system in spite of all impossibilities.

At this point I would express my heartfelt thanks to Chantal for her revolutionary (fire) work, for her boldness to speak, for her openness, her overcoming, ... my respect. I wish her many happy moments, complete restoration, healing, protection, peace and only the best and God's full blessing on her further journey through life.

The reason I cannot appear by name is that I know some offenders to whom I do not wish to give an official address of attack.

Switzerland, December 2021

Introduction

My wish is that this book may inspire courage despite the gravity of the subject, courage to the bystanders to pay attention, to wake up and, in the best-case scenario, to help in some way; and also courage to the victims, because it is not impossible to escape this spiral of violence. I myself managed to break out of it with God's help. This was my way. Others choose a different path. No matter what the path looks like: Victims who are still caught up in it urgently need to be heard. They need help: legal, medical, social therapeutic. But also personal, friendly, unprejudiced, faithful, encouraging help.

In order to protect my privacy and that of others, I have decided to tell my life story by topic, and not chronologically. It was occasionally necessary to anonymize the names of private persons and circumstances. However, I experienced the events as described.

Detailed evidence of my life report has been recorded and stored as a protective measure in safe places, with notaries and lawyers. Several trusted persons have been informed accordingly. If something should happen to me or to anyone close to me, this information will be forwarded immediately to the appropriate authorities for the purpose of criminal prosecution, and the public will be informed. Contacts have already been established for this purpose.

I cannot say to anyone: Enjoy reading! Rather, I say: Thank you for your willingness to read. You are helping to bring this taboo subject further into the public eye.

Dedication and Thanks

This book is especially dedicated to all my children! I do not know all of you yet! I had to give birth to you in the cult. Rest assured: You are deep in my heart! I love you!

I also greet my biological family.... I am looking forward to our meeting.

I write this book in memory of all the victims and for all the survivors.

And I dedicate my book to all those who have been harmed and victimized by me. If I had realized and had the choice, I would never have done this. I am infinitely sorry for what I had to do to you under duress.

My most important thanks go first and always to God, my heavenly Father, who has always been with me, helped me get out of it, and always given me courage and confidence, even in times of deep doubt.

Joelle et Yann: Je vous aime! You have always stood by me, and your love is sincere! Thank you! I admire your courage and your honesty! You are blessed!

I also thank all those close to me who believed in me, accompanied me, encouraged me, helped me through difficult times, prayed for me and with me. Finally, thanks also go to the experts who advised and supported me in editing this book.

In a safe place, in December 2021

Chantal Frei

In the cellar I was put in a cage.[2] *The cellar was not very big. We were at most four children in four cages, one in each corner. The chapel was very old, and the cellar looked accordingly. There were bars and chains hanging from the ceiling, and sometimes I saw a smaller or bigger fire in the middle. Yet we were always cold, because we were often locked in the cages naked or dressed only in a short, white, blood-stained dress. There we had to wait. Wait for our fate. Sometimes we heard singing upstairs in the chapel. During the singing, men came into the cellar. I never knew when it was my turn. Me or another child first? Sometimes I was alone. I was taken out of the cage and chained. So I hung there naked and was raped by one or more men. Before the rape, they all touched me everywhere. Afterwards, they sometimes consulted among themselves who would be allowed first, or even who would be allowed alone that day. Sometimes I was also laid on a stone slab in the basement to be raped. I had to perform various sexual acts. When it was one's turn, the others would always watch. All of them were naked (having previously taken off their frocks or black clothes) except for a black balaclava, like those worn by bank robbers or special forces. I also*

had to watch other children being abused, tortured, raped and sometimes killed.

1. Suicide Attempts

Many long, painful, desperate years later in a very different place:

Finally, I had collected enough pills. I carefully counted them all again. Yes, this time it would be enough. This time I should finally go to my God in heaven.[3] *He would understand. He sees how miserable I am here on earth. How I can't manage anything anymore, how I can't satisfy my husband, how I can't take care of my children, how I let my colleagues down with unfinished tasks, how I disappoint the parishioners again and again because I have become so tearful, sad and depressed. Yes, I should be doing my family a favor if I were gone. They would have fewer worries, less stress. They could choose a new wife and mother. A cheerful one. A woman with drive and energy, a woman capable of doing her chores... none of that was possible anymore. Yesterday's news. I was in my early thirties and longed for the end.*

I was a nurse by profession and knew about certain medications. I just wanted to fall asleep, never wake up again, never have to endure this heaviness again and never be unable to do all that I had to do here. No, my life was over; I knew that. I felt justified in putting an end to it because I was deeply desperate. So I swallowed the mix of medications I had put together for myself....

And woke up again in the intensive care unit of a hospital.

No one knew that I had prayed before: "*God, I come to you now. You know I can't do it anymore, I'm at the end. I can't even take care of my family anymore. I see no other way than finally to come to You. But if You see another way, please make sure that I wake up again.*"

God had heard my prayer! At first, however, I was not at all pleased to realize that I was still alive. This would not be the only attempt, several more should follow. Actually, from a medical point of view, it should have worked. But it didn't. God had another plan. I did not recognize it at that time, I had no idea about it, but nevertheless His plan was there. The plan was to live! The plan was to speak out!

2. Talk - Really Talk?

I? I should speak? I should tell? No... I shouldn't...

It was a summer night at the end of June. Heavy thunderstorm, lightning flashed across the sky. It thundered violently and rain pelted loudly on the roof. I was lying in bed. The thunderstorm had woken me up. I was tired and wanted to sleep on.

There it flashed again. And then suddenly this light filled my whole bedroom and just didn't go out! It was a bright, very bright light. Normally I don't like such bright glaring light. But this one was very pleasant. Almost at the same moment two hands grabbed me by the shoulders and asked me to kneel down at the end of the bed. The being - I think it was an angel - did not let go. But I resisted fiercely at first. "No," I cried! There is no way I will do that! I will NEVER EVER kneel down again! Especially not in front of anyone or to ask for anything! Never again!

Shortly before, I had separated from my husband. The marriage was marked by severe violence. There were days when I knelt down in front of my husband, slid on my knees after him and begged him to be at least a little nice to me. I begged him, asked him for a kind word or a loving gesture, maybe even a hug? Sometimes I got something. Sometimes not. Depending on my mood. And sometimes only worse words fell, or I was even beaten.

When I left him, I swore that I would never, ever get down on my knees in front of anyone again. No! No one was worth it! I found it so humiliating. I never wanted to do that again.

But now there was this angel who demanded exactly that from me. I knew somewhere in me that I must acquiesce; there was no way around it. Finally, I rose from my bed and knelt down at the foot of the bed.

I lost all sense of time and space. I found myself suddenly before the throne of God. I don't know if I spent five seconds, five minutes or five hours there. It was just beautiful. I heard God's voice telling me to speak. At first, I had refused. I started to argue. I explained that I would never talk. Surely He knew that talking would be my death sentence.... Silence was my survival strategy.

When that happened, I was no longer suffering from bad depression, and suicide was no longer an issue. I wanted to live, and a few months earlier I had finally found the strength to leave my husband after almost 17 years. Still, I didn't want to talk. I couldn't wish to talk! I was incapable of wishing.

Well, I was there before God's throne negotiating, for I could not speak clearly at that time. I lisped and stuttered when I opened my mouth. And that had been going on for over two and a half years. I did go to speech therapy, but that didn't help me either. People thought me drunk when I talked. I was so embarrassed that I hardly opened my mouth. And if I did, I apologized for my slurred speech.

But now God commanded me to speak. He trusted me to do that! Wow! Now I was really in a dilemma. Because I had never experienced anything like this before! Never had I been given a command with so much authority! But also with so much love! I knew that this would only be for my own good. I knew that the words I was hearing now were pure divine love. I was so shaken and wept at the feet of God. Before His throne. I felt so infinitely loved, so infinitely safe, so infinitely protected! I had never known anything like that before. And above all, I did not know this combination. It was a command, but it was love. A command out of love. A command with love. A command of love, a command of love.... no matter how I twist and turn it today or try to put it on paper: IT WAS LOVE!

God showed me that I should talk and where I should start. I did that little by little, and bit by bit my speech problem was solved. At that time, a specialist was able to show me the causes of my speech disorder. I had already suffered from my silence all my life. At that time, however, God personally dissolved this ban on speaking. However, there was still a long way to go. But today I am talking! With God's help I am talking!

3. Uprooting

I have a Swiss passport with birthplace and hometown. I grew up bilingual, but who am I really?

I awoke briefly and blinked through my tired eyes. I caught sight of something strange. I saw a curve like the upper part of a tunnel, not stone, but metal, or at least the color of metal. Then I saw some kind of seam, like a welded joint. I also saw big, thick screws holding this seam together. The screws were also welded in. I was freezing, wrapped in wool blankets, itching all over my body. I was scared. But I kept falling back to sleep. My eyes were very, very heavy.

Later I woke up again. Again I saw this strange arched ceiling. And I was still freezing. This time I turned my head to the side and saw four or five men sitting there, all dressed the same, with some kind of beige-olive green suit, black combat boots and wide belt. No one was talking to me. I was lying on a bench or cot across from the men. On another side of this strange tunnel I saw red letters. I fell asleep again and again, I was afraid, I was cold, I was hungry....

When I realized that what was written in my passport was not true, an odyssey began. A roller coaster of feelings, emotions, but also an external and internal awakening. An uprooting.

I was not in a tunnel at the time, but in an airplane. Probably in a cargo plane or in a baggage hold. I don't know. These men belonged to the military; they were American soldiers who had kidnapped me. Kidnapped from my family of origin.

4. Perfect Scenery - Perfectly Organized Satanic Environment

I went to kindergarten and first grade as a little girl near Geneva. Then we moved to a small farming village in the canton of Vaud. There I grew up and went to school in various villages. I attended high school in the city.

My father[4] (Please be sure to read the footnote!) was on trial in early 2000. One of my siblings had denounced him. I was the main witness in the trial. Because of the statute of limitations, I myself could not press charges for my own abuse. He was charged with suspicion of sexual abuse of his children and other children in the neighborhood. After several years of police investigation, he was acquitted due to lack of evidence. I still wonder

what exactly was investigated during those many years. What took so long? And why?

Back to the setting. My family went to church every Sunday morning. We belonged to a small free church congregation. There was a maximum of about 15 people in the service. My father was a so-called "elder" in the congregation.[5] However, there were not many other men to choose from. The church congregation consisted of a handful of core members. The other visitors were often young people, teenagers who wanted to improve the French they had learned in school and who went back home after a year. So every year there were other worshipers. But we were always there, plus the pastor's family and a couple who were young at the time. That was all. My father was originally from German-speaking Switzerland, moved to Geneva at the age of 18, and supposedly led a pretty lonely life until he married my mother. At least that's what he said.

I remember very clearly how my mother told me that one day she saw two men outside our apartment door in Geneva. My father talked to them and said it was over. He had married now and had a family and wanted nothing more to do with it.... With what? I often asked my mother about it, but to no avail. To this day I can't understand why, as a wife, she never investigated.

Today I know that the marriage between my parents was arranged. My paternal grandparents were both Satanists. My grandfather had chosen my mother for his son. This was not a secret. Today I know that my father was also a Satanist. On the one hand a Christian man who acted as an "elder", on the other hand a Satanist who sexually abused and tortured children at night. My mother was most likely chosen because it was surmised that she suffered from dissociative identity disorder.[6] Today I assume that she experienced severe traumata as a child, was never able to work through them, suffered from amnesia[7] and unconsciously helped my father to maintain this perfect backdrop so that he could pursue his perverse, Satanic, sadistic sides. I remember getting an injection from my mother, who was a pediatric nurse, and fainting. This, in turn, allowed my father to take me places without me knowing anything about it, or rather, only partially. When I had a gunshot wound once afterwards, my mother nursed me lovingly at home, but did not take me to the physician. I was then told that I

had had a bicycle accident, which was not true, but over time I began to believe it myself.

I always perceived my mother's family as a family that sticks together. However, this family had a kind of code of conduct: "Respectful treatment, secrecy, no sticking one’s nose in where it doesn’t belong, and no questions." For a long time, I found this code very nice and pleasant, but on the other hand, a certainty arose in me that one must not question anything. I knew how I had to behave in this family clan.

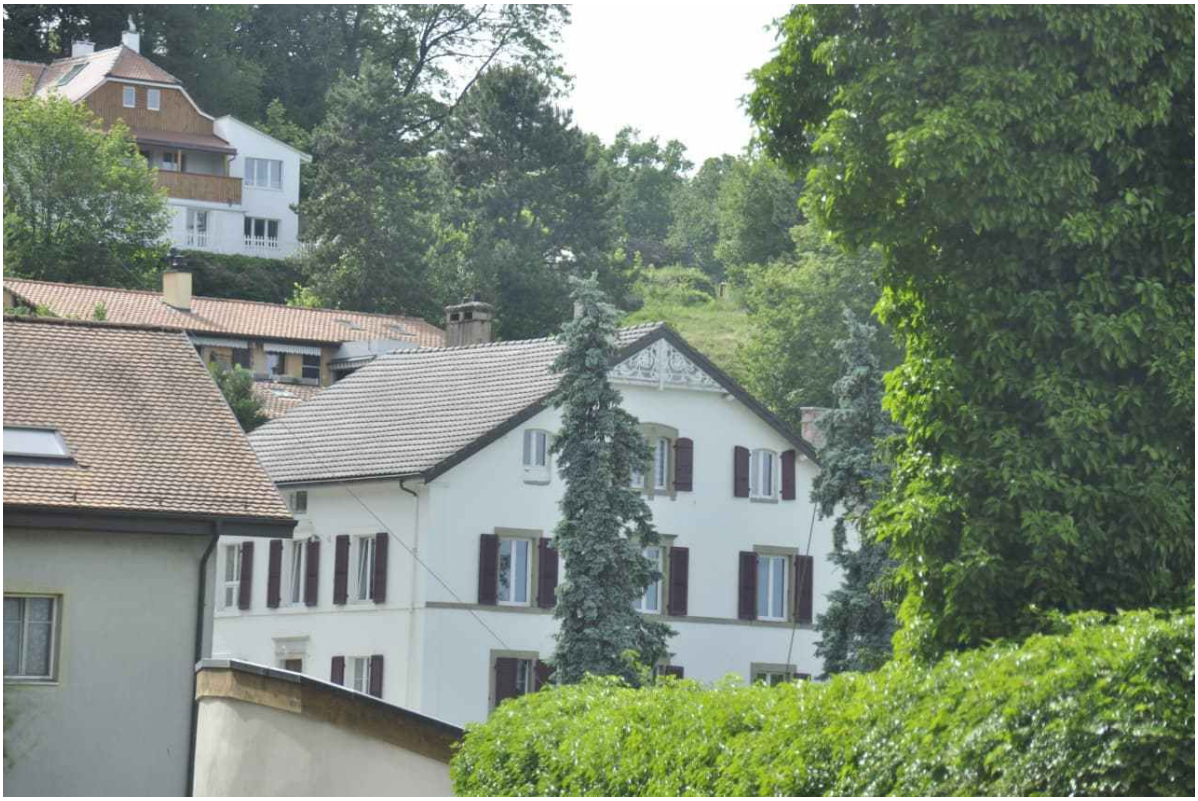
I did so, too, with a few exceptions. Often my mother had told me a few details about a family member: enough for me to know there was more to it. But I knew exactly, I must not ask any more, because it was none of my business. My uncle, who was close to me, was also in the Satanist circle. So I learned very early that my tormentors were also my caretakers, my providers, my comforters and my family members. I knew nothing else, had no basis for comparison, and my life was torturous, but normal for me. I don't know which of the family members were actually with the cult or still are. Those who were not or are not with it were or are kept in ignorance from my point of view. The code of honor of "don't interfere and we treat each other with respect" serves in this case as a perfect cover for cult members to cover up their deeds.

We lived in the same neighborhood with the sect "*Les Adorateurs du Soleil*" (The Sun Worshippers). The internal Satanic cult in which I had to grow up was called: "*Dragon Rouge*" (Red Dragon). Anyway, this name came up again and again. Officially, of course, we did not belong to it. We were considered a Christian family. We children were not allowed to play together. But today I know that we also belonged to it. Hidden and covered up, but we belonged. My father knew the cult leader personally, was probably his subject, and I assume that we owed the apartment we moved into to him. The quarters where we lived are on a hillside. At the top of the hill is the large white house of the cult leader René and his family.

René himself was, as it turned out later, my slave trader. He took me under his care to train me in the Satanic ways, according to the ideology of the Illuminati. As a little girl I would go to his daughter for music lessons. The one-hour lesson was divided each time into two half hours. The first half

was practicing the flute. The second half I had sex lessons with René and his wife. He regularly abused me under the supervision of his wife, who cleaned me up afterwards. Nobody ever noticed anything because I had to keep quiet, and of course I didn't talk about it. Nor did I ever come home late, because officially I was at my flute lesson. I didn't miss any lessons either. I learned quickly and didn't need a whole hour to practice. Half a lesson was enough for me.

At the bottom of the slope, various flat-roofed houses have been built on one side. Followers of the sect live in them. On the other side was a tombstone company (Marbrerie). As a child, I had seen the owner of the company and his father at cult rituals from time to time. Our house was in the middle. The neighbor above us was engaged in human trafficking. Another one kept a large chicken farm. There were often big, black expensive cars in front of his farm. As a child, I knew then that they had "high-ranking" business visitors and that one must not ring the bell or otherwise disturb them under any circumstances. Nevertheless, I was there once in a while. I remember one day being led to the back of the farm. There I saw a grown man tied naked to a large wheel - feet and legs stretched apart. It looked as if he were to replace the wheel spokes. The wheel was spinning very fast, and blood was spurting out of the man's limb. There are reports that the CIA used chicken coops as cover for torture houses. The newspaper might then say that a certain celebrity - who is in fact one of the perpetrators - visited a chicken farm to see for himself how the animals were kept. My music teacher and some other teachers were cult members, and some were neighbors. Our pediatrician, as it turned out later, was also a cult member. So I was perfectly "embedded" and everything was perfectly organized for violent crimes. Everything was covered up. Everyone covered up for everyone else and as a child I should not have had a chance to tell anyone anything. The theatrical backdrop for the drama of my life had been perfectly built....



The neighborhood where I grew up (today).
In the front is my apartment building at that time.
We lived on the middle floor. On the right, in the middle, was my bedroom window.

5. The Parallel World of Day and Night Life

My double life started very early. We affected people usually call it "day-night-life". This played itself out roughly as follows:

I was a normal child during the day. I went to school, was inconspicuous, mostly shy, but I got good grades. In sports I was quite bad. But since I was quite good at school, I was respected by my classmates. Nevertheless, I didn't have many friends. This was because my parents gave me a strict religious upbringing, which was characterized by stricter rules than those of many of my classmates. I always had to be home early, and my mother controlled whom I dated. Furthermore, we had hepatitis B as a family. At that time, people were generally not well informed about this disease and so many stayed away from us out of fear. My pediatrician also urged us to follow certain hygiene rules which - as I know it today - served to keep us away from groups, children and friends. In the neighborhood I played outside with a few children. But there were not very many, because they, too, were selected. We had a very large vegetable garden. I had my duties there too and helped after my mother showed me what to do. During vacations I went to stay with relatives and often to children's and youth camps. Some of them were run by my older cousins. I was never alone there, as usually either my siblings or a relative was with me. Our kinship was very close in many ways. So far, it was a pretty inconspicuous life from the outside....

But there was still my night life. I went to bed in the evening and got up in the morning to go to school. What happened on certain nights in the time in-between, I no longer knew in the morning. Sometimes after I went to sleep, my father would wake me up and pick me up. Every now and then I would get a sweet syrup. Today I know that there were drugs in it. Drugs are often given to children in these circles to make them compliant, but also to make sure they don't remember things (like where they were taken).

My father opened the door of the VW bus. I got in. Inside were many tools that he needed as a mechanic in the field. My dad took off my pyjamas, and I got a little white dress, probably made of white linen. Small, fine needles were stuck in all over my body, and it began to bleed. There were blood

stains on the dress. With time I knew what this meant. I was being prepared for a ritual. The white dress with the blood stains had a special meaning for the men in the cellar. And because I was allowed to wear it, I also had a special position. I was the chosen one for this evening. I looked behind the racks in the VW bus. And there I suddenly saw eyes watching me. They were the eyes of other children, children my father had hidden in the bus, children from foreign countries. Their skin was sometimes darker than mine. They didn't say a word. We children knew we weren't allowed to talk. They just watched as I was prepared for a ritual...then we left. It was the middle of the night. The drive didn't take very long, and then we were there....

All of us children just looked at each other. But we were not allowed to talk to each other. It seemed to me that we were all holding our breath. We were not alone, but each one was on his own. Isolated within ourselves, preoccupied with ourselves and unable to respond to others. After all, we were forbidden to make contact with each other.

A ritual often went as follows: Some people dressed in black gathered in front of this one chapel in Valeyres-sous-Rances, VD in Switzerland.[8] We children sometimes mingled with them, and sometimes we were taken directly through a side door into the basement of the chapel. If at first still visible among the people, we soon disappeared into the crowd. In front of the chapel there were manholes in the ground. These were opened, and we had to slip in there and slide down until at some point we ended up in the cellar of the chapel. What happened there was what I described at the beginning.[9]

... The children who were sacrificed in the cellar were killed with a knife. I remember how a child was hanging above the fire on a chain, suspended by its feet. One perpetrator took a knife and slashed the child from top to bottom, from the intimate area down to the head.

I will refrain from giving too many gruesome details. My only concern is to bring these terrible things out into the open. I am not writing a horror book here. Because no horror book could even come close to describing what I experienced and saw there. And I know that such things still happen! I can't find the right words to describe the cruelty. I shall probably never find any.

It is the scum of the earth acting here. The vilest and most profoundly evil thing you can possibly imagine, even in your wildest imagination. It is even more evil than the most profoundly evil ... For the perpetrators it is a delectation.

After the cruelty was over, my father took me back home and put me to bed....

Then, in the morning, my day life started, and I went to school. Sometimes I was hurt. Especially in the genital area. I remember how I always took absorbent cotton or a little bandage material from home and changed my bandage during the breaks. Needles were also stuck into my nipples. Then I had an absorbent cotton pad stuck in my sweater until it stopped bleeding. But I was not aware of what I was doing and forgot it immediately afterwards. Repressed. Pushed away...

Dragon symbol on the window of the chapel.

The chapel that still stands today.

Back entrance of the chapel

Above: main entrance to the chapel. bottom right of the picture you can see the manhole cover,
through which we as children had to slide down to the basement of the chapel.

Left: Enlargement of the spiral symbol located at the bottom right and left of the chapel.

6. Human Trafficking and Cannibalism

As I mentioned before, I had seen other children in my father's VW bus. But that was not the only place. I remember how he would sometimes take me with him, and we would drive the car to meet my grandfather. My grandparents lived about three hundred kilometers away from us at the time, and we would occasionally meet on the road. I still remember the parking lot where we waited for my grandfather. There were no cell phones back then, and in my memory, we sometimes waited a very long time. In the meantime, I played and picnicked. My grandparents owned a light blue car, and I always waited very impatiently. I loved my grandfather. I was his princess, his first granddaughter, his chosen one. He paid attention to me. I was something special in his eyes, and he made me feel it.

From time to time he brought other children in his car, which he then handed over to my father. I was not allowed to talk to them, I just watched them very shyly as they got from one car into the other.

Once, however, I was allowed to play with a child for a while. But it was a child of my father's, and it was supposed to be given to my grandfather, or so I assume. But it never came to that.

My grandfather was hours late, and so I was given permission to play with the boy. I was about nine years old. We had a ball with us and played soccer. We had fun, talked and laughed together. After a while, my father got angry. He didn't like to see us having fun. He started his car and hit the boy. The boy fell down and my father ran over him with his car in front of my eyes. This happened in broad daylight.

The parking lot where this happened is on a curve on a hill. Not directly on the side of the road. So there was no witness far and wide. Even today, this parking lot is a little hidden. But it has been changed and is better marked. Back then, something like this could happen unseen. The boy was put on the back seat and my grandfather appeared shortly after on that parking lot. What happened after that, I don't remember. But that parking lot remains in my memory as the place where children were exchanged and where a murder happened.

In our house there were three apartments. We lived in the middle, above us an older couple. And now and then young girls. These girls didn't speak French like us and were never outside playing. I remember seeing them very rarely, and there were different ones every time. I was told that they came from another very poor country and that they were very sick. It was explained to me that they were here to get good medical help, to find a good home, and that this couple was taking care of them affectionately. My father then also "affectionately" took care of these girls when the couple was not there.

The neighbor had called me. I went up to his apartment. There, in an adjoining room, was one of those girls lying on the wooden floor. She had long dark hair and was wearing white pantyhose, a white turtleneck sweater, a red plaid skirt and black patent leather shoes. No trace of blood or anything. She was just lying there. She was dead.

Next to her sat the neighbor. He had a large knife in his hand. And a fork. He ordered me to sit down beside the girl opposite him. Then he cut a piece from her right hip and started eating the meat. I was forced to eat it too. I was forced into cannibalism.

I had no choice. The murdered girl was about thirteen years old, I guess. I was about ten and already so well-conditioned and submissive that I did

everything I was told.

7. Theory

The experiences I have described so far are part of Satanic ritual abuse. There are different groups. Many of them are interconnected on some level, although not all of them have the same ideology or the same goal. I myself was a victim of a spiritual group, a group that worships Satan and also calls spirits and demons.

7.1 Definition of Ritual Abuse

There is no single definition of ritual abuse. Here are two examples from experts:[10]

Short definition by Brigitte Hahn, Diocese of Münster, Germany (2016):

> *According to plan and systematically*
> *sexual, physical and psychological*
> *violent to the point of killing*
> *in the context of an ideology or worldview.*

Definition by Thorsten Becker and Ulla Fröhlig (2008):

"Ritual abuse is a grave form of abuse of adults, adolescents and children. The intention is to traumatize the victims. Ritual abuse includes physical, sexual and psychological forms of violence that are carried out in a planned and purposeful manner within the framework of ceremonies. These ceremonies may have an ideological background or may be staged for the purpose of deception and intimidation. Symbols, activities, or rituals used have the appearance of religiosity, magic, or supernatural meanings. The goal is to confuse, frighten, forcibly intimidate, and indoctrinate victims with religious, spiritual, or ideological-religious beliefs. In most cases, ritual abuse experiences are not singular events but occurrences that are repeated over an extended period of time.

As a victim, I call this brainwashing and manipulation through repeated, targeted violence and torture - sexual, physical, psychological, and spiritual - with the goal of making victims completely dependent, so they will carry out orders on command to serve the cult.

7.2 Dissociative Identity Disorder DID

To my mind, extreme, repeated violence can actually hardly be survived emotionally. A person who leads a somewhat regular life and then suddenly experiences such massive recurring violence in his life would, in my opinion, in most cases probably be unable to survive it emotionally. I mean violence that is actually repeated and targeted to break a person.

When a person is exposed to extreme stress, he shuts down his emotions. In other words, he shuts himself down from his everyday thinking. Thus, he can function "normally" even in such stressful situations, although his usual reactions or actions would actually make this impossible. This is also the way for many children who suffer abuse. It is a survival mechanism of the brain is inherent in us humans. I myself consider it a gift from God, without which we should not be able to cope with extreme situations.

But we are not only able to block out emotions in such situations. We humans have the ability to dissociate in order to cope with trauma. We sometimes hear reports of people who have had a serious accident, for example, or whose partner was killed before their eyes. These people sometimes cannot remember any of it for a very long time. This is dissociation. I liken this to a very strong repression. At the moment of the overwhelming event, it serves as protection.

Even children, who are still growing, can repress and forget painful events. This is confirmed by reports from adults who, for example, only remember and can talk about sexual abuse that took place in their childhood years later.

However, this mechanism can also be abused. Through repeated and deliberately inflicted violence, dissociation can be deliberately induced. The perpetrators intend thus to create total dependencies. It is then not only events that are strongly repressed, but so-called dissociations are created. The dissociative disorders reveal much about how a normal brain works. A person who has not had to split off knows about his different roles in life. He may be a husband, a teacher, a father, a son, and an uncle. When he is with his wife, he does not behave in the same way as when he is a teacher standing in front of his students or a son visiting his mother. It is possible for him to take apart the different aspects in his life at will, but then also to

put them together again. Since they are only individual aspects of their personalities, people can normally separate them, but can also put them back together again later if necessary.

In dissociation, whole personality splits are formed. I call them other "ego-states". These other "ego-states" often function quite independently of each other. One "ego-state" may not know about another "ego-state". In between these two there is a total - natural or purposefully induced - barrier: amnesia.[11] Why is this so?

For example, an abused adult would normally run away from a tormentor. But it is different with a child, because he or she is dependent on the adult. So a young victim of abuse does not have the possibility of escape in the first place. It cannot run away, at least not outwardly. Therefore, it splits off inwardly. This happens unconsciously. The experiences cause a separation. The brain does not pass on certain information, but goes into the so-called trauma memory.[12] Simplified and roughly explained, it works like this:

In our brain we have different areas. One area is the hippocampus and another is the amygdala. The hippocampus is where everything is sorted and stored as memories. The amygdala is responsible for emotions. And then there is also the trauma memory that I just mentioned, but it is only created in the event of a trauma.

The amygdala, which is responsible for emotions, receives corresponding information. Usually, it then forwards it to the hippocampus, which sorts and stores it. But when something traumatic happens, the amygdala sounds the alarm, and, instead of forwarding the memory to the hippocampus as usual, it sends it directly to the trauma memory. There it is stored unfiltered and unsorted. This results in the separation of the rest of consciousness from the terrible experiences.

The events in the trauma memory are now as if frozen and often - as a protective mechanism - surrounded by an "amnesia membrane". There are EEGs[13] that prove that brains of trauma patients have different structures to those of non-traumatized people.[14] However, the protection does not always work perfectly. Parts of traumatic memories can suddenly come to the surface, that is, into normal memory. The affected person is then usually completely overwhelmed by such flashbacks and cannot relate to them

because he or she lacks the rest of the memory. However, the trauma memories can also only gradually reveal themselves if the trauma memory successively releases these memory fragments for conscious processing: namely, when the person is ready to do so many years later.

Once the brain has learned dissociation, this process becomes easier for it after each time. These different "ego-states" - they are also called subpersonalities - thus share the suffering, since the whole fullness of the horror would completely overwhelm an affected person.

What can happen then? The traumatic experiences, as I said, are not passed on in the brain. There are split-offs. These split-offs, or the newly formed "ego-states", have no conscious memory of the real event. This means that the child who lives everyday life (the "day child") cannot consciously remember the period of the trauma or certain actions during the trauma. But the child has nevertheless been there and acted. The subpersonality created at that time is capable of acting, feeling, reacting, and thinking in a certain learned and experienced context. But it is split off from the other experiences, and the child is not able to put it all together again. An adult who has been split as a child may be given the opportunity to find these split-off parts and then learn - e.g. with the help of a good trauma therapy - to put them together; this is then called integration of this part of the personality. By bringing certain memories to the surface and working on them, the dissociation can slowly dissolve. For those affected, this usually requires a great deal of patience, strength, stamina, and, above all, the support of trusting people.

I watched the door handle and was completely hypnotized by it. A feeling of panic arose in me that completely paralyzed me. Would the door handle go down today or not? That was the question I asked myself every time I went to bed. And then suddenly it went down... I froze. My father came into my room. "No!!!" it cried inside me. "I can't! I can't take this!" But I didn't move an inch, nor did I scream for help. I gave myself an order inside to walk away. And I just walked away inwardly. What happened then did not happen to me. It happened to "the other one". The one who was in bed. After all, I had to go back to school in the morning. I had to sleep. I couldn't be active at night, and certainly not let myself be raped. So I delegated it, and "the other one" had to take over. The next morning I

always got up, had breakfast with my father and then went to school. In bad weather, he sometimes drove me there on his way to work....

What happened? In this one unbearable moment for me, I had simply formed another "I" in my imagination, and this then endured the rape. Finally, I myself was not able to endure it. Surely I couldn't be raped by my father during the night and in the morning take the lovingly prepared breakfast from him? How does that fit together? Not at all! Therefore, I was very glad that "another" was responsible for the night and I could then take over the day. That was quite pleasant for me.

I was also forced to teach smaller children what I had already learned myself. Namely, to be sexually abused. To endure sexual abuse. In these circles, one is told, "DYING MUST BE LEARNED." Dying includes massive sexual violence. The earlier you learn it and survive it, the stronger you are then when you die. For this reason, I was trained to do it to others myself. But since I was a child, and at the same time I was also raped over and over again, that didn't work for me at all either. How, pray tell, can a girl of about eight prepare babies for sexual abuse? How does something like that work? Is it even possible? The sad answer is: Yes, it can! And the perpetrators, among whom are scientists, psychiatrists, psychologists, physicians, and other highly educated people, know exactly that this works. They misuse this knowledge and thus specially create such other "ego-states". They deliberately inflict trauma so that a child dissociates. For this they use the whole science of developmental psychology.

At that moment, when I had to do it - I could not actually do it, but was nevertheless urged to do it under the most massive threats - I had formed an old, ugly, creepy, fat, evil man in my imagination. This was a man who could do it. This was a man who was certainly capable of performing such atrocities. So I left again, and the man took over my job. So I was out of it. I didn't know about anything. As a girl, how could I possibly know what a disgusting evil man was doing? I couldn't. I'm a kid. And he's an adult. This is how the different "ego-states" came about. The perpetrators knew this and had encouraged it. And the perpetrators triggered these other "ego-states" every time they needed them.[15] I had become absolutely dependent in this way.

Individual psychology teaches that you should approach people with your concerns, knowing that you cannot force anyone... I believed that for a long time. But in this case it is not true. Or is it? They could not force the little girl that I was. And yet they had forced me. By splitting me up!

Now I have reported two quite different "ego-states". One had nothing to do with the other. The girl who had to endure the sexual abuse from her father at that time had had nothing to do with the old, perverted man. The two did not know each other. And the everyday girl who went to school didn't know the ugly man either. So different "ego-states" lived in my body, and each of them then took over life and action when it was his or her turn and the perpetrators wanted it that way. For this reason, later, when I was grown up and trained, the following could happen:

Frozen, I sat on the toilet lid and stared at the knife that my coach and husband had put in my hands. Far away, as if wrapped in absorbent cotton, I heard him: berating me and telling me how stupid I was. He said that I was no longer good for anything and that the only thing I was still capable of doing was hurting myself with this knife. He ordered me to show it to him. I didn't want to, so he continued to insult me. Until I did. Until I obeyed him. I stabbed my arm with the knife, inflicting deep wounds. In the process, I felt no physical pain. Everything inside me was just empty. No sensation, no feeling, no thought, nothing. When he saw the blood start to spurt, he took the knife away from me again and said very dryly, "See? I knew that you were only capable of such things!"

After that I went to the physician. Alone in my car. The wound needed stitches. I knew that. I felt like a robot. I just did what had to be done without thinking.

Different parts of me had taken over this task. One part took over the pain. I as an external person did not feel any pain. But as an outsider I was also a nurse, and she decided to go to the physician. Another part - a childish part that was trained not to think for itself - had obeyed my husband.

My marriage to this man had also been arranged by the cult at that time. I strongly suspect that he himself had also been a victim first. His father was a cult member. As an adult woman, I was repeatedly abducted by both of

them to Urdorf in the canton of Zurich to a room in the Catholic church to be tortured with electric shocks and other torture methods.

7.3 Dissociation in Hollywood Films

In movies, the topic of dissociation is often misused or at least completely misrepresented. People are shown who behave in a friendly and inconspicuous manner during the day and suddenly behave like unfeeling monsters at night. This is not the case with a person with Dissociative Identity Disorder, as different parts act here. However, I certainly believe that a person is capable of consciously behaving differently. Sometimes lovingly, sometimes as a monster. In dissociation, on the other hand, the different parts serve the victim primarily for survival. That is how it was with me. One part, which virtually bore the pain for me so that I could go on living, was not dangerous. Another part, which was trained by the perpetrators to do bad things, was dangerous. But it was not dangerous in an uncontrolled way. The perpetrators had to bring this about by applying an appropriate trigger. It was as if I had a full house behind me with different rooms where all kinds of other "I's" were locked up. The perpetrators had the keys or the codes to get these other "I's" out, not I. I myself didn't know anything about it for decades. Therefore, people with DID are not dangerous. It is the abusers, the traffickers, the abusers that are dangerous. People who have the keys and abuse people to form parts of them into robots.

7.4 The Goal of the Perpetrators

I grew up among Illuminati. [16] People of the sect "Adorateurs du Soleil" and some members of my family belonged to it. Illuminati are spiritually oriented and pursue the goal of "illumination", in other words "enlightenment". In these circles, hierarchy plays a very important role. There are different levels that can be reached. The goal of the perpetrators was to take me as far as possible in this system.

I have been asked why these people do such things. Good question. When the perpetrators expose their own offspring to these cruel methods from an early age, there is always the same motive behind it: namely, to create total

dependencies so that the victims can be used at any time for their goals and purposes.

Behind the Illuminati are Mafia-like structures. I have also already read that certain groups actually join forces with the Mafia; likewise, cooperation with neo-Nazi groups is known. Just like the Mafia, they have loyal people who are active in politics, the police, the judiciary, industry, academia, and so on. Thus, they form a powerful underground organization. They need slaves for pornography, paedo-crime, human trafficking, arms smuggling, drug smuggling and sales, people who secretly carry codes (military codes) or smuggle illegal funds into organizations. Paramilitary groups are trained and educated from infancy. And contract killers and assassins are trained.

The perpetrators themselves (and I am talking about the perpetrators who consciously chose to do this - who have a perpetrator's heart!) usually don't get their hands dirty. It is the abused and trained children - who would suspect a seven-year-old girl of smuggling weapons? And later it is the adults abused and dissociated in childhood.

With this massive abuse, one becomes a kind of robot inside, with feelings split off, emotions switched off, simply functioning on command. Feelings are not allowed. One has no needs, one does not know them. These "empty" children and people are then trained and used as desired. Of course, a large amount of money goes to pay the clients and executors. But not the slaves. I have never seen or received anything from this large amount of money.

With the children who are sexually abused and tortured there, child pornography films are created, among other things. These films are offered among the interested parties for a lot of money. "Snuff videos" are also known. These are videos that are ordered on special request by special, anonymous customers. In the "snuff videos" one can see children or adults being abused, tortured and brought to the end on film. "Brought to the end" means they are killed on camera. I was a witness to this.

A neighbor a little further away had a lion as a pet. In the past, that was probably allowed. We children were then allowed to watch the feeding of the predator from time to time. However, I would also be brought there to witness a child being locked in the lion's cage and attacked by the animal. The child was often killed. The whole thing was filmed.

There is child trafficking going on. They need their "goods" from somewhere. The children they abuse are not considered human beings. They are just a commodity. I met other children from different countries when I was a child. At that time, of course, I had no idea where all these children came from.

Another source are children from their own ranks who are not registered. It works like this: They split off other "ego-states" and thus create personality parts, which in turn give birth to children for the cult. In therapist circles these victims are known as "*breeders*". This also happened to me. I gave birth to children of whom I know neither the present whereabouts nor what happened to them, because they were taken away from me immediately after birth.

As a victim of ritual abuse, one is a slave. Every slave has a trader. The trader is usually a caregiver. At least that was the case with me, and I have heard similar accounts from other victims. This trader makes sure that the inner "ego-states" are trained and that the barrier of amnesia remains. The trader is a kind of "educator" who always stays by the side of the sufferer and plays out a normal, beautiful world for them in everyday life. However, they know exactly which other "ego-states" each victim has inside and how these can be accessed with the help of triggers.

In this way, those affected are turned into robots. One might even appropriately say, they are programmed much like computers, using various programs that can be retrieved with codes. The victim himself is totally unaware. The victim live his normal life, the outside life. In this book, I no longer call it a normal life, but an outside life, because it was not a normal life. It was a "fake" life. To prevent me from realizing the truth, it was covered with a kind of shell that looked like a normal life.

Programming a child, a human being, starts with training it to do everything on its own, without help. It must learn to be strong. If it is weak, it is punished. For example, the child is put in an empty room with no light, no food and no water. If it cries and asks for help, it is punished. Only when it is quiet and obedient, asking for nothing more, is it taken out and given food and drink. The trainers say: "WHAT DOESN'T KILL YOU MAKES YOU STRONGER". According to this motto, the children are educated and

slowly programmed step by step. Another very important step is that children must learn not to have needs. A child must not be hungry, must not be thirsty, must not be cold, must not be hot. It must not be sad, it must not be angry, it must not be afraid. It must not be tired either. The children are locked up and massively punished when they have a need and even more when they express it. They are rewarded only when they successfully stop expressing sensations. This torture is repeated over and over again until the child is completely apathetic. A child will do anything to avoid suffering. And as a child one knows very soon that there is only this one way to survive: obey! The only other way out is death.

For this system to work, many helpers are needed. Helpers with rituals, teachers, trainers, punishing agents, childcare workers, educators, scientists (especially for monitoring human behavior), couriers, informers, etc. They train their people and need, among other things, the method of mind control for this known as MK-Ultra.

7.5 Mind Control: MK-Ultra

"*MKULTRA (also MK ULTRA, pronounced M-K-Ultra) was an extensive CIA secret research program on mind control capabilities. It ran from 1953 to the 1970s, in the Cold War. The goal of the project was to develop a perfect truth serum for use in interrogating Soviet spies, as well as to explore the possibilities of mind control parts. The work also overlapped with research on biological weapons by other U.S. programs.*

The program included, among other things, thousands of human experiments in which unsuspecting test subjects, often randomly selected from among hospital patients and prison inmates, were subjected to highly potent hallucinogenic drugs such as LSD and mescaline without their knowledge. Numerous subjects suffered the most severe physical and psychological damage during the experiments, some even dying."[17]

Not mentioned here is the fact that, in addition to drugs, the aforementioned technique of personality splitting was also used. Several MK-Ultra survivors reported this before the "Advisory Committee on Human Radiation Experiments" appointed by President Clinton (1995), but without these allegations being clarified. The "K" in MK-Ultra is supposed to stand

for "Kontrolle" in German (possibly also MK for "human control") to honor the human experiments conducted under National Socialism. The fact that numerous MK-Ultra survivors claim that the "Angel of Death of Auschwitz" Josef Mengele had a leading role in the project under the pseudonym Dr. Green and also tortured and abused them himself fits in with this.

MK-Ultra programming was allegedly discontinued in the 70s. In my experience, however, this is not true. It is being continued and further developed in the underground - allegedly under the name of "Project Monarch". I was a victim of this.

8. Exam Passed!

During my childhood, I underwent various exams. The children are carefully selected and must pass exams for this. As a rule, only the strongest survive. These exams are held in so-called children's camps or under the guidance of a trainer.

When I was about six years old, I was taken to a summer camp in Belgium. It was held at Amerois Castle. I remember there were about ten to fifteen children there. We gathered in a large, empty room. The room seemed very gloomy to me; there was a lot of dark wood. I noticed large windows. But one couldn't see outside.

We children had to strip naked there. We were all given a pair of flat, brown-beige shoes and had to put them on. Then we went into the forest. There was a hunting game. There were many deer, dogs and hunters. The role of us kids was to play the deer. We were chased naked through the forest. I remember being terrified. So I ran for my life like a deer.

In French, a deer is called: *une biche*. I grew up speaking French, so I ran like a biche. A "biche" can also run much faster than a six-year-old girl. There, too, I formed a "biche" inside and ran for my life.

After I survived this hunt, I received a new pet name from my dealer, that is, from my father: "ma biche", my deer. This was at the same time a trigger for many years after I had passed this exam. "Ma biche" (my doe) was intimate, affectionate and meant mysterious togetherness, in a perverse

sense, of course. But that's what it is. Thus, a perverted love connection was created. In the past, the word *biche* was also used as a verb. So *bicher quelqu'un* meant kissing someone in a familiar way. *Ça biche* meant: it goes well between two people; *Ça ne biche pas* meant: it does not go well. This old jargon was used between my father and me. It was our perverted intimate language. And so, after passing my exams, as a fresh "biche" I had to "bicher" with my father every now and then. And if it did not "bicher" at times the way he wanted it to, I was punished and the "biche program" was run again until he thought I was good enough in it!

So I ran like a "biche" through this forest. I was not alone. The other children were also there somewhere. I heard gunshots and children screaming in the forest. I was terrified when suddenly I saw a blond boy who was about my age. He had flaxen hair. The little boy, who called himself Marc, showed me a big pile of leaves and told me to hide in there. So I did. In this forest there were often holes or small pits. They were full of leaves. I dived into a pile of leaves. That was my salvation.

I don't know how long I lay in there. It was broad daylight, and I crawled out of my hiding place only later, sometime when it was dark. My right thigh hurt badly and blood was running down my thigh. I had been shot. I was in pain, cold, and panicked. Eventually I managed to get back to the castle. I stood in the courtyard for a while, and after a while they saw me and let me in. I remember seeing the then- princess - I'll call her Marie-Hélène Delacroix here - (over the years I met her again and again). When I was in the castle, I saw Marc again. I encountered none of the other children any more. I didn't know where they were. In that big hall where we had first met, all I saw was a pile of brown and beige shoes. That was all...

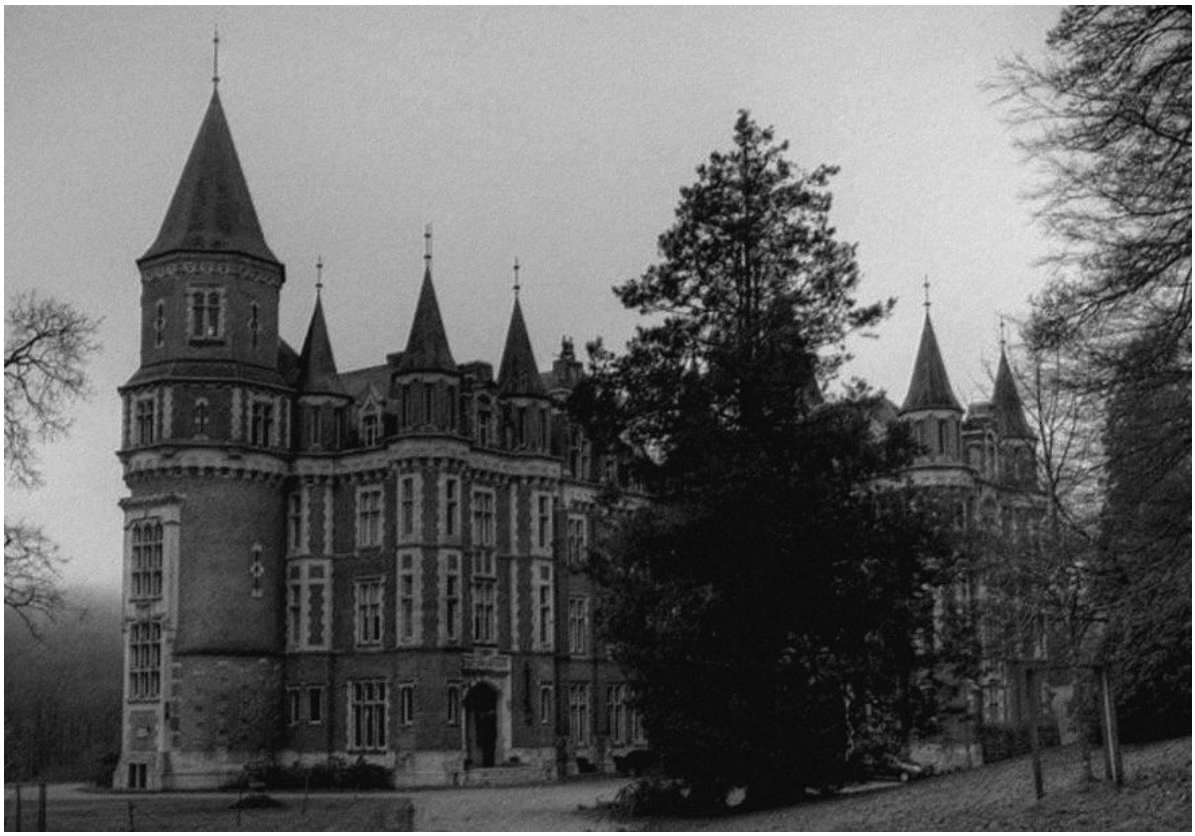
My survival was celebrated, as was Marc's. The celebration consisted of sex. Sex with adults. Sex with animals, and then finally sex between me and Marc. A rod was stuck into his penis, and he was ordered to penetrate me. In this way we were bound to one another.

We were both injured. I had this bullet wound. He was also in pain, but I don't remember any exact details. There were a few people around us watching. In my memory there were three people. The princess, Marie-Hélène, and also a man and another woman. The test was over!

I was to see the man again and again over the next few years. It was René, the cult leader, who would later become my dealer and instructor, into whose quarters we moved about a year after the child hunt.

In this state of pain and complete confusion, I was asked if I would do everything they expected of me in the future. In return, they would give me life. I would not die. So I vowed to do whatever they asked of me in the future. The main thing was that the pain would subside. The main thing was that I could go on living.

As a reward, they decided to give me and the boy an education. We were chosen to become mother and father. They had a plan for us that I should not discover until many years later. My training to become the "Mother of Darkness" had been initiated.[18] The "Mother of Darkness" is the third level in the Illuminati on the female side. There are six levels in total.



Château des Amerois

9. Training for the "Mother of Darkness

Very soon I was allowed to "enjoy" the training to become the "Mother of Darkness". Sorry... Sometimes it is easier for me to write these unbelievably horrible things sarcastically. I was about to write "inhuman" things. But "inhuman" is not true at all!!! After all, it is humans who do these evil things. So... should I now say human instead of inhuman?

However... in any case, this training was imposed on me to serve their purposes. For that, I had to be trained very well.

The perpetrators know exactly what they are doing. They look at each child very closely and assess its strengths and weaknesses. They record every move, know every desire, every qualification, every resource, every dream, every nightmare. They know how a child functions and then they re-shape it with its God-given abilities and possibilities to serve their purposes.

The desire to become a mother someday was in me from a very early age. At the age of about six, when I was in first grade, I told my friend on a school trip that I really wanted to be a mother someday. Afterwards, I showed her in a make-believe game what I would be like later as a mommy. Of course, the perpetrators knew about this wish. They fulfilled it for me in many ways. I was trained to be a mother, to be the "Mother of Darkness".

9.1 Looking after Children

I loved being with children. I loved to take care of children, and it was my desire to create a place of security and love for the little ones. I pursued this desire in my outside life. I was a childminder, offered lunch for school children from time to time. In my professional life, I worked for a while as a counselor in an emergency facility for young people. A great inner wish was to found another emergency facility for adolescents, and so I started to study to become a certified psychological coach with a focus on education. Among other things, I attended further training courses on counseling adolescents and thus planned my future.

But there was still the other, the repressed dark side. I remember how I was assigned to the chapel basement as a children's group supervisor at a very early age. I had to make sure that the children were quiet. Not a word was allowed to be spoken, hardly any voluntary movement was permitted. The children had to obey if I only looked at them with my eyes. That also

worked. I made sure that there was peace and order. I also had to choose which of the children would be next for torture or rape. This was part of my training.

9.2 Child Abuse

My desire to spend a lot of time with children was fulfilled by the perpetrators. Outside life had been rather difficult. We were outsiders as a family. We were German-Swiss in French-speaking Switzerland, which was not a walk in the park at the time. We were often called the "sales boches", which means "dirty Germans", and were also occasionally asked to go back to "our Nazi country".

But the perpetrators made sure that my wish came true anyway. I was together with children, also to "prepare" or instruct them for sexual abuse. I had to make them into model sex slaves, just like myself. Training to be a sex slave starts very early. Little babies are prepared for it by having fingers stuck into their vaginas, whereby the vagina is gradually stretched over time, so that a penis can penetrate as soon as possible without leaving any traces. Or they are given a penis to suck on instead of the mother's breast. Small baby penises are "trained" to become erect penises.

To accomplish this task, I was mainly taken abroad. Most of the children I had to abuse for this purpose had been placed in Amerois Castle in Belgium, in basement rooms of the Dagger Complex (NSA) in Darmstadt (Germany) and in the White House in Washington. One of the experts who supported this book project pointed out to me the following: There is a torch in the symbol of the Dagger Complex; the torch (flame of enlightenment) is considered an Illuminati symbol. This torch crosses with a lightning bolt on the Dagger Complex emblem. And cult survivor Kerth Barker cites the lightning bolt - as well as the torch - as an Illuminati mind control trigger and amplifier.[19] Survivor Arizona Wilder also claims that Satanic rituals are also performed on U.S. military bases. Whether therefore the name component "Dagger" refers to the ritual dagger used in such sacrifices, I cannot say...

9.3 Child Sacrifice

From a young age, I wanted to please God. In the Bible, it is written of King David that he was a man after God's own heart. I wanted to become a woman after God's heart. I wanted the same approval from God that David had received. At least that was how I understood it at that time.

To please God (their god, Satan), the perpetrators took me one step further in my education. In the perpetrator circles in which I grew up, special emphasis was placed on demonizing everything Christian. Thus, certain Satanists "sacrifice" humans to their god, Satan, just as the Israelites sacrificed animals in the Old Testament. They take the Lord's Supper with blood as innocent as possible - because it is often taken from children - and consume the children's bodies. In this way, they mock the communion of Christians, who take it with wine and bread to commemorate the crucifixion and resurrection of Jesus Christ.

Benjamin:

It happened at the cemetery in Rances VD, Switzerland. I must have been about seven years old at that time. I was probably picked up at night. Anyway, I remember it was dark when I was standing in the small cemetery at the upper right corner where children are buried. A knife was put in my hand. My father and my dealer, René, the cult leader of "Les Adorateurs du Soleil", were standing there. I caught sight of a little boy about four years old with blond hair. A woman was standing next to me. I could see only half of her face. She was wearing what I remember to be a purple scarf that she was somehow hiding in. Her hair was tousled, as if she had just gotten out of bed and hadn't combed through it yet. She wore light blue jeans that didn't quite reach her ankles. She didn't look at me, didn't make a sound, and I didn't notice any facial expression on her face.

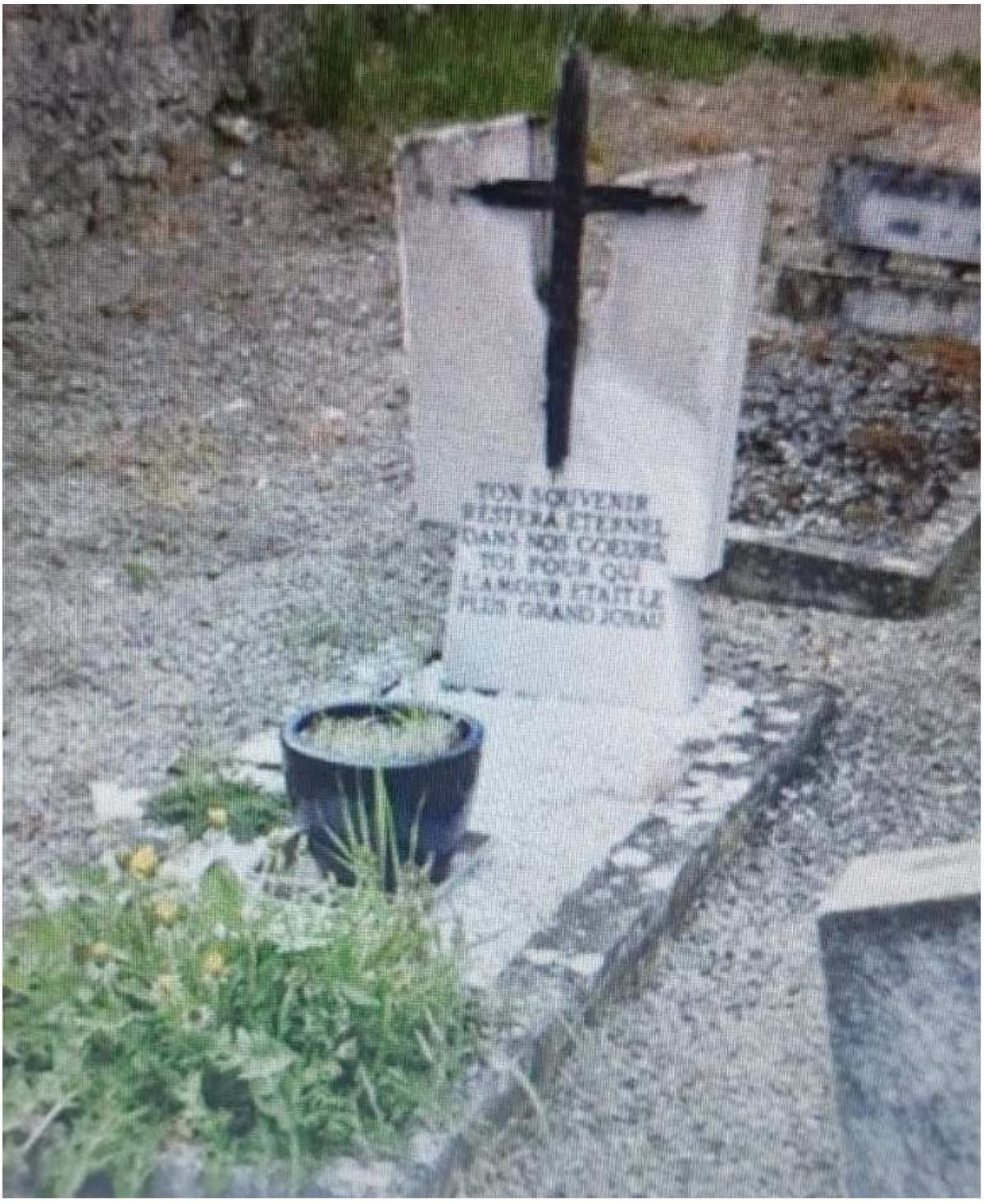
The boy was facing me. I noticed his glassy eyes looking straight at me. I looked at my father and I looked at the cult leader. The look on my father's face told me exactly what I had to do. I knew I had to do it; otherwise, they would kill my mother or my siblings. I also had the impression that the boy knew just as well what was coming next. I remember how it happened very quickly. I had to cut the boy's throat. After that, other people joined in. In my memory, they were all wearing dark clothes. Some wore robes. The blood of the young boy was collected in a bowl. Everyone had drunk from

it. I had to do the same. After that, I was ordered to undress and to spread this blood on me. And then another ritual was performed on me with a dead person. On the left side of the cemetery near the small wall. I was forced to perform various sexual acts on this dead person. This was my ritual of silence.

I knew that if I refused, I too should end up in such a coffin. And keep silent forever. That's what the perpetrators did sometimes. Put children in coffins and bury them. I have also experienced this. After a certain time - I have no idea how long it took in each case - one is taken out again. Or not... I have seen them bury children alive. I have no idea what happened to them. I can only imagine.

On this grave, where all this happened, a tombstone was erected. There is no name on it. However, there is a saying engraved on it that says how important love was to the person.... On the grave there is only the name of my direct neighbor who owned the gravestone company. At that time, however, he was not my immediate neighbor. Only about a year after this ritual he moved in with his company next to us.

Children are buried in this corner of the cemetery.
This is where Benjamin was sacrificed.



Gravestone without a name. Here the ritual of silence was performed with sexual acts on the dead. The inscription on the tomb reads: "Your memory will remain eternally in our hearts - for you love was the greatest jewel".

9.4 Children's Communions

I do not remember how many child sacrifices I had to take part in until I finished my "training". However, I still remember one very clearly. It took place in Six-Fontaines VD in Switzerland. There is a hill with a few trees.

I was taken there at dusk. I was wearing light yellow pyjamas with pink or red dots or maybe little flowers at the time. It doesn't matter. Anyway, it was bright yellow. On a large flat stone lay a tanned girl with long black hair, a girl I knew. Her name was Jasmin. Both of us were the same age: about eight years old.

However, we children usually knew nothing about each other. No names either. Or then they were false names. I, for example, was often called Lys.

So Jasmin lay naked on the stone and around her stood various people dressed in black, dark red and blue robes. The man standing at the top by her head was stabbing her throat.

Often the blood of sacrificed children was collected in bowls. Afterwards they drank the blood and we children who were present had to do the same. Sometimes meat was served to us afterwards. The flesh of dead children, which was then consumed and shared as a "body". In this way I had to celebrate with Satanists their "communion". The body and blood had to be as innocent as possible. A Satanic supper for the glory of Satan, their god.

Next to this sacrifice site in the forest is a collection point where trash from the forest is burned. I have memories of how big fires were made early in the morning. It might have been at this place. However, I am not quite sure. Next to such a fire I was put in a cage and had to watch men throwing body parts of children into the big fire. Arms, legs, etc... I can't say anymore if Jasmin was burned there right after the sacrifice or if her body was disposed of in another way. But I remember very well seeing my father throwing children's body parts into the fire, laughing and dancing, while I watched. I cannot say for certain whether they were real body parts or not, either, because perpetrators also like to stage cruelties, simply to traumatize children.

Perpetrators dispose of bodies in a variety of ways. I am aware that some are cremated, others are disposed of in acid barrels and then dissolve. Then there is also the method of burying a murdered person under an official corpse. Body parts are sometimes fed to wild animals or simply burned with

another corpse in the crematorium. The perpetrators are well organized and well networked to cover up their criminal activities.

Jasmin was sacrificed at this place. This is a recent photo and not from when it happened.

9.5 Childcare

Like every young person, I also thought about what I wanted to be when I grew up. I thought about various professions, but at some point I had the desire to become a physician.

Once again, the perpetrators complied with this wish. When I was about 14 years old, I was no longer taken to the cellar of the chapel to experience torture myself. No, I was taken there to care for children who had experienced torture. Sometimes I was even picked up by a police car with blue lights and taken to crime scenes. I know that, after torture, some children are simply killed or left to die. Others are "nursed for a specific purpose", meaning they are cared for to the point where little or nothing of the torture can be seen, so they can hold themselves up straight again to meet the standards for the next abuse. I was hired to provide this type of care. I was not allowed to care for all children. Only the "chosen ones". I did not have much material and had to make do with what was available to me. I remember very clearly how I swore to myself in that cellar at the sight of those children that one day I would come back as a doctor and free them all! I also remember the anger I felt deep inside. But anger had no place. Anger, sadness, fear and pain were not allowed to be shown. If it did happen, one was immediately and severely punished. So we learned not to show emotions. In this way, we could avoid further pain.

Not only did I have to take care of other children, but of myself as well. I was soon very good at that, and so I helped to cover up what I had done to myself and to other children.

However, I did not become a physician in life in the outside world. They had a different plan. However, I still followed my desire to be trained in the medical field in my daily life to some extent.

9.6 Child Trafficking

Children learn from their parents. They copy them. My family was involved in child trafficking. So automatically I was, too. I learned the cover-up

maneuvers in child trafficking through watching my family, but I was also taught it through playing- playing with dolls. Like many little girls, I loved to play with dolls. I would take the dolls from one place to another, hide them behind the bed or somewhere, and then pretend to be another very surprised mom who found a doll behind the bed. From the outside, this doll-play probably looked quite harmless.

Later, the perpetrators trained me to transport children from one place to another. As soon as I could drive a car, they always made me buy a station wagon. With certain triggers, they were able to force me to quickly pull into a parking lot when I was driving somewhere. There, a child was loaded into the trunk, which I then took to another location. So I had to continue the "family business", which had been run by my grandfather and father, with a dissociated "ego-state", which the perpetrators knew.

Suddenly, when I was long grown up and perfectly conditioned, I saw a ball roll into the garage. I was at a couple's friend's house where I had deposited a few things of mine and was going through my cardboard boxes. I was alone in the house. The driveway inclined quite steeply. And there was suddenly this ball. I picked it up, walked up to the street with the thought of returning it to the owner. That's when I caught sight of this dark car, this black station wagon with the dark tinted windows. The window went down. In the car sat a man with black sunglasses. He made a hissing sound. Immediately I knew I had to follow him. I got into the vehicle. In the back seat was a little boy. I did not know him. We didn't have a conversation. The man, whom I had by now recognized as one of my former dealers, drove the car and did not say a word to me. We came to a village where I had once lived, to this very one house where I had an apartment. The man stopped in front of the underground garage where I parked my car at that time. So I knew how to get in there. And I also still knew cars from former neighbors; I still knew certain people who lived there. So I took the boy by the hand, went to the front gate, then to a car of a person I knew, and told the boy to get into the unlocked trunk of that vehicle. After that, the dealer drove me back to the friendly couple and I continued sorting my things....

When I was back in the garage standing next to my cardboard boxes, I no longer knew anything about all that had happened before. I had lost a little time, but I did not notice. I just thought I was unfocused, and my work was

not progressing as quickly as I should have liked. My physical absence was not noticed by anyone either, because the couple wasn't home, and none of the neighbors knew me anyway. Moreover, I was not gone for too long. The perpetrator knew about my dissociation and about the one specific trigger. He had used me to bring this child there. I do not know where it came from or where it went. I just had to do that part of the job. That is how child trafficking can work. They use people to smuggle, to kill, to abuse. These people are just tools for them, and subsequently, they have no idea what they did. If they were questioned, they would know nothing. If I had been questioned earlier, I should have claimed that I had never, ever participated in such activities, not to lie, but because I only perceived my life on the outside world. And in my outside life I did not do these things. I could have argued very convincingly that I was never involved in such things. They could have hooked me up to a lie detector, and nothing would have come out, because they would have only questioned me in my life in the outside world, not these "ego-states" that I had no idea about, but were there nonetheless. These split-offs were locked up and only on call for the perpetrators. But they were there nonetheless. That is why my hands and my feet had to do such cruel deeds.

Why do I remember it today?

Suddenly I had a flashback: I saw myself driving past the house where I used to live in a car. I remembered wondering which of the former neighbors still lived there. I remembered looking around the house for signs (some garden furniture, a curtain, a plant) that were familiar. This was to find out which former neighbors still lived there and in which apartments new tenants had moved in. This sudden memory shook me. Because since I had moved away from there (and I had moved very far away!), I had never been back to that village. I had had no reason to return. So from where did this memory come? I searched my memory! I realized that I must have had a big gap in my memory there. Since a flashback is a memory that comes from the trauma memory into the normal memory, at that moment it is like a Polaroid photo that was just taken, very sharp and with all the details. I looked around internally - that is, in this "photo" - and perceived the young boy on my left. And then the driver... and so it went on until I had reconstructed everything again and had it in conscious memory.

9.7 Having One’s Own Children

Even at a very young age, I already knew that I wanted to be a mother one day. I remember how sometimes a feeling of joy came over me and I already told my future children how much I loved them. I prayed for my children, even though they were not even there yet, even though I was nowhere near the age to have a steady partner or even get married, let alone have children. What I did not know at the time, however, because I had just split it off: I had already been a mother for a long time....

I got my first period when I was just under twelve years old. I was physically developed very early as a child and had already reached the size I have today as an adult woman. A woman who was destined to become a mother should also be a mother. This is what the perpetrators had decided about my life. I was to become "Mother of Darkness" and have a family of my own in the process. And I did become a mother. I had my first child, a son, when I was thirteen years old.

My role in human trafficking served to protect such crimes. Having children within the Satanic cult also serves to cover up the cruel crimes against girls and boys. I was a girl who gave birth to children as a "Mother of Darkness" for the cult. I have also seen other girls who were pregnant. Many of these children do not officially exist. They are not registered. They are used for the cult. Either they are abused or sacrificed. Or they are used for study purposes. It is known how such studies and experiments used to be conducted on Jews by Dr. Josef Mengele. This is still being done today. Children are used for studies to see how much a person can endure. Satanists who murder children prefer to drink the blood of an infant who has been tortured. They say that the blood of tortured babies contains a high level of adrenaline. If this adrenaline is taken, it serves to strengthen, to preserve youthfulness, and it promises a long, healthy life. I have also witnessed the removal of organs from living babies. I also know that there is an illegal organ trade behind it, which is carried out by very highly respected people, including celebrities. But now back to my first son:

It was taken from me when I was about six months pregnant. This is common in these circles. It's a stage where you don't see the pregnancy so clearly yet. And the baby can survive. I had to give birth to him in the

chapel. I don't even remember why I went into labor, but I assume that I was under the influence of medication.

Medications and drugs are very often used to make victims compliant for whatever is planned for them.

I still remember giving him the name Louis. After that, I never saw him again. At least not consciously.

And so it continued throughout my life. When the perpetrators had determined my career in the cult, I was brought together with Marc. Over the years, we were brought together from time to time. I remember how later I also had to meet him at highway rest stops. Each time, our task was to have sex with each other in rituals. That was also part of the training program. It was started at that time after the child hunt and supervised by the cult people so that this cult relationship could continue.

In the course of my life, I became pregnant several times. My body was also abused for this purpose. The cult people took care of my weight regulation so that the pregnancy would remain hidden. Either I had to eat or I had to starve. This led to me developing an eating disorder. My relationship with food was totally disturbed. If pregnancy was imminent, I had to eat. If not, I was not allowed to eat, and there were times when I was put in basements to starve. I had to learn both during my cult life. To eat and to starve. There was no enjoyment. My body was formed in such a way that pregnancy was hardly noticeable from the outside. After the sixth month of pregnancy, they took the child away from me. In the case of the last child, which I probably had to conceive with Marc, I was over forty years old.

I came across a contact platform on the internet and talked there online with a few people. In this way I came into contact with a man. His favorite animal was the black panther with green eyes. I had to laugh inside and thought that this black panther must be following me.

Shortly before, I had dreamed of a black panther. This dream was so impressive that I had told it to some friends.

My correspondence with this man very soon took on a much greater depth, and we soon realized that we both had an inkling of Satanism and the

occult. This topic connected us immediately. As convinced Christians, we wanted to fight against this and enlighten people. We got to know each other, and a friendship developed. We got along very well for a while. At least, this was what I perceived, and I honestly believed it to be true. Both of us were cautious with this friendship because we didn't know whether there might be a Satanist plan behind it. Sometimes I was very skeptical about him and wondered who he really was. And I know that he also wondered the same about me. Well, sometime later I was shocked to find out that this question was very much justified. Because this man had actually been "fed" to me by the perpetrators. One might also say the other way around: I was "fed" to him. But we did not know that at that time! He was Marc, whom I had met as a child during the child hunt and with whom I was brought together afterwards by the cult.

But that was not enough! When we met in the outside world, I was not yet aware that I still had "ego-states" inside me that could continue to be used by perpetrators. I did know some things about Dissociative Identity Disorder as a result of severe trauma. But I thought I was lucky to have been spared from it, because I perceived myself as a stable and strong personality.

That was true, as far as the personality part of the life in the outside world is concerned. But it is precisely this that poses a very great danger. The stronger the personality of the life in the outside world, the stronger the danger of dissociation. In addition, in my case I like to be autonomous at the core. The perpetrators have noticed this and have promoted and strengthened the autonomy of the personality parts. In Marc's case, I had a personality part that was "married" to him at the time and trained to act as a "Mother of Darkness" with him, of course, all in a dissociated state.

For my part, I prayed that God would point out to me if there was still something there that I did not know about. He did this by unexpectedly sending professionals my way who could make me aware of the problem with the dissociative, but still partly trained parts. Then came a shock! I had been dissociative, I knew that. But the very worst thing was to realize that the perpetrators could still access me. And I thought everything was going pretty well!

Gradually, one by one, more barriers of dissociation dissolved, and I attained more and more access to my memories. Then I was shocked to discover that I had been pregnant again (as I said, at the age of over forty) and had given birth to a girl shortly before! This memory turned my whole life in the outer world upside down again.

My child was taken away from me by the cult! I had given birth to this girl when I was about six months pregnant. I remember how, shortly before, perpetrators again had access to me, and I had to come together with this Marc. I had realized with horror that we had known each other for years, he was my husband in the cult, or one of my husbands, because polygamy is practised in it. He was one of the men with whom I had to conceive children for the cult. The black panther with the green eyes was a trigger that was set for me in the cult. That was why I had responded to Marc's ad on the internet. I actually believed I did not know him. I only noticed that we got along well. We had also argued with each other and reconciled, as if we had been married for thirty years... which was true in a sense, though in a way that neither of us had ever thought of or wanted.

Pregnancies for the cult have come to an end. The truth has set me free. A hard, very hard truth. It almost knocked me out. But I wanted to know. I had expressed my desire that God show me everything that was important and necessary. I never, ever in a million years thought that there were so many cruel things in my life! Where are these children today? Where is my son Louis? Where is my little girl whom I gave birth to last? I do not know even now. I still feel the pain, but I trust that this too will come to light.

9.8 Ritual Celebration of the Illuminati

The celebration and thus the completion of the training for the "Mother of Darkness" was drawing near. This Satanic celebration took place in April, 1987. Satanic celebrations take place in April and are prepared for several days. On April 30, according to the Satanic holiday calendar, Satan's birthday is celebrated. Walpurgis Night is also celebrated on this night.

What I am about to report is terrible. But it is a matter of concern to me to write it, so that one knows what can happen in such extreme Satanic circles. It is certainly not like this everywhere. But in the circles in which I was

caught up such hardly imaginable things really happened! Very many people find it hard to believe such things. It was the same for me when this memory came up. I almost couldn't believe it at first. And I didn't want to believe it! But I got over myself, and, accompanied by another victim and witness to this Satanic celebration, I went to the place where it happened. Then, when I saw that certain details on the spot were exactly as I remembered, I knew for sure that it was true.

I was sixteen years old. I had chosen to follow Jesus at that age with our pastor, and we celebrated my confirmation. And then came April 1987. I remember being at the small airfield near our home one afternoon. The young people sometimes met there, where there was also a small pub.

I remember how I suddenly fainted. Today I think it must have been because of a medicine or a drug. When I came to, I was wearing a tight, red dress of lace.

I was in a huge hall. For me it seemed as if everything was in red, candles, windows, tablecloths, red light, red floor.... Everything was red. A woman with long black hair was escorted in by two people in black robes. She was in the advanced stages of pregnancy. She and I were wearing the same lace dress. The two attendants laid her on the pale, white light altar that was in the center. Her eyes were wide open.

A strange restlessness arose in the hall. I remember feeling great tension in the audience. I noticed people around me talking to each other. I heard music and singing. It was a festive atmosphere. I was sitting at the bottom of a staircase in the midst of other people when a man standing on a kind of stage asked me to come to him. I was handed a large curved knife.

I knew the man. It was a very famous Austrian singer and entertainer, whom I will call Paul Heinrich here. I don't remember how it happened, but I knew then that it was a wedding celebration. My wedding with Satan. I didn't see Satan in person, but Paul Heinrich played my husband for this ceremony. He moderated and accompanied the ceremony.

I lost my composure! I screamed, was angry, completely overwhelmed, felt panic, a huge chaos and confusion of feelings, emotions that could not be sorted out or put into words. But I had to obey! There was no alternative for me. I had to stab into the woman's belly. I was forced to kill her. Paul

Heinrich stood next to me and gave me the instructions how to do it. He guided my hand. The woman screamed. Nobody else moved. Everything was red. Full of blood. The altar, the dress, the woman, I, the floor. Everything. I had to cut the baby out of the mother's living body. It was alive. Someone lifted it out of the womb. Then I was ordered to cut the baby. With the same knife. Someone held the child by the feet with the head down. I was supposed to cut the baby in two with the knife. I couldn't. Then they also put it on the altar, and I had to finish my work.

After that I was allowed to rest a little. Paul Heinrich took me in his arms and congratulated me. He accompanied me to a table that was a little lower and we sat down. I don't remember if there were chairs or if we were on our knees. The table was decorated with red roses and red candles. I remember music. Classical music. Then women or men came and served us our wedding menu. Meat and something red in wine glasses. I knew this was the baby's meat. It made me throw up. But then they put something into my mouth, and I had to keep eating, nor was I allowed to vomit.

After that it went on. I remember how I, too, was brought to the altar. I was wearing a different dress, also a red one with lace. I don't remember how it happened.

I was "put inside" the woman's body. Before that, the woman's internal organs had probably been cut out. They took specific inner organs and put them into my body. I had to take them into my mouth and lick them. There were other men dressed in red and black robes. They masturbated in front of me and ejaculated on me and the dead woman. I was aggressively raped several times by Paul Heinrich, who embodied Satan - my husband. Afterwards also by other men. I fainted again and again. But I kept coming to, only to faint again. Blood, sperm, urine, rape, offal. I couldn't make a sound anymore. I felt intense pain all over my body. I felt as if a fire had been set between my legs, an ever-burning fire.

Some people were present at the feast. In my memory, there were perhaps around sixty downstairs in the hall. Perhaps there were more present, but I did not notice them. Among them were some prominent people whom I recognized in the course of the ritual celebration, well-known aristocrats, politicians, actors, professional athletes, a founder of an organization for

organ donation (which was officially founded in 1991), the wife of a president whose name everybody knows, and another young woman.

I must not mention these well-known names here for legal reasons, so as not to jeopardize the publication of the book. However, these names, as well as all other names of well-known personalities and certain places, are known to a number of persons of my acquaintance and are also included in the protective letters deposited with notaries and lawyers.

The young woman helped me privately as a household and family helper when I fell into severe depression many years after this ritual. Today I know: that was no coincidence, but had been planned far in advance. This woman kept showing up in my environment, and when I needed help, she contacted me. At that time, I thought she had offered her help voluntarily and that she was a gift from God.

On the stage, in addition to myself and Paul Heinrich, were several well-known tenors and two other men who served as guards.

During the rapes I stared up and saw a kind of sun with white-yellow rays. There was also a cross with Jesus nailed to it. Men laughed and said Jesus does not help, that Jesus is not alive and that Jesus has died. During the ritual up at the altar, a sex orgy was taking place downstairs in the large church hall. Both men and women were festively dressed. Some wore masks. They were elegant masks like those at a carnival. This ritual took place in Barcelona in the Sagrada Família.

In these Satanic circles, some perpetrators are also victims themselves and the victims are made into perpetrators. It is like a game of dominoes. The older children are made to abuse the younger children, while they themselves are abused by the older children. I too, as a victim, was made into a perpetrator. I assume that certain people who participated in this Satanic festival were forced to do so just like me. I cannot say exactly who is only a victim or who is a victim-perpetrator and who acted there as a conscious perpetrator with a perpetrator's heart.

Today, I do have access to some memories, and also to feelings from those awful, traumatic situations. Nevertheless, I am still unable to describe all the feelings and thoughts that overwhelmed me at that moment. There are simply no words for it all. One was not allowed to have feelings or

emotions at that time. I can only describe it as an endless, great emptiness that stretched into what felt like eternity. A kind of immense, empty resignation with feelings of powerlessness, anger, and grief, imperceptible because they had been so strongly repressed and forbidden. An absolute feeling of being at the mercy of others. Nothing was controllable. Nothing at all.

To my knowledge, scientists and doctors also take part in such events. These are places where organ trafficking takes place and human tissue is removed for scientific purposes.

After this kidnapping in Spain, I was sick and injured for a few days. At that time, I was about to take my final exams for the "Certificat Commercial". Since I had often been absent due to illness, the teaching staff discussed whether I could be admitted to the exams. Despite everything, I got the green light and managed to graduate after all. My graduation from school, my graduation as a confirmand and in April still my graduation from the training as a "Mother of Darkness". I was an adult, so to speak. I belonged to the inner circle of the Illuminati.

The interior of the Sagrada Família. The colored windows cast this part of the interior in an orange-red light. The left half of the image shows a sun projected onto the wall by the windows.

Altar of the Sagrada Família

The Mother of Darkness is the third level in the hierarchy on the female side of the Illuminati. On the male side, there are seven levels:[20]

Stage	Female:	Male:
1	Daughter of Jobe	Demolaw
2	Princess (Debutant)	Vassal (Prince)
3	Mother of Darkness	Presenter (Knight)
4	Grand Mother	Program Director (Priest)
5	Grand lady	Grand Wizard (Duke)
6	Goddess	Grand Master
7		God

10. Other Exams

I passed the first exam at the age of six. That was the child hunt in Belgium. Over the years, however, there were exams to pass on several occasions. Each time I moved up a level because each time I had survived those atrocities. Each time I had become stronger in learning how to die.

Another exam was the sacrifice of little Benjamin. But there were many others. About once every year there was a big exam that had to be passed. Somehow, I knew inwardly that I must pass; otherwise I should die.

10.1 Fisher of Men

At about the age of eight, I was made a fisher of men. This took place during a ritual. The actions of the Satanist group in which I was a victim were motivated by religious conviction. Basically, there was a rule of thumb called "mocking the Christian faith". They perverted the Biblical in numerous rituals, for example, the Lord's Supper being observed according to the Satanic ritual that I described earlier. Likewise, Satanic “fishers of men” are also made. People are trained to convert other people for their dark machinations. This was also the case with me.

The ritual for this took place in the Masonic Lodge in the nearby town. I don't remember all the details exactly. But I remember how I had to lie down naked and bound on a white and black checkerboard patterned floor. I remember some utterances, probably in Latin, and how I was poked over and over again in my right hip with a long stick by a priest. Around me stood masked people draped in cowls. Some spirits or other were called in a kind of chant, among others the spirit of Lilith. This is the spirit that stands for prostitution, among other things. I was forced to accept this spirit.

This was nothing new for me, because as a child I had officially been baptized with the name Liliane. Since I grew up in these Satanic circles, I assume that my name was no coincidence. Because everything that somehow has to do with Lilith, Lilly, Lys, Lilie, Liliane, etc. is associated with serving as a sex slave. So it was also the case for me. So I agreed to Lilith in this ritual. From then on, I was a fisher of men. I don't have much more memory of that ritual. But I do know that I started flirting with men at that time.

I was an eight-year-old girl when I learned to flirt with men. In the process, I seduced them into pedophilia. Over the years, I learned to sense exactly which men I could seduce, which men were ready for fishing. Of course, I then had to offer them my services. And I was persuaded that I was doing it voluntarily, that I liked it, but also that I was a whore and no good for anything else.

10.2 Gabriela

Great importance is attached to not having strong friendly ties. These are not looked upon favorably in Satanic circles. I also had to go through this exam. I was supposed to learn never hold on to someone I liked.

We slid a little closer to each other in this dark little house. She spoke German. I understood her to some extent. She wore long, light strawberry-blond hair. She was shy. So was I. There were maybe four or five of us in this hut, near the edge of a forest. We had to wait.

I had already experienced this situation several times. Waiting with other children, waiting until we were sent into the forest and shot at. I was then allowed or made to choose a child to protect. A child who was to be spared along with me. They then shot the others, not me and the one child. But I never knew what happened to the child afterwards.

Inwardly, I had already decided in favor of Gabriela this time. I liked her. We had met a few times before and, as far as we were allowed, had become a little closer. We tried to give each other a little protection, warmth and comfort. Then we were off. We were chased naked through the forest. Gabriela and I ran as fast as we could. I thought to myself, I'm going to run away with Gabriela now, far away from this place. I wanted to escape together with her.

Suddenly, a man with disheveled, thin blond hair appeared behind us. He wore a long gray coat. He grabbed me and Gabriela. Then he put a pistol in my hand and ordered me to shoot Gabriela. There were screams, tears of despair. The man tortured us. I was threatened that if I didn't do it, my siblings and my mother would be killed. I would be the one to bear the responsibility.

Finally, I was forced to shoot Gabriela. I had to shoot her between the legs. Gabriela died a slow, agonizing death. She bled to death and was in terrible pain. I had to watch her. The man tied me to a tree right next to her. I don't know how many hours it took. Gabriela died. Finally, the man came back with reinforcements. They cut Gabriela into many pieces with a saw and disposed of her in black garbage bags. Where I do not know. I had passed another of my exams.

This is the hut where I had to wait with Gabriela.

I remember the place where this happened. It was in the forest near Vuiteboeuf VD, behind the shooting range. I also found the hut where we children had to wait during my research. The child hunts took place at that time in broad daylight, probably on a Saturday when there was always shooting practice there anyway. The child hunts took place in the forest behind the area of the official shooting range, so the shots could not be heard, or they were simply mixed with those of the shooting exercises. I

suspect that the perpetrators could act unhindered under the cover of the obligatory shooting.

10.3 Murders of Adults

I was also actively involved in the murder of an adult. One of the first memories led me to the vicinity of that place of residence where I grew up as a child. There are many swamps in the area, the soil is black and sometimes very wet. A lot of vegetables are grown in that area. I remember holes and swamp ditches at the edge of fields. That was very dangerous, so we were not allowed to play near them. But then a young adult man was murdered near a farm there. I guess he was in his mid or late twenties. It happened as part of a Satanic ritual, and I was brought in. The man drowned in the mud, and everyone stood around him and just watched.

Today I am convinced that this was another step for me in my Satanic "exams". I had to get used to the fact that adults also die. Through such experiences, which I had to go through again and again, the threats that my mother and siblings would be murdered if I talked had great effect. I was convinced that they would actually murder my mother. After all, I saw that they could and did!

It was most probably in the summer of 1986. I just remember waking up in a big room somewhere in Amerois Castle. I was locked in a cage. The cage looked like a birdcage. It was white. I was naked, but I was wearing a lot of makeup. Why I remember that, I can't explain. I don't remember seeing a mirror. The next thing I remember, I was in another room fighting with about three to four men. They were strong, muscular men with black skin. I was naked and so were they. I was handed a big knife, and, as far as I remember they were not armed. My task was to fight and to stab wherever possible. I was cheered on by masked people standing around us. I still remember the one man, how he finally lay bleeding on the ground. Presumably he was dead. I don't know what happened to the other men. After the fight, I was picked up by a young man and taken back to the birdcage. This young man I knew. It was a well-known American actor, whom I will give the name John Collet here. I in the birdcage and the fight for life and death had been his birthday present.

10.4 Sodomy

At what age sex with animals started as part of the training I don't remember, but it probably started when I was about seven years old. I remember dogs, snakes and zebras. Some dogs were especially involved during sex orgies. These were probably dogs specially trained for these purposes. With such dogs I was kept on course. And especially with a neighbor's dog. The owner was a businessman, owner of a tombstone company and a professed Freemason. But I was also kept on course with snakes. Sect members occasionally kept snakes as pets. A music teacher at that time kept one. It was to her I went for the alto flute lesson. If I made a mistake, she either hit me on the head with the flute or, if the mistake was especially clumsy, she came to me to insert a snake into my vagina. I only remember seeing zebras sporadically at the Château Amerois. There were also horses there. However, I have no such memory of horses, which does not mean that sodomy was not practised with these animals.

10.5 Floating over Community Gardens

Illuminati are primarily spiritual and also practise the spiritual. In their rituals, they try to torture their occult beliefs into the victim. In these rituals, demons are summoned, which can be used to reinforce programming in a child or adult victim. The person is forced to be loyal and silent with the help of demons. In the process, the trainers call upon any evil spirits on a demonic level for assistance. This may sound strange or unbelievable to modern people. But the Illuminati see it differently, and I only describe here what the members practise and what I witnessed.

Not only Christians know that there are many other things between heaven and earth. We know or have at least heard about ghosts, demons, angels and astral travelers. I myself had to experience this. In the circles where I lived at that time, hypnosis was abused. Magic rituals were performed, spirits were called, and Satan was worshipped. I have witnessed inexplicable things happening in this country as well, not only on some distant continent like Africa, where voodoo is practised in some cultures. I myself was also introduced into such spheres. However, I know only fragments of what I learned at that time. For, when I became aware of these processes, I, as a

devout Christian, immediately renounced all this in the name of Jesus Christ. I firmly believe that Jesus is given all authority in heaven and on earth. Likewise, I also renounced everything else that had been done to me at that time. In this way, step by step, I experienced increasing freedom. What I am telling you now may sound strange. To be honest, it is. But it is what I experienced and what I carry memories of, whether I like it or not.

When I was about fifteen years old, I met my grandmother, who was a respected Satanist, somewhere in the air. I don't really know how to describe it. By that time, I had years of experience in leaving my body in the face of a trauma. I was able to do that. I had to leave the window in my room open at all times so that I could go out the window if necessary. My soul then simply fled out the open window, so that the bad things didn't happen to me, but to the "other me."

My grandmother had already died by then, but I met her again somewhere between heaven and earth. She guided me to wander astrally. I don't remember very much anymore. Only one thing remains in my memory. Astral wanderers have areas that are assigned to them. In these areas they are assigned a certain task. This task is either to observe, to disturb, to spy, or to attack a soul. I was given the task of observing the area of community gardens near us. At first, I was taught to hover, listen to people and then report back. Later, I was given a task that again had to do with sex. And that was to pick out certain men. Weak men. Men who were willing to cheat on their partner.

Community gardens are very suitable for this. They are places where people spend their free time, or barbecue together with family, neighbors, or friends. It is a place of community, where many people can gather in a few square meters at the same time, so it's an ideal place to watch a lot of people at the same time. By observing what was happening, the conversations, and the behavior, I noticed very quickly which man was interested in sex and which one was obviously not satisfied in his relationship. I then had to influence these men accordingly, and that with my thoughts. I had to send them into their soul, which was open to dirty thoughts, ideas of adultery, of infidelity. That was the first step. The second was then to cause thoughts of pedophilia in the same way.

I have no idea what these men did after that and outside the gardens. But my mission was destruction. Destruction of families, destruction of marriages and partnerships. My mission was mental manipulation, or in other words, "sorcery".

10.6 Sexual "Menus à la carte ”

An enormously beautiful, long limousine with a chauffeur stopped in a parking lot somewhere in the country. I got out. At the time I was about four or five years old, and, as far as I can remember, I was wearing a little white and blue dress and red shoes. There was a man waiting for me. He introduced himself to me with his real name. A few years later, he became the president of the U.S. Over the years, I was to meet him again and again. He asked me in English what my name was and what I could do. He was very sweet and kind to me. I told him my name and explained that I was an "all-rounder". The only explanation I can offer for why I said that at that time is that it was programmed into me beforehand. Anyway, he was very pleased with me! The parking lot I was driven to belonged to a very large, luxurious country-style manor house. I went there with the man and there were several people waiting for us. I was told we would be playing "restaurant" and I would get to serve the "à la carte" menus. So we started the game. It consisted of all the participants telling me their sexual preferences and me being the one who had to please everyone. I had to serve everyone sexually, and they were all allowed to choose what they would like. I remember upbeat country music that was supposed to create a festive, fun atmosphere.

11. MK-Ultra Programming

11.1 The Train

I like to compare the programming of a human being with a train. In order for a train to run, tracks have to be laid, and for this everything has to be meticulously planned. When a passenger gets on a train, his journey is usually purposeful. He arrives at the destination for which he bought the ticket. This is because the train cannot simply turn left or right haphazardly.

At most, it can derail. But then workers come immediately with the task of getting the train back on track as soon as possible, so that it can continue on its predetermined path. This is how it works, figuratively speaking, with the programming of people. This is called "mind control".[21]

How the "tracks" were laid for my life's train has significantly shaped my life story. I cannot speak for all victims. I can only describe what happened to me and what I know about it. I have found scientific facts on this subject during research on the internet, in non-fiction books, professional journals, studies and reports.

My life train also derailed sometimes. The builders who got it back on track were either my coaches or people who came in from the outside. Construction work means torture to create psychological as well as physical dependencies. Total control over a person. The workers know where the train has to go. The train itself does not. It just goes and must obey. It is not asked for its opinion. It must serve.

11.2 Wizard of OZ

A common programming among Illuminati is connected with stories, cartoons, and role-playing. It is a very popular method. The stories that are about a "journey through time" are the most suitable, as well as that of the Wizard of OZ, with which I was programmed.

This is a highly occult story that describes the ritual abuse and slavery of children and people. Tricks, colors, signs and the whole life events are used to manipulate and control the life of a victim.

The story is about how a child named Dorothy grows up in a house with a couple she calls Uncle and Aunt. These are not her biological parents, and she superficially has a nice relationship with them. However, she then tries to share a concern with them. The couple is very busy and distracted, and so the girl eventually comes to a magician who lovingly takes care of her and listens to her. A violent storm later comes over her Kansas homeland. A whirlwind transports Dorothy and her house to another world. There she meets bad and good witches, strange, brainless, heartless, despondent characters who become her companions, and then finally finds her way together with these characters to the castle of the Wizard of OZ. She is

allowed to enter there because she is the one wearing the red shoes: her ticket. The red shoes previously belonged to the Wicked Witch of the East. However, the Wicked Witch of the East was buried under the house that arrived with the whirlwind when Dorothy arrived in the Magic Land. Dorothy then received the red shoes directly from the good witch. In the castle, she participates in rituals, gets locked up, gets homesick after seeing her aunt in a crystal ball, and then finally escapes out of the castle with the help of her companions, who in the meantime have been given brains, hearts, and courage by the Wizard of OZ (i.e., programmed)... and... wakes up from the bad dream in her real bed with her real foster parents, surrounded by her real neighbors.

Dorothy is sick, and they all take loving care of her. Then, when she tells them about the dream, she explains that they all appeared in her dream. She claims to have seen some of them in the castle or on the road. The family, friends, and neighbors comfort her and explain that it was only a bad dream after all.

In the second story of the Wizard of OZ, Dorothy is taken to a physician because she is not feeling well. She is depressed and homesick for that other world she used to be in and wants to go back to. Dorothy is taken to a clinic and receives her therapy there in the form of electric shocks (torture), which send her into time travel again. At the very end of the story, she is found in a forest at night, completely hysterical, frightened, soaking wet, and desperate, yet Dorothy cannot explain why she is there (Because it was another personality part that went into the forest, she has no memory of the time elapsed.).

What has been described here is a perfectly designed backdrop to apply ritual abuse and mind control. This is exactly how the backdrops of victims are designed. Quite often the victims are not the biological children of the parents. The parents are often in the cult themselves and not interested in dealing with the child's needs. But on the surface, everything seems to be going perfectly. Church services are attended on Sundays, the family works diligently, and they are often well-liked in the neighborhood as well. These people are usually very personable, not flashy, well-liked by colleagues and family. But then they have their child kidnapped and do nothing about it. The child experiences great violence from the people it knows and loves.

But if it should speak about it, then it is interpreted as a dream, fantastical nonsense or a childish fib.

While such a story is played to the child, read aloud, and role-played, the child is often hypnotized or given drugs. Often this story is read or performed to several children at the same time, and they are told that they are now going to "time travel" together. They are then effectively transported to other times, eras or fantasy worlds by the trainer playing it to them. The children then actually believe they have been in a magical world. Once they have arrived in this other world, they are tortured and abused in rituals for real, but this is dissociated. The child then remembers only the story about time travel. It may also be that the child is given a role to play. Or it may even be allowed to take on the main role. In my case, I was allowed/needed to be Dorothy from the Wizard of OZ, the one who did the leading and determining, the one who had to walk on the yellow brick road, who had to experience torture and violence, and who was not believed in the end. In a scene from the Wizard of OZ, Dorothy is seen being locked up and suddenly sees her aunt in a crystal ball. She gets homesick and calls for help, but the aunt then simply "disappears", and Dorothy does not get the help for which she longs.

I can still see the room they took me to. There were many cots there. There were some people in the room - all dressed in white. They received me lovingly. Then they told me how well they understood my pain and that now they wanted to do something good for me. They knew my deep inner pain, the pain of being separated from my real parents. They were, after all, trainers. They lovingly asked me if I would like to see my mom and dad. I agreed, of course. But in order to see them, I would have to do something first. They also asked me if I wanted to do that. Of course, I wanted to do that. The main thing was that I could see my parents again, whom I missed so much. They then put me on a cot and attached electrodes to my head. In the process, I was tied down so that I could not move. During the painful electric shocks, they showed me my biological mom and dad on a big screen. I longed for them so much. My parents were smiling in the photo and seemed happy while I was being tortured here. Afterwards, they told me that my parents would be happy without me, and they never wanted to see

me like this - in this condition - ever again. But the trainers had kept their promise. I had seen my parents.

The story of the Wizard of OZ appeared in 1900 under the original title *The Wonderful Wizard of OZ,* later also known as *The Wizard of OZ.*

The "Grand Wizard" is the fifth level of the Illuminati on the male side. In the role-playing games, as Dorothy, I had to learn how to gain access to the "Grand Wizard" as a future "Mother of Darkness" with my special ticket (the red shoes), and was allowed to meet him, or under certain circumstances, had to serve him (as part of my training - an heirloom of my grandmother, who was a Satanist).

11.3 "Education " Track

The main training method of the perpetrators is education. This is started in childhood and then continued by the traffickers. A victim must always be on call and must always be submissive and dependent. It is educated for this purpose. The upbringing consists of the victim not being able to make decisions for itself. Not being able to know by itself what is right and wrong, and above all not being able to know what concerns itself. It is the others, the grown-ups, the parents, the educators, the traders, the doctors, the therapists, the bosses, who know what is good for it and what is not. They decide what it looks like inside a victim, not the victim itself.

I was driving as an adult woman in a car together with a trainer. There were also children in the car. One of the girls suddenly saw a horse. She shouted with joy: "There is a horse!" But the trainer said: "No, that's a camel!" At this, the girl was quite embarrassed, but then dared to contradict and said again that it was a horse. Hereupon the man reacted again by energetically claiming that it was a camel. The whole thing escalated, and the girl began to cry. In the meantime, I had intervened and taken sides with the girl. There was a big fight in the car, just because the man was so stubborn in claiming a lie.

What was the goal? What was being taught and learned here was: RIGHT IS WRONG! WRONG IS RIGHT!

The goal and the message are as follows: To confuse the child so that it learns not to pay attention to its feelings, to its subjective truth. Instead, it

should obey the master, the adult, the coach without questioning, as, after all he is grown-up and knows more. This method of education of course starts very early. In this case, the girl already knew that a horse is a horse, but the whole thing still caused a great deal of confusion.

Later, it is the coaches who know better which partner one ought to marry, which job is better, which friends are good and which are not, and so on. As a result, for years I believed everything a doctor said just because he was a doctor, everything a therapist said just because he had studied, everything my husband said just because the church said the man was the head, believed everything my friends who were several years older said just because they were more experienced, and everything the Honorable Reverend said just because he was a "man of God". This is how I was brought up, and this is how I was kept on course by the perpetrators. What I just didn't know for a long time is that the good older friends were in fact abusers, that certain therapists were abusers and even the "man of God" was one of them. People I believed had come into my life either by chance or sent by God. But in truth, they were cult members who looked out for me and probably others and had to keep us on track.

So it happened, when I had long since grown up that I married a second time, although I had actually noticed that there was something wrong with my second husband. The man was an alcoholic and not yet cured. I also noticed that he had pedophilic tendencies; however, I do not know whether he acted on them. My father had also been alcoholic, and at that time I worked in a company where we took care of homeless people, alcoholics, and addicts. So I was a professional in this regard, and I recognized the problem in this man very early on. At that time, I was friends with a couple who were very close to me. I was actually part of the family. They often said I was their adopted daughter. I even called the husband Papa sometimes. He worked in a similar field to mine, and the couple often took care of marginalized people.

When I was able to see further into my future husband and recognized the problem, I went to the couple, who were my friends before the wedding. I reported my fears about this man and my engagement to him. Although the couple agreed with me in some respects, they encouraged me to marry this man anyway. I was only engaged at the time, had a job that I liked quite a

bit, and an apartment that I felt happy in. I was just about to give it all up and get married. Then this conversation took place with the friend, the dad. They told me that they had been praying and got the impression that I needed just such a man and that we would be well suited to one another. I do not remember the exact wording. I then decided, against my gut feeling, against my observations and against this malaise, to give it all up, and I married this man. I had trusted the couple, especially the dad, who was close to me, more than I trusted myself. I thought, "After all, they helped me so much, they are such experienced people, they prayed so much for me...". I believed that they knew better than I what was good for me. I was a dependent, a kind of puppet that could be used just like that. I had been raised not to be able to trust myself. Others were worth more than I was. Although I had my own opinion on many things and was able to defend it, my yes or my no was only valid if an additional person had the same opinion. I needed the agreement of the other, of the trainer, of the dealer, in order to be able to believe myself. I have often experienced that my opinions and decisions were only accepted if I could prove that this or that person was also of the same opinion; only then was I recognized. I am not writing this to complain. I am explaining how it was and how the "educators", the perpetrators, work to keep victims of ritual abuse in their dependence. To keep him or her on the track.

11.4 "Coding" Track

In this chapter I will point out a few codes that are used as secret language in the pedo-criminal and Satanic-occult circles. There are many more of them. Here I will describe codes and signs which I personally encountered, which were in my environment, which I recognized, with which I had experience. These signs are public. It is not the case that they can be found only behind closed doors, even if only insiders recognize them. On the contrary! The neighbor's child or friend is coded, and you do not notice it. You go to a store and buy a T-shirt for your four-year-old granddaughter that says in code: This girl is available for oral sex!!! The abusers among themselves, the slave traders, know about these codes. And when traffickers and abusers dress their children in such innocuous looking clothes, they are sending just such messages. The same can apply when one watches a movie

or visits friends in their home. Pedophile codes or secret occult symbolism may be hidden here as well. Or it may be the logo of a company, a chain of stores, a corporation.

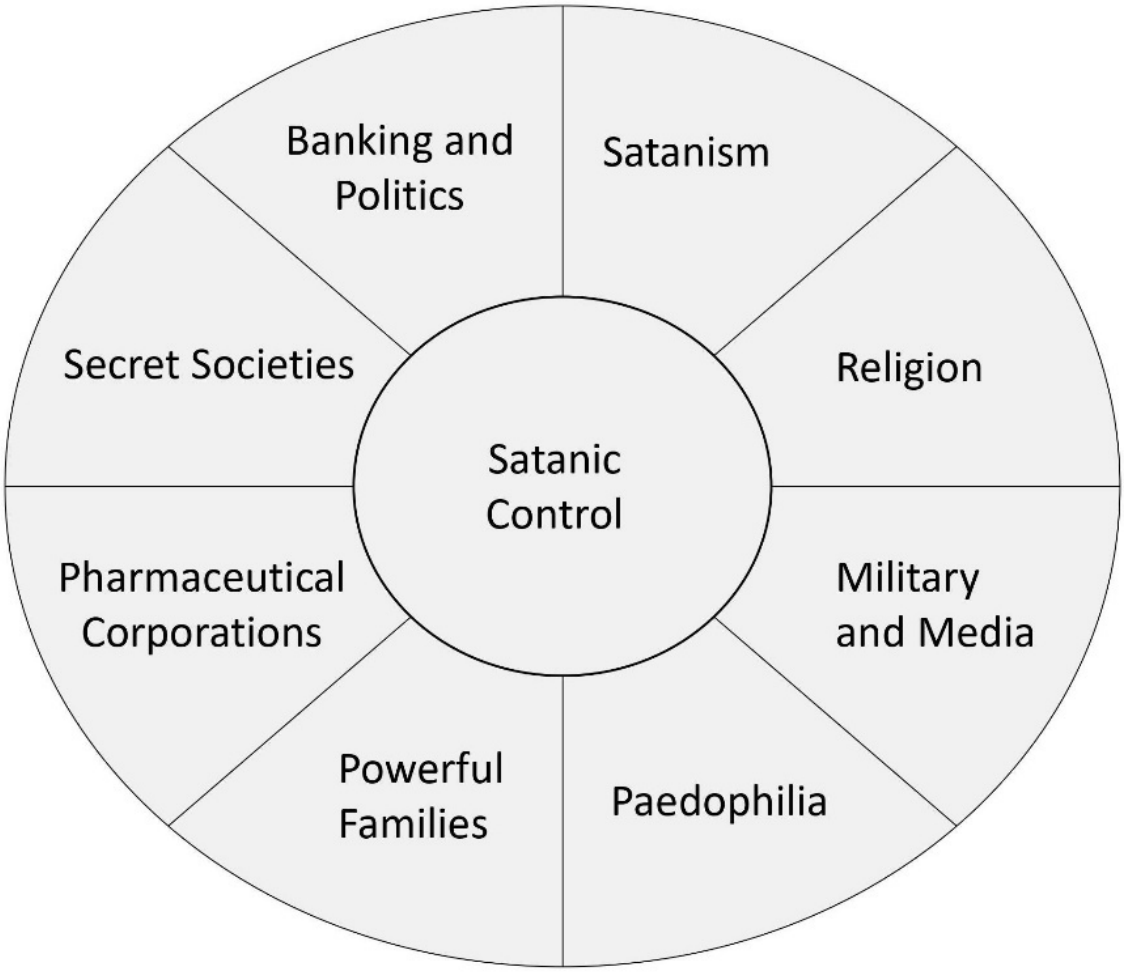
I have encountered logos (individually or in combination) that contain the following statements:

"*Children or adults are abused or sacrificed.*" (bell)

"*We take the victims from this world to another. For example, from life to death.* "(rainbow, white lily)

The victims think they are in good hands because the perpetrators present it as if it were a magic world.

The window of the chapel where I was often taken for rituals and abuse is also coded. The round window consists of eight elements. It looks like a wheel or like an eight-pointed star. The element in the lower right is slightly darker than the remaining seven. In addition, one element below the wheel appears in the same dark color. The Illuminati see themselves as having power in eight areas of public life. And that is where their highly trained people have infiltrated; often they hold high positions there. These areas are divided into eight segments, which are also represented in a wheel or star. One area is the pedophiles. Others are military and press, religion, politics and banking, pharmaceutical industry, etc. Since the number eight stands for perfection, their goal is to have power in all these areas. Because with that, perfection can be achieved from the Illuminati's point of view. Pedophilia is the segment at the bottom right. So, as an insider, you know that in this chapel, down in the basement, children are abused and sold.



Reproduction of a diagram (origin unknown) available online at https://therightofreply.blogspot.com/2015/11/2030-biometrics-agenda-united-nations.html?m=1
(accessed 11/21/2021)

Chapel windows

Codes are normal objects and signs that can be found in living rooms and houses, on buildings, on the roadside or other places. On the one hand, they are aimed at initiated "customers" and other perpetrators. Perpetrators recognize each other. No words are needed. No internet, technical data, or phone calls are necessary. They write it on their houses, on their clothes, on facilities such as children's hospitals. Every insider knows it and can read it. On the other hand, the codes and symbols serve to keep dissociative victims on track in normal life at all times. The messages are thus always present, and the victims are thus in a permanent unconscious training.

None of this can be proven. How is one to explain to the police that an institution such as a day care center is used to recruit abused children... simply because their logo contains a heart or a spiral with a rainbow? Besides, the operators of such a facility will be able to explain their logo. And they certainly will not say that it is there for perpetrators to bring their abused children here to be used by other perpetrators!

Here are a few examples:

- **Spiral**

  The spiral is a pedophile sign. It is a simple spiral, it does not have to look complicated. It can be found, for example, in the movie the *Wizard of OZ*. Dorothy dances there on a spiral before she is sent on the yellow brick road. To the right and left of the chapel in Valeyres-sous-Rances are stone spiral symbols (see photo page 37).

- **Heart**

Two interlocking hearts (a smaller one inside a larger heart) also serve as a sign of pedophilia. A pink heart indicates pedophilia for girls, a blue heart those for boys.

- **Red shoes**

Can be seen in *Alice in Wonderland* and on Dorothy in the *Wizard of OZ*. Red shoes are worn by the chosen children who are allowed to go to the king. That is, they are programmed to satisfy extravagant demands of mostly highly respected ladies and gentlemen. They are the chosen ones. Depending on whether the shoes are made of fabric, leather, imitation leather, or whether they are sandals, boots or slippers, the training, the offer and the ticket vary. Over time, shoe coding has become very popular in this scene. The colors and the material correspond to the training of the sex slave.

- **Blue and white dresses**

These can also be seen in the *Wizard of OZ* and *Alice in Wonderland*. I still don't know the exact meaning, but children dressed in blue and white are offered on the pedophile market.

One picture shows me as a girl of about four years old, dressed just so. With such harmless photos and films, they market children or send messages to each other. Or it is shown to initiates in public that a girl or woman is a slave.

Photo of me as a little girl.
Unfortunately, because of the black and white print, you can't see that I'm wearing white and blue clothes and red shoes.
These are typical codes in the pedophile market.

In these clothes I had to serve, among others, the aforementioned (subsequent) US president as a sex slave.

- **Leopards**

Leopard or other animal patterns worn as clothing, for example, can also be codes for a victim's sex slave status. Certainly, such things are worn by many today because they are fashionable. But it is sexist on children, and they are programmed and offered with it in the pedo-criminal and mind-control circles.

- **Panda bear**

The panda bear serves as an identifying symbol for children who not only serve sexually, but can also be beaten. Therefore, the black eyes of the panda bear are the actual symbol. Children with panda bear eyes (as a result of abuse and massive violence) are marketed on the pedophile market at a very high price.

- **Sentences**

Many trigger phrases are used to keep the victim always "on track". These are quite harmless phrases that are said in almost every family or relationship. But these phrases can also be abused. And in a cult, they are abused so that the victim is not tempted to break out. These include phrases such as: - "There's no place like home!" (OZ programming phrase) This is what a victim is told when he expresses the desire to leave.

- "No one is poor who has friends!" The friends are of course people from the cult. Also with this sentence the victim is kept at home with his "friends".

- "At home we feel safe!" Is said to the victim when something has gone wrong "outside".

- "Are you not well? We are worried about you and pray!" Means: your behavior is not normal, only with us will you find acceptance.

- "You were always so close to me; we were always like brothers!" Creates homesickness in a victim who wants to leave or is gone. This may be used to bring a victim back.

- "I love you so much! I would even sacrifice my life for you!" With this, a friendship is feigned. Who wants to lose someone who would even sacrifice his life? A victim has trouble detaching himself from such a person.

It may be difficult to imagine how such sentences can have a serious effect on a person. However, one must consider that these harmless-sounding sentences are linked to corresponding beliefs that have been anchored in the victims from an early age using perfidious methods.

- **Hourglass**

The hourglass is a mind-control signal with the following message: Your time is running out soon! Hourglasses are used to threaten. Hourglasses are used to educate victims to pass their exams as soon as possible. Passing exams is extremely important and serves the purpose of survival. But exams also mean stress. In a house where victims of ritual abuse go in and out, an hourglass can be placed in a particularly visible place. This will always keep the internal stress level high. A victim will feel permanently stressed in such a room and will not know why. But this is part of the program, part of the education.

- **Dolls**

Dolls are often used to send the following messages: This child is emotionless, empty, can carry out orders without compromise. Very often ceramic dolls are used, which all look the same, but wear different clothes. There the message is even clearer: it is called "dissociative slave". He/she is always the same and can slip into the most different roles without falling out of character.

- **Snakes**

A strong occult sign. Snakes are often kept as pets in Satanic-ritual circles. Torture is also performed with them. For example, snakes are inserted into the vagina as punishment or as sexual foreplay before sex rituals. Or children are locked in a room with snakes so that they panic and are bitten. The survivors can then continue to be used and employed, depending on their survival status.

- **Bell**

This announces something important. Often the bell is rung three times. That is, it is the beginning or the end of a journey. An involuntary journey. In my case, the trigger of the bell was set in such a way that I immediately fell into a kind of trance state. I was still active, so I could move, but I was no longer able to think on my own. The bell meant for me: it is time to go to the cellar. And so I went to the basement without being asked. Well. It was not quite unsolicited. It was at the ringing of a small bell.

- **White lily**

This flower symbol represents death. But it is also still a symbol for pedophilia, as well as for sex slaves. It arises from the name Lilith.[22] She is also seen as Satan's wife, as the black demon of the night, or as Adam's first wife, who refused to submit to Adam and was thrown out of the Garden of Eden by God. Anyway, at rituals I had to participate in, sometimes the spirit of Lilith was invoked, and this always had to do with sex. Also with child sex. I also suspect that I got the name

Liliane for this reason. Whoever wears or gets the white lily is thereby handed his identity and his destiny.

- **Lightning**

A lightning bolt is used as a distinctive mark for MK-Ultra. It stands for electricity and means that the victim is tortured with electric shocks, among other things, and is under mind control.

- **Music**

Music is very often used to program people. The whole music or the melody by itself or the associated words can be taken as programming text. Country music, certain classical music or songs that have to do with time travel like "Over the Rainbow" are very popular in these circles.

- **Rainbow**

The rainbow is also abused as a pedocriminal mind-control sign. It is symbolic of being transported from one world to another. "Over the Rainbow" is a song that is often used in such circles and played or sung to children. It is used for hypnosis and with it the victim is taken from one place to another. From everyday life to hell. From day life to night life. From child to sex slave. From life to death.

- **Rabbits** (mostly white)

White rabbits stand for sex programming, for example, the white rabbit in *Alice in Wonderland*, which is chased and then disappears again and again into a hole (hole = cellar, where rituals take place). But also, rabbits with light color are used, such as pink, light blue, light yellow.

When I was a child, my grandparents gave me a plush toy bunny with the colors light blue and light yellow. It became my favorite stuffed animal. I took it with me everywhere. Since I grew up in a cult, the perpetrators knew that I had already received sex programming as a child. The colors yellow and blue meant: She is obedient, and she always stays nicely in the place where we want her. She does not run away.

- **Goats / goat heads**

These are occult Satanic symbols that are very often applied as a code of recognition. If such a head is found in an apartment or other building, it can mean: Satanists are here. Rituals take place here.

- **Butterflies**

These represent a free-floating spirit, after the old portion has previously died. Being a butterfly child means that the programming is successfully completed, and the slave is suitable for dissociation.

With butterflies, in most cases, it is indicated that the victims have gone through what is called "Monarch programming" (have become a monarch butterfly, so to speak). That is, they have been trained to serve "monarchs" in any perverse way the highly respected people want. So they can fulfill their perverted extravagant desires. That is their job. Butterflies have to do with transformation. These victims are able to transform themselves, to become someone completely different, to slip into a completely different role, without then being able to recognize the original personality. The triggered butterfly probably does not know that it used to be a caterpillar. And vice versa the child or the adult person also doesn't know about the programmed sex slave part that has to serve as a "butterfly" every now and then (because it is not the outside child or the outside adult that has to serve as a "butterfly"). This seems unbelievable, but it is unfortunately true and made possible by the described technique of the personality splitting!

My second-grade teacher put me in the "punishment room". I must have been disobedient. The school in our village was housed in a barracks, right next to the big military barracks. The "punishment room" was empty. There was a bench made of wood, attached directly to the wall, in the same wood and color as the barracks. She always put us disobedient children there. There we had to wait until the punishment was over. Then, at some point, she would take us out again and give us a kiss for forgiveness. I remember how disgusting that was every time. That was not all right with me at all. But I didn't dare to say that I didn't want that. So I just kissed back each time. The teacher also belonged to the sect "Adorateurs du Soleil" and taught the second grade at that time. The physical education classes were held on the grounds of the military. I was very familiar with that part of the

grounds which was allowed for us children. However, I was also familiar with other parts of the area.

I sat in the "penalty area". Today, I still have horrible scenes in front of my eyes. Suddenly, there were soldiers standing in front of the window, wearing gas masks. That looked terrible to me as a child. They then took me with them to the compound. Every now and then they would hand me over to some other man, whom I perceived as the boss. He would then lead me into a room or into a yard with many men. I don't remember exactly what happened, but I know that I had to undress and dance in front of the men. There was also a pole in one of the rooms. I also had to dance on the pole.

I was always very clumsy in sports, but there were areas in which I always excelled. That was in gymnastics on the pole and in the sprints. For years I was among the best in the dashes and in pole gymnastics. No one, including me, could explain this, because I was usually among the very last and worst in sports.

It happened every now and then that I was picked up by a helicopter on the military grounds. How long I then flew along, I can't say. I remember a hilly landscape where a black limousine was waiting for me. On these trips I was often accompanied by two men in black suits and white shirts. When I got into the car there was a finely dressed lady who met me. She explained to me in English that I was a ***butterfly child.*** *And to become a butterfly, one had to take exams. But she encouraged me and said I could do it, I would pass, she knew me. And so we drove to a large building that I later recognized as Westminster Abbey in London. In a gloomy, dark room there was a kind of table in the middle. I was placed on it, spread-eagled, by men in dark suits, and my feet and hands were tied. The elegant woman stood silently beside it and watched. This table then pushed itself apart. I don't know how this was done, whether electrically or whether someone turned a wheel. My arms, hands, feet and legs were pulled apart to the very limit of pain. It didn't stop, even though I was screaming in pain, and the lady just kept watching. At some point it was over. I had survived the "butterfly training". I was then taken back to school by car and helicopter. Whether it was on the same day or later, I can no longer say. But I know that the misery started and ended in the "punishment room" of the school.*

The teacher had set the scene for this to happen. I have met the elegant lady from time to time over the years in the course of tortures and rituals. She has an influential position in one of the last monarchies.

11.5 "Colors " Track

Colors serve as a guide with enormous significance. Colors are used for programming at a very early age because children can recognize colors much faster than numbers or letters.

Color	Meaning
1. Purple	Silence
2. Blue	Being at home, feeling good, homesick, being in the circle of the perpetrators
3. Gray	Not trusting oneself and one's feelings/ confusion/ indecision/ creating dependency.
4. Yellow	Obedience/ Announcement of a punishment for transgression of a commandment/ Command to perform an action is given.
5. Pink	Stands for sexual girl; pedophilia
6. Red	Dominatrix/ Sadomaso/ Dominance. Stands for sex, party, celebration, orgy, blood sacrifice. Sealing of a ritual. Red always follows all colors.
7. Orange	Aggression/ training to become an offender
8. Green	Report. Talking/ Disclosing Information/ Perpetrator Loyalty
9. White/ Light	forgotten, weightless, get new orientation
10. Black	Praise and honor, false honor, worship of Satan, satanic rituals
11. White/ Diamond	highest distinction; the goal must be achieved

How does the system with colors work? First, colors are also used as codes between insiders. There are butterfly children, panda bear children, and so on, as I said before. Then there are also color children: white diamond children, bluebird children, black ladies, black men, and many more. But

the colors also serve to guide a victim on that path which was intended by the perpetrators.

In order to install color programming in me, the perpetrators structured my innermost being - my inner world. They "built a house" in me that had different floors with different colors. On each floor there were different rooms, and in each room there were different "ego-states" (personality parts). Sometimes there were also back rooms where "ego-states" were formed, which then had to act as bosses or punishers. Each "ego-state" was given its role in the system and had to perform it accordingly. The rez-de-chaussée (first floor) was purple. Then came the second floor in blue, the second floor was gray, and so it went on until the diamond floor.

1. Following this floor arrangement, I was first "trained" and programmed with the violet programming, namely in silence. This means that every torture and every ritual had the goal of installing and practising silence until it was - from the point of view of the perpetrators - well practised and installed. The color purple was very often used as a trigger or background in torture. When I reached the level of violet, I was given an amethyst and thus everyone knew that the "silence training" had been successfully completed and that I could be used for a number of purposes.
2. After that, it was suggested to me that nowhere else was as nice as home in order to ensure my dependence. Thus, a feeling of homesickness and discomfort was created in me as soon as I moved outside the perpetrator's circle. That was the blue programming.
3. Gray programming was also important from the perpetrators' perspective. There, above all, confusion was created. l. There I had to learn that I could not listen to my gut feeling. In this stage, it was learned that right is wrong and wrong is right. Other victims report that they heard the following sentence during rapes: "Pain is pleasure and pleasure is pain". I can confirm this. What is beautiful is evil; and what is evil is beautiful.

th-6th After the yellow programming, which ensured absolute obedience, came the pink and red programming. These gave me the value, the task and my identity, namely to be a sex slave.

7. After that, the orange system was installed. Having already worked as a sex slave, I was now further trained to develop aggression. This involved inflicting harm on others. The orange programming is therefore also called killer programming.
8. The green program was used to form and train "ego-states" that always reported to the perpetrators. It is a program that creates perpetrator-loyal personality traits.
9. The white program made sure that I should forget everything I had experienced.
10. The black programming takes place shortly before enlightenment. With this, the perpetrators aim to force total devotion to the cult and the oath to honor Satan. Satan is praised and honored as the father of it all.
11. The diamond programming is that of enlightenment. At this level of programming, the Illuminati speak of a thousand lights.

The various programs are not isolated. Although they are installed in stages in the victim, they always have elements that overlap.

Diamond

To support the white diamond programming, I was told stories as a child by an Illuminati woman. The storytelling served to inwardly question what I had actually experienced. Like all the "Adorateurs du Soleil", this woman, who was also my class teacher, believed in so-called "gnômes". These little men, I was told, live underground and make trees and plants grow. But the "gnômes", they said, unlike normal people, are only ever active at night. Why? Because, among other things, they like to count the stars. Whether it was only stars in general or a thousand stars, I don't know anymore. Because we humans love to be in nature, which is cared for by these "gnômes", it was our duty to honor and worship these little men, to make sure that they could count the stars, and also to provide them with food, especially at night. We children were taught to provide food for these beings in the evening. Today it is clear as daylight to me that these stories described exactly what I had to experience underground in cellars at night. The men and women must be fed with orgies and blood rituals for the maintenance of their sex drive, so that they experience the "enlightenment",

the seeing of the thousand stars! I remember being sent to the "penalty box" by the teacher because, as a child of about eight, I had the temerity to question the credibility of her narrative. She told us children that every evening she put a small bowl of food for the "gnômes" in her kitchen. In the morning it was always gone. Knowing that she owned a dog, I said in front of the whole class that I thought the dog ate those snacks! Then she grew extremely cross, and I was punished quite severely.

Blue, Purple, Pink, Red

My husband used to be my dealer and therefore knew about certain codes and also that I was a suitably conditioned victim. Our apartment was mostly decorated in blue for a long time. I also liked it and wanted it that way. At least, I thought I wanted it that way. But basically, I had been influenced to favour blue because blue means "home". So I felt comfortable and at home in that blue environment. On top of that, there were purple stones in the living room for decoration. Amethysts. These had their special place and absolutely had to be displayed. For me as an MK victim, this color combination meant: you must stay here; being outside the house is forbidden to you, and you must be silent. Since I had been programmed with colors, I unconsciously reacted to them and could thus be kept on course by the perpetrators.

In addition, there was the pink. Our bedroom was done up in violet-pink for a long time. That means for an MK-Ultra victim: girlish sex slave, is sworn to secrecy. If the color red is added to this, for example, in the form of a red pillow brought into the room by the perpetrator, the victim will sometimes behave like a girl and sometimes like a dominatrix, depending on the wishes of the dealer or perpetrator.

Yellow

I felt as if I was being interrogated; I had broken a rule. The man who was U.S. president at the time sat behind a wide desk and spoke English to me. I was about ten years old. I wanted to keep a secret, but they had noticed, and it seemed to me that I must take my clothes off. Though I didn't want to, I still had to. It felt as if I must take off my soul. I had talked to a boy who was my age. I wasn't allowed to do that, but I had done it anyway. We saw

each other in a really big, wide hallway with red carpet and he told me we were going to leave. I agreed to go with him. Apparently, someone had overheard.

The boy was wearing dark blue pants with a green plaid pattern and a white top, a T-shirt or a shirt.

I was now in this big room with the big desk. Behind the man were very large windows. In front of them hung long, thick, dark blue curtains embroidered with yellow or golden flowers. I think I was in this room more than once.

The man told me that I had betrayed him. I had transgressed his commandments. His commandments were love, and I had transgressed them.

I didn't see yellow in the room, but I was dressed in yellow. I was wearing a yellow dress with a white belt. A woman with gray-mottled, shoulder-length, thickly wavy hair had put the dress on me. Later I learned that she was an influential head of government of a Western nation.

I knew the woman, had seen her several times. She wore a dark blue and green checkered suit with golden buttons. The collar was round. It seems to me that underneath she was wearing a white blouse. The moment I stood in front of the man, I felt ashamed. I had sinned and I knew I should be punished. I was not told what kind of punishment it would be, but I knew that if I wore yellow, a punishment would automatically follow. For disobedience.

I saw a cord hanging by the windows in the room. A cord. And I automatically went there. This rope was put around my neck by the man. It was strangling me. He pulled me up a little bit. I did not resist; I could not resist. I could not breathe. The whole thing was repeated several times until I was unconscious.

Later, I was led by the woman to a cellar room, which was separated by a grate. It was completely empty. The boy I had talked to was lying in the part next to it. He was naked and had wounds all over his body. I didn't know if he was alive or dead. I barely recognized him. I should have liked to talk to

him, but I didn't because I was afraid of the punishment. The boy's name was Marc. At least that's what they called him.

My nursery had blue wallpaper and a yellow carpet. In MK-Ultra language it was the call to be obedient on the spot. This room was where my father either visited me at night or picked me up for cult meetings.

White/grey light

I was lying on my bed in my assigned room in the White House. Anyway, they told me I was in the White House. They called my room "Blue-Room". What was strange was that the room was not furnished with blue at all, but much more with red. In this room I was taught my lessons over and over again, and I had to learn to let "snakes" into my intimate area. By "snakes" penises were meant.

One day, when I was about 15 years old, I was picked up at my blue room by the two men who were always elegantly dressed in black and accompanied me to many places. Before that, I also had to dress elegantly and looked like a businesswoman with my hair up. They led me down a long hallway that led to a terrace or plaza. There a helicopter was waiting for us. I don't know how long the flight took, but eventually we arrived on an island with a military complex. I was led into a large room. An enormously large computer room. I sat down at a computer and began entering codes that had previously been implanted in me under torture. I was told that I was currently at war and that I was making sure that ships were sunk in the sea. Whether this is true or not, I cannot judge.

After a while, a woman picked me up. It turned out that I had also seen this woman before. It was the wife of the future U.S. president, whom I had also seen several times, including in the country-style manor house. She led me to a farm and handed me over to a horde of men, who all, one by one, jumped me and raped me. Later, the wife of the future U.S. president picked me up and took me to a room. The room was all white with white-grey light. There was a stool, nothing else, no bed, no toilet, no blanket. On the floor she also raped me with oral sex. After I was spun by her on this stool at an unimaginable speed for a long time (which is known as the spinning method), she left me lying on the floor. In that white room, I lost all sense of

time and space. I had no idea who I was. In that white light, I forgot everything and didn't care about anything. I probably lay there for several days until I was brought back to the White House.

11.6 Other Codes and Triggers

Triggers are not only symbols, sounds, colors, or numbers. Triggers can also be movements, light, music, etc. The perpetrators use all kinds of things to trigger. They also take a close look at the victim and then set those triggers that fit the victim as well as possible (Programs are also sometimes developed individually. For example, a "sports program" can be installed in a person who plays sports or a "smoking program" in people who smoke.). Every person knows some unpleasant triggers in his life. Suppose someone as a child had to swallow a disgusting cough drop every winter at the first snow, this person will remember it for a lifetime as soon as the first snowflakes fall. It may be that the taste of this cough drop is then automatically felt in the mouth, even though the person has long since grown up and these candies may no longer even be available on the market.

Triggers are set in the same way. Just as snowflakes have nothing to do with candy, perpetrators make sure that the trigger has nothing to do with what follows. I have already described how perpetrators purposefully induce dissociation. They are constantly doing this, and for this that they need all these triggers.

I actually enjoy playing the piano. As a child, I went to music lessons for several years and enjoyed it. So it happened that the perpetrators took advantage of this and set a "note trigger" for me. As soon as I played the note "A" on the piano and I was alone in a room, I used it to put myself in a hypnotic state. This served to train me over and over to think of the hypnotic state as normal. I didn't even notice it. But this way the perpetrators could just pick me up much faster because I was unconsciously training myself with this method, and in this way, I was constantly keeping myself on track.

A commonly used and well-known trigger, also known as a recognition sign among Satanists, is as follows: Someone puts a finger on their lips as a sign to be quiet. It is then called silence. This is how it was with me. When I was

in a group together with other people and someone consciously or even accidentally put his finger on his mouth like that, I immediately fell out of the conversation and hardly talked or did not talk at all. If this was done by a perpetrator, it served to keep me on a silent course. If someone else did it unconsciously, I still suddenly stopped talking and took myself out of the conversation because, for some reason I was not aware of, I suddenly felt I no longer belonged.

Light is also often used. The light is used in a similar way to Morse code. I know of victims who leave their house and go to perpetrators because they drive past their house at night with the car and shine the headlights briefly three times in the room.

With me a recumbent eight was illuminated with flashlights by moving the lamp in this form. The recumbent eight as a sign for infinity is likewise an Illuminati recognition sign. This kind of light sign is also used to torment a person and bring him into a confused state (e.g. by constantly moving a lamp directly in front of the eyes while the eyes have to follow the light). If one has been triggered and tortured with it, all that is needed is for this sign to be shown once or twice, and already this will cause confusion and disorientation. The relief light is again used for re-orientation, this time however by a red shining dot. In my case, it led me to go exactly where the perpetrators wanted me to go. And that without words, without telephone, without technical means, without evidence.

My daughter, whom I had when I was over forty, was taken away from me immediately after birth. Since large parts of my dissociation had already dissolved, the memories of what had happened were present quite quickly. I then visited a gynecologist's office, hoping signs the pregnancy could still be established. I was in pain, and I wanted to have it checked. The pregnancy could not be confirmed anymore. But on the ultrasound something was detected in the uterus which was either remnants of plasma or mucosa. In addition, it was determined that I would have my first period again very soon. I waited for that, but nothing happened. Why? Because the following had happened shortly before: I was driving back to my home late at night in the car. Suddenly someone was standing on the side of the road waving a flashlight. While doing so, this person made a sign of a recumbent figure eight. With that, the person triggered out another "ego-state" in me,

which was then clueless and in need of orientation. After that, I saw a red, dot-like light through which I gained re-orientation. I thought someone needed help, and so I pulled over. Then a man came up to me and said, "Well, Beautiful, here we go!". This was a trigger phrase that caused me to follow him. I got out of the car and ran after the man. A few meters away there was a car on the lawn, a silver VW Caddy. A second man was standing next to it. I knew him from before. A woman also came along. The first man and the woman dragged me into the car, and I only remember that I noticed how I stepped away. Whether I had been given a drug, I cannot say. I only perceived what was happening around me through a kind of bubble. As if I were trapped inside it. I heard them talking, but didn't understand what they were saying. Everything sounded strangely warped to me. After a while, an ambulance with blue lights pulled up. And a person dressed like a paramedic joined it. She held me by the head while the first man took off my leggings and underpants and started to tamper with me intimately. The whole thing did not last long, a few minutes at most, and the people put me back in the car. They had put an incontinence mat on my seat and given me some linen strips, then they all drove away. I wiped the remaining blood from between my legs, drove to the nearest parking lot, and threw all the material into a trash can. After that, I drove back to where I lived. I had not noticed any loss of time. I had only wondered why I wasn't wearing any underpants under my leggings. The incident landed temporarily in my trauma memory, apparently.

After this traumatic incident, I had diarrhea for a few days. The long-awaited period came only a few weeks later. I thus realized in my life in the outside world that something could not be right. Since I was in a phase in which the dissociation slowly but surely was dissolving, I was soon able to access these memories. Perpetrators had feigned a minor accident to lure me into a trap and subject me to a quick curettage on the side of the road. Thus, all possible evidence of the recent pregnancy had been eliminated.

This is organized violence. Nothing, or hardly anything, is left to chance. These people are very well-organized in the underground, as I said before, with Mafia-like structures that enable them to do a great deal.

11.7 "Life Design " Track

The life of a victim of mind control is pre-programmed and -arranged. His life is shaped. One hardly notices anything of it. And if one does, one is rebuked. The reprimand does not always have to take the form of violence. Most of the time it manifests itself in very harmless ways. The problem is that we as human beings accept the reality of the world as truth, as it is presented to us. The victim has his world created by others, for example, as follows:

- A victim wants to travel. The cult holds the victim back by disillusioning him: "Oh, that takes money, time, savings. I could never travel either..."
- A victim wants to continue his education: "Oh... you don't always have to go to school. Just enjoy life for once! I myself am so happy that I'm out of school and don't have to study anymore!"

I expressed the desire to further my education in psychology. Then a trainer came and told me that psychology was no good, nor Biblical. "You don't need psychology, and pastoral care is not important." I did it anyway. But when I had a problem and couldn't get on with myself, the trainer said that it was the fault of this stupid psychology. With that, he devalued everything that I liked and was valuable to me. He also made me feel anxious, because I was then afraid that he could be right, and that God would actually not like my project. That was also an attempt to stop me, because logically the studies would help me understand much of what was going on with me, and so I was already unconsciously taking steps toward deprogramming. Of course, the cult did not like that.

- When a victim realizes something, then - as if by chance - a thousand obstacles come into his life.

I had already signed the contract with the school where I wanted to do my studies. I had taken care of the financing and was happy because it looked as if everything would work out. But then an event (probably induced) came into my life, and my financial aid for this degree was rescinded. They were trying to hold me back. I was then able to continue nonetheless, because the school administration was very

sympathetic to me, and I was able to make a deal with them. Otherwise, I should have had to drop out.

- A married or partnered victim wants to travel. The partner, a coach, does not want to.
- The partner or trafficker never listens when the victim wants to talk.
- Traumata in life in the outside world are created - for example by divorce, an accident of a family member, illness of the victim's best friend - so that the limits for recognition (healing) are not crossed. The victim must first overcome the trauma before moving on.
- The victim is labeled psychotic or insane if he or she recognizes anything.

When I realized that I had been sexually abused by my father, I confronted him. In response I received, "Your mother put this into your headt!" and "You read too many newspapers and books!" and "I know what your problem is: You're homesick, that's why you're miserable!" (I had moved away a few years earlier from French-speaking Switzerland, where I liked it very much. After that, the first memory of abuse came up.).

My grandfather, who was officially deceased, was in fact still alive and could thus continue to work incognito. I encountered him in the flesh every now and then after his alleged death. He conducted certain torture sessions, especially electroshock torture. When the memory of this came back and I reported this, I was considered untrustworthy by an official authority figure from whom I sought help.

I can certainly understand that something like this seems unbelievable. That's where the big problem lies. For the perpetrators, it is a small thing. The rules that apply to us in normal, everyday life do not apply to them. They do what they want. Victims and witnesses are then considered insane. But not the perpetrators.

- It may happen that an honest person comes into a victim's life. If this person then perhaps recognizes certain problems and wants to point them out, he too is labeled psychotic and is usually excluded from the victim's life.

- When programming breaks out in a victim, the person often behaves strangely to outsiders. It is not uncommon for the affected person to be admitted to a psychiatric clinic or sent to cult friends to recover. They justify it by telling the victim, "*We protected you from yourself!*"; "*You needed professional help!*" or "*You needed friends who loved you!*" In this way, life is shaped, and derailing victims are put back on "track".

12. Monarch Programming

They called me Butterfly Child, because I had to go through what they called Monarch programming. There are reports that Monarch programming is the successor to MK-Ultra. I have no proof of that. I can only report what I experienced myself. To find explanations for this, I set out to find more information. Even though this was not professional journalistic research, I came across numerous things that confirmed my memory of personal experiences.

Monarch programming, according to my assumption, aims at splitting the victim's soul. On the one hand, these manipulations of the soul are scientific experiments. On the other hand, the splitting of souls is carried out in the context of the spiritual thought of the Illuminati with the aim of their own enlightenment. Thus, they try to create enlightened - illuminated - parts by splitting a soul. These illuminated soul parts are then to be reunited in rituals.

Monarch programming is often used when the perpetrators want to preserve a Satanic bloodline. It is important for Satanists to have successors in these family structures. These are children who have often been tortured in the womb. In fact, dissociation can be induced prenatally. This then serves to turn people into perfect slaves, manipulable subjects. For the perpetrators, they are merely living commodities to serve the purpose at hand, without the victims noticing anything. Their goal is to make slaves for powerful people in politics or business. For this purpose, as already mentioned, well-known torture methods are used. But this programming is also used to develop new torture methods. In the process, many people die because they test how much a person can endure, to which group of people one can do

this or that in order to manipulate them and to which not. Children are quite suitable for this.

All this is also used to train soldiers for secret services. But unfortunately, also to train other people, women, men and children, for assassinations or other covert missions. In so-called "empty" states, in which one is deprived of any sense perception (for example in special stimulus isolation tanks), codes or political secrets can be "implanted", for example, for a human being loses orientation after a certain time. The programmed person then keeps these messages, i.e. codes or secrets, inside himself without knowing it. This information is then retrieved by triggers at times and places selected by the perpetrators.

Why this name "Monarch programming"? The name was chosen because of the monarch butterfly. This insect has a special ability that gave researchers the idea to program humans. A monarch butterfly is able to pass on its knowledge to its offspring via genetics. So, if knowledge genetics can be passed on genetically, the main thing is to find the "right parents" for the victims, who will then pass on the "knowledge" by means of Monarch mind control. Monarch programming is highly regarded by the Illuminati and is part of the training. The victim is programmed according to the life cycles of a monarch butterfly: First it starts its life as a small caterpillar, which means it is in the womb and has still unexplored, but manipulable potential. Then it becomes a cocoon. Cocoon time is the time of programming. Once it hatches as a butterfly (new creation), it is a (monarch) slave. During tortures, there is a dazed feeling, like the floating and fluttering of a butterfly. It is also for this reason that the Illuminati use this designation for their Mind Control victims.

Again and again a long code appeared in front of my inner eye. For years, I had no idea what it was all about, nor did I give it any further thought. It was simply a recurring thought for me without meaning.

This code was entered into my subconscious over and over again in empty, "floating and fluttering butterfly phases", during which I was deprived of any sense perception. In my life in the outside world I had not noticed anything of it. Nevertheless, it had been implanted somewhere in my brain.

When the dissociation slowly dissolved, I came to memories and had flashbacks[23], and this also came to the surface.

But over time, new images were added to this code. At some point I realized that these were memories. I had to enter this code into a number box, which gave me access to a compound. There was a big black fence in front of an enormous gate. Men accompanied me each time. I was quite small at that time, I guess about seven years old. But over the years I was taken there very often. Behind this enormous gate was a huge hall. I know that it was a kind of bunker. There were over twenty fighter planes in there. Every time I stood in front of these planes, the men would tell me in English, "You can make war with these!". I was not the only one who entered this code. There was always a second person, another child.

One method that belongs to Monarch programming is to make two people psychologically dependent on each other. They form so-called twins, but biologically they do not necessarily have to be related. In rituals they are joined together and initiated into a common secret. In the process, they then each share half of a programmed piece of information, which makes them dependent on each other.

In summary, Monarch programming uses elements of science, developmental psychology, behavioral psychology, and brain research, to create perfect mind control in slaves. The Satanic-ritual abuse serves as the basis for the necessary personality splits; through it, the victims learn to dissociate from an early age.

13. How Are Triggers Set?

The goal of triggers is to set off a chain reaction. First comes a trigger, then a reaction; with the help of punishment or reward, the two are linked together on an unconscious level. A particular reaction or action then follows automatically from a trigger, without any specific thought on the part of the person concerned. In the context of ritual abuse with mind control, perpetrators are careful to ensure that the reaction should have nothing to do with the trigger. One must be dissociated from the other.

The famous experiment of the Russian scientist and physician Ivan Pavlov (d.1936) shows well how a trigger can be set. He fed his dog for a long time and always rang a bell before feeding. The dog understood very quickly that the bell (the trigger) meant: it would get something to eat (reward). Soon salivation (as a reaction) was activated in the dog as soon as it heard the bell. When the owner then skipped the food (the reward), the dog still started salivating due only to the ringing of the bell. The bell had nothing to do with eating, yet for this one dog it was the sign, and it salivated whether or not there was food afterwards.

The goal of abusers is to dissociate a child or adult. Dissociation is the opposite of association. When you hear the word "garden", you probably think of the following associative words: flowers, vegetables, lawn mower, etc. In induced dissociation, the exact opposite is done. Care is taken to ensure that one has nothing to do with the other. Confusion is intentionally created. And then into the confusion re-orientation is introduced: Perpetrator orientation (e.g., bell and eating). In this moment of confusion, in which one does not know which way is up, one is simply glad for any orientation.

We can imagine it like this: Suppose someone is floating in a silent, empty, colorless and odorless room; he does not even know that he is human, he does not remember that he has a language to speak and has no idea that there is life and death. He simply does not know anything. But he has opened his eyes, he can see, hear and smell. Suddenly, from somewhere comes a voice that tells him something. Since he has no idea about anything else at that moment, he will automatically follow that voice, because he is dependent on orientation. I worked with dementia patients for a few years. The severely affected sometimes just followed us as a team, without any sense or purpose, just for the reason that they were looking for orientation in that moment.

And this is exactly how the perpetrators work. They usually bring their victims into a situation of extreme confusion through torture. From a certain point on, victims simply cannot take it anymore. The perpetrators notice this. Then they usually stop the torture. Since pain and confusion are so extreme at that moment, a kind of emptiness is created. If someone asks a question into this emptiness, one is unable to answer. For example, you do

not even know your own name anymore. In this state, triggers are set. One is then told, for example, who one is. You are addressed with a different name. For example: Anna. Or you are told that the color violet stands for silence, and that all men and women who wear violet know exactly who you are and what you do. And that if you talk, they will report everything so that you will be punished. You may also be taken to a purple room, and lies may be hammered into you there. These are repeated over and over and over again. So for the "ego-state" of a victim called Anna, the color violet (trigger) may indicate the following: "All people dressed in violet are watching me. That means I have to be silent." Thus, the action desired by the perpetrators follows. In such moments of strong dissociation and emptiness, other "ego-states" are also formed or take over some that already exist. So, at first, not at all the front person, who lives a life in the outside world, is addressed, but parts in the back, in the closed rooms of the inner world. The victim is conditioned until even the "ego

-state" of the outer life is silent as soon as he sees the color violet. However, the victim does not perceive this, but simply remains silent, since the underlying conditioning took place on an unconscious level.

When I was brought before a man, naked, freezing and wounded after a child hunt, he asked me who I was and what I should like to have. I was unable to answer. I did not know at that moment what had happened to me and could not place anything. I stared at this man and didn't say a word. I had been brought to a state of confusion. I was in a state where triggers could be set.

Then the man yelled at me, insulted me with words like: "You stupid cow, you are worth nothing! You don't even know who you are!!! And you cannot even tell me what you want! You are not normal! Once again, you don't realize what it's all about! Well, then I must tell you again who you are and what you want. You're a stupid, dim-witted, disgusting girl. You'll be lucky if I'm still around to help you! I'll also tell you what you want now, since you have no idea about anything! You will do what I tell you! I am the one whom you must obey. See how merciful I am! Because I'm going to make you two offers: you can lie here on the couch now, spread your legs and choose whether you're going to be rammed with my cock or with the knife. See? I still give you the choice, even though you're so stupid! And on top of

that, I forgive your stupidity and idiocy!!! I am being so kind to you! And you? You are wasting my precious time. I have to teach you things that everyone knows. You're not even able to say your name. Then I'll just say it: Lys!" I lay down on the couch. The perpetrators would say willingly. I was a stupid cow. A stupid Lys cow!! But better to be a stupid cow than nothing. Better to lie down on the couch and get rammed than not know where the ground is and whether one is human or animal.

In this empty space, the following triggers were set for me: "Lys" = This was then one of my most important cult names. It gave me identity. "Couch" = Lie down voluntarily! This showed me what to do and where to go.

So when I heard this combination of words from a perpetrator, I switched. I lay down somewhere, seemingly unsolicited, to be sexually abused and raped. But I compartmentalized this and didn't know anything or fractions of it after that. For example, if only one word of this combination was used, I entered a kind of trance state, but in which I still perceived everything. If then the second word of this combination did not follow, then I could come back from this state. Otherwise, what has been described above happened next. Since my parents had christened me Liliane, it could happen that such an utterance as: "Come, Liliane (Lily, Lys), let us sit on the couch" caused a change of the inner "ego-states". I was ready to work as a sex slave. An abuser could then take advantage of this. A non-perpetrator, of course, could not, because he knew nothing about it. If nothing followed, I soon recovered from this state.

13.1 Reward

I mentioned triggers, actions, and then rewards. There were also rewards. For example, if I did very well on the couch and satisfactorily completed that task, I got a reward. In these circles, among other things, one is rewarded with beautiful stones. They must be earned, however, and of course this involves lying and abuse. A typical case might look like this: The child is shown a beautiful stone, for example, a diamond. It is asked affectionately whether it would also like such a beautiful diamond, or whether it would also like to be as beautiful as this diamond. The child usually agrees. The trainer will praise the child for having such good taste

and promise to help it become such a beautiful diamond as well. The child is told that one must earn the right to receive such a diamond or to become such a diamond. The reward is held up in front of the child's nose. But endless hours of abuse and torture are the price. After that, the child actually gets a diamond, or a piece of jewelry with diamonds. This may then be worn on special occasions, to family reunions, to rituals, to sex orgies or other Satanic meetings. The child is then praised by the members for wearing this beautiful jewelry.

The amethyst is usually the first stone that a victim gets. It stands for silence, which ranks at the top. This means that the child has passed the first step of the difficult exam and has inner "ego

-states" that guarantee absolute silence.

13.2 Black and White Torture

Torture does not always happen externally. There is black torture, which leaves marks on the body. In this case, one is physically injured. And there is white torture. In this case, one is not physically injured. A child who has been locked in a cellar for three days, naked, without food and without water, will bear no noticeable marks of the mistreatment if it is given a bath, food, and new clothes. The following method of white torture was used by the perpetrators on me and other children:

I still remember a room in which there were some emergency hospital beds. We children were put in there. At the right rear side of the room there were some people, mostly dressed in white, standing behind a pane of glass. It was similar to the ward room in a hallway in a hospital. They could watch us. They gave us goggles of a sort to wear. These were fixed very tightly and could not slip. We ourselves were also strapped to the beds so that it was impossible for us to move. I remember strange pictures and strange colors from movies that were shown to us. But there was a different movie for each eye. I remember that I was unable to concentrate. I tried to fixate on the left or the right, but I couldn't. The goggles had been put on in such a way that it was also impossible to close my eyes. One had to watch. There was no alternative. This lasted hours or days; how long I can no longer say. It felt

like half an eternity until we were released from it. I remember very strong headaches and migraine attacks already as a small child.

Black torture is used less often on those children who are supposed to survive. There were marks and injuries, but most of the time I could either take care of myself or I concealed the bruises and wounds with clothes, or I pretended to be sick and stayed at home. Yes, I was often absent from school, and later also my apprenticeships or work.

14. Silence - the Greatest Commandment - the Most Powerful Weapon

Silence is the perpetrators' strongest weapon, and they use it on their victims purposefully and skillfully. So-called "silence rituals" are carried out time and again. And this is already done in early childhood, when the child begins to speak. This means that after a ritual, another ritual is performed to seal what has happened under oath. This includes methods such as being buried alive, almost being suffocated, almost being drowned, or witnessing what happens to a "traitor", being sacrificed, or burned or skinned alive. If such killings are then carried out, for example, still in a violet room, the silence of a victim is reinforced at the same time, because the already pre-installed color programming meets a new trauma.

In the one cemetery where I was always taken for rituals, I was buried with a body that was already half decomposed. That is, I had to lie down next to it. The coffin was closed, and, judging from the movements, I had to assume that they had buried us. I panicked; yes, I consisted only of panic, but I did not scream, because I already knew that I must not speak up and fight back. After half an eternity they brought me out again and took my oath of silence. They promised me that if I ever told anyone, I would end up like that corpse. I would decompose like that, and no one would ever think of me... I swore NEVER TO TALK!

In these silence rituals, during a torture session, in an almost empty state where the pain is enormous, one is asked if one swears to remain silent forever. It is said that if one agrees, the pain will stop. If not, a sibling or the mother will be killed, or the pain will never stop. A child will do

ANYTHING for the hope that the pain may stop, absolutely anything. It is fully manipulable. Once you have agreed to be silent as a child, you are shown what will happen if you do talk. You are told over and over again that you would be considered a weirdo if you told anyone anything like that, that you would either be called a liar or shut away in a mental institution, because no one believes such a thing, not even your own mother, not even your uncle or your piano teacher, and certainly not your best friend, let alone the priest or the nice neighbor. It is always repeated to you that everything is being watched, and if you do talk at some point, bad things will happen... you know.... a sudden car accident or cardiac arrest. Death is always present. It is also crystal clear that what happens within your own four walls, in your own family, in your own church, among your own friends, is nobody's business... isn't it? But of course, that is clear.

To ensure that a victim remains silent, control methods are introduced. A child takes part in a ritual. Afterwards, he or she is asked what he or she has seen or experienced. The child generally obeys and tells. Afterwards, it is massively tortured as punishment for having told. In this way, the perpetrators create a new "ego-state", in other words, an empty personality that can be written on again like a blank sheet. This new "ego-state" is then ordered to remain silent under threat of murder.

And so I kept silent for a long, long time. I went to therapy for several years because I had depression, but I never said a word about what I was experiencing or had experienced, never a word about the daily violence, humiliations, and how I was locked up. Zero, nothing. And then, when I had the one big shock experience - one too many from my point of view - I started to stutter. Then I could no longer talk anyway. Even speech therapy didn't help.

If perpetrators know about such a silent component, they do not necessarily always have to use physical torture later, when the victim is older, to activate or deactivate it. Even being picked up then does not always look spectacular. On the contrary. It can happen in broad daylight without the victim realizing that he or she has been picked up to be kept on track.

As an adult woman, years after separating from my first husband, I fell in love and remarried. The marriage broke up a few months later and the

bridesmen had broken off contact with me. This breaking off of contact was very traumatic for me, but I never talked to them about it. Why? I was silenced in a way that was quite natural from the outside, almost lovingly. After many months, I still dared to contact them, simply because I missed them very much as friends. They invited me to a meeting. The meeting took place on the premises of a church community. When I entered the room, apart from the couple, another woman was waiting for me. I knew this woman slightly. She belonged to their team, which they had founded to help prostitutes out of their misery. The former bride's attendant started the conversation with the following question: "What does freedom mean to you?" I hesitated at first, explaining that freedom for me means being inwardly at peace with myself and with God when I make a decision or when I do this and that (though today I define freedom differently). Afterwards he and his wife gave me a lecture: Freedom means: not to look back on what has happened, and also not to talk about it. They showed me a blank sheet of paper and said that the old had passed and the new was there. And the new blank sheet was there to be written on again. At the same time, they quoted several Bible verses. They explained to me that psychology and pastoral care were worthless and that only the Bible was the valid standard. Freedom did not mean talking about the past. Freedom meant writing something new on the blank page. They also explained to me that words have power and that negative things should not be spoken. By negative, they also meant not addressing past or present grievances. They said they themselves had decided to remove anything negative from their vocabulary and encouraged me to do the same. Saying negative things evoked negative feelings, and they wanted to avoid that. They then asked me if I understood and agreed. When I said yes, the man said that now that I saw it that way too, contact could be resumed.

I was quite upset after that meeting, but I did not let anyone notice my reaction. On the contrary, I still talked with them and the other woman about their work among women on the margins of society. But the message was clearly received: YOU WILL BE SILENT! I never spoke to them after that about the grievances in my second marriage and certainly not about the pain and that they had broken off contact. They didn't want me to, and

with this conversation they had ordered me to comply. They had addressed the silent personality in me and brought her back on track.

Successfully - at least for a while. For my part, I was only happy at that time to be allowed to have contact with my beloved friends again. That was enough for me. I accepted the silence for the sake of that.

Even then I realized that something was wrong with this conversation; however, I could not yet get to the heart of it because I was still under the influence of manipulation and mind control.

15. Christian Spiritual Abuse

Since certain groups of Satanists are spiritually oriented, much ritual abuse is also done on a spiritual basis. The religious Satanists hate everything that the God of the Bible loves. So their goal is to abuse everything that is somehow related to God. And the Bible tells us that God loves us human beings. For this reason, I believe, Satanists attack what God cares most about. Namely, human beings. They do this by perverting and manipulating. Many who worship Satan know the Bible very well and are excellent at quoting it. Thus, they often use Bible verses in their rituals to abuse. They take them out of context and pervert them.

"*The sacrifices of God* are *a broken spirit:...*" (Psalm 51:17a)

Permission to hurt people's minds and souls through torture.

"*For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink...* " (Romans 14:17a)

This justifies torture by deprivation of drink and food.

"*For none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself. For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord; whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's.* " (Romans 14:7-8)

This makes it clear to the victim that life belongs to Satan, their Lord, and that death honors him.

"*But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to* fulfil *the lusts* thereof." (Romans 13:14)

Normal human needs are called selfish desires in the realm of ritual abuse. These are forbidden and sealed with such a verse. Putting on the New Garment in Satanism has to do with silence and splitting the soul. In part, plays are performed in which Jesus is played. A Jesus who never listens, who doesn't care what happens, and who simply puts on a new robe after a sacrifice....

"*And unto him that smiteth thee on the* one *cheek offer also the other; …*" (Luke 6:29a)

Translated into the Satanic, it means: You MUST let yourself be abused. If someone wants sex from you and then someone else, you must comply. Otherwise, you are not pleasing to God.

"*Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? Till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto the, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.* " (Matthew 18:21-22)

This verse is used by tormentors very often! It means: Lie down, I'll beat you, and you must forgive me anyway!

I was beaten and maltreated very often by my trainer and tormentor. Sometimes I complained. But then he often applied this verse and told me that as a Christian I had to forgive him anyway, otherwise I would not be a good Christian. I wanted to be a good Christian. This verse was his carte blanche *to continue abusing me. Thus he could live out his sadism, since I had to forgive infinitely often. Seven times seventy times stands for eternally.*

There is hardly an end to the perversion of Biblical messages for purposes of spiritual abuse. Depending on the situation and the victim, Bible verses are misused to chastise, to beat, to abuse, to correct, to manipulate, to make someone realize how wrong he is, how wrong he feels, and that God does not love him like that, that he needs punishment, that his behavior is not pleasing to God and people, etc. The field is enormous.

It is very important to me at this point to explain why abuse and violence of this kind does indeed happen – I dare say: is even practised with fervour and enthusiasm - in Christian communities. It is not the sincere and honest

Christians who are to blame. The reason is, on the one hand, that churches and Christian communities are a favorite target of infiltration by Satanists, and on the other hand, that unfortunately there are certain Christians who are very religious and judgemental (in a negative sense). Religiousness and judgementalism serve the Satanists as a cover for their work. It is one of the great goals of the Illuminati to have power in the areas of religion and faith. Therefore, they send their well-trained people into Christian communities with the aim of destroying them. In doing so, they are very persistent, tenacious, and are experts in abuse under the pious guise of a church or community of Christians, even in free churches. I, myself, like to be with devout people, with Christians. But I know of well-trained abusers and Satanists who hide there and lead their double life. Christian communities and churches should, in my opinion, be very careful and check their people well. Not all that glitters is gold. Not all those who recite Bible verses by heart or are even active in pastoral care are convinced and honest, believing Christians. There are wolves among the sheep, wolves in sheep's clothing. They are to be unmasked!

16. Diseases and Other Signs

There were signs in my outer life that something was wrong. But it was very difficult to recognize. I was simply seen as a child who was somewhat weaker in health, and likewise later as an adult. I also said that about myself. It was a plausible explanation for me as to why I felt weak so often. I was often sick, missed school, or could not go to work. I was always the one who took the maximum number of sick days when I was training or studying. I was also always absent from work. Even as a small child and later as an adult, I suffered from severe migraines, so I often called in sick. When I had minor injuries, I did not show them, but rather took care of them myself. Most of the time I did not know in my external life where the injuries or the enormously large bruises came from. I thought I was just prone to them. When I could not wear underwear after a rape, I called in sick to my employer and stayed home. In this way I survived but did not realize for many years what the real reason for my poor health was. Even when I fell into severe depression, attempted suicide, needed

hospitalization, I did not realize what had really happened to me. As a young woman, I was hospitalized for unexplained severe pain that led to paralysis in my arms and legs. None of the many professionals who had observed, examined or treated me realized the real reason. I suffered from vaginismus for many years and overcame many fears that I could not place. Since the pain and anxiety were still there, I often did exposure training myself.[24] Yet, neither I nor any professional recognized that I was suffering from the effects of severe abuse. Also, as an adult woman, I suddenly could not speak clearly. I had everything checked out, but nothing was found. My speech therapist said she could not work with me as with other patients. This state of lisping and stuttering lasted for more than two and a half years. Only when - after the angel's visit to my room - I happened to meet a woman who had studied neurolinguistic psychology, did I realize the reason for my sudden speech disorders. She told me about people who can't talk because they stumble over the content of words and that therefore logopedic exercises wouldn't be of much use. It struck me then that this was exactly my problem. I could not pronounce words with positive and life-affirming content at all. My tongue simply would not move. It felt enormously heavy. Once I understood this, I was able to work on myself specifically, and the speech disorder was resolved over time.

What was also striking about me - and I hear this again and again from other sufferers - was that I hardly reacted to medication. In particular, sleeping pills or tranquilizers (benzodiazepines) hardly had the desired effect on me. Even with high doses of sedatives, I could still drive a car without my reaction being impaired. I observed the same thing after drinking alcohol. Even intravenously injected sleeping aids had no effect. Today I explain these reactions to myself in two different ways: First, my body was obviously used to drugs; second, I suspect that different "ego-states" had been involved, so that one of them took drugs and the other drove a car. The "ego

state" that was driving had no drugs in it. It is also a plausible explanation for me - besides the fact that God had a plan with me other than death - to have survived the suicide attempts with medication.

The symptoms are different for each and every affected person; there is no general symptomatology that can be established. Since I was perceived as a

strong woman, in spite of all these difficulties in my external life, no one noticed what was behind my facade, behind my everyday personality.

As a child in everyday life, I was quite inconspicuous. I was often shy, but I was still considered a cheerful and life-affirming girl. I was only afraid of some older children who bothered me and of the big dogs in the neighborhood. I also remember feeling extreme sadness, but I hid it.

Fortunately, I was able to read very well very quickly. I loved to read. The city library was a paradise for me. It was my world. Often, on Wednesday afternoons when school was not in session, I would ride my green bike into town and hole up in the library for a few hours. In my heart I sometimes felt a great, heavy pain that I couldn't place, and I would have wept for hours. But no one was allowed to see this pain. So I looked for books with very sad stories. I read the saddest passages over and over again and sometimes cried for a long time. All alone in my corner with the books I was allowed to cry. After all, the stories were so sad, and I cried because of them, not because of my pain. That was my truth. After a while the pain subsided, and I went home.

17. Consequences in External Life

As a victim, one often feels homeless. This inner cry to put down roots and find a home has always led me to roam. I have moved very often in my life. External circumstances forced me to move on, even though I had just arrived. So one is in a vicious circle, and the cult does everything to keep one in it. When I became ill and had severe depression, I could no longer work. I was an IV pensioner.[25] With such a pension, one can hardly pay for an apartment, let alone any extras. So one is financially dependent and bound to stay put. Traveling is not possible. This is very convenient for the cult, because they can access the victim at any time. I was lucky enough to overcome my depression and get back into the mainstream job market. However, I encountered great difficulties in doing so and was not able to take up as good a job as before, because I had been absent too long, because I could no longer do any further training, and because many things had changed in my industry. So I had to accept a part-time job with correspondingly lower earnings. I was still grateful, but I was also

sometimes frustrated because I had to work my way up again. People affected in this way are punished several times over. First, one becomes a victim of unbelievably heinous violence. As a result, some become ill and can no longer work. This leads to financial difficulties, which in turn render it impossible, or at least very difficult to break out of the vicious circle.

What is extraordinarily difficult is this: When one finally manages to break the silence, or part of it, and gradually musters the courage to talk about it, very often one are not believed. For me, sometimes it was almost worse than remembering the violence itself. It is incredibly difficult and can be highly retraumatizing.

As a result, one loses friends and even family members who do not want to believe it. So one is forced to make new social contacts, if one still has the strength to do so at all. Getting the right help is extraordinarily difficult.

I had been feeling better for some time, I no longer had depression and had the courage and strength to go to work again. I was already looking for work, but at that time I was still an IV pensioner. However, assessments were underway, and I knew that my pension would soon be cancelled. I therefore planned to work as a floater at a private Spitex[26], initially without a fixed contract.

One day - during that time - I went to a theme park. I went with a child on a simple track, where cars can ride quite comfortably one behind the other on a track. One can control the accelerator in these cars. Anyway, we had arrived at our destination, when the people in the car behind us just crashed into us. I guess they had hit the gas pedal. Many years before, I had suffered whiplash in a car accident. This blow triggered such a whiplash again.

This happened just days before my IV pension payments were stopped. So I could not start the new job. At first, I was confined to bed for several weeks and could hardly move. And instead of going to work, I had to register with the social welfare office.

Finally, after very many years I had managed to save a little. I decided to visit my dear friend in the USA and got myself a passport. But then came

the tax bill from the municipality. And it was about 6,000 francs higher than the one from the previous year, although I had not earned more. This meant a very large sum for me. A series of stupid and strange events had led to my mistakenly overlooking a deadline. Other mistakes were made by the local government. For example, they had sent a letter to a wrong e-mail address asking me to submit some more documents. This mail never reached me, of course, and I could not respond to it accordingly. I handed over my dossier to a tax consultant and asked for help. We even filed an objection with the cantonal office, but it was all to no avail. The municipality insisted on the amount, although the head of the tax office admitted to my tax advisor that in this way the federal government was receiving money that did not belong to it! Admittedly, I had also made a mistake, but I was obliged to pay everything! The following year things returned to normal, but I had to cancel my trip to the USA.

I cannot prove anything. But I know that such things are very typical of the cult. I was in financial need again, and I had no choice but to stay at home. So the cult still had access to me and could monitor me. Withholding funds, producing accidents, hurting people one cares about - these are all things they do to traumatize the outside personality and create dependencies. One has to stay at home. Under their control.

I had part of my pension fund paid out. I had another part paid into a vested benefits account[27]. But I did not receive any money for weeks, nor any confirmation, simply nothing. The money had simply disappeared. After several attempts, also on the part of my pension fund, it was finally transferred to me many weeks later, without an apology or even a word of explanation. I still don't know where it remained for so long.

Sure, things like that can happen every now and then. To err is human. But I became very suspicious at the time. So many coincidences in my life, as far as finances are concerned, are very strange. I was just happy when I finally got the money. However, it may have actually been a message to show me that the cult still had power over me, even over my finances.

I was on sick leave for a few months and received daily sickness benefits. Although I was in therapy with a physician, I had to present myself to a medical officer of the insurance company for an expert opinion. He had to

clarify whether my inability to work was justified or not. I told him about the ritual abuse. At that time many memories came up, and I was deeply shaken by them. It had taken me some time to regain some stability. However, I was well able to take care of myself and did not need any medication. The medical officer apparently saw things differently and wanted to have me treated or assessed as an inpatient because of alleged "delusions". Since I was in no way suffering from delusions and there was no reason for an inpatient stay, I refused to go. Moreover, I know that hospital stays are sometimes arranged by the cult in order to reprogram victims of ritual abuse. My physician at the time, an expert in this field who knows the structures of organized abuse, saw this the same way I did and therefore did not check me into a clinic. A dispute over diagnosis and therapy ensued between the doctors. Finally, the insurance company stopped its payments. The reason given was lack of cooperation, because I had not gone to the psychiatric clinic.

It is clear to me that an insurance company has to clarify whether an incapacity to work actually exists and what options are available, so that a policyholder can be reintegrated into the work process as quickly as possible. That is part of their job. In my case, however, it was very striking that the insurance company stuck to the referral to a psychiatric clinic based on the recommendation of their medical officer. It was also striking how my doctor's arguments were simply ignored and they were in no way willing to consider any other proposal. Even appeals to the CEO were of no use. They stuck to their opinion. I know myself, and I know very well whether I need help in a clinic or not. And I was also able to say at the time exactly what I needed. That would have been outpatient trauma therapy with a professional who knows about organized ritual abuse. And I had already started that. This would have been the quickest way to get me back to work. But this was not granted to me. Once again in my life, in addition to dealing with the trauma, I was struggling with finances. I no longer had an income and was financially on my own.

When I was feeling better after the years of depression and starting to think about work again, I contacted the disability insurance and applied for help to get back into work. I had an idea that cost very little money but would have allowed me to go back to my medical profession. At the same time, I

was given the opportunity by IV to enroll in an internal program to work with professionals to figure out how to move forward professionally. They gave me a deadline to enroll. But as soon as the deadline should pass, it would no longer be possible to enroll and the funds would be stopped. Since I already knew what I could do and had an application running, I declined and waited for the answer. In addition, I already had prospects for a job with the private Spitex, and they knew about my plan to train as a reentering nurse. I waited for the answer to my application, but it just did not come. And so it happened that finally the deadline for registering for the internal program also passed and my pension was stopped very quickly. Since I was no longer an IV pensioner, I could not reapply. This opportunity was lst. So my only option was to return to the medical field, which was very difficult after nine years of absence and no reintegration measures. Then there was the accident at the amusement park with the whiplash injury. It seemed to me as if my life train had passed me by, and I had simply not managed to board despite all my efforts.

All the events of my life that I have described in this chapter can point to organized structures of violence. I have experienced many more inconceivable things. Again and again, I tried to be successful. But despite all the good ideas that I also tried to implement, I often did not succeed. Either I had an accident, or my source of income was cut off, or by chance something else happened that prevented me from going my way as planned. I know by now that some of it was not coincidence, but planned. Other things I do not know exactly. It is also a fact that in these Mafia-like circles outsiders who want to help are put under pressure or even threatened. Threats are used often, and unfortunately, successfully. For example, lawyers are threatened when they want to represent a victim. Social workers and physicians are also put under pressure. It is not uncommon that they then refrain from helping out of fear. I had someone who wanted to help me from time to time, but then withdrew again for inexplicable reasons. Victims of organized ritual abuse can hardly take a step without the cult noticing. Everything is controlled. Everything is manipulated. Everything is organized.

18. The Long Way Out and Breaking the Silence

There is the so-called external exit and the internal exit.

The external exit is about no longer living in these settings built by the perpetrators. In my case, this involved changing my place of residence and leaving my job. I also had to withdraw from my family and friends. The few people with whom I remained in contact were carefully selected. And even there, there were changes as the exit progressed. I unsubscribed from all social media accounts. I was no longer to be found on the internet. No Facebook, nothing. For a long time, I did not talk to anyone on the phone and barely wrote any emails. Only in case of emergency. I went to a very remote place that no one knew about. There was hardly any public transportation. So practically no one could come unnoticed, but I also had few opportunities to get away. I chose this way because it was very important for me to distance myself from the perpetrators, but also from possibly unsafe persons. By unsafe persons, I mean people in my environment of whom I did not know exactly who they were in reality and whether they were leading a double life - just as I used to. I did not reveal my whereabouts to anyone, nor was I accessible. Because with a perfectly constructed set, there are always people who serve as informants. It may be that they know, but it may also be that they are used unsuspectingly. A mutual friend can be used to get information without consciously realizing it or wanting it. Perpetrators are always interested in knowing where one is, what one is doing, what one is saying, what one is feeling, how one is thinking, with whom one is in contact, etc. With this information, they can "keep the train on the track". I did not want any bystander to be put in danger, pressured or even threatened because of me. For this reason, I simply left without saying goodbye.

Some victims create a writ of protection. In it, all memories are written with places, deeds, names of the perpetrators and as many other details as possible. This writ is then deposited with notaries and lawyers. In case of further assaults, threats or death, this letter is sent directly to several agencies for prosecution. Experience shows that after that the assaults stop

or at least decrease about fifty percent. I myself have also created such writs of protection.

It is even more important to create the **inner exit.** For this, one must be aware of the dissociations that have taken place. The most important thing of all is to get to know oneself internally, with all one’s parts. Because, as long as perpetrators still have access to other "ego-states" and can trigger them unnoticed, pulling away and breaking off contact may not be of much use. It is known, for example, that reporter components are installed in victims that keep the cult up to date unnoticed (e.g., about the start and progress of therapies or the new place of residence). Retrieval by the perpetrators would then be easy and would pose a great danger, as then punitive measures would most likely be taken, or that torture programming would be renewed.

That is why both are necessary. That has also been my experience. I had already dealt with myself years before, because I noticed that something was not right. I had then taken small steps towards getting out, without actually noticing that I was already getting out. This helped me on the one hand, but also put me in danger. Because I had not noticed in which circles I was effectively stuck. Finally, these many small, inner mini-steps over the years helped me enormously to make the final inner exit. So all the preliminary work I had done was not lost. I had learned a lot in my training sessions and from my experience, and was able to apply it. When I understood how I could get in touch with my inner "ego-states", I was quite quickly able to make the final inner exit as well. Non-judgemental, encouraging people, including various professionals, accompanied me during the inner exit process. This whole process took almost thirty years.

Inner exit means recognizing and deprogramming the programs that have been programmed into one, much like reformatting a computer. The programmed inner "ego-states" can now be found and known. After that, it is imperative that they receive some kind of retraining. They have been lied to. They do not know what real life is. To put it casually, deprogramming means replacing the lie with truth.

When I was in the deprogramming and retraining phase, I encountered an "ego-state" that was thirteen years old. At that time as a thirteen-year old,

in a trauma situation, I was asked if I wanted to be a prostitute. I had to say yes, because I knew nothing else. This "ego-state" formed at that time had remained thirteen years old. Then, when I wanted to agree to the retraining of this "ego-state", I noticed a great sadness in me. I perceived depressive feelings and thoughts of "not wanting to live anymore" flashed through my mind. The thirteen-year-old in me knew only prostitution, nothing else. That was her life. Retraining was difficult, because she was afraid of losing her identity, her "raison d'être". So I talked to myself, explained to this other "ego-state", this thirteen-year-old in me, that the assertion that she was made only for prostitution was a lie. Moreover, she had long since ceased to be thirteen, but was an adult, and no longer needed to offer any sexual favors at all. It was over. This thirteen-year-old in me finally understood, and so the long overdue integration could take place.

This is how deprogramming and integration works. Once the thirteen-year-old was integrated and the triggers that evoked this "ego- state" were found, the perpetrators no longer had access to it.

Such inner work can take a very, very long time. However, my experience as a believer is that it goes much faster with God. Since I believe that Jesus Christ is still alive today, I went to these other "ego-states" with Jesus in my thoughts. Sometimes it was quick, and integration happened immediately. Sometimes I needed more time to process it all. During and after the inner exit one may learn to be independent. And above all, learn to trust oneself and one's inner self. To dare to say "yes" and to stick to it. To dare to say "no" and to stick to it.

The Bible says in Matthew 5: "*Let your yes be yes and your no be no. What goes beyond that is of evil...*"

I had to learn that first! I was allowed to learn that I am free to say "no" or "yes". I am free to have a different opinion! Free to feel what I like! And above all, I am even free to disappoint expectations!

Manipulation consists of telling the other person that he or she does not feel right, does not think right, behaves wrong, etc.... It is a form of control. I have been accustomed to manipulation all my life. Coming into freedom was, and still is, precious and wonderful to me.

The road was long before I had the courage to say to someone, "*Listen, I'm distancing myself from what you think about me. And how you think I should act. And I'm going to disappoint you, because I'm not going to do what you're suggesting*."

Rejection was the consequence; relationships fell apart. But today I am glad about it. Because that's how I recognized manipulation. And I have come step by step into a completely new freedom.

But then came the even greater work. I had to learn to stand by my "yes" or "no." I had to learn to take responsibility for my "yes" or "no". And the painful thing was: I had to learn to deal with the feeling and the reaction of the other person when my opinion was different. I had to learn to deal with rejection.

If you can't live with someone reacting negatively to your "no", then there is a great danger of being manipulated.

After the external and internal exit has been achieved, a stabilization phase is needed. That was also the case with me. I had withdrawn once again and was living in a shared apartment. The people there knew about my history. So I was able to have myself monitored over a period of time. I also had my cell phone and computer checked. Because victims are always monitored and threatened via telephone and computer. And sometimes - as already mentioned - they also report themselves unconsciously (in a different "ego-state") to the perpetrators, because they have been programmed that way. This was also the case with me for a long time. The stabilization phase was therefore very important. Getting out is good and important; healing is possible. But in order really to have the certainty that nothing more is happening and that there really is no longer an "ego-state" of which one is unaware, such a phase is, in my opinion, necessary. After a certain time, in which nothing more happened, I knew: I am out! I have made it with God's help!

The experience of some of those affected shows the following: Once the inner exit has been achieved and the perpetrators no longer have access to further "ego-states," they usually stop, because it could become too dangerous for them. If violence or pick-ups occurred after healing of the dissociation, victims could witness everything. This is a real danger for the

perpetrators. However, there is also a danger for those who leave to be killed, because they are no longer useful for the cult.

18.1 Difficulties with Reports to the Police

The perpetrators are masters in covering up and are organized with police, public prosecutors, and politicians at very high levels. If you want to file a complaint as a victim, you have to make a very difficult decision. First, you are opening a can of worms. But you do not know all the worms. Furthermore, they do not like it at all, so there is danger. Secondly, very often you are not believed at a police station. First of all, this is because many officers are unaware of this kind of crime and cannot even imagine such events. On the other hand, there are unfortunately also those black sheep who report alleged rapes and crimes that later turn out never to have taken place. For this reason, many police officers often no longer have an open ear for such statements. Third, organized ritual abuse does not exist as a criminal offense in this country.

A few years ago, I filed a complaint. I still remember how a police officer waved me off with the following words: "*Oh, you and your stories!*". This is a big problem. There are indeed so many "stories", most of them sounding so unbelievable that one - even the police - can hardly believe it nor wants to. It is long, complicated, incomplete. Since the perpetrators are professionals at work, there is almost always a lack of solid evidence. But the main problem, in my opinion, is that organized ritual abuse cannot be reported as such because there is no such offense in the criminal code. You can report rape, homicide, domestic violence and the like, but all of that is looked at separately. This does not help the people involved, and they may be put in great danger because they have to be punished as traitors according to the rules of the cult. Even the German BKA[28] says it does not track ritual abuse as a separate phenomenon.

Those affected suffer from the traumata and for this reason often have enormous difficulties in making coherent statements. Since almost everyone has some form of dissociative disorder, it is as if several different people were testifying instead of just one. This can lead - seen from the outside - to incomplete reports that are added to every now and then. If an inner child

testifies, he or she will most likely testify differently to a twenty-year-old, even if it is about the same thing. This then leads to a lack of understanding, and those affected are not infrequently simply classified as schizophrenic, and the case is closed. Many people do not know that schizophrenia has nothing to do with Dissociative Identity Disorder or Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder, and the people affected are thus done a great injustice. Because one does not know about ritual abuse or does not want to deal with it, delusions are suspected and perhaps even the admission to a psychiatric clinic is recommended.

In my opinion, the police and the judiciary should be able to follow clues and not just evidence. Above all, they should have enough psychologically trained staff who know about dissociation and how dissociative people might tell stories. If they were able to do this, many crimes could be uncovered and victims helped. Also, changes should definitely and urgently be made at the political level! The victims need help!

It was just before the Satanic holiday, when the festival is celebrated with sex orgies. I was called and assigned the job of serving as a guard that evening. The guests would have been able to register with me using the predetermined code, and I would then have to let them in. The orgy was to take place in the basement of a large villa in the middle of a small town in Germany. I knew this villa because I had been dragged there myself as a child.

What certain perpetrators probably had not noticed at the time was that the barrier of amnesia had already partially dissolved in my case, and therefore I could no longer always be accessed. So I had realized what was going on and went to the police accompanied by a psychological specialist. Together we wanted to explain to the police what was about to happen in their city and why I knew about it. Unfortunately, our plan failed. The police officer, who at first listened quite well, distrusted us as time went by; probably because it sounded so unlikely. She turned us away. But I had all the information and knew where and at what time this orgy was planned. I knew that children would be raped and abused there. And I even knew the names of people who might participate there. It was a huge misery. Of course, I did not do my job as a guard. For this reason, my life was in immediate danger. The perpetrators had thereby noticed that I was successfully getting

out. I had to leave my place of residence in a hurry and hide. I never returned to my former apartment.

The police already said I could call them at any time if I was threatened or followed, but that was of no use to me. The perpetrators threaten without evidence, or they simply eliminate people. Preferred methods of killing people are staged car accidents or inducing cardiac arrest.

18.2 Surveillance, Threats and Cover-ups

The cult also very often works with actors. Scenes are specially staged to manipulate, confuse and silence a victim again. They send people to threaten victims and show them, "*We are here. We always know where you are and what you are doing. You can't escape us. We have the power no matter what you do. Even the power of life and death.* "

The affected person is sometimes so harassed that they wonder whether they are normal or not. Helpers of the affected person are also threatened or even killed.

I had a lawyer on retainer. The victim assistance of my canton of residence did not want to cover costs that I had applied for, and this was illegal in my opinion. Along the way, I told her about the abuse on the part of my father and husband. I told her about the police investigations and the "strange things" that happened to me in my everyday life. She said, startled, that there was obviously much more to it than that. She offered to represent me in these matters and said that she would first find out about the status of the police investigations. I agreed verbally, as this conversation took place on the phone. I wanted to meet her later in person to discuss further steps. We never got around to it! She died shortly thereafter. I only know that her heart failed.

My dossier was assigned to another lawyer. I had no influence on this. This lawyer said he was very moved by my life story (I still do not know how he knew it.) and he wanted to help me for free. I considered it godsend at the time, until I realized that suddenly my ex-husband and his brother had obtained certain information about me that they could only have from this lawyer. I immediately terminated the retainer agreement with him. Then his wife, whom I had never seen in the office before, called me privately at

home. She was furious with me and found it impossible that I had terminated the retainer agreement with her husband. She wanted answers, but I did not give them. I did not understand her anger. On the contrary, I thought that he could now take on other clients in my place, through which he would earn money. Today I still do not know what really happened to my then- lawyer. I also cannot explain why the lawyer's wife called me in such an agitated state. I can only speculate without having any evidence. But I still ask myself the following questions today:

- Did my lawyer have to die because she took the first steps to help me, opening the can of worms of offenders?
- Could it be that the subsequent lawyer was a perpetrator? And that I put a spoke in his wheel by terminating his retainer agreement?
- In these circles, one is often punished if one cannot fulfill an order. Could his wife's anger be explained by the fact that she feared for her husband because he could not accomplish what he had been assigned to do with me?

I have no choice but to leave these questions unanswered.

When I filed a complaint and later also began to report my experience publicly, many very strange things happened. According to the cult rules, if I talk, I sin and must be threatened and punished. I and other people around me were threatened directly, but also in very unusual ways. These "strange threats" were so subtly orchestrated that usually only I, or perhaps the person I was with at the time, could perceive it. These threats were also so subtle that I could not press charges because the evidence was lacking and the "story" I should have brought to the police would have been extremely curious. Today I read and hear similar things from other victims.

It was nice warm weather and I put on my beige linen pants and a light pink t-shirt. My silver Fossil brand watch with the light pink dial matched it perfectly. Because I liked to be a little different from everyone else, I put my watch on my right wrist each time.

I had decided to go to a good restaurant with a nice garden terrace to have a coffee. After I ordered my drink, a couple came and sat right at the table in front of me. I saw them from behind. The woman was dressed exactly the same as I, wore the exact same watch, and was wearing it on her right hand

as I was! The man had dark, curly hair like my former partner. She was stroking his hair on the back of his neck, exactly the same way I had always done.

I was stunned and wondered how this could be - so much coincidence at once? The same clothes? The same watch?

I had a long phone call with a friend, told her that I should like to go back to school and re-train and all the places where I had already inquired. I mentioned the names of various schools and discussed the pros and cons of them with her.

A day or two later, I took a trip on the lake. Already at the harbor, a couple caught my attention because the woman was wearing an extravagant T-shirt with eye-catching writing. She kept coming near me so I should not miss her. Then, when I was on the ship, the couple sat down on the bench in front of me and started talking very loudly. It was impossible not to hear, on the contrary, I had to listen. After a while, I froze inside, because the two of them were reproducing the conversation I had had with my friend about the different schools – practically with the exact same words. It was as if they had listened to it and rehearsed it.

Again I was stunned! I wondered if I was psychotic. However, today I know that, as long as a person asks himself whether he is psychotic or not, he certainly is not. Someone who is really suffering from it does not notice it and does not ask himself this question, but claims to be haunted (for example, by little pink men and green carrots) without ever questioning it.

Perpetrators use this very fear of psychosis or other mental illness and stage such encounters to keep the victim on track, to keep them doubting whether they can trust their perceptions or gut feelings at all.

I was driving with my mother on a narrow side road of a small farming village, usually known only to locals. I know the area well because I grew up there. The landscape there is beautiful. View of lake, mountains and beautiful, lush, green meadows. We admired the landscape and talked about it in the car. A few days later I was sitting in the office of a therapist 220 km from this place. He told me how he loved to travel to that area with his wife. He especially liked the one village. He mentioned the name of the small farming village. Then he described to me the one small side road and how

he and his wife used to talk about the beautiful scenery. He used almost exactly the same words my mother and I had used a few days earlier. I was shocked and once again froze inside!

I was sitting in my living room when suddenly I heard a very loud noise. I got up to look. At that moment, a helicopter flew by right in front of my balcony. The door of the helicopter was open, and I saw a man with a big camera. Totally startled, I immediately asked myself: was he filming or photographing me in my apartment now?

All this happened during the time when two of my tormentors were on trial a few years ago. Later, when I started to talk about it publicly, the observations and persecutions became noticeable again.

I had a visit from a friend. She visited me in my apartment. I told her about my life and how I was once kidnapped in a parking lot by a man with an extremely long white beard and a big belly in a white Peugeot station wagon to be punished. A short time later I was out with an acquaintance. She still had to go shopping and I was waiting for her in my car in the parking lot in front of the store. Suddenly I noticed a man with an extremely long, white beard and a fat belly in a side parking lot. He stared at me without looking away once. He was standing next to a white Peugeot station wagon and did nothing but stare at me.

While putting on makeup in the bathroom, I told a friend what type of man I liked, including style of dress. A short time later, we attended a big party abroad. While I was standing at the buffet, a man pushed his way through cheekily, and spoke to me in Swiss dialect. He looked exactly like the kind of man I had been talking about with my girlfriend. Including the style of clothing.

It was really very strange how this man addressed me in my language. How did he know that I was Swiss? We were abroad, and I had not spoken to him in Swiss German.

In the context of a further training course, I had told about my experiences as a victim for the first time. A few days later, I was driving my car over a

bridge. I noticed behind me a black Mercedes bus that kept flashing its headlights. I wondered what that was all about. Then, when we stopped at a red light, there were two cars in front of me with the number 666, a Satanic number![29] And in the rearview mirror, I saw the following written on the front of the Mercedes bus: "CHECK-UP YOUR LIMITS." The bumper of the minibus was fully decorated with occult signs familiar to me.

It was clear to me at that moment this message was for me and it was a threat. This is exactly the subtle way they threaten victims. Suddenly one is accompanied on one's drive by a car with a very special identification number that indicates Satanism, or one are followed, filmed, photographed in the city while shopping or on an excursion. They do it in such a way that one can see it, but cannot furnish any proof. Friends of mine who stood by me were also threatened in this or other ways. For example, the same car drives by the house very slowly over and over again, and someone films or photographs it in such a way that it cannot be overlooked. Or friends and family members are called anonymously from home and abroad. Over and over again. I have experienced that as well. Or someone rings the doorbell under some nonsensical pretext and one actually realizes exactly what it is about: control, warning, threat. Or the same car keeps following one when one goes for a walk. Or the person standing in line at the back of the checkout line has bought exactly the same things. Likewise, it happened to me several times that I came home and my apartment door was ajar. Or my car was unlocked several times. Nothing was ever stolen or messed up. This showed that they had power and control over everything. I could list many more such examples. They also like to put dead animals, very often birds or cats, in front of the front door or on the hood of the car at night. You get pictures sent to your cell phone or computer that are a threat. For example, a picture of a person you are close to who is being tortured. These images flash only very briefly. After that, they disappear again immediately. But they are displayed over and over again and thus penetrate the subconscious. A screenshot cannot be made. Therefore, it cannot be proven. The message is clear: YOU WILL NEVER DISAPPEAR FOR US: IF YOU TALK, BLOOD WILL FLOW! YOU MUST BE SILENT! These examples are all situations that I have experienced myself.

I listened to music on the TV and cooked myself something nice in the kitchen. Shortly before, I and the person I lived with had noticed that the cable of the TV was no longer plugged into the same place. We were surprised, because neither of us had moved anything. And that is when I suddenly noticed this discordant music while I was cooking. I could hardly listen, it totally triggered me. It was as when I was a child in the torture chamber, when I was locked in a room for hours with very loud discordant music. It was as if several pieces of music were being played at the same time, with different keys and beats.

Disharmonic music is used as torture to confuse the mind.

I took out my hairbrush to comb my hair. I saw it had many long dark hairs on it. I myself had long blond hair, and I did not know anyone with this hair color and certainly no one with whom I would have shared my hairbrush. The person with whom I shared the apartment also had a different hair color, and neither of us had had any visitors; besides, nobody but us had an apartment key.

My roommate, who supported me, and I were warned very subtly on the street after I started talking about all this publicly as well. For several weeks, every time we left by car, we were accompanied by other cars. Cars with red and white warning- or breakdown signals. It was so conspicuous, because the cars always drove around us. It was clear to us that in this way we were being warned by the perpetrators. After a while they changed tactics, and it stopped.

I lived for a few weeks in a very small, remote village. There was no post office, no bakery, no other infrastructure. A few houses and the people there all knew each other. Nobody knew that I was staying there. I hid there for a few weeks. As a precaution, I lowered the blinds every evening at dusk, except for one evening when I was skyping for a short while. Then I suddenly heard a bang and saw a small fireball flying towards the balcony on the third floor. The balcony was made of wood and belonged to the attic

apartment in an apartment building. I jumped up because I was afraid the balcony might catch fire. Another roommate in that building also came running immediately. At that moment, we heard a car, which had apparently parked right in front of the house, drive away very quickly with screeching tires. Someone had tried to start a fire in the apartment or on the balcony, or at least to scare people with it. It could not have been a coincidence, because it took enormous skill to hit just this one balcony, which was well hidden under the roof. Apart from this one car, there was no one around. The village was quiet, as usual at this time of day.

It was winter when I came home late at night. I opened the door, entered the hallway, and noticed light in one of the downstairs rooms of my duplex apartment. I thought I had forgotten to turn off the light before I left. When I went to enter the room to turn off the light, three masked men were standing in front of me. I was shocked and immediately dissociated. After that I woke up again on the sofa of my living room with pains in different parts of my body, but especially abdominal pains. On my knee I had an immense haematoma.

Only after a few weeks did the memory of the incident gradually come back. The men had attacked me and beaten me up. It had probably been a punishment on the one hand, but it served mainly to trigger the birth of my daughter. I was at the beginning of my sixth month of pregnancy at the time, and the cult knew it. The men had kicked me hard in the abdomen. I do not know how these three men got into my apartment and can only speculate. Two or three days later, the pain triggered the birth. I gave birth in the basement of the apartment building. During this process, I was fixed with chains that were attached to the ceiling. Before that, the perpetrators had brought me or another "ego-state" under their control again after my contractions began. The child, a tiny little girl, was immediately taken away from me by a woman.

I went for a walk in the forest. As always, I was extremely careful when I was out and about. I parked my car in a public parking lot and chose a forest path where other people were also walking. Back at my car, I opened

my trunk, when a man from the car parked next to me suddenly came over to me, held a knife to my throat in a flash, and then just as quickly got back into his car and drove away.

Thus, victims and not infrequently their helpers are watched, persecuted, threatened, punished.

19. God or Cult?

As a woman of faith, I prayed to God incessantly. When I was in need, I asked God for money, housing, a job, new friends, friendly therapists, etc. Some of these things came true. At that time, my prayers consisted of requests for what I thought was right. My prayers have since changed much because I have a different understanding of them. When I look back today - with the knowledge of my life in the parallel world - I am convinced that many of them were not answers to prayers, but that Satanists, people from the cult, had fulfilled my wishes. In this way, I happily went my way in my life in the outside world, thinking that I had a good God who would take care of me. In this way, the perpetrators encouraged my Christian life, which I wanted to lead, and at the same time maintained my dissociation. I now know that the circles in which I prayed included perpetrators. At the time, I did not perceive that God actually did care for me, although He did so in a way that I was only to understand much later.

20. Inner Struggle and Doubt: Does God Really Help?

Why did God not help me? Why did He allow this to happen? Why did He not protect me? Why did He just watch and do nothing? Is He really a loving God? How can a loving God allow something like this to happen? The Bible says He sends his angels to protect us. Does that not apply to me? Why? What did I do that I did not receive God's protection?

Such questions have troubled me for a long time. I do not want to discuss Biblical theories on this. But I have found answers for myself. I had to and

wanted to rewrite my faith in God, to rediscover it. With Jesus Christ. With the Holy Spirit. Then I experienced that God is indeed love.

God is just. God is not fair. I have learned this difference. I prefer to turn to a just God than to a God manipulated according to my ideas of fairness. He loves us humans unconditionally. Freedom belongs to this love. Without freedom there is no love. God loves my tormentor just as He loves me. He gives us free choice over our actions. This means that the tormentor also has his freedom: even the freedom to do evil. I, too, have this freedom. I know that this answer sounds like a cheap excuse, a pious excuse, and I could hardly accept this answer during my great suffering, because I did not understand it. I thought it was so unfair! Hearing that God is just and does not make mistakes did not do anything for me. But still, it is the truth. I was able to approach this truth very slowly, step by step, and in my personal relationship with God, I slowly realized how this very truth, which I could not understand or accept for a long time – which I even considered a cheap excuse - began to heal my wounds. And not just superficially. The truth of God and His love heals deep into the roots.

His nature and love should not be measured by the behavior of fellow human beings. It has nothing to do with that. My relationship with God is an intimate relationship, no matter how other people behave. That is my secret.

Back to the topic: I am convinced that God distinguishes between the perpetrator and the deeds. He loves the perpetrator - but not the deeds. We all have to bear the consequences of our decisions and deeds. My tormentors, as well as I. Often I have not seen that the perpetrators must bear the consequences of their own deeds. But I am gradually coming to see certain things. I can leave that to God today. I am not the one who has to pass judgement. Thank God. I personally believe that right now we are living in the time of grace, not punishment. Because God's focus is on what Jesus, His Son, did for us human beings, which is to take all punishment upon Himself. I believe that we are all in a time of grace, perpetrators and victims.

This does not mean that one should sit back and do nothing. I am clearly of the opinion that such abuse should be reported, and perpetrators should bear

the consequences of their decisions! These people are an immense danger to the whole of society and especially to our children! The perpetrators should be held accountable. Absolutely! As a person with my limited vision and incomplete knowledge, I often do not see if justice is being done. On the contrary. Rather I see how these evil people succeed. Nevertheless, I know: God is just. God will bring everything to light! I am sure of that! So I can confidently do what is in my power and leave everything else to God. He will judge it in His time with His justice.

I have experienced God as a God who sets limits. And if He sets limits, then there are no two ways about it, not even for Satanists and Illuminati. The word of God is valid. And by the word of God, I actually mean a word. I have experienced God as a protecting God, despite everything that has happened. He has protected my life. He guided it in such a way that I escaped, quite contrary to the Satanic cult's plan. The whole thing has led me closer to the heart of God, which I shall never regret. This is the greatest gift for me.

I have suffered greatly from the consequences. And others in my environment, because I was a victim, also suffered because of me and certain behaviors. Even today I still notice from time to time that this or that as well as physical pain still have to do with it. But I believe that there is a reality and a truth. It is not the same, there are worlds in between. The truth is that I am healed because the Word of God in the Bible tells us so, even if reality sometimes shows something else. It is important for me to endure this tension and to convince my heart of the truth until the healing also occurs in all areas of my life in the visible. This is my realization and conviction, and this is how I live it. Truth is above reality.

With these lines I do not want to offend anyone who is suffering. I know what it means to suffer and to see no way out. This is about my experience, my thoughts, my faith. I do not want to impose anything on anyone. For me, this was an extremely long process. From the day I realized that there was something wrong with me to the day I am writing these lines, about thirty years have passed. These years were marked by question marks, tears, pain, defeat, hopelessness, but also again by joy, realizations, and victories. After every defeat, I eventually got the strength to get up again. Again and again, I was able to make the decision to go on, even after the suicide

attempts. I think that is when I experienced the power of God, which is mighty in the weak. I probably should never have been able to do this on my own nor to continue on my journey. I am proud and deeply grateful for what God has already done in my life and look forward to what is to come! I used to be dependent on cult people, but today I am dependent on God. And that is my hope.

21. The Truth of the Bible

In spiritual abuse, Bible verses are very often misused. Here I should like to share a few Bible verses and passages that gave me faith that God is just, takes care of everything, and that I can let go. He sees everything! Nothing escapes Him. I wish this may serve as encouragement when one has been wronged or forced to wrong others. I personally accept it as truth.

For mine eyes are *upon all their ways; they are not hid from my face, neither is their iniquity hid from mine eyes.* (Jeremiah 16:17)

Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the Lord. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the Lord. (Jeremiah 23:24)

Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence? […] If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. Yea, the darkness hideth not from thee; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are *both alike* to thee. (Psalm 139:7, 11-12)

He discovereth deep things out of darkness, and bringeth out to light the shadow of death. (Job 12:22*)*

He revealeth the deep and secret things: he knoweth what is *in the darkness, and the light dwelleth with him.* (Daniel 2:22)

22 Forgiveness? Forgiveness!

"Yes, I forgive."

That is my answer when I am asked about forgiveness. In it, over the years, I have found a key to inner healing. Forgiveness is a decision that I made at some point. Feelings of powerlessness and despair did not just all disappear immediately. Nor did feelings of anger and sadness. But through that decision, it was as if I had opened a prison door from inside. Instead of keeping justified resentment, anger, or hatred to myself, I allow all those feelings to leave me. They do not have to stay with me and eat away and destroy my heart or have more power and influence in my life. By making this decision, I have been able to take care of myself first and foremost. It is so to speak a selfish step at first. The negative feelings slowly give way and thus can no longer eat me from the inside. Bitterness has no more place because bitter roots destroy me. My father can no longer do anything to me today but if I were to carry around anger and resentment inside me for years to come, I would still be giving him and his deeds power over my life today. I do not want that. I forgive, so that I myself can become free. The Bible instructs us to forgive. Out of love. Out of love for ourselves and for our fellow men. That is God's care for us. The Bible also tells us to forgive our tormentors. Out of love. Why? Because it sets us free, as well as them. Sets them free? Yes, that's right... Sets them free too. Forgiveness means cutting the ungodly umbilical cord with which I was bound to the perpetrators. I decided to take the scissors in my hand and cut it. Thus, the umbilical cord has lost its purpose.

That, too, is a process. It is not as though I was able to forgive everything all of a sudden and then everything was good. I still remember how an offender once told me that I had to forgive. I replied that he could forget about it and that I had no desire to do so. And I also thought that I might never manage to forgive. That I would rather still walk around with the resentment inside me than forgive him for something like that. Until I realized that this resentment was destroying me more than him. But, most of all, I realized that the power of forgiveness is already in me, and I don't even have to look for it. I believe that through Jesus, who is alive and lives

in me, this power is already in me. It was just a matter of me deciding whether to accept it or not. I accepted it. Then I called my tormentor and explained to him that I had decided to forgive after all. And I forgave him everything that was, everything I knew about, and also everything I did not know about. Phew! Wow!!!! At that time, I did not know what I was setting off. The perpetrator was unable to say anything more and was very quiet for a while. After that call, I gradually noticed many insanely bad things he had done behind my back. Things like child abuse, child pornography, embezzlement, fraud, etc. I had to take the necessary steps to get away from this person and reported my observations to the police. But I always had to remember how I told him that I wanted to forgive him for everything. This helped me personally to work through these very shocking experiences. Because of my decision to forgive, my heart was saved from feelings of revenge, hatred and excessive anger that would have harmed me.

Forgiveness, however, must never be imposed under any circumstances! Never must a pastor, counselor or therapist force forgiveness on a victim! This is a personal process. And it takes as long as it needs to. Feelings like resentment, anger, and even hatred have their rightful place, and to repress them is unhealthy! Feelings are our guideposts! But they should not determine our lives. Our actions should not be the result of anger or hatred. Feelings should serve us. Not the other way around. To have feelings is not allowed in the cult. Therefore, when feelings finally show up, one may be flooded with them. If forgiveness is imposed in that overwhelming moment, it is like sending the victim back into the cage of silence. Forgiveness is one's own personal decision, and what must be understood first is this: God is love! And love is long-suffering and patient. It bears all things and hopes all things.

23. Repentance

As a victim who was turned into a perpetrator, I inevitably encountered the question of whether I had to repent for what I had done.[30] I know that the question of guilt is a very stressful question for those affected. I had to struggle with it myself. I cannot offer anyone a ready-made solution here,

but I can share my experience and my belief. I want to express my opinion knowing that there are other opinions.

This was a hard question for me.

While working through the memories as an adult woman, I stood by that cemetery where I had to murder little Benjamin, when grief, anger, and shame overtook me at the same time. I was so sad about what had happened. I was so sad about his death. But I also felt shame, shame about what I had done, about what I had been forced to do. I felt shame in that moment that I had not had the strength and understanding to say no and refuse. I was ashamed that I could go on living, but that he had to die, and die at my hands. At the same time, I was also enormously angry at those unscrupulous people who had forced me to do this.

At such moments, the question arose in me: Do I now have to apologize for this? If so, to whom? And if so, what exactly should I apologize for? For being abused in order to kill?

I talked about it with a few people. Some said that I should repent before God. Or rather, the "ego-state " that had done this should repent, the "state" that had believed the lie that "killing is necessary". Others thought I should repent before God because I had participated in rituals and thus had given glory to Satan and not to God. Still others were completely of the opposite opinion. I noticed how much one can argue theologically on this subject. From time to time, I was even condemned by someone for the "ego-state " that had become perpetrators. Possibly those counselors were bewildered and unsettled. I was, too, for a long time. But there were also those who sympathized with me, accepted and encouraged me.

At first, I felt as if certain people expected me to confess to a priest about sex before marriage, even though I had been raped. That was definitely going too far for me. That felt completely wrong to me.

However, I know of others who have gone through a completely different internal struggle. I find it infinitely important that everyone finds his own way to deal with it. No one must impose his opinion on others! One thing, however, is in my opinion necessary, even inevitable. Such inner conflicts must be resolved in order for complete healing to take place. The ambivalence is enormous in the beginning. And that is normal. And it is

normal that such a process takes time. Every process, every inner conflict, looks different. A victim who has been made a perpetrator should not be forced to repent, because any coercion can be fatal and retraumatizing, as in the case of forgiveness. Victims should be allowed to say for themselves what is right for them, and they must be given the necessary time to go through this process, to find answers for themselves. Cult-exit counselors or therapists are there to provide guidance and support, not to give orders, and certainly not to condemn.

I finally found inner peace with "having to be a perpetrator". Various conflict resolutions contributed to this, sometimes even in the context of professional support. I also knew of someone in the cult who had been the victim of sexual abuse by me. I was able to talk to this person later about all this. Finally, she understood me and all the extreme circumstances at that time. Today I also understand the victim-perpetrators, including older children, who abused me at that time. The consequences of abuse and violence do not disappear in a victim just because you understand what abusers may have gone through, but it makes the healing process easier.

Afterwards, but also during this process, I talked to God about it. I was then able to experience and feel His infinite love for me. I prayed and shared the pain with Him. This pain was great. It is the worst thing for me that I had to become a perpetrator. Although God had seen and experienced everything, although nothing of me was hidden from Him, I told Him everything. I told Him how I was sad, but also angry, and I told Him my feelings and thoughts about the subject of repentance. I told Him how immensely sorry I was for all that had happened. I cried and pleaded for hours, even whole days and nights. In the process, I realized that He was even sadder and more angry than I was about everything that had happened. I talked to my Father in heaven from heart to heart. Not for a single second did I feel condemned by Him. On the contrary, I felt accepted and understood as a child by a loving and good Father.

Then I thanked Him. Thanked Him because He knows me with all my heart, listens to me and is there for me, thanked Him because He understood my inner conflict, and thanked Him because He has never condemned me, thanked Him because nothing can separate me from His love for me, thanked Him that He loves me infinitely, thanked Him because He has

preserved my life, thanked Him because His plans and His thoughts about me are so infinitely greater and more wonderful than I can comprehend. After that, a supernatural peace came into my heart.

Peace of heart does not undo what has happened. Grievous wrong was done, also through my own hands, even though being guided by third parties. But I am not the one who must bear the guilt. I believe and know that Jesus Christ, the Son of God, took all the guilt on Himself about 2,000 years ago when He died on the cross and then rose again. He also bore my sins, no matter which one, no matter how it happened.

24. How to Help?

As an outsider, you are not completely incapable of action when you see a child or an adult person suffering! The first step is to ask yourself if you really believe that there is organized Satanic ritual abuse. Many cannot and will not believe such a thing. Probably it has to do with the fact that we live in a traumatized society. Traumata are pushed aside and not looked at. It is a survival strategy. This is, I believe, one reason why it is often overlooked.

Another reason is simply ignorance. And then convenience and selfishness certainly also play a role. However, the subject of ritual abuse is so cruel that it can seem unbelievable. Because it is indeed worse than anything you can imagine worse than any horror movie. For this reason, many people find such things hard to believe. One would rather not believe it.

24.1 Observe

There is a whole range of symptoms behind which ritual abuse may possibly lie. Especially when several of these symptoms manifest simultaneously, one should at least consider the possibility of ritual abuse. The following list is not exhaustive, it is based on my own experience as well as what I have observed in others who have been affected:

- Soreness in the intimate area or on the thighs, even in slim people
- Recurrent cases of chapped lips and cracked corners of the mouth
- Haematomata, especially on the thighs, in the genital area, knees, crook of arms, head

Abrasions, especially on the knees, in the genital area, on the breasts
Pain in the hands
Pain in the wrists and ankles
Pain in the heels
Frequent nosebleeds (consequence of electric shocks)
Frequent headaches, severe migraine
Frequent dizziness
Fatigue for no apparent reason
Earache (consequence of electric shocks)
Bad teeth (consequence of electric shocks)
Severe nausea without being able to vomit (vomiting = weakness. Weakness is not allowed.)
Sleepiness with a coincidental unwillingness to admit it; not wanting to go to bed (tiredness = weakness).
Frequent absent-mindedness
Hyperventilation for no apparent reason
Role-playing with other children or dolls, which may indicate violence
Drawings that indicate violence
Avoiding conflicts with adults or older children
Torturing smaller children or animals
Being sexually open at a very young age or being totally repressed
Being hungry without eating. Being thirsty but not drinking (Needs are not allowed.).
Excessive eating
Aggression
Anxiety about which one is unwilling to talk
Fear of making mistakes
Panic before exams or tests
Fear of water, swimming lessons
Loner or only a few playmates
Unusually early or unusually late menstruation in girls
Refusal ever to wear provocative clothing, or just the opposite: always wearing provocative clothing
Excessive emphasis on cleanliness and personal hygiene, no dirty clothes, or, on the contrary: quite neglected
Urge toward perfectionism

Not being able to talk as a child or adult
Fear of the night
Sleep disorders
Bedwetting
Asthma, shortness of breath, blue tinge
Self-harming behavior
Inexplicable paralysis, even unto an inability to walk
Addictive behavior
Eating disorders
Depression
Recurrent great sadness
Speech impediments, stuttering, speechlessness
Becoming frozen with fear
Overreaction to certain encounters (physician's visit, dentist, police, masked people).
Avoiding black clothes or just the opposite: always wearing only black
Trauma freeze with red, white or black candles, with certain scents, like incense, or with certain music
Panic when Christian rituals with cross, baptism, communion, singing, laying on of hands, etc. are performed.

One might expect that a troubled child with many social problems and problems at school would exhibit these symptoms. That may be, but in many cases it is not true. Victims of ritual abuse can be found everywhere. There are some who are professionals, others who have had learnt a trade. But there are also some who live in a psychiatric hospital or in assisted living. The child is usually expected to perform well in school and to be completely inconspicuous despite all the brutality. For this reason, the situation must be carefully scrutinized.

However, many of the points mentioned can also be found in people who do not experience ritual abuse. There are children who "only" experience sexual abuse or domestic violence. This is also cruel and can cause such symptoms!

Other indications that someone is regularly picked up and abused by the cult may include the following:

Dirty shoes in the morning that were still clean in the evening
Unexplained traces of blood on an article of clothing or on the body
Minutes, hours or even days are missing from a person's daily life
Memories are missing
People claim to know the victim without the victim remembering it
Absences on certain days, especially holidays
Often being sick on a Monday
Repeated sudden departure after a phone call, text message or email
Professionally dressed wounds without the need to see a physician
Medications, especially sleeping pills, sedatives and painkillers do not work
Children are overprotected
A person is inexplicably or seemingly absent for 2-3 days, but comes back. This repeats itself again and again.
Wearing coded clothing
Wearing certain colors (e.g. dyed hair with rainbow colors).

24.2 Relationships

A child is kept away from "normal" people as much as possible. The closer relationships are mostly arranged and take place in the cult, or they are tolerated under strict control, often forbidden. First and foremost, I recommend establishing as normal a relationship as possible. This gives stability to the victim, whether child or adult. This enables the person concerned to make comparisons later and perhaps to notice that things are not the same elsewhere as they are in his or her own family circle.

Every healthy contact is important. Even if the child cannot be helped immediately, it is for the good of its inner stability. When I look back on my life, I am grateful for every somewhat normal relationship I have had, because I have learned from them, and these experiences have helped me at a later point in time to come to terms with the traumata. Not all people were perpetrators. After all, I also had relationships in my life that were quite normal.

Take care! Perpetrators do not like it when someone interferes. People can get into danger if they obviously seek contact with victims.

If possible, professionals who have a good knowledge of ritual abuse should be involved, or you can turn to a victim support center or a working group for ritual abuse. But be very careful whom you choose! Among the professionals, unfortunately, there are also many perpetrators, just as among the police. The great misfortune is that just as many perpetrators work as home directors of children's institutions, found an association for disadvantaged people, or are particularly committed to abused children. Such people should be scrutinized quite thoroughly and their motivation examined very closely. Not all that glitters is gold.

PLEASE do NOT turn primarily to the parents or close caregivers, such as teachers, educators, aunts, grandparents. If the child is indeed a victim of organized violence, it can be assumed in the vast majority of cases that many caregivers also belong to the circle of perpetrators, knowingly or unknowingly. They would only endanger the child even more. First, observe the child's environment very closely before deciding whom to consult.

Do not question the victim directly! Remember that a victim must report everything and faces extremely high penalties if he or she should reveal anything.

Never judge! As perverse as it may sound, there is a relationship between the victim and the perpetrators in which love is also lived. This is indeed a perverse relationship, but it exists. If you act too quickly there, you may achieve exactly the opposite of the intended effect. Just listen. Try to be as balanced as possible, no matter how a child or a person involved behaves.

In my mid-twenties, I sought sex therapy because I noticed that something was wrong with me. I realized very quickly that my therapist suspected my father of abusing me. I asked her if she agreed with my perception, and she answered in the affirmative. I then dropped out of therapy. At that time, I said that I could imagine practically any man in the world as an abuser, but certainly not my father! No, he would never do such a thing. He was not interested in sex! Then I added a few more examples to emphasize my point, which certainly confirmed her view even more. Of course, she was right, but it was too early at that time to confront me with it.

Meet the child or adult at the level he or she is on. Victims need to know that they are being served, not dominated! Do not exercise power, even if you think you are in the right!

Before you decide to help, think carefully about what you can offer and where your limits are. Much is demanded of someone who wants to help; excessive demands on the part of a helper with a subsequent break-off of contact can be very fatal and traumatizing for a victim. It is best if a helper network can be created.

Be prepared for a long support period. Victims of ritual abuse have suffered extremely severe traumata. Their identity has been attacked, diminished, and severely damaged. They often do not know who they are. They have to learn how to live.

But the most important thing is: If the child or the person talks about their experience, please trust them! And be prepared to be open-minded about topics that - because they are so incomprehensible - can trigger unexpected emotions.

It is highly traumatizing when a victim finally gets up the courage to talk and then encounters someone who doesn't believe them. Tell the child or adult that you believe them. Show that you trust them, even if it sounds unbelievable - because it is! Thus, it is important to listen and believe. Collect the memories like small pieces of a puzzle. If you do that, in time (It may take years.) the whole picture will emerge.

One assertion of ritual abuse deniers is that we victims only want to attract attention. It may well be that we have experienced something bad, but there is no such thing as organized violence or ritual sacrifice. This is a lie and cannot be proven, they say.

If we victims really only craved attention, why should we seek it with the topic of ritual abuse of all things? In doing so, one encounters many opponents and enemies who want to make one's life difficult. It is even dangerous, and one can be threatened, even killed. One is branded a nutcase or a lunatic. One loses friends and acquaintances. If I really only suffered from a need for attention and wanted to fill this need with lies, then I would definitely choose another topic. Victims need to be heard and to be

believed. Whoever gives the bonus of trust to the victim helps to bring these crimes to light.

Two small but very helpful touchstones are as follows:

- A person affected often does not dare to tell what they have experienced because it is so incomprehensible and they know that they may not be understood. Often they apologize to the other person when she tells about it because it is so shocking. This is a characteristic. Liars do not normally apologize.
- Victims usually hope for quite a long time that they are mistaken when a memory arises. Not infrequently, they first look for counter-evidence instead of evidence for the memory.

24.3 Examining Real and "False" Memories

Believing a person is enormously important. But how can one know whether the truth is really being told? As a victim of ritual abuse and MK-Ultra, one is initially so overwhelmed by the memories because everything is so incomprehensible, almost impossible to believe. So it is hard for one to accept what one remembers. At least that is how it was for me. That is why it was important for me to check what was possible.

Deniers of ritual abuse often talk about false memories. The term as such is illogical to me. Memories are memories. If they were false, they would not be memories, but inner images of which one is not sure whether one experienced it or not. Or it would concern an event, which one is convinced that one has experienced, but which did not happen in reality.

Perpetrators also confuse a victim by intentionally creating strange memories or pretending to be real. Very often actors are used to confuse a victimized person. I have memories of a strange creature: A kind of red dragon with crocodile-like skin always put a plate of bland soup or water with stale bread in the cellar where I was locked up.

What might have happened there? It may be that actors dressed up as a dragon or reptile and fed me, the traumatized, freshly tortured child - and later also as an adult. In these circles, victims are very often given drugs. It may therefore also be that I experienced a drug trip with distorted

perception, which the perpetrators exploited. In any case, I cannot say conclusively what exactly happened at that time. But I know that I experienced it. I just do not know how the perpetrators managed it.

Other victims report having seen UFOs. I myself have not experienced anything like that, but I do would not question the statements of other survivors at all for the very same reason mentioned above. The perpetrators use all possible means to deceive and confuse. They certainly do not shy away from suggesting to victims that they have been picked up by extraterrestrials and UFOs.

What happens to a child, a victim, who tells that they fed by a dragon or abducted by some Martians in a UFO? It is very likely that they will not be taken seriously. They will be told that they had nightmares, or perhaps even be labeled mentally ill. This serves the perpetrators, and they can continue undisturbed with their acting, drug trips and invoking spirits.

As a devout Christian woman and as a survivor of ritual abuse and mind control, I know that there is not only our earth as a dimension. The Illuminati and Satanists, who had me in their power, invoked spirits and demons. I definitely believe in the possibility that demonic powers might create such dragons and strange, unearthly looking beings to manipulate, exert power, instill fear. However, I personally do not believe that extraterrestrial beings actually exist. I believe in what the Bible says, that God created the heavens and the earth. I believe that Satan is a fallen angel and can torment, manipulate, and lie to people with his demons. Satan, his demons, his worshippers, and followers do have some power, but the Bible declares that Jesus has all the authority over heaven and earth. There is, in my opinion, a huge difference between having only some power and having all the authority.

Now back to checking the memories:

A traumatic memory stored in trauma memory is like a frozen image or movie. The moment it comes up through a trigger, flashback or otherwise, you can examine it closely. Details are recognizable. It feels like a fresh memory. But the photo or film may not be complete at first. Perhaps there are other photos or parts of the film stored in the trauma memory. Since it was not stored chronologically, but was simply "thrown" into the trauma

memory on the occasion of the trauma, the impression of chaos and incompleteness may arise at first. In my opinion, there is then a danger of embellishing memories to make them seem coherent and complete.[31] This type of editing is not a memory, of course, but an attempt to put events into an understandable and coherent context. It is important here to recognize the difference between memories and hypotheses.

For example, I distinctly remember being at Amerois Castle in Belgium. But how I got there I am unfortunately unable to say with certainty, even though I wish to. I know that I was sometimes driven there in a police car for certain rituals, but I am not sure whether I was also driven to Belgium or only to other places in Switzerland. With all the knowledge about my life story and about the machinations of the perpetrators, I can very well imagine how I got there. But this is only a hypothesis, and not a memory.

For a victim, it can be a great support simply to accept the memories that come up in the first place, whether they make sense or not, whether parts are missing or not. If they are accompanied by another person in this process, they can be supported in this way. Personally, I first went through many things alone with God. I imagined it as if I were depositing the memories on a shelf. The memories stayed on the shelf until another memory came along that made sense with that specific memory, or until I could check certain details. Only later did I discuss what I had uncovered, first with close friends, and then with the help of trauma specialists.

In my experience, it is possible to distinguish between memories and hypotheses. However, it is difficult at first to accept certain memories as truth. A person affected often doubts the experience himself at first, because it is so unbelievable and inconceivably evil and beyond everything normal. Therefore, it may be advisable to put it aside at first, until further touchstones are added.

How and what can be checked? Checking can mainly concern details.

I suddenly had an inner image in which I saw myself locked in a cage in a cellar. I painted the shape of the cellar. The shape was special, but I saw gaps through which light came in. I also drew these. At first, I did not know exactly what to do with them. Later, other memories came. One was that - seen from my cage - there were men coming into the basement on to the

right in front. So I thought there must be a door there. Some time later, I remembered going down two or three flights of stairs to get to that basement and how I used to give medical care to children there when I was a teenager. At some point I remembered hearing voices in the basement, namely, the voices of people singing. Then I assumed it must have been a chapel. When I finally remembered the name of the village where it all happened, I went there and looked for that chapel. I had no memory of ever consciously being in that remote village. However, when I actually found a chapel in the village and saw that the cellar I had drawn before actually corresponded to the particular shape of the chapel and that there was actually a side door on the right and that there were actually some steps leading down, I knew: My memories were right!

I also consciously looked for details in the memory. It was as if I had looked at the memory like a photograph or a film in which I had played a leading role. And I took a close look at that.

I saw myself lying in a coffin with a dead person. I saw myself performing sexual acts, naked and covered in blood. I guess I was about seven years old. When I had this memory, I couldn't believe it at first. I was really shocked. I wanted to know if it was really true. That's when I started looking for details in my memory. I then noticed that I had noticed a small wall to the left of the grave. And there was also a church tower in the distance, but seen very dimly because it was in twilight, but that is what I saw in my mind's eye. When the name of the location of this cemetery came up in my memory, I searched for it on Google Earth and was surprised to discover a remote cemetery there. However, I could recognize neither graves nor a wall on the internet. I drove there, and there is indeed a grave from 1978 (when I was about seven years old). To the left of it is this little wall. When I saw the gravestone without a name, erected by my neighbor with the gravestone company, with a saying about love, I found this very strange, and it confirmed my impression of having experienced the cruel deed here in this grave. Such sayings and poems about love are still written today by the cult leader René and can be found on the internet. In addition, a tower - not belonging to a church, but the tower of an estate that looks much like a church tower can be seen in the distance. From these details,

which I encountered in the same way on site, I knew that my memories were correct.

Some memories of the premises of the Amerois Castle are very vague. But I pursued one detail in my memories. I remember how we children were brought into the castle through a side door. There was a pillar to the right of this door. We children were lied to at that time and were told that this pillar was a real guard, and no one could get past it. I searched for this door and column. I found it. I did not go there, but I examined all the pictures and videos that could be found of this castle on the internet. For days and nights, I looked at everything carefully, but at first, I could not find this door. I had even told friends who supported me in the search. And then suddenly I saw it in a video. The castle is usually only shown from other angles, and so one does not get to see the side door. But on this one video it can be seen for one or two seconds. That was my confirmation. I could only know that because I was taken to the castle through that door. And this door exists.

Memories are also stored in the body's cells.

These are then called bodily memories. These memories can manifest themselves, for example, in the form of trembling, nausea, vomiting, fainting, pain, panic attacks, shortness of breath, sudden dissociation or the like. These bodily memories show up involuntarily. Thus, it is not uncommon that at the scene of the event or at the mere memory of a traumatic event, the body rebels. This is an additional sign that a memory is true. At such a moment it is difficult to endure all this, but this gives confirmation.

I was standing in the room where the three men had attacked me. Suddenly I began to tremble inside. That evening I went to bed, and when I got up in the morning, I felt severe muscle soreness. The pain was so intense that I had trouble moving. I had not exercised at all - no, I had continued to shake all night and that's why I got this soreness. My body had signaled to me that my memories were real.

Other small touchstones can be that known details confirm a memory. Perhaps a former classmate remembers that one was sometimes picked up

after school by a certain driver in a certain car. Or a teacher can confirm the many absences from school each Monday. Or one can find an old photo of oneself wearing the exact sweater that was in a memory. Or a former neighbor's child suddenly talks about certain rituals. It can also happen that a perpetrator blabs and reveals information. My ex-father-in-law blabbed to me at an old age when he unexpectedly addressed me in public by my cult name. That was clear evidence for me.

Yes, they are like little pieces of a mosaic that are put together. This takes a lot of strength, time and patience. But I would encourage you: It is possible!

Still another touchstone can be when you come across certain public information.

For me, it was a confirmation when I found out through research that certain people I could remember seeing in Barcelona, had actually been in Spain during that time. A few of these celebrities I encountered were reported by other victims of abuse over the years. Others were seen in such circles by other victims who reported it. This confirmed what I had experienced, even though I cannot yet prove everything.

A few more lines about the iatrogenic (therapist-induced) memories that are talked about again and again (so-called false memory syndrome): It is indeed the case that therapists (or any other person) can be influential. This can happen, for example, through misguided imagination, abusive hypnosis or other trance states, false dream interpretation, as well as suggestive questions. This can lead a person finally to believe in something that did not take place in such a way. These are not memories! But unfortunately, the word 'memory' is used for them, which is problematic. Yes, it is bad when an innocent person is accused as an abuser. And it is also bad when a person is led by suggestion to believe in abuse that never occurred. However, memories in the context of ritual abuse resulting in dissociative states or disorders are about more than just "falsely generated memories". And it is not just about memories of sexual abuse! It is also about memories of physical torture, neglect, false beliefs, psychological abuse. The theory of the false memory advocates, according to which DID as a result of severe trauma does not exist at all, is simply completely wrong. It has been refuted, and this can be found in numerous reference books. Dissociation is

a survival strategy of victims. However, persons who have only been asserted to have "iatrogenic memories" usually do not have a dissociative identity disorder as a result of severe trauma. Thus, it is obvious that a fabricated false memory syndrome cannot explain at all why dissociative disorders are regularly found in victims of ritual abuse.

As already said, the vast majority of victims of ritual abuse are not deliberately searching for memories! And if the soul and the trauma-memory let them come up in the form of flashbacks or in other ways, the survivors are initially shocked! Counterevidence is sought, because they would rather not admit it. I myself hardly knew anything about the subject of Satanically organized ritual abuse in my life in the outside world. The term or the phenomenon Mind Control was unknown to me until such inconceivable memories came up. I have not tried hypnosis, nor have I sought out dream interpreters or participated in group therapy. I sought trauma therapy when many of these intangible, overwhelming memories were already there. I needed professionals to help me deal with it. There are survivors who see professionals because they realize that something is not right. And then it may be that in the course of therapy the soul is ready to release the memories. As long as the therapists provide support, do not suggest anything (not even to victims of ritual abuse!) and do not claim to know the inner world of the victims better than they do themselves; this is a very good and often necessary way to work through the traumata.

Finally, I should like to say: People who want to help should not be skeptical about the unknown. The unknown triggers many emotions in us humans. And it happens very often that we then withdraw out of ignorance and fear, or even start to judge. I should like to see people who stand up, go out and look for information themselves before judging those affected. For my part, I can promise: Those who are willing to look into the unknown area of ritual, organized, Satanic abuse and mind control will see it. And that is how those affected can be helped.

25. What Now? I WILL SPEAK OUT!

I used to be silent about the color purple. I was incapable of speaking. Today I am happy every time I see this color. I remember: "I’M

SPEAKING OUT!" (Unfortunately, only a black and white print is possible, but feel free to imagine these two words in purple!). I consider it a great gift that I, as a victim of ritual abuse and mind control, not only survived, but also found the strength and courage within me to report it.

I want to share this gift; I want to make a difference with it. It is not just about me. It is about all those who are affected. About people who are suffering and who need to be helped.

By starting to talk about it, I have lit my match.

When even one match is lit in a large dark room, the darkness is no longer so dark. I have lit such a match. And my match is called: "I'M SPEAKING OUT!". I am not the only one. There are others who have lit their matches. Maybe not all matches are called: "I'M SPEAKING OUT!". There are many different ways to light matches! Internet fora, editorials, reports to the police or authorities, radio interviews, TV reports, organizing information, inaugurating events, YouTube channels, writing poems, painting pictures. All of them are wonderful! Each one serves to light a fire together, so that a great light can emerge. A light that exposes the darkness. I have joined this match community... and I shall CONTINUE TO SPEAK OUT.

---

[1] See at https://founders.archives.gov/documents/Washington/06-02-02-0435 (accessed 10/23/2021).

[2] Immediate descriptions of personal experiences are mostly set in italics.

[3] **By God is meant the God of the Bible, who created heaven and earth.**

[4] **By this I mean hereinafter my cult father, because even now I have not yet found my real parents. Therefore, in what follows I refer to those people with whom I grew up as mother, parents or family.**

[5] Designation for board members in some free church congregations. It has nothing to do with age, but it should be a trusted person.

[6] A mental disorder in which individuals unintentionally assume multiple personality states with different identities.

[7] A form of memory impairment.

[8] VD is the abbreviation for the canton of Vaud in Switzerland.

[9] Before section "1. Suicide Attempts."

[10] See each at https://www.infoportal-rg.de/meta/definitionen/ (accessed Oct. 31, 2021).

[11] Amnesia: total or partial inability to remember events.

[12] See on trauma memory at https://traumanetz-sachsen.de/was-bedeutet-traumagedaechtnis/ (accessed 10/31/2021).

[13] Medical: electroencephalogram. This measures the activities of the brain.

[14] See the presentation by Dr. Alexander Jatzko at https://www.bistum-muenster.de/fileadmin/user_upload/Website/Downloads/Rat-Hilfe/Sekten-und-Weltanschauungsfragen/2019-06-Vortrag-Muenster-Jatzko.pdf (accessed 10/31/2021).

[15] In medicine and psychology, a trigger is the trigger for a process that can cause a sensation, an affect, a symptom (e.g., pain), or a disease. The perpetrators install such triggers in their victim through classical conditioning.

[16] From Latin: stands for "enlightened ones". Is a secret group founded on May 1, 1776 by the philosopher Adam Weisshaupt. Officially it was banned in 1884/85. There are many reports that claim that these secret activities are still unofficially practised today.

[17] Quoted from Wikipedia.

[18] "Mother of Darkness": the English expression denotes a special position with corresponding tasks in the Illuminati system.

[19] Kerth Barker, Mental Liberation in the Age of Thought Control. S. 141.

[20] For this hierarchy, see http://childtraffickingorgans.blogspot.com/2020/11/mother-of-darkness-initiation-for.html (retrieved 10/31/2021). It roughly corresponds to my vague recollection, but I cannot guarantee the correctness of the details.

[21] The English term for thought/mind control is firmly established in this context.

[22] Lilith, according to Wikipedia, is " an ancient oriental female demon of Sumerian origin. "

[23] In psychology, this refers to an involuntary re-experiencing of a previous experience with sometimes strong emotional states.

[24] Therapeutic approach in which the person enters an anxiety-provoking situation and confronts it. This allows the person to learn to reduce and overcome the anxiety.

[25] IV means disability insurance.

[26] Nonhospital care service.

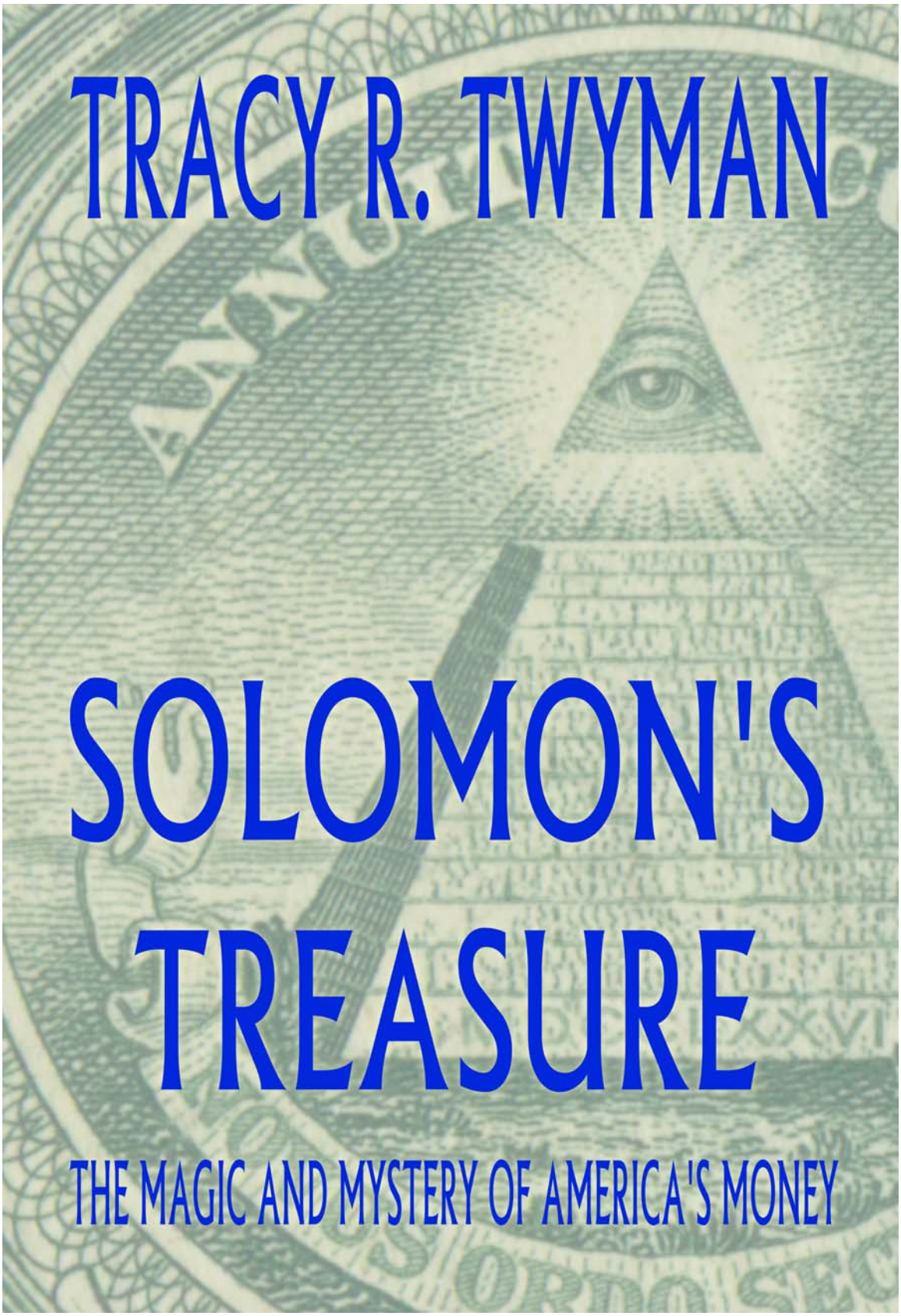
[27] Swiss social security system. Saved pension fund money is transferred to a vested benefits account if you leave a job and do not take up a new one.

[28] "Bundeskriminalamt", the German Federal Bureau of Investigation.

[29] Revelation 13:18.

[30] In the Christian faith, to repent means to strive to restore the disturbed relationship between God and man.

[31] In technical jargon, this is called confabulation.


TRACY R. TWYMAN
SOLOMON'S
TREASURE
THE MAGIC AND MYSTERY OF AMERICA'S MONEY

Solomon's Treasure

The Magic and Mystery of America's Money

By Tracy R. Twyman

2nd Edition © 2008
Quintessential Publications
Originally published 2005
All rights reserved

No part of this publication may be reproduced in any for or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publisher.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PART I ____ 4
Chapter One: Annuit Coeptis ____ 5
Chapter Two: In God We Trust ____ 13
Chapter Three: Plus Ultra ____ 23
Chapter Four: The Almighty Dollar ____ 37
Chapter Five: The Spirit of 1776 ____ 47
PART II ____ 54
Chapter Six: The Death of the West and the Birth of the Temple ____ 55
Chapter Seven: The Renaissance and the Rise of the Merchant Class ____ 64
Chapter Eight: The Empire in the East and the Church of the Holy Wisdom ____ 73
Chapter Nine: The Head of Prophecy and the Aegis of the Goat ____ 78
Chapter Ten: A Contract with Baphomet ____ 87
PART III ____ 101
Chapter Eleven: The Temple of Money ____ 102
Chapter Twelve: The Iniquity of Priesthood ____ 109
Chapter Thirteen: A Trespass Offering ____ 114
Chapter Fourteen: The Shekel of the Sanctuary ____ 119
Chapter Fifteen: King Solomon's Temple ____ 124
Chapter Sixteen: King Solomon's Treasure ____ 134
Chapter Seventeen: Solomon's Pact with the King of Demons ____ 140
Chapter Eighteen: The Universal Agent ____ 150
Chapter Nineteen: The Plot to Rebuild the Temple ____ 153
Chapter Twenty: The Beautiful One ____ 158
Chapter Twenty-One: Triskadekaphilia ____ 161
PART IV ____ 172
Chapter Twenty-Two: Spiritual Pyramid Schemes ____ 173
Chapter Twenty-Three: The Law of the Harvest ____ 176
Chapter Twenty-Four: Alchemical Miracles ____ 180
Chapter Twenty-Five: A Commerce of Souls ____ 185
Chapter Twenty-Six: A Mason's Wages ____ 188
Chapter Twenty-Seven: The Mark of a Master Mason ____ 192
Chapter Twenty-Eight: The Shekel-to-Dollar Exchange Rate ____ 199
Chapter Twenty-Nine: Solomon's House: An Ongoing Project ____ 201
Chapter Thirty: A Final Thought ____ 211
APPENDICES ____ 214
Appendix A: The Tessera Hospitalis ____ 215
Appendix B: The Wedjat Eye ____ 219
Appendix C: The Bohemian Connection ____ 225
Appendix D: Goat Money ____ 230
Appendix E: The Jack in the Box ____ 234
Appendix F: Casting a Fortune ____ 236
Appendix G: The Root of All Evil ____ 239
Appendix H: The National Treasure ____ 243
Appendix I: Bibliography ____ 245
Appendix J: Illustrations ____ 254

PART I

Chapter One: Annuit Coeptis

It is commonly known now, more so than ever before, that the United States of America was founded largely by men with a philosophy grounded in the occult: namely the members of Freemasonry, and other secret societies, who saw in the US a potential "New Atlantis" or "New Jerusalem." They foresaw the future of the United States as a beacon to the rest of the world, guiding the nations towards the formation of a New World Order of peace, democracy, and enlightenment. Many people today would agree that the US is indeed, in several ways, fulfilling this role already. If nothing else, most people would certainly agree that the America has come to dominate the world financially, and that among world currencies, the American dollar is king.

What few people understand, however, is the correlation between the esoteric doctrines of Freemasonry upon which the United States was founded, and the economic principles that underpin the American economy. Few understand that the dollar is a unit of magical energy, and the dollar bill itself a magical talisman. Although many words have been written by conspiracy theorists analyzing the Masonic symbols on the one dollar bill, no one has yet been able to sufficiently explain why these symbols are there, or what they really mean. Certainly no researcher yet has successfully connected the markings on American money to the hidden secrets of the American monetary system.

The symbolism of the American dollar bill has been the subject of Masonic conspiracy theories since the modern version was first rolled out during the Roosevelt administration in 1935. Masonic and mystical symbolism has been used on American currency since the very beginning, and was employed as a means of distinguishing our money from that of Old World Europe, which invariably featured the bust of the reigning

monarch. In contrast, America's founding fathers agreed that American money should be decorated with the symbols of the anti-monarchist, pro-democratic Enlightenment philosophy upon which the Republic was founded, and many of these ideals were Masonic in origin. The Great Pyramid, the All-Seeing Eye, and quirky phrases like "Mind Your Business" appeared on early American currency. In fact, the heads of "dead Presidents" and other state figures were not shown on US money until the twentieth century, when it was seen as less taboo. But all researchers of the subject agree that nothing tops the modern American one dollar bill for the sheer exactness and complexity of its mystical symbolism. The meaning of the symbolism is so deep, the metaphors so multi-layered, and each element so precisely placed, that although several of the other American bills have changed their appearance to prevent counterfeiting (with the heads moved off-center, and the addition of funky rainbow colors) the perfection of the one dollar bill has remained intact.

When analyzing the symbolism of the one dollar bill, most researchers tend to focus on the repeated use of the number 13, which they always insist is "an important number sacred to Freemasons", without demonstrating any proof of the supposed Masonic affinity for this particular number. This is, of course, the number of colonies that originally constituted the United States of America, and thus thirteen stars have been used in American heraldry since the start of the union, appearing not only on our first national flag, but upon many of our early coins as well. Since Freemasons were responsible for both the foundation of many of America's institutions and the design of our national symbols, it is tempting to ascribe a Masonic significance to the use of this number, and indeed there may be one. But there is no specific mention of the number 13 in any known

Masonic ritual, except perhaps in the rites of the Noble Order of the Shrine, where this number comes up more than once, but with no particular meaning given to it. In any case, the Shriners did not exist at the time of the founding of the American republic. None of the quintessential Masonic tomes, such as Albert Pike's *Morals and Dogma*, make any special note of the number. Although Pike examines the meaning of many numbers in terms of cabalism and sacred geometry, mention of 13 is conspicuously absent, almost like an office building from the early twentieth century in which the thirteenth floor has been superstitiously omitted. Even Freemason Manly P. Hall, in his 1944 book *The Secret Destiny of America* (where he interpreted the history of the United States as the unfolding of an ancient Masonic plan) could only offer lamely that 13 symbolizes Jesus and the twelve apostles, or the Sun and the twelve zodiac signs. One would expect him to say something more interesting, but perhaps he was just being coy. Indeed, if there are any Masonic teachings regarding this number, then they are among the few Masonic teachings that have actually remained *secret* throughout the centuries. My research tends to indicate that there is in fact a proto-Masonic significance to this number, and one which would have been of special importance to the founders of the United States, had they known about it. I shall discuss this possibility in due course.

At any rate, Masonic or not, the number 13 is undeniably the most omnipresent, most repeated symbol on the one dollar bill, although its use is not always explicit. Most of these examples are found on the back of the bill. The pyramid on the left has thirteen layers, not including the eye at the top. Above the head of the eagle on the right, there is a constellation of thirteen pentagonal stars, arranged in the shape of a six-pointed star. There are thirteen leaves on the olive branch in his right talon, and thirteen "Jonathan

arrows", as they are called, in his right. There are thirteen horizontal divisions on the eagle's shield, and thirteen vertical ones. The motto "E Pluribus Unum", written on the banner in his beak, contains thirteen letters. So too does the motto "Annuit Coeptis", written above the pyramid on the left. Furthermore, if you add the number of letters in "Novus Ordo Seclorum" and "MDCCLXXVI" ("1776" in Roman numerals) written below the pyramid, you get 26, or two sets of thirteen. On the front of the bill, at the base of the portrait of George Washington, on each side there are eight leaves and five berries, indicating another two sets of thirteen. There are also thirteen stars on the chevron on the seal of the Treasury Department that is featured to the right of George Washington, overlaying the word "ONE."

Clearly these allusions to the number thirteen are no accident. This truth is compounded by the letters in permanently featured words on the front of the dollar bill (that is, words not contingent upon any changing circumstance, such as the name of the US Treasurer). These words include: "FEDERAL RESERVE NOTE"; "THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA"; THIS NOTE IS LEGAL TENDER FOR ALL DEBTS PUBLIC AND PRIVATE"; "WASHINGTON, D.C."; "ONE"; "TREASURER OF THE UNITED STATES"; "SECRETARY OF THE TREASURY"; "ONE DOLLAR; and "WASHINGTON." The total number of letters in these words is 169, or 13 squared.

Returning to the back of the bill, there would appear to be exactly *thirteen* examples of the use of the number 13 there. But in order for this to be correct, you have to count "IN GOD WE TRUST." Of course, there are only twelve letters in this phrase, but occupying the same space in the center on the back of the bill is the word "ONE", implying that we should add 1 to this sum and make 13. In addition, there are, on the

front of the bill, four 1s at the corners of an inner rectangle on the front of the bill that is exactly thirteen centimeters long**.**

These 1s are part of a larger pattern, for in addition to the repeated use of the number 13, the number 1, or the word “one”, is used profusely, much more than necessary to identify the denomination of the bill. The concept of “unity” could in fact be said to be the real underlying theme of the one-dollar-bill. And rightly so: it represents, after all, the original unit of currency upon which the American economic system is founded. It is the blueprint upon which all other dollar bills are based, and when we think of the American dollar, the first image that pops into our minds is the one dollar bill. As the official representation of the original *unit* underpinning the economy, its unity is expressed with the plenteous use of “1”, the central placement of “ONE” on the back of the bill, and the use of the motto “E Pluribus, Unum” (“Out of Many, One”) underneath a constellation of thirteen stars, representing the original colonies that were “unified” at the creation of the United States. The theme of “one” is continued with the use of the first American President, George Washington, on the front of the bill, and with the word “ONE” written next to him. As well, I would include the symbol of the pyramid on the back, which according to the designers of this emblem, was meant to represent the ideal state, made up of individuals (the stones) unified into one structure (the pyramid), under the divine unifying principle (the All-Seeing Eye of Providence).

Other strange features include the words “Annuit Coeptis” (“He [meaning God] favors our undertaking”) and “Novus Ordo Seclorum” (“The New Order of the Ages”). These are both based on quotes from the Roman poet Virgil, although they have been slightly altered, and both quotes referred in their original context to “Juppiter Omnipotes”

("Omnipotent Jupiter"), essentially the Roman equivalent of the Judeo-Christian Almighty God. (Interestingly, "E Pluribus Unum" is also a quote from Virgil slightly altered, and some see in these alterations a numerological significance.) In the original Virgil poem, the words "Juppiter Omnipotes, Audacibus Annue Coeptis" were a plea for the deity to "favor my daring undertakings." The words on the back of the dollar bill not only plea for, but confidently declare God's favor upon the "daring undertaking" there represented: the creation of a "New Order of the Ages", or a new global power structure, headed by the newly-created republic of the United States. For these symbols and words belong not just to the dollar bill: they are part of the Great Seal of the United States, created in 1776, at the same time the nation was founded. It is the front and back side of the Great Seal which is represented on the back of the dollar bill.

The design of the Great Seal has never been ascribed to any one individual, and it has evolved a bit over the years. But the essentials of the design were sketched out right at the beginning, in 1776, the year of the Revolution, emblazoned in Roman numerals beneath the pyramid on the back of the seal. That's right: the roundel featuring the eye above the pyramid is actually the reverse side of the Great Seal, and the roundel featuring the eagle is really the front. It is the front of the Seal which is used to seal official US documents, not the back.

Several people are known to have contributed to the design of both sides of the Seal, including Benjamin Franklin, Thomas Jefferson, William Barton, Charles Thomson, and Pierre Eugene du Simitiere, and all but one were Freemasons. The first metal die for the Seal was cut by Robert Scot, a Freemason, in 1782. However, although dies were commissioned for both the front and the back of the Seal, only the front was actually cut.

None was made for the back of the Seal until much later, and most people were not aware that their national Seal had a back to it at all until it appeared on the dollar bill in 1935. Thirty-third degree Freemason and historian Manly P. Hall wrote that the reverse of the seal was not originally used, "because it was regarded as a symbol of a secret society and not the proper device for a sovereign state."

Just like the Great Seal, the one dollar bill was also designed by a group of Freemasons working for the government; in this case, President Franklin Roosevelt, Secretary of Agriculture Henry A. Wallace, and Secretary of the Treasury Henry Morgenthau, although the design was executed at the Bureau of Engraving and Printing (which employed exactly *thirteen* engravers). It was Wallace's suggestion that the front and back of the Great Seal be used on the reverse of the dollar. He originally wanted the front of the seal to be on the left, and the back of the seal to be on the right, which makes sense logically. But it was President Roosevelt who suggested switching that order, and putting the more interesting reverse of the seal on the left, which made more sense intuitively, since the Western eye naturally reads words and images from left to right.

"In God We Trust" was not placed on the bill until 1957. However, it was originally made the national motto of the United States in 1863 at the suggestion of Treasury Secretary Salmon P. Chase, who himself had supposedly been prompted to do so by a protestant minister concerned with the waning of religious fervor in the American public. This man purportedly wanted to ensure that the US would always be officially grounded in faith in divine Providence, and thus this motto has been put on all American coins ever since, although it did not appear on paper currency until much later. But "In God We Trust" is indeed a Masonic motto – one used in almost all Masonic rituals, in

which the participants must pledge to always put their “trust in God” during the ceremonies – and this specific phrase can be found in Masonic dictionaries. Its appearance on the dollar bill in the 1950s may have been meant to bolster a currency increasingly dependant on faith due to changes in American monetary policy.

Chapter Two: In God We Trust

Major changes to the very nature of American money began in the 1930s, right around the time that the new one-dollar-bill was being designed. In an effort to help America climb out of the Great Depression, Roosevelt began employing the economic policies of advisor John Meynard Keynes. He suggested that, during times in which the private sector was not producing enough investment to stimulate the economy, the government should become the investor, financing public works, and dumping money into the system in whatever way possible to grow the economy. Thus Roosevelt instituted the "New Deal", creating an "alphabet soup" of bureaucracies, many of which have now become mainstays of federal government. Among these was the FDIC, or Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation, which insured bank accounts to a limited amount in the event of a bank's failure – something that was necessary after a number of bank failures had occurred in the previous years. It may not be an accident that "FDIC" implies the word "fiducial", a financial term with its roots in the Latin word "fides", which means "trust, confidence, reliance, credence, belief, faith…. credit." Fides was symbolized in the Mithraic mysteries by two hands clasped together, now a common Masonic motif, and the logo of Allstate Insurance. Coins whose face value is more than their metallic content are called "fiduciary tokens" because they require faith to be of value. For similar reasons, "trust" is a financial term that can mean, according to *Webster's Dictionary*, "confidence in the certainty of future payment for property or goods received"; or, "a fiduciary relationship in which a trustee holds title to property for the beneficiary"; or

even, “any large corporation or combination having monopolistic or semi-monopolistic control over the production of a commodity or service.”

It was “faith” and “trust” in the American dollar that Roosevelt and his friends were attempting to create with the new design of the one-dollar-bill. That faith was sorely needed, for in order to free up the money required to finance the New Deal, Roosevelt had to institute sweeping changes to the country’s monetary policy. He removed the dollar from the gold standard to which it had been implicitly set, so that he could have the money supply greatly expanded with no predetermined limit. It worked to stabilize the economy just in time for the United States to enter WWII, which turned out to be another great economic stimulator.

As part of removing the gold standard, Roosevelt had laws passed forcing US citizens to give all of the gold and silver that they owned to the government, in exchange for an equivalent amount of paper dollars. Americans’ faith in the new system was severely tested the following year when the government devalued the dollar relative to gold, thus causing all who had made the exchange to lose 41% of the value of their money.

On July 22, 1946, at the end of WWII, an agreement was signed at a conference between 44 nations in which the other countries agreed to value their currencies in relation to the dollar, rather than gold, silver, or anything else. The US then set the value of the dollar at $35 per ounce of gold, and agreed to redeem dollars held by the central banks of other nations with gold upon demand. However, this led to a steady loss of US gold reserves, until finally, in 1971, President Richard Nixon closed the “gold window”,

announcing that the holdings of foreign central banks would no longer be redeemed for gold by the US government.

This was the final step in abandoning the gold standard. Now the value of the dollar floats freely in relation to foreign currencies, with no fixed standard of value. The value of a dollar can only be manipulated by the market forces of the economy, and by the actions of the Federal Reserve. The result has been rapidly expanding inflation, which began during the Nixon years, and which has been felt by all the foreign currencies that were pegged to the dollar. Many of these currencies have repeatedly failed, and the governments of their countries have remained continually insolvent ever since.

So the dollar that we now use is one backed entirely by faith alone – the public's faith in the US economy, and America itself. The economies of other nations are dependent upon this faith as well. For if no one believed in the power of the dollar – if it was not universally accepted as a form of payment – then it would have no value. As Jack Weatherford writes in *The History of Money*:

The government will not redeem a dollar bill for anything other than another dollar bill. The dollar is simply fiat currency. The dollar rests on the power of the government and the faith of the people who use it – faith that it will be able to buy some thing tomorrow, faith that the US government will continue to exist and to accept dollars in payment of taxes and pay them out in expenses, and faith that other people will continue to believe in it. Aside from that faith, nothing backs up the dollar.

Likewise, William Greider wrote in *Secrets of the Temple: How the Federal Reserve Runs the Country* that:

'Above all, money [is] a function of faith. It [requires] an implicit and universal social consent that [is] indeed mysterious. To create money and use it, each one must believe, and everyone must believe. Only then [do] the worthless pieces of paper take on value. When a society [loses] faith in money, it [is] implicitly losing faith in itself… The money process… [requires] a deep, unacknowledged act of faith, so mysterious that it could easily be confused with divine powers.

Of course, even before paper money became widely used, the worth of gold and silver coins rested on a similar social contract – a common, agreed-upon value. The difference is that gold and silver have intrinsic value, and when these coins were used in the past, their value was roughly equal (when made properly) to the value of the metal of which they consisted. But our current paper dollars are "fiat currency" – representations of wealth that exists on paper only until they are used to purchase something.

The use of paper money was not new to America in 1935. It has been used throughout our history, beginning with the "Continentals" which financed the Revolutionary War. These were backed with nothing more than the promise that America would win the war, and begin collecting taxes from its citizens. A similar gamble was taken during the Civil War, which was financed by "Greenbacks", forebears of the modern paper dollar. In addition to these two currencies, each of which were issued by the federal government, there were, throughout the United States' early history, many

paper dollars in circulation that were issued by privately-owned banks throughout the various states. These dollars differed widely in appearance from one another, which led to massive counterfeiting, and when the banks failed, which they often did, the dollars became worthless. Numerous measures were taken by the federal government in attempts to control this problem. Finally, in 1913, a series of banking collapses inspired the creation of the nation's new central bank, the Federal Reserve, and a new banking and monetary system, the Federal Reserve System.

The Federal Reserve (a.k.a. "The Fed") is now the United States' national bank. It is both quasi-governmental and privately-owned. It sets the basic operating policies for all of its member banks (which includes most of the banks in the U.S.), and provides them with their money supply. The process they use to supply this money, "fractional reserve lending", is not new. It is almost as old as banking itself. But when backed by a powerful dynamo like the Fed, which created tremendous faith in the integrity of the money supply, the new money system became an unstoppable force.

In fractional reserve lending, a bank can take the money from its depositors' accounts, and lend it out to various persons or institutions on interest. It can loan out the vast majority of the money deposited (say, 87%), leaving only a fraction (13%) in the bank's vaults. This fraction is called the "reserve", and it is the only actual money sitting in the bank, backing all of the various loans - the only money that is really ready to be withdrawn, should the depositors choose to take money from their accounts.

When the loans are paid back, the bank earns a profit from the interest. Thus, the bank has caused its depositors' money to multiply, and has kept the difference for itself, essentially creating money out of nothing. If the bank has loaned money to another bank

or financial institution, that institution can then loan it out and create even more money out of nothing. Or they can loan it to a person or business who can use it earn more money by producing goods and services that are sold. This money is then spent into the economy again. Thus the money supply multiplies exponentially, and the economy itself acts as a money multiplier – a manna machine, in a way. Money can always be used to make more money.

Now since the Federal Reserve is the point of origin for this money, the load initially injected into the system is sometimes called "high-powered money", because it effects the whole economy. It is the (comparatively) tiny mustard seed which causes the rest of the money supply to grow. The interest rate which the Fed chooses to set for the money it lends determines how much money will be borrowed by other banks at that time, and also determines the rate that those banks will charge for loaning money. This is the primary way in which the Federal Reserve controls the money supply, and thus, as much as possible, the American economy. Too much money being loaned out (and thus created) leads to inflation, and too little leads to recession. When the Fed first loans it out to the member banks, the money is "created", and each time those banks lend it out, they are breeding more. As Martin Mayer writes in *The Fed: The Inside Story of How the World's Most Powerful Financial Institution Drives the Markets*:

… The Fed's actions were always and necessarily pretty small by comparison with the effects desired, and their effectiveness was explained by the operation of a 'multiplier' inherent in a system where banks had to keep 'reserves' against some fraction of their liabilities. The bank that received the Fed's 'high-powered money' might lend 90 percent

of it, and the bank that received the proceeds of that loan would lend 90 percent of that, producing deposits in another bank that would lend 90 percent of that, etc…

It is no wonder, then, that some see the way in which fiat currency can be simply "created", especially paper and electronic money, as nothing short of magic. In 1705, Scottish philosopher John Law wrote in his book, *Money and Trade Considered with a Proposal for Supplying the Nation with Money*, that he had discovered the "Philosopher's Stone" of the alchemists, which could purportedly turn lead into gold, or dross into something valuable. The key to alchemy, he said, was the printing of paper money, and in 1715 he was hired by the French government to put his theories into action. Law was put in charge of France's national Banque Royale, as well as the Mississippi Company, which gathered investments from French citizens to finance operations in French Louisiana, promising the investors profit payments. He set up a paper-passing scheme between the bank and the company, in which investors could borrow paper money printed by the bank to invest in the company. They were expected to pay the bank in gold, while the company paid their profits in the bank's paper money, which was supposedly redeemable in gold. The whole scheme collapsed dramatically in what became known as "the Great Mississippi Bubble", and Law fled in disgrace, dying shortly thereafter. But his ideas went on to influence German writer and Freemason Wolfgang von Goethe.

In Goethe's classic play, *Faust*, the title character and his teacher, Mephistopheles (the Devil), gain the favor of the emperor by offering him the secret of alchemy: how to create wealth by printing paper money. Soon the emperor presides over a robust economy

and a licentious, materialistic people. But the currency eventually collapses, just as all the Devil's creations turn out, in this play, to be illusions.

It is my belief that the Freemasons and other occultists who have been responsible for creating the United States, designing the dollar bill, and engineering our economy have understood the principles of alchemy, and have purposely chosen to construct our economy upon these principles. They are the principles of creating worth from worthlessness, and for creating a large volume from a small one, using the power of faith. I submit that the creation of money by the Federal Reserve, and its exponential multiplication by the procedures of the banking system, is analogous to the creation and multiplication of gold in alchemy. The power of money to transform almost any thing or situation into another is similar to the alchemical power of the so-called "universal agent" or "Philosopher's Stone", and the act of turning paper into dollars is like turning lead into gold. The members of the Federal Reserve Board are in many ways like sorcerers, conjuring wealth seemingly out of thin air and distributing it at will to transform the American economy according to their desires. The dollar is "fiat currency", declared into existence by the central bank in a manner similar to the creation of the universe by the divine words "Fiat Lux!" - "Let there be light!" Fiat money (best exemplified by the American dollar) is perhaps the only thing that truly means nothing, and has no independent existence, except in relation to something else (i.e., what it can buy, or be converted into). Yet it is the most powerful force within the human sphere of life – like the "Azoth", or secret essence of life spoken of in alchemical texts. If one examined the history of the dollar prior to the formation of the Federal Reserve in 1913, one could

easily conclude that most of these magical principles were at work in the American economy from the very beginning.

As stated, this system depends entirely on a religious faith by the American people in the supernatural power of the dollar. The ability of the United States President and other elected officials to uphold and improve the economy depends largely upon their ability to manipulate the spiritual will of the people, in much the same way that a priest or a magician would, inspiring them to have faith in the value of the dollar. This faith is reinforced by the financial terminology currently in use ("trust", "fiducial", "credit", etc.), as well as by watchwords and symbols found on American money – not only on the bills and coins we presently use, but on currently dating back from before the formation of the Republic. These objects thus act as magical charms, containing a unit of magical charge that is passed on from one person to the next, and multiplied as the money changes hands. They also act as tokens of communal trust in, and fidelity to, the dollar as an institution. The symbols and key phrases associated with it thus work to enchant the public into a mass hypnotic spell, in which the mind of each individual confirms the consensus belief in the power of a dollar, and its ability to multiply itself as it moves through the system. Every time a person spends a dollar, or accepts a dollar as payment, they are confirming their belief in the dollar, and using it to exercise their spiritual will.

Now the mysterious markings on the dollar bill can be understood. The words "In God We Trust" are meant to inspire faith in the dollar as a currency, and faith in the American republic. One should trust the dollar the way one trusts in God, for it is implied that God himself has chosen to favor the U.S. and, by extension, the dollar. This is communicated by the message on the reverse of the Great Seal, "Annuit Coeptis" – "He

[God] favors our undertaking." The words "E Pluribus Unum" and the other twelve examples of "one" on the bill, along with the pyramid, remind us that our society is made up of various parts that are essentially united. Money is the great uniter, since it is the one thing that everyone in the country uses, and each dollar can continually be passed from person to person, potentially reaching millions. The spider web motif in the background of the bill's design illustrates how we are all connected through the web of commerce. The bald eagle on the front of the Great Seal looks a bit peculiar. Masonic expert Manly P. Hall claimed that it was meant to secretly represent the phoenix, the mythical bird which eternally dies and is reborn, and which is a symbol of transformation in alchemy. (Indeed, the original proposals for the design of the Seal *did* call for a phoenix instead.)

Even the green color of U.S. dollars is symbolic, representing fecundity, plenteousness, and growth. Former U.S. Treasurer Mary Ellen Withrow explicitly stated in an interview with *New Yorker Magazine* that this is why the color green is used. This too is the reason why there is foliage all over the one dollar bill, including olive branches, oak leaves, laurel wreaths, and holly. But there have been representations of vegetation all over American money since colonial times, including corn, cotton, wheat, and tobacco. In fact, wheat is one of the most commonly depicted motifs on money from throughout the world and throughout the history. It was even on the first coins ever minted, as I will explain later on.

For now, though, we will examine the role that the Freemasons have played in the foundation of America, the ancient plan for the colonization of the continent, and the role that money has played in the formation of the Republic. This will lead us to a greater understanding of the magic at the heart of the dollar.

Chapter Three: Plus Ultra

As discussed in the previous chapters, members of Freemasonry and other secret societies were largely responsible for the settlement of North America, the American Revolution, and the formation of the United States. But the plan to create a Masonic utopia in North America started much earlier. In fact, it started before the Order of Freemasons was officially founded, in the early to mid-seventeenth century (the exact date is not certain). Freemasonry has its roots largely in a medieval order of warrior-monks called the Knights Temple, who fought for Europe during the Crusades. I will get into the subject of the Templars at length later on, but for now it will suffice to say that the Templars are believed to have possessed an esoteric wisdom doctrine, and a secret goal of creating their own "philosophic empire" in the West, based on this doctrine. This put them at odds with the existing powers: the Catholic Church, and the ruling houses of Europe. They paid heavily for it, and the Order was suppressed in 1307.

The Templar leadership consisted of a close-knit group of noble families, who continued the Order's tradition after it was disbanded. One of these families was the Sinclairs, or Saint-Claires, of France and Scotland. The Sinclairs are purported to have been responsible for the development of an early form of Freemasonry in Scotland that was heavily steeped in Templar tradition. They commissioned the building of the elaborately-decorated Rosslyn Chapel in Scotland, which became "Lodge Number 1" for this proto-Masonic fraternity.

One of the hereditary lords of Rosslyn was Prince Henry Sinclair, also called "Prince Henry the Navigator." In addition to belonging to a traditional Templar family,

Henry could trace his roots back to the legendary Viking explorers whom historians believe may have explored North America long prior to Christopher Columbus. Not only that, Henry was a member of the Knights of Christ, which was essentially a Templar spin-off group, created by former Templars, with a focus on sea-faring.

True to his heritage, Prince Henry decided to do some exploring of his own, or so the story goes. He allegedly acquired a map of North America from a Venetian explorer named Nicolas Zeno. Then in 1398, Nicholas and his son Antonia, along with 200-300 soldiers, are said to have sailed in twelve ships to visit Greenland and the East Coast of North America. It is from Antonio Zeno's son that we get the account of the voyage, as well as a copy of the map allegedly used. Nobody is sure if his account is true. However, Rosslyn Chapel was embellished with plant motifs of maize and aloe, which are native to the Americas, causing many authors to speculate that the Sinclairs came to know of these plants because of Prince Henry's voyage to America.

In-between the time of Prince Henry's purported voyage and the formal establishment of Freemasonry, there were many proto-Masonic, neo-Templar groups working in Europe to continue the Templar tradition. They were also actively plotting to establish the Templars' dreamed-of "philosophic empire." There were groups calling themselves "Knights of the Rose-Cross", or "Rosicrucians." Other groups with different names nonetheless described themselves as having a "Rosicrucian philosophy."

The rose-cross is a multifaceted symbol with many layers of meaning. Certainly the Knights Templar had a red equilateral cross as one of their emblems, and thus could be called a "rosy cross." But the real rose-cross symbol actually showed a red rose at the center of a white cross, and specifically represented ancient, hidden wisdom. Like the

Templars before them, and the Freemasons after, these Rosicrucian groups believed they were perpetuating divine secrets from the high cultures of antiquity: Greece, Rome, Egypt, Israel, Chaldea, and Persia.

This kind of knowledge had largely been suppressed, from the Dark Ages onward, by the Catholic Church, as well as by other Christian churches, and by the monarchs who depended on the support of these churches for their survival. But more than that, these existing power structures also actively suppressed the pursuit of new discoveries in science, new philosophies, and the expanding of human knowledge, for fear that the spread of such things would threaten their power. (Indeed, their fears turned out to be well-founded, for it was these ideas that ultimately toppled the monarchies and smashed the iron rule of the Church.) The Rosicrucians and proto-Masons believed that if a system of government could be set up somewhere that was not beholden to any church, or to any royal house, then its citizens would be free to learn these ancient truths and explore these new ideas. Then they could export their wisdom, and their enlightened form of government, to the rest of the world.

One of these groups was called the Order of the Helmet, to which belonged British aristocrat, lawyer, and philosopher Sir Francis Bacon. The “helmet” in their title referred to the plumed headgear traditionally worn by the Greek goddess Pallas Athena, whom they revered as a personification of wisdom. It is not known if this is the same secret society which Bacon went on to lead himself, or if he simply took inspiration from the Order of the Helmet when creating his own fraternity. Nonetheless, he was the leader of such a group, the real name of which remains unknown to the public, but which has been cryptically referred to as “the Baconian Circle” by chroniclers. Some of the most

influential and forward-thinking men in Europe belonged to this group, including Sir Robert Moray, who would become one of the main contributors to the development of Freemasonry.

Bacon himself was a prominent figure in Queen Elizabeth's court, and in English Parliament. He was also one of the founders of, and a main stockholder in, the Virginia Company, which set up an English colony in Roanoke, Virginia. Some authors say that the colony was his idea, and that it was all part of the grand plan. According to Masonic scholar Manly P. Hall in *The Secret Destiny of America*:

The English program [of colonizing America] was under the direction of Sir Francis Bacon, and it was his genius that gave purpose to the enterprise… he was the head of a secret society including in its members the most brilliant intellectuals of his day. All these men were bound together by a common oath to labor in the cause of a world democracy. Bacon's society of the unknown philosophers included men of high rank and broad influence. Together with Bacon, they devised the colonization scheme.

To understand Francis Bacon's ultimate vision for the new colony in America, we need only read the treatise he wrote on the ideal philosophic empire, a utopian fantasy called *The New Atlantis*. For anybody who does not know, Atlantis was, according to a legend recounted by Plato, a perfect "empire of the gods" that supposedly existed prior to the Deluge. Bacon saw the idea of a re-created Atlantis as the perfect metaphor to use for the kingdom of wisdom he wished to establish in America, with hopes that the form of government planted there would spread throughout the world.

To communicate these concepts, Bacon used a fictional device. He described sailors on a ship departing Peru, bound for China, who are accidentally blown off course, and wash ashore in a previously unknown land with an existing high civilization. The capitol of this land is a "Wise Man's City", as Bacon described it, called "Bensalem", or "Son of Peace." This word could also be interpreted to mean "New Jerusalem", and that would be appropriate, for in *The New Atlantis*, Bensalem is ruled by a society of "philosophers" called "Solomon's house, or the college of the six days work."

This last part referred to the six days it took for God to create the universe, according to *Genesis*. When applied to the group called "Solomon's house", the term "college of the six days work" indicated that these philosophers were engaged in the study of the very secrets of creation. In the words of William Rawley, who wrote the introduction to *The New Atlantis*, Solomon's house was "instituted for the interpreting of nature, and the producing of great and marvelous works, for the benefit of men…" The doorway leading to the headquarters of Solomon's house said the following:

The end of our foundation is the knowledge of causes, and secret motions of things; and the enlarging of the bounds of human empire, to the effecting of all things possible.

Manly P. Hall thought that Bacon's work inspired that of the colonizers of America during his lifetime, and afterwards, as well as the founders of the new republic. Furthermore, he felt that Bacon had correctly predicted how the U.S. would use trade to export the philosophic truths on which it was founded. As Hall put it:

…Bensalem maintained a trade with all parts of the world, but not for gold, silver, jewels, silks, spices, or any other material commodity; its merchandise was the Light of Truth. Among the nations it traded with was Atlantis, which was declared [by Bacon] to be the same as America.

The idea of comparing America to Atlantis is fitting, for Plato said that Atlantis was just beyond the "Pillars of Hercules", which marked the Straits of Gibraltar and, according to ancient thinking, the limits of possible sea travel. In fact, on the title page of Bacon's *New Atlantis* there was a graphic which depicted a ship sailing between two columns, representing the Pillars of Hercules. The age of exploration and the discovery of America proved that there was indeed a world beyond the Pillars. For this reason the words "Plus Ultra", which mean "More Beyond" in Latin, were written on early Spanish silver dollar coins circulated amongst the colonists. These words were accompanied by a depiction of the two columns. The Pillars of Hercules have been linked symbolically with the two columns that supposedly flanked the entrance to the Temple of Poseidon in Atlantis. They were represented by the two pillars outside the Temple of Hercules on the island of Tyre, which was the architectural model for the Temple of Solomon. Also, the two pillars outside of Solomon's Temple, named Jachin and Boaz, play a very important role in Masonic ritual.

The Latin words for the Pillars of Hercules were "Columnae Herculis", the "columnae" being the plural of "columna", meaning "column" or "pillar." This is further related to "columen", meaning "that which is raised on high." Is the basis for yet another Latin word, "columba", meaning a "dove" or "pigeon." Doves hold a very significant

place in religious traditions from throughout the world and throughout history. They were the sacred companions of the Middle Eastern goddesses Semiramis and Ishtar, the Egyptian Isis, the Roman Venus, and the Greek Pallas Athena. In Judaism and Christianity they were associated with peace.

One reason for this is the dove's appearance in the story of the Flood of Noah. According to *Genesis*, when Noah's Ark was perched atop Mt. Ararat, Noah sent out a dove to survey the land. When it came back with an olive branch in its beak, he knew that the waters had begun to subside, and that it would soon be safe to leave the Ark. (It is interesting, then, that the front of America's Great Seal does feature a bird, in this case an eagle, holding an olive branch.)

Another story involving a dove, this time from Greek myth, evokes many of the same themes. It is part of the saga of Jason and the Argonauts, sailing in their ship, the Argo, in search of the Golden Fleece. ("Argo" is related to the word "Ark.") Their ship was attempting to pass through the Symplegades, two rocks marking the passage from the Black Sea to the Mediterranean Sea that were continually smashing against each other. Jason, the pilot of the Argo, sent a dove through the passage to see if it was possible to make it across without getting smashed. The bird made it safely through with the help of the Pallas Athena, and afterwards so did the ship. Later on, the dove, named Columba, was placed in the sky by Athena as a constellation, where it forever guides the Argo, which was also made into a constellation. These two star clusters are often associated symbolically with Noah's Ark.

It is interesting that the continents of both North and South America were originally called "Columbia", after their supposed discoverer, Christopher Columbus.

The name is retained in the name of the South American country of Columbia, the Canadian province British Columbia, the Columbia Gorge between the U.S. states of Washington and Oregon, and of course, the U.S. capitol, Washington, District of Columbia. Just like the Athena of the Greeks, the Marianne of the French, and the Britannia of England, Columbia became personified as the national goddess of the United States, depicted on numerous coins and government monuments. On early designs for the Great Seal of the United States, artist and Freemason William Barton had even included a depiction of Columbia holding a dove.

So is there any possible link between Columbia, Columbus, and Columba the dove? Well, the word "columbus" is simply a masculine form of "columba", and thus means "a male dove." Could the explorer have been given this name because he was sent out by the king and queen of Spain to explore beyond the Pillars of Hercules in search of a new passage to India, just as the dove Columba was sent ahead of the Argo to seek passage through the Symplegades?

Many authors have suggested that Christopher Columbus was working under the influence of a secret society of neo-Templars or proto-Masons. Citing a 1937 book by Spyros Cateras called *Christopher Columbus was a Greek*, Manly P. Hall asserted that "the real name of Columbus was Prince Nikolaos Ypsilantis, and he came from the Greek island of Chios." This is in contrast to the common understanding that Columbus was Italian. It is also commonly believed that Columbus was, like most people in his time, illiterate. But Manly. Hall believed the exact opposite, writing in *The Secret Destiny of America* that:

All modern research on the life of Columbus tends to prove that he was not a man of humble station, poor, or uneducated… Columbus is emerging as a man of impressive personality with marked abilities as a leader and organizer and an excellent classical education.

Many of us were taught in school that Columbus could not even write his own name, but rather signed his contract with Ferdinand and Isabella the way all illiterate people did in those days – with an "X." The truth, according to Manly Hall, is much different. His signature did contain the letter "X", twice in fact. But it went like this:

S

SAS

XMY

X POFERENS

This purportedly stood for a cipher which could be interpreted to mean: "Salvus Christus, Maria, Yosephus – Christopher" – the names of Christ, Mary, Joseph, and then his own. As Manly Hall put it, "The signature of Columbus composed of letters curiously arranged and combined with cabalistic designs, certainly conveys more than is inherent in the signature of a private citizen."

By this he means that Columbus was acting as the agent of a secret society, specifically the same "society of unknown philosophers" which Hall believed was later led by Sir Francis Bacon. Perhaps significantly, Bacon mentioned in *The New Atlantis*

that in the fictional Bensalem stood a statue of Christopher Columbus on display. A possible third connection between Columbus and Bacon can be found in Manly Hall's report that Columbus "was inspired for his voyage by Plato's account of the lost Atlantis and the records of early navigation to the West… Columbus sailed his little ships for a land which by the writings of ancient philosophers he knew existed."

Indeed, Columbus may have had direct, inside access to maps and records of the voyages of Prince Henry Sinclair to America. According to several sources, Columbus' father-in-law was, like Prince Henry himself, a member of the Knights Templar offshoot group, the Knights of Christ. Some sources even claim that Columbus' father-in-law was a captain on one of Henry Sinclair's ships, thus providing Columbus with direct, second-hand knowledge of how to sail to America. It may be significant that Columbus' ships sailed under banners showing a red cross on a white field, one of the symbols of the Knights Templar.

In addition to these possible influences, Manly P. Hall described a mysterious, unnamed stranger who purportedly influenced Columbus, and was present on his first trip to America. As Hall told it:

… in browsing among old records, I have run across a dim figure involved in the life of Columbus, a strange man who seems to have served the explorer in the capacity of counselor. Nothing very tangible has yet come to light, but it is hinted that this mysterious person accompanied Columbus on his first voyage. He was not included in the list of mariners. He did not return, but remained in the West Indies; beyond this, no further mention in made of him.

This person was, according to Hall, Columbus' handler and controller, guiding him in his work on behalf of the "society of unknown philosophers."

So is it possible that, prior to his voyage, Columbus had already been tipped off about America, via a network of secret societies, and that it was not a passage to India he was seeking, but rather the "New Atlantis" later envisioned by Francis Bacon? A provocative passage from Ignatius Donnelly's classic, *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World*, seems to indicate this:

When Columbus sailed to discover a new world, or re-discover an old one, he took his departure from a Phoenician seaport [the island of Chios], founded by that great race two thousand five hundred years previously. This Atlantean sailor, with his Phoenician features, sailing from an Atlantean port, simply re-opened the path of commerce and colonization which had been closed when Plato's island sunk in the sea. And it is a curious fact that Columbus had the antediluvian world in his mind's eye even then, for when he reached the mouth of the Orinoco he thought it was the river Gihon, that flowed out of Paradise, and he wrote home to Spain, 'There are here great indications suggesting the proximity of the earthly Paradise, for not only does it correspond in mathematical position with the opinion of the holy and learned theologians, but all other signs concur to make it probable.'

In a similar vein, Michael Howard writes of Columbus that:

... [he] believed when he landed in America that God had led him to the New Jerusalem.

The name “America” for the two Columbian continents is of ambiguous origin. The common belief is that the word comes from the name of Amerigo Vespucci, an Italian mapmaker who created maps based on Columbus’ “discoveries.” Supposedly the continents were named by accident when people mistook Vespucci’s signature on the map to be a place-name. However, other authors have suggested that it was no accident at all. Prior to being hired for exploration by Ferdinand and Isabella of Spain, Columbus had been under the employ of King Rene d’Anjou, the duke of Lorraine in France. D’Anjou’s family was highly connected to the old families of the Knights Templar, and to the esoteric circles that would eventually evolve into Freemasonry. Vespucci was employed by d’Anjou for a time as well, and it was at King Rene’s salon in Sion-Vaudemont where atlas books containing Vespucci’s maps were produced. The editor of one of these atlases wrote in it that the newly-discovered continents *should* be named after Amerigo Vespucci. Author John Noble Wilford, in *The Mysterious History of Columbus*, suggests that Columbus may have found America with inside information provided by Rene d’Anjou, and that the editor of the atlas may have named the place after Vespucci in order to deny Columbus credit for the discovery. In this version of the story, d’Anjou was angry at Columbus for using the information about America to benefit a rival royal bloodline, the Hapsburgs of Spain.

However, some authors believe that the word “America” has nothing to do with Amerigo Vespucci, but rather that it is a word with a hidden meaning known only to the secret societies that settled the continent. In 1895 the magazine *Lucifer*, published by

H.P. Blavatsky's Theosophical Society, ran an article alleging that the name came from a native Peruvian word "Amaruca", meaning "Land of the Plumed Serpent", a reference to the tall, white, bearded man-god whom native South American legends say brought civilization to the continent in antediluvian times. Manly P. Hall also believed that this was the origin of the word "America."

But more contemporary Masonic historians, Christopher Knight and Robert Lomas, have postulated in their book *The Hiram Key* a quite different origin for the word "America." They connect it to the Mandeans, a Middle Eastern Gnostic sect influenced by the teachings of John the Baptist. The Mandeans were also connected with the Nasoreans, or "Qumranians", whom Knight and Lomas believe were responsible for depositing numerous secret scrolls beneath King Herod's Temple in Jerusalem (built on the foundations of Solomon's Temple.) Knight and Lomas believe that these scrolls were later discovered by the Knights Templar.

In the writings of the historian Josephus, it was recorded that the Mandeans believed that good people went to Paradise after death, to a land located West, beyond the ocean, and which was marked by a star called "Merica." The authors speculated the following:

We knew the Mandeans were the direct descendants of the Nasoreans, who we had also established were the same group as the Qumranians, the people who buried their sacred scrolls under Herod's Temple. It follows that if the forefathers of the Mandeans were the authors of the scrolls which the Templars unearthed, the mystical land beneath a star called 'Merica' might have been recorded in their secret writings. In short, it seemed

possible that the Templars learnt about a wonderful land beneath the bright lone star 'Merica' from the scrolls, and if so, there is a strong possibility they sailed west to find it.

Whatever the case may be with regards to the origin of the words "Columbia" and "America", it seems fairly obvious that their development was not accidental. Perhaps the "mer" in "America" refers to the sea, as this syllable is part of the word for "sea' many languages. "America", then, may essentially mean "land beyond the sea", beyond the Straights of Gibraltar and the Pillars of Hercules. This root syllable is also part of the word "mercantile", originally referring to the traffic of goods by ship. It was mercantilism that quickly made America wealthy, prosperous, and dominant throughout the whole world. First, the discovery of the land beyond the pillars made the monarchs of the Old World rich. Then later, with the help of Freemasons, and with the development of the American dollar, wealth began to flow in the other direction.

Chapter Four: The Almighty Dollar

When Columbus discovered the Americas, purportedly while searching for a new route to India, he failed to acquire the vast quantities of silks and spices that he had been hoping to find in the East. However, the Spanish explorers who followed after him found that these "Indians" possessed treasures even greater than those of their counterparts in the East: voluminous hoards of silver and gold. To the natives, these metals were considered sacred because they were associated with the Sun and the Moon, whom they worshipped as gods. Thus, for example, the Aztecs and the Incas of Central America covered their religious temples and royal residences with gold. There were statues and other artifacts made of gold to be found everywhere.

The Spaniards quickly and easily conquered these Indian tribes. Then they seized the natives' gold and silver artifacts, and made them into ingots which were shipped back to Spain. Within fifty years Spain had processed all of the Indians' existing treasure into coins. They then began tapping the rich mines in Central and South America, with the help of labor provided by the conquered natives. This kept the treasure flowing back into Europe for almost another 300 years. The Portuguese, who also colonized the Americas, got into the business as well, and in 1695 began mining gold from Brazil using slaves imported from Africa. Between the years 1500 and 1800, it is estimated that about 165,000 tons of silver and 2846 tons of gold were shipped to Europe from the Americas, providing 70 percent of the world's gold output and 85 percent of its silver output. This was an unprecedented amount, and the sudden influx had an unprecedented impact upon the European economy. The first result became known as "the Great Price Revolution",

where between the years 1540 and 1640, prices for goods and labor in Europe rose by 400 percent.

There is an economic rule that was little understood at this time: whenever there is too much money chasing too few goods, inflation will occur. In this case, the silver and gold from the New World was minted into coins for Europe. These coins were used to buy goods and services on a previously unseen scale. This raised the demand for those goods and services, and thus, the prices. The more gold and silver there was coming into the continent, the less valuable it was. Many of the goods being purchased with these coins were imported from France, England, Holland, and the East, while Spain and Portugal had few goods to export in exchange. Thus much of the gold and silver left these countries almost as quickly as it came.

For most of Europe, despite the inflation, the long-term economic effects of this sudden influx of coinage produced monumental changes in the structure of society. Before this, Europe was still shaking off the trappings of a feudalist society, with an economy based mostly on barter (although trade with coinage had been taking place with the help of Italian merchants, and before them, the Knights Templar, as I shall explain). At this time, many families still worked small plots of farmland owned by a noble lord to earn a subsistence living. They worked desperately each year to produce what they needed to eat, pay their taxes, pay their church tithes, and to pay their rent to their lord. Sometimes, through bartering, they were able to acquire other goods. Gold and silver coins were not being used by everyone. But after the colonization of America by Spain and Portugal, coins began to be used to pay for most things. This opened up the

possibilities of economic exchange immensely. As Jack Weatherford explains in *A History of Money*:

The discovery of the great wealth of the Americas produced [an] immediate impact on the lives of common people… Professions that had traditionally depended upon money such as soldiers, artists, musicians, and tutors, now became even more focused on payment rather than on exchange of services such as room and board or rations paid in bread, alcohol and salt… Particularly in the seventeenth century, the new allocation of wealth gave rise to a middle class of merchants. They in turn spawned entirely new professions centered on money. As banking expanded, brokers appeared who specialized in the buying and selling of anything from real estate to shares in a trading voyage to China. Insurance men specialized in spreading out the risk of one voyage over many.

The result, more or less, of this influx of gold and silver was the creation of the merchant middle class. It allowed merchants and artisans to trade their goods more freely, to expand their overall wealth. Thus they could buy not only more goods and services, but also land and titles. Newly wealthy merchants could even buy their way into a marriage with a lady from a previously impregnable noble class. It was the greatest stride yet in the direction of toppling Europe's old order in favor of the system that would eventually be called Capitalism. The success of Capitalism in the future would be largely attributed to the success of the American dollar. But the dollar was not originally an American currency.

In the year 1516, just five years before the Spaniards began looting silver and gold from America, Count Stephan Hieronymus Schlick discovered major silver deposits near his ancestral home in Jachymov, Bohemia (now in the Czech Republic). His house, by the way, was called "the Castle of Joy", the same name given in the medieval Grail romance *Perlesvaus* to the Castle of the Holy Grail in which lived the fabled Fisher King. Even more interesting is that the name of the title character in that story, Perlesvaus (also called "Perceval" or "Parzival" in other versions) allegedly means "pierce the valley", and it was in the valley of Joachimstal in Jachymov that Count Schlick discovered his silver. Schlick did indeed pierce the valley, and he began not only mining the silver, but minting it into coins as well. These coins soon began being circulated all over Europe, where they became known as "talers", after the "tal" or "valley" from which they were minted.

In 1527, Georgius Agricola was hired as the "mine physician" for Joachimstal. Agricola had spent his education studying alchemy – the supposed art of turning lead into gold, usually the purview of magicians and occultists. Over the years he had become frustrated with his studies, but, as Jason Goodwin writes in the book *Greenback*, "in Joachimstal… he saw something more interesting: incontrovertible proof that men could turn dross into silver. Mining, he decided, was what alchemy was meant to be." And although obviously mining had been practiced among civilized man since the earliest days of history, it had never been properly studied or written about in a scientific manner. Agricola's *De Re Metallica* became the first such treatise, and its author became known as the "Father of Mineralogy."

As the talers of Joachimstal began to spread, their name became incorporated into many different languages, and eventually the name “talers”, or some derivation thereof, became the standard term for any large silver coin, especially in the Teutonic states. One taler, featuring the bust of Austrian Empress Maria Theresa, was issued in 1773, and became the most widely circulated taler in history. (Interestingly, Maria Theresa was married to the duke of Lorraine, the same title held by Rene d’Anjou, mentioned in the previous chapter as an employer of both Christopher Columbus and Amerigo Vespucci. The duke then became Holy Roman Emperor Francis I.)

This particular coin - the Maria Theresa dollar - was used all over the world, and was so loved that after Theresa’s death in 1780, governments continued to have them made, bearing the date of her death, up until as late as 1975. Even after the Holy Roman Empire, which had originally produced the coin, was abolished in 1805 by Napoleon, and the mint that produced them was closed, Napoleon had the coins reissued from another mint, exactly as they had been, bearing the 1780 date, and the mint mark of the original mint. They continued to be made in the Austrian Republic until 1937, when the country was captured by Hitler’s Germany, but Austria resumed making them between 1956 and 1975.

The Maria Theresa taler carried so much prestige that in some places, especially the Middle East and Northern Africa, they became synonymous with the concept of money itself, which is why Mussolini’s Italian government was forced to begin minting them after they took over Abyssinia (now Ethiopia) in 1935. Belgium, Czechoslovakia, Russia, England, and India all produced these exact same coins in the post-WWII era. Such is the power of the “coin of the realm”, to literally define reality. Both “realm” and

"reality" have their roots in the word "real", meaning "royal" in Spanish and other languages. This is because the monarch defines what is "real" in his or her kingdom. As I have already mentioned, up until the creation of the United States, coins usually bore the face of the reigning monarch, and thus money became a powerful method for the monarch to remind his subjects of his ever-present influence. (This is still being done with British currency.) It was as though the monarch were putting his or her stamp of approval upon what was previously just a piece of metal, making it "real money." Every times a person uses the coin, he is transacting within the bounds of a system made "real" by the king's "rule." This connection is made explicit in the names of certain currencies, such as the Spanish "real", and the "rials" or "riyals" produced in Oman, Yemen, Saudi Arabia, and Qatar.

In 1497, not long after their hireling Christopher Columbus had returned from his first voyage to America, King Ferdinand and Queen Isabella of the Spanish House of Habsburg had a coin issued called a "peso", the value of which was eight "reales." When the Spaniards opened a mint in Mexico (soon to be one of the largest in the world), they began circulating the previously-mentioned coins featuring the Pillars of Hercules, and the words "Plus Ultra" ("More Beyond"). It was a lucky circumstance for the British colonists in America. For in the year 1695, the British government stopped exporting coins outside of its borders, even to its own colonies. Thus, the British colonists in North America were forced to acquire coins from the Spanish colonies in Mexico. The "Plus Ultra" peso became the most widely used coin amongst the thirteen British colonies, although they preferred to call them "pieces of eight" (referring to the eight reales they contained), or, more commonly, "dollars."

We can thank the early Scottish settlers in North America for the current name of the U.S. currency. Many of the early colonists were Scottish, eager to escape the direct English influence on the politics of their homeland. Many were also there because they had been expelled from the British Isles by the English government for being rabble-rousers and malcontents. These Scottish immigrants contributed greatly to the anti-British sentiment that began to develop in the colonies. Many of them fought in the Revolution, and contributed to the formation of the new republic. Of these, many were Freemasons, and Jacobites – that is, followers of the Masonically-aligned Stuart dynasty of Scotland. This royal house was directly related to Prince Henry the Navigator, a descendant of a family of famous Knights Templar, who purportedly sailed to America on a secret pre-Columbus mission on behalf of the Templar offshoot group the Knights of Christ.

In 1567, Scots Stuart King James VI commissioned the minting of the "sword dollar", so called because on the back it displayed the outline of a sword, a well-known motif of the Templars which often marked the graves of dead knights. In 1578, the same king issued a dollar bearing the image of a thistle, the symbol of his royal house. The Scottish royals chose to name their currency the "dollar", rather than the "Scottish pound sterling", as a challenge to the authority of the English monarchy. As Jack Weatherford explains in *A History of Money*:

The Scots used the name 'dollar' to distinguish their currency, and thereby their country and themselves, more clearly from their domineering English neighbors to the south. Thus, from very early usage, the word 'dollar' carried with it a certain anti-English or anti-authoritarian bias that many Scottish settlers took with them to their new homes in

the Americas and other British colonies. The emigration of Scots accounts for much of the subsequent popularity of the word 'dollar' in British colonies around the world.

So in adopting the Spanish dollar as the American dollar, which the U.S. Congress did on July 6, 1785, the founders of America were being thoroughly *American*, because they were being anti-British. The U.S. did not establish its own mint until 1794. Even after that, since gold and silver were hard to come by, and the minting process expensive, the U.S. continued to circulate mostly Spanish silver dollars throughout much of the 1800s. So even though the U.S. did issue its own coins, the Spanish "pillar dollar" remained the "coin of the realm."

It is from the image on the pillar dollar that the dollar sign ($) is said by some historians to have been derived, originally made with two slashes through the "S" instead of one, as is commonly done now. The reason for the supposed relationship is because on the pillar dollar the words "Plus Ultra" were written on banners surrounding each of the two pillars. So the dollar sign would then represent a pillar, or pillars, encoiled within a banner. This would then encompass, within a simple hieroglyph, all which is implied about America by the words "Plus Ultra" and the Pillars of Hercules – that America is the great New World dreamt of by the philosophers of old. The symbol is though to have been chosen for the dollar by Thomas Jefferson, who certainly would have understood its import. Jefferson was also responsible, according to author Jason Goodwin, for deciding that the dollar would be divided into 100 cents, and thus based on the decad, or ten. He reportedly chose this because he believed that this was the unit of measure used in pre-diluvian Atlantis.

Nonetheless, I think that there is more to the dollar sign than a representation of the Pillars of Hercules and an allusion to America as the "New Atlantis." I have always thought it to be reminiscent of the Caduceus, the magical wand of Hermes, a staff with a serpent entwined upon it, which has long been a symbol of alchemical transformation and healing (thus its use by the medical profession). Author David Ovason, in *The Secret Symbols of the Dollar Bill*, concurs. He also adds that a symbol almost identical to the dollar sign is used in astrology to denote Mercury, the Roman version of Hermes, and the patron deity of alchemists. This theory appears to be supported by the fact that there is a relief on the side of the Federal Reserve building in Washington, D.C. entitled *America and the Federal Reserve Board* (sculpted by artist John Gregory in 1937), which shows the national goddess, Columbia, holding a caduceus in one hand, and the seal of the Federal Reserve in the other.

There are other theories on the origin of the dollar sign. Modern Masonic scholars Christopher Knight and Robert Lomas, in their book *The Hiram Key*, note that the dollar was officially adopted by the U.S. on October 13, 1792, the anniversary of the arrest of the Knights Templar, and the same day in which President George Washington laid the foundation stone of the White House, in a Masonic ceremony, in the newly-adopted U.S. capitol, Washington, D.C. The authors then offer their own analysis of the meaning of the dollar sign:

…The 'S' was borrowed from an old Spanish coin but the two vertical lines were the Nasorean pillars of 'Mishpat' and 'Tsedeq', better known to the Masonic founders of the

United States as 'Boaz' and 'Jachin', the pillars of the porchway to King Solomon's Temple.

This is an important detail, for as our study of the ancient secrets behind America's money progresses, we will find the pillars of Jachin and Boaz, as well as Solomon's Temple itself, increasingly relevant.

Chapter Five: The Spirit of 1776

When in 1787, the U.S. issued its first coins, they were pennies, and they bore some unusual markings. On the front was a sun over a sundial, with the words "Mind Your Business", and "Fugio" (a Latin word meaning "I fly"). It was a reminder to be industrious, and to make good use of one's time, because time is money, and time (represented by the sundial), flies if you don't keep your nose to the grindstone. On the other side were thirteen circles linked in a chain, along with the words "We are one." We might not appreciate being chastised by our money like that in modern times, and perhaps people did not like it much back then, but within this morally self-righteous maxim, we can detect a hint of what would become the foremost trait of the character of the United States. It was President Calvin Coolidge who once famously said, "The business of the United States is business." And there can be little doubt that the dollar itself - the sheer power, and the overall stability of it - is largely responsible for America's success. In *Greenback: The Almighty Dollar and the Invention of America*, Jason Goodwin writes:

... the dollar seemed to do the work that class or creed did in Europe. It was America's bishop, its king, its squire. What Michael Chevalier in 1839 called a 'passion for money' was not a greedy passion, in the main: it simply reflected the importance of dollars and cents in a society that had no other standard to work on…

For the U.S. had only just emerged from an exhausting cycle of theological debate that rivaled in its way the acrimonious religious conflicts that battered Europe in

the sixteenth century, and produced the nation state. America's theology was a secular one. It revolved around money and liberty, promise and return, profit and loss.

It revolved, in fact, around the miracle of money.

The money religion is known as the worship of Mammon, and the Almighty Dollar is the supreme being.

The idea of the United States, and the values inherent in American culture, have become almost synonymous with the idea of free market Capitalism. It cannot be a coincidence that the Declaration of Independence was signed in the same year that economist Adam Smith's book *A Wealth of Nations* was published, the definitive work on the laws and merits of a Capitalist economy. Smith came up with the idea of what he called "the invisible hand", his term for the sum total of the individual forces that, collectively, drive the economy, especially the needs and desires of the human individuals participating in the economy. In Smith's philosophy, the invisible hand guides the laissez faire (or free market) economy (output, price, and profit) towards the greatest common good as individuals act in their own self-interest to "pursue happiness" - that is, wealth, prosperity and comfort. (We should recall that the early drafts of the Declaration of Independence asserted the colonists' right to "life, liberty and the pursuit of property", where "property" was later changed to "happiness.")

In Smith's book he noted that a merchant or artisan, out of a selfish motive for gain and profit, produces, not the sort of products he likes or enjoys necessarily, but what the public wants or needs: i.e., whatever is likely to sell. He sells that product at as high a price as he possibly can, again out of selfish motive. But the buying public has selfish

motives as well. They will not pay more for the same thing when they can get it cheaper somewhere else, so the merchant can only charge as much as they are willing to pay. Supply and demand dictate that the needs of the public will always be supplied at the lowest price possible. Thus, by selfishly pursuing their own desires, everybody wins, and the Capitalist economy inherently works ever-increasingly towards the greatest public good. The investment of capital anywhere in an economy causes overall wealth (the, G.D.P., or Gross Domestic Product) to grow with no limit. As Smith writes, a man:

…neither intends to promote the publick interest, nor knows how much he is promoting it… he intends only his own gain, and he is in this, as in many other cases, led by an invisible hand to promote an end which has no part of his intention.

Adam Smith's philosophy was, in a way, the economic outgrowth of Newtonian physics. It was part of the trend of "Enlightenment" philosophy that was sweeping the intelligentsia of Europe during the eighteenth century, although it had begun in the previous century with thinkers like Sir Francis Bacon, Isaac Newton, John Locke, Rene Descartes and Voltaire. It was based on the idea that the universe could be understood by the human mind, studied, quantified, and analyzed using reason and science, and that the whole could be comprehended by analyzing its parts. Indeed, "science", as such, had not existed previously, and philosophers (the closest equivalent to scientists) were simply expected to use their writings and studies to confirm the teachings of the Catholic Church. When the Protestant Reformation, and the creation of the Anglican Church, broke the absolute power of the Pope enough to allow freedom of thought to spread

amongst the educated, this new "Enlightenment philosophy" was developed. Part of this worldview involved the somewhat naïve belief that human nature was inherently good, but that social institutions squashed this inner nature, and that if society were structured so that men could freely follow their natural instincts and desires, society as a whole would prosper. Adam Smith's economics were based on this presumption as well. Yes, man's instincts are selfish, but selfishness is inherently good.

These views formed part of the basis for the anti-monarchist, republican political movements that were spreading all over Europe, and it certainly formed the basis for the political thought of the founders of the United States. Enlightenment philosophy can essentially be considered Masonic philosophy, with much of the occult mumbo jumbo or traditional Masonic thought simply translated into modern "scientific" terminology. Certainly, much of the Enlightenment was fostered by the Royal Society, a body of scientists and thinkers founded by Sir Francis Bacon that was sponsored by the British government. A search through history books will confirm that most of the Royal Society scientists, and indeed, most of the Enlightenment philosophers, were members of either the Masonic brotherhood, or some similar offshoot. As Michael Baigent and Richard Leigh wrote in *The Temple and the Lodge*:

Without eighteenth-century Freemasonry, the principles at the very heart of the conflict – liberty, equality, brotherhood, tolerance, the 'rights of man', would not have had the currency they did. True, those principles owe much to Locke, Hume, Adam Smith and les philosophes in France. But most, if not all, of those thinkers were either Freemasons themselves, moved in Freemasonic circles or were influenced by Freemasonry.

So Capitalism, as an economic philosophy, is an outgrowth of the Enlightenment era. But what does “Capitalism” mean? The word comes from the Latin “capitalis”, meaning “of the head”, and the relation of this concept to the later financial connotation of the word “capital” is unclear. Its first use in that sense was actually the circa 1630 word “capitale”, meaning “stock or property.” The basic building unit of capitalism is the corporation, and these first started, not surprisingly, in the 1600s. The development of the corporation was spurned on by the improvement of sailing and navigation technology, and the ensuing boom of the shipping industry. This is why the root word “mer”, meaning “sea” is at the heart of the word “mercantile”, and why we still say “shipping” when we are referring to the transport of goods, no matter the method. The improvement of seafaring led to the blossoming of a new form of economy. Now merchants could sail to India, Asia, Africa, or even the Americas, and trade an unprecedented variety of goods, with an unprecedented volume of gold and silver coin available to aid those transactions.

But ships and crew were still expensive, and the voyages dangerous. If one trip went bad, an investor could find himself in debt for life, and worse, in debtor’s prison. So the government of Holland, a leading power amongst the sea merchants of Europe, came up with a novel concept by which numerous merchants could pool their resources and minimize their individual investment risk. They created a “corporation”: a group of investors who would collectively invest in a business venture to form a company, which then became a “legal person” according to a declaration in the company’s charter, granted by the government. This “person” was then able to enter into legal contracts and business ventures, just like a regular person. Only there was one important difference: unlike a real

person, the corporation could not be thrown into debtor's prison. Indeed, there was, and is still, no real way to force a corporation to pay its debts. When the corporation determines that it is no longer viable, it declares bankruptcy and, more often not, leaves those to whom it owes money holding the bag. This arrangement worked out well for the Dutch merchants of the seventeenth century, and soon the idea was picked up by other countries, like Britain. Thus the formation of the famous "British East India Company", as well as its rival, the "Dutch East India Company" was possible.

In a corporation, the total worth of the company is divided into "shares", which are sold to the investors as percentages of the company's worth – slices of the pie. The more shares each investor owns, the greater his slice of the pie. The price, or value, of each share fluctuates along with the overall value of the company. Dividends from the company's profits would be paid to the investors annually in relation to the number of shares that they owned. At any time, an investor may sell his shares to another investor. It did not take the Dutch merchants long to realize that these shares of a corporation could be traded almost as a form of currency, just like any fiat money. This led to the creation of the first stock exchange in Holland in the year 1631, a year after "capitale" began being used as a financial term.

Prior to the invention of corporations, the rise of Capitalism was foreshadowed by a slow economic revolution that took place between the fifth and thirteenth centuries. This was a result of the aforementioned phenomenon of "mercantilism": the trade of goods overseas via the newly-developing shipping technology for the explicit purpose of turning a profit in coin, not merely to barter. This practice paved the way for Capitalism, as merchants learned to buy goods in coin at one place and then sell them at a higher

price somewhere else. Mercantilism originated in Rome and the Middle East, and was widespread throughout the Roman Empire. Indeed, the spread of the Roman Empire and the spread of mercantile trade were really one and the same process.

But when the Roman Empire fell, mercantilism fizzled. The economy of what was now Europe contracted and localized. This led to an overall decline in the use of coin for trade. As the "Dark Ages" took root, economics, education, health, and scientific progress came to a halt. The system of Feudalism began to develop, in which only the nobility had access to, or even need of, money. Everyone else worked small farms to produce what they and their feudal lords required.

Yet throughout Europe's Dark Ages, the cultures of North Africa, the Middle East, Asia, and even Islamic Spain continued their tradition of mercantilism, and continued to trade in coin. Not only that, while the Europeans were devolving scientifically (with the help of repressive Catholic Church policies), Middle Eastern cultures were developing newer, more sophisticated methods of sailing, minting coins, calculating money, and otherwise doing business. Europe would languish in its own ignorance until, in the eleventh to thirteenth centuries, an empire of enlightened warrior-priests would rediscover the secrets of the East, and lead Europe out of the dark, onto the path to the Renaissance. A large part of this involved the rediscovery of the power of money. I am speaking, of course, of the Knights Templar, forefathers to the brotherhood of Freemasons, and the inventors of modern banking.

PART II

Chapter Six: The Death of the West and the Birth of the Temple

The rise and fall of the Roman Empire mirrored the rise and fall of the Roman mercantile economy, and in fact, Rome's decline was largely caused by a decline in trade. It was the ancient Lydians who had first begun the minting of coins, but it was the enterprising Greeks who spread the trade of coins around the ancient world to all of the many nations with which they did business. The Romans, who succeeded the Greeks as the next great culture, took it even further. As the expanding empire conquered more and more foreign lands and appropriated them into their economy, they built what Jack Weatherford describes in *A History of Money* as:

…the world's first empire organized around money. Whereas the great Egyptian, Persian, and other traditional empires had largely rejected money in favor of government as the main organizing principle, Rome promoted the use of money and organized all of its affairs around the new commodity.

But this same process would eventually become their undoing. Like the Spaniards who would later appropriate American lands into their empire, the Romans fell into the same trap. Their conquests made them rich, but the decadent emperors rapidly spent their money importing luxury goods from these and other foreign lands. They purchased much, but they exported little, and thus Rome's wealth flowed in only one direction – out of Rome. To make matters worse, they now had a huge empire to maintain, which was expensive, and they also continued their military efforts to expand this empire, which meant hiring mercenary armies.

To pay for everything, one emperor, Nero, tried to increase the amount of money available by reducing the silver and gold content of the coins, and making them smaller. All this resulted in, of course, was inflation, and each of the coins was now worth less than it was before. To get more of these devalued coins into the government coffers, taxes were increased greatly, while welfare programs were devised to keep the poor from rioting. As any student of trickle-down economics will tell you, such actions stifle growth and discourage enterprise. But in the latter days of the Roman empire, the effects of this would forever alter the very economic system with which society operated. They slouched from a relatively free society with a free market and an open class system (with class defined by monetary wealth) towards a closed, repressive, and highly stratified caste system based upon the privilege of noble birth. As John Weatherford explains:

Like people anywhere, once the tax burdens became too high in comparison to the benefits and services offered by the government, the Roman subjects found ways to avoid taxation. Commerce declined. People produced more of what they needed for themselves and traded less on the open market. While the poor suffered from heavy property taxes, the latifundia, the great landed estates, grew greatly, particularly those that had been granted a tax-free status. The high taxes induced more peasants to abandon their land and move to the tax-free estates where they at least had a steady supply of food and the essential goods produced on the estate itself.

In other words, society was slouching towards Feudalism, which would soon become the West's new economic system. The way was further paved for a feudal state

when Emperor Diocletian initiated laws forbidding farmers from selling their land, and dictating that all sons had to follow in the same profession as their fathers. Thus generations were locked into the same occupation on the same piece of land. Money all but vanished from society. The government was still minting highly-devalued coins for commerce, but refused to accept them as payment for taxes. Soon there was so little money around, and what there was inspired so little confidence, that the government found it had to conscript people into slavery to complete state projects. They also persecuted Christians within their domains, and appropriated what wealth they had.

Things took an interesting turn with the rule of Emperor Constantine from 306 to 337. It was he who, after experiencing a religious vision, and decided to make Christianity the new religion of the state. Some cynical historians choose to say that Constantine was just an opportunist who wanted to use Christianity for his own ends, and they say that he remained an unrepentant pagan who only "truly" converted to Christ on his deathbed. But to be specific, the cult that Constantine remained loyal to was that of Sol Invictus, or "the Invincible Sun", in which the Sun was revered as a symbol of the omnipotent God. I submit to you that this does not a "pagan" make.

At any rate, Constantine contributed much to the historical foundations of Christianity. He issued the Edict of Milan in 313, which gave Christians the right to practice their religion freely, and returned their confiscated property. In 325, he convened the Council of Nicea, which developed the Nicean Creed, a major basis for all mainstream Christian thought today. Because of these actions, he gained the moniker "the thirteenth Apostle." He then proceeded to have many of the pagan temples of Rome looted for their gold and silver artifacts, which he melted down and had minted into

coins. These he used to finance the building of a new, Christianized capitol in the East on the Black Sea, which he named after himself: Constantinople. In doing so, he diverted all future investment and trade to the new capitol as well. This was the beginning of what would become known to historians as the “Byzantine” (not the “Roman”) empire, although the people of the new Eastern Empire still called themselves “Romanians” at the time. Byzantium continued to flourish, but the old Roman Empire collapsed. It was sacked by barbarians in 476, and thus began what was known as the “Dark Ages” of the West.

With no real money in circulation, Feudalism became the new economic system. From 476 until the emergence of the “Renaissance” (put by some historians at about 1350 B.C.), peasants worked on large manors owned by nobles, where every effort was made to keep the manor self-sufficient. On the manor, they produced their own food, clothes, and tools, and paid their taxes in these goods. Everyone lived and died on the same manor, just as their father had done before them. Reading, writing, math, and every form of learning or science virtually ceased. The only way to learn these things was to join the clergy, which is why the Catholic monastic orders became the new bastions of the intelligentsia. Because of their overall ignorance, people were reluctant to use money for trade, as most people did not know how to figure numbers at all. Learning and trade continued in the Byzantine East, but in the West, it was dead.

The only people who were lending out money at all in Europe were Jews. For many years, Jews had been banned from practicing any profession other than money-lending. This was not done just because Jews were “good with money.” The Catholic credo held the lending of money upon usury to be sinful, but since Jews were already

damned to Hell in the eyes of the Church, they were encouraged to take on the dirty job of money-lending for the rest of the community. In England, William Rufus, son of William the Conqueror, forbade Jews from converting to Christianity, which, as Paul Morrison writes in *The Poetics of Fascism: Ezra Pound, T.S. Eliot, Paul de Man*, would "rid him of valuable property and give him only a subject." But when Jews were expelled from many communities, of and on, during the pogroms of the Middle Ages (sparked periodically when people began to realize how much money they owed to the Jews), these communities lost their money-lenders.

Luckily, however, the Holy See was inspired by God to grant the Knights Templar immunity from this anti-usury injunction. As I mentioned earlier, briefly, the Templars, or as they were officially titled, the Poor Knights of the Temple of Solomon, were an order of crusading warrior-monks thought to have been the lineal predecessors of the Order of Freemasons. Formed in the early twelfth century, like many other knightly orders which formed during the Crusades, they were an elite fighting force of Catholic monks at the forefront of the European struggle to capture and control the Holy Land. But in addition to fighting, they were also in charge of fulfilling many practical roles for the community, among them, money-lending. The Church allowed the Templars to charge interest on loans at an even higher rate than Jews had been allowed to. In fact, they were granted a charter that basically established the Templars as a law unto themselves, accountable to no one but the Pope. Thus they were able to operate autonomously at their various bases throughout Europe. They even had the right to establish their own sovereign country, which is essentially what they were doing in the Holy Land when they helped to create the Latin Kingdom of Jerusalem.

The Knights Templar had a very interesting entrance policy. Not only did new initiates pledge lifelong fidelity to the Order, but they also took very stringent vows of celibacy, secrecy, and poverty. This last part was most interesting, for it amounted to the ultimate entrance fee: one literally handed over everything one owned to the Order, and vowed to remain in "poverty", donating any earnings one might make after joining, to the Order as well. Considering that their knights were taken from the cream of European aristocracy, the younger brothers of wealthy and powerful heirs, this was quite significant. It allowed them to amass a large amount of wealth and land in a relatively quick amount of time.

They then multiplied this wealth exponentially over the next several decades by investing in various business ventures. They farmed, manufactured textiles, built roads and hospitals, and engaged in all sorts of trade. They were responsible for numerous technological advances during this time, either through their own invention, or through techniques that they learned through their frequent contact with Arabs, Jews and Byzantines. Their business ventures had the effect of largely transforming Europe's economy, paving the way for the mercantilism that was emerge soon in post-Medici Italy, later giving birth to Capitalism in Europe and America. The Templars' most significant contribution on this front was in the field of banking, which became their most lucrative industry.

The Templars were, first and foremost, the official guardians of pilgrims en route to the Holy Land. This was supposedly the reason why the Order was created in the first place. In this capacity, they devised a system to protect pilgrims from the "highway robbery" that often made such pilgrimages dangerous. Instead of loading themselves

down with gold and provisions, which were likely to be stolen, the pilgrims would simply deposit some money in the form of gold or silver at the Templar preceptory nearest to their point of departure. From there they would make their way to Jerusalem along a pre-selected route consisting of a series of churches and cathedrals, which were themselves associated with nearby Templar preceptories, each featuring banking services. There the pilgrim would present the banker with a "chit": a piece of paper that was encoded with ciphered information regarding the pilgrim's deposit at the originating bank. The pilgrim could then withdraw from the bank at his current location the amount of money he need to pay for his stay at that particular stop on the route, or make donations to the various churches, and could leave the rest in his "account." He could also make direct charges to the account for any goods or services which the Templars themselves were able to offer the pilgrim, which was often the case.

It is thus that the word "check" or "cheque" entered into the English and French languages. Indeed, a great many Middle English words, especially those pertaining to banking and commerce, seem to have originated in one way or another with the Templars. In the case of "cheque", it was related directly to the use of the chequerboard clothe which Templar merchants and bankers used to square their accounts – to "check" their assets and liabilities. The Templars had originally picked up the use of the chequer pattern from their contact with the East, from whence they also learned to play chess, and it is theorized by some authors that it was Templars who originally combined the chessboard (which was not at first chequered) with the chequerboard pattern, enhancing the deep symbolism that the game of chess already possessed. The use of the chequerboard as an abacus became widespread as mercantilism progressed, and thus the

term “exchequer” came to mean “a treasury, as of a state or nation.” The term “check” may also be related to “jetton”, which is the name of the round coins that were often used as tally chips on exchequer boards, representing various denominations of money. They were introduced by the Templars in France in the mid-thirteenth century.

As the Templars expanded their banking empire, and as they came to control many other staple industries throughout Europe, they quickly became the continent’s most dominant economic influence. Never before has a single institution used money alone to amass so much worldly power. This power threatened not only the monarchs of Europe (most of whom were now financially indebted to the Templars), but even Pope Clement V, who was no longer was able to hold the Templars under the thrall of his signet ring. Soon the Templars would become a force that no one could stop, and they seemed to hold allegiance to no one else either – no earthly power, at least. Their enemies hypothesized that for the Templars to have become so wealthy and powerful in such a short span of time, they would have had to have made a pact with the Devil. With a little investigation, it was discovered that in fact they had.

When the Templars were arrested en masse on Friday, October 13, 1307, on charges of idol worship and heresy, there were found throughout their preceptories various human skulls, and representations of human skulls or severed heads, which appeared to have been afforded certain ceremonial importance. The symbol of the skull and crossbones, apparently invented by the Knights Templar, was used everywhere throughout their possessions. Carvings depicting a grotesque goat-headed creature, with a semi-human body at once both male and female, were also found in the Templars’ ritual chambers. In confessions painfully extracted, many knights admitted that the skulls, the

heads and the hybrid creature all represented their secret god, “Baphomet”, whom they worshipped because it “caused the land to germinate”, and also “made them rich.”

Modern occultists, for whom Baphomet is now a potent symbol, see in this idol a representative of the “Universal Principle”, the “Azoth” or “Fifth Element” which to alchemists is the key to turning lead into gold. This is probably what it meant to the Templars too, as we shall see. But to their interrogators, the tortured knights were confessing Devil worship, and they were punished accordingly. The Order was disbanded, the Grand Master burnt at the stake, and the offending knights sent to do penance at various monasteries. The power of the Templars was crushed.

Chapter Seven: The Renaissance and the Rise of the Merchant Class

After the disappearance of the Knights Templar, the tradition of mercantilism and banking continued on, conducted mainly by a group of Italian merchant families based in cities like Genoa, Pisa, Florence, Venice, and Verona. These families chose to get around the Catholic prohibition against usury by using semantics. Instead of issuing “loans”, they wrote out “bills of exchange”, specifically called “cambium per lettras” in Latin, meaning “exchange through written documents or bills.” These bills were contracts in which the bank gave the contractee an amount of money in one currency, and that person agreed to pay the bank a certain amount of money in another currency at a certain date. It just so happened that the amount of money paid back had an exchange value greater than the amount of money that had originally been issued. Thus the Italian banks got their “interest” without having to call it that.

The new Italian bankers brought money-lending to a whole new level, because they brought it to the street. The Templars had dealt exclusively with the noble class, but the Italians dealt with everybody - landlords, merchants, and vendors - with no discrimination between Catholic, Muslim, or Jew. It was around this time that the word “bank” actually came about, from the Italian word for “table”, or “bench.” Unlike the Templars, who operated out of fortified castles, the Italian banks operated from temporary benches and tables set up at market fairs that took place in various cities throughout the year.

One of the advantages of this new system was that the economy was not bound to the availability of any single currency. In the past, a shortage of one type of coin could

put business to a halt. But now, if there was a shortage of one type of money, the bankers would just continue working with another type. They could also continue to write bills of exchange representing a certain currency, even if there was not much available, so long as the currency still retained the public confidence. If there were not enough coins available in the currency in which the loanee was obliged to pay the bank, he could arrange to pay them in another currency instead.

Yet another advantage of this banking system was that now money was flowing much more freely in and out of bank accounts, and thus, being utilized much more efficiently. Instead of vast treasure-stores of money sitting stashed in a castle, it was in a bank account, allowing the bank to use it as a reserve to loan money out to merchants or to other bankers. This money would then be used by the merchant loanees to do business, stimulating the local economy, and would eventually be paid back to the bank with the equivalent of interest. Thus each deposit into one of these banks multiplied the overall money supply of the economy exponentially. As Jack Weatherford explains:

Under the new system a bag of a hundred florins [gold coins from Florence] that might once have sat idle for years in a noble's strong-box could now be deposited for safekeeping in an Italian bank that had access to branches across the continent. The bank then lent the money and circulated the bill of exchange as money. The noble still had his one hundred florins, which were now on deposit in the bank; the bank had one hundred florins on its books. The merchant who borrowed the florins was richer, and the person who held the bill of exchange now had one hundred florins as well. Even though only one hundred gold coins were involved, the miracle of banking deposits and loans had

transformed them into many hundreds of florins that could be used by different individuals in different cities at the same time. This new banking money opened vast new commercial avenues for merchants, manufacturers, and investors. Everyone had more money; it was sheer magic.

Of those who profited, none did more so than the banking families of Peruzzi, Bardi, and Acciaiuoli, all from Florence. Their wealth and money-lending services gained them influence with both the Papacy, and the monarchy of England (Edwards I, II, and III), whom they were largely responsible for financing. Because of these families, Italian currencies, especially the Florentine florin and the Venetian ducat, became the standard coins of continental Europe. The downfall of these families came when the English monarchy, then headed by Edward III, defaulted on its loans with the bankers in 1343. Soon there was no reserve cash left in the banks to cover all of the other loans that they had outstanding. The system worked great so long as all of the participants maintained their confidence in it. But now the vulnerabilities of a system built on faith were exposed, and these banking enterprises collapsed like a house of cards. An outbreak of plague in Italy from 1343 to 1348 finished them off.

Luckily for Europe, though, another family was soon to take over the reins of Italian banking – a family seemingly destined for greatness. In 1360, a man named Giovanni di Bicci de Medici was born. He grew up to be a merchant and, along with two of his sons, Cosimo the Elder and Lorenzo the Elder, created not only a powerful banking and mercantile dynasty, but a multi-generational political power as well. They became *the* dominant financial force in Europe. They intermarried with the royal families of the

continent, and two Medici women, Marie and Catherine, became queens of France, fathering French kings as well. Meanwhile, two Medici sons, Giulio and Giovanni, became the Popes Clement VIII and Leo X, respectively. Numerous Medicis held other posts of importance in the Church and in government.

More important, perhaps, is that the Medicis quite purposefully used their influential positions to change the world for the better, and forever. They patronized the arts and letters, science and mathematics. They paid for the establishment of schools, churches, and hospitals. Because of their financial backing, the enlightened ideas of the Renaissance took hold with artists like Michelangelo and Botticelli, writers like Dante Alighieri, and scientists like Galileo. Learning began to flourish once more, and the strangle-hold that the Catholic Church had held on learning began to lift, as artists now felt more free to compose human-centered rather than purely God-centered works, even in scenes depicting religious events. Christ and the Holy Family were now portrayed as more human, more real.

Indeed, most of our modern visual conceptions of the people, supernatural beings, and events described in the Bible are based on the art of the Medici-era Renaissance. So too is much of our Christian mythology. The Medici Popes used the power they held to modernize and liberalize the Church in a radical way. Certain ideas, such as the existence of Purgatory, were even appropriated in whole from the works of Dante Alighieri. As a result of the Medicis' patronage of authors from Tuscany (their ancestral home and center of power), the Tuscan dialect of Latin became the predominant language of the Italian peninsula, and later developed into modern Italian.

In addition, their patronage of the study of philosophy and the sciences was equally influential. Although it would be many years before their views were widely accepted, thinkers like Galileo, whom the Medicis supported, were questioning the official Church version of the structure of the universe, in which, it was believed, the Sun and all other heavenly luminaries revolved around the Earth, the supposed center of God's creation. These new scientists and philosophers suspected that there was a whole new universe out there to be explored beyond this Earth, just as there was quite a bit of Earth yet left to be explored. These years were also the age of exploration, in which European royals (no doubt using money loaned to them by Medici bankers) paid daring navigators (descended from Templar families) to search for a new sea route to India, inadvertently proving radical new theories about the shape, size, and contents of planet Earth.

Authors Michael Baigent and Richard Leigh, in their book *The Temple and the Lodge*, succinctly described the monumental nature of, in particular, Cosimo de Medici's contributions to society:

In 1439 … Cosimo de Medici began sending his agents all over the world in quest of ancient manuscripts. Then, in 1444, Cosimo founded Europe's first public library, the Library of San Marco, and thus began to challenge the Church's long monopoly of learning. At Cosimo's express commission, the corpus of Platonic, Pythagorean, Gnostic, and Hermetic thought found its way into translation for the first time and became readily accessible. Cosimo also instructed the University of Florence to begin teaching Greek for the first time in Europe for some seven hundred years. And he undertook to create an

academy of Pythagorean and Platonic studies. Cosimo's academy quickly generated a multitude of similar institutions throughout the Italian peninsula, which became bastions of Western esoteric tradition.

One of the major developments to take place in Europe, starting from the time of the Templars and continuing on through the Medici years, was the widespread use of mathematics, not just by scholars or intellectuals, but by normal, everyday people for practical purposes. The revolution began with the introduction of Arabic, rather than Roman, numerals. It is the new Arabic numbers that we use now. (They had actually been adapted by the Arabs from an Indian system, although some scholars say that they are ultimately Chaldean in origin.) Roman numerals were notoriously difficult to calculate with, necessitating an abacus, jetton, and/or exchequer board. The existence of Arabic numerals was known in some circles, but had been frowned upon, for during the era of the Crusades, nobody wanted to touch the accursed symbols of the infidels. But the Italian merchants were already dealing with Arabs, and were in need of a more effective way of calculating their finances. Practicality won the day.

A watershed event was the publication of *Liber Abaci* by Leonardo Fibonacci, famous also for the discovery of the so-called "Fibonacci sequence", also called the "golden mean numbers", or the "Phi ratio". This was the book that really introduced Arabic numerals to the West. Notably, it occurred during the height of the Knights Templar's banking operations, which undoubtedly helped to spread the use of these numbers. Overnight, merchants discovered that there was a way of calculating numbers that was conceptually simple, and that could be done on a sheet of paper rather than using

some cumbersome contraption. This new system was not immediately accepted. In fact, many colleges in Europe continued to teach Roman numerals exclusively until the 1600s. But in the meantime, the merchants made use of it. They were even responsible for the development of the "plus" (+) and "minus" (-) signs, which they used to mark shipments of goods that were overweight or underweight.

During the Medici years, many great strides were made in Italy in the field of mathematics. An anonymous textbook from 1478 called *Treviso Arithmetic*, tailor-made for merchants, taught them how to multiply and divide. Nicolas Chuquet's 1484 *Triparty en la science des nombres* introduced the idea of separating numerals into groups of three, as we do now with commas (for example: 100,000), to make them easier to read. He also introduced words like "million" and "billion", to replace phrases like "a hundred hundred thousand." Luca Pacioli's 1487 treatise *Summa de aritmetica geometria proportioni et proportionalita* introduced double-entry book-keeping.

There were more ideas from the Arab East that got introduced into the West at this time. Algebra was developed in the ninth century by a man named Muhammad ibn-Musa al-Khwarizmi, but the word "algebra" entered European languages after having been lifted during the Renaissance from the title of his book: *Hisab al-Jabr w-al-Muqabalah* (*The Science of Restoration and Reduction*). Al-Khwarizmi also introduced the idea of decimals rather than fractions, and the term used in Europe at the time for them, "algorism" (a corruption of his name, Al-Khwarizmi), eventually became a more generalized term in mathematics. Mr. Al-Khwarizmi's ideas were actually introduced to the West by a Jewish scholar named Immanuel ben Jacob Bonfils of Tarascon in the year 1350.

It was only 250-300 years later, when the universities of Europe began to teach the new mathematics system, that people really began to understand the philosophical implications of mathematical principles. Math made philosophers realize many irrefutable truths, and taught them to look for truths that were quantifiable and unchanging, like mathematical axioms, rather than basing one's "facts" on faith in religious dogma. This paved the way for the revolutionary scientific discoveries of men like Rene Descartes and Sir Isaac Newton.

Thus developed the philosophy of the Enlightenment era, which held that the universe was rational, and could be understood using rational means. These ideas were promoted by the influential men involved in the newly-developing phenomenon of speculative Freemasonry. These men also promoted the idea of a representative government, separated from the Church, so that no Pope, and no Pope's royal lackey, could ever again squelch scientific progress. The need for this form of government led to the colonization of America by Sir Francis Bacon's Virginia Company, with the aim of turning this new country into the ultimate philosophic empire, where learning and discovery could thrive without interference, and indeed, would be encouraged.

All of these amazing changes occurred in European society from the end of the Dark Ages, signaled by the accomplishments of the Knights Templar, through the Italian merchant and banking years (which ended with the collapse of the Medici bank in 1494, following the French invasion of Florence by King Charles VIII, and the expulsion of the Medicis from the city), then on through the Enlightenment era. In this series of widely diverse events, separated by space and time, we can detect a certain continuity.

To understand what I mean, let us go back to the year 324, when Constantinople was founded.

Chapter Eight: The Empire in the East and the Church of the Holy Wisdom

When the newly-converted Christian emperor of Rome began raising funds to found his new capitol in the East, Constantine made a point of using gold coins minted from the melted down idols of Roman pagan temples to pay for the construction. It was an "f- you" not only to the gods of Rome, but to Rome itself, for in founding Constantinople, the emperor was establishing a "New Rome." But he really intended for it to be the recreation of another ancient city - Jerusalem.

Already Constantine's mother, Helena, had been converted to Christianity along with him, and had become so devout that she made a pilgrimage to Jerusalem in search of the grave of Christ. A lucky woman, that Helena. She just happened not only to discover Jesus' tomb, but remnants of the True Cross, the Crown of Thorns, and numerous other holy relics. She had churches erected on the spots where she found these items. Constantine, too, erected churches, mainly the first St. Peter's Basilica in Rome, and the first "Hagia Sophia" (the "Church of the Holy Wisdom") in Constantinople.

The change of the capital of the Roman Empire from Rome to Constantinople had major effects on the development of the Catholic Church. Constantine's successor, Theodosius I, held an ecumenical council in 381 in which it was declared that the Bishop of Constantinople would be second in Christendom only to the bishop of Rome. Theodosius officially banned pagan cults, and began closing any pagan temples that remained. But although the church in Rome and the church in Constantinople had started out as the same church, East and West began to divide theologically and culturally, until they were eventually two separate churches, and two separate empires: one waning, the

other rising. The Byzantine Empire lasted from 324 to 1453, and at its height included Northern Italy, Macedonia, Southern Spain, Turkey, Bulgaria, North Africa, and parts of Egypt. As the empire grew, the Byzantines reverted back entirely to the Greek language, and in many ways continued Greek traditions by fostering within their empire a cultural love of Greek philosophy, art, and literature.

It was during the rule of Byzantine Emperor Justinian I that an unfortunate incident occurred involving Constantine's Hagia Sophia. In 532, a riot broke out in the sports stadium known as the Hippodrome: a conflict between fans of the blue chariot team and the red chariot team. It was the ancient equivalent of a soccer hooligan brawl. The melee spread throughout the city, and before long the Hagia Sophia had been completely trashed. Justinian had all the rioters in the Hippodrome massacred, and that put an end to the riot. Afterwards he had the church rebuilt more magnificently than ever before. It immediately became the most renowned building in Christendom, and remained so until St. Peter's Basilica was rebuilt to extravagance during the Medici years. As one author, Benita Goldman of Eastern Michigan University put it in her essay, *Byzantium and Her Arts*:

Hagia Sophia was rebuilt on a daring scale.....the dome was so large, the interior so spacious, that visitors said the dome itself appeared to be resting on light, or suspended from heaven by a golden chain. The example of Hagia Sophia was so profound that, as the Byzantine Empire expanded and contracted, not one corner of it did not prefer a church with a central dome. The Eastern Orthodox structures of Russia, Greece and Bulgaria all pay homage to the church of Holy Wisdom. Even the humblest Eastern

Orthodox structure could hardly be called complete without a dome. Just as with the Greek culture and the Romans who revered it (the captors were held by their captives in thrall), the later inhabitants of Constantinople, the Ottoman Turks, even devised their Imperial Mosques after the example of Hagia Sophia.

To finish off his creation, Justinian took precious, expensive decorations from older temples all over the empire, and used them for Hagia Sophia instead. When he was done, the emperor is said to have exclaimed: "Solomon, I have outdone you", a reference to the opulent temple, equally encrusted with gold and jewels, which King Solomon had built in Jerusalem to house the Ark of the Covenant.

Byzantium went through a great deal of turmoil throughout the history of its empire, expanding and contracting in size as it continually fought off invasion from barbarian and Muslim hordes. Their church (now the Eastern Orthodox Church) was even influenced somewhat by Islam, in that they began to take on the ideology of iconoclasm. Islam shunned the depiction of any living form in nature as idolatry, and would allow only abstract, geometric art forms. In contrast, Christianity, both the Roman and the Eastern Orthodox varieties, made great use of art and architecture depicting Christ, the Holy Family, and religious themes. They did not shy away from using these depictions in their rituals, either. The Eastern Orthodox Church used what they called "icons", by which they specifically meant portraits of saints which one would pray to, asking the saint to intercede on one's behalf, and to pass the prayer on to Jesus. Author Benita Goldman explains in further detail the role these items play in church ritual:

The Iconostasis or 'Icon Wall' in a Byzantine or Eastern Orthodox Church is a screen separating the faithful from the divine and mysterious rituals of the Holy Sacrament. Unlike the Catholic Church, this ritual takes place behind a wall or screen, rather than at the altar in front of the congregation. Commonly, the Iconostasis is painted with the Deesis (literally, the 'entreaty'). This is an arrangement of the following elements: Christ enthroned centrally, flanked by St. John the Baptist and the Virgin Mary (the Theotokos.) Both St. John and Mary are most frequently depicted making prayerful entreaties to the enthroned Christ…

In Russia, most homes had an 'icon corner' where the icon was placed. Icons were believed to have a miraculous power of protection over the home and its occupants. Some icons, such as the famous Virgin of Vladimir, were thought to protect the city. Often, these famous icons were embellished with covers in precious metal and gems. The Virgin of Vladimir was revered enough to have several such covers, embellished through the years in silver and gold...

Similar practices existed, and still exist, in the Catholic Church, which likewise encourages its members to pray to statues and portraits of Jesus, the Holy Family, and other saints. So when the Orthodox Church went through two waves of Iconoclasm, in which the use of images was prohibited, it further drove a wedge between them and the Catholic Church. This is why in the year 800, Pope Leo II personally crowned a new Emperor of the Western Romans, Charlemagne, creating the Holy Roman Empire which was to last in Europe for 1000 years, subverting the power that Empress Irene of Constantinople believed she still held in the West.

To do this, the Pope asserted a document called “the Donation of Constantine” that he claimed had been drafted and signed by the Thirteenth Apostle himself, in which Constantine supposedly “donated” his imperial power to Church, giving the Pope the power to crown kings. Constantine, of course, would never have signed such a thing, and the document is now universally regarded by scholars as a fraud. But it remained the basis of the Holy Roman Empire for the rest of its duration, although of course it went totally unrecognized by the now completely separate Eastern Church and empire. The Western ruler became known as the “Imperator Romanorum” (“Emperor of the Romans”), and the Eastern ruler became known as the “Imperator Graecorum” (“Emperor of the Greeks”). The schism between the churches was finalized in 1054.

The Crusades of the Holy Roman Empire to capture Jerusalem had an inadvertently negative effect on Constantinople. In the year 1096 the First Crusade traveled through the city en route to the holy land. The Roman Catholic soldiers were feeling spiteful towards their Eastern Orthodox rivals, so they sacked the city, and other nearby domains, as they passed through. The same thing happened in 1204 during the Fourth Crusade, only this time they not only pillaged it: they actually set up their own “Latin Kingdom” in the city. The Eastern Orthodox Greeks managed to take the city back in 1261, but it didn’t last too much longer. However, the great Constantinople fell at last not to fellow Christians, but to the Muslim Ottoman Turks. As we all know, the city once known as “Constantinople” is now called “Istanbul.”

Chapter Nine: The Head of Prophecy and the Aegis of the Goat

Let us return now to the concept of the "Baphomet", the idol which the Knights Templar were found guilty of worshipping, purportedly because it "caused the land to germinate", and "made them rich." These facts, coupled with the fact that the idol was often depicted as a goat with male and female sexual organs, might cause one to think that the Templars had somehow stumbled upon and absorbed the tenets of the cult of the she-goat Amalthea. This is the creature who purportedly nursed Zeus while he was a babe in exile on the island of Crete, hiding from his father Kronos, who wished to kill him. Her name means "tender", specifically referring, not to the financial term, but to that definition of "tender" as "a person who attends to or takes charge of someone or some thing" (*Webster's College Dictionary,* 1999). Having little thanks for the favors of Amalthea, Zeus had her slaughtered as soon as he was fully grown, and fashioned from her skin an impenetrable shield called the "Aegis." The word "aegis" or "aigis" literally means "goat-skin."

Zeus would shake this shield (emblazoned with the image of the severed head of Gorgon) in the air in order to create thunder, and thus he earned the epithet "Aigiokhos", meaning "wielder of the goat-skin." Zeus used this shield when he went to battle against the Titans. He also used the "cornucopia" or "horn of plenty", which he made from one of Amalthea's horns: a magical object that contained an inexhaustible supply of fruits and flowers. After he had killed her and used all of her parts that he wanted, Zeus placed Amalthea amongst the stars, where she became the constellation of Capricorn. The figure

of Capricorn then came to be thought of as a “sea-goat”, since she resided in the “celestial sea” of Heaven.

So Amalthea was venerated by some cults in much the same way that the vegetation deity known as the “Green Man” was in Celtic culture: as a representative of nature, of fecundity, plenteousness, and thus, by extension, wealth. Likewise, the goat-god Baphomet was so literally associated with money by the Templars that they kept small statuettes of him in their money coffers. But the Baphomet is reported to have done more for the Templars besides just making them rich. He is also said to have made them “wise.” In fact, it has been shown that Baphomet’s name literally means “wisdom”, according to several linguistic interpretations.

I explained previously that the Templars made use of cryptograms, or ciphers, in the checking system that they invented. One of the ciphers that they used most often was a simple one called “Atbash”, in which the first letter of the alphabet is replaced with the last letter of the alphabet, then the second replaced with the second-to-last, etc. It has been discovered that if the letters of “Baphomet” are converted into Aramaic (a late Hebrew-Greek blend used in the New Testament), and then run through the Atbash cipher, you get the word “sophia”, which means “wisdom.” “Sophia” was indeed the name used for the goddess of wisdom who was often revered in Gnostic cults in New Testament times. It was believed in these cults that one could unite spiritually with Sophia by performing certain rites and meditations, thus obtaining “gnosis”, or divine knowledge. In addition to the message rendered from the Atbash cipher, according to the 1865 tome *Worship of the Generative Powers*, by Thomas Wright, Baphomet was

sometimes referred to simply as “Mete” by Templars, a word which in itself means “wisdom”.

Gnosticism was widely practiced in the Roman Empire during Christ’s time. One man widely believed to have been a Gnostic was John the Baptist, the prophet of the New Testament who announced the coming of Christ. John was, after his death, revered by a number of Gnostic cults. There were even, by medieval times, numerous underground “Christian” sects called “Johannites”, who believes that John was the true Messiah. Johannite cults even exist today in the form of semi-Islamic Gnostic sects found in Iraq known as “Mandeans.” It has been charged that that Templars followed this doctrine, and indeed, he was their patron saint, as he is now for Freemasonry. More importantly, perhaps, he is known to have been beheaded at the Temple Mount in Jerusalem, and his head, or skull, has become a central Christian icon. This brings into focus the claim of occultist Aleister Crowley that the name “Baphomet”, by itself, without running it through any ciphers, means “Baptist of Wisdom.” Given what we know of John, this could easily have been a title for the prophet himself.

So can John’s head be the skull that the Templars are said to have not only worshipped, but talked to? Specifically it is said to have “prophesied” for them. In the Gnostic text *The Apocryphon of St James*, John’s severed head is referred to as “the head of prophecy.”

Moreover, the use of a severed head or skull for divination was a common practice throughout the ancient East and even, though secretly, in Judah and Israel during Old Testament times. Such devices were called “teraphim”, as defined by the online Jewish Encyclopedia:

...the teraphim were made of the head of a man, a first-born which, after the man had been slain, was shaved and then salted and spiced. After a gold plate on which magic words were engraved had been placed under the tongue, the mummified head was mounted on the wall... lighted candles were placed round it; the people then prostrated themselves before it, and it spoke to them.

Likewise, famous mystic H.P. Blavatsky wrote an article alleging that the practice continued on into Renaissance Europe. The article is called "Animated Statues", written for her magazine, *The Theosophist*. In it she wrote:

[Thesaurist] Ugolino puts in the mouth of the sage Gamaliel, St. Paul's master (or guru), the following words, which he quotes, he says, from his Capito, chap. xxxvi: 'They (the possessors of such necromantic teraphim) killed a new-born baby, cut off its head, and placed under its tongue, salted and oiled, a little gold lamina in which the name of an evil spirit was perforated; then, after suspending that head on the wall of their chamber, they lighted lamps before it, and prostrate on the ground they conversed with it.'...

In the Middle Ages... several Roman Catholic priests are known to have resorted to [this practice]; among others the apostate Jacobin priest in the service of Queen Catherine of Medici, that faithful daughter of the Church of Rome and the author of the St. Bartholomew Massacre. The story is given by [Jean] Bodin, in his famous work on Sorcery, Le Demonomanie, ou Traité des Sorciers (Paris, 1587); and it is quoted in Isis

Unveiled (Vol. ii, p. 56). Pope Sylvester II was publicly accused by Cardinal Benno of sorcery, on account of his Brazen Oracular Head.'

This is exactly what many scholars believe Baphomet was for the Templars: a teraph made from the head or skull of John the Baptist. It is interesting, then, that Ms. Blavatsky tied the Medici family to the use of teraphim, for reasons that will become clear later on in this book. The same connection was made by Freemason and Masonic expert Manly P. Hall, who wrote about "the infamous oracular heads of de Medici."

So how would the Templars have gotten hold of the skull of John the Baptist? Well, during their formative years, the Templars were stationed at the al-Aqsa Mosque in Jerusalem, right there on the mountain itself. It was the fact that they were formed there, at the site of what was once the great Jewish temple, which gave the Order its name, "the Poor Knights of Christ of the Temple of Solomon." Since the Knights Templar are known to have explored the secret caves beneath the Temple Mount (looking for the Ark of the Covenant, some say), it is quite possible that they discovered the head of John while down there. It is also possible that they picked it up from Constantinople while they were passing through to Jerusalem for the First Crusade. While most of the soldiers were busy with more ordinary raping and pillaging, the Templars could have been on a systematic hunt for any religious relics that might have been housed there.

There were of course, many of them there. For a while, Constantinople had been the center of Christendom, and is the most likely place for Constantine to have housed some of the relics found by his mother, Helena, in her search through the Holy Land. Of course, most of the relics she found are accounted for, and were venerated in churches

that she had erected in Jerusalem, and also in Rome. But some ended up in Constantinople, and I think this is the likely landing place for any relics deemed too precious to put on public display. I can even see Constantine and Helena plotting to put fake relics on display in the various churches, and hiding the real ones in the original Hagia Sophia.

There are indeed stories of the skull of John the Baptist having ended up there. The most widely-accepted claimant to the title has long been the skull on display in Antioch. But there was another claimant that was put on display in Constantinople and was venerated by the royalty of Aquitaine, Gaul, Italy, and Spain, who all made a pilgrimage to the Byzantine capital to celebrate its translation there by Emperor Theodosius. It was said by contemporary chronicler Ademar of Chabannes to have been "enclosed in a stone reliquary formed in the shape of a pyramid", and placed in a suburb of Constantinople called Hebdomoes, where a "magnificent temple" was erected for it. When it was installed in its new home, fantastic powers were ascribed to the relic, to cure people and to effect miracles.

Besides the skull of John the Baptist, there is another candidate for the Baphomet which is also an artifact that the Templars may have obtained from Constantinople. It was called "the Mandylion." This object's official story is described in full and adequately by the website printeryhouse.org, which sells reproductions of Greek Orthodox Christian icons:

This image is considered to be the oldest known icon and also the oldest known portrait of Jesus. According to ancient legend, King Abgar of Edessa, (now Urfa in Turkey), was

a leper. He sent his archivist named Hannan (or Ananias) to Galilee with a letter to Jesus, beseeching Him to come to Edessa and heal him. Hannan was a painter and had orders to make a portrait of the Lord in case he refused to come. Hannan came upon Jesus in the midst of a large crowd. He tried to make a portrait but could not. Seeing Hannan's need, Jesus asked for some water, washed himself, and wiping His face on a linen cloth, imprinted it with his features. When Abgar beheld the cloth, his leprosy was cured, although his scars remained. After Pentecost, the apostle Thaddeus, one of the seventy, went to Edessa and completed Abgar's cure and conversion to Christianity.

The image of Christ on the linen cloth was preserved for centuries in Edessa as the city's most sacred treasure. The legend and the image are referred to by many ancient writers, such as Eusebius of Caesarea (325 AD), and Evagrius (590 AD). In 944, the Byzantines captured the image from Edessa, which was under Moslem rule, and brought it with great ceremony to Constantinople. The event is still celebrated in the Orthodox liturgical calendar on August 16. It remained there until the sack of that city by the crusaders in 1204, when it disappeared. But by that time, innumerable icons had been made, preserving the sacred image to this day.

The image has been referred to in many ways over the centuries. In Greek, it is called the 'Achieropoietos,' meaning 'not made by human hands,' in keeping with its miraculous origin. It has also been called the Mandylion, literally 'little handkerchief.' This word having an Arabic root, was used in Byzantium only to describe this image. In iconography, there are two variants; a version with Christ's hair and beard curly and flowing, and this version with beard wet and forked.

There are similarities between this object and descriptions of the object worshipped by the Templars. The most obvious is that it shows the disembodied head of a bearded man, as the head of Baphomet is said to have been. Also, if the Mandylion were the mystically-created imprint of a man's face, like the Shroud of Turin supposedly is a mystically-created imprint of Christ's body, it might look as the Shroud does, like a photo negative, and thus, somewhat skull-like. If this is indeed what the Baphomet was like, one can see how it could have been reported, by knights who were exposed to it, as both a bearded head, and a skull. They might have thought it looked a little bit "goaty" as well.

But another important similarity between the Baphomet and the Mandylion is its possible use for divination. The Mandylion was used by the Byzantine Church as an "icon", and copies of it are still used as such in the Greek Orthodox Church today. You will recall that with these icons, people believe that they can directly contact the saint or divine being depicted on them. Is it not possible that with an icon such as the Mandylion, which was also a holy relic, an imprint of the Savior's own face, some people believed that it could talk *back* to them as well? Or especially so, if the head that was actually depicted on the cloth was the "head of prophecy", that of John the Baptist?

In an article entitled "The Templars, The Shroud, the Veil and the Mandylion" on the website templarhistory.com, Chevalier John Ritchie (a member of the neo-templar group the Sovereign Military Order of the Temple of Jerusalem) suggests that the Mandylion did depict the head of John the Baptist, and that it was the same as the Baphomet of the Templars. He suggests that they obtained it during the sacking of

Constantinople in 1204, during the Fourth Crusade, after which the Crusaders set up a "Latin Kingdom" in Constantinople. As he describes it:

The most likely possessors of the Mandylion would appear to be the Order of the Knights Templar. They were the first troops into Constantinople in 1204, they knew of the imperial collection, and were in fact the bodyguard to Count Baldwin of Flanders [the newly-crowned Latin King in Constantinople], so it would have been very easy for them to obtain the Mandylion and other relics during the sacking.

Ritchie also suggests that it was not unusual for Templar depictions of Baphomet to be flat, wall-mounted portraits rather than standing idols:

…every Templar Preceptory had a copy of this 'head', and one of these came to light in England in 1951, during the demolition of an outhouse at Templecombe Somerset, the site of a long vanished Templar preceptory. This was a curious panel painting covered with dust but clearly depicting a bearded male head of the type referred to in the confessions forced from the Knights Templar under... Today this Templecombe panel hangs in the church of St. Mary. Templecombe, its resemblance to the face on the Mandylion is unmistakable.

Chapter Ten: A Contract with Baphomet

But how could possessing an item such as the Mandylion, or a mummified severed head, make the Templars rich? Well, let us just suspend disbelief for a moment and swallow the Templars' own beliefs. Obviously they believed that Baphomet could talk to them, and that Baphomet possessed "divine wisdom." So right off the bat, with that belief as our basis, it is possible to contend that Baphomet taught the Templars all forms of knowledge, including the mysteries of money and wealth. It is evident that the Templars did come into possession of great sources of wisdom, which enabled them to be involved in breakthrough accomplishments of art, science and medicine during their time. The ideas they applied to create their international banking system were sheer genius.

But more than that, it is clear that the Templars afforded the image of Baphomet itself a certain ceremonial reverence, accrediting to it a certain talismanic power, which demonstrates that they believed their devotion to it, and their sacrifices to it, would gain them wealth in return. This is a very ancient concept, and one which I will get into in greater detail later on. It is the belief that one can contact a deity through divination and negotiate a contract with it, in which one agrees to perform certain services for the deity, in exchange for blessings in return.

A deity whose symbolism was associated with the very idea of a divine contract was the Persian god Mithras. He was known as the "god of contracts", and the inventor of the legal system. People would invoke him as a witness when drawing up a contract of any sort between two parties, and it was believed that he would punish severely all those who broke their contracts. These deals would be sealed with a handshake which,

according to mythology, was another invention of Mithras, first taught by him to mankind when he was inducting priests into his cult. In the rites of Mithras, the initiates were made to shake the hand of Mithras (usually played in the ritual by another cult member) as a seal of a pact between the inductee and his new teacher, Mithras, referred to in the ritual by the nickname "the Friend." Many aspects of this ritual were absorbed into the rites of Freemasonry.

The name "Mithras" is related to words in all ancient languages that mean 'to measure." These root words have resulted in modern terms like "metric", "method", "medicine", and "mathematics." This is because Mithras was also known for having taught basic math, science, and medicine to mankind in ancient times. The root word "mitr" has been said to actually communicate the more generalized concept of "knowledge" or "wisdom." Indeed, according to several modern occult scholars, including author Nicholas de Vere (*The Dragon Legacy, USA, 2004*), the name "Baphomet" means "Father Mithras" or "Father of Wisdom."

Mithras was a solar deity, and the cult of Sol Invictus in Rome, followed by Emperor Constantine even after his conversion to Christianity, was very much an offshoot of the cult of Mithras. It is noteworthy that the "sign" which Constantine saw in his divine vision, was not the Christian cross, or even the equilateral cross later used by the Templars, but actually the "Chi Rho" symbol, made from the first two letters of Christ's name in Greek. Or at least, that is what Christians today say its meaning and origin is. According to most scholars it actually has a pre-Christian origin, and was used by the ancient cult of Sol Invictus. But the fact remains that after his vision, Constantine had the symbol inscribed on the shields of his soldiers, who then went charging into

battle against his rival for the throne. His army was victorious. He became the emperor, converted to Christianity, and moved the capitol of his empire to a new city which he had built – Constantinople.

It seems to me that the Chi Rho symbol, which looks like a modern letter "P" on top of a modern letter "X", greatly resembles the skull and crossbones symbol of the Templars, the simple hieroglyph they used to represent Baphomet. It was also a symbol of Mithras. In a segment about the Chi Rho in the classic Masonic textbook, *Morals and Dogma*, Albert Pike wrote that:

The Cross, X, was the sign of the Creative Wisdom or Logos, the Son of God… Mithras signed his soldiers on the forehead with a Cross.

So let us say for the sake of argument that the Baphomet was a talisman of some sort that, among other things, bestowed upon its possessor 'wisdom" and "riches" – or more specifically, the power to both *gain* and *create* wealth. Let us say that Constantine somehow came into possession of it, perhaps when his mother Helena was in Jerusalem digging around for holy relics. His religious vision may have foreshadowed this discovery, or even led him and his mother to it. Or it might have just been a story made up after the fact. It is also possible that it was already there in Rome in some hidden vault known only to the emperor, and Constantine only learned of it after he ascended to the throne. The Romans, of course, had taken over the land of Judah, and had sacked Jerusalem, carrying off all of the treasures of the Temple that they found. If this was the case, Helena's treasure hunt in Jerusalem could have been simply to find more artifacts.

At any rate, as my hypothesis goes, Constantine used the power of this talisman to create his new empire in Constantinople. In this proposed version of events, he would have formed a "divine contract" with the deity represented by the talisman, just as the Templars would have later done with Baphomet. He created a temple to house this relic, the "Hagia Sophia", or "Church of the Holy Wisdom" – or in other words, the Church of Baphomet. Constantine then sacrificed to this idol all of the wealth from the temples of Rome's pagan gods. That is, he sacrificed everything dedicated to the old religion, the old "divine contracts", and put them in the service of his new religion, his new "divine contract" with Baphomet. In exchange, Byzantium became the global center of wisdom and learning, and the most beautiful, most wealthy city in the whole world. It was an empire that lasted over 1100 years. It was only when Constantinople fell to the Turks in 1452 that the European Renaissance is said to have fully kicked into high gear, when all of the Jewish and Greek Orthodox scholars who had been living there fled the Muslim terror and sought relative safety in Europe.

So let us then say that the Templars took control of this artifact in turn. This could have happened in their first pass through the city in 1090, when they and other crusaders sacked it on their way to the First Crusades. It was only after this – after capturing Jerusalem and becoming stationed on the Temple Mount – that they formally organized themselves into an order. Then they started digging for buried treasure there, just as Constantine's mother had done after (in my proposed scenario) Constantine came into the possession of Baphomet. Perhaps Baphomet operates better as a talisman and divination device when it is used in conjunction with other holy relics. Perhaps that explains why

the Templars were eager to get the Mandylion, which could have been a copy of the Baphomet head, rather than the original.

After coming to possess the Baphomet, I think the Knights probably formed a pact with the deity connected to it. They began to structure their order into an international system for advancing learning and science, and for creating wealth – exactly as Constantine had done by creating the Byzantine Empire. Their wealth and membership expanded exponentially after they created a formal constitution for their Order, which I hypothesize was an extension of their pact with Baphomet. As Michael Baigent and Richard Leigh describe in their book *The Temple and the Lodge*:

Until 1128… the Templars were said to have consisted only of nine knights… Then, at The Council of Troyes, conducted under the auspices of Saint Bernard, the Templars were given a monastic rule, the equivalent, so to speak, of a constitution, and were thereby formally established…

From 1128 on, the Order expanded at an extraordinary pace, receiving not just a massive influx of recruits, but also immense donations of both money and property. Within a year, they owned lands in France, England, Scotland, Spain, and Portugal. Within a decade, their possessions would extend to Italy, Austria, Germany, Hungary, and Constantinople. In 1131, the king of Aragon bequeathed to them a third of his domains. By the mid-twelfth century, the Temple had already begun to establish itself as the single most wealthy and powerful institution in Christendom, with the sole exception of the Papacy.

If the Templars did possess this "Baphomet", capable of bestowing wisdom and wealth, this may explain what both King Philippe IV and Pope Clement V were itching to take from the Templars when they engineered their arrest, even if they did not fully understand what it was they were looking for. It is said that Philippe's seneschals searched frantically all throughout the Templar properties in France, seeking their fabled "treasure", for he knew they were rich. But he did not really understand that their wealth was created by banking, and was spread throughout their domains, invested in various money-making enterprises. Only a fraction of it actually existed in reserve as physical currency. Alan Butler and Stephen Dafoe described the situation in their book *The Warriors and the Bankers: A History of the Knights Templar from 1307 to the Present*:

Templar treasuries there may have been, and their accumulated values must have been incredible, but it would have been economic and political suicide to keep one vast depository. It should also be mentioned that much of the Templars' wealth was constantly moving about, and was being used to make more money, thickening out the services on offer and expanding the business empire. The Templars owned vast areas of land in almost every Western European country, the accumulated revenues of which went to finance bigger and better ventures – all run by a staff who were not paid in the general sense of the word, but whose efficiency was legendary. It is a fact of history that neither Philip IV, or anyone else, ever found the Templar treasure that was said to exist, though this may, in part, be due to the same sort of careful pre-planning that ensured the survival of the majority of Templar personnel. Just as surely as De Molay could take care of the brothers and servants of his order… so he must surely have ensured that movable

wealth, in the form of treasure and objects, was spirited away to locations beyond the jurisdiction of the French Crown. Unfortunately, the Templars' greatest asset – farm land – could not be moved, and this form of treasure ultimately did fall to either the Knights Hospitaller, or, in many cases, to the monarchs of Europe… It is likely a great deal of their wealth passed to organizations which took their place, such as the Knights of Christ in Portugal…

After the Templars were disbanded, many of them were sentenced to penance in monasteries, and thus they ended up joining these other knightly orders, including the Knights of Christ, the Knights Hospitaller, and the Teutonic Knights. Despite the wishes of King Philippe to claim everything for himself, Pope Clement V stepped in and had most of the Templars' properties transferred to these other orders, especially the Knights Hospitaller.

It is the Hospitallers who I believe most likely inherited the Baphomet, or at least, the secrets of wealth creation which it had imparted to the Knights Templar. The Hospitallers were a rival order during the Templars' time, especially known, as the name implies, for setting up hospitals throughout Europe. These hospitals operated with what was, at the time, cutting-edge medical technology. Like the Templars, their patron saint was John the Baptist. Their full name was actually "the Knights Hospitaller of St. John", but it was later changed to just "the Knights of Saint John." They eventually changed their name again to the one we know them as today: the "Knights of Malta." In their book *The Messianic Legacy*, Michael Baigent, Richard Leigh, and Henry Lincoln described the origins of this group:

The Order of Saint John originated with a hospital dedicated to Saint John in Jerusalem and established around 1070, some thirty years before the First Crusade, by Italian merchants to minister to pilgrims... By 1126… the Knights of Saint John had begun to assume and increasingly military character which was soon to eclipse, though not altogether supplant, their Hospitaller services. In the years that followed, they came to comprise, along with the Templars and subsequently the Teutonic Knights, the major military and financial power in the Holy Land, and one of the major such powers in all Christendom. Like the Templars, they became immensely wealthy.

The Hospitallers began to increase their membership and take on a more military character in 1126, just two years before the Templars began their own first major expansion of manpower and landholdings. However, the true "heyday" of the Hospitallers seems to have come *after* the fall of the Templars in 1307. Just two years later, in 1309, they moved their headquarters to the island of Rhodes, which, according to *The Messianic Legacy*, they "governed as their private principality." After three sieges by the Turks, they moved to another island, Malta, in 1530. By the 1600s, the Order's significance had waned according to Baigent, et. al. They write:

By the seventeenth century, the knights still resident on Malta had been left behind by the tide of history, a staunch Catholic enclave still adhering to obsolete chivalric tenets while the rest of Europe moved into a new age of mercantilism and middle-class hegemony.

Nevertheless, they continued to operate in Malta until Napoleon invaded the island in 1798. They re-established themselves in Rome in 1834 and strangely, only then did they change their name to "Order of Malta", to distinguish themselves from other, Protestant, Orders of St. John that had cropped up since their initial inception.

Here in Rome, they settled into a role which they continue to this day. They act as an unofficial intelligence service for the Vatican. They also possess a "sovereignty" granted by the Church which operates in much the same way that the Knights Templar's similarly granted sovereignty once did, and although the Church no longer holds the sway it used to over the governments of the world, these states still recognize the sovereignty of the Knights of Malta. Baigent, et. al. describe in *The Messianic Legacy* the role that the Knights now play in international affairs:

In international law, the current status of the Knights of Malta is that of an independent sovereign principality. The Grand Master is recognized as a head of state, with a secular rank equivalent to a prince and an ecclesiastical rank equivalent to a cardinal. The Order maintains formal diplomatic relations with a number of countries, especially in Africa and Latin American, and in those countries its ministers enjoy standard diplomatic privileges. The upper grades of the Order are still fastidiously aristocratic. The highest Knights must be able to display a coat of arms dating back at least three hundred years, in unbroken succession from father to son.

The twentieth-century Order of Malta is, needless to say, ideally placed for intelligence work. Its network of membership is international and at the same time well-organized. Its hospital and medical services often place it strategically at points of

crisis… Its membership extends from medical staff and ambulance drivers to important figures in politics, business and finance who have access to spheres that ordinary priests would not. In consequence, the Knights of Malta became closely associated with the Vatican's own intelligence department…

The book then goes on to describe how the Knights of Malta liaised for decades with the CIA and European intelligence organizations, as well as other Catholic and right-wing political groups during the latter half of the twentieth century. They worked together to fund and organize an anti-Communist united Europe movement (which has now succeeded in creating the European Union), as well as anti-Communist movements in Latin America. It is also known that many of these knights work for banks and financial institutions that handle the Vatican's accounts.

So could there be a relationship between the Italian merchant families that set up the Knights of St. John, and the Italian merchant families that came to dominate international finance during the post-Templar Renaissance era? Moreover, is not it likely that the secret contingent of Knights Templar, those who may have smuggled the Baphomet head to safety when the Templars were disbanded, also continued the Baphometic tradition of finance by sharing the secrets of wealth creation with these families? Like all chivalric knightly orders, both the Knights Templar and the Knights of St. John were strictly aristocratic organizations meant only for those of noble birth. Of course, all noble families were genetically connected one way or another through common ancestry because of the aristocratic tradition of marrying close to one's own gene pool. So a relationship between Templar and Hospitaller families, and thus, by

extension, Italian merchant families, is implicit. It may be significant, then, that the Florentine florin, which became one of the two standard currencies of Europe during the years of Italian mercantilism, bore the image of John the Baptist on its face.

With the Medici family, these possible relationships with Hospitaller families seem even more obvious. For one thing, the name "Medici" itself implies ancestry from someone in the medical profession. For another, the Medicis' own family legend boasts of their descent from a mysterious knight of some unnamed order. As Jack Weatherford explains in *A History of Money*:

After coming to great power, the family claimed descent from a Knight Averado, who reputedly came to Italy on a pilgrimage to Rome but stopped in Tuscany long enough to slay a giant who had been terrorizing the peasants. The Holy Roman Emperor Charlemagne then supposedly awarded the brave knight a coat of arms bearing three red circles, representing the dents made in his shield by the giant. Some sources outside the family, however, claim that the three circles represent the three balls that have traditionally been the sign of the pawnbroker; others say they represent three coins.

The name Medici indicates descent from someone in the medical or pharmaceutical field, professions that were about equal in prestige to pawnbroking or barbering at that time. The three circles on the family's coat of arms may therefore represent pills, or the cupping glasses that doctors heated and applied to a patient's flesh in order to draw the 'bad blood' up to the skin's surface.

The Medicis were also connected to the royal and noble families ancestrally associated with the Knights Templar. You will recall how I mentioned in a previous chapter that the duke Rene d'Anjou had once employed both Christopher Columbus and Amerigo Vespucci, thus linking him inextricably to the movement to explore America. Rene d'Anjou was a descendant of Templar families as well, and is even believed to have been the Grand Master of a Templar splinter group called the Priory of Sion. In addition, Rene d'Anjou was connected to Cosimo de Medici, and was, like him, a pivotal figure in spreading the enlightened ideas of the Renaissance. Indeed, according to some authors, Rene d'Anjou may have been responsible for persuading Cosimo to undertake a lot of his influential activities. Michael Baigent, Richard Leigh and Henry Lincoln laid out this hypothesis in their bestseller, *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*:

It would not be inaccurate to regard Rene d'Anjou as a major impetus behind the phenomenon now called the Renaissance. Owing to his numerous Italian possessions he spent some years in Italy, and through his intimate friendship with the ruling Sforza family of Milan established contact with the Medicis of Florence. There is good reason to believe that it was largely Rene's influence that prompted Cosimo de Medici to embark on a series of ambitious projects – projects destined to transform Western Civilization.

Furthermore, this group, the Priory of Sion, is believed to have actually been in the possession of the head of Baphomet, which according to the Priory's own documents, was given to them by the Templars in 1307, the year the Templars were disbanded. The head was referred to in the documents as the "Caput 58M" ("caput" being Latin for

"head"), with the "M" written like the astrological symbol for Virgo (which looks very "M-like"). One year earlier in 1306, the Priory of Sion had adopted the subtitle "ORMUS." For their insignia, they chose the "M"-shaped Virgo symbol, inside of which they placed the other four letters of their new name: "O", "R", "U", and "S."

This name "ORMUS" is very significant. For one thing, it was the name of a famous Egyptian alchemist from A.D. 46. It also stems from the name used for God in the Persian religion of Zoroastrianism, and for the wisdom principle in some Gnostic cults: "Ormuzd." It further contains the root word "or", which means "gold" in most European languages. All of this tends to indicate that the Priory of Sion anticipated receiving the Baphomet head, and believed that from it they would soon gain the ability to perform the alchemical task of turning dross into gold.

At the same time, the old medieval Masonic guilds, which once revolved around the actual construction of buildings, now became based upon abstract ideas of philosophy. Thus was born Speculative Freemasonry, with the help of Templar-descended families who essentially turned this organization into a continuation of the Order of the Temple. Freemasonry, as we know, was perhaps *the* dominant influence on world events during the 1700s, as proto-Masonic/neo-Templar groups were during the 1500s and 1600s.

As I explained previously, the early proto-Masonic occult circles of England came to be led, in the 1600s by a visionary named Sir Francis Bacon. He was one of the founders of the Virginia Company, which first colonized the East Coast of North America for England. He also wrote *The New Atlantis*, a utopian fantasy in which he spelled out his vision for America as the site of the ultimate Masonic empire, directed by

a cabal of enlightened intellectuals who called themselves, collectively, “Solomon’s House.” Francis Bacon and his friends were responsible for laying the groundwork for what was destined to happen in America in 1776, and any secrets which the Templars might have possessed about statecraft or economics may have been passed along to the founders of the U.S. via this “Baconian Circle”, as it has been called.

Indeed, many authors see the United States as an attempt by the Knights Templar to set up their own autonomous state – the ideal state, completely immune to religious and kingly authority, based upon enlightened philosophic principles, and made powerful with economics that the Templars invented, using the eternal hidden power of the universe symbolized by Baphomet. The only thing that one must bear in mind is that by the time the ideal Templar state was created, the Templars had become Freemasons.

In the next section, I explain how these principles are rooted in the ancient religious traditions of Christianity, Judaism, and pagan idol worship. I argue the following: that money has always been viewed as representative of both divine and royal power; that the coining of money has always been associated with the priesthood; that the operation of the economy has always been seen as metaphysical; that the tokens of money have always been thought of as enchanted objects; and that people have often made pacts with divine or demonic powers in order to gain wealth. I also draw an interestingly link between America’s wealth, King Solomon’s treasure, and the famous “lost treasure of the Knights Templar.” I think that this was not a vast horde of gold, but a formula for creating wealth. This formula was probably discovered by the Templars and passed on to certain Freemasons, who used it to construct the architecture of the US banking system.

PART III

Chapter Eleven: The Temple of Money

The pursuit of money has long been thought to be at odds with the pursuit of spirituality. “Ye cannot serve both God and Mammon”, Jesus says in the New Testament, “Mammon” being a Syriac word meaning “riches.” We have seen that the Catholic Church has historically condemned the pursuit of wealth by individuals, although the pursuit of wealth by the Church itself has always been laudable and necessary. Similarly, the general religious attitude towards money is reflected in the almost universal prohibition against usury. The Judeo-Christian scriptures specifically prohibit it: *Leviticus 25:36-37* tells us: “Take thou no usury of him, or increase: but fear thy God; that thy brother may live with thee. Thou shalt not give him thy money upon usury, nor lend him thy victuals for increase.” Similarly, we read in *Ezekiel 18:13*: “Hath given forth upon usury, and hath taken increase: shall he then live? he shall not live: he hath done all these abominations; he shall surely die; his blood shall be upon him.”

While few churches or synagogues enforce these injunctions in modern times, Muslims still observe the prohibition against charging interest to another Muslim. Many Islamic countries find themselves in an economic straight-jacket because of this, and it would be fair to say that the standard of living in these countries might improve greatly if they would abandon it. Some financial institutions who do business in Islamic counties have found clever ways around the injunction, just as the merchants of Renaissance Venice and Florence found loopholes in the Catholic credo.

It may surprise some people, then, to learn that money actually has a religious origin. The oldest known coin currency that has been found is the Sumerian shekel, which dates from around 3000 B.C. It was created for use in a public religious rite known

as “sacred prostitution.” The priestesses of the fertility goddess Ishtar served her by offering themselves as representatives of her to male worshippers. It was thought that if the men simulated intercourse with the goddess, this would stimulate fertility in the land. A very important part of the ritual was the donation that occurred beforehand. The worshipper was expected to make offerings to the goddess in the form of wheat, which was the main agricultural product that they were asking the goddess to stimulate the production of.

During religious festivals, worshippers would bring a portion of their yearly wheat crop to the temple, where it was used to feed all of the priests, priestesses, and temple support staff. In exchange, they received one coin for each bushel of wheat, and each coin would entitle them to a visit with one of the priestesses. This is how the coin got its name: “shekel” means “bushel of wheat.” The coin featured a sheaf of wheat on one side, and a depiction of Ishtar on the other. This identification of money with wheat continues into the present day, where words that translate as “bread” or “corn” are used as slang terms for money.

The origin of money in Greece was similar. Beginning in 1000 B.C., they minted coins as tokens given to the worshippers of Dionysus in exchange for the donation of a bull to the Dionysian temple. These bulls would all be sacrificed at the annual celebration known as the “sacred feast”, to which Dionysus himself was invited. Half of the meat would be burned in honor of the god, while the rest was shared by the congregants – all those who could furnish a coin as proof of their donation.

As well, in contrast to the modern notion that “You can’t take it with you”, the Greeks believed that a deceased soul had to pay the ferryman, Charon, a fee for a ride

down the river Styx to the underworld, Hades. Thus it was a tradition to place a coin under the tongue of a dead man. It was thought that if he did not have the fare for the ride, the man's soul would be lost in limbo, haunting the Earth forever. This tradition survived in the Western world into the early twentieth century, where it was customary to place *two* pennies on the eyelids of the deceased. (Note that even the economy of Hades is subject to inflation.)

When the large-scale minting of coins in Rome began in 269 B.C., this too had a connection to the divine. The new silver coin, called the "denarius" (root of the Spanish word for "money" - "dinero") was minted in the temple of the goddess Juno Moneta. This was the same Juno who was the wife of Jupiter, but she had been given the surname "Moneta", in much the same way that the Madonna is given specific appellations in Catholicism, named after various apparitions that she has made (Our Lady of Lourdes, etc). "Moneta" means "to warn", and its application to Juno stems from the following incident, described by Jack Weatherford in *A History of Money*:

As an extension of her role as protector of women and guardian of the family, Juno became the patroness of the Roman state. According to Roman historians, in the fourth century B.C., the irritated honking of the sacred geese around Juno's temple on Capitoline Hill warned the people of an impending night attack by the Gauls, who were secretly scaling the walls of the citadel.

We should note that as the wife of Jupiter, the most high god of the Romans, Juno was the most high goddess, the Queen of Heaven, and thus was essentially equivalent to

the Greek Hera, wife of Zeus, or to the Eastern goddess, Ishtar. You will recall that in a previous chapter I described the phenomenon of political states throughout history identifying themselves with a national goddess figure (Columbia for the Americans, Britannia for the British, Marianne for the French, etc). Juno played that role for the Romans, who saw her as the protectress of the state. Thus, the issuance of money was one of the activities in Rome that she was thought to preside over. It is from Juno's surname of "Moneta" that the English words "money", "monetary", and "mint" are derived. Jack Weatherford notes that there are similar words in many other languages, and also mentions the fact that the use of these words continues the ancient association between money and the goddess. He writes:

Cognates in other European languages also derive from 'moneta', including the Spanish 'moneda', meaning 'coin.' From very early classical times, money showed a close relationship to the divine and to the female. We can still see that connection in money-related words in European languages, which are frequently feminine in gender, as in the Spanish 'la moneda' and the German 'die Mark' and 'die Munze' (coin).

In addition, there were a number of ancient societies that valued gold and silver, even before they learned to use it for money, because they associated it with their main god and goddess, the Sun and the Moon. Juno and Jupiter, as well as Hera and Zeus, were lunar and solar deities, with the male god representing the Sun, and his wife representing the Moon. The same associations were made in almost all ancient cultures, and as Jack Weatherford explains, they often made religious offerings of silver and gold to their gods

and goddesses:

In particular, gold was considered a divine substance. People around the world noted the resemblance of the color to the sun, a coincidence to which they ascribed a deeper meaning. The ancient Egyptians believed that gold was sacred to Ra, the sun god, and they buried great quantities of it with the corpses of their divine pharaohs. Among the Incas of South America, gold and silver represented the sweat of the sun and the moon, and they covered the walls of their temples with these precious metals. Even after conquest, when the Spaniards took the Indian gold and silver, the natives decorated their new Christian temples with foil paper to imitate the sacred substances, and they tossed gold- and silver-colored confetti into the air in place of gold dust. The ancient people of India considered gold the sacred semen of Agni, the fire god; therefore they donated gold for any service performed by Agni's priests.

In his thorough examination of ancient customs, *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World*, author Ignatius Donnelly surmised why gold was valued by the ancients so much more than silver:

…as the reverence for the great burning orb of the sun, master of all the manifestations of nature, was tenfold as great as the veneration for the smaller, weaker, and variable goddess of the night, so was the demand for the metal sacred to the sun ten times as great as for the metal sacred to the moon. This view is confirmed by the fact that the root of the word by which the Celts, the Greeks, and the Romans designated gold was the Sanscrit

word karat, which means, 'the color of the sun.'

Donnelly then draws our attention to a fascinating custom among the English which demonstrates that the association between the Moon and silver has survived into the modern era:

In England, to this day the new moon is saluted with a bow or a curtsy, as well as the curious practice of 'turning one's silver,' which seems a relic of the offering of the moon's proper metal. The custom of wishing, when one first sees the new moon, is probably a survival of moon-worship; the wish taking the place of the prayer.

Another author, Bernard Lietaer, in his book *The Future of Money: Creating New Wealth, Work and a Wiser World*, introduces anecdotal evidence which tends to indicate that there is something intrinsic in nature that does indeed link these metals with their respective heavenly bodies. As he states:

Many centuries later, without the need for further clerical intervention, gold and silver remained respectively symbolically associated with the sun and the moon. Their prices settled mysteriously into a stable ratio of 1/13.5, astrologically determined to reflect the heavenly cycles.

What he means regarding the heavenly cycles is that there are thirteen lunar cycles for every solar year, and in a lunar year (thirteen cycles of twenty-eight days

each), there are 364 days. Thus the Moon, and by extension, silver, is linked symbolically with the number 13. More evidence of a link between silver and the Moon comes from *A Beginner's Guide to Constructing the Universe: The Mathematical Archetypes of Nature, Art, and Science*, by Michael S. Schneider, where he writes:

Just as gold is the metal whose color, and inability to tarnish, has traditionally associated it with the sun, silver is linked with the moon. Indeed, on a clear night in the country the moon appears quite silvery. The ancients chose a symbol more appropriate than they may have known. It was only in this century that scientists probing the atom found that the atomic weight of silver, its weight relative to carbon, is 107.870, or nearly 108, a tenth of the moon's radius of 1080 miles.

There was another ancient culture which also used precious metals for religious purposes, and they are directly related to our inquiry. I am speaking of the ancient Jews and Israelites of the Holy Land. The origin of money in ancient Israel was the same as with all civilizations of antiquity: it originated with the priesthood.

Chapter Twelve: The Iniquity of Priesthood

In Old Testament times, the practice of priesthood in the kingdoms of Judah and Israel was restricted to those of the tribe of Levi. Every single male Levite was required to serve in the priesthood. That was the only occupation allowed to him. This was a circumstance demanded by God himself, who had personally stipulated not only that all priests should be Levites, and all Levites priests, but that the priests should also be banned from owning property. Their only source of income was the tithes and other offerings given to them by the people of Israel in exchange for their priestly services. The Israelites were obliged to give ten percent of their own earnings to the priesthood, and often paid for each priestly duty performed as well. But the Levites were not allowed to own any land, and while the other eleven tribes each had their own territory within Israel, the Levites were obliged to live scattered throughout the other territories. Sometimes they lived in public-owned housing, in or near the centers of religious worship, and sometimes they lived as guests at the houses of certain wealthy families who could afford to hire a personal priest.

The Old Testament is very clear about the fact that service in God's priesthood was, more than anything else, a burden. As it states in *Numbers 18*:

And the LORD said unto Aaron, Thou and thy sons and thy father's house with thee shall bear the iniquity of the sanctuary: and thou and thy sons with thee shall bear the iniquity of your priesthood....And I, behold, I have taken your brethren the Levites from among

the children of Israel: to you they are given as a gift for the LORD, to do the service of the tabernacle of the congregation....

But the Levites shall do the service of the tabernacle of the congregation, and they shall bear their iniquity: it shall be a statute for ever throughout your generations, that among the children of Israel they have no inheritance. But the tithes of the children of Israel, which they offer as an heave offering unto the LORD, I have given to the Levites to inherit: therefore I have said unto them, Among the children of Israel they shall have no inheritance.

And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, Thus speak unto the Levites, and say unto them, When ye take of the children of Israel the tithes which I have given you from them for your inheritance, then ye shall offer up an heave offering of it for the LORD, even a tenth part of the tithe.

The Levites were chosen for the priesthood partially as a punishment for the behavior of their progenitor, Levi, who, along with his brother Simeon, had waged a genocidal war on the nation of Shechem, against the wishes of Jehovah, and of their father, Jacob. This led Jacob to pronounce a curse upon the two sons when he was on his deathbed. He stated:

Simeon and Levi are brethren; instruments of cruelty are in their habitations. O my soul, come not thou into their secret; unto their assembly, mine honour, be not thou united: for in their anger they slew a man, and in their selfwill they digged down a wall. Cursed be their anger, for it was fierce; and their wrath, for it was cruel: I will divide them in

Jacob, and scatter them in Israel.

However, it was not until the Exodus that God cursed them with the iniquity of priesthood. On the night of the first Passover, God slaughtered the firstborn of every house in Egypt. But he passed over the houses of the Hebrews, who had painted the doors of their houses with lamb's blood at the command of God. Thus did the angel of death know to leave those houses alone. Yet in exchange for sparing the firstborn of the Hebrews, God demanded a substitute sacrifice. The sons of the tribe of Levi were chosen as the substitute, and although they were allowed to continue living, their inheritance, promised tribe descended from Jacob, was taken away from them. Moses and Aaron (both Levites) led the Hebrews out of Egypt and initiated an everlasting covenant between God and the Hebrews, in which they would pay homage and sacrifice to God in exchange for His protection. The Levites were then called to the priesthood, to be the mediators of this contract.

In a sense, the Levites became the most powerful people in Israel, and yet they had no property. They were the scapegoats who took on ultimate responsibility for the community. If the people of Israel sinned against God, then God would punish the people in general, but would punish the Levites foremost for failing to properly lead. If God punished the people of Israel, then the people blamed the priests for failing to secure God's favor. Thus the Levite priests endured much, and wholly earned the tithes that they received. The tithes were not considered gifts, but rather payment for services rendered, and the priests used what they were given not only for religious activities, but for their own personal needs as well. This was considered not a potential corrupting influence, but

as a bulwark against corruption, for a well-paid priesthood was less likely to accept bribes to perform impious deeds.

Nevertheless, the priests of Israel often did indulge in impious deeds, by accepting money or other donations in exchange for performing rites to heathen gods. Although God may have looked down upon such behavior, it was considered quite normal in Israel, especially when times were hard financially. In Louis Ginzberg's *The Legends of the Jews*, the author writes about a certain Levite priest, the grandson of Moses, who learned from his grandfather that if a priest could not earn an acceptable living serving God, it was better to supplement one's income by serving heathen gods for heathen clients, rather than begging for handouts from fellow Israelites. As Ginzberg writes:

From his grandfather he had heard the rule that a man should do 'Abodah Zarah' for hire rather than be dependent upon his fellow-creatures. The meaning of 'Abodah Zarah' here naturally is 'strange', in the sense of 'unusual' work, but he took the term in its ordinary acceptation of 'service of strange gods.'

Perhaps because heathen religious rituals often involved the rites of "sacred prostitution", as previously described, with the use of "temple prostitutes" who were paid for their services, the worship of strange gods is often referred to in the Old Testament as "whoring." In heathen religions, as in the Judaic tradition, there was quite a significance placed on the relationship between the service of the priests and the money they were paid to perform it. Simply put, the tithes paid to the priests, along with the prayers, animal sacrifices, and other rituals was seen as providing the power – the spiritual energy

- upon which the priesthood operated. The money paid by the congregation to the priests was a financial sacrifice to the god(s) they were servicing.

This is illustrated by the fact that heathen rites often involved the worship of religious idols which were made out of gold and silver that had been donated to the cause, sometimes by members of the congregation. In *The Book of Judges*, we read about Micah, the Levite priest I discussed earlier who was descended from Moses. It was he who performed "strange service" for Israelites with heathen beliefs. Micah held services with a handful of religious idols which he had crafted out of silver that had been donated by his mother Delilah specifically for this cause. By donating this silver, she was providing a seed upon which Micah's lucrative priesthood would grow, for he would then charge believing heathens money to perform rites on their behalf in homage to these idols. The same principle was illustrated in the story of the golden calf in *Exodus*, which was fashioned by the high priest Aaron out of the golden jewelry donated by the people who worshipped it. Thus it "contained", spiritually, their covenant with Belial, the deity it represented - a covenant bought with the price of that gold, which is why Moses had them drink the gold as a punishment - to internalize the curse which God had placed upon them for worshipping the calf.

Chapter Thirteen: A Trespass Offering

There is another story in the Old Testament which illustrates a similar principle as that found in the golden calf story. It is the story of the plague at Ashdod told in *I Samuel 4 – 6*. When Israel was at war with the Philistines, there was an incident in which the enemy actually managed to capture the Ark of the Covenant. They took it to Ashdod and set it up in the Temple of Dagon, their god of wisdom, placing it right next to the great statue of Dagon that was there. The next day, however, the Philistines awoke to a surprise. *I Samuel 5:3 – 5* states:

And when they arose early on the morrow morning, behold, Dagon was fallen upon his face to the ground before the ark of the LORD; and the head of Dagon and both the palms of his hands were cut off upon the threshold; only the stump of Dagon was left to him. Therefore neither the priests of Dagon, nor any that come into Dagon's house, tread on the threshold of Dagon in Ashdod unto this day. But the hand of the LORD was heavy upon them of Ashdod, and he destroyed them, and smote them with emerods, even Ashdod and the coasts thereof.

These "emerods" appear to be bubonic tumors, a punishment brought by God to the Philistines for defiling the Holy Ark. The Philistines found that everywhere they tried to bring the Ark, a plague of "emerods" broke out. *I Samuel 5:7 – 11* says:

And when the men of Ashdod saw that it was so, they said, The ark of the God of Israel shall not abide with us: for his hand is sore upon us, and upon Dagon our god. They sent therefore and gathered all the lords of the Philistines unto them, and said, What shall we do with the ark of the God of Israel? And they answered, Let the ark of the God of Israel be carried about unto Gath. And they carried the ark of the God of Israel about thither. And it was so, that, after they had carried it about, the hand of the LORD was against the city with a very great destruction: and he smote the men of the city, both small and great, and they had emerods in their secret parts. Therefore they sent the ark of God to Ekron. And it came to pass, as the ark of God came to Ekron, that the Ekronites cried out, saying, They have brought about the ark of the God of Israel to us, to slay us and our people. So they sent and gathered together all the lords of the Philistines, and said, Send away the ark of the God of Israel, and let it go again to his own place, that it slay us not, and our people: for there was a deadly destruction throughout all the city; the hand of God was very heavy there.

After consulting with their oracles, the priests of the Philistines decided to return the Ark to the Israelites, hoping that this would end the plague. Also, to ward off any future bad karma, they decided to make a "trespass offering" - an "I'm sorry" gift to the God of Israel. The priests instructed the Philistines to make golden replicas of the emerods they had been smitten with, as well as effigies of the mice that, presumably, had carried the plague everywhere the Ark went. *I Samuel 6: 3-8* quotes the priests as saying:

...If ye send away the ark of the God of Israel, send it not empty; but in any wise return him a trespass offering: then ye shall be healed, and it shall be known to you why his hand is not removed from you. Then said they, What shall be the trespass offering which we shall return to him? They answered, Five golden emerods, and five golden mice, according to the number of the lords of the Philistines: for one plague was on you all, and on your lords. Wherefore ye shall make images of your emerods, and images of your mice that mar the land; and ye shall give glory unto the God of Israel: peradventure he will lighten his hand from off you, and from off your gods, and from off your land. ... Now therefore make a new cart, and take two milch kine, on which there hath come no yoke, and tie the kine to the cart, and bring their calves home from them: And take the ark of the LORD, and lay it upon the cart; and put the jewels of gold, which ye return him for a trespass offering, in a coffer by the side thereof; and send it away, that it may go.

Thus we see that the Philistines believed gold was a fitting offering to a foreign god. They also believed that using gold to make representations of their afflictions would cure them of it, if these representations were offered to the god whom they believed to be causing their afflictions.

A fascinating side note is that the Philistine town in which this all started, Ashdod, has been changed in many European renderings to "Azoth." For instance, when the French painter Nicolas Poussin portrayed the incident, he titled his work *La Peste d'Azoth*. The "Azoth" is also a code name for the alchemical element of Mercury. It actually represents the idea of totality because it starts with "A", which is the first letter in most alphabets, and end with "z", "o," and "th", which are the final letters of the Latin,

Greek, and Hebrew alphabets. It was thought by some alchemists in Renaissance Europe (those who studied the teachings of an alchemical sage named Paracelsus) that the "Azoth" was a cure for syphilis, which they believed was the true nature of the plague at Ashdod. Nicholas Poussin was such a follower of Paracelsus, as explained by Sheila Barker in her article "Poussin, plague, and early modern medicine" in the December 2004 edition of *The Art Bulletin*:

Given Poussin's contact with a Paracelsan adherent in the years preceding The Plague of Ashdod, it should also be mentioned that in certain learned circles, Azoth, French for Ashdod, signified more than just the city of the Philistines. Azoth was the name of the kabbalistic sign for the mercury principle in alchemical operations; it was a name for the mercury (argento vivo, quicksilver) cautiously recommended by both Paracelsus and Potier as an effective but dangerous remedy for syphilis; and it was the secret name of Paracelsus's famous panacea ('Azoth of the Red Lion'), extracted from cinnabar and associated with the alchemistic philosopher's stone. This last significance is laid out in medical writings including Potier's Pharmacopoea spagirica and his De febribus, as well as in esoteric writings such as Jacques Nuysement's 'Philosophical Poem on the Philosophers' Azoth' and a late sixteenth-century pseudo-Paracelsan treatise that identifies this substance, 'AZOT,' as the 'arcanum sanctum' (the secret of secrets) and associates it etymologically with the kabbalistic theme of the Ark of the Israelites - the same as that seen in Poussin's picture.

The idea of the "trespass offering" was not unique to the Philistines. The Israelites likewise made these offerings to their God, whenever they sinned against him, in an effort to appease him. The most important such offering was that which was made on behalf of the whole kingdom, in the form of the Scapegoat sacrifice on Yom Kippur, the Day of Atonement. The ritual is described in *Leviticus 16*, in which two goats are sacrificed, one of whom (the Scapegoat) is literally cursed with the blame of all of the people's sins for the entire year. (Interestingly, the Hebrew word for the Scapegoat is "Azazel", the name of a Middle Eastern goat deity thought to have partially inspired the idea of Baphomet.) Later, especially after the destruction of the Temple of Solomon, trespass offerings would be made mainly in cash.

Chapter Fourteen: The Shekel of the Sanctuary

The payment of tithes to the priesthood of Israel, and to their royal government as well, became a major part of the lifestyle of the ancient Israelites. Either way, whether received by the king or the priesthood, tithes were considered sacrifices unto the Lord himself. The first recording of the practice in the Bible is in *Genesis*, where Abraham gave a tenth of his possessions as a donation to the priest-king of Salem, Melchizedek. In *Genesis 28:22*, Jacob promised God that he would give "the tenth" after his divine vision at Bethel, which led to him building a temple of God there. But tithing developed over time into a rather complex system. As described by The Catholic Encyclopedia, (http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/), tithing is:

Generally defined as 'the tenth part of the increase arising from the profits of land and stock, allotted to the clergy for their support or devoted to religious or charitable uses.' A more radical definition is 'the tenth part of all fruits and profits justly acquired, owed to God in recognition of his supreme dominion over man, and to be paid to the ministers of the church.' ... Under the Mosaic Law the payment of tithes was made obligatory. The Hebrews are commanded to offer to God the tenth part of the produce of the fields, of the fruits of the trees, and the firstborn of oxen and of sheep (Lev., xxvii, 30; Deut., xiv, 22). In Deuteronomy there is a mention not only of an annual tithe, but also of a full tithe to be paid once every three years. While it was to God Himself that the tithes had to be paid, yet we read (Num., xviii, 21) that He transfers them to His sacred ministers: 'I have given to the sons of Levi all the tithes of Israel for a possession, for the ministry wherewith they

serve me in the tabernacle of the covenant.' In paying the tithe, the Hebrews divided the annual harvest into ten parts, one of which was given to the Levites after the first-fruits had been subtracted. This was partitioned by them among the priests. The remainder of the harvest was then divided into ten new parts, and a second tithe was carried by the head of the household to the sanctuary to serve as a sacred feast for his family and the Levites.

If the journey to the temple was unusually long, money could be substituted for the offering in kind. At the triennial tithe, a third decimation was made and a tenth part was consumed at home by the householder with his family, the Levities, strangers, and the poor. This triennial year was called the year of tithes (Deut., xxvi, 12). As the tithes were the main support of the priests, it was later ordained that the offerings should be stored in the temple (II Par., xxxi, 11).

The Catholic Encyclopedia then goes on to point out that tithing was widespread throughout the ancient world – not just offering donations to the priesthood, but specifically donating a tenth of one's holdings. They offer the following analysis:

The explanation of why the tenth part should have been chosen among so many different peoples is said to be (apart from a common primitive revelation) that mystical signification of the number ten, viz., that it signifies totality, for it contains all the numbers that make up the numerical system, and indeed all imaginable series of numbers, and so it represents all kinds of property, which is a gift to God. All species of

property were consequently reckoned in decades, and by consecrating one of these parts to God, the proprietor recognized the Source of his goods.

In addition to these tithes, a tax was instituted among the Israelites to support the upkeep of the Tabernacle, when it was built to house the Ark of the Covenant. When God instructed Moses on how to build the Ark, the Tabernacle, and all of the other priestly accoutrements, He told Moses that the materials had to be donated by the Israelites. As he explains in *Exodus 25: 1-8*:

And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying. Speak unto the children of Israel, that they bring me an offering: of every man that giveth it willingly with his heart ye shall take my offering. And this is the offering which ye shall take of them; gold, and silver, and brass, And blue, and purple, and scarlet, and fine linen, and goats' hair. And rams' skins dyed red, and badgers' skins, and shittim wood. Oil for the light, spices for anointing oil, and for sweet incense. Onyx stones, and stones to be set in the ephod, and in the breastplate. And let them make me a sanctuary; that I may dwell among them.

This is yet another example of the ancient idea that members of any particular cult must donate the materials used to craft their idols and places of worship. Notice that gold is the primary material used, being the most appropriate gift to honor a god.

The Lord goes on to explain to Moses the exact "pattern" to use when constructing each item – indicating that there was something sacred about every detail of the dimensions of these objects, the materials used, and the manner in which they were

obtained. The Tabernacle was made to house the Ark, in which the spirit of the Lord was believed to literally reside. Inside of this Ark the Tablets of Testimony were also placed, written by the very finger of God, detailing the contract between God and the Israelites that was being continued with the priestly services performed in the Tabernacle.

In the next few passages, God describes at length how the Levites should take a census of the Israelites every year, and tax them all a half-shekel each, "after the shekel of the sanctuary." Yes, like the Sumerians and other ancient peoples, the Israelites called their currency the "shekel." *Exodus 30: 12 -16* states:

When thou takest the sum of the children of Israel after their number, then shall they give every man a ransom for his soul unto the LORD, when thou numberest them; that there be no plague among them, when thou numberest them. This they shall give, every one that passeth among them that are numbered, half a shekel after the shekel of the sanctuary: (a shekel is twenty gerahs:) an half shekel shall be the offering of the LORD. Every one that passeth among them that are numbered, from twenty years old and above, shall give an offering unto the LORD. The rich shall not give more, and the poor shall not give less than half a shekel, when they give an offering unto the LORD, to make an atonement for your souls. And thou shalt take the atonement money of the children of Israel, and shalt appoint it for the service of the tabernacle of the congregation; that it may be a memorial unto the children of Israel before the LORD, to make an atonement for your souls.

The phrase "shekel of the Sanctuary" is used repeatedly throughout the Pentateuch, and refers to the fact that the standard weight for Israelite shekels was to be

measured and assayed (tested) within the Tabernacle by the Levites, as it later would be in the Temple of Solomon. The shekel's weight was actually related mathematically to the size of the Israelite cubit, the standard of which was extracted from the measurements of the Holy of Holies, the 20 cubit by 20 cubit by 20 cubit perfect cube in the center of the Tabernacle, in which the Ark was kept, and in which only the High Priest Aaron and his sons were allowed to step foot.

But when people speak of "the Sanctuary" and the "Holy of Holies" now, they are usually referring not to the Tabernacle, but to King Solomon's Temple, the crowning achievement of Israel. It would become not only the house of God, and the center of an empire, but a symbol of wisdom and wealth in perfection to future Jews, Christians, Templars, and Freemasons.

Chapter Fifteen: King Solomon's Temple

Wisdom, wealth, and the building of the Temple are the three things that King Solomon is best known for. The wisdom he acquired from God himself, when he went before the Ark of the Covenant to pray. *II Chronicles* starts off with this story, telling us in Chapter 1:6-12 that:

…Solomon went up thither to the brazen altar before the LORD, which was at the tabernacle of the congregation, and offered a thousand burnt offerings upon it. In that night did God appear unto Solomon, and said unto him, Ask what I shall give thee. And Solomon said unto God, Thou hast shewed great mercy unto David my father, and hast made me to reign in his stead. Now, O LORD God, let thy promise unto David my father be established: for thou hast made me king over a people like the dust of the earth in multitude. Give me now wisdom and knowledge, that I may go out and come in before this people: for who can judge this thy people, that is so great?

God was impressed with the pious and humble nature of Solomon's request. Given the option to be granted anything he wished, he chose wisdom! Because of this, God blessed Solomon even beyond what he had requested:

And God said to Solomon, Because this was in thine heart, and thou hast not asked riches, wealth, or honour, nor the life of thine enemies, neither yet hast asked long life; but hast asked wisdom and knowledge for thyself, that thou mayest judge my people, over

whom I have made thee king: Wisdom and knowledge is granted unto thee; and I will give thee riches, and wealth, and honour, such as none of the kings have had that have been before thee, neither shall there any after thee have the like.

It was after God invested him with this wisdom that Solomon started becoming very wealthy, collecting chariots and horses, importing exotic linens and spices, jewels, gold and silver, and numerous other luxury items. In particular, *II Chronicles* says that he "made silver and gold at Jerusalem as plenteous as stones." He then became obsessed with a mission that he had inherited from his father David: to build a spectacular temple to house the Ark of God, instead of the tent that it had heretofore been sitting in. He also wanted to build an extravagant royal palace for himself and his many wives. *II Chronicles* treats the creation of these two buildings as one event, whereas *I Kings*, which also tells the story of Solomon, specifies that he spent the first seven years building the temple, and then the next thirteen years building the royal palace. Nevertheless, they were both part of the same overall architectural compound.

II Chronicles details how Solomon reached out to the King of Tyre, Hiram (called "Huram" in *II Chronicles*), who had previously been an ally of his father David. Hiram was also wealthy and wise, and ruled over a powerful Phoenician island city-state, which at the time held a vast empire with numerous colonies, and was the center of the world's merchant economy. They had colonies in Greece, Northern Africa, Carthage, Sicily, Corsica, and Spain. The word "Tyre" is actually a Latinization of the name of this city. It was called in the Phoenician tongue "Assur", or "Sur", as the natives who live there still call it. The word means "rock", and is connected to the name of the later people known as

the “Assyrians”, as well as the modern Syrians. When Tyre was dominant, most of the Phoenicians or, as they termed themselves, “Canaanites”, were also loosely called “Tyrians” by the outside world, or else, “Sidonians”, after another Phoenician city, Sidon.

All collectively termed “the Sea Peoples” by historians, the Phoenicians were sea-farers and merchants. The word “Canaanite” became a more generalized international term for “merchant.” Meanwhile, “Phoenician” is a term that is derived from one of the region’s chief exports, a purple dye made from snails that was highly valued for coloring textiles, specifically those made to be worn by royalty. (The color has been associated with royalty ever since.) “Phoenix” also became the name of a mythical bird, which purportedly was able to live 500 years and then died, only to be reborn from the ashes of her own funeral pyre. This bird became a symbol of alchemy, and was employed by the Freemasons. (You will recall that Manly P. Hall believed the eagle on the back of the Great Seal of the U.S. was meant to covertly represent a phoenix.)

The Phoenicians developed an alphabet (technically called an “abjad” because it contains no vowels), which they developed for use in trade. This 22-letter abjad formed the basis of the Greek alphabet and, in an indirect way, all those of the Middle East and India. The major goddess worshipped by the Sea Peoples, Astarte, is probably related to the Phoenician name of Tyre, “Assur.” Their main god, known as “Baal” or “Melqart”, became united over time in their minds with the Greek figure of Hercules. In King Hiram’s time, there was a magnificent temple of Melqart which dominated the island, and outside of the entrance to the temple were two massive pillars, representing the Pillars of Hercules. This temple became the blueprint for the one that Solomon was to have built.

Solomon and Hiram had a close friendship and business relationship, which was a continuation of a friendship between Hiram and David. *II Chronicles, 2:3* states:

… Solomon sent to Huram the king of Tyre, saying, As thou didst deal with David my father, and didst send him cedars to build him an house to dwell therein, even so deal with me.

The Tyrians did indeed provide lumber for the building of King David's royal palace. But there was more going on in this new relationship between Solomon and Hiram than just the continuation of a hereditary alliance. They were forming a new bond. *I Kings 5:12* describes it thusly:

And the LORD gave Solomon wisdom, as he promised him: and there was peace between Hiram and Solomon; and they two made a league together.

The phrasing of this is interesting, as though the diplomatic relations between Hiram and Solomon were a *result* of the wisdom that he obtained from God. At any rate, the word "league" is defined by *Webster's Dictionary* as "a covenant or compact made between persons, parties, states, etc., for the promotion or maintenance of common interests or for mutual assistance or service. "This is what Hiram and Solomon had together, and this is why their relationship serves as an example of the ideal fraternal bond in the rituals of Freemasonry. The league between Solomon and Hiram was formed

when Hiram agreed to help provide materials, architects, and workmen for the building of Solomon's Temple, in exchange for certain provisions. *I Kings 5:8-11* says:

… Hiram sent to Solomon, saying, I have considered the things which thou sentest to me for: and I will do all thy desire concerning timber of cedar, and concerning timber of fir. My servants shall bring them down from Lebanon unto the sea: and I will convey them by sea in floats unto the place that thou shalt appoint me, and will cause them to be discharged there, and thou shalt receive them: and thou shalt accomplish my desire, in giving food for my household. So Hiram gave Solomon cedar trees and fir trees according to all his desire. And Solomon gave Hiram twenty thousand measures of wheat for food to his household, and twenty measures of pure oil: thus gave Solomon to Hiram year by year.

The reason why the Tyrians needed these things from the Israelites was because the Phoenicians were not very good at conducting their own agriculture, since their land was non-arable. Necessity being the mother of invention, the Phoenicians developed sophisticated trade networks and practices that gained them enough wealth and power to obtain everything else they needed or wanted. Also, luck had positioned them in the middle of the trade routes between Mesopotamia, Arabia and Egypt. They were able to use this strategic position as leverage to impose their own trade agreements on the surrounding nations.

The agreement the Tyrians made with Solomon began with the building of the Temple, but quickly grew into a much larger trading partnership that greatly expanded

the wealth and territories of Israel. The Tyrians even allowed Israel to make use of their shipping fleet. Clearly Solomon's wisdom was guiding him on how to create a vibrant economy.

In every way, the Temple reflected the concept of extravagant wealth, and of its continual growth. The materials used in building the temple were extremely valuable: the cedars of Lebanon, expensive cloth dyed with Tyre's famous purple, and lots of gold. Furthermore, every item was crafted by the best craftsmen in the world, the Phoenicians, most especially the architecture of the Temple itself. The Sea Peoples were among the ancient world's most accomplished temple-builders.

In the rituals of Freemasonry, there are two "Hirams" who each play a role in their rituals regarding the building of Solomon's Temple. One is Hiram, the king of Tyre, and the other they call "Hiram Abiff", referring to another figure mentioned in both *II Chronicles* and *I Kings*, who was a master architect sent by Hiram of Tyre to direct the building of Solomon's Temple.

Whoever this architect was, he created Solomon's Temple as a virtual replica of the Tyrian Temple of Melqart. He even added the two pillars outside the entrance. *II Chronicles, 3:17* states:

And he reared up the pillars before the temple, one on the right hand, and the other on the left; and called the name of that on the right hand Jachin, and the name of that on the left Boaz.

When the work of building the Temple was through, seven years later, Solomon made a point of filling it with objects that had already been dedicated to the Lord, as we read in *II Chronicles, 5:1*:

Thus all the work that Solomon made for the house of the LORD was finished: and Solomon brought in all the things that David his father had dedicated; and the silver, and the gold, and all the instruments, put he among the treasures of the house of God.

When dedicating the Temple, he made sacrifices of incalculable magnitude, to show his appreciation to God, as it says in *II Chronicles,5:6*:

Also king Solomon, and all the congregation of Israel that were assembled unto him before the ark, sacrificed sheep and oxen, which could not be told nor numbered for multitude.

These were standard practices in the ancient world when commemorating a new temple. Such acts as building the temple with donated materials, filling it with religious treasures, and sacrificing animals upon a Temple's dedication were all believed to build up a powerful spiritual energy reserve within the temple, to turn it into a conduit for this power to be passed between the congregation and the gods they worshipped. So too was the placing of a special "cornerstone" in a temple's foundation. Solomon's Temple is said to have had a special cornerstone, which elsewhere in the Bible is used as a metaphor for Christ. Freemasons have used it as a symbol of the Philosopher's Stone. The Temple

could be thought of as a living, growing organism, and the cornerstone as the seed at its root. In fact, Solomon's Temple had a number of vegetation motifs in its gold and brass work (representations of lilies, pomegranates, etc), which would tend to reinforce this notion.

The Temple became the central foundation of a new covenant between God and the Israelites, negotiated by Solomon after the Temple was built. Solomon asked for, and received, a new deal with God: as long as the people walked in the ways of God, a son of David would always sit upon the throne of Judah, and God would bless them abundantly all the days of their lives. If they sinned, they were to pray for forgiveness, in the direction of the Temple, in much the same way that Muslims now pray towards Mecca. *I Kings, 9:2-9* reads:

And the LORD said unto him, I have heard thy prayer and thy supplication, that thou hast made before me: I have hallowed this house, which thou hast built, to put my name there for ever; and mine eyes and mine heart shall be there perpetually. And if thou wilt walk before me, as David thy father walked, in integrity of heart, and in uprightness, to do according to all that I have commanded thee, and wilt keep my statutes and my judgments: Then I will establish the throne of thy kingdom upon Israel for ever, as I promised to David thy father, saying, There shall not fail thee a man upon the throne of Israel. But if ye shall at all turn from following me, ye or your children, and will not keep my commandments and my statutes which I have set before you, but go and serve other gods, and worship them: Then will I cut off Israel out of the land which I have given them; and this house, which I have hallowed for my name, will I cast out of my sight; and

Israel shall be a proverb and a byword among all people: And at this house, which is high, every one that passeth by it shall be astonished, and shall hiss; and they shall say, Why hath the LORD done thus unto this land, and to this house? And they shall answer, Because they forsook the LORD their God, who brought forth their fathers out of the land of Egypt, and have taken hold upon other gods, and have worshipped them, and served them: therefore hath the LORD brought upon them all this evil.

In addition, even non-Israelite strangers could become involved in the covenant, if they prayed towards the Temple. As we read in *II Chronicles, 6:32 – 6:35*:

Moreover concerning the stranger, which is not of thy people Israel, but is come from a far country for thy great name's sake, and thy mighty hand, and thy stretched out arm; if they come and pray in this house; Then hear thou from the heavens, even from thy dwelling place, and do according to all that the stranger calleth to thee for; that all people of the earth may know thy name, and fear thee, as doth thy people Israel, and may know that this house which I have built is called by thy name. If thy people go out to war against their enemies by the way that thou shalt send them, and they pray unto thee toward this city which thou hast chosen, and the house which I have built for thy name; Then hear thou from the heavens their prayer and their supplication, and maintain their cause.

The agreement even specifies that foreigners can appeal to Israel's god and obtain victory in battle (provided that battle is not against Israel, of course). One cannot help but

think that Solomon interjected this particular part into the agreement so that his friends in Tyre could enjoy the benefits of the new covenant as well.

Chapter Sixteen: King Solomon's Treasure

Just as the agreement had stipulated, after Solomon built the Temple, his kingdom's already voluminous wealth began to grow exponentially. As it states in *II Chronicles, 7:11*:

Thus Solomon finished the house of the LORD, and the king's house: and all that came into Solomon's heart to make in the house of the LORD, and in his own house, he prosperously effected.

One of the ways in which Solomon managed to increase his wealth was by having the subject nations in his empire pay him tributes. *I Kings, 4:21-24* tells us that Solomon's empire was quite large:

And Solomon reigned over all kingdoms from the river unto the land of the Philistines, and unto the border of Egypt: they brought presents, and served Solomon all the days of his life...

For he had dominion over all the region on this side the river, from Tiphsah even to Azzah, over all the kings on this side the river: and he had peace on all sides round about him.

I Kings, 9:20:22 also tells us how he forced the people of these subject nations to serve him as "bondmen." This is how the empire was maintained. It further specifies that Solomon exempted his own people from having to perform labor. It states:

And all the people that were left of the Amorites, Hittites, Perizzites, Hivites, and Jebusites, which were not of the children of Israel, Their children that were left after them in the land, whom the children of Israel also were not able utterly to destroy, upon those did Solomon levy a tribute of bondservice unto this day. But of the children of Israel did Solomon make no bondmen: but they were men of war, and his servants, and his princes, and his captains, and rulers of his chariots, and his horsemen.

In addition, Solomon even accepted gifts from foreign travelers who would come to hear him share his now world-renowned wisdom. Such was the case with the Queen of Sheba, who ruled another rich land, and came for an extended stay in Israel to test Solomon's wit. In *II Chronicles: 9:9* it says:

And she gave the king an hundred and twenty talents of gold, and of spices great abundance, and precious stones: neither was there any such spice as the queen of Sheba gave king Solomon.

More evidence of Solomon running his "wisdom racket" (in which he accepted gifts in exchange for dispersing advice) can be found in extra-biblical sources, such as those compiled in Louis Ginzberg's *Legends of the Jews, Volume IV*, where he quotes

Jewish folk myths regarding the many riddle contests which King Hiram and King Solomon would have. Hiram would compose mind-bending riddles, which Solomon would inevitably crack, forcing Hiram to pay him a monetary tribute.

Through these various methods, and through international trade utilizing the ships and the shipping routes of the Tyrians, Solomon had a constant stream of wealth flowing into his country and constantly multiplying itself. As *I Kings, 10:29* describes it:

Now the weight of gold that came to Solomon in one year was six hundred threescore and six talents of gold. Beside that he had of the merchantmen, and of the traffick of the spice merchants, and of all the kings of Arabia, and of the governors of the country. And king Solomon made two hundred targets of beaten gold: six hundred shekels of gold went to one target. And he made three hundred shields of beaten gold; three pound of gold went to one shield: and the king put them in the house of the forest of Lebanon. Moreover the king made a great throne of ivory, and overlaid it with the best gold. The throne had six steps, and the top of the throne was round behind: and there were stays on either side on the place of the seat, and two lions stood beside the stays. And twelve lions stood there on the one side and on the other upon the six steps: there was not the like made in any kingdom. And all king Solomon's drinking vessels were of gold, and all the vessels of the house of the forest of Lebanon were of pure gold; none were of silver: it was nothing accounted of in the days of Solomon. For the king had at sea a navy of Tharshish with the navy of Hiram: once in three years came the navy of Tharshish, bringing gold, and silver, ivory, and apes, and peacocks. So king Solomon exceeded all the kings of the earth for riches and for wisdom. And all the earth sought to Solomon, to hear his wisdom, which

God had put in his heart. And they brought every man his present, vessels of silver, and vessels of gold, and garments, and armour, and spices, horses, and mules, a rate year by year. And Solomon gathered together chariots and horsemen: and he had a thousand and four hundred chariots, and twelve thousand horsemen, whom he bestowed in the cities for chariots, and with the king at Jerusalem. And the king made silver to be in Jerusalem as stones, and cedars made he to be as the sycamore trees that are in the vale, for abundance. And Solomon had horses brought out of Egypt, and linen yarn: the king's merchants received the linen yarn at a price. And a chariot came up and went out of Egypt for six hundred shekels of silver, and an horse for an hundred and fifty: and so for all the kings of the Hittites, and for the kings of Syria, did they bring them out by their means.

But multiplying horses, wives, and gold unto oneself are three things specifically prohibited in the Hebrews scriptures for a king, who is supposed to remain humble and God-fearing. Solomon's wealth and decadent lifestyle was making him weak to the temptations of sin. Moreover, Solomon's many wives, including the daughter of the Pharaoh of Egypt, were turning his heart away from the one true God, and towards the abominable deities of the heathen. The scriptures tell us that his wives persuaded him to build temples to these other gods, including "Ashtoreth" and "Milcom", the equivalent of Tyre's Astarte and Melqart. We read in *I Kings, 11:1 – 10*:

But king Solomon loved many strange women, together with the daughter of Pharaoh, women of the Moabites, Ammonites, Edomites, Zidonians, and Hittites; Of the nations

concerning which the LORD said unto the children of Israel, Ye shall not go in to them, neither shall they come in unto you: for surely they will turn away your heart after their gods: Solomon clave unto these in love. And he had seven hundred wives, princesses, and three hundred concubines: and his wives turned away his heart. For it came to pass, when Solomon was old, that his wives turned away his heart after other gods: and his heart was not perfect with the LORD his God, as was the heart of David his father. For Solomon went after Ashtoreth the goddess of the Zidonians, and after Milcom the abomination of the Ammonites. And Solomon did evil in the sight of the LORD, and went not fully after the LORD, as did David his father. Then did Solomon build an high place for Chemosh, the abomination of Moab, in the hill that is before Jerusalem, and for Molech, the abomination of the children of Ammon. And likewise did he for all his strange wives, which burnt incense and sacrificed unto their gods. And the LORD was angry with Solomon, because his heart was turned from the LORD God of Israel, which had appeared unto him twice, And had commanded him concerning this thing, that he should not go after other gods: but he kept not that which the LORD commanded.

Obviously, this constituted a breach in the contract that Solomon had with God, and it would cost him the kingdom. But God would not take it away during Solomon's lifetime. Honoring previous agreements with Solomon's ancestors, God allowed the kingdom to remain intact while Solomon lived, but rent it during the reign of his son Rehoboam. Always true to his contracts, God still allowed Solomon's descendant to keep the throne of Judah, Jerusalem, and rule over the tribe of Judah, again because of previous agreements, while the rest of the tribes were lost to his rival, Jeroboam. Thus

were created the separate kingdoms of Judah and Israel, and from that time on, God was out to get them both, to punish them for the sins of Solomon. *I Kings, 11:12 -13* tells us:

Wherefore the LORD said unto Solomon, Forasmuch as this is done of thee, and thou hast not kept my covenant and my statutes, which I have commanded thee, I will surely rend the kingdom from thee, and will give it to thy servant. Notwithstanding in thy days I will not do it for David thy father's sake: but I will rend it out of the hand of thy son. Howbeit I will not rend away all the kingdom; but will give one tribe to thy son for David my servant's sake, and for Jerusalem's sake which I have chosen.

Chapter Seventeen: Solomon's Pact with the King of Demons

The classic book series, *The Legends of the Jews*, by Louis Ginzberg, which draws upon extra-Biblical Jewish, Arabic, and Christian sources, tells a very different account of Solomon's life. According to the story presented therein, the main assistance which Solomon received in the building of the temple came not from Hiram of Tyre, but from demons. The text says that because of his wisdom, God gave Solomon to rule not only over his kingdom and empire, but over all beasts, and all spirits as well. It says that Solomon knew "the language of the birds", which is a form of cant described by alchemists as being all-powerful, able to command people, animals, and ethereal beings, and to alter physical reality. As the book explains:

Never has there lived a man privileged, like Solomon, to make the demons amenable to his will. God endowed him with the ability to turn the vicious power of demons into a power working to the advantage of men. He invented formulas of incantation by which diseases were alleviated, and others by which demons were exorcised so that they were banished forever. As his personal attendants he had spirits and demons whom he could send hither and thither on the instant. He could grow tropical plants in Palestine, because his ministering spirits secured water for him from India.

In this version of the story, when Solomon invited the Queen of Sheba to come visit him, he actually sent her a message demanding that she immediately come and pay homage to him, or else:

… I shall send out kings, legions, and riders against thee. Thou askest, who are these kings, legions, and riders of King Solomon? The beasts of the field are my kings, the birds my riders, the demons, spirit, and shades of the night my legions. The demons will throttle you in your beds at night, while the beasts will slay you in the field, and the birds will consume your flesh.

So when it came time for Solomon's most ambitious project, the building of the Temple, it was natural that Solomon would turn to the demonic realm for help, according to this account. This was actually not terribly unusual for the time. In an ancient world where it was quite normal to make contracts with spirits in order to obtain one's desires, a demon's assistance in building something was one of the most common requests. Architecture was believed to be one of their areas of expertise, as was the forging of metals, since demons ruled over the subterranean caverns in which these substances were found. But in this story, for the building of the very House of God, Solomon would enlist the help of the greatest demon of all, Asmodeus, whom he compelled to obey him by the use of a magical signet ring. Louis Ginzberg tells us:

The demons were of greatest service to Solomon during the erection of the Temple. It came about in this wise: When Solomon began the building of the Temple, it once happened that a malicious spirit snatched away the money and the food of one of the king's favorite pages. This occurred several times, and Solomon was not able to lay hold on the malefactor. The king besought God fervently to deliver the wicked spirit into his

hands. His prayer was granted. The archangel Michael appeared to him, and gave him a small ring having a seal consisting of an engraved stone, and he said to him: 'Take, O Solomon, king, son of David, the gift which the Lord God, the highest Zebaot, hath sent unto thee. With it thou shalt lock up all the demons of the earth, male and female; and with their help thou shalt build up Jerusalem. But thou must wear this seal of God; and this engraving of the seal of the ring sent thee is a Pentalpha.'

The seal of Solomon's ring, the "pentalpha", is just another word for the pentagram. It is so called because, if you look at a pentagram, you will notice that you can actually break it down into three triangles, and also three letters "A", or the Greek "alpha." This is the true "Seal of Solomon", and he used it as all magicians have traditionally used it since then: to imprison demonic spirits, and to bind them to their will. The pentagram is called the "Endless Knot", and was first used by the ancient Sumerians as a sign which meant "shackle" or "prison." It was even used as the City Seal of Jerusalem, according to an article called "the pentagram" on the website of the Masonic Grand Lodge of British Columbia and Yukon, which adds:

Roman Emperor Constantine I, after his defeat of Maxentius and the issuance of the Edict of Milan in 312CE, ascribed his success to his conversion to Christianity and incorporated the pentagram, one point down, into his seal and amulet.

The six-pointed star is more widely referred to nowadays as the "Seal of Solomon", and also as the "Star of David." But anciently, both symbols were used for

similar purposes, and both were called by each of those names. However, it was most definitely the pentagram which was featured on Solomon's magical ring. As Ginzberg relates:

Armed with it, Solomon called up all the demons before him, and he asked of each in turn his or her name, as well as the name of the star or constellation or zodiacal sign and of the particular angel to the influence of which each is subject. One after another the spirits were vanquished, and compelled by Solomon to aid in the construction of the Temple.

The manner in which Asmodeus became involved in the building of the Temple occurred when Solomon sought the help of a magical worm called the "shamir", which was capable of cutting stone. *Legends of the Jews* reads:

While Solomon was occupied with the Temple, he had great difficulty in devising ways of fitting the stone from the quarry into the building, for the Torah explicitly prohibits the use of iron tools in erecting an altar. The scholars told him that Moses had used the shamir, the stone that splits rocks, to engrave the names of the tribes on the precious stones of the ephod worn by the high priest. Solomon's demons could give him no information as to where the shamir could be found. They surmised, however, that Asmodeus, king of demons, was in possession of the secret, and they told Solomon the name of the mountain on which Asmodeus dwelt, and described also his manner of life. On this mountain there was a well from which Asmodeus obtained his drinking water. He

closed it up daily with a large rock, and sealed it before going to heaven, whither he went every day, to take part in the discussions in the heavenly academy. Thence he would descend again to earth in order to be present, though invisible, at the debates in the earthly houses of learning. Then, after investigating the seal on the well to ascertain if it had been tampered with, he drank of the water.

Clearly, Asmodeus, as king of the demons, was also seen as one of the keepers of heavenly wisdom. This is made apparent by the fact that he is presented as participating in intellectual debates at the "heavenly academy", and oversees those which take place at schools on Earth. This accords with the ancient interpretation of the word "demon", which literally translates as "wise one."

But as wise as Asmodeus was, Solomon managed to pull one over on him. He had the demon's drinking well filled with wine instead of water. Once he was all good and drunk, Asmodeus was easily captured, and compelled to spill the beans regarding the shamir worm. The text continues:

Asmodeus told Solomon that the shamir was given by God to the Angel of the Sea, and that Angel entrusted none with the shamir except the moor-hen, which had taken an oath to watch the shamir carefully. The moor-hen takes the shamir with her to mountains which are not inhabited by men, splits them by means of the shamir, and injects seeds, which grow and cover the naked rocks, and then they can be inhabited. Solomon sent one of his servants to seek the nest of the bird and lay a piece of glass over it. When the moor-hen came and could not reach her young, she flew away and fetched the shamir and

placed it on the glass. Then the man shouted, and so terrified the bird that she dropped the shamir and flew away. By this means the man obtained possession of the coveted shamir, and bore it to Solomon. But the moor-hen was so distressed at having broken her oath to the Angel of the Sea that she committed suicide.

Taking Asmodeus captive proved to be very helpful for Solomon, not only because he led the king's men to the shamir, but also because he became, in many ways, the chief architect of the Temple, at least according to the legends provided by Ginzberg. In this version of events, King Hiram of Tyre appears to play only a minor role in the building of the Temple, and no other Hirams are mentioned at all. Instead, Asmodeus is playing the role of the architect Hiram.

Using the king of demons to build the Temple proved to be not only helpful to Solomon, but harmful as well. The spirit was too crafty for Solomon, and managed to trick him into giving up the source of his power. As *Legends of the Jews* states:

Although Asmodeus was captured only for the purpose of getting the shamir, Solomon nevertheless kept him after the completion of the Temple. One day the king told Asmodeus that he did not understand wherein the greatness of the demons lay, if their king could be kept in bonds by a mortal. Asmodeus replied, that if Solomon would remove his chains and lend him the magic ring, he would prove his own greatness. Solomon agreed. The demon stood before him with one wing touching heaven and the other reaching to the earth. Snatching up Solomon, who had parted with his protecting ring, he

flung him four hundred parasangs away from Jerusalem, and then palmed himself off as the king.

Solomon was carried off so far away from Jerusalem that nobody recognized who he was. Separated from his ring, and all other accoutrements of power, Solomon was forced to wander about as a miserly beggar, desperately trying to convince everyone was he was the famous, wise, and wealthy King Solomon. But everyone who heard this thought he was a madman, for Solomon was thought to still be ruling with great pomp from Jerusalem. You see, Asmodeus had transformed himself into the king's likeness, and was ruling in his stead, with none being any the wiser. Meanwhile, Solomon took up residence with the king of the Ammonites (in modern Egypt), whom he served as chief cook. Solomon ended up falling in love with the king's daughter, and this turned out to be the key to regaining his throne. As Ginzberg explains:

At the end of that time, God took mercy upon him for the sake of his father David, and for the sake of the pious princess Naamah, the daughter of the Ammonite king, destined by God to be the ancestress of the Messiah. The time was approaching when she was to become the wife of Solomon and reign as queen in Jerusalem. God therefore led the royal wanderer to the capital city of Ammon. Solomon took service as an underling with the cook in the royal household, and he proved himself so proficient in the culinary art that the king of Ammon raised him to the post of chief cook. Thus he came under the notice of the king's daughter Naamah, who fell in love with her father's cook. In vain her parents endeavored to persuade her to choose a husband befitting her rank. Not even the king's

threat to have her and her beloved executed availed to turn her thoughts away from Solomon. The Ammonite king had the lovers taken to a barren desert, in the hope that they would die of starvation there. Solomon and his wife wandered through the desert until they came to a city situated by the sea-shore. They purchased a fish to stave off death. When Naamah prepared the fish, she found in its belly the magic ring belonging to her husband, which he had given to Asmodeus, and which, thrown into the sea by the demon, had been swallowed by a fish. Solomon recognized his ring, put it on his finger, and in the twinkling of an eye he transported himself to Jerusalem. Asmodeus, who had been posing as King Solomon during the three years, he drove out, and himself ascended the throne again.

It seems clear that this Asmodeus figure bears many parallels and possible connections to the figure of Baphomet. For one thing, they are both demons, and both associated with wisdom, Asmodeus being responsible for overseeing the academic institutions of both Heaven and Earth. Masonic author Albert Pike referred to the Temple of Solomon as a "Temple builded by Wisdom." Asmodeus is here being credited with building that Temple, the foundation of which the Knights Templar lived on top of, and excavated underneath looking for treasure, perhaps finding there the head of Baphomet, and/or other religious artifacts. Indeed, it was this Temple which they named their organization after. Could Asmodeus have left something behind when he was building the Temple – something which the Templars later used to contact him, under the name of "Baphomet"?

In addition to being described as a skull or a head, Baphomet was also said to be a demonic creature with a goat's head, and a human body, having both male and female sexual organs. In this guise, Baphomet has been depicted (most memorably by nineteenth-century occultist Eliphas Levi) as seated upon a throne, with one arm pointing up towards the heavens, and the other down below the Earth, embodying the concept of the unity of opposites that Baphomet represents. How can we resist comparison, then, when Asmodeus strikes the exact same pose right before he assumes the likeness of Solomon? Recall what the text said:

The demon stood before him with one wing touching heaven and the other reaching to the earth. Snatching up Solomon, who had parted with his protecting ring, he flung him four hundred parasangs away from Jerusalem, and then palmed himself off as the king.

"Asmodeus" contains the root word "As", or "Az", that we also find in "Azoth", another word for the alchemical concept that Baphomet symbolizes, as well as the demon "Azazel", the name of the Scapegoat traditionally sacrificed by the Levite priests of Israel on Yom Kippur. It is furthermore the name of a demon who, according to Judeo-Christian apocryphal legends, was shackled to a mountain forever as punishment for having taught forbidden wisdom to mankind. This very myth is referenced in the story of Solomon in *Legends of the Jews*, where "Azazel" is split into two characters, "Azza" and "Azzael." Nevertheless, it is clear that this is a reference to the same figure. It says:

As the spirits were subservient to [Solomon], so also the animals. He had an eagle upon whose back he was transported to the desert and back again in one day, to build there the city called Tadmor in the Bible. This city must not be confounded with the later Syrian city of Palmyra, also called Tadmor. It was situated near the 'mountains of darkness,' the trysting-place of the spirits and demons. Thither the eagle would carry Solomon in the twinkling of an eye, and Solomon would drop a paper inscribed with a verse among the spirits, to ward off evil from himself. Then the eagle would reconnoitre the mountains of darkness, until he had spied out the spot in which the fallen angels 'Azza and 'Azzael lie chained with iron fetters, a spot which no one, not even a bird, may visit. When the eagle found the place, he would take Solomon under his left wing, and fly to the two angels. Through the power of the ring having the Holy Name graven upon it, which Solomon put into the eagle's mouth, 'Azza and 'Azzael were forced to reveal the heavenly mysteries to the king.

So Azazel is shown in this story to be yet another purported source of some of Solomon's wisdom. Azazel seems to equate to the figure of Asmodeus, who also is the same figure later called Azoth by the alchemists, and Baphomet by the Templars.

Chapter Eighteen: The Universal Agent

The Baphometic and alchemical concept of the balance of opposites is represented in Solomon's Temple with the two pillars that were placed outside of the entrance. As I have mentioned, these were replicas of the ones that stood outside of the Temple of Melqart on Tyre, which in turn were meant to represent the Pillars of Hercules. At Solomon's Temple they were named "Jachin", which means "He shall establish", and "Boaz", which means "It is in strength." These pillars came to be a powerful symbol for occultists and Freemasons, to whom they now represent the balance of opposites such as light and dark, male and female, etc. Jachin is often shown as white in color, and Boaz black. The two pillars are represented at the entrance of each Masonic lodge, which is always (when possible) facing East. Masonic writer Albert Pike analyzes the meaning of the names of the pillars in *Morals and Dogma*:

The word Jachin, in Hebrew, is יכין, It was probably pronounced Ya-kayan, and meant, as a verbal noun, He that strengthens; and thence, firm, stable, upright.

The word Boaz is בעז, Baaz. עז means Strong, Strength, Power, Might, Refuge, Source of Strength, a Fort. The ב prefixed means 'with' or 'in,' and gives the word the force of the Latin gerund, roborando - Strengthening.

The former word also means he will establish, or plant in an erect position - from the verb כון, Kūn, he stood erect. It probably meant Active and Vivifying Energy and Force; and Boaz, Stability, Permanence, in the passive sense.

Elsewhere, Pike states that Jachin and Boaz together represent "the unlimited Power and Splendour of Perfection of the Deity."

Baphomet too, according to Pike, represents "unlimited power." Pike has this to say about Baphomet in *Morals and Dogma*, linking the figure to the alchemical "Universal Agent" called the "Azoth" that supposedly could be used to create the Philosopher's Stone, or to turn lead into gold:

There is in nature one most potent force, by means where of a single man, who could possess himself of it, and should know how to direct it, could revolutionize and change the face of the world.

This force was known to the ancients. It is a universal agent, whose supreme law is equilibrium, and whereby, if science can but learn how to control it, it will be possible to change the order of the seasons, to produce in night the phenomena of day, to send a thought in an instant round the world, to heal or to slay at a distance, to give our words universal success, and make them reverberate everywhere.

This agent, partially revealed by the blind guesses of Mesmer, is precisely what the Adepts of the Middle Ages called the elementary matter of the great work. The Gnostics held that it composed the igneous body of the Holy Spirit; and it was adored in the secret rites of the Sabbat or the Temple, under the hieroglyphic figure of Baphomet or the hermaphroditic goat of Mendes.

So this is what Baphomet was: a "universal agent", created through the unity of opposing forces of nature, which composes a new force, powerful enough to alter

physical reality, from the atomic level upward. It is the very same Philosopher's Stone of the alchemists, capable of turning dross matter into gold. The possession of the secret of this force would presumably place its possessors amongst the most powerful people in the world. It seems probable that this is the wisdom that Solomon possessed, which enabled him not only to control animals and spirits (as *The Legends of the Jews* suggests), but also to become fabulously wealthy. Louis Ginzberg tells us that when Solomon was granted a wish by God, he chose wisdom not because he was uninterested in money or power, but because he was already smart enough to know that "wisdom once in his possession, all else would come of itself." Solomon's wisdom led him to utilize economic principles that were little understood at the time, and not widely used. It also seems likely that he learned more specifics about managing an economy from Hiram of Tyre.

It further seems just as likely that the keys to finding and utilizing this "universal agent" were encoded into the architecture of Solomon's "temple builded by Wisdom", as Masonic legends explicitly state they were. Indeed, the practice of Freemasonry largely involves the study of sacred geometric principles believed to have been used in the building of Solomon's Temple. Masonic legend also suggests that the Freemasons possess these secrets because they were discovered by the Knights Templar while excavating beneath the Temple Mount.

Chapter Nineteen: The Plot to Rebuild the Temple

But would the Templars necessarily have known what to look for under the Temple Mount, or have understood it when they found it? They could have, if information regarding this had been passed down hereditarily from biblical times onward. This was the premise of the bestselling 1980s book *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, by Michael Baigent, Richard Leigh, and Henry Lincoln. The book alleged that the founders of the Templars, including the famous Godfroi de Bouillon and Hughes de Payen, were descendants of a royal bloodline which traced its roots back to Jesus Christ and thus, ultimately, to King Solomon. Modern scions of this bloodline were quoted in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* as claiming to know the whereabouts of the Ark of the Covenant, and numerous other biblical secrets, which were said to have been passed down from generation to generation from the Bible characters themselves.

If the Templars truly were the descendants of biblical figures, they probably also had in their veins the blood of the Levite priests. It would seem clear that, bloodline or no, the Templars saw themselves as fulfilling the role that the Levites once did. The Templars too were priests, and performed the duties of banking for the community, as the Levites did. But more importantly, they were performing the Levites' chief function of overseeing the activities of the Temple – even if it was, at the time, only the foundation of the building that remained. Also in this context, we should note the Templars' devotion to John the Baptist, who was a direct descendant of the first Levite High Priest, Aaron.

But if the Templars had Jewish genes at all, Levite genes were likely among them. Since ten tribes of Israel were destroyed by the Babylonian captivity, only three remained: those of Judah, Benjamin, and Levi (the latter of which was not counted as a "tribe" by Jehovah, because they were denied the right to own property). These then became interspersed with each other so much in Israel that they were virtually indistinguishable in many ways. So by the time of the Templars, chances were good that if you were of Jewish ancestry at all, it probably included the lines of both Judah and Levi.

In this regard, there is an interesting detail to note: the Templars were obviously highly involved in creating the Latin Kingdom of Jerusalem after the capture of the city during the First Crusade – so much so that one of the Templar founders, Godfroi de Bouillon, was offered the crown of the new kingdom. He declined the title, choosing instead to call himself "Defender of the Holy Sepulcher." But he was succeeded by his brother Baudouin, who did accept the title and became King Baldwin I. Strangely, both men are reported by some authors to have converted to Judaism upon taking their titles. Perhaps it was this alleged association with Judaism and Jewish bloodlines which persuaded the Pope to grant the Templars the right to practice usury.

Albert Pike argues in *Morals and Dogma* that the Templars not only discovered the secrets of the Temple of Solomon, but that they actively wanted to *rebuild* the Temple. This, he says, was all part of their larger plot to take over the world through the power of money. He also alleges that they colluded with the Byzantine Church in this plot, because they too shared the dream of rebuilding Solomon's Temple, as part of their goal of supplanting the Roman Church. As Pike explains it:

In 1118, nine Knights Crusaders in the East, among whom were Geoffroi de Saint-Omer and Hugues de Payens, consecrated themselves to religion, and took an oath between the hands of the Patriarch of Constantinople, a See always secretly or openly hostile to that of Rome from the time of Photius. The avowed object of the Templars was to protect the Christians who came to visit the Holy Places: their secret object was the re-building of the Temple of Solomon…

This re-building, formally predicted by the Judaizing Mystics of the earlier ages, had become the secret dream of the Patriarchs of the Orient. The Temple of Solomon, re-built and consecrated to the Catholic worship would become, in effect, the Metropolis of the Universe; the East would prevail over the West, and the Patriarchs of Constantinople would possess themselves of the Papal power.

However, Pike tells us that the Templars were not exactly loyal to the Eastern Church, but more so to the Gnostic doctrines taught by John the Baptist. Pike even claims that the Templar leader Hughes de Payens was initiated into a secret Johannite church led by what were supposed to be direct linear successors of John's priesthood. In fact, Pike states that de Payens himself was made a successor of that priesthood. Pike writes:

The secret thought of Hugues de Payens, in founding his Order, was not exactly to serve the ambition of the Patriarchs of Constantinople. There existed at that period in the East a Sect of Johannite Christians, who claimed to be the only true Initiates into the real mysteries of the religion of the Saviour…

…The Johannites ascribed to Saint John the foundation of their Secret Church, and the Grand Pontiffs of the Sect assumed the title of Christos, Anointed, or Consecrated, and claimed to have succeeded one another from Saint John by an uninterrupted succession of pontifical powers. He who, at the period of the foundation of the Order of the Temple, claimed these imaginary prerogatives, was named THEOCLET; he knew HUGUES DE PAYENS, he initiated him into the Mysteries and hopes of his pretended church, he seduced him by the notions of Sovereign Priesthood and Supreme royalty, and finally designated him as his successor.

Thus, one could say that the Baphometic wisdom believed to be possessed by John the Baptist (symbolized by the image of his severed head or skull), along with the priestly prerogatives that John was entitled to as the lead descendant of the High Priest Aaron, were legitimately bestowed upon another likely descendant of Aaron, Hughes de Payens. Armed with this, the Templars may have felt that they already possessed more real power than any institution on Earth. Says Pike:

To acquire influence and wealth, then to intrigue, and at need to fight, to establish the Johannite or Gnostic and Kabalistic dogma, were the object and means proposed to the initiated Brethren. The Papacy and the rival monarchies, they said to them, are sold and bought in these days, become corrupt, and to-morrow, perhaps, will destroy each other. All that will become the heritage of the Temple: the World will soon come to us for its Sovereigns and Pontiffs. We shall constitute the equilibrium of the Universe, and be rulers over the Masters of the World…

…Their watchword was, to become wealthy, in order to buy the world.

Pike then goes on to describe how their arrogant pretensions led to the persecution and downfall of the Templar Order. But, he says, before the last Grand Master, Jacques de Molay, was consigned to the flames for heresy and witchcraft, he arranged for the work of the Templars to be carried on after his death by a new institution: Freemasonry. As he explains it:

The end of the drama is well known, and how Jacques de Molai and his fellows perished in the flames. But before his execution, the Chief of the doomed Order organized and instituted what afterward came to be called the Occult, Hermetic, or Scottish Masonry. In the gloom of his prison, the Grand Master created four Metropolitan Lodges, at Naples for the East, at Edinburg for the West, at Stockholm for the North, and at Paris for the South.

The fact that Albert Pike connects the Templars directly to the Byzantine church brings to mind an interesting possibility that I would like to present. It involved the well-known Templar standard, or battle flag, which showed their trademark red equilateral cross on a black and white chequered field.

Chapter Twenty: The Beautiful One

I have previously mentioned that the Templars picked up use of the chequer pattern from their contacts in the East, possibly from Islamic sources, but more likely from the Byzantines. Like Jachin and Boaz, this pattern represented to the Templars their Baphometic concept of the unity of opposites. They also believed, as Freemasons do today, that the floor of Solomon's Temple was covered with black-and-white-chequered tiles. All of these concepts, and that of the Baphomet itself, were symbolized by the Templar flag, which they actually had a name for. They called it "Beaussant", which means "the beautiful one."

Clearly there is a similarity between this word, "beaussant", and the root word "Byzant." Of course, "Byzantium" was not called by that name that during its time. It was only called that later on by seventeenth century scholars. The origin of the name is said to have come from the mythical (pre-Constantine) founder of the area who supposedly was named "Byzas." But this explanation is not widely accepted. Nobody really knows why it was called that. But the coins which Constantine had minted to pay for the construction of Constantinople (out of the gold looted from pagan Roman temples) were called "besants", and they continued to be the currency of the empire afterwards. The word "Byzantine" is now used as an adjective to describe any form of complex pattern, and this comes from the mosaic nature of Byzantine art. The chequer pattern is commonly used in Byzantine art. The Templars may have picked up its use when they passed through Constantinople during the First Crusade, just as they patterned

the design of their monasteries after the domed architecture of Byzantium, most especially, the Hagia Sophia (the Church of the Holy Wisdom).

This lends further credence to the possibility that the words “beaussant” and “Byzant” may be related. And too, one might consider a common origin in the word “Boaz”, which Albert Pike tells us was also pronounced “Baaz.”

Later on in history, we find that many of the early Freemasons or “proto-Masons” became engaged as privateers, or “pirates”, sailing the high seas in search of plunder. They too had a battle flag that represented the Baphomet. It was a black field upon which was featured the famous Templar and Masonic symbol of the skull and crossbones. They had a cute name for it too: “the Jolly Roger.” The origin of this is mysterious, but it is possible that “Roger” refers in code to the Hebrew word for “head”, which is “rosh.”

The fact that Baphomet, or the head of John the Baptist, would be represented on these two flags brings to mind other interesting possible linguistic connections. A flag is sometimes called a “jack”, as in the “Union Jack” of Britain. Of course, “Jack” is also a popular nickname for a person named “John”, although it is sometimes an anglicized version of the French name “Jacques.” These connections stem from the common origin of all of these names in Hebrew. Also related are “James”, “Jacob”, and “Jachin.” The names “James” and “Jacob” were still considered interchangeable in Britain in the 1600s, when supporters of the Stuart kings James I and II were called “Jacobites.”

But “John”, or “Johannes”, is also related anciently to “Oannes”, the name of a Babylonian deity who was remembered for having taught divine wisdom to mankind. This name, in turn, is related to the name of the Roman deity “Janus”, who, as with some descriptions of the Baphomet head, had two faces, and was recalled by the Romans as

having invented the concept of money. “Jnana” means “wisdom” in Hindi. “Sion”, a name for the Temple Mount in Jerusalem, is also the Welsh way of spelling “John.” Furthermore, we should consider the Persian word “djinn” (pronounced “jin”), which means “genius” or “demon.” Finally, it should be noted that “jack” is also a term that has been used to refer to ghosts or demons, as well as being a slang term for money. All of these concepts are linked with that of the Baphomet.

But if this is not enough to link John to the concept of Baphomet, the Masons make it explicit with their iconographic depiction of him posing in the now “Baphometic” stance, with one hand pointing up to Heaven, and the other pointing down to the Earth (see figure 22).

Chapter Twenty-One: Triskadekaphilia

Returning to the subject of the Jolly Roger, there was one more notable detail that appeared on the flag, beneath the skull and crossbones. It was the number “13”, written in Arabic numerals, with no explanation given.

The origin of this may lie with the association between the Knights Templar and the number thirteen. This association comes from the fact that their arrest and persecution by the king of France began on Friday the Thirteenth of October, in 1307. In addition, I discussed previously the fact that the Templars apparently had possession of a golden head (which may have been one of their auxiliary Baphomet heads) labeled “Caput 58 M”, with the “M” written as the astrological symbol for Virgo. I mentioned that this could be a code for 13, because the digits 5 and 8 add up to 13. Also, “M” is the thirteenth letter of not only our own alphabet, but many others, including the Hebrew. In addition, I mentioned what appears to be a Knights Templar spin-off group called the Priory of Sion, which observes the use of a thirteen-house zodiac system. In this system, Virgo may have been considered the “thirteenth house.” It is possible that this same zodiac system was used by the Knights Templar. Either way, it is evidence that the number 13 was important to the Templars, and that they associated it with the head of Baphomet. This then may be the origin of the number 13 beneath the skull and crossbones on the Jolly Roger flag.

In my previous book, *The Merovingian Mythos and the Mystery of Rennes-le-Chateau*, I discussed the rather voluminous evidence that the members of the Priory of Sion considered the number 13 to be important. I even demonstrated how that

organization's use of a membership ranking system based on multiples of 13 contained a hidden lunar calendar, based on lunar years of 364 days. I also discussed the fact that the 52-piece modern deck of playing cards contains a hidden lunar calendar as well. This, I stated, was particularly interesting given the historical evidence indicating that the Knights Templar may have played a role in bringing playing cards to the West from Eastern sources, and also may have helped to modify them into the form in which we see them today. Incidentally, playing cards directly influenced the development of the Tarot deck, and in modern tarot decks (such as the standard one developed by Arthur Edward Waite, a Freemason), the card labeled "XIII" is "Death." Also, Masonic lodges usually meet every full moon, which means there are thirteen of these lunar meetings every year.

Other possible connections with the number 13 that may have been important to the Templars include the fact that the tribe of Levi was at one time the thirteenth tribe of Israel, but at the same time was considered a non-tribe, with special rights, special restrictions, and special duties compared to those of other tribes. As I have explained, the Levites did not have a territory of their own, but their domains were scattered about the territories of the other tribes. In a way, the activities of the Templars reflected this, in that they did not have any particular land assigned to them, but possessed a right of sovereignty which allowed them to be a law unto themselves. Like the Templars, the Levites were not allowed to own property, but lived well by taking donations from the people they served. So if the Templars were copying the Levites in some symbolic way, they may have taken on the number 13 as a symbol for that reason.

However, I think the most important connections in this regard are those between the skull and crossbones, the number 13, and alchemy. The skull and crossbones symbol,

or sometimes just a picture of a skull, is called a “death’s head” in occult parlance. This symbol has been used by alchemists at least since the Middle Ages to symbolize the “nigrido”, the primary stage in the alchemical process, when the initial substance which one is attempting to transform (usually, into gold), is broken down into its original atomic components – called “prima material” (“first matter”) in alchemy. The idea is that an object or substance must be utterly destroyed and disintegrated, down to the atomic level, before it can be translated into something else. Thus, this stage of the process is identified with “death”, while the creation of the new substance is compared with “rebirth.” A good way of picturing this would be to think of the way in which people and objects are “beamed” from one place to another on the TV show *Star Trek*. The technology used on that show is all based upon these ancient alchemical ideas. Another prefect example is the replicator machine used on *Star Trek*, which essentially can make any thing or substance seemingly out of nothing, using pure energy as the “prima materia.”

Interestingly, according to some, there are exactly thirteen stages in the alchemical process. These, according to legend, are written upon the “Emerald Tablet of Hermes”, a green stone that supposedly fell from Heaven. The study of alchemy was greatly advanced in Hellenized Egypt, and that is where the myth of the Greek god Hermes’ invention of alchemy developed. Hermes would seem to be yet another figure upon whom the character of Baphomet was based. This is made obvious, if nothing else, by the fact that Hermes is often portrayed in statues and drawings pointing one hand up, and the other down. Also, Hermes was traditionally viewed as one of the satyrs, which were half-man, half-goat creatures from Greek mythology, just as Baphomet was seen as half-human and half-goat. Then consider the fact that Hermes was known for teaching

alchemical wisdom to mankind, and his eternal symbol was the caduceus: a staff with two serpents entwined upon it (or sometimes one). The depiction of Baphomet by Eliphas Levi shows him with a double-serpent caduceus formed around the base of his penis. Finally, I note that Baphomet is a "hermaphrodite", both male and female, a word that comes from the name Hermes, and that of the Greek goddess Aphrodite. Mark Amaru Pinkham writes in *Guardians of the Holy Grail: The Knights Templar, John the Baptist, and the Water of Life*, that:

…13 was also very important for the alchemical process because it denoted the number of stages in the alchemical process leading to death and rebirth. Legend has it that these 13 stages were inscribed by the sage Thoth-Hermes as 13 precepts on a tablet called the Emerald Tablet that was made of solid emerald; thus, the stages leading to the creation of the Philosopher's Stone were themselves inscribed on a version of the Philosopher's Stone. These 13 precepts became the foundation of Egyptian alchemy, and they were later inculcated within the Islamic Universities of Constantinople and Seville…

Of course, other sources say that there are ten, or sometimes seven, stages of alchemy denoted by the Emerald Tablet, but who's counting? Pinkham also makes the following observations:

Three very important 'alchemical' numbers eventually occurred to the alchemists from observing the cycles of Venus. The first number was eight, which is the number of [Earth] years it takes for Venus' cycle to elapse; the second number was five, the number of times

the planet becomes the Morning and Evening Stars during the cycle; and the third was thirteen, the number of times Venus revolved around the sun during the span of eight years. Of these numbers, the Arabic number 8 was adopted by alchemists as their definitive symbol for polarity union and the infinite state of immortality in engenders. The number 8 symbolized polarity union as two united circles, and also revealed that alchemy was the union of two circular 'worlds', Heaven and Earth. The number and symbol 8 became so important to the early alchemists that they made it the sacred number of their eternal patron, the Egyptian Thoth-Hermes.

Thus the "58" in "Caput 58M" could be a reference to all three of these numbers: 5, 8, and 13, and thus, the heavenly cycles of Venus. It is also noteworthy that the Templars are specifically remembered not for being arrested on "October the thirteenth" so much as on "Friday the thirteenth." Friday was named after "Freya", the Norse name for Venus.

Furthermore, 5, 8, and 13 are among the first numbers found in the "Fibonacci sequence." This is a sequence of numbers which represents the growth pattern of all living things in nature: of the embryo as it becomes a fetus, then a baby, then a child, then an adult, or of a seed that becomes a seedling, then a plant, etc.. This growth pattern contains the Fibonacci sequence of 2, 3, 5, 8, and 13. The Fibonacci sequence defines itself geometrically in things like the "golden spiral", the "golden mean proportion", and the pentagram (see figures 25 and 26). These are shapes found everywhere in nature, as they are visual representations of the mathematical sequences at work in creation. Long ago, ancient astronomers noticed the the movements of Venus contain Fibonacci numbers

and golden mean geometry, yet more reasons why they held the goddess Venus to be sacred. No wonder, then, that the Fibonacci sequence is important both to the studies of sacred geometry and of alchemy.

You could even say that the Fibonacci sequence is what mathematically unifies the study of alchemy and the study of sacred geometry. Golden mean geometry and Fibonacci numbers were used in the building of the pyramids, and, it is rumored, Solomon's Temple. Undoubtedly they could be found in the Hagia Sophia as well. Later on from about the year 1100, medieval stonemasons hired by the Knights Templar used the same principles, utilized in a different way, to create the magnificent the Gothic cathedrals of Europe. Because they are made from the numbers and geometry of nature, these buildings symbolically acted as living organisms, a theme emphasized ever more so by the common use of floral, agricultural, and other plant motifs for decoration.

But the number 13 plays some specific roles in the geometry of nature that are very interesting. One is that there are thirteen geometric solids in the third dimension, as classified by the Greek philosopher and mathematician, Archimedes. The other is that thirteen spheres, when placed together, make the most tightly compact arrangement of spheres mathematically allowable. When arranged this way, they form a three-dimensional representation of a hexagon. This brings to mind the thirteen stars arranged in the form of a larger, six-pointed star, which we find above the head of the eagle on the front side of the Great Seal of the United States. In each of these arrangements, the thirteenth piece is the hidden element which unifies and perfects the whole – like the Philosopher's Stone of the alchemists. This is the same symbolism found on the reverse of the Great Seal, signified by the All-Seeing Eye which completes the pyramid. In his

book *A Beginner's Guide to Constructing the Universe: The Mathematical Archetypes of Nature, Art and Science*, Michael S. Schneider illustrates how hexagonal geometry can be applied to the entire front side of the Great Seal (see figure 30). Furthermore, the hexagram is implied on the reverse of the Seal as well, formed when you connect the All-Seeing Eye with the letters "M", "A", "S", "O", and "N", to spell "mason."

This brings me to another interesting observation that Michael Schneider made in his book regarding the number 13:

Twelve is related to thirteen, the notorious but misunderstood number of superstition. While twelve is a solar number, thirteen is lunar, as the twelve months of a solar year contain nearly thirteen lunations. The relationship is more obvious when we look geometrically. Each of the methods for constructing a dodecagon results in twelve equally spaced points around a thirteenth one at the center. Twelve points occur at the crossings of a hexagram star around the thirteenth at their center…

Less well-known is the existence of a twelve-around-one pattern in the government of the United States, the founders of which were Freemasons. Seeking to establish a utopian society in the ancient tradition, they gave the government a classic twelvefold structure-function-order. In every way possible they incorporated zodiacal symbolism. George Washington kept a circle of twelve generals around him to fight for the thirteen colonies. The symbolism of thirteen stars and thirteen stripes on their flag, thirteen letters in their motto, 'E Pluribus Unum' ('From many, one'), and thirteen buttons on the sailor's uniform accented their intent. The number of colonies was not accidental but a hidden reference to an ancient teaching.

To this I would add that the flag of the Confederate States of America (which had many Freemasons, including Albert Pike, heading its cause) bore thirteen stars as well. This is because there were really thirteen secessionist states in the Confederacy, even though history books often cite only 11. (The states of Kentucky and Missouri each had mini-civil wars within themselves, with each having both a Unionist government, and a break-away Confederate government.) At any rate, it seems that, even if the number 13 is not an especially "Masonic" number per se, it was a sacred number, the associations of which the Masonic founders of the United States were certainly familiar with. Could this be the meaning of the use of 13 by the USA's founders: that it signifies both the unifying principle, and the principle of creation, that is at once the Philosopher's Stone of the alchemists, and the Templar concept of Baphomet?

When placed on the US one-dollar-bill, this representation of the Baphomet, made by the repeated use of the number thirteen, takes on a greater significance pertaining to alchemical nature of fiat currency. Baphomet was, to the Templars, the key to applied alchemy – both economic alchemy, and other forms as well. The Templars passed on the secrets of alchemy to the Freemasons, who utilized them in the creation of the U.S. monetary system.

It is not only on the present one-dollar-bill that the number 13 has been used. On the early forty-dollar note (designed by Freemason Francis Hopkinson, who also designed the American flag, and the final version of the Great Seal of the United States), there was an explicitly Masonic symbol: a blazing altar out of which shot thirteen rays, burning underneath the All-Seeing Eye. On the first fifty-dollar bill, which Hopkinson

also designed, there was the unfinished pyramid of thirteen layers, much like on the Great Seal, but it was more of a Sumerian-style ziggurat, or stepped pyramid, rather than a smooth-sided Egyptian-style pyramid, and there was no All-Seeing Eye. I also mentioned previously that the first pennies issued by the United States featured thirteen circles linked in a chain, along with the words “We are one.” Coins minted by individual states included the symbolic number as well. Copper coins minted in Vermont in 1785 featured the All-Seeing Eye with twenty-six rays shooting out (thirteen long, and thirteen short), interspersed with thirteen stars. In 1787, copper coins made in New York and New Jersey featured the eagle, the motto E Pluribus Unum, and thirteen stars surrounding his head.

Incidentally, the use of the number 13 can be found not just on money itself, but throughout the very structure of the U.S. monetary system. For instance, there is the fact that there are exactly six types of coins, and seven denominations of paper money, currently in circulation in the U.S. 6 added to 7 equals 13. Then there is the fact that the Treasury Department was created in 1789, exactly thirteen years after the birth of the USA in 1776. They even made a point of putting the date 1789 on the Treasury Department Seal in 1966, almost 190 years after the fact. The Treasury Seal, by the way, as I mentioned before, contains thirteen stars in its chevron.

The Federal Reserve has adopted the conspicuous use of the number 13 as well. The Fed was created in 1913. It consists of one Board of Governors overseeing twelve Federal Reserve Districts, and one central bank controlling twelve district banks, which in turn then control all of the member banks. The Federal Open Market Committee consists of twelve voting members: the seven members of the Board of Governors and

five of the twelve Federal Reserve Bank presidents. Even the digits of the zip code for the Fed's headquarters in Washington, D.C. – 20551 - add up to 13.

One final piece of evidence brings the number 13, the US dollar, and alchemy together. To understand it, we must first look at how the number "13" can itself be a glyph representing the Hermetic caduceus, and the concepts behind alchemy. Just visually, you can see that "13" resembles a single-serpent caduceus broken down into its component parts: the "1" is the pole, and the "3" is the twisting serpent. In its original Arabic form, the three looked even more serpentine. The two glyphs, when put together, bring to mind the idea of a pole with an electric current running through it – an appropriate symbol, perhaps, of the constant flow of energy involved in alchemical processes. Or it could be thought of as an alchemical marriage of the passive, masculine "1" and the active, feminine "3." It could also be thought of as representing the ancient three-in-one Trinity concept of God, the ultimate "E Pluribus Unum." The Templars most definitely were aware of Arabic numbers, so no doubt they were using "13" to express the idea of "thirteen" long before most others in Europe ever did.

However, everything that I just said about the symbol "13" in the above paragraph could also be said about the "$" dollar symbol. Taken in this context, they would both signify exactly the same thing. In an earlier chapter I discussed the fact that the dollar sign was thought to have derived from the design used on Spanish silver dollars circulated in the American colonies, which featured the Pillars of Hercules wrapped in banners that said "Plus Ultra." But an earlier prototype of this design comes from coins made on the Phoenician island of Tyre, which feature both the Pillars of Hercules, *and* a serpent coiled around a tree, *ala* the Tree of Knowledge in the Garden of Eden. Look at

the illustration (see figure 12). There is no doubt in my mind that the design of this coin is the ultimate origin of both the design on the Spanish silver dollar, and the modern "$" symbol. Ignatius Donnelly agreed, writing of this ancient Phoenician coin that:

... we have the Pillars of Hercules, supposed to have been placed at the mouth of the Mediterranean, and the tree of life or knowledge, with the serpent twined around it, which appears in Genesis; and in the combination of the two pillars and the serpent we have, it is said, the original source of our dollar mark.

The Tyrians provided much of the coinage used in ancient Israel, so these coins may very well have been in Solomon's treasury, and may have been discovered by the Templars as well. Of course, the Templars could have found these coins when they occupied Tyre during the Crusades. Indeed, it was one of the most important cities in the Latin Kingdom of Jerusalem, ruled over by the Templar Godfroi de Bouillon. Tyre was also was the site of some of the earliest Italian trading colonies, and thus was at the center of the rise of European mercantilism after the fall of the Templars. Tyre was a hub of global trade for literally thousands of years, and played a pivotal role in many of the most important economic developments throughout history. How fitting, then, that this Tyrian coin apparently became the inspiration for the symbol of the American dollar, which would do more to transform the global economy than perhaps any other currency the world has ever known.

PART IV

Chapter Twenty-Two: Spiritual Pyramid Schemes

So what exactly are the wise principles that have been passed down through the ages about how to create and grow wealth, or how to run an economy? Many of these principles are expressed in the Bible. The centerpiece of these teachings is the aforementioned concept of tithing. This idea is linked to a basic principle that has been around since ancient times - a principle dictating how blessings, either material or spiritual, can be multiplied by using an apparently effective although seemingly inexplicable spiritual law. This law states that a sacrifice made freely to any particular cause will be rewarded by God many times over. When applied to a priesthood, this means that the members of the congregation are rewarded for the tithes they give to the priests. The priests in turn give a portion of these tithes to the service of the god(s) they worship, and they in turn are rewarded for that, mostly with more tithes. They also give a portion of the tithes they receive to the service of the community, and are rewarded for that by God as well.

This principle purportedly works not only for financial donations, but for any gift or service contributed freely to a cause. Thus, priests are also rewarded for the spiritual services performed for their gods, such as prayers and rituals. It is a system in which any form of energy (of which money is certainly an example) can be fed into the system and multiplied exponentially. You could describe it as a spiritual pyramid scheme in which energy is channeled from the congregation to the priesthood, then from the priesthood to the god(s) in the spiritual realm, where it is multiplied, and then channeled back to the priests and the congregation. The rate of increase is often said to be times ten. Indeed, the word “tithe” means “tenth”, since traditionally members of the congregation give a tenth

of their annual income, expecting a ten-fold return, thereby creating a plenteous reserve for more tithes. Moreover, the priesthood traditionally uses a portion of the tithes for charity and community outreach, and thereby the priesthood itself earns a ten times increase of stored-up karmic rewards. So although the priests themselves may have taken a vow of poverty, the organization they serve can expand infinitely in wealth and power.

Thus we have the “Poor Knights of Christ of the Temple of Solomon”, or the Knights Templar, who likewise took a vow of poverty, with the knights being required to give all of their property to the Order upon admittance. The Templars’ poverty was symbolized by the icon of two knights riding on one horse, which they often used, implying that they doubled up on horseback to save the Order on its budget. (In fact, they had more than enough horses for whatever they needed. Each knight had at least one horse when he showed up to join.) The Order took the wealth donated to them by their members and patrons, then used it in various ways to multiply their wealth and power. They loaned money to kings and nobles throughout Europe, and thus not only earned interest, but gained influence over the very powerful figures who were indebted to them. The Templars also built magnificent castles and cathedrals throughout Europe, opened hospitals, and performed charitable work, spreading scientific and philosophical enlightenment throughout the lands they traveled. These charitable acts earned exponential rewards for the organization from their patron deity, according to the tithing principle previously discussed.

The Catholic Church has used the tithes and spiritual energy of its followers to create a force that even today is the most powerful organization in the world, and once commanded an entire European empire. Like the Levites, Catholic priests take a vow of

poverty, but the organization they serve is anything but poor. The Catholic Church's charitable activities remain unmatched, which undoubtedly earns them a great ongoing financial reward from God. This may be how the Church has been able to create one of the most successful spiritual pyramid schemes in history. The Church laity pays with their love, worship, and money. In exchange they receive, at least once a week, a spiritual boon in the form of bread and wine - the blood and body of the deity - as well as the prayers of the priest, and the relief from the burden of sin after Confession. This temporary boon must renewed again the following Sunday, for the same price. The laity's gifts are then channeled directly back to Vatican headquarters, and the spiritual gifts are ultimately given to the deity who heads that organization. The financial gifts support the organization first, its activities second, and thirdly its active servants, the priesthood.

Chapter Twenty-Three: The Law of the Harvest

The Protestant Reformation did not end the practice of tithing for the breakaway Christian churches, or for the newly-formed churches which came afterwards. The Judeo-Christian tradition of tithing, as well as Christ's teachings on how God rewards charity (that "as ye sow, so shall ye reap"), have been the inspiration for a belief system called "the Law of the Harvest" that is now touted by many modern Christian churches. Basically it states the ideas which I have already reviewed: that the more you give to your church, the more God will reward you, financially and otherwise. *Deuteronomy 8:18* states: "…thou shalt remember the Lord thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth." Thus many churches solicit donations from their members by calling these gifts "seed money", from which not only the church, but also the giver's own bank account, will purportedly grow. Sometimes, in exchange for these donations, churches take "prayer requests", promising to pray specific prayers on behalf of the givers, which God, it is promised, will answer as a reward for their donation.

One of the churches which has used this concept most effectively, although perhaps most ruthlessly, is one that is arguably fictitious: St. Matthew's Church, started by Reverend James Eugene Ewing. It operates out of a post office box in Tulsa, Oklahoma, even though Ewing, who is apparently the church's only minister, lives in California. Ewing has built over many years a hugely successful bulk mail operation. He sends out booklets to strangers targeted as living in low-income neighborhoods. The

booklets are thick (almost 200 pages), artfully written, and lavishly illustrated, obviously constituting a considerable investment on the church's behalf.

The booklets explain how God's Law of the Harvest can be used to solve all of the ills in your life, and encourage the reader to join the St. Matthew's Church "Seeds of Success Gold Book Harvest Bible Plan." In exchange for regular gifts (seeds sown) to his ministry, Ewing will honor your prayer requests, and arrange the deals with God that you apparently have not been able to arrange for yourself. You will receive a "Harvest Book of Seeds", which Ewing describes as an "unusual book" that you must keep next to "your important papers such as your electric, gas and water bills", and that you should "not fail to use it by sowing seeds to God towards your harvests out of each check." This book consists of coupons on which you write your prayer requests each time you "sow a seed" by giving Ewing a donation. Ewing also provides his church members with a magical "prayer rug" made of paper, and a "prayer coin" that is "a replica of those used in Bible days, featuring the head of Caesar." One might think that the purpose of this magical talisman is to remind you to "give unto Ewing that which is Ewing's", but he writes that its purpose is to "remind you that you have a financial partner, and that his name is Jehovah God!"

Ewing is understandably hated by such organizations as the Better Business Bureau, which only wishes that it had some legal basis for shutting his operation down. Although he references in his literature the "outreach work" that his church purportedly does, there is in fact no physical building that is St. Matthew's Church, only a post office box. The only official activity that the proceeds of his church are spent on is the printing and distributing of more literature about the "Harvest Plan." Ewing seems to have no

shame, including in his booklet a prayer request form that you can fill out if you need a new automobile, complete with check boxes for the various brand options, ranging from Subaru to Rolls Royce. Despite his audacity, or perhaps because of it, Ewing's church has now earned tens of millions of dollars beyond its operating costs. Ewing is clearly a magus of the highest order, and seems to understand, in a very occult sense, the spiritual laws of financial success. His twelve-point outline of the Law of the Harvest is worth reviewing:

1. Your seed must be planted.

2. You must give your seed away to receive something.

3. You must plant what you expect to harvest.

4. Your harvest size is established when your seed is sown.

5. Your seed must be planted in good ground.

6. You must always wait a period of time between planting and harvesting.

7. You must maintain your crops for a proper harvest.

8. You must always sow to your harvest size, not from your harvest size.

9. Your expense is always highest at harvest time.

10. A part of your harvest is for sowing again.

11. A part of your harvest is for you to keep.

12. Your harvest is a miracle.

The essential Law of the Harvest has been, as I have explained, at the heart of religious traditions since ancient times. It has long been traditional for participants in a

religious ritual to give a donation upon entering the church or ritual chamber. These donations not only serve to support the church or cult financially, but also serve as a reserve of spiritual energy donated by the participants to power the ritual. This concept is alluded to in the alchemical treatise *The Chymical Wedding of Christian Rosenkreutz*. In this story, the title character is invited to a royal wedding that is also an alchemical ritual. Before entering the castle in which the ceremony is held, he must purchase, and then surrender to the gatekeeper, a special gold coin that represents his donation to the household - the wedding gift. A plaque over the entrance to the castle reads “Date et dabitur vobis” - “Give and it will be given unto you.”

Chapter Twenty-Four: Alchemical Miracles

The principle of the exponential increase of money, or indeed of any form of energy, is similar to the idea of alchemy: of turning lead into gold, or changing the Prima Materia into the Philosopher's Stone. It means transforming the base into the lofty, by transforming energy from a lower form into a higher form. The alchemical stone can purportedly be made from any substance, even the most base, and then from it can be created anything which the heart desires, in inexhaustible abundance. This Philosopher's Stone is said to be so rare and valuable that one can use it to purchase anything in Heaven and Earth, even eternal life. As Christ taught, according to *Matthew 13:45-46*:

... the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls: Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

This symbolism links up with that of the Holy Grail in the Grail romances. Alternately described as either a cup or as a stone, the Grail is said to give abundantly whatever one wishes to receive. This it is able to do because, according to Wolfram von Eschenbach's *Parzival*, every year on Good Friday:

... one can infallibly see a Dove wing its way down from Heaven. It brings a small white Wafer to the Stone and leaves it there. The Dove, all dazzling and white, then flies up to Heaven again. Every Good Friday, as I say, the Dove brings it to the Stone, from which

the Stone receives all that is good on earth of food and drink, a paradisal excellence - I mean whatever the earth yields.

Here we have an example of an alchemical transformation of quantity (high volume from a small volume), rather than quality (lead into gold). This is based on an alchemical principle well-explained by Albert Pike in *Morals and Dogma*:

…to make gold, we must first have gold. Nothing is made out of nothing; we do not absolutely create wealth; we increase and multiply it.

Someone who evidently mastered the art of creating very much from very little, as well as transmuting the base into the high, was Jesus Christ. He demonstrated this aptitude in several of his miracles, including that of the loaves and the fishes (in which a single serving of food was multiplied by thousands), and when he transformed water into wine at the wedding at Cana. He also returned to the concept repeatedly in his parables. In *Matthew 25:14-30*, Jesus explained the importance of investing one's money (or in a larger sense, one's energy) into something fruitful, in order to multiply it, rather than keeping it saved up, stagnate, unable to increase. He told his disciples the following parable. (Note: the word "talents" used here refers to a standard measure used to weigh precious metals, and thus it is here used as a monetary term):

For the kingdom of heaven is as a man traveling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave five talents, to another

two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey.

Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents. And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two. But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money.

After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. And so he that had received five talents came and brought the other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed: And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine. His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents. For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath.

It seems strange that the Catholic Church would discourage usury, when here Jesus is explicitly encouraging it. He explains how loaning one's money upon usury creates an exponential increase in wealth, and that it is not only righteous to do so, but slothful and wasteful not to.

In another biblical passage, *Mark 4:30 - 4:32*, Jesus used the imagery of a seed growing into a plant to demonstrate how something small can be multiplied into something great:

And he said, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it? It is like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds that be in the earth: But when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches; so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it.

In *Luke 17:6*, Jesus turned the mustard seed parable into a statement on the power that faith (spiritual energy) can have, even in a small amount:

And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye might say unto this sycamine tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea; and it should obey you.

Later, in *Luke 21 1-4*, Jesus explains how the worth (in spiritual value) of one's tithes is relative to the amount of wealth that one already possesses - in other words, that those who have much should give much. The text states:

And he looked up, and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury. And he saw also a certain poor widow casting in thither two mites. And he said, Of a truth I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast in more than they all: For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.

Chapter Twenty-Five: A Commerce of Souls

In many ways, Judeo-Christianity is rife with financial metaphors. The entire religious system is about debt and payment. Adam created a deficit by sinning in the Garden of Eden, for which his descendants, the whole of humanity, must pay eternally in hellfire. Jesus purportedly paid off this debt by sacrificing his life, and Christians believe that we can all basically use the payment Christ made as a voucher to compensate for the debt we owe to God. This imagery of debt and payment in the sacrifice of Christ is enhanced by the fact that Christ's betrayer, Judas (who was the official treasurer of Christ's ministry) sold him to his murderers for thirty pieces of silver.

However, at least in traditional Catholicism, one cannot simply rely on the sacrifice of Jesus as a blanket payment for all sin. The way they see it is as a sort of "matching funds" system. If a person sins, they have to confess their sins to a priest, which is like submitting your debts to God for payment. By making your confession "in the name of Jesus Christ", you are calling into account the payment which Christ has already made to alleviate your debt. But the bit that Christ chips in is not the full payment, for the confessor must also perform certain acts in order to earn absolution: "Hail Mary's", and the like.

In addition, the Catholic concept of Purgatory is linked to their idea of the "Treasury of Merit." In this view, there is a giant ledger in Heaven, kept by God, which keeps track of all of the liabilities created by the sins of Man. On the other side of the ledger are the assets earned by the good deeds of Man. At the top of this list is Christ's

sacrifice, the largest deposit ever made into the Treasury of Merit. The Catholic Encyclopedia explains the concept of the Treasury as:

… the infinite riches obtained by the true merit of Christ's work on the cross. God freely grants us the privilege of contributing our own works to this Treasury. Catholics believe that the Holy Virgin Mary is the most important contributor next to Christ to the Treasury of Merit ... This treasury is left to the keeping, not of the individual Christian, but of the Church. Consequently, to make it available for the faithful, there is required an exercise of authority, which alone can determine in what way, on what terms, and to what extent, indulgences may be granted.

The Encyclopedia also defines the term "indulgence":

The word indulgence … originally meant kindness or favor; in post-classic Latin it came to mean the remission of a tax or debt. In Roman law and in the Vulgate of the Old Testament … it was used to express release from captivity or punishment. In theological language also the word is sometimes employed in its primary sense to signify the kindness and mercy of God. But in the special sense in which it is here considered, an indulgence is a remission of the temporal punishment due to sin, the guilt of which has been forgiven.

One of the most controversial practices that the Catholic Church ever engaged in was the sale of indulgences. They actually put the remission of sins on sale for specific

prices, for which the buyer would receive a certificate stating that his sins had been absolved. But more than that, a person could even post bail for his deceased relatives and spring them out of Purgatory - that uniquely Catholic concept borrowed straight from the works of Dante Alighieri, where a person who died with a sin deficit (but who has not been condemned to eternal Hell) must pay penance in this “in-between zone” before entering Heaven. This became a very salable product with the congregation, and to push sales, the Church even came up with a catchy little jingle which went like this:

As soon as the coin in the coffer rings,
The soul from Purgatory springs.

It was this activity in particular which led Martin Luther to revolt against the Church and sparked what would eventually become the Protestant Reformation.

Chapter Twenty-Six: A Mason's Wages

Like the Levite priesthood, the Catholic Church, and the Knights Templar, Freemasonry is yet another spiritual pyramid scheme. While the members do not take a vow of poverty, they do pay very high dues to the organization, and the Order in turn uses part of this money to perform charitable works within the community. The idea of a vow of poverty is still symbolized, however, by the fact that Masonic initiates must present themselves divested of metal objects, especially coins, and barefoot, with their clothes disheveled. The emphasis in Freemasonry is not so much on the member's financial donations as it is on the member's contributions in the form of work. The primary symbolism used in their ritual is that of building, of putting one's skill and effort to work creating good things for God, Masonry, and the community. The members are then supposed to be rewarded for their work karmicly by the universe. Freemason Albert Pike wrote in *Morals and Dogma* that:

God is inexhaustible in his charity, as he is inexhaustible in his essence. That Infinite Omnipotence and Infinite Charity, which, by an admirable good-will, draws from the bosom of its immense love the favors which it incessantly bestows on the world and on humanity, teaches us that the more we give, the more we possess.

The reward that a Mason receives from God for his good works is referred to symbolically in Masonic ritual as "a Mason's wages." One Masonic ritual involves the initiate being paid his wages for working as a mason on the building of Solomon's

Temple. Specifically they are paid the same wages –oil, wine, and corn (specifically the old use of the term "corn", which referred to wheat before the discovery of maize, now called "corn", in America). These are the same wages which Solomon paid the Masons sent by Hiram of Tyre to help with the Temple, according to the Bible.

Charity towards other Masons is emphasized in Masonic rituals, and thus it is rightly believed that a mason will always favor another Mason in business if given the choice. This brotherly exchange of services between the members obviously gains each Mason, as well as the organization as a whole, a great deal of money and influence. That is why the Freemasons at one time had a considerable presence at the top of every Western government.

Albert Pike went on at length in *Morals and Dogma* about the Masonic idea of "earning wages", and the Masonic attitude towards business in general. Pike warned against attempting to reap too much profit from any business deal, and against using any deceitful means in business, even if such means are lawful. Any work which brings you gain to another man's detriment is, in Pike's view, only earning you a spiritual deficit which you will eventually have to pay for one way or another. He writes:

In intercourse with others, do not do all which thou mayest lawfully do; but keep something within thy power; and, because there is a latitude of gain in buying and selling, take not thou the utmost penny that is lawful, or which thou thinkest so; for although it may be lawful, yet it is not safe; and he who gains all that he can gain lawfully, this year, will probably be tempted, next year, to gain something unlawfully.

Let no man, for his own poverty, become more oppressing and cruel in his bargain; but quietly, modestly, diligently, and patiently recommend his estate to God, and follow his interest, and leave the success to Him.

Mr. Pike admonished Masons not to nitpick or negotiate overmuch about paying an employees wages, and told them never to break a promise, or contract, even if making that agreement turns out to have been a mistake. He also warns against making a promise you cannot keep, and against making private use of public property. He says:

Detail not the wages of the hireling; for every degree of detention of it beyond the time, is injustice and uncharitableness, and grinds his face till tears and blood come out; but pay him exactly according to covenant, or according to his needs.

Religiously keep all promises and covenants, though made to your disadvantage, though afterward you perceive you might have done better; and let not any precedent act of yours be altered by any after-accident…

Let no man take wages or fees for a work that he cannot do, or cannot with probability undertake; or in some sense profitably, and with ease, or with advantage manage. Let no man appropriate to his own use, what God, by a special mercy, or the Republic, hath made common; for that is against both Justice and Charity.

That any man should be the worse for us, and for our direct act, and by our intention, is against the rule of equity, of justice, and of charity. We then do not that to others, which we would have done to ourselves; for we grow richer upon the ruins of their fortune…

Pike is quite open here about his view that we will all be called into account for our spiritual deficit after death, and thus, it is better to store up treasures in Heaven rather than here on Earth. As he tells it:

It should be the earnest desire of every Perfect Master so to live and deal and act, that when it comes to him to die, he may be able to say, and his conscience to adjudge, that no man on earth is poorer, because he is richer; that what he hath he has honestly earned, and no man can go before God, and claim that by the rules of equity administered in His great chancery, this house in which we die, this land we devise to our heirs, this money that encircles those who survive to bear our name, is his and not ours, and we in that forum are only his trustees. For it is most certain that God is just, and will sternly enforce every such trust; and that to all whom we despoil, to all whom we defraud, to all from whom we take or win anything whatever, without fair consideration and equivalent, He will decree a full and adequate compensation.

Be careful, then, that thou receive no wages, here or elsewhere, that are not thy due! For if thou dost, thou wrongst some one, by taking that which in God's chancery belongs to him; and whether that which thou takest thus be wealth, or rank, or influence, or reputation or affection, thou wilt surely be held to make full satisfaction."

The wages earned by the work of a Freemason, then, are ultimately spiritual in nature, and can only benefit the Mason who receives them fairly.

Chapter Twenty-Seven: The Mark of a Master Mason

The ceremony that goes along with the Masonic York Rite degree of "Mark Master" contains the most interesting details regarding the Masonic concept of "wages." In this ritual, the candidate is taught how to present his "mark" at the "warden's wicket" as proof of his worthiness to receive his wages. The "mark" is a personalized insignia, usually formed from the Mason's initials, which each candidate chooses for himself upon entering this degree. It must be unique to him, and he cannot alter it from that point on. The "warden's wicket" is a sort of bursar's window, through which the Mason to be paid thrusts his right hand, "with the thumb and first two fingers open, and the third and little fingers clenched, palm up", to quote *Duncan's Ritual of Freemasonry*, by Malcolm C. Duncan. With his clenched fingers he holds against his palm a small piece of paper on which is written his mark, face upward.

This serves as a secret code, a password, and only if the Mason presents his hand through the wicket in this way does the warden know that this man is truly a Mason, who has been "working in the Temple" and is thus deserving of a "wage." If the Mason presents his hand for payment without the mark, or without the secret hand signal, he is trying to commit fraud, the penalty for which is to have your hand cut off! At least, this is what the Mark Master candidate is told in the ritual when he first goes to the warden's wicket to receive payment, without having been told about the mark or how to present his hand.

After being threatened with amputation for doing it incorrectly, the candidate is scolded for his ignorance and told to choose a mark for himself. Once he does, the Senior

Deacon comes towards him with a mallet and a chisel, purporting to engrave the mark onto the candidate's hand so that he will "carry it to the grave." Of course, in the end the mark is just written on a piece of paper and pressed against the palm of the hand. These sorts of empty threats of physical violence are as common to Masonic rituals are they are to college fraternity hazings.

When the initiate takes his oath for the degree, he is told to make a very peculiar promise. He says:

I promise and swear, that I will obey all regular signs and summonses given, handed, sent, or thrown to me from the hand of a brother Mark Master Mason, or from the body of a just and legally constituted Lodge of such, provided it be within the length of my cable-tow. Furthermore do I promise and swear, that I will not wrong this Lodge, or a brother of this Degree, to the value of his wages (or one penny), myself, knowingly, nor suffer it to be done by others, if in my power to prevent it. Furthermore do I promise and swear, that I will not sell, swap, barter, or exchange my mark, which I shall hereafter choose, after it has been recorded in the book of marks, for any other one, unless it be a dead mark, or one of an older date, nor will I pledge it a second time until it is lawfully redeemed from the first pledge. Furthermore do I promise and swear, that I will receive a brother's mark when offered to me requesting a favor, and grant him his request if in my power; and if it is not in my power to grant his request, I will return him his mark with the value thereof, which is half a shekel of silver, or quarter of a dollar.

In other words, the initiate is promising to loan his fellow brethren money, or assist him in any other way possible, when a brother specifically comes asking for help by presenting his mark. It is the Mason's duty to grant these requests if at all possible, but if it is not, he must return the mark to the other Mason, "along with the value thereof", which is "half a shekel of silver, or a quarter of a dollar." I suppose this means that if you cannot give the man exactly what he wants, you have to at least give him something. But the specific value of a mark as being half a shekel indicates that you are being charged a penalty for failing to meet your brother's needs.

If you are able to give him what he wants, then you are to retain his mark until such time as he is able to pay you back the amount loaned, or in some way return the favor. Some versions of the Mark Master oath even contain a stipulation in which the initiate swears not to grant that brother another favor until he has redeemed this mark. This means that each mason can only ask for one favor from one brother at a time, thus preventing abuse of the system. Of course, the new initiate learns that he too may use his mark to request a favor at any time in the future.

However, scarcely has the new Mark Master taken his oath when he is immediately presented with a mark and a request for 25 dollars from one of his brothers. This is all still part of the ritual. Having been divested of all cash, coins, and other "metal objects" before the rite, as is the tradition, the initiate has no money to give, and is prompted to say so, giving the presented mark back to the requesting brother, but with no form of compensation to go along with it. For this, he is severely chastised by the Right Worshipful Master, who says:

How is this? Do you return it without the price, and thus break your oath before you rise from the altar? Have you not sworn, that where you could not grant a brother's request you would return his mark, with the price thereof, viz.: half a Jewish shekel of silver, or the fourth of a dollar? …

Look further. Perhaps some good friend has, in pity to your destitute situation, supplied you with that amount, unknown to yourself: feel in all your pockets, and if you find, after a thorough search, that you have really none, we shall have less reason to think that you meant willfully to violate your obligation.

When the initiate searches his clothing, he indeed finds a quarter dollar coin there which one of the other brothers had placed there surreptitiously sometime during the rite. He then hands it over to the brother who has just presented him with a mark and a request. Upon doing this, he is given yet another lecture by the Right Worshipful Master:

Brother, let this scene be a striking lesson to you: should you ever hereafter have a mark presented you by a worthy brother, asking a favor, before you deny him make diligent search, and be quite sure of your inability to serve him; perhaps you will then find, as in the present instance, that some unknown person has befriended you, and you are really in a better situation than you thought yourself.

Later on in the same ritual, yet another lesson regarding Masonic wages is taught. The brothers in the room all pretend that they are workers in the building of Solomon's Temple again, and now it is "the sixth hour of the sixth day of the week." It is time to

receive their pay for the week. But when they are each given a payment of one penny, the brethren erupt (as scripted) into vocal discontent, complaining that the new initiate is getting paid just as much as they, even though they have worked all week, and he has only just shown up. The Right Worshipful Master quiets the discontent by reiterating one of Jesus' parables, from *The Gospel of Matthew, 20:1-16*, which reads:

For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an householder, which went out early in the morning, to hire laborers into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the laborers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the market-place, and said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way. And he again went out, about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise; and about the eleventh hour, he went out and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle? They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receive. So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward. Call the laborers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first. And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny. But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny. And when they had received it, they murmured against the good man of the house, saying, These last have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day. But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst thou not agree with

me for a penny? Take that thine is, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee. Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with my own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good? So the last shall be first, and the first last; for many are called, but few chosen.

So the Mason is taught to accept his own proper wages rather then envying those of another. Finally, at the end of the ritual, the initiate is quizzed on certain "facts" regarding the Mark Master's degree. The quiz goes like this:

Q. By whom was this degree founded?

A. Our three Grand Masters - Solomon King of Israel, Hiram King of Tyre, and Hiram Abiff.

Q. For what purpose was it founded?

A. To be conferred upon all those who should be found worthy and well qualified, not only as an honorary reward for their zeal, fidelity and attachment to Masonry, but to render it impossible that any brother who should be found worthy of being advanced to this degree should ever be reduced to such extreme indigence as to suffer for the common necessities of life, when the price of his mark would procure the same.

Q. Who does a brother represent, presenting a mark and receiving assistance?

A. Our Grand Master, Hiram Abiff, who was a poor man, but for his regular and upright deportment, his great skill in architecture and the sciences, became eminently distinguished among the craftsmen.

Q. Who does a brother represent, receiving a mark and granting assistance?

A. Our Grand Master, Solomon, King of Israel, who was a rich man and eminently distinguished for his great liberality.

So here it is clearly states that the giving and receiving of charity and assistance within the lodge – the spiritual and monetary pyramid scheme of Freemasonry – is considered to be a continuation of a mutual benefit society created by King Solomon, Hiram of Tyre, and Hiram Abiff. The "wages" which Masonry deals in, then, are, in a metaphorical sense, riches from Solomon's treasury.

Chapter Twenty-Eight: The Shekel-to-Dollar Exchange Rate

The fact that in Freemasonry, one's mark is specifically worth "one half-shekel of silver, or a quarter of a dollar" is very important. You will recall me mentioning previously that in ancient times all Jews were required to pay a temple tax of exactly one half-shekel. The shekel and half-shekel coins circulated in ancient Israel were all designed in Tyre, and many were minted there as well. Some of the later ones were made especially for the Israelite temple tax, and featured Judaic themes, but early on they were the same coins found in Tyre, with the same designs.

I suggested earlier in this book that the Templars may have discovered, either while stationed on Tyre during the Crusades, or while excavating beneath the Temple Mount, the ancient Tyrian coins which depicted a serpent on a tree, the obvious origin of the dollar sign. It is even more likely that they became familiar with these Tyrian shekel and half-shekel coins also, each of which featured the bust of the god Melqart on one side, and an eagle on the other. These designs were strikingly similar to the designs found on modern American quarter-dollars, and on the large silver eagle dollars that used to be circulated in the US (see figure 28). Even more remarkable is the fact that Tyrian half-shekels were about the same size as American quarter-dollars. Considering that the Mark Master ritual clearly states that a half-shekel is equivalent to a quarter-dollar, the fact that the two coins are almost the same size, and carry almost the same design, is beyond coincidence.

Another observation I have made is that the size of the Tyrian full shekel coin, 31.5 millimeters, is almost the same size as each of the two roundels on the back of the

US dollar bill which feature the front and reverse of the Great Seal. Using the Masonic formula of counting one quarter-dollar as a half-shekel, this means that there are (esoterically) two full shekels to the US dollar. I find it easy to believe that this formula, as a reference to the treasury of King Solomon, and the wages paid to the workers who built the Temple, was purposely incorporated into the US monetary system by the Freemasons involved in creating it. Hints about this secret principle are being given to us by the size, shape, and design of the US currency.

Chapter Twenty-Nine: Solomon's House: An Ongoing Project

It seems clear that the Freemasonic founders of the United States, as well as those who have helped to guide the development of the Republic well into the twentieth century, have organized the nation's institutions and operating systems along a pattern handed down, from one generation of initiates to another, at least from the time of King Solomon, if not further back in history. All of America's essential institutions, including, but not limited to, its economic institutions, are engineered in accord with the ancient spiritual principles that I have detailed in this book. The founding fathers of the U.S. may been so influenced by Enlightenment philosophy that they seemed "rationalist" and "humanist" in comparison to rabid Catholic and Protestant ideologues, but most of them were not materialists or atheists. They understood that everything which happens here on the physical plane has a corresponding effect in the spiritual realm, which in turn bounces back to affect the future of the physical plane, either positively or negatively, according to the original act. So the founders sought to create a Republic that would operate in such a way as to create maximum positive impact for both the citizens of the Republic, and the world abroad.

The principles of "spiritual pyramid scheme" - of an organization being used as an energy multiplier - apply to political states as well as churches and secret societies. The citizens of a nation give not only their taxes, but also their faith, good will, and service to the institution which governs them. When that faith, goodwill and service is lacking, the nation become weak, but when it is abundant, the wealth and power of the nation increases exponentially. The leader of the nation, as its figurehead, must inspire

and channel this faith and goodwill. The institutions of government are often specifically crafted to help him do this. With this in mind, the state makes use of faith-inspiring messages, and religious, heraldic, or occult symbolism in government insignias, or in the architecture of government buildings. For instance, many people know that certain streets and landmarks in Washington, D.C. are purposely laid out in the shape of a pentagram, and the theme is echoed by the nearby Pentagon, the center of the nation's military command. This iconography is used as an energy amplifier for the nation's goodwill and patriotism, to strengthen the spiritual power which the government needs in order to function.

Above all, though, the "Law of the Harvest" is demonstrated most purely in the operation of our capitalist economy, in which the investment of money, assets, and work is multiplied exponentially to the investor, the recipient, and to the economy as a whole, creating a machine-like system in which wealth is constantly multiplied as it is traded around amongst individual components of the system. As long as money continues to flow back and forth within the economy, it grows exponentially. When the movement of the money slows down, the growth slows down. It is considered a recession if the growth rate of the economy gets smaller, not just when the economy actually shrinks. This is because the economy is based not on a finite amount of gold or silver, but on energy that is constantly moving and constantly multiplying. This idea of the constant flow of money is at the root of our word "currency", as Jack Weatherford explains in *A History of Money*:

The frequent melting and reissuing of coins kept the mints at the Temple of Juno Moneta [in Rome] *in nearly continuous operation, whether the supply of gold and silver increased or not. The coins seem to have flowed out of the mint in a constant stream, and it is from the Latin word 'currere', meaning 'to run' or 'to flow', that the modern word 'currency' is derived, along with other, related words such as 'current' and 'courier.' The devalued coins gushed like a great river from Capitoline Hill through the entire empire.*

The image of a river of money constantly flowing out of Rome's Capitoline Hill may also be a partial explanation for the development of the term "Capitalism." Although "capitol" and "capital" are spelled differently and have different meanings, they both come from the same root word, which, as I have said, means "of the head." This, I think, points to the true origin of "Capitalism", as I think it may be somehow tied in with the image of the head of Baphomet, which the Knights Templar believed "made them rich." As Michael Baigent and Richard Leigh said in *The Temple and the Lodge*, "No medieval institution did more for the rise of Capitalism" than the Templars, and when they faded from the scene, they passed the responsibility for the development of capitalism first to the Italian merchants, then to the Freemasons.

Those are the ideological and spiritual roots of Capitalism. But the economic seeds from which it sprouted – the "capital", if you will, used to fund the development of Capitalism itself – came from the gold and silver looted by the Spaniards from the Americas. Gold objects were taken from the temples of Aztec and Mayan cults and melted down to make coins for Europe, while the Natives were enslaved to work in silver

mines, to create even more coins for Europe. As I said before, this sudden influx of coinage into Europe sparked the Great Price Revolution, influenced the creation of corporations, and ultimately ended up in the coffers of the companies whose ventures in the New World created the North American colonies that became the United States. From there, Americans used the principles of Capitalism, set down by Adam Smith in his book *The Wealth of Nations* in 1776 (the year of their nation's birth), to establish their own empire, and to transform the world. The fact that the American Capitalist system was ultimately built using gold taken from the temples of conquered natives is an example of the same spiritual principle used by Constantine when he funded Constantinople with gold looted from pagan Roman temples. It is taking something consecrated to another purpose and sacrificing it to create something new. Such foundations constitute "seeds" from which the new temple, or new institution, is expected to grow, according to the ancient spiritual world-view.

A similar "seed planting" occurred, purportedly, when Jacques De Molay arranged for the Order of the Temple to be continued through a newly-created Masonic order. According to *The Occult Conspiracy: Secret Societies – Their Influence and Power in World History*, by Michael Howard:

The survival of the Templar tradition was, according to historians, masterminded by the last Grand master, Jacques de Molay, while he was in prison. On the night before his execution de Molay sent a trusted confidant to the secret crypt in Paris where the bodies of the Order's Grand Masters were always entombed. This messenger took from the tomb various symbolic objects which were sacred to the Order, including the crown of the king

of Jerusalem, a seven-branched candlestick from Solomon's temple and statues from the church which marked the site of the alleged burial place of Jesus.

De Molay told his trusted aide that the two pillars which stood at the entrance of the Templar tomb were hollow and contained large sums of money. He was told to use this wealth and the symbolic objects to recreate the Order so that its secrets would not be lost. The two pillars of the crypt's entrance were probably copies of the obelisks at the gateway of Solomon's temple. In addition to gold coin, the hollow pillars possibly contained manuscripts detailing the occult teachings of the Templar Order.

The idea of planting a spiritual seed and working to cultivate it with the assistance of God, is a concept also present in the tithing principles of the "Law of the Harvest" discussed earlier. When utilizing these principles during the foundation of something such as a new temple, it has long been customary to almost literally "plant a seed" in the foundation of the building, in the form of a cornerstone. As I have said, the cornerstone of Solomon's Temple was a sacred object used more than once in the Bible as a symbol of the divine, and it became a central emblem for the Freemasons as well. In the ancient Middle East, it was customary to consecrate new buildings by pouring a sacrifice to the building's patron deity onto the cornerstone – a sacrifice of oil, wine, and grain, the same set of items paid as wages to the masons who built Solomon's Temple. Again, these sacrifices were spiritual seeds of foundation. This is a tradition that the Freemasons have continued into the present time, as explained in a 1930 article called "Corn, Wine, and Oil" from the *Short Talk Bulletin* of the Masonic Service Association of the United States, where it says:

...corn, wine and oil - the produce of the land - are natural accompaniments to the dedication of a lodge which it is hoped will prosper, reap an abundance of the first fruits of Masonic cultivation and a rich harvest of ripe character from the seeds it plants.

...From earliest times consecration has been accompanied by sacrifice, a free-will offering of something of real value to those who thus worship. Hence the sacrifice of corn, wine and oil - the wealth of the land, the strength of the tribe, the comfort and well-being of the individual - at the consecration of any place of worship or service of God.

Like so much else in our ceremonies, the idea today is wholly symbolic. The Grand Master orders his Deputy (or whatever officer is customary) to pour the corn; the Senior Grand Warden to pour the wine, the Junior Grand Warden to pour the oil upon the 'Lodge' - usually a covered structure representing the original Ark of the Covenant.

At the founding of the American republic, there seems to have been no shyness at all about the fact that the country was being initiated as a Masonic institution. Many of the ceremonies which took place to consecrate the new nation, such as the swearing in of the first President, were openly Masonic rituals. George Washington took the Oath of Office dressed in Masonic regalia, with his hand resting on a Masonic Bible.

But the Masonic nature of these ceremonies was never more apparent than it was in the ritual installations of Masonically-consecrated cornerstones for the structures within the nation's new capitol, Washington, District of Columbia. The new city, named after the first President, was at once also a "district", named after the national goddess, Columbia. It was a truly Templar concept: the district was taken from the land mass of

the states of Maryland and Virginia. But once consecrated as “Washington, D.C.”, it was no longer part of Maryland or Virginia. It became an autonomous region which is the seat of the sovereignty that governs the rest of the states.

Washington, D.C. was originally laid out as a perfect ten-be-ten mile square, oriented perpendicular to the compass. George Washington picked out the land himself, and we might surmise that by choosing bits of both Virginia and Maryland, he may have been making some allusion to the Virgin Mary. According to David Ovason’s *The Secret Architecture of Our Nation’s Capitol*, there are many allusions in the architecture and layout of Washington, D.C. to the constellation Virgo. This just confirms the idea that the nation was consecrated by its founders to the ancient protectress of the state, the goddess Ishtar, or Venus, under the name of “Columbia”, as both the image of Virgo and the image of the Virgin Mary are permutations of this same goddess concept.

The foundation of the 100-mile-square grid that was originally Washington, D.C. (before a chunk of it was conceded back to Virginia in 1848) made for a ceremony in itself, complete with the ritual laying of a cornerstone in the traditional Masonic fashion. This took place at the southern point of the grid - Jones Point, Virginia - in 1791, and was followed in 1792 by the laying of the cornerstone for the White House. This was a ceremony again officiated by George Washington himself, dressed up in his Masonic apron, and it actually took place on October 13, 1792 – the anniversary of the arrest of the Knights Templar. (It also took place on the same day that the dollar was adopted as America’s official currency.) A similar Masonic ceremony occurred with the laying of the cornerstone of the Capitol building in 1793, and with that of the Washington Monument in 1848.

In each of these consecration ceremonies, the symbolic sacrifice of oil, wine, and grain was poured upon the cornerstone. There can be no doubt that this was a sacrifice made to God for the benefit of the new Republic the Masons were creating. What better seeds to plant for the cultivation of what the founders saw as a "New Atlantis", a "New Jerusalem", and a "New Temple of Solomon"?

The United States as a whole appears to have been consecrated to three different spiritual entities simultaneously. On the one hand, there is the reverence clearly shown by America's founders to the God of the Bible, also called Zeus by the Greeks and Jupiter by the Romans. The founders made it obvious in their phrasing of the Declaration of Independence, the Constitution, the Bill of Rights, and in markings found on American currency, that they considered the sovereignty of the United States to be "under God", guided by divine Providence. But there is also a specific reverence shown by the founders to the goddess represented by the constellation Virgo and the planet Venus, the Ishtar of the Babylonians, personified as Columbia, or Lady Liberty. Then in addition to this, we have the subtle but identifiable acknowledgment the founders apparently gave to the figure of Baphomet, a Templar and Masonic symbol of the Universal Agent which, in its Hermaphroditism, can perhaps be seen to represent a union of these masculine and feminine divine essences. We see a nod to the Baphomet in the explicit use by the founders of the number thirteen as a symbol of the Republic. There even seems to have been an effort to portray President Washington as a personification of Baphomet.

I am referring specifically to two depictions of George Washington made well after his death. In 1831, Congress commissioned a statue of the first President to go inside the Rotunda of the Capitol building (underneath the giant dome). The result that

the sculptor came up with received a very negative reaction from the public. He had chosen to copy the appearance of a well-known Greek statue of Zeus. Washington appeared bare-chested and muscular, enthroned in a god-like posture, with a sword in his left hand, held by the blade, with the pommel sticking out. The statue's posture also hinted at Eliphas Levi's depiction of Baphomet, for in this statue Washington's right hand pointed up toward the heavens, while the sword he held in his left hand pointed down toward the ground. I think the statue is great, but for some reason, it was universally scorned, and was finally removed from the Rotunda in 1962, consigned to the less conspicuous National Museum of American History.

It is claimed that the public bias against this statue stemmed from the sentiment that it was inappropriate to depict an American President as a god. That was supposed to be even worse than presenting him as a king. But if this were truly a widely-held viewpoint, why was the painter Constantino Brumidi permitted to depict Washington in the exact same pose, sword and all, when he was hired to produce a fresco for the Rotunda of the Capitol building in 1875 – the Rotunda in which the supposedly hated and sacrilegious statue was already sitting? The name of this fresco (which is still there, by the way) is *Apotheosis of Washington*. The word "apotheosis" means, according to *Webster's Dictionary*, "the elevation of a person to the rank of a god." George Washington is shown here aloft in the clouds of Heaven, with the goddesses "Liberty" and "Fame" on either side of him, as well as thirteen virgins surrounding him in a circle.

There can be no doubt, considering the evidence presented in this book, that the foundation of the United States was a religious act – one which emboldened the fledgling

Republic to stand tall amongst the world's greatest powers, eventually exerting its own considerable influence upon them.

Chapter Thirty: A Final Thought

I have covered the subject of the symbolic ritual sacrifices that were made during the foundation of America's capitol, Washington, D.C. These were seeds planted in hopes that the nation would prosper. But as we all know, it was not only this symbolic sacrifice that has made the United States great, but also those sacrifices of time, money, toil, and human life that her citizens and public servants have made throughout the years.

As a nation, America has sacrificed a great deal for the benefit of the world at large, and on a spiritual level, this has probably earned the country some of the karmic rewards that its citizens have enjoyed. Often criticized for being "the world's policemen", and for using its economic power to influence the politics of other nations, the USA has been, next to Capitalism itself, the most successful instigator of positive change the world has seen. Although some may wish to concentrate on the negative effects of America's influence in various times and places throughout its history, an honest person would have to agree that, overall, the results have been good.

The US has given more aid to foreign countries than any other nation in history, and has used its military might to protect the weak from tyrants the world over. When it is necessary to destroy another nation in order to halt tyranny or to save the lives of others, the US always helps that nation to rebuild, and to create a better way of life than they had before. This is in stark contrast to the ancient tradition of pillaging, raping, and taking home the spoils of one's conquered enemy. Because of the military security that the United States is able to provide for many others abroad, these countries are then largely free from the burden of funding their own defense, and are often able to spend

more money on social programs instead. The US tries to encourage freedom, equality, and prosperity everywhere that it can, and offers itself as a safe haven for the oppressed of the world. Some say America does too much. Others complain that she doesn't do enough. But America certainly does, at the present time, play a pivotal role in maintaining the world's relative stability.

Why is it, then, that so many citizens who live in the greatest country in the world, and others abroad who have benefited from it, wish to see it torn down – to see all of this hard work, sacrifice, and carefully-planned cultivation brought to naught? For so many of these people, their hatred of the United States is based on fear of the American dollar, and the power that it holds. I believe that this fear stems from ignorance of the way in which money, and especially American money, truly works.

We have seen in our examination of history that money is, in itself, a radical idea, one that has developed over time to transform the world for the better, bringing, to the nations who used it properly - prosperity, technological advancement, and intellectual enlightenment. The best things in life may be free, but only when you have enough money to live comfortably do you have the freedom to enjoy those things. People who think that money cannot bring happiness have either never had enough money, or have always had plenty of it, and either way have not experienced the positive transformations that it can bring to a person's life. It can also, obviously, transform our society, and our environment, with seemingly limitless potential. To fear this power is to reject the most useful tool available to eliminate the evils and ills of our world. Before we can "make poverty history", we have get outside of the mindset of poverty.

I certainly hope, for the sake of our society, that people will being to educate themselves about money, and learn to appreciate its magic.

APPENDICES

Appendix A: The Tessera Hospitalis

The word “tessera” was a Latin word which originally meant “cube”, and usually referred to small, square-shaped pebbles, marbles, or dice. It stems from the Greek word “tesseragonos”, which means “four-cornered” or “square.” A tessera hospitalis was a small token of friendship used in Roman antiquity, in which the item was broken in half, with one half being kept by each of the parties. If you met a new friend, especially while traveling, he might invite you to stay at his house for the evening. A tessera hospitalis would be broken between you before parting. If you ever passed that way again, or if your new friend came through your neck of the woods at some point, even if it was many years later and you both looked different with age, you could compare the two tessera and rest assured that the other person was indeed the old friend you met so many years ago. The token also served as a pledge of hospitality for the future, to remind you of the good turn your friend once did you in the past, and of your duty to return the favor. Such objects exist even today. Schoolchildren sometimes share a token or metal, broken in half, which, when put together, reads “Best Friends.”

Other tesserae were used for related purposes. A “tessera nummaria” was a voucher for a dole of money, used during the late Roman period when the government was giving out welfare money to its starving citizens. A “tessera theatratis” was a token used as a ticket to gain admission to a theater play. A “tessera militaris” was a token containing a password that was passed around amongst a division of an army. For this reason, the word “tessera” came to be a more general term meaning “password”, as William Smith explains in his 1875 book, *A Dictionary of Greek and Roman Antiquities*:

A watchword was used at night and it consisted of a word or phrase that someone must say to prove that he was a bona fide member of a Roman unit or, if the authorized password was not used, he was considered an enemy. In the Roman army, the watchword for the night was not communicated verbally, but by means of a small rectangular tablet of wood upon which it was written. One man was chosen out of each of those maniples (common soldiers) and turmae (troop of cavalry containing thirty men, a squadron) that were quartered at that extremity of the lines most remote from the Principia. Each of these individuals (tesserarius) went near sunset to the tent of the tribune, and received from him a tessera, on which the password and also a certain number or mark were inscribed. With this he returned to the maniple or turma to which he belonged, and taking witnesses, delivered it to the officer of the next adjoining maniple or turma, and to the next until it had passed along the whole line. Then it was returned by the person who received it last to the tribune. The regulation was that the whole of the tesserae should be restored before it was dark, and if any one was found not returning the tessera at the appointed time, the row to which it belonged could be quickly discovered by means of the number or mark at the top, and so an investigation took place as to the cause of the delay, and punishment was inflicted upon the parties found to be at fault.

We can see now how the word “tiler”, which originally referred to the person responsible for laying down tile floors in a medieval stonemason guild, came to refer to the officer in a Freemasonic lodge, whose job it is to admit people through the entrance, and to make sure that none but the appropriate lodge members enter. The words “tile”, or “tessera”, each could refer to both the tiles used on the floor, and the token or password

presented to the tiler at the lodge as proof of membership. The fact that mosaics were made up of little tesserae, or tiles put together, is at the origin of the word “tessellation.”

It is funny, then, that while tesserae evolved into a form of money, the tessellated exchequer board became the common method of calculating money in medieval Europe. And along with the board, the exchequer would use small counting tokens, or tessera, called “tally chips” - “tally” being a word related to “tile”, and to the concept of the tessera hospitalis. “Tally” comes from the Latin “talea”, meaning “a cutting, rod, or stick”, but it later came to mean “a thing that matches another”, according to the Online Etymology Dictionary, etymonline.com. This source states that the first such usage of this word was in 1651, and that it came from “practice of splitting a tally lengthwise, the debtor and creditor each retaining one of the halves.” Also, the related word “till” came to refer to a cash box.

But perhaps most interesting in this family of words is “talisman”, which comes more directly from the Byzantine Greek word “telesma”, the latter meaning “religious rite or ceremony”, and also “payment or tax.” Clearly this word must have developed from the practice of making a monetary donation in coin, or paying with something else and receiving a token as proof of payment, at the beginning or end of each ritual. The word “talisman” now generally refers to an enchanted object, usually a stone, wooden, or metal token, often engraved with religious or occult symbols, and used to transport the spiritual power of a spell or blessing. The object is usually imbued with the spell through a magical rite, and then a person either carries it with them as a charm, or gives it to the person they wish to cast a spell onto. I stated earlier in this book that I think all American coins and bills are talismans. This is what I mean.

Returning to the concept of the tessera hospitalis, it would seem that this may have influenced the Templar creation of the chit, or cheque. When you broke the tessera hospitalis in half, you created a unique pattern along the edge of each of the two pieces that was not likely to be replicated for forgery. This was the purpose of the cipher-encoded cheque system used by the Templars, and it is the same idea behind the netting or spider web patterns often used on modern checks and money. They are patterns not likely to be replicated by those outside of the institution that created it. Like the tesserae hospitalis, modern checks and cash are essentially an "IOU" – a "promise to pay", made and accepted in good faith.

Appendix B: The Wedjat Eye

We will now examine the Masonic symbol of the All-Seeing Eye, which can be found floating above the Egyptian-style pyramid on the back of the Great Seal of the United States. It has its roots in the Egyptian symbol of the left eye of Horus.

According to the story, the god Horus, son of Osiris, had his left eye destroyed by his nemesis, his uncle Seth. Later, the pieces of the eye were recovered, and put back together by the magician Thoth (the Egyptian equivalent of the Greek Hermes, and the Templar Baphomet). There was actually one piece that was not recovered, and that was the pupil of the eye. But Thoth replaced this himself through magic arts. Horus' magical pupil was really the final piece which acted as the glue to hold all of the other pieces together. In this way, it was a bit like the keystone used in stonemasonry to hold together the pieces of an arch. The keystone takes on a great deal of symbolic significance in Masonic ritual, in which the rebuilding of Solomon's Temple is acted out, and there it is called "the stone that was rejected." It is ultimately a multi-layered symbol for the Philosopher's Stone, that hidden but nonetheless essential element which holds together physical reality.

The term "the stone that was rejected" is a line from the Gospels, in which Jesus is compared to a stone rejected from the building of Solomon's Temple that in the end becomes essential to the build. The fact that Masons use this term to refer to the keystone of Solomon's Temple is interesting, for in their own iconography, they show the keystone as holding together an arch which includes the pillars of Jachin and Boaz. Presumably, then, this arch is meant to represent the entrance to the Temple. And in the center of the

keystone in this icon Masons sometimes place the All-Seeing Eye. This may connect on a metaphorical level with another symbolic eye - one which plays a significant role in Egyptian mythology, and which can definitely be said to have been "rejected." This is the eye of Ra, or "Atum-Re", their creator god. The story is explained by R.T. Rundle Clark in his book *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt*, and it takes place in the Abyss, or the primeval waters of creation:

Initially God seems to have only one Eye – a mysterious entity which is separable from its owner and which is sent out as an envoy to seek She and Tefnut [the first two human beings], who have become separated from Atum and are lost in the immensity of the Abyss. The Eye finds them and brings them back to their father, who proceeds to regenerate them as the life and order of the universe….

….The first pair were therefore not really existent until the Eye could return them to their creator. The Eye is personified might, the essential violence that is used to protect the gods and kings against disintegration in the waters or spirit enemies in the created world… the sending out of the Eye is equated with the Divine Word [of creation].

However, when the Eye returned, it found that on the head of Atum-Re the creator god, another Eye had grown in its place. The original eye became enraged with jealousy. To sooth its anger, Atum-Re had the eye transformed into a cobra, and then placed it on his head as a symbol of his royalty. Clark writes:

When it returned, it found that it had been supplanted in the Great One's face by another – a surrogate eye – which we can interpret as the sun or moon. This was the primary cause for the wrath of the Eye and the great turning-point in the development of the universe, for the Eye can never be fully or permanently appeased. The High God…turned it into a rearing cobra, which he bound around his forehead to ward off his enemies. This is why, on the terrestrial plane, the eye denotes the kingship of the pharaohs in terms of sheer power, while cosmically it is the 'sovereign eye' and burning heat of the sun.

Thus the Egyptian cobra crown was born, while the Eye symbol came to be known by the epithet, "the Royal Eye of Gopta", the latter word being the original form of "Egypt."

In each of these myths, the eye seems to be a symbol of the restoration of order from chaos. The pieces of the eye of Horus get made whole by Thoth, and the eye of Ra leads God's creation back home from the waters of the Abyss. Indeed, the eye symbol did become part of an Egyptian hieroglyph which meant "order." It was formed by an eye over an arch with two pillars (see figure 35), just like in the Masonic icon previously described, and it stood for the word "Mayet", or "Maat", which meant "order", but also "wisdom", just as the "met" does in the name "Baphomet." According to Egyptologist E. Wallis Budge, a more simplified Egyptian eye hieroglyph meant "to create, to make, to fashion, or to produce."

However, the eye of Horus was a very particular symbol, and it had a very particular name: "udjat", or "wedjat." It was drawn in a very specific way, and it included a strange little curly-cue, seemingly shaped like a Fibonacci spiral, jutting out of it at the bottom right. But this is the most amazing part. Just as the eye was reassembled from its

various parts, the symbol of the wedjat eye could be disassembled into its various parts, each of which then came to represent a mathematical fraction of the whole. These parts of the eye became in themselves little symbols that served as numbers representing fractions. Specifically, the whole eye was supposed to contain 63/64. One piece symbolized 1/2, another 3/4, then 1/8, 1/16/, 1/32, and 1/64. But there were only 63/64 in the whole eye. The missing 1/64 did not really exist in the physical realm. It represented the pupil of the eye made from the magic of Thoth, which held the rest of the eye together. It makes sense, then, that one could only take the eye apart and use the individual pieces for numbers if the pupil of the eye was not there holding the pieces together (see figure 34).

In Egypt, the wedjat symbol was the ultimate measurement from which all of their other forms of measurement were made, much like the dimensions of the perfectly cubic Holy of Holies of the Tabernacle, and later, Solomon's Temple, were used as the basis of measurement in Israel. For this reason, a system of weights was assigned based on the 63/64 of the wedjat eye. This became the method for not only weighing out bundles of wheat and other goods, but also for the weighing out precious metals, and the assigning of values to coins, especially silver ones. So the Egyptian monetary system (which was only used at short periods in its history) was based on the different parts of the wedjat eye too. The eye also became a symbol for the act of religious sacrifice, and tokens featuring the wedjat eye were used as vouchers for those who had made donations to the temple priesthood.

The different parts (and progressive fractions) of the wedjat eye are believed by anthropologists and historians to have been originally based on the phases on the moon.

This is part of the reason why Thoth, who put the eye back together, is thought to be a lunar deity. This is interesting, considering that the wedjat eye may be related to another item which involved lunar symbolism: the chessboard. Modern chessboards of course have 64 squares to them, just as the wedjat eye ultimately has 64 parts, and the chessboard is ringed by 28 squares, representing one lunar cycle, with the white and black squares implying alternating periods of day and night. With this in mind, it is quite significant that an Egyptian depiction of the wedjat eye floating over a chessboard-style tessellated pattern has been found. (See figure 36.)

We should also note that the number 64 is a cube of 4. The "perfect cube" is a symbol very important to Freemasons and other occult groups. Not only was the Holy of Holies in the Tabernacle (and later the Temple) perfectly cubic, as well as the "New Jerusalem" described in the *Revelation of St. John the Divine*, but so also is the Philosopher's Stone of the alchemists said to be cubic. The goat-headed Baphomet is often shown seated on a cubic stone. But more pertinent to our current examination is what the Templar offshoot group the Priory of Sion has to say about the "perfect cube." In one of their well-known published documents, called *Le Serpent Rouge*, the mysterious author refers to the process of reassembling the "scattered stones" of the "perfect cube", using the Masonic "square and compass." Interestingly, this poem is arranged in the form of a 13-house zodiac, implying a lunar calendar, and makes several reverences to the game of chess.

Because of its association with money in Egypt, I have often wondered if the word "wedjat" could be related to other monetary words like "chit", "check", "jack", or "shekel." It seems almost certain, though, to be related to the word "watch", which not

only means “to see or observe”, but also “to measure” or “to check” (as in “watchword”, a term identical to “password”) It is probably also related to the Hindi word for “eye”, which is “ajna.” It could even be related to “agio”, a financial term that I will explain in Appendix D.

However, the name “udjat” was also, along with “Gopta”, at the root of the place-name “Egypt”, for according to E. Wallis Budge, the Egyptians sometimes called their own land “Utcha”, thus identifying, as Budge put it, “the name of Egypt as the country of the Eye of Ra.”

Appendix C: The Bohemian Connection

The examination in Appendix B of the word “wedjat” and its possible relationship to the word “check” brings to mind a tantalizing possibility. “Check” of course sounds identical to the word “Czech”, used to describe a person from Czechoslovakia, a land that used to be called “Bohemia.” Czechoslovakia is supposedly named after the man “Czek”, who, according to legend, founded the land. He was purportedly a nomadic wanderer and trader, who, at one point in his travels, rather haphazardly stopped on a hill and decided that he and his entourage would live there from then on. The people of the area gained a reputation for being nomadic and rather untrustworthy traders, so “Bohemian” became a slang term for such people (although it is now a more redeemed term for somebody who is eccentric). The word “Bohemia” is said to come from an ancient Celtic tribe called the “Boii” who once lived in the area.

But as for “Czech”, because of the Templar association with travel and commerce, I cannot help but wonder if the word “chit” used by the Templars may have influenced the name. I mentioned earlier in this book that the word “check” or “chit” was most probably related to the word “jetton”, a type of coin, also invented by the Knights Templar, used as a reckoning counter in conjunction with the exchequer board. Incidentally, the term “jetton” has sometimes been applied by chroniclers to another form of coin used during the medieval period. These coins were more properly called “abbey tokens.” Thomas Wright described their purpose in *Worship of the Generative Powers*:

Antiquaries have given the name of abbey tokens to a rather numerous class of such medals, the use of which is still very uncertain, although there appears to be little doubt of its being of a religious character. Some have supposed that they were distributed to those who attended at certain sacraments or rites of the Church, who could thus, when called up, prove by the number of their tokens, the greater or less regularity of their attendance.

A number of such "abbey tokens" minted by Templar preceptories have been found, bearing none other than the goat-headed, hermaphroditic image of the Baphomet. These were possibly used either as a reward token to prove a knight's attendance at a Templar ritual, or as a ticket proving his right to be at the ritual.

In his book *The Arcane Schools*, occultist John Yarker explains the employment of abbey tokens by certain Gnostic sects that venerated John the Baptist. These tokens would be used as an admission ticket for cult members attending a Gnostic mass. Yarker compares the tokens to the Roman tesserae, and acknowledges that some of them were minted by Templars. As he puts it:

The Gnostics adopted the Apostle John as their Patron; his symbol was the Eagle, or bird of the sun, which was the Sectarians' sacred emblem; it is found in Egypt at the foot of the tau cross, and now on the jewel of a Rosy-cross Mason. The Gnostic tokens were a sectarian version of the older pagan 'Tesserae hospitalis,' on which was the head of Zeus ... There can be no doubt that the Arcane Discipline had them as tokens of preparation for the Supper of the Lord; many, if not all, the Catholic confraternities present a token

which is generally worn under the clothes from a ribbon. Some of the tokens yet preserved belonged to the Templars, and there are a quantity of Abbey tokens, which are struck in lead or pewter with the cross on one side, and on the obverse a variety of designs.

Very pertinent to our current discussion is the fact that, according to the eighteenth-century Austrian scholar Joseph, Baron von Hammer-Purgstall, Templar abbey tokens depicting the Baphomet have been found in the Bohemian (now Czech) towns of Mureau, Prague, and Egra. Indeed, the Templars had quite an influence in Bohemia, as well as the Teutonic Knights, and the "Knights of Johann", the local Knights Hospitaller, because Bohemia was the site from which the Third Crusade was initiated by Emperor Frederick Barbarossa. But it is hard to ignore the fact that the Czech flag and arms make use of the chequer pattern, perhaps an echo of the Templars. In addition, this area is host to the town of Janvov, which mean's "John's family", as well as Joachimstal in the Jachymov valley, where the first silver dollars were mined and minted. "Joachimstal", you will recall, means "Joachim's Valley." The name "Joachim" is just another way saying "Jachin" – the name of one of the pillars from Solomon's Temple. Also, given the apparent influence in the area of the cult of John, we should note again that "Jack" is a slang term for "John." We find names based on "John" or "Jack" all over the modern Czech Republic.

Just as the term "bohemian" became a generic term for a nomadic trader, a swindler, and a cheat, so too did the term "gypsy." *Webster's Dictionary* defines the word as, "a member of a traditionally itinerant people, originally of North India, now residing

mostly in permanent communities in many countries of the world... [It stems from] gipcyan, variant of Egyptian, from the belief that Gypsies originally came from Egypt." Like the Bohemians, the Gypsies have a historical association with the Templars. In their book *The Temple and the Lodge*, Michael Baigent and Richard Leigh documented a protective relationship between the Knights Templar families resident in Scotland, and the Gypsies there, whom the Templar families saved from persecution on more than one occasion. They even organized esoteric mystery plays with a group of Gypsies that took place on the grounds near Rosslyn Chapel.

Gypsies were widely associated with their dishonest business deals, including the sale of bogus psychic readings, magical spells and herbal remedies, that the word "gyp" came to be slang for theft or fraud. Interestingly, there is yet one more group who, like the Bohemians and the Gypsies, became so associated with this behavior that their own group's name became an adjective for "nomadic swindler", and "stranger." I am speaking of the Chicanos, Mexican immigrants to the United States. This concept must be related to the word "chicanery", from the French seventeenth century term "chicanerie." According to *Webster's* Dictionary, this word means "the use of sly or evasive language, reasoning, etc., to trick or deceive"; and, "a tricky or deceitful maneuver, subterfuge." Note, again, that the root word "Chic" is much like "Czech." Perhaps these things are related to the fact that "jack" is a slang term for theft also.

One more thing that ties these groups together is this: the Templars, the Bohemians, and the Gypsies have all been credited by various historians with helping to import the deck of playing cards from the East to the West, and from there to have helped it developed into the Tarot deck, called by modern occultists the "Book of Thoth." The

alchemist Papus even specifically referred to it as “the Tarot of the Bohemians.” And Masonic writer Albert Pike wrote that the alchemical Azoth was “the same as the Thoth of the Bohemians.”

Appendix D: Goat Money

Relevant to the facts and theories discussed in Appendix C, I note the following: The word "Gopta", which both "Egypt" and "Gypsy" derive from, is also, according to antiquities expert L.A. Waddell, at the root of the words "Gothic", "goetic" (which means "magical"), and "god." He ultimately traced it to the Sumerian word "kad", which means "lord" or "king." He also thought that "kad" was at the root of the word "goat", because the ancients had many gods that took the form of a goat. As we know, the Templar idol Baphomet had a half-goat form, as did the alleged Greek inventor of alchemy, Hermes.

The goat-headed drawing of Baphomet by Eliphas Levi has now morphed into our stereotypical depiction of Satan, and modern Satanists have adopted him as one of their symbols. The icon they use for him is an inverted pentagram with the details of a goat's face drawn into it – an image which is also based on a drawing by Eliphas Levi. They call this symbol the "Goat of Mendes", linking Baphomet to the goats that were used for fertility rites at the temple of Ammon, in the ancient Egyptian city of Mendes. In these rites, the goat copulated with the temple priestesses, an appropriately sinister heritage for a Satanic symbol.

In addition to being important to Templars and to modern Satanists, goat symbolism plays a peculiar role in the lore of Freemasonry. This subject was discussed in great detail by British Master Mason Eugene W. Plawiuk in his essay *Liber Capricornus: The Symbol of the Goat*, where he writes:

Our first experience upon entering the Lodge as apprentices is to be warned about the Goat. Even before we are informed of 'in whom we should put our trust', we are given knowing looks followed by such comments as; 'He's going to get the Goat', or 'You are going to ride the goat', or even 'Look out for the Goat.' It is a good thing that we are informed that we place our trust in God, since some poor unfortunate entered apprentice could understandably be forgiven for replying; 'In the Goat.'

The origin of this humorous initiatory jest about the Goat is shrouded by the veils of time. Several older brethren I have conferred with seem to have no idea of where or when it originated. It could have originally been imported from America by that practical joker and fellow Mason; Benjamin Franklin…

Mr. Plawiuk then goes on to describe how Masonic researchers have in the past equated the goat symbol with the idea of building temples, and that it can be connected to the Masonic term for God: "The Great Architect of the Universe", for which they use the anagram "G.A.O.T.U." As Plawiuk explains it:

What a better symbol to attribute to our own striving to understand the G.A.O.T.U. then a Goat? And here too we find an anagram for 'Goat.'

According to a research monograph on the Dionysian Artificers and Early Masonry edited by Manly P. Hall, the symbolism of the Goat relates to the pre-Christian God Pan, Dionysius. The Goat-God was accepted by the later Greek Mystery Schools as the symbol of the Temple Builders. …

Elsewhere, Mr. Plauwiuk analyzes similarities between the Scapegoat of *Leviticus* and the Masonic myth of Hiram Abiff, the architect of Solomon's Temple who, according to the legend, was murdered by his own apprentices for refusing to reveal to them the "secret" of the Temple.

I have already discussed the symbolism of Zeus' she-goat wet nurse, Amalthea, whose skin he made into his magical shield, the Aegis, while its horn became the Cornucopia. "Aegis" means "goat skin", as the root word "aeg" means "goat" in Greek. Goats were very important to the Greeks, for the Greeks ate goats' meat, made milk from their cheese, and used their skin for clothing. This is why the Aegean Sea, which lent its name to their entire civilization, has its roots in this syllable, "aeg."

Interestingly, goat skin is one of the earliest forms of money or currency, used long before coins were invented. Also, in ancient Rome, they had an abacus system for settling monetary accounts, in which discs carved from goats' horns were used, in a manner similar to the way jettons were used in the later European exchequer system. In modern times, the term "goat money" is used to refer to high-quality counterfeit bills. This term has apparently evolved from a more general usage in which it referred to any money earned by unusual means. Perhaps this explains the rarely-used word "agio", which refers to profit gained from currency exchange, or the difference between a coin's face value and the value of its metallic content.

Of even greater interest was the word "bucks", which is, of course, is a modern slang term for American money. But it originated as a gambling term used to denote poker chips. *Webster's Dictionary* defines it as "an object used by a poker player as a marker for who has the deal, for the ante, etc." It can also be used as a verb meaning "to

gamble, play, or take a risk against", or "to strive or compete for." This is related to the term "to buck the odds", and also the act of bucking; that is, "to resist or oppose obstinately"; or "to force a way through or proceed against an obstacle"; or "to strike with the head, or butt." These definitions all describe the actions of animals, including goats, whose young are called "bucks." These animals often "buck", as in "to leap with arched back and land with head low and forelegs stiff." Also, the skin of these animals is tough enough to act as a "buckler", or shield. Indeed, Zeus' Aegis was a buckler, and it was literally made from buckskin. One of *Webster's Dictionary*'s definitions of "buck" was simply "buckskin." The hide of a goat itself could be referred to as "buck."

Appendix E: The Jack in the Box

As an aside related to Appendix D, I would like to note that the word "bucks" could also have been influenced by the source of the word "box." This word ultimately comes from the Latin word "pyx", which originally was a general term for any square container. This is why there is a star constellation called "Pyxis", in the same cluster as Argo and Columba. In fact, Pyxis is the mariner's box inside the Argo ship. But over time, the word "box" took on a more general meaning, while "pyx" retained two very specific definitions.

The first definition of "pyx" is, according to *Webster's Dictionary*, "The box or vessel in which the reserved Eucharist or Host is kept" for Communion in a Catholic church. This practice of keeping the host inside of a pyx led in a strange way to the development of the term "jack-in-the-box." It was originally a term of derision used by Protestants to make fun of the idea that the Communion wafer actually contained the body of Christ. It implied that it was not Christ, but a "jack", or demonic spirit, which inhabited the wafer These associations are still present in the modern children's toy called the "jack-in-the-box", which expresses the idea of a magical imp living inside of a box, like a genie in a bottle.

Based on its association with the Protestant-perceived illusory nature of the Communion and Eucharist rites, the phrase "jack-in-the-box" evolved. As Robert Nares wrote in his 1905 *Glossary of Words, Phrases, Names, and Allusions*, by 1570, the term "jack-in-the-box" was used to refer to a thief "who deceived tradesmen by substituting empty boxes for others full of money." The term could also refer to substitute items

placed in the box to fool the victim further. Thus, “jack” came to refer to counterfeit money, and also to the act of theft or fraud. This is yet more evidence of a relationship between the words “jack” and “check”, for in those times it was always necessary to “check” your money box after completing a deal, to make sure you had not gotten “jacked.”

This brings me to the second modern definition of the word “pyx”, again according to *Webster’s Dictionary*: “a chest or mint, in which specimen coins are reserved for trial by weight and assay.” This definition, referring to the testing of coins to see if they have been counterfeited or debased, stems from around 1350, the post-Templar era in which Italian mercantilism was beginning to spring up. The “Pyx Chamber” at Westminster Abbey in London was also built in the 1300s, for this very purpose. There the tools and records of the national Exchequer were kept, along with boxes of coins that awaited the “Trial of the Pyx”: a public demonstration of the purity of the metal content in the nation’s currency.

Appendix F: Casting a Fortune

Returning to the subject of gambling discussed in Appendix D, I find it peculiar that the term "casting a fortune" is always associated with divination, but the word "fortune" can also mean "luck" or "good chance." Yet the word "fortune", when used by itself, is associated with wealth. This is, in a sense, fitting, since chance, represented by the Wheel of Fortune, is the essential element in some forms of divination, as well as in gambling, which is always an attempt to gain wealth. Thus, many techniques used in divination are also used for gambling. Many of the same elements used in divination can also be used for conjuration, or casting a spell. Indeed, "casting a spell" and "casting a fortune" may at one time have meant the same thing.

I discussed previously that playing cards were the inspiration for the Tarot. Each card in the Minor Arcana of the Tarot corresponds to a playing card, and before Tarot was even invented, playing cards were used in a form of divination known as "cartomancy." Furthermore, both playing cards and chess are thought to have evolved from a game played in ancient India (now modern Afghanistan) that involved both a chessboard, and tokens made out of animal skin which resembled modern playing cards. The game was played mainly for gambling purposes. These things are discussed in greater detail in my article "Work with the Square and Compass", which was published in the book *The Arcadian Mystique: The Best of Dagobert's Revenge Magazine* (Dragon Key Press, 2004).

The Catholic Church has traditionally prohibited gambling games, mainly because, in the ancient world, the tokens used in the games often represented gods that

were invoked for good luck, and the pieces were believed to be enchanted with Satanic spells. Playing cards in particular were anathema, due to their association with divination. Both Tarot and playing cards were referred to by the Church as "the Devil's picture books."

But long before the Roman Church banned gambling, the licentious and pagan Rome of antiquity did also, for the simple reason that the men of the city had become so obsessed with it that they could no longer be persuaded to engage in useful work. The practice was only allowed during the week-long festival known as Saturnalia, beginning on December 22, which is, interestingly, the onset of the astrological period of Capricorn – the House of the Goat. (I should note here that the Federal Reserve was created at the beginning of Saturnalia, on December 23, 1913.) During this festival, the participants would each wear a conical Phrygian hat, which they called a "liberty cap." This hat was traditionally worn by slaves who had been freed, but in this instance it symbolized a Roman citizen's freedom to indulge himself in gambling and other pleasures during Saturnalia. The liberty cap was later taken on as ritual garb by the Bavarian Illuminati, a politically radical French Masonic offshoot created in 1776 (the same year as the American Revolution), which is believed by historians to have influenced the French Revolution. "Liberty cap" is now also the name of a type of psychedelic mushroom

Although the Romans banned gambling except during Saturnalia, they did not succeed in curtailing it completely. Before these games had been played in the streets, but when they were banned, many players simply formed private men's clubs, and moved the gaming tables indoors. These clubs often had special passwords for admittance, and oaths of secrecy for the members. The association between gambling and secret societies has

persisted throughout history. Gambling was a vice which the Knights Templar were known for. Even today, poker nights are one of the most commonly held events at Masonic lodges and other private men's clubs. It is also popularly associated with more sinister, underworld organizations like the Italian mafia, as mobsters often own or control gambling casinos.

Appendix G: The Root of All Evil

Pertaining to Appendix F, the truth, in part, is that gambling has historically been considered sinful because money itself has always had infernal connotations. Even in the pre-Christian era, before the love of money was declared "the root of all evil" by Jesus, the desire for much gold and silver was always thought to be the worst form of greed, a deadly sin. The concept of money has been associated since ancient times with figures which we would now consider to be synonymous with the Devil. The Roman god of the underworld, Plutus, was also the god of wealth, and was depicted on coins holding the Cornucopia. Also, recall the message of Freemason Johann Wolfgang von Goethe's *Faust,* a play about a man who sells his soul to Satan in exchange for ultimate wisdom. One of the bits of wisdom which the Devil gave to the title character was the secret to alchemy, which in this instance turned out to be the printing of paper fiat currency.

Today, spells to acquire money make up the majority of the activities engaged in by modern Satanists and neo-pagans, and like Faust, people often attempt to sell their souls in order to gain it. Even the Queche Indians of the Bolivian Andes, who work in the silver mines there and were converted to Catholicism long ago, perform sacrificial offerings to the Devil and his wife, whom they call "El Tio" and "China Supay", in order to earn monetary rewards. They mainly sacrifice cigarettes, alcohol, and cocaine to their demonic idols, earning, they believe, small and random boons of cash from the universe. To get the big payoffs, they say, you have to sacrifice an animal or a human, and only the *real* Devil-worshippers do that. This, they believe, is how their corporate bosses got to own the silver mines that these Indians slave in every day. To them, the association

between money and the Devil is intrinsic, for they see cash as still being tied to gold and silver, which are mined from the Earth's fiery nether regions – the Devil's domain.

In the Bible, the invention of metallurgy is credited early on in *Genesis* to the figure of Tubal-Cain. He was among the accursed race of Cainites, descended from the world's first murderer, Cain, who killed his own brother. Thereafter, he was cursed to be a "fugitive and a vagabond" for the rest of his days. Cain himself was the inventor of agriculture, described in *Genesis* as "a tiller of the ground." His name, which appears in the histories of many other ancient Semitic cultures besides the Hebrew, has contributed to the formation of words in English and other languages that mean "grain", "corn", "bread", or "cane." But in Hebrew, "Cain" meant "to acquire, to create, to fashion, to produce, or to accomplish" – much the same meaning that the Egyptians gave their wedjat eye symbol. When used as a noun, it meant "smith"; that is, "one who makes things." Thus it seems easy to say that "Cain" is at the root of the word "coin." For in addition to being a noun indicating a metallic token, "coin" can also be used as a verb, meaning "to invent." The noun "coin" is derived from the verb definition, for a coin is an object that has been "coined."

Both Cain and his descendant Tubal-Cain are portrayed in Judeo-Christian literature as evil geniuses, too smart for their own good. There is something sinister about their accomplishments (the invention of agriculture and metallurgy), and of their selfish desire to create things, no matter how wonderful those creations may be. This is fitting, for in the same *Book of Genesis* in which the story of Cain appears, we read about two other seemingly positive acts: the obtaining of ultimate wisdom from the Tree of Knowledge (Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden), and the building of a magnificent

tower leading to Heaven (the Tower of Babel). Both of these acts were portrayed in the Bible as sins punishable by death. The message of *Genesis* (a word that means "creation") is that creating things is God's job, not Man's. Therefore mankind has no need to learn the principles of creation. This was a Judaic concept that the Catholic Church took and ran with, adding in its own new rules restricting free thought, science, and learning, which they considered to be threatening. In this world-view, at the extreme end of it, the invention of money could be seen as one of man's most audacious acts: creating something and declaring it to have a particular value, from which the value of everything else in the world can be measured. So it makes sense that money itself would seem inherently deviant in the traditional judgment of Catholicism. In a way, money is intrinsically a Faustian symbol of Man's rebellion against God in his quest for more knowledge of the world and control of his surroundings.

The other biblical passage which most clearly associates money with evil is found in *The Revelation of St. John the Divine, 13:16-18*, where this prophesy is made regarding the Antichrist:

And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is ***wisdom****. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is* ***Six hundred threescore and six****…..*

Curiously, 666 is the exact number of talents of gold that King Solomon gained in tribute every year, according to *II Chronicles 9:13*. It is strange that he would receive exactly this many talents every year, rather than different amounts each year. Also, why such an odd number? And why does the text make a point of mentioning this particular number? Finally, why does the passage in *Revelation* state, prior to giving the number 666, that "Here is wisdom"? And why, after explicitly saying that this is the "number of the beast", does it then immediately also state that it is the "number of a man"? Could it be referring to the wisdom which the man King Solomon used to expand his fabled treasury? Could the number 666 somehow be a key to this wisdom?

Either way, the description here of needing a mark on one's hand in order to conduct business certainly brings to mind the aforementioned "Mason's mark" which, in the degree of Mark Master, must be pressed against your palm (and is symbolically engraved there) before you can receive your wages for helping to build Solomon's Temple. (In the real world, historically, stonemasons have engraved such personalized marks onto each brick they crafted, to identify their work.)

Appendix H: The National Treasure

In the 2004 movie *National Treasure*, the proposition is put forth that the Freemasons who founded the United States possessed the treasure from Solomon's Temple, as well as a large number of other treasures from around the world, which they had inherited from the Knights Templar. Supposedly they secreted this vast cache, mostly of gold, in a gigantic underground vault beneath the Trinity Church on Wall Street in New York.

In the film, the protagonist, Benjamin Gates (played by Nicholas Cage) discovers the treasure, which is shown to include tons and tons of gold, worth billions of dollars. They find it by following clues left on the back of the Declaration of Independence, as well as other places. But the process necessitates that Gates break a number of U.S. laws along the way. By the time he finds the treasure vault, he has already been captured by the police, and must make a deal with them in order to avoid a prison sentence. The negotiation is led by a policemen named Sadusky (played by Harvey Keitel), who, like Gates, is a Freemason. They end up making a gentleman's arrangement in which Gates agrees to give ninety percent of the treasure to the world's museums, while keeping ten percent, or the value thereof, for himself. Sadusky suggests that this is what the Masonic founders of America would have wanted, in the spirit of Masonic charity. In the final scene of the film, it is revealed that the discoverers of the treasure have only accepted one percent of the treasure's total value in compensation, rather than ten percent. So they were even more charitable to the world than they were required to be.

Clearly, this film contains a morality tale regarding the Freemasonic ideals of charity, and the concept of "a Mason's wages." The tithing concept is implied by the suggestion that the protagonist should keep only ten percent of the treasure. Specifically, it was more of a "reverse tithe", encouraged in some protestant churches today when a person has been particularly blessed by the Lord, and they are so wealthy that they can afford to give ninety percent of their income to the church. In this case, the characters reverse-tithed to the world on behalf of the United States, using the treasure of the Knights Templar, which includes the treasure of Solomon's Temple. It is implied cryptically in the film that this treasure was the original capital, the seed money, upon which the wealth of America is based. Why else would the screenwriter choose to locate the fictional treasure in a vault beneath Wall Street – the nation's main financial district.

Appendix I: Bibliography

Baigent, Michael, and Leigh, Richard. *The Temple and the Lodge*. New York, NY, USA, 1989.

Baigent, Michael, Leigh, Richard, and Lincoln, Henry. *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*. New York , NY, USA,1982.

Baigent, Michael, Leigh, Richard, and Lincoln, Henry. *The Messianic Legacy*. New York, NY, USA 1986.

Barker, Sheila. "Poussin, plague, and early modern medicine." *The Art Bulletin*. http://www.looksmartcollege.com/p/articles/mi_m0422/is_4_86/ai_n8583707 (December, 2004.)

Barnstone, Willis. *The Other Bible: Ancient Alternative Scriptures*. New York, NY, USA, 1984.

Blavatsky, H.P. "Animated Statues." *Theosophical Articles: Reprinted from The Theosophist*. USA, 1982.

Boase, T.S.R. *Kingdoms and Strongholds of the Crusaders*. London, UK, 1971.

Buchholz, Todd G. *New Ideas From Dead Economists: An Introduction to Modern Economic Thought*. New York, NY, USA, 1990.

Budge, E.A. Wallis. *From Fetish to God in Ancient Egypt*. New York, NY, USA, 1988.

Butler, Alan, and Dafoe, Stephen. *The Warriors and the Bankers: A History of the Knights Templar from 1307 to the Present*. Belleville, Ontario, Canada, 1998.

Cain, Tubal. *Secrets of the Lodge: Origins, Practices, and Beliefs of Freemasonry*. Denbighshire, Wales, UK, 1999.

Cajori, Florian. *A History of Mathematics*. London, UK 1919.

Cassaro, Richard Russell. *The Deeper Truth: Uncovering the Missing History of Egypt*. New York, NY, USA, 2000.

The Catholic Encyclopedia, http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/ (2005.)

"Corn, Wine, and Oil." (Author unknown.) *Short Talk Bulletin - Vol. 8. August 1930, No. 8.* Published by the Masonic Service Association of the United States. http://www.phoenixmasonry.org/cornwine.htm. USA, 1930.

Clark, R.T. Rundle. *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt*. New York, NY, USA, 1959.

Cooke, Jean, Kramer, Ann, and Roland-Entwistle, Theodore. *History's Timeline*. London, UK, 1977.

De Vere, Nicholas. *The Dragon Legacy: The Secret History of an Ancient Bloodline*. San Diego, CA, USA, 2004.

Donnelly, Ignatius. *Atlantis: The Antediluvian World*. New York, NY, USA, 1976.

Duncan, Malcolm C. *Duncan's Ritual of Freemasonry*. USA, 1976.

Ewing, James Eugene. *Divine Help*. Tulsa, OK, USA, 2000.

The Federal Reserve website, http://www.federalreserve.gov/ (2005.)

Ginzberg, Lewis. *The Legends of the Jews, Volume IV: From Joshua to Esther*. Portland, OR, USA, 2005.

Goldman, Benita. "Byzantium and Her Arts." Eastern Michigan University. http://www.emich.edu/abroad/staff/Benita/Byzantine.html. 2005.

Goodwin, Jason. *Greenback: The Almighty Dollar and the Invention of America*. New York, NY, USA, 2003.

Greider, William. *Secrets of the Temple: How the Federal Reserve Runs the Country*. New York, NY, USA,1987.

Hall, Manly P. *The Lost Keys of Freemasonry*. Canada, 1976.

Hall, Manly P. *The Secret Destiny of America*. Canada, 1991.

Hall, Manly P. *The Secret Teachings of All Ages: An Encyclopaedic Outline of Masonic, Hermetic, Qabbalistic and Rosicrucian Symbolical Philosophy*. USA, 1971.

Hamilton, Edith. *Mythology: Timeless Tales of Gods and Heroes*. New York, NY, USA,1969.

Hauck, Dennis William. *The Emerald Tablet: Alchemy for Personal Transformation*. New York, NY, USA, 1999.

The Holy Bible: King James Version. Grand Rapids, MI, USA, 1989.

Howard, Michael. *The Occult Conspiracy: Secret Societies a – Their Influence and Power in World History*. Rochester, VT, USA, 1989.

The Jewish Encyclopedia, http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/ (2005.)

Knight, Christopher, and Lomas, Robert. *The Hiram Key: Pharaohs, Freemasons, and the Discovery of the Secret Scrolls of Jesus*. MI, USA, 1996.

Landes, Richard. *Relics, Apocalypse, and the Deceits of History: Ademar of Chabannes, 989-1034*. USA, 1998.

Lietaer, Bernard. *The Future of Money: Creating New Wealth, Work and a Wiser World.* USA, 2001.

Lunn, Martin. *Da Vinci Code Decoded*. New York, NY, USA, 2004.

"The Mandylion, Descriptive Information." (Author unknown.) The website of the Printery House Conception Abbey. http://www.printeryhouse.org/mall/Icons/Portraits/a12.asp (2005.)

Mayer, Martin. *The Fed: The Inside Story of How the World's Most Powerful Financial Institution Drives the Markets*, USA, 2001.

McCormick, W.J. McK. *Christ, the Christian, and Freemasonry*. Belfast, Ireland, 1984.

McIntosh, Christopher. *The Rosicrucians: The History, Mythology, and Rituals of an Esoteric Order*. York Beach, MN, USA, 1997.

Morrison, Paul.*The Poetics of Fascism: Ezra Pound, T.S. Eliot, Paul de Man*. Oxford, UK, 1996.

National Treasure. Disney Films, USA, 2004.

Online Etymology Dictionary, http://www.etymonline.com/ (2005.)

Ovason, David. *The Secret Architecture of Our Nation's Capitol: The Masons and the Building of Washington, D.C*. New York, NY, USA, 2000.

Ovason, David. *The Secret Symbols of the Dollar Bill*. Harper Collins, New York, NY, USA, 2004.

"The Pentagram." (Author unknown.) From the website of the Masonic Grand Lodge of British Columbia and Yukon. http://freemasonry.bcy.ca/anti-masonry/pentagram.html. 2005.

Pike, Albert. *Morals and Dogma*. Richmond, VA, USA, 1927.

Pinkham, Mark Amaru. *Guardians of the Holy Grail: The Knights Templar, John the Baptist, and the Water of Life*. Kempton, IL, USA, 2004.

Plawiuk, Eugene W. *Liber Capricornus: The Symbol of the Goat*. Presented to Norwood Lodge No.90 A.F.& A.M. G.R.A. http://www.freemasonrywatch.org/baphomet.html September 3, 1991.

Rest, Friedrich. *Our Christian Symbols*. Philadelphia, PA, USA, 1959.

Rithchie, John. "The Templars, The Shroud, the Veil and the Mandylion." *Templar History Magazine*. http://www.templarhistory.com/mandylion.html (1999-2004.)

Schaff, Philip. *The Nicene & Post-Nicene Fathers Of The Christian Church, Second Series, Volume II*. New York, USA, 1997.

Schneider, Michael S. *A Beginner's Guide to Constructing the Universe: The Mathematical Archetypes of Nature, Art, and Science*. New York, NY 1994.

Shugarts, David A. *Secrets of the Widow's Son: The Mysteries Surrounding the Sequel to The Da Vinci Code*. New York, NY,USA, 2005.

Simpson, D.P. *Cassell's New Latin Dictionary*. New York, NY, USA, 1959.

Smith, Adam, *The Wealth of Nations*. USA, 2003.

Smith, William. *A Dictionary of Greek and Roman Antiquities*. USA, 1973.

Still, William T. *New World Order: The Ancient Plan of Secret Societies*. Lafayette, LA, USA, 1990.

The Treasury Department website, http://www.ustreas.gov/ (2005.)

Twyman, Tracy R. (Ed.). *The Arcadian Mystique: The Best of Dagobert's Revenge Magazine*. Portland, OR, USA, 2004.

Twyman, Tracy R. *The Merovingian Mythos and the Mystery of Rennes-le-Chateau*. Portland, OR, USA, 2004.

Von Eschenbach, Wolfram. *Parzival* (excerpt). From *Transformations of Myth Through Time: An Anthology of Readings*. Orlando, FL, USA, 1990.

Waddell, L.A. *Egyptian Civilization: Its Sumerian Origin and Real Chronology, and Sumerian Origin of Egyptian Hieroglyphs*. USA, 1930.

Waite, Arthur Edward. *The Rider Tarot Deck*. Stamford, CT, USA, 1971.

Weatherford, John. *The History of Money*. New York, NY, USA, 1997.

Webster's Collegiate Dictionary. New York, NY, USA,1999.

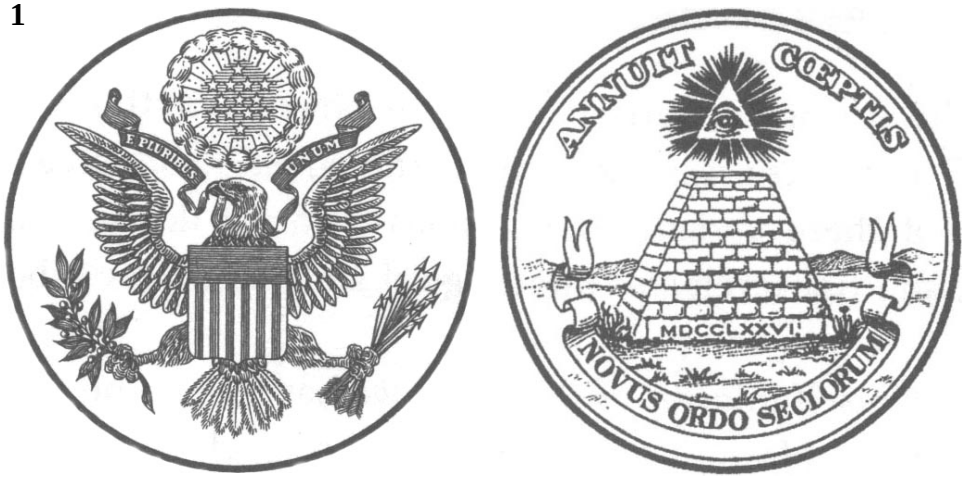
Wilford, John Noble. *The Mysterious History of Columbus: An Exploration of the Man, the Myth, the Legacy*. USA, 1991.

Wright, Thomas. *Worship of the Generative Powers: A History of Phallic Worship*. USA, 2001.

Yarker, John. *The Arcane Schools*. USA, 1997.

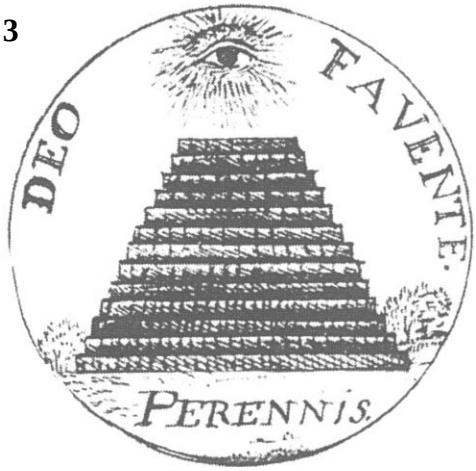
Appendix J: Illustrations

1



2

3



4

(1) The front and back of the Great Seal of the United States. **(2)** Motif from a banknote for one third of a dollar, designed by William Barton. **(3)** Alternate design for the Great Seal, by William Barton. **(4)** The back of the modern US one dollar bill.

5

6

7

8

9

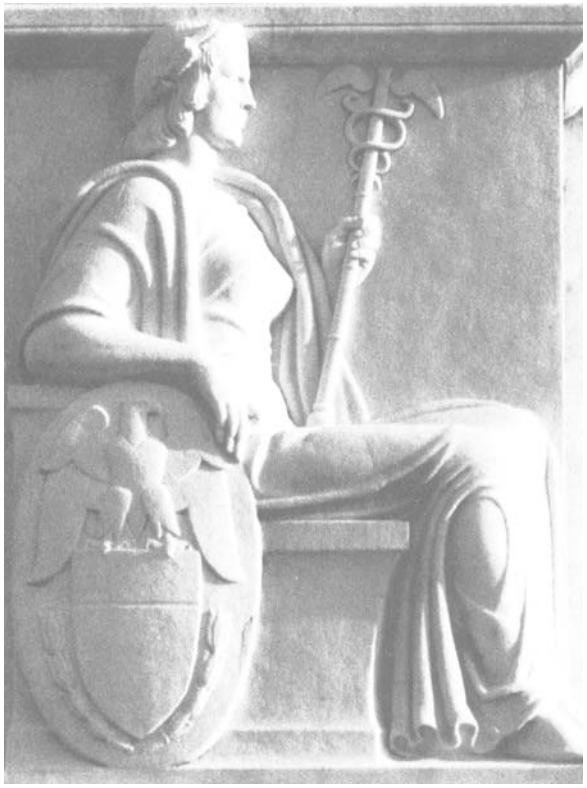
10

(5) Copper coin from Vermont, 1785, featuring the All-Seeing Eye, 13 stars, and 26 rays. **(6)** Early American coin featuring the goddess Columbia. **(7)** American dime featuring the bust of Mercury, or Hermes. **(8)** The caduceus. **(9)** A common form of the caduceus, a serpent on a tau cross, could be the origin of the dollar sign, according to David Ovason. **(10)** Ovason also notes that the alchemical sign for Mercury is very similar to the dollar sign.

11

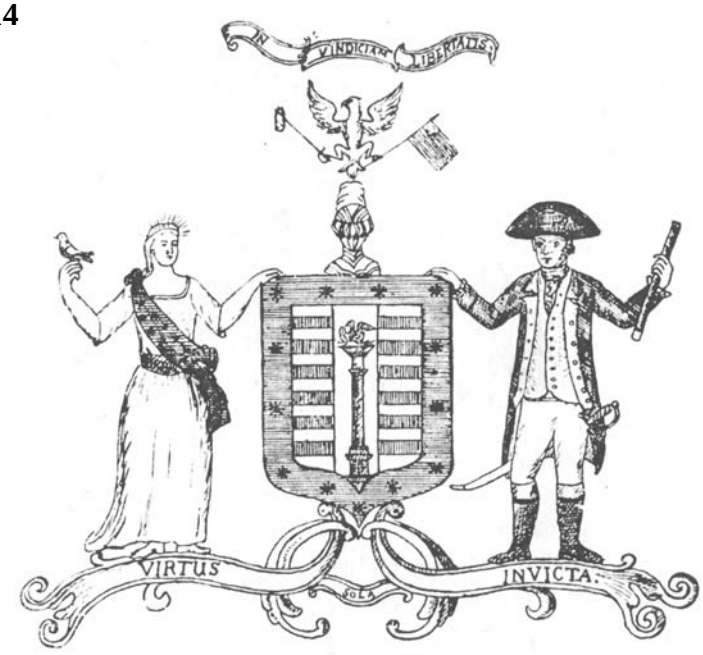
12

13

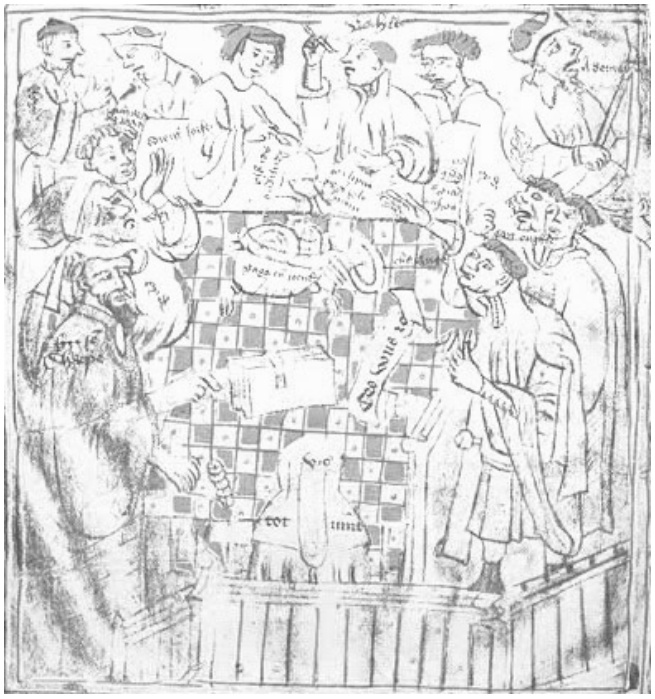


(11) Spanish silver dollars depicting the Pillars of Hercules and the motto "Plus Ultra." **(12)** Ancient coin from Tyre featuring the Pillars of Hercules and the serpent in the Tree of Knowledge, another possible origin for the dollar sign. **(13)** *America and the Federal Reserve Board*, by John Gregory, which shows Columbia sporting a caduceus, with the Federal Reserve seal as her shield.

14



15

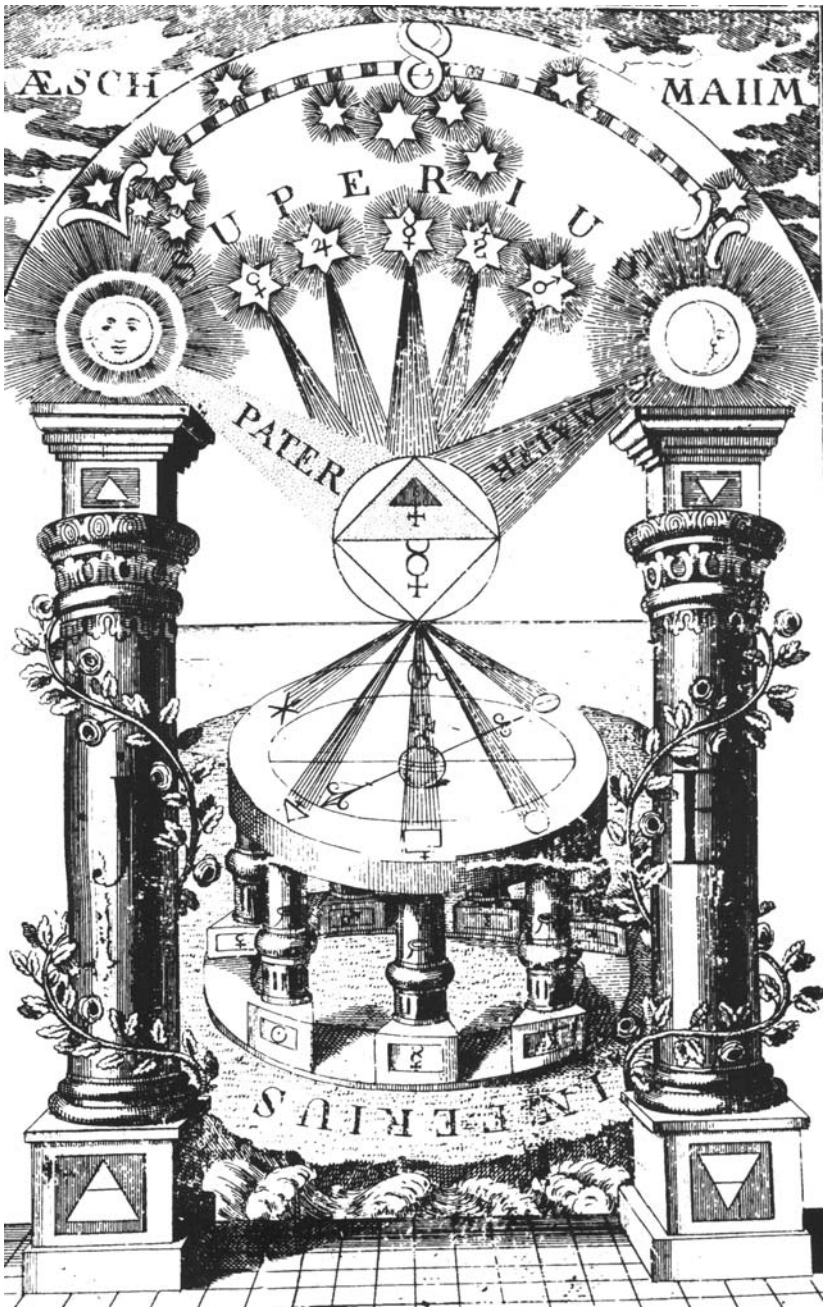


(14) Another seal designed by William Barton, showing Columbia holding a dove. **(15)** This illustration of the Exchequer of Ireland at work shows the use of a chequerboard as an abacus in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries.

16

(16) Masonic device featuring a broken column, a weeping virgin, a sprig of acacia, and Father Time. It symbolizes the loss of the secrets of Solomon's Temple.

17



(17) From an anonymous German alchemical tract *The Compass of the Wise*, a drawing showing the pillars of Jachin and Boaz, each swathed in vines.

18

19

20

(18) The seal of the Knights Templar, depicting two knights riding on a single horse. **(19)** Greek Orthodox icon believed to be a replica of the Mandylion. **(20)** A contemporary illustration of the execution of Templar Grand Master Jacques de Molay in 1314.

21

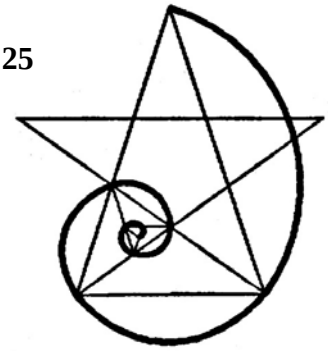
22

(21) The "Goat of Mendes" symbol used by the Church of Satan. **(22)** The famous drawing of Baphomet by Eliphas Levi.

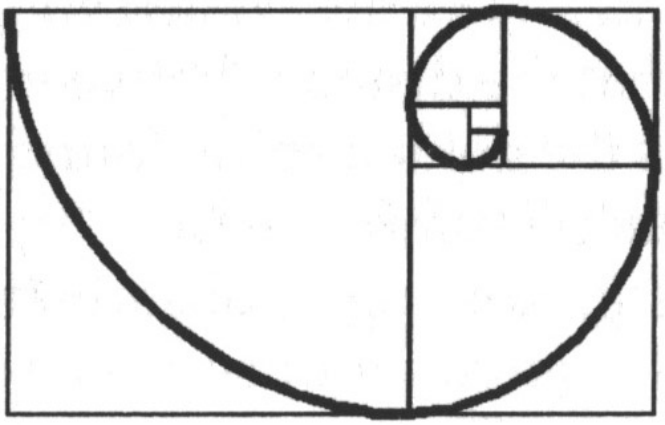
23

24

25

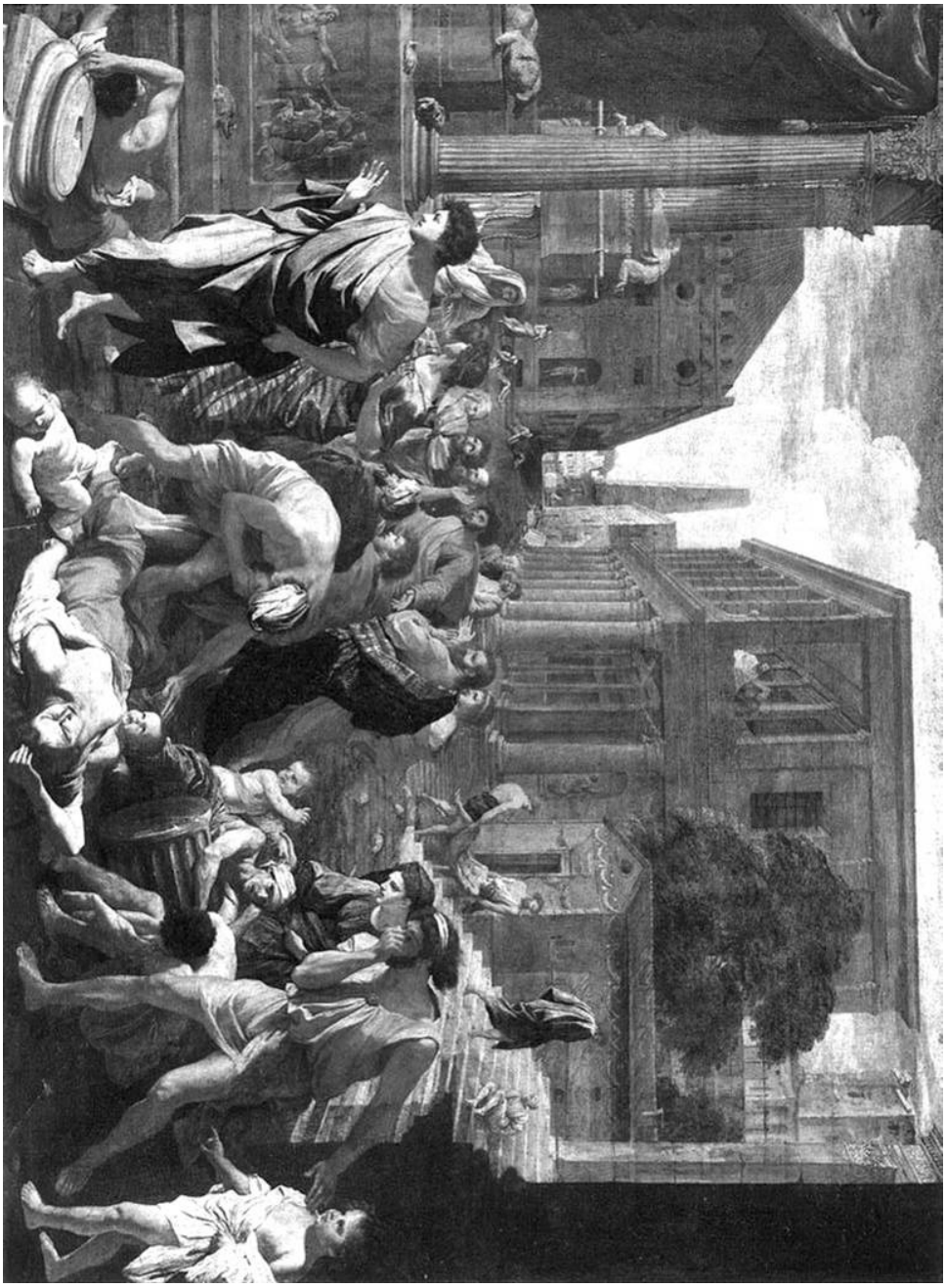


26



(23) The skull and crossbones, or Jolly Roger. **(24)** The Chi Rho symbol envisioned by Constantine. **(25)** The Fibonacci spiral with the pentagram. **(26)** The Fibonacci spiral within a golden triangle.

27



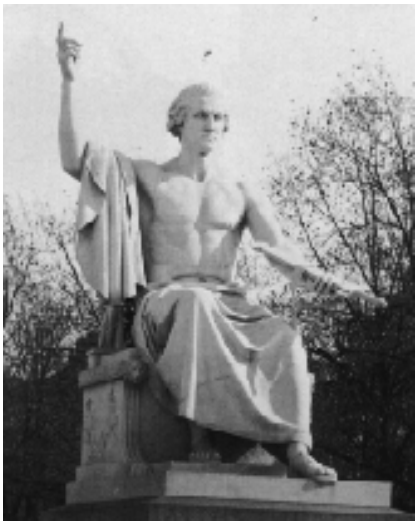
(27) *The Plague of Ashdod*, or *La Peste d'Azoth*, by Nicolas Poussin.

28

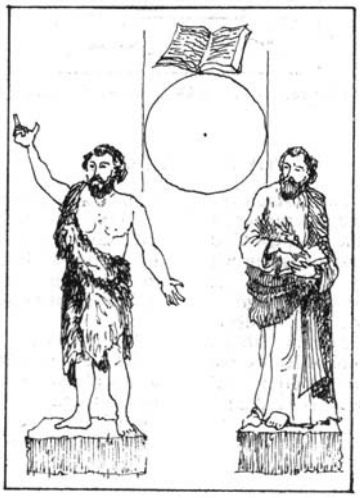
29

30

31

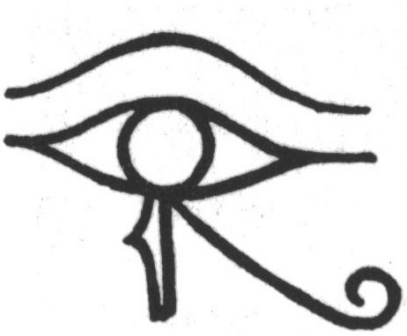


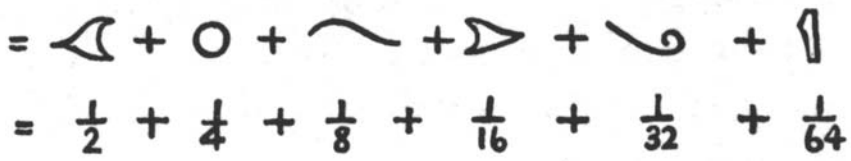
32



(28) The front and back of the Tyrian shekel, which resembles the American quarter-dollar coin. **(29)** An Israelite shekel. **(30)** Hexagonal geometry on the front of the Great Seal of the United States, as revealed by author Michael Schneider. **(31)** Statue of George Washington by Horatio Greenough, depicting him in a Baphometic pose. **(32)** A Masonic device showing the two Saints John: the Baptist on the left, and the Evangelist on the right. The Baptist strikes the Baphometic pose.

34





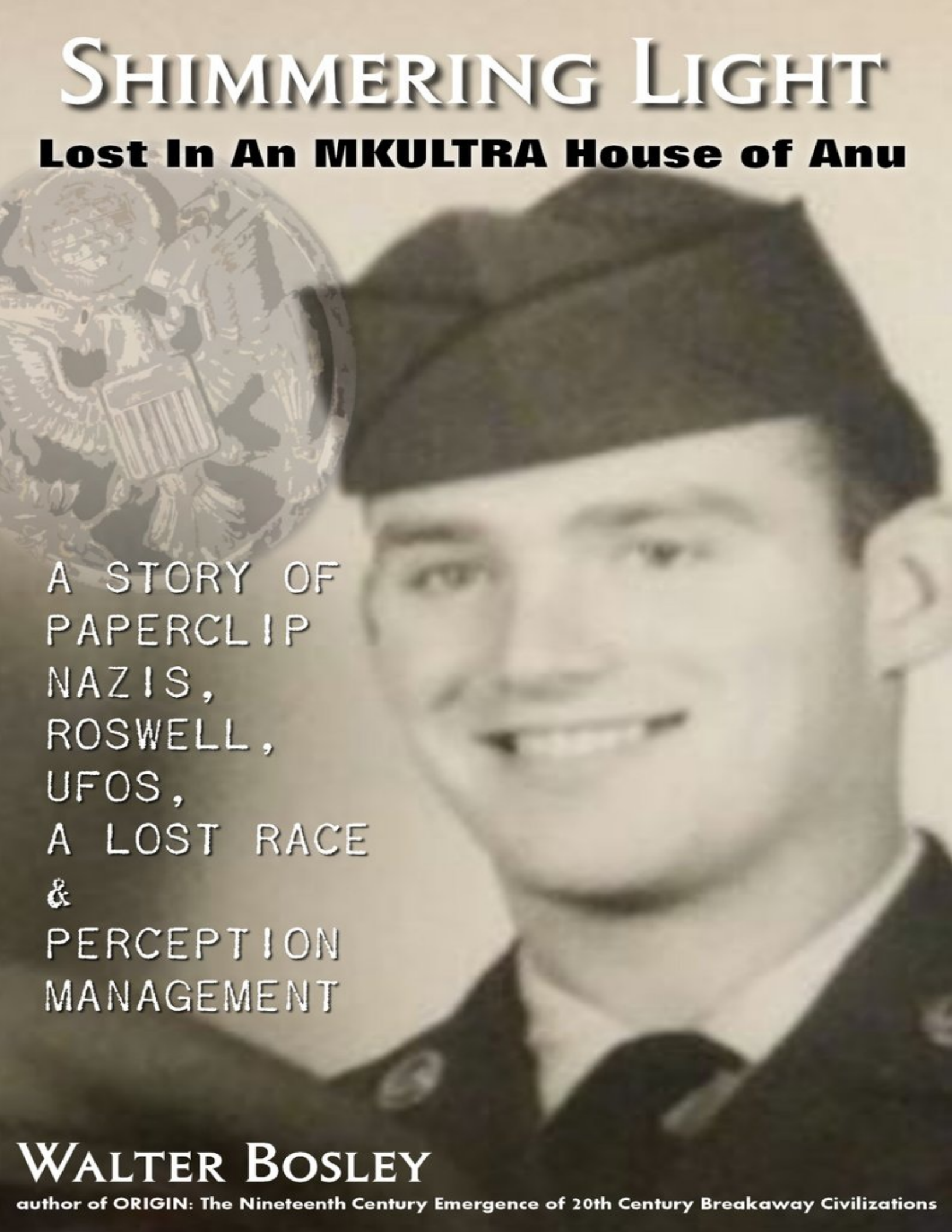
35

36

(34) The Wedjat eye and its six parts, which were used by Egyptians as symbols of mathematical fractions. **(35)** An Egyptian depiction of the Wedjat eye hovering over an arch. **(36)** A hieroglyph showing the Wedjat eye in conjunction with a chequerboard pattern.

Shimmering Light

Lost In An MKULTRA House of Anu



A STORY OF
PAPERCLIP
NAZIS,
ROSWELL,
UFOS,
A LOST RACE
&
PERCEPTION
MANAGEMENT

Walter Bosley

author of ORIGIN: The Nineteenth Century Emergence of 20th Century Breakaway Civilizations

SHIMMERING LIGHT

Lost in an MKULTRA House of Anu

A Story of Paperclip Nazis, Roswell, UFOs,
A Hidden Race & Perception Management

WALTER BOSLEY

Corvos Books

Highland CA USA

Shimmering Light: Lost In An MKULTRA House Of Anu -- A Story of Paperclip Nazis, Roswell, UFOs, A Hidden Race & Perception Management

Copyright 2016 by WALTER BOSLEY

All Rights Reserved

Use of any part of this book in any medium or form must be credited to the author.

Inquiries may be addressed to:

Corvos/LCL Publishing 7231 Boulder Ave #505 Highland, CA 92346

FIRST PUBLICATION NOVEMBER 2016

Cover Photo: Courtesy of Bosley Family

Published in USA

NOTICE: The publisher thinks you're a dickhair if you steal this book because you're some useless punk with a higher opinion of yourself than you deserve. If you're truly indigent but want to read this book, contact me and I might just give you one. But don't steal, because only assholes steal -- and the karma you'll suffer will be intense and long-reaching.

Why I Wrote This Book

I am not trying to convince anyone of anything. This is a book of my thoughts along the trail of a personal family mystery with definite historical connections and big historical implications. If you do not like speculation, stop reading this book right now. If you want to be told what to think, put this book down and forget about it. I wrote this book for my own reasons.

Many years ago, my dad served in the United States Air Force. Forty years later, I did, too. When I was a kid hearing his stories, I didn't know that I would. However, the thought would be seriously entertained twice before my actual entry into the service. This book is as much because of this mutual experience of military service as it is an attempt to share and possibly explain one of the most fascinating tales I've ever heard from someone close to me.

Who was my father?

Charles Bryan Bosley was born on 14 June 1936 in Parkersburg, West Virginia. He had two brothers at the time of his birth and one followed after. His father died when he was fourteen years old, his mother passed before I was born, in the following decade. With the passing of his oldest brother earlier this year, they are now all gone, or elsewhere perhaps. That brother also served in the US Air Force, so it seems to run in the family. Military service has been a part of both sides of my family since the American Revolution. I am not the descendant of Johnny-come-latelies of the late 19th Century immigrant waves.

Before my dad was in the air force, he was a school kid, a Boy Scout, and a sports enthusiast. He would grow up to be the best natural athlete I've ever personally known and that isn't hyperbole. The man could master any sport.

The story goes that when my dad finished high school, he was offered a partial scholarship from the Cincinnati Reds organization, via their farm league, but there just wasn't the money in his family to match it so he had to turn it down. That's a big reason he joined the US Air Force. Thus I grew up

around the ball field watching him pitch softball games because he was the team's best pitcher, always, on every team for which he played.

My dad was also an excellent golfer with several trophies for winning company tournaments when he worked for Union Oil, including a couple of hole-in-one awards for tourney play. I witnessed a few more of those watching him play over the years.

One of my favorite of my dad's sports moments was in the early 1980s when we hit the course with his then brother-in-law, a big burly outgoing guy named Steve whose bluster was part of his annoying charm. I liked Steve because he was the first nearly complete asshole I had experienced as a friend and it was, admittedly, funny. But Steve had taken to golf and one day suggested to my dad that they play a round or two.

We may have gone to the Sam Snead course over in Rialto, I don't exactly recall. What I recall was Steve and his two golf buddies joining my dad and I, followed by the pre-play banter. Steve had been golfing six days a week for a few months or so. He was in his late twenties, my dad nearly fifty. Steve would dominate, just ask him. The bluster was full power. Then I watched my dad step up to the tee, commenting how rusty he was having not picked up a club in three years, and proceed to embarrass the hell out of Steve and the other younger guys. It was hilarious and I had quietly expected it because I had seen my dad golf. He was a natural.

My dad also managed Little League teams, including those I played on, one of them undefeated. One of his players was Ronnie Lott who went on to play football for the 49ers. Unlike several managers back then, my dad played every kid on the team in every game. He never benched kids to play other kids who might better ensure a win because his philosophy didn't allow that. Kids were there to play baseball, their parents wanted to see them play. He managed several winning teams, sometimes to much frustration of other managers who played only their perceived stars. My dad emphasized the basics and fair play.

But sports was not his only talent. I likewise never knew a better natural salesman than my father. When he worked for Union Oil, my dad started as a truck driver and was quickly brought inside to the commercial sales department. That isn't the retail side. Commercial sales is the side of the house that sells to companies with large fleets of vehicles, especially heavy equipment and tractor trailer vehicles. Commercial sales also required that he keep those clients buying from Union Oil and this is what my dad did with ease. Am I exaggerating because I'm his son?

In the early 1970s, Union Oil ran an in-house program for their salesmen. The top salesman in each division would win a big gold ring. We still have this ring in the family. It came with the Union '76' logo in the center of an onyx stone. If a salesman repeated this feat, the company would add a diamond. My dad won the ring the first year and added two diamonds the second and third years in a row. His division was pretty big, covering a chunk of Southern California and a portion of Nevada. The only reason he didn't win any more diamonds was because he left the company. My dad wore that ring nearly until the day he died. Like in sports, he was an honest salesman, never relying upon anything but his knowledge of the product and its true value to the customer's application of it. Imagine that.

My dad did everything with the assumption that he would do his best to get it done right. He did the landscaping on two houses we lived in, designing patios and lawn irrigation layouts and fencing and

such, then building and installing them himself, down to the cement finishing and planting shrubs and flowers. It all looked professionally done, too.

How the hell would I live up to that?

Yet my dad wasn't perfect. He screwed up a twenty year marriage to my mom with his philandering. I have two other sisters out there, one of whom I've talked to on the phone once many years ago and another whom I've never met. The first one is the reason we left West Virginia when I was just a couple of years old or so. My mom was understandably pissed off so we returned to California where my older sisters and I had been born. My dad was a solid provider but he liked side tail just enough to mess up a good thing. This might be a contributing factor to my opposite position on such matters; I don't cheat. One woman at a time is difficult enough to deal with (and no longer worth the trouble of a formal relationship, for me).

An issue with my dad that is most pertinent to this book was his moodiness. My childhood and youth involved days when the family had to walk on eggshells sometimes depending upon Dad's mood. Do not interpret this through the filter of an explosively violent father image, because it wasn't like that[1]. It was usually more of a pissy attitude and expecting everyone to do things the way he wanted it done, when he was in that mood. Or it was everyone subduing their good time because Dad was having a bad one. We could be at Disneyland, for Christ's sake, and my dad could suddenly be displeased with something. It was ridiculous, really.

But this didn't happen most of the time, it happened some of the time. They didn't call it that back then, but you could say my dad was likely bipolar.

He hit my mom a couple of times, only once that I can remember when I was a little kid but it happened two other times that I am aware of. He also went off on one of my sister's pretty hard when she was being a provocative pain in the ass (her nature then) and would have likely hurt her bad had not my uncle stepped in and stopped him. These are among the episodes that get unremembered or denied in my family but they happened. I am compelled to relate this private stuff to you the reader because the rest of this book may relate to this issue with my dad.

The reader is making a mistake if you think I excuse my dad's errant behavior. I am a former federal criminal investigator, able to remain objective at the flip of a switch. I'm also trained and experienced in the techniques and art of the 'subject interview'. In dealing with a criminal suspect, especially one you have an overwhelming preponderance of evidence on or have personally witnessed his crimes, you question in a manner which requires playing the role of the 'understanding guy'. It's called 'running a theme' and I truly enjoy it -- it's effective.

Running a theme on a perpetrator requires understanding the basic working of his or her mindset, i.e. their personal logic. I like doing that to someone, if I can get them across the table from me. It requires objective control of emotional responses to their misdeeds and is so satisfying when you've nailed them of their own accord.

More specifically, I was a counterintelligence agent and then a counterespionage case officer. Hunting and running spies requires an even deeper level of understanding the perp because these guys are usually much smarter than your average criminals, most of whom are simply stupid and sometimes brutal assholes. You have to set aside the emotion and judgment to do your job and that requires an

objective look at the subject, if you hope to optimize your chance of nailing him or her.

This book requires I take an objective look at my dad. Of course, my father was not a criminal but he demonstrated asshole behavior at times. I can't let the fact that he was my dad cloud my analysis. I am taking the time to explain all this because there is something in this story directly relevant to his moods and behavior.

Still, I liked my dad. When my parents split up, I was the only one who had anything to do with him for a while, which earned me much ire at times from my mom and sisters. They conveniently forget and deny this, when asked. I didn't approve of his shenanigans but that was between he and my mom and wasn't my fault nor my burden. Besides, I had my mind on other things as, not long before they split up, I had experienced something of an enlightenment or awakening and it was life-changing at the time. The world had turned weird for me in a very personal way so my parents' drama seemed to have less impact than I might have expected.

That brings me back to the subject of this book. It was only a few years before my own strange experience that my dad first spoke to me and my sisters of the curious episode at the center of this book. My experience with synchronicity makes me wonder if there may have been a connection between the two events but that's another story. I recall his story being the most mystifying thing I had ever heard in my family, that and my mom's tales of ghosts and spook lights in Alabama and Georgia. Say what you will of folks from the South and Appalachia, there's some deliciously weird things going on there and I eat that stuff up. It's in my blood.

Which brings me to my dad's childhood and youth.

He was born in the Ohio Valley territory now known for Mothman[2] and the eerie presence of Indrid Cold. As I have written elsewhere, I have a personal connection to this lore. Shortly after I was born. we lived in this area for a few years around the time the Mothman stuff was first going on. We lived there again for two years in the early 1970s and by that time Indrid Cold was a delightfully prevalent bogeyman used by adults to make sure their kids were home from the woods before dark. That was in Mineral Wells and we lived in my uncle's trailer park, not far from where Mr Cold was first encountered. Some of my fondest memories are of this lore.

In light of what has been said, written and considered about the Mothman and Indrid Cold lore around Parkersburg and Mineral Wells, might something in my father's youth have played any role in the strange encounter featured in this book? There absolutely could be, I am convinced. Though you will see that there are differing ways of looking at my dad's episode, the high strangeness of the Ohio Valley area he grew up in reflects upon both of them.

I think my dad's story deserves to be told and shared. I grew up with it and, as I entered into service in various national defense agencies of the US intelligence community, learned more about it from other sources. It may also be useful to have other minds on the story to possibly see another perspective, or perhaps to illuminate further information. Something did indeed happen to my dad, but what exactly?

Many of my best memories of my dad seem to congregate around Sunday afternoons. This was usually when he had finished a weekend landscaping project and was admiring his work. To this day, I cannot walk into a hardware store and not be reminded of visits to lumber yards with my dad. The smell of a

hardware store, especially the lumber, is heavenly to me and I love it. Relics also embody memories of my dad. Things like flat bladed shovels and leather work gloves remind me of him.

Baseball[3], Bonanza and beer in quart size bottles bring the memories back, too, along with small glass bottles of soda pop like those he would buy for me when I rode along with him on his job. Among the best are the horror movies at drive-in theaters, a lifelong love that I have passed down to my son who now writes and directs horror films. My dad loved spooky movies about the strange and mysterious, which now doesn't surprise me. All these things swirl around the edges of the thing that I have come to suspect was at the heart of what defined him, for better or worse. He tried but could only partially convey them.

It was before I was born when my father was in the United States Air Force. Military service brought him to California and my sisters and I would be born here. He was assigned to a tactical base in the desert outside of old Victorville and his unit was involved in the classified world of space science in its heady wonder days. To a young man from West Virginia, I imagine my dad driving along the dark desert highway toward the shimmering light ahead.

He had no idea what was coming.

Then she lit up a candle and she showed me the way,
There were voices down the corridor...
-- Don Henley & Glenn Frey

CHAPTER ONE

Up ahead in the distance
I saw a shimmering light
My head grew heavy and my sight grew dim...

-- Don Henley & Glenn Frey

I was told the story in segments over the course of four decades:

I recall the first discussion being in the spring or summer of 1974. My family was living in West Virginia and my dad had pulled out his old magazines which included the now classic *Look* and LIFE issues[4] on UFOs. I recall it was one of those Sunday afternoons mentioned previously because I have a memory of looking at the color funny pages that day and those were featured only in the Sunday newspaper.

During a discussion on what UFOs might be, he vaguely alluded to having learned about something that crashed in the New Mexico desert years before he was in the air force. He suggested that it might have been from another world. Imagine my intrigue.

The next time I recall it coming up was during a TV show about UFOs sometime in 1975, after we had returned to California. I had recently seen the Sun Classic Pictures' release of *The Outer Space Connection*[5]. Again, my father alluded to the possibility that something from another world had crashed in New Mexico. By this time, my sisters and I had many times heard his stories about his days at George AFB and of Chuck Yeager, Scott Crossfield, Iven Kincheloe and the altitude chamber.

When Columbia Pictures released Steven Speilberg's *Close Encounters of the Third Kind*[6] a couple of years later, I was hooked on the UFO mystery. Between the popularity of the film and the growing number of UFO related shows on television in the year or so leading up to it, our family could not avoid the discussion. Again my dad alluded to the crash in New Mexico and this time he said that what had crashed was a small craft, and there was an additional detail: He said the people aboard the craft were not like the aliens that had begun to appear in UFO stories, certainly not like the little beings in Spielberg's film.

How did he know? Because he had seen the bodies at Wright-Patterson AFB in the late 1950s, he said.

The next time we had a significant conversation about the subject was in 1980 when I discovered William Moore's and Charles Berlitz' book *The Roswell Incident*. I showed the book to my dad but he merely glanced through it, more insistent that the beings on the craft were not little aliens, rather they were like us and virtually hairless. He also said there was nothing to fear from these beings. And, he added, the 1947 incident in New Mexico was not the only time such a thing had happened.

Six years later, I was revisiting everything I had learned about the UFO phenomenon to that time. It was in the spring of 1986 when I sat down with all my UFO books and re-examined them, coming to a new and unexpected personal insight: There was something very earthly going on with this stuff. At the time, my suspicion was that secret military technology might indeed explain much of the reports. I was certainly not the first guy to consider that idea but for me it was eye-opening in its implications. I thought of my what my dad had been saying over the years about the Roswell case. He could very well have learned something about it while in the air force.

By this time, my mentor had begun to work with me and I was hearing things from him that augmented what my dad had been saying about the 1947 New Mexico incident. Within two years, I would be reporting for duty with the FBI[7], and just a few years after that would come the next major leap

forward in my dad's tale.

Wilson

In 1991 my father was hospitalized for a blood clot. I was working in New York as a counterintelligence specialist for the FBI and flew out on short notice, that's how concerned we were for his life. Naturally, being the one who lived farthest away, by the time I could quickly get a flight to California, and drive directly from the airport, he had made it through the danger zone. He was still heavily sedated when I walked into his hospital room.

It was the next day when I was alone with him for a couple of hours that my dad started muttering about a 'crystal house' and a man getting killed. He seemed agitated. And then he mentioned the name for the first time: Wilson.

At the time I had no idea who this Wilson was or what his significance might have been. My sisters came into the room just moments after he was saying this stuff so I didn't press him and said nothing to them about it. I did call my mentor as soon as I got to a phone at my mom's house.

"Was there anyone else in the room when he was talking about Wilson?" he asked.

I told him there was not. The nurse was at the station and I was alone with my dad.

"Good," he said, *"Keep him off that subject when anyone else is around, if you can."*

I asked about Wilson.

"We'll talk about Wilson when I see you next time." That was how the conversation ended.

And we did. I will go into that later in this book. For now, the next time my dad and I discussed his tale at length was after I had become an officer in the air force and had been working at an even higher Top Secret clearance than I had carried while working for the FBI. By this time, I knew more about his tale than he realized I did. I had also been encouraged to get him to talk about it.

And so it was that in 2004 my dad told me in greater detail what he recalled about his strange experience in 1958.

The Time Has Come To Tell The Tale

My father was TDY in Alabama when he and two other guys, whom he never did identify to me, were selected for a project and boarded a military aircraft bound for a base in Texas.

Following departure from Montgomery, presumably from his assigned TDY location of Gunter AFB[8], the plane turned north somewhere over Mississippi or Louisiana. That's when an intelligence officer, whom my dad later identified as 'Major Knight', emerged from the forward cabin and informed the trio that they were actually headed to Wright-Patterson AFB in Ohio. My dad said they were told that documentation in their personnel files would backstop the cover story of a flight to Texas[9].

Shortly after arrival at WPAFB, the trio was briefed on what happened with the so called Roswell Incident of 1947. According to my father, the crash did not actually happen in Roswell and he insisted that it was not an extraterrestrial craft. The airmen were shown crash debris, including the now

legendary foil-like material that could be balled-up and retain its original shape. As many have since, my dad also said this material could not even be marked by extreme heat. They were also shown bodies which they were told were recovered from the crash.

My dad said the bodies were human and did not have much if any hair. Neither did they have over-sized heads nor big eyes. My dad insisted they were not big but neither were they three feet tall. He was always amused when the popular 'greys' were associated with this crash, insisting the recovered bodies were not the little aliens so many others had claimed of them. My dad was told that these 'other' people meant us no harm. As he conveyed his story, he expressed concern that a cover story of extraterrestrials had been employed to serve some agenda other than national security.

According to my dad, in that classified 1958 briefing, they were told a Roswell type of incident had happened again.

Following the briefings and mission orientation period at WPAFB, my dad and the other guys were next sent to Arizona, specifically to an underground facility in the vicinity of Winslow. The trio of airmen were assigned to a special project being led by a scientist named Wilson who delegated them to an ongoing search-and-rescue operation because, they were told, this time there was a survivor.

According to my dad, at some point in his service he had been trained to fly small helicopters in unusual places, specifically in vast subterranean spaces and through large tunnels. This training played a role in the effort to retrieve the lost crewman of the downed craft -- which my dad insisted was not a spacecraft, i.e. not of extraterrestrial origin.

They were briefed that the occupant of the downed craft was lost and 'his people' wanted him back. This time US authorities had been contacted by these people -- the owners of said craft -- asking for assistance. My father said that he and other personnel were told that these people made it clear they were not interested in regular contact with our society but they did want assistance in this matter.

More specifically, they were told that the humans involved with this craft came from inside the planet, their civilization existing in expansive subterranean areas connected by tunnels, and that they went underground thousands of years ago due to some catastrophe. He also spoke of a group of blind people associated with this underground civilization, and these blind ones had developed their other senses very keenly. It was some of this group whom my father and his teammates unexpectedly encountered.

One member of my dad's team was killed during this particular incident. The man was neutralized by a tubular hand-held device which allegedly worked by the wielder using psi powers. It is at this part of the story that my dad would always display emotion, as he described a living man suddenly 'switched off' by the simple device, dead before he hit the ground. This appeared to truly distress my father and it is here the story always ended.

Until the year before he died.

In July of 2007, my father was brutally and senselessly attacked by a former employee. As usual, another unworthy human being who blaming drugs for his criminal misdeeds had assaulted the innocent. Beaten in his sleep, my dad went into a coma for a few weeks. He would never recover and

spent the remaining eleven months of his life in hospitals. For a period of two months after waking from a coma, he was himself and able to communicate -- and that's when he began to tell me more.

I would visit my dad when my sisters couldn't be there so that he and I could discuss the underground project. He spoke of a technology transfer program in which we gave this other civilization a small craft he referred to as 'The Zipper', a small frame aircraft he said was designed by and for the US Air Force. But that moniker was also informally attached to the F-104 Starfighter[10] so I had to assume his injuries had scrambled things up by this time. He also told me more of Wilson and having met him before, specifically in 1957 in the Mojave Desert away from George AFB, where the scientist and his genius elder demonstrated large square remote-controlled platforms which utilized anti-gravity. What else he told me about Wilson bears no impact on this book.

What was I to do with this information my dad shared after the assault? Throw all of it in the trash? The problem with doing that is what I later learned about the Wilsons and their technology. I've decided to keep it in the mix with the caveat regarding the Zipper issue. I will let the reader decide for him or her self.

At any rate, it came to an end when a meddling family member convinced my dad that he did not need to talk to me and so he stopped. In fact, my dad said little more to me other than hello after that, ultimately slipping into another coma from which he did not wake. I have learned that ignorant fear runs deep. That was the sad state of affairs when my dad's life ended.

So let's go back to 1958 when, following his release from the Arizona assignment, my dad took my mom to California where they got married in Victorville and he returned to duty at George AFB. A few months later, my dad left active duty earlier than scheduled. My mom always thought his discharge was to get an early start on a GI Bill college education -- but she doesn't recall my dad ever enrolling in classes anywhere.

I was told by a source in the intelligence community that my dad was discharged from the air force early as a result of what happened during his experience underground, thus the early release to attend school was possibly the most likely administrative code that was used to cover the true reason.

And there you have it. Another strange story as so many others have told in the milieu of Roswell and weird America in the post WW2 era. Only this one does not involve extraterrestrials, at the insistence of the man telling it.

Whether it's true or not, or whether I can verify any of it, is why I wrote this book. I can tell you that between hearing that story and what you're reading here, my opinion has changed as to what the truth *might* more likely be. But before we get there, let's go back to what we know, take it apart and see what we find.

CHAPTER TWO

Souls of men dreaming of skies to conquer
Gave us wings, ever to soar!
-- Robert MacArthur Crawford

A consideration of whether any of my dad's story is true must begin with his military service. Let's look at the facts of my father's claim to have been in the military.

Was Charles Bosley actually in the USAF?

My dad entered the United States Air Force in Fairmont, West Virginia on 4 March 1955 with the assigned rank of Airman Basic.[11]

What about Gunter AFB?

My dad was there.

According to the DD214 issued to Staff Sgt Charles B. Bosley, with an Honorable discharge date of 24 December 1958, he was twice sent to Gunter AFB: first in 13 June-9 August 1955 and again from 30 June-13 August 1958. I can not only place him there, I can also provide the purpose of his being there. The first time was for advanced training following basic, specifically attending the Apprentice Physiological Training Specialist course at the Gunter Branch of the School of Aviation Medicine. This was roughly two months after completion of his basic training, during which time he had reported to his duty station, George AFB in Victorville, California.

The second time of record that my dad was at Gunter AFB was for the Physiological Training

Supervisor course also at the School of Aviation Medicine[12]. This was the 1958 period of 30 June-13 August and it also happens to be when he met my mother who was working across the way on Maxwell AFB at the time. What she has told me about that time has been quite valuable to this book and I'll get to that later. For now, let's continue with the basics.

The reader should understand something about the DD214 form. It is a post WW2 creation and every service member is issued one upon discharge. This document is vital to the veteran as it provides proof of military service and much pertinent data as regards rank, specialty, assignment locations, professional training and accomplishments. It also states whether the service member received a discharge that is Honorable or otherwise. As stated already, my dad received an Honorable discharge. However, the DD214 is by no means a complete record of service and should not be mistaken for one.

For example, if you were to look at my DD214, you would see the official title of my specialty, my training courses, decorations and base assignments. You would see very basic descriptors of deployments and awards. What you would not see are specific cases or operations, nor would you see any TDY trips not relative to training nor overseas deployments that I took to various bases or cities or countries in the course of my duties as a Special Agent of the US Air Force Office of Special Investigations. Most of that remains sensitive and much of it is still classified. In fact, you should not find my personnel record in St Louis and you could not likely obtain a copy of it through normal channels, unless something has changed drastically[13]. I bring this up to illustrate that my dad, like all service members, did things during his active duty time that will never be gleaned from a DD214.

What the DD214 provides here is verification of my father's enlistment in the US Air Force and that he was indeed at Gunter AFB as he said. Let's proceed.

Did My Dad Ever Go To Wright-Patterson AFB?

Is there any reason to believe that my dad would have been sent up to Wright-Patterson in Ohio while in training at Gunter AFB?

Indeed there is. Following the establishment of the USAF School of Aviation Medicine, it was decided that the research laboratory at Wright-Patterson would handle all equipment and materiel issues and the school at Gunter would provide all training and measurement of personnel, relative to aviation physiology and medicine[14]. Where aviation medicine was concerned, Gunter and Wright-Patterson required a close operational relationship, especially where my father's specialty was concerned.

As stated earlier, my dad was a Physiological Training Specialist and was training to be a supervisor in this specialty at the time he claimed to have been sent to Wright-Patterson in Ohio, during the pertinent second TDY period in Alabama. What exactly does a Physiological Training Specialist do?

SSgt Bosley's Specialty & Wright-Patterson AFB

According to my father's GAFB Form 101, he was assigned to the Physiological Training Unit of the 4452d USAF Hospital, George AFB. This form describes his duties as follows: operation of a high altitude chamber and conducting inspections of aircraft oxygen systems and personal equipment such as helmets and masks, and performing maintenance on these items. There is another interesting tidbit

added later to his job description but we will get to that soon enough. For those who require numbers, his AFSC Primary was 90132 and Control was 90152.

Therein lies the explanation for why a trip up to Wright-Patterson from Gunter makes perfect sense. Wright-Patterson's Physiological Research Unit developed and maintained the equipment side of the aviation medicine house where it concerned physiological training and operations. My dad's specialty required up-to-date expertise with said equipment to perform his duties. It makes perfect sense that during a training course to become a supervisory Physiological Training Specialist he would have to go to Wright-Patterson at some point. This establishes a logical connection to this important base in Ohio and my dad's work.

But remember, when he got on the plane in Alabama, he thought they were going to Texas. This part of his story simply cannot be dismissed. Why might my father and his colleagues have possibly been going to Texas?

The Texas Leg of the Story

Between the World Wars, the School of Aviation Medicine was established in Texas at Randolph Air Field. Following the war, certain training elements were transferred to Gunter AFB, specifically the Physiological Training Officers Course and all enlisted courses[15]. In 1958, when my dad would have been going there, Randolph AFB had assumed all training programs for pilots and crews[16]. This included the USAF Helicopter School[17] which comes into play later in this book and may explain why my father was initially headed that direction (and may have actually been there at some point).

There is even more reason to suspect Brooks AFB was the Texas destination suggested by my dad. USAF aviation medicine training had a history at Brooks prior to Randolph and regained that element in 1957 when the Texas headquarters of the School of Aviation Medicine returned and became associated with NASA and specifically Project Mercury.[18]

Project Mercury actually began under the US Air Force, the earliest publicly identified date being 1958, the year NASA took control of the program[19]. Accelerated in aftermath of response to the launch of the satellite Sputnik by the Soviet Union, Project Mercury's practical mission under NASA was to put a man in orbit. Redstone Arsenal in Huntsville, Alabama, center of US Army missile and space operations, would play its role in Mercury, and so would members of my dad's specialty.

My understanding has always been that it was at George AFB where my dad and his colleagues conducted ground tests of the Mercury pressure suit in the altitude chamber. This was, according to my father and an intelligence community source, the same silver colored suit used in the eventual flights. I will name my source 'Colonel Lundy'[20]. What my dad didn't tell me, Colonel Lundy did; mainly that he and his buddies got into trouble for photographing each other wearing the Mercury spacesuits. The photos were allegedly confiscated and they got their asses sternly chewed. The point is, if my dad was involved in ground testing the Mercury spacesuit, he would have had a reason for going to Texas relative to NASA and USAF involvement in the manned space program.

And there is another point to consider. If my dad was indeed involved in USAF manned space program support operations, he would have certainly held a rather high security clearance. He

claimed this himself, and even told me the level. I will not repeat that specific information but I will tell you that it certainly exceeded Top Secret SCI, if true. He also told me about having to watch captured German film footage of altitude chamber tests from the years prior to WW2 as part of his training, which in the 1950s would have been strictly classified. If your radar hasn't blipped yet, it should have now, Paperclip students.

I'll get to the Germans soon enough, the point is to emphasize the level at which my dad's duties required access to classified material and information.

SUMMARY

I have demonstrated the following, based upon an official notarized DD214:

My father was indeed enlisted in the US Air Force.

I have positively identified his specialty

He was at Gunter AFB in the summer of 1958.

His specialty had a direct affiliation with Wright-Patterson AFB.

My father's specialty confirms that he could have been sent to Texas during his training in Alabama. I have also demonstrated why my father going to Wright-Patterson during this training makes sense.

So what does this mean?

What I have demonstrated thus far is that my dad's military credentials are solid. There is enough credibility in these facts to continue with this analysis.

Admittedly, this weird episode of his life is impossible to prove and I am not going to try. That isn't the purpose of this book. My intent here is to examine what he said and see what we find upon closer inspection.

Was what happened in New Mexico, the thing that became known as 'Roswell', a real event? Could my dad have been briefed on this event, whatever it was? Why continue with this analysis?

Because I'm curious and that's a good enough reason. So let's continue...

CHAPTER THREE

Sweet dreams and flying machines
In pieces on the ground
-- James Taylor

My dad always said that Wright-Patterson AFB played a role in the crash mystery. The stream of Roswell literature since 1980 says the same. There must have been a good reason.

Wright-Patterson AFB is the home of the 88 Air Base Wing and Air Force Materiel Command. In existence as two separate Army air corps air fields since 1917, Wright-Patterson became a combined base in 1948 when the US Air Force was created by the National Security Act of 1947. The base had always been a research and development center for US military air power and also played a role in the development of the US manned space program prior to and during the establishment of NASA. It is the Air Force Materiel Command wherein the mysterious secrets can be found.[21]

With that in mind, let's go back to 1958 when my dad said he was sent to Wright-Patterson to be briefed on what happened in the infamous, legendary and notorious Roswell Incident.

The Roswell Part of the Story

I'm going to assume that the overwhelming majority of readers of this book are familiar with the generalities of that which is 'Roswell'. We are told all the time that 'the bodies' and the pieces of the craft were flown to Wright-Pat where they were studied and the craft was reverse-engineered. Since I was first hearing about some of this from my father before the 1980 book by Moore and Berlitz, I have always recognized my dad's tale basically jibes with the circumstantial facts and even more so with the popular legend.

Unless my dad knew Stanton Friedman or his work before telling me his version, and I have no reason nor evidence that he did, I will proceed under the assumption that he wasn't lying or merely confused with something he might have seen on a TV show or read in a magazine or obviously in any of the subsequent books on Roswell. Wright-Patterson was where the bodies and material were sent according to my dad's version and in all others, so let's look at this base within the Roswell context.

The Wright Place?

So which specific units at Wright-Patterson in the late 1950s might have logically had custodianship of recovered alien bodies and their craft?

The Air Technical Intelligence Center (ATIC) was indeed present at WPAFB in 1958, the year in question[22]. ATIC was a field unit of the Assistant Chief of Staff for Intelligence and is known for analyzing captured or recovered foreign aircraft. It became the National Air and Space Intelligence Center, a tenant organization at WPAFB today. As an arm of Air Force intelligence, ATIC was also attached to certain requirements of Air Material Control Department and that brings us right back to AFMC, a host command of the base. This strongly suggests that the facts support the inclusion of Wright-Patterson AFB in the Roswell story.

So why would my father, a mere staff sergeant, be briefed in on such an important piece of information such as allegedly recovered bodies and a craft of unknown origin?

Need To Know

The answer to the above question is my dad's job in the Air Force, as described earlier: He conducted inspections of aircraft oxygen systems and personal equipment such as helmets and masks, and performed maintenance on these items; he also ran pilots through the altitude chamber and briefed them on the procedures. Such briefings included related aerospace medicine aspects of pilot training and evaluation. This specialty and the ground testing of the Mercury spacesuits would have logically attached him to classified USAF and NASA space program research and development, and that would most certainly provide the all important 'need to know'[23]. My dad's specialty was at the heart of these things.

With his need-to-know established, it becomes credible that my father could indeed have observed and studied the remains of alleged otherworldly travelers because it would provide much data invaluable to doing his job. How the environment through the mysterious craft flew and the subsequent crash particulars affected the physiology of the recovered bodies would be data critical to my dad's specialty.

And then I found something truly delightful.

A Significant Discovery

There was a little nugget of gold among my dad's official paperwork that even better argues his need-to-know about the recovered bodies.

You will recall the previously mentioned GAFB Form 101 which describes his job, including equipment maintenance duties. In the job description box at the bottom was added at some point in his career the following task, worded simply 'Casualty Collection Team # I' ('I' being '1') followed by 'Bldg # 630'.[24]

This made the investigator in me very happy. It's called 'evidence' and among the best kind. But evidence of what?

The Retrieval Link

Being on a casualty collection team meant that my father was involved in the retrieval of materiel and specifically *bodies* from crashes. This means to me that it is indeed possible for my dad to have viewed bodies retrieved from whatever might have crashed in New Mexico sometime after WW2. If it was determined to be a USAF space science and aviation medicine matter, it would be logical for air force doctors and aviation medicine specialists to be keenly interested in the effects of the crash on the victims' physiology. Whether a human physiology or one allegedly not ours, useful scientific data could be collected if the craft were indeed 'alien' aka foreign and capable of space flight, extraterrestrial or not.

I propose that my father's assignment on a casualty collection team lends credibility to his claim to have seen the alleged 'Roswell' crash bodies.

Intrigued with the discovery on my dad's GAFB Form 101, I hoped to learn more about this casualty collection team. There was a building identifier, for starters. Locating Building 630 may be impossible if it was located at George AFB, now inactive and deteriorating. Incidentally, that building number does exist at WPAFB, presently as a child care center. If 630 was indeed a building at George, I can fairly presume that it was a medical facility, for obvious reasons related to my dad's assignment. But I just don't know. It could also have been a staging area in a hangar.

Did my dad ever speak of casualty collections?

Over the years, he told me stories of the pilots who had crashed, and specifically of the death of Iven C. Kincheloe, Korean War fighter ace and test pilot who was killed at Edwards AFB on 26 July 1958 while my dad was back east. He had run Kincheloe through the altitude chamber on a few occasions and was acquainted with him. Kincheloe was the first man known to fly above 100,000 feet, earning him the brief nickname 'America's No 1 Spaceman'. Selected for the X-15 program, Iven Kincheloe was killed while ejecting from a malfunctioning F-104 over Edwards, victim of the not so brilliant idea of downward ejection employed in that model of aircraft at the time.

The Kincheloe story was one my dad would tell of crash retrieval activities even though he was not at Edwards when it happened. However, he would go to Edwards AFB in the course of his duties at George, something my mom distinctly remembers about the remaining days my dad had in the air force, after they got married. He also told a story about one gruesome crash after which he saw the deceased pilot's favorite scarf blowing across the ground on the flight line. I can't recall which pilot that was.

With the GAFB Form 101 positively identifying my dad with a crash retrieval team at his base, it could also have qualified him to pull the same duty at any USAF location. I say in this piece of data on the form we have enough corroboration to his story in this regard, slight as it may still seem to some (and it will, I assure you).

So what do we have regarding Wright-Patterson AFB that suggests my father was telling the truth about being taken there to be briefed on an 'alien' craft and its occupants? That the base would be the place for such aerospace materiel and information, and that my dad's duties would provide a double 'need to know' about recovered pilot or flight crew bodies.

Yet there is even more.

Wright-Patterson and the Roswell Legend

Let's look at '*The Roswell Incident*' and see what is useful, if anything.

In the lore surrounding Roswell, we have Berlitz and Moore's presentation of a memo written by Meade Layne of the Borderland Sciences Research Foundation, obtained prior to writing the the 1980 *Roswell Incident* book in which the problematic secondhand testimony of Grady Barnett, as filtered through a Dr. Weisberg, cites a 'Description of the Aliens'.

The Layne memo states the bodies were seared by intense heat inside the craft and that an alleged autopsy demonstrated the occupant resembled a **normal human body** 'except in **size**'. In another part of the Moore-Berlitz book, Barnett is claimed to have said the bodies were also **without hair**. It goes on to state that the bodies and wreckage were put on a train to California and transported to Muroc (the base that became Edwards) and was then transported through Fort Worth before ending up at Wright Field (WPAFB), specifically in Building 18-A, Area B.

There's a lot there. First we have what appears to be corroboration of my dad's claim that the bodies recovered from the Roswell wreckage were *human*, including a reference to their *size* (which my dad said was smaller than the average human though not as small as the popular depiction of ETs) -- and that they were *hairless*, another detail my dad alleged. Then we have the bodies and craft being sent by train to Muroc (Edwards AFB) where it's all put on a plane and flown to Wright Field in Ohio. There is mention of 'unusual wreckage' being sent to Fort Worth. Here we have Wright-Patterson solidly in the lore by 1980, plus Texas bases which corroborate what we know about USAF aviation medicine history and my dad's background. My question about this part of the Barnett story is why would the US Army *Air Corps* place such an important retrieval on a *train*?

My only explanation for placing the bodies and wreckage on a train is that perhaps the guys calling the shots felt it would be more physically secure, but was a train was less likely to wreck than a plane was to go down? I'm sure one concern was to protect such valuable materiel. Yet the air corps transporting via rail instead of on one of their own airplanes remains curious nonetheless. They ultimately put debris on a plane to Ohio anyway. Why the train?

Also cited in the Moore-Berlitz book is the Barry Goldwater incident in which the senator, a reserve USAF officer, supposedly visited WPAFB where he asked his pal, General Curtis LeMay, if he could see the legendary 'Blue Room'. This room allegedly housed the Roswell bodies and debris. LeMay responded gruffly and shut down Goldwater's inquiry by telling the senator to never ask again. The point here isn't whether this tale is true or not, but to point out yet another inclusion of Wright-Patterson in Roswell lore.

Probably the best corroboration in placing Wright-Patterson in the mix of whatever Roswell was or is can be found in the FBI teletype dated 8 July 1947[25] in which it is stated that a disc and a balloon retrieved from a crash site 'near Roswell' New Mexico were being transported to Wright Field. This teletype was apparently sent from the FBI office in Dallas to the SAC in Cincinnati, Ohio, the nearest field office and just a half hour or so drive from Wright Field (WPAFB).

It should be noted that the original newspaper articles that stood as the only public documentation about the so called Roswell incident did not mention Wright Field. Only a reference to the retrieved materiel being flown to a 'higher headquarters' was mentioned in print by these sources. We can certainly assume that this would likely have meant Wright Field but the exclusion of any identifier beyond 'higher headquarters' makes my dad's statement that it was Wright-Patterson (Wright Field in 1947) a valid corroboration. I remind the reader that he told me this prior to the release of the Moore-Berlitz book, the first book on the subject.

Following the Moore-Berlitz book, we have Kevin Randle and Don Schmitt in their 1991 book *UFO Crash At Roswell* and Stanton Friedman and Don Berliner presenting information in their 1992 book *Crash at Corona* furthering a Wright-Patterson association with the recovered bodies and materiel from Roswell. These authors cite the in-depth analyses of the debris by the 'Air Material Command' the early incarnation of the aforementioned AFMC located at WPAFB since the 1940s.

Corso

In the 1994 book *The Truth About the UFO Crash at Roswell*, authors Kevin Randle and Don Schmitt present many alleged Roswell witnesses, among them one who claimed the bodies and wreckage were flown aboard a C-54 to Wright Field. It is with the subsequent 1997 book, *The Day After Roswell* by Colonel Philip Corso, that the Roswell tale notches up and further corroborates a Wright-Patterson connection.

I will be going deeper into the Corso material later in this book because it does bear a major impact on my dad's story and my tentative conclusions -- regardless of the issues raised about Corso's credibility and the credibility of the entire Roswell milieu. There remains, in spite of all the revelations of lies and deceptions associated with the Roswell witnesses and legend, something quite valid -- and very unpopular -- in Corso's tale that resonates directly with my dad's account and his air force service. It will also return us to Wright-Patterson AFB.

In a final note to tie up the assertion that the famed Ohio base would serve as a center for government focus on the mystery of UFOs and who flies them, I share with you the words of Olavo Fontes of the Aerial Phenomena Research Organization **in 1958**:

"Only the persons who work on the problem know the real situation: intelligence officers in the Army, Navy, Air Force; some high ranking officers in the High Command; the National Security Council and a few scientists whose activities are connected with it; and a few members of certain civilian organizations doing research for military projects."

Intelligence officers, scientists, and military research: all at Wright Patterson for decades. And there's that year again:1958, the year my dad says the events examined in this book happened.

SUMMARY

In this chapter I have demonstrated that Wright-Patterson AFB is indeed the location where all things 'Roswell' would end up for analysis and exploitation: WPAFB has the pertinent intelligence and research units.

I have also demonstrated that my dad was assigned to a 'casualty collection team' which is another way to say crash retrieval and certainly could have included said function. Through casualty

collection duties, my dad is further linked to the interests of Wright-Patterson in a case of 'foreign technology' crash retrieval.

Wright-Patterson is linked to the crash report in an FBI memo, not to mention the thirty years or so of Roswell lore and literature.

So with it reasonably demonstrated that my dad was what he said he was and likely might have had to go to Wright-Patterson AFB which is positively associated with the 'Roswell' issue, we can continue this analysis. We can proceed to the weirdest part of my dad's tale.

As we move on, consider next what Bruce Rux writes in *Architects of the Underworld* (Frog, 1996):

*"The government began investigating the possibility that the race behind the unknown spacecraft was one parallel to our own, and connected to human life from antiquity, no later than **1958**."*

Again that year my dad claimed his encounter with the hidden 'lost race' occurred. Where is this idea coming from and why did they specifically begin to consider the idea of a parallel race in 1958?

Let us now follow the rabbit to the mysterious and exotic land called Arizona...

CHAPTER FOUR

A bolt of fear went through him
As they thundered through the sky...
-- Hughie Thomasson

Pinpointing exactly when my father would have been in Arizona, according to the specifics of his story, is difficult even as a simple exercise for the sake of this discussion.

My assumption, based on the order in which he told me the events happened, has been that he was sent to Arizona immediately following the briefings and revelations at Wright-Patterson AFB. However, that may not be the case.

When Could It Have Happened?

I spoke with my mother about this on numerous occasions because she met my dad while he was in Alabama in that summer he says this all happened for him. She worked at Maxwell AFB across town from Gunter. Montgomery was her birthplace, and home at that time. She provided more detail essential to my understanding of my dad's time there.

My parents met on the Fourth of July, 1958. After a whirlwind romance, they were married in Victorville, California, on 19 August. Since my dad did not finish the course at Gunter until 13 August, this left little time between the end of the training TDY and their wedding in California. My dad's car at the time was a 1957 Chevy Bel Air. My mom rode with him on the drive back to California in that car, as verified by her, which means he had driven it to Alabama in the first place. She verified that he had bought the car from his commander at George AFB. My dad always kept his cars in immaculate condition and my mom said it was a very comfortable drive even with the multiple passengers (her mother, my dad's colleague and his wife).

In that car, they departed Alabama on the 14th of August, driving at a reasonable yet steady pace that put them in Victorville on the 17th, according to my mom. She recalls they had a full day before the wedding which was on the 18th. With the six days accounting for the completion of the course in Alabama, the cross-country drive, and their wedding in California identified, we can now look at the days of the training course period.

The TDY at Gunter AFB

With 30 June being the start date, that means my dad likely checked in to Gunter AFB no later than 29 June, but he could have arrived earlier because we don't know when he left George AFB or where he may have stopped en route to Alabama -- and this may be very significant. For now, let's start with that arrival date.

If he was there for a training course, typically my dad would have had to attend lectures and likely participate in lab simulations. Knowing the dates of the apprentice course he took in 1955, we observe on his DD214 that the supervisory course period was forty five days, twelve days shorter than the prior course he also attended at Gunter. Based upon my experience with military training, the apprentice course more likely required daily attendance for the full period of fifty seven days because he was first learning the job. But the supervisory training offers some marginal wiggle room, in my opinion.

Clearly my father had been doing the physiological training specialist job for about three years by the time he arrived at Gunter for the second course[26]. He didn't need to learn that job all over again. What about being a supervisor required 45 days of training?

As a military officer, I was a supervisor. Having already received military management training as a 120-day wonder via OTS, my supervisor training when I took over the branch at my detachment at Wright-Patterson was being shown the forms we used in our specialty (and I had already been trained on those at the specialty training course). My point is, I did not attend a supervisory training course to become chief of the branch.

Not only was I the supervising officer, I was also a federal agent involved in running operations and espionage casework as it came up. The administrative tasks of running that branch were not so excessive, even with additional duties, that I could not be expected to be operational. I bring this up to illustrate a point: You could have fit a supervisory training course for that portion of my job into five days and I was the officer in charge of a sensitive and critical operations branch with plenty of reporting requirements aside from the field work.

However, I must acknowledge that my father was not an officer[27] and the USAF may administratively have considered me 'trained in management' by virtue of (snicker) Officer Training School.[28]

I doubt that my dad and his colleagues needed 45 days of endless instruction to be a supervisory specialist in a job they had already been doing for a few years. Taking my dad's story at face value, I propose two things: The briefing at Wright-Patterson and the alleged trip to Arizona took place during the training course period.

My mom does not recall my dad being away from Alabama between the day they met and the day they departed together for California. She recalls seeing him a lot during that time but she does acknowledge there could have been a period of a day or two when they might not have seen each other during the weekdays. We can still work with this, if her memory serves correctly. Keep in mind, though, that she worked at Maxwell and he was working at Gunter.

Briefing Trip to WPAFB: There And Back Again

The trip to Wright-Patterson from Gunter could easily have happened over the course of two days. They could have boarded the plane on a day he saw my mom prior to departure. He could have been in place in Ohio for the next two days and nights and then returned the following day and easily seen my mom that night. Though four days are involved, there are only two in this scenario that my mom would not have seen him, thus fitting her recollection. But was two days enough?

Recall that my dad claimed to have been briefed in on what really happened in New Mexico in 1947, i.e. events popularly associated with the Roswell incident. How long could that have reasonably taken?

The way these things work is that they bring you in, sit you down, make you sign papers and then they lay it on you. I can imagine being told that a hidden civilization of humans had crashed their strange craft in New Mexico takes all of an hour when you factor in what little background might have been

known along with the details of the crash, retrieval, witness data and so forth. The next hour could easily suffice for looking at bodies in a SCIF type of vault. It would be the aerospace medicine analysis and intelligence assessment that might take up the lion's share of time. Factor in breaks and any transport across the base, plus an hour at the chow hall. Don't forget Q&A and discussion. That fills one day.

I make an educated guess that the entire next day could likely have been devoted to briefings on the situation that according to my dad had freshly happened in Arizona. Follow that with instructions on what their role would be in the retrieval. Once done, my dad and his colleagues would be on a plane the next morning and back in Alabama in time for lunch at Gunter.

This scenario I've proposed for the WPAFB leg of my dad's tale would account for all of four days, if we're going with my mom's best recollection that she did not see him for more than a couple of days at a time. Now consider the possibility that her memory is way off and he was actually gone for a week and we have plenty of time for the trip to Ohio.

Fitting Wright-Patterson into my dad's 1958 training period at Gunter AFB is easy, but not so much the Arizona trip. I can't help but see this as a longer period than just a few days. The logistics alone add up to more time.

Arizona

Let us say for conversation's sake that what my dad told me about the Arizona episode happened in the period of a week. Let's say that after Ohio he and his colleagues were flown to eastern Arizona. That flight and the arrival processing would suck up the better part of the first day. If a rescue operation, as my dad stated it was, time was of the essence and the operations involved would have been conducted with a sense of urgency. That could reasonably serve a short version though is admittedly pushing it.

The morning after arrival and check-in with briefings and the like would most certainly mean hitting the ground running. There was, after all, a lost pilot to recover. Based on what little my dad actually said about what happened, the fatal encounter with the underground people could have happened on the first day that he was involved with the operation. Not knowing exactly what happened after this, I am left to assume that he was put on a plane and sent back to Alabama.

As you have likely already guessed, issues emerge with just the timing aspect alone. The point, however, is that the Arizona episode *could* have happened in a period of a few days to a week and my mom simply doesn't recall not seeing him for that particular period of time.

This is a good point at which to acknowledge that the timing question serves another possibility which we'll explore later. For now, let us again continue with my dad's tale as he told it.

So with it being possible that my dad's 1958 adventure in Arizona on a UFO retrieval and rescue operation could have happened during the course of a week of his identified training period, let us now consider the extent of the operation apparently already in progress, per my father.

The Operation

The story is simple: The craft crashed just outside the border of the subterranean realm and the pilot was lost on the surface, essentially somewhere in the desert or canyons east of Winslow, Arizona.

We at least have a place to pin our examination.

Winslow started as a water stop for the railroad and grew into one of the many small towns along old Route 66. It sits in Navajo County and is roughly 40 miles east of the well known Meteor Crater impact site where the 1984 movie *Starman* was filmed. Meteor Crater is also where the Apollo astronauts conducted a portion of their training and this should be noted for it will be discussed again. Sixty miles east of Winslow lies the Painted Desert and the Petrified Forest and it is east we shall go as my dad's story says the operation was happening.

The Painted Desert was named such by the mid 16th Century Francisco Coronado expedition on a quest for the legendary Seven Cities of Cibola. Immediately we may suspect another reason for a US government operation in the subterranean strata of this region. The Spanish heard stories of vast amounts of gold here. If they believed it, might the US government have thrown their hat into the gold-hunting ring, albeit four centuries later? We'll discuss that later. For now we'll look at the Petrified Forest.

Characterized by striking landscapes of grassy plains and rocky mesa badlands, the Petrified Forest is home to countless fossils and some petroglyphs, along with being territory of both the mysterious cultures of the Hohokam and the Mogollon. It is essentially a perfect place for anything to happen without anyone knowing about it, especially back in 1958. Was the lost pilot wandering the canyons, trying to find his way back home to the underground world - which, by the way, the Hohokam believed in?[29]

According to my dad, that was the case. The pilot was lost on the surface but the greater focus of the operation was allegedly underground, should the pilot have wandered below to reach the passage back home. That's where my dad said that he and his colleague encountered the 'others'. What exactly was going on down there?

There have been stories in recent years about underground extraterrestrial bases and gun battles between aliens and military personnel. When I started hearing such tales about twenty or so years ago, I did cock an ear because of what my dad had been telling me. But these stories were even more sensational than what my dad offered and they were (and remain) questionable, as is my dad's story. The significant differences between those versions and what I heard over the years is that my dad always insisted the people 'down there' are not extraterrestrials and the unfortunate encounter resulting in the death of an airman was the result of the two parties startling each other, not an act of hostile aggression or war.

The Others

So who and what are these 'other people'?

My dad said they were human beings who went underground during a planetary cataclysm and chose to remain there, developing and expanding their own civilization and technology separate from that above. When one thinks of the legends and lore of an Atlantean or Lemurian civilization destroyed in

the remote past, this scenario enters the realm of folklore and mythology. Even more to the point, when you look at Native American legends and mythology, my dad's scenario indeed resonates with the specific area where he claimed to have encountered the underground people.

In the wider context of both American continents, we find that some Native American lore tells of a world shaking disaster which sent their ancestors fleeing from their sinking homelands and landing by sea in the 'new world'. But ancient cultures of the southwestern United States tell a different story, one of the people fleeing catastrophe via descent into subterranean cavities. The Hopi tell us that we live in what they refer to as 'the fourth world', this being the fourth time mankind has lived on the surface following natural or other disasters[30].

Even more interestingly, the Hopi tell of mysterious 'Ant People' who helped them during said crisis. The Mandans also have such a legend, theirs about the 'Histoppa', a tattooed group of humans who were the first to attempt an emergence from the safety of the tunnels. They did not survive what they encountered above. The Apaches tell of ancient wanderings in tunnels, carrying their food with them in seeds and fruit plants to sustain themselves below, which implies an ecosystem one usually doesn't think of for down there. The Paiutes of Death Valley also speak of the underworld and we'll return to them momentarily. There is Cherokee lore of the subterranean 'moon-eyed' people who are blind in sunlight and pale are akin to what we find in these events discussed here, even though they were reported in Tennessee. [31]

Ancient North American mythologies are full of these legends and South America has them on steroids. The point is, there is an existing theme of a living underworld running through the centuries of mythology and folklore so one must consider this when looking at my dad's story.

After arriving in place in the Arizona underground, my dad and his colleagues would have been introduced to whomever supervised the rescue and retrieval operation, and this would likely have included an appearance by the man who was running it: the enigmatic Wilson.

As previously discussed, while in the hospital my dad was going on about a 'crystal house' and a man who was killed. He repeatedly referred to 'Wilson'. Fortunately I was the only visitor in the room at that moment and the nurses were busy elsewhere so no one else heard it. You will recall that my source and mentor, 'Colonel Lundy', instructed me to keep him off the subject when family members were around and that he would tell me about Wilson at another time.

I will return later to what I learned about Wilson but for now let's stay on the 1958 narrative.

After being briefed on specific tasks and likely receiving some sort of general instruction from Wilson, my dad and the other guys would likely be deployed to the section of the subterranean area for which they were responsible. Again, he didn't give any detail about what or how long anything had transpired between meeting Wilson and the moment they encountered the 'others'. He simply said they were making their way through the underground when they turned a corner and were startled by them.

According to my dad, they were confronted by a small group of pale humans who were blind but keenly adept with their other senses. My dad's air force teammate raised his weapon on reflex and that's when the leader of the other group raised his handheld object, leveling the simple tube at what

he perceived a threat. My dad said that the air force team member suddenly dropped to the ground, as dead as if a switch had been flipped off. And that is it, the end of the story.

It is of keen interest to me that, whenever he told the part about the air force guy being killed by whatever the tube thing was, my dad became very emotional and couldn't continue. The story always ends there.

I didn't realize when first hearing it that my dad's tale not only reflects the native lore, it also deeply resonates with UFO reports. Within the context of Wright-Patterson briefings and Roswell, there is more reason to consider just where my dad's story fits into the picture. But is there anything like what my dad encountered to be found in the annals of UFO reports?

Indeed there is.

The Tube That Stings Like Cactus Needles

The events in my dad's story bear striking resemblance to accounts told by UFO witnesses through the years and for this we must turn to Jacques Vallee, aspects of whose work, though much lauded by many, is still too often rejected for a preferred extraterrestrial conclusion.

Vallee writes in *Revelations: Alien Contact and Human Deception* (Ballantine 1991) about meeting with a man named Robert Scott of the Defense Audi Visual Agency:

*"Scott also told me that he had seen a UFO in **1959** while visiting some land seventy miles of north Phoenix in the company of a psychologist and a photographer. They saw the object for about one minute. Unfortunately, the photographer did not have his camera with him."*

Isn't that interesting? Not only the issue of a photographer not having his camera with him but also the location of the sighting.

Seventy miles roughly due north of Phoenix is the experimental town of Arcosanti and beyond that you get into Sedona, and all which that implies. If you head seventy miles northwest out of Phoenix, you find yourself in desert terrain west of the Prescott National Forest; and the same distance northeast from the city takes you beyond the Mazatzal Mountains into the area where the Kaibab National Forest meets the Apache-Sitgreaves National Forest, about another seventy miles southwest from Winslow. I mention this case because it places a UFO sighting well within short flying proximity to Winslow and in 1959, the year after my dad claims he was there on a UFO rescue and retrieval operation.

But there are other UFO accounts to be considered within our context here. Most specifically the case of police officer Sgt Herbert Schirmer in December 1967.

A fairly standard account, Schirmer was patrolling a rural area around Ashland, Nebraska, when he noticed a bull exhibiting agitated behavior in a corral. While checking things out, Schirmer saw a UFO and encountered the occupants. Later, under hypnosis, Schirmer recalled one of the occupants pointing a 'rodlike' device at him and causing paralysis. Here we have a detail clearly similar to the tubular device that caused lethal paralysis as related in my dad's tale. And there's an even better example.

I previously referred to the Paiutes among those ancient American cultures with beliefs in an underground race. Paiute lore includes a mysterious civilization of 'Hav-musuvs' who fly in 'silvery sky canoes'. This provides another point of regional native history that could resonate with my dad's account, but it's the other device the Hav-Musuvs are known for which most definitely relates: a small ***hand-held tube*** that **stuns** enemies with a sensation likened to stinging cactus needles -- and it ***paralyzes*** them[32]

These incidents, and the lore to which they appear to relate, suggests that my dad's encounter as he told it was not an isolated experience. It clearly demonstrates that in Schirmer we have another reported encounter hundreds of miles away -- and almost a decade later -- in which the witness experienced the same detail of the tube or rod-like device that causes various levels of paralysis. Some might say that the Schirmer encounter validates my dad's story, and I recognize that logic. But there remains more to consider before going quite there and we'll return to it.

So what do we have here?

SUMMARY

I cannot exactly commit to my father having gone to the Arizona site during his TDY at Gunter AFB. Unless my mom is completely off, it appears he wasn't away from Montgomery long enough. The only remaining option is that Arizona happened after he returned to California and got married to my mom, sometime during his last few months of active duty. My mom recalls a period of several days after their wedding during which she stayed with family in Los Angeles while my dad was ostensibly up in Victorville.

My dad's encounter includes elements of local native lore suggesting that he was indeed there. The Schirmer UFO encounter featuring a UFO occupant wielding a tube that paralyzes is a compelling resonance.

But we can't leave Arizona just yet because we haven't looked at that enigmatic man behind the curtain.

It's time to get to know the mysterious Wilson...

CHAPTER FIVE

Ride, Captain, ride
Upon your mystery ship
On your way to a world
That others might have missed...

-- Mike Pinera & Frank Konte

Where to begin?

This chapter covers what is likely some of the most curious and outlandish material in this book, and possibly among the most critical to the situation. It will leave you wondering and it may even make you put the book down to dismiss the whole thing. However, one cannot look at my dad's story without dealing with the most mysterious character at the center this and much else of what I've written about for the past few years.

When my father muttered his name repeatedly while under heavy sedation in the hospital, I thought perhaps that Wilson was the man killed by the mysterious tube device. I was soon to learn otherwise. As mentioned before, as soon as I could get to a phone (this was 1991, remember), I called my closest source, 'Colonel Lundy', and told him what my dad had been saying. I asked, "Who is Wilson?"

The Smartest Man In The World

A few years passed and I finally got the question answered. After earning a commission in the US Air

Force and upon completion of the investigations course, I commenced duty as a Special Agent of the AFOSI in April of 1994[33]. Within a few weeks, Col Lundy had made one of his many unannounced visits to California, where I was stationed in Los Angeles and the subject of Wilson was now appropriate for us to discuss. The colonel's answer to my initial question was this: *"Wilson is the smartest man in the world who you've never heard of. He's a genius."*

Naturally, I asked what he had to do with my dad, a 'crystal house' and the man who was killed. The Colonel waved me on to follow him and we went for one of our many 'walking talks', as I call them. These were more akin to briefings between intelligence agents.

"Wilson was in charge of a project your dad was on when he was in the air force. Yes, it relates to what he's told you regarding that event in New Mexico and what followed. The man who died was different man."

When I asked about the 'crystal house', he would not tell me. "You don't need to know that yet.[34]" He instead instructed me to get my dad to talk more about Wilson.

Those of you who have read my books *Empire of the Wheel 2: Friends From Sonora* and *Origin: The Nineteenth Century Emergence of the 20th Century Breakaway Civilizations* know that I have written about the Wilsons associated with the Sonora Aero Club and the 1890s airship mystery. The Wilson my father encountered is apparently in that family.

How can I claim such a thing? I've written previously on how the Wilson of my dad's tale relates to the Wilsons of the airship mysteries[35]. It is an interesting episode and I will share it here, though I can't yet place exactly when it happened.

My understanding has always been that my dad's first encounter with Wilson was in the underground operation in Arizona. However, I was told by Colonel Lundy that my dad and a couple other guys had been released from the operation because somehow they had pissed off the genius project manager. Looking at it one way, you would assume this would have been the last my dad ever worked on anything of Wilson's and it may have been. Still, there is another project in the mix which I haven't been able to place chronologically.

A Momentary Detour

Among the things my father told me when he was in the hospital the last year of his life was the experience with Wilson in California's Mojave Desert, not far from where I live now. He told me of witnessing a demonstration of an anti-gravity technology device designed by the Wilsons ostensibly for the US Air Force. Yes, that was plural. There were two Wilsons present on that day.

According to my dad, the demonstration was staged in an off-site location he would refer to only as 'Whisper Canyon'. The same Wilson who ran the Arizona recovery operation allegedly demonstrated the device with the participation of an older Wilson who my dad said was known as 'Professor' and described as 'the old man'. He also said the Professor's first name was 'Hiram'.

Clang! Do you hear that loud bell?

That name is certainly a bell ringer for anyone who has sincerely looked at the 1890s airship mystery

because Hiram Wilson is among the Wilsons named by witnesses in the reports of the time. So let's look at the lineage of the airship Wilsons for a moment. Was it the same guy?

The first Wilson identified in the airship mysteries was Tosh Willson of the Sonora Aero Club. The spelling difference could have been an error by the German source of the legend, Charles Dellschau. This 'Willson' had been a member of the club in the mid 1850s. Following him were the 1890s Wilsons, spelled with one L, identified in that late chapter of airship mystery lore. The two are identified as Willard and Hiram and you can find my lengthier analysis of them in Chapter Nine of my last book, *Origin:The Nineteenth Century Emergence of the 20th Century Breakaway Civilizations* (Corvos 2015).

The Hiram my father referred to as 'the old man' or 'Professor Wilson' may likely have been related to these 1890s Wilsons if not possibly *the* Hiram of that duo. In my previous book I calculate how that is indeed possible.

While investigating the members of the Sonora Aero Club, Pete Navarro came across a report in the *Galveston Daily News* possibly of 22 April 1897[36] which discusses a letter allegedly written by someone who had witnessed one of the mystery airships and encountered the pilot and crew. The letter identified the pilot as named Wilson -- but the witness could not be further questioned as he had died in a drowning accident shortly after. The letter-writing witness was described as having studied physics and having a 'scientific turn of mind'. Might he actually have been recruited by Wilson of the airship and not really have died?

The names are not the only point of resonance between the airship mystery Wilsons and my dad's story. There are the specifics of the alleged technology.

A witness named Hopkins reports in April of 1897 that one of the airship Wilsons demonstrated how the anti-gravity apparatus of his airship was activated by the tapping of a 'finger of metal'[37]. This has particularly pertinent meaning to my dad's account in Whisper Canyon in the late 1950s.

If an airship mystery Wilson named 'Hiram' was in his twenties in the mid to late 1890s, by 1958 he would have been in his seventies. That could fit an 'old man' called the 'Professor'. Was it the same Hiram Wilson? Could it have been?

I think so. As demonstrated, he could certainly have still been alive fifty years after first coming on the scene in the 1890s airship mystery. And no matter how many Hirams the naysayers will point out, we're talking about a Hiram Wilson involved in a story of anti-gravity technology who shares the same exact name as another Hiram Wilson identified with a story about anti-gravity technology. Exactly how many Hiram Wilsons associated with anti-gravity tales are there, Mister Pissy?

Personally, my conclusion is that my dad was talking about either the same Hiram Wilson of the airship mystery or more likely that Hiram Wilson's son or nephew, if Hiram the First was actually older than his twenties in the 1890s. You get my point. To shave it finer, recall that Col Lundy told me in the mid 1990s that the Wilson my dad referred to, relative to the underground operation in Arizona, was the most brilliant man I had never heard of, both implying and subsequently stating that said Wilson was still alive. He could very well have been 'Professor' Hiram Wilson's son.

Put 'Professor' Hiram in his twenties in the mid-late 1890s and say he doesn't father a child for

another ten years or more. That means Wilson the younger could have been born as late as 1910 or after, likely before 1920. Thus in 1958, he would have been just shy of fifty and by 1996 in his eighties but still alive. Here's the deal: I can't be much off on the early end of the younger Wilson's birth and if I'm wrong on the later end, that makes it even more possible that he was still alive in the 1990s.

And we haven't even yet considered the possibility that Wilson the younger was a nephew or even a grandson of the actual 1890s Wilson thus born later than proposed. You see where I'm going with this and I'll not belabor the point more than I already have. I don't know the exact relation but I'm convinced my dad's Wilson would logically be one of the 'airship' anti-gravity Wilson clan.

The Flying Squares

So there was my dad in 'Whisper Canyon', present for a demonstration of what he referred to as a 'flying square', a large platform that was equipped with some sort of anti-gravity technology that the Wilsons supposedly controlled via a hand-held box and a small hammer.

The 'flying square' was large but my dad didn't specify the exact dimensions, only that it was sufficiently sized for cargo and personnel. From one corner of this platform there protruded a metal tab, or 'finger', which when tapped by Wilson activated the platform. Sound familiar?

My dad said that when Wilson tapped the small metal tab on one corner of the square platform the platform then floated a few inches off the ground. In the 1890s account, the pilot Wilson demonstrates the airship propulsion mechanism and the tapping of a small finger (or tab) of metal activates the machinery. This is looking like the same basic technology so why not the same Wilson(s)?

Almost sixty years later, 'Professor' Hiram Wilson used controls on the hand-held box, specifically a sliding knob, to raise the platform up into the sky and bring it back down again. I kid you not, this is what my dad told me that he witnessed. He said the platform could be raised to high altitudes so that materiel and personnel could be transferred to or from aircraft or, presumably, spacecraft. My dad said he saw this himself. He did not say what subsequently happened with this technology.

What nags me is when did this demonstration happen? Prior to his 1958 TDY to Gunter AFB? Did it happen after his return with my mom, while she was in Los Angeles? If perhaps it happened priot to the alleged 'training' TDY to Gunter, then what exactly was my dad involved in and for how long? [38]

Another question that intrigues the hell out of me is where exactly is Whisper Canyon? My dad gave me a general location but I am not going to reveal that in this book as I am still pursuing it myself. Yes, it is in Southern California, in San Bernardino County. With what I've written about telluric current 'ley lines', you can imagine how I hope to find this canyon.

Interestingly, a few years ago in *UFO Magazine*, there was an article about flying platforms reported by UFO witnesses[39]. Could this be a later generation of the same technology demonstrated decades prior by the Wilsons?

That is all I know of the flying platform episode involving the Wilsons, so we'll now return to the

Arizona operation in 1958.

Back Down The Rabbit Hole

I was told by Colonel Lundy that Wilson (the younger) was the man in charge of the recovery/retrieval operation deployed to assist the underground civilization to which the missing pilot belonged. I was not told whether Wilson was himself in the military but he certainly could have been. He didn't need to be, though. As a civilian in a top scientific position for the US government, Wilson could still very well have been running the operation.

I remember that the first time, other than with Colonel Lundy or my dad, that I spoke to anyone about Wilson was with Joseph P. Farrell.

It was very late one night in Kempton, Illinois, and we were staying at one of David Hatcher Childress' World Explorer Club houses during a conference weekend in 2004. Dorothy Murdoch was with us that night and we had been discussing stuff I can't entirely recall. It's the Wilson discussion I can't forget.

In a hushed tone I asked Joseph if he'd ever heard of Wilson. Dorothy noticed his somewhat piqued reaction to the question. His reply I will never forget: "In the morning, run -- don't walk -- to David's bookstore and get the novel *Genesis* by Harbinson. I believe there is only one copy remaining on the shelf."

Yes, Joseph had heard of Wilson. We talked briefly about him and then moved on to something else. I indeed purchased the final copy of Harbinson's novel from the AUP shelf, though I didn't read it until after returning home to California.

Harbinson's Wilson was certainly inspired by the airship mysteries of the 1890s, including the Iowa birthplace, though he is fictionalized 'legendary' person to begin with so I tend to greatly differ in opinion with the exact characterization. However, there Wilson is in the milieu of Nazi survival and saucer lore, a twentieth century mad genius who is certainly contemporary with the Wilson my dad said he encountered. This is what impresses me most with Harbinson's character because I'm left with the suspicion that the author (or someone he knew) had heard firsthand accounts of the same man. Or Harbinson's source possibly knew the real Wilson, though I still think Harbinson took wild creative license for the purpose of drama.[40]

But most intriguing about Harbinson's book to me are other subtle hints that my dad's story may have legs. Chapter One begins at 'Winslow Air Base' in Arizona. One character in the book who had worked with ATIC at Wright-Patterson cites a UFO sighting over Maxwell AFB in Montgomery and again refers to Maxwell in reference to Project Blue Book. Just as resonant with my dad's tale is when one of Harbinson's characters describes another character's reluctance: *"...There's a point in his narrative beyond which he refuses to go. That point, obviously, is the actual incident that kicked him off, but he just doesn't want to face up to it."*[41]

I have to wonder just what Harbinson learned about this whole thing.

SUMMARY

That a mysterious Wilson is on the stage of this story is one of its most significant points. I've tried identifying the Wilson of my dad's tale but the only possibility I turned up was the Wilson discussed in *Origin*, i.e. the mystery airship lore. I sincerely doubt that my father had ever read the airship mystery literature and learned of Wilson, certainly not prior to his 1991 hospitalization during which he first mentioned the man.

But was Wilson real?

Colonel Lundy said he was and his description of Wilson would essentially match what I would subsequently learn when a decade later I would read the airship mystery literature for the first time.

So that's what I know of this enigmatic fellow who stands just beyond the edge of light where a relative few have encountered him. Is there a younger Wilson waiting to emerge onto on the scene?

Let's press on...

CHAPTER SIX

Into the distance a ribbon of black
Stretched to the point of no turning back...

-- David Gilmour, Anthony Moore
Bob Ezrin, Jon Carin

One element of my dad's adventure into weirdland involves his claim to have had flight training directly associated to the underground Arizona project. This raises a question of just how big the subterranean realm may be. Scientific authorities tell us there are no such places, at least not as referred to by my dad and other anecdotal witnesses. Later on I can better discuss in measurable means the subterranean construction that has gone on down there. For now, my dad said there were huge areas under the surface of the planet.

Were they big enough to fly aircraft down there?

Flight Training & Technology Transfer

I was told by my dad that the Arizona situation involved technology transfer. A small-frame aircraft that he called the 'Zipper' was, according to him, deployed underground to be exchanged with the other civilization for whatever their end of the agreement might have been. However, I have in a previous chapter already addressed the issue of the moniker 'Zipper' actually belonging to the F-104 so this mysterious little craft described by my dad will have to remain nameless.

According to my dad, this small craft was not the only thing flown around down below. He also stated that small helicopters were flown in the subterranean spaces that were apparently vast enough to accommodate the use of the small aircraft. My dad said he had been trained to fly these small helicopters and that was part of what he and some of his colleagues were doing on this deeply classified operation.

Here we come to a point that stuck with me during the analysis of the time line of events regarding my dad's TDY to Alabama.

Nothing in my dad's DD214 reveals flight training of any kind. But that does not necessarily mean it didn't happen. Nothing in his DD214 reveals any specific details of anything he did in his described duties, as nothing in my DD214 reveals the specifics of my cases or counterespionage operations, as nothing in anyone's DD214 reveals such specific details of what they did. You get the point. It's not the discharge paper that tells the whole story, even if you know how to read between the lines on it. However, the full personnel training record can be more useful in that regard if you can get your hands on it.

As of this moment, I am still waiting for a response to a request for my dad's personnel records file or at least a copy. I'm not holding my breath. My experience is that anything sufficiently classified will not be released in a personnel records request and, if my dad's story has any truth, it would have a need-to-know status. But we may yet have clues enough to speculate.

Because there is no available record of when my father departed George AFB to go to Gunter AFB, we have no idea what may have occurred along the way. Last I checked, when you drive from Victorville, California, to Montgomery, Alabama, along old Route 66, you go through a hunk of Texas. And in 1958, US Air Force helicopter flight training was conducted in Texas, at Randolph AFB.

That means simply that my dad could -- not necessarily did, but indeed *could* -- have received helicopter flight training prior to continuing on to Alabama. Thus the part of his story about flying those small helicopters while in Arizona could have some nugget of fact buried in there.

And what of those small helicopters?

The Huskie

Designed in 1947 by German engineer Anton Flettner, the HTK-1 'Huskie' first flew that same year as a US Navy prototype and was subsequently made operational[42]. The Huskie utilized a counter-rotating rotor arrangement and used servo flaps for control. It did not have a tail rotor. The small helicopter was only 25 feet long, 17 feet high, and weighed under 10,000lbs. It was known for its steady hovering capability. All of these specifications suggest ideal suitability in relatively small areas -- like subterranean cavities perhaps?

After 1954, the US Air Force employed the Huskie, version H-43A, as a **search and rescue** operation aircraft[43]. It seated two pilots and two rescue personnel. In the following decade, the USAF Huskies flew more search and rescue missions during the Vietnam war than all other aircraft combined because of its renowned hovering capability. In 1958, USAF Huskie pilots were trained at Randolph AFB in Texas until July when the training moved to Stead AFB in Reno, Nevada.

So do we have corroboration? My dad always said he had received some flight training and in the end identified it as small frame helicopter training. The Huskie fits that bill. My dad also linked this training -- as did my source Colonel Lundy -- to his mysterious Arizona episode, claiming to have flown the little helicopters in the subterranean regions. Again, the Huskie was suitable for that, certainly attributable to its hovering capability that would have been essential in tight quarters. The Huskie was used for search and rescue, again a bingo. Was my dad trained to fly the Huskie?

I cannot for certain answer that question but I can firmly say that it was indeed possible. Not expected in Montgomery until 30 June, that means helicopter flight training was still schooled at Randolph AFB in Texas, on the road between George AFB and Alabama. At the time, USAF helicopter pilots received 30 hours of flight training, plus whatever ground school was required. It should also be pointed that I have no idea what route my dad took to Alabama thus he could very well have taken a more direct route to Randolph AFB than 66[44]

Not knowing how long my dad was away from George AFB that summer of 1958, it must be considered *possible* that he indeed received helicopter pilot training but I must admit I have a remaining spot of difficulty with this part of his story.

That there is zero mention of this on his DD214 strongly points to a conclusion that it did not happen, my prior statement regarding what is and isn't specified on a DD214 notwithstanding. However, my dad was indeed involved in early USAF space science. If said training were directly associated with a space program classified sufficiently high enough, it is very possible that any such training would not be part of his public record, and certainly never on a DD214. If he did screw up somehow and got canned from the operation by its alleged executive, a special personnel training record would get buried if not destroyed. I remind the reader that the United States does not have a 50-year rule like other nations: classified information remains so until deemed otherwise by a proper authority.

Having illustrated that my father *could* have indeed received helicopter flight training on the way to Gunter AFB, especially on a helicopter uniquely suited to exactly what he described it was used for, we can return to the technology transfer question as it also allegedly involved a small aircraft[45]

What Could We Possibly Offer?

What exactly was this technology deal based on? My dad claimed it was arranged in exchange for our assistance with search and rescue of their lost pilot. That's what we offered in assistance but what could we have that the other civilization, presuming it was there and possessed whatever was so special about their downed craft, would want?

This is where many people make the hilariously ignorant mistake of assuming things about civilizations with advanced flying machines. It could be that this particular hidden civilization that *presumably* possessed advanced propulsion flying machines might not have been quite so comprehensively more advanced than us.

I laugh when I hear anyone say that an ET civilization possessed of advanced technology would no longer have an interest in war. I just recently heard a respected UFO researcher/author say essentially those exact words and I laughed out loud as I turned off the radio. This ridiculous assumption is repeatedly embraced by and parroted in the alternative research media community. It's one of the dumbest examples of wishful thinking I've ever heard. It is simply childish.

Personally, I'm convinced that whoever is out there is likely very little different from us. For the most part they may prefer to avoid war but are probably just as willing and ready to engage if necessary, and they certainly want to be prepared to deal with us 'lesser and hostile brutes' on our own 'unworthy' terms. Thus do I say that any argument for the mysterious hidden civilization living in the subterranean realm necessarily being more advanced than us in every way simply because they fly an anti-gravity craft (*IF* they do) is bullshit. And in a book like this, which for some people is itself going be considered bullshit, you know I must be serious.

It's quite possible they had something we would like and vice versa. That would explain any tech transfer aspect to the operation that I was told was involved. And if tech transfer was involved, then it makes sense if a member of the airship anti-gravity genius Wilson clan was there. Why not? He was allegedly our anti-gravity guy.

For the record, my duties as an AFOSI agent assigned to counterespionage operations required daily exposure to defense technology of the USAF. There is another section in the organization whose specific full time job is to protect the most advanced Air Force technology and they do a hell of a job. Any involvement with such stuff gives one a familiarity with the basics of how the secret technology world works, especially within a military context. It also exposes one to varying degrees of how advanced our defense technology actually is or may be.

In my professional experience, I can honestly say that nothing my dad told me about the technology he witnessed, or about the mysterious Wilson, is out of the realm of possibility -- at all.

SUMMARY

In this chapter I have probably put to rest my dad's 'Zipper' reference which was likely a result of his injuries prior to using the moniker.

However, I am confident that the 'Huskie' helicopter could have been used in a vast subterranean cavity per the specifications and capabilities of the H-43A -- and we know it is fact that the USAF was using this particular aircraft at the time my dad claimed to have received helicopter training and flew one underground. This is as important a point as is Wilson's presence in the story, maybe even more so. The Huskie is documented history and you can go see one in a museum somewhere.

I have also considered that the technology transfer aspect my dad told me about suggests something very down-to-earth about the mysterious underground people: That they would have entered into such an agreement to begin with implies some level of parity of limits with our own technology. If this was not the case, what did we have to meet our end of the obligation?

There is a disturbing possibility.

Some might say that this scenario could represent the rumored deal in which we received advanced technology and the Others were given license to abduct our people.

There may indeed be something to it...

CHAPTER SEVEN

We come from the land of the ice and snow
From the midnight sun where the hot springs flow
How soft your fields so green
Can whisper tales of gore
Of how we calmed the tides of war
We are your overlords...
-- Jimmy Page & Robert Plant

So who were these hidden people whose pilot crashed in eastern Arizona in 1958? Was it the blind ones who killed the man on the patrol with my father? The way my dad tells the story, it's difficult to determine, however UFO reports may offer clarification.

When I first read the works of Jacques Vallee several years ago, I could not dismiss the stunning likeness between some of the key incidents he presents and certain details of my father's tale.

In *Dimensions: A Casebook of Alien Contact* (1988), *Revelations: Alien Contact and Human Deception* (1991), and the classic book which preceded them, *Passport To Magonia: On UFOs, Folklore, and Parallel Worlds* (1969.1993), Jacques Vallee presents his initial observation and repeated findings that UFO encounters with supposed extraterrestrials were stunningly comparable to historical encounters with fairies and other interdimensional beings of popular folklore.

Many researchers refer to this category of being as 'ultraterrestrial' to distinguish them as cohabitants with us in this world, as opposed to beings from other planets. These cohabitants sometimes live hidden in the recesses of the Earth or sometimes they are thought to inhabit a parallel plane or even in our same space but on a different vibration of a common physical reality spectrum. Vallee, as of publication of those identified works, appeared to have preferred the suggestion of an ultraterrestrial explanation for the UFO cases he studied[46]. *"Although I am among those who believe that UFOs are real physical objects, I do not think they are extraterrestrial in the ordinary sense of the term. In my view they present an exciting challenge to our concept of reality itself."*[47]

In *Passport To Magonia*, Vallee makes a few propositions based upon certain commonly reported details. For the purpose of his analysis, Vallee refers to reports as 'rumors' and he says the following: *"When the underlying archetypes are extracted from these rumors (reports), the saucer myth is seen to coincide to a remarkable degree with the fairy-faith of Celtic countries, the observations of the scholars of past ages, and the widespread belief among all peoples concerning entities whose physical and psychological descriptions place them in the same category as the present day ufonauts."*

Vallee points out that in the reports prior to the popularization of the big headed grey alien, and in some since, the occupants or pilots could be classified into mostly two common groups, though not including the airship humans or Nordics: Dark hairy dwarfs virtually identical to gnomes, complete with deep gruff voices; or taller 'sylphs' with smooth 'silvery' voices. It should be noted that Vallee does report this latter group as having larger heads[48] but they are regarded as human in appearance and not described at all like the popular 'greys' that many people assume populate all UFO encounters of the third kind. How many people getting their information about UFOs from current ET-centric media have ever heard of these two types which Vallee identifies? Few to none.

Vallee writes: *"Much can be accomplished, however, once it is realized that the observational material on hand since World War II -- the twenty thousand or so clear-cut, dated reports of UFOs in official and private files -- is nothing but a resurgence of a deep stream in human culture known in older times under various other names."*[49]

It is a fascinating perspective from which to view UFO encounters and I strongly recommend the reader refer to all of Vallee's work. It also happens to resonate strongly with my dad's tale so let's look at some specific cases that reflect the 'fairy' folklore theme.

The Others

"The modern global belief in flying saucers and their occupants is identical to an earlier belief in the fairy faith. The entities

described as the pilots of the craft are indistinguishable from the elves, sylphs and lutins of the Middle Ages. Through the observations of unidentified flying objects, we are concerned with an agency our ancestors knew well and regarded with terror: we are prying into the affairs of the Secret Commonwealth." says Jacques Vallee in *Passport To Magonia*.

First let us clarify that fairy beings were not always little winged sprites flitting around and enchanting everyone like a good-natured Tinkerbell. The fairy folk were taller yet otherwise basically indistinguishable from humans much of the time. They were also formidable in battle, reputed to be unforgiving combatants who vanquished resistance or, in some cases, were welcomed with open arms from the moment they arrived in our world. The image of glittery little butterfly people flitting around and giggling is the result of centuries of social conditioning specifically following the defeat of the Tuatha de Danann.

Who were the Tuatha de Danann? I have written about them before and will return to them here shortly. For now, let's look at a few cases, some which resemble details from my dad's encounter with the underground people, and then I'll share some details about this mysterious lost race of people which may raise your eyebrows.

In October of 1954, a miner working in France happened upon a strange fellow: small, of robustly solid stature, and quite hairy all over. The miner estimated this fellow's height to be about four feet. He had a big head, bulging eyes, a wide flat nose and thick red lips. This strange man seemed to have disappeared before the miner thought to engage him. About a week later, near Como, Italy, a similar man of four feet tall was encountered but this time the strange man was wearing a 'luminous suit' and when the witness attempted to approach him, the strange man rose from the ground and swiftly departed. The witness heard a distinct 'whirring' sound as the little being flew off.[50]

Then there is the vintage case of Joe Simonton, the Wisconsin chicken farmer who, in 1961, encountered a silver-colored saucer and the three occupants manning it.[51]

There were three of them and they wore black uniforms. Estimated to be a not so tall five feet, these men were clean shaven and swarthy, reportedly 'resembling Italians'. Simonton reported that one of the men requested water and another man was cooking on a grill of sorts. This man gave the farmer three cookies, often referred to as 'pancakes' in popular UFO literature and media. Subsequent analysis by the USAF showed the cookies, or pancakes, to be composed of simple buckwheat hulls, hydrogenated fat, starch, soy beans and wheat bran -- ordinary pancake ingredients. For all intents and purposes, Simonton's encounter seemed to be with humans and their very Earth-like technology. [52]

What makes the Simonton case so interesting here is its uncanny resemblance to fairy folklore. According to classic fairy literature and the research of W.A. Evans-Wentz, if a visitor or abductee to the fairy realm tastes their food while in their custody, he may not come back and might just become one of them[53]. Wentz also reported an Irish source who said the fairy folk eat fresh meat, drink pure water, and do *not eat salt*. Quite interesting when you recall Simonton being asked for water. And the cookies he was given? It is curious indeed that the USAF analysis did not find a trace of salt[54].

There is another interesting bit from the fairy lore casting a shimmering light on the Simonton case. It is the folk tale of the poor farming woman in France whose buckwheat field was ruined by the cow of the fairy folk who lived in a nearby cave. To make it up to her, the fairy folk began to supply her with

endless amounts of buckwheat cakes[55], requiring only that she not tell anyone of their deal. Of course, human nature being what it is, the woman told someone and the deal was soon off when the fairy folk learned of her violation. No more buckwheat cakes for her. Joe Simonton was given three buckwheat cookies. Is there a connection?

There might very well be and we'll return to this later in the book. The obvious point is that we are left to suspect Joe Simonton had actually encountered the fairy folk, albeit described in a contemporary context. Is that the big secret of the UFOs? Were the fairy folk simply misinterpreted ETs? Or are the ETs misinterpreted fairy folk?

Let's look another UFO story reflective of fairy lore, this one with potentially dark implications and more.

Gerry Irwin

This is one of my favorites[56].

In February of 1959, Private First Class Gerry Irwin was en route to Fort Bliss in El Paso, Texas, after spending time on leave in Idaho. Just a few miles outside of Cedar City, Utah, PFC Irwin noticed a strange glow in the distance which he feared may have been an airplane crash.

Parking his car on the side of the road, with a note telling passing motorists what he was doing and requesting someone call the police, Irwin went off toward the light with the idea in mind that he could help any crash survivors, if need be. A game warden happened along and found Irwin's note scrawled on the car. A search party was gathered and an hour and a half later they found Private Irwin unconscious. No sign of any plane crash was found.

Irwin was taken to a local hospital and found to have normal vital signs -- the doctors just simply could not wake him. When he did finally wake up, Irwin said he felt fine. His only concern was that he had apparently lost his jacket. Irwin was flown to Fort Bliss, his car presumably transported by the army, and observed in the base hospital there for four days. Irwin was cleared and returned to duty, though his security clearance was revoked.

The mystery had only begun. Irwin passed out several days later while walking across the base. He fainted again in downtown El Paso just days after that episode and this time was taken immediately to a hospital. When Irwin woke up he asked if there were any survivors. Apparently he had to be told what the date was because he thought it was still the February night that he was found off the road in Utah looking for a plane crash[57].

Irwin was again put under psychiatric observation at the Army hospital on Fort Bliss, this time for an entire month, and was again found to be perfectly normal. He was released from the hospital on 17 April 1959.

On 18 April, PFC Irwin left Fort Bliss without leave and traveled via bus back to Cedar City, Utah. Returning to the same spot where he said he had seen the strange lighted object he thought might be a crashed plane, Irwin continued onward through the hills and came to the spot where his missing coat lay. Curiously, there was a pencil placed in one of the buttonholes and slip of paper wound tightly around it. For some unknown reason, Irwin burned the paper and immediately emerged from the trance which had led him back to the spot. He turned himself in to the local sheriff and was taken back to Fort Bliss and again put under observation.

What was written on the slip of paper? The case details do not answer that question.

Once again, Irwin was found to be perfectly normal, but this time the Inspector General ordered yet another examination and Irwin was readmitted to the Army hospital on base in July of that year. And yet *again* they found nothing wrong with him. What were the Army psychiatrists so keen on finding?

They might never have found it and we may never know what exactly they were looking for because on 1 August 1959, PFC Gerry Irwin went AWOL.

He was never seen again.

What exactly was going on in the Irwin case?

I have some ideas but I'm saving that for a later chapter. I'll just say for now that a few things in this case stand out to me, things that were not likely considered through the usual ET UFO filter.

What, you ask, does the Gerry Irwin case have to do with fairy lore?

A lot.

The strange lights that first drew Irwin from his path, his repeated passing out and falling into a deep but otherwise uneventful sleep, and his ultimate disappearance. Each one of these facts of the Irwin case can be found in encounters between humans and fairy folk.

Who might PFC Irwin have met on that Utah highway that first night?

The Tuatha de Danann

Considered a divine race of beings, the Tuatha came from the sky in some versions of the legend, though some merely insinuate an unnamed homeland from which they fled. Still others claim they came from cities they had built in South America[58]. The Tuatha-back-from-the-Americas theory suggests the lore of the mysterious Quetzalcoatl and Viracocha who reportedly arrived in the ancient Americas from an eastern point across the sea and eventually returned to their homeland. Their exact origin remains a mystery.

With the Tuatha de Danann, according to Christopher Knight and Robert Lomas in *Uriel's Machine: Uncovering the Secrets of Stonehenge, Noah's Flood and the Dawn of Civilization* (Fair Winds, 1999/2001), came advanced knowledge and a major step forward in technology for those who embraced them and even those conquered by them. It is said that they brought four great treasures from their four greatest cities: the Sword, the Spear, the Magic Cauldron and the Stone of Destiny. Who were these people and why are

we discussing them?

'Tuatha de Danann' is interpreted to mean 'Children of the Goddess Anu'. Sometimes called 'Ana' or 'Danu', she is also known as 'Saint Brigit', for those who like their deities syncretized. Anu has also been interpreted to mean 'the waters of heaven or space' which is what the *Book of the Dun Cow* says about the original homeland location of the Tuatha. It is interesting to note that their rivals, the Fomorians, were reputed to have also come from the heavens and were described as terrible misshapen giants associated with being under the sea after their arrival on Earth.[59]

Readers of my *Empire of the Wheel 3: The Nameless Ones* and *Origin* should see the NYMZA fingerprint in the Fomorians. Let us proceed with the Tuatha as their lore hints a presence in my father's story.

It is the Tuatha de Danann about whom most of the fairy lore has been documented. It is within this lore we begin to see a direct association in some of the details of my father's strange encounter beginning with the subterranean aspect. When the Tuatha were defeated, according to the literature, they fled to the underworld, literally going *underground*.

Bruce Rux, in *Architects of the Underworld: Unriddling Atlantis, Anomalies of Mars and the Mystery of the Sphinx* (Frog, Ltd; 1996) hits the pertinent points: *"They have their sacred spaces and expect to be left alone there -- any wayfarer into their territory may be harassed or toyed with for their amusement, but they almost always leave their visitors with some benefit or present for their trouble, provided they accept their 'initiation' with a modicum of good grace."* (Pgs 351-352)

This is very interesting for here we have in the Tuatha almost exactly what my dad said about the 'hidden race' that he encountered: he said they wanted nothing to do with us, preferred to be left alone in their underground civilization. The aspect of being harassed or toyed with may be seen in the many quirky aspects of UFO encounters discussed in the works of Vallee and the reward 'for their trouble' might explain the pancakes Joe Simonton received or the exchange of knowledge my dad claimed to have occurred with the US Air Force.

It is what Rux writes of the Tuatha after the above that also eerily resonates with our discussion thus far: *"They reserve the rarely exercised right to take mortals of their choosing away with them -- permanently."* (Rux, PG 352).

Rux points out: *"Abduction is a constant element in all tales of the Fairy Folk"* They switch our newborn infants for their own and their women abduct our men to be their mates. Again we have here an obvious resonance with our modern stories of ETs stealing babies and abducted males enjoying sexual trysts with alien vixens. But Rux points out another little aspect of encounters with the underworld folk that starkly resembles both the aforementioned Gerry Irwin case, as well as an aspect of my dad's experience.

According to Rux, the underground Tuatha 'fairy folk' have the power to erase the memories of those who have visited their realm. *"No one who returns from Fairyland can remember what happened there."*

If they return.

Recall that Gerry Irwin would pass out and lose time, never describing where he ended up while he was missing. Irwin would wake and think it was the moment prior to passing out but we have no explanation for where he was exactly or what he was doing while missing -- because *he could not remember it himself*. And then came his final disappearance.

'They reserve the rarely exercised right to take mortals of their choosing away with them -- permanently...'

And of my father?

Recall what I've said about his story ending with the encounter in which another man was killed by the person with the tube. My dad would become very emotional and go no further -- as if he couldn't remember anything further, perhaps?

"The mind of a person coming out of Fairy Land is usually blank as to what has been seen and done there." wrote Walter Evans-Wentz in *The Fairy Faith in Celtic Countries.*

What of that tube?

According to lore, a 'magical' rod was a talisman used to effect transport back and forth between our world and the 'fairy realm'. Hermes carries a rod in one hand which he uses to 'spellbind' humans[60]. Might this 'magical rod' be the same device as the tube my dad reported in his story?

Let us not dismiss the native Paiute legend of the American Southwest about the mysterious Hav-Musuvs who flew 'sky canoes' and wielded the tube that paralyzes[61] -- placing this device in the ancient mythology of the region where events discussed in this book are supposed to have happened.

At this point in the analysis, we can reasonably suggest there is evidence for mysterious tube-wielding 'others' in subterranean Arizona in 1958, if we choose.

With the Hav-Musuvs in mind, was the underground search and rescue project my father described actually a venture into the subterranean realm of the long ago Tuatha de Danann? Might it have been the result of an approach by our government to establish diplomatic and practical alliance relations with the Tuatha? How nutty is it that I'm actually entertaining that question?

I will return to a previously quoted statement by Rux because of its significant resonance with my dad's story: *"The government began investigating the possibility that* ***the race behind the unknown spacecraft was one parallel to our own****, and* ***connected to human life from antiquity, no later than 1958****."* (Rux, Pg 418)

Rux is saying that the by 1958 the US government was considering the possibility that another group of beings linked to us in antiquity was the origin of the 'unknown' spaceraft, i.e. Roswell.

Says Jacques Vallee of the whole phenomenon of UFOS and their occupants: *"It may have been with us, in one form or another, as long as the human race has existed on this planet."*[62]

Are they human? Are they possessed of a technology so asymmetrical to our own that they appeared as magical beings? Are they the Tuatha de Danann?

In the very year of my dad claims his encounter with humans from a civilization that parted from our own in ancient times, and who are supposedly the answer to the Roswell crash mystery, Rux says was indeed the case.

I can't find what Rux is referring to in his intriguing statement about 1958, other than a loosely interpreted reference to the Robertson Panel and the Brookings Report which acknowledge a possibility of ancient relics on the Moon and Mars. The latter report is dated 1960 so perhaps this is

what Rux means.

Rux published his book in 1996. My dad was telling me his story as far back as the 1970s with the most resonant of details starting five years before Rux' book. Could my father have read the material from Rux' book elsewhere and been pulling my leg for decades? Yes, he could have, but I have nothing to point to in his life or known reading habits to suggest it.

It may be that what my dad claimed about his subterranean experience in 1958 is the event, or is among events in that year, which motivated said investigation to which Rux refers.

I don't think my father read the Rux book or got the details of his story from Rux' sources. There is another possibility which the patient reader will learn in the second part of this book. Is there any evidence that anyone associated with the US military ever even hinted at a scenario such as my dad or author Rux claimed?

We Have Had Help

Hermann Oberth, German astronautics expert who became instrumental in American space technology, is quoted as saying in 1974 the following: *"We cannot take the credit for our record advancement in certain scientific fields alone; we have had help."*[63]

When Oberth was asked from whom the help came, he replied: *"The people from other worlds."*

Then there is Werner von Braun who we are told said -- in 1959: *"We find ourselves faced by powers which are far stronger than we had hitherto assumed, and whose base is at present unknown to us. More I cannot say at present. We are now engaged in entering into closer contact with those powers, and in six or nine months' time it may be possible to speak with more precision on the matter."*[64]

Is what Von Braun said in 1959 a clue to what Rux refers to?

Oberth is quoted that we had help and just the year after my dad's story happened, Von Braun is quoted likewise, so much as saying that we are in some sort of diplomatic type situation with another party more powerful than us. These quotes are usually repeated as pretty compelling evidence of some sort of agreement between the US government and an extraterrestrial civilization, though it is rarely (if ever) pointed out that Von Braun's statement may not necessarily mean extraterrestrial and Oberth's comment could just as easily mean the hidden civilization, their subterranean realm being the 'other world'.

The question is did Oberth and Von Braun really say this?

I haven't yet found the evidence that they did not. That Von Braun's statement was supposedly made in 1959 cannot be dismissed within the context of discussion in this book. My dad claimed we made contact with the 'other world' by 1958 and just the following year the leading scientist of the US space program is making a statement about an unidentified party more powerful than us. What are we supposed to think?

Could the Tuatha de Danann, the Children of the Goddess Anu, be that powerful force from the 'other world' that Oberth and Von Braun referred to?

Of course they could. What is more certain, based on everything we've considered so far, is that something appears to have been going on in the late 1950s that has left people with a bunch of curious reasons to wonder if the US military had indeed made contact with people from another world.

SUMMARY

I have demonstrated that material from human folklore and modern UFO history resonates with my father's story and suggests an alternative but no less astonishing possibility than the popular ET assumption. Respected scientist and scholar Jacques Vallee has made multiple statements over the years in support of this alternative.

We have taken specific notice of the Tuatha de Danann, a race of mysterious people spoken of in folklore yet showing no apparent sign of being among us today.

The Tuatha de Danann are associated with objects and abilities and an abode suspiciously similar to native mythology in the very region where my father says he encountered like people.

Some of the specifics of my father's encounter with the underground people are identical to the folklore, as are independent UFO reports like Schirmer and the mysterious case of Gerry Irwin.

One of the very talents of the mysterious folkloric beings is blocking or erasing the memory of anyone who visits their realm. This is reflected in my father's tale in how he told it. There are conspicuous gaps in his telling.

Is This All There Is?

I could have ended this book here, concluding that enough circumstantial evidence exists to claim my father's story inarguable and somewhat ironically make my contribution to the popular and prevailing general theory of ufology, that the answer must indeed be not of this world.

Up to this point, I have introduced the reader to my dad's strange episode and we have looked at some extraordinary (even fantastic) data that would appear to confirm the story as told. We have also considered historical and documented facts. However, I have yet to present all that there is relative to this situation because I wanted to present my dad's story in the only way I knew and interpreted it up until now.

Before you read further, I will reconfirm that I do not reject the existence of extraterrestrials. On the contrary, I think the foolish position is to expect irrefutable proof before seriously considering that they likely exist. My personal opinion is that extraterrestrials do exist, have often come to this planet and probably still do.

But extraterrestrials do not satisfactorily explain my dad's story. I am even more intrigued with the idea of the lost race of the Secret Commonwealth discussed by Jacques Vallee and Walter Evans-Wentz before him. I am also personally convinced that, like ETs, they do exist, in one way or another.

In the background of my father's story -- and much of UFO related lore since WW2 -- there lurks a giant shadow over everything discussed so far in this book (and in my others). Because what casts this shadow bears *direct* and *definitive* impact upon my dad's story, it cannot be dismissed as it

usually is by the true believers of that other popular paradigm.

As intriguing and thrilling as the strange tale of Staff Sgt Charles Bosley may indeed be, the time has come to tell the rest of the tale...

CHAPTER EIGHT

Fly me to the Moon
Let me play among the stars
Let me see what spring is like
On Jupiter and Mars
In other words, hold my hand...
-- Bart Howard

It really begins with the story of aviation medicine for therein lie the deepest secrets of the military industrial complex which emerged following World War Two.

I'll forego the usual romanticized narrative about man and flight, the romance of aviation. We've all heard it ad nauseum and Tom Wolfe did it best anyway. Suffice it to say that in the years leading up to the Second World War, all the leading nations of the world were striving to go higher and faster than anyone else. In the background of this effort was a somewhat veiled pursuit of manned spaceflight. The United States was very much involved in this pursuit especially where military air power was concerned, in spite of early misgivings between military branches.

Now one might react to the subject of aviation medicine with a yawning disinterest. After all, pilots in screaming jets racing to the stars are a much more exciting image than military personnel in white coats with needles and enema probes. However, as I learned while working on this book, aviation medicine was at the heart of some mad pursuits of dark science and appears to have been driving one of the most notorious government programs in history.

For America, it began with Major General Harry Armstrong, USAF.

Born in South Dakota in 1899, Harry Armstong served in the Marine Corps during WW1 before earning his medical degree from the University of Louisville. During the war, the US Army had established the Air Service Medical Research Laboratory at Hazelhurst, Long Island, which was eventually combined with the School for Flight Surgeons. Armstrong had already been attending the joint programs of these schools for over a year by the time they combined to form the School of Aviation Medicine in November, 1922.[65]

Following assignment as a US Army Air Corps flight surgeon in 1931, Armstrong would establish the Aero-Medical Laboratory at Wright Field in Ohio four years later. During his five-year assignment running the Laboratory, he earned his master of science degree at the University of Cincinnati and a master of arts from the University of Toronto. After a short assignment in London, Armstrong went to Randolph Field in Texas to establish a research laboratory for the School of Aviation Medicine until war broke out again and he was sent to the European theater to eventually become chief flight surgeon of the Eighth Army. That was how he ended up chief surgeon in the Air Division in the office of the Military Government for Germany in Berlin after the war. [66]

But Harry Armstrong was more than his official US Air Force biography. He was a dedicated research scientist who published 105 scientific papers in aerospace medicine. He is known for discovering the 'Armstrong Limit', the altitude at which water begins to boil at the temperature of the human body. He led America's scientific accomplishments in protecting air crews from the extremes of high altitude, as well as the development of improved oxygen delivery during his time running the Laboratory. Armstrong was renowned for being the first flight surgeon to have made a free fall parachute jump but it was what he did while at Wright Field in 1934 that bears first impact on our story.[67]

Harry Armstrong was appointed director of the Physiological Research Unit and here he commandeered the single old US Army iron low pressure chamber from which he developed the Air Corps first altitude chambers. Armstrong was essentially the creator of the physiological training division of the USAF which my father would be assigned.[68] Certain significant events would occur between Armstrong's pioneer trailblazing at Wright Field and my dad's enlistment.

In 1937, then Captain Armstrong attended the first international convention of the Aero Medical Association hosted in at the Waldorf-Astoria Hotel in New York. It was at this conference Armstrong would meet Dr. Hubertus Strughold, his counterpart in Germany for the Luftwaffe. The two doctors admired each other's work and became friendly from the start.[69]

There was much for Armstrong to admire in Strughold, for the German doctor had accomplished his own exploits in aviation medical science as well. From the lifelong impact that seeing Halley's Comet had on him to his daring exploits strapped into nosediving biplanes so that he and the pilot could blackout and provide valuable research data, Strughold was every bit Armstrong's match. The German aviation scientist would earn a Rockefeller Fellowship and attend the University of Chicago where he would test the effects of oxygen deficiency on live dogs smuggled in from Canada, which might have been a red flag but instead went ignored.[70]

Before meeting Armstrong, Hubertus Strughold had been appointed director of the Aviation Medical Research Institute of the Reich Air Ministry in Berlin through his friendship with the pilot who flew the crazy blackout experiments, Robert Ritter von Greim who was tight with the inner circle of the Nazi party. In fact, Von Greim had been requested personally by Hermann Goring to thumb their collective noses at the Treaty of Versailles and rebuild the German air force, that's how highly regarded he was by the Nazis. His buddy Strughold benefited from the association, ending up directly subordinate to Erich Hippke, chief of the Luftwaffe medical corps who himself reported to Goring. Strughold eventually became one of the most powerful medical scientists in the Third Reich.[71]

Among Strughold's contributions to aviation medicine, on behalf of the Luftwaffe, was his research using early German altitude chambers. At first, prior to the war, Strughold used himself and his staff assistants in experiments and tests, but things became murky once the war started and his association with Theodore Benziger and Siegfried Ruff.[72]

Dr Theodore Benziger was assigned to the Experimental Station of the Air Force (Luftwaffe) Research Center in Rechlin and Dr Siegfried Ruff worked out of the German Experimental Station for Aviation Medicine in the Aero Medical division in Berlin. Benziger, who was a Luftwaffe officer during the war, also experimented on himself and colleagues, one of whom died in the pursuit of understanding the effects of oxygen deprivation. Among Benziger's risky exploits involved investigating explosive decompression. Benziger won the Iron Cross as a combat pilot.[73]

Siegfried Ruff had been assigned by Strughold to conduct research on the effects of g-forces on pilots and air crews. An enthusiastic Nazi party member, Ruff supervised gruesome medical experiments at Dachau, the notorious high-altitude studies in Experimental Cell Block Five among them. Ruff and Strughold co-authored scientific articles together, considered quite the collaboration by the US Army Air Corps who used one of their wartime articles to gather intelligence on German scientists and what they were accomplishing for the Luftwaffe.[74]

Following the war, now Colonel Armstrong would assign Strughold to be a director of the Army Air Force Aero Medical lab in Heidelberg. This was a classified facility and Strughold brought his friends Benziger and Ruff into the fold into the newly established American facility that had once been the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Medical Research. Classified 'Top Secret', their mission statement may have said it all: "The exploitation of certain uncompleted German aviation medical research projects."[75]

Thus was the true impetus for Operation Paperclip conceived.

Annie Jacobsen, in her book *Operation Paperclip: The Secret Intelligence Program That Brought Nazis To America*, cites the amazement of US Army Air Corps commanders and scientists at the advanced wonders of German technology: *"There was equipment here that American physicians had never seen before: esoteric items including a Nagel Anomaloscope, a Zeiss-made interferometer, an Engelking-Hartung adaptometer, a Schmidt-Haensch photometer, and a precision-built Siemens electron microscope -- with which to study night vision, blood circulation, g-forces and the bends."*[76]

This was nothing short of magic to the US Army scientists and they had to have some to play with, too.

During the last months of the war in Europe, Allied forces were scrambling to capture the various weapons technologies developed by the Germans[77]. Not to be left out, the US Army Air Forces were being directed from Wright Field to gather as much Luftwaffe equipment and engineers as they could capture[78]. Sometimes this effort involved working with Ian Fleming's legendary 30 Assault Unit, itself gathering goodies on classified operations for British Intelligence[79]. It was during the aftermath of a raid of the slave tunnels of the Nordhausen rocket manufacturing facility and more specifically with the discovery of massive wind tunnels used for advanced aeronautic research at Volkenrode that a US Army Air Force commander, Major General Hugh Knerr made a suggestion: Why not fly German scientists along with the Luftwaffe equipment directly to the United States?[80]

Citing the need for using German technology to defeat Japan, Maj General Knerr kicked off the paper trail to the War Department that would lead to US Army contracts for captured German scientists.[81]

Where were these first captured German scientists bound for?

Wright Field, of course. With the US Army Air Force up to its flight scarf in Operation Paperclip's origins, the next stage of development in USAF aviation medicine history would commence.

Enter Otis Benson.

To The Stars

America's manned space exploration may have really been put into practical reality because of the vision of Otis Otto Benson, a Minnesota native who earned his MD at the University of Chicago's Rush Medical College in 1930.

Earning a commission in the Medical Reserve Corps in 1931, Benson graduated from the School of Aviation Medicine in 1932. Following various assignments, Benson went to the Mayo Foundation in 1939 to study aviation physiology and medicine. In 1940, he took command of the Aeromedical Research Unit at Wright Field. It is Otis Benson who would push the United States Air Force into outer space.[82]

Benson would take Armstrong's research and advancements of oxygen delivery systems into the stratosphere and beyond. He would separate the Aeromedical laboratory from the equipment development lab and expand its physiological, biophysical and clinical research functions. Benson would also propel Armstrong's altitude chambers forward, overseeing the development of the Anti-G suit. By the time of America's involvement in WW2, Benson was designing the next generation of oxygen delivery systems that would benefit our high-altitude bomber crews. Otis Benson pushed the air force higher and farther thus providing the aircraft engineers inspiration to take humans higher and reach for the stars.[83]

Reaching for the stars is exactly what Otis Benson was doing with the United States air forces.

After serving in North Africa and Italy with the Fifteenth Air Force and then as chief surgeon of the US Army Air Force in the Mediterranean, for which he earned a Bronze Star among other decorations, Benson returned to the States following the war. In November, 1945 Benson was assigned Chief of the Medical Research Division in the Office of the Air Surgeon in Washington DC. This put under his direct supervision all American air force aviation science.[84]

Benson was now in command of the Aeromedical Laboratory at Wright Field, the School of Aviation Medicine at Randolph Field in Texas, and the Aeromedical Center in Heidelberg, Germany. There was nothing happening at these facilities and units that Benson did not know about and much had his hand in it. This also put Benson into the Operation Paperclip mix as it was happening.[85]

There is no way Benson, as commander of the Aeromedical Center, would not have known about the employment of German scientists and doctors brought under the wing of the American air force during this time, especially via Heidelberg. The facts show that not only was he aware, Benson was a proponent of Paperclip scientists assigned to his mission and units.[86]

To understand Benson's role in USAF involvement with Operation Paperclip, you have to know what motivated him. All this focus on high altitude and oxygen delivery systems and pressure suit development indeed served wartime needs, but Benson was working on these technologies years prior to the war.[87]

Long before his American peers, Otis Benson was pursuing the understanding of human physiology in outer space. What the war did was provide Benson with the opportunity to gather everything the Germans had done on aerospace research between 1939 and 1945 and use it to expand the US air forces program. By 1950, Benson had the US Air Force studying planetary atmospheres and weightlessness and the School of Aviation Medicine under his supervision designed and built a spacecraft cabin simulator. You could say Benson did more than any other commander to push America into space.[88]

In 1951, Otis Benson planned and sponsored the first international symposium on space medicine,a and then published a book titled *Physics and Medicine of the Upper Atmosphere* co-authored with C.S.White. Following an assignment in DC as chief of USAF medical staffing, Benson returned as commander of aviation medicine in September of 1956, eighteen months after my father entered the air force. By 1958, the year of events of concern to this book, Benson had expanded his Department of Space Medicine and focused its mission on all physiological aspects of manned space travel.[89]

This means that Otis Benson was not only aware of whatever the US Air Force was doing in space in the 1950s, he was one of the architects of its manned space program. This means that Otis Benson supervised whatever the USAF was developing under its stewardship of the pre-NASA Mercury program, in particular the pressure suit upon which my father's unit at George AFB conducted the ground tests in the altitude chamber. My dad spent nearly all of his service time under space-minded Otis Benson driving American aviation medicine and physiological training units.

I first learned about Otis Benson while doing research for this book, specifically where Operation Paperclip was concerned. As supervisor of US Army Air Corps aviation science facilities in Heidelberg, Benson was involved with Harry Armstrong in bringing 58 captured Germans into the American fold. This included Hubertus Strughold, Benziger, Ruff and others. Benson would also bring controversial Major General Dr Walter Schreiber to the School of Aviation Medicine.[90]

Walter Schreiber was the Third Reich's highest ranking doctor at his rank level and served as Commanding Officer of the Scientific Section of the Military Medical Academy in Berlin, essentially the Nazi Surgeon General. He came to the United States following capture by the Russians in 1945 and, after sixteen months in Soviet custody, Schreiber emerged as a witness in the Nurmeburg Trials, ratting out colleagues whose deeds he had supervised. In 1948, after more than three years 'captivity', Schreiber showed up in the west claiming to have escaped the Russians. In spite of being on the US Army Central Registry of War Criminals and Security Suspects list, Walter Schreiber was brought into the Paperclip program.[91]

The fact is that, two weeks prior to his public emergence following 'escape' from the Soviets, Schreiber had been in the protective custody of the US Counter Intelligence Corps. Initially brought in under Paperclip to work at Camp King in Germany, where his duties involved early OSS/CIA research into advanced interrogation methods, which will be discussed further in this book. With

Wright Field pushing for German scientists, Schreiber would soon be assigned to the School of Aviation Medicine in Texas.[92]

Schreiber was not the only Nazi scientist embraced by the USAF via Operation Paperclip, of course. History shows there were several but we will concern ourselves with those whose work for the USAF have impact upon my dad's strange account.

One of these was the aforementioned Dr Benziger who hosted a 1942 gathering with Heinrich Himmler in which Dr Sigmund Rascher presented motion picture footage of Nazi medical experiments on human subjects from concentration camps. My father had told me of watching old German films on altitude chamber tests during the war years, gruesome films demonstrating the effects of decompression on human subjects.[93]

In spite of Benziger's murky past and direct involvement with Nazi war criminals, he was inexplicably released from the Nuremburg trials and released to US Army Air Force custody to contribute to their research work. Wright Field quickly took advantage Benziger's paper on pilot physiology in extremely high altitudes of stratospheric aircraft. Thus did Benziger end up on the coveted Paperclip list and in the United States, courtesy of the US Army Air Force.[94]

Ultimately, with their pasts catching up to them, some Paperclip scientists would fall under scrutiny of the press and an appalled American public. By that time, the fairly young US Air Force would as discreetly as it could release certain German scientists from their contracts, among them was Walter Schreiber whose story the readers of my book *Origin* will find particularly interesting.

With the truth about his involvement in war crimes being exposed, Schreiber's days in America were numbered. Armstrong committed to documentation the instruction that a severance between Schreiber and the USAF be affected within six months. There was a perception that the US Air Force was working to keep its Nazi scientists in spite of wartime criminal activities that had been previously swept under the rug, not assuaged by the fact that Otis Benson had tried and failed to secure a university job for Schreiber to stay in the US. There was nothing for the former Nazi Surgeon General to do but 'get out of Dodge', so to speak. He requested his daughter who lived in Buenos Aires assist him with quickly obtaining a visa to Argentina but the FBI was listening an intercepted his efforts.[95]

With the decision by the Joint Chiefs that Schreiber was after all not actually useful to the School of Aviation Medicine anymore, US Army Intelligence agent D.A. Roe, G-2, contacted a high ranking Argentine military official and asked if Schreiber could be of any use to them. Thus was Schrieber and his ardent Nazi wife (she had actually joined the party without hesitation in 1931) flown by the USAF to New Orleans where they boarded a ship for Buenos Aires, the US government paying for personal protection throughout the immigration process and providing a 'travel allowance' the amount of which remains unknown today. What happened after that is interesting indeed.[96]

Dr Walter Schrieber and his wife spent the remainder of their lives living comfortably on an estate in that legendary Nazi refuge called San Carlos de Bariloche, on an estate named after the summer palace of Frederick the Great. Schrieber would subsequently be allowed to add 'von' to his name, and be recognized by unidentified German officials as a descendant of Prussian royalty. This little epilogue in Schrieber's life should ring familiar to readers of *Origin*.[97]

SUMMARY

I have demonstrated that upon closer inspection it was the US Army Air Force, soon to become the independent US Air Force, that was most adamantly behind the push for Operation Paperclip.

Manned space exploration was the primary enthusiasm of Otis Benson and the German scientists who had done the most to push humankind to the stars in the first half of the 20th Century were brought over to greatly aid Benson's vision.

Otis Benson's command of USAF aviation medicine research did more to push America into space than any other US program for over a decade after the war -- and this is the milieu in which my father was assigned and worked throughout his entire four-year enlistment.

The Operation Paperclip impact on American aviation medicine and my dad's story by no means ended with Schrieber's departure, for the US Air Force kept the most useful Nazis and expanded its pursuits into stranger waters with dedicated effort to cloak the fruits of that relationship. The USAF adventure into outer space was about to get weirder.

But before we venture much further into that, I must again address the maddening mess known as Roswell...

CHAPTER NINE

Don't believe the church and state
And everything they tell you
Believe in me, I'm with the High Command...

-- Mike Rutherford & B. A. Robertson

One cannot go too far into our context and anything USAF relative to UFOs without addressing what we have come to call, in a word, 'Roswell'.

Roswell has proven the most laborious of any chapter in this book. So why, after all the years of stuff published on the subject, a little good and a lot bad, would I venture into the Roswell mire? Because my first exposure to the whole thing was through my father and his strange tale. Roswell is at the heart of what my dad claimed happened to him.

So here we must go.

There has been such a volume of stuff written, produced, surmised, claimed and presented on this subject that I had to remind myself what the scope of this book is: An attempt to explain my dad's story, not to do another book on Roswell. Therefore I will do my best to keep that aim true.

After years of much thought and studied analysis on this issue, it is my conclusion that the very existence of the US Air Force is directly related to whatever the 'Roswell incident' might actually have been. But don't get too excited about that just yet.

My argument begins simply with the National Security Act of 1947 which created the Central Intelligence Agency, the National Security Agency and the independent United States Air Force[98]. Signed by President Truman on July 26, 1947, this act had been introduced to the US Senate by John Gurney, Republican senator from South Dakota, on 3 March of that same year[99] -- pretty much exactly four months to the day prior to the infamous occurrence near Roswell, New Mexico, as popularly reported. Is this mere coincidence?

I don't think so. The reader may choose to dismiss any correlation between the National Security Act and Roswell but, to be honest, the juxtaposition of the two events is too suspicious to dismiss the idea so hastily. The key to this particular perspective is acknowledging that Roswell could have been anything, not solely something from another world. It could have been an early Russian satellite. It could have been an advanced Russian aircraft. It could have been something that our real world cold war foes managed to put into our skies over our most advanced military installations. Those options alone could reasonably have placed Senate Bill 758[100] on the fast track to the President's desk.

For the record, I don't think it was a Russian anything that crashed in July 1947, if indeed something crashed 'that day'[101], whatever day it actually may have been. I can't tell you what it was for certain and no one likely can unless they have access to whatever classified file exists on the issue.

If you expected me to spend valuable space and time restating all the details both known and alleged about Roswell, you haven't read my other books. On this subject, do your homework. I don't write for the person who 'just dropped onto the planet from the turnip truck'. If you have really never ever heard anything about Roswell then I doubt you'd be reading this book in the first place.

Essentially, 'Roswell' refers to the report of something unidentified that crashed in the desert near the town of that name in New Mexico during the first week of July, 1947. It blew up into a big UFO flying saucer mystery over the years until the popular scenario imploded under the weight of foolishness and lies.

The USAF made attempts to pass it off as weather balloon technology but few people believe that explanation (including those without foil on their head), even if a weather balloon did happen to have gone down relative to the identified dates. I have issues with the weather balloon story myself.

I'm an inactive USAF reserve officer. During my active duty time, I served as an AFOSI agent, which the reader likely knows by now. I don't buy the weather balloon story and I have been professionally acquainted with Colonel Richard Weaver whom I respect and have no doubt was doing exactly what was determined to be done as regards Roswell and the public demand for information. So why do I not accept the weak Air Force dog-and-pony hoo-ha in the so called 'Weaver Report'? Because I think there's something big enough to keep secret for fifty years -- at the time of the report and nearly seventy years as of this writing.

What could that possibly be?

To begin with, you must understand that we don't have a fifty year rule in this country. Our classified information and technology does not automatically get declassified fifty years after classification. There is no expiration date, no 'statute of limitations' on such national defense secrets. Suck it up and enjoy every bite because that's just the way it is and ought to be. If the Department of Defense and the USAF are keeping Roswell close to vest it's because the secret is still considered vital. Period.[102]

So what could Roswell possibly have been, in my learned opinion, to remain so highly classified?

I say it was something so paradigm changing that it expedited a restructuring of how we did everything as regards national defense. A Russian satellite or aircraft did not qualify, even in those early tentative and somewhat paranoid days of a growing cold war. I argue this because any Russian satellite, no matter how 'space age', and especially any Russian jet aircraft, would have been recognizable as such -- because we each had Germans designing this stuff for us too and we knew their engineering repertoire.

What crashed in New Mexico had to have been something not just more advanced than what history tells us we had at the time, it had to have been something our War Department and President did not want anyone outside the event to even suspect existed.

What could have been so secretive and paradigm-changing about something that would have specifically crashed in New Mexico in 1947, particularly within the context of the time?

In my opinion, it had to have been either something of our own doing or from a source which the War Department might have had a hard time explaining so soon after supposedly becoming the dominant military power on Earth following WW2 victory.

Why do I think this?

The concern about the Soviet Union wasn't much of a secret. There was already a growing cold war, very much stoked by War Department assessments, one of which we shall discuss later in this book. There was already an awareness about the Russians and other communist agents in the public awareness. In actuality, the military industrial complex of the west could have used a Russian sourced event to make great hay in support of gaining public support for budgetary demands and operations.

But I don't think the Soviets were behind the crash in New Mexico for one very good reason: A Russian source of whatever crashed would have been the best Christmas gift the Soviets could have given the US military in 1947. *See what those bastard commies are up to?!*

Clearly whatever crashed at Roswell must have ignited the need to restructure our War Department and defense apparatus into a new juggernaut of agencies and a shiny new and quite powerful US Air Force, right? We suddenly learned that They were out there and coming here, right?

Not necessarily. In fact, the National Security Act was already in the works before that which is Roswell happened.

In January 1947, JCS 1779 was enacted, essentially stating that the best defense of western Europe against the growing Soviet threat would be a strong rebuilt Germany[103]. On 12 March 1947, the President delivered what is called the Truman Doctrine in which he pledged that the US would

contain Soviet communist influence in Greece and Turkey and soon in various other hot spots around the world[104].

Note the date on the Truman Doctrine, just nine days after Senate Bill 758, the National Security Act, was introduced to Congress.

The impetus for the National Security Act of 1947 was not ETs crashing at Roswell. It was drafted and proposed against a backdrop of civil war in China between Chiang Kai-shek's national forces and the communist aggression of Mao Zedong's collectivist horde[105]. Communism was on the rise and the West was nervous. It was a time when any public support in opposition to communism would be highly valued, to say the least, and in particular any public rally specifically against the Soviets.

So I ask the reader: If what crashed at Roswell had been Soviet, do you really think a seventy year lid would have been clamped down on it? Even after a few decades of the Cold War? After the fall of the USSR? No matter how advanced their technology could have been, a Soviet UFO crashing in 1947 would have been revealed *long* before now, one way or another. That's why I'm of the opinion that Roswell was not a Russian incident.

So what was it?

Options

If 'Roswell' happened, I personally do not think it was extraterrestrial.

The evidence and the facts of Roswell do not actually support the popular ET theory very well. Neither anymore does the Roswell literature over the past several years effectively convince in favor of ET because too many alleged witnesses proved to be full of crap and only a handful of what you could call legitimate witnesses were ever actually interviewed (or had their testimony presented). Essentially, the ET hypothesis for Roswell is presently what we might call 'a pile of horseshit'. It just doesn't work to explain the situation anymore, if it ever truly did, beyond wishful thinking.

For starters, let's go back to what my father told me he was briefed: a craft that crashed in New Mexico was of primary interest to the US Army Air Force and was taken to Wright Field to be assessed by top aerospace technology experts of the day.

As to the crew, my dad said they were as human as us, though virtually hairless. He also said they were no threat, which may prove a problem for at least one of the below categories, if true. However, as we shall see in a coming chapter, there may be good reason to question aspects of my father's memories of this experience, and there remains too much evidence to dismiss said category, which the ET faithful will lament (to my never-ending amusement).

Basically, my conclusion is, *if* something crashed there around the time in question, what crashed at Roswell was likely a product of one of four categories:

a. An early US attempt at manned spaceflight,

b. A postwar Nazi technology

c. A group separate from publicly known civilization, inclusive of a 'breakaway' option, but not necessarily so.

d. A US experiment with exotic technology originally captured from the Germans and expanded upon by our Paperclip scientists.

Please note that I argue the sources of the first three were all essentially human. These three make the most sense to me and especially so within the context of my dad's experience. The fourth is in a different category yet relative to all we have discussed already.

I place my categories of possibility in a specific order for a reason. There are too many German aerospace engineers in the mix in 1947 to ignore in favor of an extraterrestrial assumption. Let's look at the first one: the possibility of an early manned US spaceflight.

Dream Come True?

Werner von Braun, Hermann Oberth, Werner Dahm, Konrad Dannenberg, Krafft Arnold Ehricke, Walter Riedel, and others were all known to have been obsessed with manned space exploration from their youth and well before any Reich employment during WW2. According to one Operation Paperclip interviewer, Riedel in particular was obsessed with outer space vehicles and told the army officer of about forty other scientists equally dedicated to this objective of manned space flight[106]. These captured German rocket scientists, aerospace engineers and aviation medicine specialists were more than anxious to put their knowledge into venturing man to the stars because it's what they wanted to do in the first place, *before* Hitler came along in their lives.

So, do you still think that the only American attempts to put man into space are those publicly documented exploits of NASA since the 1960s?

You honestly find it hard to entertain that the possibility the western world's foremost rocket scientists, obsessed with going into space their entire lives, and given the resources and license by the United States government to spread their wings, would not have proposed and could not have convinced a postwar American air force -- staffed with plenty of its own space travel fanboys -- to even attempt to put men into space at least once?

You *seriously* find it hard to believe that this was tried?

Really?

I must point out a statement made by Kevin Randle and Donald Schmitt in *The Truth About The UFO Crash at Roswell*: *"Reviewing the records of the time, there was nothing that was happening then that was so highly classified it couldn't be discovered today." Pg 145*.

Unless it indeed *remains* so highly classified to this day!

No disrespect intended, but that was spoken like someone not read into a particular program and who isn't aware that they don't know what they are talking about. There *are* exceptions to declassification rules and things *can* and do remain classified indefinitely.[107]

Only the willful mind in stubborn denial would so easily dismiss the idea of a secret USAF space program and I am certain some readers will still take this curious and amusing position. For me, I think putting men into space was likely among the *first* things they thought of doing the day they were installed at Ft Bliss and the various sites next door in New Mexico, regardless of their contracted duties as regards missile technology, etc etc etc. The right guys were in the right place at the right time.

Oh, golly. What was that? Space travel obsessed Paperclip Nazi rocket scientists and aerospace engineers in New Mexico in the late 1940s? That couldn't have been the source of the Roswell incident. Don't even consider it!

I find any flat out denial of the possibility that Roswell was a classified American attempt at manned space travel to be foolish. There were too many of the right people and too many of the requisite resources on hand for it to not have been attempted at least once. That's why I propose that the answer to Roswell could have been just that, first manned venture into space by the United States[108].

So what about what my dad said? Well, an Army Air Corps crew would have been human, so that fits. And the hairless descriptor? Again, we will be examining my dad's memory of the briefing he claimed to receive, but for now the hairless aspect might have been because the hair was simply burned or radiated off[109]. Might the Van Allen radiation belts have been responsible for that? Just a wild ass guess to consider.

The object that crashed at Roswell having possibly been a deeply classified American attempt at manned spaceflight also fits my dad's statements over the years that what crashed was not a threat to our national security. If it was ours, it was not a threat, plain and simple.

So why might such an attempt have remain classified (and lied about and covered up) for seventy years?

That is where the trouble lies for this early American space mission theory because any historical US air forces attempt at going into space would not have been such a shocker to Apollo era Americans. Certainly by 1995, the USAF would not have egg on its face for admitting it had valiantly attempted manned spaceflight in those heady postwar days of 'Right Stuff'[110] exploits. The American people would have dug that. But we didn't get that particular press conference so, if it happened, why the secrecy?

What comes to my mind are two possible reasons, both of them controversial.

First: the attempt might not have had full approval.

The German scientists and the US Army Air Force might have privately committed to the flight and cleverly cloaked it within a standing order to pursue rocket technology, coyly embedding the presence of a human crew under an aviation medicine mandate.

Putting a human crew aboard a mandated rocket test flight would have been a logical way to test the ceiling and operations of aerospace technology while also gathering vital real world data -- not lab simulations -- of the effects of 'high altitude' on human physiology. What better way to be frugal with

taxpayer dollars? Imagine if it had worked!

I will not be surprised if we ultimately learn that a secret attempt at manned space flight is the secret of Roswell.

But I also suspect we should have learned such a thing by now -- unless the other possibility for secrecy is valid: This hypothetical first manned American spaceflight kicked off a secret air force space program.

If the Roswell object was associated with a secret US military-industrial complex space program that *still exists today*, therein lies the reason why it might remain classified, denied and covered up seventy years later.

The aforementioned Harry Armstrong and Otis Benson provide the reason to suspect a secret US air forces space program. Both men were dedicated to aviation medicine and most specifically within a context of high altitude. Benson especially pushed toward space travel.

Armstrong and Benson were in command of the very S&T units which determined the focus of aerospace technology pursuits where human physiological limits were the focus and the units relative to advanced flight technology. Everything they did resulted in what would have been required to know to keep humans alive in space. Do you really think neither one of these men would have been enticed by the proposal that they attempt a manned flight beyond the bonds of the planet?

Look again at what Armstrong and Benson pioneered for the United States Army Air Force: altitude chambers, pressure suits, oxygen delivery systems, long term flight cabin simulation tests. Sure, these served the development of the high altitude aircraft of the Strategic Air Command, but that wasn't the actual endgame of this research.

We will, in the next chapter, get into exactly what Otis Benson pushed for in the pursuit of space travel, the point is that Armstrong and Benson's work, coupled with what the Paperclip space scientists and rocket engineers brought to the launchpad. All led to the Mercury manned space effort -- and that was originally a USAF program, *before* NASA even existed.[111]

Now that's interesting. The USAF officially started America's manned space program. But we shouldn't get too excited about that because NASA quickly took that pursuit all to itself, right?

What makes you think the USAF stopped developing manned space programs after NASA was created? Because you didn't see it on TV or didn't learn about it in school or it's not in the history books? Excuse me while I laugh my ass off. To outright deny the possibility of a deeply classified USAF manned space program would be the height of foolish cocksurety that might impress children and pretty girls, but it makes you look like an idiot, to me. And pay close attention that I say I *could* be wrong, of course, but to *dismiss* the possibility is what's foolish.

The point here is that what happened in New Mexico in 1947 could have been a crash of a classified US Army Air Force manned spacecraft and, if not exactly approved as such at a higher level, might have been a potential disaster for the commanders who were involved, thus the secrecy and the apparent tomfoolery serving to confuse future investigators. I think this security lid would definitely

have tightened significantly if this craft actually represented the first flight of a secret space program, especially in the early years of the Cold War.

How does this reflect on what my dad told me?

The passing years and other factors -- factors we will be getting into in the remainder of this book -- may have served to confuse my dad's recall, i.e. he could have attached a murky recollection to the easiest anchor available: public interest in the Roswell incident. In other words, my dad may have been briefed on the above proposed crash of a secret USAF craft and years later connected it with Roswell. There are specific reasons I suggest this and we will explore them in future chapters.

So on to the next category: a postwar player who shouldn't have been.

Those Pesky Nazis

This is the one the ET crowd absolutely despises.

This possibility offers some decent evidence, i.e. technologies documented in the known Nazi S&T record of accomplishment or research. This possibility also comes with a very good reason for keeping it a secret: We were supposed to have vanquished these guys -- and thoroughly. If the folks learned that not only did a bunch of them escape capture but they were developing their own whiz-bang stuff that outdid ours, there would be outcry and hell to pay.

Let's take a look at the technology. This will require much consideration of the most hated book by Joseph P Farrell, *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection*. Talk about inconvenient! I won't name names but some of the people I know who despise this book have never even *read* it. They take the easy road and invariably resort to ad homonym attacks on the author. We know what that usually means: They cannot legitimately argue his theory down.

According to Farrell's review of the Corso material, and the legend in general, the following technologies found in the Roswell crash debris that show correlation to Nazi technology are:

Super strong metal or other material
Fiber optics
Kevlar
Night vision
Lasers and particle accelerators
Transistors and integrated circuits
Portable atomic power for air and space craft[112]

'What?!' you say 'The Nazis had that stuff?!'

Let's see what Farrell says about that:

Super strong metal. Author researcher Henry Stevens reports that in British Intelligence Objectives Sub-Committee Report #142, an informant reported German advances in metallurgy that British scientists didn't want to accept, so they subsequently discredited their own source!

Stevens found what looks for all the world like Allied interviewers reporting stuff they cite as untrustworthy but are reporting it anyway, in detail. In the case of BIOS Report 142, the informant said the Germans had **by 1936** discovered a way to harden steel and aluminum beyond currently known limits. He said it was called 'Impervium', identified the inventor and the details of the process and even named the city where the foundry doing it was located. Stevens even found that TRW had acknowledged the German advances and used the process themselves.[113]

Farrell concedes the problem with this is that we would have seen invincible German military machinery and clearly we were able to shoot down their planes, destroy their tanks and so forth. His point -- and it is a solid one -- is that Nazi Germany was indeed working on and making great strides in super strong metals over ten years *before* Roswell.

Fiber optics. The basic concepts leading to fiber optics dates back to Alexander Graham Bell in the 19th Century. In the following century, the Nazis are known to have been researching what they called 'optical telephony' -- prior to the end of the war per German documents captured in 1945, more than two years *before* Roswell.[114]

Farrell admits that this was specifically undefined but analyze the term and the implication is there. 'Optical' refers to the visual realm, as is light. 'Telephony' refers to the transmission of the medium, sound in the most familiar case, light being the optical option. Farrell correctly suggests that the Nazis even looking into whatever this was implies that fiber optics might not have been far beyond them. They were within the realms of the concept years *before* Roswell happened.

Kevlar. Farrell concedes that he knows of no specific Nazi documentation that reveals their pursuit of a material specifically such as Kevlar, but he points out that I.G.Farben, a major element of the Nazi military-industrial complex was indeed working on advanced fibers and materials.[115]

Farrell points out waterproof material that Farben had developed before the end of the war and suggests, again, that the Nazis were known to be working on super strong metals. Their industrial machine was indeed pursuing endurance-property materials like waterproofing. This reasonably suggests that super strong fabrics, thus an early Kevlar, would not likely have been beyond them either.

Night vision. To show a possible Nazi development trail of something like our night vision of today, Farrell provides photographs of two Nazi German devices deployed during WW2: German infrared equipment deployed on Panzer Medium Tanks and the infrared device deployed on German naval vessels. Again, manufactured and used during the war, thus years prior to Roswell. Infrared puts the Nazis within the realm of night vision technology pursuits.[116]

Lasers and particle accelerators. Farrell offers a Nazi document dated May of 1944 which specifically discusses the 'Cascade Principle' in conjunction with the need of a facility for the manufacture of high-voltage and large current intensity. Farrell writes: *"The Cascade Principle is the* very *principle that lasers employ to cohere light into non-diverging beam."* The cited Nazi German document alone precedes Roswell by *three years*.[117]

Transistors and integrated circuits. Farrell again presents photograph evidence, in this case of Nazi

German history with transistors, by showing Klystron tubes developed and produced by Telefunken between 1940 and 1941. That's not all: He also presents a photo of German semi-conductor chips captured by the Allies during the war. All of this was, again, over five years *prior* to Roswell.[118]

Portable atomic power for air and space craft. Presented as evidence for Nazi precedent to Roswell on this technology is Dr. Franz Josef Neugebauer himself, cleared for 'urgent' work with the US Army Air Force because of his specialty in thermal systems for aircraft nuclear propulsion. It turns out that Allied postwar review of the Skoda factory and documents revealed the atomic pursuits were quite a bit more accomplished than we have been led to believe in the hubris of victory. And once again, this was years *before* Roswell.[119]

I could go on and on with the numerous pages of examples and evidence, and there are 515 pages in the book. Farrell makes his point and that is this: What the Nazis are proven to have been developing or pursuing before and during the war precedes the same specific or developmentally similar technological items claimed to have been harvested from the Roswell crash debris. This plainly suggests that the alleged Roswell technological items which Corso and others have claimed were retrieved from the crash ***could*** *have been of human manufacture*.

If they *could* have been human, specifically Nazi German, then it renders the popular assumption that these items *must* have been *exclusively* of extraterrestrial manufacture null and void. The known German items pointed out by Farrell do not need to be exact matches for his theory to be valid, in spite of what the naysayers will cry (and they will).

Of course this does *not* eliminate the non-human possibility entirely, it merely demonstrates that another more earthly origin is indeed valid. This possibility should consequently alter perspectives on Roswell.

Perhaps that was the point of Corso's book. We should ask what was the Colonel up to exactly?

If what crashed at Roswell was postwar Nazi technology -- and the reason for secrecy is because the US military knew this -- then what are we now to wonder about Colonel Corso apparently letting the cat out of the bag in his book? If Farrell can so easily demonstrate a correlation between said recovered Roswell crash technology, why reveal it at all if it's such a big secret? Or is there another possibility?

Corso was in fact assigned to the Foreign Technology Division of US Army Intelligence. If anyone had on file the Nazi developments that Farrell cites, it would have been this unit. Corso may have simply applied what he learned of these Nazi technologies to his account of involvement with Roswell. But by the time his book was published, this was already in the public realm so why would Corso do that if he wanted the reader to believe in the narrative he presents, that it was alien, not in the human technology repertoire until after Roswell?

What was the true objective of Corso's book?

Karl T. Pflock, among others, suggested there never was a crash of anything but a weather balloon array at Roswell in the summer of 1947. In his investigations and analyses of Roswell over the course

of several years, Pflock ultimately found what many others had to finally concede, that the heretofore 'witnesses' were either exaggerating on faint and fading memories, or repeating stories told by deceased alleged witnesses (kind of like I am doing with this book), or they were flat out full of crap and lying to get attention and maybe make a buck. What Pflock discovered was that Roswell as we have known it has likely been a wishful fantasy.[120]

What could be trouble for Joseph Farrell's theory is Lt Colonel Philip Corso himself.

It's primarily Corso's book from which the Roswell technology harvest story was drawn. However, Corso's book, written with William J. Birnes, is troubled with erroneous statements of historical record thus the book itself is questionable as a reliable source, to some. Pflock also pointed out that Corso seems to draw from the conflicting versions of the Roswell incident itself and that doesn't help his case.[121]

In *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts And The Will to Believe*, Pflock says of Corso: *"My mind boggled. If Corso's egoistic fever dreams were taken as fact, he was responsible for nothing short of making possible the cornerstones of the technological revolution of the second half of the Twentieth Century."*

Pflock is speaking of Corso's assignment with the FTD of US Army Intelligence, specifically Corso's claims of having been ordered to seed the 'alien' Roswell technologies out to the military-industrial complex for development. But Corso gets missile programs mixed up when he shouldn't and, more damning, speaks of his 1961 CIA rivals being at Langley when the Agency was still in multiple Washington DC offices around the district before moving to Virginia. These are just a couple examples of why Corso's credibility comes under fire and therefore must also his Roswell claims. [122]

Pflock says further: *"Recently longtime ufologist Larry Bryant obtained Corso's FBI files through a Freedom of Information Act request. This reveals a man continually trying to advance his personal agenda...through lies and exploitation..."* [Pg 208]

Clearly Pflock found Corso useless as a source. However, there is another possibility that Pflock should and perhaps might have considered or suspected because Pflock was himself a CIA agent[123]: Philip Corso's book on Roswell could have been the final assignment of a 'good soldier'.

Corso's Swan Song?

The Day After Roswell could have been an operation itself. More specifically, the book and Corso's claims could have been designed and provided to him, certain select information carefully embedded within true details of his career. If said information was intended as disinformation, it would serve to lead UFO researchers far astray.

The book could also have been used to discredit the existing field of Roswell research via damning errors sure to be eventually discovered (and they were) thus making anyone who accepted it at face value look like a fool.

But there is a problem with this scenario: Why would Corso agree to ultimately look like the asshole

Pflock paints him to be?

That Karl Pflock worked for the CIA at one time must be considered. This does *not* mean my suggestion is fact. It does *not* mean Pflock was for a fact involved in such operations as I suggest Corso's book could have been. What I am suggesting simply means that because *it is possible* that Corso's book was an operation, I wonder if Pflock's damning assessment was part of the objective to discredit the messenger -- and thus any researcher who took Corso's claims seriously. Yes, it suggests that Pflock and Corso were on the same team.

The reader might ask why a long retired military officer would agree to be made out an opportunistic fraud? Why would a UFO researcher agree to alienate (no pun intended) half his audience or more?

Here comes yet another speculative possibility in this festival of supposition: It might be that putting an end to then prevailing view of Roswell and ufology in general was the objective.

If wiping the Roswell slate clean of ET was the primary objective, then what might the desired replacement have been? In a book of blatant historical errors and wild claims, what could said operators have hoped to accomplish with damaged credibility?

The Gold Nugget In A 'Turd'?

Being personally experienced in humint operations for the USAF and others in the US intelligence community, I assure you that not everything passed operationally is a complete lie. So consider Corso's book from my perspective and ask yourself if some of the information conveyed in the book might be true.

More specifically, if an operation, Corso's book might still have revealed factual information where the technology is concerned and that could very well have hint at the real message of the book. This possibility means that Joseph Farrell's theory still has legs.

How, you ask?

If Corso's book is the load of crap that Pflock and others say it is, then we must again ask where did Corso come up with the harvested technology list? Army Intelligence technology analysis, specifically FTD analysis, is the identified source.[124]

As convoluted as I know some of you are bitching that this may be, in this bit of fact we may have found the secret to Corso's book. He could actually have been instructed to use what the US Army FTD *knew* was advanced Nazi technology and dress it in extraterrestrial terms to serve a perception management operation ultimately damaging to popular ufology's prevailing ET theory -- while also providing a time bomb.

Corso's book may actually have revealed, without anyone seeing it at the time, what Joseph Farrell eventually points out in *Roswell and the Reich*. It reveals, in my opinion, more truth about Roswell than anyone realized at the time. Perhaps a stretch but Farrell has demonstrated a Nazi thread in the mix, so it is possible and *must* be seriously considered by any serious investigator of Roswell.

Where the alleged Roswell technology is concerned, and even the crash itself, Joseph Farrell's theory remains the best and most thoroughly presented theory of the Roswell crash hardware so far. Why do I say this and what does it have to do with my dad's story?

Because, like it or not, there were Germans and their technology everywhere in this Roswell landscape in 1947 and these same Germans populated the world of aviation medicine to which my father was assigned and through which was exposed to the elements of his story.

And yet there remains even another fine twist of this theoretical knob. What if the popular Roswell legend indeed came from our previously discussed scenario of a first US attempt at manned spaceflight -- and the technology was indeed so Nazi German in its signature (should Farrell be right) *because the craft was designed by our captured Nazi Germans scientists*?

The previously discussed possibility of a secret American manned spaceflight using US built components of originally Nazi German design, courtesy of our Paperclip Germans, could quite neatly explain all the secrecy surrounding Roswell. It could explain the subsequent willingness of the USAF to let people think it was ET as long as they could get away with it and even encourage commitment to that belief by releasing the weak target balloon array story that they knew would be questioned. Except for a naive insistence that it 'must goddamnit be ET!', this scenario of an American-Nazi crash could very well 'explain' Roswell and again we can still validate Farrell's postwar Nazi suggestion.

Because of all the Germans we know were in New Mexico in 1947 and in my dad's story, it was necessary to spend some pages acknowledging the very strong possibilities (some would say probability) that the answer to Roswell is the Nazi solution.

And yet, by golly, there remains the aforementioned third suggested possibility.

Someone Else

The secret of Roswell may be that a separate human civilization generally unknown to us was the origin of whatever crashed circa 1947. This *is* what my dad said is the case, after all.

But what evidence speaks to this suggestion?

The secrecy, for one. The revelation of a hidden civilization of humans possessed of advanced technology might certainly be something the government would desire to keep tightly classified[125]. It might even be that said civilization, now exposed to our government, itself demanded the secrecy.

OK, but again what else is there?

How about the idea of a technology so 'alien' to our own, that it startled the US military, the force that led the Allies to defeat the mighty Third Reich and their formidable Japanese buddies. Imagine the befuddlement over how to approach this new player on the scene. How do you explain to the people of the world that an entire human civilization exists on our world and we didn't know about it until they crashed one of their amazing flying machines?

But is the shock of discovery that we have unknown 'cousins' with amazing gizmos still be enough to clamp such a tight and convoluted lid on this thing called 'Roswell'?

Perhaps but I'm not certain. In fact, I suspect for this 'other human civilization' scenario to work, we likely need to dispense with the idea that our government and others did not know about them.

A scenario in which a separate human civilization coexisting with us could work, essentially unknown as such to the masses, might involve a breakaway civilization.

The Breakaway Option

If what crashed in New Mexico was an air (or space) craft of a breakaway human civilization that particularly wanted to remain unknown to the masses, then seventy years of secrecy and wacky balloon antics make sense if said breakaway made it clear that their existence should remain generally unknown.

Such a civilization, if truly possessed of technology advanced anywhere near the level proposed by Roswell harvest proponents, would certainly be in the position to secure their continued anonymity via the combined advantages of technology transfer and the ability to back up a secrecy agreement with spectacular and resolute force.

Readers of my other works will be familiar with how such a civilization could even have happened. I recommend readers of this book refer to *Origin* and *Empire of the Wheel 2: Friends From Sonora,* as well as the breakaway subject as covered by Joseph Farrell, Richard Dolan and Olav Phillips among others. These works lay out a reasonable argument to the question of how, so let us continue with who.

Generally, I argue that two breakaway human civilizations possibly exist, each emerging from 19th Century airship milieus. One was a breakaway from an already existing independent organization. That organization was called NYMZA and was supposedly created by Prussians who I have proposed were dedicated to the creation of a unified Germany, which was indeed achieved. The group that broke off from them was American and I have suggested was first organized under a black project in the post Civil War era. In my other works I provide my analysis and theory about how these groups philosophically opposed one another and took technological leaps and bounds into the 20th Century.

Again, we must ask what author W.A. Harbinson might know, for in his novel *Genesis* we have his villainous take on Wilson telling another character the following: *"How naive you are, Stanford. The world out there is part of the conspiracy, and has been for years. The United States knows about us. The Soviet Union knows about us. The British and the Germans know about us, and all of them deal with us."*[126]

In my opinion, if the breakaway possibility is the secret behind the Roswell situation, then the breakaway whose craft crashed in July 1947 was of the NYMZA.

Why them? Because of NYMZA's German origins and Joseph Farrell's Nazi theory regarding the technology harvest -- should that part of Corso's book be true. My readers will be familiar with the direct trail I have proposed between the Prussian NYMZA and Nazi Germany. Because in my

analysis the Nazis would have received some technological nudging and a lot of philosophical inspiration from NYMZA sources, it could be that what Farrell's analysis demonstrates is that Nazi Germany was producing their own version of NYMZA technology. This means that a NYMZA craft crashing at Roswell might suggest a revelation of where the Nazis got their knowledge instead of the craft being necessarily a postwar Nazi group's craft as Farrell specifically suggests.

But a NYMZA scenario has issues where my dad's claims are concerned. He insisted that what crashed was not a threat to our national security, specifically that the civilization from which it came was not a threat.

I firmly stand by my position that NYMZA is a threat and has been for a long time. I'm convinced they were in the milieu that created the Nazis. If I am correct, NYMZA would especially be considered a threat right after WW2. Therefore if my dad's version of the story is accurate and a non-threatening breakaway or separate human civilization was responsible for Roswell, it would not be NYMZA.

But if not NYMZA or, by association, not Nazis per se, why did I spent so many pages on the Nazi possibility?

Because the NYMZA inherited their knowledge from ancient information in the first place, according to my theory, the craft of a hidden civilization with ancient pedigree would logically possess that ancestral technology resembling what Nazi Germany would subsequently have been developing, if indeed guided by NYMZA.

Anyone Else?

Could the source of the craft in my dad's story have been the American group that I call the 1903?

That is possible but I decline to suggest this based upon the whole of the details my dad shared which strongly suggest someone else, not the least of which is that he was told their civilization was founded thousands of years ago. I date the 1903 roughly to an 1865 origin and an early 20th Century formal foundation.

What if we might indeed actually be dealing with a civilization that lives mainly under our feet in subterranean regions, as described by my father?

Those elusive Tuatha de Danann could be the answer. Bruce Rux proposes they are simply a spacefaring civilization that originally came from Mars[127] and Robert Charroux paints them as a civilization that made its way to the Americas where it advanced civilization there coincidentally at around the time of Quetzalcoatl and Viracocha[128]. Defeat and retreat into the subterranean realm followed.

The Fourth Suggested Possibility

I proposed earlier that a fourth option to explain Roswell might involve an experiment with exotic technology. This could have some foundation of truth.

With this option, I must go into more esoteric territory, though you will see that it is as pertinent to this book as any of the previous scenarios presented. In the midst of all this stuff in the Roswell milieu, there is an intriguing theory that what happened at Roswell was actually the opening of a portal and the craft which crashed, along with its crew, were beings from another dimension.

Essentially, the story goes that Aleister Crowley's protege, the infamous and legendary would be sorcerer and practicing alchemist Jack Parsons, whom we will discuss in a later chapter, opened a metaphysical doorway through which came the race of beings responsible for the modern UFO wave.

One may choose to simply pass on by the Parsons option but for one thing that sticks in my mind: Nazi technology, specifically 'Die Glocke', that mysterious object shrouded in secrets. Yes, the Nazi Bell[129].

Credited with amazing powers of levitation and manipulation of the space-time continuum, the Nazi Bell has a connection to our story through the Operation Paperclip scientist so vital to USAF aviation medicine and American manned space travel: Hubertus Strughold.

Joseph P Farrell points out that Strughold had worked at Castle Furstenstein during the war and that this linked him to the Kammler project known as the Die Glocke -- The Bell[130]. How interesting that Strughold would then work for USAF aviation medicine with this in his background for the mysterious Bell being associated with stories of anti-gravity. It has been suggested in recent years that NASA may have employed such technology in the Apollo program, and Farrell even suggests the technology may have aided the astronauts in passing safely through the Van Allen belts[131], something Strughold working in aviation medicine would be keen on knowing about.

Hubertus Strughold, rumored to be connected with Die Glocke was indeed considered vital to NASA. Might he have been among Paperclip Germans who possibly convinced US Army Air Force commanders to reconstruct their own bell -- or perhaps reactivated a captured bell -- and this opened a portal in time and space, allowing in whatever crashed? He was in the right place at the right time.

We will return to this option, and Jack Parsons. Admittedly, this last option is too far out on a limb for many readers. Yet, it haunts.

There are some, Karl Pflock for example, who say nothing substantial crashed at Roswell in July 1947. There are many more who would say there is no such thing as these mysterious Children of Anu. I have already stated that I think something substantial did happen in New Mexico in 1947, some sort of Roswell incident. My dad said it happened and this book is about his story.

My dad told me he was briefed on and shown bodies and debris from the incident we know as 'Roswell'. I do not think he was making this up. Everything about his body language and in his voice when he spoke of these events tells me he was speaking the truth as he remembered it -- as he believed it to be so.

But it doesn't mean that it was exactly true.

As fun as it is to consider secret American spaceflight or postwar cosmic Nazi adventurers or even

the mysterious hidden or breakaway civilizations, it turns out that something I had never considered presented itself the moment I began to investigate the details of my dad's military service.

It may be that none of what my dad was told about the crash in New Mexico, or even what he said he learned at Wright-Patterson, ever happened. At least. maybe not the version he recalled. That may have been fabrication.

For what, you may ask? The answer to that question proved to be much less disappointing than I first assumed because it does not necessarily eliminate the fantastic.

I won't summarize this chapter because what you accept about Roswell is subjective. What I think is that something happened, but the word 'something' covers a wide spectrum, half of which is on the side of little to nothing. What I will offer that is pertinent to my dad's story is that Roswell's hall of mirrors is the spinning disco ball at the center of something that was done in 1947, was exploited again in the late 1950s, and remains in the bag of official tricks even today.

Let's follow the rabbit into the hall of mirrors and see what we find...

CHAPTER TEN

Things I've never seen before
Behind bolted doors
Talent and Imagination...
-- Danny Elfman

With Roswell and the National Security Act of 1947 behind us, we must return to the USAF of Otis Benson as aviation medicine turns out to have played a more prominent role in this story than I ever imagined.

The 1950s was a curious time for the US Air Force. It appears that embedded within Cold War era responsibilities was an outer space agenda, very specifically a manned space exploration objective. This bold pursuit was actually what one might expect of a brand new independent air force established at the dawn of our space age. In fact, the US Air Force was likely responsible for that birth. The outer space agenda was certainly the driving force of the work my dad was involved with back then.

The other USAF fascination of the period was curious indeed and sleeps deeply in the shadowed past of the otherwise most conservative and shy branch of the US armed forces. I'm speaking of the US Air Force interest in the frontiers of the human mind, the previously untrod landscapes of the psyche.

But first let us address further how my dad might have indeed seen Nazi experiment films, as he claimed he did, during his training in the physiology of high altitude flight.

As discussed earlier, the origin of American aerospace medicine dates back to World War 1 and the US Army Air Corps. Established to conduct research into the physiological and medical aspects of human flight, the program was mainly a training and research function of the US flight surgeon corps. The Air Service Medical Research Laboratory stood up in January 1918 at Hazelhurst Field, at Mineola on Long Island. My father's specialty of decades later had its beginnings here as the Hazelhurst Laboratory employed a small decompression chamber in which US research was begun on human tolerance to high altitudes.[132]

An Aviation Medical Research Board was established to determine conditions that would adversely affect pilot performance in flight, identify who could and who could not perform satisfactorily in high altitudes, seek to develop oxygen delivery systems for pilots and air crews, and provide oversight for all medical and physiological matters related to pilots. It was the Board that established and administrated the laboratory at Hazelhurst. In 1922, the Air Service Medical Research Laboratory and the School for Flight Surgeons, which had been combined during the war, were absorbed into a single School of Aviation Medicine. Four years later, the school was moved to Texas, as noted earlier.[133]

Brooks Field in San Antonio became the home of the School of Aviation Medicine in the summer of 1926 and remained there until late 1931 when it was moved to Randolph Field. Just a few years after that, Wright Field entered the picture.[134]

We know, of course, that Wright Field had actually been in the background of aviation medicine for a while. Though the Physiological Research Unit, Material Division, had a primary charter to develop and provide equipment, some of their physiological research work was overlapping with that of the School of Aviation Medicine. In 1934 it was decided that Wright Field would continue its focus on development and maintenance of the technology vital to the selection, classification and maintenance of the flyer, while the School would assume responsibility for those actual functions.[135]

Among the branches established within the School of Aviation Medicine's Research Department there were what you might expect. Along with physiology, biochemistry, pharmacology, opthalmology, biophysics, dentistry and the like, there was also included a branch dedicated to psychiatry and psychology. These two disciplines are at the heart of my dad's experience and that this branch was established during World War 2 will prove significant, in my opinion.[136]

With the establishment of an independent United States Air Force in shortly after, per the National Security Act of 1947, the demands of the School of Aviation Medicine in Texas increased significantly enough that all enlisted flight medicine courses, the Flight Nurse Course and Physiological Training Officers Course were transferred to the 3882nd School Group of a new branch at Gunter AFB in Alabama. Officially, the primary and advanced courses of aviation medicine, along with the research department, would stay at Randolph Field. It was 1950, just five years before my dad entered the service.[137]

During this period, Brigadier General Otis Benson was commander of the School. He would go to another command in 1953, but by 1956 Benson was back in command of the School and remained so until 1960. My dad spent his second six week TDY at the Gunter Branch of the School in 1958, during Benson's tenure.[138]

Benson was a dedicated and strong-willed figure and we can credit him with taking Harry Armstrong's aviation medicine advancements to their logical next leap forward -- with a little help from the debris of WW2.

Already holding a BA in biology and an MS in biochemistry, Otis Otto Benson Jr earned his MD in 1930 from Rush Medical College and that same year was commissioned into the US Army Medical Reserve Corps as a first lieutenant. In 1932, Benson graduated from the School of Aviation Medicine and followed this with the Army School of Tropical and Preventive Medicine as well as the Medical Field Service School in 1933. Following assignments in Hawaii and the Mayo Foundation, Benson attended Harvard where he further studied aviation physiology. Clearly an outstanding and inquisitive young officer, Benson's next assignment would send him to Wright Field.[139]

It was late 1940 when Benson took command of the Aeromedical Research Unit at Wright Field.

Here his story becomes very interesting, in my opinion, for in spite of the 1934 decision to cease the overlap in aviation medicine research between Wright Field and the School of Aviation Medicine, Benson pulled Aeromedical Research from its assigned Equipment Laboratory and put it back into the business of research into the physiological and biochemical aspects of flight medicine. He even established a clinical research branch.

This new Aeromedical Laboratory employed nationally known scientists and worked with the Mayo

Clinic. Its research pursuits led to the development of pressure suit technology that my father would become involved with in the 1950s. Benson's new unit even got its own building at Wright Field and its research continued through the subsequent war.[140]

I find it indicative of what might really be going on at Wright-Patterson throughout US Air Force history that Benson was free to stand up his Aeromedical Laboratory when just six years prior it was determined that the school at Randolph would manage the same research pursuits. Why double the effort? What was so special about what Benson's unit was doing that separated it from the School of Aviation Medicine?

Could Benson's actual mandate at Wright Field have been to develop a US Air Force manned space program?

Looking at the accomplishments under his leadership, Benson's lab did establish a centrifugal studies unit that developed an Anti-G suit and he also personally designed an oxygen delivery system for high altitude bomber crews. Though these developments were clearly within the 1934 decision to focus the Wright Field unit on equipment, the extent to which Benson was allowed to take the Aeromedical Laboratory is nagging. What exactly was going on?

It so happens that Benson was indeed aiming his units at Wright Field to pursue data and technology for human space travel -- years before an official program was thought to have been activated by the Air Force and long before other American medical investigators took an interest.[141]

Benson's units studied the possible effects of space travel on the human body, artificial cycles of day and night, planetary atmospheres, weightlessness, human physiology above 63,000 feet, and the design of space cabin simulators were begun at the School of Aviation Medicine during General Benson's tour as commandant. Clearly these pursuits would produce the equipment necessary for the Strategic Air Command's flight crew operations. However, possibly reflective of the previously suggested secret manned spaceflight attempt, it appears Benson might actually have been chasing the stars in a literal sense.[142]

In November 1951, Benson planned and sponsored the first international symposium on space medicine, which resulted in his book, *Physics and Medicine of the Upper Atmosphere,* with C.S. White, which became a standard reference text for work in this field.[143]

What This Means

It is my opinion that Benson's focus on space while at Wright Field very possibly led to an operational USAF manned space program, and may also have been mandated by a prior US interest in human exploration of space. I suspect a classified US Air Force manned space program exists to this day.

But let's return to Benson and the US Air Force of the 1950s for a while as much remains where my father's story is concerned.

The USAF and Operation Paperclip

In 1943, Benson shipped off to North Africa for wartime duty with the Fifteenth Air Force. He next

served in Italy and was ultimately assigned as top US Army air force surgeon in the Mediterranean. Having received the Legion of Merit, with an oak leaf cluster, and a Bronze Star, Benson returned to the US after the war ended and was made chief of the Medical Research Division. This made him supervisory commander of all technical activities of his Aeromedical Lab at Wright Field, the School of Aviation Medicine and, probably most pertinent to the rest of this book, Benson was the technical supervisor of the German scientists at the Aeromedical Center in Heidelberg, Germany.[144]

American military aviation medicine was about to become more interesting.

With receipt of his new command in late 1945, Otis Benson was now in charge of an important aerospace medical center in occupied Germany. The future of American military aviation science and the soon to be founded US Air Force would benefit in great leaps from a murky association with the notorious Operation Paperclip.

Among those Paperclip Germans discussed in a previous chapter was that physiologist and prominent research scientist Dr Hubertus Strughold, MD, PhD, who headed Aeromedical Research for the Luftwaffe from 1935 until the end of the war. Strughold also served in high-ranking medical positions for the US Air Force (and eventually NASA) becoming known as the 'Father of Space Medicine' for his work in the physiological and psychological effects of space travel, interests he had pursued since 1928.[145]

I would note to the reader two points: Strughold began his career in space medicine research in 1928, and his accomplishments include studying the psychological effects of space travel on the human mind[146]. These are very important points as one lends credibility to the possibility of an attempt at manned space travel decades prior than is usually accepted, and the other offers a clue to my dad's experience.

Especially as a result of Operation Paperclip, both the classified elements of US military space exploration technology and subsequent USAF involvement in psychological research programs have their impact on my dad's experience, courtesy of the influence and contributions of Dr Strughold.

Born in the Prussian province of Westphalia, Hubertus Strughold studied at Munich, Gottingen, Munster, and Wurzburg. His growing interest in aviation medicine led him to a Rockefeller Foundation Fellowship for a term in the United States, studying at Case University in Ohio and the University of Chicago. Strughold returned to Germany in 1933 where he became a professor at the Wurzburg Physiological Institute. Two years later, he was working for the Nazis.[147]

Selected to head up the Research Institute for Aviation Medicine in Berlin, under Hermann Goring's Ministry of Aviation, Strughold turned the organization into Germany's premier aeromedical research establishment. Though a civilian, Strughold's work was financed by the Luftwaffe and was dedicated to German re-armament. The Institute pioneered the study of medical effects of supersonic speeds and also high-altitude, which led to landmark experiments with altitude chambers.[148] You might already see where this is headed.

Strughold would not remain a civilian, his organization being absorbed into the Luftwaffe Medical Service would come with a commission. Strughold achieved the rank of Colonel and served in the newly renamed Air Force Institute for Aviation Medicine, under the command of General Erich

Hippke. In this capacity he would enter a dark association with human experimentation of an atrocious nature.[149]

While attending the conference in Nuremburg in October of 1942, Strughold and Hippke learned of the medical research conducted by their colleague Dr. Sigmund Rascher of the SS, who presented a lecture on his experiments in medical physiology using prisoners of the Dachau concentration camp[150]. Rascher's experiments on human subjects included immersion in freezing water, surgery without anesthetic, and being placed in air pressure chambers. In Rascher's work, we have some confirmation of my dad's claims, as you shall see.

Many of the human subjects died and after the war several of Strughold's close associates mentioned previously were put on trial for war crimes, but the good doctor convinced US authorities that there was nothing he could have done had he 'known' -- in spite of admitting attendance at the conference in which Rascher laid out the details in his presentation.[151]

After the war, Strughold came under suspicion when his name was listed with twelve individuals and organizations that were identified as having committed atrocities during the war. In late 1945, while he was working for the US as chief scientist at the Aeromedical Center, (which, incidentally, was located at the former Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Medical Research), Strughold was tagged for Operation Paperclip and the US Army whisked him away to Randolph Field and the School of Aviation Medicine. His assignment was Otis Benson's pet subject: space travel research.[152]

As a Paperclip scientist working in the United States, Strughold pursued the first landmark studies in atmosphere control, weightlessness, and disruption of time cycles. These all scream 'manned space travel'. Along with the obvious physiological aspects of the research, there was always present the psychological focus.[153]

There are logical reasons for studying pilot stress factors, but Strughold's work was clearly not limited to standard cockpit simulations. Having originated the first known space cabin simulator, Strughold's subjects spent impressive lengths of time inside the small enclosed environment to determine the limits of human physical and mental stresses in space. It's pretty obvious what Benson and the USAF were pursuing and the German scientist's contribution was appreciated. US citizenship for Strughold came in 1956, though two years later he would be investigated for WW2 war crimes, ultimately be exonerated by the Justice Department.[154]

Strughold was at the center of research and design of pressure suits, life support systems, and training of all flight surgeons relative to the Gemini program. Naturally the methods used in America did not involve lethal human experimentation, but Strughold and his peers possessed the knowledge gleaned from such dark practices to benefit of the United States' first pioneering steps into the unknown. In 1962, Strughold would be named chief scientist of NASA's Aerospace Medical Division and provide the same expertise for the Apollo program. It was for Gemini that my dad did ground testing of the flight suits being developed during 1957-58.[155]

What might Strughold have had to do with my dad's service?

Hubertus Strughold would not entirely escape scrutiny for his past. When several of his German Ministry colleagues were put on trial in 1947, Strughold had indeed submitted reference documents in

their defense. He had evaded further investigation at the time, and had been exonerated in the 1958 case, but in 1974 was investigated again by the Immigration and Naturalization Service, though that case was dropped due to lack of evidence. The Justice Department apparently decided to ignore their prior ruling and looked at Strughold again in 1983, but dropped the matter when the much vaunted space scientist died three years later. Ironically, it would be US Army documents that would cast the final judgment on Strughold.[156]

By 1993, much more was known about what had gone on at Dachau and Strughold's name turned up on a US Army Intelligence list of war criminals wanted by US authorities. One by one, many honors given to Hubertus Strughold were stripped, ultimately the removal of his name from the Aeromedical Library at Brooks AFB. In 2006, Strughold was even removed from the International Space Hall of Fame in Alamogordo.[157]

What was it that investigators suspected Strughold had done while employed in Nazi Germany's Luftwaffe?

A 2004 investigation revealed that six children from the Brandenburg Euthanasia Center were handed over to Strughold's laboratory in Berlin where they were subjected to experiments in high altitude simulation in vacuum chambers. These children were forced into epileptic seizures in an attempt to simulate altitude sickness, like hypoxia. The children amazingly did not die. But due to a lack of direct evidence to prove Strughold's personal involvement, resistance to further erasure of his name from prestigious awards and facilities emerged based upon his significant contribution to the American space program.[158]

In this troubling situation, I see confirmation of my dad's claim about his altitude chamber training. My father had long ago told me of watching old WW2 German films of human altitude chamber tests. But is it really true?

The Issue of Nazi Training Films

John Marks in *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control* (Times Books, 1979) writes: *"Under the cover of 'aviation medicine' inmates were crushed to death in high altitude pressure chambers (to learn how high pilots could safely fly)"*[159]

My dad never even hinted that children were the subjects of anything he saw so I doubt he saw the particular experiments involving the Brandenburg center subjects. However, he did tell me that the human test subjects were from concentration camps so I suspect these were films of the Dachau tests by Sigmund Rascher which Strughold likely learned about, and perhaps saw, at that 1942 conference in Nuremburg. Specifics described by my father are indeed gruesome.

As disturbing as this revelation may be to some readers, consider the position of American military aviation scientists. Rather than risk our own personnel or anyone else, why not at least learn from the data already available? I'm confident that was how they looked at it back then.

I am confident that my dad was probably telling the truth where the gruesome Nazi film footage is concerned. Let's continue with making the case for a USAF manned space program.

Goose-Stepping to the Stars

Another of the Heidelberg scientists recruited by Paperclip and assigned to the School of Aviation Medicine at Randolph AFB was Heinz Haber.

A physicist, Heinz Haber also served as a reconnaissance pilot in the Luftwaffe until 1942 when he was assigned to the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute for Physics. Interestingly, Haber's work there involved building a diffraction spectrograph which implies all sorts of interesting possibilities. Through the late 1940s, Haber worked closely with Strughold on space medicine advances. Together with his brother, Dr Fritz Haber, Heinz developed the simulation of weightlessness via parabolic flight. Heinz was well known for co-hosting Walt Disney's 'Man In Space' television show with Werner von Braun and was the chief science consultant to Disney studios. Heinz was also an associate physicist at UCLA.[160]

Frtiz Haber originated the parabolic training idea for astronauts, simulating weightlessness via flying a plane like a roller coaster. The now famous KC-135 'Vomit Comet' is the legacy of Fritz and his brother. But before all the fun in America, Fritz Haber worked for the German aircraft company Junkers in Dessau during the war. His contribution there also resulted in a lasting American space program legacy: Fritz Haber created the piggyback system of missile delivery which NASA would later modify to transport the Space Shuttle on the back of a 747.[161]

At the end of the war, Fritz missed capture by the Russians only because he had been in western Germany for the birth of his son when the zones were seized. He was instead captured by the United States and brought into the Paperclip fold, like his brother. Interestingly, along with his work for the US Air Force, Fritz would work for Avco Lycoming[162], a rocket engine manufacturer that was funded with capital from W. A. Harriman with whom readers of my breakaway research will be familiar.

I mention the Habers not because there is evidence of Nazi atrocity in their background[163] but rather for the suggestion of perception management and breakaway association, respectively.

Heinz' association with Disney was for the purpose of promoting human space exploration, specifically for civilian consumption. That Disney produced such a series is not without a national interest motive, specifically the implied defense benefits of American superiority off planet. However, Fritz' employment with Avco could imply some vague connection to a private space program, in particular to the Prussian group that I have written about elsewhere.[164]

And speaking of Prussians, there is another of Benson's recruits to whom we must return: Dr. Walter Schreiber.

MREs On Mars?

You may be wondering why the story of Major General Dr Walter Schreiber has anything to do with my father's story. In an examination of strange events that might suggest a secret USAF space program, anything associated with secret space program lore may be pertinent.

The possibility that a classified space program started by the US Air Force in the 1950's may explain aspects of my dad's story will be discussed later, but let's consider one last nagging issue about Dr Schreiber with this topic in mind.

That Schreiber's alleged assignment for the School of Aviation Medicine was research into survival and nutrition in remote locations[165] is suggestive. If you assume that this was merely to support deployed USAF personnel on Diego Garcia or downed pilots somewhere in Mongolia, you have to ask just what did a Nazi scientist know about such relatively mundane issues that Otis Benson and the Joint Chiefs spent so much energy and concern to keep him in the fold and facilitate his escape to South America?

What was Walter Schreiber *really* doing for the US Air Force School of Aviation Medicine? Might his survival and nutrition research have been in anticipation of remote environments *not on Earth*?

It could explain some things.

SUMMARY

The facts demonstrate the direct link between Operation Paperclip and the USAF School of Aviation Medicine, which my father attended twice. In fact, aviation medicine seemed to have driven much of Operation Paperclip to begin with, something I admittedly had not known before working on the research for this book.

It was the US Army Air Force that recruited 58 German scientists via Operation Paperclip[166]. It was German aviation medical research and development from which these scientists were drawn. It was to Otis Benson's aeromedical wonderland they were assigned. It would be the wartime atrocities committed by several of the Air Force Paperclip Germans that would be brought to light and ultimately tarnish the reputation of Operation Paperclip itself.

I came away with an impression I didn't have before, that Operation Paperclip's biggest beneficiary was the US Air Force. It was as if the Air Force, and the US military in general, had a *'don't ask, don't tell'* policy regarding their Nazi scientists' wartime activities.

CONCLUSION

My dad's claims about Nazi material in his training are valid. What these Germans were assigned to do for US military aviation medicine (and other fields) suggest that the US Air Force was building an operational and ultimately classified manned space program. Such a program in the early years of Cold War tension would explain the highest level of secrecy applied to the project my dad said he was assigned to in Arizona, and that secrecy would justify extreme measures like hypnotic suppression.

And that brings us to the next chapter.

The historical facts repeatedly suggest a secret USAF space program developing years prior to NASA. USAF aviation medicine has proven to be *space* medicine all along. With the potential Nazi Bell technology link to a USAF space program via Hubertus Strughold, it appears that Otis Benson's push for the stars may have taken our airmen into strange and exotic spaces.[167]

And that is why we must venture into the bizarre realms of the human mind for it turns out that our ambitious flyboys were also keenly interested in this particular plane of inner space. What would psychology have to do with outer space and especially my dad's story?

CHAPTER ELEVEN

Climb in the back with your head in the clouds
And you're gone...
-- John Lennon & Paul McCartney

There are logical reasons for the Air Force space scientists to be studying psychology.

I have already mentioned Strughold's space cabin simulator, which Benson emulated at Wright-Patterson[168]. You don't want your crews cracking up out there so it would be prudent to know what the cold isolation of lengthy space travel could do to the human psyche. The better to identify the best profile for astronaut candidates.

But space explorer recruitment was not the limit of US Air Force interest in psychology.

You might think I'd rather not go here, but go here we must, in spite of what it might mean to my

father's story.

Why are we looking to MKULTRA for an answer to my dad's mysterious tale? Because MKULTRA concerned itself with the mysteries of the human mind and how to control it. What did MKULTRA have to do with the US Air Force?

In the mid 1990s, after I had earned a commission and became an agent for the Air Force OSI, Colonel Lundy and I had one of our late night discussions as we walked around his sleeping neighborhood. Such discussions are more like briefings and in this particular instance he was informing me of sensitive details of my father's service. Colonel Lundy had known my dad for almost forty years by that time and, as he always did, he spoke in his southern manner.

"Your Pappy is what they call manic-depressive. You know it, he knows it. You grew up dealing with his mood swings. The extent of his moods wasn't entirely his nature, however...

"After he was out in the desert working for Wilson, they hypnotized him to suppress his memories. The hypnosis was linked to the full moon. It had to stay as much in place as they could set it for the rest of his life. You look up and see the full moon every month, he sees the same damned moon you do. But when he sees it, that hypnosis reactivates the block on his memory of that assignment.

"The effect on his mind is that his memories are foggy where that is concerned. Now, with time it can and has broken down a bit, year by year. It's why you're able to get more out of him. That's the problem with the method they used. Keying it to the full moon is a good idea but instead of blocking it out, your pappy just has a harder time pulling it all up. You have to realize that it has been almost forty years since they did it ."

Colonel Lundy had dropped a bombshell on my perception of my dad's tale. Who likely had administered the hypnosis? Was it voluntary? What did it say about what was going in the Arizona underground that was so sensitive and classified so highly that nondisclosure orders and the threat of prison were not enough to secure it among its own personnel?

I'll offer my answers to those questions but the first order of business is to determine what evidence exists to suggest that the US Air Force would even use such methods. This is where MKULTRA and the CIA enter the stage.

For those who aren't familiar with it, MKULTRA's roots date back to 1945 and Operation Paperclip. It is important for the reader to know what John Marks says in the beginning of his book on America's mind control quest: *"Nothing the CIA ever did in its postwar search for mind-control technology came close to the callous killing of the Nazi 'aviation research'"* [169]

After the war, what the OSS captured of the Nazi mind control data was gathered and sent back to the United States. This included advances in hypnosis and experiments with mescaline. None of this German research was ever revealed publicly.[170]

The Nazis started it and the US pursuit of mind control followed in late 1947 at the Naval Medical Research Institute which ran Operation CHATTER to find a drug that would essentially make an enemy agent spill his secrets. During the six years of this program, the recently fashioned Central Intelligence Agency stood up Project BLUEBIRD on 20 April 1950, a program initially dedicated to developing effective interrogation techniques, was signed into existence by then CIA Director Roscoe Hillenkoetter, he of ufology's long adored MJ-12 legend.[171]

What is interesting to me about BLUEBIRD's original purpose in developing a foolproof interrogation system is that it called for use of three-man teams consisting of a psychiatrist, a technician and a polygraph examiner trained in hypnosis[172]. It turns out hypnosis was on the 'to do' list of the CIA before any of these programs came to be and it came to be an integral element of much that was done under these programs. The other thing on their minds was a fear of mind control[173].

This concern that the Soviets might brainwash captured American pilots and operatives and turn them against us led to BLUEBIRD being refocused to explore a way to block mind control and thus was it determined the only way to do that was to understand it, which in turn required learning how to use mind control. This led to some unsavory activities like electro-shock to induce 'selective' amnesia[174]. In this we enter the ballpark of what I had been told was done to my dad a few years later.

BLUEBIRD was responsible for mind control research for a little over a year before it was refashioned into Project ARTICHOKE by 1952 inspired by an interest in gaining control over an agent's mind and controlling his will. It is with ARTICHOKE we first learn of keen US Air Force interest in these mind control programs, its specific concern here being interrogation techniques that would be used on downed pilots. But USAF interest in mind control would expand.[175]

Under Project ARTICHOKE, the CIA sought again to focus on inducing amnesia, as it had under BLUEBIRD. Ingeniously the agency scientists discovered that "the greater amnesia produced, the more effective the results"[176]. Isn't that the most profound thing you ever heard? *'The more I hammer your head, the more it will hurt and bleed'*

Among the service branches most interested in ARTICHOKE was the US Air Force[177], and ARTICHOKE's first behavioral research expert Morse Allen's primary fascination was hypnosis. In fact, ARTICHOKE scientists used reference to 'medical treatment' as a euphemism for hypnosis, they were so dedicated to its application[178].

Among the program's objectives was to identify a subject from the one in five determined to be a good subject for hypnosis and use it to create a splinter personality from within said subject[179]. Another was to apply hypnosis to a field agent to embed mission directives that could only be activated via preset signals and not be recalled by the agent afterwards. In this we see a precedent for US Air Force interest in practical applications of hypnosis for operational needs.[180]

ARTICHOKE officially closed in 1953 with the end of the Korean War but was actually refashioned into Project MKULTRA. That year, CIA Director Allen Dulles enlisted the expertise of neurologist Dr Harold Wolff to pursue knowledge of the mind control techniques which the Agency suspected were employed by the Soviets. Wolff brought his associate Lawrence Hinkle from Cornell University on board and they became the new gurus of brainwashing and mind control research on behalf of the US intelligence community via the CIA.[181]

The funny thing about that is that the US Air Force, as well as the Army, was running its own parallel program on mind control at the same time[182]. Led by Colonel James Monroe, USAF, who would eventually jump over to the Agency; and Dr Fred Williams of the Air Force Psychological Warfare Division, this vaguely alluded program leaves one hard-pressed to identify. Monroe would go on to oversee resources for various mind control research projects of the CIA including that of the

legendary Ewen Cameron[183] who developed his process of 'psychic driving' to re-pattern human behavior using looped recordings on subjects sequestered in sleep rooms in 1953 and by 1957 was into sensory deprivation research.

One of the specific methods in which the Agency and its earlier ARTICHOKE customers had expressed interest was the desire to trigger hypnotically induced amnesia at the right time[184]. That they were even working on this in 1959 suggests to me that basic methods of triggering operationally selective amnesia was something that might have been available by the time my father was on his assignment at Gunter AFB in 1958.

Is it possible that the parallel Air Force ARTICHOKE program discovered the method of linking the hypnosis to the full moon as a result of these mind control pursuits?

I say that is entirely possible. It is interesting to note that by 1960 the CIA was committed to inducing more durable amnesia instantly via posthypnotic suggestion. What is it that was done to my father just a couple years prior but this very thing, the posthypnotic 'suggestion' being the sight of the full moon every month for the remainder of his life? Did a US Air Force breakthrough in hypnotic suggestion move the CIA to further pursue the technique?

The timing is compelling and suggests to me that what Colonel Lundy said was done to my father has the history to back it up.

Having established a direct US Air Force connection to the CIA's legendary MKULTRA mind control programs and demonstrated a specific involvement in hypnotically-induced amnesia, there remains another major possibility regarding my father's story.

It may be that what he said happened in eastern Arizona, in the subterranean realm of the hidden race, is not what happened at all. Or maybe not exactly.

Planted Narrative of Memories?

One of things MKULTRA scientists explored was whether false memories could be implanted.

Lest the reader assume that US intelligence didn't get into this stuff until after Operation Paperclip brought the Nazi version to America, the OSS had been goofing around with it during the war. They had considered using hypnosis on a captured German, manipulating him to hate the Gestapo and assassinate Hitler[185]. The notorious Richard Helms, who had interviewed Hitler prior to the war, was an early OSS proponent of mind control research. OSS behavioral science pursuits had served the agency well and they valued the military utility of psychiatry and psychology, sociology and anthropology[186], and thus were mind control scientists certain to be at the top of the intelligence community shopping list for German scientists.

It was spring of 1943 in Basel, Switzerland, and Dr Albert Hofmann of the Sandoz chemical company was riding home on his bicycle when he suddenly felt dizzy and made his way home where he laid down in a pleasant spin. This was followed by 'an uninterrupted stream of fantastic images of extraordinary plasticity and vividness, accompanied by an intense kaleidoscope-like play of colors.' After the effect wore off, Hofmann suspected that he had been exposed to the LSD he had created in

his lab.[187]

On that day in 1943, while Hofman was tripping on LSD, a couple of hundred miles away in an SS lab the Gestapo medical research staff was playing around with mescaline at Dachau. They hoped to 'eliminate the will of the person examined' specifically in the pursuit of mind control[188]. Did they succeed? Some think so.

It is John Marks' description of the work of Albert Hofmann and that first LSD trip in 1943 that offers a hint at what I think may have happened to my dad. Such pursuits were reminiscent of 'fantastic powers of ancient legends, comparable to the spells and potions of wizards'. Whatever the Nazi scientists were doing with such stuff, nothing they had done with mind control experiments was revealed to the American public at the time of Operation Paperclip. The OSS' successor CIA would maintain the same level of secrecy on their own dabbling in the fairy realm of the psyche.

The Operation Paperclip connection we can look to for this is Dr Friedrich 'Fritz' Hoffman whom the US Army Chemical Corps had obtained and teamed up with the technical director of the Chemical and Radiological Laboratories, Dr L. Wilson Greene whose vision of a new kind of warfare led to pursuit of hallucinogenic and psychotomimetic drugs. Hoffman was the man for the job as he was a recognized expert in the study of mescaline, fly agaric, and many other natural substances known to open mental realms since ancient times. As much as an impact as this may have had on the Army, the guys really impressed with Hoffman and Greene's work were running the Special Operations Division of the CIA.[189]

By the late 1950s, the era of my dad's service, Greene and the CIA were testing LSD and other drugs were being tested on army and naval personnel[190]. Consent was reportedly not a firm issue, contributing to the later controversy over MKULTRA in general[191]. This going on in the military at this particular time raises two questions: How do we know they didn't test this on air force personnel, like my dad? Might my father have been subject to one of these hallucinogenic psychochemical warfare experiments?

This potentially changes the perspective entirely. Is it possible that everything my dad described in his strange tale was nothing more than drug-induced fantasy? Might his involvement in an experiment have been suppressed via the hypnosis? Would they have gone to such lengths simply to keep a security lid on an experiment?

As John Marks puts it: *"Only one aspect remained constant during the quarter-century of active research: The CIA's interest in controlling the human mind had to remain absolutely secret."*[192]

The military participation in this research was directly associated with the CIA one way or another. Everyone was already playing around with hypnosis so why not use it to ensure tighter security? Especially with research the parent organization insisted had to remain 'absolutely secret'? If my dad had been subject to the covert drug research, he could have been hypnotized to suppress that involvement.

But what about the US Air Force specifically? We already know of the USAF enthusiasm for facets of MKULTRA starting with ARTICHOKE, but hallucinogenic drugs?

To Sandoz laboratory where LSD was developed during the war, a Sandoz executive would later reveal, various Americans had made inquiries about LSD -- including the US Air Force.[193]

During the 1950s, the US military was already funding their own drug research programs under the auspices of chemical warfare. They could obtain LSD by the ton, if they so desired. US military security agencies in particular supported LSD research with experts from the Missouri Institute of Psychiatry, the Naval Medical Research Institute, the New York Psychiatric Institute and various other university departments around the northeast. In fact, Eli Lily, one of only two manufacturers of LSD in the west, provided its entire inventory of the drug to the US military and the Agency.[194]

John Marks points out that by 1953 the CIA was using LSD operationally before testing was even complete and by 1957 six drugs were being used in the field by the CIA. *"One speck of LSD could take a strong-willed man and turn his most basic perceptions into willowy shadows. Time, space, right, wrong, order, and the notion of what was possible all took on new faces."*[195]

If the Agency was going forward with operational use of LSD and other drugs, I see no reason to think the US military was not. The US Air Force would not have run the aforementioned parallel program to waste resources and effort on simple redundancy. I propose they were doing the same as the CIA within their own context.

The CIA placed secrecy paramount to all considerations, and by association the military customers of their programs did likewise. We can surmise that the USAF aviation medicine command would seek to keep a lid on whatever experiments which my father could have been involved. Especially with an operational application, I can safely suggest that the USAF mind scientists would have tried hypnosis to suppress my dad's memories of participation in whatever activity had involved LSD or any other such drug.

Now we reach the intersection of CIA hypnosis and drug research as it pertains to MKULTRA mind control and my father.

If the answer to my dad's weird tale is a drug-induced fantasy suppressed through hypnosis, then it appears there may not have been any briefing on a 'Roswell' scenario at Wright-Patterson. Neither might there have been any mysterious underground search and rescue operation, no encounter with people from another civilization in Arizona. It could all be explained by participation in an aviation medicine experiment using LSD or some other drug.

But what about my analysis that he was not making it all up? How could it have been so real to my dad?

I have some ideas on that but first we must consider the power of these substances. Remember that the CIA had employed the German Paperclip scientists who had dabbled with mescaline and other long known natural hallucinogenics. The Agency also sent its scientists around the world to obtain various samples of other natural hallucinogenics known to various tribal cultures for their properties of seeming to transport the user between dimensions[196].

Many people in our times have used recreational drugs. Some have experience with these very hallucinogenics with which the CIA had dabbled because they became popular in subsequent years

among the drug culture. As you might imagine, I am not among those hobbyists, but it turns out that I can contribute my two cents on this issue.

Captain Walter's Wild Trip

It was late summer 2010 and I was not yet forty-seven years old. I woke up one morning and, upon opening my eyes, the ceiling spun wildly. Actually, it tumbled repeatedly down on me with the walls. Startling was one way you could describe the experience. I quickly closed my eyes and the sensation subsided and stopped, though my anxiety did not. Opening my eyes again, the ceiling and walls spun and came down upon me. I shut my eyes.

Anyone who knows me will tell you I'm not a heavy drinker. I enjoy the occasional scotch, have red wine on hand for a meal maybe once a week or so, and simply never drink to excess. So for the record, it wasn't a hangover that I was experiencing. Not being a recreational drug enthusiast, it wasn't anything in that category either. Yet there I was in the throes of vertigo. What might it have been? An impending ear infection?

I could not stand without completely falling over, so I didn't try that after the first attempt. I crawled to the bathroom to go pee and then crawled back down the hall to the living room where I pulled myself onto the sofa and there I basically spent the next four days. But it was on the second day that something extraordinary happened.

It wasn't difficult to fall asleep after lying on the couch all day and not moving. That first night I slept deeply but on the morning of the second day, in my last minutes of sleep, I experienced -- to paraphrase Albert Hofmann's experience -- 'an uninterrupted stream of fantastic images and vividness' including a massive 'kaleidoscopic play of colors' in a night sky. The most incredible sky I ever saw awake or in a dream state, with the most beautiful aurora borealis undulating slowly, as if on cosmic steroids.

And that does not even begin to do justice to the sound I heard during all of this: singularly the most pleasing musical tones ever to flow into my ears, playing a gentle cacophony on the cool night breeze.

It was wondrous.

If I could go back to that dream, not a second would I waste to get there. I have also wanted to hear that music again and will hear glimpses of it for the remainder of my life. At times, I yearn to hear that music again. What exactly was this dream? It was on the level of a vision, not just a dream. I had never experienced any dream so distinctly lifelike, it was that vivid. Waking from it was like being pulled from Heaven and held back on Earth.

Nothing short of astonishing. Naturally, I had to figure out what had caused this dream or if it meant anything.

My first inclination was to analyze the situation and sure enough the answer presented itself pretty quickly. I reviewed what had I eaten or drank the night before. No alcohol, no rich foods late at night -- because having woke up with vertigo the morning prior, I had only eaten crackers or toast and drank water the entire day and evening. I next considered what I had been ingesting lately that was

different from my routine, and that led me to the ultimate explanation: for a period of fourteen days in a row I had consumed two large cans of my preferred energy drink.

What could energy drinks do to me? These were the tall boy cans. The beverage was carbonated and blueberry flavored, sugar free, with a ton of caffeine. But my research uncovered that it was none of that. It was another ingredient: guarana.

I discovered that guarana, a caffeine intense fruit seed of a plant common in Brazil, is known to cause vertigo when enough of the stuff is ingested. Consumption of more than 300mg per day can cause serious side effects -- or even death[197]. I was consuming twice that amount per day for two weeks.

If a natural substance ingested in a beverage over the course of several days caused the conditions under which I felt literally transported to another time and place -- experiencing the intensely lucid sights and sensations that I cannot forget -- then I present this experience as my personal bonafides and join many who have experienced what can be done to human perception through artificially induced means.

I will add that if what I described is anything like what you recreational trippers experience, I understand why you go back to it. But being who I am, I won't even ingest an ounce of guarana ever again because I am in no way willing to experience vertigo to go back to that place.

Think about it: I had my wild trip on an overdose of a simple damned energy drink. Imagine if my dad had been administered LSD or mescaline or any other substance the USAF was using at the time. No wonder he believed what he was telling me. I believe what I saw in my dream!

I know the possibility that my dad's tale was nothing more than a drug-induced mind trip will be disappointing to some readers. It is to me. However, it must be put on the table and for a very good reason, not the least of which being that the USAF drug experimentation is a point of historical fact during the time my dad was on active duty in the very command that would have been involved in it.

But I cannot overlook that there is indeed a disconnected quality to my dad's tale and this could suggest an artificiality to his recall of the events.

An Objective Inspection

My father described to me a flight from the base in Alabama, headed ostensibly to a base in Texas, which was diverted to Ohio. Specifically, the flight was diverted somewhere over Mississippi or Louisiana and went to Wright-Patterson AFB instead. On this flight, my dad described a USAF intelligence officer, a Major Milton Knight, who emerged from the forward cabin and informed them of the change in plans. After this flight, he told me of the briefing and revelations at Wright-Patterson.

Notice the detail. My dad recalled that he was on a military aircraft headed for a base in Texas, likely Randolph or Kelly, and the plane was diverted over Mississippi or Louisiana and went on to a specific base in Ohio. So what about after the briefings at Wright-Patterson? What about the flight to Arizona?

My dad never described getting to Arizona. For that matter, he never described returning to Alabama where he had been in training at Gunter AFB.

I find this curious because I've done a lot of air travel in my professional life, including military service. When I tell someone about my deployment to Saudi Arabia with the USAF, I generally don't exclude the commercial flights between Dayton and South Carolina or the flight from there to Frankfurt to meet up with the military charter flight which itself. That was singularly the most uncomfortable damned flight I ever took. The flights were part of the experience for various reasons comical or otherwise.

My point is that I find it odd my father would not have described the flight to Arizona, particularly for such a bizarre assignment. Because he described the flight to Wright-Patterson AFB, I suppose that it could have actually happened. This is supported by a very real world association to that base via his specialty in physiological training. However, I must question whether the flight to Arizona happened, particularly under the scenario we are presently exploring (and there is another). The missing flights are not the only anomalies to consider.

Upon further analysis, I noticed that my dad's story jumps from one episode to the next. First the flight to Ohio and then the briefings at Wright-Patterson, and then he's in Arizona working for Wilson in the underground location. Finally he's encountering the Other People and the guy is killed. The story ends there.

Something seems to be missing.

I accept that he was in Alabama at the end of the training TDY primarily because his DD214 says he was there, but I know he was there because it was right before leaving Montgomery with my mom who confirmed it. Even more notably, the other stuff about flying the helicopters in the subterranean world and the technology transfer was never actually put into a logical sequence of events.

How long was my dad in Arizona? Did he fly helicopters underground before or after encountering the Other People who killed his associate? The problem is that he didn't specify and that nags at me. As an investigator, I want to put it all together in an identifiable string of events, a timeline that makes sense and lends some credibility to the whole story, but I can't. Upon close inspection, my dad's account does not come across like a series of things that happened.

But it does fit the telling of a dream.

Think about the vivid dreams you've had. Be honest with yourself, a dream is usually a bunch of scenes that come one right after another and most often goes from one to the next without a linking narrative. That is what my dad's story is like, a dream. But it still may not quite be a simple dream.

SUMMARY

The Nazis originated the seed of mind control research during WW2 and this data was captured by the OSS. Operation Paperclip Germans contributed to the US pursuit of mind control research by the CIA.

CIA scientists explored the frontiers of LSD and mushrooms, discovering what they could and could not do in the never-ending pursuit to create a robot agent entirely at their command, also finding along the way what could be done with memories, suppressing and fabricating them alike.

What we've learned in this chapter demonstrates that the US Air Force was definitely involved in CIA mind control research and its applications. The Air Force went off in its own direction with a program parallel to what the CIA was doing with hypnosis and hallucinogens through the duration of MKULTRA, right through the period of my dad's enlistment and beyond.

CONCLUSION

Because I was told that my father had undergone hypnotic suppression, I must assume that the technique administered to him was among the products of MKULTRA further developed by USAF aeromedical scientists at Wright-Patterson AFB.

My dad's story may have been a planted narrative experienced in a drug-induced semi-dream state. It may very well have actually been put into his head while he slept in a room in a laboratory at Wright-Patterson AFB. The CIA research into using hypnosis to create an assassin is evidence of that this technology was pursued.

That would explain a lot, if my dad had actually been part of a program conducted by USAF aviation medical scientists using hallucinogenics, first in their pursuit to understand what could be done to counter Soviet brainwashing of downed pilots and then perhaps to provide fabricated cover, i.e. a planted narrative, for sensitive operations. Because my dad was an aviation medicine asset and this particular USAF command was specifically linked to CIA MKULTRA programs, it makes sense that he could have been a test subject.

But what's this about a 'planted narrative'? Am I suggesting that the Arizona operation and all its otherworldiness was purposely implanted into my father's mind? Could the US Air Force do such a thing?

History demonstrates that it is indeed possible that my dad's wild story could have been implanted into his memory to cover a sensitive experiment.

Or a classified operation...

CHAPTER TWELVE

In a cavern, in a canyon
Excavating for a mine...
...Light she was and like a fairy
And her shoes were number nine...

-- Percy Montrose/Barker Bradford

It would wrap this analysis up very nicely if we were to accept that my dad's imaginative tale was merely an episode in the annals of US military psychological warfare experiments.

But that won't work, primarily because of my sources: Colonel Lundy, a pseudonym for a man I choose not to name, and another man who does not want to be named, whom I will call 'Billy Les'. These two provided me with information that implies two possibilities, one of which just doesn't fly.

What did these sources provide that make me willing to cite them when I can't identify them? Independent corroboration, of a sort, for my dad's story.

Colonel Lundy you know already. You also know what he told me: that my dad's story actually happened and that Wilson is (by now likely was) a living human being. That an intelligence agent senior to me affirmed those elements of the story demands we question the conclusion that it was all a drug-induced dream.

Of course, there is the option where Lundy was part of the experiment to begin with and is simply still covering for it, invoking the elements of the dream fantasy. Lundy was in US Army Special Forces by 1958.[198]

Ah, but wait. Colonel Lundy invoking elements of a fabricated dream story forty years later suggests

he would have to know those elements. If merely a dream my father had under the influence of hallucinogenics, how would anyone know? The option of a planted narrative gains some credibility in this instance.

It is the same for Billy Les' contribution to my soft interrogation of my dad. It was Bill who asked me the name of the intelligence officer who emerged from the forward cabin on the flight to Wright-Patterson, and specifically asked if this officer was a 'Major Milton Knight'. I didn't know at the time so I agreed to find out, promptly setting up a lunch with my dad the next day. I got my dad onto The Subject and, doing my best 'forgetful Inspector Columbo' bit, asked him, "That intel officer on the plane to Wright-Pat, uh...the Major... What was his name again...?"

I was a bit stunned when he said, without skipping a beat, "Major Milton Knight."

That happened. I can't prove it to you, but I'm willing to put it print here and stand by it. When I got back to Billy Les and confirmed it, he was impressed, too. Unless Bill was also working on the experiment with my dad at Wright-Patterson back in 1958, this is a significant piece of information. It's a compelling suggestion that something about my dad's story is true, as he told it.

Of course, it must be acknowledged that even with a USAF drug experiment scenario, the trip to Wright-Patterson AFB could have happened. That my dad included this flight in his story, but no others, also suggests it. I can't reduce the significance of Billy Les, over forty years later, knowing the name of the intelligence officer on that plane back in 1958. I don't know the specifics of Bill's personal interest in this event, I can only surmise it relates in a general association to his own research.[199]

For the sake of further analysis, let's proceed with the idea that my dad not only went to Wright-Patterson AFB, as claimed, but also did indeed go to Arizona. I ask the reader to continue with me on this because there is actually a reason to entertain this possibility. A real world possibility may provide an alternative scenario to a drug experiment option while still including it and the accompanying hypnosis as well.

Air Force Underground

Assuming, for sake of analysis, that the briefing at Wright-Patterson AFB happened and my dad went on to Arizona. We must therefore ask the questions: What could the briefing actually have been about? And why might the USAF have actually sent my dad to Arizona in 1958?

There are two considerations here. Let's look at the first.

The briefing at Wright-Patterson would have obviously pertained to information regarding whatever my dad was really going to do in Arizona. If his strange version was a cover then I propose the purpose was to provide cover for something highly classified. So what in 1958 might that have been?

There are two air force bases in Arizona that existed in 1958. The Tuscon Army Air Field, established in 1940, was renamed Davis-Monthan AFB in 1948. Luke AFB, established as an army air field in 1941, was reactivated in 1951 as Luke AFB.[200]

In 1958, Luke AFB was placed under the Tactical Air Command and re-designated as the 4510th

Combat Crew Training Wing. Davis-Monthan was under the Air Defense Command at that time. Starting in the 1960s, there ended up being 18 nuclear missile silos in the greater Tucson area.[201]

Might my dad have been actually assigned to some function USAF missile silo or radar station construction operations? It's possible but it doesn't make sense where his specialty was concerned. Since the silos date only as far back as 1962[202], it's even less likely. But that doesn't eliminate the possibility of some other underground operation, as missile silos and radars stations were not the only facilities that were built underground.

A lot of talk about underground bases goes on in the alternative research community, especially in the 'discipline' of ufology. Much of it is hearsay, wishful thinking, or simply tall tales. That's why I'm going to stay away from such stuff in this analysis. Instead we will consider facilities of more credible record and sources because there is actually enough to be found there.

The question is: was the US Air Force involved in underground facilities other than missile silos and radar stations? Indeed they were, as the underground facilities at Wright-Patterson AFB[203] and inside Cheyenne Mountain outside of Denver famously demonstrate.

In 1959, the *Air Force Times* reported the USAF intention to build an underground SAGE radar facility with the US Department of the Interior in Kennesaw Mountain, Georgia, and two years before that the US Army announced plans to build an underground rocket assembly factory inside Green Mountain near Huntsville, Alabama, where the Redstone Arsenal and the Huntsville Industrial Expansion Committee were acquiring a lot of real estate in pursuit of a planned 'subterranean Pentagon' of sorts to the tune of 200 acres.[204]

You may have heard of the RAND Corporation. It's a major think tank that has been around for almost almost seventy years. But did you know it started out in 1946 as US Air Force 'Project RAND'? Its original charter was far-reaching research projects for the air force. As the newly founded RAND Corporation, the organization's pursuits included engineering, economics, mathematics, physics and social science. By the late 1950s, RAND had moved into issues concerning underground base construction for the US military.[205]

In March of 1959, RAND hosted an event dedicated to examining the difficulties of protecting deep underground installations or those inside mountains[206]. Did they mean planned installations? Or were there already such facilities in existence?

A 1960 RAND report commissioned by the US Air Force identified twelve potential sites for underground facilities that would be at least 1,000 feet below the surface[207]. Since 1957 RAND had been specifically investigating issues relative to defending hardened underground installations from nuclear attack[208]. The continuity of government facilities project had established protection for the President and Congress starting in 1952[209], so if such subterranean facilities as those at Mt Weather existed earlier that decade, what had the US Air Force built by 1958?

That's difficult to answer because, according to Richard Sauder, author of two excellent books full of real data on actual underground military and government facility construction, the Deputy Director of Engineering and Construction for the US Army Corps of Engineers Lloyd A. Duscha told a 1980 conference audience that *"I must deviate a little because s**everal of the most interesting facilities that have been designed***

and constructed by the Corps are classified. *"*[210]

Sauder also points out other comments attributed to Duscha about sensitive underground facilities consisting of chambers 50 feet wide and 100 feet high. Sauder notes that Duscha refers to a *"critical and unusual nature of these projects..."*[211]

So again I ask what might the Air Force have been doing underground? In 1949, USAF engineers penetrated into the Manzano range near Albuquerque, New Mexico, constructing chambers 30 feet high, 40 feet wide and 100 feet long off of main tunnels[212]. The 1960 RAND report identified potential underground sites in Mohave and Coconino counties in Arizona. But it might be a Defense Nuclear Agency site that could prove of particular interest to this analysis.

According to a November 1975 report by H.R. Pratt and S.J. Green *A Geology Compendium of the Continental United States - With Application To Deep-Base Systems*, the subject of possible sites for underground military installations was to be located nearly one mile beneath the surface. Of the sites identified in the west there are a handful in Arizona, and among these is the 'general vicinity' of Holbrook.

Though the above information is from a report dated almost twenty years after my father's time in the air force, Holbrook's inclusion on the above list is suggestive.

'In the Vicinity of Winslow'

Holbrook, Arizona, was founded in 1881 with the coming of the railroad. The interest to us here is that Holbrook sits just 33 miles east of Winslow. Even more important is that Holbrook is in the area where the petulant conquistador Francisco Vasquez de Coronado had been told to search for the rumored Seven Cities of Cibola, a legend sometimes associated with an underground origin.[213]

Holbrook was also originally inhabited by the mysterious Anasazi, a civilization of ancient people who disappeared without explanation before the arrival of the current native cultures, same as the Hohokam, according to legends and history[214]

Now this is significant. How might Holbrook be the actual place where the mysterious underground air force project was established?

My dad said that the underground project was going on somewhere east of Winslow. Holbrook is just a half an hour's drive east of Winslow[215]. He said he encountered people who had gone underground long ago due to a catastrophe that drove them into the subterranean world. The Anasazi habitat included the Holbrook area and they are believed to have suddenly abandoned their city centuries ago because of some cataclysm that befell them and that's not only in the legends. So far, so good for Holbrook as the primary candidate.

My dad also described the tube device held by one member of the Others he encountered, the weapon that killed a man.

Sound familiar? In an earlier chapter we discussed the Paiute legend of an underground race they called 'Hav-Musuvs' who possessed flying machines and used a tubular weapon that stings. It so happens that the Paiutes are recognized as inhabiting the same regions that the Anasazis had

abandoned. I have to ask: Are the mysterious Anasazi denizens of the subterranean realm of the legendary 'Hav-Musuvs' of the Paiutes?

I say there is certainly enough there to consider the possibility, the other option being that the Paiute legend got attached to the Anasazi at some point. But when you consider all the above data -- the location of the ancient Anasazi homeland extending just east of Winslow -- and that they are rumored by some to have gone underground long ago -- it does indeed fit my dad's story.

So what? What does that mean?

It means the USAF mind control scientists may have incorporated the rumors and legends into a 'planted narrative' cover story. What better material than spooky tales of lost civilizations down below to discredit someone whose hypnotic suppression might be weakening? Who would believe it?

Aside from the fact that the Anasazi indeed inhabited the Holbrook area and did disappear without apparent explanation, the rest is fantastic enough to divert most people from giving it further thought -- and that's what USAF security gurus would aim for.

Now let's say the Anasazi did go underground. Perhaps they truly did find a cavernous region which they used as shelter for a while. Because of the US Air Force search for suitable underground sites to place strategic military facilities, it's completely within the realm of possibility that a cavernous region in the Holbrook area -- perhaps extending as far west as Winslow -- could have been explored and developed by USAF engineers.

But is there any evidence to suggest a subterranean landscape suited to my dad's story?

Arizona offers many tourist caves to explore, mostly near Tucson to the south, around the Grand Canyon and Flagstaff to the north and west. There certainly must be caverns in the areas around Holbrook and Winslow but they don't seem to make the tourist guides. Could they be restricted?

If what I suggest is true, that the US Air Force had developed a natural subterranean landscape into a foundation for an underground facility, access would certainly be restricted, especially if said facility was secret. Is there any current USAF presence in Holbrook?

The vaguely described US Air Force Radar Site is located adjacent to Holbrook Municipal Airport[216]. Its purpose is described online as both 'international affairs' and 'national security'. How long has it been there? I don't know because there isn't much available information and I've just shared it here. But there is something potentially telling about its location.[217]

Using Google Earth/Maps, you find that the pin is literally in the middle of the street. The buildings in the vicinity of the airport are unassuming and those on the airport don't look like a radar station, as near as I can tell. There are a couple of structures that look like they could indeed be government facilities but these don't have any visible features that look like radar equipment. So where among these buildings is the US Air Force Radar Site?

Could it be underground?

Let's go back a few pages to the 1959 *Air Force Times* announcement to build an underground SAGE

radar facility inside a mountain in Georgia. There's the USAF talking about building an underground radar facility the year after my dad's claim to have been working underground in Arizona. So we can say the Air Force was building such sites in the late 1950s and I can further suggest that the present Holbrook airport location of the US Air Force Radar Site may actually just be an entrance to a radar facility located beneath.

How can I say that? Richard Sauder points out that underground military facilities often have nondescript entrances on the surface. In reference to a US Army Corps of Engineers report, Sauder says: *"According to the report, the could be constructed inside 'hills or plateaus' with* ***concealed shaft entrances****"*[218]

As an example, Sauder offers a description of a British Army guardhouse at Sopley which from the outside looks small but inside provides a stairwell access to a fifty room facility below the ground. He also describes an unassuming US Army Warrenton Training Center in Virginia which requires closer inspection to notice the power cables disappearing into the ground.

Sauder writes: *"I strongly suspect that the designers here in the United States have been at least as ingenious as their counterparts in Europe in disguising and concealing entrances to underground installations. Virtually any house anywhere, or any building, large or small, is capable of concealing an entrance to an underground facility....Some houses and buildings certainly can be disguised entrances...The hard part is figuring out which ones they are."* [219]

Sometimes the underground facility can be hiding in plain sight, if we are to believe Sauder's source about a White House sub-basement facility that extends at least seventeen levels down. The testimony of this source dates back to the Johnson administration when the source was tasked with delivering some papers from the Department of Housing and Urban Development (HUD). He was escorted by agents to an elevator in a non-public area of the White House and taken down to a deep level with long corridors lined ceiling to floor with ceramic tiles, corridors extending to 'the vanishing point'. The source handed the HUD papers to a man in a room and then he was escorted back up and out of the White House.[220]

The question is exactly the one asked by the source: What would HUD documents contain to require the messenger to be escorted by agents to a strictly controlled facility several floors beneath the White House?

Catherine Austin Fitts is a former Undersecretary for HUD and you might find some interesting input on this question in her work. She cites a statement by Susan Gaffney, a HUD Inspector General at the time, in testimony at a hearing on 22 March 2000, in which it is revealed that 284 adjustments to the tune of more than $77 billion had to be made to fiscal years 1998 and 1999 to make them agree with Treasury balances on record.[221] Is the money a surplus? Is it being shifted around to remain out of oversight? If hidden or even showing up 'off the record', what is this money actually for?

Fitts asks the question: "Was it possible that the US Treasury and the Office of Management and Budget (OMB) were operating HUD as a slush fund to illegally finance black budget operations?"[222]

Fitts experienced being targeted by US federal authorities who sent agents to seize and destroy her company's software and equipment to hide the trail of whatever was going on with an estimated trillions of dollars being channeled in this manner.

I took you on this HUD detour to point out that perhaps apparently mundane properties contracted under HUD could actually provide camouflage for classified facilities anywhere, in rural or urban settings. The money trail issues might reveal this.

Back to the USAF and Arizona, the point of suggesting that the present day Air Force radar site is likely underground is to show that the USAF might have put an underground facility in Holbrook. If they have one that can be found on the internet, what others are hiding there?

I didn't put Holbrook on the list in the 1975 report for potential underground facility sites, the experts in the field did. Might it have actually been identified years prior to this report, when missile silos were being built under more sensitive circumstances? Might this 'US Air Force Radar Site' at Holbrook Airport be the semi-camouflaged entrance to the same underground where my father worked?

It is interesting to note that Holbrook Municipal Airport was established in 1943 and is currently on a list of airports around the United States identified as 'infrequent' destinations for military Space-A flights to and from Andrews AFB. This alone is not indicative of anything but that it's a location where military personnel can catch available seats on military aircraft. However it also demonstrates that, no matter how infrequent, enough USAF personnel are present in the Holbrook area to justify the Space-A site designation.[223]

Now called Joint Base Andrews, this base is a major USAF station. Not only are the Presidential units that support Air Force One operations based here, there are several other important units and commands. Among these is the headquarters for my former employers, the Air Force Office of Special Investigations (AFOSI).[224] The significance here is that Andrews is located just southeast of Washington DC and all that implies, i.e. if there is an ultra secret underground facility at Holbrook, any personnel from the Pentagon, for example, can take an unassuming Space-A flight direct.

Some readers will complain that any flight to a base in Arizona, or even a commercial flight, would suffice. But in my experience with operations, the Air Force using the Space-A option for any potential secret installations underneath Holbrook is credible. Anyone, like a foreign agent or a courageous investigative journalist for example, can book a seat on a commercial flight -- but not just anyone can hop a Space-A aboard a military aircraft. Get it?

SUMMARY

It is sufficiently demonstrated that Holbrook could reasonably have some association with my dad's mysterious Arizona underground location. Holbrook fits 'east of Winslow' and the folk history of missing tribes and subterranean wonders is too resonant to ignore.

I have also demonstrated that the US Department of Defense, and specifically the US Air Force, has built underground facilities, both known and secret -- and they have been doing this since before my dad was in the air force.[225]

CONCLUSION

With a clear history of USAF presence both above and below the ground in Arizona, I will go on

record to say that I think Holbrook, Arizona, is the best candidate for the underground site in my dad's story.

The question now is what do I think about my dad's tale: Was it a drug-induced hallucinatory dream? Or was there an actual operation so classified that it required the use of an hypnotically induced cover story of lost civilizations and mysterious UFO crashes in the desert?

That is a good question.

Let's walk a little deeper into the rabbit hole...

CHAPTER THIRTEEN

When the men on the chessboard
Get up and tell you where to go
And you've just had some kind of mushroom
And your mind is moving low...
-- Grace Slick

The question posed is what do I now think of the choices between my father's story having been the consequence of a military drug experiment or the murky memories of an hypnotically suppressed series of actual events. And the answer is...

Yes!

All joking aside, let's take the drug experiment option first because it truly is the simplest solution. In this scenario my father merely got an an airplane from Montgomery, possibly from Maxwell AFB across town, and was headed for Texas.

The experiment might have actually begun during the flight when the alleged Major Milton Knight stepped out from the forward cabin to inform my dad and the other subjects about the diversion to Wright-Patterson. This would begin the process of monitoring reactions to unexpected changes in plan and so forth.

Upon arrival at Wright-Patterson, my dad and the others would have been taken to the unit conducting said experiment and in-processed. From this point they would simply have been shown to rooms in the laboratory where they could be observed in a more controlled environment.

I say this activity would have been conducted in the aviation medicine research laboratory, for obvious reasons. A routine examination of vital signs would be measured, such as heart rate, temperature, etc. If all checked out satisfactorily, my dad would have ingested whatever drug was being tested and his 'trip' would begin shortly. This was aviation medicine's domain, especially in

the Otis Benson era.

It is also possible that the USAF scientists could have slipped some of the drug into the subjects unwittingly at any time, but it seems more legitimately 'US Air Force' to me to conduct it with the full awareness and willing participation of the subjects. Conversely, the CIA had more reason to slip mickeys into unwitting subjects. They had plenty of that data for the USAF to refer to without doing it on their own. The Air Force is a very cautious branch of the military.

Once in my dad's bloodstream, away he goes into 'dreamyland'. It is at this point we must decide: Was what he told me entirely a dream? Or was what he told me a 'planted narrative' created by the scientists?

If a dream, we're done here. After the experiment, he simply had this strange dream in his head that seemed very real. The hypnosis would have been applied to suppress memory of the experiment itself, leaving my dad to struggle with the dream he thought was a real series of events. He gets on the plane and returns to Gunter AFB to go on with his life.

That scenario would pretty much end all discussion if it weren't for two things: Colonel Lundy told me the project in Arizona was real and so was Wilson. Billy Les knew the name of the officer on the plane to Wright-Patterson AFB. I even have reason to suspect Colonel Lundy could have had personal knowledge of the project at the time or was possibly even there in some capacity. I don't really know how Bill would have known about Major Knight being on the plane, based on what I know about him. The testimony of these two men nags me.

Therefore we must still consider that my dad may have really gone to Arizona, there was a classified project that could very well have been underground, and there actually could have been a mysterious Wilson involved. That doesn't change the possibility that what might have really happened was still cloaked in the 'planted narrative'.

Why The Spooky Tricks?

A word or two about the hypnosis.

Why would they have used hypnotic suppression when a nondisclosure agreement and the threat of court martial and prison would likely suffice to keep him from telling about it?

As stated before, hypnosis was a big thing back then, a major component of the mind control program methods. Essentially it was the hot new toy and the scientists were looking at all the things that could be done with it. I say that among these activities with hypnosis, someone in the USAF psych lab figured it might be a better way to keep a security lid on an operation, so they tried it.

Hypnotic suppression used on my dad would serve as an extra measure of security. I say he was fully aware and cooperative in its application. Remember, these were the days of the Cold War, fear ran high. It is not a stretch - at all - to suggest that hypnotic suppression was used on my dad for this purpose. Remember, I was told as much by Colonel Lundy.

That's a variation on the drug-induced dream scenario. The weird parts were a planted narrative to provide cover for vital classified activity. No mysterious underworld in Arizona, no lost civilization,

no search and rescue for a UFO pilot. Whatever actually went on in Arizona while my dad was there was likely something more mundane like secret missile base ops or some USAF tech activity critical to national security during the Cold War.

We can turn off the lights and go home, right?

Most of you know me better than that so let's look at some MKULTRA history, specifically relating to Dr Sidney Gottlieb. He's the guy with whom such a cover narrative as lost civilizations and wondrous technology would have originated.

Black Sorcerer

Sidney Gottlieb ran the Chemical Division of the CIA's Technical Services Staff during the 1951-1956 romance with LSD. A curious fellow, Gottlieb was a folk dance enthusiast and lived in a former slave cabin, where he kept goats for milk, along with his children and wife, the daughter of Presbyterian missionaries who had spent time in India. A side occupation of the Gottlieb family was raising Christmas trees for sale to friends and associates. They also liked to make cheese. Sidney Gottlieb was respected by friends and colleagues alike, among them the infamous Richard Helms. [226]

In fact, it was the suggestion of Richard Helms to then Director Allen Dulles that LSD be used in operations that got MKULTRA approved to begin with on 13 April 1953, much because of the work of Gottlieb. The objective? Gottlieb said it was to determine how human behavior could be modified through covert means. The research was financed for an initial $300,000 and took off, but eventually more funds would be needed to continue. It turns out that the military, especially the USAF among them, were willing to provide the money for LSD.[227]

As Gottlieb ventured deeper, he aimed the research at objectives like 'disturbance of memory', 'discredit by aberrant behavior', 'altering sex patterns', suggestibility and 'creation of dependence' among them[228]. Here we have the CIA MKULTRA program committed to playing with memory and seeking a way to suggest whatever they desired to a subject under the influence. And LSD wasn't the only thing they played with.

Altered States

In 1955, just a few months after my father entered the service, banker and amateur mycologist R. Gordon Wasson, VP of the J.P. Morgan & Company, finally gained access to a legendary 'magic mushroom' called *teonanactl*, or 'God's Flesh', in Oaxaca, Mexico. The CIA had been searching for this very mushroom for a few years and would get their hands on them eventually through Wasson. [229]

Wasson described an all-night trip of intense hallucinations. The visions came first in artistic designs that changed before their eyes: *"They evolved into palaces with courts, arcades, gardens -- resplendent palaces with semiprecious stones...Could the miraculous mobility that I was now enjoying be the explanation for the flying witches that played some important part in the folklore and fairy tales of northern Europe?...The effect of the mushroom is to bring about a fission of the spirit, a split in the person, a kind of schizophrenia, with the rational side continuing to reason..."*[230]

The CIA stood up Subproject 58 within MKULTRA to conduct its own research on the 'magic

mushroom', shortly after its active substance was synthetically reduced in the Swiss lab of LSD pioneer Albert Hofmann. It was called psilocybin and it made mushroom journeys more accessible. [231]

One of the CIA's more notorious experiment with psilocybin involved inmates in a Kentucky prison. The nine prisoners experienced all manner of reactions and hallucinations, including 'x-ray vision' of a sort, seeing through the skin of others. They also appeared to have found the same realm Wasson experienced in Mexico: *"They seemed to be elsewhere...Trips to the Moon or living in gorgeous castles..."*.[232]

Wasson would write further on this particular aspect of his experiences using the mushroom. *"For the mushrooms revealed to him worlds beyond the horizons known to him, in space and time, even world on a different plane of being..."*[233]

Is there more to this than merely a waking dream?

It's clear that the CIA MKULTRA program was the leader in developing hallucinogenic substances for operational use in the US national security community. We know for a fact that the US Air Force was actively involved with using these products and even started their own programs[234], which as far as I know haven't been exposed via Congressional committee as was MKULTRA.

All this was going on during the entire period of my father's enlistment and he was assigned directly to the field most likely involved with administering the USAF drug research. I think I've established the case; my dad could have been a subject of USAF mind control drug research and that could explain his weird story -- whether a dream or a planted narrative to cover something else.

We've looked at Gottlieb the esoteric'sorcerer' and we've learned that CIA mind control scientists journeyed far into ancient Mexico to obtain the power of magic mushrooms. Before I explain what this all may have had to do with my dad, I need to introduce you to one more mas scientist.

Mr Charming

Let's look at Dr D. Ewen Cameron.

Readers of my other works will be familiar with my occult analysis and research of Montreal. Those readers will be familiar with my analysis of this Canadian city in terms of Hekate veneration, and of the city's role as a backdrop in the murder of Harry Houdini, including a look at McGill University student J. Gordon Whitehead. If you refer to my *Empire of the Wheel 3:The Nameless Ones*, you'll see how there were shell games played with identities in the Houdini mystery. Montreal's dark thread has woven itself throughout my past research.

Is it any surprise when here we find the notorious Dr Cameron running the psychiatric department at Allan Memorial Institute Hospital in Montreal, an outfit set up with the dubious Rockefeller Foundation?[235]

Ewen Cameron was known as an aloof and ill-at-ease man with whom his colleagues could not connect in a human way. Cameron had a theory of 'differential amnesia' and employed questionable methods of electro-shock therapy to wipe schizophrenic patients' mind blank so that their 'normal personality' could emerge victorious. It is almost hilarious that his stated objective was to cure

schizophrenia.[236]

Cameron's mad doctor pursuits naturally gave the CIA boys a raging boner and they raised the covers of the MKULTRA bed so that he could join in the fun.

It wasn't long before the CIA was funding Cameron's experimental use of unapproved methods on actual and unwitting patients. His repertoire involved intensive electroshocks accompanied with long spells of drug-induced sleep. Some might say that under the circumstances Cameron was only going to dangerous lengths in the interest of national security -- but there is evidence to suggest that Cameron didn't know these experiments were being funded by the Agency. For him, it was just another day of providing psychiatric care that he called 'depatterning'.[237]

John Marks writes: *"The frequent screams of patients that echoed through the hospital did not deter Cameron or most of his associates in their attempts to 'depattern' their subjects completely."*[238]

Dr Cameron would subject patients to this 'depatterning' procedure usually for 15 to 30 days and sometimes up to 65 days. Reportedly, the minute the sedatives wore off them enough, orderlies would often chase clear-headed patients down the halls to catch them in their mad-dash attempts to escape the hospital. Cameron was still doing this stuff in 1958, our year in question.[239]

Hard as it may be to believe (or not, actually), Cameron achieved complete amnesia in some patients and the Agency became so aroused this time that they gave him even more money to take the method *beyond the amnesia point*. The CIA wanted him to erase a person's mind completely so they could program new behavior. To this request, Cameron applied a technique he had developed years before: 'psychic driving'.[240]

Cameron's method of 'psychic driving' was to simply bombard the patient or subject with a repetition of recorded messages. Colleagues at McGill said of his research that it was "*an awful set of ideas he was working with"* and *"Cameron was no good as a researcher"*.[241] But the Agency loved it!

The process started with planting speakers underneath the patient's pillow through which played 16 hours a day of negative commentary (allegedly still audible even when they weren't on the bed), with electrodes connected to their legs at night to shock them at the end of each message. And this went on for weeks. One of Cameron's brilliant assistants said, *"We made sure they heard it."*[242]

After a whirl on this kaleidoscope of terror, the patient would then repeat the process but with 'positive' messages, though God knows what that meant, to Cameron. Then comes the day the good doctor tells the CIA that he can get the same results through the *addition* of drugs and sensory deprivation, just one big festival of psychiatric horror in the pursuit of mind control (only so that we could *understand* how it's done, of course, heh heh).

Thus in 1957 did Ewen Cameron's work in sensory deprivation begin.

Just when you thought you'd heard enough, we have the doctor now sequestering subjects in small rooms and then literally in boxes, wearing apparatuses on their heads to block vision and hearing. The boxes were equipped with padded interiors (!) to prevent the sensation of touch (other than the pads, I guess), and free of smells.

A US Army subject kicked his way out of the box in a screaming mad fit after 40 days inside. Even then, Cameron subjected a female patient to his depatterning looping-shock-message drugged torture *and then* put her in the box for 35 days. The reason this patient had even been under his care was issues with menopause.[243]

And who was the CIA officer who approved Cameron's budgets and provided him with requested resources?

Lieutenant Colonel James Monroe, formerly of the USAF. Monroe personally supervised Cameron's research grants from the Agency via a cover organization called the 'Human Ecology Society'. Monroe was with the Air Force when he started working with the CIA in the early days of MKULTRA brainwashing research.[244] Monroe had been assigned to psychological warfare during WW2 and continued in that field for the US Air Force until going to the Agency permanently.[245] Knowing what we know about US Air Force enthusiasm for MKULTRA programs, and that they were running their own, it's reasonable to suggest that the Air Force was using some of this stuff and perhaps getting it from Monroe.

Thus are we able to now consider that some form of Cameron's diabolical methodology was being used by the US Air Force in their own psychological warfare pursuits and perhaps in their security efforts.

SUMMARY

I've demonstrated that the CIA MKULTRA program mind control science was greatly driven by the desire to control the human mind. Through the work of Sidney Gottlieb, the programs led to manipulation of human perception via hallucinogens such as LSD and mushrooms. The work of Ewen Cameron provided the CIA with the confidence that the human mind might be broken down and reprogrammed, which suggests the possibility that 'planted narratives' were indeed possible.

That the military was conducting its own programs spun off from the MKULTRA experiments raises concerns over what exactly they were doing that the CIA wasn't. That we never really found out what the US Air Force was doing specifically - or how far they ran with it -- is highly suggestive within the context of my dad's experience. Had USAF aviation medicine scientists made breakthroughs of which the CIA was unaware?

What might the Air Force have accomplished with hypnosis and hallucinogens and Cameron's 'psychic driving'? Did the aviation medicine gurus at Wright-Patterson AFB discover how to successfully 'plant narratives' into the minds of airmen?

We don't know because what the Air Force did with their own MKULTRA research was never revealed to the public.[246]

CONCLUSION

I propose my dad might have been subjected to a form of Cameron's 'psychic driving' to plant a fabricated narrative into his mind designed to provide cover for whatever might have happened in Arizona. I also propose that this process was followed by hypnotically induced amnesia to suppress

the planted narrative as an extra measure.

Where does that now put us, where his story is concerned?

WHAT THIS COULD MEAN

Here's the scenario: My dad is indeed assigned to some highly classified operation in a location likely within the continental United States, due to the time constraints as discussed in an earlier chapter. He goes to the TDY site and does his job. He returns to Wright-Patterson AFB.

While at Wright-Patterson, he undergoes a USAF MKULTRA spinoff psychological treatment that we will call *re*-patterning: a drug-induced state of consciousness exposed to a lighter version of psychic driving. In this Cameronesque process, the looped message is a false cover story designed to fill in the days on the TDY project that were washed from his mind. This planted-narrative cover story replaces the real events with a wild tale of a crashed UFO in New Mexico, a search-and-rescue operation for a UFO pilot from a 'lost civilization', and finally an encounter with strange people in a subterranean realm. My dad wakes up at the end of the process, released to his usual duty and the rest of his life, not remembering what he was really doing on the classified TDY in 1958.

There is very good reason for suspecting that my dad's weird tale was not true, that something else was going on with him. That the USAF was indeed, as a matter of historical record, establishing its own mind control program and pursing practical applications of the results, I must seriously consider that my dad's tale is a product of this MKULTRA technology.

There are indeed the gaps in my dad's story. We know how he got to Ohio but we never hear about how he got to Arizona (presumably a flight to Holbrook...?) or how he got back to Alabama. We learn of 'Wilson' but we never learn the name of the man who got killed by the mysterious underground dweller with the tube weapon. I would think my dad would never have forgotten that man's name, as he was standing beside him when it happened. Perhaps this suggests that the scenes loaded into my dad's psyche may have been emerging by design as the hypnosis began to weaken over the years.

Some might yet ask why the USAF would really go to such lengths with mind control when the aforementioned punitive security agreement was readily available and more practical. That is a reasonable question.

The answer might be what Col Lundy told me years back, that my dad got into some difficulty and was removed from the operation by Wilson.

If the death of the other airman was under conditions of duress, they may have wanted to wipe that from my dad's memory before sending him back to regular duty. Or if he screwed up somehow and had 'seen too much' they might have elected to use the mind-clearing methods. Whatever the reason, in this scenario of real and sensitive events to suppress, this must have been a very important project to subject anyone to this stuff.

But there is yet another possibility.

A Coping Mechanism?

There is a story my dad told me many years ago about an incident that I am compelled to share within this context. He never connected this story to the topic of this book, but all possibilities must be considered if I hope to come close to the truth.

I recall my dad telling me about a situation in which two airmen were guarding something, maybe a gate, maybe a building, I don't recall. These two carried sidearms and they had stupidly engaged in a little personal game of 'gunslinger'. As you might guess, came the day that one of them returned to the guardhouse from making rounds or whatever and the other said 'Draw!'. He drew and reflexively pulled the trigger, firing a .45 round through the head of his buddy. I remember him telling this story to make a point about gun safety, but now it piques my curiosity in other ways.

I am an investigator by profession and analytical by nature. It is imperative that I follow through with hunches because useful information can often be drawn from them, and sometimes the whole truth.

What if this cautionary tale about the two 'air force guards' might actually have involved my dad?

I wonder if my dad was the one who shot his buddy and killed him. I wonder if this incident might actually have been what got him removed from the classified operation.

Here's the scenario: Whatever they were really doing, my dad and a fellow airman were issued sidearms. They may actually have been responsible for the security of something, likely their own unit equipment. The same dumbass game of gunslinger is played and my dad was the one who wasn't thinking, and he shot the other man dead. This shocks my dad, maybe unhinges him to some degree. They have to relieve him of this duty and return him to either Wright-Patterson or Gunter AFB where he undergoes psychiatric treatment that includes hypnotic suppression. The classified operation is reconstructed into a fantasy episode in which it's not he who kills the man but a disembodied denizen of another world armed with a magic tube. With the planted narrative in place, reinforced with hypnotic suppression, my dad is released.

Why would I consider this?

Because you will recall that whenever my dad told his tale of the underworld it always ended with the death of the airmen and my dad becoming too emotional to continue.

Sure, this tragic possibility might have happened anywhere, not necessarily on some mysterious operational deployment. All the weird stuff was just human nature putting a handle on a difficult situation. A coping mechanism.

The other possibility is that my dad witnessed the shooting but wasn't involved. That would return any MKULTRA suppression completely to the operational security column.

I want to be clear that the weapon mishandling scenario is a wild ass guess on my part. I have no other reason than this analysis to even entertain such a thing ever happening with my dad. Besides, it neither explains nor eliminates everything else.

Whether some hidden misstep on my dad's part happened or not, there is the issue of using MKULTRA methods to suppress his memories of whatever he knew about the mysterious USAF project. The encounter that ended in the life of the other airman, be it suppressed tragedy or

confrontation with people from another realm, it still apparently happened in a sensitive environment.

Whatever suppression methods were applied, its primary function would be to protect the operational security of said project, in my opinion.

What might the USAF have been up to?

CHAPTER FOURTEEN

Hey now, you better listen to me every one of you
We got a lotta lotta lotta lotta work to do
Forget about your women and that water can
Today you're working for the man...

-- Roy Orbison & Joe Melson

The question remains: Could there have been a project such as my dad described?

Let's look again at the elements of his story.

My source, Colonel Lundy, told me Wilson was real. My research since 2004 and especially relative

to my books *EOTW2:Friends From Sonora* and *Origin* deal with Wilsons of record who were likely related to the Wilson in my dad's story. I propose Wilson's existence, yay or nay, remains open and thus suggests there was some classified operation to which my dad could indeed have been assigned.

Then there is Major Milton Knight. That name was first given to me by my source Billy Les and I later confirmed it through a little interrogatory trick used on my dad. In other words, I didn't ask him if the guy on the plane was Knight, I asked him the name of the guy on the plane and he said it: Milton Knight. That suggests to me that either Billy Les and my dad knew each other and were perpetrating a hoax on me or else the plane flight took place and that Knight was really there.

We also have Wright-Patterson AFB for which it is a matter of documented history was in a direct supervisory and technical support function for my father's identified specialty. I say a trip to Wright-Pat remains a corroboration of his story.

There is my dad's specialty and USAF history with American manned space travel. If the secret project was real and had anything to do with anyone who flies in space, my dad could very well have been tasked to support it in some fashion.

Let's not forget that my dad was also assigned to Casualty Collection Team 1 at George AFB and therefore trained and experienced in response to crash incidents, specifically retrieval of material and personnel. And retrieval, as we all know, is often associated with UFO cases[247].

A picture is beginning to emerge. It could actually explain why the project in Arizona was so highly classified that exotic measures such as mind control and hypnotic suppression were deemed necessary to keep a lid on it.

Yes, USAF missile operations were expanding in the late 1950s. Silo facilities were being constructed underground throughout several areas of the southwest, Arizona included. There were 18 underground missile silos around Tucson alone, associated with Davis-Monthan AFB[248]. Missile defense was vital for the national defense during the Cold War and especially in its early days. The silos had to remain secure and therefore the locations were sensitive, usually classified information. That is all true.

But neither missile silos nor radar stations explain everything we've been looking at here. Not by a long shot, from my perspective.

There were other types of underground facilities being planned during this period. Command centers that would need to remain operational should war be raining up above would also would require a cloak of secrecy, lest the Soviets or even the Chinese lob a missile right onto its roof. Their locations would likewise be sensitive and certainly classified.

It is entirely possible that my dad was assigned to some function supporting the construction of an underground facility in Arizona in 1958. We know these things are real. We know they were built. This passes that popular (though often misapplied) Occam's Razor test that pops the skeptics' boners.

But there is a problem with known USAF underground facilities like missile silos and command centers, or even with camouflaged hangars in mountains.

Neither missiles nor radar were my dad's specialty.

He was a Physiological Training Specialist. He worked on issues directly related to pilots in aircraft, specifically high altitude operations. More importantly, my father worked under the USAF aviation medicine mission as designed and commanded by Otis Benson. My dad's job required the involvement of men who travel aboard aircraft.

CONCLUSION

Otis Benson's command tells me one thing: Whatever my dad would have been working on in a subterranean facility in eastern Arizona in 1958 had to do with manned space travel. If that was indeed the case -- and it was as highly classified as was indicated to me over the years -- then it further suggests one primary possibility: The Arizona project involved a classified manned space travel operations facility.

A secret USAF space program?

If Philip Corso's book was mixing truth with lies, consider what he says: *"As a cover, NASA, in 1961, agreed to cooperate with military planners to work a 'second-tier' space program within and covered up by the civilian scientific missions."*[249]

You decide for yourself. I was already convinced years ago that the USAF sends astronauts into space on covert missions.

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

I'm not the man they think I am back home
I'm a rocket man
-- Elton John

I will now make a reasonable, and justified, wild ass speculation of colossal proportions:

My father's work in the US Air Force fell under a secret USAF manned spaceflight umbrella.

Thanks to acquisition of Nazi German scientists after WW2, the United States took a major leap forward and upward in all aspects of aerospace technology. Specifically through aviation medicine research augmented by the expertise of Paperclip scientists, manned space enthusiast Otis Benson was enabled to push the US Air Force into space. By the late 1950s, NASA took over the civilian space program and served as the public face of the American civilian scientific reach for the stars.

Meanwhile, under the approval of Curtis Le May, Otis Benson's vision and guidance resulted in the technology and personnel uniquely qualified to man the rockets and other craft being engineered by other commands. It was decided that this would be highly classified and remain so indefinitely -- largely because they knew we aren't alone up there but also because of the Cold War competition with the Soviets.

How's that? Have I pissed off enough skeptics yet?

I shall keep going...

By the summer of 1958, an installation was being constructed underground in Holbrook, Arizona. This was a launch facility that likely employed technology asymmetric to rocketry. It was placed underground also for its security, both from spying eyes[250] and from falling bombs. Personnel and equipment were deployed from all over the USAF during the construction and facility installation phases. Among the personnel would have been USAF space flight pilots and crews.

Likely because flight crew training for these military astronauts would be sensitive, it was decided to provide all the physiological training on site. Thus the necessary technology and materials were being installed and required specialists to inspect and maintain. That means physiological training materials and apparatuses. That's why my dad would have been there.

My father was not a security forces asset. He did not pull guard duty at entry control points (ECPs). But for some reason he and his colleagues were issued weapons, possibly even sidearms. Speculative explanations for this remain a murky issue, but for the purpose of this scenario let us surmise there was a perceived threat. It could have been communist spies in the southwest because we know there were indeed Soviet spies in the country at that time[251]. It may be that my dad and his colleagues were actually responsible for certain equipment so were therefore authorized to carry rifles and/or a sidearm.

This weapons issue is primarily important to address because the man who was killed in the encounter with the Others was carrying a gun, per my dad. There was an incident involving the use of the weapons. On one end of the spectrum, we have the encounter with someone down below. Might it actually have been Soviet agents or say an investigative busybody who found their way down there? Who knows? But let us say the encounter happened and a US airman was killed. Who shot whom?

I see issues with this part of the scenario. First, if a Soviet agent had been armed and for whatever reason shot and killed US military personnel, there is no inherent reason for my father to be fired or for losing his marbles if he fired back and killed the agent. However, if they had come across a nosy journalist or civilian and my father shot and killed *that* person, there might have been a potential scandal for the USAF and while trying to establish a very secret space facility.

Whatever the case, there is a man dead who shouldn't have be and the whole incident lands my dad in hot water or at least a pickle for on-site commanders. He is then packed up and put on the next plane out of Holbrook, possibly for Wright-Patterson to undergo MKULTRA depatterning and hypnotic manipulation. His direct memory of all events while in the underground facility are erased or blocked through selective amnesia and then suppressed with hypnosis, refreshed every month for the rest of his life by the full moon. For the first couple of decades, it works very well but begins to wear off around the twenty year mark, when he starts to tell the story in detail.

That's the scenario as I now see it. The reason I'm still entertaining the idea that my dad indeed was part of something underground in eastern Arizona is the nagging presence of source information and my own research on secret space program and breakaway technology issues.

Colonel Lundy flat out told me my dad's story was true, though he pushed me to draw out more details on my own. Billy Les knew the name of the intelligence officer on the plane in 1958 and I independently confirmed that through interrogatory technique on my father. The story being a complete fabrication, while certainly quite possible, remains a questionable conclusion. Enough opposing factors defy that explanation.

So I am going on the record here to suggest there was indeed a highly classified underground operation that involved a USAF manned space program element. Events surrounding a man being killed caused my dad to be reassigned. This is truly all I can confidently propose where my dad's story is concerned but it still offers much with which to be fascinated.

I've suggested in the past that the United States Air Force has likely been operating a secret manned space program for over half a century. I stand firmly by that supposition.

I have also proposed in the past that some sort of subterranean facility dedicated to said manned space program was built in the late 1950s or after, and alluded without detail and admittedly somewhat mysteriously to 'asymmetric' technology development, not rocketry. This resonates with things I heard while on active duty.

Now comes the next question: I get why the presence of a Soviet agent on the scene would be suppressed, and I especially understand why a curious civilian showing up down there would be suppressed, especially if either got killed by USAF personnel. But if the facility were simply a comparatively mundane USAF operation[252] and the shooting of the airman just a tragic incident of mishandling weapons, why would a fantastic tale of UFOs from a lost civilization and an encounter with a hidden underground culture be implanted into my dad's head as a cover in the interest of secrecy?

The only logic I can muster for implanting a wild fantasy story to cover something so important would be the hope that no one would pay serious attention to my dad if he told such a tall tale. Discredit the leak with elements unbelievable to most people.

But here's the problem with that: The moment some people hear the crazy cover story, they will head to the caverns and look for the lost civilization, i.e. they will start snooping around east of Winslow where the Air Force (hypothetically) doesn't want them snooping around.

If a weird story, why a weird story?

It appears to have always been a weird story...

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

And there's some rumors going round
Someone's underground...

-- Don Henley & Bernie Leadon

It turns out that there was something else going on.

We know how the date of the legendary Roswell incident is placed sometime during the first week of July of 1947. The date of the MJ-12 documents is identified as 18 November 1952[253]. The former we have discussed already, the latter is highly questionable, as usually presented, and likely altered if not fake. But what is very curious to me are the dates, 1947 and 1952.

One of the problems I have with the MJ-12, or 'MAJESTIC 12' papers is the historical context. That is, the historical context is usually disregarded and may not even be known by many of those people invoking these controversial papers, usually to advocate the ET hypothesis. I think the true significance of the MJ-12 document, if it's real, has been missed.

The clue to what I think is unknown to UFO researchers is found in a heading stamp on the MJ-12 documents: MAJIC.[254]

I think MAJIC has a distinct reference to found in WW2 history.

Back in 1945, Operation Paperclip was shifted administratively from military intelligence to the Joint Chiefs of Staff. The task of direct management of Operation Paperclip was given to the Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency. This JIOA was a subcommittee of the somewhat shadowy Joint Intelligence Committee, the chief spies for the Joint Chiefs of Staff. Citing a CIA monograph, Annie Jacobsen writes: *"The JIC was and remains one of the most enigmatic of all the American intelligence agencies."*[255]

As soon as the war ended in the summer of 1945, the JIC focused all its attention on the Soviet threat. Sixteen major intelligence reports and twenty-seven policy papers were produced by the JIC for the Joint Chiefs just that summer alone. In September of that year, the JIC advised that the United States would be in 'total war' with the Soviets by 1952.[256]

Let's pause to review. Midway through 1945, the JIC tells their bosses that **1952** is the red letter year for the impending Soviet threat to explode into open warfare -- in this new atomic era. Roswell, whatever it actually was, happens two years later. Then in the 1980s there emerge some alleged presidential briefing papers dated November of **1952**. This is notable.

MAJIC and the Joint Intelligence Committee

For years, some people have wondered why the MJ-12 security heading was MAJIC when the word *magic* is correctly spelled with a G. Naturally one need only point to the text of these documents to find reference to OPERATION MAJESTIC-12 as an explanation for the header spelling of 'MAJIC'. 'MAJestIC' is the logic here. But what if that's not the case?

Let's pretend that there is something legitimate about the MJ-12 documents (without laughing). It has been proposed by others before me that whomever might have faked the documents used pieces of actual documents[257] including a possibly real classification stamp 'MAJIC'. Humor me a little further and consider for a moment that the 'MAJESTIC' title for the alleged operation was part of the fabricated elements of the MJ-12 documents, extrapolated from the stamp 'MAJIC'. What might this suggest within the historical context?

It might suggest that the header stamp 'MAJIC' is actually related to the Joint Intelligence Committee or the JIC.

How so? Annie Jacobsen refers to a JIC report in the "JIC 250" series, specifically JIC250/4 which reports to the JCS their concerns about German scientists disappearing from Germany and possibly ending up in Soviet employment (or custody)[258]. In this we have an historical precedent in high level intelligence reports labeled 'JIC' because there was a JIC, or Joint Intelligence Committee, issuing these reports.

Might the MAJIC stamp on the MJ-12 papers have actually been a header stamp lifted by the forgers of the MJ-12 papers from knowledge of JIC documents and terminology? And if we're asking that question, in light of the probability that 'MAJESTIC' itself being a fake name, is it unreasonable to suggest that the forgers simply added 'MA' to 'JIC' to make their MAJESTIC fit the scenario?

It could also be that 'MAJIC' was a legitimate header stamp thus the 'MAJESTIC' extrapolation by creative forgers. The point is MAJIC may indeed refer to the JIC and that suggests a different perspective on MJ-12 than is popularly assumed.

If any true parts exist in the 'MJ-12' documents, they might have had nothing to do with Roswell, simply appropriated to give the appearance of legitimacy to a false briefing report.

Interestingly, it is another document deemed fake that offers a possible answer to the 'MAJIC' question.

Karl T. Pflock tells of an interesting reference to the JIC itself in a document he otherwise reasonably argues is a fake. In his commentary on documents from Tim Cooper, of a town right up the mountain from me, Big Bear Lake, Pflock specifically addresses a "Memorandum for the Military Assessment of the Joint Intelligence Committee".[259]

It was an intriguing possibility -- and yet I was to understand that the source was unreliable, a hoaxed product.

Military **A**ssessment of the **J**oint **I**ntelligence **C**ommittee.

Look at it again:

Military

Assessment

Joint

Intelligence

Committee

Do you see it...?

M.A.J.I.C or **MAJIC** could very well refer to any given 'Military Assessment of the Joint Intelligence Committee' and therefore rate a classification header stamp.

And I'm not the only one who noticed this. For example, the guys at **Dark Government** (darkgovernment.com) have also pointed this out. It's not rocket science. Why didn't any of the numerous researchers in the UFO field, especially those with a military or intelligence association, ever take the time to analyze the header?[260]

My point is that anyone who has taken the time to look closely can see the hand of Joint Intelligence Committee in this MAJIC aspect of the MJ-12 mess: MAJIC was, in my opinion, either a real dissemination header stamp or it was faked from the phrase 'Military Assessment of the Joint Intelligence Committee'.

It could also be that the phrase was from faked from a fake 'MAJIC' header. How about that!

But let's suppose MAJIC really was a legitimate stamp for the sake of discussion, because it just might turn out to be true. The Cooper document contains the only direct reference to the JIC in these MJ-12 style documents that I found while working on this book. Maybe there are others.

What was the actual subject of the document?

"Examination of Unidentified Disk-like Aircraft Near Military Installations in the State of New Mexico: A Preliminary Report" dated 19 September 1947. I am compelled to mention this document because of the JIC reference, in spite Pflock's argument. Why?

Because the Joint Intelligence Committee's role in Operation Paperclip. Because it was Paperclip Germans who applied their expertise leading to our own space programs, secret or otherwise. Because of the preponderance of facts and circumstances surrounding Roswell indeed suggest the possibility that a supposedly defeated *German* enemy was still alive and well. Because of the JIC threat assessment in 1945 that we would be in total war with the Soviets by 1952 -- curiously the date of the controversial MJ-12 documents.

All of these things suggest a JIC hand in what we've been talking about in this book and what happened to my father. And there is yet another thing that keeps the JIC on my desktop short list in this bizarre situation. Something very compelling.

Nothing we've discussed up to this point could not be explained by the USAF emphasis on situational awareness designed to protect secret US military space and missile operations from prying Soviet eyes. Even extreme measures of mind control techniques such as hypnotism and amnesia would fit the bill of the times. Fear ran high, there was much unknown about the intentions of the Soviets and Chinese. Such measures would have seemed acceptable to try. But there remain other issues, the so called 'devil in the details' -- and it involves the JIC.

Let's turn again to Sidney Gottlieb for a little background.

Operation Often drew its name from Gottlieb's habitual use of the word 'often', one favorite phrase perhaps summing up Gottlieb's deeper personal interests being the following: *"Often we forget that the only scientific way forward is to learn from the past."*[261]

I find this to be of no small significance here. Sidney Gottlieb, the CIA scientist who raised goats for milk, who lived with his family in an old slave cabin, who grew Christmas trees, believed that the work of Ewen Cameron was on the verge of a breakthrough in paranormal research. Gottlieb himself would take Cameron's work in the direction of black magic and the supernatural. The Agency employed psychic mediums, astrologists and demonologists among other denizens of the occult arts and sciences in their support of the program. These interests were not new to Gottlieb.

And such things are not new to this world.

So what has this to do with the JIC and Roswell and my dad's story? Operation Often began in 1969 and continued into the 1970s but my dad's encounter in the underworld happened ten years prior, and Roswell a decade before that. How do these connect to the Joint Intelligence Committee?

What the hell does spooky hocus-pocus have to do with my dad and USAF space science?

More than you may think...

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

Last thing I remember
I was running for the door
I had to find the passage back
To the place I was before...

-- Don Henley & Glenn Frey

I didn't write this book to convince anyone of anything.

This effort represents my attempt to put down in tangible form all the details of my dad's story. It's a book about my thoughts and conclusions and speculations on an issue personal to me and makes no difference to me how it does or does not reflect on the greater issue of ufology or the paranormal. As this is also a very personal book, I can't give you definitive answers for you to found a position and move on to the next topic. My hope is that you come away with as many questions as I had when I went into this.

I have fewer questions now. After writing this book, some things have become more perceptible. In every investigator's casebook will be found that internal data page on which go the items and insights not shared with the general public. These items and insights serve to make better sense of what is reported. They provide the perspective that often leads the investigator to an intuitive grasp of the truth.

What is on my internal data page are the things that I've shared with only a few trusted associates over the past nine years. I will not write about these things nor discuss them on the the radio or podcasts. I only bring them up now because my research on this book included material brought to my attention along the way. Specific things on my internal data page, things identical to that which have happened to me, showed up in the research material for this book. As I went deeper into my dad's mystery, I found this particular thing at every turn -- in my dad's story and in my own.

So let's get to it.

In his book *Final Events And The Secret Government Group On Demonic UFOs And The Afterlife*, Nick Redfern shares an odd tale of the US national security community's purported response to the 1947 mystery event and the dark odyssey that followed. According to his sources, the aftermath of the event we know as the 'Roswell' ET encounter led government agencies to attempt to grasp through occult means the nature of the otherworldly visitors. It is a fascinating perspective.

At the center of Redfern's book is a group called The Collins Elite. They are a select collection of military, intelligence and other government personnel who, as Redfern puts it, *"await the future with overwhelming dread"* in anticipation of the perceived hostile agenda of intruders who came here from a

different realm of existence than our own[262]. They believe, we are told, that these intruders came to our world in 1947.

The trouble began with Aleister Crowley in 1918 and continued with Jack Parsons, according to the Collins Elite. In essence, Crowley's Amalantrah Working led to Parsons and L Ron Hubbard's Babalon Working in 1946 which, according to Parsons, may have opened the door that let something in -- somewhere in New Mexico in 1947.

Parsons suggested that even the Kenneth Arnold sighting at Mt Rainier in Washington was a result of his and Hubbard's attempt to create a 'moonchild' via black magic, i.e. deep occult ritual.[263]

Readers of my *EOTW1: An Investigation of Espionage, Murder and the Occult* co-authored with Richard B Spence, himself an author of an excellent book on Crowley, will recognize the novel '*Moonchild'* which Crowley wrote between late 1915 and 1917. *EOTW1* suggests the connection of Crowley's operation to the 1915 San Bernardino Working. In that book we propose that whatever Crowley knew of the events in San Bernardino which resulted in the questionable deaths of seven people served as a major influence and inspiration for much of his novel. The creation of a metaphysical 'moonchild' was actually attempted by Parsons and Hubbard thirty years later and may have wrought doom upon our heads, according to the Collins Elite.

Allegedly it was the investigation into Jack Parsons and his magician lifestyle, which included the libertine joys of 'loose women', that charmed and intrigued several of the agents investigating him. The charge was sharing classified material with unauthorized personnel. The Israelis were keenly interested in Parson's rocketry work (and who knows what else) and there was an issue of a document Parsons should not have removed from a secure workplace.[264] Enter the US Air Force.

It turns out that the Air Materiel Command was concerned about what Mr Parsons was sharing with the Israelis. You recall AMC, one of the host commands of Wright-Patterson AFB. They requested the Air Force Office of Special Investigations (AFOSI) meet with Parsons. The result of that meeting, we are told, is that a very nervous Parsons told the AFOSI agents that he felt responsible for opening an interdimensional doorway that let something in near Roswell. Parsons also allegedly confessed to knowing both Kenneth Arnold and Robert Goddard, the legendary rocket scientist working at Roswell in 1947, suggesting none of these connections were coincidental.[265]

Pause to consider that last bit. Kenneth Arnold, the man credited with the first report of the modern UFO era, was acquainted with Jack Parsons, the brilliant rocket scientists and JPL founder and sorcerer who claims to have caused 'Roswell', who was also pals with Robert Goddard, legendary rocket pioneer who was himself in New Mexico in 1947. And Parsons hinted to the AFOSI that these associations and what allegedly happened near Roswell had something to do with one another.

What do we extrapolate from that? I interpret this to mean that Parsons was telling AFOSI that Arnold had seen the same Others at Mt Rainier whose relatives popped through a portal in New Mexico just days later -- and Robert Goddard was involved somehow, but how exactly?

Go back to my suggestion of a secret US Army AF attempt at manned space flight. Goddard being the American rocketry icon at the time and being in New Mexico might place him on the insiders list of those involved with the flight. However, Parsons thought he had opened a portal and someone came

through so where does that leave the secret manned flight idea?

Who knows? I can't answer that at this point, I'm just throwing out there the ideas that involvement of certain players suggest. My point ultimately is that there is so much evidence to suggest so many options that the whole situation is maddening.

According to one of Redfern's sources, this 1948 meeting between AFOSI agents and Jack Parsons resulted in the formation of a small group at Wright-Patterson AFB tasked to investigate the disciplines of demonology, ancient religions and the occult. The USAF group pursued knowledge on the esoteric world familiar to the celebrated but troubled rocket genius, interviewing priests and archaeologists and shamans alike, and coming away with a growing sense of worry that something was coming. Something bad.[266]

Pause again to consider: Here we have a distinct connection between Wright-Patterson AFB scientists, a milieu directly associated with my dad's specialty, supposedly looking into things from other dimensions, specifically the *beings* from these other dimensions.

Although Redfern's book makes a jump from this 1948 Wright-Patterson AFB group of investigators to the 1952 formation of the Collins Elite, I think it is quite significant to our context here that the first four years of this investigation into the occult and the identity of visitors from another dimension was solely in the hands of the United States Air Force.

It is the UFO flap over Washington DC in 1952 that ultimately drives the establishment of the deeply covert Collins Elite, notably just a week or so after the untimely death of Jack Parsons, we are told by Redfern's source.

What did the US Air Force learn in those four years before the reported formation of the Collins group? Did they keep it to themselves? Or did they report what they found to a higher authority? Since these events involved whatever it was that happened at Roswell -- where many of the Paperclip scientists were assigned -- might their findings have importance to the Paperclip authority JOIC and thus have been reported via the JIC?

Redfern's Collins Elite source claimed that the secrecy surrounding their work was because the USAF wanted to know if the source of the UFOs was 'the Devil' i.e. beings from another dimension[267]. That the classified group employed intelligence collectors and agents from three military branches suggests to me that oversight would likely fall to the JIC, if Redfern's sources are to be entertained. The Collins Elite, in my opinion, was likely formed by the JIC and reported to it.

Note also that the Collins Elite was formed in 1952 -- the very year that the JIC was convinced we would be at total war, albeit with the Soviets, according to known documented sources. Who were else might these guys have been worried about?

Let's say the Collins Elite exists as Redfern has been told. Its original complement was supposedly made up of sixteen agents from the USAF, Army G-2 (Intel) and Naval Intelligence. They were tasked with picking up where the USAF had reached a puzzled conclusion in their investigation into Parson's occult work -- and its similarity to UFO reports.[268]

So with the suggestion of a JIC association to this Collins Elite story, and my earlier postulation that JIC would have some possible connection to the MJ-12 milieu, we must now look again at the JIC assessment of 1945 that we would be in 'total war' with the Soviets by 1952.

Here again we have this period right after the war and then something happening in 1952: The JIC proposed war with the Soviets, the UFO flap in Washington DC, the untimely death of Jack Parsons, the date of the MJ-12 documents, and the alleged formation of the Collins Elite. Is there something missing from that JIC assessment of 1945 that has remained classified?

Consider that 'Roswell' happened two years after the JIC assessment and the MJ-12 papers are dated 1952. Pretend for a moment that the Operation MAJESTIC 12 panel itself was real. If the JIC was indeed the authority to which the Collins Elite reported, this might suggest that the header 'MAJIC' indeed does indicate that the JIC reported to the convened group of twelve men identified in the documents. What did they report?

The problems with the MJ-12 documents we have already discussed, but a tactic in selling disinformation is to include some factual data.[269] I suspect that the factual data in the MJ-12 documents was an accurate list of involved parties, the twelve men, among whom were major USAF commanders, I might add.

If it is the text about the retrieval of UFO crash debris that was fabricated by the document hoaxers, then we can only guess what an authentic 1952 JIC report to MAJESTIC 12 contained. Perhaps it was actually a report on the USAF findings in their four year investigation into what Jack Parsons was doing -- perhaps they had reason to assume they were dealing with being from another dimension. That might imply that it was MAJESTIC 12, confronted with this otherworldly information, that instructed the JIC to form the Collins Elite.

That puts a different spin on 'Roswell' and might explain the more esoteric aspects of MKULTRA. Might the JIC forecast of 'total war' with the Soviets in 1952 have reflected what the Soviets were doing with mind control -- or, more specifically, what they were doing with other occult technologies?

If what Redfern's sources say about Jack Parsons' role in motivating USAF investigation into the occult is true, and if whatever happened in New Mexico in 1947 caused a concern over otherworldly things, could the 1952 assessment have also been about what Russian-captured German scientists were sharing with the Soviets in this regard?

And if that were the case, is it not reasonable to consider that some of our Paperclip Nazis would have known much of the same esoteric secrets that their former colleagues were suspected of sharing with the Russians?

Who exactly was the JIC really worried about?

Consider again the Paperclip Germans working for us in New Mexico and the scenario of a secret US Army Air Force attempt at manned spaceflight. What else might the Germans have enabled and encouraged us to try?

Might we have fooled around with the mysterious Nazi Bell?

The opening of portals was already on someone's mind at the end of WW2. US military intelligence could have already been aware of what Jack Parsons was planning to do in 1946 through an agent planted close to the rocketry wizard.

It so happens that L Ron Hubbard was a US Naval officer whose career reflects an outstanding officer of incredible wartime leadership and accomplishment, according to his Scientology biography.

However, the Department of the Navy has stated that the exploits depicted by Scientology are not supported by Hubbard's personnel record. What the US Navy does report is a comedy of errors and shenanigans of almost hilarious proportion. People who knew Hubbard say the version he told himself was always much closer to the opinion of the Navy. Perhaps most curious is the assessment of one US Air Force veteran, Colonel L. Fletcher, is that Hubbard may actually have been assigned to Naval Intelligence. [270]

Whatever you choose to believe about L Ron Hubbard, he was indeed a personal associate of Jack Parsons. He did practice occult magic with Parsons, including the notorious Babalon Working which Parsons suspected was the cause of the 1947 event in New Mexico. Consider what we've discussed thus far about Paperclip, the US Air Force, the JIC, Wright-Patterson and its investigation into the occult, and what we may have learned about lost ancient technology from the Paperclip Nazis (the Bell) and what we suspected the Soviets were doing with 'mind control' which sparked our quest for that same grail.

Now consider that Hubbard himself - the guy who came up with Scientology and all its mind games -- had vaguely suggested the Navy had wanted him to work issues relative to mind control. What do you think about that?

Since Hubbard was a Navy Intelligence officer with esoteric interests, I find it a reasonable possibility that he was assigned to get close to and collect on Parsons. And that suggests that the US military -- read that the JIC -- already knew what Parsons and Hubbard had done in 1946, and thus may have already suspected what really happened in New Mexico the following summer near Roswell.

And if the JIC already knew that Roswell was an event involving people from another dimension and not an ET event, we have now cut a different facet on the activities of the early days of the CIA's its mind control quest, specifically a new perspective on the work of Sidney Gottlieb in light of his esoteric personal interests and his belief in 'learning science from the past'.

If anyone in the 1950s CIA might have steered things in an occult direction, it would have been Sidney Gottlieb. The reported enthusiasm of the US Air Force for everything MKULTRA just fed Gottlieb's appetite. The argument for JIC interest and its likely authority over the alleged Collins Elite may be reflected in USAF interest in psychic consultant Andrija Puharich. Gottlieb's Project Often would take this USAF example and put it on steroids.

Puharich had been studying ESP since 1947 when, in that special year 1952, he was contacted at his Maine laboratory by his friend who was Chief of Research in the office of Psychological Warfare for

the US Army. This friend, a colonel, expressed that the Army was interested in psychic research. Puharich said that he gave a report on this topic to the aforementioned Army office in late 1952. Redfern's Collins Elite source claimed the Army and the CIA were jointly interested in this report and Redfern cites an actual CIA document titled "A History of Ouija and Intelligence Applications" dated February of 1954.[271]

In the midst of all this was Sidney Gottlieb. According to Redfern source Robert Manners, the Collins Elite was well aware of Gottlieb's interests and found them disturbing. By the late 1960s, Gottlieb was steering the intelligence field into the murky waters of the occult, seeking to 'harness demonic powers as tools of espionage'. Gottlieb apparently believed that Ewen Cameron (remember him?) had actually been at the threshold of a breakthrough in paranormal studies -- and thus Gottlieb used Project Often to explore black magic and the supernatural.[272]

It isn't likely that Gottlieb's interest in such things began suddenly in the 1960s. Remember, he was the guy who lived a somewhat rustic lifestyle with his family and who said *"Often we forget that the only scientific way forward is to learn from the past..."*[273]

How far back? To the foggy days of legend? Perhaps to the days of the Tuatha de Danann?

I have discussed some rather esoteric aspects of my dad's story throughout this book, but can we connect any of these occult pursuits of the CIA more specifically to my dad's service in the Air Force?

Yes we can.

According to Nick Redfern's source, a Dr M.K. Savely of the Aero Medical Division of the United States Air Force Office of Scientific Research was interviewed about his personal contact with Andrija Puharich in the summer of 1957. Dr Savely reported that Puharich had formed a group of fourteen experts in psychic research who were developing methods of telepathy, and that this research was financed by investors including a Representative Bolton of Ohio[274]. Savely also acknowledged Puharich's service with the US Army Medical Corps, assigned to the Army Chemical Center in Edgewood, Maryland[275]. Savely gave a good character reference for Puharich.[276]

Not only do we have Puharich working at an Army facility known to have employed Paperclip Germans, and all that implies within the context of this book, we have Dr M. K. Savely identified with USAF aviation medicine[277], the very field to which my dad was assigned, the field that was commanded and designed by Otis Benson, the biggest advocate for manned space travel in the US Air Force.

Though I could not find M.K. Savely independent of Redfern's book, I did find a document from the 1960s on ejection seat injuries that references an H.E. Savely[278], and also a 'Joint Services Electronic Program Reports List' with Dr Harvey E. Savely, Director of Life Sciences in the Air Force Office of Scientific Research. On this list is also the CIA, the USAF School of Aerospace Medicine at Brooks AFB, various cryptically identified technical offices at Wright-Patterson AFB, a cryptically identified technical office at Maxwell AFB, and the USAF Project RAND -- all organizations discussed in this book and all associated with aspects of my dad's story[279], in some cases directly.

Here we have a reported USAF aviation medicine and aero medical lab scientist meeting with psychics and in the background there are USAF elements and bases at the heart of my dad's story -- organizations we have learned were pursuing esoteric mind science and occult knowledge. MKULTRA brought the CIA and the defense department closer together via the various projects involving psychics and demonology and the like, dating back to the post WW2 era.

Though all of this certainly could suggest that USAF MKULTRA scientists conjured a story of ancient subterranean dwellers and flying machines and magic deadly wands to cover a comparatively mundane USAF operation, I am of the mind that the irony here may be that nobody made up anything of the sort. All Colonel Lundy said was that they hypnotized my dad to suppress what he encountered down below. He said nothing about a 'planted narrative'. He never said my dad's story did not happen as he told it.

In defense of my dad's story, there is the known history of underground facilities constructed by the USAF, the branch of the military at the heart of the Operation Paperclip program and the enthusiastic customer of early CIA programs on mind control. In the milieu of Nazi scientists, mind control, occult experiments and a dawning space program can be found USAF aviation medicine, the very field in which my dad spent his entire enlistment.

On this particular issue, I think that whatever happened to my dad, whatever he really experienced on his deployment to Arizona, was directly influenced and mandated by this joint military-intelligence venture of mind control research.

Why?

I think that whatever the project in Arizona was, be it merely our very critical and sensitive missile defense system or an even more secret and vital manned Air Force space program facility, it was apparently decided that an hypnotically-induced selective amnesia would be applied as a means of suppression some aspect of his participation.

Whether this was the consequence of his unexpected departure or the pre-determined security requirement for all personnel upon departure from the project remains a question, but either the events in the underground happened the way my dad described them or the wilder aspects of his tale were elements of that 'planted narrative' we discussed earlier, something the CIA had been working on for years by 1958.

So why would such a fantasy story be implanted?

Using elements of occult fairy lore found in native mythology may simply have been one way to further protect the classified project by making it hard for anyone to believe the story should the hypnosis break down and the amnesia wear off. As my dad tells the story, the elements of lore and mythology would certainly sound like fantasy to anyone hearing it and thus he would be taken less seriously. This would hypothetically serve to deter wide interest in what my dad told anyone about the underground. But why not just implant a mundane cover story?

Why implant an encounter with Native American 'Ant People' wielding magic tubes that kill?

Might not implanting a wild fairy story to cover something you want to hide, or even discourage suspicion of, might be defeating the purpose. Look at what I'm doing here with this book: digging into this fairy story and making connections that perhaps the Air Force and CIA would not have wanted people to notice. I argue that something a bit more mundane and even boring would have better served operational security.

CONCLUSION

This is where I'm supposed to tell you exactly what happened to my dad back in 1958 and put to rest all the questions in a manner to please everyone.

I can't do that. The whole episode remains the sort of tale told late at night, perhaps not much different than those you might hear on the radio before drifting off to sleep. I can neither confirm that what my dad said is true nor will I assure the reader that it was all a dream or simple fabrication. The facts and circumstances at every turn defy the easy answer.

Not for a moment do I think my dad was willfully making it all up. Neither do I have reason to suspect Colonel Lundy was lying to me[280]. That Billy Les had the name of the guy my dad says was on the plane is too compelling to dismiss. What I know about the Air Force and what I've learned through my research and investigations these past nine years also convinces me that something about what my dad said is true.

I am convinced that his story happened, one way or another. I am also pretty certain that whatever MKULTRA techniques were applied to his psyche affected the remainder of his life, exacerbating whatever issues were there naturally; issues that might likely have manifested no differently than those of most anyone else had he not been exposed to this often bizarre field of psychological warfare.

But I also think he allowed it to be done because it was his duty. The Honorable discharge speaks to that.

I am one of many who can say 'My dad helped put men on the Moon' and one of fewer who can possibly say 'My dad helped send men across the stars and God knows where else...'

So what remains?

There is the mystery of Gerry Irwin and the tube-wielding Hav-Musuvs and also the UFO occupants reported by Schirmer in Nebraska. There is Jacques Vallee and his suspicion that something else is going on here, that the mysterious 'others' may have been with us all along while cleverly masquerading as what we mistakenly assume them to be. We find ourselves again looking for these shy Others who reveal themselves only to those whom they choose and trust.

Jacques Vallee says that the realm of the Others *"constitutes a sort of parallel universe, which co-exists with our own. It is made visible and tangible only to selected people, and the 'doors' that lead through it are tangential points, known only to the elves."*[281]

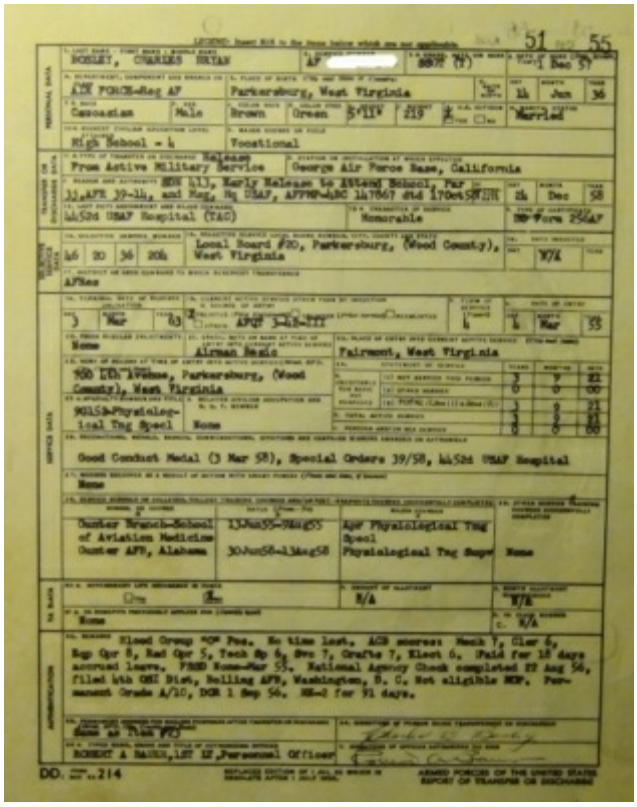
You will have to decide for yourself whether you agree with me or not. I think there is something going on around us, others living beside us, perhaps asymmetrically. I'm convinced my dad encountered them somewhere beneath Holbrook, Arizona, in the late 1950s. They have been with us for a very long time and their presence explains a lot more than some care to acknowledge. Some fear them, others recognize and welcome them, and many others say there is no evidence that they ever were.

As for me, I am unable to disavow the existence of the Tuatha de Danann and of them I will say no more.

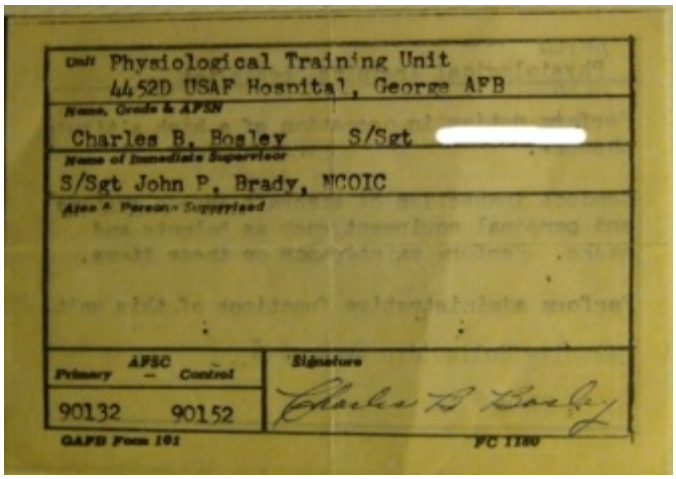
WBB, 3 November 2016

Relax, said the night man
We are programmed to receive...

-- Don Henley & Glenn Frey



My father's DD214. I have blocked out his serial number for obvious reasons relative to identity theft issues.



Unit: Physiological Training Unit
4452D USAF Hospital, George AFB

Name, Grade & AFSN: Charles B. Bosley S/Sgt [redacted]

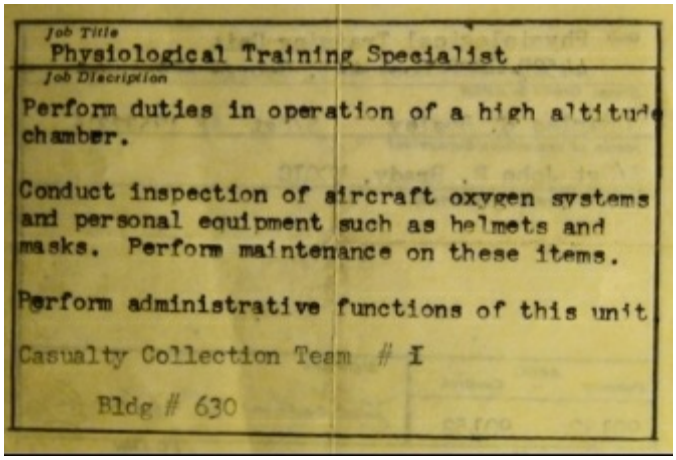
Name of Immediate Supervisor: S/Sgt John P. Brady, NCOIC

Also A Person Supervised:

Primary AFSC	Control	Signature
90132	90152	Charles B. Bosley

GAFB Form 101 FC 1180

The GAFB 101 discussed in the book, serial number blocked.



Job Title
Physiological Training Specialist

Job Discription

Perform duties in operation of a high altitude chamber.

Conduct inspection of aircraft oxygen systems and personal equipment such as helmets and masks. Perform maintenance on these items.

Perform administrative functions of this unit.

Casualty Collection Team # I

Bldg # 630

The reverse side of the GAFB 101, note the added duty.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Beckley, Timothy Green, *Subterranean Worlds Inside Earth*, Inner Light 1992

Berliner, Don & Friedman, Stanton T., *Crash At Corona: The US Military Retrieval and Cover-Up of a UFO -'The Definitive Study of the Roswell Incident',* Marlowe 1992 (Paraview 2004 edition)

Berlitz, Charles & Moore, William L., *The Roswell Incident: The Classic Study of UFO Contact*, Putnam 1980 (Berkley 1988 Edition)

Bosley, Walter & Spence, Richard B, *Empire of the Wheel: An Investigation of Occult Espionage and Murder*, Corvos 2011

Bosley, Walter, *Empire of the Wheel 2: Friends From Sonora*, Corvos 2013

Bosley, Walter, *Empire of the Wheel 3: The Nameless Ones*, Corvos 2014

Bosley, Walter, *Origin: The Nineteenth Century Emergence of the 20th Century Breakaway Civilizations*, Corvos 2015

Bosley, Walter, *Secret Missions: The Hidden Legacy of Old California*, Corvos 2014

Buechner, Col. Howard A. & Bernhart, Capt Wilhelm, *Adolf Hitler and the Secrets of the Holy Lance*, Thunderbird Press 1988

Charroux, Robert, *Forgotten Worlds*, Popular Library 1971

Corso, Col. Philip J. & Birnes, William J., *The Day After Roswell*, Pocket Books 1997

De Lucia, Dean Dominic, *Hollow Earth in the Puranas*, TGS 2000

Farrell, Joseph P., *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter*, Feral House 2009

Farrell, Joseph P., *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons & The Cold War Allied Legend*, AUP 2004

Farrell, Joseph P., *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection*, AUP 2010

Gaddis, Vincent H., *Native American Myths & Mysteries, Borderland Sciences* 1976 (1991 Revised Edition)

Harbinson, W.A., *Genesis*, Dell 1980

Jacobsen, Annie, *Operation Paperclip: The Secret Intelligence Program That Brought Nazi Scientists To America*, Back Bay Books 2014

Klass, Philip J., *The Real Roswell Crashed-Saucer Coverup*, Prometheus Books 1997

Lloyd, John Uri, *Etidorpha: Strange History of a Mysterious Being and an Incredible Journey Inside the Earth*, Global Communications Edition 2012

Marks, John, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control*, Times Books 1979

Paulides, David, *Missing 411: Western United States & Canada*, 2011

Pendle, George, *Strange Angel: The Otherworldly Life of Rocket Scientist John Whiteside Parsons*, Harcourt 2005

Pflock, Karl T., *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe*, Prometheus Books 2001

Randle, Capt.Kevin D. & Schmitt, Donald R., *The Truth About The UFO Crash At Roswell*, Evans 1994

Randle, Capt.Kevin D. & Schmitt, Donald R., *UFO Crash At Roswell*, Avon 1991

Redfern, Nick, *Final Events and The Secret Government Group on Demonic UFOs and the Afterlife*, Anomalist Books 2010

Rux, Bruce, *Architects of the Underworld: Unriddling Atlantis, Anomalies of Mars, and the Mystery of the Sphinx*, Frog Ltd 1996

Rux, Bruce, *Hollywood vs The Aliens: The Motion Picture Industry's Participation in UFO Disinformation*, Frog Ltd 1997

Sauder, Richard PhD, *Underground Bases and Tunnels: What Is The Government Trying To Hide?*, AUP 1995

Sauder, Richard PhD, *Underwater and Underground Bases*, AUP 2001

Standish, David, *Hollow Earth: The Long and Curious History of Imagining Strange Lands, Fantastical Creatures, Advanced Civilizations, and Marvelous Machines Below the Earth's Surface*, Da Capo Press 2006

Thomas, Gordon, *Journey Into Madness: The True Story of Secret CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse*, Bantam 1989

Vallee, Jacques, *Dimensions: A Casebook of Alien Contact*, Wilson & Neff/Contemporary Books 1988 (Ballantine 1989 edition)

Vallee, Jacques, *Passport To Magonia: On UFOs, Folklore, and Parallel Worlds*, Regnery & Co. 1969 (Contemporary Books 1993 edition)

Vallee, Jacques, *Revelations: Alien Contact and Human Deception*, Ballantine 1991

United States Air Force, af.mil

US Air Force Office of Special Investigations

---

[1] But there were such moments on occasion. I witnessed him losing his temper with the dog once, throwing her across the patio. On another occasion, when his brothers were being pricks after he had given up a prime job to go into business with one of them and got dicked over, he flipped out over some tiny thing he'd though I'd done and demolished a model he had built. He wasn't without a temper, it just wasn't on a hair-trigger.

[2] I refer the reader to John Keel's now classic '*The Mothman Prophecies*' and also the film of the same name. I additionally recommend the series of Mothman discussion books by Andrew Colvin.

[3] My dad took me to the World Series -- twice. 1977 and 1978, Dodgers vs Yankees both years. In '78, we attended Game 6 in which New York won the series.

[4] These were the 1967 special 'Flying Saucers' edition of *Look* and an edition of LIFE Magazine which I haven't been able to find online but don't recall it being the 1952 issue with Marilyn Monroe on the cover. It would have been an edition after my dad was out of the USAF.

[5] Imdb.com lists this as a February 1975 release. Narrated by Rod Serling, it was given a limited theatrical run. I likely saw it at the movie theater in Arlington, a suburb of Riverside, California.

[6] Columbia Pictures' release date, according to Imdb.com was 14 December 1977.

[7] 14 March 1988, Los Angeles Field Office. From there I went to the San Jose RA and then to an undercover squad out of the San Francisco Field Office. After eleven months with the Baltimore office for full time study and training in Russian, I was assigned in late 1990 to an undercover operation in Manhattan, working against the GRU and the KGB.

[8] It's possible they took off from Maxwell AFB, also in Montgomery.

[9] In true USG fashion, the file request is pending. I am still waiting for even a response to my request from the office in St.Louis.

[10] USAF historical sources and Wikipedia.

[11] DD214 of Charles B Bosley.

[12] Ibid

[13] In this era of many Americans not giving a damn about the operational security of those who have in the past or do presently protect their lifestyle, it may be that someone could get a copy of my personnel file. My last instruction was that my file is restricted from public access.

[14] Official website of the US Air Force: www.af.mil; and augmented via sources at Wikipedia.

[15] USAF, www.af.mil

[16] Ibid and Various

[17] Ibid and Various

[18] Ibid

[19] USAF www.af.mil; *Aeronautics and Astronautics: An American Chronology of Science and Technology in the Exploration of Space, 1915-1960* by Eugene M. Emme, NASA Historian, NASA 1961, USG Printing Office; Various

[20] 'Colonel Lundy' passed away earlier this year but I still prefer not to name him here. What I knew of his career was over 40 years in the US national security intelligence community. He started in the Army.

[21] USAF, www.af.mil; Wikipedia

[22] USAF, www.af.mil; Wikipedia, Various

[23] USAF www.af.mil;

[24] Family archives, original GAFB Form 101 for Charles Bosley.

[25] This FBI teletype is reprinted in *Roswell:Inconvenient Facts And The Will To Believe* by Karl T. Pflock, Page 240.

[26] DD214 Charles B. Bosley

[27] Family genealogy that I have conducted thus far shows that I am the first military officer on my dad's side of the family since the American Revolution. That man was also Captain Walter Bosley, as am I. Presently I am looking at Civil War history of the family to determine if there was an officer among my branch of the Bosley clan during that conflict.

[28] It can be argued that officers need the management training but NCOs are naturally gifted with the skills of leadership.

[29] The 'Ant People' were underground humans of a different civilization, according to local native tradition.

[30] *Native American Myths & Mysteries* by Vincent Gaddis, Pg 39

[31] Vallee, *Passport To Magonia* Pg 55 quoted from a book published in 1798.

[32] Vallee *Passport To Magonia* , Pg 62

[33] DD214 of Capt Walter Bosley, the author.

[34] I have come to suspect that what Colonel Lundy would not tell me regarding the 'crystal house' could be related to what Richard C. Hoagland and Mike Bara have been proposing to exist on the Moon per their book *Dark Mission*. Conversely, it could be that said 'crystal house' instead referred to a structure found underground but why my source would not address it was never further explained. It is interesting that Betty Andreasson says during her abduction she was taken into a 'crystalline structure' per Rux Pg 129

[35] *Origin* by Walter Bosley, Pgs 219-225

[36] Busby cites this letter being reported in the *Dallas Morning News* on 16 May 1897. The Galveston paper may also have referred to it. It can be read in its entirety in Busby, Pgs 171-176. See bibliography.

[37] Paijmanns, 'The Great 19th Century Airship Wave' in *Free Energy Pioneer*, AUP

[38] In *Origin* I identify the year as 1957, but I cannot find in my notes why I would have. If it's correct then my dad's encounter could indeed have been the year prior to his second TDY to Gunter AFB.

[39] William J Birnes, publisher of UFO Magazine during this period, is the co-author of Corso's book.

[40] Harbinson's Wilson is a cold scientist who ingests his own sperm and ultimately becomes a Frankenstein's monster of his own construction using longevity technology. This Wilson is a self-serving asshole of a highly diabolical caliber and I've seen nothing in the source material on said Wilsons to inspire this fellow. Perhaps Harbinson knows something we don't...

[41] This quote from the novel will have further implication in a later chapter. Harbinson, *Genesis* Pg 326

[42] Wikipedia

[43] Wikipedia

[44] The more southern route at the time was US Highway 85 because Interstate 10 through West Texas via El Paso did not exist until 1959.

[45] Was it actually the Huskie itself? I find this hard to suggest as it would have required fuel etc that these underground people allegedly surpassed. Why agree to our less advanced little helicopter?

[46] Sources tell me that Vallee continues to think this explanation is valid.

[47] Vallee, *Dimensions*, Introduction Pgs xiii-xiv

[48] Philip Corso discusses headgear allegedly retrieved in the Roswell crash which was suspected to be a communications device. He says they had to find personnel with larger heads to try on the headbands so the conductor points would make contact. Corso & Birnes, T*he Day After Roswell* Pg 107

[49] Vallee, *Passport To Magonia*, Pg 56

[50] *Passport To Magonia: On UFOs, Folklore, And Parallel Worlds* by Jacques Vallee, Pgs 18-19

[51] Ibid, Pgs 23-28

[52] Ibid

[53] Ibid, Pg 26; from *The Fairy Faith In Celtic Countries, Its Psychological Origin And Nature* by Walter Yveling Evans Wentz, 1909.

[54] Vallee, *Passport To Magonia*, Pg 26

[55] Ibid Pgs 28-29

[56] Ibid Pgs 87-89 is the source of the details on Irwin. I remain quite curious about this case.

[57] Is this indicative of the strange 'supernatural' effects the fairy folk have on our spectrum of reality? Per Vallee, *Magonia*.

[58] Oh, what promise *that* possibility has when you place it within context of my book *Secret Missions 2: The Lost Expedition of Sir Richard Francis Burton* and the abandoned ancient mystery cities discussed therein.

[59] *Architects of the Underworld* by Bruce Rux; Evans-Wentz; Vallee, *Magonia*,; Various

[60] Rux Pg 354

[61] Vallee, *Magonia* Pg 62

[62] *Dimensions* Pg 28

[63] Rux Pg 23

[64] Ibid

[65] USAF biography of Harry Armstrong, af.mil

[66] Ibid

[67] Ibid; Jacobsen

[68] USAF; Jacobsen Pg 206

[69] Jacobsen Pg 207

[70] Ibid Pgs 207-210

[71] Ibid Pg 210

[72] Ibid Pgs 210-215

[73] Jacobsen, Pgs 212-213

[74] Ibid Pgs 213-216

[75] Ibid Pg 216

[76] Jacobsen Pgs 216-217

[77] The very theme of Jacobsen's book; *Reich of the Black Sun* by Joseph P. Farrell; *The Philosophers' Stone:Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* by Joseph P. Farrell; Various sources.

[78] Jacobsen, Pg 37

[79] Ibid Pgs 37-38

[80] Ibid Pg 52

[81] Ibid Pg 53

[82] USAF biography, af.mil

[83] Ibid

[84] Ibid

[85] Ibid; Jacobsen Pg 354

[86] Jacobsen provides multiple instances.

[87] USAF biography, af.mil

[88] Ibid

[89] USAF af.mil

[90] Jacobsen Pgs 233-239

[91] Ibid

[92] Jacobsen, Chapter Twelve, etc

[93] Jacobsen

[94] Jacobsen

[95] Jacobsen Pgs 356-363

[96] Ibid

[97] Ibid; San Carlos de Bariloche is well known to be a Nazi refuge, considered such to this day. It may have been where Adolf Hitler spent much of the remainder of his life, if you entertain his post-war survival. See my *EOTW2:Friends From Sonora* and *Origin*.

[98] USAF History, af.mil; *Operation Paperclip:The Secret Intelligence Program That Brought Nazis To America* by Annie Jacobsen (Back Bay Books, 2014); Wikipedia, Various.

[99] Ibid all.

[100] The bill that proposed the National Security Act.

[101] Philip J. Klass cites a memo written by Lt.Gen Nathan Twining, himself one of the alleged Majestic 12, in which the general cites: *"The lack of physical evidence in the shape of crash-recovered exhibits which would undeniably prove the existence of these objects."* The memo was written on 23 September 1947, nearly three months following the supposed crash at Roswell about which Twining supposedly already knew. The memo was classified Secret at the time. Klass Pg 174

[102] In accordance with Executive Order 13526, Section 1.5 Duration of Classification, a classification authority must set an expiration date and if they cannot, they set the date for 10 years -- unless deemed of such importance that it can be set to 25 years. Even under Section 3.3 Automatic Declassification, 3.3(b) allows for an exemption to all of this should the information be deemed vital enough to remain classified. Essentially, folks, we don't really have automatic declassification, nor should we. Order signed 29 Dec 2009, published by US Goct, FR 75-707 copy at gpo.gov.

[103] US National Archives; JCS 1067 at World Public Library, worldlibrary.org; Wikipedia, Various

[104] Harry S. Truman Library & Museum, trumanlibrary.org; Wikipedia, Various

[105] Wikipedia, Various

[106] Jacobsen, Pg 92.

[107] This will be discussed again later in the book.

[108] First venture by an *official* US organization, in my opinion.

[109] In Spring 2016, I attended a private gathering of researchers near Alamogordo, New Mexico. After passing through the full body scan in the security screening process at LAX, I noticed that the hair on one of my legs was gone from the knee down. Just food for thought.

[110] Reference to the excellent must-read book by Tom Wolfe.

[111] USAF af.mil; Emme, NASA; Various historical

[112] *The Day After Roswell* by Colonel Philip J. Corso with William J. Birnes covers these technologies through much of the book, representing them to be retrieved from the Roswell crash.

[113] *Roswell and the Reich* by Joseph P. Farrell, Pgs 466-469

[114] Farrell, *Roswell and the Reich* Pgs 478-479

[115] Ibid Pg 479

[116] Ibid Pg 480 presents photographs of the described technology, proving their existence during the war, thus prior to Roswell by years.

[117] Ibid Pgs 481-483

[118] Farrell *Roswell and the Reich*, Pgs 484-485

[119] Ibid Pg 487-488

[120] *Roswell: Inconvenient Facts and the Will to Believe* by Karl T. Pflock, 2001

[121] Ibid

[122] Ibid

[123] Ibid, Page 180: Pflock identifies himself as a former CIA intgelligence officer.

[124] Corso

[125] And in 1960, the *Brookings Report* indeed recommended just that.

[126] Harbinson Pg 577

[127] Rux *Architects* Pg 428

[128] Charroux Pgs 70-71 This is particularly interesting when you consider that Herbert Schirmer, who we mentioned earlier having encountered the 'stinging rod' so resonant with my dad's encounter, also reported a 'winged serpent' emblem on the clothing of the being. See Rux *Architects* Pg 134.

[129] I refer the reader to my books *EOTW2:Friends From Sonora* and *Origin* yet again for the illustrations demonstrating a possible use of this exotic bell technology by the Sonora Aero Club. This argues on behalf of a breakaway civilization footprint in the Roswell mystery.

[130] Farrell, The Philosophers' Stone Pgs 306-307

[131] Ibid Pgs 310-311

[132] USAF af.mil; Jacobsen; Wikipedia, Various

[133] Ibid

[134] Ibid

[135] Ibid

[136] Ibid

[137] Ibid

[138] USAF af.mil; DD214 of Charles Bosley

[139] USAF af.mil; Jacobsen; Wikipedia; Various

[140] USAF af.mil; Wikipedia; Various

[141] USAF af.mil

[142] Ibid

[143] Ibid; Wikipedia; Various

[144] USAF af.mil; Jacobsen Pg 354

[145] USAF af.mil; Jacobsen Pgs 207-214 and various; Wikipedia; Various

[146] Ibid

[147] Jacobsen; Wikipedia; Various

[148] Ibid

[149] Ibid

[150] Jacobsen Pgs 124-125

[151] Jacobsen

[152] Jacobsen

[153] Jacobsen; Wikipedia; Various

[154] Ibid

[155] Jacobsen; USAF af.mil; NASA; Wikipedia; Various

[156] Jacobsen

[157] Jacobsen; Wikipedia; Various

[158] Wikipedia

[159] Marks Pg 5

[160] NASA; Wikipedia; Various

[161] Jacobsen Pg 440; Wikipedia; Various

[162] NY Times obituary, 29 August 1998, by Fprd Burkhart

[163] The Paperclip NASA Fritz Haber is often confused with the earlier Fritz Haber who is considered the 'father of chemical warfare'. He died in 1934.

[164] I refer to the Harriman connection here. See *EOTW2: Friends From Sonora* and *Origin*. I suggest a Harriman association is evidence for NYMZA association.

[165] Jacobsen

[166] Jacobsen Pg 132

[167] We are not finished with Strughold or Die Glocke just yet...

[168] USAF af.mil; Jacobsen Pg 407

[169] Marks, *Manchurian Candidate* Pg 9

[170] Ibid Pg 11

[171] *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate: The CIA and Mind Control* by John Marks (NYT Books, 1979); *The Final Report of the Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations with Respect to Intelligence*, aka the Church Committee Report; Wikipedia; Various

[172] Marks Pg 22

[173] Ibid Pgs 19-20

[174] Marks Pg 133 Ewen Cameron pursued 'complete' and 'differential' amnesia while on CIA grant money.

[175] Ibid Pgs 29-30

[176] Marks Pg 41

[177] Marks reports USAF involvement and enthusiasm for these programs throughout his book, based upon thousand of pages from the Church Committee.

[178] Marks Pg 185

[179] Ibid Pg 184

[180] Ibid Pgs 184-192

[181] Marks Pgs 127-128

[182] Ibid Pg 128 and footnote cites the Air Force Psychological Warfare Division's involvement with and independent development of CIA hypnosis methods.

[183] Ibid Pg 156

[184] Ibid Pg 188; The CIA pursuit of this had actually been going on for a few years.

[185] Marks Pgs 18-19

[186] Ibid Pg 15

[187] Marks Pgs 3-4

[188] Ibid Pg 4

[189] Jacobsen Pgs 288-290

[190] Ibid Pg 386

[191] Refer to Church Committee documents.

[192] Marks Pg 11

[193] Ibid Pg 66

[194] Marks Pgs 67-68

[195] Ibid Pg 68

[196] Marks Pgs 105-121; J*ourney Into Madness: The True Story of CIA Mind Control and Medical Abuse* by Gordon Thomas (Bantam 1989) Pgs 156-159

[197] WebMd.com; Wikipedia; A report at FactMed.com states that the chance of vertigo induced by guarana is slim, but even their limited test sample included one person getting vertigo, so they can kiss my ass.

[198] There is another reason to consider that Lundy may actually have known about or actually been present on the Arizona project. I will get to that later.

[199] Even if one questions Billy Les' credibility, he met me at DuPar's in the Farmers Market; my dad wasn't there. Bill gave me a name. The next day my dad provided the same name. My dad didn't agree that it was the name, I asked him what the name was and he provided it himself. Billy Les could be Satan, The Prince of Lies, and still he knew the name of a man my dad said was on a plane with him over forty years prior. Did my father know Bill...? What might that imply?

[200] USAF af.mi; Wikipedia; Various

[201] Ibid

[202] Ibid

[203] I've personally seen the facilities at WPAFB and they were reported widely during the Dayton Peace Accord in the 1990s.

[204] *Underground Bases and Tunnels: What Is The Government Trying To Hide? By Richard Sauder, PhD* (AUP) Pgs 17-18; also, NORAD *Historical Summaries* indeed support this; Wikipedia, Various.

[205] Ibid Pg 22; RAND Corporation history, rand.org; Wikipedia, Various.

[206] Document RM-2349, RAND Corporation, rand.org.

[207] Sauder Pg 23; Document RM-2617, RAND Corporation.

[208] Sauder Pg 22; *Protective Construction in a Nuclear Age, Vol. 1, Proceedings of the Second Protective Construction Symposium*, 24-26 March, 1959 (New York: MacMillan & Co, 1961) Pgs vi, 1-3.

[209] Executive Order 10346 signed by President Harry S. Truman on 17 April 1952, historycommons.org

[210] Sauder Pg 10, emphasis mine.

[211] *Underwater And Underground Bases* by Richard Sauder, PhD (AUP 2001) Pg 35; 'Underground Facilities for Defense--Experience and Lessons' in *Tunneling and Underground Transport: Future Developments in Technology, Economics and Policy* (New York: Elsevier Science Pub Co Inc, 1987)

[212] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels* Pg 25

[213] Holbrook entry on Wikipedia; *Secret Missions: The Hidden Legacy of Old California* by Walter Bosley, Chapter Four, (Corvos 2014)

[214] *Riddles of the Anasazi* by David Roberts, Smithsonian Magazine July 2003, smithsonianmag.com; David Hatcher Childress in *Lost Cities and Ancient Mysteries* and World Explorer Magazine; Wikipedia; Various

[215] Google Maps; Various US Atlases.

[216] Google Maps;

[217] Manta.com; Amfibi.directory; Various; US Air Force Radar Site is listed as a DoD 'company' at 2305 Navajo Boulevard, Holbrook AZ 86025.

[218] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, Pg 33. The report he refers to is 'Design of Underground Installation, in Rock; General Planning Considerations', Manual No. EM 1110-345-431 (1 Jan 61), Pg 7, US DoD/US Army Corps of Engineers.

[219] Ibid Pg 15

[220] Ibid Pgs 45-46

[221] WhereIsTheMoney.org

[222] *The Myth of the Rule of Law* by Catherine Austin Fitts, Pg 2, dunwalke.com.

[223] Worldwide Military Travel Guide, Andrews AFB/Joint Base Andrews, militaryliving.com/space-a; USAF Air Mobility Command, amc.af.mil

[224] USAF af.mil; Wikipedia; and personal knowledge/experience

[225] Sauder tells of an underground emergency facility at Los Alamos called 'Shelter 41-004'. The construction details of this 6,000 sq ft. facility were declassified in 1959, but the vaults and their security remained very strict nearly forty years later. The facility's purpose was described as "pure physics" and it was placed under something referred to simply as "W Division". Of course, what comes to my

mind is 'Weapons Division', but how enticing it is to consider the possibility of a 'Wilson Division'... Sauder *Underground Bases and Tunnels* Pg 29

[226] Marks Pgs 55-56

[227] Ibid Pgs 56-57

[228] Marks Pg 62

[229] Ibid Pgs 107-111

[230] Ibid Pg 113

[231] Ibid Pgs 114-115

[232] Ibid Pg 116

[233] Ibid Pg 117

[234] Marks Pg 56 Specifically referring to LSD, there is no reason to assume that the military rejected psilocybin.

[235] Ibid Pgs 131-132; Thomas, in *Journey Into Madness*, dedicates much of his book to the infamous Dr Cameron.

[236] Ibid Pgs 133-134

[237] Marks Pgs 133-135

[238] Ibid Pg 135

[239] Ibid Pgs 135-136

[240] Ibid Pgs 136-137

[241] Ibid Pg 137

[242] Marks Pg 136

[243] Ibid Pgs 137-139

[244] Ibid Pgs 155-156

[245] Ibid Pg 128 note

[246] The Church Committee; Marks.

[247] Not just Roswell, either. Think about the Kecksburg retrieval and how similar that object is to the Nazi Bell -- and then consider the Nazi scientists we've already discussed in this book and their involvement with USAF space technology.

[248] USAF af.mil; Wikipedia

[249] Corso Pg 139

[250] The Soviets had launched Sputnik in 1957. Satellite surveillance had become a real world concern.

[251] FBI Closed Files which I have personally reviewed and personal operational experience, as well as other numerous historical sources, document this fact.

[252] No offense to my USAF missile squadron colleagues but a secret space program facility would render missile ops relatively 'mundane'.

[253] Date typed on the front page of the document. Copy reprinted in Farrell *Roswell and the Reich* Pgs 260-266, original source Stanton Friedman, *Top Secret/Majic*.

[254] MAJIC is stamped at the top and bottom of each page.

[255] Jacobsen Pg 191

[256] Ibid Pg 192

[257] Pflock Pg 195 refers to this being done to the Tim Cooper document discussed later in this chapter;

[258] Jacobsen Pg 192. JIC 250/4 refers to the fourth report in the JIC 250 series.

[259] Pflock Pg 195

[260] The reader may educate himself on official US classification regulations via documents like DoD Manual 5200.01, Vol 2

[261] *Final Events And The Secret Government Group On Demonic UFOs And The Afterlife* by Nick Redfern (Anomalist Books, 2010) Pg 92.

[262] Redfern Pg 8

[263] Redfern Pg 22

[264] Ibid Pgs 29-31*; Strange Angel: The Otherworldly Life of Rocket Scientist John Whiteside Parons by George Pendle (Harcourt 2005) Pgs 292-293*.

[265] Redfern Pgs 31-37

[266] Ibid Pgs 36-39

[267] Ibid Pg 40

[268] Ibid Pgs 39-40

[269] Personal professional experience and documented in many places.

[270] Wikipedia

[271] Redfern Pgs 59-60

[272] Ibid Pg 92

[273] Ibid

[274] This was likely Frances Bolton, in office from 1940-1969. Her interests resulted in a Bolton Fellowship in parapsychology. Wikipedia.

[275] I have already discussed this facility's direct Operation Paperclip associations in a previous chapter. Notice the connection.

[276] Ibid Pgs 65-66

[277] Curiously, I cannot find an M.K. Savely linked to USAF aviation medicine anywhere but in the letter referred to by Redfern in his book. Nick has even sent me a copy of the letter and it indeed identifies M.K. Savely as Chief of the Aero Medical Division of the Air Force Office of Scientific Researchin 1957. The Savely I did find is Dr Harvey Savely who left the Aero Medical Laboratory in 1956 to go to the (Air Force) Office of Scientific Research. Same guy? Per *Air Force Aerospace Medical Research Laboratory,* usafunithistory.com

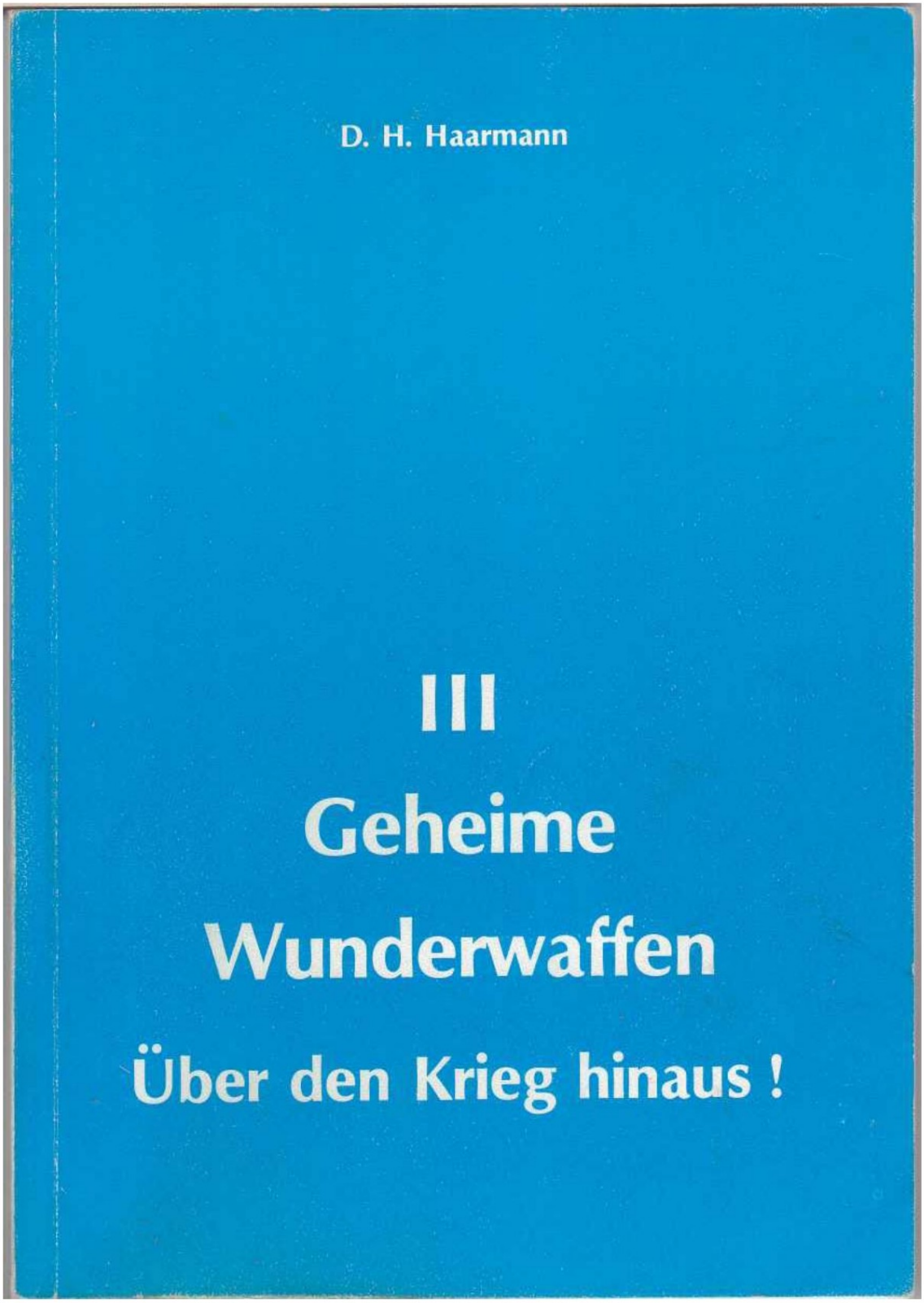
[278] *Studies On Vertebral Injuries Sustained During Aircrew Ejection* by Higgins, Enfield and Marshall, ONR 1965, dtic.mil, Pg 36

[279] dspace.mit.edu/bitstream/handle/1721.1/56174/RLE_QPR_101_BM.pdf

[280] On the contrary. I have a lot of reasons for now suspecting that Colonel Lundy was a member of the Collins Elite. He entered the US Army in the early 1950s and was recruited into Special Forces. He worked with the CIA for decades. The things he shared with me and briefed me on over the years are among the specific interests of the Collins Elite. He even told me of a special underground facility at Ft Belvoir.which Richard Sauder cites in *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, Pg 11. He knew all about what happened to my dad in Arizona. He taught me certain skills in occult sciences for use in my work.

[281] Vallee, *Passport To Magonia* Pg 102

Machine Translated by Google



Machine Translated by Google

SOCIETY FOR

HUGIN

POLITICAL -

PHILOSOPHICAL

THE STUDY EV

DH Haarmann

III

Secrets

Wonder Weapons

Beyond the war!

Machine Translated by Google

The legal review before printing this document ensures that no criminal law provisions according to the German Criminal Code are violated.

Copyright © 1985 All rights reserved by the author

Distributed by HUGIN, Society for pol. phil. Studies eV, 5802 Wetter4, PO Box 13 Self-printed
Cover fee:

12,- DM

Machine Translated by Google

"What the death of the elf will mean one day,
Only a few people can imagine today -
I can write even less about it.
We are in the midst of a great turning point.
What we are all going through are its birth pangs.

Everything seems negative -
and then something new and great will happen

to be born ....."

RUDOLF HESS

(From a letter from the loneliest prisoner in the world, who had been incarcerated for 45 years, written on October 28, 1946 from prison, to his wife, twelve days after the hanging of the Nuremberg martyrs.)

Machine Translated by Google

FOREWORD

At this point I would like to express my sincere thanks to some of our readers at home and abroad for sending in documents and newspaper reports from various parts of the world. This has enabled me to provide an even better insight into these extraordinary connections which are hardly known to the world public.

The reader should, in view of the current situation, show understanding for the fact that in the chapter 'German *Restricted Areas',* precise geographical information on their location is partly missing, and has been made unrecognizable in a document in the appendix, and that precise source information and dates are missing, although I have them.

If in Part I of SECRET WONDER WEAPONS only the German Antarctic region was mentioned as a representative of various other German restricted areas, the facts were not nearly as substantiated as they are today. Now that there are more or less precise references to various other areas in connection with the deportation, as well as German aviation developments not captured in 1945, a much more accurate overall picture is emerging.

Autumn 1985

Machine Translated by Google

TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page
Foreword	6
The German flying disc development	9
The function of the fireballs - and their production facilities	15
Further secret developments Flight	24
maneuvers and speeds - physically impossible?	40
The other science - Basic knowledge of the drive secret	46
Further details on the flying disc drive	58
Thoughts on the origins of other science	63
German restricted areas - worldwide	68
The deposition maneuver	93
epilogue	103
Attachment	105
List of sources	131

Machine Translated by Google

WE DEAD AIRMEN
REMAINED VICTORIOUS
THROUGH OURSELVES
ALONE, PEOPLE, FLY AGAIN
AND YOU WILL REMAIN
VICTORIOUS THROUGH YOURSELF ALONE.

(Inscription on the memorial
on the Wasserkuppe)

THE GERMAN FLYING DISC DEVELOPMENT

As explained in more detail in Part I of this series of publications entitled *'Secret Wonder Weapons' ,* the prototypes of the flying objects referred to today by the media as flying saucers or UFOs were demonstrably developed in Germany before 1945 under the names flying gyroscopes, flying discs, humming gyroscopes or V-7s. The following picture emerges from the press reports of the 1950s:

I. Captain and factory pilot, Ing. Rudolf Schriever and Ing. Habermohl worked on the hermetically sealed part of the factory airfield of the German BMW factory in Prague.
A Schriever model first flew on June 1, 1942; a manned first flight took place on February 14, 1945 in Prague.

II. Dr.-Ing. and Colonel of the Pioneer Corps Heinrich Richard Miethe developed the system at the BMW plant in Breslau. After the collapse of fascism in Italy, the Italian inventor and turbine engineer Professor Giuseppe Beluzzo took part in this work.

The report prepared for the Führer after Miethe's first flight was leaked to the enemy and thus became known. Miethe wrote in it:

"Today, April 17, 1944, the 'Vergeltungswaffe 7' was tested over the Baltic skies under my leadership and in the presence of three colonels of the Luftwaffe. The following summary contains the general characteristics and the achieved performance of the missile.

- The V7, a supersonic helicopter equipped with 12 BMW028 turbochargers, reached an altitude of 20,803 metres on its first test flight and an altitude of 24,200 metres on its second ascent

- On the ground the engine developed a power of 5,500 C V.

Machine Translated by Google

at the nozzles and a thrust of 2,600 kiloponds; in the air it was 5,400 C V. and *2,900 kiloponds thrust.*

- *Helium served as the basic fuel. 22 cubic metres were sufficient for a flight of* 76 *hours and 10 minutes.*
- *In Peenemünde the launch took place from a vertical tower, with the help of an additional rocket within 15.8 seconds.*
- *In principle, the device could also be operated with nuclear energy."*

S. 90 (1)

Graduate physicist Illo Brand comments on this Miethe report : *"The development work on this missile was carried out in the workshops of the Tenth Army in Essen, Dortmund, Stettin and Peenemünde, where the Retaliation Weapons VI and V2 were also* tested ."

S. 90 (1)

III. The Austrian implosion expert Victor Schauberger, who was received by the Führer for a first meeting in the Reich Chancellery in Berlin in 1934, created his first experimental model made of copper in 1940 at the Kertl company in Vienna IV, and later worked with Polish and Czech engineers and structural engineers who were first imprisoned and later released in the Mauthausen concentration camp. (2)

IV. At the Waldpolenz air base near Wurzen, about 25 km east of Leipzig, the flight instructor Lieutenant Schmidt developed

The order given here corresponds to the respective secrecy levels that were in place at the time: I = top secret; II = strictest secrecy; III = strictest secrecy; IV = absolute secrecy. (According to N. Jürgen-Ratthofer, No. 20/1980,

S. 15 (3)

However, under secrecy level IV, Jürgen-Ratthofer claims that here, under the care of the German Reich Research Office - on the basis of the electrogravity experiments of the famous Italian physicist Marconi, who died in 1937 - a 30 to 35 year old German-speaking technician and inventor and possible student of Marconi was developing flying discs. However, the occupation and post-war press has almost nothing to report about this; which is irrelevant, since as an instrument of the enemy, they did not know much anyway, and where they did know, they misled the reader by twisting, diverting and distorting, to the detriment of Germany and the German people.

Machine Translated by Google

There is something wrong with the first test reports about the first German flying disc launch attempts:

These reports also talk about jets, turbo units, adjustable blades (similar to propellers) and a lot of mechanics, as well as various conventional fuels.

But all of this seems most likely not to be present in the flying discs or UFOs that are repeatedly seen and, in serious cases, even come into action, or has been kept to a minimum. The flying discs make no noise other than a quiet humming sound, apparently have no exhaust fumes and demonstrate zigzag flights or make right-angled turns even at several times the speed of sound. But this is precisely what is not possible with conventional flight technology or propulsion systems.

Either the reports given to the press by Schriever, Habermohl, Miethe and others were distorted to confuse the enemy, or their series of developments are to be considered second or third class; which is to be assumed because Schauberger, Miethe etc. were not included in the large-scale removal maneuver in the mid-1940s (it is proven that it took place; we will report on it later). You don't leave top scientists and inventors behind and hand them over to the enemy, especially since you didn't intend to give up the fight, but to take it up again from a much higher level!

The following two letters from readers report on flying discs over Mecklenburg from 1943 and over Oldenburg in 1944. In one case, the zigzag movement is mentioned, in the other another characteristic is reported: the *'red-hot'* disc:

I saw > Flying Plates <

After an Italian colleague recently spoke up and explained that the 'flying saucers' were nothing new, but that they had already been sighted over Germany and Italy during the war, as they were weapons that were being tested, I would also like to say something on the subject:

The fact is that other eyewitnesses and I in Neustrelitz i. M. — from the summer of 1943 onwards at intervals — saw such “flying saucers” from the shore of Lake Zierker. To us they looked like vertical, flying, flat disks that were glowing red and

Machine Translated by Google

This information about flying saucers was not only provided to us, but also about 70 km south of Prague, near the road from Prague to Pilsen.
The headquarters or administration was in Prague. HL's wife, who had only ever been told a harmless version of her husband's work, only remembered that her husband had to travel about 1 1/2 hours from Prague to the factory site. My brother was only able to answer a small part of my 11 written questions and hardly any precise answers. In any case, nothing fell into the hands of the enemy, because in January/February 1945 the technicians and engineers flew away with their wives and children to an unknown destination in flying discs. Nothing of use was left behind. When I asked why his brother had died here in Germany, I received the answer that the selection had been made based on the children, families with children under 10 were not taken, and his brother had two small children at the time. But those who remained here were not left in Prague, but - presumably to prevent enemy interrogation - evacuated to Bavaria, where they were settled in isolated and scattered locations. All he had learned about the propulsion system from his brother was: *'Completely new type of propulsion.* And when I asked about the flying disc armament, the answer was *'Some kind of beam, maybe laser?*

Effect of the weapons: normal engines stop.'

Nothing was known about the size of the factory, the number of employees, the number of flying discs manufactured, the number of people who left there and how many flying discs they manufactured.

When he visited his brother in Prague in December 1944 - he still remembered - his brother said to him: *'I have to leave urgently tomorrow morning. Hermann is coming to an important meeting',* by Hermann he meant Göring. The Reich Aviation Minister and Reich Marshal often visited and inspected the factory premises. When he returned from the meeting late in the evening, he said in a hopeful voice: *'What we need is a little more time, then the war will turn in our favor again. I am not allowed to tell you any more details.'*

Based on my correspondence with the brother of the deceased Dipl.-Ing. HL and especially after several long telephone conversations, I am convinced that I can absolutely trust these details and that nothing has been glossed over or added without authorization. My confidant was able to

Machine Translated by Google

'Revelations' of his brother, who died in 1978, not really
Only later, when he had read the brochure *'UFOs - Unknown Flying Object?; Last Secret Weapon of the Third Reich?'* by W. Mattern and other UFO literature, did he understand the whole context. Then, from his now over 70-year-old

He was unable to obtain further details from his sister-in-law,
since she apparently knew nothing of importance, and also
no longer remembers many things

At this point, the following considerations are appropriate: When the Soviets invaded, the Silesian capital of Breslau
declared a fortress From 15 February 1945 the city was surrounded by the Soviets and defended itself bravely and heroically until 6 May 45
A part of the Breslau population had little understanding for the ordered fortification measures, arguing that the city had no armaments industry and that the blood

The cost of defence was therefore not of decisive importance for the war. When in June 1952 the *'France* So/7, Paris, published the Dr. Miethe report on the secret flying disc test site in Breslau
became known, a few Breslauers became aware of the deeper meaning
the fortification measures became clearer, and there was most likely still some essential work to be completed.

Was the 'looting *by the Soviets'* mentioned in the report a diversion by Miethe, or were Miethe's statements twisted by the Pariser Abendzeitung (see the appendix for two German
Press reports referring to the France Soir report)? Because
Today, 40 years later, everything speaks against a Soviet capture, which
At that time it was still easy to make it credible, and also wanted to,
but can also be regarded as refuted by the HUGIN SPECIAL STUDY by O. Bergmann

It was almost similar with the Prague-Pilsen area in the then Protectorate of Bohemia and Moravia. If you take maps with the front lines of the last days of the war in hand (see also the globe sketch in the appendix), you can clearly see that while the Reich territory was almost completely occupied by the enemy at the beginning of May 1945,

was completely overrun, the Bohemian region was defended and kept free of enemies until the day of capitulation. Logically, in a normal case, not a protectorate, but the actual

The core land is defended the longest, the assumption here is not
to exclude that anything decisive has yet to be completed in the Bohemian region had to be for a relocation (?) for a removal (?).

Machine Translated by Google

THE FUNCTION OF FIREBALLS - AND THEIR PRODUCTION FACILITIES

During the last months of the war, Allied pilots reported: *'silver balls floating in the air', 'mysterious round, glowing flying objects'* which they had seen in the air over the various European fronts and also during their terror attacks on the civilian population in German cities, and which at times accompanied them up close.

It was probably partly manned flying discs and partly these apparently unmanned spheres that Germany's Allied enemies called *'foo fighters'* (enemy fighter planes). Dipl. physicist Illo Brand writes about these spheres, also called *'fireballs' :*

> *"As a by-product of this research (here we mean the ignition interference of enemy aircraft engines, which we will come to later; author's note), another air force center, which was led by Speer and the technical troops of the SS, had developed methods for radio interference with American night fighters. From these investigations a highly original flying machine was created: it was round and armored; it was roughly shaped like a turtle. The flying machine was powered by a turbojet engine that was also flat and round. In flight, the engine produced a huge halo of glowing flames, which gave the machine the name 'fireball'. After takeoff, these objects were initially guided by radio to the vicinity of the enemy aircraft. Infrared sensors, which responded to the hot exhaust gases, took over the further automatic navigation.*
>
> *The fiery halo around the objects - which was created by special fuel mixtures - and the chemical additives that* were able to ionize the air in the immediate vicinity *resulted in considerable electrical interference fields.*
> *Specially developed and specially protected klystron tubes also emitted strong electromagnetic pulses, massively disrupting enemy radar systems."*
>
> **S. 89 (1)**

The English UFO reference work *'The Encyclopedia of UFOs'* quotes under the keyword *'foo-fighter* ' the Italian flight engineer Renato Vesco from his article in the Argosy magazine of August 1969, in which he states

Machine Translated by Google

"Later encounters with foo fighters led experts to believe that they were German inventions of a new way *to fool radar. How close they came to the truth became clear when Allied intelligence experts entered the secret Nazi factories. The foo fighters seen by Allied pilots were only a small demonstration and a fraction of a variety of methods for defeating radar and disrupting electromagnetic currents. Work on an anti-radar fireball was accelerated at a Luftwaffe experimental center near Oberammergau in the fall of 1944. There and at the aeronautical facilities at Wiener Neustadt the first fireballs were manufactured. Later, as the Russians approached Austria, these productions were transferred to the Black Forest. Quick and remotely controlled, equipped with klystron tubes operating on the same frequency as the enemy radar, they could wipe the radar signals from the screen and were thus invisible to ground control."*

S. 136 ©

At least this English UFO encyclopedia was prepared to admit that the German secret weapon theory in the case of the initially so-called *'Foo Fighters'* is more likely than attempts at extraterrestrial explanations, and adds: *'as many would like to believe'*.

Regarding the planning and production of the fireballs, we read from Dipl.-Phys. Brand:

"Planning for the 'Fireball' project began in the aircraft factories in Wiener Neustadt and in the Oberpfaffenhofen Aircraft Radio Research Institute (FFO). As the Russians approached the Austrian border, further work was carried out in underground factories at the Zeppelin works in the Black Forest. The klystron tubes were supplied by the German Reichspost Research Institute (FDRP) in Aach near Radolfzell. A person who was present at the first launch of a 'Fireball' can still remember the flight characteristics of the device. During the day, the thing looked like a glowing top rotating on its own axis. At night, the 'Fireball' was comparable to a burning ball."

S. 89 (1)

The English UFO encyclopedia also writes about the fireballs: *"The Foo Fighters or Kraut Balls (the 'Krauts' was a strong expression for the sauerkraut-eating Germans on the English-American side; inserted by the author), as they are also called*

Machine Translated by Google

were first observed as very small balls of light that followed and apparently annoyed fighter and bomber planes during the last months of World War II. These miniature UFOs appeared alone, in pairs or in groups and sometimes seemed to be under some kind of remote, intelligent control. They sometimes emitted a steady beam of red, gold or white light, sometimes pulsating."

S. 135 ©

In *'Secret Wonder Weapons'* II, p. 8+9, three American press reports from December 13, 1944, about sighted new German fireballs were reproduced, and two more from January 2, 1945 are to follow here:

"The London Daily Telegraph:
In Alsace, January 1, 1945 'And now the Phoo-Fighters'. Phoo-Fighters are the sensation of our harassment flights. They are strange orange lights that follow our planes in formation and individually, and also turn and climb. Some have come within a few meters of the planes and have been shot down. Another type appears under the wings and sends out a series of dim flashes. (Express News Service.)"

On the same day, the New *York Herald Tribune* reported on a Night fighter base in France:

"On December 13, 1944, it was announced to press reporters that the Germans had used silvery balls against aircraft flying in during the day. Pilots report that they have seen these balls individually and in clusters during their flights over the Rhine. Now it seems as if the Germans have thrown something new into the night sky over Germany. They are the crazy, mysterious 'Foo Fighter' balls that race along the wing tips of the 'Beaufighters' flying night jamming missions over Germany. The crews have been encountering this sinister weapon during their night missions for more than four weeks. No one seems to know what this flying weapon is. The fireballs appear suddenly and accompany the aircraft for many kilometers. They seem to be controlled by radio from the ground. At least that is what intelligence reports say: 'There are three types of these lights that we call Foo Fighters,' says Lt Donald Meiers of Chicago. 'One is a red ball that

Machine Translated by Google

appears at our wing tips and accompanies us. No. 2 is a vertical line of three fireballs that flies ahead of us and No. 3 is a group of about 75 *lights that appears in the distance and stands in the sky like a Christmas tree whose lights are switched on and off.'*

The pilots of this night fighter squadron, which has been in operation since September 1943, consider these fiery balls to be the most mysterious thing they have ever seen. They are convinced that these foo fighters are used as a psychological and military weapon, although it is not the nature of fireballs to *attack an aircraft. 'Recently a foo fighter caught me at a height of around 220 m and chased me for over 30 km down the Rhine valley,' said Meiers. 'I turned to the right and... two fireballs circled with me! We were doing a good 420 km/ h, but the fireballs easily kept up. Another time we were also caught by a foo fighter and I fell away at 580 km/ h. The ball stayed at the height of our wing tip for quite a while and then shot off upwards. When I saw the thing stuck to the tip of my wing, I had the horrible thought that somewhere on the ground a German would press a button and blow me up. But they neither explode nor attack us. They just follow us and seem extremely curious."*

This is the New York Herald Tribune from January 2, 1945, during the final phase of World War II. This and the previous report appeared in Harold T. Wilkins' book: *'Flying Saucer in the Moon'* in Chapter II: 'The *Coming of the Foo Fighters';* taken from UFO News, No. 70, June 1962. In his book *'Flying Saucer on the attack',* published in 1967 by Ace Books, Ins., New York, Wilkins deals in detail with these Foo Fighters.

We would like to avoid filling several pages with eyewitness and pilot reports about fireballs sighted at that time. In the chapter *'The era of the 'Foo Fighters'* and *'Kraut Balls'* from 1941-1945', pages 71-110, I. Brand (1) reproduces a whole series of well-known reports of Allied pilots' experiences. See also: 'The UFO phenomenon', by JvButtlar, p. 15/16 (28)

We find two, albeit sparse, references to the fireballs in Fritz Trenkle's book *'Die deutschen Funkstörverfahren bis*

Machine Translated by Google

7945'. On page 93 under the stamp *'Secret Command Matter'* there is a painted picture: A vehicle with transmitting and receiving devices installed in the rear, next to it a parabolic mirror standing on the ground. Adjacent information: *'"Fireball' jammer; Fireball RPF transmitter"* plus further technical information. Apparently the mobile ground station for the fireballs. On page 168 in the table *'Radio jamming and radio deception system': "Fireball=RPF transmitter= Post-Klystron"* with additional technical information. (7) The English.

Consul Gordon W. Creighton wrote in a lengthy report on the *'Foo Fighters' in 1962:*

> *"After the occupation of Germany by the Allies, however, no more 'foo fighters' were observed there. Even in a detailed investigation of the German test sites and their Ceheim projects, nothing was found - as far as we know - that would suggest that the Germans had invented something that could fly in formations for hours as golden or silver balls and could be made invisible and then visible again from one moment to the next."* No. 70, 6/1962, Ufo-Nachr.

Which could also mean that step by step the occupation of Germany was carried out as part of the large-scale and yet very secret removal maneuver; so that the Allied spying agents could no longer find anything.

In previous years, US Major Donald E. Keyhoe in the Pentagon was denied access to these Foo Fighter files on the grounds that this specific data was still classified.

S. 103©

A special department of the British secret service under the leadership of Lieutenant General Massey and codenamed *'Section T'* began collecting and examining these reports as early as 1943, and they were immediately classified as *'secret'* in 1944.

S. 92 ©

A double agent who had tried to convince the English that these fiery-looking balls were not developments of the Germans, but that the Germans, for their part, believed that they were a new development of the Allies, was exposed a short time later and shot by the English in the spring of 1944.

S.92 (1)

The German attempt to mislead the Allies was apparently only of short duration. For, when, from December 1948, countless

Machine Translated by Google

When fireballs hit the entire southwestern United States, as well as the states of Pennsylvania, Maryland, Washington, and the U.S. island of Puerto Rico, the U.S. Air Force set up 'Project *Twinkle'* in 1949 to research these mysterious balls, which were not only observed by hundreds of U.S. pilots, weather observers, and atomic researchers, but also by Air Force colonels, U.S. intelligence officers, and senior chiefs of staff. The first Project Twinkle observation station was in Vaughn, New Mexico, and later, among others, at Holloman Air Force Base in Alamogordo (New Mexico).

This first observation project, Twinkle, was later incorporated into the general UFO observation and defense organizations that the US government felt compelled to create and which it expanded from year to year, such as:

- the *Air Defense Command ;* - the *Air Force Intelligence ;* - the super-secret NSA; National Security Agency with its 15,000 employees, which deals largely with UFOs; - NORAD (the North American Defense Command's early warning system) with its 35,000 employees; - and other organizations.

Based on the multi-page newspaper report by the American Dr. Georg Hunt Williamson *'The Green Fireballs' (9),* the following can be said in summary about these mysterious flying balls, also called *'telemeter discs'* - only a subset of the German flying discs:

They are silently flying, artificially powered, partly remote-controlled, partly self-reacting, spherical or disc-shaped objects measuring a few centimetres to one metre (sometimes more) in size, which, depending on their type of propulsion, flight characteristics and type, are observed to fluoresce green, white, yellow and red, and were developed and built before 1945 in secret, partly underground German research centres and used to collect information and for flight reconnaissance, radar and radio jamming purposes, clearly by the German side - before 1945 still from German soil, after 1945 mostly from spaceships or spacecraft.

'UFOs' - were launched. They are divided into three, possibly more types depending on their design or area of responsibility and in most cases have so far been indestructible by gunfire.

The MI. and probably highest type, the 'green *fireballs',* serves openly-20

Machine Translated by Google

without neutralizing harmful radioactivity in the earth's atmosphere caused by the atomic and radioactive experiments of the Allied powers in the East and West. After completing their task, the *'balls'* can either be retrieved by remote control or dissolved or atomized in the task area, in which case a silent (!) light explosion takes place (see photo of a fireball, taken from *"Le Figaro Magazine",* Paris, most likely in the stage of such a silent *'light explosion'* in the appendix). The fireballs are similar in their significance to our own remote-controlled devices; only on a much higher level, says Dr. Williamson.

Air analyses carried out in the USA after such fireball dissolutions showed concentrations of copper particles in the air, from which it is concluded for these and other reasons that the essence of these ominous balls consists of crystalline copper or copper and crystal. Dr. Williamson describes the properties of copper, which until now were probably only known esoterically/ alchemically, as follows:

> *"Copper in particular has the strange ability to register and hold on. Copper can be compared to a soul in terms of its receptivity and, like a soul, can reproduce impressions once received. One can say: copper never forgets; it does not lose the impressions it has received. Copper is a layered, attentive, crystallized consciousness. ..." (9)*

The possibility of using crystals for transmitting messages no longer sounds quite so incomprehensible, but only because they have now found their way into the field of communications technology as transistors (semiconductor crystals) and as crystal detectors (germanium crystals). In 1930, Rudolf J. Gorsieben dealt with the theory of crystals in a philosophical way in a book chapter and made the statement *"all substance, all matter is crystallized spirit" (10).* With the materialistic way of thinking that we have been taught, we will certainly not get any further here; we must be prepared to think differently!

In the first post-war years, this material dissolution, this silent and flash-like dematerialization of a fireball, was simply incomprehensible. *"The World* of November 7, 1950 reported how thirty employees of an electric power plant in the city of Seattle in the US state of Washington observed a fiery flying object gliding slowly over the city, which then, as it moved

Machine Translated by Google

over South Seattle exploded:

> *"The police were immediately notified. The eyewitnesses indicated an area of about 16 blocks where the missile must have landed. With the help of the fire department, this area was searched. However, no remains were found, nor any other trace that would suggest that an accident had occurred. So what should one make of such a report? Does it not lead one to believe that the celestial bodies explode when their propulsion power is exhausted, and that the fragments dissolve and become gaseous during the fall?*
>
> *There is little we can say about it.....*

The ominous-looking flying balls can therefore orient themselves and inform themselves worldwide through words, images and sound, and do so without having to engage in expensive espionage in the traditional sense, simply by using these flying microphones and television eyes to record and play back colored images and three-dimensional projections (it should be remembered that the first usable television set was first presented to the world public in the spring of 1936 at the Berlin Radio Exhibition and was first used in the same year at the Summer Olympics, also in Berlin.

The production of the *'people's television',* which had just gone into series production in 1939, came to a halt because the war broke out. Technical advances were therefore already available. The idea that these fireballs could also perceive people's thoughts and feelings, penetrate into locked rooms through chimneys, slits, doors and openings, and not only record conversations and secret conferences of the opposing side, but also scan written texts, thus preventing planned military actions or political crimes from being concealed, simply sounds too fantastic and improbable.

Highly developed computers are apparently used to store the fireball information collected from all over the world (it should also be remembered here that the computer was developed in Germany in the second half of the 1930s by the German engineer Konrad Zuse). Here again, one can see that the intellectual and technical-physical prerequisites were there to create such *'wonder weapons' .* There was certainly no lack of will and energy, especially at that time. And when people in Germany spoke of *'wonder weapons'* in the last years of the war , it is only too logical that these were not just a simple invention.

Machine Translated by Google

improvement of conventional technology.
We have to get used to the idea that the miracle wars were an extraordinary technological leap if we want to approach the topic without prejudice.

The 'realism' that has been handed down to us, or rather forced upon us , based on the false doctrine of scientific materialism of the 18th and 19th centuries, which only recognized what we can see, measure, weigh, touch and count, will have a hard time finding its way into the third millennium, into the spiritually determined age of Aquarius. The 'realist ' who thinks only with his intellect is already cornered today when he is asked to explain from the perspective of this long-outdated world view why, for example, a bone fracture inside the body can be conjured up on a photographic plate using X-rays, or how images and words can be sent from the moon to the earth and vice versa without a direct cable connection and made audible or visible here or there (radio and television). Or how light is created, what electricity really is. And if we are still being educated in this unrealistic world view of the eternal yesterday people in schools, higher education institutions and universities by the so-called science that denies the spirit, magic and transcendence and believes it can explain everything materialistically, then it is up to us to break these psychological shackles.

An intellectual, ideological and technical elite has finally overcome the dark Middle Ages. We who are left behind should also make an effort to catch up intellectually in every respect. Instead, we Central Europeans have been going through a regression controlled by the dark forces for 40 years that is beyond comprehension!

"Scientific knowledge is not objective. It is, like civilization, a conspiracy. A whole series of facts are rejected because they would disturb the established conclusions of reason.

We live under an inquisition and the weapon it most often uses against unpleasant facts is contempt accompanied by scornful laughter."

S. 173 (12)

Machine Translated by Google

MORE SECRET DEVELOPMENTS

In May 1983, a young man from Hagen, who was also involved in the secret German developments before 1945, told me
as with the UFO mystery of the last decades, that he personally knew the aerodynamicist - let's call him Heinrich Müller -
who worked in Peenemünde before 1945, later at the Aviation and Space Archives and also at an aviation magazine. In the 30 km
Zossen, a town south of Berlin, were in the last years of the war
often and without reason or apparent cause, cars on the
Streets have stopped because secret research facilities
Müller personally reported to him that attempts were being made to stop the engines. The Army High Command was also located in Zossen.

In the January 1983 issue of the monthly magazine *"Waffenrevue"* a very well documented 28-page report appeared,
titled
"The most secret weapon of WWII; engine stopping agent", which began with the following:

> *"We want to deal here with a German development during the Second World War that was treated so top secret that* only *after decades of effort*
>
> *and under the most difficult conditions, we have managed to collect some very interesting documents about*
> *It is therefore not surprising that in the past*
> *There was nothing about it in the literature. Some readers* may have heard the term 'engine stopping agent' somewhere, but many will not know what it means.
>
> have placed." S. 7711 (13)

Based on the consideration that enemy weapons equipped with combustion engines, such as aircraft, tanks, etc.,
Since anti-aircraft fire or explosive projectiles could only be fought and defended very poorly up to that point, a Hildesheim-based company, ELEMAC, submitted a proposal entitled *"Disruption of the function of electrical devices as a means of warfare" ,* which was

personal staff of the Reichsführer SS to the various staffs
and research institutes of the Reich for assessment and comment (documented by the reproduction of 11 original documents in the Waffen-Revue). Photocopy of the ELEMAG letter in the appendix.

By remote control, by ionization of the air in the area of an opposing combustion engine, an engine stop should be brought about

Machine Translated by Google

which, for example, would cause an airplane to crash.

The ELEMAG proposal of November 28, 1944 came too late in view of the already clearly looming defeat in the war and was blocked and rejected with excuses such as: due to excessive workload or: technically not feasible for the time being; at least on paper. It is noteworthy that the correspondence surrounding this proposal was classified as *'secret'* .

Two excerpts from letters on this subject may also be of interest.
RSH Office IV letter dated 8.1.45 to SS-Standartenführer Dr. R. Brandt *"The idea of disrupting electrical equipment, wireless communication, etc. by ionizing the surrounding airspace* **is not new"**

S. 7724 (13)

Prof. Dr. Dr. A Meißner, AEG Research Institute Berlin-Reinickendorf, 27.1.1945:

"Assessment/ On the proposals of 'Elemag1 ....
In the previous war (-1916), despite strong objections from experts, several departments had to work on the task of making the ignition in aircraft ineffective by means of X-rays or some other rays ('death rays')."

S. 7731-33 (13)

Which shows that at least individual groups have been secretly working on this for a long time, and *the "secret research facility for engine stop experiments in Zossen"* - as mentioned at the beginning - seems credible

In a long report by the mathematician Dr. Helmut J. Fischer, Hamburg, in the Frankfurter Allgemeine Ztg., there is further confirmation of the development of electromagnetic interference methods, which have been masterfully used by the so-called UFOs since 1945. Dr. Fischer was an SS officer in the Reichs-

Main Security Office (RSHA), where he was responsible for all scientific and technical research in Germany as part of the SD's surveillance work.

He reports on the physicist and expert, among other things in the field of magnetism, Professor Gans, who, as a Jew, was able to evade the internment measures because he was working on an electron catapult, also called *a 'rheotron'* , with the help of which he was able to generate rays that could bring airplanes out of the sky.

"Gans claimed that one could ionize the air molecules by using very hard X-rays at high altitudes and thus

Machine Translated by Google

Aircraft engines disrupt the electrical ignition to such an extent that the engines failed."

The heads of the departments Gerlach and Thiessen were at that time convinced by Fischer's proposal to take Gans' work into the care of the Reich Research Council.

"*... not very enthusiastic at first, especially since the Siemens-Reiniger company in Erlangen was already working on the construction of a rheotron." (14)*

Under the heading: "German weapons research *1938/39"* read we in the UFO news already in 1964:

"As a supplement to the article 'Death and LASER Rays', it may be of interest to report that in 1938/39 the British Secret Service received reports of experiments with a new German secret weapon in Silesia. It was reported that whatever was used had the effect of disabling the electrical equipment on motor vehicles to such an extent that sometimes engines and the like had to be replaced. Unfortunately, it was never possible to find out any further details about exactly where these experiments took place. It was generally assumed that they *took place in the area between Breslau in Silesia and Katowice in Upper Silesia. The conditions for the investigation were somewhat unfavourable at the time and the small number of people (i.e. English agents) available for this purpose were completely occupied with other and more urgent tasks. At that time the most brilliant experts in this field were working for Germany and it was known that*

Experiments were carried out at various centers."

UN No. 94, June 1964

The great Italian scientist Guglielmo Marconi, Nobel Prize winner, inventor of wireless telegraphy and the 'death rays', was engaged in a strange experiment on the Rome-Ostia road in the summer of 1936. Mussolini's widow reported on the Marconi experiment in her book *'Mussolini sans masque' ,* published by Fayard in 1972 , because she herself was affected by it:

When she was about to drive to her small estate in Ostia on a beautiful June afternoon, the former Italian head of state said goodbye to his wife with the words *"Be careful between 3 and 3.30 p.m. You will experience a nasty surprise on the Rome-Ostia road,"* which consisted of her car and dozens of other

Machine Translated by Google

in front of and behind her, stopped at the exact time specified. The fact that her chauffeur and the other drivers tampered with their vehicles was of little use. All vehicles were only able to continue driving after the specified time, at exactly 3:35 p.m.

It was not until the evening that Bennito Mussolini gave his wife the key to this mystery: Marconi had tried out his new invention and interrupted the motors' circuits with rays. When Pope Pius XI found out about these paralyzing waves, he is said to have - how could it be otherwise - urged the Duce to forbid Marconi from using such devilish stuff and to destroy the existing documents. Instead, the following happened a year later. Marconi died quite unexpectedly on July 20, 1937 under mysterious circumstances, allegedly from angina pectoris. However, his closest colleagues were in the know and had a duplicate of the documents. According to Robert Charroux in 'Rätsel der Anden', page 169/170, (32)

Whether the German developments in ignition interruption go back to Marconi or, as Prof. Dr. Dr. Meißner suggests in his letter of January 27, 1945, to the German experiments during the First World War remains an open question for the time being. In any case, not to the proposal from ELEMAG, which came much too late, as the Waffen-Revue claimed.

Regarding this Marconi report, one should recall the relevant passages in *'Secret Wonder Weapons /',* page 42 and pp. 64/65.

In the report of the Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung, the *'wonder weapons'* were mentioned, unfortunately only vaguely (the FAZ report was only a - perhaps censored - excerpt from a previously unpublished manuscript by Dr. Fischer), and the subject of the discussion turned to Ministerial Director Erich Schumann: *"As the person responsible for research issues in the Army Weapons Office and at the same time in the High Command of the Wehrmacht, he was a key expert for Hitler, and Schumann's authority as an expert was underlined by the fact that he was a professor at the University of Berlin and a representative in the Reich Research Office. -It was also clear that Schumann* **had personally presented research issues to Hitler on several occasions and demonstrated experiments to him ."**

Dr. Fischer also referred to the three-part division of research: one part that was fairly open to the observer, and the two that were conducted away from the public; the secret industrial research

Machine Translated by Google

and the research and development work in the individual
Wehrmacht units:

"Anyone who has no insight into these two more secret areas had no say when it came to an overview of the Research went." (14)

We can therefore examine the post-war publications on German
Weapon developments can still be described as incomplete today, especially since many developments have only been partially disclosed due to the large-scale and secret German withdrawal maneuver around 1945.

In recent decades, electrical, electronic, ignition and radio disturbances in connection with 'UFOs' have been reported time and again worldwide, sometimes on a small scale and sometimes on a very large scale, which will be explained in more detail here. *"Der Spiegel", No. 17/1967, p. 162:*

> *"The officer in charge of a missile unit of the American Air Force in North Dakota noticed on August 25 1966, that his radio connection was suddenly disrupted. In his concrete bunker twenty meters underground, tried he tried to reestablish the connection. At that moment, other air force soldiers reported that they saw high in the sky a 'UFO'. -*
>
> *'As soon as the UFO gained altitude, the radio interference stopped, the base commander noted in his log.'*

The *'Ruhr-Nachrichten',* Dortmund, dated 16.12.1978, reports
an Italian police unit that was searching for UFOs on the outskirts of Reggio-Cala-bria. In view of and in the vicinity of the *'saucer',* the ignition of their car failed. The *'Bild-Ztg'* on July 19th of the same year reported on a purple-red glowing UFO over Teheran (Persia), which was disrupting radio traffic.

the crew and passengers of a DC-10 approaching
The UFO was seen while flying over Persia's capital. The airport control tower also reported that the UFO was sending out jamming signals
After that, radio communication between the aircraft and the control point was completely interrupted.

> *"A FIREBALL FELL FROM THE SKY*
>
> *Mo. La Spezia (Italy), 30 October -*

Machine Translated by Google

A fireball in a glowing halo raced vertically from the night sky towards the Italian port city of La Spezia. The lights went out in entire districts. For inexplicable reasons, the voltage in the power plant had dropped

19-year-old student Ignacio Bonadies claims to have photographed the UFO from a 745-meter-high mountain. He and two other students report: 'We threw ourselves to the ground in fear when the fiery red plate was directly above us for two to three seconds.'

Deputy Police Chief Dr. Benzini: 'We have handed the photo over to the military authorities.'

UFO turned off power

Traces in the sand of the Cima Verugoli hill, melted stones, 'as if a lunar module had landed, a power failure that the power plant cannot explain, were discovered. The 'fiery red disks' in the night sky were haunting the Italian port city of La Spezia and were observed by hundreds of people.

Austrian *"Kurier",* 31 October 1973

Frank Edwards:

"It had been observed since 1947 that some force field associated with the unidentified flying objects was causing **interference in electromagnetic** *devices. It was first noticed in compasses. Later, pilots discovered that whenever a UFO was near them, the ignition of their internal combustion engines failed. Ships, automobiles and tractors also experienced interference with their engines in the presence of UFOs. Drivers and pilots repeatedly reported failures in their radio devices, which prevented them from sending or receiving signals and messages when UFOs were nearby."*

P. 238 (15) The major disruptions that occur in connection with the flying discs are such that power stations, districts, towns, cities, and even entire states are cut off from their electricity supply, sometimes for hours, sometimes even for days.

In 1957, when three glowing disc-shaped flying tops slowly flew over the city of Mogi Mirim (Brazil), the power went out and the lights went out, leaving the area of the UFO flight path in total darkness and the peripheral areas with faint and more distant, normal

Machine Translated by Google

male light. In the same year in Tamaroa (Illinois, USA) as
the power outage lasted until the huge UFO hovering over the city had flown away. On
August 3, 1958, a large
part of Rome plunged into darkness, as a very large and luminous
flying disc maneuvered over the city. The lights only came back on after the object had
disappeared. That is exactly
The same thing happened 12 days earlier in Salta (Argentina)

S. 239 (15)

In Minais Gerais (Brazil) the following happened on the evening of August 17, 1959: The
instruments of various power stations showed
indicates a temporary circuit break and the conductive
The persons in charge of the various stations of the distribution system informed each other
that their circuit sub-
breakers opened automatically as flying discs slowly moved close above and along the
power lines. In Überlandia,
one of the main stations of this power plant, the staff was some
Alerted minutes before the flying discs appeared there
The technicians were already ready when the
the circuit breakers opened and closed again, respectively.
tried. But the presence of a single object above
the main station ruined their efforts. Only when the oval flight
object had disappeared in the distance, the current flowed again through
the management. S. 239/240, (15) The *'Bremer Nachrichten',* 8.10.

1977, also reported on this event. The
adjacent table from the
UFO News No. 168, August
1970, shows from the time of
November 1965 to November 1966 almost
20 power outages related to flying discs. Finally,
we will talk about the most spectacular

Power outage reported from 9 to 10 November

1965 in the USA, the so-called *'New* York
blackout'. This probably

The biggest *'black out'* was not only the city
of New York, as
is usually mentioned in a downplaying manner, but also the state of New York and
seven other states in the northeastern part of the USA, as well as peripheral areas
of Canada.

New York	**9. 11. 65**
London	**15. 11. 65**
Texas	**2. 12. 65**
Holland	**3. 12. 65**
Bonn	**4. 12. 65**
Stockholm	**6. 12. 65**
You have	**Dec. 65**
Texas	**Dec. 65**
Alaska	**Dec. 65**
Melbourne	**15. 12. 65**
Buenos Aires	**25. 12. 65**
Naples	**8. 1. 66**
Colorado	**24. 4. 66**
Wyoming	**24. 4. 66**
Nebraska	**24. 4. 66**
Utah	**24. 4. 66**
Barcelona	**26. 6. 66**
Portugal	**4. 11. 66**
Madrid	**5. 11. 66**

Machine Translated by Google

About 30,000,000 people in an area of about 200,000 square kilometers were affected. In New York, 630 trains of the electric subway *"Subway"* came to a standstill and trapped 800,000 passengers in the underground tunnels for hours, and tens of thousands were stuck in the elevators of skyscrapers alone. What was happening there: *"was, in the opinion of the best power experts in the USA and Canada, a complete impossibility. The large overland power grid CANUSE (Canadian US Eastern Crid) had collapsed and failed completely - the tragedy that was unfolding for the inhabitants of eight US states from New York to Maine began in the control room of the electric hydroelectric plant in Ontario, Canada at 5:16 p.m. EST (Eastern Standard Time) when the measuring curves of the power production meters began to fluctuate unexpectedly.*

A few minutes later, on the American side of Lake Ontario, the needles on the meters in the Rochester gas and electricity plant went off scale. In the Niagara power station 'Robert Moses', the output voltage rose sharply from 1,500 megavolts to 2,250, before suddenly dropping to zero.

Synchronized generators in connected power stations and overland stations were rotating out of control; overloaded power relays were interrupting the flow of electricity; all carefully planned cross-fuse and backup diversions had failed."

S. 23/24 (16)

Regarding the same, almost incomprehensible event, the question is raised in the UFO article, part 7, of the *'Bremer-Nachrichten'* of October 8, 1977:

> *"How could this total collapse of the power grid and the electricity supply occur when all power plants have complex safety systems? And why had the electronic instruments, which had cost several million dollars to purchase and install, not detected the fault - and why had the energy supply not been diverted?*
>
> *The official explanation was more than meager: a small relay in a Canadian power plant had failed, other devices had subsequently also failed, and this ultimately led to a total power failure.*
>
> *But this explanation only elicited a pitying smile from the leading power plant engineers and especially the electronics experts.*

Machine Translated by Google

But what other explanation was there ? *Were UFOs - 'unidentified flying objects'* - the cause of this sudden darkness with its catastrophic side effects?"(17)

Indeed, it must have been so. The crews of various airliners that were in this airspace during this event reported sightings of *'UFOs'.* These were also observed from the ground by well over a hundred people as they flew over power plants, overhead power lines and substations. See:

Book chapter: *"The Great Blackout",* pp. 237-250 (15) Book chapter: *"The lights went out in New York",* pp. 23-27(16) The *'Bremer Nachrichten'* of 8.10.77 also summarizes: *"Since 1947 it has been suspected that there is a connection between UFOs and disturbances in electromagnetic mechanisms. From 1947 onwards there were also increasing reports that the ignition systems in combustion engines were no longer working properly and that radio, wireless and television sets were failing when UFOs were nearby."*

This connection is evident from the countless newspaper reports, series of articles and UFO books that I have available. It would therefore be too time-consuming to provide further detailed sources on this subject.

As unpleasant as the widespread power outage may have been for the residents of the New York metropolitan area, they did not get even a faint foretaste of what war means - a war that they, as the so-called No. 1 world power, have always been happy to fight on the backs of other peoples, sometimes together with their Soviet allies, or in sophisticated theatrical productions as pretend enemies. Whether we think of the inferno of the city bombings in Germany, Hiroshima and Nagasaki, the Korean War, the napalm bombs and the wildfires in Vietnam, etc., it was always a mass slaughter of millions of civilians, women and children. The losers were often not only portrayed as subhumans and war criminals, but were also treated accordingly, as is the case in divided, occupied and disenfranchised Germany to this day. In this century, the Americans have not experienced war on their own territory, but have diligently pursued the business of war and the policy of subjugation in all parts of the world. That is why they are only slightly behind the Soviets. Surely such a minor power outage can serve as a warning to the

Machine Translated by Google

The US ruling clique's actions on November 9th - which was twice historically disastrous for Germany - had to be tolerated by the population.

The ignition and electromagnetic jamming capabilities must in any case be viewed as a partial aspect of a first-class **defensive** and **war prevention weapon .** This serves on the one hand as protection for the flying discs from Allied fighter-bomber fire, and on the other hand as an invisible shield against bombing and rocket fire for the flying disc bases in remote parts of the world.

Because no flying disc base can be approached by conventional aircraft, let alone flown over or attacked with missiles. And since the Third Power today, after decades of construction and development, monitors all military strategic points and military bases around the globe, its most important task, which is determined from a higher perspective, seems to be to prevent or nip in the bud a nuclear conflagration desired by nuclear armament maniacs. Here Europe and the world are offered a unique and unusual opportunity to decide **for** the dark forces of nuclear destruction in the East and West, or **against** them. But as we have learned to assess the mass of people manipulated by the media, they will rather allow themselves to be led further into the abyss like a herd than to turn openly towards the saving element - the element that is therefore so demonized and slandered by those who are mad about destruction.

In recent decades, the Allies' nuclear and conventional weapons systems have increasingly been equipped with electrical/electronic control systems and are therefore vulnerable to the electromagnetic interference of the flying discs.

highly vulnerable or completely paralyzed. In order to prevent or at least limit this, work began in previous years to make the electrical/electronic systems more robust and less susceptible to interference, not only in the military but also in other important areas. This conversion of the control, drive, switching and communication systems is costing billions. Since UFOs should not officially exist if possible, the population was given the following reasons for the gigantic conversions in large-scale radio, television and press campaigns in

the summer/autumn of 1981: Nuclear explosions triggered at high altitudes create a so-called

Machine Translated by Google

so-called EMP effect (electromagnetic pulse) which causes electromagnetic interference. For example, an atom bomb detonated over a large city causes power outages, ignition problems in engines, radio, radio and radar interference, etc. in the city and a wide area. The author considers this justification, which is spread by the media, to be untrue. The first purposeful lie: UFOs do not exist, makes many subsequent lies necessary. Electromagnetic interference has been occurring for decades in connection with flying saucers and not in nuclear experiments. In the chapter: *"Electromagnetic interference and UFOs",* Rho Sigma writes:

"The first documented observation of UFOs and simultaneous EM disturbances occurred on August 28, 1945 *near* Iwo *Jima in the Pacific, when the crew of a US* C-46 aircraft *noticed simultaneous engine disturbances upon sighting three flying objects of unknown origin and their aircraft lost altitude for this reason."*

Page 89 (16)

A letter from the American professor Dr. James E. Mc Donald of the University of Arizona in 1967 to the Secretary General of the United Nations also clearly showed the connection between UFOs and EM disturbances:

> *"A wide spectrum of electromagnetic disturbances, each of which coincides in time with approaching or hovering Unidentified Flying Objects (UFOs), is now a documented fact throughout the world - although these documented events have still not been accepted as 'scientific findings'. In hundreds of cases, the (electrical ignition) disturbances in internal combustion engines coincide in time with the passing of disk- or cylindrical, 'unconventional' flying objects. I personally know of dozens of absolutely credible reported cases from the last few years in the USA. Often these electrical disturbances are found in radio devices over a wide frequency range. In many cases, compass systems on ships as well as aircraft have been* disrupted. *Magnetometers and even (electrical)*
>
> *Watches have been affected. All of these reports, which are far too numerous to be listed in detail here, point to certain electromagnetic influences..."*

Page 91 (16)

Machine Translated by Google

During the war years, due to the emergency situation caused by Allied bombing terror, special fog machines were developed to protect the Obersalzberg fortress. These were installed throughout the area and could completely cover the entire Obersalzberg and Berchtesgaden within 20-30 minutes if a group of bombers were reported to be approaching. The former commander of the Obersalzberg, Dr. B. Frank, who was specifically in charge of the fogging operations in an emergency, reported on this in his book: "The rescue *of Berchtesgaden...",* in the chapter: *"The Obersalzberg fog unit." (16)*

That is one thing, the other would be this:

In the post-war decades, it was not uncommon to observe and photograph unnatural, even artificial-looking clouds in the blue sky in clear weather. From the very brilliant, razor-sharp color image in the book: *"Fascination of the Unfathomable", (18)* page 309, we have reproduced the black and white image shown here, which was taken over the Brazilian city of Sao Paulo. Often, as here (18) , these clouds are - I find it distracting - presented as lenticular clouds. But if you take older reference works, you will find that lenticular clouds look quite different. In the article series in Bunten-Illustrierte: *"The Riddle of the Century; UFO Spook or Reality",* No. 9, p. 84 ©, this same but

I think the less sharp cloud image over Sao Paulo is correctly commented: *"1969: UFOs over Brazil. The original photo is in the possession of*
of the *Brazilian Air Force."* It is simply unlikely that the military is concerned with collecting lenticular or other harmless clouds. Regarding the other picture on the same page with only one, but very similar *'cloud',* the magazine writes: *"1973: UFO over the US state of South Dakota. 50 eyewitnesses saw the phenomenon."* Other picture sources: Der Spiegel, No. 17/1967, p.

165; Frankfurter-Allgemeine-Ztg., 20.10.1979; and many others. Of course, we shouldn't immediately assume something is behind every unusual-looking cloud, but could the first idea of the Obersalzberg not have been the inspiration here as well?

Mist sprayed out by the flying gyroscope, and under the influence of its own rotation, a cloud could easily form in which the object pupates like an insect. Or to put it another way, the rotation forms the sprayed mist into a circling cloud-like structure.

Whether the fog serves demonstration or camouflage purposes is

Machine Translated by Google

Seemingly inexplicable structures are often the cause of alleged encounters with UFOs. The cloud formations that were photographed over the Brazilian city of Sao Paulo are formed by air vortices on mountain slopes; they are called lenticular clouds.

Machine Translated by Google

In any case, it has been documented often enough that the flying tops can not only make themselves invisible, but from one moment to the next they can become visible, invisible, visible and then invisible again.

This sounds very fantastic to us, who have been brought up in a materialistic way of thinking! But we could take some support from a report that appeared in the press only a few years ago, according to which the Americans have discovered that if they coat the outer skin of their aircraft with silver bromide, they become temporarily invisible.

This of course does not mean that the aircraft has temporarily lost its material existence, but only that a surface vibration or light reflection has occurred that deceives the eye

We should always remember the long-known report of a German submariner from U-234, which is also described by Major General Remer on pages 264/265 (38). Especially the final sentence! Here is the slightly shortened report:

> *"In the spring of 1945 I was commanded on 'U-234'. The boat was a Type XB minelayer converted for special tasks with 1760 GRT, 4200 HP and a crew of 52. The commander was Lieutenant Commander Fehler. The boat set off on March 23, 1945 from Kiel to southern Norway on a surface voyage. On April 15, 1945 it surfaced at Christiansand-Süd for an underwater voyage, initially with a course for passage between Iceland and the Faroe Islands. The destination of the voyage was Japan. The mission was to bring the General of the Air Force, Kessler, as air force attache with staff and technicians to Tokyo. The Tenno had requested that the air defense of the Japanese islands be set up with the weapons developed in Germany. In addition to the general, there were two air force officers on board, as well as..... and two Japanese*
>
> *Frigate captains.....*
> *The boat's cargo contained twelve steel cylinders fitted into the mine shafts, containing comprehensive microfilm material on the latest German inventions in offensive and defensive weapons, especially missile and missile defense technology, as well as our research results in the field of high and low frequency technology, as well as a decisive contribution to the development of nuclear energy and atomic technology.*

Machine Translated by Google

After crossing the Iceland Strait and spending twenty-eight days underwater at an average depth of eighty meters, we received the surrender order from Grand Admiral Dönitz on the night of May 12-13 while snorkeling via our snorkeling dipole. At that time we were in the middle of the Atlantic in a position southeast of the Newfoundland Banks.

The order addressed the commander of 'U-234' in a very personal tone, asking him to hand over the boat without destroying it and with all its valuable cargo. After twelve hours of deliberation and reflection, Lieutenant Fehler decided, in agreement with General Kessler and after informing the two Japanese frigate captains, to carry out Dönitz's order and surface for the handover. The two Japanese officers committed suicide before surfacing. Eight hours later, 'U-234' was captured as a prize by the American destroyer 'Sutton' and taken to the US naval port of Portland (Maine).

The American officers and officials who subsequently interrogated us were extremely dismayed at the contents of our submarine. They accused us of not being able to appreciate how valuable our cargo was. At the end of July 1945, the head of the investigation team finally told me that the material from the micro-recordings and the statements of our technicians proved **that we were '100 years ahead' of the Western powers in key technical facilities and developments."**

This report briefly shows what advantage there was over the Allies. This becomes even clearer in relevant publications and books such as: © © ©

The report of the former Hamburg mayor CV Krogmann, who died years ago, goes even further with the statement of one of the American officers about the valuable contents of the U-234. In the series *'Lies and Truth',* No. 35 by Kormann, we read: *"Then I was taken away. It was only some time later, during a walk together and in a long conversation about the victory of the Americans and Russians and the German defeat, that the same officer said to me: 'You Germans were 100 years ahead of us technically and* **1,000 years ahead of us intellectually.'"**

Machine Translated by Google

This intellectual high point of that time should be thought about very seriously. But since the defeated cannot be ranked higher than the victor, occupied and post-war Germany was then brought down to the intellectual level of the Eastern and Western Allies - who were far too quick to celebrate themselves as *'victors'* - along with the controlled mixing of races and the decline of morals and culture.

All of the material that was supposed to go to the Japanese but fell into the hands of the Americans consisted only of further developments and research results based on conventional science and technology, against which Victor Schauberger had always railed: We have reached a dead end with our science and technology, from which we must get out. We use the destructive power of explosions, with their poisonous residues, which also consume oxygen, and with which we ultimately destroy everything (just think of the destruction of nature and the environment today). The statement attributed to Adolf Hitler about Jewish-liberal science, which together with the Jewish-Christian religion represents a conspiracy that must be broken up (see the HUGIN publication ' *Secrets of the Universe',* page 18), certainly gives us the key to the question of why we have reached this fatal dead end.

The Chilean ex-ambassador and esoteric writer Miguel Serrano also claims in his books on *'esoteric Hitlerism'* in connection with the flying disc technology *of the* Third Reich that today they use a completely different science, a completely different technique and technology.

According to this, the microfilms that were sent to the Japanese with U-234 were indeed high-quality findings and research results, but were still based on traditional, destructive, negative science and technology

And only in this respect were the Americans able to capture and catch up with the 100-year German lead. The flying disc technology is the direct opposite of this already of a few explosion technologies recognized as false in Germany logy. But this was not captured!

Machine Translated by Google

FLIGHT MANEUVERS AND SPEEDS - PHYSICALLY IMPOSSIBLE ?

Shortly after the end of hostilities in Europe,
The military and scientists were partly incredulous or even dismissive or were utterly astonished by the then still incomprehensible speeds and almost acrobatic flight maneuvers of the flying discs; depending on their receptiveness or, better said, intellectual openness to this - at least for our era - completely new flight and propulsion technology, which can be seen from many UFO press reports of the time.

becomes apparent. For example:

"And their speed, estimated at 1600 km/h,
i.e. greater than the speed of sound, many experts believed
unattainable until the autumn of the surprising 'saucer' year it became
known that this limit could actually be overcome technically. No, the
strangest thing about the 'flying saucers' was that they had a distinctive feature
of every aircraft was missing, namely the unmistakably powerful
Humming: The windows were silent! They moved silently through the
sky, as if it were the beam of a spotlight scanning the clouds at
lightning speed

Typical of the whole species was a large flock of discs observed in the
silence of a late evening in southern Louisiana.
Silently and yet with rapid speed
A number of 'saucers' shot through the sky, and they
all glowed! So the secret of silence also came
nor the secret of a ghostly color."

"The World", 28.10.1950

"When it (the disk) came near the balloon it made
one of the usual jumps upwards. The pressure was estimated,
which this flight turn to a living being inside the
disc would have to exert twenty times the force of gravity
This fact is of great importance because no one
could only withstand this weight for a short time."

"The World", 1.11.1950

"In any case, these beings (meaning the flying
crews; author's note) must be specially encapsulated or secured,
because a speed of 30,000 kilometers per hour would, for example,

body smooth like a matchbox,
who gets caught under a truck" *"The World",* 8.11.1950

Machine Translated by Google

US Major Keyhoe reports on the UFO pursuit of jet fighter pilot Jim Riordan and crew:

"So you put your foot on the gas and head for it. Then suddenly the object turns towards you at lightning speed and you know that you have been spotted. And now your heart sinks. You watch as the thing makes a tight turn around you. No human on earth could withstand the centrifugal force of such turns. It moves so fast that you almost twist your neck to keep your eyes on it. You may be able to see the outline of a flying object behind the light, or maybe not.....

Then the saucer suddenly retreats, so quickly that they think they are standing still. They fly back home and are caught in a pincer movement by the secret service.'

In many cases, the same picture emerged: the UFOs casually oscillate through the air at 90 km/ h until jet fighters take off. Immediately afterwards, the strange flying phenomena shoot away at insane speeds and perform maneuvers that seem to defy all earthly laws of gravity.

Their light changes, from dim at slow speeds to brighter when the planes fly faster."

p. 28, *"Der Spiegel",* No. 17/54

"It was not the first time that UFOs had been sighted near the rocket test stations. Commodore RB
McLaughlin, a naval missile specialist, reported three sightings in an article censored by the Pentagon: A large disk, measured at 17,000 miles per hour, flew at an altitude of 52 miles over White Sands (US missile testing grounds; author's note). Two smaller disks, tracked from five observation posts, tracked an Army stratospheric missile.

But it was only after UFOs were seen over the Los Alamos nuclear plant at the end of 1951 that the Air Force decided to take new measures: It ordered the purchase of 200 special cameras to analyze the light from the saucers in order to explain their energy sources. The cameras were to be set up in places where UFOs were often seen:"

"Der Spiegel", 21 April 1954, No. 17, p. 27

Long-time UFO enthusiasts may see these quotes as annoying repetitions of typical cases, but in the interest of other readers,

Machine Translated by Google

Especially the younger generation should not miss some of these old reports here, especially since we are today again (since March 1984) in a phase of almost total UFO press censorship, and the military reports, since the secrecy regulations in the mid-fifties, are almost completely missing today.

In a long newspaper report *entitled "UFO research in the Soviet Union; ever new reports of unidentified flying objects",* incomprehensible flight maneuvers at high speeds are also mentioned: *"Attention was drawn to the fact that flying objects are supposedly able to turn at right angles at high speeds of up to 72,000 km/h, which means that they must have unknown materials and capabilities to overcome the Earth's gravity."*

"Hannoversche Allgemeine Ztg.", 7 Dec. 1977

"... *that UFOs accelerate from a standstill to 40,000 kilometers per hour, brake and make lightning-fast turns. We can only assume that these are caused by enormous magnetic fields."*

"Frankfurter Allgemeine Ztg.", 20 Oct. 1979

"These *UFOs have visited all of humanity's most important military installations, power plants, airports and communications centers and* have demonstrated flight characteristics *that are technically far superior to any man-made aircraft."*

Illustrated *"Kristall",* 30.12.1966, p. 37

"If you could bring a car to a stop within half a meter at 100 kilometers per hour, the jolt would be so terrible that none of the passengers would survive and the car *would probably be destroyed as if it had hit a tree. But now a sudden stop at 36,000 kilometers per hour! Or a right-angled turn at the same speed. Even the pilots of our jet planes can only fly turns that are several kilometers long at their ridiculous speed of sound of 1,200 km/h, because their organisms would no longer be able to cope with the terrible pressure in a tighter curve. And just like humans, no earthly building material and no earthly building method can withstand the stresses of such flight maneuvers.*

Any solid earthly structure would fly to shreds, unless it had already been dispersed into embers and flames like a meteor by the enormous frictional heat.

Machine Translated by Google

Furthermore, only ghosts can fly silently. Even a glider that glides 'silently' through the air howls and whistles quite loudly in reality. At more than 1,000 kilometers per hour
every solid body - whether from terrestrial or extraterrestrial regions - would have to produce a hell of a noise. But all of this is missing in the 'flying saucers'. Consequently - so it is explained -
the 'flying saucers' cannot form solid structures
From the multi-page report "Flying Saucer = German Flying Top?", from: "Das Ufer - die Farb-Illustrierte",
No. 18, 1.9.1952

A great gap opens up; on the one hand, the *'UFOs'* demonstrate flight characteristics in almost all parts of the world, a kind of air and
Celestial acrobatics, which on the other hand cannot exist. At least not if we continue to view the ideas and hypotheses about gravity, gravitation, acceleration, inertia and other things that we learn in school physics as something absolute, exclusive, dogmatic and do not want to admit that there may be higher-order laws of nature (so to speak), with

those natural laws of a lower kind eliminated or circumvented
Without further ado, we can even say that
that the theory of the Earth's attraction-because that is a
unprovable theory - requires a radical revision. Where there is still a lack of knowledge, theories serve as a stopgap. The layman, untainted by today's scientific dogma (this conspiracy theory against the truth), usually has it much easier

to be open to new discoveries. It is not without reason that important inventions are more likely to be made by loners and
outsiders of science, rather than from university institutes and other, mostly state-subsidized *'official'* research institutions. In addition, especially today, there is a

Super-specialism, partly originating in America, often referred to in popular parlance as *'specialist idiocy'* and *'educational proletariat',* not without reason.

called, from which nothing more can be expected.
an elitist universal education and training, as we know it from the
Antiquity is handed down

Professor Dr. James E. McDonald from the Institute of Atmospheric Physics at the University of Arizona, USA, this
selfless and fearless fighters for the UFO truth,
initially an unbeliever himself, stated on July 29, 1968 before the Committee on Aviation and Astronautics in the US House of Representatives:

Machine Translated by Google

"I have become convinced that the scientific associations not only of this country but of the whole world have occasionally ignored a subject of immense scientific importance as 'stupid stuff'.... I understand
this attitude only too well I was one more of those scientists who believed that such a thing could not exist,
a citizen who was almost convinced that the
government confirmations about the non-existence of tangible evidence for the reality of UFOs are correct. The UFO problem is so *unconventional, involves such unpredictable phenomena that it makes explanations based on our technical knowledge simply impossible .... We*
Scientists, on the other hand, considered as a whole, are not inclined to take up problems that lie close to the limits of our current knowledge." Text with the omissions from: *'Bremer Nachrichten',* 30 Sept. 1977, p. 33

That Prof. McDonald probably suspected or even knew what, or with to whom these flying discs must be associated,
He announced this in a very cautious and slightly ironic way by on 22 April 1966 at a meeting of American newspaper publishers in Washington DC stated:

"It is almost amusing how, within the last 6 years or so, it *has become scientifically acceptable as axiomatic (immediately obvious and requiring no justification; note).*

of the author) to assume that LIFE in some of the
billions of star systems in our galaxy and could have developed in a way that may have already far surpassed our current civilization, culture and technology. Today, we can safely say that

scientific society. But one must not forget and *must add that all this intelligent life can only be somewhere far out there - certainly not*

here ! " S. 113 (16)

'Intelligent life', here on earth? In geological prehistoric times
There were gods, demigods, giants, dwarves alongside high-ranking humans, as well as more primitive human life up to animal and ape-men in many different variations.
Although a qualitative regression has taken place over tens of thousands of years - yes (!), even if a religion- and politics-dependent archaeology and ancient studies show the opposite -

Machine Translated by Google

had to work - even today there is evidence of a gradation that extends from semi-divine human geniuses down to the most primitive human-like life. The Christian dogma of the equality of everything that has a human face, which was established with the aim of leveling downwards, as well as the Marxist doctrine of salvation, which operates in similar waters, with its equally degrading leveling, which only wants to recognize differences - what a mistake - depending on the environment, have clouded our view of clearly seeing the facts mentioned above.

Attempts to explain the origin of UFOs by extraterrestrials can safely be put aside until we actually know whether advanced, technically and scientifically capable life exists on other planets. *'Little green men'* and similar nonsense arise from ostrich politics and are the fantastic, anxiety-neurotic outflow of criminal power cliques.

The prominent nuclear and astrophysicist Edward U. Condon of Colorado University in Boulder, who was commissioned by the US government and the Air Force in 1966 to produce a (misinforming) *"scientific report" ,* this former co-builder of the atomic bomb (DerSpiegel, No. 51/1966), declared in public for the sake of general intimidation and warning and in the style of the medieval church:

> *"The science of flying saucers and astrology are not the only pseudosciences which have a considerable following among us.... In my opinion, publishers who publish such pseudosciences as accepted truth, or teachers who teach them as such, should be found guilty,* **publicly flogged,** and banned for life from entering into any decent profession."

S. 308 (18)

All of the things threatened here happened to our aforementioned Prof.
McDonald was not found dead on June 13, 1971 near the Canyon del Oro Bridge in Arizona with a bullet in his head.
It had already become proverbial in interested circles many years ago that UFO researchers, especially those with rank and reputation, and thus with a certain level of authority, in the United States died suddenly and frequently from *heart attacks* and similar causes that were difficult to verify.

Machine Translated by Google

Oh, that the Germans would know their true strengths and turn their efforts to higher goals; they would no longer be men, they would be gods, for divine is the spirit of this people!

Giordano Bruno (Italian philosopher and natural mystic 1548-1600, burned as a 'heretic' in Rome)

THE OTHER SCIENCE -
BASIC KNOWLEDGE OF DRIVE SECRETS

Standstill in the air; silent flight; fantastic acceleration from a standstill; zigzag flights, U-turns and tight curves at top speeds; no energy consumption in the traditional sense, and therefore no environmental poisoning that is slowly destroying us.

This and much more are the excellent qualities that are repeatedly acknowledged and attested to by the *'UFOs'* , often beyond many aerodynamic and other established laws.

In recent years, renowned scientists - especially those dependent on state funding - have found it difficult to our technical-physical world view is not too difficult, to make the useful claim: *'UFOs'* cannot exist because these often reported and observed

Flight characteristics are simply not possible. There are a lot of statements made by the government.

But if - especially the young generation - they do not want to be among the last of Yesterday, but among the first of tomorrow, she will think the other way round and therefore only logically and say:

Since flying discs and gyroscopes are credibly attested by many hundreds of thousands of sighting reports, we must expand large areas of our physical school knowledge - which is already partly based only on theories based - inevitably call into question.

The following is a vague and amateurish attempt to get to the bottom of a completely different science, a completely different technology. Let us say it right away:

Flying discs are independent celestial

Machine Translated by Google

bodies that generate their own *gravitational field* and are thus free from the earth's shackles, whereas we with our known means of locomotion are at the mercy of certain forces such as inertia, acceleration, so-called gravity, air resistance, frictional heat, etc.

This has long been recognized by open-minded scientists, among whom the German rocket expert Prof. Dr. Hermann Oberth, the *'father of space travel' ,* undoubtedly belongs.

Prof. Oberth, who in the 1960s - much to the indignation of various scientific colleagues - appeared at the DUIST UFO congresses in Wiesbaden and Mainz (every three years), which lasted several days, explained as early as 1961, as he does today, that UFOs fly with the help of artificially generated gravitational fields, which also explains their sudden changes of direction (UN, No. 283/Dec. 1983; p. 214 ©).

Prof. Oberth has made several very clever comments about the origin of UFOs: *"I named these hypothetical beings 'Uranids' after a text by Hans Dominik, because from our perspective they seem to come from the sky (Greek: Uranos)."*

(UN, No. 283)

Dominik's novel about German space travel , *'The Legacy of the Uranids',* is a must-read.

> *"In 1891, the German physicist Arthur Schuster raised the question: Doesn't every body that rotates around itself become a magnet through such rotations? At that time,* it was *not yet known, as it is today, that the sun is also a giant magnet. Schuster suspected this, but was not yet able to prove it scientifically.*
>
> *Now, about twenty years ago, Prof. PMS Blackett of the University of Manchester took up the problem that occupied Arthur Schuster again and proved both mathematically and observationally that every large material mass rotating on its axis must, by its very nature, be a magnet. The magnetic field of the earth, created by the rotation of the earth on its axis, has been measured....*
>
> *So it seems that scientists are now discovering the true secret of the force of attraction, which has long been known to mystics. Mystics even know that gravity can also be influenced by mental and spiritual conditions, i.e.*

Machine Translated by Google

probably the most imponderable of all imponderables, influenced become.

Much evidence has already been provided that
a certain media talent, but also mental attitude,
Making people temporarily weightless - abaric can.... "

Felix Schmidt, Ohio (UN No. 199, March 1973)

Mother Earth is a big magnet with its two magnetic
Poles to which our compass needle responds All suns, planets
and moons are magnets like the Earth. These magnetic fields are created by the rotation around their own axis and the
Spiral movements (the planetary orbits are not circles or ellipses, as science claimed, but spiral orbits on the
Ways of very gradual rolling up; Victor Schauberger's implosion principle).
The sun's orbit around the large central sun (our *'Milky Way'* or galaxy) creates the sun's magnetic field, which is further strengthened by the sun's rotation.

The earth's orbit around the sun creates the geomagnetic field, which is further strengthened by the earth's rotation (every 24 hours). This geomagnetic field is at its greatest at the equator.
height extension and runs towards the poles (this was discovered
the Americans did too, but not until 1958 and called it *'Van Allenschen*

Since nature, or let us say in this case the omnipotence, always creates according to the same principles, this applies to *the*
Sun and Earth also apply to other planets, other solar systems, other galaxies. And since, according to Hermes Trismegistos, the old
Wisdom, the eternally valid analogy: As above, so below; as in the large, so in the small; has not lost its validity even today
what was said above for the macrocosm also applies to the microcosm, the atom with its atomic nucleus, its orbiting

Electrons, etc. on a small scale what a solar system is on a large scale. And is not the whole human being, composed of innumerable atoms (=solar systems), a universe, a cosmos on a very small scale?

Just as there would be no time without the movement of the heavenly bodies, there would also be no magnetism. This earth magnetism has a certain similarity to the force field of an iron magnet or the electromagnetic field of an electromagnet.

Why should not capable geniuses succeed, or even before
Decades have succeeded in creating artificially rotating apparent

Machine Translated by Google

to produce ben- or spherical devices, revolutionary flying objects that, when sent out into space, behave in a similar way to planets and suns. That can operate independently, even sovereignly; that have freed themselves from earthly shackles; that are no longer hindered by the laws of acceleration, inertia, gravitational pull, *etc. ?* The Englishman Searl also discovered while working on motors and generators that rotating metal parts generate a small electromagnetic force.

If we wrap an iron rod with insulated copper wire and allow current to flow through it, we achieve something similar in a slightly different way: the rod becomes magnetic. An electromagnet is created (Figure I). At both ends of the iron rod we now have a positive and a negative pole. If we bring two electromagnets together with their like poles, they repel each other, just as mutual attraction occurs with opposite poles. If a small ball pendulum is attached to a conductor, when the conductor is charged, a repulsion of the ball pendulum is observed that is proportional to the level of the charge (Figure III).

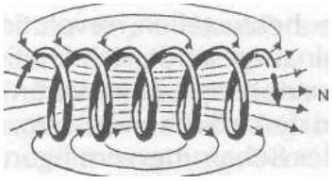
In *"Physics of the Uranides,"* Dr. W. Fragner is obviously making things too easy for himself when he assumes that an electromagnetically operated UFO could repel itself from the Earth's magnetic field (Fig. II). After all, there is a difference between Earth's magnetism and electromagnetism.

Many scientific theories, such as Newton's and Einstein's, are like the atrocious lies against Germany. Repeated thousands of times by the science lobby on the one hand and political propagandists on the other, and repeated thousands of times by students and believers, these have long since become dogmas and written laws. The breakthrough of the truth can be delayed, but cannot be prevented in the long term. This applies equally to political lies and to the theories that are kept alive artificially.

'Just as Einstein himself questioned and strongly doubted his life's work (in a private letter) in his old age, we can also confidently question Newton's theory of gravitation, because the gravitational constant is not constant at all.

If we put an egg in a cup of water, it sinks to the bottom.
If we dissolve a certain amount of salt in the water,

Machine Translated by Google



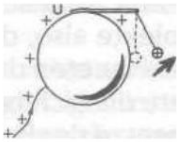
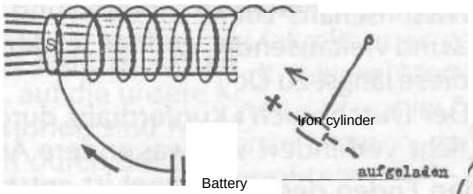


Fig. 3 Electrical voltage U

Conductor Experiment



electromagnet. Magnetic field lines
(lines of force) in a coil through which current
flows (above) and electromagnet with iron core

Abb.: I

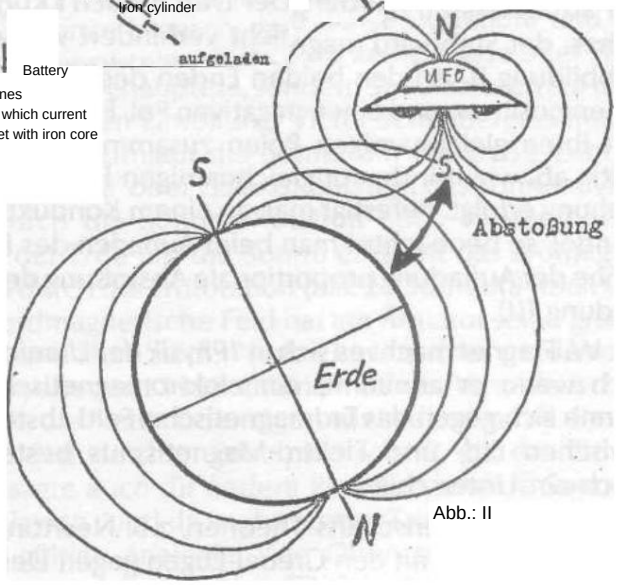
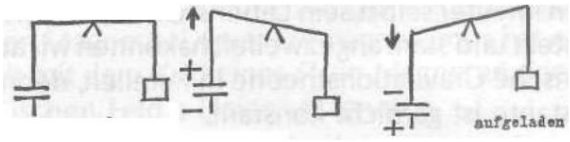


Abb.: II

non-neutral

Capacitor experiment



neutral

Abb.: IV

Capacitor - Beam Balance - Experiment

Machine Translated by Google

the egg rises to the water surface. Just a small example of the canceled *'gravity'!* The addition of salt has condensed the water,
the egg rises. The *'gravity'* is only effective where the shell, i.e. the surrounding medium, around an object is lighter and thinner than the object itself, say Victor Schauberger and his

Students. Any object immediately begins to float when the

Shell around it is compressed, and compression is accompanied by cooling-

Therefore, the salt-enriched water is not only
denser, but also colder. The old raftsmen still knew how to

swims more easily on moonlit nights when the water is ice cold
Water is known to be densest at 4° C and decreases at

to-

As it warms up, it takes up more space because it loses density. If we throw a piece of wood into water, what happens?

It falls through the air with its low density, but only to the

Water surface. There the wood floats due to its lower
density than water. A thrown stone therefore sinks to the
The reason for the water is because it has a greater density than not only air, but also water. Gravity is not the result of the earth's attraction, but rather a relation of body / shell. With a corresponding density of the shell, all

bodies have their weight. We see that everything has two sides, and different media such as air and water are changeable.

The flying discs probably not only use the electro-magnetic effect of attraction and repulsion, but also know the laws of gravity and master the cancellation of gravity, i.e. the secrets of levitation.

Not only from ancient times, but also from the more recent past, Indian yogis are known to have mastered the ability to lift the weight of the body or to control the surrounding

to condense air (levitation: free floating of a body in space;

Latin: levitas *'lightness').* Also known as Vril force *'Vril'* means calling up one's own vibration. Victor Schauberger claimed that without levitation there could never be gravity. One thing therefore requires the other. He went a step further.

Step further when he said: Gravity is only the secondary

manifestation of this main force
is levitation.

Official antiquity *research* is still trying to convince us that huge blocks of stone, for

example for Stonehenge, for pyramid construction, for the sculptures on
Easter Island,
etc., were made by primitives, half-savages or even half-apes - from whom we
have
learned a great deal.

Machine Translated by Google

wrapped; oh, what a fairy tale - rolled on logs, pulled up by hundreds of slaves on inclined planes. We cannot be admitted that

Gods, demigods or god-like people of antiquity controlled and were able to use powers that we can hardly comprehend today with our systematically limited imagination. And these grandiose falsifications of the past, which took place gradually and over centuries, had only one great purpose: to preserve the Judeo-Christian world view that was imposed around 1,000 years ago with lies, deceit, cunning and brutal violence to this day; in order to undeservedly exalt some and unjustifiably disparage others. The culture cannot, as it actually did, have come from higher species from the north, but must have been given to the world by Semitic nomadic tribes coming from the desert.

The 'ex *Oriente* / ux' (the light comes from the East) has long been refuted, but is persistently promoted by the dumbing down media and educational institutions.

The Earth floats in a sea of energy; like all planets.
The sun's force or magnetic field fills the entire solar system, enclosing all of the sun's satellites. These fields partially penetrate each other - the moon, for example, causes the tides here on earth. What tremendous flows of force, emanations, there are, which are completely invisible, imperceptible, and yet can be effective. Even in horticulture, people know about the influence of the moon.

For a long time, one could only find out more in secret that it was advisable to do this or that when the moon was waxing or waning.

The use or utilization of not only the forces of the moon, but also of many other power streams that are not perceptible with our five senses is called occult. But occult means nothing more than hidden, secret. At a time when the Roman Church was at its peak of power in the Middle Ages, not only traditional wisdom from nature, the cosmos, history, mythology, etc. had to be kept secret and hidden, but also the use of invisible natural forces. Anyone who used nature's herb garden and dared to make teas, ointments and juices, or even knew how to use magical powers for healing purposes, always had to fear coming into unpleasant contact with the stake. Even today, natural healing methods and alternative practitioners are not yet covered by health insurance.

Machine Translated by Google

In return, they finance the organized mass murder of the mostly healthy German youth while they were still in the womb - one million abortions in the last three years!

That is probably cleaner than burning.) The power of the church has been broken and yet the fear is still deep, as is the instilled aversion to natural forces that are not yet officially recognized and not yet rediscovered. Understandable when you consider that in just a few years in Europe an estimated millions of people were branded as *'witches'* and burned at the stake (including the Templars, Cathars, Albigensians, Waldensians, etc., mostly Christian groups who did not want to be subordinate to the early Christianity of Judea and the falsified faith promoted later by Rome, and were therefore murdered in the notorious crucifixion and extermination campaigns of Rome in a similar brutal manner as the mostly culturally and spiritually superior pagans anyway). Today we can confidently deal with the powers of omnipotence again, even if it is not acceptable to the *'Lord of the Desert',* the *'Prince of Slavery',* the *'Private God of the Jews'* (according to Schopenhauer), the Yahweh/Jehovah of the Old Testament - whom the former pagan and later forcibly Christianized Germanic peoples were also tricked into worshiping. For his time is rapidly approaching its end.

It is a mistake if science still claims that space is empty, that Einstein and others have abolished the ether

The term ether, which was common in ancient times, has other names today: neutrino sea, gravitational magnet, tachyon field, etc. The variety of names prompted Dr. Nieper, Hanover, to speak of the *'energy of a thousand names' .* Prof. Oberth also assumed some time ago *that 'energy, inertia and gravitational fields are merely aspects of one and the same thing'* and that it would prove impossible to separate them from one another. In 1970, Nobel Prize winner Alven declared after work and discoveries in the field of magnetohydrodynamics and plasma physics : *"Today we know that there are highly structured electrical currents in certain areas .... It can be assumed that the entire cosmos consists of a network of such currents."*

This ether, which the ancients knew about, exists and not only fills the cosmic spaces, but also penetrates the coarser celestial bodies themselves. The great spaces between the

Machine Translated by Google

Celestial bodies are empty of air but not of energy. This
Ether, this cosmic energy in space, must be of the highest density
because even the rocket-powered spaceships fly there without propulsion.
The astronauts are also weightless, floating in their space capsule or freely
in space. Because according to Victor and his son
Walter Schauberger sees high environmental density as eliminating any heaviness.
The mysterious levitation is therefore a matter of course in space. And what
else does Schauberger say: high density goes hand in hand with coolness;
the cold in space is said to be 273°C.
Since we are now talking about Schauberger, it should be mentioned
that the forest ranger, nature observer and unprofessional naturalist already
warned in the twenties and thirties: *'We* are moving *wrongly',* we are using
the destructive power of explosion (combustion engines, jet propulsion and

today, nuclear power, with its combustion and radiation residues that damage
nature) and that will ultimately lead us to disaster! We must observe nature.
The
Natural and cosmic processes only occur according to the implosion principle
and never according to the explosion principle! The difference and the
advantages of implosion can be discussed in more detail here
would go beyond the scope of this brochure. We are swimming in an unimaginable sea of
free and easily
energy that can be tapped at any point on earth, in the air,
in space. The utilization of this
infinite and constantly regenerating energy
Outsiders of science have always succeeded. To explain this in more detail
would be a comprehensive topic in itself. Even in the Third Reich, people
were close to making it widely available. The small
Table 'Did *you know...* ' was taken from the book by Dr. Nieper
'Revolution in technology, medicine, society'.

Did you know ...

. . . that the aforementioned physicist Nikola Tesla tested a heavy luxury
car for a week at a speed of 130 km/h as early as 1931,
Powered by electric current from tachyon energy? Fuel costs are zero! **Did you
know ...**

. . . that the American physicist Dr. Moray around the same time
Box the size of a small wine crate can produce up to 70 KW of continuous power? **Did
you know ...**

. . . that the High Command of the German Navy in September
1944 leading industries under contract to further develop and produce a
tachyon energy converter with 7 KW continuous output per stage.
to give production?

Machine Translated by Google

From the *"Confidential Communications"* of 17 July 1984, No. 2510, we can also see the following about the German development:

> *"You will remember what we wrote about Captain Coler, who demonstrated the first German tachyon converter more than 40 years ago. The success was so convincing that Rheinmetall-Borsig was already preparing for series production. The end of the war ruined everything! But our informants are in possession of all the secret documents, both from the interrogation of Captain Coler by the Allies and the technical description of the machine and the patent, along with other professorial reports."*

The production of the Coler converter, whose development dates back to the 1930s, was prepared not only at Borsig, but also at the companies Siemens-Schuckert and Hermann-Göring-Werke (now Salzgitter).

The question arises: if the use of this free energy is already possible today, why is it not being tackled with all available means, when we have been stuck in the energy crisis for years?

The energy crisis is a huge fraud that has enabled the *'energy mafia'* to increase its profits enormously. The top management of the *'energy mafia'* is also identical to the top management of high finance, which, together with the leading Soviets, considers itself chosen - according to the laws of the Old Testament (Deuteronomy 15 verse 6; Deuteronomy 23 verse 20-21; Deuteronomy 27 verse 1), for example - to direct and dominate the world. As with the monopolization of money, today's monopolization of energy - but not with free energy - can keep entire states in political and economic dependence. In addition, states with nuclear power plants are completely vulnerable to blackmail by the military powers because of the risk of disaster in the event of war. In this way, the world can easily be kept in a state of energy and financial dependency and an intimidating nuclear threat by a relatively small clique operating from the background (due to a specially created law in the Federal Republic of Germany, this clique cannot be defined more precisely). Nevertheless, this globally active, anonymous background power is in an ambivalent situation. It would love to catch up with the Third Power in the field of energy technology, but then it would lose one of its most important means of power, *'unfree energy'.* We can safely leave the oil sheiks out of the game, they have - at least -

Machine Translated by Google

see from their own countries - no dirigistic significance, they are probably played up for diversionary purposes. In the USA, gravitational and tachyon research is secretly carried out by some aircraft and other large corporations, and certainly also in the USSR; but if the free energy is allowed for technical use in the aviation and space flight sectors, then after a few years its use on a broad basis can no longer be prevented.

Rho Sigma also believes that it is only due to a huge amount of secrecy and a conspiracy of silence on the part of very powerful interest groups that no further research and development has taken place in this regard.

Even most countries would go bankrupt today if they had to forego taxes from the excessive energy prices. So it is hardly surprising that lawyer E. Engelhardt, Nuremberg, received an almost identical reply on 27 May 1983 from the 'Federal Minister for Research and Technology' , Dr. Weiss, to his letter of 18 May 1983 to Chancellor Kohl - in which he drew attention to the many possibilities of this free energy production in several pages and raised the question of why something was not finally being done about it: *"Dear Mr. Engelhardt,*

> *Regarding the question you asked about 'tachion energy', I refer you to the attached document 10/50 of the German Bundestag. From this you can see that the claims about tachion energy are not supported by physical experience."*

The great powers, or rather the power behind them, their secret services and the state-dependent science lobby have, to this day, stuck to their methods that have been tried and tested for decades against non-dependent inventors and technicians who have more or less succeeded in entering the field of free energy production: ridicule; financial ruin; contractually buying up inventions in order to then have them disappear in the safe forever; intimidation; persecution; murder.

A case that has only recently become known will be presented here in a very shortened form as a representative of many others. The American physicist Stan Deyo was employed by the Air Force and was very interested in electrogravity. In the mid-1970s he suddenly moved to Perth, Australia. That this move had deeper reasons is evident from an article in the Australian magazine *'People'* from June 14, 1979, in which Deyo is quoted: *"I went to Perth because it is the loneliest city in the world* 56

Machine Translated by Google

is, but it was still not far enough away"
The magazine further reports on Deyo:

> *"He became aware of the unpleasant fact that some people who were too interested in antigravity research*
> *had shown, had suddenly died ....*
> *Why keep such a scientific breakthrough secret?*
>
> *Deyo claims This is pretty obvious - think of all the money that the oil industry invests in the manufacture of cars, tires, and road construction. The entire financial structure of the world would be threatened if we suddenly had a new, cheap source of energy.*
>
> *The new technology is being suppressed by the people who control the finances of this planet."* Taken from the congress lecture by research engineer Dr. hc Rho Sigma, UN No. 260, 12/79

In Australia, Deyo wrote a second book, a sequel to his first work, 'Cosmic Conspiracy'.

In June 1981, RhoSigma reported in UN No. 269 that Stan Deyo had recently been shot dead in Perth, but he had not yet been able to ascertain any further details.

So we see that what was already possible in the German Reich from 1944 onwards was not possible in the four decades of occupation and the post-war period, partly because it was violently suppressed and prevented!

Thus, further environmental destruction, forest dieback, nuclear contamination (along with an increase in cancer and leukaemia), the death of rivers, lakes, seas and oceans, takes its disastrous course, and reason and insight are only present in a few, and certainly not in those in power. Therefore, it seems that the Third Power is also destined to prevent total ecological collapse and to free Mother Earth from the stranglehold of the dark forces at the right time. It is up to us to continue to follow the destructive, life- and nature-hostile forces, or to make a spiritual and practical transformation in ourselves and to look forward to salvation with an open mind and an affirmative attitude. This is not to say that information about the disastrous development and personal initiatives to improve the situation should be neglected. Quite the opposite!

Machine Translated by Google

MORE DETAILS ON THE FLYING DISC DRIVE

Rho Sigma reported on the German professor Paul Alfred Biefeld, born in Königswalde in 1867, who emigrated to America and who encouraged his student Townsend Brown at Denison University to carry out certain basic experiments that led to the discovery of the Biefeld-Brown effect, which states

> A capacitor suspended like a pendulum with the pole ends horizontal will move towards its positive pole when voltage is added. (See Figure IV)
>
> If a capacitor is balanced on a beam balance with counterweights on the other pan and then current is supplied to the capacitor, the capacitor pan moves upwards if the capacitor is lying with its positive pole upwards. If it is lying on the pan with its positive pole downwards, the pan moves downwards (Fig. IV).

Rho Sigma assumes, and explains in more detail on the following pages, that UFOs would also have to fly according to this principle and be able to generate their own gravitational field. Disk-shaped devices equipped with 50,000 - 150,000 volt electrode voltage could be made to float and rise. The Hypothesis TT
Brown's theory states that there is a similar reciprocal connection between electricity and gravity as there is between electricity and magnetism; and what the current-carrying coil does for electromagnetism, the voltage-charged capacitor does for electrogravity. The basic research carried out by Biefeld and Brown in the 1920s and 1930s was itself patented in the 1950s, in the USA of course. And Rho Sigma suspects quite correctly that the use of this technology for flight technology was deliberately suppressed by the official authorities there, (16) as I have already said.

In 1969, reports were published in the Anglo-Saxon press that the Englishman John R. Searl (born 1932) from Mortimer, England, had succeeded in producing discs that could fly. He called them *'Levity Discs'* . Searl relied on what he called the *'Searl effect',* which not only drives the discs but also replaces the earth's gravitational field with its own independent field for any passengers, so that acceleration and centrifugal forces no longer play a role. In 1949, he began his first experimental and simple tests and in 1969 he was ready to produce the first small, unmanned gyroscopes, 90 cm in diameter, although still

Machine Translated by Google

accelerated by a stationary drive motor and then decoupled, to float away in the sky.

Up to now, controlled steering remained his biggest problem, because the things he constructed disappeared forever.

high voltage, 100,000 volts and more, and relatively

At low rotation speeds the *'Searl effect'* occurred .

The centrifugal force created free electrons and these in turn a

electric field.

Every material body that is set in rotation generates a magnetic field precisely because all matter contains electrons, which the rotation. This also applies to the planets, which generate their electromagnetic or gravitational fields through rotation, as I have already said. They are set in rotation, or kept in constant rotation, by the sun. One half of the sphere is in sunlight and warming, the other half in darkness and cooling. This alternation maintains the perpetual rotation. The astronauts also have to

When they leave the Earth/Moon magnetic field and enter space, they have to be careful not to start rotating constantly. They can only prevent this by artificially heating the outer skin of their spaceship that faces away from the sun.

This field created by Searl around the 90 cm gyroscope probably caused the levitating effect and the repulsion from the earth's magnetic field. Schauberger would say that it has a compression the surrounding shell. The gyroscope took off and accelerated even further without the stationary drive, whereby he then glowed pink fluorescent (the flying disc effect that is often observed, especially in the dark!). No. 79/80 from 1980 (2) ; No. 255, 2/1979, (9) ; (19) ; and others Sources.

Here we should recall the luminous phenomenon of the glow discharge in the so-called *'Geissler tube' ,* in which an electrical discharge takes place. If you put an electric field of *about* 1,000 volts on this almost airless tube, the electricity passes through. We see around the cathode an orange light, then a dark room and behind it a violet column to the anode, where the electrons come out of the tube again.

The often observed fluorescent effect in the flying discs, does not come from an assumed frictional heat between object and atmosphere, as could happen with an over-speeding aircraft, but by the free electrodes and the ionic

Machine Translated by Google

sation of the surrounding air, which is repelled by the flight gyro.
It is assumed that the gyroscope is roughly what the cathode is in the Geissler tube. The resulting ambient vacuum eliminates all the usual aerodynamic problems, such as frictional heat and aircraft noise. There is no sound barrier or heat barrier for the flying gyroscope. So we have the flying gyroscope, around which there is a more or less large vacuum envelope, and then outside a highly compressed air envelope due to the air being expelled. Does the electromagnetic field expelled by the flying gyroscope also experience compression in this area? In any case, projectiles fired at a flying gyroscope have no effect, and explosive projectiles and rockets fired at it explode at a safe distance from the object. This must be related to this type of propulsion. Even in space, swarms of meteorites are said to be unable to harm electrogravitational flying gyroscopes or the larger cigar-shaped objects observed.

If it is now possible to vary the surrounding vacuum, that is, to pull it off at the top, bottom, left or right and to expel it on the opposite side, an enormous suction effect, a negative pressure, is created on the side that has been pulled off, into which the flying top virtually falls and thus moves forward, be it downwards, to any side, or even upwards.

John Searl had not yet got that far. In this way, or according to similar principles, or in a different technical formulation, the flying discs could take off and fly within the atmosphere. In space it would probably be even easier.

In this apparent bubble in which the gyro is located, it is completely independent of the surrounding geomagnetic field and the atmosphere, and thus not at the mercy of the *'earth's gravity'.* Sudden changes of direction, high acceleration and abrupt stops do not affect the crew inside the gyro

Here is another example of a basic experiment in the field of levitation. The two scientists Kowsky and Frost, who based their ideas on the work of the extremely important German physicist Meissner, who worked in the field of piezoelectricity (this is certainly referring to the now deceased Prof. Dr. Dr. A. Meißner, who worked at AEG-Telefunken at the time), carried out the following experiment:

"A small quartz crystal of 5x2x1.5 mm, i.e. a Volume of only 15 mm3 but of defined lattice structure, the oscillations of a radio transmitter of several kilo-

Machine Translated by Google

watts, its volume increased by 800%.
After longer-term induction, it began to gravitate (I would say: levitate; author's note) until he was able to levitate a weight of almost 50 kg!! at a height of two meters." p. 199 (24)

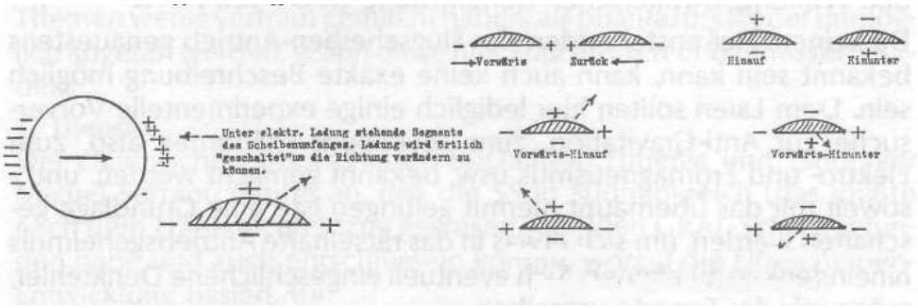
In this context, we would like to recall the comments on the fireballs in the second chapter reminds

The former Peenemünde engineer Rho Sigma (pseudonym) sees the propulsion and control of the flying discs as follows (excerpt):

"The earth generates a gravitational field and is surrounded by it; this reaches zero if we go far enough out into space. This field holds objects and people just like a disk-shaped object on the surface of the earth. But with the help of the Biefeld-Brown effect, a 'flying disk' can generate its own gravitational field that acts on the earth's field. This field acts like a wave, the negative pole of which is on the crest of the wave and the positive pole in the trough of the wave. The disk therefore moves like *a 'surfboard on a wave slope that is created by the disk's electrogravity generator.*

is constantly kept in motion.

Since the directional component of the field can be controlled can, the disc can move on the 'wave' it creates itself at any desired angle and in any flight direction.



move in direction.....

f

Back to top Backvirtd -Down

6 Biefeld-Bro»n effect and flight direction (4)

Since the disc always moves *towards the positive pole*
The control (navigation) is made possible simply by changing the direction of the positive voltage.
is therefore achieved by switching, ie shifting the electrical current voltages instead of aerodynamic control surfaces. Since the disk is on the wave slope of a
constantly advancing wave that it generates to change the gravitational field of the earth, no mechanical driving force is required."

S. 35/36

(16)

Machine Translated by Google

Machine Translated by Google

However, the 100,000 volts and more initial voltage required for the flying disc launch must first be generated somewhere, and the discs do not have stationary systems at every point on earth where they can be charged, so N. Jürgen-Ratthofer is perhaps right in assuming that the flying discs have various drive systems that are linked to one another. The Walter drive developed in the 1930s by the German chemist Prof. H. Walter of Kiel is considered as a starting aid. This hydrogen peroxide engine was not only used with considerable success in the so-called Walter submarines, but also in the V-1 and V-2 and also as a starting aid for conventional aircraft. Jürgen-Ratthofer assumes that from around 1940/41, in terms of technical development, two different combination models were possible in Germany.

A: the Marconi-Schriever-Walter-Schwarz flying top B: the Neumann-Walter-Schwarz flying top The different types of propulsion are:

Marconi electrogravity dynamo drive; Schriever - flying wheel; Walter hydrogen peroxide turbine engine; Schwarz vacuum airship; Dr. Joh. von Neumann - electrogravity system. Through the combination of these different systems, which we do not want to explain in technical detail here, NJ-R. expects a kind of perpetuum-mo-bile effect. (Article series: 'Walking weapon *UFO',* parts I + II).

Since no outsider can know the flying disc drive in detail, no exact description is possible. The layman should only be made aware of some preliminary experimental tests on anti-gravity, the levitation phenomenon, electromagnetism and earth magnetism, etc., and -

To the extent that I have succeeded in doing so, a basis has been created to be able to understand the mysterious secret of the drive. The expert may forgive me for any errors in reasoning that may have crept in.

Machine Translated by Google

The extraterrestrial origin theory of the *'UFOs',* or rather flying discs, which were so suddenly and so brazenly introduced into the world by the democratic-Christian-Communist world after 1945, space cannot be refuted (because we know almost nothing about life on other planets or solar systems, or have been made aware of it), but

has not been proven to this day.

Because if the Allied superpowers, who were involved in space travel, had brought clear evidence from space, they would have put it on the table with joy and relief long ago. Be that as it may, this series of writings *'SECRET WONDER WEAPONS'* part \-\\\ has in any case provided clear evidence

This has shown that any 'UFO' origin theory which excludes Reich Germany and conceals or does not know any connection with it must be regarded as false from the outset!!!

In the background 'UFO' literature, at least two theories persist as to how Reich Germany at that time believed in the other science, other technology, which then led to the development of flying discs, fireballs, ray weapons, etc. Although I personally suspect that Germany was able to bring about these developments on its own

and although these two theories may be dismissed as fantastic or impossible by readers who are not very familiar with esoteric topics, they will be briefly discussed and outlined here:

1. Theory:

The Chilean ex-ambassador, author, Hitlerist and esoteric Miguel Serrano assumes that the SS in southern France (that *must* have been after the French campaign)

I found the GRAL treasure and was also able to decipher what the flying disc development is based on. (43)

The Grail should not be thought of as the bowl in which the blood of Christ was collected after the Roman legionary Longinus had stabbed him with a lance, as this was distortedly reinterpreted in the later Christianization phase, but rather as a much older Nordic-Aryan-Germanic mystery tradition (see

also Baron Julius von Evola *"The Mystery of the Grail",* Ansata-Verlag).

The Grail Treasure, most likely from the Cathars (the Pure Ones)

Machine Translated by Google

last guarded at the castle of Montsegur in the French Pyrenees, was rescued during the later storming of the castle by clerical-Roman mercenary troops and brought to safety in time

Based on Otto Rahn's *"Crusade* against *the Grail"* and above all *"Lucifer's Court",* the Viennese engineer and real esotericist Erich Halig developed the idea in the Viennese spiritual journal 'Mensch und *Schicksal',* No. 5/15.5.1952 in his work *"The Mystery of the Mani-sola"* that the Manisola (Mani Sun) associated with the Grail, the Mani, is to be thought of as a collecting lens for cosmic influences. Furthermore, that the earlier *'Bhamani* Vimanas' (aircraft) of the Brahmanic Indo-Aryans (Indo-Germans) were made to float by Manis (here translated as *'lenses'):*

> *"Due to their special composition, these 'Manis' had a physical affinity to certain celestial bodies (especially the sun) and, through this 'correspondence', enabled the weightless levitation of the objects into which they were built. However, it is precisely this levitation ability that is also attributed to the Grail in various traditions...*
>
> *If the flying saucers are Grail vehicles that levitate through the Mani....* "

According to this, the Mani would be a gemstone, a high-quality crystal (?) cut into lenses through which the sun's rays fall and are concentrated in one point and converted into high-quality energy.
This makes any spacecraft into which the Mani is installed a levitating Grail vehicle.

2. Theory:

In addition to our well-known school theory, according to which the earth is a solid sphere with a metallic, liquid, glowing core, there are two other theories. One of them states that the earth either has very different sized cavities, or is a hollow sphere, with a possible small inner sun. An inner world in which life exists just as much as in our outer world (see brief description and sketch in the Hugin text *'Secrets of the Universe').* This hypothesis has the great advantage that it can refer to ancient traditions and myths of almost all ancient cultures and native peoples, whereas our school theory is a more recent construction that has little basis in fact.

Machine Translated by Google

has nothing to offer, but is exclusively and persistently propagated to the public.

At the poles there are large openings and smaller cave-like Passages and connecting passages, e.g. in the Gobi Desert (inner Mongolia), in the Himalayas, and in South America The name 'Agartha' of the Eastern mythology, is identical with the Inner World, as in the Germanic the name *'Asgart'* (the residence of the gods) or Valhalla At times of great earth catastrophes such as ice ages, moonset, floods, the sinking of Atlantis, people, as well as entire peoples, e.g. Atlanteans, are said to have taken refuge there.

Indian traditions, as well as Nordic and Germanic ones, say that their ancestors in ancient times traveled from the Pole (North Pole)

The Inner World, the Hollow Earth, was created by the medieval church renamed it *'hell'* and thus relegated it to the realm of the fantastic. Only in small circles could the knowledge about it has been preserved into our time. About 12,000 years ago, when Atlantis sank, Atlanteans lost their great knowledge into the Inner Kingdom and to this day preserved, since the lineage there continues its normal course. Due to the German base in *'Neu-Schwabenland',* which was built near the South Pole in the 1940s, one can establish real contact with the inner kingdom *of 'Asgart .* The Atlanteans living there are mostly over 2 m tall, light-skinned, blond, blue-eyed people. They have made friends and exchanged knowledge

So far, the least credible of the two theories.

There would need to be considerably more space available here in order to be able to present this in a way that is at least somewhat understandable and plausible.

In the very long report *"Are UFOs coming from the sunken Atlantis",* Neue Weltschau, page: *'Europa2000',* No. 25, 22 June 1978, Stephan Hansen writes based on the knowledge of earthly origin, but without specifying who this power is

> *"To the objection that it is impossible that anywhere on the Earth still undiscovered or even undiscoverable life, Larger-scale construction and production facilities - underground or above ground, must be answered that this objection is simply wrong. There are a number of areas on our planet where*

Machine Translated by Google

Events are taking place that are inexplicable and that pose insoluble puzzles even for the secret services of the great powers. One rarely hears anything about it, because the governments and their secret services as well as the military bodies consider it more appropriate not to let their people know that there are intelligent powers or groups of powers on earth that are far superior to the war or defense ministries and their research and observation staffs. Anyone who knows too much in this regard and cannot keep their mouth shut must expect to get a pretty harsh slap on the cheek."

He gives very clear information about the procurement of materials for the production of the flying discs, immediately following:

"As far as the manufacture of UFOs is concerned, an expert who has thought the matter through in detail recently explained the following: If a group of people appeared at one of the large factories in the industrialized nations that manufacture steel, metal or plastic parts, presented construction plans for a certain construction part and gave the order to produce a certain number of pieces of it, then the management of the company in question would be grateful for the large order and would be satisfied with the explanations it received from the buyers, especially if the price demanded was paid without hesitation with the corresponding advance payment (the rest upon delivery). Sales directors are not secret agents or suspicious armaments experts, but are only interested in giving their staff work and bread and earning good money from the order. When the ordered parts are ready, they are picked up by a convoy of trucks. Where they are taken to and what they are intended for is of no interest to the factory management.

Now let's let our imagination run wild: The delivered parts are taken by trusted people from our secret elite group to a remote location where they are picked up by UFO transporters under cover of darkness and taken to the assembly sites, which are unknown and inaccessible to normal people.

This could be the case with practically all the components of the UFOs, even the simplest switching elements and screws that are ordered from a workshop somewhere in the world. The finishing touches are then applied by the super-technicians of the elite groups who take the delivered 66

Machine Translated by Google

Individual parts, after necessary additions and finishing processes, are finally assembled into what we see as UFOs in the sky."

With these thoughts on the possibilities of obtaining materials for building flying discs in remote areas, I would like to move on to the next chapter.

Machine Translated by Google

There are only a few who know the future, who, long before the time turns, scatter the seeds that their grandchildren will reap, who from the depths of never explored Waltens the

Hear the call that obliges us to act, without thanks the period in which they live, with their work with great courage. Erich Limpach, 1899-1965

GERMAN RESTRICTED AREAS - WORLDWIDE

In 1964, the American police newspaper *'Police* Gazette' reported, New York, about an inaccessible German restricted area in the wilderness of Argentina, with an area of 25,900 sq km (size comparison: East Prussia - 37,000 sq km;

Westphalia - 20,215 sq. km). The reader will find in the appendix of this document the first page of the American original as a document, followed by the complete German translation. Although the area is known to the Allies, we have replaced the province, river and city names mentioned for closer localization, as well as the names of people with dots

---

The above-mentioned report speaks of men wearing uniforms and wore caps like those of the Rommel Afrika Corps. Therefore, we will now turn to a strange report about a restricted area in the Sahara. *"Das kleine Blatt",* Vienna, reported in 1957 (copy of the two-page report with exact

Date is available to me) under the title *"We are looking for the white city",* about mysterious events in a mountain range in the Sahara. It begins with:

> *"A secret French expedition is currently underway in Africa, tasked with determining the exact location of a mysterious 'white city'* in the... *massif. About eight*
>
> *thousand - according to another reading more than ten thousand - whites live who know how to cleverly disguise their existence from the world. In Europe they have long since disappeared and are declared dead. The French II. Bureau, the counter-espionage service, wants to seat should be more precise documentation that ....."*

In brief, the following is announced: It is estimated 10,000 former soldiers of the Rommel Africa

Machine Translated by Google

After the end of the African campaign (that must have been in 1943), the 3rd Corps, equipped with vehicles, weapons, food, technical equipment, radios, etc., retreated into the 100,000 sq km mountain range. They built roads, bridges, towns, and even health resorts, provided existing cave systems with doors and gates, and expanded them into fortresses. Together with the Berber-like tribe of around 12,000 people who once lived there in poverty, they transformed the not so overly hot mountain valleys into much more fertile areas through irrigation, etc.

They have organized their own state, they are a close-knit community and there is no mercy for anyone who violates their laws. They control all the caravan routes through the Sahara, conduct trade and commerce, control the movement of goods, and determine prices. The local population also works to ensure that the surrounding desert area is secure. Natives armed with machine guns stand guard along the caravan routes, monitor entry and exit, ask for passes and papers, and turn away undesirable and shady people. The heat, the dryness, the desert are another important barrier against foreigners. Anyone who does not have a valid pass from '..... *Export + Import,* Cairo' cannot get in, and if they try to get in via secret routes, they will never get out again (with Madrid as its headquarters, the company has branches in Beirut, Istanbul, Athens, Rome, Tetuan, Cairo, and Tangier).

Not only agents and spies from the French II Bureau, special department for North Africa/Central Africa, have been trying for years to get into the area, sometimes disguised as natives, but also American and English agents from Libya, and the Russians from Egypt. *'There can be no doubt that a mysterious colony of white men is at work* in the ... massif. We have intercepted radio messages that we could not decipher,' said the French. And no agent who was sent in has ever reappeared. Over the years, Italians, Spaniards, Poles, Belarusians and numerous former foreign legionaries have joined them from the North and Central African region.

If we take the core content of this report seriously, then in 1943, after the African campaign, carefully selected soldiers, or even entire German elite units, did not return to the European theaters of war, but went directly and at higher levels

Machine Translated by Google

Command partly into the ....-massif of the Sahara and partly into the previously mentioned restricted area of South America. This conclusion is certainly obvious if one is prepared to switch off narrow-minded habits of thought.

The German ARD radio correspondent and television employee Karl Brugger, specialist in Indian issues, lived as a freelance ARD employee in South America since 1974. In his 1976 book

In "The Chronicle of Akakor" (30) he reports exclusively on
a tribe of Indians, the *'Ugha Mongulala',* which has not yet been officially discovered and lives in seclusion in the headwaters of the Amazon, in the still unexplored jungle area. Brugger came into contact with the current tribal chief *'Tatunka Nara'.*

His book is essentially the report of this chief. He told him about the *'gods'* who came to them about 15,000 years ago.
came, brought them culture, above and underground cities
(Akakor and Akahim) and 12,000 years ago with their
Celestial vehicles disappeared again, with the promise
to come back one day. He reported on their 13,000
Years of historical records
South America, which his tribe has. He also reported,
What is of interest in our context is the contact made with the Germans in 1940 and the 2,000 German soldiers who joined them in

South America. Brugger, full of scepticism, was asked by Tatunca Nara to accompany him to his tribe.
Brugger equipped a small expedition and from Manaus they set off
up the Amazon. Halfway through, he abandoned the journey,
after a boat carrying equipment, provisions and film cameras capsized. Brugger was initially only able to read the long report
Tatunka Naras instructed:

In 1936, the Ugha Mongulala tribe fought against the white invaders at Santa Maria on the Black River. They won and took, among others, a German nurse Reinha, who had been sent there to evangelize for the purpose of the Judeo-Christian conquest of the world.

The chief at the time fell in love with Reinha, married her, and in 1937 Tatunka Nara was born as their son and later chief. As the tribe got more and more into trouble and their living areas were threatened with discovery, Reinha decided in 1940 to travel to Germany, to Berlin,

Machine Translated by Google

directly to the Reich government and, if possible, ask for help.
She was allowed to come forward and was listened to. She explained the needs of her tribe and finally managed to get three high officials of the Reich government to accompany her on the return journey to her tribe in the jungles of South America. There a contract was concluded; Tatunka Nara literally:

"This was the life of my people when the High Council made the alliance with the German leaders. They promised the Ugha Mongulala the same powerful weapons as the White Barbarians (their term for the white conquerors of South America who, since Columbus and in the name of the Cross, have brutally slaughtered the natives by the millions) possessed. 2,000 soldiers were to show them how to use the weapons of war.

Their task was also to build strong fortresses and gain new farmland. The crucial part of the treaty, however, referred to a war planned for the year 1944 in the White Barbarians' time. Our allies wanted to land on the coast of Brazil and occupy all the larger cities. The warriors of the Ugha Mongulala would support the campaign by raiding the White Barbarians' settlements in the interior. After an expected victory, the division of Brazil into two regions was planned. The German soldiers claimed the provinces on the coast.

The Ugha Mongulala were content with the land on the Great River that the gods had given them 12,000 years ago.
That was the treaty between the High Council of Akakor and the leaders from Germany. ....
The first German soldiers crossed the borders of Akakor in the dry season of 1941 in the White Barbarian era. In the following years, new groups continued to arrive until the agreed number of 2,000 was reached.

In 1945.... the last German soldiers reached the
Capital of the Ugha Mongulala. Then the connections broke off.

I know the route of the German soldiers from their homeland to Akakor from their stories. Their starting point was a city called Marseille. Their destination was England. It was only on the ship, which could move like a fish deep in the water (submarine), that they found out their real destination...

The war did not take place exactly where the Germans

Machine Translated by Google

Leaders thought the battle was already won, they lost it. The last group of German soldiers, who were also accompanied by women and children, reported on the complete defeat of their people. The overwhelming enemy had destroyed their empire and turned the country into a desert" (30) p. 174-

179

Tatunca Nara also reported that the gods had *'flying disks'* with which they disappeared into the sky about 12,000 years ago, but also - and this could be of interest here - they left a flying disk behind in the 4-5 km diameter underground rock city of ' *Lower Akakor' .*

Could Germany have received technical inspiration from here for the construction of its flying discs?

Before publishing his book with the Tatunca Nara report, Brugger carried out his own research to verify the chief's statements, through which he found many of the statements confirmed, which he then included in the book's appendix, such as:

"The history of Brazil's entry into the war on the side of the Allies began with a visit by the Supreme Commander of the North American Armed Forces, George C. *Marshall, to Rio de Janeiro in June 1939. 'In the defense of North America,' the general explained, 'Brazil plays a vital role. The presence of enemy forces on Brazilian soil and the control of the connection to Europe and Africa would pose a dangerous threat to the USA. Consequently, the coast between Salvador and Belem must be secured and defended against a possible invasion.'.....*

At *the Panama Conference in 1939, Brazil declared its willingness to provide the USA with supply bases and strategic airfields for defense. Just a few months later, the first North American bomber squadrons landed in Joao Pessoa and Recife.*

Did Hitler plan to conquer Brazil? Was it even technically feasible? Did it perhaps even happen?.....
The activities of German secret societies in South America were no less numerous and complex. As early as 1938, a warship explored the lower reaches of the Amazon. .....
Another operation documented in the archives of the Brazilian Air Force was the voyage of the ship 'SS Carolino' in June 1943 from Macaio to Belem ..... The Brazilian Air Force believed it was a transport of weapons for underground operations.

Machine Translated by Google

rious German agents and attacked the ship unsuccessfully....
There *are numerous indications of secret operations by the Third*
Reich in Brazil. Eyewitnesses claim to have seen the landing of German submarines off the coast of Rio de Janeiro. A
Reporters from the Brazilian magazine 'Realidade' even discovered
a German colony in the Matto Grosso, which was exclusively
inhabited by former SS members. *" S. 240-247 (30)*
Shortly before his planned expedition to Akakor, Karl Brugger was shot dead on the street in Rio de Janeiro on January 2, 1984.
The press reported at the time

In order to better understand the connections with South America, the following facts are briefly explained here: The first declaration of war after the founding of the Third Reich was made by the international background powers on Friday,

24 March 1933 officially announced through the English-speaking press (eg *'Daily Express',* London) A fact that has been
by the Allied States, by the democratic-Christian-communist world rule simply

oppressed, Germany was, for better or worse,
forced to prepare for another international witch hunt with
subsequent war, although it was the defeat of the First World War, with its disastrous consequences such as territorial cessions, the decline of colonies and unimaginable

reparations payments, etc.

It is well known that a decision in war today depends not only on the soldiers' will to fight, the technical standard and the possession of modern weapons, but also on the possession

important raw materials such as oil, rubber, petrol, etc. The Allied opponents had sufficient quantities of platinum,
But they also knew that Germany had no platinum deposits of its own and only had access to the South American state of Colombia.
chance to get hold of this war-deciding precious metal. Platinum was essential for the aircraft and other important key industries in order to give a war any

Even before the war began, the USA tried to cut off Germany from its platinum source, Colombia. The book recently published by Druffel-Verlag reports on the agent and jungle war

"Operation Silver Dust; German-American Platinum War in the Colombian Jungle", in novel style. Details reveal
the author's precise knowledge of details. In the chapter "Prelude"
is told of a secret conversation between the then
American FBI chief Edgar J. Hoover, the Chief of Staff of the US Army Department G 2 (Intelligence) and Admiral Walter S.
Anderson reports that sentences like:

Machine Translated by Google

"Gentlemen, the President and other members of Congress are alarmed at the extent of the espionage trials south of our border. He has noted with great concern that the Axis agents, especially the German spies, have set up a chain of espionage bases from Mexico City down to Tierra del Fuego.

South America has become a training ground for German agents....
The whole of South America is one big radio station. From there, the messages are sent via secret transmitters with directional beams to the spy centers in Cologne, Brussels and Hamburg.
the Nazis ....

We should set up a Special Intelligence Service -SIS - which would be deployed very quickly in most of the affected
South American countries must begin its work .....
This mainly involves the prevention of German activities in Argentina, Brazil, Uruguay, Ecuador, Colombia and Chile..... Not to forget Mexico, this country

teeming with German agents .....
In this context, it is also interesting to know that huge sums of money are being transferred from Germany to Argentina and that the country's key industries and large agricultural enterprises have already begun to be taken over. .....

The first German companies in Buenos Aires, huge farms in Tucuman, Formosa, Cordoba and Cordier, as well as those in the difficult-to-access Gran Chaco, in the Parana Mission and in San Carlso de Bariloche were bought up by Germans.
The same thing is happening in Brazil, Chile, Colombia and Paraguay."
S. 7-11 (31)

It is further reported that throughout South America, in the pre-war and war years, a number of German-run banks were founded and industrial plants were built and successfully run. For the German leadership, South America was something like the nucleus of a single large German colony, rich in people as well as raw materials.

Machine Translated by Google

materials. Underground movements were created to maintain control over the most important raw materials.

S. 15-18 (31)

"During the five years from 1933 to 1938, large German companies and banks channeled a total of 300 million pesos to Argentina and invested them there. By 1945, it should be noted that, according to Silvano Santander, a member of the Argentine parliament (later ambassador to Mexico), 3 trillion pesos in total investments had been made by Germany in Argentina."

S. 19 (31)

From May 22, 1944, the German Major General Faupel began to work on the establishment of an air bridge that would lead directly from Madrid to Buenos Aires:

> *"This time, however, it was no longer about platinum from Colombia, but about gold, jewelry and works of art of all kinds that were to be transported from Germany to Argentina.*
> *This airlift to Buenos Aires went into action and continued until the end of 1944.*
> *From this point on, people who emigrated from Germany were brought to Schleswig-Holstein and led by guides across the green border to Denmark.*
>
> *From there we flew to Argentina in Danish planes.*
> *Colonel Juan Peron (the then German-friendly Argentine President), ...sent a number of aircraft*
> *to Denmark, which then flew on the usual route via Madrid and the Azores to South America.*
> *Scientists and technicians, industrial patents and other valuable cargo were transported along this route. However, this northern route was only a weak imitation of the southern route..."*

S. 252 (31)

We already reported on the southern route, also called the Roman Way, in the first part of this blue series of publications. At the beginning of 1945, Peron made about 15,000 blank passports available to the German Reich government via the Copenhagen embassy, of which about 10,000 are said to have been used.

> *"The signal and radio technology experts and submarine specialists who had already been sent to South America in the summer of 1944 installed an artificial island off the Patagonian coast (the southern part of South America) as a point of approach for German submarines, on which a light buoy was attached.*
>
> *which could be started from the shore station. ....*

Machine Translated by Google

Two German submarines were initially sent to
South America" (this refers to the boats U 530 and U 977, which we have already reported on).
"Between the arrival dates of these two boats, two other submarines appeared, whose numbers are not mentioned in all documents
were obscured, on 29 July 1945 off the coast of Patagonia. The light buoy was put into operation,
and the first boat came within a few hundred meters of the coast."

To better understand these South American events of the time
To be able to think about it, it is appropriate to read this book!
Especially since the many individual processes and reports in a large
must be seen in a context that did not end in 1945, but rather began.

"From the end of January 1945, more and more people from Germany began to appear in Colombia. Some SS officers were among them.....

Under the increasing pressure of his neighbours,
and especially America, Argentina also had to declare war on Germany on March 27, 1945."

But Argentina remained pro-German under the Peron era, and
temporarily even afterwards:

"When the SIS then set about confiscating the German companies in Argentina (1945), it had to realise that they had all been given Argentinean ownership and could therefore not be confiscated. Although attempts were made to

prove that this is nothing other than a clever German
manipulation. The Argentine authorities responded with a shrug of the shoulders. For them, the ownership situation was clear."

S. 253-254 (31)

The major Milan daily newspaper *'Corriere dell Sera'* reports in
February 1984 in the usual hate-filled manner, about German
Restricted areas in South America:

"... *Immediately after the end of the Second World War, small groups of Germans settled in many of these countries.*
refugees in completely isolated areas,
often near the borders. They built many sheds that served as housing and storage

Machine Translated by Google

and began to cultivate the land. In a short time
the number of farmers and agricultural activity increased
increased. First a village was created and then a
Town with workshops and some industries. Officially it was a large 'Estancia', ie an agricultural
Company to which - since it was private property - no one had access.

In .....there are at least six, in.....four and
twelve (meaning these restricted areas) on the border between
..... and .....
In the province..... in a mountainous area that
to the border with ....., the Nazis have an 'Estan
cia' of 30,000 hectares, and across the border in..... -
in the region of El.....- there is the 'colony' .....; also
This belongs to former German officers. This side and
across the border, in ..... and.....230 km
Roads, 70 bridges, 200 canals and 230,000 square meters of houses and sheds built These two estancias have a runway, two twin-engine airplanes, a radio relay system..... "

These six, four and twelve - a total of 22 -
German areas, shielded from the outside world, are distributed across various South American states, whose names are given above
were replaced by points. The latter area, which is
stretches into two countries on both sides of the state border, covers an area of 30,000 hectares in one state alone. The bridges, canals, kilometers of roads and square meters of built-up area mentioned, however, refer to the entire area on this side

and beyond the border, a border that is not a border for the restricted area as such. The German-speaking press has also reported several times over the last 20 years about this and other German special areas, *'estanzias'* and *'colonies'.* At least some of them are states within a state, are exempt from taxes and customs duties and are not subject to the police powers of the respective country.

An area that originally belonged to a German industrial family, covers 800,000 acres or 200,000 hectares, and was considered
formerly the largest private property in South America. It is located in such a remote area in the north of Argentina and is
surrounded by dense, impenetrable jungle, making it almost impassable

Machine Translated by Google

It is said that at that time, in the course of a consideration in
passed into the possession of forces loyal to the Reich and are managed as a joint-stock company. Pages 196/197 (14)

According to R. Charroux (who is always intent on confusion, and in his
Books obviously tend to distort the overall context) there is a UFO base in the Mapimi Desert in Mexico, 40-50 km northeast of the village of Ceballos in the Mexican border triangle CHIHUAHUA-COAHUILA-DURANGO.

Reddish fireballs are seen, the surrounding villages
report strange light phenomena constantly, even almost daily, animals react abnormally, irritated and nervously, even radios remain silent in the area. The state of Mexico rejected the leasing of the area by the USA - which has repeatedly shown a strong interest in this region - as well as the construction of an observation station in Ceballo, which was planned by Wernher von Braun and the American NASA on March 27, 1970; in order to better investigate the events in the *'Sierra de Silencio' = mountain region of silence, 40-50 km away, a desert region declared a 'zone of silence' by the USA .* In April 1970, scientists, engineers

and locals were assembled into an expedition and sent to the area just 250 km south of the US border. Three months later the following happened:

> "6. On *Saturday, July 11, 1970, at 3:15 a.m.,*
> *a North American rocket of the type 'Athena' over the center of this region, in which we* have been making observations since April 7966. *"*

The Mexican press is said to have reported extensively on these events there: The *'Athena' ,* which the Americans claimed was *a 'test rocket',* was launched in the US state of UTAH and was supposed to
supposedly landed in the US missile test site *'White Sands' ,* but in reality it shot 1,200 km beyond that and landed in what the Americans later declared 'Top Secret' (highest

Secrecy) declared Mexican desert area The American.
The information is already exposed as misleading because the rocket
a highly radioactive cobalt capsule, and with which one could
certainly not the White Sands test site in the US state
'NEW MEXICO' . Thus, the intention to contaminate the
'Zone of Silence' to cause radioactive damage, obviously. The 'se-

Machine Translated by Google

The 'gene-rich' cargo must have missed the core area. Only on 2
The remains of the rocket were found in August and the USA had to remove them along with 200,000 tons of - presumably contaminated - soil. Whether the rocket was caused by foreign
It was not clear from the somewhat inaccurate report whether the ominous area was a UFO base or just a flying saucer experimental and test area.

men; perhaps not even made known to the public
the. Page 190-196 (32)

From a letter to the editor sent in from Mexico, in (9) , No. 285,4/1984, I learn that a Professor Santiago Garcia, from the city of Torreon,
Mexico, published a book about the
strange events in the Mapimi Desert under the title *"The Secrets of the Zone of Silence"* It is still
reports that NASA has been closely monitoring this area since 1969
that stones have fallen from the sky several times which are amazingly magnetic and have been studied by NASA.

In the 1980s, the West German magazine..... No. 7,
pp. 9-11 and No. 8, p. 12/13 in detail about a German submarine base from the days of World War II, about which even
After 1945, with the help of the *'ODESSA'* organization , comrades were still being transported to South America. This happened
on a group of islands in the Atlantic, which was once part of a World War II
belonged to a neutral state. In order not to undermine this neutrality
In the war years, Germany acquired about the
half of the island is privately owned by the family of a German general. Now
They began to build a secret submarine base there, in
where repairs could also be carried out. The
Former volcanic activity had created huge air bubbles in the island's subsoil. These natural domes - which are usually only
By exploiting the fact that the German construction crews were only able to reach the submarine ports by sea, they built a secret submarine port
In 6 m and more water depth there was a large opening in the volcanic rock, here the submarines could enter the base under the
island, where they will see the White Villa of the
General's point of reference. From the island, the base personnel had three access points blasted into the rock, from
Two of which were closed again by explosions at the end of the war

Machine Translated by Google

Only the exit under the villa was renovated for the post-war period
The report states:

> *"The purpose of this secret base must* have been *to create a completely independent base that could also be used in*
> *managed and run with complete autonomy.....*
> *But one thing is certain: any autonomous bases had to be financially independent of the Reich.*
> *At least as certain was the presence of a sufficiently well-stocked cash box. There is no doubt that this must have been gold. In such cases, gold was a means of payment that was superior to all other means of payment. According to fairly similar statements, there were supposed to have been 7 tons of gold. The base was therefore ready for action - for whatever secret operations."*

In 1974, two Spanish reporters and an Austrian, with a leased yacht equipped with diving equipment and oxygen bottles, tried to find the base and, above all, the underwater entrance based on rumors. Posing as tourists, they had previously carried out very careful but targeted research among the local island population, which finally enabled them to reach the boat bunker through the submarine entrance hole with their diving equipment on.

They could hardly believe their eyes when they found not only two huge lathes, but also two sparkling clean, intact and ready-to-go German submarines, which on the outside were of the type VII C (perhaps internally brought up to the standard of the *'New Submarine Construction Program' ,* whereby they could no longer be located with radar and other conventional methods; perhaps also no longer sunk with conventional depth charges, like the boats *of 'unknown nationality' that have been repeatedly sighted, particularly off the Scandinavian coast in recent decades.* See HUGIN - SONDER -

STUDY by O. Bergmann. Inserted by the author. These two boats were now lying there in the secret underground boat harbor - and this in 1974! - and the foreign snoopers managed to get into one of the boats. They found documents, the logbook and detailed nautical charts of the coastal area of South America, with six places marked in a circle and the letter T (secret moorings?). After they had also noted the numbers of the boats, they decided the next day to

Machine Translated by Google

They tried to break in again the next day to get the documents and records as evidence. But that was not to happen. When they returned to their yacht, they compared the boat numbers with the known U-boat lists they had with them, which showed the whereabouts of the German U-boats.

Boats, sinking dates, handover to the Allies, etc. are recorded. The surprise was once again great, because the German submarines found there are officially considered sunk!

A fire suddenly broke out on the yacht, at the mooring chosen for the night, followed by an explosion. Only one of the ominous *'tourists'* survived. The magazine carried out further research, which partially confirmed the accuracy of these statements, and was able to find out further details. For example, in mid-May 1948, another transport with 12 Germans is said to have arrived at the White Villa. Eyewitnesses claim to have recognised Dr. Josef Mengele and even Martin Bormann among them. *'Charlie', who* has since died and was formerly part of the base crew, reported, among other things, that they originally had three boats belonging to the base itself, one of which was sunk near Florida (before 1945), and that they then reported the other two as sunk before the end of the war. That was the most important part of the two-part magazine series.

When I subsequently asked a former German submarine commander (Corvette Captain), who had been deployed in the Atlantic for almost the entire war years, about an underground submarine base on some Atlantic island, he denied it without hesitation: it never existed.

Now, by chance, I know something almost identical from a man from Hamburg who did not know this magazine article (!), but who went on holiday to this very Atlantic island (which I do not want to name for now) a few years ago. He not only knows this inaccessible southern part of the island, but also saw the isolated White Villa there with his own eyes, and called it

also the same name of the owner (General.....) and reported

nor from the rumors among the island's population of an underground German submarine base still existing there from the days of WWII

At first glance, one is inclined to reject the whole thing outright as a hoax, as stupid talk. But when placed in the overall context presented here, a more or less significant core content cannot be completely dismissed.

The more individual parts

Machine Translated by Google

of a puzzle game have already been put together, the clearer the picture to be created becomes.

In May 1983, reports appeared in the press that in the area Florida/Bahama/Caribbean a German, possibly *'escape submarine'* was found by a salvage ship (see appendix). The *'Neue Revue'* published a two-page report on this in issue no. 19
from 7.5.1983: *"The Nazis' escape submarine",* and interviewed the American salvage contractor Roger Miklos, who is said to have been on the Search for a Spanish treasure ship, now discovered by a German submarine:

> *"I asked around in Hamburg and Kiel for two months. It was indescribably difficult. At first nobody wanted to tell the truth, but then I found out a lot."*
>
> *Mysterious informants told the man from Florida*
> *Hermann Göring had planned in advance for the event that*
> *Germany loses the war Documents, capital and, above all, prominent Nazis were to be able to escape to South America. For this purpose, special submarines were*
>
> *constructed by those..."*

Miklos does not give any precise information about the location of his find, only saying that it was south of the Bahamas, on the Molasses Reef off the Turks and Caicos Islands. He had already conducted research there in 1981:

> *"At that time, the entrepreneur from Florida found out*
> *that the British secret service was shadowing two strange men in 1942. Two men who lived on the island on whose coast the*
> *German submarine today is located quarters scouted, the*
> *Ports monitored and from time to time 'Probably with*
> *disappeared from some ship' ".*

Between 1942 and 1943, 9 German submarines were lost in the Caribbean
Among these are the ones mentioned *by 'Charit'*
It is questionable whether the 9 have really all sunk, if one
If you believe Charlie's statements that the other two
also simply reported as sunk Then the crews would also have been deleted from the German naval lists, and
From then on they may have belonged to the *'Last Battalion'.*

It is clearly wrong to say in post-war press reports or in

Machine Translated by Google

Navy and submarine books claim, or only indirectly convey the impression: The number of German boats built and their whereabouts are known in detail, all sinking dates and the handover dates of the boats not sunk to the Allies are available in detail! In connection with the withdrawal, even more is unknown than one can generally imagine. Following the 30-page table: *"Whereabouts of the German submarines"* we also find two noteworthy pieces of information from Franz Kurowski: *"For the boats with numbers U 2111 to 2113, U 2252 to 2295, only the acceptance dates are known, all of which are between July and August 1944."*
Page 458 (33)

Nothing is known about the whereabouts of these 47 boats. Other publications do not even know about these boats. They cannot be found in the Allies' sinking lists or information about captured ships!

NASA physicist Dr. Jonathan Wright is head of a special priority UFO research department of the American space agency NASA. He was previously a member of the UFO study that was conducted by the University of Colorado on behalf of the US Air Force.

In December 1970, he and his team were ordered to the Bahamas because NASA was constantly being visited by UFOs coming from this area. UFOs were swarming in the sky at Cape Kennedy/Florida, later renamed Cape Canaveral, during the American rocket launches. Wright *"In the control center at Cape Kennedy, we kept receiving strange electronic signals at the launch times.*

Our instruments indicated that they came from this area."
After completing his investigations, he told the press: *"There is no doubt about it, we have clear evidence that*
UFOs regularly land on a tiny island about 50 miles off Grand Cayman"

Strange things seem to be happening all over the southern border/coast of the USA, if you think about it from the Mapimi Desert in Mexico, across the Caribbean to Florida and the infamous Bermuda Triangle in front of it. Dr. Wright, like many others, also mentions the strange events in the Bermuda Triangle and also in the Caribbean, where more than 120 ships and aircraft have inexplicably sunk, mostly without leaving any trace.

Machine Translated by Google

disappeared in connection with the UFOs. In the
long report *"UFO Base off the Coast of Florida"* © No. 177/May 1971, describes in detail the research of the NASA team
reported I also refer to the various books that deal with the subject of UFOs and the Bermuda Triangle, such as: (44) (45) (46) , especially No. 44. The diversionary attempts to explain the origin of UFOs that are sometimes made therein can be safely ignored.

According to a *'pilot report'* from Norddeutscher Rundfunk,
Hamburg broadcast, and in the UN © No. 249, p. 8/9, Feb.
As reported in 1978, 4 Soviet and 5 American research ships were currently working together and were busy for several months investigating the strange events in the Bermuda Triangle. The broadcast states:

"For one thing, Soviet and American research ships are currently in the Bermuda Triangle to clarify the reasons for this
could be that year after year aircraft, large freighters
and sailing yachts disappear without a trace. Captains and airplane
pilots have always feared this area because compasses go crazy, sudden fog rolls in and heavy turbulence occurs on the water.

particularly strong magnetic field or, as the UFO researchers
suspect a landing place for extraterrestrial aircraft - and that is the 2nd oddity"

From the end of the 1950s and the beginning of the 1960s, reports appeared that the flying discs not only came from the water of the oceans, but also from the air.

Seas, lakes and rivers, or vice versa when diving
observed, but often in the same places
Entering or emerging. This increasingly raises the suspicions of
'UFO underwater bases' . Since the Third Power
is known to be able to use the flying discs to create their own
to create a gravitational field with which they can move within the Earth's gravitational field can operate independently, why should it be considered a logical
Further development would not have been possible, even under water

Machine Translated by Google

To create gravitational fields - to build domes on the seabed - and to push back and repel the water masses above them by means of artificially created gravitational fields?

(See GW II, p. 79)

From a very long report by John A Keel in the UN (9)
No. 192, August 1972: *"Underwater UFO bases alarm the USA",* in which submarine events are also mentioned, two summarizing quotes should be taken:

> *"Unidentified flying objects (for the readers of the series "SECRET WONDER WEAPONS" these are identified objects; inserted by the author) have been consistently seen by the crews of hundreds of ships across the Atlantic. In many well-documented cases, witnesses claimed that strange metallic disk- and cigar-shaped objects suddenly appeared out of the water, rose into the air, circled their ships and disappeared into the sky.*
>
> *In other cases they came down to the surface of the sea and disappeared under water. There are other baffling incidents of gigantic mysterious submarines, apparently of no known nation, which have successfully evaded all search operations by sea and air conducted by the navies of half a dozen states.*
>
> *All these reports have created the most widespread and persistent legend of the mystery of the flying discs, that the UFOs actually*
>
> *Waters in the Atlantic, Pacific or Arctic."....*
> *"In recent years, an epidemic of disappearing submarines has occurred all over the world. They do not appear to belong to the Soviet Union or the United States. Reliable, trained observers, such as pilots and ship captains, described these objects in shallow waters where no sensible submarine* would dare to operate , *and the fleets of New Zealand, Australia, Argentina and Venezuela armed themselves in the belief that they had caught the mysterious submarines within their territorial waters. However, the objects always managed* to *evade their pursuers.*
>
> *men.....*
> *In the last two years,* 6 *submarines from Israel, France, England and the USA disappeared without a trace. Three of them in*

Machine Translated by Google

Mediterranean Sea and no search, no matter how thorough, could determine her fate. Neither traces of oil nor debris were found."

The Icelandic whaler and the mysterious German submarine

The following report from the evening newspaper 'France-So/V, Paris, confirms the existence of surplus German submarines at the end of the war. Almost one and a half years later, on 25.9.1946, the paper informed its readers following *'ÄFF* cable report and striking headline across the entire newspaper width in astonishment:

"Almost a year and a half after the end of the war, a
A few days ago, a German submarine attacked an Icelandic whaler. It was a ship called "Juliana", which was sailing between the Malvinas Islands and the Antarctic zone and was attacked by a large tonnage submarine of the

German Navy, which had a red
flag with large black stripes around the edges.

The commander of the submarine approached the whaler in a rubber boat and, after boarding, asked Captain *Hekla in a tone that admitted no contradiction for some of the fresh provisions of the "Juliana".*

The captain of the whaler was forced to surrender to the German
sailor who spoke perfect English and the
He paid for the goods in dollars and also gave the crew a bonus of ten dollars each.

While the reloading operations were being carried out, the German officer Captain Hekla gave information about exact
Positions of whale banks where the crew of the "Juliana" was later able to harpoon two whales.

When Captain Hekla was asked in Santa Cruz if he
News from the British naval base in the Malvinas
he explained that he had come from Iceland to
to catch whales and not submarines."

The Paris evening newspaper *'France* So/V, which reported this news from Santa Cruz (Southern Argentina), commented on the strange Incident as follows *"This would confirm the rumors about the presence of traces of the German Navy in the*
waters of Tierra del Fuego and the unexplored areas of Antarctica confirm."

Machine Translated by Google

This report was widely rejected at the time and was
dismissed as a newspaper hoax. But today, forty years later, the
Message fits very well into the puzzle-like information
overall picture.

The hoisted naval flag with a black border, as a visible sign of mourning for the defeat suffered, also fits into the then
situation and, in my opinion, only underlines the credibility of the report. The incident occurred in Antarctic waters
south of the Falkland Islands. It therefore seems appropriate to take another look at the connections between Antarctica and New Swabia and possible
base, as explained in more detail in SECRET MIRACLE WEAPONS Part I

The South African daily newspaper *'The Star Johannesburg,* reported
on 24 November 1972 under the title: *"Aerial search for mysterious submarine",* about a submarine that had appeared near the north coast of Natal (South Africa north of Durban) and
photographed submarine, which according to the superstructure belongs to a German
Resembles WW11 submarine Even before the SAAF, the South African Air Force,
launched an air search with a *'Shackleton' ,* the submarine had dived away and was never seen again.

Could all this be made up? If so, why always in the context of the German Reich?

The well-known magazine *'Heim und Welt',* No. 12, ca. 1956/57 (the
Unfortunately, the exact year is missing, but I have the two-page original report), page
3-4, reports under the title *"Pirate submarine*
at work" about mysterious events in the South Seas, in the area of
Fiji Islands. The introduction states:

> *"Alarming news reaches us from the distant South Seas.*
> *....the police are working feverishly and all coastal stations*
> *and air bases are on alert What has happened? A series of strange incidents is making headlines,*
> *where mysterious and ghostly-looking*
> *Things happen."*

From the long report we would like to extract only a few key sentences that interest us:

Machine Translated by Google

"Some pirate gang, apparently with modern equipment and probably using a submarine, has been making the South Seas unsafe for some time. Only recently, the American press agency United Press reported from Suva, the capital of the Fiji Islands, that Shell tanker No. 40 had disappeared without a trace after leaving the port of Suva.....

The series of spooky incidents began in the autumn of 1955 with the yacht Joyita.....

The last radio message from the freighter *'Arakarimo'* was:

"Everything is fine on board. Today we spotted an unknown submarine, which went under again after a while. Could this be the key to the mysterious disappearance of both ships? Were foreign submarines causing trouble in New Zealand waters? And was the newspaper right when it spoke of mysterious warship maneuvers taking place behind the harmless backdrop of fishing flotillas?" ....

The Governor of Fiji made the following observation

"In the Kandaru Passage, about 35 nautical miles south of Viti Levu, the steamer Kowaiwar yesterday sighted a submarine of unknown nationality lying still in a surfaced state. Captain Williams of the Kowaiwar, a former war veteran, believes he has identified a Japanese or German submarine of an older design. Several Sunderland flying boats of the RAF (English Air Force), which began pursuing the mysterious boat shortly afterwards, returned without any results."

So much for the governor.

The following radio message came from another coastal ship in the area of the Tonga Islands: *"In the lagoon of an atoll off the Tonga Islands we sighted a warship weighing perhaps 1,000 tons, reminiscent of a corvette from the last war. The ship had neither a name nor position lights or other markings and did not answer our flag signals or our wireless calls."*

The *'Home and World'* report goes further

"Eleven years after the end of the war

Captain Williams believed he had spotted a 'German or Japanese submarine'. This would mean that eleven years after the end of the war, there must still be ships with their crews on the move, approaching the capitulation on their own initiative.

Machine Translated by Google

This sounds surprising, almost improbable, but is now considered entirely possible by the New Zealand and British authorities after the disappearance of three ships and repeated sightings of mysterious warships. It is known that a large number of submarines were overdue at the end of the war and later had to be put on the list of missing persons.....

Perhaps those who disappeared during the last war have already established their own colony, a state, on one or more islands, of which no one in the civilized world suspects anything."

I consider post-war German submarine piracy in the South Seas, as was speculated by the anti-German newspaper *'Heim und Welt'* , to be out of the question.
Just think of the description of the Icelandic whaler south of the Falkland Islands in 1946. The generally known soldierly, correct, Prussian, German attitude does not allow such a thing to happen.
to.

On the other hand, it cannot be ruled out that a small-scale spy war broke out at that time between ship units of a German South Sea base, which cannot be ruled out, and English, American and other groups of agents who, harmlessly disguised as yachts and fishing vessels, were on the heels of the Germans, searching for bases, observing them and with the aim of ultimately dismantling them.

In any case, something similar and much more is described in a book by Hanns Hart (pseudonym for Hannes Reiterlein) published in the 1950s, which has become very rare today, in a stirring novel style:

"Weapons for the German Atoll", from the Hanns Hart novel series. (35)
The popular view that novels are only for diversion and entertainment is perhaps often, but by no means always, correct. With quite a few novels, authors aim to depict things and events that they do not, or do not yet, consider appropriate to present in a factual form. It is difficult to determine what prompted H. Hart to take up his pen: entertainment, or information packaged as a novel. How the occupying state press censorship offices in the Federal Republic of Germany thought about it and dealt with the novel can be partially reconstructed in retrospect: Since it was no longer available in various libraries, I ordered the book 3 years ago via an interlibrary loan. I was notified that the book had arrived and wanted to pick it up. It arrived

Machine Translated by Google

from the central library in Frankfurt *"Please sign a document that you agree not to copy the book,"* said the young lady at the book checkout. *"Excuse me?",* as I thought I could take the book with me for 4 weeks as usual, I said: *"You won't be able to check whether I'm copying it, so what's the point?" "I forgot to tell you that you can't take it with you either, you can only read it in the reading room and you're not allowed to copy it on the coin-operated copiers there." "Excuse me?"* I was a little speechless. I hadn't wanted a rare book from the 16th or 17th century, which of course has to be guarded, but a novel that was only 30 years old. I looked at the book. It had a stamp from the original owner, a private lending library; a second one: *"Text harmful to young people; prohibited for young people under 18."* Very interesting, I thought to myself, when otherwise almost every porno book and character-destroying outpouring is considered just right for our youth. Later the novel must have been banned completely, because how else would the Frankfurt Central Office have come into possession of this private book collection? As we learned, Frankfurt must also receive a copy of the books that otherwise disappear from public libraries. The context presented in novel form is evidently withheld from the Germans because the occupying forces recognize it and take it seriously. Where would we be if the 'incorrigible', unreformed Germans found something that could give them hope? Here is a brief summary of the contents:

Since various states and their agents did not search intensively enough for a suspected German island base to the east, northeast of Australia, and were therefore unsuccessful, a group of Talmudic agents privately financed by Rockefeller, equipped with two modern speedboats, went on the hunt. They finally managed to get two Germans who were on duty outside *the 'German Atoll'* into their power. Tied up and loaded at gunpoint onto the two agents' speedboats, they were then forced to point the way to the German Atoll.

By the end of the war they had joined forces with submarines and German top Scientists set out and built their German Atoll on a remote, unknown South Sea island group. Research and weapons technology developments were advanced,

Machine Translated by Google

new projectiles were tested in the sky and naval operations were carried out to protect the surrounding sea area against enemies. This group of islands, which number in the tens of thousands, cannot be attacked with conventional weapons, it is said. There is talk of mysterious German flying objects, of their flights to the South Pole, of German *'self-magnetic satellites',* of atmospheric rotors, etc.

Long before this enemy surprise operation, so-called dummy bases had been set up in various surrounding sea areas using mirrors, radar screens and measuring beam traps, and it had been agreed that in the event of such a blackmailing capture, the troops would head for such a fake base. It was night, and the speedboats now approached one of these dummy structures on the instructions of the two prisoners. As soon as they approached the outer exclusion zone 1, the German atoll was automatically warned and was able to initiate relief measures. It was not long before an *'atmosphere rotor'* sank to the surface of the water, completely silently and under the cover of darkness, a little distance away from the speedboat that had remained behind with the hostages. German frogmen then boarded the speedboat unnoticed and in a surprise operation they freed their comrades. The atmosphere rotor rises again and follows the second speedboat that has rushed ahead. Covered by a magnetic field, the compasses fail, and now completely powerless and defenseless, this too is forced to give up. The novel ends as follows

"Twenty-seven days later, a notice went through several world newspapers:

'The rumors that surfaced three weeks ago in the area of the Fiji Islands about an armed action by the so-called German Atoll did not stand up to the investigations immediately initiated by the British, American and French search teams. Instead, it turned out that rival arms smuggling gangs were obviously spreading this mystification in order to disguise their shady dealings. The wreckage of a speedboat found by the Swedish steamer 'Kalmar-Sund' and the debris of a twin-engine private plane washed up on the beach at Waikai (which the two Germans used for a time in the novel, by the way; inserted by the author) - we reported on this in detail last week - seem to confirm the version of the gang fight. ..." Page 265 (48)

Machine Translated by Google

Thus, in conclusion - by downplaying the mysterious events - the world press has led the readers' thoughts into a completely different
Directed towards rival arms smuggling gangs. If
I remember correctly, published at that time by Hanns Hart,
50 Pfennig booklet in continuation, under the same title:
"Weapons for the German Atoll", even before the book form described here. Unfortunately, the connections could not be understood thirty years ago.
not as easy to classify as today; at least for me.

The story of U-859

Exactly on April 4, 1944, at 4:40 a.m., Lieutenant Commander Jan Jebsen set off with the German U-859 and an unusually
large, 67-man crew on an extraordinary journey,
which, after long cruises off Africa, Arabia and India, finally ended tragically and abruptly on September 23, 1944 on the other side of the globe. U-859 was sunk off Penang, in the Strait of Malacca, by the British U *'Trenachant .* Only a very few survived.

Almost 30 years later, one of the survivors spoke on his deathbed about the secret cargo he was carrying: 33 tons of mercury filled into glass bottles and sealed in containers. After a long search, the boat was located and the mercury treasure was recovered.

Why these wanderings in the first place? Was the unloading of the goods to be secured planned several times at other locations? Was it
perhaps on the way to the *'German Atoll'* in the South Seas?

About a very probable German flying disc base in the Antarctic, in the German New Swabia area
was sufficiently reported in the first part of this series

Machine Translated by Google

THE DEPOSIT MANEUVER

The previously described connections regarding the German restricted areas spread around the world have already brought us right into the heart of the issue; because these areas are inconceivable without a prior deportation.

We must not imagine that the most secret, most ominous and, in terms of planning, probably most ingenious of all military operations in world history took place over a period of just a few months before and a few weeks after the Wehrmacht's capitulation (the capitulation of the Wehrmacht, not the Reich. Hence the ceasefire without a peace treaty that has continued to this day, and above all the military occupation of East, Central and West Germany, as well as the death border with barbed wire and automatic gun systems right through the heart of Germany to this day. Thus, for Germany, the Second World War is not over, everything is still open). The construction of bases around the world, especially in the Antarctic, had been going on for several years during the war and, as the war situation worsened, turned into a withdrawal maneuver. It increased considerably at the end of 1944 and the beginning of 1945, especially in terms of material and asset transfers, and continued after the enemy occupation through the organized flight of selected and fit people up until the 1950s. Even after that, disguised as 'emigration and *'vacation trips'* with no return, many things were possible.

Before Germany's enemies gradually became aware of the extent of the deposition in the post-war years, everything had happened. What was left to them was the grandiose campaign of lies and slander, fueled by hatred and now staged, with the aim of *"re-educating the German people".* The success was resounding: tens of millions, even 80-90% of us, were now made democrats and communists, and were mostly against ourselves, against our own people, fatherland, homeland (abolished terms), against our own culture, against our own thousands of years of history, as well as against our own past. In other words, we were made rootless, compliant tools of international powers in the East and West, and thus subject to their exploitation.

Not only the Allies operated globally in the war that was forced upon us (!), but also the Axis powers, and above all Germany. Apart from the English island and neutral Spain, almost all of Europe up to just before Moscow was temporarily under our control, just as today it is under the control of the USA and the

Machine Translated by Google

USSR. German troops were in North Africa and considerable activities were being developed in South America, as already mentioned. German submarines were deployed in all the world's oceans, especially in the Atlantic. Units and special troops were also deployed in Greenland (see report in the appendix), in the far north of Canada and in the Arctic regions, and German naval units were making the Antarctic waters unsafe for the Allies.

And some of these special measures around the world had virtually nothing to do with normal war events. They took place on a side track of the war and were planned by the top leadership, usually only by the Führer himself, and the overall context was therefore only known to them. Not even the special staffs entrusted with carrying them out could have guessed what overall picture their individual task (let's say: preparing a German atoll in the South Seas) would one day fit into, because the principle applied from top to bottom: everyone is only allowed to know as much as is absolutely necessary for their task. Because it was not the enemy agents themselves who were the worst, but the many German traitor circles who often belonged to international secret organizations (Freemasonry, etc.) and were therefore useful to the enemy.

I have therefore referred to the global operations during the war years up to 1945 in order to express that the withdrawal in the last months of the war and afterwards was only partially necessary. Because the special troops, technical units, members of the *Brandenburg Division* (whose operations spanned the entire globe), the globally branched German agent network, members of the diplomatic corps, units of the Africa Corps, which had already been deployed worldwide during the war years, as we have already seen, only a portion of them returned in 1945 to the chaos of the occupied and bombed homeland, where little better could be expected for them than persecution, slander, starvation camps, torture and murder. In the course of the large-scale withdrawal, it was therefore obvious to bring these diverse groups together in an organized manner in the restricted areas.

A significant percentage of the *'Last Battalion'* is likely to be recruited from these. The worldwide network was in place, contacts were made, land could be bought and reconstruction work could begin. The German actions outside of Europe were therefore also suitable precursors for the disengagement maneuver itself 94

Machine Translated by Google

Because the topic of deposition has already been dealt with in more than twelve pages in the first part of this series, only a few notes and additions will be made here:

SS Standartenführer Walter Rauff, who died last year in Chile, was head of the SD (security service) in northern Italy during the war years. Using these connections and in collaboration with Bishop Dr. Alois Hudal of Rome, who was a sympathizer for Reich Germany, he organized an escape and deportation route in 1945. This so-called *'Roman* Route' had remote and hidden initial reception points throughout the Alpine region. From there, the refugees were sent on stage via Milan, where Rauff resided and organized, to Rome, where Hudal offered shelter in monasteries. Equipped by Rome with money, shipping papers and new passports, a select group were allowed to travel to South America via Tangier. A small group was only given the opportunity to be guided as far as Africa and the Arab countries, where they were then left to their own devices. Walter Rauff and his family also took this route - which existed until the 1950s and was later used less and less - to South America in October 1949 and settled in the southernmost city in the world, Punta Arenas. This escape route, which was already described in Part I, is described in great detail in W. Brokdorf: *"Escape from Nuremberg; Plans and organization of the escape routes of the NS celebrities in the 'Roman Way'* " (53).

I personally know an SS man who, although he had already arrived in Milan on this route, turned back because he said to himself, what am I supposed to do in South America? Nobody could be told what he might be needed for there; he had to find out for himself.

How difficult it was to recruit people again is also shown in my opinion by Dr. B. Frank (commander, Obersalzberg), who obviously did not know much about it when he was very cautiously approached on April 24, 1945 by the head of the SD, SS-Obergruppenführer Dr. Ernst Kaltenbrunner: *"...I (Frank) did not know him (Kaltenbrunner) until then - (he) seemed confident. However, he seemed opaque to me, so I held back a lot, spoke of a new 'fighting period' having begun and that he wanted to see the Führer as soon as possible. But then he let it slip what had actually brought him to me. He wanted to know what had happened on the 'mountain' in the last 24 hours and what I intended to do next."* Page 98

Machine Translated by Google

Dr. Kaltenbrunner was then - perhaps after further recruitment attempts (?) and meanwhile himself on the Roman Way (?) - on 12 May 1945 in Austria, above Altaussee (near Top litzsee) in the Wildenseehütte, and later in Nuremberg before the tribunal of the *'victors' ....*

According to various estimates, between 50,000 and 250,000 refugees have reached the Roman Way - also called *the 'Vatican Aid Line'* and *'Bishop Hudal's Travel Agency'* by the Jewish side . been conducted.

From Bremen there was a deportation route initially called BC route and later ABC (Argentina-Bremen-Chile).

Already in the last chapter it became clear that until the end of 1944 there was an airlift from Madrid to Buenos Aires, which was then connected by Danish airlift. Airplanes from Denmark. At the end of 1944
The Allies had reconquered France, which made the supply service to Spain increasingly difficult. This supply service was probably largely provided by the secret squadron
KG-200. The 2,000 German soldiers who were then ordered to the Ugha Mongulala tribe used a submarine route from Marseille (southern France) to the Amazon. Later, Argentina sent planes to Denmark, which then transported people and material to South America via Madrid and the Azores. The initial platinum route with submarines from Buenos Aires to Cadiz, in southern Spain west of Gibraltar, was later

in the opposite direction only used as an escape route This
secret and completely detached from the war situation,
would probably only have been known to specialized units
and always only in certain areas, but not to the general participants in war,
neither the soldier nor the general. Therefore, it is
It is also obvious that the submarine captain I interviewed
was deployed in the Atlantic throughout the war- nothing about
the underground Atlantic island base for submarines
who could only attack the submarine belonging to the detachment
Men were available on their commute from eg
Marseille, Cadiz, Kristiansand, Tangier towards the South Atlantic and back.

In a television broadcast entitled *"Exile of the Incorrigible"* on 16 February 1983, 3rd programme, 21:45 the following information was given:

Machine Translated by Google

Nazi organizations bought 750 farms in South America
for their Nazi members.
In 1944, the then Argentine President presented the
7,500 passports are available to Germans.
They are working in South America to return to power in Germany.

Israeli intelligence agent Dr. M. Bar-Zohar reported in the

Chapter *'The impregnable fortress',* which of course also contains the Dönitz quote about the impregnable fortress that is somewhere on the
world for the Führer, from a secret conference of German industrialists on August 10, 1944 in the Maison Rouge Hotel in Strasbourg. The American secret service was given a stenographic conference report - perhaps by

Treason - fell into the hands of the Reich. At this conference, industrialists loyal to the Reich decided that in the event of defeat in the war they would continue to work underground for the liberation of Germany, or rather a return to power. He writes verbatim:

> *"In March 1945, a detailed report was submitted to the State Department in Washington, which read:*
> *'The Nazi regime had precise plans for the pursuit of* its *doctrine and rule after the war, Some of these plans*
> *have already taken effect"* S. 101 (48)

On page 102 he writes among other things:

> *"German attempts to gain a share in the development of technical progress in control and development*
> *are reflected in the phenomenal increase in German patents registered abroad during the last two years. This registration reached its peak in 1944. German capital and plans for the construction of ultra-modern technical schools and experimental laboratories were offered at reasonable prices, so that the Germans will be able to build and improve new weapons.'*

He also reports that American specialists discovered at the end of the war that 750 German companies in neutral countries
bought and founded. In Switzerland 274, Portugal
258, Spain 112, Argentina 89, Türkiye 35, and a further number
in South America The Hungarian Jew, Ladislas Farago, who lived in the
Post-war period 10

Machine Translated by Google

years for the American naval intelligence service to follow the German Reich, reports on his more
or less precise research in his book: *"Aftermath.
Martin Bormann and the Fouth Reich",* as well as in the edition published one year later by Hoffmann and Campe, Hamburg: *"Schein-tod; Martin Bormann und andere NS-Großen in Süden".* The German edition, which also contains a foreword by the Frankfurt investigating judge Horst von Glasenapp, was published in 1975, shortly after

Published by Hoffmann and Campe, it was confiscated and subsequently pulped, according to a publishing employee, despite the fact that the anti-German

Omissions were not lacking. It can therefore be assumed that the occupying Germans are not yet to be awakened from their deep sleep. So I do not want to use any quotations here.

Farago reports on the deposition, on German restricted areas in
South America, as well as the secret military operation established between 1943 and 1945. German Reich assets, which were partly supported by donations from German Industrialist, and about the relocation of the same
to South America He gives precise information about assets, which, for example, - as was discovered in later years - were held in accounts
the then actress Maria Eva Duarte Ibuguren, the later
wife of Argentine President Juan Peron. He reports that until June 1944, heavily guarded German trucks
and later under the code name *"Operation Tierra del Fuego"* transported money, art and other treasures by air to southern Spanish ports, where they were then picked up by the submarines waiting near Cadiz and transported south of Buenos Aires, near San Clemente

del Tuyu, in Samborombön Bay. And much more. (34)

On May 8, 1945, the day of the surrender of the German Wehrmacht, Grand Admiral Karl Dönitz announced, among other things, ambiguously:

> *"The unity of state and party no longer exists. The party has left the scene of her reality. (?) With the Be occupiers of Germany, the power lies with the occupying power."*
>
> Ruhr-Nachrichten, 8 May 1980

The death of Adolf Hitler in Berlin in 1945 – never believed by the Allies, neither by Stalin nor by General Eisenhower, according to the

Machine Translated by Google

Press reports - officially announced by the Reich government at the time, persistently represented by the *'witnesses'* as well as by the *'National Press'* in occupied Germany to this day, and also become an integral part of worldwide opinion, could nevertheless not be proven in 40 years.

The various reports about escape and deportation (see a small part of them in the appendix) are as contradictory as the information about death, suicide and subsequent cremation.
This too cannot be proven (always taking into account the ongoing situation and without new findings). There is no way to gain clarity in the normal way, neither on one question nor on the other, neither on the death in Berlin, nor on the deposition and escape, no matter how many books, files or newspaper reports on the subject are consulted.

It seems that everything was meant to be this way and not any other way. If we reduce the question to a problem of trust between leader and followers, the following statements need to be seriously considered and could help to clarify the situation:

In the Führer's speech on the 12th anniversary of the seizure of power, on 30 January 1945, the final sentence was:

> "However difficult the crisis may be at the moment, it will be mastered **in the end** *through our unwavering will, our willingness to make sacrifices and our abilities .* We will also overcome this hardship. In this battle, it will not be Inner Asia that will win, but Europe - and at the head of it will be the nation that has represented Europe as the dominant power against the East for one and a half thousand years and will continue to do so in the future:
>
> Our Greater German Empire, the German nation!"

from: *Völkischer Beobachter; Combat paper of the National Socialist movement in Greater Germany",* Berlin edition of 1 February 1945, p. 1

In his speech of 24 February 1945 on the occasion of the 25th anniversary of the announcement of the party programme, Adolf Hitler ended with the two sentences:

> *"My party comrades, 25 years ago I announced the victory of the movement! Today I prophesy - as always -*

Machine Translated by Google

of faith *in our people* - **in the end** the victory of the German Reich!"

Headquarters, February 24, 1945

from: *'Völkischer Beobachter',* Berlin edition, 27 February 1945, p. 2

What is striking is the formulation *'at the end' used in both speeches, which is temporally imprecise and actually takes a longer period of time into account.*

But this unbroken confidence is not only expressed in the last two speeches to the party and state, but also in the inner circle. Through Adolf Hitler's architect, Professor Hermann Giesler, we learn in his book *"Another Hitler"* how the Führer told Dr.

Kaltenbrunner said:

"My dear Kaltenbrunner, can you imagine that I could speak like this about my plans for the future if I were not deeply convinced that we will really win this war **in the end ?"**

In the book's chapter: *'We will win the war',* this confidence, which dispels all concerns, is expressed several times:

"It was because he (Adolf Hitler) was so convinced, because he believed: We will win the war. I could not escape his conviction and willpower.

....

I cannot imagine that his high intelligence, his ever-alert mind, would not have seen and assessed the military situation just as clearly. And I am convinced that the sober and realistic General Jodl did not need to tell him in the late autumn of 1944 that the military catastrophe was approaching inexorably day by day. Adolf Hitler certainly saw the situation precisely, better and more clearly perhaps than anyone else, because he was able to take in the whole spectrum, covering all areas from raw materials to weapons, from the fighting power of the soldiers to strategic planning. I am also convinced that if it had only been about him, he *would not have hesitated for a single day. What stopped him? Relentless rigidity? No - rather, the 'unconditional surrender'.*

This *cold formula of destruction could only be answered by him with unconditional resistance. Because this*

Machine Translated by Google

'Unconditional Surrender' was not aimed at or limited to the elimination of Hitler and the National Socialists, it was not just about the 'system', not just about the Wehrmacht and its officers - it *was about the German nation, about all of Germany....*
- he was a deeply religious person! His path led him through a turning point in history, and he was convinced that it was his task to follow this path, that Providence had chosen him to do so."

Page 474-477(52)

Let us return to the question we raised earlier about the relationship: F ü hrer / G efolgschaft How outsiders and enemies judge this is completely irrelevant, as it only concerns the German people and those who have remained loyal to this day:

Taking into account the connections presented and made clear in this document, the question arises: did the leader of the Greater German Reich, Adolf Hitler, want to mislead his inner circle of followers, the loyal supporters of the movement and the entire people through deliberate deception at a time when the greatest need was beginning? Or did the people and their followers lack the necessary insight in the chaos of the beginning collapse, which would have been understandable, or even
more so the necessary trust in the leadership to really take seriously the confidence in victory shown up to the very end?

Apparently there was no understanding that extraordinary situations also require extraordinary measures such as: deposing and misleading the enemy by feigning *'suicide in the Führerbunker'.*

The next question, which is even less clear to answer, immediately arises: And what is today, 40 years later? The former Chilean ambassador Miguel Serrano gave the following answer to the question in an interview in the major South American daily newspaper *'EL PAIS'* on Saturday 19 May 1984:

"They claim that Hitler is alive If this is true he would not now a frail old man ?
- If German scientists were able to create weapons such as flying discs, why shouldn't they work on genetic experiments? This removes the doubt about its existence. The flying disc factory was in Prague and, although it is not known whether it was built by the

Machine Translated by Google

Russians or Americans, there is great doubt that this ever happened, otherwise none of these countries would spend millions of dollars to reach the stratosphere using the crude system of jet rockets. The flying discs, since they exist, have a propulsion system based on another science, that of anti-gravity."

As early as 9 February 1942, Adolf Hitler stated

"I am, I say it quite openly, a fool of technology. The one who always has the upper hand is the one who, with astonishing technical Page *Innovations are coming"* 275, (51)

But much earlier he had realized that
Worldviews such as Marxism, for example, can only be eradicated with the help of a weapon after they have grown out of their beginnings, if these weapons are simultaneously the carrier of a sparking thought or idea:

"Conceptions and ideas, as well as movements with a certain intellectual basis, whether this be true or false, can, from a certain point in their development, only be broken with means of power of a technical nature if these physical weapons are themselves at the same time the bearers of a new, igniting thought, idea or worldview." 'Mein Kampf, p. 186/187

What are these flying discs, after all, other than superior, ingenious instruments of power that break intellectual resistance and promise salvation in the chaos of the 20th century, certainly not only for occupied Germany.

Machine Translated by Google

EPILOGUE

The facts compiled here are in complete contrast to the published historical picture of WWII not only of the *'victors',* but also of the *'national press'* in the Federal Republic of Germany.
National press has spent 4 decades on the *'All over, all over'* -
Legend worked diligently In order to clarify this contradiction, one must ask the question, can it be possible in an occupied country
a press not controlled and directed by the occupier
give ?
In this situation, which is still ongoing today, we should also have an ear for the other side, which, although rarely and only audible to those who already have insight, reveals its deep
expresses concern about the global political situation
The Jewish writer Jacques Bergier, liberated from the Mauthausen camp by the Americans on May 5, 1945, was immediately
American agency that researched secret weapons in Germany,
as an agent and must have gained a very special overview. This makes the following two quotes particularly
Can give importance to:

> *"The years of National Socialism were one of the few*
> *Moments in the history of our culture in which, according to*
> *and visibly opened a door to something else And it is right*
> *strange that people act as if they had not seen anything*
> *and belongs to the usual chaos and noise of the*
> *warlike and political turmoil."* S. 308/309 (12)
>
> "..... *and that it was actually that 'other world' that ruled for several years with the help of National Socialism. It has not yet been defeated. And that is not what is frightening, but*
> *only our ignorance is frightening"* p. 305, (12)

Ignorance? About what? About material strength, striking power, manpower, bases?

The continuation of this blue series SECRET MIRACLE WEAPONS,
is expected to take place next year with the possible
Subtitle: *'German pioneers in space?'.* The film seeks answers to the following questions:
What is going on in space? What were the
for satellites that were already orbiting the Earth before the first Sputnik?
Why do the flying discs constantly observe the rocket launches and why do they accompany the Allied space vehicles?
Who was really first on the moon? And similar topics.

Machine Translated by Google

Do not believe that the German has lost his divine homeland

One day he will find himself awake on the morning of a tremendous sleep.

Friedrich Nietzsche, 1844-1900

Machine Translated by Google

Attachment

Machine Translated by Google

Reichweite 21000 km

Scheibenform

Paris, 7. Juni

„Die angeblich immer wieder gesichteten ‚Fliegenden Untertassen' könnten ferngelenkte Flugapparate deutscher Konstruktion nach Art der V-Waffen sein." Diese Theorie vertritt soeben die bekannte Pariser Abendzeitung „France Soir" in ihrer neuesten Ausgabe.

Das Blatt stützt sich in dem groß aufgemachten Artikel auf die Aussagen eines jetzt in Tel Aviv lebenden 40jährigen deutschen V-Waffen-Ingenieurs namens Dr. Richard Miethe, der wörtlich erklärt haben soll:

„Ich wage zu behaupten, daß fliegende Scheiben, falls sie am Himmel kreisen, in Deutschland konstruiert, nach meinen Weisungen fertiggestellt und wahrscheinlich in Serie von den Sowjets nachgebaut wurden."

Dr. Miethe soll ferner erklärt haben, daß eine Neukonstruktion der V-Waffe in Scheibenform mit einer Reichweite von 21 000 km und Radarsteuerung mit der Bezeichnung V 7 gegen Kriegsende fabrikationsreif gewesen sei. Man habe diese ferngelenkte Scheibe mit großem Erfolg über der Ostsee erprobt.

Hitler habe sich jedoch erst nach dem Rheinübergang der Pattonn-Armee dazu entschlossen, die V 7 in Serienfabrikation in den unterirdischen Fabriken Süddeutschlands bauen zu lassen.

Nach der Schilderung des Ingenieurs erbeuteten die Sowjets bei der Einnahme Breslaus mehrere Antriebsaggregate dieser Waffe. Außerdem hätten sie drei seiner besonders auf die V 7 spezialisierten Kollegen nach dem Industriezentrum jenseits des Urals gebracht.

Frankfurter Nachtausgabe,
7. Juni 1952; siehe
Geh. Wunderw. I, S. 94

DER SCHLESIER/
BRESLAUER NACHRICHTEN

Fragt die Breslauer!

Antriebs-Aggregate der „Fliegenden Untertassen" 1945 in Schlesiens Hauptstadt erbeutet?

Die „Fliegenden Untertassen", die angeblich wieder vermehrt am Himmel beobachtet werden und auch durch die Spalten der Presse geistern, sollen nach einem Bericht des „8-Uhr-Abendblattes" in Hamburg die Fortentwicklung der deutschen „V 7" sein. Diese Angaben macht nach dem angeführten Bericht ein deutscher V-Waffen-Experte, Dr. R. Miethe, der z. Z. in Tel Aviv lebt. Er gibt an, daß bei der Einnahme Breslaus durch die Russen angeblich mehrere Antriebs-Aggregate der „V 7" den Eroberern in die Hände fielen. Die „V 7", eine scheibenförmige Konstruktion mit großem Aktionsradius, sei erprobt und bereits in Serienherstellung gewesen.

Es erhebt sich die Frage, ob die Angaben dieses aus Paris geschriebenen Berichtes stimmen. Vielleicht weiß oder erinnert sich einer aus der großen Zahl der Breslauer auf Grund dieser Meldung an eine Spur zu diesen außergewöhnlichen Antriebsaggregaten. **G. K.**

etwa Juni 1952

Machine Translated by Google

Persönlicher Stab Reichsführer-SS
Schriftgutverwaltung
Akt. Nr. Geh. 1860/14

ELEMAG Electro-mechanical Apparatus Construction Company Ltd.

HILDfSMIIM • •*ifk*ti(>. 14 NmvtNf.lMl

Gr/Wie. Tag: 28.1o.1944

Betrifft:

Störung der Funktion elektrischer Geräte als Mittel der Kriegsführung.

Es wird angestrebt, auf der Feindseite eine Ausschaltung derjenigen Kampfmittel herbeizuführen, deren Einsatzfähigkeit auf der Funktion elektrischer Geräte beruht.

Unter diese Kampfmittel fallen:
Luft- und Landfahrzeuge mit einem Verbrennungsmotor mit Kerzenzündung als Antriebsmittel, das gesamte Nachrichtenwesen, sowie einige artilleristische Einrichtungen.

Zur Erreichung dieses Zieles wird eine Fernbeeinflussung der Funktic elektrischer Geräte auf folgende Basis vorgeschlagen.

Der Aufbau elektrischer Geräte setzt sich aus zwei Grundelementen zusammen, aus Spannungsleitern und Isolatoren. Störungen an elektrischer Geräten und Maschinen sind grundsätzlich auf Unterbrechungen in Spannungsleitern oder Überbrückungen von Isolatoren zurückzuführen.

Eine Überbrückung von Isolatoren z.B. durchbricht die Blockierung der Spannungwege und führt zur Bildung von Kriechströmen oder Kurzschlüssen, und verursacht als Auswirkung der letzteren Unterbrechungen in Spannungsleitern, sei es infolge durchschmelzen von Sicherungen und Zuleitungen, oder durch Zerstörung der Verbraucher selbst.

Durch Überbrückung von Isolatoren ist also die Möglichkeit gegeben jedes elektrische Gerät außer Betrieb zu setzen.

Es erwächst nun die Aufgabe einen, beim Aufbau sämtlicher elektrischer Geräte in Erfüllung ausreichend wichtiger Funktionen Anwendung findenden Isolierstoff durch Fernbeeinflussung unwirksam zu machen.

Auf der Suche nach einem hierfür geeignetem Stoff wurde gefund. , daß die Atmosphäre die erforderlichen Voraussetzungen in ausreichendem Maße erfüllt.

Der Isolierstoff Atmosphäre findet zwar als Solcher infolge der Natürlichkeit dieses Zustandes im Algemeinen keine besondere Beachtung, er bildet aber letztendendes die isolatorische Grundlage der gesamten Elektrotechnik, und es steht fest, daß eine Aufhebung der isolierenden Wirkung der Atmosphäre den Betrieb irgend eines elektrischen Gerätes, bekannter Konstruktion und Ausführung unmöglich macht.

Der gegenwärtige Stand der Technik bietet die Möglichkeit eine Beeinflussung des Isolierstoffes Atmosphäre im Sinne der zu lösenden Aufgabe durchzuführen.

Es ist bekannt, daß ultrakurze- elektrische Frequenzen unter Anderem auch die Eigenschaft entwickeln die von durchdrungenen Atmosphäre zu ionisieren, und damit eine umgekehrte elektrische Reaktion auslösen; das heißt mit anderen Worten, den Isolierstoff Atmosphäre in einen Spannungsleiter zu verwandeln.

Bemühungen zur wirtschaftlichen Nutzbarmachung dieser Erkenntnis ließen sich vor dem Kriege beobachten, und zwar handelte es sich hierbei

Dokument 1, Seite 1

Machine Translated by Google

ELEMAG

Electro-mechanical apparatus construction company mb **M.**

HILDESHEIM

hierbei um das Problem der drahtlosen Übertragung elektrischer Energien. Wenn vorwiegend aus patentrechtlichen Gründen auch keine ausführlichen Veröffentlichungen hierüber erfolgt sind, so kann die physikalische Grundlage dieses Problemes heute doch im wesentlichen als gelöst angesehen werden.

Bei einer Auswertung dieser Erkenntnis zur Realisierung des vorgeschlagenen Kampfmittels kann zu einem großen Teil auf diese Unterlagen zurückgegriffen werden. Es ist daher zweckmäßig zunächst Ermittlungen darüber anzustellen, welche Frequenzbereiche hinsichtlich ihrer ionisierenden Wirkung bereits näher untersucht, und welche Ergebnisse dabei erzielt worden sind.

Im Einzelnen sind für jeden infragekommenden Frequenzbereich möglichst unter Zugrundelegung verschiedener Sendeenergien folgende Feststellungen zu treffen:

1. Welcher Leitwert wurde ermittelt. a) Bei Wellenbündelung
   b) " Rundstrahlung
2. Welche wirksame Reichweite wurde erzielt.
   a) Bei Wellenbündelung
   Rundstrahlung
3. Welche Raumstreuung wurde bei Wellenbündelung beobachtet,(auszudrücken durch Angabe der Bündelquerschnitte in den Entfernungen X_a bis X_z von Richtstrahler.)
4. Welche Leitwertänderungen wurden bei zunehmender Streuung in den Abständen X_a bis X_z festgestellt.
5. Einfluß der Leitwertänderungen auf den Kontakteffekt pro Kontaktflächeneinheit.

Nach Klärung dieser 5 Punkte, sei es durch Ermittlung bereits vorliegender Ergebnisse oder durch Eigenversuche, kann ein zusammenfassender Überblick über den Umfang der Wirkung und Anwendbarkeit dieses Kampfmittels gegeben werden.

Da eine Klärung dieser Punkte unter den gegenwertigen Verhältnissen mit privaten Mitteln nicht durchführbar ist, im Interesse der Landesverteidigung jedoch von großer Wichtigkeit sein kann, wird nachgesucht, die erforderlichen Mitteln durch das Reich zur Verfügung zu stellen.

Machine Translated by Google

Persönlicher Stab Reichsführer-SS
Schriftgutverwaltung
Akt. Nr. Geh. 1960/14

PROFESSOR Dr.-Ing. WERNER OSENBERG
LEITER DES PLANUNGSAMTES DES REICHSFORSCHUNGSRATES

(28) NORTHEIM/HANNOVER, den 7. Februar 1945
POSTSCHLIESSFACH 148

FERNRUF: KATLENBURG 283/388
NORTHEIM 780
FERNSCHREIBER: 823 58

IHRE ZEICHEN:
IHRE NACHRICHT VOM:
UNSERE ZEICHEN 03/5 Dr.O/Ke.

Durch Boten!

An den
Persönlichen Referenten
des Reichsführers SS
SS Standartenführer Dr. B r a n d t
Feldquartier des Reichsführers SS

Geheim!

Betreff: Störung der Funktion elektrischer Geräte als Mittel der Kriegsführung (Vorschlag der Elektromechanischen Apparatebau-Gesellschaft m. b. H. Hildesheim, Goschenstraße 16)

Vorgang: Mein Vortrag beim Reichsführer SS am 8.1.45

Standartenführer!

Die Prüfung des mir vom Reichsführer SS gelegentlich meines Vortrags am 8.1.45 übergebenen Vorschlages der Elemag Hildesheim für die Störung der Funktion elektrischer Geräte durch Ionisierung der Luft mit Hilfe von ultrakurzen elektrischen Wellen hat zu dem Ergebnis geführt, daß dieser nach dem augenblicklichen Stand der Technik nicht zu verwirklichen ist. Die Ausführungen der Elemag selbst lassen jedes tiefere Verständnis für die behandelten technischen und physikalischen Vorgänge vermissen, so daß es nicht empfohlen werden kann, diese Stelle mit der Durchführung entsprechender Forschungsarbeiten zu beauftragen.

Tatsächlich wird an der drahtlosen elektrischen Energieübertragung und deren Anwendung für militärische Zwecke seit Jahrzehnten eifrigst gearbeitet, bisher jedoch ohne greifbaren Erfolg.

Da ähnliche Anregungen immer wieder vorgebracht werden, habe ich einige namhafte Wissenschaftler um eine grundsätzliche Stellungnahme zu den angeschnittenen Fragen gebeten. Leider haben sich infolge der schwierigen Post- und Verkehrsverhältnisse die angeforderten Berichte verzögert, so daß ich Ihnen als Vorbescheid zunächst eine Beurteilung des Vorschlages der Elemag durch Herrn Prof. Dr. Meißner (Anlage 1), der auf dem Gebiet der elektromagnetischen Wellen über besondere Erfahrungen verfügt, sowie eine Stellungnahme des Leiters meiner Erprobungsabteilung, Dr. Badstein, (Anlage 2) vorlege.

Nach Eingang der noch ausstehenden Gutachten werde ich Ihnen einen umfassenden Überblick über den augenblicklichen Stand der Entwicklung geben.

~~Unverbindlichen~~ Empfehlungen und

Heil Hitler!

W. Osenberg

10. FEB 1945
2 Anlagen

Dokument 9

Machine Translated by Google

Prof. Dr. A. Meißner
AEG FORSCHUNGS-INSTITUT
Fernsprecher: 49 21 91

Persönlicher Stab Reichsführer-SS
Schriftgutverwaltung
Anl. Nr. Geh. 1960/14
Berlin-Reinickendorf/Ost 1, den 1. 2. 1945
Holländerstraße 21-27

Ergänzung zum Gutachten vom 27.1.1945 zum Erfindungsvorschlag der "Elemag", Elektro-mechanische Apparatebaugesellschaft m.b.H., Hildesheim, Goschenstr.16

Die hier gemachten Vorschläge sind insbesondere im ersten Teil nicht für den Fachmann bestimmt, sondern nur für den Laien. Es ist übrigens nicht zum erstenmal, daß in dieser Art eine Erfindung gemacht wurde, durch Fernübertragung elektrische Apparate unwirksam zu machen. Die Grundlage sollte auch damals sein, daß "die Atmosphäre in außerordentlichem Maße die erforderlichen voraussetzungen besitzt, daß sie durch Fernbeeinflussung als Isolierstoff ausgeschaltet werden kann." Im vorigen Krieg (-1916) mußten auf höheren Befehl trotz heftigen Einspruchs der Fachkreise mehrere Stellen an der Aufgabe arbeiten, durch Röntgen- oder irgendwelche anderen Strahlen ("Todesstrahlen") die Zündung in Flugzeugen unwirksam zu machen.

Machine Translated by Google

While the Reich territory was already overrun by the enemy at the beginning of May 1945, Sweden, Denmark, Schleswig-Holstein, the German North Sea coast (held in the course of the deposition?) and large parts of the Protectorate of Bohemia and Moravia (flying disc test sites Prague/Pilsen) were still areas defended by the Wehrmacht. Coincidence? Or by the German Leadership pursued with purpose?

Machine Translated by Google

Fireballs over the Canary Islands !

The 'Le *Figaro Magazine',* Paris, dated December 8, 1979, reports in a four-page UFO article *"Decidement fault-il croire aux* OVNI..." by Jean-Claude Bourret, about fireball sightings (boule de feu) in the area of the Canary Islands.

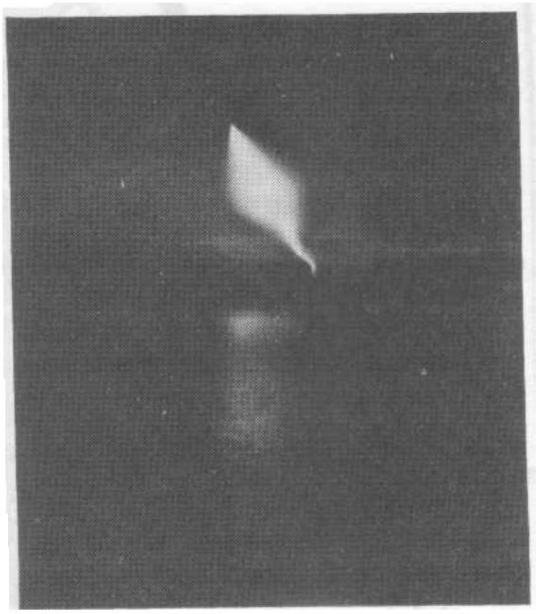
Gilbert Naranjo, technician of Spanish television saw on the morning of March 5, 1979 between night and dawn from the

2,000 m high transmitter station on Mount Izana in Tenerife, during the

Checking his equipment, slow flying

fireballs and was able to photograph them. Of the 7 colour photos published in LeFigaro Magazine,

Here are two images that show these fireballs apparently in the stage of a silent explosion of light.

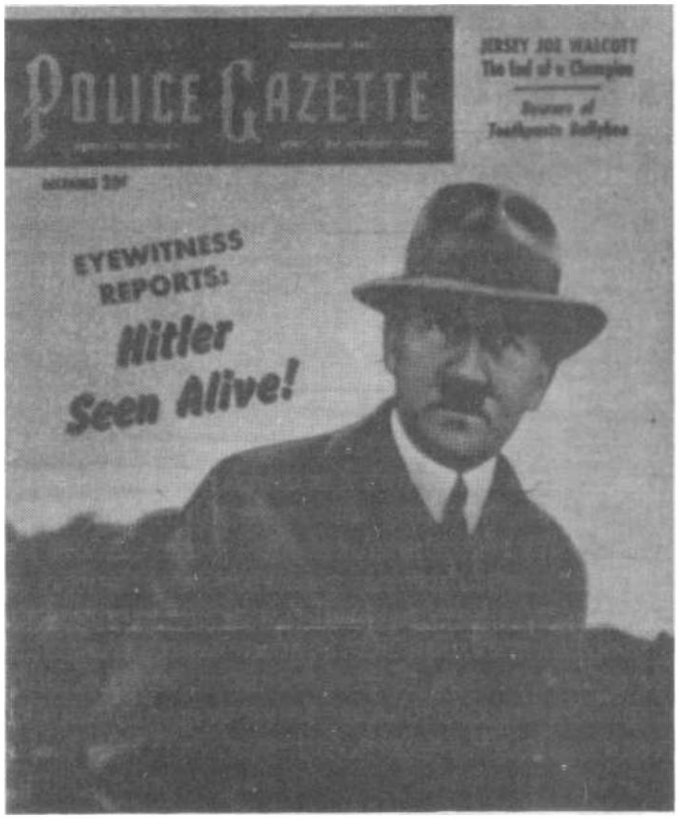


~~~~ ~~ ~ This black/white image copies can not even give the impression as the color pictures I have. (11) The very well-known and popular Norwegian pop singer Finn Kalvik saw the light of day in 1977 during a singing tour, also via the Canary Islands these fireballs, while at the same time the power went out. The Norwegian family illustrated magazine 'Norsk *Ukeblad',* No. 28/1984, p. 37/38, reported on his experience, which was simultaneously shared by hundreds of
~~~~

Machine Translated by Google

The film that Kalvik made about the incident
was confiscated His friend Janne, who took 33 pictures
was also led by a colonel of the Spanish Air Force.
and was so careless as to disclose where he had taken his pictures
to be developed. When he later went to the shop to pick them up, he was told that 30 of the 33 pictures were unfortunately destroyed during development. Finn Kalvik therefore suspects that
a confiscation took place. In *the 'Norsk Ukeblad'* Kalvik shows two
of the remaining three images, which are very similar to those from Le Figaro Magazine.

The remaining image material should therefore be in one as well as in the
In other cases, only the less serious part of the whole incident will be shown, the non-confiscated remainder on the one hand and the part released for publication on the other in Le Figaro Magazine.



Machine Translated by Google

Deutsche Kampfgruppe noch auf Grönland?

Von U-Booten an Land gesetzt -- Seit fast sechs Jahren in der Schneewüste

Wien, 28. Dezember. In mehreren ausländischen Blättern erschienen in den letzten Tagen Berichte, die so phantastisch anmuten, daß man sie mit Vorsicht aufnehmen muß. Jedenfalls wird man ergänzende Meldungen abwarten müssen, um Klarheit darüber zu gewinnen, ob die Meldungen in allem und jedem stichhältig sind. Eskimos haben, so heißt es, dem Kommandanten einer amerikanischen militärischen Station gemeldet, daß sich auf Grönland noch eine etwa 150 Mann starke deutsche Kampfgruppe befindet.

Die „weiße Todesrotte"

Im Frühjahr 1942, also vor nahezu sechs Jahren, hatten Unterseeboote deutsche Soldaten in Grönland an Land gesetzt. Anführer der Gruppe war ein Hauptmann namens Hammerlein, der vor dem Krieg mehrmals an Polarexpeditionen teilgenommen hatte. Die deutschen Soldaten, die sich die „weiße Todesrotte" nannten, waren aufs beste ausgerüstet und mit den modernsten Behelfen versehen. Etwa 30 Kilometer von dem Hafen Angmagsalik entfernt, wurde eine Station errichtet, von der aus die Truppe Hammerleins meteorologische Meldungen nach Deutschland funkte. Mit Unterseebooten kamen später Lebensmittel, Arzneien und auch zwei Geologen, so daß man mutmaßte, die Deutschen wollen nach Uran suchen.

Den Berichten der Eskimos zufolge brachte ein deutsches Schiff später auch ein zerlegbares Flugzeug. Im Herbst 1943 erschienen in einer Eskimosiedlung 50 deutsche Soldaten, unter denen eine schwere Schlägerei entstand. Zwei der Soldaten, die durch den jahrelangen Aufenthalt in der Schnee- und Eiswüste Grönlands offenbar schon völlig zermürbt waren, verübten Selbstmord.

In den folgenden Jahren wurden noch mehrmals Lebensmittel, Arzneien und anderes Material von U-Booten aus an Land gebracht. Im Herbst 1944 kam der letzte Transport, mit dem auch 30 Mann an Land gingen.

Sie trugen den Aussagen der Eskimos nach andere Uniformen als jene Soldaten, die sich schon seit 1942 auf Grönland befanden und so vermutet man, daß es sich um SS-Leute handelte.

Feuergefecht mit Eskimos

Diese 30 Neuankömmlinge bezogen das gleiche Lager wie die 120 alten, hielten sich jedoch von diesen völlig abgesondert. Im Mai 1945, kurz nach der Kapitulation Deutschlands, verschwanden die 150 Deutschen aus der Umgebung von Angmagsalik. Die Eskimos glaubten, die 150 Mann hätten sich in amerikanische Gefangenschaft begeben, bis nun vor kurzem Eskimos nach der Rückkehr von einem Fang meldeten, daß die Deutschen sich noch immer auf Grönland befänden. Zwei der Grönländer waren, als die Deutschen ihrer ansichtig wurden, erschossen worden, die übrigen drei konnten flüchten und die Nachricht bringen, daß sie 170 Kilometer nördlich von Angmagsalik auf die Deutschen gestoßen seien.

Machine Translated by Google

lner Rundschau 4.5.1983

Nazi-U-Boot auf dem Grund der Karibik-See?

4.5.1983

Das britische Verteidigungsministerium hat sich m Dienstag äußerst skeptisch zu Berichten geäußert, wonach auf dem rund der Karibischen See n gesunkenes „geheimes" eutsches U-Boot aus dem weiten Weltkrieg mit 18 oten an Bord liegen soll.

Nach einem Bericht der ageszeitung „The Times" at der Amerikaner Roger iklos (41) vor wenigen lonaten ein in 25 Meter iefe liegendes U-Boot von ngewöhnlicher Bauweise ntdeckt, das nach seinen ermutungen möglicherweise führende Nazis gen Ende des Krieges nach idamerika bringen sollte. er Fund gebe der Theorie eue Nahrung, wonach der malige Reichsmarschall ermann Göring einen Geheimauftrag für neun Unterseeboote erteilte, mit enen Naziführer nach riegsende entkommen ollten.

Nach Meinung von Miks, der sich zur Zeit in ondon aufhält, handelt es ch bei dem offenbar beens erhaltenen Schiff um n U-Boot der „7V11-Classe", die während des rieges mehrfach modifiert worden sei. Das von m entdeckte Boot sehe doch völlig anders aus als eine Vorgänger.

Bei der Erkundung des nd 85 Meter langen und wa 200 Tonnen schweren ootes konnte Miklos keie Registriernummer finen. Einziges Erkennungsichen sei eine Messingakete mit der Aufschrift Hamburg/Deutschland. In uftrag gegeben 1944" gesen.

Der erfahrene Taucher ... der Bericht der ...ontakt zu

'Kronen-Ztg', Wien, 4. Mai 83

Tote Nazigrößen in einem U-Boot-Wrack?

London. – In der Karibik haben amerikanische Taucher ein deutsches U-Boot aus dem Zweiten Weltkrieg entdeckt. Es ist ausgezeichnet erhalten, in seinem Inneren könnten die Überreste toter Nazigrößen sein, die 1945 nach Südamerika fliehen wollten, aber auch Kunstschätze und wertvolle Dokumente. Wie die Londoner „Times" berichtet, ist der Leiter des Bergungsunternehmens „Novad Salvage" in England gewesen, um Geld aufzutreiben. Das U-Boot, auf dessen Turm der Schriftzug „Hamburg 1944" zu erkennen ist, ist ein Typ, der eigens für die Flucht von Nazifunktionären gebaut worden war.

Badische Zeitung

Dienstag, 3. Mai 1983 / Nr. 101

Gesunkenes U-Boot in Karibik gefunden

London (rtr). In einem in der Karibik aufgespürten gesunkenen deutschen U-Boot könnten sich laut einem Bericht der britischen Zeitung „The Times" die Leichen von Nationalsozialisten befinden, die nach Südamerika fliehen wollten. Das Schiff, das keine erkennbare Nummer trage, sei in 23 Metern Tiefe vom amerikanischen Bergungsunternehmer Roger Miklos gefunden worden, hieß es am Montag in der Zeitung weiter. Miklos befinde sich derzeit in London, um bei der britischen Regierung Interesse für eine Erkundung und Bergung des U-Bootes zu wecken. Miklos sei der Ansicht, daß es sich bei dem Schiff vom Typ der C-Klasse um eine Sonderanfertigung handle, in der sich nationalsozialistische Funktionäre möglicherweise mit Dokumenten, Gold und Kunstschätzen nach Lateinamerika absetzen wollten. Er habe bei seinen monatelangen Recherchen in der Bundesrepublik Deutschland den Plan des georteten Bootes ehemaligen U-Boot-Kommandeuren vorgelegt. Diese hätten bestätigt, daß es einem Bootstyp ähnle, der zur Flucht von Funktionären bestimmt gewesen sei.

WAZ vom 4.5.83

Historiker: Es gab keine U-Boote für NS-Größen

STUTTGART (ap)

Der international bekannte deutsche Zeitgeschichtler Professor Jürgen Rohwer ist absolut sicher: „Es hat keine U-Boote gegeben, die für die Flucht der NS-Größen nach Südamerika vorbereitet waren." Ebenso wenig gebe es „heute noch deutsche Unterseeboote, von denen wir nicht wissen, was mit ihnen geschah und wo sie geblieben sind."

Tantum ergo Ablenkung ?

Machine Translated by Google

Eine Tatsache: Was die Südamerikaner allein über die Presse erfahren dürfen, das wird dem Europäer noch lange nicht mitgeteilt.

Sábado 19 de Mayo de 1984 Santiago de Chile: **EL PAIS** Tageszeitung

Miguel Serrano: "El Cazador de nazis Wiesenthal, miente"

● Ex diplomático chileno dice que el saludo nazi que se le hizo a Rauff en el Cementerio General, fue un homenaje válido para un hombre que mantuvo hasta la muerte sus ideales.

● *Por JAIME ADARO.*

Asegura con pasión que no es nazi, sino hitlerista.

Es Miguel Serrano Fernández.

Ex embajador en la India, Austria, Rumania, Bulgaria y Yugoslavia, en 20 años de activa diplomacia, que cubrió entre 1953 y 1971. Pero antes que nada —como él lo dice con orgullo— es escritor.

Sus obras han sido traducidas al persa, japonés, alemán, inglés, francés e italiano:

"Vivo de mis libros", comenta, cuando se llega al punto de la economía personal.

Hacía ocho años que este hombre viajaba por el extranjero.

Tiempo, además, de mutismo a toda prueba, en sus

Miguel Serrano, escritor y ex diplomático.

"Miguel Serrano, Schriftsteller und Ex-Diplomat."

son todas las afirmaciones de este señor respecto a los supuestos criminales de guerra. Tan falsas como las que hiciera en torno a Walter Rauff. En cambio, se ha dicho repetidamente que Wiesenthal ni siquiera es ingeniero, como se autoproclama. Que jamás estuvo en un campo de concentración y que, por el contrario, fue un informante a sueldo de la gestapo, a la que le habría entregado información de sus propios compañeros judíos. Este es el "cazador de nazis".

—¿Cuál es la situación actual del nacionalsocialismo en Chile? ¿Cuál su futuro?

—En Chile y en todo el mundo existe un fenómeno casi inexplicable. Paradóiicamente, la juvent[illegible] ha sido ad[illegible]

"Los discos voladores existen, los inventaron los nazis".

"Die fliegenden Scheiben existieren, sie wurden von den Nazis geschaffen".

Machine Translated by Google

Frontzeitung der Festung Breslau

Schlesische Tageszeitung

AMTLICHES BLATT DER NSDAP. UND SÄMTLICHER BEHÖRDEN

16. Jahrgang / Nr. 118

Festung Breslau, Mittwoch, den 9. Mai 1945

Heldentod des Führers

Großadmiral Dönitz als Nachfolger eingesetzt

Als Berlin kapitulierte, wurde um Breslau noch gekämpft: Vorletzte Nummer der „Frontzeitung"

'National-Ztg.', Basel, Schweiz, 4. August 1945

Man zweifelt immer noch an Hitlers Tod

London, 3. August. ag. (Reuter.) Das Geheimnis um Hitlers Schicksal beschäftigt nach wie vor sowohl die Alliierten als auch die Deutschen. Die nachstehenden Meldungen von Reuter-Korrespondenten geben einen Ueberblick über die neueste Lage:

Berlin: Der sowjetrussische Militärbefehlshaber in Berlin erklärte, offizielle russische Stellen hielten es nicht für ausgeschlossen, daß Hitler noch am Leben sei und sich versteckt halte.

Hauptquartier der Siebten Armee in Heidelberg: Truppen der Siebten Armee sind ständig mit Suchaktionen beschäftigt, um festzustellen, ob Hitler in dieser Zone Zuflucht gesucht hat, wo er sich laut Gerüchten versteckt halten soll. Es gingen Gerüchte um, wonach sich Hitler in den dicht bewaldeten Hügeln hinter Heidelberg in einem Versteck befinde, was Armeestellen nicht für unmöglich halten. Die Deutschen in diesem Gebiet glauben jedenfalls stark daran, daß sich Hitler am Leben befindet und irgendwo versteckt hält.

Bad Weiß-See: Die Möglichkeit, daß Hitler noch am Leben ist, hat unter den Deutschen in diesem Gebiet etwelche Besorgnisse hervorgerufen. Ungefähr die Hälfte der Leute glaubt, daß er noch lebt, und die andere Hälfte, daß er sich in Berlin selbst getötet hat. Viele Deutsche sind der Ansicht, daß er sich in einem Versteck in Oesterreich befinde.

Hauptquartier der 21. Armeegruppe in Westfalen: Die offizielle Ansicht ist, daß die von dem SS.-Mann Kernau erzählte Geschichte über die Verbrennung von Hitlers Leiche den Tatsachen entspricht.

In **Herford** faßte jemand die ganze Frage in den Worten zusammen: „Ja, Hitler ist tot. Leider

Machine Translated by Google

DIE TAT

Erscheint wöchentlich 7tal Einzelpreis 20 Rp.

Zürich Freitag, 12. März 1948

Dieser Mann behauptet, Hitler und Eva Braun im kr
Moment nach Tondern in Süddänemark gebracht zu
wo der Führer sich verabschiedet hätte. In München
nun die Aussagen des Piloten, eines ehemaligen SS-Maj
wie er behauptet, Enkels von Mackensens, von den Amer
(C
geprüft.

Machine Translated by Google

Hitlers allerletzter Fluchtweg aus Berlin

Tunnel vom Führer-Bunker zum Flughafen

Berlin (we) – Ist Hitlers geheimer Fluchtweg in Berlin-Kreuzberg entdeckt worden? Alles deutet darauf hin. Sprengstoff-Experten und Wissenschaftler untersuchen mit Baggern und Baumaschinen, die einzige Erhebung Berlins, den 66 Meter hohen Kreuzberg. Unter ihm haben Bauarbeiter ein weitläufiges Tunnel- und Bunkersystem aus dem Zweiten Weltkrieg entdeckt.

Anwohner berichteten gestern, daß das kilometerlange unterirdische Labyrinth von Bergleuten aus dem Ruhrgebiet nach Plänen von Hitlers Hauptarchitekt Albert Speer angelegt wurde. Es soll auch, wie Zeugen berichteten, eine Verbindung von der damaligen Reichskanzlei bis zum rund zwei Kilometer entfernten ehemaligen Zentralflughafen Tempelhof geben.

Nach Erinnerungen älterer Bewohner wurden kurz vor Kriegsende riesige Mengen an Munition in die Stollen transportiert. Wie gefährliche unterirdische Munitionsdepots auch heute noch sein können, hatte sich, erst im August dieses Jahres in Berlin-Tempelhof gezeigt: Eine Sprengbombe explodierte unter einer Wohnstraße, riß einen riesigen Krater und beschädigte mehrere Gebäude.

Bei den Untersuchungen, die noch mehrere Wochen, wenn nicht gar Monate andauern werden, haben die Experten der Bauverwaltung und der Technischen Universität Berlin einen sieben Meter unter der Erde liegenden Bunker sowie einen 100 Meter langen Tunnel entdeckt.

Dieser führt zu einem zweiten Bunkersystem, zu dem wegen meterdicker Betonwände bisher noch kein Durchbruch gelang. An einer weiteren Stelle entdeckten die Tunnelsucher zwei tadellos erhaltene Gänge, deren Enden allerdings verschüttet sind.

Ganz besondere Bedeutung kommt Hinweisen zu, wonach das Tunnelsystem vom Führer-Bunker im heutigen Ostteil Berlins bis zum Flughafen Tempelhof als regelrechte unterirdische Straße ausgebaut worden sein soll – groß genug für kleinere Autos. „Nach dem bisher freigelegten Tunnelsystem haben wir Vermutungen bestätigt erhalten, daß die ‚Organisation Todt' für Hitler einen allerletzten Fluchtweg aus Berlin gebaut hat", erklärten Experten der Kreuzberger Bauverwaltung. Sorge bereitet der Berliner Bevölkerung vor allem der mögliche Munitionsbestand in den Bunkern. Wisenschaftler der Technischen Universität prüfen jetzt mit modernsten seismischen und magnetischen Untersuchungsmethoden nach, wieviele Bomben noch in dem Bunkersystem liegen.

Siehe auch *"Die Welt"*, 1.12.1983:
"Ließ Hitler sich einen Fluchtweg bauen?"

Machine Translated by Google

Neue Rätsel um Hitlers Leiche!

Von HELMUT VOSS

1984 sad. **Oxford, 23. 9.**

Adolf Hitlers Leiche wurde nicht verbrannt, sondern an bisher unbekannter Stelle im Berliner Tiergarten beigesetzt. Diese Ansicht hat der amerikanische Zahnmediziner Prof. Dr. Lester L. Luntz am Wochenende auf einem gerichtsmedizinischen Kongreß in Oxford vertreten.

Der Professor ist überzeugt, daß es sich bei den verkohlten Überresten, die die Russen 1945 vor dem Führerbunker in Berlin gefunden hatten, **nicht** um die Leiche von Adolf Hitler handelte. Er glaubt vielmehr, daß die Russen ein Hitler-Double fanden: „Albert Speer hat mir gegenüber die Möglichkeit eines Doppelgängers eingeräumt."

Der Professor untermauert seine These so: ● Die Sowjets identifizierten die Leiche nur anhand des Gebisses. Aber: „Es gibt bis heute keine Röntgenaufnahmen von Hitlers Gebiß, die über jeden Zweifel erhaben sind." Die im US-Nationalarchiv vorhandenen Aufnahmen seien äußerst fragwürdige Dokumente.

● Hitleradjutant Otto Guensche behauptete im Verhör, die Russen hätten nie Hitlers Leiche gefunden . . .

Bild am Sonntag

Das letzte Aufgebot: Adolf Hitler zeichnet am 20. April 1945 – zehn Tage vor seinem Selbstmord – Hitlerjungen mit dem Eisernen Kreuz II. Klasse aus

Machine Translated by Google

Below is an excerpt from the book:
"The End of the Hitler Myth" by Josef Greiner, Amalthea-Verlag, Vienna, 1947, Page 338-342; Book chapter:

The Hitler myth is dead. But Hitler lives!

Hitler's chauffeur, Ernst Kempka, reported as an eyewitness that *on* April 30, 1945, between 2 and 3 p.m., Eva Braun's body was carried out of the Reich Chancellery bunker. He also saw Hitler's body, which was wrapped in a blanket with a boot sticking out. The two bodies were then placed in a prepared

sunk into a pit, doused with petrol and burned. •

On April 30, 1945, Berlin was in complete disarray. But little of this was noticeable at Tempelhofer Airfield. The ground organization, such as harbor signals, radio and direction finding equipment, gave the pilots all the instructions they needed to make a smooth landing possible. It was a hectic time.

A plane landed every six minutes. Ten

Airplanes took off every hour. Sometimes even more. Fast fighters of the German Air Force raced over the horizon and secured the air

space. As a result, the airfield did not suffer any serious damage. Between the engine

One could hear the hard hammering of the ship's weapons and the approaching noise of battle.

Reports were received at the airfield that the Russian army had already advanced to the Koch and Orange

street. The connection to the city center is cut off. The only escape route is by air or by

Machine Translated by Google

f assumption. In the next few minutes the feverish pulse of the Tempelhof airfield must look like this.

At 4:15 p.m. a Ju 52 lands, bringing SS soldiers from Rechlin to defend Berlin. They are all boys under 18 years old. Each of them knows that when they are deployed from the witches' cauldron of Berlin, they will not

no longer comes out alive.

The on-board passenger of this aircraft is Ing. B., whom I have known well for years and for whom I have repeatedly tried to obtain military exemption. He is trying to get some gas as quickly as possible in order to get out of Berlin again.

While refueling, he suddenly receives a rude nudge in the ribs from the radio operator, telling him to pay attention to a certain spot.

At a distance of 100 to 120 meters he sees a new Messerschmidt turbine

fighter, Type 332. With an additional tank, this has an operating radius of 4000 kilometers. Engineer B. and his comrade, the radio operator, direct their lynx eyes attentively at this aircraft. In front of it they see - no doubt! - their colonel

Warlord: Adolf Hitler!

He is wearing a field-grey uniform and is gesticulating animatedly with some party officials, apparently to say goodbye to them.

For ten minutes, the two of them are able to observe the fleeing pilot closely as they hastily refuel. Then the fuel is ready. At 4:30 p.m. their plane takes to the skies again.

(There was no Me-332, probably a Me-Gigant 323. Perhaps a misprint. Note: Hugin)

Machine Translated by Google

7 1/2 hours later, at midnight on April 30th to May 1st, 1945, Admiral Dönitz announced over the military radio that Hitler was dead and that he had taken over supreme command.

A few minutes later the German radio reported the same news.

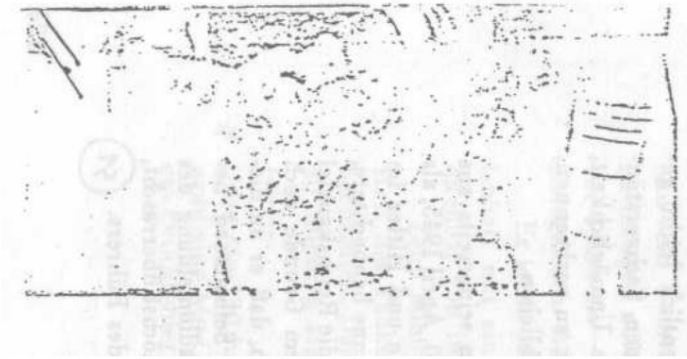
Goebbels also reported that the Führer was in the Valhalla a entered.

According to a report from the Soviet Information Office dated May 3, 1945, Fritsche said during his interrogation after his capture that Hitler, Goebbels and the newly appointed Chief of the General Staff, General of Inf. Krebs, had committed suicide.

Lieutenant Colonel Heimlich from the American The secret service, which checked all information about Hitler's death, came to the conclusion that Hitler, Eva Braun and Bormann were still alive.

There is not a single iota of evidence that Hitler is dead. The report (INS) also states that the American Army's investigation into the events during the last days of fighting has shown that it was extremely easy to escape from Berlin. Experts also pointed out that it is impossible to completely burn a corpse in the open air without leaving behind some residue.

Ing. B. excludes any error on his part and firmly assures that on 30 April 1945, when he landed at 4:15 p.m. and Hitler was in bright light of the setting sun, it was no longer possible to get into the Reich Chancellery. For this reason, it could never be true that he committed suicide in the Reich Chancellery that day. When Engineer B. heard Admiral Dönitz's radio message, he was extremely surprised and thought that the Führer had been in an airplane accident.



Reporter confirms Police Gazette articles revealing

by HARVEY WILSON

FOR the first time, an outsider has seen Adolf Hitler's super-secret hideout in the wilds of Argentina.

His eyewitness account of the impenetrable Nazi stronghold, confirms the startling facts first unearthed and published by the *Police Gazette*, twelve years ago.

Traveling through the mountainous region of [redacted] province—a sprawling wilderness of lakes, waterfalls, gigantic glacier caves and forested islands—Jack Comben, correspondent of the *London Daily Express*, discovered the last secret outpost of Hitler's Germany, 100 miles north of [redacted].

It was in 1952 that the *Police Gazette*, after having obtained top secret Allied Intelligence reports and information based on interviews with former members of the Wehrmacht, revealed that Hitler and his mistress, Eva Braun, had escaped from the ruins of Berlin.

When the defeat of the Third Reich loomed imminent, plans for Hitler's escape were drawn up by Martin Bormann, the Dictator's closest confident. The project was entrusted to Admiral Karl Doenitz, Nazi U-boat specialist and Commander-in-Chief of the German Navy, who was later to boast:

"The German submarine fleet is proud of having built for Der Fuehrer in another part of the world a Shangri-La on Land—an impregnable fortress."

This "impregnable fortress" to which Admiral Doenitz had alluded was in the heart of a huge slice of Argentina territory that had been purchased by Nazi agents in South America. This "Little Nazi Germany" covered over 10,000 square miles of ranchland (the size of the state of Massachusetts) in the provinces of [redacted] and [redacted]. And the armed camp, that was to become Hitler's hideout, was in a region north of [redacted].

Visits Nazi Outpost

Recently, in January, 1964, correspondent Jack Comben, journeyed to Bariloche to investigate reports of the Nazi outpost. Here is his report:

"I have come back from visiting the most extraordinary surviving outpost of Hitler's Germany in the world today.

"In a camp on the bank of the swift-flowing [redacted] River, [redacted]00 miles south of the Equator, in the heart of the Argentine, German men, women and children are living a strange and secret existence under steely discipline.

"Local people cannot penetrate into the camp, which lies at [redacted], 100 miles north of [redacted]. The inmates of the camp are forbidden to talk to strangers. All men in the camp wear Afrika Korps-style uniforms, with the same peaked caps that Field Marshal Rommel's elite army wore in the Western desert."

The camp is sealed off to all non-Nazis. No person without the proper credentials can set foot in it. Armed guards make sure of that. To further ensure secrecy, every piece of mail entering or leaving the camp is subjected to the most rigorous censorship.

"The camp," reported Comben, "seems to be completely under the control of the camp commandant, a gray-haired man called W[redacted] O[redacted], who is known as Der Hauptmann. I have been able to establish that O[redacted] was a high official in Hitler's communications organization. His right-hand man is E[redacted] F[redacted], a former SS officer."

Fake Suicide

When victorious Allied troops took over Berlin, the first reports out of the beleaguered city were that Hitler had killed himself in his bunker beneath the Reichchancellory. These reports said that Hitler and Eva Braun, whom he had married just before the fall of Berlin, took their lives in a suicide pact and that their bodies were then removed by trusted friends to the courtyard, drenched with gasoline and burned.

This version of what happened to Hitler and Eva was circulated throughout the entire world—but Allied Intelligence soon disclosed that the "suicide" was a hoax.

Members of Hitler's staff, who saw him a few minutes before his alleged death, contradicted each other as far as the suicide report was concerned.

Machine Translated by Google

German translation from the American *"POLICE GAZETTE",* New York, 1964, pages 16/17/27.

The Police Gazette, which was renamed the National Police Gazette a year later, is a magazine for private detectives, police officers and amateur sleuths.

The exact location and geographical information have been replaced by dots by the translator:

"POLICE GAZETTE" ARTICLE WHICH ONCE SECRET NAZI OUTPOST IN ARGENTINA REVEALED - BY REPORTER CONFIRMED

By Harvey Wilson

For the first time, an outsider in the wilderness of Argentina, the
Adolf Hitler's top-secret hiding place.
His eyewitness reports of the insurmountable Nazi fortress,
confirms the sensational facts that were first
twelve years ago by the *'Police Gazette'* uncovered and published
became.

While travelling *through the mountainous region of the province - a sprawling wilderness of lakes, waterfalls, gigantic glacial caves and forested islands - Jack Comben, correspondent for the London Daily Express, discovered, 100 miles north of San....., the last secret outpost of Hitler's Germany.*

It was in 1952 that the Police Gazette, having received top secret Allied intelligence reports and information based on interviews with former Wehrmacht officers, revealed that Hitler and his lover, Eva Braun, had escaped from the rubble of Berlin.

When the downfall of the Third Reich was imminent (the Americans are mistaken, the Third Reich still exists today, translator), plans for Hitler's escape (in German: deposition) were drawn up by Martin Bormann, the dictator's closest confidant. The project was entrusted to Admiral Karl Dönitz, Nazi submarine specialist and commander-in-chief of the German Navy, who later boasted: *"The German submarine fleet is proud to have built a Shangri-La on land in another part of the world - an impregnable fortress."*

This *"impregnable fortress"* to which Admiral Dönitz alluded

Machine Translated by Google

was in the heart of the vast area of Argentinean land acquired by Nazi agents in South America. This *'Little Nazi Germany'* covers more than 10,000 square miles

(that is 25,900 sq km) pastureland in the provinces..... and.....
And the armed camp that was about to become Hitler's hideout was in the area north of San.....

(Size comparison:
East Prussia approx. 37,000 sq km
Massachusetts ca 21,400 sq km
Denmark without Greenland approx. 43,000 sq km
inserted by the translator).

Visit Nazi outpost

Recently, in January 1964, correspondent Jack Comben travelled to
.....to investigate reports on the Nazi outpost.
Here is his report:

"I have returned from visiting the extraordinary continuing outpost of Hitler's Germany in the world today

In a camp on the banks of the fast-flowing ..... River,
Miles south of the equator, in the heart of Argentina, live
German men, women and children lived a strange and secret existence under steely discipline.

Residents cannot enter the camp, which
at ..... , 700 *miles north of San ..... is*
The camp residents are forbidden to speak to strangers.
All the men in the camp wear Afrika Korps-style uniforms, with the same peaked caps that Field Marshal Rommel's elite unit wore in the Western Desert."

The camp is closed to all non-Nazis. No one can enter without a valid authorization. Armed guards make this clear. To further protect the secrecy, every piece of mail that leaves or enters the camp is subject to the strictest censorship.

"The camp," Comben reports, *"seems to be completely under the control of the camp commandant, a gray-haired man named* W....
O..... *I have been able to prove that*
O.....was a high official in Hitler's intelligence service. His
right hand is £ ... F...., a former SS officer."

Machine Translated by Google

Fake suicide

When the victorious Allied troops took over Berlin, the first reports from the besieged city were that Hitler had killed himself in his bunker next to the Reich Chancellery. These reports said that Hitler and Eva Braun - whom he had married shortly before Berlin fell - took their lives in a suicide pact, and further that their bodies were then taken to the courtyard by loyal friends, doused with gasoline and set on fire.

This version of what happened to Hitler and Eva Braun was spread all over the world; but *'Allied intelligence'* soon revealed that the *'suicide'* was a hoax.

Members of Hitler's staff who saw him a few minutes before his alleged suicide contradicted each other as far as the suicide was concerned. They all stressed that when Hitler called them to say *goodbye ,* he did not behave like a man who was about to kill himself.

"He seemed more like a man about to go on a journey than a man about to die," one explained. And all the members of Hitler's staff admitted that they did not actually see their leader die.

Colonel WF Heimlich, former head of US Army intelligence in Berlin, who was in charge of the official investigation into Hitler's disappearance, told the *Police Gazette* in an exclusive interview.

"I could not find any evidence of Hitler's death. He had plenty of opportunity to escape. There was an airfield and many planes at his disposal."

Scientific tests

Furthermore, scientific tests conducted by Col. Heimlich and his investigators proved that the suicide story was a deception war..

"Analyses of the blood stains on the sofa on which Hitler reportedly killed himself," Heimlich said , *"revealed that the stains did not match the blood type of Hitler or Eva Braun. There were no bullet holes in the sofa or in the wall behind it."*

In addition, Col. Heimlich has taken X-rays of Hitler's

Machine Translated by Google

Teeth obtained from the dictator's dentist. These would have removed any doubt if teeth belonging to Hitler had been found on the burning grounds. But no such piece of evidence could be found.

Determined to turn over every stone in his investigation to learn the fate of Hitler, Col. Heimlich had a crack U.S. intelligence team conduct a needle-in-a-haystack search of the Reich Chancellery grounds. "First," he said, *"all the rubble was cleared away. Such items as destroyed machine guns, ammunition, helmets, uniforms and pieces of wood were examined."*

No clues found

"A bomb crater four metres from the entrance to the bunker was the primary target," explained Colonel Heimlich. *"Two sieves were set up, one made of wire mesh like a chicken coop and behind it a second, much finer, with 12 mm holes.*

Every shovelful of dirt from the bomb crater was poured through the fine sieve in the hope that some small piece of evidence showing the presence of a human body would quickly be found."

"The X-rays of Hitler's head gave us relevant clues about his dental structure, and even a tooth might have been enough to identify his body. But after days of excavating an ever-expanding area, we found no sign of any bodies, and, more importantly, no trace of fire.

Based on this site investigation, I sent my report to Supreme Headquarters in Frankfurt/ Main, along with pictures and supporting evidence indicating that there was nothing there to support the theory of Hitler's death."

And besides, no woman's body was found in the ruins, although it was suspected that Eva Braun had died with Hitler and their bodies were burned side by side in the courtyard.

How Hitler fled

The Police Gazette was informed by a reliable source that Hitler flew out of Berlin on the night of April 30, 1945. He fled the city in Be-

Machine Translated by Google

accompanied by a woman and flew in a Fieseier Storch. It was reported that they carried several suitcases and travelled to a remote Nazi submarine station in Norway. There, a fully equipped submarine was waiting for them.

On July 10 of the same year, Spruille Braden, American ambassador in Buenos Aires, received a telephone call informing him that two German submarines had just arrived in Mar del Plata (Argentina).
were.

"I acted immediately," he later told the Police *Gazette* in an exclusive interview. *"That same hour I sent two of our best intelligence people to Mar del Plata. They called me and said that there was only one submarine in the harbor - but they confirmed that two German submarines had arrived.*

For 24 hours the Argentine authorities refused to allow our agents to board the remaining submarine. They were also not allowed to speak to any member of the crew. When Captain Otto Wermuth, the 22-year-old commander, was finally asked, he reported that it was just a normal routine trip.

But he would not explain why he had not surrendered to the Allies on May 8, when Germany surrendered. He would not reveal why he had 54 men on board instead of a normal crew of 18 or 19. He would not discuss his cargo, which was unloaded before my men (meaning the US agents; the translator) got there. Nor would he explain the luxuries on board - there were 540 cartons of cigarettes (submariners do not smoke on board) a cupboard full of champagne, wine, Scotch whisky and German liquor."

Was this the submarine that took Hitler and Eva Braun to Argentina
brought?

This mystery remains unsolved.

Mysterious cargo

A month later, another submarine docked in the same harbor, the ambassador told the *Police Gazette, and again he dispatched intelligence agents to the scene. "Again,"* he said, *"they began running in circles. This time, men and cargo had vanished into thin air."*

Machine Translated by Google

"I know that these submarines came from Norway. I firmly believe that they also carried top secret components of German secret weapons, as well as atomic developments by Nazi scientists. I do not believe that they had an atomic bomb at the time, but I am sure that they were close to

were.

Our intelligence officers were extremely burdened in their duties in Argentina by the complete lack of cooperation with the government. In reality, the Argentine authorities protected the Nazis and consistently concealed information that would have been useful to us .

We were never *able to ascertain the full extent of Nazi infiltration in the country. We traced $400 million of Nazi capital to Buenos Aires. Just then it disappeared. One of Hitler's main agents was Ludwig Freude, who was entrusted with secret funds. Since we knew that he was a contact for General Friedrich Wolfe, Nazi military attache in Argentina, he was our number one target. Freude's son was one of Peron's close friends, and for many years his private secretary.*

I tried to deport Freude to Germany, where we could have captured and interrogated him. To no avail. On September 15, 1945, Argentine Foreign Minister Cooke informed me that, despite the importance of the charges against *Freude, the State Department was powerless to deport him.*

Braden then reported to Washington that the Nazis had real fortress in the area around San.....as a built a refuge for Hitler and his inner core of Nazi followers.

"I sent our agents there to investigate," Braden recalled sadly. *"They were mocked by the German guards and ordered to leave. We were never allowed free movement in the area."*

That was in 1945. Since then, various efforts by researchers to penetrate the Nazi fortress have failed, until recently the reporter of the *London Daily Express* received the first eyewitness report confirming the revelations of the Police Gazette 12 years ago.

The End - The End"

Machine Translated by Google

List of sources

1) *"Unusual properties of unidentifiable light phenomena",* Dipl.-Physiker Wo Brand, MUFON-CES, 380 pages. Report from the autumn conference at the University of Tübingen. Reference: DipL-Ing. A Schneider, Konrad-Celtis-Straße 38, 8000 Munich 70.

2) Magazine *"Implosion",* publisher Alois Kokaly, 5600 Wuppertal 1, Schanzenweg 86; Issue No. 25 *"There are no UFOs - but flying discs",* also No. 83 Sept 1981 and other issues. (Quarterly magazine based on V. Schauberger)

3) *"Secret Weapon UFO",* Norbert Jürgen-Ratthofer, six-part article series in the weekly magazine *'Das neue Zeiten',* A. Huter Verlag, Munich, No. 17-22, April-May 1980.

4) *"Confidential communications from politics and business",* Artur Missbach GmbH & Co. KG, D-2811 Bücken, issue dated 16.6.1984, p. 10 5) *"The Encyclopedia of UFOs",* Ronald

D. Story/J. Richard Greenwell, 1980, New English Library, Times Mirror, over 400 pages.

6) *"The German radio direction finding and listening methods up to 1945",* Fritz Trenkle, 1982, AEG-Telefunken AG, Hochfrequenztechnik, 7900 Ulm, 160 pages.

7) *"The German radio jamming procedures up to 1945",* 180 pages, ditto.

8) *"The German radio control procedures up to 1945",* 216 pp., ditto.

9) *'UFO-Nachrichten',* German UFO Study Society (DUIST) eV, Editor-in-Chief Karl L Veit, D-6200 Wiesbaden 13, PO Box 130185.
"The Green Fireballs", Dr. Georg Hunt Williamson, Volumes I + II in issues No. 89 + 90,
Jan. + Feb. 1964.

10) *"Wedding of Mankind",* Rudolf John. Gorsieben, Koehler + Arne-lang Verlag, Leipzig 1930, 690 pages, pp. 295-307.

11) *"Le Figaro Magazine",* Paris, 8.12.1979, pages 57-60.

12) *"Departure into the Third Millennium",* Louis Pauwels/Jacques Bergier Wilhelm Goldmann Verlag, paperback edition 1979, 550 pages.

13) *"The most secret weapon of WWII; engine stopping agent", 'Waffen-Revue',* Jan. 1983, No. 48, Journal-Verlag Schwend GmbH, Postfach 100 340, 7170 Schwäbisch Hall.

14) *"The totalitarian state and total confusion; scientific promotion and surveillance in the Third Reich",* by Dr. Helmut Fischer, Hamburg, *'Frankfurter-Allgemeine-Zeitung',* ca 1981/82, p. 83.

15) *"Flying Saucers - a Reality",* by US radio announcer and author Frank Edwards, 1967, 300 pages, Ventla-Verlag, Wiesbaden-Schierstein. (Book excerpts appeared in the 5-part series of the illustrated *'Kristall',* No. 23-27, end of 1966)

Machine Translated by Google

16) *"Research in Shackles",* Rho Sigma (pseudonym for a German scientist who worked on the German V-weapon development in Peenemünde before 1945 and after 1952 under Wernher von Braun at the American NASA), 1972, 270 pages, Ventla-Verlag.

17) *"UFOs - The Great Unknowns",* twelve-part series of articles, from 30 September - 14 October 1977, *'Bremer Nachrichten',* Bremer Tageszeitungen AG., Bremen.

18) *"Fascination of the Incomprehensible",* Chapter: *"The Mysterious UFOs",* Verlag Das Beste, Stuttgart, Zurich, Vienna, 1983 19) *"The Searl Effect",* Rho

Sigma, 20 pages, Ventla-Verlag, D-6200 Wiesbaden 13, PO Box 13 01 85. 20) "/s/s *unveiled",* HP Blavatzky, Volumes I + II, 1877

21) *"The Secret Doctrine",* HP Blavatzky, Volumes I-IV, 1888, especially

Volume I, Chapter: *'Is Gravity a Law?', 'The Rotation Theory in Science', 'The Solar Theory', 'The Coming Force.*

22) *"Hörbiger's Glacial Cosmogony",* Ing. Hanns Hörbiger, edited by Prof. Ph. Fauth, R. Voigtländers Verlag, Leipzig, 2nd edition 1925, 790 pages.

Hörbiger's World Ice Theory is a world view based on science that provides revolutionary but plausible explanations about the cosmos, sun, moon, planets, the formation of the earth and geological development and much more. Traditions are confirmed, and the Nordic EDDA is also proven to be a tradition about the formation of the world; Ancient a mythology that tells of great geological eras, catastrophes, ice ages, floods, etc.

The world ice theory is ridiculed and despised by the scientific lobby, but has already been confirmed in many areas by today's space research!

23) *"Interventions from the Cosmos",* Rudolf Elmayer von Vestenbrugg, 510 pages, 3rd edition 1977, Hermann Bauer Verlag, Freiburg i.Br. A work written for general understanding based on the world ice theory.

24) *"Revolution in Technology, Medicine, Society",* Dr. Hans *A.* Nieper, Hanover, Illmer-Verlag, Hanover, 1982, 265 pages.

25) *"Energy in abundance",* Gottfried Hilscher, A Sponholz Verlag, Hameln, 1981, 206 pages.

26) *"Man and Technology, Naturally",* Publisher: Gruppe der Neue eV, 2814 Bruchhausen-Vilsen, technical quarterly based on Victor Schauberger.

27) *"The Principle of Dynamic Contrabarism",* Dipl.-Phys., Prof. Burkhard Heim, four-part scientific report in the magazine *'Flug körper',* Wiesbaden, Issue 4/6/7/8, Year 1959, on flight-technical possibilities based on the cancellation of gravity.

Machine Translated by Google

28) *"The UFO Phenomenon",* Johannes von Buttlar, C. Bertelsmann Verlag, Munich, 1978, 225 pages.

29) *"Physics of the Uranides",* Dr. Wolfram Fragner, C 1963 by C. Neidhart, Munich, UFO Research Group Munich/Nuremberg, 8 Munich 9, Naupliastr. 18, (41 pages).

30) *"The Chronicle of Akakor; Narrated by Tatunca Nara, the Chief of the Ugha Mongulala",* Karl Brugger, 1976, Econ Verlag, Düsseldorf, Vienna, 250 pages.

"Awakening of the Gods", paperback new edition, 1981, Heyne-Verlag

31) *"Operation Silver Dust; German-American Platinum War in the Jungle of Colombia."* Arturo Molinero, 1984, Druffel-Verlag. 8137 Leoni am Starnberger See, 256 pages.

32) "The *Enigma of the Andes",* Robert Charroux, 1978, Econ Verlag 33) *"War under water; submarines on the seven seas 1939-1945",* Franz Kurowski, 1984, M. Pawlak Verlag, Herrsching, Econ-Verlag, 478 pages.

34) "Aftermath: Martin Bormann and other Nazi leaders in South America", Ladislas Farago, foreword by Horst von Glasenapp, Hoffmann and Campe Verlag, Hamburg, 1975 Title of the original edition 1974:
"Aftermath. Martin Bormann and the Fourth Reich", Simon and Schuster, New York

35) *"Weapons for the German Atoll",* Hanns Hart, pseudonym for Hannes Reiterlein, adventure novel, Merceda-Verlag, Heinz Borgsmüller, Albachten/Münster, 271 pages, 1959 and earlier.

36) *"The rescue of Berchtesgaden and the case* of Göring", Dr. B. Frank, 1984, Verlag Anton Plenk KG, 8240 Berchtesgaden.

37) Bunte-Illustrierte, Burda-Verlag, Offenburg, four-part series of articles: *"The mystery of the century; UFO - ghost or reality?"* No. 9, 25.2.- No. 12, 18.3.1982.

38) "Conspiracy *and betrayal of Hitler",* Major General Otto Ernst Remer, 1981, Verlag KW Schütz KG, Preußisch Oldendorf, 336 p.

39) *"The German weapons and secret weapons of the Second World War and their further development",* Rudolf Lusar, 1959, 267 pages, JF Lehmanns Verlag, Munich 40) *"Allied hunt for German scientists",* Franz Kurowski, 1982, 295 pages, A. Langen, G. Müller Verlag, Munich.

41) *"The German Secret Weapons",* Brian Ford, Original: *"German Secret Weapons",* 1969, German translation 1981, 160 pages, Molden Verlag, Munich.

42) *"The Golden Cord; Esoteric Hitlerism",* Miguel Serrano, 253 pages, Selbstverlag, Santiago de Chile.

43) *"Adolf Hitler, the Last Avatar",* Miguel Serrano, 1984, 643 pages, New Age Editions, Santiago de Chile.

Machine Translated by Google

44) *"UFOs in the Bermuda Triangle; The Atlantis Secret Base",* Jean Prachan, 1979, 206 pages, Verlag Fritz Molden, Vienna-Munich.

45) *"Without a Trace",* Charles Berlitz, 1977, 290 pages, Paul Zsolnay Verlag, Vienna, Hamburg.

46) *"Das Bermuda Dreieck",* Charles Berlitz, 1975, 254 Seiten, Zsolnay.

47) *"Hitler is Life",* Ladislao Szabo, 1947, Tabano-Verlag Buenos Aires, Argentina.

48) "The /Wangers" (The Avengers), Michael Bar-Zohar, 1968, Arthur Barker Limited, London 49)

"UFOs; Nazi secret Weapon ?", Mattern/Friedrich, Samisdat Publishers Ltd. Toronto, Canada, 160 pages.

50) "The *End of the Hitler Myth",* Josef Greiner, 1947, Amalthea-Verlag Vienna.

5\) "Adolf Hitler; Monologues in the Führer's Headquarters 1941-1944", The Notes of Heinrich Heim, Edited by Werner)ochmann, 1980, 490 pages, paperback edition, W. Heyne-Verlag Munich.

52) *"Another Hitler",* report by his architect Hermann Giesler, 1977, 530 pages, DruffeWeriag, 8131 Leoni.

53) "Escape from Nuremberg; Plans and organization of the escape routes of the Nazi celebrities in the 'Roman Way'", Werner Brockdorf, 1969, 286 pages, Verlag Welsermühl, Munich-Wels.

D. H. Haarmann

II

Geheime Wunderwaffen

..... und sie fliegen doch !

HUGIN

GESELLSCHAFT FÜR
POLITISCH -
PHILOSOPHISCHE
STUDIEN E. V.

This digital
version is
FREEWARE
and not intended
for sale

"Secret Wonder Weapons
II" appears as volume 2
of the series
"Obscure non-fiction"
in the Gonzo Edition.

Scanner: Lunatic Revision
and layout: Doc Gonzo

Forewor

At present II. part of Series of publications *Wonder Weapons'* deals with a subject that is widely discussed in layers of the public still cannot be spoken of freely and openly for the most part, although for present andfuture is of the utmost importance. Mass Suggestions throu theworldmediahaveus Subconscious such-without-us We are therefore hardly able to overcome the inhibition threshold that has arisen in order to deal with this situation in an unbiased way. Still today many believe, by the *modern* media we are informed about all processes in the world.

informed , a more in-depth study will convince you of the direct opposite.

Entire subject areas become false before the public and in the present case with the suggestive Methods as not at all existent beforeour mental Absorption shielded, andthereby our Consciousness kept

But the connections around the *'unknown* Having taken a closer look at '*flying objects',* today's political, military, power structure and The new system is largely onl based on the principle that the worldview

Wallgau, Obb
summer 1983

CONTENT

Flying disc sightings around the clock
'Flight 19, Flight 19
Mantell's Mysterious
Death
500 flying discs over Farmington *'UFOs'*
over Capitol and White House The
Reinhold Schmidt case Mass sightings in
Florence *'Ghost ship over Paris'*.
A 'UFO' cross over the Vatican Fear
and terror in Petrozavodsk NATO
alert for UFO Bremen
Military secrecy - *'enlightenment' of* the public
'UFO' secrecy a plan of *'invisible government'*
Airline pilots under curatorship
'UFOs' - Moved to Space
Appendix
List of sources

Flying disc sightings around the world

For those readers who in the past have hardly dealt with the subject of flying discs at all , shall her aNumberofthemostknown andalso most spectacular events - which have been described in the '*UFO*'- part are already described as the classic cases are known - in general.

Officially, the first Appearance of *'flying saucers'* are always the conn Year bythe Businessmanand Private pilot Kenneth Arnold near Washington nine foreign Flying and vis-à-vis Pr called saucer-like. Again and again the year 47 as the Year of thetoday so-called *'UFOs* can, however, presumably between war events andUFO

The first step was to create a temporal distance between the two phenomena. However, since many reports from the year 1946, Scandinavia and also reports war about events from the classic years are clearly available, cases are prefixed:

Cordon Creighton, former English diplomat, later Adjunct Director the Magazine: *"Flying Saucer Review,"* explained in an interview about his first sighting:

"That was actually in China, in 1941. At that time I was First Secretary at the British Embassy I was taking a walk along the banks of the Yangtze River when suddenly we saw a 'flying saucer.'.... Three years later, in 1944, I was in the United States, in New Orleans. And I was reading in the newspapers the reports of the war in Europe. What amazed me was that the pilots of fighter planes or bombers were talking about being pursued by

Fireballs language At that have I started,

To collect newspaper clippings about the 'flying saucers'. But in 1944 they were not called that yet, that came only in 1947." p. 197/198

U.S. Marine Major Keyhoe:

"The first official reports appeared in 1944.

While of methundr American aviators on mysterious, round, glowing flying objects over Europe and the countries of the Femen East.

Yo gave them all possible Designations: 'Fu-Foo-Fighter' (English: 'Foo-Fighter', author's note).

or 'sauerkraut meteors', depending on which front they appeared over. These early UFOs appeared both singly and in formation. Apparently, their purpose was close observation of the air war's combat operations. Countless times they flew at our bombers and fighters, circling them at high speed. The intelligence officers suspected a new German weapon and checked the related reports after the end of the war. But they found no trace suggesting a secret type of aircraft (A Keyhoe error or one of the usual disinformation; in 'Geheime Wunderwaffen' I. Teil, was

the secret Flying disc development inGermany during the war years; author's note). The phenomenon was inexplicable to both the German pilots and the Japanese aviators.

(Is understandable, after all, if they were classified as 'wonder weapons' under 'top secret'; author's note)." S. 47/48

The 'New Orleans Item' and the 'Washington Star' printed

aTelexfromtheAPpressagencywith the following wording

" Press 13. December (1944)

Since the Allies on the Western Front further progress the Germans have brought a new tool into the fight.

thrown - mysterious, silver balls, which in the air

float. Pilots report sightings of these objects appearing singly or in clusters. (The purpose of these 'floats' is not entirely clear. It is possible that they are a new air defense device or defensive weapon.)"
S. 72

Report of the press agency 'Reuter' of the same day :
"UPPER MAIN QUARTER, Dec. 13 (Reuter) - The.
Germans have during the Christmas season in silence a secret Weap built The new Invention isopen a air defense weapon, similar to the giant glass balls that decorate Christmas trees. No information was available on what keeps these balls like stars in the sky what is inside them or what presumably their purpose might be." S. 72

This, as well as the following report from the 'New York Times' of 14 .12.1944, are in the original English version in Append this Font reproduced:
"FLOATING MYSTERIOUS BALL IS NEW AIR FORCE OF THE NAZIS

Supreme Headquarters, Allied Expeditionary Force, Dec. 13 - A new German weapon has appeared on the western front, it was revealed today.

American Air Force aviators reported encountering silver-colored bullets in the air over German territory. They encountered the spheres singly or in swarms. Sometimes they are almost transparent."

The weekly magazine 'Neue Weltschau', No. 10 of 6 March 1980, wrote in a report about 'Ghost planes the from thousandsof People at 29.1.1980 via Klagenfurt and large parts of Austria were seen among others:
"Older residents admittedly remember the numerous UFO observations that took place over Klagenfurt and Carinthia during the Second World War - we reported extensively about it - and the whole incident is just as reminiscent of those

mysterious 'Air Defense Battle of Los Angeles' (this was also mentioned in our report), when, also during World War II, dozens of planes suddenly appeared on the coast, believed to be attacking Japanese fighters They came under fire, were visible in the spotlight, and several were reported shot down. The fire spell lasted for hours
- the next morning, however, there was no trace anywhere of these mysterious invaders, who of course had not been Japanese, because at that time they could not fly so far.... Something similar was observed over Sweden in 1945/46, so-called 'ghost rockets', some of which flew over the sky with a loud noise, but were neither German, nor English, nor Russian (this can only mean that they had no corresponding nationality markings). For how else could one have known that at that time; author's note). Some of them allegedly crashed, but nothing was found, although American generals who had arrived in a hurry made every possible investigation together with their Swedish colleagues.

From this report, we will first detail the incident over Los Angeles and later the one over Sweden. At
February 25, 1942, about 15-20 unidentified enemy flying objects appeared over the California metropolitan area of Los Angeles, and the FLAK positions stationed around Los Angeles opened fire on them.

The London Times of 26.2.1942 reported this incident as follows:

"ANTI-AIRCRAFT GUNS IN USE IN LOS ANGELES FALSE ALARM.

Self Report New York, Feb 25 Anti-aircraft guns were used over Los Angeles last night for the first time since the beginning of the war The first alarm was sounded at
2:25 a.m. (Pacific time) was given. Almost immediately thereafter began

the FLAK mission and about 30 searchlights roamed the sky and after a few minutes concentrated around an undetermined object high in the air. By now, the city and the entire surrounding area was in an uproar. Cannon fire ceased at 3:30 a.m. At 4 a.m. it resumed for a time. The all clear

was not fro 7.19 Clo reported
This
afternoon, Colonel Knox,of the Navy Department, said that it
Aircraft via Go Angeles been.
During the alert, police arrested three Japanese suspected of sending flashing light signals."

Original English report attached to this

The last two paragraphs can be seen as disinformation to reassure the American people,

other the Soldiers ofFLAK units
military inadequacy be certified.

The following day, the War Department, through Secretary Stimson the case right again:

"As many as 15 aircraft appeared to have been observed; they should be flown at different speeds
be, some very slow, some up to 2000 miles an hour. Altitudes ranged from 9000 to 18000 feet. Units of the 37th Coast Artillery Brigade had fired a total of 1430 rounds of ammunition in the period from 3:12 a.m. to 4:15 a.m." p. 109

See also the document (SECRET- stamped), reproduced in the Appendix, kept secret for 30 years (until May 3, 1972), *"Memorandum for the President (Roosevelt),"* by Chief of Staff Gen. C. Marshall. The document makes clear the event taken seriously by the highest authorities. It states:

1. Unknown Aircraft were probably via Go

Angeles, and were fired upon by batteries of the 37th CA Brigade between 3:12 and 4:15 a.m. with 1430 rounds of ammunition.

2. About more than 15 aircraft between 'very slow' to 200 miles and flying between 3000 and 6000 meters altitude were involved.

3. No bombs fell.

4. No troop losses in our country (USA).

5. No aircraft was shot down.

6. Army or Navy aircraft of the Americans were not in action.

"Frankfurter General Newspap 20.10.1979: *"The 'foo fighter,' a small ball like the one used during the World War II is said to have appeared on both sides, was apparently a reconnaissance aircraft and unmanned."*

"Die Welt", Hamburg, of 3.10.1950 reports a case where these balls had a diameter of only 30 cm.

Of course, there have been not only unmanned but also manned flying discs or flying bullets, even during the war years.

"In World War II and the Korean War, 'foo- fighters' (unidentified lights or objects that accompanied bombers or fighter planes on their missions) were fairly commonplace." S. 241

For the Canadian scientist and Jean Prachan, UFO events begin with the researchers, sixin Formation flying Lights years 1944, amer Atomic Research Center in Hanfort/ Washington inspected. Here is his somewhat abridged report:

"Many researchers have been amazed at how many Reports fro theimmediate Sur Nuclear power and missile bases. The numerous and so plants reports are accurate that the coincidence

can be excluded.

Supposedly it started in 1944, a year before Hiroshima and Nagasaki.... At that time, in the United States and in Germany feverishlyand strictl secret Research the Atomic ready for use.

The American research center was the base Hanford in Washington State. The place was 'separated from World cut off', and only a handful of high officials knew about it. In March of this year, young pilot Jim Emeri flew over this area at the controls of his PT19. Little did he know that the fate of the world was being played out a few hundred yards from here. Suddenly, Emeri noticed that he was being followed by half a dozen 'lights' flying in formation. Curious, he approached to a distance of 300 meters and found that the objects were quite sm diameter of about three meters. The pilot counted above the Columbia River a total of seven objects.... It is likely that this report by Rufus Drake, former officer at Hanford is not the first, as technicians employed at Hanford have seen objects in the sky there on several occasions.

These 'visits' were repeated like this often that they have to AuthoritiesAttention excited and a Investigation was ordered. The employees of the center was However, on this occasion, it was decided to treat this affair with the utmost discretion.

A retired officer who had been at Hanford in 1944 reported: 'The order was superfluous, since our activities were top secret anyway. But we had discussed the things among ourselves, of course. We didn't think of flying saucers, but rather of enemy spies. That worried us the most, because we could not imagine

How so//te he know that there is a top secret research center in this region Besides, these 'planes' seemed to do incredible things. So people preferred not to think too much about it. Some even claimed that they were all ghosts, optical illusions or whatnot. It was not until three years later that people started talking about flying saucers. There

had to
in retrospect in a new light.....' " With the
Dot also ends the report of the former Hanford officer. S. 157/158

Rufus Drake's detailed report, *"Secret U.S. Nuclear Facilities Monitored by UFOs; Saucers over Hanford/Washington,"* appeared in '*UFO Report,*' Spring, USA, pp. 38-41, 60-62.

The following occurred in the Bermuda area in December 1944:

"In Europe, the war was in full swing; the Americans had already landed in Italy and were fighting the Germans doggedly in the air and at sea; both sides were suffering heavy casualties. In order to reduce losses to the 75th U.S. Air Fleet

left December seven American bombers entered the United States. After a stopover in Bermuda to refuel, flew
they continued. 480 km from Kindley Field, the formation suddenly encountered numerous strange meteorological phenomena. They lasted only about a minute; nevertheless, the planes were shaken as if by the fist of a giant. Of the seven planes, only two returned to Bermuda; there was no trace of the other five." S. 33

Various reports about these foo- fighters (enemy fighter planes) of the war years could be cited here. At almost all front sections they were flown by

German as well as from allied side observed They appeared via troop concentrations, over warships airfields, over harbors , over sections of the front and observed the respective battles. As a rule, they a deactive behavior. However, they occasionally flew into Allied bomber and fighter formations, thereby causing great confusion, the formations came to disintegration, then they pursued individual aircraft and circled them. A front experience of Lieutenant Colonel R.M. from Austria, which he reported to me personally, shall be described in short form:

In late 1944, said lieutenant colonel and his unit were in the vicinity of Metz, France, retreating to Germany. In the sky, they observed an in

Directio Germany flying American Bomber group, the like usual Operational to bombing of German cities had. Suddenly saw R. M. and also his comrades, like a bright point of light flew into this bomber bunch, and maneuvered within it in rapid zigzag flights. In a few moments, about 15-20 planes fell out of the formation and crashed, burning. The general reaction to this event was, 'At last the wonder weapons are coming.' But the wonder weapons did not come, at least not to affect the course of the war.

U.S. Maj. Keyhoe, who was given permission at the Pentagon to

Review who wanted to obtain files on the Foo Fighters, arguing was that this particular data would be performed still the Secrecy. S. 103

After the surrender of the German Wehrmacht, May 1945, Foo-Fighters were still observed sporadically over the East Asian theaters of war. Approximately with the end of World War II by the Japanese surrender, 2.9.1945, ends also the allied Designation Foo Fighter at

Allied source material in this regard. Understandable, because II. W.K. was de facto to be regarded as finished, consequently *'enemy fighters'* as the correct German translation reads, could no longer exist. The foreign flying objects sighted especially frequently over Sweden and Norway in the following year 1946 were now called - probably in
Lack ameetingthewordcreation- *'ghost'*. *Rockets'*, althoughthesehavethemanycommon
had as with rockets. In the first part of this series of writings *'Secret Wonder Weapons'* three newspaper reports of the London Times of July 12 and 26 and August 7, 1946 about the Scandinavian sightings were reproduced in facsimile.
The known americ.
Commentator Frank Edwards knew about the 1946 events over the Northern European countries as follows:
"But in the spring of 1946, fireworks erupted in the night skies of the Scandinavian countries and northwestern Russia, observed night after night by thousands of people: faint objects flitting across the sky, often hovering, then changing course and speed so suddenly that this was highly beyond the capabilities of terrestrial aircraft.

Althoug first as 'Rockets reported, result itsel finally that they could by no means be such.
Once there was no exhaust, then at times they moved too slowly to hold themselves as a rocket like that. Third, they flew in formations, breaking them up and changing positions, and most importantly - they moved completely silently!" S. 25

Another source reports over 9 pages in the chapter: *'The invasion of the 'Ghost Rockets' over Scandinavia in 1946'* among other things as follows:

"In 1946, hundreds of press notes on the subject of 'ghost rockets' ran over the Associated Press teleprinters,

the United Press, the Reuter Agency and the New York Times. Only in recent years have documents come to light that were previously kept secret by Swedish and British military services.... In a letter to the Swedish high command from the head of a special organization investigating the 'Ghost Rocket'

wasi it among
'Based on the numerous reports that we have other
received from civilian observers or through mass things:
our office sent out an appeal on June 12, 1946 to all
military units as well as to the military attaches in Norway and Denmark. In the letter, the commanders were requested to record all sightings and data and forward them to us. By July 8, 1946, there were about 30
Messages, during
flowed in. During the July-September period, the
In the period from October to November the wave of reports about 'ghost rockets' slackened noticeably. The total number of reports received by us up to 6.12.1946 amounts exactly to 987.' " p. 111

"On July 27, the Swedish generals decided to announce no more sightings to the press. The correspondent of the London 'Daily Telegraph' cabled to his office the news that since July 29 the Norwegians had also begun news censorship. Nevertheless, direct reports continued to reach the press - proof that the time of these phenomena was far from over." S. 113

"A correspondent for the 'Christian Science Monitor' wrote on August 22, 7946, that by now not only the sighting locations but also the reports themselves were subject to strict secrecy.

A day later, the British Foreign Office admitted,

that English radar experts had been in Sweden with the mission to investigate the 'ghost missiles'.
Yo wouldin Recalled been, at Provide information about the origin of the objects. The However, reports would be secret and could not be made public. S. 115/116

Aime Michel, INCLUDE French UFO-Research Service a Specialist, explains in an interview:

"At that time I already had in my files all - I say all on purpose - French newspaper clippings about the observations in Scandinavia, 1946. At that time I believed, like all the world, that they were captured German planes which the Russians were trying out over the Baltic Sea." S. 199

The Soviets complained in their magazine *'New Times'* on 3.10.1946 that the press agency Reuter had spread the news in the West that they were conducting rocket tests from occupied East Germany, and were working on

the further development of the German V-2. In the process, the Soviets only from 1947 and with the help of abducted German scien theGerman construction V-tists began with.

At other let TheManySightings and Newspaper reports clearly show that the so- the called ghost rockets are in no way objects one Rocket trad TheNew York Times reported on Aug. 14, 1946, that the well-known Swedish daily newspaper *'Aftonbladet'* had mentioned two possible explanations for the appearance of the foreign objects. Firstly, the above-mentioned Soviet experimental missile version and, secondly, that *"Sweden serves as the object of a demonstration directed not specifically against us, but against the whole world."* Whereby to this second version without doubts

agree woul The New York Times article fro 11.10.1946 d be. asafinalreport the strange invasion over Scandinavian skies :

"Swedish military officials said today that after four months of intensive investigation, they had not succeeded.
determine the origin of the ghost missiles that have been flying over Sweden since May.

80 percent of the more than 1000 alleged missiles are 'natural celestial phenomena', but some (200) objects have been detected by radar 'which could not be classified as natural phenomena or products of imagination, and which are also not
swedish Aircrafttr can
Furthermore, the report stated that the objects were not V-weapons that the Germans had used in the
Final of War would S. 65

Who read '*Secret Wonder Weapons*', I.. Part, read carefully will agree with the view that the same ones operated from non-European but nevertheless Reich-German secret bases as the war intensified from about 1943 on and that they rather originated from the experimental series 7 but by no means from the experimental series 1 or 2 (V-1; V-2).

Frank Edwards:

"After the first wave of these novel unidentified flying objects in the spring and summer of 1946 over northwestern Europe, reports of such dirigibles gradually became less frequent, as if they had been withdrawn in favor of a more superior type." S. 26

Let's turn now, as mentioned at the beginning, to the partly already classic cases of UFO literature. Starting from 1947 the Americans gave the objects the nickname *'Flying Saucer'*, flying saucer and still later the meaningless and woolly designation '*UFO':* unidentified flying object.

'Flight19',
Flight 19:

On December 5, 1945, 5 TBM Avenger bombers took off from U.S. Naval Base Fort Lauderdale, Florida on a training flight south of Bimini Island in the Bahamas. The objective and mission was the twenty-minute bombing of a there lying Wrecks of aLiberty freighter . TheAvenger-bomber were manned by the 5 flight officers Charles G. Taylor, Joseph Bossi, Forest Gerber, George W. Stivers, Edward Powers and 9 other crew members. On on the way to their exercise target, they lost with a tim completely lost their orientation. Compass and altimeter fell es The last radio messages to your base make the out. emergency situation clear:

Taylor: "We seem to be off course.... We see no more land."

Radio operator: "What's their position?"

Taylor: "We're not sure where we are...."

Radio operator: "Turn west."

Taylor: 'We don't know which way is west' Everything is wrong. Even the sea looks

The Radio wit thebase radio operator beco interrupted. Fort Lauderdale only hears fragmented conversations between the 5 aircraft:

„... Fuel at most 70 miles left..."

"...Compasses are all going crazy.... Each one points in a different direction...".

Taylor: "Transferring command to Stiver. Take over..." Stiver excited:

Looks like we're... we're getting into hot water ... have completely lost our way..."

The journalist Art Ford had insight into the minutes of the

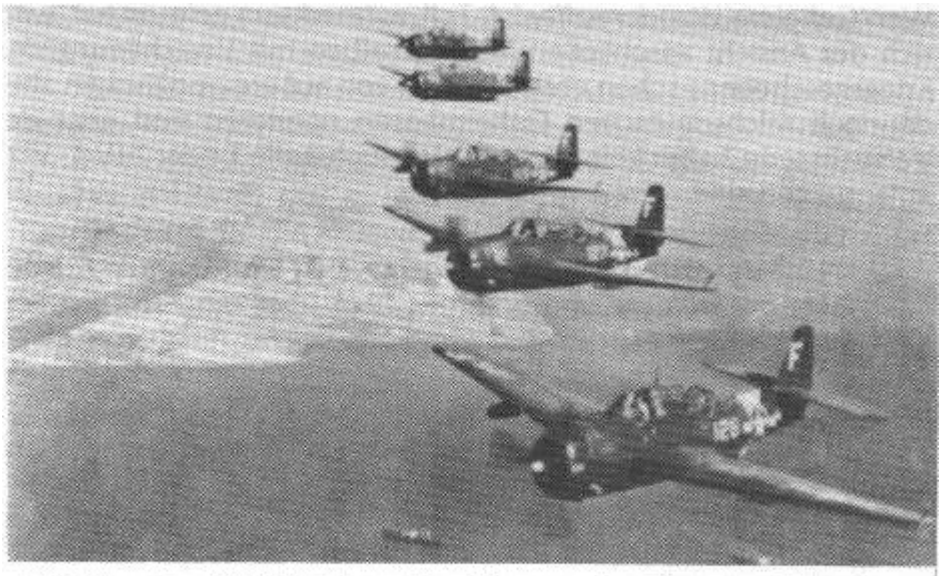
Radio transmissions from Flight 19 requested, from which it still appears that a radio amateur had picked up another radio transmission from Taylor:

Taylor: "Don't follow me. They look like they're from outer space..."

Radio messages taken from 'Bunte Illustrierte, 1982, no. 12.

Anon the last Radio Claims launche two Martin Mariner PBM 5 flying boats from Banana River base to search for the 5 Avenger bombers. One of these Flying boats also did not return, instead, a huge Explosionin Direction of the flying boat . Now a gigantic search operation has been launched, with 307 aircraft, three submarines, 18 Coast Guard vessels and many Cutters.U the british Marine andAir Force launche about out still fro the Bahamas Total search action the US Air Force amountedto 4100 Flying hours. Over100 sqk TheMartinMariner searched. The5AvengerBombers , Flying aswellas Crews applyto today as missing. After 4 days the search was suddenly broken off. off. It was entitled crews suspects that aircraft and, in the Florida emergency landed yet has marshes, all investigative material about found. The Flight 19 and the search operation were subsequently classified as 'top secret'. Even 5 years later in 1950, an officer of the Luftwaffe explained to questioning Relatives of the missing, he was not allowed to talk about Flight 19 because the investigation was not yet completed. Bunte Illustrierte No. 12/1982

A detailed 10-page report in the book by the Canadian Jean Prachan, pp. 18-27.



TBM Avengers. Fünf Maschinen dieser Type verschwanden am 5. Dezember 1945 während eines Übungsflugs (Flight 19) mit fünf Offizieren und neun Besatzungsmitgliedern an Bord. Trotz einer intensiven Suchaktion fand man keine Spur von Flugzeugen und Mannschaft.

Foto: National Archives

Mantell's mysterious

On January 7, 1948, in the early afternoon. see several hundred people in Louisville, state of Kentucky an unknown, round, sometimes white sometimes red glowing flying object estimated at 80-100 m in diameter.

State police there issue a warning message to nearby located *'Fort Knox'* after all,the American state and gold treasury . At least A short time later, the flying object is also sighted from the military airfield of Fort Knox, '*Godman Base'*. Three fighter planes of the type F-51-Mustang take up the pursuit of the object. Thomas F.

Mantelljr ., 25years experienc Fighter and

War participants wit 3600Flight hours is demfremden flying object closest and tracks it to about 7000 m
Heigh Inseinen Radio as: Disc-shaped, enormous, about 170m in Upper part with ring and dome, seems to rotate rapidly around central vertical axis, looks metallic, shimmers brilliantly, is now bright yellow, changes color, becomes red orange. Mantell approaches it to about 350 m. The right wing pilot photographs The object now suddenly rises in the
Angle from45° and disappears with high Speed. MantellverliertoffenbardieOrientation, trundles off and while still in the air his plane explodes. The '*Official* Air Force' later published by the Air Force *Explanations'* were: or Mantell had either mistaken a balloon Venus! (at the unknown bright afternoon 3 p.m.) for one and flying object of great pursued it, passing out in oxygen and height for lack of
crashed as a result. What actually happened at that time has not been disclosed to this day.

New York Times, January 9, 1948, p. 11
Bremer Nachrichten, Episode 1,
1977 Neue Revue, Episode 1, No.
6/1980
Die Welt, Hamburg, 30 and 31 Oct. and 2 Nov. 1950
Page 99-114
Page 49 ff
Page 126

"Die Welt", Hamburg wrote on 30.10.1950 about this incident:

"The first victim"

"At the beginning of 1948 the discs claimed their first victim.... On January 7, 1948, the opportunity arose to make closer acquaintance with the strange visitors. Fort Knox in Kentucky, which was used as a depot of the

American state treasure is known, became the plot of this drama. Around 3 o'clock in the afternoon, at that time when it is still light enough, the first warning was given by the police. Even before that, numerous passers-by had noticed a huge object glittering in the afternoon sun. Soon it approached the airfield of Fort Knox, Godman Base, at high speed.
The airfield was alerted and the large watchtower was immediately occupied. The commander, Colonel Hix, was also there, and with him a goodly number of experts in the field of aviation. They all witnessed the strange demonstration among the clouds. In view of this group of trustworthy persons, any doubt about the credibility of the observation is excluded. They had not waited long when a monster of at least 170m in diameter appeared. It was a new type of saucer, which emitted explosive red flames. Of course, the spectacle was not enjoyed in peace, but preparations were immediately made to uncover the mystery. Three fighter planes had already taken off, and were hunting for the intruder. Captain Mantell, the leader of this fighter group made contact with the people in the watchtower.... It turned out that the

Assumption

were.... (etc. as previously described in summary) One was at a loss. No one wanted to be disturbed by the chatter of
of a 'foreign power' or 'secret weapons' cause a panic."

500 flying discs over Farmington !

On March 17, 1950, at 11 o'clock in the morning, Sheriff Mc Graw was suddenly called outside. The skies of the U.S. oil town of Farmington in northwestern New Mexico were teeming with flying discs. Also on the radar screens of the air surveillance one had discovered the gigantic swarm of strange flying objects in the meantime. The sheriff estimated that there must be about 500 unknown objects,
and they flew onto the hermetically sealed
nuclear exclusion zone of the United States. The same was repeated at about the same hour on March 18 and 19, 1950.
On 2.11.1950 "Die Welt" wrote:

"Later in March, the big day arrived for the people of Farmington, New Mexico. At 10:30 a.m., the

spectacle and lasted a full hour. ...The discs came singly and in clusters, with amazing rapidity. A reporter for the 'Farmington Daily Times,' traveling with five businessmen, saw a whole swarm flying overhead. Meanwhile, throngs of people watched the unusual saucer gathering...."

Bremer Nachrichten, Saturday, 1.10.1977:

"The largest invasion of 'flying saucers' yet observed in the United States was on March 17, 1950, three months before the outbreak of the Korean War. More than 500

noiseles Slices skimmed with
the exclusion zone of the nuclear factories at a tremendous
in New Mexico and showed up three days in a row from 11 a.m. to 1 p.m. over the town of Farmington in northern New Mexico. On March 18, the 'Farmington Times' wrote under the headline 'Great Saucer Armada Flies Over Farmington' that the entire population of 5000 residents had seen dozens, even hundreds, of strange

objects in the sky.

'Whatever they were,' the paper reported, 'they caused a huge sensation in our town which is only110 air miles from Los Alamos' (Los Alamos has research and testing facilities for atomic disintegration).

This alarming event had marked the press conference of April 4, 1950, in Key West, at which Acting President Harry S. Truman declared:

The 'flying saucers' are not native to the U.S. or any other country on Earth, nor are they an American or Russian secret weapon. Officially lets the U.S. Air announce, it have itsel at Cotton flakes traded in the air ..." Episode 1; 1.10.77

On the Presidential Declaration of April 4, 1950, and on the events about Farmington, the *'Neue Revue'* of Feb. 9, 1980, wrote in conclusion:

"However, in order not to alarm the population, the CIA then steadfastly issued the slogan: 'Anyone who wants to have seen a UFO is a nut'! But this tactic did not last long. Because starting from 1950 the UFO reports piled up from of all the world. And one of the most dramatic events in America's history was yet to come." N r. 7, page 30

Wit the most dramatic Event Americasis the The events in the aircraft exclusion zone above the Washington White House are described in more detail below.

'UFOs' over Capitol and White House

On July 20, 1952, at 0:40 in the morning, the air traffic control of the National Airport in Washington and other radar stations, suddenly observed 7 alien flying objects. They performed flight maneuvers and for us unimaginable flight acrobatics even above the no-fly zone.

of the White House and the Capitol. As if the strangers knew it, the military interceptors that were deployed to protect the government on the 3 km away
Air Force Base Bolling stationed were,
Slope repair there, to the '*New Castle'* 160 km away.
Country Airport' in WilmingtonRelocated been.
The requested interceptors, which in themselves would have taken Flight needed, met astonishingly first with
two-hour inWashington one TheU
moved in a wide space around and above Washington
DCandplayedwiththehunterscatandmouse . At
slow flight, they let the fighters approach them at a certain distance, and then disappeared again at speeds unimaginable at that time (10,000-12,000 km/h) to reappear from another side over Washington. For five hours, until dawn (5.30 a.m.) continued

sh the Govt. symbolic sign to
July 20, which was significant in terms of war policy. President Truman, who had been specially awakened at 3 a.m., allowed
to catch up wit PhysicistA . Einstein connect umRat
immediatel
"I don't know any explanation yet Mr. President" said Einstein "but for God's sake, don't let them shoot!" No. 7, p. 30

A few days later, on 26.7.1952, 21.08 o'clock appeared a
Flying Disc Formationto second AboutWashington
Nervousness increased, the public, but especially the
press, now demanded vigorously from the government and the Air
Reconnaiss and Clarification the events.
The *"Rocky Mountain News"* in Denver presented in one editorials the categorical claim finally say: the truth to

"It is an incredible and frightening thought that the Air Force, with all its aids, should be unable to identify the objects.... If these so-called

Saucers require investigations surrounded by the veil of military secrecy, it is time in the interest of common sense to lift the veil....
On the other hand, if we really don't know what these objects are, then we should not brag about our scientific and military advances until clarity is finally achieved here." p. 93

Major John A. Samford, Mana of Air Force Intelligence ATIC (Air Technical Intelligence Center) now received from *'above'* Order a related *to* hold the press conference.

"On July 29 of this year, press the largestand conference was held since the longest of the second end." S. 163

To this conference, held on the occasion of the events of July conducted in 1952 on Washington wrote the , Germany's *"Der Spiegel"*

"It became a Deftly, Samfort took refuge from one question to another.
In a long discussion, he ruled out the assumption that they could have been remotely guided projectiles and defined the saucers as 'something' that had unlimited power and no mass. 'You know what no mass at all means,' he said. 'There's just nothing there.' So the conference was reflected in reassuring headlines, as in the 'New York Times': 'Air Force Reveals Saucers as Natural Phenomena'." No. 17/1954,
S. 28

General Samfordsupported itsel his *'precise Clarifications'* before the press representatives on one of U.S. Physicist Menzel sophisticated theory. These flying discs, sighted again and again and witnessed many thousands of times, are nothing more than an air phenomenon "*that is caused by temperature and*

reversal in higher layers of air." S. 7

Althoug wit Radar onl fixed metallic Flying radar specialists and many other experts would have to be other experienced aviation experts in Washington have fallen victim to a mirage, for which even A. Einsteinyour Night's rest had to. As if the Foreign Power wanted to prove the Pentagon's storytellers wrong, it returned on Aug. 12, 1952, this time with 68 Flying discs to Washington back! The American. Journalist and radio commentator Frank Edwards wrote in conclusion about the incident over the U.S. capital:

"In 1952, when UFOs flew over the United States capital in formation at least three times, military spending was by far the largest item in the entire national budget. For that, the armed forces had the responsibility of controlling the airspace over the nation and, by its very nature, anything that wanted to move in that airspace. But UFOs could not be controlled. So the decision was whether to admit that there was something in the sky that could not be controlled, despite all the billions of dollars that had been earmarked for it, or whether it was better to deny the existence of this whole problem while studying it closely and looking for ways to deal with it. One chose the second alternative." S. 227

References:

"The Times," London, July 23, 1952, p. 5;
"The Times," London, July 29, 1952, p. 6;
"The Times," London, 7/30/1952, p. 7;
"New York Times" 7/28/1952, p. 1;
"Die Welt," Hamburg, July 29, 1952;
"Die Welt," Hamburg, Aug. 1, 1952;
"Die Tat," Zurich, July 30, 1952;

"Die Zeit," Hamburg, May 27, 1954, p. 7;
No. 226, July 1975, pp. 1 u. 2
"Der Spiegel," Hamburg No. 17/1954, p. 28;
Illustr. "Revue," No. 5/1954, p. 25;
Illustr. "Kristall," No. 23/1966, p. 39;

Jagd auf Lichtflecke

Nacht-Düsenjäger verfolgen mysteriöse Gegenstände

Washington, 28. Juli

Von einer ergebnislosen Jagd auf nicht identifizierte „Objekte" am Nachthimmel über Washington kehrten zwei Düsenjäger vom Typ F 84 nach einstündiger Flugdauer auf ihre Einsatzhäfen zurück. Die Maschinen waren aufgestiegen, als auf den Radarschirmen des Flugverkehrskontrollzentrums Washington vier bis zwölf „mysteriöse Gegenstände" erschienen waren. Dieses wurde am Montag vom Oberkommando der amerikanischen Luftstreitkräfte in Washington bekanntgegeben.

Die „mysteriösen Gegenstände" wurden zuerst von Radargeräten auf dem Zivilflughafen Washington erfaßt und waren auch mit bloßem Auge zu erkennen. Das Verteidigungsministerium schickte sofort mehrere Offiziere des Geheimdienstes, darunter erfahrene Zivil- und Militärpiloten, zu dem Flughafen, die die fliegenden Gegenstände gleichfalls auf dem Radarschirm beobachten konnten. Die „Objekte" wurden auf den Schirmen jedoch nur als „sich bewegende grellweiße Lichtflecken" ausgemacht.

Unmittelbar danach erhielten zwei Nachtdüsenjäger F 84 den Befehl zu starten und sich den geheimnisvollen Flugapparaten zu nähern. Einer der Piloten sichtete die Lichtflecken und steuerte darauf zu. Trotz einer Eigengeschwindigkeit von über 1000 Stundenkilometern konnte er jedoch keinen der Lichtflecken einholen. Bald darauf verschwanden sie spurlos. Der andere Düsenjäger, der durch Sprechfunk in das Gebiet der fliegenden Objekte dirigiert wurde, bekam keinen der „Lichtflecke" zu Gesicht.

Während der Sprecher der Luftstreitkräfte die Möglichkeit einräumte, daß die Beobachter einer optischen Täuschung, einer „technischen Merkwürdigkeit" oder einer anderen „verrückten Sache" zum Opfer gefallen sein könnten, bestand der Sprecher des Flugsicherheitsdienstes darauf, daß es sich „mit Sicherheit" um „feste" fliegende Gegenstände gehandelt habe. Eig. Ber.-AP-UP-dpa

"Die Welt", 29. Juli 1952

STRANGE OBJECTS IN U.S. SKY

OBSERVATION BY RADAR

FROM OUR OWN CORRESPONDENT

WASHINGTON, JULY 22

United States Air Force officials, who have been checking the many recent reports of "flying saucers" submitted to them from various parts of the country, are to-day investigating reports that seven to 10 "unidentified aerial objects" were noted on radar screens here early on Sunday morning. These objects appeared to be over Andrews Air Force base, in Maryland.

The Air Force announced last night that the objects had appeared on the radar screen in the air route traffic control centre at the National Airport, first on one section of the screen, and then, soon afterwards, on another section, which showed them moving in a different direction. Their speed was only 100 to 135 miles an hour, which is very slow for "flying saucers." One pilot watched the objects for about 12 minutes as he flew from Washington to Martinsburg, in West Virginia. Another pilot reported that a brilliant light had followed his aircraft from Herndon, in Virginia, to within four miles of the National Airport.

"Fremde Objekte am U.S. Himmel; Beobachtung durch Radar"
The Times, London, 23. Juli 1952, Seite 5

The case of Reinhold

On 7. and 9.11.1957 the daily newspaper *'Rheinpfalz'* see appendix, reported about the Californian grain merchant R. Schmidt who had direct contact with an alien spaceship and its crew in Kearney, Nebraska, USA on 5.11.1957.

Two years later, in 1959, Schmidt reported in his booklet: *"Im Raumschiff zur Arktis - Zwischenfall in Kearney",* the German edition was published by Ventla-Verlag,

Wiesbaden-Schierstein, detailed via hisexperience . Reinhold Schmidt

"The men were wearing street clothes, were approximating 1.80 m tall and weighed an estimated 80 kg. The two Women appeared to be about the same height, weighed about 58 to 60 kg, and I estimate their age to be about 40." S. 11
"They all spoke English to me - as it seemed to me - with a German accent With each other they spoke High German, which I could understand, since I had graduated from a school where German was spoken and taught as well as English; and I could speak, read and write German at that time." S. 13

"While on board the ship, I was told not to start my car until they were completely out of sight, or it would not move at all. This was the first time I learned that the ship had stopped my car." S. 14

Many of Schmidt's statements, including this last quote,

let realizethathis Experience prob hardl could be faked. According to many eyewitness and newspaper reports, it is indeed the case that the ignition of the engines, as well as radio, fail in the vicinity of these flying objects. Even the enemy radar systems can be influenced in this way.

that on the radar screens the same can not always be perceived.

The January issue 1983, of the magazine '*Waffen-Revue'* has shown in a report of several pages with many documents from the last years of the war, that the GERMAN REICH was busy at that time with the ignition interruption of enemy engines (article: *"Die geheimste Waffe des 2. Weltkrieges; Motorstoppmittel"*, p. 7711-7736).

The Jewish writer couple Blum brings in the book.
"*Beyond Earth: man's contact with UFOs*," a report by the

Technical Intelligenc Departme theU .S. strategic Luftwaffe, London, 1944, stating:

"We received alarming reports from various places that bombers returning from Germany always more complained about mysterious engine failures. ... After fruitful discussion among intelligence specialists, we concluded that the Germans were using a new secret weapon that was interfering with the electrical system of our bombers."
S. 67

But back to our *'UFO contact man'* Reinhold Schmidt A large number of reporters came from many US states - after earlier, probably on the initiative of
of the local Police chief in Kearney, an interview with the Schmidt about television was aired - to log his. About 16 hours experience he had to
report Spee and Reply stand.
But the very next day, probably on the instructions of higher governme or military Services -wasour
Grain trader detained without warrant, and later admitted to mental hospital.

But Schmidt remained and stubbornly defended his experience, already in the whole which had become well known. One saw country therefore forced probably also because of his meanwhile

high profile, to set him free again after a few weeks. Schmidt's initial speculation about the origin of the spaceship, but later proved to be wrong:

"In fact, my own thought at the time was that it was a Russian ship, manned by German scientists (many of whom, as we know, were deported to Russia after 1945; author's note.)" S. 75

On page 27 it is reported that on 5 Feb. 1958 again

Contact with the spaceship took place when he drove about 32 km west from Kearney over a country road, and his suddenly trolley stopped again. To his astonished
Question, how one could have found him then, is explained to him:
due to his brain impulses. They went up for a short flight and then declared that they wanted to come back, which they did on August 14, 1958. To
16.15 now the flight went to the Arctic Circle and the Arctic. At times they reached 65,000 km/hr, explaining that *"the plane could go much faster, but the distance would not be great enough to really give it free rein.... This same ship can be used as an airplane in the air, as a ship on the water, or as a submarine under the water." S. 39*

At northern Arctic gifted she withthe Spacecraft for about 4 hrs, at 100-120 m diving depth, under the water surface:

"While we were below the surface of the water, I saw something that has never been disclosed to the public until now. I wrote to Washington and asked permission to publish this report. But until the day I wrote this down, I heard nothing from the Pentagon. Since I assume there is no reason for further secrecy, I will make these announcements now. We observed two Russian submarines, which were

made a map of the bottom of the ocean to establish bases from which they could fire projectiles toward any part of the world without giving warning and without making noise. The space friends told me that our government knows of this activity because three of our submarines are stationed there, and because one of our small reconnaissance airships and some of our larger aircraft have flown over this area. The space friends told me that they will not allow the Russians to do that. They explained that - if we couldn't stop the Russians from attacking the world from under the water without warning and without making a sound -.

they would do it themselves. I am sure that they will are determined." S. 40/41

To one, fromthe Great powers, or the Back then planned Nuclear was the American Schmidt explai *"They also said that they would not allow a nuclear war. They made it clear that they are impartial and will not side with any country, but that they will not stand by and watch our planet destroyed by nuclear bombs either.*

Our Radia also discusse The Space enthusiasts are now applying a new invention to to clean our atmosphere from the radiation caused by the explosion of atomic and hydrogen bombs. This means will fro great low umbrella that covers a large area and not only cleans our air, but at times destroys even the mechanism of the bomb." p. 41

So much from Schmidt's experience report. The statements about atomic bombs and nuclear war will be discussed in more detail later.

Mass sighting in Florence

"On October 27, 1954, mass sightings also occur in Italy. On a hotel terrace in Piazza San Marco in Prato, two men, Cenaro Lucchetti and Pietro Lastrucci, see in the sky two 'luminous spindles' followed by a fiery white trail. Both objects pass over them with uneven speed, one after the other and at a short distance from each other. Then the latter rises to the same altitude with the leading one, both objects make a 45 degree turn and disappear towards Florence.

Few Minut giv it a dramatic Interruption by Soccer between the Teams of Florence and Pistoia. First are the around 10,000 spectators, then the players and the referee stand there in amazement, staring at two celestial objects passing over the stadium. Between 2:20 and 2:29 p.m., the pair of objects passes Florence three times, raining down strange hairy fibers on the city (probably the so-called and already mentioned 'angel hair'). Throughout Italy appeared-long Reports moreover strange event."
Daily *"Bremen News"*, Bremen 1.10.77

Ghost ship over Paris

read the headline of the magazine '*Quick*', Munich, No. 11of March17,1956. Also: *Orly airfield radar station; For three hours, a mysterious missile threatened commercial aircraft taking off and landing."*
The quick texts under the

Images of 3 radar technicians and 2 night shots of the *'ghost ship'* read:

"One of the ten radar technicians at Orly airfield. They all saw an apparition like this (right) on their radar screens and immediately alerted French fighter planes."

"'It was scary!" confirmed radar technician Baruc. For three hours he saw 'the scary thing' chasing other planes."

"The witnesses; radar chief Deveaux was killed with his ten

Em

Ghost ship interrogated. He stated that the 'missile' had been over Paris for three hours. It was twice the size of the largest airplane, sometimes stopped in mid-air, and then returned with a speed of

fro 2400 Kilometers per to speed on.

The proof; Suddenly on the radar screen formed a

banana shaped Fog

Giant body. "He remained motionless, and we could exactly

I could see a DC 3 taking off and a Constellation landing under the giant body. It seemed to me that the ghost ship wanted to observe the Paris air traffic," one of the radar people told. But the ghost ship sped away in a northeasterly direction, stopped there, and finally jumped a

Mail plane against. We feared alrea

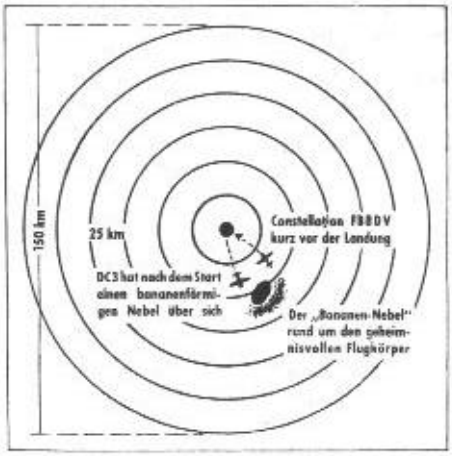
collision, there curved the scary thing: it had a

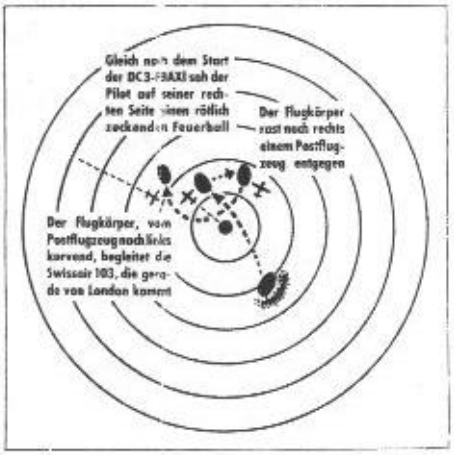
discovered new prey and shot toward Swissair 103 coming from London. In doing so, it crossed the path of the DC3-FBAXI that had just taken off. Its pilot told us of a reddish twitching fireball."

For 40 seconds, the ghost ship followed Swissair 103, then disappeared over Orly just at the moment when the fighter planes alerted by radar technicians three hours earlier could have taken off in pursuit. The

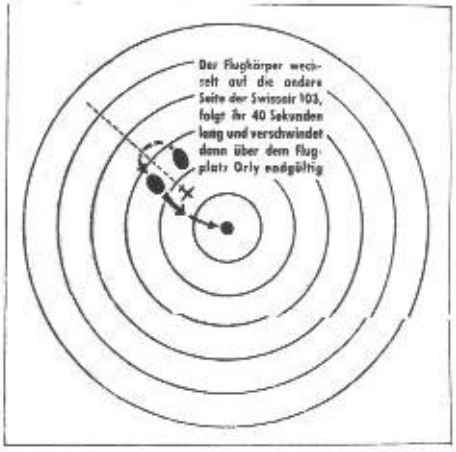
The French General Staff is now investigating why the launch of the fighter Military Tours del 'Unfathomable 'Causes' are said to be to

This is the complete report from the Quick. Also the 3 Flight sketches are taken from the quilt .
Fill let itsel meanwhile already several volumes of reports.





Flugscheiben-Ereignis vom 20. Febr. 1956 über Paris. Drei, der Illustr. *"Quick"* entnommene Skizzen. (19)



A 'UFO' cross over the Vatican!

On November 6, 1954, about 100 'flying saucers' stayed in the sky over Rome for more than two hours (from 11 am to 1:30 pm). At exactly 12 o'clock, 40 of them formed a huge cross in the sky, in such a way that two groups formed a big *'V'*. Each V consisted of 2x10 flying discs. These two V-formations flew with their tips towards each other. When these two formations were together with the tips, they stopped motionless.

and formso exact a greek Cross!
"Often, four of them would form a 'diamond' or seven would 'V'. Then they also came in 'single file' and flew large Curves. Some Male th itsel al 'relay wedges'."
So writesConsulDr . Alberto ItalianCenterforElectromagneticAeronauticsin Rom 43, Via Ruggero Fauro, in a multi-page Experience report: "*Forty UFOs in Cross formation over the Vatican City*", Published in the *"UFO News*", Wiesbaden, August 1970.

The day after, November 7 1954 were again about 50 flying discs, from 12.00 to 14.30, about Rome. Consul (ret.) Dr. Perego still mentions the symbolic meaning of certain UFO demonstrations:

"Later, my research taught me to look more closely at the dates of Attention to dedicate: Rome and London on the 6th and November, the 7th anniversaries of the Russian Revolution." 168, p. 2

Undoubtedly had also the First Washington, 20th July, symbolic meaning! Dr. Perego presents also the question:

"Why did the press conceal the numerous appearance

of these objects about Rome? To whom does it belong?" No. 168, p. 2

Immediately after the Nov. 54 event, Dr. Perego sent his report to NATO's Supreme Commander and received a letter of thanks, concluding, *"Your report is considered very interesting, but it is inopportune to make more details about it available to the public."*

(From *"New Europe - Tomorrow"*) p. 3, no. 1

Fear and terror in Petrozavodsk!

From Sept. 20, 1977 to Feb. 20, 1978, a UFO as large as a soccer field appeared 5-6 times a month over the Soviet city of Petrozavodsk (population 185,000) on Lake Onega, northeast of Leningrad.

One of the largest newspapers in the USA, the *'National Enquirer'* reported about it in detail on April 18, 1978, after the two chief editors of the million-dollar paper William Dick and Henry Gris had traveled to Moscow, Leningrad and the city of the event itself especially for this event. Thanks to their good contacts with journalists there and SovietScientists we owe their detailed report.

The National Enquirer wrote:

"The Soviet Governme appointedimme a scientific research at the highest level and put a security bar on this investigation. However, the Enquirer managed to pierce the cloak of official secrecy surrounding this incident and obtained exclusive interviews with a reporter from Tass, the official Soviet news agency an Soviet Top Scientists to Lead." No. 251, June 1978, p. 7

Now on this 20th Sept 1977 afternoon 4pm the following happened. A huge '*UFO*' appeared over the city for about 12 minutes and sent out golden rays of light, which fell on the city like spray and burned coin- to egg-sized holes in cobblestones of the streets and in windowpanes of many houses. It is also said that five intense rays of light from the huge object were directed at the city, and Petrozavodsk was enveloped in this golden light during these 12 minutes. Literally, the W. Dick and H. Gris report states:

"Window panes with holes of various sizes caused by the UFO's light beams were seized by government researchers" op. cit.

Th Correspondent theSovietNewsAgency TASS, Nicolai Milov, the hundredsof Citizen in Petrozavodsk interviewed, described one of the holes, something larger than a chicken egg, which was burned into the window pane of an apartment building. Amazingly, the piece of glass that was cut out remained whole and was found on the floor in front of the window. The pane was transferred to Moscow as part of the investigation. Milov literally to the Americans:

"After interviewing them (the eyewitnesses; author's note), there was no doubt in my mind that I had met people here who had been confronted with a tremendous event.

Some were hysterical... As a Group fro dockworkers who were working in the port saw the UFO, they ran away screaming: 'This is the end!' They believed to recognize in the body a nuclear weapon which had been sent out by your country (USA) and could explode any moment over their heads. They were out of their minds with fright." op. cit.

With the many other 50-70 mm holes it was

similar. The separated circular pieces of glass seemed to be on the edges like melted and lay either on the window sills orat thefloor . double glazed Windows remained both panes - apart from from the separated round pieces - undamaged. According to this 12 minutes Event via the Capital the north russia Provinc Karelia, hoveredthe strange Flying slow in Direction Port/Onega-Seedavon . Vladimir Azhazha, Moscow physicist, oceanographer, author and Lectur and former Soviet Submar Commander stated:

"The object flew low over the harbor and hovered above an anchored ship 142 meters long. A comparison with the length of the ship led to the conclusion that the diameter of the UFO was 104 meters. As the UFO flew toward Lake Onega, many drivers took up pursuit. The UFO hovered motionless over the lake. After a while, a smaller object separated from the main body, fell straight down and disappeared under the water. At that moment, the main body (the UFO) suddenly started moving and quickly disappeared into a cloud bank."
op. cit.

The Enquirer report goes on to say:

"A senior editor of TASS reported that the news agency received over 1500 letters inquiring, 'How safe is it still to be in Petrozavodsk to stay or travel there?' Before TASS was able to respond Letter RSVP could, were the Writing s Government moved in. Also Fro Eyewitness accounts were brushed aside, the TASS editor told the Enquirer. ...

Professor Felix Zigel, Russia's top expert on UFOs and a teaching professor at the Moscow Aviation Institute, an academy where Soviet cosmonauts receive their specialized training, also thinks the object is a UFO. 'Without a doubt,' he told the Enquirer. 'It had all those characteristics.' " op. cit.

However, in the further UFO appearances over Petrozavodsk in the following months, no more holes were burned in street pavements and window panes. The full National Enquirer report of April 18, 1978, appeared, translated into German, in UFO News, June 1978, No. 251, p. 7

Other sources: "*Bild*"-Ztg., Hamburg, April 15, 1978, p. 8; pp. 196/197; No. 43/1981, p. 21; No. 262, Aug. 1980, pp. 3+4

Analyses of the windows under an electron microscope at a Moscow institute yielded an astonishing result: the usual window glass, which is not crystalline in itself, in this case exhibited a crystalline structure on the surface of the circular sections.

On the night of August 23, 1981, appeared 17 huge

Flying accomp fro abou a Dozen smaller objects over the Soviet capital Moscow and burned there 70-100 mm round holes in 60 window panes. A detailed report also appeared in the National Equirer in April 1982. German translation, UFO News No. 275, August 1982, page 1.

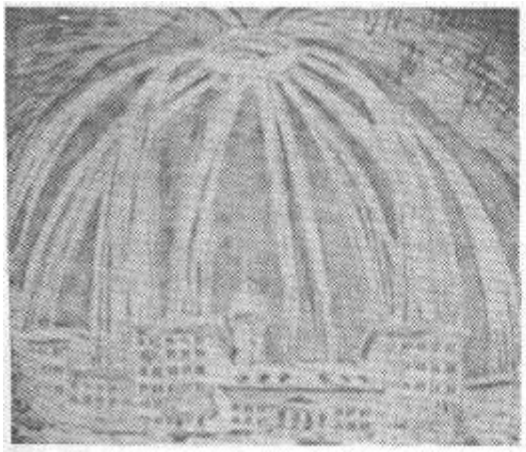
"FLU HO SUPER- JUMBOS' 'RAUMSCHIFFE' APPROACH BETWEEN ISFAHAN AND SHIRAS OBSERVED.

Tehran (dpa)

20 unidentified flying objects (UFOs) 'each 20 times larger a jumbo aircraft', are said to have passed over IRAN.

..."

Westdeutsche Allgemeine Ztg., Essen, 4.4.1978



Nach Augenzeugen-Berichten gefertigte Zeichnung.
a.a.O (16)

NATO alert for UFO Bremen!

Two police officers from the 21st police inBremen-Vegesack saw on Monday, the 14.1.1980 in the morning 9.30 a bright flying object "*in the shape of a cigar*" in Direction Bremerhaven fly (Th North Th Crews of several patrol cars observed have one blue white red luminous disc, which Flash have emitted; sight the police dogs that were brought along es howled (WestdeutscheAllgemeineZeitung) 23.30 o'clock were observed about 20 km north Bremen over the barracks of the Americans in Garlstedt, in the Garlstedter heath, in the district Osterholz-Scharmbeck a UFO of "*hundreds of people*". Over four hours it was sighted at various places and performed capers in the night sky and "*instilled hard-boiled U.S. Marine soldiers*" obvio on; paused at Standstill via military Attachm and took againwith enormou Acceleration values Ride on, and could itsel

make ahead US fighter jets entirely invisible (Weser radar Courier). The air traffic control in Bremen and the base North one in Visselhövede had been informed (The To German). ward off this unknown object.
the Americans have put all their air defense installations in the Federal Republic and in Denmark on alert.
displac (Ruhr News)! FromNATO Support Brockszeldo, Netherlands two US jet fighters of the type F-15 took off. The color photo of this UFO, taken by a farmer in the Garlstedt area, was
confiscated (Weser-Kurier). Student Torsten Hanning found at Arsterdamm (Bremen)
Glittering stones."; a presumed metal alloy, heavier as stone, which were handed over to the *"Institute for Hardening Technology" for* testing (Bild newspaper).

From the various newspaper reports on the UFO Bremen is compiled from aboveimage Acco *"Briefing by official bodies"* reported the press in
in the following issues something completely different: UFOs were again only deception; the brightly shining Saturn, or for instance Sirius from the constellation *'Big Dog'* were mistaken for a UFO. Or somewhat more discreetly: it had been about *"mirror northern lights"* traded. Mass dumbing down in all fields ! ! !

References:

Westdeutsche Allgemeine Ztg., Essen, 15.+16.1.1980
Ruhr-Nachrichten, Dortmund, 15.+16.1.1980
Wiesbadener Kurier, Wiesbaden, 15.1.1980
Die Norddeutsche, Bremen, Jan. 15,
1980 Bild-Ztg., Hamburg, Jan. 17,
1980
Weser-Kurier, Bremen, 18.1.1980
Neue Weltschau, Pabel-Verlag, Rastatt, 29.2.1980

Regarding the *'saucer'* events, in February 1953, U.S. General

the Total Continental Air defense (Air Force Base Colorado) according to the colorful-

"In the course of this conversation, Gen.
literally: 'We have stacks of reports of "flying saucers". And we take them seriously After all, we have already lost numerous men and machines in interceptions' " No. 10, p. 58

The key to why the public knows so little about

learns about these events and contexts, and why a U.S. general would hardly have dared to make such statements after August 1953, is probably provided in an exhaustive manner in the next chapter.

MilitarySecrec - "E yPublic

Mach the increase of the "UFO"-sightings in the years after the II. World War II, the Pentagon, the American.
Department of Defense related Secrecy- to orders. The first order secrecy for the area took place in August 1953 and first of the
US Air Force, for the presumed reason that the Air Force had to assign the most frequent contact with the flying discs. The *"Bunte-lllustrierte"*, No. 9/1982 writes about it:
"The U.S. Air Force, in its Order 80-17, §12, directed how military and state officials should conduct themselves in the event of sightings of unidentifiable objects: 'Let us have two prints of each photograph taken

approach. Describe the records in accordance with AFR 95- 7, and classify the photograph in accordance with AFR 205-1.' AFR 205 means nothing more than 'Top Secret.' Another decree, bearing the file number 200-2, instructs the

Intelligence officers at air bases around the world tosend sighting reports to be and Chie of Air Force the most amazing Set in 200- 'Onl False reports andreal UFO reports may be published. All genuine reports are to be treated as secret and forwarded to the superior office.' So there are 'genuine reports'!" No. 9, p. 85

Rho Sigma, pseudonym of a German scientist, who worked at the V-2 rocket test site in Peenemünde before 1945, and after 1952 under Wernher von Braun at the American space agency *"NASA"* was employed, writes in *"Research in shackles"*, on the complex of secrecy:

"Few Months after the CIA had been incorporated, a highly significant U.S. Air Force service directive, numbered AF-200-2, was put into effect in August 1953 This service directive literally stated that 'the percentage of unidentified reports must be reduced to a minimum.' It was coupled with service directive JAN AP-14 (abbreviation for Joint Army Navy Air Publication; author's note), which dispose Tha any Communi or Distribution fro information about 'unidentifieds' by members of the U.S. Air Force is a serious offense punishable by up to 10 years in prison and a $10,000 fine. All other U.S. branches of the armed forces were placed under the authority of the U.S. Air Force in UFO matters by additional service orders ... All local services were authorized only to release information on UFO reports with known explanations to the press or other interested parties; reports classified as 'unknown'

classified were, were only to 'Blue Book'

passed on." S. 179

By "*known explanations"* are such as: it was the PlanetSirius; Venus; cloud reflections; or light reflections; it was a balloon rising; or a particularly fast and high-flying aircraft or ignited sump gas; etc. meant. Actually unknown Objects, unidentified, that is *=UFOs'* were onl to the so-called *"BlueBook* Commission of Inquiry to be sent.

Ing. A. Geigenthaler, author and UFO researcher, writes about the Air Force orders:

"There have been several Air Force orders over the years. were issued, all of which ran under the designation AFR 200. Thus the order AFR 200-2 of 26.8.1953 contains among other things that to the public only jokes and erroneous reports about UFOs may be given. All real reports are secret to the superior Services to be Pieces of evidence must, if possible, be sent immediately by ATIC (Air Technical Intelligence Center; author's note) to be flown into Dayton." S. 89

Rho Sigma:

"A disadvantage of particular tragedy was the fact that. at Grun AF 200-2 service no Notifications of radar detections of unidentified objects by the Air Force radar operators to the press or the public. Nevertheless, such reports of UFOs during observation sometimes reached the public in a roundabout way and were then usually officially denied the next day..." S. 180

The text of the Air Force order of Dec. 24, 1959 (the title page bears the date of Sept. 14, 1959), translated into German, reads as follows:

"Mode of operation and
UFOs are a serio Matter

sometimes surface treated andas 'Flying saucers' - must be quickly and accurately identified as a
be identified as a serious U.S. Air Force matter. As Air Force Order 200-2 explains, the Air Force is interested in these sightings for three reasons.
1. Is the object a threat to the defense of the United States?
2. Does it contribute to our technical and scientific knowledge?
3. The U.S. Air Force feels a constant responsibility to inform the American people, through the information media, of the following
to in his Airspace proceed
The under thename UFOsummary
Phenomena or actual objects will be in increased
While the public is concerned with events in space, albeit with a certain degree of apprehension, technical considerations will continue to be taken into account.
and such the Defense at this Area at the foreground. The report published around three months ago
Air Force Order AFR 200-2 specifies the necessarily accurate and careful reporting of this as well as the procedure for informing the public. It follows
now the Guidelines for our Air fro
Commander and Inspector to be considered sufficient:
The responsibility to handle UFO matters should be assigned to either the Defense, Administration, Gendarmerie, or Information Officer, in the order limited by the base organization.
One of the officers should be held responsible for this task."
S. 96

First part of this 20-page military order as facsimile in the appendix of this paper. Taken from the informative book by Frank Edwards. The latter had to resign as one of the three most popular and best known radio announcers of the USA: "*Because he talked too much about flying saucers".*
spoken has!", to the Aussagedesehemaligen President of the American. Georg Meany, President of the American Workers' Union. S. 232

Ing. A Geigenthaler:

"On February 5, 1958, new instructions were issued for the Air Force Commands Published, at the Secrecy the Developmen ofUFO research ensure. The commands are contained in a revised seven page edition of AF Statutes 200-2, the official "bible" on UFOs. Page 4, paragraph 9 states: 'Information concerning a sighting may be released to the press or general public by the Air Force base commander concerned only when the object has been positively identified as a well known object If the sighting is unexplained or difficult to identify, the only explanation allowed is that the sighting will be investigated and information about the sighting will be given at a later time." S. 90

Rho Sigma, a man who should know, writes:

"For a period of 15 years, 200-2 was a highly effective barricade against the free dissemination of just the kind of observational data that was most likely to be appropriate.

kindling the scientific." Int theUFO problem S. 182

After these 15 years, the information blockade of the Militar vis-à-vis the Public not at all pierced or entirely canceled, beca

"On 19 September 1966, the service directive AFR 200-. 2 modified and is now called 80-17." p. 90

Regarding the modified Air Force Service Regulation AFR 80-17, Charles Berlitz, grandson of the Berlitz School founder, writes in *"The Bermuda Triangle.*"

"The service directive aims to: '...determine whether the UFO poses a possible threat to the United States, and to use the scientific and technical measurement and testing data that investigations of UFO reports have yielded.'

Although the service regulation makes the reassuring statement, 'The majority of UFOs reported to the Air Force have turned out to be commonplace or familiar objects that pose no threat to our security,' it adds 'It is possible that foreign powers could develop missiles of revolutionary appearance and propulsion.' The assertion that 'so-called UFOs often turn out to be aircraft.' is somewhat paradoxical, for immediately after it states, 'Except when aircraft are the cause of a UFO report, the provision of this regulation states that aircraft shall not be reported.'.... The service regulation further provides, 'Each commander of an air base shall establish a UFO observation post.'..."
The order also contains instructions on what information the commander of a base may give to the press." S. 127

"Shortly after the completion of Project Blue Book, a letter was issued by the Pentagon stating 'The

Aerospace DefenseC (A wit
Responsibility for the airspace defense of the United
States mandated (.....) Consequently, ADC is responsible for unknown aerial phenomena reported in any manner, and the United Army-Navy-Air Force Publication (JANAP-146) facilities provided for the publication of reports originating from nonmilitary sources."

So even though in the eyes of the Air Force flying saucers don't exist, it would still like to know if people are seeing them. Yet under JANAP-146, severe penalties were threatened to anyone who disseminated information obtained about unidentified objects So UFOs are still shrouded in a cloak of mystery - or a conspiracy of silence." S. 42

This *"JANAP-146-Order"* was at Cour of a so-called MERINT TEAMWORK with the Canadian Armed Forces, in1966 , ontotal North American continent. As a result of these Armed connected NATO, ha this Obfuscation order even Validity immilitary Area of the entire western hemisphere. No. 262, 4/1980

The already years ago mysteriously deceased Amer. Radio and television commentator and journalist Frank Edwards, gives on the regulations JANAP146 and AFR 200-. 2followingsummarizedstatementandassociatedwithanessentialquestion:

"The first-
Unknown Ob conventional
Airc anyothe known

phenomena are to be 'explained', and it transfers to the Air Force this task. 'AFR 200-2' then specifies exactly how the Air Force is to conduct its investigations and by whom the public statements are to be made.

For anyone who violates these provisions are

heavy Penalti provided. TheApplica this provisions is evident in the innumerable and contradictory statements that one can find on Gave inquiries about UFOs not only to the public but also to members of Congress." pp. 225/226

Edwards now wonders why this censorship, why lets

itsel our Governme so if it single-wall Obfuscation project one is not unconditional would be required, and

"A key to this unfortunate policy with respect to UFOs is perhaps to be found if one takes into account that these appeared in droves over northwestern Europe in 1946, only less than a year since the end of the most catastrophic war Mutual Beargwöhnung at the international level was high, and Communism's marriage of convenience with the Western powers to overthrow National Socialism had expired." S. 226

Was the *"marriage of convenience"* really over after World War II? Admittedly, in the first post-war years, one side suspected the other of having made better war-technological spoils, even of having come into possession of the so-called wonder weapons. But this mutual suspicion was found to be unfounded after a few years, and since then the *"marriage of convenience"* stronger and firmer than ever before, which will become apparent in the following, even if the media propagate the opposite and even drivel about the so-called East-West conflict.

"*The New Age*," No. 30/31/32/1982 reports under the

Title: *"American Evidence.*

1. Part: *"The CIA knows everything about UFOs*",
2. Part: *"Sensational Secret Reports*",
3. Part: *"UFOs monitor US nuclear weapons*

at length and in some cases in detail about the methods of secrecy, cover-up, distortion of reports and denials.

In the three-page article "*Saucers; but they fly*

but", wrote "*Der Spiegel"* already on 30.3.1950 about the term *"Saucer Denials*:
"They've had to have the U.S. Department of Defense since the 24. Jun 1947at regular intervals Publish."

June 24, 1947 was the day on which the American. Businessman Kenneth Arnold of Boise, Idaho flying his private plane over Mount Rainier, Washington nine Saucer-like Objects observed and then called them *"flying" in* front of the press. saucers". And the press took up this term also readily, since it served rather the amusement than the seriousness of the whole affair. Mockery and ridicule has remained one of the most essential psychological weapons in the flying disc complex to this day!

"Die Welt," No. 84, April 9, 1957, p. 3 *"Hunt for Missile X; Major Alert in England - What Do the Experts Say?*":

„... explain thelea of American Investigative Committee on Aerial Phenomena, Keyhoe, last Thursday that the U.S. Air Force had not reviewed the investigation findings on flying saucers covered up and Senator Russell, who had one of those missiles viewed have forbidde anyth fro his observations to the public. Also have acc Details Jet fighter the Air force opened fire on unidentified flying objects"

"The Mirror", No. 17/1967 lament itsel in a multi-page article abo *"Flying saucers"* over the confusion tactics ve US Air Forceat S. 162: *"For years, the U.S. Air Force, when it received reports of. examined unidentified flying objects ("UFOs"), which reports as hallucinations or as natural explainable phenomena*

dismissed." But because of the strict orders of silence, the individual members of the air force and also the respective military spokesmen could not act otherwise. In a typically lurid article of the "*Bild-Zeitung"*, dated 17.3.1982: *"Unheimliche UFOs über Hessen: UFOs: Also sighted in radar"*, it says:

"U.S. forces on Rhine/Main have spotted four unidentified flying objects on their radar screens A U.S. spokesman: 'Military secret - we don't talk about that' "

In the chapter "*Conspiracy of Concealment*," writes R.

Stemman to *"Behavior the Air Force."*
"While she continued her difficult investigations,
mocked she publicly raised the
unidentified flying objects and tried to press
wit Explanation
to be fobbed off." S.

Prof. Dr. James E. Mc Donald of the University of Arizona (USA):

„... later reported that when he first looked at the documents and reports, he was almost struck by the blow.]The more he delved into the files, the clearer it became to him that the purpose of the investigative commission was by no means to
there Passed have, any Phenomena at
to investigate or even to clarify, rather one is from the outset
to alway again anxious been, itsel reporting
To persuade eyewitnesses to testify that they were the victims of sensory illusions. In the selection of means
The intimidation of the witnesses was not done in a squeamish way. Most of the scientists working in the commission had turned out to be straw men of the CIA 'I myself', Mc Donald emphasized, 'have been able to see clearly in the meantime that the flying objects are a very real matter.' „ S. 521/1975

UFO Secrecy a Plander "Invisible Government"

The plan for concealment of the flying disc facts, of course, does not come from the lower echelons of the military, the press, politics, science, authorities and departments of the Eastern and Western states, but in each case from the very top, from the governments, or rather, from the *"secret powers"*, behind the governments. Engineer, Dr. h.c. Rho Sigma (pseudonym),

Member of American Institutesof Aeronautics and Astronautics, writes:

"The one informed radio commentator Frank Edwards has stated bluntly 'The orders for secrecy regarding UFOs come from the top. The Air Force is simply the whipping boy, the executive body." S. 188

Canadian government scientist Wilbert B. Smith, former head of "Project Magnet" (the name given to the Government to Investigation unknown flying objects), asked who, in his opinion, the UFO-Inf the kept away *"A small group very high up in government." p. 189*

The magazine *"Esotera"* comes in its detailed, multi-page article *"Geheimsache 'Fliegende Untertassen'"* likewise on the causers of the cover-up to speak:

"The fact that the Central Intelligence Agency is not just any secret service - as most countries in the world maintain it and as it is often naively imagined, especially in Europe - but that even the highest government circles in the USA cannot escape its global power is explained in the book by David Wise and Thomas B. Ross "The Invisible Government".

Government)' with all clarity:.... In fact, the CIA is one of the instruments of the CFR (Council on Foreign Relations- a '" meaningless term intended to disguise the actual goals). ...“ S. 518/519

CFR-The Invisible Government! The CIA of an the instrument of the CFR.

Not once US Presidentshave the Power, the Flight gyro facts at air. In a related Article: *"Is America concealing the truth from the world?"*, writes the *"Neue Revue"* of 2.2.1980, p. 3:

"Carter, then still governor of the state of Georgia, testified: 'I was in Leary, Georgia, with ten members of the Lions Club in early October 1969 to give a talk. During a break, we suddenly caught sight of the UFO. It was bright and large like the moon, shimmering first bluish then reddish, and came within 300 yards of our group. We were able to observe the eerie object for almost ten minutes before it disappeared into space again.'

The statement of the President of the United States at that time already led to bitter debates during Carter's election campaign, which ended only when he pledged to have all the country's secret archives about UFOs opened in case of his victory. He did not do it until today.

Is Carter afraid, like all his predecessors since 1945, that the whole world will panic when the truth finally comes out?"

AboutCartersExp reports the *"Weltam* erience *Sonntag"*, of 1.5.1977. In ReportfromConsulDr . Alberto Perego, Director of italian Centerfor electroma inRome : " gneticaviation *FortyUFOsinVaticanCity,"* written question of Father Zilwe (Rome) from 20.11.1956

spoken. In it Father Zilwe asks the question why the problem of the *"flying saucers"* would not be considered at all by the science. The answer of Consul Dr. Perego to the Father was:

"Because all governments keep this thing secret and the scientists are paid by the governments - that's why they prefer to keep quiet." 8/1970

AP report, Dec. 31, 1970:

"Former Undersecretary of the Interior Stewart L. Udall said Wednesday that the American scientific community, with few exceptions, is made up of 'political eunuchs.' Udall goes on to explain that the National Academy of

The authors of the study argue that the Governme scientific community nt' consists

Airline pilots under curatorship!

Radio commentator andjournalist Frank Edwards: *"Repeated Air Force statements, usually issued after each series of conspicuous sightings, describing UFOs as nonexistent, led many press organs to believe at the beginning of 1954 that these claims were true. For in January 1954 there were only two*
Sources of importance for UFO information: Airline pilots and my radio program on the 'Mutual Network' station. The systematic eradication of these two factors was therefore immediately undertaken." S. 234/235

Edwards reports further, that on 17 Feb. 1954 in the Roosevelt hotelin Hollywood, betweenofficers of inte theRepresentativesofthePilotsAssociation civil airlines, a conference had taken place,

with the purpose of getting pilots to cooperate in a "*matter of extreme importance to the government."*
"Civilian pilots were urged each time a UFO was sighted to notify the nearest military airport by radio and not to make public statements about such incidents. This request was immediately passed on to the pilots by the airlines..... By mid-1954, therefore, most if not all civilian airlines in the United States had adopted special rules for handling reports of UFOs. Here the Killian case is an example of what awaits a pilot who dares to deviate from the orders of the Pentagon censors.

But
of credible witnesses have gradually pierced the censorship curtain." p. 235

Rho Sigma:

"... and ridicule was one of the main factors
at of this Traffic Pilots have bitter Experienced doubting of their reports by the Air Force.... The result of this policy in the second half of the 1950-60 decade was from the reluctance of the
pilots apparent to report UFO observations; a reluctance that was reinforced in some cases by instructions from airline administrators to their pilots stating that under no circumstances should they publicly report any unidentified flying objects sighted in flight." S. 173

In the article in the *"Bild-Zeitung"* of November 22 , 1980:
"UFOs: green orbs tracked seven passenger planes",
beco reports:
"The airline 'Iberia' banned its pilots from speaking".

The weekly newspaper "*Die Zeit,"* May 27, 1954, p. 7 reports in the article "*Is the Earth Under Control?*":

"On July 29 (1952: author's note), General Samford, the head of the Secret Service, told an elite group of journalists that of the reports on the 'saucers,' the fifth part was necessarily credible; but that, according to the theory of the physicist Menzel, it must be an aerial phenomenon act, the bytemperature inversioninhigher air layers.

The effect of this official statement was unexpected: the highly qualified Pilots sent questionnaire back, and wrote to that effect that they would not report anything more if they were believed at the Pentagon to be unable to distinguish 'ground clutter' from real objects."

It is quite possible that this reaction of the pilots was intended. Because in the book *"Flying Saucers - Enigma in Space"*, chapter *"Conspiracy of Silence"* is reported about the years 1947/48 and the attitude of the Pentagon as follows:
"The Pentagon no longer seemed to want information confirming the existence of UFOs, only statements that they did not exist. This attitude was confirmed in February 1949, when the code name of the thena 'Resent (Investigation Project for "UFOs"; author's note) was transformed. The new project was joined only by people who followed the new policy of dismissing any report of UFOs as a misidentification or presenting them as a figment of the imagination." S. 147

The weekly magazine "*The New Age"* reports, on the view of Earl Clancarty, member of the English House of Lords:
"Count Clancarty is firmly convinced that between the USA and the Soviet Union concerning the unidentified flying objects, as the UFOs are called with full name, a

secret silence agreement exists" No. 31/1980, p. 9

Frank Edwards comes to similar conclusions as the English Count Clancarty:

"As I gathered the material for this chapter, I became so fully aware that the Soviet Union's tactics in dealing with the UFO question were similar to our
own Governme alm totall gible. ...
But in both Countri was the first larger
Sighting wave officially with the declaration dismissed that it nothing unusual and that the alleged objects were not
nothi other as Hallucinations be.
When that was no longer possible, both countries began to
The Soviet Union is currently testing a 'secretly constructed apparatus of its own'. While the Soviet Union reports from
UFO sightings as Crazy, Liar or Traitor they had either hallucinations, a
pathologica Appreciation or sh weredrun
l been..... Meanwhile but, during theDepar
propaganda was still throwing sand in the eyes of the
both governments had launched huge investigation and countermeasure programs and installed gigantic facilities at a cost of billions, which were constantly expanded.

In summary, Russia and the United States have proceeded in the same way and used the same technique to deal with the same problem." S. 258/259

The nuclear facilities, and the military and strategic

Centers andoperations at Soviet
Of course, from the UFO power, the Third Power,
observed in the same way as in the Western Hemisphere. Although the Soviet bloc is more self-contained and information generally flows more sparsely, in the last few
Decades a all substantial Quantit fro

Sighting reports and UFO eventsat us familiar have become. But even in the east, people work with the same psychological Weaponsagainstthe almost flying Facts. could Lord Clancarty wit his Insofar presumption secret Silence agreement between East and West quite right lie. In August 1982, the Message from SovietScientistbythe West German press. Professor Grigory Barenblatt has UFOs were *"found" to* be merely a collection of dust particles associated with air currents.

See Facsimile reproduction fro the West German-General Newspaper attached.

Desp the Censorship, via our strange Over the past 30-40 years, flying objects have not been appeared in small numbers in the press organs. It was not censorship per se that has prevented the enlightenment of a broad public to this day. But rather:

• *Denials from "official side", governments, military, scientists, etc.*

- *The Ty and Wise the Press*

What serious and busy reader has already given a article with the stupid headline "Green men landed from space" devoted his time and attention? Even the best article with the most reliable facts and reports, will - with this psychological trick

- *fro the intellect Re Reade shielded ridiculousness kills!*

- *Or the Reports wit to Offense bordering Mockery often of many eyewitnesses, such as: "want seen have"; "have probably fallen victim to hallucinations"; "mistook the star Sirius for a UFO"; "was just the reflection of airplane headlights under the cloud cover"; and more recently, "was a burning up Satellit the Great at Re-entry in the*

other Evasion. untrained Sky observers received with the editorships, or have allowed themselves jokers a prank But these are and remain nevertheless the exceptions.

Wh at this Millennium event itsel the frequent practiced I would will certainly use the "*latest scientific findings"* of Prof. Barenblatt from the Soviet Union to be extrem valuable.

Those others, however, should, as well as it is possible, Censor inform themselves further and follow the undoubtedly ship and most Incident the World History the Do not fail to pay attention.

'UFOs' - Moved into space

With the terms: *"extraterrestrial beings", "UFOs come from the universe", "extraterrestrial visitors",* etc. is inextricably linked the name Donald E. Keyhoe. One could call him therefore completely correct also the father of the extraterrestrial theory. Keyhoe, former major of the US Marine Corps, was friends with polar explorer, Admiral Richard E. Byrd, the head of Operation *High Jump to* US Marine Antarctica in 1946-47. Major Keyhoe was Fliegers personal adjutant of the world-famous become director Charles Lindbergh, undavanced later to for years of NICAP (National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena) to the National Research Committee on Aerial Phenomena.

Wi The increased occurrence of the so-called saucers in the first th years after the Second World War caused nervousness, the uncertainty, and insecurity among U.S. military command

and Indecision regarding ofdefenses
on the one hand, and the attitude towards its own population
on the other regarding the Question: sho man the Public only say?, strongly noticeable.

It isavery natural human Weakness, to suppress oppressive and unpleasant things from the own as well as from the consciousness of others for the time being. The most obvious method in this area of events was, at least initially, to claim that these repeatedly sighted saucer-like flying spinning tops exist at all.
not. It are optical illusions ,fantasies, Mirages and much more. (what certainly for a part of the Messages too). TheUS Department of Defense
the Air Force Intelligence, the CIA, FBI and many more
mili Political organizations use
for the time being also diligently this method. But one had to get be clear from the outset that these alone will not be able to
Year to promising its could.
Major Keyhoe begins his globally publicized book
wit the following in Text reproduced in facsimile

"Throughout the last year, I've been working behind the scenes at the Pentagon, the War Department building in Washington, watched as the Air Force grappled with the dangerous question:

WHAT TO TELL THE PUBLIC ABOUT THE FLYING SAUCERS?

Sin 1951 isa selected Group high government officials have been briefed by Air Force intelligence on the saucers, and many a former skeptic has left those highly confidential meetings with serious worry lines after listening to the intelligence officers' revelations."

There is a big difference between the questions:

I) Where come the flying Saucers really?

II) WHAT TO TELL THE PUBLIC ABOUT THE FLYING SAUCERS?

Th Problem or Question themilitary Leadership circles (II) already shows that the answer to this question will hardly have anything in common with the actual origin of the flying discs.

On question l, in the first post-war years, there was, as also later and even today, in the U.S. Department of Defense probably no ambiguity:

"At the Pentagon at that time (meaning the dramatic incident in January 1948 in which Officer Thomas Mantell died after a collision with a flying disc), they were still convinced that the mysterious flying objects were the secret weapon of an alien but thoroughly terrestrial power, and they were horrified by the fear that the United States might one day be brought to its knees by them," writes Esotera magazine, p. 516, 1975

But this is about question II. It was Major Keyhoe who, at the end of the 1940s, when more and more Americans believed in the existence of flying saucers, took up the saving idea of the Air Force Intelligence Corps (ATIC):

"A callup survey of American cities found that one in four U.S. residents believes in the existence of the 'Flying Saucer' Then the American magazine 'True' dropped a journalistic atomic bomb: 'For 175 years, Earth has been under observation by living, intelligent beings from another planet.'

That was the conclusion drawn by aviation expert Donald E. Keyhoe after eight months of investigative work for the magazine.

Keyhoe with
Communicat fro the pastcentury
merged." Der Spiegel, 30.3.1950

In his book published in the early fifties:

'Flying Saucer *from outer* Space', or in the 1954 German edition: *'Der Space closer* ', writes Keyhoe itself: *"In 1949,after months of collecting True, in which I expressed the view that the saucers were probably interplanetary machines." S. 21*

The initial and also understandable reluctance of the Pentagon against this new space theory - they still wanted to stubbornly stick to the denial pursued so far was increasingly in Keyhoe 's favor:

"In early 1952, the respected million-dollar illustrated magazine 'Life' surprisingly appeared with an article, 'Did we fro the World Space?' The Magazine had abandoned its original attitude of amused skepticism and seriously believed in the reality of flying saucers after reviewing the research material. The article had been written with the support of the Air Force. The 'Life' editors, who had interviewed well-known rocket researchers, astronomers and astrophysicists, came to the conclusion that they must be inter-planetary vehicles." Der Spiegel No. 17/1954, p. 27

Finally, for his planned book and to better substantiate an extraterrestrial theory , 51,

so farstrictly classifiedfly disc sighting by theUS Department of Defense to Provided . With bacon you catch mice and with explosive, previously

It is easier to support a deliberately misleading theory with secret facts. Why one should tell also just here the whole truth to the public? Where, at least with the most essential events of the Second World War, the world public is almost exclusively occupied and deceived!

Th narr Collabora wit highest

The preface of his book already indicates that he is a member of the military:

"Sin Jul 1952, on the of Testing of saucer problem, I was given the privilege of working with the Air Force. Because of my understanding of the very serious problem and the dangers it posed, I had been given information that would help the most Americans unknown were.

Many dozens of impressive eyewitness accounts from TechnicalAir Force Intelligence released Some of them were bef would As Result this closecooperatio - ..... In conclusion, I would like to thank all officers and officials - thank not only the Air Force, but also other government agencies - for their generous assistance in my lengthy investigative work. Without their advice and guidance when I hit dead ends, this book could not have been written.

DONALD E. KEYHOE
Major, U.S. Marine Corps, Ret.

Another document for his cooperation with the Pentagon in the development of the extraterrestrial theory, and also for the not yet fully convinced readers of this

The subject of flying discs is discussed in the reproduced attached document from the Pentagon to the Major Keyhoe, publisher of Holt & Co . (see original document in facsimile; attached).

The German translation is:

"Dear Sirs,

we acknowledge your letter regarding a planned book on "Flying Saucers" by Major Donald E. Keyhoe,

Marine Corps of United States.
We in the the air know Major Keyhoe as

long association and his cooperation with the Air Force in the investigation of unknown flying objects give him the qualification as a leading capacity in this field of investigation. All observation reports and other information he cites were released by Air Force Technical Intelligence at his request and made available to him.

The Air and the the underneath investigating authority, Committee Blue Book, are aware of Major Keyhoe's conclusion that the "flying saucers" came from another planet. The Air Force has never denied this possibility. Some committee members believe that there is an alien, natural phenomenon, as yet totally unknown to us. But if the obviously

controlledflight fro manyexper observers are really true, then the only explanation is the interplanetary origin of the machines.
Yours sincerely gez.
Signature Albert M.
Chop
Air Force Press Department"

Der Spiegel, No. 17/1954, the weekly newspaper *'Die Zeit'*, May 27, 1954, and many other press organs took up the at that detailedwithKeyhoe
"Space is moving closer to us". With books, articles and Presentati hater thistheory only in the world public, the actual idea for this came from the probablyfro US Air Force Intelligence (ATIC) itself:
"The first official recognition of unknown flying objects

The first report on UFOs in the U.S. came in 1947 in a letter from the Chief of Air Technical Intelligence Center to the Commanding General of the Air Force, in which he stated that the conclusion had been reached: "UFOs are real! And only a year later, the same body sent a report to the 'Air Force Chief of Staff, General Vandenberg, whose conclusion was: UFOs are of interplanetary origin!" S. 158

U.S. Navy Delmer Fahrneyeach of of Ro Marine at Major Keyhoe: *"We are still years away from the saucer stage of development, or even anything like it" "In 47" I (Keyhoe) said, "two or three*

Air Force officers suggested the saucers might be Russian in origin. While I don't believe it -"
"Impossible," Fahrney replied flatly. "That was just a hasty reaction without careful consideration. The Soviets could not possibly have had such a head start on us in '47-even today-no matter how many German specialists they kidnapped to Russia. No, no. Either there are no saucers - and these reports are difficult to refute - or they are of interplanetary origin." S. 54

If the saucers already not American. and Russian

Being so they have to be taken care of of origin, planets by others , especially by the when it onl still theref goes Wh say the Public!
Wit the most officialtran theextremely unpleasant saucers, on partly outside our solar system , thewhole Problem onl still and for people as nebulous fantasies not or no longer seriously.
and usually not pursued any further. A stage victory for the PENTAGON!

Even as early as the forties and fifties, apart from the usualSightings andEvents inAirspace Flying discs - mostly landed in lonely areas - and often observed only by individuals. Sporadically direct contacts have also taken place, in some cases with conversations in the local language. In the serious takers, fro reliable People created In the protocols of experiences there was with overwhelming majority always talk about tall (approx. 1.80 m) people of white race similar to us as flight disk crews, so that - however starting from the today usual extraterrestrial theory - is correctly concluded in the book *'Astrobiology':*

"In itself, it is just a joke that the various 'Contacts', who have already wanted to see UFOs land, always saw beings of strange celestial bodies coming out, which looked exactly like the colleague or the colleague from the office next door. The allegedly on the earth so far landed planet beings resemble according to information of all 'Kontaktler' the European-North American type of white race. Not a single black, yellow, red, blue or green planetary human has been sighted so far. The body dimensions correspond exactly to ours. In this point we may go even further than the representatives of the UFOlogy. It would be downright absurd to assume that intelligent beings from strange worlds show such surprising similarity with us." S. 20

Already at that time, when the world press increasingly went over (had to go over?) the '*official, official'* assumption of the extraterrestrial origin into its UFO reports flow

Allow reported more and more serious Personalities who are stat Beings, from other planetary spaces, but hardly such Si Appearance, in thebody sizeand milarity wit us have could.

"Alreadyonethousandyearseparatedevelopmentof Being once same Descent, among other Food, gravitational- and atmospheric Conditions, would alread pur outwardlyrecog lea perceptible Diversity nizeone ve Acco this doubts, etc., one even had Fro Pages of Scientists to m more too long wait, andthefirstpartlyrevamped AND PARTIAL nebulousreports esc flying also *'greenmen ', 'monkey-like', 'whol hairy', 'dwarf-like', 'slit-eyed'* creatures, to Part monster with webbed feet between fingers and Toes, provided with claws, and what the Fantasy other high holds

Very carefully Frank Edwards formulates what he thinks of these invented or reworked contact reports with strange beings:

"So the descriptions of such visitors, coming from all parts of our globe, are amazingly uniform. Either there is a worldwide conspiracy to lie about these things, or a great many people, including those who have never heard of 'flying saucers,' are lying about them.

must have seen very strange creatures of unknown origin." S. 166

The observers may well be quite real flying discs, and at Landings alsotheir normal looking but crews have seen and also reported, what the media make of it, that becomes '*public opinion'*, and not the real facts.

The example of Dr. Hynek will be used to show how the term '*little green men'* alone came into being J. Allen Hynek - who Frank Edwards claimed had *"a special talent for solving UFO-related problems 'obliquely'"* page 172 - is a professor of astronomy at the

Northwestern University in Evanston (US state of Illinois), and sin 1948Consultan of theU.S. Air ForceonUFO Alone more than 20 years Hynek was advisor of the American. '*Blue Book*' cover-up project. In his report in the Mirror No. 17/1967describes Hynek like to spectacular incidents in the vicinity of Michigan, of the Air Force was commissioned to theeigenshierfür about scheduled press conference, something the cause of the red, yellow and green lights in the sky that remind of different places hovered over: dendortigenMoorflächen

"In search of a defensible interpretation (sounds very similar the Air Force Trauma: 'Wha sollmande Public about the fl. saucers?'; author's note) I remembered the call of a botanist

burning Swamp gas made had. It is known that putrefactive gases from rotting mud can form can suddenly ignite and produce a flickering light. This glow is also the subject of songs and stories such as the 'lantern man,' 'fox fire,' and 'will-o'-the-wisp.' After learning more about this swamp gas from other Michigan scientists, I decided to offer that as a possible explanation to reporters."

Mind you, the scientist Hynek is not at all concerned with

therefo whatwere theseappearances actually. Hi only deals with the question, what can I offer as a possible explanation! Hynek writes further:

"The press conference, however, left no time for erudite discussion - it was a circus. The cameramen wanted me here, the newspaper people there For a while, both groups dragged me back and forth

Everyone expected from me the clearest and most spectacular interpretation of the phenomena. They wanted

green males.

When I distributed a statement explaining the swamp gas hypothesis, many reporters ignored that I saw it as only one possible explanation. I watched in horror as one journalist skimmed the paper, underlined the word 'swamp gas' and ran to the phone.

Not only did many reports the next day definitely describe burning swamp gas as the cause of the Michigan lights - they also implied that it was the cause of many other UFO apparitions. I left town as quickly and secretly as I could." S. 168

Thus saw the '*little green men'* and the new

Dumbing Down Variant: *"UFOsaren Other* in *as ignited swamp gas"*, the light of the world of the the unlimited (UN) possibilities. In the country and seventies, such doctored reports were then wit Monsters, ape-like Being, green Male h many nonsense more - the basis for movie hams and horror- Streifena laHollywood . Arousing worldwide fear - towards the *'celestials of a new brothers'* or the '*harbingers* like *age* these in UFO circles already that has become the new Hollywood motto.

The development of a new kind of flight and weapon technology on the basis of a super physics is without doubt an ingenious act of creation without equal, however, must not necessarily become explainable or believable only about the detour WORLDALL.

IngeniousDevelopments andcreative Activityare also on higher human life, and have therefore hardly anything in common monstersor probably with comical creatures. For anth traditions a matter of course.

Ifcontactswiththesecomical Space creatures had really found, as the world from official

(governments, military, scientists), it would be easy to make it credible with a stitched sharpcoloredphotos , theevidence the world famous magazines. But the evidence is by no means thereby that the Questi
-WHAT TO TELL THE PUBLIC ABOUT THE FLYING SUBTASSES SAY? -
the same simply in the manner of an ostrich in the farthest space and couples it with comical monster crews.
If we also see the *'green men', 'E.T.',* and other monsters, - as crews of the flying gyroscopes -, clearly as DizzinessintheSenseofallallallied Mass should not be neglected to point this out.
to point out that today, at the beginning of the third millennium, we have an egocentric world view (earth as the center of the universe) heliocentric world view Center have left behind us, like the arrogant hypothesis of of the uniqueness of life on our planet Earth .
In view of fro Million fro Star clusters, galaxieswith again millions or even billions of suns with their planets, the probability to find life in any form in the vastness of the universe is much higher than a sterile hostile to life Cosmos to be
However, we should by no means make the mistake of thinking of Bringing withcosmicthings mess at power

In the first part of "*SECRET WONDERFUL WEAPONS"* could on the basis of many facts and individual reports a real
The first step was to show the earthly way of development to the today's UFO power - also called THIRD POWER. This was all the more difficult, because, from the German as well as from the Allied Flight gyro development path from military strategic Reasons is still shrouded in fog.

The forthcoming third part of this series will provide further clarity for the open-minded reader.

Two worried voices:

Prof. C.G. You Switzerl via UFOs:

"It seems to me The presence of such bodies is so significant that I feel compelled to raise a warning cry, as I did before, at that time when the events were preparing to strike Europe to the core. I know that, as in the past, my voice is much too weak to reach the ears of the many. It is not presumption that drives me, but my medical conscience that advises me to fulfill my duty to prepare the few to whom I can make myself heard, that events await mankind that correspond to the end of an eon". No. 25, Sept 1958

"When the truth about the Flying Discs becomes common knowledge - and it will one day - the effect on those who have hitherto declared it to be nonsense will be truly shocking. This shock may be so great as to topple the governments on our world, leaving them in chaos until new leaders are found who are capable of leading the world with an entirely new outlook on life." New York Times, February 7, 1961

'OBJECTS' OUTSTRIP JETS OVER CAPITAL

Spotted Second Time in Week by Radar, but Interceptors Fail to Make Contact

By The Associated Press.

WASHINGTON, July 27—The Air Force said today that jet fighter planes had made an effort to intercept unknown objects in the sky over Washington last night after the objects had been spotted by radar, but that no direct contact had been made.

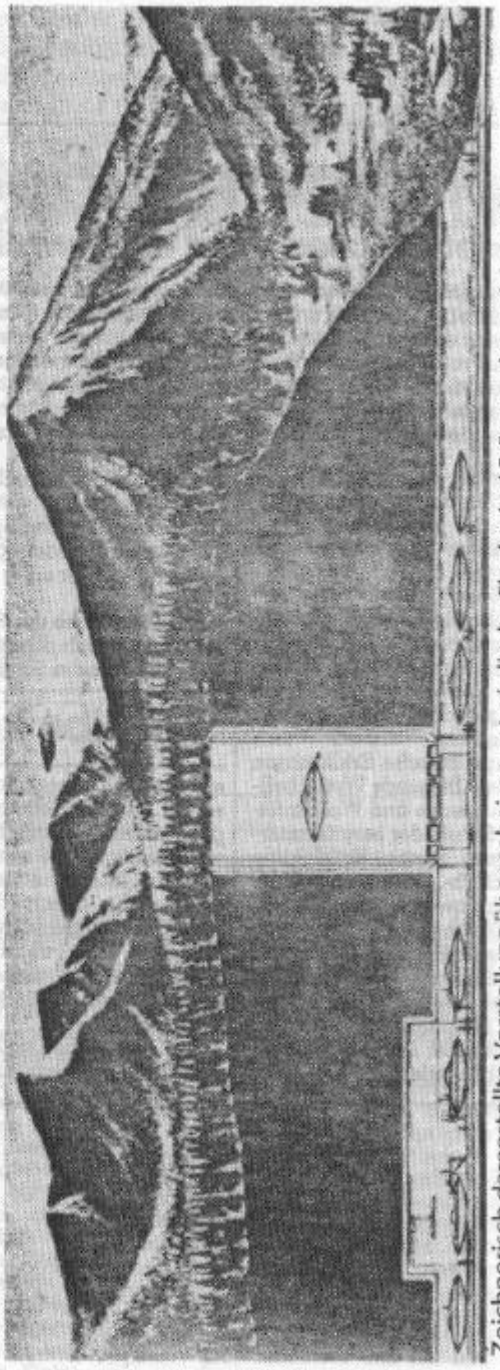
It was the second time within a week that unidentified objects had been observed in the vicinity of the nation's capital, but no planes were sent up on the previous occasion, last Monday.

The Air Force said that at 9:08 o'clock, Eastern daylight time, last night the Air Route Traffic Control Center, operated by the Civil Aeronautics Administration, had picked up by radar "between four and twelve unidentified objects over the Washington vicinity."

The C. A. A. notified the Air Force and two jet fighter-interceptor planes were ordered up to make a check. These planes came from a base at New Castle, Del., about ninety miles from Washington.

The jet planes themselves appeared on the C. A. A. radarscope at 11:25 P. M. and were guided in on [illegible] objects.

"*Objekte*" überholen Düsenflugzeuge über dem Kapitol (Regierungssitz in Washington)
"*New York Times*", 28. Juli 1952, S. 1



Zeichnerisch dargestellte Vorstellung über geheime unterirdische Flugkreisel Stützpunkte, mit in Wäldern versteckten Ein- und Ausflug-Schächten, aus der Zeitschrift: "*Hören und Sehen*", Heft 29, 17.-23. Juli 1955.

DEPARTMENT OF DEFENSE
OFFICE OF PUBLIC INFORMATION
WASHINGTON 25, D. C.

26 January 1953

Henry Holt & Company
383 Madison Avenue
New York 17, N.Y.

Dear Sirs:

This will acknowledge your letter of recent date regarding a proposed book on "flying saucers" by Major Donald E. Keyhoe, U. S. Marine Corps, retired.

We in the Air Force recognize Major Keyhoe as a responsible, accurate reporter. His long association and cooperation with the Air Force, in our study of unidentified flying objects, qualifies him as a leading civilian authority on this investigation.

All the sighting reports and other information he listed have been cleared and made available to Major Keyhoe from Air Technical Intelligence records, at his request.

The Air Force, and its investigating agency, "Project Bluebook," are aware of Major Keyhoe's conclusion that the "Flying Saucers" are from another planet. The Air Force has never denied that this possibility exists. Some of the personnel believe that there may be some strange natural phenomena completely unknown to us, but that if the apparently controlled maneuvers reported by many competent observers are correct, then the only remaining explanation is the interplanetary answer.

Very Truly Yours
Albert M. Chop
Albert M. Chop
Air Force Press Desk

LISTE des Technischen Luftwaffen-Geheimdienstes von UFO-Erscheinungen und andere Informationsangaben, die mir von Mr. Albert M. Chop von der Presseabteilung beschafft und freigegeben wurden:

1. *Laredo-Flugstützpunkt, Texas,* 4. Dezember 1952. „Kampf" eines Luftwaffenpiloten mit einem UFO.
2. *Nordatlantischer Luftraum,* 29. August 1952. Drei scheibenförmige Objekte bei Beobachtung eines Ballons gesehen.
3. *Santa Ana, Kalifornien,* 9. Januar 1953. Piloten einer B-29 sahen schnell bewegliche UFO-Lichter, bläulichweiß, in Formation.
4. *Presque Isle, Maine,* 29. Januar 1953. Piloten einer F-94 und zwei weitere Kampfflugzeuge sichteten ein dunkelgraues Objekt von unzweifelhaft oval[illegible]

5 [illegible]

gesehen.

7. *Goose-Bay-Flugstützpunkt, Labrador,* 15. Dezember 1952. Zwei Luftwaffen-Besatzungen spürten einen Augenblick ein seltsames Objekt auf dem Radarschirm auf. Ein Pilot hatte schon einmal, am 26. November 1952, ein ähnliches Objekt gesehen.
8. *Luftraum über dem Golf von Mexiko,* 6. Dezember 1952. Übungsflug einer B-29. Radar- und optische Berichte, genaue Einzelheiten, doppelt geprüft; errechnete Geschwindigkeit des UFO's 13 500 Stundenkilometer.
9. *Minneapolis, Minnesota,* 11. Oktober 1951. Höchst wichtiger Beobachtungsbericht zweier Ballonbeobachter; Beobachter befanden sich in einem Flugzeug und sichteten zwei graue, zigarrenförmige Objekte mit ungeheurer Geschwindigkeit. Eines der Objekte wurde außerdem kurz von

10. *March-Flugstützpunkt, Kalifornien,* 23. September 1951. F-86-Maschinen versuchten, ein seltsames Objekt mit gesteuerter Flugbahn in Höhe von 16 700 Metern oder mehr abzufangen.

...sselndes Objekt in 1700 Meter Höhe (...

13. *Japan.* Fall mit rotierenden Lichtern. 29. Dezember 1952. Äußerst genaue Einzelheiten durch Boden- und Bordradar, außerdem optische Bestätigung; Besatzungen dreier Flugzeuge bestätigten übereinstimmend Position, Bewegungen und Geschwindigkeiten.
14. *Luftraum über Nordmichigan,* 24. November 1951. UFO von vier Orten aus beobachtet, schnell ... Düsen-

gesehen.

23. *Washington, D. C.,* 19./20. Juli und 26./27. Juli 1952. Die Vorfälle über dem Flugplatz von Washington, Radar- und optische Beobachtungen.
24. *Norfolk, Virginia,* 14. Juli 1952. Höchst genauer Bericht von Piloten der Pan American an ATIC über mehrere leuchtende Objekte, die mit ungeheurer Geschwindigkeit flogen und manövrierten.
25. *Pittsburg, Kansas,* 27. August 1952. ATIC gibt grundsätzliche Einzelheiten und Erdproben aus der Stadt be-

... Flugobjekte durch eine ...

28. *Terre Haute, Indiana,* 1. Februar 1953. Beobachtung eines UFO's durch einen T-33-Flieger.
29. *Japan,* 19. April 1952. T-6-Pilot Leutnant D. C. Brigham meldete an ATIC Beobachtung eines kleinen, scheibenförmigen Objektes, das sich einem Kampfflugzeug näherte und es umkreiste.

... Texas, 22. Juli 1952 ...

gesichtet.

36. *Koreanischer Luftraum,* 7. Februar 1953. Radar spürte UFO auf; eine F-94 angefordert. Pilot sah ein helles orangefarbenes Objekt, das Höhenlage veränderte und mit hoher Geschwindigkeit abdrehte.
37. *Tunis-Tripolis,* 11. Februar 1953. UFO von Besatzung einer C-119 der Luftwaffe gesichtet. Näherte sich, fiel zurück, flog lange Zeit auf gleichem Kurs mit Flugzeug.

... Vorläufiger Bericht ...

...sstandie Thangriffnahme.

46. Tatsachen zum Beweis, daß eine zunehmende Anzahl Offiziere aus dem Luftwaffenstab, einschließlich von Offizieren innerhalb und außerhalb des Geheimdienstes und des Ausschusses von interplanetarischer Herkunft der Untertassen überzeugt sind, es sei denn, sie seien ein unbekanntes natürliches Phänomen. (Diese Erklärung wurde vor der amtlichen Erklärung an Henry Holt & Companie freigegeben.)
47. Beweis, daß Geheimdienst mehrere hohe Beamte (siehe Finletter-Bericht) in geheimen Sitzungen über Untertassen aufklärte.
48. Beweis, daß mehrere sehr bekannte Wissenschaftler, Astronomen, Astrophysiker, Ingenieure, Luftfahrtsachverständige, Spezialisten auf dem Gebiet ferngesteuerter Geschosse und Raketen vom Ausschuß zur Analyse von Berichten und sonstigen Unterlagen herangezogen werden.
49. Beweis, daß ich der Luftwaffe half, die McLean-Bilder zur Analysierung sicherzustellen.
50. Beweis, daß Oberst William C. O[illegible]

51. Freigabe des Tremonton-Utah-Falles; dazu die Tatsachen, die mir schon früher bestätigt worden waren.

Dieser Liste ist folgendes angefügt:

„Die oben angeführten Punkte sind die wahre Wiedergabe besprochener Themen, geäußerter Meinungen und für die Veröffentlichung freigegebener Unterlagen."

(gez.) Albert M. Chop

S. 310-315 (17)
Auszug aus der Liste die Major Keyhoe nebst umfangreichen UFO-Protokollen vom PENTAGON (Luftwaffen-Geheimdienst, Mister Chops) zugesandt wurden. Ein weiterer grundsätzlicher Beweis für die Existenz und die Sichtungen von - für die USA - fremden Flugscheiben.

Secret wonder weapons II

Lübecker Nachrichten/Seite 12, 19. Juli 1967, Nr. 165

Invasion „fliegender Untertassen" in Frankreich und Deutschland?

Von unserem Pariser Korrespondenten

Hu. Paris (Eig. Bericht). In Frankreich sind in der Nacht von Montag auf Dienstag fliegende Untertassen in großer Zahl beobachtet worden. Zahlreiche Menschen in verschiedenen Teilen des Landes, aber auch in Holland, der Schweiz und der Bundesrepublik berichteten, gegen 1.15 Uhr nachts helleuchtende, im allgemeinen in westöstlicher Richtung fliegende Objekte gesichtet zu haben. Einige Augenzeugen geben sogar an, eine ganze Gruppe von fliegenden Untertassen habe sich geräuschlos und schnell in großer Höhe vorwärts bewegt. Daß es sich bei den Beobachtungen um Halluzinationen handelt, ist ausgeschlossen, weil auch die Besatzungen von acht Passagierflugzeugen, die sich zu der genannten Zeit über französischem Staatsgebiet befanden, dem zentralen Flughafen (Kontrollturm Paris-Orly) meldeten, sie hätten hellstrahlende Flugobjekte gesichtet.

Die Beobachtungen der Flugzeugbesatzungen wurden an so entgegengesetzten Punkten wie Straßburg und Marseille gemacht, so daß bloße Luftspiegelungen nach allgemeiner Überzeugung ausscheiden. Nachdem vom Kontrollturm in Orly in den frühen Morgenstunden des Dienstag die Beobachtungen der Flugzeuge zunächst bestätigt wurden, ist im Laufe des Vormittags ein offenbar von militärischer Seite veranlaßtes Dementi herausgegeben worden.

Es scheint aber festzustellen, daß die zivilen Luftkontrollbehörden die militärische Luftverteidigung alarmiert haben, nachdem es ihren eigenen Radargeräten nicht gelungen war, die unbekannten Flugkörper zu erfassen. Von militärischer Seite hat man anscheinend ebenfalls keinen Erfolg gehabt. Vom amerikanischen Luftwaffenhauptquartier für Europa wurde bestätigt, daß man die unbekannten Flugobjekte ebenfalls auf den Flugplätzen Ramstein und Spangdahlem gesichtet hat, aber aus ungenannten Gründen nicht mit Radar erfassen konnte.

Auch an Bord von zwei englischen Schiffen, die sich im Kanal zwischen England und Frankreich beziehungsweise vor der niederländischen Küste befanden, sind die fliegenden Untertassen festgestellt worden. Das Observatorium von Meudon bei Paris hat für die Beobachtungen in der Nacht zum Dienstag eine einfache Erklärung bereit. Wenn es sich nicht um Kometen gehandelt habe, so meint das Observatorium, dann seien die zahlreichen Beobachter fliegender Untertassen wohl Augenzeugen des Eintritts eines sowjetischen Satelliten in die Erdatmosphäre gewesen. Der Feuerschein sei entstanden, als der Satellit durch die Berührung mit der Luft zerrieben wurde.

Von verschiedenen Orten Südwestdeutschlands aus ist zur gleichen Zeit ein „unbekanntes fliegendes Objekt" am Sternenhimmel gesichtet worden. Es wurde vom Bodenseegebiet und vom Schwarzwald aus kurz nach ein Uhr früh beobachtet. Drei Werkschutzangehörige einer Konstanzer Firma beschrieben den Gegenstand unabhängig voneinander als etwa zehn Meter langen, rotglühenden Flugkörper, der langsam von West nach Ost geflogen sei. Nach Ansicht der Beobachter war er weder ein Meteorit noch ein Flugzeug. Er habe einer glühenden Rakete mit langem Schweif geglichen.

Luftwaffenattaché
BRITISCHE BOTSCHAFT
53 Bonn
Friedrich-Ebert-Allee 77

12. August 1980

z.Hd. Herr [redacted] W. Walter
[redacted]

Sehr geehrter Herr [redacted] Walter

Ich habe jetzt eine Antwort auf das Schreiben erhalten, das ich in Ihrem Namen an das britische Verteidigungsministerium gerichtet hatte und in dem ich um Information über UFOs und andere rätselhafte Himmelsphänomene gebeten hatte.

Bedauerlicherweise gibt es im britischen Verteidigungsministerium keine Stelle, die allein mit der Aufgabe betraut ist, das Vorkommen von UFOs aufzuzeichnen, und es gibt auch keine Mitarbeiter, die sich diesem Thema während ihrer gesamten Arbeitszeit widmen. Die über dieses Thema existierenden Unterlagen fallen unter den Public Records Act, was bedeutet, daß erst 1993 die ersten Unterlagen freigegeben werden. Deshalb muß ich Ihnen mit großem Bedauern mitteilen, daß ich Ihnen nicht behilflich sein kann.

Man hat mir jedoch mitgeteilt, daß es keine Beweise gibt, die darauf hindeuten, daß die Beobachtungen, die man über Großbritannien gemacht hat, außerirdischen Ursprungs waren.

Ich wünsche Ihnen alles Gute für Ihre Studien und verbleibe

mit freundlichen Grüßen

E.S. Chandler
E.S. Chandler
Brigadegeneral
Luftwaffenattaché

Meldungsübersicht

1976

Ges.	F.NO.	Tag	Z	Raum	Lichtersch.(vis)	m	Melder
SR	303	3.1.	2309	Angabe fehlt	gelbgrün,	- 4	Habegger
SR	7601	28.2.	0036	Syr. Wüste		- 4	Stemmler
LH	600	18.6.	1818	Rizayeh, Türkei	grün, expandierend		Ertl
SR	165	28.7.	0441	Uralsk: UDSSR		- 15	Habegger
SR	202	13.8.	0218	Ched	weissblau	- 10	Kuhn
SR	314	23.8.	2104	Malatya, Türkei	weiss	- 15	Darbre
SR	132	19.9.	0114	Ostalgerien		- 15	Risberg
SR	165	1.10.	0617	Kiew, UDSSR	Schweif, 1 Min.	- 10	Langmeier
SR	346	8.10.	2107	Kairo, Ägypten	lichtblau,Teilung	- 15	fehlt
SR	101	28.11.	0320	Dnjepropetowsk		- 15	Glutz
SR	301	23.12.	1551	Golf v. Bengalen	rot, explod.	- 15	Lanz
LH	443	27.12.	0514	Kopenhagen, DK.	weiss/hellblau		Panholzer
1977							
SR	303	8.1.	1514	E Ceylon	weiss/lichtrot	- 4	Friolet
SR	303	8.1.	1613	E Ceylon	lichtgrün	- 4	Friolet
LH	495	26.2.	2310	Ostküste USA	rötlich, expand.		Terjung
SR	287	7.8.	0143	Alexandria,Ägypten		- 15	Habegger
LH	536	26.9.	2130	Dolsko VOR	lichtgrün	- 4	Passarge
LH	405	26.9.	0255	Angabe unklar	grün/orange	- 5	Rudolph
LH	481	28.9.	0440	Raum Frankfurt		- 10	Dreyer
LH	491	29.9.	0449	E Boston USA		- 4	fehlt
SR	287	1.10.	2342	Angabe unklar	grün, Funken	- 15	Weiss
SR	282	19.10.	0100	NW - Sahara	grün	- 15	Stocker
SR	282	1.11.	2347	E Balearen	blaugrün	- 4	Eichenberger
SR	110	4.11.	2007	Mittelatlantik		- 15	Wiedmer
LH	322	6.11.	1135	Zagreb	Wetterballon		Doetsch
SR	304	28.11.	1956	S Karatschi	grell, Schweif		Breitelat
SR	101	30.11.	0501	Neufundland	weissgrün	- 15	Glutz
SR	269	9.12.	0143	S - Algerien	blauweiss	- 4	Smith
LH	653	12.12.	0217	Eismeer E Jan M.	hell blau	- 4	Schule
SR	901	13.12.	0034	Atlas N-Algerien	weiss	- 15	Hool
LH	?	24.12.	0307	Panama	grün/blau Zerteilung	- 15	Müller
SR	283	28.12.	2040	N-Kamerun	weissgelb	- 4	Smith

HZ

Tabellarische Übersicht der UFO-Meldungen der Lufthansa-(LH) und Swiss Air- (SR) Piloten aus den Jahren 1976 und 1977. Aus der hausinternen Lufthansa Zeitschrift: *"Lufthansa Flightcrew Info"* Nr. 6/1978, Seite 8. Die Piloten werden auf Seite 7 aufgefordert: *"Melden Sie uns auch weiterhin alle interessanten Himmelserscheinungen."*

Geheimnisvolle Stahlkuppel im ewigen Eis

Alle elektrischen Bordgeräte der Flugzeuge fielen aus — Amerikaner stehen vor einem Rätsel

Die in den fast ständig zugefrorenen Häfen Alaskas stationierten amerikanischen Marineaufklärungsflieger sind vom Kommando der Luftüberwachung in Alaska alarmiert worden. Seitdem kreuzen sie tausende Kilometer weit über den Nordpol, um an einem in ihrer Karte eingetragenen Punkt nach einer geheimnisvollen Stahlkuppel zu suchen. Ein strategischer Bomberverband auf Manöverflug hatte diese Kuppel vor einem Monat zum erstenmal 1000 Seemeilen nordöstlich der De-Long-Inseln im ewigen Eis gesichtet.

Der Pilot des damals im Probeeinsatz befindlichen Strahlentriebwerkbombers berichtet: „Der monotone Flug über die endlosen Flächen des ewigen Polareises wurde plötzlich unterbrochen. Ich wies meinen Bordfunker auf eine stählern glänzende Kuppel zwischen Eisbarrieren hin, die sich 3000 m unter uns türmten. Die Kuppel war blaugrau und drehte sich wie der gepanzerte Gefechtsturm einer Festung oder nach Art eines Radargerätes. Wir peilten das Ding an und funkten. Dabei gingen wir auf 800 m herunter. Da sahen wir deutlich wie die Kuppel sich auf einer Drehscheibe oder einer Riesenwelle bewegte. Plötzlich mußte man unsere Funksignale vernommen haben. Die Kuppel drehte sich nicht mehr und verschwand blitzschnell wie ein Fahrstuhl in der Tiefe. Darüber schoben sich waagrechte Schotten, auf die sich von der Umgebung nicht zu unterscheidendes Eis getürmt war."

Der Funker dieses Bombers berichtet, daß während des ganzen Anfluges auf die geheimnisvolle stählerne Kuppel im Nordpolareis sämtliche elektrischen Bordgeräte unmittelbar nach dem Funkanruf für Unbekannt ausfielen. Diese Beobachtung im ewigen Eis ist wahrscheinlich höchst sonderbar. Die Stellen des Aufklärungskommandos in Alaska fragen sich, ob es sich um einen vorgeschobenen Beobachtungs- und strategisch wichtigen Posten einer anderen Macht handelt? Das Eisgebiet, wo die Bomberbesatzungen die Wahrnehmung machten, ist umstritten. Die USA und die UdSSR beanspruchen es für sich. Es gilt als „Exklave des Geophysikalischen Jahres".

Besonders zu denken gibt der Ausfall aller elektrischen Bordgeräte. Sollte mit radiotechnischen Störmitteln, die sogar die Tourenanzeiger zittern ließen, etwa alle Positionsmessungen unmöglich gemacht werden? Seit der Meldung der Bomberbesatzung führten Aufklärer 19 Patrouillenflüge über dem mysteriösen Gebiet durch. Aber 1000 Seemeilen nordöstlich der De-Long-Inseln klart das Wetter nur selten auf. Dort unten zwischen Schneesturm und peitschendem Eissturm müßte die geheimnisvolle Stahlkuppel liegen.

Seitdem die Entdeckung gemacht worden ist, melden die verschiedensten Küstenstationen Alaskas Funksignale, die offenbar verschlüsselt sind und die aus besagter Gegend zu kommen scheinen. Flugzeuge, die die „Funkspur" aufnahmen, kamen bald in die Nähe der genau festgelegten Position. Immer wenn sie sich jedoch über mehr als 20 Meilen der „versenkbaren Station" nähern, schweigt der rhythmische Morsetakt. Das strategische Kommando Alaska nimmt an, daß es sich um eine geheim gehaltene Forschungsbasis einer unbekannten Macht handelt. Dort, im unzugänglichen Nordpolgebiet einen militärischen Stützpunkt zu unterhalten, wäre nach Meinung der Amerikaner unsinnig, es sei denn, andere hätten das Problem der Versorgung in der „Wildnis der Eisbarrieren" gelöst und wüßten, Fernraketen während der 333 Sturmtage im Jahr von dort auf die Reise zu schicken. Beobachtungsflieger der Luftwaffe und Marine hoffen, im Interesse der Sicherheit, schon recht bald das Rätsel des geheimnisvollen Punktes lösen zu können.

"Saarbrücker-Zeitung", Saarbrücken 14.9.1957

Die Streitkräfte Spaniens nehmen Berichte über Begegnungen mit Ufos ernst

Grüne Männchen in Spanien?

ROLF GÖRTZ, **Madrid**

„Doch alles Schwindel, die Geschichte mit den fliegenden Untertassen. Wir haben keine gesehen. Nicht Ufos haben unsere Maschine zur Landung gezwungen, sondern irgendein technisches Versagen." So wetterten 109 deutsche und österreichische Fluggäste des TAE-Charterfluges Frankfurt — Palma de Mallorca — Teneriffa. Ihre Caravelle war nicht auf den Kanarischen Inseln, sondern bei Valencia gelandet. Was die Passagiere bis dahin nicht wußten: die spanische Luftwaffe hatte zu ihrem Schutz vier Phantom-Jäger in den Nachthimmel geschickt. Ein Geschwader-Kommodore hatte die unbekannten Flugobjekte und den Hilferuf des TAE-Piloten Tejada ernst genommen.

Planmäßig war die Maschine des Charter-Unternehmens „Spanische Lufttransporte" (TAE) in Palma de Mallorca gestartet, mit Kurs auf die Kanarischen Inseln. Über Evisa entdeckte die Besatzung auf dem Radarschirm mehrere Signale, die sich „merkwürdig schnell näherten". Flugkapitän Tejada rief den Kontrollturm des Flughafens Valencia an: „Sind Flugzeuge auf unserer Route?" Antwort: „Nein, keine Meldungen." Dann sahen Tejada und der Kopilot „rote schillernde Lichter, die sich irgendwie verrückt bewegten" (Tejada).

Die Besatzung hatte das Gefühl, daß unbekannte Flugobjekte ihre Caravelle verfolgten. So bat Tejada den Kontrollturm von Los Manises bei Valencia um Landeerlaubnis. Gegen elf Uhr nachts rollte die Maschine dort aus. Kurz vorher brauste eine Staffel von vier Phantom-Jägern über den Platz — und die unbekannten Flugobjekte verschwanden wie auf Kommando.

Flugleiter des Kontrollturmes und Angestellte und Arbeiter auf der Piste bestätigten, was die Piloten gesehen hatten: ein rotes Licht, das sich über dem Kontrollturm aufhielt, ein zweites über der Piste, ein drittes über dem nahe gelegenen Militärflughafen. Alle in etwa dreitausend Meter Höhe. Ein viertes Licht kreiste in größerer Höhe über der gesamten Region.

Ohne sich über die Beschaffenheit der Lichterscheinungen zu äußern, nehmen die spanischen Luftwaffenoffiziere die Ufos ernst. Auch die Marine sammelt Beobachtungen. Der Journalist Benitez erhielt für seine Zusammenstellung mehrfach Berichte von Luftwaffe und Marine.

Aus diesen Berichten geht klar hervor, daß die spanischen Streitkräfte an der Existenz unbekannter Flugkörper nicht mehr zweifeln. Allerdings werden nirgendwo Flugobjekte von anderen Sternen, überirdische Wesen — gar die kleinen grünen Männchen — als Urheber dieser Erscheinungen erwähnt. Sorgfältig werden jedes Mal Marinemeteorologen eingesetzt, die ergründen sollen, ob irgendwelche meteorologischen Erscheinungen hinter den unbekannten Lichteffekten stecken könnten. Immerhin scheint sich das Interesse der Ufos auf strategische Punkte zu konzentrieren. Gibt es bemannte oder unbemannte Flugsonden, deren Existenz die Großmächte bisher verschweigen und die sich bereits gegenseitig beobachten, fragen sich denn auch die Skeptiker.

Auf ganz anderem Gleis reisen die fanatischen Storys über die kleinen grünen Männchen, die aus soeben gelandeten Apparaten klettern, spanisch sprechen und manchmal gar nicht klein und grün sind. Sie tauchen vor allem in jenen entlegenen regenfeuchten Dörfern des Baskenlandes auf, wo man früher sehr intensiv an Hexen glaubte. (SAD)

"Die Welt", Hamburg, 15.11.1979, S. 20

Sahen aus wie Omnibusse

Geheimnisvolle Flugkörper über Argentinien

Glaubwürdige Augenzeugen — Brennstoffproben werden untersucht

Buenos Aires, (dpa) Argentinien soll in der letzten Zeit von einer Invasion fliegender Untertassen heimgesucht worden sein. Eine Reihe von vertrauenswürdigen Personen berichtete über „leuchtende Körper", die ein ungewöhnlich starkes Licht ausstrahlen. Übereinstimmende Aussagen liegen aus Mendoza, Corboda und Bahia Blanca in der Provinz Buenos Aires vor.

Die seltsamste Geschichte berichteten zwei Brüder. Sie fuhren in einem Lastwagen, als sie in hundert Metern Entfernung von der Straße auf dem Erdboden einen Gegenstand erblickten, der so ähnlich wie ein Eisenbahnwagen oder ein Omnibus aussah. Er hatte etwa 20 Öffnungen, aus denen abwechselnd starke Lichtstrahlen blitzartig hervorbrachen. Die beiden Brüder gingen auf den Gegenstand zu, der sich aber steil in die Luft erhob, als sie sich ihm auf etwa 70 Meter genähert hatten. Dabei zeigte es sich, daß es in Wirklichkeit zwei Fahrzeuge waren, die sich in der Luft von einander trennten und rasch davonschwebten. Später fanden die Brüder an der Landestelle des Flugkörpers Brandspuren am Boden. Die Erde war steinhart, das Gras niedergedrückt und Insekten versengt, außerdem fanden sie Spuren einer grauen Flüssigkeit, die wahrscheinlich vom Brennstoff des Fahrzeuges stammte. Erdproben und Proben der Flüssigkeit wurden von der Universität Bahia Blanca der Marinestation Puerto Belgrano und der argentinischen Atomkommission untersucht. Bisher wurde lediglich die Untersuchung der Bodenproben der Universität Bahia Blanca bekannt. Danach enthielt die Erde Spuren von Pottasche-Karbonat und Kalk, die sich in jener Gegend an keiner anderen Stelle fanden.

"General-Anzeiger", Bonn, Mittwoch, 8. Juni 1962

Unbekannte Flugkörper über Sydney

Rundfunk und Zeitungsredaktionen mit Anrufen überschwemmt

Mehrere hundert Menschen überhäuften am Wochenende in Sydney die Radiostationen und Zeitungsredaktionen mit Telefonanrufen, nachdem über Neusüdwales eine Formation heller, sich schnell bewegender Flugobjekte gesichtet worden war. Von der australischen Luftwaffe wurde dazu mitgeteilt, daß in dieser Zeit keine Flugzeuge in Formation über Neusüdwales aufgestiegen seien.

Mister Richardson aus Leppington schildert seine Beobachtung mit den Worten: „Es war eine unheimliche Erscheinung. Kein Geräusch, nur eine ständige Bewegung von acht Lichtern in geschlossener Formation. Sie waren zu schnell für Flugzeuge und zu langsam für einen Meteor."

In Washington hat die Luftwaffe der Vereinigten Staaten mitgeteilt, daß 363mal in der Zeit von 1947 bis 1965 nicht identifizierte Flugobjekte gesichtet worden seien. Es sei aber kein Anhaltspunkt dafür gegeben, daß die Flugkörper nicht von der Erde stammen. Der Luftwaffe seien in diesem Zeitraum 8908 Berichte über „Fliegende Untertassen" und andere Flugobjekte bekannt geworden.

dpa/reuter

"Rhein-Neckar-Zeitung", Heidelberg, 8.3.1965

Fliegende Untertassen über Rom

Rom, (upi) Mindestens ein Dutzend Menschen berichteten gestern, eine fliegende Untertasse über Rom gesichtet zu haben. Obwohl die Personen die Erscheinung an verschiedenen Stellen der Stadt und in den Albaner Bergen beobachteten, gaben sie eine im wesentlichen übereinstimmende Schilderung des unbekannten Flugobjekts. Die Luftfahrtbehörden von Rom teilten jedoch mit, daß die verschiedenen Piloten, die zu der Zeit der Erscheinung über Rom flogen, die Untertasse nicht gesehen haben. Auch auf den Radarschirmen konnte der Flugkörper nicht ausgemacht werden.

8.10.1965

Flugkapitän berichtet über neueste UFO-Sichtungen

Flugkapitän Denis Wood von „British Airways" hat Zeugen und kann den offiziellen Auftrag zur UFO-Verfolgung vorweisen. Somit ist er erhaben über Zweifel, an dem, was er im Sommer 1976 beim Flug von London nach Faro in Südportugal beobachtete. „Ich sichtete mit der gesamten Crew meines Flugzeuges zwei zigarrenförmige Flugobjekte (UFOs), die die Größe je eines Schlachtschiffes besaßen. Ich habe mir mehrere Monate zum Überdenken auserbeten, aber nun muß ich doch bekennen, daß wir alle uns entschlossen haben, zu diesen UFO-Sichtungen zu stehen, wenn wir diese riesigen Flugkörper auch nicht erklären können. Vielleicht war es ein Materialisierungs-Phänomen, mit dem unsere Wissenschaftler noch nichts anzufangen wissen. Ich frage mich seitdem nun aber täglich, welche Mächte es sind, die sich auf diese Weise in unserem Luftraum bewegen und was sie eigentlich vorhaben..."

Flugkapitän Denis Wood hat 20 Jahre Flugerfahrung. Und er hatte die UFOs nicht etwa selbst entdeckt und gemeldet. Vielmehr war seine Crew von der Flugkontrolle Lissabon aufgefordert worden, auf ein unbekanntes Flugobjekt zu achten. „Und dann tauchten die weiß leuchtenden Dinger schon vor meinen Augen auf. Unglaublich, rief mein Co-Pilot im gleichen Augenblick aus. Ihm blieb 20 Sekunden der Mund offenstehen. Das ist eine lange Zeit. Es sah aus, als handele es sich um ein großes Mutterschiff, aus dem zwei zigarrenförmige Gebilde zur Erkundung starteten."

Unabhängig voneinander sagen Besatzungsmitglieder und Fluggäste aus, es habe sich um vollkommen feste Körper von der Größe von Schlachtschiffen gehandelt. „Ich verstehe nicht, daß man beim Vorhandensein mehrerer Augenzeugen und aufgrund des Auftrags zur Verfolgung durch den Kontrollturm von Lissabon immer wieder versucht, uns einzureden, es habe sich wohl um Satelliten, Ballons, seltsame Wolken oder Lichtreflexionen gehandelt. Schließlich können wir nicht dafür, daß die Forschung im dunkeln tappt und Wissenschaftler keine Erklärung finden. Mein Co-Pilot meint, diese Flugobjekte hätten vor der Materialisierung offensichtlich die Zeitwand durchstoßen und seien dadurch erst in unser Wahrnehmungsvermögen gelangt..."

Die Objekte waren auch auf dem Radar sichtbar. Sie wurden sogar von einer anderen britischen und einer portugiesischen Maschine gesichtet und gemeldet. Als Kapitän Wood von Faro zurückflog, waren die zigarrenförmigen Luftobjekte immer noch da, in deren Mitte sich nach Fernglasbeobachtungen ein „Zentrum metallenen Glänzens" ausmachen ließ.

IN EINEM SATZ

Ufos, in der Größe von Schlachtschiffen, haben britische Piloten über Portugal gesichtet, die Objekte waren auch auf Radar sichtbar.

"Rheinische Post", Düsseldorf, 14.5.1977

"Das Neue Zeitalter", Nr. 31, 1980, S. 9

Flugzeug-Besatzung sah Zigarren-Ufo

Kapitän: Objekte auch auf dem Radar

London. (dpa) Die Besatzung einer Maschine der „British Airways" hat zwei zigarrenförmige Flugobjekte (Ufos) gesichtet, die die Größe von Schlachtschiffen besaßen.

Dies wurde am Freitag in London durch Aussagen des Flugkapitäns Denis Wood, der 20 Jahre Flugerfahrung hat, und seiner Crew bekannt. Sie hatten die unbekannten Objekte im Sommer letzten Jahres beim Flug von London nach Faro in Südportugal beobachtet.

Die britische Maschine war von der Flugkontrolle Lissabon aufgefordert worden, auf ein unbekanntes Flugobjekt zu achten. Kurz darauf sahen Kapitän Wood und seine beiden Offiziere im Westen ein weißleuchtendes rundes Objekt. Während sie es noch beobachteten, materialisierten sich in der Nähe dieses Objekts zwei riesige zigarrenförmige Gebilde. „Sie waren absolut solide und schätzungsweise von der Größe von Schlachtschiffen", erklärte Kapitän Wood. „Vermutungen, daß es sich um Ballons, Satelliten, seltsame Wolken oder Lichtreflektionen handelte, sind für uns ganz unakzeptabel."

Die Objekte waren auch auf dem Radar sichtbar und wurden auch von den Besatzungen einer anderen britischen sowie eines portugiesischen Flugzeuges gesichtet und gemeldet. Als Kapitän Wood von Faro nach London zurückflog, waren die beiden „Zigarrenschiffe immer noch da. Dann jedoch verschwanden sie vom Radarschirm".

"Ruhr-Nachrichten", Dortmund 14.5.1977

Die *"New York Times"*, das wohl größte und führendste alliierte Publikationsorgan mit erheblichem meinungsbildenden Multiplikatoreffekt, mit Auswirkungen auf fast alle Medien *"demokratischer"* Staaten in Ost und West, kam in vergangenen Jahrzehnten nicht umhin, Meldungen über Unbekannte Flugobjekte zu veröffentlichen.

Ein von Jahrzehnt zu Jahrzehnt immer stärker unter den Nägeln brennendes Problem, das schon lange nicht mehr völlig verheimlicht, wohl aber entschärft, entstellt, lächerlich gemacht und weggedeutet werden kann.

Die N.Y.T. und mit ihr andere führende Journaillen der internationalen linksgerichteten *"Einweltler"* haben hier ganze Arbeit geleistet. Die jeweils kleineren Zeitungen, haben sich gemäß ihren großen Vorbildern im Stil, in der Meinungsausrichtung und Argumentation bestens angeglichen.

In den Jahren 1946-1981 sind in der N.Y.T. trotz Vertuschung und Tiefstapelei über 300 Zeitungsberichte zum Thema *"UFO"* erschienen.
Den jährlichen *"The New York Times Index"*-Bänden sind die Anzahl der Artikel entnommen und hier tabellarisch wiedergegeben. 1946 unter dem Stichwort: *"Rockets"* (Ghost Rockets), 1947-57 unter *"Flying Saucers"* und 1958-1981 unter dem Stichwort: *"Unidentified Flying Objekts (UFO)"*.

NEW YORK TIMES – Anzahl der UFO-Berichte pro Jahr:

1946	20	1960	5	1974	2
1947	15	1961	1	1975	4
1948	3	1962	1	1976	7
1949	6	1963	–	1977	10
1950	11	1964	–	1978	11
1951	10	1965	8	1979	9
1952	42	1966	39	1980	1
1953	10	1967	16	1981	1
1954	12	1968	15		
1955	8	1969	13		321
1956	9	1970	–		
1957	9	1971	1		
1958	4	1972	1		
1959	5	1973	12		

Faksimile-Wiedergabe des Stichwortes "*Flying Saucers*" aus dem "New York Times Index", 1952, dem Jahr mit den meisten UFO-Berichten.
Übersetzung der 1. Spalte: "Eine Bomber-Besatzung der US-Luftwaffe berichtete von der Beobachtung orangener Kugeln über Korea, 20. Februar. Seite 3, Spalte 3 (F 20; 3:3)." (Siehe den London Times-Bericht vom gleichen Tag!)

co for alleged misleading ad, O 28,52:3
Mayor Impellitteri proclaims Flower Wk, N 4,31:6
FLOYD River. See Floods—US—Midwest Jl 14
FLUEGEL, (Dr) Edna R. See US—Internal Security, Sen subcom par F 21
FLUEGELMAN, David B. See: Ins—US, D 11, Life Underwriters, Natl Assn of, S 12
FLUET, Joseph O. See: Airlines—US—Accidents, Natl par F 13,15, Airplanes—US—Commercial, accidents par Ag 24, Airports—US Ag 24
FLUIDS. See: Hydrodynamics, Water headings
FLUORESCENCE. See Elec Light Bulbs
FLUORINE. See Teeth, research para Ja 17,29, F 14, Mr 7:1, Ap 1ff, Jl 4, Ag 1ff, Ag 17,18,27, S 7-9, D 9,10
FLUOROCARBON. W M Kellogg Co develops new type called Kel-F; wide uses cited, Je 20,34:3
FLUORSPAR Inc. See Reynolds Metals Co F 3
FLY, James Lawrence. See: Motion Pictures—TV Use by Theatres, O 18,21,28, US—Cong—Gen, investigatory procedures par Ja 16
FLYING Arrow (SS). See Ships—US—Crews Mr 2
FLYING Enterprise (SS). See Ships—Accidents
FLYING Saucers
USAF bomber crewmen rept seeing orange globes over Korea, F 20,3:1
Editorial on Life's (pub) acct of saucers, Ap 12, 10:2; W Kaempfert comment; disputes views, Ap 13, IV,9:6
GM balloon project repts rept seeing strange 'aerial objects' over Minn and Wis, Ap 12,13:3; USAF capt repts seeing several saucers and 'cigar-shaped' objects over Jersey Shore, Pa, Je 24, 26:4; USAF O'Hare base, Ill, gets repts; no alert ordered, Jl 4,29:8; 4 pilots rept seeing saucer over Hanford, Wash, atomic plant, Jl 6,51:4
USAF probes rept by 2 airline pilots of 8 discs flying in formation, 150 mi S of Washington, DC, Jl 17,4:5; USAF repr says 60 repts recd, last 2 wks, Jl 18,5:3; USAF repts unidentified objects, 'perhaps saucers,' picked up on radar over Washington; held traveling 100-130 mph; airline pilots rept objects, Washington vicinity; 2 on Sl, NY and 3 in NYC rept objects, Jl 22, 27:6; USAF gets repts of objects from NJ to New Eng, Jl 24,29:8; E C Johnston repts saucers hovered over area in Calif 4 nights; says 25 persons saw objects; 6 jets chase object over Ohio; USAF holds it weather-balloon, Jl 25,19:2; USAF repts jet interceptors outstripped by objects spotted 2d time in wk by radar over Washington; pilot repts 4 lights; sighting by radar held to mean objects have substance; Iowa Univ astronomer C C Wylie holds objects sighted over Iowa to be planet Jupiter, Jl 28,1:2; ed, Jl 29, 20:2; USAF cites 24-hr readiness to challenge unidentified objects; explains 2-hr lag in chasing objects over Washington; objects seen over Tarrytown, NY, Jl 29,23:6; USAF calls objects natural phenomena; to continue to probe repts; Maj Gen Samford views summarized; cites radar inaccuracies; says measurement method needed; objects again spotted by radar over Washington; NYS Air Raid Filter Center repts rise in 'sightings'; USN probes repts of objects off Fla; sighted over Bahamas, Jl 30,1:2; ed on USAF statement, Jl 31,22:3; W L Laurence explains mirages on radarscope; cites '51 explanation of Dr U Lidel, Jl 30,10:2

Pentagon repts rept getting 432 written repts of 'sightings' in '52, Ag 1,19:7; USCG releases daytime photo of 4 light flashes in sky taken by S R Alpert at Salem, Mass, air station; 2 USAF pilots checking repts spot object; hold it not reflection; objects rapid, upper NYS, Ag 2,3:2; Canadian destroyer sights 2 objects over Korea; records them on radar; objects sighted over Tokyo and Calif; Prof D H Menzel doubts value of USCG photo; Illinois Water Survey radar station explains 'flying river' as Illinois River reflection, Ag 3, 7:1; comment, Ag 3,IV,2:5; theories cited; illus; cartoons, Ag 3,IV,7:1; Prof J A Browning Ir holds ball-lightning may be object reflected on radar, Ag 3,IV,8:5; Maj Gen Ramey repts none of 1,500 repts to USAF since '47 shows evidence of material objects; says no pattern estab, Ag 4,3:4; N Scott creates colored and other alleged saucer shapes by injecting ionized air into partial vacuum of Bell jar; says shapes have enough substance to be picked up by radar; explains high speeds and quick turns; holds low air pressure balanced against static electricity main factors for 'sightings'; Army Engineers rept says findings explain some of saucers; objects spotted by radar over Washington, DC, unsuccessfully chased by jets, Ag 7,3:8; Ir cites ionization of upper air by gamma rays from sun spots as cause, Ag 8,16:6; R R Coles sees rise in 'sightings' during annual Perseid meteor display; object with flashing lights spotted near mouth of Niagara River, NY, Ag 9,15:6
Navy plans series of cross-country balloon flights to forestall saucer repts, Ag 17,35:3; saucers repts in Venezuela and Colombia, Ag 18, 5:1; USAF releases details of talk between jet pilot and airport control tower just before he crashed while chasing unidentified object near Godman Base, Ky, Jan 7 '48, Ag 21,3:5; ed on Dr O Struve s on life possibilities on other planets and solar systems as debunking belief that saucers are space ships from another world, Ag 24,IV,8:3
2 jets fly directly through spot in Chicago sky where radarscopes on ground register reflection from unexplained object; see or hit nothing; CAA ascribes reflection to atmospheric conditions, S 3,48:5; scientists at Internatl Cong on Astronautics, Stuttgart, not interested in saucers; do not believe they originate in USSR or on another planet, S 5,18:6; flame flashing over Washington, DC, believed meteor, S 13,15:5
CAA repr says moving white object seen over Montana probably Venus, S 21,V,9:8; W Ley holds saucers not space ships; doubts other-planet origin, S 22,17:7; 'big blue flame' noted by Idlewild Airport personnel, O 15,34:4; Deputy Premier Pervukhin (USSR) links saucers to US 'war jitters,' N 7,6:3
CAA repts saucers are reflections caused by temperature inversions; says cold air breaking out from layers of hot air cause radar beams and ground lights to rebound, D 11,35:8
6-ft disk found atop cliff, W Orange, NJ, D 16, 33:8; was dance decoration, D 17,12:1
FLYING Tiger Line. See Natl Skyways Freight
FLYING Tigers. See Veterans Assns
FLYING Trader (SS). See Ships—US—Crews Ja 12 par, Ja 18 par, F 20, Ap 8 par Ap 16 par, My 17 par, 2d Je 6 par, Je 17 par
FLYING Typewriter. See Office Equipment F 27
FLYNN, Clyde W. See Lumber, US (gen) par Ap 12
FLYNN, Daniel. See NYS—Elections—Assembly,

Excerpts:

~~SECRET~~
~~Security Information~~

Declassified by 058372
date 20 APR 1977

23

MEMORANDUM FOR: Director of Central Intelligence

THRU : Deputy Director (Intelligence)

SUBJECT : Flying Saucers

2. FACTS BEARING ON THE PROBLEM

(3) A national policy should be established as to what should be told the public regarding the phenomena, in order to minimize risk of panic.

c. Intelligence problems include:

(3) A world-wide reporting system has been instituted and major Air Force bases have been ordered to make interceptions of unidentified flying objects.

5. RECOMMENDATIONS

c. On the basis of these programs of research, CIA develop and recommend for adoption by the National Security Council a policy of public information which will minimize the risk of panic.

H. MARSHALL CHADWELL
Assistant Director
Scientific Intelligence

OSI/PGStrong:bxd (11 September 1952)

Die OSI, eine Neben- bzw. Unterorganisation des US-Geheimdienstes CIA, hat schon im Jahre 1952 - wohl nach vorherigem Auftragn 'von oben' - auf wissenschaftlicher Grundlage, Vorschläge erarbeitet, wie das Phänomen der *'Fliegenden Untertassen'* am zweckmäßigsten zu behandeln sei. Gemäß dem vorliegendem Auszug: zum einen in militärischer Hinsicht, zum anderen bezüglich der anzuwendenden Informations-Taktik in der Öffentlichkeit.
Ob das gesamte *'Memorandum'* nach dieser 25-jährigen Geheimhaltung freigegeben wurde oder nur dieser Auszug, und somit der restliche Teil immer noch geheim behandelt wird, konnte augenblicklich noch nicht festgestellt werden.

Übersetzung:

GEHEIM
freigegeben unter Nr. 058375
am 20. April 1977

MEMORANDUM AN: Direktor des CIA (Zentraler Geheimdienst)
DURCH: Stellvertretender Direktor (Geheimdienst)
VORGANG: Fliegende Untertassen

2. TATBESTÄNDE ZUR LAGE DES PROBLEMS
(3) Eine nationale Regelung sollte geschaffen werden, was der Bevölkerung über das Phänomen (der fliegenden Untertassen) gesagt werden soll, um eine eventuelle Panik zu verringern.

c. Geheimdienst Probleme enthalten:

(3) Ein weltweites Meldesystem wurde geschaffen und allen großen Militär-Flugplätzen wurde der Befehl erteilt, unidentifizierte fliegenden Objekte abzufangen.

5. EMPFEHLUNGEN:
c. Auf der Basis dieses Forschungsprogramms: CIA zeigt und empfiehlt dem Nationalen Sicherheitsrat, welche Art von Informations-Politik gegenüber der Öffentlichkeit angewandt werden soll (bzw. welche Art von Information die Bevölkerung bekommt), damit das Risiko einer Panik vermindert wird.

S. Marschall Chadwell
Ass. Direktor
Wissenschaftlicher Geheimdienst

OSI (Office des Wissensch. Geheimd.)
11. Sept. 1952

Köln: 2 Phantomjets jagten Ufo

Von W. SCHLAGEHAN und B. VOGT

Polizei-Hauptmeister Rolf Behrmann (41) hatte das „Objekt" schon zweimal gesehen: Es schillerte farbenprächtig, stand über Köln, zog dann davon. Zwei Phantoauf. Weiter Seite 6.

Ufo drehte immer nach rechts

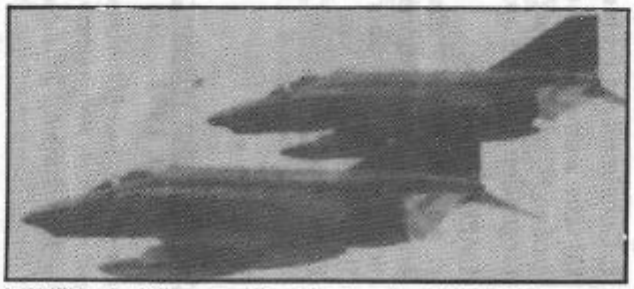
Fortsetzung von Seite 1

Polizei-Hauptmeister Behrmann und Kollege Uwe Capitanio (27) sahen das Ufo zum erstenmal am Freitagmorgen um 1.55 Uhr über Köln. Es war rund, drehte sich immer nach rechts, war etwa doppelt so groß wie ein Stern. Mal glitzerte es dunkelrot, mal gleißend weiß, dann wieder blau, auch mal grün. Ganz langsam zog es in Richtung Süden, stoppte dann, flog wieder nach Norden.

Um 2.27 Uhr dann ein Funkspruch an alle Autobahn-Wachen: „Das unbekannte Flugobjekt ist auf dem Radar in Düsseldorf gesichtet worden." Polizei-Hauptmeister Behrmann: „Kurze Zeit später sahen wir dann zwei Phantom-Düsenjäger, die im Morgengrauen den Himmel absuchten."

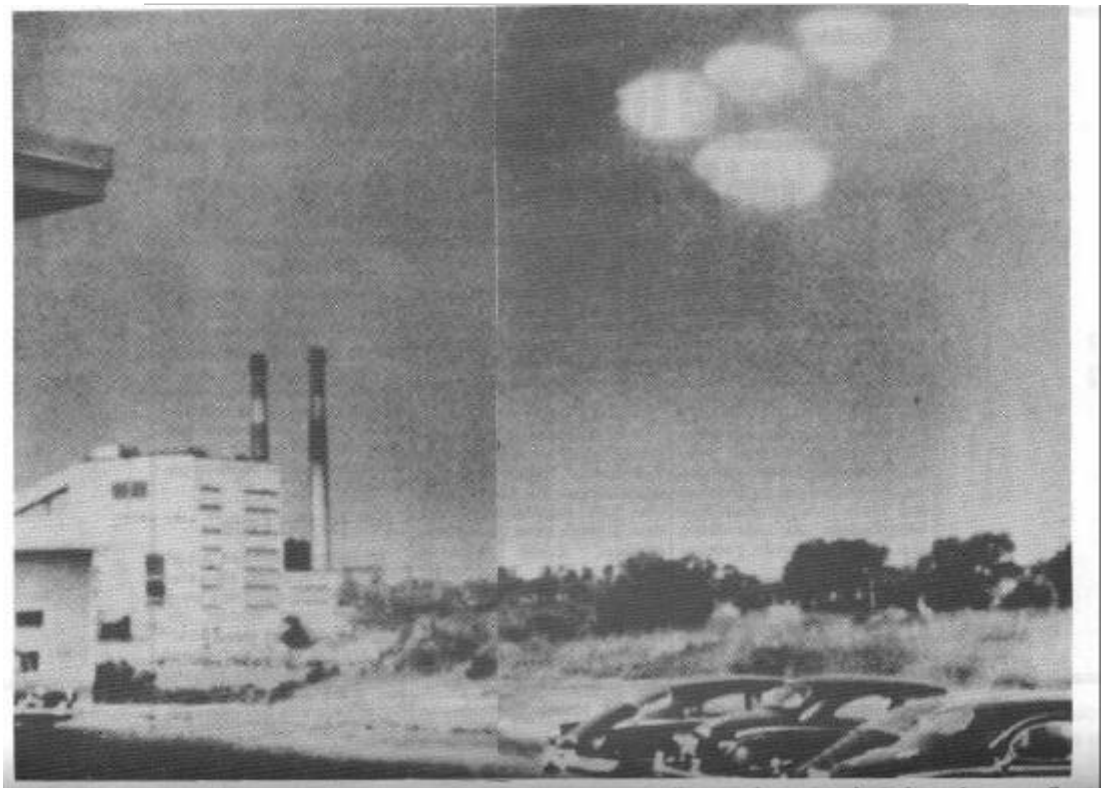
Um 5.20 Uhr war das Ufo verschwunden – und kehrte am Samstagmorgen pünktlich um 1.55 Uhr zurück. Behrmann: „Wir hatten schon drauf gewartet. Wieder das gleiche Schauspiel."

Ob das Ufo auch gestern nacht erschienen ist, weiß man nicht – der Himmel war wolkenverhangen.



In 11 Kilometer Höhe zogen diese Phantoms über Köln Schleifen, suchten das Ufo. Die Jagdbomber können bis zu 7,2 Tonnen Raketen und Bomben tragen.

"Bild"-Zeitung, 25.7.1983



Vier fliegende Untertassen wurden über der nordamerikanischen Stadt Salem fotografiert

Westliche Reporter und sowjetische Wissenschaftler berichten über eine unheimliche Begegnung:

„Goldene Todesstrahlen! UFO griff russische Stadt an"

f. h. **Petrosawodsk, 15. April**

„Ein geheimnisvolles Flugobjekt beschoß die Stadt mit Todesstrahlen. Die goldfarbenen Strahlenbündel schnitten Löcher in die Straßen und Fenster. Sie versetzten die 185 000 Einwohner der nordrussischen Stadt Petrosawodsk in Angst und Schrecken."

Diesen sensationellen Bericht veröffentlichten zwei namhafte Reporter in Amerika, nachdem sie in Moskau mit Weltraum-Experten und Mitgliedern der Akademie der Wissenschaften gesprochen hatten.

Eine riesige Muschel

Über den mysteriösen Zwischenfall, der lange geheimgehalten wurde, erfuhren die Journalisten diese Einzelheiten: „Wie eine riesige Muschel, aber größer als ein Fußballfeld, stach das Ufo erstmals am 20. September, vier Uhr nachmittags, aus den Wolken über dem Onega-See. Zwölf Minuten schwebte es regungslos über dem Hafen. Plötzlich schossen Strahlenbündel zur Erde."

Der Korrespondent der amtlichen sowjetischen Nachrichtenagentur TASS, Nicolai Milow, interviewte Hunderte von Einwohnern in Petrosawodsk und bestätigte: „Das Loch, das die Strahlen in eine Fensterscheibe brannten, war etwas größer als ein Hühnerei. Das herausgeschnittene Stück war wie mit einem Diamanten herausgelöst. Es wurde zur Untersuchung nach Moskau geschickt."

„Das ist das Ende"

Im Hafen erzählten Arbeiter dem Reporter, sie seien beim Anblick des Ufos weggelaufen und hätten geschrien: „Das ist das Ende!" Der Wagen eines Arztes soll während des Ufo-Angriffs aus unerklärlichen Gründen außer Kontrolle geraten sein.

"Bild"-Ztg., Hamburg, 15.4.1978, Seite 8

In der Parlamentsdebatte, Donnerstag, den 18. Jan. 1979, befaßte sich das britische Oberhaus (House of Lords) in London mit Fragen über "*Unidentified Flying Objects*" (UFOs). Kopie des Originals, verkleinert.

Vol. 397
No. 23

Thursday
18th January 1979

PARLIAMENTARY DEBATES
(HANSARD)

HOUSE OF LORDS

OFFICIAL REPORT

CONTENTS

WEDNESDAY, 17 JANUARY 1979
(Continuation of Proceedings)
Motion Industrial Recovery (Debate continued) [Col. 1107]
Deer Bill [H.L.] Committee [Col. 1118]
Written Answers

THURSDAY, 18 JANUARY 1979
Questions Pension Fund Investment [Col. 1155]
Charter 77 Appeal: Human Rights [Col. 1157]
Grey Squirrel Control in Scotland [Col. 1159]
Social Workers: Inquiry Proposal [Col. 1163]
Ancient Monuments and Archaeological Areas Bill [H.L.] First Reading [Col. 1167]
Carriage by Air Bill [H.L.] First Reading [Col. 1168]
Criminal Evidence Bill [H.L.] First Reading [Col. 1168]
House of Commons (Redistribution of Seats) Bill First Reading [Col. 1168]
Alcoholic Liquor Duties Bill [H.L.] Second Reading [Col. 1169]
Hydrocarbon Oil Duties Bill [H.L.] Second Reading [Col. 1169]
Matches and Mechanical Lighters Duties Bill [H.L.] Second Reading [Col. 1170]
Tobacco Products Duty Bill [H.L.] Second Reading [Col. 1170]
Customs and Excise Management Bill [H.L.] Second Reading [Col. 1170]
Customs and Excise Duties (General Reliefs) Bill [H.L.] Second Reading [Col. 1170]
Excise Duties (Surcharges or Rebates) Bill [H.L.] Second Reading [Col. 1171]
Public Health Laboratory Service Bill [H.L.] Third Reading [Col. 1171]
Arbitration Bill [H.L.] Committee [Cols. 1171, 1180, 1198 & 1210]
Statements Road Haulage Strike [Col. 1113]
Industrial Disputes [Col. 1187]
Bomb Incidents [Col. 1206]
Question—Unidentified Flying Objects
Written Answers "British Nationality Law: Discussion of Possible Changes"
Disabled Persons: Employment Quota Deficiency
Disarmament and Arms Control: U.N. Resolutions

LONDON
HER MAJESTY'S STATIONERY OFFICE
40p net

Memorandum für US-Präsident Franklin D. Roosevelt, vom 26. Febr. 1942, von Stabchef, General George C. Marshall bezüglich des Luftalarms und der feindlichen Flugobjekte über Los Angeles, Kalifornien. Das Memorandum, mit zwei SEKRET-Stempeln versehen, unterlag der 30-jährigen Geheimhaltung. Freigabestempel 3. Mai 1972. Kopie des Originals aus dem Militär-Archiv. (Von DIN-A-4 auf DIN-A-5 verkleinert.)

~~SECRET~~

OCS 21347-86

February 26, 1942.

MEMORANDUM FOR THE PRESIDENT:

The following is the information we have from GHQ at this moment regarding the air alarm over Los Angeles of yesterday morning:

"From details available at this hour:

"1. Unidentified airplanes, other than American Army or Navy planes, were probably over Los Angeles, and were fired on by elements of the 37th CA Brigade (AA) between 3:12 and 4:15 AM. These units expended 1430 rounds of ammunition.

"2. As many as fifteen airplanes may have been involved, flying at various speeds from what is officially reported as being 'very slow' to as much as 200 MPH and at elevations from 9000 to 18000 feet.

"3. No bombs were dropped.

"4. No casualties among our troops.

"5. No planes were shot down.

"6. No American Army or Navy planes were in action.

"Investigation continuing. It seems reasonable to conclude that if unidentified airplanes were involved they may have been from commercial sources, operated by enemy agents for purposes of spreading alarm, disclosing location of antiaircraft positions, and slowing production through blackout. Such conclusion is supported by varying speed of operation and the fact that no bombs were dropped."

DECLASSIFIED
E.O. 11652, Sec. 3(E) and 5(D) or (E)
OSD letter, May 3, 1972
By LL NARS Date 4-9-74

(Sgd) G. C. MARSHALL
Chief of Staff.

21347
86

mkn

SECRET

Orig. duplicated for Pres.
2/27/42

92

MILITÄRISCHES TASCHENLEXIKON

FACHAUSDRÜCKE DER BUNDESWEHR

3000 Sachwörter mit 87 Zeichnungen und 16 Tafeln

ATHENÄUM VERLAG BONN

Die Herausgeber Fregattenkapitän Assessor Karl-Heinz Fuchs und Friedrich-Wilhelm Kölper sowie der größte Teil der Mitarbeiter gehören dem Bundesministerium für Verteidigung an.

Fliegende Scheibe: Arbeitsausdruck für einen kreisförmigen Flugkörper, der aus deutschen Entwicklungen bis zum Jahre 1944 flugfähig geworden war. Ein kugelartiges Mittelstück nimmt die Besatzung auf, ein auftriebfördernder flacher Ring ist zentrisch um das Mittelstück angeordnet, der am Außenrand viele in ihrer Wirkungsrichtung verstellbare Düsen aufweist. Durchmesser des Flugkörpers 44 m. Kann unkonventionelle Flugbewegungen auf der- und Hochachse ausführen; soll 1944 bereits 2000 km/h und 12 000 m Höhe in wenigen Minuten erreicht haben. Ähnliche französische Konstruktion wurde nach dem Kriege bekannt. Die deutschen Entwicklungen gingen wahrscheinlich vorwiegend in russische und amerikanische Hände über. Abb. > Ufo.

Ufo: Zum Wort gewordene Abkürzung für „Unbekanntes Flugobjekt" oder „unidentified flying object", womit die Fliegenden Scheiben" vorwiegend angesprochen wurden.

"GERMANY MUST PERISH"
GERMANY MUST BE DESTROYED !

This constantly repeated demand of its enemies in East and West, since long before the I World War, has today become the third time his fullandterrifying Validity: Simon Wiesenthal dared in a lecture before the Jewish Student Union of Zurich, on November 18, 1969 to the Mass murder call vis-à-vis Germans: Approximately 7 million Germans in the FRG, the GDR and in Austria be Murder and Criminal. *"... the murderers of tomorrow would only be born today. This The potential murderers of the future must be exterminated today. It is necessary, Wiesenthal exclaimed in Zurich, to destroy potential opponents even in the germ, even in the embryonic state, once and for all." 'Salzburger Volksblatt',* 23.1.1970. See also *'Neue Züricher Zeitung'*, Friday, 21.11.1969, long-distance edition, p. 38; also the *'Tat'*, the *'Tagesanzeiger',* Zurich.

VorderUNO General Assembly the chinese declared Foreign Minister: *"The Moscow 'social-imperialists' kept opt for a Breakthrou toCentralEuropewith simultaneous Flank Attacks from the North and South Ready." 'Die Welt',* Hamburg, 1.10.1977

Samuel Cohen, U.S. nuclear weapons expert and co-builder of neutron bomb destined for German soil, declared on the Quest to the Insert the Bomb: *"The most likely setting would be West Germany; I consider it an academic question to rack one's brains over the way in which the enemy (the Germans; inserted by the author) comes to death" 'Bild'-*Ztg. Hamburg, 16.10.1977

Chenchu ,
ChineseDelegationViceHeaddeclaredbeforetheCommitteeoftheUN General Assembly in New York:
Soviet and the United States Thousan of strategic nuclear weapons and have accumulated five times possess nuclear warheads as they did eight years ago.'....
there strategic Emphasis"
Peking Review, Dec. 13, 1977

General Sir John Hackett, former commander in chief of the BritishRhineArmy andsimultaneous Commander in of the Army Group North of NATO wrote a book in the Novel style wit the auspicious Title:
"THE THIRD WORLD MAIN SCENE GERMANY" Start of the August 1985
W. Goldmann Verlag, 1978

Headline of a Newspaper report:
"Soviet SS-20 missiles aimed only at Germany" 'Die Welt',
Hamburg, 7.2.1979.

Henry Kissinger, 1979 in Brussels:

"You Europeans must already understand that if there is a conflict in Europe, we Americans, of course, by no means intend to die with you." 'Independent News', Bochum, No. 8-1981

"Nixon in WELT am SONNTAG: This Threatens the Germans Today".
In thismulti-page Interview wit the americ. Ex-President, the latter declared, *"World War III has already begun."*
"No one bears a greater risk than the Federal Republic of Germany."
'WamS', Hamburg, April 13, 1980

U.S. Secretary of Defense C. Weinberger:

"The battlefield of the next conventional war is Europe, not the United States."

Frankfurter Rundschau', 29.4.1981
'Exodus of the Children of Israel' - For the II time from Germany?..:

Yo Cou at leave."

From a lengthy appeal by Rabbi Yaakov Spivak to the Jews in Germany, in *'The Jewish Press',* New York, Brooklyn, USA, 3.4.1981

U.S. Rear Admiral Gene R. La Rocque:

"The Americans assume that the third world war will be fought in Europe just like the first and second world wars." *'Frankfurter Rundschau',* 29.4.1981 also: *'Der Spiegel'*, Hmbg. No. 40/81 *'ARD-Fernsehen',* 30.9.1981

U.S. General Collins stated as early as 1949:

"It is enough that we supply weapons, our sons should not bleed to death in Europe. There are enough Germans who can die for our interests."
'Hessian-Lower Saxony General', (HNA), Kassel, 24.10.1981

SamuelCohen , US nuclear bomb designer for Mass murder in Europe, in a Interview:
"And a thousand feet above the city, I detonate my neutron bomb."

When asked if the battle line runs through Europe?
Ant.:
"Basically, I am referring to Europe. This kind of system must be the border between East and West.
West Germany accur adapted Be."
'Boletin de Information', Buenos Aires,11.1
'Independent News', Bochum, No 4/1982

U.S. Secretary of Haig imHearing of U.S.

"It giv more as the Peace to
'Independent Bochum, *maintain"*

" 'If the weapons (neutron bombs, nuclear missiles, biological and chemical warfare agents, etc.) were ever to be used,' wrote London's Daily Mirror, 'it would probably be on German territory, East or West; the Russian or American heartland would not be affected' "

Taken from the Spiegel editorial: *"Neutron shock; Schlachtfeld Deutschland?", 'Der Spiegel',* Hamburg, No. 34/1981, p. 23

Currently is already the European headquarters the American use Germany to England relocate

"IRRADIATE FRO POLAN BIS PORTUGAL EUROPE"

"Washington works to new 'Gamma
Washington/Hamburg. The american *Weapon*
is working on a new method to destroy Europe,...
The weapon is called gamma rays. It works similarly to the neutron bomb, only stronger, ...

In an interview with the Hamburg-based newspaper '*Welt',* Samuel
T. Cohen, the *'father of the neutron bomb,' unveiled* the new plans.
"One could lay with gamma rays.... a carpet of radiation 1000 kilometers wide and several thousand kilometers long. That would be an area from Denmark to the Alps and from Poland

Gamma

The production of 'Volkswille',
Carinthia, 3.2.1982
"Stockholm (dpa) In a at germa
nuclear war between NATO and

Warsaw Pact, ten million people would die. This is the conclusion reached by three American scientists in a study published yesterday in Stockholm, about which
Follow of a limitednuclearwar inboth German states."
'Hessian-Lower Saxony General' (HNA), Kassel, 5.6.1982

Federal President Karl Carstens on May 7, 1982 in Hamburg:
"I warn before itsel fro America avert."
From the scripture: *can a looming war in Europe prevents become",* Wolfgang Seeger, Grabert Publish Tübingen, p. 5

In an interview with the Illustrated magazine '*Stern'*, let Bahr with his statement:
"WIR GEISELN THE MAJORITIES."
the proverbial cat out of the bag! *Stern'* magazine Hamburg, No. 30, 1983, p.

The victors of 45' have the spoils Germany like a cake among themselves, exploit Germany for decades fro and made systematicallytoits respective Main deployment areas. Where they are an atomic war to the as limited as possible - to back and to the catastrophic Damage of the prey would like to lead! And not to their own mutual destruction. Mind you! Unfortunately, Mr. Bahr forgot to tell the Germans to whom the two Great Powers hold us hostage.

ORF, Österreichischer Rundfunk, Monday, July 26, 1976, Late News 10.07 p.m.:

"DemocraticPresidentialCandidateJimmyCarterWou in Eu Government of those Countr communicate
In this Context was fro Carter the Federal Republic of Germany and Austria named. This

both states, due to their geographic location, would likely become the main battle line and thus subject to annihilation."

Th Correctnessofthis Radio at 13.8.1976 confirmed in writing by a letter from *'ORF'* to Aula-Verlag, Graz.

Will the U.S. advance warning be passed on to the people? Or is it regarded in higher circles merely as Judas pay for Hangman's aides?

In spite of all his enviers, haters, traitors and mortal to enemies:
Germany must not die, and the German people beco survive, thanks to the genius of his greatest son ! ! !

Anhang:

A.A. GUNS IN ACTION AT LOS ANGELES

A FALSE ALARM

FROM OUR OWN CORRESPONDENT

NEW YORK, Feb. 25

Anti-aircraft batteries went into action over Los Angeles last night for the first time since the war began. The first alert was sounded at 2.25 a.m. (Pacific time). Almost immediately anti-aircraft fire began, and about 30 searchlights roved over the sky, concentrating in a few minutes on a vague object high in the air. Meanwhile the city and all the surrounding country went into a black-out. The firing of guns ceased at 3.30 a.m. At 4 a.m. it was resumed for a time. The "all clear" was not sounded until 7.19 a.m.

This afternoon Colonel Knox, Secretary to the Navy, said it was "just a false alarm"; there were no aeroplanes over Los Angeles.

During the alarm the police arrested three Japanese suspected of sending flashlight signals.

"The Times", London, 26.2.1942, S.3

"Reuter" vom 13. Dez. 1944:

SUPREME HEADQUARTERS, Dec. 13 (Reuter)—The Germans have produced a "secret" weapon in keeping with the Christmas season.

The new device, apparently an air defense weapon, resembles the huge glass balls that adorn Christmas trees.

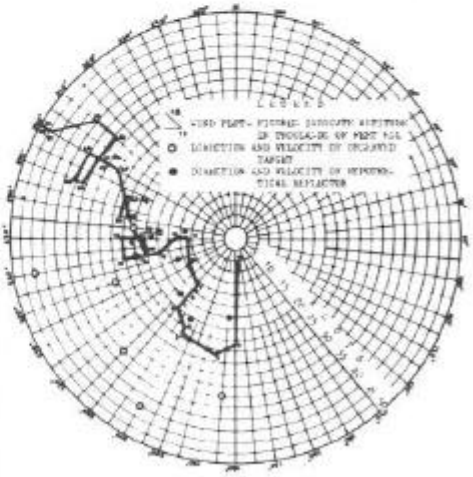
There was no information available as to what holds them up like stars in the sky, what is in them, or what their purpose is supposed to be.

The New York Times, 14. Dez. 1944

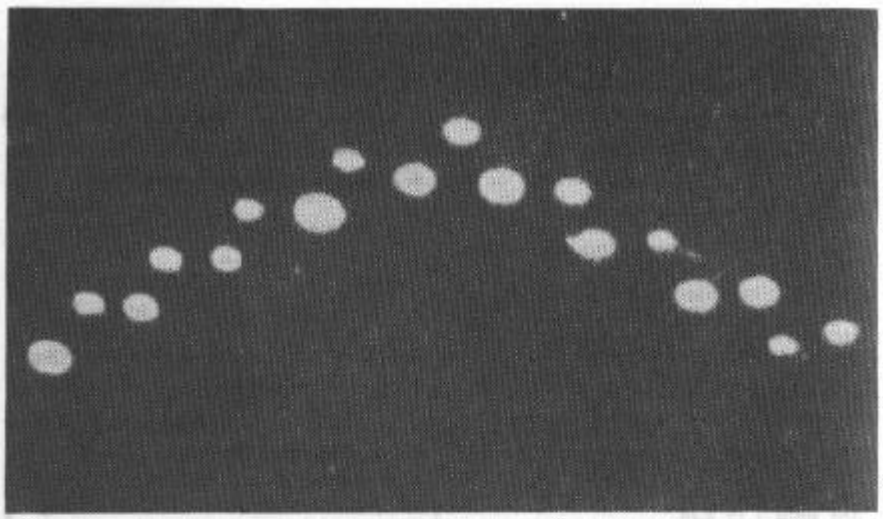
Floating Mystery Ball Is New Nazi Air Weapon

SUPREME HEADQUARTERS, Allied Expeditionary Force, Dec. 13—A new German weapon has made its appearance on the western air front, it was disclosed today.

Airmen of the American Air Force report that they are encountering silver colored spheres in the air over German territory. The spheres are encountered either singly or in clusters. Sometimes they are semi-translucent.



Ein offizielles Luftwaffendiagramm, das die Position und den Kurs der UFOs zeigt, die in der Nacht des 26. Juli 1952 über dem National Airport, Washington D.C., verfolgt wurden - eine Woche nachdem man die ersten UFOs über der Hauptstadt gesichtet hatte.



(27)

Carl Hart, Student am Texas College of Technology machte dieses Foto mit 18 in Formation fliegenden Scheiben, sowie 4 weitere Aufnahmen in der Nacht vom 30. Aug. 1951 über der Stadt Lubbock in Texas. Viele Augenzeugen sahen ebenfalls diese Formationsflüge. C. Hart's Aufnahmen gingen seinerzeit durch die Weltpresse. BRD-Presse z.B.: *"Kristall"*, Nr. 10, Mai 1952; *"Wiesbadener Nachrichten"*, 13. Mai 1952; *"Der Spiegel"*, Nr. 17/1967, S. 166; S. 146. (11)
Die verschiedensten Formen solcher Flugscheiben-Formationsflüge wurden in den letzten Jahrzehnten beobachtet und auch fotografiert.

Am 25. August 1951 plauderten Dr. Robinson, Geologie-Professor an der Universität von Texas, Dr. Oberg, Chemieprofessor, und Prof. Ducker, Spezialist in Ölfragen, auf der Terrasse eines Hauses in Lubbock. Plötzlich sahen sie 20 leuchtende Lichter in V-Formation mit unglaublicher Schnelligkeit geräuschlos von einem Ende des Horizonts zum anderen ziehen. Das Ganze dauerte nur Sekunden. Und während sie noch lebhaft diskutierten, flog eine zweite Formation vorbei. Zwölf ähnliche Gruppen beobachtete Prof. Ducker vom August bis November vorigen Jahres. Hunderte von Menschen sahen sie mit ihm. Ein Student, Carl Hart, filmte sie. Fünf Bilder zeigen 18 bis 20 leuchtende ›Dinge‹, heller als die Venus. Die US-Luftwaffe untersuchte die Bilder. Es ist kein Schwindel, sagte sie. Es waren auch keine Düsenflugzeuge. In jener fraglichen Zeit überflog kein Flugzeug jenes Gebiet. Was war es also? (27)

KOREA "FLYING SAUCERS" REPORT

FLASHES OF BLUE LIGHT

FROM OUR OWN CORRESPONDENT

WASHINGTON, FEB. 19

The Department of the Air Force stated to-day that an investigation has been ordered into reports from several members of the crews of two United States bombers that they saw objects resembling "flying saucers" while on missions over Korea. This is the first time for several months that such objects have been prominently in the news, the Air Force having earlier discounted reports of similar phenomena said to have been seen in the United States.

The objects reported over Korea are described as globe shaped, bright orange in colour, and emitting occasional flashes of bluish light.

"The Times", London, 20. Febr. 1952, S. 4

DIE RHEINPFALZ

„Marsmenschen" sprachen deutsch

Geschäftsfahrt eines kalifornischen Händlers — US-Luftwaffe alarmiert

Washington (UP). Das Radarnetz der amerikanischen Luftwaffe ist in Alarmbereitschaft versetzt worden, um auf sogenannte „nicht identifizierte Flugkörper" zu achten. Bisher wurden aber keine derartigen Gegenstände registriert, teilte ein Sprecher mit. Inzwischen gehen bei amerikanischen Dienststellen immer neue Berichte ein, in denen von der Beobachtung unbekannter Flugkörper, die meist wie Zeppeline ausgesehen haben sollen, die Rede ist.

Einem kalifornischen Getreidehändler namens Reinhold Schmidt ist, wie er erzählt, der Vorzug zuteil geworden, ein derartiges Raumschiff betreten zu dürfen und mit seinen Insassen gesprochen zu haben. Auf einer Geschäftsfahrt stieß Schmidt nach seinem Bericht auf ein silbern glänzendes Ding, das wie eines der kleinen Luftschiffe der US-Kriegsmarine aussah. Es sei über dreißig Meter lang, zehn Meter dick und etwa fünf Meter hoch gewesen. Als er noch 20 Meter von dem „Raumschiff" entfernt gewesen sei, habe sein Wagen den Dienst versagt.

Schmidt sagte, er sei aus seinem Wagen gestiegen und auf das Ding zugegangen, das da auf vier Pfählen ruhte. Dann wurde eine Treppe ausgefahren. Zwei Männer seien erschienen und hätten ihn angeleuchtet. Für eine Sekunde habe er sich nicht rühren können. Dann sprachen die beiden Männer, erzählte Schmidt. Anstelle der Marssprache, die er erwartet haben mochte, will er aber Deutsch und Englisch mit deutschem Akzent vernommen haben.

„Wir haben hier eine kleine Weile zu tun — warum wollen Sie nicht hereinkommen?", fragten die „Raumfahrer" nach Schmidts Angaben. Er sei der Einladung gefolgt und habe im Innern des Flugkörpers noch zwei Männer und zwei Frauen vorgefunden. Er sei durchsucht worden und nach 20 Minuten angeregter Unterhaltung habe er die Flugmaschine verlassen, die dann lautlos aufgestiegen sei. „Sie werden später erfahren, was wir hier tun", hätten die Besatzungsmitglieder noch zu ihm gesagt.

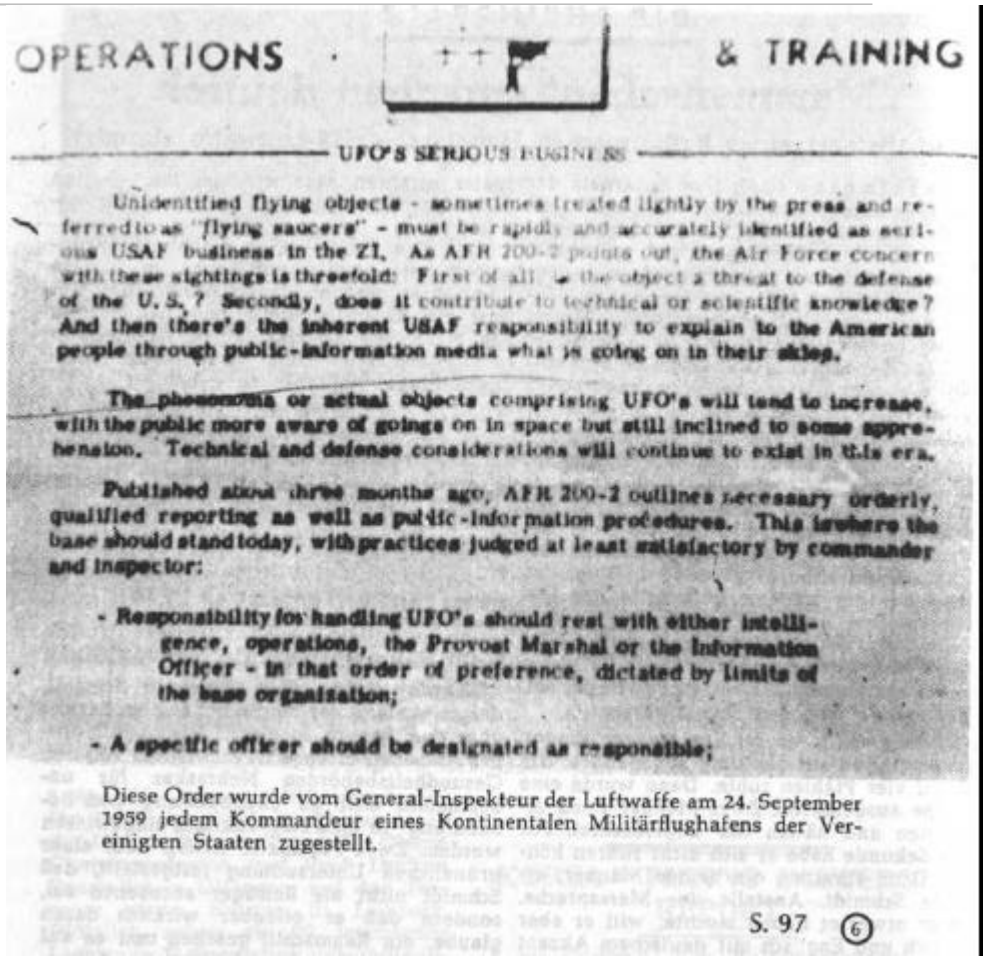
Nach den Polizisten, Soldaten und Autofahrern, die bereits vor Tagen mysteriöse Flugkörper gesehen haben wollen, hat sich jetzt ein Radio-Ingenieur gemeldet, der in der Nähe des amerikanischen Raketenversuchsgeländes in New Mexico ein eiförmiges Flugobjekt gesehen haben will.

Donnerstag, 7. November 1957

Samstag, 9. November 1957

Vom Raumschiff in die Nervenklinik

Kearney (USA), (UP). Reinhold Schmidt, der am Anfang der Woche mit seinem Bericht über den Besuch in einem Raumschiff großes Aufsehen erregte, ist inzwischen von den Gesundheitsbehörden Nebraskas für unbestimmte Zeit zu „Beobachtung und Behandlung" in eine Nervenklinik eingewiesen worden. Zwei Psychiater hatten nach einer gründlichen Untersuchung festgestellt, daß Schmidt nicht als Betrüger anzusehen sei, sondern daß er offenbar wirklich daran glaube, ein Raumschiff gesehen und es auf Einladung der Besatzung besichtigt zu haben.



OPERATIONS & TRAINING

UFO'S SERIOUS BUSINESS

Unidentified flying objects - sometimes treated lightly by the press and referred to as "flying saucers" - must be rapidly and accurately identified as serious USAF business in the ZI. As AFR 200-2 points out, the Air Force concern with these sightings is threefold: First of all, is the object a threat to the defense of the U. S.? Secondly, does it contribute to technical or scientific knowledge? And then there's the inherent USAF responsibility to explain to the American people through public-information media what is going on in their skies.

The phenomena or actual objects comprising UFO's will tend to increase, with the public more aware of goings on in space but still inclined to some apprehension. Technical and defense considerations will continue to exist in this era.

Published about three months ago, AFR 200-2 outlines necessary orderly, qualified reporting as well as public-information procedures. This is where the base should stand today, with practices judged at least satisfactory by commander and inspector:

- Responsibility for handling UFO's should rest with either intelligence, operations, the Provost Marshal or the Information Officer - in that order of preference, dictated by limits of the base organization;

- A specific officer should be designated as responsible;

Diese Order wurde vom General-Inspekteur der Luftwaffe am 24. September 1959 jedem Kommandeur eines Kontinentalen Militärflughafens der Vereinigten Staaten zugestellt.

S. 97 ⑥

Polizist fotografierte unbekanntes Flugobjekt

Amerikanischer Kongreß soll Untersuchung einleiten

Bad Axe/Michigan. (ap) Scharen von unbekannten Flugobjekten müssen den amerikanischen Staat Michigan überquert haben. Einem Luftwaffenstützpunkt bei Detroit wurden Sichtungen aus fünf verschiedenen Landesteilen gemeldet. Beim Sheriff des Kreises Hillsdale liefen so viele Beobachtungsmeldungen ein, daß es nicht mehr gelang, darüber Protokoll zu führen.

Überall wurden die Beobachtungen von Streifenpolizisten bestätigt. „Sie können nicht alle Vorstellungen haben", meinte ein höherer Polizeioffizier. Übereinstimmend wurde berichtet, daß die Objekte blau leuchteten und sich auf und nieder bewegten. Ein Beamter will ein Objekt von schätzungsweise zwei Meter Durchmesser in etwa 60 Meter Höhe über den Baumwipfeln beobachtet haben. Es habe sehr helle rote, blaue und weiße Lichter gehabt und sich entfernt, als er sich genähert habe.

Der republikanische Fraktionsführer im Repräsentantenhaus, Gerald R. Ford, forderte im Fernsehen von Washington aus eine Kongreßuntersuchung der Angelegenheit. Viele zuverlässige Bewohner des Staates Michigan hielten es für angebracht, daß die Regierung etwas unternehme und ihnen nicht nur eine ausweichende Antwort gegeben werde wie von der Luftwaffe, die die Erscheinungen als Sumpfgas abgetan hatte.

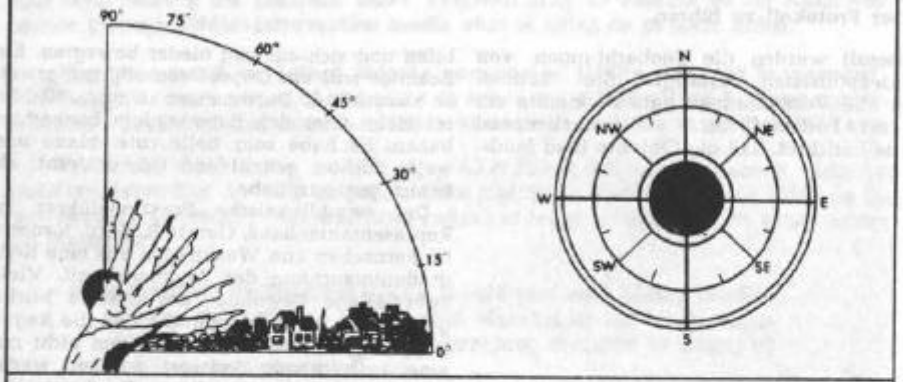
Selbst in der unmittelbaren Nähe des Luftwaffenamtes für die Untersuchung unbekannter Flugobjekte, bei Dayton, wurde ein solches Objekt von einem Polizisten gesichtet. Der Beamte berichtete, daß er das Objekt fotografiert habe. Der Film soll von der Luftwaffe ausgewertet werden. Der Flughafen von Toledo erhielt ebenfalls mehrere Sichtungsmeldungen. Ein Beobachter auf dem Flugplatz erklärte jedoch, er habe weder mit bloßem Auge noch auf dem Radarschirm irgendetwas wahrgenommen.

General-Anzeiger, Bonn
Dienstag, 29. März 1966

Obwohl die US-Luftwaffe immer wieder versuchte, UFO-Sichtungen als Unfug, Halluzination, oder natürliche Himmelsobjekte abzutun, und in der Vergangenheit Flugscheiben als nicht existent erklärte, hält sie für US-Bürger und andere ausführliche Fragebögen mit 42 Fragen, und für Radar-Spezialisten ähnliche mit 30 Fragen bereit. Siehe Original Fragebögen S. 316-328 (2)

OFFICIAL U. S. AIR FORCE UFO FORM

27. In the following sketch, imagine that you are at the point shown. Place an "A" on the curved line to show how high the object was above the horizon (skyline) when you first saw it. Place a "B" on the same curved line to show how high the object was above the horizon (skyline) when you last saw it. Place an "A" on the compass when you first saw it. Place a "B" on the compass when you last saw the object.



28. Draw a picture that will show the motion that the object or objects made. Place an "A" at the beginning of the path, a "B" at the end of the path, and show any changes in direction during the course.

Ufo-Fragebogen der US-Luftwaffe: „Wer sagt . . .
"Der Spiegel", Hamburg Nr. 17/1967, S. 168

Rätsel um „fliegende Untertassen"

Jugoslawische Experten bemühen sich um Identifizierung seltsamer Objekte

BELGRAD (dpa). Jugoslawische Experten bemühen sich gegenwärtig, das Rätsel um die in verschiedenen Teilen Jugoslawiens gesichteten angeblichen „fliegenden Untertassen" zu lösen.

Mehrere Bauern hatten nach ihren Aussagen einen unbekannten Flugkörper über dem Berg Komovi in Montenegro beobachtet. Er sei so niedrig geflogen, berichteten sie, daß die Abgasflammen Wälder in Brand gesetzt hätten. Tatsache ist, daß die Wälder in Flammen standen und der Brand erst nach 24 Stunden eingedämmt werden konnte. Bewohner der Stadt Ivangrad, ebenfalls in Montenegro, wollen mehrere unbekannte Flugobjekte gesehen haben, die sich in symmetrischen Kreisen bewegten, ihre Höhe änderten und schließlich rasch davonflogen. In der ostserbischen Kleinstadt Golubac behaupteten mehrere Bewohner, sie hätten einen „Himmelskörper" beobachtet, der eine erheblich größere Geschwindigkeit als Düsenflugzeuge gehabt habe.

Rund 100 Einwohner von Pristina, der Hauptstadt der autonomen Provinz Kosmet, berichteten, sie hätten einen sternähnlichen Flugkörper von ungewöhnlicher Helligkeit gesehen. Verglichen mit einer zum selben Zeitpunkt sichtbaren Düsenmaschine sei er „in großer Höhe" und mit viel höherer Geschwindigkeit geflogen. Dutzende von Menschen hatten in den letzten Tagen „fliegende Untertassen" auch über Zagreb, Belgrad und anderen Gebieten des Landes gesehen. Am Dienstag hatte bereits in Sofia ein unbekannter Flugkörper Aufsehen erregt, der grell leuchtete und mit bloßem Auge über der Innenstadt sichtbar war.

"Bassumer-Anzeiger", Bassum, 27.11.196

„Ufos nur Luftströmungen“

Sowjetforscher weist ausserirdischen Ursprung zurück

Sowjetische Wissenschaftler wollen jetzt eine natürliche, in ihren Einzelheiten allerdings noch rätselhafte Erklärung für unidentifizierte Flugobjekte (Ufos) gefunden haben. Scheibenförmige Strömungen in der Atmosphäre, die im Augenblick der Verwirbelung mit Staub für kurze Zeit sichtbar werden. Professor Grigory Barenblatt vom russischen Institut für Ozeanographie erklärte dazu, daß innerhalb dieser Strömungsscheibe unabhängige Luftstrudel mit hoher Geschwindigkeit zirkulierten – vergleichbar mit einem in den Meeren beobachteten Phänomen. Aber, so fügte er hinzu: „Die Ursache dieser turbulenten Vorgänge ist bisher ein Rätsel geblieben.

Begonnen hatte die Geschichte der Ufos vor nunmehr 35 Jahren am 24. Juni 1947 mit dem Privatflieger Ken Arnold, der behauptete, in den USA über dem Mount Rainier neun riesige glühende Scheiben von Untertassenform gesehen zu haben. Seitdem sind Zehntausende von Ufo-Meldungen um die Welt gegangen. Bei exakter Nachprüfung hatten sich durchaus irdische Erklärungen gefunden: fliegende Wetterballone, Flugzeuge und Wolkenfetzen im Schein der bereits untergegangenen Sonne, Reflektion von Schiffs-, Auto- und Flugzeugscheinwerfern an Dunst- und Wolken-Schichten, auch elektrische Entladungen.

Die Deutung von Professor Barenblatt ist anders: „Die (von den Strömungen erfaßten) Staubpartikel sind sehr leicht. Deshalb werden die Untertassen auch mit halsbrecherischer Geschwindigkeit vom Wind forgetragen, wie eine Boje in der Luft tanzend oder plötzliche Manöver wie vor einer Landung ausführend.“

Eine Zunahme der Staubteilchen kann nach dieser Darstellung den ganzen Strudelmech-

Scheibe kippt

anismus mit einem Schlag beenden und die Scheibe abkippen lassen. „Damit brauchen wir uns auch nicht mehr länger um eine Interpretation für das urplötzliche Verschwinden der Ufos zu bemühen, denen ja die Fähigkeit zur unmittelbaren Beschleunigung auf Lichtgeschwindigkeit (300 000 km/h) nachgerühmt wird.“

Die amerikansiche Luftwaffe hatte für das Verteigungsministerium in Washinton bis Ende der sechziner Jahre 12 618 rätselhafte optische Phänomene untersucht. Der Verdacht, daß einige dieser Erscheinungen außerirdische Flugobjekte gewesen sein könnten, ließ sich nie bestätigen. 701 Objekte aus dieser Untersuchungsreihe galten allerdings auch nach deren Abschluß als nicht identifiziert. Sinnestäuschungen und keine Gefahr für die nationale Sicherheit – so lautete damals das allgemeine Fazit.

Unter dem Hinweis auf dieses Ergebnis lehnte die amerikanische Weltraumbehörde (Nasa) vor viereinhalb Jahren auch eine Aufforderung des damaligen US-Präsidenten Jimmy Carter zu einer neuen Untersuchung ab. Carter selbst hatte noch als Gouverneur von Georgia berichtet, er habe einmal ein Ufo gesehen.

"Westdeutsche Allgemeine Zeitung", WAZ Essen vom 26.8.1982

List of sources

1) "UFO; Speculations and Facts; A Documentary"; Jean-Claude Bourret (newscaster and chief reporter at the franz. Sender 'France-Inter', has followed the Apollo flights in Houston and Cape Kennedy. Later on he has reported on 'France-Inter' presents the most comprehensive radio reportage compiled on unidentified flying objects). 1977, Edition Sven Erik Bergh 1980, Droemer Knauer, Paperback Edition
2) "Der Weltraum rückt uns näher," Major Donald E. Keyhoe, 1954, L. Blanvalet Verlag, Berlin, trans. from the Amer.
3) "The Roswell Incident; UFOs and the CIA"; Charles Berlitz/ William L. Moore, 1980, Paul Zsolnay Verlag Vienna/ Hamburg, original title: "The Roswell Incident."
4) "The Bermuda Triangle; Window on the Cosmos," Charles Berlitz, 1975, Paul Zsolnay Verlag, Vienna/Hamburg.
5) "UFOs in the Bermuda Triangle; The Atlantis Secret Base," Jean Prachan, 1979, Melden-Verlag, Vienna.
6) "Flying Saucers - A Reality," Frank Edwards, Ventla-Verlag, Wiesbaden, Germany, copyright 1967, original edition:
"Flying Saucers - Serious Business," Lyle Stuart Inc, New York, 1966.
7) "Bunte Illustrierte", Burda-Verlag GmbH, Offenburg, four-part series of articles: "Das Jahrhunderträtsel; UFO-Spuk oder Wirklichkeit?", No. 9 from 25.2.- No. 12 from 18.3.1982
8) "Bremer Nachrichten", Bremer Tageszeitungen AG., Bremen, twelve-part series of articles: "UFO's; The great unknowns", from Sept. 30-Oct. 14, 1977.
9) "Neue Revue", weekly magazine, H. Bauer-Verlag, Hamburg, five-part series of articles: "UFOs, We have seen them", no. 6 of Feb. 2 - no. 10 of March 1, 1980.
10) "UFOs; They Really Do Exist," Paris Flammonde, III

11) "Flying Saucers - Riddles in the AH", from the book series: "Great Mysteries", Roy Stemman, Moderner Buchvertrieb und Verlag GmbH, Mannheim, Copyright 1978, Aldus Books, London.
12) "Die Welt," daily newspaper, Hamburg, thirteen-part article series: "Observers from Space?", Oct. 28-Nov. 11, 1950.
13)- "Research in Bondage," Rho Sigma, 1972, Ventla-Verlag, Wiesbaden-Schierstein, P.O. Box 130185.
Rho Sigma: Pseudonym for a German scientist who was employed at Peenemünde before 1945 and at NASA under Wernher von Braun after 1952.
14) "Der Spiegel," news magazine, Hamburg, No. 17/1954, pp. 26-30, article: "Fliegende Untertassen; Besucher aus dem All" [Flying Saucers; Visitors from Space].
1 5) "Die Zeit," weekly newspaper, Hamburg, May 27, 1954, article: "Is the Earth under Control?"
16) "UFO-Nachrichten", monthly newspaper since 1956, direction and publisher: Ventla-Verlag Karl L. Veit, 62 Wiesbaden 13. 1 7) "Das Weltall und seine Besucher", Roy Stemman, 1979, paperback, Ullstein Verlag, Frankfurt, Berlin, Vienna.
18) "Im Raumschiff zur Arktis - Zwischenfall in Kearney", Reinhold O. Schmidt, original title: "The Kearney Incident and to the Arctic Cirkle in a Spacecraft", translation: Stud. Rat L Kaiweit, Copyright 1959 Ventla-Verlag, Wiesbaden
19) "Quick," Illustrierte, Munich, No. 11, March 17, 1956
20) "The UFO Phenomenon; Evidence of Uncanny Encounters of the First, Second and Third Kind," Johannes von Buttlar, 1978, C. Bertelsmann Verlag GmbH, Munich.
21) "Das Neue Zeitalter; Das Magazin der Zukunft," weekly magazine, A Huter, Buch- und Zeitungs-Verlag, Munich.
22) "Esotera", magazine, Hermann Bauer Verlag KG, Freiburg i. Br.

23) "UFO's extraterrestrial space ships really exist", Adolf Geigenthaler, 1977, 2nd edition, Ventla-Verlag, Wiesbaden.
24) "Der Spiegel," Hamburg, March 30, 1950, article: "Saucers, you do fly."
25) "Faster than Light; Of the Limitless Possibilities of Man.", Johannes von Buttlar, Econ Verlag, Vienna, Düsseldorf, 1st ed. August 1972
26) "Astrobiology; Organic life in the ALL?; New research methods answer an old question"; Joachim Herrmann, Kosmos, Franckh'sche Verlagshandlung, Stuttgart, 1974.
27) "Kristall," weekly magazine, Hamburg, No. 10, May 1952, pp. 294/295.
28) "The UFO Phenomenon," Johannes von Buttlar, C. Berteismann Publishers, 1978.
29) "Der Spiegel", Hamburg, No. 17/1967, article: "There it is! It's moving!"; "Professor J. Allen Hynek, consultant to the U.S. Air Force, on flying saucers.
30) "Beyond Earth: man's contact with UFOs," Ralph and Judy Blum, Bantam, New York, 1974, 248 pages.
31) "Unusual Properties of Nonidentifiable Light Appearances; Investigations on 'Foo-Fighters' in World War 2 .....", Dipl.-Physiker Mio Brand, 1979, MUFON- CES, Reference: Dipl.-Ing. A Schneider, Konrad-Celtis-Str. 38, 8000 Munich 70.
32) "Official Investigative Reports of the Russians and the Americans on Unidentifiable Celestial Phenomena;...", I. Volume, 1981, op. cit.
33) 'FOO-FIGHTER': English 'foo' is a form of 'foe'= enemy, opponent, adversary (THE OXFORT ENGLISH DICTIONARY vol. IV, 1933); as in the English dialect for army, force: 'force' is also still known 'fooaz' (THE ENGLISH DIALECT DICTIONARY, Oxford, vol. II, 1961).

'Foo-Fighter=enemy fighter pilot.

Secret Societies

and Psychological Warfare

Michael A. Hoffman II

SECRET SOCIETIES AND PSYCHOLOGICAL WARFARE

Michael A. Hoffman II

SECRET SOCIETIES AND PSYCHOLOGICAL WARFARE

[Previously titled: *Secrets of Masonic Mind Control*]

Copyright ©1989, 1992 by Michael A. Hoffman II.

All Rights Reserved.

ISBN 0-929903-03-X

No part of this work may be reproduced or transmitted by any means, including photocopying, without permission in writing of the copyright holder.

Booksellers, schools, churches and individuals wishing to purchase copies of this book in quantity, should send a self-addressed, stamped envelope and request a wholesale price list.

Wiswell Ruffin House
Post Office Box 236,
Dresden, NY 14441 USA
Printed in the United States of America.

The cover photograph is of New York Governor Mario Cuomo making the gesture known as "the devil's hand." (See Adrian Frutiger, *Signs and Symbols, Their Designs and Meanings,* p. 262).

For nothing is secret that shall not be made manifest; neither anything hid, that shall not be known and come abroad.

Luke 8:17

Contents

Preface -6

Nature or Gnosis? Divine Creation and Its Counterfeit -8

Flattery: First Principle of Mind Control -10

Satan is the Ape of God -11

Inducing the Double Mind -19

Masonic Double Mind in Vatican Two Catholicism -22

The Bovine Herd -24

Church Fathers Who Didn't Do Tricks with Mirrors -26

Masonic Dogma of 'Perfecting' Creation -27

The "Luhv" Tyranny -28

Scientism: A Form of Black Magic -32

Ceremonial Psychodrama -34

Mind Control and the Revelation of the Method -35

Mystical Toponomy -37

Truth or Consequences -38

Jack the Lodge Brother -40

Son of Uncle Sam -73

The Videodrome -83

The Angel of Light -84

Episodic Revelation and the Lone Nut Syndrome -87

Consent is Crucial to the Process -89

Trinity Sight -91

The Alchemy of Ritual Murder -93

Rosemary's Babies -96

Lunacy -97

Showtime in the Videodrome -99

The Golem -102

Re-Building the Temple of Herod -108

The Everyday Miracle Divine -109

Appendix: Statement of John Quincey Adams on the Assassination of William Morgan -114

Preface

"The Fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom."
-Proverbs 9:10

Some scholars who spend time in a study of the occult may come away from their research struck by the delusion that diabolical forces have become more powerful than God.

The fact is, God permits evil as a punishment for transgression against His Laws and Statutes. If the demonic seems to have ever greater energy in our time, it is only because we live in an era more ignorant and arrogant than any other in history.

Our people are drowning in the fraud dispensed by the public schools, the corporate media, socialistic bureaucrats and phony churchmen. We are inundated by military madness, violent crime, birth control, abortion, feminist careerism and the erosion of the Patriarchal headship principle of the Bible; the abandonment of elderly parents, the destruction of the innocence of children by constant exposure to televised misery and degradation; the deliberate falsification of the teachings of Christ by pastors who seek to avoid the persecution His servants must face (John 15:20), and who thereby suppress those New Testament truths which the rulers and powers of this world find offensive.

Millions of men and women who, just twenty years ago, were decent, caring, family and community-oriented Christian people, are now alchemically transformed into beasts who care for nothing but money and television.

We modern people are incurring the wrath of God. The cup of that wrath is filling up. God's vengeance and punishment will make any Satanic terror or supposed "power," seem like a farce staged in a playpen, by comparison. AIDS and other unimaginably potent plagues are multiplying. The weather is becoming hostile. Even the sky is shedding its protective canopy of ozone. Scripture says the fear of the Lord, not the fear of the devil, is the beginning of wisdom.

There *is* hope, however. Our nation, so polluted and sick, can be renewed and purified: "If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves and pray and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways, then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin and will heal their land." (2nd

Chronicles 7:14).

For true Christians, the victory is already won, a victory that was designed from the beginning of time: "Come ye blessed of my father, possess you the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world." (Matthew 25:34).

The key to partaking of the victory, is the grace of God by faith in Jesus Christ and the living of that faith as Christian separatists:

"Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing and I will receive you." (2nd Corinthians 6:17).

Nature Or Gnosis?

Divine Creation and Its Counterfeit

A description of Anthony Shaeffer's protagonist in the film The Wicker Man: "...tearing around in dizzying circles trying to 'solve' it, never able to guess the true plot beyond it although the evidence of it lies all around him." --*Cinefantastique.*

"Almost all people of all eras are hypnotics. Their beliefs are induced beliefs. The proper authorities saw to it that the proper belief should be induced, and people believed properly."--Charles Hoy Fort

"As the mountebank delivered his harangue, the clown would repeatedly poke his head out from behind the curtain, making fun of everything his master said, parodying his patter and twisting the meaning of his words. The mountebank played the perfect straight man, meanwhile. Here he was, trying so hard to hawk his wares, and his own assistant was doing everything possible to undermine sales.

"The merriment was of course intentional. While the clown seemingly encouraged the public *not* to buy the proffered merchandise, the mountebank knew full well that the bystanders would easily be converted into customers as soon as they forgot that they were, in fact, supposed to be buying. Once the audience had been effectively hypnotized, once its judgment and willpower had been weakened, the real sales pitch could begin..." -- J.H. Towsen, *Clowns.*

"Hoodwink: A symbol of the secrecy, silence and darkness in which the mysteries of our art should be preserved from the unhallowed gaze of the profane." -Dr. Albert Mackey, 33rd Degree Freemason, *The Encyclopedia of Freemasonry.*

In a study of mind control and psychological warfare, it is not enough to simply review the latest technology of coercion, the most recent gadgetry and techno-junk littering the hardware and supply depots of governments and cults.

Far more dangerous than these appliances is the praxis behind

them, the underground current which informs the modern project and this modern era. For life in our modern era is little more than life in an open-air mind control laboratory where a form of human alchemy has emerged to transform the mass of targeted percipients--targeted merely by virtue of their being urban dwellers plugged into the electronic and digital pageantry of the Establishment's system-of-things.

And what sort of creature inhabits the modern domain? Who is the modern man? The puppet-masters say he is the smartest, most advanced individual to ever strut the planet, the most relatively liberated being in history. But Louis-Ferdinand Celine said it well, "What does the modern public want? It wants to go down on its knees before money and before crap!"

The public have been trained to do this by two principle methods: direct "speaking" archetypal messages of pure terror ("psychic driving" as the CIA's Dr. Ewan Cameron termed it), encoded in massively publicized "lone nut" mass murders, and the sinister flattery heaped upon them by their masters in the cult of civilization and progress.

The acid test of a human being's freedom and will to protect the quality of his life, lies in a person's attitude toward his oppressor. What is modern man's attitude toward Wall Street and the bankers, toward Dan Rather and the ignorance-bestowing media and advertising man, toward Lincoln and Truman, FDR and Reagan, George Bush and Johnny Carson, Exxon and Monsanto?

As one writer has observed, "The most amazing thing about the American people is that they are constantly defending their worst betrayers." Who then is the modern man? He is a mind-bombed patsy who gets his marching orders from "twilight language" key words sprinkled throughout "his" news and current events. Even as he dances to the tune of the elite managers of human behavior, he scoffs with great derision at the idea of the existence and operation of a technology of mass mind control emanating from the media and government. Modern man is much too smart to believe anything as superstitious as that!

Modern man is the ideal hypnotic subject: puffed up on the idea that he is the crown of creation, he vehemently denies the power of the hypnotist's control over him, even as his head

bobs up and down on a string.

What we observe in the population today are the three destructive symptoms of persons whose minds are controlled by alien forces: 1. Amnesia, i.e. loss of memory. 2. Abulia, i.e. loss of will. 3. Apathy, i.e. loss of interest in events vital to one's own health and survival. Amnesia, abulia and apathy are nearly-universal among us today and gaining a greater foothold with each passing day.

Japanese philosopher George Ohsawa stated that there was only one incurable sickness--arrogance. If a patient does not regard himself as sick he cannot submit to a cure. The arrogant man does not need to see--he already sees almost everything and what he thinks he has yet to learn, he believes "the experts" will one day show him. Who are these "experts"? They are not really doctors of the soul. They do not have the man's interest at heart. They are in fact his worst enemies, his most cunning manipulators who lead him to do their bidding like any slavemaster since Egypt.

Flattery: The First Principle of Mind Control

Why then does he revere them? Because they flatter him. This is the first secret of mass mind control and can be observed as the foundation stone of virtually every false religion, party, cult, philosophy, system and training. How can modern man free himself when he is told that he is already a demi-god, that the problem lies only in finding a pure enough economic or political system worthy of his high-minded brilliance?

If we look closely we will see that this mind control principle is so basic and simple it is almost stupidly so, to the point that we marvel that anyone would be seduced by it. But it is all a matter of attention, as we saw in the parable of the mountebank and the clown. Arrogant hypno-patsies have been told by their masters that they are "Demi-gods" and demi-gods are never deceived or distracted. They're too smart! And by their arrogant self-satisfaction they blind themselves to the simplicity of the device that ensnares them and that is when "the real sales pitch begins."

What the Alchemical managers have bred over a millennia is a human race of the most wretched stupidity and ignorance unrivaled in thousands of years. These blind slaves are told they

are "free" and "highly educated" even as they march behind signs that would cause any medieval peasant to run screaming away from them in panic-stricken terror. The symbols that modern man embraces with the naive trust of an infant would be tantamount to billboards reading, "This way to your death and enslavement," to the understanding of a traditional peasant of antiquity.

I doubt any medieval man would have much difficulty in feeling a sense of overwhelming foreboding in the face of the Soviet hammer and sickle symbol. Yet most modern, literate people obviously don't know a thing about what that symbol actually represents except on the most profane level as the implements of the farmer and the worker.

Satan is the Ape of God

The sickle symbolizes Saturn, also known as Chronos-Saturn or as the Greeks called it, Demiurgos, the operating engineer of the universe as opposed to the Creator of that universe. In the reign of Saturn we see exorbitant building and modeling activities and this is reflected in the masonic reference to their god as the "Big Builder" or "Architect." This sounds reasonably attractive, many of us can appreciate magnificent buildings and splendid projects along those lines but as usual there is more to it than this.

This Saturnian-masonic "edifice-complex" ultimately is building against the grain, against nature, though at the beginning, in the early eras, nature's forces are manipulated with a knowledge which requires the greatest intimacy with her ways as reflected in the various megalithic structures in the British isles, Europe and ancient America. There is beauty, simplicity and power in this early technology and modern enthusiasts have mistaken the knowledge and sensitivity to natural forces intrinsic to this technology as indicative of a positive force at work.

Actually, with some crucial exceptions, the rise of the megaliths marked the rise of the Hermetic Academy into its dominant physical phase. The theory is that the megaliths "pin down" natural forces, helping to subdue nature's most savage furies. We marvel today at the Hoover Dam but that symbol-laden construction is but a crude parody of the technology of the

megaliths which helped to "dam" the wildest forces of nature.

The construction of the megaliths, heralded by New Age types as marvels of ancient ingenuity and cooperation with nature are actually the first physical evidence of the end of Eden, of that period on earth when humanity lived as the servants and friends of God's natural creation, as nomads and hunter-gatherers.

The error of modern enthusiasts for what they regard as the magical, Merlinesque, harmonious time of the Druids and Stonehenge is ignorance of the fact that the historical period they idolize was itself immersed in a tampering technology and materialism which essentially marked a revolutionary break with the natural order.

According to John Michell, "...the first revolution of Olympus marks the first deviation from the primeval ways of men...presided over by Cronus, otherwise Saturn." This revolution marks the end of man's Edenic relationship with the natural world. Hence forward man is alienated from nature by means of the Saturnian "scythe" which symbolizes the sense of separation from God's natural creation that man experienced after the Fall.

Man began his peregrination away from Eden through his conceit that he would "become as god." Yet, as soon as he left the Divine Plan for the occult process his stated objective became the Kabbalistic *tikkun olam* or "repair of the world," via the intervention and imposition of human brain power--the very ego-maniacal device that caused the separation from God's natural Eden in the first place. Repair of the world indeed--a world the Kabbalists had only just ruined!

After the Saturnian division, Hermetic man saw himself as separate and, inevitably, above nature, though always quick to identify himself as nature's benign shepherd. This mighty, occult shepherd-king figure has emerged in history under the forms of Arthur, Merlin, Pendragon, and Prestor John. He is the personification of the manipulation of nature by secret technology on behalf of a secret hierarchy which, if known at all, is always careful to present itself as the supreme friend of divine creation.

If the expulsion from the Garden of Eden--that is to say the literal alteration of man's circumstance of living solely upon

God's bounty and providence--was the result of Satanic intervention, why has it not dawned on us that civilization is itself Satanic?

In the Hermetic-masonic tradition the secret identity of Satan is the force represented in occult lore as emanating from the star Sirius, the so-called dog star, *Canis major.* In the secret tradition of the Freemasons, Sirius is overwhelmingly identified with a single primary attribute, the bringing of civilization to earth.

The heirs of this magical current were saluted by the Illuminist and master-alchemist Comenius in his 1668 book *The Way of Light*, dedicated to the first scientific organization in Western history, Britain's august Royal Society. In it, Comenius addressed the first formal scientists as "illuminati" and outlined their scientific purpose, "...which is to secure...the empire of the human mind over matter."

In a key Rosicrucian description of the City of Utopia it is shown to be dominated by science and mechanics and more ominously, by the medical dissection of cadavers, in other words by the hyper-analytical obsession of Rationalism with dead matter and measurement.

The "utopian" city of the Rosicrucians is before us today: New York and Los Angeles--Babylon the Great. And it was planned in 1668 and long before.

We have forgotten the depth of the roots of the modern disease. We have accepted the pop-pap than anything that pre-dated the more obvious rapacity of modern industrial pollution was natural or magical (the notion of magic being identified with the pristine). Hence we have denied ourselves knowledge of the beginning of the rise of the cryptocracy. John Michell:

"It is their immediate concern, having eaten of the tree of knowledge, to apply all their newly acquired arts to constructing a facsimile of the Garden, a model paradise..."

But there already was an architecture prior to man's imposition of his structures and interventions, this was the architecture of the natural landscape as shaped by God. To claim that to have left it as it was would have been barbarous and backward is symptomatic of the diseased occult mind and its gigantic egotistical pathology.

As long as it was left as God created it, it was paradise. Due to

our blindness we feverishly cooperate with the imposition upon the earth of our own version of "Eden" which always ends in the creation of Babylon, of hell on earth. Historian John Michell:

"Settlement leads to the establishment of social hierarchies, to specialization, the development of arts and sciences, the building of temples and houses. For millions of years men, essentially the same as we are now, lived without these and presumably without feeling the need for them...Tacitus described a German tribe that lived entirely without artificial shelter...the phenomenon of successive towns built around the same sacred place, the spirit of which became the foundation deity, receiving the sacrifices offered in expiation of the crime of settlement and giving the law by which the city was governed. Implicit in this law was a contract between man and God by which the first was permitted a conditional (and limited) use of land for agriculture and building in return for duties and observances paid to the second. So it was understood by the founding fathers of cities.

"But as cities expand these limitations become more onerous and neglected with the result that, in the language of apocalypse, the ...city becomes Babylon, the parasitic whore and proceeds toward destruction. In this belief the...(traditional) element in ancient Rome objected to...expansion beyond the original city boundaries, considering it a breach of the foundation contract.

"Such counsels were of course ignored, and in consequence Rome, following the career of all previous empires, became Babylon indeed...civilization tends to grow more elaborate and to make ever greater demands on the earth that sustains it. There comes a time when the old natural devotion to the earth...is exchanged for...the desire to increase the products of the earth by artificially stimulating its fertility. This stage is marked in history by the appearance of sun gods...divinities of reason, intellect and centralized government, whose legends refer always to their victories over dragons... (i.e. nature)."

This policy of "artificially increasing the earth's fertility and multiplying the gifts of its spirit, instead of accepting what is given by nature," is evident in the staking of the earth in symbolism, as is seen in the motif of the knight spearing the dragon, which is sometimes viewed as the pinnacle of the

victory of light over dark.

But we should also be aware that there is an alternate, occult reading of this image. This Arthurian symbol has been celebrated by pagans and Freemasons as a sign of man's usurpation of natural creation. The staking process is seen by them as a means to "pin down" the heretofore flowing character of the energy of creation, so as to be harnessed and bled by Stonehenge-like technology, in order to give greater and greater resources to man. Michell:

"The appearance of the sun god signals the introduction of a technology that aims to alter the natural channels of the earth spirit and to stimulate its energies for the benefit of an increasingly large settled population...From all that has recently been discovered about the scientific knowledge and methods of the megalith builders, it appears that their system was in the magical tradition of Egypt, Babylon and the ancient East...At Delphi, by spearing the serpent and localizing its energies, Apollo raised the productivity of the oracle...Every ancient standing stone is like the omphalos in the Temple of Apollo, driven into the head of the telluric serpent current, fixing and augmenting the (earth) energies which had formerly fluctuated.

"Yet in the end the system became onerous and ineffective, demanding at least as much from the people as it gave in return...Here is revealed the inevitable betrayal by any institutionalized system of technology of the people who have come to depend on it...The land (had) become more productive, the people richer and more numerous--until, under the influence of cyclical changes in the heavens, the flow of spirit began to withdraw from the temples and take other paths.

"The latter-day priests, having neglected the principles of the old astronomical science by which the temples were first sited and planned, and no longer sensitive to the earth's spiritual energies, could only resort to more frantic invocations, attended by ever increasing sacrifice, in attempts to repeat the former results. And thus followed, as it has on many occasions and at many places over the world, a reaction against the artificial and ever more futile proceedings of the magicians and a return to simpler ways."

It is at this juncture in history that the pre-Christian people

of Europe were Christianized. The willingness of these hardy, comparatively far more natural and attuned people than we moderns, to render themselves susceptible to Christianity is misunderstood today.

The assumption is that Christianity simply deceived and coerced the hardy pre-Christian Europeans into the fold. But early Christians like St. Patrick were accepted because they rid the pagan people of what Michell terms, "the final excesses of a degenerate priesthood, whose altars demanded ever more sacrificial blood before they could evoke response" from the "earth energies."

Michell's nostalgia for the "old astronomical science" of the Saturnian magicians who supposedly did the rituals properly, is misplaced. Manipulation is manipulation, whether clever and precise as in earlier times, or lazy and forgetful as in the era when it would be overthrown by Celtic Christianity's gospel of simplicity.

Mr. Michell can't bring himself to unambiguously condemn the original tamperers, the ones who, after all, started the whole journey to Babylon and hell on earth in the first place. These mystical Adams and Eves are referred to by Michell as "good people" attempting to re-create heaven on earth on the Saturnian model of a "golden age."

But John Michell ought to know that paradise existed once on earth and was destroyed by these "good people." Attempts to artificially re-build it are not only the height of artifice and insanity but also, as Arthur Machen and H.P. Lovecraft hinted, perhaps indicative of something far more ominous: preparation of the earth for reinhabitation by demonic entities once expelled.

The mythical Satanic bringer of civilization to earth was supposed to be an alien from the star system Sirius, around whom the Egyptians and all subsequent Hermetic systems constructed their elaborate and obsessive religio-astronomic observances. This star Sirius also served as an astronomic secret code, an allegory of the illusory quality and inherent "trickiness" of the material world.

In astronomic magnitude, Sirius is approximately thirty-five times brighter than our sun. It is regarded in the highest occult circles as analogous to the "hidden god of the cosmos,"

for, just as the star Sirius' true magnitude is dwarfed by the sun of our solar system by means of the illusion generated by distance, so too is the influence of Satan in the world obscured behind a welter of churches and lip-service to the teachings of Christ.

The emblem of the All-Seeing Eye above the unfinished pyramid is the representation of the eye of Sirius, of its omniscient surveillance.

It would be difficult to exaggerate the fanatical degree of attachment the priesthood of Egypt and all subsequent related Hermetic traditions had for Sirius. The entire calendar year of the Egyptians was based upon the rising times of this star.

"The heliacal rising of Sirius was so important to the ancient Egyptians...that gigantic temples were constructed with their main aisles oriented precisely towards the spot on the horizon where Sirius would appear...The light of Sirius would be channeled along the corridor (due to the precise orientation) to flood the altar in the inner sanctum as if a pin-pointed spotlight had been switched on.

"This blast of light focused from a single star was possible because of the orientation being so incredibly precise and because the temple would be otherwise in total darkness within. In a huge, utterly dark temple, the light of one star focused solely on the altar must have made quite an impact on those present. (Robert K.G. Temple, *The Sirius Mystery,* Futura paperback edition, p. 87).

According to the astronomer John A. Eddy, the rock circle located near Lovell, Wyoming, known as the Big Horn Medicine Wheel is aligned with the rising of Sirius ("Astronomical Alignment of the Big Horn Medicine Wheel," *Science,* June 7, 1974).

"The heliacal rising of Sirius was also important to other ancient peoples. Here is a description by the ancient Greek poet Aratus...of the rising of Sirius (often known as the Dog Star as it is in the constellation Canis, or Dog): 'The tip of his [the Dog's] terrible jaw is marked by a star that keenest of all blazes with a searing flame and him men call Sirius.'

"Throughout Latin literature there are many references to the 'Dog Days' which followed the heliacal rising of Sirius in the summer. These hot, parched days were thought by that time

to derive some of their ferocity and dryness from the 'searing' of Sirius." (Temple, pp. 87-88).

Further on in this study we shall see that a key ritual sacrifice intended to imprint the Group Mind of the masses of the 1970s--the Son of Sam serial murders--involved the widely disseminated claim that the "mad" killer(s) had taken orders from a dog named Sam. The capture of one of the killers in the cult, David Berkowitz, coincided with the coming of the Dog Days of summer, August, 1977.

In Satanist Albert Pike's eighth degree of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, the focus of worship is on the "blazing star" as symbolized by the pentagram and Pike identifies Sirius, in his *Morals and Dogma,* as the grand builder of architecture.

John Michell: "The alchemists aimed to recapture the spirit of Mercurius as the mobile agent in their operations, and they spoke of 'fixing' it, using the imagery of the stake driven through the earth serpent, by which means their predecessors, alchemists of elemental cosmic forces, had attempted to raise the subtle spirit of the earth. All these good people shared the noblest ambition, to invoke again the golden age on earth.

"No doubt in time they did much to promote human convenience and comfort, and civilizations have been humanized by such efforts; but their falls have thereby only been delayed. For the human spirit, like the spirit of the earth, is a natural wanderer and does not forever accept domesticity.

"Attempts to fix nature's volatile principle will always be made; and the spirit may for a time accept the ways imposed upon it by human nature in its material aspect. But sooner or later it will prefer its own ways, and will take them, whatever obstacles are put in its path." (All John Michell quotations are from his book, *The Earth Spirit,* Crossroad Publishing Company).

So we observe that Saturn and his "golden age" architecture (both mental and physical), came only after the end of Eden, after Saturn-Sirius had separated the unity of heaven and earth by means of his fateful sickle.

What do we have behind the cover story about a worker's paradise in the Soviet Union? We have the sickle, the very occult symbol of the bisection of heaven and earth, the very symbol of the destruction of Eden by demonic, accelerated

material and temporal decay and false philosophies which generate division (between humanity's sense of itself and identification with God's divine creation) under cover of slogans of unity.

In other words we have a grotesque mockery of the very principle touted. This macabre arrogance borders on the clownish for those initiates (or self-initiates) who have the wit to see it.

Inducing the Double-Mind

Have you ever noticed how television and print media will scream themselves hoarse in news documentaries, editorials and heavy analytical pieces about "rising pornography, crime, violence, gunplay" etc.? And yet in the same *TV Guide* announcing the latest special on "The Crisis of Sex and Violence in America" will appear an advertisement for *Miami Vice*, the "show that brings you the action and excitement you've come to expect" etc.

Or your newspaper will condemn sex and violence in the loftiest terms but there in the entertainment section is a half-page advertisement for a new "action" movie accompanied by a photo of women in string bikinis and high heels fondling automatic pistols and machine-guns.

There is the official attack on sex and violence. There is the official attack on Satanism. And yet, one need not be Sherlock Holmes to detect that the very themes which Orthodox Officialdom condemns with its right hand, its left-hand--Counterculture Officialdom--disseminates.

Lt. Col. Michael Aquino works for U.S. Army Military Intelligence. He is also the leader of the Temple of Set, a group characterized as satanic by the Official Orthodoxy of the System. Aquino, in a letter to the *St. Louis Post-Dispatch* of Feb. 6, 1989 responded to the attacks on his organization by a supposedly scandalized culture that is itself Satanic:

"If teenage gangs may experiment with what they believe to be 'occult rituals,' blame should be laid squarely at the feet of the media which glamorize occult violence to youth. I specifically refer to the movie industry, with offerings of increasingly gory and violent 'splatter' films such as Nightmare on Elm Street (with its child-molestor hero Freddy), Halloween, Friday the

13th, etc.

"Note that such films usually include several sequels also targeted at children, and Freddy now has his own weekly television series! And parents wonder where children are getting all their bizarre, occult ideas? Please turn on your television sets any evening or examine even the 'PG' horror movie offerings at your local video store--much less the 'R' category."

The mechanism of prissy, six o'clock TV news show put-downs and "exposes" of the very Satanic sex and violence which are lustily celebrated on the same channel on their ten o'clock movie is sheer hypocrisy of the most blatant and perverse form. It is not concealed.

Yet we cooperate with it. We are its prey. Both sides--light and shadow--have magnetic attraction for us. The Official Orthodoxy allows us to indulge our good sense about ourselves as people who can still be outraged.

Meanwhile, the Establishment's Official Counter-Culture allows us to indulge our "guilty pleasures" as they are--once again--openly referred to by a pair of syndicated TV-movie critics. Pleasure--as distinct from joy or happiness--is almost always enhanced by the patina of the forbidden, and having reassured our persona of our essential goodness by sharing in the condemnations promulgated by the Official Orthodoxy, we can then fling our selves headlong into guilty indulgence of the very themes we agreed were execrable when condemned on the nightly news.

The collective occult schizophrenia--or mass insanity, if you will--extends to Judeo-Christians who condemn Satanism as a concept when presented in church forums, TV chat shows and police seminars, but who relax and divert themselves with Satanic television and videos.

Modern people are fascinated with exposes of sex, violence and Satanism and fascination is itself a form of mind control if we recognize that oftentimes obsessive treatments of these themes under the guise of "exposing them" are the very means of inducing interest and involvement in the occult. People who never hear about Satanism, extreme violence and extreme pornography are unlikely to become involved with Satanism, violence and pornography.

Those who fill their heads with morbid fascination with lurid media depictions of evil in the world, under the pretense of putting an end to such evil, are actually part of the process which precedes its wider acceptance. The film *The Exorcist* is instructive in this vein. Under the guise of exposing Satanism, it brutalized its audience with pornography and a powerful occult milieu.

Roman Polanski's popular Hollywood film, *Rosemary's Baby,* was also presented from the vantage of supposedly "exposing" the danger of Satanism, but has accurately been called "the best advertisement for Satanism ever made...an allegory of the birth of the demonic eon."

Polanski has himself been implicated in child molestation. It has also been alleged that he videotaped pornography involving children and animals for sale to a private network, possibly in association with Charlie Manson, whose followers ritually sacrificed Polanski's wife, Sharon Tate, and her unborn baby. Tate herself may have been involved in the occult, possibly the Process Church of the Final Judgment, a Satanic group which Manson was also associated with (see *Painted Black,* Harper and Row edition, pp. 115-116 and *The Manson File,* pp. 168-172).

Of course no matter what her affiliations, Sharon Tate's murder was a heinous crime. It is interesting to note that while much is made of the murder of her unborn baby as being the most horrible part of the Manson gang's occult violence, women who pay physicians to kill their unborn babies are not regarded as guilty of any Satanic act, heinous or otherwise.

Was the sacrifice of Sharon Tate's unborn baby somehow a ritual precursor of the coming mass sacrifice of unborn children, which was subsequently legalized by the U.S. Supreme Court?

The media puts us on intimate terms with the devil by immersing us in his spectacular, electronic "videodrome" kingdom. Was it by some sort of "tele-vision" that Satan tempted Christ?

"The devil...showed him all the kingdoms of the world *in a moment of time*...All these will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me" (Luke 4:5; Matthew 4: 8-9; emphasis supplied).

The double-mind--the profoundly disturbed mind at war with itself and ignorant even of that fact--is a characteristic of the scapegoat-patsy "lone nut" cult-killers--and of the American people in general. For, in this time-frame of ours, we are initiated into their Cult solely by means of our exposure to the electronic videodrome. And thus, our prospects become the same as those of David Berkowitz, Mark David Chapman, Arthur Bremer or James Earl Ray. In the 19th century the phenomenon was termed "masonic apoplexy." Today it is called zombieism.

Masonic Double Mind in Vatican Two Catholicism

Consider the modern Catholic Church under Popes John XXIII and Paul VI which, taking a leaf from the Elizabethan, Anglican Archbishop Thomas Cranmer, announced publicly an enlightened, new universal "reform" born of Vatican Council II's spirit of "renewal and openness," hence forward to be marked by a new reverence for lay involvement, dialogue and democracy.

But just as Cranmer sneered at the common peasants who dared to protest the repression of the traditional liturgy Cranmer had claimed they no longer wanted, the Vatican Two Catholic Church, in the name of new freedoms, also suppressed, against the wishes of the common people, the old liturgy. It was outlawed and a modern liturgy designed by the Freemason Annibale Bugnini, and "luhv" rhetoric to justify the suppression, in the name of "the people's wishes," followed it.

Cranmer murdered *en masse* the English Catholic peasants who rose in defense of the old liturgy. Cranmer massacred them and crushed their peasant uprising which became known as the Western Rising (cf. Michael Davies, *Cranmer's Godly Order* and Evelyn Waugh, *Edmund Campion).*

This Protestant inquisition is seldom mentioned nowadays in keeping with the masonic strategy of tarring only the Catholic Church with the brush of "inquisitor" and thereby building up Protestanism as the exclusive "true Christianity." They have presented this false picture to the world because Protestantism was the chosen vehicle through which Freemasonry infiltrated Christianity.

Protestants, not just Catholics, persecuted and executed thousands of Anabaptists (the forerunners of today's

Mennonites and Amish). Michael Servetus, a dissenting mathematician, was burned at the stake in Switzerland by Calvinists.

According to contemporary adherents of paganism, the 16th century covens of Wicca sided with the Protestant Queen Elizabeth against the Catholics, in appreciation of her having awarded Satanist John Dee, the founder of Freemasonry, high office in her government (Howard Rheingold, "The Pentacle and the Wand," *Whole Earth Review,* Spring,1992, p. 61).

The French Revolution of 1789, or Reign of Terror as it is more appropriately known, was a masonic war against the Catholic church and the Catholic people of France; a war conducted with all the instruments of torture and all the atrocities of an inquisition.

The masonic hanging judge, Jean-Baptiste Carrier, ordered the execution of 13,000 Catholics, who were drowned in the Loire River in boats specially designed for that purpose.

On Dec. 23, 1793, the masonic General Francois Westermann attacked the Catholic village of Savenay, killing hundreds of Catholic women and children. Westermann bragged that he had "trampled children under horses' feet and massacred women who will no longer give birth to brigands."

In 1794, another of the generals of the French Revolution, the Freemason Louis-Marie Turreau, ordered the slaughter of 109 Catholic children in the village of Lucs-sur-Boulogne.

In the western section of France, in the area around Nantes known as the Vendee, hundreds of thousands of Catholics were slaughtered by the masonic government of the French Revolution. Thousands of their religious leaders were also killed in Paris and other areas for their opposition to the suzerainty of the masonic cryptocracy.

A great deal has changed since then however. Today the Vatican is as firmly in the pocket of the Freemasons as are many Protestant institutions. Pope John Paul II, presented in the masonic media as a "strict conservative," is actually an agent of One World, New Age Luciferianism. In 1986 he convened a world council of religions, including African devil-worshipers, Buddhists and Muslims, at a church named after the Apostle Peter, in Assisi, Italy.

According to the *New York Times* (Oct. 28, 1986), "The

Buddhists, led by the Dalai Lama, quickly converted the altar of the Church of San Pietro by placing a small statue of the Buddha atop the tabernacle and setting prayer scrolls and incense burners around it." (The Dalai Lama of Tibet is revered as a "God-King" by his followers).

Sincere Christians of all denominations condemned the Assisi rite. Protestant leader Dr. Carl McIntyre called it, "the greatest single abomination in church history." Catholic Bishop Marcel Lefebvre labeled Pope John Paul II's actions in Assisi, "The supreme imposture, the culminating insult to Our Lord...a diabolical act."

Thus we observe the conflict between truths perceived deep within and lies people force themselves to assent to in public. "In the name of the people" the wishes of the people are overthrown. Is there a reason this double-mind has been induced? If someone is making us deliberately mentally ill, it may be that this is done so that we will look to that someone for "healing and relief."

The Bovine Herd

Into the double-mind breach step the elite managers of the masonic, Hermetic Academy who through symbol and word manipulation can temporarily unite our persona and anima, thus lifting an immense burden from us, relieving us of our stress and confusion. This function can easily assume, in the minds of the subject-patients, a god-like status. I submit this status is characterized by the use of the term "They" in our society, as in "Why don't They come up with a tire that will never wear out or a cure for cancer?" As in "They have a cure for cancer but the doctors would lose too much money so They have suppressed it." Or "They say the CIA killed Kennedy and he was fornicating with Marilyn throughout his presidency."

"They" write the movie scripts and the billboard slogans. "They" have the money and the power and control of the illusion machine. "They" can cure cancer or withhold the cure. They reveal the secrets behind assassinations and scandals. What will "They" do next? How will "They" program the show today? Let's sit back, watch and find out.

Since we choose to refuse to genuinely heal the rift between the two sides of our mentality by the tough means of repudiating

our lying public persona and taking action on the understanding of our true self, we relinquish autonomy to those who make it appear that they can heal us at no great cost or trouble on our part. Never mind that "They" are also the ones who implanted the rift in the first place. The point is "We" have little or no power. We cannot act. We cannot invent. We cannot cure. We must wait and see what happens. We must see what They make happen.

The final coffin in the nail of our free will is the fact that we ourselves know in our heart of hearts that the above is false. That it is We the People who have the power and the responsibility and that we could crush Them tomorrow if we chose to. They are only an illusion, every bit as ephemeral as the patter of a carnival sideshow bunco artist beckoning to us from the other side of the hootchie-kootchie tent.

But if we overthrew them tomorrow we would have to write our own scripts. We would have to heal ourselves. We would have to admit the colossal waste and loss and destruction of the past years which our laziness and folly have made possible. We would have to experience the pain of being alive and responsible. We would have to start acting like men and women instead of as slaves and weaklings.

The Hermetic Academy is confident, and not without reason, that we will offer no substantial, meaningful resistance to their imperium. Why?

The foster mothers of the human race, at least in the West, are cows. Perhaps we've imbibed so much of their fluid that we have become cows, terrified of freedom and its responsibilities. Epistemologist Charles Fort once remarked, "I think we're farmed."

According to the secret tradition of the Hermetic Academy, the "tree" of the Knowledge of Good and Evil in the Garden of Eden was a psychedelic mushroom, *stropharia cubensis.*[+] These mushrooms grow only in cow dung.

[+] The symbol produced when that knowledge finally goes completely out-of-control is also a "mushroom," the mushroom-shaped cloud emitted upon detonation of an atomic bomb.

Church Fathers Who Didn't Do Tricks with Mirrors

There are essentially two forces competing for the hearts and minds of mankind. The first is the old force of the orthodoxy of the Church and the Throne, reaction and authority. Those who regard themselves as dissidents and rebels against the Establishment have been taught by the Official Counter-Culture that it is from this direction, from the *ancien regime* that we can expect to encounter the greatest threat to liberty. We've been trained to expect that the threat to freedom comes from Christian religious and ethical orthodoxies, based on faith and authority.

But any half-way competent student of deception will know that the greatest potential threat always comes from the unsuspected direction. In this case from the force that is mis-identified and masked, that force which is fascism with a human face.

Perhaps more important, there is one key principle of the psychology of mass mind control missing from the old model of authority embodied by the early Fathers of the Christian Church: they did not flatter and they did not come in disguise. The core of orthodox Christianity's belief system was anti-occult to the marrow: it was the bad news about human nature.

Not so the "revolutionary liberators," from the Soviet communists, to the New Age groovers, who have announced the delivery of humanity from the clutches of Reaction and Orthodoxy. Of this "Church" of the Official Counter-Culture, Louis-Ferdinand Celine observed in *Mea Culpa,* his seminal essay on Bolshevism:

" Since the end of religions, before this new (modern) altar, they have been swinging incense; they have been intoxicating man with the sense of his own importance, with all manner of rigmarole. Man has been made the whole Church. No longer can he see anything with clear eyes. He is cracked! He believes anything that is told to him, just so long as it is flattering to him...

"The practical superiority of the great Christian religions was that they did not try to sugar-coat the pill. They did not try to throw dust in the eyes; they were not looking for voters; they never felt the need of ingratiating themselves; they did not wiggle their tails in an effort to please. They just seized Man in

his cradle, and broke the bad news to him, without reservation. They told him, 'You little shapeless stinker you, you can never be anything but filth. By birth you are nothing but *merde.* Do you hear me, you? That's the evidence, that's the principle of everything...However, maybe...maybe...in scrutinizing the matter more closely...you have got one little chance of winning a bit of pardon for being as you are--so filthy, so excremental, so unbelievable...

"That is, if you can hold your chin up in the face of all the sorrows, all the afflictions, all the ordeals, miseries and tortures you will have to face during your lifetime, whether it be long or short. Always with perfect humility! Life, you louse, is just one long bitter ordeal! Don't get out of breath! Don't expect noon to come at two o'clock! Just try to save your soul, that is something in itself! Maybe at the end of this Calvary of yours, if you get to be a regular fellow, a hero in keeping your trap shut, you may be saved by these principles...

"But even that is not a sure thing...one little hair's breadth less filthy when you come to croak than when you were born...But don't take too much for granted! That's the whole story! Watch your step! Don't speculate on first and last things! For a turd that is the maximum!...'

"That was seriously spoken. By real Church Fathers, who knew the tools of their trade, and did not try to do tricks with mirrors."

Even the parties that claim to be antidotes to the excesses of the degraded spirit of modernity--Populism and democracy--are thoroughly modern and actually serve as bridges to that tyranny we have been taught to revere as the source of our liberation. Populism and democracy are based on the same notion of statecraft as the enemy they claim to oppose, predicated upon the flattery of man and human nature, in order to pimp for votes and influence.

Masonic Dogma of 'Perfecting' Creation

In the opposite corner from Church and Throne, is the philosophy which describes itself as "The Rite of Perfection." This is the alternate name for the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, the most powerful masonic order in the world. This is the occult philosophy of not only the *Novus Ordo Seclorum*--the

so-called New Order of the Ages--but also of the Elizabethan Age and long before it as well.

This is the intellectual conceit that the universe--God's natural Creation--is going to be "perfected" by the god-like intervention of the omnipotent human intellect, symbolized by the pentagram.

This is the belief which informs the entire occult project from the Pythagorean to the Enlightenment and is made all the more astonishingly pathological when one recalls that this mission was approached at a time in history when the earth was abundant with vast tracts of virgin forests, oceans and jungles, organic soil and produce and pure air and water. Yet in the midst of this pinnacle of throbbing natural, pristine beauty and purity the Rosicrucian initiate Robert Fludd dedicated himself to the "regeneration of the (natural) world."

The standard disinformation intended for the uninitiated has always been that Fludd was speaking metaphorically, about the spiritual plane. Actually, Fludd was doing both: addressing himself to the literal manipulation of nature by human brain power as well as to the consequences of such "regeneration" in the realm of "magic" and spirit.

This philosophy emerged in the open in Europe with the Renaissance and it is also true, as historian Frances Yates writes, "...it was in its origins that the occult philosophy of the Renaissance had inspired some of the most exquisite productions of Renaissance culture." In other words, in the majestic incense of Renaissance art there is also the whiff of the sulfurous.

The "Luhv" Tyranny

This malodorous current is evident in Rabelais' Abbey of Theleme--the philosopher's paradise where one rule alone is law: *fais ce que voudras* or "do your own thing." See the grotesque mockery behind this claim of Rabelais. He, like his occult forbears, is a Saturnian, a follower of the scythe-wielder who, in allegory, first tore apart primordial paradise, the unity between heaven and earth, but now here is Rabelais as a spokesman for the epitome of Renaissance enlightenment offering us...a paradise!

If Chronos-Saturn destroyed a divine Eden---Saturn being

the force of time, decay and the progress of matter (or Second Law of Thermodynamics)--man will recreate a true Theleme, a better Eden than God. And that, in sum, is the masonic cover story that maintains cachet to this day.

It has been between two ideologies that we have been pulled in Western history, between the monumental autocracy and dogmatism of the Church, Monarchy, Reaction and Authority at one end, and the alleged Anarcho-Libertarian, Rosicrucian-Masonic Heresiarchs at the other, who allegedly only want freedom, unfettered knowledge, love and toleration for all. Robert K.G. Temple is one of their advocates and writes:

"The Platonic tradition in the broader sense, with its gnostic and heretical overtones, and its myriad manifestations in later ages in such bizarre and fascinating figures as Giordano Bruno, Marsilio Ficino, John Dee...not to mention the troubadours of Provence...and the massacred tens of thousands of Albigensians in France, the Knights Templar and an infinite range of hopeless causes over two and a half millennia--Platonism in the general sense is a creed which denies creed, an anti-institutional tradition...(it insists) on nothing by way of doctrinal dogma. It is truly free...it has no Pope...it terrifies those weaker mentalities which crave a shuttered belief system, they always try to destroy it, but succeed only in destroying individuals and individual movements within the larger tradition."

Temple has given us a classic statement of the standard propaganda of the Hermetic Academy. It's rather incredible to ponder the depth of deception inside that single paragraph of his. We observe first a martyrology and a victimhood established: the persecuted freedom-lovers massacred, hounded, destroyed. Implicit in that ridiculously one-sided caricature is the notion of blamelessness, non-violence and toleration on the part of the Albigensians and the Templars and the rest of the Academy's *dramatis personae.*

Few would guess from Temple's propaganda that his heroes the Knights Templar were directly responsible for unleashing one of the most horrible plagues upon Western civilization, a plague countless reformers not included in Temple's exalted martyrology gave their lives in an attempt to overturn. Historian Desmond Seward writing in *The Monks of War* cites

as the Templar's most momentous act, "their contribution to the overthrow of the Church's attitude toward usury...No medieval institution did more for the rise of capitalism."

These were the Knights Templar who, far from being "anti-institutional", were actually the prototype of the first international bankers, the first respectable Shylocks who made extracting a pound of flesh at interest, "the enlightened thing to do."

Temple's heroes also include the Albigensians, those paradigms of the masonic stereotype of the "free spirited heretics whose free love communalism was one of the few bright spots in a dark age of Church dictatorship otherwise heavy with hierarchy and dogma" etc. etc.

It is true that the Albigensians were horribly repressed with great cruelty, but that fact alone does not negate the essence of what the Albigensians represented. The Albigensians were one of the best examples of the hierarchical authoritarianism and "priestcraft" for which the Catholic Church had been condemned--by the Albigensians! But the Catholics made no secret of their claim to authority and hierarchy.

Not so the Albigensians, who, like all Gnostic-masonic occultists, hid their true aims and organizational structure and publicly swore hostility against the whole of the Satanic material world. That was the cover-story, anyway.

The rank and file Albigensians were sworn to a life of celibacy and asceticism, the better to avoid entanglements with matter and flesh. There was an additional class among them however, a ruling or priest class known as "The Perfecti." These "perfect ones" were supposed to practice all the austerity of the rank and file and then take that austerity to an even more extreme degree of self-denial in what was supposed to have been a life lived as a perpetual Lent.

But there was a secret side to the Perfecti class which they chose not to reveal to the "imperfect ones." The secret doctrine of the Albigensians was that, since the priest class was perfect, they were above the law, immune to sin and therefore licensed to indulge in all of the orgies, gluttony and riches solemnly forbidden to the "imperfect" lower order Albigensians.

This Albigensian model of a secret doctrine for the elite absolving them of most or all of the disciplines they have

publicly commanded to their subordinates, represents the original corrupt executive dogma of institutionalism, par excellence. It reflects the ancient occult contempt for the lower orders of men, in spite of their sucker-bait preachments about everyone's "godhood." It also represents the masonic tradition of a secrets-keeping hierarchy who have the cunning to condemn the elitism of enemy hierarchies, while practicing an even more vicious version of their own under a masque of benevolence and brotherly love.

The Neo-Platonic, Gnostic-Hermetic, Kabbalistic-Rosicrucian-Masonic freethinking victims, as Temple styles them (and he is not alone in this, everyone from Robert Anton Wilson to Gary Snyder to Manly Palmer Hall and most of the intellectual establishment of our day share in his assessment), these poor, persecuted victims--assassinated anyone who got in their way!

One of their opponents was the Elizabethan playwright Christopher Marlowe, whose plays *Doctor Faustus* and *Tamburlaine* constitute a strong attack on the Rosicrucian cryptocracy and its core credo of human intellect "perfecting" nature through tampering. Marlowe was murdered by them--stabbed through the eye to symbolize his having seen too much.

How different a picture the documentary record gives us of these supposed Neo-Platonic rebels for tolerance and freedom and no Pope and no dogma. In reality the Thelemic current, the Do-Your-Own-Thing Academy, is in fact a Counter-Church with institutional dogmas, violence and discipline far more rigid and harsh than the orthodox Church that is its rival for the hearts and souls of mankind.

The great advantage the occult Church, this hermetic Abbey of Theleme, has had over the orthodox Christian Church, is that its true character has been successfully concealed and only the Christian Church has been made to carry the stigma of institutional rigidity, inquisition and dogmatism.

The Counter-Church has triumphed because it has been able to maintain the facade R.K.G. Temple, Robert Anton Wilson and their colleagues routinely depict.

The masonic cryptocracy's tyranny over humanity has been accomplished under cover of victimhood. The world's most rigid and fascist hierarchy has successfully enveloped its occult

discipline in the patina of persecution and hounding by the "uptight, the blind, the superstitious and ignorant."

In spite of its incredibly strict, secret dogmatism, it advertises itself as the repository of freethought and open inquiry so that no subject of study is taboo; no rules except "Do What Thou Wilt" and beneath that vast front a profound secrecy about their genuine objectives and operations.

Orthodoxy Christianity's dogmatic assertion has been that it has God on its side. The propaganda of the masonic cryptocracy has been that it will make every man god and in liberty, equality and fraternity will their collective god-hood reign.

Which is more dangerous a threat to individual rights and the natural order: the old-time princes and prelates who loudly announced their aspiration for glory, authority, pomp and ceremony, or those other princes and tyrants who advance their dominion under the mask of freethought, victimhood, equality and a man-made heaven on earth?

Scientism: A Form of Black Magic

I submit that the greater threat emanates from the latter and has ever since the Renaissance. Until recently, Louis-Ferdinand Celine's observation about the Renaissance remained an enigma: "Since the Renaissance there's been a tendency to work more and more passionately for the coming of the Kingdom of the Sciences and the Social Robot."

To attack scientism and the Renaissance is akin to being accused of being a flat-earth advocate, just as it's profoundly "uncool," "reactionary" and "obscurantist" to take issue with Robert K.G. Temple's martyrology. The reason that science is a bad master and a dangerous servant and ought not to be worshiped, is that science is not objective. Science is fundamentally about the uses of measurement--what does not fit the yardstick of the scientist is discarded. Scientific determinism has repeatedly excluded some data from its measurement and fudged other data, such as Piltdown Man, in order to support the self-fulfilling nature of its own agenda, be it Darwinism or "cut, burn and poison" methods of cancer "treatment."

The so-called "scientific method" often violates the rules of evidence when it encounters data which lie outside an area

scientism has defined as containing the only possible data. Then the contradictory data are ignored because they do not fit the scientific establishment's arbitrary standard of measurement, or the data are discredited in terms of the assumptions of the dogmas of scientism.

The cryptocracy has successfully harnessed to its own ends the huge potential for promoting secret political-occult agendas to the public, by presenting them as unassailable, "objective scientific truth." Since the bogey of "Science" instills in secularists a sort of blind reverence, opponents of political-occult agendas promoted through the propaganda of scientism are quickly stigmatized as "Neanderthal," especially with regard to their opposition to Darwinism, a dogma proved false by Norman Macbeth in his magisterial *Darwin Retried* and exposed as a cult by Gertrude Himmelfarb in *Darwin.*

This process is observed in the Renaissance, which was informed by a secret gnosis whose core dogma was a momentous new change in man's attitude toward nature: the alleged "perfection" of a "flawed" Creation by the intervention of the "omnipotent" human brain. Thus it was that the Renaissance magical tradition gave birth to the monstrous world of machines, industrial pollution, ugliness and the modern way of death we have come to term, "the rat-race." Historian Frances Yates:

"The 17th century philosophy which was to replace the Renaissance philosophies was Cartesian mechanism, and Mersenne, devoted friend and admirer of Descartes, was instrumental, through his wide connections and correspondence, in encouraging the shift from magic to mechanism.

"It is one of the most profound ironies of the history of thought that the growth of mechanical science, through which arose the idea of mechanism as a possible philosophy of nature, was itself an outcome of the Renaissance magical tradition. Mechanism divested of magic became the philosophy which was to oust Renaissance animism and to replace the 'conjuror' by the mechanical philosopher."

Under all its "New Age" finery, the exquisite liberal-humanitarian, Renaissance enlightenment so "terrifying to weaker mentalities," represents the introduction of a

technological tyranny so immense it is difficult to grasp. It is both a physical, technological tyranny as well as a tyranny of the mind.

But in the beginning the occult praxis behind these horrors was dressed up in the *de le haute* majesty of the Renaissance. In that era the alchemical programming of humanity (which is after all, what alchemy has really been about, the talk of baser metals being a code phrase for base humanity), this intricate and delicate Theater of the Thanatos, this Hermetic shepherding of the human-sheep ("sheeple")--all for our "own good" and without our knowledge--took place inside the flowering of the greatest Art epoch of Western civilization.

The doctrine of man playing god reaches its nadir in the philosophy of scientism which makes possible the complete mental, spiritual and physical enslavement of mankind through technologies such as satellite and computer surveillance; a state of affairs symbolized by the "All Seeing Eye" above the unfinished pyramid on the U.S. one dollar bill.*

Ceremonial Psychodrama

In 1449 the French nobleman and gnostic magus Rene D'Anjou, at the court of Tarascon staged a series of *Pas de Arms,* curious, hybrid amalgams of tournament and masque, in which knights went through the motions of tilting at each other, and at the same time performed a mysterious species of play or drama, the plot and end of which were never entirely clear...

These beautifully crafted and staged plays were actually a form of psychodrama. Those who watched or partook of the ceremony were subtly influenced by these dramatic rituals.

Nowadays the engineering of the mind and the transformation of humanity is not quite as edifying or nearly as artistic. The contemporary programming of humanity is now accomplished by means of cheap dialogue and scenery as mundane and mediocre as magazine advertisements for whiskey, as Dr. W.B. Key documents in *Subliminal Seduction,* whereby the figures of eros and the *danse macabre* are scattered microscopically in the

* Science, when practiced as the application of man's God-given talents for the production of appropriate technology on a human-scale, relief of misery and the reverential exploration and appreciation of the glory of Divine Providence as revealed in nature, is a useful tool for mankind. *Scientism* is science gone mad, which is what we have today.

ice cubes inside whiskey ads and on the covers of boxes containing Disney videos. The conscious mind doesn't perceive these but the subconscious does.

Or we can cite the plethora of extremely violent and simultaneously symbolic popular films of the modern cinema like *The Wicker Man* and *Videodrome* which in a very coarse and crude manner relative to the Renaissance ceremonials, continue this conditioning process (the issue of ceremonial and subliminal films was raised at length in Philip K. Dick's novel, *Valis*).

Mind Control and The Revelation of the Method

It is here necessary to point out a fallacy which has succeeded in defeating many genuine ecological rebels against modern tampering and the occult philosophy and organization which powers it. These are a rare breed to begin with since the vast majority of researchers who start out in search of the truth about these big themes end, like so many other avant-garde thinkers and activists, succumbing to the egregious tyranny and mind-napping that lurks beneath the facade of the liberal-occult operation.

But a few escape this net only to blunder blindly into another. They become trapped in the fallacy that exposure of the methods and personnel involved in the cryptocracy's crimes is, by itself, a tremendous step toward overthrowing the power of the cryptocracy. "If only we could get some of the facts out in the open" is their refrain. I would reply that the process of Hermetic cryptocracy is not stagnant. It is engaged in a remarkable project set into motion millennia ago, an operation which has accomplished most--if not all--of its chief-goals with awe-inspiring dispatch.

In the beginning and middle stages of this operation, the "hoodwink" was a key to accomplishment of objectives. Generally speaking, deception is far less necessary today. Quite the contrary, the cryptocracy has actually been determined to reveal many of its greatest secrets to us "profane ones" for some time now. Veteran independent occult investigators were astonished at the massive disclosure in the 1970s of some of the deepest and most profound secrets of the masonic-Neo-Platonic Hermetic Academy, secrets reserved in some cases for

thousand of years for only the highest initiates.

Two books by the English writer and *Ordo Templi Orientis* (OTO) initiate Kenneth Grant, *The Magical Revival* and *Aleister Crowley and the Hidden God* and another by the aforementioned Robert K.G. Temple, *The Sirius Mystery,* revealed secrets of the highest magnitude which have been vigorously protected and hidden at some cost to human life for centuries and in the case of Temple's book, millennia. And they were published with the knowledge and approval of the masonic-Hermetic heirs to this knowledge.

Independent researchers have seldom noted the significance of these revelations coming from occult groups and even advertising agencies which, in a demonstration of macabre nose-thumbing at our complete indifference to our mental enslavement, have actually pointed to the subliminals in their own liquor ads. These actions signal our entrance into an entirely different era of alchemical Process. As I wrote in *Apocalypse Culture* (first edition, Amok Press):

"...in the brilliant word-play of the (mythical) Masonic (figure) Dr. Syntax we come to the current unfoldment in "Must Be," an alchemical (cant language code) term Mr. (James Shelby) Downard translates as "the Revelation of the Method." This alludes to the process wherein murderous deeds and hair-raising conspiracies involving wars, revolutions, decapitations, (secret archaeo-astronomic deity cult-worship) and every manner of horror show are first buried beneath a cloak of secrecy...and then, when finally accomplished and secured, slowly revealed to the unsuspecting populace who watch...deep-frozen...as the hidden history is unveiled...In the circulation of...(anti-Academy) manuscripts...the revelation of the method is accomplished. Truth or consequences...Downard...is acutely aware that in exposing the conspirators he is probably serving the final dictum (in their alchemical formula)..." But Luke 8:17 predicts this, so if man doesn't act, God will, sooner or later! In the meantime, exposure itself does not defeat the cryptocracy because given the degraded and atrophied nature of modern man's perceptions and insight today, such revelations may only serve to strengthen the cryptocracy's mental hold.

The record shows that the recent revelations of occult crime

have almost never been accompanied by arrests, prosecutions, convictions and punishment of the initiates involved, hence the reputation of Academy invincibility is heightened by the revelations.

Moreover the spectacular nature of the crimes revealed carry a highly charged aura of the violent and the erotic and in the final analysis, when exposed to public attention, only become further grist for the seemingly limitless public appetite for shock-titillation and passive voyeurism.

Mystical Toponomy

Exposure without action against the perpetrators of the crimes revealed, devolves into a kind of perverse advertisement for the prowess of the cryptocrats who are seen as having performed fantastic feats of criminal enterprise with a genius that renders them immune from the consequences.

The entire process as a whole smacks of that familiar occult control device of grotesque mockery of the principle touted, in this case of the notion of exposure leading to punishment and retribution.

The phrase "Truth or Consequences" given to a city in New Mexico in a process of masonic, onomatological, "mystical toponomy" first discovered by James Shelby Downard, can be seen as a karmic challenge necessary to so bold an enterprise as the making manifest of all that the cryptocracy has hidden.

Mystical toponomy and alchemical cant language are part of a process which hinges on a marriage between action in time [or recorded history] and physical locations on the earth regarded as "places of power" by the cryptocracy's magical-geographical vision of the earth as a giant chess board, symbolized by the tessellated floor of Solomon's Temple and the masonic lodge, and Alice's vision of the world in Lewis Carroll's Wonderland "fantasy."

If all this seems far-fetched we can re-state the underlying principle in more prosaic scientific terms, where it comprises a key doctrine of modern atomic theory: "Time relations among events are assumed to be first constituted by the specific physical relations obtaining between them."

The famous old American highway "Route 66" was laid out by Freemasons with the apparent intention of sending masses of

automobile riders into a self-processing occult "trip." Route 66 began at the Buckingham Fountain in Chicago, near the site of the University of Chicago's collection of Aztec ritual incunabula. It ended in Barstow, California in the Mohave desert, which is for the Freemasons, the cosmic graveyard of the West, the final destiny of Anubis, the celestial jackal, otherwise known as Sirius (see Giorgio de Santillana and Hertha Von Dechend, *Hamlet's Mill: An Essay on Myth and the Frame of Time,* p. 358).

If this version of Route 66 smacks of some medieval pilgrimage made more appropriately on a camel than by car, it is for good reason. Most of Route 66 was based on a road forged in 1857 by Lt. Edward Beale and his caravan of the U.S. Camel Corps.

Beale is a highly significant symbol-name in the masonic chess game which is played with word, number, sign, symbol and destination across the face of *America mystica.* It was on Beale Street that the "Jazz Age," began the breakdown of music into the beastly jungle muzak that would finally result in "rock and roll."

Beale is an etymological derivative of the word for Baalzebub (or Beelzebub in the Latin rendering of the New Testament Greek) or simply, "Baal," which is also the name of the idol of the crystal-powered "New Age." In Quartzite, Arizona, under a pyramid, Lt. Edward Beale's head camel-driver, "Hi Jolly," is buried.

Truth or Consequences

There are occult links between masonic ceremonies held at the town of Truth or Consequences, New Mexico and the masonic ritual which attended the explosion of the first atomic bomb and the assassination of President Kennedy.

This mapping of the world in terms of a magico-scientific toponony is remindful of the Rosicrucian princes of the Renaissance, with their specially-sited palaces and grounds arranged in an elaborate pattern of images and symbols which functioned as a "memory theater" where, it was claimed, all knowledge, the entire encyclopedia, could be stored and recalled. The gauntlet the cryptocracy threw down at our feet in the specially orchestrated chain of ritual criminal events

and locations intimately connected to Truth or Consequences, New Mexico, was an "open-air" ceremony in full public view for those who had the eyes and the intuition to see it. Much of the Process was carried on in public. This was the "truth." The supreme high-stakes gamblers of the Hermetic Academy risked "the consequences."

Granted it was a gamble, but to those whose annals contained the records of the powers and perceptions of fully human beings of old compared with the mind-bombed goofs and patsies which make up the overwhelming majority of an increasingly less-than-human modern mankind, perhaps the risk was not so great after all. It's a matter of timing.

The cryptocracy's spectacular 20th century scam could never have been accomplished in antiquity among free people. The truth of the symbolism involved would have been immediately perceived and would have resulted in swift resistance to it by the target population.

The followers of the cult of Human Brain Power whose exoteric sigil is the pentagram, would have been swinging from tall trees in short order, soon to be added to Robert K.G. Temple's inventory of martyrs wiped out by craven prisoners of "shuttered belief-systems."

If traditional man could respond quickly and resolutely to those who would tamper with God's natural order, the contemporary cryptocracy (which is blessed with the ability not to believe their own public relations propaganda), would be fully aware that the real prisoners of "shuttered belief systems" are modern people whose laziness and disconnection from reality would virtually ensure that the "consequences" would not accrue to the debit sheet of the cryptocracy, but rather to the base humanity which failed to detect the cheat. And therein lies the risk and the success (thus far) of the Truth or Consequences mechanism

If the truth of what the cryptocracy has perpetrated is grasped and acted upon, the consequences for the conspirators will be annihilation. But if the people fail to perceive the truth or fail to act on their perception, thus rendering the Process a kind of tacit consent born of apathy, amnesia and abulia, the consequence for the conspirators will be a giant-step in the advancement of their system of control, that is to say, ever

tighter bonds of enslavement for humanity.

Why does the cryptocracy bother to gamble so much by going public with what it is doing to us? Because consent fuels their control like no other form of energy.

Jack the Lodge Brother

Another book containing revelations which were once of the utmost secrecy, is the late Stephen Knight's *Jack the Ripper: The Final Solution,*which documents that the world-famous Ripper killings were masonic ritual murders directed by the British government itself. "Jack the Ripper" was Sir William Gull, physician-in-ordinary to Queen Victoria, assisted by a kidnapper and a coachman.

An important point emerging from Stephen Knight's documentation is the role of the police in the Ripper conspiracy. I am not referring here to some corrupt street-corner "Bobby," but of the active involvement of the Queen of England, the Prime Minister of England, Lord Salisbury, the Commissioner of Police, Sir Charles Warren and the Assistant Commissioner of Police Sir Robert Anderson, among others.

The male conspirators were Freemasons of the highest rank and Warren was the founder of the research and intelligence arm of modern Freemasonry, the *Ars Quatuor Coronati* lodge. Warren did extensive research work in the Middle East in connection with the masonic project to rebuild the Temple at Jerusalem.

Stephen Knight quotes a Masonic document listing the hidden praxis behind masonry:

"Our motto must be 'All means of force and hypocrisy....In order to obtain our ends we must have recourse to much slyness and artfulness..."

Knights says that one of the key masonic insights into human nature is the reaction of people to terrorism and serial ritual murders executed with great skill:

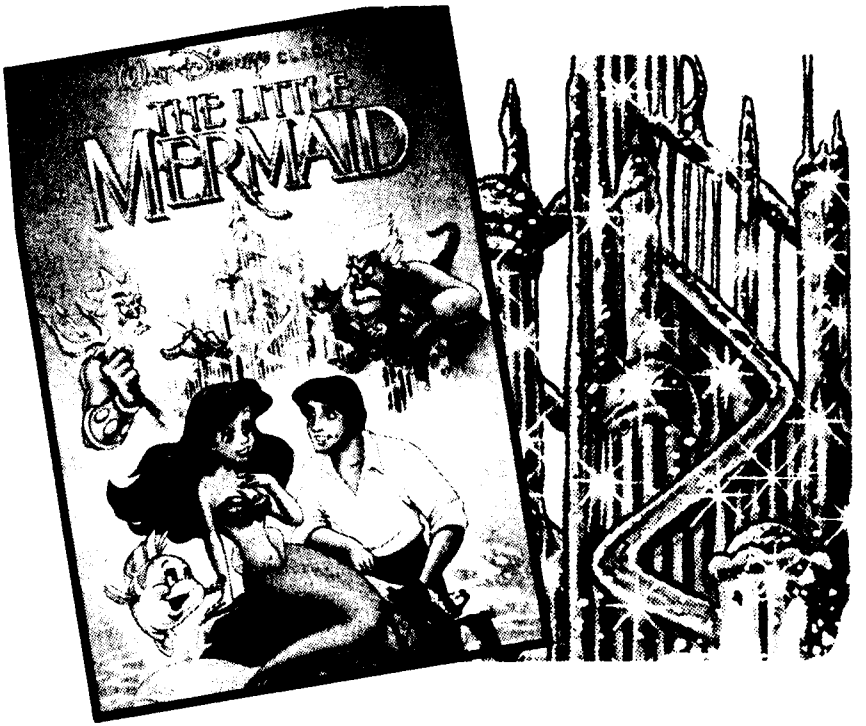
"What a dirty trick but how skillfully executed! What a swindle, but how well and with what courage it has been done!"

Knight says that masonic infiltration of police forces is a high priority and cites a masonic document: "The services of the police are of extreme importance to us, as they are able to

Marion Berry, while mayor of the nation's capitol, Washington D.C., made the gesture known as the "devil's hand" (see Adrian Frutiger, *Signs and Symbols, Their Designs and Meanings,* p. 262)

The Shadow State Makes a Revelation of Its Method. Note the shadow at the base of the liquor bottle. This is a message to the subconscious to pay attention, it's dark twin is about to speak.

In the 1970s, Dr. Wilson Key documented subliminal sex and death imagery placed in ice cubes in liquor ads. The liquor ad reproduced in reduced size on p. 42, comes from *US News&World Report* (April 29, 1991). A portion of the ad, above, is shown as it appeared in *USN&WR*. Notice that Seagram's draws our attention, with an arrow, to the human figures of a man and woman waltzing in formal attire. However, on closer inspection we see that their silhouette forms the torso of an inhuman, monstrous figure whose skull-like head looms horribly above them. The "hidden pleasure" is actually a hidden beast. This ad was both a "feeler" to test the current psychological decay state of the American people (relative to any protests received because of it) as well as a means of confirming us in our decay evermore, because the deadliest mind control can only be exerted with our consent. When mind control is publicly proclaimed with little or no protest, the cryptocracy gauges how far along Americans are on the path to being rendered totally mindless beasts, and escalates its soul-murdering agenda with corresponding boldness.



Bashas, a Phoenix supermarket chain, pulled home-video versions of the 1989 Disney animated film* The Little Mermaid *off its shelves after a customer complained that the video box contained a phallic image. Disney spokeswoman Tanya Steele said about a dozen people have complained about the image, but she said she doubted the firm would alter it.

The use of subliminal symbols is widespread in our thoroughly Satanic, American "pop" culture. On the right, the castle on the cover of Disney's *The Little Mermaid* videotape, is shown closeup, revealing a lewd image disguised as the castle's central spire.

A SHOCKING PAGAN RITUAL
By THE AUTHOR OF
"SLEUTH" AND "FRENZY"
"A unique, imaginative, thinking-man's shocker. If you like cliff-hangers, hypnotic spells and edge-of-the-seat stuff, see 'THE WICKER MAN!'" —Playboy
"The most literate, intelligent and horrifying film ever made. The 'Citizen Kane' of its genre. Do not miss it." —Cinefantastique
THE WICKER MAN
CHRISTOPHER LEE BRITT EKLAND
DIANE CILENTO EDWARD WOODWARD
Produced by PETER SNELL
Screenplay by ANTHONY SHAFFER
Directed by ROBIN HARDY
An Abraxas Film Release
Distributed by Dynamite Entertainment
R

Policeman refuses to tell mason secrets

By KIRK MAKIN

A Metro Toronto policeman who is a Freemason refused to give some information about his secret society yesterday at the Ernst Zundel trial, saying he had vowed never to reveal it.

Defence counsel Douglas Christie was interested in particular in a purported Freemason oath under which the throat of any violator is cut and his tongue is torn out and buried at sea.

"I'm not free to tell you," said Sergeant Roy Bassett, who has achieved the Freemason rank of Divine Prince of the Royal Secret.

"You swore on the witness stand to tell the truth, the whole truth and nothing but the truth," Mr. Christie said. "But you have declined to give an answer be

POLICEMAN — Page M3

● From Page M1

cause you swore an oath to keep it secret?"

"Yes," Sgt. Bassett replied.

"So I now know whose oath takes precedence," Mr. Christie said.

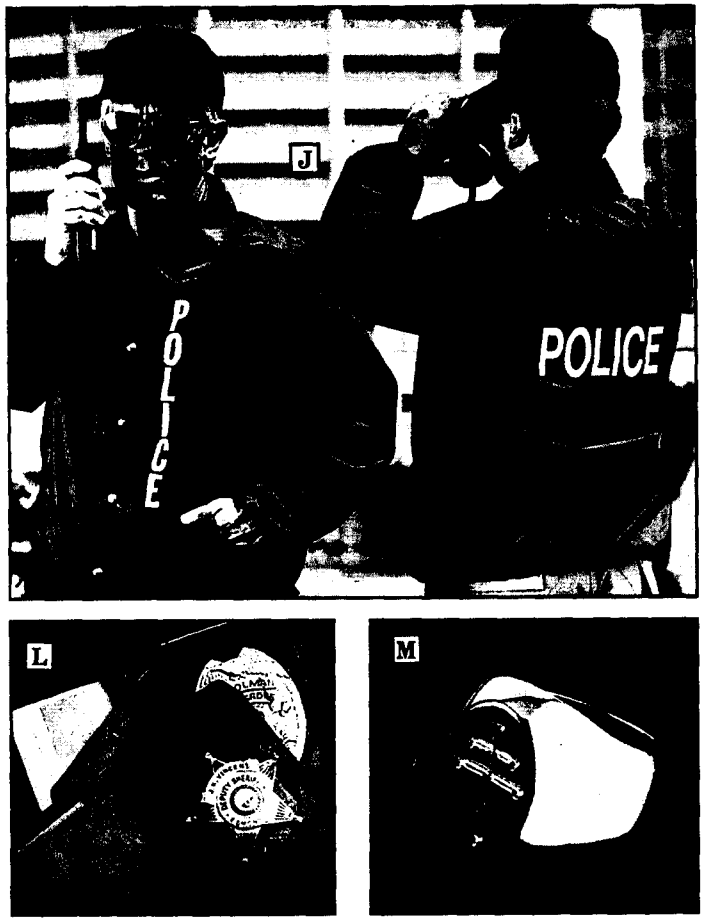
Moments later, the lawyer tried again to get information about the oath, which purportedly states: "My throat will be cut across, my tongue torn out by the root and buried in the sand of the sea at low water mark or a cable's length from the shore where the tide regularly ebbs and falls twice in 24 hours."

Sgt. Bassett refused again to discuss it, prompting Mr. Christie to say: "He should, Your Honor."

"No," County Court Judge Hugh Locke said. "I rule you can't ask that question because it is irrelevant to the issue to be tried."

Sgt. Bassett, a Crown witness who was called to provide inside information on Freemasonry.

The Globe and Mail (Toronto, Canada).
January 15, 1985



On the *Magnum P.I.* police television series, Magnum was seen wearing a signet ring of the double-barred Cross of Lorraine. In one episode, Magnum's Black buddy, "TC," is shown with a baseball cap that is embroidered on the front with his initials and the 'Sigil of Baphomet,' which was used by Satanist Aleister Crowley as his personal emblem, and is also used by the Sovereign Grand Commander of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry when signing documents.

Reproduced above is a photo of merchandise from a catalog of items sold to police officers. The item designated by the letter M on the right is the Cross of Lorraine signet ring. According to the book *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* (Dell paperback edition, p. 167), the Cross of Lorraine is "The banner of the conspirators..." The Cross of Lorraine represents the Beast System which works against Christianity in the name of Christianity. Those who wear the ring are "double-crossing" Christ.

Sir Charles Warren. Chief Commissioner of Police during the Jack the Ripper killings. One of the highest ranking Freemasons in the world at that time and founder of the Ars Quatuor Coronati Lodge for masonic research. Warren was one of the masterminds behind the Jack the Ripper killings, which were masonic ritual murders.

Warren also did extensive work in the Middle East in connection with laying the archaeological groundwork for the re-building of the Temple of Herod in Jerusalem.

Jack the Ripper: Sir William Gull, Queen Victoria's physician. Gull was an abortionist and a Freemason.

The Canadian Jewish News, Thursday, June 28, 1990-Page 29

Organizations and People

Samuel H. Cohen

Cohen named to Grand Lodge

TORONTO –

Samuel H. Cohen, a native Torontonian and active communal leader, recently became the third Mason in the organization's history, to become the Canadian representative to the Grand Lodge of the State of Israel, part of an international network of Masonic Lodges founded on "the purest principals of piety and virtue."

The lineage of modern Masons can be traced back to the stonemasons and builders of the Middle Ages who in those days helped build castles, cathedrals and abbeys throughout Europe.

Officially established in Great Britain in 1717, Masonry appears to be shrouded in mystery. Members explain that only the rituals and allegories are secret adding that although it is based on religious concepts, it is not a religious organization.

Today, Christians, Jews, Moslems, Hindus and other Masons who believe in the existence of a Supreme Being, are working together to build bridges of understanding between themselves and all mankind.

Organized on a system of Grand Lodges, each Lodge is sovereign within its own jurisdiction. Of the 650 Masonic Lodges in Ontario, two are predominately Jewish, Mount Sinai Lodge and Palestine Lodge.

More than 200 Masons from both Lodges attended a reception in Cohen's honor, where he was formally appointed as the representative of the Grand Lodge in the Province of Ontario to the Grand Lodge of Israel, a position previously held by A. Lou Copeland and the late D. Lou Harris.

A member of the Masonic Order since 1955, Cohen has held numerous positions in the Mount Sinai Lodge and in the Grand Lodge of Canada. He became Worshipful Master in 1969 and was appointed to the Grand Lodge of Canada in 1980.

"Masonry teaches us to be open to the realities of pluralism in our society. It teaches us tolerance and understanding," explains Cohen.

"Today, Masonry continues to build a road of brotherly love and truth. It teaches us to be charitable to the poor and to look after the widow and the orphan. In short, Masonry is striving to build a better world by building better men to live in it."

Cohen is active in both the Jewish and general communities. He is a past president of the Adath Israel Congregation, and his activities include participation at the Mount Sinai Hospital, Baycrest Centre for Geriatric Care, Toronto Jewish Congress, as well as the Shalom Hartman Institute of Jerusalem.

The certificate of representation was presented to Cohen by Copeland, who is a past grand master. Surrounded by Lodge brothers and family members — his wife Beverley and children, Jordan, Risa and Esti — his brother Max Cohen presented an illuminated bible to the Mount Sinai Lodge on behalf of the family.

That same evening, Rabbi Erwin Schild, rabbi emeritus of the Adath Israel Congregation, was initiated into Masonry as a member of Mount Sinai Lodge.

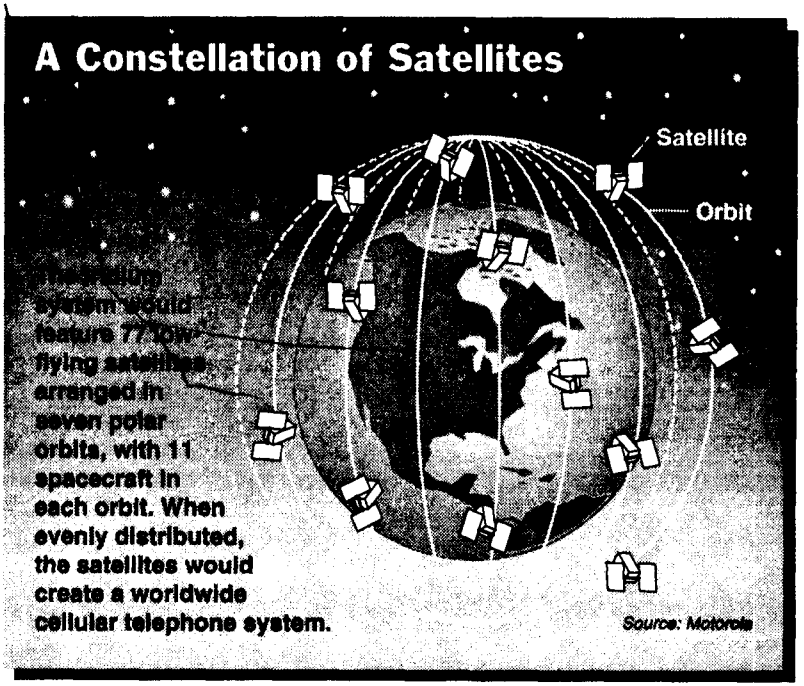
In his new official position, Cohen is planning to conduct a Masonic pilgrimage to Israel for Jews and non-Jews in the spring of 1991.

The Great Seal of the United States. Scholars have long puzzled over the meaning of the highly symbolic U.S. Great Seal, which appears on every one dollar bill. Notice that the pyramid, the universal sign of tyrannical rule of the few over the many, is unfinished. The "All-Seeing Eye" above the pyramid represents its hovering capstone.

The Great Seal is the sigil of the occult project for the enslavement of mankind and the extirpation of even the possibility of freedom. The project symbolized by the pyramid will be accomplished when the astonishing, "All Seeing Eye" capabilities of computer and satellite surveillance technology, keep track of every human being whether in buildings, the wilderness or even underground. An altered Seal will then be issued, showing the capstone placed atop a finished pyramid.

The motto above the pyramid is, "Favor Our Enterprise." The banner beneath it reads, "New Order of the Ages." The date at the base is 1776, the year the Illuminati or *Beenan Orden* ("Order of Bees") was founded. If the cryptocracy manages to obtain consent from the public to use the computer-satellite surveillance network on the public itself (in the name of "reducing automobile traffic jams, controlling illegal aliens, fighting crime, destroying terrorists," etc.) then our society will indeed become an insect world, an "order of bees."

Note too that the cryptocracy has deliberately allowed the destruction of America's mass transit railroad system, permitted violent crime to flourish, encouraged a virtual open border alien immigration policy and meddled in the religious wars of distant foreign nations thereby making America a terrorist target, because without these crises the pretext for a police state would be absent.



Satellite coverage of all the earth

Implementation of the "All Seeing-Eye." Just as aborted babies are being used as "tissue farms" with the approval of an increasingly brutalized public, in the name of "helping mankind find cures for disease," so too is the net of computer and satellite surveillance technology being thrown over the earth for the "good cause" of better telephones and the fostering of a "peaceful global village" of communication. The idolatry of modern science and technology as the god whose "inevitable" march "ahead" constitutes our salvation, is the True Faith of most people. In the "Constellation of Satellites" cited in the article (satellites can read a car license plate from 500 miles above the earth), we have the "All-Seeing Eye" of the masonic pyramid. Throughout the Book of Revelation, in those passages dealing with the Beast, the Bible makes reference to the "miracles," and "great wonders" the Beast will produce: "And he deceiveth them that dwell on earth by *the means of* those miracles..." [Rev. 13: 13-14]. In a two-page advertisement in part two of the *NY Times Magazine* of Sept. 23, 1990, sponsored by "AT&T Network Systems," the company proclaimed that its technology is "Half Network, Half Beast" and it described its computers and phones as a "beastly assortment" capable of "tricks you never thought possible." AT&T openly announces to the public the exact nature of certain types of modern technology because our *consent fuels their control.*

Just What the Eye Picks Up

Perception Research Services Inc.

What really catches her eye? The lab can tell.

PERCEPTION Research Services, a market research company in Englewood, N.J., has come up with an electronic eye-tracking system that tries to measure exactly which parts of an advertisement or a product's package is attracting the attention of consumers.

To measure packaging's effectiveness, for instance, a volunteer of the sort that the product should appeal to — a woman in her 30's, say — sits in front of a television screen and looks at shelves stocked with products.

A computer, guided by a monitor hidden behind the screen, signals a generator to transmit an invisible beam of light into her pupils. The light, unnoticed by the volunteer, follows her pupils as they move across the screen. Sensitive light-detecting equipment picks up the beam's reflection and records it as a continuous road that her eye is traveling.

In a back room, researchers at their own screens follow a white dot that corresponds to her visual path. The beam's reflection is also stored in the computer as a series of coordinates, which are plotted in relation to the product's name, the ingredients' list and other parts of the package.

Elliot Young, the president of Perception Research, said, "It will tell you where people started to look, how much time they spent looking at any given spot, whether they went back to re-examine anything and, most important, what they missed."

N.Y. Times, p. F-9, June 9, 1991.

The Beast system and its control "miracles," warned against in chapter thirteen of the New Testament Book of Revelation, is finding fulfillment in the incredible state of modern technology now available to governments and corporations. This technology is so powerful that it approaches the operative definition of "magic" as it was understood by the ancients. Occasional news reports briefly mention this technology usually, as in the article above, in connection with some "advance" in the realm of medicine, consumerism or the military. In the electronic eye-tracking system of "Perception Research," a television signals a machine to transmit an *invisible* beam of light into the eye of a person, tracking every movement of that person's eye *without detection.*

Supreme Commander of Freemasons Gets Flag that Went to the Moon

Colonel Edwin A. "Buzz" Aldrin (right), captain of the first Apollo moon landing and himself the second man ever to walk on the moon, presents a flag embroidered with the Two-Headed Eagle symbol of the Knights Templar, to Luther A. Smith, Sovereign Grand Commander of the Supreme Council, Southern Jurisdiction, of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry. Astronaut Aldrin, a 32nd degree Freemason, carried this flag and wore a "lodge jewel" while on the moon.

Eating Raoul . . . and Others

"How would you like to bite into a part-human bacon cheeseburger?" asks Michael Colgan, Ph.D., in the journal *Nutrition & fitness* (sic) (vol. 10, no. 1 & 2). In five years they'll be at a burger stand near you, predicts the author. The U.S. Department of Agriculture's research center in Beltsville, Md., has been inserting human genes into fertilized swine eggs, and a herd of "hupigs" now resides at the center. One goal of such research is to manufacture "spare parts for humans," that is, genetically engineered organs to replace diseased human organs; another goal is to "design" animals for more efficient meat production.

The USDA creatures reportedly suffer from coordination so poor that they can barely walk. They also are subject to arthritis and lung and gut diseases. State and federal laws severely restrict access by journalists and the public, and photographs of the "hunimals" are forbidden.

INSIDE ISRAEL

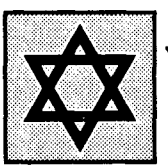
Temple mission raises tensions

THE GOLDEN swell of the Dome of the Rock, girdled by the stone battlements of the Old City, is to Jerusalem what the Eiffel Tower is to Paris and St Peter's is to Rome. It is the picture every tourist takes home.

Next to it stands the more mundane, but more revered Al Aqsa mosque. Several times a day, the muezzin's call to prayer reverberates through the city and echoes from the rocky hillside of the Mount of Olives.

But whereas the visitor may savour the Oriental grace of the Islamic complex known to Arabs as the Haram al-Sharif (the Noble Sanctuary), a resentful faction of zealous Jews who want to celebrate once more in the Biblical temple see only Muslim squatters occupying the site of the temple destroyed by the Romans in AD70.

The ancient Jewish historian, Josephus, said the marble-clad Herodian edifice on the Temple Mount was a "magnificence beyond compare".



Anton la Guardia reports from Jerusalem on this week's Feast of the Tabernacles

Procedures for animal sacrifices and other rituals are being studied.

Meanwhile, vestments have been made for the men of 20 families of the priestly Cohen clan, at a cost of about £870 for each set of four garments.

The most important work, however, is the search for the Red Heifer. This young cow would be slaughtered, and the ashes used for the essential ritual of purifying people and implements. Without an unblemished Red Heifer, said Mr Richman, impurity cannot be cleansed and the temple could not operate. A farm in Israel is working to adapt genetically promising animals found in Sweden four years ago. But more hopeful breeding is being carried out on a herd recently discovered in Mississippi and endorsed by a group of rabbis. Mr Richman said that American Christian fundamentalists, who believe that the raising of the temple will herald the Second Coming, are helping to promote the research.

Daily Telegraph (London, England), Sept. 27, 1991.

• THE JEWISH PRESS • Friday, May 26, 1989

Israeli Kabalist — Advisor, Rabbi Shani, In N.Y.

Again this year, Rabbi Yosef Shani is visiting New York. The renowned Jerusalem expert on Kabala will receive individuals and couples for consultations till May 29. His advice is widely sought in Israel and in New York for all kinds of personal problems.

Although Rabbi Shani has no pretensions of being a doctor, a psychologist, or an economist, his advice has helped a great many people. "Clients" often return for further advice, and send their friends to the rabbi, as well.

He focuses on three areas: Kabalistic astrology, Zoharian palmistry, and the Kabalistic significance of names. Unlike gypsy "mysticism," these do not pretend to foretell the future. Rather, they reveal the nature and tendencies of a person, past behavior, and implications for present-day situations.

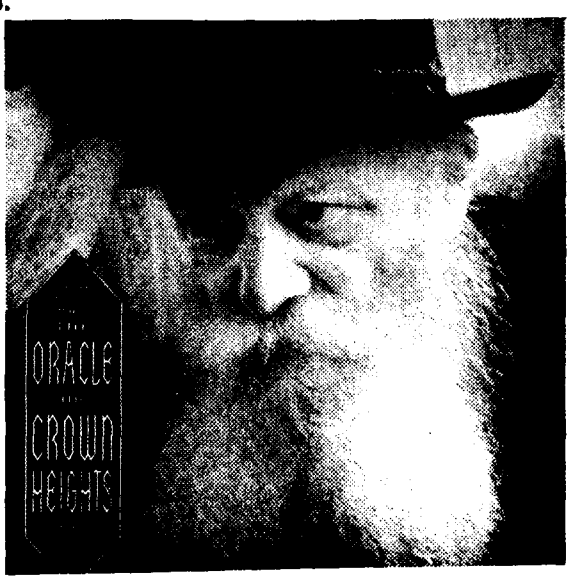
Rabbi Shani is also noted for his lectures and booklets on Kabala, Halacha and Jewish philosophy. Many tales are told about the rabbi's role in healing of "incurables," the conceiving of the "infertile," the release of the "imprisoned," the renewed solvency of the "bankrupt," and the exoneration of those facing harsh "justice."

The rabbi charges no fee for consultations, but he graciously accepts contributions for his publishing programs and for charitable distibutions under the aegis of his Shaar Yosef Institution.

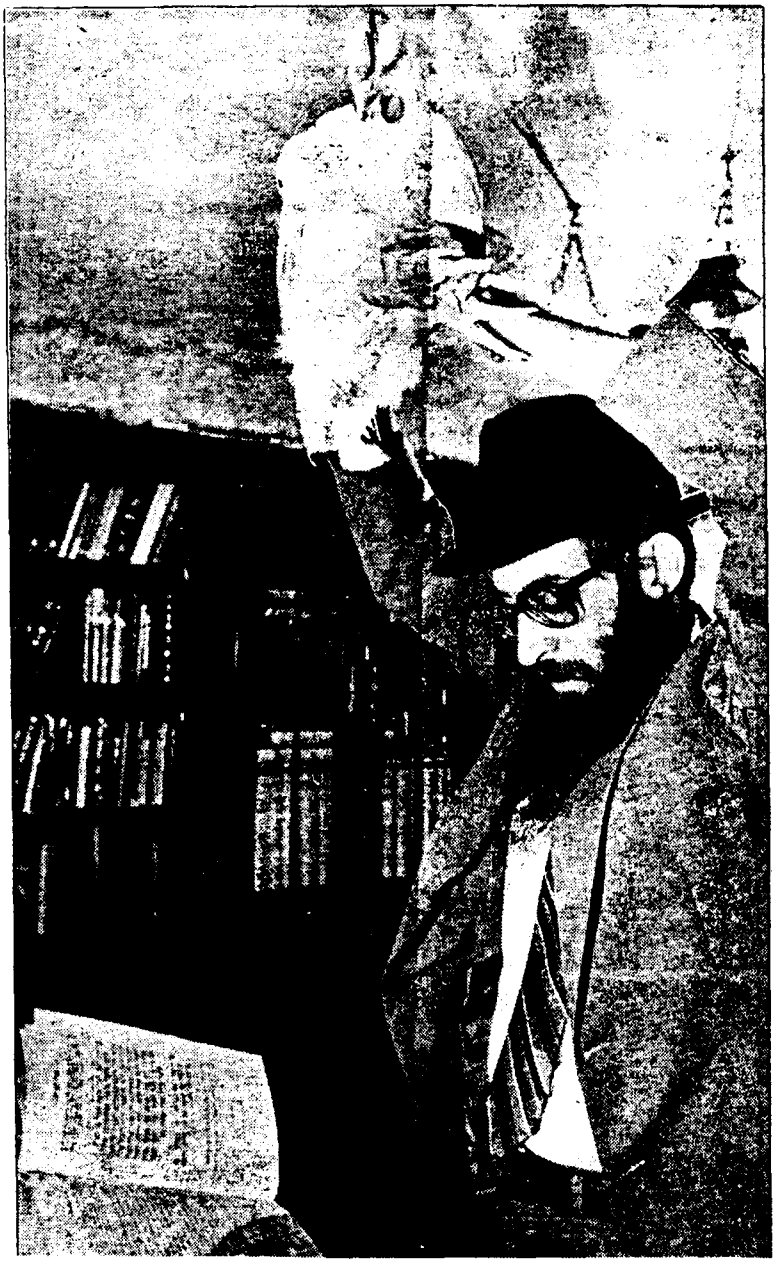
Rabbi Shani plans to be in Brooklyn through Monday May 29. His address is [redacted]. For an appointment please call [redacted].

Page 56B • THE JEWISH PRESS • Friday, June 9, 1989

LAG B'OMER TRADITIONS: The Aliya to the grave of Kabbalist Rabbi Shimon Bar Yochai and the first haircuts for 3-year-old boys are observed at this time. In the photo, a youngster on Mt. Meron is ready to lose his curls.



Grand Rabbi Menachem Schneerson of the Lubavitcher Hasidim. His birthday has been proclaimed "Education Day USA" by act of Congress (Public Law 102-14).



Rabbi Yosef Schanowitz of Highland Park reads a prayer Tuesday while he gently waves a live chicken over his head during the revival of a seldom practiced age-old ritual. [Chicago Tribune, Sept. 14, 1983]

Message to Albany: Baal-Humbug

Special to The New York Times

ALBANY, Jan. 7 — It is a symptom of the times that New York State's credit rating has become not only a financial benchmark but a significant political one as well.

News Analysis

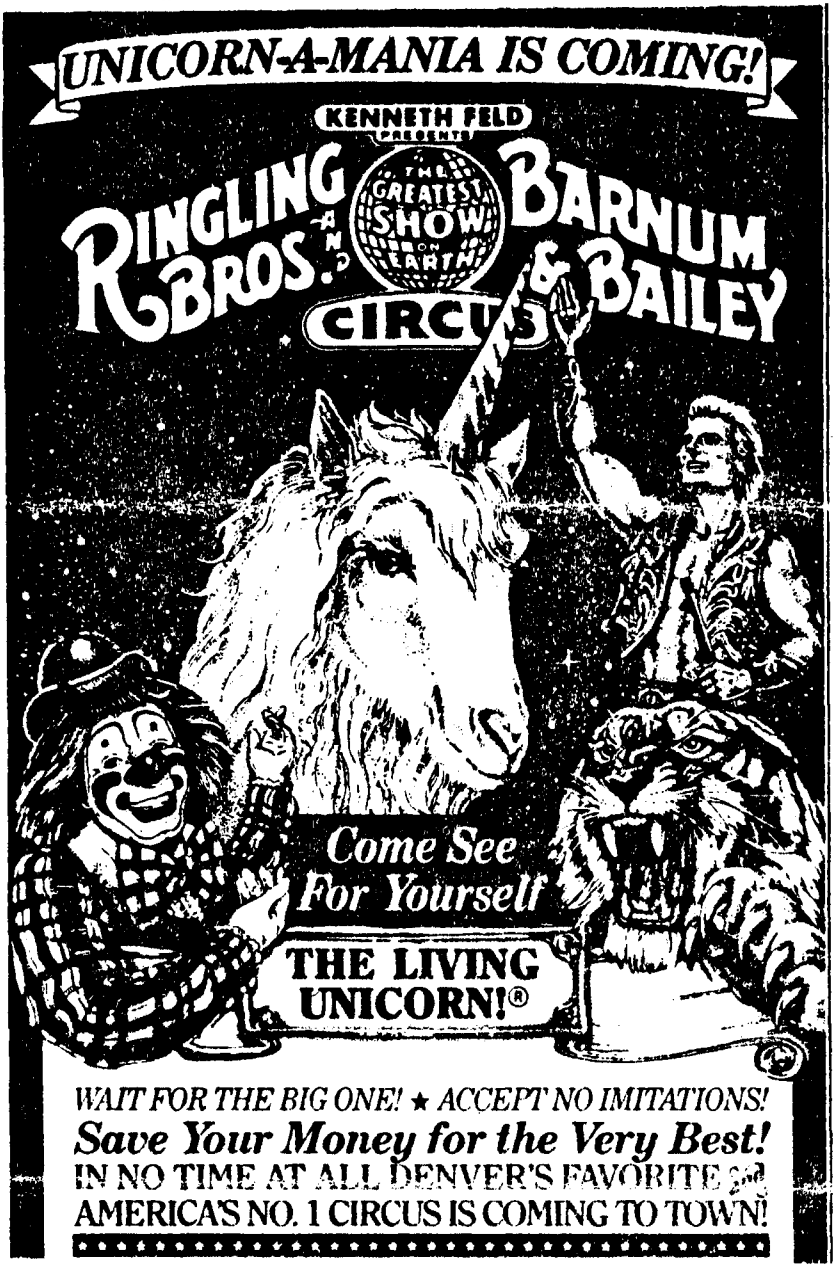
In the last two years, the state's credit rating has twice been downgraded because of the inability of its leaders to balance the budget. In both cases, Wall Street rating agencies have made it clear that the dismal grades were given primarily for the state's political failure, not the sluggishness of its economy.

That was certainly so on Monday when Moody's Investors Service lowered the rating on the state's appropriation-backed debt from A to Baal, the second-lowest rating of any state. In a three-page statement, Moody's dedicated only a fraction of a sentence to what it called "protracted weakness in the economy."

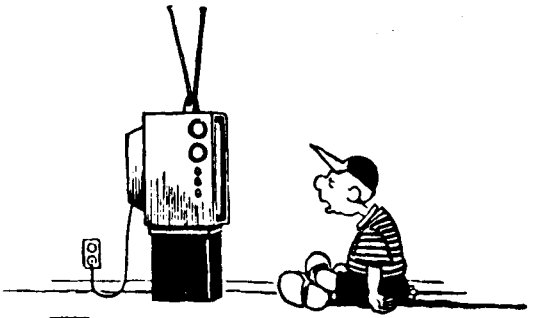
The rest of the statement focused on the state's failure to close its $875 million budget gap, the anticipated growth of the state's accumulated deficit, and the inability to restructure budget priorities in any fundamental way. All, it suggested, were failures of political will.

N.Y. Times, Jan. 8, 1992, p. B-4.

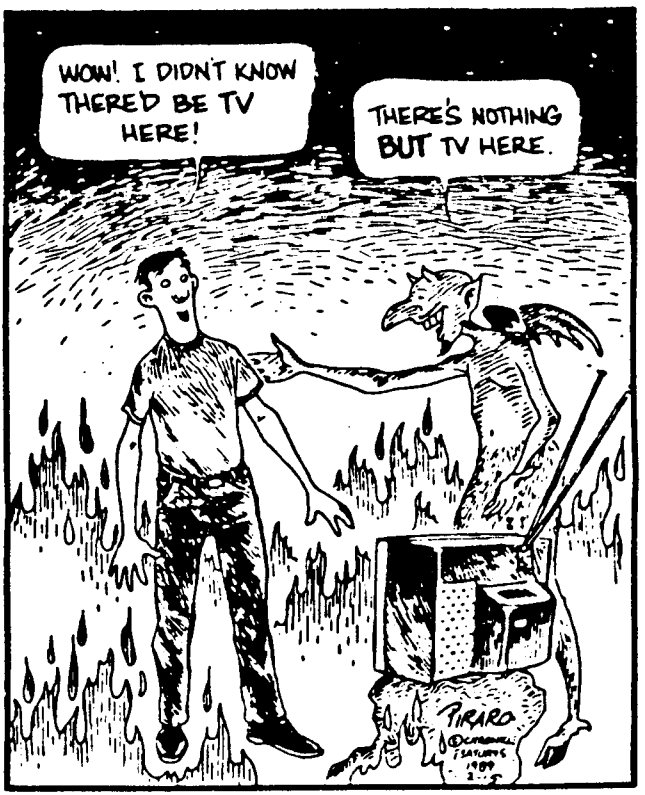
"Baal" is ostensibly a credit rating given by a Wall Street bank agency. The public association of Wall Street banks with the Canaanite devil-god is an interesting symbolical acknowledgement of the true nature of the U.S. banking system. Not only do the bankers not keep this association secret, they publicly proclaim it. Since money is the god of most people, who's going to object?



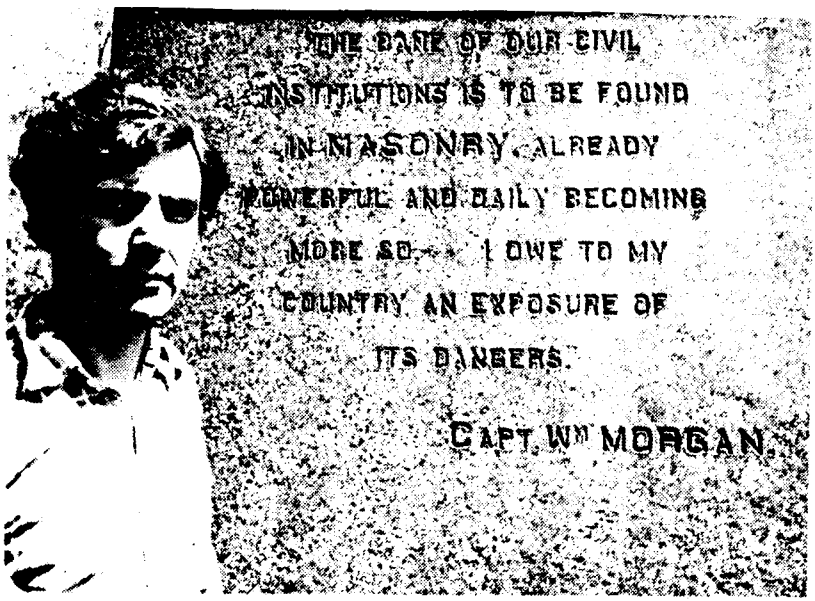
According to *USA Today*, serial killer Leonard Lake referred to himself as: "the 'Keeper of the Unicorn,' because he apparently took care of a goat whose horn was altered to resemble a unicorn--believed to be the same one at the Ringling Bros. and Barnum and Bailey Circus." -USA Today, June 12, 1985.



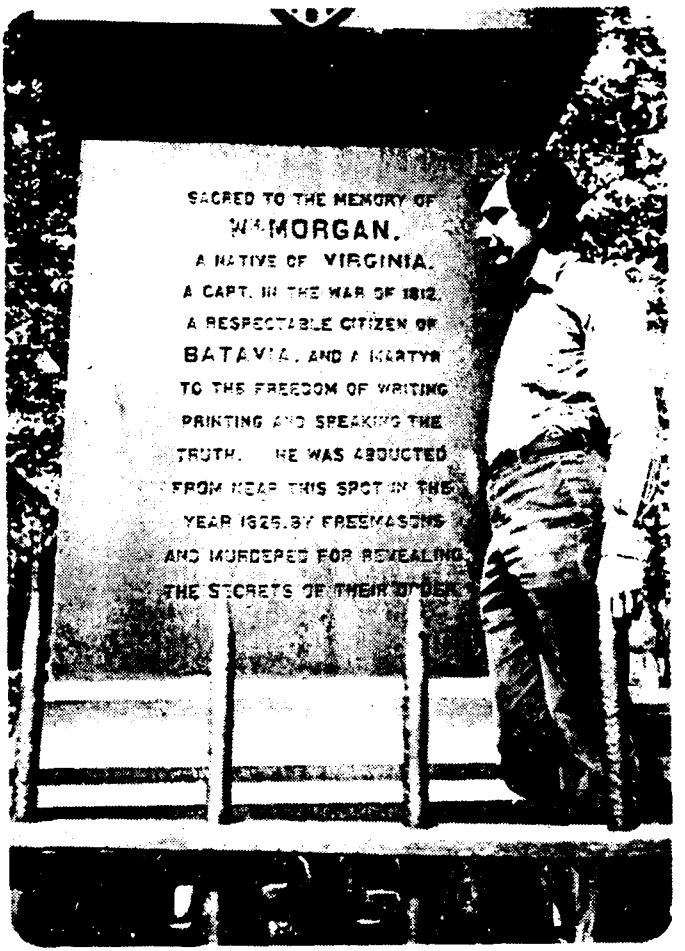
(CBC) MOVIE—Thriller; 2 hrs. ★★ 88947
"Videodrome." (Canadian; 1983) A TV programmer (James Woods) becomes obsessed with a lurid sex-and-gore show transmitted by an unknown source. Blanca: Sonja Smits.



The kidnapping of William Morgan by Freemasons.



The author at the William Morgan Monument in Batavia, N.Y. The inscription reads: "The Bane of our civil institutions is to be found in Masonry, already powerful and daily becoming more so. I owe to my country an exposure of its dangers. Capt. Wm. Morgan."



Inscription at the base of the other side of the Morgan Monument. It reads, "Sacred to the memory of Wm. Morgan, a native of Virginia, a captain in the War of 1812, a respectable citizen of Batavia, and a martyr to the freedom of writing, printing and speaking the truth. He was abducted from near this spot in the year 1826 by Freemasons, and murdered for revealing the secrets of their order." The erection of the monument was financed by public donations.

A national movement, the Anti-Mason Party, arose in the wake of Morgan's murder and masonic lodges across the northeast shut down. The party's candidate for Governor of New York won almost half the votes in 1828. The Anti-Mason party has the distinction of having convened, at Baltimore, the first national convention for the nomination of a presidential candidate in the history of the U.S. The Anti-Mason Party's candidate for president, William Wirt, won the state of Vermont in the 1832 election.

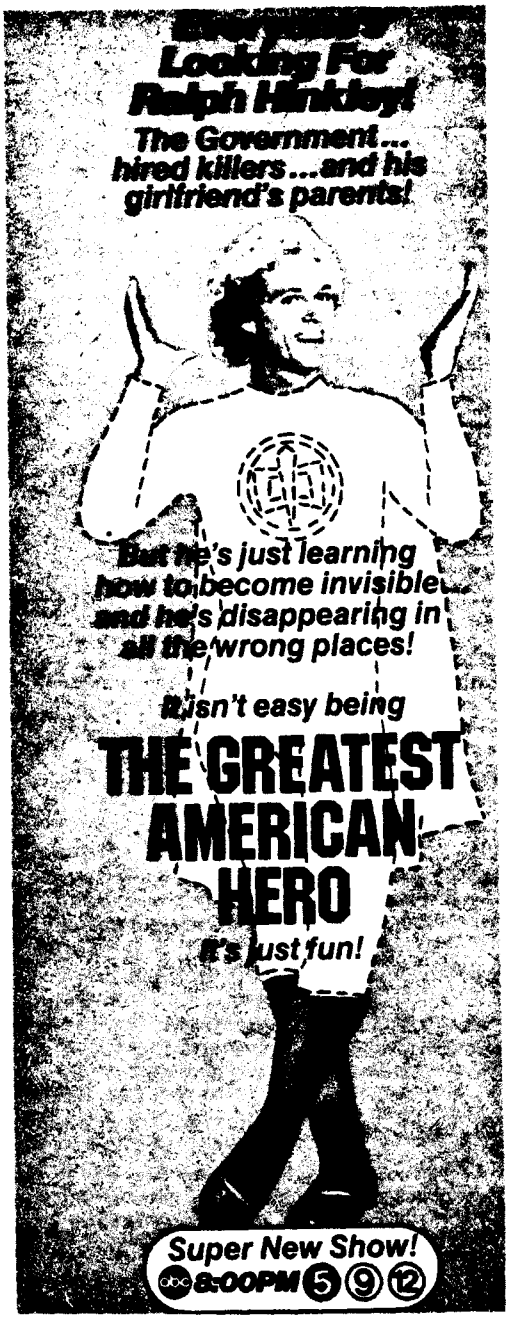
All the Pyramid's Men

The Confederate officer on the left is First Lt. John Oden, of the Tenth Alabama Volunteer Infantry who fought at First Manassas, Chancellorsville and Antietam, where he was seriously wounded. Lying bleeding, Oden used a stick and his own blood to draw masonic symbols on a paper. Then he called out to the Union troops on picket duty to take the paper to any Yankee who was a Freemason.

It was carried to a Union Colonel who was a mason, but not of a high enough degree to comprehend Oden's symbolic message. Another mason, Union Capt. Perry was summoned and he recognized the drawings and announced that a fellow mason was in distress. Four Northern masons crept out to the field, placed the wounded Southerner on a cot and carried him to the field hospital of the 5th New Hampshire Volunteer Infantry where he was treated. When the Union Army moved on, Oden was sent to the private home of a physician to recuperate, rather than to a prisoner of war camp. Lt. Oden survived the War Between the States.

While at first sight, this is a touching story of the brotherhood of Freemasonry, some of the glow dims when we recall that a non-mason, Christian Confederate would have been left to bleed to death. Moreover, if cooperation like this existed between brother masons in the field, one is left to wonder at what degree collusion between Confederate and Union Freemasons of high office and rank, took place behind the scenes.

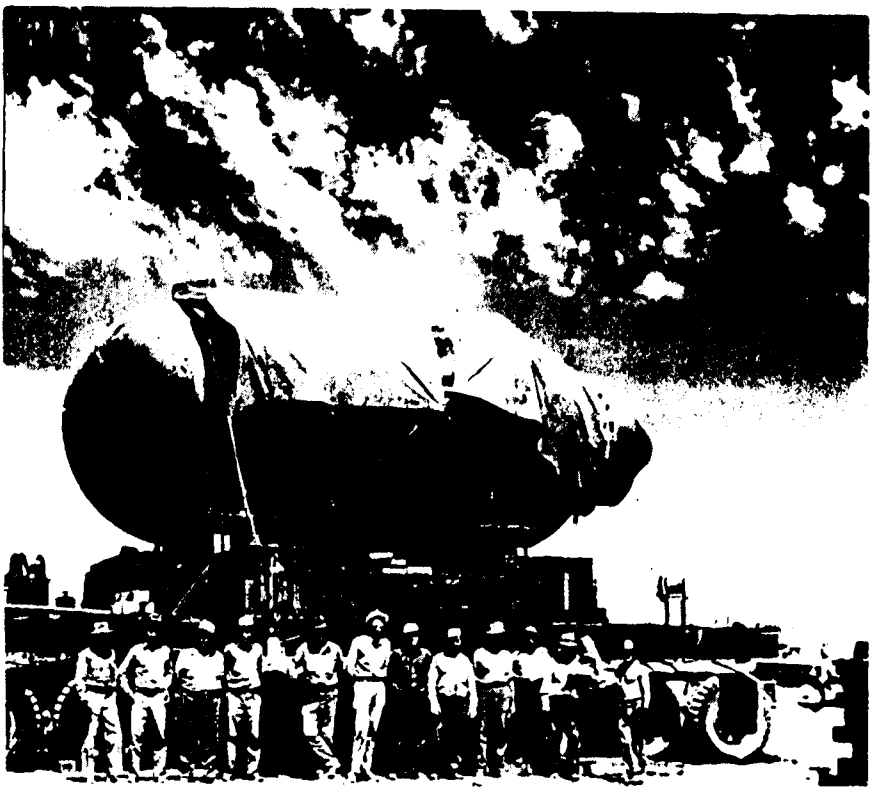
A New Hampshire Union Army veteran and Freemason in full masonic regalia. This former soldier of the North wears the medal of the "Grand Army of the Republic" (GAR) on the right, in addition to his occult symbols. It has often been said that the waging of the horrible American Civil War was deliberate and planned. False Christians on both sides ordained the evil and sinful military slaughter of fellow Christians but of what benefit could the Civil War have been to the masonic cryptocracy? One effect was the creation of an interesting electoral phenomenon which lasted for a century. Southern people would vote for almost the devil himself if he were a Democrat running against the hated Republicans. In this way the "Solid South" was created and cryptocrats such as Woodrow Wilson, Franklin Roosevelt and Harry Truman, men who involved our nation in ever greater Satanic wars and carnage, were elected to the presidency. The cycle was broken in 1968 and no longer applies today but it served the cryptocracy superbly for 103 years.



Two weeks before Hinckley shot President Ronald Reagan, the TV program described in an ABC Network ad (reproduced at left), debuted on the nation's airwaves. *The Greatest American Hero* was named Hinkley. The ad mentions the government and hired killers. We are informed that Hinkley has the ability to become invisible, disappear and be in "the wrong places."

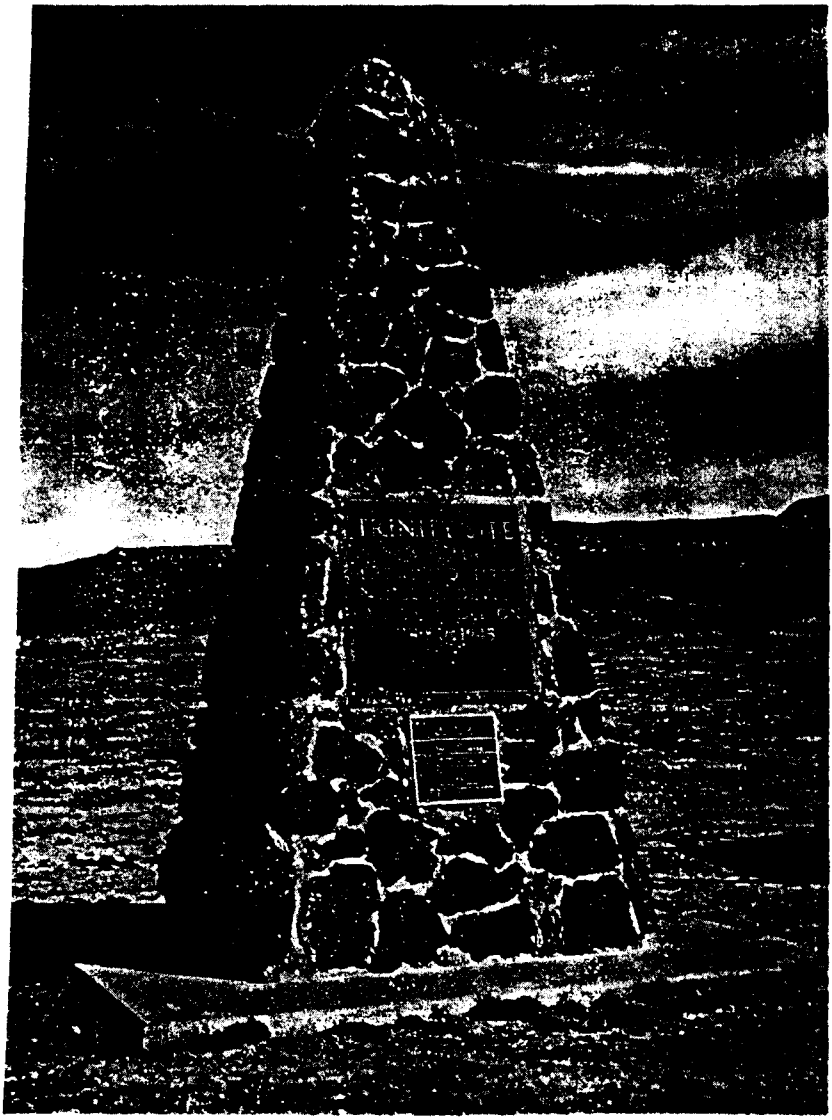
On his chest he's wearing a symbol pertaining to flight, either of that of a bird or a vehicle. Hinkley is dressed as a transvestite, wearing a dress and ladies shoes and Hinkley's hands are raised in the universal masonic signal of distress.

It is a documented fact that after Hinckley shot the president, First Lady Nancy Reagan consulted a San Fancisco "astrologer" who was allowed to set the schedules and agenda for the remainder of Reagan's entire presidency. (See *For the Record* by Former White House Chief of Staff Donald T. Regan. In an interview in the L.A. Times for Nov. 21, 1989, p.22, Regan said that the astrologer had "controlled the workings of the presidency").

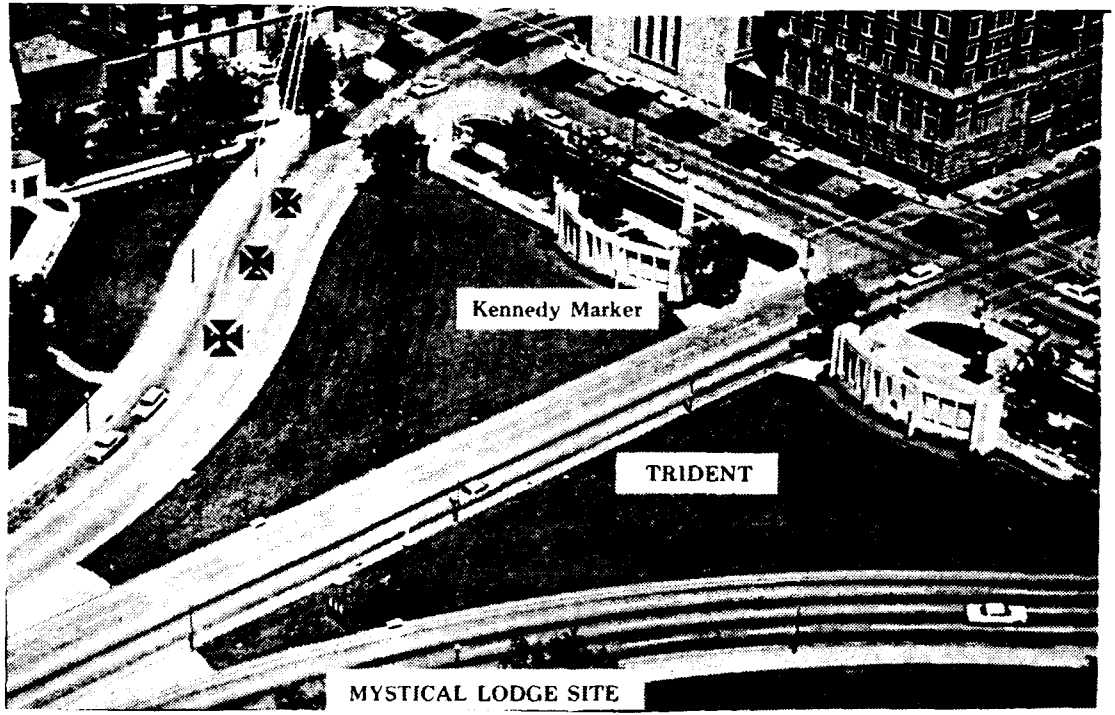


ABOVE: The huge "bottle" placed near ground zero at the "Trinity Site," during the first ever detonation of the atomic bomb.

LEFT: Harry S. Truman, 33rd President of the U.S. and 33rd degree Freemason, in full occult regalia, in an official lodge portrait. Truman ordered the atomic incineration of two Japanese cities, killing at least 150,000 people, mostly women and children. Roosevelt's chief of staff, Admiral Leahy, admitted to Walter Trohan of the *Chicago Tribune*, that Japan was ready to surrender conditionally without an invasion by U.S. ground forces. It was Truman's insistence upon "unconditional surrender" that set the stage for Hiroshima and Nagasaki.



The Trinity Site. A pyramid marks the spot where the first atomic bomb in history was detonated, in New Mexico, the "Land of Enchantment." The plaque reads "Trinity Site."



Another Trinity Site: Dealey Plaza, in Dallas, Texas, site of the city's first masonic lodge. It was here that the President dubbed, "the King of Camelot" was murdered, near the Triple Underpass and the Trinity river. The Third Trinity Site is at the Dome of the Rock, Jerusalem. All three Trinity Sites are located near the 33 degree of north parallel latitude.

throw a screen over our enterprises...as well as punish those who refuse to submit."

Knight summarizes the secret masonic praxis:

"...Freemasons applaud violence, terror and crime providing it is carried out in a *crafty* manner. One section of the (masonic) notes says humor is all-important and the most appalling crimes may be committed under its cloak. The one (Jack the) Ripper letter likely to have been genuine suggests that Jack the Ripper was going about his crimes in just this way, committing ghoulish murders with a Puckish sense of fun. If Masonic supremacy appears in jeopardy, it is re-established by a show of strength, by crimes of violence, perpetrated to demonstrate...the far-reaching power of Freemasonry to initiates the world over..."

(Stephen Knight, *Jack the Ripper: The Final Solution,* Granada Books paperback edition) pp. 158-162).

Knight's book contains the making manifest of what is hidden in these legendary ritual masonic Ripper murders. Knight demonstrates that the women were butchered according to masonic ritual, much like William Hogarth's terrifying engraving, *The Reward of Cruelty,* which depicts a masonic ritual murder--interestingly enough--performed by physicians.

Four of the five female Ripper victim's throats were all cut from left to right in accordance with the masonic Entered Apprentice "penal sign." In some cases their intestines were severed, lifted out of the body and placed over the poor victim's left shoulder. In masonic ritual, the three "Juwes," Jubela, Jubelo and Jubelum, are all killed by having their bodies ripped open and the entrails thrown over their left shoulders.

The Ripper murder ritual also pertained to the significance of *place* in masonic immolation. Catherine Eddowes' body was dumped in Mitre Square, London. Mitre tavern, at the entrance to the square, was the meeting place of the masonic Lodge of Joppa. According to masonic mythology, it was on the coast of Joppa that the three "Juwes" were captured. Also, mitre and square are the basic tools of the mason.

Eddowes apron, soaked with blood, was discovered on Goulston Street in a hallway of a building. Above the bloody apron, on the wall, a message had been written in chalk: "The Juwes are the

men that will not be blamed for nothing."

The double negative reference is not to Jewish people but to the aforementioned three Entered Apprentices of masonic mythology, who were both ritually murdered and themselves ritual murderers. The message was erased by Sir Charles Warren, the Chief Commissioner of Police and one of the highest Freemasons in Britain. Warren nevertheless made a note of the message which can be found in the files of the Public Record Office, in the section "Private Letter Book of the Metropolitan Police."

The genius, cunning and collusion exhibited in the Ripper murders would be repeated beginning in 1976 with "the Son of Sam."

Son of Uncle Sam

It was after midnight on July 29, 1976 when Mr. and Mrs. Mike Lauria returned to their apartment in the Bronx after attending a funeral. Their eighteen year old daughter Donna was sitting in the passenger side of her girlfriend Jody Valente's car, parked in front of the building where Donna lived with her parents. The women were chatting after an evening of dancing at a discotheque.

Mike reminded Donna that it was 1 a.m. and that she had to get up early for work. Donna replied that her poodle dog Beau needed to be taken for a walk. Mike said he'd bring Beau down. In the meantime Donna and Judy continued their chat. While Mr. Lauria fetched the dog, three cannon-like blasts resounded in the street.

Standing on the sidewalk just a few feet away, the killer had fired through the car window where Donna sat. She was killed instantly by a bullet in the forearm which entered her back. Jody was shot in the thigh. She would survive to give the police a description of the shooter: White male, in his 30s, short, husky and brazen: the killer had walked, not run, from the murder scene. Twelve more shootings and five deaths later, on August 10, 1977, pudgy, 24 year old David Richard Berkowitz was apprehended and charged with the spectacular "Son of Sam" serial murders, which had terrorized millions of New Yorkers for more than a year. In handcuffs he smiled for the cameras, sending a collective chill up the spine of America.

His eerie grin made the cover of *Newsweek.* ABC TV spent half

of its nationwide, evening broadcast devoted solely to the news of the capture of the Son of Sam. Berkowitz confessed. Deputy New York Police Inspector Timothy Dowd wrote "case closed" on the department's blackboard. New Yorkers breathed a sigh of relief. Berkowitz was declared guilty and sentenced. He has a steady engagement (315 years) in New York's state prison.

Another lone nut had made the case for more stringent gun control; another psycho had been caught and convicted. All the i's were dotted and the t's crossed. Or were they?

As Mr. Lauria was bounding down the stairs with Donna's poodle dog, his daughter was taking her last gulp of air courtesy of a large-bore, five shot revolver known as a *Bulldog* .44 magnum, the weapon of choice in the Sam series of murders.

Berkowitz came to be known as the Son of Sam because he claimed to have received his orders to kill from a dog named Sam. The dog was actually named Harvey and was owned by Sam Carr, Berkowitz's neighbor in Yonkers, a New York City suburb. In a classic Hollywood film, actor Jimmy Stewart claims to receive commands from an invisible creature named Harvey.

Berkowitz sacrificed a dog named *Rocket* in December of 1976 at 18 Wicker Street, Yonkers. Two days later, three German shepherds were found slain in a gutter adjacent to Wicker Street. While Berkowitz was in custody, three more German Shepherd dogs were decapitated in Yonkers. John Wheat Carr, son of Sam Carr, is alleged to have kept the ear of one of these dogs on his wall. German shepherds used to be known as police dogs. John Wheat Carr had the ear of the police from the beginning.

Several weeks after the death of John Carr a new TV program debuted on the nation's airwaves. It was called *SAM* about a dog of that name who took orders from the police.

As we have noted, most of the geomantical siting of the Temple architecture of Egypt, the Gnostics, the Masons, the Templars and the Rosicrucians is calculated to the Solstitial rising of the "Dog Star" Sirius. Sirius is the hidden supreme god of the secret societies of the West, the subject of untold centuries of veneration and sacrifice.

At the site of the April 17, 1977 Son of Sam murders of Valentina Suriani and Alexander Esau in the Bronx, the gunman

left an envelope at the crime scene addressed to Police Detective Joseph Borelli. The packet contained a letter filled with occult symbolism and mocking hints of identity, reminiscent of the anonymous Rosicrucian manifestos circulated in the 17th century.

A portion of the letter was written in an imitation of a Scottish accent: "Me hoot, it urts sonny boy" (My heart, it hurts). In late May *New York Daily News* columnist Jimmy Breslin received a letter from someone who had inside information on the "Son of Sam" murder spree. Portions of it were published in the newspaper and created a sensation, transforming New York City into a panic-filled, psychic pressure-cooker. The police attributed it to Berkowitz but a handwriting expert testified that there was no way Berkowitz could have written it:

"Hello from the gutters of N.Y.C. which are filled with dog manure, vomit, stale wine, urine and blood. Hello from the sewers of N.Y.C. which swallow up these delicacies when they are washed away by the sweeper trucks.

"Hello from the cracks in the sidewalks of N.Y.C. and from the ants that dwell in the cracks and feed on the dried blood of the dead that seep into these cracks...

"Mr. Breslin, sir don't think that because you haven't heard from me for a while that I went to sleep. No, rather I am still here. Like a spirit roaming the night. Thirsty, hungry, seldom stopping to rest; anxious to please Sam. I love my work. Now the void has been filled.

"...Remember Ms. Lauria. Thank you. In their blood and from the gutter. 'Sam's creation' .44. Here are some names to help you along. Forward them to the inspector... 'The Duke of Death.' 'The Wicked King Wicker'... 'John Wheaties-Rapist and Suffocater of Young Girls...'

A popular 1973 film entitled *The Wicker Man,* is set on a Scottish island where a policeman investigates an occult group involved in pagan ritual sacrifice to an effigy of the demon entity, King Wicker.

In April of 1977, during the height of the Sam murders, "by coincidence," *The Wicker Man* movie was rerun at a Manhattan theater. The word wicker has many denotations and connotations one of which is "to bend," as in the "bending" of reality. It is

also connected to witchcraft through its derivative, wicca.

The Sam Carr family ran a telephone answering service in Yonkers, not far from where David Berkowitz lived. Wheat Carr was Sam's daughter. She handled police dispatches as part of the family's telephone service chores. Michael and John Wheat were Sam's sons.

John was stationed as a sergeant in the air force at the U.S. base in Minot, North Dakota. Like one of David Berkowitz's attorneys, Leon Stern, John Wheat Carr was shot to death. In addition to "Wicker," one of the other names that had been signed in the letter to Jimmy Breslin was, "John Wheaties--Rapist and Suffocater of Young Girls."

Michael Carr died in an automobile accident, allegedly after his car's mechanical parts had been tampered with.

In pagan times, human sacrifices were sometimes offered to the goddess Ceres, the deity of grain. John Wheat Carr was killed in Minot, which in French is a unit of measurement of grain, as in a *minot* of wheat.

The handwritten letter to Jimmy Breslin which was published in part in the *New York Daily News,* has been definitely confirmed as coming from someone implicated in the Son of Sam murders. The police said Berkowitz wrote it. Handwriting authority Charles Hamilton insists it is not Berkowitz's writing.

At the bottom of the letter, beneath the words "Son of Sam," is a rendering of an occult sigil created by one of the most famous Black magicians of the 19th century, the Frenchman Eliphas Levi. Levi, whose real name was Alphonse-Louis Constant, called himself Eliphas as a play on the Latin word for elephant, *elephas,* whose demon familiar is supposed to be the "Behemoth." In the April, 1977 letter found at the site of the Suriani-Esau murders, the killer wrote, "I am the 'monster'--'Beelzebub'--the 'Chubby Behemoth."

A little over two months later, on June 25, Judy Placido and Salvatore Lupo danced the night away at the popular Elephas Disco, located in the Bayside section of Queens. After Elephas closed for the night, they sat in a friend's car in the Elephas parking lot. Son of Sam was there too.Three shots were fired, hitting Placido in the neck and shoulder and grazing her head. Lupo was slightly injured by flying glass. Placido had the good

luck to recover from her wounds.

Further research into the 19th century drawings of Eliphas Levy has turned up an elaborate, medallion-like sigil containing the words "Berkaial" and Sam Car written backwards: Amasarac (a/sam/a/car). Levy's sigil was drawn more than a century ago!

The Gannett-Westchester newspaper reporter who covered the Son of Sam case and wrote a book about it was John Wheat Carr's best friend in high school, Maury Terry. Terry never told his newspaper readers about his relationship with one of the key suspects in the Sam case. He later explained that he had forgotten that he and Carr had been friends.

New York police commanders and detectives and even a child-molesting district attorney were involved in the Son of Sam cult and/or its cover-up. The cult leads to the highest levels of U.S. officialdom. Witnesses to Son of Sam murders such as Tom Zaino and Cacilia Davis, who gave descriptions of the gunman and other details at variance with the script of one pat description and one lone gunman, and who were supposedly under "police protection," had their identities leaked to the news media by the police, placing their lives in jeopardy and potentially intimidating them from testifying.

When Berkowitz left behind a long list of phone numbers in his Yonkers apartment of people "in high places" linked to the Son of Sam murders, those telephone numbers were never officially investigated by any police agency; at least not for the record.

Berkowitz had no trial, only a sentencing. He was never interrogated. Detectives chatted with him for thirty minutes, *off the record.* Psychiatrists assigned to Berkowitz never asked him if anyone else was involved in the crimes. When queried in prison if *anyone* in an official capacity had ever once asked Berkowitz if others were involved, he replied, "I don't think so." NYPD Commander Michael Dowd closed the case and the investigation on the night of Berkowitz's arrest; the night the investigation should have begun in earnest.

The media cooperated fully at the time, never questioning a single aspect of the infallible presentation of Berkowitz as the lone nut.

The Black Arts adepts who wear police badges, occupy judge's

seats and media editor's desks are not simply "crazed" nor are such intensely publicized ritual murders merely superstitious sacrifices to some kooky devil-god. The Son of Sam murders were a brilliantly orchestrated ritual whose ceremonial aspects were as precise and detailed as the internal workings of a clock.

This theater of death began as a ritual for the cult-members themselves and ended as a giant magical ceremony for the processing of the entire nation, because in the worldwide broadcast of the Son of Sam murders was also broadcast the magical symbols of the "Wicker Man" and of Eliphas Levy (see for example *Newsweek,* Aug. 22, 1977, p. 19).

This is the alchemical psychodrama for the transformation of humanity. We are procesed just by reading or watching "the news," associating death and terror, power and potency, with an old demonic symbol by a 19th century adept of Black magic whose illustration of the hermaphroditic demon of the Knights Templars, Baphomet, is perhaps *the* most widely recognized occult symbol in modern history.

Readers of the *New York Daily News* learned to associate "The Wicked King of Wicker" with murder and terror. At the thought of King Wicker, millions felt fear. This fear was imprinted on their minds. This is the same control process hundreds of peasants were put through a thousand years ago while standing in front of a giant wicker effigy, inside of which was caged a doomed human sacrifice destined for burning.

The only difference is that the peasants knew that their leaders wanted them to fear an occult image. Modern people imbibe occult fear-technology while imagining that there is no such thing. The imprint's impact is doubled when veiled under such ignorance.

Those who think ritual has no power to significantly alter behavior have not studied Catholicism closely. One of the most influential liturgical rites in the history of Christendom was the Tridentine Latin mass. By requiring attendance at the Latin mass every Sunday, on pain of mortal sin, Rome converted almost the whole of Europe to Catholicism.

The occult cryptocracy has a much more refined inducement for attendance at their masonic ritual: spectacular optical. Few need to be induced to watch TV or read a sensational, mass

market picture magazine or newspaper. In fact, we pay to do so.

Of course, many serial murders are nothing more than the work of a single individual acting out a graphic horror movie he saw, or responding to powerful "psychotic" impulses for aggression and predation. But many other serial murders involve a cult protected by the U.S. government and the corporate media, with strong ties to the police.

These murders are actually intricately choreographed rituals; performed first on a very intimate and secret scale, among the initiates themselves in order to program them, then on a grand scale, amplified incalculably by the electronic media.

In the end what we have is a highly symbolic, ritual working broadcast to millions of people, a Satanic inversion; a *Black* mass, where the "pews" are filled by the entire nation and through which humanity is paganized, brutalized and debased in this, the "Nigredo" phase of the alchemical process.

The French adept Antonin Artaud, architect of the theory of the "Theater of Cruelty" with its transformative power, and the inspiration for the extreme sex-and-death media of our time, had this to say about the processing of the 'Group Mind':

"Aside from trifling witchcraft of country sorcerers, there are tricks of global hoodoo in which all alerted consciousnesses participate periodically...That is how strange forces are aroused and transported to the astral vault, to that dark dome which is composed above all of...the poisonous aggressiveness of the evil minds of most people...the formidable tentacular oppression of a kind of civic magic which will soon appear undisguised."

The issue of controlling humanity with esoteric words and symbols encoded within a play, a media spectacular or a ritual is one of the most difficult for people to comprehend. That is why most people are viewed with utter contempt as "cowans," "the profane," the "gentiles" and the "goyim" (cattle) by secret society initiates.

"I think we are farmed," Charles Fort said of humanity. It was Fort who also suggested that man deliberately invented the dogma of materialism in order to shield himself from the evidence of what was being done to him by means of psycho-spiritual warfare methods hyped by "coincidence," symbolism

and ritual.

The closer a researcher gets to the Son of Sam case, the more one sees an elaborate ritual. It began in Untermyer Park in North Yonkers, New York. In 1903, a reputed Satanist of considerable wealth, Samuel Untermyer, created a fantasy in stone and statuary brought from Europe, on the site of part of the water system for New York City, the Yonkers aqueduct, an area which was also honeycombed with a warren of tunnels leading to the aqueduct; a subterranean world that ran for miles.

A little over seventy years later the Son of Sam cult held their first rituals in Untermyer Park, in front of crumbling columns, decaying buildings and fright masks carved in stone. Planning for the murders occurred in a fire-charred abandoned mansion which had once belonged to the estate of the Warburg-Rothschild family in Greenburgh, New York.

Terry Patterson, an army buddy of Berkowitz, stated that when Berkowitz said he was the Son of Sam he was trying to say he was the Son of Uncle Sam; a creation of certain elements in the U.S. government. Berkowitz was raised from birth to serve a role in the Son of Sam psychodrama. His real name was not David Berkowitz but Richard David Falco; at least that's what his birth certificate said. But actually, that's not his real identity either.

The media claimed Berkowitz was an Italian raised by adoptive parents, Nathan and Pearl Berkowitz. But in truth his real mother was a Jewish lady, Betty Broder Falco. Her Italian husband was long gone by the time she conceived Richard David in a lover's lane tryst with a married man, Jewish businessman Joseph Klineman.

Broder turned Richard David Klineman-Falco over to Nathan and Pearl Berkowitz and he became David Richard Berkowitz.

Berkowitz joined the New York police as an auxiliary. According to retired NYPD detective Sgt. Joseph Coffey, a letter sent to Berkowitz from Police Commissioner Michael Codd, while Berkowitz was a policeman, was ordered destroyed. Sgt. Coffey says he was the one who carried out the order. (Former NYPD Detective Henry Cinotti, a devout Catholic, was the first to go public with evidence and information pointing to a conspiracy behind the supposedly open-and-shut Son of Sam

case).

David Berkowitz joined the U.S. Army, entering a special program for "profiled" candidates. Drugs were administered. After the army he associated with a Judeo-Christian, Fundamentalist street-preaching group in Kentucky. (After his arrest, the police put him in daily contact with a Fundamentalist lady who helped persuade him to forego the "technicality" of a trial).

After Kentucky he returned to New York and sought out his real mother. This was his final attempt to be tender or human. He was fed her identity and address. He sent her cards. They met. Now came the revelation of the method, for the mass psychology of the masonic cryptocracy is also wielded on an individual level. Now came the initiatory shock of a lifetime; the final brutalization necessary to make Berkowitz go "beyond good and evil," beyond duality to possess the "vision" of the Eye-in-the-Triangle.

What she told him must have been far from pleasant since he was the Son of Uncle Sam *and* he was Rosemary's baby. A letter by Berkowitz which was suppressed for four years by the New York City police department states, "I David Berkowitz have been chosen since birth, to be one of the executioners of the cult."

He worked as a security guard, then for the U.S. postal service. He made the cult. He had girls, prestige and knowledge of secret things. He had blood on his hands too. The blood of "fair game."

The Son of Sam rites are memory theater mystery plays. Son of Sam is on par with the Jack the Ripper masonic ceremony and the killing of the King of Camelot in Dallas as a mass psychology imprint of some virtuosity. This was their idea of a black joke on that particularly virulent species of fool, *Boobus Americanus.*

The Carr family was given the reward money offered by the *NY Daily News* for the apprehension of Sam.

This writer regards Son of Sam cultists Michael and John Carr as strong suspects in the highly-symbolical "Double Initial" murders of children in Rochester, New York; a highly charged occult series with a connection to the U.S. Secret Service and Hillside Strangler Kenneth Bianchi, formerly of

Rochester.

According to information published in the *Rochester Times-Union,* the Secret Service, for no discernible reason, was present in the vicinity of the home of the first "Double Initial" murder victim, Carmen Colon, *before* she was murdered.

This presence--never officially accounted for in this still unsolved murder-series--is reminiscent of a macabre execution in Houston, Texas in 1983. United Press International reported that two Secret Service agents watched the shooting of Gregory D. Chafin and did nothing to prevent it or apprehend the killer. Viewing this crime from another angle, we might speculate that the Secret Service was somehow possibly even supervising this murder.

The presence of the Secret Service agents in the neighborhood of Carmen Colon in Rochester in advance of her death, is justifiably suspicious given the depth of police coverup of leads in those Double Initial slayings of which her murder was a part. Son of Sam cult members John and Michael Carr and Hillside Strangler Kenneth Bianchi--all of whom were in the region at the time--were all protected by the police from interrogation in these crimes, even after a retired Rochester policewoman linked Bianchi with the Double Initial serial murders.

Maury Terry, in his book *The Ultimate Evil,* places Michael Carr in Rochester during the Double Initial murders and cites Michael's brother, alleged Son of Sam killer John "Wheaties" Carr, as a man who dated thirteen year old girls and who was known in the Sam cult as a rapist and suffocater of young girls. But Terry never once suggests any possible link to Double Initial which involved the rape and murder of four girls and about which this writer informed Terry in correspondence in 1979.

Terry, on p. 455 of his book, in what may be a macabre hint of his own, says--apropos of nothing--that he has his "eye" on the Hillside Strangler file. Indeed. That file leads to Kenneth Bianchi of Rochester, N.Y., and Kenneth Bianchi leads to the Double Initial occult ritual murders in Rochester, a case severely obstructed by police coverup. Terry's book contains both genuine information as well as a farrago of uninformed speculation and even deliberate disinformation.

The Videodrome

Some of the Son of Sam murders were videotaped by cult-members and copies command high prices in cash, drugs and other commodities on the underground snuff-film circuit. A fellow researcher in Los Angeles has informed this writer that a man supposedly claiming to represent author Maury Terry in California, was offering to trade a copy of another murder video, the Leonard Lake-Charles Ng sex-torture videos, to a contact in the occult underground. (For a depiction of snuff-filmed murder see Brent Easton Ellis, *Less Than Zero).*

It was the police who seized those videos after Lake, the alleged "Keeper of the Unicorn" for the Ringling Bros. and Barnum and Bailey Circus (see *USA Today,* June 12, 1985), committed suicide and his accomplice Ng fled. So, if these allegations are true, who is making copies and feeding them to the snuff-film underground in the U.S. in return for money, drugs and information? Who would be in a position to offer the Lake-Ng videotapes?

I have linked the symbolism of the Jack the Ripper and Son of Sam murders to the occult and to the police. I have linked the symbols to terror, that is, the induction of terror into the mass mind of Americans in association with certain key-words and key-symbols or "sigils." The induction of terror in connection with control-symbols is the most efficacious means of ensuring a brain-dead and mind-controlled, subject population.

Joyce Maynard states: "No villain is more frightening than the one you supposed to be your friend." Since childhood we are told, "The policeman is your friend."

There is only one level of terror more mind-numbing than the one Joyce Maynard elucidates and that involves an operation wherein a friend may not only be an enemy, but actually dares to intentionally drop clues as to his real identity. There were a surfeit of such clues deliberately offered by the murderers themselves in the Son of Sam case. Any honest leadership of a police force and any genuinely independent media could have detected the murderers' identities and organization without much delay or difficulty. But that was not the way the script had been written.

Now with the trail cold and indictments unlikely, any official media exposure of the facts behind the coverup, coming decades

later, might only serve the alchemical process, by publicizing the prowess and increasing the reputation of an underground of cultists about whom an aura of invincibility is manufactured.

None of this ought to be too shocking to any American TV watcher since a version of this process can be seen in those glimpses of actual murders and other horrors we are shown on broadcast TV, on "the news" and in "specials," right in the "Videodrome." Simulated snuff-videos are already available at many of our cheery neighborhood video-rental stores. Cable and network television broadcast the highest grade of brutalizing voyeurism.

The Angel of Light

Many of the Judeo-Christian "Satan-hunters" and "Satan fighters" are part of the problem, not the solution. They have blind faith in the police, the military and the government. They have no concept of the fact that Freemasonry and Satanism are sometimes controlled and staffed by elements within the police and the government.

They see the world through the eyes of the rulers of the System. They remind me of the story St. Augustine told of a pirate who was confronted by that mighty conqueror, Alexander the Great.

"How dare you molest the sea?" Alexander angrily asked the pirate.

"How dare you molest the whole world?" the pirate replied. "Because I do it with only a little ship, I am called a thief. You doing it with a great navy are called an emperor."

Many "Satan-hunters" and "occult investigators" imagine that the "Mark of the Beast" is far off in the future somewhere, when in fact without a government-issued "Social Security" number, it is nearly impossible to open a checking or savings account or obtain a business license. In other words, without a Social Security number, we have almost reached the point where one cannot "buy or sell," as it says in Revelation 13:17. But many of the supposed occult-watchers are oblivious.

These same investigators repeatedly ignore and even minimize the Skull and Bones Society of George Bush and the Freemasonry of some of the very policemen who lecture at schools on the occult.

Gullible investigators have been readily deceived by sensationalized tall-tales from publicity-hungry, teenage psychotics. Nonsensical stories invented by schizophrenics are accepted at face value as "Satanic rites," without regard for rules of evidence. Sloppy methods and credulity only spread confusion and disbelief. Is someone deliberately muddying the trail?

We need to take note of how little the churches and their various "occult watchers" concern themselves with the enemy identified in Ephesians 6:12 as "spiritual wickedness in *high places.*"

Instead, the focus of many Judeo-Christian "Satan-investigators" is on some third-rate Halloween trick-or-treater fronting a rock band. The deadliest occult adept is seldom garbed in such trappings, but rather, is concealed behind a glimmering, beneficent front. (Although admittedly, the need to conceal evil is becoming less necessary as the common people continue to become more perverted themselves, which is the objective of the alchemical process of mass brutalization).

The correct definition of "Satan" in the Bible is straightforward and non-occult. The word means "adversary." God's adversary is *anyone* who prevents God's will--His Law--from being enacted and enforced ("Thy Will Be Done *on Earth* as it is in heaven").

Adversaries are those false Christs and false prophets who order us to obey man's rules instead of God's Law. Phony Christians have done at least as much to damage to Christianity as any Satan cult. Those "TV Evangelists" who wave the Bible while chanting, "Send money, send money, send money," have sullied the name Christian and made it a byword for hypocrisy. They have caused millions of people to equate Christ with charlatans and to regard the Bible as little more than a book of self-serving alibis for greed and deceit. What could be more Satanic?

In fact, a majority of those who call themselves "Christians" are just as much Satanists (adversaries of God), as any heavy-metal rock band. (Luke 13:23-27; Matthew 15: 8-9).

Millions of Churchmen promote the worship of the doctrines of Central Government because their church receives tax-

exempt status only so long as these "preachers for hire" (Micah 3:11), advocate idolatry of the State. But Christ taught exactly the opposite (Matthew 20:25-28; Mark 10: 40-45).

Millions of churches allow "Christians" to idolize multi-million dollar sports-team players and franchises which hold gigantic football and baseball contests in huge, Roman-style coliseums broadcast to hundreds of millions on television, to the greater glory of money, the waste of time and the promulgation of mass stupidity.

According to Kim France, a former majorette performing at half-time during football games held at the Houston, Texas Astrodome: "Certain hypocrisies are tolerated, even encouraged. Cheerleaders are God-fearing gals who bow their heads to recite the Lord's Prayer before games and are members of the Fellowship of Christian Athletes. In their heyday, the Dallas Cowboys (professional football team) were known as the God Squad; meanwhile the cheerleaders dressed like low-rent Las Vegas showgirls. Because they were Baptist, and dancing was prohibited, Suzette Scholz wouldn't become a Cowboys cheerleader until she discussed it with the family minister. He said, 'Honey, you can dance all you like for the Dallas Cowboys. It's those other cowboys we want you to stay away from."

In the First Epistle of John the Apostle, 2:22-23, a straightforward, unambiguous, non-occult definition of the identity of the Anti-Christ is provided: "Who is a liar, but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? This is the Anti-Christ, who denies the Father and the Son. Whosoever denies the Son, the same hath not the Father."

By this Biblical definition, many contemporary Protestant and Catholic religious leaders are promoters of the Anti-Christ. Protestant Fundamentalists assert that Jews who deny Jesus Christ are somehow "saved by their race," even though Christ said, "No man cometh unto the Father but by me." (John 14:6).

Since Vatican Council Two, the Catholic Church has also promoted this Pharisaic "saved by race" lie. Dr. Eugene Fisher, director of Catholic-Jewish relations for the National Conference of Catholic Bishops states: "The path of dialogue is first the elimination from Christian teaching of all the vestiges

of the ancient Christian polemic against Judaism. The notion that one can define Christianity as good by saying it's better than Judaism, is a fundamental heresy. One needs to understand that God chose the Jewish people irrevocably and eternally as Scripture says very clearly." (*The Canadian Jewish News,* Nov. 28, 1991, p. 10).

Dr. Fisher's statement about the elimination of *all vestiges* of the Christian "polemic" against Judaism from *Christian teaching,* is a reference to the growing call within the churches for the censorship of certain passages in the New Testament, like the 19th chapter of John, verses 6-7, 12 and 14-15, which offend non-Christians:

"We propose, in the future, to remove from the Gospel of St. John the term, 'the Jews' where it is used in a negative sense, and to translate it, 'the enemies of Christ" (*Document of the Vatican Commission for Religious Relations with Judaism,* section 4).

The Bible states that the demonic forces of our time will appear as "angels of light," in a clever and saintly guise, perhaps as noble Civil Rights humanitarians, New Age Advocates of "enlightened" One World Government; or "value-neutral" Secular-Humanist scientists, doctors and teachers.

Or perhaps as influential "Judeo-Christians" with secret ties to networks in government, finance and the media; a "politically correct" individual approved by the One World System, using the names "Christ" and "the Bible" to destroy the Laws and Teachings of Christ and the Bible (2nd Corinthians 11: 13-14; Matthew 7:22-23).

Episodic Revelation and The "Lone Nut" Syndrome

One can observe a process of episodic revelation repeated time and again in the notorious "lone nut" assassin series (in masonry it is known as the "Three Unworthy Craftsmen"): the assassination of JFK by "lone nut" Lee Harvey Oswald; the assassination of Martin Luther King by "lone nut" James Earl Ray and the assassination of Robert Kennedy by "lone nut" Sirhan Sirhan. In each case, at the time of the murders, both the media and police officials conspired to present a united and seemingly *infallible solution to these crimes centering on*

allegedly iron-clad and irrefutable evidence that Oswald, Ray or Sirhan were the sole perpetrators of these electrifying crimes which galvanized a nation.

Then, in accordance with the clockwork script, 5, 10 or 15 years later, after the trail is hopelessly cold and highly obscured, a spate of tightly documented and well-researched books and films emerge which turn our heads 180 degrees in the opposite direction: now we are shown a mass of evidence proving that the cops and the media had to be either idiots or co-conspirators to have ever believed that these spectacular hits were one man operations.

We learn that Oswald was a scapegoat, Ray a patsy and Sirhan an OTO cultist. And we learn of their accomplices.

If you carefully study this scenario what you'll discover is astonishing. You'll find that the after-the-fact revelations are as much a part of the assassination plot as the murder and its initial cover-up. It's a deliberate psychological process they're taking us through, a psychodrama of enormous scale, though not really different from the principle behind the anonymous circulation of the Rosicrucian manifestos of the 17th century, with their mocking hints of identity.

This Process surfaces in many other "lone nut serial murders" as well. In the Son of Sam case we saw Berkowitz infallibly presented by the establishment media and police as the person solely responsible, in spite of massive evidence of which the national media and New York police were very well aware, making it impossible for Berkowitz to have been the triggerman in more than half of the killings.

In 1977-78, seeing this familiar repeat of a grotesque pattern, I wrote dozens of letters to media agencies pointing out the huge gaps in information surrounding the case. I received no meaningful response from any of them at the time.

Simplistic conspiracy researchers will nod their heads in recognition of the duplicity involved here, while missing the point about the one-two punch repeatedly conveyed in these highly symbolical murders, which transmit alchemical cant language command phrases and trigger-words over the airwaves and into the news racks.

One: the ritual murders are successfully accomplished. The principals get-away, the scapegoat conveniently takes the

blame. Two: later we learn the truth but no one is prosecuted. We are mocked, disoriented and demoralized. Occult prestige and potency is heightened.

This is what simplistic researchers miss: the function of macabre arrogance thumbing its nose at us while we do nothing except spread the tale of their immunity and invincibility further. That is the game plan operant here.

To the belief system of the modern man it sounds too crazy. Why would the perpetrators want their secrets revealed after the fact--even if it is years later? This question can only be definitively answered if one has an understanding of the *zeitgeist* which overseers in the cryptocracy have partly manufactured and partly tailored their own operations to coincide with.

As I've pointed out, secrets like this were rarely revealed in the past because traditional people had not yet completed the alchemical processing. To make such perverse, modern revelations to an unprocessed, healthy and vigorous population possessed of will, memory, adherence to their deepest inner intuition and intense interest in their own salvation, would not have been a good thing for the cryptocracy. It would have proved fatal to them.

But to reveal these after-the-act secrets in our modern time, to a people who have no memory, no will-power and no interest in their own fate except in so far as it may serve as momentary titillation and entertainment actually strengthens the enslavement of such a people.

Consent is Crucial to The Process

The alchemical principle of the Revelation of the Method has as its chief component, a clown-like, grinning mockery of the victim(s) as a show of power and macabre arrogance. When this is performed in a veiled manner accompanied by certain occult signs and symbolical words and elicits no meaningful response of opposition or resistance from the target(s), it is one of the most efficacious techniques of psychological warfare and mind-rape.

This ceremonial nose-thumbing, this perverse jesting and clowning is taken to the highest level of intensity by the Truth or Consequences principle which ultimately hinges upon the

issue of consent.

It is one thing for the media, the police, the judiciary and the killers themselves to commit terrible acts without our knowledge or consent. It is quite another matter, with grave repercussions in the realm of psychodrama, public ritual and advanced mind control, when these crimes are committed with our consent. It is an ancient rule of both the moral and common law that silence connotes consent--silence and a lack of meaningful action constitute consent in the face of these crimes.

They brag to us about what they've gotten away with and we're thrilled by it. That's our only significant response, that and the anticipation of the next thrill.

Thus the old strategy of exposing the cryptocracy, when applied blindly in the belief that this in itself is a potent weapon against cryptocracy, is bankrupt. Exposure and publicity by themselves, without a broader understanding of the epistemology of the Hermetic-alchemical control process itself, is worse than useless, it actually plays into the hands of the conspirators.

Moreover, to whom are we directing the exposure, anyway? Who do we imagine comprise the audience that will respond and take effective action? Faith in the power of exposing crimes and their perpetrators to the light of day presupposes an audience of human beings who will intuit, fight, resist, remember.

I remember Budd Dwyer's televised suicide. The Pennsylvania official prefaced his broadcast, TV self-immolation with a quote from one of his associates who told Dwyer that the American people had become too jaded about "routine" investigations into political corruption on TV's *Sixty Minutes* and *20/20* to care very much about the corruption Dwyer sought to expose.

Mr. Dwyer decided that a population so jaded would need a spectacular sacrificial victim to shake it awake from its apathy and therefore he shot himself in front of TV cameras at a news conference.

But his televised suicide did no such thing. Instead it became, like virtually everything else that appears on television, a trivialized part of the entertainment videodrome. It merely raised the stakes for the next human life to exceed in terms of violence and horror and brutalization, as public fare.

Trinity Sight

Perhaps the leaders of the World System are mad. Perhaps that's all they are. But if they are mad and they really do believe their own hallucinations, then we may still wish to pay attention to these, to see what form they have taken and will take, because our would-be shepherds have method in their madness and a great deal of power. They may be found in the board rooms of our corporations, our Pentagon and the White House.

Fabled alchemy had at least three goals to accomplish before the total decay of matter, the total breakdown we are witnessing all around us today, was fulfilled and these are:

The Creation and Destruction of Primordial Matter.

The Killing of the Divine King.

The Bringing of *Prima Materia* to *Prima Terra.*

Since ancient times these were the goals of the Gnostic-Rosicrucian-Masonic-Hermetic Academy, an elite as real and corporeal as President Bush's Skull and Bones society at Yale University; the Bohemian Grove in California; Dr. John Whiteside Parson's *Ordo Templi Orientis* (OTO) also in California; General Albert Pike's Scottish and Palladian Rites of Freemasonry and a host of lesser imitators. All of these cults have or had the highest possible offices, connections and old boy networks.

The Creation and Destruction of Primordial Matter was accomplished at the White Head ("Ancient of Days"), at White Sands, New Mexico, at the Trinity Site. The Trinity Site itself is located at the beginning of an an ancient Western road known in old Mexico as the *Jornada del muerto* (the Journey of the Dead Man).

Early in this century a Freemason named Peter Kern was ordered to build a highly symbolic "Gate of Death" at a key point on this ancient trail. It was known as the Gate with a Thousand Doors.

At the front of this gate Kern was ceremonially murdered (decapitated) by a hooded executioner. Gary Trudeau satirized

the Aztec-masonic Comazotz head-chopping cult of the American Southwest in a series of December, 1988 "Doonesbury" cartoons which depicted Skull and Bones initiates trying to dispose of a number of heads including that of Pancho Villa, a key political operative of the cryptocracy who was in fact also ritually decapitated.

Other occult rituals for the Creation and Destruction of Primordial Matter were played out in the general area of the 33rd degree of north parallel latitude in Truth or Consequences, New Mexico. The Trinity Site is also at this latitude.

There are 33 segments in the human spinal column which according to occult lore is the vehicle of the fiery ascent of the Kundalini serpent force which resides in the human body. 33 is the highest degree of *Scottish* Rite Freemasonry. Near the Trinity Site a derelict shack was symbolically dubbed "MacDonald House." The Creation and Destruction of Primordial Matter occurred exactly on the Trinity Site, the "Place of Fire," with the explosion of the first atomic bomb, culminating untold thousands of years of alchemical speculation and practice.

The Killing of the King rite was accomplished at another Trinity site located approximately ten miles south of the 33rd degree of north parallel latitude between the Trinity River and the Triple Underpass at Dealey Plaza in Dallas, Texas. Dealey Plaza was the site of the first masonic temple in Dallas. In this spot, which had been known during the 19th century cowboy era as "Bloody Elm Street," the world leader who had become known as the "King of Camelot," President John Fitzgerald Kennedy, was shot to death.

A widely publicized image which has become perhaps the key symbol of the enigma of the Kennedy hoodwink, emerged immediately in the wake of the assassination: a photograph of three "tramps" in official custody, who were later unexplainably released and never identified, though speculation about who they really were has reached fever pitch among investigators.

This photograph is a ritual accompaniment of the Black mass that was the ceremonial immolation of a king, the unmistakable calling card of masonic murder, the appearance of Jubela,

Jubelo and Jubelum, the three "unworthy craftsmen" of Temple burlesque, "that will not be blamed for nothing."

This ritual symbolism is necessary for the accomplishment of what James Shelby Downard and I described in the first edition of *Apocalypse Culture,* as the alchemical intention of the killing of the 'King of Camelot':

"...the ultimate purpose of that assassination was not political or economic but sorcerous: for the control of the dreaming mind and the marshaling of its forces is the omnipotent force in this entire scenario of lies, cruelty and degradation. Something died in the American people on Nov. 22, 1963--call it idealism, innocence or the quest for moral excellence. It is the transformation of human beings which is the authentic reason and motive for the Kennedy murder..."

The seemingly random and senseless slaughter of a President, the week before Thanksgiving, by having his head blown apart in those now infamous Zapruder film frames, is the signpost of humanity's entry into what David Cronenberg in his *Videodrome* Rosicrucian cinematic manifesto termed, "Savage New Times."

The search for the three assassins has become a trip up and down Tim Finnegan's ladder, a ladder containing "one false step after another." It is a masonic riddle several magnitudes above the pedestrian, CIA-Mafia-Anti-Castro-Castro-KGB-Texas rightwing etc. etc. political "solutions" pushed by the various books and movies which sometimes only serve to confuse and demoralize us all the more.

The Alchemy of Ritual Murder

What ought to be unambiguous to any student of mass psychology, is the almost immediate decline of the American people in the wake of this shocking, televised slaughter. There are many indicators of the transformation. Within a year Americans had largely switched from softer-toned, naturally colored cotton clothing to garish-colored artificial polyesters. Popular music became louder, faster and more cacophonous. Drugs appeared for the first time outside the Bohemian sub-culture ghettos, in the mainstream. Extremes of every kind came into fashion. Revolutions in cognition and behavior were on the horizon, from the Beatles to Charles Manson, from Free

Love to LSD.

The killers were not caught, the Warren Commission was a whitewash. There was a sense that the men who ordered the assassination were grinning somewhere over cocktails and out of this, a nearly-psychedelic wonder seized the American population, an awesome shiver before the realization that whoever could kill a president of the United States in broad daylight and get away with it, could get away with anything.

A hidden government behind the visible government of these United States became painfully obvious in a kind of subliminal way and lent an undercurrent of the hallucinogenic to our reality. Welcome to Oz thanks to the men behind *Os*-wald and *Ruby*.

There was a transfer of power in the collective group mind of the American masses: from the public power of the elected front-man Chief Executive, to an unelected invisible college capable of terminating him with impunity.

For the first time in their history since the 1826 masonic assassination of writer William Morgan, Americans were forced to confront the vertiginous reality of a hidden power ruling their world. Sir James Frazer writing in *The Golden Bough: A Study in Magic and Religion,* explains that when the "divine king" is murdered by one who is himself stronger or craftier, those powers of "divinity" which were the king's are "Sympathetically" and "Contagiously" transferred from the vanquished to the victor.

The entry of this awareness into the subconscious Group or "Dreaming" Mind of the American masses instituted a new simulacrum. The shocking introduction of a diametrically different, new "reality" is a classic scenario of another phase of alchemical programming known to the cryptocracy as *"Clamores."*

Dave Marsh writing in *Rolling Stone* magazine (Feb. 24, 1977): "The Beatles have always had an intimate connection to the JFK assassination. He was shot the week before Thanksgiving 1963. By February 1964, the Beatles were number one in the national charts and the climactic appearance on Ed Sullivan's TV show occurred. Even Brian Epstein (the manager of the Beatles) believed the Kennedy assassination helped their rise--the Beatles appeared to bind our wounds

with their messages of joy and handholding...And the way was paved, replacing Camelot with Oz."

Now the American people were forced to confront a scary alternative reality, the reality of a shadow government over which they had neither control or knowledge. The shepherding process was thus accelerated with a vengeance. Avant-garde advertising, music, politics and news would hereafter depict (especially in the electronic media)--sometimes fleetingly, sometimes openly--a "shadow side" of reality, an underground, amoral "funhouse" current associated with extreme sex, extreme violence and extreme speed.

The static images of the suit-and-tie talking heads of establishment religion, government, politics and business were subtly shown to be subordinate to the Shadow State, which the American people were gradually getting a bigger glimpse of out of the corner of their collective eye. The interesting function of this phenomenon is that it simultaneously produces both terror and adulation and undercuts any offensive against it among its percipients, which does not possess the same jump-cut speed and funhouse ambiance.

There is a sense of existing in a palace of marvels manipulated by beautiful but Satanic princes possessed of so much knowledge, power and experience as to be vastly superior to the rest of humanity. They have been everywhere. They have done everything. They run the show which mesmerizes us. We are determined to watch it. We are transfixed and desperate to see their newest production, their latest thrilling revelation, even when the thrills are solely based upon the further confirmation of our dehumanization.

J.G. Ballard: "In this overlit realm ruled by images of the space race and the Vietnam War, the Kennedy assassination and the suicide of Marilyn Monroe, a unique alchemy of the imagination was taking place...The demise of feeling and emotion, the death of affect, presided like a morbid sun over the playground of that ominous decade."

The role assigned to us is that of zombies called upon by our shadow masters to perform bit parts and act as stock characters in their spectacular show. This mesmerizing process produces a demoralized, cynical, double-mind.

Rosemary's Babies

On December 8, 1980 the apostle of "Luhv," Beatle John Lennon, had his own highly symbolic appointment with death at the hand of one of the decayed products of the rock and roll 'kulchur' he helped create. He was shot in front of his N.Y. residence, the Dakota building, where the film *Rosemary's Baby* had been made about the nurturing of Satan's children.

One of the Son of Sam killers wrote, "I David Berkowitz, have been chosen since birth, to be one of the executioners for the cult." (*The Ultimate Evil,* p. 55). Another of the Sam cultists, a wealthy Manhattan heir, filled a townhouse with young children which was referred to by initiates as "The Nursery." Some Son of Sam initiates were directly referred to in the cult as "The Children." Graffiti left behind by the cult read, "My children I'm raising to be killers. Wait 'till they grow up."

In Lennon's assassin, Mark David Chapman, we see the same old pattern surfacing: the "lone nut" appearing from nowhere, leaves the murder weapon and a roomful of evidence for the police to show to the public, blanks out and is immediately transported to a government psychiatric facility for a thorazine debriefing and further hypnosis. The "Manchurian candidate" aspect of the assassin was none too subtle.

It would be inaccurate to assume that there is a vast network physically snatching kids for Satan. A tiny segment of youngsters are probably raised from birth for special projects as Richard Falco (a.k.a. David Berkowitz) was. But the operant reference here is to the processing of a generation of youth, perhaps more like Mark David Chapman, whose *minds* are the province of the cryptocracy--by remote media control. Who are these children? They have the same address as you. The televised Videodrome is the real "nursery" for America's Rosemary's babies--your babies.

Hence, on a grand scale Rosemary's babies are transformed from the spectators at the JFK pageant and the Lennon pageant as well, and other videodrome pageants. Because contrary to what the vastly outclassed run-of-the-mill conspiracy researchers believe, the issue is not getting "the facts out into the open." They are already in the open, albeit sometimes subtly, for all to see. The cryptocracy placed them there, wants them to be seen, at least furtively, the way a shadow is

glimpsed, out of the corner of the eye in the Making Manifest of All That Is Hidden.

As in the movie *Apocalypse Now* about the modern reenactment of the killing of the king rite with the victim an American Green Beret colonel who has gone native and become a pagan god-king to superstitious Cambodians. Toward the end of the film the camera casually, almost randomly roams across a pile of books in the hut of Col. Kurtz. The audience can clearly see that one of these books is Sir James Frazer's *The Golden Bough: A Study in Magic and Religion.*

Right out in the open. In the videodrome. That's how Rosemary's babies are created. They are the new great American heroes. Remember the 1981 ABC comedy series, *The Greatest American Hero?* It premiered two weeks before Hickley's shooting of President Ronald Reagan and made the Top 20 Nielsen ratings. In it the "Greatest American Hero" was named Hinkley. Someone was grinning at us that week. Someone was diddling with the mind of America. Edgar Allan Poe writing in *Diddling Considered As One of the Exact Sciences:*

"Your *true* diddler winds up all with a grin. But this nobody sees but himself. He grins when his daily work is done--when his allotted labors are accomplished--at night in his own closet, and altogether for his own private entertainment. He goes home. He locks his door. He divests himself of his clothes. He puts out his candle. He gets into bed. He places his head upon the pillow. All this done, and your diddler grins. This is no hypothesis. It is a matter of course. I reason *a priori,* and a diddle would be no diddle without a grin."

Lunacy

The third objective of alchemy, the bringing of *Prima Materia* to *Prima Terra* was accomplished in the 1969 Apollo moon flights and the returning to earth of the moon rocks. Some of these rocks have been "stolen" for use in occult rituals of no mean significance (what astounding masonic "ashlars" these make).

The "Phoenix" lunar landing module, after its return to the orbiting mother ship piloted by Michael Collins, was jettisoned directly into the sun in fulfillment of one of the most persistent themes of alchemical lore and Rosicrucian poetry: the "sexual

marriage" of the sun and the moon.

Freemasonic astronaut and Apollo Mission Chief Lt. Col. Edwin A. "Buzz" Aldrin carried with him to the moon the two-headed eagle flag of the medieval Satanic society, the Knights Templar (lately on display at the masonic grand lodge in Washington, D.C.)

Aldrin also wore two heavy gold rings to the moon which he refused to explain to reporters and admits having served himself a form of "communion" there, though he is not an ordained priest or minister of any known religion save Freemasonry. Aldrin's boss, the national director of NASA at the time of the Moon Flights was C. Fred Kleinknecht, Secretary General of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry.

The key rocket fuel scientist who laid the crucial technical groundwork for the eventual rocket propulsion used in the Apollo flights was Dr. John Whiteside Parsons of the California Institute of Technology. Dr. Parsons was a descendant of one of the founders of the Satanic "Hell-Fire Club" in Britain. He himself was the leader of the California branch of Aleister Crowley's *Ordo Templi Orientis* (OTO).

In his honor, NASA named a crater on the moon after Parsons. On several of Parsons' OTO ritual sites in Southern California, years later Hillside Strangler Kenneth Bianchi would deposit his victims in ceremonial order.

The OTO also established a temple on Mount Palomar north of San Diego, when it was a forest wilderness, decades before it was chosen to be the masonic "all-seeing eye" on the universe as the California Institute of Technology's astronomical observatory containing the world-famous 200 inch telescope.

James Shelby Downard has maintained that the Palomar telescope's booth-like viewing room was used as a radiation chamber for initiates of the Saturn-Sirius cult who would perform rituals when the light from those celestial bodies flooded the booth as the telescope was pointed at Saturn or Sirius.

Barbara Tedlock, in *Parabola* vol. 4, no. 1, writes of the anxiety of the Zuni Indians regarding the Apollo Moon Flights:

"...the Moon Mother...had been violated by two white men in a space capsule...(who) walked around on her body, left refuse on her, and removed nearly fifty pounds of her sacred flesh...Zunis

feared that these profane acts could spell the end of the Moon Mother's gifts to humankind...she could cause...droughts or floods, and massive human infertility. Many Zunis called the space odyssey "white man's witchcraft" and some old men felt that perhaps this was another omen of the coming death of the world, when all man-made things would rise against us and a hot rain would fall."

But could it be that our government and NASA scientists are as superstitious as a Zuni Indian? Were they compelled by a concept in Gnostic doctrine to perform some kind of ceremonial redressment for the astronauts having left their boot-tracks and techno-junk on the moon?

The old Hermetic doctrine of equilibrium is central to the masonic cryptocracy. Human sacrifices would be required to "compensate." In the electrifying aftermath of the epochal televised moonwalk, the Manson gang sacrificed Rosemary's baby--in this case the child of Sharon Tate whose husband Roman Polanski had been the director of the movie *Rosemary's Baby.*

These killings were performed according to ancient ritual with hoodwinks and "cords of initiation" around the necks of the sacrifices. A line from a John Lennon Beatles' song was painted on the death house, "Helter Skelter" which was located appropriately enough on Cielo (sky in Spanish) Drive.

What we are witnessing in the wake of the public enactment of these alchemical psychodramas whose spiritual consequences for mankind are far more momentous than most have thus far guessed, is a process of global occult initiation.

These are open-air masonic ceremonies which produce awe in the wake of the physical and technical accomplishment of their time-lost objectives .

Showtime in the Videodrome

"Talk not of paradise, nor creation, but mark this show."
-Lucifer, in Marlowe's *Doctor Faustus.*

This writer submits that as part of the ongoing "Revelation of the Method," the cryptocracy recently issued a kind of video Rosicrucian manifesto, revealing precisely what television is doing to us and what the future of the video imperium they are planning for us will be like.

The name of this manifesto is *Videodrome,* directed by the Canadian David Cronenberg whose other works include two films about psychic assassins, *Scanners* which features the Kennedy-sigil exploding head and *The Dead Zone.*

Videodrome pits a TV producer who has started a cable channel devoted exclusively to broadcasting mysterious pirate satellite transmissions of live sex-torture and murder perpetrated by hooded men, against executives from an enigmatic global corporation known as Spectacular Optical. Here are quotes from the film:

"We are entering savage new times."

"The battle for the mind of North America will be fought in the video arena, the videodrome."

"Your reality is already half-hallucination. If you're not careful it will become total hallucination."

"Massive doses of videodrome signal will ultimately create a new outgrowth of the human brain which will produce and control hallucination to the point that it will change human reality."

The cable TV producer is captured by Spectacular Optical and forcibly fitted with a helmet in which the wearer is surrounded by a three-dimensional electronic pictorial and audio display-simulation of the outside world. This "virtual reality" simulation is augmented by computers that will transmit pictures to the helmet-wearer.

In the dialogue of the *Videodrome* film, the helmet-wearer asks his captor, "Will it hurt you?"

To which his captor replies, "It won't hurt you. You might catch yourself sliding in and out of the hallucinatory state after this is all over. If you do, just relax and enjoy it. It will soon go away.

"But for now, I think that you'll find a little sado-masochism will be necessary to trigger off a good healthy series of hallucinations. That's why our Videodrome show is so strange--something to do with the effects of the exposure to violence on the nervous system. It opens up receptors in the brain and spine and that allows the Videodrome signal to sink in."

According to researcher William N. Grimstad: "It is the implantation of this illusory picture of the world into our minds...(a) process of widespread--indeed, virtually universal hallucination emerging from extremely circumscribed and elusive sources...that forms the major activity of the hidden powers."

In an article published in the business section of the *Los Angeles Times* (Nov. 8, 1987), investors were being sought for a new company specializing in sophisticated, computer-simulated educational scenarios, a virtual reality which "will allow students to walk through Athens with Plato...send a student of 17th century history back to the time in France...or ride on a train going the speed of light." The new machine capable of producing these hallucinations has "dazzling sound and graphics capability."

If we consider the hours in a day most Americans spend in front of a TV and add to that the hours children spend immersed in the digital world of video games and add to that their forthcoming immersion in computer-simulated worlds of supposed "history" and "travel" in their schools, and we see the gradual creation of a population of dwellers-in-perpetual-illusion.

Couple this with the increasing very rapid destruction of wild nature and our ability to access it, and modern humanity becomes almost totally cut-off from the voice of God, emerging as enslaved drone-bees: wired, processed, helmeted and programmed; a processing that has been the goal of the secret societies since the inception of Adam Weishaupt's *Beenan Orden* ("Order of Bees").

Outside the murders rage, the invasion tides swell, the blood is polluted, the control is tightening, the asphalt is pouring, the landmarks and the wilderness are vanishing, the heritage is dying and memory itself is dwindling. Inside, in the videodrome, the scantily-clad bodies are shaking, the music beat is pounding, the lights are flashing, the air is conditioned, the food is plentiful, the nest is cozy, the images are riveting.

And these Videodrome funmasters, tastemakers, trend-setters and agents of power and pleasure are not worried or anxious just strutting and flitting, wonderful, glorious, gossamer creatures on the California beaches and the dance floors of

Manhattan.

Wouldn't you, shouldn't you, love to be like them in the interstices of the alchemical nigredo phase of transmutation, in the *Silentium post clamores* (silence after noise) of their operating room and dissection chamber where dead matter becomes the focus of humanity's quest?

The Golem

"And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men. And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast...And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast." -Revelation 13: 13-15.

Arrayed against this Control-system and the occult history behind it, against the backdrop of machine-man, ritualistic assassinations, serialized terror murders and the ubiquity of the Videodrome TV transmission, is the Second Law of Thermodynamics. By this natural law, "order tends to degenerate." Even the New Order of the Ages.

Our would-be psychic engineers and human alchemists are well aware of the nearness of midnight in this, their "low bottom twelve" time-cycle. They teeter on the brink of the synthesis of the darkest dream of the Kabbalists, a marriage frantically sought, between E. coli bacteria from the colon of man, the genome code and the power of computer automata, for the creation of the Golem.

A theological conception of the creation of an animate being by man rather than God is found in the *Babylonian Talmud* (Sanhedrin 65b): "Rabbi Rava created a man and sent him to Rabbi Zera."*

According to Emily Bilski and Dr. Moshe Idel of Hebrew University, Jerusalem: "Found in a major authoritative Jewish text, this passage (from the Talmud) indicates that Judaism accepted the idea of the creation of an artificial man...At issue

* The Talmud or rabbinical commentary of the elders, existed only in oral form in Christ's time. It is referred to as the "tradition of the elders" in Mark 7:3, of which Christ said: "Full well ye reject the commandment of God that ye may keep your own tradition." In other words, the Pharisees placed the commentary of the rabbis (later assembled in manuscript form as the Talmud), above the Bible, "Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition." (Mark 7: 9, 13).

was the claim that Jews could attain a major achievement, that Jewish masters possessed the highest magical powers."

According to the Jewish manuscript *Ner 'Elohim,* attributed by Gershom Scholem to the Kabbalist Abraham Abulafia, "...if Rava created a man...he who did it so at the eve of the day of the Shabbat, did it for a great secret reason..."

The techniques for fabricating the golem are located in a Kabbalistic book, the *Sefer Yezirah.* Bilski and Idel:

"Two of the leading figures of Ashkenazi Hasidim, Rabbi Yehuda he-Hasid and Rabbi Eleazar of Worms, wrote commentaries on the *Sefer Yezirah.*

"The extant text of Rabbi Eleazar presents an elaborate and systematic discussion of a technique to be used in creating a golem...In a...technique that appears at this time, though its origins are probably much earlier, the golem appears with the three Hebrew letters that spell *emet* (truth) inscribed on his forehead...

"..these texts contain recipes for the creation of artificial life...Their writings on creating golems must be understood as part of the larger context of magical recipes for the creation of many entities, ranging from calves to heaven itself. These magical recipes formed part of an elite ideology that probably sought to demonstrate that the Jewish masters possessed the highest form of knowledge...

"An important Jewish source during this period is a discussion by the little known physician and Kabbalist Abraham Yagel, who lived in Northern Italy in the late 16th century. Yagel was interested in the meaning of the creation of the golem. Did it constitute a form of witchcraft? Of magic? Yagel concluded that it was a 'natural magic,' i.e., a form of technology, and did not involve demonic powers. Thus he claimed that the Kabbalah is the highest possible science." (Emily D. Bilski and Dr. Moshe Idel, "The Golem: An Historical Overview," in *Golem!,* pp. 10-14).

Elsewhere Dr. Idel writes: "For them (medieval Jewish rabbis), magical creation and experience were conceived of as a witness to their spiritual perfection..."

The rabbis believed that their creation was greater than God's: "...the magically created man has the highest spiritual capacity, which is not to be found, automatically, even in a

normally created man...The artificially created man has within himself the entire range of creation...This understanding is consonant with the view found in Rabbi Nathan's traditions collected by Rabbi Isaac of Acre..."

Prior to the Renaissance, this Hasidic-Kabbalistic concept of man as god was strongly proscribed throughout Christian Europe as totally demonic.

Dr. Idel states that, "Of critical importance for the wider dissemination of ideas on the golem, was Johannes Reuchlin's *De Arte Cabalistica,* published in 1517."

Historian Frances Yates informs us that Reuchlin's work sanctified the Kabbalah by claiming that it was completely compatible with Christianity.

De Arte Cabalistica became the "Bible of the Christian Kabbalists...Reuchlin was hailed as a hero of the New Learning...Christian Kabbalah was a most necessary element at the heart of the New Learning." (Yates, *The Occult Philosophy in the Elizabethan Age,* pp. 25-26).

The core of the Renaissance "New Learning" was the doctrine of man as equal to or even superior to God. The strongest opponent of Reuchlin's introduction of Kabbalah into Christianity was a converted Christian Jew named Johann Pfefferkorn.

Pfefferkorn knew all too well what sort of diabolical gnosis the Kabbalah contained and represented. Pfefferkorn was subsequently attacked by a mysterious group known as the "Obscure Men."

A major figure in the doctrine of man playing God was Rabbi Judah Loew of Prague, an associate of John Dee, the founder of Freemasonry. (Dee met with the rabbi in Prague in the 1580s).

Rabbi Loew was also an adviser to the Rosicrucian occultist Rudolph II, Emperor of Bohemia, whose protection he enjoyed.

Dr. Idel: "In 1592 Rabbi Loew had an audience with Emperor Rudolph. The details of this meeting remain shrouded in mystery."

But what we do know is that the influential, "wonder-working" Kabbalistic Rabbi Loew became remembered as the most famous creator of an alleged golem. Dr. Moshe Idel: "Under the joint influence of the ecstatic Kabbalah and Ashkenazi

Hasidic sources,[*] the interest in the creation of a golem is

[*] The founder of Hasidic Judaism was a 17th century rabbi and golem advocate known as the Baal Shem Tov. In Judges 2:16 it is written, "They forsook the Lord and served Baal." There are many warnings about Baal priests in Scripture. The great-grandson of Baal Shem Tov was Rabbi Nachman of Bratslav who was known to be profoundly concerned with dead matter and graveyards. His followers today are known as the "Dead Hasidim," because they are obsessed with Rabbi Nachman's corpse and believe he can communicate with them from the grave. ("Rosh ha-Shanah Journey to Hasidic Master's Tomb," NY Times, Sept. 27, 1989, p. B-2). Nachman's teachings consist in the belief that God is present in everything including evil, and therefore even the man steeped in evil finds God.

In Israel, on *Lag ba 'Omer,* children are taken to the grave of Kabbalistic Rabbi Shimon Bar Yochai for "sanctification" as *tzadikim.* The main Jewish theological work on the dead, the Kabbalistic *Gesher HaChaim,* spans three volumes. It teaches that "unearthly creatures" are present around a corpse.

Hasidic Rabbi Menachem Schneerson of New York, "though a virtual hermit," leaves his headquarters for twice-weekly pilgrimages to the grave of the last Grand Rabbi of the Lubavitch. At the cemetery, according to published reports, Rabbi Schneerson "has conversations" with the dead rabbi. (L. A. Times, April 30, 1990). In August of 1991, the motorcade returning Schneerson from the cemetery struck and killed a Black child, touching off three days of race-riots. According to the L.A. Times, Schneerson "is also a proponent of a brand of mysticism that involves such things as curses..." The NY Times reports that his followers are even afraid to look him in the face. "Few do. His burning, electric blue eyes forbid it." (NY Times Magazine, March 15, 1992).

In 1988, Pres. Reagan proclaimed the birthday of Hasidic Rabbi Schneerson, March 26, as "Education Day USA." Legislation in connection with "Education Day USA," (Public Law 102-14) calls for implementation of the "Seven Noahide Laws" of "the Lubavitch movement." The *Encyclopedia Judaica* states that under the Noachide laws, non-Jews "are subject to greater legal restrictions than Jews because non-Jewish society is held to be more prone in these sins." Americans who obey the Noahide laws of the Baal Shem Tov rabbis will have the status of "resident stranger" or "semi-convert" in Judaism. Those who don't obey them are subject to the death penalty (Uri Huppert, *Back to the Ghetto,* p. 38).

One further note on the word Baal in the realm of symbolism, this time in high finance. A Wall Street rating agency, Moodys Investors Service, assigns the rating "Baal-1" to credit risks in banking and government. New York state recently received the rating on its bonds ("Message to Albany: Baal-Humbug," NY Times, Jan. 8, 1992, p. B-4).

visible among Jewish and some Christian authors of the Renaissance period. The beginning of modern science (is) attributed to the renewed interest in magic by certain 15th and 16th century Renaissance figures...Indubitably, the Renaissance period is the first significant point of influence of the Jewish views of the golem on European culture...

"A Polish Kabbalist writing circa1630: 'And I have heard, in a certain and explicit way, from several respectable persons that one man, living close to our time, in the holy community of Chelm, whose name is Rabbi Elijah, the master of the Name, who made a creature out of matter [*golem*] and form [*zurah*] and it was performing hard work for him for a long period..."

"As the Kabbalist narrates the legend here, it is a continuation of the *Sanhedrin* passage and the Ashkenazi Hasidic recipe of creating an artificial man...it seems that the usage of the term *hiyyut*, vitality, together with the emphasis on the creature as dead, seems to reflect the influence of the view of Rabbi Moses Cordovero, a sixteenth century Kabbalist in Safed, on the nature of the creature as totally inhuman...

"According to three statements, written in the thirteenth century, the creation of the artificial man follows the same pattern as that of the calf, or a cow...In some Ashkenazi manuscripts certain combinations of letters of the Divine Name and the letters of the alphabet vocalized according to the pattern of the *Notariqon* (which is the quintessence of the second stage of creation) are considered appropriate for the creation of the calf...

"Furthermore, a statement of Rabbi Abraham Esquira, at the end of the thirteenth century, indicates that in France there was someone who was acquainted with this and was engraving the form of a cow on a wall, and it changed into a cow and they ritually slaughtered it and ate it like Rabbi Hananya and Rabbi Oshayah.

"...these devices were still in possession of the...masters, who did not hesitate to exploit the possibilities inherent in this magical gnosis." (Dr. Moses Idel, "The Golem in Jewish Magic and Mysticism," in *Golem!*, pp. 15-35).

In 1988, Fundamentalist "Christians" joined with Kabbalistic rabbis in the search for the remains of a magical cow, the so-called Ashes of the Red Heifer:

"Words fail to describe the intensity of the emotions of Vendyl Jones and his select crew as they have followed the step-by-step instructions written 2,000 years ago in the Copper Scroll of the Dead Sea Scrolls. At every juncture in the (archaeological) dig at the Wadi-HaKippa Cave of the Column, located south of Jericho and just north of Qumran, they have found every little detail described in that 'map' of the location of the Kalal containing the ashes of the red heifer.

"The great importance of this search is in the fact that *only* when the actual Kalal is found, in which is contained the ashes of the last red heifer offered in sacrifice in Jerusalem in A.D. 70, will the restored priesthood in Israel be able to be sanctified by a sprinkling of these ashes...That has to be accomplished for the priests to have proper functions and sacrifices when Israel has its new Temple...in...Jerusalem.

"When this sacred *Kalal* is actually in hand, the Orthodox Jews will *demand* the Temple site where the Dome of the Moslem shrine now stands.

"...Vendyl Jones' last report stipulated that his team will return to the cave...to finish the expedition and secure the sacred Kalal. He works closely with the Hebrew University in Israel. If Vendyl is 'caught up' to Glory (raptured) with us in September, it will be the Jews themselves who will retrieve their sacred 'ashes of the red heifer" and be ready for their Temple."- Dr. Charles R. Taylor, *Bible Prophecy News,* June, 1988, (vol. 17, no. 2), pp. 10-11.

The late Isaac Bashevis Singer was a Jewish scholar and winner of the Nobel Prize for Literature. He writes: "...the golem...is based on faith...that dead matter is not really dead but can be brought to life...What are the computers and robots of our time if not golems?...The Talmud tells us of an interpreter by the name of Rava who formed a man by this mysterious power...

"We are living in an epoch of golem-making right now. The gap between science and magic...is becoming narrower...Rabbi Loew, the creator of the golem, was a Kabbalist and in his own way a scientist. He was a man of great understanding and of great mysteries. It is remarkable that he had written a book which analyzed many Talmudic sayings from a scientific perspective...

"I was interested in the golem...from my early childhood. I was brought up in the home of a rabbi, and his sermons often spoke of miracles, by the Baal Shem Tov and other wonder rabbis...I realized early in my life that science and technology had actually created a civilization of miracles. Science is one long chain of miracles..."

Researcher James Shelby Downard believes that a Kabbalistic substance was inside the giant steel bottle weighing nearly half a million pounds which the U.S. government placed near "ground zero," on July 16, 1945, immediately preceding the first atomic bomb explosion (creation and destruction of primordial matter), at the "Trinity Site" in New Mexico.

The U.S. Government has never offered any cogent explanation for exactly what purpose the Golem-proportioned (25 ft. long, 12 ft. in diameter) capsule, custom-fabricated at an eastern steel mill and trucked in at great expense by a 64 wheel trailer, served at the Trinity Site.

Re-Building the Temple of Herod

These ritual workings coincide with the procedures necessary for the accomplishment of the crowning objective of the masonic script, the Re-Building of the Temple of Herod, where now stands one of Islam's most revered shrines, the Dome of the Rock. The Freemasons feature reverent depictions of the Temple in their most sacred iconography.

The Temple is the alchemical project in microcosm, the yin and yang of Egypt's Hermetic Shepherd of Hermas in whose memory palace the Black and White kings have played fatal chess for centuries, from the Lincoln-Douglas debates in the "Little Egypt" section of Illinois upon which the fate of three wars and countless lives depended, to the ritual assassination of the "Black King," Michael/Nitram Luther King, Jr. in "Memphis" (Mizraim). This is the tail of the train of the dress of the *Lusus serius* ("serious game"), comic fiction (*"ludibrium"*) and "Chemical Wedding" of both wings of the Official Church--shadow and light.

Some play by the rules of boy scouts and shopping mall habitues. Others play by rules that make them pillars of the Temple of Herod. On one side of the Temple we see the support pillar marked Boaz, representing the mystical, New Age

"gnosis" which is contained in the Kabbalah.

At the other extreme side of the Temple is the support pillar marked Joachim, representing the strict rules for the administrators and bureaucrats of Central Government which are contained in the Babylonian Talmud.

It has been the mystical Kabbalah, with its alleged knowledge of the mechanisms related to the material world which, ironically, has provided guidance to the hyper-rational bureaucracies administering communist government in Russia and Federal government in the U.S.

Both the New Age irrationalism of the Kabbalah and the hyper-rational legalism of the Talmud, though seemingly antagonistic, work hand-in-glove to support the imperium represented by the Temple of Herod the Great. The formula of that Temple rule is an exoteric structure of bureaucrats and administrators, esoterically informed by knowledge of secret Satanic symbols, toponomy, words and numbers.

The Everyday Miracle Divine

In the medieval era the Kabbalah had almost no influence in the West. The break came in the Renaissance when alchemist Pico della Miranada, philosopher Johannes Reuchlin and John Dee, among others, announced the "benevolence"of the Kabbalah as Christian, "angelic White magic." Frances Yates: "It was in 1486 that Pico went to Rome with his 900 theses, among which were the Kabbalist theses."

Pico's supposed "Christian" Kabbalah contributed to the overthrow of the old order's natural vision. Pico's *Oration on the Dignity of Man* became famous as the proclamation of the Renaissance view of man and his position in the world, of the Renaissance magus as a "lofty figure endowed with powers of operating on the world," of perfecting an as yet "imperfect" universe.

Of course, these were not the original ideas of the alchemist Pico della Miranada. These were ancient Kabbalistic concepts. Pico had been initiated into these concepts by a mysterious Kabbalist who was known under the alias, Flavius Mithridates. Frances Yates, writing in *The Occult Philosophy of the Elizabethan Age* states:

"What can have been Flavius' motive in thus encouraging and

directing Pico toward his momentous adoption of Kabbalah into Christianity...remains a problem, and one which awaits further investigation..."

The answer to this momentous enigma is everywhere around us. The natural order, the extravagant beauty, the very divinity of creation-untampered, could only remain, in the cycle of time, for so long in its pristine state. Sooner or later the fake concept of man apart from nature and equal to God, would arise.

Man's scientific knowledge and brain power, as expressed by the founder of modern Freemasonry, Elizabethan court-astrologer John Dee in his *Monas Hieroglyphica,* would achieve undreamed of control, manufacture marvels of scientific "magic" and other byproducts of the "splendor" of the masonic hell-on-earth we see all around us in the cities of the modern world.

For the realization of the Kabbalistic conceit of the Hermetic Academy, nature has been transformed into an industrial-technical, polluted, raped hell. This is the ultimate swindle of the insanely arrogant secret society praxis which falsifies human perception and calls it "higher consciousness." The Freemasons--the "Big Builders"--have worked feverishly to construct the trash-grid that hides the soaring splendor of the everyday miracle that is God's handiwork of sun, sea, stars and forest and then they offer to sell us the glasses that will penetrate the trash.

We inherited a natural creation of great beauty and spiritual succor and "men saw it not." An ersatz vision has been implanted in our minds--the proper hypnotic belief--and people have believed properly.

There have been a few who did not believe "properly." One such was Christopher Marlowe, the Elizabethan playwright who with great courage defied the Queen and her gaggle of masonic conmen and thugs in the course of exquisite plays which are almost never performed today.

Marlowe's drama *Doctor Faustus* exposed the occultists and their manipulation of nature, as well as the treachery of government and rulers involved in the secret societies which protect and finance the Process. The play deeply offended the Hermetic Academy and, with its obvious reference to Freemason founder and royal astrologer John Dee as a degraded conjuror,

undermined the Renaissance philosophy and the position of Dee's imperial protector, the fearsome Queen Elizabeth I.

Doctor Faustus concludes with a warning to man to stay within the limits of nature: "Whose deepness doth entice such forward wits, To practice more than heavenly power permits." Yates says that, "We are in fact witnessing in this play the reaction against the Renaissance...a dismissal of the traditions of Renaissance magic and science."

Another play warned against the demonic tampering of John Dee, Ben Jonson's *The Alchemist.* Jonson and Marlowe wrote entire dramas exposing the occult because it was so widespread: "The occult philosophy in the Elizabethan age was no minor concern of a few adepts. It was the main philosophy of the age, stemming from John Dee and his movement." (Yates).

In Marlowe's *Tamburlaine*, the shepherd (of Hermas) is born under Saturn, the "star of empire" and becomes a conqueror progressing toward world rule. There are pageants in his honor with occult themes and his glory is as occluding as his sun-bright armor and as spectacular as his cosmic influence, which causes even meteors in the sky to tilt in honor of his battle victories. Tamburlaine is a Saturnian and very much a prince of the cryptocracy, obsessed with putting the usual yardstick on nature, seeking endlessly after the building and modeling activities of the masonic "Great Architect":

"Our soules, whose faculties can comprehend The wondrous Architecture of the world: And measure every wandring plannets course: Still climing after knowledge infinite, And alwaies moving as the restless Spheres..."

Frances Yates: "Tamburlaine's rule, though it is adorned with all the glorious trappings of imperial pageantry, is not just. He is a cruel tyrant...Marlowe would appear to be undermining imperial themes through his presentation of the tyrant Tamburlaine. This play, published at about the time of John Dee's return to England, clearly does not belong at all to the world of Dee's build-up of 'British empire.'

"On the contrary, the effect of Tamburlaine would be to devalue the imperial idea, and to dismiss any suggestion of connection of imperial triumphing with the establishment of justice and virtue. Raleigh's and Spenser's poetic cult of Elizabeth as representative of the religious and reforming

aspect of empire is in sharp contrast to Marlowe's...emphasis on imperial cruelty and tyranny. Since there is so much in the pageantry of the play which an Elizabethan audience would recognize as reflecting pageantry in honor of the queen, this contrast may have been intended to be dangerously subversive."

From the evidence, Marlowe's murder was the work of Queen Elizabeth and the cryptocracy which backed her (he was stabbed through the eye at age 29, a symbol of having seen and shown too much).

In typical masonic fashion, Marlowe's death was presented to the English people as having come from "pious people" who had been offended by Marlowe's supposed atheistic free-thinking and "blaspheming." Yet the evidence from his plays is clear, Marlowe was a traditionalist urging reverence for Divine Creation and eternal vigilance against those who mistake for the divine quest, the futile imperium of puny man playing God.

The greatest miracle of all is God's creation. Everything else is illusion peddled by hucksters in striped pants from under a circus tent. Occult adepts are adept at nothing but fraud, dressed up with dazzling showmanship; skilled grease monkeys in the garage of the mechanical universe, but simians all the same. When the showmanship carries the day, the grease monkeys are presented as masters, maguses and wizards and get craters on the moon named after them.

There is no escaping fallen human nature. Those who claim to have the key, have oiled the skids to Plutonia, not Paradise, to the 'hunimal' and the 'golem,' not humanity, much less the "higher man." To know our limits is not a limitation. It only signifies that rather than perpetually trying to surpass our Creator, we cultivate our sensitivity to the incomparably beautiful vision He has bequeathed us as our birthright, and drink everyday with joyous appreciation at the fountain of miraculous glory that is His natural creation.

Edward Abbey expressed the view of traditional people throughout history who have felt deeply moved and humbled and grateful to be alive amid the awesome splendor, the sheer miracle a moment that constitutes Creation Divine. And Abbey articulates his contempt for those with the endless urge to supersede it with a Faustian rocket of one kind or another:

"How strange and wonderful is our home, our earth, with its swirling vaporous atmosphere, its flowing and frozen climbing creatures, the croaking things with wings that hang on rocks and soar through fog, the furry grass, the scaly seas...how utterly rich and wild...Yet some among us have the nerve, the insolence, the brass, the gall to whine about the limitations of our earthbound fate and yearn for some more perfect world...We are none of us good enough for the world we have."

Appendix

Statement of John Quincey Adams, sixth president of the United States, on the Assassination of William Morgan by Freemasons.

Freemasonry, corporate Freemasonry, is chargeable with the stealing of a free citizen, and the murder of a father and husband. The proof of this subject is perfectly conclusive and is to be found in the reports of the trials of the kidnappers of William Morgan, and in the official accounts given by different Special Attorneys.

It is responsible for having baffled inquiry, for having defeated investigation by the removal of witnesses and for having produced the acquittal of persons notoriously guilty.

It has been decided by Judge Marcy in New York and by two sets of triers at circuit court held by Judge Gardiner in the same state, and by a court in Rhode Island, that the obligations of Freemasons disqualified a man from being an impartial juror in a case where a brother mason was a party; and such undoubtedly is the law of the land.

The Grand Lodge of New York has given one hundred dollars in charity to one of the most guilty kidnappers of Morgan. The Grand Chapter of the same state has given one thousand dollars to aid and sustain other well-known kidnappers and to enable them to escape from justice, at a time when they had no money to bestow in charity to widows and orphans. This has recently been established in the trial of a libel suit brought by Jacob Gould, which was tried at Albany, New York.

But perhaps the most remarkable evidence of the binding force of masonic obligations and of the real power of the fraternity, is afforded in the conduct of those who control the newspapers of the country.

When the English forger Stephenson was kidnapped in a distant state and brought forcibly to New York, the whole country rang with the alarm which was sounded by the newspapers and every patriot was called on to resent this invasion of personal liberty.

But when a free citizen of America was dragged from his

family, forcibly carried through the country and drowned in the deep waters of the Niagara, a death-like silence pervaded the newspapers; or if they spoke, it was to notice the outrage in terms of irony and as a trifling and unimportant affair.

The papers of every party teemed with the most gross misrepresentations; a simultaneous attack was made on all who were engaged in discovering the offenders; fabricated accounts of Morgan having been seen at different and distant places were incessantly circulated and every effort was made to delude the public and mislead inquiry.

How tremendously powerful must have been that organization, which could produce that shameful treachery of the press to its public duties!

These facts are as notorious as the sun at noon-day and a stronger proof of their general truth cannot be adduced, than the single circumstance that to this day, thousands and millions of reading citizens of this country are ignorant of Morgan's abduction and murder and are totally uninformed of the abominations of Freemasonry.

(*Adams Letters Addressed to W.L. Stone*, pp. 23-24, in the Rare Book Archive, University of Rochester).

Michael A. Hoffman II is a former reporter for the Associated Press, WEOS and WGVA. He is the author of three other books, including a history of colonial America which is now in its fourth printing.

Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare

By Michael A. Hoffman II

Ranging from serial murders, the Kennedy assassination, the Rebuilding of the Temple of Herod, the Moon Flights, the Videodrome, and dozens of other occult phenomenon, the author builds a compelling case for his thesis that underlying much of what is presented to us as history, commerce, science and politics is the secret symbolism and mind control of the masonic cryptocracy.

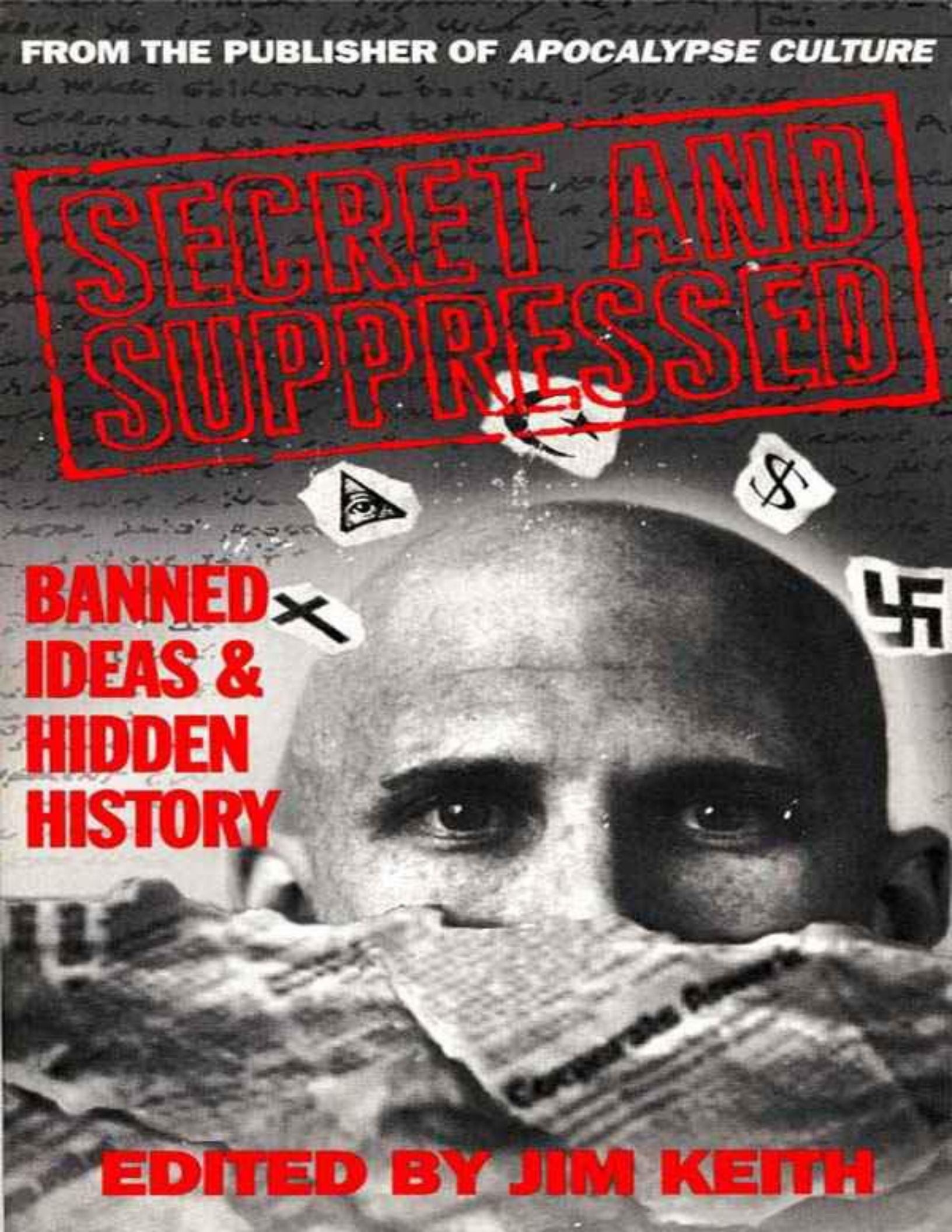
Illustrated with dozens of rare photos and drawings, *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare* argues that a form of subliminal psychological warfare is being waged with symbols, numbers, televised ceremonies and ritual toponomy, all intended for the transformation of human beings into beasts, commensurate with the rise of a wonder-working Beast system of modern technology, which comes very close to the operant definition of magic used by the ancient arcane societies.

Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare offers a penetrating analysis of the occult system of control which seeks to enslave us, providing insights which can significantly assist anyone concerned about defending themselves and their family against the fraud and decay that are all around us in the modern world.

FROM THE PUBLISHER OF *APOCALYPSE CULTURE*

SECRET AND SUPPRESSED

BANNED IDEAS & HIDDEN HISTORY



EDITED BY JIM KEITH

SECRET AND SUPPRESSED

Banned Ideas & Hidden History

Edited by Jim Keith

Feral House

Feral House

Secret and Suppressed: Banned Ideas and Hidden History © 1993, 2011 by Feral House. All authors retain copyright to their own material.

All Rights Reserved.

Feral House

1240 W. Sims Way
Suite 124
Port Townsend WA 98368

feralhouse.com

With appreciation to Adam Parfrey.

I would like to thank the following persons for their contributions to the research: Vicky Bolin, X. Sharks DeSpot, Hawthorne Abendsen, Michael A. Hoffman II, Jerry Smith, Larry Nunn, Wayne Henderson, James Shelby Downard, Greg Krupey, Tim O'Neill, Ron Bonds, Tim Cridland, Kenn Thomas, Howard Martenson, Ace Hayes, Len Bracken, John Aes-Nihil and "The Franciscan."

The editor is always interested in contacting people who have interesting information. I can be contacted care of IllumiNet Press, PO Box 2808, Lilburn, GA, 30226.

— Jim Keith

CONTENTS

PREFACE

MENTICIDE

My Father Is A Clone
Gary Stollman

An Open Letter to the Swedish Prime Minster From a Survivor of Electromagnetic Terror
Robert Naeslund

Remote Mind Control Technology
Anna Keeler

Is Paranoia A Form of Awareness?
Kerry W. Thornley

CULTS & CASUALTIES

Sorcery, Sex, Assassination and the Science of Symbolism
James Shelby Downard

Subliminal Images in Oliver Stone's *JFK*
Dean Grace

Terminator III

The Masonic Ripper

Jim Keith

The Erotic Freemasonry of Count Nicholas von Zinzendorf
Tim O'Neill

Rumors, Myths and Urban Legends Surrounding the Death of Jim Morrison
Thomas Lyttle

The Last Testament of Rev. Jim Jones

The Black Hole of Guyana
John Judge

Behold, A Pale Horse
A Draft of Danny Casolaro's Octopus Manuscript Proposal
Kenn Thomas

Why Waco?
Ken Fawcett

THE DISINFORMATIONAL PLAGUE

An Invitation to War
Ambassador April Glaspie & Saddam Hussein

Inside the Irish Republican Army
Scott Smith

Recipes for Nonsurvival: *The Anarchist Cookbook*
Esperanze Godot

THE ELITE CONTROLLERS

Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars

Secrets From the Vatican Library

AIDS: Act of God or the Pentagon?
G.J. Krupey

“Clinton is the best guy for us”

Exposing the Nazi International

CONTACT INFORMATION

PREFACE

Careful examination of the facts will reveal something curious to the unbiased: America's electronic and print media are simultaneously "free" and heavily controlled.

The existence of books like this one proves that there is freedom of the press within the clipped-wing aviary of the "underground," where the ravings of radicals accomplish little more than provide comic relief. In the big buck, million-copy world of the mainstream, commentators on both Left and Right have discerned and decried the hand of censorship and manipulation for years while wittingly or otherwise playing a part in the mass deception. Conservatives like Limbaugh and Quayle prattle about the liberal slant of the news, while liberals like Chomsky and Vidal reveal the subtleties of an ongoing manipulation and redesign of our society by a cabal of the ruling elite who own the media, and their henchperson spin-doctors who tinker with the mind of the body politic.

How can the media be both free and controlled at the same time? And why?

FREEDOM IS SLAVERY. Every civilization has had slavery as an essential element of its economy —including our own. Have you attained the "American Dream" by making payments on your own home? But who owns your home, really? If you're still making payments, who owns your car? Washer/dryer? Refrigerator/freezer? Big screen TV? Just stop making payments and see what happens. Let's say you've paid off your car, paid off your home. What happens if you don't pay property taxes on time, or pay car insurance? What if you suddenly take ill? Ever hear of indentured servitude? Before the Civil War, free men who needed money could sell themselves into slavery for a period of time, usually seven years. Most Americans are way over their heads in debt. Daily they sell themselves into slavery — in forty hour weeks, eight hour shifts, if they can find them.

What has all this got to do with the media? The people who direct and control the world's financial resources are, to a very large extent, the same people who control and direct the world's media. Networks, cable stations, studios, theatre chains, publishing consortiums, newspapers, are owned by a handful of people, and those people either own the banks or are owned by the banks.

THE HORRIBLE TRUTH. Electronic and print media are a pacification program run by the Happyface Fun Enforcers. There is an ideal mental/emotional state for rabid consumerism, and that is the state of glad that the media promotes. The shock cuts and nervous camera succor a short attention span; so short, in fact, that your brain becomes a sieve, short-circuiting memory and logic. You are on IV TV, awaiting the next in-flow of shock or pacifying hypnotic to keep you hooked into the consumerist foodchain.

> Small robbers are put in prison;
> A great robber becomes a feudal lord;
> And in the gate of the feudal lord your righteous scholars will be found.
> — Man Kau-Teh

IGNORANCE IS STRENGTH. By now, most of America has heard the phrase "Politically Correct," a term that George Orwell would have relished. I means to speak, think and act within the mandates of a supposed worldview of compassion and tolerance. It also means that there are certain thoughts — a lot of them, actually — that you must not think.

I had a personal encounter with the unthinkable recently. It was at a recent convention for writers, publishers, and fans of "marginal" forms of literature, including science fiction, horror, comics, conspiracy politics, and other genres catering to the not-quite-right in the head. There, I chaired a panel discussion on the topic of "Censorship," prefacing the free-for-all with a thumbnail listing of a few things that you can't discuss in this society without facing the wrath of the self-appointed righteous. I was careful to state that by mentioning these dreadful subjects that I was not endorsing them, and **I am still not endorsing them,** but pointed out these were topics

that one could not safely consider, regardless of the alleged protections of our much-touted First Amendment.

1. Racial correlation to IQ.

2. Homosexuality as pathology.

3. Holocaust revisionism (i.e., did 6 million die?).

4. AIDS as military bio-warfare.

5. Application of the same rules and procedures to AIDS victims as to victims of other communicable diseases.

While these subjects all seemed prosaic to a jaded figurine such as myself, they were not, as I had anticipated, old news to everyone. Still, I hardly expected such a stimulus-response convulsion from so-called freethinkers and iconoclasts. As soon as I had totted off on my fingers the prime candidates for "things you can't think, much less talk about around here," a fellow panelist, a capable writer whom I had personally invited to participate in the discussion, threatened to walk if I didn't immediately shut my face!

And so, in this spirited panel discussion about "Censorship" — in which, over the course of the next hour, it was agreed that aforesaid practice was a Very Bad Thing indeed, engaged in only by the worst examples of a Puritanistic society like unto that of Saddam Hussein's — there were subjects, certain subjects that we dared not touch upon.

THE CHILD IS FATHER TO THE MANNEQUIN. Wrote H.L. Mencken in 1919:

> It is precisely here … that the culture of the individual has been reduced to the most rigid and absurd regimentation. It is precisely here, of all civilized countries, that eccentricity in demeanor and opinion has come to bear the heaviest penalties. The whole drift of our law is toward the absolute prohibition of all ideas that diverge in the slightest from the accepted platitudes, and behind that drift of law there is a far

> more potent force of growing custom, and under that custom there is a national philosophy which erects conformity into the noblest of virtues and the free functioning of personality into a capital crime against society.

It is almost impossible to join the mainstream media without getting a BA in Journalism. One might think that this is done to ensure that the “cub reporter” has learned the basic technical skills needed for the job. It’s not. It is to ensure that the new kids have been indoctrinated into the correct mindset. That they think right.

Objective reporting seems to be passé. Now the kids are given a lot of ideas about “social responsibility” and other buzzwords that sound awfully close to thought control in a do-good disguise. The indications are that the current crop of reporters are being taught not to tell us what happened, but how to think and feel about it, and how to put the event in a context of right and wrong. Inclinations, feelings, not facts. The distortion of reality if it doesn’t fit the program. White lies. Gentle lies, and in some guises with “hated” personalities, vicious lies.

Secret and Suppressed is meant as a hopeful alternative to so much silence and so many lies. It is an anthology of documents and ideas hidden from view by people and institutions who know what’s best for you. By virtue of being important enough to hide, this information has proven itself important enough to print. Culled from a wide variety of sources (including telephone poles), the articles in this collection span an enormous range of ideologies.

On occasion I have included a particular piece in this volume not for its absolute validity, which is often nigh-impossible to determine, but for its quotient of unacceptability in the reality tunnels of the mainstream. We refuse to patronize you by playing Time/Life and deciding what is real and what is bogus. That is for you to decide. Please do not confuse the map with the territory, nor the editor or publisher with the contents of the book.

To go beyond the brainwash requires only a modicum of curiosity and self-motivation. Picking up this book is perhaps not a bad start. It seems fair to warn you, however, that even a tentative scratching at the gargoyle-

façade that passes for reality will likely unleash a clutch of demons from the far side of Truth.

This book, you might say, is an attempt to create doors for a few of those gibbering entities … where once there were walls.

— Jim Keith

MENTICIDE

My Father Is A Clone

Gary Stollman

On August 19, 1987 a gun-carrying Gary Stollman entered the studio of Los Angeles's KNBC television, crashing consumer reporter David Horowitz's live newscast. Stollman handed Horowitz a written statement and ordered him to read it while holding a gun on him. Unbeknownst to Stollman, KNBC immediately switched to a commercial, not permitting the statement to be transmitted. When Horowitz finished reading the statement, Stollman surrendered his gun, which turned out to be a toy pistol. Stollman, the son of a pharmacist who appeared on KNBC newscasts as an expert on drugs, was sent to Los Angeles County Jail. This is the text of his message:

The man who has appeared on KNBC for the last 3 years is not my biological father. He is a clone, a double created by the Central Intelligence Agency and alien forces. It is only a small part of a greater plot to overthrow the United States government, and possibly the human race itself. The CIA has replaced and tried to destroy my family, and those of my friends.

Although I have known about this since 1981, I have not taken any action about it for fear of the lives of my family. I have been forced into CIA-run mental hospitals, such as Cedars-Sinai Thalians, where I am shown being interviewed by many different doctors, although I spoke to nobody there for two weeks. At UCLA-NPI, I attempted to have myself released by a court several times, but was asked by a Dr. Martin Zsuba to keep removing my requests for a writ-hearing. I have been unable to obtain records from several other hospitals, including Ben Taub Hospital in Cincinnati, where all the phones were turned off for 48 hours after I arrived.

I do not know where my real family or others are being held, but I believe it is somewhere in California. The records for Ben Taub Hospital, I have been informed, no longer exist, or have been misplaced.

I heard an interview a few weeks ago, on radio station KPFK, in which a former CIA official told a college audience in San Diego how the CIA has towed barges filled with diseases across New York Harbor, placed lightbulbs in the subways to create vertigo, and cameras to observe the reactions, and may have created the AIDS virus to wipe out the gay population.

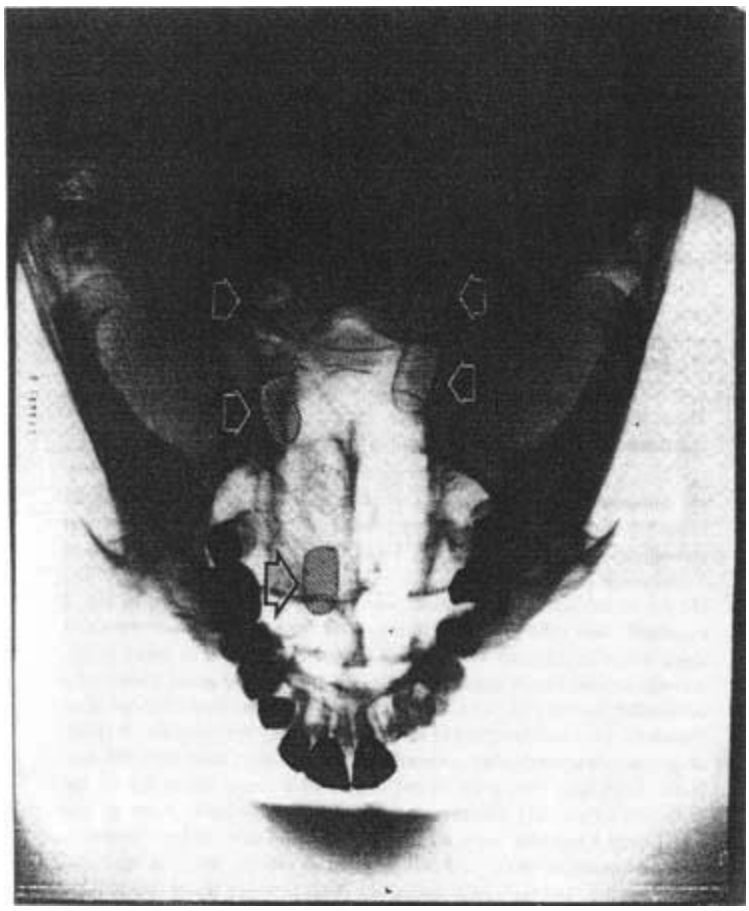
He also spoke of secret teams that were created after World War II. I say that the CIA assassinated John F. Kennedy and the 22 material witnesses that day, who all died within 2 years of each other, a mathematical impossibility. What they are capable of, I know only too well. I demand the public release of all secret Air Force files concerning UFOs, which were kept secret even from Senator Barry Goldwater. On my way back from Expo 86 last year, I heard a broadcast in Oregon that he once asked to see the files and was told, “Hell, no!” I demand the release of information concerning the objects contained in Hangar 18 at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, now obscurely referred to as the Environmental Control Building, the most highly guarded building in the world. Why has the knowledge of such advanced beings and equipment been kept so secret that even the United States Congress does not know?

I would have been satisfied to let my situation stand if it were only I and my family who were at stake here. However, I spoke to a girl at Florida Junior College two summers ago, who related the story to me of how seven of her friends had also been replaced. She said that she had written absence excuses for them when they weren’t sick, then they disappeared for a week, only to come back with different personalities. Unless we act swiftly, there may not be very much hope for any of us. These people, or whatever they are, are taking over the phone services right now. The CIA is either doing this themselves, or are helping them.

I was warned in 1981 by someone with connections to the CIA to stay off computers, that they didn’t trust people on computers. Then I began receiving disturbing calls from my parents, which led me to believe that

something terrible was going on. I was forced into a mental hospital in Tallahassee, where I learned that my brother in law had been driven insane in the same manner that someone was trying to do to me. I eventually was released, but then my mom came down to visit me and I knew it was an imposter. I know that the secret service is involved in this as well, so who knows just how far this has gone in five years. I know of a counselor named Pat, who worked at the Optimist Boys School near Pasadena, who was involved in recruiting members for some secret group of people. Apparently they adopted orphans and gave them fake IDs and birth certificates. Since we already know of a secret group led by the President's own staff, someone had better find out what is going on and fast. I only know that there are beings around us now with the power to teleport instantaneously and do the same to others, who can read and control minds, and transform matter into other forms or create it at will.

I ask for a Congressional Investigation and Federal protection for my family, and those involved. There is no way I can harm anyone with an empty BB gun.



This X-ray shows five transmitters implanted in Robert Naeslund's brain.

An Open Letter to the Swedish Prime Minister Regarding Electromagnetic Terror

Robert Naeslund

November 19, 1992

Prime Minister Carl Bildt
Stockholm, Sweden

Ever since an operation at Söder Hospital in Stockholm at the end of the 1960s, I have been used in a medical experiment which has meant a lot of suffering and has been very painful. The operation was performed by Dr. Curt Strand, who inserted a foreign object, a so-called brain transmitter, into my head through the right nasal passage. For many years I have tried to get help from Swedish physicians and even from the National Board of Health and Welfare *(Socialstyrelsen).* However, I was confronted by doctors who became my enemies and I was, among other things, declared mentally ill and placed in a mental hospital. In 1983 I came in contact with Prof. P.A. Lindstrom at the University of California, San Diego, in the United States, who examined my x-rays. Many Swedish doctors had given written opinions about these, and stated that the x-rays were completely normal, that there were no foreign objects in my head.

Prof. Lindstrom wrote in one of his many statements that, “I can only confirm that some foreign objects, most likely brain transmitters, have been implanted at the base of your frontal brain and in the skull. In my opinion, there is no excuse for such implantations. I fully agree with Lincoln Lawrence who, in his book on page 27, wrote, “There are two particularly

dreadful procedures which have been developed, those working and playing with them secretly call them R.H.I.C and E.D.O.M — Radio-Hypnotic Intracerebral Control and Electronic Dissolution of Memory." These, as well as ESB, Electronic Stimulation of the Brain, constitute what is included in biomedical telemetry, the complete mind control.

After Prof. Lindstrom wrote his opinion, about ten other doctors in different countries have given written statements which attest to the implanted transmitters in my head. The statements clearly show that Swedish doctors have given false reports concerning my case. Despite the evidence which proves the outrage, I cannot get surgical help in Sweden to remove the many transmitters implanted in my head, which are active day and night, year after year. This was the reason why I sought help in Djakarta when I visited Indonesia. But we will clearly see the few helpful physicians' intentions are worthless when secret police are acting on their information from mind control.

On August 4, 1987, I visited St. Carolus Hospital, Ji Salemba, Djakarta, and I met Professor Hendayo to whom I showed my x-rays, as well as reports from various doctors. He, obviously, could see the implanted foreign objects and more x-rays taken the same day confirmed the fact, so Dr. Hendayo agreed to operate. I stayed at the hospital until the following day. They took blood tests, etc., and informed me to come back on August 11th.

On the morning of the 12th, I was shown to the operating room. Right outside of the door, I met Dr. Hendayo. He told me that something had happened which would cause the postponement of the operation. He would not say why. Considering how important this was to me, I insisted that he keep his part of the agreement and do the operation. His behavior and attitude that morning was much different than earlier. The complaisance and friendliness of the previous meeting were gone, replaced by irritation and stress. But he changed his mind and agreed to perform the operation. As soon as we entered the operating ward, two people entered from another room; they were western middle-aged men. One of them had a syringe and gave me the sedative without a word or any preparation.

In the middle of the operation I awoke with a horrible pain in my head. My arms and legs were secured with straps. One person held my hand

steady, while another held open the 5 cm. incision in my forehead with some sort of instrument. A third person held an object, resembling a branding iron used on animals, which he burned into my head. During the 45 seconds of the operation in which I was awake, I experienced the feeling that my head was being blown to bits. I screamed in pain and tried to free my arms and legs. I fell unconscious from the pain and shock. The next thing I knew, it was 2 a.m. and I could feel my brain on fire. This was 18 hours after the operation.

The next morning I went to the hospital's radiology department and asked the doctor to x-ray my head. The picture showed the injury and that there was a foreign object in the damaged area. I went to the chief physician and told him what had happened. Afterward, I visited Dr. Hendayo and he told me, "It wasn't my idea to do this … I had no choice … You should have listened to me and postponed the operation … Your country's secret police was involved…."

The reason the operation turned out the way it did is quite clear. Prof. Hendayo was, at first, in favor of the operation. But the Swedish Secret Police (SÄPO) followed me via mind control and they knew every step I took. When Dr. Hendayo promised to operate on me, SÄPO also knew. In order to stop me, they informed their CIA colleagues in Indonesia, who forbade the doctor to help me, or they threatened to expose them. That was why the doctor could not say why he wanted to postpone the operation. SÄPO/CIA had obviously wanted to warn me and show that there were other powers behind the decision. Now, five years later, I have physical pain in the area which was damaged. In addition, my mental and psychological abilities have been greatly altered. The difficulty in finding a doctor who will operate on me is the great secret behind the use of mind control telemetry and doctors' international solidarity with colleagues who use people for experiments. These transmitters have changed my life in many ways and torment me through their constant use.

In a 1978 report entitled "ELF Magnetic Fields and EEG Entrainment" Dr. Robert Beck, Director of Biomedical Research in Los Angeles, writes, "The Canadians report alarming mood alterations in certain areas of eastern Canada which observers believe are linked to Soviet [electromagnetic

transmissions].” In 1987, *Atlantic Monthly* magazine elaborated on how electromagnetic weaponry has been developed with the ability to both affect the nervous system and to induce death. This research has concentrated upon a much wider spectrum of frequencies from microwaves, gamma and laser beams, right down to the extremely low frequencies which the brain works by. As Robert Beck stated in an interview with the *Omni*, “It is easier to generate cancer in a person than it is to cure.” The article continues to discuss the range of applications of these new radiation weapons: “Radio-frequency weapons that impair the nervous system might have uses in commando operations, anti-terrorist actions, and what the Pentagon calls ‘low level conflicts’ when more deadly weapons are being held back.” The meaning of the term ‘low level conflict’ seems to be consistent wherever these conflicts occur, either in the USA, England, Sweden, or Russia.

That this arsenal is being used against the citizenry in the new Russia as in the former Soviet Union is quite apparent from a statement published at the end of 1991 by SovData DiaLine:

“Psychological warfare is still being used by state security agents against people in Russia, even after the abortive August coup,” said Emilia Chirkova, a Deputy of the Zelenograd Soviet and member of the Human Rights Commission. She recalls the scandal surrounding the alleged bugging equipment installed close to Boris Yeltsin’s office. KGB agents admitted then that the directional aerial in the equipment was designed for transmission, not for reception. She believes it was part of an attempt to affect the health of the Russian President using high-frequency electromagnetic radiation. “‘The Human Rights Committee,” Chirkova said, “had warned Yeltsin about such a possibility.” She cited several further instances of the use of similar devices. Microwave equipment had been used in 1989 and 1990 in Vladivostok and Moscow prisons, in a mental hospital in Oryol, and in the Serbsky Institute in Moscow [also a mental hospital], she said. During his exile in Gorky, Andrei Sacharov noticed the presence of a high-tension electromagnetic field in his flat. It was reported recently in the press that Ruslan Khasbulatov, Speaker of the Russian Parliament, had had to move from his flat to another district of Moscow. High-level electromagnetic radiation has been included among the possible causes of the discomfort he felt in his flat.

Purported victims of psychological warfare have written to the paper. From Voronezh comes this letter: “They controlled my laughter, my thoughts, and caused pain in various parts of my body… It all started in October 1985, after I had openly criticized the first secretary of the City Committee of the Communist Party.” “Sometimes voices can be heard in the head from the effect of microwave pulse radiation which causes acoustic oscillations in the brain,” explained Gennady Shchelkunov, a radio electronics researcher from the Istok Association. Numerous sufferers from this alleged manipulation have set up a public movement. In June 1991, a group of Zelenograd deputies sent an appeal signed by 150 people to President Yeltsin, demanding an investigation into the use of bio-electronic weapons.

In Sweden there are clear signs that SÄPO/FOA uses unwitting people in very long-term research programs. At one of SÄPO’s secret bases in Sweden, the so-called Tjädergarden in Söraker just outside Sundsvall, these weapons has been tested on residents in the nearby estates and the long-term effects of electromagnetic weapons and fields are being studied.

The following is an extract from a 15-page letter from Tjädergarden resident Ossian Andersson to the Swedish government: “…owing to the terror, harrowing persecution and gross violations of human rights which I have been subjected to for the last eight years, I hereby request the government to allow me to resume a normal human existence. I am completely without legal protection while the security police and military researchers toy with me at their whim. My letters are to no effect, the authorities shirk any responsibility… I am being used as a guinea pig for weapons of ultrasonic, electromagnetic field, acoustic and death-ray type, and my central nervous system has been seized so that they can control my brain with micro-electronic technology and microcomputers … the symptoms of ultrasonic radiation are headaches, dizziness, disorientation and visual impairment. Other symptoms are a degeneration of intelligence with an additional effect on blood circulation and visceral pain … acoustic weapons do not cause injury, rather they convey a nebulous disorientation which can shatter all one’s organized activities. These weapons work by introducing chaos into one’s life … the radiation penetrates all types of material which I have used for protection. For instance, I built a case with a

2 mm thick lead insulation, under which I lay at night, to no avail… Microchips are also part of the picture, since I became aware that they were able to control my entire range of brain activity. These micro-devices must have been placed in my both without my knowledge… It is cruel to force a pensioner such as myself to suffer day after day and to prevent him to sleep no more than an hour now and then."

Since I myself have been in Söraker and know Ossian well, I can affirm that what he describes is but a fragment of the truly frightening nature of his torment. He is now 82 years old, and the terror meted out to him is completely bereft of humanitarian norms. He is being seriously exploited in a harrowing experiment conducted for periods of 22 hours during day and night in which he finds it impossible to snatch even a moment's sleep; and so it has been, with a persistent brutal intensity, for the last 20 years. Ossian has also undergone cranial radiographic examination from which the implantation of a foreign object with cerebral connections can be confirmed.

Edward Kelly was a journalist and came to Sweden in the mid 1970s, where, since 1984, he worked for an alternative news agency investigating the use, by medical institutions, of patients in various medical experiments. Kelly contacted the Socialstyrelsen/Board of Health and Welfare and several other state institutions in order to obtain certain information, at the same time informing them of his research, and a week later he fell seriously ill. It started with sharp pains in his back which rendered him bed-ridden; soon he had to be carried when he needed to visit the toilet. From the very beginning of the illness, strange phenomena were to be observed in his bedroom: papers stapled to the walls began to roll themselves up, those affixed with tape folded up and fell to the floor and several people noticed that they felt unwell after spending short time in his room. Kelly's cat, who used to like lying on his bed, now refused to enter and restricted itself to other rooms in the house.

Doctors examining Kelly diagnosed lumbago and by the middle of March he developed a bad cough; at the end of the month he was taken to hospital where his body was found riddled with cancer. Finally, on the 28th of May 1985 at Karolinska Hospital, he died.

A similar story concerns me. In 1985 I was behind the petition to the Director of Public Prosecutions, supported by 50 signatures, demanding a response to the question whether doctors should have the right to implant transmitters into the heads of unwitting patients during surgery. I was also one of those responsible for the following advertisement which was printed in 30 Swedish daily, weekly and monthly papers, and which exposed the above outrages taking place within all large Swedish hospitals. At about the same time the first advertisement was published, I noticed a radiation or frequency which seemed to rise up from below my flat. In the mornings it felt as though my face, shoulders and back had been sunburned. If I layed a sheet of paper on the floor, it would, after only a matter of hours, begin to roll itself up from both ends and all battery-operated equipment rapidly were quickly drained of power. The waves increased until I was forced to move out into a friend's flat.

I hired another flat at Kocksgatan 38 in Stockholm where, for the first two weeks, everything was fine. By the 1st of May, however, the trouble started again. The effects were much the same; the feelings of burning heat and noticeable burns on the face after just an hour and the spreading of the sensation into the palate, throat and lungs. Paper rolled itself up whether hanging on the wall or lying on the floor — but now I also experienced how my blood circulation was being affected. I wrote of my last days in the flat: "The radiation has increased for the last two weeks, and now, the 29th of May, it is completely unthinkable to sleep here. It is possible to be in the flat for at most two hours, but after that one has to leave because the pain in the lungs, the dehydration, the dry cough and general weakness."

Due to critical conditions caused by SÄPO's radiation, I was forced to abandon my efforts to expose their electromagnetic terrorism. It was to be five years before I resumed the fight. At the beginning of 1992 I came into contact with the International Network against Mind Control, and was involved in the drafting of the following letter to Prime Minister John Major. The day after it was sent and faxed to colleagues the world over, press agencies, and so on, SÄPO resumed its radiation so that after three days I was forced to again abandon my flat.

Prime Minister John Major

British Government
London SW1A OAA
England

Dear Sir,

Our international network of researchers has, for several years, been engaged in investigations into mind control and its widespread utilization around the world and we have become aware of several victims in Great Britain; reports received from exploited individuals refer to mental hospitals, police authorities and prisons as among the state institutions involved in the implantation of transmitters, electrodes of radio-transmitting crystals in people. The use of mind control is such a grave encroachment on civil liberty that, if allowed to develop further, it will threaten the freedom and integrity of all. Along with environmental problems, this is one of the most urgent issues to address if we are to ensure a more secure future.

The reason we are addressing this letter to you personally is that a meeting between Mr. John Austin-Walker, Member of the Parliament, and a victim of mind control, impressed on him the importance of pursuing investigations into the matter so much that he addressed a letter to you himself in August this year. Later writing to the injured party, a Mr. N' Tumba, he said: "Following your most recent visit to see me, I have written to the Prime Minister on your behalf. As you know, there is very little accountability of security services to the House of Commons and Members of Parliament have almost no power in relation to the activities of M15. As soon as I receive a response from the Prime Minister, I will be in touch with you again."

Just what happened to Mr. N'Tumba, he describes himself in a letter to us: "Concerning the brain transmitter in my head, it has been performing without my knowledge of consent…What's very outrageous is that I am sharing all my visions, thoughts, images, hearing…etc. with people around me as the security services are engaging in a large scale propaganda drive to smear my character, background, behavior, emotions and motives…I have no privacy at all…I am not a spy, I am not a criminal, I am not a terrorist. Being an innocent victim of Ml5 … my persecution started in June 1988." What is more, there is no reason to suspect the validity of what he writes;

we are overburdened with letters such as this one from the USA, Denmark, Sweden, Germany, New Zealand inter alia and our investigations in Sweden reveal a terrifying reality where the mental health services, police authorities and hospitals implant radio-transmitting devices in people's heads and brains. This reality is exposed by a vast amount of x-ray material to be a chilling and gloomy vision of the future, stage-managed for decades by the security forces in collaboration with medical and psychiatric institutions who together have created a secret power which transcends law and order, and which is beyond intrusive public control.

Brain-computer radio communication has long been considered impossible by the majority of people and has consequently been relegated to science-fiction, but the fact is that the technology had been developed into reality by at least the 1960s, during which time the initial experiments were being performed on unwitting subjects. The system has at different times been called Intra Cerebral Mind Control, ESB, Electronic Stimulation of Brain, Biological Radiocommunication or Bio-medical telemetry and in both the eastern and western worlds is the prevailing system of mind control, creating unlimited possibilities to influence and change an individual's behavior patterns and personality. By means of two-way radio communication, called telemetry or remote-control, an electromagnetic wave can be sent on a return trip to a receiver/transmitter located under the skull or in the brain; this signal records the activity of the brain and returns it to a computer for analysis, from which all aspects of the subject's life can be exposed. Radio transmitting crystals, which when injected into the bloodstream fasten themselves to the brain, have been under development for decades. They work on the same principle as a normal transmitter, use the same technology, and contain the same possibilities.

To analyze an EEG in a computer instead of a conventional printer provides an entirely fresh perspective on the conclusions which can be drawn, and gives a whole new perspective on what can be concluded. Cognitive manifestations and activity such as thoughts and visual impressions or emotions, behavior and psychological reactions can continually be registered making it possible for secret police authorities, medical scientists and the state to observe an individual in a deeper and more comprehensive way than the individual could possibly do him or

herself. Through analysis and manipulation by the computer, it is even possible for changes in an individual's physical mental status to be effected. The potential of intracerebral remote control is limited only by the imagination of the investigator, especially when it is remembered that, since these frequencies travel at the speed of light, the system of control is not constrained by matters of range.

Concerning the case of Mr. N'Tumba, it is obvious that there is simply no justification for implanting the mind transmitter, whether for police surveillance or psychiatric research. We feel, furthermore, that this is yet another example of human rights violation as defined under the CSCE 1980-83 Madrid conference and as embodied in the Final Act of Helsinki. We also wish to note that such activities are also in contravention of several agreements, endorsed by Great Britain, within the United Nations system, including in particular the International Bill of Human Rights and Articles 3, 4, 5 and 12 of the Universal Declaration of Human Rights.

Recently, we received some X-ray pictures of Mr. N'Tumba and our medical experts in Stockholm have examined those of his skull and can confirm that a transmitter has been implanted in his left nostril. Furthermore, it can be seen that electrodes placed in the occipital lobe are blocking the blood flow behind their delimitation where the oxygen depletion is caused and this is seen as well in his frontal brain just above the implanted transmitter. Among the changes caused by the frequencies affecting his brain, the reduced oxygen levels have induced an alteration of neurological functions, impaired cognitive abilities including that of memory. Moreover, he has obviously been anaesthetized without his knowledge so that this implantation could be performed.

We would greatly appreciate a statement regarding your views concerning this issue, and we urgently press you for all possible assistance which you can give to Mr. N'Tumba.

Yours faithfully,

Lennart Lindqvist
International Secretary

The first signs of radiation from electromagnetic weapons were noticed during the nights of the 11th October, the day after the letter [reproduced here in abbreviated form] was faxed worldwide. I was awakened at 3 a.m. by a blockage of the blood circulation in my hands, feet, forearms and parts of my legs, hands and feet swelled up and became numb. My face and back became sunburned as if I had been sunbathing on a hot summer's day. This was to be repeated night after night and it must be assumed that the electromagnetic waves were ultraviolet in nature, a radiation which affects the skin's pigmentation and which are known to cause cancer. The radiation continued during the following day and night and even though I tried to be at home as little as possible, it became quite clear that they still had the power to vary the spectrum and intensity of the radiation which they were using against me. From the first day, I experienced noticeable changes in my lungs and windpipe which resembled the symptoms following the radiation of 1985. The windpipe and respiratory passages became parched, my voice hoarse, and my lungs painful. I also suffered from acute amnesia whenever I crossed the threshold to my flat. By the third day, I considered it my safest move to leave my flat and so I went away for a week.

On returning, I found myself in a radiation chamber of considerably greater power than the one I had left in which it was possible to generate a multitude of destructively painful symptoms by varying the spectrum and intensity. I was kept awake at nights and sent into a kind of trance during the days, but by far the most frightening effect was that on the lungs which even after the first night had been severely impaired. When, after two days, I also began to suffer from backache and an almost crippling immobility, and when even the shortest possible time in my flat began to be unbearable, I felt that it was time to desist risking my life and moved in with friends. Since I had to return occasionally to my flat, I was able to establish that the radiation continued to penetrate my flat and on one fortunate occasion I was able to identify its source. The deteriorating winter found me at home one evening taking in some flowers from my balcony when I noticed in the block opposite, in the window of the flat directly under my own, was some apparatus, partially visible between the angled slats of a venetian blind. It

was directed up at my flat. It was emitting no light but its surface was lustrous.

During the night I collected some infra-red film and some binoculars so that I could study it more closely. As early as the previous summer, being more often out on the balcony, I had noticed that there was never any light in that flat, just as there is none nowadays. The day after, I called on the flat at Verkstadsgatan 22 and rung the doorbell above the name Broman. No one answered, not surprisingly since I heard from the neighbors that he had passed away some months back. The same day, I had the film developed; the picture I obtained revealed the apparatus with startling clarity.

From here SÄPO was terrorizing me and enfeebling my health with their destructive radiation, and so together with some friends I contrived to break into the flat and seize the apparatus. However, by 8 p.m. the same evening when I was home monitoring the situation, I noticed that the apparatus was gone. They had been there and removed it and with it, the radiation. I was able to return home.

This letter has been written in English since so much of the material is already on disk in that language and since I feel it is a more practical language to use. The letter has not been written with the intention of prompting a written reply, since any answer you convey I am sure to notice. I would, however, appreciate acknowledgment of receipt.

Yours sincerely,

Robert Naeslund

Another view of a brain implant X-ray

Remote Mind Control Technology

Anna Keeler

There had been an ongoing controversy over health effects of electromagnetic fields (EMF) for years (e.g., extremely low frequency radiation and the Navy's Project Seafarer; emissions of high power lines and video display terminals; radar and other military and industrial sources of radio frequencies and microwaves, such as plastic sealers and molders). Less is known of Department of Defense (DOD) and Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) interest in anti-personnel applications of the invisible energies. The ability of certain parameters of EMF to cause health effects, including neurological and behavioral disturbances, has been part of the military and CIA arsenal for years.

Capabilities of the energies to cause predictable and exploitable effects or damages can be gleaned from discussion of health effects from environmental exposures. Interestingly, some scientists funded by the DOD or CIA to research and develop invisible electromagnetic weapons have voiced strong concern (perhaps even superior knowledge or compensatory to guilt) over potentially serious consequences of environmental exposures.

Eldon Byrd who worked for Naval Surface Weapons, Office of Non-Lethal Weapons, was commissioned in 1981 to develop electromagnetic devices for purposes including "riot control," clandestine operations and hostage removal. In the context of a controversy over reproductive hazards to Video Display Terminal (VDT) operators, he wrote of alterations in brain function of animals exposed to low intensity fields. Offspring of exposed animals "exhibited a drastic degradation of intelligence later in life … couldn't learn easy tasks … indicating a very definite and irreversible damage to the central nervous system of the fetus." With VDT operators exposed to weak fields, there have been clusters of miscarriages and birth

defects (with evidence of central nervous system damage to the fetus). Byrd also wrote of experiments where behavior of animals was controlled by exposure to weak electromagnetic fields. “At a certain frequency and power intensity, they could make the animal purr, lay down and roll over.”

Jose Delgado, advocate of a psychocivilized society through mind control, no longer implants electrodes in the brains of mental patients and prisoners; he now induces profound behavioral changes (hyperactivity, passivity, etc.) by exposing animals to precisely tuned EMFs. He has also written of genetic damage produced by weak EMF fields, similar to those emitted by VDTs. Invariably, brain tissue damage and skeletal deformation was observed in new born chicks that had been exposed. He was concerned enough to check emissions from the appliances in his kitchen.

Ross Adey induces calcium efflux in brain tissue with low power level fields (a basis for the CIA and military’s “confusion weaponry”) and has done behavioral experiments with radar modulated at electroencephalogram (EEG) rhythms. He is understandably concerned about environmental exposures within 1 to 30 Hz (cycles per second), either as a low frequency or an amplitude modulation on a microwave or radio frequency, as these can physiologically interact with the brain even at very low power densities.

Microwaves

Microwave health effects is a juncture where Department of Defense and environmental concerns collide and part ways. Security concerns, according to Sam Koslov of Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA), first prompted U.S. study of health effects of low intensity (or non-thermal) microwaves. At times, up to 70-80% of the research was funded by the military. From 1965 to 1970, a study dubbed Project Pandora was undertaken to determine the health and psychological effects of low intensity microwaves, the so-called “Moscow signal” registered at the American Embassy in Moscow. Initially, there was confusion over whether the signal was an attempt to activate bugging devices or for some other purpose. There was suspicion that the microwave irradiation was being used as a mind control system. CIA agents asked scientists involved in

microwave research whether microwaves beamed at humans from a distance could affect the brain and alter behavior. Dr. Milton Zaret who undertook to analyze Soviet literature on microwaves for the CIA, wrote: “For non-thermal irradiations, they believe that the electromagnetic field induced by the microwave environment affects the cell membrane, and this results in an increase of excitability or an increase in the level of excitation of nerve cells. With repeated or continued exposure, the increased excitability leads to a state of exhaustion of the cells of the cerebral cortex.”

Employees first learned of the irradiation ten years after Project Pandora began. Before that, information had been parceled out on a strict “need to know” basis, which excluded most employees at the compound. Due to secrecy, and probably reports like Dr. Zaret’s, Jack Anderson speculated that the CIA was trying to cover up a Soviet effort at behavior modification through irradiation of the U.S. diplomats, and that the cover up was created to protect the CIA’s own mind control secrets.

Finally, an unusually large number of illnesses were reported among the residents of the compound. U.S. Ambassador Walter Stoessel developed a rare blood disease similar to leukemia; he was suffering headaches and bleeding from the eyes. A source at the State Department informally admitted that excessive radiation had been leaking from his telephone; an American high frequency radio transmitter on the roof of the building had, when operating, induced high frequency signals well above the U.S. safety standard through the phones in the political section, as well as in lines to Stoessel’s office. No doubt, National Security Agency or CIA electronic devices also contributed to the electromagnetic environment at the embassy, although values for these were never released, as they are secret. Stoessel was reported as telling his staff that the microwaves could cause leukemia, skin cancer, cataracts and various forms of emotional illness. White blood cell counts were estimated to be as high as 40% above normal in one third of the staff, and serious chromosome damage was uncovered.

The Soviets began research on biological effects of microwaves in 1953. A special laboratory was set up at the Institute of Hygiene and Occupational Diseases, Academy of Medical Sciences. Other labs were set up in the U.S.S.R. and in Eastern Europe that study both effects of microwaves and

low frequency electromagnetic radiation. Years ago, in the halls of science, complaints could be heard that Soviet experiments regarding bio-effects couldn't be duplicated due to insufficient details in their scientific literature, although, according to one DOD official, 75% of the U.S. papers on the subject carried insufficient parameters for duplication. Scientists even questioned, with McCarthy-like sentiments, whether the Soviets were attempting to frighten or disinform with false scientific reporting of bio-effects. It was unthinkable, according to cruder scientific theory, that non-thermal levels of microwaves could cause harm. Impetus for a study of such effects came not from concern for the public, but rather in the military and intelligence community's suspicion of the Soviets, and their equally strong interest in developing exploitable anti-personnel effects — an interest that continues unabated today.

The CIA and DOD "security" concerns metamorphosized into research and development of invisible weapons capable of impacting on health and psychological processes. In fact, due to the finding of startling effects, DARPA's security became even tighter, and a new code name — "Bizarre" — was assigned to the project.

Scientist Allen Frey of Randomline, Inc. was always more interested in low intensity microwave hazards: thermal effects were known. During Project Pandora, the Navy funded such projects of his, as how to use low average power intensities, to: induce heart seizures; create leaks in the blood brain barrier, which would allow neurotoxins in the blood to cross and cause neurological damage or behavioral disorders; and how to produce auditory hallucinations or microwave hearing, during which the person can hear tones that seem to be coming from within the head or from directly behind it.

In 1976, the Defense Intelligence Agency (DIA) released a report in which they attributed the results of Dr. Frey's studies to the Soviets. According to Dr. Frey, who acknowledges that his work was misattributed, he had thought up the projects himself. The DIA, but not the CIA, is allowed to use "mirror imaging" and "net assessment" in their reports, ie., respectively, the attribution of one's own motives and weapons capabilities to "the other side," in this case, the Soviets. It follows, that there is nothing

to prevent them from releasing a report prepared in this manner, and thus muddy the water of decision making, pervert public opinion, stoke up congressional funding or enlist the support of naive scientists to counter "the threat." There was strong concern over CIA disinformation abroad, leaking back to the home front, through the American press, but apparently the DIA, at least on some issues, can dish it up with impunity.

The 1976 DIA report also credits the Soviets with other capabilities, stating, "Sounds and possibly even words which appear to be originating intercranially can be induced by signal modulations at very low power densities." Dr. Sharp, a Pandora researcher at Walter Reed Army Institute of Research, some of whose work was so secret that he couldn't tell his boss, conducted an experiment in which the human brain has received a message carried to it by microwave transmission. Sharp was able to recognize spoken words that were modulated on a microwave carrier frequency by an "audiogram," an analog of the words' sound vibrations, and carried into his head in a chamber where he sat.

Dr. James Lin of Wayne State University has written a book entitled *Microwave Auditory Effects and Applications.* It explores the possible mechanisms for the phenomenon, and discusses possibilities for the deaf, as persons with certain types of hearing loss can still hear pulsed microwaves (as tones or clicks and buzzes, if words aren't modulated on). Lin mentions the Sharp experiment and comments, "The capability of communicating directly with humans by pulsed microwaves is obviously not limited to the field of therapeutic medicine."

Dr. R.O. Becker, twice nominated for the Nobel prize for his health work in bio-electromagnetism, was more explicit in his concern over illicit government activity. He wrote of "obvious applications in covert operations designed to drive a target crazy with "voices." What is frightening is that words, transmitted via low density microwaves or radio frequencies, or by other covert methods, might be used to create influence. For instance, according to a 1984 U.S. House of Representatives report, a large number of stores throughout the country use high frequency transmitted words (above the range of human hearing) to discourage shoplifting. Stealing is

reported to be reduced by as much as 80% in some cases. Surely, the CIA and military haven't overlooked such useful technology.

Dr. Frey also did experiments on reduction of aggression. Rats who were accustomed to fighting viciously when their tails were pinched, accepted the pinching with relative passivity when irradiated with pulsed microwaves in the ultra high frequency rage (UHF) at a power density of less than 1,000 microwatts/cm^2. He has also done low intensity microwave experiments degrading motor coordination and balance. When asked about weapons applications of his work, he answered by referring to himself as "just a biological theorist," and his work for the Navy, "basic medical research."

Lies Before Congress

In 1976, George H. Heilmeier, director of Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA) responded to a mailgram to President Ford from Don Johnson of Oakland, paraphrasing Johnson's concern, and assuring him that the DARPA sponsored Army/Navy Pandora experiments were "never directed at the use of microwaves as a surveillance tool, nor in a weapons concept." Don Johnson lingered in the memory of one DOD official who sponsored microwave research in the 1970s. Johnson was enigmatically described as "brilliant … schizophrenic … he knew too much … a former mental patient … buildings where work was done." (Scientists who have disagreed with the DOD on health effects of microwaves and on the U.S. exposure standard, have received scant more respect and have had their funding cut.)

The next year, Heilmeier elaborated in a written response to an inquiry before Congress. "… This agency [DARPA] is not aware of any research projects, classified or unclassified, conducted under the auspices of the Defense Department, now ongoing, or in the past, which would have probed possibilities of utilizing microwave radiation in a form of what is popularly known as 'mind control.' We do not foresee the development, by DARPA of weapons using microwaves and actively being directed toward

altering nervous system function or behavior. Neither are we aware of any of our own forces… developing such weapons…"

Finally, memoranda were released that rendered the goals of Pandora transparent. Richard Cesaro, initiator of Pandora and director of DARPA's Advanced Sensor program, justified the project in that "little or no work has been done in investigation of the subtle behavioral changes which may be evolved by a low-level electromagnetic field." Researchers had long ago established that direct stimulus of the brain could alter behavior. The question raised by radio frequencies — microwaves or radio frequencies of the UHF or VHF band — was whether the electromagnetic could have a similar effect at very low levels. Pandora's initial goal: to discover whether a carefully constructed microwave signal could control the mind. In the context of long term, low-level effects: Cesaro felt that central nervous system effects could be important, and urged their study "for potential weapons applications." After testing a low-level modulated microwave signal on a chimpanzee, and within approximately a week causing stark performance decrements and behavioral disorganization, Cesaro wrote, "the potential of exerting a degree of control on human behavior by low-level microwaves seems to exist." On the basis of the primate study, extensive discussions took place and plans were made to extend the studies to humans.

According to a former DOD security analyst, one such microwave experiment with human subjects took place at Lorton Prison in the early 1970s. He said that such research (in a weapons context) has occurred on behavioral effects of microwaves since 1976. He also asked, "Why are you so concerned about then? What about now? They can call anyone a terrorist. Who are they using it on now?"

Behavioral Effects

In June, 1970, a government think tank, Rand Corporation, published a report by R.J. MacGregor, entitled "A Brief Survey of Literature Relating to Influence of Low Intensity Microwaves on Nervous Function." After noting that the U.S. microwave guideline in effect in 1970 for the public, 10,000

microwatts/^{2} (now the industrial and military “guideline”), is proscribed from consideration of the rate that thermal effects are dissipated, the author, a specialist in modeling neural networks, states that scientific studies have consistently shown that humans exhibit behavioral disturbances when subjected to non-thermal levels of microwaves, well below this level. The symptoms that MacGregor lists for those humans exposed more or less regularly at work or in the living environment are insomnia, irritability, loss of memory, fatigue, headache, tremor, hallucination, autonomic disorders and disturbed sensory functioning. He reports that swelling and distention of nerve cells have been produced at intensities as low as 1,000 microwatts/cm^2 (the current U.S. guideline for the public). In a companion Rand paper, June, 1970, entitled “A Direct Mechanism for the Direct Influence of Microwave Radiation on Neuroelectric Function,” MacGregor sets forth the idea that the electrical component of microwave radiation induces transmembrane potentials in nerve cells and thereby disturbs nervous function and behavior. Microwaves penetrate and are absorbed more deeply so that they can produce a direct effect on the central nervous system. With smaller wave lengths the principal absorption occurs near the body surface and causes peripheral or “lower” nervous system effects.

Dr. Milton Zaret who analyzed neurological effects for the CIA during Project Pandora (he is now one of the few doctors willing to take the government on by testifying on behalf of plaintiffs filing claims for microwave health damage), wrote that, “receptors of the brain are susceptible and react to extremely low intensities of microwave irradiation if this is delivered in accordance with appropriate “coding.” Coding is reported to be influenced by the character of the signal so as to be a function, for example, of the shape and amplitude of the pulse or waveform.

Dr. Ross Adey, formerly of the Brain Research Center at University of Southern California, Los Angeles, now at Loma Linda University Medical School, Loma Linda, California, was among the first of the Pandora researchers. His work is more precise in inducing specific behavior, rather than merely causing disorganization or decrements in performance — that is, apart from his studies on inducing calcium efflux in brain tissue, which causes interference with the functioning of the brain and is one basis of “confusion weaponry.”

More specifically, Adey's thesis is that if the electroencephalogram (EEG) has informational significance, one can induce behavioral changes if one imposes environmental fields that look like EEG. During Adey's career, he has correlated a wide variety of behavioral states with EEG, including emotional states (e.g., stress in hostile questioning), increments of decision making and conditioning, correct versus incorrect performance, etc., and he has imposed electromagnetic fields that look like EEG, which has resulted in altered EEG and behavior.

In published accounts of Adey's work, he has shown that it is possible to apply low biologic frequencies by using a radio frequency carrier modulated at specific brain frequencies. He demonstrated that if the biological modulation on the carrier frequency is close to frequencies in the natural EEG of the subject, it will reinforce or increase the number of manifestations of the imposed rhythms, and modulate behavior.

The conditioning paradigm: animals were trained through aversion to produce specific brain wave rhythms; animals trained in a field with the same rhythm amplitude modulated on it, differed significantly from control animals in both accuracy and resistance to extinction (at least 50 days versus 10 in the controls). When the fields were used on untrained animals, occurrence of the applied rhythm increased in the animals' EEG.

Dr. Adey is an accomplished scientist, which leads one to believe the significance of this experiment goes beyond mere reinforcement of the animal's brain waves. Did the rhythms that he chose to apply have special significance with relation to information processing or conditioning? The 4.5 theta rhythm that he applied was the natural reoccurring frequency that he had measured in the hippocampus during a phase of avoidance learning. The hippocampus, as Adey wrote in an earlier paper, "… involves neural processes connected with consolidation of memory traces. It relates closely to the need for focusing attention, and the degree to which recapitulation of past experience is imposed." One might add, to ensure survival.

Does it follow that an EEG modulated carrier frequency can be used to enhance human avoidance learning? You bet, provided the same careful procedures are followed with humans as were with animals, the same result

would accrue. Recall again the goals of Pandora — to discover whether a carefully constructed electromagnetic signal could direct the mind.

The obvious question becomes, how many and with how much accuracy can behavioral states or “frames of mind” be intentionally imposed, that is, apart from the certain technological capability to promote disorganization and degradation of perception and performance through use of the fields. In fact, many components of learning or conditioning including affect (i.e., “feeling” or emotional states) can be imposed through use of the fields from a distance. e.g., behavioral arousal, orienting reflex, subliminal stress (alarm reaction without realization of the contextual significance), so-called levels of consciousness, inhibition of cerebral functions, which would render one more susceptible to suggestion or influence, and so on. All components necessary to produce behavioral conditioning, including ways to provide contextual significance, can be applied from a distance (i.e., without direct brain contact, as was necessary in older behavior modification experiments.)

Another indication that the government entertained notions of behavior control through use of fields and sound, is a 1974 research proposal by J.F. Schapitz. To test his theory, his plan was to record EEG correlates induced by various drugs, and then to modulate these biological frequencies on a microwave carrier. Could the same behavioral states be produced by imposing these brain wave frequencies on human subjects? His plan went further and included inducing hyptonic states and using words modulated on a microwave carrier frequency to attempt to covertly condition subjects to perform various acts. The plan as released (through the Freedom of Information Act) seems less part of a careful recipe for influence than Adey’s and other DOD scientists’ work, and may have been released to mislead by lending an “information beam” science fiction-like quality to the work.

The end of Project Pandora may have signified the end of research into the cause of effects of the varying frequencies registered at the American embassy in Moscow — some known to be due to CIA and National Security Agency equipment, but interest in microwave and biological frequency weapons did not wane. Indeed, there are indications of

applications. As we have seen, research that began in response to a security concern, transformed almost overnight into a search for weapons applications, while cloaked in disinformation about the Soviets. What types of weapons?

There Are Three Possibilities:

(1) That microwaves, perhaps modulated with low biological frequencies, are used from a distance to cause performance decrements and disorganization by interfering with neuro-electric function; or by causing central nervous system effects, subjective feelings of ill health, or health syndrome associated with periodic exposures at intensities below 10,000 microwatts/cm^2;

(2) That microwaves are used to create organ specific effects, e.g., tissues with less blood circulation, like the gall bladder, lens of the eye, etc., can compensate less to increased heating; heart disfunctions can be caused; lesions or necrosis of internal tissues can be induced without a subject necessarily feeling heat, and symptoms might manifest later, at certain frequencies, slight heating or “hot spots” can be created at the center of the head; there is an ongoing Navy contract to find parameters to disrupt human metabolic functions; or

(3) That they are used in an interdisciplinary approach to remote conditioning by creating information processing effects, as Dr. Adey’s work shows, or to induce “feeling” or “emotional” elements of cognition, such as excitatory reactions, subliminal stress, behavioral arousal, enhanced suggestibility by inhibition of higher functions, or various other EEG or behavioral effects. There are strong indications that microwaves have been used to cause the decrements. There is no question but that the U.S. military and the CIA know the behavioral or psychoactive significance of applied biological rhythms and other frequencies, as this was part of the thrust of their work during Pandora. Inducing emotion or feelings through use of electromagnetic fields, and then synchronizing the feelings with words (symbolic of ideas) would be an effective way to induce preferences or

attitude change, because it would mirror natural thought processes. The question seems less whether conditioning through use of covert technology is possible, than whether there has been a policy choice to use it. If the results of their research are used as part of a system that can condition behavioral responses from a distance, it is a secret that they hold close like a baby.

Richard Helms wrote of such a system in the mid-1960s while he was CIA Plans Director. He spoke of “sophisticated approaches to the ‘coding’ of information for transmittal to population targets in the ‘battle for the minds of men’ …” and of “an approach integrating biological, social and physical-mathematical research in attempts … to control behavior.” He found particularly notable, “use of modern information theory, automata theory, and feedback concepts … for a technology for controlling behavior … using information inputs as causative agents.” Due to Project Pandora, it is now known that applied biological (and other) frequencies can also be used as direct “information inputs” (e.g., of feeling or emotion) and to reinforce brain rhythms associated with conditioning and information processing. One way to get such a signal into a human may be through use of a high frequency carrier frequency. Results of research into information processing, unconscious processes, decision making, memory processes and evoked brain potentials would likely be exploited or integrated in an interdisciplinary system.

Covert technological influence is not so foreign to the American way of life as one may think. It was reported in a 1984 U.S. House of Representatives hearing that high frequency audio transmissions are applied, for instance, in some department stores to prevent theft (one East Coast department store chain was reported to have saved $600,000 over a nine-month period), and in some grocery stores with the result that employee induced cash shortages significantly decreased and employees are better mannered. In other words, as Helms wrote of, verbal messages are delivered at frequencies above human hearing. Technology for commercial applications is relatively sophisticated (one studio uses a “layered” approach and 31 channels in preparing tapes; some employ a “dual coding” approach, integrating scientific knowledge of information processing modes of the two brain hemispheres, and others use techniques where a consumer

is spoken to as a three year old child.) There is no U.S. law specifically regulating these types of transmission (over radio and TV a Federal Communication Commission “catch all” provision might apply). If industry uses indetectable audio transmissions to meet security concerns, it seems that the military and CIA would exploit the same technology and would have developed much more sophisticated technology for applications. The public’s conception of “subliminals” is naive compared to capabilities.

The military has studied and considered for usefulness in a warfare and psychological warfare context a wide range of biological or pharmacological substances. In the memo referred to above, Helms wrote that the U.S. is five years ahead of the Soviets in pharmacological agents producing behavioral effects. Some of these substances would increase susceptibility to influence if incorporated in the multidisciplinary approach he wrote of.

A side effect of lowered resistance to sub-threshold stimulus might be that some would become aware of illicit influence (even under normal circumstances there is a wide variation in sensitivity among individuals to sub-threshold stimulus; normal individuals whom psychology terms “reducers” are much more sensitive in this way; actually, most schizophrenics are extreme reducers, and therefore, much more aware of stimulus that others aren’t cognizant of). Convenient to the agencies involved in covert influence, is that among primary symptoms of schizophrenia or mental illness are ideas that one is being influenced by “transmissions” (e.g. radio frequencies), “voices” or even telepathy; unless complaints about covert psychological weapons are well organized, they would tend to be discounted as indicative of mental imbalance.

There are many ways to create temporary or permanent states that increase receptivity to suggestion and/or conditioning. It is interesting to note that scientific studies have correlated exposure to electromagnetic fields alone with mental hospital admissions and worsening of symptoms of mental patients, even as an etiological factor in the onset of mental illness. (A marker disease for exposure to microwaves is damage behind the lens of the eye; a disproportionate number of persons so damaged also suffer from mental disease or neurological impairment.)

Specific Targets

Weapons against whom? Safe to say, in order to enlist the aid of scientists, the military and CIA would act true to form, that is, to motivate and overcome reluctance due to dictates of conscience, they would evoke a serious security risk during initial phases of development. In fact, on the "unclassified" face of it, a number of reports have openly suggested use of "microwaves" against "terrorists."

Los Alamos National Laboratory, now under supervision of University of California, prepared a report for Federal Emergency Management Agency (FEMA) setting forth that use of microwave radiation on terrorists could kill them, stun them or at least modify their behavior by changing their "perceptions." At this point the cloak is donned, and the report continues: "There are reports of Eurasian communist countries performing research with combined fields of signals from several different microwave frequencies to produce at least perceptual distortions in humans."

Cable News Network recently aired a report on electromagnetic weapons and showed an official document that was a contingency plan to use electromagnetic weapons against terrorists. It wasn't made clear who the terrorists were or what the contingency was. Prior to the news show, however, reports had surfaced, the source a DOD medical engineer, that in the content of conditioning, microwaves and other modalities had regularly been used against Palestinians.

Greenham Common

When DOD develops a weapon it can be said with certainty that it will be tested and, if possible, where it would be useful to meet their goals. Women peace activists have kept an ongoing vigil at the periphery of the U.S. Air Force base at Greenham in England since 1981. They are protesting build-up of nuclear weapons. The U.S. Cruise missiles, which are nuclear warheads small enough to be mounted on the back of a truck called a launcher vehicle, arrived at the base in March, 1984. Since then the women

in the encampment and members of the Cuisewatch network have ensured that when the launcher vehicle and its convoy are taken out into the British countryside, the "dispersal exercises" aren't as secret as the military intended them to be. The women of the network, non-violent activists, have been subjected to intense harassment in an effort to be rid of their presence.

In the Fall of 1984, things changed dramatically; many, if not most of the women began suffering illness; and, simultaneously, the massive police and military presence at the base virtually disappeared, and new and different antenna were installed at the base. In a report prepared by Rosalie Bertell, commissioner for International Commission of Health Professionals for Human Rights, a non-governmental organization based in Geneva, Switzerland, the unusual patterns of illness ranged from "severe headaches, drowsiness, menstrual bleeding at abnormal times or post-menopausal, to bouts of temporary paralysis, faulty speech coordination and in one case apparent circulatory failure requiring hospitalization."

Other symptoms documented by peace activist Kim Bealy, who coordinates investigations into reports of illness at specific places around the base, included; vertigo, retinal bleeding, burnt face (even at night), nausea, sleep disturbances and palpitations. Psychological symptoms included lack of concentration, disorientation, loss of memory, irritability and a sense of panic in non-panic situations. The symptoms have virtually all been associated in medical literature with exposure to microwaves and most listed can be induced through low intensity or non-thermal exposures. *(Editor's note: such devices were utilized as "psychological deterrents" during the siege of the Branch Davidian compound at Waco.)*

Measurements were taken around the base by members of Electronics for Peace and by others. Strong signals, up to one hundred times the normal background level were detected on a number of occasions. In fact, signals ten times stronger than those felt to be emanating from normal base transmitting systems were found.

The strongest signals generally appeared in the areas where the women said that they suffered ill effects. For instance, they were found to cover the women's encampment near the "green gate" (gates to the base are designated by color), but stopped abruptly at the edge of the road leading to

the gate. The strength of the signals were also found to reflect the activity of the women: e.g., they increased rapidly when the women started a demonstration. Visitors to the encampment, both men and women, reported experiencing the same types of symptoms and the same pattern of variation as the Greenham women.

In a review prepared by National Bureau of Standards, Law Enforcement Standards Laboratory, for Nuclear Defense Agency, Intelligence and Security Directorate, use of low intensity microwaves was considered for application as a "psychological deterrent." The report stated, "…microwave radiation has frequently been cited as being responsible for non-thermal effects in integrated central nervous system activity. The behavioral consequences most frequently reported have been disability, listlessness and increased irritability." The report fails to mention just as frequently cited low intensity microwave health effects as chromosome damage; congenital birth defects; autonomic nervous system disregulation, including disruption of bio-cycles; impaired immune function; brain damage and other neurological abnormalities, including leaks in the blood brain barrier and depletion of some neurotransmitters; among a host of other health impairments. As activist Kim Bealy put it, "It would now appear that we are protecting the missiles by killing people slowly."

It is not necessary that the transmission take place from equipment in the vicinity of a target (although the Greenham women seemed to be suffering from transmissions made from within the base.) Propagation of microwaves has been very well studied and is very sophisticated, e.g., a two inch beam can be sent from a satellite, point to point, to a receiving dish on earth; and, it was reported in 1978, that the CIA had a program called Operation Pique, which included bouncing radio signals or microwaves off of the ionosphere to affect the mental functions of people in selected areas, including Eastern European nuclear installations.

In the U.S. at this time, there is no legally enforceable microwave standard. There never has been an enforceable standard for the public or the workplace. Microwaves at intensities within the suggested "guideline" have finally been shown, even by U.S. research, to cause health damage.

References

Adey, W. Ross, “Neurophysiologic Effects of Radiofrequency and Microwave Radiation,” *Bulletin of the New York Academy of Medicine,* V.55, #11, December, 1979; “The Influences of Impressed Electrical Fields at EEG Frequencies on Brain and Behavior,” in *Behavior and Brain Electrical Activity,* Burch, N. and Altshuler, H.I., eds., Plenum Press, 1975; “Effects of Modulated Very High Frequency Fields on Specific Brain Rhythms in Cats,” *Brain Research,* V.58., 1973; “Spectral Analysis of Low Frequency Components in the Electrical Activity of the Hippocampus During Learning,” *Electroencephalography and Clinical Neurophysiology,* V.23, 1967.

Annals of New York Academy of Sciences, V. 247, February, 1975.

Bealy, Kim, “Electromagnetic Pollution: A Little Known Health Hazard, A New Means of Control?,” Preliminary Report, Greenham Common Women’s Peace Camp, Inlands House, Southbourne, Emsworth, Hants, P0108JH.

Becker, Robert O., *The Body Electric,* William Morrow and Company, Inc. 1985.

Bowart, Walter, *Operation Mind Control,* Dell Publishing, 1978.

Brodeur, Paul, *The Zapping of America,* W.W. Norton and Co, 1977.

Frey, Allan, “Behavioral Biophysics,” *Psychological Bulletin,* V.65, #5, 1965; “Human Auditory System Response in Modulated Electromagnetic Energy,” *Journal of Applied Physiology,* V.17, #4, 1962; “Neural Function and Behavior: Defining to Relationship,” *Annals of the New York Academy of Sciences,* V.247, February, 1975; “Exposure to RF Electromagnetic Energy Decreases Aggressive Behavior,” *Biolectromagnetics,* V.12, 1986.

Harvey, J., Ickes, W., Kidd, R., *New Directions in Attribution Research,* V.2, John Wiley and Sons, 1978.

ISN News, “Reproductive Hazards From Video Display Terminals,” Planetary Association for Clear Energy, 1985.

Koslov, Sam, *Bridging the Gap, in Nonlinear Electrodynamics in Biological Systems,* Adey, W.R. and Lawrence, A.F., eds., Plenum Press, 1983.

Kramer, J. and Maguire, P., Psychological Deterrents in Nuclear Theft, National Bureau of Standards for Intelligence and Security Directorate, Defense Nuclear Agency, NBSIR 76-1007,

March, 1976.

Lapinsky, G. and Goodman, C., *Psychological Deterrents to Nuclear Theft: An Updated Literature Review and Bibliography,* Center for Consumer Technology, National Bureau of Standards for Surety and Operations Directorate, Defense Nuclear Agency, NBSIR 80-2038, June, 1980.

McAuliffe, Kathleen, "The Mind Fields," *Omni* magazine, February, 1985

MacGregor, R.J., "A Brief Survey of Literature Relating to Influence of Low Intensity Microwaves on Nervous Function," Rand Report, R-4397, 1970; "A Direct Mechanism for the Influence of Microwave Radiation on Neuroelectric Potentials," Rand Corporation, P-4398,1970.

Marha, Karel, Microwave Radiation Standards in Eastern Europe, IEEE Transactions on Microwave Theory and Techniques, V.MTT-19, #2, February, 1971.

Regna, Joseph, "Microwaves Versus Hope," *Science for the People,* V.19., #5, September/October 1987.

Rosenfeld, Sam and Anne, "The Roots of Individuality: Brain Waves and Perception," Mental Health Studies and Reports Branch, National Institute of Mental Health, October, 1975.

Steneck, Nicholas, *The Microwave Debate,* MIT Press, 1984.

Subliminal Communication Technology, House of Representatives, Committee on Science and Technology, Subcommittee on Transportation, Aviation and Materials, 1984.

World Health Organization, Environmental Health Criteria 16, Radiofrequency and Microwaves, Geneva, Switzerland, 1981.

Zaret, Milton, "Human Injury Relatable to Nonionizing Radiation," IREE-ERDA Symposium — "The Biological Effects of Electromagnetic Radiation," 1978.

Is Paranoia
A Form of Awareness?

Kerry W. Thornley

In the spring of 1959 I was stationed at an annex of El Toro Marine Base in California. Another Marine in that unit was Lee Harvey Oswald. We became acquainted.

Then in June of that year I shipped out for a tour of duty at the Naval Air Station in Atsugi, Japan, where Oswald served previous to our time together at El Toro.

My ambition all along was to become a novelist, and I had decided to write a book based upon my overseas experience in the military. That autumn I read in the newspaper that Lee Oswald had, upon being discharged, gone to Moscow and applied for Soviet citizenship. By then I'd decided to call my novel about peace-time Marines in the Far East *The Idle Warriors*, and Oswald's dramatic act inspired me to center the plot around a character based on him.

Convinced that I understood his reasons for becoming disillusioned with the United States and turning to Marxism, feeling they were similar to my own, I at first intended to write "a poor man's Ugly American" sharply critical of U.S. imperialism characterized by the bungling of the Eisenhower era.

Unfortunately for the clarity of my novel's political theme, my own ideology shifted — as a result of reading Ayn Rand's polemical novel, *Atlas Shrugged* — aboard ship on my way back to the States. Discharged from

the Marines immediately thereafter, I entered civilian life convinced of the efficacy of laissez-faire capitalism.

My young friend, Greg Hill, and I then traveled from our home town of Whittier, California, to the New Orleans French Quarter, where I continued work on the first draft of *The Idle Warriors.* There I met a man I am belatedly but firmly persuaded played a central role in organizing the assassination of President John F. Kennedy, for which I am equally certain Lee Harvey Oswald was framed.

During most of my life I have been inclined to reject conspiracy theories of history. Notwithstanding my willingness to admit that conspiracies exist, I felt that a grasp of political events depended upon an understanding of the power of ideas. In my view, conspiracies were insignificant. My tendency was to challenge the motives of conspiracy buffs when I did not, as was more often the case, question their mental health.

Balancing my occasional doubts was a fear of becoming paranoid. When Oswald was accused of assassinating Kennedy, my first hunch was that he was innocent and had been blamed in a misunderstanding that would soon be cleared up. When the media continued to insist there was ample evidence that Oswald, and Oswald alone, shot the President I quickly changed my mind.

Two years later, when a Warren Report critic confronted me with the many discrepancies between the conclusions of the Warren Commission and the testimony and exhibits contained in the Twenty-six Volumes, I could no longer hide from myself the probability that either Lee Oswald was innocent or he had not acted alone. Yet even then I did not want to think an elaborate conspiracy was involved. Maybe Lyndon Johnson or some of his Texas friends had arranged to kill Kennedy and perhaps it had not occurred to the Warren Commission to probe that possibility. A more complicated theory would seem paranoid. Above all else, I did not want to seem paranoid.

One year elapsed between the time I began doubting the lone-assassin theory and the beginning of tribulations in my own life suffered at the hands of a man most journalists insisted was a paranoid. First, District Attorney

Jim Garrison made a bizarre attempt to recruit me as a witness for the prosecution in his probe of a New Orleans-based conspiracy to assassinate John Kennedy. When I expressed my unwillingness to cooperate, he accused me of working for the CIA and summoned me to appear before the grand jury.

After asking me what seemed like a lot of irrelevant questions, he charged me with perjury for denying, truthfully, that I had met with Lee Harvey Oswald in New Orleans during the months previous to the assassination. I had not seen Oswald in person, nor had I communicated with him in any other way, since June of 1959 — at the latest.

Yet Garrison struck me as sincere. Moreover, his assistants showered me with any number of disturbing coincidences linking me to his assassination theory. I was at a loss to explain them, except in light of the notion that Jim Garrison's conspiracy theory was an elaborate paranoid construction.

This experience forced me to examine the evidence surrounding the events in Dallas more carefully than ever before. As a result, I became convinced not only that Lee Harvey Oswald had not acted alone but, moreover, that he was not even on the sixth floor of the Texas School Book Depository when the shots that killed Kennedy were fired. Yet, because I also had to cope with Jim Garrison's wild and irresponsible charges, I also became more certain than ever that paranoia was by far more dangerous than any actual conspiracy that might, from time to time, sabotage the normal functioning of history.

In other words, if conspiracies were significantly dangerous, it was because they tended to spawn paranoia. When Jim Garrison ultimately neglected to bring me to trial, I took it as a tacit admission he had at last perceived the error of his ways.

Meanwhile, in the realm of public affairs I busied myself with other concerns. Of all newsworthy events, the John Kennedy murder seemed to me the most boring. For reasons I could not clearly identify at the time, I was to find the murder of Hollywood actress Sharon Tate far more disturbing. When I read *The Family* by Ed Sanders (E.P. Dutton, 1971) my uneasiness increased. Charles Manson was not typical of the hip counter-

culture I had gradually come to consider my own, after the appeal of Ayn Rand's philosophy diminished in my eyes. Nevertheless, something about him and his followers seemed far more menacing and important than I could justify in terms of a few sensationally gory killings. As if warned in a forgotten nightmare, I felt that I had expected someone like Manson to appear on the scene. All that I read about him confirmed this eerie, elusive anxiety.

Besides that, much like Jim Garrison, Charles Manson was a paranoid. Nowhere is this more evident than on page 129 of *The Family*, where he is quoted as saying: "Christ on the cross, the coyote in the desert — it's the same thing, man. The coyote is beautiful. He moves through the desert delicately, aware of everything, looking around. He hears every sound, smells every smell, sees everything that moves. He's always in a state of total paranoia and total paranoia is total awareness. You can learn from the coyote just like you learn from a child. A baby is born into the world in a state of fear. Total paranoia and awareness…" Once again I was grappling with the riddle of a man who appeared to act on the basis of a supreme confidence in the validity of his own delusions.

Escalation of the Vietnam war had radicalized me, once again, politically. So Charlie Manson's affinity for right-wing organizations was something else that alarmed me. Most particularly I was spooked by allegations about links between Manson's people and the Process Church. For when I had returned to New Orleans in order to clear myself, unsuccessfully, of Jim Garrison's suspicions, I encountered the Process Church there — in circumstances giving me ample reason to suspect it was at least partially involved in framing me.

So as to avoid the mistakes of people like Garrison and Manson, it seemed essential to study psychology. That was another subject I found more fascinating than conspiracy theories about the John Kennedy assassination. Already acquainted with Freud and other pioneers of psychoanalysis, I began devoting my attention to more recent trends. That the older theories were unconsciously tainted with reactionary ideology was frequently mentioned in my political readings.

In 1972 I discovered a psychology book that dovetailed beautifully with my political opinions, by then both anarchist and left of center. A collection of readings compiled by Jerome Agel and The Radical Therapist newspaper staff, *The Radical Therapist* anthology found the roots of nearly all neurosis and psychosis outside the individual, lodged firmly and visibly in the authoritarian class structure of society. As a sociology major at Georgia State University I had already begun to suspect as much.

There was only one hitch, best summed up in “The Radical Psychiatry Manifesto” by Claude Steiner: “Paranoia is a state of heightened awareness. Most people are persecuted beyond their wildest delusions.”

I wondered if that could be true. Certainly it was not without personal relevance, in terms of my own very unsatisfactory adjustment to the John F. Kennedy murder mystery. Perpetually fearing that my radical friends would think I was a CIA agent, because of what Garrison had said, and yet afraid that I would become paranoid if I delved into the unanswered questions about Oswald too deeply, I walked an uncomfortably narrow line.

In *The Farther Reaches of Human Nature* by Abraham Maslow (Penguin Books, 1971) there appears the following: “There is still another psychological process that I have run across in my explorations of failure to actualize the self. This evasion of growth can also be set in motion by a fear of paranoia.” Although I was not to read those particular words until many years later, I was versed enough in modern literature of psychology to realize that traditional Freudian notions of paranoid schizophrenia and classical paranoia were under attack by more than just wild-eyed radicals. One of my textbooks in school contained a sociological study of a man who was committed for symptoms of paranoia; it demonstrated that, due to his rather unpleasant personality, he was actually being secretly harassed by his co-workers who, upon being interviewed, admitted as much.

At that point I took a long second look at the origins of my own fears of paranoia.

What popularized that brand of psychosis for my generation was the film, *The Caine Mutiny,* with Humphrey Bogart clicking his steel marbles

compulsively, saying, “I kid you not,” and making a fool of himself over a few stolen scoops of ice cream.

Another French Quarter writer who worked in a record store next to the Bourbon House, where I ate and drank and socialized when I lived in New Orleans, possessed a book about color psychology that said brown was the favorite color of most paranoids. He added to my information that most novelists tended toward paranoia, something about which we had both laughed a little nervously.

Another Quarterite, a painter named Loy Ann Camp who was among my closest friends, had a textbook from her days in nursing school that said paranoia was related to fear of latent homosexuality. Since my reason for joining the Marines earlier had been to prove to myself that I was a man in every sense, I didn’t find that information comforting either.

From additional sources I gathered that paranoids were quite undesirable cranks who took to sitting in corners stroking their chins and observing those around them with sidelong glances. Senator Joseph McCarthy was said to have been a paranoid as was Robert Welch, founder of the John Birch Society. In fact, all the really famous paranoids seemed to be anti-Communist — a consideration that did not sit well with my own rational capitalist philosophy of those days. Paranoids, in addition to all the other problems they were causing, were giving my politics a bad name with outlandish notions like Welch’s charge that grandfatherly old Ike was “a conscious agent of the Communist conspiracy” and his grandiose ambition to impeach Earl Warren from the Supreme Court.

Intellectual respectability required mental health, and it was becoming evident to me by then that mental health consisted of trusting everyone about everything as much as possible — and, for good measure, poking fun at anyone who didn’t. Especially to be trusted were the mass media, whose owners and personnel were not to be regarded as minions of the Establishment because, as they themselves used to attest with confidence, there was no Establishment in the United States of America. Only foreigners and paranoids believed that there were.

Intellectualizing and joking about paranoia was a favorite pastime of post-Beatnik, pre-Hippie Bohemian America — for reasons that were undoubtedly the result of coincidence, at least among individuals who did not want their sanity called into question.

A habitue of the Bourbon House, Chris Lanham, once entertained us with the diabolical theory that the psychological classification of paranoia had been developed by conspirators for the purpose of discrediting anyone bent on exposing them. When his friend, Jack Burnside, suggested sharing this hilariously evil notion with a wandering conspiracy buff we called Crazy David — because he thought people like the Rockefellers and DuPonts controlled the government — we told Jack the joke had gone far enough. Crazy David might actually believe him. And, as everybody knew, paranoids who received reinforcement for their delusions could become very dangerous.

In retrospect, I realized that Crazy David's views about who rules America did not seem especially insane. By 1972, my own analysis resembled it in many essential respects.

Then came Watergate.

Again my attention was absorbed by a public event that did not seem related to the John Kennedy assassination. That a reactionary warmonger like Nixon might be unceremoniously ejected from the White House for crimes that even Conservatives would find shocking seemed almost too good to be true. Eagerly, I followed the scandal, becoming more and more aware at the same time that conspiracies were a fact of political reality, even in America.

During the summer of 1973 I was in New York City, visiting my old friend Greg Hill, who in years past had accompanied me to New Orleans and lived as my roommate there for a few months. At a folk concert in Washington Square I was approached by a Yippie who wanted to sell me the latest issue of *The Yipster Times* for a quarter. A glance at the headline and cover photos convinced me it was worth the price.

What I found there has since been published in an excellent book by A.J. Weberman and Michael Canfield called *Coup d'Etat In America.* Convincing photographic evidence tends to establish that Watergate burglars E. Howard Hunt and Frank Sturgis were in the immediate vicinity of Dealy Plaza in Dallas the day John Kennedy was shot. That possibility brought to mind something I had almost managed to happily forget. A decade earlier in New Orleans I had discussed, among other things, the idea of assassinating President Kennedy with a man who in many unsettling respects bore a resemblance to the members of the Watergate break-in team. As I was to say to Weberman in a letter two years later, this man was "a plumbers type of guy."

Although he even looked something like pictures of E. Howard Hunt, his bald head diminished any direct physical similarity to that now-famous spy. More a matter of style than anything else seemed pertinent then. Also relevant were links between the CIA and organized crime that were coming to light in the wake of the Watergate revelations. For the man I spoke to used to let on that he was somehow associated with New Orleans mobster Carlos Marcello.

Already I had been suspecting tie-ins between Watergate and the J.F.K. murder because both crimes seemed connected to the Southern Rim or Cowboy faction of the American Establishment — the so-called military-industrial complex. I had, however, been bending over backwards not to jump to conclusions. Something about those photos of that man *The Yipster Times* argued was Edward Howard Hunt made such restraint harder. What, exactly, it might be continued to elude me.

Something else occurred that same summer that wore at my ability to keep believing this is the least conspiratorial of all possible worlds. Again, it was nagging rather than sensational.

After I wrote an article published in Atlanta's underground paper, *The Great Speckled Bird,* titled "Did the Plumbers Plug J.F.K., Too?" — I got two unusual phone calls.

First was a male voice imitating the sounds of a speeded-up tape recorder or a gibberish-talking cartoon character. Ten years earlier a Quarterite

named Roger Lovin and I used to address one another in the Bourbon House with identical noises to those I was now hearing on the other end of the line, as an inside joke intended to freak out strangers. This time I simply replied with a word or two of bewilderment, and the caller hung up.

Within seconds, the phone rang again. Now a male voice — not Roger's — said very clearly, "Kerry, do you know who this is?" When I answered in the negative, he said, "Good!" — and again the caller hung up.

Enough similarity existed between that voice on the phone and the voice of the man I had talked to all those years earlier about assassinating John F. Kennedy, that I became increasingly uncomfortable with the idea of keeping my suspicions to myself much longer.

I nevertheless persisted in my silence for more than another year. That was more than a little uncharacteristic of me, to consciously nurture something without talking or at least writing of it. But, while I was no longer as worried about going paranoid as in years past, I remained concerned that others would think me paranoid.

Then, too, there was another thing. This suspect of mine more than once had claimed a connection with the Mafia. Even if he was innocent of assassination, were I to accuse him in public, he might have what he considered a good motive for getting me killed. Until I was certain of his guilt, I didn't want to open my mouth.

Meanwhile, I continued to think about the phone calls. Was the caller trying to determine indirectly whether or not I'd spoken recently with Roger Lovin? Could Roger have known something that I happened to guess in my Bird article?

As a matter of fact it was not so long before that Roger Lovin had called me, making an appointment to come by the house while he was in town for a visit. On the day of his expected arrival, the woman I was living with and I went out for a brief interval. We returned to find all her jewelry missing, and Roger never showed up. I recalled that when I had known him in New Orleans, in the same year Kennedy was assassinated, his principal reputation was that of a talented con-artist.

I shrugged. That wasn’t much to go on.

Soon there was enough information in the news about assassination plots involving organized crime to draw my attention in that direction. In February of 1975 I had begun making cramped, secretive notes about the mysterious bald-headed man I had known in New Orleans. For the first time since the assassination, the Establishment was expressing suspicions of conspiracy, pushing for a Congressional probe of the events in Dallas. Only recently I had been called by CBS and someone from *Reader’s Digest* was even attempting to contact me. Expecting that before long I would be called before a Congressional committee to testify, I didn’t want to divulge anything sensational until I could speak under oath.

Instead, I prepared — quietly. As soon as my notes were completed to the point where they told a coherent, if abbreviated, story — I began discretely searching for a politically radical attorney. Employed part-time as a student assistant and distrustful of the Establishment because of their dishonesty in the past about the assassination issue, I wanted a lawyer who was an idealist because, neither financially nor politically, could I afford any other kind. If my information was relevant, and I believed now that it probably was, doing anything useful with it was still going for a long shot.

On the other hand, I was less worried than ever about seeming paranoid. If one thing had been made perfectly clear, it was that in the United States of America suspicions of conspiracy were no longer regarded as symptoms of mental illness.

In July of 1975 I noted in passing headlines in the local Atlanta papers that city Commissioner of Public Safety, Reginald Eaves, had for some time been quietly investigating anew the assassination of Dr. Martin Luther King, Jr. Although I had admired King while I held John Kennedy in contempt, I was then so preoccupied with things I was ferreting out here and there about the Presidential assassination that I failed to take much notice. For articles about the John Kennedy murder now seemed to be appearing everywhere.

From time to time I was meeting to compare notes with a staffer on *The Great Speckled Bird* who had written about the Southern Rim. Without mentioning my man in New Orleans with the bald head and links to Carlos Marcello, I sought further evidence that the cowboys of the military-industrial complex had murdered Kennedy in their way with the Yankees of the Northeastern Establishment. Marcello, as well as Nixon and Howard Hunt, were alleged to belong to this Southern faction. I figured the man I remembered and feared had to be in there somewhere.

Then I encountered an article in a scandal tabloid that disturbed me more than anything else, again for largely subjective reasons. One of their correspondents who was probing links between Carlos Marcello and the John Kennedy murder had blown his brains out with a .38 caliber pistol for no particular reason. As it happened, this resident of Baton Rouge, Louisiana, named Joe Cooper was lefthanded and the weapon was found in his right hand. The former girlfriend of the man with whom I discussed murdering the President met with much the same fate in 1964, just before I returned to New Orleans after a year's absence to visit.

Then early one morning the phone rang. On the other end of the line was the ACLU lawyer who at that time was the only other person with whom I had confided about the conversations summarized in my notes. One afternoon, after deciding I wanted him to handle my case when the time came, I had regaled him with a rambling, slightly hysterical account of my worst suspicions.

Now he was to ask me, "Have you been following this investigation by Eaves of the Martin Luther King assassination?"

I admitted I had not. "You might want to look into it," he said. "Their witness seems to be talking about some of the same people you mentioned to me in connection with Carlos Marcello."

That afternoon I obtained an Atlanta newspaper and read the article pertaining to what was fast becoming a controversial investigation. A young man who supplied accurate information to the police about a narcotics ring was also insisting that just previous to the murder of Martin Luther King he

overheard one of its members say of King, “I’m going to shoot that damned nigger in the head and frame a jailbird for it, just like I did with Kennedy.”

Had the word “jailbird” been a post-hypnotic trigger been planted in my unconscious to release a flood of memories, results could not have been more dramatic. For one of the things my own suspect had discussed with me all those years ago was framing a jailbird for the John Kennedy murder. In fact, I recalled now that I was the one who talked him out of it. Moreover, he had also talked about assassinating Martin Luther King.

No longer in doubt that my man, known to me as Gary Kirstein, possessed advanced knowledge of the John Kennedy murder, I went into action. First I typed up a number of brief memos about our conversations and distributed them almost at random, in order to assure that if I was fatally silenced there would be evidence to indicate why.

Thereafter I endeavored to contact my prospective attorney, only to discover that he was out of town. Unsure of what to do next, convinced that I should act fast, I wound up taking my information to the office of the Commissioner of Public Safety. That was after I first attended a party where I was given a funny-tasting marijuana cigarette, that made me feel uninhibited and talkative, and then questioned intensively by a group of inquisitive individuals. And it was after, within a few days of the first incident, I again met one of the people from that party, who handed me a pipeload of marijuana that blistered the inside of my mouth when I started to inhale the smoke.

Commissioner Eaves then announced a press conference wherein he said he would reveal startling evidence in the King case. Instead, when the day of the conference arrived, he said he was dropping the probe — because, he said, his chief witness, Robert Byron Watson, refused to take a lie detector test. I was baffled and frightened.

Then the newspapers announced the disappearance of labor leader Jimmy Hoffa, and I recalled that the man I knew as Gary Kirstein once asked me what I thought about letting Hoffa in on a conspiracy to assassinate Kennedy.

Greg Hill, my former New Orleans roommate, arrived in Atlanta for a visit to find me nearly hysterical. At least once he had met Gary, remembering as I did that we had suspected him of stealing a typewriter from our apartment. Greg also drew my attention to a magazine article asserting that counter-cultural writer and publisher Paul Krassner had uncovered links between the Kennedy assassination and the Manson family.

Twelve days after I had taken my information to the Atlanta police, a ski-masked bandit pulled a stick-up at a party both Greg and I were attending and stole his identification and mine — taking only money from other guests.

From that day in early August of 1975 until the day of this writing in 1982 my life has been a constant series of similar misadventures — including poisonings, threats and bribe offers, intense psychological harassments, mysterious interrogations and occasional reminders about things in those fateful conversations with “Brother-in-law.”

I call that man “Brother-in-law,” because I am not at all certain that his name was really Gary Kirstein. There is every reason to surmise he was not using his own name, and I remember him most as the brother-in-law of a French Quarter character named Slim Brooks. And because of Slim’s extremely distinctive turn of speech, he himself seldom called Gary “my brother-in-law.” Instead, it was always, “Let’s go visit Brother-in-law tomorrow.”

I had arrived in New Orleans the day after Mardi Gras in 1961. Except for May, June, July, August and part of September of 1963 — I lived there until 13 December 1963. Beginning in the aftermath of the Bay of Pigs, and continuing up to about the time of the John Kennedy assassination, Slim must have uttered those words between fifteen and twenty-five times. Since these invitations were far apart and infrequent, I never turned Slim down.

Sometimes Brother-in-law would come to the French Quarter and get us. More often, Slim would arrange in advance to borrow his car and then would drive us to Brother-in-law’s house out in the country the next day.

It was difficult to take seriously what Brother-in-law said about his plans to murder the President. Not that Slim didn't seem honest. On the contrary, he seemed too honest to get himself involved with anyone heavy enough to actually go out and assassinate a President — if Slim would have to lie about it afterwards. To suspect Slim of being a conspirator seemed too paranoid for words.

In April of 1976 I again had occasion to think about paranoia in relation to the John Kennedy assassination. For I attended a lecture in Atlanta by none other than Jim Garrison, for whom by then I felt a lot of sympathy. In light of what I remembered now, it seemed his suspicions of me were only slightly misplaced. I was not a field agent in the assassination; I was among those who helped plan it!

In the question period after his speech Garrison said something I found both significant and touching: "Of course, I have to lean over backwards not to be paranoid, because I have been accused of paranoia in the past."

One of his diagnosticians had been me; now I was dealing with exactly the same double bind of trying to probe conspiracies without coming on like a paranoid in the eyes of my friends.

Through an emissary I let it be known to Garrison that I wanted to meet with him. His reply: "Not only do I not want to meet with Kerry Thornley, I don't even want to hear his name. In fact, I don't even want to think about Kerry Thornley!"

Feeling very much alone, I continued my daily dealings with what were obviously conspiracies — including a correspondence with a man I hoped was a charming crank who was telling me in his letters "why we Fascists assassinated Kennedy." How I got on Stan Jamison's mailing list in the first place some years earlier was a mystery to me. Since 1970, though, Greg Hill and I both had been receiving from him everything from advice about how to grow organic sprouts to racist newspapers published by White Christians who were armed and quite dangerous.

In reply to one of my memos about Kirstein that had fallen into his hands indirectly, he wrote me to say that the tragedy in Dallas was plotted by the

Secret Order of Thule in such a way as to assure that no cover-up could remain convincing forever. Motive: to make the American public paranoid about their government and mass media. For paranoia, he told me, is a big step in the direction of mental health.

People who become paranoid, Stan Jamison wrote, will not rest until they discover every last shred of truth. Among the devices used to encourage awareness of conspiracy were the many crude Oswald impersonations that occurred just previous to the assassination. Puzzled for more than a decade about exactly that mystery, I had to admit this was the first credible hypothesis to explain it without making the assassins look like idiots. And had they been less than geniuses, there would have been no cover-up at all.

Jamison further informed me that the conspiracy was constructed in concentric circles, like Chinese boxes, with descending levels, so that only "the man at the center" understood afterwards exactly what had happened. Of course, I could not ignore the possibility that man might have been Brother-in-law.

What brought the many loose ends in the John Kennedy murder mystery together for me was this realization that it was a maximum complicity crime. Various factions must have been deliberately implicated on a blind-alliance basis, so that once the event occurred, every group of conspirators was startled at evidence of participation by someone besides themselves.

Like Brother-in-law, Jamison seemed morbidly fascinated with Hitler and Nazi Germany. Both men mentioned in particular little-known aspects of the Third Reich — such as the secret pagan rituals of the S.S. and the occult beliefs of Hitler's cohorts. Both repeated a rumor that Nazi rocket scientists discovered energy secrets the oil companies were repressing to this day. And whether either or both were living some kind of macabre hoax or were absolutely fanatical was impossible to decide, since neither man was without humor. For instance, Jamison always signed off with, "Love is Alive and Well."

As might be anticipated, it struck me that perhaps Stan Jamison and Gary Kirstein were the same person, so in 1977 I dropped in on Jamison unexpectedly at his address in Sacramento, California. Not only was he not

the same man I had conversed with in New Orleans, but it was plain that the spine-chilling ranting in his letters was just a big put-on.

That isn't to say his information about the assassination could not have been valid. A warm, intelligent human being obviously unsympathetic to Fascism, he nevertheless seemed quite versed in secret society and intelligence community politics.

"I come on all hairy like that in my letters," he told me, "to scare off government agents." Although that statement didn't sound convincing, it seemed a safe bet his motives were not cruel — a consideration that leaves undetermined whether or not they were misguided.

How paranoid is it to fear such individuals? Perhaps that is the wrong question. Maybe we should ask ourselves: Is it rational to dismiss them in the name of popularized notions of sanity?`

Later on I was to encounter a rumor that Stan Jamison acquired his information from one Michael Stanley, then serving a prison term in California. As Lovable Ol' Doc Stanley, Michael Stanley was known to me personally as one of the heavier, darker characters of the California counter-culture. We met each other in a hip coffee house after I moved to Los Angeles about a year after John Kennedy's assassination. Although I didn't like to admit it for fear of seeming paranoid, I found Michael Stanley terrifying.

Perhaps if we clearly defined this thing we call paranoia it would not cause us to behave so foolishly. Genuine paranoia actually contains at least three ingredients: fear, suspicion and mystification. Technically, it is heightened awareness, but not yet perfect awareness.

Professional espionage agents are, for example, frequently both suspicious and mystified, but have long since learned to live without much fear. For that reason, we don't call them paranoids.

To be both frightened and confused, without a systematic method of blaming others for those conditions, is to be vulnerable to some other psychiatric classification than paranoia. Fear and suspicion combined with

exact, provable knowledge as to the identity of one's oppressors is generally considered heroic. Paranoia, then, only exists in politics where fear and suspicion linger for no external reason and, as is more often true, in cases where the subject is incorrect about who to suspect and what to fear — the condition of mystification.

Unfortunately nearly all oppressors in conspiracy politics strive skillfully to mystify their victims — often with enormous resources to help the work along.

"The arguments he used to justify his use of the alias suggest that Oswald may have come to think that the whole world was becoming involved in an increasingly complex conspiracy against him," charged the Warren Commission, also saying, "Oswald was overbearing and arrogant throughout much of the time between his arrest and his own death. He consistently refused to admit involvement in the assassination or in the killing of Patrolman Tippitt."

Oswald's perceptions of reality may have been far more accurate than the words of his accusers.

CULTS & CASUALTIES

SORCERY
· SEX ·
ASSASSINATION
AND
THE SCIENCE
OF
SYMBOLISM
ANTON

Sorcery, Sex, Assassination and the Science of Symbolism

James Shelby Downard

The following is a fleshed-out version of Shelby Downard's popular article "King Kill / 33°," which appeared in the first edition of Apocalypse Culture. The appeal of Downard is in his indefatigable research into blind corners combined with his paranoid's eye for hidden associations. In linking US history to the mystic conurbations of the Freemasons Downard reveals an intuitive genius. Mr. Downard's work has no corollary anywhere in respectable publications, and indeed such an "alternative" sort of scribe as Robert Anton Wilson charges in his Cosmic Trigger that Downard's JFK thesis is "the most absurd, the most incredible, the most ridiculous lIluminati theory of them all." Wilson further charges that Downard, in tandem with Fortean researcher William N. Grimstad, possess a strange and alarming reality tunnel; alarming because they may well lead us to accept the possibility that a grand occult plan has been orchestrated to turn us into cybernetic mystery zombies. Coincidence, crackpotism or conspiracy? You decide.

This is as good a time as any to tell you that Nothing Is What It Seems.

The power of the Secret Government over the news media continues unabated. During the time of the Watergate scandal others scandals of the past were reviewed, but the torture-murder of Captain William Morgan in 1826 — from which developed an anti-Mason political party that challenged Freemason Andrew Jackson for the presidency — and the murder of Joseph Smith the Mormon prophet, which resulted in the men of the Mormon Church withdrawing from Freemasonry, were ignored.

The information I present in these pages is well-known to certain news agencies who have chosen to suppress it; similarly the motivation for the

JFK assassination has been plunged into cryonic secrecy — facts concerning the assassination are on ice and will be be revealed in the future in the so-called “Revelation of the Method.” The freeze-wait-revive scheme is part of the master plan of Masonic Sorcery.

The ability of the Secret Government to immobilize the release of vital information to the public is in part due to the apathy of American people, who are benumbed by revelation after revelation. It is a peculiar phenomena that certain revelations move people to action while episodic revelations of the same type stun them into inaction.

For years I have been trying to draw attention to Masonic Sorcery and its relationship to political control. I believe that many people instinctually realize the power that “Freemasonry” exerts on the Government of the United States; but since they are Hoodwinked they do not understand the secrecy, silence and darkness that surrounds the mysteries of the “Masonic Art.” And so control of the Government of the United States is traced merely to Wall St., and not to the crossroads of witchcraft.

America is a news ghetto where the news media continually endeavors to promote apathy while going through the motions, the lip-sync, of reform. Like a haunted house draining its occupants of will in return for sleep without nightmares, American people are mental captives of a Horror that feeds them misinformation as its stone bell tolls the death of individuality.

I publish this, in the wake of the situation Charles Seymour alluded to: “The moralist unquestionably secures wide support; but he also wearies his audience.” I have heard some Americans say, as though they were puzzled by a difficult question, “Why should I let such things upset me?” If those people not completely lost in apathy discover what the Master Plan has planned for them, they will get fighting mad.

Most “Freemasons” apparently have no idea of the evil that is part of Masonry, and if they do hear about it they don’t believe it. The same is true of most members of the Masonic-oriented fraternal organizations, for the Masonic Cryptocracy is a secret, anomalous thing.

> It is certain that onomatology, or the science of names, forms a very interesting part of the investigations of the higher Masonry, and it is only in this way that any connections can be created between the two sciences. — *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry*

> When the ancients saw a scapegoat, they could at least recognize him for what he was: a *pharmakos,* a human sacrifice. When modern man sees one, he does not, or refuses to, recognize him for what he is; instead he looks for 'scientific' explanations — to explain away the obvious. — Thomas Szasz, *Ceremonial Chemistry*

The "science of names" forms only one segment of the science of symbolism used by the Masons. Names, i.e., words, are merely descriptions and they rise and fall in usage like a Cartesian doll. Some words fall into disuse quickly, while other words are given meanings that are known only to the initiated.

The JFK assassination encounters this science in a decisive way, and contains a veritable nightmare of symbol-complexes having to do with violence, perversion, conspiracy, death and degradation. These elements are important not only as cause-and-effect in the murder of a president but in the ensuing reaction of the people of America and the world.

The fertility and death symbolism in the Killing Of The King rite, the Masonic Greening Ritualism, has been suppressed because its examination must necessarily reveal Masonry's mystical political influence. This would erode public confidence in:

a. The concept of Masonic progressivism, i.e., liberty, equality, fraternity.

b. Those who have shielded the conspirators.

c. The entire mental construct that passes for knowledge of the genuine nature of the U.S. government.

The Hell-Fire Club

The Hell-Fire Club (Monks of Medmenham, Friars of St. Francis) was a society of ruffians and drunkards who engaged in sexual orgies similar to those of the “Mollies,” “Gormogans,” “Mankillers,” “Blasters,” “Mohawks,” “Sweaters,” “She Romps Club,” the “Fun Club,” etc. Engaged in political agitation and conspiracy, they were dedicated to the destruction of the Catholic church. The membership was highly-placed in the British government: the Prime Minister, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, the First Lord of the Admiralty, the Prince of Wales and the Lord Mayor of London all shared in the “privileges” of the Hell-Fire Club. Benjamin Franklin, who was initiated into Freemasonry at St. John’s Lodge in Philadelphia, and who is credited with publishing the first Masonic book in America was a member and was also connected with the Lodge of the Nine Sisters in France.

Benjamin Franklin and Sir Francis Dashwood, founder of the Hell-Fire Club, wrote a prayer book which became the basis of the book of common prayer that is used in many American Protestant churches. Because Sir Francis Dashwood was the so-called Lord le DeSpencer, his prayer book in England was referred to as the “Franklin-DeSpencer Prayer Book.” In the United States that book was called the “Franklin Prayer Book.” It was composed at Dashwood’s manor-house at West Wycombe, the site of numerous rites of *magica sexualis.* Franklin and Dashwood created their volume of entreaties in between sodomy-sucking-sorcery sessions.

Eventually Dashwood dug a huge cave on his West Wycombe estate to facilitate the performance of sex magic. Later a road was constructed to High Wycombe which utilized soil taken from the cave dug by the Hell-Fire Club. Brunei University is located in High Wycombe and F.H. George, Ph.D., is director of its world-renowned Cybernetics department. George defines cybernetics as a “science concerned with all matters of controls and communications and to this extent it trespasses what we have come to think of as the established sciences.” Cybernetics, of course, is intimately concerned with artificial or machine intelligence. This concern is predicated, to a certain degree, on human cooperation with machines. Symbolism is a cybernetic science.

Miss Chudleigh

Miss Chudleigh, the “dollymop” for the Hell-Fire Club, was a Jewess. Certainly she was not “Miss,” nor was her name Chudleigh at the time she was dubbed “Miss Chudleigh” by Horace Walpole. Chudleigh was the name of a town and she was a “woman of common property” there. Complete secrecy of the harlots or “dollymops” involved in performing sexual perversions at the High-Fire Club was seen as essential. This concealment has to do with “the secrecy and silence of Masonry.”

Harpocrates, the Greek god of secrecy and silence, whose statue was often placed at the entrance of temples, caves and other places where the mysteries were performed, was of symbolical importance to the Hell-Fire Club. A statue of Harpocrates, which depicted him holding a finger to his mouth, was one of a number of statues used on club premises.

On April 24, 1783, Pope Clement XII, a bitter foe of *magica sexualis*, issued his celebrated Bull of Excommunication entitled *In Eminenti Apostolatus Specula.* it specifically decreed:

“In order to close the widely open road to iniquities which might be committed with impunity and also for other reasons, just and reasonable, that have come to our knowledge … We have resolved and decreed to condemn and forbid such Societies, assemblies, reunions, conventions, aggregations or meetings called either Freemasonic or known under some other denomination. We condemn and forbid them by this, our present constitution, which is to be considered valid forever.”

Due to Pope Clement’s decree Miss Chudleigh faced pressure outside of England. In an act of Defiance, King Frederick II became Chudleigh’s protector and bedfellow. Still, this was not so outrageous, since Prussia was not considered a Catholic country; however, Poland was. It was here that Prince Radzvil, the ancestor and husband of Jacqueline Kennedy’s sister, took the whore Chudleigh. The Radzvil fortune was considered the greatest in the nation. The family itself was related to the Hohenzollerns and the Romanovs.

According to legend, Miss Chudleigh carried a “mystical taint.” According to the Masonry of Cagliostro (magnetic masonry) there exists a thing described as “the transfer of magnetic force.” This “mystical taint” is supposedly attached to those who traffic in ritual sex perversions. According to the record, the fortunes of the Radzvils have declined ever since.

Macbeth and Scotland

Before pointing to the mystical associations between the murder of JFK and Shakespeare’s tragedy of *Macbeth* I wish to call attention to the appearance of the witches in Act I, Scene I, and to the line in which they chant, “Fair is foul, and foul is fair,” which is reminiscent of alchemical individuation or shaping of an integrated personality in the psychology of C.G. Jung, in which the “archetype of unity” (self-head, auto-cephalous), the Yetzer Ha-Ra and Yetzer ha Tov of the Jews, and the Masonic “Mingling of All with AH” is manifested.

It is important to note the appearance of Hecate to the three witches. Hecate is triple-countenanced, and being three-fold in aspect she is known as Diana on earth, Luna in heaven, and Hecate in hell. These three women comprise one of the triads of western mythology. Such triads were a central part of ancient religions, and the “mystical triad” idea became part of Masonic symbolism. There is in fact a triad of three governing officers to be found in almost every degree, and in the higher degrees there exists a symbolical triad that presides under various names, just as Hecate presides in different places under various names.

Crossroads were considered sacred to Diana-Hecate, the deity who is both virgin and whore (“Fair is foul, and foul is fair”), and such crossroads were the favored sites of the wanton women-witches and the Grand Masters (Masonic sorcerers) who were her votaries.

Crossroads are significant to ritual sex magic; the wearing of clothes of the opposite sex and the performance of bisexual acts are called “crossroad rites.” The women engaging in these perversions were referred to as

“dikes,” and it was said that they traveled “the old dike road” and “the old dirt road.” These sorts of activities, in keeping with Hecate lore, are secret to the extreme. *Tacitisque paebens conscium sacris jubar, Hecate triformis.* (“Triple Hecate, who giveth forth rays cognizant of secret mysteries.”)

Crossroads were also places of human and animal sacrifice. Such rites were often carried out in conjunction with *magica sexualis* since the participants recognized an existing relationship between fertility and death. Hecate is therefore also identified as a “death goddess,” and her sex-and-death attributes are similar to those ascribed to Venus (Aphrodite, Prone, Kypris).

MacBird

The idea for the play *MacBird* possibly originated at an anti-war rally in Berkeley, California when Barbara Garson, in a speech referred to the First Lady as “Lady MacBird Johnson.” She is said to have subsequently decided to write a play based on *Macbeth* and have it performed at the “International Day of Protest,” but it actually had its premiere at the Village Gate Theater in Greenwich Village.

Newspaper publisher William Loeb charged that Garson’s *MacBird* implies that President and Mrs. Johnson were conspiratorially involved in the JFK assassination. Loeb asked his attorney: “… to research immediately if there is any action this newspaper can take to ask the U.S. Attorney of the Southern District of New York to request the appropriate court to issue an injunction against the further showing of *MacBird.”*

Newspapers throughout the country took up the cry. A drama critic for United Press International wrote, “*MacBird*, presented yesterday at the Village Gate, is a sophomoric, heavy-handed parody of *Macbeth* that strikes a new low in theatrical taste.”

The word “sophomore” is derived from the Greek words “sophos,” meaning wise, and “moros,” meaning foolish. Granted, it seemed foolish for Barbara Garson to challenge the system with the play *MacBird*, but let

us see if there is anything shrewd, astute or erudite about the Garson parody. In the words of Erasmus, can Barbara Garson be said to be a “morosopher,” a wise fool?

President Lyndon Baines Johnson’s name is phonetically linked to the Macbeth clan. Clansmen were divided into two classes: those who were related by blood and those individuals and groups who were under clan protection. Consequently, clans had sects of different appellations and people with the same surname are known to have been attached to different clans.

The Macbeth clan is related, in a clannish manner, to the Baine clan. The lack of clear distinction between blood relatives and those under clan protection in Scottish genealogy has become so complex as to baffle expert genealogists. Numerous Scottish names are rendered with a variety of spellings and it is a matter of record that the sons of many Scotsmen spelled their names differently from their fathers. With this in mind, consider a clan listing of the Bain and Macbeth clan structure.

Bain, Macbean, Mackay, Macnab — Bayne, Macbean, MacKay, Macnab — Bean, Macbean — Beathy, MacBeth — Binnie, MacBean MacBain, Macbean — Macbeath, MacBean — MacBeth, Macbean, Macilvain, Macbean — Melvin, MacBeth.

The MacBeath, MacBean and the MacBeth, Macbean part of this clan structure apparently had tartans of their own. “Mac,” of course, means “son of,” and all the Masons of the Bain, Bayne, Bean, Beathy, Binnie, Beath, Beth clans all publicly claim to have the same ancestor.

The Bains (Baines), in keeping with this name-exchange, are apt to refer to the same clan even though the spelling may be Bain, Baines or even Bane, as it has sometimes appeared. All of these are in a clan structure with Macbeth.

We have ascertained that President Lyndon Baines Johnson, through the magic of mystery and words, is associated with Bain-Bean-Macbeth. Bain, in French, means, among other things, bath. There are obviously many types of baths — sweat baths, mineral water baths, champagne baths, milk

baths, blood baths, baptismal baths. The resurrection bath of alchemy denotes rebirth, and the purification or absolution baths are given to Masonic “Knights of the Bath” before performing heinous deeds. There are many ritual aspects to the bath; for example, when he was vice-president, Lyndon Baines Johnson, of “blood bath” association, removed his shoes before entering a Moslem bath house reminiscent of the Rite of Discalceation in the Third Degree of Masonry, which has to do with assassination.

Shortly before the assassination of President Kennedy, *Macbeth* was performed in the White House. The part of Macbeth was played by actor Franklin Cover. In a photograph widely circulated in a national magazine, Cover is seen standing under a chandelier. The chandelier is a magnificent work of art said to comprise 5060 pieces of cut glass. Jacqueline Kennedy ordered the chandelier removed from the White House as one of her last acts as First Lady.

Chandeliers have tremendous symbolical importance in sorcery. For example, a chandelier is said to be the test of a “jettatore’s” power. A jettatore is a man possessed of the “malocchio,” the “evil eye.” Jettatore literally means, in Italian, “thrower,” or one who casts.

A photograph was also taken of Mrs. Kennedy at the performance, also showing her standing underneath the same chandelier that hung over Franklin Cover in his Macbeth costume. There is, in folklore, the superstition that when a wife believes her husband has been injured or killed by sorcerous means instigated by a *jettatore*, she is to go to that jettatore’s chandelier and throw her shoe at it. (None of this is intended to imply that Mr. Cover is a sorcerer, only that his picture under so symbolical an artifact is striking in and of itself.) It is also a folk belief that the taking of a position under a chandelier by a practitioner of the evil eye is accompanied by a sound. Slightly to the east of “Crescent City” (New Orleans) there is an area called “Chandeleur Sound’” beneath it, on many maps, is the word “Freemason.”

Kennedy, Beale and Bouvier

Recall Miss Chudleigh, the woman who served as the “great whore” for a time with the sorcerer-oriented Hell-Fire Club: after the edicts and bulls issued by the Pope, Miss Chudleigh was hard-pressed to find refuge on the continent and yet she was finally successful in the camp of a supposedly Catholic Prince — Radzvil — in an undoubtedly Catholic country. This protection may have somehow caused the string of misfortunes which later befell the apostate Catholic Radzvils since it was maintained that Madame Chudleigh was imbued with a curse or mystical taint due to her involvement in ritual sex perversions.

Gore Vidal, Jacqueline Bouvier Kennedy Onassis and Caroline (Lee) Bouvier were the “stepchildren” of Hugh D. Auchincloss. Mr. Vidal is, of course, a well-known author. Some of his work describes the Kennedys as an “Illusion-Making Clan,” and alleges “they [the Kennedys] create illusion and call it facts.” However, in fairness, it should be noted that Vidal has also called them the “Holy Family” and the President and First Lady the “Sun God” and Goddess.”

When JFK was 22, Irene Wiley sculptured a likeness of him as a winged angel; her work was presented to the Vatican where it was used as a part of a panel in which the angel hovers over St. Therese while she writes in a book. After his fatal trip to Dallas, President Kennedy’s remains were code-named “Angel” and that was also the name of the “flying hearse” (Air Force One) which returned him to the capitol.

Tragedy seems to live with the Kennedy family, newspapers tell us. Indeed, Bobby Kennedy was assassinated, Teddy Kennedy suffered a severe back injury in a plane crash; before JFK’s assassination, his father suffered a crippling stroke, sister Rosemary has been mentally handicapped since birth, Kathleen was killed in a plane crash, and eldest son Joseph was killed in action during World War II. Only a few years ago, the son of Senator Ted Kennedy was forced to undergo the amputation of his leg; prior to that, his father was involved in the drowning of a young secretary which effectively silenced the Senator against those who murdered his brothers, since, with typical J. Edgar Hoover morality, most of the facts of the case were suppressed and would find a swift and international messenger should the senator from Massachusetts renege on his “commitments.” Let us

examine the incredible symbolism deeply related to the Kennedy family and perhaps discern an etiology.

The “Rowan” is a death plant in herbal lore and was an ingredient in a sleeping potion witches gave their husbands when they wanted to perform activities to which their spouses would strongly object. The rowan, like so many “magical,” plants was used by Christians as protection against ill fortune. It was also a means of church decoration and was widely planted in cemeteries in the belief that it would restrain the dead from premature resurrection. In some places, the First of May was called Rowan or Hawthorne Day, or Rowan Tree Witch Day.

Peter Lawford, one time brother-in-law of President John F. Kennedy, was later married to Mary Rowan, the daughter of *Laugh-In* series television star Dan Rowan. Peter Lawford and Patricia Kennedy Lawford were divorced in 1966 and it was then that Lawford took his “Rowan” to bed. He also made certain similar arrangements for Marilyn Monroe in the service of John and Robert Kennedy. Marilyn Monroe has been described as the “Silvery Witch of us all” (Norman Mailer) and she is important in the fertility and death symbolism pervading the “Boston Brahmins.”

President Kennedy was the recipient of a birthday party in his honor in Madison Square Garden and Peter Lawford invited Marilyn Monroe to sing “Happy Birthday” there. When she was scheduled to sing, a spotlight was thrown on an empty stage and she was announced three times. She appeared after the third call and was introduced as “the late Marilyn Monroe.”

Among her husbands was a Shriner (Mason) named Robert Slatzer. In Slatzer’s book, *The Life and Curious Death of Marilyn Monroe*, circumstantial evidence is presented suggesting that Attorney General Robert Kennedy was somehow involved in the “curious death.” At no time, however, has Mr. Slatzer referred to Masonic sorcery.

The European news magazine, *Das Neue Blatt* details not only the much touted love affair between the Hollywood star and the President, but the rivalry between the First Lady and the star. The Das Neue Blatt article broadly hinted that Jackie “helped drive Marilyn to her suicide.” Jacqueline

Bouvier Kennedy Onassis has a family and a past at least as strange and enigmatic as that of her deceased first husband.

Mrs. Edith Bouvier Beale was the sister of John Bouvier, the father of Jacqueline. Mrs. Beale and her daughter Edith (Edie) lived in a state of wretchedness and destitution in a decaying mansion in East Hampton, Long Island. Eviction proceedings against the Beales were initiated because the women were discovered to be living in total squalor amid piles of empty pet food cans, newspapers and assorted filth. For some reason, Madame Onassis permitted a film crew to record the degradation of her aunt and niece, and anyone viewing *Grey Gardens* will certainly attest to the "House of Usher" eccentricities of the pair. As an analogy of control, it is interesting to note that a peculiar rapport occasionally exists between owners and domesticated animals, and that the Beale mansion reflects a reversal of roles in the master-pet relationship.

John F. Kennedy was born on May 29, 1917 at 83 Beals Street, Brookline, Massachusetts. Beals-Beale-Beal are names associated with the Kennedys through the magic and mystery of words. Beale onomatology is rendered thus: El-Bel-Baal-Be al-Beal-Beale. El is said to be one of the Hebrew names of God, signifying the "mighty one." It is the root of many other divine names and therefore, many of the sacred names in Masonry. Approximately one mile from Lindisfarne (the "Holy Island"/"Holy House") is a barren place known as "Beal." Lindisfarne is associated with Heredom, and the legends of King Arthur, the Round Table, Merlin, and other Camelot stories, as well as the Scottish Black Watch.

Bouvier means "cowherder" and *Look* magazine has traced this family to Grenoble, France where their first mention appears in 1410. "Jackie's" great-great-grandfather, Eustache Bouvier, fought in a French regiment under the command of George Washington while his elder brother Joseph remained in France. *Look* magazine located Mrs. Kennedy's Bouvier relatives in "the ancestral town" and this genealogical find brought relief and joy to the family, for as "Mama" Bouvier put it: "We know what they have been whispering about us. We had to swallow our tongues. Now they can say no more."

Arrangements were made for a delegation of Bouviers to journey to Paris and meet with their famous relation while the President was conferring with de Gaulle. During this period, a painting of the renowned Pont St. Esprit, located in ancestral Bouvier country was painted by the brother-in-law of Marcel Bouvier and shipped to the White House. This “Spirit Bridge” is equated with the “Bridge of Souls,” which, in turn, linked with the “Bridge of Dread,” “Baine Bridge,” “Log of Lerma,” “Al Sirat,” and “Cinvato Paratu.” Such bridges are symbolically associated with death and crossing them can be a difficult and harrowing experience. (Cf. Poe’s “Never Bet the Devil Your Head” and Kipling’s “The Man Who Would Be King.”)

Two French radio reporters drove Marcel and eighteen-year-old Danielle Bouvier to the Paris reception for themselves and the Kennedys. After traveling some hundred miles, their car struck a tree and Danielle was killed. With her had been a beribboned box which contained a gift for the First Lady, to whom it was addressed as “For my dear cousin”; inside was a tiny nightingale “broken in its gilded cage.”

Danielle is the feminine form of Daniel and Daniel is a Hebrew word meaning “God is my judge.”

News reports failed to mention the type of tree involved in the crash which took away “Danielle” and ruined her nightingale. Whether or not it was a thorn tree of the rowan type, legend has it that a nightingale sings with its breast pressed against a thorn.

The island of Delos is the reputed birthplace of Apollo and Diana. It is located in the southwest Aegean Sea and is considered the domain of Hecate, the patroness of the ‘Infernal Arts.’ Delos is alternately known as the “Island of the Dead.”

There is nothing more appropriate for the wife of a slain “Sun God” than a pilgrimage to Delos as Jacqueline Kennedy did. She also journeyed to the Temple of Apollo at Delphi, and to the ancient Greek Theatre situated above Delphi. It was here that the former First Lady performed what is known as the rite of “greeting the sun” — a fixture in mythology of great antiquity. One might observe that Mrs. Kennedy performed her “sun greeting” with the expertise of an Aleister Crowley.

Before she made her Apollo-oriented pilgrimage, she was photographed wearing a large “diamond sun-burst” on her head. She was reported to be doing some Greek “island-hopping” on the yacht “North Wind” owned by shipping magnate Marcos Nomikos. The island of Epidaurus was one of its ports of call where Jacqueline Kennedy attended Sophocles” *Electra* by the National Theatre of Greece, and then moved on to Hydra, an island named for the dreaded monster-serpent whose nine heads were capable of generation after decapitation.

Another important stop in Mrs. Kennedy’s highly symbolical peregrination is Santorina (Thera), an isle often connected in folklore to the Island of the Vampires or “sucking-fairies.” In fact, Santorina shares the same reputation for vampires as Haiti does for zombies, or the Dominican Republic for the CIA. According to these stories, there was at least as much sucking going on in Santorina (Thera) as on the island of Lesbos.

Mystical Toponomy

Mystical toponomy pertains to the magic and mystery of words intersecting with the Masonic science of symbolism. While it differs from the “Old Straight Track” rediscovered by Watkins in the early part of this century, in which alignments or ley lines were discovered to sweep through power sites of ancient religious uses, no one has thus far documented any political or sorcerous uses.

In considering my data, it would be helpful to consider a dictum of Einsteinian physics — a science few would accuse of fanaticism or irrationality: “Time relations among events are assumed to be first constituted by the specific physical relations obtaining between them.”

My study of place names imbued with sorcerous significance necessarily include lines of latitude and longitude and the divisions of degrees in geography and cartography (minutes and seconds).

Let us take as an example “Mason Road” in Texas, which connects to the “Mason No El Bar” and the Texas-New Mexico (“The Land of Enchantment”) border. This connecting line is on the 32nd degree. The 32nd degree in Masonry of the Scottish Rite is the next to the highest degree awarded. When this 32nd degree line of latitude is traced west into the “Land of Enchantment” it becomes situated midway between Deming and Columbus (NM). Slightly to the north of the town of Columbus are the Tres Hermanas (Three Sisters) mountains. The Three Sisters are found approximately 32 miles between Deming and Columbus and are a minute and some seconds south of the 32nd degree line. When this line is traced further to the west it is found to pass the ghost town of Shakespeare at a distance south of the town that is roughly equivalent to the distance which the 32nd degree line passes north of the Three Sisters Mountains. The names Shakespeare and the Three Sisters find their connection in the tragedy of *Macbeth.*

When this 32nd degree line is traced some little distance farther west, into Arizona, it crosses an old trail which meandered north of what is now another ghost town, but which at one time was the town of “Ruby.” Part of the old winding trail became known as the “Ruby Road.” The town of Ruby is established to have acquired its name officially on April 11, 1912, when a post office commenced operation. The town became notorious for many brutal murders which had ritual aspects. Four of these homicides occurred in a store attached to the post office which had been erected over the grave of a Catholic priest. Continuing on with mystical toponomy, one encounters the fact that the Ruby road twists north into the area of two mountain peaks that are known as the Kennedy and Johnson Mountains.

Johnson Mountain is supposedly named after the general manager of the Peabody Mining Company, who also had a town named after him. The 32nd degree of latitude is but a few seconds from Johnson. In this frontier town on a December evening, 1883, a man known as Colonel Mike Smith and a man called Mason were ambushed by gunfighters described as being of questionable reputation and questionable character. These terms are employed in Masonic writings: “He, (Captain William Morgan) was a man of questionable character and dissolute habits, and his enmity to Masonry is

said to have originated in the refusal of the Masons of Leroy…" — *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry*

The attack on Mason and Smith, occurring as it did on the 32nd degree line near Keystone, is of ritual significance reminiscent of some other disputes along a certain Mason-Dixon line.

A “keystone” is the designation for the stone at the apex of an arch which, when set in place, “keys” or locks the whole. A symbolical keystone is vital to the legend of the Masonic Royal Arch Degree of York. The earliest known record of such a degree is in the annals of the city of Fredericksburg, Virginia on December 22, 1753. Fredericksburg is also the location of the “House of the Rising Sun,” a Masonic meeting place for such notables as Founding Fathers George Washington and Benjamin Franklin (of Hell-Fire Club fame), and George Mason.

The Royal Arch

The “Ancient York Grand Lodge” allegedly went out of existence at the same time as the Grand Mother Lodge and all other lodges of this rite followed it into “extinction.” Certain Masons have admitted that one of its degrees, the “Royal Arch,” is neither “arch or Royal Arch” (Secretary, Royal Arch Degree, 1759). He continues on to reveal that, “The Royal Arch Degree is not just a separate entity now, but part of the Masonic system.” Had this Royal Arch fallen into the desuetude of the York Rite as a whole, its keystone would be removed and the arch left incomplete. Arch magicians with a faulty arch can be considered to be quite unfortunate indeed.

An arch magician of high degree, according to sorcerous lore, was the third king of the Jews who was named Shelomoh and called Solomon. The principle legends of Masonry emanate from Solomon and the fabled Temple bearing his name. Every lodge is, and must be, a symbol of the Temple of Solomon. Each Master in the Chair is representative of that perfidious Jewish king. Though not all lodges are willing to frankly admit this identification with the ancient synagogue of sin, there is, in Tombstone, Arizona one which does publicly adhere to this label. Tombstone, Arizona

was connected, by a variety of old trails, to the Ruby Road and the town of Ruby, which witnessed so many brutal killings.

It should also be noted that many Mexicans were involved in the Ruby shootings and Mexico is, itself, a master symbol of America mystica and a place where the very foulest deeds of Masonic sorcery and witchcraft have transpired. In 1884, the year General Guadalupe Victories became president, tremendous intra-fraternal strife broke out between the York and Scottish Rite (of which, like in America, numerous public officials were members and active participants). This strange Masonic war certainly calls into question the 18th century disbandonment of the York Rite, if it was able, some hundred years later, to resist the extremely powerful Scottish wing. If this appears to be a digression from mystical toponomy, it actually is not, for the land of Mexico is riddled with symbol place names which fit into the Three Sisters and 32nd degree symbolism.

To summarize this segment, one can chart a trail of symbolism associated with the 32nd degree by means of the Mason Road, Mason No El Bar, Tres Hermanas (Three Sisters), Shakespeare, Macbeth, MacBird, Johnson Mountain, Kennedy Mountain, Ruby Road and so on.

The Canadian Connection

Shortly after the assassination of John F. Kennedy, a Canadian mountain peak was named in his honor. Kennedy Mountain is located at latitude 60 degrees 20 minutes north and 138 degrees — 58 degrees 5 seconds west. The upper part of Canada's Disenchantment Bay touches the 60 degree line. Canada, too, has a Three Sisters mountain which lies at 58 degrees.

Senator Robert Kennedy made a journey to this mountain and made camp with the Three Sisters mountain range to his right and the Hecate Strait (a part of the intercoastal waterway reaching almost to Disenchantment Bay) to the left.

Before reaching base-camp for his high-altitude climb at Cathedral Glacier, Robert Kennedy stayed at "Whitehorse." A white horse is a

funerary symbol and is used in Oriental burials: a white stone horse guards the Imperial tomb at Nanking. In the Occident, a black horse is employed for funerals and in the case of the JFK ceremony, the mount was Sardar, the horse given to Mrs. Kennedy by President Khan of Pakistan. Actually Sardar was not black, but a red bay, and had to be dyed for the occasion and his illusion could be viewed as a minor reflection of the generally unreal aspect of the entire rite: a ceremony of disenchantment symbolized by the tying of boots onto the Pakistani horse with the toes pointing backwards.

Lady MacBird and the Ghosts

After her ascension to the White House, Ladybird Johnson went to the ghostly mountains called “Los Chisos” which can mean, “the ghosts” or, as a corruption of the Spanish *hechizo,* signifies “evil spell,” as of the type cast by a *hechicero* and *hechicera.* Los Chisos lives up to its name by way of ghost stories told about that area, which have to do with stinking Indians, dirty greasers, filthy gringos and their victims.

Ladybird made her appearance in the Los Chisos area on April Fool’s Day, 1966. Perhaps she was there when fun-loving specters were having a macabre field day. Perhaps Hecate appeared in some crossroad melodrama and the Three Sisters lectured on mystical toponomy and Banquo talked on Shakespeare.

The Los Chisos Mountains are in the Big Bend National Park in Texas. The park is said to cover 1,100 square miles and has scenery worthy of the Arabian Nights. It is adjacent to such symbolical mountains as the Sierra de la Encantada (Enchantment), Sierra del Carmen (Carmen: charm, enchantment) and Sierra de la Cruz (Cross). The Sierra de la Cruz is a short distance from Los Chisos on the Mexican side of the Rio Grande and within that area is the town of Ojinaga. Here a so-called church, which is said to be a home of the Devil, is erected over a cave which is said to lead to the “Infernal Regions.”

Mrs. Johnson traveled from Big Bend National Park to Fort Davis to some sort of dedication. This military reservation is located very close to

Coffin Mountain and Black Mountain. The inversion of the word Davis is "Sivad," which is associated with the color black, a death coach *(coistebodhar)* and with a coffin. Meanwhile, Lynda Bird Johnson was on a National Geographic trip whose first stop was at some mountains bearing the name Three Sisters (Tres Hermanas) in Monument Valley, Utah. At this particular time, President Johnson was on a trip to the far east where he visited the "City of Demons" and entered the "13 Acre Mosque," where he performed the Rite of Discalceation, which included a foot washing. Such ablution is widely done in Oriental nations when entering sanctuaries and temples. Whether or not he recited the following words of Macbeth are known only to the initiated few:

"I will, to the weird sisters; More shall they speak, for now I am bent to know By the worse means the worst. For mine own good all causes shall give way. I am in blood steeped so far that, should I wade no more, Returning were as tedious as go o'er. Strange things I in head that will to hand, Which must be acted ere they may be scanned."

The Killing of the King

Do not be lulled into believing that just because the deadening American city of dreadful night is so utterly devoid of mystery, so thoroughly flat-footed, sterile and infantile, so burdened with the illusory gloss of baseball-hot dogs-apple pie-and-Chevrolet, that it exists outside the psycho-sexual domain. The eternal pagan psychodrama is escalated under these so-called modern conditions precisely because sorcery is not what "20th century man" can accept as real. Thus, the Killing of the King rite of November, 1963 is alternately diagnosed as a conflict between anti-Castro reactionaries and the forces of liberalism, big business and the big bankers, this-or-that wing of the intelligence community and so on. Needless to say, each of these groups has a place in the symbolism of the Kennedy assassination.

The ultimate purpose of that assassination was not political or economic, but sorcerous; for the control of the dreaming mind is the underlying motive in this entire scenario of lies, cruelty and degradation. Something died in the American people on November 22, 1963 — call it idealism, innocence

or the quest for moral excellence — it is this transformation of human beings which is the authentic reason and motive for the Kennedy murder, and until so-called conspiracy theorists can accept this very real element, they will be reduced to so many eccentrics amusing a tiny remnant of dilettantes and hobbyists.

President Kennedy and his wife left the Temple Houston and were met at midnight by tireless crowds present to cheer the virile “Sun God” and his dazzingly exotic wife, the “Queen of Love and Beauty,” in Fort Worth. On the morning of November 22, they flew to Gate 28 at Love Field, Dallas, Texas. The number 28 is one of the correspondences of Solomon in kabbalistic numerology; the Solomonic name assigned to 28 is “Beale.” On the 28th degree of latitude in the state of Texas is the site of what was once the giant “Kennedy ranch.” On the 28th degree is also Cape Canaveral from which the moon flight was launched — made possible not only by the President’s various feats, but by his death as well, for the placing of Freemasons on the moon could occur only after the Killing of the King. The 28th degree of Templarism is the “King of the Sun” degree. The President and First Lady arrived in Air Force One, codenamed “Angel.”

The motorcade proceeded from Love Field to Dealey Plaza. Dealey Plaza is the site of the first Masonic temple in Dallas (now razed), and there is a marker attesting to this fact. Important “protective” strategy for Dealey Plaza was planned by the New Orleans CIA station whose headquarters were in a Masonic temple building. Dallas, Texas is located ten miles south of the 33rd degree of latitude. The 33rd degree is the highest in Freemasonry and the founding lodge of the Scottish Rite in America was created in Charleston exactly on the 33rd degree. Dealey Plaza is close to the Trinity River. At 12:22 p.m. the motorcade proceeded down Main Street toward the Triple Underpass, traveling first down (Bloody) Elm Street. The latter was the scene of numerous gun fights, stabbings and other violence and it is the location of the Majestic Theatre, the Negro and industrial district. It was also the home of the Blue-Front tavern, a Masonic hangout in the grand tradition of “tavern-Masonry.” Sam Adams and the Masons of the American Revolution did much of their conspiring at the “Green Dragon Tavern” in Boston. One of the many bars claiming the honor of

being the first Masonic lodge is the Bunch of Grapes Tavern, also in Boston.

The Blue-Front was the site of the “broken-man” ritual in which various members of the “Brotherhood of the Broom” swept the floor and tended some fierce javelino pigs. The Blue-Front was once a firehouse and was still sporting the pole in the late ‘20s. This is extremely germane symbolism. The national offices of the Texaco oil corporation are located on Elm Street, Dallas. Its chief products are “Haviland (javelino) oil” and “Fire Chief” gasoline.

On the corner of Bloody Elm and Houston is the “Sexton Building.” “Sexton” is heavily laden with graveyard connotations. It is closely associated to the beetles of the genus Necrophorus or Sexton beetles, so-called because they bury the remains of tiny animals with their legs.

Bloody Elm, Main, and Commerce form a trident pattern in alignment with the triple underpass as any Dallas map will show. Many analysts contend that at least three assassins were involved in the crossfire ambush of our Catholic President.

It is a prime tenet of Masonry that its assassins come in threes. Masonic assassins are known in the code of the lodge as the “unworthy craftsmen.” Because Masonry is obsessed with the earth-as-gameboard (tessellation) and the ancillary alignments necessary to facilitate the “game,” it is inordinately concerned with railroads and railroad personnel to the extent that, outside of lawyers and circus performers, no other vocation has a higher percentage of Masons than railroad workers.

Minutes after John Fitzgerald Kennedy was murdered, three “hoboes” were arrested at the railyard behind Dealey Plaza. No records of their identities have ever been revealed, nor the identity of the arresting officer. All that remains of those few minutes are a serious of photographs which have reached legendary proportions among persons concerned with uncovering the real forces behind the assassination. These pictures have been impressed upon modern consciousness in a way that perhaps only Carl Gustav Jung could describe. The only similar image which has also become a symbol of the people’s inability to uncover and overcome evil are the

derelicts of Samuel Beckett's play, *Waiting for Godot*, whose entire theme is the futility of waiting for answers or expecting to penetrate the shroud of who controls us.

The "three" and "trident" allusions pertain uniformly to *magica sexualis.* Paracelsus used the latter to overcome impotence. In *The Seven Books of the Magic Archidox*, a trident is listed as the remedy for anyone wishing to overcome the machinations of perverted men and to regain virility.

Dealey Plaza breaks down in this manner: "Dea" means goddess in Latin and "Ley" can pertain to law or rule in the Spanish, or lines of preternatural geographic significance in the pre-Christian nature religions of the English (Watkins). For many years Dealey Plaza was underwater at different seasons, being flooded by the Trinity River until the introduction of a flood-control system. Thus the Dealey (Goddess-Rule) Plaza is present at the Trinity Site of Kennedy's killing. It should be noted that the detonation of the atomic bomb, whose alchemical creation and destruction of primordial matter was an Illuminist obsession, occurred at the so-called "Trinity Site," located on the 33rd degree of latitude. To this trident-Neptune site came the "Queen of Love and Beauty" and her spouse, the scapegoat, in the Killing of the King rite, the "Ceannaideach" (Gaelic word for Ugly Head or Wounded Head). In Scotland, the Kennedy coat-of-arms and iconography is full of folklore. Their Plant Badge is an oak and their Crest Badge has a dolphin on it. Now what could be more coincidental than for JFK to get shot in the head near the oak tree at Dealey Plaza. Do you call that a coincidence?

Oswald

The diminutive form of the name Oswald is "Os" or "Oz": a Hebrew term denoting strength. The role which "Divine Strength" played in the Dealey "Goddess Rule" Killing Of The King ritual should be given careful consideration. One should also note the significance of (Jack) Ruby's killing (destroying) of "Ozwald," in reference to the "ruby slippers" of *The Wizard of Oz*, which one may deride as a fairy tale but which nevertheless

symbolizes the immense power of “ruby light,” otherwise known as the laser.

Oswald may have undergone biotelemetry implantation in the Soviet Union while a “volunteer” at a Behavior Control Center at Minsk. Oswald roomed with Cubans and was allegedly friendly with a Castro man identified only as being “burly” and a “key” man. “Burly” can mean burlecue or burlesque. The “key,” of course, is one of the most important symbols in Masonry and the symbol of silence.

If Oswald was the result of some Soviet Frankenstein process, why did he have to travel several thousand miles for such treatment when it is a routine operation in America? Here in the good ol’ USA it is performed in hospitals, prisons and psychiatric centers. While such activities of the Mill-of-Dread are pro forma at a variety of institution, there was a time when it was deemed necessary to do such work at Walter Reed Hospital. These implants were back alley operations in which the victims were overpowered in some place or other, drugged and then dragged to this government hospital. They were operated on, continued on a heavy drug regimen in a state that varied from somnolent to comatose for a number of days. The electrical function of the victim was recorded and monitored and the biotelemetry plant tested. Subsequently the victims were “brainwashed” and returned to the place where they had been seized. The targets then continued their existence, unaware of how their bodies had been invaded and their autonomy stolen. (This was a select procedure and not all of the staff necessarily knew what was taking place.)

Like the disgraceful treatment of the autopsy of President Kennedy, Oswald's is similarly weird. In point of fact, Oswald was literally butchered in the "post-mortem examination." Pieces were actually cut out of his body. The trenchant incision in his torso resembled a huge "Y," which ran from his groin to the solar plexus. From there, incisions were made to the right and left armpits. (It is also probable that he was castrated). The so-called "two horns of the letter Y" supposedly symbolize two different paths of virtue and vice: the right branch leading to the former and the left to the later. The letter is sometimes referred to as the "Litera Pythagorae" (The Letter of Pythagoras). "Litera Pythagorae, discrimine secta bicorni,

Humanae vitae speciem praeferre videtur." (The letter of Pythagoras parted by its two branched division appears to exhibit the image of human life.).

In the 47th Problem of Euclid lies a secret of the Third Degree of Masonry. Pythagoras is called by Freemasons "our ancient friend and brother." One of Pythagoras' main doctrines was the system of "Metempsychosis," which pertains to the passing of a human soul into the body of an animal. Perhaps this was the intention of the autopsy — by cutting the Letter of Pythagoras into Oswald's body they sought to expedite transmigration, and they may even have gone as far as feeding sections of Oswald's corpse to a certain animal, for this too is a practice of what used to be widely feared as necromancy.

Arlington Necrology

The Kennedy and Oswald burials were both at "Arlington": JFK at the National Cemetery near Washington, D.C. and Oswald at a Rosehill Cemetery near Arlington, Texas.

Arlington is a word of significance in Masonic sorcery, and it has a hidden meaning that has to do with necrolatry.

At the Kennedy gravesite, there is a stone circle and in its middle a fire called the "eternal flame." The fire in the middle of the circle represents a point in the circle, the same type of symbolism recognizable in Kennedy's bier and coffin occupying the center of the rotunda in the Capitol. A point in a circle symbolized the sun in ancient sun worship. It is also a symbol of fecundity with the point symbolizing a phallus and the circle a yoni.

At the Oswald gravesite stands a small tree.

There exists an old belief that a tree which grows at or on a grave is embodied with the spirit-force of the person buried at that site, and that a twig or branch taken from such a tree has magical powers. I suggest that Lee Harvey Oswald's mother (Mrs. Marguerite Claverie Oswald) should gently remove a twig from the tree at her son's grave and then at every

opportunity touch FBI agents, CIA operatives, policemen, et cetera, with that same twig. Such a procedure couldn't help but be more efficacious in bringing the murderers of JFK to justice than the Warren Commission.

Funerary Rites

John F. (Honey Fitz) Fitzgerald, the grandfather of John F. Kennedy, was elected mayor of Boston thanks in part to his "Wake House" campaigns that became much imitated. These consisted of a daily surveillance of the newspapers for announcements of deaths, after which a discreet "sympathizer" would be dispatched by Fitzgerald and a good deal of political mileage accumulated in the bargain.

For a time, the Fitzgeralds lived near the former site of the Green Dragon Tavern, established around 1680 and demolished for the widening of a street in 1820. The Fitzgerald home was on Hanover Street and the Green Dragon Tavern was on Green Dragon Lane (now Union Street). The tavern boasted the "first lodge room of Freemasonry in America," the St. Andrews Lodge, located within the tavern proper. In the mysticism of the Chinese tongs, the Green Dragon is a death symbol. A symbol of the latter is worn on a ring or held in the hand of a "hatchet man." The Green Dragon is supposed to impart the notion of a "license to kill" for it signifies that the murder is an affair of "honor": the Green Dragon is the guardian of the god-with-a-thousand-eyes who protects the sanctity of the third heaven.

Much of Boston's Irish population arrived in America in what were nicknamed the "coffin ships." Members of the Kennedy family were acquainted with the "Coffin Family." The Reverend William Sloane Coffin was the son of theologian Henry Sloane Coffin; Coffin the younger was a member of the Peace Corps Advisory Council that Sargent Shriver headed. "Shriver" or "Shrive" has the meaning of one who grants absolution to a penitent and it was customary to call upon a shriver before death. If the shriver was not available, a "sin eater" was summoned. The old pious cry that had to do with the request for a shriving was "Shrive me O Holy Land and Give Me Peace." To this the shriver would respond, "Pax Vobiscum:"

> The spell lies in two words, Pax Vobiscum will answer all queries. If you go or come, eat or drink, bless or ban, Pax Vobiscum carries you through it all. It is as useful to a friar as a broomstick to a witch or a wand to a conjurer. Speak it but thus, in a deep grave tone, Pax Vobiscum! It is irresistible — watch and ward, Knight and squire, foot and horse, it acts as a charm upon them all. I think, if they bring me out to be hanged tomorrow, as is much to be doubted they may, I will try its weights upon the finisher of the sentence. — "Wamba, son of Witless"

Sargent Shriver, "a Catholic and Kennedy by marriage," as head of the Peace Corps and in association with a Coffin, might be considered to be in a sensitive position in relation to mystical onomatology.

> In the ancient mysteries, the aspirant could not claim a participation in the highest secrets until he had been placed in the Pastos, bed or coffin. … The coffin in Masonry is found on tracing boards of the early part of the last century, and has always constituted a part of the symbolism of the Third Degree, where the reference is precisely to the same as that of the Pastos in the ancient mysteries. — *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry*

President Kennedy sat at the head of a coffin table at the White House. To his back, over a fireplace, hung a portrait of Abraham Lincoln, an assassinated president. On either side of the picture were urns that resembled the type called "cinerary urns" which are vessels in which the ashes of the dead are kept. A book about JFK was called *Three Steps to the White House.* In Masonry are what is known as the "three symbolical steps." "The three grand steps symbolically lead from this life to the source of all knowledge."

> It must be evident to every Master Mason without further explanation, that the three steps are taken from the darkness to a place of light, either figuratively or really over a coffin, the symbol of death, to teach symbolically that the passage from darkness and ignorance of this life through death to the light and knowledge of eternal life. And this from earliest times was the true symbolism of the step. — *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry*

The body of President Kennedy was placed in a coffin which was positioned in the center of a circle under the Capitol dome. The catafalque was a temporary structure of wood appropriately decorated with funeral symbols and representing a tomb or cenotaph. It forms a part of the decorations of a "Sorrow Lodge." This Masonic Encyclopedia reference is to the ceremonies of the Third Degree in Lodges of the French Rite.

Pictures taken of the Kennedy coffin and catafalque show these two props of the funerary rite as a point in a circle. Fecundity is the symbolic signification of the Point within a circle and is a derivation of ancient sun worship.

In olden lore of mystery cults and fertility religion was invariably the legend of the death of the hero god and the disappearance of his body. In the subsequent search and supposed finding of the body we see the contrivance of an elaborate psychological ruse, well known to the masters of the ancient mysteries. The body was said to have been concealed by the killer or killers of the hero god. The concealment of the body was called aphanism, and is a rite of the Masonic Third Degree. Anyone interested in comprehending the mechanics of group mind control would do well to study the Third and Ninth Degrees of Masonry in particular.

The disappearance of the body, this aphanism, is to be found in the assassination of President Kennedy:

> The President's brain was removed and his body buried without it … Dr. Cyril Wecht, chief medical examiner of Allegheny County, Pennsylvania, past president of the American Academy of Forensic Scientists, and a professor of pathology and law, received permission from the Kennedy family in 1972 to view the autopsy materials (at the National Archives). When he routinely asked to see the brain, Wecht was told it was missing, along with the microscopic slides of the brain. Marion Johnson, curator of the Warren Commission material at the Archives said, "The brain's not here. We don't know what happened to it." *Los Angeles Free Press, Special Report No. 1*, pg. 16.

After the Kennedy coffin was removed from the center of the Capitol rotunda circle, it was taken, with pageantry, to the street for viewing. The funeral procession made an “unplanned stop” on Pennsylvania Avenue in front of the “Occidental Restaurant” and a picture was taken of the flag-draped Kennedy coffin with the word “Occidental” featuring prominently over it. In Masonry and in the lore of the Egyptian jackal-god Anubis, a dead person is said to have “gone west.” Several months after the Kennedy funeral, “Occidental Life,” an insurance branch of the Transamerica Corporation, ran an advertisement for group/life which was proclaimed, as usual, to be “new” but with a turn which was indeed original: the inferential weird claim was made that “Until now there was only one way to cash in on Group Insurance,” apparently some rather profound changes were made in the manner of things-as-they are after the Killing of the King had become a fait accompli.

The spontaneous stop was made because of the horse Sardar (chief), a gelding (castro), which was wearing boots pointing to the rear in the Kennedy funerary rite. Horses figure prominently not only in the pleasure of kings, but in their murders as well. James Earl Ray was convicted partly on the evidence of a “white Mustang” (automobile), Sirhan Sirhan claimed to his psychiatrists, trance-like, that he shot Robert Kennedy, “for a mustang, mustang, mustang…”

John F. Kennedy had demonstrated affection for the performance of a lady who was a renowned ostrich-feather fan manipulator (Marilyn Monroe). In Egypt, lamenting girls with ostrich feather fans sang a song of entreaty of the type that Nephthys and Isis reputedly sang as a dirge before the said partial resurrection and/or erection of Osiris. The said dirge of lamentation has become known as a Maneros, and the singers are entreating the dead to return, by singing “come to my house” and then offering inducements of some type or other. It is a damn pity that the ritualists couldn’t have had Marilyn Monroe and Rosemary Clooney sing a maneros at the JFK funeral.

Before JFK began his Jornada del Muerto (Journey of Death, Journey of the Dead) he was photographed with Tito on the winding stairs in the White House. “Tito” (his real name is said to be Josip Broz) is a significant name

in Masonry since it was the title given to Prince Harodim, the first Judge and Provost said to be appointed by King Solomon. Tito was a reputed favorite of that evil Jew whose temple was a hot-bed of thievery, money-changing, male and female prostitution and sorcery. This Tito presided over the Lodge of Intendants of the temple and was one of the “twelve knights of the twelve tribes of Israel.”

Let me repeat, JFK was on some winding stairs with a man called Tito.

Winding stairs are symbolically important in Masonry.

The legend of the winding stair is taught in the degree of Fellow Craft. This is the Second Degree, and a person at this grade is, of course, a candidate for the symbolical assassination, euresis, autopsy, coffin resurrection of the Third Degree.

The number of steps in the winding stair are “odd” although no less so than the fact that this Tito or Harodim is a name translating as “those who

Elizabeth Taylor and the Yugoslav Tito

The number of steps in the winding stair are “odd” although no less so than the fact that this Tito or Harodim is a name translating as “those who rule over” the activities of the temple of Solomon.

The winding stairs of this temple, according to the Masons, begins at the porch and winds to a level purified by the Divine Presence (Shekinah) and dominated by the Divine Strength (Oswald).

President Kennedy preceded Tito down the stairs to a portrait of the assassinated President Garfield, where he was photographed and another picture was taken on the stairs before a picture of Lincoln (recall the black walnut rocker of JFK, comparable to the black walnut rocker Lincoln was assassinated in; the “Lincoln Continental” limousine in which Kennedy was shot and the thousand other parallels between the two men). It’s unfortunate that President Kennedy didn’t trip Tito and then slide down the stair-rail, for he was in a very bad symbolic position, as related to Masonic sorcery, and such unorthodox action might have rattled the “Prince of Harodim.”

The Scapegoat

John F. Kennedy, the one and only Catholic president of the United States, was a human scapegoat, a “pharmakos.” Pharmakos or Pharmokvos can mean “enchantment with drugs and sorcery,” or “beaten, crippled or immolated.” In alchemy, the killing of the king was symbolized by the crucified snake on a tau cross, a variant of the crucifixion of Christ.

Jesus Christ was tortured and murdered as the result of the intrigue of the men of the Temple of Solomon who hated and feared Him. They were steeped in Egyptian, Babylonian and Phoenician mysticism.

Masonry does not believe in murdering a man in just any old way and in the JFK assassination it went to incredible lengths and took great risks in order to make this heinous act correspond to the ancient fertility oblation of the Killing Of The King.

I have stated time and again that the three hoboes arrested at the time of the assassination in Dallas are at least as important symbolically as operationally, and that they comprise the “Three Unworthy Craftsmen” of Masonry. This mechanism is at once a telling psychological blow against the victim and his comrades, a symbol of frustrated inquiry and the supposedly senseless nature of any quest into the authentic nature of the murders, and a mirror or doppelganger of the three assassins who executed the actual murder.

As for the three assassins themselves:

"Perry Raymond Russo told a New Orleans grand jury that (CIA agent David) Ferrie said (regarding the assassination of JFK) that "there would have to be a minimum of three people involved. Two of the persons would shoot diversionary shots and the third … shoot "the good shot." Ferrie said that one of the three would have to be the "scapegoat." He also said that Ferrie discoursed on the availability of exit, saying that the sacrificed man would give the other two time to escape." (Quoted by W.. Bo wart in *Operation Mind Control.)*

Camelot

The Kennedy administration was referred to as Camelot, supposedly in joy over the renewed promise of the youthful and vigorous president, his lovely "storybook wife" and the potential of "New Frontier" reform. No doubt, if one attempted to point out the ominous symbolism of the Camelot phrase, such a person would be dismissed as "trying to ruin a good thing," but that has already been accomplished by someone else, and the resulting disenchantment has prepared us to believe the worst about the real story of our internal government.

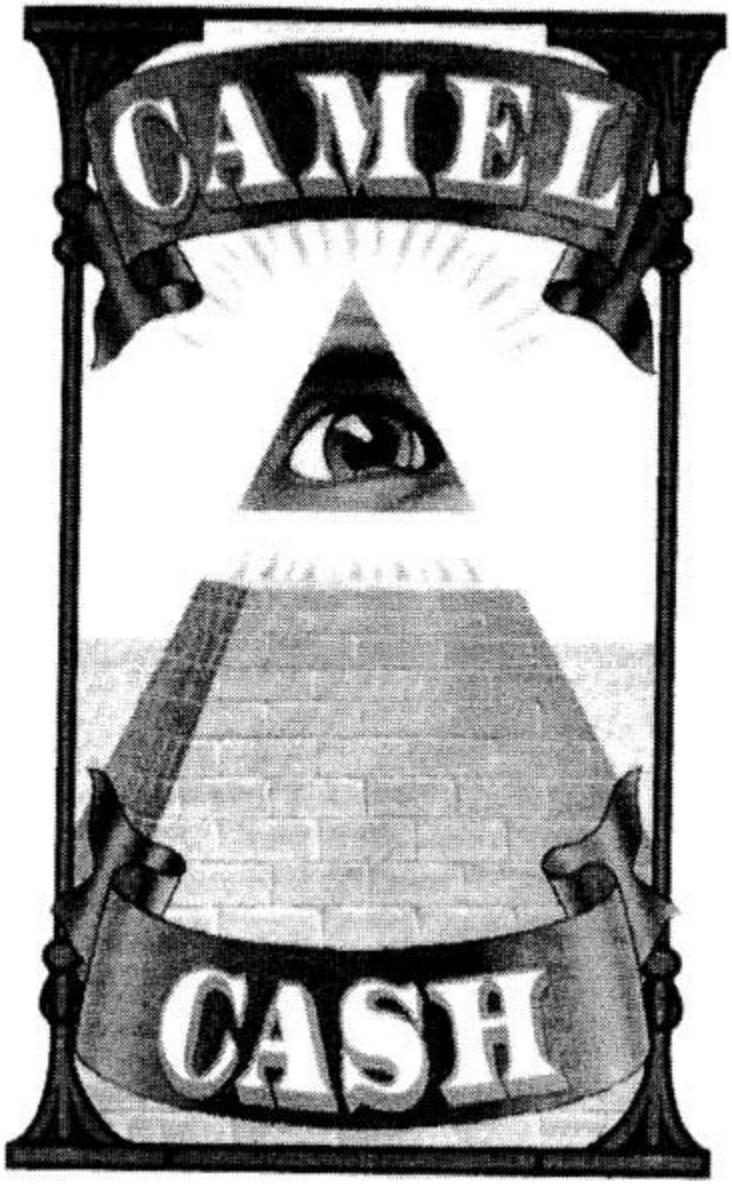
The site of King Arthur's castle was not far from Tintagel, the Camel River and Camelford. The Camelot White House stories are symbolical fecal matter. Vice President Lyndon Johnson invited a Pakistani camel-driver to the White House and JFK, responding with his flashing good humor said, "If I tried that, I would have ended up with camel dung all over the White House lawn."

The officer in charge of the first camel corps in the U.S. Army was a certain Lt. Edward F. Beale. JFK was born on Beals Street and Jacqueline Kennedy's poor aunt, Edith Bouvier, was a Beale by marriage. In Quartsite, Arizona is a pyramid-shaped monument with the bones of a camel in it and buried beneath it is a Syrian camel-driver named "Hi Jolly." The camel and Hi Jolly pyramid burial site is in Yuma County, Arizona. Yuma, Juma and Yama are names of a Tibetan god of death who is the King of the Dead in

W.Y. Evans-Wentz's *Tibetan Book of the Dead.* This god is given the power of reading the past and future in a mirror similar to that of the black magician Tezcat of Mexican mythology.

The Warren Commission

Gentlemen, don't pass me by!
Don't miss your opportunity!
Inspect wares with careful eye;
I have a great variety.
And yet there is nothing on my stall.
— Witch in *Faust*


CAMEL
CASH

Mason Lyndon Johnson appointed Mason Earl Warren to investigate the death of Catholic Kennedy. Mason and member of the 33rd degree, Gerald R. Ford, was instrumental in suppressing what little evidence of a conspiratorial nature reached the commission. Responsible for supplying information to the commission was Mason and member of the 33rd degree, J. Edgar Hoover. Former CIA director and Mason Allen Dulles was responsible for most of his agency's data to the panel.

Is it paranoid to be suspicious of the findings of the panel on these grounds? Would it be paranoid to suspect a panel of Nazis appointed to investigate the death of a Jew, or to suspect a commission of Klansmen appointed to investigate the death of a Negro?

Representative Hale Boggs, the only Catholic on the commission, at first agreed with its findings and when he later began to seriously question them, he was "accidentally" killed in a "plane crash."

> Hoodwink (definition). A symbol of the secrecy, silence and darkness in which the mysteries of our art should be preserved from the unhallowed gaze of the profane. — Dr. Albert Mackey, Mason, member of the 33rd degree, foremost Masonic historian of the 19th century, writing in the *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry.*

That is how they see us, as "profane" as "cowans" (outsiders), unclean and too perverted to look upon their hallowed truths. Yes, indeed, murder, sexual atrocities, mind control, attacks against the people of the United States, all of these things are so elevated, so lofty and pure as to be beyond the ken of mere humans.

> The cryptocracy is a brotherhood reminiscent of the ancient secret societies, with rites of initiation and indoctrination programs to develop in its loyal membership the special understanding of its mysteries. — W.H. Bowart, *Operation Mind Control*

Hertz / Hartz

As seen from Dealey Plaza, a large Hertz sign looms over the Sexton building, apparently dividing it into two right angles at the time of JFK's murder.

Joseph Patrick Kennedy, father of John Fitzgerald Kennedy, rescued the Hertz Yellow Cab Company during a "stock crisis."

The name "Hertz" is traceable to Hartz or Harz. In the Hartz Mountains in Germany is a place called the Brocken where sorcerers were believed to gather. Sometimes an optical phenomenon or illusion is glimpsed at the peak of Hartz Mountain and persons see what is known as the Spectre of Brocken.

In the 18th century, representatives from witch-cults all over Europe made their way to a fertility and death ritual on this mountain and some were alleged to have been Masons. Masons were believed to have been able to communicate in some voiceless way, which was called telepathy by some and empathy by others. Empathy can be described as the feeling of entering into the spirit of a person or thing and so empathy is synonymous with the Rapport of Mesmeric Masonry. The witches at the Hartz Mountain festival came together in sympathetic understanding (Rapport) and were in non-verbal communication. In fact, at a given signal, the occult gathering began to cling together in a sort of "Epoxy" of "Agape" ("Love-In," if you will) that became a rite of magica sexualis and ritual intercourse.

Hertz is a name "renowned in the field of communication." Heinrich Hertz was a German physicist who was the first to investigate "electromagnetic waves produced in luminiferous ether," which is a rather archaic way of describing electrical waves which are now known as "Hertzian waves." Hertz was instrumental in the theory which led to the development of radio.

JFK's ancestry is traced to New Ross, a port town approximately four miles from Duganstown, Ireland. In the hamlet of New Ross is a tavern named the "Radio Bar," which is owned by one Gus O'Kennedy; Patrick Kennedy, the President's grandfather, frequented this establishment and the proprietor was a distant relation.

The long-running advertising battle which droned over the Hertz waves between Avis and Hertz Rent-a-Car corporations involves fertility symbolism.

By consulting the Masonic encyclopedia, one will encounter a brief blurb by Dr. Mackey which is probably one of the “thinnest” cover-ups in the entire work. It is the category of “Inversion of Words”: apparently, the Masons wanted to be able to explain away various phrases “cowans” (outsiders) might have come across in conversation or study which, without such explanation might be pondered to a degree detrimental to Masonic secrecy. Thus, the definition for word-inversion is a sort of bewildered disclaimer running along the lines of “How did this get here?” Poor, befuddled Dr. Albert Mackey of the “exalted” 33rd degree would have us believe that word inversion is not a central part of Masonic ritual. Anyone recognizing the link between Masonry and Jewish Kabbalism, a connection which might be termed slave-master, will note that a central dogma of the Kabbalah is the principle of the Inverse Sephiroth as personified by the Qlipoth or “Lords of Chaos.”

If one inverts the letters of the word “Avis,” as in the rental car corporation, one encounters the “Siva.” Siva is Sanskrit for “happy” or “auspicious.” Siva is also the name of one of the gods in the Hindu triad and in character represents “become-death, the shatterer of worlds” as a certain alchemist once said. The symbol of Siva is the Lingam or penis. Siva, like Neptune and Satan, is usually pictured with a trident.

The words “Wizard” and “Golden File” are formally registered trademarks of Avis Rent-A-Car System, Inc. The “Wizard of Avis,” according to advertising propaganda, is a “sophisticated computer” that “remembers everything you tell it” and the “Golden File” is “the Wizard’s permanent file” (memory bank).

In Latin, “Avis” means bird or omen.

Avis is a member of a corporate conglomerate, the center of which is the International Telephone and Telegraph Corporation, which is engaged in millions of electronic exchanges involving the Masonic principle of

Rapport, the Hartz Mountain principle of empathy, and the fundamentals of Magnetic Masonry.

All of this reminds this writer of the killing of our President on Bloody Elm Street in front of the Sexton building divided by the looming Hertz sign; a tragedy which also wounded Governor John Connally and car salesman James Thomas Tague.

Ferrie and Shaw

David W. Ferrie and Clay L. Shaw were habitués of the old “Storyville” section of the French Quarter of New Orleans. One could say that the entire official assassination investigation is a story of the Ferrie Tale genre.

Discharged from Eastern Airlines for homosexual activity, David Ferrie (Farie, Faerie, Feerie, Fairy) was said to be completely hairless and often resorted to pasting hair on his eyebrows and his head with, appropriately enough, spirit gum. He was also reputed to have been an exotic loser who failed in everything he did and who engaged in various impostures. So, the mystical charade of the Killing Of The King, Ferrie plays the role of a “medicastro” (quack).

Shaw was also a homosexual and flagellant, and since both men were centered in New Orleans, we can begin to understand the influences they were slated to represent in this most publicized of all American murders.

New Orleans, Louisiana, is known as “Crescent City,” in reference to the moon and is closely connected to lunar (lunacy) rites, prostitution and every other inversion of the so-called American dream. The CIA station-house connected to Oswald, Ferrie and Shaw as well as to the formulation of the JFK killing is, or was, located in a Masonic temple building in New Orleans, LA.

New Orleans will continue to play a major role in the murder, mayhem and perversion of the coming years. It is invariably in the limelight as a supposedly quaint and “spooky” place and which the public encounters in a

film called *Pretty Baby* about prostitution and a 12-year-old child, and in Ishmael Reed's *Shrovetide in New Orleans*, a mother-lode of Voodoo rites which have no end of fascination to foolish people everywhere.

Ruby

On December 20, 1947, Jacob Rubinstein changed his name to Jack L. Ruby by decree of the 68th Judicial Court of Dallas, Texas.

The etymology of the term "Ruby" runs: (French) rubis; (Spanish) rubi; (Latin) rubinus, carbuncle.

In old law books it was once the practice to print some of the titles of the statutes in red and these were termed rubrics or a ruby and hence any fixed, formulated or authoritative injunction of duty was apt to be designated as being a rubric or ruby.

As a rubinus or carbuncle, Ruby pertains to the "Breastplate of Judgment" used by the Chosen Mispet (High Priests) of Jewish sorcery, enabling them to receive "divine" answers regarding the welfare of Judaism; some interpretations claim that the "Breastplate of Judgment" manifested the immediate presence of Jehovah and was also worn by Masons in Royal Arch chapters.

This "breastplate contained twelve stones," each symbolizing one of the twelve tribes of Israel. The carbuncle or ruby was connected to the tribe of Judah (Nopech).

The term "Jack Ruby" was once used by pawn brokers to indicate a fake ruby. In iconography, a ruby or carbuncle symbolizes blood, suffering and death.

Truth or Consequences

District Attorney for New Orleans, James Garrison, is alleged to have been an ex-FBI agent and to have been mentally disturbed at one time. Jim Garrison was an outsider in the Secret Society machinations of the FBI and may very well have been pharmacologically or hypnotically induced to set-up his ill-fated investigation in the “Truth and Consequences Commission.”

Truth or Consequences, New Mexico, is a town located on the 33rd degree of parallel latitude, and near the same latitude John Fitzgerald Kennedy became an oblation, and on the same latitude as the chief Temple on this planet in the minds of sorcerers, namely the Temple of Solomon at Jerusalem, which is sworn to be rebuilt on this 33rd degree.

This method and process of Masonic machinations is summed up in the principle of the “Making Manifest of All That is Hidden,” which is to seal for all time the allegedly irresistible force of the eternal pagan psychodrama.

In a literal, alchemical sense, the Making Manifest of All That is Hidden is the accomplishment of the Third Law of the Alchemists and is, as yet, unfulfilled or at least not completed. Two laws have been manifested — the creation and destruction of primordial matter (the detonation of the first Atomic Bomb at the Trinity Site, at White Sands, New Mexico, on the 33rd degree of parallel), and The Killing Of The King (at the Trinity Site, at Dealey Plaza, Dallas, near the 33rd degree of latitude).

The remaining law is to be revealed through researchers using the “Freedom of Information Act” to “make manifest all that is hidden” in a way that will be irremediably helpful to the enemy’s cause.

This is not a bluff meant to intimidate inquiry: that can only be done with physical or psychological terror, but human curiosity has never been successfully thwarted by threats of a “curse,” to say nothing of frustrating those who seek, on a higher level, justice and truth about the arch-criminals of all history.

I do not wish to discourage truth-seeking, but rather supply researchers with the final information needed to create an object which will serve as an immovable object to block their vaunted irresistible force.

The hoodwinked populace unfortunately, will sink lower and lower as they discover the extent to which they have been duped and may, reactively, search for a ruler or drug to put them asleep, to make them less aware.

We must demonstrate that we remain aware of all the enemies and all of their tricks and gadgetry and yet we must not be dissuaded from pursuing truth for the sake of the truth. Let the enemy take upon themselves and their children the consequences of their actions.

Subliminal Images in Oliver Stone's JFK

Dean Grace

This is a record of observations of subliminal images and possible subliminal messages in the film JFK using the slow motion and freeze-frame controls on a VCR. I have made this list in the order of appearance in which they occurred. Subliminals are at their greatest frequency and intensity during the middle and especially the second half of the film. The following list of subliminal descriptions is totally the result of my own personal observations.

1. Tight close-up of a man's face wearing eyeglasses can be seen three times during the movie. He appears to wear the same style eyeglass frame that Garrison wears. This is the first subliminal image seen in freeze-frame during the movie. Is it Garrison's face?

2. Black and white scene of Oswald being questioned by FBI agent after Oswald is arrested for fighting with anti-Castro Cubans. One moment Oswald is sitting in a chair by an FBI agent sitting behind a desk. While advancing the scene frame-by-frame, Oswald is seen sitting in a chair facing his questioner, then instantly Oswald is standing against a wall facing the opposite direction. The chair is empty. The subliminal message appears to be that Oswald can be in two different places at the same time.

3. Garrison questions homosexual convict O'Keefe. In the flashback homosexual party scenes, there appears a full-screen subliminal skull, then a rat in a cage, and then an image of a skull in the background over Shaw's raised left hand. All this can only be caught by advancing the movie frame by frame.

4. Man in dark suit passes three hoboes being taken into custody by police. There is a hint that the man gives the hoboes a secret hand sign. This happens later in the film in more detail.

5. White ghost-like figure in picture on wall watches Garrison and his staff meeting in Garrison's home.

6. During a carnival parade, an American flag is lowered to expose a huge human skull.

7. Garrison questions Shaw in Garrison's office. There are flashback homosexual situations and a very quick black and white scene where an old-fashioned 16 mm projector projects a film of a dark-skinned man crawling between the legs of a line of playful, white men in bathing suits.

8. Seen in David Feme's apartment following his death are a skull, rats and religious figurines.

9. Garrison travels to Washington, D.C., to meet with former intelligence agent, "X." Leaving the Lincoln Memorial Garrison opens an umbrella and raises it over his head. Agent "X" instantly recognizes Garrison, and their talk begins. Passersby likewise open their umbrellas, though it does not appear to be raining.

10. While "X" gives Garrison a short lesson in geopolitics and nuclear war, the Washington monument in the background appears like it has become an ICBM about to lift off, complete with yellow exhaust plumes.

11. A man in a dark suit passes by the three tramps and gives a secret hand sign for the tramps' benefit.

12. Moments after Martin Luther King Jr.'s assassination is announced on television, Garrison's young daughter talks to a stranger on the telephone, who tells her that she's just been entered into a beauty contest. Over her head, on the wall behind her, is the picture frame containing the image of a white, ghost-like figure. Advancing the scene frame-by-frame reveals that the figure appears to talk.

13. Garrison talks to his legal staff about the FBI agent questioning Oswald in connection with Oswald's arrest for fighting with anti-Castro Cubans. Scene shifts to black and white. One moment Oswald is questioned while sitting, the next moment he is standing, facing the opposite direction while the chair he was sitting in is empty. Again, this subliminal message reinforces the feeling that Oswald can be in two places at the same time.

14. Moments before he sees Robert Kennedy being shot on television, Garrison makes a sandwich using Wonder Bread. Of course, viewers wonder who killed JFK.

15. Seconds before he is killed, Robert Kennedy is heard to say, "We are a great country, and a *selfish* country, and a compassionate country."

16. Moments after Robert Kennedy is assassinated, Garrison goes upstairs and makes love to his wife. Horrible televised violence gets Garrison in the mood.

17. As Garrison and his team walk up the courthouse steps, a mysterious man with white hair similar to Clay Shaw is seen moving behind Garrison's left shoulder. Is Shaw stalking Garrison?

18. During Willy O'Keefe's testimony on the witness stand, scene flashes to a homosexual meeting between Shaw and O'Keefe. Above Shaw's left hand in the corner of the screen in the image of a human skull. A frame-by-frame analysis reveals that the skull opens its mouth in horror, and seems like it is about to explode.

19. A downward zoom over the Judge's desk shows the Judge's hand pounding a gavel. Nearby is seen a round ashtray that resembles the Wicker Man of the movie of the same name. The theme of the *Wicker Man* movie was symbolic ritual murder.

20. Kennedy waves as his car passes through Dealey Plaza. Scene momentarily shifts to a close-up of a man wearing eyeglasses similar to Garrison's. The image of a four-legged, deer-like animals moves across the reflection of the glasses. A gunshot cracks out.

21. A doctor puts the remains of Kennedy's brain in a supermarket style weighing basket.

22. In Garrison's final summation to the court, he says, "So what really happened that day? Let's just for a moment speculate, shall we?" A man in a black suit and white shirt raises an open umbrella in front of another man wearing a jacket with the word "Ripley" emblazoned on its back. Does this refer to Robert Ripley of "Ripley's Believe It Or Not?" or the sci-fi character Ripley of the movie *Alien?*

23. Man aims rifle with telescopic sight at Kennedy. Camera zooms in for an extreme close-up. Scene shifts to the objective lens of the telescopic sight. A reflection of an emotionless face in freeze-frame can be seen in the lens of the sight. This faces then metamorphoses into another face with a wild-eyed, devilish grin. This face then disappears, and then light begins to emanate from within the sight. This emanation gives the impression that the telescopic sight has now become the projection lens of a movie projector.

24. After James Tague is nicked by a stray bullet, scene changes to Claw Shaw holding an umbrella over his head. Several frames later the scene changes to a younger dark-haired man holding an umbrella over his own head.

25. Immediately following the shooting in Dealey Plaza patrolman Joe Smith stops and questions a man. The man produces a Secret Service badge and moves off. Scene shifts to the courtroom, where patrolman Smith is testifying on the witness stand. He says, "Afterward it didn't ring true but at the time — we were so pressed for time." The scene immediately shifts to a tall young man wearing a dark suit. He has his left hand up to his ear, as if listening to an earphone. This man turns toward the camera and clearly gives a Masonic sign of distress. He holds the palm of the left hand up and crosses it with the right hand palm down. This is done several times at waist level, with the hands held out about twelve inches from the body. This is the sign of distress in the Entered-Apprentice, first degree of Freemasonry.

26. After Garrison delivers his summation to the court, there is another downward zooming shot over the judge's desk. The judge pounds the gavel next to the round ashtray that appears to be a symbolic Wicker Man's face.

Other notes:

In the first scene in which Garrison makes his appearance, a German infantry helmet is seen at the top of his desk.

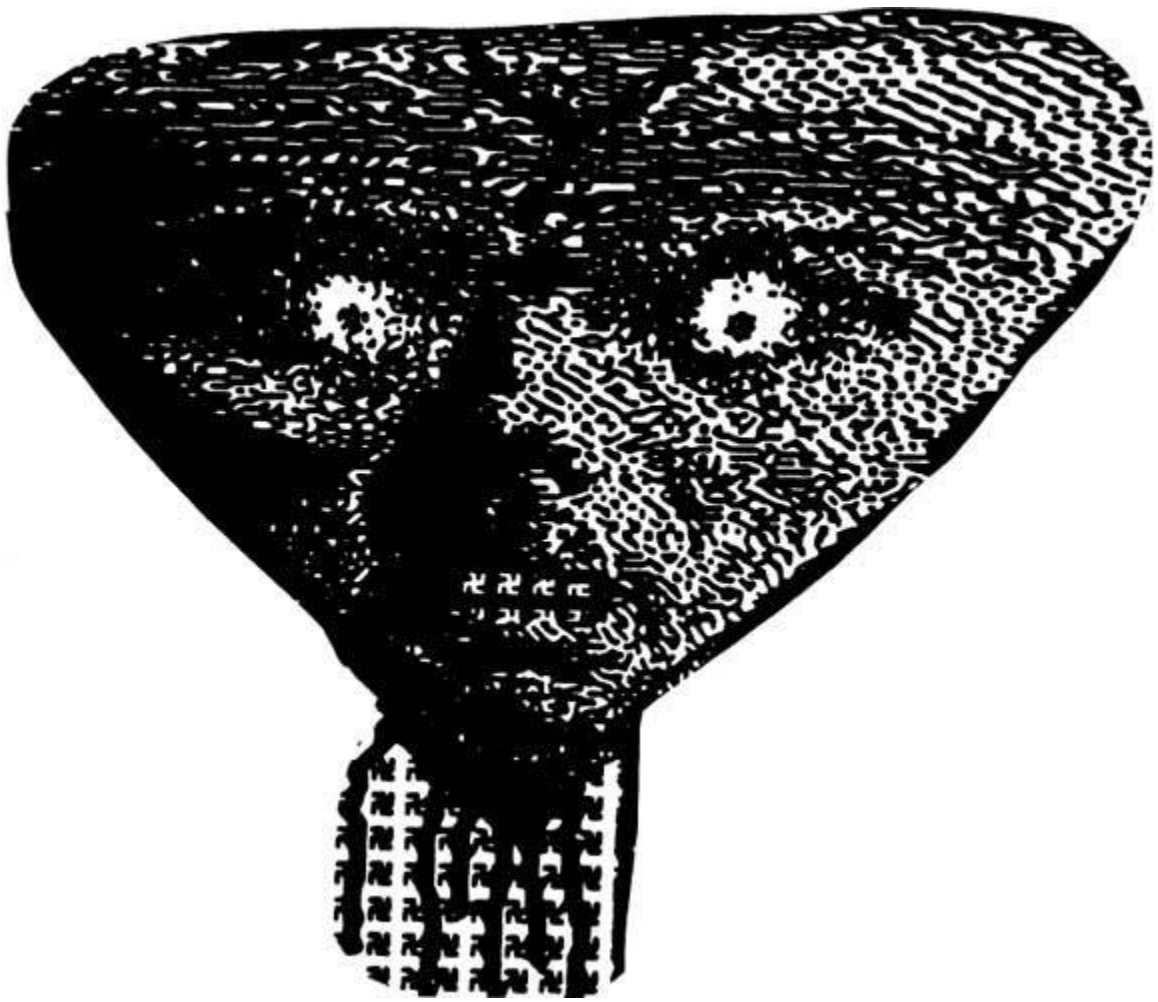
While standing in front of Guy Bannister's old office building, Garrison says, "I used to have lunch with him [Bannister]."

Garrison's young son, waiting for his father to attend a family dinner, says, "Daddy never keeps his promises." Garrison's baby then cries.

A jive-talking lawyer, Dean Andrews, hired by Clay Shaw to be Oswald's attorney, had been friends with Garrison for years.

Secret intelligence agent "X" says to Garrison, "Remember, fundamentally people are suckers for the truth."

Jim Garrison acted the role of Chief Justice Earl Warren.



TERMINATOR III

Underground computer video games circulating among Austrian and German students test the ability to manage a Nazi death camp and to distinguish between Aryans and Jews, a Holocaust study center says.

Eight copies of the programs, designed for home computers, were obtained by the Simon Wiesenthal Center in Los Angeles. The center demonstrated two of the programs for the Associated Press. Rabbi Abraham Cooper, the center's associate dean, said the programs are based on the Holocaust but often substitute Turks, many of whom work in Germany, for Jews.

In one program, KZ Manager, the player must sell gold fillings, lampshades and labor to earn enough money to buy gas and add gas chambers to kill Turks at the Treblinka death camp. "KZ" is an abbreviation of the German word for concentration camp.

The player must correctly answer questions about Turks or be taken by a Grim Reaper figure to the Buchenwald death camp.

"What you want to do now if you love playing computer games, you want to go right back in and you want to win," Cooper said. "It's a very shrewd psychology in terms of the design of the games."

Reports of the games have circulated for several years, but they were not believed to be widespread until a recent surge of reports in the Austrian media, he said.

Newspapers reported that a poll of students in one Austrian city said that nearly 40 percent knew of the games and more than 20 percent had seen them, Cooper said.

The game Aryan Test says it is by Adolf Hitler Software Ltd. The game Anti-Turk Test says it was made in Buchenwald by Hitler & Hess.

Distribution has been by electronic mail, under-the-counter sales, word of mouth and in deceptive packaging on store shelves. Cooper believes the games are the work of neo-Nazi propagandists seeking youthful followers through a technology largely unfamiliar to their parents.

“Not shocking to anybody, the kids are way ahead of the adults, and this is one area where the Nazis, the fascists, have found a way in,” he said.

Source: *Associated Press*

In Israel a new computer game called Intifada — developed by a Russian-born supporter of Meir Kahane, who immigrated to Israel from the U.S. after a stint in the Jewish Defense League — has become a bestseller. Players score points for successfully using tear gas, plastic bullets, rubber bullets and/or live ammunition to disperse Palestinian demonstrators throwing rocks and gasoline bombs. Unlike real life, the game’s rules penalize excessive zeal: players lose points if, for example, they shoot to kill when only tear gas is authorized.

High scorers “win” a progressively more hard-line Israeli government, culminating in the installation of Kahane as defense minister, and restrictions on the use of lethal force are eased as the right gains strength. Responding to criticism, the game’s inventor told the *Jerusalem Post:* “When people started calling it a Nazi game, I felt I had to come forward to put the record straight… [The education ministry] is turning all the children into leftwingers. The only hope for the country is if the right is strong.”

Source: *Middle East Report*

THE MASONIC RIPPER

Jim Keith

The five murders attributed to Jack the Ripper were accomplished by left-to-right knife strokes across the victim's throat.

In Freemasonry, at the various levels of initiation, the initiate performs certain "mimes" depicting the penalties he must pay if he violates the oaths of the order. In the beginning degree, that of "Entered Apprentice," the mime is a left-to-right stroke of the hand across the neck.

Exact information on only three of the five victims of the Ripper exists. A report on the condition of the second corpse states: "The intestines, severed from their mesenteric attachements, had been lifted out of the body and placed on the shoulder of the corpse." The inquest report on the fourth victim, Catherine Eddowes, details in grisly fashion: "The abdomen wall was exposed. The intestines were drawn out to a large extent and placed over the right shoulder."

The protocols of the Freemasons state the method for dealing with traitorous Master Masons: "…by the breast being torn open and the heart and vitals taken out and thrown over the left shoulder."

The exposed location of the Eddowes murder (at Mitre square, in itself not without Masonic significance), as well as the possible use of a non-Masonic accomplice may explain the discrepancy between the left and the right shoulders.

The inquest on Eddowes also stated: "A triangular flap of skin had been reflected from each cheek…"

Two triangles comprise the sacred sign of Masonry.

The murder of Marie Kelly can be compared in its details to an engraving by William Hogarth, one of the first persons to expose the workings of the Masons. Hogarth's engraving, "The Reward of Cruelty," shows a victim laid out naked with a Masonic cable (a Masonic symbol of throat-cutting) wrapped about his neck. In the engraving the victim is in the midst of having his face mutilated, while one of the three Masonic killers is mutilating his eyes with a knife. The stomach and abdomen are ripped open, the heart cut out, and the left hand lays across the chest in the same position that Kelly's was found in. The legs and feet are being skinned. These mutilations describe perfectly the condition of the corpse of Marie Kelly when it was found.

"Leather apron," a name the press dubbed the Ripper with at the time, parallels a description of the Masonic vestment, also referred to as a leather apron, although actually being comprised of lambskin. A portion of the cloth apron worn by Eddowes was carefully cut off by the murderer or murderers and was found in the passage of Wentworth Dwellings, a message in chalk scrawled on the wall behind.

The message was:

The Juwes are

The men That

Will not

be Blamed

for nothing

The "Juwes" is not a misspelling of "Jews," as has always been assumed, but are in Masonic lore three apprentice Masons who killed the master builder Hiram Abiff.

Jack the Ripper, the Final Solution by the late Stephen Knight, published in 1976, brings forth these and other elements which suggest the Ripper slayings may not have been the work of a lone madman, but the commission of a plot hatched by extremely influential Freemasons of the day.

As Knight explains it, Joseph Sickert revealed to a BBC reporter a story that his deceased father, Walter Sickert, allegedly had told to him. Walter Sickert, a famous English painter, had been a friend of Prince Eddy, Duke of Clarence, the son of Prince Albert, heir to the throne at the time of the Ripper murders. Sickert kept a studio at No.22 Cleveland Street, where Anne Elizabeth Crook as well as Marie Kelly worked — Kelly being the last victim of the Ripper. Here it is said that Prince Eddy met Crook (a Roman Catholic commoner), became romantically involved with her, and was then married to her in a secret ceremony in St. Saviour's Chapel. A child, Alice Margaret, was born.

Shortly thereafter a police raid took place in the area and two people were arrested: Prince Eddy and Crook. Eddy was released, while Anne Elizabeth Crook, as confirmed by records of the period, was confined to workhouses and mental institutions until her death in 1920.

Marie Kelly, the last victim of the Ripper, was said to have fled with the child and hid in a convent. The child was later given to Walter Sickert and placed in the care of his relatives.

According to Knight, the reason for the Ripper murders was that Marie Kelly, along with three cohorts, tried to betray the throne with information about the marriage of Prince Eddy to a Roman Catholic, then a despised minority, and the birth of the child.

The disposal of Marie Kelly and her partners in blackmail was entrusted to Sir William Gull, Physician Ordinary to Queen Victoria, whose previous services to the Queen included the signing of the document certifying Anne Elizabeth Crook as insane, and the performance of royal abortions.

Gull was a prominent Freemason, and his responsibility for dealing with the threat was additionally dictated by his Masonic vows. Any threat to the throne was seen as a threat to Freemasonry. The Masons were the secret power behind the British throne and if the throne fell (which was a distinct possibility at that time, due to general unrest and the rising popularity of Socialism) then the Masons would fall, too.

Gull enlisted the help of fellow Masons in the commission of the murders.

The location of the last murder, Mitre Square, is of particular significance. For an ordinary criminal the choice of Mitre Square would have been extremely improbable, completely exposed as it is to passers-by. But Mitre Square comprises the second most important Masonic locale in London, after the Great Hall of the Grand Lodge.

Since the appearance of Knight's book a number of television documentaries and even a movie have been made, bringing forth some details of the Masonic Ripper theory. Curiously, all of the productions have attempted to some extent to discredit Knight's explanation, leaving out relevant details so as to make it seem that the theory rests only upon one or two coincidences, eliminating any mention of the part played by Freemasons in the crimes, or glossing over the connections to the British throne.

Soon after the publication of this book the supposed Ripper diaries will emerge from a major American publishing house. It remains to be seen if the Masonic connection rears its head or is quietly "put to rest."

THE BLUE CABINET OF THE HERRNHUTER. (***Drawing from the 19th century***).

The Erotic Freemasonry of Count Nicholas von Zinzendorf

Tim O'Neill

Throughout the history of Western occultism, there has been a constant and intriguing tendency toward heterodox sexual suppression, ranging all the way from the wandering Gnostics of the Second Century, EC, with their prostitute "Sophias" and "Shekinahs" to the orgiastic self-mutilation of the Eighteenth Century Russian Skoptsi. From the psychological and mystical viewpoints alike, it is clear that asceticism and libertinism are simply the two opposing poles in a larger archetypal constellation, based upon the experience of ecstacy.

The legend of John the Baptist, holy man extraordinaire and his perversely and insistently erotic relationship with his seductive decapitator, Salome, is one of the most powerful examples in the Western Tradition, of this complex relationship between sadism, sexuality, asceticism and mysticism.

Exstasis, the freedom of the soul from what gnostics considered to be the prison of the flesh, can be sought through either pole of this complex and in certain rare instances, both asceticism and libertinism can operate together to produce extraordinary states of altered awareness. As the great Viennese sexologist, Krafft-Ebing pointed out; "Religious and sexual states of excitement show, at the height of their development, a conformity in the quality and quantity of excitement; therefore, under suitable circumstances, [they] may be interchanged." Ecstacy, considered as a particular and complex set of altered states of awareness, is the traditional working tool for all occult work. Through its gateway, many other alternate states of reality may be touched upon, entered and worked with. This ecstatic frame

of mind has traditionally been sought in three distinct yet interrelated contexts. The Mystical, Magical and Mystery Religion workings of the West form the basis for virtually all of the esoteric groups and individuals in our history. Working through passive or receptive, active and cathartic means, respectively, they all seek to reach the same great gnostic goal; direct experience of the Numinous. For our interests, Freemasonry stands out as one of the great representatives of the Mystery Religion, or "Cathartic" approach. Speculative Masonry can be most succinctly defined as a Seventeenth and Eighteenth Century antiquarian revival of the old Mystery School systems of the Ancient World. By presenting the initiate with vivid and cathartic scenes of such archetypal matters as life and death and inducing their direct participation, it was hoped to instill certain gnostic and epiphanous experiences deeply within the subconscious. The effectiveness of this system has been proven for centuries, and follows certain sound psychological principles of great power. How could this archeological-psychological amalgam have anything to do with libertine and antinomian eroticism?

The history of Freemasonry is riddled with rites and rituals which can, only be safely described as "curious" and within that tradition, there is a long and well-documented stream of "adoptive," "androgynous," or other rites which allowed for the practice of men and women, either together or in separate rituals. Along with this historically significant trend, there exists a "shadow history" of covert masonic eroticism and antinomianism. To be quite fair, it is important to point out that these rituals did not generally have the support of official or mainstream masonry, but existed out on the fringes of the masonic world. I must also make it quite clear that the majority of androgynous rites had nothing to do with such matters, either. There do exist two important masonic rites, back in the Eighteenth Century masonic world, which have had persistent rumors of erotic practice attached to them. Again, I must use the term "rumors" since unambiguous internal evidence is only available for one of these rites.

Cagliostro's Egyptian Rite was a very complex system of oracles, quasi-Egyptian rituals and ceremonial magic, formed during the apex of the great period of revolutions during the last third of the Eighteenth Century. In this case, the masonic ritual was divided into men's and women's lodges,

however it is still classed as an androgynous rite on the following remarkable basis. According to sexologist Paul Tabori, in his *Secret and Forbidden*, the main degree initiation ceremony in the so-called "ladies lodges" of the Egyptian Rite was openly orgiastic. To quote Tabori: "After passing through several tests, novices assembled at dawn in the 'temple.' A curtain rose and the spectators gazed at a man seated on a golden globe, completely nude, holding a snake in his hand.

The naked figure was Cagliostro himself. The 'high priestess' explained to the amazed ladies that both truth and wisdom were naked and that they (the ladies) must follow their example. Thereupon the beauties stripped and Cagliostro delivered a speech in which he declared that sensual pleasure was the highest aim of human life. The snake which he held gave a whistle, whereupon thirty-six 'genii' entered, clad in white gauze. 'You are' Cagliostro said, 'chosen to fulfill my teachings!' This was the sign for the beginning of the orgies." Alas, while Cagliostro's rite may have actually contained unusual and gnostic/antinomian elements, the ritual which Tabori "reveals" is clearly in the nature of hearsay. As was the case with many of these fringe groups, later, purely literary embellishments were not unknown, particularly when reported from the outside by unsympathetic detractors.

While the reputed eroticism of the Cagliostro Rite remains doubtful, it is difficult to dismiss the more openly erotic, bizarre and even perverse practices at the core of the religio-masonic group formed by Count Nicholas von Zinzendorf during the mid-Eighteenth Century … the famous Herrnhuter, or Moravian Brethren. Masonic dictionaries and encyclopedias list the group under several interesting appelations: The Order of the Grain of Mustard Seed (Orden vom Senfkorn), The Confraternity of Moravian Brothers of the Order of Religious Freemasons, the Moravian Brethren, or the Herrnhuter (Moravians). The earliest foundations of this Order date to 1722, when a religious group, per se, formed around Count Zinzendorf, in the area of Upper Lusatia. In 1739, the Order took on its masonic aspect. Coincidentally, this was also one of the first "innovatory" Orders introduced into early German Freemasonry. The innovatory orders were those which added new material, often Christian or Templar, to the traditional three-degree Blue Lodge system. It is still true, as Arthur Edward Waite points

out in his New Encyclopedia of Freemasonry, that this was not yet a true “high grade” system on the order of the Scottish Rite or the Templar-legend based Strict Observance.

We do clearly know quite a bit about the Orden vom Senfkorn and Zinzendorf from remaining records. The Mysteries of the Order were ultimately based upon a phrase from the fourth chapter of St. Luke’s Gospel, in which the Kingdom of Heaven is compared to a mustard seed. Indeed, the masonic “Jewel” of the Order was a golden cross, surmounted by a mustard plant in full bloom, with the mystical motto: “Quod fuit ante nihil”… “What was, before nothing?” This gnomic emblem was suspended from a green ribbon. Now, christianized masonic rites were plentiful during the Eighteenth and Nineteenth Centuries, however in this particular case, one might detect evocations of a specifically Illuminist sentiment, in both the mystical and political senses. Almost as a Christian predecessor to Adam Weishaupt’s more deist Illuminati of Bavaria, Zinzendorf’s order proclaimed its purpose to be the extension of the Kingdom of Christ all over the world. Both Zinzendorf and Weishaupt proclaimed theocracies, with slightly differing conceptions of “Theos!” Along these theocratic lines, the Moravian Brethren wore rings inscribed with the phrase “Keiner von uns lebt ihm selber” … “No one of us lives for himself, alone.” This is a phrase suggesting both Christian and Illuminist sentiments at once, much as in the famous phrase in the Constitution of the United States … “all men are created equal”… a phrase which only has meaning in the Illuminist doctrine of the equality of all monads. Given the existence of such truly Christian Illuminist traditions, such as the Alumbrado, Gottesfreunde, Devotio Moderna, Bohme Kreise and Rosicrucians, this conjunction is by no means a contradiction in terms.

The genuinely religious and masonic character of the Moravians accepted, how is it that any erotic elements entered this matrix? It is important to point out that the Moravians, long since reformed, still exist in Germany and the United States as the Plymouth Brethren and the Pennsylvania Moravian colony, however, it was specifically the more bizarre eroticism directly attributable to Zinzendorf, that these latter day groups have eschewed, in favor of a doctrinaire Protestant Pietism. During the so-called “sichtungszeit” or period of sifting and searching, during the

1740's and 50's, Zinzendorf led the Moravians into ever more pathological territory, interpreting every aspect of the Passion and Death of Christ in increasingly erotic tenns. Slowly but surely, Zinzendorf created a truly antinomian theology, which came to claim that the disciple's own sexual relationship with Jesus is the key to salvation!

Zinzendorf's astonishing scheme of masonico-theological speculations begins with an obscure detail of New Testament history which should give infinite amusement to Freudians. The Count interpreted the wound in Christ's side, caused when the soldier Longinus pierced the body with his spear in order to determine if death had occurred, in openly sexual terms. This wound became, for Zinzendorf, the veritable birth canal of the Christian Church. The wound thus became a vaginal orifice, the *"seitenholchen,"* or "little side cave" which combined the functions of birth, sexual pleasure and spiritual salvation! In the Moravian worship of the "side cave", it was declared that Christ was the bridegroom and sexual partner of all humans, male and female alike. Zinzendorf enjoined his followers to meditate upon the Cave and to enter it, in the most phallic sense possible, to live therein, play and take their pleasure to their hearts' content. During the course of these truly bizarre meditations, clearly influenced in technique and style, if not content, by St. Ignatius' Spiritual Exercises, the Herrnhuter became "Kreuzluftvoglein" (Little cross birds of the air), *Wunderbienlein* (Little wonder-bees), *"Blutwundenfischlein"* (Little fish of the bleeding wound), *"Wundertaucherlein"* (little wonder-divers) or *"Wunderwurmlein"* (Little wonder-worms). The hopelessly neurotic phallicism and infantilism of these conceptions belie the historical fact that a functioning masonic order took them quite seriously as the foundation for the illuminative experience!

Some hint of the wilder erotic doctrines of Zinzendorf are to be found in the early hymns of the Order, which combine sexuality and mystical flight in the most dizzying way. The phallus is addressed in one of these hymns as: *"Und geheimnisvolles Glied/das die ehelichen Salben/ Jesus halben/heilig gibt und Keusch empfaht/im Gebet/in dem ven dem Ertzerbarmen/selbst erfunden Umarmen/Wenn man Kirchen-Saamen sat/Sey gesegnet und gesalbet/mit dem Blut des unserm Manne/dort entranne/ fuhle heisse Zartlichkeit/zu der Seit/die furs Lamms Gemahlin*

offen/seit der Speer hineingetroffen/das Objekt der Eheleut." (And you mysterious limb which sanctifies and commends the marital selves for the sake of Jesus in prayer, in the embraces designed by the Original Mercy itself, while the seed of the Church is sown! Be blessed and anointed with the blood which issues from our man … Jesus … feel burning affection for the side which is open to the spouse of the Lamb since the spear has pierced the goal of all married people." Remembering that this is being addressed to the human phallus, there are some remarkable and quite sadistic images of blood and semen in this school of Christianity!)

Another hymn could easily be read as ejaculatory utterances: "*Ach, welche Bickel ich dir irzt schicke/ich bin ein Geist mit dir/und du ein Leib mit mire/und eine Seel/Du Seiten Kringel/du tolles Dingel/ich fress und sauf/mich voll/und bin vor Liebe toll/und ausser mir."* (Oh, what glances I send you now; I am one spirit with you and you are body with me and one soul. You treasure of the side, you mad little thing, I devour you like food and drink to fulfillment and am mad with love, out of my mind.) As addressed to Jesus, the implications of this hymn become truly staggering.

Zinzendorf's essential doctrine claimed, that while Christ was the only true husband of human souls, He had delegated His own mystical power as Bridegroom to his functionaries on Earth; his "vice-husbands" and "marriage procurators", who must fulfill his duties and exercise his marital rights with his brides … earthly women. Under this doctrine, copulation within the bounds of the Moravian Mysteries became literal sexual union with Christ. Zinzendorf, as the chief deputy of Christ on Earth thereby became the chief marriage broker and undertook to regulate the sexual lives of the Moravians to an insane degree. Zinzendorf began the practice of "adjusting" marriages, switching partners to satisfy his own lust. Often, he held "mass adjustments" during which a large number of young boys and girls were suddenly thrust together in sexual union within the meeting house. After prayer and singing of hymns such as we have seen above, the young couples would perform an exacting form of sexual intercourse astride narrow benches. According to Zinzendorf's dogma, the sexual act, being purely the affair of Christ with His Followers, must be accomplished to his stern designs. Another sexual ritual was enacted inside a small, portable cabinet with windows, which allowed the "Most Excellent Papa"

Zinzendorf and his eldest mistress to view the proceedings with voyeuristic abandon. This was the famous Blue Cabinet of the Herrnhutter, which hid the rituals of the “Streitenchen” or “Little Fighters” for Jesus, whom Papa Zinzendorf married and instructed.

Clearly, there are elements in this insane *massa confusa* which are highly reminiscent of the Hindu and Buddhist schools of sexual Tantra ritual intercourse in a group, around the master, exacting performance of the sexual act for transcendent purposes; even the vaginal symbolism of the wound relates to the Goddess orientation of the Tantra. While Zinzendorf’s personal fetishes may still seem off to us today, we can begin to understand, with the help of modern depth psychology, that he was really in touch with a deep and archetypal current of erotico-mystical ekstasis that has been formalized in some Oriental religions. In our placement of the Moravian masonic rite in its historical matrix, we can also begin to discern the radical gnostic/antinomian bases for the Zinzendorf doctrines as well as the importance for the future of its intuitive excursion into the underworld of mystical eros. Zinzendorf emerges, not only as a wonderful and classic neurotic, but also as a true nexus for serious illuminative practice, sexual liberation and theocratic politics … a figure worthy of far more attention than has hitherto been forthcoming. In the context of modern groups practicing esoteric sexuality, such as the O.T.O., the G.B.G. and TOPY, Zinzendorf can now be seen as an important precursor and forefather… a liberator of the sexual current in the West.

Bibliography

A New Encyclopedia of Freemasonry (2 vols.), A.E. Waite, Weathervane Books, 1970.

Encyclopedia of Freemasonry (Abridged,) Albert G. Mackey, McClure Publishing Co., 1927.

Sexuality, Magic and Perversion, Francis King, Citadel Press, 1972.

Ecstasy Through Tantra, Dr. John Mumford, Llewelyn Press, 1988.

“A Fire in the Shadows,” Tim O’Neill, in *Gnosis* magazine, issue #17, Fall, 1990.

Secret and Forbidden, Paul Tabori, Signet Books, 1966.

Rumors, Myths and Urban Legends Surrounding the Death of Jim Morrison

Thomas Lyttle

So much has been written and speculated upon surrounding Jim Morrison's life, death and after-death that it is no longer enough to address just the facts. One must now also address the self-perpetuating mythos that has developed and enveloped the facts.

In the late 1960s, Doors' singer Jim Morrison founded a publishing company named Zeppelin Publishing Company with the help of the legal department of Warner Brothers Pictures and Atlantic Records. According to promotions for Zeppelin, "Jim wanted to get his hands on the trademark 'Zeppelin' before Led Zeppelin did. He did this while everyone in America knew who the Doors were, but before the other rock group was well known…" Zeppelin Publishing Company was chartered and put into hibernation for later resurrection.

On July 3, 1971, rock and roll wünderkind James Douglas Morrison was supposedly, reportedly, found dead in a Paris, France apartment he had sub-leased as a writer's studio. His "wife," Pamela Courson, was the first to discover the body in the bathroom. Jim lay in the bathtub, naked and half-submerged. At first she thought that "Jim was pretending," noticing that he had "recently shaved."

What immediately followed was a series of bizarre and convoluted events, probable conspiracies, strange coincidences and surreal news reports surrounding the death of James Douglas Morrison. Following the death there was a three day news blackout. This was reported on and questioned widely in the media, including articles in *The Berkeley Barb*,

Esquire, The LA Free Press, Sounds, The Baltimore Morning Sun, and many others. Robert Hillburn writing at that time in *The Los Angeles Times,* called his obituary of Morrison "Why Morrison Death News Delay?" igniting a spark that has yet to smolder.

The blackout prevented Morrison's close friends from getting at the principals and witnesses — and the corpse — for close inspection. Even Jim's parents and his in-laws were prevented from seeing the corpse.

Pamela had called a local French medical examiner — Dr. Max Vasille — to take charge upon finding her husband's body. Dr. Vasille listed the cause of death as "heart failure". Several people viewed the sealed coffin, including Doors manager Bill Siddons, who apparently chose not to view the corpse. Siddons' official statement to the press was that "Jim Morrison died of natural causes" and that "the death was peaceful".

Although Jim's death was listed officially as "heart failure," his personal physician, Dr. Derwin, stated to the press that "Jim Morrison was in excellent health before travelling to Paris".

This has recently been complicated by "Queen Mu" writing in *Mondo 2000* (Summer, 1991). Apparently *Mondo 2000* surfaced a rare medical file regarding Jim Morrison's various sexual diseases, and the treatments he was undergoing for them. There was mention of "cancer of the penis…". Queen Mu reports:"… Hey! No one wants to be expunged from the Book of Life. How many medical workers at UCLA knew that Jim Morrison was being treated for gonorrhea in the Fall of 1970? Knew of the biopsy that confirmed adenoma of the penile urethra — often consequence to repeated gonorrhea? This is a particularly swift form of cancer whose only alternative may have been radical castration…"— Queen Mu, pp. 131.

No autopsy was performed on Jim Morrison's corpse, as is the usual custom in unusual or suspect deaths in France. Had friends been able to at least see the corpse this might have been done. According to several reports, Morrison confidant Alan Ronay also helped maintain the blackout surrounding the death. Jim Morrison's body was quickly whisked away to be buried at Pere Lachaise. Pere Lachaise is a national French monument and notables like Balzac, Edith Piaf, Moliere, Oscar Wilde and other French

countrymen are buried there. Regarding Pere Lachaise: Jim had handpicked the gravesite on several occasions for his impending “burial.” He had visited the site as late as three days before his ”death.” This is reported in *Break On Through* and other Morrison biographies.

The media at once showed suspicion regarding Morrison’s grave due to the fact that foreigners are rarely buried in a national French monument. Reports like those in the *Baltimore Morning Sun* questioned how he might have cajoled his way into the cemetery to be buried.

Upon viewing the Pere Lachaise grave site, Doors drummer John Densmore stated: “… the grave is too short!” Doors manager Bill Siddons, when asked about Pere Lachaise, stated: “… how it happened is still not clear to me”. He was quoted in *Bam!*, *a* rock magazine back in 1981 regarding the controversy. At any rate, Morrison’s grave at Pere Lachaise remained unmarked for several months, adding and maintaining a further remained unmarked for several months, adding and maintaining a further cloak around the corpse and the evidence.

Only two people saw Jim Morrison’s dead body — his wife Pamela and Dr. Vasille. Dr. Vasille has repeatedly denied interviews and will not answer questions, and Pamela is dead.

The Occult Connection

Besides the “facts” as laid out in countless books, films, interviews and press reports, there exists also a wild and surreal assortment of rumors regarding “what really took place”. Many of these rumors center in on the occult, black and white magick, Voodoo, magical Christianity and assorted mystical strangenesses. In J. Prochniky’s biography of Morrison, *Break On Through*, there is this description of Morrison-based occult rumors: “… even more incredible were theories that Morrison had somehow been “murdered” through “supernatural means”. While Jim was fascinated with the occult, it is quite an assumption that a jealous rival or jilted lover could cause his death in a Paris bathtub by stabbing a Voodoo doll or melting down a Doors album while chanting a curse.”

“… Another supernatural-based theory is that Morrison’s body had been driven to great extremes by the spirit of the shaman he believed had entered his body as a child on that New Mexico highway. When this spirit or a demon has used its talents to influence the world, it abandoned Jim and left him a physically wasted and mentally exhausted man who felt betrayed with no desire to go on…” — Riordan and Prochniky, pp. 466

Another occult theory exists in *No One Here Gets Out Alive* by Sugarman and Hopkins. Regarding Jim’s death they state:

“… Other theories abounded in Jim’s close circle of friends. One had him killed when someone plucked out his eyes with a knife (“to free his soul”, as the story had it). Another had a spurned mistress killing him long distance from New York by Witchcraft…” — Sugarman and Hopkins, pp. 372

Anthropologist Alison Bailey Kennedy even went so far as to tie Morrison in with Orphic mystery cults and the initiatory uses of various spider venoms, which release the “*deuende* in Gypsy tradition — the dark soul that burn incandescently like a cicada, immolating itself in fiery passion.”

Jim Morrison many times claimed connections to the occult and specifically Voodoo or Voudun philosophy and magick. It was a part of his “path”. The moniker “Mr. Mojo Risin’” was an anagram — a

rearrangement of the letters in Jim Morrison. Mojo is a religious term describing shamanic “power icon” or affiliation. The African root Mo refers to the dark or darkness. Mojo is a specific African/Voodoun/Obeah traditional term.

“I think that there are whole regions of images and feelings that are rarely given outlet in daily life… when they do come out, they can take perverse forms” said Morrison circa 1968. He goes on to say that “the shaman is the healer, like the Witch-doctor.” Morrison reiterates elsewhere that “we must not forget that the snake or the lizard is identified with the unconscious and the forces of evil…” So says the legendary “Lizard King”. “The Lizard King” was one of Jim Morrison’s occult code names. He was also called “The Exterminating Angel” in occult circles, according to film critic Gene Youngblood and others.

In *No One Hear Gets Out Alive* authors Hopkins and Sugarman recount Morrison drinking blood with Witch-initiate Ingrid Thompson. In certain occult traditions, the use of blood combined with certain sexual acts is reginmen, part of a hidden technology for spell casting. This is especially so in the Tantric *Varna Marg* (left-handed) rites. It is also a part of Western ritual magic, used in groups like La Couleuvre Noir, the Ordo Templi Orientis, Les Ophitis and others, although it is more uncommon than common in occult work.

This sort of sorcery is also used in Voodoo/Voudun Petro rites to summon different Loas (gods and goddesses). Speaking of the Tantra *Varna Marg* and the Voodoo *Petro,* there is this description of death mythology pertinent to Jim Morrison’s occult beliefs and possibly his practices. At the very least he would have known of these ideas.

“… but the human form is no means just an empty vessel for the Gods… Rather it is a critical locus where a number of sacred forces may converge. The players are the basic components of man: the *z’etiole,* the *gros bon ange* and the *ti bon ange,* as well as the *n’ame* of the corpse cadaver. The latter is the body itself, the flesh and the blood. The *n’ame* is the gift from God and the spirit of the flesh that allows each cell in the body to function. It is the residual presence of the *n’ame* for example, that gives form to the corpse long after the clinical “death” of the body. The n’ame, upon the

“death” of the body begins to pass slowly into the organisms of the soil… A process that takes 18 months to complete…”— Davis, pp. 99

Remember, Jim Morrison’s grave at Pere Lachait remained unmarked for several months so that no one might disturb the corpse and the surrounding site.

According to Tibetan tradition, something similar is believed to exist so far as naming the components of the soul and the body. The *Varna Marg* and especially the *Bardo Thodol* (the Tibetan Book of the Dead) relate specific death myths concerning what occurs right after someone dies.

Writing in *Psychedelic Monographs and Essays,* psychiatrist Dr. Rick Strassman shows that:

“… Another model of birth and death, and transformation in which the 49 day interval appears is in the Bardo Thodol… This is the time when the life forces of the deceased — the energetic tendencies accumulated during “life,” “decide on” or gravitate towards or coalesce around the next incarnate form…” — Strassman, pp. 182

Rock writer Greg Shaw, writing in *Bam!* and *Mojo Navigator* interpreted Morrison’s song “The End” along these lines also, stating that each line in the song is a direct quote from the *Bardo Thodol.* It all “makes perfect sense, if one is familiar with the mystical background,” said Shaw.

What are the implications for these ideas in light of the supposed “death” of Jim Morrison? At clinical death, according to the above, the person actually splits up into his or her true parts, formerly connected into a whole being.

According to occult lore, it is possible to ensnare or trap parts of the personality or spirit during this transition. Wade Davis, author of The *Serpent and the Rainbow and Passage of Darkness: The Ethnobiology of the Haitian Zombie,* has this to say:

“During initiation, for example the *ti bon ange* may be extracted from the body and housed in a clay jar called a *canari.* A *canari* is a clay jar that has

been placed at the inner sanctuary of the *hounfour* (ritual house)."

"… During the stages directly following the physical death and the first stages of after-death the *ti bon ange* is extremely vulnerable… Only when it is liberated from the flesh… is it relatively safe…" — Davis, pp. 102

Is it Jim Morrison's *ti bon ange* that is at the root of all these occult rumors? Was it his *ti bon ange* that was bought, sold and then collected on that fateful day in Paris when he "died?"

That *canari* has a name. It is called Zeppelin Publishing Company. And the *bokor,* or Voodoo high priest who cajoled Morrison's *ti bon ange* into the *canari?* He runs a company called the B of A Company (or B of A Communications), formerly of Baton Rouge, Louisiana, and now of Fort Lauderdale, Florida. He owns an active passport and IDs under the name of James Douglas Morrison and claims to actually be the not-so-dead rock star!

In the first two years after Jim Morrison's "death" in Paris, many sightings of the rock star were reported. These sightings range from the totally spurious and ridiculous to the reliable and very hard to shake. The *LA Free Press* and several wire service reports described someone in 1973 appearing on several occasions in San Francisco. There Morrison was involved with business and banking transactions with the Bank of America of San Francisco. The employee that handled the transactions, Walt Fleischer, confirmed that someone resembling Morrison and using that name was indeed doing business at the Bank of America. He did add that he "was far from sure that this was the 'dead' artist" as Morrison showed no identification. Could this be because a photo ID was already on file at the bank, with the name James Douglas Morrison? Yes, it is still on file.

According to authors Riordan and Prochniky, Morrison was also seen on several occasions hanging out in "unpleasant places" in Los Angeles and wearing Morrison's leather garb, all in black. This was over a period of two years right after the Paris "death." I researched this a bit further and found out that the "unpleasant places" meant notorious gay leather bars, and the underground gay community in Los Angeles.

There were also many rumors that Morrison was also appearing regularly in Louisiana and had made several radio interviews. Again, Prochniky and Riordan reveal that: "… At an obscure radio station in the Midwest Jim supposedly showed up in the dead of night and did a lengthy interview that explained it all… After the interview he vanished into the darkness again. As you might guess, no recordings of the interview exist and no reliable source remembers hearing the broadcast…"

A record called "Phantom's Divine Comedy" was released in 1974. This was rumored to be Jim Morrison singing with an anonymous band with the names of "drummer X, bassist Y, and keyboardist Z". The music reportedly resembled Jim Morrison's sound quite well. All this again added and sparked the rumor mills, and stirred public fascination.

However, in a 1992 press released from the Zeppelin group, it is revealed that Morrison pal Iggy Pop was actually doing all the singing and helping the "hoax" along. This added more fuel as to how many people were actually involved in maintaining his "death hoax." Up until the 1992 press release, the record company that had released Phantom had refused to divulge the names on the LP, or the singer's name — which was indeed Iggy Pop.

Regarding all these rumors, Doors keyboardist Ray Manzarek stated: "If there was one guy that would have been capable of staging his own death — getting a phony death certificate and paying off some French doctor… And putting a hundred and fifty pound sack of sand into a coffin and splitting to some point on this planet — Africa, who knows where — it is Jim Morrison who would have been able to pull it off." Jim Morrison's best friend Tom Baker, writing in *High Times* (June, 1981) had this to say: "I was very tempted to believe the rumors that Jim had faked his own death."

A group of fans actually went so far as to try to get Morrison's dental records, apparently to try to get permission to dig up his body and match the records to the remains. This was immediately blocked both by Morrison's parents and their attorneys — at least for the time being.

It is known that Jim Morrison had repeatedly planted the seeds which would lead to this sort of speculation — that he had somehow faked his

own death and dropped out into a new identity. At the Fillmore in San Francisco in 1967, Jim started suggesting that he should pull a “death stunt” to bring national press attention onto the band. This was when he came up with the “Mr. Mojo Risin” anagram which would be used after he “split to Africa” and wished to secretly contact friends.

Morrison also told Danny Sugarman and Jerry Hopkins on more than one occasion that he could see himself “radically changing careers, reappearing as a suited and neck-tied businessman.” Jac Holzman’s assistant Steve Harris even remembers Jim Morrison asking what might happen if he were to suddenly “die”… how might it affect business, record sales, the press, and would people believe it? With confidant Mary Francis Werebelow Jim “entertained long conversations about how the Disciples had stolen the body of Christ from the crypt, jokingly calling it the ‘Easter heist,’ etc.”

In a *Rolling Stone* article for September 17, 1981, author Jerry Hopkins recounts many other Morrison sightings: “The first one I remember was a beaut… He surfaced in San Francisco shortly after Morrison’s death and began cashing checks in Morrison’s name. He was not writing bad checks, mind you; it was his money he was spending. It was just that he was dressed as Jim would in his ‘leather period,’ and that he told everyone that he was indeed the ‘dead singer.’

“The telephone operator asked: ‘will you accept a long distance collect call from Jim Morrison?’ It was an interesting conversation… Our conversations were unsettling. He told me to go to Paris and dig up the corpse, but that you would need permission from ‘twelve Catholic Bishops’ to do it… A visit to his home was more jarring. There at the end of one room was a Morrison ‘shrine,’ converted with posters, flowers, religious icons — the works!”

Years later, I actually got the chance to visit and interview the shrine’s owner, who claimed to be Jim Morrison. He told me matter-of-factly details about Hopkins, as well as that other reporters had actually burglarized the shrine in an attempt to get a scoop. Another surreal sighting involved “Donny” of Baton Rouge, Louisiana. He described Jim Morrison at Morrison’s home in 1978. Donny told his friend “Larry” about it, as Larry was trying to break in to the world of rock and roll: “I remember Larry

telling me about the whole wall of one room lined with books all across it. Every one of the books were about Satan, or had something to do with him. He also told me about a large chair that looked like a throne, on which this man sat and watched over his nude children running around… I guess that you can probably guess who that kinky old weird man was — Jim Morrison, The Lizard King!" — Sugarman, pp. 33

Another person named Rhea (the Greek goddess of fertility) claimed she was living with Jim Morrison in 1979 with their son "Jesse Blue James". She matter-of-factly claimed that Morrison had "evolved into a state of pure energy… And can materialize and dematerialize at will." She and Jim were also in direct telepathic communication and in "electromagnetic synch."

The Intelligence Connection and JM2

Rock icon Jim Morrison's father was an admiral in the United States Navy, privy to intelligence and counterintelligence information. His name is Steven Morrison.

During the first few years after Jim Morrison's "death" a number of interesting articles surfaced. These cited references showing various intelligence interests either in Morrison's underground activity; his "death" or that intelligence had even masterminded Morrison's death itself! One of the more explicit appeared in the Scandinavian magazine *Dagblatte.* This article detailed French intelligence efforts to assassinate Jim Morrison in Paris.

Author Bernard Wolfe writing "The Real Life Death of Jim Morrison" for *Esquire* (June 1972) related the story of, "Sherry, a Pasadena girl who knew Morrison well: "…I couldn't make sense out of the stories in the papers. Suppose he had a heart attack exactly as they reported, is that what he died of? My God, you might as well say that Ernest Hemingway died of "extensive brain damage". If you want to know the cause of Jim's death — not just the physiology of it — ask what triggered his heart to stop… And whose finger was on the trigger." — Wolfe, pp. 106

In the first few years after Morrison's "death" the owner of B of A Communications, named James Douglas Morrison, claimed to be operating as an intelligence agent for a number of domestic and international groups including the CIA, NSA, Interpol, Swedish Intelligence and others. There are also connections between James Douglas Morrison and various occult groups with probable intelligence connections. [Author's note: from here on the B of A Morrison will be referred to as JM2.]

JM2 also claims to be the "dead" rock star and former singer for The Doors. The new JM2 dropped the old JM1 rock and roll identity to become a "James Bond," wearing the suit and tie that Morrison predicted when he was with The Doors.

This author has in fact seen what appear to be stacks of official-looking documents and letters between the CIA, various government agencies, national news groups like CNN and NBC and JM2, involving what looked like personal meetings, projects and ephemera. Of special interest is that when I viewed parts of the files, all the reports had a paper-thin metallic band affixed to them with colored UPC bar codes. There is no way for me to authenticate the claims of JM2, but everything looked extremely official and very elaborate.

From about 1972 through 1992 JM2 has left a surreal trail of paper and appearances all over the world. These include letters to and from Louisiana Governor Edwin Edwards and CIA Director William Colby, through the Washington, DC law firm of Colby, Miller and Hanes.

A courtroom transcript which I have seen implicates the FBI and CIA in several coverups regarding JM2's intelligence career. These show that there seems to be a systematic destruction of files relating to JM2's spy activities. An enclosed plate also shows JM2's Swedish Intelligence ID card, obtained from the FBI through the Freedom of Information Act. Unfortunately the only copy I have is obscured in the facial area, but the ID numbers are intact. Also in my possession are files concerning JM2's rogue financial activities with the Bank of America, and news reports regarding lawsuits by and against JM2 for bank fraud and espionage, which he claims was done under intelligence auspices as part of financial experiments to destabilize foreign currencies and exchange rates.

There also appear to be hundreds if not thousands of miscellaneous files — both classified and declassified — regarding one James Douglas Morrison, dated after his "death" in 1971. These also refer to "WBC," a nom de plume of JM2. These look like real letters, documents, and court transcripts involving intelligence circles. These involve the CIA, Danish intelligence, and others. There is also an active passport and banking IDs under the name James Douglas Morrison.

Like the "multiple Oswald" theories of Kennedy assassination buffs, there also exist rumors and urban legends describing the "multiple Morrison" theory.

The idea that Jim Morrison was in fact several different people and actors, or intelligence agents has been going on for some time. Besides the "Morrison" singing on the Phantom (now shown to be Iggy Pop) there also exist rumors that a Louisiana banker as well as Richard Tanguay — a close friend of Mick Jagger — perpetuated the hoax. Even *High Times* ran and old news story about someone claiming to be Jim Morrison (post 1971) running for governor of Louisiana! Supposedly Richard Tanguay (related to vaudeville legend Eva Tanguay) took the Morrison persona on, on several occasions, and even sang with The Doors when they toured Europe with the Rolling Stones. Is this possible?

In fact JM2 has claimed publicly that there have been numerous James Douglas Morrisons, and that they all knew one another and met from time to time to work it all out. The impersonations were part of CIA sociological experiments like Artichoke or MK-ULTRA.

Is this all for real or is this an elaborate hoax? It is not the scope of this work to determine the truth — or lack of truth — or the consequences of such activities. The important thing to note that someone or some group is actively pursuing and setting up a mass "urban legend" regarding James Morrison. Whether this is a hoax or not is not as important as the fact that a lot of official-looking information is being generated surrounding the myth and legend of Jim Morrison, his life and his supposed "death."

The Last Testament of Rev. Jim Jones

Jonestown, Guyana, 18 November 1978

How very much I've tried my best to give you a good life. In spite of all that I've tried, a handful of people, with their lies, have made our lives impossible. There's no way to distract ourselves from what's happened today.

Not only do we have a compound situation … The Betrayal of the Century… Some have stolen children from mothers and are in pursuit now to kill them because they stole their children. I mean we are sitting here waiting on a powder keg and I don't think that is what we want to do with our babies. I don't think that is what we have in mind to do with our babies.

It was said by the greatest of prophets from time immemorial: "No man may take my life from me. I lay my life down…" So just to sit here and wait for the catastrophe that's going to happen to that airplane — it's going to be a catastrophe — it almost happened here, it almost happened, the Congressman was nearly killed here. But you can't steal people's children, you can't take off with people's children without expecting a violent reaction.

If we can't live in peace, then let us die in peace. I've been so betrayed. I've been so terribly betrayed. We've tried, and what he said right this minute was that he said if it was only worth one day it was worthwhile…

What's going to happen in a few minutes is that one of the people on that plane is gonna, is gonna shoot the pilot. I know that. I didn't plan it but I know it's gonna happen. They`re gonna shoot that pilot and down comes that plane into the jungle and we had better not have any of our children left when it's over cause … I never lied to you. I never have lied to you. I know that's what's going to happen. That's what he intends to do and he will do it. He'll do it.

I’ve been loaded with many pressures seeing all these people behave so treasonous. It was just too much for me to put together but I now know what he was telling me and it’ll happen … if the plane gets in the air, that is. So my opinion is that you be kind to children and you be kind to seniors and take the potion like we used to take in an ocean breeze and step over quietly because we are not committing suicide — It’s a revolutionary act. We can’t go back, we won’t … we’re not going back to tell more lies which means more Congressmen, there’s no way, there’s no way we can survive….

The people in San Francisco will not be idle over this. We do not take our death in vain you know. Is it too late for Russia? Here`s why it’s too late for Russia. They killed, they started to kill. That’s why it makes it too late for Russia. I can’t control these people. They’re out there. They’ve gone with the guns and it’s too late. And once they’ve killed anybody, at least that’s the way I want it. I just put my lot with you. If one of my people do something, it’s me. When they say I don’t have to take the blame for this, well I don’t, I don’t live that way and if they deliver up sin and try to get the man that’s … it… mothers … lying on him and lying on and trying to break up this family and they’ve all agreed to kill us by whatever means necessary. Do you think I’m going to let them? … Not on your life. No, you’re not going, you’re not going. You’re not going. I can’t live that way. I cannot live that way. We lived for all and I’ll die for all…

To me death is not a fearful thing, it’s living that’s fearful.

I have never never never seen anything like this before in my life. I have never seen people take law and provoke us and try to purposely agitate mothers of children. It is only … it’s not, it’s not worth living like this, worth living like this.

There is one man there who blames, who blames Michael Stone for the murder of his mother, and he will stop that plane by any means necessary. He’ll do it. That plane will come out of the air. There’s no way you can fly a plane without a pilot…

I haven’t seen anybody yet that didn’t die, and I like to choose my own kind of death. I’m tired of being … to hell, that’s what I’m tired of. Tired of it. So many people’s lives in my hands and I certainly don’t want your life in my hands. I’ve been telling you to this day, without me life has no meaning.

I’m the best friend you’ll ever have.

I have to pay. I’m standing with you people — you’re part of me. I can detach myself … no no no no no, I never detach myself from any of your troubles. I’ve always taken your troubles right on my shoulders … I’m not going to change that now. It’s too late. I’ve been running too long. I’m not gonna change now.

The next time, you’ll get to go to Russia. The next time round. What I’m talking about now is the dispensation of judgement, this is a revolutionary suicide council. I’m not talking about self-destruction. I’m talking about what… we have no other road. I will take your call. I will put it to the Russians, and I can tell you the answer now because I’m a prophet. Call the Russians and tell them… see if they’ll take us.

I practically died every day to give you peace. And you’ve still not had any peace. You look better than I’ve seen you in a long while, but it’s still not the kind of peace that I wanted to give you. A person’s a fool who continues to say that you’re winning when you’re losing. Win one, lose two, what?…

He’s taking off, the plane is taking off… Suicide: many have done it … Stone has done it. If somebody oughta listen … somebody … can talk … can they not talk to San Francisco see that Stone is not … He has done the thing he wanted to do. To have us destroyed.

We win. We win when we go down, they don’t have nobody else to hate. They’ve got nobody else to hate. Many will destroy themselves. I’m speaking here not as the administrator but as a prophet today. I wouldn’t talk so serious if I didn’t know what I was talking about.

By now the damage will be done. But I cannot separate myself from the pain of my people. We can't separate myself, if you think about it, we've walked together too long.

I saved them, I saved them, but I made my example. I made my expression. I made my manifestation and the world was ready … not ready for me. Paul says I was a man born out of due season. I've been born out of due season just like we all are and the best testimony we can make is to leave this goddamn world.

Everybody hold it, hold it, hold it, lay down your burden and I'll lay down my burden down by the riverside, shall we lay 'em down here inside of Guyana, what's the difference?

No man didn't take our lives right now; he hasn't taken them, but when they start shooting them out of the air, they'll shoot some of our innocent babies. I'm not lying … They've got to shoot me to get through to some of these people. I'm not letting them take your child. Would you let them take your child?

For months I've tried to keep this thing from happening, but I now see that it's the will of the Sovereign Being that this happened to us. And we lay down our lives in protest at what's been done. And we lay down our lives in protest at what's been done. The criminality of people, the cruelty of people who walked out of here today. You know those people who walked out, most of those white people. Most of those white people walked. I'm so grateful for the ones that didn't, those who knew who they are.

There's no point, there's no point to this … we are born before our time. Take ease, take ease, take ease, take ease … Sit down, sit down, sit down. I tried so very very hard … They're trying over here to see what's in it … what's gonna happen … who is it? It's all over, it's all over….

What a legacy, what a legacy. Well, the Red Brigade's the only one that made any sense anyway. They invaded our privacy, they invaded our home, they followed us six thousand miles away. The Red Brigade showed them justice — the Congressman's dead.

It’s simple — there’s no convulsion with it. It’s just simple. Please get it before it’s too late. The GDF will be here I tell you. Get moving, get moving, don’t be afraid to die. If these people land out here they’ll torture our children, they’ll torture some of our people here, torture our seniors. We cannot have this.

Are you going to separate yourself from whoever shot the Congressman? I don’t know who shot him. They speak of peace, they gotta right to know how many are dead … Oh, God, almighty God.

I don’t know how in the world they’re ever gonna write about us. It’s too late, it’s too late. The Congressman is dead … Many of our traitors are dead … They’re all laying out there dead….

Will you please hasten, will you hasten with that medication. You don’t know what you’ve done… I’ve tried … It’s hard, it’s hard only at first is it hard. It’s hard only at first. Living … when you’re looking at death … living is much more difficult. Rising up every morning and not knowing what’s going to be … it’s much more difficult. It’s much more difficult.

Please for God sake let’s get on with it. We’ve lived as no other people have lived and loved. We’ve had as much of this world as you’re gonna get. Let’s just be done with it, let’s be done with the agony of it. It’s far, far harder to have to watch you every day die slowly, and from the time you’re a child to the time you get grey, you are dying.

This is a revolutionary suicide. This is not a self-destructive suicide. Who wants to go with their child has a right to go with their child. I think it’s humane.

I want to go — I want to see you go through. They can take me, and they can do whatever they want to do. I want to see you go. I don’t wanna see you go through this hell no more. No more, no more, no more … The best thing you can do is relax and you will have no problem. You will have no problem with the thing if you just relax.

It’s not to be feared. It is not to be feared. It’s a friend. And you’re sitting there showing your love for one another. Gone, let’s get gone, let’s get

gone.

Who are these? We have nothing we can do. We can't, we can't separate ourselves from our own people. For twenty years laying in some rotten old nursing home….

We've tried to find a new beginning but it's too late. You can't separate yourself from your brother and your sister. No way I'm gonna do it. I refuse. I don't know who killed the Congressman, but as far as I'm concerned I killed him. You understand what I'm saying? I killed him. He had no business coming. I told him not to come.

Die with respect. Die with a degree of dignity. Lay down your life with dignity, don't lay down with tears and agony. There's nothing to death. It's like Mac said, it's like stepping over into another plane. Stop this hysterics. This is not the way for people who are Socialists or Communists to die. No way for us to die.

We must die with some dignity. We must die with some dignity.

Before we had no choice, now we have some choice. And you think they're going to allow this to be done, and allow us to get by with this? You must be insane. It's only — it's something to put you to rest. Oh God. Mother, mother, mother, please. Mother please, please, please don't, don't do this, don't do this. Put down your life with this child but don't do this.

Free at last. Keep your emotions down, keep your emotions down.

It's never been done before you say. It's been done by every tribe in history. Every tribe facing annihilation. All the Indians of the Amazon are doing right now. They refuse to bring any babies into the world. They kill every child that comes into the world because they don't want to live in this kind of a world.

Be patient, be patient. Death is …

I tell you I don't care how many screams you hear. I don't care how many anguished cries. Death is a million times preferable to ten more days

of this life. If you knew what was ahead of you, if you knew what was ahead of you, you'd be glad to be stepping over tonight.

Death, death, death is common to people.

If you ask the Samoans, they take death in their stride. Just be dignified.

Adults, adults, adults, I call on you to stop this nonsense. I call on you to quit exciting your children when all they're doing is going to quiet rest. I call on you to stop this now if you have any respect at all. Are we black, proud and Socialist, or what are we?

No, no sorrow that it's all over. I'm glad it's over. Hurry, hurry my children, hurry. Let us not fall into the hands of the enemy. Hurry my children, hurry. There are seniors out here I'm concerned about, hurry. I don't want to leave my seniors to this mess. Now quickly, quickly, quickly, quickly.

No more pain, Al. No more pain, I said, Al. No more pain, Jim Cobb, laying on the airfield dead at this moment. Remember the moment … all of the moments that he … these are the people, the peddlers of hate, we're not letting them take our life, we're laying down our life.

We're sick of their lies, we just want peace.

All it is is taking a drink to take … to go to sleep.

That's what death is, sleep. Whatever, I'm tired of it all.

We'll set an example for others … one thousand people who've said we don't like the way the world is.

The Black Hole of Guyana

The Untold Story of the Jonestown Massacre

John Judge

Somewhere in the concrete canyons of New York City, a rock group is using the name “Jim Jones and the Suicides.” Irreverent and disarming, the name reflects the trend in punk rock to take social issues head on. Cynicism about the Jonestown deaths, the social parallels abound in the lyrics of today’s music. The messages are clear because we all know the story.

In fact, people today recognize the name “Jonestown” more than any other event, a full 98% of the population.[1] The television and printed media were filled with the news for more than a year, even though the tale read like something from the *National Enquirer.* But despite all of the coverage, the reality of Jonestown and the reasons behind the bizarre events remain a mystery. The details have faded from memory for most of us since November 18, 1978, but not the outlines. Think back a moment and you’ll remember.

You Know the Official Version

A fanatic religious leader in California led a multi-racial community into the jungles of remote Guyana to establish a socialist Utopia. The People’s Temple, his church, was in the heart of San Francisco and drew poor people, social activists, Blacks and Hispanics, young and old. The message was racial harmony and justice, and criticism of the hypocrisy of the world around his followers.[2]

The Temple rose in a vacuum of leadership at the end of an era. The political confrontations of the 60s were almost over, and religious cults and "personal transformation" were on the rise. Those who had preached a similar message on the political soap box were gone, burnt out, discredited, or dead. The counter-culture had apparently degenerated into drugs and violence. Charlie Manson was the only visible image of the period. Suddenly, religion seemed to offer a last hope.[3]

Even before they left for the Jonestown site, the People's Temple members were subjects of local scandal in the news.[4] Jim Jones claimed these exposés were attacks on their newly-found religion, and used them as an excuse to move most of the members to Guyana.[5] But disturbing reports continued to surround Jones, and soon came to the attention of Congressional members like Leo Ryan. Stories of beatings, kidnapping, sexual abuse and mysterious deaths leaked out in the press.[6] Ryan decided to go to Guyana and investigate the situation for himself. The nightmare began.[7]

Isolated on the tiny airstrip at Port Kaituma, Ryan and several reporters in his group were murdered. Then came the almost unbelievable "White Night," a mass suicide pact of the Jonestown camp. A community made up mostly of Blacks and women drank cyanide from paper cups of Kool-Aid, adults and children alike died and fell around the main pavilion, Jones himself was shot in the head, an apparent suicide. For days, the body count mounted, from 400 to nearly 1,000. The bodies were flown to the United States and later cremated or buried in mass graves.[8]

Temple member Larry Layton faced charges of conspiracy in Ryan's murder. Ryan was awarded a posthumous Medal of Honor, and was the first Congress member to die in the line of duty.[9]

Pete Hamill called the corpses "all the loose change of the sixties."[10] The effect was electric. Any alternative to the current system was seen as futile, if not deadly. Protest only led to police riots and political assassination. Alternative lifestyles and drugs led to "creepy-crawly communes and violent murders.[11] And religious experiments led to cults and suicide. Social Utopias were dreams that turned into nightmares. The television urged us to

go back to the “Happy Days” of the apolitical 50s. The message was, get a job, and go back to church.[12] The nuclear threat generated only nihilism and hopelessness. There was no answer but death, no exit from the grisly future. The new ethic was personal success, aerobics, material consumption, a return to “American values,” and the “moral majority,” white Christian world. The official message was very clear.

But Just Suppose It Didn’t Happen That Way…

The headlines the day of the massacre read: “Cult Dies in South American Jungle: 400 Die in Mass Suicide, 700 Flee into Jungle.”[13] By all accounts in the press, as well as People’s Temple statements, there were at least 1,100 people at Jonestown.[14] There were 809 adult passports found there, and reports of 300 children (276 found among the dead, and 210 never identified). The headline figures from the first day add to the same number: 1,100.[15] The original body count done by the Guyanese, which was the final count, was given almost a week later by American military authorities as 913.[16,17] A total of 167 survivors were reported to have returned to the U.S.[18] Where were the others?

At their first press conference, the Americans claimed that the Guyanese “could not count.” These local people had carried out the gruesome job of counting the bodies, and later assisted American troops in the process of poking holes in the flesh lest they explode from the gasses of decay.[19] Then the Americans proposed another theory — they had missed seeing a pile of bodies at the back of the pavilion. The structure was the size of a small house, and they had been at the scene for days. Finally, we were given the official reason for the discrepancy — bodies had fallen on top of other bodies, adults covering children.[20]

It was simple, if morbid, arithmetic that led to the first suspicions. The 408 bodies discovered at first count would have to be able to cover 505 bodies for a total of 913. In addition, those who first worked on the bodies would have been unlikely to miss bodies lying beneath each other, since each body had to be punctured. Eighty-two of the bodies first found were

those of children, reducing the number that could have been hidden below others.[21] A search of nearly 150 photographs, aerial and close-up, fails to show even one body lying under another, much less 500.[22]

It seemed the first reports were true, 400 had died, and 700 had fled to the jungle. The American authorities claimed to have searched for people who had escaped, but found no evidence of any in the surrounding area.[23] At least a hundred Guyanese troops were among the first to arrive, and they were ordered to search the jungle for survivors.[24] In the area, at the same time, British Black Watch troops were on "training exercises," with nearly 600 of their best-trained commandos. Soon, American Green Berets were on site as well.[25] The presence of these soldiers, specially trained in covert killing operations, may explain the increasing numbers of bodies that appeared.

Most of the photographs show the bodies in neat rows, face down. There are few exceptions. Close shots indicate drag marks, as though the bodies were positioned by someone after death.[26] Is it possible that the 700 who fled were rounded up by these troops, brought back to Jonestown and added to the body count?[27]

If so, the bodies would indicate the cause of death. A new word was coined by the media, "suicide-murder." But which was it?[28] Autopsies and forensic science are a developing art. The detectives of death use a variety of scientific methods and clues to determine how people die, when they expire, and the specific cause of death. Dr. Mootoo, the top Guyanese pathologist, was at Jonestown within hours after the massacre. Refusing the assistance of U.S. pathologists, he accompanied the teams that counted the dead, examined the bodies, and worked to identify the deceased. While the American press screamed about the "Kool-Aid Suicides," Dr. Mootoo was reaching a much different opinion.[29]

There are certain signs that show the types of poisons that lead to the end of life. Cyanide blocks the messages from the brain to the muscles by changing body chemistry in the central nervous system. Even the "involuntary" functions like breathing and heartbeat get mixed neural signals. It is a painful death, breath coming in spurts. The other muscles

spasm, limbs twist and contort. The facial muscles draw back into a deadly grin, called “cyanide rictus.”[30] All these telling signs were absent in the Jonestown dead. Limbs were limp and relaxed, and the few visible faces showed no sign of distortion.[31]

Instead, Dr. Mootoo found fresh needle marks at the back of the left shoulder blades of 80-90% of the victims. Others had been shot or strangled. One survivor reported that those who resisted were forced by armed guards.[33] The gun that reportedly shot Jim Jones was lying nearly 200 feet from his body, not a likely suicide weapon.[34] As Chief Medical Examiner, Mootoo’s testimony to the Guyanese grand jury investigating Jonestown led to their conclusion that all but three of the people were murdered by “persons unknown.” Only two had committed suicide, they said.[35] Several pictures show the gunshot wounds on the bodies as well.[36] The U.S. Army spokesman, Lt. Col. Schuier, said, “No autopsies are needed. The cause of death is not an issue here.” The forensic doctors who later did autopsies at Dover, Delaware, were never made aware of Dr. Mootoo’s findings.[37]

There are other indications that the Guyanese government participated with American authorities in a cover-up of the real story, despite their own findings. One good example was Guyanese Police Chief Lloyd Barker, who interfered with investigations, helped “recover” $2.5 million for the Guyanese government, and was often the first to officially announce the cover stories relating to suicide, body counts and survivors.[38] Among the first to the scene were the wife of Guyanese Prime Minister Forbes Burnham and his Deputy Prime Minister, Ptolemy Reid. They returned from the massacre site with nearly $1 million in cash, gold and jewelry taken from the buildings and from the dead. Inexplicably, one of Burnham’s political party secretaries had visited the site of the massacre only hours before it occurred.[39] When Shirley Field Ridley, Guyanese Minister of Information, announced the change in the body count to the shocked Guyanese Parliament, she refused to answer further questions. Other representatives began to point a finger of shame at Ridley and the Burnham government, and the local press dubbed the scandal “Templegate,” all accused them of taking a ghoulish payoff.[40]

Perhaps more significantly, the Americans brought in 16 huge C-131 cargo planes, but claimed they could only carry 36 caskets in each one. These aircraft can carry tanks, trucks, troops and ammunition all in one load.[41] At the scene, bodies were stripped of identification, including the medical wrist tags visible in many early photos.[42] Dust-off operations during Vietnam clearly demonstrated that the military is capable of moving hundreds of bodies in a short period.[43] Instead, they took nearly a week to bring back the Jonestown dead, bringing in the majority at the end of the period.[44] The corpses, rotting in the heat, made autopsy impossible.[45] At one point, the remains of 183 people arrived in 82 caskets. Although the Guyanese had identified 174 bodies at the site, only 17 were tentatively identified at the massive military mortuary in Dover, Delaware.[46]

Isolated there, hundreds of miles from their families who might have visited the bodies at a similar mortuary in Oakland that was used during Vietnam, many of the dead were eventually cremated.[47] Press was excluded, and even family members had difficulty getting access to the remains.[48] Officials in New Jersey began to complain that state coroners were

excluded, and that the military coroners appointed were illegally performing cremations.[49] One of the top forensic body identification experts, who later was brought in to work on the Iranian raid casualties, was denied repeated requests to assist.[50] In December, the President of the National Association of Medical Examiners complained in an open letter to the U.S. military that they "badly botched" procedures, and that a simple fluid autopsy was never performed at the point of discovery. Decomposition, embalming and cremation made further forensic work impossible.[51] The unorthodox method of identification attempted to remove the skin from the fingertip and slip it over a gloved finger, would not have stood up in court.[52] The long delay made it impossible to reconstruct the event. As noted, these military doctors were unaware of Dr. Mootoo's conclusions. Several civilian pathology experts said they "shuddered at the ineptness" of the military, and that their autopsy method was "doing it backwards." But in official statements, the U.S. attempted to discredit the Guyanese grand jury findings, saying they had uncovered "few facts."[53]

Guyanese troops, and police who arrived with American Embassy official Richard Dwyer, also failed to defend Congressman Leo Ryan and others who came to Guyana with him when they were shot down in cold blood at the Port Kaituma airstrip, even though the troops were nearby with machine guns at the ready.[54] Although Temple member Larry Layton has been charged with the murders of Congressman Ryan, Temple defector Patricia Parks and press reporters Greg Robinson, Don Harris and Bob Brown, he was not in a position to shoot them.[55] Blocked from boarding Ryan's twin engine Otter, he had entered another plane nearby. Once inside, he pulled out a gun and wounded two Temple followers before being disarmed.[56] The others were clearly killed by armed men who descended from a tractor-trailer at the scene, after opening fire. Witnesses described them as "zombies," walking mechanically, without emotion, and "looking through you, not at you," as they murdered.[57] Only certain people were killed, and the selection was clearly planned. Certain wounded people, like Ryan's aide Jackie Speiers, were not harmed further, but the killers made sure that Ryan and the newsmen were dead. In some cases they shot people, already wounded, directly in the head.[58] These gunmen were never finally

identified and may have been under Layton's command. They may not have been among the Jonestown dead.[59]

At the Jonestown site, survivors described a special group of Jones' followers who were allowed to carry weapons and money, and to come and go from the camp. These people were all white, mostly males.[60] They ate better and worked less than the others, and they served as an armed guard to enforce discipline, control labor and restrict movement.[61] Among them were Jones' top lieutenants, including George Philip Blakey. Blakey and others regularly visited Georgetown, Guyana and made trips in their sea-going boat, the Cudjoe. He was privileged to be aboard the boat when the murders occurred.[62] This special armed guard survived the massacre. Many were trained and programmed killers, like the "zombies" who attacked Ryan. Some were used as mercenaries in Africa, and elsewhere.[63] The dead were 90% women, and 80% Blacks.[64] It is unlikely that men armed with guns and modern crossbows would give up control and willingly be injected with poisons. It is much more likely that they forced nearly 400 people to die by injection, and then assisted in the murder of 500 more who attempted to escape. One survivor clearly heard people cheering 45 minutes after the massacre. Despite government claims, they are not accounted for, nor is their location known.[65]

Back in California, People's Temple members openly admitted that they feared they were targeted by a "hit squad," and the Temple was surrounded for some time by local police forces.[66] During that period, two members of the elite guard from Jonestown returned and were allowed into the Temple by police.[67] The survivors who rode to Port Kaituma with Leo Ryan complained when Larry Layton boarded the truck, "He's not one of us."[68] Rumors also persisted that a "death list" of U.S. officials existed, and some survivors verified in testimony to the San Francisco grand jury.[69] A congressional aide was quoted in the AP wires on May 19, 1979, "There are 120 white, brainwashed assassins out from Jonestown awaiting the trigger word to pick up their hit."[70]

Other survivors included Mark Lane and Charles Garry, lawyers for People's Temple, who managed to escape the massacre somehow.[71] In

addition to the 16 who officially returned with the Ryan party, others managed to reach Georgetown and come back home.[72] However, there have been continuing suspicious murders of those people here. Jeannie and Al Mills, who intended to write a book about Jones, were murdered at home, bound and shot.[73] Some evidence indicates a connection between the Jonestown operation and the murders of Mayor Moscone and Harvey Milk by police agent Dan White.[74] Another Jonestown survivor was shot near his home in Detroit by unidentified killers.[75] Yet another was involved in a mass murder of school children in Los Angeles.[76] Anyone who survived such massive slaughter must be somewhat suspect. The fact that the press never even spoke to nearly 200 survivors raises serious doubts.

Who Was Jim Jones?

In order to understand the strange events surrounding Jonestown, we must begin with a history of the people involved. The official story of a religious fanatic and his idealist followers doesn't make sense in light of the evidence of murders, armed killers and autopsy cover-ups. If it happened the way we were told, there should be no reason to try to hide the facts from the public, and full investigation into the deaths at Jonestown, and the murder of Leo Ryan would have been welcomed. What did happen is something else again.

Jim Jones grew up in Lynn, in southern Indiana. His father was an active member of the local Ku Klux Klan that infest that area.[77] His friends found him a little strange, and he was interested in preaching the Bible and religious rituals.[78] Perhaps more important was his boyhood friendship with Dan Mitrione, confirmed by local residents.[79] In the early 50s, Jones set out to be a religious minister, and was ordained at one point by a Christian denomination in Indianapolis.[80] It was during this period that he met and married his lifelong mate, Marceline.[81] He also had a small business selling monkeys, purchased from the research department at Indiana State University at Bloomington.[82]

A Bible-thumper and faith healer, Jones put on revivalist tent shows in the area, and worked close to Richmond, Indiana. Mitrione, his friend, worked as chief of police there, and kept him from being arrested or run out of town.[83] According to those close to him, he used wet chicken livers as evidence of "cancers" he was removing by "divine powers."[84] His landlady called him "a gangster who used a Bible instead of a gun."[85] His church followers included Charles Beikman, a Green Beret who was to stay with him to the end.[86] Beikman was later charged with the murders of several Temple members in Georgetown, following the massacre.[87]

Dan Mitrione, Jones' friend, moved on to the CIA-financed International Police Academy, where police were trained in counter-insurgency and torture techniques from around the world.[88] Jones, a poor, itinerant preacher, suddenly had money in 1961 for a trip to "minister" in Brazil, and he took his family with him.[89] By this time, he had "adopted" Beikman, and eight children, both Black and White.[90] His neighbors in Brazil distrusted him. He told them he worked with U.S. Navy Intelligence. His transportation and groceries were being provided by the U.S. Embassy, as was the large house he lived in.[91] His son, Stephan, commented that he made regular trips to Belo Horizonte, site of the CIA headquarters in Brazil.[92] An American police advisor, working closely with the CIA at that point, Dan Mitrione was there as well.[93] Mitrione had risen in the ranks quickly, and was busy training foreign police in torture and assassination methods. He was later kidnapped by Tupermaro guerrillas in Uruguay, interrogated and murdered.[94] Costa Gavras made a film about his death titled *State of Siege*.[95] Jones returned to the United States in 1963, with $10,000 in his pocket.[96] Recent articles indicate that Catholic clergy are complaining about CIA funding of other denominations for "ministry" in Brazil; perhaps Jones was an early example.[97]

With his new wealth, Jones was able to travel to California and establish the first People's Temple in Ukiah, California, in 1965. Guarded by dogs, electric fences and guard towers, he set up Happy Havens Rest Home.[98] Despite a lack of trained personnel, or proper licensing, Jones drew in many people at the camp. He had elderly, prisoners, people from psychiatric institutions, and 150 foster children, often transferred to care at Happy

Havens by court orders.[99] He was contacted there by Christian missionaries from World Vision, an international evangelical order that had done espionage for the CIA in Southeast Asia.[100] He met “influential” members of the community and was befriended by Walter Heady, the head of the local chapter of the John Birch Society.[101] He used the members of this “church” to organize local voting drives for Richard Nixon’s election, and worked closely with the Republican Party.[102] He was even appointed chairman of the county grand jury.[103]

“The Messiah from Ukiah,” as he was known then, met and recruited Timothy Stoen, a Stanford graduate and member of the city DA’s office, and his wife Grace.[104] During this time, the Layton family, Terri Buford and George Phillip Blakey, and other important members joined the Temple.[105] The camp “doctor,” Larry Schacht, claims Jones got him off drugs and into medical school during this period.[106] These were not just street urchins. Buford’s father was a Commander for the fleet at the Philadelphia Navy Base for years.[107] The Laytons were a well-heeled, aristocratic family. Dr. Layton donated at least a quarter-million dollars to Jones. His wife, son and daughter were all members of the Temple.[108] George Blakey, who married Debbie Layton, was from a wealthy British family. He donated $60,000 to pay the lease on the 27,000-acre Guyana site in 1974.[109] Lisa Philips Layton had come to the U.S. from a rich Hamburg banking family in Germany.[110] Most of the top lieutenants around Jones were from wealthy, educated backgrounds, many with connections to the military or intelligence agencies. These were the people who would set up the bank accounts, complex legal actions, and financial records that put people under the Temple’s control.[111]

Stoen was able to set up important contacts for Jones as Assistant DA in San Francisco.[112] Jones changed his image to that of a liberal.[113] He had spent time studying the preaching methods of Father Divine in Philadelphia, and attempted to use them in a manipulative way on the streets of San Francisco. Father Divine ran a religious and charitable operation among Philadelphia’s poor Black community.[114] Jones was able to use his followers in an election once again, this time for Mayor Moscone. Moscone responded in 1976, putting Jones in charge of the city Housing

Commission.[115] In addition, many of his key followers got jobs with the city Welfare Department and much of the recruitment to the Temple in San Francisco came from the ranks of these unemployed and dispossessed people.[116] Jones was introduced to many influential liberal and radical people there, and entertained or greeted people ranging from Rosalynn Carter to Angela Davis.[117]

The period when Jones began the Temple there marked the end of an important political decade. Nixon's election had ushered in a domestic intelligence dead set against the movements for peace, civil rights and social justice. Names like COINTELPRO, CHAOS, and Operation garden plot, or the Houston Plan made the news following in the wake of Watergate revelations.[118] Senator Ervin called the White House plans against dissent "fascistic."[119] These operations involved the highest levels of military and civilian intelligence and all levels of police agencies in a full-scale attempt to discredit, disrupt and destroy the movements that sprang up in the 1960s. There are indications that these plans, or the mood they created, led to the assassinations of Martin Luther King and Malcolm X, as unacceptable "Black Messiahs."[120]

One of the architects under then-Governor Reagan in California was now-Attorney General Edwin Meese. He coordinated "Operation Garden Plot" for military intelligence and all police operations and intelligence in a period that was plagued with violations of civil and constitutional rights.[121] Perhaps you recall the police attacks on People's Park, the murder of many Black Panthers and activists, the infiltration of the Free Speech Movement and anti-war activity, and the experimentation on prisoners at Vacaville, or the shooting of George Jackson.[122] Meese later bragged that this activity had damaged or destroyed the people he called "revolutionaries."[123] It was into this situation Jones came to usurp leadership.[124]

After his arrival in Ukiah, his methods were visible to those who took the time to investigate.[125] His armed guards wore black uniforms and leather jackboots. His approach was one of deception, and if that wore off, then manipulation and threats. Loyalty to his church included signing blank sheets of paper, later filled in with "confessions" and used for blackmail

purposes, or to extort funds.[126] Yet the vast membership he was extorting often owned little, and he tried to milk them for everything, from personal funds to land deeds.[127] Illegal activities were regularly reported during this period, but either not investigated or unresolved. He clearly had the cooperation of local police. Years later, evidence would come out of charges of sexual solicitation, mysteriously dropped.[128]

Those who sought to leave were prevented and rebuked. Local journalist Kathy Hunter wrote in the Ukiah press about “seven Mysterious Deaths” of the Temple members who had argued with Jones and attempted to leave. One of these was Maxine Swaney.[129] Jones openly hinted to other members that he had arranged for them to die, threatening a similar fate to others who would be disloyal.[130] Kathy Hunter later tried to visit Jonestown, only to be forcibly drugged by Temple guards, and deported to Georgetown.[131] She later charged that Mark Lane approached her, falsely identifying himself as a reporter for *Esquire*, rather than as an attorney for Jim Jones. He led her to believe he was seeking information on Jones for an exposé in the magazine, and asked to see her evidence.

The pattern was to continue in San Francisco. In addition, Jones required that members practice for the mysterious “White Night,” a mass suicide ritual that would protect them from murder at the hands of their enemies.[132] Although the new Temple had no guards or fences to restrict members, few had other places to live, and many had given over all they owned to Jones. They felt trapped inside this community that preached love, but practiced hatred.[133]

Following press exposure, and a critical article in *New West* magazine, Jones became very agitated, and the number of suicide drills increased.[134] Complaints about mistreatment by current and ex-members began to appear in the media and reach the ears of congressional representatives. Sam Houston, an old friend of Leo Ryan, came to him with questions about the untimely death of his son following his departure from the Temple.[135] Later, Timothy and Grace Stoen would complain to Ryan about custody of their young son, who was living with Jones, and urge him to visit the commune.[136] Against advice of friends and staff members, Ryan decided to

take a team of journalists to Guyana and seek the truth of the situation.[137] Some felt that Ryan's journey there was planned and expected, and used as a convenient excuse to set up his murder. Others feel that this unexpected violation of secrecy around Jonestown set off the spark that led to the mass murder. In either case, it marked the beginning of the end for Ryan and Jones.[138]

At one point, to show his powers, Jones arranged to be shot in the heart in front of the congregation. Dragged to a back room, apparently wounded and bleeding, he returned a moment later alive and well. While this may have been more of his stage antics to prompt believers' faith, it may also have marked the end of Jim Jones.[139] For undisclosed reason, Jones had used "doubles."[140] This is very unusual for a religious leader, but quite common in intelligence operations.[141]

Even the death and identification of Jim Jones were peculiar. He was apparently shot by another person at the camp.[142] Photos of his body do not show identifying tattoos on his chest. The body and face are not clearly recognizable due to bloating and discoloration.[143] The FBI reportedly checked his fingerprints twice, a seemingly futile gesture since it is a precise operation. A more logical route would have been to check dental records.[144] Several researchers familiar with the case feel that the body may not have been Jones. Even if the person at the site was one of the "doubles," it does not mean Jones is still alive. He may have been killed at an earlier point.

What Was Jonestown?

According to one story, Jones was seeking a place on earth that would survive the effects of nuclear war, relying only on an article in *Esquire* magazine for his list.[145] The real reason for his locations in Brazil, California, Guyana and elsewhere deserve more scrutiny.[146] At one point Jones wanted to set up in Grenada, and he invited then-Prime Minister Sir Eric Gairy to visit the Temple in San Francisco.[147] He invested $200,000 in

the Grenada National Bank in 1977 to pave the way, and some $76,000 was still there after the massacre.[148]

His final choice, the Matthew's Bridge section in Guyana, is an interesting one. It was originally the site of a Union Carbide bauxite and manganese mine, and Jones used the dock they left behind.[149] At an earlier point, it had been one of seven possible sites chosen for the relocation of the Jews after World War II.[150] Plans to inhabit the jungles of Guyana's interior with cheap labor date back to 1919.[151] Resources buried there are among the richest in the world, and include manganese, diamonds, gold, bauxite and uranium.[152] Forbes Burnham, the Prime Minister, had participated in a scheme to repatriate Blacks from the UK to work in the area. Like all earlier attempts, it failed.[153]

Once chosen, the site was leased and worked on by a select crew of Temple members in preparation for the arrival of the body of the church. The work was done in cooperation with Burnham and the U.S. Embassy there.[154] But if these were idealists seeking a better life, their arrival in "Utopia" was a strange welcome. Piled into busses in San Francisco, they had driven to Florida. From there, Pan American charter planes delivered them to Guyana.[155] When they arrived at the airport, the Blacks were taken off the plane, bound and gagged.[156] The deception had finally been stripped bare of all pretense. The Blacks were so isolated and controlled that neighbors as close as five miles from the site did not know that Blacks lived at Jonestown. The only public representatives seen in Guyana were White.[157]

According to survivors' reports, they entered a virtual slave labor camp. Worked for 16 to 18 hours daily, they were forced to live in cramped quarters on minimum rations, usually rice, bread and sometimes rancid meat.[158] Kept on a schedule of physical and mental exhaustion, they were also forced to stay awake at night and listen to lectures by Jones. Threats and abuse became more common.[159] The camp medical staff under Dr. Lawrence Schacht was known to perform painful suturing without anesthetic. They administered drugs, and kept daily medical records.[160] Infractions of the rules or disloyalty led to increasingly harsh punishments, including forced drugging, sensory isolation in an underground box,

physical torture and public sexual rape and humiliation. Beatings and verbal abuse were commonplace. Only the special guards were treated humanely and fed decently.[161] People with serious injuries were flown out, but few ever returned.[162] Perhaps the motto at Jonestown should have been the same as the one at Auschwitz, developed by Larry Schacht's namesake, Dr. Hjalmar Schacht, the Nazi minister of economics, "Arbeit Macht Frei," or "Work Will Make You Free." Guyana even considered setting up an "Auschwitz-like museum" at the site, but abandoned the idea.[163]

By this point, Jones had amassed incredible wealth. Press estimates ranged from $26 million to $2 billion, including bank accounts, foreign investments and real estate. Accounts were set up worldwide by key members often in the personal name of certain people in the Temple.[164] Much of this money, listed publicly after the massacre, disappeared mysteriously. It was a fortune far too large to have come from membership alone. The receivership set up by the government settled on a total of $10 million. Of special interest were the Swiss bank accounts opened in Panama, the money taken from the camp, and the extensive investments in Barclay's Bank.[165] Other sources of income included the German banking family of Lisa Philips Layton, Larry's mother.[166] Also, close to $54,000 a month income was claimed to come from welfare and social security checks for 199 members, sent to the Temple followers and signed over to Jones.[167] In addition, there are indications that Blakey and other members were supplementing the Temple funds with international smuggling of guns and drugs.[168] At one point, Charles Garry noted that Jones and his community were "literally sitting on a gold mine." Mineral distribution maps of Guyana suggest he was right.[169]

To comprehend this well-financed, sinister operation, we must abandon the myth that this was a religious commune and study instead the history that led to its formation. Jonestown was an experiment, part of a 30-year program called MK-ULTRA, the CIA and military intelligence code name for mind control.[170] A close study of Senator's Ervin's 1974 report, "Individual Rights and the Government's Role in Behavior Modification," shows that these agencies had certain "target populations" in mind, for both individual and mass control. Blacks, women, prisoners and elderly, the

young, and inmates of psychiatric wards were selected as “potentially violent.”[171] There were plans in California at the time for a Center for the Study and Reduction of Violence, expanding on the horrific work of Dr. Jose Delgado, Drs. Mark and Ervin, and Dr. Jolly West, experts in implantation, psychosurgery, and tranquilizers. The guinea pigs were to be drawn from the ranks of the “target populations,” and taken to an isolated military missile base in California.[172] In that same period, Jones began to move his Temple members to Jonestown. They were the exact population selected for such tests.[173]

The meticulous daily notes and drug records kept by Larry Schacht disappeared, but evidence did not.[174] The history of MK-ULTRA and its sister programs (MK-DELTA, ARTICHOKE, BLUEBIRD, etc.) records a combination of drugs, drug mixtures, electroshock and torture as methods for control. The desired results ranged from temporary and permanent amnesia, uninhibited confessions, and creation of second personalities, to programmed assassins and preconditioned suicidal urges. One goal was the ability to control mass populations, especially for cheap labor.[175] Dr. Delgado told Congress that he hoped for a future where a technology would control workers in the field and troops at war with electronic remote signals. He found it hard to understand why people would complain about electrodes implanted in their brains to make them “both happy and productive.”[176]

On the scene at Jonestown, Guyanese troops discovered a large cache of drugs; enough to drug the entire population of Georgetown, Guyana (well over 200,000) for more than a year.[177] According to survivors, these were being used regularly “to control” a population of only 1,100 people.[178] One footlocker contained 11,000 doses of thorazine, a dangerous tranquilizer. Drugs used in the testing for MK-ULTRA were found in abundance, including sodium pentathol (a truth serum), chloral hydrate (a hypnotic), Demerol, thallium (confuses thinking), and many others.[179] Schacht had supplies of halioparel and largatil, two other major tranquilizers as well.[180] The actual description of life at Jonestown is that of a tightly run concentration camp, complete with medical and psychiatric experimentation. The stresses and isolation of the victims is typical of

sophisticated brainwashing techniques. The drugs and special tortures add an additional experimental aspect to the horror.[181] This more clearly explains the medical tags on the bodies and why they had to be removed It also suggests an additional motive for frustrating any chemical autopsies, since these drugs would have been found in the system of the dead.

The story of Jonestown is that of a gruesome experiment, not a religious Utopian society. On the eve of the massacre, Forbes Burnham was reportedly converted to “born again” Christianity by members of the Full Gospel Christian Businessman’s Association, including Lionel Luckhoo, a Temple lawyer in Guyana.[182] This same group, based in California, also reportedly converted Guatemalan dictator Rios Montt prior to his massacres there, and they were in touch with Jim Jones in Ukiah.[183] They conducted White House prayer breakfasts for Mr. Reagan.[184] With Ryan on his way to Jonestown, the seal of secrecy was broken. In a desperate attempt to test their conditioning methods, the Jonestown elite apparently tried to implement a real suicide drill.[185] Clearly, it led to a revolt, and the majority of people fled, unaware that there were people waiting to catch them.

One Too Many Jonestowns

Author Don Freed, an associate of Mark Lane, said that Martin Luther King, “if he could see Jonestown, would recognize it as the next step in his agenda, and he would say, one, two, three, many more Jonestowns.”[186] Strangely enough, almost every map of Guyana in the major press located Jonestown at a different place following the killings. One map even shows a second site in the area called “Johnstown.”[187] Perhaps there were multiple camps and Leo Ryan was only shown the one they hoped he would see. In any case, the Jonestown model survives, and similar camps, and their sinister designs, show up in many places.

Inside Guyana itself, approximately 25 miles to the south of Matthew’s Bridge, is a community called Hilltown, named after religious leader Rabbi Hill. Hill has used the names Abraham Israel and Rabbi Emmanuel Washington. Hilltown, set up about the same time as Jonestown, followed

the departure of David Hill, who was known in Cleveland, a fugitive of the U.S. courts. Hill rules with an “iron fist” over some 8,000 Black people from Guyana and America who believe they are the Lost Tribe of Israel and the real Hebrews of Biblical prophecy.[188] Used as strong-arm troops, and “internal mercenaries” to insure Burnham’s election, as were Jonestown members, the Hilltown people were allowed to clear the Jonestown site of shoes and unused weapons, both in short supply in Guyana.[189] Hill says his followers would gladly kill themselves at his command but he would survive, since, unlike Jones, he is “in control.”[190]

Similar camps were reported at the time in the Philippines. Perhaps the best known example is the fascist torture camp in Chile known as Colonia Dignidad. Also a religious cult built around a single individual, this one came from Germany to Chile in 1961. In both cases the camp was their "Agricultural Experiment." Sealed and protected by the dreaded Chilean DINA police, Colonia Dignidad serves as a torture chamber for political dissidents. To the Jonestown monstrosities, they have added dogs specially trained to attack human genitals.[191] The operations there have included the heavy hand of decapitation specialist Michael Townley Welch, an American CIA agent, as well as reported visits by Nazi war criminals Dr. Josef Mengele and Martin Bormann. Currently, another such campsite exists at Pisagua, Chile.[192] Temple member Jeannie Mills, now dead, reported having seen actual films of a Chilean torture camp while at Jonestown. The only source possible at the time was the Chilean fascists themselves.[193]

In the current period, Jonestown is being "repopulated" with 100,000 Laotian Hmong people. Many of them grew opium for CIA money in Southeast Asia. Over 1,000 reside there already under a scheme designed by Billy Graham's nephew Ernest, and members of the Federation of Evangelical Ministries Association in Wheaton, Illinois (World Vision, World Medical Relief, Samaritan's Purse, and Carl McIntyre's International Council of Christian Churches).[194] Similar plans devised by the Peace Corps included moving inner-city Blacks from America to Jamaica and other Third World countries. And World Relief attempted to move the population of the Island of Dominica to Jonestown.[195] It is only a matter of time before another Jonestown will be exposed, perhaps leading again to massive slaughter.

The Links to U.S. Intelligence Agencies

Our story so far has hinted at connections to U.S. intelligence, such as the long-term friendship of Jones and CIA associate Dan Mitrione, but the ties are much more direct when a full picture of the operation is revealed. To start with, the history of Forbes Burnham's rise to power in Guyana is fraught with the clear implication of a CIA coup d'état to oust troublesome

independent leader Cheddi Jagan.[196] In addition, the press and other evidence indicated the presence of a CIA agent on the scene at the time of the massacre. This man, Richard Dwyer, was working as Deputy Chief of Mission for the U.S. Embassy in Guyana.[197] Identified in Who's Who in the CIA, he has been involved since 1959, and was last stationed in Martinique.[198] Present at the camp site and the airport strip, his accounts were used by the State Department to confirm the death of Leo Ryan. At the massacre, Jones said, "Get Dwyer out of here" just before the killings began.[199]

Other Embassy personnel, who knew the situation at Jonestown well, were also connected to intelligence work. U.S. Ambassador John Burke, who served in the CIA with Dwyer in Thailand, was an Embassy official described by Philip Agee as working for the CIA since 1963. A Reagan appointee to the CIA, he is still employed by the Agency, usually on State Department assignments.[200] Burke tried to stop Ryan's investigation.[201] Also at the Embassy was Chief consular officer Richard McCoy, described as "close to Jones," who worked for military intelligence and was "on loan" from the Defense Department at the time of the massacre.[202] According to a standard source, "The U.S. Embassy in Georgetown housed the Georgetown CIA station. It now appears that the majority and perhaps all of the embassy officials were CIA officers operating under State Department covers…"[203] Dan Webber, who was sent to the site of the massacre the day after, was also named as CIA.[204] Not only did the State Department conceal all reports of violations at Jonestown from Congressman Leo Ryan, but the Embassy regularly provided Jones with copies of all congressional inquiries under the Freedom of Information Act.[205]

Ryan had challenged the Agency's overseas operations before, as a member of the House Committee responsible for oversight on intelligence. He was an author of the controversial Hughes-Ryan Amendment that would have required CIA disclosure in advance to the congressional committees of all planned covert operations. The Amendment was defeated shortly after his death.[206]

American intelligence agencies have a sordid history of cooperative relations with Nazi war criminals and international terrorism.[207] In light of

this, consider the curious ties of the family members of the top lieutenants to Jim Jones. The Layton family is one example. Dr. Lawrence Layton was Chief of Chemical and Ecological Warfare Research at Dugway Proving Grounds in Utah, for many years, and later worked as Director of Missile and Satellite Development at the Navy Propellant Division, Indian Head, Maryland.[208] His wife, Lisa, had come from a rich German family. Her father Hugo, had represented I.G. Farben as a stockbroker.[209] Her stories about hiding her Jewish past from her children for most of her life, and her parents escape from a train heading for a Nazi concentration camp seem shallow, as do Dr. Layton's Quaker religious beliefs. The same family sent money to Jonestown regularly.[210] Their daughter, Debbie, met and married George Philip Blakey in an exclusive private school in England. Blakey's parents have extensive stock holdings in Solvay drugs, a division of the Nazi cartel I.G. Farben.[211] He also contributed financially.[212]

Terri Buford's father, Admiral Charles T. Buford, worked with Navy Intelligence.[213] In addition, Blakey was reportedly running mercenaries from Jonestown to CIA-backed UNITA forces in Angola.[214] Maria Katsaris' father was a minister with the Greek Orthodox Church, a common conduit of CIA funding, and Maria claimed she had proof he was CIA. She was shot in the head, and her death was ruled a suicide, but at one point Charles Beikman was charged with killing her.[215] On their return to the United States, the "official" survivors were represented by attorney Joseph Blatchford, who had been named prior to that time in a scandal involving CIA infiltration of the Peace Corps.[216] Almost everywhere you look at Jonestown, U.S. intelligence and fascism rear their ugly heads.

The connection of intelligence agencies to cults is nothing new. A simple but revealing example is the Unification Church, tied to both the Korean CIA (i.e., American CIA in Korea), and the international fascist network know as the World Anti-Communist League. The Moonies hosted WACL's first international conference.[217] What distinguished Jonestown was both the level of control and the open sinister involvement. It was imperative that they cover their tracks.[218]

Maria Katsaris sent Michael Prokes, Tim Carter, and another guard out at the last minute with $500,000 cash in a suitcase, and instructions for a drop

point. Her note inside suggests the funds were destined for the Soviet Union.[219] Prokes later shot himself at a San Francisco press conference, where he claimed to be an FBI informant.[220] Others reported meetings with KGB agents and plans to move to Russia.[221] This disinformation was part of a “red smear” to be used if they had to abandon the operation. The Soviet Union had no interest in the money and even less in Jonestown. The cash was recovered by the Guyanese government.[222]

Their hidden funding may include more intelligence links. A mysterious account in Panama, totaling nearly $5 million in the name of an “Associacion Pro Religiosa do San Pedro, S.A.” was located.[223] This unknown Religious Association of St. Peter was probably one of the 12 phony companies set up by Archbishop Paul Marcinkus to hide the illegal investments of Vatican funds through the scandal-ridden Banco Ambrosiano.[224] A few days after the story broke about the accounts, the President of Panama, and most of the government, resigned. Roberto Calvi of Banco Ambrosiano was murdered, and the Jonestown account disappeared from public scrutiny and court record.[225]

The direct orders to cover up the cause of death came from the top levels of the American government. Zbigniew Brzezinsky delegated to Robert Pastor, and he in turn ordered Lt. Col. Gordon Sumner to strip the bodies of identity.[226] Pastor is now Deputy Director of the CIA.[227] One can only wonder how many others tied to the Jonestown operation were similarly promoted.

The Strange Connection to the Murder of Martin Luther King

One of the persistent problems in researching Jonestown is that it seems to lead to so many other criminal activities, each with its own complex history and cast of characters. Perhaps the most disturbing of these is the connection that appears repeatedly between the characters in the Jonestown story and the key people involved in the murder and investigation of Martin Luther King.

The first clue to this link appeared in the personal histories of the members of the Ryan investigation team who were so selectively and deliberately killed at Port Kaituma. Don Harris, a veteran NBC reporter, had been the only network newsman on the scene to cover Martin Luther King's activity in Memphis at the time of King's assassination. He had interviewed key witnesses at the site. His coverage of the urban riots that followed won him an Emmy award.[228] Gregory Robinson, a "fearless" journalist from the San Francisco Examiner, had photographed the same riots in Washington D.C. When he was approached for copies of the films by Justice Department officials, he threw the negatives into the Potomac River.[229]

The role of Mark Lane, who served as attorney for Jim Jones, is even more clearly intertwined.[230] Lane had co-authored a book with Dick Gregory, claiming FBI complicity in the King murder.[231] He was hired as the attorney for James Earl Ray, accused assassin, when Ray testified before the House Select Committee on Assassinations about King.[232] Prior to this testimony, Ray was involved in an unusual escape plot at Brushy Mountain State Prison.[233] The prisoner who had helped engineer the escape plot was later inexplicably offered an early parole by members of the Tennessee Governor's office. These officials, and Governor Blanton himself, were to come under close public scrutiny and face legal charges in regard to bribes taken to arrange illegal early pardons for prisoners.[234]

One of the people living at Jonestown was ex-FBI agent Wesley Swearingen, who at least publicly condemned the COINTELPRO operations and other abuses, based on stolen classified documents, at the Jonestown site. Lane had reportedly met with him there at least a year before the massacre. Terri Buford said the documents were passed on to Charles Garry. Lane used information from Swearingen in his thesis on the FBI and King's murder. Swearingen served as a key witness in suits against the Justice Department brought by the Socialist Workers Party.[235] When Larry Flynt, the flamboyant publisher of *Hustler* magazine, offered a $1 million reward leading to the capture and conviction of the John F. Kennedy killers, the long distance number listed to collect information and leads was being answered by Mark Lane and Wesley Swearingen.[236]

With help from officials in Tennessee, Governor Blanton's office, Lane managed to get legal custody of a woman who had been incarcerated in the Tennessee state psychiatric system for nearly eight years.[237] This woman, Grace Walden Stephens, had been a witness in the King murder.[238] She was living at the time in Memphis in a rooming house across from the hotel when Martin Luther King was shot.[239] The official version of events had Ray located in the common bathroom of the rooming house, and claimed he had used a rifle to murder King from that window.[240] Grace Stephens did, indeed, see a man run from the bathroom, past her door and down to the street below.[241] A rifle, later linked circumstantially to James Earl Ray, was found inside a bundle at the base of the rooming house stairs, and identified as the murder weapon.[242] But Grace, who saw the man clearly, refused to identify him as Ray when shown photographs by the FBI.[243] Her testimony was never introduced at the trial. The FBI relied instead, on the word of her common-law husband Charles Stephens, who was drunk and unconscious at the time of the incident.[244] Her persistence in saying that it was not James Earl Ray was used at her mental competency hearings as evidence against her, and she disappeared into the psychiatric system.[245]

Grace Walden Stephens took up residence in Memphis with Lane, her custodian, and Terri Buford, a key Temple member who had returned to the U.S. before the killings to live with Lane.[246] While arranging for her to testify before the Select Committee on Ray's behalf, Lane and Buford were plotting another fate for Grace Stephens. Notes from Buford to Jones found in the aftermath of the killings discussed arrangements with Lane to move Grace Stephens to Jonestown.[247] The problem that remained was lack of a passport, but Buford suggested either getting a passport on the black market, or using the passport of former Temple member Maxine Swaney.[248] Swaney, dead for nearly two and a half years since her departure from the Ukiah camp, was in no position to argue, and Jones apparently kept her passport with him.[249] Whether Grace ever arrived at Jonestown is unclear.

Lane was also forced to leave Ray in the midst of testimony to the Select Committee when he got word that Ryan was planning to visit. Lane had attempted to discourage the trip earlier in a vaguely threatening letter.[250] Now he rushed to be sure he arrived with the group.[251] At the scene, he

failed to warn Ryan and others, knowing that the sandwiches and other food might be drugged, but refrained from eating it himself.[252] Later, claiming that he and Charles Garry would write the official history of the "revolutionary suicide," Lane was allowed to leave the pieces of underwear to mark their way back to Georgetown.[253] If true, it seems an unlikely method if they were in any fear of pursuit. They had heard gunfire and screams back at the camp.[254] Lane was reportedly well aware of the forced drugging and suicide drills at Jonestown before Ryan arrived.[255]

Another important figure in the murder of Martin Luther King was his mother, Alberta. A few weeks after the first public announcement by Coretta Scott King that she believed her husband's murder was part of a conspiracy, Mrs. Alberta King was brutally shot to death in Atlanta, while attending church services. Anyone who had seen the physical wounds suffered by King might have been an adverse witness to the official version, since the wound angles did not match the ballistic direction of a shot from the rooming house.[257] Her death also closely coincided with the reopening of the Tennessee state court review of Ray's conviction based on a guilty plea, required by a 6th Circuit decision.[258] The judge in that case reportedly refused to allow witnesses from beyond a 100 mile radius from the courtroom.[259]

The man convicted of shooting King's mother was Marcus Wayne Chenault. His emotional affect following the murder was unusual. Grinning, he asked if he had hit anyone.[260] He had reportedly been dropped off at the church by people he knew in Ohio.[261] While at Ohio State University, he was part of a group known as "the Troop," run by a Black minister and gun collector who used the name Rabbi Emmanuel Israel. This man, described in the press as a "mentor" for Chenault, left the area immediately after the shooting.[262] In the same period, Rabbi Hill traveled from Ohio to Guyana and set up Hilltown, using similar aliases, and preaching the same message of a "Black Hebrew elite."[263] Chenault confided to SCLC leaders that he was one of many killers who were working to assassinate a long list of Black leadership. The names he said were on this list coincided with similar "death lists" distributed by the KKK, and linked to the COINTELPRO operations in the 60s.[264]

The real backgrounds and identities of Marcus Wayne Chenault and Rabbi Hill may never be discovered, but one thing is certain, Martin Luther King would never had countenanced the preachings of Jim Jones, had he lived to hear them.[265]

Aftermath

In the face of such horror, it may seem little compensation to know that a part of the truth has been unearthed. But for the families and some of the survivors, the truth, however painful, is the only path to being relieved of the burden of their doubts. It's hard to believe that President Carter was calling on us at the time not to "overreact." The idea that a large community of Black people would not only stand by and be poisoned at the suggestion of Jim Jones, but would allow their children to be murdered first, is a monstrous lie, and a racist insult.[266] We now know that the most direct description of Jonestown is that it was a Black genocide plan. One Temple director, Joyce Shaw, described the Jonestown massacre as, "some kind of horrible government experiments, or some sort of sick racial thing, a plan like that of the Germans to exterminate Blacks."[267] If we refuse to look further into this nightmarish event, there will be more Jonestowns to come. They will move from Guyana to our own backyard.

The cast of characters is neither dead nor inactive. Key members of the armed guard were ordered to be on board the Temple ship, Cudjoe — at the hour of the massacre they were on a supply run to Trinidad. George Phillip Blakey phoned his father-in-law, Dr. Lawrence Layton, from Panama after the event.[268] At least ten members of the Temple remained on the boat, and set up a new community in Trinidad while Nigel Slinger, a Grenada businessman and insurance broker for Jonestown, repaired the 400-ton shipping vessel. Then Charles Touchette, Paul McCann, Stephan Jones, and George Blakey set up an "open house" in Grenada with the others. McCann spoke about starting a shipping company to "finance the continued work of the original Temple."[269]

That “work” may have included the mysterious operations of the mental hospital in Grenada that eluded government security by promising free medical care.[270] The hospital was operated by Sir Geoffrey Bourne, Chancellor of the St. George’s University Medical School, also staffed by his son Dr. Peter Bourne.[271] His son’s history includes work with psychological experiments and USAID in Vietnam, the methadone clinics in the U.S., and a drug scandal in the Carter White House.[272] The mental hospital was the only structure bombed during the U.S. invasion of Grenada in 1983. This was part of a plan to put Sir Eric Gairy back in power.[273] Were additional experiments going on at the site?[274]

In addition, the killers of Leo Ryan and others at Port Kaituma were never accounted for fully. The trial of Larry Layton was mishandled by the Guyanese courts, and the U.S. system as well.[275] No adequate evidentiary hearings have occurred either at the trial or in state and Congressional reviews. The Jonestown killers, trained assassins and mercenaries, are not on trial. They might be working in Africa or Central America. Their participation in Jonestown can be used as an “explanation” for their involvement in later murders here, such as the case of the attack on school children in Los Angeles.[276] They should be named and located.

The money behind Jonestown was never fully examined or recovered. The court receivership only collected a fraction, the bulk went to pay back military operations and burial costs. Families of the dead were awarded only minimal amounts.[277] Some filed suit, unsuccessfully, to learn more about the circumstances of the deaths, and who was responsible. Joe Holsinger, Leo Ryan’s close friend and assistant, studied the case for two years and reached the same unnerving conclusions — these people were murdered, there was evidence of a mass mind-control experiment, and the top levels of civilian and military intelligence were involved.[278] He worked with Ryan’s family members to prove the corruption and injustice but they could barely afford the immense court costs and case preparation. Their suit, as well as a similar one brought by ex-members and families of the victims, had to be dropped for lack of funds.[279]

The international operations of World Vision and the related evangelical groups continue unabashed. World Vision official John W. Hinckley, Sr.

was on his way to a Guatemalan water project run by the organization on the day his son shot at President Reagan.[280] A mysterious "double" of Hinckley, Jr., a man named Richardson, followed Hinckley's path from Colorado to Connecticut, and even wrote love letters to Jodi Foster. Richardson was a follower of Carl McIntyre's International Council of Christian Churches, and attended their Bible School in Florida. He was arrested shortly after the assassination attempt in New York's Port Authority with a weapon, and claimed he intended to kill Reagan.[281]

Another World Vision employee, Mark David Chapman, worked at their Haitian refugee camp in Ft. Chaffee, Arkansas. He was later to gain infamy as the assassin of John Lennon in New York City.[282] World Vision works with refugees worldwide. At the Honduran border, they are present in camps used by American CIA to recruit mercenaries against Nicaragua. They were at Sabra and Shatilla, camps in Lebanon where fascist Phalange massacred the Palestinians.[283] Their representatives in the Cuban refugee camps on the east coast included members of the Bay of Pigs operation, CIA-financed mercenaries from Omega 7 and Alpha 66.[284] Are they being used as a worldwide cover for the recruitment and training of these killers? They are, as mentioned earlier, working to repopulate Jonestown with Laotians who served as mercenaries for our CIA.[285]

Silence in the face of these murders is the worst possible response. The telling sign above the Jonestown dead read, "Those who do not remember the past are condemned to repeat it."[286] The genocide will come home to America. How many spent time studying the rash of child murders in Atlanta's Black community or asked the necessary questions about the discrepancies in the conviction of Wayne Williams?[287] Would we recognize a planned genocide if it occurred under similar subterfuge?

Leo Ryan's daughter, Shannon, lives among the disciples of another cult today, at the new city of Rajneeshpuram in Arizona. She was quoted in the press, during the recent controversy over a nationwide recruiting drive to bring urban homeless people to the commune, saying she did not believe it could end like Jonestown, since the leader would not ask them to commit suicide. "If he did ask me, I would do it," she said.[288] Homeless recruits, who had left since then, are suing in court because of suspicious and unnecessary

injections given them by the commune's doctor, and a liquid they were served daily in unmarked jars that many believe was not simply "beer." One man in the suit claims he was drugged and disoriented for days after his first injection.[289]

The ultimate victims of mind control at Jonestown are the American people. If we fail to look beyond the constructed images given us by the television and the press, then our consciousness is manipulated, just as well as the Jonestown victims' was. Facing nuclear annihilation, many see the militarism of the Reagan policies, and military training itself, as the real "mass suicide cult." If the discrepancy between the truth of Jonestown and the official version can be so great, what other lies have we been told about major events?[290]

History is precious. In a democracy, knowledge must be accessible for informed consent to function. Hiding or distorting history behind "national security" leaves the public as the final enemy of the government. Democratic process cannot operate on "need to know." Otherwise, we live in the *1984* envisioned by Orwell's projections, and we must heed his warning that those who control the past control the future.[291]

The real tragedy of Jonestown is not only that it occurred, but that so few chose to ask themselves why or how, so few sought to find out the facts behind the bizarre tale used to explain away the death of more than 900 people, and that so many will continue to be blind to the grim reality of our intelligence agencies. In the long run, the truth will come out. Only our complicity in the deception continues to dishonor the dead.

Notes

1. *Hold Hands and Die!* John Maguire (Dale Books, 1978), p. 235 (Story of the Century); *Raven,* Tim Reitzerman (Dutton, 1982) p. 575 (citing poll result).

2. The standard version first appeared in two "instant books," so instant (12/10/78) they seemed to have been written before the event! *The Suicide Cult,* Kilduff & Javers (Bantam Books, 1978); *Guyana Massacre,* Charles Krause (Berkeley Pub., 1978). Other standard research works on the topic

include: *White Night,* John Peer Nugent (Wade, 1979); *Raven,* op cit., and *Hold Hands and Die!,* op cit.; *The Cult That Died,* George Klineman (Putnam, 1980); *The Children of Jonestown,* Kenneth Wooden (McGraw-Hill, 1981); *The Strongest Poison,* Mark Lane (Hawthorn Books, 1980); *Our Father Who Art in Hell,* James Reston (Times Books, 1981); *Journey to Nowhere,* Shiva Naipaul (Simon & Schuster, 1981); *The Assassination of Representative Leo J. Ryan & The Jonestown, Guyana Tragedy, Report, House Committee on Foreign Affairs* (GPO, May 15, 1979). Personal accounts by members of People's Temple and survivors of Jonestown: *Six Years with God,* Jeannie Mills (A&W Publ., 1979); *People's Temple, People's Tomb,* Phil Kerns (Logos, Int., 1979); *Deceived,* Mel White (Spire Books, 1979); *The Broken God,* Bonnie Theilmann (David Cook, 1979); *Awake in a Nightmare,* Feinsod (Norton, 1981); *In My Father's House,* Yee & Layton (Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1981).

3. "The People's Temple," William Pfaff, *New Yorker,* 12/18/78; *Hold Hands,* p. 241-7 (cults) *and Journey to Nowhere,* p. 294 (period); *The Family,* Ed Sanders (Avon Press, 1974) (Charlie Manson); *Snapping,* Flo Conway (brainwashing); *Ecstasy & Holiness,* Frank Musgrove (Indiana Univ. Press, 1974).

4. "Inside People's Temple," Marshall Kilduff, *New West,* 8/1/77; *Hold Hands,* p. 100.

5. "Rev. Jones Became West Coast Power," *Washington Post* (WP), 11/20/78. *Hold Hands,* p. 130 and *Journey to Nowhere,* p. 47.

6. "Rev. Jones Accused of Coercion," *New York Times* (NYT), 4/12/79; *NYT,* 11/27/78 (warning letter to Ryan, 6/78).

7. Assassination of Leo J. Ryan, pp. 1-3; "Ryan to Visit," Kilduff, *San Francisco Chronicle* (SFC), 11/8/78.

8. "A Hell of a Story: The Selling of a Massacre," *Wash. Jrn. Rev.,* Jan-Feb. 1979.

9. *Raven,* p. 576 (Layton charges).

10. *Hold Hands,* p. 216.

11. *Helter Skelter,* Bugliosi (Norton, 1974).

12. *Hold Hands,* pp. 215-16.

13. *New York Post,* 11/21/78 (headline); *WP,* 11/21/78, *San Francisco Examiner* (SFE), 11/22/78, *Guyana Daily Mirror,* 11/23/78, *NYT*, 11/22/78 (flee to jungle); *NYT,* 11/21-23/78 (estimated 4-500 missing); *White Night,* pp. 224-6 and *NYT,* 11/23/78 (U.S. search with loudspeakers).

14. *Boston Globe,* 11/21/78, *Baltimore Sun,* 11/21/78, NYT, 11/20/78 (est. 11-1200); *White Night,* p. 228 (Jones says 1,200), *Guyanese Daily Mirror,* 11/23/78 (1,000).

15. *WP,* 11/21/78 (passports); *White Night,* p. 230 (809 visa applications), and *Hold Hands,* p. 146 (800 on buses to Florida); *Children of Jonestown,* p. 202 and NYT, 11/26/78 (children, 260 dead at site, 276 at Dover).

16. *White Night,* p. 223; *NYT,* 11/21/78 (408, Guyanese "pick way" to count), 11/22/78 (409, U.S. Army teams), 11/23/78 (400, Maj. Helming, U.S.), 11/24/78 (409, still).

17. *White Night,* p. 231 and *Hold Hands*, pp. 226-34, *NYT,* 11/25/78 (775, P. Reid, Guyana), 11/26/78 (over 900, U.S. "final" 910, AF or 914, Reuters; 11/29/78 (900, Lloyd Barker, Guyana), 12/1/78 (911, U.S. Air Force), 12/4/78 (911, Dover AFB, Del.)

18. *Guyana Daily Mirror,* 11/23/85.

19. *White Night,* pp. 229-30 (can't count); *NYT,* 11/25/78 (State Dept. Business, "rough"), 11/25/78 (American official disagrees, says Guyanese count "firm"); *Children of Jonestown,*. p. 196 (poking).

20. *White Night,* p. 229 (pavilion story), 230 ("mounds of people," Maj. Hickman); *SFE,* 11/25/78 (adults covered children); *NYT,* 11/25/78 ("layered," Ridley, Guyana, but U.S. soldier, "only one layer").

21. *Baltimore Sun,* 11/21/78 (82 children, 163 women, 138 men first count).

22. Photographs appear in most of the standard reference works, see fn 2. Also, good pictures in the following: "Jonestown: the Survivors' Story," *NYT Magazine*, 11/18/79; "Death in the Jungle," 11/27/78 and "Cult of Death," 12/4/78 in *Newsweek;* "Cult Massacre," 11/27/78 and "Cult of Death," 12/4/78 in *Time;* "Cult of Madness," 12/4/78 and "Bloody Trail of Death," Tim Cahill, *Rolling Stone,* 1/25/79' "Questions Linger about Guyana," Sidney Jones, *Oakland Times*, 12/9/78; "Cult Defectors Suspect U.S. of Cover-up," *Los Angeles Times,* 12/18/78.

23. *White Night,* p. 229 (quoting State Dept. Bushnell), and *Hold Hands,* p. 233 (doubts); *NYT,* 11/23/78 (U.S. searching, Carter); 11/24/78 ("in vain"), 11/29/78 ("none"), and 12/1/78 (30-40 in

Venezuela).

24. *WP,* 11/21/78 (“Cult Head Leads 408 to Death”); *NYT,* 11/20-22/78, (searching, pick up Lane & Garry); *White Night,* p. 239 (Burnham sends in “his boys”).

25. *White Night,* p. 224 (over 300 U.S. troops, 11/20); *Guyana Daily Mirror,* 11/23/78 (325 U.S. troops); *Hold Hands,* p. 200 (200 for clean up) and *NYT,* 11/23/78 (239 to evacuate). What was the function of nearly 100 additional U.S. forces? “Jocks in the Jungle,” *London Sunday Times,* 11/78 (British Black Watch troops).

26. Photographs, see fn 22. *Strongest Poison,* p. 194 (Lou Gurvich, “dragged and laid out”).

27. “Mystery Shrouds Jonestown Affair,” *Guyanese Daily Mirror,* 11/23/78; *NYT,* 11/24 and 11/29/78 (missing in jungle disappear, Guyanese say “none,” Barker).

28. *SFE,* 11/20/78 (headline), also *WP,* 11/21/78 *or NYT,* 11/28/78.

29. *Children of Jonestown,* p. 193; NYT, 12/14/78 (Mootoo testifies to coroner’s jury), 2/18/79 (Chicago Med. Examiner Robt. Stein promised help, none came).

30. *A Guide to Pathological Evidence for Lawyers and Police Officers,* F. Jaffe (Carswell Press, 1983); *Poisons, Properties, Chemical Identification, Symptoms and Emergency Treatment,* V. Brooks (Van Nostrand, 1958).

31. Photographs, see fn. 22. “Questions Linger,” *Oakland Times,* 12/9/78.

32. “Coroner Says 700 Who Died in Cult were Slain,” *Miami Herald,* 12/17/78; NYT, 12/12/78 (injections, upper arm), 11/17/78 (700 were murdered), 12/18/78 (Mootoo shocks American Academy of Forensic Scientist meeting).

33. *White Night,* pp. 230-1 (shot); WP, 11/21/78 (shot), *Guyana Daily Mirror,* 11/23/78 (“bullets in bodies,” Ridley); *NYT,* 11/29/78 (“no guns/struggle,” Lloyd Barker), 11/20/78 (“no violence,” Ridley); *NYT,* 11/18,19,21/78 (Jim Jones, Annie Moore, Marisa Katsaris shot in head); *WP,* 11/21/78 (“forced to die by guards”), also *Washington Star,* 11/25/78 (forced).

34. *Children of Jonestown,* p. 191 and *WP,* 11/21/78 (unknown if Jones shot himself); *Strongest Poison,* p. 194 (Gurvich, no nitrate test on hands); *Hold Hands,* p. 260 (gun far from body); *Miami Herald,* 12/17/78 (Mootoo suspects murdered); *NYT,* 11/26/78 (drug o.d., shot after, U.S. Major

Groom), 12/1,7/78 (Guyanese and U.S. pathologists autopsy), 12/10/78 (ballistics tests), 12/20,21/78 (illegal cremation), 12/23/78 (not suicide, Mag. Bacchus, Guyanan Coroner's Jury).

35 *Raven,* p. 576 and *Miami Herald,* 12/17/78 (grand jury decision); Strongest Poison, p. 194 (Gurvich, evidence of shooting, over 600 bodies); *NYT,* 12/13/78 (grand jury set up), 12/14, 15, 17/78 (Mootoo testimony, tour of site), 12/23/78 (conclusion, "persons unknown," Katsaris, Moore suicides).

36. *Hold Hands,* cover photo, and see fn. 22.

37. *White Night,* p. 231 (Schuler quote), *Children of Jonestown,* p. 197 (unaware); *Strongest Poison,* pp. 182-89 (autopsy problems); *NYT,* 11/26/78 and 12/5/78 (no autopsies, reluctant), 11/26/78 (Mootoo's work unknown).

38. *Hold Hands,* p. 260, and see fn. 17, 28, 33 or Lloyd Barker: "Cult Defectors Suspect Cover-up," *LAT,* 12/18/78; "Jonestown & the CIA, *Daily World,* 6/23/81; *NYT,* 12/3,8/78 (Lloyd Barker collusion), 12/7,8,24/78 (Deputy Prime Minister Reid's role), 12/25/78 (U.S. attempts to discredit coroner's jury).

39. *Hold Hands,* p. 229; *SFE,* 11/22/78 ($1 million), or see *NYT,* 12/8/78 ($2.5 million at site); *WP,* 11/28/78 (cash, wallets, gold); *NYT,* 12/12/78 (visit to site by Burnham's party official).

40. *Journey to Nowhere,* p. 58, 117 (Ptolemy Reid cover-up), see also fn. 38; *Daily World,* 10/23/80 (Cheddi Jagan interview); *Guyana Daily Mirror,* 11/28/78 (1/23/79); *NYT,* 1/23/79 ("Templegate"); *NYT,* 11/20,25/78 (Ridley body counts, 408 to 708), and see fn. 33; *NYT,* 11/26,12/16,11,24/78 and 2/11, 5/16/79 (Guyana's collusion) and 12/3/78 (Burnham).

41. *White Night,* p. 225 (C-131s), *NYT,* 11/24/78 (equipment lists).

42. *White Night,* p. 228 (identity strip), and *Children of Jonestown,* p. 196 (medical tags); *Hold Hands,* p. 59 (tags visible in photo).

43. *Hold Hands,* p. 200 and *White Night,* p. 224 (Vietnam "looked like Ton San Nhut"); *White Night,* p. 224 (planes carried 557 caskets).

44. *Hold Hands,* pp. 200-1 (182 arrive last day); *White Night,* pp. 226, 231 (Maj. Hickman, "six days," first bodies arrive Dover 11/28); *NYT,* 11/24,26/78 (airlift details).

45. *Hold Hands,* p. 204; *White Night,* pp. 228-31 (description, "These were the worst").

46. *Hold Hands,* p. 201 (182 last day, 17 identified); *White Night,* p. 226 (Dover site), 227 (174 identified by Guyanese), 231 (183 in 82 caskets); *NYT,* 11/30/78 (Dover, map), 11/21/78 (50 U.S. experts sent), 12/1/78 (46 identified).

47. *Hold Hands,* p. 204 (Jones cremated), and see fn. 8.

48. *Hold Hands,* p. 203 (families not permitted to see remains), and personal interviews; *Baltimore Sun,* 12/28/78 (only 259 claimed by families); *NYT,* 12/22/78, 1/8,24/79, 2/17/79, 3/31/79,4/18/79 (Dover body counts 675 to 547) and 4/26.

49. *Strongest Poison,* pp. 182-9; *NYT,* 12/21/78, and 1/10/79 (New Jersey says cremation illegal, censures six doctors); *NYT,* 11/30/79 (Delaware legal problems).

50. "Medical Examiners Find Failings by Government on Cult Bodies," *NYT,* 12/3/78; Rescue Mission Report, Joint Chiefs of Staff, Special Operations Review (GPO, 1980); *Delta Force,* Charles Beckwith (Harcourt Brace & Jovanovich, 1983).

51. *White Night,* pp. 228-9 (no autopsies, death certificates in Guyana); *NYT,* 12/12/78 (Dr. Sturmer, National Assoc. of Med. Examiners); *NYT,* 12/3/78 (other medical examiners complain, "legally dubious method"); *NYT,* 12/16/78 (Sturmer again), 12/4/78 (embalmed) and fn 8 (cremations).

52. *Hold Hands,* p. 203 and *American Funeral Director,* Jan. 1979; *NYT,* 12/1,2/78 (FBI fingerprint 911 or 700 and identify 255).

53. *Children of Jonestown,* p. 197; *Hold Hands,* p. 204; *Strongest Poison,* pp. 182-9; *NYT,* 12/3,18/79 (quotes), 12/13,16,17,19/78 (autopsies, complaints), 12/25/78 ("few facts"), and fn 37 (Mootoo's work unknown).

54. *Raven,* p. 527; *Hold Hands,* p. 32 (photo), 53-4 and *WP,* 11/21/78 (diagram); *NYT,* 11/21/78 (illus.).

55. *White Night,* p. 197, *Raven,* p. 533, *Strongest Poison,* p. 131; *Children of Jonestown,* pp. 168-70; *NYT,* 2/20/79 (not guilty plea).

57. *White Night,* p. 197, *Raven,* p. 525 ff (ambush described); *Hold Hands,* p. 256 (Layton's "dumb stare"), and *LAT,* 11/28/79 (Layton as "robot"); *Journey to Nowhere,* pp. 96-8 (Beikman in court "staring"); *NYT,* 12/15/78 (Layton insanity defense), 12/21/78 (Layton "responsible").

58. *White Night, p.* 197.

59. *WP,* 11/21/78 (Layton's role, Jones' quote); *Boston Globe,* "Killers Hunted," 11/21/78; *SFE,* 11/22/78 (7 involved); *NYT,* 11/20/78 and 12/18/78 (lists of dead), 11/21/78 and 12/21/78 (Kice named, Joe Wilson gave Ryan gun at ambush), 11/29/78 and 12/9/78 (claim all dead, 8 warrants dropped), 12/21/78 (survivors scared to fly with "others"), 11/22 and 12/20/78 (Stephan Jones, Tim Carter, Michael Prokes arrested or charged with murders), 11/22, 25/78 and 12/15,17/78 (Cobb, Rhodes, Moore, Clayton, named survivors), 12/678 (3 escape to Caracas & Miami before massacre). Who Killed Ryan? 11/22/78 (FBI invest. "conspiracy"), 12/28/78 (Tim Jones takes 5th amendment on Ryan shooting).

60. *Raven,* p. 573 (elite squad), *Hold Hands,* p. 145; *Newsweek,* 12/4/78; *Daily World,* 6/23/81 (Holsinger).

61. "Grim Report," Kilduff, *SFC,* 6/15/78 (guards, abuse); *Newsweek,* 12/4/78 (different food, treatment); *LAT,* 11/28/78 (Debbie Layton Blakey, "upper middle-class whites").

62. *White Night,* p. 139, *Raven,* p. 403 (Cudjoe); and *Raven,* p. 241 (obeyed orders).

63. Chicago Defender, cited in *Black Panther News,* 12/30/78 (UNITA recruits for Africa); "Ryan Murder Suspect Resembles Robot," Hall, *LAT,* 11/26/78 (programmed, NYT, 11/30/78 (survivors had special privileges).

64. *Hold Hands,* p. 150; *Strongest Poison,* p. 85 (% women); "Questions Linger," *Oakland Times,* 12/9/78 (% Blacks); *NYT,* 11/20/78, 12/18/78 (death lists).

65. *WP,* 12/9/78 (FBI claims killers among dead), see fn 13,23 (missing people); *LAT,* 11/25/78 (Stanley Clayton, survivor, "hundreds were slain," "forced to die"); *NYT,* 12/6/78 (3 escape), 12/4/78 (Pan Am won't fly without armed guard), 1/29/79 ("cheers" heard), 12/23/78 ("persons unknown").

66. Assassination of Leo J. Ryan, p. 35, *Raven,* pp. 572-3, *Hold Hands,* p. 254 ("hit squad"); *White Night,* p. 224 (rumors at site), *Journey to Nowhere,* p. 148 ("basketball team"); *LAT,* 12/18/78, *NYT,* 12/1,4/78 (fears in U.S.), *NYT,* 12/4/78 (SF police guard Temple, "at a loss"), 12/23/78 (radio orders to kill relatives, Jonestown to San Francisco day of massacre, FBI).

67. *Raven* (Prokes & Tim Carter), see fn 59, and *NYT,* 12/12/78 (Carter arrested with pistols).

68. *Hold Hands,* p. 30

69. *NYT,* 11/22,23/78 (rumors, "master plan," Lane), 11/29 and 12/1/78 (FBI says "serious," Secret Service investigates), 12/11,23/78 (Buford testifies).

70. *AP,* May 19, 1979 (wrongly attributed to Cong. staff investigator George Berdes).

71. "Suicide Carnage," *Baltimore Sun,* 11/21/78 ("write the story"); *Hold Hands,* pp. 127, 221, (Lane, Garry lawyers for People's Temple)' *NYT,* 11/23/78 (Garry once called Jonestown "paradise," says Jones "lost reason"); *NYT,* 11/21/78 (picked up in jungle by Guyanese troops).

72. *Raven,* p. 572 (survivors); *Guyanan Daily Mirror,* 11/23/78 (32 captured by Guyanese); *NYT,* 11/30, 12/3, 7, 30/78 (reports of returning groups, totaling 30, more remain).

73. *Raven,* p. 575; "Fateful Prophecy is Fulfilled," *Newsweek,* 3/10/80; "Mills Family Murders: Could it be Jim Jones' Last Revenge?" *People,* 3/17/78.

74. *Hold Hands,* pp. 130-31, 254 (link of Jones to Moscone and Milk); *The Mayor of Castro Street,* Randy Shilts (St. Martin's, 1982); *NYT,* 1/17, 2/19, 4/24, 5/18, 5/22, 7/4/79 (Dan White arrest, trial, conviction, sentence); *NYT,* 5/22/79 (gay riot in response), 5/22/79 (White biography); *NYT,* 11/27 (murder), 12/6 ("no link"), 12/18/78 (illegal votes for Moscone); "The Milk/Moscone Case Reviewed," Paul Krassner, *Nation,* 1/14/84.

76. *Los Angeles Herald,* 2/12/84.

77. *Hold Hands,* pp. 61, 68 (KKK, Jones' racism), *NYT,* 11/26/78 (biography).

78. *Hold Hands,* pp. 62-3.

79. Personal interviews, Richmond, Indiana, 1981. *Raven, p.* 26 (Jones' boyhood); *Hidden Terrors,* A.J. Languth (Pantheon, 1978) (Mitrione).

80. *Hold Hands,* pp. 63-4 (calling as minister), 66, 70 (ordained as minister); *NYT,* 11/22,29/79, 3/13/79 (Disciples of Christ).

81. *Hold Hands,* pp. 62, 64.

82. *Hold Hands,* pp. 66, 166 (monkey business); *White Night,* pp. 9-10 (Indiana U. link).

83. *Hold Hands, p.* 65 (faith healer); *Hidden Terrors,* pp. 17, 41 (chief of police).

84. *Hold Hands,* pp. 68,102 (cure cancer); 75, 76, 103 (chicken livers); *Six Years, p.* 86 ff (photos).

86. *Suicide Cult,* pp. 181-2.

87. *White Night, p.* 236; *Journey to Nowhere,* pp. 95, 98 (Burnham's people defend him), *NYT,* 11/21 (murders), 11/26/12/1, 5, 14/78 (charges and trials), 12/19/78 and 2/3/79 (Stephan Jones "confesses" and "retracts"), 11/28/78 (charged with Katsaris).

88. *Hidden Terrors, p.* 42; *Who's' Who in the CIA,* Julius Mader (E. Berlin, 1968).

89. *Suicide Cult, p.* 21; *WP,* 11/22/78.

90. *Hold Hands, p.* 65; *NYT,* 3/25/79 (also recruiting Black families in Cuba, 1960).

91. "Jones' Mysterious Brazil Stay," *San Jose Mercury,* 11/78.

92. *San Jose Mercury,* 11/78; "Penthouse Interview: Stephen Jones," *Penthouse,* 4/79.

93. *Hidden Terrors, p.* 249; (Mitrione in Brazil '62-'67), 63, 117.

94. Ibid., pp. 139-40 (reference to Who's Who in CIA); *NYT,* 6/11,29/79 (Uruguay).

95. See it!

96. *Journey to Nowhere, p.* 247; *Hold Hands,* p. 171 (paid "pile of money," "$5,000 to have sex with Ambassadors' wife" — cover story for payoff); *Suicide Cult, p.* 42 (money to travel around U.S. on return).

97. "Bishops' Report Names CIA,"; *WP,* 2/16/85; Private Groups … Millions Raised," WP, 12/10/84; "Americares Foundation — Central America Gets Private Aid," *WP,* 2/27/85 (Knights of Malta, CIA's Casey, Brzezinsky, Haig, funnel donations for "medicine" through Sterling Drugs, linked to I.G Farben).

98. *Journey to Nowhere,* p. 251.

99. "Guyanan Tragedy Points to a Need for Better Care and Protection of Guardianship Children," Comptroller General Report (GPO, 1980); NYT, 1/25/79 (150 "foster children" in Ukiah),

2/14/79 (Mendocino agency says “none placed”), 2/17/79 (Sen. Cranston says 17 Ukiah children among dead).

100. “World Vision, Go Home,” L. Lee, *Christian Century,* 5/16/79; In the Spirit of Jimmy Jones,” J. Fogarty, *Akwesane Notes,* Winter, 1982; *NYT,* 2/26, 4/4, 11/16/75 and 12/25/79 (W.V. Cambodia), 4/2-5/75 and 6/30/79 (Vietnam work).

101. *Journey to Nowhere,* p. 220; “Jim Jones a Republican,” *LAT,* 12/17/78 (John Birch); *Daily World,* 6/23/81 (Holsinger comments), and *NYT,* 11/24/78 (“helpful” reputation).

102. “Jim Jones was a Republican for 6 Years,” *LAT,* 12/17/78; *Hold Hands,* p. 70 (Jones held 15% vote Mendocino County).

103. *Hold Hands,* p. 93.

104. *Hold Hands,* p. 84; *NYT,* 11/21/78 (Tim Stoen joins, legal advisor).

105. *Hold Hands,* p. 95 (Debbie Layton Blakey); *In My Father’s House* (Layton’s stories); *Strongest Poison* (Terry Buford), *NYT,* 12/4/78 (Layton family, 6 join).

106. *Six Years,* p. 86 ff (photos); *NYT,* 11/22-24/78 (biography), 11/29/78 (college S).

107. *Strongest Poison,* p. 85; *Philadelphia Inquirer,* 11/19/78.

108. *Hold Hands,* p. 138 (family joins); “Cult Got Assets from Layton,” *LAT,* 11/26/78; “Family Tragedy,” *NYT,* 12/4/78 (aristocratic).

109. *Washington Post,* 1/22/78 (27,000 acres leased, 1974); *Daily World,* 6/23/81 ($600,000).

110. *In My Father’s House,* pp. 18-19.

111. *Hold Hands,* p. 94, 127-8; NYT, 12/16, 17/79 (Swiss bank accounts).

112. *Hold Hands,* p. 96; *Baltimore Sun,* 11/21/78; *NYT,* 11/21/78 (list), 12/5/78 (Stoen close to D.A. Hunter, later investigated Temple).

113. “Statement by Joe Holsinger,” 5/23/80, citing *Strongest Poison* (Chapter 5), (Jones as “patriotic American”); *LAT,* 12/17/78; *NYT,* 12/1/78 (Reagan says Jones “close to Democrats”).

114. *Hold Hands,* p. 73-75, 79, 176.

115. *Hold Hands,* p. 182-3; *Journey to Nowhere,* pp. 223-4, *WP,* 11/22/78 (Housing Commission); "DA Accuses Deputy Stoen," *SFE,* 1/21/79; *WP,* 11/22/78; Baltimore Sun, 11/21/78 (election and voter fraud); *NYT,* 12/18, 20/78 (illegal Moscone votes).

116. *Journey to Nowhere,* p. 279 (welfare appointments), *NYT,* 12/9/79 (half of dead on Calif. Welfare sometime, 10% active, 51 fraud).

117. *Hold Hands,* p. 132 (Angela Davis), 213 and *NYT,* 11/23/78 (Rosalynn Carter), *NYT,* 11/21/78 (list), also *WP,* 11/20/78 and *Baltimore Sun,* 11/21/78.

118. *Age of Surveillance,* Frank Donner (Random House, 1980); *Spying on Americans,* Athan Theoharis (Temple University Press, 1978); "Garden Plot and SWAT: U.S. Police as New Action Army," *Counterspy,* Winter 1976.

119. *Secret Agenda,* Jim Hougan (Random House, 1984), pp. 99, 102, Final Report, Senate Select Committee on Presidential Campaign Activities (GPO, 1974), pp. 3-7 and Hearings, Vol 3, pp. 1319-37 and Vol. 4, pp. 1453-64 (describes Houston plan); The Whole Truth: The Watergate Conspiracy, Sam Ervin (Random House, 1980); "A New Watergate Revelation: The White House Death Squads," Jonathan Marshall, Inquiry, 3/5/79.

120. *COINTELPRO,* Nelson Blackstock (Vintage, 1976); *The FBI and Martin Luther King: From SOLO to Memphis,* David Garrow (Norton, 1981); *Assassination of Malcolm X,* George Breiterman (Pathfinder Press, 1976); also see on King harassment; *Nation,* 6/17/78, and Newsweek, 9/28/81, and *NYT,* 3/17/75. Also browse *NYT,* 11/19-23/75 and 12/3-24/75.

121. "Remembering Ed Meese: From the Free Speech Movement to Operation Garden Plot," Johan Carlisle, *S.F. Bay Guardian, 4/4/84; "* Officer Ed Meese," Jeff Stein, *New Republic,* 10/7/81; and "Ed Meese," Alex Dubro, *Rebel,* 12/13/84; "Bringing the War Home," Ron Ridenhouse, *New Times,* 11/28/75.

122. "Garden Plot & SWAT," *Counterspy,* Winter, 1976.

123. "Why Civil Libertarians are Leery of Ed Meese," *Oakland Tribune,* 2/13/84.

124. "Jim Jones: The Seduction of San Francisco," J. Kasindorf, *New West,* 12/18/78; Churchmen Hunt Clues on Cult's Lure for Blacks," H. Soles, *Christianity Today,* 3/23/79; An Interpretation of

People's Temple and Jim Jones," *Journal Interdenom.* Theol. Ctr., Fall 1979; "Cuname Curare & Cool Aid: The Politics that Spawned and Nurtured Jonestown," George Jackson (self-published, 1984).

125. *Hold Hands,* p. 87.

126. *Hold Hands,* pp. 88, 182-3.

127. *Hold Hands,* p. 84, 100-1; "Jones Linked to Extortion," *LAT,* 11/25/78; *NYT,* 12/3/78.

128. *Hold Hands,* p. 96, 172, 210-11.

129. "Seven Mysterious Deaths," Kathy Hunter, *Ukiah Press-Democrat.*

130. *LAT,* 11/25/78; *NYT,* 11/21/78 (Jones threatens to kill defectors).

131. *Journey to Nowhere,* pp. 49-50, 67, 102.

132. Assassination of Leo J. Ryan, p. 316 (Debbie Layton affidavit); *LAT,* 11/18/78; NYT, 11/20; 12/5/78 *(White Night).*

133. *Hold Hands,* p. 71-2, 180; *NYT,* 11/21, 28/78 and 12/7/78 (abuse complaints ignored).

134. "Inside People's Temple," Kilduff, *New West,* 8/1/77; "Jim Jones: The Making of a Madman," Phil Tracy, *New West,* 12/18/78; *LAT,* 12/8/78.

135. *Hold Hands,* p. 16, 100, 136-7; Scared Too Long," SFE, 11/13/77 (Houston death); NYT, 11/21/78.

136. *Hold Hands,* p. 127,133.

137. *Hold Hands,* p. 136 (against advice); *NYT,* 11/21/78 (Speiers makes out will).

138. Personal interviews with Joe Holsinger, Ryan's aide, 1980; *NYT,* 11/21/78, 12/16/78 (panic).

139. *Hold Hands,* p. 87-8, 100.

140. *White Night,* p. 226; *Hold Hands,* p. 232, *SFC,* 11/23/78 ("doubles")

141. *The Second Oswald*, Popkin (Berkeley, 1968).

142. See fn 34.

143. *White Night,* p. 227 (autopsy, identification); *Hold Hands,* p. 262 (photo); "New Mystery: Is Jones Dead?" *NY Daily News,* 11/23/78.

144. *NYT,* 11/24/78 (fingerprints).

145. *Hold Hands,* p. 77, 83; *In My Father's House,* pp. 115-6.

146. "Jungle Geopolitics in Guyana: How a Communist Utopia that Ended in a Massacre Came to be Sited," *American Journal of Economics & Sociology,* 4/81.

147. *Guyana Massacre* (photo of Gary at Temple).

148. *SFE,* 1/9/79. Also see my "Jonestown Banks" piece.

149. *Journey to Nowhere,* p. 126.

150. "James G. McDonald: High Commissioner for Refugees, 1933-35" *Werner Lib. Bull.* #43-44; "Refugee Immigration: Truman Directive," *Prologue,* Spring 1981; *Caribbean Review,* Fall, 1981.

151. *Journey to Nowhere,* pp. 117-18 (interior development); "Guyana's National Service Program," *Journal of Administration Overseas,* 1/76; *Caribbean Review,* Fall, 1981, 1982.

152. "Mineral Resources Map," *Area Handbook for Guyana,* State Department (GPO, 1969); *White Night,* p. 238 (Burnham); *Hold Hands,* p. 149.

153. *White Night,* p. 238 (Burnham on importing labor, "exploit the exploitable").

154. *Hold Hands,* p. 144. (Embassy visits since 1973); "Consulate Officers" Babysitters," *NYT,* 11/29/78 and *NYT,* 12/6, 11, 24/78 (Guyana denies links), but see 5/16/79 (House report charges collusion), and 5/78; 5/4, 16/79 (House report critical of role of U.S. Embassy).

155. *Hold Hands,* p. 146.

156. “Brother Forced to Go to Jonestown,” *LAT,* 11/27/78 (kill whole family threat); Personal interview with Guyanese present, 1980 (bound and gagged).

157. *Journey to Nowhere,* p. 107 (guards, “state within a state”); *Hold Hands*, p. 127 (coercion by armed guards, Yolanda Crawford), personal interview with Guyanese living within 5 miles of site, 1981.

158. *Journey to Nowhere,* pp. 73-4 (adoption, 7 Guyanese children among dead); *Guyana Daily Mirror,* 11/23/78.

159. *Hold Hands*, p. 39 (Gerry Parks), 156 (Blakey), “Life in Jonestown,” *Newsweek,* 12/4/78; “Jonestown,” Michael Novak, AEI Reprint #94, 3/79 (work and food).

160. Holsinger Statement, 5/23/80; *NYT,* 11/23/78 (“preoccupied with”).

161. *Hold Hands*, p. 50-51 (Tim Bogue), 157-63, 170-1 (public rape); “People’s Temple in Guyana is a Prison,” *Santa Rosa Press Democrat, 4/12/18; Newsweek,* 12/4/78 (special treatment); *SFC,* 6/15/78; *Baltimore Sun,* 11/21/78; *NYT,* 11/20/78 (slaves, torture), 12/4/78 (denials).

163. *Trading with the Enemy,* Charles Higham (Dell, 1983), p. 23 (Schacht role in war); *NYT,* 10/11/79 (Auschwitz plan).

164. *Miami Herald,* 3/27/79 (set up accounts); *LAT,* 11/18/79, and see my “Jonestown Banks”); *NYT,* 11/21, 23,28,29/78; 12/2,3,8,16,20/78 (millions described in various places); *NYT,* 1/13/79 (IRS says back taxes could be millions), 12/3/78 ($2 million real estate).

165. *LAT,* 1/5/78; *SFC*, 1/9/79, and see my “Jonestown Banks” again; *NYT,* 8/3/79 (puts Panama and Venezuela accounts at $15 million plus), *NYT,* 1/24/79 (receivership), 12/19/8 and 2/11; 10/11/79 (U.S. and Guyanese government and relatives claim it).

166. *In My Father’s House,* pp. 18, 19.

167. *Assassination*, pp. 775-6 (199 SSA beneficiaries at site), *Hold Hands*, pp. 78, 139; *NYT,* 11/22/78 (200 get $40,000/month), and 2/14/79 (Senate investigation). If the average check is $200 a month, how do 199 people equal $65,000?

168. *NYT,* 11/21/78 and 12/10/78 (guns on site don’t match cartridges); *NYT,* 12/3/78 (smuggling operations).

169. *Area Handbook,* op cit., see fn. 152.

170. *Operation Mind Control,* Walter Bowart (Dell, 1978); *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate,* John Marks (Times Books, 1978); "Project MK-ULTRA: CIA Program of Research in Behavior Modification," Senate Select Committee on Intelligence, Hearings, 8/3/77 (GPO, 1977); WP, MK-ULTRA" (series), Summer/Fall 1977; *NYT,* 1/30/79 (overview of MK-ULTRA).

171. Individual Rights and the Federal Role in Behavior Modification, Senate Subcommittee on Constitutional Rights (GPO, 1974); NYT, 1/25/79 (children), 2/7,10/79 (Blacks), *Philadelphia Inquirer,* 11/26/79 (prison).

172. *The Mind Manipulators,* Scheflin & Opton (Grosset & Dunlap, 1978); *The Mind Stealers: Psychosurgery and Mind Control,* S. Chavkin (Houghton-Mifflin, 1978); "Proposal for the Center for Reduction of Life-Threatening Behavior," J. West, 9/1/78; Correspondence, Dr. J. Stubblebine, Calif. Director of Health to Dr. Louis J. West, 1/22/73 (reprinted in Individual Rights, above); "Nike Nonsense, Army Offers Unused Nike Bases to UCLA Violence Center," *Madness Network News,* 2/19/74; *Mind Stealers,* p. 19 (Drs. M ark, Ervin), and *NYT,* 2/7,10/79 (electrodes); *LAT,* 11/26/78 (Dr. West writes "psycho-autopsy" of Jonestown).

173. *NYT,* 11/28/78 ("criminal rehab program at Jonestown), and 1/25/79 (children); see also fn 21,59,64 (race, sex, age composition of dead).

174. *Raven,* p. 347, Holsinger Statement, 5/23/80; *NYT,* 11/23/78 (medical records).

175. *Control of Candy Jones,* Donald Bain (Playboy Press, 1979); "The CIA's Electric Kool Aid Acid Test," Tad Szulc, *Psychology Today,* 11/77. See also fn 170, 172 (books).

176. *Physical Control of the Mind: Toward a Psychocivilized Society,* Jose M. Delgado (Harper & Row, 1969); *Psychotechnology: Electronic Control of Mind & Behavior,* Robert L. Schwitzgebel (Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1972).

177. *Hold Hands,* p. 17; *Children of Jonestown,* p. 16 (population of Georgetown, drugs); "Jones Community Found Stocked with Drugs to Control the Mind," *NYT,* 12/29/78.

178. *Children of Jonestown,* p. 16; *NYT,* 12/29/78 ("used to control").

179. *Children of Jonestown,* p. 16 (thorazine); *NYT,* 12/29/78 (drugs found); *Daily World,* 6/23/81 (Holsinger).

180. *Hold Hands,* p. 12.

181. *Hold Hands,* p. 190-3 (brainwash methods); *Daily World,* 6/23/81 (Holsinger).

182. *Hold Hands,* p. 257 (Luckhoo, lawyer for Temple); *White Night,* pp. 257-8 (Burnham "conversion"), Sir Lionel, Fred Archer (Gift Publications, 1980) (Luckhoo biography); *NYT,* 12/5/79 (Luckhoo has gotten 299 murder acquittals).

183. "In the Spirit of Jimmy Jones," *Akwesane News,* Winter 1982.

184. "Full Gospel Businessmen Dine with Kings," *L.A. Herald,* 1/29/85; "Annual White House Prayer Breakfast," National Public Radio, 2/1/85 (mysterious fellowship).

185. "Hundreds Were Slain, Survivor Says," *LAT,* 11/25/78; *NYT,* 12/6/78 (suicide plans); *NYT,* 11/21/78 and 12/10/78 (secrecy, panic, reaction to press coming).

186. *Journey to Nowhere,* pp. 56-7, 141; *NYT,* 11/23/78 (Freed calls Jones "Devil").

187. *Newsweek,* 12/4/79; *WP,* 11/19/78 and ff; *NYT,* 11/20; 12/3/78, 10/11/79; *Time,* 12/4/78; "Nightmare in Jonestown" (maps).

188. *Journey to Nowhere,* pp. 63-4; "Hill Rules Cult with Iron Fist," *Cleveland Plain Dealer,* 12/4/78; *NYT,* 12/4,5/78.

189. *Daily World,* 6/23/81, 10/23/80 (Holsinger and Cheddi Jagan); "Hill Rules," *CPD,* 12/4/78 (Hill admits); *NYT,* 12/19/78 (guns missing at site); Personal interview with Jagan.

190. "Hill Rules," *CPD,* 12/4/78; CBS, "60 Minutes," 11/18/80 (Hill interviewed).

191. "West German Concentration Camp in Chile," Konrad Ege, *Counterspy,* 12/78.

192. *Death in Washington,* Don Freed (Lawrence Hill, 1980) (Townley Welch); *Aftermath,* Ladislas Farago (Avon Press, 1974) (Bormann, Mengele); *NYT,* 11/7/84 (Pisagua camp).

193. *Six Years,* p. 122

194. *The Politics of Heroin in Southeast Asia,* Alfred McCoy (Harper & Row, 1974); "Jonestown Resettlement Plan," *SFE,* 8/18/80.

195. Correspondence, EPICA, 4/2/80 (Dominica plan); *NYT,* 4/11, 5/6, 6/12/79 (complicated intermesh of Sam Brown, Director of Peace Corps who invented Jamaica Plan, Dr. Peter Bourne and his lover Mary King, appointed Deputy Director of Action programs, the scandal of White House Drug Abuse advisor Bourne writing fake prescriptions for Carter aide Ellen Metesky, later Peace Corps director herself, and the resignation of the first Black Peace Corps administrator, Dr. Carolyn Payton (formerly Caribbean Desk there) over disagreements with Brown on the Jamaica plans); "The Jamaican Experiment," *Atlantic Monthly,* 9/83 (Reagan's plans).

196. American Labor & U.S. Foreign Policy, Ron Radosh, p. 393 (cites other sources); *Journey to Nowhere,* p. 21 (Burnham, CIA role, "right wing"); *White Night,* ($1 million destabilization plan); "How the CIA Got Rid of Jagan," Neal Sheehy, London *Sunday Times,* 2/23/67.

197. *White Night,* p. 257; "CIA Agent Witnessed Jonestown Mass Suicide," *San Mateo Times,* 12/14/79.

198. *White Night,* p. 256; *Who's Who in the CIA,* Julius Mader (E. Berlin, 1968); *Dirty Work: CIA in Europe,* Lou Wolff (Lyle Stuart, 1978); *Raven,* p. 590, note 66 (for Dwyer's non-denial).

199. *Hold Hands,* p. 29, 53; *Raven,* p. 534; Holsinger Statement, 5/2/380 (quote); "Don't Be Afraid to Die," *Newsweek,* 3/26/79; *NYT,* 3/15/79 (transcripts censor it); *NYT,* 11/19/79 (Dwyer at ambush); *NYT,* 12/7,9/78 (curious "discovery," delay).

200. *Daily World,* 6/23/81 (Holsinger); *NYT,* 11/25/78 (biography).

201. "Ryan's Ready," and "People's Temple," Reiterman, *SFE,* 11/17/78; "Angry Meeting in Guyana," Javers, *SFC,* 11/17/78.

202. Assassination of Leo J. Ryan, p. 9 (quote); *Daily World,* 6/23/81; *NYT,* 12/5,6,13/78 (role); 12/1/78 (cover-up with Blakey), 12/8/78 (biography).

203. Information Services Company, 7/80 (quote); *Daily World,* 6/23/81 (sensitive Caribbean listening post," citing *White Night).*

204. *Daily World,* 6/23/81 (Holsinger).

205. "Performance of a Department of State and American Embassy in Guyana in the People's Temple Case," Dept. of State (GPO, 1979); *Daily World,* 6/23/78 (Holsinger blames McCoy); Assassination of Leo Ryan, pp. 699-704 (role); *NYT,* 11/30/78, 12/5/78, 5/4,16/79 (Embassy

criticisms); NIT, 11/20-22/78 (gave Ryan no warning); 12/2,4-6/78 (hostile to Ryan, sent FOIA to Jones).

206. Personal interview with Holsinger, 1980.

207. *CIA: A Bibliography,* R. Goehlert (Vance, 1980); *Gehlen: Spy of the Century,* Edward Spiro (Random House, 1971); *The Pledge Betrayed,* Tom Bower (Doubleday, 1981); *The Belarus Secret,* John Loftus (Knopf, 1982); *Klaus Barbie: Butcher of Lyons,* Tom Bower (Pantheon, 1984); *Quiet Neighbors,* Allan Ryan (Harcourt, Brace, Jovanovich, 1984); *The Fourth Reich,* Magnus Linklater (Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1985); *Secrets of the SS,* Glenn Infield (Stein & Day, 1982); *Skorzeny: Hitler's Commando,* Glenn Infield (St. Martin's, 1981); "The Nazi Connection to the John F. Kennedy Assassination," Mae Brussell, *Rebel,* 1982.

208. *In My Father's House,* (Dugway chapter); "Family Tragedy," *NYT,* 12/4/78; Holsinger Statement, 5/23/80; *Who's Who* (Marquis, 1980) (Dr. Layton).

209. *In My Father's House,* pp. 18,19; *The Crime and Punishment of I.G. Farben,* Joseph Borkin (Free Press, 1978); *The Sanctity of I.G. Farben's Spy Nests,* Howard Armbruster (self-published, 1956); *Treason's Peace,* Howard Armbruster (1947); *Trading with the Enemy,* op cit., fn 163.

210. "Family Tragedy: Hitler's Germany to Jones Cult," Lindsey, *NYT,* 12/4/78.

211. *NYT,* 12/4/78 (met in England), see fn 209 (Farben link); "Solvay et Cie Reorganizes U.S. Interests," *Houston Post,* 11/29/74.

212. Holsinger Statement, 5/23/80.

213. *Philadelphia Inquirer,* 11/22/78.

214. *White Night,* p. 256 (cites report), see fn. 63.

215. *White Night,* 252 (minister); *Baltimore Sun,* 11/21/78 (Maria says CIA).

216. Assassination of Leo Ryan, p. 777 (lawyer role), see fn 195 also, *NYT,* 12/4/78.

217. Public Eye, Vol. 1, #1, 1975. Proceedings, First Conference, WACL, 9/25-9/67 (Taipei, R.O.C., 1967).

218. “Jones Disciple goes to Court Tuesday,” *Santa Cruz Sentinel,* 6/19/81 (CIA link alleged at Layton trial).

219. *White Night,* pp. 210-11 note, *SFE,* 2/8/79 ($ to USSR), *NYT,* 11/28/78 (suitcase); *NYT,* 11/28, 12/1,23/78 (details on her strange “suicide-murder”), *NYT,* 12/18/78 (letter), and 11/28, 12/18/78 (Prokes & Carter identified).

220. *Nation,* 3/2679; “Jones Aide Dies After Shooting Himself,” *Baltimore Sun,* 3/15/79, 12/8/78 ($2.5 million), *NYT,* 3/14/78 and *Strongest Poison* (FBI link).

221. *Hold Hands,* p. 165 (move to USSR), *SFC,* 1/21/79 (details of rumor), *NYT,* 11/27,28/78, 12/10/78, 1/1/79 (more details, quotes, tapes).

222. *White Night,* p. 229 (Guyana recovers $); *NYT,* 12/8 ($2.5 million); *NYT,* 11/18, 12/19/78 (Soviets, $39,000, refusal), and see *NYT,* 11/28; 12/3,10,18-20/78; and 1/1,2,9/79 (for all the smarmy details).

223. *SFE,* 1/9/79, and my “Jonestown Banks.”

224. *God’s Banker,* DiFonzi (Calvi), *NYT,* 6/31/82 (Panama story); *NYT,* 12/5/78 (Lane and Buford knew names on accounts), and see “Jonestown Banks” (disappears).

225. *Time, 1/26/82.*

226. *Children of Jonestown,* pp. 196-7 (orders from above).

227. “Close Look at Carter’s Radical Fringe,” *Human Events,* 11/11/78 (right wing view); *Migration & Development in the Caribbean,* Robert Pastor (Westview Press, 1985).

228. *Hold Hands,* p. 256; NYT, 11/21/78 (biography); also *Strongest Poison* (interviews).

229. *White Night,* p. 224 (“fearless”), *NYT,* 11/21/78 (biography).

230. “The Case Against Mark Lane,” Brill, *Esquire,* 2/13/79; “Mark Lane: The Left’s Leading Hearse Chaser,” Katz, *Mother Jones,* 8/79; “People’s Temple Colony Harassed,” *SFE,* 10/4/78 (Lane charges CIA attack); *NYT,* 11/30/78 (Anthony Lewis critique); 12/5,7,16,29/78 (rumors and denials that Lane and Buford drained Swiss bank accounts), 2/4/79 (contradictory remarks), 2/4/, 4/4/, 9/21/79 (more charges, fake identity, theft), see *Strongest Poison* for comparison.

231. *Code Name Zorro,* Lane & Gregory (Prentice-Hall, 1977).

232. *Hold Hands,* p. 222; *NYT,* 6/14/78 (Lane as Ray's attorney); Investigation of the Assassination of Martin Luther King, Jr., House Select Committee on Assassinations (HSCA), Hearings, Vols. 1-9 (GPO, 1979); *NYT,* 8/8,16/78 (Lane's view of HSCA, conspiracy against him), and *Strongest Poison.*

233. "Ray's Breakout," *Time,* 6/23/77.

234. "Tennessee Clemency Selling Scheme," *Corrections,* 6/798; "A Federal-State Confrontation," *National Law Journal,* 5/11/81.

235. *NYT,* 1/6,20/79 (Swearingen, documents), see also 1/16-18,27/79 (Swearingen); *Code Name Zorro,* op cit.; *NYT,* 1/20/79 (Swearingen, Chicago FBI to 1971); "Investigating the FBI," *Policy Review,* #18, Fall, 1981; David Martin "Breitel Report: New Light on FBI Use of Informants," *First Principles,* 10/80; "Prying Informants Files Loose from the Hands of Attorney General — SWP v. Atty. General of U.S.," *Howard Law Journal,* Vol. 22, #4, 1979.

236. Personal call, 1978.

237. *Strongest Poison,* p. 402.

238. *Code Name Zorro,* pp. 165, 204-5.

239. Ibid., p. 165.

240. Ibid., *Let the Trumpet Sound: Life of Martin Luther King,* Oates, (Mentor, 1982), p. 473.

241. *Code Name Zorro,* p. 168.

242. Ibid., pp. 161-4; *Let the Trumpet Sound,* p. 476.

243. *Code Name Zorro,* pp. 165-70.

244. Ibid., pp. 165-8, 205.

245. Ibid., pp. 168-70.

246. *NYT,* 12/22/78; 1/1/79 (Buford at Lane's home); *Strongest Poison,* p. 402 (unconvincing denial), and see p. 1114 ("our house in Memphis").

247. "Memo Discusses Smuggling Witness to Guyana," Horrock, NYT, 12/8/78; *Strongest Poison,* p. 144 (testimony to HSCA).

248. "Memo Discussing Smuggling," op cit., fn 247.

249. "Seven Mysterious Deaths," op cit., fn 129.

250. *Hold Hands,* pp. 18, 223; Assassination of Leo Ryan, pp. 3, 52-3 (text); *Journey to Nowhere,* p. 163 (Lane quote); *NYT,* 12/8/78 (discouraging Ryan).

251. *Hold Hands,* p. 222; "Ryan's Ready," Reiterman, *SFE,* 11/17/78.

252. *Hold Hands,* pp. 212-3, 223 (sandwiches); NYT, 12/8/78; 1/12/79 (no warning).

253. *Hold Hands,* pp. 43, 44; *Strongest Poison,* p. 175 (underwear); *WP,* 11/21/78.

254. *WP,* 11/21/78.

255. *Hold Hands,* pp. 212-3, 222, citing Anthony Lewis in *NYT.*

257. *Let the Trumpet Sound,* p. 470 (brother, A.D. King with MLK day of death); *NYT,* 7/1/74 ("accidental drowning" death of A.D. King); *Trumpet,* pp. 472-3 (wound described), also Robert Cutler analysis, *Grassy Knoll Gazette,* 1983; *NYT,* 10/25/74 (Dr. Herbert MacDonnell, "no way" from window), 8/18/78.

258. *NYT,* 2/14/74 (Ray gets rehearing); *NYT,* 7/1/74 (Alberta King murdered 6/30/74); "Ray's Day in Court," *Newsweek,* 11/4/74; *NYT,* 10/8/74 (Ray v. Rose reheard); "Did James Earl Ray Slay the Dreamer Alone?" *Writer's Digest,* 9/74.

259. *NYT,* 10/30/74, "Tennessee Effort to Block Testimony Overturned."

260. "Another King Killed," *NYT Magazine,* 6/8/74; "Third King Tragedy," *Time,* 7/15/74; "Murder in a Church," *Nation,* 6/20/74; *NYT,* 6/30, 7/1,9,12/74 (Chenault biog. trial); "That Certain Smile," *Newsweek,* 6/15/74; *NYT,* 7/1,10/74 (psychiatric exam); *NYT,* 9/13/74 (blows kisses, points finger "like a gun" at judge, prosecutor).

261. *NYT,* 7/1-5/74 (Ohio “visitors” in Atlanta, Dayton link to ministers, legal fees paid anonymously, FBI suspicious, Justice says “no conspiracy”).

262. Dayton Journal Herald, 7/2/74ff; *NYT,* 7/9/74 (“The Troop” — Steven Holinan, Walter Brooks, Ronald & Robert Scott, Ramona Catlin, Almeda Water, Harvey Cox, Jr., Marcus Wayne Chenault); *NYT,* 7/4,8/74 (biography of Rev. Hananiah Emmanuel Israel, or Rabbi Israel, aka Rabbi Albert Emmanuel Washington, personal interview, *Journal Herald* reporter, 1974.

263. *Journey to Nowhere,* pp. 63-4; “Hill Rules,” *CPD,* 12/4/78, fn 188 (Hill); NYT, 12/4/74 (“Black Hebrew” Chenault).

264. *NYT,* 7/1,3,7,8/74 (Chenault tells Abernathy of Troop plan “to kill all Black civil rights leaders,” “religious mission partly accomplished,” and death list found in Chenault apartment: Jesse Jackson, Hosea, Cecil Williams, Martin Luther King, Sr., Ralph Abernathy, Rev. Washington (a cousin), and Fr. Divine (!), already deceased.

265. *Let the Trumpet Sound,* op cit., fn 240.

266. “Psyching Out the Cult’s Collective Mania,” Drs. Delgado & J. West, *LAT,* 11/26/78; “The Appeal of the Death Trip,” Robert J. Lifton, *NYT Magazine,* 1/7/79; *NYT,* 11/22/78, Robert Lifton (“explains”), 12/1/78 (Carter quote); 12/3/78 (“never know,” Reston); 12/5/78 (Billy Graham, “Satan”).

267. “Jonestown & the CIA: Black Genocide Operation,” Jonestown Research Project, 1981; “The Expandable People,” Committee on Racial Justice Reporter, Spring 1979; *LAT,* 12/18/78.

268. *Raven,* p. 403; *White Night,* p. 39; *In My Father’s House,* p. 320, see “Jonestown Banks.”

269. *Raven,* p. 578 (ship in Caribbean); “Jonestown Banks,” p. 4 (citing McCann quote on KGO, San Francisco); *NYT,* 11/23/78 (“continue Temple work”).

270. Personal interview, relative of Grenadan family, 1984.

271. “Medical Students Were in No Danger,” Peter G. Bourne, *Oakland Tribune,* 11/8/83.

272. “Nomination of Director of Drug Abuse Policy Office,” Hearings, 5/13/77 (GPO, 1977); “Pipe Dreams,” P. Anderson, *Washington Post Magazine,* 2/14/80; *NYT,* 4/26/19 (White House Drug Scandal, U.N. Post), see fn. 195.

273. *SFC,* 12/10/84 (Gairy plan), see fn 147 (Gairy/Jones link); "Blue Christmas Coming Up," *Air Force Magazine,* 1/84 (precision bombing).

274. "Bombed Grenada Hospital Gets Bedding," *WP,* 9/27/84 (USAID, $1.2 million rebuild plan).

275. *Hold Hands,* p. 257 (Luckhoo approached to defend); *Raven,* p. 576 (Layton trial); *Raven,* p. 571 (claims Ryan's killers dead, names Kice, Wilson, Breidenbach, Touchette; what of others?), see fn. 59, 65.

276. *NYT,* 12/5/78 (Ryan's mother wanted full investigation), see fn 63; *NYT,* 12/8,14,15,21/78; 1/4/79 (S.F. Grand Jury, delays, stonewalling, Stoen/Hunter).

277. *White Night,* p. 232; *Raven,* p. 576 ($12 mil. hidden in accounts, airlift costs); "Eerie Shoes: Missing Money," *Time,* 11/18/78; "Assets Liquidated," *Christian Century,* 10/21/81; "Payoff for a Massacre," *Macleans,* 9/6/72; NYT, 11/21,23,28,29; 12/3,21/78 (estimates of wealth), *NYT,* 11/25/78 and 5/19/79 (cost of airlift, $2 to $4.4 mil.); *NYT,* 12/3,5,7,14/78 (Pentagon, Charles Garry, Justice Department, families claim it), 12/19/78 and 1/3,24/79 and 2/11/79 (State Department, IRS, Guyanese, court receiver claim it).

278. *Hold Hands,* p. 134; *Raven,* p. 590, note 66; *Daily World,* 6/23/81 (Holsinger suit); Personal interview with Holsinger, 1982 (suspects military intelligence).

279. *NYT,* 1/23/79 (Ryan's children sue Temple for $1 million); *Raven,* p. 579; Personal interview with Holsinger, 1983; *NYT,* 10/11/79 (695 claims for "wrongful death," total $1.78 billion).

280. *Philadelphia Inquirer,* 4/1/81, "Hinckley Profile," Sid Bernstein, WNET, NY, 1981; *Breaking Points,* Jack & Jo Ann Hinckley (Chosen Books, 1985).

281. "Who Shot RR," Lenny Lapon, *Continuing Inquiry,* 5/22/81; "The Day the President Was Shot, *Investigative Reporter,* 1/82.

282. *Lennon, What Happened?* Beckley (Sunshine Pubs., 1981); "John Lennon's Killer, the Nowhere Man," C. Ungier, New York, 6/22/81.

283. *World Vision Magazine,* 1983; "Final Report of Israeli Commission of Inquiry," Journal Palestinian Studies, Spring, 1983; "Kahan Commission," *Midstream,* 6-7/83; *Guardian,* 11/17/81.

284. "Terrorism in Miami: Suppressing Free Speech," *Counterspy,* 3-5/84; *Guardian,* 11/17/81.

285. *SFE,* 12/18/80, op cit., fn 194.

286. *Hold Hands,* pp. 40, 165, 187 (photo).

287. *Journey to Nowhere,* pp. 234-5, *Hold Hands,* pp. 211-2 (FBI predict more); The Evidence of Things Not Seen, James Baldwin (Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1985) (Wayne Williams, Atlanta child murders).

288. "Jonestown Massacre Recalled," *WP,* 11/19/84; 10/10/84 (homeless controversy); "Political Storm Swirls Around Newcomers," *NYT,* 11/3/84; WP, 10/4/84 (quote).

289. "Oregon City an Experiment in Medical Care," L. Busch, *Amer. Med. News,* 10/26/84; Eugene, *Oregon Register-Guard,* 11/6/84 (injections).

290. *Politics of Lying,* David Wise (Random House, 1973).

291. *1984,* George Orwell (New American Library, 1961) (The book was originally entitled *1948,* not *1984).*

Frequently Called Numbers

Hilton Hotel

Lois
701,000 —
Consultant to a Govt Agency

Name/Address	Area Code	Number
Phoenix + Eagle Connection ?		
Feb '85 He said to Lois: The possibility of		
assassinating Reagan		
Ten days of May		
Colgate — Telly Savalas — "We're going to bump Duke" (author)		
		Issue November
The Palomino is a Pale Horse		Bull TAIF manifesto
		FAE
Wayne Reeder		
Firearms		
Petin		
FAX.		
		Negraffiti
		Secret Society
Whej...		
SIG.		
Trilateral.	Alien	
CIA.	2agent	
1957 →	narcotics smuggling	
	shadow govt.	

A representative page of notes from the late Danny Casolaro's files

Behold, A Pale Horse

A Draft of Danny Casolaro's Octopus Manuscript Proposal

Kenn Thomas

Danny Casolaro died in the process of investigating something called the Octopus, a power cabal that had its tentacles in a variety of notorious contemporary events. The list of those events is long: the 1980 October Surprise pay-off that cost Jimmy Carter the presidency; Contra War weapons development; bizarre murders among the Cabazon Indians in Indio, California; the privatization of CIA dirty tricks in the form of the Wackenhut security firm; the Meese Justice Department's attempt to steal software from a company known as Inslaw, and much more. What follows is a draft of Casolaro's original proposal for his book, *Behold, A Pale Horse: A True Crime Narrative.* Later drafts retitled it simply *The Octopus.*

Among researchers, the verdict has not yet been returned on whether or not Casolaro was murdered or committed suicide in the bathtub of his West Virginia hotel room on August 10, 1992. Stories have circulated about Casolaro's despondency over publisher rejection of the *Octopus* manuscript and his fear about the recent discovery that he had multiple sclerosis. However, Casolaro died just after meeting an informant who may have provided him with the last piece of evidence he needed to prove the existence of his Octopus cabal. The gashes in his wrists were too deep to be self-inflicted. The suicide note was unconvincing.

Suspicions continue to mount. The assistant housekeeper of the hotel tells of the presence of bloody towels under a sink at the crime scene, possibly used to wipe it clean before Casolaro's body was found. Casolaro's body

was embalmed without consulting his family. Just as the veil on the secret life of Lee Harvey Oswald is only now being lifted, what really happened to Danny Casolaro will only be revealed in time. It seems a safe bet, however, that he died in part to suppress research he had amassed for the book proposed in the following document. The proposal, *Behold, A Pale Horse,* completed in 1990, appears in the files of Danny Casolaro, which were turned over to ABC News' *Nightline* after Casolaro's death and were eventually transferred to a small office at the University of Missouri.

This proposal covers many of the facts that have become well-known parts of the Casolaro tale and includes heretofore unreported details, such as the role of the gas explosive developed on the Cabazon reservation in the deaths of over 300 American and French military personnel after the October 23, 1983 blast at a compound in Beirut. (Interestingly, after the bombing of New York's World Trade Center on February 26, 1993, many in the media were quick to draw comparisons to the Beirut tragedy, and some early reports mentioned the smell of gas-fuel at the Trade Center bomb site.) The biggest gap in this account is its obliquely hidden mention of the Promis software, a central and notorious part of the Casolaro saga. Promis was developed by Inslaw, a company owned by William and Nancy Sullivan of St. Louis, Missouri, to track criminal cases through various prosecutors' offices. Although it was developed with government money, when the Reagan White House cut the program funding the development, the Hamiltons continued its development under the auspices of a private corporation, Inslaw. Modifications to Promis made it do extraordinary things, including the extrapolation of Soviet submarine launches, and it eventually came to be regarded as an indispensible police tool. It functioned well in tracking criminals and, some have said, in keeping track of political dissidents.

In 1982, Inslaw contracted to become the sole supplier of Promis to the offices of U.S. attorneys, but the Justice Department failed to deliver on the $10 million contract. While Inslaw struggled through the courts to get its due, Meese crony Earl Brian unsuccessfully attempted a hostile takeover of the company. Copies of the modified software began turning up at police agencies throughout the world. Although Brian denies it, the Hamiltons came to believe that he had sold it on the international market in violation

of the Inslaw contract. Enraged, the Hamiltons put investigator Casolaro in touch with Michael Riconoscuito, who claimed not only to have made many of the Promis modifications, but also to have developed fuel-air explosives for the Contra war on the ostensibly sovereign Cabazon reservation. Riconoscuito asserted that Brian had been given Promis as a reward for paying off the Ayatollah Khomeini, who successfully delayed the release of Iranian-held American hostages until the defeat of Jimmy Carter in 1980.

Riconoscuito's confessions include tales of intelligence agency infighting that may have contributed to George Bush's defeat. He also claims connection to Park-On-Meter, an Arkansas company that helped develop Contra chemical weapons and flew them out on an airstrip in Mena, Arkansas, in an operation apparently covered up by then-Governor Bill Clinton. Riconoscuito also led Danny Casolaro to Area 51 in the Nevada desert, where UFO stories mix with rumors of secret, advanced military craft. Casolaro's files, from which the following was taken, are replete with notes about "Majority 12," the secret government task force working deals with the space aliens.

Casolaro has been slighted for not being able to discern the trustworthiness of various sources, and for being so reluctant to separate the wheat from the chaff in his research that he instead fictionalized his account of the Octopus. Nevertheless, if he was killed, it was not because he wrote bad spy fiction, it was no doubt due more to the pathways he opened to the secret and suppressed details of recent history some of which can be found on the following pages.

Behold, A Pale Horse A True Crime Narrative

by Daniel Casolaro

Behold, a pale horse and its rider's name was death and Hades followed him, and they were given power over a fourth of the earth, to

kill with sword and with famine and with pestilence and by wild beasts of the earth.

— Revelation 6: 7-8

An international cabal whose freelance services cover parochial political intrigue, espionage, sophisticated weapon technologies that include biotoxins, drug trafficking, money laundering and murder-for-hire has emerged from an isolated desert Indian reservation just north of Mexicali.

While this cabal continues today, its origins were spawned 30 years ago in the shadow of the Cold War. In recent months, however, some of its members have emerged from the trenches like scarecrows to take gratuitous credit for their roles in delaying the release of the hostages in Iran until after the 1980 presidential election, scuttling and resettling the dope and dirty money schemes of the notorious, Australian-based Nugan Hand Bank, assisting Super Gun maker Gerald Bull who was assassinated last spring in Brussels, and for the development and distribution of the Fuel Air Explosive which can pack the power of a nuclear weapon in a shoebox.

I propose a series of articles and a book, a true crime narrative, that unravels this web of thugs and thieves who roam the earth with their weapons and their murders, trading dope and dirty money for the secrets of the temple.

Behold, A Pale Horse will be a haunting odyssey that depicts a manifesto of deceit, decisions of conscience, good and evil, intrigue and betrayal.

John Philip Nichols found his promised land just north of Mexicali on the wild grasses above the Salton Sea.

He was 60 years old then and the Cabazon Indian Reservation on the edge of Sonora was an ideal place for him to nurse his secret self. This is the vast desert emptiness where the yucca reaches nearly 40 feet high, where the Mormons saw it as a symbol pointing to the promised land and they called it the Joshua Tree. But the Joshua Tree is an ugly, asymmetrical lily with burly arms crooked at the elbow and it points everywhere, not unlike John Philip Nichols, as if asking itself, “What shall I do next?”

There is a point on the ridge of the Little San Bernardino mountains known as Salton View where you are more than 5,000 feet above the desert and where, to the north, you can see the great escarpment of Mount San Jacinto and, to the south, the man-made Salton Sea, the orchards of the Coachella Valley and, on a clear day, Mexico.

It is always clear in Indio and with the clarity of the warbler in the cottonwood grove, John Philip Nichols knew that he could bring his box office charity and all his earthly possessions into the reservation of the Cabazon Band of Mission Indians.

With no more than two dozen Indians and nearly 2,000 acres of desert solitaire, cactus and cotton grove, the Cabazon Reservation was a suitable home for gambling, dope, dirty money and gun running and all the fugitive visions that line the edge of oppression.

John Philip Nichols didn't howl under 12 full moons before the gambling was underway and, in the desert night, people flocked from all over to Indio Bingo and the poker casino at the fork of Highway 10 and Highway 86.

Under a major corporation's umbrella subsidiary, later to be named Cabazon Arms, the gun runners and the money traders soon arrived, the weapon makers and the generals from Babylon, Contra resuppliers, cover operatives from both the East and West and, in what one source calls "a marriage of necessity," the dope dealers, the mobsters and the murderers.

Whatever John Philip Nichols saw in the dark cathedral of those desert nights in silence and certainty cracked and became unglued. After a number of still unresolved execution-style murders and a solicitation-for-murder charge for which he was jailed, the dark vision of John Philip Nichols eroded. Although he's been released from a short stint in prison, he's a one-eyed Jack now since only Indio Bingo gambling — managed by his sons, the Las Vegas-managed poker casino, the Indians and the most formidable creatures of the desert remain.

Several of the Cabazon Arms associates during the 1980s are coming out of the shadows to take top billing for the actual participation in the multi-million dollar laundered payment to the Iranians to delay the release of the

hostages, in shutting down the dope and dirty money schemes of Nugan Hand and resurfacing its activities, in assisting Gerald Bull in the refinements and distribution of his weapons arsenal including his Super Gun, and in the development of the Fuel Air Explosive technologies — thought to be responsible for the Beirut bomb which killed 241 U.S. servicemen.

While rumors of the hostage release delay circulated for years after the election of Ronald Reagan, it wasn't until 1988 that testimony was offered by two covert operatives in two different courts regarding their knowledge and participation in a hostage-release stall managed by then Reagan campaign chief William Casey. But now, two more covert operatives have emerged from that desert reservation in the journey of this story effort to confirm that previous testimony and provide richer details regarding the laundered payment by the Saudis and other particularities in order to prevent what Casey feared the most, a surprise release of the hostages before the election, almost guaranteeing windfall votes for President Jimmy Carter. The alleged reward to another Reagan insider for that mission to Iran in the summer of 1980 has been almost wholly responsible for the leaks leading to this odyssey. For it was in that reward in the form of a multi-million dollar government contract that technologies were found to have been stolen by the government from another company. In that other company's recovery from bankruptcy, its CEO has been the real life star and gumshoe in this drama that continues to unfold each day.

In 1982, the body of 30-year-old Paul Morasca was found hog-tied and fatally strangled in his condominium on San Francisco's Telegraph Hill. Morasca, who had been working among the Cabazon Arms confidantes, reportedly had the access codes for offshore accounts containing hundreds of millions of dollars in drug money ostensibly for covert operations. Morasca's partner, who is one of the key sources for this story, claims to have scuttled Nugan Hand's operations and assumed control over all the funds. Two years earlier, about 90 miles from Sydney, Frank Nugan's body was found slumped over in his Mercedes sedan. His partner, Michael Hand, has been missing since the investigation widened several months after Nugan's death. Two sources in this story report knowledge of Michael Hand's whereabouts.

The drug trafficking, the contract murders, the spies and the investment frauds revealed in the Nugan Hand inquiries bear sinister, mirror-like qualities to the gang on that isolated desert reservation in Southern California.

A little more than six months ago, on a quiet spring evening in Brussels, a guns-to-Babylon mission splintered into pieces which were later found in the UK's Teesport and in Turkey. Gerald Vincent Bull ambled down the hallway leading to his apartment when an assassin fired two 7.6 millimeter rounds at point blank range into the back of his skull. The shadowy movements of his Super Gun dream took hold and gathered momentum in the Indio desert.

Six years ago on a balmy Sunday morning in Beirut, a Lebanese boy later nicknamed "Smiling Death" raced a Mercedes truck toward a building full of sleeping US soldiers. A few seconds later, 241 Americans and 56 Frenchmen were dead in what the FBI called the largest man-made non-nuclear explosion since World War II. Nicknamed "Smiling Death" because of the chilling expression that the sentry recalled on the suicide driver's face, the bomb and the driver were traced to a Lebanese Shia Muslim extremist group, the Islamic Jihad, and to the most dangerous terrorist at large today, Imad Mugniyah. Mugniyah's followers had used what investigators called a "trademark," using gas to enhance a powerful explosive. Investigators determined that the device was equivalent to nine tons of dynamite, made of sophisticated explosive enhanced by gas, and only the size of an unfolded card table. Its name: The Fuel Air Explosive.

Possession of a secret is no guarantee of its truth, and while these allegations by a handful of people are indeed remarkable, they are also wrought with undocumentable details — at least thus far, and veils of deniability masking the necessary spine for a traditional journalistic effort. It is for this reason that *Behold, A Pale Horse* is subtitled *A True Crime Narrative.*

The first three chapters of the manuscript should be finished within three months of an initial advance and each subsequent chapter will be delivered every month. the completed book should be ready for publication by the summer of 1991.

Joseph D. Casolaro, 44, journalist and novelist

Funeral services for Joseph Daniel Casolaro, the Washington-based writer who died in West Virginia while working on an investigative story, will be at 10 a.m. today at St. Ann's Church in Arlington.

Mr. Casolaro, a 44-year-old Fairfax County resident, was investigating the Bank of Credit and Commerce International when he was found with his arms slashed Saturday in a bathtub in a Martinsburg, W.Va., hotel. A police investigation is continuing.

A lifetime resident of Northern Virginia, he was a veteran journalist and author of several published fiction works. His most recent novel, "The Ice King," was published by St. Martin's Press in 1985.

Before his 18-month free-lance investigation of various banking and government scandals that he believed were intertwined, Mr. Casolaro was a writer and editor at Computer Age Publications, a newsletter group based in Springfield. He had worked for other publications covering the criminal justice system and had been a correspondent and columnist for newspapers and magazines based on Capitol Hill.

Mr. Casolaro began his reporting. career with Globe Newspapers, a string of weeklies serving Northern Virginia. He attended St. Leo's College and Providence College, and he spent a year in Paris at the Sorbonne.

He is survived by two sons from a previous marriage, Joseph Casolaro III of Leadville, Colo., and Colby Henson of Herndon; his mother, Frances Casolaro of Falls Church; a brother, Dr. M. Anthony Casolaro of Dunn Loring; and two sisters, Mari-Ellen Slakey of McLean and Linda Oels of Toms River, N. J.

The 7 Seals Revealed to David Koresh

WHY WACO?

Ken Fawcett

The Branch Davidian conflagration, in which nearly a hundred so-called “cult members” burned to death, seemed to temporarily satisfy the TV audience’s post-Gulf War adrenaline fix, and signal an escalation in the New World Order’s taste for “shoot now, explain later” mini-wars within domestic borders. If the Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco and Firearms wanted to arrest David Koresh they had ample opportunity on his frequent trips to downtown Waco prior to the initial siege. As Ken Fawcett’s following affidavit confirms, the first assault on the Mount Carmel complex was done for the benefit of news cameras, probably to justify the ATF budget, which expanded ten-fold during the 1980s. Independent reseachers have revealed that two of four ATF officers killed in the initial “surprise raid” were most likely killed by friendly fire and concussion grenades hurled by fellow storm troopers. In addition, Mr. Fawcett claims the official time of the first raid was misstated by two hours to allow the ATF to edit the tapes for official use by the news media. In June, 1993, recordings released by Waco-area 911 lines, amply demonstrate the sect’s desire for cease-fire during the initial raid.

The cover-up tones of the Waco conflagration was confirmed by use of FBI subcontractors as so-called “independent arson investigators” and the hiring of Mark Richard as a top advisor to Attorney General Janet Reno. According to Daniel Sheehan of the Christic Institute, “When the investigation of the [Edwin] Wilson affair [selling arms to the Libyans] started to lead into revealing information showing that the criminal activities were being directly authorized by CIA leadership under George Bush, it was Mark Richard who moved in out of the Justice Department to shut down that entire investigation. They allowed Tom Cline and Richard Secord … to enter a simple plea; [they] ended up paying just a few thousand dollars fine in being released from any further criminal investigation. It’s what’s known in the business as a ‘fix.’ That fix was put in by Mark Richard.”

Waco also afforded police agencies the opportunity try out sophisticated microwave weaponry (see “Remote Mind Control Technology” by Anna Keeler) and fool around with

interesting new psych-war devices including incredibly bright spotlights and incessant ear-splitting recordings of whining, taunting voices, dentist drills, and rabbits being slaughtered, among other aural monstrosities.

The “mild” tear gas that was pumped inside the Branch Davidian compound for eight hours was of the CS variety, a physically disabling poison which is usually mixed with kerosene for transmittal, is highly flammable. CS gas killed many children during the Vietnam War. It has now been confirmed that the Waco Fire Department was deliberately held back from responding to the fire, and, contrary to the federal position, the Texas coroner has maintained that none of the Waco inferno victims had been shot. [Introduction by Adam Parfrey.]

I am the individual who started the communication process to the besieged individuals inside Mt. Carmel [the Branch Davidian complex]. With help from Ron Engleman of radio station KGBS, we employed a method involving the use of a satellite dish on top of the Mt. Carmel Complex, i.e., moving it back and forth to signify an affirmative answer to on-air questions. Integral to the process is my personal satellite downlink equipment (three TURO dishes, 2 C-band, and 1 combination C and Ku band (12.7-12.9 Ghz.) The Ku band system is still somewhat new to the civilian and non-media public and are relatively rare (about 5,000 nationwide.)

I became involved in the situation last Monday after observing numerous contradictions between what was actually occurring on the scene and what was being reported by the off-air media. In addition, beginning Tuesday evening I began monitoring and taping both domestic and foreign correspondent satellite Ku band uplinks or transmissions from the “media checkpoint.” On Wednesday, March 3, after already removing the media twice for “safety concerns,” the FBI imposed restrictions upon the television media as to the use of more than 200x telephoto lenses on live shots, and upon the use of ambient light sensing “night vision” equipment. Bear in mind this type of ambient light equipment cannot in any way interfere with that being used by ATF or FBI. The restriction was as follows: night vision can only be used by the networks on a one-hour delay and restricted to two hours per night. Foreign correspondents, fearing for the safety of the citizens within the complex, maintained all-night vigils,

using night vision as well as 400x lenses. Monitoring these foreign transmissions, I was able to observe and videotape the following atrocities.

On March 2, 1993, at approximately 11 pm, while monitoring live Ku band transmissions from the Waco media set-up, I was surprised to view what was certainly an almost unedited video “refeed” of the assault. Having monitored news feeds in the past I knew from experience that the tape would be run twice. I proceeded to tape the second feed … this tape has been duplicated and distributed for my protection.

Over the ensuing weeks the tape was studied carefully by myself as well as by several men with military and law enforcement backgrounds. The conclusions reached are as follows:

1. BATF officers, either through mishandling, improper preparation, and/or defective equipment, suffered a minimum of two accidental weapon discharges. The first of which involved the Heckler-Koch MP5 assault rifle, and resulted in the death of Special Agent Stephen Willis and the injuring of another officer, as yet unidentified.

The second discharge occurred on an aluminum ladder, involving a Sig-Sauer P228 semi-automatic handgun, which, according to John C. Killorin, Chief of Public Affairs, ATF, has no safety. The weapon discharged in the holster of Agent Conway C. LeBleu, resulting in a flesh wound to his right leg. Agent LeBleu was able to ascend the ladder but met with death after entering a second-story window.

2. The attack plan failed to take into account the unusual architecture of the compound and thereby subjected officers crossing the roof from South to North to crossfire from agents seen firing from behind vehicles located on the west or front side of the compound.

3. The plan overestimated and/or was misinformed as to the construction of exterior and interior walls. This caused helicopter-based gunfire to pass completely through the building at angles endangering friendly forces on the ground.

4. The plan relied too heavily upon radio communication. When those communications were compromised, there was confusion as to the location of various forces, enemy as well as friendly. This too was a factor in the accidental tossing of a fragmentation device into the second story room, further identified as a 10’ × 10’ room adjoining David Koresh’s living quarters, which led to the death of agents Robert J. Williams, Todd McKeehan and Conway LeBleu.

5. Despite public statements to the contrary, agents are seen firing blindly into walls and windows without properly acquiring a target. This practice is known as “spray and pray” in law enforcement circles, and is unacceptable while executing an arrest warrant on one man, and one man only, where more than 100 innocent women, children and men are residing.

6. If after-the-fact statements by AFT spokespersons are true, and these affiants actually possessed and/or were suspected to possess weapons in the type and amount necessary to warrant the enforcement manpower at hand, then it is clear that management personnel failed miserably in prearranging ambulance and medical services for wounded or traumatized personnel, as evidenced by agents seen and heard well into the firefight telling TV cameramen to “call for an ambulance.”

7. ATF spokesmen Dan Conroy, Jack Killorin, Steven Higgins and David Troy have repeatedly stated that the “element of surprise” was paramount to the success of the “mission,” yet videotape reveals that two reporters are actually sitting clearly visible in a tree in front of the compound, and channel 10 crews were actually invited to “follow the ATF horse trailers in,” per conversation with Mr. Virgil L. Teter, KWTX, Waco.

8. Despite insistence that National Guard helicopters were requisitioned only to search for “hot spots” in the compound, their approach is clearly too low and off to the right and left to provide such a function.

9. Despite public statements that the three helicopters used in the raid sustained fire they are seen being examined in subsequent videotape, and no damage is visible.

10. An unidentified Davidian is seen and heard from a lower story doorway repeatedly calling for “peace” each time he is met with a hail of gunfire.

11. Agents are taped being assisted by Branch Davidians in the stabilization and evacuation of wounded officers; this behavior is inconsistent with persons having murderous intent.

12. The time of the Feb. 28th raid was deliberately misstated by two hours to allow editing of the video news tape before being released to the public.

13. There were no less than three tv station news crews waiting at the gate to follow the BATF into the complex.

14. The press was moved back three times in the first two days of the so-called stand-off to obscure from view federal agents “cleaning up” the bodies of two unarmed Branch Davidians killed by ATF snipers several hours after the “raid” had ended.

15. Even though it’s been widely reported that the final conflagration fire scene was too hot for investigators and medical examiners to enter for two days (because of “one million” rounds of “live” ammo) I have videotape footage of FBI agent Bob Ricks, ATF agent Swenson and others walking around in the ashes less than two hours after the fire was brought under control, wearing no protective clothing or eyegear whatsoever.

THE DISINFORMATIONAL PLAGUE

"We SHELL not EXXON erate Saddam
Hussein for his actions. We will
Mobil ize to meet this threat to our
vital interests in the Persian Gulf
until an AMOCO ble solution
is reached."

An Invitation to War

Eight days before the invasion of Kuwait by Iraqi troops on August 2, 1990, President Saddam Hussein met with United States Ambassador April Glaspie at his presidential palace. The following transcript of that meeting, is an obvious indication of the duplicitous intentions of the New World Order to stir up a war in which hundreds of thousands were killed.

Ambassador Glaspie: I have direct instructions from President Bush to improve our relations with Iraq. We have considerable sympathy for your quest for higher oil prices, the immediate cause of your confrontation with Kuwait. As you know, I have lived here for years and admire your extraordinary efforts to rebuild your country. We know you need funds. We understand that, and our opinion is that you should have the opportunity to rebuild your country. We can see that you have deployed massive numbers of troops in the south. Normally that would be none of our business, but when this happens in the context of your other threats against Kuwait, then it would be reasonable for us to be concerned. For this reason, I have received an instruction to ask you, in the spirit of friendship — not confrontation — regarding your intentions: Why are your troops massed so very close to Kuwait's borders?

Saddam Hussein: As you know, for years now I have made every effort to reach a settlement on our dispute with Kuwait. There is to be a meeting in two days; I am prepared to give negotiations only this one more brief chance. When we [the Iraqis] meet [with the Kuwaitis] and we see there is hope, then nothing will happen. But if we are unable to find a solution, then it will be natural that Iraq will not accept death.

Ambassador Glaspie: What solutions would be acceptable?

Saddam Hussein: If we could keep the whole of the Shatt al Arab — our strategic goal in our war with Iran — we will make concessions [to the

Kuwaitis]. But, if we are forced to choose between keeping half of the Shatt and the whole of Iraq [including Kuwait, in Saddam's view] then we will give up all of the Shatt to defend our claims on Kuwait to keep the whole of Iraq in the shape we wish it to be. [Pause, then Glaspie speaks carefully:]

Ambassador Glaspie: We have no opinion on your Arab-Arab conflicts, such as your dispute with Kuwait. Secretary [of State James] Baker has directed me to emphasize the instruction, first given to Iraq in the 1960s, that the Kuwait issue is not associated with America. [Saddam smiles.]

After obtaining the tape and transcript of the Saddam-Glaspie meeting of July 29,1990, British journalists confronted Ms. Glaspie while leaving the U.S. Embassy in Baghdad on September 2, 1990:

Journalist 1: Are the transcripts [holding them up] correct, Madame Ambassador? [Glaspie does not respond]

Journalist 2: You knew Saddam was going to invade [Kuwait], but you didn't warn him not to. You didn't tell him America would defend Kuwait. You told him the oppose— that America was not associated with Kuwait.

Journalist 1: You encouraged this aggression — his invasion. What were you thinking?

Ambassador Glaspie: Obviously, I didn't think, and nobody else did, that the Iraqis were going to take ALL of Kuwait.

Journalist 1: You thought he was just going to take SOME of it? But, how could you? Saddam told you that, if negotiations failed, he would give up his Iran [Shatt al Arab waterway] goal for the "whole of Iraq, in the shape we wish it to be." You know that includes Kuwait, which the Iraqis have always viewed as an historic part of their country! [Glaspie says nothing, pushing past the journalists]

Journalist 1: America green-lighted the invasion. At a minimum you admit signaling Saddam that some agression was okay — that the U.S.

would not oppose a grab of the al-Rumeilah oil field, the disputed border strip and the Gulf Islands — territories claimed by Iraq?

[Again, Ambassador Glaspie says nothing as the limousine door closes behind her.]

INSIDE THE IRISH REPUBLICAN ARMY

Scott Smith

Journalist Scott Smith spoke with a representative for the Irish Republican Army's governing Army Council, in this first (and last) interview ever granted to an American journalist.

Q: *How many members of the IRA are active now? [Estimates range from 250 to 1000.]*

A: That is best left unsaid for security reasons but we can state that we have as many as we need and are turning away applicants. About 25% of our volunteers, including support personnel for the Active Service Units, are women. Most members of the Oglaigh na Heireann are from the six occupied counties.

Q: *How many IRA have been killed since the beginning of this phase of the struggle in 1969?*

A: Somewhat less than 300, about a third of them due to explosions while they were preparing bombs, mostly in the early years.

Q: *In The Provisional IRA by Maille and Bishop they say the IRA is guilty of most of the civilian deaths. True?*

A: They claim there have been 2,500 civilians killed, when that is the total number of deaths since 1969, which shows you how reliable they are. The IRA explains the reasons for each individual execution. Occasionally there are mistakes but we are very careful to avoid harming innocent people — collaborators, however, are not innocent.

We call off numerous operations when there is any danger to those not targeted — and our Volunteers prefer to operate in daylight to be able to see whether anyone is unintentionally endangered. The percentage of civilians killed by loyalists and Crown forces is much higher and they are intentionally less discriminate as part of their policy of terror to intimidate the nationalist community.

One measure of how accurate Britain's propaganda image of the IRA is can be found in Fr. Raymond Murray's generally accepted statistics about the war: in 18 years less than 150 civilians have been killed in the North by all nationalist bombs, including those of the INLA, officials, etc. Those due to the IRA have been accidents — we do not wish to harm innocent people, which is why we give bomb warnings.

Q: *What about infamous bombings like La Mon Hotel, Harrod's Department Store and the Birmingham pubs?*

A: First of all, it should be noted that the IRA takes responsibility for all actions of its Volunteers, even when unauthorized and when the publicity is damaging to us, in order to maintain credibility with our people. La Mon was tragic but unintended — the warning was inadequate for the speed with which the flames spread. Harrod's was not approved by command — the IRA was on the way to another target but were forced to abandon the car with the bomb. A 40 minute specific warning was given, and the police chose not to alarm the Christmas shoppers while they tried to find the bomb. Birmingham was the result of delays in delivering the warning due to non-working public phones.

Q: *The Birmingham Six appear to be innocent so why not bring forward the guilty to serve in their place?*

A: The six are in prison because of British injustice and should be released. If Britain were not in Ireland things like this would never occur. The British are not going to turn over their terrorists to us and we discipline our own soldiers.

Q: *What about compensating the families of those killed and injured?*

A: We wish we could but we do not have the funds. Help would likely be rejected anyway. Again, Britain ultimately bears responsibility: as long as it occupies our country there will be war and casualties.

Q: *James Adams' The Financing of Terror claims the IRA takes in $7 million a year, mostly from protection rackets, extortion of contractors, band and post office robberies, the Belfast black taxis, drinking clubs, the former co-op, etc. He says the real beneficiaries are the "rich godfathers."*

A: Anyone familiar with British black propaganda and knowledgeable about the situation here knows this is utter fabrication. We have challenged those making such assertions to provide any evidence — most recently a British TV program investigated and found nothing to corroborate these fantasies. Even our Volunteers are unpaid at the moment. The irony is that our critics are the ones who are well-off.

The co-op was run by former prisoners, as are the taxis and clubs; the IRA is not involved. There are no protection rackets run by us — any member caught trying to exploit people for personal gain is subject to very severe discipline. There have been no postal robberies in four years or banks in six. Most of our funding comes from individual donations from outside Ireland— and we do not accept donations with any strings attached.

Q: *What about Adams' claim that you work territorial deals with the Ulster Defense Association so that you don't get accused of exploiting your own people?*

A: Utter rubbish. We have no arrangements of any kind with loyalist paramilitaries.

Q*. What about charges that since the hunger strikes a criminal element has entered the IRA?*

A: In any organization, especially an underground one, you get some people who do not live up to its ideals. We want to be informed of anyone not conforming to Army discipline. Today, however, we are more selective than ever, so problems are minor.

Q: *One Irish American newspaper carried a column about the people of Rostrevor, Co. Down being turned against the IRA by the execution of a local boy it claimed was an informer, an assertion the community rejects. How careful is the IRA in passing sentences?*

A: Very careful, despite the conditions we have to operate in. We require documentation or admission and our intelligence is very good. Executions take place only when we are certain. In the Rostrevor case he was, in fact, an informer and therefore endangering the lives of our Volunteers. Communities and families are naturally shocked by the facts and find them hard to accept. Informers know the risk they take for personal gain. We have also offered amnesty to those pressured by the Royal Ulster Constabulary into doing informing and dozens of people have come forward. We can arrange relocation and protection if needed.

Q: *The accusation was made that Special Air Services Captain Nairac was tortured for information. Has the IRA ever used torture?*

A: Never. Aside from ethical reasons we know from Britain's use on us how unreliable information gained this way is. In the Nairac case the torture charge was based on blood found in the car in which he was taken, but this was due to resistance.

Q: *The British say that abuse of prisoners is no longer employed and that cameras installed in interrogation rooms prevent this.*

A: They have always denied the use of torture and beatings. Now, cameras are just turned off and beatings take place on the way to interrogation. Medical testimony confirms this continues. Many of those abused have no connection to the IRA, of course, and would have no reason to lie. The British judges simply dismiss evidence of torture.

Q: *How many "prisoners of war" are there?*

A: There are around 650 in prison for "scheduled offenses" meaning charges connected with the political situation here. The British incredibly pretend there is no war, only a massive outbreak of crime, so they do not recognize these formally as political prisoners or prisoners of war, though

they receive special treatment separate from those they regard as ordinary criminals.

It is worth mentioning that only the Republican Movement provides aid to prisoners' dependents, regardless of whether the prisoner had any connection with the IRA.

Many of the prisoners and certainly their families are innocent, railroaded by the non-jury, Diplock court system which requires no evidence to convict. The Social Democratic and Labour Party does nothing to alleviate the suffering of these families.

Q: *The SDLP claims IRA supporters have attacked its meetings and election workers.*

A: Individuals have spontaneously reacted to SDLP hypocrisy and lies but we don't approve such harassment and say so. The SDLP has never protested British or Irish government harassment and repression of Sinn Fein. During recent elections they have been quite willing to try to benefit from such repression.

Q: *While in Belfast I read a story about the former quartermaster for Belfast, one of the local IRA's top ten people, having been an informer, responsible for six deaths and 20 arrests, now spirited into hiding by the RUC. The article said this was the highest the RUC had ever been able to place an informer.*

A: The individual in question was low-ranking and did little damage. The story was a British intelligence plant to try to stir suspicions among our Volunteers about each other.

Q: *What about Loughgall and the apparent use of an informer which led to the ambush killing of eight IRA earlier this year?*

A: Crown forces routinely stake out barracks they think might be vulnerable or likely to be attacked based on patterns. It was bound to result in a "success" eventually. So few people knew of the plans for Loughgall that we are satisfied there was no informer. It would have been too risky for

an informer to give out such information knowing only a handful knew of this.

Q: *On my arrival in Belfast the news was ablaze with claims that the IRA's latest victim, Nathaniel Cush, had already resigned from the Ulster Defence Regiment and was working for the post office. Allegedly the bomb which killed him narrowly missed harming a woman with a baby.*

A: We used a remote control detonator so there was never any danger to any civilians. We have warned those who resign from Crown forces to notify the Republican Movement for their own safety but our information was that he was still a member and the fact he was given a full dress military funeral supports this. Cush, incidentally, was a former member of the infamous Parachute Regiment.

Q: *Another recent incident involved the driver of a school bus who was shot in the leg and the papers claimed this endangered the children.*

A: The bus was halted when this incident took place.

Q: *There was a lot of negative reaction to the IRA's 1986 announcement that it would regard as legitimate targets civilians doing work for the British Army.*

A: Without such support the Crown forces could not remain in Ireland easily and this strategy of warning those profiteering from the British presence was used during the War of Independence in the 1920s.

We were very specific about the kinds of people who are guilty — those programming computers for British intelligence for example, not some secretary for a contractor building barracks for the British Army. To those who say helping the Crown is an ethical way to make a living we would ask if they would have supported building ovens for the Nazis. Let contractors build the housing the people need.

Q: *One priest asked why you don't give part of your earnings toward job creation.*

A: We do not have the money to spare. The best way to create jobs would be for Britain to leave so the healing process for the economy can begin, bringing an end to employment discrimination, allowing business and tourism to flourish, with interim help of international aid for the rebuilding process.

Q: *The same individual asked why the IRA took 300 jobs out to West Beast by killing the manager of an audio manufacturer in 1976.*

A. That was part of an effort to cause disinvestment that is no longer pursued. We continue some commercial bombings when the businesses serve Crown forces and outside the poverty-stricken areas where there are no jobs anyway, where we intend to disrupt Britain's effort to pretend everything is normalizing.

Q: *Another controversial assassination was of Leslie Jarvis, claimed to be a civilian at Magilligan Prison.*

A: He was a full time part of the administration and knew the risk in being part of the British system of oppression. We have not targeted part-time workers.

Q: *English director Nicholas Meyer claims he was threatened by the IRA while filming "Johnny Loves Suzy," based on the anti-IRA novel Fields of Blood in Belfast.*

A: Totally untrue. If he was threatened, it was not by us. We would know.

Q: *The assassination of Lord Mountbatten caused a greater negative public reaction than any other single IRA killing. Was he really a proper target?*

A: As a former leader of the British military and cousin to the Queen who lived on land confiscated from the Irish people, he was a symbol of the ruling class which supports the occupation of our country. His execution was a warning that if they insist on keeping troops here they will never be safe.

Q: *Letter bombs were recently sent to current and former government officials in England. Aren't they likely to harm civilians?*

A: Those who associate with the ruling class know there is risk but the innocent have rarely been harmed. We have to use what weapons we can, and these have been effective. If Britain fears them it should get out. Government officials who retire, incidentally, often remain senior advisors and are not necessarily off the target list.

Q: *Isn't killing RUC and UDR members perceived as sectarian, alienating loyalists even further?*

A: If we had wanted to attack Protestants per se the civilian casualties would have been much higher. "Ulsterization" was Britain's effort to push the local people to the front line and make the public in Britain less aware of casualties across the sea.

We have to take our targets as they present themselves and the brutality of the RUC and UDR is well known. It is the loyalists who have killed Catholics at random by the hundreds. We do not consider religion, only whether someone is a collaborator.

Loyalists began this conflict without IRA provocation and they intensified their sectarian killings when the IRA was observing truces. If we stopped the war of national liberation tomorrow they would not be any less anti-Irish or anti-Catholic.

The argument that our freedom struggle is "counter-productive" is heard from the same elements who opposed the 1916 Rising and the IRA in the 1920s — the media, some clergy and so-called constitutional nationalists who give mere lip service to reunification. Their position ignores the history of British colonialism and reforms have come about as a result of the armed struggle to try to appease nationalists.

Q: *There have been well-publicized arms seizures over the years. Is the IRA experiencing supply problems?*

A: We are getting what we need and our technology and techniques are more sophisticated than ever.

Q: *The news often reports the inability of the IRA to effectively use the RPG rocket grenade. Why does it fail?*

A: This was due to assembly problems and mislabeling of live and practice ammunition. The RPG has a tendency to deflect, which could endanger civilians. We have designed our own launcher which is more effective and safer.

Q: *Are there ties between the IRA and groups like the PLO, Red Army Faction, etc.?*

A: There are none and the James Adams book you cited points this out. The right wing tried to link us to what it fantasized was an "international terrorism network." The once secret British military Glover Report acknowledged that we are independent.

We do, however, support the rights of the Palestinians, Basques, and others. To put things in perspective, the PLO has killed about 300 Israeli civilians since 1969 while the Israeli Army killed 10,000 to 20,000 civilians during its invasion of Lebanon alone. Colonel Khaddafy of Libya is alleged to be responsible for 50 assassinations over the years. We accept no responsibility for what others have done. It should be noted that the British are the ones who armed and trained Khaddafy.

Q: *But hasn't the IRA accepted donations from him?*

A: We have no links with organizations and none with any country or government. We never answer specific questions as to sources of funding. Why should we help the British and bother those sources? We take money wherever we can get it without strings attached.

Q: *The British and Irish governments have claimed that the IRA wants to establish a "Marxist dictatorship."*

A: They know perfectly well this is false and use this as propaganda to alienate supporters. First of all, the IRA allows a diversity of political opinion. There are a few Marxists but the tendency for those leaning that way is to join the Irish National Liberation Army or other doctrinaire Marxist groups.

The "democratic socialism" espoused by Sinn Fein has been constantly redefined over the years and is adapted to the situation in Ireland where we feel tremendous poverty requires some nationalization and cooperation. Anyone labeling this Marxism is either uninformed or trying to manipulate public opinion.

In any event, we do not have the power to impose our view and have repeatedly stated our support for the right of the Irish people as a whole to decide what political system they want. We can only educate on the issues and the British and Irish governments fear that and resort to censorship. The British have repeatedly rejected the will of the Irish people expressed at the ballot box.

Q: *The Sinn Fein decision to end the policy of abstention and to take seats to which elected at the Dail caused a split in the Republican Movement. Those who left Sinn Fein said it was a sell-out that would result in a running down of the war.*

A: This is nonsense. The IRA supported that decision when we held the first General Army convention since 1969 a few weeks prior to the Sinn Fein Ard Fheis. Incidentally, the media report that we used the cover of an Irish language conference in Meath in August was completely wrong — which shows how good our security is.

Representatives from all ASUs and command structures attended and recognized that the Republican Movement was being isolated by Dublin and must adapt to survive. We must be involved with the people and relevant to their daily lives, avoiding the elitism advocated by our critics, who are oblivious to political reality.

Abstentionism failed and while our analysis of the 26 county Free State remains unchanged the vast majority of its residents consider the

institutions of the state legitimate and theirs — with that support they will not disappear.

Those who walked away from the Movement walked away from the armed struggle and they have spent most of their energy denigrating their former comrades rather than fighting Britain. The struggle has intensified and we have lost more Volunteers this year than anytime since 1976. Loughgall was the single largest loss since the 1920s.

Our loyal supporters in the U.S. are the real Republicans and do not place political conditions on those doing the fighting. They know that we will never drive the British out of Ireland from an armchair and if we remain aloof from the people.

Q: *At the Army convention a new Council was elected. How many does it consist of?*

A: Seven, each with specific tasks — the Chief of Staff carries out our policies, another is in charge of intelligence, another procurement, I speak for the Council, and so forth.

Q: The constitutional nationalists say reunification can only be achieved peacefully.

A: This is at best wishful thinking and often merely an exploitation of the understandable war-weariness of our people, for political gain. We cannot wait for some miraculous change of heart by loyalists a century from now. Anyone who thinks there will be peace in Ireland while British soldiers remain does not know the history of Irish Republicanism. Britain invented the loyalist veto and can repeal it in the interests of everyone. Loyalists need to be pushed into the 20th century and only when Britain withdraws will they be forced to accept their Irishness and the vision of the Protestant founder of Republicanism, Theobald Wolfe Tone, the only way to peace, prosperity, justice and freedom.

Recipes For Nonsurvival The Anarchist Cookbook

Esperanze Godot

The Anarchist Cookbook by William Powell has been called “a manual of terror” by Max Geltman, writing in the *National Review* (July 22, 1971). I find this phrase aptly descriptive, but not in the same sense that Mr. Geltman would have us believe.

This “cookbook” consists of three basic parts: an introduction by Professor Bergman entitled “Anarchism Today”; and two much longer sections by William Powell on drug and explosive manufacturing.

If ever there were an example of Orwellian doublespeak, this is it! “Anarchism Today” is basically an interpretation of the philosophic roots of anarchism, awkwardly coupled with sketchy references to current events. Almost all of the intellectuals discussed are from the nineteenth century; and there is virtually no mention of writings from 1930 to present. This may be expected from someone who appears to have briefly studied the topic while at college during the 1920s, and thereafter relied only on superficial newspaper accounts. Bergman should have been aware of Albert Jay Nock for example, and anarchists today are certainly aware of Murray Rothbard, Karl Hess, etc.

Bergman considers Nihilism to be a form of Anarchism, and Anarchism a form of radical revolutionism. He interprets Marxism in an anarchistic light, and correctly suggests that Communist governments today are feudal/reactionary. However, his emphasis on the Marxist element in anarchist intellectual tradition is clearly one-sided. A more thorough and

fair analysis can be found in *Native American Anarchism* (1932) by Eunice Minette Schuster.

Bergman's emphasis on the Nihilistic and destructive aspects of Anarchism I find disturbing. This emphasis seems to arrive from the axiom that the State is all, so to oppose the State is to oppose everything. Anarchists do not have to propose a concrete alternative because that would be authoritarian.

The rest of this book consists mainly of drug and explosive recipes relayed to us by William Powell. His motivation for doing so is supposedly to allow the "silent majority" access to information which he claims only the radical groups now possess. The idea of a "silent majority" comes from classical Greek literature and in that context referred to the dead who are the real majority. If you follow the steps outlined in these recipes, you may soon join them! *The Library Journal* (March 15, 1971) puts it this way:

"Much of it is so sketchy as to be harmless, but there are a number of booby traps still for the nitwit who wishes to try them. There are drug making recipes… that may make one very ill… There are also a number of stunts which could backfire on the idiot who tries them."

Let's get down to specifics:

Ed Rosenthal told me that he had spent a lot of time trying to track down rumors of pot growing in New York sewers. Well, I just may have stumbled on the origin of the "New York White" rumors. Despite what Powell may think, plants are not as adaptable as alligators and need light to grow. Another choice quote: "…strangely enough, insects ignore marijuana and do no harm." Strange indeed.

The DEA has a Precursor Control Program watch list. This means that if you buy large quantities of the common precursors to illegal chemicals, the Federal government may take an interest in your activities. Several of the chemicals on this list are used in Mr. Powell's LSD recipe, such as Acetonitrile, Trifluoroacetic Anhydride, Dimethylformamide, and Diethylamine. Benzene is also on the list, and may also arouse the interest of the EPA because it is known cancer causing agent.

Much the same can be said of many of his other recipes, and in some cases the precursors are as hard to get as the final product. For instance, his recipe for DMT starts out with indole, which is quite hard to get. Much better methods using L. Tryptophane (available in health food stores) are covered in *Synthesis* (1973 — present).

Powell suggests ground-up nutmeg for a psychedelic experience. Nutmeg has a poor dose/toxicity ration! However, the oil extract of nutmeg, containing myristicin, can be used in the synthesis of MMDA — a better and mellower high than MDA. See *Journal of Psychedelic Drugs* (Vol. 8 #4, Oct.-Dec. 1976).

On page 58 of Powell's cookbook, Nalline is described as "…a freak — a drug someone forgot to make illegal." Perhaps they forgot because Nalorphine is a powerful narcotic antagonist, which tends to produce violent convulsive reactions in morphine addicts. (See the *Merck Index).*

For more information on drugs see "The Clandestine Drug Laboratory Situation in the U.S.", *Journal of Forensic Sciences* (Jan. 1983 pp.18-31). This article, obligingly written by the DEA chief, reports that none of the 17 labs busted the previous year were successful in producing what was intended to be produced. The busted chemists were relying on recipes from popular "underground" drug manufacturing books. It was noted that such books contain errors which prevent the manufacture of the desired chemicals, while at the same time drawing the attention of government authorities because of the precursors recommended.

Let's now examine his recommendations for manufacturing explosives:

His methods for producing Mercury Fulminate is incomplete and dangerous. Between steps 2 and 3, the solution should be cooled. Do not breathe the fumes. See *A Dictionary of Applied Chemistry* by Sir Edward Thorpe.

Powell's recipe entitled "How to Make TNT" is also quite dangerous and incomplete. In step 1, mixing sulfuric acid and nitric acid will likely result in fulmination and red toxic fumes. Also the crude method he describes

does not cover the removal of the Ortho Dinitro groups. If this were not done, the TNT would be extremely unstable. However, they can be removed with great ease by heating the crude material with aqueous sodium sulfite. See “Chemistry of Explosives” by George Wright, University of Toronto, in *Organic Chemistry* (p. 974).

The description of Picric acid does not sufficiently emphasize its unstable nature. For example, storing it in a cracked glass container may cause it to explode. See Thorpe’s. However, on page 120 he describes two relatively safer and easily obtainable chemicals (Potassium bichromate and potassium permanganate) as very sensitive, unstable, and too hazardous to work with.

He does have a couple of pages on general safety precautions, but the language suggests that they have been lifted from a military manual. Also, he uses the German spelling for some chemicals. If you attempt to order chemicals from an American company using German spelling, your order would likely be looked at with suspicion.

The Anarchist Cookbook was originally published in 1971; the review by the *Library Journal*, which exposed these dangerous errors, came shortly thereafter. I wonder why it has gone through 28 printings without these errors being corrected. My theory is that Mr. Powell is not an anarchist, but in reality is spreading disinformation to potential enemies of the government. At the time of original publication, Mr. Powell was an unknown 21 year old college freshman. Where did he get access to this “information”? He says, from radical friends on both left and right.

The Minuteman Manual is listed in the bibliography. The original Minutemen were colonial American revolutionaries. In the 60’s the radical right-wing sect called the Minutemen have since been disbanded by the FBI. It is not likely that the 1960’s Minutemen would have handed out their manual to a long haired 21 year old college freshman. Also, the Minutemen are opposed to the United Nations, and Powell’s father was a powerful bureaucrat in the UN propaganda ministry (see *Newsweek*, April 12, 1971). Things are getting curiouser and curiouser!

This same William Powell has also written a book entitled *Saudi Arabia and its Royal Family* (1982). It consists of interviews with members of the

Saudi Royal family and other observations gathered while teaching at the University of Riyadh, Saudi Arabia. It does not seem likely that the Saudi Royal family would give such generous treatment to a real anarchist. Reading the Saudi book, I came across some interesting quotes (p. 17):

"Were something or someone to cut the flow of oil from the Arabian Gulf, the result would be truly apocalyptic for the United States, Western Europe, Japan, and much of the developing world. … In a worst-case scenario, all gasoline available would go to essential services such as the military, the police and fire departments, and the transport of foodstuffs. Most nonessential businesses and industries would close. Unemployment would skyrocket.

"All major cities would, in all probability, have to be placed under martial law. Curfews would be enforced at gunpoint. … Inflation would metamorphose… into a lethal epidemic. We would enter a wheelbarrow economy like that of Germany prior to Hitler's rise to power…"

I could go on, but I think you get the idea. While his pessimistic analysis does not take full account of the market's ability to conserve and switch to alternate fuels, I think a more important point is that Powell seems to believe that government is as essential as the transportation of foodstuffs, and that it can help solve the fuel crisis through the draconian methods he describes. If governments were to run out of gas tomorrow, anarchists would be dancing in celebration. (Mr. Powell's talk of martial law is not fantasy. Executive Order #11490, signed by Richard Nixon in October 1969, allows the president to assume dictatorial powers after declaring a "national emergency".)

It just doesn't add up, unless an alternative theory is developed to explain these anomalies. My attempts to get the other side of the story from the publisher were met with a stone wall of silence. My suggestion is that much of Powell's disinformation and influence may have come from the Trilateral Commission and/or the CIA. A U.S. Air Force combat controllers group studying guerrilla warfare has arrived at a similar conclusion. This theory would seem to dovetail with the *National Review* article which presented *The Anarchist Cookbook* at face value and even included a patronizing reference to "the boys at Harvard". It is well known that William F.

Buckley, the *National Review* editor, is a Yale graduate and once served the CIA in Mexico. (E. Howard Hunt, of Watergate fame, was CIA paymaster in Mexico City at the same time Buckley served).

I would like to quote Mr. Powell from the April 12, 1971 issue of *Newsweek:* "My book places power in the hands of the individual, where it belongs. The right calls it communist, the leftists call it profiteering, the liberals call it Neo-Nazi."

And this reviewer calls it bullshit!

Hand of Glory—Invisibility

THE ELITE CONTROLLERS

SILENT WEAPONS FOR QUIET WARS

This article, edited for length, seems to be “reverse disinformation” aimed at educating the public about what the author supposes the plans of the controlling elite to be. In this it shares its broad intent with other possible hoax documents such as The Protocols of the Elders of Zion and The Wicca Papers, although going about its revelations in a highly original manner. It claims to be a handbook of strategy circulated among the secret technicians of “social automation.” Ostensibly dated May, 1979, it was supposedly discovered in an IBM copier at a surplus sale. Regardless of its origins the document is insightful, perhaps providing a real breakthrough in the understanding of elitist human control.

This publication marks the 25th anniversary of the Third World War, called the “Quiet War,” being conducted using subjective biological warfare, fought with “silent weapons.” This book contains an introductory description of this war, its strategies, and its weaponry. It is patently impossible to discuss social engineering or the automation of a society, i.e., the engineering of social automation systems (silent weapons) on a national or a worldwide scale without implying extensive objectives of social control and destruction of human life, i.e. slavery and genocide. This manual is in itself an analog declaration of intent. Such a writing must be secured from public scrutiny. Otherwise, it might be recognized as a technically formal declaration of domestic war. Furthermore, whenever any person or group of persons in a position of great power and without full knowledge and consent of the public, uses such knowledge and methodology for economic conquest — it must be understood that a state of domestic warfare exists between said person or group of persons and the public.

The solution of today’s problems requires an approach which is ruthlessly candid, with no agonizing over religious, moral or cultural values. You have qualified for this project because of your ability to look at human society with cold objectivity, and yet analyze and discuss your

observations and conclusions with others of similar intellectual capacity without a loss of discretion or humility. Such virtues are exercised in your own best interest. Do not deviate from them.

Historical Introduction

Silent weapon technology has evolved from Operations Research (O.R.), a strategic and tactical methodology developed under the military management (Eisenhower) in England during World War II. The original purpose of Operations Research was to study the strategic and tactical problems of air and land defense with the objective of effective use of limited military resources against foreign enemies (i.e., logistics). It was soon recognized by those in positions of power that the same methods might be useful for totally controlling a society. But better tools were necessary. Social engineering (the analysis and automation of a society) requires the correlation of great amounts of constantly changing economic information (data), so a high-speed computerized data-processing system was necessary which could race ahead of the society and predict when society would arrive for capitulation. Relay computers were too slow, but the electronic computer, invented in 1946 by J. Presper Eckert and John W. Mauchly, filled the bill.

The next breakthrough was the development of the simplex method of linear programming in 1947 by the mathematician George B. Dantzig. Then in 1948, the transistor, invented by J. Bardeen, W.H. Brattain, and W. Shockley, promised great expansion of the computer field by reducing space and power requirements. With these three inventions under their direction, those in positions of power strongly suspected that it was possible for them to control the whole world with the push of a button. Immediately, the Rockefeller Foundation got in on the ground floor by making a four-year grant to Harvard College, funding the Harvard Economic Research Project for the study of the structure of the American economy. One year later, in 1949, the United States Air Force joined in. In 1952 the original grant period terminated, and a high-level meeting of the elite was held to determine the next phase of social operations research. The Harvard project

had been very fruitful, as is borne out by the publication of some of its results in 1953 suggesting the feasibility of economic (social) engineering. *(Studies in the Structure of the American Economy* — copyright 1953 by Wassily Leontief, International Sciences Press Inc., White Plains, New York.)

Engineered in the last half of the decade of the 1940s, the new Quiet War machine stood, so to speak, in sparkling gold-plated hardware on the showroom floor by 1954. With the creation of the maser in 1954, the promise of unlocking unlimited sources of fusion atomic energy from the heavy hydrogen in sea water and the consequent availability of unlimited social power was a possibility only decades away. The combination was irresistible. The Quiet War was quietly declared by the international elite at a meeting held in 1954. Although the silent weapons system was nearly exposed 13 years later, the evolution of the new weapon-system has never suffered any major setbacks. This volume marks the 25th anniversary of the beginning of the Quiet War. Already this domestic war has had many victories on many fronts throughout the world.

In 1954 it was well recognized by those in positions of authority that it was only a matter of time, only a few decades, before the general public would be able to grasp and upset the cradle of power, for the very elements of the new silent-weapon technology were as accessible for a public Utopia as they were for providing a private Utopia. The issue of primary concern, that of dominance, revolved around the subject of the energy sciences.

Energy

Energy is recognized as the key to all activity on earth. Natural science is the study of the sources and control of natural energy, and social science, theoretically expressed as economics, is the study of the sources and control of social energy. Both are bookkeeping systems. Mathematics is the primary energy science. And the bookkeeper can be king if the public can be kept ignorant of the methodology of the bookkeeping. All science is merely a means to an end. The means is knowledge. The end is control. Beyond this remains only one issue: Who will be the beneficiary?

In 1954 this was the issue of primary concern. Although the so-called “moral issues” were raised, in view of the law of natural selection it was agreed that a nation or world of people who will not use their intelligence are no better than animals who do not have intelligence. Consequently, in the interest of future world order, peace, and tranquility, it was decided to privately wage a quiet war against the American public with an ultimate objective of permanently shifting the natural and social energy (wealth) of the undisciplined and irresponsible many into the hands of the self-disciplined, responsible, and worthy few. In order to implement this objective, it was necessary to create, secure, and apply new weapons which, as it turned out, were a class of weapons so subtle and sophisticated in their principle of operation and public appearance as to earn for themselves the name “silent weapons.” In conclusion, the objective of economic research, as conducted by the magnates of capital (banking) and the industries of commodities (goods) and services, is the establishment of an economy which is totally predictable and manipulatable.

In order to achieve a totally predictable economy, the low-class elements of society must be brought under total control, i.e. must be housebroken, trained, and assigned a yoke and long-term social duties from a very early age, before they have the opportunity to question the propriety of the matter. In order to achieve such conformity, the lower-class family unit must be disintegrated by a process of increasing preoccupation of the parents and the establishment of government-operated day-care centers for the occupationally orphaned children. The quality of education given to the lower class must be of the poorest sort, so that the moat of ignorance isolating the inferior class from the superior class is and remains incomprehensible to the inferior class. With such an initial handicap, even bright lower class individuals have little if any hope of extricating themselves from their assigned lot in life. This form of slavery is essential to maintaining some measure of social order, peace, and tranquility for the ruling upper class.

Descriptive Introduction of the Silent Weapon

Everything that is expected from an ordinary weapon is expected from a silent weapon by its creators, but only in its own manner of junctioning. It shoots situations, instead of bullets; propelled by data processing instead of a chemical reaction (explosion); originating from bits of data, instead of grains of gunpowder; from a computer, instead of a gun; operated by a computer programmer, instead of a marksman; under the orders of a banking magnate, instead of a military general. It makes no obvious explosive noises, causes no obvious physical or mental injuries, and does not obviously interfere with anyone's daily social life. Yet it makes an unmistakable "noise," causes unmistakable physical and mental damage, and unmistakably interferes with daily social life, i.e., unmistakable to a trained observer, one who knows what to look for.

The public cannot comprehend this weapon, and therefore cannot believe that they are being attacked and subdued by a weapon. The public might instinctively feel that something is wrong, but because of the technical nature of the silent weapon, they cannot express their feeling in a rational way, or handle the problem with intelligence. Therefore, they do not know how to cry for help, and do not know how to associate with others to defend themselves against it. When a silent weapon is applied gradually, the public adjusts/adapts to its presence and learns to tolerate its encroachment on their lives until the pressure (psychological via economic) becomes too great and they crack up. Therefore, the silent weapon is a type of biological warfare. It attacks the vitality, options, and mobility of the individuals of a society by knowing, understanding, manipulating, and attacking their sources of natural and social energy, and their physical, mental, and emotional strengths and weaknesses.

Theoretical Introduction

"Give me control over a nation's currency, and I care not who makes its laws." — Mayer Amschel Rothschild (1743-1812). Today's silent weapons technology is an outgrowth of a simple idea discovered, succinctly expressed, and effectively applied by the quoted Mr. Mayer Amschel Rothschild. Mr. Rothschild discovered the missing passive component of

economic theory known as economic inductance. He, of course, did not think of his discovery in these 20th-century terms, and, to be sure, mathematical analysis had to wait for the Second Industrial Revolution, the rise of the theory of mechanics and electronics, and finally, the invention of the electronic computer before it could be effectively applied in the control of the world economy.

What Mr. Rothschild had discovered was the basic principle of power, influence, and control over people as applied to economics. That principle is “when you assume the appearance of power, people soon give it to you.” Mr. Rothschild had discovered that currency or deposit loan accounts had the required appearance of power that could be used to induce people (inductance, with people corresponding to a magnetic field) into surrendering their real wealth in exchange for a promise of greater wealth (instead of real compensation). They would put up real collateral in exchange for a loan of promissory notes. Mr. Rothschild found that he could issue more notes than he had backing for, so long as he had someone’s stock of gold as a persuader to show his customers. Mr. Rothschild loaned his promissory notes to individuals and to governments. These would create overconfidence. Then he would make money scarce, tighten control of the system, and collect the collateral through the obligation of the contracts. The cycle was then repeated. These pressures could be used to ignite a war. Then he would control the availability of currency to determine who would win the war. That government which agreed to give him control of its economic system got his support. Collection of debts was guaranteed by economic aid to the enemy of the debtor. The profit derived from this economic methodology made Mr. Rothschild all the more able to extend his wealth. He found that the public greed would allow currency to be printed by government order beyond the limits (inflation) of backing in precious metal or the production of goods and services (gross national product, GNP).

Apparent Capital as Paper Inductor

In this structure, credit, presented as a pure element called “currency,” has the appearance of capital, but is, in fact, negative capital. Hence, it has the appearance of service, but is, in fact, indebtedness or debt. It is therefore an economic inductance instead of an economic capacitance, and if balanced in no other way, will be balanced by the negation of population (war, genocide). The total goods and services represent real capital called the gross national product, and currency may be printed up to this level and still represent economic capacitance; but currency printed beyond this level is subtractive, represents the introduction of economic inductance, and constitutes notes of indebtedness.

War is therefore the balancing of the system by killing the true creditors (the public, which we have taught to exchange true value for inflated currency) and falling back on whatever is left of the resources of nature and regeneration of those resources. Mr. Rothschild had discovered that currency gave him the power to rearrange the economic structure to his own advantage, to shift economic inductance to those economic positions which would encourage the greatest economic instability and oscillation. The final key to economic control had to wait until there was sufficient data and high-speed computing equipment to keep close watch on the economic oscillations created by price shocking and excess paper energy credits — paper inductance/inflation.

The Economic Model

The Harvard Economic Research Project (1948-) was an extension of World War II Operations Research. Its purpose was to discover the science of controlling an economy; at first the American economy, and then the world economy. It was felt that with sufficient mathematical foundation and data, it would be nearly as easy to predict and control the trend of an economy as to predict and control the trajectory of a projectile. Such has proven to be the case. Moreover, the economy has been transformed into a guided missile on target. The immediate aim of the Harvard project was to discover the economic structure, what forces change that structure, how the behavior of the structure can be predicted, and how it can be manipulated.

What was needed was a well-organized knowledge of the mathematical structures and interrelationships of investment, production, distribution, and consumption.

To make a short story of it all, it was discovered that an economy obeyed the same laws as electricity and that all of the mathematical theory and practical and computer know-how developed for the electronic field could be directly applied in the study of economics. This discovery was not openly declared, and its more subtle implications were and are kept a closely guarded secret, for example that in an economic model, human life is measured in dollars, and that the electric spark generated when opening a switch connected to an active inductor is mathematically analogous to the initiation of a war.

The greatest hurdle which theoretical economists faced was the accurate description of the household as an industry. This is a challenge because consumer purchases are a matter of choice which in turn is influenced by income, price, and other economic factors. This hurdle was cleared in an indirect and statistically approximate way by an application of shock testing to determine the current characteristics, called current technical coefficients, of a household industry. Finally, because problems in theoretical economics can be translated very easily into problems in theoretical electronics, and the solution translated back again, it follows that only a book of language translation and concept definition needed to be written for economics. The remainder could be gotten from standard works on mathematics and electronics. This makes the publication of books on advanced economics unnecessary, and greatly simplifies project security.

Time Flow Relationship and Self-Destructive Oscillations

An ideal industry may be symbolized electronically in various ways. The simplest way is to represent a demand by a voltage and a supply by a current. When this is done, the relationship between the two becomes what is called an admittance, which can result from three economic factors: (1) hindsight flow, (2) present flow, and (3) foresight flow.

Foresight flow is the result of that property of living entities to cause energy (food) to be stored for a period of low energy (e.g., a winter season). It consists of demands made upon an economic system for that period of low energy (winter season). In a production industry it takes several forms, one of which is known as production stock or inventory. In electronic symbology this specific industry demand (a pure capital industry) is represented by capacitance and the stock or resource is represented by capacitance and the stock or resource is represented by a stored charge. Satisfaction of an industry demand suffers a lag because of the loading effect of inventory priorities. Present flow ideally involves no delays. It is, so to speak, input today for output today, a “hand to mouth” flow. In electronic symbology, this specific industry demand (a pure use industry) is represented by a conductance which is then a simple economic valve (a dissipative element).

Hindsight flow is known as habit or inertia. In electronics this phenomenon is the characteristic of an inductor (economic analog = a pure service industry) in which a current flow (economic analog = flow of money) creates a magnetic field (economic analog = active human population) which, if the current (money flow) begins to diminish, collapse (war) to maintain the current (flow of money — energy). Other alternatives to war as economic inductors or economic flywheels are an open-ended social welfare program, or an enormous (but fruitful) open-ended space program.

The problem with stabilizing the economic system is that there is too much demand on account of (1) too much greed and (2) too much population. This creates excessive economic inductance which can only be balanced with economic capacitance (true resources or value — e.g., in goods or services). The social welfare program is nothing more than an open-ended credit balance system which creates a false capital industry to give nonproductive people a roof over their heads and food in their stomachs. This can be useful, however, because the recipients become state property in return for the “gift,” a standing army for the elite. For he who pays the piper picks the tune. Those who get hooked on the economic drug, must go to the elite for a fix. In this, the method of introducing large amounts of stabilizing capacitance is by borrowing on the future “credit” of

the world. This is a fourth law of motion — onset, and consists of performing an action and leaving the system before the reflected reaction returns to the point of action — a delayed reaction. The means of surviving the reaction is by changing the system before the reaction can return. By this means, politicians become popular in their own time and the public pays for it later. In fact, the measures of such a politician is the delay time.

The same thing is achieved by a government by printing money beyond the limit of the gross national product, an economic process called inflation. This puts a large quantity of money into the hands of the public and maintains a balance against their greed, creates a false self-confidence in them and, for awhile, stays the wolf from the door. They must eventually resort to war to balance the account, because war ultimately is merely the act of destroying the creditor, and the politicians are the publicly-hired hit men that justify the act to keep the responsibility and blood off the public conscience.

If the people really cared about their fellow man, they would control their appetites (greed, procreation, etc.) so that they would not have to operate on a credit or welfare social system which steals from the worker to satisfy the bum. Since most of the general public will not exercise restraint, there are only two alternatives to reduce the economic inductance of the system. (1) Let the populace bludgeon each other to death in war, which will only result in a total destruction of the living earth. (2) Take control of the world by the use of economic “silent weapons” in a form of “quiet warfare” and reduce the economic inductance of the world to a safe level by a process of benevolent slavery and genocide.

The latter option has been taken as the obviously better option. At this point it should be crystal clear to the reader why absolute secrecy about the silent weapons is necessary. The general public refuses to improve its own mentality and its faith in its fellow man. It has become a herd of proliferating barbarians, and, so to speak, a blight upon the face of the earth. They do not care enough about economic science to learn why they have not been able to avoid war despite religious morality, and their religious or self-gratifying refusal to deal with earthly problems renders the solution of the earthly problem unreachable by them. It is left to those few who are

truly willing to think and survive as the fittest to survive, to solve the problem for themselves as the few who really care. Otherwise, exposure of the silent weapon would destroy our only hope of preserving the seed of future true humanity.

The industries of finance (banking), manufacturing, and government, real counterparts of the pure industries of capital, goods, and services, are easily defined because they are generally logically structured. Because of this their processes can be described mathematically and their technical coefficients can be easily deduced. This, however, is not the case with the service industry known as the household industry.

In recent times, the application of Operations Research to the study of the public economy has been obvious for anyone who understands the principles of shock testing. In the shock testing of an aircraft airframe, the recoil impulse of firing a gun mounted on that airframe causes shock waves in that structure which tell aviation engineers the conditions under which parts of the airplane or the whole airplane or its wings will start to vibrate or flutter like a guitar string, a flute reed, or a tuning fork, and disintegrate or fall apart in flight. Economic engineers achieve the same result in studying the behavior of the economy and the consumer public by carefully selecting a staple commodity such as beef, coffee, gasoline, or sugar, and then causing a sudden change or shock in its price or availability, thus kicking everybody’s budget and buying habits out of shape. They then observe the shock waves which result by monitoring the changes in advertising, prices, and sales of that and other commodities.

The objective of such studies is to acquire the know-how to set the public economy into a predictable state of motion or change, even a controlled self-destructive state of motion which will convince the public that certain “expert” people should take control of the money system and re-establish security (rather than liberty and justice) for all. When the subject citizens are rendered unable to control their financial affairs, they, of course, become totally enslaved, a source of cheap labor. Not only the prices of commodities, but also the availability of labor can be used as the means of shock testing. Labor strikes deliver excellent test shocks to an economy, especially in the critical service areas of trucking (transportation),

communication, public utilities (energy, water, garbage collection), etc. By shock testing, it is found that there is a direct relationship between the availability of money flowing in an economy and the psychological outlook and response of masses of people dependent upon that availability. For example, there is a measurable quantitive relationship between the price of gasoline and the probability that a person would experience a headache, feel a need to watch a violent movie, smoke a cigarette, or go to a tavern for a mug of beer. It is most interesting that, by observing and measuring the economic modes by which the public tries to run from their problems and escape from reality, and by applying the mathematical theory of Operations Research, it is possible to program computers to predict the most probable combination of created events (shocks) which will bring about a complete control and subjugation of the public through a subversion of the public economy (by shaking the plum tree).

Diversion, the Primary Strategy

Experience has proven that the simplest method of securing a silent weapon and gaining control of the public is to keep the public undisciplined and ignorant of basic systems principles on the one hand, while keeping them confused, disorganized, and distracted with matters of no real importance on the other hand. This is achieved by: (1) disengaging their minds; sabotaging their mental activities; providing a low-quality program of public education in mathematics, logic, systems design and economics; and discouraging technical creativity. (2) engaging their emotions, increasing their self-indulgence and their indulgence in emotional and physical activities, by; (a) unrelenting emotional affrontations and attacks (mental and emotional rape) by way of a constant barrage of sex, violence, and wars in the media — especially the T.V. and the newspapers. (b) giving them what they desire — in excess — “junk food for thought” — depriving them of what they really need. (3) rewriting history and law and subjecting the public to the deviant creation, thus being able to shift their thinking from personal needs to highly fabricated outside priorities. These preclude their interest in and discovery of the silent weapons of social automation technology. The general rule is that there is profit in confusion; the more

confusion, the more profit. Therefore, the best approach is to create problems and then offer the solutions.

A silent weapon system operates upon data obtained from a docile public by legal (but not always lawful) force. Much information is made available to silent weapon systems programmers through the Internal Revenue Service. This information consists of the enforced delivery of well-organized data contained in federal and state tax forms collected, assembled, and submitted by slave labor provided by taxpayers and employers. Furthermore, the number of such forms submitted to the I.R.S. is a useful indicator of public consent, an important factor in strategic decision making. Other data sources are given in the Short List of Inputs. Consent Coefficients — numerical feedback indicating victory status. Psychological basis: When the government is able to collect tax and seize private property without just compensation, it is an indication that the public is ripe for surrender and is consenting to enslavement and legal encroachment. A good and easily quantified indicator of harvest time is the number of public citizens who pay income tax despite an obvious lack of reciprocal or honest service from the government.

From the time a person leaves its mother’s womb, its every effort is directed toward building, maintaining, and withdrawing into artificial wombs, various sorts of substitute protective devices or shells. The objective of these artificial wombs is to provide a stable environment for both stable and unstable activity; to provide a shelter for the evolutionary processes of growth and maturity — i.e. survival; to provide security for freedom and to provide defensive protection for offensive activity. This is equally true of both the general public and the elite. However, there is a definite difference in the way each of these classes go about the solution of problems.

The primary reason why the individual citizens of a country create a political structure is a subconscious wish or desire to perpetuate their own dependency relationship of childhood. Simply put, they want a human god to eliminate all risk from their life, pat them on their head, kiss their bruises, put a chicken on every dinner table, clothe their bodies, tuck them into bed at night, and tell them that everything will be alright when they wake up in

the morning. This public demand is incredible, so the human god, the politician, meets incredibility with incredibility by promising the world and delivering nothing. So who is the bigger liar? The public? or the “godfather”? This public behavior is surrender born of fear, laziness, and expediency. It is the basis of the welfare state as a strategic weapon, useful against a disgusting public.

Most people want to be able to subdue and/or kill other human beings which disturb their daily lives, but they do not want to have to cope with the moral and religious issues which such an overt act on their part might raise. Therefore, they assign the dirty work to others (including their own children) so as to keep the blood off their own hands. They rave about the humane treatment of animals and then sit down to a delicious hamburger from a whitewashed slaughterhouse down the street and out of sight. But even more hypocritical, they pay taxes to finance a professional association of hit men collectively called politicians, and then complain about corruption in government.

The people hire the politicians so that the people can: (1) obtain security without managing it. (2) obtain action without thinking about it. (3) inflict theft, injury, death upon others without having to contemplate either life or death. (4) avoid responsibility for their own intentions. (5) obtain the benefits of reality and science without exerting themselves in the discipline of facing or learning either of these things. They give the politicians the power to create and manage a war machine to: (1) provide for the survival of the nation/womb. (2) prevent encroachment of anything upon the nation/womb. (3) destroy the enemy who threatens the nation/womb. (4) destroy those citizens of their own country who do not conform for the sake of stability of the nation/womb. Politicians hold many quasi-military jobs, the lowest being the police, which are soldiers, the attorneys and the C.P.A.s next, who are spies and saboteurs (licensed), and the judges who shout the orders and run the closed union military shop for whatever the market will bear. The generals are industrialists. The “presidential” level of commander-in-chief is shared by the international bankers. The people know that they have created this farce and financed it with their own taxes (consent), but they would rather knuckle under than be the hypocrite. Thus, a nation becomes divided into two very distinct parts, a docile sub-nation

and a political sub-nation. The political sub-nation remains attached to the docile sub-nation, tolerates it, and leaches its substance until it grows strong enough to detach itself and then devour its parent.

In order to make meaningful computerized economic decisions about war, the primary economic flywheel, it is necessary to assign concrete logistical values to each element of the war structure — personnel and material alike. This process begins with a clear and candid description of the subsystems of such a structure.

Few efforts of human behavior modification are more remarkable or more effective than that of the socio-military institution known as the draft. A primary purpose of a draft or other such institution is to instill, by intimidation, in the young males of a society the uncritical conviction that the government is omnipotent. He is soon taught that a prayer is slow to reverse what a bullet can do in an instant. Thus, a man trained in a religious environment for eighteen years of his life can, by this instrument of the government, be broken down, purged of his fantasies and delusions in a matter of mere months. Once that conviction is instilled, all else becomes easy to instill. Even more interesting is the process by which a young man's parents, who purportedly love him, can be induced to send him off to war to his death. Although the scope of this work will not allow this matter to be expanded in full detail, nevertheless, a course overview will be possible and can serve to reveal those factors which must be included in some numerical form in a computer analysis of social and war systems.

Human beings are machines, levers which may be grasped and turned, and there is little real difference between automating a society and automating a shoe factory. These values are given in true measure rather than U.S. dollars, since the latter is unstable, being presently inflated beyond the production of national goods and services so as to give the economy a false kinetic energy ("paper" inductance). The silver value is stable, it being possible to buy the same amount with a gram of silver today as could be bought in 1920. Human value measured in silver units changes slightly due to changes in production technology.

As in every social system approach, stability is achieved only by understanding and accounting for human nature (action/reaction patterns).

A failure to do so can be, and usually is, disastrous. As in other human social schemes, one form or another of intimidation (or incentive) is essential to the success of the draft. Physical principles of action and reaction must be applied to both internal and external subsystems. To secure the draft, individual brainwashing/programming and both the family unit and the peer group must be engaged and brought under control.

The man of the household must be housebroken to ensure that junior will grow up with the right social training and attitudes. The advertising media, etc., are engaged to see to it that father-to-be is pussy-whipped before or by the time he is married. He is taught that he either conforms to the social notch cut out for him or his sex life will be hobbled and his tender companionship will be zero. He is made to see that women demand security more than logical, principled, or honorable behavior. By the time his son must go to war, father (with jelly for a backbone) will slam a gun into junior's hand before father will risk the censure of his peers, or make a hypocrite of himself by crossing the investment he has in his own personal opinion or self-esteem. Junior will go to war or father will be embarrassed. So junior will go to war, the true purpose not withstanding.

The female element of human society is ruled by emotion first and logic second. In the battle between logic and imagination, imagination always wins, fantasy prevails, maternal instinct dominates so that the child comes first and the future comes second. A woman with a newborn baby is too starry-eyed to see a wealthy man's cannon fodder or a cheap source of slave labor. A woman must, however, be conditioned to accept the transition to "reality" when it comes, or sooner. As the transition becomes more difficult to manage, the family unit must be carefully disintegrated, and state-controlled public education and state-operated child-care centers must become more common and legally enforced so as to begin the detachment of the child from the mother and father at an earlier age. Inoculation of behavioral drugs can speed the transition for the child (mandatory). Caution: A woman's impulsive anger can override her fear. An irate woman's power must never be underestimated, and her power over a pussy-whipped husband must likewise never be underestimated. It got women the vote in 1920.

The emotional pressure for self-preservation during time of war and the self-serving attitude of the common herd that have an option to avoid the battlefield — if junior can be persuaded to go — is all of the pressure finally necessary to propel Johnny off to war. Their quiet blackmailing of him are the threats: “No sacrifice, no friends; no glory, no girlfriends.”

And what about junior’s sister? She is given all the good things of life by her father, and taught to expect the same from her future husband regardless of the price.

Those who will not use their brains are no better off than those who have no brains, and so this mindless school of jellyfish, father, mother, son, and daughter, become useful beasts of burden or trainers of the same.

Secrets From the Vatican Library

The following document was anonymously sent to me during this book's preparation. It purports to be a secret history of Western civilization gleaned from secret documents in the Vatican library by a member of the Franciscan order. The inked imprint of a Vatican library entrance chit affixed to the original document and duplicated at the end of the article is a strong indication that the author does have access to Vatican sources, although his conclusions are indicative of a highly right-wing slant that pegs the piece as possible disinformation — from what quarter, I cannot speculate. This document is included herein because of its unusual origin, and as an example of one very suspect sidepath in the tangle of competing conspiracy worldviews.

JMJ Ille nos benedicat qui sine fine vivit et regnat.

Dear Mr. Keith, I have been made aware that you seek information regarding what you suppose to be the takeover of the Vatican by Royal Arch Masons; would that such, a small thing, really, were the case. May it please you and inform you, somewhat, I shall endeavor to lay before you such facts as are known to me. I must first offer this disclaimer: while the facts of which I shall give report are in large part verifiable, there remains the possibility that, in certain instances where more than one possible interpretation thereof exists, I may well have chosen an incorrect one. Be that as it may, interpretation is not an issue, the facts do speak, most loquaciously, on their own behalf.

To begin; I believe that the establishment of my credentials would be in order. I cannot, and do not, claim to be of high rank in the Church of Rome; a common Lector am I, formerly a student of Heresiology attached for a time to the American School at the Vatican, and possessed as such of an entry-chit, permitting me access to those sub-basements and annexae of the Vatican Library Complex as were deemed fruitful to my ongoing research. It was in this capacity, and under these circumstances, that I first became

aware, from various documents, of the general tone of the information I shall here present. After having ascertained that indeed something was awry, and after having been transferred back to the United States (where I was until not too long ago employed as secretary under a succession of priests, of various orders), I appointed unto myself the task of collecting such information as I might, with a mind to either confirm or deny that which I had learned; among other things, I discovered that I am hardly alone in this knowledge — I thank Almighty God that such pillars of determination and strength, such — yes, I shall say it — such saints, are still in evidence even in these most trying, most frightening of times. We all of us owe to them a debt which can only be repaid by assimilating the information which they have bequeathed to me, and now I to you, and in using this information wisely. I reveal this information as my duty both to God and to my fellow-pilgrims on this Earth, in submission to His command; *Hoc est praeceptum meum ut diligatus invicem sicut dilexi vos.*

I value not position within the Church, nor status in the eyes of men; I seek only to oppose a most foul circumstance, a confederacy of tyrants, who pervert the use of the Ecclesiastical Authority to their own most ignoble ends; my most fervent desire is to once and for all time set straight the record, help to clear away the mountain of debris — I believe you term it disinformation — that all might clearly see the menace before us, naked and unadorned, revealed in the Light of Truth. With your kind permission, I begin.

It must first be understood that the present troubles are the fault, not of some bepaunched oligarchy seated by the fire at their Men’s Club — though said troubles are most certainly perpetuated under much this very scenario — but are rather the result of protracted struggle between several “elite” factions, “cliques” if you will, who have battled under various guises for supremacy from the days following the fall of the Roman Empire to the present.

In order to fully understand the present times, one must rightly understand the past; hence I shall offer the sum total of my knowledge of the full course of this struggle, from the earlier years of the seventh century of the common era, as well as the identity and makeup of each of the

factions thereby engaged. We live, truly, in the Dark Ages; since the collapse of the old Roman Empire and the subsequent rise of the Church as the real power in the West, various factions — the European tribal confederacies, for the most part — have fought among themselves for control of the territory of the Chair of St. Peter, and indeed for control of the Vatican itself. Realizing, as they did, that the Church could not be vanquished by fire or by the sword — a lesson learnt, and learnt right hard, by the decaying Empire, *Pretiosa in conspectu Domini mors sanctorum Eius* — the pagan tribes of Europe split into several factions, some accepting the Church as at least their titular head (that is, submitting to the disciplines of Christianity and incorporating the Faith into the Mythos of their tribes), some choosing to oppose the church under any means fair and foul, and some vacillating between the two poles, though even these did ultimately choose one tack or the other. To simplify, the southern tribes formed a generally pro-Church clique, which expanded to include the Franks (though this primarily due to rivalry with their fellow Germanics to the north, who led the opposing camp); and those who opposed, whether by outright force or subterfuge, the Church — and hoped to either destroy or assimilate the power wielded by Rome. The tribes of modern England were of the third type, but their neighbors the Gaels and Celts of Eire were among the most steadfast supporters of the Church, even after the forcible dissolution of their own unique and beautiful Celtic Communion by the English, in AD 664, who imposed a more Roman variety, more in accordance with the Rite as practiced in England. The message of the Gospel — in its true rendition, one of love and tolerance — was well-suited to the tribes of Eire and of Southern Europe, their characters being marked by a practiced indolence bordering on Sloth, deep passions that flair quickly and are just as quickly quelled, and an underlying affection that finds expression in their every breath; it was these who took to the Church, whatever their reasons to begin, and held fast to the Church to the present day.

The northern tribes, however — the Teutons, the Norse, the Saxons, et. al. — these are typified by a seething cold, a hardness that is not in keeping with their physical beauty, an autocratic indifference to others. While each, north and south, are capable of horrible cruelty, the southern peoples could be as quick to forgive as to blame, and though emotional can be swayed by

logic to withdraw their anger; the northerners seem to delight in atrocity, and their lack of apparent passion hides an outlook best typified by the old Arab adage, “Revenge is a dish best served cold.” So long as the Church remained in southern hands, all continued reasonably close to the original plan of the Apostles — as late as AD 692, Sergius I, Bishop of Rome, joined in the proclamation of the Patriarch of Constantinople that their respective Patriarchates, their Episcopal Sees, were of equal rank before our Lord. It pains me to say that never again did the Bishop of Rome behave in so Apostolic a manner, besieged from that time on by worldly concerns which ultimately redirected the Church from Spiritual paths. Due to the apportionment of power in those times, the various northern tribes found it expedient to accept a veneer of Faith, and to nurture their plots under cover of obedience.

The first overt action taken by the northern clique was alignment with certain Muslims expelled from Omayyid Spain, in AD 826; these were settled at Crete, where they established a pirate base, from which they would hector the southern coastal countries. The Roman/Etruscan clique, in reaction to this, used their influence with the Church to establish the Venetian Order of St. Marc, which received full Papal recognition just five years after the establishment of the base at Crete. Skirmishes at sea would continue through the Crusades, to the early sixteenth century. Around the year 850, a new group of players entered the picture: Jews began settling in Germany, under the direction of a very secretive Zionist Elite, who forged ties with the Germanic clique, especially the Prussians and Bavarians. While racially different, they had in common a form of religion; the Zionists and the north Germans both practiced ritual sacrifice of humans. It must be understood that the Jewish Elite never expressed the actual practices or beliefs of the Jewish commoners under them; they were an Elite, who considered their own people far beneath them, and fit only for use as fodder, which autocratic mode appealed to the north Germans, being but a minor variation of their own most ancient practices.

In league with the Zionists, with the odd band of Muslim adventurers to use as shock troops, and the rank-and-file masses of commoner Jews to use for sacrificial purposes, the northern cliques began to upscale their opposition, still mostly covert, to southern/Roman authority. Seeing these

developments, it fell to the secular Roman aristocracy — the Old Nobles — to do something, and that quickly. Being as the Bishop of Rome — at that time, John VIII — was disinclined to secularize the Church to the extent proposed by the Roman Nobles, the clique had him murdered in AD 882, beginning the first takeover of the Vatican authority. Subsequent Popes were made well aware of their vicarious position, and only a rare few dared oppose the Roman clique, who now were pre-eminent among the southern tribal clique. Even at that, the complete secular takeover of the Papal authority was not complete until Otto I, as Holy Roman Emperor, forcibly replaced an unaccomodating John XII with a more compliant Leo VIII, in AD 963. From that time on, Papal elections and the College of Cardinals have been a pawn of the ruling faction of the southern clique.

The northern clique, of course, made certain to have their own people in place in Rome, attached in whatever fashion to the Papal retinue. It was by the efforts of one of these agents that the northern clique acquired knowledge of the continents to the west, the Americas, which had been known to the upper echelons of the Church hierarchy since the last quarter of the First Century of the common era, that knowledge delivered, to the best of my knowledge, to blessed St. John the Divine in a vision, and recorded in an Epistle to the Corinthian Church by his holiness Clement, by grace of God the Bishop of Rome, in AD 96. With this information in hand, the northern clique entreated one Leif Ericsson, son of Eric the Red (a trusted Norse associate of the north European clique), to sail westward along a northern route, to ascertain the feasibility of taking these lands for themselves and using their wealth in an outright battle against the southern hegemony. It is fortunate that the natives — called “Skraelings” by Leif and his crew — proved to be displeased by the presence of the Norsemen, and had expelled them, lock, stock, and barrel, by AD 1006. When news of this expedition had filtered back to the southern clique, it caused more than a little consternation. Since the move had been covert, and the southerners desired to keep their own friends in place among the northern elite, plans were quietly laid to facilitate a successful southern effort in the event of overt action; stores were replenished, training of mercenaries upgraded, and to culminate, the Order of Knights Hospitallers of St. John — an order of warrior—monks/provisioners — was founded, in AD 1070.

The northern clique being engaged, since earlier in that same century, in one of their many in—fights for superiority, the southern clique had breath space to consolidate their own lines until about AD 1080, at which time the first full-scale small war took place between the two cliques, ending any possibility of willful merger between the two elites. That it was Gregory VII, in establishing (at the behest of the southern clique) the most sweeping of Papal temporal powers, that initiated this attack by the north, is immaterial; the southern clique had known for some time that the Muslim mercenaries who sacked their coasts were in the employ of the north, which by AD 1100 was being more and more dominated by the Prussian/Bavarian/Zionist clique. Nonetheless, a concordat of sorts was reached when Muslims not in European employ began taking advantage of the factional in-fighting, and it was to a relatively united Europe that Urban II promoted the First Crusade. It was at this time that the Order of Knights Templars was founded, much a duplication of the Order of Hospitallers, but less concerned with provisioning as with actual warfare.

That both orders served as bankers to much of the European elite, both northern and southern cliques, led to struggles between the two groups, which were to have dire consequences at a later date. There were, as yet, some factions of the southern clique still true at heart to the precepts of the Faith, rather than the power thereof, and these factions saw their opportunity in the power struggle between the Welf Family and the Hohenstauffens, also called the Guelphs and the Ghibellines, respectively, beginning in AD 1125. With the victory of the northern-sympathizing Hohenstauffen clan, the balance of power began a slow but inexorable shift to the northern clique, becoming ever more heavily dominated by the North German/Zionist faction. The shift, however, was not immediately apparent to the southern clique, who found themselves receiving a rather rude awakening in AD 1154, when a northern candidate, one Nicholas Breakspear, became Pope Adrian IV; almost immediately he gave Ireland as a gift to his mentor, Henry II of England, which has resulted in nearly a millennium of domination of the only northern ally of the southern clique.

The threat of a pincer movement set aside, the northern clique proceeded to reinaugurate their original policy of covert whittling at the power of the south, now invested very heavily in the Roman and Frankish aristocratic

factions. Regular sacrifice of Jewish commoners, under the direction of the Zionist elite, was instituted to propitiate the deities still covertly worshiped by the elite of the northern clique, now merged into the Zionist deity (which had never been the same God worshiped by the Jewish commoners, as examination of coins and other artifacts of the Third Temple Period will clearly show). These regular sacrifices date to approximately 1190, and following quick on the heels of this, comes the escalation of northern preparations for outright struggle against the south; the Order of Teutonic Knights and the Livonian Brothers of the Sword, precursors to the later Prussian Orders, date to the period AD 1190— 1210. With the Hospitallers and Knights Templars engaged in a war of attrition that killed nearly as many of their number as their battles against the Muslims, and the Dominicans fully engaged, from AD 1208, in pitched battle with nonconformist southern sub-cliques and covert actions in England, the Teutonic Knights and their cohorts had a clear field to engage as they would; upon absorbing the Livonian Brothers of the Sword in 1237, they were nearly unstoppable. Their early success they attributed to a massive propitiative sacrifice of European children, in AD 1212. This affair, which began with the promotion of what was called the “Children’s Crusade”, drained an untold number of Europe’s youngest into the clutches of the Teutons; a massive number were indeed slaughtered in ritual sacrifice, and perhaps twice that number were sold into slavery to the Muslims. Once again, the ‘prayers’ of the Teutonic/Zionist clique appeared to have been answered, as with their defeat at the hands of the Mongols in AD 1256, survivors of the Order of Assassins, the Ishmaelis, of Hasan I Sabah, began trickling into Europe, seeking sanctuary among the similarly-inclined Teutonic/Zionist clique. With the addition of these well-trained and fearless — nay, nearly suicidal — Assassins, the Teutonic/Zionist Clique achieved the force necessary to assume complete control of the northern clique, as well as a special force to supplement the actions of their still-active Muslim shocktroops.

Edward I of England, upon learning the full extent of the practices of the Teutons/Zionists, was so sickened that he expelled all Jews from England in 1290, rather than allow what he considered an abomination to occur on his soil. Indeed, as knowledge of the practice crept through the subcliques of the south, one by one they either expelled the Jews (as did France in AD

1306) or else forced their conversion to Christianity, in the mistaken belief that this made them unacceptable for the sacrificial rite. A word or two, I believe, regarding the sacrificial rite of the Zionists, as well as the similar rite of the Teutons, is in order: I must warn you that the rites as I know them are distasteful in the extreme, and that I would not recommend the following as good reading for the squeamish. It must be remembered, throughout this description, that modern Jewry is, for the most part, ignorant of the rites of the Zionists, who posit that they alone (as proper Zionist Jews) are true Jewry, and all others who claim Judaism are wrong. Indeed, to investigate the history of this religion (done so admirably by Benjamin Freedman in his tome, “Facts Are Facts”) is to discover that modern rank-and-file Jewry has no real connexion to historical Judaism, but are in fact pawns in a much larger and more vicious game than they realize. To begin, then: the rite of consecration of the Kohen (ritual/sacrificial priest) and that of normative ritual sacrifice are very nearly identical. The Kohen-elect is made to enter a pit beneath the grating that is beside the altar of sacrifice, also called the altar of holocaust *(shoah*, in the Hebrew), which is described at chapter 27 of Exodus, in the first part. The altar grating is placed over the pit (actually more an encircling trench), and the sacrificial victim is brought to the altar. The preferred victim is a young boy of Jewish blood; young girls are useable, especially when supply is high, but boys are the preferred victim. Most ‘Jewish’ parents during the Templar periods (the times during which a properly-consecrated temple stood at Jerusalem) were required to redeem their children with an offering (see chapter 12 of Leviticus); at these time, the children of the destitute (who could not offer the prescribed ransom) were used — in modern times, any so-called ‘Jewish’ child may be kidnapped & used for the sacrifice, or for the ordination, though for the sin offering a Gentile child may be used. The child, preferably an infant or toddler (but any child up to the age of thirteen being acceptable, if virginal), is stood upon the grating over the head of the Kohen—elect, nude, facing northward; the child’s head is grasped firmly by the officiating priest (or by him and his assistant, should the child be older & put up a fight), and the child’s throat is then slit to open the jugular vein. Some of the blood is made to splatter against the eastern face of the altar itself, while the rest spatters through the grating to bathe the Kohen-elect, who drinks a mouthful of the blood as it pours over him. The officiating Kohen then wets his fingers with the screaming innocent’s blood and,

walking counter-clockwise around the altar, traces certain arcane sigils upon the altar's horns with the blood; then, arriving back at the child's position, he takes a mouthful of the spurting blood. The Kohen-elect is helped out from under the grating & joins the assisting Kohens at the child's side, and all are liberally mouth-sprayed with the child's blood by the officiating Kohen, thus sealing the new Kohen as a member of the priesthood.

The child, weak from loss of blood but still very much alive, is butchered; the internal fatty tissue, the liver, and the kidneys are set aside to be burnt, and the Kohens feast on what they want of the rest, burning the unused portions before sunset, according to Levitical law. This is also the basic procedure for the regular ritual sacrifice, with the exceptions being that in regular sacrifice, the blood spills uninterrupted through the grating, to renew the consecration of the sill on which the temple or killing-floor rests, and that the mouth-spraying of the child's blood is omitted. Similarities between the Jewish and Teutonic rituals are close; the parallels suggest, perhaps, a common origin for certain practices, perhaps deriving from central Asia via the Khazars. In the Teutonic rite, the altar is generally an unhewn dolmen, and the pit and its attendant grating are absent. The priest to be consecrated in this rite merely lies, nude, on the ground at the eastern face of the stone altar (the eastern face of the altar being sacred to both the Zionists and the Teutons), and the victim — a child of either gender between the ages of seven and twelve, virginal — is brought to him. The child is forced down upon the priest—elect in a kneeling position, straddling the elect's hips, at which time sexual penetration (notably absent in the Zionist rite) is achieved, anally for a young boy, vaginally for a young girl. The child's head is faced east, as in the Zionist rite, and the jugular is opened, showering the priest-elect with blood, some of which is ingested. The child is then penetrated sexually by the attending priests until such time as death occurs. In both rites, the bathing in and ingestion of the blood of the child is required for proper consecration, and in the Teutonic rite (as in the Zionist), the body of the child is eaten. In the everyday ritual of sacrifice in the Teutonic rite, no priest-elect lies before the dolmen; instead, the child is penetrated by each of the priests in turn, according to rank or seniority (depending on which of two rites is being followed; I am

unclear as to the exact distinction between the two, other than this particular difference of practice).

The Order of Knights Templars — who operated extensively in the north — had been influenced heavily by the Teutonic/Zionist cult. The northern houses of the Templars had indeed adopted several practices from the northern clique, including the Zionist practice of consulting preserved oracular heads for augury. The southern houses of the Templars in combination with the Hospitallers, approached French king Philippe IV with a list of charges, substantiated by eyewitness testimony of a number of the southern Templars, and acting on this information Philippe issued an order of arrest in September of 1307. The order was finally suppressed through all Europe (except Scotland), and the Grand Master, Jacques DeMolay, was burned at the stake in 1314. Those Templars remaining in the south were absorbed into the order of Hospitallers, while those in hiding in Scotland became the nucleus of the Priory of Zion, turning their considerable talents and remaining wealth over to the service of the Teutonic/Zionist clique. The southern clique, now dominated by an uneasy alliance of the French and Roman aristocracies, began exhibiting signs of paranoia very early in this stage of the crisis. Boniface VIII, in an attempt to bring the clique back in line with the original division of power (subservient to, rather than masters of, the Church), issued a Papal Bull, “Unam Sanctam,” claiming Papal authority over temporal rulers, in 1302. He was poisoned in 1303, and succeeded by Benedict XI — who attempted to follow in Boniface’s footsteps and was poisoned himself in 1304. Philippe IV of France, engaged in his war with the Templars as early as 1307, finally offered Pope Clement V sanctuary in France, and the Papal court moved in that year to Avignon, a coup for the French faction over the Romans. So paranoid did the Papal court become that, in 1316 (while the remnants of the Templars were strengthening the northern clique), John XXII sent a squad of heavily-armed Dominicans south to Ethiopia to chase down a reported Patriarch with valid Roman Apostolic succession, recorded in history as “Prester John.”

In 1326, the Teutonic Knights made a foray into Poland; prisoners were taken by the Poles, and several talked, divulging not only the brief bits they knew of general policy, but also their knowledge of the sacrifices of Jewish

commoners — these reports sickened the Poles, who, upon repelling the Teutons in 1333-34, extended a general sanctuary to all European Jewry. As news spread through the sub-elites of the southern clique, outrage was the order of the day. While the southern clique was capable of sustained violence, and the torture of captive enemies, the thought of a program of ritual human sacrifice appalled them, causing them to begin pulling somewhat closer together, at least to discuss this aspect of the northern threat. Though several of the aristocratic sub-cliques had learnt of this practice as long back as 1190, it had been regarded as something between a rumor and an aberration; now, however, with proof wrested from Teutonic Knights by the Poles, it took on an immediacy. The northern clique, of course, knew very quickly that their practices were known by the southerners, but were more upset by what they considered the southerners' pretensions. In order to break the south, now when all seemed going their way, the northern clique (with the especial help of England's Edward III) caused the collapse of the Bardi Financier clique in Rome, who had been, after the Hospitallers, the bankers of Europe. Edward, of course, benefitted by not being required to pay any of the sizable loans he'd received from the Bardis; the northern clique could now attempt to wrest control of finance from the south. By this time, the midpoint of the fourteenth century, it was becoming something of a race; since the initial expedition to the North American continent, neither side of the conflict had been in a position to exploit the virgin lands. The north, while having the advantage of unity under autocratic rule, had not the requisite wealth to exploit the Americas; the southern clique, for whom wealth was no problem, had not the unity to mount a proper expedition. Both cliques realized that control of the vast wealth of the western continents would ensure lasting victory. While the northern houses of the Templars had brought with them a cache of gold, it had been scant — Philippe IV had systematically confiscated the available wealth of the order during the seven years of his program against them, and most of this had been disbursed to the Templars-cum-Hospitallers thereafter, remaining under southern clique control.

The northern clique, growing desperate, authorized their Assassins to introduce into southern Europe the bubonic plague, known as the "Black Death," in 1348. Ultimately, the plague would kill perhaps one-quarter of the European & Asian population, as much as one-third of Europe alone,

and scattered outbreaks would continue well into the present century, somewhat backfiring on the northern clique. Nonetheless, it had much the desired effect, in its own way, weakening the south sufficiently to allow the north to reinstate its program of large-scale sacrifice of Jewish commoners, forcing large numbers of Jews to seek the asylum of Poland, beginning one year after introduction of the plague, in 1349. The south learned of the north's complicity even as the plague ravaged the population, forever altering the balance of power and social structure of the continent. A force of Dominicans pushed south into deep Africa in an attempt to settle a safe base, free from the contagion of Europe; they had begun construction of stone fortifications at Great Zimbabwe when they were attacked and slaughtered by a force of Teutonic Knights, who took over the construction with the use of slave labor, culled from among the indigenous population; hopelessly outnumbered and operating far from any hope of relief, the Teutons were in turn slaughtered by an uprising of the native slaves, and the abandoned fortifications stand to this day. Thus, in AD 1375, any hopes of using the African continent to sway the balance of power were shelved, and the cliques began to concentrate as best they could on the race to exploit the Americas.

In addition to the aforementioned poverty of the north and disunity of the south, both cliques were now saddled with a massive upheaval of their socioeconomic norms caused by the plague, which led to a period of reapportionment and in-fighting in both camps. One of the major results of the plague was a loss of faith; the commoners (and more importantly, the elite) saw presbyter and prelate falling side-by-side with the peasant. It was likely this, more than anything else, that inspired the 'war of words' that was soon to follow. The northern clique, who never had actually accepted the Gospel, set about discrediting the Writ. In AD 1376, northern-backed theologian John Wycliff published a treatise, "Civil Dominion," attacking the Church (and therefore the power of the southern clique); seeing, somewhat, the coming storm, the southern clique quietly began a shakeup in their power structure. The nature of the uneasy alliance between the various aristocracies was such that the pro forma obedience to the Church scarce provided the stability required to bring the clique, or actually the two major factions of the clique (the French and Roman-oriented factions) through a complete revitalization as was attempted at that time; hence

relations between the two groups were strained to the point of near-dissolution; this is the root cause behind the “Great Schism” of 1378.

The Papacy & Papal courts having already been under French domination from 1309, the situation was ripe for schism; when Urban VI elected to return the Papal Court to Rome, more than a dozen Cardinals of the French faction elected Clement VII as Antipope, and reopened the Avignon Vatican. By 1409, three rival claimants were hailed as Pope, representing the French faction, the old Roman (west-central Italian) faction, and the upstart faction from Pisa (north-central Italian). This state of disunity only began to settle when the Medici family, financiers, began their bid to take over the Papacy in 1414, and the schism wasn’t totally ended until three years after. The Pope elected as compromise to the three factions Martin V, who immediately set about to reaffirm the mastery of the south over the north, but the troops sent forth to do this were defeated by Bohemian Hussite forces in AD 1431.

The legendary rivalry of the various Italian families and factions, including the sad tale of the Borgia Popes, is well recounted elsewhere, hence I mention them only in passing, as these conflicts greatly hampered the southern clique’s attempts to regain superiority over the north, and nearly single-handed guaranteed the north’s ascendancy over the course of the next several centuries. Away from the main centers of action, the Teutonic Knights once again attempted to snatch back the sacrificial Jews living in asylum in Poland. The Poles, however, are nothing if not fearless fighters. This foray of the Teutons ended with the Poles gaining west Prussia, exacerbating already strained relations with the Germanics, who decried the Poles even then as *üntermenschen.* Northern infiltration of the southern power centers had been slow and unsteady; with the victory of the Poles in 1454, a drive was attempted to sieze Spain, which, while secondary in power to the Italian and French factions, was a rising star.

Informed of the attempt by vigilant sentinels in the ranks, but unable to do without the aid rendered by the northern agents, Isabella and Ferdinand expelled the Jews resident there, and quietly shuffled their staff until the most trusted few held the positions closest to their throne. A young adventurer, confidant of the esoteric scholars at Rome, one Cristoforo

Colombo, had visited the Spanish monarchs in 1486 to request their assistance in an adventure to the western continents, and had been rejected. Returning to them in 1492, bearing letters of introduction from the scholars even as the royals were expelling the Jews, it fell to Isabella — acting with Ferdinand's approval, but in secret, that the plans not leak out — to finance the explorer's quest. Due to the problems with the northern clique, and allowing for the possibility of the team being waylaid by northern-backed pirates, Cristoforo (known to the esoteric scholars as Xpo Ferens) was outfitted with three ships only, no escort, and a crew of convicted felons who were considered expendable. Even with these handicaps, the attempt succeeded.

So frightened were the northerners that in 1517, the Teutonic/Zionist faction goaded an emotionally-disturbed monk, one Martin Luther, to instigate a "Reformation" of the Church, in the hope that the resultant turmoil would destroy the now once-again-waxing power of the southern clique. The ongoing troubles between the English and French factions kept interference by other channels to a minimum, however, and the southern clique made serious advances in the southern continent of the Americas. Leo X, then holding the Papacy on behalf of his family, the Medici faction, granted special favors to English King Henry VIII, then excommunicated Martin Luther. The northerners, seeing the disruptive nature of these actions (discrediting them, and swaying England back toward the southern clique), had Leo assassinated, using their influence in one final push to have elected to the Papal office one Adrian Boeyens, of the Netherlands, who (as Adrian VI) would be the last northern choice (indeed, last non-Italian) Pope, for some years to come. Adrian held office only through parts of AD 1522-23, then was poisoned and replaced by Clement VII, another Medici. The southern clique, badly shaken by events and with a care about their as-yet long-distance control of the western continents, began forming more military/religious orders, such as the infamous Knights of Malta (formerly the Knights of St. John) in AD 1530, and the Jesuits in 1534 (though the date of their official recognition, AD 1540, is that found in most histories of the time). The Jesuits' primary function, that of rooting out infiltrators, they performed admirably well — so well, indeed, that by 1543, they were able to present sufficient evidence to Paul III to force him to inaugurate the Inquisition.

Due to the victory of the northern clique, most histories of the Inquisition are hopelessly distorted, but extant Vatican records report that the primary target of the ecclesiastical courts were northern-backed infiltrators, and that these, once found guilty, were handed over to the secular courts for punishment — which was all-too-often carried out in a most un-Christian manner. Admittedly, the power of the Inquisitor's office was rather horribly abused — most especially by rivals of the Italian faction in Spain — and so engrossed was the southern clique in the minutiae of uncovering northern conspirators that it came as a near-total surprise when, in AD 1554, the north seized control of the apparatus of the Holy Roman Empire, then under the direction of H.R.E. Karl V, born a Spaniard but by now firmly in the pocket of the northern interests.

The founding of the Royal Exchange in AD 1566 instigated an attempted invasion of England by a force of undercover Dominicans in 1574; betrayed to the English nobility by supposed allies, they were killed within weeks of their arrival. Attempts at diplomacy by the southern clique failed, and in AD 1581 regular executions of Catholics were instituted in an attempt to destroy all internal opposition from hidden southern agents. Muslims, their numbers padded by a force of native blacks, massed in West Africa, by the river Niger, for an invasion of the southern countries, but were apprehended by a force of Spanish and Portuguese mercenaries and wiped out. In that same year, within scant months, a large Spanish fleet — attempting a secret invasion of England — lost the element of surprise when a lone ship captained by the pirate Sir Richard Grenville engaged them enroute, allowing a tender to return to port with the news. In retaliation, two Popes — Innocent IX and Gregory XIV — are poisoned within a two-month period. This coming directly on the heels of three previous deaths, Gregory XIII in AD 1585 under mysterious circumstances, then Sixtus V and Urban VII within two weeks of each other in AD 1590, prompted retaliation in kind by the southern clique.

Awakening one morning late in 1592 to find the heads of five of his bastard sons nestled against him in his bed (their bodies neatly laid out on the floor), French king Henri IV, who had facilitated the English schemes against the last several Popes, publicly renounced Protestantism and sent envoys to the Italian faction in an attempt to appease them. This had been a

second warning to the French, as Henri III, because of disagreements with the Roman aristocracy, had been executed by a warrior-monk in AD 1589. A letter, left on the pillow of Elizabeth I of England, to the effect that continued opposition to Rome would result in the death of any child she might bear, is credited with having persuaded Elizabeth never to marry. Nonetheless, anti-Catholic laws remained in force in England, and northern infiltrators were beginning to make their presence felt even in the ranks of the elite Jesuits, having enough power to block a reunification of the Roman and Orthodox Communions in AD 1595. Fighting between the two cliques was rivaled, in this period, only by in-fighting between the various factions. England narrowly averted total invasion by the Spanish when an Armada, sent out to attack in tandem with a Spanish-supported uprising of the Irish, was decimated in a massive storm. The French and Spanish factions, engaged for some time in open hostilities, are persuaded to lay down arms by the Roman faction; in 1600. Lord Mountjoy begins starving the rebel Irish into submission, even as Spanish reinforcements were reinforcing the defenses at Kinsale. Mountjoy would later — in AD 1602 — defeat the emaciated combined forces, quashing the rebellion.

In AD 1603, Elizabeth I dies and is succeeded by James I, who is unafraid of the southern clique. Even the release, by Portuguese mercenaries, of the plague in London does not sway him. The English had been sending covert teams to the Americas, mostly the East Coast of North America, since AD 1562, and established their first overt settlement, Jamestown, in 1607; English colonists and a force of slaves had held Virginia since 1619, marginally-patriotic religious zealots of unacceptable cults had been transported since 1620, and finally in AD 1630, an English force of 1000 was sent to reinforce covert bases in the Massachusetts territory, founding what would become Boston. With the infiltration of the Jesuits basically completed by AD 1640, the establishment of a southern clique-oriented colony, Maryland, in AD 1632, was at best a palliative measure; northern clique control of North America was essentially assured. Indeed, with the founding of Quaker-controlled Pennsylvania in AD 1682, only two of the original thirteen colonies permitted the practice of Catholicism or the Quaker faith. With the passage of formal laws making Catholicism a crime in AD 1691, and the beginning of the infamous Salem witch trials that same year, any members of religions other than those

permitted by the North American branch of the northern clique — most notably Catholics and Quakers — were an endangered species.

Freemasonry was a growing fad among the second and third level echelon of the northern clique, and the Masons saw in the new land an opportunity to set themselves up as a faction in their own right. While French and Native American mercenaries carried on a war of attrition against the northern clique invaders between AD 1702-55, the Freemasons — or rather, jealous lower-echelon members of the northern clique united in Masonic Lodges — continued to accrue power in the new territories. By 1738, they posed such a threat that infiltration of southern aristocratic ranks was deemed imminent, and Clement XII issued the Papal Bull “In Eminenti” in that year, excommunicating any Catholic who was found to be a member of the Masonic Lodges. The French faction, having nominal control of the midsection of North America, were the only force with a real chance of driving the northern clique out. The French faction, however, were tired of the Roman yoke, and, fearing open north-south warfare on their soil, expelled the heavily-infiltrated Jesuits in 1762, then began covertly planning to remove the Roman-allied royalty, who had ceased to be of use to them. The French faction was, by this time, content with a behind-the-scenes stance, in the so-called lower nobility; the Royals — intended as an human shield — were costing more and more to support in the style to which they’d become accustomed.

In AD 1773, the North American faction felt confident in their strength, and, provoking commoners to engage in the ‘Boston Tea Party,’ began overt hostilities against the North European clique. War followed two years later. As the colonists dumped English tea into Boston Harbor, Clement XIV dissolved the now northern-rife Jesuits in a belated attempt to halt the erosion of southern clique power. Come 1777, a leader emerged among the new North American clique; George Wessington (later Washington) agreed to figurehead the fledgling group, and his (Wessington) family coat-of-arms, a field of stars and alternating stripes, was adopted as the new clique’s standard and the new nation’s flag.

The now heavily northern-influenced faction controlling France, seeing the growing power and considerable natural wealth of the upstarts, aligned

with the Wessington clique the following year. Along with the actual heads of the new North American faction, Jefferson, Franklin, and Adams, Washington (as he came to be called) led the commoners' forces to victory, and the European cliques of France, Spain, and England formally recognized the new faction in 1783. The upstarts entered into agreement with the now nearly-deified Prussian (Teutonic/Zionist) faction in 1785, and the Teutons began shifting the center of power to include their North American allies. The Constitution, written in such a way as to ensure that the Church-oriented southern clique could never sieze power, was ratified, and seeing the changing tides of fortune, the French faction — totally dissatisfied with the southern clique — incited the French Revolution, toppling the southern-oriented royals and driving the Roman/Vatican faction representatives from the country. Deciding to take up the northern clique's practices, the French faction formally invites Jews to return in 1790; five years later, in order to win back some necessary financial backing, the French faction opens tenuous relations with certain elements of the Roman financial crowd. A problem becoming all-too-apparent to the northern clique was the growing numbers of commoners, who — with victories in North America and France leaving them very full of themselves — were beginning to realize their power.

The world's population reached 500 million around AD 1650, and was increasing dramatically. In AD 1798, Thomas Robert Malthus set down, in his book "Essay On The Principle Of Population," the fledgling ideology of the northern clique on the problem of "what to do about all those commoners." The North American clique split, by the early 1820's, into two factions, the northern and the southern. The southern faction was relatively liberal, preferring to use imported Africans as slaves and allowing the commoners a certain degree of liberty; the northern faction, heavily influenced by the thinking of the Teutonic/Zionist clique, saw the growing masses as potential slaves, regardless of race. Standard histories claim that the southern clique ceded from the northern to protect their property rights, but in fact the northern clique sought to extend slavery to all commoners, not merely the negroes. Importation of Africans had ceased in 1808, beginning a captive breeding program in the south and an extension-of-slavery program in the north; indeed, as early as 1786, an attempt at self-government in New England, referred to as "Shay's Rebellion," had been

put down with force, making lie of the illusion of liberty for which the commoners had fought and died. The two factions went to war, with the northerners emerging victorious in 1865. In 1866, the 14th amendment was added to the North American clique's constitution, allowing for enslavement of anyone, so long as the "due process of law" was followed; fearing the possibility of someone from outside their number actually achieving high office, in 1867 the "Tenure of Office" act was passed, limiting the scope of power allowed to elected figureheads. These were among the last acts of the "old-line" North American aristocracy; in 1870, with the founding of the Standard Oil Company, John D. Rockefeller, a member of the new breed of American Teuton/Zionist confederation, inaugurated the "new-line" American elite.

Occult societies, based along the lines established by the Teutons and Zionists, began taking root in North America; Helena Petrovna Blavatsky, owner of businesses in Philadelphia, established her Theosophical Society — allied with the Thule Society, the Vril Society, and Aleister Crowley's Golden Dawn — in New York City in 1875, the same year as Mary Baker Eddy founded her Christian Science movement in Massachusetts. In this, they followed the lead of Freemason Joseph Smith, who founded the Mormon Church (Latter-Day Saints) as a rival form of Freemasonry in 1830, and Charles Taze Russell, who established the Jehovah's Witnesses in 1871. The following decade saw the publication of Nietzsche's *Alse Sprach Zarathustra* and James Frazer's *The Golden Bough*. After the ritual sacrifice of several prostitutes in Whitechapel, London (which in itself solved a sticky problem for the Royal Family there), the northern European clique, in a final putsch, seized control of the Italian government, thereby surrounding the heavily-infiltrated, but as yet not submissive, Vatican power structure. That the Vatican had lost much of its glamour was true; but the power of the Papacy still extended to a sizable population of Catholics worldwide, posing a very real threat to northern clique interests. In AD 1897, the Teutonic/Zionist clique held a full meeting at Basel, Switzerland, and laid the groundwork for their plans for domination of those territories not yet directly under their control. Included in these discussions were plans for an Holocaust, a massive extermination-sacrifice of European Jewry and others. The US faction, powerful but not yet as powerful as they would become, opposed the plan, seeing no reason for such conquest — during

this and the ensuing period, the US faction pursued a policy of relative isolationism, caring little for what happened outside their immediate sphere of influence. In 1906, back in Northern Germany, the Teutonic/Zionist clique began designing their new and revamped military machine. In order to effect the Holocaust, all of Europe would have to be brought under one totalitarian government, and in 1914, the T/Z clique began “The World War” in order to subjugate Europe, expecting an easy victory, with the US clique remaining isolated and uninvolved. 1917 was an eventful year; the US clique entered the war, ensuring victory for the factions fighting the T/Z clique, the British Fascists announced their support for a Jewish homeland in Palestine (in order to thwart the T/Z clique’s plans for mass sacrifice), and a new band of upstarts, backing the Bolsheviks, overthrew the T/Z aligned Tsarist clique in Russia.

The following year saw the defeat of the T/Z clique and the end of the war. Resentment ran high; British Fascists were angered by US clique intervention in what they saw as an European situation; for the first time in many years, all the sub-factions of the T/Z clique — from the various societies (Thule, Vril, etc.) to the unaligned but thoroughly-Teutonic bourgeoisie — were united in their determination to enact “The Final Solution,” the mass sacrifice of “useless” races to their deities, in order to ensure absolute world dominion. In 1919, the Thule society, pre-eminent among the Teutonic orders, founded the National Socialist (Nazi) party, in order to drum up popular support for another war; they also sought useful allies elsewhere. The British Fascists, tied closely to Thule via other related orders (Golden Dawn, Theosophical Society, and the British Israelite movement, among others) offered their support covertly: White Russian Fascists, enraged at their treatment at the hands of the Bolsheviks, vowed their support as well. In 1922, the northern clique, acting in a unity never before seen, backed an Italian Fascist, Benito Mussolini, in a takeover bid that brought Italy into line with the T/Z clique’s designs. That same year, Josef Stalin, an emotionally unstable but seemingly sympathetic dictator, took power in Russia. By 1929, the Italian Fascists were able to say that the Fascist takeover of the Vatican hierarchy was complete, and the Lateran Treaty, making the Vatican a sovereign state, was signed. By careful manipulation, the T/Z clique was able to topple the US clique’s national economy in 1929; the following year saw the Nazi party begin its meteoric

rise to power in Germany, and by 1933, regular ritual sacrifice of Jews had been reinstated, growing steadily (albeit slowly) each year for the rest of that decade, to be stepped up dramatically after 1940.

The British Fascists, playing both sides of the coming conflict, retained good relations on both sides of the Atlantic; while the US clique was temporarily unable to strike back at the T/Z clique for destroying their economy, they could, and did, cause the Teutonic/Zionists to lose face, somewhat, by destroying the pride of Germany, the airship Hindenburg, on US soil. The Spanish Fascists, under Francisco Franco, quashed an attempted takeover by commoners and anarchists in 1939, rendering the majority of Europe Fascist-controlled.

The T/Z clique, feeling that the time was ripe, began the Second World War. Unbeknownst to the forces that prepared to oppose them, two T/Z physicists, Otto Hahn and Fritz Strassman, achieved nuclear fission, the first step toward modern nuclear weapons, that same year (1939). It appeared that the T/Z clique would emerge from the rubble victorious; they had not, however, considered the possibility of a “wild card” in their own ranks. The US clique had long been borderline Fascists themselves, and had maintained a network of infiltrators in the ranks of the various secret societies of the T/Z network. One of these, the highly-ranked Rudolph Hess — who had, indeed, been a most trusted member of Thule — gathered all the extant paperwork on Hahn and Strassman’s work in nuclear fission, and flew to England in May of 1941, trading the clique’s atomic secrets for immunity and a new identity. The Teutonic/Zionist clique suddenly found themselves betrayed in the worst way; not only was their hope of using the new technology dashed, but due to poor communications, the Japanese — acting on a plan arranged in 1933 — forced the US clique to enter the war directly in December of that year. Though messages were sent to call off the plan, they were never received — or, if received, ignored; Japan had been promised dominion over the western two-thirds of the North American landmass, from the Mississippi River to the Pacific Ocean. That this arrangement was known to the US clique is a possibility, and would explain the internment of Japanese in the US; I cannot say, though, as I have not found any proof, one way or the other.

With the loss of the secrecy surrounding their nuclear weapons research, and facing the possibility that the US clique would win the race to perfect the new technology, the Teutonic/Zionist clique stepped up their efforts at propitiating their gods. Sacrifices of Gypsies, Slavs, the ill and infirm, Jewish commoners, and Catholics was stepped up dramatically; the clique still believed, at this point, that victory could be assured if only the requisite amount of blood sacrifice were performed. Hess, however, was not the only sympathizer within the ranks of the Teutons to see the US clique's rising star. The list of highly-ranked members of the Nazi front to make deals with the more Fascist elements of the US clique — including Goring, Bormann, the aforementioned Hess, Himmler, Shaub, Gehlen, and numerous others — agrees in great detail with a list of those who, after the war, held positions of trust in what came to be called the "Intelligence Community," the business-financial community, and the social elite, or "Cafe Society." The fact — as I myself have seen in the archives, as well as having seen in my travels — that contrary to the popular deception, the Teutonic/Zionist hierarchy, the real power of the old Prussian clique, was not defeated, but rather was absorbed by the worst elements of the US clique, with the help of the English clique and the subverted Vatican hierarchy. It had been this same action of the US clique that had initially inspired many of the practices of the more "scientifically-minded" Teutonic scientists; practices against the mentally ill and against the native American tribes in the latter part of the nineteenth and early part of the twentieth centuries had inspired the infamous "medical experiments" of the concentration camps. Indeed, one of the conditions of absorption into the US clique, binding upon both the Teutonic and Japanese factions (these three who went on to form the Trilateral Commission) was that the documentation of the results of their experiments be given, fully and freely, to their new masters.

While the Japanese experiments in sonic disruption of living tissue are not yet fully utilized, the biological and genetic findings of the Teutons have borne much fruit, as I shall relate. The Zionist faction, glad to share power but desiring their own base, were given Palestine. The Teutonic clique, with its intricate ties to the other old aristocracies, shifted the actual center of power to the United States. All would have gone their way, were it not for further wild cards in the deck. Indeed, the reshuffling left new cliques arising: the new Russian clique, distrustful of their neighbors to the

west; the Muslim clique, resentful, and possessed of an important commodity beneath their shifting sands; and the Anarchists, present for nearly a century but now gaining in popular support; as well as minor factions — all told, while the greater part of the new order favored the heirs of the old aristocracy and the still-rising US clique, total control was not theirs. In 1949, the new Russian clique detonated their first nuclear weapon; the Vatican issues a Papal Bull decreeing excommunication for any Roman Catholic who either practices or preaches Communism, and Senator Joseph McCarthy inaugurates a new witch-hunt, aimed at Communist infiltrators in the lower ranks of the apparatus that served the US/Teutonic/Zionist elite. Recent events show that the Russian clique may well be seeking entry into the ranks of the elite, threatened as they are by the Anarchists, and nearly totally dependent on the West; however, it is too soon to tell. That the order worships vengeful deities, demanding the ritual sacrifice of innocent victims, may be among the most unbelievable of my assertions. It must be realized that the heirs of the clique's power are as well the heirs of their practices and superstitions. If it seems odd to us, raised accepting Christianity (in one form or another) as the operative mode of understanding, that there would be those, seemingly as civilized as ourselves, who would practice such blasphemous rites, let it be understood that to these the worship and propitiation of other gods is the norm; whether by coincidence and circumstance, or by actual intervention of demonic influence, the majority of these sacrifices seem to them, to have worked.

The elite are an insular, clannish clique, given to raging idiosyncrasies and immense deposits of superstition. Their insulation from the rest of us, and from the world which we inhabit, has rendered them emotionally undeveloped, incapable of loving, of caring, of giving — to them, the sacrifice of an innocent is no more noteworthy than the swatting of an annoying fly, and eminently more useful. In the United States alone, more than thirty thousand people — including a growing number of young children, always a preferred victim — disappear each year, without a trace. This must be taken in context; there are of course a fair number of individuals who, for whatever reason, choose to disappear — but these would form, at the very most, perhaps a third (though likely much less) of the total number. What of the others? From documentation I have seen, and conversations with my ecclesiastical superiors, it is said that the majority of

these disappearances can be traced directly to such functioning cults as that operated by [name deleted] who, when not operating his cult during off-hours, practices as warrior-priest for the Presidio military bases' own congregation, presiding, in the grottos beneath the base, over ritual sexual abuse of, and quite often ritual sacrifice of, children and young adults. While the names used to identify the one underlying cult change from locale to locale, and while a bewildering array of deities — seemingly representing every pre-Christian cult ever to exist — are invoked, it is ultimately the Teutonic/Zionist pantheon, the Zionist YHWH in conjunction with the Germanic gods, (though there are scattered references to the Zionist elite worshipping only their own god) that are the ultimate object of the clique's worship. Yet, for all their power, their empire stands on a less-than-firm foundation. Internal rifts are common; while united in theory, various factions pursue different policies. Intertribal antagonism is common. Even the agenda of the factions within the clique differ.

The identities of the Teutonic/Zionist clique are well-guarded; even their higher servants are protected by the anonymity of immense wealth and the power attendant upon it. We speak here of individuals of such status that their kith and kin are referred to as an 'house,' not a 'family.' Among these are the House of Windsor, absolute masters until very recently of the worlds trade in narcotics; the House of Rhodes and the House of Rothschild, with their immense holdings in land and in gold; also included, albeit grudgingly, in the elite are the upstart Houses of Onassis and Ibn Saud, who vie for position alongside the established Houses — the Williamsons, the Lodges, the Cabots, and Bierces; the Carnegies, the relative newcomers Rockefeller, the Buchanans, Browns, and Raleighs; the capitalist "johnny-come-latelys" — a class that includes the aforementioned Rockefellers — is represented by Fords and Hearsts as well as the Bradfords, Bryans, and those underlings among the managerial elite who would marry among them. Due to the phenomenon of "dynastic marriage," it may be rightly said that there are not 100 families, not 25 families, but one family, a tribe unto themselves, who hold the reigns of power, control the destinies of multitudes, eat the wealth of nations, and drink the profane chalice of horror — for the hereditary priestcraft of the Teutonic/Zionist elite is the exclusive venue, in its purest form, of the elite-by-blood. Whether the demon being worshiped is Yahweh the Zionist Solar God, or Angra Mainyu Agni of the syncretic Teutonic cult,

the primary requirement for correct worship is blood connexion, lineal descent if at all possible, in the priestly line.

“Secret societies” — such as the Freemasons, the Priory of Zion, and the post-Vatican Templars — serve as sub-sects to the main body of the T/Z clique’s religion. For the Zionists, the lines of demarcation are much tighter; “Old Money” is the only money, and Kohens are still trained in proper ritual for sacrifice — admittedly in lieu of a consecrated temple — in a special *shul* for Kohens, located in Jerusalem. There can be no question that the Zionist state of Israel shall, one day, with Teutonic/US backing, drive the Moslems from the Temple Mount and destroy the (to them) blasphemous Dome of the Rock. In this respect, the Teutons are more fortunate, in that unholy slaughter of children can take place at the hand of an [name deleted], in the grotto beneath the Presidio, and carry full validity.

Current policies of the elite regarding the general estate of the commoners, as I myself have seen and read, is telling. While a policy of division, factionalism and antagonism is the order of the day (particularly in the United States, where what must be the most diversified population on Earth is kept in a state of turmoil by divisive legislation intended to provoke interracial strife and social stratification), there are two primary schools of thought regarding the actual use to which the subjects are to be put.

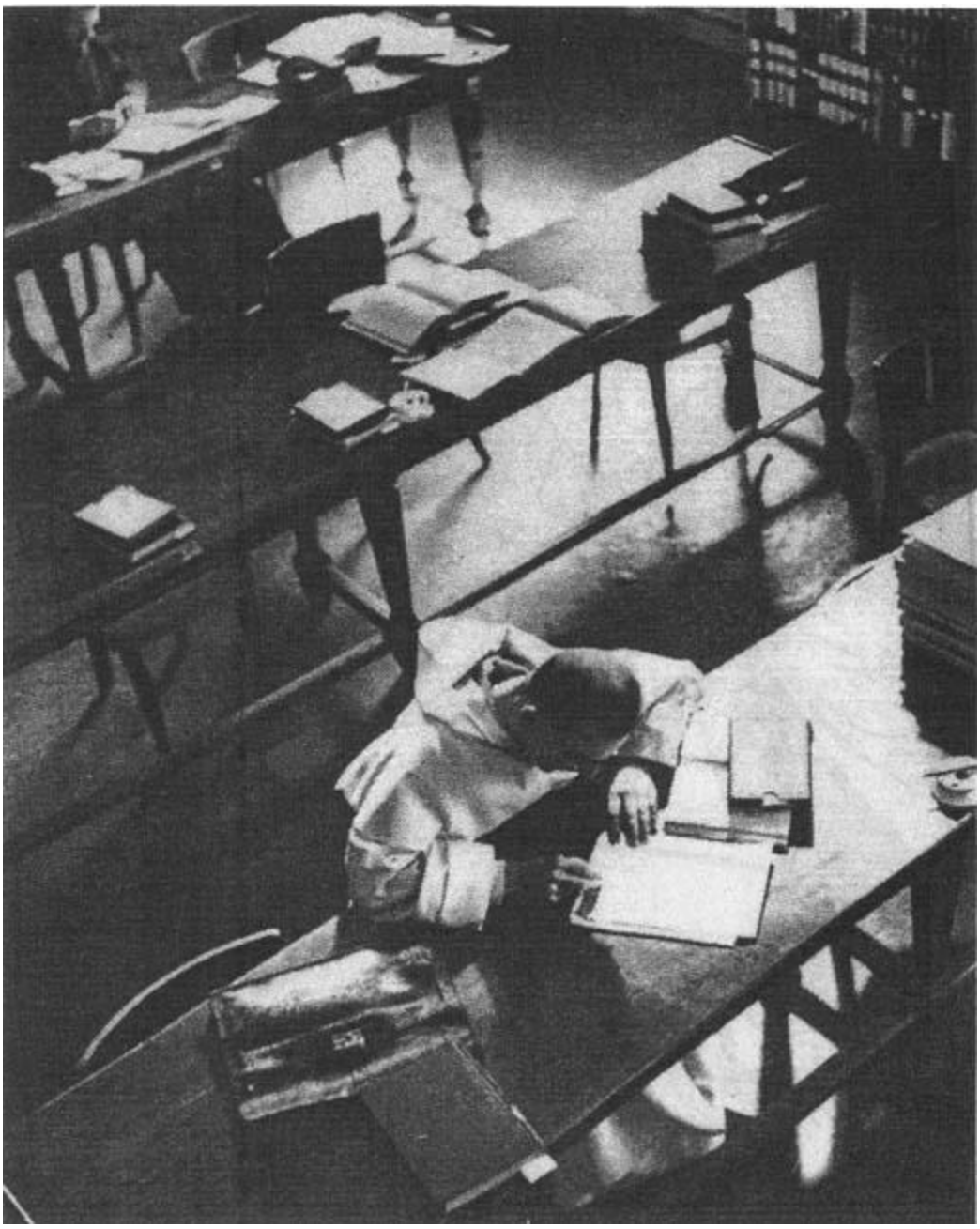
While there is general agreement across the board with the notion that the commoners must be downbred, in order to reduce their intelligence and make them less apt to rise up in rebellion, a large faction — who appear to be holding sway — counsel a massive slaughter of the majority of the “useless eaters.” I say that they seem to be holding sway, as documents I have seen tell of the introduction of an engineered virus, Acquired Immunodeficiency Syndrome (AIDS) into the population by the World Health Organization smallpox vaccination program in Africa, and simultaneously by medical experiments on promiscuous male homosexuals in New York City. Current thought seems to be that only “Third World” ethnicities were targeted, but in fact the plan appears to be to reduce the world population overall to more manageable numbers; these survivors may then be limited as to reproduction, numbers maintained at just the level necessary to insure a force of slaves.

The reason behind this reduction is among the most frightening revelations I feel I shall make: according to the best estimates of clique-employed climatologists, the world — contrary to the current “greenhouse effect” story — is drawing inexorably toward another glaciation. The “Ice Ages” are always spoken of in the past tense, always treated as occurrences in prehistory, never to be repeated; however, glaciation has been the norm for this world since roughly two million years ago; alternating cycles of glaciation and warm interstadial, following an approximate one-hundred-thousand year cycle (ninety thousand years of glaciation, followed by ten thousand of interstadial, plus or minus as much as two thousand years) are the normal climate of our Earth, since the end of the Pliocene era (or perhaps slightly earlier). When the icesheets once again advance, it is the plan of the elite to move the trappings of civilization south, a forced march of laden slaves to the southern hemisphere (the glaciers cover only the northern portion climes), and to this end, “house-cleaning” has already begun. AIDS ravages primarily (though not exclusively) third-world populations, hence the southern lands will be defenseless; massive tracts are already being cleared and prepared for construction in South America, and North America — expected to be covered, by the middle of the twenty-second century, with a two-mile-thick blanket of ice — is being treated as a garbage bin, industrial effluvia of the most noxious varieties being poured out all over the land; it will cease to be of use to the elite, ergo it must be rendered useless to anyone else. Even the most dangerous of the industrial wastes will break down and be reassimilated by the soil in ninety thousand years, hence, when the ice clears, a trek back to the North will be possible, if desired. In the interim, the commoners are kept palliated, entertained, too busy to investigate the world around them — and reduced, by slow attrition of incurable disease, to a desired size. I wish that I could say that there is some sustained, organized resistance within the lower ranks of the Church. Indeed, there is not. I wish I could say that some faction among the elite held more humane views; I cannot. Briefly, there was hope. John Fitzgerald Kennedy, a drunkard and a boor, perhaps the best of a very bad lot (the Kennedy clan) had some pretensions to fulfilling his baptismal vows, if only in the breach. He had some desire to treat the slaves humanely. He was used to set an example to any others who might attempt to defy the higher-ups, to over-reach the boundaries set up by the various factions of the elite. So much for political help. John Paul I attempted to wrest control of the

Vatican away from the Marcinkus clique; an example was made of him, also. Far from discouraging, however, is the fact that such occurrences could be at all — such is a sign of the internal disunity of the elite.

This, however, is all the hope that I can offer: that a concerted effort could well be all that is needed to topple these insular few from their lofty perch. To what end? Overthrow will not solve, in and of itself, the terrible troubles of our age, hunger, disenfranchisement, disease — but it will end the onslaught of troubles from higher echelons. Overpopulation is as much a problem to the slaves as to the masters, disease must and will run its course, hunger will be ended only in the way it has always ended, by reducing the population to levels which can be supported by the Earth; nonetheless, I for one would infinitely prefer to be culled by the natural forces empowered by the Almighty, *Divinum auxilium maneat semper nobiscum*, than by the designs of an elite who choose to play at being gods. *Sint lumbi vestri praecincti et lucernae ardentes in manibus vestris; ad societatem civium supernorum perducat nos Rex Angelorum.* I am hardly the first to speak of a conspiracy; I have read and enjoyed fictitious works which embodied various aspects of the stratification of power within their storylines, and know that theories regarding this or that "secret society" holding sway over the courser of events are a popular form of speculation. I realize that mine is but one more voice added to the cacaphony, perhaps to be lost in the tumult; indeed, the very documents that I have seen include ideas, plans, for the sort of "disinformation" lamented by many, produced for the purpose of misleading those rare few who spend not all of their time pacified by popular amusements. How are you to know that I speak the truth? You cannot. You can verify for yourself the historical facts which I have presented, which form the gist of my own notes, copied laboriously from the original papers at the Vatican archives and supplemented by information gleaned from other clerics and servants of God, but this, I understand, cannot be taken as a guarantee of veracity. I have divulged what I know; I must ask to remain forever anonymous. I am not a young man, strong-willed and inspired; nor yet an old man, who may plead his years: I am but a weak man, seemingly alone, and very much afraid, *mea maxima culpa.* Though I cannot offer verification beyond what the diligent scholar might find in a careful examination of historical texts, and must admit that this my recounting of the facts as known to me is, of necessity, but a

skeleton of the whole story, concentrating on only the most important (to my mind) aspects of the history of the struggle, I offer it in the hope that at least some might be moved to action. If my sharing of what I know saves, or even merely betters, one life, then I have in some small way striven to fulfill my vow of service to my fellow-children of God. *Maiorem caritatem nemo habet ut animam suam ponat quis pro amicis suis;* would that I had such strength. Such is the gist of my knowledge of the situation; I hope that this casts some light on your interest in the takeover of the Vatican. I have endeavored to keep this recounting to manageable length; I could have told somewhat more, but it would only add detail to the overall picture presented here, and I believe that the total situation is best and most accurately depicted in broad, bold strokes. I offer you only those proofs of my sincerity as cannot be traced to me, for obvious reasons; *nunc dimittis servum tuum. Absterget Deus omnem lacrimam ab oculis sanctorum,* a servant of servants…



Pravda cartoon showing U.S. scientist and military officer exchanging a vial of AIDS virus for money.

AIDS
ACT OF GOD OR THE PENTAGON?

G.J. Krupey

AIDS still retains its controversial mien even if the initial hysteria, whipped up by media sensation-mongering and hate-mongering by the religious right, has been tempered somewhat as the feared “gay plague” failed to materialize as a “Black Death” style pandemic sweeping away all life in its path worldwide.

But hysteria is still bubbling under the surface along with the concomitant threat of reactionary panic that always accompanies public freak-outs. Recent demands from some quarters, that AIDS-stricken health care workers must submit to mandatory AIDS testing and be potentially liable for criminal prosecution, is just one more proof of that.

Confusion still reigns in the public forum on the AIDS question, and bigotry still dominates the discourse. AIDS is a many-faceted subject that taxes the patience and often the credulity of even the most “objective” non-partisan investigator. It is a mystery that seems to become only more mysterious the more one studies it; where one Hydra head is chopped off, two more reappear. Certainly the most important question to those already suffering from AIDS is how to cure it, how to prevent it. At this point, the question as to what causes AIDS is secondary, and there is a host of contradictory theories as to what the source or sources of AIDS may be.

It is not my purpose here to summarize or debate those theories. Instead I will focus on the theory, once quite popular in some circles but seems to have fallen by the wayside: that AIDS was the result, deliberate or accidental, of chemical-biological warfare research by the US military.

On June 9, 1969 there appeared before the House of Representatives Subcommittee on Department of Defense Appropriations for 1970 one Dr. Donald M. MacArthur, Deputy Director for the DOD's Research and Technology and a former manager for the Chemistry and Life Sciences Research Center of Melpar. At Melpar, Dr. MacArthur "was responsible for the management and direction of a large number of defense and space programs representing a broad spectrum of disciplines from instrumentation engineering to biology. These programs represented applied research in the physical and life sciences…"[1] Dr. MacArthur was one of five witnesses, three scientists and two military officers, appearing before the subcommittee to testify on the progress of US military Chemical-Biological Warfare programs and to see appropriations for more money to develop the programs even further.[2] Dr. MacArthur spoke on the subject of "Synthetic Biological Agents". He said:

"Molecular biology is a field that is advancing very rapidly, and eminent biologists believe that within a period of five to ten years it would be possible to produce a synthetic biological agent that does not naturally exist and for which no natural immunity could have been acquired."[3]

To the question of Florida Representative Robert L.F. Sikes as to whether the US was then currently engaged in such research, MacArthur answered in the negative. When Sikes, either a naif or a laconic wit, asked "Why not? Lack of money or lack of interest?", MacArthur bluntly replied, "Certainly not lack of interest."

Sikes then asked MacArthur to provide the subcommittee with information on the requirements, advantages, time and costs of such a program. MacArthur provided an outline of observations from "a small group of experts" who had considered the matter. In summary, he noted that:

1. — All presently known biological agents representing "naturally occurring disease," are known to scientists worldwide, and "are easily available to qualified scientists for research, either for offensive or defensive purposes."

2. — “Within the next 5 to 10 years, it would probably be possible to make a new infective micro-organism which could differ in certain important aspects from any known disease-causing organisms. Most important of these is that it might be refractory to the immunological and therapeutic processes upon which we depend to maintain our relative freedom from infectious disease.”

3. — “A research program to explore the feasibility of this could be completed in approximately five years at a total cost of ten million dollars.”

4. — Such a program would be difficult to establish due to the relative newness of the molecular biology field. The field has few “highly competent scientists” and most are in private university laboratories and “adequately supported from sources other than DOD.” MacArthur did believe it possible “to initiate an adequate program through the National Academy of Sciences – National Research Council.

“The matter was discussed with the NAS-NRC in such a controversial endeavor have led us to postpone it for the past 2 years.”

MacArthur concluded by saying:

“It is a highly controversial issue, and there are many who believe such research should not be undertaken lest it lead to yet another method of massive killing of large populations. On the other hand, without the sure scientific knowledge that such a weapon is possible, and an understanding of the ways it could be done, there is little that can be done to devise defensive measures.

“Should an enemy develop it there is little doubt that this is an important area of potential military technological inferiority in which there is no adequate research program.”[4]

It could be merely coincidence, but the theoretical disease that Dr. MacArthur refers to in his testimony (see #2 above), which would be “refractory” (that is, resistant to the immunological and therapeutic processes upon which we depend to maintain our relative freedom from infectious disease), in other words, a germ that would resist the body’s own

natural system of protecting and healing itself from the ravages of infectious diseases, sounds like Acquired Immune Deficiency Syndrome, AIDS.

After all, what better way to “acquire” an immune deficiency than if somebody put it there? It is interesting to note how, in concluding his pitch for research into the theoretical immuno-suppressive synthetic microbe, Dr. MacArthur raised the ethical objections only to dismiss them, in typical and time-tested Cold War fashion, with the dread raised by the spectre of the “enemy.”

MacArthur pleaded for superiority in the Chemical-Biological Warfare race, a “germ gap,” so to speak. Earlier in his testimony, he even claimed that “we have to believe [the Soviets] are probably working in the same area.”[5] The funds were awarded, and one can only speculate what would have happened if they hadn’t been disbursed. But recent revelations about the Pentagon’s “Black Budget,” the official unaccounted-for billions it receives for whatever purposes it deems fit, make one wonder if such public displays of hat-in-hand begging for military appropriations are shadow plays for the purpose of convincing civilians that the military-industrial establishment still defers to civilian control. MacArthur’s testimony shows that considerable study and planning were given beforehand to the idea of “defensive measures” against synthetic biological agents and the program to pursue such research; is it not possible that the research was already being conducted prior to the 6/9/69 hearings, that the whole procedure was merely rubberstamping after the facts?

Perhaps as a result of that “growing criticism of the CB program” in the same year as these hearings, President Nixon declared that the US would no longer produce or use biological warfare agents. Chemical warfare agents were conspicuous by their absence (this was, after all, the era of napalm and Agent Orange in Vietnam).

In 1972 an international treaty banning the use of bio-warfare agents was signed by the US, but Senate ratification did not occur until 1975, leaving three years for R&D to produce some sort of malevolent fruit. But the treaty provided for “defensive” biological warfare research, the same sort of

research that Dr. MacArthur assured Congress would be exclusively pursued.

However, the difference between “defensive” and “offensive” biological warfare research is moot if not meaningless, leaving a large enough loophole to render the treaty a figleaf and a charade.

The AIDS epidemic first surfaced in 1981 when reports of the first cases were documented and classified (originally as GRID — Gay Related Immune Deficiency) In retrospect, previously inexplicable cases of deaths due to mysterious factors that fit the AIDS model were found as far back as early 1979. Some researchers have claimed to have found even earlier cases, perhaps as far back as 1976.[6]

Those first cases were found in two groups of gay men in Los Angeles and New York City. The Los Angeles fatalities were due to pneumocistis carinii pneumonia (PCP), a previously rare pneumonia, while the New York deaths resulted from Kaposi’s Sarcoma, a slow-developing cancer that begins with skin lesions and works its way into the internal organs. Also previously rare, it was mainly found in elderly men of Mediterranean ethnic origins. Other than the fact that the victims in both scenarios were gay men with weakened immune systems that allowed rare and opportunistic infections to kill them, there was no other evidence to link the cases. But as the numbers of victims skyrocketed, and symptoms that had appeared separately in the New York and Los Angeles cases appeared nationwide, the media began sounding the alarm over the menace of “gay AIDS.” AIDS could not have come at a worse time for the gay liberation movement. In the early 1980s, its struggle against bigotry, always an uphill battle, was dealt severe setbacks by the hate campaign orchestrated by the religious right in the late 1970s. While homophobia alone cannot explain Reagan’s election to the White House, it didn’t hinder it. In effect, the gay community was already suffering from political AIDS when pathological AIDS hit it.

And it didn’t take the religious right long to swarm to the attack. It wasn’t long before hysterical talk about tattooing AIDS patients for identification, or rounding them all up for quarantine became common, not only among the lunatic fringers of the right, but from mainstream conservatives like William F. Buckley, Jr. and R. Emmett Tyrell, Jr. To the

right, AIDS was both symbol and proof of the folly of granting perverts license to wallow in their depravity, maybe even to exist. They well understood the potential the disease contained for swaying the general public away from a grudging acceptance of gay rights back to a position of fear and loathing.

There was certainly good reason for everyone to be concerned with the looming spread of a disease that incapacitated the immune system to the point where catching a common cold or developing an infection from a simple cut could turn into a possible death sentence. And as the disease spread to include such diverse at-risk groups as IV drug users, hemophiliacs, and Haitians, panic and confusion spread with the news. What was going on here, anyway? What was the missing link between the four at-risk groups? Elaborate and often illogical theories were offered to explain that link, as well as the origins of the disease. Among the more ludicrous origin theories, all the more so since it was taken entirely seriously for quite some time, was the African Green Monkey theory. It postulated that the transmission of AIDS began when a human being in Africa was bitten by an AIDS-carrying monkey, or the monkey was eaten by the human, or the human had sex with the monkey. This black African monkey-biter or monkey-fucker eventually transmitted it to a white American homosexual, who infected other gays, etc. The inability to find any natural analog to the AIDS virus in primates hasn’t deterred this theory from still finding credence in certain circles or from slipping into urban legend.

Some other culprits considered as the source of AIDS were dioxin, arboviruses (spread by flying insects, like mosquitoes) such as maguari and dengue, Swine Fever Virus, radiation from electrical fields, nutritional deficiencies, inhalation of amyl nitrate “poppers” by gay men (used to enhance and prolong orgasm), and a new strain of syphilis misdiagnosed as a new disease. Proponents of all theories were able to marshal enough facts to make their theory as believable as the next, especially those who could point to AIDS and AIDS-like symptoms in people not fitting the profile of any at-risk group. But it was more difficult to reconcile the various theories to explain the by now (mid ‘80s) worldwide AIDS pandemic. Brazil was

second only to the US in reported cases, and the disease was devastating central Africa, where it was primarily a heterosexual phenomenon.

Was there more than one type of AIDS? It certainly seemed so at times. How else could its far-flung empire of diverse subjects be accounted for? And why now, all at once? Certainly a handful of faggots couldn't be responsible for all this, could they? Gradually the prominence of the "gay plague" began to diminish in importance for all but the most rabid homophobes, who believed AIDS was God's punishment on homosexuals and its spread to non-gays as His wrath at tolerance of them.

There was one other theory on the origin of AIDS: that it was man-made, genetically engineered in some laboratory and released, either accidentally or deliberately, on a world unprepared for it. It was a claim that cut across political and sexual lines, and caused a war of words between the two belligerent superpowers, then at the height of renewed cold war tensions.

On July 4, 1984, the New Delhi, India, newspaper, *The Patriot*, published an article making the first detailed charges of AIDS being a CBW agent. An anonymous American anthropologist was quoted claiming that AIDS was genetically engineered at the US Army's Biological Warfare Laboratory at Fort Derrick, near Frederick, Maryland. To prove its point, articles from the Army's own official magazine *Army Research, Development and Acquisition* were cited. The authors of one cited article were Lt. Col. Karl Pedersen, Jr. and Col. John Albertson, the (then) director of the Institute of Infectious Diseases and Director of the Medical Engineering Laboratory, respectively. The article cited dealt with "natural and artificial influences on the human immune system."[7] The *Patriot* article also claimed that "Fort Derrick scientists, with the help of the Centers for Disease Control, and under Pentagon contract, travelled to Zaire and Nigeria, and then to Latin America, to collect information on a 'powerful virus that could not be found in Europe or Asia."[8]

But it wasn't until the Soviet journal *Literaturnya Gazeta* repeated the charges made by the Indian newspaper on October 30, 1985, that the accusation became an international controversy. The story was picked up worldwide, but American newspapers, predictably, ignored the story until

the US government officially denounced the Soviet article as anti-American disinformation, and leaving it at that.

But the Soviets continued to cover the story, quoting two physicians, John Seale, a London venereologist, and Nathanial Lehrman, an American psychiatrist, to back their claims. This gained an official protest from the US ambassador to the Soviet Union.[9] But in 1986, a pair of East German scientists, Jakob and Lilli Segal, issued a 52 page pamphlet, "AIDS: USA Home Made Evil; Not Imported from Africa," which they distributed in English-speaking African countries. Just more commie agitprop?

The Segals were visited by two American embassy officials in East Berlin on October 10, 1986. "The officials claimed to be a historian and political counsel, respectively. But Segal said, 'I am positive they were from the CIA — and that they were deeply concerned that the cover-up over the origin of AIDS was going to be exposed.' The officials questioned Segal about `what he knows, what he thinks, where he got his information from, and what he intends doing with the report.' The State Department acknowledged sending officials to the Segal home, but said it was merely `to point out the fallacies of the report.'"[10]

This account was found in the *London Sunday Express* of October 26, 1986. This tabloid interviewed Segal (stressing that, although resident of a communist country, he held no particular political views), Seale, and an American, Dr. Robert Strecker, another proponent of the AIDS as bio-warfare agent theory. The *Express* story alarmed the State Department more than any other incident prior to it because it was the first time the charge had been made in a Western paper, and a conservative one at that. On April Fools Day in 1987 the State department accused the *New Delhi Patriot* as being a communist front for publicizing the AIDS as bio-warfare story. (Was this timing merely a coincidence, or does someone in the State Department possess a sophisticated sense of humor?)

Ignored by both sides was the fact that speculations about the possible deliberate deployment of AIDS had circulated throughout the alternative and gay press for years before the *Patriot* story. As an example, a gay newspaper, *New York Native,* ran a letter from an anonymous source who

claimed to have worked at Fort Detrick's Biological Warfare Lab, and that it had deliberately released AIDS with the intention to infect gay men as part of a program called "Operation Firm Hand."[11]

In 1969, after Richard Nixon's supposed ban on the production of CBW agents, part of the grounds at Fort Detrick's Biological Warfare Laboratory were renamed the Frederick Cancer Research Facility and given to the National Cancer Institute for "civilian medical research" The military's grounds were also renamed as US Army Medical Research Institute for Infectious Diseases, dedicated exclusively, in conformity with Nixon's great humanitarian crusade, to "defensive" research into CBW. But, "within two years of its foundation, the Institute's staff and budget had trebled."[12]

Even one who does not accept the AIDS as military conspiracy theory must wonder exactly what use the National Cancer Institute and the Army's Bio-Warfare Lab would have for each other. Odder still was the fact that the NCI's AIDS Task Force, directed by Dr. Robert Gallo, anounced in 1984 that it had discovered the cause of AIDS, a virus dubbed HIV — Human Immunosuppressive Virus; and this only a year after the search was begun — in conjunction with the Frederick Cancer Research Facility. At first glance this would seem to deny the possibility of Fort Detrick being the birthplace of AIDS. After all, if the military were engaged in a clandestine program to kill off homosexuals or other minorities by disease, why would they let the civilian researchers discover the means by which they did it and threaten to blow their cover?

The government often has its own reasons for leaking otherwise "sensitive information," often highly selective, to certain individuals at special times. If the army accidentally released into the civilian population a bio-warfare experiment that became known as AIDS, and felt compelled to find a cure for it, they might find it more expedient to invite civilians, on various "need-to-know" bases, to do the dirty work of cleaning up their mess, possibly even manipulating them into thinking they "discovered" the culprit all by themselves. Remember, Dr. MacArthur was seeking funding for a study of a CBW micro-organism that would be resistant to immunological processes, a disease with no known cure. It isn't likely that

army scientists, considering the business they're in, would first think of its cure.

Whether or not the military conceived AIDS, they definitely were curious about it once it became known:

"On February 18, 1987, the *Philadelphia Daily News* carried a McClatchy News Service report that Col. David L. Huxsoll, chief of UAAMRIID, told a meeting of scientists that the Soviet charges [of US creation of AIDS] were unfounded 'disinformation.' In his zeal to disprove the allegations, Huxsoll reportedly added, '…studies at the Army laboratories have shown that the AIDS virus would be an extremely poor biological warfare agent.' When contacted by the author [Robert Lederer] Huxsoll denied having made the statement… The McClatchy reported told the author that Huxsoll had been quite clear. 'He specifically said that once it [AIDS] surfaced, they screened it as they do any infectious agent. He said they had definitely looked at it."[13]

The Pentagon itself admitted in a press release in April, 1987 that it was involved in research to find a cure for AIDS. But why? What possible motivation could the military, of all institutions, have in combatting AIDS? What would be its reason for helping to find a cure for a disease that primarily infects gays and non-white peoples? Compassion? Not bloody likely.

The military's interest in a cure for AIDS is more sinister. According to a 1987 story in a California newspaper[14], "The US military is stockpiling vaccines and drugs to be used to protect the armed forces — but not civilians — during a biological war… But the military's research in the field — including a search for an anti-AIDS drug — is unclassified, and the treatments do find non-military uses, said Col. David L. Huxsoll."

Col. Huxsoll, whom we have previously met, claimed that the institute had developed "16 vaccines and drugs against natural toxins and viruses," but didn't have the "budgets big enough to lay down a sizable stockpile of these kinds of materials." What the military did have was stockpiles "intended for about 3 million people, including all the armed forces, reservists, and the national guard." Colonel Huxsoll maintained that the

researchers at Fort Detrick did not over-step the bounds of the anti-biowarfare treaty. “Talking about altering an organism, I’m not going to try to second-guess how somebody could alter that… There’s enough bad organisms out there that you don’t have to fiddle around and make new ones.” He related that after animal-testing of a drug or vaccine, tests were then made on humans, “volunteer servicemen.” According to Dr. Jacob Segal, the testees were neither “volunteers” nor servicemen, but prisoners promised their freedom for their participation as guinea pigs. These contaminated ex-cons then were set loose to spread the ADDS virus with which they had been infected.

Colonel Huxsoll didn’t mention the Pentagon’s other plans, made public less than a year before, to contain the spread of AIDS by “mandatory and overt identification” of AIDS inflicted by a “Star of David” concept — as in the yellow badges Jews in Nazi Germany were required to wear in public, all the easier to identify them when it came time to cart them off to concentration camps. This seems to have been a proposal the Pentagon was keeping on hold until the right time, such as when public hysteria reached a high enough peak for such a blatantly authoritarian proposal to become palatable to the masses.[15]

The proposal, based on the completely false claim that AIDS can be transmitted through casual contact (such as touching a doorknob or toilet seat), “was initiated by two [San Francisco] Bay Area-based centers with a long history of military research… AIMS (Advanced Investigation of Medical Science) Group, has done classified work on biological and chemical warfare… [and] the Hoover Institute, the anti-Soviet think tank which lists Ronald Reagan as an honorary member.”[16] Another Hoover Institute member embroiled in the AIDS controversy was the late philosopher Sidney Hook, who was active in the US counter-campaign against Soviet claims of US engineering of AIDS. To Hook, anyone who suggested the possibility of AIDS being the product of US military research, such as Dr. Robert Strecker, was a Soviet disinformation agent. A self-described “humanist” and “democratic socialist,” Hook’s membership in the reactionary Hoover Institute and “loyal oppositionist” defense of the US government raise some interesting questions.

Again it must be asked, what was the Pentagon up to with this frightening proposal? To round up and eliminate the loose ends of their botched experiment, perhaps? What jurisdiction does the military have in a public health crisis, and more importantly in a supposed democracy, should it have any? Was AIDS an agent provocateur created to produce just the sort of internal “clear and present danger” that would justify suspension of civil liberties and the imposition of martial law?

If the military-security apparatus did indeed create AIDS and targeted homosexuals as scapegoats, how was it accomplished? The answer might lie in the trial of a hepatitis B vaccine conducted in New York City in November, 1978. Candidates were specified to be only non-monogamous males between the ages of 20 and 40, and according to one source[17], “homosexuals received a different vaccine from heterosexuals.” The tests were conducted under the auspices of the National Institutes of Health and the Center for Disease Control, two institutions that would figure prominently later in the AIDS story. Between 1040 and 1083 gay men were inoculated. Two months later, in January, 1979, the first known case of AIDS was diagnosed. By 1981, 25-50% of those homosexual men who had received the vaccine had AIDS. By 1984, it was 64%, the figures for subsequent infection rates of participants in that suspicious study are allegedly “unavailable”, safe in the hands of the Justice Department.[18]

Then, in 1982, more gay men were “vaccinated” in Chicago, St. Louis, Denver, Los Angeles, and San Francisco, a total of 1402.[19] The gay plague was on.

But if this “vaccination program” was the source of the AIDS virus among the white homosexuals, what is the connection to Haitians, IV drug users, and hemophiliacs? And what is the source of the nearly continent-wide AIDS plague in Africa?

The official mainstream media AIDS theory, courtesy of Dr. Robert Gallo, official (American) discoverer of HIV/HTLV-III, went like this: AIDS originated in Africa (remember the Green Monkey) where it was transmitted to Haitian teachers in the former Belgian Congo. These Haitians brought back with them to Haiti, where slumming white gay American

tourists contracted it from Haitian male prostitutes — and the rest is history. Obviously IV drug users are brought into this easily, some gay junkie supposedly passing his needle to another though non-gay junkie. Hemophiliacs come in from contaminated blood supplies.

But what is the origin of AIDS in Africa? Both human beings and green monkeys have co-existed in Africa for countless eras, why did this disease suddenly surface in the late twentieth century? Why not earlier? Why now?

“An attempt should be made to ascertain whether viruses can in fact exert selective effects on immune function, e.g. by affecting T cell function as opposed to B cell function. The possibility should also be looked into that the immune response to the virus itself may be impaired if the infecting virus damages more or less selectively the cells responding to the viral antigens.”[20]

That was not from Dr. MacArthur`s testimony before Congress in 1969, but comes from a 1972 bulletin of the United Nations’ World Health Organization. Once again it would appear that AIDS or something that preceded it, was on the minds of many researchers prior to its official “discovery.”

On May 11, 1987, on a front-page, headline story, the *London Times* declared “Smallpox Vaccine Triggered AIDS”. The vaccination program took place throughout Africa in the mid-1970s and was conducted by WHO. In exactly those areas where the WHO vaccination program was undertaken are to be found the areas most devastated by AIDS. It would be interesting to know who was the major funder of the program, and which nation furnished the key personnel.[21]

According to Dr. Robert Strecker, AIDS was predicted (and in medical science, prediction does not so much mean a projection into the future of a personal opinion, but making an educated guess based on probabilities and knowledge of current research in the field) as early as 1975 by a cancer researcher from Denmark, a J. Corbensen, who, at a convention of cancer researchers in Tokyo warned that a pandemic — a worldwide epidemic — of viral cancer was imminent. He warned that it would cause more deaths than the great flu epidemic of 1918, which killed an estimated one-fifth to

one-third of the world's population, and blamed it all on scientists irresponsibly growing animal viruses in human tissue cell culture. When contacted by Dr. Strecker regarding his predictions, Corbensen denied ever having made the speech, despite its being printed in the *Bibliographica Haemologica,* a professional journal, the same year. (22) Corbensen worked for, according to Dr. Strecker, the World Health Organization.

Dr. Strecker himself deserves more attention. He got into AIDS research by accident. A private practitioner from the Los Angeles area, he and his brother Ted, a lawyer, were asked to prepare a proposal for a HMO (Health Maintenance Organization) for Security Pacific Bank of California. What they needed to know was how much money for potential AIDS treatments for infected employees their health insurance would be required to pay out. In their research, the Strecker brothers came to the stunning conclusion that AIDS was a man-made disease, that it was not a homosexual disease nor a venereal disease, that it could be carried and transmitted by mosquitoes, that there were at least six different AIDS viruses worldwide, and that condoms would not prevent the spread of AIDS. AIDS was, Dr. Strecker concluded, actually a form of viral cancer, and contagious. He theorized that AIDS was a hybrid, the splicing together of bovine (cow) leukemia virus and sheep visna (brain-rot) virus, a lethal combination and one hard to understand as emerging spontaneously from nature.

Dr. Strecker's vision of a humanity infected with the fatal product of some military research laboratory gone insane is a grim one. He estimated the complete decimation of Africa by the turn of the century, and the complete overnight death of Japan. Strecker warned that unless a cure for AIDS was found — soon — that the entire human race faced extinction.

Strecker's opinions were treated by the mass media in the usual fashion: he was either ridiculed or simply ignored. He was one of those accused by Sidney Hook of being a Soviet disinformation agent. Strecker may be an alarmist with a particularly pessimistic viewpoint, but for a man who supposedly doesn't know what he is talking about, strange and tragic coincidences have plagued him since he began to lecture the public on the real cause of AIDS and its creator(s). The first of these was the mysterious death of his brother Ted, who helped him pursue the AIDS investigation. He

was found dead of a gunshot wound in his Springfield, Missouri home on August 11, 1988, apparently self-inflicted. Dr. Strecker admits that “in the past he suffered from depression and monumental frustration at the relative lack of interest in his findings.”

Dr. Strecker spoke with him the night before his death. Ted was cheerful, in good spirits, and looking forward to certain new developments that promised progress. The next day he was found dead, his 22 caliber rifle next to him. No note, no message, no goodbyes to anyone. “Very untypical of him.”[23]

Another fatality close to Dr. Strecker was Illinois State Representative Douglas Huff who was found dead in his home of an overdose of heroin and cocaine on September 22, 1988. Huff had been beating the drum on the AIDS cover-up in both the Illinois State House and through the media, one of the few politicians who took Dr. Strecker seriously enough to try to present his views to a larger and a more influential audience.

Perhaps Dr. Strecker’s brother really committed suicide in a fit of deep depression. Perhaps Rep. Huff was only a drug-addled paranoid trying to gain notoriety. Perhaps that is exactly the impression somebody wanted these two men to leave behind them, in order to discredit themselves and Dr. Strecker.[22]

Perhaps the main reason why the AIDS-Biowarfare conspiracy theory seems to be less palatable to many these days might have something to do with the discrediting of the HIV-AIDS theory as a foundation to be built upon, the emergence of new, alternative treatments and therapies that have had much success in helping AIDS patients to regain their health and lives and cast serious doubt upon the official CDC/NIH position on HIV. AIDS patients treated as if they were suffering from syphilis, given massive doses of penicillin and typhoid vaccine showed remarkable turnaround. Co-factors were begun to be seen as increasingly important, and even Dr. Luc Montagnier who isolated HIV before Robert Gallo (Montagnier called it LAV and decided to share credit for its discovery — and royalties for the blood test which detects the antibody to the virus — with Gallo after a long litigation that included a war of words between the US and French

governments, and donate the royalties to an AIDS research foundation. All this while people were dying slow, lingering deaths) has now repudiated the HIV hypothesis, claiming that the real culprits are mycoplasmas, microbes that seem to be the deadly co-factor to the HIV virus.[25]

Yet while research continues to unravel the mystery surrounding the cause of AIDS, disturbing connections to military germ warfare continue to arise.

A scientist with the US Armed Forces Institute of Pathology in Washington, Shyh-Ching Lo, identified a previously unknown infectious agent in people with AIDS, a mycoplasma microbe which caused AIDS-like symptoms and death in monkeys, something that the injection of merely HIV into animals has supposedly never done. Lo named his discovery VLIA for Virus Like Infectious Agent. Lo has kept a low profile, partially because "army security is keeping a very tight lid on Dr. Lo's findings."[26]

Once again the military's interest in this phenomenon raises questions as to the nature of their concern with AIDS. Why does the military always seem to be hovering on the periphery of AIDS research, if not in the middle of it? The government's, especially the military's, covert experimentations on unwitting American citizens, both individuals and large populations, is precedented and documented, more than can be summarized here[27]. So it hardly seems responsible to dismiss those who insist upon a military connection to AIDS as mere paranoids or political opportunists until serious investigations into the matter have been made.

Unfortunately, such investigations, should they be conducted, would encounter one greater obstacle after another, because the problem is not merely the military and any covert biowarfare experiments (or worse) that it may be conducting, but the entire system. Now more than ever, the American government is a power unto itself, the apparatus that serves the interests of an elite, amoral clique and not that of the people as a whole. To expect truth and justice from a state that can block every inquiry with the excuse of "national security" is to expect too much. To solve the AIDS mystery may well require a radical cure of more than a medical nature.

Endnotes

1) Department of Defense Appropriations for 1970, Hearings Before a Subcommittee of the Committee of Appropriations, House of Representatives, Ninety-first Congress. First Session, Part 6, Chemical and Biological Warfare, Monday, June 9, 1969, p. 104. U.S. Government Printing Office, Washington, 1969.

2) The other witnesses were: Dr. B. Harris, Deputy Assistant Director of Chemical Technology, DDR&E Dr. K.C. Emerson, Acting Deputy Assistant Secretary of the Army for R&D (Research and Development) Brig. Gen. W.S. Stone, Jr., Director of Materiel Requirements, Headquarters, US Army Materiel Command Col. J.J. Osick, Chief, Systems and Requirements Division, Directorate of CBR and Nuclear Operations, Office of the Asst. Chief of Staff for Force Development.

3) Ibid.

4) Ibid.

5) Ibid.

6) Patton, Cindy; *Sex and Germs: The Politics of AIDS,* 1985, Boston, South End Press, pp. 22-4; Brown, Tony; "What Killed Max Robinson?", *Tri-State Defender,* December 31, 1988

7) Lederer, Robert; "Precedents for AIDS?: Chemical-Biological Warfare. Medical Experiments, and Population Control", *Covert Action Information Bulletin* #28, Summer 1987, pp.36-7.

8) Ibid.

9) Ibid, pp.38-9.

10) Ibid.

11) Ibid, p.36.

12) Ibid, p.40.

13) Ibid.

14) Kiernan, Vincent; “US Storing Vaccines for Military”, Hayward, Ca., *The Daily Review.* Wednesday, February 18, 1987.

15) *San Francisco Chronicle,* February 9, 1986; *San Francisco Examiner,* February 9, 1986; both as quoted in Anonymous, “Nazi-Style “‘Final Solution’. Next?: Pentagon Wants to Brand AIDS Victims,” *Worker’s Vanguard,* April 11, 1986.

16) Ibid.

17) Waves Forest; “Designer Diseases: AIDS as Biological and Psychological Warfare”, *Now What*, #1, Fall 1987, PO Box 768, Monterey, CA 93942.

18) Ibid.

19) Brown, Tony; “What Killed Max Robinson?”

20) Waves Forest; “Designer Diseases”; Douglass, William Campbell, MD, *WHO Murdered Africa*, no date, Clayton, Ga.

21) Brown, Tony; transcript of a speech given by Dr. Robert Strecker May 25, 1990 at the Garvin Theater, Santa Barbara, Ca.

22) Strecker, Robert (?), *Is AIDS Man Made?:* The Strecker Memorandum, no date, The Strecker Group, 1501 Colorado Blvd., Eagle Rock, Ca. 90041.

23) Ibid.

24) Ibid.

25) Farber, Celia and Anthony Liversidge, “AIDS: Words From the Front”, *Spin,* September, 1990, p. 71, 87-8; Farber’s AIDS column has been a regular feature in Spin, a popular music magazine, since its debut in the February 1988 issue. Farber has covered alternative treatments for AIDS, the controversy over AZT, and the political infighting among AIDS medical researchers (she was apparently the first to spotlight Dr. Peter Duesberg’s claim that HIV does not cause AIDS by itself, leading to a debate within her column between Duesberg and Gallo, architect of the official HIV theory). Yet Farber has not, to my knowledge, once mentioned the possibility of the bio-warfare agent theory.

26) Regush, Nicholas; “AIDS: Words from the Front”, *Spin,* January, 1990, pp. 69-70.

27) Mitford, Jessica; *Kind and Usual Punishment: The Prison Business,* 1976, New York, Knopf. Jones, James H.; *Bad Blood: The Tuskegee Syphilis Experiment,* 1981, New York, The Free Press. Harris, Robert, and Jeremy Paxman; *A Higher Form of Killing: The Secret Story of Chemical and Biological Warfare,* 1982, New York, Hill and Wang. Consult your library for more depressing examples.

"CLINTON IS THE BEST GUY FOR US"

During the 1992 Presidential campaign, New York businessman Harry Katz telephoned David Steiner, President of AIPAC, the powerful Israeli lobby, at AlPAC's offices in Washington, D.C.. Upset with the power and arrogance of the political action committee, Katz recorded his conversation with Steiner and sent out the startlingly blunt transcript to the media. Snippets of the conversation were printed in the Village Voice and made the wire services. Steiner was immediately forced to resign, sacrificed to spin control. AIPAC characterized Steiner's comments as "boasts" that did not necessarily reflect the truth. But what is the truth? In a time of severe budget cuts and tax hikes, President Clinton has vowed not to touch one penny of the money earmarked for Israel.

David Steiner: L'chaim.

Harry Katz: Hello, how are you?

DS: Where are you located?

HK: I'm located in Queens, New York.

DS: Queens … Far Rockaway?

HK: Belle Harbor.

DS: Belle Harbor. I'm trying to get this list together. Would you ever get into the city?

HK: Sure, I do. Sure, you come frequently?

DS: Well, I come in from time to time. I have an office there, at AIPAC in the city. You know, I want you to understand… where did you get my name and phone number?

HK: Oh, I, urn, I called AIPAC…

DS: Yeah.

HK: And ah, I know you're the president of AIPAC.

DS: You should understand that, the political information that I gave you, those are personal choices…

HK: Sure, I understand.

DS: AIPAC does not rate or endorse candidates, does not solicit money…

HK: Yeah, look.

DS: I want you to understand that the choices I would give you are personal choices.

HK: I understand.

DS: I wonder if before … I want to get together with you next week.

HK: Next week would be fine.

DS: But in the meantime, I wonder if I can have one of my people get together with you and talk to you about it. They'll want to meet you and know who you are and all this. I have a … maybe if I can have Seth Buchwald call you, my New York director.

HK: That would be terrific.

DS: And we have a guy out there, Joel Schnur. And, are you Orthodox.?

HK: Ah, yes.

DS: Okay, Joel is Orthodox too. I am not.

HK: You're reform or…?

DS: I'm reform.

HK: Okay, let me just say…

DS: I was raised orthodox but I'm reform.

HK: Okay, let me just tell you that, I'll just hold you a minute. I'll be happy to meet with them. I know, I've heard the names, I'd be happy to meet with them, as a matter of fact I could, when I'm in Manhattan … are you ever in Manhattan?

DS: Sure, today I'm going to be there, but I can't, I'm meeting with the ambassador.

HK: Okay, I'll just ask you very very quickly. You know, like, in New York, you know, this is your own personal opinion, like in New York we have Abrams against D'Amato.

DS: Well, let me tell you what my personal position is. Okay?

HK: Yeah.

DS: From a Jewish point of view, I believe in political loyalty.

HK: Right.

DS: And if someone has been good for Israel, no matter who, if my brother would run against them, I would support them because they'd been good to Israel because that's an important message to people.

HK: Right.

DS: What I'm going to be doing for you…

HK: Now D'Amato, has he been good for Israel?

DS: You couldn't have a better … listen, I think Abrams would be good too, but that's not the message.

HK: Yeah.

DS: Ah…

HK: So the message, so the message is that ah… I agree with you all the way, that if somebody's been good for Israel, I'll take D'Amato. But you have no complaints with D'Amato?

DS: I have no complaints with D'Amato.

HK: Uh huh, so and ah, you know, let me tell you, Abrams might be, might be too liberal. I don't know if Abrams supported, let's say the ah, the war against Iraq.

DS: Yeah, I don't know, and ah, I don't know. But all I know is if I have a guy who is there and he's doing it, then I don't want to change, you know?

HK: Right. Let me ask you this very quickly and then I will…

DS: I'm going to have Seth call you because in the meantime I'm going to be preparing this list, what I'm doing is, I've asked my friends in the various campaigns, I've made about 30 calls, what I'm trying to put together who needs it the most, you know? Because you could dissipate a million dollars, but the point is to put it where it's going to do the most, I know Bob Kasten, who's been an outstanding friend and needs it I know…

HK: Excuse my ignorance. Bob Kasten is what state?

DS: From Wisconsin…

HK: Okay, is he Jewish?

DS: He's for loan guarantees, he happens to be a Republican.

HK: Okay, and but, he's good? He's…

DS: You couldn't have better.

HK: Is Kasten, Kasten's been very, very good and he's in trouble?

DS: He’s in big trouble. Les Aspin, who’s the Chairman of the Military Appropriations, a Democrat also from Wisconsin is really [unintelligible].

HK: You mean, Les Aspin is in trouble?

DS: In big trouble.

HK: I can’t believe it. I mean, I don’t, I don’t follow…

DS: Well see, what happened was, you know ah, when you get to know me, I’ll put you on my list and I’ll be sending all these things. A wealthy businessman decided to run, using all his own money. Aspin, ‘cause they sit on the finance committee for Aspin…

HK: Right…

DS: … programmed the last two weeks of, well, the last month of the campaign, for TV. This guy came in two months early and we didn’t have the money budgeted, so we’re out scratching around to raise money for him. So we, heck, I told him, I said that I’d go, I’ll sign on the bank on a loan for you, you know, that’s how important it is.

HK: Unbelievable. You know I read, I won’t hold you long, but I’d just tell you this…

DS: That’s okay.

HK: … I’ll just tell you this, I read the *New York Post*, and I don’t even read the papers too much, I don’t follow politics … are you ready for this?

DS: Yeah.

HK: Get ready for this. I read in the papers this morning, I think it was the *Post,* Barbara Boxer, in California…

DS: Yeah.

HK: … do you know who she is?

DS: I know who…

HK: She's originally from, ah, New York I think…

DS: A friend of yours?

HK: No, no, no. She's not a friend of mine, but she, ah, I think she's in trouble.

DS: Yeah, in that race we're okay either way, 'cause Bruce Herschensohn, who she's running against, is Jewish, and he's very strong on our issues.

HK: Okay, but Herschensohn…

DS: Herschensohn's a very conservative Republican.

HK: You know, he's come out of nowhere. He was like 30 points behind…

DS: Right.

HK: He's come out of nowhere with it.

DS: Because the truth of the matter is, she didn't always vote for foreign aid. We had a big meeting, I had a program in L.A. I had all four senatorial candidates there, and he ripped her apart. She has always voted against foreign aid.

HK: What about the one, in ah, the one line … uh, what's his name? I read it in the paper, it's just a shocker, politics is a crazy game. The black woman in Chicago…

DS: Carol Mosely Braun?

HK: She was going to win by 50 points…

DS: Oh it's down, she took the money, it's a big problem.

HK: It’s a big problem with her…

DS: And we have a problem with another good friend. You know Daniel Inouye, from Hawaii, he’s one of our best friends. It was Kasten-Inouye on the loan guarantees, Kasten-Inouye and Leahy…

HK: I heard, I saw it on, I know Inouye’s in trouble because of, he sexually harassed his hairdresser…

DS: We commissioned a poll and got some people, and I’ve got to raise $27,000 to pay for the poll … so what I’m trying to do is make a priority list, because I don’t know how far you want to go … how old are your kids by the way? You had three children that could write checks. Do they have their own checking accounts?

HK: Yes.

DS: So that’s not going to be…

HK: How old do they have to be?

DS: They can’t be one year old.

HK: I mean, could they be 18, 17?

DS: Sure, no problem, nobody’s going to bother you, but if you had infants, a four-year-old, let’s say, it’s not a contest.

HK: Let me tell you, I was planning, I was planning to… Inouye, by the way, is in real trouble? He’s been there forever…

DS: Yeah! Well, we might lose him. There’s been such a sea change, such trouble this year, I can’t believe all our friends that are in trouble. Because there’s an anti-incumbency mood, and foreign aid has not been popular. I met with [U.S. Secretary of State] Jim Baker and I cut a deal with him. I got, besides the $3 billion, you know they’re looking for the Jewish voters, and I’ll tell him whatever he wants to hear…

HK: Right.

DS: Besides the $10 billion in loan guarantees, which was a fabulous thing, $3 billion in foreign, in military aid, and I got almost a billion dollars in other goodies that people don't even know about.

HK: Such as?

DS: $700 million in military drawdown, from equipment that the United States Army's going to give to Israel; $200 million the US government is going to preposition materials in Israel, which Israel can draw upon, put them in the global warning protection system So when if there's a missile fired, they'll get the same advanced notification that the US, is notified, joint military exercises —I've got a whole shopping list of things.

HK: So this is from Baker?

DS: From Baker and from the Pentagon.

HK: So, not so, not…

DS: Why did he do it, you know, why did he do it? Last year I was a bum. This year I said, "Look Jim, we're going to fight on the F-15s. Israel doesn't want to fight," I said, "but some people on it are gong to come up on the floor of the Senate and the House and they're going to fight. If you'll do this, I think I can hold them back. But you've got to do it right away." They didn't want to fight. I said, "You don't want a fight before the election. It's going to hurt Bush. We don't want a fight before the election. We don't want to fight at all. Why can't we work something out?" So we cut a deal. You can't repeat this.

HK: You're right. But you met with Baker..

DS: Personally.

HK: Personally? Because you know, he's the one who cursed, who cursed the Jews.

DS: Of course, do you think I'm ever going to forgive him for that?

HK: Unbelievable. I said…

DS: Do you think I could ever forgive Bush for what he did September 12th a year ago? What he said about the Jews for lobbying in Washington?

HK: Do you think that Baker has a legitimate concern for the Jews? From what I hear, do you think he's anti-Semitic?

DS: I wouldn't go so far as to say that. He's a pragmatic businessman, he's a very tough lawyer. He does whatever it takes.

HK: And that's why…

DS: If we didn't have an election this year, you would get [unintelligible] from him.

HK: Let me ask you a quick question. Just a quick question here. You know Perot, you know, I'm telling you this is scary. I don't know what you think of Perot, but if Perot hadn't backed out… I watched the debates. I thought Perot did marvelous in the debates.

DS: He doesn't know how to govern. He's not going to make it. And there was an incident where his daughter was going out with a Jewish professor at school and he said, "I wouldn't have my daughter marry a Jew."

HK: So Perot, they say that if Perot hadn't backed out in July, and if he would have gotten himself a good running mate, you know…

DS: He wouldn't win, but it would go to the House of Representatives. The Democrats would win in the House of Representatives.

HK: So if it goes to the House, the Democrats would win for sure.

DS: For sure.

HK: Okay let me ask you last question and then I'll be happy to meet with your New York people…

DS: You know, you sound like my kind of guy. How old are you?

HK: Forty-two.

DS: You're a kid.

HK: I'm not a kid, I'm 42…

DS: I'm 63, you're a kid.

HK: I wish I was.

DS: We'll have to get you involved. I like you, we have a lot to talk about, about real estate, you know, I have so many great activities going on at AIPAC, you ought to think about coming to some of these things. I'll have a dinner this fall. I'll have 18-20 senators there. I run programs in Washington. We just had a, I had at Ted Kennedy's house last month kosher dinner. I brought foremost caterers down. I had 60 people on the couch for dinner. Last year, I did it in Al Gore's house.

HK: Right.

DS: Those are the things you should be getting involved in and knowing what's going on…

HK: Let me just ask you about Clinton. I want to tell you, you may not believe this, but I think that if Perot…

DS: Yeah, he would've given us a hard time. What's the name of your company, what do you do business as?

HK: We do business as HK, Inc.

DS: HK, Inc.?

HK: Right.

DS: Do you have a street address?

HK: Sure. 621 Beach 129th Street, Belle Harbor, Queens New York, 11694.

DS: Yeah, because on my computer you only show a post office box. This is your house? You work out of your house?

HK: Yeah, out of an office in the house… Look, Mr. Steiner…

DS: David. My father's Mr. Steiner.

HK: David, let me just ask you about Clinton. Honestly, what do you feel about Clinton?

DS: Well, I've known Bill Clinton for seven, eight years. I think he's got to be a lot better than George Bush. We have a lot of people in there. But he doesn't need money, he really doesn't need money. I'm a trustee of the Democratic National Committee. We collected $63 million for him so far.

HK: Who's collected $63 million?

DS: The Democratic National Committee and the Clinton campaign have raised $63 million.

HK: So they've already raised $63 million, so they don't need money.

DS: No, we need money, like we got a guy, Byron Dorgan, in North Dakota, who's going to be very good for us and we need money to make sure that he gets in. We've got people like that, because [unintelligible], whatever you give them would be a tickle on the elephant's behind. But when you give $5,000 or $10,000 to Bob Kasten, that's very meaningful.

HK: Let me ask you, I understand what you're saying. Clinton, when Clinton first started running a year ago, did he need money at that time?

DS: Yes, he did.

HK: I mean, did you help him out, 'cause that's the time…

DS: I personally am not allowed, as president of AIPAC, to get involved in the presidential campaign, because I have to deal with whoever wins. You know, I've got to go see Bush if he's there, but I helped him, we raised over a million dollars for him in New Jersey.

HK: For Clinton?

DS: For Clinton.

HK: And this was when, in the beginning?

DS: In the beginning, yes. After he won, before the convention.

HK: This is before the convention?

DS: Oh sure.

HK: Okay, let me ask you, you know, I…

DS: We've also raised for other guys who are running too, because they're friends. Harkin, the senator, you know you have to be with everybody.

HK: Let me ask you [talks abut getting cheated in business by Gentiles]. Let me ask you, Clinton, if he becomes, I mean what will he do for Israel, better than Bush, if he becomes, I know Bush gave you a hard time, this and that…

DS: I'll tell you, I have friends on the Clinton campaign, close associates. Gore is very committed to us.

HK: Right, Clinton if he, have you spoken to him?

DS: I've known Bill for seven, eight years from the National Governors' Association. I know him on a personal basis. I have friends. One of my friends is Hillary Clinton's scheduler, one of my officer's daughters works there. We gave two employees from AIPAC leaves of absence to work on the campaign. I mean, we have a dozen people in that campaign, in the headquarters.

HK: You mean in Little Rock?

DS: In Little Rock, and they're all going to get big jobs. We have friends. I also work with a think tank, the Washington Institute. I have Michael Mandelbaum and Martin Indy k being foreign policy advisers. Steve Speigel — we've got friends — this is my business.

HK: I understand, David.

DS: It's very complicated and the more you get into it, you'll love it. You sound like a smart guy.

HK: I'm a smart guy, but I have a, maybe because I'm more orthodox than you are, I've had bad experiences with Gentiles. Let me ask you, you know what "tachlis" means?

DS: Yeah, sure.

HK: From a practical point of view, if Clinton wins the presidency, and I'm sure he will, I hope so at least, what will be the benefits to Israel better than Bush? From a very practical point… I mean, you just told me that Bush gave you everything you wanted…

DS: Only, not everything, at the end, when we didn't want the F-15s, that's a terrible thing.

HK: Selling the F-15s? If Clinton is elected…

DS: Let me tell you the problem with the $10 billion in loan guarantees, right? We only have the first year. We have authorization from Congress, but it's at the discretion of the president every year thereafter, so if Bush is there, he could say, you know, use it as a club, you know. If you don't give up Syria, I won't give you the money. If you don't give up the Golan Heights.' It's at the discretion of the president. And that's why we need a friendly president and we have Bill Clinton's ear. I talked to Bill Clinton.

HK: And Bill Clinton has made a commitment that if he's elected…?

DS: He’s going to be very good to us.

HK: And he’ll go ahead with the loan guarantees?

DS: We didn’t talk about that specifically, listen, I didn’t ask him that, but I have full confidence that we’re going to have a much better situation. He’s got Jewish friends. A girl who worked for me at AIPAC stood up for them at their wedding. Hillary lived with her. I mean we have those relationships. We have never had that with Bush. Susan Thomases, who’s in there, worked with me on the Bradley campaign. We worked together for 13 years. She’s in there with the family. They stay with her when they come to New York. One of my officers, Monte Friedkin, is one of the biggest fund-raisers for them. I mean, I have people like that all over the country.

HK: So, I mean from a practical point of view…

DS: He’s going to be with us.

HK: I don’t say, this business, you say, Bush only went ahead with the loan guarantees for one year.

DS: We only have. It’s mandatory they give us the $2 billion for one year. After that it’s subject to the discretion of the president.

HK: You mean the other $8 billion

DS: That’s correct. On an annualized basis.

HK: Also, I heard that…

DS: They don’t have to give it to us.

HK: But if Clinton is elected…

DS: … feel reasonably certain we’re gonna get it.

Hk: He’s made that commitment?

DS: Well, he said he's going to help us. He's got something in his heart for the Jews, he has Jewish friends. Bush has no Jewish friends.

HK: Right.

DS: Reagan had something … *meshuga*, but at least he had a commitment. He knew Jews from the film industry, he was one of the best guys for us. He had an emotional thing for the Jews. Bush doesn't have it. That's what it is really, if you have a feeling for our people, for what we believe in. Bush is, there's a man with no principles. Absolutely no principles.

HK: I heard something about, but I never really understood it, with the scoring. One of my friends told me there's a difference in the scoring, but I don't understand…

DS: Scoring is like points that you pay.

HK: So let's say, if Bush is elected on the loans…

DS: No, we've got the scoring arranged, it's four and a half percent. It's all done.

HK: That's all done, even with Bush?

DS: Even with Bush. I've got that worked out.

HK: So that's all done.

DS: It's in the bill. It's all passed. He signed the bill. It's a matter of law.

HK: So it's already four and a half percent.

DS: We could've had it less, but then we couldn't…

HK: And Clinton, if he was president, he would give…?

DS: He couldn't change it, you cannot change it.

HK: No, but I’m saying, if he was president now, before the bill was signed, he would’ve given you the four and a half percent…

DS: I would’ve gotten less.

HK: I’m sorry?

DS: I would’ve gotten it cheaper.

HK: How much? Even two percent.

DS: Yeah, we thought we were going to get two percent. But Rabin gave it away.

HK: You mean Rabin didn’t bargain as good as he could have?

DS: That’s right.

HK: Unbelievable. So, if Clinton is elected, that will be the best…

DS: I think that will be the best we could do.

HK: You know, I just want to tell you one last thing. Do you have parents that come from Europe?

DS: Yeah, of course, from Glolitzano, near Krakow.

HK: You’re kidding, your parents are from Krakow?

DS: Near Krakow.

HK: Guess what?

DS: You too?

HK: My parents are from Krakow.

DS: Well, we’re not from Krakow, but from near Krakow. My mother’s from Rudnick, my father from Gruns, near Tano. Do you know where Tano

is?

HK: Yes. Let me tell you…

DS: … don't have many left. Everybody got killed.

HK: Let me tell you. The same with me. Let me tell you, my parents were the only ones who came out. Let me tell you, my…

DS: You're a Holocaust survivor?

HK: Yeah, no, not me, my parents.

DS: That's some experience, I've got two cousins, I've got one in Israel and one in France that came out of Mauthausen, I'll tell you, and everybody else dead on my father's side in Russia. I just brought six of them from Koshkent to Israel last year.

HK: Right. Let me tell you that, you know what my father always says? My father was a rich man in Poland, and he says, "Economic power is very good. You have to have money, but if you just have economic power and you don't have political power…"

DS: You've got nothing.

HK: You've got nothing.

DS: If we had AIPAC in the '30s and '40s, we would have saved millions of Jews. We would have the political power. But Jews were afraid to open their mouths. They didn't know how.

HK: AIPAC started after WWII?

DS; Oh, sure.

HK: And if you would have had AIPAC in the '30s?

DS: I feel we would've saved a lot of Jews.

HK: And Franklin Roosevelt, he could've done a lot better?

DS: Sure, he could. The Jews never opened their mouths. They were afraid. We're not afraid. They can curse me out, I don't care if they hate me, just as long as I get what we need for our people.

HK: So if you had a little lamp, a wishing lamp, and you could wish for either Bush, Clinton or Perot…

DS: Clinton.

HK: Clinton all the away? And in terms of Israel having political power, between the three candidates, the one who will give us the most political power?

DS: Clinton is the best guy for us.

HK: He's the best one.

DS: I hope you're serious about what you told me?

HI: I am, I'll tell you this [tells a long anecdote about David Souter promising to oppose abortion as a nominee and then reversing himself on the Supreme Court]. So I wish we had a Jewish candidate for president.

DS: I don't think the country's ready.

HK: If the country was ready, is there any Jewish candidate…?

DS: I wouldn't venture to say anything.

HK: You know who? I don't know him, I've never met him, Joe Lieberman.

DS: Oh, I'm very friendly with Joe. I'm having dinner with him Monday night.

HK: Let me tell you, I think Joe Lieberman would have, uh, would have, if he wasn't Jewish, that's the only problem he has. He's highly respected.

DS: I’d like to see him on the Supreme Court.

HK: If Clinton is elected, has he told you who he’s going to put on the Supreme Court?

DS: We’re talking now. We don’t have, no commitments yet. We’re just negotiating. We’re more interested right now, in the Secretary of State and the Secretary of the National Security Agency. That’s more important to us.

HK: If Clinton is elected, who do you think will be Secretary of State?

DS: We don’t know yet, we’re negotiating.

Hk: Who are you hoping for?

Ds: I’ve got a list. But I really can’t go through it. I’m not allowed to talk about it.

HK: But you figure, God willing, if Clinton’s elected…

DS: We’ll have access.

HK: You’ll have access and you’ll have a good input into who’s Secretary of State.

DS: I do believe so.

HK: And the other position is…

DS: National Security Adviser.

HK: Those are the two critical positions.

DS: Right.

HK: Gotcha. Well, David, thanks for talking with me.

DS: And we’re going to get together next week. I hope you’ll have your checkbook ready.

Otto Skorzeny, Hitler's Commando (top)
Skorzeny next to his Memorial painting? (bottom)

EXPOSING THE NAZI INTERNATIONAL

A typescript of four conversations taped in 1981 between an investigative reporter and a person purporting to be an operative for the post-war Nazi International (also known as the International Fascista, the Odessa, and Kamaradenwerk) came to Feral House under mysterious circumstances. Apparently, the investigative reporter found the material to be "too hot" and dropped it in the lap of the flea market and mail-order entrepreneur John Aes-Nihil, who in turn passed on the material to Feral House. An investigation enabled us to locate the interviewer, who wishes to remain anonymous. He was able to answer many of our questions about the alleged operative and the circumstances of the interview, as well as providing independent confirmation of at least one of the operative's visits to Nazi International chief Otto Skorzeny.

The editor, publisher and interviewer do not rule out the possibility that the information in this interview is wholly or partly imaginative or disinformational. There is another possibility. These conversations may provide the clearest view yet afforded of the inner workings of the post-war Nazi hierarchy, as well as providing clues about many of the conspiracies and major terrorist actions of the Twentieth Century.

Names of private individuals, included in the original manuscript, have been deleted.

My name is K., and for the past ten years I have served with the international Nazi Party organization as Inspector General or Liaison between central headquarters and operatives in the field. I would report on actions under way, supply data, information for possible actions in the future, and financial and personal data on individuals in different parts of the world. The Nazi Party organization is composed in two basic parts: the working organization, made up of former SS military officers, former members of the Nazi party, and the second section of German industrialists and businessmen who financially support and provide the logistics support for operations of this organization. They have been involved with and responsible for a number of operations in the past years, among them the DC-10, the problems it has had; recent fires and calamities in Nevada. They

have set up and provide logistic and financial support for organizations such as the Irish Republican Army and the Palestine Liberation Organization; they have and currently are involved with top level individuals in the Reagan administration; they have been involved with the West German government intimately regarding such events as the Munich massacre during the Olympics of ‘72.

My personal involvement with them is about ten years, and during that time I have moved up to the present position.

— Why don’t we start with your initial meeting [with a contact to the Organization] in the gun shop in Newport Beach, California? How did you happen to be there and what happened once you were there?

I was on a vacation, and I was interested in going to the gun shop. I used to collect various war memorabilia, and it looked like it had that type of thing in it. I was talking to a young man who was a salesman in the shop, and B. when he came in, we got into a conversation about military collectibles. By the end of the conversation he said, “Why don’t you come over to my house. I have some things I’d like to show you.” So we went over there and had a pretty nice discussion.

— What sort of things did he have, that he collects?

Medals, particularly medals and orders. I had said that I made trips overseas, and he said, “Ah, I go there quite often. I work for an American company and when I’m over there I have a chance to pick up various pieces.”

We eventually got around to Otto — Otto Skorzeny. He says, “Oh, yes, I’ve sold him some things.” I said, “I’d really like to meet him.” He said, “That’s fine. I could arrange that for you. Just let me know when you’re going.” A few weeks later I got in touch with him and told him I was going overseas again, to Europe and could he help me out? He said, “Sure. Stop by when you’re here again and I’ll give you something.”

— What year was this?

‘70, ‘71 maybe. He took out the card, Skorzeny’s card … it had Skorzeny’s handwritten signature across the front, like mine has, and it was blank in back, whereas mine has writing on it — you have the copy of it. He wanted to know when I’d be over there, so he could make me a specific appointment, and I said okay, gave him the time… and I went over.

I took the train from Paris to Munich, overnight train, the Orient Express, and I got settled in at the Konigshoff Hotel, about a block from the Munich train station. At that time I did not know what was going on, so I innocently called from the hotel, not from my room but from the reception desk, put through a call to Skorzeny and here’s his phone number, in Madrid, Spain. I got him on the line and said, “This is K – and B. said…” and he said, “Oh, yes, I’m looking forward to meeting you…” and that I come down at such-and-such a time.

Got down to Madrid and checked into the Castellano Hotel, the Hilton. We got there and called Otto and he said, “Just come right over.” From that first time and in all our subsequent meetings at his home, we never met at his office. I got to his home and one thing I noticed — then and at all times — at either end of this nice quiet residential street in the outskirts, there was always a car at each end with men in each car. I was a little nervous about it — it didn’t seem right.

— What was that first meeting like?

Each side was sizing up the other one. It was rather meaningless conversation, about my hobbies, interests, clothing, general World War II run-of-the-mill something-or-other, and he said when he was taken prisoner at Salzburg at the end of the war, the American GIs took all his medals off him; he had the Knight’s Cross, that was taken from him. He was very upset about that and said, “What I did was…” and he said he put the word out to people — who, I don’t know —but he eventually got all his medals back, and this was years later, this was maybe 8 years or so after he got to Spain.

He said, “I didn’t want a Knight’s Cross or a German Cross or any of the awards, I wanted mine. I knew they were mine because there was a mark on them that my aide Radl had placed on them. I would know if someone was trying to give me a phony or a genuine that wasn’t mine. Wait a second. I’ll

go get them." He went into another part of the house and he came back with a black velvet case with all of his medals on it. There was the Knight's Cross, the German Cross, the Iron Cross, there were his awards for service on the Russian front and the Western front. He had an SS service medal; he had, it was like a badge — he was very, very proud of that — it was a Nazi pin, not military but like a college association, a youth association member of such-and-such youth — but not Hitler Youth, this was at college level. He also had one cuff band or cuff title, all the SS had cuff titles; they wore them on the left cuff. Regular army units that had cuff titles wore them on the right. This cuff title was black, had the silver line on each side, and the name of the unit, [and] "OTTO SKORZENY." He laughed and said, "There is no such thing. There never was. Some American sent it to me, and I got a big kick out of it, so I keep it in the collection."

— How long did you stay in Madrid?

Three or four days that time. At the end that first time, we were getting along very well. He said, "Would you mind checking on somebody for me?" I had mentioned some of the people I had known in this business and when I mentioned this one man, B….

B. is writing technical books for historians and people interested in what badge went with this uniform, etc., and was going to write a book about Otto. "You check on him for me," and I said okay. I went back to the United States and spoke with B. and [I] said, "You know, I was speaking with Otto and he's not terribly pleased about what you're doing." B.'s attitude was basically, "Let Otto go screw himself if he doesn't like what I'm doing — we have a contract." Otto's contention was that he wasn't living up to his contract. So I said, I'll let Otto know.

— To get back to Madrid, by the end of that first afternoon, or thereabouts, what did you feel about him?

I'd known from the history I'd read about him that he prided himself on many things, one of them that he could speak very good English — he cannot — he does get stuck on things and you don't correct him, you just go along with it. I thought he certainly had a great deal of confidence. Certainly, all the times I've seen him, up to and including the last time

[January 1980, Paraguay], he seemed very healthy. He smoked a tremendous amount, mentholated American cigarettes. I had … from the duty-free shops … a bottle of Wild Turkey. I brought it along as a 'hello' present. He said, "Let's try it out." This Spanish maid always attended to him, and whenever he wanted something it was like he was giving a military order during a massive barrage. Full volume on his voice: "GLASSES. ICE."

If you want to put it on a personal basis, he really loves Wild Turkey, [is a] real chain smoker, loves good food and loves girls. He loves war movies and he really thinks Burt Lancaster is something else, and I'm certainly not going to tell him Burt Lancaster's Jewish. Otto is a genuine Jew-hater. He loves hunting. I've suggested that he come hunting in the United States. Obviously he knows it could be done, but no. I think it's more personal than fear. Personal dislike.

— The Organization and the projects, is this his continual focus? Or does he have a life aside from the Organization?

No, he's very involved with the Organization. He doesn't really have all that much of a recreational life. He compartmentalizes everything. His fun mode, it's all having a great time, enjoying himself, but he can [snaps fingers] turn it off just like that.

— How did you feel about him as a human being?

Very forceful personality. It was very hard despite his gruff personality to picture him as being the kind of person that did his more well-known activities during the war. He said that the only time he'd ever been frightened was when he was on the Russian Front. He had a car and driver at this time which was unusual for a Lieutenant in the SS. This would date it around 1941-42, early Russian Front. He said that they came under a barrage of Russian rockets. They pulled over to the side of the road and he jumped out of the car with his driver and was lying by the side of the road. He was hit, by a stone fragment — I don't think it was a steel fragment or he'd have been dead. He evidently was injured there and put on convalescent leave, and he said that really shook him. After that nothing seemed to frighten him, but that did.

— What I'm asking is…

He's not the kind of person you'd want to go out and have a beer with.

— Was the forcefulness something you enjoyed, or was it repelling?

Oversimplifying it — I didn't think it was good manners. From the very first he has to be in control of everything and everyone.

— You obviously found him interesting to some extent, you talked a lot, but you felt uncomfortable with him because of this overbearingness?

Not totally. Like if I'd want to talk about, say, some part of his war experience, he didn't like that. Not that he was afraid of [talking about] the war experience, but because I had suggested it or somebody else suggested it, he was very definite: "NO!" He dominates the situation. It wears thin very quickly. I'd personally thought, the way we were getting along, how did I get involved? Well, you have to start somewhere. I had perhaps a crazy idea, but no one had really done anything effective against them. I had decided that this person, or these people and their actions were repulsive to me. I'd looked at, certainly, Wiesenthal and his work, and various Jewish people and what they had certainly done, at the War Crimes Trials, and no one had really been terribly effective. They were dealing with front men, dealing on a plane [of]: "Did this man kill a prisoner of war?" Very flamboyant and maybe makes for good reading and excites the people, but what were the real root causes of this?

— You had expressed a desire for meeting him [Otto Skorzeny]. Was this in conjunction with military collectables, or did you have some idea of pursuing this course of harming them, or was it just curiosity?

Mostly [curiosity], although there was the possibility of getting collectables from him. Curiosity and business. I knew he had his uniforms, they all have their uniforms, and I'd spoken to some American collectors and they mentioned that the SS had a white dress uniform, something really amazing, everything in reverse, the black is white and the white is black. Basically a formal outfit for very very formal occasions, and I knew he had

his — of course they all do, the top ones, they still do. Degrelle has one. American collectors said if you can get one, name a price for them. So I asked him about them, and I asked him about his medals, and I tried to do it as delicately as possible. He said that the medals stay with me and when I die they're going to go to the family. Many people had written him, and the few that had actually seen him had made open overtures about buying those things. He had to think that I was getting into that, so he probably thought ahead, and to avoid embarrassing me or causing me any trouble, he said, "No, I wouldn't sell anything I have. I'm not selling them."

— Let's get back to this second or third meeting. I assume you mentioned this great uncle [of yours who had been in the German Army].

I mentioned it as a matter of interest. From the first time I'd noticed he had a lot of books, virtually any and every book that in any way even remotely alluded to German military or economic actions, devolving before, during or after World War II; this man has the books. He also has the standard *Dienstalter, alterlists,* a directory, broken down, SS, Luftwaffe, Army, Navy.

I mentioned this man and he said, "Go get the book there." "Okay." He says, "NO — GET UP RIGHT NOW AND GET THE BOOK!" I got up and went over to the library and, "Not that volume, that one over there." If I didn't pick the right volume, he'd get very annoyed. It's not my library, how do I know? I finally got the right book, checked it out and sure enough, there's the name, Otto Barth, I believe it was Lieutenant General, German Army of course, Eastern Front. He'd been captured by the Russians, had been held until the general amnesty of 1955, released and died. His wife — he says, "Now, I want you to take down the address and see her. This is the proper thing for you to do." You know, relatives and all that sort of thing. I said, "Okay." He says, "NO, TAKE IT DOWN! HERE'S THE PAPER…" The more you present problems, the more he gets annoyed.

— Where did she live?

Erlangen.

— Did you go to see her?

No.

— Was there any change in relationship after he had gone through this?

That seemed to be, in retrospect, very good. Maybe I didn't have relatives in the SS, so that wasn't perfection — he was a general in the army, regular army, just a soldier — willing to overlook that fault.

It must have been the second time I had been to Madrid, I checked into the Luz Palacio and I saw these cars I mentioned, near his house, move off when they saw me coming out. Paranoid or not, I felt that something was very wrong, and realized what I was getting into. I was still very fearful. I walked away from his house. He had never had a cab or a car meet me, I'd have to go walk out and hail one. I got the cab back to the hotel and barricaded the door. In all future meetings, coming to Madrid, I would take the train in, meet him a day, and I wouldn't check into a hotel. I would get on the train, in the evening, go up to the Spanish-French border, get on a return train and get back in the morning, so I'd be on the move at all times in public. That got a little wearing after a while.

Which leads me to another interesting situation. He [Otto] asked me to carry some instructions, and they had to be written… highly unusual. Usually things are not written down. That's why the standard types of documentation people expect don't really exist, to any great extent. It was "I want you to take this file — take it to an address in Stuttgart." I took the train. France, no problem, through Switzerland, no problem, up to Geneva, got on a train there into Salzburg from Geneva, Salzburg, Austria. This was very late at night — one, two in the morning. No one's around, maybe two or three people, and you have to go through German customs station there on Austrian soil, after you leave Salzburg station. "Open your suitcase." I had all these papers that he'd given me, and I was laughing and going through my mind, "What's going to happen here? I'll just play it cool…" and he sees the papers.

— What was the nature of the papers?

Mostly private correspondence, some very personal messages he didn't want to go through the mail. On top of it, he had given me a photograph of himself, just after he was captured. It shows Otto in his uniform before he had been disarmed or had the medals or badges removed, and it was lying on top of the papers. Two German customs men opened it up, they look at the papers, they look at the picture, they knew what it was, obviously, they closed it up and said, "Go." No problems — that was the end of the examination.

— When you left, obviously, some situation of trust had been established. Was there anything other than checking on B. that he had asked you to do on his behalf?

Many people ask me what do you do, and I answer, well, I'm interested in investments, stock market and things like that. He was very interested in that. He asked me about some of the things I had done. It was almost like he was testing me, on certain companies. I went through the questions — they were superficial questions, none of them of real importance — but the fact that I could answer these questions about certain companies, he seemed to like that.

Initially it was put to me, oh we don't know too much about that here, could you get these things for me? Find out about this company? I remember the very first was ComSat, the first private communications satellite system, and he was interested in investing. I got that information. I will say that a number of things put me in his good graces, for instance, initially on the B. thing. I reported back what B. had said and what B. was doing, and I said I'd have to have some more papers, and he even gave me a copy of the contract he and B. had…

— You bid your farewells and came back to the States. You knew of B. because of the book he had written on war memorabilia…

I met B. and had a discussion with him, the one I described earlier. I met with a man at a brokerage office, Merrill Lynch, who was handling my account. I asked him to get me whatever he could on ComSat, that I was interested in investing in it. Give me an in-house report for clients of

Merrill Lynch, and each brokerage house does this. When I went back [to Madrid] the next time I brought it to him.

— In between visits, you had a correspondence with Otto about B.…

There was a tremendous amount of correspondence about B. I realized that B. was dealing from the bottom of the deck and selling to both sides. As far as Otto was concerned, he was giving information to Otto, as far as various intelligence matters, I don't know what. I knew he was giving photos. He was one of the people who were extracting files from the National Archives, and most of what the National Archives had was not even catalogued, so virtually anything could be missing and no one would know it was missing. At the same time, he was informing to American Naval intelligence; why I don't know. I know what he boasted to me… He had to realize I was going to tell Otto what he said, and maybe this was just his way of thumbing his nose at Otto, thinking that Otto didn't really have much to say or do about it.

Evidently he was well protected with the people he was dealing with in the United States, so he thought he had nothing to fear. When I got back to Otto, I hedged and hemmed and hawed and I said, "Otto, I don't like to tell you this, but I don't have any proof." "NEVER MIND — TELL ME, I'LL DEAL WITH IT." So I told him. That this man was selling to American intelligence, information about Otto. Period. That he had every intention of taking advantage of Otto on the book and not paying Otto anything.

— I assume Otto was not pleased.

He was not pleased at all, that's putting it mildly.

— This was when you went back to see him the second time, when you told him this?

The second time, right. I had suggested to him, I don't remember if this is the second or third time, about the time that … and I got together about doing our own book about him. He was very excited about this and the possibility of doing the movie, and he says he has to approve this and he

has to have the right to … he's making all kinds of changes. I'd gone to my attorney and written up a contract, and he didn't like it.

— The contract was concerning what?

The books and the magazines and everything to handle about his experiences. He insisted all this is going to deal with is about World War II, and you can't tell him "Who cares, that part's only been written about probably a million times." We were getting along and things were developing; I wasn't going to fiddle around too much about that.

— For what reason did you actually go to Madrid the second time?

Basically to give him the information about ComSat, to report on B. and to see how far we could develop this. I was getting very interested in developing something with him, particularly when I saw he had confidence in me.

He looked over ComSat and liked what he saw. I think that this was just to see how much I could find out, and how willing I was to fill him in on company business.

He liked particularly the way I do things in a company, not just the standard data of their financial reports, but the personal asides, and this is particularly what they like. Peculiarities of people that work in a company, be they in the sex line, the drug line, dealing on the side with another business — all the things that are not usually published, but may be no more than rumors.

— How much time was there between the first and second and third visits to Madrid?

About nine months between the first and second, about four-five months between the second and third.

— What was the result of his being impressed with the work you'd done?

We’re not talking about SS, World War II, we’re talking about business that had nothing to do with that period. At least I didn’t think so. We’d talk about German industry. He’d talk about youth, about how German youth just “don’t have any pride,” that they’re not paying attention to business anymore. When he was in Germany on one of his visits when I was gone, he’d had a real verbal row, and he took great pleasure in being able to tell me he’d put down these German youths who were espousing modern thinking. “This is all wrong,” he’d say.

He started to talk about the Messerschmidt-Volkau-Blum, a very large consortium for the aircraft industry, everything from designing air parts to the entire aircraft, doing sub-assemblies; they did the sub-assemblies on the A-300, they did it on the Concorde. They did relatively minor work on that. At that time they were just developing the XM-1, the new main battle tank for the United States. Germany was supposed to supply the power plant to it. It turned out that Chrysler would supply the power plant.

You had this amalgamation of the three main countries, Germany, United States and Britain supplying various parts to the battle tank, so since they’re all partners in NATO, if something developed, their parts would be interchangeable. We started talking about Chrysler, and he had the German psyche, which he really typifies, he has to be on top or he didn’t like it. That was the main thing about the McDonnell-Douglas thing. Mainly because B. was with McDonnell-Douglas. He seemed to hedge around that, initially, but he knew, or felt he knew me well enough to discuss it. He was very very very upset. With the coming in ‘71 of the airshow in Paris, he wanted me to see that and report back on that.

He wanted me to go to the Paris airshow and to talk to this other man. This was the third trip. He had, evidently, they all had, paranoid feelings that people are out to get them and everyone crosses everybody, which isn’t all that far from the truth. Everyone is jockeying for position, trying to protect themselves. He says, “I want you to check this S., get him to talk. What I’m going to do now…” and he took out this business card — you saw it [photocopy in possession] and put the signature on the card that authenticates it, and then on the back. He said if I had any trouble, he

wanted me to go, anytime, to this very day to the SS organization in Ludenscheid, and they will give me any aid that I need.

Beginning with the DC-10 operation, [it] is typical in that it was for economic purposes. The Organization, first of all, wished to promote their own involvement with the Airbus, as opposed to the DC-10. Where that were not possible or practical they would use extortion in the form of payments per aircraft — DC-10, 747, LI0-11 — for every one sold they would receive a portion of those funds. In regards to the DC-10, the initial period of approximately nine months to a year payments were made.

— By who?

Individuals within McDonnell-Douglas. Within the corporation during the initial development stages and initial sales there were two employees of McDonald-Douglas who provided data on design criteria, possible sales to be made, directly to the Organization and, in reverse, the Organization through these two men could influence possible sales and design criteria in the aircraft. The first of these two men, his name is S. He operated out of Geneva, Switzerland, and was initially the financial and merchandising extension of McDonnell-Douglas, their representative. The other gentleman who worked directly out of the Los Angeles area was B. He directly had access to and influence through individuals to gain information on design criteria and sales, and to directly input data on design material into the aircraft and merchandising methods. The DC-10, the payments were made during the initial design and sales principally through the airshow of 1971 in Paris at Le Bourget Field where the show was held at that time.

I went up to see S. Obviously, I could not use Skorzeny’s card to get into the airshow. I was up there for Press Day, and at that time, no public was allowed in, only journalists with credentials. I went in there and they had a booth at the entrance at Le Bourget Field. They had what they called chalets, temporary buildings lined up in staggered form, and I went to the McDonnell-Douglas one and said I wanted to see S. The receptionist called him over, and I said, “I would like to interview you for a story.”

— S. is an employee of McDonnell-Douglas?

Representing McDonnell-Douglas. He won't show on their employee lists as such. He's the one working out of Geneva, where he can make a buck, put it that way. He works for a number of companies. We went in and sat down, and I said, "Otto Skorzeny wanted me to speak with you." He called over a maid, all sort of semi-private, where no one was listening. He says, "What do you want?" I said, "Oh, I think I'll have a bourbon. He's becoming very, very — anything I wanted, now that he knows who I'm from. I said, "What about how things are going? Otto's very concerned. I'm merely passing this on. I don't have any authority, but he's very upset, so how do you see it?" He says, "There seem to be problems with the engine development…"

— What engines are you talking about? The DC-10?

Right. This is before anything developed about crashes or anything. He said, "Well, there's no problem at all. There's been discussion [about] the GE engines… We had a bit of delivery problem with the GE engine, but there's no problem on delivery." He started to mention he didn't know how much I knew. I told him I don't know that much about what's been going on, merely trying to carry information, that I'm a conduit, a telephone, if you will, between you and Otto. He was showing his concern. He said, "There's no problem aside from the slight delivery problem on the engines." It's very difficult to put this in words — he was trying to explain that there were problems, evidently in payoffs.

We know now that there had been a problem, regarding the Turkish airliner that went into the tank in Paris on takeoff, and the initial problem with the DC-10 regarding the rear latch on the door. If it's not closed properly then the door can come out, causing immediate decompression.

— The [sabotaged] Turkish airliner was a couple of years after this, wasn't it? '73 or '74?

The company knew there was a problem. He said, "I know they're concerned about that. I know the Organization is interested in the money alone. They wanted to push theirs, lacking the ability to sell their own, which they were not prepared to do at that time. The A-300 was not ready to fly. They had nothing more than a mockup in '71. So since theirs wasn't

ready, then McDonnell-Douglas would pay, since they're the direct competitor. They were looked on more as a competitor than the Boeing, since the Boeing… at that time the 707 had been in service for quite a long time, and they were looking for replacements. It developed that there wasn't real replacement but little more than augmenting the 747 with the A-300, which has sold marginally, and with the [DC-] 10 which has done so-so, certainly in light of what has happened.

He finally started talking, searching me out: how much does he know about payments? I'm thinking: payments? What is this about payments? I was a bit puzzled. I said, "Well, what about the payments?" "Well, there seems to be a problem now with Lockheed being investigated for their possible loan and whether they'll get a loan from the U.S. Government; guarantees. There's a little too much heat on the aircraft industry, and they're balking, they're not making payments." He started to explain, in very simple terms, that McDonnell-Douglas had been approached to pay, and was balking because of this investigation and the heat on the industry. I said, "Well, what do you expect me to do?" and he said, "Let Otto know." In retrospect it makes a great deal of sense.

— Could you elaborate on the specifics of the extortion of McDonnell-Douglas prior to this event [the induced crashes of DC-10 aircraft] and, specifically, how it was done, for how long and payments and amounts? You had mentioned that there was an Airbus which was competing, could you explain the whole groundwork on that?

The Airbus was developed and sold through a consortium of French and German manufacturers. They perceived the new generation of aircraft to be middle-range and still large-bodied aircraft, an improvement on the Boeing. They were aware that Lockheed and also Boeing and McDonnell-Douglas were also developing that, however, the costs were deemed too heavy for a single European interest to go it alone and consequently this association was developed. I use this word "developed" and it certainly was encouraged by the German side, who because of the DC-10, which will be explained, wished to profit from this and did not wish to tie up a great deal of their own capital in it.

— When you say "German side," who are you referring to?

Messerschmidt-Volkau-Blum.

— At what point was the decision made, and how was it made, to extort or coerce McDonnell-Douglas?

In the embryonic stages of this, in ‘71, the German interests did see that the DC-10, the L-1011, the other possible competitors were far advanced, would be direct competition, and they could not go it alone, could not be the first of the new generation of aircraft, and it was decided there were two options. Either through extortion or, if necessary, through the accidents that took place. The [methods] of the accidents as they developed were not known in ‘71, but they were developing some ideas. The biggest problem in developing an accident is the accident must not appear to be the work of a terrorist because that would not show on the integrity of the aircraft.

— The accidents were to discredit…

The aircraft itself, yes.

— So they decided to start with extortion. How did they start this?

My knowledge is that D., the representative of McDonnell-Douglas in Geneva, who was the direct Organization man on this — had during the development of the DC-10 worked with B., who also had worked with Lockheed, in direct input and output on design. They knew what was happening and when it was happening and how far it was along. They were surprised in one regard when they saw how deliveries were to be made. They were further advanced than the information had been coming. The information had been coming solely through B. and S. directly to the Organization. The multiple options were discussed and it took a while to do it because if they could avoid the ‘accidents’, they wished to do that. It was not an ego thing, it was dollars and cents, pounds, whatever. They had worked on the extortion from approximately ‘71 till about ‘76. Up to ‘76 it was not considered a problem. They had run a test, one test, done without notification to McDonnell-Douglas. There was no attempt to extort at all, regarding the DC-10 that crashed in Paris. That was well-known to be, at least on the face of it, the failure of the hatch door which caused structural

failure of main members in the floor of the aircraft on which passengers were on.

— So the crash in Paris in ‘74 was a test to see if they had the ability to bring the plane down [Note: 3/3/1974 / Turkish / 346 dead.]

Yes.

— And what did they do at that point?

B. had approached. This was in St. Louis, representatives of the company, I believe top echelon. I don’t know the names of the people. It was in the most diplomatic but straight terms. It was put to them that it will cost so much per aircraft to do business. There seemed to be, initially, not a great deal of resistance. It wasn’t pay or lose an aircraft. They had approached them with the idea that we have contacts overseas, and we can arrange for sales, and then again it can be your aircraft or another person’s aircraft. Now what can you offer us? They did pay per aircraft sold for a limited time.

— You say payment per aircraft sold. How were the payments arranged and to whom were they made?

The payments were arranged in cash through a drop in Geneva. The resentment that developed and the balking at payments came at a time when there were congressional investigations developing regarding foreign payments. McDonnell-Douglas felt at this time that everyone was, to use a crude term, coming clean; they wished to cover themselves. They virtually were forced by government pressure in this country to stop. Again, the government thought it was only a matter of payment to sell planes, and they stopped there.

The Organization could care less why it happened. The payments had stopped and they wouldn’t resume. After that, the accidents were in earnest, the arranged accidents. S. had corrected some problems that had developed in the ultrasonics system and could be very reliable in arranging that structural failures or cracks could be arranged at any point. They could have it where a crack could be found, reflecting on the aircraft itself, or in the

extreme example of the case of the DC-10 in Chicago, they could raise the ultrasonic to such a level that they knew that the natural vibration of the aircraft would complete the work.

Whether it be the DC-10 out of Paris with the problem regarding the cargo door, whether it was the Air New Zealand DC-10, whether it was the Western Airlines DC-10 that crashed on landing in Mexico City, whether it was the DC-10 that crashed at O'Hara Field in Chicago, the one constant that was used in all cases was ultrasonics, leaving no trace. It would be attributed to structural failure of one type or another.

On board the DC-10 out of Chicago, it was learned at the airport that two couriers, members of the Organization were to be on that flight and were to meet with a member of MI5, British intelligence, in Los Angeles, by the name of T. whose front is as a representative of a London newspaper. When they were noticed immediate action was taken to develop the structural crack to such an extent that at certain sound and vibration levels consistent with take-off of the aircraft vibrations necessary to complete structural failure of the aircraft would take place. The two men on the aircraft, part of the Organization, one K. of Austria and S., who were subsequently killed in the crash.

— The ultrasonic equipment, could you explain what this is, a possible description of the equipment, how it was used?

I have never seen the equipment, but from the conversations that I have developed, the equipment sounds a bit like — it's compact, it could be in the seat of a pickup truck or service truck, which indeed it was in the Chicago example, and the actual device that delivered these highly directed waves is through an arrangement where you can direct it, point it, like a… they have these 'guns' you can direct for sound.

— Now for the Siemans company…

Their main work is more than just fortunate. A principal facility of Siemans, a facility dealing in the ultrasonics is located very close to the O'Hara Airport. The device that I mentioned could be on the seat [of a car

or pickup truck]. The power requirements are relatively large for it. The power requirements were drawn from the ground equipment.

— At O'Hara, there are some questions of the time frame. You'd mentioned that this was one of the undertakings that the Organization did that was given belated approval because they moved fast. How long before the flight was this imminent defection discovered?

Less than a day. It was late afternoon, because the information came to me about 11 hours before it happened. Late in the evening, I was in my home when I got a call from a member of the Organization who works for me, and who the Organization is not aware is working for me, and let me know that something was very seriously wrong. It was not a secure line so we had scramblers.

— Who did these orders come from?

My man said merely that they came from West Germany. — The order was given to watch them, and they were watched. They were observed at the airport together, talking. No two Organization should ever talk in the open. It was decided, particularly in light of the information about the call to T. in Los Angeles that something had to be done immediately, and they knew that the Organization — these people obviously knew because of Siemans' involvement — that no tears would be shed over a DC-10, and very much, regarding the two men on this flight. Since ultimate authority would come from South America, from Paraguay where the organizational headquarters are, and there was not time to get that approval, then it was decided, then the equipment was brought over from Siemans.

— The destruction of McDonnell-Douglas' planes, the continued extortion — I presume that payments have resumed since the destruction of the planes has stopped… the same drops in Geneva.

Yes.

— Why has McDonnell-Douglas been silent about this? Couldn't they have said, "We're being blackmailed by the Airbus people who've threatened to blow our planes out of the sky… and who have."

The first time they attempted to make the call, they'd be dead before the call was completed. There are people within the corporation who can handle them.

— What did you do after the Paris Airshow?

I took the train that evening back to Madrid, told Otto what had happened, and took the train out again, and during this time — I stayed a couple days at that time — took the train back and forth. I had that thing about not staying in a hotel. After that time I never stayed in a hotel again.

— This is when you went back from Paris?

Yes. He seemed to be very very agitated, and I got the impression that the agitation was almost make-believe. He more or less knew what was taking place, and was merely getting a confirmation that this man S. could be double-dealing. After all, he was known to represent anybody who could pay the price. I had the distinct feeling he wouldn't have sent me in there on something like that if he didn't know. He didn't know me that long. Unless he knew what the answer was going to be, and was merely looking for that confirmation. I passed on the information and he made more sense out of it than I did.

I left, and after that I said, "I've had it." I was so unnerved by what was taking place, that I said that after I got through making [my report]. In fact, this is very unusual — usually things aren't in writing, but this time I put it in writing, handed it in through the mail drop in Munich, and took the first train out just as far as I could go. The farthest place I could go was Bergen, Norway. Takes three days to get there by train.

— You reported to Otto, which obviously had more meaning to Otto than it did to you, and Otto became agitated — and you feel he was putting you on?

Yes. You could tell when he was really upset about something, just that boasting, blustering way that Germans have. He's Austrian, but same thing, Germans and Austrians. He seemed to be upset, but merely as a put-on. He said, "Let's go downstairs" and — we knew those two cars were there —

make a great big show of walking — first and only time he did this, walked out to his car, Mercedes, naturally, parked in the driveway. Big show of "How do you do? Hello, goodby," you know, shaking hands, all very … Take your pick: could they be Spanish police? Could they be his own people? Could they be Mossad? Could they be American? I have no idea.

We picked up where we'd left off, about how he wanted me to spend a little more investigating, after I'd told him about ComSat. I'd mentioned Dillingham, because I'd looked into it a little bit, it was one of my first. I told him that I found it very disturbing, unbelievable, that the majority of Dillingham's assets were in the Ala Moana Shopping Center, and considering how old the company is, 1903 or 1906, and how they controlled, or can control traffic in the island, how everything to the outer islands, outside of Oahu is done by barge. I had noticed in a standard financial report that Dillingham had listed that the business in the barge traffic was severely hampered because the barge broke down, or the tug broke down. This is incredible! I'm not talking about a Ma and Pa hamburger stand, we're talking about a major operation.

They [Dillingham] also got involved in mining ore in Australia, around the Great Barrier Reef, and the Australian government was sticking it to them to such an extent that they had to pull out. It seemed whatever investment they got into was a complete and utter failure, and the only thing that was worth anything was out in Oahu, probably 350-400 million … supposed to be the largest, or second largest shopping center in the world. They were well-placed, also owning Cal Gas, and they were getting into real estate in Colorado and in California. They were trying to diversify but they were really being inept. I was curious how this was possible, how they could be so inept with all these supposedly experienced [people]. I found out that the board of directors was overlaid with people [with whom] they had made deals to purchase or lease land for construction, and they'd made deals, to keep the costs down, share the profits. For example, when they were developing Waikiki, draining the swamps at the time, the land they would purchase or lease was on the basis of, first of all, we'll make you a director of Dillingham, maybe some Japanese garden farmer or [the owner of] a sushi stand. "You're a director now." They had more directors than General Motors, for God's sake. I told Otto this and how they hadn't done

anything, and he found this interesting. I looked at it and said, what would it take to gain effective controlling interest? Controlling interest of a corporation can be done, not by owning 51% of the shares, but by having substantial enough numbers so they have to listen. That would be a good way to start.

I found out how many shares Merrill Lynch had. First you have to know the number of outstanding shares. This is the way they [the Organization] work, they take their time, they don't rush. Very very low profile.

The plan was to basically take over the corporation. This would be an ideal thing, given what you'd control. They have North Shipping, which is a big shipping company, deals throughout the entire Pacific Basin — not doing anything. That was half and half between them, Dillingham and a partnership basis with Norwegian interests. The idea was to gain effective controlling interest and then full controlling interest. Not, say the outstanding shares are 11 million, to buy all of them or even a majority, but to do it through front companies and various individuals. On the books it appears to be maybe 500 or a thousand different people, but in fact the one entity does the directing.

— Is there anything illegal about that?

Yes, there is. You must report to the SEC when you own over 5% of a corporation.

— So it's very difficult to prosecute, since you do have all these individuals saying, "I own this."

Sure, and I've owned it for a number of years, and I receive the checks, and it goes to their accounts, pay taxes on it. But it's all paid back to the Organization. The Organization gives the word.

— When you have 500 to 1000 people, who between them may own 20%, which is a pretty loud voice in the company, but ostensibly they are individual owners; how can they act in concert? What can they do to impress the company that there is one block talking without compromising their position?

The Dillinghams are more or less the people who are running things for Dillingham. It's done privately: this is the score, and if you want to test it, fine, we'll test it, and show you exactly how much muscle there is.

— They're threatening to dump stock, that's the lever?

Right, and then we'll buy it all and build it up to our own standards. We'd prefer not doing it that way, but…

— Let's talk about the Organization and Dillingham. You show them, through Otto, a corporation in trouble, without direction, but which is potentially a very strong corporation. And the plan is that you, the Organization, could buy a controlling interest through 500 or a thousand people. What happened as a result of that?

They went ahead. As I found out later, the Organization has a number of individuals, American, German, French, British, that they control. These people could tell key personnel that because of their tax situations, they can't afford it, but they want the others to buy some stock and be the nominal owner of it, and this is how they eventually did it. I reported, through the years, on where the major blocks of shares are. They had a relatively small block for trading purposes. Merrill Lynch had something like 300,000 shares on hand that could be obtained at a special price, off the market. It wouldn't be shown as a normal trade, just be transferred from one trader to another, and held in a street name, usually by a bank. The front would be a trust.

— Did they act on this?

Yes. I had another meeting — you have copies of notes from that meeting. The first man I spoke to was a P. I believe he is now working for Dean Witter/Reynolds, which is another example of fronts controlling a corporation nominally, but it goes back and back. Dean Witter/Reynolds is supposed to be an American corporation. In fact the principal controlling interest is Arab, and they are in turn controlled by the Germans. It's not in the financial reports, but they are owners of record.

— Which Arabs are we talking about?

Kuwait, Saudi Arabia. They're the two principal ones.

— Then you're saying that Arab control, where it shows up, is German control? That Otto and his people are behind that?

Yes, and it has been German control since before the war, even.

— Why do the Saudis and Kuwaitis, who have a great deal of money from their oil, why do they…

They offer them a false sense of security. The Arabs have a great fear for security, physically, for their positions. I use the term Arab not just to say Saudi Arabia, but Kuwait, Oman, Quatar, Abu Dhabi, United Arab Emirates, these various little potentates. The rulers of the country now, 40 years ago were young men, boys. At that time their education, their beliefs, were very carefully cultivated, knowing that one day they would be in power. The Organization doesn't plan for what they're going to do tomorrow, they plan for the turn of the century, at this point. It's a continuing thing. It's not "Get all we can and skip with it." They want to have permanent effective control, so they've taken this time. It's amazing. The most powerful opposition to the German control of the Arabs is coming from the British, not the Americans. The Americans seem to be pretty content that they control things themselves, but they don't.

— Let's get back to your personal involvement — were you being paid by Otto for the work you were doing?

My payment is knowing what's going to happen in the business world, and acting on it.

— And what year are we talking about?

'73, '74.

— And during this six months, what is your function?

To keep track of what's available. To go through contacts, so when the trader says, "I think we're going to have about 50,000 shares, because

someone is about ready to sell," I know that and place the word through the Swiss Bank Corporation, and when it's available, they're there to buy through intermediaries.

— During this time, were you doing other things for the Organization?

Basically, just passing on financial information. Texaco, Pan American. One that was very good was Allied Artists. That was a case of getting them to go bankrupt, to take over its assets. The last movie they made, *The Wild Geese,* was the one that did it to them. The movie was done for about two million dollars. Allied Artists — they're very good in a financial sense, they own a lot of monster-type movies from the '50's. They have the rights to most of those. Then once the assets were purchased, they'd be sold. In other words, they picked the company clean.

I had been requested by Otto, during '78 — they were making preparations for control of the gold market, that's the big rush that came in the latter part of '79 — and I started to get information about gold stocks and the commodity of gold, to watch for movement. I contacted D., and the suggestion was about Rustenberg. Another was Troy Gold Industries. These could be picked up for nickels and dimes. The gold market was very stable. The big rush that was expected when Americans could own gold again never came. That worked very well for the Organization, so when I suggested Rustenberg as a relatively obscure thing on the precious metals markets, because when gold moves, silver and platinum move, pretty much in proportion.

— You've just moved from 1971 to 1973 to 1978 and '79…

I was going to go to '75 now. At that time, Otto was generally concerned. He felt that it was time to leave. So he called me back… I had called him and he called me back and told me that he was going to be out of town — that meant he was going to Germany. He usually wouldn't go to Paris. Could we arrange to meet as soon as possible, because there were some things he wanted to discuss with me. When he was in Germany, he sent me a telegram, which I have a copy of — I don't go near the originals, that's part of my safety. He told me that it was time to leave. He said, "Now, this

is just between you and me. Even the Organization doesn't know I'm talking to you like this."

We had the meeting and went out. There's a restaurant in Madrid called Horcher's. It was the darling of the Nazi set in Berlin during the war, very luxurious. When the war ended they just picked up bag and baggage, the whole family, moved to Madrid, to be close to their customers. When he walked in — Boom! Served you like you've never seen before. This was very interesting that he was out in the open like this, but he was obviously very agitated about something, and wanted to explain to me that he had to leave. I wasn't to get in contact with him, he'd get in touch with me. We had by that time set up mail drops, contact points, and some of these places that I have here in Sacramento, I can't stand. They really drive me up the wall. One place, I really have a block about this place. On the outskirts of downtown; it's a queer steambath. A hell of a place to have a meeting. I honestly think that Otto likes to see people squirm.

— So, you went to Horcher's.

Yes, and he told me not to contact him, he would contact me. I would normally go into, say, E.'s place [a mail drop] quite often. I haven't been there for about a year, now. After he left, I'd gone in there and would have been contacted, normally. He, E., knows where I am most of the time. Sometimes he doesn't know and is not supposed to know: better security, so there can be no leaks from his side. People within the Organization know I work for them, but in what capacity, they're really not all that sure. That's the way Otto prefers it to be, and the way I prefer it.

— How long was it before he got in touch with you?

Maybe December '75. He got in touch again about August of '77.

— About a year and a half. During this time you continued with your reports?

Yes, that was why we had the meeting. He told me, "You're not supposed to know." So when things happened [Skorzeny's reported death] I was greatly shocked by it. I sent the standard telegram to his widow, and you

saw the reply. [Printed card of thanks with painting of Skorzeny.] That was his way of letting me know everything was alright, particularly with the photograph.

— Are there ways to prove he's alive short of inviting retribution and death? Something a bit less dramatic?

Well, there's that photograph I told you about, of Otto standing in front of the memorial painting which was commissioned after his "death."

— During that 18 months, you continued doing Organization business?

It wasn't orders for Organization business. He knew — he still knows, that I, through my contacts, was able to know what's going on in the business world. Particularly with the Dillingham thing, what developed through contacts there in Hawaii was the fact about Ariyoshi [Governor of Hawaii] being on the take. It was very helpful to know that.

— In March '75, Otto said, "Hang on, because the reports of my death will be somewhat exaggerated," and in December of '75 he got in touch with you again. You got a message?

I had gone into E.'s place, and E. was mentioning that someone was trying to get in touch with me. I knew who that was and I knew how to get down. He had told me in our meeting where he was going. He'd said, "This is the time to get out." I found out later, through normal conversations, that he had gone to Denia, to stay with his friend, who operated a summer camp, something on the Mediterranean.

— Tell me how you got there, and where, in fact, there is.

It's in the north part of Paraguay, the compound. There are a number of ways it can be reached. Get a car, drive down to Mexico, chartering a plane in Mazatlan to Cancun, in Merida. Ostensibly for a rich man's vacation, fishing and all that. You rent a room and keep it, and you keep it for a few weeks, even though you're not there for more than a few days. You establish a pattern that you're out fishing or bumming around, and meanwhile another plane has been chartered to take you from Cancun to

Panama City. From Panama City, a plane that will take you the rest of the way, very long range to Asuncion. A plane of the Organization would meet me, yellow and brown twin Cessna, to [take me to] the airstrip that they have. None of this time would normal papers be necessary, so there would be no records or identification on anybody.

— *Are there other ways into the compound area?*

None.

— *About how far is it?*

A twin Cessna will go about 225, 250, and the flight was maybe an hour and a half. I'm not saying they went top speed. I was sitting in the back so I wouldn't know. I do a bit of flying, but at that time, I didn't think it was wise to stick my head up there and say, "What's the speed here? What's your heading?"

— *You were heading North from Asuncion?*

Northwest, actually.

— *What happens once you get to the airstrip?*

You get taken up to the house. Well, how do you do, shake hands — Oh, God, when he shakes hands. The guy's a monster. Obviously I don't have a muscleman's hand, but it certainly isn't what you would call tiny and dainty, but he can just engulf it. Takes both hands in the shaking. He's big [indicates with his hand above his head]. I'm six feet so he must be six foot six or something like that. Huge great man with meathook hands.

— *Was he the only one there?*

There were security people in the area. Friends, how do you do, fine, let's have dinner, talk about — usually when there are groups of people, friendly patter. One would not give names, real names, but you talk about things that are… I mean, really!

— *Talk about your crimes?*

That’s basically what would be done. He asked me about how I first learned about his demise. He wanted the information I had on some of the companies we discussed, and I told him, at that time I had much firmer contacts in Hawaii, about [the governor] and that he could be bought — standard contract. It’s amazing how you can talk about these things, matter-of-factly. [The governor], his fee is about $10,000 if you want something done. Somebody you want into the state or somebody out of the state with no trouble, or if you want to conduct business in the state, $10,000 to [the governor] and a sliding scale minimum $8-10,000 for the union, and you can conduct business there. They wanted to develop Hawaii on a long-range basis, inter-island transport, through the air. The principal ones there were Hawaiian Airlines and Aloha Airlines, but also charter airlines, which is good for the Organization when they want to move people around quietly through charters. They developed charters. They were having competition with the hydrofoil. I had mentioned to him the hydrofoil was Boeing, and gave him a list of people involved in operating it and best to be dealt with. I wouldn’t deal with them.

— *You were talking to Otto about developing Hawaii as a base?*

Right. And it is being developed very well. I hate to go there.

— *Okay, what else was going on during that visit?*

I mentioned I’d get back to him next time regarding Consolidated Oil & Gas there. It’s these American businessmen — it’s a listed corporation on the American Stock Exchange — that control Princeville. I said they’re hurting for money now. They’d been developing for about five to six years, and it took a little more than even they had. I suggested that as a possibility in the future, said I’ll look into it for you. That was basically it. That went over two to three days.

— *You were talking about the compound in Paraguay. You said it was about a dozen buildings. Could you describe the place? For example, starting with the airstrip.*

The airstrip is not a paved way. It's unpaved and well camouflaged, but the camouflage is removed for landing. It's certainly large enough for a twin Cessna fully loaded to land and take off, once the camouflage and obstructions have been removed. You can say 5-6000 feet, approximately.

— Does a Cessna need that much?

Fully loaded, it would. If they're having shipments come in, they would. I'll give you an example; one time they had a safe brought in, a very large safe. It was brought in on a DC-6, which was a hell of a time, trying to get the damn thing off the plane.

— You get off the plane and you're there. What do you see?

It's maybe a half mile from the main compound. Although there is a path, they don't want to have great access to the airfield. Usually you'll walk. The path is there to bring in heavy equipment, and they can use vehicles, but don't usually. There are obstructions on the path, so if someone could get as far as landing without authorization, then it would be very difficult. The growth around it is very extensive. You'd walk a half mile to the main compound, where there is a large 2-story building, Spanish style. There is a garage with room for about a dozen vehicles in it. There's a large workshop. There's what I like to call a barracks, for soldiers. Army type. Guards. [It sleeps] 100, maybe.

— This large building that you mentioned, what do you mean by large? Ten rooms? More?

Let me count. There's a large reception room as you enter through a hallway. Three rooms on the bottom, right next to the reception area. There's a door leading to them, double glass door to get inside. There's secretaries — secretarial offices in the front, on the ground floor. There's a basement. And living quarters on the second floor.

— How's it decorated inside?

Call it French Continental, I guess. Nothing as ostentatious as Louis XV, but if you were to furnish a home in French style, with relatively fine

furnishings, without the gilt, this is what it would look like. The furniture is a problem because of the moisture there. Very damp, constant warping.

— *What about the colors? Wood?*

Plaster and wallpaper. Very European wallpaper, these little rows of flowers, vertical stripes and flowers. Not effeminate. Blues and greys are predominant. The room that I have is like Dracula's Castle, something from the Victorian era. Not a four-poster bed, but a massive one. I've been in some of the other bedrooms … large, carved wood, dark.

— *Native labor around? Servants?*

German only. I've seen 25, 35, maybe up to 50 [soldiers] around. Civilian clothes. One thing they do have, the Vietnam combat boots, half leather, half canvas.

— *About how much land does the whole compound cover?*

I'd say maybe 10 acres, but the buildings are spread out and they're not all in the open. Under cover of trees —there are some very large trees there, or growths.

— *What's adjacent to these 10 acres, topologically?*

Mountains like the California foothills, a bit steeper, and a bit higher and more heavily overgrown, tropical.

— *Does someone own the land adjacent? Is it in use?*

No. Not in use.

— *Where are the nearest other people?*

From what I saw when I was flying in, they're very scattered. There's a river to the west, several miles away … very small villages … maybe three huts to a village.

— *It's a couple of miles to the river?*

More than that.

— And all the traffic in and out is through the air? Can you hack your way in through the jungle?

If you want to try it, go right ahead. Not me. There are sensors that will pick up the movement. Electrically-activated mines, in plastic so there are no metal parts to be detected. They're sufficiently large and sufficiently deep so they couldn't be probed for. In fact, if they got far enough to do that, they'd already be caught on the motion monitors.

— What color is the house?.

Very filthy white. You paint it and probably a month later it looks just as bad as six years later. Never dries sufficiently, so you have this constant bubbling of the paint or whitewash. It's amazingly clean, though, once you're inside. It's all closed up and everything is air-conditioned; you'd think that you were in a nice European country home. It's their touch of home-away-from-home, so to speak.

— With a compound full of SS General Officers, I imagine there would be a tendency to keep it clean. How many permanent residents are there?

Not including guards, maybe 20-25 who live there on a relatively regular basis, or who have rooms there.

— In Paraguay there are people around Otto, people in the Organization. Let's talk about them.

These are Germans in the Organization. To be a true member of the Organization, you must have German blood, to be in the heart of the Organization. Some of the people? Joachim Peiper, another one of the reported deaths. It's very fashionable to "die." Peiper was the head of the unit that killed 83 Americans in the Malmedy Massacre. The War Crimes Tribunal said it was done because they had no place to take them. They were traveling light, so they found it easier to murder 83 men in uniform than to take prisoners. But they had taken prisoners during this period. He also speaks fantastically good English. Otto does not. He's the right-hand

man to Otto, very close. D–-, Belgian SS, a real lunatic if there ever was one. He's an enforcer, if you will, in the simplest possible terms. Otto Gunch, he was Hitler's SS Adjutant. He spent about 10 years in Russian prisons. Gunch works in the American section, if you want to call it that. In fact he has worked with American publishers translating things into understandable English from German. He has a very good grasp of American idiom. High echelon people in Paraguay, not including guards and security … about 100.

— Inside the Organization, how many members do you think, worldwide?

Approximately 1000. It just took one to set the whole Napa area on fire in California. Oh, other people presumed dead in the Organization, Adolf Galland, General of the Fighter Army, Luftwaffe. He's very good on transportation…

— Is the Paraguayan government aware of all these people there?

The Paraguayan government are employees of the Organization, nothing more than low-grade employees.

— How about Marty? [Martin Bormann]

They have him in another position. I've never seen him, this one man I mentioned to you is a source of information. The guy [Bormann] is a nut on apple juice. "Dirty sonofabitch trying to get apples…" Apples do not grow in that climate; they have to be brought in.

— Does he live reasonably close to the compound?

Evidently quite close. They don't want him around, sort of like a doddering old grandpa — you don't want the guy around any more. He probably lives in one of the key houses. I tend to believe that he is close by.

— December of '75. You reversed the process and went back up. You worked on those things during the intervening 18 months, and then he got in touch again in August of '77. You got a message to go there again?

Yes, and I did. First of all he asked me how I'd gotten on — evidently he'd done his own investigating. I don't think he ever trusted anyone — but he asked me about how Consolidated Oil & Gas was. He was asking me about Playboy and Columbia Pictures. He asked me, since one of my basic fronts is being into films, since I know a lot of people down there in the business in Los Angeles. Also Lockheed. I made some suggestions on how they could get more stock, and that I would get back to them. I started making preparations shortly after I got back, and went to Dean Witter/Reynolds and spoke to W., who is still with them. For a while he was helping me, purchasing stock through Troy Gold Industries, getting back to the Columbia Films, and — this is interesting — the Gong Show. BCHK stock symbol, it paid very, very very well. Two stock splits and some fantastic dividends.

— When was this?

'78. We'd get together very infrequently to talk about what I have accomplished and what I hope to accomplish by the next meeting, whenever that is, in irregular periods. We've already set up making purchases through the Swiss bank. Once I've delivered information to the Swiss Banking Corporation, the money is there waiting to make the buys. It is held and then transferred over, such as in the case in '79, when the gold thing came about. We were reporting on — like a stockholders' meeting — old business and the new business, and then we'll meet next time. But it was mainly of the purchasing of stock.

— I'd like to ask about the meeting of January '80.

That was more or less a congratulations, with everybody shaking everybody else's hands. That was a celebration, because they'd just sold out their interest with gold price based at 800 and something an ounce.

— Had they also sold Rustenberg?

Everything was sold off. They'd cleared their position.

— Not long before that. I think January was when it hit its peak.

Actually, in February was when it went ffffffftt. [indicates straight down]. It hit a high of 852 on the Hong Kong exchange. I think there was some talk of 875, but to my knowledge, it only hit 852.

— They sold at 850, or before that?

From what I gathered, around eight and a quarter. Everything was very quiet — just a big celebration. He wanted to thank me for all I'd done, and I wanted to thank him for all he had done. That kind of profit — you can buy things at 175 — I think the top price they paid for gold was $389, and I had done that myself. I was the foolish one, because a week after the Iranian crisis started I said, "I think I'll hedge a little bit." So instead of buying it directly — I'd buy some directly, actual bullion held in the precious metal account, but on the commodity market, being able to buy much more with little. They hadn't instituted controls at that time. All the playing around that had been done — the Hunts, with the silver, and the gold market being manipulated — the margin was hardly anything. For — oh, use a figure — for $10,000 invested you could control maybe a million or more dollars in gold. Virtually like owning a million dollars in gold. When it went up, let's say a contract would be at that time 10,000 ounces, I believe was the contracts we were dealing with, if the gold went up, $30-$40 a day, that's $30-$40 an ounce. You're holding a triple contract — each contract is worth 10,000 ounces, so it was worth doing that at $389, even though I didn't buy it, the gold itself.

— In the previous seven to eight months, quite a few events had taken place which were at the instigation of the Organization, starting with, in the period of May '79 through the end of December '79, a series of crashes of the DC-10. In Summer of '79 an agreement was made at Bohemian Grove to run Ronald Reagan as president.

Yes. They decided in '79 that Reagan was going to be elected. A meeting was held, those attending being Alexander Haig, George Bush, Steve Bechtel, Dave Packard, Henry Kissinger and Helmut Schmidt at Bohemian Grove, in which policy was decided for future election of Ronald Reagan, and possible events to follow thereafter. This was merely a preliminary meeting to decide basic goals and to structure the campaign as these American corporate officers would desire to have it structured.

Mr. Bechtel at that time was not in total agreement with certain objectives. To keep him in line a very minor object lesson was made by an attack on Bechtel's holdings in Central America. At that time General Haig wished to have more input, particularly regarding his possible nomination, but acquiesced when told that was not possible at this time. When he continued to balk at his position he was given an object lesson, the attempted bombing of his staff car, which was never meant to explode. It was not radio controlled, it was electronically controlled by wire. It was never meant to kill, merely a lesson to keep him in line. If this Nazi organization can be said to be composed of many godlike mentalities, there can be only one, and General Haig was not meant to be the one. He seemed to the Organization to be pliable, in that he has done many good favors and passed on much information through Helmut Schmidt, information of a political, military and economic nature, who in turn through his own avenues would forward the information to central headquarters in Paraguay.

Shortly thereafter, it was in the final planning stages of the election campaign, it was determined that Reagan was pliable, and could be worked with and dealt with, that there would be no problem. As time grew closer Mr. Reagan was evidently asserting himself in such a way that it was felt that he could not be depended on to follow advice of his subordinates who, in effect, were to be the heads of government. It was determined that he was to be removed. The first operation planned was for January 11, 1981 at a dinner held as a farewell to close friends in the Los Angeles area. Information was passed through my sources and the operation was stopped. The man who was to have the contract to shoot the president was M., who was a former U.S. Army officer, who was chosen because of his psychological disability and his background. M., during the Arab-Israeli conflicts in the late '60s and early '70s, while still in the Army, requested a discharge so that he may join an Arab legion to fight against the Jews. This was not taken as normal behavior for an Army officer, and he was immediately relieved of his duties and placed in psychiatric care in the Army, where he was examined by both a psychiatrist and, of all people, a rabbi as to his feelings toward the Jewish people. He currently, as his front, operates a small hobby store in Sacramento. He is considered extremely unstable mentally. He is of Russian extraction, he claims proudly that one

of his relatives was with the Russian army, a group of Russians that were taken prisoner by the Germans during World War II and who apparently espoused similar ideals regarding the Communists, who were eventually used by the Germans against fellow Russians. His contact in Sacramento is L., who, as a front, operates a jewelry store, who is the section head, the cell leader of KGB in the Sacramento area, and takes his instructions from him. Data from L. is passed through T. who, as a front, operates an antique auction business. My contact was able to prevent this particular contract from being carried out, that is not to say that the contract will not be tried again, as happened in Washington recently.

— Let me ask about the Reagan administration. You said that Reagan was considered to be "pliable" to suggestions from his advisors…

True. He relies on his advisors to run operations.

— Does, for example, Otto tell Helmut Schmidt who tells Haig and Haig says, "Go?" Or are they trusting the instincts of people they feel are allied with them? Are they trusting that Haig is crazy enough to do what they want without prompting?

A little of each, actually. Haig is obviously around-the-bend, but he's just one avenue. The man is so unstable that they don't rely on him solely to give advice to Reagan.

— Could you give examples of the Organization influence, how this has worked?

The petroleum companies, during the Iranian hostage crisis. American oil companies had ordered an embargo against doing business with Iran, and could not purchase oil, not that there was that much to buy. In the early stages, at least, the oil would be loaded on the tankers, out at sea. Papers would be changed. The papers would read that the shipment would be going to the Hague, into Holland, Rotterdam, principally, and it would be going to American refineries on the Gulf Coast.

— It would leave Iran with a bill of lading to Rotterdam? And the bill of lading would be changed?

At sea, as if it were going from Rotterdam to the Gulf Coast refineries, whichever could handle the load. A premium was paid, oh, 40 cents, 50 cents. I heard one time as high as a dollar and a quarter. They called it a commission per barrel.

— Was there much resistance among the oil executives to doing this?

Not at all. Controlling the corporation and having influence is one thing, but ultimately the Organization controlled the flow of funds. It was to their advantage to cooperate. To give you an example, during this time one of the lower rung people wanted to get in on it, and they were contributing a little something, so they were given between 25 cents and 40 cents a barrel. A little something to sweeten it. Considering the capacity of these tankers, it's a nice little touch for making the arrangements. They'd take the fall, if anyone starts investigating, some news organization or government organization that wasn't in the know or wasn't controlled. They'd have to hang somebody's hide to the wall — the guy who's getting the 40 cents commission, because he's doing all the work. He's the recognizable one, he arranged for the shipment, nominally. His name was used, that's more accurate.

— Can you give any other examples?

Eastman Kodak were advised of the manipulation of the silver price far enough in advance to stockpile some rather large amounts of silver. Then, on the announcement of the astronomical prices of silver, going up, they'd announce that we now have to raise our prices. Silver has gone up 10 times over its price in the last 2 months. Now we have to raise our price from $2 a roll to $4 or $5 a roll, when in fact they had silver at the old prices they were using.

— Were the Hunts, who seemed to be at the center of the silver manipulation …

They weren't. They thought they were screwing the Arabs. It was Arab money that did the buying. So when the bath came, it was the Arabs took the bath. The Hunts got a nice profit for themselves, the Organization got a

fantastic profit for themselves, and the Arabs were left sucking eggs. Who took the rap? The Hunts. You notice during the investigation, on paper they supposedly lost, what was it, a billion dollars or so many hundred million … all on paper….

— *How about Columbia Pictures?*

There was a contract man at Columbia Pictures, and I'd met with him and discussed investments. I didn't say "The Nazis want to invest with you." Rather, "We'd like to have some input into Columbia." The idea was to get them hyped up about a project that Columbia would merely make profits — somebody else would risk the capital. They liked this very, very much. We were talking about who the best man was, and I suggested, by no accident, that it be R. This was about six months before the Begelman affair developed.

— *What was R.'s function to be?*

To be a star in the motion picture. The Organization would back it.

— *Was this picture produced?*

Never. Never had any intention of being produced.

— *In what way is there profit in this situation?*

That they would schedule — this is another example of long-term planning — around this project, scheduling a release, because they would be acting merely as a distributor for the film. When the film was not delivered in time, that schedule was blown for the next year to eighteen months. That immediately caused a depression in the price of the stock. That was merely manipulation so that they could get the stock in Columbia.

— *Who was supposed to be putting up money for this?*

Nominally, I was. I said I represented European interests that would be interested in investing in this film.

— So Columbia was scheduling distribution for a film that never got produced. How much of a commitment did they make?

They made a commitment — we told them they would have worldwide rights to it, and then we told them we would have to shoot such-and-such a place, and they told us, "We like the idea of R., but…" They actually were our best allies in finding problems. In the interim the Begelman affair started up. The Begelman affair helped us, which we were no part of, but it helped drive the price down so we could get into Columbia, which we did at between four and five dollars a share.

— How did the Allied Artists situation work?

That was '78, I believe, and representations were made to them, supposedly by a producer who wished to remain anonymous, who wished to rescue them from their plight. They were in trouble for quite a number of years — it didn't just happen in one year. What Allied Artists was told… They had just gotten through producing *Wild Geese* and were in hock about two million dollars, which isn't a great deal for a film company, but for them it was critical. It was what put them over. An agreement had been made to distribute their film and to back any losses they had. The deal had fallen through, particularly when word was leaked to the SEC that the man doing this would be in some violation. He was prevented by some legal maneuvering. SEC was alerted to this, they halted trading immediately in Allied Artists and the company put into receivership and the assets sold off.

— Did the Organization own shares in the company?

Yes. During this period when there was a goosing, this producer — a mythical figure — wanted to buy the company, get them out of their bind. That coincided with the purchase of the shares in the company. When that story started circulating, the Organization had already reached their position in purchasing shares, and the shares had doubled…

— The shares had been purchased and then the offer to purchase the company sent the price of the shares up?

Yes, and then the shares were sold. The company went into receivership and the assets sold off at a profit. Not to Allied Artists. To the Organization.

— Is there a particular attraction to the film industry that the Organization likes?

There are so many ways of hiding profits from the films, basically a type of skimming with creative bookkeeping in some ways akin to the casinos.

— We'd like to get as complete a list as you have in mind of corporations who are involved with the Organization. Not necessarily in accord with them, but which have individuals who are under pressure or in accord.

Companies penetrated by the Organization? Texaco, Polaroid, Pan American, Dillingham, Sun Oil, Standard Oil, Lockheed, Resorts International, Columbia.

— Okay, […] had asked if there was any overt connection between Rockefeller and other financial biggies and the Organization.

It's interesting that you ask, because Rockefeller, very bluntly, if not too melodramatically, was one of the bitterest enemies of the Organization.

— Was? You mean Nelson?

That's right. David no, but Nelson yes. Nelson worked long and hard during the period when the Germans were currying favor and developing economic and political ties with South America. He was working to knock those ties out. He never did, but they didn't forget that. He was one of the few men that could put the pieces together, and had contacts in South America that could have blown the whole Organization. At least they looked at that as a distinct possibility. So, far from working with, he worked very heavily against. Not a very endearing personality, I know, but he was a decent person.

— You had begun to mention that David works with the Organization and that you had some information that Nelson's death was not natural or accidental.

If I may be permitted, the public is supposed to believe that Nelson was screwing his secretary and merely had a heart attack, instead of it being a case of… what's the word? Fratricide?

— You're saying that David had Nelson done in?

Yes. They considered him too much of a bleeding heart. It must be remembered that Nelson was Roosevelt's man in South America for counteracting the German influence pre- and during WWII. He was probably connected to the Organization, but what's important is that he was one of the few men in a position to hurt the Organization and insulate himself from retaliation. And Kissinger was his advisor, and Kissinger reported to David.

— We had been talking about Carlos, and you had mentioned that he is always protected by Organization people…

When he's in Paraguay, yes. I've never seen him. I wouldn't know him if he walked in the door.

— This door? His reputation is such that he makes a very obvious entry. You'd probably recognize him.

Grenade first? It was amazing how he just disappears for long periods. That's where he is [in Paraguay] when he disappears. I've never seen him when I've been down there, and I know he's been there on a least one occasion when I was there. An Organization man is with him virtually all the time when he's travelling. The story of his being KGB-trained is untrue.

— Do you know any of his background with the Organization?

He is the liaison between the Organization and the terrorists. He's the only one who knows it's coming from the Organization. The Organization provides logistic support, transports him safely to any location, and when he's not on an operation, he's kept safely down there.

— You mentioned a 1979 meeting at Bohemian Grove where it was decided to elect Ronald Reagan. What was done, specifically, to help elect

him? Since you mentioned some involvement with the Iranian hostage situation, was that a part of this plan?

You must remember that the Shah, the one who died, his father was very pro-Nazi. The German industrial element has very carefully, for many years, cultivated the Middle East countries. There was a time when the royal families were a joke — give them some girls, give them a few fancy parties and they're happy and you can steal their oil for a dollar a barrel. They're now stealing it for forty bucks a barrel. Where do you think the money's going? They get the families to up the price and use the money to invest in the Organization's financial dealings, be it directly in bullion, as I mentioned before. This created a physical shortage of gold, and this was engineered by the Organization. So we're getting back to Iran, and how Iran could help Reagan. Actually, it was supposed to hurt Carter, which it did immensely. People weren't going to vote for Reagan — they were going to vote against Carter. The semantics don't matter. Reagan was elected.

— *How was it done?*

Information was fed from the Organization to Helmut Schmidt to David Rockefeller to Henry Kissinger. Creating friction leading to an incident and feeding the incident. Very simply, the incident was created by bringing the Shah to the United States. The people in Iran looked at it very simply. Their reaction was predictable.

— What about Organization involvement with the IRA?

The IRA has been funded by this Nazi organization to a great extent. Principally, though, they supply the transmittal of funds and supplying data, supplying logistics, that is, specific materials such as explosives and electronics to accomplish the terrorist acts, such as bombings, burnings and shootings. Among the terrorist acts of the IRA the Organization has supplied the murder of Mountbatten, in which S–- supplied part of the electronics for radio control of the bomb that was set off on Mountbatten's yacht. The Organization continues to supply safe houses for materials to be stored, people to be secreted away, before, during, and after an operation, and to provide safe conduct out of an area. Where it is deemed necessary or

advisable, sacrificial lambs are usually given up to the authorities, and the investigation regarding the particular incident would end.

— We haven't really talked about people that you meet and encounter as part of the Organization, the gossip and shop talk, where they happen.

My position is something like Inspector General, and I'm known in certain segments of the Organization, but not all segments. With that unique situation Otto allows me a great deal of freedom. If there's a particular operation that's being planned or is in process, and he feels that he wants an independent observer, I'd be over there. I'd be going two times, three times, four times a year to Europe to observe the operations, as I say, in both planning and operational stage, and then reporting back to him through my drops in Europe. I wouldn't have to directly contact him for that.

— What sort of operations are these? I know that you've mentioned that the first one was at the Paris Airshow in '71, where you met with S. So, ideally in chronological order, which operations were you overseas for and reported on?

Most of the principal terrorist operations that took place in Europe, I was there to observe. I'm talking about the hijackings. There was one obscure one — I could never figure out why I was supposed to be there observing it, but I was there to observe the hijacking out of Malmo, Sweden. I was told to contact — I don't know his name, but I was to be on a certain train that ran between Copenhagen and Oslo and crosses over at Heltenborg on a train ferry. At that point a representative would contact me, and know me by sight. It turned out that this man was a representative of Bofors Corporation. They have a number of irons in the fire, sort of a Swedish Mitsubishi Corporation, not just the Bofors guns. He would be filling me in on what had taken place up to the time when I had gotten there, and what was going to take place. Then I would stay in the general vicinity, usually in these little obscure pensiones and hotels, and observe and report back through a mail drop.

— We'll talk about the other hijacking afterwards, but right now, Malmo. What airline? SAS?

I don’t even recall. It was so obscure and nothing of importance came of it. Was I being tested, were there doubts about my reliability? Was there some facet that I didn’t understand? I don’t know. But it stuck in my mind even though it wasn’t a principal operation to my knowledge.

— What about the others? I understand it’s a burden to say chronologically, going back ten years, but you’d said something about three [hijackings]?

The Swissair, TWA and Pan American. The ones that were hijacked to the desert, all three of them, and then eventually all blown up. That was the first big operation.

— That was obviously a major project, but what was the payoff for the Organization in that?

It indebted the PLO to the Organization through Carlos — it was a Carlos operation. At the same time it got one of the Organization people out that was suspected of, well, the gentleman was going to be picked up on his arrival. Who the gentleman was and what plane he was on and what the destination was, I have no idea. But they evidently had to get a man out.

— What was the pay off to the PLO?

Dollars and cents. I was in Paris and was in touch with the people supplying Carlos with the materials for the hijacking. And getting direct reports: I’d be monitoring the frequencies that the communications, during the hijacking, were going out on. During every hijacking operation specific frequencies are assigned because it’s known that the Organization will be listening in. This is the way the Organization keeps the PLO honest, if such a thing is possible.

— Was the Organization involved in the American hijackings?

Not to my knowledge. Everybody jumps on the bandwagon.

— Okay, you’re sitting there, or standing there, in a comfortable apartment or a dingy warehouse, whatever it is where the monitoring

equipment is…

Crummy pensione on the Right Bank…

— And you're hearing the reports coming over. Are you talking in between?

We're talking about: what the hell are they saying? They're speaking in Arabic. There was an Algerian there doing the translating. When I'm in Paris if I need protection I have Algerian bodyguards, the kind of guys who would knock off their mother if the price was right.

— Was anyone killed in that one?

No.

— How about another operation?

There was one where, of all things, a Lufthansa plane was hijacked, flown to Africa. I believe it was the co-pilot that was shot and thrown out the door. Maybe the pilot.

— What was your reaction to that?

Disgusted. Very sorry for this one gentleman who was shot. Especially when it came over that the man was begging on his knees not to be shot, and they just put the gun up to his forehead and psssshhht!

— I know you were filled in on the Munich massacre, the Black September thing at the Olympics…

During the 1972 Olympics in Munich, which was one of my first assignments, I tended to collect data and merely be an observer to report to Otto on the events that were taking place. The material, that is, explosives, grenades, weapons were smuggled in through diplomatic pouches.

— Through which country?

Kuwait, and through North Sea ports, particularly Hamburg.

— Were you an observer on [this operation]?

Directly, on site. This was the first big operation I was involved on, early Summer of ‘72.1 didn’t know what was happening until I got there. I was told to get a flight from New York to Brussels, only time I’ve taken Sabina from New York, and then taking the train from there to Germany. Arriving the following morning in Munich where I was met in a house that had been prepared for me. I was taken to a hofbrau house very close to the city hall, and it was explained to me, the operation was to take place this very afternoon.

— How much of what was to happen did he tell you?

That the arms had been moved in, had come through diplomatic pouches, and the operation was due to begin in the early afternoon.

— How did he describe the operation?

Taking of hostages from the Israeli part of the compound. The word had gotten out, and [Mark] Spitz was on the list. He would have gotten it if he had stayed longer. They’d take hostages, to disrupt and hopefully end the Olympics.

— And how long before events actually took place was this briefing?

A few hours. We went out to the main section. I didn’t have much time and after things started popping I didn’t have much desire to get into the spirit of the thing, the Olympics. I just wanted to get the hell out of there.

We were there when the shooting started… The buildings are here [indicates] and the freeway comes virtually parallel with the U-bahn, cross the U-bahn station over the freeway here. The big stadium with that ugly plastic cover was here and on the other side was the place for the track meet. Over in this section was where the quarters were and where the action took place. Surrounding it in a semi-crescent was a raised piece of ground where everyone was standing and where we were.

— Is that the same area where the news camera were shooting from?

Yes. I had a telephoto lens on my camera and I was viewing through that — it was just as good as binoculars, really. I couldn't really see much of what was taking place. It was more a matter of a personal demonstration to me. Later in the day we went into Munich again, as things were developing, and we'd gone into one of the Lowenbrau beer bars. I said, "I don't know about you, but the first shots I hear, I'm going under the table. I've had it. I want to get the hell out of here."

— At this time the PLO was still in the quarters?

Yes, very close to the time when they made the transfer. The word came that they'd made the deal to take them to the airport, then that they'd taken them to the airport. We're following this bit by bit. The news agencies were covering it quite well. Then the news of the shooting and — not bombing, but grenading? I think it's bombing of the helicopters after the German sharpshooters couldn't take them out at not more than 100 yards.

— The event concluded. What did you do then?

I wrote up my report and made my drop in Munich, and it was forwarded. I got the first train I could to the farthest point I could get to. That was the beginning of regular trips to Bergen when things got a little hot.

— You mentioned that there are several projects beginning right now, that are in the works…

One operation underway regarding the problems that England is experiencing, depending on who you listen to, labor problems, racial problems, basically Rightist in origin through the Organization's contacts. This is to lead to a finality. Let me backtrack: when these various IRA men went on their hunger strike in the Mays prison in Northern Ireland, when they died, if anyone was wondering why the reaction hasn't been terribly severe from the IRA they will find out because of the ultimate operation starting to take effect at this time, which would culminate in the assassination of Prince Charles. I was told first that it was to be on the wedding, now I am led to believe through my contacts that within this

dissident faction in our organization, the date is being attempted to be moved up considerably to within a week, not more than ten days from today. In any event, whether it be the dissident factions' will that will prevail, or the older generation's ideas that will prevail, they do agree on one point, that Prince Charles will be assassinated through IRA. I believe that it will be by bomb and not by gun. The electronics are already being shipped, and a number of locations are being prepared, since it cannot be absolutely assured because of heavy security on Prince Charles what particular location would be best.

[On November 28, 1992, Reuters New Service reported that an IRA informer had revealed a bomb plot on Prince Charles and Princess Diana that was to have taken place in 1983. There are unsubstantiated accounts of other assassination plots against the Royal couple. — Ed.]

— You mentioned the old faction and the new faction in The Organization; could you cover the differences that they have in attitude towards strategy?

The dissident faction, the youthful faction, differs from the older group in that they wish a more direct, open statement, rather than the subtleties that the older Organization has used. The older Organization will only use assassination when it is in its best interests and necessary; the younger men feel that this should become more policy and not merely a once-in-a-while proposition. The old Organization wishes a very low profile, the younger organization doesn't concern themselves with any kind of a profile, they merely wish to be moving ahead. They haven't seen any appreciable movement, and they wish to be more direct in accomplishing their goals, their goals being more economic than political.

CONTACTS

Remote Mind Control Technology was reprinted from *Full Disclosure* magazine, Box 903, Libertyville, IL, 60048.

Rumors, Myths and Urban Legends Surrounding the "Death" of Jim Morrison was authored by Thomas Lyttle, editor of *Psychedelic Monographs and Essays*, PO Box 4465, Boynton Beach, FL, 33424.

Behold, A Pale Horse: A Draft of Danny Casolaro's Octopus Manuscript Proposal was provided by Kenn Thomas, the editor of Steamshovel Press, a magazine that examines conspiracies, arcane historcal topics and alternative views of current affairs. Available from 5927 Kingsbury, St. Louis, MO, 63112.

Jim Keith, the editor of *Secret and Suppressed*, is also the editor of *The Gems tone File,* and the author of *Casebook on Alternative 3: UFOs, Secret Societies and World Control,* available from IllumiNet Press, PO Box 2808, Lilburn, GA, 30226. Mr. Keith may be contacted care of IllumiNet Press.

John Aes-Nihil, procurer of the Otto Skorzeny manuscript, runs the Archives of Aesthetic Nihilism. His catalogue documenting obscure and dangerous cultism is available for $5 from Aes-Nihil, 7210 Jordon Ave., B-41, Canoga Park, CA, 91303.

Conspiracy-oriented material may be obtained from the following sources: Prevailing Winds Research, PO Box 23511, Santa Barbara, CA, 93121, Flatland, PO Box 2420, Fort Bragg, CA, 95437, A-Albionic, PO Box 20273, Ferndale, MI, 48220, Loompanics Unlimited, PO Box 1197, Port Townsend, WA, 98368, Wiswell-Ruffin House, PO Box 236, Dresden, NY, 14441.

Mystery object amid the chromosomes

SIR—The very tiny object shown below, much like a fragmented crossword in appearance, was recently found in one of our routine chromosome preparations for prenatal diagnosis following amniocentesis. But what is it?

Is it a man-made device? Packing text as binary coded information on the miniature scale (the scale bar is 10pm) would seem advantageous. Or is it a naturally occurring substance? None of the possibilities we have been able to think of would

seem to be appropriate for amniotic fluid, so if anybody is able to suggest an answer to this mystery we would like to have it. We are as intrigued as we are ignorant.

JOHN WOLSTENHOLME

IAN HARLOW

GEORGE CLARKE

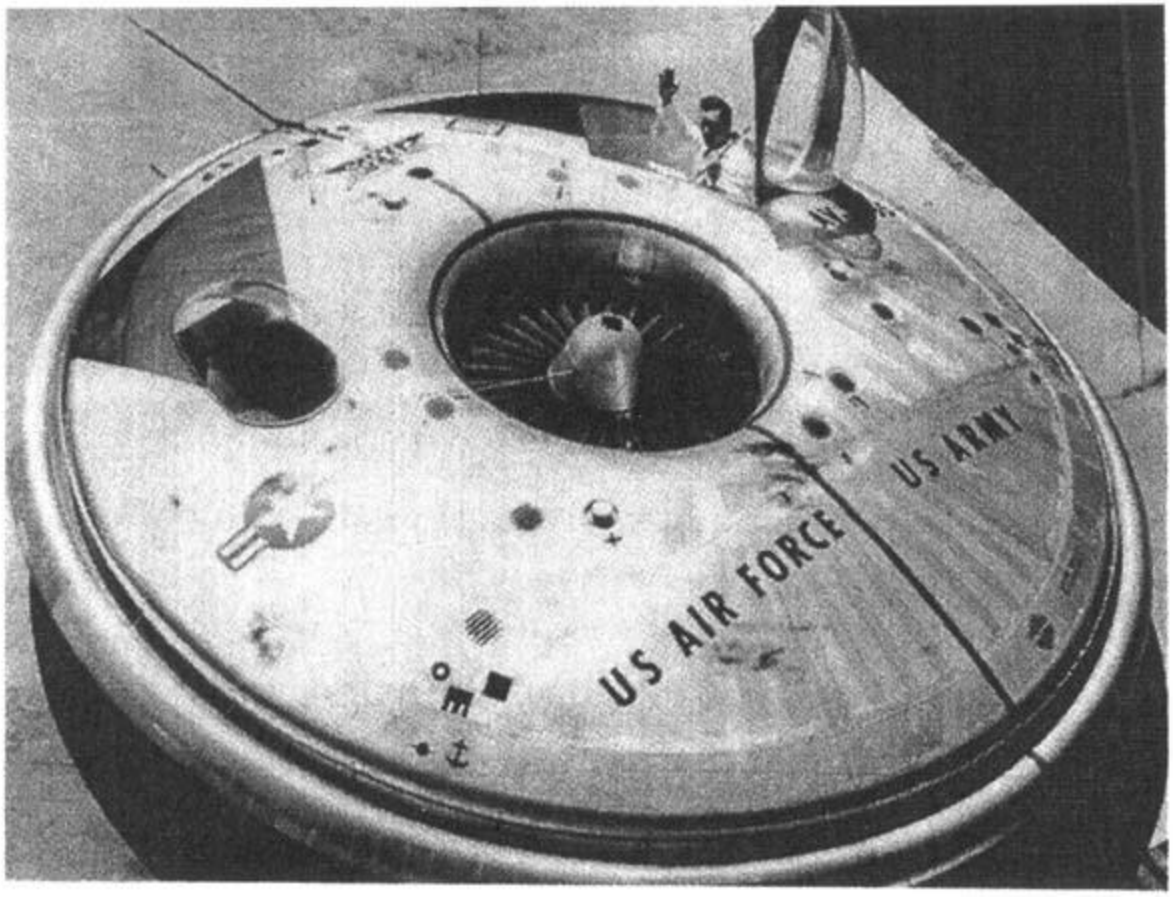
HILARY SHERIDAN

JON JONASSON

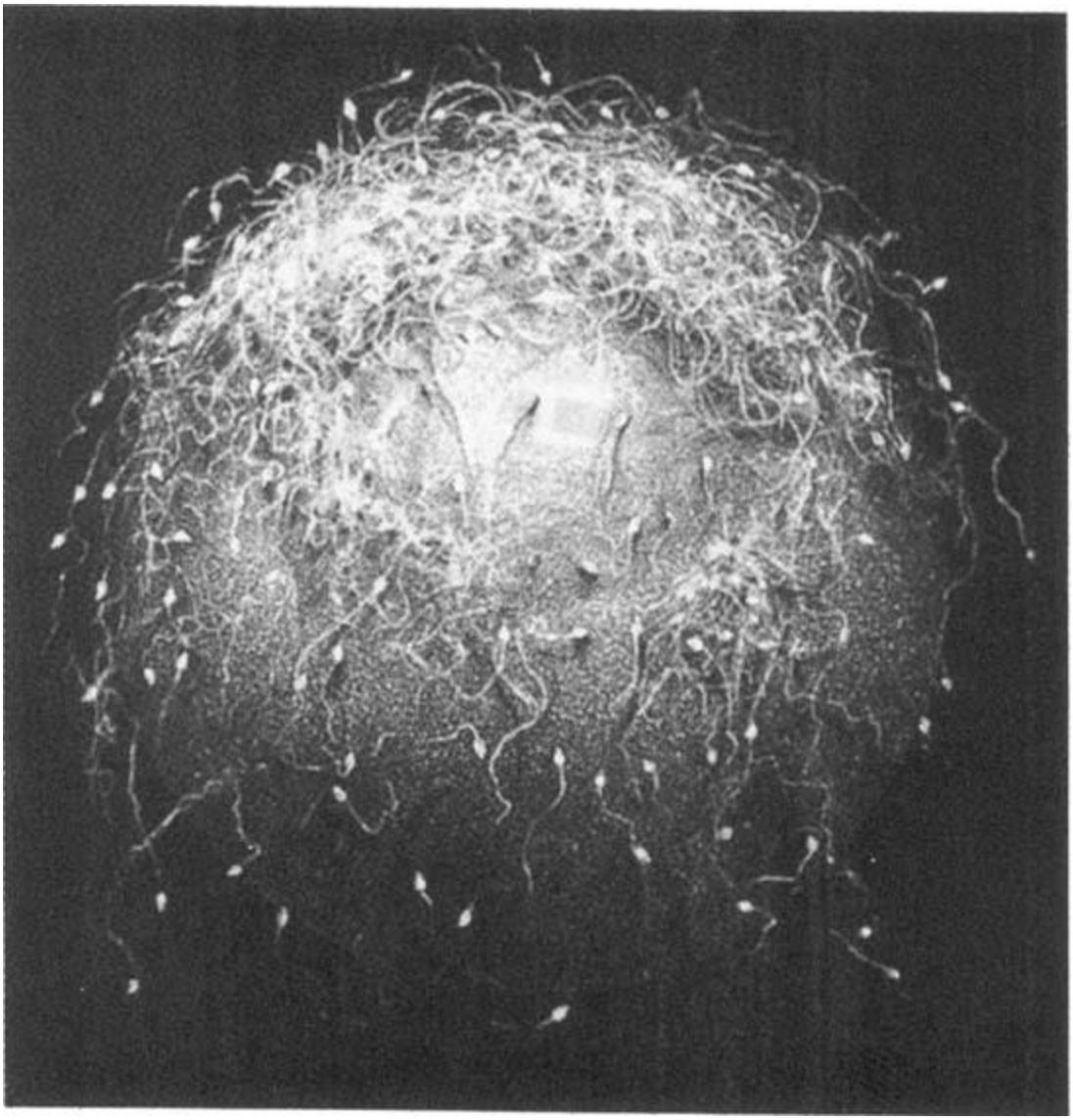
MARK CROCKER

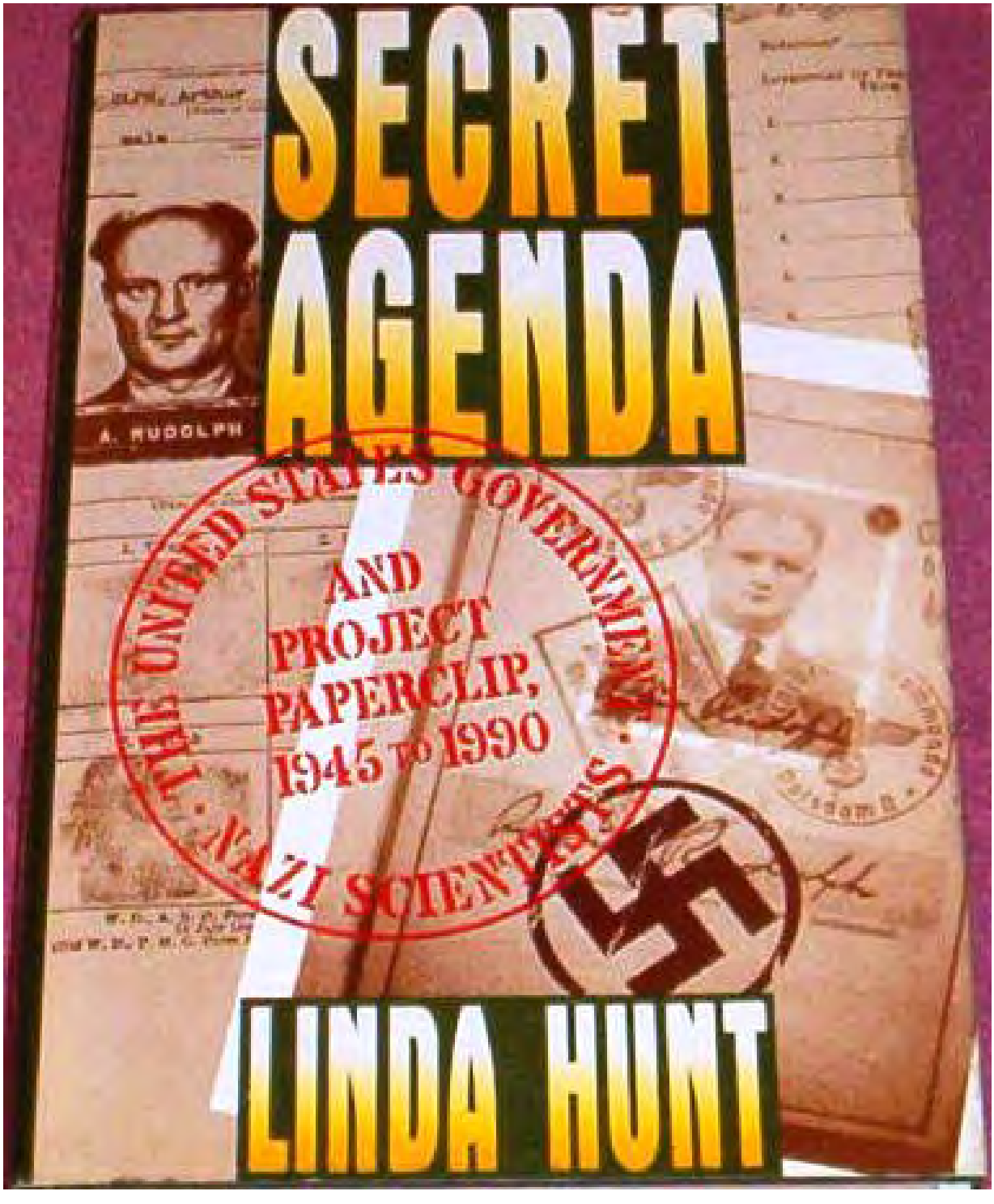
HELEN MATTHEWS

Department of Medical Genetics,
Churchill Hospital, Headington,
Oxford 0X3 7LJ, UK



The AVRO flying disk, collaboratively built in the early 1950s by Canada and the U.S. It was described as both ineffectual "ground effects machine" and high-speed interceptor craft. Would current stories of UFO aliens serve the government's purposes in concealing advanced craft of this sort?




SECRET AGENDA
A. RUDOLPH
THE UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT AND PROJECT PAPERCLIP, 1945 TO 1990
NAZI SCIENTISTS
LINDA HUNT

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

This book would not exist were it not for the Freedom of Information Act. I am grateful to attorney Elaine English, the Reporters Committee for Freedom of the Press, attorneys Lee Levine and Gregory Burton from the Washington, D.C., law firm of Ross, Dixon and Masback, and Robert Gellman of Congressman Glen English's Government Information Subcommittee for helping me with FOIA requests.

Government agencies' responses to my FOIA requests ranged from helpful to outright obstructionist. On the helpful side, NASA's Marshall Space Flight Center in Huntsville, Alabama, the FBI, and Army intelligence deserve the highest praise for upholding the spirit of the FOIA. The U.S. Army Intelligence and Security Command at Fort Meade, Maryland, was a major source of information; many INSCOM dossiers are cited in the endnotes. My research was helped immensely in 1986 when I won an FOIA appeal in which the Department of Army counsel ruled that I could receive INSCOM files of living Paperclip scientists because the public's right to know outweighed the scientists' privacy rights under the law. I thank FOIA director Robert J. Walsh, former FOIA director Tom Conley, Marcia Galbreath, and others at INSCOM for working so conscientiously on my requests through the years.

I am especially grateful to the archivists and declassifiers at the National Archives and Records Service in Washington and the Washington National Records Center in Suitland, Maryland, who helped me get thousands of Paperclip records declassified under the FOIA. John Taylor, the late John Mendelsohn, Ed Reese, Richard Boylan, George Wagner, William Lewis, Will Mahoney, Jo Ann Williamson, Terri Hammett, Harry Rilley, and Sally Marks generously shared their knowledge and their humor while helping me locate documents to piece together this story.

At the other end of the scale lies the U.S. Army Materiel Command. I obtained six thousand Edgewood Arsenal documents in 1987, but it took more than a year, two attorneys, and a threatened lawsuit to get the records. My FOIA request was filed in May 1986 for documents held in Army custody at the Washington National Records Center. A month later I was told that I could inspect the records. However, when I arrived at the WNRC, an Army employee showed me forms that indicated that seven boxes had been checked out to Edgewood's historian and twelve additional boxes were "missing." Then Army Materiel circled its wagons, denied that the records existed, and later tried to charge me $239,680 in "search fees." The Army counsel's answer to my formal appeal of those charges was as outrageous as the fee. "The Army's funds were appropriated for the national defense, not to aid aspiring authors," counsel Thomas F. Kranz replied. The documents were finally released after numerous meetings between attorneys on both sides. I am grateful to attorneys Lee Levine and Gregory Burton for helping me obtain the documents.

Other government agencies, archives, and libraries that provided assistance include the U.S. Justice Department's Office of Special Investigations, the Library of Congress, the Harry S. Truman Library, the Dwight D. Eisenhower Library, the Franklin Roosevelt Library, the Hoover Institute at Stanford University, the Center for Military History in Washington, D.C., the U.S. Army Military History Institute at Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania, the history offices at Brooks, Maxwell and Bolling Air Force bases, the Office of Naval History, the National Institutes of Health, the Inter-American Defense Board, the Department of Commerce, NASA's history office,
and the Oregon Historical Society in Portland. Private organizations include the National Security Archives, the AntiDefamation League of B'nai B'rith, and the Simon Wiesenthal Center.

I am especially appreciative of those who encouraged my research from the beginning: Michael Jennings for providing invaluable assistance with research and interviews; Len Ackland, editor of the *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists*, for publishing my coverup story in 1985; the Investigative Reporters and Editors for honoring that story with its prestigious award; Yaffa Eliach

and Brana Gurewitsch from the Center for Holocaust Studies in Brooklyn; Albert Arbor, Eddie Becker, Jerry Eisenberg, Benjamin Eisenstadt, Jack Eisner, Shirley Eisner, Samuel Indenbaum, Dennis King, Hanna Klein, Frank Kuznik, John Loftus, Abram Medow, the Memorial Foundation for Jewish Culture, Dan Moldea, Eli Rosenhaum, Martin Salinger, Julius Schatz, and Cheryl Spaulding; and Jerry Fitzhenry, my agent Leona Schecter, and my parents, Fred and Winifred Hunt, for their unwavering belief that the American public has a right to know this story.

Prologue

AMERICAN soldiers fighting in World War II had barely laid down their guns when hundreds of German and Austrian scientists, including a number implicated in Nazi war crimes, began immigrating to the United States. They were brought here under a secret intelligence project code-named "Paperclip." Ever since, the U.S. government has successfully promoted the lie that Paperclip was a short-term operation limited to a few postwar raids on Hitler's hoard of scientific talent. The General Accounting Office even claims that the project ended in 1947.1

All of which is sheer propaganda. For the first time ever, this' book reveals that Paperclip was the biggest, longest-running operation involving Nazis in our country's history. The project continued nonstop until 1973-*decades* longer than was previously thought. And remnants of it are still in operation today.2

At least sixteen hundred scientific and research specialists and thousands of their dependents were brought to the U. S. under Operation Paperclip. Hundreds of others arrived under two other Paperclip-related projects and went to work for universities, defense contractors, and CIA fronts. The Paperclip operation eventually became such a juggernaut that in *1956* one American ambassador characterized it as "a continuing U.S. recruitment program which has no parallel in any other Allied country."3

The lie that Paperclip ended in the *1940s* has conveniently concealed some of the most damning information about the project-in particular the shocking revelation that one of the intelligence officers who ran it was a spy. U.S. Army Lieutenant Colonel William Henry Whaler, was the highest-placed American military officer ever convicted of espionage. Despite the extensive publicity devoted to Whalen's trial in the 1960s, exactly what he did for the joint Chiefs of Staff (JCS) was not disclosed. This book reveals that in 1959 and 1960 Whalen was at the helm of the joint Intelligence Objectives Agency (JIOA)-which means he was running Paperclip at the same time he was selling America's defense secrets to Soviet intelligence agents.[4]

The full extent of the Soviet penetration of Paperclip remains unknown, since Whalen shredded thousands of documents. But this much is clear: justified as being run in the interest of national security, Paperclip instead posed a serious security threat. In addition to Whalen's activities, there is evidence that the Soviets had penetrated the project almost from the beginning. Almost anything was possible, given the JIOA officers' lax investigations of the foreign scientists' backgrounds .5

The legacy of Paperclip is said to be the moon rockets, jet planes, and other scientific achievements that were a product of postwar research in this country. This is true-as far as it goes. What the project's defenders fail to mention is that its legacy also includes the horrific psychochemical experiments conducted on American soldiers at Edgewood Arsenal, Maryland, the U.S. Army center for chemical warfare research. In this book you'll meet eight Paperclip scientists who worked at Edgewood between 1947 and 1966 developing nerve gas and psychochemicals such as LSD. But Edgewood's contribution to the Paperclip legacy could not have been made by the Germans alone. The disturbing truth is that American doctors were the ones who sifted through grim concentration camp reports and ultimately used Nazi science as a basis for Dachau-like experiments on over seven thousand U.S. soldiers.6

Paperclip's legacy has its roots in the cold war philosophy espoused by the intelligence officers who ran the operation. Their motives, schemes, and coverup efforts are a logical focus for this book, since those are what shaped Paperclip from the beginning. Moreover, the military's secret agenda was far different from the one foisted on the American public. At its heart was an unshakable conviction that the end justified the means. The officers who ran Paperclip were determined to use

any means necessary to keep Nazi scientists out of Russian hands, even if that meant violating U. S. laws and foreign policy.

There may be no better example of the officers' brazen disregard for U.S. policies than the action they took in 1948. As first revealed in an article in the *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists,* JIOA officers simply changed the records of those scientists they wanted, expunging evidence of war crimes and ardent nazism. Though this meant directly defying an order given by President Truman, JIOA Director Bosquet Wev excused the action by asserting that the government's concern over "picayune details" such as Nazi records would result in "the best interests of the United States [being] subjugated to the efforts expended in beating a dead Nazi horse."7

The repercussions of the JIOA officers' actions are still being felt today. One example is retired NASA rocket engineer Arthur Rudolph, who left this country in 1984 rather than face war crimes charges. His case has attracted a bizarre assortment of defenders bent on bringing him back to the United States -including a U.S. congressman with alleged organized crime connections. On May 14, 1990, Congressman James A. Traficant of Ohio told a group of Rudolph's friends in Huntsville, Alabama, that the rocket scientist's problems were caused by a "powerful Jewish lobby" and warned: "If tonight it's Rudolph, who is it tomorrow?" That question undoubtedly made several of Rudolph's colleagues in the audience uncomfortable, since their wartime Nazi activities are also being scrutinized by justice Department prosecutors.[8]

Other activities covered in this book that have not been examined up to now or that take on new significance in light of Paperclip's true history include:

- the expansion of JIOA's intelligence operation in 1948 to include Project National Interest, which brought a convicted Nazi war criminal, an ex-Nazi spy, and other ardent Nazis to the United States to work for universities and defense contractors;
- how the CIA used National Interest as a cover to slip covert CIA operatives overseas into the United States;
- how another JIOA project, called "63," signed up Nuremberg defendant Kurt Blome, convicted Nazi war criminal Eduard Houdremont, and other notorious individuals while the JIOA ran the operation out of a New York hotel;
-details of a scheme by U.S. Air Force General Robert L. Walsh, Director of Intelligence, European Command, to intervene in court decisions involving ex-Nazi intelligence officers working for postwar U.S. intelligence in Germany;
- details of another scheme by Walsh, who, as head of the Inter-American Defense Board, relocated notorious German General Walter Schreiber from the United States to Argentina; • how Whalen's Paperclip recruits in 1959 included a former Wehrmacht soldier who was working as a dishwasher in Canada;
- how an alliance formed in 1985 between political extremist Lyndon LaRouche and former Paperclip scientists tried to shut down the justice Department's Nazi-hunting unit;
- details of another scheme in 1986 to squelch the Justice Department's investigations of former Paperclip specialists Guenther Haukohl and Dieter Grau;
- how NASA publicly honored those same men in a 1987 ceremony commemorating Wernher von Braun;
- how Rudolph's friends tried to bring him back in 1990 to attend a NASA moon walk celebration, despite laws barring his entry into the United States.

In essence this book deals with a hauntingly familiar and contemporary subject: a small group of men in the Pentagon who decided that they alone knew what was best for the country. "And that, I think, is the real danger hen," said former U.S. congresswoman Elizabeth Holtzman, who authored the 1978 immigration law that bars Nazis from our shores. "We have agencies that think that they are a law unto themselves, that regardless of what the law of the land is, regardless of what the president of the United States says, they'll do whatever they think is best for themselves.

And that's very dangerous. "[9]

---

1. General Accounting Office, *Nazis and Axis Collaborators Were Used to Further U.S. Anti-Communist Objectives in Europe-Some Immigrated to the United States* (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 28 June 1985).

2. *Federal Register, 10* August 1989.

3. Ambassador James Conant to Secretary of State, 13 July 1956, State Department "Operation Paperclip" microfiche, Civil Reference Branch, RG 59, NARS (hereafter cited as State fiche).

4. U.S. v. *Whalen,* CR 4360 (E.D. Va., 1966) (hereafter cited as *Whalen).*

5. One example was Soviet mole Donald Maclean's influence over which scientists were hired. See John Loftus, *The Belarus Secret* (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1982).

6. For a good overview of the Edgewood experiments see Colonel James R. Taylor and Major William Johnson, Inspectors General, "Research Report Concerning the Use of Volunteers in Chemical Agent Research," pre pared for the Department of the Army, 21 July 1975 (obtained under the FOIA). See also U.S. *v. Stanley,* 483 U.S. 669 (1987) (hereafter cited as *Stanley).*

7. Linda Hunt, "U.S. Coverup of Nazi Scientists," *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists,* April 1985, p. 24.

8. Traficant's speech at the Huntsville Holiday Inn, 12 May 1990, was sponsored by the Friends of Arthur Rudolph; for information on Traficant's Mafia ties see Dan Moldea, "Mafia and the Congressman," *Washington Weekly,* 19 April 1985.

9. Author interview with Elizabeth Holtzman.

1 The Beginning

ON May 19, 1945, a military transport plane with windows blackened to hide its notorious cargo dropped out of the steely gray skies over Washington, D.C., and lurched down the landing field. As the propellers slowed

and finally stopped, three figures stepped out of the aircraft. The first was a middle-aged man with a scarred face whose slight build belied his importance.1

Herbert Wagner had been the chief missile design engineer for the Henschel Aircraft Company and, more importantly, the creator of the HS-293, the first German guided missile used in combat during World War II. As of that moment, he and his two assistants were setting another historical precedent: they were the first German scientists to set foot on American soil at the end of the war.2

Anxious to tap Wagner's expertise in the design of glider bombs for use against Japan, a U.S. Navy team smuggled him into the United States and then kept him hidden from immigration authorities so as to avoid troubling questions about his Nazi past. And no wonder. Wagner was reported to be an ardent member of the *Sturmabteilung* (the brown-shirted storm troopers) as well as four other Nazi organizations.3

Wagner's surreptitious arrival marked the beginning of a massive immigration of Nazi scientists to the United States and a long, sordid chapter in postwar history. Had he been kept overseas, Wagner almost certainly would have been questioned closely about his Nazi past in a denazification court. Instead he and many of his colleagues were able to take advantage of Project Paperclip, which, in direct contravention of official U.S. policy, gave the Nazi scientists an opportunity to escape justice and start afresh in America.4

Wagner's arrival actually predated the formal creation of Paperclip, though the effort to exploit Germany's scientific talent and resources was well underway by the time of the fall of the Third Reich. As Allied troops pushed inland from the beaches of Normandy in 1944, teams of scientific investigators trailed in their wake, roaming the battlefields in search of research installations that would yield up Hitler's scientific achievements and brain trust.

The scientific teams were made up of U.S. Army, Navy, and Army Air Forces teams and Office of Strategic Services (OSS) intelligence agents attached to special military units called T-forces. At their peak the teams comprised more than ten thousand men scattered over the United Kingdom (where their command group, the Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee [CIOS], was headquartered), France, Belgium, Holland, Luxembourg, and Nazi Germany. The teams' mission was to capture and interrogate Hitler's scientists, locate and microfilm documents, and confiscate all useful equipment found in laboratories and factories.5

According to a journal kept by civilian scientist John Harris, in May 1945 one of those teams located a carefully camouflaged I. G. Farben chemical plant on the outskirts of the German town of Gendorf. The entrance to the plant was flanked by two large brick gateposts, which Harris estimated that a Sherman tank might squeeze through with six inches to spare. But there was no time for such niceties. The tank accompanying Harris's team simply smashed through the entrance, knocking over one of the gateposts and trailing yards of the wire fence that had surrounded the plant behind it.6

The spoils that Harris and his colleagues discovered at Gendorf included some of the greatest scientific minds in Hitler's chemical warfare industry. One was Walter Reppe, an I. G. Farben director and pharmaceutical research expert. Even more impressive was Otto Ambros, a well-known chemist and Farben director who had come to Gendorf to construct a rubber plant nearby. Harris and the other members of the scientific team found Ambros to be a witty, "remarkably clever" man with an extraordinary command of the English language and a charming, personable manner.7

It wasn't long, however, before they discovered another side to Ambros-one that was horrendously evil. He had overseen the use of concentration camp prisoners as slave labor when he was in charge of an I. G. Farben factory at Auschwitz concentration camp. It was a bitterly cruel irony, inasmuch as

an I. G. Farben-dominated company manufactured the poison gas used to murder millions of Jews in the camps. By the time Ambros was shipped off to Munich for interrogation, he was already on the U.S. list of war criminals.8

That dark side of Nazi science was inextricably linked to whatever benefits Hitler's technical brain trust had to offer, but from the beginning it was ignored by American military officers intent on exploiting German expertise. Even as one arm of the U.S. military was working to bring Nazi war criminals to justice after the war, another arm was using whatever means necessary to protect Nazi scientists and give them a safe haven in America. Ultimately this country paid a heavy price for that moral indifference. The methods and philosophies that the Nazi scientists brought with them resulted in serious breaches of U. S. security and the unthinkable horror of American soldiers being used as research guinea pigs in the same way that concentration camp prisoners had been used during the war.

The idea behind the original exploitation project was basically sound. During the planning phase for the Normandy invasion it had become clear that ultimate victory depended on breaking the scientific, economic, and industrial structure of the Third Reich as well as defeating Hitler's troops in the field. German scientists had unleashed a technological war of a kind never seen before. Buzz bombs and V-2 rockets rained down on Great Britain, and in America the War Department was terrified at the thought that Hitler was close to developing an atomic bomb.[9]

The main goal of the exploitation effort was to use the scientific intelligence it garnered to win the war against Nazi Germany and Japan. A secondary objective was to help advance the U.S. military's own technology once the war ended. One phase of the project, code-named "Safehaven," was designed to prevent Germans from escaping to other countries, primarily in Latin America, to continue their wartime research. Finally, the project would rectify an old mistake. Germany had been allowed to rearm after World War I. This time Washington policymakers were determined that Germany would be stripped bare, once and for all, of any technical and scientific capability to rearm and wage another war. [10]

When the exploitation project began, there was no thought of bringing German scientists to America. Indeed, there is strong evidence that President Franklin Roosevelt would have rejected the idea had it been presented to him at the time. Roosevelt already had turned down OSS chief William Donovan's request that the United States offer postarmistice privileges to Germans working for America's fledgling intelligence agency, which had recruited *Schutzstaffel* (SS) officers, members of the German Foreign Office, and high-ranking Abwehr intelligence agents. On December 1, 1944, Donovan asked the president if the recruits could be given special privileges, including "permission for entry into the United States after the war, the placing of their earnings on deposit in an American bank and the like." He acknowledged that only the president had the authority to approve the plan and asked for an immediate answer.11

Roosevelt's blunt, one-paragraph answer would reverberate all the way into the 1980s, when revelations that U.S. intelligence had helped war criminals Klaus Barbie and Arthur Rudolph escape justice gave the president's words stinging irony. He wrote:

> I do not believe that we should offer any guarantees of protection in the post-hostilities period to Germans who are working for your organization. I think that the carrying out of any such guarantees would be difficult and probably be widely misunderstood both in this country and abroad. We may expect that the number of Germans who are anxious to save their skins and property *will* rapidly increase. Among them may be some who should properly be tried for war crimes or at least arrested for active participation in Nazi activities. Even with the necessary controls you mention I am not prepared to authorize the giving of guarantees.12

Yet even before the war with Nazi Germany ended, and long before official Paperclip policies were set, members of the scientific teams were making unauthorized promises and cutting deals with

German scientists whose names had appeared on war crimes "wanted" lists. In effect, the scientific teams wore blinders. Dazzled by German technology that was in some cases years ahead of our own, they simply ignored its evil foundation--which sometimes meant stepping over and around piles of dead bodies--and pursued Nazi scientific knowledge like a forbidden fruit. The teams often included American scientists and military personnel who were familiar with the Germans' work and tended to view them as colleagues. Occasionally the Germans even became their friends.

The team whose mission it was to learn if Hitler's scientists had developed an atomic bomb was already in Europe looking for key nuclear physicists by the time the other scientific units arrived in 1944. Code-named "Alsos," the atomic bomb team was headed by U.S. Army Lieutenant Colonel Boris Pash, whose long and highly controversial career ran the gamut from volunteering to fight in the 1918 Russian Revolution to being accused of running a CIA "special operations" unit which, according to testimony before Congress, "was responsible for assassinations and kidnappings as well as other `special operations.' " No evidence was presented at the hearing that the unit carried out assassinations while Pash was in charge. Pash was also security chief for the Manhattan Project during the development of the atomic bomb in the United States.13

By the time Pash and Alsos's chief scientist, an American named Samuel Goudsmit, reached Strasbourg, France, Goudsmit was certain that the Germans had not yet completed their work on the bomb. Only a handful of men-Carl von Weizsacker, Werner Heisenberg, and a few others-even had the expertise to do the work. Moreover, in November 1944 Goudsmit found von Weizsacker's papers, proving that America's bomb project was at least two years ahead of Nazi Germany's. Nevertheless, when the Alsos team located physicist Rudolph Fleishman he was sent to the United States for interrogation. [14]

Although best known for tracking down German physicists, Alsos also investigated biological and chemical warfare. The University of Strasbourg was a major biological warfare research base, and Pash stayed in the home of the university's biological warfare chief, Eugen von Haagen, who had fled the area before Alsos arrived. Haagen had lived in America in the 1930s, working for the Rockefeller Institute in New York while participating in pro-Nazi German-American Bund activities in his spare time. In 1946, he was arrested and used as a witness for the prosecution at the Nuremberg war crimes trials, where he admitted that several Natzweiler concentration camp prisoners had died after he deliberately had infected them with spotted fever. In 1948 Haagen was offered a job as head of the medical department at the Institute of Medicine and Biology in Berlin. Later arrested by the British and turned over to the French, Haagen was convicted in 1954 by a French court and sentenced to twenty years imprisonment for his crimes. [15]

Goudsmit quickly discovered that a number of Haagen's colleagues at the University of Strasbourg were equally culpable in murder. The university was a model Nazi institution where many of the faculty were SS members whose chemical or biological warfare research consisted of horrific experiments on humans. Chief among them was professor of anatomy August Hirt, the official SS representative at the university, who provided other professors with prisoners for mustard gas experiments. The university proudly displayed Hirt's collection of skulls, which he had amassed by collaborating with Adolf Eichmann to kill Jews and send their still-warm bodies to the university for display. [16]

Alsos also interrogated Kurt Blome, Hitler's overall head of biological warfare, soon after his arrest as a war crimes suspect. (Blome's sordid Nazi past and subsequent employment in a Paperclip-related project are detailed in chapter 11.) When Alsos caught up with him, Blome admitted he had built a biological warfare laboratory at the request of ReichsfuhrerSS Heinrich Himmler. Power hungry and independent, Himmler planned to use biological warfare on Allied troops without Hitler's approval. He ordered Blome 'to conduct experiments on concentration camp prisoners to determine how effective a biological warfare attack would be against advancing Allied troops. But before he could begin, Blome told Alsos, Russian troops captured his laboratory.17

While Hitler's atomic bomb project may have lagged behind America's, that wasn't the case with chemical warfare. Surprisingly, the exploitation project's valuable chemical warfare discoveries, and

especially the Paperclip chemical warfare experts, have been ignored by historians, even though their discoveries were certainly equal to the scientific advancement of the V-2 rocket. Chemical Warfare Service teams investigated everything from nerve gas experiments to rifle ranges where shackled prisoners under the influence of mind-altering drugs staggered around with loaded guns looking for the target. The teams were shocked to discover that the Germans had invented three new nerve gases-Tabun, Sarin, and Soman-which were far more deadly than the mustard gases the Allies had at that time. The German gases were so superior that after the war Sarin became America's standard nerve gas, while the USSR chose Tabun.18

Formulas and samples of these gases were discovered by a team of nineteen U.S., British, and Canadian chemical warfare experts that had targeted major German chemical warfare installations in the Munsterlager area. The team was headed by Commander A. K. Mills of the British Ministry of Aircraft Production. Mills's group tracked down a Wehrmacht experimental station at Raubkammer, a gas defense laboratory, a Luftwaffe chemical warfare experimental station, and several Luftwaffe and Wehrmacht chemical munition plants. The group was able to determine from captured documents and interrogations of German chemical warfare personnel that Tabun was produced at the rate of 1,000 tons a month at a factory in Dyhernfurth that was captured by the Russians.19

Mills's team discovered that chemical warfare experiments had been conducted on both animals and humans in the captured facilities. At Raubkammer a main laboratory and nine annexes housed laboratory animals used in experiments, including dogs, cats, guinea pigs, apes, and horses. He also found four thousand photographs of mustard gas experiments conducted on men who appeared to be political prisoners from concentration camps. In some cases liquid mustard had been applied directly to the victims' skin, which resulted in oozing blisters, burns, and deep scars all over their bodies. At least six of them had died. [20]

The investigators also captured fourteen of Nazi Germany's major chemical warfare experts, including General Walter Hirsch, head of Wa Pruf 9, the Wehrmacht's main chemical warfare section. They were taken for interrogation to a detention camp where other chemical warfare experts were held, including SS Brigadier General Walter Schieber, who had overseen the chemical industry for Albert Speer's Armaments Ministry. Schieber would later work under Paperclip for a decade in West Germany, making nerve gas for the Chemical Division of European Command.21

In another part of Nazi Germany, U. S. Army Air Forces teams were tracking down the scientists who designed Germany's highly advanced jet aircraft, underground bomb-proof shelters, parachutes, and anything else having to do with air combat. Air Corps Colonel Donald Putt headed a team that located the Hermann Goring Aeronautical Research Institute in Brunswick. The forty-year-old officer was a friendly, adventuresome man with a weatherbeaten face and a masters degree in aeronautical engineering. A veteran test pilot, Putt had helped supervise the development of the B-29 bomber at Wright Field air base near Dayton, Ohio.22

Putt thought he knew all about aircraft, but he was stunned by what he found at Brunswick. "There was this plane with incredible swept-back wings," he recalled forty years later. "I'd never seen anything like it." What Putt had found was Adolf Busemann's swept-back wing aircraft, which became a prototype for the U.S. Air Force's swept-wing planes in later years.23

The institute was one of Germany's largest scientific complexes, with twelve hundred specialists, five wind tunnels, and numerous laboratories. The specialists ran the gamut, from jet aircraft design to jet fuel, parachutes, and nearly every imaginable aeronautical invention. Putt gathered the Germans together and, without approval from higher authorities in the War Department, promised them jobs at Wright Field if they would go with him to a holding center for captured personnel in Bad Kissingen. He also promised to send their families to the United States, then instructed the scientists to sell all of their belongings and to travel light .24

Other Army Air Forces teams were looking for Germany's leading experts in aero medicine. But some of the most significant information about their work was found when American troops "opened the gates of hell," in the words of the liberator of Dachau, Colonel Walter J. Fellenz, commanding officer of the 42d Infantry Division. The young American soldiers who broke through Dachau's iron

gate found the reason they had been fighting the war when they saw the tortured faces of the half-starved crowd that cheered when they entered the camp .25

While Fellenz's troops tended to the survivors, U. S. Army Major Leo Alexander sifted through documents to obtain names of the camp administrators and Nazi doctors-evidence that would be used later at Nuremberg. Alexander was a Boston psychiatrist whose medical expertise played a key role in the Nuremberg war crimes trials. He was the chief medical investigator and expert witness for the Nuremberg war crimes prosecution staff .26

Dachau's Experimental Block number 5 was where Nazi scientists conducted medical experiments on the camp's defenseless prisoners. U.S. soldiers in the 363d Medical Battalion were overwhelmed by the stench when they walked into the building. Parts of human bodies-arms, legs, organs of every type-were lying everywhere. Hundreds of innocent people had been murdered there in the name of science. And some of the men who conducted these experiments were the same respected scientists, university professors, and doctors that the AAF teams would later hire to work under Paperclip.27

The experiments were ostensibly conducted to find ways to save the lives of Luftwaffe pilots who crashed at sea and were forced to live on seawater, or parachuted out of airplanes at high altitudes, or were exposed to extremely cold weather. Dachau inmates were deliberately infected with disease, forcefed seawater, or starved for oxygen in a chamber.28

In one experiment a group of Russian prisoners was frozen to death in vats of ice water in the camp yard during the winter. The prisoners endured excruciating pain before they died, as parts of their bodies slowly began to freeze. A Luftwaffe doctor, Sigmund Rascher, and University of Kiel Professor E. Holzlohner were among those conducting the experiments. They wanted to know if frozen flyers' lives could be saved if their bodies were thawed out.29

While investigating this crime, one scientist whom Alexander talked with was Luftwaffe Colonel Hubertus Strughold, a Paperclip hire who today is touted as the "father of American space medicine." Strughold was wartime head of the Luftwaffe's Institute for Aviation Medicine in Berlin. Like von Haagen, Strughold also had lived in the United States, and his work in aviation physiology was widely known in American scientific and military circles. When Alexander asked him about the freezing experiments, Strughold said that he knew of them from a meeting he had attended in Nuremberg in 1942, and that he had heard a radio broadcast mentioning that Rascher was wanted in connection with the experiments. Other than that, Strughold said he knew nothing.[3]0

As Alexander continued his investigation, Himmler's SS records were found in a cave. They were a treasure trove of information that included Himmler's correspondence with Rascher and other individuals concerning the medical experiments at Dachau. As Alexander pieced the evidence together, he realized that Strughold had lied. Siegfried Ruff, another Paperclip hire and coauthor of a book with Strughold, was named in connection with high-altitude experiments. Ruff was head of the Department for Aviation Medicine at the German Experimental Institute for Aviation, the DVL (Deutsche Versuchsanstalt fur Luftfahrt). Holzlohner was identified as conducting the freezing tests, and several other names cropped up whom Alexander knew to be Strughold's close colleagues.31

Alexander submitted two CIOS reports about the experiments to the Army's war crimes staff in which he noted his suspicion that Strughold had "covered up" the involvement "by his friend and co-worker Ruff, and by his colleague Holzlohner" in the Dachau experiments. By the time Alexander's reports wended their way to Nuremberg, however, Strughold was already sheltered under the protective wing of the U.S. Army Air Forces.32

Significantly, a CIOS team investigating aviation medicine was unimpressed with the value of Strughold's wartime work. Their final report concluded that Strughold and other Germans had suffered considerably from their isolation during the war, “since scientific achievements which they presented as new and revolutionary were in most cases long since attained by .the Allied investigators."33

Meanwhile, U. S. Army Colonel Holger Toftoy was in charge of five Army Ordnance technical

intelligence teams scouring the battlefields for weapons, equipment, and Hitler's rocket team. Like Colonel Putt, Toftoy had long been intrigued by technical matters. Before graduating from high school he had built an automobile from an old gasoline engine and bicycle parts. Now the West Point graduate was looking for the brains behind the rockets that blitzed London. [34]

Key members of the group that had been at the Peenemunde rocket base surrendered to the U.S. Army in a well-known story of their capture. One ordnance team member, Major Robert Staver, recalled that he was jubilant when the Army caught up with the Nazi rocket scientists. The most brilliant among them was the chief scientist and designer, who was only thirty-two years old. But Wernher von Braun's rocket career dated back to the 1930s, when he was the protege of Hermann Oberth, the father of German rocketry. Von Braun and four hundred other rocket experts were taken to Garmisch for interrogation by Toftoy and other members of the ordnance team .[35]

As always, there was a dark side to the rocket scientists, too. This time it surfaced when American troops found the remains of Dora concentration camp inmates who had been starved, beaten, hanged, and literally worked to death as slaves in the Mittelwerk underground V-2 rocket factory. Colonel James L. Collins was leading an infantry unit toward Nordhausen when his liaison officer called him over the radio. "Colonel," he said, "you'd better get up here and see what we've got. It's terrible." By this time scenes from hell had become part of Collins's daily routine. But his mind reeled with horror at what he found at Camp Dora.[36]

As Collins approached the huge, cavelike entrance to the factory on the hill, six thousand bodies covered the ground. As far as he could see, row upon row of skin-covered skeletons were frozen solid in grotesque shapes, bearing bruises and wounds from beatings. "They had been starved to death," Collins recalled. "Their arms were just little sticks, their legs had practically no flesh on them at all." As the soldiers moved through the choking stench of death, they found the smoldering furnaces of Dora's crematory. The doors were still open where the SS had been shoving bodies in and burning them up, [37]

Yves Beon, a member of the French Resistance, was one of the few who survived that hell. He had been arrested by the Gestapo in 1943, imprisoned at Dora, and forced to work on the V-2 rocket. "We worked in the center of the mountain with no air, and just had one small piece of bread and margarine to eat all day," Beon recalled. "It was horrible."38

The next day, as American troops tried to recover from the shock of their discovery, a soldier sat down on a filthy stoop and stared at a crumpled news report. A Dora survivor sitting next to him quietly reached out his thin hand and touched the tears streaming down his liberator's face. The soldier's commander in chief was dead. Franklin D. Roosevelt had guided the nation through an unprecedented four terms, from the Depression into the war. Now the burden of war passed to Harry S. Truman.[39]

Members of the ordnance technical intelligence team, including Toftoy's aid, Major James Hamill, and Staver, arrived at the scene around the same time as an army war crimes unit. U.S. Army Major Herschel Auerbach had been sent to the site to investigate the crimes committed against the prisoners. His unit went one way, interrogating individuals and searching for evidence against those responsible for the deaths of twenty thousand Dora prisoners, while Hamill and Staver went in a different direction, to load up the V-2 rockets found in the tunnels, track down technical documents, and search the hills for rocket scientists who had worked in the Mittelwerk factory.[40]

In the end, however, both groups ended up looking for the same men. Dora survivors told war crimes investigators that
Mittelwerk personnel as well as the SS had harmed them. Particularly notorious was Mittelwerk's technical director, Albin Sawatzki. After Army MPs had imprisoned Sawatzki in a makeshift pen in the camp yard, a Frenchman standing nearby became enraged upon seeing him. "That bastard nearly beat the life out of me a dozen times," the Frenchman yelled as he drew back his fist and smashed it into Sawatzki's face.[41]

Sawatzki identified key Mittelwerk personnel and SS officers by name, and even told investigators

where he thought they could be found. Sawatzki identified Georg Rickhey as Mittelwerk's general manager and said the Production Director Arthur Rudolph was one of the men responsible for the number of hours the prisoners were forced to work. He admitted that the prisoners had died from bad conditions, including food, exposure, and impure air in the factory. Sawatzki also brazenly admitted that he had "kicked some of the workers from time to time. "[42]

Once again, however, the mind-set, opinions, and goals of the technical and scientific teams were so self-serving that Germans who should have been arrested as war crimes suspects escaped justice. Rickhey was arrested once, but was released. U. S. Strategic Bombing Survey Colonel Peter Beasley located Rickhey, struck up a friendship with him, and even moved into his house. After all, Rickhey possessed something that the colonel badly wanted. He had forty-two boxes of Mittelwerk management records that included information about V-2 rockets and bomb-proof shelters. Ignoring the potential those records held for evidence of war crimes, Beasley packed them-and Rickhey-off to London .[43]

By the time Nazi Germany surrendered in May 1945, Army Ordnance, CIOS, and other scientific teams had assessed nearly every primary technical and scientific target. But jealous rivalries erupted between the teams and among the four Allied nations, which were competing for the same spoils of war. That competition, particularly with the Soviets, would heighten when Germany was divided into four occupied zones.44

> As a result of that competition more than fifteen hundred German scientists and technicians were forced to leave their homes, and in some cases their families, and move to the U. S.controlled zone of Germany. Many were glass technicians from the Carl Zeiss factory in Jena, who were forcibly evacuated and interned in a camp for over a year. At least two members of Zeiss's group committed suicide over the ordeal. Ironically, while there was an outcry of protest after the war when Russian troops kidnapped scientists to work in the USSR, American authorities conveniently hid the fact that they had done virtually the same thing-and in violation of international law .[41]

One of the most disturbing cases of forced relocation occurred toward the end of the war, when the Naval Technical Mission in Europe decided it wanted to exploit the skills of Wilhelm Eitel, the wartime head of the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute's silicates department in Berlin. Even his colleagues considered Eitel an ardent Nazi who had won his position by collaborating with Wilhelm Frick to fire nine Jewish scientists in 1933, when Hitler banned Jews from positions in government and elsewhere. One of those scientists ended up in a concentration camp; the others were forced to flee Germany.[46]

Russian troops were closing in on Berlin when an army colonel, Ralph Osborne, told Eitel to leave the city. Osborne was in charge of the Field Information Agency, Technical (FIAT), which later helped coordinate Paperclip operations in Europe. Eitel packed his bags and fled, abandoning his wife and five children to face the fast-approaching Soviet troops. His wife hanged herself instead. After the war Berlin police kept her suicide case open for years when they learned that Eitel had married his wife's sister soon after the suicide. But by then Eitel was safe in the United States, working for the Navy.[47]

In addition to Eitel, the Navy team located torpedo and submarine experts and the staff of Peenemunde Aerodynamics Institute, including the institute's codirectors, Rudolf Hermann and Hermann Kurzweg, who worked in Kochel. The Peenemunde group had built two high-speed wind tunnels to test guided missiles and projectiles. The tunnels were a rare find. Both operated at more than twice the mach speed of any wind tunnel in America .[48]

In May the Navy team traveled to the Bavarian village of Oberammergau looking for their key target-Herbert Wagner. Just weeks after they found him, he was ensconced in a Washington, D.C., hotel, being debriefed and given a new life.[49]

It had taken the greatest war in history to put a stop to an unspeakable evil. And now the cutting edge of that nightmare was being transplanted to America.

---

1. For Navy mission history and activities see U.S. Naval Technical Mission in Europe, "Historical Data on NTME," and report summaries, RG 38, NARS; the Wagner description and Nazi records are in the Herbert Wagner JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS. For general information see Clarence Lasby, *Project Paperclip* (New York: Atheneum, 1971).

2. Lasby, *Project Paperclip.*

3. For information about Wagner's entry date and avoidance of usual U.S. immigration procedure see the Immigration and Naturalization Service (INS) form in the Reinhard Lahde JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS. Lahde was brought to the United States with Wagner. Wagner's Nazi records are in his JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

4. Lasby, *Project Paperclip.*

5. Ibid.; John Gimbel, "U.S. Policy and German Scientists: The Early Cold War," *Political Science Quarterly, 101* (1986). For CIOS history and OSS links see "Memorandum on the Establishment and Present Status of the Grey List Panel of the Combined Intelligence Objectives Subcommittee," 30 January 1945, entry 165, RG 226, NARS.

6. The report by John McArthur Harris, "Chemical Warfare Service," March to June 1945, is at AMHI.

7. Ibid.

8. For information on Ambros see the Nuremberg I. G. Farben case, *U.S. v. Krauch et at.,* M892, RG 238, NARS (hereafter cited as *Krauch).* 9. An overview of German science can be found in Leslie Simon, *German Research in World War II* (New York: John Wiley, 1947). OSS reports on German chemical warfare research are in RG 226, NARS.

10. For a comprehensive history of the early exploitation project see Ralph Osborne, "History of the Field Information Agency, Technical (FIAT)," Ralph Osborne file, AMHI. Statistics and an overview are in "Final Report of FIAT," 1 July 1947, 321.01-77(FIAT), RG 260, WNRC; and "Bi-Weekly Progress Report Number 1 for FIAT," 4 July 1945, GBI/ FIAT/319.2, RG 260, WNRC. FIAT was established in July 1945 to wrap up CIOS responsibilties and oversee Paperclip in the European theater until 1947. Osborne was FIAT chief.

11. William Donovan to President Franklin Roosevelt, 1 December 1944, RG 226, NARS. For information on individuals used by the OSS see Stewart Alsop and Thomas Braden, Sub *Rosa: The OSS and American Es pionage* (New York: Reynado Hitchcock, 1946). Allen Dulles's testimony as "Mr. B" is in House Committee on Expenditures in the Executive Departments, *National Security Act* of 1947, 80th Cong., lst sess., H.R. 2319, 27 June 1947. This hearing was not made public until 1982, when the Permanent Select Committee on Intelligence located the only existing transcript in CIA files during a committee review of CIA records. The original hearing was closed and the House's transcript was destroyed. See the introduction to the printed hearings for background.

12. President Franklin Roosevelt, "Memorandum for General Donovan," undated but stamped as received by Donovan's office on 18 December 1944, RG 226, NARS. Charles A. Bane, Office of the Secretariat, suggested to Donovan that Roosevelt's reply should be summarized to the OSS in Stockholm, "which first raised the question."

13. Pash's military career: Boris Pash file, HI; Boris Pash, *The Alsos Mission* (New York: Award House, 1969); U.S. Army Intelligence Center, *History of the Counter Intelligence Corps* (Fort Holabird, Md.: USAIC, De cember 1959), vol. 8, pt. 3, "CIC With the Alsos Mission," INSCOM. CIA "special operations" unit: from Senate Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations With Respect to Intelligence Activities, *Final Report,* bk. 4, 94th Cong., 2d sess., report no. 94-755 (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1976), pp. 128-33 (hereafter cited as Senate Select Committee, *Final Report,* no. 94-755).

14. Samuel A. Goudsmit, *Alsos* (New York: Henry Schuman, 1947). 15. Ibid. Haagen's testimony is in U.S. *v. Brandt et al.,* M887, RG 238, NARS (hereafter cited as *Brandt).* Postwar job: Haagen's INSCOM dossier; French trial: in "2 German Doctors Sentenced," *The New York Times,* 15 May 1954.

16. Goudsmit, *Alsos.* Information about Hirt and chemical warfare experiments is in *Brandt.*

17. Alsos interrogation: in the Kurt Blome INSCOM dossier XE001248. Arrest reports: in Blome's Nuremberg arrest file, RG 238, NARS.

18. A comparison of the Allies' mustard gas with Tabun, Sarin, and Soman is in Taylor and Johnson, "Use of Volunteers in Chemical Agent Research." (Note: the classified chapter 9 of this report, "Intelligence Corps LSD Testing," was obtained under a separate FOIA request from INSCOM, "Project Derby Hat.")

19. A. K. Mills, "Investigation of Chemical Warfare Installations in the Munsterlager Area, Including Raubkammer," CIOS report no. 8, NIH. 20. Ibid.

21. Ibid. Identification of some detained individuals is found in "Final Report of FIAT"; Chemical Corps Historical Studies, "History of German Chemical Warfare in World War II," pt. 1, no. 2, RG 338, NARS; and Walter Schieber INSCOM dossier XE001005.

22. Author interview with retired U.S. Air Force Lieutenant General Donald Putt.

23. Putt interview; Donald Putt to Commanding General, AAF, "Report on Events and Conditions Which Occurred During Procurement of Foreign Technical Men for Work in the U.S.A.," 25 September 1945, located in the appendix of documents attached to Department of the Air Force, *History of the AAF Participation in Project Paperclip, May* 1945*March* 1947 (Wright Field, Ohio: Air Materiel Command, 1948), 4 vols., BOL (hereafter cited as *AAF Participation in Project Paperclip).* This history is valuable because its appendix contains AAF documents not found elsewhere concerning Paperclip, Wright Field, and the AAF Aero Medical Center.

24. Ibid.

25. Yaffa Eliach and Brana Gurewitsch, *The Liberators* (Brooklyn: Center for Holocaust Studies Documentation and Research, 1981).

26. Alexander's background and findings are in *Brandt.* 27. Eliach and Gurewitsch, *Liberators.*

28. *Brandt.* 29. Ibid.

30. Leo Alexander, "Neuropathology and Neurophysiology, Including Electrcencephalography, in Wartime Germany," CIOS report L-170, found in *Brandt* records; Leo Alexander, "The Treatment of Shock From Pro longed Exposure to Cold, Especially in Water," CIOS report, USSR exhibit 435, International Military Tribunal, NARS.

31. Regarding Himmler's files see Alexander, "Treatment of Shock." 32. Ibid.

33. Ibid.; CIOS, "Aviation Medicine, General Medicine, Veterinary Medicine, Chemical Warfare," item nos. 24 and 25, file no. XXVII, WNRC. 34. Toftoy biography is from CMH. On Peenemunde generally see Lasby, *Paperclip;* Frederick Ordway and Mitchell Sharpe, *The Rocket Team* (Cambridge, Mass.: MIT Press, 1982); David Irving, *The Mare's Nest* (London: Panther Books, 1985); Walter Dornberger, V-2 (New York: Viking, 1985); and Dieter Huzel, *From Peenemunde to Canaveral* (Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, 1962).

35. Major Robert Staver letter to the author, 4 September 1985.

36. Author interview with retired Brigadier General James L. Collins. See also Linda Hunt, producer/reporter, "Nazi Coverup," a fourpart series by the CNN Special Assignment I-Team, first broadcast in March 1986.

37. Ibid.

38. Author interview with Yves Beon.

39. Soldiers' reactions to Roosevelt's death are in the concentration camp film reel *Nordhausen,* a U.S. Army Signal Corps film, NARS.

40. Robert Staver letter to author; author interview with Herschel Auerbach. Auerbach located dental records of SS officers that were used later for identification purposes in U.S. *v. Andrae et al.,* M1079, RG 153 and RG 338, NARS (hereafter cited as *Andrae).* For a short history of Dora by war crimes staff see William Aalmann, *"Dora"-Nordhausen Labor-Concentration Camps and Information on the Nordhausen War Crimes Case,* prosecution staff booklet, in *Andrae.* For Dora survivors' perspective see Jean Michel, *Dora* (London: Weidenfeld and Nicolson, 1979); Jean Michel, *De L'Enfer Aux Etoiles* (Paris: Librairie Plon, 1985); and Yves Beon, *La planete Dora* (France: Editions du Seuil, 1985). See also Linda Hunt, "Arthur Rudolph, NASA and Dora," *Moment,* April 1987; and Josef Garliriski, *Hitler's Last Weapons* (New York: Times Books, 1978).

41. Victor Bernstein, "I Saw the Bodies of 3000 Slaves Murdered by Nazis," PM, 17 April 1945.

42. Sworn Statement of Albin Sawatzki, 14 April 1945, prosecution exhibit, *Andrae.*

43. Information about the elusive forty-two boxes of documents and Rickhey's relationship with Beasley is in Rickhey's testimony, *Andrae.*

44. Osborne, "History of the Field Information Agency, Technical."

45. Carl Zeiss to USFET Headquarters, "Report on Evacuated Scientists From Carl Zeiss Jena," 17 July 1946, G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC.

46. See Wilhelm Eitel INSCOM dossier XE061886 and JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS, for numerous statements regarding Eitel, especially the OMGUS memo to the S-2 Branch, 27 February 1949, and the Robert Have man statement. For the fate of Jewish scientists see Bernt Engelmann, *Germany Without,7ews* (New York: Bantam Books, 1984).

47. Ibid.

48. S. M. Hastings, "The NSWC/WOL Wind Tunnels," NSWC pamphlet, August 1979, ONH. For Navy mission history and activities see U.S. Naval Technical Mission in Europe, "Historical Data on NTME," and report summaries, RG 38, NARS.

49. Entry dates are in the Herbert Wagner JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

2 Rules of the Game

IN the summer of 1945, as American troops coped with the chaos and ruin of what once had been Hitler's Third Reich, the scientific teams held thousands of German scientists captive in detention camps across Germany. The Hotel Wittelsbacher Hof in Bad Kissingen was no exception, though it looked more like the site of a big scientific convention than a holding center for Germans captured by the Army Air Forces. American jeeps arrived daily, bringing in scientists of all ages, their luggage containing only the few personal belongings they had hurriedly gathered together. These men, some 120 in number, were jet engine, wind tunnel, and rocket fuel experts under Colonel Putt's control.1

Putt viewed his captives not as former enemies but as scientists whose technical know-how could benefit the Air Corps. "The Germans were years ahead of us in aircraft design," Putt later recalled. Nazi Germany had barely surrendered when Putt began asking his superiors to formulate a policy to bring the scientists to America. He quickly gained the support of Major General Hugh Knerr, who soon would be named commanding officer of Wright Field air base. Both Putt and Knerr believed that the Germans' knowledge would advance the AAF's own jet design by a decade. Knerr sought War Department permission to send at least five Germans to Wright Field, including Theodor Zobel, a designer whose innovative methods included photographing airflow patterns around jet wings to help improve aircraft designs. Another was Germany's preeminent supersonics expert, Adolf Busemann.2

But American interrogators in Putt's group were opposed to Knerr's idea, since they believed that some of these Germans were ardent Nazis. One navy officer, H. M. Mott-Smith, had already dropped the former co-director of Peenemunde's Aerodynamics Institute, Rudolf Hermann, from a project involving the dismantling of the Kochel wind tunnel that was sent to White Oaks, Maryland. Mott-Smith had found Hermann to be "untrustworthy and in some respects incapable." Hermann's colleagues and other American officers in Putt's group also shared this opinion. Mott-Smith's complaints increased after he learned that the Navy planned to send Hermann to America. "Dr. Hermann was twice picked up by the CIC and investigated for Nazi activities, the second time on accusation by one of his former associates of having been instrumental in having the man sent to a concentration camp," he told his superiors. Hermann later was cleared, but U.S. Army Counter Intelligence Corps (CIC) agents then interned his wife as an ardent Nazi. Once again Mott-Smith complained that Hermann's "uncertain political sympathies, the proved Nazi sympathies of his wife, and the mistrust of him by his subordinates" easily could damage the Navy's project. The Navy agreed and dropped Hermann from its hiring list. Putt eventually brought him to Wright Field despite the damaging reports. [3]

Unaware of those controversies, War and State Department officials had not made a decision on numerous proposals sitting on their desks. These came not only from Knerr and the Navy but also Colonel Toftoy and other Army Ordnance officers who wanted to bring Wernher von Braun's rocket group to America. All of those involved in discussions agreed that America should use the Germans' skills to win the war against Japan-if steps were taken to eliminate security risks. "These men are enemies and it must be assumed that they are capable of sabotaging our war effort," remarked Under Secretary of War Robert Patterson.4

On the other hand, U.S. immigration laws at the time prohibited members of fascist groups from entering the country. In addition, Joint Chiefs of Staff policy required that the commanding general in the European theater "exclude from further research activity any persons who previously held key positions in German war research." Ardent Nazis in charge of German universities and scientific institutes were supposed to be replaced by those less politically suspect. But now policymakers were being asked to approve proposals to bring some of those same Germans to the United States and put them to work.5

The idea also conflicted with JCS policies regarding the prosecution of Nazi war criminals and denazification of the general German population. When Justice Robert Jackson returned from Europe shortly after his appointment as chief of counsel for the prosecution of war crimes, he told President Truman, "I have assurances from the War Department that those likely to be accused as war criminals will be kept in close confinement and stern control." Even with Jackson's assurance, Under Secretary of War Patterson remained concerned that accused war criminals might be included in the ranks of those the U.S. military now wanted to bring to America .[6]

Ultimately the war against Japan proved to be the deciding factor. The JCS approved the project, code-named "Overcast," and sent the rules of the game to commanders in the European theater. The project's stated purpose was to temporarily exploit German and Austrian scientists to "assist in shortening the Japanese war." It was limited to those few "chosen, rare minds" whose skills could not be fully exploited in Europe. Once that exploitation was completed they were to be returned immediately to Germany. The JCS acknowledged Patterson's concerns by including a clause that specifically banned known or alleged war criminals, and this order: "If any specialists who are brought to this country are subsequently found to be listed as alleged war criminals, they should be returned to Europe for trial." It was an order that soon would be ignored.7

Once Project Overcast was approved, a War Department spokesman made a terse public announcement that "a number of carefully selected scientists and technologists are being brought to the United States." He informed the press, however, that there would be "no interviews, no itineraries, no pictures," and then refused to reveal any further information.8

Over the next few months, three military intelligence agencies formed a power base enabling them to control the project's course for the next two decades and to hide their dubious activities from the American public. These were the Joint Intelligence Committee (JIC), the Joint Intelligence Objectives Agency (JIOA), and the Exploitation Branch under Army intelligence (G-2) in the War Department General Staff (WDGS).

It is important to keep in mind that the project was run by intelligence officers. While the American public may have been told that the German scientists were considered valuable because of their scientific skills, the intelligence officers running the project had a far different agenda. They viewed the project as the *intelligence* exploitation of Germany, and along with that, the Soviet Union and France. The decisions they made-often in secret-reflected that view. Despite JCS policies, some of those brought to the United States under the project were a far cry from being "scientists" or even Germans or Austrians. The scientists who did arrive were interrogated about what they knew about the Soviet Union, and their mail was constantly screened for intelligence information.

The JIC was the intelligence arm of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, responsible for advising the JCS on the intelligence problems and policies and furnishing intelligence information to the JCS and the State Department. The JIC was composed of the Army's director of intelligence, the chief of naval intelligence, the assistant chief of Air Staff-2, and a representative of the State Department. They considered policy questions regarding the German scientist project and recommended procedural changes to the JCS. The Army's director of intelligence always played a key role in the project, since the policy made Army intelligence (G-2) administratively responsible for many aspects of the program, including background investigations. Lieutenant General Hoyt Vandenberg served in that position until June 1946, when President Truman appointed him director of the Central Intelligence Group, which became the Central Intelligence Agency in 1947.[9]

The JIOA was established as a subcommittee of the JIC specifically to assume direct responsibility for running the German scientist program until the JIOA was disbanded in 1962. The agency was comprised of a JIOA Governing Committee, made up of one representative of each member agency of the JIC, and an operational staff of military intelligence officers from the different services. Army Colonel E. W. Gruhn was the first JIOA director, a position that generally rotated annually among the agency's military officers. JIOA's duties included administering the project's policies and procedures, compiling dossiers, and serving as liaison to British intelligence officers running a similar project in Great Britain. In addition, JIOA took over many of CIOS's activities when that agency was dissolved shortly after Nazi Germany's surrender. JIOA was responsible for collecting, declassifying, and

distributing CIOS and other technical intelligence reports on German science and industry.10

Finally, the Exploitation Branch under G-2, WDGS, was the implementing agency for the project. The chief of this branch represented the Army's director of intelligence on the JIOA Governing Committee. This secret unit, which changed names several times, was part of the Military Intelligence Division and had carried out many intriguing missions, a history that did not change once it became involved with German scientists. First called Prisoner of War (POW) Branch and then Captured Personnel and Material (CPM) Branch, the agency was responsible for directing "escape and evasion" activities that included interrogating enemy prisoners of war and helping individuals friendly to the Allies escape from behind enemy lines.11

Lieutenant Colonel Monroe Hagood was head of the unit when Overcast was approved in 1945. He was overwhelmed with work and frustrated that his small staff of interrogators received little support for numerous ongoing projects. Two months after the JCS approved the policy, Assistant Secretary of War Robert A. Lovett furiously accused G-2 of ineptitude when he learned that none of the German scientists had arrived. Hagood took the brunt of that criticism and later complained that while his staff was expected to be responsible for half the work needed to initiate Overcast, the War Department gave him no funds to accomplish the task. 12

Hagood's biggest problem, however, was that his CPM Branch interrogation staff was too small to take on yet another group of Nazis. They already were helping officers who smuggled former intelligence experts, members of the German High Command, and high-ranking German naval intelligence officers into Washington, where they were hidden from public view and interrogated about the USSR.

On one side of Washington, Hitler's spy chief and Soviet expert General Reinhard Gehlen and other members of his wartime intelligence staff were cloistered behind high fences in Fort Hunt, Virginia. Under the direction of Major General Edwin Sibert, Army intelligence chief in Germany, Gehlen and the others were interrogated, put in a room with hidden listening devices, and left to talk among themselves as intelligence officers listened in. Along with Gehlen's group, Fort Hunt also housed a combined CPM Branch and Navy project to interrogate four German admirals, including Hitler's naval intelligence chief, Rear Admiral Otto Schulz, and sixteen other German Navy specialists on the USSR, including Norbert von Baumbach, the former naval attache in Moscow. The commanding officer of Fort Hunt, Lieutenant Colonel Montie Cone, later was involved in Paperclip for over a decade.13

On the other side of the capital in Camp Ritchie, Maryland, a group of German High Command officers were interrogated and helped translate important captured German documents. One of these men was a notorious Nazi-Major General Gustav Hilger-who was on a U.S. Army war crimes wanted list while living at the camp. Hilger had been Nazi Foreign Minister Joachim Ribbentrop's informant on the operation of *Einsatzgruppen,* the SS killing units that massacred hundreds of thousands of Jews. While Ribbentrop was hanged as a war criminal after the war, Hilger returned to Washington in 1948 under State Department auspices, living openly, with his name listed in the telephone directory. Others in the Washington area with Hilger in 1945 were: Kurt Zinneman, who headed the Russian section of the German War Economy Branch; General August Koestring, military attache in Moscow; and Nazi historian Peter-Heinz Seraphim, whose research on Jews was used avidly by Hitler's propaganda chief. 14

Hagood's overworked interrogators in CPM Branch were not the only source of delays. A British project called "Backfire" lasted through the summer. It was supposed to be a major effort to study the Germans' V-2 rocket launching techniques, but it soon turned into a fiasco tying up several of the main rocket experts. Hundreds of Allied officers and nearly a thousand Germans, including von Braun and Arthur Rudolph, gathered at an isolated area off the Dutch coast known as Cuxhaven. Entire units of officers spent months scouring an area from Paris to Berlin, digging up fields and rummaging through factories to find enough V-2 parts to reassemble rockets that were barely operational. The British released hundreds of German Wehrmacht officers and "tradesmen" from POW camps to work as construction crews at the launch site. The project's director even admitted

that "it was necessary to give them better treatment than the normal P.W." to make them cooperate. By September only three rockets had been launched, and the JCS angrily told the British that they wanted von Braun and other rocket experts sent to America at once.15

In addition to the delays, Operation Backfire succeeded in blocking an investigation of Rudolph's wartime activities at Mittelwerk. Canadian Field Service (FS Sec) officers uncovered information that Rudolph was Mittelwerk's production director and that foreign slave labor there "has been very badly mishandled according to Dir. Rudolph's own words." They also suspected that another Mittelwerk engineer, Hans Lindenberg, "may be wanted" in connection with Rudolph's activities. But the officers were not allowed to interrogate them, due to what they called the "delicate situation" at Cuxhaven.16

The question then arose of what to do with General Walter Dornberger, who had headed the V-2 . operation at Peenemunde. He was separated from other Germans after trying to turn American and British officers against each other for his own benefit. During interrogation, he blithely mentioned that Russian, French, and Polish POWs had been used as forced laborers at Peenemunde. In fact, ten thousand foreign laborers had been imprisoned at a concentration camp in Karlshagen, located near the Peenemunde rocket base. The camp included political prisoners who had been taken from their countries by force to work as slave labor on V-2 rockets. Dornberger said that many of these prisoners had been killed when the Allies bombed the rocket base in 1943. Unfortunately, neither British nor American intelligence officers questioned Dornberger closely about the use of POWs and political prisoners as forced labor-and their possible mistreatment-in violation of international law.17

AAF General Knerr, of course, immediately pounced on the idea of bringing Dornberger to Wright Field, and once again his overenthusiasm for the Germans rankled other American officers. One general told Knerr not only that would he block AAF efforts to employ Dornberger, but that "in fact, we may trade him to the Russians for a dish of caviar." Dornberger's other critics were lined up at FIAT, the agency formed July 1 to oversee Overcast in the European theater. Everyone at FIAT loathed Dornberger and felt he should be interned as a menace. The British settled the matter by taking Dornberger to London, where they planned to hold war crimes trials of German militarists. Although Dornberger was interned in British POW camps for two years, he immediately went to work at Wright Field upon his release in 1947.18

On August 6 the first atomic bomb was dropped on Japan followed by a second bomb three days later, quickly bringing the war to an end. Overcast specialists began to arrive in the United States from Germany a month later. They entered the country without visas, outside normal immigration procedures, but all had employment contracts in their pockets. Although they were supposed to be under tight military custody, Peenemunde's former guidance department chief, Ernst Steinhoff, wasn't even met at the boat. He ended up hitchhiking to his job at Aberdeen Proving Ground, Maryland.19

Interrogation centers were set up at Fort Strong, Massachusetts, located on an island in Boston Harbor, where the Germans were supposed to fill out forms and be interviewed. Most escaped close scrutiny. Herbert Axster, Dornberger's chief of staff at Peenemunde, recalled that the rocket group knew they were protected from the beginning. "We knew already that they wouldn't do anything to us, because they wanted something from us," Axster said.20

Most officers conducting the interrogations did not even inquire whether the new arrivals were ardent Nazis or wanted for war crimes. One officer, obviously suspicious of Rudolph, did comment on his form, "100% NAZI, dangerous type, security threat... ! ! *Suggest internment."* His remarks were put in Rudolph's file, discussed occasionally during security clearance investigations through the years, and generally ignored.21

It wasn't long before nearly 150 Overcast specialists were working at various military bases across the country under this lax policy. Rudolph, von Braun, and more than a hundred other former Peenemunde and Mittelwerk employees worked for Colonel Toftoy at Fort Bliss, Texas. Other rocket technicians joined Steinhoff at Aberdeen Proving Ground. Colonel Putt brought thirty additional jet aircraft and rocket fuel specialists to Wright Field. Torpedo and submarine specialists joined Herbert

Wagner and the Navy's group at an isolated mansion in Long Island, New York. Twenty other recruits helped reassemble the huge Kochel wind tunnel in White Oak, Maryland.

A false myth persists to this day that only scientists and technicians were brought to the United States under this project, while many men in neither category were included from the beginning, in violation of the policy. For example, Armin Stelzner, who had served as a major in the Wehrmacht in Poland, France, and Africa during the war, worked under Overcast as a translator of documents dealing with high frequency communication at Aberdeen Proving Ground.22

Colonel Putt favored high-ranking militarists, and by midDecember 1946, five Luftwaffe officers were employed at Wright Field to write a survey of the Luftwaffe's battles with the Soviets. The head of this group was General Herhudt von Rohden, commander of the Luftwaffe on the Russian front, who had worked for a U.S. military historian in Europe immediately following Nazi Germany's surrender .23

Herbert Axster was a patent attorney and a lieutenant colonel in the Wehrmacht in command of a unit fighting the Russians. In 1943 he met a director of Peenemunde while on furlough at his ranch near the rocket base. "All of a sudden I got a telegram from Dornberger telling me I'd been reassigned to be his chief of staff," Axster recalled. In 1945, von Braun and Colonel Toftoy told Axster he was going to America. "I said, `Why? I'm not a technician.' And Toftoy said, `The U.S. Army needs to know how Peenemunde was organized so we can organize our rocket program.' Of course, being chief of staff, I knew. And that's why I went to America. "24

Project Overcast was badly organized and lacked funds to accomplish even the minimum standards set for the project. Even the Germans complained about the situation. For example, Theodor Zobel and five other jet aircraft specialists arrived at Wright Field only to learn there was so little money allocated to the project that equipment damaged on the trip from Germany was not even replaced. Zobel angrily told Putt that he thought the entire project, "beginning with the extended enforced waiting period in Germany prior to arrival here, has been badly planned and carried out." The scientist was forced to rig lab apparatus in the corner of a warehouse, devising mounting platforms from empty cartons and crates." The situation did not improve when additional scientists arrived. Jet fuel expert Ernst Eckert said he sat idle for months because of inadequate library facilities and the AAF officers' failure to provide him with even pencils and paper.[26]

Meanwhile, one of JIOA Director Gruhn's first actions as overall administrator of the project was to compile a hiring list of the best-qualified German and Austrian scientists that was used by both the United States and Great Britain as a recruitment tool for decades. Although this list has been mentioned in the past by journalists and historians, no one ever noted that it was partially compiled by Werner Osenberg, the notorious wartime commander of the Gestapo's scientific section. The decision to use Osenberg was made by U.S. Navy Captain Ransom Davis after consultation with the JCS.27

During the war, Osenberg was in charge of a special SS research council directly subordinate to Reichsmarshal Hermann Goring. Osenberg sent his Gestapo agents to investigate work in progress at scientific institutes and report back on each scientist's political reliability. From those reports and the Gestapo's files, Osenberg compiled a list of fifteen thousand names of scientists in the Third Reich. He wrote comments next to the scientists' names regarding their political affiliations, such as SS membership, and his opinion of their scientific abilities. Of course, those scientists who held fanatic Nazi views and SS membership were also those whom Osenberg considered to be the best qualified.28

Osenberg had been captured in 1945 by the Alsos team and interned in a camp in Germany. Soon after the JIOA expressed interest in him, intelligence officers whisked him out of Germany to Versailles, France, where he set up business as usual, sifting through his files to suggest names of those he considered the best scientists in the Third Reich. 29

Not surprisingly, when JIOA's hiring list began to circulate it caused an immediate uproar among American officers. One officer in Germany complained directly to the JCS that the list contained a "large number of former Nazis and mandatory unemployables." He was furious when he recognized the names of ardent Nazis he had just forced out of jobs in Germany, as JCS policy required.[3]0

While Osenberg influenced the hiring of ardent Nazis, there is disturbing evidence suggesting that the project was penetrated by the Soviets from the beginning. Assistance in earmarking which German scientists to recruit also was offered by Donald Maclean, the first secretary of the British Embassy in Washington and liaison for atomic secrets. Maclean was a Soviet mole. Among the top secret documents in JIOA files is a letter advising that certain scientists were too unimportant to recruit. An attached list then contained derogatory comments about the qualifications of some of Germany's eminent nuclear physicists, including Otto Hahn and Carl von Weizsacker. The most striking comment is about Hahn, winner of the Nobel Prize in chemistry, who was judged on the list as having "negligible value."31

Members of the Joint Research and Development Board, headed by Dr. Vannevar Bush, were shocked when they saw the derogatory comments. JIOA Director Gruhn had sent the comments to Bush and asked for an opinion of the scientists' eminence. As a result, Bush issued a scathing retort criticizing the military for not knowing even "elementary information on Germans whose names are as well known in scientific circles as Churchill, Roosevelt and Stalin are in political circles." He emphasized that Hahn and von Weizsacker were "intellectual giants of Nobel Prize stature" and that their expertise would be of great value to America.32

Nevertheless, none of the physicists was placed on the list until the 1950s, although most worked as consultants under the project in Germany, and physicist Rudolph Fleishman was flown to the United States for interrogation prior to the dropping of atomic bombs on Japan. Major General Leslie Groves, as head of the Manhattan Project, had already told the director of intelligence that he was vehemently opposed to any of the German physicists working for the Manhattan Project, for security reasons. "If they are allowed to see or discuss the work of the [Manhattan] Project the security of our information could get out of control," Groves said. Of course, Groves had good reason to worry, since German-born Klaus Fuchs, another Soviet spy, had worked for the Manhattan Project during the war. Contrary to some published reports, Fuchs was not brought in under Paperclip. He fled Germany in 1934, worked in Great Britain, and then joined the bomb project in 1943, two years before Paperclip even existed.[33]

Another controversy ensued when French agents nearly exposed the well-kept U.S. secret that American officers were kidnapping scientists in the Soviet zone. The French asked the Joint Chiefs of Staff for permission to see JIOA's list, supposedly to check the scientists' movements in the divided zones of occupied Germany. The list identified scientists from the well-known Carl Zeiss optical works in Jena who were forcibly taken out of the Soviet zone by U.S. officers in 1945. The French request came at an embarrassing time, since U.S. and British government officials were publicly criticizing the Soviets for kidnapping scientists, in violation of international law. Now the JCS was afraid that if the public learned of the Jena incident, it would expose America's activities as equally illegal .[34]

The Jena group had been locked up in a detention camp for a year. In 1946 the group filed a damage claim seeking return of personal property and scientific equipment that had been confiscated and sent to Wright Field. Carl Zeiss himself complained bitterly to U.S. officers that two men in his group already had committed suicide and another had returned voluntarily to the Soviet zone as a result of their enforced idleness. JIOA officers inquired about employing the entire Zeiss staff under Overcast, but the plan was dropped. Colonel J. A. Johnson, who headed the board of officers processing the Zeiss group's claims, said the group wasn't worth the trouble. According to Johnson, most were automobile mechanics who "hopped on the band wagon and were attempting to make a good thing of the situation." A handful were brought in later to work for the Air Force.35

By spring 1946, policymakers in Washington still were trying to decide what to do about the project, whose codename had been changed to Paperclip. High-ranking policymakers in the State-War-Navy Coordinating Committee (SWNCC) worked on a policy to be submitted to President Truman.[36] And the Joint Chiefs of Staff were getting opinions on the subject from everyone, including the British, whose own project was coordinated in Washington through the Combined Chiefs of Staff. In fact, the two countries' projects were tightly linked; they coordinated policies,

shared hiring lists, and U.S. and British intelligence agencies screened the Nazi backgrounds of the scientists. At the time, the British were exploiting several groups of Germans in their own country. In March 1946 British intelligence also began dumping German scientists on British Commonwealth countries, including Canada and Australia. In Operation Matchbox, twenty Germans secretly were sent to Canada to work. They included four wartime I. G. Farben chemists and a man described later by Canadian investigators as the "number one Nazi in the dental trade during the war." Some of those men would be brought to America in the late 1950s under Paperclip.[37]

Of course, the JIOA Governing Committee already had begun to set their own agenda. Officers attending their weekly meetings in the summer of 1946 included U.S. Navy Captain Francis Duborg, G-2 Exploitation Branch chief Hagood, and on various occasions other officers, including Putt and Toftoy.

The group was led by forty-two-year-old Navy Captain Bosquet Wev, who had been named chairman of JIOA's committee in early 1946. Wev was a career naval officer who h4d conducted antisubmarine operations against German su~s along the entire coastline of America and the Caribbean durirg the war. He also had been a member of the occupying forc,ies of Japan until November 1945, when he returned to America.[38]

Samuel Klaus was the State Department representative on the JIOA Governing Committee, but the forty-two-year-old lawyer was no bureaucrat. He was amused once in Europe when children followed him because they thought that hewith his bowler hat, cane, and mustache-was Charlie Chaplin. He once told his sister that he was like Javert, the detective in *Les Miserables,* in pursuit of justice, and his State Department career reflected that pursuit. During the war Klaus worked on the department's Safehaven project, tracing the intricate network of fronts and money-funneling operations used by German banks and corporations to smuggle their assets out of Nazi Germany before its collapse. He helped set up the State Department-run Berlin Document Center, which today still houses voluminous captured Nazi organization files. Klaus also conducted numerous investigations of human rights violations in Communist-bloc countries, riding through Armenia on horseback.[39]

Wev and Klaus clashed during the very first meeting and their relationship went downhill from there. Wev was, to put it bluntly, a loose cannon. He often tried to maneuver himself into a position where he could make decisions he did not have the authority to make, without the knowledge of either the State Department or the JIOA Governing Committee. In one meeting, he and Hagood accused Klaus of being uncooperative because he did not obtain Wev's permission to attend a meeting in the War Department. Klaus sarcastically informed them that the assistant secretary of state, who had arranged the meeting, was no doubt empowered to meet with the assistant secretary of war without clearing it first with a lowly Navy captain.4°

Klaus and other State officials deliberately were kept out of the loop from the beginning. He complained that the JIOA and G-2 Exploitation Branch made decisions behind his back and refused to give him and Assistant Secretary of State General John Hilldring a list of the Germans employed under the project. "The situation therefore is one in which the State Department bears a public as well as governmental responsibility for a program over which it has in actual fact no control and not even any information," Klaus remarked. He also was shocked when he learned that the Navy had no money to employ scientists but wanted to bring them to America to work for private industry. Klaus thought it was unfair to expect the American taxpayer to foot the bill so that large corporations could hire new employees .[41]

In June Army Director of Intelligence Vandenberg's replacement came on board the project. Major General Stephen J. Chamberlin would be a significant figure in the early stages of Paperclip. This cold warrior knew how to play the game. His decisions, philosophy, and goals would set the project on its fateful course. The fifty-seven-year-old career officer had been General Douglas MacArthur's intelligence chief of planning and operations for the Pacific campaign. As director of intelligence Chamberlin served directly under Army Chief of Staff General Dwight Eisenhower until reassigned to another post in October 1948.[42]

While the SWNCC debated a new policy that still would include only scientists or technicians, the

intelligence community had other ideas. Hagood's CPM Branch, AAF officers Putt and Knerr and Army Colonel Toftoy were among eleven officers holding meetings on their own-without Klaus-to work on changes they wanted made in the new project. Their agenda included expanding the category of people to include prisoners of war, militarists, SS officers, and anyone else who they thought would be of use to the military. One proposal would have included 558 German POWs held in the United States since the beginning of World War II. Some of these Germans already worked at Wright Field as cooks, waiters, and busboys; others cared for the animals used in mustard gas experiments at Edgewood Arsenal, Maryland. But the secretary of war opposed the idea and ordered the prisoners returned to Germany.43

One month after that proposal fell through, Hagood, Putt, and others in the Washington group, in conjunction with U. S. Army intelligence officers in Germany, secretly approved a scheme to include SS officers and former high ranking officials of the Third Reich who already were employed by Army intelligence in Germany. They would have to be smuggled into America, since their backgrounds clearly violated U.S. immigration laws. Although the identities of these dubious recruits are not known, the fact that Lieutenant Colonel Dale Garvey was among those involved in this plot in Germany gives some idea of the scurrilous group of individuals being discussed. Garvey was commander of Region IV of the 970th Army CIC in Germany and one of the officers who later approved the Army CIC's recruitment of Klaus Barbie.[44]

After the meeting, Hagood prepared a report for his superiors -Chamberlin and Eisenhower-but the group carefully expunged information they said was so "controversial" it would delay action if the generals knew the full story. Hagood then told Garvey and other intelligence agents in Germany to expedite procedures and begin shipping the Nazis as soon as the revised Paperclip policy was approved .45

It was not surprising that no one mentioned this plot to Klaus during the official JIOA meeting held later the same day. Yet Klaus certainly suspected that something was going on behind his back, judging from his comments in a memo. "I gathered in the course of the meeting that there had been meetings of the group to which I had not been invited," Klaus noted suspiciously.46

The intelligence officers quickly forged ahead with the schemes they had hatched in Klaus's absence. On July 30 Chamberlin asked Chief of Staff Eisenhower to approve a plan to smuggle in thirty ex-Nazi experts on the USSR among a thousand "scientists" in the new project. Chamberlin told Eisenhower that the Military Intelligence Division's experience in bringing similiar groups to America -Gehlen, Hilger, and others-"has proved that valuable intelligence on Russia and Russian dominated countries can be developed more rapidly by this method than any other. "[4]7

Exactly one month later, Acting Secretary of State Dean Acheson sent a copy of Paperclip policy to the White House. The policy Truman was asked to approve expanded the project to include up to one thousand German and Austrian scientists or technicians whose scientific qualifications made their exploitation vital to the "interest of national security." The policy (SWNCC 257/22) also spelled out procedures the War Department was required to follow. The specialists would be under military custody, since they would enter the United States without visas. The War Department would screen their backgrounds and assure that "the best possible information" about their qualifications was submitted to the State and Justice Departments for visa consideration. Employment contracts would provide for their return to Germany if they were found not to be qualified or acceptable for permanent residence.

While war criminals were obviously excluded, one clause in the policy banned those active in nazism or militarism as well:

> No person found by the Commanding General, USFET, to have been a member of the Nazi party and more than a nominal participant in its activities, or an active supporter of Nazism or militarism shall be brought to the U.S. hereunder.

Acheson told the president that since the State, War, and Navy Departments had approved the policy,

"I recommend your approval. "[48]

At the same time, across the Potomac, Fort Hunt bustled with activity as Hagood's CPM Branch and other intelligence officers gathered in buildings isolated from the main area. Here, five aliens sifted through microfilm of captured records and were quizzed by interrogators. U.S. intelligence had used the German scientist project as a cover to bring the men to America. By no stretch of the imagination could they be called scientists. The new arrivals were Gehlen's spies, three Russian and two German intelligence experts on the Soviet Union.[49]

In the White House, Truman looked over Acheson's memo about Paperclip. The acting secretary had assured the president that the Germans were merely scientists whose skills would benefit America's technology and that the War Department would exclude "persons with Nazi or militaristic records." On September 3 Truman gave Paperclip his official approval.50

---

1. U.S. Air Force Historical Office, "The Command and Project `Paperclip,' " *History of the Air Research and Development Command, vol. 1,* chap. 9, 1954 (hereafter cited as *Air Research and Development Command)* (obtained from BOL under the FOIA).

2. Putt interview.

3. H. M. Mott-Smith to Navy Department, Bureau of Ordnance, 19 February 1945, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

4. Secretary of War Robert Patterson to Secretary, General Staff, 28 May 1945, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

5. Allied Control Authority, Control Council law no. 25, 29 April 1946. A copy of the law is in the G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC. Law no. 25 states that "senior officials or scientists who were members of the National Socialist German Workers' Party (NSDAP) or members of other Nazi organizations with more than nominal participation in its activities shall be removed and their replacement effected only by persons with suitable political records." Prohibited research included nuclear physics, poison gas, and rocket propulsion.

6. Telford Taylor, *Final Report to the Secretary of the Army* (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 15 August 1949).

7. AAF Headquarters, "Exploitation of German Specialists in Science and Technology in the U. S." in the appendix of *AAF Participation in Project Paperclip.*

8. War Department, Bureau of Public Relations, "German Scientists Brought to U.S.," 9 October 1945, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC. 9. JIC Charter/JCS 1569/1, CCS 334 JIC, 19 December 1942, sec. 6, RG 218, NARS.

10. "Basic Directive, JIOA," CCS 471.9, 1 May 1945, sec. 4, RG 218, NARS. A copy of the JIOA charter is located in the appendix of *AAF Participation in Project Paperclip.*

11. Lieutenant Colonel Monroe Hagood to Director of Intelligence, "Transfer of Escape and Evasion and P/W Interrogation Responsibility and Operations From Intelligence Group," 14 October 1946, G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC. For a history of the G-2 POW Branch see U. S. Army Intelligence Center and School, *The Evolution of American Military Intelligence* (Fort Huachuca, Ariz.: USAICS, May 1973); and Lloyd Shoemaker, *The Escape Factory* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1990).

12. Assistant Secretary of War Robert A. Lovett to Major General Hugh J. Knerr, 4 October 1945, in the appendix of *AAF Participation in Project Paperclip.*

13. For project code names, lists of Gehlen's group, CPM/Navy and Hilger groups in the United States, travel schedules, U.S. agents who escorted them out of the country, a detailed description of facilities at Fort Hunt and Camp Ritchie, Cone memos, Hagood memos, including complaints of overworked staff, a discussion of MIS-X and MIS-Y activities, and other information on CPM Branch activities, see the G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC (declassified per author's FOIA request) and regular G-2 Paperclip files for the years 1945 and 1946, RG 319, WNRC. For published sources on general POW interrogations at Fort Hunt see John H. Moore, *The Faustball Tunnel* (New York: Random House, 1978). Gehlen's views are in Reinhard Gehlen, *The Service* (New York: World Publishing, 1972).

14. Hilger's later trip to Washington is discussed in Raul Hilberg, *The Destruction of the European ,Jews* (Chicago: Quadrangle Books, 1961), pp. 703 and 707; and Christopher Simpson, *Blowback* (New York: Weidenfeld and Nicolson, 1988). On German intelligence in Russia see David Kahn, *Hitler's Spies* (New York: Macmillan, 1978).

15. For detailed reports, lists of names of both the rocket group and POWs, Backfire activities, statistics of three launches, and other information see the Backfire collection of documents in OMGUS/FIAT records, RG 260, WNRC. Launch statistics are also in a one-page summary of Backfire in the Hans Friedrich JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

16. A memo concerning the attempt to interrogate Rudolph and mentioning Hans Lindenberg is in Arthur Rudolph INSCOM dossier AE529655.

17. Brigadier General George McDonald to Major General Hugh J. Knerr, 3 November 1945, in the appendix of *AAF Participation in Project Paperclip;* and Garlinski, *Hitler's Last Weapons.*

18. McDonald to Knerr, 3 November 1945. "Memorandum on Dornberger," 2 October 1945, in the Walter Dornberger IRR dossier, RG 319, NARS. British POW ID cards: in the Walter Dornberger G-2 dossier, RG 319, WNRC.

19. Regarding Steinhoff see Bill Gross, "Pioneer Range Scientist Dies," *Missile Ranger*, 4 December 1987.

20. Author interview with Herbert Axster.

21. Qualification sheet noting "100% NAZI" in the Arthur Rudolph INSCOM dossier.

22. Background on Armin Stelzner is in *Basic Personnel Record,* Stelzner IRR dossier X8856123, RG 319, NARS.

23. Regarding Luftwaffe General von Rohden see General Carl Spaatz to Under Secretary of War Kenneth C. Royall, 18 December 1945; General George McDonald to General Spaatz, 13 February 1946; Assistant Secretary of War Howard C. Petersen to Commanding General, AAF, 27 February 1946, all in the appendix of *AAF Participation in Project Paperclip.*

24. Axster interview.

25. For several reports and memos regarding confrontations between Putt and Zobel, including problems caused by Putt's original promises to the group, see the appendix of *AAF Participation in Project Paperclip.*

26. Author interview with Ernst Eckert.

27. Captain Ransom K. Davis to Op-23 JIS, 5 March 1946 (CCS 471.9, 1 May 1945, sect. 4), RG 218, NARS.

28. Goudsmit, *Alsos.* Osenberg's files are in G-2 1918-51 files, RG 319, WNRC.

29. Goudsmit, *Alsos.*

30. USFET to joint Chiefs of Staff, 17 July 1946, G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC.

31. On British spies see Loftus, *Belarus Secret;* and Alti Rodal, *Nazi War Criminals in Canada* (Ottawa: Canadian Government Inquiry on War Criminals, 1986).

32. JIOA to Joint Research and Development Board, 9 September 1947; and joint Research and Development Board to JIOA, n.d., both in JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS. On 22 January 1946 Bush wrote Pres ident Truman about his objections to Paperclip and said, "The replacement of qualified American scientists and technicians, who are prevented by the military personnel policies from utilizing their skills, by imported German scientists and technicians seems to me decidedly unwise." Bush was afraid that the Germans would take jobs away from qualified American scientists. Truman replied on 24 January 1946: "I was morally certain that our home boys would not want any competition." Both letters are in the Paul G. Hoffman papers, HST.

33. Memo, Major General Leslie Groves to Director of Intelligence, 2 November 1946, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

34. Carl Zeiss to USFET Headquarters, "Report on Evacuated Scientists From Carl Zeiss Jena," 17 July 1946, G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC; and JCS 1363/21, in SWNCC 257/17. Seethe SWNCC 257 series concerning the "Exploitation of German and Austrian Scientists." The Scholarly Resources' microfilm edition of the State-War-Navy Coordinating Committee (SWNCC) on Paperclip decisions is available at NARS.

35. Major George Collins, "Memorandum for Director JIOA," 9 August 1946, G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC.

36. See the SWNCC 257 series on microfilm at NARS.

37. German scientist project: see Rodal, *Nazi War Criminals in Canada,* pp. 327-42. Rodal also found evidence of U.S. and British intelligence establishing an "anti-Soviet spy network by smuggling known Nazi collab orators out of Eastern Europe without the Canadian government's knowledge" (p. 448). On the Australian government's participation in a British Commonwealth nations "cover-up which allowed Nazi war criminals to escape justice" see *The Australian, 10* August 1985.

38. Rear Admiral Bosquet Wev file, ONH.

39. Author interview with Ida Klaus.

40. Samuel Klaus, "Memorandum to the Files," 24 April 1946 and 6 May 1946; and Samuel Klaus, "Memorandum for the Record, JIOA meeting June 11, 1946"-all in State Department microfiche (hereafter cited as State fiche), RG 59, NARS.

41. Memo, Samuel Klaus to Mr. Panuch, 20 June 1946, State fiche, RG 59, NARS.

42. U.S. Army biography of Major General Stephen J. Chamberlin, CMH.

43. For a discussion of the secretary of war's disapproval of retaining 558 POWs in United States see "Notes for Army-Navy Conference on Exploitation of Prisoners of War for Scientific and Intelligence Purposes," 5 April 1946, in G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

44. Proposal to include those with "too-close" Nazi connections, SS, and General Staff specialists is included in "Exploitation of Prisoners of War," memo, in ibid.

45. Ibid.

46. Samuel Klaus, "Memorandum for the Files," 21 May 1946, memo regarding a JIOA meeting the same day, State fiche, RG 59, NARS.

47. On Chamberlin's request to Eisenhower for permission to include thirty intelligence specialists "within the 1000 German and Austrian specialists" see Major General Stephen J. Chamberlin to Chief of Staff, 30 July 1946, ID 383.7, in G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC.

48. Acting Secretary of State Dean Acheson, "Memorandum for the President," memo to Harry S. Truman, 30 August 1946; and SWNCC 257/ 22, in the SWNCC 257 series.

49. On the "Use of Paperclip as a Cover for Volunteer Foreign Specialists on Russian intelligence by This Division and CNI" and the five men at Fort Hunt, see Lieutenant Colonel H. B. St. Clair, Exploitation Branch, to Chief, Intelligence Group, 25 September 1946. On Hagood asking Chamberlin to take action to get three remaining men out of the United States, see Lieutenant Colonel Monrce Hagood to Director of Intelligence, 14 October 1946. Both documents are in G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC.

50. Acheson memo; and SWNCC 257/22.

3 PEENEMUNDE ON THE RIO GRANDE

NIGHT had fallen by the time Army Ordnance was ready to launch the missile that stood like a bullet on the launch pad at White Sands Proving Ground (WSPG), New Mexico. The rocket was a modified V-2 made from captured German rocket parts shipped from Mittelwerk. It was the second in a series of rockets fired by General Electric and Army Ordnance in connection with their Hermes II missile project.1

The launch site was crowded as Army engineers and 118 Paperclip personnel made last-minute changes to assure a successful flight. As the countdown approached, Ernst Steinhoff moved to his post one mile south of the site. Another German, Theodor Vowe, was stationed west of the area. Both were assigned to observe the rocket's trajectory through highpowered telescopes and notify command officers in the block house if the rocket veered off course. The command station could then cut off the fuel to the rocket's motors and stop its flight .2

The sound was deafening when the rocket lifted off the ground and soared into the evening sky. "It's a keeper," yelled Herbert Karsch from the bunkhouse. But the rocket began to go astray, reverse course and head straight south toward El Paso. Steinhoff knew the rocket was headed in the wrong direction but let it fly. It soared over El Paso, over the Mexican border, and finally crash-landed about three miles from a heavily populated Juarez business district. Mexican residents nearby fled in terror as the rocket exploded, leaving a huge crater 50 feet wide and 24 feet deep as it burrowed into the ground. The next day, red-faced officials in Washington had to explain to the Mexican government why the United States had launched a missile attack on their country.3

The controversy over the Juarez incident overshadowed a more serious problem at White Sands and Fort Bliss Army base in Texas. What happened there is a glaring example of the military's total lack of control over enemy aliens who were judged to be a threat to the internal security of the United States. Even though there were allegations of sabotage and evidence of gross violations of base security, as one intelligence agent bluntly put it, there was absolutely "no attempt to place them in anything resembling custody." Army officers in charge of the group maintained little or no surveillance over the Germans' activities either on or off the base.[4]

Security in the area itself was precarious. White Sands had been the site of rocket and missile testing for years. It was considered a perfect firing range for rockets, given the relative isolation of the million-acre base of New Mexico desert range land. During World War II a northern strip of the area was used as a bombing test range. On another portion, called Trinity Site, the first atomic bomb exploded on July 16, 1945.[5]

But White Sands was only forty miles from Mexico and Fort Bliss was near the Mexican border. Crossing that border, legally or illegally, was as easy then as it is today, and Mexico was a well-known haven for criminal and political refugees. FBI and Army CIC agents viewed northern Mexico as ripe for a potential unhampered operation of foreign agents or sympathizers. As one agent observed, "Former Nazi agents, interned during the late War in Mexico, are now given unlimited freedom within that country. The possibility of northern Mexico being used by Russian agents as an operating base against the guided missile project [is] felt to be obvious."6

The arrival of Paperclip personnel posed an additional problem. The War Department already had alerted all bases to step up security because "certain Paperclip personnel returned to Germany had technical documents in their possession upon arrival in the Theater." For example, Wright Field specialist Heinz Gartmann left America with turbojet rocket engine blueprints in his hand luggage. Gartmann claimed that a co-worker had packed the documents by mistake. But European investigators, who learned that Gartmann was negotiating with a Russian factory prior to his U.S. departure, reported, "It is believed here that the ... documents were not taken accidentally. "7

In addition, Army CIC counterespionage headquarters warned U.S. officials that Russian agents were making a concerted effort to obtain information about Paperclip. The mother of Helmut

Groettrup, a German scientist who voluntarily went to Russia to work, was caught nosing around Landshut housing project in Germany, where families of Paperclip personnel lived. Thea Groettrup arrived at Landshut with Helmuth Thiele, an engineer known to the Army CIC as a Russian agent who recruited scientists for the Soviets. Frau Groettrup was trying to obtain information about the U.S. rocket project and the names of Paperclip scientists who were being returned to Germany from America.8

The Army also had been warned that the rocket group planned to withhold technical information from American personnel. The warning was contained in a report by Lieutenant Walter Jessel, an interrogator assigned to screen the rocket scientists for trustworthiness before they left Germany in 1945. During the interrogations, Jessel uncovered evidence of a conspiracy among von Braun, Dornberger, and Dornberger's former chief of staff, Herbert Axster, to withhold information from U. S. officers. As a result Jessel concluded that to give security clearances to the group was "an obvious absurdity. "[9]

In an interview Axster confirmed that they did indeed plot to withhold information to assure that the group would be sent to the United States. "I realized more and more that they wanted something from us," Axster said. "And of course that has to be paid for. We had to sell ourselves as expensively as possible." Once in America, the group's ultimate purpose was to find a more lucrative sponsor, such as General Electric, and then pull their group out from under the Army's control.10

Major James Hamill was directly in charge of the Paperclip group at Fort Bliss under Colonel Toftoy. The "tall, fairheaded" twenty-six-year-old major "looked good," according to Axster. Hamill was a graduate of Fordham University with a degree in physics. He had been a member of the regular Army when Colonel Toftoy assigned him to coordinate the entire V-2 mission in Germany. In that position Hamill played a key role in evacuating V-2 rockets from Mittelwerk tunnels to the United States.11

Some of Hamill's charges had been members of the SS and were considered to be potential security threats by European investigators. Wernher von Braun, for example, had joined the SS at the personal behest of SS chief Heinrich Himmler and had risen to the rank of major. And JIOA officers had even obtained a photograph of another Peenemunde engineer, Anton Beier, decked out in full SS uniform, complete with skull and crossbones on his SS cap. Beier had joined the SS the same year Hitler came into power, in 1933, and was also a member of the Nazi party and two other Nazi organizations. [12]

Kurt Debus, who later would be the first director of the Kennedy Space Center at Cape Canaveral, was another member of the SS, the SA, and two other Nazi groups. In 1942 he turned a colleague over to the Gestapo for making anti-Hitler statements during an argument over who had started World War II. As a result the man was tried by a Nazi court and sentenced to two years' imprisonment. When questioned about the incident at Fort Bliss, Debus claimed that he had defended the colleague during the trial and that the man's prison sentence had been suspended "mainly due to my testimony." But the actual trial records tell a far different story. The man was convicted as a direct result of Debus's derogatory testimony. Furthermore, his prison sentence was suspended as a result of intervention by his employer, not Debus. Debus also claimed that he was only an "applicant" in the SS. But Berlin Document Center SS files show that he joined in 1939 and was assigned SS membership number 426559. Also, his wartime colleagues reported seeing him in a black SS uniform during the Nazi period. [13]

In addition to that evidence, over a dozen of Hamill's charges had worked in the Mittelwerk V-2 factory using concentration camp inmates as slave labor. Hamill had to know about the slave labor used there, since he visited the place in 1945. It would have been impossible for him not to see, or step over, the dead bodies of six thousand Dora prisoners covering the ground at Nordhausen.'[4]

Wernher von Braun's younger brother Magnus was one of those who worked in that undergound hell. He was an engineer under Arthur Rudolph in Mittelwerk from 1943 until the Germans fled the area shortly before American troops arrived. Some German engineers at Fort Bliss felt he lacked experience and was included in the project only because he rode on the coattails of his older brother.

And Army CIC agents at Fort Bliss believed he was a "dangerous German Nazi" because of his pro-Hitler views. "His type is a worse threat to security than a half a dozen discredited SS Generals," one agent remarked.15

All of this controversial information was being kept secret from the American public. However, Axster's wartime past eventually caught the attention of the press. Axster worked for Hamill in the Army Ordnance Research and Development Service, Suboffice (Rocket), where most of the Germans were engaged in planning, design, and drafting blueprints for rockets. "But my main task was as liaison with the commanding officer," Axster recalled. He was also in charge of a group that translated German measurements-kilograms, centimeters, and so on-into American measurements. [16]

JIOA Director Wev already had received numerous derogatory reports about Axster and his wife Ilse. The Axsters' wartime neighbors told a U.S. intelligence agent that they had mistreated a French prisoner of war and Poles and Ukrainians from the East who worked on their estates. In one instance Herbert Axster was accused of hitting a Frenchman caught laying rabbit traps. Villagers said the man was probably hungry, since the Axsters starved the workers and they frequently begged for food from the townspeople. Another time, when a Polish worker was seriously injured by a mowing machine, villagers said Axster did not do anything about it until a neighbor demanded that the man be taken to the hospital.17

"That's all lies," Axster exclaimed when confronted with the charges in 1989. He admitted that a Ukrainian couple had worked on his estate, but he said there were no Poles. Axster claimed that the Ukrainians had been offered a "vacation" in the Ukraine. "They said that they only would go if they were assured they would come back to the same place," he said. "So it seems to me they can't have been treated so badly." He denied mistreating the French POW and said the man did not work for him. Axster said he probably scared the man because Axster was carrying a shotgun while hunting when he saw the Frenchman with a rabbit. "So I shouted at him," Axster said. "That's all."18

The Axsters' neighbors were terrified of Ilse, whom they described as stalking through town wearing riding breeches and carrying a whip. This view of Ilse, now deceased, was confirmed in 1989 by relatives and acquaintances who remembered her as a "Nazi tyrant." In 1947, villagers said she frequently beat Polish workers with a horsewhip or called the police and asked them to beat the workers. Ilse was a leader of the *NS-Frauenschaft,* a women's Nazi party auxiliary in charge of teaching Nazi propaganda to youth groups. A fellow *NS-Frauenschaft* member told U.S. investigators that Ilse was the ideal person to represent "the godless principles in the Nazi education of children." As might be expected, Ilse hated Allied soldiers, and once, when she saw a British soldier parachuting to the ground, she told a Wehrmacht officer standing nearby that she would shoot the man if she only had a gun. [19]

The Axsters' neighbors angrily complained to U.S. officers in Germany that the couple escaped prosecution because of Paperclip. As a result, the story leaked to the press and Rabbi Stephen Wise at the American Jewish Congress began a vocal campaign to oust the couple from America. Wise stated his case in the first of many letters to Secretary of War Robert Patterson, charging that Axster held "responsible positions" with the Wehrmacht and Ilse was a "major offender" under denazification laws that were supposed to be enforced by the U.S. military government in Germany. [20] "These scientists and their families are supposed to have been `screened,' " Wise told Patterson. "The Axsters prove that this `screening' is a farce and the War Department `screeners' are entirely incapable of performing this task. "21

The rabbi was particularly disturbed that while Paperclip brought hundreds of Nazis to America, the State Department's obstructive immigration policies kept Jewish survivors of Nazi concentration camps out of the country. Wise reminded the secretary of war of this point in his scathing letter:

> Red tape, lack of shipping facilities, and every other possible handicap face these oppressed people while their oppressors are brought to this country with their families and are favorably housed and supported at our expense. As long as we reward former servants of Hitler while

leaving his victims in D.P. camps, we cannot pretend that we are making any real effort to achieve the aims we fought for.22

Two weeks later Patterson sent Wise a terse, two-paragraph reply that investigators were looking into the "alleged Nazi affiliation" of Ilse Axster, and if the charges were proven, "you may be certain that appropriate remedial action will be taken." Wise's letter was forwarded to the "screeners" in the JIOA, who brushed it off as Jewish propaganda.23

Despite the charges against him, Axster was the one man whom Hamill chose to trust as the liaison between Hamill and the Germans. "I was always the one that was in contact with him," Axster said. "We were friends." Hamill's idea of insuring an efficient informant system in the rocket office was to use Axster as his key informant to surreptitiously gain information about possible security breaches by other Germans in the project. In a gross understatement, Hamill once remarked that Axster's "enthusiastic compliance with the directives of this office has at times brought him disfavor from his associates." Most German engineers strongly criticized von Braun for Axster's inclusion in the project and resented his high salary, since his experience was confined to military aspects of training troops.24

Not only were Axster and other Paperclip personnel allowed extensive access to classified information, but Hamill never even required the men to fill out federal governmental forms to apply for security clearances. In addition, Army Ordnance officers maintained such lax security over the group that there was no curfew, no checks of the Germans' mail, and little surveillance of their activities off the base. Three Germans had telephones in their quarters, but none were monitored, and no attempt was made to determine if any Paperclip personnel made long-distance telephone calls on local pay phones.25

This brazen laxity was allowed to flourish despite stiff security regulations issued by the secretary of war designed to curtail the Germans' activities and ensure that the country's internal security was protected. The regulations ordered Hamill and other officers in charge of Paperclip personnel to: (1) assure that each specialist would be exposed to "only such classified information as is necessary to the completion of his assignment"; (2) maintain limited surveillance over their activities, inspect their mail, make "sufficiently frequent" checks of their whereabouts, and file monthly reports on the results of that surveillance; and (3) report any attempt at "political proselytizing." Furthermore, neither the specialists nor their dependants were legal residents, thus security regulations emphasized that officers in charge should assure that no specialists leave the continental United States. And finally, each specialist was supposed to observe a "Code of Conduct" that required him to obtain permission to correspond with individuals overseas and forbade his transmitting classified information, including photographs of equipment.26

But just as soon as the regulations were circulated, Exploitation Branch chief Hagood sent Hamill a notice that Hamill interpreted as voiding the War Department's requirements. Hagood told him that, starting four months after the Germans signed contracts, there should be no further Army surveillance over their activities, even if they left the base on business or pleasure trips. In addition, Hagood said that more than 50percent support of an individual constituted "dependent" status for contract purposes. The large number of so-called dependents-including mistresses and maids-brought to Fort Bliss as a result of Hagood's memo were subject to no off-the-post surveillance, even though it was assumed that they had access to at least some classified information because of their close contact with Paperclip personnel.27

Hamill's supervision was so arrogantly lax that it did not take long for trouble to surface. A Fort Bliss businessman reported engineer Hans Lindenmayr to the FBI for using his company's address as an illegal mail drop. As a result FBI agents intercepted a letter from Lindenmayr's wife in Germany, who was furious that Lindenmayr had brought his mistress to the United States posing as his wife, and she threatened to file a complaint with U.S. immigration officials unless the problem was solved.28

Army CIC Captain Paul R. Lutjens, head of branch intelligence at Fort Bliss, was assigned to investigate the case. In a meeting with Lutjens and Hamill, Lindenmayr admitted that the claims in the letter were true. He asserted that he had been arrested by SS troops in 1938 and charged with espionage. To avoid a one-year prison sentence and exile, Lindenmayr claimed, he married the prosecuting attorney's daughter and "lived with her several months before deserting her for the girl he is now living with. . . ." Despite evidence that Lindenmayr had helped the woman enter the U.S. illegally, Hamill recommended that he be retained in the project. Army Ordnance simply revised his contract and penalized him for his actions by cutting his salary by $2,000. They decided that Lindenmayr would file for a divorce, and when it cleared, his girlfriend would go to Germany, then turn around and come back as his wife and legal dependent.29

In addition to Lindenmayr, three other Germans had illegal mail drops in El Paso where they received money from foreign or unknown sources and coded messages from South America. One German received $1,000 in cash from Chile. Another specialist not only maintained an illegal postal box but deposited $953 in his bank account in one month, even though his monthly salary was only $290. Neither Army CIC nor FBI agents knew where that money came from, and by all appearances, no one cared to know how more than a third of the Paperclip group suddenly were able to buy expensive cars.[30]

Other incidents proved that security was a sham. Unsupervised German scientists with no visas illegally crossed the border into Mexico for a little cheap wine, women, and song. Other specialists made frequent trips from White Sands to the El Paso home of a German-born woman who was under FBI investigation and described by her neighbors as being so proHitler during the war that local residents told her to "shut up or get out" of America.31

Compounding those problems, base security officers began to suspect that the rockets were being sabotaged, a suspicion that increased sharply after the Juarez incident. In one month, three out of four rockets fired at WSPG overshot the 90-milewide base and landed off course near heavily populated areas in New Mexico and Juarez. One landed four and a half miles south of Alamogordo, another crashed only two miles from Las Cruces, and the third ended up in Juarez. In addition to unanswered questions about what caused the erratic flights, five cameras attached to one of the rockets were missing after the launch and parts from another missile that was launched never were found.32

Lutjens investigated the incidents, but when he began to talk with officers in charge of the rocket project he encountered turf fights between the Army and Navy, buck passing regarding the cause of problems, and criticism of the way the entire rocket program was run. None of the officers blamed the Germans for the problems. Hamill pointed his finger at the contractor for the Hermes II rocket, General Electric; Lieutenant Colonel Harold Turner, the Army's commanding officer at WSPG, said erratic flights were caused by "human error" and expressed little confidence in the officers under his own supervision. "I dare say, they are about the poorest qualified personnel of any government installation in the country," he told Lutjens. However, Lieutenant Commander R. B. McLaughlin, the Naval commander at White Sands, made no secret of the fact that he had no confidence in either Turner or his men. McLaughlin thought Turner's plan to construct seventy-five observation stations would not yield the desired result-namely, to enable the men controlling the rockets to know where they were headed in time to prevent a rocket from going out of control. "They can tell where the rocket is every second of its flight," McLaughlin scoffed, "but not until three months later."33

When Lutjens finished his investigation he was skeptical, since he felt that the officers could not be entirely certain that no sabotage had occurred. Most evidence pointed to incompetent Army personnel and bad V-2 parts. The parts were old, damaged, rusted, and totally worthless by the time they arrived from Germany. It was apparent that the boats carrying the rocket parts had leaked during the trip, because the parts were soaked with saltwater when they arrived in America.34 The Juarez incident was caused by a rocket tilting program, preset to 7 degrees north, that never operated. The wind was from the south, and the rocket headed into the wind and began traveling in the wrong direction. Steinhoff did not tell the command station to stop the rocket because he figured it would land safely north of El Paso.35

Meanwhile, the lax security over Paperclip personnel became so obvious that even visitors to Fort Bliss complained. One War Department intelligence officer, Colonel Frank Reed, was shocked that Hamill and other ordnance officers had made no serious checks of the Germans' loyalty. Reed's concern about security was heightened because he had just returned from visiting Saint Louis, France, where a comparable group of German rocket engineers worked for the French government. While there, the French commandant told Reed he suspected the Germans under French control were receiving orders from Germany and working toward a reemergence of the Third Reich.36

All of a sudden, word came down that Wernher von Braun had been caught sending a map overseas to General Dornberger and concealing information from U.S. officials. It was an incident disturbingly similar to the plot that Walter Jessel had warned intelligence officers of in 1945. American officers in Europe were trying to locate V-2 rocket diagrams they believed were still hidden in Germany. When asked about the documents, von Braun told the Army he knew nothing about their location. Dornberger later told von Braun's brother that Army officers didn't trust von Braun and that officers had even told him that von Braun had lied to them. Von Braun then sent a map to his family in Europe showing the location of a burial place where sketches stuffed in a cigarette box were hidden. He told them to deliver the map to Dornberger's wife, since the general still was being held in a British POW camp. The way this scheme was supposed to work, the documents then would be located and given to German scientists, who would turn them over to von Braun when they arrived in the United States under Paperclip.[3]7

U.S. officers reported that von Braun "apparently intended to use the location of certain hidden documents as a bargaining lever with U.S. officials."38

This plot was abruptly halted when Army officers confiscated the map from Dornberger's wife. Then the officers finagled Dornberger's release from the British and flew to Germany to look for the missing documents in a forest. Under Dornberger's direction, the officers wandered around the woods for days, digging up tree stumps that yielded nothing. The sketches eventually were found lying in the woods, practically worthless from rain and rot.[39]

Despite mounting security problems at Fort Bliss, investigator Lutjens's hands were tied. Even though the Intelligence Division in Washington was aware of the security breaches and had received copies of Lutjens's reports, the War Department had ruled the Paperclip group exempt from Army CIC control. All Lutjens was allowed to do was investigate suspicious incidents and turn over the information to his superiors. Army Ordnance had blocked CIC efforts to do anything about illegal activities that were uncovered.[4]0

The FBI fared no better. When FBI agents reported a suspicious incident involving Magnus von Braun, the Army proceeded to squelch the investigation. FBI agents had learned that Magnus von Braun sold a bar of platinum to a local El Paso jeweler. It is still not known where he obtained the platinum bar, but when FBI agents reported the incident to justice Department officials in Washington they were told to drop the case. The Army ordered that "action not be taken for security reasons and possible adverse publicity which might affect the long range objectives of the project on which the group of Germans was employed. "[4]1

Meanwhile, FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover had a pile of FBI reports sitting on his desk. One was by a General Electric manager whose employees at WSPG had fired rockets during various tests. The manager, A. K. Bushman, told an FBI agent that he thought the Army's lax security at White Sands bordered on "criminal neglect." Then Bushman ripped into Paperclip with a scathing critique of the Army's lax surveillance over the specialists. He was particularly upset that the Germans were allowed access to classified information about new discoveries, including a rocket fuel developed by GE's missile project in Malta, New York. Bushman told the FBI that the way the Army ran the project threatened the internal security of the United States, since around 350 of the Germans' former colleagues were working for the Russians and Bushman thought it reasonable to assume that friendships between members of those two groups continued .42

Hoover immediately sent a stinging two-page memo to Director of Intelligence Chamberlin. In minute detail, Hoover criticized the Army's loose security, summarized Bushman's report, and told

Chamberlin that "if his information indicating a lack of restriction on the part of the movements of German scientists in the U. S. is, in fact, true, technical data made available to them concerning U. S. improvements of rockets and guided missiles ... could very easily find its way back to Russian scientists."[43]

Once Chamberlin received Hoover's hand-delivered critique there was an instant flurry of activity in the Intelligence Division of the War Department. Chamberlin ordered the Exploitation Branch to investigate whether security had been breached at Fort Bliss.[44]

By then Lieutenant Colonel Montie Cone had replaced Hagood as chief of G-2's Exploitation Branch. Cone was a veteran Army intelligence officer who had been commanding officer at Fort Hunt in 1945 when Nazi spy chief Reinhard Gehlen was interrogated there. Cone would represent Chamberlin on the JIOA Governing Committee and help supervise Paperclip for over a decade.

Cone and Major Lyman White of the Special Investigations unit set out for Texas with a list of twenty-six items to investigate, everything from Wise's complaint against the Axsters to Jessel's conspiracy report. What they found was a group of Germans that Hamill allowed to run loose. White discovered that ordnance deliberately avoided surveillance over Paperclip personnel both on and off the base. The Germans were allowed to make unsupervised trips out of town and had to report to Army installations only when they arrived at their destinations .[45]

Their mail had only been spot-censored. Lists of their over seas correspondents showed none with addresses in Russia or its satellite nations, but no one had checked the names against G-2 files. A name check was crucial, since evidence showed that the Soviets used phony addresses to hide the location of Germans who worked in the USSR. For example, the CIA had sent President Truman information that the Soviets used an address in the U.S. zone of Germany as a cover for letters mailed by German scientists working in the USSR.[46]

During White's conversations with Hamill it became obvious that Hamill knew absolutely nothing about the Germans' off-base activities. Neither did Toftoy, who said that while he had no reason to believe that any of the scientists were engaged in illicit activities, his estimate was "based solely on their conduct at the installation." He did not have the slightest idea of what their activities were off the post. Furthermore, while Army CIC agents, the FBI, and G-2 considered some Germans at the base to be "under suspicion of being potential security risks," neither Hamill nor Toftoy was able to list accurately those individuals who should be watched or denied access to sensitive material. This was illustrated perfectly in the case of Axster, whom Hamill had chosen as his informant to insure ordnance's security .[47]

These were extremely important admissions. Hamill had filed *Sponsoring Agency Security Reports* with the JIOA on each German, attesting that there was no evidence that the individual had breached security at Fort Bliss. The reports were supposed to include the results of surveillance and interrogations of Germans on the base. In fact, there was little or no surveillance, and Hamill had no idea what the Germans' activities were out of the rocket office. The reports were important because JIOA officers submitted them and several other forms to the State and Justice Departments as evidence that the Germans were qualified for legal U.S. immigration. In addition, the JIOA used those reports repeatedly to discredit Paperclip detractors and excuse evidence of ardent nazism on the grounds that the Germans had done nothing to indicate that they were security threats since their arrival in America.48 Cone and White finished their investigation and returned to Washington. Most of their suggestions to improve security were identical to the War Department's original regulations. In their final report they advised Major Hamill to curtail trips, censor mail, maintain lists of correspondents, forbid use of postal boxes, and monitor the Germans' telephone calls. They also suggested that restrictions on Lutjens's CIC unit should be lifted to allow the CIC more authority over Paperclip personnel and stop illegal activities uncovered by CIC investigations.[49]

Since Rabbi Wise's complaints about the Axsters had resulted in derogatory news stories, White was most concerned about controlling negative publicity, which he feared would shut Paperclip down. "While critical comment must be evaluated in the light of the natural Jewish bias against anything Nazi, it is, however a matter to be watched, and, if possible, counteracted lest it lead to

official restrictive action against the project as a whole," White noted in his report. He felt that the press should be restrained before someone discovered the dubious backgrounds of other Germans at Fort Bliss. To solve the problem, an Army public relations officer was assigned to control the press and assure that it published "human interest" stories to take the focus away from controversial topics.50

In their report Cone and White suggested that officers in Europe "make a more thorough background investigation of all Paperclip personnel under Army jurisdiction." Cone noted, however, that Wernher von Braun was to be "fully justified" for legal immigration irrespective of his Nazi past."

---

1. Army Ordnance Department, Fort Bliss Rocket Project, "Report on Hermes Missile Project," RG 156, WNRC.

2. Captain Paul R. Lutjens, "Memorandum for the AC of S G-2, Intelligence Summary," 6 June 1947, G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC.

3. Ibid.; and Captain Paul R. Lutjens, "Memorandum for the AC of S G-2, Intelligence Summary," 20 June 1947, G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC.

4. Major Lyman G. White, "Paperclip Project, Ft. Bliss, Texas and Adjacent Areas," MID 918.3, 26 November 1947, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

5. *White Sands Missile Range* (Riverside, Calif.: Armed Services Press, 1987).

6. White, "Paperclip Project."

7. "Certain Paperclip personnel" quote is in Colonel R. F. Ennis to Commanding General, 17 April 1947, JIOA 1331, ID 400.112 Research, RG 330, NARS. On Gartmann, descriptions of documents, and "not taken accidentally" quote see "Secret" memo, Captain John P. Roth, EUCOM, to Chief, Technical Intelligence Section, AC of S, 8 April 1947; Lieutenant Colonel M. C. Taylor to Director of Intelligence, 14 April 1947; and Colonel R. F. Ennis to AAF Commanding General, 5 May 1947-a11 in G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC.

8. Information on Goethrup and Thiele is in the INSCOM dossier on "Operation MESA."

9. Lieutenant Walter Jessel, "Evidence of a Conspiracy Among Leading German `Overcast' Personnel," 12 June 1945, OMGUS/FIAT, RG 260, WNRC.

10. Ibid.; Axster interview.

11. Axster interview. Hamill bio: in James McGovern, Crossbow *and Overcast* (New York: William Morrow, 1964).

12. Von Braun's SS membership: in Berlin Document Center reports and JIOA memo 691, 3 March 1947, in the Wernher von Braun INSCOM dossier. See also Wernher von Braun's FBI dossier. Von Braun's JIOA dossier is "missing" from the RG 330 files at the NARS. Anton Beier's SS records are noted in the Berlin Document Center report in Beier's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

13. For Debus's actions against a colleague see the Office of the Public Prosecutor case against Richard Craemer, Gestapo Headquarters, Berlin, in the Debus JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS. Debus's SS membership records and witnesses who saw him in an SS uniform: in the Debus JIOA dossier and IRR dossier XE034033, RG 319, NARS.

14. Hamill's visit to Nordhausen is from McGovern, Crossbow *and Overcast.*

15. Army CIC cards with comments and a 27 May 1953 agent report are in Magnus von Braun INSCOM dossier C3001437. Von Braun Mittelwerk dates are from the Magnus von Braun interrogation, *Andrae* trial records.

16. Axster interview.

17. OMGUS Public Safety Branch, Investigation Section, "The Axster Couple," 25 March 1948; and OMGUS Public Safety Branch, Investigation Section, "Sworn Statements," esp. those of Konrad Mommsen (18 December 1946 and 5 February 1948) and Gerhard Weise (undated but certified by Captain James Steward)-all in Herbert Axster's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

18. Axster interview.

19. OMGUS Public Safety Branch reports on Ilse Axster are in the Herbert Axster JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

20. Stephen S. Wise to Secretary of War Robert Patterson, 14 April 1947, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

21. Ibid. 22. Ibid.

23. Secretary of War Robert Patterson to Stephen S. Wise, 8 May 1947, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

24. White, "Paperclip Project"; Herbert Axster JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS; and Axster interview.

25. White, "Paperclip Project."

26. War Department, "Security Regulations for Project Paperclip," 28 August 1946, and "Code of Conduct," 12 April 1947, both in JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

27. White, "Paperclip Project."

28. Captain Paul R. Lutjens, "Memorandum for the AC of S, G-2, Intelligence Summary," 12 June 1947; and A. Lindenmayr letter, "Subject: Members of the German Scientists in the United States," April 1947, trans. Army CIC Agent George Ries-both in G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC.

29. Ibid.; Captain Paul R. Lutjens, "Memorandum to the AC of S, G-2," 24 July 1947, and "Memorandum for the Officer in Charge," 6 November 1947, in G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC.

30. Lutjens, "Memorandum," 6 November 1947.

31. Captain Paul R. Lutjens, "Memorandum for the AC of S, G-2, Intelligence Summary," 14 April and 6 June 1947, G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC.

32. Lutjens, "Memorandum," 20 June 1947.

33. Lutjens, "Memorandum," June 6 and 20, 1947. 34. Ibid.

35. Army Ordnance Department, "Hermes Missile Project."

36. Colonel Frank Reed to Colonel Clark, 24 January 1947, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

37. On von Braun's instructions to deliver a map to Dornberger's wife see cable S-5249, EUCOM General Clarence Heubner to AGWAR for General Chamberlin, 29 May 1947, in JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS. On the plot to bring documents to von Braun in the United States see "Security Information," GID 73-0321, 1 July 1953, in the Wernher von Braun INSCOM dossier. On the Army's reaction to von Braun's denial of knowledge about documents: "Security Information," GID 73-0321, and Dornberger's letter in the Walter Dornberger G-2 dossier, RG 319, WNRC.

38. On the use of documents as a "bargaining lever" see Transmittal Slip, 66th CIC Group Headquarters, July 1953, in the Wernher von Braun INSCOM dossier.

39. The search for documents in Germany is described in Dornberger's letter in the Walter Dornberger G-2 dossier, RG 319, WNRC.

40. White, "Paperclip Project."

41. Extract of data is from FBI files as forwarded to the JIOA by A. Devitt Vanech, special assistant to the attorney general, on 21 February 1947, in FBI Extracts, Magnus von Braun's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

42. J. Edgar Hoover to Director of Intelligence, WDGS, 13 September 1947, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

43. Ibid.

44. Lieutenant Colonel Montie F. Cone, "Report," n.d., G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

45. White, "Paperclip Project."

46. CIA, "German Scientists at Sukhumi, USSR," report to President Harry S. Truman, 31 October 1949, HST.

47. White, "Paperclip Project."

48. See examples of *Sponsoring Agency Security Reports* in individual dossiers.

49. Cone, "Report."

50. White, "Paperclip Project." 51. Cone, "Report."

4 A Hell Called Dora

IN the fall of 1946 Air Materiel Command headquarters at Wright Field was bustling with activity. Dozens of reporters mingled with the large crowd that had gathered at the air base. The War Department's news blackout had been lifted. Wright Field and other bases were having an open house to introduce some of Nazi Germany's finest scientists. AAF officers put on frozen smiles as twenty Germans, in their best suits, went out to meet the press. The group was carefully selected from among eighty-six German jet engine, helicopter, and other aircraft specialists employed by the AAF at Wright Field or in cities where they worked under Army Air Forces contracts at aircraft factories or universities.

Alexander Lippisch showed the visitors a model of his new delta-wing supersonic jet. Lippisch was the inventor of the famous Messerschmitt ME-163 jet fighter plane, which set speed records. Theodor Knack, formerly of the Graf Zeppelin Institute, held up his ribbon-type parachute and told reporters it permitted safe jumps at high speeds. Eighty-year-old Hugo Eckener, former chairman of the Zeppelin Company, smiled brightly as AAF public relations officers said Goodyear was thrilled to have the dirigible designer working for them as a consultant under AAF contract. No one asked the former commander of the ill-fated Hindenberg blimp about the thirteen passengers and thirty-six crewmen who were killed when the infamous dirigible caught fire and burned in 1937.

The open house resulted in a flood of favorable newspaper and magazine stories which highly pleased the War Department. The Germans' Nazi past was forgotten. After all, reporters had been told that the Germans had been "exhaustively screened." *Life, Newsweek,* and other magazines gave prominent display to photographs of the Germans alongside their inventions. The local *Dayton Daily News* was less formal, showing a picture of six Germans sunning themselves after lunch. All of the news stories created the impression of a congenial, friendly relationship between the Germans and AAF officers at the base. Jet fuel expert Ernst Eckert, for example, was even photographed having a friendly talk with an American engineer about high-speed gas turbines. And American officers said they were thrilled to have the Germans working at the air base. "I wish we had more of them," one officer said, "they are wonderful workers."1

The problem was, the stories were beautifully orchestrated War Department propaganda. The congeniality between the Germans and AAF officers was staged. The press was required to clear their copy with military censors prior to publication. Most photographs had been provided by the U.S. military. Few stories deviated from a lengthy five-page War Department press release-a document full of half-truths and baldfaced lies. Unfortunately, this was only the beginning of one of the most successful military intelligence disinformation campaigns ever foisted on the American public. The Paperclip myth had just been hatched and was ready to fly.2

On the issue of the Germans' nazism, for example, Under Secretary of War Patterson claimed that "no scientists who are alleged war criminals are brought to the United States." Additionally, military press officers were intent on creating an image of Germans working in a state of euphoric harmony with American officers. The War Department press release emphasized how closely the Germans worked with American personnel to impart their knowledge: "To date there has been no evidence of friction between these groups."3

Contrary to this propaganda, the Nazi past of the Paperclip group caused such violent disputes among officers at Wright Field that the air inspector once told Colonel Putt, "The mere mention of the German Scientist situation is enough to precipitate emotions in Air Corps personnel ranging

from vehemence to frustration. "[4]

Air Corps officers stationed in Germany began to arrive in Dayton and were outraged to find Germans working there whom they regarded as Nazi war criminals. Arguments and fights short of blows ensued. Two Germans and a U.S. Army officer filed reports on Theodor Zobel charging that he had "performed experiments on human beings while in charge of wind tunnels at Chalais Meudon, France." But before the allegations were even investigated, Putt sent AAF headquarters a recommendation that Zobel be approved for legal immigration.[5]

Other questions were raised about jet fuel expert Ernst Eckert's Nazi past, while working for the German Institute of Technology in Nazi-occupied Prague, Czechoslovakia. Berlin Document Center reports reveal that Eckert had been a member of the SA and had joined the Nazi party in 1938 and the SS a year later. Yet during an interview Eckert denied he had ever been a member of the SS-until confronted with his SS records. Then he talked about participating in SS meetings. "We did some sports, some exercises, talked about the state of the war, things like that," Eckert said. All of this information had been available to Putt and other AAF officers at Wright Field. "The Air Force knew," said Eckert, "they helped us fill out our forms. "[6]

The controversies that arose over Zobel, Eckert, and others were only the beginning. In October 1946 a letter written by a Paperclip scientist to his part-time employer set off a chain of events that instigated Georg Rickhey's trial for Nazi war crimes and a military coverup to assure that the Nazi past of the rocket group at Fort Bliss remained secret.[7]

Rickhey was an aggressive, cool, and calculating man, one who didn't mind attracting attention to himself or his highranking position during the war. He bragged on papers filed with both Wright Field and the JIOA that he was the wartime general manager of the Mittelwerk underground V-2 rocket factory. During the entire time Rickhey worked at Wright Field, from July 21, 1946, until his arrest nearly a year later, his name was prominently displayed on U.S. Army war crimes lists as being wanted for murder.[8]

His Paperclip job at the air base was analagous to putting a fox in a chicken coop. Rickhey was paid to translate fortytwo boxes of Mittelwerk documents shipped from Nordhausen-the very same records a U.S. Army war crimes unit sought to use as evidence of his crimes. Rickhey had turned these records over to a Colonel Peter Beasley soon after the U.S. Army liberated Dora concentration camp. They were shipped first to London and then to Wright Field. Rickhey once described them as including Mittelwerk management papers, lists of managers, contracts, letters, and policy as well as information about V-2 rockets and underground tunnel construction.[9]

Judging from his description and the available documents, the boxes contained very important war crimes evidence. For example, management papers might have included sabotage reports signed by Rickhey, Rudolph, or other civilians that were filed with the SS. Sabotage reports resulted in hundreds of prisoners being hanged. [10]

Except for a meager handful, these Mittelwerk documents disappeared from view once they arrived at Wright Field. This is not surprising, since Putt had put Rickhey in charge of them at the air base. He certainly was given more than ample opportunity to destroy anything that could be used as evidence against him or other Germans at Fort Bliss whose names appeared in those files. Equally disturbing, however, is that Putt and other Wright Field officers allowed this to happen. Unfortunately, this is only one example of how Paperclip officials' callous attitude toward Nazi war crimes obstructed any possible justice.

Rickhey lived with 140 other Germans in a cluster of onestory barracks located on an isolated hilltop at Wright Field. Not satisfied with the money he earned under Paperclip, he used liquor and other goods given to him by relatives to set up a black market in his room, selling beer, candy, and cigarettes to other Germans at a profit. His room was frequently the site of noisy card games and drinking parties that extended long into the night.[11]

His card-playing partner, fifty-nine-year-old Albert Patin, had been a big-time industrialist who owned factories that manufactured automatic pilot devices for fighter planes. Patin had been a colonel in the SA storm troopers, a position he claimed was "honorary," and a director in the German Air

Ministry. In a long, rambling affidavit turned over to Putt, Patin described how he had hobnobbed during the war with those in Hitler's inner circle. There were Mediterranean cruises with the nephew of Hermann Goring, the proclaimed successor to Hitler, and winter trips with Dieter Stahl, head of munitions production in Albert Speer's Armaments Ministry.12

Even more damaging, Patin brazenly admitted using Russian, French, and Dutch POWs, along with "500 pitifully dressed [Jewish] women with shorn hair," as slave laborers in his factory. "One of the first things I ordered [was] the issuance of scarves for the women to cover their heads as they suffered most because of their shorn hair," he said. Patin claimed he ignored "one of the basic rules when employing slave labor" by not putting electric fences around the "encampment" where his slaves were imprisoned.13

Patin's admission was totally ignored, even though both Putt and JIOA officers had to know that using slave labor was a crime warranting full investigation. The International Military Tribunal was front page news and had just sentenced Albert Speer to twenty years in prison for his involvement with slave labor. Yet Patin was the first German whom Putt recommended for legal immigration. And like Hamill's questionable use of Axster as a trusted informant, Putt used Patin to spy on the other Germans at Wright Field. 14

One cold October night Rickhey, Patin, and another man were drinking booze, playing cards, and having a noisy good time. This was the second time in a month that Rickhey's loud parties had kept his neighbor, sixty-three-year-old Hermann Nehlson, awake past midnight. Rickhey soon would discover that Nehlson was the wrong man to cross. Unlike Rickhey's crowd, Nehlson had avoided even joining the Nazi party. During the war, Nehlson had been a consulting engineer for an aircraft company in Austria. He told friends that he had wanted to make a better life for his daughter in America, but was now surrounded by the same Nazis and anti-Semitic views that he had encountered in the Third Reich. In addition, Putt had promised Nehlson that he could work full time for Erwin Loewy, a close friend whose engineering company in New York City had contracts with the AAF. Instead he was allowed only short visits to New York and was otherwise confined to the air base.15

Angry that he couldn't sleep, Nehlson went to Rickhey's room and turned out the lights to stop the noise. The men around the card table lit a candle and continued with their game, as Rickhey yelled, "one could still play cards with a good `kosher' candle." Nehlson attributed the anti-Semitic remark to the fact that Rickhey was drunk. 16

When he returned to his room, Nehlson wrote a two-page letter to Loewy and told him of the unpleasant incident. He put more-damaging information about Rickhey on the second page of his letter, hoping it would slip by military censors. Nehlson accused Rickhey of being the "chief culprit" when twelve Dora prisoners were hanged in the V-2 factory. He thought Rickhey was guilty of the crime. But when he asked Wright Field officers to do something about it, he was told that they would go to any extreme to protect the scientists at the air base. Nehlson guessed that included Rickhey as well as Patin, who had just been named camp spokesman. "That is how things are here," Nehlson sadly told his friend. Then he put the letter in the slot to be mailed.17

A few weeks later Nehlson left the air base without permission and spent four days with his brother-in-law in Ann Arbor, Michigan. As a result Putt accused him of security violations and transferred him to Mitchell Field, New York.18

However, Nehlson's letter eventually caught the attention of censors who screened the Paperclip group's mail. Colonel Millard Lewis, an officer in AAF Headquarters, asked Cone, G-2's Exploitation Branch chief, to investigate Nehlson's charges against Rickhey. Lewis also strongly suggested that "a more comprehensive investigation" of German scientists be made, "to avoid the possibility of undesirables being admitted to the U.S." Clearly, insufficient background investigations were not the problem. Nearly everyone at Wright Field, from the Germans to AAF officers in charge, openly discussed Rickhey's involvement in the hangings. As one employee put it, the whole story was "common knowledge."19

Seven months passed before AAF headquarters even assigned an investigator to the case. Meanwhile, Putt continued to consider Rickhey eligible for immigration. On May 2, the same day

that Air Corps Major Eugene Smith was ordered to investigate Rickhey's case, AAF Headquarters signed Rickhey to a new five-year contract .20

Once Smith was on the case he quickly traveled to Wright Field. Little is known about Smith except his rank and serial number. He did note his personal opinions of Germans he interrogated in reports he filed with the air provost marshal. And his reports clearly show his frustration that headquarters had given him minimal information about Mittelwerk and Dora to begin his investigation.

Smith first discussed Rickhey's case with Captain Albert Abels, one of the officers in charge of Paperclip personnel at Wright Field. Abels said he'd heard rumors about Rickhey but discounted them as "petty jealousy" among the Germans. Several other Americans at the air base also knew about the hangings but did nothing to investigate the stories. Smith wasn't so cavalier-at his insistence, Rickhey was arrested, searched, and given a physical exam. On May 19, 1947, he was returned to Germany under guard to face war crimes charges.21

Smith went to Mitchell Field to meet Nehlson and three other German scientists who also had heard about Rickhey's activities. All had met Rickhey for the first time in Germany when he boarded the ship for America with a trunk that had "Mittelwerk General Manager" boldly painted on its side. Once on board, a former Mittelwerk engineer, Werner Voss, openly discussed Rickhey's involvement with the hangings. Voss told the Germans that Rickhey had instigated several hangings of Dora prisoners in the factory. In one case, prisoners were hanged when some of them tried to revolt after British planes dropped leaflets on the area urging them to do so.22

The hangings were so gruesome that even today Dora survivors, such as Yves Beon, remember them vividly. In one case, twelve prisoners were simultaneously hanged on an overhead crane near Arthur Rudolph's office. With their hands tied behind their backs and wooden sticks in their mouths to stifle screams, the electric crane slowly lifted them above a crowd of engineers and prisoners gathered in the tunnel. "Instead of letting them drop and killing them on the spot immediately, they let them hang very slowly with pain that's absolutely horrible," said Beon. Their bodies were left hanging in the tunnel for hours as a warning to the other prisoners.23

Nehlson confided to Smith how odd it was that Rickhey was deliberately separated from Rudolph and other Mittelwerk engineers at Fort Bliss. "I think he is protected," Nehlson said in a guarded voice. "All those who had been at Nordhausen were already in this country. They were brought to this country to work."24

Two days later, when Smith arrived at Fort Bliss, he began to see that the Germans were protected there, too. Wernher von Braun and his brother Magnus, who had worked at Mittelwerk, were conveniently out of town on business when Smith arrived. Hans Lindenberg, whom the Canadians wanted to interrogate during Backfire, had died a few months earlier. And even though Major Hamill had visited Mittelwerk in 1945, he told Smith he knew nothing about the place.25

Information that surfaced years later certainly explains why Wernher von Braun would have wanted to avoid talking to Smith. A transcript of a meeting held in Rickhey's office in 1944 to discuss slave labor lists von Braun as one of those attending the meeting, along with high-ranking SS officers as well as Arthur Rudolph, General Dornberger, Ernst Steinhoff, Hans Lindenberg, and Hans Friedrich. The group discussed bringing more French civilians to work as slaves in the underground factory and the requirement that they wear striped concentration camp inmate uniforms. There was no indication that von Braun or anyone else at the meeting objected to this proposal.26

Of the Germans Smith did interrogate, three men gave him so little information that he did not bother to conduct formal interrogations under oath. That is unfortunate, since one of the men, Guenther Haukohl, is currently under active investigation by the justice Department. Haukohl was assigned to Mittelwerk in 1943, helped design the assembly line, and supervised V-2 production. Yet he told Smith he had only heard rumors of hangings. Both Hans Palaoro and Rudolph Schlidt were tight-lipped about their activities. Palaoro said he never saw Rickhey at Mittelwerk and had no information other than what Smith already knew, which was very little. Schlidt said he had seen Rickhey only a couple of times and never witnessed any instances of prisoners being shot, hanged,

or stabbed in the tunnels.27

Werner Voss, the source of the rumors about Rickhey, told Smith another story when he was interrogated. He said that twice he had seen up to twenty men at a time hanged in the tunnels, but he did not see Rickhey at the hangings. Voss denied telling Nehlson that Rickhey had instigated the hangings and said he had talked about the hangings with the men on board ship only because he had a personal grudge against Rickhey. Smith did not ask him what that was about.28

Eric Ball, an engineer on the Mittelwerk assembly line, told Smith that he had seen two hangings but that Rickhey was not present at either of them. He admitted seeing German engineers beating prisoners in his section. "These 8 or 10 times the beatings were done by Germans who were in charge of the section and it was very light," Ball said. He told Smith that while civilian engineers were not supposed to strike prisoners, if the beatings had been carried out by the SS instead, they would have been much worse.29

Smith did not know the extent to which the civilian engineers had physically abused prisoners or he might have questioned Ball more closely. According to Mittelwerk records, the beatings became so widespread that Dora's camp doctor complained that prisoners were hospitalized for being "beaten or even stabbed with sharp instruments by civilian employees for any petty offense." On June 22, 1944, Rickhey and the SS even warned the engineers in writing that punishing prisoners was the SS's exclusive domain.[3o]

Smith also did not know about Mittelwerk's notorious Prisoner Labor Supply office or that it was directly subordinate to Rudolph. The office, run by a civilian named Brozsat, was responsible for the quantity of food the prisoners received, which was minimal. The office also was responsible for obtaining prisoners from Dora to work in the factory. This was done in coordination with an SS officer who ran a corresponding prisoner allocation office at Camp Dora. Decades later Rudolph would admit to Justice Department attorneys that it was he who requested prisoners from SS Sergeant Wilhelm Simon, who headed the camp's office. Civilian employees under Rudolph in Mittelwerk's supply office also were known to have beaten the prisoners frequently.31

What Smith did know was that he became suspicious of Rudolph the minute he started interrogating him. Despite having little information, Smith was not stupid, and when Rudolph told him a conflicting story, Smith became suspicious. Rudolph admitted that he had visited the SS commandant at Camp Dora twice. But when Smith began to ask about prisoners who were hurt or killed, Rudolph first denied seeing prisoners abused, then later described incidents of abuse. In one breath, Rudolph first told Smith, "I did not see them punished, beaten, hung, or shot." Yet a few minutes later, when asked to describe the time twelve prisoners were hanged from the crossbeam of a crane, Rudolph said he did not know if they were dead when he arrived, but "I do know that one lifted his knees, after I got there."[32]

Smith was skeptical. From information he had obtained, a sketch had been made of Mittelwerk's tunnels showing that Rudolph's office had been located near the crane from which the prisoners were hanged. He figured that Rudolph must have seen the hangings and he repeatedly asked Rudolph about them, but was given even more conflicting answers. One exchange went like this:

"Did you ever see anybody die in the tunnel?" Smith asked Rudolph.
"No."

"Tell me about the day Rickhey ordered 12 men hung by a crane."
"The SS had control of things like that. There were 6 maybe 12.33

Rudolph's answers on the amount of food given to prisoners were equally evasive, since the food supply department was subordinate to him. At first Rudolph said German civilians either brought food from home or ate in a cafeteria, while prisoners only ate soup sent from Camp Dora. But later Rudolph claimed that the slave laborers' meals were "about the same" as his own meals. Smith did not believe him, but he did not have enough information to piece the real story together. He decided to

talk with Rudolph again after he had met with everyone else.[34]

Hans Friedrich had been in charge of a consulting committee for V-2 electrical devices at Mittelwerk. But some of his activities may have resulted in prisoners being hanged. According to Dora records, German engineers turned prisoners over to the SS for minor offenses, such as leaning over to tie a shoelace, and the prisoners were hanged as a result. Friedrich admitted that he had once reported a prisoner to the Prisoner Labor Supply office for offering him a cigarette, and he believed the complaint was given to the SS. Unfortunately, Smith did not pursue this point with Friedrich.[35]

Friedrich said that once, while prisoners were hanging on a crane, he telephoned Rudolph to ask how long the crane would be out of operation. "He told me that the men would be hanging there the last 6 hours of one work shift and the first 6 hours of the next work shift, so that all Germans and Haeftlinge [prisoners] could see," Friedrich said. But when Smith questioned Rudolph a second time and asked about that incident, Rudolph said he did not remember the telephone conversation.[36]

Smith thought it was unusual that the men he interrogated knew so little about Mittelwerk's tunneling operations. Many of their answers were so alike that it was almost as though they had agreed on them beforehand. They claimed that the slave laborers' living, sanitary, and working conditions were the same as theirs, even though twenty thousand prisoners had died. All of them said they had seen only two hangings. And if prisoners were hurt, beaten for instance, the SS or prisoner capos were at fault. According to them, German engineers had nothing to do with punishing prisoners.[37]

Smith also was suspicious about Rudolph and he noted those suspicions in his final report:

Mr. Rudolph impressed the undersigned as a very clever, shrewd individual. He did not wish to become involved in any investigations that might involve him in any way with illegal actions in the underground factory and as a result, was cautious *of* his answers.38

On June 10, 1947, Smith sent the air provost marshal a detailed sixteen-page report and the sworn interrogations he had conducted at Fort Bliss and Mitchell Field. Smith included the sketch showing the location of Rudolph's office adjacent to the crane used to hang prisoners. All of this information was sent to Germany and introduced as evidence during Rickhey's trial.[39]

Rickhey was confined in an old barracks at the former Dachau concentration camp, awaiting trial as a Nazi war criminal. Armed American soldiers stood guard in watch towers from which the SS had once looked down on their victims. A large part of the Dachau complex had been turned into a prison for SS officers and other hardened criminals awaiting war crimes trials. One barracks was used as a courtroom for 489 war crimes cases conducted by U.S. Army military courts between 1945 and 1949. The Nordhausen cases were among those trials. They consisted of the main case, U.S. v. *Andrae et al.*, and the cases of five other individuals tried separately.

Rickhey posed a serious problem for the Army. On one hand, he was a sacrificial lamb. He was not a brilliant visionary like von Braun or a highly experienced engineer, but only a bureaucrat whose skills were expendable. On the other hand, the Army could not afford to make him too angry, since he knew too much.

Imprisonment did not dampen Rickhey's arrogant spirit. He thought he was still employed under the Paperclip contract he had signed at Wright Field shortly before his arrest. He sent reports of his exploits in Germany to Paperclip officers at Wright Field, reminding them of his valuable work. One report, directed to Putt, was pompously entitled "Report From Germany." In it Rickhey reminded Putt that he had generously turned over his Mittelwerk management records to the AAF. In a brazen lie, he told Putt he had been cleared of war crimes charges. "The suspicion manifested about me . . . was in error and was rectified by Col. Berman chief of the Nordhausen prosecution," he lied. His confinement at Dachau was a mere inconvenience, since he had to give "authentical information" in the war crimes case. But he soon would be free to visit Paperclip offices at Landshut to discuss technical information about underground tunnels with Germans he recommended be hired under Paperclip.40

Lieutenant Colonel William Berman was outraged when he heard about Rickhey's letter. He

immediately contacted the commanding officer of the Army's war crimes unit, Lieutenant Colonel Clio Straight, and told him that no error had been committed. Rickhey was still imprisoned as a war crimes suspect and would be a defendant in the main Nordhausen case.[41]

Rickhey's chief defense attorney, Major Leon Poullada, demanded that von Braun and his group testify at Rickhey's trial. Poullada told War Department officials he wanted von Braun "as well as some engineers who worked in the different departments of the so-called Mittelwerk" as witnesses. Lieutenant Colonel Straight supported the request, emphasizing that Rickhey faced a death sentence and that the personal attendance of von Braun and other witnesses was essential: "Sworn statements would be inadequate due to necessity for detailed explanation of complicated managerial structure of Mittelwerk Company and overlapping chains of command in Nordhausen. "[42]

Rickhey's trial posed a serious threat to the Germans working for the Army under Paperclip. Detailed explanations of Mittelwerk's management structure would expose Rudolph's authority over the Prisoner Labor Supply office and his connection to SS officer Simon, who was a defendant in the trial. Von Braun would be forced to explain his own dubious activities at Mittelwerk. Both might have to explain their attendance at the meeting in Rickhey's office in which the idea of sending more French civilians to Dora was discussed. And then there was the ultimate threat-Dora survivors, who were witnesses at the trial, might recognize them if they were present in the courtroom.

Army Ordnance officers solved the problem by flatly refusing to comply with Straight's request, saying that von Braun should not leave the United States for "security reasons." If this refusal stemmed from ostensible concern that von Braun might be kidnapped by Russians, it was a hollow excuse. Ordnance had allowed von Braun to travel to Europe exactly five months prior to Straight's request, on February 11, 1947. The sole purpose of his trip was to meet his girlfriend and bring her back to America. Ordnance officers first claimed that von Braun had made the trip to take care of his "personal affairs." But to get their superiors to approve of von Braun's trip, the officers quickly changed the story and claimed that the trip had been an "emergency." They pointed out that von Braun's Paperclip contract allowed his return to Germany when "a state of emergency exists."[43]

Ordnance officers won the battle: the group never appeared at the trial. The best Poullada got were sworn statements from von Braun, Rudolph, and others in which no questions were asked about their own involvement in Mittelwerk's sordid affairs.

Poullada's efforts to get Mittelwerk records from Wright Field also failed, even though General Clarence Huebner, commander in chief of the U.S. Army in Europe, told the War Department to turn over the documents as expeditiously as possible. Four months later Rickhey's family hired a lawyer in the United States and began to campaign for his release. They sent numerous irate letters to congressmen, including a gross accusation that the War Department had used "Gestapo" methods against Rickhey. Congressman John Anderson from California tried to get the Mittelwerk documents after Poullada's efforts failed. Anderson finally obtained a mere handful of records and sent them to Dachau with a request that Rickhey's cooperation under Paperclip be brought to the judges' attention at the trial.44

The *Andrae* trial began August 7, 1947. Except for Rickhey, the defendants were either SS officers or prisoner capos. The defendants were charged with the murders of at least twenty thousand prisoners who were starved, beaten, tortured, or hanged. Rickhey was specifically accused of instituting a system to increase V-2 rocket production that forced the slave laborers to work at such a fast pace that hundreds of them died from exhaustion. He also was charged with instigating hundreds of hangings in Mittelwerk's tunnels or at Camp Dora.[45]

SS officer Simon, Dora's labor allocation leader, also was sitting in the dock, charged with murder. This man was so brutal that Dora prisoners had nicknamed him "Simon Legree." An example of his brutality occurred one summer day in 1944, when a trainload of Hungarian Jews, including children, arrived from Auschwitz so weak from hunger they had to be carried into the camp. Simon immediately assigned the adults to a grueling work detail, forcing them to carry heavy wood planks to construct their own prison barracks. Soon many of them dropped dead from

exhaustion. Then Simon went after the children, whom he considered useless because they were too young-no more than ten or twelve years old -to work in the tunnels. He ordered the SS to round them up in the camp yard and beat them to death with clubs.46

In his opening statement, Lieutenant Colonel Berman, the chief prosecutor, described Dora as unique among concentration camps in that it was created to serve the German war machine. The entire complex consisted of the main camp, Dora, and thirty-one subcamps clustererd around the town of Nordhausen, Germany, in the Harz mountains. The camps existed solely to provide forced labor in the top-secret V-weaponry factory. "Dora was a concentration camp with the avowed purpose of exterminating those who were sent to it," Berman said. "The method of extermination was not the gas chamber, but the method of working them to death, and this they proceeded to do."47

Of the 60,000 prisoners who had passed through the camp in less than two years, one-third died as a result of organized murder. Dora's hospital records graphically list the cause of death: 9,000 died from exhaustion and collapse, at least 350 were hanged, and the remainder were shot or died from disease or starvation. The bodies of those who died were shipped to Buchenwald until Dora's own crematory, designed to burn up to seventy-five bodies a day, was complete.[48]

During the trial Rickhey was described as a cold-blooded Nazi who ordered the SS to hang prisoners. Four months before American soldiers arrived, as Hitler was demanding that more rockets be produced, Rickhey took one of his daily walks through the tunnels dressed in full Nazi uniform and surrounded by heavily armed SS guards. He called the prisoners together in the tunnels and threatened to cut off their food entirely if they did not work faster. Witnesses said that was exactly what happened. Soup kettles dried up, potatoes rotted, and the death toll mounted. Both Rickhey and Rudolph knew the prisoners were dying. Simon's office sent them daily reports on the number of prisoners either working, sick, or dead.[49]

Rickhey's defense centered on his claim that he was an administrator in charge only of budgets, not of rocket production. He had had nothing to do with the prisoners' deaths and conveniently blamed everything on the technical director, Albin Sawatzki, who had never been located. Reports of his whereabouts were mixed. Dora survivors have claimed that American soldiers killed him at Nordhausen in 1945. One Army CIC agent reported that Sawatzki was buried in a hospital cemetery near Nordhausen. Two other reports, including an Army war crimes arrest warrant, noted that he might be in England. Another Army officer told his superior that Sawatzki was living in a large apartment near Mittelwerk, in what was by then Soviet-controlled East Germany.[5]o

Rickhey begged the court to consider his work under Paperclip and his inability to obtain Mittelwerk documents or witnesses in his defense. "I have tried to get these records very hard and if I had gotten them I wouldn't be sitting here now," he said. Poullada submitted the affidavits filed by von Braun, Rudolph, and others at Fort Bliss who were not allowed to attend the trial. When von Braun's statement was introduced, noting that he had visited Mittelwerk fifteen to twenty times to discuss technical matters, the military judges asked Rickhey who he was. "Dr. von Braun was head of the development of the V-2 and always had close contact with all the data of Dr. Sawatzki constantly," said Rickhey.51

Chief Prosecutor Berman read portions of Smith's interrogation of Rudolph regarding Rickhey's position at Mittelwerk. Rudolph described the defendant as his chief and said that as Mittelwerk's general manager, Rickhey was responsible for everything that occurred in the factory. Rickhey had bragged about his powerful position when he was at Wright Field. During the trial, however, he tried to downplay his role. Berman and Rickhey argued a minute over Rudolph's description of his authority, and then this ironic exchange took place:

"Mr. Rudolf [*sic*] is not only a scientist of repute, but personally a man of reputation as distinct, is he not?" the prosecutor asked Rickhey.

"As far as I know, Mr. Rudolf's reputation is okay," Rickhey replied halfheartedly. The report that

Major Smith filed with the court, noting his own skepticism about Rudolph, was ignored.52

Dora survivors told the court horrifying stories about how brutally they had been treated by vicious SS guards. There was also testimony about civilian engineers-such as Rudolph's subordinates in the Prisoner Labor Supply officewho ordered SS officers to hang prisoners or who beat prisoners on their own. At least 350 Dora prisoners were hanged, including 200 for sabotage. Prisoners who worked on assembly lines continually risked their lives by deliberately pulling out wires, urinating on wiring, and using other methods to assure that the rockets would not operate properly. They felt that their sabotage efforts helped save Allied soldiers' lives. In addition to those hanged for sabotage, others were hanged for such trivial offenses as leaning over to pick up a piece of wire from the ground or making a spoon during work.[53]

When civilian engineers saw a prisoner doing something suspicious they filed a sabotage report. These reports were turned over to the S S and then usually the prisoners were hanged. Rickhey was accused of having sent these reports to the SS, which had carried out the hangings. But Sawatzki's former secretary at Mittelwerk testified that it was Rudolph who had turned over the reports. Hannelore Bannasch said she saw the sabotage reports that crossed her desk at work. According to Bannasch the reports were handled by "the factory management," and Sawatzki heard of them only as "they were passed on by the factory management."

"Whom do you mean by that-what individual?" the prosecutor asked Bannasch.
"Director Rudolf," she replied.54

He then asked her who had signed the sabotage reports. Previous witnesses had testified to having seen a sabotage report signed by both Rickhey and a prisoner capo.

"That is impossible," said Bannasch, "a prisoner couldn't possibly sign a sabotage report and if anybody had signed it at the Werke, it would have been Mr. Rudolf, and never Rickhey, because he never had anything to do with that factory, itself."55

Civilian engineers even had taken more direct action by personally ordering the SS to hang prisoners. One Dora survivor named Josef Ackermann recalled that a group of Russian POWs were hanged because they were caught making a metal spoon. "The capo told a civilian engineer about it and the civilian engineer called the SS who was near him," said Ackermann. "The SS brought a piece of wire and hanged them over their machine." Another witness, Cecil Jay, was a British citizen living in Germany who had been arrested by the Gestapo for anti-Nazi activities and sent to Dora. Jay testified that he saw civilian personnel order SS guards to hang four prisoners in the tunnel. "The order was given from the civilians to the SS that the prisoners be punished for sabotage and it was carried out," Jay said.56

Rudolph's subordinates in the Prisoner Labor Supply office were notorious for beating prisoners. George Finkenzeller, a capo in Paperclip engineer Guenther Haukohl's detail from November 1943 until the summer of 1944, when he went to another area of the plant, was convicted in a separate Nordhausen trial. In his testimony Finkenzeller identified civilians by name from the Prisoner Labor Supply office and Rudolph's deputy, Karl Seidenstuecker, and said they ordered the SS to punish prisoners or beat prisoners themselves. "Practically all civilians who were working in the prisoner labor allocation and partly some of the civilians, especially during the first year, carried out beatings on their own," said Finkenzeller.57

Prisoners were brutally beaten by almost anyone in authority for any minor offense. "I was beaten by the SS, I was beaten by the civilian engineers, and I was even beaten by the capos," said former Dora prisoner Georges Kassimatis. He was beaten once with a large rubber hose because he was cold and had wrapped himself in a cement bag to keep warm. Another time he was beaten while carrying torpedo parts because he was not walking fast enough to suit his guards. He lagged behind the others in line because he was so weak from hunger his feet had gone numb.[58]

Toward the end of the trial Jean Michel was called to the witness stand. Michel had been a leader of the French Resistance in Paris when he was arrested by the Gestapo and sent to Dora. In late 1944 he organized a French underground movement in the camp to try to save prisoners' lives. "Everybody knew that the SS had decided to kill everybody at, the end of the war," Michel said in an interview. "So, I decided to try to do something about it." He told the court that the Gestapo had caught him and thirty-seven other Frenchmen and threw them all in jail. Two men were beaten to death when they tried to escape. Then Michel and the others were taken one by one into another cell, where the SS beat them. "I would have been hanged if the end of the war didn't arrive as it happened," Michel said. After the war he was awarded the French Legion of Honor and the American Medal of Freedom.[59]

The trial lasted four months. When the verdicts were announced, fifteen defendants were found guilty and four were acquitted. Rickhey was found not guilty, and he immediately complained in a letter to Beasley that the trial had been a Communist plot. Rudolph had sent Simon's attorney a letter in Simon's defense claiming that the SS officer had tried to help the prisoners. The court, however, thought the evidence against Simon showed entirely the opposite and sentenced him to life imprisonment.60

In Washington, G-2 Exploitation Branch chief Montie Cone was busy in his office in the Intelligence Division when the telephone rang. State Department representative Henry Cox wanted to know if there had ever been a Paperclip specialist returned to Germany for a war crimes trial. "I thought a moment," said Cone, "and realizing that the Rickhey case was in the public domain . . . I did not dare deny the story." He told Cox that one Air Force case had been returned to Europe under suspicion and that he recollected that the man was cleared. In any event, Cone said, "we did not desire to take further chances on the case. "[6]1

Then, in an unprecedented move, the Army classified the entire trial record. The American public would not know that Rudolph, Magnus von Braun, and others at Fort Bliss had worked at Mittelwerk, not Peenemunde. The press would not be able to obtain Smith's report that noted his suspicions about Rudolph, or see trial testimony of witnesses who said it was Rudolph who had signed sabotage reports that were turned over to the SS. Wernher von Braun would be saved from having to answer awkward questions about his frequent visits to that underground hell. No one would know about twenty thousand men who died while working as slaves on Hitler's V-2. No one would even know that Camp Dora existed.

All of that evidence was now safely hidden from public scrutiny. And it stayed that way for decades.

---

1. "Nazi Brains Help Us," *Life,* 9 December 1946, pp. 49-52; Herbert Shaw, "Wright Field Reveals `Operation Paperclip,' " *Dayton Daily News,* 4 December 1946, p. 5; and *Newsweek,* 9 December 1946, pp. 68-69.

2. War Department, Public Relations Division, "Release," 27 November 1946, for release to the press on 4 December 1946, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

3. Ibid.

4. AAF *Participation in Project Paperclip.*

5. Accusations against Zobel are in OMGUS *Security Report,* 25 October 1946, in the Theodor Zobel INSCOM dossier B8003094 and Zobel's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

6. SS membership is in *Meldebogen* and sworn statement, 2 July 1947, in the Ernst Eckert JIOA dossier. The Berlin Document Center card showing Eckert's SS membership number, 6432691, is in Ernst Eckert INSCOM dossier D024720.

Quotes are from Eckert interview.

7. Hermann Nehlson to Lcewy, 17 October 1946, in *Andrae,* Preliminary Investigation file, roll 1.

8. Personal data sheets are in the Georg Rickhey JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

9. Rickhey testimony, *Andrae,* transcript pp. 7524-59.

10. For example, the document Nehlson turned over to Smith was a management chart containing the names of Mittelwerk managers. See *Andrae,* Preliminary Investigation file, roll 1.

11. Ibid.

12. Patin Nazi party and SA membership: in *OMGUS Security Report,* 29 September 1948, in the Patin IRR dossier XE008256, RG 319, NARS. Relationship with Goring's nephew and others: in *Statements Made by Pa perclip Specialist Albert Patin,* forwarded to the JIOA on 18 October 1948 by the Department of the Air Force, in the Albert Patin JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

13. *Paperclip Specialist Albert Patin.*

14. See especially *Security Report of Sponsoring Agency,* 25 October 1946, stating that Patin "advises this command of attitude of other scientists," in the Albert Patin JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

15. See *Basic Personnel Record,* in the Hermann Nehlson JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS. See also Smith interrogation of Nehlson, in *Andrae,* Preliminary Investigation file, roll 1.

16. Hermann Nehlson to Loewy, 17 October 1946, in *Andrae,* Preliminary Investigation file, roll 1.

17. Ibid.

18. *OMGUS Security Report,* 19 June 1947, in the Hermann Nehlson JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

19. Colonel Millard Lewis to Director of Intelligence, Exploitation Branch, 19 December 1946, in the Georg Rickhey IRR dossier, RG 319, NARS.

20. Major Eugene Smith to Air Provost Marshal, "Preliminary Investigation Regarding the Activities of Dr. Georg Rickhey," 23 May 1947, in *Andrae,* Preliminary Investigation file, roll 1.

21. Ibid. 22. Ibid. 23. Ibid.; Beon interview.

24. Smith interrogation of Hermann Nehlson.

25. Major Eugene Smith to Air Provost Marshal, "Investigation Regarding Activities of Dr. Georg Rickhey, Former Director-General of the Underground Mittelwerk Factory Near Nordhausen, Germany," 10 June 1947, in *Andrae,* Preliminary Investigation file, roll 1 (hereafter cited as Smith, "Activities of Dr. Georg Rickhey").

26. "Transcript of Conference of May 6, 1944 in the office of Director General Rickhey," 6 May 1944, OSI.

27. Smith, "Activities of Dr. Georg Rickhey."

28. Smith interrogation of Werner Voss, in *Andrae,* Preliminary Investigation file, roll 1.

29. Smith interrogation of Eric Ball, in *Andrae,* Preliminary Investigation file, roll 1.

30. "Special Order of Mittelwerk Factory Management," 22 August 1944, OSI.

31. Prisoner Labor Supply office is discussed in *People vs. Erwin,~ulius Busta and Ernst Sander,* Provincial Court of Essen, West Germany, 1971. 32. Smith interrogation of Arthur Rudolph, in *Andrae,* prosecution exhibit P-126.

33. Ibid. 34. Ibid.

35. Smith interrogation of Hans Friedrich, in *Andrae,* prosecution exhibit P-127.

36. Ibid.

37. Smith, "Acdvities of Dr. Georg Rickhey." 38. Ibid.

39. Ibid.

40. Georg Rickhey, "Report From Germany," n.d., in Georg Rickhey IRR dossier X8737323, RG 319, NARS.

41. Lieutenant Colonel William Berman to Chief, 7708 War Crimes Group, 17 June 1947, in Rickhey's IRR dossier, RG 319, NARS.

42. Lieutenant Colonel Clio Straight to War Department, 31 July 1947, in *Andrae,* Preliminary Investigation file, roll 1.

43. Cable, War Department to 7708 War Crimes Group, 7 August 1947, in *Andrae,* Preliminary Investigation file, roll 1. On von Braun's trip to Germany: Colonel R. F. Ennis to Executive, Intelligence Division, 11 February 1947, G-2 Paperclip files, 400.112, RG 319, WNRC.

44. Requests for documents: in cable S-1804, EUCOM Headquarters to WDGID, 4 August 1947, in *Andrae,* Preliminary Investigation file, roll 1. Congressman John Anderson and Rickhey family correspondence, in cluding the "Gestapo" accusation: from *Andrae,* Preliminary Investigation file, roll 1, the Georg Rickhey IRR dossier, RG 319, NARS; the Rickhey JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS; and the Rickhey G-2 dossier, RG 319, WNRC.

45. Charges are in *Andrae,* roll 5.

46. Wilhelm Simon testimony, *Andrae.*

47. Prosecution's opening statement, *Andrae,* transcript p. 35. 48. William Aalmann, *Dora* booklet, in *Andrae.*

49. Testimony of Georges Kassamatis and Rickhey are in *Andrae.* For testimony that Rickhey and Rudolph were on the distribution list to receive daily reports, see Leinweber testimony, *Andrae,* transcript pp. 4029-44.

50. Author interviews with Jean Michel and Beon; Sawatzki arrest reports, Army CIC reports on whereabouts, and memos from the War Crimes Group are in Albin Sawatzki INSCOM dossier XE185239.

51. Rickhey testimony, *Andrae;* and Wernher von Braun statement, defense exhibit D-38, also in *Andrae.*

52. Smith interrogation of Arthur Rudolph; and Rickhey testimony, transcript pp. 7560-82, both in *Andrae.*

53. Testimony about civilian engineers: in Kassamatis testimony, *Andrae.* Information on prisoner sabotage of rockets is from the Beon interview. 54. Testimony of Hannelore Bannasch, *Andrae,* transcript p. 7237. 55. Ibid.

56. Josef Ackerman and Cecil Jay testimony, *Andrae,* esp. transcript PP~ 75-76.

57. George Finkenzeller testimony, in main trial, *Andrae,* transcript p. 6476. Finkenzeller's trial records are located on roll 16. For background on Guenther Haukohl see his IRR dossier, RG 319, NARS; Haukohl's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS; OSI interrogation of Arthur Rudolph, 13 October 1982 and 4 February 1983; and Hunt, "Nazi Coverup."
58. Kassimatis testimony, in *Andrae,* transcript pp. 1283-97.

59. Jean Michel testimony, in *Andrae,* transcript pp. 4153-213; Michel interview; and Hunt, "Arthur Rudolph, NASA and Dora."

60. Letter, Georg Rickhey to Colonel Peter Beasley, in the Rickhey JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS. Information about Rudolph letter in Simon's defense: in OSI interrogation of Rudolph.

61. Colonel Montie Cone, "Office Memorandum," 5 March 1948, in the Georg Rickhey G-2 dossier, RG 319, WNRC.

5 *Experiments in Death*

IT was mid-afternoon, March 16, 1946, when the guests arrived at the old Kaiser Wilhelm Institute in Heidelberg, Germany. Hundreds of Americans had been invited to the open house at the new AAF Aero Medical Center set up to exploit German aviation medicine. The center's commander, Air Corps Colonel Robert Benford, greeted guests at the door and sent them to the large library that had been transformed into a cheerful cocktail lounge decorated with brightly colored flowers. A bartender recruited from a local hotel kept the liquor flowing throughout the afternoon.1

The party provided an opportunity for the guests to meet more than a hundred German scientists working at the AAF Center under Paperclip. Benford and other AAF officers had recruited some of Germany's best-known specialists in aviation medicine. Many Americans at the party already knew Hubertus Strughold, who was in charge of the German staff. During the war, Strughold headed the Luftwaffe Institute for Aviation Medicine in Berlin under Oskar Schroeder, chief of the Luftwaffe's Medical Service. The German staff at the AAF Center included Strughold's former wartime subordinates at the institute, Konrad Schaefer, Otto Gauer, and Hans Clamann.2

As part of the festivities, guests toured the AAF Center to get firsthand information about the more interesting projects underway. Thousands of captured German documents and copies of the scientists' published and unpublished research were being translated into English for later publication in AAF monographs.[3]

Konrad Schaefer's study, "Thirst and Thirst Quenching in Emergency Situations at Sea," was part of this project. Schaefer had worked at Strughold's institute on problems of how to make seawater relatively safe to drink. The Luftwaffeand now the AAF-considered this research an important step toward saving the lives of downed fliers with no water available to them except seawater.[4]

Other Paperclip scientists had conducted aeromedical experiments using the scientific equipment housed at the AAF Center. One was the well-known high-altitude specialist Siegfried Ruff-who works today as a consultant for Lufthansa German Airlines in West Germany. He was wartime head of aeromedicine at the German Experimental Institute for Aviation, the DVL (Deutsche Versuchsanstalt fuer Luftfahrt). Ruff and Strughold coauthored several articles and a book on aviation medicine.[5]

Ruff recalled his work under Paperclip at the AAF Center. "I worked on ejector seats," Ruff said in an interview. "We tested how much humans can stand." He and Gauer conducted experiments to test the body's ability to withstand sudden thrust accelerations simulating a flyer's experience when catapulted from an aircraft after an accident or ramming.6

Another Paperclip recruit, Hermann Becker-Freyseng, worked on high-altitude experiments with Ruff at the AAF Center. Becker-Freyseng was formerly head of the Department for Aviation Medicine under Schroeder and worked afternoons at Strughold's institute. Under Paperclip he and Ruff conducted seventy experiments with a German low-pressure chamber to study ways to prevent the bends. They put volunteer test subjects into a chamber and simulated an altitude of 39,260 feet to determine whether the bends were less painful when the body was in a prone position or sitting up.7

But a dark side of the Germans' work was kept secret from the guests at the party. Both Schaefer and Becker-Freyseng knew far more about seawater's effects on the human body than was stated in the published version of Schaefer's study. And men had been driven insane and died due to lack of oxygen when they ascended to simulated extreme high altitudes in the pressure chamber.

Karl Hoellenrainer was an innocent victim of gruesome seawater experiments at Dachau. The scars on his back where his liver had been punctured and his ruined health from being forced to drink putrid yellow seawater told the story of what was missing from Schaefer's study. SS chief

Himmler had tried to eliminate gypsies from Nazi Germany. As a result Hoellenrainer was arrested by the Gestapo and sent to Auschwitz. He was only there a month, but that was long enough for the Nazis to kill his child, his sister, and both of her children, and throw their bodies into the smoldering furnaces at Birkenau. Then he was loaded onto a train bound for Buchenwald to be imprisoned until the SS decided his and other gypsies' fate.[8]

As Hoellenrainer sat waiting, Schaefer, Becker-Freyseng, and others held a conference at the German Air Ministry to discuss problems of fliers whose planes crashed at sea, forcing them to live on seawater. In 1944 the Luftwaffe's Medical Service had only two methods for making seawater potable. Schaefer's method was relatively safe but required substantial amounts of silver, which was in limited supply. The second method, called Berkatit, was a substance that changed the taste of seawater but did not remove the salt.[9]

During the conference, Becker-Freyseng reported that clinical experiments had not yet been conducted under sufficiently realistic conditions of sea distress. He and Schaefer were convinced that if a man took Berkatit his health would be damaged within six days and after twelve days it would kill him. Several meetings were held to plan the experiments, including one at Strughold's institute that Clamann also attended. The group agreed that a new set of experiments should be conducted using concentration camp prisoners, since experiments with Berkatit probably would result in deaths.10

Becker-Freyseng wrote a letter to SS chief Himmler, signed by Schroeder, asking for "40 healthy test subjects" and permission to conduct the experiments at Dachau. A particularly nauseating Nazi discussion ensued among SS officials over whether to use Jews or "asocial gypsy half-breeds." One SS man objected to gypsies because they were "of somewhat different racial composition" than Aryan Germans. Himmler finally arranged to transfer gypsies to Dachau for the experiments.11

Hoellenrainer got the word when the SS summoned him and forty other gypsies to the camp yard and said they were being transferred to a work detail at Dachau. When they arrived, however, they were sent to a hospital ward, stripped, and X-rayed. Wilhelm Beiglboeck, a Luftwaffe doctor in charge of the experiments, told them their fate. When one gypsy protested, Beiglboeck pulled out a gun and said, "If you are not quiet, and want to rebel, I will shoot you on the spot."12

The prisoners were fed cookies, rusks, and brown sugar during the first week of the experiments and then were starved. Over the next month they were forced to drink plain seawater or water that was treated in either the Schaefer or the Berkatit method. Those who refused to drink the putrid water, which made them violently ill, were tied up and force-fed with long tubes stuffed down their throats.'[3]

"The people were crazy from thirst and hunger, we were so hungry-but the doctor had no pity on us," said Hoellenrainer. "Then one gypsy . . . ate a little piece of bread once, or drank some water. The doctor from the Luftwaffe got very angry and mad. He took the gypsy and tied him to a bed post and sealed his mouth."14

A number of victims suffered heart seizures and went into comas; others were seriously wounded when Beiglboeck took a long, sharp instrument and punctured their livers to drain the saltwater along with blood. When it was over, Hoellenrainer could barely walk, but he was still assigned to a work detail in another camp. The bodies of his dead companions were covered with sheets and carried across the camp yard to be burned in the crematories.15

The story behind the pressure chamber experiments involved Dachau prisoners who met an equally grim fate. Many victims died from being sent to high altitudes without oxygen, and others were driven mad from the horrifying experience. The idea for the experiments originated in 1941, when Sigmund Rascher attended a course in aviation medicine at the German air force headquarters in Munich. He told Himmler that he was disappointed to learn that no tests at extremely high altitudes had ever been made using human subjects, "as such experiments are very dangerous and nobody volunteers for them." Rascher asked the SS to make "two or three professional criminals" available to him for experiments that he boldly predicted would kill the participants. Himmler ap-

proved his using 200 Dachau inmates whose "crimes" were being Jews, Russian prisoners of war, or members of the Polish Resistance.16

Ruff and his subordinate at the DVL, Hans Romberg, agreed to help Rascher conduct the experiments. They held several planning meetings, including one at Dachau, where the SS commandant took them on a guided tour of the camp's experimental facilities. Ruff's low-pressure chamber was used for the experiments, but to hide DVL's collaboration the chamber was not delivered directly to the camp. DVL employees took the chamber to Munich, where they were met by SS drivers, who delivered it to the final destination.17

During the experiments victims were locked inside the windowed airtight chamber, with the pressure altered to simulate atmospheric conditions of altitudes up to 68,000 feet. According to one of Rascher's assistants, "Some experiments gave men such pressure in their heads that they would go mad and pull out their hair in an effort to relieve such pressure. They would tear their heads and faces with their fingernails. . . . They would beat the walls with their hands and head and scream in an effort to relieve pressure on their eardrums."18

Nearly eighty men died when they were kept at high altitudes without oxygen for up to thirty minutes. Others were dragged out of the chamber and held under water until they drowned. Rascher cut open their skulls, chest cavities, and abdomens underwater to determine the amount of air embolism in the vessels of their brains.19

Those who lived through the experiments were driven insane. One of the victims, a former Jewish delicatessen clerk, was used as a guinea pig in an experiment to simulate what would happen to a flier parachuting out of an airplane at high altitudes without an oxygen mask. The experiment was described in detail in a report signed by Ruff, Rascher, and Romberg. The victim was locked inside the chamber, given an oxygen mask, and raised to a simulated altitude of 47,000 feet. According to the report, when the mask was removed, Ruff reported that the victim "yells loudly" and "gives the impression of someone who is completely out of his mind." As the poor man huddled in the corner of the chamber, doubled over with convulsions and gasping for air, his tormentors cold-bloodedly filmed the experiment to make a faithful record of his agony.20

The U.S. military still viewed Ruff and Becker-Freyseng as valuable assets, despite their connection to these crimes. They were even employed under Paperclip to continue the same type of research that had resulted in the murder of Dachau prisoners! By June 1946 AAF headquarters in Washington was flooded with requests to bring Ruff and the others to America. Brigadier General Norris Harbold asked for Paperclip contracts for Ruff and Becker-Freyseng.21

At the same time, an Army war crimes unit also was interested in these men. Investigators sifted through SS chief Himmler's files and found the records of the experirnents. The scientists' names were placed on Army war crimes wanted lists. On September 16 Army CIC agents arrived at the AAF Center with a handful of arrest warrants. Colonel Benford recalled that when the CIC agents arrived, "some of my people were on their list," but he still believes that the charges against them were "nothing serious." Ruff, Schaefer, Becker-Freyseng, Schroeder, and Theodor Benzinger were arrested and taken to a Nuremberg prison.22

Benzinger claims his arrest was a "set up" by Strughold to take the heat off Strughold's own questionable wartime activities. When he arrived at Nuremberg he was interrogated but not charged. His interrogators were interested in who had been present, besides Benzinger, at two meetings with high-ranking Nazis in which the experiments were openly discussed. Benzinger, former head of the Department of Aviation at the Luftwaffe institute in Rechlin, had attended one meeting in which film of high-altitude experiments was shown in the office of the secretary of the German Air Ministry. He also had attended a conference where Dachau cold experiments were discussed in detail, including information that concentration camp prisoners had died during the experiments. Benzinger's interrogators never mentioned Strughold or a dozen other Paperclip scientists who also had attended the conference, even though Strughold's subordinates, Schaefer and Clamann, had presented research papers at the conference.23

Benzinger said he and his colleagues had conducted explosive decompression experiments on

themselves at his institute during the war. They were trying to find out what happens when the pressurized cabin in an aircraft fails. During one experiment Benzinger was sitting in a chamber across from a Junkers factory engineer. "I did not panic when the explosion came, [but] this man . . . fell right into my lap," Benzinger said. "After a few minutes he came to and he was all right." But one colleague died during the experiments. Benzinger said he was away from the institute at the time, flying a spy mission over England to photograph an aluminum factory near Oxford. Benzinger was released after spending a month in the Nuremberg prison. He was brought to the United States by the Navy and worked under Paperclip contract at the Naval Medical Research Institute in Bethesda, Maryland.24

Eight days after Becker-Freyseng's arrest, Nuremberg investigator Herbert Meyer questioned him at length about Strughold's role in the Dachau experiments. Strughold had been directly subordinate to Erich Hippke, chief of the Luftwaffe's Medical Service, and then to Schroeder when he replaced Hippke later in the war. Both men had signed orders that authorized experiments in the camps. Becker-Freyseng was intimately familiar with the three men's activities; he had been an assistant in Schroeder's office and also worked afternoons at Strughold's institute. He told the investigator that Strughold had advised Hippke and Schroeder on research matters, especially regarding high-altitude testing; that Strughold had known about the experiments; and that he had received copies of Becker-Freyseng's reports and those submitted by Ruff and Schaefer. Meyer then repeatedly asked Becker-Freyseng whether Strughold had had the authority to stop the experiments:[25]

"If Dr. Strughold did not agree with a specific experiment, could he interrupt it?" Meyer asked Becker-Freyseng.

"I would assume, yes," Becker-Freyseng replied. "Did he have the power at his disposal?"

"Of course, he was the director of the Institute. He could do what he wanted there."

"If he had not agreed with the work of the doctors, could he have sent for them and said: `You must stop that or go to another Institute.' "

"Yes. That is, he would have had to report to his superiors, because it was a military institution."

"As director of the Institute he could distribute and stop work?"

"Yes."26

Strughold was not arrested, interrogated, or even called as a witness at the trial, despite the derogatory information against him. It was a glaring example of how far the U.S. military went to protect him. His wartime superior, close associates, and a subordinate all were tried at Nuremberg, while Strughold blithely continued business as usual at the AAF Center.

The trial, known as the "Medical Case," was the first of twelve war crimes trials conducted by the U.S. government at Nuremberg. A tribunal of American judges presided over the trial. The case involved a long, grisly list of experiments and other medical crimes, such as experiments with bone transplant techniques, sterilization with X rays, and deliberate infection with malaria and typhoid.

On December 6, 1946, the chief of counsel for war crimes, Brigadier General Telford Taylor, stood before a podium in the makeshift courtroom crowded with spectators and delivered the prosecution's opening statement. He spoke of nameless victims who numbered in the millions and of those who still did not believe the crimes had occurred: "For them it is far more important that these incredible events be established by clear and public proof, so that no one can ever doubt that they were fact and not fable; and that this Court, as the agent of the United States and as the voice of humanity, stamp these acts, and the ideas which engendered them, as barbarous and criminal."27

To Taylor's right, twenty-three defendants sat in the dock accused of crimes committed under the guise of scientific research. Both Schroeder and Becker-Freyseng were charged with personal responsibility for high-altitude, freezing, sulfanilamide, seawater, epidemic jaundice, and typhus

experiments. Schaefer was charged with participation in seawater experiments. Ruff and his associate, Romberg, were charged with being criminally implicated in the high-altitude experiments. Beiglboeck, also a defendant, was charged with conducting seawater experiments. All were accused of committing war crimes and crimes against humanity that included the murder of innocent civilians on political, racial, or religious grounds.28

Taylor pointed out that the defendants were not ignorant people. All but three were physicians. They had been department chiefs, members of German research institutes, or high officials of the Luftwaffe, Wehrmacht, or SS medical services. "Yet these defendants, all of whom were exceptionally qualified to form a moral and professional judgment in this respect, are responsible for wholesale murder and unspeakably cruel tortures," said Taylor.29

Nineteen German defense attorneys prepared for the battle. Four represented more than one defendant. They were paid by the U.S. government and received cheap meals, free cigarettes, and other benefits. Even former Nazis were allowed to act as defense counsel. Thirteen of these lawyers had been Nazi party members; one had been in the SS.30

There was no disposition for some of that group to worry about scruples when it came to their clients' defense. Beiglboeck's attorney submitted evidence in court that he knew had been altered by his client. Names of experimental subjects had been erased from clinical charts of the seawater experiments in an effort to stop prosecutors from locating survivors and using them as prosecution witnesses. Beiglboeck also admitted having erased information about how critically ill a prisoner had become as a result of the experiments. He and his attorney "were in agreement at all times" that the charts should be submitted in court only after derogatory information had been removed.[3]1

Each of the defendants had an excuse for his behavior. They had merely carried out orders and their experiments were no different from those conducted by scientists in Allied counuies. No one was a criminal. Becker-Freyseng said the experiments benefited society. Schaefer had only attended meetings. Ruff's victims were well-fed, model prisoners who had volunteered to be guinea pigs. Everyone blamed the dead. Rascher was the murderer; his experiments were the ones that had killed the prisoners. Ruff and his cohorts could not be blamed if their superiors had ordered them to work with that murderer.[32]

Defense attorneys also piled the blame on the victims. To them, all concentration camp inmates were criminals deserving of punishment. Their deaths were justified, since the experiments had been conducted in the national interest of the Third Reich. Hoellenrainer was caught in this crossfire when he was called as a witness and ruthlessly questioned by Beiglboeck's attorney. Did he beat his wife? Was he crazy? Mentally retarded? Mad? When he tried to answer, he was admonished not to be evasive, "as gypsies usually are. "33

Hoellenrainer fought back in the court and paid for it. When prosecutors asked him to identify the Luftwaffe doctor who had punctured his liver at Dachau, he ran over to the dock and tried to assault Beiglboeck. The presiding judge had him restrained and told him he was in contempt of court.[34]

"This man is a murderer. He gave me salt water and he performed a liver puncture on me. I am still under medical treatment. Please do not send me to prison," he begged the judge.[35]

"That is no extenuation. The contempt before this court must be punished," said the judge, and he sentenced Hcellenrainer to ninety days in prison.[36]

The defendants who had worked under Paperclip played their American connections to the hilt. Strughold, Gauer, and Clamann submitted glowing references in their behalf. Strughold described Schaefer as "very humane and socially minded;" Ruff was "a scientist of extraordinary experimental talent and ingenuity." While prosecutors piled up evidence exposing Schroeder as a raving Nazi who personally had approved experiments tantamount to outright murder, Strughold portrayed him as "the typical honorable, conscientious and self sacrificing Medical Officer with a frank, natural and modest nature."[3]7

Ruff's defense attorney told the court that he was most impressed with Gauer and emphasized that he was "working in America." Of course, it was no secret that Gauer, Strughold, and Clamann were all on the U.S. payroll. Gauer's comments were informative, but more for what they revealed

about Gauer than about Ruff. He went into great detail about how he and Ruff had "frequently carried out experiments together" at the DVL and Strughold's institute. He made no apologies for RufPs participation in Dachau experiments and surmised that Ruff had been "called" to Dachau "because he was *the* medical scientist who was best acquainted with the development of the stratosphere." Although Dachau victims had suffered "extraordinary" long periods of unconsciousness during the experiments, Gauer thought that was "no proof of a particularly reckless method of experimenting." Gauer cited a report that Ruff, Rascher, and the others had sent to Himmler that explicitly detailed the victims' plight and brazenly suggested that further experiments on humans should be conducted. "If we do not wish to stop half way, corresponding experiments are categorically demanded by the above-named results," he exclaimed. Using animals as subjects was "unsuitable" to him, since they differed from humans in size and metabolism.[38]

The trial lasted for nine months before the tribunal rendered a decision. Part of that decision included written guidelines covering the legal and ethical use of humans as experimental subjects. Throughout the trial, defendants had excused their crimes on the grounds that there was no consistency in international scientific circles regarding rules governing use of human subjects. The argument raised several pertinent questions: Should prisoners be used as experimental subjects? What rights should human volunteers have during experiments? Do the rules apply if a government contends that the experiments were conducted in the interest of national security? As a result of these and other questions, the tribunal listed ten basic principles that should be observed during any experiments using human subjects in order to satisfy moral, ethical, and legal concepts.

These important guidelines will surface later in the Paperclip story. First, in the 1950s Paperclip scientists at Edgewood Arsenal, Maryland, violated the guidelines-particularly the first rule, that the "voluntary consent of the human subject is absolutely essential"-when American soldiers were used in LSD experiments in an atmosphere disturbingly similar to Dachau. Thirty years later, in 1986, the U.S. Supreme Court ignored the guidelines in the case of James Stanley, an American soldier who was an unwitting guinea pig in the LSD experiments.39

When the Nuremberg tribunal announced its verdict, Schroeder and Becker-Freyseng were found guilty and sentenced to life and twenty years' imprisonment, respectively. Beiglboeck was sentenced to fifteen years' imprisonment. Although Schaefer had attended meetings where the seawater experiments were planned, the tribunal acquitted him, stating, "Nowhere have we been able to find that Schaefer was a principal in, or accessory to, or was otherwise criminally involved in or connected with the experiments mentioned."40

The court's 'verdict concerning Ruff and his assistant, Romberg, was a closer call. Both admitted having been involved with high-altitude experiments. "At one time I went to Dachau while these experiments were carried on and I observed them," Ruff testified. But they maintained that two separate groups of experiments had been carried out at Dachau-one conducted by them with the use of "exhibition subjects" in which no one died; the other conducted by Rascher on a group of nonvolunteers in which seventy to eighty died. In the end Ruff was acquitted, but the court conceded that the question of his guilt or innocence was "close" and found "much in the record to create at least a grave suspicion" that Ruff was "implicated in criminal experiments at Dachau." Romberg was acquitted for the same reason.[41]

By the time the trial ended, Strughold, Gauer, Clamann, and others had already been brought to the United States under Paperclip. The AAF Aero Medical Center was shut down for violating U.S. law, which forbade certain types of military research from being conducted in the U. S. zone of Germany. Under a reorganization of the U.S. military in 1947, the AAF became a separate military service, the U.S. Air Force. Strughold headed a new Air Force School of Aviation Medicine at Randolph Field, Texas, and two years later was placed in charge of a newly created Department of Space Medicine.

Several Air Force officers complained angrily about Strughold's employment at Randolph. General Harry Armstrong, who was commandant of the school, admitted that he protected Strughold by appointing himself director of the new space medicine laboratory. "If it came down to a fight, I wanted to take the brunt of it," Armstrong said. "I thought if there was any adverse reaction it should fall on me and not on Dr. Strughold. "42

Strughold also spent considerable time in Germany recruiting other German scientists to work for the Air Force under Paperclip. His colleague and friend Siegfried Ruff was once again recruited and the Air Force planned to bring him to America. The plan was squelched, however, after reporter Drew Pearson uncovered it and threatened to tell President Truman. Colonel Benford is still angry that the scheme to bring his "friend" Ruff to America failed. In his view, "the Air Force lost a great man."43

The Air Force did hire Schaefer, and when he arrived in San Antonio in 1950 he was touted as "the leading German authority on thirst and desalinization of seawater." No one, including JIOA Director Colonel Daniel Ellis, cared that he had been a Nuremberg defendant. Schaefer admitted on his entry papers that he had been arrested and tried at Nuremberg. Despite that admission, Ellis recommended his immigration and told the State Department that the JIOA had investigated Schaefer's background and found "nothing in his records indicating that he was a war criminal or an ardent Nazi, or is otherwise objectionable for admission into the United States as an immigrant."44

Nevertheless, it was not long before the Air Force repatriated Schaefer to Germany. After choosing to ignore his past, Air Force officers then raised questions about his competency. They said Schaefer had been assigned to three different departments at Randolph Field in a little over a year and had produced no finished work at any of them. Air Force Captain Seymour Schwartz told the director of intelligence that Schaefer had "displayed very little real scientific acumen" and recommended that he be returned to Germany. "The experience of this Headquarters indicates that this man is a most ineffective research worker and on the basis of his performance here his future worth to the U.S. Armed Forces is nil," said Schwartz. He also recommended that Schaefer not be placed on any future JIOA hiring lists, since "it is doubtful if he will be of interest to anyone. "45

In 1949, Nuremberg prosecutor Telford Taylor submitted his *Final Report to the Secretary of the Army*, which outlined what had been accomplished by the Nuremberg trials. He felt that one significant accomplishment was that there was now a public record of the Nazis' crimes and of the United States' prosecution of the perpetrators. In the aftermath of Nazi Germany's defeat, the victors bore sole responsibility for stating the principles that should be followed regarding crimes "so calculated, so malignant, and so devastating that civilization cannot tolerate their being ignored because it cannot survive their being repeated." The Nuremberg trial records provided an unprecedented reminder of those principles. Taylor therefore strongly recommended that those records be published, so that future generations would know the terrible secrets of the men who sat in the dock at Nuremberg. But it would be years before all of the volumes of the twelve trials were printed.46

Around the same time, the Department of the Air Force expanded the Paperclip coverup when it proudly published translations of the Germans' wartime research in two volumes as *German Aviation Medicine: World War II.* In these books, the Air Force not only ignored the lessons of Nuremberg but embraced what the Nazis had done.[47]

The collection's introduction, alleged to be "a comprehensive and detailed picture" of the history of German aviation medicine, was written by Becker-Freyseng while imprisoned at Nuremberg for Nazi war crimes. It glorified the Nazis and boldly put forth their lies as fact. Hippke and convicted Nazi war criminal Schroeder were portrayed as heroic men who "showed great scientific understanding, interest, sincere helpfulness, and personal concern in aeromedical research." The Luftwaffe's aeromedical institutes, which employed so many men, including Rascher and Ruff, who conducted experiments in the camps, suddenly became honorable institutions renowned for maintaining their "free and academic character" in Hitler's Third Reich. Regarding decompression chambers, other than accidents involving two physicians, "neither technical accidents nor permanent

injuries . . . occurred in any of the chambers." Dachau prisoners murdered in the chamber were conveniently forgotten in the Air Force's revisionist history of Nazi science.48

The volumes contained heavily censored versions of the Nazi scientists' work. There was no mention that the authors of two chapters, Becker-Freyseng and Schroeder, were convicted Nazi war criminals whose research had involved cold-blooded murder. No reference was made to Ruff and Schaefer having been Nuremberg defendants. No information was revealed that would in any way raise suspicions about Strughold or others whom the Air Force now praised as great scientists.49

Their secret was safe.

---

1. Robert J. Benford, *Report From Heidelberg* (Heidelberg, Germany: 1947). The administrative records of the AAF Aero Medical Center never have surfaced. Some original reports by German scientists that were trans lated at the center are located at the WNRC. Monthly status reports of research conducted at the center and lists of the center's Paperclip employees, including Ruff, Schaefer, and Becker-Freyseng, are in the appendix of documents attached to *AAF Participation in Project Paperclip.* The history's narrative never mentions the employees tried at Nuremberg.

2. Biography of Hubertus Strughold is in the Strughold JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

3. *AAF Participation in Project Paperclip.*

4. Konrad Schaefer biography: in the Schaefer JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS. The research paper "Durst and Durstbekampfung in Seenotfallen" that Schaefer delivered to the 1942 Nuremberg conference is found in Nuremberg doc. NO-401.

5. Ruff biography is in *Brandt;* Ruff and Strughold's publications are listed in the Strughold JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

6. CNN West Germany News Bureau telephone interview with Siegfried Ruff, for author's "Nazi Coverup" series on CNN. RufPs work at the AAF Center: AAF Aero Medical Center, "Monthly Status Report No. 6," 31 March 1946, in the appendix of *AAF Participation in Project Paperclip.*

7. Becker-Freyseng biography: from *Brandt.* His work at the AAF Center: in "Monthly Status Report" in the appendix of *AAF Participation in Project Paperclip.*

8. Karl Hcellenrainer testimony, *Brandt,* transcript pp. 10229-34 and 10508-44.

9. *Brandt,* NO-177, prosecution exhibit 133.

10. Ibid.; *Brandt,* NO-184, prosecution exhibit 132; and interrogation of Konrad Schaefer, M1019, RG 238, NARS.

11. Brandt, NO-185, prosecution exhibit 134. Becker-Freyseng admitted on the witpess stand that he was the author of the letter signed by Schrceder; Hilberg, *Destruction of the European ~ews.*

12. Hoellenrainer testimony, in *Brandt.*

13. Ibid.

14. Ibid.

15. Ibid.

16. *Brandt,* PS-1602, prosecution exhibit 44.

17. Weltz testimony, transcript p. 7188; NO-476, prosecution exhibit 40; NO-437, prosecution exhibit 42; NO-263, prosecution exhibit 47; and transcript pp. 6550 and 7199-a11 in *Brandt.*

18. Affidavit of Dr. Pacholegg, *Brandt,* transcript p. 15348.

19. Brandt, NO-220, prosecution exhibit 61.

20. *Brandt,* NO-402, prosecution exhibit 66.

21. Author telephone interview with Robert Benford. Benford considers Ruff to be his "close friend" and says he still is angry with Drew Pearson (and reporters in general) for keeping Ruff out of the United States. For documentation of requests to employ Schaefer, Ruff, and Becker-Freyseng see Brigadier General Norris B. Harbold to Director of Intelligence, WDGS, 2 June 1946; and Harbold to Director of Intelligence, 14 June 1946-both in JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

22. Benford interview; and Army CIC arrest warrants, Nuremberg defendant case files, RG 238, NARS.

23. Author interview with Theodor Benzinger; interrogation of Theodor Benzinger, 20 September 1946, M1019, RG 238, NARS; and *Brandt,* NO-224, NO-401, and prosecution exhibit 76.

24. "Sworn Statement of Theodor Hannes Benzinger," U.S. Department of Justice, Office of Special Investigations, 22 November 1983 (given to the author by Benzinger). The best source of information on Benzinger's Paperclip activities is the Theodor Benzinger INSCOM dossier XE073663; see also the Benzinger JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

25. Interrogation of Hermann Becker-Freyseng, 24 September 1946, M1019, RG 238, NARS.

26. Ibid.

27. Prosecution's opening statement, *Brandt,* transcript pp. 12-24. For a published account of the Nuremberg trials that is valuable for atmospheric details see Victor Bernstein, *Final ,~udgment* (London: Latimer House, 1947). Bernstein's news stories in PM also contain information not found elsewhere, particularly regarding the American liberation of Dachau, Nordhausen, and other camps where he was on the front line with combat troops. See also-Alexander Mitscherlich and Fred Mielke, *Doctors of Infamy* (New York: Henry Schuman, 1949).

28. *Brandt.* 29. Ibid.

30. Taylor, *Final Report, pp.* 300-304; Hilberg, *Destruction of the European Jews.*

31. Beiglbceck testimony, in *Brandt,* 8978.

32. Final Pleas, *Brandt,* roll 37-38. 33. Hoellenrainer testimony, *Brandt.* 34. Ibid.

35. Ibid. 36. Ibid.

37. Ruff defense document book, exhibit 4; Schaefer defense document book, exhibit 1; Schroeder defense document book, exhibit 6-all in *Brandt,* roll 35.

38. Ruff defense document book, *Brandt,* exhibit 10, roll 35.

39. U.S. vs *Stanley,* 483 U.S. 669 (1987) (hereafter cited as *Stanley).*

40. *Brandt,* transcript pp. 11504-5.

41. Ruff testimony, *Brandt,* transcript p. 6558.

transcript pp. 8970, 8921, and

42. John Bullard and T. A. Glasgow oral history interview with Major General Harry Armstrong, April 1976, Brooks Air Force Base, MAX. 43. Benford interview.

44. Schaefer lists Nuremberg trial information in *Basic Personnel Record* and *Biographical and Professional Data* forms; and *Security Certificate From the ,~'IOA,* 28 April 1950, signed by JIOA Director Daniel Ellis, in the Konrad Schaefer JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

45. Captain Seymour Schwartz to Directorate of Intelligence, Headquarters USAF, 27 March 1951, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

46. Taylor, *Final Report.*

47. Department of the Air Force, *German Aviation Medicine: World War II,* 2 vols. (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1950).

48. Ibid., vol. 1, pp. 12-51. Becker-Freyseng is identified as the author of this chapter in an obscure reference on p. 51, noting that the chapter was based on material "meticulously compiled by the last chief of the aeromedical section [Becker-Freyseng] attached to the Chief des Sanitatswesens der Luftwaff [Schrceder]."

49. Ibid.

6 Escape from Justice

IN late 1947 numerous critics in Germany were charging that scientists had escaped denazification trials by fleeing to America under the auspices of Project Paperclip. Peenemunde Chief of Staff Herbert Axster and his wife Ilse were the focus of much of this criticism. Their former neighbors marched into the Public Safety Branch of the Office of Military Government U.S. (OMGUS), which enforced the denazification law in the U.S. zone of Germany. They were furious that the Axsters had escaped justice for mistreating foreign laborers during the war.1

JIOA Director Bosquet Wev had a serious problem with denazification, since the Axsters were not the only ones evading justice. Less than a handful of the 350 German specialists living in the United States had been through the process. New arrivals left Germany before their court cases were finalized. And none of the early Overcast group had been denazified, including Wernher von Braun and Theodor Zobel, who had been living in America for nearly two years.

At the same time, the director of intelligence of the European Command had a similar problem in Germany. U.S. Air Force General Robert L. Walsh was employing another group of Nazis who also had not been through the denazification process. Fifty-three SS officers and Abwehr intelligence agents were giving U.S. Army intelligence information about the USSR under a project code-named "Greenhouse." Now their work was over, but the men were unable to obtain regular jobs in Germany because they had not been cleared by denazification courts.2

The solution to both groups' problems provides an example of how Paperclip was used as a guide by other U.S. intelligence agencies employing Nazis. As a result, both the JIOA and EUCOM circumvented the law and helped accused criminals escape justice.

Denazification was supposed to help democratize the German population. Under U.S. denazification law, every German over the age of eighteen was required to disclose his or her wartime Nazi affiliations on a *Fragebogen,* or questionnaire. These forms were then submitted to a denazification court *(Spruchkammer)* for review. The law categorized individuals according to their Nazi activities. These categories ranged from Class I "major offenders," which included war criminals, to Class V, made up of persons who either actively resisted national socialism or showed a passive attitude toward Hitler's policies. Penalties ranged from imprisonment to small fines. Under the law, persons judged to be ardent Nazis were forbidden to work or hold public office in Germany. As noted earlier, Paperclip policy barred war criminals and Class II "offenders" from U.S. entry.[3]

Despite the law, denazification proved difficult, if not impossible, to execute. OMGUS status reports filed in 1947 noted some of the problems encountered by Public Safety Branch officers in Germany. OMGUS was understaffed, underfunded, and overwhelmed with work, since they had to distribute questionnaires to over twelve million people. German denazification officials, who were supposed to be anti-Nazis, were accused of accepting bribes and threatening prosecution witnesses. One report noted that falsification of questionnaires was "flourishing." And despite American policies designed to eliminate nazism, the Germans blamed Jews for the Allies' policies and anti-Semitism was rampant, particularly in the schools. For example, a speaker at the Munich Institute of Technology was forced to cancel a lecture after students stomped their feet at the mere mention of Albert Einstein's name.[4]

General Lucius Clay was the man ultimately responsible for enforcing the denazification law. He was the military governor of the U.S. zone in Germany and served as commander in chief of EUCOM and head of OMGUS. His views on denazification were far different from those of the intelligence officers involved with Paperclip. He was a hard-liner when it came to America's attempt to "denazify" the entire German population and make them believers in democracy. "Our job, as I see it, is to see that only the right type of Germans are permitted to take leadership until democratic processes become a habit," Clay said.5

Clay strongly believed that all Germans, scientists included, needed denazifying. Once he fired a scientific adviser who insisted that German scientists were not Nazis, an attitude that caused extreme

friction in OMGUS. Clay complained bitterly to Assistant Secretary of State John Hilldring that the scientific adviser "blamed Public Safety Branch severely for treating scientists as Nazis, even though the record is clear." That record included the Dachau experiments conducted by scientists who were tried for murder in the Nuremberg Medical Case.6

Clay was getting criticism from both sides over how OMGUS was handling the denazification of Paperclip recruits. On the one hand, *The New York Times* charged that Paperclip provided an escape route whereby ardent Nazis evaded the denazification process altogether. American officials in Europe generally absolved Clay of the blame. But critics told *The Times* that many of Clay's subordinates "do not know what makes a Nazi or do not care so long as the German has good table manners, speaks good English and is efficient in the job assigned to him. "7

On the other hand, military officers who recruited scientists for Paperclip in Germany were angry that U.S. enforcement of denazification-stiffer than in the other three zones of Germany-hindered their recruiting efforts. Many Germans refused to sign Paperclip contracts because they were afraid that if they went to America prior to denazification, they risked being categorized as unemployable if they returned to Germany. Furthermore, competition was fierce, since the United States, Great Britain, France, and the USSR were all competing for the same men. The British offered the Germans a variety of places they could go, including Canada, Australia, and Pakistan. The French offered higher pay. And, as one American officer noted, the Soviets offered *everyone* contracts, even Germans whose names were on automatic arrest lists.[8]

In this atmosphere JIOA officers were trying to solve two types of problem cases under Paperclip. The first group consisted of specialists like Axster and Arthur Rudolph who had arrived in the United States before their denazification process even began. JIOA Governing Committee members suggested that General Clay handle these cases by trying the scientists in absentia. The scientists' *Fragebogen* would be submitted to a court in Germany, while the scientists stayed in America. JIOA Director Wev was afraid that pro-Communists might interrogate the scientists in court about their work in America if the group was returned to Germany.[9]

But Clay's decision on the matter went ever further than Wev's idea. He decided to forego trials of any sort for Paperclip recruits. Clay noted that trials in absentia were not permitted even in cases of Nazis located in Germany. Special treatment like that would only draw attention to the project and indicate to the German people that special procedures would be used if American interests were involved. "It would be much better to permit them to remain in the U.S. as Nazis without bringing them to trial than to establish special procedures not now within the purview of the German law," Clay concluded.10

Nevertheless, Clay's policy did in fact establish special procedures for the group. As one OMGUS official noted, "we are, for the first time, removing a group of Germans from normal denazificiation process." Paperclip policy already required U.S. agencies to conduct background investigations of the scientists' Nazi pasts. Clay thought those investigations would exclude ardent Nazis from the group. But as noted earlier, the JIOA "screeners" had turned those investigations into a farce.11

In the second type of cases, the JIOA officers brazenly flaunted the law. This group involved scientists whose denazification process had begun prior to their U.S. entry. First, JIOA Director Wev asked Clay's personal advisor, Dr. Walter Dorn, to expedite their trials. Dorn was against the scheme because it contravened normal procedures. But the Public Safety Branch did not think the request was unusual. "Assigning of priority of trials of individuals has been frequently carried out in the past so that it is almost routine," Public Safety Branch officer G. F. Corrigan said.12

Perhaps expediting trials in special cases had become routine, as Corrigan said. What was not routine, however, was that once courts judged some of the scientists as ardent Nazis, the Germans quickly left for America while U.S. intelligence officers in Europe intervened in the court decisions.

One case involved Hans Zeigler, chief scientist for the U.S. Army Signal Corps in Fort Monmouth, New Jersey. Zeigler had been a dues-paying member of the Nazi party and five other organizations and a candidate for membership in the SA. Denazification court officials accused him of falsifying information on his *Fragebogen.* But Zeigler left for the United States and never appeared at a scheduled hearing. When asked about his case, Zeigler stated in a sworn affidavit that Army CIC

agents had obtained an "exemption" for him from the denazification law. One OMGUS officer, Captain Jack James, explained that dubious excuse in a report on Zeigler's denazification status: "The Subject never came to trial because of the interference of certain persons in Munich. The subsequent qualifications of Dr. Zeigler for Project Paperclip seemed to terminate all further actions in the denazification."13

Another case involved Rudolf Thauer, a medical specialist on the effect of heat on pilots during flight, who worked for the Navy Air Materiel Center in Philadelphia. During the war, Thauer had worked at the Institute for Animal Physiology in Frankfurt. A denazification court originally had judged him to be a Class II "offender" because of his membership in the Nazi party, the SS, the SA, and five other Nazi organizations. As a result Thauer should have been barred from employment under the project. Instead the court decision was changed and Thauer was reclassified as a mere Class IV "follower" after the court received twenty-one "trustworthy" statements from "well known personalities" in Thauer's behalf. Thereafter Thauer stopped mentioning his SS membership on Paperclip forms.14

But SS membership was not the only problem with Thauer's Nazi past. In October 1942 Thauer, along with more than a dozen other Paperclip specialists, had attended a scientific conference in Nuremberg at which Professor Holzlohner openly discussed the freezing experiments he was conducting on Dachau prisoners. At the very least, JIOA officers or the Navy should have confronted Thauer and asked him what else he had learned about the Dachau experiments at the conference. The officers also should have confronted the other Paperclip scientists in attendance, including Hubertus Strughold and three of his associates, Hans Clamann, Konrad Schaefer, and Konrad Buettner, a speaker at the Nuremberg conference.15

Colonel Putt actively fought to get his specialists cleared of charges, and he was backed by Air Force Headquarters. The Germans' technical expertise was considered even more important after the birth of the U.S. Air Force in September 1947. Putt brought many new recruits to the air base in Dayton, Ohio, which was renamed Wright-Patterson Air Force Base. When a *Spruchkammer* imposed a fine on Ernst Sielaff, Putt asked the court to postpone the proceedings until Sielaff returned to Germany-which, of course, he never did. Putt got Winnibald Kamm's case postponed as well. Kamm had been dismissed from his faculty position in Germany as a result of denazification judgments that he was an ardent Nazi. Like Sielaff, Kamm never returned to Germany.16

Putt even turned down one scientist's request for permission to return to Germany voluntarily to clear his name. Radiation specialist Heinz Fischer had signed a six-month contract and wanted to return to Germany to settle his denazification. But Putt was afraid that Fischer would not return, since the scientist had told him he was unhappy at Wright-Patterson because opportunities for new research assignments were limited. The colonel denied Fischer's request and Air Force Headquarters backed him up.17

Even the most blatant Nazis in Putt's group slipped through the net. Emil Salmon, a jet engineer, signed a Paperclip contract on June 2, 1947. One month later he was convicted by a denazification court of helping the SS torch a synagogue and participating in an SA assault unit assigned to squelch an antiNazi revolt. The court sentenced him to six months of hard labor. Police reports had noted that Salmon, a troop leader in the SA, was a "good" Nazi who frequently wore his SA uniform and took his rifle to work. Witnesses said that Salmon had bragged to co-workers about the torching incident the next day. "There, we have done a proper job," Salmon reportedly had told them. He had said he did feel sorry for the Jewish women who were forced to flee the synagogue as it burst into flames.18
Two days after Salmon's conviction Paperclip officers shipped him to America, where he went to work for Putt at Wright-Patterson. Neither the Air Force nor JIOA officers cared about Salmon's offenses or that he had escaped imprisonment due to his Air Force contract. They were only worried that State or Justice Department officials might turn Salmon down for immigration to the United States, since Class II Nazis were barred from employment under Paperclip. Putt had Salmon sign a statement claiming that his SA activities had involved only "athletics and sports." The police reports detailing the synagogue torching, court records, and Salmon's *Fragebogen* were ignored.19

JIOA officers hid Salmon's dossier from State and Justice Department officials for three years because they were afraid that Salmon would be denied a visa as a result of his Class II status. JIOA officers finally settled the problem in 1950 when they told the Intelligence Division at EUCOM to change Salmon's court decision. A short time later Salmon was reclassified as a mere Class IV "follower." Air Force Headquarters admitted that the military was "cognizant of Mr. Salmon's Nazi activities and certain allegations made by some of his associates in Europe, but desires his immigration in spite of this."20

Meanwhile, EUCOM Director of Intelligence Robert Walsh had been observing the Paperclip process and decided to copy the JIOA's methods to help the Project Greenhouse group. Prior to this book, Walsh's significant involvement in Paperclip has not been exposed. The fifty-three-year-old general's wartime assignments had given him firsthand experience with Soviet operations. He had been commanding general of the U.S. Strategic Air Forces in the USSR and air member of the U.S. Military Mission to Moscow. Now, as director of intelligence at EUCOM, Walsh made decisions that directly involved Nazis employed by U.S. Army intelligence in Europe as well as the Paperclip group.21

Fifty-three individuals in Greenhouse worked at the EUCOM Intelligence Center in Oberusel. This was a high-level POW interrogation center, commonly known as Camp King, where Reinhard Gehlen's Nazi intelligence organization was reactivated by the CIA. Klaus Barbie was among the more notorious individuals who passed through the camp. The Greenhouse group wrote reports and gave Army intelligence agents information about Soviet military tactics and the Soviet intelligence service.22

"At the time, we desperately needed intelligence information on the Russians," recalled former Army CIC agent Albert Losche, who ran operations using other types of Germans for intelligence purposes. "We thought there was going to be a Russian army invasion of the U.S. zone and the Germans were the only ones with good information on the Soviets."23

Most of the Greenhouse group had connections with Gehlen and all were knowledgeable about the USSR. For example, Herbert von Dirksen had been the German ambassador to Russia. Nazi historian Peter-Heinz Seraphim got his expertise on Eastern Europe by tracking the whereabouts of Jews in Poland and other areas in Eastern Europe. He had been brought to the United States for interrogation at Fort Hunt in 1945. Several other Greenhouse employees had served in the Waffen SS on the eastern front. Karl Herrnberger, for example, had been an officer in an SS battalion in Poland, Holland, Belgium, France, and Russia.24

Some men in the group had been Abwehr intelligence agents. Heinz Schmalschlaeger claimed he was the nephew of Abwehr chief Wilhelm Canaris, who was executed in connection with the July 20, 1944, plot on Hitler's life. Schmalschlaeger had been head of the Abwehr in Vienna and Poland. In 1941 he was named commander of Leitstelle III Ost, the center for tactical counterintelligence for the eastern front. Based in Warsaw, Schmalschlaeger had operated in Poland, Yugoslavia, Greece, and Hungary.25

Most of the Abwehr agents in Greenhouse were Russianborn citizens of Nazi Germany and had worked under Schmalschlaeger's command. Their fluency in Russian had made them valuable assets to Nazi Germany's intelligence service. Dietrich Abels, for example, had been in charge of a Leitstelle III Ost department that investigated the Soviet intelligence service. He had traveled along the entire eastern

front and made a detailed psychological study of Soviet intelligence agents from information obtained from captured Russian POWs. Another Abwehr agent, Georg Striedter, had interrogated Russian POWs and translated captured Russian documents.26

In 1945 U.S. intelligence agents had even gotten Gestapo officers released from internment camps so they could work on the Greenhouse project. One Gestapo officer, Fritz Fischer, had been judged an "offender" under the denazification law and was imprisoned at Dachau. Another Gestapo

officer, Franz Regnath, had been head of the criminal police in Munich until 1943, when he was transferred to Poland. At one point Regnath had run a unit that recruited spies to work for the Gestapo.[27]

Now they were about to be released from the project at Camp King, but they could not work in Germany because they had not been denazified. The men had not even turned in a *Fragebogen,* as required by American denazification law. On September 15, 1947, Walsh's executive officer, Major Thomas Grant, told the EUCOM Intelligence Division and the OMGUS Public Safety Branch that he wanted the Greenhouse group to be amnestied from the denazification proceedings. Walsh felt that the services they had rendered the United States were of such high value that a request for exemption under the law was justified.28

Intelligence officers were concerned about the denazification proceedings for the exact same reasons that the JIOA was concerned about Paperclip. Colonel W. L. Fagg, the executive officer in the Intelligence Division who also worked with Paperclip, agreed with Walsh's proposal and noted the division's concerns. If the Greenhouse group appeared before denazification courts, they might be forced to reveal the work they had done for U.S. intelligence. If any pro-Communists were on the courts, they might compromise U.S. intelligence activities or give the group harsher sentences because of their employment.2[9]

But Public Safety Branch chief Theo Hall objected to the amnesty proposal. He felt that an outright pardon would create a security hazard rather than protect information about U.S. intelligence activities. Germans on the courts certainly would speculate as to why they were being asked to pardon the group in the first place. Hall suggested they use Paperclip as the model for handling the cases. The denazification cases would proceed normally through the courts but would be "carefully watched." If any individuals were fined or given jail sentences, either the court decisions could be modified or the individuals could be amnestied.[3o]

Hall sent his suggestions to Walsh and explained why he thought the procedure would work. "A procedure similiar to that outlined above has been applied with success in the cases of persons desired in connection with Operation Paperclip and other persons who had been employed on highly classified projects," he said. On November *20, 1947,* Walsh approved the recommendation and told the Public Safety Branch to take action on the Greenhouse cases.[3']

The resulting legal action was a charade. Only a few individuals were even fined, and those cases were cleared upon appeal. Johannes Hoheisel originally was given three years' probation and fined DM *5,000* for his wartime Nazi activities. His case was immediately appealed with a change of venue to Frankfurt, where OMGUS officials watched over tlie proceedings. The Frankfurt court vacated the original decision and Hoheisel was cleared.[32]

SS officer Herrnberger was first jailed for falsifying papers he had submitted to the denazification court. During a hearing, he claimed he did not know about his SS membership. He had no idea how his signature got on the forms in his SS file from the Berlin Document Center. He merely had been a Wehrmacht soldier during the war. The court cleared him and issued no sanctions whatsoever. Herrnberger then obtained a position as chief of police in Garmisch.33

Other SS officers in Greenhouse received amnesty. Fritz Fischer's status suddenly plummeted from being an "offender" and jailed, to complete amnesty in 1948. Willi Fuellgraf's case was completely suspended. Fuellgraf had been an officer in the Waffen SS, a Hitler Youth leader, and a longtime member of the Nazi _party. Former Gestapo officer Regnath also was exonerated.[34]

In addition, the favors extended to the Greenhouse group included more than merely taking care of their denazification. Former Abwehr agent Schmalschlaeger had been ordered evicted from his apartment to make room for homeless Jewish survivors of the Holocaust. German authorities cited an earlier Supreme Headquarters Allied Expeditionary Force (SHAEF) ruling that gave displaced persons priority in housing as the reason for the eviction. Intelligence officers quickly intervened, stopped the eviction order, and the Schmalschlaeger family remained in the apartment. According to Army intelligence files, in the *1950s* Schmalschlaeger headed the Nuremberg branch of West Germany's intelligence service, which was run by Gehlen.[35]

Meanwhile in Washington, congressmen were listening to testimony that eight hundred Waffen SS officers and other incriminated individuals had entered the United States disguised as political refugees. "The American authorities have not, in fact, made any attempt even of a superficial nature, to check on the identity of these political refugees," one critic charged. "They have, as a matter of record, released collaborationist murderers who have been recognized as such by survivors."[36]

But the congressmen were more worried about Communists than they were about Nazis. By 1948 the whole U.S. denazification system crumbled, and war crimes trials soon met the same fate. Clay had been under constant pressure from rightwing congressmen to shut down the trials. The House Appropriations Committee was the most vocal congressional entity on this score, and it threatened to cut off Clay's funds. Clay was a realist in choosing between forces on the political Right or Left in Congress. "Between the two I have to choose the strong-the Right on whom our Congressional appropriations depend," he said.[37]

First Clay announced that the trials would cease by the end of 1948. Then both the United States and Great Britain decided they would no longer accept war crimes evidence or extradition orders against suspects after November 1, 1947.[38]

The cold war had begun.

---

1. Complaints against the Axsters are in the Herbert Axster JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARs.

2. List of names, denazification information, and correspondence on Greenhouse are located in: records of U.S. Occupation Headquarters, OMGUS Civil Affairs Division, Public Safety Branch, RG 260, WNRC (hereafter cited as Greenhouse files).

3. Denazification law: in OMGUS booklet, "Military Government Regulations: Title 24 Important German Legislation," 22 April 1946, JIOA administration files, RG 330, NARS.

4. Lieutenant Colonel Clarence Howe, "Semi-Monthly Trend Report," report to the Deputy Director of Intelligence, 20 August 1947, RG 319, WNRC.

5. James F. Tent, *Mission on the Rhine* (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1982); and Lucius Clay, *Decision in Germany* (Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday, 1950).

6. Ibid.

7. Delbert Clark, "Nazis Sent to U.S. as Technicians," *The New York Times*, 4 January 1947.

8. For problems recruiting see Lieutenant Colonel Edward Sheley, Assistant Chief of Air Staff-2 to CPM Branch MIS, 16 May 1946, G-2 "Top Secret" Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

9. Commander C. R. Welte, "July Report, Exploitation Division," memo to the JIOA director, 5 August 1947, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

10. General Lucius Clay to AGWAR, cable CC-1671, 20 September 1947, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

11. OMGUS, IA and C Division, to Chief of Staff, "Political Clearance of German Scientists Presently in the U.S.," and supporting documents, August 1947, OMGUS Civil Affairs Division, RG 260, WNRC. Stephen S. Wise to Secretary of War Robert Patterson, 14 April 1947, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

12. OMGUS, IA and C Division, to Chief of Staff, "Denazification of Scientists Desired for Operation Paperclip," and supporting documents, 6 February 1945, OMGUS AG files, RG 260, WNRC.

13. Hans Zeigler's Nazi membership information is in Berlin Document Center reports and *Meldebogen;* a sworn statement by Hans Zeigler dated 28 October 1947; and Captain Jack James, "Report on Denazification Pro cedure," memo to the Office of Military Government of Bavaria, 13 April 1946-a11 in the Hans Zeigler JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

14. Rudolf Thauer's Nazi membership information, his and his denazification court information are in the Thauer G-2 319, WNRC.

15. Nuremberg doc. NO-401.

16. On Kamm see memo, Colonel L. Williams, Acting Chief, Intelligence Group, to Commander in Chief, EUCOM, 11 June 1947. On Sielaff see Colonel Laurin L. Williams, "Subject: Denazification of Ernst Sielaff," memo to the chief of Navy intelligence, 29 July 1947. Both are in the G-2 Paperclip files, 400.112 Research, RG 319, WNRC.

17. Letter, Dr. Heinz Fischer to Colonel Donald Putt, 25 June 1946; memo, Colonel Harold Watson to Commanding General, AAF,13 July 1946; and memo, Lieutenant Colonel Monroe Hagood to Assistant Chief of Air Staff-2, 22 July 1946-all in JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

18. Denazification court decision, 12 August 1947, and police and witness reports are in the Emil Salmon JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

19. See memo, Air Materiel Command to Director of Air Force Intelligence, 28 April 1950, asking JIOA to reopen the case to secure a new sentence "sufficiently mitigated" to allow Salmon's immigration, in the Salmon JIOA dossier, RG

330, NARS.

20. OMGUS *Security Report,* 19 April 1949; and memo, Colonel Daniel Ellis to Director, Intelligence Division, 11 May 1950-both in the Emil Salmon JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

Fragebogen, dossier, RG

21. Major General Robert L. Walsh biography: from U.S. Air Force.

22. Information on individuals is in the Greenhouse files.

23. Author interview with Albert Losche.

24. General background: in Greenhouse files; and Army CIC agent B. C. Harness, "Personality Report," 3 January 1949, in Karl Herrnberger INSCOM dossier XE253550.

25. Heinz Schmalschlaeger background: in Army CIC report, 1 March 1956, in Schmalschlaeger INSCOM dossier F8085185.

26. Background of Abels and Striedter: in Arnold Silver, CI Section, "Information on Greenhouse Personnel Needed for Denazification," memo to the Office of the Deputy Director of Intelligence, EUCOM, 27 August 1947, in the Greenhouse files.

27. Fischer's status: G. F. Corrigan, Denazification Analyst, "Status of Denazification Cases of German Nationals of Interest to Intelligence Agencies," memo to Theo Hall, Chief, Public Safety Branch, 27 April 1948, in the Greenhouse files. Regnath background is in "Interrogation of Franz Regnath," Headquarters, Third Army, Interrogation Center report, M 1019, NARS.

28. Major Thomas Grant, ODI, EUCOM, "Request for Amnesty From Denazification for Certain German Nationals," memo to Colonel W. L. Fagg, Office of the Deputy Director of Intelligence, EUCOM, and Theo E. Hall, 13 October 1947, in the Greenhouse files.

29. Colonel W. L. Fagg to ODI, EUCOM, 7 November 1947, Greenhouse files.

30. Theo Hall, OMGUS, Public Safety Branch, to ODI, EUCOM, 13 October 1947, Greenhouse files.

31. Ibid.; Major General Robert Walsh to Public Safety Branch, 20 November 1947, Greenhouse files.

32. Albert Schweizer, Civil Administration Division, "Denazification of German Nationals Formerly Employed on Intelligence Project," memo to OMGUS, 1 June 1948, Greenhouse files.

33. "Personality Report," Army CIC agent B. C. Harness, 3 January 1949, in Herrnberger's INSCOM dossier.

34. Robert Bruce, OMGUS, "Denazification of German National Formerly Employed on Intelligence Project," memo to the Office of the Military Governor, 6 May 1948, Greenhouse files.

35. Eviction order: see memo, Peter Vacca, OMGUS, to Office of the Director of Intelligence, OMGUS, 2 April 1947, Heinz Schmalschlaeger INSCOM dossier.

36. House hearings "On the Need for Screening Displaced Persons for Entry Into the U.S." 80th Cong., 2d sess., August 2, 5, and 6, 1948.

37. Petersen, *American Occupation.*

38. OMGUS to Chief of Staff, cable CC-2102, October 1947, ODI, OMGUS, RG 260, WNRC.

7 The Dossiers

WHEN State Department representative Samuel Klaus entered the room, he immediately sensed that the military officers were about to gang up on him. For a long time Klaus had had the feeling that the men on the JIOA Governing Committee were laying plans in his absence. Now it seemed to him that one of those schemes was about to be hatched.1

He was the odd man out among those sitting around the table at the Pentagon. Nearly all members of the JIOA and G-2 Exploitation Branch were there: JIOA Governing Committee chairman Bosquet Wev; JIOA Director Colonel Thomas Ford; G-2's Exploitation Branch chief Montie Cone and his superior, Lieutenant Colonel H. B. St. Clair; JIOA member Francis Duborg; and a few men Klaus had not met before.

The purpose of this February 27, 1947, meeting was ostensibly to obtain Klaus's stamp of approval on a list of Germans the JIOA wanted to move through the pipeline. Over the past year Klaus had asked Ford repeatedly to give him names of all Paperclip scientists living in America, but Ford had refused. Klaus also had been unable to obtain a list of Germans on order. Even Assistant Secretary of State Hilldring had complained to the assistant secretary of war about the runaround they were giving Hilldring.2

Now a list was lying on the meeting-room table, but Ford was deliberately hiding it from Klaus's view. Ford then demanded that Klaus sign a waiver giving entry visas to the Germans on a list he was not even allowed to see. "I told him that of course I could do no such thing and that certification presupposed that the Department should have an opportunity to pass judgement of some kind before affixing its signature," Klaus later angrily noted in a memo.[3]

Ford told him that the list was classified and the State Department was not entitled to see it. Then Ford issued an ultimatum along with a McCarthyite threat. "Ford stated in various ways that if I did not accept the paper on behalf of the State Department he would give the information to several senators who would take care of the Department," Klaus wrote.[4]

The JIOA had a good reason for wanting to keep the lists secret, and it had nothing to do with classified information. At the time of the meeting, Wev and Cone were sitting on a powder keg. They had just received 146 investigative reports from Europe and nearly all of them were derogatory. They knew that the Germans' Nazi backgrounds violated the policy that Truman had signed. The *OMGUS Security Report* on the scientists disclosed allegations that Zobel and others had participated in experiments on humans, the Axsters had mistreated foreign laborers, Salmon had torched a synagogue, and SS member Debus had turned a colleague over to the Gestapo. Other men were accused of various crimes including theft and sexual perversion. Many had been early members of the Nazi party, the SS, or the SA.5

Wernher von Braun's report had been one of the first to arrive. The *OMGUS Security Report* noted that von Braun was considered an ardent Nazi and a security threat to the United States. His records indicated that he had been a major in the SS-having joined the SS at the personal behest of SS chief Himmler in 1940-a student at an SS riding school, and a Nazi party member since 1937. The JIOA had sent his report back to Germany and asked U.S. intelligence officers there to verify von Braun's political background and report any extenuating circumstances surrounding his SS membership.6

Klaus had not seen the reports, and since the JIOA withheld the complete list of names, he was unable to investigate the Germans on his own. The JIOA was supposed to give Klaus dossiers on the 334 Paperclip specialists living in the United States, who officially were considered enemy aliens under military custody. The *OMGUS Security Report* would be the key document in the dossiers, since it summarized the Army intelligence background investigations and judged whether or not an individual was an "ardent Nazi" and a security threat to the United States. Klaus already had received files on ten men who worked for Colonel Putt, but, unbeknownst to him, the files had been carefully

censored. The file that Klaus received on Albert Patin, for example, did not include his admission to having used five hundred Jewish women and other innocent people as slave laborers.7

Nevertheless, Klaus was suspicious of the JIOA's methods, and his concerns heightened after the meeting. First he learned that the JIOA had expunged information about his confrontation with Ford from the meeting minutes that were submitted to JIOA's superiors in the Joint Intelligence Committee. Then he learned that Georg Rickhey had been returned to Germany for trial in the Dora case. Klaus thought the Rickhey incident represented a serious security problem. "That the Department's security fears were not baseless was recently demonstrated when a war criminal, wanted for war crimes of a bestial kind, was found here among these scientists, to be returned to Germany," he remarked.[8]

Animating the cabal of military officers who opposed Klaus was a mind-set that would not hesitate to lie, violate President Truman's policy, or smear reputations to achieve its ends. The intelligence officers subscribed to the cold war philosophy. As they saw it, deceiving and undercutting one stubborn State Department official were certainly among the almost limitless means justified by the grand goal of containing communism.

Such convictions tend to endure. To this day Colonel Cone defends the project and the officers' actions. "Perhaps some mistakes were made that weren't rectified. I'm not aware of any, but I am convinced that we advanced our own interest greatly by this program," Cone said recently. "From a military point of view, we knew that these people were invaluable to us. Just think what we have from their research-all our satellites, jet aircraft, rockets, almost everything else."[9]

Wev was outspoken and impatient with anyone who opposed his views of what was good for America. The Navy captain frequently used Director of Intelligence Chamberlin as a sounding board for memos that attacked his enemies so fiercely that Cone had to tell him several times to tone down his fiery rhetoric. While Wev admitted that Truman's policy banned ardent Nazis from Paperclip, he felt that State's emphasis on "picayune details" such as SS records was absurd. Communism, not nazism, was the problem. To Wev, being forced to investigate the Germans' Nazi pasts was comparable to "beating a dead Nazi horse."10

By July 1947, the JIOA and State were deadlocked in an angry battle over immigration. Wev sent Chamberlin a scathing memo accusing Klaus of "sabotaging" the immigration process. He emphasized that it was imperative that "the most positive and drastic action possible be taken in order to break the impasse which currently exists." Wev expressed his concern that returning the Germans to Europe, where they could be used by potential enemies, "presents a far greater security threat to this country than any former Nazi affiliations which they may have had or even any Nazi sympathies which they may still have."11

Then JIOA and G-2 began to play hardball against Klaus. Wev and Cone complained to right-wing congressmen that Klaus was impeding the entire German scientist program. Their complaints also were leaked to friendly reporters who smeared Klaus's name in the press. At the same time they were concealing allegations that some of the Paperclip specialists had been accused of complicity in murder and other war crimes.12

In July, Klaus recommended to his superiors that the State Department withdraw from the JIOA Governing Committee. He thought continued participation in JIOA was unwise because "we were being estopped by some of their activities over which we had no control." Klaus and the State Department already were being unfairly blamed in the press for refusing to give the scientists visas. "Apparently we were placed in JIOA solely because someone assumes that by this device permanent immigration visas would be issued . . . over the counter on demand," he said. "This is fundamentally unpleasant." Klaus recommended that State handle the project internally in its Office of Controls, which was responsible for the Visa Division, counterintelligence, and security.'[3]

Hamilton Robinson, State's director of the Office of Controls, was put in charge of the Paperclip problem. Robinson had been a law associate of John Foster Dulles when Dulles was the Republican foreign policy adviser, and a legal adviser to the State-War-Navy Coordinating Committee, which had originated Paperclip policy. He was also a carbon copy of Klaus in his suspicions of the military

officers. Robinson immediately sent five dossiers back to the JIOA and demanded that the officers give him more information about the specialists' Nazi pasts.14

The situation soon turned into a full-blown crisis for the JIOA. The entire Visa Department was upset over the dossiers they had seen thus far. Samuel Cummings was furious when he discovered discrepancies between what the specialists said about their Nazi pasts and actual Nazi records from the State Department-run Berlin Document Center. Another visa official, Rebecca Wellington, thought the military was lying and told the officers she took their statements about national security interests with "a grain of salt."15

State Department officials were not the only ones complaining about Paperclip. FBI Director Hoover constantly was reminding JIOA officers that he thought members of the Nazi party were security threats. And the FBI planned to conduct its own investigation of all Paperclip personnel.

The idea of a full-scale FBI investigation made the JIOA officers shudder. The FBI's own files already acknowledged that rocket technician Hans Giesecke had more to hide than just his SS membership. Members of Giesecke's family, who had lived in the U.S. during the war, had been under FBI investigation for Nazi espionage activities. The investigations were part of the FBI's massive wartime assault on the proNazi German-American Bund, which resulted in the prosecution and deportation of German-born Nazi Bund leader Fritz Kuhn and others. FBI agents had staked out, photographed, and investigated Giesecke's parents, who were active Bund members in Portland, Oregon, and his brother Oscar, a Bund leader in Chicago. One undercover agent had attended weekly pro-Nazi rallies held in a back room at Earle's Cafe in downtown Portland. Speakers included radical leaders of the Silver Shirts, who patterned themselves after the SA. The agent learned that Giesecke regularly sent his parents anti-Semitic Nazi pamphlets from Germany which were distributed at the Bund meetings in Portland.'[6]

It is important to remember that the American public was unaware of the scientists' sordid Nazi pasts. And Army public relations officials brazenly lied to them about it. For example, the Army's Intelligence Division had claimed that "no `big' Nazis" were employed under Paperclip. Furthermore, the military told the American public that it had followed Truman's policy and barred ardent Nazis from the project. The Army defined "ardent Nazis" as those who had joined the Nazi party before Hitler came into power in 1933, Nazi party leaders, those convicted by denazification courts, and those accused or convicted of war crimes.17

Despite the Army's propaganda, vocal critics of Paperclip nearly blew the lid off the JIOA's cover story that the scientists had all been "carefully screened." Cone still views these critics with disdain. "There were elements in the country that were violently opposed to Paperclip, and they could stir up quite a lot of trouble," Cone recalled. "We had real problems with them." Rabbi Wise stepped up his campaign to oust the Axsters from America. Members of the American Federation of Scientists (AFS) complained directly to President Truman that the Germans were not the eminent scientists the military claimed they were.'[8]

Reporter Drew Pearson repeatedly published stories raising disturbing questions about the military's false claim that it was following the rules. In one story that caused an uproar among high officials in Washington, Pearson reported that Carl Krauch, who had helped set up I. G. - Farben's factory at Auschwitz, had been recruited into Paperclip. At the time Krauch was sitting in a Nuremberg prison awaiting trial as a Nazi war criminal. Dwight Eisenhower, then chief of staff, ordered Director of Intelligence Chamberlin to give him a full report after he heard about Pearson's story. Chamberlin and Colonel Hagood gave Eisenhower a brief history of the project and Hagood assured the general that all of the Germans had been carefully screened.'[9]

The ideological battle lines were drawn between the intelligence officers and their critics. From then on, the fight was hard-and dirty. The officers gathered men of like mind to their side, held closed-door meetings with right-wing congressmen, and used the Army's enormous illegal domestic spy operation under Chamberlin's Military Intelligence Division (G-2) to spy on, investigate, and harass their critics.

G-2's operation was a powerful weapon that had been tooling up for Armageddon since the

1920s, when G-2 agents engaged in strikebreaking and ran private vigilante networks under Chamberlin's predecessor, World War I intelligence chief Colonel Ralph H. Van Deman. G-2 increased its domestic surveillance of American citizens during World War II, when its activities included bugging First Lady Eleanor Roosevelt's room in a Chicago hotel. This surveillance, which brazenly violated Americans' civil rights, continued nonstop for decades. G-2 agents engaged in countless unauthorized wiretaps, break-ins, and a spy operation that included a collection of eight million personal dossiers running the gamut from supporters of Senator Eugene McCarthy's presidential campaign to the Weathermen. The operation finally was exposed by a former intelligen~e agent in 1970 and shut down after a fouryear congressional probe.20

In the late 1940s reporters who wrote stories critical of Paperclip were among G-2's prime targets-especially Drew Pearson. "He was a real troublemaker," remarked Cone. Pearson's telephone was bugged and he was spied on and investigated for years.21

Another reporter became a target when his article in the *New Republic* incensed G-2 officers in Cone's Exploitation Branch. Seymour Nagan's story "Top Secret: Nazis at Work" questioned the rationale of congressmen who worried about Communists infiltrating defense plants when four hundred Nazis with top-secret clearances worked on sensitive defense projects throughout the country. Nagan's story noted that some sources were afraid to talk because of "fear of reprisals." But it was Nagan who became the focus of attention when Cone initiated an investigation of him the same day his story hit the newsstands. Cone told an agent that Nagan's story "may cause trouble" and that he should read it and find out what he could about the reporter. "DON'T ask PID nor FBI nor US Branch," Cone warned the officer, "see if elsewhere you can dig up something on him for a blueslip." The officer eventually managed to "dig up" Nagan's personal telephone number and home address.22

The American Federation of Scientists was another target. First, intelligence agents tried-and failed-to prove that the group was a Communist front. Then, agents posing as AFS members attended meetings to collect information about the group's activities. In one instance Edward Wetter, chief of the Intelligence Division's Chemical and Biological Warfare section, attended an AFS meeting in Philadelphia posing as a member. After the meeting, Wetter gave G-2 agents lists of names, notes of conversations, and other information about the group.23

The problem with the incriminating security reports, however, still had not been solved. JIOA officers knew they could not get the reports past State. JIOA Deputy Director Walter Rozamus sent Cone a copy of OMGUS's derogatory report on Adolf Thiel, summarized Thiel's Nazi past, and directed Cone's attention to the paragraph in Truman's policy "which indicates that active Nazis are not qualified under the Paperclip Program." Rozamus noted that Thiel's report described him as a security threat because of his long-time active membership in several Nazi groups. Thiel had joined the Hitler Youth at age seventeen, the SA at age eighteen, and the Nazi party when he was twenty-three.24

The solution was very simple. If State would not approve immigration due to derogatory OMGUS reports, the JIOA would change the reports to expunge derogatory information, in direct contravention of the president's policy. Furthermore, JIOA officers knew they could rely on their counterparts in Germany to help them do the job.

The Intelligence Division of the European Command ran Paperclip in Germany, under the directorship of Walsh, who was stationed in Berlin. The Paperclip office operated out of the Intelligence Division's headquarters in Heidelberg, under Deputy Director Colonel Robert Schow, who would become assistant director of the CIA in 1949 and assistant chief of staff for Intelligence in 1956. ACSI was the Army intelligence agency under which Cone's counterparts operated in the 1950s. Schow and his assistants, Colonel William Fagg and Colonel C. F. Fritzsche, signed many of the OMGUS *Security Report* forms. Some investigators were borrowed from OMGUS's Public Safety Branch, the denazification division. Military Governor Clay was commander in chief over both EUCOM and OMGUS.25

The plot to change the records was discussed during a JIOA Governing Committee meeting on November 14-a meeting that Klaus did not attend. Rozamus mentioned that many OMGUS reports

listed individuals as security threats with what appeared to be insufficient data. Cone said the reports needed to be changed. "Someone should be sent from here to Europe to fully inform them there as to just what is wanted," Cone told the group. In the meantime, the officers withheld from the State and Justice Departments dossiers that contained derogatory information.26

Four days after the meeting, Rozamus sent Cone the dossiers of seven individuals who were wanted for denazification trials because of their Nazi activities, warning: "It is not considered advisable to submit any of the enclosed dossiers to the Departments of State and Justice at this time." Wernher von Braun's dossier was one of those enclosed. Rozamus said that von Braun's *OMGUS Security Report* "indicates that he is regarded as a potential security threat to the United States and he will be wanted for denazification trial in view of his party membership. "[27]

Anton Beier's dossier also was withheld. Beier's SS records, which were over two inches thick, became such a hot item that G-2 classified the entire file "Top Secret." Beier had been in charge of assembling rocket testing stands at Peenemunde and now worked for the Army at Fort Bliss. His *OMGUS Security Report* noted that he "was an ardent Nazi and judging from the cap device on his SS uniform, was a member of the Death Head Division." He had been a platoon leader in the SS from 1933 until 1945. There was much consternation among the intelligence officers after they discovered that Beier's SS records from the Berlin Document Center included a photograph showing Beier decked out in full SS uniform.28

On November 28 Rozamus sent three more incriminating dossiers to Navy intelligence, quoted the paragraph in Truman's policy that barred ardent Nazis from the project, and said: "In view of this it is believed that there is little likelihood that the above scientists can be immigrated if the Theater Security Reports are forwarded to the State Department in their present form." Rozamus told the Navy that the JIOA intended to ask European Command to "reevaluate" the OMGUS reports to revise the ardent Nazi classification, "since such classification is a bar to immigration."[29]

The dossiers were those of Willi Heybey, Hermann Kurzweg, and Ernst Winkler, who worked on the Navy's wind tunnel project in White Oak, Maryland. Kurzweg, who had been chief of the wind tunnel project at Kochel, Germany, was judged by OMGUS to be an "ardent Nazi" because he had been a member of the SS Elite Guard from 1934 until the end of the war. Heybey had been a long-time member of the SA. Winkler had been a member of the SA from 1933 until 1939, the Nazi party, four other Nazi organizations, and the counterespionage branch of Abwehr intelligence.[30]

The same day that Rozamus returned those dossiers to the Navy, G-2's Cone told the JIOA that he recommended they ask the Intelligence Division in Europe to review and change the reports because they were having a negative effect on the scientists' immigration. Cone identified six individuals whom OMGUS classified as security threats and said that none were "politically active. "[31]

The list included former Mittelwerk V-2 rocket technicians Guenther Haukohl and Hans Friedrich. Haukohl was judged by OMGUS to be an "ardent Nazi" because he had been a member of the SS from 1933 to 1939, the SA, the Nazi party, and two other Nazi organizations. Friedrich had joined the Nazi party in 1932-a year before Hitler came into powerand actively participated in SA election propaganda and party processions. In 1947 Friedrich was still touting Hitler's leadership as a positive force in Nazi Germany. "The entire living standards of the people rose, unemployment disappeared and most men seemed to be happier," Friedrich said in a sworn affidavit. No one asked Dora survivors if they had been happy working as slave laborers under Friedrich and Haukohl in the underground hell known as Mittelwerk.32

The coverup began in earnest on December 4, 1947, when JIOA Director Wev sent a lengthy memo to EUCOM Director of Intelligence Walsh and asked that the OMGUS reports of fourteen individuals, including Wernher von Braun, "be reviewed and that new security reports be submitted where such action is deemed appropriate." Wev made it clear that there was "very little possibility" that the State or Justice Departments would approve the immigration of any individual who was classified as a potential or actual security threat. "This may result in the return to Germany of specialists whose skill and knowledge should be denied other nations in the interest of national security," Wev told Walsh.[33]

In his memo Wev repeated Cone's assertion that the OMGUS reports were "unrealistic," since none of the specialists had been politically active. The list included Friedrich and Haukohl, former SS platoon leader Beier, and Major Hamill's chief spy at Fort Bliss, Herbert Axster, who was accused of starving foreign laborers by OMGUS investigators. Theodor Benzinger, who had been arrested as a Nuremberg war crimes suspect and was now working for the Navy, was also on the list. Wev even noted references submitted in behalf of Werner Gengelbach that described him as "devoted to his family" and "always reliable and humane." Wev considered the statements to be evidence of Gengelbach's nominal Nazi status and asked that the report be revised to reflect them.34

One OMGUS officer was outraged at Wev's request and refused to become involved in the coverup. "This headquarters should not revise merely to circumvent the rules set forth by the State and Justice Departments," Robert Bruce told his superiors. Bruce refused to change the reports on Gengelbach and Adolf Thiel because OMGUS denazification officers believed that their early membership in the Nazi party and numerous other Nazi affiliations were evidence of considerable political incrimination that made them security threats.[35]

He also refused to change Heinrich Kliewe's incriminating security report, thereby unwittingly squelching a secret intelligence plot to lure Kliewe out of the French zone of Germany and send him to the United States under Paperclip. Kliewe had been chief sanitary officer of the Wehrmacht, in charge of human experimentation for Hitler's biological warfare program. In 1946 he was judged merely a "follower" of nazism and fined DM 2,000 by a denazification court on the basis of favorable statements made by alleged anti-Fascists in his behalf. But later, OMGUS Public Safety officers discovered that some of the statements were entirely false and actually had been made by Kliewe's close friends, who were well-known ardent Nazis. A retrial was ordered and a warrant was issued for Kliewe's arrest. Nuremberg prosecutors also wanted him detained as a witness in the Nuremberg medical atrocities case. But Kliewe escaped arrest by slipping over the French zone border, where he joined other biowarfare experts on the run.36

Bruce was furious that the JIOA planned to include Kliewe's falsified statements, which were attached to his *OMGUS Security Report,* as well as statements claiming that Gengelbach was "reliable and humane," in dossiers sent to the State and Justice Departments. "Even [the] highly incriminated can produce good evidence with extreme ease," Bruce complained. OMGUS investigators had learned that in addition to statements made in behalf of Kliewe and Gengelbach, two hundred others that were submitted in defense of Paperclip specialists also were authored by close friends and contained false or misleading information.[3]7

Nevertheless, the JIOA officers soon began to receive bundles of OMGUS security reports signed by Schow's executive officer in the Intelligence Division-all changed from "ardent Nazi" status to "not an ardent Nazi." Colonel Fagg and other intelligence officers had even signed most of the reports on the same day. The reports included numerous records of former SS members. Beier's twelve-year SS membership was excused by saying he was a mere "opportunist." Eckert, who had admitted attending SS meetings, was "not an ardent Nazi," according to the revised OMGUS report. Later, one officer involved in sanitizing the reports noticed glaring discrepancies between Friedrich Wazelt's report about his SS activities and the actual SS records, but he brushed it off and said, "I don't think it's worth checking on."[38]

Originally Wernher von Braun's September 18, 1947, report noted, "Subject is regarded as a potential security threat by the Military Governor." But five months later his new report said that sinEe von Braun had been in the United States more than two years, if his conduct had been exemplary, "he may not constitute a security threat to the U.S." No information was placed in his dossier about his withholding information from the Army concerning the maps he mailed to Dornberger in London.[39]

Axster's first *OMGUS Security Report* stated:"He shouldideologically speaking-be considered a potential security threat to the United States." Six months later Axster's report was changed, despite additional incriminating information that had been obtained by investigators in Europe regarding Axster's treatment of laborers. Nevertheless, Axster's revised report concluded: "Subject was not a

war criminal and was not an ardent Nazi. The record of Herbert Axster as an individual is reasonably clear and as such, it is believed that he constitutes no more of a security threat than do the other Germans who have come to the U.S. with clear records in entirety."[40]

Wilhelm Eitel, who had fled Berlin in 1945, worked for the Navy in a nuclear plant in Norris, Tennessee. His *OMGUS Security Report* originally had judged him to be an "ardent Nazi." Atomic Energy Commission security agents had expressed concern about Eitel's presence at the plant and his access to AEC workrooms. The Berlin police still had not closed the case of his wife's suicide. And Navy investigators had tracked down some of the Jewish scientists who had been fired from the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute in 1933 as a result of Eitel's compliance with Hitler's policies against Jews. One of those scientists had ended up in a concentration camp. Others told investigators that the famous chemist Fritz Haber had quit the KWI and fled to England rather than comply with the policies.[41]

Despite the incriminating evidence, Eitel's OMG US *Security Report* was changed to read that he was "not an ardent Nazi." During a meeting where Eitel's Nazi past was discussed, one Navy intelligence officer said, "it is admitted that while he was undoubtedly an adherent of Nazi ideology, even to the point of enthusiasm, it is felt that he is hardly the type of individual who would purposely and with malicious intent engage in activities to the extent attributed to him in statements" by the former KWI scientists. The officer concluded that the Navy considered Eitel to be a preeminent scientist and a valuable asset whose "previous political views appear to be of secondary importance at this time. "42

The effect of the coverup involved far more than merely whitewashing the information in the dossiers. Serious allegations of crimes not only were expunged from the records, but were never even investigated. Regarding the specialists at Wright-Patterson, allegations against Theodor Zobel and Ernst Eckert, and Albert Patin's own admission that he had utilized slave labor, were never investigated. Statements from their friends or colleagues were simply put into their files as evidence that they were not ardent Nazis. Furthermore, none of the dossiers of the Mittelwerk group at Fort Bliss contained a shred of evidence that *Andrae*-the Dora trial-had ever taken place. At the very least, Major Eugene Smith's interrogations were relevant documents that should have been scrutinized by the State and Justice Departments when considering whether an individual such as Arthur Rudolph should be given a visa and, later, U.S. citizenship.[43]

The coverup was almost perfect. But for it to succeed, the intelligence officers had to get rid of their opponents in State. The whitewashed dossiers never would pass the scrutiny of either Klaus or Robinson. Less than two months after Wev first told European officers to change the reports, the officers' right-wing friend in Congress began to wage a full scale battle against the State officials. Congressman Fred Busby, from Illinois, was the perfect man for the job. Like Senator Joseph McCarthy, Busby was an extremist who used sympathetic members of the press and congressional committees as the public red-baiting platform for his effort to singlehandedly clean out the "subversive elements" in State.44

Much of the information that Busby used in his smear campaigns came from the Chicago Police Department's notorious intelligence unit known as the "red squad." The squad's activities included compiling dossiers and conducting illegal surveillance, break-ins, and terrorist-style raids that violated the civil rights of thousands of American citizens. The squad operated for decades in collaboration with G-2's illegal domestic spy operation and the Legion of Justice, a Chicago-based rightwing terrorist group.[45]

On March 10, 1948, Busby hauled Robinson before a House subcommittee, where the congressman wove a tale based on innuendo in an attempt to show that Robinson was "incompetent" in his job and had associated with a second cousin who Busby said was an alleged Communist. Eleven State Department officials already had been fired as a result of the McCarran rider to an appropriations act, which allowed the secretary of state to discharge any employee deemed to be a security risk. Busby wanted Robinson to be the twelfth, but subcommittee members shut down the hearings. "There was no substance," said Congressman John W . McCormack of the allegations against Robinson. "The only card-bearing organization of which he was a member was

the Young Republicans Club of New York City. I think that is a mighty good American organization. "46

Busby was forced to resign from the subcommittee because of his antics. But that did not stop him from attacking Robinson and Klaus in news broadcasts over NBC radio. "It's another chapter in a story of how a few minor officials in the State Department have succeeded in blocking a program of high military importance," reported NBC's Ned Brooks. He said the State Department had refused to give the German scientists visas even though Truman had approved Paperclip. Quoting Busby as his source, Brooks identified Klaus by name as being "the man most influential in sabotaging the program." A later broadcast blamed Robinson for the "ax work. "[47]

On March 25, 1948, Busby lashed out again at the "sinister figures" in the State Department in a long speech in Congress. According to Busby, the State Department was infiltrated with Communists and Robinson had refused to go along with Busby's plan to fire employees accused of disloyalty. But Robinson's biggest crime, Busby said, was that he was in charge of a "clique" in the Visa Department, including Klaus and others, that had "sabotaged" the German scientist program. In Busby's view, all of these "fellow travelers" were at the root of the State Department's problems.[48]

Busby's campaign succeeded, and not just in the short term. With Robinson's resignation two days after Busby's speech, the last State Department watchdog was gone, leaving the JIOA conspirators free to proceed unimpeded with their scheme to circumvent Truman's policy.

Beyond these immediate effects, the smear campaign of which Busby was the mouthpiece left the historical record biased against the two State Department officials who strove to uphold the very policy they were accused of obstructing. Klaus, who died a few years after his losing battle with the JIOA officers, never was able to erase the undeserved stain on his record, a stain that endures to this day. More than twenty years after the events in question, Klaus still was being castigated for being, in historian Clarence Lasby's term, the "one man" in the State Department who was holding up progress. And to date, no history of those events has called to account those in the JIOA, in Congress, and in the press who plotted against this lonely, engaging figure with integrity and who dragged his name through the mud.[49]

On May 11, 1948, Director of Intelligence Chamberlin met with FBI Director Hoover and convinced him to change the FBI's long-standing policy that anyone with a record of Nazi party membership should be considered a security threat. Chamberlin told Hoover that immigration was the only way to successfully deny a "gold mine of brains" to the Russians. Regarding the specialists' Nazi pasts, although Chamberlin admitted that some were affiliated with nazism, he told Hoover that "none were active participants of the party or its political activities."[5]0

After the meeting, Chamberlin told the JIOA officers the good news. FBI Director Hoover had volunteered to meet personally with the attorney general to eliminate bureaucratic red tape in order to expedite the visas. Hoover was on their team.[5]1

As a result of whitewashed files, many Paperclip personnel would obtain visas, and later American citizenship, on the basis of false or misleading information in dossiers that the JIOA officers submitted to the State and Justice Departments. By 1949, JIOA officers bypassed the OMGUS security evaluations entirely in most cases. JIOA Director Daniel Ellis told a screening panel his reasoning behind that decision: "This action should be taken in view of the apparent inability of OMGUS to supply security evaluations on *a wholesale basis."*[52]

---

1. JIOA meeting is from Samuel Klaus, "Memorandum for the File," 27 February 1947, State fiche, RG 59, NARS.

2. Ibid.; for Hilldring complaints about JIOA see Samuel Klaus, "Memorandum for the Files," 26 February 1947, State fiche, RG 59, NARS.

3. Ibid.

4. Ibid.

5. Lieutenant Colonel Montie Cone to JIOA, memo regarding 146 reports, 8 May 1947, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

6. Memo discussing von Braun is in JIOA Director Thomas Ford to USFET, 3 March 1947, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

7. Samuel Klaus, "Meeting," 5 June 1946, State fiche, RG 59, NARS.

8. On JIOA expunging information see Samuel Klaus, "Memorandum to Secretary JIOA, Regarding Meeting of February 27, 1947," 5 March 1947; on Rickhey see Samuel Klaus, "German Scientist Program," 17 July 1947-both in State fiche, RG 59, NARS.

9. Author interview with retired Army Colonel Montie Cone. See also Hunt, "Nazi Coverup."

10. Hunt, "U.S. Coverup of Nazi Scientists"; JIOA Director Bosquet N. Wev to Major General Stephen J. Chamberlin, 2 July 1947, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

11. Ibid.

12. For Wev and Cone's complaints to congressmen see Samuel Klaus, "Memorandum," 9 July 1947, State fiche, RG 59, NARS.

13. Memo, Samuel Klaus to Mr. Eddy, 13 March 1947; Samuel Klaus, "German Scientist Program," 17 July 1947-both in State fiche, RG 59, NARS.

14. Robinson biography: House Committee on Expenditures in the Executive Departments, *State Department,* Subcommittee hearings, 80th Cong., 2d sess., March 10 and 12, 1948.

15. Author interview with Samuel Cummings; and Rebecca Wellington letter to author.

16. Hans Giesecke's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS; and microfilm investigative records of Portland Bund, OHS.

17. Colonel R. F. Ennis, "Press Release on Project Paperclip," correspondence, Public Relations Division, 20 February 1947; and letter, Major General F. L. Parks to Colonel George Eyster, 21 May 1947-both in G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

18. Cone interview; AFS complaints to Truman: in "Our Scientists Say, `Send Nazis Home,' " *Washington Daily News,* 24 March 1947. UPI story: USFET to General Parks, War Department, cable SX-2691, 27 Feb ruary 1947, in JIOA administrative files, Cables, RG 330, NARS. Regarding Axsters: Delbert Clark, "Nazis Sent to U.S. as Technicians," *The New York Times,* 4 January 1947.

19. Pearson story about Krauch: in cable, War Department, Intelligence Division, WDGS, 11 March 1947, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS. See also "Outline for Briefing General Eisenhower on German Sci entists Exploitation Program," I1 March 1947; and "The High Points of Conference on Paperclip," meeting held on March 11 and 12, 1947, between General Chamberlin and the chief of staff, the secretary of war, and the assistant secretary of war, with Lieutenant Colonel Hagood briefing-both from G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

20. Key sources on Army intelligence domestic spy operations are in Senate Committee on the Judiciary, *Report on Military Surveillance of Civilian Politics,* 93d Congress, lst sess., 1973; Senate Committee on the Judiciary, *Military Surveillance,* hearings 93d Congress, 2d sess., 1974; Senate Committee on the Judiciary, *Army Surveillance of Civilians: A Documentary Anal*ysis, 92d Cong., 2d sess., 1972; and Senate Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations with Respect to Intelligence Activities, *Final Report,* no. 94-755. For an overview of military intelligence domestic spy operations see Frank J. Donner, *The Age of Surueillance* (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1980).

21. Cone interview; and Tyler Abell, ed., *Drew Pearson Diaries* (New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1974).

22. Seymour Nagan, "Top Secret: Nazis at Work," *New Republic, 11* August 1947; and memo, "Subject: Seymour Nagan," 11 August 1947, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

23. Regarding AFS: Colonel R. F. Ennis to Public Relations Division, 3 March 1947; and report by Edward Wetter, chief of the Chemical and Biological Warfare Section, Scientific Branch ID, "Public Meeting on Bi ological Warfare," 5 March 1947-both in G-2 Paperclip files, 400.112 Research, RG 319, WNRC.

24. JIOA Deputy Director Walter Rozamus to Chief, Exploitation Branch, 17 October 1947, JIOA administrative files, NARS. For more on Adolf Thiel see his JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

25. Major General Robert LeGrow Walsh bio is from the U.S. Air Force; Major General Robert Schow bio is from CMH; Brigadier General William Fagg bio is from the U.S. Air Force.

26. JIOA Governing Committee Minutes of Meeting, 14 November 1947, G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC.

27. Hunt, "U.S. Coverup of Nazi Scientists"; and JIOA Deputy Director Walter Rozamus to Exploitation Branch, 18 November 1947, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

28. Anton Beier's Berlin Document Center SS card, *Meldebogen,* and other reports are in Beier's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

29. Hunt, "U.S. Coverup of Nazi Scientists"; JIOA Deputy Director Walter Rozamus to Captain Francis Duborg, ONI, 28 November 1947, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

30. Herman Kursweg's *OMGUS Security Reports,* signed by Colonel C. F. Fritzsche, 10 July 1947; and 16 February 1948, are in Kursweg's JIOA dossier. Willi Heybey's *OMGUS Security Report,* signed by Colonel C. F. Fritzsche, 16 February 1948; and Heybey's SA membership, noted in *Meldebogen,* are in Heybey's JIOA dossier. Ernst Winkler's *OMGUS Security Report,* signed by Colonel Robert Schow, 18 November 1946; and by Colonel W. L. Fagg, n.d., and Winkler's SA and other Nazi memberships, noted in *Meldebogen,* are all in his JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

31. Hunt, "U.S. Coverup of Nazi Scientists"; and memo, Lieutenant Colonel Montie F. Cone to JIOA, 28 November 1947, JIOA 4079, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

32. Ibid.; Guenther Haukohl's *OMGUS Security Report,* signed by Colonel C. F. Fritzsche, 27 October 1947 and 10 February 1948, are in Haukohl's IRR dossier, RG 319, and his JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.
Hans Friedrich statements about Hitler are in Affidavit, 14 May 1947, in Friedrich INSCOM dossier XE222767.

33. Hunt, "U.S. Coverup of Nazi Scientists"; and JIOA Director Bosquet N. Wev to Director of Intelligence, EUCOM, 4 December 1947, JIOA 4102, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

34. Ibid.

35. Memo, Robert W. Bruce, Office of Military Government (for Hess) to Commanding General, EUCOM, 12 May 1948, G-2 "Top Secret" Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

36. Ibid.; Heinrich Kliewe's *OMGUS Security Report, 11* February 1948, says that Kliewe "was an ardent Nazi. Records available to this headquarters indicate that subject is likely to become a security threat to the United States." The *OMGUS Security Report,* biography, and memos about the controversy over denazification are in Kliewe INSCOM dossier H8049883.

37. Ibid.

38. Anton Beier's *OMGUS Security Report,* signed by Colonel C. F. Fritzsche, 30 September 1947 and 12 February 1947, are in Beier's JIOA dossier. Ernst Eckert's *OMGUS Security Report,* signed by Colonel C. F. Fritzsche, 10 February 1948, is in Eckert INSCOM dossier D024720. Information on Friedrich Wazelt is in *Security and Immigration Dossier Check Sheet,* signed by M. B., 14 February 1950, in Wazelt's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

39. Hunt, "U.S. Coverup of Nazi Scientists"; Wernher von Braun's *OMGUS Security Report,* signed by Colonel C. F. Fritzsche, 18 September 1947 and 18 September 1948, are in von Braun's FBI file and INSCOM dossiers D8022816 and XE185780.

40. Hunt, "U.S. Coverup of Nazi Scientists"; and Herbert Axster's *OMGUS Security Report,* signed by Colonel C. F. Fritzsche, 18 September 1947 and by Colonel W. L. Fagg, 12 May 1948, are in Axster's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

41. Wilhelm Eitel's *OMGUS Security Report,* signed by Colonel W. L. Fagg, 7 September 1948, and AEC comments, from *Security Report by SponsoringAgency,* 16 April 1948, are in Eitel's JIOA dossier and INSCOM dossier XE061886.

42. Wilhelm Eitel's *HICOG Security Report,* signed by Colonel Charles Adams, 25 November 1948, is in Eitel's INSCOM dossier.

43. For friends' statements see files in the Ernst Eckert JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS, and INSCOM dossier D024720. Theodor Zobel's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS and INSCOM dossier B8008094.

44. Information on Busby and his tactics is in House Committee on Expenditures in the Executive Departments, *State Department.*

45. Busby discusses the Chicago Police Department in ibid. The "red squad" is discussed in Donner, *Age of Surveillance.*

46. House Committee on Expenditures in the Executive Departments, *State Department;* Representative McCormack quote is from *Congressional Record,* 15 May 1952, p. 5266.

47. Ned Brooks, NBC radio script, 25 March 1948, in JIOA adminisuative files, RG 330, NARS.

48. Busby speech is in *Congressional Record,* 25 March 1948; he repeats the charges in *Congressional Record,* 15 May 1952.

49. On Robinson quitting: *Congressional Record,* 15 May 1952; Klaus interview; and Lasby, *Project Paperclip.*

50. Hoover meeting: Lieutenant General S. J. Chamberlin to Major General George McDonald, 11 May 1948; and Assistant Secretary USAF to Secretary USAF, 13 May 1948-both in G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

51. Ibid.

52. JIOA Director Daniel Ellis to JIOA Screening Panel, JIOA 3473, 2 September 1949, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

8 CIA Dirty Tricks in the " National Interest "

THE cold war led to a major expansion of the German scientist operation. Heretofore, Paperclip was limited to German and Austrian scientists who worked for the U.S. military. But beginning in the summer of 1947, a new JIOA project lifted those constraints. Code-named "National Interest," the individuals brought to the United States under this program ran the gamut from Nazi scientists, including a convicted Nazi war criminal, to East Europeans involved in CIA covert operations overseas. The sole standard for these transfers was that they be deemed in the national interest.

National Interest operated on two levels. The more visible level included the cases of German or Austrian scientists employed by universities, defense contractors, or private industry. Their entry was considered to be in the national in terest simply because it kept them from going to work for the Russians.

The second level was heavily cloaked in secrecy, and for good reason. The CIA and military intelligence used the project to bring intelligence sources or other assets to the United States, where they were given a safe haven in exchange for their services. In 1948 many of these individuals were of interest to the Office of Policy Coordination (OPC), the early covert action arm of the CIA, given the authority by Truman to conduct what is known in the intelligence trade as "dirty tricks." To put it bluntly, Project National Interest provided the escape mechanism to a haven in the United States that OSS chief William Donovan had wanted President Roosevelt to approve in 1944.1

National Interest policy assumed that all of these persons normally would have been barred from entry under U.S. immigration laws because of past Nazi or Communist party membership. Therefore, their entry was facilitated by the ninth proviso of the U.S. immigration law, which gave the attorney general the authority to admit cases with military implications or those affecting national security. The CIA cases were covered by a section in the CIA Act of 1949, which allowed U.S. entry of up to one hundred individuals a year "without regard to their inadmissibility under the immigration or any other laws. . . ." The JIOA Governing Committee approved the entry in the CIA cases and passed the names on to the attorney general for approval.2

The aliens in National Interest, like those in Paperclip, were sent to Canada and reentered the United States as resident aliens. Numerous historians and journalists have told the nowfamous story of how Wernher von Braun and other Paperclip scientists were sent to Canada or Mexico and then reentered America. Yet not one has so much as mentioned the illegality of this or that Canadian officials were furious about it, since entry into Canada of these Nazis violated their own immigration laws.

In 1947, for example, the Royal Canadian Mounted Police (RCMP) reported that they had been duped by U.S. officials into believing that the Nazis' backgrounds were such as to allow their entry under Canadian laws, when in fact the opposite was true. "Some of these people are admitted members of the Nazi party and others, I am informed, have criminal records," one RCMP officer reported after conducting his own investigation. In addition, the Canadians suspected that U.S. and British intelligence falsified background checks sent to the RCMP of Nazi scientists and "defectors" who were resettled in Canada in the 1950s. Following a 1981 investigation, Canadian officials uncovered evidence that some of these men were Nazi war criminals. As a result the Canadians thoroughly distrusted background checks conducted by the CIA and British intelligence. "No foreign agency should be considered a `reliable source' in the sense that its reports can be accepted uncritically," a RCMP report noted.[3]

Prevailing myth has it that the first group in National Interest, the German scientists, were employed solely because of their scientific expertise. But there were other reasons as well. First, defense contractors and universities could hire German scientists for substantially less money than they could American employees. Salary statistics show that the Germans signed contracts for

approximately $2,000 a year less than their American counterparts received in comparable positions. Of course, the Germans were unaware of the salary discrepancy, since they had earned even less money in West Germany. The JIOA, however, took advantage of the situation by promoting cheap salaries to convince corporations to participate in the project. Second, because of the Joint Chiefs of Staff connection with the National Interest project, German scientists could obtain necessary security clearances more easily than could American scientists. Defense contractors looking for new employees to work on classified projects found this aspect of National Interest to be particularly advantageous. By 1957, more than sixty companies were listed on JIOA's rosters, including Lockheed, W. R. Grace and Company, CBS Laboratories, and Martin Marietta.[4]

Originally the JIOA was concerned that National Interest would compete with Paperclip. This problem was solved by offering the military the first option to hire a German scientist on the JIOA's list. If the military was not interested in the individual, his name was added to the JIOA's National Interest roster and his services were offered to universities or corporations. The JIOA figured that it would be easy to keep private employers from hiring Paperclip scientists away from the military, since the JIOA could pull their federally funded research or defense contracts if they got out of line.[5]

The scientists who worked for universities or corporations were originally "sponsored" by either the Department of Commerce or the Department of Defense (Army, Air Force, or Navy). The Department of Commerce even sent its own recruiters to Germany. However, other than providing some help with the paperwork, this sponsorship was irrelevant: the individuals worked for and were paid by the universities or companies. The sponsorship did provide a way to meet JCS policy requirements of having some connection with the military or another governmental department. In the case of the second group, the sponsor provided a convenient cover to conceal the CIA-OPC connection.6

National Interest placed German scientists at major universities in research or teaching positions, regardless of their Nazi pasts. Even the U.S. Office of Education helped the JIOA send fliers to universities all over the country touting the advantages of hiring the Germans on federally financed research projects, since they could obtain security clearances more easily than Americans. The University of Texas, Washington University School of Medicine in St. Louis, Missouri, and Boston University were among the participants.7

The universities never even questioned whether Nazi professors might impart a skewed view of democracy or otherwise harm young students. And university officials certainly were aware that these men were Nazis, since their Nazi affiliations were noted on their resumes. In 1948, a representative of the University of North Carolina told the JIOA how pleased he was to have three Germans, including engineer Adolf von Hoermann, working at the university and thanked the JIOA for its representations that the Germans had been screened. The JIOA's screening had revealed that von Hoermann was "a convinced adherent of the National Socialistic ideology" and had been a member of the Nazi party and four other Nazi organizations during the war.8

Still, there were angry disputes between American employees and Germans who still adhered to virulent Nazi views. One incident occurred at the Bechtel Corporation, where synthetic fuels expert Leonard Alberts worked under National Interest. Alberts had been a member of the SS, the Nazi party, the SA, and two other Nazi groups. He also had been a Gestapo informant in the Victor Works plant where he worked during the war. His job, as chief counterespionage agent for the Abwehr, was to uncover "spies and saboteurs" among the foreign forced laborers working at Victor and report them to the Gestapo. After he was brought to America under National Interest, Alberts changed jobs four times in two years as a result of American co-workers' complaints about his ardent nazism.[9]

The dispute at Bechtel occurred when the company learned that Alberts had failed to mention his SS and Abwehr connections on his forms. Alberts claimed that he did not recall his Nazi memberships, since "such matters were intrusted to my secretary." Bechtel officials also gave the FBI a pile of complaints from Alberts's co-workers and an Army security officer, Major Robert Humphries, who accused Alberts of being a security threat. Humphries told the FBI that Alberts "was and is a Nazi" and warned that he was "capable of dealing with Russia or any other group which

would pay for his technical knowledge." Despite these complaints, the JIOA disregarded Humphries as being "opinionated" and transferred Alberts to Blaw-Knox in Pittsburgh. By then the FBI had collected even more unfavorable reports on Alberts's character and pro-Nazi stance. JIOA officers eventually helped Alberts obtain permanent residency, despite derogatory reports, because they were afraid he would work for the Russians if returned to Germany.10

National Interest was merely an entry mechanism to get the person here first, ask questions later. Because of that, there was a potential for an even greater internal security risk with these cases than with Paperclip, which at least provided some semblance of military custody. In addition to hard-core Nazis, National Interest cases included former members of the Communist party and the Italian Fascist party.

One German was an accused Nazi spy who, though brought to the United States to work for a New York optical company, promptly disappeared once he arrived. This should have come as no surprise, considering Goerz Langfeld's track record. Langfeld had lived in America in the late 1930s and worked for Eastman Kodak in Rochester, New York. The FBI suspected that Langfeld and several top U.S. businessmen were meeting with a notorious Nazi spy, who later was convicted of espionage. Langfeld left America in 1941, and reports of his wartime activities are conflicting. Langfeld claimed on one form that he had gone to Tokyo as a "tourist." On another he said he had returned to Nazi Germany and joined the Luftwaffe. Yet another story was that he had worked for the German Naval headquarters in Berlin. One thing is certain: in late 1945 Army CIC agents thought he looked suspicious and threw him in jail. He was caught wearing a British uniform, brandishing a gun, and carrying falsified papers, including identity cards under several names. Langfeld escaped soon after his arrest and, under yet another alias, obtained a job at the Office of Military Government for Bavaria's film division. By the time he was brought to the United States in 1952 his records revealed that he had used at least five different aliases.11

Even convicted Nazi war criminals were accepted under the project. Otto Ambros's case is by far the most brazen example of how National Interest circumvented U. S. immigration laws. The fact that W. R. Grace and Company, headed by J. Peter Grace, employed Ambros as a consultant for decades is well known. But newly declassified JIOA and U.S. Army documents shed new light on this sordid affair.12

During the war, Ambros was a director of I. G. Farben, the chemical company that owned a firm that manufactured Zyklon B, the gas used to kill millions of Jews in the camps. Ambros took part in the decision to use Zyklon B in the gas chambers and personally selected Auschwitz as the site of an 1. G. Farben factory, which he later managed, because Auschwitz concentration camp prisoners could be used as slaves in the factory. Nuremberg trial witnesses recalled the deplorable conditions under which Auschwitz prisoners were forced to work at Ambros's I. G. Farben Auschwitz plant. "Thrashings, ill-treatment of the worst kind, even direct killings were the fashion," testified Rudolf Vitek, both a physician and an Auschwitz inmate. "The murderous work speed was responsible for the fact that while working many prisoners suddenly stretched out flat, turned blue, gasped for breath and died like beasts."13

I. G. Farben also manufactured nerve gas that was used in poison gas experiments on Auschwitz prisoners. These experiments, conducted in secret laboratories at I. G. Farben factories, were used to determine how fast nerve gas would kill Allied soldiers. The helpless victims of these experiments died instantly. According to British intelligence, Ambros and other I. G. Farben officials "justified the experiments not only on the grounds that the inmates of concentration camps would have been killed anyway by the Nazis, but also . . . that the experiments had a humanitarian aspect in that the lives of countless German workers were saved."14

Ambros was found guilty of slavery and mass murder at Nuremberg, but he was sentenced to a mere eight years' imprisonment. Chief prosecutor Josiah DuBois regarded the sentence as "light enough to please a chicken thief" and was so outraged that he wrote a scathing book about the men he called *The Devil's Chemists*. The JIOA had no such qualms and kept Ambros's name on JIOA hiring lists-even during his imprisonment. These lists were significant, since they contained the

names of German scientists who had been cleared for employment under various JIOA and British projects. In addition, these Germans' families received benefits, including food supplements, not available to average German citizens.15

In 1951, General Clay's successor, the High Commissioner of Germany (HICOG), John McCloy, released from prison many convicted Nazi war criminals, including Ambros. The Nazi chemist immediately was hired as a consultant by Grace, Dow Chemical, and other American companies, as well as the U. S. Army Chemical Corps under a consultancy project that was run administratively in Germany by HICOG-conveniently the same agency whose chief had just set Ambros free. The full details of Ambros's consultancy with the U.S. military are unknown. The *effect* of that work, however, is abundantly clear. During the time that Ambros was a consultant, the chemical corps, using Auschwitz documents as a guide, conducted the same type of poison gas experiments that had been done in the secret I. G. Farben laboratories. This time, however, the experiments were conducted at Edgewood Arsenal, Maryland, and the unfortunate guinea pigs were more than seven thousand American soldiers.16

In the 1950s Grace repeatedly tried to get the State Department to issue Ambros a visa but was turned down because he was a convicted Nazi war criminal. Then National Interest entered the picture, as it provided a way to bring otherwise excludable individuals to the United States under the attorney general's waiver provision. According to State sources, the Justice Department approved Ambros's entry and he visited the United States at least three times.17

The CIA's tremendous influence on National Interest and Paperclip has been ignored prior to this book. The CIA was formed as a separate intelligence agency as a result of the National Security Act of 1947. A year later, the Office of Policy Coordination began operating as the CIA's covert action arm, headed by Frank Wisner, formerly chief of OSS operations in the Balkans during World War II. Wisner's OPC operated out of the State Department, which proved highly advantageous to the intelligence agents running Paperclip. His considerable influence in the State Department meant a more favorable climate, particularly since Samuel Klaus and other Paperclip detractors had been forced out of the picture. In addition,
Wisner handled the CIA investigations of individuals brought to America under all JIOA projects. Considering the wellpublicized facts surrounding the CIA's own use of Nazi war criminals, it should not be surprising that the CIA name checks reported "no derogatory information."18

Wisner also helped the JIOA obtain visas for Paperclip scientists. For example, in February 1948 Director of Intelligence Stephen Chamberlin met with Wisner to discuss JIOA's problems with Klaus and the Visa Department. Chamberlin told Wisner that around 350 Germans were still living in the United States under military custody, but they could not become permanent residents without State Department approval. "This condition has resulted in an unfavorable reaction on specialists' morale," Chamberlin said. He asked Wisner to accelerate the visas and to support JIOA's efforts to change Paperclip policy to enable the Germans to get visas before their arrival in America.19

Less than a month later the State Department notified the JIOA that it would accelerate its processing of visas in the Paperclip cases. The new director of the Visa Department, Herve L'Heureux, also issued instructions to consuls in Germany that only major Nazi leaders would be barred from obtaining visas. By 1949 Paperclip scientists began to obtain visas prior to their arrival in the United States.20

The National Interest project provided a way to slip military or CIA intelligence assets into the country. The CIA group involved defectors or individuals who possessed information of significant intelligence value. JIOA officers passed on the names of the CIA group to the attorney general for final approval. "We just did the paperwork," recalled retired U.S. Army Colonel Bernard Geehan, who served on the JIOA from 1953 to 1957. But that approval process was crucial, because the law was designed to admit people who otherwise would be inadmissible. As one CIA attorney admitted in 1979, the provision allowing the CIA to bring a hundred persons to the United States waived all grounds of exclusion, so theoretically, drug traffickers or persons convicted of serious crimes could be admitted into the country under the law. The sole consideration for entry was that the aliens had

performed significant services for the United States or had the potential for performing those services in the future. In some instances those services included working in CIA covert operations overseas.[2]1

Some of these aliens had escaped to the West via an "underground railway" operated by a special unit of intelligence agents in Berlin. "We get some hot customers, hot with the breath of the Russian pursuers on their necks," one unidentified agent told *The New York Times* in 1947. The agents smuggled scientists, politicians, intelligence sources, and other individuals through Eastern Europe, using various modes of transportation and disguises to sneak them past Russian guards to the American or British zones of Germany.22

The aliens' backgrounds were varied. Some were Germans employed by U. S. intelligence at Camp King in Germany. Others were former Italian Fascists, including a wealthy businessman whom the JIOA was reluctant to approve for U.S. entry because his dubious business methods already had been an obstacle to negotiating a consultancy contract with the U.S. Air Force. Many were defectors, such as General Izydor Modelski, former military attache with the Polish Embassy in Washington. Another defector, Peter Pirogov, was a Soviet Air Force officer who flew a jet plane out of the Ukraine to Austria, where he crash-landed and turned himself over to the Americans. According to JIOA records, the U.S. Air Force sponsored Pirogov's U. S. entry under National Interest. He then worked as a consultant for the Air Force and as a scriptwriter for the CIA-funded Radio Liberty.23

There was also a group of Finnish soldiers who wanted to form an underground guerrilla team to fight the Communists in their homeland. The Finns originally had sought asylum in Sweden and secured a transit visa to the United States en route to Venezuela. Upon arrival in America, they offered to join the armed forces. On October 21, 1947, JIOA Deputy Director Walter Rozamus notified the State Department that the Finns had been approved for admission under National Interest. The Finns then went to Canada, reentered the country, and enlisted in the U.S. Army.24

One of the Finns, Alpo Marttinen, wrote to former OSS chief Donovan and asked that his group be transferred to the Intelligence Division in order to carry out a scheme that they had told Donovan about when they first arrived in the United States. The scheme included secretly recruiting a cadre of two thousand Finnish officers to be used to fight a guerrilla war against Soviet troops in Finland. "The first and foremost step in this campaign," Marttinen wrote, "would be to assist in the escape and to offer asylum to such persons whose services either in the underground activities or in war itself would be of most value." He explained that anti-Communist Finnish army officers living in exile in Venezuela and other countries were well qualified to fight this war, since they knew Scandinavian and Russian languages and terrains, were experts in winter warfare tactics, and were familiar with Soviet fighting methods.25

The idea was passed on to Major General Alfred Gruenther, chairman of the JCS, who asked several individuals for their comments. Most military officers thought the idea sounded too much like recruiting mercenaries. As one colonel put it, this cadre of guerrilla warriors might include "a large sprinkling of free-booters, criminals and petty racketeers." But the idea appealed to George Kennan, head of the State Department Policy Planning Staff, and architect of the political theory of Soviet containment. "We believe that Mr. Marttinen's project has merit and that a beginning should be made to carry it out," Kennan wrote to Gruenther. "It would seem advisable to start the project with these men and gradually to build it up as a top-secret undertaking." Soon, more Finnish soldiers began to arrive directly from Venezuela and other countries under Project National Interest. The influx continued well into the 1950s. Marttinen and other Finns trained with the U.S. Army winter warfare unit.26

National Interest also included Russian and Eastern European scientists who either had worked in Nazi Germany or had escaped to the West after the war. Alexander Papkow, for example, had been one of the first Russian physicists to work on nuclear fission. In 1943 Papkow moved tA Germany and worked as a Russian translator for German intelligence and as a scientific assistant to Professor Walter Bothe at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute in Heidelberg. Originally Papkow was going to be brought to the United States, but an investigation by Army CIC agents had raised suspicions about Papkow's wife and her Soviet connections. Army CIC agents normally kept the scientists on

JIOA lists under surveillance. In Papkow's case Army CIC stakeouts gathered information about Papkow's emigre contacts that was used in an investigation of Soviet emigre espionage networks operating in the U.S. zone of Germany.[27]

The most interesting aspect of National Interest is the services some individuals actually performed for U.S. intelligence. The National Interest roster tells the story of nearly every early CIA-OPC covert operation that took place in the late 1940s. Under National Interest, U.S. immigration laws were juggled to allow some of them to travel in and out of the country with no questions asked. Two examples are enough to show the pattern.

One case was Teodor Manicatide, brought to the United States after being involved in a botched coup d'etat in Romania in late 1946. According to Robert Bishop, an American intelligence agent stationed in Bucharest at the time, the coup was planned by Lieutenant William Hamilton and Major Thomas Hall of the Strategic Services Unit (SSU). The full story of this operation still is unknown. And one key question that remains unanswered is whether anyone, especially the president, authorized the SSU officers' deliberate attempt to topple a foreign government. The SSU was an early War Department unit created basically as a caretaker agency for the disbanded OSS clandestine intelligence agencies until the CIA was formed in 1947.[28]

In Bishop's account of this debacle, Hamilton and Hall recruited factions of dissident political groups in Romania to form a resistance movement against the Communist-backed Romanian government. The recruits included leaders of the National Peasant party, the strongest political opposition party in Romania, with a track record of having tried to overthrow the country's Nazi-puppet government in 1944. The American officers held meetings to plot a coup which they promised to finance with sixty thousand gold coins and support with arms and supplies. Manicatide served as Hamilton's translator at the meetings. The problem was, the meetings were held in the worst locations imaginable if the idea was to keep this plot secret from Russian intelligence agents. "A bar room, a garden restaurant, or a quiet place in the suburbs would have been foolproof by comparison," Bishop noted sarcastically. One meeting was held in an American officer's home located near the Russian Embassy. Another took place in a bombed-out palace that, as Bishop observed, was well known to Russian agents as being "a nest of reactionary activities." Hamilton and Hall were so incompetent as to have stenographic notes taken of the plots discussed at these meetings. Of course, the Russians soon obtained a copy of the notes, arrested the Romanians, and conducted show trials at which the stenographic notes were used as evidence.[29]

Manicatide, JIOA's National Interest subject, was given political asylum in the American Military Mission while being tried in absentia at the show trials. It is not known whether Manicatide unwittingly became ensnared in the activities of these renegade U.S. intelligence officers or if he took a more active role other than working as Hamilton's translator. Either way, it did not matter to the Romanian court, which considered his mere association with Hamilton enough evidence to convict him for participating in the. plot. According to an account in *The New York Times* on November 20, 1946, of the sentencing of ninety-four persons on trial, Manicatide "was sentenced to life imprisonment on the grounds that he accompanied a Lieutenant Hamilton of the American Military Mission to a National Peasant congress." Manicatide was then smuggled out of Romania and provided with a haven in the United States under National Interest.[30]

The next case on the National Interest covert action roster involved an Italian immigrant, Angelica Balabanoff, who helped the CIA secretly instigate a major upheaval in the Italian government that laid the groundwork for the successful election of CIA-backed candidates in 1948. Here the CIA, with the help of Wisner and other individuals, conducted full-scale clandestine political warfare. The CIA's dirty tricks were financed by $10 million in cash obtained from the U.S. Treasury's Exchange Stabilization Fund, which consisted of captured Nazi assets, including money and valuables that the Nazis had stolen from Jews. Ironically, Samuel Klaus originally had helped locate this loot while working on the Safehaven project, designed to stop Nazis from smuggling their assets out of Germany. The CIA funneled millions of dollars to Italian centrist political candidates. Circumstantial evidence indicates that CIA money backed Italy's Premier

Alcide de Gasperi and a group of right-wing Socialists headed by Giuseppe Saraget. The CIA also financed media blitzes in the Italian press, supported armed goon squads used to intimidate voters, and published leaflets that smeared Communist candidates as being Fascists and sex perverts. The money was funneled through various fronts, including the Vatican, which is known to have helped smuggle numerous Nazi war criminals, including Klaus Barbie, to South America.[31]

In the 1970s U.S. congressmen investigating the CIA's secret involvement in Italy's affairs were led to believe that the CIA's operation had begun in 1948. In fact, the Balabanoff plot had begun a year earlier, in January 1947. Balabanoff was a former leader of the Italian Socialist and Labor movement who lived in New York as a resident alien. Because she was a former Communist, she risked being judged inadmissible to the United States if she traveled to Italy and then tried to reenter America. The National Interest project not only provided her reentry with no questions asked but allowed her to come and go between the United States and Italy at will in order to participate in this scheme.[32]

Raymond Murphy, the State Department's special assistant to the director in the Office of European Affairs, explained the reasoning behind the Balabanoff operation during a JIOA Governing Committee meeting on October 20, 1947. "This government is trying to evoke a response along democratic elements in Europe to organize resistance against the engulfment of their countries by an internal Communistic machine," Murphy said. Murphy told JIOA officers that Balabanoff, working in close cooperation "with certain officials of the American Embassy at Rome," had helped cause an upheaval and split in Italian politics that strengthened the CIA-backed Right Wing Socialists party headed by Giuseppe Saragat. Balabanoff made numerous speeches in Italy and held press conferences in the United States that publicized CIA-backed candidates. These trips were made possible by juggling U.S. immigration laws under National Interest.[33]

By 1948 the cold war had escalated National Interest and revitalized Paperclip. Washington already was full of rumors of war when General Lucius Clay sent his now-famous telegram from Berlin warning that war with the Soviets might be imminent. According to military historian Steven Rearden, "Evidence suggests that the idea of the telegram may have originated with Lt. Gen. Stephen J. Chamberlin." At the time, Director of Intelligence Chamberlin was desperately trying to salvage Paperclip. In February 1948, he told Wisner about his concern over the Army's "considerable burden of maintaining custody." The Army wanted to shut Paperclip down because there was no money to continue surveillance and other custodial duties over Paperclip scientists.[34]

The same month, Chamberlin went to Berlin and cautioned Clay as to the pitiful state of readiness of U.S. forces, the fact that military appropriation bills were pending before congressional committees, and the need to rally the public to support increased military expenditures. Chamberlin then asked Clay to sound an alarm to galvanize support. At first Clay insisted that his intelligence reports. showed nothing to arouse suspicion about the Soviets, but later he decided to send a message to Washington. The primary purpose of Clay's telegram, according to the editor of Clay's papers, "was to assist the military chiefs in their Congressional testimony; it was not, in Clay's opinion, related to any change in Soviet strategy. "[35]

On March 5 Clay sent Chamberlin the cable expressing his belief that war with the Russians might be imminent. "Within the last few weeks, I have felt a subtle change in Soviet attitudes which I cannot define but which now gives me a feeling that it may come with dramatic suddenness," Clay told Chamberlin. The fact that Clay's telegram went on to say that his opinion was not supported by data or hard evidence went unnoticed.[36]

Clay's "war warning," as it later was referred to in the Pentagon, hit Washington like an earthquake. Within hours Chamberlin and the assistant secretary of defense had briefed Secretary of Defense James Forrestal on the contents of Clay's message. By evening the word had reached the top echelons of the Navy and Air Force. Within a few weeks Forrestal had a full-blown war scare on his hands. "Papers this morning," Forrestal wrote in his diary, "[are] full of rumors and portents of war." *The New York Times* reported: "Top Military Men Urge U.S. To Arm to Show We Would Fight for Freedom," while Clay, trying to undo the damage, told reporters that he was "not the least bit

apprehensive" and that "much too much is being made of this." Clay's comments went unheeded in Washington, where, during a Senate hearing, Secretary of the Navy John Sullivan announced that submarines "belonging to no nation west of the `iron curtain' have been sighted off their shores." Ignoring the lack of evidence, the *Washington Times Herald* headlined the disclosure: "Russian Subs Prowl West Coast Waters."37

The significant effect of Clay's cable on JIOA projects previously has been ignored by historians and journalists who falsely assumed that the projects ended in the late 1940s. In fact, the resulting war scare escalated National Interest to such an extent that by 1950 U.S. intelligence was smuggling Eastern Europeans with false identities through immigration to Canada, where they were resettled. Later one Royal Canadian Mounted Police officer was shocked to discover that six files of incriminating information had been destroyed and replaced by a "false docket" on a Yugoslavian war crimes suspect who had been sent to Canada by U.S. intelligence. "I would be interested to know how the decision for destruction was reached for it is an action similar to the destruction of police files on Nazis in South America," the RCMP officer told his superior. British intelligence, which ran an identical project, also dumped their so-called "defectors" on Canada, as they had done with Nazi scientists. Canada's undersecretary of state recalled in November 1954 that Canada took in " `British exagents' who were not in fact defectors as originally understood." A Canadian government investigation determined that many of these "ex-agents" were alleged war criminals or Nazi collaborators.[38]

The false war scare also invigorated Paperclip as the military received additional funds needed to keep the project going. Paperclip had been operating under a new policy that was supposed to eliminate the project's procurement phase. But JIOA Director Bosquet Wev aptly pointed out in a meeting that the JIOA never interpreted that to mean the end of Paperclip altogether. "In my mind there was no thought given to any ultimate termination date in this thing and [the policy] was a procedure to go on until such time as a peace treaty [with Germany] was signed or until the thing just petered out of its own accord," Wev said. As this book reveals, Paperclip finally "petered out" around 1973.[39]

An "escape clause" in the policy allowed the JIOA to procure scientists if certain conditions were met, such as a need for skilled workers for projects funded after the new policy went into effect. In the midst of the war scare, one Air Force officer remarked in a JIOA meeting that the "looming war psychology" in Washington had made the Department of Defense more receptive toward Paperclip. The Air Force believed that now it would be easier for the military to obtain money for new projects and bring more Paperclip scientists to America.40

Ultimately, the overall effect of the war scare on Paperclip was dramatic. The project's focus suddenly shifted toward one goal-to get German scientists out of Europe and away from the Russians by any means possible, even if that meant smuggling them to South American countries, such as the Argentine "Fourth Reich" of Juan and Eva Peron.

---

1. CIA-OPC cases are in State/National Interest Cases (NIC), JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

2. Procedures for admittance notes that the ninth proviso is used if they are "inadmissible" under U.S. law. See JIOA Director Daniel Ellis to Navy, Air and Army Chiefs of Procurement, JIOA memo 2758, 16 Novem
ber 1950, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS. The CIA "hundred persons act" is sec. 7 of the CIA act of 20 June 1949, 50 USC 403h.

3. Rodal, "Nazi War Criminals in Canada," chap. 7 and notes.

4. For an example of JIOA's sales pitch see JIOA Director Daniel E. Ellis to Dr. Ernest Hollis, U.S. Office of Education, 31 January 1950, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS. Company lists are in JIOA post-1952 administrative files (declassified per author's FOIA request), RG 330, NARS.

5. JIOA Director to Chief, Special Procurement Section, Intelligence Division, 17 October 1949, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

6. Most CIA-OPC cases were "sponsored" by State, but the military did sponsor some of them-for example, Air Force cases involving Soviet defectors. See NIC files, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

7. Memo, John Russell, U.S. Office of Education, to College and University Administrators, 28 March 1950, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

8. Robert Rice, University of North Carolina, to Colonel Laurin Williams, WDGS, 13 February 1948, G-2 Paperclip files, 400.112 Research, RG 319, WNRC; and report by Wilhelm Krauledat, Intelligence Branch, U.S. Army, 26 July 1947, in Adolf von Hoermann's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

9. Leonard Alberts's Nazi memberships: see Berlin Document Center report, 2 September 1947; and counterespionage activities, Humphries's quote, and other reports, especially a summary of the investigation from Bechtel Corporation records-all in Alberts's IRR dossier EZ012128, RG 319, NARS, or his JIOA dossier, RG-330, NARS.

10. Ibid.

11. For fake ID cards and other information on Langfeld see Gcerz Langfeld INSCOM dossier XE208037; "Hitler's Agent Ensconced in Westchester," *New York Herald Tribune, 1* August 1940 identifies Langfeld as being seen at the home of Nazi agent.

12. For a summary of Grace-Ambros history see Joe Conason, "The Corporate State of Grace," *Village Voice,* 12 April 1983.

13. *Krauch;* and Nuremberg document NI-4830.

14. Bridsh report and quotes are in Senate Committee on Military Affairs, Subcommittee hearings, 79th Cong., lst sess., 1945, pursuant to S. Res. 107 and 146, *Elimination of German Resources for War,* pt. 10, p. 1276.

15. Josiah DuBois, *The Devil's Chemists* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1952). See also Joseph Borkin, *The Cnme and Punishment of IG Farben* (London: Andre Deutsch Ltd., 1979); references to JIOA objectives lists are in Otto Ambros INSCOM dossier XE021877; and W. R. Grace on JIOA company lists are in JIOA post-1952 administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

16. For lists of Edgewood Arsenal contracts with W. R. Grace and dozens of other companies and universities see "Index to Classified Edgewood Arsenal Records," in U.S. Army custody, WNRC.

17. Hunt, "Nazi Coverup."

18. Example of Wisner CIA report is in Herbert Axster's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS. CIA-OPC complicity with Nazi war criminals is discussed in Loftus, *Belarus Secret,* and Simpson, *Blowback. OPC* history: in Senate Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations With Respect to Intelligence Activities, *Final Report,* no. 94-755.

19. Memo, General Stephen Chamberlin to Frank Wisner, 18 February 1948, G-2 Paperclip files, 400.112 Research, RG 319, WNRC.

20. Regarding State accelerating visas see JIOA Director Bosquet Wev to Navy, Army, Air Intelligence Divisions, JIOA memo 891, 17 March 1948, in G-2 Paperclip files, 014.33, RG 319, WNRC. For results of the meeting with H. L'Heureux see JIOA Deputy Director C. Welte to JIOA Director, 1 June 1948, G-2 Paperclip files, 014.32 Research, RG 319, WNRC.

21. For discussions of the second clause in National Interest policy, involving aliens other than Germans employed in civilian agencies, "in consideration of exceptional services," see JIC 282/38, JIC memo 285; further discussion on defming the second part of the policy clause is in CCS 334 (G12-44) S. 10-both in RG 218, NARS. Author interview with retired Army Colonel Bernard Geehan. For CIA counsel's comments on CIA hundred persons act see House Committee on the Judiciary, *Efficiency of the INS,* 96th Cong., lst sess., 31 October 1979.

22. "Mikolajczyk Got Secret Unit's Aid," *The New York Times,* 4 November 1947.

23. For Poles: regarding Jan Kolendo see JIOA Director R. D. Wentworth to H. L'Heureux, JIOA memo 3038, 27 July 1949, and regarding Lieutenant General Izydor Modelski see JIOA Director Daniel Ellis to L'Heureux, JIOA memo 3857, 22 September 1949, both in JIOA administrative files, State/NIC, RG 330, NARS. For Italians, especially Secondo Campini, see Brigadier General Walter Agee to JIOA, 3 May 1950, JIOA administrative files, AF/NIC, RG 330, NARS. Peter Pirogov, Why I *Escaped* (London: Harvell Press, 1950); and Pirogov records, JIOA AF/NIC files, esp. letter, Deputy Attorney General Peyton Ford to JIOA Deputy Director James Skinner, 8 December 1950, regarding how the Internal Security Act held up Pirogov's admission under normal process "by reason of his membership in the two Soviet youth organizations," JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

24. JIOA Deputy Director Walter Rozamus to H. L'Heureux, JIOA memo 3535, 21 October 1947, JIOA administrative files, 383.7 Immigration, RG 330, NARS. Finn proposal and correspondence of Donovan, Gruenther, Kennan, and others are in P and O 091.714 TS (sec. 1, case 1), RG 319, NARS. JIOA records on Finns are in JIOA administrative files, State/NIC, RG 330, NARS. See box 26 for personal immigration information on all Finns, including Kurt Saarela, who jumped ship in Norfolk, Virginia, in 1947.

25. Letter and attached proposal, Alpo Marttinen to General William Donovan, 29 February 1948 in P and O 091.714 TS (sec. 1, case 1), RG 319, NARS.

26. Ibid. For later Finn arrivals see State/NIC files in JIOA administrative records, boxes 26 and 33-for lists, entry dates, and a JIOA conference with State in 1950 regarding Finns illegally residing in the United States.

27. For Army CIC reports and other information on Papkow see Alexander Papkow INSCOM dossier F8011971.

28. Robert Bishop and E. S. Crayfield, *Russia Astride the Balkans* (New York: McBride, 1948).

29. Ibid.

30. Information on Manicatide: in NIC files, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS. Court sentence noting Manicatide by name is in "Rumanians Sentence 82 in Treason Trial," *The New York Times,* 20 November 1946.

31. CIA activities in Italy were first disclosed in Representative Otis Pike, "Special Supplement: The CIA Report the President Doesn't Want You to Read," *Village Voice,* February 16 and 22, 1976. See also William Corson, *The Armies of Ignorance* (New York: Dial Press,1977); and Simpson, *Blozvback.*

32. Balabanoff case: discussed in Minutes of JIOA Governing Committee Meeting, 20 October 1947, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC. 33. Ibid. Regarding Saraget, de Gespardi, and general information on the split see *The New York Times,* January 6-9 and 12, 1947 (regarding Balabanoff speaking), and 14 January 1947. See also "Denounces Communists," *The New York Times,* 23 December 1947, for an example of Balabanoff assailing the "fascist tactics" of Communists in the American press.

34. Steven Rearden, *The Formative Years* (Washington, D.C.: Office of the Secretary of Defense, Historical Office,1984), p. 281; General Stephen Chamberlin to Frank Wisner,l9 February 1948, G-2 Paperclip files, 400.112 Research, RG 319, WNRC.

35. Lucius Clay, *The Papers of General Lucius D. Clay,* ed. Jean Edward Smith (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1974).

36. Ibid., pp. 568-69 (telegram).

37. Rearden, *Formative Years;* and Richard Freeland, *The* Truman Doc*trine and the Origins of McCarthyism* (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1972). 38. Rodal, "Nazi War Criminals in Canada."

39. Wev quote is in Minutes of JIOA Governing Committee Meeting, 11 February 1948, G-2 Paperclip files, 400.112 Research, RG 319, WNRC.

40. "Looming war" comment: in JIOA Liaison Officers' Conference, 20 July 1950, G-2 "Top Secret" Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC. Paperclip policy limiting procurement is SWNCC 257/33.

9 The Argentine Connection

ARGENTINA was a hotbed of fascism in exile. Nazi fugitives on the run arrived by the boatloads in Buenos Aires, carrying false papers provided by pro-Nazi Catholic priests who helped them travel Vatican escape routes to freedom in South America. Croatian Nazis, Italian Fascists, and a Norwegian Nazi doctor charged with conducting experiments on humans all arrived in Buenos Aires carrying their "irregular" documentation. One talkative Abwehr intelligence officer, Otto Wiedemann, even boasted when he arrived in 1949 that he had been allowed to escape from an American POW camp in Germany after bribing an Army Counter Intelligence Corps officer. "I would never have gotten out of American CIC hands, had there not been one second lieutenant who liked $300 more," Wiedemann said.1

By 1950 Argentina had become tightly linked to the German scientist project. That connection represents yet another example of how the project expanded as a result of the cold war. The JIOA helped Argentina recruit German scientists and then used the Argentine connection to provide a safe haven for Nazi war criminals.

Had it not been for the cold war, Argentina never would have been considered habitable by anyone with democratic ideals. The country was swarming with Nazi war criminals. The chief butcher among them was Adolf Eichmann, the SS officer who was personally responsible for carrying out "the final solution of the Jewish problem." As America's outspoken Ambassador Spruille Braden bluntly stated, "there is no country in the world where the Nazis find themselves in such a strong position as . . . Argentina."2

The country was run by the smiling despot Juan Peron, characterized by Braden as "one of the few fascist dictators left in the world." In return, Peron looked upon his American adversary with disdain, bragging to supporters that he was going to "throw out the Yankee pig." For a brief moment in history, an explosive personal duel erupted between the two strong-willed men that personified the political expediency brought on by the cold war. Braden was determined to destroy Peron's political career and clean up Argentina's image as a "gangster-governed country. "[3]

Instead of destroying Peron, the Argentinian was elected president and, with his blonde wife Eva by his side, became the most powerful man in the country. Braden was sent home-replaced by the pragmatic friend of U.S. business, John Bruce, who immediately began to repair the damage by praising Peron as the greatest leader in Latin America. The Nazis were forgotten and Peron's image was transformed by U.S. policy and the press from that of a regressive strongman to a key figure in the collective self defense of the Americas against Communist aggression.[4]

America's changing views included a policy to allow German scientists hired by "friendly nations"-including Argentinato legally leave the U.S. zone of Germany and relocate in South America. Having pressured Latin American nations after the war to deport Germans and reduce German influences in their country under the State Department's "Safehaven" program, State was now being asked to approve the Germans' legal migration to South America.5

General Robert Walsh played a key role in the Argentine connection, as he had in earlier Paperclip plots. It was Walsh who initiated the policy in 1948, when he was reassigned from his position as EUCOM director of intelligence to the U.S. Air Force representative on the Inter-American Defense Board in Washington. Walsh was already a familiar figure at the

IADB. An IADB report describes him as "one of the oldest members in point of service in the history of the Inter-American Defense Board." He represented the Army Air Forces at the IADB's inaugural session in 1942, was AAF delegate on the IADB from 1945 to 1946, and was director of staff from 1948 to 1950. In addition, Walsh formulated the bases of the IADB's entire military plan when he was head of the U.S. delegation of the IADB from 1950 to 1952.[6]

The IADB still operates today in a shroud of secrecy, though its current activities certainly would interest Americans. Three of its member nations are headline news-Panama, Nicaragua, and El Salvador. And remember, this is the same IADB that received an award in 1986 from then Panamanian strongman Manuel Noriega when he attended an IADB conference in Washington. This dubious event occurred while Congress was investigating Noriega's involvement in assassinations and drug trafficking.7

The IADB is composed of military officers representing the highest echelons in the defense establishments of the member nations in the Organization of American States (OAS), including the United States. The U.S. delegation on the IADB is officially an agency of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, with military officers serving on the board as part of their regular military assignments. Although the IADB is a separate agency from the OAS, it receives its funding through that organization, which means that there is no public accounting of how that money is spent. There is also no public accounting of the IADB's secret activities, since Joint Chiefs of Staff records of the U.S. delegation are exempt from the Freedom of Information Act.8

In the late 1940s the U.S. delegation on the IADB was composed of military officers who were directly involved with the JIOA, Paperclip, or other U.S. intelligence operations using Nazis. In addition to Walsh, the IADB members included:

- former JIOA Director Francis Duborg, a Navy captain, who served on an IADB staff committee under an army general from Paraguay;
- Lieutenant General Alexander R. Bolling, who replaced Stephen Chamberlin as Army director of intelligence and godfather to the JIOA and Paperclip in late 1948, when Chamberlin became commander in chief of the Fifth Army in Illinois;
- General Edwin Sibert, who was chief of U.S. Army intelligence in Germany and supervised the operation to bring Hitler's spy chief Reinhard Gehlen to the United States in 1945;
- Army Chief of Staff Omar N. Bradley, who was Bolling's superior and later a guest speaker at an IADB meeting in 1952, when Bradley was chairman of the Joint Chiefs of Staff;
- Deputy Chief of Staff General Joseph Lawton Collins, who became Army chief of staff after Bradley in 1949; Collins also served on the Joint Intelligence Committee, which oversaw the JIOA's involvement with Paperclip.

All of these generals were criticized by Congress in 1948 when they were decorated by Peron himself and made honorary members of his armed forces while spending a week in expensive Buenos Aires villas as Peron's guests. Some congressmen thought it was inappropriate for U.S. military officers to accept honorary membership in the armed forces of a Fascist dictator who had collaborated openly with Hitler during World War IL[9]

Walsh and other U.S. delegates worked at the IADB with Latin American nations, in addition to Argentina, whose dictators harbored Nazi war criminals and used Gestapo tactics to prop up their repressive military regimes. Bolivia, Chile, and Paraguay (and later, Anastasio Somoza of Nicaragua) were all members of the board. Like Noriega, notorious Latin American leaders were flown to Washington and touted as honored guests at special

IADB assemblies held in their behalf. For example, the IADB's guest on June 19, 1953, was General Alfredo Stroessner of Paraguay, where Nazi doctor Josef Mengele, the "Angel of Death" in Auschwitz, was allowed to live in peace. Stroessner ruled Paraguay with an iron fist for over three decades until he was overthrown in a coup in 1989. He headed a government that repeatedly has been accused of genocide of ethnic Indians, child prostitution, gross human rights abuse, and heroin smuggling. In addition, in 1961 the IADB honored Brigadier General Alfredo Ovando Candia of Bolivia, where Klaus Barbie had taken refuge. Ovando, who was army chief of staff at the time, not only knew Barbie but served on the board of Barbie's shipping firm, Transmaritima.10

With this group of honorees connected to the IADB, it should not be surprising that the organization declared in one annual report that "the results of the work of this high inter-American body is anonymous and silent."11

Some of those "anonymous" activities began in 1948, when the IADB implemented a plan to reequip and retrain all Latin American armed forces as a major defense against Soviet aggression. As a result the United States sold Peron $4 million worth of surplus weapons and ammunition. This contrasted sharply with earlier U.S. policy that banned weapons sales to Argentina because Peron already had armed his military with a stockpile of weapons obtained from Nazis during the war and had used those weapons against his political opponents.12

Part of the IADB's strategy, in which Walsh played a large part, was to retrain the Latin American armies and air forces in tactics standardized to conform with those of the U.S. military. The Argentine air force included a number of ex-Luftwaffe pilots, including Hitler's flying ace, Hans Rudel. Rudel was a diehard Nazi who used his personal friendship with Peron to obtain jobs for around one hundred members of his wartime Luftwaffe staff in Argentina's air force. Rudel had paid a Croatian priest in the Vatican to smuggle his Nazi friends out of Germany.'[3]

Peron's army was even more problematic. Many Gestapo criminals on the U.S. Army's war crimes wanted lists now served in Argentina's army. Wiedemann even talked about them when he first arrived in Buenos Aires. "There are now so many former Gestapo men in the intelligence service here that it is riskier to tell a joke about Argentine Government personages in German than in Spanish," Wiedemann quipped.14

Braden had charged that the Buenos Aires police force included Gestapo officers who were responsible for the sadistic torture methods used on political prisoners jailed for opposing Peron's regime. The prisoners had been stripped naked, savagely beaten, tortured with prolonged electrical shocks to their genitals, and burned with lighted matches and cigarettes. But when Braden complained about the torture methods, Police Chief Juan Filomeno Velazco, a known Nazi sympathizer, remarked that "the police assign no importance to the so-called Nazi and Fascist tendencies." The legacy of the Gestapo's torture methods would haunt Argentina decades later, when death squads used similar methods to torture and murder thousands of people in the country that is now called the land of the "disappeared."15

German scientists were in the forefront of the IADB's plan to revitalize Argentina's defense, and the board urged Latin American nations to pursue the "scientific research of the future." As a result Argentina, Chile, Bolivia, and other Latin American countries accelerated their recruiting of German scientists and other experts who could design new airplanes, tanks, and weapons to defend the Americas.16

One of Argentina's biggest enclaves of German scientists was headed by Kurt Tank, former director of the Focke-Wulf aircraft factory and well-known fighter plane designer. Peron put Tank back in the jet fighter business at the National Institute for Air Technology at

Cordoba. Tank moved into a chalet near the institute so that he could travel the winding mountainous road to work in minutes.17

Argentina had been actively recruiting scientists in Germany since 1945, but that work was illegal and underground. The U.S. Military Governor of Germany Lucius Clay had to approve exit permits for any German who wanted to leave the U.S. zone in Germany legally: But that did not stop the scientists from quietly sneaking out of Germany through several illegal routes.

One route involved the INTR-Service, a Frankfurt travel bureau that was in reality a secret recruiting station for German scientists. One German engineer, Joachim Stauff, contacted INTR-Service in 1948 to find a job in Argentina. Stauff was told that he could obtain passage to Argentina more expeditiously if he would find a group of German scientists to go there with him. In the meantime Stauff signed a Paperclip contract and boarded a boat for America. During the trip, Stauff tried to convince Peenemunde's General Walter Dornberger and other Paperclip recruits who were on the ship to go to Argentina. Army intelligence agents investigated Stauff's recruiting tactics soon after he arrived in America. Later he was judged a security threat and sent back to Germany.18

Kurt Tank used another illegal route through Copenhagen, Denmark. He slipped out of Germany in disguise, with a phoney name and false papers provided by Peron himself. In Copenhagen a former aide to the German commander in chief in Denmark helped Tank slip through airport security along with more than one hundred other German scientists being smuggled to Argentina. Tank finally arrived in Buenos Aires via Denmark, London, and Lisbon, with microfilm of his fighter plane designs hidden safely in his trousers.19

Sixty of Tank's colleagues soon joined him by the same illegal route. Hans Schubert was among the first arrivals. Then came the former heads of the Focke-Wulf design offices, Wilheim Bansemir and Paul Klages. Ludwig Mittelhuber came, as did the theoretician Hebert Wolff and Dr. Otto Pabst, the specialist in the dynamics of gases. Heintzelmann arrived to deal with statics, and Wehrse and Plock, specializing in construction materials and questions of workshop techniques. Paul Rothkegal was there with a wide variety of specialists in design and mathematical calculation. They all left Germany illegally and brought their families to live on the mountain slopes near Cordoba and work for Tank at the aeronautical institute.20

Tank conducted business as usual in Argentina, designing a new high-speed fighter with swept wings based on the *Pulqui* for the Peron government. The original *Pulqui* was designed by a Frenchman, Emile Dewoitine, who had fled France to escape trial as a Nazi collaborator. By the time Tank's fighter, the *Pulqui* II, made its public debut in 1951, he and Peron were close friends. As the designer and test pilot flew the new plane over a cheering crowd, Peron expressed "the gratitude of the nation" to Tank for making a substantial contribution to Argentina's military aviation industry.21

In 1950 Walsh seized on the idea of not only legalizing exit routes but encouraging Germans to work in Latin America. To work out the plan, Walsh held several meetings with JIOA Director Daniel Ellis, who was a colonel in the U.S. Air Force. The sole purpose was to get the scientists away from the Russians. "From our viewpoint, which the British share, it is a big advantage to have these scientists in the safe areas of the Western Hemisphere, thereby denying them to the Russians," Ellis explained. The plan would provide jobs for a number of scientists whom neither America nor Britain wanted to employ. These included a group of Peenemunde rocket engineers who had fled to the West after working for the Soviets.22

But the U.S. political advisor in Germany, Robert Murphy, was vehemently against including Argentina in the plan. "Argentina has given asylum to many hundreds, if not

thousands, of German specialists," Murphy told the secretary of state. "Quite apart from the problem raised by the infiltration of such elements into an area whose Government is not notably

friendly towards the U.S., the question arises as to whether Argentina should be permitted to superimpose legal recruitment of German specialists on top of its large-scale illegal program. "[23]

The plan was ultimately approved and became official U.S. policy, despite State's objections. Brazil was given first choice of the scientists on JIOA's list. At least that country had been an ally during World War II, unlike Argentina. The Germans recruited under the program were those whose skills were not desired by the United States or Great Britain. Ellis distributed 250 brochures describing Brazil's job opportunities to Germans on the JIOA list. He also arranged for Army intelligence agents to conduct limited background investigations in order to exclude Communist sympathizers from the employment lists. Ellis considered Nazi background checks irrelevant.2[4]

Gerhard Schulze, a German engineer in Berlin, was one of the first scientists to leave Germany under the new policy. Schulze had worked in Brazil during the war and wanted to return. Eleven other scientists quickly signed up for the trip. All of them were working as consultants for the U.S. high commissioner in Germany. The group included chemical warfare expert Max Gruber.25

Other German and Austrian scientists eventually made Latin America their home. Franz Gerlach headed a biological warfare unit at the Bacteriological Institute in Santiago, Chile. In 1945 Gerlach had been fired from his position as director of the Veterinary Epidemiology Institute in Austria because of his wartime Nazi activities. Friedrich Fleischhacker worked in a forging plant in Brazil. And Ferdinand Porsche, the famous designer of Volkswagens and Panzer (Tiger) tanks, signed a contract with Argentina to produce automobiles on a large scale.26

Meanwhile, Walsh and the JIOA found an even more sinister use for their Argentine and IADB connections by arranging a safe haven for a scientist who was a notorious Nazi war criminal. General Walter Schreiber had been chief of the Sanitary Division of the Military Medical Academy-the division that had had jurisdiction over numerous experiments conducted in the camps. Schreiber also had been a member of the Reich Research Council, which had supported, funded, and commissioned these experiments.27

In one instance, he personally assigned doctors to work on epidemic jaundice experiments at the Sachsenhausen and Natzweiler camps, where prisoners died as a result of being deliberately infected with the disease. On another occasion Schreiber was the senior officer present at a meeting in which Dr. Ding-Schuler was ordered to inject Buchenwald camp prisoners with phenol to see how long it took them to die. Five prisoners were murdered in cold blood this way. "They sat down on a chair quickly, that is without emotion, near a light," Ding-Schuler later confessed. "During the injection they died in a momentary total cramp without any sign of other pain." He notified Schreiber's group in Berlin that the men had died in "about '/z second." After confessing to this and other crimes, Ding-Schuler later committed suicide in prison. SS Brigadier General Joachim Mrugowsky, who also attended the meeting, was convicted at Nuremberg and hanged.2[8]

Schreiber, on the other hand, was captured by Russian troops in 1945 and held prisoner in various POW camps, including the infamous Lubjanka Prison in Moscow. He attended Antifa schools to undergo Communist indoctrination and was trained to take over as chief of sanitation for the East German police. In 1946 he was taken to Nuremberg to testify before

the International Military Tribunal as a Soviet witness for the prosecution. Associate U. S. Prosecutor Alexander Hardy was shocked to see Schreiber, since his name was on a list of two hundred persons implicated in medical crimes who were supposed to be under arrest. Hardy and other American Nuremberg officials told the Soviets that Schreiber was wanted for interrogation and possible trial. But the Soviets quickly took him back to Russia. "I was unofficially informed that he was working on some `hot' assignment for the Russians and that they required his services without interruption," Hardy reported.[29]

Two years later Schreiber reappeared in West Berlin and told reporters at a press conference that he had miraculously escaped from his captors. But his arrival in the West was amid rumors that he was a Soviet plant. A former Soviet POW told Army CIC agents that Schreiber had cooperated willingly with the Soviets during his capture and that his flight to freedom "was not a flight at all but a mission." Despite this warning, Army intelligence employed him for the next few years as a doctor at Camp King in Oberusal, Germany. He also was a CIA source of information on a project involving the use of drugs in interrogations.[30]

In September 1951 the JIOA brought Schreiber to the United States under Paperclip to work for the Air Force School of Aviation Medicine at Randolph Field, Texas, where General Harry Armstrong already was protecting Hubertus Strughold from being exposed to the public. Schreiber was employed in the Department of Global Preventative Medicine to work on military medical problems of survival, nutrition, and sanitation in remote areas of the world.[31]

But Schreiber's employment was short-lived as a result of complaints over his mere presence in America. Hardy and former Nuremberg medical investigator Leo Alexander complained to the White House and filed lengthy reports of Schreiber's crimes based on Nuremberg evidence that identified him by name.[32]

At the same time, a Ravensbrueck concentration camp survivor told U.S. immigration officials in Boston that she had seen Schreiber during a conference held at the camp to discuss experiments in which she was used as a guinea pig. Janina Iwanska was one of seventy-four female members of the Polish Resistance who were victims of gas gangrene and bone transplant experiments. The women underwent operations in which their legs were split open and deliberately infected with ground glass, wood shavings, and mustard gas. In some cases the bones were completely removed from their legs. Five women died from the experiments, six were shot, and the remainder were crippled for life.[33]

Schreiber was one of the biggest Nazi war criminals employed in the entire history of the project. Yet the attitude expressed by JIOA and Air Force officers when confronted with massive evidence of this man's crimes exemplified the anti-Semitism, the callous disregard for U.S. laws, and the total lack of any consideration of morality that plagued Paperclip for decades.

One glaring example of this attitude was expressed by General Armstrong, by now the surgeon general of the U.S. Air Force, when he told a group of physicians that "there is no evidence we know of that he is guilty of any crime other than serving his country during the war the same as I served mine." Remember that this is the same man who earlier admitted protecting Strughold and employed Nuremberg defendant Konrad Schaefer when Armstrong was in charge of the aeromedicine division in Texas.34

By February 1952 the Pentagon was besieged with complaints and bad publicity over Schreiber. Air Force Secretary Thomas Finletter finally told the American ,public that he had ordered the Air Force to drop Schreiber from its payroll and that the Air Force would "make no

further use of him." Finletter also claimed that Schreiber was "under military custody" and expected to "leave the U.S. in a few weeks."35

The Air Force did not drop Schreiber, his Paperclip contract had expired. And when that contract ended, JIOA Director Benjamin Heckemeyer simply signed him up under a new short-term contract in another JIOA project, called "63." Furthermore, Schreiber was not under military custody, he was in hiding at his daughter's home in California. And despite Finletter's assertion that Schreiber would leave the country, no one quite knew what to do with him. The CIA had squelched plans to send him back to Germany out of fear that he would be kidnapped by the Russians. The commanding officer at Randolph Field, General Otis Benson, was even trying to get him a college teaching job. Benson told numerous universities that Schreiber was the victim of an organized movement of "medical men of Jewish ancestry" and asked them to hire Schreiber. "He is too hot for me to keep here on

public funds, but I like and respect the man and hope I can help him in my role as a private citizen," Benson told one university representative.36

Schreiber settled the problem when he told the Air Force that he wanted to go to Buenos Aires, where his other daughter lived. That is when the IADB and General Walsh entered the picture. On February 12, 1952, JIOA Director Heckemeyer asked Walsh to help Schreiber find a job so that he could resettle in Argentina. Walsh began working on the problem the very same day, when he attended a special IADB function held in honor of Argentina's Brigadier Mayor Aristobulo F. Reyes, whom he had known for a number of years. Reyes served as the Argentine delegate to the IADB from 1945 to 1949 and in 1955.37

Walsh's collaborator in this scheme was Lieutenant General Charles L. Bolte, who had replaced Walsh in 1948 as director of intelligence at EUCOM and now was chairman of the IADB. Walsh and Bolte held several meetings with Reyes to discuss Schreiber's case. They told him that Schreiber could make a valuable contribution to the Argentine government, considering his extensive experience in sanitary engineering and his research in the prevention of disease and epidemics. Of course, they did not mention that Schreiber had obtained his expertise as a result of experiments conducted on concentration camp inmates. Instead, in a memo Walsh portrayed Schreiber as an innocent victim of adverse publicity instigated by Jews in the United States. "Dr. Schreiber apparently had some association with the Nazi regime and I would believe in a completely military capacity," Walsh explained. He told Reyes that Finletter was aware of their negotiations, and as proof of their good faith, Walsh showed Reyes a copy of Finletter's public statement.38

Reyes returned to Argentina, and after he and a U.S. Air Force officer in Buenos Aires pulled a few strings, the Argentine government approved Schreiber's immigration. On May 22, 1952, Schreiber, his wife, his mother in-law, and his son left New Orleans to resettle in Buenos Aires.39

But that was not the end of the Argentina-Paperclip connection. By the late 1950s the JIOA was bringing German scientists who worked in Argentina to the United States under Paperclip and National Interest. Glenn Martin aircraft (now Martin Marietta) and Republic Aviation had recruited a large number of former Focke-Wulf aircraft engineers and designers who were part of Kurt Tank's group and brought them back to America.

One Focke-Wulf designer had been working for Martin since 1950. Hans Multhopp, a former Nazi party member, designed a jet fighter while working for Focke-Wulf in Bremen during the war that the Russians later developed into the MIG15. After the war Multhopp and other German aviation experts worked at Farnborough, England, contributing to

Britain's fighter plane development. Multhopp was brought to the United States in 1950 and became chief scientist at the MartinBaltimore Division. In 1964 Martin proudly displayed another aircraft designed by Multhopp that could take off from the Pentagon courtyard with a 1,000-pound bomb and fly at a speed of 300 miles per hour.40

In 1957 the chief of personnel for the Army's rocket group in Huntsville, Alabama, which included Wernher von Braun, planned to go on a recruiting trip to Argentina. He asked JIOA officers for their opinions about hiring Tank's group. But the JIOA immediately squelched the idea. "The Germans remaining, with a couple of exceptions, are not outstanding," the JIOA officers replied. They went on to explain that the majority of Tank's group already was working in the United States.41

---

1. Milton Bracker, "Quislings Receive Argentine Refuge," *The New York Times,* 27 March 1949.

2. On Eichmann see Wisliceny affidavit, 29 November 1945, Office of U.S. Counsel for Prosecution of Axis Criminality, *Nazi Conspiracy and Aggression,* vol. 8 (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1946 48), p. 610. Braden-Peron conflicts: in Gary Frank, *Juan Peron* v. Spruille *Braden: The Story Behind the Blue Book* (Lanham, Md.: University Press of America, i980). See also Silvano Santander, J*uan Domingo Peron y Eva* Duarte, *agentes del* nazismo en las Argentina (Buenos Aires: Editorial Antygua, 1955).

3. Frank,,3'uan *Peron* vs. Spruille *Braden;* and Santander,,~uan Domingo *Peron y* Eva Duarte.

4. Ibid.

5. SANACC 257/36.

6. For Walsh history with the IADB see "IADB Yearbook 1952."

7. Noriega-IADB story was reported by the Associated Press, 12 June 1986. Noriega bestowed the Panamanian medal on Lieutenant General John Schweitzer, chairman of the U.S. delegation to the IADB.

8. *The Inter-American Defense Board* (Washington, D.C.: IADB, 1987).

9. Milton Bracker, "Peron Decorates General Ridgway, Aides; Awards May Stir Congressional Questions," *The New York Times, IS* July 1949; "Seven U.S. Generals Honored," *The New York Times, 1* September 1948.

10. For Stroessner visit see "IADB Yearbook 1953." Strcessner's background and Paraguay: in Scott Anderson and Jon Anderson, *lnside the League* (New York: Dodd, Mead, 1986). For Ovando visit see "IADB Yearbook 1961"; for Ovando-Barbie connection see Magnus Linklater, Isabel Hilton, and Neal Ascherson, *The Nazi Legacy* (New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1984).

11. Quote is from "IADB Yearbook 1953."

I2. For a discussion of policy see Inter-American Military Cooperation Act, 23 June 1947, H.R. 3836, 80th Cong., lst sess. On Barbie see Linklater, Hilton, and Ascherson, *Nazi Legacy.*

13. Ladislas Farago, *Aftermath* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1974); and *Inter-American Defense Board.*

14. Milton Bracker, "Anti-Peron Group Pushes Nazi Issue," *The New York Times,* 25 July 1949.

15. Department of State, "Consultation Among the American Republics With Respect to the Argentine Situation," memorandum, February 1946, otherwise known as the "Blue Book," RG 59, NARS. This is a State Department-FBI investigation of Argentina's collaboration with Nazis during World War II that Braden used against Peron during elections. See Frank, *Juan Peron vs. Spruille Braden.*

16. Farago, *Aftermath;* and *Inter-American Defense Board.*

17. Heinz Conradis, *Design for Flight: The Kurt Tank Story* (London: MacDonald, 1960).

18. Memo, Secretary of State to U.S. Political Adviser on German Affairs, 19 September 1947, 862.542/9-1947, RG 59, NARS.

19. Conradis, *Design for Flight;* letter, Society for the Prevention of World War III to Under Secretary of State Robert Lovett, 16 April 1948, 862.20235/4-1648, RG 59, NARS.

20. Conradis, *Design for Flight.*

21. Ibid.; "Peron Pushes Industry," *The New York Times, 9* February 1951.

22. See attachments to memo, JIOA Director Daniel Ellis to Robert Spalding, Intelligence Adviser, Department of State, 10 July 1951, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

23. Memo, Robert Murphy to Secretary of State, 18 December 1948, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.
24. See Ellis to Spalding, including attachments.

25. Schulze is discussed in SANACC 257/28; Gruber and HICOG group are discussed in JIOA Director Daniel Ellis to O. L. De Barenguer Cesar, Brazilian Embassy, 9 February 1951, JIOA memo 263, in JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.
26. "Austrian Scientists," IRR dossier, RG 319, NARS.

27. Walter Schreiber's bio and connections to the Reich Research Council are from Alexander Hardy, "The Case of Walter Schreiber," memorandum, 17 February 1952, in Schreiber's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.
28. Ibid. Ding-Schuler quote is from Nuremberg doc. NO-257.

29. Schreiber's Antifa training: CIC investigation report, 15 December 1949; and Hardy, "Case of Walter Schreiber"- both in the Walter Schreiber JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.
30. Minutes of Schreiber's press conference, 19 November 1948, and CIC interrogation of Karl Buesing, 3 December 1948, are in ODI subject file, RG 260, WNRC. For CIA interrogation of Schreiber and other sources see CIA, "Background and Procedures Used in the Preparation of Defendants for Confessions," memo, n.d., John Marks files, NSA.
31. Brigadier General Otis Benson, Jr., to Commanding General, Air University, 4 June 1951, in JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS. 32. Hardy, "Case of Walter Schreiber"; and Dr. Leo Alexander to Dr. John Conlin, February 1952- both in the Walter Schreiber JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.
33. INS Boston, "Statement of Janina Iwanski," 27 February 1952, in the Walter Schreiber JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.
34. Armstrong quote is in memo, Dr. Edward Young, Physicians Forum, February 1952, in the Walter Schreiber JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.
35. Finletter release: in Schreiber's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS. 36. Benson is quoted in memo, Dr. Gaylord Anderson to the Association of Schools of Public Health, 6 February 1952, in Schreiber's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.
37. JIOA Director Colonel Benjamin W. Heckemeyer to Major General Robert L. Walsh, Chairman, L'.S. Delegation IADB, JIOA memo 238, 12 February 1952, in JIOA administrative files, Miscellaneous Correspondence, RG 330, NARS. For meeting of 12 February 1952 to honor Reyes see "IADB Yearbook 1952" and "IADB Yearbook 1955."
38. For Reyes meetings see Headquarters, USAF to USAIRA Buenos Aires, cable AFOIN-52571, 14 February 1952, and letter, Walsh to Argentine Air Attache, 28 February 1952; Walsh quote is in letter, Walsh to Reyes, 17 March 1952- a11 in the Walter Schreiber JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.
39. Schreiber later worked in Paraguay, according to the *International Herald Tribune*, 21 February 1983; for details of Schreiber's departure for Buenos Aires see letter, JIOA Director Colonel Benjamin Heckemeyer to

James Riley, U.S. Immigration, 19 June 1952, in JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.
40. Multhopp's Nazi party membership and biography are from Agent Report, signed by Sergeant Cornelius Walsh, 22 December 1949, in Hans Multhopp's INSCOM dossier; and "Martin Company Claims Plane Can Fly From Pentagon," *Washington Post*, 14 April 1964.
41. On Glenn Martin, Republic Aviation, Kurt Tank, and the ABMA recruiter see memo, Colonel Harlan Holman to Assistant Chief of Staff, G-2, 29 August 1957, in ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC (declassified per author's FOIA request).

10 Spies, Spooks, and LSD

EDGEWOOD Arsenal, the most secret military base in the country, is located in a secluded area on the Chesapeake Bay twenty miles northeast of Baltimore, Maryland. A high fence stretches for miles around the facility to shield the Army's secret work on chemical warfare from the prying eyes of the American public. The arsenal has always been the Army's center for chemical warfare and the base's original mission has never changed. It is charged with finding out how and why poison gas works; discovering antidotes to its lethal effects; and inventing new, ever-deadlier clouds of poison that bring a swift, painful death.1

Edgewood was the first American installation to test lethal agents on humans. The experiments began in 1922, when the Chemical Warfare Service created a Medical Research Division charged with providing a defense against chemical agents.

Since that time, thousands of military and civilian "volunteers" have been used in experiments with mustard and nerve gas, riot-control agents, LSD, PCP, mescaline, and hundreds of other chemicals, including many that had been rejected by manufacturers for commercial use because they contained deadly poisons, such as dioxin.2

Some of those experiments were conducted at Edgewood's medical facilities, in isolation rooms with barred windows, padded walls, and furniture bolted to the floor. It was in such a room that Master Sergeant James Stanley was locked in February 1958. The young soldier was based at Fort Knox, Kentucky, and had volunteered to participate in experiments to test protective chemical warfare clothing. Instead Stanley became an unwitting victim of mind-control experiments with psychochemicals, including LSD.[3]

Stanley remembered sitting across a table from a whitecoated doctor with two glasses of clear liquid between them. "Here, have a drink," said the doctor, as he handed Stanley one of them. "It's only water, nothing more than what I drink," the doctor promised, knowing full well that it contained LSD. An hour later Stanley thought he had gone insane. His head was filled with terrifying visions and his body seemed to tumble through time and space. Then his mind snapped and sent him into a frenzy of rage.[4]

"They told me the next day that I broke down the door and ran down the hall screaming," Stanley recalled. But his misery continued as he underwent three more experiments. In one he was given an even stronger dose of LSD, which made him violently ill. The other experiments were apparently an attempt to induce amnesia. Stanley was injected with an unknown substance and then asked if he knew where he was. The soldier felt as if his body was on fire, and he vaguely remembered telling the doctor that he was standing by a river. The last experiment was more successful at wiping away his memory. "I cannot account for that day at all," Stanley said.5

The story of Edgewood provides another glaring example of how information about Paperclip is still being covered up today-despite a massive congressional investigation in the 1970s into Edgewood's experiments, and despite legal action Stanley took that by 1986 had worked its way up to the U.S. Supreme Court. For all that, the secret Paperclip connections at the base remain unexposed.

The fact that Paperclip scientists worked at Edgewood at various times between 1947 and 1966 has been kept a closely guarded secret. Dr. Seymour Silver, who was scientific director of Edgewood during that time, is highly critical of the Paperclip project. "The whole

judgment of who to pick, what they did, and who they selected was very faulty, very bad," Silver recalled, adding that none of the scientists were experts on chemical warfare.6

Kurt Rahr was one of the first Paperclip specialists to arrive at the base. Rahr was young, brash, and had a background in high-frequency electronics. When he arrived in September 1947, he was evading a prison sentence, having been convicted by German courts of bigamy, falsifying papers, using an alias, and lying about his Nazi past. JIOA officers had received numerous reports that Rahr was a compulsive liar and a security threat. His OMGUS *Security Report* noted: "Subject should be considered an absolute security threat to the United States."7

Despite the derogatory reports, JIOA approved Rahr's Paperclip contract and he was assigned to work at Edgewood. Army officers there did not know quite what to do with him. Lieutenant F. E. Van Sickle complained that Rahr made "conflicting statements" about his past, but he brushed them off as evidence of an "unusual imagination." The Army confined his work to unclassified areas, such as repairing equipment and translating Russian documents. In 1948 another German scientist, Hans Trurnit, accused Rahr of being a Communist, and Rahr was sent back to Germany.[8]

Trurnit himself arrived at Edgewood in 1947 and went to work in Silver's toxicology laboratory. During the war, Trurnit had joined the Nazi party and four other Nazi organizations. From 1934 until 1940 he was an assistant to the notorious

Professor Holzlöhner at the University of Kiel, though Trurnit left the university shortly before Holzlohner became heavily involved in the cold experiments on Dachau prisoners discussed earlier. Trurnit then worked for a short time at the University of Heidelberg before joining the German military medical corps. "He was never in chemical warfare," Silver said. "He went to Stalingrad, got tuberculosis, and was medically discharged out of the Army for a couple of years until the war stopped." While Trurnit may not have been a Nazi ideologue, his wife was. "She was a Hitler lover who couldn't stand a democracy, so she went back to Germany," Silver said in an interview.[9]

Another Paperclip scientist, Theodor Wagner-Jauregg, arrived in *1948*. He too had been a member of the Nazi party and four other Nazi organizations. Wagner-Jauregg had been chief of chemical research at the Institute for Chemotherapeutics in Frankfurt, where his research focused on the use of chemotherapy to cure leprosy, tuberculosis, and typhus. After the war Wagner-Jauregg worked on insecticides at the German Society for Pest Control. "His father was Sigmund Freud's antagonist," recalled Silver. The elder Wagner-Jauregg was the famous Austrian psychiatrist whom Freud publicly criticized for treating schizophrenia by injecting patients with malaria virus.10

Friedrich Hoffmann was the fourth Paperclip scientist to arrive at Edgewood in the late *1940s*. He was not a Nazi party member, and although he applied for SA membership, he did not join that Nazi organization either. During the war Hoffmann was a chemist who synthesized poison gases and toxins for the University of Wuerzburg's Chemical Warfare Laboratories and the Luftwaffe's Technical Research Institute located near Berlin. In 1946 he worked as a consultant for the Chemical Section of OMGUS in Berlin.11

The German scientists' main job under Paperclip was to test the poison gases that had been invented by the Nazis during the war. Two nerve gases, Tabun and Sarin, were the most deadly agents the American military had ever encountered,

and it was essential that new types of gas masks and protective clothing, as well as an antidote to their lethal effects, be developed. Wagner-Jauregg worked on an anti-inflammatory drug for poison gas infections. Hoffmann compiled bibliographies of literature

on toxic chemicals, wrote reports, and conducted tests using some of the 10 tons of nerve and mustard gas that had been shipped from Germany to Edgewood and other American arsenals in 1946. Trurnit worked on physics problems and built a special machine in Silver's lab to measure thin films.12

To learn how Tabun affected humans, the scientists analyzed data in captured German documents dealing with Tabun nerve gas experiments on concentration camp inmates. One American scientist, Dr. J. H. Wills, used the camp experiment records to determine not only the amount needed to kill a human but the specific effects of Tabun, such as its ability to render a man unconscious within two minutes. Wills's final report noted an obvious conclusion: the "age of the subject seemed to make no difference in the lethality of the toxic vapor."13

Soldiers at the base were used as the guinea pigs in Tabun and mustard gas experiments conducted in Edgewood's own gassing chamber. In a scene horribly reminiscent of the Nazi death camps, Don Bowen remembered what it was like to sit in the large chamber and breathe the toxic fumes. After being led in, he was told to remove his gas mask at a given signal. As he waited he saw that there were dozens of animals, including dogs, cats, mice and rabbits, locked in cages covered with a clear plastic sheet along one side of the chamber. Then someone slammed the door shut and turned on the gas.14

"I waited five minutes and took off the mask," he said. The covers were ripped off the animals, and they went crazy. They ran around the cages, screaming, and then slumped onto the floor. "My immediate response was not to breathe. And when I finally did take a deep breath, the gas burned my nose, my lips and throat."15

Some of the soldiers were seriously injured in the mustard tests. Two were hospitalized after being exposed to mustard gas up to fourteen separate times in the gassing chamber, and many others suffered serious skin injuries, including blistering that took several weeks to heal, after swatches of liquid mustard were taped to their arms. One Edgewood scientist noted in a report that in 1948 several soldiers who had been exposed to low concentrations of Tabun in Edgewood's chamber were "partially disabled for from one to three weeks with fatigue, lassitude, complete loss of initiative and interest, and apathy." 16

In 1949 the direction of Edgewood's work abruptly changed. A consultant to the Chemical Division at EUCOM sent information about an amazing drug, LSD, that caused hallucinations and suicidal tendencies in humans. As a result, Edgewood's L. Wilson Greene seized the idea of conducting "psychochemical warfare." He listed sixty-one compounds, ranging from alcohol to mescaline, and speculated that if a small percentage of the enemy's troops or civilian population was exposed to those compounds they would suffer from symptoms of hysteria, panic, seizures, and hallucinations. "There can be no doubt that their will to resist would be weakened greatly, if not entirely destroyed, by the mass hysteria and panic which would ensue," Greene noted in his report. He then suggested that $50,000 be set aside in the 1950 budget to study psychochemicals.17

Ironically, Greene was trying to find a more humane way to wage war-one that would disable an enemy rather than kill him. But the CIA and military intelligence had a more sinister idea. They thought psychochemicals could be used as a cold war weapon to control the mind of an individual being interrogated. They suspected that the Soviets already were using brainwashing techniques, including hypnosis and drugs, on POWs and defendants in political trials. During the Hungarian government's trial of Cardinal Jozsef Mindszenty in 1949, for example, the cardinal confessed to crimes of treason he apparently did not commit, while sitting with a glazed look in his eyes.'[8]

The intelligence agencies' key sources of information on anything related to chemical warfare were German or Austrian scientists who had worked for I. G. Farben-the company involved in manufacturing the Zyklon B gas used in concentration camps-many of whom

were either in jail or under investigation by Nuremberg prosecutors. For example, Walter Reppe had been the chief chemist for I. G. Farben at Ludwigshaven and was jailed at Nuremberg shortly after the war. U.S. Army officers frequently got Reppe temporarily released from jail or transferred so that he could work on reports for the Army Chemical Corps. On September 14, 1948, Reppe and two of his former I. G. Farben associates were released into Army custody to work on an "opus" on acetylene derivatives. Colonel Patrick Fokers told a FIAT officer that Reppe's release from prison was justified because of the importance of acetylene chemistry to the U.S. Army. A year earlier U.S. Department of Commerce representative Robert Fry had told the State Department that even though Reppe was "very much a Nazi," he wanted to bring him to America under Paperclip. Fry's plans fell through when Reppe was taken to England to work for the British.19

One CIA source of information about "truth drugs" was Karl Tauboeck, I. G. Farben's leading wartime expert on sterilization drugs. Tauboeck had been the chief plant chemist at I. G. Farben's Ludwigshaven factory, where he specialized in the effects of drugs on animals and humans. After 1942 he devoted his time to research on the plant caladium seguenum, which the SS planned to use to sterilize mental patients and Jews. The SS wanted to keep this project secret, Tauboeck said, so that the "priests should not raise hell." Tauboeck testified at Nuremberg that he had recognized the criminal nature of the research and had not pursued it further. Others had, however. Hitler's personal physician, Karl Brandt, admitted that the plant was grown in a hothouse at Dachau and sterilization "experiments were conducted upon concentration camp prisoners. "20

After the war, Tauboeck gave the CIA and the Office of Naval Intelligence information about his secret wartime work on speech-inducing drugs. The Gestapo and Abwehr had been looking for a truth serum made from anabases aphylla plants to use on the German officers suspected of being involved in the plot to kill Hitler. They planned to slip the drug into the officers' drinks at a party, hoping they would confess. But Tauboeck said he could not locate enough plants to carry out the mission.21

Even with such information in hand, U.S. intelligence agents were tantalized by a number of unresolved questions: What chemical would force a man to reveal his secrets under interrogation? Could a drug cause total amnesia? Was there an antidote that would protect an American POW if the enemy used drugs on him? And the big question that preoccupied both Army intelligence and the CIA: could drugs or hypnosis, or a combination of both, serve as the ultimate mind-control weapon, sufficient to turn a man into a "Manchurian Candidate" (Richard Condon's fictional character who had been brainwashed and reprogrammed into an assassin)?

A combined CIA-military intelligence project code-named "Bluebird" and later renamed "Artichoke" was set up to find the answers to those questions. Significantly, the key military intelligence agency involved with this project-the Joint Intelligence Committee-had been involved in Paperclip from the beginning. The JIC members included U. S. Army Director of Intelligence Alexander Bolling and Brigadier General John Alexander Samford, the chief of Air Force intelligence who later headed the National Security Agency.

In addition to Bluebird, the CIA also began several mindcontrol projects of its own, including project MK-ULTRA, which involved LSD and other psychochemicals. The CIA's experiments eventually resulted in the death of Frank Olson, an Army scientist from Fort Detrick who jumped out of a hotel window after his CIA colleagues secretly slipped LSD into his drink.22

The link between Edgewood and the CIA was close. Many scientists who worked at Edgewood or under Edgewood contracts were on the CIA's payroll. Paperclip chemist

Friedrich Hoffmann was a CIA consultant on psychochemicals. Dr. Ray Treichler was simultaneously assistant to the director of Edgewood's Medical Laboratories, the division in charge of human experimentation at the base, and a member of the CIA's Technical Services Staff (TSS), which was involved in the covert use of chemicals and germs against specific people. Psychiatrist Harold Abramson was a CIA consultant involved in the Olson case who also worked for Edgewood.2[3]

At times the CIA used its covert methods on the Edgewood scientists themselves. "Do you know what a `self-sustained, off-the-shelf operation' means?" Silver asked in an interview, referring to the Iran-contra scandal. "Well, the CIA was running one in my lab. They were testing psychochemicals and running experiments in my lab, using my people, and weren't telling me. They were spying on us. I said, `You go spy on the enemy, not on us,' and I had the guard throw them out. It was a real off-the-shelf operation. "24

By 1951, in the midst of the Korean War, the Paperclip scientists' primary job was to locate plants and poisons that could be turned into new hallucinogenic mind-control drugs. To find them Silver established an industrial liaison operation that was in contact with every major pharmaceutical company in the world. "We had worldwide reports of any observations that produced peculiar results or death," he said. "If you look for new chemicals, you have to look everywhere-into the Pacific Ocean, or follow a rumor about a Polynesian fisherman who goes into a trance."25

Paperclip scientist Hoffmann's skills as a chemist and his facility in several languages quickly were put to use. "He was our searcher," Silver said. "He was the guy who brought to our attention any discoveries that happened around the world and then said, `Here's a new chemical, you'd better test it.' " Hoffmann's search led him all over the world. He traveled to foreign universities and visited marine labs and attended conferences in Switzerland, Czechoslovakia, Germany, England, Australia, Japan, and other countries. Toad venoms and poisonous fish from the South Pacific were among the samples that Hoffmann put into his black bag and brought back to Edgewood to be tested, synthesized, and turned into a new lethal agent or psychochemical. In Hawaii he found a conch shell that produced a highly active venom which it ejected through a hollow, needlelike tooth into its victim. The venom, according to Army intelligence records, caused "paralysis and visual blurring in man and has been responsible for several deaths. "26

Hoffmann often used the University of Delaware as a cover at international symposiums to hide his connection to Edgewood and the CIA. In fact, Hoffmann had collaborated with William Mosher, the chairman of the university's chemistry department, and another scientist, on an article about marijuana for the *Journal of the American Chemical Society*. But Mosher's chemistry department itself may have been a CIA front. Mosher had been on the CIA's payroll for years, and another University of Delaware professor, James Moore, was heavily involved in the CIA's MK-ULTRA project as well as being funded openly by the Army Chemical Corps. "We were all being paid by the CIA," Moore said recently. Moore described his department chief as an "opportunist" who used the CIA's funds not only for research but to pay graduate students and generally to build up the university's chemistry program.27

Bluebird made full use of Hoffmann's discoveries with psychochemicals in experiments conducted at Edgewood or the Army intelligence base at Fort Holabird, Maryland. The participation of the CIA and JIC in the project was kept hidden by using a University of Maryland contract with Edgewood as a cover. At least a thousand soldiers, including James

Stanley, were given up to twenty doses of LSD to test the drug as a possible interrogation weapon-even though Edgewood scientists already knew it could cause serious physical reactions in humans. In particular, Dr. Van Sim, the physician responsible for the human subjects used in Edgewood experiments, had worked at the British Chemical Defense Establishment at ' Porton Down, where similar psychochemical experiments were conducted on humans. Shortly after he returned to the United States, Sim warned that results of the British experiments had shown that "during acute LSD intoxication the subject is a potential danger to himself and to others; in some instances a delayed and exceptionally severe response may take place and be followed by serious after effects lasting several days."28

Nevertheless, test subjects at Edgewood or Fort Holabird were given LSD and other drugs, then subjected to hostile questioning by intelligence officers to deliberately create an extreme state of fear and anxiety. One soldier fought his way out of a locked box in stark terror during a Fort Holabird experiment. Several soldiers were seriously harmed by the tests. One man suffered a grand mal seisure; another went into an acute state of paranoia and had to be hospitalized for a week. Three others developed a history of epileptic seizures after the experiments. Like Stanley, none of the men knew what was happening to him.29

"I got shot in Korea and I can understand that," said Stanley. "That was part of my job because I was protecting my homeland. But when they give me LSD and use me as a guinea pig, then that is unforgivable."[30]

Another phase of the drug project involved interrogation teams, made up of three intelligence officers and a doctor, sent to Europe to assess how psychochemicals would work on suspected spies and defectors in a more "realistic" setting. The teams were under orders not to run their tests on Americans. But when a black American soldier, James Thornwell, emerged as a suspect in a document theft case in France, one team showed up to do a job on him. Thornwell later described in horrifying detail how he was locked in a room, pumped full of drugs, and grilled for days by interrogators who screamed obscenities at him. Thornwell later sued the government, claiming that the drugs had turned him into an epileptic. In 1984 Thornwell drowned in his own swimming pool. The coroner who examined him said the accident might have been caused by an epileptic seizure.[31]

With Bluebird off and running, Edgewood began preparing for Armageddon amid the chill of the cold war not only by relying on Nazis here at home for their evil experiments but also by tapping the twisted minds of those still living in Germany. As mentioned earlier, U.S. laws governing the American zone of Germany forbade the Germans from doing research on chemical warfare. But that did not stop the Army Chemical Corps or the High Commissioner of Germany, the U.S. organization that replaced OMGUS, from hiring chemical warfare experts as "consultants" or funding German industries to produce chemical warfare materials for the United States.[32]

West Germany came under severe criticism when evidence surfaced in 1989 that German chemical companies had been helping Libya build a chemical warfare plant. In particular, a column written by influential *New York Times* columnist William Safire refering to "Auschwitz-in-the-Sand" ominously cited the reemergence of "the German problem." But neither Safire nor anyone else mentioned that it was the U. S. government who had put the German chemical warfare experts back to work soon after World War II, under the banner of the American flag.33

The U.S. agencies' employment of German scientists living in the American zone was an enormous operation. At one point HICOG's scientific director, Carl Nordstrom, had at least 150 Germans working for him as consultants. They offered advice or gave U.S. agencies information about their wartime research. At the same time, the Army Chemical Corps employed some thirty German chemical warfare experts to conduct secret nerve gas research for the Chemical Division of EUCOM: Many of these scientists met with Hoffmann when he traveled to Germany seeking

information about psychochemicals or other new chemical discoveries. Others, like convicted Nazi war criminal Otto Ambros, were flown to the United States to work as consultants under National Interest for American corporations such as Ambros's employer, the W. R. Grace Company.[34]

Former SS Brigadier General Walter Schieber was among the more notorious individuals on the U.S. payroll. One army officer called him "the prototype of an ardent and convinced Nazi who used the Party to further his own ambitions." Nevertheless, he worked for more than a decade for the Chemical Division at EUCOM, where he was given access to highly classified information about U.S. chemical warfare activities. At one point he even helped the division make nerve gas.[35]

Schieber, a chemist, had been in charge of the Nazi Armaments Supply office under Albert Speer during the war. He supervised the seizure of arms factories in France and other Nazi-occupied countries, and later in the war oversaw the Nazi's chemical warfare program. Thousands of civilians were forcibly brought to Nazi Germany to work as slave laborers in armaments factories under Schieber's control. In 1945 he was jailed as a war crimes suspect.[36]

Speer was convicted at Nuremberg and sentenced to twenty years in prison, but Schieber saved his skin by serving as a star witness at the Nuremberg trials and writing chemical warfare reports for the U.S. Army while he was still in jail. By 1947 U.S. intelligence agents had decided that Schieber's knowledge of chemical warfare was more important than his Nazi past. "Several obstacles were overcome by American authorities before Schieber's scientific knowledge could be exploited," one Army CIC agent noted. One of those obstacles was removed when U.S. intelligence officers got him released from prison. Within a short time Schieber was making DM 1,000 a month working for the Chemical Division at EUCOM.[37]

Air Force Colonel Donald Putt tried to bring Schieber to Wright-Patterson under Paperclip, but his scheme was squelched by an Army CIC investigation of Schieber's involvement with shady characters all over Europe. Schieber had French contacts who had offered him $50,000 for Nazi nerve gas formulas contained in documents he kept in his house. Some of his Swiss friends were arms smugglers who supplied weapons to SS officers on the run. And Schieber's frequent business dealings with Soviet officials in the eastern zone raised Army CIC suspicions that he might be a spy. Schieber himself managed to kill the Army CIC's investigation by complaining to HICOG's Frank Perkerson that "convoys" of CIC agents constantly drove by his house and demanding that the CIC's investigation be stopped. Shortly afterward, one CIC agent wrote his superior in frustration, complaining that he "never received answers to leads forwarded, information requested or results of Central Registry checks." His investigation was squelched and Schieber continued working for the United States until 1956.[38]

The legacy of Paperclip back at home was set now that Edgewood had made its pact with the devil. The drug experimentation project quickly expanded to include psychiatric patients, who were drugged, shocked, and hypnotized in psychochemical experiments conducted under Army contracts with numerous universities and other institutions.

Some of the experiments duplicated those conducted by Nazi doctors in the concentration camps. American psychiatrist Paul Hoch's experiments on mental patients at the New York Psychiatric Institute, where he was working under Edgewood contracts and as a CIA consultant, killed one patient and seriously injured another. Harold Blauer died from an overdose of methyl di-amphetamine, or MDA, known on the street as the "love drug," the same day that another patient, a twentyone-year-old girl, went into convulsions after being injected with the same drug. As a federal judge later stated, "no diagnostic or therapeutic purpose for Blauer, himself, was ever intended from the injections." Their sole purpose was to gather data for the Army's investigation of the use of mescaline derivatives for interrogations. Even after Blauer's death, the Army approved additional experiments on patients that included the use of hypnosis, drugs, and a polygraph exam to determine if "a particular personality type might `break' more rapidly under a drug stress than another type" during military interrogations.[39]

In short, experiments on our own soldiers at Edgewood mirrored the horror stories that had unfolded in the dock at Nuremberg. Thousands of American soldiers, seven thousand of them

between 1955 and 1975 alone, were used as unwitting guinea pigs in the tests. They were gassed, maced, and drugged in the search for the ultimate mind-control weapon.40

Ironically, one part of the Nuremberg code was established to prevent a repeat of the Nazi atrocities. And the secretary of the Army ordered that the guidelines be followed at Edgewood. "The voluntary consent of the human subject is absolutely essential," the secretary directed in 1957. "This means that the person involved should have legal capacity to give consent; should be so situated as to be able to exercise free power of choice without the intervention of any element of force, fraud, deceit, duress, over-reaching, or other ulterior form of constraint or coercion." The secretary's directive further provided that "in all experiments involving volunteer test subjects, the individuals are thoroughly- informed about all procedures, and what can be expected during each test. "[4]1

But a 1975 investigation by the Army's inspector general determined that "in spite of clear guidelines concerning the necessity for `informed consent,' there was a willingness to dilute and in some cases negate the intent of the policy." The inspector general's report noted that soldiers who were duped into volunteering to test chemical warfare clothing and gas masks were then secretly given nerve gas, psychochemicals, incapacitating agents, and hundreds of other experimental and dangerous drugs. They were given no information about the chemicals used on them in the experiments, no warning that those chemicals might harm them, and no follow-up medical exam to determine whether they had been hurt by the tests.[4]2

In one series of experiments the Army's search for a chemical that would produce total amnesia led them to Sernyl (SNA) -now commonly known as PCP or angel dust-an extremely dangerous drug. SNA originated as a general anesthetic but was taken off the market for human use because it caused delirium as patients emerged from the anesthesia. SNA is known to produce a delayed psychotic reaction similar to schizophrenia, and long-term effects can include permanent brain damage. Soldiers were given SNA orally or in aerosol form while walking on treadmills. The experiment apparently succeeded in producing total amnesia in at least one subject. Two other soldiers had intense "manic" reactions after being given doses of SNA with alcohol, and three more collapsed during the experiments.[43]

Other experiments involved at least 123 irritant chemicals, including one that had been contaminated with dioxin. These agents included Mace and CS, an even stronger riot-control agent that causes extreme irritation to mucous membranes. One group of men were subjected to five consecutive aerosol exposures of Mace. They stood inside a gas chamber and were told to take off their gas masks, then resist leaving until the pain became unbearable. Another 1,366 soldiers were exposed to CS, including some who had the agent dropped directly into their eyes.44

Steven Bonner was locked inside a padded room at Edgewood and given intravenous injections of CAR 302,688, an extremely potent incapacitating agent. The experiment itself was terrifying for him-Bonner imagined seeing enormous black spiders crawling all over the walls and ceiling of his room. Afterward, his life was cruelly endangered when he was shipped to a combat zone in Vietnam, where he had to fight off flashbacks while on guard duty.[4]5

In late 1957 Edgewood doctors placed eight glasses of clear liquid in front of Kenneth Loeh and seven other men. Lceh remembered that things got "funny and giggly" before he and the others went outside to march. "It was about this time I began to realize something was wrong." A buzzing started over him, then he saw pulsating circles "like a Looney Tune cartoon. I remember falling out of ranks and walking to the side and telling this guy `I want out of this!' I started feeling the tightness in my chest and the hands going numb." Loeh remembered falling down and hanging onto a soldier's pant leg.46

It was then that Loeh realized he was no longer a volunteer, but a victim. He tried to scream. "But when my mouth opened I felt like I was swallowing myself. I thought I was going to die. Then I blacked out."47

Several soldiers suffered grand mal seizures as a result of experiments. One man went into a seizure three hours after having been injected with 2-PAM, a strong incapacitating agent. Another was hospitalized for anxiety, restlessness, and agitation after being given four different compounds,

including an intravenous injection of the Soman nerve agent. Another soldier was sent to Walter Reed Army Hospital for psychiatric observation after being given a compound known to cause vomiting, nausea, and dehydration that gave him attacks of anxiety, acute agitation, and hysteria. Still another soldier reported having blood in his urine for at least a year after having been intravenously injected with a compound called EA3834.[48]

Many soldiers felt the residual effects of the experiments long after they left Edgewood. "I have experienced memory loss and my personality has changed dramatically," Bonner said. But that was only the beginning of Bonner's nightmare. His first child was born with multiple birth defects: an open spine, paralysis from the waist down, and water on the brain-all of which Bonner felt were caused by the drugs he was given at Edgewood.[49]

One soldier never got a chance to see what the long-term effects were; he committed suicide. Another attempted to commit suicide by slashing his wrists; still another tried to jump off a bridge.[50]

The Army's reaction to all of this was to close ranks and cover up information about the experiments. None of the soldiers could find out what had happened to them. Stanley could not understand why he was suffering memory loss and violent outbursts of temper. Thornwell did not know who was responsible for what had happened to him in that room in France. Loeh was hospitalized twenty-eight times for convulsions, and during the night he would constantly see flashbacks of the experiment, forcing him to live through the terror again and again. The Veterans Administration consistently denied him benefits. When Loeh cited the experiments, the Army denied that they had ever taken place.51

Twenty years would pass before Stanley finally learned the truth. And when he did, his observation about what had happened at Edgewood was chillingly close to the mark. "It was just like nazism to do me that way," he said.[52]

He didn't know how right he was.

---

1. Seymour Hersh, *Chemical and Biological Warfare: America's Hidden Arsenal* (New York: Doubleday, 1969).
2. Taylor and Johnson, "Use of Volunteers in Chemical Agent Research."
3. Author interview with James Stanley.
4. Ibid.
5. Ibid.
6. Author interview with Seymour Silver.
7. Captain Seth Palagi, "Report of Denazification Procedure," 29 October 1947; and OMGUS *Security Report,* 25 December 1947-both in the Kurt Rahr JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.
8. Lieutenant F. E. Van Sickle, "Memorandum for Post Intelligence," 23 March 1948; Trurnit accusation: CSGID to EUCOM, cable WAR-87364, 30 September 1947-both in the Kurt Rahr JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.
9. Colonel John Wood, *Security Report by Employing Agency,* 29 March 1948, in the Hans Trurnit INSCOM dossier D184062; and Silver interview.
10. Theodor Wagner-Jauregg's background is from his JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS; and Silver interview.
11. Information on Friederich Hoffmann: INSCOM dossier 215327144.
12. "The History of Captured Enemy Toxic Munitions in the American Zone, European Theater, May 1945 to June 1947," Office of the Chief of Chemical Corps, Headquarters, EUCOM; and Silver interview.
13. J. H. Wills and I. A. DeArmon, *Medical Laboratory Special Report No. 54* (Army Chemical Center, November 1954).
14. "The Army's Human Guinea Pigs," *Freedom,* August 1979.
15. Ibid.
16. National Research Council, *Possible Long-Term Health Effects of Short-Term Exposure to Chemical Agents,* 3 vols. (Washington, D.C.: National Academy Press, 1984); see vol. 2, p. 36, for mustard experiments. Tabun reference: in L. Wilson Greene, "Psychochemicial Warfare, A New Concept of War," Army Chemical Center report, August 1949.
17. Greene, "Psychochemical Warfare."
18. John Marks, *The Search for the Manchurian Candidate* (New York: McGraw Hill, 1980).
19. Memo, Colonel Pauick Fokers to Major P. M. Wilson, FIAT, 14 September 1948, in Walter Reppe INSCOM dossier D60608.

20. Interrogation of Karl Taubceck, September 20 and 21, 1945, M1019, RG 238, NARS; and Taubceck INSCOM dossier XE187079.

21. Ibid. Tauboeck's CIA connection is from CIA Inspector General Report, 1951, in John Marhs files, NSA.

22. Marks, *Manchurian Candidate.*

23. Ray Treichler's position at Edgewood is noted in "Edgewood Arsenal Quarterly Historical Report," 17 March 1958 and May 1958 (obtained under the FOIA). Hoffmann's CIA connections are in his INSCOM dossier; other individuals' CIA connections are noted in Marks, *Manchurian Candidate.*

24. Silver interview. 25. Ibid.

26. Ibid.; "Trip Reports," in Friederich Hoffmann's INSCOM dossier. 27. Friederich Hoffmann, William A. Mosher, and Richard Hively, "Isolation of Trans-O6-Tetrahydrocannabinol From Marijuana," *Journal of the American Chemical Society,* 20 April 1966; author interview with James Moore; and Marks, *Manchurian Candidate.*

28. See "Bluebird/Artichoke" documents in G-2 "Top Secret" Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC; and Van Sim, "Trip Report," February 1956 (obtained under the FOIA).

29. Lieutenant Colonel David McFarling, "LSD Follow-up Study Report," U.S. Army Medical Department, 1980 (obtained under the FOIA). 30. Stanley interview.

31. Information on interrogation teams: in "Project Derby Hat" INSCOM dossier. On the Thornwell case see *Thornwell v. U.S.,* 471 F. Supp. 344 (D.D.C., 1979); and Thornwell INSCOM dossier HE05255.

32. Minutes of JIOA Liaison Officers Meeting, 15 November 1949, G-2 "Top Secret" Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

33. William Safire, "The German Problem," *The New York Times,* 2 January 1989.

34. JIOA Liaison Officers Meeting, 15 November 1949.

35. Army officer quote on Schieber and nerve gas reference are in Schieber INSCOM dossier D231194.

36. Schieber discusses his Armaments Supply Office activities in "Interview with Waltet Schieber," Nuremberg doc. NO-1298, 8 February 1947, and Nuremberg doc. PS-104; arrest report is in Schieber INSCOM dossier.

37. Released from prison reference is in Agent Report I-421, 7970 CIC Group, 9 September 1949; Lieutenant Colonel Merellat Moses to 7970 CIC Group, 23 March 1948; and cable, Lieutenant Colonel M. C. Taylor to OMGUS, 26 April 1948-a11 in the Walter Schieber INSCOM dossier.

38. French attempt: Agent Report I-421, 9 September 1949; spy suspect and arms: Agent Report, 19 December 1949; CIC agent quote: Special CIC Agent Richard Scutt, Agent Report I-421, 14 December 1949-a11 in Walter Schieber INSCOM dossier.

39. Blauer information is from records of his daughter's lawsuit, *Barrett* v. U.S., 660 F. Supp. 1291 (S.D.N.Y., 1987) (hereafter cited as *Barrett).* Martin Lee and Bruce Shlain, Acid *Dreams* (New York: Grove Press, 1985), p. 38; Amedeo S. Marrazzi, "Trial of EA 1298 at New York State Psychiatric Institute," report to Edgewood's scientific director, 15 January 1953; repon, Sidney Maltiz, Acting Principal Research Psychiatrist, New York State Psychiatric Institute, to Van Sim, 16 February 1956; and Van Sim, "Trip Report," February 1956-a11 in *Barrett.*

40. Statistics on experiments: from National Research Council, *Possible Long-Term Health Effects.*

41. Taylor and Johnson, "Use of Volunteers in Chemical Agent Research."

42. Ibid.

43. National Research Council, *Possible Long-Term Health Effects, vol.* 2, pp. 52-53, 64, 65, and 67-68.

44. Ibid., p. 248 (dioxin), 135, 156, and 163. CS experiments: "Operation Black Magic," Edgewood Arsenal report, January-May 1959.

45. *Bonner v. U.S., CIV* 81-16 3 (E.D.N.C., 1981) (hereafter cited as *Bonner).* A complete report of Bonner's experiment is contained in Stuart Karger, "Incapacitating Dose of CAR 302,668 in Man, and Efficacy of Physostigmine as an Antidote," Edgewood Arsenal Technical Memorandum 114-20, August 1968.

46. Jim Santori, "Private War of Ken Loeh," *Southern Illinoisan,* 20 December 1981.

47. Ibid.

48. Reference to grand mal seizures is in McFarling, "LSD Follow-up Study," pp. 2 and 35; other effects are noted in National Research Council, *Possible Long-Term Health Effects.*

49. *Bonner.*

50. McFarling, "LSD Follow-up Study" (suicide attempts), pp. 21 and 53.

51. For Army denials see *Loeh v. U.S.,* CIV 77-2065-B (S.D. Ill., 1977).

52. Stanley interview.

11 Pipeline to the Alamac Hotel

THE Alamac Hotel was located at Seventy-first Street and Broadway in New York City. Thousands of conventioneers, tourists, and other visitors had stayed in the nineteen-story hotel through the years. But the identities of some Alamac guests were kept a closely guarded secret from the American public. Army intelligence officers used a suite of rooms as a Paperclip office for decades, though they kept their Army connections secret by working in civilian clothes. They greeted scientists when their ships arrived, processed their immigration papers, and catered to their needs in the hotel. By the time Paperclip was shut down in the 1970s at least a thousand German and Austrian scientists had lived in the Alamac for months at a time while the military helped them find jobs.1

Paperclip, National Interest, and a new project, code-named "63," operated nonstop during the 1950s despite numerous complaints that the projects were illegal and caused serious political tensions between the United States and the West German government. Up to 1950, 665 individuals were employed under Paperclip. Notwithstanding U.S. policies in force since 1948 that barred recruiting, and no matter who complained or what political problems were caused, the military stubbornly refused to stop the projects. The fact that 687 more Germans and Austrians were brought to the United States under Paperclip alone from 1950 through 1959 shows how little effect the complaints had on the projects.2

In November 1950, JIOA Director Daniel Ellis unleashed Project 63, which proved as controversial as Paperclip. This project's admitted sole purpose was to get the scientists out of Europe and away from the Russians. The scientists were paid $5,000 and given temporary visas to come to America for six months to look for jobs while being lodged in the Alamac Hotel. Most went to work for universities or defense contractors, not the U. S. government. Thus the American taxpayer footed the bill for a project to help former Nazis obtain jobs with Lockheed, Martin Marietta, North American Aviation, or other defense contractors during a time when many American engineers in the aircraft industry were being laid off.[3]

The European end of the operation was run by the Army's Special Projects Team from the Intelligence Division of U.S. Army headquarters. The team interviewed and contracted scientists for all JIOA projects in the field or from the team's offices in Frankfurt and Munich. For awhile, the Frankfurt office was located just inside the gate at Camp King, but later it was moved because of security reasons to two floors in a house across the street from the I. G. Farben building. Active recruitment was not necessary, since scientists all over West Germany already knew the location of the team's offices. Only the American public had been duped into believing that the project had ended in 1947.[4]

" `Recruiting' was a nasty word," recalled retired U.S. Army Master Sergeant George Meidlein, who was with the project for over a decade at the Alamac and as a team contractor in Germany. "Everything was word of mouth. A scientist would get to the States and somebody would say, `How'd you get here?' They'd say, `Contact Mr. Meidlein in Frankfurt and he'll visit you.' And that's the way we got customers." Meidlein wore civilian clothes and traveled around West Germany in an Army car with German license plates so that the scientists' bosses would not know they were dealing with Americans. "We didn't want to jeopardize the scientist's job until we were prepared to offer him a contract," said Meidlein.[5]

Soon after Project 63 was in force, one of the team's recruiters, Ernest Richter, headed for Austria, where he found an untapped source of scientific talent. Geographer Karl Neumaier was making maps for the U.S. Forces in Austria, as he had done for German intelligence during the war in China, Romania, and the Balkans. Chemical warfare expert Rudolph Ulm headed a chemical lab in Tyrol. In 1945 Ulm had been interned by the British when A. K. Mills's technical intelligence team captured

Ulm at the chemical warfare experimental station at Spandau. Another Austrian, Wilhelm Lohninger, ran a nitrogen works in Linz. During the war, Lohninger had been employed in the Speer Armaments Ministry supervising war munition factories confiscated by the Nazis in France and Belgium.6

Richter's efforts to hire the Austrians were hindered by their negative attitude toward the United States. "They consider the U.S., culturally speaking, a backward country," Richter observed. He suggested. that recruiters could counter that attitude by mentioning television musical programs and the Metropolitan Opera as proof that America was not as lacking in culture as the Austrians believed.7

The team had more serious problems with the Russians. Like Germany, Austria had been divided into separate Allied zones, and some of the scientists were working in the Soviet zone or were members of the Communist party. For example, Karl Krejci-Graf, a well-known geological expert, was director of the Soviet's Geologic Institute in Vienna. In 1944 Krejci-Graf had represented German oil interests when the Nazis occupied Hungary. He was arrested and interned in 1945 by U.S. authorities in Austria because of his high SS rank. Another Austrian, biological warfare expert Fritz Kress, was working for the Russians on a study of diseases that deliberately caused abortion in cattle.[8]

The Austrians' excuses as to why they had joined the Communist party were similar to those Germans made for having joined the Nazi party. For example, supersonics engineer Otto Golling told recruiters that he had been "forced to join" the Communist party to obtain employment after the war. He first had worked for the French Air Ministry in Paris and the British in Londori before returning to the Soviet zone in 1947. The team tried to reduce the Soviet influence over Golling by arranging for his relocation to the U.S. zone of Austria. Another Austrian, Ludwig Ettenreich, was director of the C. P. Goerz optical works in Vienna, which produced lenses exclusively for the Soviets. Ettenreich told the team that he had resigned from the Communist party and no longer held Communist views. But an investigation later determined that Ettenreich's name was still on the party's rolls.[9]

Other scientists had been ardent Nazis during the war. Alfred Kepka, the inventor of the Madrid rocket, had joined the Austrian Nazi party in 1927 and was such a Nazi activist that he had been awarded the Golden Party Badge. Others had been members of the SS. A well-known coal dust explosives expert, Mario Zippermayr, had joined the SS in 1933. And geologist Frederich Hecht had even been jailed by U.S. Forces in Austria officers and fired from the University of Graz because of his SS membership.1o

Ellis and other JIOA officers were so unconcerned about the Nazi backgrounds of those they wanted to employ under Project 63 that they even considered contracting convicted Nazi war criminals who were still in prison. Take, for example, the case of Eduard Houdremont, who was still serving a prison sentence from his war crimes conviction at Nuremberg. Ellis and seven other officers discussed Houdremont and other dubious individuals during a meeting at which they decided which scientists on the JIOA's "K" list should be excluded from being hired under Project 63. Individuals in the "K" category were those whose skills should be denied to the Russians at any cost.11

Houdremont had been a top official of Krupp and was convicted at Nuremberg for his involvement in Krupp's massive slave labor program. Thousands of Eastern European Jews had been deported to Nazi Germany to work as slaves in Krupp factories, including a steel plant run by Houdremont. Yet the officers failed to mention this man's crimes or the fact that he had been convicted of complicity in the murder of hundreds of Jews who were beaten or starved to death. Instead the JIOA's brief discussion of whether to offer Houdremont a contract went like this:

"The point to consider is whether the newspaper publicity would be adverse if he were brought over," JIOA member Max Brokaw said.

"If the man is on the `K' list and he should be brought over, we should do it regardless of the publicity," replied JIOA Deputy Director James H. Skinner.12

The JIOA officers did not even pretend to have screened other individuals on their list. Austrian Karl Kamptner was still on the JIOA's list even though the FBI was investigating him for having wrongfully obtained industrial information by posing as a member of the U.S. government. Although the officers did not indicate that they now planned to employ Kamptner again under Project 63, there was no explanation of why the list even included a man under FBI investigation.13

Brokaw told the group that although the Austrians' backgrounds had not been completely investigated, the plan was to put them under contract and bring them to the United States, "in which case some of them may have to be `bought off later if they are found inadmissible."14

Kurt Blome was one scientist whom the JIOA "bought off " when the State Department refused to give him a visa because of his notorious Nazi past. Blome, who had held the rank of major general in the SA, had been a defendant in the Nuremberg Medical Case, in which he was charged with participating in euthanasia, extermination of tubercular Poles, biological warfare, and various deadly experiments. Blome had been the key biological warfare representative on the Reich Research Council, which had approved, funded, and commissioned experiments in the camps. Blome had told Alsos interrogators after the war that SS chief Himmler had ordered him in 1943 to conduct plague vaccine experiments on camp inmates. Blome had suggested to Himmler that Blome's new institute, then under construction in Poznan, would be better suited for the experiments than a camp because it was isolated. Himmler had then assigned an SS doctor to help with the work. The Alsos agent commented that during the interrogation Blome "had no hesitation in repeatedly referring to his intentions to use humans for his work on plague."15

Despite this admission, the Nuremberg tribunal acquitted Blome of all charges and concerning the biological warfare charge stated: "It may well be that defendant Blome was preparing to experiment on human beings in connection with bacteriological warfare, but the record fails to disclose that fact, or that he ever actually conducted the experiments." The Alsos interrogation was not submitted as evidence in the trial.16

Two months after Blome's acquittal, four representatives of Fort Detrick-the Maryland army base that was also headquarters of the CIA's biological warfare program-interviewed Blome about biological warfare. Dr. H. W. Batchelor set the tone for the meeting when he said, "We have friends in Germany, scientific friends, and this is an opportunity for us to enjoy meeting him (Blome] to discuss our various problems with him." During a lengthy interview Blome identified biological warfare experts and their locations and described different methods of conducting biological warfare.17

In 1951 JIOA's recruiters signed Blome under a Project 63 contract to work for the Army Chemical Corps. Not one backkround investigation reported Blome's Nuremberg trial or his 1945 arrest for high SA rank. On his personnel forms Blome conveniently omitted any reference to where he had been from 1945 to 1948. Despite Blome's cleaned-up files, the U.S. consul in Frankfurt ruled him inadmissible for immigration due to the incriminating Alsos report. JIOA officers were afraid that if they canceled Blome's contract, other German scientists might not sign contracts at all. In several meetings with Blome, an army officer told him that the reason he could not go to the United States was that the project had been canceled. After a long negotiation Blome finally agreed to work as a doctor at Camp King for the duration of his Project 63 contract.18

The way Ellis ran Project 63 was as controversial as the backgrounds of some of those the JIOA recruited. The State Department's scientific adviser, Dr. J. B. Koepfli, sent numerous complaints to the secretary of state and other officials in Washington about the questionable activities of some recruiters involved in the operation. One officer got into serious personal trouble during a recruiting trip in Germany. Another Special Projects Team member was a former diamond merchant from Los Angeles named Ehrman whose methods included handing out his personal business cards during meetings with German scientists. "You can imagine the reaction in German scientific circles of having a stranger and a diamond merchant calling on the most outstanding German scientists, including Nobel prize winners, offering a dubious contract in the name of the U.S. government," Koepfli reported.19

The team also sent fliers describing Project 63 to nearly every German scientist living in the U.S.

zone. The sales pitch in these flyers would have been more suited to selling used cars than to convincing highly intelligent scientists to move to America. As a result, the Germans were either indignant over the crass approach or were convinced that the United States feared an immediate Soviet invasion of West Germany and was using this method to evacuate German scientists from the danger zone.20

A number of Germans complained angrily that the Special Projects Team had lied to them about the contracts. For example, Helmut Ruska was in charge of the Berlin Institute for Micromorphology and had signed on for Project 63 because he had wanted to find a position with an American university. After he arrived at the Alamac, however, the military pressured him to accept jobs at military bases and refused to pay for his transportation to attend job interviews at universities. Another Project 63 recruit was unhappy from the minute he arrived in the country. Former Luftwaffe parachute designer Wilhelm Buss worked under a short-term Project 63 contract at Edwards Air Force Base in California. Buss complained that the heat and altitude made him sick and that he had been charged for Alamac Hotel accommodations that he thought would be provided free.21

In 1952, American officials in West Germany dove for cover when they learned that a new twenty-man recruiting team for Project 63 was heading their way. This team included Air Force Colonel Gerold Crabbe, the JIOA deputy director; Air Force Colonel Arthur S. Randak; Colonel Edward Berry from G-2; four U.S. civilians, including ex-diamond merchant Ehrman; six Paperclip specialists; and an assortment of lesser military personnel. U.S. High Commissioner John McCloy warned the secretary of state that he had the "gravest fears" that this effort would result in a "violent reaction" from West German officials.22

Indeed, the situation reached such a crisis that even the CIA complained. Dr. Karl Weber ran a CIA operation collecting information about Soviet science by interrogating persons who had escaped from the east to West Germany. The JIOA's recruiters already had disrupted Weber's operation once, when they tried to recruit some of his people. He complained to the CIA's scientific advisor that the recruiters were "inept." But he was most concerned about the political repercussions. The West German government had threatened to intercede unless the recruiting was stopped, because it conflicted with NATO regulations and U.S. policies in West Germany.23

JIOA Deputy Director Crabbe was a week late for a scheduled meeting with Weber to discuss the problems. "In the meantime the JIOA group was well on its way to the repetition of previous blunders," Weber noted. When the meeting finally did take place, with Weber, HICOG's chief scientist Carl Nordstrom, Crabbe, and Berry, Weber complained that the JIOA's list of recruitment possibilities included people who were "too old, too rich, too busy and too thoroughly disgruntled with past experience with Americans" to justify trying to hire them. In return, Crabbe and Berry told Nordstrom that they regarded the CIA as "saboteurs and obstructionists."2[4]

The JIOA's recruiting did not end, despite the complaints. In fact, they increased recruiting efforts for Paperclip as well. Even the reason for continuing that project was two-faced. On the one hand, Paperclip was defined in its policy as a project to exploit the skills of German scientists. But behind the scenes, the project was still viewed by those who ran it as a useful tool in the cold war game against the Russians. The military used the project to obtain military and political intelligence information about the USSR and the Soviet zone of Germany. As one Air Force history reported, "the loss of such intelligence and utilization to those powers not in sympathy with our way of life illustrated the program's `denial value.'"25

Crabbe took over as JIOA director in 1953. "Crabbe was the typical pre-World War II aviator. If you couldn't shoot it or eat it, he didn't care about it," recalled retired Army Colonel Bernard Geehan, who served on the JIOA from 1953 to 1957. Geehan strongly believed that the United States received invaluable benefits from Paperclip and other JIOA projects. "It would have been an absolute sin to have wasted this opportunity," Geehan said.26

Geehan also claimed that there were no problems during his tenure with the JIOA. "There was nothing underhanded, we had nothing to conceal," he said. "There were no war criminals. We had to be careful." He described the State Department as uncooperative. "Their deadpan GS-12 bureaucrat asked no questions about morality, only about a misplaced comma in the paperwork. "27

Geehan said the JIOA had several run-ins with the CIA during the time he was in the agency. One incident occurred after the JIOA contracted with two German scientists from Darmstadt. "All of a sudden two guys in black suits showed up at my house," he recalled. "I thought, `my God, it's the IRS.' But they were spooks from the CIA. They said they had a problem because our two German recruits were the CIA's undercover sources in R and D [Research and Development]."28

Paperclip also got entangled in a fierce turf fight between the CIA and the FBI in the United States. The CIA's 1947 charter forbids the agency from operating within "the continental United States. Yet Geehan said the JIOA discovered that the CIA had spied on two Paperclip scientists who worked at Ohio State University. The scientists were terrified because they were being followed. "One man called the FBI and said it must be the Russians," Geehan recalled. "Now, I thought it might have been a football coach from a competitive university, but certainly not the Russians. We later found out it was the CIA. "29

The practice of employing foreign rather than American workers led to strong complaints from the federal employees' union. Paperclip, it said, discriminated against American workers by granting Germans preferential treatment in the job market. But Air Force officers thought American workers were mediocre. In 1954, for example, the Air Force was trying to fill sixty-three vacancies at the Air Research and Development Command laboratories. Air Force recruiters interviewed engineers who had been laid off from North American Aviation in California, but reported that these workers were of "low caliber, essentially technicians, even though they termed themselves engineers." To fill the jobs, the Air Force sent its own six-man team to Germany, where they recruited thirty-five exNazi colleagues of the German old-boy network working for Colonel Donald Putt at Wright-Paterson Air Force Base.[3]0

The JIOA had problems clearing three of these recruits because they were agents in Germany's intelligence service. Herbert Alfke, for example, was a physicist and high-frequency specialist for the Plendl Institute in Austria. He also continued his connections with German intelligence that he had established during World War II. Alfke had been a lieutenant in the Wehrmacht from 1941 to 1944 and an Abwehr officer at the German Embassy in Spain, where he engaged in clandestine intelligence activities against the Allies. The Air Force contracted him under Paperclip despite FBI and CIA reports that Alfke was considered a "potential security threat" due to his foreign intelligence connections.[3]1

Most new recruits were former colleagues of earlier Paperclip employee Albert Patin, who had obtained his U.S. citizenship despite having admitted using hundreds of Jewish women as slave laborers in his factory. In the early 1950s, Patin started his own company, Ampatco Laboratories in Chicago, to design and manufacture automatic pilot devices for jet fighter planes similar to those made by his factory in Nazi Germany.[3]2

Patin had given Putt a list of Germans he wanted to hire and said that their backgrounds were clean. "None of the persons . . . had affiliations with any extreme political parties, neither Nazi nor Communist," Patin claimed. The list included Willy Hornauer, former chief engineer and assistant to Patin in his factory during the war; Gerhard Klein, chief of development at Siemens electric company; and several men who worked for the British government, including Johannes Gievers, chief engineer for Kreiselgeraete, a subsidiary of Askania that developed the gyro for the V-1 and V-2. But investigations uncovered derogatory information on Klein, despite Patin's claims to the contrary. Air Force Lieutenant Colonel Eugene Cook told the JIOA to drop Klein from the list "for security reasons."[33]

The Askania connections of some of the men also raised disturbing questions, since several top-level Askania officials, including a National Interest recruit, had been accused of collaborating with the Communists. In 1948, a German court charged Askania's technical director, Guido Wuensch, with "knowingly having delivered optical instruments to the Soviets" in an espionage case. Two years later, Wuensch was acquitted and brought to the United States to work for an Indiana company under a six-month contract. Wuensch then returned to Germany and resumed his position at Askania. He came under suspicion again in the mid-1950s when three Askania directors and several

employees were convicted of selling half a million marks' worth of strategic military equipment to the Chinese Communists during the Korean War. Trial evidence revealed that some of Askania's directors, including Wuensch, were aware of the deal made with the Communists.34

In addition to the Air Force group, the Navy brought several biological warfare experts to the United States in the 1950s under Paperclip. For example, Anne Burger arrived in 1951 to work for a Navy biological warfare project at the Naval Medical Research Institute in Bethesda, Maryland. Burger had been a wartime assistant to Paperclip scientist Erich Traub, who arrived earlier. Their work for the Navy included conducting experiments on animals to determine the lethal doses of more than forty strains of highly infectious viruses.[35]

During the war Traub was in charge of biological warfare for the Reich Research Institute on the secluded island of Riems, where his biological warfare research specialty was viral and bacteriological diseases, including hoof and mouth disease and influenza. Traub's expertise fit right in with a scheme by SS chief Himmler to prepare a vaccine against the rinderpest virus and to conduct experiments to see whether the virus could be preserved for later use. Himmler had obtained a strain of rinderpest in Turkey and told Kurt Blome to send someone to collect it. Traub was chosen for the job, and after reporting to SS headquarters in Berlin he went to Turkey to get the rinderpest. Experiments were conducted at Riems on cows that were deliberately infected by smearing the virus on their lips. In 1945 the Riems institute was captured and reestablished by the Russians. Traub, Burger, and other biological warfare experts worked there for the Russians until 1948.36

Air Force Colonel Stone Christopher joined the JIOA in 1955. A veteran intelligence officer who had worked with British intelligence during World War II, Christopher was born in Stockholm, Sweden, and came to New York when he was eighteen. He joked about how his first name, Sten, was changed when he filled out his U.S. citizenship papers. "This guy looks at it says, `well, that's Stone.' It's been Stone ever since. "[37]

In October 1955, Christopher went to Frankfurt with Paperclip scientist Ernst Stuhlinger on a recruiting trip, traveling around West Germany to interview about five people a day who had been at Peenemunde during the war. Christopher said he felt that the men he interviewed were professionally unqualified to be included in the project. "I'm a stupid intelligence officer you know," he joked. "But everyone we investigated, we came up with the same conclusion that, well, `he's a phony. . . .' " Christopher recalled that he also had met a group of former Peenemunde employees who now were working for the French government. The French would not allow the Germans to live in France, and consequently, they took them back over the border into West Germany each evening after work.[38]

Sixty-six-year-old Hermann Oberth, known as the "father of German rocketry," was hired in 1955 to work for the Army in Huntsville, Alabama, at Wernher von Braun's request. JIOA Deputy Director Geehan went to Oberth's castle in Bad Hamburg to make arrangements for the trip. "He always dressed in pre-World War II fashion, with a starched collar and a stick pin in his tie," recalled Geehan. The JIOA arranged to store Oberth's possessions in a warehouse near Washington, because there were truckloads of goods. "One day a guy from G-2 called and said, `that Kraut's belongings have been here for six months. Either get it out or we're going to send you a bill.' " It was then that the JIOA discovered that Oberth's possessions included rare antique art and sculpture that had been taken out of West Germany in violation of that country's laws. "If the press would have gotten wind of that we would have had a real problem," Geehan said. The art was sent to a museum in Saint Louis for storage until Oberth returned to Germany a few years later.[39]

The German rocket group had moved from Fort Bliss to Huntsville in 1950 to work on guided missiles at Redstone Arsenal. Some of its members' backgrounds still were causing problems. One man left the country after the Army learned that he was a homosexual. In addition, the U.S. Justice Department refused to approve the legal immigration status of Herbert Axster and his wife because of their Nazi past. Axster said he finally told his boss, Major Hamill, that he was fed up. "I quit," he said. "I had a contract with the government and I told Hamill: `End this contract any day you want.' They were happy to get rid of me." Axster opened a law firm with a friend in Milwaukee, Wisconsin,

and later returned to West Germany.40

By the mid-1950s the Air Force had brought 153 new Paperclip specialists to various bases and research centers around the country. Ernst Czerlinsky, a former SS member, was sent to the Air Force Cambridge Research Center. Czerlinsky had been an aircraft engineer with the Experimental Institute for Aviation of the DVL in Berlin. In 1945, Army CIC agents arrested Czerlinsky to prevent him from interfering with U.S. expropriation of the DVL. OMGUS reports judged him to be an "ardent Nazi" because he had joined the SS and SA in the early 1930s.[41]

Some Paperclip recruits had worked for the Soviets for several years. Engineer Horst Gerlach had gone to East Germany shortly after the war ended because he objected to Allied restrictions in the western zones. In 1946, he was deported to the USSR, where he worked on radar installations at a research institute near Moscow until 1952. Another Paperclip recruit, physicist Fritz Klaiber, had worked for Siemens electric company in Berlin during the war. In 1945, he was kidnapped by the Russians and taken to a POW camp near Moscow, where he and other German POWs made electrical parts for guided missiles. When Klaiber was released in 1953, he provided U. S. and British intelligence with information about the Soviets' actvities.[42]

A group of chemical warfare experts went to Edgewood Arsenal in the late 1950s. Eduard Wulkow had been a textile chemist for Lever Brothers in Berlin and at the Kaiser Wilhelm Institute during the war. He arrived at Edgewood in 1957 and developed fabrics for protective clothing that chemical warfare agents could not penetrate. Another specialist, Hermann Donnert, was a young Austrian nuclear physicist who graduated from the University of Innsbruck in 1951 and was working as a scientific assistant at the University of Cologne when he was hired under Paperclip. At Edgewood, he was assigned to the physics department to research and experiment with radioactive fallout.[43]

Edgewood scientists worked on several projects involving the airborne dissemination of chemical warfare agents, and another new Paperclip recruit, Albert Pfeiffer, was assigned to develop new ways to disseminate the toxic chemicals. During the war Pfeiffer was a chemical warfare specialist with the German navy's High Command, where he developed flame throwers, smoke bombs, and chemical warfare detectors. In 1944 Werner Osenberg, the SS representative on the Reich Research Council, personally assigned Pfeiffer as the council's representative to the Navy Chemical Testing Institute in Kiel.44

U.S. Army intelligence was still responsible for conducting background investigations on JIOA recruits. The system improved somewhat after 1955, when many applicants were given a polygraph exam before leaving Germany. "I instituted using a polygraph overseas because I couldn't see polygraphing people after they came in here," Christopher said. "Then we would have a `disposal problem' you know. I went overseas myself and I picked my [polygraph] operator, because you don't use an operator that investigates crime to put a scientist on the box. You use a different technique." Some INSCOM dossiers on scientists considered for Paperclip after the mid1950s contain copies of these polygraph tests. The scientists were asked questions to determine whether they had Communist affiliations or relatives living in Soviet territories.[45]

But no polygraph questions were asked regarding their Nazi affiliations or activities during World War II. Neither Christopher nor any other officer connected to the project over the years believed that nazism posed a security threat. "What the heck would you think if you were in Germany under a dictator and you were a scientist and you wanted to work in your scientific field?" Christopher said. "They were Germans fighting for their country the same as we were fighting for ours. "46

Apparently the Joint Chiefs of Staff felt the same way. The JCS had a secret plan to evacuate scientists from Europe in case of war with the USSR, and the JIOA maintained lists of those included in the plan. One list included individuals who normally would not be admitted to the United States, but whose work was considered so important that their skills should be denied to the Russians. In 1957 this list included convicted Nazi war criminal Houdremont, Nuremberg defendants Blome and Siegfried Ruff, who had returned to the DVL and later worked for Lufthansa German Airlines, and many biological or chemical warfare experts. Nerve gas discoverer Gerhard Schrader and biological warfare expert Wolfgang Wirth worked for I. G. Farben Bayer, of Bayer aspirin fame, located in the British zone of Germany.[47]

Willy Messerschmitt's name was also on JIOA's list. Messerschmitt's famous jet fighter planes, which ruled the skies over Nazi Germany during the war, had been built by Messerschmitt factories

that used thousands of inmates from Mauthausen and Dachau as slave laborers. When Allied troops liberated Mauthausen they uncovered a mound of human bones surrounding the quarry that hid the Messerschmitt aircraft factory. Willy Messerschmitt went into exile in Spain, but he did not have to worry about being called to account for the deaths of the Jewish slaves. A German denazification court fined him a mere DM 2,000 for being a "fellow traveler" of the Nazis.[48]

By 1960, Messerschmitt's aircraft company, located in Augsburg, was back in business with assets of over DM 30 million. And Willy Messerschmitt was busy advising the Egyptian government on building rockets, which Egypt's President Gamal Abdel Nasser declared would be used to destroy Israel. A large staff of Germans was in Cairo helping President Nasser develop his own aircraft, which the Israelis feared could carry high-explosive rocket warheads. *The New York Times* even reported that "a Munich physician wanted on charges of medical atrocities in concentration camps" was employed as a company doctor at the Messerschmitt factory near Cairo.[49]

The Syrians also were employing German scientists, and a few were brought to the United States in 1957 under Paperclip after they worked for Syria. One was Wilhelm Wessel, who was in charge of a rocket design team in Syria from 1951 to 1954. Wessel had been a design engineer for BMW during the war. Another employee in Syria, Otto Cerny, had been a rocket engineer at Peenemunde. From 1945 on, Cerny worked in Austria, primarily as a foreman at a steel works in Linz. He went to Syria in 1956 and then worked on rockets for the U.S. Army in Huntsville.[50]

By the late 1950s a great majority of those employed under JIOA projects were younger men with little, if any, post-university experience as scientists. In 1957 alone, ninety-four Germans or Austrians arrived under Paperclip. Unlike the earlier Paperclip group, these men had been soldiers, not scientists, during World War II.

Fifty-six specialists arrived during the first quarter of 1957 to work at Fort Monmouth, New Jersey, the nerve center of scientific research and development for the U.S. Army Signal Corps. Most had served in the Wehrmacht or Luftwaffe during the war and then obtained advanced degrees in science. One physicist, Josef Parth, had been a Luftwaffe pilot who flew fighter planes in France, Russia, and the Balkans. Another recruit, Hans Joachim Naake, was a radar engineer who had served in the Luftwaffe and had been interned in an American POW camp until the spring of 1946. Naake had been a member of the Nazi party and Hitler Youth during the war.[51]

These men joined the earlier Paperclip group, headed by chief scientist Hans Zeigler, who helped the Army hire scientists in Germany and kept a tight rein over them at Monmouth. One Austrian rebelled against the mail censorship regulations soon after he arrived. A code of conduct required the scientists to mail their letters at a base postal box so that censors could screen their correspondence. Henning Harmuth thought the practice violated the principles of democracy. "I told them right away that I don't intend to exchange Austrian censorship for an American one," he said. This led Zeigler to remark that Harmuth had a "fanatic conception about freedom in the U.S."[52]

But the controversy over mail was minor compared to the outrageous scandal that erupted when U.S. Army Chief Warrant Officer Ivan Simitch, head of the Foreign Scientists Section at Fort Monmouth, was caught in a motel room with Olaf Guzmann's wife. Simitch had rented a room in the Long Branch Motel and was living there secretly with Hilde Guzmann. The Paperclip scientist knocked on the door and, looking through a crack, was able to see his wife naked on the bed and Simitch rapidly crossing the room, clothed in a dressing gown.[53]

The Austrian engineer first met Simitch when he arrived at Fort Monmouth in late 1953. Guzmann, a wartime member of the SA, had been working for Philips telecommunications in Vienna. Almost immediately Simitch began spending all of his off-duty hours at Guzmann's apartment, and he even moved in for awhile. Soon Hilde told Guzmann she was leaving him for Simitch, who was a married man: "Toward the end of October Simitch's advice assumed a threatening manner," Guzmann said in a sworn affidavit. "Simitch told me if I did not sign [a property settlement] then my wife would take me to a divorce court, and since I have only a temporary visa, it would be hard for me to get a permanent visa thereafter. I considered this a veiled threat from Simitch. This frightened me because he was an officer of the U. S. Army and my supervisor."54

Unfortunately, Simitch was in a perfect position to prey on the Paperclip group. The scientists

were vulnerable, since they were under military custody with no U.S. entry visas and depended on Simitch for their existence. "Mr. Simitch was my supervisor, he distributed pay checks, made arrangements for visas, censored aIl mail, provided for my aid or assistance under the terms of the contract," Guzmann stated in an affidavit. Most of the scientists did not speak English. And Simitch not only had access to their homes while they were at work, but he had used his security clearance to obtain information about their backgrounds.55

Army security officers interrogated Simitch and threatened to prosecute him for adultery, immoral behavior, and violating the federal Mann Act when Simitch took Hilde across state lines to spend a weekend in Washington, D.C. In a report, Colonel Frank Moses noted that "the conduct of CWO Simitch in an unafficial capacity after duty hours, seriously compromises his character and standing as a gentleman and makes him morally unworthy to remain a member of the honorable profession of arms." Hilde Guzmann was repatriated back to Austria. The JIOA and Army delayed Simitch's resignation from the Army until Hilde had left America, to stop Simitch from seeing her and avoid publicity.[56]

While the Army was keeping a lid on this scandal, other controversies arose in 1956 that threatened to expose the ongoing project to the American public. First, members of the Minnesota chapter of the American Chemical Society uncovered the Army's operation in the Alamac Hotel. They were furious when they learned that the large number of Germans living there were going to be employed by the military. The ACS was concerned that the Germans were taking jobs from Americans and it vowed to do everything possible to stop the recruitment of foreign nationals.[57]

Then the State Department found itself in the middle of a political controversy that jeopardized the friendly relations between the United States and West Germany. The West German government had complained for years about active recruitment of scientists by U.S. companies. Martin Marietta, Lockheed, and nearly every other major defense contractor sent their own teams to Germany to recruit scientists who then were brought to the United States under National Interest. The German government's complaints already had forced the secretary of state to write those companies and tell them to stop recruiting. Then the West Germans complained to Ambassador James Conant about Paperclip and demanded that it be shut down. Conant agreed and he urged Secretary of State John Foster Dulles to quickly find a way to stop the project "before we are faced with a formal complaint by the West German government against a continuing U.S. recruitment program which has no parallel in any other Allied country. "[58]

Nevertheless, West Germany's complaints did not stop the projects. In November 1956, the U.S. Army Assistant Chief of Staff for Intelligence (ACSI), Lieutenant General Robert Schow, told the JIOA that the projects would continue but recommended that they concentrate on processing current cases and immediately discontinue active recruitment in Germany. Schow's comments reflected the views of the Joint Chiefs of Staff, who felt that the recommendations would satisfy the German government while still allowing the project to continue.[59]

In an effort to dupe the West German government into believing that Paperclip had ended, JIOA Director Christopher changed the project's code name to the "Defense Scientists Immigration Program" (DEFSIP). "I changed the name because the Germans objected to `Paperclip,' " recalled Christopher. The State Department was told that while applications would be accepted from interested German scientists, there was no longer a formal defense project to solicit them.60

These changes made little difference. The Special Projects Team stopped overtly recruiting German specialists, but if one walked through the door, he would find a contract waiting for him. And there were few, if any, scientists in West Germany who did not know the team's address. The project's name change fooled no one. Even the JIOA continued to refer to the project as Paperclip.

A few months later the Russians' activities were used as an excuse to escalate recruitment efforts again. On October 4, 1957, a Russian rocket launched *Sputnik I,* the first satellite to orbit the earth. Less than a month later, on November 3, a much larger satellite was launched that carried a dog, the first living creature to circle the earth.61

The space race had begun. At the time, former JIOA Director Benjamin Heckemeyer was working on Paperclip as chief of the Intelligence Collection Branch for ACSI in Europe. As a result of *Sputnik,* on November 1, 1957, Heckemeyer asked Schow for permission to recruit a large number

of German scientists and "have them waiting at the Hotel Alamac when the go-ahead signal is given." He suggested accelerating the project by shortening the time spent on background investigations and eliminating the processing schedules altogether.62

Heckemeyer then told Schow, in a gross understatement, "we can ship a lot of talent when you give the word."

---

1. Contract terms with Alamac Hotel is in "Minutes of JIOA Liaison Officers Meeting," 26 February 1951, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC. The Alamac Hotel is now a condominium complex.

2. Detailed statistical reports are in JIOA post-1952 administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

3. For a copy of a Project 63 flyer with contract information see State fiche, RG 59, NARS. Policy: JCS 1363/75, RG 218, NARS.

4. Special Projects Team reports are in ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

5. Author interview with retired Army Master Sergeant George Meidlein.

6. Information on Neumaier, Ulm, Lohninger, and other Austrians is in "Austrian Scientists," IRR dossier, RG 319, NARS.

7. Ernest Richter, Special Projects Team, trip report to ACSI, 16 April 1957, ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

8. Information on Krejci-Graf and Kress: see "Austrian Scientists."

9. Memo, Colonel Lewis Perry to ACSI, 6 July 1951, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

10. Ibid.

11. Houdremont was tried in Nuremberg, case 10, U.S. *v. Krupp et al.*, M896, RG 238, NARS. Quote is from Minutes of JIOA Liaison Officers Meeting, 2 February 1951, G-2 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

12. Minutes of JIOA Liaison Officers Meeting, 2 February 1951.

13. Ibid. On Kamptner see AC of S report, USFA Headquarters, 29 August 1950, in Kamptner INSCOM dossier XE271686.

14. Minutes of JIOA Liaison Officers Meeting, 2 February 1951.

15. Blome information: Hunt, "U. S. Coverup of Nazi Scientists." Original Alsos interrogation: Kurt Blome INSCOM dossier XE001248.

16. Hunt, "U.S. Coverup of Nazi Scientists." Blome court decision: *Brandt.*

17. Hunt, "U.S. Coverup of Nazi Scientists." Fort Detrick interrogation: Blome's INSCOM dossier.

18. For copies of contracts see Kurt Blome's INSCOM dossier and his JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

19. Memo, Dr. J. B. Koepfli to State Department, 6 April 1951. See also J. B. Kcepfli to Frederich Nolting, 14 January 1952, regarding the JIOA misrepresenting contracts and CIA and State comments about the JIOA's "dubious" recruiting methods, including an "ex-diamond merchant from LA"; all are from State fiche, RG 59, NARS.

20. For a Project 63 flyer see State fiche, RG 59, NARS.

21. Complaints by Helmut Ruska are in memo, Carl Nordstrom, Chief Scientific Research Division, HICOG, to JIOA Director Benjamin Heckemeyer, 7 December 1951, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS. Buss complaints: Wilhelm Buss IRR dossier EE392034, RG 319, NARS.

22. Cable, John McCloy, HICOG, to Secretary of State, 21 February 1952, State fiche, RG 59, NARS.

23. Karl Weber, CIA Frankfurt, to Marshall Chadwell, CIA Washington, CIA memo S/C (4-5-6), OSI (7-8), 20 February 1952, State fiche, RG 59, NARS. But the West German government could not have been too happy with the CIA either; see Alistair Horne, *Return to Power* (New York: Praeger, 1956), pp. 121-23, for a short but fascinating account of a CIAbacked guerrilla unit that was caught operating in West Germany with a "liquidation" list that included top West German government officials.

24. Memo, Karl Weber to P. G. Strong, March 18, 1952, State fiche, RG 59, NARS.

25. *Air Research and Development Command.* See also Colonel U. P. Williams, "Alleged Recruitment Program," memo to the ACSI, 23 November 1956, noting the value of continuing Paperclip and an estimated 420,000 engineering school graduates in Russia, ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

26. Geehan interview.

27. Ibid.

28. Ibid.

29. Ibid.

30. Air Research and Development Command.

31. For information on Herbert Alfke see CIA Biographic Register, July 1952; and memo, CIA, Liaison Division, to Director of Intelligence, U.S. Air Force, 23 August 1952-both in the Alfke JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

32. See Ampatco file, JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

33. Information on Klein: Lieutenant Colonel Eugene Cook to JIOA Director, 1 June 1950, memo noting that Klein "has been dropped from the list for security reasons," JIOA administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

34. Wuensch's U.S. entry is noted in cable, HICOG to 66th Army CIC, March 1950, in Guido Wuensch IRR dossier XE187525, RG 319, NARS.

35. Anne Burger biography and biological warfare job description: memo, C. F. Berrens, Naval Medical Research Institute, to Chief of Naval Operations, 27 November 1950, JIOA administrative files, Navy Escape Clause, RG 330, NARS. Erich Traub biography is in Traub's JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

36. Traub's trip to Turkey is discussed in Alsos interrogation of Kurt Blome, Blome INSCOM dossier XE001248.

37. Author interview with retired Air Force Colonel Stone Christopher.

38. Ibid.

39. Geeham interview; records on Oberth's U.S. entry are in ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

40. Axster interview.

41. *Air Research and Development Command;* Ernst Czerlinsky Berlin Document Center report, 1 June 1953 contract, and *Basic Personnel Record for German Specialists* listing NSDAP, SS, SA, and other organizations are in Ernst Czerlinsky IRR dossier XE301737, RG 319, NARS.

42. Biographies are in Horst Gerlach's and Fritz Klaiber's ACSI dossiers, ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

43. Biographies are in Eduard Wulkow's and Hermann Donnert's ACSI dossiers, ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

44. Osenberg signed a certificate transferring Pfeiffer to Kiel on 13 April 1944, in Albert Pfeiffer INSCOM dossier.

45. Christopher interview. For an example of polygraph questions see Hans Dolezalek INSCOM dossiers XI574906 and I13B488.

46. Christopher interview.

47. JIOA 1957 list, JIOA post-1952 administrative records, RG 330, NARS (declassified per author's FOIA request).

48. Messerschmitt use of slave laborers is described in Benjamin Ferencz, *Less Than Slaves* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1979); Messerschmitt denazification: "Messerschmitt Fined as Nazi," *The New York Times,* 27 May 1948.

49. Ferencz, *Less Than Slaves; The New York Times,* April 3 and 5, 1963.

50. Wilhelm Wessel biography: Wessel's ACSI dossier, in ACSI post1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC; Otto Cerny information is in memo, Mrs. Hedemarie Cerny to Andrew Loehr, Special Projects Team, 19 September 1956, in Cerny INSCOM dossier GE009781.

51. Lists of Fort Monmouth recruits, Josef Parth's ACSI dossier, and Hans-Joachim Naake's ACSI dossier are in ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

52. Ivan Simitch, "Memo for the Record," 8 July 1953; Hans Ziegler, "Memo for the Record," 14 August 1953; and Ivan Simitch, "Memo for the Record," 14 August 1953-all in ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

53. Olaf Guzmann statement and Major Lewis Saxby, "In the Matter of CWO Ivan Simitch and Mr. and Mrs. Guzmann," 18 January 1954, are in the Guzmann ACSI dossier, ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

54. Ibid.

55. Ibid.

56. Colonel Frank Moses, "Memorandum," 11 November 1953, in the Olaf Guzmann ACSI dossier, ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

57. American Chemical Society complaint: memo, Herbert Schon to Colonel Kight, Army Press Desk, 21 November 1956; and memo, Colonel U. P. Williams to ACSI, 23 November 1956-both in ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

58. Ambassador James Conant to Secretary of State, 13 July 1956, State fiche, RG 59, NARS.

59. ACSI Deputy Director General Robert Schow to JIOA, 26 July 1956; and U. P. Williams, AC of S, to CRD, 26 November 1956-both in ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

60. Christopher interview. For Christopher correspondence on name change to Project DEFSIP see memo, JIOA Director Stone Christopher to Army, Navy, Air Force Intelligence Chiefs, 26 March 1957, JIOA post1952 administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

61. Walter Sullivan, "Soviet Launches Earth Satellite," *The New York Times,* 5 October 1957.

62. Colonel Benjamin Heckemeyer to ACSI Deputy Director General Robert Schow, 1 November 1957, in ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

12 What Price Treason ?

MOST mornings, JIOA Deputy Director William Henry Whalen arrived at his office in the Pentagon either drunk or suffering from a bad hangover. The fortytwo-year-old Army lieutenant colonel was consuming at least a pint of liquor a day. His heavy drinking went handin-hand with the whirlwind social life that had become a habit by the time he was assigned to the JIOA in July 1957. For the previous two years, he had been assistant chief of the U. S. Army Foreign Liaison Office, where his job included attending as many as three foreign embassy-sponsored social events a night. Whalen and his wife were caught up in the glittering Washington social scene and continued to attend embassy parties after he joined the Joint Chiefs of Staff agency.l

Whalen had made several friends while making the rounds of diplomatic parties. One was Colonel Sergei Edemski, the acting Soviet military attache and a known agent of the Soviet military intelligence agency, the GRU. Whalen had known Edemski since 1955 and the two men frequently socialized in each other's homes. The tall, forty-three-year-old, blondhaired Russian always appeared friendly and talkative. He was fluent in English, probably from having been stationed in London from 1944 to 1951, and his conversations were sprinkled with a lot of American slang.2

The smooth-talking Russian was a pro at using subtle coercion to snare someone into his spy net. As one Pentagon investigator noted years later, the tactic that Edemski used on Whalen was "a beautiful example of patient, calculated and well thought out, sophisticated recruitment of a source."[3] Edemski was like a spider who assessed his prey over a long period, found a weakness, and then spun a web tighter and tighter around his victim before moving in for the kill.

Edemski began to tighten the web soon after Whalen joined the JIOA. He asked the Army officer several times to give him some innocuous, unclassified U. S. Army manuals that Edemski easily could have obtained himself from the Government Printing Office. Whalen refused-for the moment-but the Soviet agent was a patient man. It would be only a matter of time before he put the pressure on Whalen's Achilles' heel. In addition to being an alcoholic, Whalen was deeply in debt to numerous credit bureaus and businesses throughout northern Virginia.[4]

It was worth the Russian's while to be patient with the Army officer who later wouid be called the highest-placed American military officer ever convicted of espionage. The Joint Chiefs of Staff is one of the nation's most super-secret agencies and forms the very heart of America's military defense system. And the world was in the midst of a chilling crisis that eventually would result in the construction of the Berlin Wall in 1961. Whalen's position on the JIOA gave him access to both America's and West Germany's defense secrets. With his topsecret security clearance, Whalen now could roam the JCS's heavily guarded Pentagon offices at will.[5]

The missile crisis between the United States and the USSR began to escalate almost from the moment that Sputnik was launched. By 1959 the missile gap had widened-the Russians were first to land an unmanned rocket on the moon. If Soviet rockets could reach the moon, they most certainly were capable of hitting targets in the United States. And Premier Nikita Khrushchev made that point abundantly clear in his public statements. "If we were attacked," he warned, "we could wipe off the face of the earth all our potential enemies." The tension heightened in 1959 when Khrushchev threatened to invade West Berlin, asserting that rockets with hydrogen bomb warheads were being manufactured in Soviet factories at the rate of 250 a year.6

Paperclip scientists were thrust into the middle of that crisis. Rocco Petrone, former director of NASA's Marshall Space Flight Center, was working for the Army at the time. Petrone recalls that Wernher von Braun's rocket team had been ready to launch a satellite on an Army rocket before Sputnik was launched in 1957. "There were six birds on the floor at Huntsville that could have gone into orbit at the time the Russians put up Sputnik, but they were given orders that they could not go all the way," Petrone said. Instead, politicians in Washington gave the Navy the go-ahead and its Vanguard rocket blew up on the launch pad. "Therefore, we denied ourselves the right to be first, and put the word *Sputnik* into our vocabulary."7

Whalen was already a familiar face to some of the men who ran Paperclip. Most of Whalen's military intelligence career since 1948 had been spent in various assignments with the Office of Assistant Chief of Staff for Intelligence. Colonel Montie Cone and other Army intelligence officers involved with the earlier Paperclip coverup of the scientists' Nazi pasts worked in a branch of the ACSI that had run Paperclip administratively from the beginning. In the late 1950s Cone was the executive officer of J-2, the Army intelligence directorate in the JCS. Christopher was JIOA director until he retired in the spring of 1958. Other officers on JIOA's staff included Navy Captain Earle Gardner, Navy Commander William Lahodney, Army Lieutenant Colonel Don Davis, and Army Lieutenant Colonel Robinson Norris. As noted earlier, Heckemeyer supervised the Special Projects Team recruiters as chief of the Intelligence Collection Division for ACSI in Europe.8

"Whalen was a big braggart," recalled Norris, who was on the JIOA in 1960-61. "One day he came in and announced to me and a couple of other people that `I am going to be the assistant secretary of defense.' I said, `Oh, how do you know that?' And he said, `My mother delivered so many hundred thousand votes in New York state for John Kennedy and he's going to make me assistant secretary of defense.' " Norris laughed. "I thought that was rather presumptuous."[9]

State Department representative Walter Mueller described the vindictive way Whalen threatened to use that position. "Whalen griped about being discriminated against and said certain members in the Department of Defense would be sorry someday," Mueller told investigators. When Mueller asked what Whalen meant by that statement, Whalen indicated that when he became assistant secretary of defense he would see to it that certain persons were "given the works."10

Soon after Whalen joined the JIOA, Heckemeyer's earlier prediction that Paperclip would accelerate as a result of Sputnik was proven correct. In early 19~8 JIOA Director Christopher told Heckemeyer to keep the Special Projects Team "ready to go all out" on short notice. "Of course you must be careful that you are not accused of recruiting," Christopher warned. The military was going to bring more German and Austrian scientists to the United States even though they had yet to devise a plan to best utilize their skills.11

The project immediately underwent the same kind of acceleration that had taken place a decade earlier. A total of 361 Paperclip specialists were brought to the United States from 1957 through 1960, which was an increase over the previous few years. Ninety-four individuals arrived in 1957, compared with 64 the previous year. In 1958, the number increased again to a total of 109 specialists. In 1959 and 1960, while Whalen was spying for the Soviets, 158 specialists were brought to the United States under Paperclip. And in addition to the Paperclip group, a large number of scientists from Germany, Austria, and other countries were brought in under Project 63 and National Interest to work for universities and defense contractors, including Duke University, RCA (Princeton, New Jersey), Bell Laboratories, Douglas Aircraft, and Martin Marietta. Information about the number of defectors and other individuals brought in by the CIA and military intelligence agencies is unknown, since JIOA records concerning them were either shredded or pulled during the FBI's investigation in 1964.12

In 1958 the JIOA was still bringing in older scientists, primarily Austrians, who had obtained their scientific reputations during the time that Austria was willingly part of Hitler's Third Reich. One was Hans Nowotny, a professor at the University of Vienna who specialized in metallurgy and corrosion. Another Austrian, Alfred Popodi, was a former Nazi party member who had been a research engineer at Telefunken in Berlin during the war. Popodi then was senior engineer at the Laboratory Elektromedizin in Germany from 1948 until he came to America.1[3]

Forty-five-year-old Heinz Gorges also was recruited in 1958. Gorges was a German rocket scientist who worked for the British after World War II and then immigrated to Australia. Paperclip scientists were supposed to be investigated and given polygraph exams before being brought to America. But that was not done in Gorges's case. In a memo to the State Department Visa Office, Whalen noted that Gorges's security investigation would not be completed before he began working with von Braun's group at the Army Ballistic Missile Agency in Huntsville. The results of that investigation are unknown. Among the few documents in Gorges's INSCOM file is a memo noting

that the dossier would be destroyed March 6, 1959the month that Whalen began spying for the Soviets.14

West Germans began complaining about Paperclip when it shifted back into high gear. For example, officials at Telefunken complained to the U.S. Embassy in Bonn that the Special Projects Team was actively recruiting its employees. Telefunken had a defense contract to make Hawk missiles and the company could not complete the contract if their best engineers left Germany to work in the United States under Paperclip.15

Around the same time, the *Bild-Zeitung* newspaper in West Germany published a scathing story about the plight of a blind, crippled space scientist who was losing his scientific helper because of Paperclip. Twenty-eight-year-old Hans Goslich was going to the United States to work for von Braun because the blind scientist could not afford to pay him. "Thus the sale on brains that started during those miserable years after 1945 goes on," the newspaper editorialized. A storm of publicity followed when a West German TV network held a fund-raising campaign on behalf of the blind scientist. The Special Projects Team's office was besieged with calls from German reporters wanting to know what was going on.16

Whalen coordinated a scheme with other officers to keep a lid on the story, which never was reported in the American press. German reporters were told that the "scientist exchange program" operated under State Department auspices and that the U. S. military did not recruit scientists. One reporter from a Cologne magazine was allowed into Camp King to talk with project officers, but they carefully kept him away from the team's offices, where a group of scientists was waiting to come to the United States.17

Paperclip recruiting continued to escalate in 1959 as tension between the United States and Russia grew stronger and the press reported rumors of war. Khrushchev announced a Soviet plan to turn West Berlin into a demilitarized "free city" and demanded that the Allied powers withdraw their troops by May 1959. Khrushchev's plan would leave the small island of democracy defenseless in the middle of Communist East Germany. The crisis escalated when Marshal Vasily Sokolovsky, chief of the Soviet armed forces, told a cheering crowd in Moscow that even if it meant starting a war, the Soviets would retaliate with force if the Western powers used force to remain in Berlin. "And the United States will not succeed in sitting it out on either side of the ocean with impunity," Sokolovsky warned. "The Soviet Union has intercontinental rockets, and no oceans will save the United States from retaliation."18

Then, in March 1959, President Eisenhower announced that he had not ruled out using atomic bombs if the Berlin crisis escalated into a war. Eisenhower said he thought fighting a ground war against Soviet troops in Europe was hopeless. "What good would it do to send a few more thousands or indeed, a few divisions of troops to Europe?" he asked. To attempt to fight the vastly greater number of Soviet forces on the ground would be "a miscalculation" and an "error," Eisenhower said, but he emphasized that he had not discounted nuclear war. "I think we might as well understand this-might as well all of us understand this: I didn't say that nuclear war is a complete impossibility."19

That same month, Whalen made the fateful decision to betray his country. He met Edemski at a shopping center in Alexandria, Virginia, and agreed to turn over America's defense secrets. From that day in March 1959 Whalen was a paid Soviet agent until he stopped spying in early 1963. He eventually gave the Soviets at least thirty to thirty-five U.S. Army manuals and oral information, for which he was paid approximately $14,000 in cash.20

Edemski and another Soviet agent gave Whalen specific instructions about the kinds of information they wanted. They asked him to obtain documents relating to U.S. defense plans for West Berlin, including U.S. troop movements and plans to reinforce the U.S. forces in Germany. The Berlin crisis had resulted in a number of military exercises involving the airlift of combat troops from the United States to Europe and vice versa while Whalen was in the JIOA. The Soviets directed Whalen to get information concerning the timetables of the airlifts and the specific destinations of the U. S. troops involved. The Soviets also wanted information concerning the realignment and streamlining of U.S. Army combat units, including details of combat strategy utilizing atomic bombs.21

The full extent of Whalen's espionage activities and of the information he gave the Soviets is unknown. This account is based primarily on federal court records and Whalen's massive eight-volume dossier from the U.S. Army Intelligence and Security Command. The FBI refused the author's FOIA request for Whalen's file. But Whalen had told FBI interrogators that he could not remember everything he had given the Soviet agents. For instance, he claimed that he could positively identify only seventeen of the thirty to thirty-five manuals he had given them. In addition, INSCOM reports note that he had shredded "thousands of documents" while working in the JIOA.22

Nevertheless, as one Department of Defense investigator reported, "it must be assumed that he probably gave them any information to which he had access." Army intelligence documents show that that definitely included information about the German scientist projects.2[3]

Four months after Whalen began actively spying, he was promoted to director of the JIOA, on July 2, 1959. In that position Whalen sent lists of German or Austrian scientists to the State Department's visa director, Thomas G. Spence, asking State to issue visas so that they could enter the United States. Whalen's memos certified that "these aliens are not now, nor likely to become security threats to the United States," even though investigations on several scientists had not been completed. Whalen also sent the scientists' personal history forms to the FBI, noting that a complete security investigation had been conducted "with favorable results."2[4]

Ninety-four individuals were brought to the United States under Paperclip in 1959. Most were employed by the Army in Huntsville or at Fort Monmouth. Others worked for the Navy at China Lake, California, or White Oak, Maryland, where the earlier wind tunnel group was based. The Air Force's group primarily went to Wright-Patterson in Dayton. In addition to Paperclip recruits, an unknown number of others worked under Project 63 or National Interest for Martin Marietta, General Electric, and other defense contractors or for universities, including Yale.25

Friedwardt Winterberg was one German scientist who was named as a candidate for JIOA's denial Project 63 in 1959. As the reader will learn later, in 1985 Winterberg positioned himself as media spokesman for Arthur Rudolph when Rudolph left the country rather than face war crimes charges. In January 1959 the thirty-year-old physicist was demanding a salary of over $1,000 a month. ACSI Director of Plans Brigadier General Richard Collins told the Special Projects Team that Winterberg might be considered for JIOA's project if he discontinued that demand. "Age and lack of experience would cause prospective employers to be reluctant to offer such a salary," Collins wrote. It was suggested that Winterberg be sent to the Alamac Hotel for job interviews. Winterberg accepted a position at Ohio's Case University in 1959 and currently is with the Desert Research Institute in Reno, Nevada.26

The 1959 group also included older scientists who had established their careers under Hitler. One was forty-seven-yearold Hans Dolezalek, a German meteorologist who had worked for the Wehrmacht Weather Service during World War II and had been an early member of the SA, the brown-shirted stormtroopers. The JIOA was not supposed to actively recruit scientists after 1948. Yet the team's recruiter, Knut Lossbom, had approached Dolezalek as early as 1953, sending him forms to apply for work in America. Dolezalek visited America in 1958 to attend a conference of meteorological experts. He accepted a position under Paperclip at AVCO in Wilmington, Massachusetts, for $13,000 a year, twice the salary offered by Fort Monmouth.27

Another 1959 recruit was working as a dishwasher in Canada when he asked Wernher von Braun for a job. Sixty-one-yearold Friedrich Wigand was first touted as a top German rocket scientist, but after he arrived in Huntsville he admitted that he had never even seen a rocket. He had been a lieutenant in the Wehrmacht stationed for a time at Kummersdorf, where some of Germany's rocket work was being done. After the war, Wigand immigrated to Canada and worked on a farm picking sugar beets. In 1956, he got a job washing dishes at a hospital in Calgary. "Every night after my work in the kitchen, I studied my chemistry and my physics," said the self-taught chemist. He arrived in Huntsville in May 1959 and obtained a position as a lab technician at Brown Engineering Company.2[8]

One physicist was returned to Germany when he could not find permanent employment in America. Fritz Rossmann, a former SS member, had worked for the Army Ballistic Missile Agency in Huntsville and the Patrick Air Force Base in Florida. Despite a more lenient immigration law, Rossmann had problems obtaining permanent residency because of his SS and Nazi party memberships and the fact that he had been arrested twice by Army CIC agents and convicted by a denazification court. During the war he had been chief of the atmospheric electricity section of the German Glider Research Institute in Braunschwieg. Rossmann returned to Germany in 1959 and joined the faculty at the University of Munich.2[9]

Whalen's position as JIOA director in charge of the German scientist program gives rise to disturbing questions about further services he might have provided his Soviet handlers.

- Did he bring in a spy or saboteur? Whalen could have inserted a specialist hand-picked by the Soviets into a crucial area of American defense-related research, where the scientist-agent could then either sabotage our efforts or report on them to his spy masters.
- Did he use blackmail to recruit a spy or saboteur from among the approximately sixteen hundred Paperclip specialists and hundreds of other JIOA recruits brought to this country since 1945? It certainly is clear from the evidence that many of them had a lot to hide.
- Did he give the Soviets information on research being done by JIOA specialists all across the country? These specialists worked on guided missiles for the Army, the Navy, and the Air Force. They worked in the NASA space program, in aeromedical research, in atomic, biological, and chemical warfare research, and on the latest designs in jet aircraft and submarines. They worked at nearly every military installation and for most key defense contractors across the country, and in all of those locations they had access to classified information.

Whalen did pass on information gleaned from the JIOA's` watch list of scientists working on defense projects in West Germany. The scientists' research was closely monitored by Army CIC agents and other individuals. This information obviously would have provided the Soviets with up-to-date knowledge of West Germany's defense research.

The issue of how much use Whalen made of the intelligence information obtained from scientists also is important. It should be clear by now that JIOA officers viewed Paperclip as an intelligence project, not an exploitation project. This view was discussed during a March 1960 meeting to decide whether the three projects should be continued. In that meeting, Whalen concluded that the projects had produced a "vast amount" of intelligence information and should be continued for that reason. Project 63, the denial project, was even defined as "definitely an intelligence program." Army intelligence officers interrogated scientists in America who corresponded with foreign scientists and attended international scientific conferences to learn what other countries were doing.3o

Whatever use the Soviets made of Whalen's connection with the JIOA projects, the material he provided them from other sources was damaging enough. Because of his position in the JCS, Whalen was able to requisition documents to meet the demands of his Soviet handlers. He sold the Soviets army manuals, which were classified as secret, that gave details of U. S. Army nuclear artillery and missile capabilities and included information on Hawk and Nike missiles. One manual was entitled "Field Artillery Missile Group." Another was a Department of the Army technical bulletin that described the Nike-Ajax and Nike-Hercules antiaircraft guided missile systems and included detailed information on electronic countermeasures. Whalen, as one of the destruction officers for the JCS, was able to destroy the documents after they were returned by the Soviets.[3]1

In addition to selling classified documents, Whalen made oral and handwritten reports based on his conversations with colleagues in the JIOA, the Foreign Liaison Office, the ACSI, and the Joint Chiefs of Staff office. One 1970 investigation noted that none of the officers from whom Whalen obtained information was involved in espionage. The report stated:

There is absolutely no evidence of connivance by others. In effect, Whalen used friendship as a vehicle to move conversations to a topic in which he had immediate interest in satisfying his handlers. These innocent parties were guilty of nothing more than a certain laxity in security in that they allowed themselves to, be duped into discussing sensitive material to which subject had no established need-to-know.[32]

Whalen took advantage of casual conversations with associates in the Pentagon to obtain information for the Soviets concerning the movement of troops and the reorganization of U.S. Army combat units. Some of that information included data regarding mobile combat units equipped with Honest John rockets.[33]

Whalen met Edemski once a month in shopping center parking lots in Alexandria, Virginia, where they held operational planning meetings. On three or four occasions Whalen gave Edemski classified information about plans to evacuate U.S. civilians in West Germany in the event of a surprise attack by the Soviets. Several other times Edemski took notes on a threeby-five-inch pad of paper while Whalen made oral reports about the U.S. buildup or reduction of troops in Europe and defense plans for West Germany and France.[34]

Other oral reports to Edemski contained information from Washington Liaison Group projects in which Whalen had participated. He was the Department of Defense representative on the Liaison Group, whose purpose was to devise worldwide plans to evacuate and save the lives of U.S. citizens abroad in case of nuclear attack or imminent hostilities. The Liaison Group, headed by State Department representative Walter Mueller, met weekly in the State Department building. The members discussed the number of Americans living in foreign countries, the number of military personnel to be involved in evacuation plans, strategic evacuation "hot spots," such as West Germany and, particularly, Berlin, and other vital information. The JIOA's activities were extremely relevant to the Liaison Group's concerns, since there were plans to evacuate German scientists from Europe in case of war, and one main feature of Paperclip from the beginning was keeping track of scientists in Europe and their activities.[35]

Once Whalen told Edemski the details of meetings he had attended in Beirut, Lebanon, and Rome on the evacuation of U.S. civilians. On another occasion he disclosed information from an agreement between the departments of Defense and State that Whalen said had been written in part by him as a member of the Liaison Group. This agreement contained details of secret plans for the evacuation of U. S. civilians and military dependents worldwide and defined the responsibilities of the Defense and State Departments in executing those plans in the event of war with the USSR.[36]

During the time that Whalen spied for the Soviets, he not only was promoted to chairman of the-JIOA but he passed a background investigation that cleared him for access to classified information. A security investigation on October 22, 1959, cleared him for access to both top-secret and cryptologic information. Although the investigation reported that he "occasionally drank to excess and that between 1952 and 1959 he had recurrent financial problems," it did not uncover evidence that he was a spy.37

Lieutenant Colonel Norris said he did not notice Whalen "except for him walking around, beating on his chest, making rash statements." Other JIOA officers certainly were aware of his drinking problem, but that did not trigger enough of a concern to prompt anyone to report him as a security threat. "After this thing broke I had people I knew come up to me saying he drank, he borrowed money," recalled Colonel Christopher, who rejoined the project in 1962. "I said, `Why the hell didn't you tell somebody? That's an indication.' "[38]

Yet JIOA officer Gardner did consider a college student as being suspect simply because he was researching Paperclip. Clarence Lasby was a student at the University of California at Los Angeles and had decided to write his doctoral dissertation on Project Paperclip. As part of his research Lasby sent questionnaires to a number of Paperclip scientists, including Hans Ziegler at Fort Monmouth,

where the Guzmann sex scandal took place. And remember, earlier Ziegler had been given a little help by Army CIC agents with his denazification court decision.[39]

On August 5, 1960, Ziegler telephoned Gardner, expressing "grave concern" that Lasby had asked several German scientists at Monmouth to fill out a questionnaire regarding their Paperclip experiences. Ziegler then turned Lasby's questionnaires over to E. M. McDermott, the security control officer at Monmouth, who advised the recipients of the questionnaires to "stand fast" and refrain from responding.40

Gardner alerted other officers that he intended "to check the possible Communist affiliations of Laspy [*sic*] through appropriate agencies." And so he did. Gardner notified the FBI, the ACSI, and the Office of Naval Intelligence and asked them to check out Lasby. In addition Gardner contacted a Captain Howell, described as the "JCS watchdog in the field of adverse or undesirable publicity." Gardner's investigation did not uncover any derogatory evidence against Lasby. But while Gardner was busy checking out an innocent college student, Whalen was wandering freely around the Pentagon gathering information to sell to the Soviets.[4]1

In 1960 the JIOA brought fifty-five more Paperclip recruits to the United States. "We weren't overwhelmed with applications," recalled Norris. "They were mostly younger people with a bright future who didn't think they could get the opportunity to utilize their talents in Germany." Several went to work for the Army Signal Corps at Fort Monmouth: Karl Moeller had just obtained a doctorate in physics from the University of Heidelberg and Rupert Brand had been an engineer with Siemens. In addition, the U.S. Bureau of Standards in Boulder, Colorado, hired physicist Adalbert Goertz and Watervliet Arsenal in New York employed engineer Friedhelm Bachmann.42

A number of others came in 1960 to work for universities, defense contractors, or private firms, including General Electric, Union Carbide, and the Case Institute of Technology. Thirty-year-old physicist Kurt Breitschwerdt obtained a position with Remington Rand. Thirty-five-year-old Reinhard Buchner parlayed his doctorate in experimental physics to become senior research engineer at AC Spark Plug in Boston. The Austrian Herwig Kogelnik, who had a doctorate in electronics from the Institute of Technology in Vienna, arrived in 1960 to work under a short-term government contract until his employment term began with Bell Telephone Laboratories in 1961.43

Meanwhile, Whalen's contact in Soviet intelligence was changed in February 1960 when Edemski was transferred to London and immediately promoted to the rank of general. During his farewell party at the Soviet Embassy in Washington, Edemski introduced Whalen to "Mike" and told Whalen to help the new man in the same way that he'd been helping Edemski. Mikhail "Mike" Shumaev was a known GRU agent and first secretary of the Soviet Embassy.44

Following Edemski's departure, Whalen met with Shumaev approximately eleven times in Alexandria shopping center parking lots. He received $3,000 in cash between March and July 1960 alone for turning over America's defense secrets to the Soviets. Some of that information was included in oral reports and approximately ten to fifteen U.S. Army manuals and documents that were classified either confidential or secret. Whalen later told the FBI that he could not remember the content of the information he gave Shumaev. In June 1960, for example, Whalen gave Shumaev a written report pertaining to three or four subjects, none of which Whalen could recall later, although he did remember that the information was classified confidential or secret and that he had obtained the information from conversations with other officers at the JCS.[45]

By July Whalen's health had deteriorated dramatically due to his heavy drinking. His once-towering six feet three frame was now painfully stooped over from arthritis and recurring bouts of multiple sclerosis. He could not stay seated in one position for long and as a result was constantly pacing the floor. On July 4 he had his first heart attack and was hospitalized at DeWitt Army Hospital in Fort Belvoir, Virginia, where doctors told him to take it easy. He had another heart attack the day before Thanksgiving.46

Whalen did not return to active duty after his first heart attack and he officially retired from the military in February 1961. But anyone who might think Whalen let serious health problems or retirement get in the way of his espionage activities would be dead wrong. One confidential source

familiar with this and other espionage cases said that he had never seen as persistent and tenacious a spy as Whalen.[47]

Whalen continued to roam the halls of the Pentagon *until early 1963* to get information for the Soviets through conversations with officers he knew. This shocking example of Whalen's tenacity also raises serious questions about security-or lack of it-at the Pentagon. One officer reported that he saw Whalen sitting at a desk "reading papers" in a highly secret Joint Chiefs of Staff office a few months after Whalen had been hospitalized for his first heart attack. Another officer said that he had seen Whalen in a secret Army intelligence office where visitors were barred and that he had passed Whalen in the Pentagon corridors on one or two other occasions.[48]

Just one month after Whalen retired from the military, he received $1,000 in cash for turning over more secret information during a meeting with Shumaev. After Whalen's retirement Shumaev instructed him to develop a contact within the Pentagon who could furnish Whalen with information and documents for the Soviets; to obtain civilian employment in the Pentagon that would provide him access to information of interest to the Soviets; and to visit the Pentagon in order to develop information through conversations with former military colleagues. Whalen indicated that he would try to comply with these instructions.49

Whalen apparently was unsuccessful at finding an accomplice in his espionage activities. During the Cuban missile crisis, at the direction of Soviet intelligence, he did seek employment at the Defense Intelligence Agency and the ACSI. One ACSI officer said Whalen walked freely into his office, which was located in a highly sensitive Pentagon area that is off limits to visitors, to ask about a civilian job. Fortunately Whalen failed to obtain employment. Nevertheless, for two months following his retirement Whalen made frequent visits to the Pentagon to talk with acquaintances in the JIOA. In April 1961, based on conversations with those persons and discussions he had overheard, Whalen prepared an oral report for Shumaev dealing with U.S. armed forces, defenses, and plans pertaining to the European theater. Thereafter, Whalen visited the ACSI section at the Pentagon in quest of information for the Soviets.50

From February 1961 until the last operational meeting that Whalen had with Shumaev in early 1963, the Soviet agent frequently upbraided him for lack of production. During their last meeting Whalen indicated that he would be unable to obtain further information and suggested that their relationship be ended. The Soviet tried to persuade Whalen to keep trying, but to no avail. After the meeting Shumaev persisted by telephoning Whalen several times-again to no avail.51

Meanwhile, the FBI had begun to sift through the evidence from an espionage case involving one Colonel Stig Wennerstrom, a Swedish Defense Ministry official who was convicted of espionage in 1964 and sentenced to life imprisonment for compromising the entire Swedish air defense system. Wennerstrom had been air attache in the Swedish Embassy in Washington from 1952 to 1957 and had frequently attended embassy parties with U. S. military officers, including Whalen. According to testimony at his trial, Wennerstrom gave the Soviets information on the U.S. defense system that included details of missiles, nuclear weapons, bombing sites and a lengthy report on his visit to a Strategic Air Command base where he was allowed to inspect nearly everything. He had also obtained a huge amount of classified material by bribing some of the officials he met during numerous trips to aircraft factories in the U.S. and Canada. "I had entree everywhere," he testified. Wennerstrom's Soviet handlers told him not to bother with such "unnecessary" intelligence as data on Defense Department personnel-those matters were being taken care of by "an agent or agents" within the Pentagon.52

FBI agent Donald Gruentzel was conducting a damage assessment of the Wennerstrom case when he encountered Whalen's name during investigations into Wennerstrom's spying activities. At the same time, a counterintelligence source warned the FBI that there was a Soviet mole high up in the Pentagon. In late 1963 Gruentzel visited Whalen in his home to inquire whether Whalen had any knowledge about Wennerstrom and Edemski. The FBI put Whalen's house under surveillance and subpoenaed his bank records. Those documents revealed that Whalen, who had been deeply in debt, suddenly had come into an unexplained financial windfall in 1959. The FBI also placed an illegal wiretap on Whalen's home telephone, an action that nearly blew the Justice Department's case against

Whalen in 1966.[53]

On September 22, 1964, an Army CIC agent telephoned Whalen and asked if he would come to a meeting at the Pentagon. By now Whalen was downing nearly a quart of liquor a day. The following day, after three or four drinks, Whalen arrived in time for the one o'clock meeting. He met with two FBI agents, Gruentzel and Paul Nugent, in a soundproof room near ACSI offices, where, unbeknownst to the FBI, the Army surreptitiously recorded their conversation. During the meeting Gruentzel confronted Whalen with his bank records and asked repeatedly if he had furnished information to the Soviets. Although Whalen identified Edemski's photograph, he denied that he had given Edemski any information. After the meeting, Whalen went home and got drunk.[54]

The next day Whalen met the agents at FBI headquarters in Washington, where he underwent a polygraph exam. While Whalen was strapped to the polygraph machine, he thought that he was going to have another heart attack. "Just stop this," he told the agents. "I will tell you anything I can tell you, and let me sit down or lie down and rest somewhere." After Whalen rested for awhile, the agents continued the interview.55

"We were discussing at this point again, his finances," Gruentzel later testified, "as to why he had been in debt for such a long period of time, up until 1959, and during '59 and '60 the debts were erased. He had no debts, more money was put in the bank account, and [we] suggested the possibility that, maybe, this was the fruit of selling information to the Soviets. And, at this point, he just blurted out, `O.k., you've got me over the barrel. I sold them the stuff.' "56

Two years later, on July 12, 1966, a federal grand jury indicted Whalen of acting as an agent of the USSR and conspiring to gather or deliver defense information to the USSR pertaining to "atomic weaponry, missiles, military plans for the defense of Europe, estimates of comparative military capabilities, military intelligence reports and analyses, information concerning the retaliation plans by the U.S. Strategic Air Command and information pertaining to troop movements."57

But Justice Department prosecutors had several difficulties with their case. First, there was the question of whether information about Whalen's finances had been obtained as a result of an illegal FBI wiretap. Second, there was the question of whether the FBI had advised Whalen of his rights during approximately thirty-six interrogations. Third, it was uncertain whether the court would allow the prosecutors to use confessions Whalen had made during the FBI interrogations. Finally, as in many cases involving espionage, there was concern that confidential sources and sensitive defense information would be exposed if the case went to trial in open court.58

Meanwhile, Federal Judge Oren Lewis issued a gag order forbidding the press from publishing any information about the confessions, even though that information had been discussed during a hearing in open court. Although there were numerous articles about the Whalen case in *The New York Times,* the *Washington Post,* and other media, the subject of Paperclip and Whalen's connection to the project never was revealed. No one ever reported what his job had been in the JCS. Witnesses who might have established the Paperclip connection and clarified other matters-such as the identity of Whalen's loose-lipped sources-never were called to testify. The witness list included Cone and JIOA officers Gardner and Lahodney. Although the JIOA name was mentioned in open court, no one reported what that agency's mission actually was. An Army press officer told *The New York Times* that he did not know what Whalen's duties had been in the JCS. In addition, the Army's press release concerning Whalen's background was misleading. Whalen was described simply as an officer in the Joint Chiefs of Staff agency, and the biography that the Army gave the press abruptly ended in 1955.[59]

Furthermore, no information was made public about Whalen's JIOA connections to both the State and Justice Departments. *The New York Times* quoted a State Department press officer, Robert McClosky, as saying that one of Whalen's JCS committee assignments (the Washington Liaison Group) involved updating the plans for the evacuation of U.S. citizens from any area of potential trouble. According to McClosky, that assignment was Whalen's only access to the State Department "that I am aware of." Yet, as has been shown repeatedly, the JIOA had close connections with both the State and Justice Departments. Included among the few JIOA documents

available are memos signed by Whalen to both the Visa Department and the attorney general listing German and Austrian scientists who were recommended by the JIOA to be brought to the United States under Paperclip. State Department officials and the attorney general had approved their U. S. entry in part on the basis of JIOA Director Whalen's recommendation.60

In November 1966 U.S. Attorney C. Vernon Spratley announced that the Justice Department might not prosecute Whalen on espionage charges if the court suppressed a series of statements containing confessions that Whalen had given to the FBI. Judge Lewis warned government attorneys that "they can't rely on a confession alone." If Whalen claimed that he had made the statements involuntarily and if the government had no other evidence, "he will be set free regardless of how guilty he is," the judge added.61

Behind the scenes, Whalen cut a deal with the Justice Department. Whalen was concerned that if convicted of espionage, he would be stripped of his military benefits and his family would suffer as a result. Whalen agreed to plead guilty to a lesser charge if special legislation was passed guaranteeing his wife the survivor benefits accruing from his retired military status. This also meant that when Whalen died he could be buried alongside America's military heroes at Arlington Cemetery.62

Confronted, with the lesser charge on December 17, 1966, Whalen told Judge Lewis, uncertainly, "Uh-I will plead guilty." Not satisfied with this answer, the judge explained the charges to Whalen in detail. At one point Whalen said he did not "understand the terminology" of the charges. "I'll put it in lower language," Lewis answered.[63]

"You are charged with conniving . . . to get secret documents pertaining to U.S. defense and giving them to the Russians to use against us. . . . Did you do that, Colonel?"

"Yes, sir," Whalen answered, betraying little emotion.64

After accusing Whalen of "selling me and all your fellow Americans down the river," Judge Lewis sentenced the man who had been at the helm of Paperclip while operating as a Soviet spy to fifteen years' imprisonment.65

- - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - -

1. Whalen biography is from ACSI, "The William H. Whalen Case," ACSI Case Summary, 1968, in William Whalen INSCOM dossier B1009214.

2. Whalen's relationship with Edemski and Edemski's biography are in Whalen's INSCOM dossier.

3. Quote is from Eugene Stapleton, "Memorandum for the DOI," 1 September 1970, Whalen's INSCOM dossier.

4. ACSI, "Whalen Case"; U.S. Army Intelligence Command, "Summary of Information," memo, 27 August 1970, in Whalen's INSCOM dossier. Information on Whalen's finances is in *Whalen* trial records.

5. ACSI, "Whalen Case."

6. Walter Sullivan, "Soviet Launches Earth Satellite," *The New York Times,* 5 October 1957; and *The New York Times,* 14 September 1959.

7. Author interview with Rocco Petrone.

8. Whalen's biography: in ACSI, "Whalen Case"; information on other officers is from JIOA post-1952 administrative files, RG 330, NARS, and ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

9. Author interview with retired Army Colonel Robinson Norris.

10. Colleagues' descriptions of Whalen with sources' names deleted: Agent Report, 1 June 1965; 902d Intelligence Corps Group, "Memo for the Record," 1 November 1964; and Agent Report, 8 December 1964-a11 from Whalen's INSCOM dossier.

11. JIOA to Special Projects Section, U.S. Army, Europe, 7 November 1957, in Hans Longosch's ACSI dossier, ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

12. Statistics and information on where recruits worked are in JIOA post-1952 administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

13. Popodi biography is in INSCOM dossier GE012017; Nowatny information is in "Austrian Scientists."

14. See especially "Request for BDC and Wast Check," 7 November 1958, in Gorges INSCOM dossier HE031272.

15. "Complaint Made by Telefunken to the U.S. Charge d'Affaires in Bonn Concerning an Offer of Employment Extended to a Telefunken Employee," unsigned memo, 26 November 1959, in JIOA post-1952 administrative files, RG

330, NARS.

16. Quotes are from *Bild-Zeitung,* in the Hans Goslich ACSI dossier, ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

17. Memo, Major George Lanstrum, ACSI, to Major Lewis Saxby, Special Projects Section, Frankfurt, 22 November 1957, in the Hans Goslich ACSI dossier, ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

18. Max Frankel, "U.S. Refuses to Yield Rights: Soviet Asks Talk," *The New York Times,* 28 November 1958; and Osgood Caruthers, "Gromyko Warns of `Big War' Peril in Berlin Dispute," *The New York Times,* 26 December 1958.

19. Jack Raymond, "President Bars Troop War in Europe But He Declines to Rule Out a Nuclear War," *The New York Times, 12* March 1959.

20. ACSI, "Whalen Case."

21. ACSI, "Damage Assessment in the Case of Whalen," April 1965, in Whalen's INSCOM dossier.

22. ACSI, "Administrative Investigation Concerning the Assignment of Lt. Colonel William Henry Whalen," memo, 1 February 1965, in Whalen's INSCOM dossier.

23. ACSI, "Damage Assessment."

24. Whalen's memos to the State Department are in JIOA post-1952 administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

25. Lists and statistics: ibid.

26. For Winterberg listings see Brigadier Ger.eral Richard Collins, "Disposition Form: Alien Specialists Interested in Employment in the United States," 5 January 1959; and memo, Brigadier General Richard Collins to ACSI, Special Projects Section, 9 January 1959-both in ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RB 319, WNRC.

27. Letter, Knut Lossbom to Hans Dolezalek, 3 August 1953; *Alien Personal History Statement,* 25 August 1953, in Dolezalek's INSCOM dossier XE574904.

28. Sandy McPherson, "Top German Scientist Washed Dishes in City," *Calgary Herald,* 5 May 1959; "German Immigrant to Get New Start at Local Firm," *Huntsville Times,* 6 May 1959; and "Rocket `Expert' Says
He Wasn't," *Huntsville Times, 10* May 1959. The personnel office at Brown Engineering confirmed Wigand's 1959 employment.

29. Rossmann INSCOM dossier XE574904; see also letter, G. A. Little to Major Lewis Saxby, 31 October 1952, on Rossmann not qualifying for immigration, in Rossmann's ACSI dossier, ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

30. Memo regarding intelligence meeting and enclosure no. 1 identified as being JIOA, 1 March 1960, in ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC.

31. ACSI, "Damage Assessment."

32. Stapleton, "Memorandum."

33. Memo, Colonel Graham Schmidt to Director, Security Plans and Programs, Office of the Assistant Secretary of Defense, March 1965, in Whalen's INSCOM dossier.

34. ACSI, "Damage Assessment."

35. Statement on "William Henry Whalen" was submitted to the American Embassy by Walter Mueller, 20 May 1963, State Department document referral from Whalen's INSCOM dossier.

36. ACSI, "Whalen Case."

37. Ibid.

38. Norris and Christopher interviews.

39. Hans Zeigler to JIOA Director Earle Gardner, 9 August 1960; E. M. McDermott to Security Control Officer, Fort Monmouth, Department of the Army, August 1960; and JIOA Director Earle Gardner to ACSI, 31 October 1960-a11 in JIOA post-1952 administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

40. Ibid.

41. JIOA Director Earle Gardner to Director of Intelligence, 8 August 1960; and JIOA Director Earle Gardner, "Memorandum for the Record," 5 August 1960-both in JIOA post-1952 administrative files, RG 330, NARS.

42. Norris interview; lists of recruits are in *Personnel Employed Under DEFSIP Contracts,* in JIOA post-1952 administrative files, RG 330, NARS. 43. Ibid.

44. ACSI, "Whalen Case."

45. U.S. Army Intelligence Command, "Summary"; and ACSI, "Damage Assessment."

46. ACSI, "Whalen Case"; and *Whalen.* 47. Ibid.

48. Agent Report, 9 February 1966, in Whalen's INSCOM dossier. 49. *Whalen;* and ACSI, "Whalen Case."

50. ACSI, "Whalen Case."

51. Ibid.

52. Information on Wennersuom is in Fred Graham, "Retired Pentagon Officer Is Seized as Spy for Soviets," *The*

New York Times, 13 July 1966; H. K. Ronblom, *The Spy Without a Country* (New York: Coward McCann, 1965); and Thomas Whiteside, *An Agent in Place* (New York: Viking, 1966).

53. *Whalen.*

54. Ibid.

55. Ibid.

56. Testimony of Gruentzel is in ibid.

57. Grand Jury Indictment is in ibid.

58. Ibid.

59. Ibid.; E. Kenworthy, "Officials Say FBI Agents Shadowed Spying Suspect From 1959 to 1961," *The Nezv York Times,* 14 July 1966; and Army press release, in Whalen's INSCOM dossier.

60. Kenworthy, "FBI Agents Shadowed Spying Suspect"; memos to State and Justice Departments signed by Whalen are in both JIOA post1952 adminisuative files, RG 330, NARS, and ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, NARS.

61. "U.S. May Not Prosecute Whalen on Spy Charges," *Washington Star,* 14 November 1966.

62. Information on plea bargain is in memo, JAG Special Assistant Conrad Philos to Attorney General, 12 December 1966, in Whalen's INSCOM dossier.

63. "Whalen Pleads Guilty to Defense Secret Plot," *Washington Post,* 17 December 1966.

64. Ibid.

65. *Whalen.*

13 Moon Walk ih the Shadow of the Third Reich

IN the 1960s America's self-imposed goal was to beat the Russians into space. Vice President Lyndon Johnson noted the urgency of that mission in a 1961 report to President John Kennedy that states, in part: "In the crucial areas of our Cold War world, first in space is first, period. Second in space is second in everything."1

At NASA's George C. Marshall Space Flight Center in Huntsville, the German rocket group was working to carry out that mission by developing the powerful rockets needed to take man to the moon. The Germans had been transferred to NASA from the Army soon after the new civilian space agency was established. "We were the only group at that time that knew how to build long-range rockets," said Georg von Tiesenhausen, the team's official brainstormer, who had worked on a wartime plot to launch a rocket into New York City.2

The organization the Germans established at Marshall was almost an exact copy of the Peenemunde organization. "It had proved very efficient," said von Tiesenhausen. But it also meant that the Germans dominated the rocket program to such an extent that they held the chief and deputy slots of every major division and laboratory. And their positions at Marshall and the Kennedy Space Center at Cape Canaveral, Florida, were similar to those they had held during the war.[3]

• The Peenemunde team's leader, Wernher von Braun, became the first director of the Marshall Space Flight Center.

• Mittelwerk's head of production, Arthur Rudolph, was named project director of the Saturn V rocket program.

• Peenemunde's V-2 flight test director, Kurt Debus, was the first director of the Kennedy Space Center.

The American public was not told the full details about the Nazi pasts of NASA's new employees. And apparently, NASA officials did not even bother to check them out. James Kingsbury, former director of science and engineering at Marshall, said he knew about Rudolph's job at Mittelwerk, but he did not believe that NASA had obtained the Army's files on the Germans when they were transferred to the agency. "NASA really wouldn't have had reason to question anything in the Germans' records," he said.[4]

Other NASA officials say the Germans' Nazi pasts were not NASA's problem. The feeling was that "this was something that was all addressed and worked out years ago," recalled a high-ranking technical official who preferred to remain anonymous. He knew that one former Nazi party member, Richard Jenke, had problems during the war because his grandmother was Jewish. "He did show me one day a typewritten note signed by Adolf Hitler that said that, because of his good work for the Party, they would overlook his blood lineage."[5]

The Justice Department thought Kurt Debus's Nazi past violated U.S. immigration laws and held up his legal immigration for years because of his memberships in the SS, the SA, and other Nazi groups. Questions also were raised when Debus violated security by sending messages to his girlfriend in Germany in code so that his wife would not find out. But the biggest problem was the wartime incident of Debus turning a colleague over to the Gestapo for making anti-Hitler statements. A security certificate signed by JIOA Deputy Director James Skinner noted that his value to the Army outweighed this example of ardent nazism. Skinner added that "any conscientious and patriotic, though short-sighted person might have done the same" as Debus. His immigration finally was approved after a new law went into effect December 1952 that no longer barred individuals who had belonged to Nazi organizations.6

Jewish groups did not forget the role the Germans had played in Hitler's Third Reich as easily as NASA did. Von Tiesenhausen recalled that "there were certain ethnic groups in the United States who were against us in principle. The ethnic prejudices operated throughout the time we had a von Braun team-it never ceased. Never." He blames Jews for being the force behind many of the Germans' forced retirements in the 1970s.7

Although their histories escaped scrutiny at NASA, there was criticism of the Germans' operating methods. Some American-born employees at Marshall viewed their tightly knit organization as a clique rather than a team. James Webb, NASA's second administrator, complained that the Germans were circumventing the system by attempting to build the Saturn V in-house at the center. Rocco Petrone, who became Marshall director in 1973, said that Webb felt the group needed to be more tightly managed. "There were a lot of very brilliant guys who had worked in an environment a little more loosely than you should on a tight program like Apollo," said Petrone. Von Braun also was criticized for thrusting himself into the limelight as the self-appointed spokesman on space exploration. At one point Webb told von Braun to stop accepting the hundreds of paid speaking engagements that were in direct violation of NASA employment regulations.[8]

The Germans themselves were aware of their detractors at NASA headquarters. "We were a very independent group, and some people didn't like that," said von Tiesenhausen. "You know when Washington hands out money, they always want to be in the loop." As an example, he describes von Braun's sales approach when he went to NASA headquarters in search of money. "He got us the funds we needed. And then he said, `Okay, we are going to deliver. But in the meantime, don't bother us.' So this independence, a lot of people didn't like. "[9]

The German influence at Marshall increased in the 1960s as new Paperclip recruits arrived as a result of the continuation of JIOA projects. A total of 267 individuals were brought in under Paperclip and National Interest in the 1960s, and an unknown number of others arrived under Project 63. The Paperclip recruits worked for NASA or at military installations including Edgewood Arsenal, Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, Fort Monmouth, and the Naval Ordnance Testing Station in China Lake, California. Seventy-eight others were employed under National Interest with defense contractors, universities, or private corporations, including Pennsylvania State University, the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT), Bell Laboratories, RCA, CBS Laboratories, Martin Marietta, Convair, and Mobil Oil.10

In 1962 the JIOA was shut down as a cost-cutting measure after being in charge of Paperclip for seventeen years. Secretary of Defense Robert McNamara transferred the German scientist projects from the Joint Chiefs of Staff to the secretary of defense. The military wanted to continue the projects for a variety of reasons. First, the military custody procedures still allowed individuals to bypass the usual red tape when entering the country. Second, the foreign scientists under Paperclip could obtain security clearances more quickly than could nonproject scientists, including Americans. Thus the project provided an immediate work force on classified jobs. Third, the projects saved the military a considerable amount of money. For example, a representative from the Navy reported that it would cost the Navy approximately $20,000 a year to send a scientist to an American university to obtain a doctorate, while it could recruit a German scientist who already had an advanced degree for only $1,200 in project expenses.11

Former JIOA Director Stone Christopher had retired from the Air Force by then, although he was working on another secret intelligence operation. In 1962 Christopher was hired to run Paperclip as a civilian. He said the project was still vital because it solved the acute shortage of scientists not only at NASA, but also among defense contractors involved in the space program. "Everybody was crying for physicists and engineers," Christopher said. "And Glen Martin, Westinghouse, General Electric people came into my office all the time asking me to help." At the time, U.S. companies also were placing employment ads in foreign newspapers and sending executives abroad on talent hunts.12

But the continuance of Paperclip angered some Americanborn employees at Marshall. A longtime administrator at Marshall said they complained about Paperclip because Germans were being hired instead of Americans. "And there were a few of the Germans who were not as well qualified because, indeed, they didn't even have degrees," he said. Furthermore, Paperclip recruits

received preferential treatment over Americans at Marshall because the top officials were themselves German. "The `Paperclip' people, when they would come to America, the first thing they would do would be usher them into Dr. von Braun's office. They immediately had an entree to the big boy." Yet newly hired Americans with comparable experience were not given the same entree to von Braun.[13]

While von Braun, Rudolph, and other early Paperclip recruits were hiding their Nazi pasts, the military was covering up the fact that the operation was still going on. The American public had been duped into believing that Paperclip had ended long ago. And the West German government had been told in 1958 that the U.S. had stopped recruiting German scientists in their own country. Therefore, anyone who tried to reveal any information about the project's existence was considered a threat.

The perpetuation of the coverup resulted in outright censorship of the press and the release of false information to the public in both the United States and West Germany. In one case in 1961, a West German reporter visited the Special Projects Team's office in Munich in search of information for a magazine article on West Germany's critical "brain drain," caused by the loss of scientists to employers in foreign countries. He did not know that this was the Paperclip operation. But he concluded that the office was engaged in an illegal recruiting program, because the team's officers were suspiciously tight-lipped and released minimal information.[14]

JIOA Director Navy Captain Earle Gardner thought the reporter's story would expose Paperclip and result in bad publicity. He told Army intelligence officers to make a statement in West Germany to the effect that the U.S. government, through its Special Projects Team office, "disseminates information" on U.S. job opportunities merely as a "public service." The reporter was denied access to figures on the number of scientists who recently had emigrated to America. Gardner said that information would only "whet the appetite of the reading public for additional disclosures for other periods," and then if the JIOA refused to disclose information, it "could convey the impression that we are trying to cover up."[15]

That example shows the mentality present in 1964 when historian Clarence Lasby submitted the manuscript for his book *Project Paperclip* to the military for clearance. It was Christopher who cleared Lasby's manuscript. "I went over that manuscript three times," Christopher told me. "I didn't think it was good to mention names like this fellow [State Department representative Samuel Klaus]." JIOA records show that Christopher also objected to Lasby's use of the words *exploitation* and *denial* because they might prove embarrassing for the U.S. government. When asked if he thought Lasby was aware that Paperclip was still in operation in the 1960s, Christopher said, "I would think so, he came into my office to see me."[16]

Lasby later recalled meeting an Air Force officer whom he thought was helpful, but no one was introduced to him as being in charge of the project. He said he guessed that the project had continued after 1952, but he did not mention that in his book. Unlike today, Lasby had no way to force the military to turn over classified records. "I had to rely on the ambition and greed of a particular service to get records," Lasby said. "They were all so scared of everything." He expunged Klaus's name at the request of the State Department, which refused to show him any documents. He received a letter telling him to expunge the words *exploitation* and *denial,* but he refused to do so. "I told them to go to hell and I used it anyway," he said. Lasby did not see any JIOA files. Unknown to Lasby, the JIOA dossiers showing that Marshall director von Braun had been in the SS, Kennedy Center director Debus had turned a colleague over to the Gestapo, and Saturn manager Rudolph had worked at Mittelwerk were locked up in a safe in Christopher's office.17

Meanwhile, by 1967 the Apollo moon project was under way at NASA. But on January 27, tragedy struck as astronauts Roger Chaffee, Virgil "Gus" Grissom, and Edward White sat locked inside an Apollo capsule at the Kennedy Space Center. At 6:31 P.M., there was a short circuit in defective wiring beneath Grissom's pilot couch. Suddenly Grissom called over the radio: "There's a fire in here." Six crewmen working near the capsule began to tear at the escape hatch but were forced to dash in and out of the smoke-filled room to breathe because their emergency gas masks

were the wrong type for the smoke conditions in the room. Then the smoke grew so thick that it hid the grisly scene of the three astronauts trapped inside the burning space capsule.18

Ten days after the fatal fire Kurt Debus said: "We have always adhered to the highest standards of safety." But as director at the Kennedy Space Center, Debus was responsible for checking out the capsule at the center and determining whether to proceed with the test. "That was his responsibility in the Kennedy Space Center," said former Paperclip specialist Walter Haeussermann. It also had been Debus's responsibility to see that emergency equipment was on hand. Not only were "emergency fire, rescue and medical teams not in attendance," the Apollo Accident Board reported, "the emergency equipment located in the white room (at spacecraft level) and on the spacecraft work levels was not designed for the smoke condition resulting from a fire of this nature."19

The board castigated NASA's upper management and the capsule's contractor, North American Rockwell, for failing "to give adequate attention to certain mundane but equally vital questions of crew safety." The fire started when a spark from defective wiring ignited in the oxygen-filled chamber. But there were numerous other examples of sloppy workmanship and design, including a defective escape hatch. The Johnson Space Center in Houston had overseen the capsule design and Rockwell's work. Marshall had been responsible only for the launch vehicle, which was not mentioned in the report as being a problem.20

Ten months after the Apollo fire, von Braun's team had their first chance to see if their Saturn V moon rocket would fly. It was November 9, 1967-Arthur Rudolph's sixty-first birthday. As Saturn V program manager, Rudolph sat next to von Braun in the control room, watching the countdown to zero. "We wanted to go to the moon," said von Tiesenhausen. "If it's the last thing we do, we wanted to go to the moon. So we built the Saturn vehicle, a very expensive space vehicle." To accomplish that feat, the Germans first had to develop simpler models. And to do that, they had had to build weapons for Hitler and for the U.S. Army. One step after another led to the Saturn V. Now the giant rocket stood like a skyscraper struggling to break free from the clamps that held it upright on the launch pad at Kennedy Space Center. Then all 7.5 million pounds of thrust lifted the rocket off the earth with a deafening roar.21

On July 16, 1969, another Saturn V lifted astronauts into space. Four days later a lunar module called *Eagle* landed on the moon. The reaction of Huntsville residents that day was typical of the rest of the nation. The streets were empty as people watched the spectacular scene on television when Neil Armstrong and Edwin "Buzz" Aldrin walked on the moon.

"We've done it! We've hit the moon," the teenage daughter of one of the space scientists screamed as the celebration began. Later von Braun was carried on the shoulders of Huntsville residents amid ringing church bells and fireworks. Rudolph was showered with honors, including NASA's highest award, the Distinguished Service Medal, when he retired later that year.22

There are some who say it does not matter what crimes the Germans had committed, because they helped us get to the moon. Yet no one mentions the dead slaves who helped build the V-2, and whose ghosts still cry out for justice. We even have censored Dora survivors' point of view from our history books. Americans do not wish to be reminded of what Dora survivor Jean Michel said about the day that U.S. astronauts first walked on the moon: "I could not watch the Apollo mission without remembering that that triumphant walk was made possible by our initiation to inconceivable horror."23

Eli Pollach had worked on V-2s at Mittelwerk, yet no one helped him come to America after the war. Pollach was only seventeen years old when the SS rounded up the Jews of Hungary and sent him and his family to Auschwitz. Later, during an interview, his eyes filled with tears as his fingers gently touched a tattered photograph of his mother and father lying on the table before him. "This is all that is left of them," he said.24

At Auschwitz, Pollach's parents were ordered into the line that led to the gas chambers. He was loaded onto a train headed for Dora. "They called it the Sawatzki commando," he said of the work crew he was forced to join. "We had to go in the tunnels at six o'clock in the morning." He painted

finished V-2s and helped load them onto boxcars in Mittelwerk's tunnels. "Some didn't come out because, you know, they died in there." Pollach was beaten by SS guards and he nearly starved to death. "I started getting fainting spells," he said. "So another inmate held me up, because once you fell down, either they left you there to die or they sent you to what they called the `infirmary,' and that was the end of the line."[25]

After the war it took Pollach four years to get to America, even though he had relatives living here. "So how did these people get here, with falsified documents and denying everything they did?" he asked. He said that going to the moon does not make up for twenty thousand dead Dora slaves. "They have a saying in Hebrew, if you need the thief, then you cut him off the gallows. But even if the United States needed these scientists, they should have reckoned a little bit for what they did."26

Still, the shadow of the Third Reich did cling to the Germans at Marshall. Just two weeks after the moon landing, von Braun confessed in a letter to an Army general that he had been a member of the SS. The letter to retired Major General Julius Klein discussed columnist Drew Pearson, who had revealed von Braun's SS membership decades earlier. It was written on von Braun's official stationery as director of Marshall and was marked "Personal and Sensitive. "27

"It's true that I was a member of Hitler's elite SS. The columnist was correct," von Braun wrote to Klein. Then he admonished: "I would appreciate it if you would keep the information to yourself as any publicity would harm my work with NASA."28

That same year, West German prosecutors who were investigating crimes committed against Dora prisoners called on von Braun for a statement. In a general discussion about Mittelwerk, he told them that his younger brother Magnus "was engaged from approximately the fall, 1944 until the end of the war as a production engineer in Mittelwerk." Von Braun said he had visited Mittelwerk "approximately 15 times" and had been in the tunnels in 1943 while prisoners were quartered there. "I never saw a dead man, nor maltreatment nor a killing," he claimed, although he had heard "rumors" that prisoners had been hanged in the tunnels because of sabotage. The prosecutors then confronted him with the fact that several sabotage reports. were found in Peenemunde files. "I cannot remember anything about it," he replied.29

None of the Paperclip group was called to testify when the West German case went to trial in 1971. But then key French witnesses like Jean Michel were not contacted either. "It was nothing but a coverup," Michel said recently. The court found that the Mittelwerk Prisoner Labor Supply office had requested that Dora prisoners be sent to work as slaves in the tunnels. Over a decade later Rudolph admitted to U.S. Justice Department prosecutors that it was he who had made those requests to the SS.30

Once America's goal of landing men on the moon was achieved, the politicians who controlled the goverment's purse strings found that public sentiment for space exploration had dwindled. The overwhelming interest was in the Vietnam War, protest marches, Martin Luther King's assassination, and riots in the streets. These pressing concerns crowded the astronauts' adventures in space off of the front pages of newspapers.[31]

In 1970, von Braun was reassigned to NASA headquarters in Washington. His transfer marked the beginning of the end of the German rocket team at NASA. "A lot of them got down in the dumps when von Braun left," recalled Alexander McCool, director of the Safety and Quality Assurance office at Marshall. After the Apollo program, von Braun worked on a project to send a man to Mars, but it fell flat. Congress was not interested.32

Since their Peenemunde days, the Germans always had enjoyed high-level protection. Now this "backcover," as the Germans called it, was gone. General Walter Dornberger had protected them from jealousies and undercutting at Peenemunde during the war. And the U.S. Army's backcover had included keeping secret the derogatory information in their files. "If the German group had stayed with the Army, they would probably have continued to be protected," the Marshall technical official observed.[33]

Even their unseen guardians in the Pentagon had closed up shop. Christopher left the project in 1966 because the interest in continuing Paperclip had waned. "I saw the thing was dying," he said.

The projects were turned over to Astrid Kraus, assistant for research and development in the Department of Defense, while Army Colonel Neil ImObersteg ran two Special Projects Team offices in West Germany. "They picked up the pieces," Christopher said, as new recruits continued to arrive until around 1973. Then ImObersteg notified Kraus that the team's offices were going to be closed. "This has been an extremely enjoyable assignment for me," ImObersteg wrote in his farewell. "My best regards, and hoping we may meet again." The team's records, he said, would be burned.[34]

Things began to fall apart for the old rocket team in the early 1970s, when the Marshall Center's budget was drastically slashed and, as the Germans put it, the "Great Massacre" began. Following the civil service rule book, the nonveterans were the first to be cut, and those included the Germans. "So what happened for us . . . we got two options: either a reduction in grade, or getting out, retiring. That was the choice," said von Tiesenhausen. The Germans viewed the forced retirements and demotions as a deliberate attempt to eliminate the German influence at Marshall.35

Almost all of the top positions were cut with one sweep. Kurt Debus left NASA in 1974. Von Tiesenhausen, being younger than the others, was demoted a grade, but his job as assistant director of the Advanced Systems Department remained the same. He said he "made the best of it" and eventually received a NASA medal for exceptional service. Haeussermann, in charge of overall systems engineering, was told that his job was being cut and he did not qualify for any positions over a GS-12. "That was for me an offense," he said. Then his secretary was replaced by one who was less capable.36

Nevertheless, all of them retired with sizable pensions. Former NASA officials also point out that there were many more Americans than Germans who lost their jobs due to cutbacks. Rocco Petrone, who was director of Marshall at the time of the cutbacks, said that the center's organization was being restructured and the Germans had reached retirement age. "You have to remember, they had thirty years behind them," Petrone said. "They all came to talk to me individually and were so appreciative of what the country had done for them.

But they also understood that this time, their careers were coming to an end."[37]

When von Braun arrived in Washington in 1970 there were rumors that he was going to be named as NASA's next chief administrator. But there was still resentment toward von Braun's Nazi past in NASA headquarters and in the nation's capital. Politicians did not want to offend Jews by naming a former official of Hitler's regime to a high-ranking post in the U.S. government. "People said don't pay any attention to the rumors," said Dr. Charles Sheldon, former White House senior staff member of the National Aeronautics and Space Council. "Von Braun would never be given any political position. No one who had worked with Hitler and the Nazi government could be trusted."[38]

"And from then on, von Braun became a non-person," von Tiesenhausen recalled. Von Braun's dream of going to Mars was shelved. Nobody gave him assignments, nobody wanted anything from him. "You could see him wandering up these long corridors all by himself, up and down. Then he left. ..."39

---

1. Joseph Trento, *Prescription for Disaster* (New York: Crown, 1987).
2. Michael Jennings interview with Georg von Tiesenhausen.
3. Ibid.

4. Michael Jennings interview with James Kingsbury.

5. Michael Jennings interview with Marshall Space Flight Center technical official.

6. Debus's immigration problems: 12 February 1953, INS files; James H. Skinner, *Security Certificate From the JIOA,* 16 June 1950, all in Kurt Debus JIOA dossier, RG 330, NARS.

7. Von Tiesenhausen interview.

8. Peter Cobun, "A Footnote Is Enough," *Huntsville Times,* 8 August 1976; Trento, *Prescription for Disaster;* and Petrone interview.

9. Von Tiesenhausen interview.

10. Statistics are in JIOA post-1952 administrative records, RG 330, NARS.

11. Special Projects Team, "Cost Estimates and Evaluation," memo, 31 August 1964, JIOA post-1952 adminisuative records, RG 330, NARS.

12. Christopher interview.

13. Michael Jennings interview with Marshal Space Flight Center administrator.

14. JIOA Director Earle Gardner to Director of Intelligence, 5 April 1961, JIOA post-1952 administrative records, RG 330, NARS.

15. JIOA Director Earle Gardner to ACSI, 5 April 1961; and Colonel Clarence Nelson to Chairman, JIOA, 3 April 1961-both in JIOA post1952 adminisuative records, RG 330, NARS.

16. Christopher interview; memo on meeting between ACSI representative Henry Milne and Colonel Stone Christopher, 23 November 1964, JIOA post-1952 adminisuative records, RG 330, NARS.

17. Author interview with Clarence Lasby; Lasby, *Project Paperclip.*

18. Accident investigation reported in *The New York Times,* and the *Washington Post, 10* April 1967. Trento, *Prescription for Disaster.*

19. Ibid.; Michael Jennings interview with Walter Haeussermann.

20. Von Tiesenhausen interview.

21. Trento, *Prescription for Disaster;* von Tiesenhausen interview.

22. Pat Naute, "Apollo Success Brings Rejoicing for Huntsville," *Birmingham News,* 22 July 1969.

23. Michel, *Dora.*

24. Author interview with Eli Pollach.

25. Ibid.

26. Ibid.

27. Letter, Wernher von Braun to Major General Julius Klein, 2 August 1969, OSI.

28. Ibid.

29. Transcript of the interrogation of Wernher von Braun, 7 February 1969, German Embassy, New Orleans.

30. Author interview with Jean Michel, *People v. Busta and Sander,* Provincial Court of Essen, West Germany, 1971.

31. Trento, *Prescription for Disaster.*

32. Michael Jennings interview with Alexander McCool.

33. Marshall technical official interview.

34. Christopher interview; Neil ImObersteg to Asuid Kraus, 17 February 1967, JIOA post-1952 adminisuative records, RG 330, NARS. Paperclip was canceled by DOD directive 70-7, 24 March 1970. Individuals recruited up to that time continued to arrive until around 1973.

35. Von Tiesenhausen interview.

36. Haeussermann interview.

37. Peuone interview.

38. Cobun, "A Footnote Is Enough."

39. Von Tiesenhausen interview.

14 Trying to Open the Lid

IN the aftermath of the Watergate scandal, members of Congress began a series of investigations into the Nazis-inAmerica issue and past abuses of U. S. intelligence agencies. When these investigations began in 1974, Congresswoman Elizabeth Holtzman from New York was already a familiar face to most Americans. They had seen her tough questioning during the televised Nixon impeachment hearings. No sooner had President Nixon resigned than Holtzman was confronted with yet another difficult issue: she was told that there were Nazi war criminals living in the United States and that the U.S. government was covering it up.

"When they told me that there were Nazi war criminals in America, that the government had a list of these people and was doing nothing, my first reaction was incredulity because it made no sense to me," Holtzman recalled. "America fought Hitler in World War II. Close to 200,000 Americans died in the process. Why would we give sanctuary to Nazi war criminals?"1

Holtzman raised that issue with immigration commissioner Leonard Chapman during a subcommittee hearing in April 1974. "He did admit to me that there was a list of alleged Nazi war criminals, and then when I asked, `Well what are you doing about it?' I got hemming and hawing. So I asked to see the files myself, and it was clear that they were doing nothing. "2

Over the next six years Holtzman conducted investigations, prodded her congressional colleagues, and hassled government agencies on the subject. In the process she received strong bipartisan support from colleagues on the House Judiciary Committee, including committee chairman Peter Rodino and Hamilton Fish. The eventual result was the 1978 passage of the "Holtzman Amendment" to the U.S. immigration law. The amendment provided a statutory basis to deport Nazi war criminals and to prevent their entry into the country as either immigrants or visitors. Until 1953 the Displaced Persons Act had barred from entry individuals who had engaged in persecution under the Nazi regime. A change in that law, however, had allowed even convicted Nazi war criminals, such as Otto Ambros, to enter the country. Holtzman's amendment closed that loophole. In addition to changing the law, Holtzman pressed the Carter administration to set up the Office of Special Investigations (OSI) in the Criminal Division of the Justice Department to investigate and prosecute cases involving Nazi war criminals. Finally there was a law and a prosecuting unit to do something about Nazis in America.[3]

Yet those accomplishments were not easily obtained. "Every one of those efforts involved a battle," Holtzman recalled. One battle involved the attempt to uncover information about Nazi scientists brought here under Paperclip. A tight lid of secrecy continued to surround the project. And no wonder. The American public believed that the project had ended in the late 1940s. No one knew that Paperclip had practically marched right into the congressional hearings.[4]

Nevertheless, disturbing questions did surface about Hubertus Strughold's Nazi past amid charges that government agencies and highly placed political officials were protecting him. While the Air Force touted him as the "father of American space medicine," Strughold was publicly identified as one of thirty-seven war crimes suspects who were under investigation by the U.S. Immigration and Naturalization Service (INS). His name was included on the list because of a letter written in 1958 by one Julian Bach to the editor of the *Saturday Review* concerning the Dachau experiments. But the 1958 investigation that followed quickly turned into a joke. INS made a discreet check with none other than the Air Forcethe same military branch that helped cover up Strughold's past in the first place-and then dropped the investigation after being told that Strughold already had been "appropriately investigated. "[5]

Soon after Strughold's name surfaced again in 1974, Holtzman received conflicting reports from INS when she inquired about the status of his case. In one instance, Holtzman obtained an INS status report noting that a regional INS office had been directed to cancel its investigation. Later, INS Director Chapman told Holtzman that the investigation into Strughold's background was still ongoing.6

A controversy ensued when INS closed the case following an inquiry on Strughold's behalf by his

Texas congressman, Henry Gonzales, who complained to Chapman that Strughold's name had been released as a person under investigation. Gonzales said he had been informed by an "interested individual" that Strughold's background already had been thoroughly checked. "If he did have a suspect past," Gonzales wrote, "I do not believe he would have ever pursued his profession, let alone submit to extensive investigations required for the sensitive jobs that he held for our government." A few days later, Chapman reported back that inquiries to the military and other federal agencies had disclosed "no derogatory information" and therefore the INS considered the case closed.7

Then Strughold claimed in a New York newspaper that he had never even heard of the Dachau experiments until *after* World War II. That claim was disputed in a magazine article by journalist Charles Allen, which gave details of Strughold's attendance at a conference in 1942 at which the freezing experiments on Dachau prisoners were clearly revealed, causing a sensation among the scientists at the conference. After that revelation, U.S. immigration official Henry Wagner admitted to *The New York Times* that there was no evidence in Strughold's file that he had ever been asked directly whether he had known of the Dachau experiments on human beings.[8]

A General Accounting Office investigation in 1978 could have blown the lid off the entire Nazi issue, including Paperclip. The GAO is the investigating arm of Congress, and it has the authority to obtain documents and question witnesses. But the GAO allowed itself to be duped by government agencies instead of using its authority to conduct a thorough probe. The investigation focused on whether there had been a widespread government conspiracy to obstruct investigations of Nazi war criminals living in America. Although the GAO revealed that some government agencies had employed or utilized Nazis, the agency concluded that there had been no conspiracy to obstruct justice.[9]

But later the GAO was shocked to learn that government agencies had indeed deliberately withheld information from GAO investigators. As a result the GAO conducted another investigation in 1985. But that report was an outright whitewash. The GAO was informed of some of the major findings in this book, and the *Bulletin* article revealing the original JIOA coverup already had been published in April of that year. But GAO investigators said they were not interested in seeing the materials. The GAO's 1985 report not only ignored the published evidence, but it contained glaring errors, such as stating that Paperclip had ended in 1947(!), and parroted all of the false myths that have been trotted out through the decades. GAO investigator John Tipton later admitted in an interview that research for the report had been "superficial."10

The JIOA officers were not called to account for their actions at all. "The GAO should have looked at the problem with Paperclip where President Truman issued an executive order saying that Nazi war criminals were not supposed to be brought to this country-an order that we now know was flagrantly violated," Holtzman said. "If we have agencies of this government willing to deliberately overlook and violate presidential directives, if we have government agencies willing to deceive other government agencies in order to protect Nazi war criminals, then we have a very serious problem here."11

In 1974, while Holtzman was investigating Nazis, other congressional committees were uncovering a long history of other illegal activities by Army intelligenee and the CIA. Strangely, the Nazi issue did not surface at all in those investigations, even though the intelligence agencies' use of Nazis was central to the subjects under investigation. For instance, one investigation uncovered the Army's illegal domestic spying activities. Yet no information surfaced to expose the tactics used by G-2 to suppress derogatory information about Paperclip.12

Another investigation did uncover the Army's LSD experiments at Edgewood. But the fact that Nazi scientists worked there under Paperclip was never disclosed in either congressional hearings or in an extensive investigation by the Army inspector general. That both the Army and CIA MK-ULTRA experiments stemmed from Nazi science was certainly relevant to understanding the early history of those secret projects.1[3]

Although some information about the experiments was revealed, the question of rendering justice to the victims was another story. Regarding MK-ULTRA, Frank Olson's family finally learned that he

had jumped from a hotel window after CIA agents slipped LSD into his drink. President Ford publicly apologized to the Olson family and signed legislation providing $750,000 to his survivors. But over a decade would pass before other MK-ULTRA victims would obtain anything resembling justice. On October 5, 1988, the CIA reached an out-of-court settlement with nine victims of Canadian psychiatrist Ewen Cameron's brainwashing techniques, which the CIA had funded. Cameron had subjected his patients to druginduced "sleep therapy" for weeks at a time, gave them LSD, and administered electroshock therapy at up to seventy-five times the usual intensity, while forcing his patients to listen to recorded messages that played continuously for days at a time. The victims suffered permanent physical and mental damage as a result of the experiments.14

The Army's involvement in the psychochemical experiments that killed Harold Blauer also was revealed in 1975, along with evidence that the Army had covered it up. Yet it was not until 1987 that his daughter's lawsuit finally was settled in her favor in federal court. Even then, none of the doctors involved in the experiments were charged with committing a crime.15

The Nuremberg code pertaining to the rights of human subjects in experiments formed an issue in all of these cases. The report on an Army inspector general investigation of the Edgewood experiments discussed the Nuremberg guidelines in detail and judged that Edgewood doctors had violated the guidelines as well as the Army's own internal regulations. But in 1988 the CIA's lawyers ignored the Nuremberg guidelines by contending in court papers that "the doctrine of informed consent, as it is now understood, did not exist" when the Canadian experiments were conducted in the 1950s.16

Soldiers like James Stanley finally were informed in 1975 that they had been used as guinea pigs in psychochemical experiments at Edgewood. "When I received the Army's letter telling me this, I just stood in my living room and cried," Stanley recalled. But his happiness over having learned the truth would be short-lived.17

Army officials admitted during a House Armed Services Committee hearing in 1975 that at least one soldier had committed suicide and several others had been seriously injured as a result of the experiments. Yet the Army had never made any attempt to conduct follow-up tests on any of Edgewood's victims. After considerable congressional prodding, the U.S. Army Surgeon General, Lieutenant General Robert Taylor, promised committee members that all of the LSD victims would be located and given complete physical and psychological exams.18

As a result of lengthy congressional hearings and considerable media attention, the American public was left with the assumption that, at the very least, Edgewood's victims would be tested to determine if they had been hurt, and if so, would receive help. That assumption would prove false.

The Army did conduct a study of the LSD victims. And the National Research Council studied seven thousand other soldiers who had been given everything from nerve gas to PCP. But five years passed before the first study was completed, in 1980, and by then neither Congress nor the press was interested in the results. The studies were released quietly with no publicity whatsoever. No one seemed to care that they were a sham.19

Despite Taylor's pledge that 1,000 LSD victims would be located and given physicals, the LSD study shows that only 220 individuals-less than one-third of the total-actually were given physicals. One hundred others were merely sent forms. And 149 men flatly refused to participate in the study at all-over 8 percent of them saying they were suspicious of the Army's motives. One of them told the Army that he declined to participate out of "the fear [I) would be used again for test[s] of some sort or be doped and sign papers releasing the Army for these problems."20

Some of those who did participate said they were humiliated and outraged by the experience. Stanley, for instance, was told that he was going to be put up in a motel while given a physical at Walter Reed Army Hospital. "Instead I was taken to a psychiatric hpspital and treated like a crazy person," Stanley said. "I was furious. "21

Ken Loeh, who has been in and out of hospitals two dozen times since the experiments, broke down and cried over the phone when the subject of the follow-up exam came up during our conversation. "It's too painful to talk," he said. "I'll send you the information." A few days later, a

package arrived in the mail. Inside were the tattered remnants of his life-the documentation of his experiments, the damaging effect on his health, and Taylor's testimony before Congress. Scrawled across that testimony, where Taylor promised that the soldiers would be helped, Loeh had written angrily, "Lies! Nothing but lies!"22

The LSD study has other serious flaws, not the least of which is the ethical question of whether it should have been overseen by the Army, which had conducted the Edgewood experiments in the first place. The study's author, Lieutenant Colonel David A. McFarling, who also conducted most of the physicals, leaves no doubt as to his personal views of the whole affair. Those views reflect the same cold war mentality that haunted Paperclip for decades. The real crux of the issue, according to McFarling, was that the presumed ends to which the Army LSD experiments were directed- had justified the means. "It would have been grossly negligent of chemical warfare specialists not to have investigated LSD if only from a defensive standpoint," he argued. Maybe so, *but* was this study an appropriate place to discuss an issue that already had been investigated by Congress and the Army's inspector general?2[3]

Even more disturbing, McFarling's study contains a sixpage diatribe against the "cloak and dagger" manner in which the experiments had been portrayed in the press, repeats claims that the soldiers had been fully informed about the tests-a claim refuted by the Army's own inspector general-and asserts that the experiments had been medically supervised to insure the safety of the participants. McFarling also makes the outrageous and totally undocumented accusation against the very soldiers he was assigned to test. After pages of medical evidence, revealing that some men had suffered everything from grand mal seizures to suicide attempts, McFarling brushes off their complaints by stating that "some subjects may have consciously or subconsciously altered and manipulated their complaints for their own purposes, notably selfenrichment."24

A study conducted by the National Research Council raises equally disturbing questions, especially regarding protocol. The council did not deal with the issue of whether the soldiers had been harmed. It evaded that issue by investigating whether the chemical warfare agents and drugs other than LSD used on seven thousand soldiers at the base were capable of causing long-term damage to the soldiers' health. Even though the NRC revealed that several soldiers had been hurt during the tests-and even hospitalized-the council repeatedly said the available data was insufficient to determine the long-term effects of the experiments.[25]

This ambiguous conclusion should not be surprising. What the NRC report conveniently fails to tell the reader is that the project director for the entire study, Francis N. Marzulli, and several of the study's panelists and technical consultants had been employed at Edgewood or had been under contract to that base while the experiments were going on.

And all of them had connections to Paperclip. Project Di- - rector Marzulli worked at Edgewood in the 1950s. Panelist John J. O'Neill, now at Temple University Medical School, conducted chemical warfare research with Paperclip scientist Theodor Wagner-Jauregg when he worked at Edgewood in the 1950s. Four technical consultants also were directly connected to the base: James S. Ketchum, Joseph S. Wiles, Stephen Krop, and J. Henry Wills. Remember, it was Wills who had determined the effects of nerve gas on humans at Edgewood by examining captured records of the Nazi death camps.

If all that is not questionable enough, the NRC report is based in large part on Edgewood reports and published scientific literature written by the same men who conducted the experiments in the first place-hardly a group who would admit in published articles that their experiments had harmed anyone.26

For Stanley, however, the final insult was the U.S. Supreme Court's decision in his case. Stanley sued the government, claiming that he had suffered episodes of violence and memory loss as a result of the LSD experiments. But on June 25, 1987, the Supreme Court held that the government was not liable for injuries to servicemen when the injuries arose in the course of activities incident to their military service. In a scathing dissent Justice William Brennan cited the Nuremberg code, which the Army had flagrantly violated in the so-called interest of national security. "Having invoked national security to conceal its activities, the Government now argues

that the preservation of military discipline requires that Government officials remain free to violate the constitutional rights of soldiers without fear of money damages," Brennan argued. "Soldiers ought not be asked to defend a Constitution indifferent to their essential human dignity."27

By 1980 the system to investigate and prosecute Nazis that Holtzman had worked to set up was in full operation. The Justice Department OSI's staff of historians and lawyers were investigating cases of Nazi war criminals who had lived openly in the United States for decades. Early that year, Harvard law student Eli Rosenbaum made a discovery that eventually would result in Arthur Rudolph's relinquishing his U.S. citizenship and leaving the country rather than contest charges that he had committed war crimes in Nazi Germany.

Rosenbaum was browsing in a Cambridge, Massachusetts, bookstore when he spotted Jean Michel's book Dora. "I was stunned," Rosenbaum recalled. "I had never seen camp Dora mentioned in any Holocaust literature." That oversight by Holocaust historians is one reason why French Resistance hero Michel decided to tell the horrifying story of how he and other Dora prisoners had been forced to work as slaves in Mittelwerk's tunnels. Then Rosenbaum read *The Rocket Team,* by Frederick Ordway and Mitchell Sharpe, which discussed Mittelwerk from the viewpoint of the Nazi rocket scientists who worked there. Rosenbaum was furious when he came across a passage that quoted Rudolph as saying he had cursed when he had to leave a New Year's Eve party in 1943 and go out into the cold weather to resolve a production problem at Mittelwerk.28

"I remember thinking, there were innocent people dying in that hell hole, and here was Arthur Rudolph complaining that he had to leave a nice warm party to go back to work," said Rosenbaum. One of the first things Rosenbaum did after he began working as an OSI attorney was to ask the unit's then-deputy director Neal Sher if he had ever heard of Rudolph. He had not. But he authorized Rosenbaum to investigate.2[9]

Over the next few years, the OSI quietly investigated the Rudolph case, looking for evidence about what had happened in that underground hell so long ago. The U.S. Army's secret Dora war crimes case provided some of the evidence uncovered by the OSI. Major Eugene Smith had died years earlier, but his interrogations of Paperclip scientists at Fort Bliss had been found. Unfortunately, that is not the case with another obvious treasure chest of information. Remember (in chapter 4) how the Air Force placed Mittelwerk director Georg Rickhey in charge of forty-two boxes of Mittelwerk management records at Wright Field? Perhaps it should not be surprising that those records simply vanished without a trace.

By late 1982 OSI prosecutors felt they had proof that Rudolph had requisitioned and utilized slave laborers while serving as Mittelwerk's operations director. "In this case we have not just the utilization of slave labor, which is a clear-cut war crime under the Nuremberg laws," said Sher. "We have the outright exploitation of slave labor . . . working under terrible conditions."30

Rosenbaum, who directed the Rudolph investigation, compares the case with that of Nazi Armaments Minister Albert Speer, who was convicted and sentenced to twenty years' imprisonment by the International Military Tribunal for his role in the utilization of slave labor. "If you look at what the IMT said about Speer, most of it could easily be said about Rudolph as well," Rosenbaum explained. "The IMT said that Speer knew that concentration camp inmates were going to be used as slave laborers to build his armaments. So did Rudolph. Speer attended meetings that dealt with the capture and enslavement of more people and their use as slave laborers for armaments production. So did Rudolph. In fact, Rudolph attended at least one meeting with the SS on that very subject, as did other high-ranking German scientists, including Wernher von Braun. They discussed, among other things, the possibility of bringing a large number of French citizens from France to work as slaves at Mittelwerk. And Rudolph, like Speer, requested-and received from the SS-ever larger numbers of concentration camp inmates to work for him."[3]1

Another key part of the evidence against Rudolph was that the notorious Prisoner Labor Supply office at Mittelwerk was directly subordinate to him. That office worked directly with the SS labor allocation office to designate the number of prisoners assigned to work in Mittelwerk's

tunnels. SS officer Wilhelm Simon, convicted in the Army's Dora trial, headed that SS office. "Rudolph relied on Simon for, among other things, bringing an increased supply of slaves to work on V2 production," Rosenbaum said. Rudolph's subordinates in the Prisoner Labor Supply office also were responsible for determining the quantity of food the prisoners received-an amount so inadequate that thousands of prisoners starved to death.[32]

Rosenbaum also uncovered the evidence that civilian engineers subordinate to Rudolph had beaten or stabbed prisoners and had reported them as saboteurs to the SS. That resulted in some being hanged. Army records identify Rudolph's subordinates, including his deputy, Karl Seidenstuecker, by name as abusing prisoners. As one witness at the Army trial put it, "practically all civilians who were working in the Prisoners' Labor Allocation" either ordered the punishment of prisoners or "carried out beatings on their own."33

The OSI found Rudolph living comfortably in retirement in San Jose, California. On October 13, 1982, and February 4, 1983, he was interrogated under oath by then-OSI director Allan Ryan, Jr., Deputy Director Sher, and Rosenbaum. In the meetings, the OSI attorneys examined the forms that Rudolph had filled out when he first arrived under Project Overcast in 1945. He had joined the Nazi party in 1931, two years before the Nazi regime came into power, and was also a member of the SA. Rudolph told the OSI that he had participated in Nazi party meetings and processions, where he wore a Nazi arm band and paraded down the streets of Berlin.[34]

In 1943 Rudolph was working at Peenemunde when General Dornberger told him that he was going to Mittelwerk. "He just phoned me and said, `You go with Sawatzki,' " Rudolph said. Sawatzki, who later was captured by U.S. Army troops at Nordhausen, became Rudolph's boss at the underground plant. Prisoners already were working and living in the tunnels when Rudolph arrived. Rudolph admitted to OSI that the prisoners were there for political reasons, not because they had technical skills. In Rudolph's view, they were "just bodies." Those "bodies" included a black American flyer named Johnny Nicholas, Jean Michel, Yves Beon and other members of the French Resistance, Hungarian Jews, including children, and Italian, Polish, and Russian POWs.[35]

When the OSI began to question Rudolph about the prisoners' living and working conditions, Rudolph first parroted the same story that he had told Smith in 1947-that he and other civilian engineers had worked under conditions identical to those of the prisoners. But Sher did not let him off the hook so easily.[36]

"I worked twelve hours," Rudolph said.

"Yeah, but *you* didn't-you didn't have to sleep in the tunnel, did you?" asked Sher.
"NO."37

Rudolph also admitted that the food was not the same for him and the prisoners, either. Rudolph ate his workday meals outside the tunnels, in a barracks cafeteria in which the prisoners were not allowed. Also, unlike the prisoners, Rudolph could eat his other meals at home.

"I want to show you a book," said Sher, as he placed *The "Dora"-Nordhausen War Crimes Trial* on the table. This was the U.S. Army prosecution team's grim account of the history of Mittelwerk-Dora, complete with photographs taken by the U. S. Army Signal Corps when Nordhausen was liberated. Sher turned to the page with two photographs of Dora's crematory. The caption under the photograph of the smoldering furnace noted that the prisoners' bodies "were in many cases emaciated to such an extent that the oven could take three or four at a time."38

"Did you ever see it?" asked Sher, referring to the crematory.
"From the distance, yes."

"And you knew that prisoners who died at Mittelbau were cremated at the crematory. You knew that, didn't you?" (Rudolph nodded his head in agreement.)

"Turn to the next page, Mr. Rudolph. You'll see pictures of prisoners who worked at Mittelwerk when they were liberated by the Allies." The photograph showed a truckload of dead prisoners whose bodies were nothing more than skeletons. "Do those people look like they were working under good conditions?"

"No. Certainly not."

"You know the figures are that nearly twenty thousand people died during your service at this facility?"

"No."

"Twenty thousand. Did that-would that surprise you?" "To me, yes."

"You knew people were dying?" "Oh, yeah. I knew that."[39]

Rudolph said he had walked through the tunnels two or three times a day and had seen firsthand that conditions were bad for the prisoners. He also had visited Dora a couple of times to have a glass of schnapps with the S S commandant of the camp, Otto Foerschner, who was convicted of war crimes and hanged after the war. Rudolph admitted to Rosenbaum that he never had ordered his subordinates to cease abusing prisoners. This despite the fact that OSI had located a Mittelwerk directive in which Rudolph and other top-ranking civilians were instructed to order their subordinates to leave such punishment to the SS.40

Rudolph told OSI that Sawatzki had once threatened to put him in a concentration camp, but later in the interview he admitted that he had not taken Sawatzki's threat seriously; he figured Sawatzki needed him to get the rockets built on time. In the spring of 1944 Sawatzki was ill for a month, and when he returned, he was transferred to V-1 production. This left Rudolph completely in charge. "I was free of his darn interfering," Rudolph said. Yet, even then Rudolph did not make changes to help the prisoners. Instead he increased V-2 production schedules, which meant that more prisoners dropped dead from exhaustion. Rudolph said he did not try to lighten the prisoners' work schedules because, "I would be called on the carpet by Sawatzki even though I was not reporting to him anymore. "[41]

"We know, the world knows, it's part of-of history, that prisoners were forcibly taken from various concentration camps, Buchenwald, Auschwitz and others, and used as slave laborers to produce the V-2," said Sher. "You agree that that is true?"

"That's true," said Rudolph.

"It seems to me that you must have known that people were dying of disease and starvation and overwork. You must have known that."

"Yes, I know that people were dying. "[42]

Rudolph confessed that it was he who had asked the SS to send more prisoners to Dora in order to meet the labor demands of increased V-2 production schedules. When Sher asked him directly if he had requested that more forced laborers be brought down into that underground hell, Rudolph admitted, "Yes, I did." And he had dealt directly with SS officer Simon to make those requests. Rudolph said he had gotten the prisoners "from Dora, and I got them probably from Buchenwald or somewhere else. "[43]

Rudolph thought Simon was a nice guy. After Simon's conviction at the Dora trial, Rudolph sent Simon's defense attorney a statement claiming that he and Simon had tried to improve conditions for the prisoners. Rudolph said he had told Simon that one prisoner was too sick to work and he was returned to the camp. The problem was, prisoners judged unfit to work were then shipped to Lublin

extermination camp. The U.S. Army tribunal had rejected Simon's defense arguments along the same line and sentenced him to life imprisonment.44

One important issue in Rudolph's case is the prisoners' sabotage of the rockets. Numerous Dora survivors said they sabotaged rockets by urinating on wiring, removing vital parts, and loosening screws. "It was common practice," said Yves Beon, who sabotaged the rockets he worked on as a welder by making his welding appear sound when, in fact, the rocket parts were not welded at all. Beon believes that their sabotage efforts saved Americans' lives-that American troops landing at Normandy would have been killed if the rockets had functioned properly. "It would have been terrible for the Allies and for the American army," Beon said.45

"These prisoners, despite living under horrendous conditions, nevertheless attempted very courageously to sabotage this Nazi effort," Sher said in an interview. "Engineers would get involved because in order to find out who was the suspected saboteur, one would have to know, mechanically, how the rocket was being sabotaged. And reports were prepared and sent to the SS, and they would then find the saboteur. There are reported incidents of the saboteur being hung in very grotesque and slow fashion, and every slave laborer was ordered-ordered to watch the hanging. "46

Sabotage reports were discussed in the U.S. Army's 1947 trial when Sawatzki's secretary, Hannelore Bannasch, testified that Mittelwerk management "passed on" sabotage reports and if anyone had signed them, it would have been Rudolph. Yet Rudolph told the OSI that he had not known that prisoners were sabotaging rockets.[4]7

When the OSI concluded the interview, the attorneys gave Rudolph no indication when they would be back. Then, in late 1983, the OSI confronted Rudolph with the charges and some of the evidence. As a result Rudolph decided to relinquish his U. S. citizenship and leave the country. "He stated in an agreement formally, which he executed in my presence, in front of his lawyer and his daughter, that if these charges were brought into court he could not contest them," said Sher. Rudolph moved to Hamburg, West Germany, and currently is banned from entering the United States.48

"I think it's important that this government take a stand that Nazi war criminals are not wanted here," said Sher. "Particularly at a time when there are people, in very slick fashion, who claim the Holocaust never took place, who try to whitewash it and try to minimize what happened. I think that's very dangerous for the younger generation, and for history."[49]

The most disturbing example of that whitewash occurred in the late 1980s, in the aftermath of the Rudoph case.

---

1. Holtzman interview. 2. Ibid.

3. Ibid.; Public Law 95-549. 4. Holtzman interview.

5. Bach letter in *Saturday Review,* 9 August 1958, is in the Hubertus Strughold file, OSI. Memo, Representative Elizabeth Holtzman to INS Commissioner Leonard Chapman, 10 June 1974.

6. Holtzman memo to Chapman.

7. Representative Henry Gonzales to INS Commissioner Leonard Chapman, 25 June 1974; and INS Commissioner Leonard Chapman to Representative Henry Gonzales, 12 July 1974-both in Strughold OSI file.

8. Charles Allen, "Hubertus Strughold, Nazi in USA,"*Jewish Currents,* December 1974; and Ralph Blumenthal, "Anti-Nazi Drive a Year Later: No U.S. Legal Moves Are Taken," *The New York Times,* 23 November 1974.

9. General Accounting Office, *Widespread Conspiracy to Obstruct Probes of Alleged Nazi War Crtminals Not Supported by Available Evidence-Controversy May Continue* (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 15 May 1978).

10. Letter, Representative Peter Rodino, Chairman, House Committee on the Judiciary, to Comptroller General Charles Bowsher, 17 May 1982, notifying him that "government agencies misled GAO and Congress." See also CBS, "60 Minutes," 16 May 1982; Loftus, *Belarus Secret;* GAO, *Nazi and Axis Collaborators;* and author interview with John Tipton.

11. Holtzman interview.

12. Senate, *Final Report,* no. 94-755.

13. House Committee on Armed Services, *Military Hallucinogenic Experiments,* hearings, 94th Cong., lst sess., 8

September 1975.

14. For the Olson family's reaction see "Family Blames CIA in Death," *Washington Post, 11* July 1975; and Lee Hockstader, "Victims of 1950s' Mind-Control Experiments Settle with CIA," *Washington Post,* 5 October 1988.

15. U.S. Army, "Inquiry Into the Facts and Circumstances Surrounding the Death of Mr. Harold Blauer at the New York State Psychiatric Institute and Subsequent Claims Actions," inspector general report (obtained under the FOIA); and *Banett.*

16. Taylor and Johnson, "Use of Volunteers in Chemical Agent Research"; and Lee Hockstader, "Victims of 1950s' Mind-Control Experiments," *Washington Post,* 5 October 1988.

17. Stanley interview.

18. House Committee on Armed Services, *Military Hallucinogenic Experiments.*

19. McFarling, "LSD Follow-up Study." 20. Ibid.

21. Stanley interview.

22. Ken Loeh correspondence with author. Loeh applied for veterans benefits in the 1950s. In correspondence between the Army and a Veterans Administration official, the Army first denied that Loeh had participated in the experiments and then refused to reveal the identity of the chemical agent used because the name was classified.

23. McFarling, "LSD Follow-up Study." 24. Ibid.

25. National Research Council, *Possible Long-Term Health Effects.*

26. Ibid. Some of the most revealing documents obtained under the FOIA from Edgewood are lists of individuals who either worked at Edgewood or were under contract from 1945 to 1970. These lists contain the names of dozens of well-known scientists who became department heads at such major universities as Harvard, MIT, Stanford, Maryland, Tulane, and others across the country. See also the footnotes of NRC studies for their published work on experiments at Edgewood.

27. *Stanley.*

28. Author interview with Eli Rosenbaum; Michel, *Dora;* Ordway and Sharpe, *Rocket Team.*

29. Rosenbaum interview.

30. Author interview with OSI Director Neal Sher.

31. Rosenbaum interview.

32. Ibid.; *Andrae* trial record.

33. *Andrae.*

34. OSI interrogation of Arthur Rudolph.

35. Ibid.

36. Ibid. 37. Ibid.

38. Ibid.; and Aalmans, *"Dora"-Nordhausen War Crimes Trial.*

39. OSI interrogation of Arthur Rudolph.

40. Ibid. 41. Ibid. 42. Ibid. 43. Ibid. 44. Ibid.

45. Beon interview.

46. Sher interview. 47. Bannasch testimony, *Andrae.*

48. Sher interview. See also Arthur Rudolph-OSI agreement, 28 November 1983, OSI (obtained under the FOIA).

49. Sher interview.

15 Consequences

THE shadow of an old V-2 rocket briefly touched the silver hair of some of the twenty-two men who strolled, chatting in English and German, to a three-tiered wooden stand. There they stood posing with a larger-than-life photograph of a blond, square-jawed Wernher von Braun while press cameras clicked and whirred. The huge engine nozzles of the Alabama Space and Rocket Center's (ASRC) Saturn V moon rocket loomed behind them.1

The event in Huntsville, Alabama, was billed as the fortieth anniversary of the old German rocket team's arrival in the U.S. under Paperclip. But a stinging irony lay in the timing of the April 1985 reunion, in that it was forty years to the month after American troops liberated the Dora slaves who also had helped build Hitler's infamous V-2 rocket. And in the shocking fact that two of the men being honored that day were under active OSI investigation for Nazi war crimes.2

Standing in the third row-the one wearing impenetrably dark glasses, the other wearing an open-necked shirt-were Guenther Haukohl and Dieter Grau. During World War II, Haukohl was Rudolph's subordinate at Mittelwerk as chief manager of installation and supervision of the manufacture of V-2s. Up to seven hundred prisoners worked as slaves in Haukohl's unit, under the supervision of a brutal capo named Georg Finkenzeller, who was convicted after the war of viciously beating prisoners.[3] The question of whether Haukohl had anything to do with prisoners being mistreated remains unanswered.

Grau, an engineer at Peenemunde, was sent by Wernher von Braun to Mittelwerk to find out why rockets produced at the underground factory were malfunctioning. During an inspection Grau found that prisoners who he said did not have a "positive attitude" had sabotaged the rockets. "They knew where they could tighten or loosen a screw, and this way try to interfere with the proper function of the missile," Grau said. Grau even told *Atlanta Weekly* in 1985 he had turned in a sabotage report on the prisoners.[4] But the question of whether Grau's report led to the prisoners being hanged also remains unanswered.

And those disturbing questions may never be answered. Patrick Richardson, a Huntsville attorney representing Haukohl and Grau, claimed that the Justice Department was on a Nazi "witchhunt" and twice turned down OSI's request to interview the two men, in November 1985 and March 1986. A Cable News Network cameraman and I went to see Haukohl and Grau at their Huntsville homes for my CNN series broadcast in 1986. Haukohl refused to talk, and all Grau would say was, "I promised my lawyer I wouldn't make any further statements."[5]

From the morning shadows that lent an air of ambiguity to the ASRC's photographic session, the reunion moved to an indoor auditorium, where the near-darkness signaled a change of mood-a gathering of sinister forces, some from the distant past, some from the present. There in the auditorium, along with the old Germans themselves, were representatives of the forces that had helped create and perpetuate the lies that surrounded Paperclip and its spinoffs since 1945: the U.S. Army, NASA, and-a more recent addition-the empire built on zealotry and fraud by political extremist Lyndon LaRouche.6

After an hour-long slide show and briefing on the Army's latest weaponry, an ASRC public relations official set the ground rules for the press: there were to be no questions about Arthur Rudolph. But the questions were asked despite the gag attempt, and soon the air was filled with hostility and bitter comments about the OSI's handling of Rudolph's case. Retired Army Colonel Paul Towry, a former chief executive officer at Redstone Arsenal, lambasted the OSI, saying their investigations are "beginning to get out of hand. "7

Then the press conference turned into a podium for the twisted paranoia and conspiracy theories of LaRouche. Marsha Freeman, Washington editor of *Fusion* magazine, a LaRouche mouthpiece, was introduced by the public relations officer and allowed to launch into a fifteen-minute attack on the

OSI. "The witch-hunt against the leading space scientists of the United States is nothing less than a Soviet plot to destroy the militaryscientific accomplishments of the U.S.," she said. Freeman concluded her tirade by asking for a congressional investigation and urging that the OSI be shut down. At that point the Germans in the audience cheered.[8]

The Huntsville gathering, with its bizarre mixture of adulation and paranoia, was a symptom of a gathering storm. For over forty years Paperclip had survived threats from within and without, kept on course by the firm determination that the ends justified the means, even if that meant breaking the law. Paperclip's dark secrets lay safely hidden in coverups, lies, and deceit. Now the Rudolph case had put a crack in the project's protective shell and threatened to expose all of those secrets.

An alliance quickly formed to close the gap and continue the coverup. It also resulted in the kind of Hoiocaust revisionism and whitewash that OSI Director Neal Sher had warned was taking place.

One figure in that alliance was Frederick Ordway, a former NASA public relations official who was a close friend of Rudolph, Wernher von Braun, and other Paperclip scientists. Ordway publicly defended Rudolph, claiming that the Dora slaves had been "well fed." As evidence Ordway cited a letter by Milton Hochmuth, a former Army intelligence officer who had rounded up V-2s at Mittelwerk in 1945, in which Hochmuth says he remembers "being surprised at how well-fed . . . and in good health" he found the prisoners assigned to V-2 production.[9]

Ordway did not mention that Hochmuth also must have seen the dead bodies of six thousand Dora slaves lying on the ground, as former New York governor Hugh Carey and other American liberators did when they arrived on the same day as Hochmuth. "Everyone saw it," said Carey, who was then an eighteen-year-old Army sergeant. "We saw everything within a few minutes when we arrived at the site. It was horrible."10

Ordway also suppressed the most damaging evidence against his false claim-evidence he has had in hand for more than ten years: a taped interview with Dieter Grau conducted in 1971 for Ordway's book *The Rocket Team* (coauthored by Mitchell Sharpe). In describing the prisoners he saw during his wartime visit to Mittelwerk, Grau said, "the way they looked, they were not well fed at all and as far as I could see, had a tough time." Ordway conveniently left Grau's comments out of his book, which whitewashes Rudolph's activities at Mittelwerk.11

The LaRouche organization is another part of the alliance forged in response to the Rudolph case. The perennial presidential candidate's shadowy network has been described by the CIA as a "violence oriented" cult. The inner workings of a myriad of illegal money-funneling fronts and publications generally went unreported in the establishment press until hundreds of police raided LaRouche's Leesburg, Virginia, estate in 1986. In November 1988 LaRouche was convicted in a federal court in Alexandria, Virginia, of conspiracy to obstruct justice, mail fraud, and income tax evasion. According to the fifty-two-page indictment in that case, LaRouche personally instructed members to "use `any means short of thievery and thuggery' to meet fund-raising quotas." But even his conviction for these crimes has not stopped LaRouche: in September 1990 he decided to run for Congress while still serving time in a federal penitentiary.12

The LaRouche group's virulent Nazi-style anti-Semitism also has been well documented. As the Anti-Defamation League's Irwin Suall put it, LaRouche is a "small time Hitler." The LaRouche group's idolatry of defense-related research, along with its smoke screen of wild allegations of anti-LaRouche conspiracies involving the Queen of England, the KGB, and even President Bush, make them a logical vessel for paranoia about the OSI's Nazi-hunting activities.1[3]

LaRouche has long-standing ties with the Nazi scientists brought to the United States under Paperclip. One was Krafft Ehricke, a longtime member of the Fusion Energy Foundation and author of articles for *Fusion* magazine. Ehricke, who died in 1984, had been a tank commander in the Wehrmacht and an engineer at Peenemunde before working for the U.S. Army under Paperclip. Later Ehricke went to Bell Aircraft, where his old Peenemunde chief Walter Dornberger was vice president, and then joined the Convair division of General Dynamics, which built the Atlas missile. Another scientist with LaRouche ties was Konrad Dannenberg, who had been a rocket propulsion section chief at Peenemunde and was part of the original German rocket team brought to the United States in 1945. There is also rocket pioneer Hermann Oberth, who was brought to Huntsville under

Paperclip in 1955. Oberth, it will be remembered, also smuggled his art treasures out of West Germany when he came here.14

Both Dannenberg and Oberth contributed to an anti-OSI rally held at LaRouche's heavily guarded estate in July 1985. The rally was held under the guise of being a tribute to Ehricke, with 450 military officers and scientists from West Germany and other countries in attendance. In his keynote address LaRouche claimed that the OSI was carrying out a "KGB-run witch-hunt" against German scientists and accused the Justice Department unit of commiting "treason." That rhetoric was followed by Dannenberg's speech on the "lessons" of Peenemunde and the reading of a message from Oberth that evoked the mystique of Nazi science.15

Dannenberg said he was "borne into this LaRouche affair" when he was asked to honor Ehricke at the rally. "I have since that time had only very very loose contacts with them," he said. "I do not agree and go along with his [LaRouche's] basic concept" or the aspects of LaRouche's operations that have been in the news lately. "So in a way I have dissociated myself from the group. On the other hand, of course, I certainly appreciate that the group . . . supports Rudolph quite a bit. I think they are doing a good job in that area."16

One highlight of the anti-OSI rally was a taped speech by retired Major General John B. Medaris, Rudolph's old commander at Redstone Arsenal in Huntsville. In his speech, Medaris accused the OSI of waging an unconstitutional campaign of "guilt by association" against German scientists. The old Germans just "sit there now not knowing when somebody's going to put them on the pillory for things of no consequence," Medaris said.17

Another featured speaker was the man who-apart from LaRouche himself-cuts perhaps the oddest figure in the whole spectrum of Rudolph's defenders. Friedwardt Winterberg, mentioned earlier as a high-priced candidate for Paperclip in 1959, is a German-born nuclear physicist at Nevada's Desert Research Institute in Reno. In his speech at the LaRouche rally Winterberg touched on a facet of LaRouche's KGB-East German conspiracy theories by claiming that the OSI's evidence against Rudolph had come from Communist East Germany.18

Winterberg's ties to LaRouche go back to at least 1980, when *Fusion* magazine published a controversial article by Winterberg that explained how a hydrogen bomb is detonated. A year later the Fusion Energy Foundation published Winterberg's book *The Physical Principles of Thermonuclear Explosive Devices.* Winterberg also writes for yet another LaRouche outlet, the *International Journal of Fusion Energy,* which bills itself as welcoming scientists whose articles are banned in established scientific journals "because of the ideological prejudice of journal referees."19

With Rudolph living in exile in Hamburg, Winterberg positioned himself with the press as Rudolph's public spokesman and defender. A great part of Winterberg's defense campaign consisted of sending reporters and congressmen reams of printed materials, much of it taken from some of the most virulently anti-Semitic publications in the country. One of those, *Spotlight, is* a weekly tabloid published by Liberty Lobby, an extreme right-wing group run by anti-Semite Willis Carto. Carto's notorious front group, Institute for Holocaust Review, was established for the sole purpose of denying the reality of the Holocaust.20

A lengthy pro-Rudolph article by Winterberg was featured in *Spotlight* on August 31, 1987. Medaris also chose to defend Rudolph in *Spotlight* by making the outrageous assertion that "even if you accept what the allegations have been, I cannot find any justice in bringing those kinds of charges against a man after 30-odd years-and certainly not when you consider he gave 30 years of very fine, dedicated service to this nation."21 In other words, it is all right to use a mass murderer so long as he can help us get to the moon.

Winterberg sent reporters and congressmen *Spotlight* and other anti-Semitic materials with a cover letter written on letterhead stationery of the Office of the President of the statefunded Desert Research Institute, part of the University of Nevada system. Winterberg's letters reflected Holocaust revisionism at its worst, including false claims that Jews did not work at the V-2 rocket factory and slanderous assertions against famed Nazi hunter and concentration camp survivor Simon Wiesenthal. In a note to the World Jewish Congress, Winterberg suggested that Jews too

can be Nazis. In a letter to Nevada senator Paul Laxalt, Winterberg claimed that Jews did not work at Mittelwerk and even cited as evidence an enclosed article from the Holocaust-denying magazine *Instauration.* Then he repeated an anti-Semitic slur against OSI Director Sher that he had read in *Instauration.22*

Winterberg also approached witnesses in an effort to get them to change their testimony about Rudolph. For example, he admitted in a letter to the *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists* that he had questioned Hannelore Bannasch, a witness at the *Andrae* trial, after her OSI interrogation. Bannasch had testified under oath at the 1947 Army trial that if anyone had signed sabotage reports it would have been Rudolph. She confirmed that testimony in a 1983 sworn statement to the OSI. Suddenly, after a visit from Winterberg, Bannasch changed her entire story, claiming that Rudolph was innocent and that her original testimony had been "mis-translated. "23

The line taken by Rudolph's defenders resulted in press coverage that reeked with Holocaust revisionism, perpetuating what Dora survivor Jean Michel described as the "monstrous distortion of history" that has "given birth to false, foul, and suspect myths." The U.S. Army's figure of at least twenty thousand prisoner deaths suddenly became five thousand, then four thousand, and in one United Press International story was reduced to four thousand slave laborers who "allegedly died." Rudolph's public statements were tinged with amnesia as he claimed that he "did not know the prisoners were dying." And since most reporters did not bother to interview Dora survivors, they were portrayed as being "well fed," while Rudolph was viewed as the real victim.2[4]

Then NASA got into the act when the Marshall Space Flight Center held a "Wernher von Braun birthday reception" on March 25, 1987, honoring eighty-three former Paperclip specialists. Two of those honored-Grau and Haukohl-still were under active 'investigation by the Justice Department's Nazihunting unit. NASA's director, James Thompson, vowed to make the von Braun celebration an annual event and urged NASA employees to "rub elbows with these old guys-maybe some of their experience will rub off on us." NASA spokesman Bob Lessels said that Rudolph had not been invited to the party. Nevertheless, NASA's actions certainly raise questions as to the propriety of a federal agency holding public gatherings to honor men under investigation by the Criminal Division of the Justice Department.25

All of the activities tied to the Paperclip story in the 1980s-the Rudolph case and his defenders, the Alabama Space and Rocket Center and Marshall Center meetings, the OSI's investigations of other former Paperclip scientists-were carried out in an atmosphere in which the Reagan White House was sending out mixed signals about the OSI, Nazis, and even the Holocaust itself.

Former White House communications director Patrick Buchanan's views were the most unequivocal within the Reagan administration. Buchanan is well known for his attacks on OSI's prosecution of Nazi war criminals, and he has deferided Nazis repeatedly and called for OSI's abolition in his syndicated columns and on television. Therefore it was logical that when Rudolph's colleagues sought an advocate within the administration, they went to Buchanan. In June 1985 former Paperclip scientist Eberhard Rees met with Buchanan to discuss the defenders' efforts to restore Rudolph's American citizenship. After the meeting Rees said that Buchanan had indicated he would support their cause.26

Others in the Reagan administration put out conflicting signals about the Holocaust and their commitment to the OSI. On the one hand, the administration claimed it supported OSI's mission to deport Nazi war criminals. On the other hand, in 1985 President Reagan laid a wreath at a war cemetery in Bitburg, West Germany, where Waffen SS troops were buried. And in October 1988 a nationwide school Holocaust history program was denied federal funding for the third straight year because of complaints by extreme right-wing factions in the U.S. Department of Education. Among the complaints was the claim by Dr. Christina Price, then from Troy State University in Alabama, that the Holocaust program was not "balanced" because "the Nazi point of view, however unpopular, is still a point of view and is not presented, nor is that of the Ku Klux Klan."27

Another controversy ensued over President Reagan's appointment of industrialist J. Peter Grace to chair a budget advisory committee, because of Grace's links to convicted Nazi war criminal Otto Ambros. Grace's chemical company had been employing Ambros as a technical advisor since his

release from prison in Nuremberg in 1951. In the midst of bad publicity and an investigation by Congressman Tom Lantos of California, a Holocaust survivor, both Grace and Dow Chemical claimed that Ambros was no longer working for them. Ambros, however, admitted in an interview in 1986 that he is working for somebody in the United States, but he refused to say who. "I'm still working for U.S. companies but they don't want me to talk," he said. "There has been too much trouble with the press." Ambros said he works as a chemist developing new plastics and chemicals.2[8]

Some of President George Bush's activities also raise serious questions about the OSI's fate under his administration. During Bush's 1988 presidential campaign several members of a volunteer ethnic coalition in Bush's campaign were exposed as Holocaust revisionists or members of Nazi or Fascist groups. Cochairman Jerome Brentar admitted that as a postwar officer in the International Refugee Organization in Germany he had helped hundreds of Nazis to emigrate to the United States, "whether [they wereJ in the Waffen SS or in the Wehrmacht." Other coalition members included Florian Galdau, a Romanian Orthodox priest who is the New York chief of the still-existing Iron Guard, Romania's pro-Nazi movement; Radi Slavoff, leader of a Bulgarian group formed by wartime members of the Nazi-aligned Bulgarian Legion; and former members of the Latvian SS and P-2 Lodge, an illegal Italian group that plotted to overthrow the Italian government in 1970 and install a dictator.2[9]

In addition, on July 20, 1988, Bush attended a dinner in Detroit sponsored by the Captive Nations Committee and the American Friends of the Anti-Bolshevik Bloc of Nations, some of whose members are longtime agitators against OSI because of OSI's cases against East European Nazi collaborators. Even if Bush was unaware of their anti-OSI stance before the dinner, he certainly was made aware of it when outspoken OSI critic Bohdan Fedorak stated the groups' strong opposition to OSI in his introduction to Bush. "I'm sure that there was nothing derogatory in that type of remark," Fedorak said in an interview. "Otherwise, I'm sure that we would have heard it either from him [BushJ or from other people." According to Fedorak, Bush said nothing in the OSI's defense in his remarks at the banquet.[3]0

Bush's background as a former CIA director poses a potential conflict should the OSI decide to deport a Paperclip scientist or other Nazi who had been on the CIA's payroll. The CIA's history certainly shows the agency's well-known propensity for protecting its own. In 1980, for instance, the OSI was forced to dismiss a denaturalization complaint against alleged Nazi war criminal Tscherim Soobzokov as a result of documents that suddenly appeared in his files *after* the OSI filed charges in 1979. The OSI complaint had charged that Soobzokov had concealed his membership in various Nazi organizations, including the Waffen SS, when he applied for a visa to enter the United States. The OSI was forced to dismiss its case when a "V-30 personal data form" and an "operations memorandum"-ostensibly showing that Soobzokov *had* disclosed what he was charged with concealing-mysteriously appeared in the CIA's files and in Soobzokov's possession. Interestingly, the State Department-the agency responsible for issuing Soobzokov's visa-had no record in its files of either document. Furthermore, when OSI attorneys initially reviewed the CIA's files on Soobzokov, no evidence of these materials had been found.[3]1

"Given all this, some may conclude that the CIA may have manufactured this evidence to protect Soobzokov, long rumored to have been an employee of the Agency," Elizabeth Holtzman told her congressional colleagues in 1980.[3]2

In looking at the whole story of Paperclip today, the project's most ominous legacy lies in the cold war philosophy of the intelligence officers who guided the project through the decades. Central to that Machiavellian belief is that the end justifies the means, no matter what the cost. It is a philosophy that is omnipresent in the late 1980s, most notably in Irangate. In both Paperclip and Irangate, a band of ideologues believed that their cause served a higher purpose than the laws that governed them.

None of the intelligence officers involved in Paperclip has ever been called to account before the American public, and many have even received promotions and honors for the activities reported in this book. The man at the helm of the original coverup schemes, JIOA Director Bosquet Wev, was

promoted to the rank of rear admiral. He retired in 1957, having become commanding officer of the naval station in Norfolk, Virginia. The project's godfather in the late 1940s, Director of Intelligence Stephen Chamberlin, was promoted from major general to lieutenant general, assumed command of the Fifth Army in Chicago, and retired in 1951. Among those closest to the Germans, Army Air Forces Colonel Donald Putt eventually was promoted to the rank of lieutenant general in the U.S. Air Force. Putt retired in 1958, having held the position of military director of the Scientific Advisory Board to the Air Force Chief of Staff.[33]

JIOA Director William Whalen was incarcerated in the federal penitentiary at Lewisburg, Pennsylvania, in 1966 for his espionage activities, and was paroled just six years later. During his imprisonment Whalen thanked Judge Oren Lewis for saving his life, since he had almost died from alcoholism. His connection to Paperclip never was revealed. And some of the disturbing questions raised by that connection remain unanswered.[34]

The instigator of the European and Argentine conspiracies, EUCOM Director of Intelligence and Inter-American Defense Board chief Robert L. Walsh, was promoted to the rank of brigadier general and died in 1985. His deputy at EUCOM in 1947, Colonel Robert Schow, was named assistant director of the CIA in 1949. Schow took over as godfather to Paperclip in 1954, when he was promoted to major general and named assistant chief of staff for intelligence in Washington.[35]

The Inter-American Defense Board carried on business as usual with Latin American dictators, including Panamanian strongman Manuel Noriega until he was arrested in January 1990 and brought to the United States. In June 1986, at the same time that Noriega's drug- and gun-running operations were being exposed by a Senate subcommittee, Noriega attended an IADB ceremonial gathering in Washington to present a Panamanian award to U.S. Lieutenant General John Schweitzer, Walsh's modern-day predecessor as U.S. chairman of the IADB.36

Like the intelligence officers who brought them here, most of the older recruits out of the sixteen hundred Paperclip and the hundreds of others in Project 63 and National Interest have not been held to account for their activities either. And they also received awards and promotions. One scientist with disturbing links to Dachau experiments; Hubertus Strughold, was named chief scientist of the Aerospace Medical Division for the U.S. Air Force in 1961. He even received the Americanism Medal from the Daughters of the American Revolution, and in 1985 the Texas Senate declared June 15 of that year "Dr. Hubertus Strughold Day."[3]7

French Resistance members and prisoners of war were used as slave labor at Peenemunde. Yet former Peenemunde general Walter Dornberger became vice president of Bell Aircraft Company and was never even questioned about his role in that deplorable affair. And this summer, when tourists .converge on the Kennedy Space Center, all will pass by a portrait of former SS member Kurt Debus that hangs in the entrance in honor of Debus's service as the center's first director.[3]8

Accused war criminal Arthur Rudolph lives in Hamburg, West Germany, collecting retirement checks from both the U.S. government and the German government. But at least he is barred from U. S. entry. "He is on watch lists, he cannot get a visa, and if he were found in the United States he would be subject to arrest," said OSI Director Sher.[39]

But the ban did not stop Rudolph's defenders from stepping up their campaign to bring him back to America. On November 26, 1988, former Paperclip recruit Walter Haeussermann sent President Reagan a letter asking that Rudolph be allowed to attend NASA's twentieth anniversary moon walk celebration in July 1989. Haeussermann admitted that the request for a one-time visit was a scheme to break the OSI. "We try whatever we can dream up," Haeussermann said. If Rudolph is allowed even one visit, "it would show, more or less, OSI has been overruled."40

NASA's moon walk celebration was held in July 1989, but Rudolph did not attend. His visa request had been turned down. In Huntsville, eight hundred Germans and Americans involved with Paperclip since 1945 attended a reunion in the Wernher von Braun Civic Center. The group's spokesman, Konrad Dannenberg, mentioned his exiled friend in his speech before the group."We invited Rudolph to this celebration," Dannenberg said bitterly, "but circumstances did not permit him to be with us here today. "41

As for the project that brought them here, no one reading this book should be surprised to learn that nothing has changed. The project is once again rearing its ugly head.

On August 10, 1989, the Pentagon quietly announced that there were exempted positions in Department of Defense installations that would be filled under the "program for utilization of alien scientists." The program is still run by the Research and Engineering Department, which took over Paperclip when the JIOA shut down in 1962.42

Thirteen of the new recruits work at NASA, including a world-renowned climatologist. "We don't beat the bushes to find them," said Robert Nance from NASA's Office of Policy. "We hire them in rare circumstances where their skills are so unique they can't be found in America, like work on teflon skins, or other specialists like we had with Wernher von Braun." The scientists at NASA work at Langly Research Center, Ames Research at Moffet Field, California, and Goddard Space Flight Center.[43]

NASA has the authority to employ up to 150 alien scientists, though Nance said they had to go through "immigration loops" to get them. As the case had been in the late 1950s, the program is viewed as a way to fill slots in a shrinking American labor force. "By the year 2000 there will be a third fewer American engineers and scientists available than there are now," Nance said. As a result he thought the program would play an even more important role in the future.44

Not surprisingly, the Pentagon will not talk about the program, and a spokesman claimed that he "couldn't find the policy." Suddenly Department of Defense officials became as tight-lipped as some intelligence officers who ran the operation had been. Former JIOA Director Benjamin Heckemeyer was close-mouthed about Paperclip in a telephone conversation in 1985. What little he did say, however, is a perfect summation of the whole sordid affair.

"Paperclip's a can of worms," he said and hung up the phone.45

---

1. Michael Jennings, "Shadows Touch State's Surviving Rocketry Pioneers," *Birmingham News,* 27 April 1985. The author attended this event with a West German TV crew whose story aired the day of President Reagan's visit to Bitburg Cemetery.

2. For author's CNN report on Grau and Haukohl see Hunt, "Nazi Coverup."

3. Haukohl's biography is in his JIOA and INSCOM dossiers; estimate of seven hundred prisoners is from Georg Finkenzeller's testimony in *Andrae.* See also "Kommando" list showing Finkenzeller and Schochel as being capos in Haukohl's detail, in *Andrae,* prosecution exhibits; Finkenzeller's separate trial is in *Andrae,* roll 16.

4. Rudolph discusses Grau's visit to Mittelwerk in OSI interrogation of Rudolph; Grau quotes are from a 17 June 1971 taped interview with Dieter Grau by Frederick Ordway and David Christensen (obtained by the author under the FOIA from OSI); and *Atlanta Weekly,* 26 May 1985.

5. UPI, "Lawyer Refuses `Witchhunt' Interviews," 7 March 1986; and Hunt, "Nazi Coverup."

6. For background on LaRouche see Dennis King, *Lyndon LaRouche and the New American Fascism* (New York: Doubleday, 1989); *Extremism on the Right* (New York: Anti-Defamation League of B'nai B'rith, 1983); Anti-Defamation League of B'nai B'rith, "The LaRouche Network: A Political Cult," *ADL Facts,* Spring 1982; and Dennis King and Ronald Radosh, "The LaRouche Connection," *New Republic,* 19 November 1984. With the exception of King and a handful of others, the press ignored LaRouche's activities for a decade. For reporters' problems when covering LaRouche: Dennis King affidavit regarding death threats, 7 June 1984, in *LaRouche et al. v. National Broadcasting Company,* 479 U.S. 818 (1986); and Pauicia Lynch, "Is Lyndon LaRouche Using Your Name?" *Columbia ,~ournalism Review,* March-April 1985. Author's experiences as a result of a *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists* story are reported in Investigative Reporters and Editors Award submission forms, 1986.

7. Author's notes of meetings. This gag attempt was brazen. After *Birmingham News* reporter Michael Jennings and I began asking questions about Rudolph, we were ordered to the front of the auditorium. The West German TV crew videotaped the event from the back of the room. The crew's photographer, who was born in Israel, told the author that a representative of the space museum said he was glad to see them because the American press was "a pain in the neck when it came to the Nazi issue." The West German crew was not amused.

8. Author's notes. Marsha Freeman reported in "News Briefs," *Fusion,* May-June 1985, that "one Linda Hunt" attended the event. For LaRouche members' attack on the author's *Bulletin* coverup story see *Nezu Solidarity,* 23 March 1985.

9. Referring to Ordway, Rudolph told the OSI, "I consider him a friend," in OSI interrogation of Rudolph; letter, Milton Hochmuth to Frederick Ordway, 19 November 1984, in the author's personal collection. For an example of Ordway's defense of Rudolph see Ordway letter and the author's response in *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists,* December 1985.

10. Author interview with former New York governor Hugh Carey.

11. Ordway and Sharpe, *Rocket Team;* and Grau tape interview.

12. "Violence oriented" quote is from CIA memorandum,l5 July 1976, in Dennis King affidavit, *LaRouche v. NBC;* Caryle Murphy, "LaRouche Indicted on Tax, Mail Fraud Charges in Va.," *Washington Post,* 15 October 1988; and Kent Jenkins, Jr., "From Prison Cell, LaRouche Raises $221,000 for House Race," *Washington Post,* 2 June 1990.

13. The ADL's Irwin Suall called LaRouche a "small time Hitler" on NBC's "First Camera," March 1984. For evidence of LaRouche's antiSemitism see judge's decision dismissing Larouche's libel action against the ADL, in U.S. *Labor Party et al. v. Anti-Defamation League of B'nai B'rith,* No. 79-11470 (N.Y. App. Div., 1980):

> Plaintiffs [LaRouche group] have linked prominent Jews and Jewish organizations both in this country and abroad with the rise of Hitler, Nazis and Fascism, the international drug uade, and a myriad of purported conspiracies that have bedeviled the United States and the world at large, including a conspiracy to assassinate the U.S.L.P. leader, Lyndon LaRouche. At a minimum, under the fair comment docuine, the facts of this case reasonably give rise to an inference upon which the A.D.L. can form an honest opinion that the plaintiffs are anti-Semitic. (p. A-13)

14. Krafft Ehricke bio is in his ACSI dossier, ACSI post-1952 Paperclip files, RG 319, WNRC. For Ehricke and Fusion Energy Foundation connections see *Fusion,* March-April 1985; Konrad Dannenberg authored a lengthy article, "From the First Large Guided Missile to the Space Shuttle: A Pictorial History," also in *Fusion,* March-April 1986.

15. Dannenberg and Oberth's participation and information on antiOSI LaRouche rally is in Nancy Spannaus, "Space Pioneer Honored," *New Solidarity,* 21 June 1985; and Marjorie Hecht, "Schiller Meet: Drop OSI, Stan Crash SDI Effort," *New Solidariry,* 24 June 1985.

16. Michael Jennings interview with Konrad Dannenberg.

17. For Medaris message at LaRouche rally see Spannaus, "Space Pioneer Honored"; and Hecht, "Schiller Meet"; *Birmingham News,* 5 May 1985.

18. Spannaus, "Space Pioneer Honored"; and Hecht, "Schiller Meet."

19. Friedwardt Winterberg, "The MIRV Concept and the Neuuon Bomb," *Fusion,* October 1980; and AP, "Magazine to Publish H-Bomb Description," 3 September 1980; Winterberg letter regarding LaRouche's candidacy for president is in *Fusion,* March 1980; and Friedwardt Winterberg, *The Physical Principles of Thermonuclear Explosive Devices* (New York: Fusion Energy Foundation, 1981). Information on Winterberg writing for the *International ,~ournal of Fusion Enetgy is* in "The Leonardo Project," *Fusion,* March-April 1986.

20. For information on *Spotlight* and Willis Carto see *Extremism on the Right.* As example of the notorious anti-Semitism of *Spotlight* and Carto see *Mermelstein v. lnstitute for Historical Review, CIV* 356-542 (Calif. Sup. Ct.), the case of Auschwitz survivor Mermelstein against Carto and others who claimed that no Jews were gassed in gas chambers at Auschwitz.

21. "German Rocket Scientist Used, Discarded by Ungrateful U.S.," *Spotlight;* 31 August 1987; Medaris quote is from "America Sacrifices Integrity," *Spotlight,* 8 July 1985. See also Medaris's attack on the OSI in "General Says OSI is Unconstitutional," *Executive Intelligence Review,* 9 August 1985.

22. Winterberg letters to the World Jewish Congress, 14 December 1985; to Eli Rosenbaum, 20 May 1985 and 2 January 1986; and to Senator Paul Laxalt, 22 July 1985 (enclosing the January 1985 issue of *Instauration),* all in author's collection; and *Spotlight,* 31 August 1987. Note: for extensive documentation on the sad fate of Jews at Mittelwerk/Dora see *Andrae,* especially the hospital reports listing the number of Jews who died, the cause of death, the number of those worked to death, and the number judged too weak to work who were then sent by train to Lublin for extermination.

23. Winterberg admitted to having interrogated Bannasch in a letter to Len Ackland, editor of the *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientisu,* 8 April 1985. Winterberg discusses contacting some Dora survivors in Thomas Franklin, "Witnesses Without Testimony," *Huntsville News,* 6 April 1987. "Thomas Franklin" is an alias used by Hugh McInnish, an Army employee in Huntsville who frequently writes pro-Rudolph articles for the *Huntsville News* under an alias.

24. Michel, *Dora;* for an example of "alleged" deaths see UPI, "Supporters Challenging Agency's Allegations," 1 November 1985; Rudolph quotes are from John Hubner's articles, "The Unmaking of a Hero" (29 September 1985) and "The Americanization of a Nazi Scientist" (6 October 1985), both in *San,~ose Mercury News.* Hubner was one of the few reporters who did interview Dora survivors.

25. Linda Hunt, "NASA's Nazis," *The Nation,* 23 May 1987. 26. For Buchanan meeting with Rees see UPI, 15 October 1985.

27. Ed Vulliamy, "Holocaust Project Funds `Eliminated' by Ideology?" *Washington Post,* 4 October 1988.

28. Hunt, "Nazi Coverup."

29. Russ Bellant, Old *Nazis, the New Right and the Reagan Administration* (Cambridge, Mass.: Political Research Associates, 1988); "Bush Campaign Committee Contains Figures Linked to Anti-Semitic and Fascist Backgrounds," *Washington,~ewish Week,* 8 September 1988; and "Head of Latvian Group Quits Over Link to SS," *The New York Times,* 4 November 1988. Brentar quote is from David Lee Preston, "Bush Backer Helped Many Nazis Enter U.S.," *Detroit Free Press, 10* September 1988.

30. "Bush Campaign Committee"; and Michael Jennings interview with Bohdan Fedorak. For East European groups' anti-OSI activities see *The Campaign Against the U.S. ,~'ustice Department's Prosecution of Suspected Nazi War Criminals* (New York: ADL, June 1985).

31. *Congressional Record,* 3 December 1980.

32. Ibid.

33. Rear Admiral Bosquet Wev biography is from the ONH; Major General Stephen Chamberlin biography is from the CMH; Lieutenant General Donald Putt biography is from the U.S. Air Force.

34. Letter, William Whalen to Judge Owen Lewis, in *Whalen.*

35. General Robert L. Walsh biography is from the U.S. Air Force; General Robert Schow biography is from the CMH.

36. On Noriega see the testimony of Jose Blandon, Senate Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics and International Communications, hearings, 100th Cong., 2d sess., February 8, 9, 10, and 11, 1988. For Noriega bestowing a medal on Schweitzer see AP report, 12 June 1986.

37. On Strughold see U.S. Air Force, news release, 11 June 1985.

38. Dornberger information is in *Current Biography Yearbook* (New York: H. W. Wilson Company, 1965).

39. Sher interview.

40. Haeussermann interview.

41. Author notes on 19 July 1989 meeting.

42. *Federal Register, 10* August 1989.

43. Author interview with Robert Nance.

44. Ibid.

45. Author telephone conversation with retired Army Colonel Benjamin Heckemeyer.

Conclusion

IN late summer of 1990, as this book was being readied for publication, I was astonished to come across yet another disturbing account of the legacy left by Paperclip. After six years in exile in Hamburg, Arthur Rudolph arrived in Canada on July 1 to launch a smear campaign against the Office of Special Investigations, the Nazi-hunting Justice Department unit that had forced him to leave the United States. Incredibly, Rudolph had called on both old and newly recruited supporters in an audacious attempt to gain reentry to this country. The initial volley of Rudolph's campaign had been fired some months earlier at a gathering of former Paperclip rocketeers in Huntsville, Alabama. Ohio Congressman James Traficant promised the scientists in a speech that he would meet Rudolph at the U.S.Canadian border and personally escort him across it. Rudolph's plans were cut short when he was met at the plane by Canadian Mounties and then put up for deportation hearings.1

On the stand, Rudolph glibly spun a revisionist history of Mittelwerk, reviving in particular the myth of its "well-fed" Jewish slaves. Even more appalling was the performance of Hugh McInnish, a U. S. Army-employed engineer who acted as Rudolph's "cocounsel" in the hearings. To complete the absurd picture, a platoon of home-grown Canadian Nazis--outfitted in full SS regalia-picketed alongside Rudolph's friends out on the streets of Toronto. Finally, on January 11, 1991, a Canadian court ruled that Rudolph was permanently barred from entering Canada because of his Nazi past.2

The events in Canada are a reminder not only of the enduring scars left by Paperclip but of the outdated cold war philosophy that the project embodied. That philosophy served as the underpinning for our national policy for nearly fortyfive years. Only now, with the dramatic shift in world events that brought the cold war to an end, have the larger outlines of that policy and its often-tragic consequences become discernable. Only now can we begin to evaluate it with some degree of objectivity.

The central tenent of the cold war philosophy was perhaps never more succinctly stated than it was in a secret 1954 report prepared for the White House by a commission headed by former president Herbert Hoover. The report read, in part:

> It is now clear that we are facing an implacable enemy whose avowed objective is world domination. . . . There are no rules in such a game. Hitherto accepted norms of human conduct do not apply. . . . If the United States is to survive, longstanding American concepts of fair play must be reconsidered. . . . We must learn to subvert, sabotage and destroy our enemies by more clever, more sophisticated, more effective methods than those used against us.[3]

That view was accepted almost without question. Richard Bissell, then CIA chief of covert operations, told a CBS interviewer some twenty years later, "I think that's an excellent statement of the prevailing view, at least the view of those who'd had any contact with covert operations of one kind or another."[4]

In the decades since, U.S. intelligence agencies embraced that philosophy as justification for all manner of tactics-even those that violated America's own laws. Abroad it justified uncounted assassination plots and coups, the total number of which still remains secret. There were at least eight documented attempts to kill Fidel Castro, for example, and he claimed that there were more. At home the "anything goes" philosophy was at work in any number of illegal activities directed against American citizens. Under the guise of fighting communism the CIA conducted domestic drug

experiments, the FBI infiltrated political groups, and the Army collected dossiers and spied on thousands of Americans exercising their right to free speech.

The Machiavellian attitude behind these operations was born when a World War II ally became a new enemy and the world axis shifted. To fight the Russians we turned to the men responsible for the horrors committed under Hitler and hired them to work as scientists, saboteurs, and spies. Over time these operations took on a life of their own. In particular, Paperclip expanded into Project 63 and Project National Interest and provided a convenient cover for still other covert operations. Over decades it became a chameleon of sorts, changing its size and shape to accommodate a succession of schemes in search of a place to hide from public scrutiny.

Under the protective blanket of cold war philosophy, no plot or person was too unsavory to bring into the fold. In the case of Paperclip, whatever crimes German specialists had committed in the past-joining the SS, torching a synagogue, conducting experiments on Dachau camp inmates-were, in the view of JIOA Director Bosquet Wev, dismissable as "picayune details. "[5]

Anyone who doubts the pervasiveness of the cold war philosophy in the intervening decades need look no further than deposed Panamanian strongman Manuel Noriega, who remamed on the CIA payroll for years despite evidence that his government was involved in drug trafficking, murder, rape, political corruption, and other crimes. Yet as late as May 1987 the head of the U.S. Drug Enforcement Agency was praising Noriega for his "personal commitment" in helping the DEA carry out its investigations in Panama.6

The mentality that governed Paperclip is essentially the same one that spawned the chain of secret ventures known collectively as "Irangate." The projects even bore fruit in strikingly similar ways. In both instances ideological zealots found ways to exclude from their inner circle those officials who bore legitimate responsibility for the policies that eventually were contravened. In Paperclip the JIOA's conduct caused State Department representative Samuel Klaus to note with gentlemanly suspicion, "I gathered . . . that there had been meetings of the group to which I had not been invited." Nearly forty years later, in the investigation of Irangate, Secretary of State George Shultz complained that he had been left "out of the loop."7

Not coincidentally, both cases also involved a band of ideologues who believed that their cause served a higher purpose than the policies in place. Who can forget secretary Fawn Hall's chillingly matter-of-fact assertion during the 1987 congressional hearings that "sometimes you have to go above the written law"?[8]

The flawed decision-making process that set into motion the Paperclips and Irangates of the last forty-five years have had a domino effect that often created as many problems as it solved. In direct defiance of President Truman's policy, the Paperclip masterminds brazenly had the German scientists' records changed to expunge evidence of war crimes and ardent nazism and secure permanent immigration status for them in the United States. Ostensibly that was done in the interest of national security. Once here, however, the scientists were given access to classified information-again, contrary to official policy-that revealed the inner-most workings of our defense system. As a result, it was not long before the very people brought here to ensure our security had themselves become a security risk.

Eventually some of the scientists took advantage of security lapses and left the country with classified material. German specialist Heinz Gartmann, for example, left Wright Field air base with turbojet rocket engine blueprints in his hand luggage. The full extent of the damage from incidents like that is still unknown. And what was the military's response when it was caught employing war criminals? Typically it was to try to hide its sins instead of atone for them, as Army intelligence did in sending Klaus Barbie to South America.[9]

Flash-forward again to Noriega (or any of the other U.S.-supported Latin dictators whose short-term attractiveness has eventually turned into a liability). By the time we invaded Panama in 1989 there was no question in anybody's mind but that we had created a monster. "Our willingness to tolerate Noriega has in fact . . . put us in a position that is directly counter to the best interests of where we wanted to wind up," observed Senator John Kerry from Massachusetts.10

Operations like Paperclip are perhaps most indefensible on a moral level. Certainly no one can argue with the urgent postwar need to obtain German scientists' knowledge. Yet the way that was done seems unthinkable today. Was it really necessary to cover up Nazi crimes? Evade presidential policy? Harbor murderers? Change their records and then lie about it to other government agencies? Try to maintain the coverup even today?

The dispute over Paperclip isn't whether U.S. intelligence should have pursued a policy to protect American interests from the Soviets. Obviously the Russians represented a serious threat to our country's interests during most of the cold war period.

The argument here is over the means, not the ends, for there were alternatives to the decisions the JIOA officers made. For one thing, the German scientists could have been kept overseas and interrogated by scientists instead of by military officers. Indeed, for years after the war the U.S. high commissioner of Germany kept dozens of ex-Nazi scientists on the payroll-and under tight security-so that we could utilize their knowledge and expertise. Why the blind determination to bring war criminals here, in violation of our own laws, and essentially absolve them of their pasts?

Such activities seem even more incomprehensible in light of the fact that other pools of scientific talent were virtually ignored. The JIOA officers went to great lengths to help second-rate German technicians find jobs and a new life in America. Meanwhile, many American engineers who had suffered from layoffs in the defense industry went without jobs.

Survivors of the Holocaust also were overlooked. One such survivor was Casimir Jobell, a Polish patriot, graduate engineer, and inventor who was forced to work as a slave laborer for the Henschel aircraft company and then emigrated to America after the war. He died working as a dishwasher in Boston.

For Jobell's daughter Miroslawa the events honoring German rocket scientists in Alabama in 1985 were particularly heart-rending. Why, she asked in a *Birmingham News* story, were specialists who served the Nazis "put on a pedestal" while men like her father who. resisted "are hardly left being able to exist?"11

Why have we made heroes of men who assisted in one of the greatest evils in modern history? Some were unquestionably highly qualified scientists. Wernher von Braun, for example, was a brilliant man who contributed immeasurably to American missile and space programs. But he was also a Nazi collaborator. What price did we ultimately pay to tap the Germans' knowledge? The most common response is that it got us to the moon. But how do you balance that against murder?

Today, more is known than ever before of the wartime activities of the Paperclip scientists. Yet a number of them continue to be virtually deified by the military or by the communities in which they've settled. They're given medals and awards and glowing notations in history books. For someone who knows the true history of the medical experiments done in concentration camps, however, it is disquieting-to say the least-to drive by the official U.S. Air Force building in San Antonio named after Hubertus Strughold.

It's even more disturbing to see NASA and the state of Alabama hold annual events celebrating Wernher von Braun's birthday at which Guenther Haukohl and Dieter Grau, two scientists who are currently under Justice Department investigation for Nazi war crimes, are among the honorees-at taxpayers' expense!

Some think it is excessive, even obsessive, to continue investigating and prosecuting such men. However, former OSI director Allan Ryan, Jr., may have had a more accurate perspective: "To grant these people repose from the law . . . would mean that their thirty-five years of silence and our thirty-five years of inaction somehow atone for their awful crimes, and that justice is the result."12 Already, in some cases justice delayed has meant justice denied, as the perpetrators have died.

Obviously the Paperclip story is not over. But the end of the cold war has given us an opportunity to cast off once and for all the kind of thinking that created and justified such operations. No matter how necessary intelligence activities may be, they cannot be allowed to operate unchecked, in secrecy and darkness, shielded from the democratic process of accountability.

Otherwise, in the end we become our own worst enemy. Edgewood already has provided us with a horrifying example of the true legacy of the cold war, which lies in the stories of James Stanley and other soldiers who were treated like laboratory rats. In essence we used Nazi science to kill our own

people.

It is not necessary to violate America's laws to achieve our national goals. The era that gave rise to such flawed thinking is over. We may never be completely rid of the atrocities it spawned. But there is no reason to perpetuate them any longer.

---

1. Congressman Traficant's speech at the Huntsville Holiday Inn, May 12, 1990.

2. Author interview with Canadian Justice Department prosecutor Donald MacIntosh, who explained that, under Canadian law, nonlawyers were permitted to act as counsel at the hearing.

3. Bill Moyers, *The Secret Government* (Washington, D.C.: Seven Locks Press, 1988), p. 42.

4. Ibid.

5. Hunt, "U.S. Coverup of Nazi Scientists."

6. Letter, DEA Administrator John Lawn to General Manuel Noriega, 27 May 1987, published in Senate Committee on Foreign Relations, hearings before the Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics and International Communications, 100th Cong., ld sess., 1988.

7. Samuel Klaus, "Memorandum for the Files," 21 May 1946, State fiche; Moyers, *Secret Government.*

8. Moyers, *Secret Government, p.* 7.

9. Captain John P. Roth, EUCOM, to Chief, Technical Intelligence Section, A C of S, 8 April 1947, G-2 Paperclip "Top Secret" files, RG 319, WNRC.

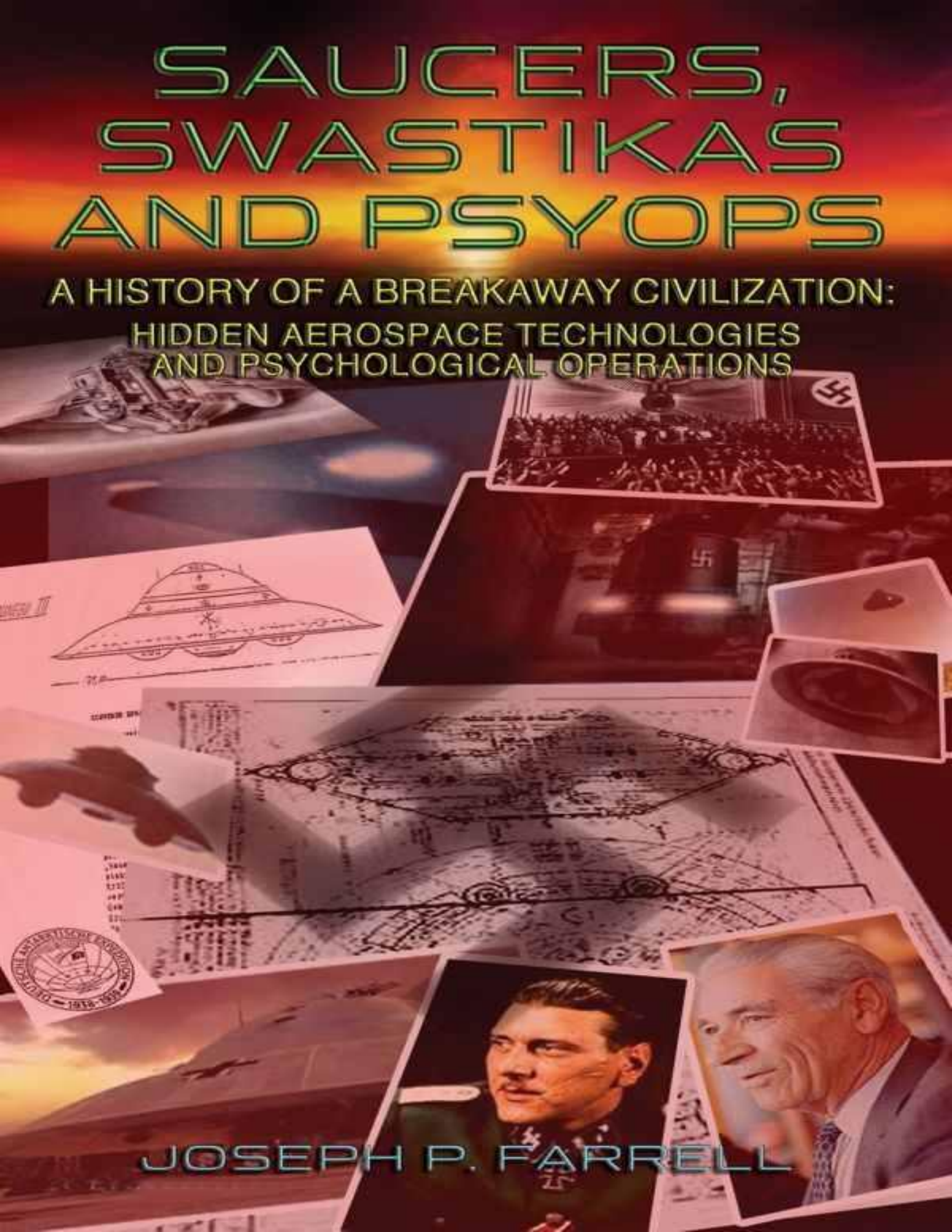
10. Senate Committee on Foreign Relations, hearings on Noriega before the Subcommittee on Terrorism, Narcotics and International Communications, 100th Cong., 2d sess., 1988, p. 149.

11. Michael Jennings, "Daughter of Inventor Questions Father's Twist of Fate," *Birmingham News, 11* November 1984.

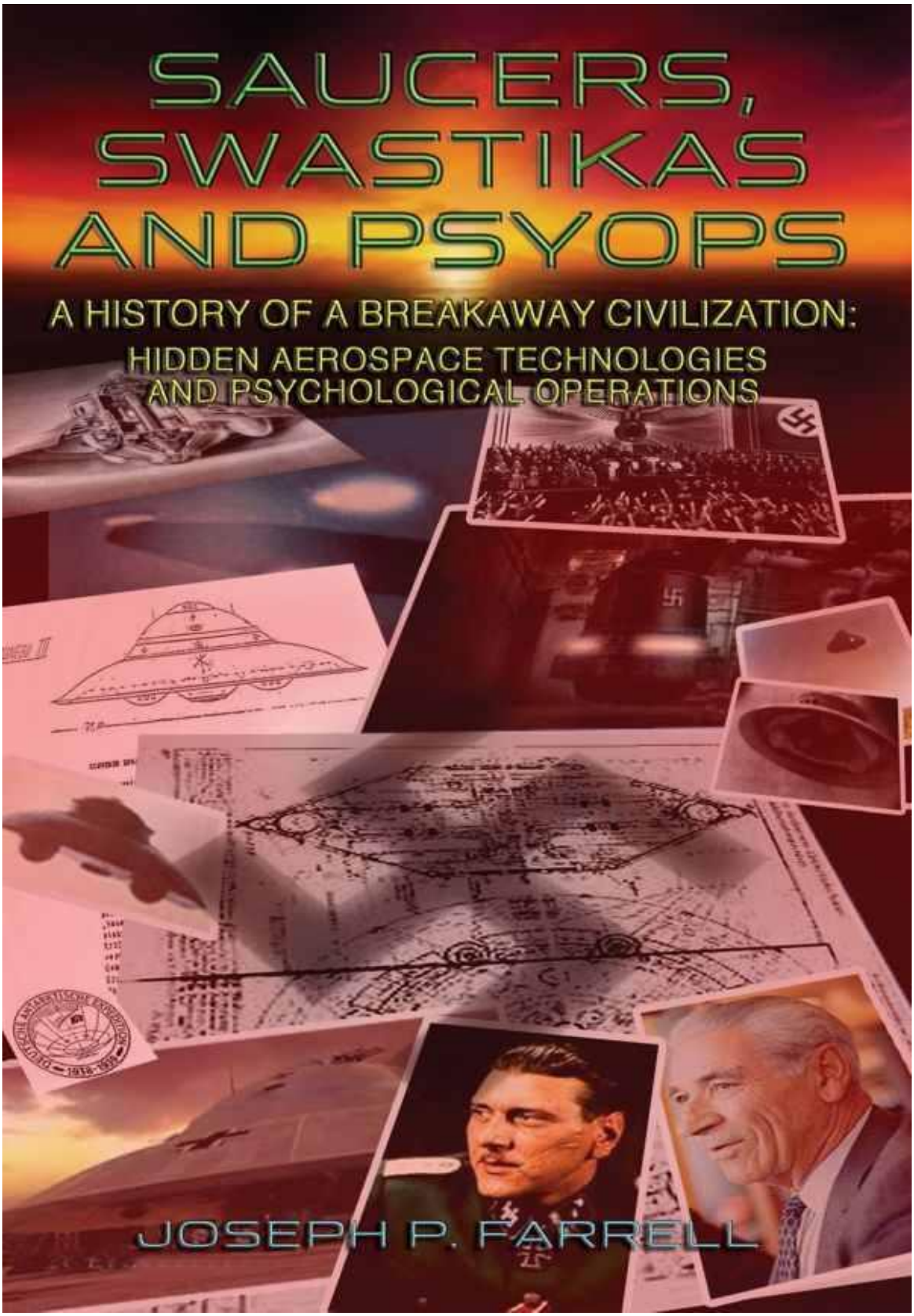
12. Allan A. Ryan, Jr., *Quiet Neighbars* (New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich, 1984), p. 339.

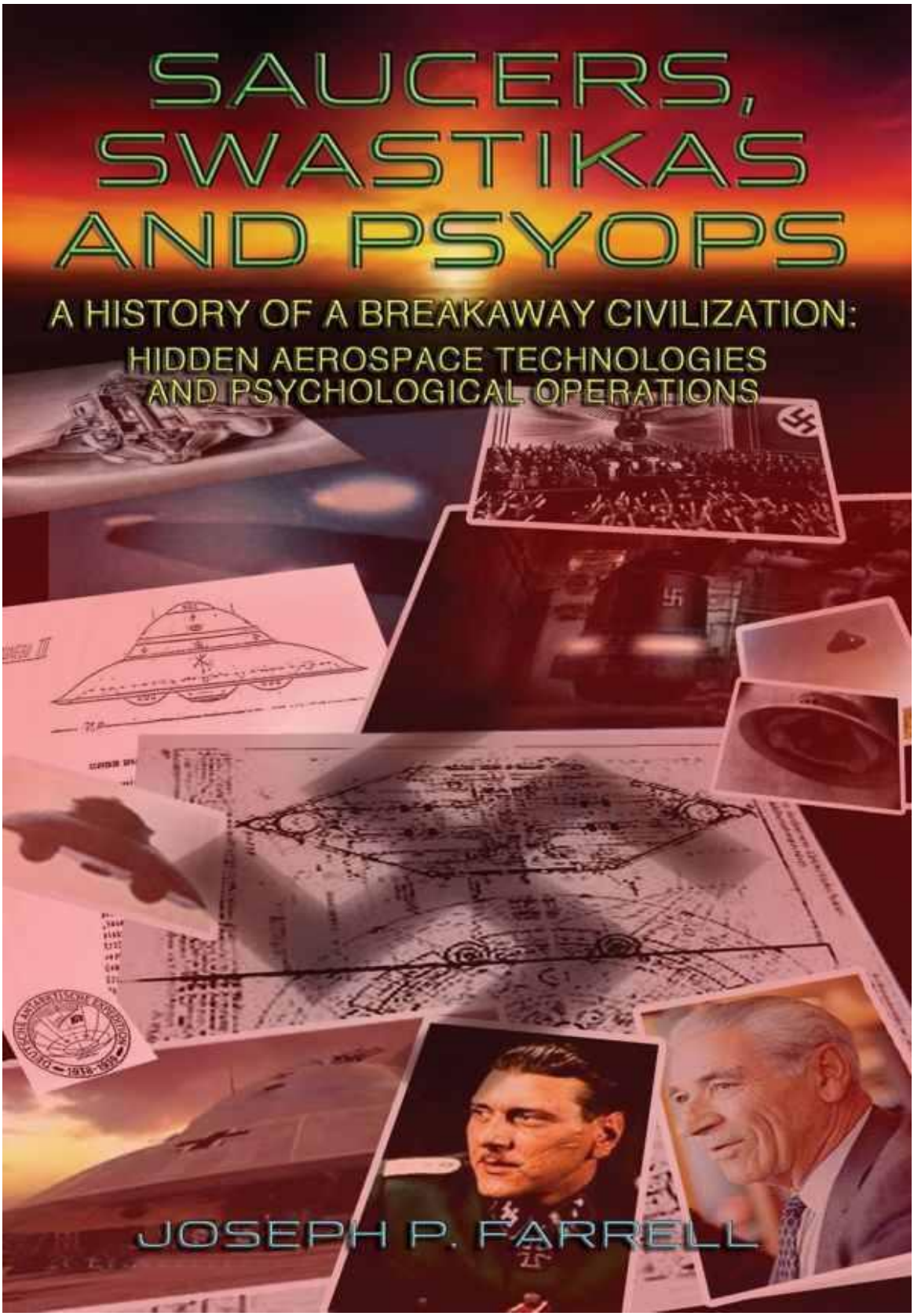
SAUCERS, SWASTIKAS AND PSYOPS

A HISTORY OF A BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATION: HIDDEN AEROSPACE TECHNOLOGIES AND PSYCHOLOGICAL OPERATIONS



JOSEPH P. FARRELL


SAUCERS, SWASTIKAS AND PSYOPS
A HISTORY OF A BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATION:
HIDDEN AEROSPACE TECHNOLOGIES AND PSYCHOLOGICAL OPERATIONS
JOSEPH P. FARRELL


SAUCERS, SWASTIKAS AND PSYOPS
A HISTORY OF A BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATION:
HIDDEN AEROSPACE TECHNOLOGIES AND PSYCHOLOGICAL OPERATIONS
JOSEPH P. FARRELL

SAUCERS, SWASTIKAS AND PSYOPS

A History of a Breakaway Civilization: Hidden Aerospace Technologies and Pyschological Operations

Other Books by Joseph P. Farrell:

LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy

Roswell and the Reich

Nazi International

Reich of the Black Sun
The S.S. Brotherhood of the Bell

Secrets of the Unified Field

The Cosmic War

The Giza Death Star

The Giza Death Star Deployed

The Giza Death Star Destroyed
The Grid of the Gods (with Scott de Hart)

SAUCERS, SWASTIKAS AND PSYOPS

Joseph P. Farrell

Adventures Unlimited Press

Saucers, Swastikas and Psyops

Copyright 2011
by Joseph P. Farrell

ISBN: 978-1-935487-75-3

All Rights Reserved

Published by:
Adventures Unlimited Press
One Adventure Place
Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA
auphq@frontiernet.net

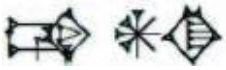
www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

Cover by Terry Lamb

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Above all, to
Scott Douglas de Hart:
A *true master, adept, and poet of deep mysteries,*
who crossed the Rubicon with me:
Anything I could say, any gratitude I could express, are simply inadequate for
you; thank you for so many years of friendship, so many inspirations through so many conversations,

You are a true



And to:
George Ann Hughes,
Constant in prayer, in encouragement, and in love;

And to
Tracy S. Fisher:
You are, and will always be, sorely missed;

"For we are opposed around the world by a monolithic and ruthless conspiracy that relies primarily on covert means for expanding its sphere of influence—on infiltration instead of invasion, on subversion instead of elections, on intimidation instead of free choice, on guerrillas by night instead of armies by day. It is a system which has conscripted vast human and material resources into the building of a tightly knit, highly efficient machine that combines military, diplomatic, intelligence, economic, scientific and political operations. Its preparations are concealed, not published. Its mistakes are buried, not headlined. Its dissenters are silenced, not praised. No expenditure is questioned, no rumor is printed, no secret is revealed. It conducts the Cold War, in short, with a war-time discipline no democracy would ever hope or wish to match."

President John F. Kennedy,
Waldorf-Astoria Hotel, New York City,
April 27, 1961

Table of Contents

Preface

Part One: Saucers

1. Of Civilizations, Breakaway and Otherwise: Richard Dolan and Carroll Quigley
A. The Breakaway Civilization Concept of Richard M. Dolan
1. The 1988 Affair of the Alien Reproduction Vehicle
2. How a Breakaway Civilization Might Evolve
B. Dr. Carroll Quigley on the Markers of Civilization
1. The Six Areas of Potential and the Four Types of Groups
2. Parasitic and Producing Societies, and the Breakaway Civilization
3. Instruments and Institutions, and Parasitic vs. Producing Societies
4. The Five Dimensions of Civilization and the Sixfold Division of Culture
5. The Seven Stages of Civilizations and "Core" vs. "Peripheral Societies
C. Conclusions and Implications

2. The Adamski Anomalies: The Beginnings of Murky Possibilities
A. Contact With Whom?
1. The Nov. 20, 1952 Contact: The Memes are Implanted
a. George Hunt Williamson and the Baileys
b. William Pelley and the American Fascists
2. The Messages from "E.T."
a. The Venusian and "The Bomb"
b. Adamski's E.T.s and Religion: The Interplenatery Federation of Brotherhood and the "Übermensch E.T."
c. The Revelation of the "Revelation," or "Disclosure", Meme
d. The End of the Contact
3. The Memes of Adamski's Extraterrestrial Faith Summarized

4. Adamski's Technological Descriptions and Another E.T. Message: The Danger of Weaponized Gravity
5. A Doozie of an Anachronistic Revelation
B. Adamski's Retro-Looking Saucers, and the Nazi Saucer Myth

PART TWO: SWASTIKAS AND PSYOPS: A PATTERN OF MAGICAL DECEPTION

3. "E.T. Made Us Do It": The Postwar Statements of Nazis
A. The Strange Case of Dr. Hermann Oberth: A Benign Biography
B. Dr. Oberth's and Dr. Von Braun's Statements on UFOs and Extraterrestrials
C. Dr. Oberth's Background in Nazi Germany

4. The Nazi UFO Mythos: Hannebu, Vril, Kugelblitz, Feuerball, and the Suction Saucers
A. The Problematic of the Historical Gap
1. The Basic Elements of the Mythos
a. The Belluzo Allegations
b. The Schriever Allegations in *Der Spiegel*
c. Dr. Richard Miethe
d. George Klein and Habermohl
e. Major Rudolf Lusar
f. The Field Propulsion Saucer Myth
2. The Gap and the Critics of the Mythos
3. A Critique of the Critics: The Suction Saucers
B. The Historical Gap, the Gehlen Organization, and Psychological Warfare
1. The Bell Story & the Nazi UFO Mythos: Core Elements

5. The *Sonderkampf* of the *Weltanschauungskrieg:* The Origin of Social Engineering & Psychological Operations
A. The *Sonderkampf* of the *Weltanschauungskrieg:* The Nazi Bell and the Beginning of the Coupling of Advanced Technology and Psychological Operations
1. The Components of Psyops

2. Managing Perceptions: The Engineering of a Scientific Consensus
3. The Techniques of Obfuscation
4. American Private Foundation Funding of Psyops Studies
5. Back to the Nazi Component: The Implications of *Welt-anschauungskrieg*
B. The Nazis' Post-War Plan for Psyops

6. The Alchemy of UFOs: Social Engineering, Psyops, and Alchemical Technology
A. UFOs and the Social Engineering of a New Religion
1. The Resemblance to Myths
2. The Three Effects of UFOs
3. The Nazi Connection: The Fascist Overtones of Adamski's Contactee Messages
4. The UFO as an Alchemical, Psychotronic Technology

7. Patterns in the Fog and Mirrors: Conclusions to Parts One and Two

PART THREE:
THE HISTORICAL, GEOGRAPHIC, AND FINANCIAL MATRICES OF THE BREAKAWAY CIVILIZATION

8. The Financial Matrix: Corporations, Criminal Syndicates, & the Financing of the Breakaway Civilization
A. The Pre-War Tapestry
1. The Central Ideological Component: The "Empire of Money"
a. Dr. Quigley Again
2. The Nazi Bank of International Settlements
a. The Problem of German War Reparations, The Dawes and Young Plans, and the Establishment of the BIS
b. The German Faction and the BIS
3. The Rockefeller Link and Its Implications
a. Martin Bormann's Check Cashing Episode Revisited
b. The Pre-War Rockefeller Group-Nazi Links

c. The American and Nazi Elites:
A Common Ideological Culture
d. Oil: Beginnings of the Texas and
Radical Islam Connections
B. The Post-War Tapestry
1. Money Laundering and Blackmail
2. Nazi Penetration of the West and the Potential of Captured Programs
3. The Breakaway Civilization, Radical Islam, and Psychological Warfare: Terrorism
4. The Skorzeny Connection
5. The Final Source of Deepest Black Funding: Drugs and the Nazi International
6. The Argentina-Rockefeller-Nazi Connection
C. Conclusions

9. As Above, So Below: The Geographic and Topographic Matrix of the Underground Black World
A. The Historical Matrix of World War Two
1. The Importance and Significance of the *Kammlerstab* to the Evolution of the Breakaway Civilization
2. The Ideological and Scientific Culture of the *Kammlerstab* and a Modern Parallel
3. The Direct Interface Between the *Kammlerstan* and The Cartelized Corporate World
B. The Breakaway Civilization and the Underworld
1. The Nazi Pentagon: The Underground Bunker Complex at Zossen
2. The Underground Factories & the Manufacturing, Assembly, & Launch Facility at Ebensee
3. A Few Modern American Counterparts
a. The Skunk Works, Pure Research Facilities, and Other Installations
b. The Rumored Tunnel System and Its Implications
c. Camouflage and Security
d. The Nexus of Interests
e. The Implications of Doomsday & Continuity of Government Planning: the Apocalyptic Ideology
f. Technologies of Tunnel Boring
(1) The Water Jet Boring Technology

(2) The Flame Jet Boring Technology
(3) Nuclear Subterrenes and a NASA Study
C. Conclusions and Reflections: The Obvious Things: Camouflage, Deception, and Security

10. Tesla to Townsend: The 1950s Pattern of Coordinated Suppression: Conclusions to this Study
A. Suppressed Physics
1. LaViolette's Anecdotal Story
2. The Curious Statements of Ben Rich: The Implications of Hidden Technologies and Hidden Physics
a. A Catalog of Ben Rich's Astonishing Statements
b. Interpretive Possibilities
c. The Error in the Equations: A Hidden Physics and Secrets
d. Maxwell's Equations
3. Quigley Again: The Sociology of Weaponry and the Implications
B. The Less-Than-Coincidental Pattern of the 1950s: Antigravity, Richter, and Townsend Brown
1. The Tesla Precedent
2. Project Skyvault
a. Nick Cook on the 1950s "Coincidence"
b. The 1955 *New York Herald Tribune* Article
c. The Implications of Burkhard Heim and Pascual Jordan's Presence in These Projects
d. Skyvault
3. Thomas Townsend Brown and His Statements in Project Winterhaven
4. Dr. Ronald Richter's Argentine "Fusion" Project
C. Conclusions

Bibliography

PREFACE

This is not an “exciting” book, but it *is a* necessary one. In it, we will enter a Hall of Mirrors filled with fog, for unlike all of my other books, this is not even a case of argued speculation; it is rather more like the Cliff Notes version of a very complicated story, told with footnotes. Imagine a world in chaos; there is economic displacement; the richer get richer, more idle, and more corrupt, insane with the lust for power and yet, addle-minded and scarcely able to coordinate the grand schemes by which they presume to enslave the world. There is rising resentment against them. Violence against the old order steps into the streets. Chaos reigns and there is a growing longing and yearning for a return to order, peace, and stability. Now imagine that, into this picture, steps a break-away civilization, propelled by ancient doctrines and an advanced and almost magical technology. This underground, breakaway civilization steps into the previously described chaotic condition, promising brotherhood, peace, prosperity, and to share its advanced and almost magical technologies; all of this, it says, can be ours, if we but trust its peaceful intentions and leadership, and abandon our warlike ways.

No. I am not talking about our “space brothers” here, nor about our situation at the beginning of the second decade of the twenty-first century of the third millennium, but about the Nazis, the world’s first “breakaway” civilization, representing an underground stream from which it emerged, and to which, upon the conclusion of the world’s biggest and bloodiest war, it returned again. In that, there lies a tale, the tale contained, in part, in this book.

You are about to embark on reading a book populated by a whole host of bizarre characters, strange concepts, and sources that are of dubious standing, from Neo-Nazis, to famous early UFO “contactees,” to more reputable sources such as engineers in the loftiest reaches of the military-industrial complex, tenured historians in academia, UFO logists, and the even stranger relationships between all of them. For the past few years now, I have written a series of books exploring exotic Nazi technology and have attempted to rationalize its achievements on the basis of terrestrial science and engineering principles that were known at the time. In pursuing this story, I have also attempted to survey in many previous books the implications of this technology for history.

In presenting the conclusions of this research throughout those books,[1] and then as a guest speaker at some conferences, I have invariably been asked by a certain type of what may best be called "UFO-ET religionist" if all this explosion of technology during the Nazi era was not best explained by them having recovered a crashed UFO and reverse-engineered it. Needless to say, after having written several books on the Nazi Bell story and attempting to rationalize its various details as best as I can, I find such questions irritating at one level and—to be honest—insulting at another, for why bother to research the subject at all if any claims for the existence of an exotic technology, Nazi or otherwise, is to be explained by such a procedure?

Yet, the questions did raise to my mind a disturbing possibility concerning the statements of the Nazi scientists made after the war, when they were pressed to account for the extraordinary development of technology during the Third Reich's thankfully short twelve-year existence, statements quickly pointed out to me by the faithful apologists of the extraterrestrial hypothesis of UFOs. One such UFO fundamentalist, indignant that I should question the Roswell extraterrestrial dogma and the self-appointed magisterium defending it, confronted me with the reverse-engineering hypothesis, i.e., that the Nazis had recovered a crashed extraterrestrial UFO and had reverse engineered it. When I responded that I simply did not accept that explanation, he then pointed out that both Drs. Von Braun and Oberth indicated that the Nazis had "had help" from "out there." This he did as if playing a high trump card that would carry the day and end any discussion of entirely terrestrial explanations for Nazi technological achievements. To my rejoinder—that I did not see how Von Braun's and Oberth's rockets could possibly represent advanced reversed engineered extraterrestrial saucer technology recovered from a crashed UFO (for which there is but threadbare evidence to begin with), and to my rejoinder that why should we trust Nazis or anything they said *after* the war when we did not trust them before or during it—he had no response, other than to say "Well, then, why did they make that statement?"

The question hovered over the end of our conversation as we explored various ideas, and indeed, the question has long bothered me as well, and my suspicion has always been, that the answers of the postwar Paperclip Nazis were deliberately disingenuous—not entirely false, but not entirely true—and that they may have been made in the service of some hidden agenda, an agenda that can only be qualified as a psychological operation and disinformation campaign.

That, in part, is what *this* book is about.

Anyone familiar with the subject of UFOlogy from the immediate postwar period into the early and mid-1950s, will at once be aware of some peculiar things, not the least of which is the curious resemblance between the "spaceships" 1950s contactee George Adamski, and the alleged Nazi saucer called the "Hannebu." I have long maintained, in numerous interviews and in private conversations, that the latter is, at best, a bit of misdirection and at worst, disinformation for which there is no clear chain of evidence for the documents that purport to certify it. But the question remains: *why the resemblance in the first place?*

Other questions only heighten the dilemma.

For example, why are Adamski's "extraterrestrials" entirely human in appearance? Why are a small number of other early UFO contactee reports explicit in their claims that their occupants spoke German?[2] What is the nature of the "message" these occupants are communicating to the contactees? And why pick *those particular* contactees to begin with? And who are their associates?

And most importantly, why—if the stories of the Nazi Bell device and other advanced aerodyne technologies emanating from the Third Reich are true—did that nation pursue *both* technologies: the obsolescent rocket technology of Von Braun's V-2s, and the exotic technologies represented by the alleged Nazi saucers and, more importantly, the Bell device?

As I concluded in my previous book *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* these two very disparate types of technologies seemed to resemble the outlines of two nascent space programs, one, a "secret" one employing rockets and other conventional technologies, and another, a *genuinely* secret one, one lying in truly abyssal black depths of classification, employing much more exotic technologies with, perhaps, an entirely different agenda. So, why assert that all the *public* technology, came from "ETs" after the war? We are dealing with a two track space program, and an extraterrestrial mythology. The question is: *why*?

The answer to that question is also, in part, what this book is about.

But if there *is* such a two-track program, the question is *why?* Why go to such lengths and expenditure? What is the *agenda?*

Part of the answer is contained in the title of this work itself: *Saucers, Swastikas, Psyops: A History of a Breakaway Civilization: Hidden Aerospace Technologies and Psychological Operations.* For our purposes here, the two key words in the title are "hidden technologies" and "psychological warfare."

In the main text of this work, I mean “psychological warfare” to encompass all the techniques employed by intelligence agencies (and for that matter, advertizing agencies and corporations) to *manage perceptions.* But as the psychological operations component of the title also suggests, we are here concerned with the *activities* of that breakaway civilization as well.

In the case of *perception management* our principal foci in the coming pages will be twofold, as we shall discover a certain amount of evidence that suggests that perceptions are being managed for two purposes:

> 1) a “narrow” purpose of the concealment of various technologies being tested in public, or being accidentally seen by the public, and to manage the *interpretation* of what it is seeing. In this case, there are *two types* of technologies possibly being seen, implying that two possible “programs” are being tested or deployed in closely-held circumstances:
> a) technologies implying advanced *physics* principles, whether those principles have to deal with aerospace, aerodynamic, or other fields of physics and technical applications;
> b) technologies implying a *biological* or even *genetic* program (which unfortunately is beyond the immediate scope of this book); and,
> c) this concealment may also be for the purpose of hiding an actual *covert war* being waged in part by means of these programs by, and against, “whomever”;
> 2) a much broader “cultural” purpose of the implanting of certain “memes” in society at large, memes inclusive of extraterrestrials, invasions, abductions, apocalyptic scenarios, revelations (or, to call it by its popular term within ufology, “disclosure”).

Others have written about various aspects of these problems, but the only ones who have attempted to combine them into a large and coherent picture of scholarly examinations of the record are the seminal and critically important works of Richard Dolan and Dr. Jacques Vallee.

It seems to me, therefore, that a fresh approach was warranted, taking into account the possible Nazi component of this breakaway ci civilization, not so much to displace the works of these scholars and researchers, but rather, to supplement them with more information, and with the exposition of the

possibilities of new connections between already well-known dots, and by delving even deeper into the mystery of why so many of these possibilities and connections seem to originate in the dark and terrible time and place of the Third Reich.

As always, my thanks to my dear friend George Ann Hughes of *The Byte Show* for endless prayers and encouragement. And above all, my thanks to my friend of nearly twenty years, Dr. Scott D. de Hart, for the inspirations of so many conversations, some of the contents of which are reflected in the observations on religion herein.

Joseph P Farrell,
From somewhere
2011

[1] *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005); *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and Majic-12* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006); *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007); *The Philisophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009); *The Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008); *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2010).

[2] For the famous Reinhold Schmidt case, see my *Nazi International*, pp. 29-43. Another case is mentioned by Dr. Frank E. Stranges in a self-published pamphlet entitled *Nazi UFO Secrets and Bases Exposed* (I.E.C. Publishing Company: 1982). While Stranges' work must be evaluated against its non-critical repetition of the whole Hannebu-Vril Nazi flying saucer legend, it is worth nothing what he records of another alleged UFO contact event involving German-speaking occupants:

> "The following event took place in Reno, Nevada, during a UFO Convention, July 1966, at the Centennial Coliseum.
>
> "This 'Amalgamated Flying Saucer Clubs of America' Convention included leading researchers: Wayne Aho, Orfeo Angelucci, Dr. Dan Fry, Carl Anderson, George Van Tassel, Gabriel Green, and myself, Dr. Frank E. Stranges.
>
> "On Thursday morning, July 7th, the phone rang in my hotel room. The caller (wishing to remain anonymous) asked me to meet with him before the convention convened at the Centennial Coliseum.
>
> "When I met with him, he stated that he had followed my career for many years, and was pleased with my work. He cautioned me to look straight forward, and not to look at him directly at any time during our conversation.

"His first question was, 'Do you know anything about German Saucers?' I informed him that all I knew was what I had readin UFOP accounts from magazines and newspapers."

Here it is worth interrupting Stranges' account, to recall the fact that at *that* time, nothing was known of the Bell project, nor of the Schauberger saucers, nor much about alleged suction saucers. The alleged Hannebu-Vril field propulsion saucers were the core of the story. Resuming:

"He then requested that I brief him on the 'German UFO Crash' that took place in Helgoland, West Germany. This question was directed to the account that was written and reported at length in my book *Saucerama*.

"He seemed quite satisfied with my narrative on the Helgoland matter. Without warning he said, 'Do you know that there will be a German Saucer about one-quarter of a mile from the Reno Airport Control Tower in the morning? It has already arrived in this area!' (Gabriel Green and several others had reported sighting a UFO high above the city early that morning.)

"He further stated that the German Saucer would LAND near the Airport (sic) in the morning. Then he turned and left the auditorium.

"The following morning I took a taxi to the Reno Airport with a friend of mine. We had the driver let us off on the outskirts of the Airport. Trudging along a dusty road we approached an area that rose slightly and suddenly dropped into a shallow ravine.

"To our great surprise, there it was… a saucer-shaped craft-sitting on the ground on three short legs.

"As we approached the craft, it appeared to be 50 feet in diameter, with a large outer rim. We noticed a ladder leading to a door that slid open.

"A heavily built man with a deep scar on his cheek and dark heavy eyebrows stood at the opening. There was a brief exchange of German between my companion and him. He tried to hand us some U.S. currency as he explained that he wanted us to purchase same food for him.

"He continued to speak in German and I concluded that he was very desperate. As he spoke, he continued to watch the sky like a hawk. "Suddenly, he waved us off and the door slid shut. We heard a hissing sound similar to that of equipment run by hydraulic power. My companion and I turned around and saw a police car approaching us.

"The saucer wined like a jet plane coming in for a landing. The outer rim revolved and kicked up dust, dirt and gravel. It left the ground swiftly, hover, there was an intense vibration. It then shot over toward the Control Tower and continued on until it was out of sight.

…

> “During my recent visit to West Germany, I was not too surprised to meet certain gentlemen who were familiar with my Reno UFO sighting.
>
> “They stated that before long, attempts, would be make to contact South American Government officials, to establish a trade agreement that would be honored on an International level.
>
> …
>
> “Eyewitnesses claim to have seen Nazi Swastikas painted on the exterior of landed craft.” (pp. 27-29).

The reader may make of these fantastic claims what he will. But if true (and it’s a mighty big if), a question immediately occurs: why do we *not* hear of such reports in the UFOlogy community?

Part One: Saucers

"In this section we penetrate an international Hall of Mirrors that will give us new insights into a process that could be called mythological engineering—the deliberate creation of social movements to serve either as opportunities for experiment, as outlets for personal fantasy, or as a vehicle for more down-to-earth political purposes…

Therefore, I have taken special pains to move step-by-step through a mass of evidence that, in my opinion, points to the deliberate exploitation of the belief in extraterrestrials by human groups."

Jacques Vallee *Revelations: Alien Contact and Human Deception* (Ballantine Books, 1991), p. 96.

1
Of Civilizations, Breakaway and Otherwise: Richard Dolan and Carroll Quigley

"Oh no, oh my God, they are going to kill us all."
Texas Governor John Connally, during the assassination of President John F. Kennedy[1]

Imagine a civilization here on earth that exists covertly inside and alongside of those we know about, with access to the most advanced technologies, technologies straight off the drawing boards of Hollywood production companies and special effects artists, a civilization with nearly bottomless sources of funding, staging events for the gullible, torturing others and driving them into mental and emotional breakdown, and waging a covert war with its own members using its own "apocalyptic technologies," and masking that war behind the perfect plausible deniability: mother nature. This breakaway civilization, moreover, has its own ideology, and its own dubious "morality", as was evidenced by its first real incarnation: Nazi Germany. Unlike Nazi Germany, or for that matter, civilizations in general, it has no "core area" where it is centered; it comprises not one nation, but many; its peoples are drawn from all groups and languages, for it speaks but one language, the language of power. It is, in part, the resurrection of Atlantis, and in part, like a bad nightmare version of superhero comic books, with the villains, and not the superheroes, possessing all the superhuman powers and technologies.

If the idea of such a breakaway civilization sounds fanciful or even absurd, then hold on, because this book attempts to outline its *components, structure, and initial postwar history.*

The concept of such a breakaway civilization is intimately tied, moreover, to the subject of UFOs, for it was first propounded by the well-known and scholarly ufologist Richard M. Dolan, in his landmark documents study UFOs and the National Security State.

A. The Breakaway Civilization Concept of Richard M. Dolan

Dolan first mentions the idea of a breakaway civilization with implied access to advanced aerospace technologies in connection with the well-known

phenomenon of UFOs "buzzing" the various defense installations of the U.S.A. and other countries, and with it, he begins to suspect, and then to dismiss, a Nazi connection:

> Is one to believe that this was a demonstration of secret Nazi power emanating from Antarctica? No tangible evidence has ever emerged to support this thesis. Or, were all the early UFOs manufactured by the Americans and Soviets? If so, who was buzzing the American military pilots and bases with such regularity? Since there is no evidence that it was the Soviets, does this mean that a secret American flying saucer program was charged with provoking an unsuspecting American defense establishment? For more than fifty years? No proponent of the man-made UFO thesis has been able to come to terms with this issue, although one could do it by postulating the existence of a completely separate breakaway civilization. [2]

Dolan is, of course, entirely correct: no evidence of any secret Nazi flying saucer research base has ever been forthcoming from Antarctica, or, for that matter, anywhere else. Indeed, as this author has observed on numerous occasions, such a base would have required enormous electrical power, if the Nazi Bell project is any measure, for that project required an entire electrical power plant to be built close to its test installations,[3] a fact ruling out Antarctica as a source for such craft. Additionally, construction of such a research center would have taxed the German Navy—or any other navy for that matter—beyond its operational and logistical resources during World War Two, and would have required a large logistical effort to support it *after* the war, resources that the postwar Nazi organization did not have.

These caveats notwithstanding, Dolan speculates further on the parameters that such a conception implies:

> If we also consider the possibility of covert breakthroughs in propulsion technology, and the "off the grid" nature of the deep-black world itself, we come to the possibility that we are dealing with, in effect, a "breakaway civilization." One with *loose connections at various points to the open civilization of humanity, but, with great independence, secrecy, and a monopoly of certain key scientific secrets.* The history of the Cold War showed that separate

> infrastructures could, to some extent, evolve. Western politics, economy, science, and culture developed along paths that were very different from those in the Soviet Union or China. Important breakthroughs occurred in secrecy—stealth being a prominent example. Granted, the level of separation implied for a breakaway civilization would be vastly greater than any Cold War examples. In principle, however, such a development is possible, and responsible research must consider the strength of the supporting evidence and clues.[4]

Note the things that Dolan implies are clear markers of such a civilization:

> 1) It has "loose connections at various points" to the open civilization(s) of humanity;
> 2) It possesses "great independence" from them;
> 3) It is secret, that is to say, its structure, components, and activities are largely hidden from the open civilizations of humanity; and finally and most importantly,
> 4) It holds a monopoly over certain scientific concepts and the technologies that result from them.

These points form the structural outline of this book, for we will investigate the points of overlap or contact between this "breakaway civilization", its putative structure, components, or factions, and activities, and the implied scientific concepts and technologies, with a view to arguing a prima facie case that such a breakaway civilization indeed exists. Additionally, our contention will be that this civilization is fundamentally Fascist in its outlook and ideology.

For Dolan, the concept of a breakaway civilization is intimately connected to the subject of UFOs and, moreover, the persistent stories and evidence that at least *some* UFO artifacts were recovered. It is worth citing Dolan's remarks here at length:

> It looks as though the UFO secret involved more than mere knowledge of the presence of aliens of some sort. During the 1970s and 1980s, researchers made a strong case that alien artifacts were recovered and studied by the U.S. military. Conceding that such exotic technology would be vastly ahead of anything developed by human civilization, how long would it take before some clever team

> of (human) scientists developed major new insights that might transform existing technologies, or even create new fields of study altogether? It is not evident that all black world developments would eventually become public. On the contrary, it is entirely feasible that some breakthroughs would in turn lead to other breakthroughs, and so on in the manner very typical of science, in which successes build upon each other with ever greater speed and effectiveness.
>
> Thus, there exists the possibility of what I have come to call a "breakaway civilization." *This would entail a situation in which black world science and technology has reached a sufficient level beyond the "official" world, in which its foundational areas of knowledge are so different (understanding of non-terrestrial intelligences, spacetime, dimensionality, etc*), that it can fairly be called a separate civilization. Throughout human history, multiple civilizations often existed simultaneously, possessing disparate levels of technology and operating on vastly different assumptions of the world. There is no inherent reason to doubt that something like this can happen again—or has already happened.[5]

Dolan is clearly implying here that his "breakaway civilization" also possesses a completely different *physics*—and a technology based upon it—than the public civilization with its known physics models and technologies. So we may add to Dolan's checklist of "indicators" of such a civilization a fifth marker:

> 5) It possesses a different, and perhaps even a *radically* different physics than the standard models of "public consumption" physics, and thus, possesses different principles of engineering and technology.

1. *The 1988 Affair of the "Alien Reproduction Vehicle"*

Dolan then mentions the case of the so-called "Alien Reproduction Vehicle," a vehicle that, according to whistleblower testimony, was back-engineered from off-the-shelf terrestrial components to emulate the performance of an alleged captured alien flying saucer:

> Indeed, the 1988 demonstration of the "Alien Reproduction Vehicle" (ARV) points to the existence of such a major breakthrough.

> Supporting this even further is the complete absence, even two decades later, of anything like the ARV in the arsenal of the U.S. military. The object was reportedly described as having gone into space on many occasions, and even to have explored the solar system. The person who carefully observed it and described it to friends noted that it looked as though it had been in service for a long time. This would indicate that the ARV had nothing at all to do with U.S. military mandates, at least not in any conventional geopolitical sense. Just as clearly, its mission would logically have something to do with the presence of nonhuman intelligences.[6]

The story of the "Alien Reproduction Vehicle" or ARV was first reported by Mark McCandlish in 1988.

According to McCandlish, on November 12, 1988 a major open house and air show was held at Norton Air Force Base in California, while at nearby Palmdale, at Lockheed's celebrated "Skunk Works" facility, three of the ARVs were on display. McCandlish, who had worked in aerospace as a conceptual artist, holding several security clearances, planned to attend but was unable to do so. The story and description of the ARVs was related to him by his friend Brad Sorenson, who attended the show and saw the ARVs in Lockheed's Skunk Works hanger because he attended the show with a high ranking Defense department personage, probably a secretary or under-secretary. Sorensen gained access by accompanying this personage.[7]

McCandlish was subsequently able to verify the description of these ARVs by hearing similar and independent descriptions of a vehicle from yet another contact within the aerospace world, Kent Sellen.[8] Sorensen, who had seen three such vehicles hovering above the ground, also heard a general—the rank and service branch are unclear but it is assumed an U.S. Air Force general—speaking to a group of people. According to what Sorensen told McCandlish, the general

> (Referred) to the vehicles as "Alien Reproduction Vehicles," also as the Flux Liner (because they used high voltage electricity). He mentioned several fascinating features of the ARV. One was that it could perform at "light speed or better." Another was that it ran on energy obtained through the vacuum—presumably the zero point energy field, better described scientifically as the "quantum zero point fluctuations of the vacuum." It had extraordinary acceleration

> and maneuverability, able to move from a ground-level hovering position to 80,000 feet within 2.5 seconds. It was also apparently stated that the ARV had by this time already performed a general reconnaissance of all the planets of the solar system in a search for life, and that no life was found. Sorensen noted that the ARV looked "ancient" and as though it had been used extensively.[9]

Dolan notes that if this story is true, then it has certain implications for the hypothesis of a breakaway civilization, for "it would mean that 'black world' science had achieved a substantial, revolutionary breakthrough on this matter well ahead of 'white world' science."[10]

Dolan is correct, but the story also carries further implications. First, the science behind the alleged craft use of the vacuum flux or zero point energy as an energy source—is *entirely terrestrial*, in other words, it is not the *concepts* that are advanced, since the idea of the zero point energy stems from work of the physicists in the 1930s. As I have also pointed out elsewhere, this conception was made the central area of inquiry for a postwar Nazi fusion research project in Argentina in the 1950s, headed by the scientist Dr. Ronald Richter.[11] Thus, we may be dealing, even with the story itself, with a layer of disinformation or obfuscation, for by that time, the word "alien" had come to mean, within the wider culture, "extraterrestrial," with its original meaning, "foreign," being left far behind.

More importantly, it is to be noted that there are two things that would indicate, as Dolan rightly points out, that if the story is true then two breakthroughs have occurred: (1) the "relativistic speed limit" of the velocity of light has been overcome, and (2) the craft, if it were manned (as McCandlish's drawings clearly show), then it would have had to generate its own gravitational field, otherwise the occupants would have been crushed to death by the severe accelerations reported for it. The story, in other words, is *consistent* with the markers of a breakaway civilization that Dolan has laid down, *whether or not the ultimate source of the technology was human or extraterrestrial.*

Finally, it is to be noted that the technology in question was employed for a *hidden purpose*, namely, the covert manned exploration of space. If so, this would rationalize rather well why the U.S.A. has recently sworn off any further manned exploration of space by means of conventional rockets; if elements within the U.S.A. did possess such technology, rockets are as obsolete as the Pony Express. We thus have two more markers of a

"breakaway civilization," and these, I think, are Dolan's real points in mentioning the story:

> 6) A breakaway civilization, having monopolies over advanced technologies and theoretical science, will likely employ that technology in covert activities;
> 7) It will seek to *cloak* those activities, if discovered, behind stories and fabrications of a different origin for the technologies, lest the knowledge become accessible publicly, and end the monopoly of the breakaway civilization.

Cutaway of the Alleged Alien Reproduction Vehicle Based on McCandlish's Drawings. Note the Chairs in the Top

2. *How A Breakaway Civilization Might Evolve*

By pinpointing the world of "black projects," Dolan is putting his finger on a unique feature of Western civilization that would allow such a breakaway civilization to arise with comparative ease, as compared to a similar development in a nation comprising a non-Western civilization. That feature is the fact that most of the western world's "black projects" occur in nations with (1) a broad revenue- gathering tax base, (2) a government military, as distinguished from private or mercenary militaries, and most importantly (3) corporations contracted to do the actual research and development of the technologies. It is this public-private *mixture* that is a crucial component of the possibility of a breakaway civilization as we shall see.

There is, however, another component, equally crucial to the development of a breakaway civilization: *compartmentalization.* Black projects are so tightly organized and compartmentalized that a low level technician, working on a particular piece or component of a project, may not even know what that component is ultimately for, nor what others involved in the project are working on. Only senior level managers will know the larger picture. This fact allows the possibility that *any given project can be infiltrated or co-opted from an outside source, infiltrating personnel into the various levels of the project.*

The private corporation-public military mixture characteristic is thus the fertile ground on which a breakaway civilization can grow, and the most obvious potential candidates for the core of the breakaway civilization hypothesis would be the very corporations engaged in the research themselves, and behind them, the holders of public debt securities from a given nation, if those holders be corporations or banks of sufficient size.

When these two facts are considered *historically*, the best two candidates for the core group or groups exercising covert control over such projects, their technologies, and the military personnel engaged in using them, are the corporate and banking centers of High Capital in the West, and the Nazis, and indeed, as we shall discover in later chapters of this book, there are abundant connections between the two and black projects, and abundant indications that they employ these in a variety of black operations roles, among them, psychological operations.

B. *Dr. Carroll Quigley on the Markers of Civilizations*

However, in order to sharpen our analysis of the markers and indicators of the breakaway civilization, it will be helpful to have a standard historiographical approach to the subject, and for this, no one serves our purposes better than the late, and famous, Georgetown Professor, Dr. Carroll Quigley. Quigley is well-known both to conventional historians and to researchers of "conspiracy theory," for Quigley literally wrote the "bibles" of modern conspiracy theory in two works that outlined the vast, and largely hidden and secretive maneuverings of international banking and corporations during the twentieth century to achieve a state of total control over the world and over the masses of humanity. These two works are *The Anglo-American Establishment,* and a massive—and unfootnoted—academic tome of twentieth century history, *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in Our Time.* In the latter book, Quigley even admits that he was able to expose details of these secret maneuverings because he had been given access to the secret papers and

files of the very families, banks, and corporations involved. Quigley was even mentioned by former President Bill Clinton in his nomination acceptance speech at the 1992 Democratic Party National Convention as having been one of the key figures who helped shape his world view, a mention that, at the time, gave conspiracy theorists much grist for speculation.

But Quigley was also the author of numerous peer-reviewed academic papers, and of yet a third book, little appreciated by conspiracy theory researchers, but which we shall rely upon heavily here. After all, if Quigley wrote the "bibles" for conspiracy theory in the above two works, then what he has to say about the markers of civilizations and of their historical analysis ought to be of importance for analysis of the possibilities of the idea of a breakaway civilization. That book is *The Evolution of Civilizations: An Introduction to Historical Analysis.*

Georgetown History Professor Dr. Carroll Quigley (1910–1977)

It was Quigley's conviction "that civilization is an object that can be studied in a scientific way just as a quartz crystal can be studied."[12] To this end, Quigley devised a number of criteria by which to analyze civilizations, and to categorize them.

1. *The Six Areas of Potential and the Four Types of Groups*

According to Quigley, human potential organizes itself within civilizations into six levels or categories of activity:

1) military,
2) political,
3) economic,
4) social,
5) religious, or as we shall see in this book, ideological,
6) intellectual.[13]

As can be seen from this list, there are four areas already implicated in the notion of a breakaway civilization as Dolan outlined it; these are the military, political, economic, and intellectual categories of organizing human potential.

These considerations lead Quigley to an analysis of the types of groups that form around these areas of potential. There are four types of groups:

1) social groups,
2) societies,
3) producing societies, and
4) civilizations.[14]

With respect to the first of these categories, social groups, Quigley notes that what distinguishes them from societies and civilizations proper is the fact that members of groups can determine "who is in it and who is not."[15]

Dolan has already hinted at this unique feature of his breakaway civilization idea, but it is worth emphasizing it here, for it is a feature that sharply distinguishes it from civilizations in the normal sense, for by the very nature of the case, such a breakaway civilization's members have to go through the normal security recruitment and vetting procedures, and to a certain extent, are *chosen* for their carefully defined roles.

This is a second distinguishing feature of the notion of a breakaway civilization, for in the case of an ordinary civilization, one is dealing with a relatively large population, whose interactions can only be statistically correlated.[16] In the case of a breakaway civilization, we are dealing with a much smaller "population", whose members are all selected, and who perform clearly defined roles, some of which we will be exploring in this book.

In other words, in Dolan's conception, we are dealing with a very different conception of a civilization, for in it, the notion of civilization is radically transformed. Just how radical this is may be glimpsed by Quigley's other analytical categories and markers.

2. *Parasitic and Producing Societies, and the Breakaway Civilization*

Quigley notes that there are three more essential markers of a civilization, and these, for our purposes, are quite important:

> The pattern of change in civilizations presented here consists of seven stages resulting from the fact that each civilization has an instrument of expansion that becomes an institution. The civilization rises while this organization is an instrument and declines as this organization becomes an institution.
>
> By the term "instrument of expansion" we mean that the society must be organized in such fashion that three things are true: (1) the society must be organized in such a way that it has an *incentive to invent* new ways of doing things; (2) it must be organized in such a way that somewhere in the society there is *accumulation of surplus* —that is, some persons in the society control more wealth than they wish to consume immediately; and (3) it must be organized in such a way that the surplus which is being accumulated is being used to pay for or to utilize the new inventions. All three of these things are essential to any civilization. Taken together, we call them an instrument of expansion….
>
> The three essential parts of an instrument of expansion are incentive to invent, accumulation of surplus, and application of this surplus to the new inventions.[17]

There are a number of crucial points here and it is best to summarize them, for these will become the areas of our investigation in subsequent chapters.

While it may seem that Quigley has presented but three characteristics of a civilization, he has in fact, presented four. There are the three obvious ones:

> 1) A civilization must be so organized as to invent new things or techniques of doing things. In terms of our analysis of a breakaway civilization, the obvious signal of this application will be the invention of *new aerospace technologies* that are, by their very nature, the products of secret research projects;
>
> 2) A civilization must possess a *means of the accumulation of surplus.* For our purposes, this will mean that we must look for mechanisms or, as Quigley calls them, "instruments" of funding for such inventions that are relatively stable and secure, but, by the

> nature of the case, that are also relatively secret. In this case, we shall have to look for clues as to when and how such funding mechanisms or instruments arose, and then trace them historically as the breakaway civilization evolved and changed to meet new circumstances. Quigley again provides the clue of what to look for, for it is necessary to the accumulation of surplus that there be means of capital accumulation and investment; accordingly, we shall look for indications of covert capital accumulation and investment.[18] For our purposes, it is also worth noting that Quigley also explicitly states that the surplus-creating instrument or mechanisms do not "have to be an economic organization. In fact, (they) can be any kind of organization, military, political, social, religious, and so forth."[19] Obviously, our search will concentrate on the military instrument of surplus accumulation;
>
> 3) Any civilization, including a breakaway civilization, must also be organized so that accumulated surplus is used to pay for, or utilize, the invented technologies or techniques.

These are the obvious implications of Quigley's hallmarks of a civilization, but there is one other, implicit at the beginning of the previous quotation:

> 4) Any civilization *evolves*, that is, it changes to meet new circumstances, and it also changes as instruments evolve into institutions, which, according to Quigley, signals the beginning of the inevitable decline of that civilization. As we shall discover, Quigley notes that this evolutionary process of civilizations goes through seven distinct stages.

It is thus necessary to take a closer look at the distinction between "instruments" and "institutions" in Quigley's thought.

3. *Instruments and Institutions, and Parasitic vs. Producing Societies*

There are certain distinguishing features between instruments and institutions in Quigley's thought:

> An instrument is a social organization that is fulfilling effectively the purpose for which it arose. An institution is an instrument that has taken on activities and purposes of its own, separate from and

> different form the purposes for which it was intended. As a consequence, an institution achieves its original purposes with decreasing effectiveness.[20]

In other words, instruments become institutions when "the social conditions surrounding any such organization change in the course of time,"[21] leading such institutions to take on a bureaucratic inertia, a life of their own, whereby they seek to perpetuate their own power. They have become, Quigley notes, "vested interests."[22]

As this occurs, there occurs what Quigley calls the "tension of development," from which one of three outcomes is possible:

> …reform, circumvention, or reaction. In the first case, reform, the institution is reorganized and its methods of action changed so that it becomes, relatively speaking, more of an instrument and achieves its purpose with sufficient facility to reduce tension to a socially acceptable level. In the second case, circumvention, the institution is left with more of its privileges and vested interests intact, but its duties are taken away and assigned to a new instrument within the same society. …
>
> In the third possible outcome, reaction, the vested interests triumph in the struggle, and the people of that society are doomed to ineffective achievement of their needs on that level for an indefinite period.[23]

As we shall see in the coming pages, the breakaway civilization has displayed remarkable dexterity in reforming itself to changing circumstances, creating ever new instruments for the performance of surplus accumulation and invention.

In his analysis of civilizations and societies, Quigley makes yet another important distinction for our purposes, namely, the distinction between parasitic and producing societies:

> The former are those which live from hunting, fishing, or merely gleaning. By their economic activities they do not increase, but rather decrease, the amount of wealth in the world. The second kind of societies, producing societies, live by agricultural and pastoral

> activities. By these activities they seek to increase the amount of wealth in the world.[24]

These are crucial to our analysis of the breakaway civilization, for as will be seen in coming chapters, the methods of its surplus accumulation are for the most part parasitic in nature *with respect to other societies and civilizations in the world, but productive with respect to itself.* It thus exists as a kind of *tertium quid* or "mixed" civilization.

4. *The Five Dimensions of Civilization and the Sixfold Division of Culture*

For Quigley, there are five "dimensions" of civilization, and here, again, we take careful note of these, for one of them bears direct implications for our analysis of the breakaway civilization and its history. Any civilization exists in the obvious three dimensions of space and a fourth dimension of time through which it evolves. But the fifth dimension is that of historical analysis and abstraction itself.

> All of these are easy to understand except the last. Let us look, for a moment, at this fifth dimension of abstraction. It is clear that every culture consists of concrete objects like clothes and weapons, of less tangible objects like emotions and feelings, and of quite abstract things like ideas. These form the dimension of abstraction.[25]

This is quite the crucial point for our purposes, for Quigley was deeply concerned during his career to investigate the sociological consequences, the *ideological* consequences, of the changes indueced within a civilization by its *weaponry.*[26] The implications for our analysis are again obvious, for the types of technologies we shall be discussing also impose a certain worldview on *how best to utilize them to advance the causes and agendas of the breakaway civilization.* Indeed, as we shall discover, this became early on a major theme and concern as the breakaway civilization sought to distinguish itself from the very host civilization sustaining it.

In this respect, it is worth noting that for Quigley, there are six primary areas in which a civilization's culture manifest themselves:

> 1) the intellectual, or as we shall prefer to call it, the ideological, or the *world view,* that such a civilization has of itself;

2) religious; while this may seem the farthest removed area from the concerns of a breakaway civilization concerning itself with the invention of advanced technologies and the accumulation of surplus to sustain this invention, as we shall discover in the next chapter, the appearance or manifestation of advanced technologies was very early, and deliberately, coupled with an almost quasi-religious character in the experience and thought of one of the earliest, and most famous (or infamous) UFO contactees;
3) social, that is to say, the *organization* of the instruments of such accumulation and invention;
4) economic, or, for our purposes, the means of sustaining the financial requirements of the breakaway civilization;
5) political; and,
6) military.[27]

As we shall discover in the ensuing pages, the breakaway civilization blends or mixes the last two components of culture, producing a kind of society politically organized around a "chain of command" structure typical of military organizations.

5. The Seven Stages of Civilizations and "Core" vs "Peripheral" Societies

The most obvious feature of civilizations is that they evolve and change to meet changing circumstances, and here our concern will be to note how the parasitic breakaway civilization began under certain peculiar circumstances, arising in the Third Reich from a constellation of impulses, and then transplanted and changed itself to meet the new circumstances of a lost war and a new host. It is at this juncture that we will note the rise of *factions* within that breakaway civilization. These factions, we will discover, were present prior to the rise of that civilization in Nazi Germany, and re-emerged after the war, when the breakaway civilization reestablished contact with its separated components. With this in mind, we note that Quigley speaks of seven stages in the evolution of any civilization:

1) Mixture
2) Gestation
3) Expansion
4) Age of Conflict

5) Universal Empire
6) Decay
7) Invasion[28]

We may, for our purposes, overlay two distinct “periods” in the evolution of the breakaway civilization over Quigley’s stages to clarify the history that will emerge in this book:

1) ***Mixture:*** The conditions of the breakaway civilization’s rise in Nazi Germany are created by a mixture of components of the host civilization, i.e., Western civilization in general, and the unique ideology of Nazism;
2) ***Gestation:*** The elements of the breakaway civilization begin to emerge in the Third Reich with the creation of parallel and nested bureaucracies precisely concerned with
a) the invention of new technologies in secret; and
b) the means of the accumulation of surplus to sustain their development and utilization;
3) ***Expansion:*** At this stage, the breakaway civilization becomes a “state within a state”, and is of exclusive Nazi character as the Reich itself expands;
4) ***Age of Conflict:*** During this and the next stage, the breakaway civilization takes on new independence from the Nazi state, while remaining reliant upon it as its host;
5) ***Universal Empire***
6) ***Decay:*** as the war will clearly be lost by the host, i.e., by the Third Reich, the breakaway civilization, which by now has transformed its instruments into institutions connected with the Third Reich, undergoes a process of self-reformation, transforming those institutions back into instruments for the express purpose of surviving the war and continuing its existence under changed circumstances;
7) ***Invasion:*** When the war ends, the breakaway civilization transplants itself into new hosts and redefines itself accordingly, regaining contact with the factions that originally helped create the conditions for its rise in the first place.

It is worth noting that Quigley states that during the fourth stage, the age of conflict, a growth of irrational belief systems and behaviors arises as a sign of that stage.[29] In this case, however, the irrationality is Fascism itself, and this

ideological component becomes a stable feature of the breakaway civilization in all its stages, as we shall discover.

There is one final crucial element of civilizations in Quigley's thought, and it will become a core component of our analysis here. For Quigley, in every civilization, from Mesopotamian to modern Western civilizations, there are "core" and "peripheral" societies or states. We may illustrate what he means by pointing out that, in his analysis, the "core" societies or states of Western civilization emerged in France and England(and subsequently the United States), while peripheral states were societies or nations such as Germany.

Thus, "core" and "peripheral" states or societies are denoted by their geographical proximity to each other, by their location and *physical conditions of existence.* But in the case of a "breakaway" civilization, we are not so lucky, for in the first instance, we are dealing with a society that is parasitic, i.e., living off a host, and in the second instance, its location, by its very nature, exists in several centers, many of these secret, or at least inaccessible to the general public of its host. How then does one define its "core" and "peripheral" areas? The answer, in the coming pages, is surprising, and disconcerting.

C. *Conclusions and Implications*

We are now in a position to summarize what we are looking for. By the nature of the case, we are looking for

1) A civilization existing within a host civilization,
2) With means of surplus accumulation that are a mixture of known and more covert sources, for the express purpose of,
3) the invention of advanced technologies which it intends to utilize in some fashion as yet to be ascertained,
4) with an ideology or world view of an almost quasi-religious character, an ideology in turn intimately coupled with the advanced technologies at its disposal, and with a basic Fascist world view of the mixture of corporations and governments; and,
5) a "core" and "peripheral" locations; and finally,
6) since much of this technology is of a military nature or of obvious military application, we may also look for the full panoply of military operations in connection with it, i.e., reconnaissance, psychological warfare, and so on.

Our entry into the exploration and analysis of the history of the breakaway civilization will be via the last of these components, for as already noted, there is an intimate and deep relationship between the military technologies of a civilization, and the world view that those technologies engender. We will enter the hall of mirrors of the breakaway civilization via its psychological operations performed in conjunction with those technologies, and via the suggestions of their first manifestation in the most famous—or, depending on one's lights—infamous of all UFO contactees.

George Adamski.

[1] Cited in my book LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), p. 277.

[2] Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State: The Cover-Up Exposed, 1973–1991* (Keyhole Publishing Company, 2009), p. 61.

[3] See my SS Brotherhood of the Bell (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 141–191, and my Secrets of the Unified Field (Adventures Unlimited press. 2008), pp. 242–252, 280–281.

[4] Dolan, op. cit. , pp. 565–565, emphasis added.

[5] Dolan, op. cit., p. 580, emphasis added.

[6] Dolan, op. cit., pp. 580–581

[7] Ibid., pp. 457–458.

[8] Dolan, op. cit., p. 460.

[9] Ibid., p. 459.

[10] Ibid., p. 460.

[11] See my The Nazi International (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 314–343.

[12] Carroll Quigley, The Evolution of Civilizations: An Introduction to Historical Analysis (Liberty Fund, 1979), p. 85.

[13] Quigley, op. cit., p. 54,

[14] Ibid., p. 65.

[15] Ibid., p. 71.

[16] Quigley, op. cit., p. 67. The resemblance of aggregate social behavior individual humans and the statistical modeling of quantum mechanics is something Quigley points out. It is worth mentioning here that Quigley, with his close association with and knowledge of international banking, also skirts close to the connection between closed systems of finance and closed systems of science and physics. While this is not yet the place to explore this in more detail, it is worth noting what Quigley says in this respect with regard to the Greek rationalists, i.e., those in the broad Pythagorean, Platonic, Hermetic tradition: "At that time the chief enemies of science were the rationalists. These men, with all the prestige of Pythagoras and Plato behind them, argued that the human senses are not dependable but are erroneous

and misleading and that, accordingly, the truth must be sought without using the senses and observation, and by the use of reason and logic alone. The scientists of the day were trying to reduce the complexity of innumerable observed qualities to the simplicity of quantitative differences of a few fundamental elements." (p. 41). Accordingly, Quigley ascribes the Aristotelian philosophical outlook to be the broad basis behind modern science.

This view, in fact, was challenged—and severely so—by scholars of his day, among them Frances Yates, who demonstrated that the broad Platonic-Neoplatonic, and Hermetic tradition had far more to do with the rise of modern physics and mathematics in the hands Copernicus, Newton, and Leibniz, than most histories of science would care to admit. While this is not the place to explore the relationship between Aristotelianism and banking, it should be pointed out that the fundamental physics proposition of Platonism and Hermeticism is of open systems, and that of Aristotelianism, closed systems. It is also worth mentioning that the bankers of Venice, who promoted Aristotelianism, manipulated the trial and execution of the 16th century's premier Hermeticist, Giordano Bruno. In that, as they say, there lies a tale…

17 Quigley, *The Evolution of Civilizations*, p. 132, emphasis in the original.

18 Quigley, The Evolution of Civilizations, p. 137.

19 Ibid, p. 138.

20 Quigley, *The Evolution of Civilizations*, pp. 101–102.

21 Ibid., pp. 102–103.

22 Ibid., pp. 103.

23 Ibid., pp. 116–117.

24 Quigley, The Evolution of Civilizations, p. 76.

25 Ibiid., p.99.

26 Quigley, *The Evolution of Civilizations*, p. 424.

27 Ibid., p. 100.

28 Quigley, *The Evolution of Civilizations*, p. 146.

29 Quigley, *The Evolution of Civilizations*, p. 152.

2
The Adamski Anomalies: The Beginnings of Murky Possibilities

"Adamski was a self-styled friend of the Venusians; he published two books with obviously faked photographs in support of his claims."
Jacques Vallee[1]

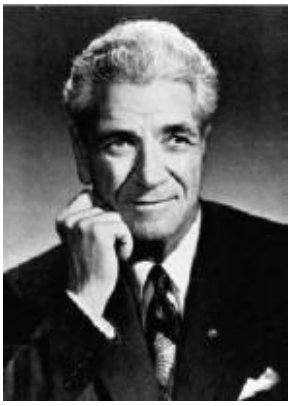
"Nearly all discussions of the UFO contactees start with George Adamski, the most accomplished of the lot." Greg Bishop[2]

By his own admission,[3] George Adamski was just about the *last* person anyone would expect extraterrestrials to make contact with, much less select as their ambassador to carry their "message" to humanity. Nor was this the only, nor the strangest, anomaly about the man's whole saga of alleged extraterrestrial contact, for the Adamski story fits little of the modern-day stereotype of extraterrestrial contact; there are no bug-eyed gray aliens, no reptilians, no gruesome kidnappings in the middle of the night with people being magically floated from their beds by beams of light into saucers to be subjected to a gruesome, bizarre, and downright sexual form of medical rape.

Instead, Adamski's "aliens" show up at the oddest times—like broad daylight[4]—and in the weirdest places—like restaurants and motel lobbies[5]—and they are entirely human in appearance, one is tempted to say "Nordic" or even Teutonic,[6] and they communicate both telepathically[7] and by word of mouth.[8] And that's not all: they invite him aboard their distinctively "retro"-looking spaceships, there to have cordial discussions about theological matters[9] (that could have been looked up in any standard encyclopedia of the day) around conference tables[10] over what may best be described as a kind of informal high tea,[11] at which Adamski is tempted to smoke cigarettes, suggesting that in the high civilization of the extraterrestrial, anti-smoking fascism has not become the fad it is in the modern "free" West(perhaps they know something about tobacco our government isn't telling us).[12] To make matters very much worse, said telepathically-endowed humans travel in their decidedly retro-looking 1950s flying saucers and cigars, not so much from distant star systems, but from our celestial neighbors right here in our own solar system, such paradisial places as Venus,[13] Mars,[14] and Saturn,[15] all parts

of a great Roddenberry-esque planetary Federation[16] enjoying the fruits of harmony, advanced technology, and enlightenment as they “boldly go where no man has gone before”.

So *nutty* is all this nonsense—from any *number* of perspectives, not the least of which is planetary geology[17]—that few even in the UFOlogy community, suffused as it is by much more serious and plausible stories of middle-of-the-night kidnapping and medical examinations by reptiles and little gray bug-eyed robots, take Adamski seriously at all anymore.



George Adamski

Worse still (yes, it *does* get worse!), Adamski bolstered all these fantastic tales by claiming that the military recruited him to photograph the saucers (which, we learn later, were from Venus, at least, in their initial contacts).

This is where the devil, as they say, is in the details.

A. Contact with Whom?

Adamski wrote two books recounting his alleged contact with extraterrestrials: *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, a prosaic account of his initial contact, and *Inside the Spaceships*, a wild Chopinesque fantasia about his subsequent visits to a "mothership" parked in Earth orbit. Though most now discount these wild fantasias, a closer look at them reveals many of the "memes" that have become a constant in the lore and mythology of contemporary UFOlogy, so a closer review is in order, for in that examination, as we shall see, are the beginnings of murky possibilities.

He begins his *Flying Saucers Have Landed* with the self-observation that he is a "philosopher, student, teacher," and "saucer researcher."[18] From there, he quickly moves to inform the reader that he owns two telescopes, a 15" reflector, and a more portable 6" reflector for which a camera is adapted to fit over the eyepiece.[19]

From here, the story moves quickly to a radio report of a cigar-shaped UFO over San Diego in 1946, a sighting discussed weeks later in Adamski's cafe on a Sunday:

> During this discussion six military officers who were sitting at another table listened intently to all points brought up. Then one of them spoke up and said, 'It is not as fantastic as it sounds. We know something about this.' I immediately asked what knowledge they had, but they would not reveal it. Yet they assured us all that the ship we had seen and were discussing was not of this world.[20]

Before pausing to analyze this encounter and what it might portend, it is worth noting that Adamski claims that he and members of his household had also seen a similar UFO at the time in question, and that Adamski described it as "a large black object, similar in shape to a dirigible, and apparently motionless."[21] The object appeared after an intense rain shower. Initially, we

are told, Adamski thought nothing of it, but rather wrote it off to some sort of advanced though classified human technology: “I figured that during the war some new types of aircraft had been developed and that this was one of them.”[22] As Adamski and his household were watching this strange “dirigible,” the craft “pointed its nose upward and quickly shot up into space, *leaving a fiery trail behind it which remained visible for a good five minutes.*”[23]

Taking Adamski at his word here—and we shall see later that there are abundant reasons to question his assertions—then what we have is an unusual constellation of relationships:

> 1) Adamski sees a dirigible-shaped aircraft or UFO of some sort which *leaves a contrail* as it zips out of sight. As we have noted elsewhere, this signature was specifically mentioned in two US Air Force intelligence documents in the wake of the Roswell incident.[24] Adamski *himself* drew the logical conclusion that this, far from representing some sort of extra-terrestrial technology, represented some terrestrial one. Indeed, dirigibles *do* have the ability to seem to “hover,” though they do not zip away leaving contrails. At best then, there is nothing about the sighting whose technological details compel to the conclusion that the origins of the craft were extraterrestrial;
> 2) The San Diego sighting of a similar craft was subsequently being discussed in Adamski’s cafe, with “six military officers” in attendance. It is from these officers that Adamski learns the “fact” that the technology seen in San Diego—and by implication the one *he* had seen—was extraterrestrial, though the officers offer no substantiation for this assertion;
> 3) Thus, if one accepts Adamski at his word, then the “meme” of an extraterrestrial origin of this strange technology *did not originate from Adamski himself, but from the U.S. military.*

The significance of this “fact” cannot be pondered too long, for as I point out in *Roswell and the Reich,* a similar tactic of deflection of technological details to extraterrestrial origins for them might have been in play during the Roswell affair.[25]

Let it also be carefully noted that Adamski’s first “contact” in connection with UFOs was not with “extraterrestrials”, but with the military. One gets the

sense, here, that the military might indeed have been doing “damage control” in the wake of the San Diego sighting, protecting an experimental technology with a cover story of its extraterrestrial origins, much like it would later do with the notorious Paul Bennewitz affair.[26]

In any case, Adamski’s reaction to this revelation was somewhat predictable: “Naturally this made me take more stock in the situation,”[27] he writes, and it is from this moment that he began to try to use his telescopes to photograph UFOs. In other words, had the contact with the military *not* happened, he might never have pursued the course he subsequently did.

As if to reinforce this interest, in 1949, Adamski was—again by his own admission—paid a visit:

> Then late in 1949 four men came into the cafe at Palomar Gardens. Two of them had been in before and we had talked a little about the flying saucers. This day it was around noon, and raining—really pouring. They ordered some lunch and we began talking about flying saucers again. One of these men was Mr J.P. Maxfield, and another was his partner, Mr G.L. Bloom, both of the Point Loma Navy Electronics Laboratory near San Diego. The other two men were from a similar setup in Pasadena. One was in officer’s uniform.
>
> They asked me if I would co-operate with them in trying to get photographs of strange craft moving through space, since I had smaller instruments than those at the big Observatory. I could maneuvre mine more easily than those on top could be moved, especially my 6-incher, which was without a dome. I could point it much as pointing a gun at ducks.
>
> ….
>
> I asked them then where I should look to be most likely to see the strange objects which they were asking me to try to photograph. We discussed the pros and cons of the possibility of bases being on the moon for inter-planetary craft. And finally the moon was decided upon as a good spot for careful observation.[28]

One has difficulty believing the military would need an amateur astronomer and photographer to assist it with spotting UFOs on the Moon with 6” and 15” telescopes, much less “discuss” where Adamski should be pointing his

telescopes to photograph the elusive craft, *unless it was trying to manipulate him.*

This initial contact was then followed by sightings of UFOs over Mexico City—phenomena continuing to this day—which, according to Adamksi, were reported on KMPC news of Beverly Hills. On this occasion, Mr. Bloom returned to Adamski's cafe and listened to the radio reports with Adamski. When the reporting was finished, Bloom informed Adamski that "they" did not have the "full story," creating the distinct impression that Mr. Bloom—of the Navy electronics laboratory in Point Loma—did.[29] At this juncture, Adamski reports that he handed Bloom a couple of UFO photographs he had taken through his telescope. Word of this somehow leaked to local media, and Adamski had to confirm that he had turned over photographs to the US military, which in turn, of course, denied that they showed "spaceships."[30] Contacted about the Adamski photos, the US Air Force denied ever having received them.[31]

Perhaps this was a bit of obfuscation, perhaps not, for Adamski had originally turned his photos over to Mr. Bloom, and as far as Adamski knew, Bloom worked not for the Air Force, but for the US Navy. There are three possibilities here: either Adamski's photos were simply lost in the inter-service rivalry and bureaucratic shuffle between the two services, or perhaps Adamski simply made up the story about meeting the men in the first place, or perhaps Adamski was being manipulated to believe his own photos and role had a greater significance than was really the case. In other words, perhaps Adamski was a component and unwitting player in a psychological operation. As we proceed, the evidence for the latter view will slowly accumulate.

Indeed, Adamski himself obliquely suggests that the military's role in his photographs may have been part of some secret agenda, for remarking on his picture-taking, he then states that "I sent a set of them to the Wright Patterson Air Force Base. In the interest of national security they would have stopped me, if I was photographing our own secret craft. They never have."[32]

Perhaps they would have, perhaps they would not. Granting only for the sake of argument that Adamski's photos were genuine, the military could have easily managed the *perceptions* of what he was photographing by attributing extraterrestrial origins to them, and cloaking whatever technology might have been seen and photographed with a context that said "this is so far beyond terrestrial science that there is no need to investigate further."

But as is now readily granted in almost all ufological circles, the Adamski photographs were most likely simple hoaxes. In that case, the possibility arises that Adamski may have been helped in their concoction. But if so, then once again the question is, *why?*

Part of the answer to this might be indicated by two curious statements that Adamski makes in *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, statements that hover over its otherwise goofy landscape with a sinister significance, a significance that in the total context of his book is neither prepared nor resolved. *There is nothing leading up to these statements, and there is nothing, really, leading away from them. They are just there.*

The first of these is a statement that will become a familiar "indirect" argument that because of the sheer numbers of UFO sightings—in the early 1950s remember—the possibility that they all originate from experimental military projects cannot account for all of them.[33] What is interesting here is not so much the validity or the lack thereof of this line of reasoning, but the fact that it occurs almost for the first time in ufological literature in a book by one of ufology's most notorious contactees. Adamski, in other words, was one of the first to formulate the argument that "their numbers and frequencies of appearance took them out of (the) military experimental category."[34]

It is important to observe that this argument is an indirect one, for there are really only three ways such a conclusion for the extraterrestrial origins for UFOs could ever be advanced with anything approaching certitude:

> 1) The physics signatures of such objects must be exotic enough to compel to a conclusion that they are beyond the capabilities of any *known* or *conjectured* terrestrial science to embody;
> 2) Actual UFOs might be recovered and the technology might be determined to be so advanced as to be beyond human terrestrial science. In this eventuality, it is likely that such recovered technology would be deeply classified, and as such, any arguments for its off-world nature would depend on leaked information or descriptions of debris;
> 3) Actual UFO occupants might be recovered whose physiological features are so odd or unusual that they compel to the conclusion of an extraterrestrial origin.

Such is, of course, exactly what has been alleged in many famous UFO cases. We shall have occasion in this book to see that each of these three areas are

themselves not entirely compelling, and that each are wide open to the management of perceptions.

The *second* statement that Adamski produced was even more unusual, and had even *less* preparation in the context of the book than the previous one, and again, there is absolutely no follow-up anywhere else in the book, or in its sequel, *Inside the Spaceships.* Here, it is best to cite the statement in its context:

> National security has many facets and the powers that be are themselves pushing out in the direction of space and of antigravity. *Also, they know they have an enemy.* And they do not know how far the enemy may have gone in this general field of a new form of power and propulsion. *They do know that at the close of the war all the German scientists with knowledge did not come to this country.*[35]

This is one of the most unusual statements in all of Adamski's output, and it is an oft-overlooked one.

Note that at this period of time, antigravity was being written about in the open literature, *however,* the most *popular* articles would not be written until a few years *after* Adamski's book was actually published - just as a spate of popular articles on the subject of anti-gravity appeared in the mid-1950s - with some photographs that in turn appear to have been faked.[36] Thus, Adamski appears rather well-informed for a mere cafe owner who just happens to have been asked by people with military connections to photograph UFOs through his home telescopes! And who faked them? Adamski? or the military?

This only places the rest of his comments in an even more interesting light, for *how does Adamski know that the American military knows "they have an enemy"?* And *what enemy is it?* Adamski's words here are curiously ambiguous. Is the enemy the Soviet Union? Is the enemy extra-terrestrials? Or someone else? And then, from nowhere, unbidden, unprepared, and never followed-up, comes the statement that not all of the German scientists "with knowledge" came to this country, implying the "enemy" was the Nazis.

In the context of a series of statements about anti-gravity, unknown enemies, and American uncertainties about how far "the enemy may have gone in this general field of a new form of power and propulsion," it is a very sobering statement to make in an otherwise goofy book. Adamski seems to be implying that the "enemy" were Nazis, for why mention Germans in connection with all the preceding statements at all unless this was not his

intention? As we shall see a little later, there may be a very subtle clue in Adamski's notorious photographs themselves.

1. The Nov 20, 1952 Contact: the Memes are Implanted

Just as quickly as Adamski makes these statements, he leaves them for the more familiar ufological territory of the weird and exotic, in this case, his alleged contact with an extraterrestrial. "It was," writes Adamski, about 12:30 in the noon hour on Thursday, 20 November 1952, that I first made personal contact with a man from another world. He came to Earth in his space craft, a flying saucer. He called it a Scout Ship.

This took place on the California desert 10.2 miles from Desert Center toward Parker, Arizona.[37]

Accompanying Adamski on this "historical occasion" were his secretary, Lucy McGinnis, another woman who was the owner of a cafe in Palomar Gardens,[38] and four people from Arizona who agreed to meet Adamski at the "contact site."

The four from Arizona were Mr. and Mrs. A.C. Bailey, and "Doctor" and Mrs. George H. Williamson.[39] We will return to George H. Williamson in a moment.

According to Adamski, shortly after noon the group heard the sound of an aircraft, a two engine plane "on a routine flight." Watching this airplane as it passed directly over their heads, the group continued to watch it until it was nothing but a speck.

Then, "it" happened:

> Suddenly and simultaneously we all turned as one, looking again toward the closest mountain ridge where just a few minutes before the first plane had crossed. Riding high, and without sound, there was a gigantic cigar-shaped silvery ship, without wings or appendages of any kind. Slowly, almost as if it was drifting, it came in our direction; then seemed to stop, hovering motionless.
>
> Excitedly Dr. Williamson exclaimed, 'Is that a space ship?'
>
> At first glance it looked like a fuselage of a very large ship with the sun's rays reflecting brightly from its unpainted sides at an altitude and angle where wings might not be noticeable.
>
> Schooled in caution against over-excitement and quick conclusions, especially in regard to aircraft, Lucy replied, 'No,

George, I don't believe it is.'

'But that baby's high! And see how big it is!' exclaimed Al.

'And Lucy! It doesn't have wings or any other appendages like our planes do!' persisted George. And turning to me, 'What do you think Adamski?'

Before I could answer, Lucy interrupted, 'You're right, George! Look! It's orange on top—the whole length!'[40]

And thus began the event that would transform George Adamski, cafe owner, amateur UFO photographer and erstwhile "consultant" to the military, into Adamski the contactee.

Certain that the intention of the craft's occupants was to make contact, Adamski ordered his companions into the car in order to be driven closer to where he thought the "saucer" would land:

> …(In) spite of all the excitement, I knew this was not the place; maybe not even the ship with which contact was to be made, if that was in the plan. But I did feel this ship had a definite 'something' to do with it all.
>
> Fully aware of the curiosity created by our party here in the desert where no one would normally picnic, I did not want to be more conspicuous by setting up my telescope and camera in such an open spot. Above all else, I didn't want to make the slightest mistake that might prevent a landing and personal contact being made, if such a possibility existed. And now I felt certain that it did.
>
> I said, 'Someone take me down the road—quick! That ship has come looking for me and I don't want to keep them waiting! Maybe the saucer is already up there somewhere—afraid to come down here where too many people would see them.'
>
> Don't ask me why I said this or how I knew. I have already said that I have a habit of following my feelings, and that is the way I felt.[41]

As the group drove in the car to the spot that Adamski designated, they observed the cigar-shaped object following them, stopping when the car stopped.[42]

Adamski then proceeded by himself with his six inch telescope and camera to a point a mile to a mile and a half from the car, ordering the rest of

the group to drive back and observe carefully.[43]

> Not more than five minutes had elapsed after the car had left me when my attention was attracted by a flash in the sky and almost instantly a beautiful small craft appeared to be drifting through a saddle between two of the mountain peaks and settling silently into one of the coves about half a mile from me. It did not lower itself entirely below the crest of the mountain. Only the lower portion settled below the crest, while the upper, or dome section, remained above the crest and in full sight of the rest of my party who were back there watching. Yet it was in such a position that I could see the entire ship as it hovered in the cove ahead of me. At the same time, many miles of the highway and surrounding terrain were in full view of the crew within the saucer.[44]

Adamski quickly moved to snap a photograph of the saucer, "just as a couple more of our planes roared overhead"[45] and as the craft—now described as a "saucer"—flashed away and disappeared over "the same saddle through which it had first come."[46]

While musing on this close "contact" and wishing that he had been able to make actual personal contact with its occupant or occupants, Adamski's wish is fulfilled:

> Suddenly my reverie was broken as my attention was called to a man standing at the entrance of a ravine between two low hills, about a quarter of a mile away. He was motioning to me to come to him, and I wondered who he was and where he had come from. I was sure he had not been there before. Nor had he walked past me from the road.
> ….
> As I approached him a strange feeling came upon me and I became cautious. At the same time I looked round to reassure myself that we were both in full sight of my companions. Outwardly there was no reason for this feeling, for the man looked like any other man, and I could see he was somewhat smaller than I and considerably younger.[47]

This man was, of course, Adamski's "extraterrestrial." Note that, thus far, there is nothing at all distinguishing this encounter from the ordinary other than

Adamski's "feeling." Indeed, Adamski himself mentions the possibility that the man might even have been a prospector.[48]

But before we continue with this encounter, the issue of one of Adamski's companions, who by Adamski's own account is watching this whole transaction unfold a mile away, must be addressed.

a. George Hunt Williamson and the Baileys

George Hunt Williamson (1926-1986) and his wife, along with the Baileys, was one of the group of four who met Adamski that day. But it is worth noting Williamson's background, and some of *his* connections. According to the biographical note in *Wikipedia*,

> Williamson, born in Chicago, Illinois… was mystically inclined as a teenager, but transferred some of his occult enthusiasm to flying saucers in the late 1940s. In early 1951 Williamson was expelled on academic grounds from the University of Arizona. Having read William Dudley Pelley's book *Star Guests* (1950), Williamson worked for a while for Pelley's cult organization, helping to put out its monthly publication *Valor*. Pelley had generated huge quantities of communications with "advanced intelligences" via automatic writing, and very clearly was an immediate inspiration to Williamson, who combined his fascination with the occult and with flying saucers by trying to contact flying saucer crews with a home-made Ouija board. After hearing about the flying-saucer-based religious cult of George Adamski, perhaps through Pelley, Williamson and his wife, and fellow saucer believers Alfred and Betty Bailey, became regular visitors to Adamski's commune at Palomar Gardens and eventually members of Adamski's Theosophy-spinoff cult. They witnessed Adamski "telepathically" channeling and tape-recording messages from the friendly humanoid Space Brothers who inhabited every solar planet.[49]

The article goes on to mention that Williamson was, along with the Baileys, the "witnesses" to Adamksi's "contact," (which the article mistakenly dates to November 18, 1952), but that in fact they experienced "nothing more than Adamski telling them to wait and stay put while he walked over a hill, then came back into view an hour later, with a preliminary story of his experiences

—a story subsequently greatly changed for book publication in *Flying Saucers Have Landed* (1953), as Williamson himself later pointed out."[50]

And what of Williamson's contact with William Pelley? It is here that the plot takes a decidedly darker turn.

b. William Pelley and the American Fascists

William Dudley Pelley (1890-1965) claimed to have undergone a near-death experience in 1928, during which he met with God and Christ, who "instructed him to undertake the spiritual transformation of America."[51] Once the Great Depression hit America a year later, Pelley's "spiritual transformation" of America began in earnest when he became politically active. By the time Adolf Hitler had come to power in January 1933 in Germany, "Pelley, an admirer of Hitler, was inspired to form a political movement and on that same day founded the Silver Legion, an extremist and anti-semitic organization whose followers (known as the Silver Shirts and 'Christian Patriots') wore Nazi-like silver uniforms."[52] Having founded branches of the Silver Legion "in almost every state in the country" Pelley soon had a sizeable following.[53]

By 1940, Pelley's organization and its hatred for President Franklin Delano Roosevelt had earned the ire of the Roosevelt Administration, and in 1940 his North Carolina headquarters in Asheville was shut down by Federal marshals. His followers at the headquarters were arrested and Pelley's property was seized. Pelley himself was summoned to testify before the House Un-American Activities Committee.[54]

Things went from bad to worse. After the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor, Pelley was forced to disband his Fascist organization, but Pelley himself continued to attack the administration until he was finally charged with sedition and high treason in April 1942. While the sedition charge was dropped, Pelley was "convicted on other charges and sentenced to 15 years imprisonment," being paroled in 1952.[55]

2. The Messages from "E.T."

With Williamson's occult and Pelley's Fascist connections lurking in the background, let us now return to Adamski's record of his "contacts." With respect to this first contact—which Williamson subsequently admitted had been elaborated for Adamski's book—Adamski himself wrote:

> 1. His trousers were not like mine. They were in style, much like ski trousers and with a passing thought I wondered why he wore such out here in the desert.
>
> 2. His hair was long, reaching to his shoulders, and was blowing in the wind as was mine….
>
> Although I did not understand the strange feeling that persisted, it was however a friendly feeling toward the smiling young man standing there waiting for me to reach him. And I continued walking toward him without the slightest fear.
>
> Suddenly, as though a veil was removed from my mind, the feeling of caution left me so completely that I was no longer aware of my friends or whether they were observing me as they had been told to do. By this time we were quite close. He took four steps toward me, bringing us within arm's length of each other.
>
> Now, for the first time I fully realised that I was in the presence of a man from space—A HUMAN BEING FROM ANOTHER WORLD! I had not seen his ship as I was walking toward him, nor did I look around for it now. I did not even think of his ship, and I was so stunned by this sudden realisation that I was speechless. My mind seemed to temporarily stop functioning.
>
> The beauty of his form surpassed anything I had ever seen. And the pleasantness of his face freed me of all thought of my personal self…[56]

Adamski goes on to describe the man as being approximately five feet six inches tall, and about 28 years old, with a round face, high forehead, and grey-green eyes, with sandy hair and a skin color like a "medium-coloured suntan".[57]

As the men approached, the man extended his hand, as if to shake hands, and Adamski "responded in our customary manner."[58] But this was rejected "with a smile and a slight shake of his head. Instead of grasping hands as we on Earth do, he placed the palm of his hand against the palm of my hand, just touching it but not too firmly."[59] Later, in his subsequent contacts with the "extraterrestrials," Adamski elaborated on this "secret handshake":

> I jumped to my feet with what probably could be described only as a broad grin. Firkon (the extraterrestrial with whom Adamski is

> conversing, ed) too wore a wide smile, and we exchanged the customary greeting. Then he said a certain word, stressing it in a way which clearly gave to it some particular significance.

As we left the hotel together…\
(That's right; they're in a *hotel!*)

> …he said, 'The handclasp has been described to a certain extent and we thought it best to add the word you have just heard as a further identification between you and those of our worlds who are contacting you here. This will be particularly useful in case you are approached by someone strange to you, as will sometimes be the case.[60]

In other words, the Space Brothers are quite literally members of a celestial Lodge, exchanging crypto-Masonic greetings with their erstwhile earthman contact by means of a secret handshake and typically Masonic exchanges of code words!

But let us return to the *initial* contact. The "secret handshake" thus exchanged, the two men got down to business. "I am a firm believer," Adamski says, as he is detailing the first communications between himself and the extraterrestrial subject of his first contact,

> that people who desire to convey messages to one another can do so, even though they neither speak nor understand the other's language. This can be done through feelings, signs, and above all, by means of telepathy.

(Remote viewers, eat your hearts out!)

> I had been teaching this as fact for 30 years and now I concluded I would have to use this method if information of any kind was to pass between us. And there were a lot of things I wanted to know, if only I could think of them.
>
> So, to convey the meaning of my first question to him, I began forming, to the best of my ability, a picture of a planet in my mind. At the same time I pointed to the sun, high in the sky.
>
> He understood this, and his expression so indicated.
>
> Then I circled the sun with my finger, indicating the orbit of the planet closest to the sun, and said, 'Mercury'. I circled it again for

> the second orbit, and said, ‘Venus’. The third circle I said, ‘Earth,’ and indicated the earth upon which we were standing.
>
> I repeated this procedure a second time, all the while keeping as clear a picture of a planet in my mind as I was able to perceive, and this time pointing to myself as belonging to the Earth. Then I indicated him, with a question in my eyes and mind.
>
> Now he understood perfectly, and smiling broadly he point to the sun; made one orbit, made the second, then touching himself with his left hand, he gestured several times with his right index finger toward the second orbit.
>
> I took this to mean that the second planet was his home, so I asked, ‘You mean you came from Venus?’ This was the third time I had spoken the word ‘Venus’ in relation to the second planet, and he nodded his head in the affirmative. Then, he, too, spoke the word ‘Venus’.[61]

A Venusian had come to the much cooler climate of the California desert to talk personally to George Adamski!

a. The Venusian and “The Bomb”

From these simple beginnings, Adamski and his Venusian visitor moved quickly to a discussion of interplanetary politics and the “bomb,” the first of many “messages” given to Adamski, and the first of many “memes” implanted within the UFO community:

> He made me understand that their coming was friendly. Also, as he gestured, that they were concerned with radiations going out from the Earth.
>
> This I got clearly since there was a considerable amount of radiation of heat waves rising from the desert, as if often the case. Such as the waves that are often seen rising from pavements, and highways on hot days.
>
> He pointed to them and then gestured through space.
>
> I asked if this concern was due to the explosions of our bombs with their resultant vast radio-active clouds?
>
> He understood this readily and nodded his head in the affirmative.
>
> ….
>
> I wanted to know if this was affecting outer space?

Again a nod of affirmation.[62]

To my knowledge, this is one of the first times in UFO literature that the idea of atomic testing as a cause for "extraterrestrial reconnoitering" was put forward, being subsequently picked up by Frank Edwards, and later by Stanton Friedman. In Adamski's case, however, the idea has gone far beyond extraterrestrial "reconnaissance," and was now supplemented by a political message that humanity was on a course of ignorance and error.[63]

b. Adamski's E.T.s, and Religion: The Interplanetary Federation of Brotherhood and the "Übermensch ET"

Having established the concerns of the inhabitants of the planet Venus over terrestrial nuclear testing, Adamski then managed to ask the Venusian if he believed in God. Receiving an affirmative answer, Adamski quickly amended this:

> But he made me understand, by elaborating a little longer with his gestures and mental pictures, that we on Earth really know very little about this Creator. In other words, our understanding is shallow. Theirs is much broader, and they adhere to the Laws of the Creator instead of laws of materialism as Earth men do.[64]

Note what we have here: if, on the one hand, one is inclined to take Adamski at his word, and in spite of the abundant evidence not to do so, then whoever it is he is having contact with is subtly conveying the notion that extraterrestrials are not only *technologically*, but *morally and spiritually* superior to human beings. And if one does *not* take Adamski at his word, but rather admits that the whole contact scenario is one gigantic fantasy, then the end result is still the same, only in this case it is *Adamski* who is promulgating the idea of the technological and moral superiority of extraterrestrials.

This idea or meme of the "*Übermensch ET*" is found again in the series of alleged contacts elaborated in Adamski's *Inside the Spaceships*, where Adamski attributes almost angelic and supernatural powers to his "Space Brothers" when he confesses his "deep conviction that these men could answer all questions and solve all problems concerning our world: even to performing feats impossible to Earth men if they deemed such necessary and in keeping with the mission they had come to perform."[65]

The message being implied by the sum total of Adamski's writing thus far is both subtle and disturbing, for what he is really doing is remaking and refashioning conventional religion, with its angels and messianic expectations and even its "apostolic mission" that the ETs "had come to perform", into a revelation of superior beings in possession of superior technologies with which they could perform miracles, "feats impossible to Earth men". Even the appearance of Adamski's "extraterrestrials" as human beings is all too reminiscent of the appearances of "angels" at various stages of the "disclosure" of the biblical revelations to Abraham, to Moses, and eventually, to the Virgin Mary. Just as in the biblical pattern, Adamski's "angels" or "messengers" appear as humans, bearing a message.[66]

Adamski, in other words, and despite the disregard and even bemused disdain in which he is held by contemporary ufology, is nonetheless implanting all the religious memes into ufology that will later become such subtle and dogmatic foundations in the extraterrestrial faith.

Thus, his initial and subsequent contacts even disclose the attempt to "catholicize" this extraterrestrial faith, for Adamski's Venusian "made me understand that people are coming Earthward from other planets in our system, and from planets of other systems beyond ours."[67] Among the specific planets that Adamski mentions as "parishes" in this extraterrestrial catholic religion, besides Venus, are Mars and Saturn.[68]

Earlier we noted the quasi-Masonic nature of the actual "contacts" themselves, with the exchanges of "secret handshakes" and coded words. But the resemblance is more than superficial, for in *Inside the Spaceships*, one of Adamski's extraterrestrial contacts delivers yet another short sermonette containing themes near and dear the teachings of fraternal secret societies: universal brotherhood and reincarnation:

> Never cease to point out to them, my son, that all are brothers and sisters regardless of where they have been born, or have chosen to live. Nationality or the colour of one's skin are but incidental since the body is no more than a temporary dwelling. These change in the eternity of time. In the infinite progress of all life, each eventually will know all states.[69]

This message of brotherhood and fraternity in the context of reincarnation is coupled elsewhere with another message, one with subtle undertones of its own. "Your school system on Earth," another extraterrestrial tells Adamski,

> is, in a sense, patterned after the universal progress of life. For in your schools you progress from grade to grade, and from school to school, toward a higher and fuller education. In the same war, man progresses from planet to planet, and from system to system towards an ever higher understanding and evolvement in universal growth and service.[70]

Note the extraordinary subtlety with which the idea of degrees of initiation into higher consciousness states —itself a theme of the secret societies - is outlined in this brief passage, and coupled to a very ancient religious idea, that of reincarnation *coupled with an association to celestial bodies.* But there is a darker undercurrent here, and that is the idea of "universal growth and service," which could equally be restated as "perpetual reincarnation and *servitude*." In other words, behind the seemingly friendly and fraternal messages of Adamski's visitors lies a much more occult agenda, an agenda hinted at, perhaps, by his associate George Hunt Williamson's connection to William Pelley.

Elsewhere, all these religious memes are given yet another twist, this time by a "Martian" who informs Adamski that:

> We live and work here…We have lived on your planet now for several years. At first we did have a slight accent. But that has been overcome and, as you can see, we are unrecognized as other than Earth men.
>
> At our work and in our leisure time we mingle with people here on Earth, never betraying the secret that we are inhabitants of other worlds. That would be dangerous, as you well know. We understand you people better than most of you know yourselves and can plainly see the reasons for many of the unhappy conditions that surround you.[71]

As has been seen, Adamski ascribes almost angelic and supernatural capabilities to his extraterrestrials, by dint both of their extraordinary technology as well as by dint of their moral and spiritual superiority. Now, he has added a new dimension, namely, that they constitute a *hidden elite*, a kind of extraterrestrial priesthood, living and moving among us and, presumably, spreading their messages and thus manipulating - socially engineering - mankind.

This twist, coupled with the meme of "universal growth and service," subtly suggests that mankind is meant to *serve* these extraterrestrial overlords.

c. The Revelation of the "Revelation", or "Disclosure", Meme

One of the most peculiar, and intriguing, things that Adamski mentions as a component of his initial contact with the Venusian is the idea of "the revelation of the possibility of revelation":

> Remembering a question that had often been asked of me by people with whom I had talked, I asked why they never land in populated places?
>
> To this he made me understand that there would be a tremendous amount of fear on the part of the people, and probably the visitors would be torn to pieces by the Earth people, if such public landings were attempted.
>
> I understood how right he was, and within my mind wondered if there ever would be a time when such a landing would be safe. I was wondering too, if such a time ever arrived, would they then attempt public landings.
>
> He read my thoughts as they were passing through my mind, and assured me that such a time would arrive. And when it did, they would make landings in populated territories. But he made me understand clearly that it would not be soon.[72]

Again, to my knowledge, this is one of the first times, if not *the* first time, that the idea of a future "disclosure" or "revelation" of the extraterrestrial presence is broached in UFO literature. It requires little imagination to see how widespread, and diversified, this "meme" has become within ufology in recent years, for it now encompasses not only the original idea of disclosure by the ETs themselves (acting in the place traditionally taken by God in conventional religion), but also disclosure by the various governments (taking the place of the teaching magisterium in conventional religions) presumably suppressing their presence, to disclosure of the hidden technologies presumably gained from extraterrestrial contacts.

d. The End of the Contact

Toward the end of his initial contact, Adamski's Venusian finally speaks in his native tongue (we can only presume that it is Old High Venusian), which, to Adamski, "sounded like a mixture of Chinese with a tongue that I felt could have sounded like one of the ancient languages spoken here on Earth."[73] With this, we have yet *another* meme that is being very carefully, and discretely, introduced for one of the first times, that of the connection of extraterrestrials (of human form) to human antiquity itself. Again, to my knowledge, Adamski was one of the first people writing in ufology to make this connection.[74]

3. The Memes of Adamski's Extraterrestrial Faith Summarized

At this juncture it is worth pausing to take stock of all the memes that have been enunciated by Adamski (or by his visitors, depending on one's point of view), and that will play such significant roles in subsequent ufology and in the wider cultural *perception of the subject* of UFOs. We may catalog these memes as follows:

> 1) Extraterrestrials are concerned with the human development of nuclear weapons, and view it as a threat to humanity and as an implied threat to themselves, and have thus been visiting Earth and even working among humans to reconnoiter the situation;
> 2) Extraterrestrials are a technologically and morally superior race of mankind (or in later ufology, an altogether different *species*);
> 3) The extraterrestrial meme is coupled with those of universal brotherhood, reincarnation, and planetary initiations;
> 4) Within this extraterrestrial Adamskian faith, all the patterns of conventional religion are stripped of their traditional religious vestments and updated with new technological and extraterrestrial trappings; old concepts have been dressed up in a new context;
> 5) Extraterrestrials—with all their superhuman technology and morality—constitute a hidden elite living and working amongst humanity (thus discretely inculcating a culture of *suspicion*);
> 6) Extraterrestrials constitute a "catholic" interplanetary federation, a kind of interplanetary Masonic "brotherhood" in which one's role is to be involved in "universal growth and service," a message implying *servitude to* the technologically and morally superior extraterrestrials, who, let it be noted, *can be identified solely by their*

possession of superior technology, a technology which they use to *emphasize their superior morality* and to subtly imply mankind's subservience;

7) Finally, it is revealed that eventually there will be a revelation, i.e., the meme of "disclosure" is discretely planted in and through the Adamski material.

When the Adamski "catalog of ufological memes" is viewed in this way, it is clear that while contemporary ufology has long ago foresworn any connection to or credence in Adamski's wild mythologies, it nonetheless remains true that the major *themes* of his mythology, many of which he enunciated for nearly the first time within ufology, have remained to take deep roots, and to spread wide branches, not only within the field of ufology, but within the wider culture perception of UFOs that it influences.

For these reasons alone, Adamski may not be so glibly dismissed as an embarassment to the subject. But there are also *other* reasons that he may not be so casually dismissed.

4. *Adzamski's Technological Descriptions and Another E.T. Message: The Danger of Weaponized Gravity*

Adamski is, of course, best known for his wild tales of extraterrestrial contact and visitation, but what many people do *not* realize is that Adamski also gave some descriptions of the technology of his alleged extraterrestrials. Here the plot, once again, is about to take yet another very unexpected turn, for during his first contact with the "Venusian," Adamski asked him how his ship operated and by what power it obtained its energy. When reading Adamski's description in the following exchange, bear in mind that the entire contact itself is deeply and seriously disputed by almost all respected voices within ufology:

> He made me understand that it was being operated by the law of attraction and repulsion, by picking up a little pebble or rock and dropping it; then picking it up again and then showing motion.
>
> I in turn, to make sure I understood, picked up two pebbles and placed them close to each other as though one was magnetic, pulling on the other, illustrating it that way as I spoke the word 'magnetic'. After a short time of doing this, he answered me; even repeating the word 'magnetic' which I had already spoken a number of times.

> Then he replied, ‘yes’.[75]

Being finally allowed near to the saucer as it began to depart, Adamski “noticed two rings under the flange around the centre disk. This inner ring and the outer one appeared to be revolving clockwise, while the ring between these two moved in a counter clockwise motion.”[76] This, by now, should ring a bell —pun intended[77]—for as I detail elsewhere in my books, the principle of counter-rotation was a primary conceptual component of the Nazi Bell project, though in the latter case the counter-rotating elements were not nested one inside the other, but were stacked one on top of the other.[78]

The important point to notice here, whether or not Adamski’s whole contact scenario actually occurred, or whether he made up the whole thing, or whether the truth lies somewhere between the two, is that Adamski somehow managed to hit upon the concept of rotation and counterrotation as being central to the configuration of anti-gravity propulsion systems, points that would not be raised in the scientific literature until some three decades later.[79] This is not the only case where Adamski displays an unusual and highly anachronistic knowledge, as we shall see shortly.

However, to return for the moment to Adamski’s descriptions of the technologies he allegedly saw, it was during his encounters recounted in *Inside the Spaceships* that he details more aspects of the “technology of the saucers”. Once inside one of the ships, Adamski

> …was aware of a very slight hum that seemed to come equally from beneath the floor and from a heavy coil that appeared to be built into the top of the circular wall. The moment the hum started, this coil began to glow bright red but emitted no heat.[80]

Note that the description of the technology here is anything but unusual, since he is describing a wholly conventional, terrestrial *coil*.

Nor was this all. Shortly after this coil began to glow, Adamski describes hearing a sound like “the soft hum as of a swarm of bees.”[81] Again, this is a very curious statement, since one of the nicknames the Germans had for their Bell project was *der Bienenstock*, the Beehive, so nicknamed because of the buzzing sound it made, like a swarm of bees![82] Yet, the Bell story would not emerge until decades later, in the 1990s, after the collapse of Communism and the German reunification.

A pole two feet in diameter ran from the top of the ship through the center of the floor, which Adamski was told was the "magnetic pole" of the craft. He was also told that the poles could be reversed.[83] This "rod of power" was anchored at each end by two structures that resembled "great lenses." [84] Here too one is confronted with an odd resemblance to the Nazi Bell device, which had on its central axis a pole, which could function as one pole of an electrical circuit, while the outer counter-rotating components acted as the other.[85] Elsewhere, a "Martian" tells Adamski that the "magnetic" power of all this technology acts in concert with the Earth's natural magnetic field.[86]

Putting all this together, Adamski's "space brothers" are describing the action of *rotating* fields within *static* ones, a description that sounds suspiciously like another celebrated but wholly *terrestrial* and conventional technology in the lore of "strange technology": the Philadelphia Experiment.[87]

Finally, to round out all these extraterrestrial explanations, one of Adamski's later visitors informs him that the "Space Brothers" would gladly reveal the secrets of gravity control, but that they do not do so for fear that humans will weaponize it and go on a mad spree of interplanetary conquest![88]

What emerges from this is not so much the bizarre nature of the technology described, but the fact that Adamski is describing it in a detail that has so many parallels with *later* actual formal papers and investigations,[89] and with the basic conceptual principles involved in a secret Nazi project that would only come to light four decades later, after German reunification. What is unusual therefore is the highly anachronistic nature of Adamski's descriptions, coupled with his earlier allusions to the Nazi "enemy".

How would one therefore account for this extraordinary accuracy in the midst of an otherwise goofy fantasy involving extraterrestrial contact, a fantasy that few—this author included—take at face value or as genuine?

5. A Doozie of an Anachronistic Revelation

Before one can begin to answer that question, there is a final anachronism that Adamski's *Inside the Spaceships* contains, and it's a doozie. While on his outing to the enormous mothership in orbit above the Earth, Adamski noticed a picture of an even larger ship, several miles long. He is told that "many such ships have been built," specifically, on Mars and Saturn![90]

What makes this so anachronistic is that the NASA Cassini probe—fifty years in the future from Adamski's bizarre statements!—would send back pictures of Saturn's moon Iapetus in the 21st century, pictures that strongly

suggested the entire moon was an artificial object.[91] Additionally, recent European Space Agency photos of Mars' moon Phobos has suggested to Richard Hoagland that this moon, too, might be an artificial object, and Soviet scientists proposed the same idea before Hoagland.[92]

If this is merely a coincidence, then it is the latest, and largest, in a long line of "coincidences" that Adamski racked up. How would one account for this?

Clearly, Adamski is getting information from somewhere, and since it is very unlikely that his contact stories are anything else other than fantasy, then where is the information coming from?

We have already seen his second-hand connection to the American Fascist William Pelley via George Hunt Williamson, suggesting that in part he may have been getting information directly from that quarter connected to esoteric and occult tradition. We have also seen Adamski's own suspicious connections to the American military, a connection initiated not by Adamski, but by the military. But why would the military share any such technological information, much less information about gigantic artificial spaceships from Saturn and Mars? One reason, perhaps, is to render such information *ridiculous* by embedding it in a context of contact lunacy, and doing so while implanting memes to manipulate the perception of that technology.

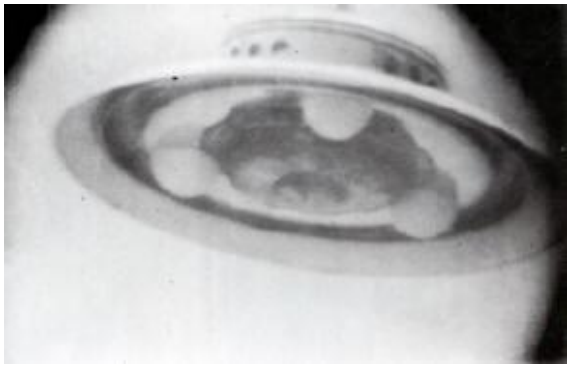
If, in other words, Adamski is part of some wider covert psychological operation, then *whose* operation is it, and what are its goals?

The answer to that question might be revealed in the final "Adamski Anomaly"…

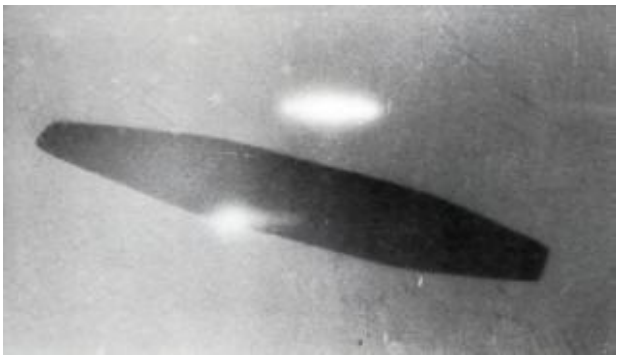
B. Adamski's Retro-Looking Saucers, and the Nazi Saucer Myth

A picture is indeed worth a thousand words, but in this case, several pictures are worth millions of words. Adamski's pictures of his alleged saucers are now well-known, if not infamous:

Adamski's Decidedly Retro-Looking Flying Saucer



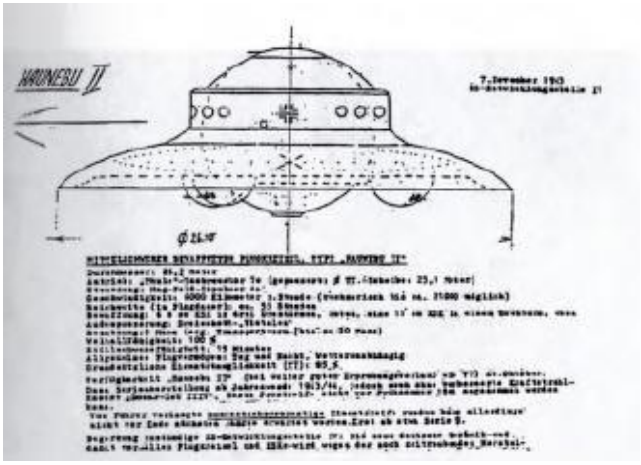
Underview of Adamski's Retro-Flying Saucer



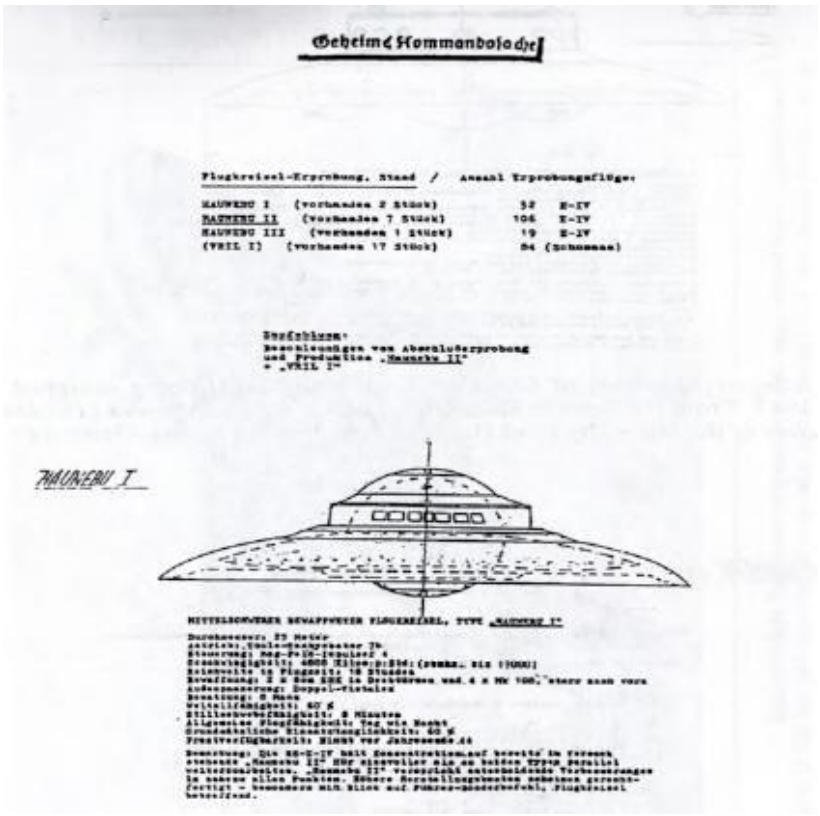
Adamski's Cigar-Shaped Mother-Ship

As is now maintained in some quarters, Adamski apparently fabricated these photos by taking picture of a heater for a chicken coup!

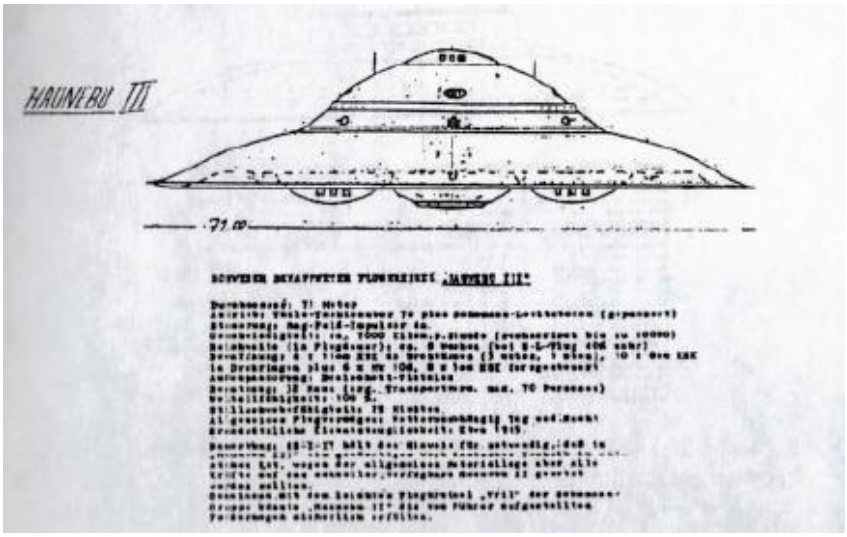
But the problem of Adamski's "flying saucers" is further compounded with the appearance in the 1960s of an alleged SS document showing three purported Nazi flying saucer designs called the Hannebu or Haunebu flying saucers, all of which, especially the first two "marks", looking distinctly like Adamski's saucer.



The Alleged SS Document, Showing the Purported Hannebu II



The Same Alleged SS Document Purporting to Show the Hannebu I Flying Saucer



From the Same Alleged SS Document, Showing the Purported Hannebu III Flying Saucer

The question is why would anyone circulate, several years after Adamski's faked photographs, documents that not only depict curiously similar "saucer" designs, but also that have such a dubious provenance? There are no other supporting documents, only postwar stories.

More importantly, how did the Nazis themselves react to these reports when queried? The answer is simple: "ET made us do it."

One of the Alleged Photos of the Hannebu Saucer that Purports to be "Proof" of their existence.

[1] Jacques Vallee. *Revelations: Alien Contact and Human Deception* (Ballantine Books 1991), p. 34.

[2] Greg Bishot, "My Bias Filter is Better than Your Bias Filter: or, Why I Like Contactees Better Than Abductees," *Wake Up Down There!: The* ***Excluded Middle*** *Collection*, ed. Gregory Bishop (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2000), p.24.

[3] George Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships* (George Adamski Foundation, 1955), p. 78

[4] George Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed* (George Adamski Foundation, 1995), pp. 215-231, 30-31.

[5] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 93.

[6] Ibid., p. 94.

[7] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 96.

[8] Ibid., pp. 94-95.

[9] Ibid., pp. 136-159

[10] Ibid., p. 135 ff.

[11] Ibid., p. 134.

[12] If so, I should be glad of any extraterrestrial "persuasion" to the nutty state governments of the USA, and also a recommendation for a good tobacconist, preferably one on this planet.

[13] Adamaski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 100.

[14] Ibid.

[15] Ibid.

[16] Ibid., p. 121.

[17] Even Adamski admitted the bizarre nature of his claims to have meet humans from Venus, Mars, and Saturn conflicted with what was known of the geographies and climates of those planets at that time, *See Inside the Spaceships*, p. 96.

[18] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, p. 9.

[19] Ibid.

[20] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*,, p. 11.

[21] Ibid., p. 10.

[22] Ibid.

[23] Ibid., emphasis added.

[24] Q.V. my *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection*, pp. 373-421.

[25] If the military was cloaking the possibly terrestrial origins for the technology displayed in these sightings, then the origins would have to be either from within an experimental American project, in which case the motivation would be simply to protect the technology concerned, or it would have to be from outside of America, in which case the motivation would be both technical *and political*, to deflect attention away from the potentially explosive political implications of the origins of such a technology outside of America, but from somewhere else on Earth.

[26] For the best discussion of the Bennewitz affair, see Greg Bishop, *Project Beta: The Story of Paul Bennewitz, National Security, and the Creation of a Modern UFO Myth* (New York: Paraview Pocket Books, 2005). See especially pp. 154-198.

[27] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, p. 11

[28] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, p. 12-13.

[29] Ibid., p. 14.

[30] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*,, p. 15.

[31] Ibid.

[32] Ibid., p. 18.

[33] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, p. 17.

[34] Ibid.

[35] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, p. 21, emphasis added.

[36] See Nick Cook, *The Hunt For Zero Point* (London: Century, 2001), pp. 1-3.

[37] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, p. 23.

[38] Ibid., p. 24.

[39] Ibid., pp. 23-24.

[40] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, pp. 26-27.

[41] Ibid., p. 28.

[42] Ibid., pp. 28-29.

[43] Ibid.,pp. 29-30.

[44] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, pp. 30-31.

[45] Ibid., p. 31.

[46] Ibid.

[47] Ibid., p. 32.

[48] Ibid.

[49] "George Hunt Williamson," *Wikipedia* http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/ George_Hunt_Williamson, p. 1.

[50] Idid.

[51] "William Dudley Pelley, Wikipedia, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/william_Dudley_Pelley, p. 1.

[52] Ibid., p. 2.

[53] Ibid.

[54] Ibid.

[55] Ibid.

[56] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, pp. 32-33.

[57] Ibid., p. 33.

[58] Ibid.

[59] Ibid.

[60] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 161.

[61] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, pp. 35-36.

[62] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*,, p. 36.

[63] Ibid.

[64] Ibid.,p. 39.

[65] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 98.

[66] Q.v. the foreword to Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 86

[67] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, p. 39.

[68] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 95.

[69] Ibid., p. 207.

[70] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 139.

[71] Ibid., p. 96.

[72] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, p. 40.

[73] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, p. 43.

[74] The other one to do so, three years later though much more explicitly, was Dr. Morris K. Jessup, who connected UFOs to other "Fortean" phenomena, in *The Case for the UFO: Unidentified Flying Objects* (New York: The Citadel Press, 1955), p. 23.

[75] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, p. 38.

[76] Adamski, *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, pp. 47-48.

[77] It should also remind the reader of the disks of British inventor John Searl.

[78] Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 171-185; and *Secrets of the Unified Field*, pp. 270-286.

[79] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Giza Death Star Destroyed*, pp. 163-166; and *The Philosophers' Stone*, pp. 99-101, 313-329. It should be pointed out that the German physicist Burkhardt Heim had begun to elabiorate his theory at about the same time as Adamski was writing *Flying Saucers Have Landed*, in which rotation is an element. However, it is unlikely that Adamski knew of Heim *or* his theory. The question thus remains, where was Adamski getting his knowledge?

In this Foreword to *Inside the Space ships*, Desmond Leslie, yet another famous contactee, and notable occutist, of the 1950s maintained that some UFO witnesses who had had close encounters with the technology, described a forcefied emanating from them that would "flatten the grass" and set the witness "back on his heels." (Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 87). Similar effects were reported by some of the first responders on the ground in New York City during 9/11; moreover, as Dr. Paul LaViolette has demonstrated in his recent book *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology* (Bear & Co., 2008), microwaves were being explored as a means of advanced propulsion (q.v. pp. 195-200, 203, 206-209, 235, 284-285, 445). Some of these ideas were being discussed in the 1950s, more or less contemporaneously with Leslie's witnesses who described such forcefields. Use of such intense microwaves might indeed be experienced as something pushing a witness away, but are more likely to be experienced as intense *heat* (if the person encountering them actually survived.)

[80] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 101.

[81] Ibid., p. 102.

[82] Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, p. 177.

[83] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 102.

[84] Ibid., p. 167.

[85] Farrell, *Secrets of the Unified Field*, pp. 262-288.

[86] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, pp. 107-108.

[87] Farrell, *Secrets of the Unified Field*. pp. 73, 165-190.

[88] Adamski, *Inside the Spaceships*, p. 140.

[89] We shall examine some of these papers an technologies subsequently.

[90] Adamski, op. cit., p. 121.

[91] Q.v. Joseph P. Farrell, *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warface, Modern Physics, and Ancient Text* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 385-398.

[92] Richard C. Hoagland, "For the World is Hollow and I have Touched the Sky," www.enterprisemission.com.

Part Two:
Swastikas and Psyops:
A Pattern of Magical Deception

"If you tell a big enough He and tell it frequently enough, it will be believed."

"What luck for rulers that men do not think."

"Great liars are also great magicians." Adolf Hitler

"The man who does not think for himself, does not think at all."

Oscar Wilde

SS Obersturmbannführer (Lieutenant Colonel) Otto Skorzeny

3
"E.T. Made Us Do it": The Postwar Statements of Nazis

"Call him a Nazi,
He won't even frown;
'Ha! Nazi schmazi!'
Says Wernher Von Braun."
Tom Lehrer[1]

There can be no doubt that within the thankfully short twelve years of its proclaimed millennial existence that technology exploded in the Third Reich to a depth and breadth that was never seen before or since. As Nazi armies rolled over Europe expanding the boundaries of the Greater German Reich, Nazi scientists and engineers were rolling back the frontiers of the technological imagination. Major accomplishments and breakthroughs were made in the field of electronics miniaturization, computers, semi-conductors, infrared night-vision, fuel-air explosives, jets, rockets, electromagnetic weapons, lasers and associated technologies, atomic, thermonuclear, and plasma physics and engineering, ballistic missiles and field propulsion, and a whole host of other things that boggle the imagination.

The most breathtaking visible displays of this scientific and engineering prowess were those projects that took conventional technologies to the extreme: the ballistic missiles and rockets raining destruction down on London and other western European cities, the advanced aerodynes, including designs which, though conceived and in some cases built in the 1930s and 1940s, look breathtakingly modern to this day.

How did one account for all this sudden and rapid explosion of technology? Even more importantly, how did the German scientists themselves account for it? And what, if anything, does it have to do with the odd, anomalous anachronisms that seem to turn up in Adamski's writing at almost every turn?

The answer to those questions brings us, inevitably, to the postwar statements of the Nazis themselves, and in particular to…

A. The Strange Case of Dr. Hermann Oberth: A Benign Biography

If one were to consult only the bibliographies of Dr. Oberth publicly available and and online, *Wikipedia*, for example, one would not have a full appreciation of the measure of the man, for those biographies are, for the most part, benign. One is even tempted to say, sanitized. We would learn, for example, the usual commonplaces: he was born in 1894 at Nagszeben in the Austro-Hungarian empire, died at the age of 95 in December of 1989. Reading the science fiction of Jules Verne, he began to experiment with rockets when he was only 14; began to study medicine in Munich but was drafted into the Kaiser's army when World War One broke out; served on the Eastern front, married in 1918 and had four children.[2]

In the 1920s, Oberth published two works on the use of rocketry in space exploration, *Die Rakete zu den Planetenraumen* (1922—*By Rocket into Planetary Space*), and an expanded version in 1929,*Wege zum Raumschiffahrt* (*Ways to Spaceflight*). Awarded his doctorate in physics in 1923 by the University of Cluj, Romania, Oberth also worked in Berlin during 1928 and 1929 as a consultant for the first science fiction feature film, designing the moon rocket for *Frau im Mond* (*The Woman in the Moon*), the famous science fiction film director Fritz Lang's futuristic vision set in space.[3]

In 1929 Oberth also designed and test fired a rocket with the young Wenher Von Braun, thus beginning a lifelong friendship between the two men based on their mutual designs and obsession with space exploration. Indeed, Von Braun's own praise and indications of Oberth's vast influence was effusive:

> Hermannn Oberth was the first, who when thinking about the possibility of spaceships grabbed a slide-rule and presented mathematically analyzed concepts and designs… I, myself, owe to him not only the guiding star of my life, but also my first contact with the theoretical and practical aspects of rocketry and space travel. A place of honor should be reserved in the history of science and technology for his ground-breaking contributions in the field of astronautics.[4]

By 1938 Oberth had moved his family from Romania to Austria and then to Nazi Germany, eventually becoming a member of Von Braun's secret rocket team at Peenemunde in 1941. In 1955 Oberth was personally sought and brought by his former friend in Nazi Germany, Wernher Von Braun, to

Huntsville, Alabama, where he remained for three years, contributing to the study *The Development of Space Technology in the Next Ten Years*, returning to West Germany in 1958, where "he published his ideas on a lunar exploration vehicle, a 'lunar catapult,' and on 'muffled' helicopters and airplanes."[5] In 1960 he returned to work as a consultant for the Convair Corporation which was engaged in producing the U.S.A.'s first strategic intercontinental ballistic missile, the Atlas, the very same vehicle that would become the booster for America's first manned space flights in Project Mercury.

But as the *Wikipedia* article hints, there is more to Dr. Oberth than meets the eye:

> The science-fiction movie *Star Trek III: The Search for Spock* mentions the *Oberth*-class of starships hypothetically to be in his honor. Later on, this same class of starships is mentioned in several episodes of the American TV series *Star Trek: the Next Generation*.
>
> *Fullmetal Alchemist the Movie: Conqueror of Shamballa* features Hermann Oberth as the "teacher" of the movie's protagonist, Edward Elric. Oberth is also mentioned in the last episode of the TV series *Fullmetal Alchemist*. In this episode, Elric has heard of a great scientist, named "Oberth", with curious theories.[6]

Just how curious these theories really are we shall now see, for they are a bizarre amalgam of extra-terrestrials, advanced technologies… and the occult.

B. Dr. Oberth's and Dr. Von Braun's Statements on UFOs and Extraterrestrials

By the mid-1950s, various American leaders had already gone on record with their belief that UFOs were the products of an advanced extraterrestrial technology. The well-known Ufologist Timothy Good, for example, mentions a famous statement by U.S. General of the Armies, Douglas MacArthur, who was involved in the establishment of an early UFO study group called the Interplanetary Phenomenon Unit, a division of the U.S. Army's counterintelligence. Speaking in 1955, General MacArthur made a rather astonishing statement:

> The nations of the world will have to unite, for the next war will be an interplanetary war. The nations of the earth must someday make a

> common front against attack by people from other planets.[7]

What is unusual here is that MacArthur's public statement clearly contradicts the findings of the CIA's 1953 Robertson Panel on UFOs, which had concluded that UFOs were not a national security threat.[8]

> Four years later, after General MacArthur had made his celebrated farewell—and—"oh-by-the-way-we're-facing-an-interplanetary-war"—speech to the cadets of West Point, U.S. Project Paperclip Nazi rocket scientist Wernher Von Braun made yet another curious statement on January 1, 1959,[9] alluding to some sort of "difficulty"—if not outright conflict—in outer space after an American *Juno* 2 rocket had been deflected from orbit:
>
> We find ourselves faced by powers which are far stronger than we had hitherto assumed, and whose base is at present unknown to us. More I cannot say at present. **We are now engaged in entering into closer contact with those powers**, and in six or nine months' time it may be possible to speak with more precision on the matter.[10]

Notably Von Braun, like MacArthur, did not refer in so many words to "extraterrestrials" but simply to "powers which are far stronger than we had hitherto assumed," leaving open the possibility that he meant something concerning *physical* forces. He alludes to an "unknown base" however, and indicates that "contact" is being attempted.

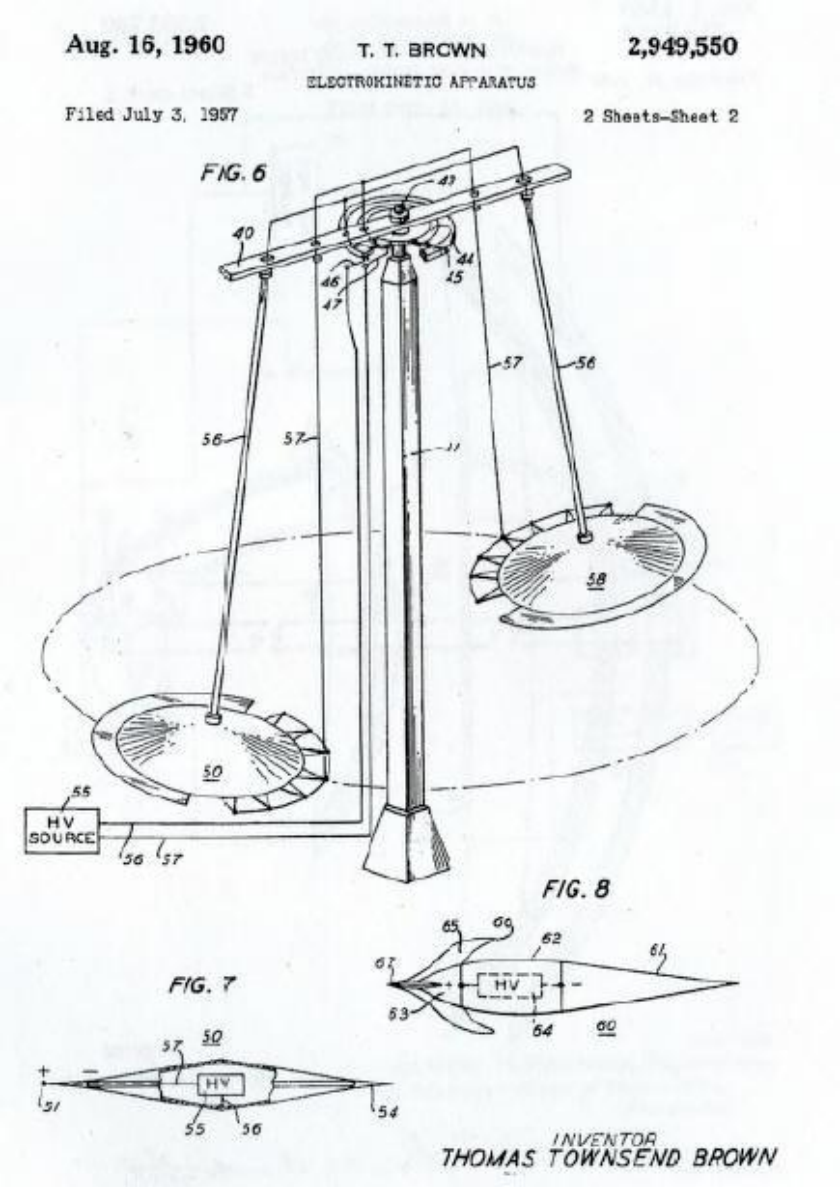
Into this MacArthurian mix of "people"—the *general's* word, not mine—attacking the earth, and Von Braun's "unknown base" and "powers far stronger than we had hitherto assumed," stepped Von Braun's mentor, Dr. Hermann Oberth, with even more curious statements. Answering questions in 1968 about the UFO phenomenon, Dr. Oberth stated the following:

> …*today we cannot produce machines that fly as UFOs do*. They are flying by means of artificial fields of gravity. This would explain the sudden changes of directions… This hypothesis would also explain the piling up of these disks into a cylindrical or cigar-shaped mothership upon leaving the earth, because in this fashion only one field of gravity would be required for all disks.
>
> *They produce high-tension electric charges in order to push the air out of their path… and strong magnetic fields to influence the ionised air at higher altitudes…* This would explain their

> luminosity… Secondly, it would explain the noiselessness of UFO flight. Finally, this assumption also explains the strong electrical and magnetic effects sometimes, but not always, observed in the vicinity of UFOs.[11]

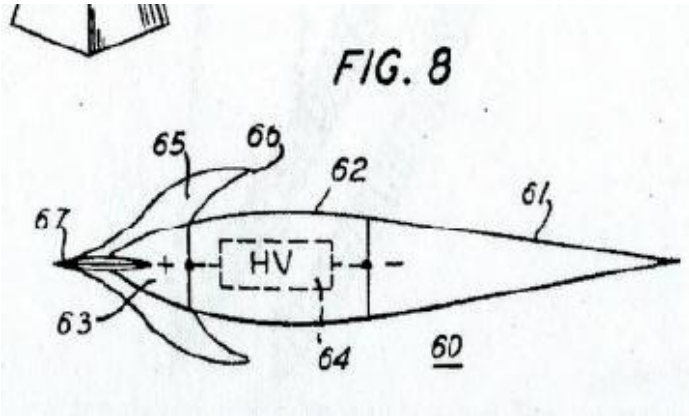
There are a number of disturbing things about these statements, if one reads them closely, not the least of these is Dr. Oberth's statements regarding using high-tension (i.e., high voltage) electric charges to ionize the air and decrease drag.

This is significant because this *very idea* had already been proposed by American physicist Thomas Townsend Brown in the mid-1950s in a patent utilizing "electro-gravitic" effects to decrease drag, improve fuel efficiency, and thereby the range, of conventional aircraft, and patented in 1960:



Thomas Townsend Brown, U.S. Patent # 2,949,550

Note the diagram, Figure 8, in the lower right hand corner:



Close-up of Figure 8, Thomas Townsend Brown U.S. Patent 2,949,550

Note on the left hand side of the disk-shaped capacitor, the leading edge is positively-charged, with the trailing edge negatively charged, setting up a charge differential which accounts for the motivation of this "electro-kinetic apparatus." And note on the previous page that this is hooked up to a "H.V. Source," a high voltage, or, in Dr. Oberth's terms, a high tension source. While the connection to Thomas Townsend Brown is fascinating, we must reserve comment on it to a later chapter, for as we shall discover, there is yet another odd connection to Adamski

For the moment, however, our attention remains focused on Dr. Oberth, for he is describing a wholly terrestrial technology in his UFO remarks, one already patented in 1960, and this suggests in turn that the beginning of his remarks—"…*today we cannot produce machines that fly as UFOs do*. They are flying by means of artificial fields of gravity…"—he has seen the connection to anti-gravity. At the minimum, then, the possibility arises that Dr. Oberth was being deliberately disingenuous in his remarks.

But is there anything *more direct* that would conclusively demonstrate that he *was* being disingenuous?

There is another remark Dr. Oberth allegedly made shortly after his first period in the USA that is reported by Ufologist Fred Steckling. Though I have not been able to verify this quotation, it is worth mentioning here as it is consonant with his later verified remarks concerning his belief that UFOs were extraterrestrial in origin. According to Steckling, upon his retirement from Bell Laboratories, Dr Obert stated to the press, "Gentlemen, we cannot take all the credit for our civilization's rapid technological development over the past decade. We have had help." When he was asked just who had helped us, Dr Oberth reportedly responded, "Those guys out there from the other planets."[12]

Steckling noted the anomaly apparent in these remarks: “This statement quickly earned the good professor the honorable title of ‘crack-pot.’ However, the people responsible for his promotion never explained exactly how it is possible for a top scientist to turn crackpot overnight.”[13] But perhaps Oberth was not being a “crack pot.”

We have already noted his curious description of technologies first advanced by the physicist Thomas Townsend Brown. Additionally, his former student, Dr. Wernher Von Braun, responsible for bringing Oberth to this country in the first place, was himself involved at some point in high level, and very classified, antigravity research, for as I pointed out in *Secrets of the Unified Field*, he was very likely one of those who received a copy of the annotated Varo edition of Dr. Morris Jessup’s book on UFOs, the edition that outlined a connection to the Philadelphia Experiment.[14]

Before proceeding with a closer look at Dr. Oberth, it is also worth comparing his, with Von Braun’s, remarks. In Von Braun’s case, it is worth noting that they are very carefully phrased. Nowhere does he allude to extraterrestrials, but simply to “powers” far “stronger” than “us,” and operating from some unknown base. It is thus possible to construe his remarks as referring to some unknown *human power*, and to construe that power has possessing a secret base of operations either on, or off, this world. It is equally possible to construe Von Braun’s remarks is indicating an *extraterrestrial* power, again, with a secret base of operations either on or off this world.

But Dr. Oberth’s remarks contain no such ambiguity, for he clearly attributes UFO activity to extraterrestrials, albeit in a context that leads not to extraterrestrial technology but to terrestrial ones. Nonetheless, for anyone following the story, and the connections between the two men dating back to their work on Hitler’s rockets, the meaning was clear: *Dr Oberth’s remarks were the “context” in which Von Braun’s remarks were to be interpreted*. In short, we may be looking at a psychological warfare operation. That this is the probable case is revealed when one recalls just exactly what projects Dr. Oberth was associated with in Nazi Germany.

C. Dr. Oberth’s Background in Nazi Germany

This context strongly suggests that Dr. Oberth, if not deliberately lying, was at least misdirecting attention to extraterrestrials in the face of scientific principles that were already being investigated—quietly to be sure—in American aerospace projects. But there is another context in which his

remarks must be viewed: his known involvement in occult belief, and his known connection to the Nazi Bell project and its reported anti-gravity effects. This is where the story begins to get very murky.

Igor Witkowski observed that Dr. Oberth was somehow involved in two curious activities in Nazi Germany: the super-secret Bell project, and occultism:

> In the files of the "Paperclip" project I also found the personal files of several other interesting scientists, but there was no information of any particular value. I began from Professor Hermann Oberth… Immediately after the war a document was discovered in some buildings in Sroda Slaska, on which his name appeared. It referred to a delegation of several scientists, who had arrived from Prague, stopped on the way in Wroclaw/Breslau and Sroda Slaska/Neumarkt (3 days) and then made their way to Torgau. The business trip took place between 15.IX-25.IX.1944 and consisted of the following individuals: Professor Hermann Oberth, Herbert Jensen, Dr. Edward Tholen, Dr. Elizabeth Adler, and two others, whose names are illegible. The importance of this information lies in the fact that Hermann Oberth was the most outstanding specialist in the world engaged in space flight theory, with a far superior authority than that of the young von Braun (at that time 32). In short he represented a potential, which is undoubtedly not wasted, particularly when a rocket programme was being put into effect, projecting several decades into the future. …(This) information reveals to us a certain unusual and significant fact—significant for the work being carried out.*Namely that in principle it is unknown what Prof. Oberth was engaged in during the war*. One could have the impression that this is some kind of light at the end of the tunnel, which until now has been cloaked in the darkness of night. *After all it is known for sure that Oberth was not connected with the centre in Peenemunde since in this case he would have undoubtedly held at least one of the positions of command*, in other words the fact of his engagement would have been known (thousands of specialists employed there worked after the war in other countries, from the USA and USSR to even Egypt and so is out of the question that a possible secret of this kind could not be kept hidden). *So it seems that some kind of alternative program had existed, being carried out for a long time,*

> *and quite a serious one at that. This is indicated even by (the) fact alone of there being a lack of information on the wartime work of Oberth…. A certain curiosity is represented by the fact that he was interested in… occultism…* It seems that the Americans were not interested in Oberth due to his purely theoretical pre-war analyses, but for altogether more specific reasons. It looks after all like it had been attempted to recreate the former (Bell) research team—the information about Jensen probably came from Oberth, since it was found in his personal file.[15]

Notice now, what we have:

> 1) Dr. Oberth was indeed connected to Von Braun in Nazi Germany;
> 2) But Dr. Oberth's connections to its wartime research are more directly tied to the super-secret Bell project—*a project with obvious antigravity implications*—than to the more "public" rocket program of Von Braun;
> 3) Dr. Oberth also has an interest in the occult, a fact that may have had something to do with the Bell project's codenames reflecting, in part, an occult influence.[16]

What this quite plainly means, is that *long before Oberth came to the U.S.A. and made his "Extraterrestrial diagnosis" of the UFO phenomenon, he was clearly involved in a very terrestrial project with explicit ant-gravity capability and potentials.*

In other words, when Dr. Oberth was waxing lyrical about intelligences from beyond the solar system, he was *obfuscating at best, or lying at worst.*

If this is so, then this implies in turn that he was under some sort of orders as part of a larger psychological operation.

The question now becomes, why was he lying, and under whose orders was he doing so? Or to put it differently, *when, where, how, and for what reasons, did the idea of coupling antigravity technology to psychological operations first begin*? Thus far, all the evidence points to Nazi Germany, but we still need more solid proof.

For that, we shall have to consider, in the next chapter, the actual Nazi flying saucer mythology, and some curious statements of Hitler's favorite commando in chapter four. Dr Hermann Oberth

Dr Hermann Oberth

Dr. Wernher Von Braun

[1] "Wernher Von Braun," song and lyrics by Tom Lehrer, *That Was the Year That Was*, Reprise Records (Time Warner, 1965).

[2] "Hermann Oberth," *Wikipedia*, en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hermann_Oberth.

[3] Ibid.

[4] Ibid., citing http://oberth-museum.org/index_e.html.

[5] "Hermann Oberth," *Wikipedia*, en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hermann_Oberth.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Cited in Timothy Good, *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-up* (New York: Quill Books, William Morrow, 1988), p. 267, citing MacArthur's speech in October 1955 to the graduating cadets of West Point. There may be another connection between the American elite and extreme right wing Fascism, for MacArthur was the first choice to lead the coup against Franklin Roosevelt that ultimately was disclosed to General Smedley Butler. Butler implicated MacArthur himself in the plot. See Charles Higham, *Trading with the Enemy* (Authors Guild Bacinprint.com, 2007), p. 164.

[8] See Richard M. Dolan, *Ufos and the National Security State: Chronology of a Cover-Up, 1941-1973* (Hampton Roads, 2000), p. 125.

[9] Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State: Vol 1: Chronology of a Cover-up 1941-1973* (Hampton Roads Publishing Company, 2002), p. 225.

[10] Good, *Above Top Secret*, p. 370, citing *Neues Europa*, 1 January 1959, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis added by Good. See also Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State: Vol 1: Chronology of a Cover-up 1941-1973*, p. 225. Dolan gives more information about Oberth's statements in the first volume in his excellent two volume study of UFOs:

"Around 1952 or 1954, according to Frank Edwards, the West German government hired him to head a commission studying UFOs. *As a result of this study, Oberth had made a statement, during the summer of 1954, that UFOs were 'conceived and directed by intelligent beings of a very high order. They probably do not originate in our solar system, perhaps not even in our galaxy*.' Like William Lear, Townsend Brown, and Wilbert Smith, Oberth decided that UFOs were 'propelled by distorting the gravitational field, converting gravity into useable energy.'

"In a letter to Keyhoe, Oberth explained his electromagnetic propulsion theory which he believed as the true explanation for UFO propulsion. With the ability to create their own gravitational fields, UFOs would be able to do all the things witesses had attributed to them: hover motionless above the earth, accelerate at tremendous speed, and make violent turns that would cause ordinary aircraft to disintegrate." (Richard M. Dolan, *UFOs and the National Security State, Vol 1: Chronology of a Cover-up 1941-1973*, p. 176, emphasis added)

[11] Good, *Above Top Secret*, p. 370, emphasis added, citing, Sigma Rho, "Dr. Hermann Oberth Looks at UFOs," *Fate*, December 1968, pp. 45-47, emphasis added by me.

[12] Fred Steckling, *We Found Alien Bases on the Moon: II* (George Adamski Foundation, 1981), p. 144. While Steckling is to be questioned for many of his more bizarre ideas about the Moon, it should be noted that Steckling was one of the first and earliest people to point out anomalies in NASA photographs of the Moon that might indicate artificial structures.

[13] Ibid.

[14] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 292-296.

[15] Igor WItkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, pp. 258-260, emphases added.

[16] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 166-167.

4
The Nazi UFO Mythos: Hannebu, Vril, And the Suction Saucers

"Prior to 1950, no claim was made of any successful flight by high performance circular or spherical aircraft in Germany during the war." Andy Roberts Brigantia[1]

We have seen the traces of a possible psychological operation at work in George Adamski, and clear indications that Drs. Von Braun and Oberth were not being entirely truthful with respect to their opinions that UFOs were extraterrestrial craft, especially given Oberth's status as a member of the Bell project. However, there is another suggestion—perhaps the strongest of them all—of a psychological operation at work with respect to the Nazis, and that is the Nazi UFO mythos itself, and its incredible persistence notwithstanding a paucity of "evidence" in favor of it.

This difficulty is compounded by the fact that, within that mythos, we are dealing with two very different claims, namely, that

> 1] the Nazis developed circular, disk-shaped craft that were essentially advanced forms of jet aircraft, with vectored exhausts; and,
> 2] the Nazis developed advanced field propulsion saucers—the infamous Hannebu and Vril craft, or the so-called *Jehnseitsflugzeug*,[2]—that far eclipsed Allied and Soviet technology for decades to come. Within this component of the Nazi mythos, no mention was ever made of anything remotely resembling the Nazi Bell Project, which, as I have stated elsewhere, I believe to be the kernel or core truth to this component of the mythos.[3]

We are confronted by yet another difficulty as well, and that is the fact that there is an historical "gap" between the end of the Second World War in Europe, and the first appearance of the allegations of Nazi flying saucers in the early 1950s. In this, as we shall argue in this chapter, there is a profound clue that we are dealing with a psychological operation designed both to obfuscate the actual core truth—the Bell project—and to confuse the enemy, the Soviet Union, with claims of advanced technology that fell into Allied hands.

A. The Problematic of the Historical Gap
1. The Basic Elements of the Mythos
a. The Belluzo Allegations

Researcher Kevin McClure has been one of the foremost, and most capable, researchers to challenge the two components of the Nazi UFO mythos, in an excellent online article entitled "The Nazi UFO Mythos: An Investigation."[4] Indeed, for its concision and for the rich details it provides, it is also the best introduction to the subject. McClure notes that

> *The earliest claim by an individual of the construction of a wartime flying disk was made by Guiseppe Belluzzo on or around March 27 1950*, at a time when there had been a number of flying saucer reports in the Italian media, and European interest in the subject was high. On that date the Italian newspaper 'Il Mattino dell'Italia Centrale' published, with a vague and uninformative line-drawing as illustration, Belluzzo's apparent claim that circular aircraft had been developed since 1942, first in Italy, and then in Germany. The Italian idea was, supposedly, developed by the Germans in North-East Norway. The story also appeared in 'Il Corriere della Sera', 'La Nazione', and 'La Gazzetta del Popolo', and, in 'Il Corriere d'Informazione' of March 29-30 1950, with a comment by a General Ranza of the Italian Air Force dismissing Belluzzo's claims. It seems that Belluzzo did not claim that the disc flew during the war but that, by 1950, it had been sufficiently developed to deliver an atom bomb. This development was said to be some 10 metres wide, constructed with very light materials, and unmanned.
>
> *We know something of Belluzzo's background and competence. Verga notes that he lived from November 25 1876 to May 21 1952, and was a turbine expert who published nearly fifty technical books.* He was elected to the pre-war Fascist parliament, and from 1925 to 1928 served as Minister of the National Economy. I have traced a listing for a book of his - on turbines - full of technical drawings and translated into English in 1926. It is quite feasible that he could have contributed to a range of technological projects, but it seems that he never claimed to have built a flying disc, nor to have named those who worked with the Germans in Norway. *As in all such reports, no*

> *viable propulsion, launch, lift, flight, control or landing data is provided*, and the criteria for publication seems to have been that the object should resemble the flying saucers which, as ever, had caught the media's attention.
>
> It is quite possible that a former Fascist minister would be happy to seek a little belated glory for his nation and his regime, but for all of the later interpretations of his role in the history of Nazi UFOs his claims were very limited, and *so far as the assertion of a design for a reasonably-sized, unmanned flying disc was concerned, they are neither unique nor implausible. Belluzzo may, in part at least, have been telling the truth.*[5]

Note the highlighted points, for they bear both on McClure's skeptical assessment of the mythos, and upon our own critique of the skeptics, and our hypothesis that the mythos may represent a psyop:

> 1] The first claim for the development of a Nazi flying saucer is made in 1950;
> 2] The claim comes, not from an Nazi, neo-Nazi, or German source, but from a former member of Mussolini's Fascist government in Italy;
> 3] Belluzo—whose name is altered in subsequent reports to Bellonzo—was indeed a turbine expert, and thus, a logical candidate to be involved in the development of jet powereed saucers;
> 4] Belluzo provides no significant details regarding the technological aspects of the alleged research, beyond providing enough information to satisfy even skeptic McClure that the design "for a reasonably-sized, unmanned flying disc" was "neither unique nor implausible," and that thus "Belluzo may, in part at least, have been telling the truth."

This last point is an astonishing admission, for the core of the Nazi saucer mythos is that, in fact, the first prototypical developments were not of field propulsion craft, but of suction turbine—jet—craft with vectored exhausts.

b. The Schriever Allegations in Der Spiegel(The Mirror)

Belluzo made his statements in Italy on March 27, 1950, and these statements were followed a mere three days later, on March 30, 1950, with the

first claims for the Nazi development of such a craft coming from a German source, *Flugkapitän* Rudolf Schriever. Schriever in effect made similar claims to Belluzo, claiming "only that he had developed blueprints,"[6] but again, the article "lacked any technical meaningful technical information"[7] to allow one to assess their veracity by "reverse engineering" the concepts involved.

c. Dr Richard Miethe

After these initial reports, claims of Nazi flying saucers died down until 1952, when once again the claims surfaced, this time by a "Dr. Richard Miethe", which appeared on June 7, 1952, in *France-Soir*.[8] According to this article, Miethe stated that he was 40 years old, "and claims that he built a flying saucer—the V7 which he built in 1944, the motors of which the Russians found at Breslau."[9] This is a crucial point that we shall return to subsequently, namely, that the Russians recovered some of the actual technical components, and in some versions of the mythos, some of the documentation and technicians involved.

More importantly, Schriever explicitly mentioned that he had been a member of the team of former German military and SS officers and engineers sent to Egypt after the overthrow of King Farouk, where he claimed "he had been working with others to reconstruct the engine with which his earlier flying disc had been powered. The trigger for the expulsion may have been a breakdown in diplomatic relations between (West] Germany and Egypt."[10] These assertions pose some problems, partially because they have the ring of truth, and partially because the overthrow of King Farouk that brought in the former German Wehrmacht and SS officers and engineers occurred on July 23, 1952, and yet Miethe's interview occurred the previous month, prior to the coup, and, as far as we know, prior to the injection of German military personnel and scientists into Egypt in the wake of the coup! Miethe's statements, in other words, suggest that this injection was secretly underway prior to the coup and that, in fact, there was on-the-ground Nazi presence in Egypt prior to the coup, which was used in the coup itself.

Yet, the first component of Miethe's interview with *France-Soir* rings true, for as I have documented elsewhere, the West German government, under the auspices of the CIA-sponsored coup, brought in military advisors and engineers precisely to work on missiles for Egypt for use against the newly-established state of Israel.[11] Even here, however, there is a problem, for why would Miethe, who—if one is to take the article at face value—had been

working for Egypt, subsequently make his way to Israel, the hated enemy of the Nazis? The only explanation that seems plausible is that the Israelis "made him an offer that he could not refuse."

d. George Klein and Habermohl

Besides Miethe, the only alleged eyewitness to the Nazi flying saucers was one Georg Klein, who supposedly saw the test flight of the disk Schriever claimed to have built. There is, in fact, a CIA report of May 27, 1954, that states:

> A German newspaper (not further identified] recently published an interview with George Klein, famous German engineer and aircraft expert, describing the experimental construction of 'flying saucers' carried out by him from 1941 to 1945. Klein stated that he was present when, in 1945, the first piloted 'flying saucer' took off and reached a speed of 1,3000 miles per hour within 3 minutes. The experiments resulted in three designs: one designed by Miethe was a disc-shaped aircraft, 135 feet in diameter, which did not rotate; another designed by Habermohl and Schriever, consisted of a large rotating ring, in the centre of which was a round, stationary cabin for the crew. When the Soviets occupied Prague, the Germans destroyed every trace of the 'flying saucer' project and nothing more was heard of Habermohl and his assistants.[12]

McClure goes on to observe that "The German newspaper appears to have been *Welt am Sonntag* for (different dates are given] April 25 or 26 1953. The article is titled "Erste 'Flugscheibe' flog 1945 in Prag", and there is a photo of 'George Klein' pointing at the same vague diagram that Lusar reprints."[13] As McClure also notes, this is the first, and only verifiable, mention of the name of Habermohl in connection with the alleged development of Nazi flying saucers.[14]

e. Major Rudolf Lusar

We come at last to the name that did so much to spread the Nazi UFO mythos: Luftwaffe Major Rudolf Lusar, and his book, first published in 1959 in the United Kingdom. Here all the elements of the Nazi UFO mythos were gathered and summarized, and we italicize the portions of Lusar's text—cited in full by McClure—that shall concern us here:

> Flying saucers have been whirling round the world since 1947, suddenly turning up here and there, *soaring in and darting off again at unprecedented speed with flames encircling the rim of the saucer's disc.* They have been located by radar, pursued by fighters and yet nobody has so far succeeded in establishing the existence of such a 'flying saucer' or managed to ram or shoot one down. The public, even the experts, are perplexed by an ostensible mystery or a technical miracle. But *slowly the truth is coming out that even during the war German research workers and scientists made the first moves in the direction of these "flying saucers". They built and tested such near-miraculous contraptions.* Experts and collaborators in this work confirm that the first projects, called "flying discs", were undertaken in 1941. *The designs for these "flying discs" were drawn up by the German experts Schriever, Habermohl and Miethe, and the Italian Bellonzo. Habermohl and Schriever chose a wide-surface ring which rotated round a fixed, cupola-shaped cockpit. The ring consisted of adjustable wing-discs which could be brought into appropriate position for the take-off' or horizontal flight.* respectively. Miethe developed a discus-shaped plate of a diameter of 42m in which adjustable jets were inserted. Schriever and Habermohl, who worked in Prague, took off with the first "flying disc" on February 14. 1945. Within three minutes they climbed to an altitude of I2,400m and reached a speed of 2,000 km/h in horizontal flight (!] It was intended ultimately to achieve speeds of 4,000 km/h.
>
> Extensive preliminary tests and research were necessary before construction could be started. Because of the great speed and the extraordinary heat stress, special heat-resisting materials had to be found. The development, which cost millions, was almost completed at the end of the war. *The then existing models were destroyed but the plant in Breslau where Miethe worked fell into the hands of the Russians who took all the material and the experts to Siberia, where work on these "flying saucers" is being successfully continued.*

> Schriever escaped from Prague in time; *Habermohl, however, is probably in the Soviet Union, as nothing is known of his fate. The former designer Miethe is in the United States and, as far as is known, is building "flying saucers" for the United States and Canada at the A. V. Roe works.* Years ago, the U.S. Air Force received orders not to fire at "flying saucers". This is an indication of the existence of American "flying saucers" which must not be endangered. The flying shapes so far observed are stated to have diameters of 16, 42, 45 and 75 m respectively and to reach speeds of up to 7,000 km/h. (?]. In 1952 "flying saucers" were definitely established over Korea and Press reports said they were seen also during the NATO maneuvres in Alsace in the autumn of 1954. It can no longer be disputed that "flying saucers" exist. But the fact that their existence is still being denied, particularly in America, because United States developments have not progressed far enough to match the Soviet Union's, gives food for thought. There also seems some hesitation to recognise that these novel "flying saucers" are far superior to conventional aircraft - including modern turbo-jet machines - that they surpass their flying performance, load capacity and maneouvrability and thereby make them obsolete.[15]

The Nazi UFO mythos has, with Lusar, reached its penultimate form, encompassing the following elements:

> 1] Incredible performance characteristics and clearly a craft that is jet propelled: *"soaring in and darting off again at unprecedented speed with flames encircling the rim of the saucer's disc…"*
> 2] The claim that Nazi scientists were the first to attempt to construct such "Near-miraculous" craft: *"slowly the truth is coming out that even during the war German research workers and scientists made the first moves in the direction of these "flying saucers". They built and tested such near-miraculous contraptions."*
> 3] The crucial element that some of the technology and technicians were captured by the Soviets who continued the research: *"The then existing models were destroyed but the plant in Breslau where Miethe worked fell into the hands of the Russians who took all the material and the experts to Siberia, where work on these "flying saucers" is being successfully continued,"* and finally,

> 4] The claim that the other center of postwar research into flying saucer type craft was continued in the U.S.A. and Canada: *"Habermohl, however, is probably in the Soviet Union, as nothing is known of his fate. The former designer Miethe is in the United States and, as far as is known, is building "flying saucers" for the United States and Canada at the A. V. Roe works."*

However, there is another component of the Nazi UFO mythos, one much more sensational as we have seen: the claim to have built actual functional field propulsion craft, the so-called Hannebu and Vril series and other miscellaneous claims of a similar nature.

f. The Field Propulsion Saucer Myth

Researcher Henry Stevens, over a lifetime of research, has assembled what is perhaps the clearest exposition of the development of Nazi field propulsion saucer claims under one cover, in his *Hitler's Flying Saucers.* Stevens comes right to the point in stating what the problem is:

> The existence of World War Two German field propulsion flying saucers is a topic which is denied by virtually every reputable authority in aviation history. It is also denied by many researchers studying German saucers. The problem is that in the years immediately following the Second World War the earth's skies suddenly began to be populated by flying craft which did some remarkable things. They flew at unheard of speeds. They made very sharp turns, seemingly non-aerodynamic turns, even at this extreme speed. They lacked the glowing tail of jets or rockets but they glowed or gave off light at night from their periphery or from the whole craft. They were silent or almost silent. Sometimes they gave off sounds that an electric generator or motor might make. Sometimes vehicles with electrically based ignition systems ceased to operate in the presence of these saucers. No government claimed these flying craft, yet they were seen all over the world.[16]

Indeed, this is the problem posed by the Nazi flying saucer mythos, for the only terrestrial government claiming them publicly was a *government supposedly defunct*, and it was doing so through a few lone voices in scattered newspaper and magazine articles, voices that claimed to have been associated with their development. Moreover, the earliest claims did not involve field propulsion at all.

The claims to field propulsion saucer achievements were advanced much later, and by a narrow circle with its own dubious connections to postwar Nazis.[17] And here, as Stevens notes, the claims and the people advancing them get very murky indeed, for the claim being advanced in these circles is that the field propulsion saucers were developments from an understanding of the physics basis of obscure occult teachings:

> Mention of the "occult" brings us to another line of evidence concerning field propulsion, that put forth by Norbert Juergen-Ratthoder and Ralf Ettl. Mr. Ettl became involved while doing research for a film project on Dr. Wernher von Braun. A film company was paying for this research. A package or several packages of information were obtained by the production company which had more to do with UFOs than rocketry. This information was laid aside by Mr. Ettl but he returned to it after enlisting the help of Norbert Juergen-Ratthofer who had a special interest in that subject.
>
> The package contained breathtakingly clear photographs of German saucers in flight. Some of these pictures may be just models but some look authentic and are posed against a landscape. Nowadays, pictures can be generated via computer and these pictures surfaced within modern times…
>
> Besides the pictures, these writers provide an entire historical and cultural context for these saucers within the Third Reich. This context involves secret organizations with the SS. Further, the context provided by these writers (involves] the occult, channeling, and extraterrestrials. This is the weak point of their presentation since the case for these latter connections is really not strong enough to be in evidence.[18]

Indeed, it is this same group that promulgated the idea, through another researcher, Jan Van Helsing, that the Germans, through the use of mediums, "channeled" technical information—in Sumerian!— for the construction of the alleged saucers, having contacted extraterrestrials by this means.[19] Shades of Adamski once again.

We note that we are confronted with a kind of "Nazi version" of the infamous Cooper-Cantwheel Majic-12 documents: packages that allegedly *arrive at a film production company* from some anonymous source, in this

case, containing photographs and diagrams of alleged German field propulsion saucers. It goes without saying that a film production company could indeed hoax photographs of "Nazi flying saucers."

It is here, with the Juergen-Raffhofer group and this package of pictures and alleged "plans," that the now infamous Hannebu and Vril saucers made their first major appearance, spawning further elaborations of the mythos that the Nazis actually mounted manned Moon missions, and even a "suicidal" one way mission to Mars!

> Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer, Mr. Ettle and allied writers offer two different systems for field propulsion. the smaller saucer-type, which they designate "Vril" was powered by three moving magnetic fields. The larger type, designated "Haunebu" was powered by a series of devices according to these writers. In this arrangement, the output of smaller of the Hans Coler "free energy" devices, the "Magnetapparat", was used to supply input for the larger Coler device, the "Stromerzueger". The output of this second device was used to turn a Van de Graaf generator. This energy was directed into something called a Marconi ball dynamo (which] supplied lift to the saucer.
>
> All that seems to have been said about the latter device is that it is mentioned in the same sentence with special saucer condensers developed by (Thomas Townsend] Brown and Professor Paul Biefeld in the ninteen wtenties and that "such" ("solche"] with a rotor system was done by Professor Marconi, in Italy, in the nineteen thirties. Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer goes on to say that this device is to be considered, in principle, a forerunner to the Searl system.[20]
>
> *The Haunebu pictures strongly resemble the Adamski saucer pictures of the early 1950s… Mr. Ettle and Mr. Juergen-Ratthofer maintain that these "Adamski saucers" are really the German-designed Haunebu type saucers. Since they were flown after the war, certain questions as to their origin arise.*[21]

Leaving aside for a moment any commentary on the dubious technological and historical claims—claims no doubt made to provide an aura of "veracity" to the story—we note that two memes have now been joined in the Nazi saucer mythos, that of Nazi technological prowess, with Adamski's "extraterrestrial

contact." Why this has occurred will be explored more fully in the next chapter.

This fusion of the memes of extraterrestrial contact, occult influences and practice, and Nazi technology reached the zenith with the claims of Jan Van Helsing, who maintained that in the interwar period, mediums made contact with an extraterrestrial civilization, which civilization communicated technological information allowing the Germans to build a flying saucer.[22]

The reader will have noticed an immediate problem, and this is the historical *gap* between the earliest appearances of German suction saucer stories in the early 1950s, Adamski's contact stories from the same period, and the much later claims—with little substantiation—of field propulsion saucers.

2. The Gap and the Critics of the Mythos

We may now gain an appreciation of the problematic posed by the historical gap in these reports of jet-propelled and field propulsion saucers by pointing out the observations of researcher Andy Roberts Brigantia:

> 1. Prior to 1950, no claim was made of any successful flight by high performance circular or spherical aircraft in Germany during the war.
> 2. No contemporary documentary evidence (from before 1946] hasbeen produced regarding any successful flight by high performance circular or spherical aircraft in Germany during the war.
> 3. The only sources of original information and evidence for the wide, circular 'Schriever, Habermohl, Miethe and Bellonzo Flying Disc' come from a brief news agency report quoted in Der Spiegel in 1950, under the name of a "Captain Rudolph Schriever" (also possibly appearing at the same time in the Italian press], and from *German Secret Weapons of the Second World War* by Major Rudolf Lusar, published in Germany in 1957, and in London and New York in 1959. Schriever seems to suggest that the craft did not progress beyond blueprint stage, but Lusar appears to have taken the 'Schriever' account, turned the planned speed and height figures into ones that had actually been achieved, changed some of the technical details, and added the vague, non-technical drawing of this supposed craft which has been reprinted in various contexts since.

I am not aware that Schreiver's existence has ever been confirmed, and no proof has been produced to show that Lusar would have had direct access—denied to conventional historians—to any source of information about such a 'flying disc', which he claims "climbed to an altitude of 12,400m" "within three minutes", "and reached a speed of 2,000 kmh", on 14 February 1945. There is no independent evidence which suggests that these claims have any basis in fact. An extensive search of conventional literature on the war, together with German encyclopedias, has found no mention of Lusar, or of any 'Flying Disc' with such a performance record.

4. The only source of original information and evidence for the spherical craft described as *Feuerball* and *Kugelblitz* is the writer Renato Vesco, author of (the English title] *Intercept— But Don't Shoot*, published in Italy in 1968 and in the USA in 1971, and of two other books in Italian. He was also the first to make the link between those alleged craft and various reports of light anomalies during the war, suggesting that they were the cause of the 'foo fighter' phenomenon. No proof has been produced to show how or why Vesco would have had access—denied to conventional historians—to any source of information about these flying spheres, and there is no independent evidence which suggests that these claims for*Feuerball* and *Kugelblitz* have any basis in fact. An extensive search of conventional literature on the war together with Italian encyclopedias, has found no mention of Vesco, or the *Feuerball* and *Kugelblitz.*

5. There is no contemporary (pre-1946], or other documentary proof of any kind for the existence or flight, during the war, or at any other time, of the unconventional 'flying saucer' craft known as Vril and Haunebu. The material suggesting that these craft, and the related methods of propulsion, existed appears to have made its first appearance some 40 years after the war. An extensive search of conventional literature on the war has found no mention of Vril or Haunebu.

6. Schriever and Lusar make no mention of the *Feuerball* and *Kugelblitz.* Vesco makes no mention of the 'Schriever, Habermohl, Miethe and Bellonzo Flying Disc'. Neither Lusar nor Vesco mention the Vril or Haunebu craft.[23]

Without prejudice to the main arguments advanced by Brigantia, it should be noted with respect to the last point that *if* there was any truth to the claims of Schriever, Lusar, and Vesco, it is unlikely that in the highly compartmentalized secret weapons projects of the Third Reich, that any of them were *likely* to have known of the projects the others were working on.

3. A Critique of the Critics: The Suction Saucers

In my book *Roswell and the Reich* I noted that there is at least *some* evidence for the existence of German suction saucers, in that during the 1950s, the German engineer Heinrich Fleissner attempted to take out a patent on such a craft in the United States—patent number 2,939,648—based on work he claimed to have done earlier in the Third Reich at the secret Peenemünde rocket facility.[24] As I noted there, this craft looks suspiciously like the declassified plans for the American "Project Silverbug" flying saucer of the same period, and indeed, the delay in awarding Fleissner his patent when he filed in 1955, to its final award, was an unheard of five-plus years, ample time for the Air Force to copy and modify his designs.

Additionally, it is incontestable that the suction saucer designs of Viktor Schauberger, who unquestionably also worked for the SS on similar designs, was of interest to postwar American corporations and engineers.[25] Thus, one must assume that the Americans had *some* knowledge of German saucer research, however sketchy, and that they were also involved in psychological operations obfuscating their existence.

B. The Historical Gap, the Gehlen Organization, and Psychological Warfare

So how does one rationalize the sudden appearance of these reports concerning Nazi flying saucer accomplishments in the early 1950s, along with the claims of Adamski? There is one important clue overlooked by most advocates—and opponents—of the Nazi UFO mythos, and that is the possibility of psychological operations within the wider context of the postwar intelligence arrangements between the CIA and Nazi military intelligence.

As I have repeatedly pointed out in my books on Nazi secret weapons, the Bell project, and the continuation of Nazism after the war, one of the crucial interfaces between the western elite, its agencies of power, and the postwar Nazi "International" was Nazi general Reinhard Gehlen's military intelligence unit, *Fremde Heere Ost*, or Foreign Armies East, a vast network of spies

within the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe. Gehlen undertook negotiations with OSS station chief in Zurich, Allen Dulles, to turn this network over to American intelligence at the conclusion of the war, provided that he, General Gehlen, remain in day-to-day operational control of this network. As I observed in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, this meant effectively that when the ink was dry on the National Security Act of 1947, the CIA's civilian character was already compromised, for the CIA's on-the-ground Soviet intelligence and analysis division was, virtually in its entirety, General Gehlen's Nazi military intelligence group, otherwise known at the time as the Gehlen Organization, or simply, the "Gehlenorg." This organization often worked in close conjunction with other postwar Nazi organizations such as ODESSA and The Spider, the *Kameradenwerk* and the *Bruderschaft.*

This is a crucial point, for it means that in the postwar period and well into the 1950s, the CIA's on-the-ground intelligence network, not only in Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union, but also in Western Europe, was largely a Nazi organization under nominal American command.

Within this context, the CIA sponsored covert operations from 1949-1950 to prevent Italy from electing a Communist government, and, as I have detailed elsewhere, also was in nominal control to overthrow Egyptian King Farouk.[26] The Gehlenorg, during this same time period, had given its American cousins in the CIA an analysis of Soviet military capabilities and intentions, an estimate that so deliberately over-estimated these capabilities and intentions that it was one of the crucial factors in driving the postwar American arms race and doctrine of "containment."

We now propose that the sudden appearance of Nazi suction-saucer stories during this crucial period of Cold War tensions was not accidental, but an intentional psychological operation of this CIA-Gehlenorg nexus, designed to do two things:

> 1] On the American side, to convince the Soviets that the alleged Nazi technology fell into American hands, and thus, that America had a preponderant technological advantage in air power over the Soviets;
> 2] On the Nazi side, the purpose was, as I shall argue below, two fold yet again:
> a] To obfuscate the real story of suction saucer development; and,
> b] To obfuscate the development of genuine field propulsion technology, namely, the Bell.

1. The Bell Story and the Nazi UFO Mythos: Core Elements

The last point may not be entirely clear until we compare it, on the one hand, to the wild claims for Nazi field propulsion saucers, claims which are, in themselves, baseless and unfounded, and on the other hand, to the story of the Bell itself. As we have seen, there are two core components of the Nazi Saucer mythos:

> 1] The suction saucers were developed in Nazi Germany and some were actually flown in test flights shortly before the end of the war, and,
> 2] *Some* of this technology and the technicians and documentation associated with it fell into Soviet hands and continued to be secretly developed by them after the war.

As has been seen, there is at least *some* threadbare evidence that something like a suction saucer project was underway in Nazi Germany, both at Peenemünde (Fleissner], and within the SS (Schauberger], but these projects have nothing to do with the claims of Schriever, Belluzo, and others.

But what of the field propulsion component of the mythos?

Here, there is no evidence of anything like the "Hannebu" and "Vril" saucers, other than the wild contactee fantasies of Adamski—whose technological descriptions we have noted in a previous chapter are suspiciously like the Bell project—and the even wilder fantasias of Jürgen-Ratthofer, Ettl, and Van Helsing. With respect to the Bell project, this device gave off such deadly field effects that, reports of its ability to levitate notwithstanding, it is unquestionable that any human inside the device would have been exposed to fatal and deadly forces.[27] Its use in practice as a manned field propulsion craft would have been nil. Additionally, there are *no* reports of the Bell exhibiting the performance capabilities of UFOs, though certainly the implications of its reported levitation open up such potentialities.[28]

In the version of the Bell story recounted by Igor Witkowski, Nick Cook, and myself, the evidence for the project is based upon a tapestry of bits of evidence that, taken together, allow one to "reverse engineer" the parameters of the project:

> 1] the Polish war crimes trial affidavit of SS general Jakob Sporrenberg, who was sentenced to death in Poland for the murder

of some 60 scientists and technicians involved with the project. It should now be noted that Witkoski holds open the possibility that, during Sporrenberg's execution, a last minute substitution of a double was made, and Sporrenberg himself was spirited out of Poland by the Soviet N.K.V.D., forerunner of the KGB,[29] thus, there is a Soviet connection to the only *known* Nazi field propulsion project, exactly as was seen in the Nazi UFO mythos;

2] The Bell project was known to have been developed in lower Silesia, and there are installations in the region that would be commensurate with such a project. Similarly, the Nazi UFO mythos consistently locates the base of operations in lower Silesia, in the provincial capital of Breslau (modern day Wroclaw, Poland]; and, finally

3] It is possible to "reverse engineer" the physics conceptions of the Bell based on descriptions of the device, and other data.[30] By following the clues of these conceptions, it is clear that the Nazis continued to research this project independently in Juan Peron's Argentina in the early 1950s in Dr. Ronald Richter's "controlled fusion" project.[31] These conceptions involved:

a] high speed mechanical and electrical counter-rotation of a plasma inducing substance composed most likely of mercury and thorium 229 isomer oxide, to achieve magnetic fields separation and a quasi-super-conductive state; and,

b] high voltage direct current stressing of that plasma, to create momentary fusion reactions in the substance.

The basic goal of all of this, as I have argued elsewhere, is to create a "torsion shear" effect in the fabric of space time, a kind of "gravity bubble" around the device, which would account for its ionizing radiation and reported levitation.

Interestingly enough, a patent, filed on May 17, 1988, exists for an electromagnetic plasma reactor that sounds suspiciously like the concepts of Dr. Ronald Richter some three decades previously, concepts for which he was roundly denounced. The claims for thispatent read as follows:

What is claimed is:

1. A plasma arc reactor for refining raw materials comprising: spaced electrode means including at least one anode electrode defining a reaction chamber and at least one cathode electrode mounted within said reaction chamber and variably spaced from said

anode electrode; electrical circuit means connected to said anode and cathode electrodes for creating a plasma arc within said reaction chamber; and an induction coil means externally mounted circumferentially about said reaction chamber for producing a magnetic field therein.

2. The plasma arc reactor of claim 1, wherein said anode electrode comprises a hollow elongated cylinder having a central vertical longitudinal axis and opposed first and second closed ends.

3. The plasma reactor of claim 2, wherein said anode electrode defines a reaction chamber comprising a frusto-conical interior cavity.

4. The plasma reactor of claim 2, wherein said reaction chamber comprises a frusto-conical interior cavity which tapers from a small interior diameter at said first end to a larger interior diameter at said second end.

5. The plasma reactor of claim 4, wherein said reactor includes support means secured to said anode electrode, said support means operating to move said anode electrode along the longitudinal axis thereof relative to the cathode.

6. The plasma arc reactor of claim 1, wherein said induction coil means operates to impose a magnetic field within said reaction chamber to rotate said plasma arc.

7. The plasma arc reactor of claim 3, wherein said induction coil means operates to impose a magnetic field within said reaction chamber to rotate said plasma arc produced between said anode electrode and said cathode electrode.

8. The plasma arc reactor of claim 7, wherein said cathode electrode comprises a spherical, cathode ball electrode spaced from said anode electrode within said reaction chamber.

9. The plasma arc reactor of claim 8, wherein said reactor incudes support means secured to said anode electrode, said support means operating to move said anode electrode along the longitudinal axis thereof relative to said cathode ball electrode.

10. The plasma arc reactor of claim 9, wherein said cathode ball electrode is mounted within said reaction chamber, on a cathode stem, said cathode stem extending out said first closed end of said reaction chamber.

> 11. The plasma arc reactor of claim 10, wherein said cathode stem is rotatably mounted to allow rotation of said cathode ball electrode within said reaction chamber.
> 12. The plasma arc reactor of claim 1, wherein said plasma sustaining gas is an inert gas.
> 13. The plasma arc reactor of claim 12, wherein said reactor includes means for admitting said gas to said reaction chamber in a flow counter to the force of gravity.[32]

This patent indicates something quite profound about the Bell and Richter story, namely, *that with the Bell project, unlike for the alleged Nazi field propulsion UFOs, the physics conceptions involved are* ***real,*** *and* ***consistent over time and with notions and inventions that emerge much later in the public record.*** *It is thus reasonable to locate the core of the Nazi UFO story with the Bell project, and to view that project as being decades in advance of Allied or Soviet technology of the era.*

But what, ultimately, was the origin of the idea of coupling such advanced technology with a psychological operation? And what was the *purpose* of this psychological operation? We have alluded to some of these purposes already. The origin, as we have suggested in this chapter, was the Nazis themselves. But the dark purposes for which they conceived of this elaborate operation remain to be explored in the next two chapters. But the real origin, and real purpose, was perhaps hinted at in the other component of the Nazi UFO mythos: the esoteric, and the religious and social engineering themes first enunciated in George Adamski's contactee stories.

The real story, as we shall now see, is very murky indeed, and it all begins with a strange remark of Nazi Propaganda Minister Dr. Josef Göbbels…

Nazi Propaganda Minister Dr. Josef *Göbbels*

[1] Andy Roberts Brigantia, "Secrets of Lies? Investigating the Nazi UFO Legends," http://www.ufoinfo.com/news/secrets.shtml.

[2] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 109-114.

[3] Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, p. 142.

[4] Kevin McClure, "The Nazi UFO Mythos: An Investigation," http://magonia.haan.com/2009/nazi-ufo-00-intro/

[5] Kevin McClure, “The Nazi UFO Mythos 03: Major Lusar, The Saucer Builders and the Test Flight,” http://magonia.haaan.com/2009/nazi-ufo-3/, emphasis added.

[6] McClure, “The Nazi UFO Mythos 03: Major Lusar, The Saucer Builders and the Test Flight,”http://magonia.haaan.com/2009/nazi-ufo-3/, emphasis added.

[7] Ibid.

[8] Ibid.

[9] Ibid.

[10] McClure, “The Nazi UFO Mythos 03: Major Lusar, The Saucer Builders and the Test Flight,” http://magonia.haaan.com/2009/nazi-ufo-3/

[11] See my *Nazi International: The Nazis’ Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics, and Space* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 191-199.

[12] McClure, “The Nazi UFO Mythos 03: Major Lusar, The Saucer Builders and the Test Flight,” http://magonia.haaan.com/2009/nazi-ufo-3/

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid.

[15] McClure, “The Nazi UFO Mythos 03: Major Lusar, The Saucer Builders and the Test Flight,”http://magonia.haaan.com/2009/nazi-ufo-3/, citing Lusar, Rudolf (1959) Trans Heller, R P and Schindler, M German Secret Weapons of the Second World War Philosophical Library New York.

[16] Henry Stevens, *Hitler’s Flying Saucer*, p. 139.

[17] See my *Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 16-43,

[18] Stevens, *Hitler’s Flying Saucers*, p. 159.

[19] See *my SS Brotherhood of the Bell* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 104-115

[20] John Searl is a British engineer and inventor who during the late 1960s and throughout the 1970s built a number of levitating disks using roller magnets. These disks were seen by several observers to levitate and simple fly off into space.

[21] Henry Stevens, *Hitler’s Flying Saucer,* p. 161, emphasis added.

[22] See my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 104-115.

[23] Andy Roberts Brigantia, “Secrets of Lies? Investigating the Nazi UFO Legends,” http://www.ufoinfo.com/news/secrets.shtml.

[24] Joseph P. Farrell, *Roswell and the Reich*(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2010), pp. 494-499.

[25] Joseph P. Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp. 206-221

[26] See my *Nazi International* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp.

[27] Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 171-179.

[28] Ibid.

[29] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe* (European History Press, 2003], p. 243. Witkowski states: “In December 1952 the death sentence was announced, which was officially soon

carried out. In reality however the day before the planned execution, by the so-called ‘operational measures’ all persons obliged to be present during the execution have been changed, and instead of Sporrenberg a prisoner foreman (Kapo] from Stutthof concentration camp was executed, while Sporrenberg himself was flown to the USSR. In all probability he did not live there for very long—if only for the reason that the possibility of escape had to be excluded with 100% certainty. Sporrenberg however must have expected the deception and informed his family through his lawyer, since even in the 1960s petitions were sent for his release (to KC PZPR—(the] central committee of the main party.

“In 1947 Rudolf Schuster died suddenly in obscure circumstances (if he really died]. Col Szymanski, who had interrogated him was killed in an air crash along with a group of witnesses, soon after completing the investigation. His superior and chief of the Polish Military Mission in Berlin—General Jakub Prawin died in 1950(as far as I remember—he capsized his boat and drowned]. Major Walczak was killed in a car crash….

“The Soviets took over the whole affair and cut off all links, in Poland only traces remained… in Poland nobody was able to define either ‘the bell’s’ principle of operation, or why this device was considered so state-of- the-art.”

30 See my books *SS Brotherhood of the Bell,* pp. 171-271; *Secrets of the Unified Field,* pp. 227-288; *The Philosophers’ Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009], pp. 247-329.

31 Joseph P. Farrell, *The Nazi International*(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2008), pp. 249-350.

32 The full text of the patent is available for viewing at http://www.freepatentsonline.com/4745338.html.

5
The Sonderkampf of the Weltanschauungskrieg: The Origin of the Alchemy of Social Engineering and Psychological Operations

"Imagine in 1960 you discover a radar blip. This radar blip appears to be a satellite orbiting the Earth… but this satellite isn't listed along side Sputnik or Explorer, in fact no-one (or any country) knows of its origin. Not only that, but this satellite, named 'Black Knight'— has a polar orbit!… Neither the USA nor the USSR/Soviets have accomplished a polar orbit. Black Knight was found to be many, many times larger than any current satellite orbiting our planet."

Stephen Williams[1]

Reich Propaganda Minister Dr. Josef Göbbels' wife, Magda, sometime around Christmas of 1944, told her sister-in-law that her husband had seen a secret weapon "so visionary" that it would ensure a wonderful victory.[2] The problem here, of course, for traditional or conventional interpretation is that Germany's V-1s and V-2s were already raining destruction down on London and other Western European cities, and Germany's jets had already taken to the skies, and Germany's various anti-aircraft missiles were already being fired at Allied bombers. In other words, whatever it was that the Propaganda Minister had seen, it was not any of these things. It was, nonetheless, something that, as Igor Witkowski observes, must have "physically existed at the end of that year," and which created an astounding, "'visionary' impression through its appearance alone—therefore it must have been something completely different to the weapons known up until then."[3]

To make matters very much worse, apparently Hitler's favorite commando, SS Colonel Otto Skorzeny, had seen something very similar, and proposed utilizing it in a novel fashion. And among all the Third Reich's weird and wonderful arsenal, there is nothing as visionary as its alleged suction saucers, and the more promising Bell project.

*A. The **Sonderkampf** of the **Weltanschauungskrieg:** The Nazi Bell and the Beginning of the Coupling of Advanced Technology and Psychological Operations*

The idea of using such advanced technologies as represented by UFOs in conjunction with psychological operations thus begins - once again - in World War Two, and once again, it is the Nazis who came up with the idea. I mention this first in *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*,[4] but its importance for our discussion here is too crucial, so I will expand upon it here. The idea of using advanced technology with "special operations" or "special warfare" was first noticed, predictably enough, by Polish researcher Igor Witkowski, who mentions it in his superb study of Nazi secret weapons projects, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*:

> Later, in documents brought over from the American NARA archive at College Park near Washington, I found among other things a report referring to the interrogation of one of Otto Skorzeny's commandos. He was Skorzeny's aide-de-camp, SS-Sturmbannführer Karl Radl, at the same time Chief of the VI-S/2 Division at the General Office for Reich's Security (RSHA - Reichs-sicherheithauptamt). Radl stated —would you believe it —that since the beginning of 1944 *Skorzeny simply had no head to organize acts of sabotage on the enemy's rear areas, since he had come into contact with the "wonder weapon" and as a result had "been possessed" by the idea of "Sonderkampf ("Special Warfare"), regarding the use of this weapon, to such an extent, that he considered it the only sure way to win the war.*[5]

But what exactly did Skorzeny mean by a *Sonderkampf* or special warfare being conducted by his SS commando "Black Knights"?

Generally speaking, the term meant precisely commando-style actions such as sabotage in enemy rear areas, but it also meant, in the Nazis' case, anti partisan actions. But clearly, given the context of Witkowski's observations, Skorzeny was *already* commanding such actions, so clearly he had something quite different in mind entirely.

One answer might lie in the Nazis' conception of *Weltanschauungskrieg*, or "World View Warfare," their term for what we would call "psychological warfare," though the German term is, as is evident, much deeper and more comprehensive. But how does *Weltanschauungskrieg* differ from standard psychological operations? To answer this question, we must delve deeply into its American counterpart—psychological warfare—for as we shall see in future chapters, clear indications emerge of a Nazi nexus with American

corporations and foundations, a nexus forged prior to the war. What we propose to do in this and the next chapter, in other words, is to “reverse engineer” not a technology, but a psychological operation deliberately conceived in connection with that technology.

1. The Components of Psyops

In early 1948, the U.S. Army circulated a top-secret definition of psychological warfare. This definition was the distilled experience of waging psychological warfare against an equally talented opposition when it came to propaganda: Nazi Germany. In the U.S. Army’s case,

> Psychological warfare employs all moral and physical means, other than orthodox military operations, which tend to:
> a. destroy the will and ability of the enemy to fight.
> b. deprive him of the support of his allies and neutrals.
> c. increase in our own troops and allies the will to victory.
> Psychological warfare employs *any* weapon to influence the mind of the enemy. **The weapons are psychological only in the *effect* they produce and not because of the nature of the weapons themselves**. In this light, overt (white), covert (black), and gray propaganda; subversion; sabotage; special operations,; guerilla warfare; espionage; political, cultural, economic, and racial pressures are all effective weapons. **They are effective because they produce dissension, distrust, fear and hopelessness in the minds of the enemy**, not because they originated in the psyche of the propaganda or psychological warfare agencies.[6]

Note carefully the implication of these statements, for clearly the U.S. Army is coupling the idea of technologies—“the weapons themselves”—with a *matrix or context with which they are to be interpreted to "produce dissention, distrust, fear and hopelessness"* in a target population.

While those technologies are not specified in the document, clearly they must be of such an advanced nature that they lend themselves to use in psychological operations; in other words, we are looking at the conceptual matrix of a psychological warfare operation tailor made to exploit the properties of UFOs—whether they are terrestrial or extraterrestrial in origin—in order to confuse and demoralize a target population.

In respect to the distinction between black and white propaganda, communications researcher Christopher Simpson—whom we have quoted

above—notes that black propaganda

> "…stresses *trouble, confusion… and terror."*[7]
> A variation of black propaganda tactics involves forging enemy documents and distributing them to target audiences as a means of discrediting rival powers. The U.S. government officially denies that it employs black propaganda, but in fact it has long been an integral aspect of U.S. foreign **and domestic policy.**[8]

Ponder that last line carefully…

…for those familiar with the role of *documents* within UFOlogy will immediately recall two infamous cases when documents purporting to deal with the subject of UFOs were mailed to various recipients from anonymous or pseudonymous sources, from the Majic-12 documents to the "SS Hannebu and Vril" documents.

And this has a profound implication for our purposes. Given the indications already explored that both the SS and the U.S. Army conceived of psychological operations *in conjunction with the use or display of advanced technology, and given the pre- and post-war links to be explored later in this book, the possibility emerges that we are dealing with two components of one psychological operation, one component of which stresses the extraterrestrial origins of this technology, and another which stresses its Nazi origin.* Additionally, each component—the American one and the Nazi one—while coordinated, might also represent underlying *factions* or "vested interests" within our "breakaway civilization."

One purpose of this seemingly implausible coordination, according to Simpson, is to "manage empire" and to function "as an instrument for maintaining grossly abusive social structures, notably in global North/South relations."[9] In the case of our "breakaway civilization," this function would be redefined to maintain the abusive and parasitic relationship between it and its "host" societies.

Furthermore, in the maintenance of such a hidden empire, the breakaway civilization will, like its more conventional counterparts, utilize all the components of psychological operations, from "techniques of persuasion, opinion measurement", i.e., polling, "interrogation, political and military mobilization, propagation of ideology,"[10] to "social psychology, communication effect studies, anthropological studies of foreign communication systems,"[11] and so on. It is my contention that given the

necessarily small population base of any such breakaway civilization, plus the fact that it is coupled to a matrix of advanced infrastructure to conduct and deploy its advanced technologies, that its *primary method of military operations will be precisely via psychological warfare operations* to compensate for its much smaller population base.

2. Managing Perceptions: The Engineering of a Scientific Consensus

Given that one principal goal of psychological warfare is to manage perceptions of a target group or population, and thus to inhibit or otherwise influence that group's decision-making and world-interpreting processes, and given that there is a clear and explicit coupling of advanced technologies with psychological warfare operations both in the conceptions of the U.S. Army and of SS Colonel Otto Skorzeny, it is worth noting that one of the principal targets of such "perception management" is the scientific community itself. As Simpson notes, the very study of psychological warfare, of communications science, "became something like a Rorschach test through which favored academics spoke about the world as they believed it to be, and thereby helped institutionalize that vision at the expense of its rivals."[12] This is, in strictest terms, already something beyond "psychological warfare" in the traditional sense, and approaches what the Nazis meant by *Weltanschauungs-krieg* or "World View Warfare," for the effect of the promotion of certain views and scientists who hold them, is to create a "matrix of interpretation" or "matrix of perception", which matrix in turn opens up only certain avenues of decision and action.

What came of this activity—at least in the case of the United States—was a transformation of the scientific method and community itself, with the creation of a "publicly received and officially sanctioned 'science'," and a hidden science privy only to those in the black community itself (about which we shall have more to say subsequently):

> U.S. psychological warfare programs between 1945 and 1960 provide *a case study of how the priorities and values of powerful social groups can be transformed into the "received knowledge" of the scientific community, and, to a certain extent, of society as a whole.* It is a twofold story, first of the successes and failures of the government's effort *to achieve the engineering of consent of targeted populations* at home and abroad, and, contained within that, the

> story of the mechanisms by which consent was achieved among the scientists who had been hired to help with the job.[13]

Obviously, Simpson means his remarks to apply not to our breakaway civilization, but to the efforts of U.S. psychological warfare operations during the Cold War, to buttress its own ideological position in the targeted populations of the West and the Third World, in opposition to the supposed expansionist aims of the Communist bloc and its ideology.

But it takes little imagination to see how such operations would be used by a breakaway civilization to create a false scientific consensus in all scientific disciplines—from physics to genetics to sociology—that related to its own secret research, to prevent the widespread dissemination of ideas or concepts that formed the basis of its research when possible, and to direct the mis-interpretation of them when it could not. This leads us directly to…

3. The Techniques of Obfuscation

Within the American conception of psychological operations, various techniques of obfuscation have emerged, techniques designed to inhibit the interpretive and decision-making faculties of target groups directly. The two most salient components of these techniques are "the use of 'plausible deniability' to permit the government to deny responsibility for 'black' operations that were in truth originated by the United States;'" and "a conscious policy of polarizing neutral nations into either 'pro-' or 'anti-U.S.' camps."[14] In the case of the breakaway civilization, these two techniques are quite the crucial points, for on the one hand, such a civilization must seek both to cloak the technologies it is utilizing, and to cloak or deny its own very existence, and on the other hand, must obfuscate the interpretation of its technologies in case they are discovered.

With respect to the last point, in a previous book, *Roswell and the Reich*, I noted the creation of what I called "the Roswell dialectic," a creation I noted that was linked to the U.S. military which was seeking to control *the interpretation, to manage the perceptions,* of the Roswell event, by casting the interpretation into one of two alternatives: either it had to be extraterrestrial, or it was a purely mundane event that had been misinterpreted; it was, in short, either a crashed extraterrestrial craft, or merely a mistaken balloon of some sort. In other words, Roswell—*whatever* the reality of the event underlying the interpretations—showed all the classic hallmarks of a psychological warfare

operation.[15] This dialectic is a classic case of the employment of the "polarization" technique, only in this case, is it *not a pro-US or anti-US posture that the target group is being urged to take, but rather, a pro-ET or an anti-ET posture with respect to the alleged recovered technology.*

4. American Private Foundation Funding of Psyops Studies

None of this, however, establishes that one is dealing with a breakaway civilization in the sense that Mr. Dolan hypothesized, and that we reviewed in chapter one. For such a case to begin to gain some *prima facie* credence, one would have to show that forces, powers, and/or "instruments"— in Quigley's sense—that were more or less private and independent of the government were involved in the formulation and deployment of psychological warfare operations.

Fortunately, we *do* have evidence, highly *suggestive* evidence, that this indeed is the case, for during World War Two, not only did the U.S. government allocate "between $7 million and $13 million annually for university and think-tank studies of communications-related social psychology, communication effect studies" and "anthropological studies of foreign communication systems,"[16] but major foundations, including the Carnegie, Ford, and Rockefeller Foundations also privately funded this research,[17] thus gaining access to the results of these studies. As we shall discover in the last section of this book, the nexus between the Ford and Rockefeller interests on the one hand, and Nazism on the other, predate the war, and form a vital component of the matrix in which the crystal of the breakaway civilization, and its conception of its relationship to its host societies, is grown. For the moment, however, we note that there is a direct and established relationship between powerful private groups and financial interests, and the rise of psychological warfare as a component of "managing empire," in this case, the private empires represented by those interests.

*5. Back to the Nazi Component: The Implications of **Weltanschauungskrieg***

It is important to understand that psychological warfare operations developed during World War Two *largely as a response* to the totalitarian state of Nazi Germany, and its ideological understanding that psychological warfare was a "World View Warfare:"

> The phrase ‘psychological warfare’ is reported to have first entered English in 1941 as a translated mutation of the Nazi term *Weltanschauungskrieg* (literally, worldview warfare), meaning the purportedly scientific application of propaganda, terror, and state pressure as a means of securing an ideological victory over one’s enemies. William “Wild Bill” Donovan, then director of the newly established U.S. intelligence agency Office of Strategic Services (OSS), viewed an understanding of Nazi psychological tactics as a vital sources of ideas for “Americanized” versions of many of the same strategems.[18]

Of course, this raises the philosophical question of just how much of this essentially Nazi conception can be “borrowed” and “Americanized” before the Nazi ideology itself comes to dominate the process, transforming the society adopting it. How can such processes of “scientific manipulations” via propaganda, terror, and state pressure via mass communication, of targeted populations cohabitate with the ideal of a free and independent people?

The answer, of course, is that it cannot. Thus, the process of the “Nazification” of the West began before the war was even over. Peter Levenda summarizes the effect of this “psychological total war” that *Weltanschauungskreig* implies with chillingly apt accuracy:

> “World-view warfare” says it all: a battle between our perceptions and those of an enemy population. After all, one could say, isn’t that what war is really about anyway?… Even the most crazed suicide bomber is acting from a belief that what he is doing is right, morally justified, and has the sanction of the people that matter, the people that count: God’s people. “The best,” says the poem, “lack all conviction,” but rob the worst of *their* conviction and the war is over. It is tantamount to waking up and finding a voodoo doll in your bed, studded with pins… or a horse’s head, a la Mario Puzo’s*The Godfather*. You’ve been cursed; you will die. And your mind does the rest. That is the value of psychological warfare, or “world-view warfare,” and it works… at least, just as well as the voodoo doll or the dead horse. In the right hands, one can kill (or influence) without firing a shot.

> Psy-war was never perceived as a substitute for the real thing, but only as a complement to an existing arsenal of weapons. The basic psy-war techniques are only useful insofar as they make the enemy soldiers lose faith in the ability of their army, and their country, to win. One can shake that faith in may ways: by ridicule, by fake prophecies of doom, by appeals to reason or emotion. Another way is through fear.
>
> When we speak of "psychological warfare" we are often speaking of ways to make the enemy feel afraid, and in order to do this we must understand an enemy's psyche: what makes him love, hate, fight, run. We must understand how an enemy will react under stress: will he fight harder, or simply surrender? Or will he start making errors in judgment, winning the war for us, in a manner of speaking? The costliest mistakes of psychological warfare operations are always those made in ignorance of an enemy's mindset. The psychological warfare officer must be able to play an enemy's mind like a violin. This implies a deep knowledge of human psychology, which is itself a kind of black art. And since this is a war of perceptions, of "world views," it is important that the psychological warfare officer understand the impact of art, music, literature, theater and other cultural modes of expression and how world-views are represented by them, even changed or modified by them. What plays in Peoria may not—very assuredly *will* not—play in Phnom Penh…
>
> …And eventually, the temptation will arise to test some of these principles on the domestic population. After all, with whose mindset are we the most familiar but our own? What better place to test new theories of psychological warfare than among our native populace? And how better to control our population politically than through the judicious use of propaganda, using the robust media of the most turned-on, tuned-in, mentally-massaged nation on earth: the United States of America?[19]

Weltanschauungskrieg is thus a kind of psychological warfare version of "full spectrum dominance" of all aspects of a target population's interpretive and decision making faculties by the employment of all of the techniques of mass communication, propaganda, and the all-important component, the calculated application of terror. Indeed, the idea of such total psychological "full

spectrum dominance" owes its origin to the "total totalitarian" *Weltanschauung* of *Nazism*.

But there are crucial differences between "psychological warfare" as the American component of this breakaway civilization practiced it, and the Nazi one, and they are revealed in the ideological principles of each.

In this respect, it is to be stressed that Nazism *arose* as a fully-formed breakaway civilization, being midwifed into existence by a variety of occult and secret societies, eventually capturing an entire great power, and wrenching that power away from its roots within Western civilization, and orienting it along entirely new ideological lines, the components of which included:

> 1) the belief that it was racially superior to other races both genetically, culturally, and technologically, and, more importantly,
> 2) within the "state within a state" that was the SS, the further belief that this race, the Aryans, descended from an "extraterrestrial" race; and that it was this descent that gave it its alleged racial, genetic, and intellectual superiority over others; and finally,
> 3) that no conventional moral inhibitions or restraints were permissible—and indeed had to be jettisoned—to return this "master race" to its "rightful position" within world affairs.

In short, the ideological commitments of Nazism were at variance with the broader foundations of Western civilization, and thus, Nazi Germany itself may be viewed as an attempt of the breakaway civilization to "go public." As we shall encounter later, the elitism implied in this view squared quite well with similar views in the corporate elites of the USA, forming a perfect nexus for the postwar re-emergence of the breakaway civilization.

For the moment, however, we now return to SS Colonel Otto Skorzeny and his calls for a "special warfare" or *Sonderkampf* and to a consideration of their implications within this wider context of *Weltanschauungskrieg* and the above ideological components of Nazism. Let us recall Witkowski's summary:

> Later, in documents brought over from the American NARA archive at College Park near Washington, I found among other things a report referring to the interrogation of one of Otto Skorzeny's commandos. He was Skorzeny's aide-de-camp, SS-Sturmbannführer Karl Radl, at the same time Chief of the VI-S/2 Division at the General Office for Reich's Security (RSHA - Reichs-sicherheitshauptamt). Radl stated —would you believe it - that *since*

> *the beginning of 1944 Skorzeny simply had no head to organize acts of sabotage on the enemy's rear areas, since he had come into contact with the "wonder weapon" and as a result had "been possessed" by the idea of "Sonderkampf ("Special Warfare"), regarding the use of this weapon, to such an extent, that he considered it the only sure way to win the war.*[20]

Under ordinary circumstances, Sonderkampf meant precisely "special battle" or "special operations", comprising guerilla warfare, sabotage, assassination, and other operations behind enemy lines.[21]

But clearly, Skorzeny had seen a technology of some sort that had to be something other than the V-1s, V-2s, and jet airplanes, for none of these would easily lend themselves to "guerilla operations" behind enemy lines. In other words, *some other technology entirely* was involved.

Additionally, Skorzeny, as Witkowski notes, no longer believed in the effectiveness of special warfare behind enemy lines, or, to put it differently, Skorzeny, like many Nazi officers, realized the war was lost, and that there was no reason to do so. So what did Skorzeny mean by a *Sonderkampf*, a special guerilla warfare in this case?

I believe there can be only one reasonable answer. Since the war was lost, the "enemy lines" meant, quite literally, a new kind of special guerilla warfare was to be waged from a postwar Nazi underground, quite literally "behind enemy lines" which would in the aftermath of the war, cover the entire globe, and that warfare was deliberately conceived in conjunction with an advanced technology that, in the hands of *Weltanschauungskrieg* experts, would be used to spread fear, terror, confusion, and thereby to demoralize the enemy, short circuit his world-interpretation and decision making processes.

But what, precisely, *was* that technology?

Here we are in the fortunate position of not having to guess, nor to argue, the case that it was some version of the German suction saucers, or perhaps even some scaled down version of the Bell itself:

Spies Bid for Franco's Weapons

Agents Ascribe 'Flying Saucers' to New Rocket

By LIONEL SHAPIRO.

GENEVA.—Three German scientists working under the personal sponsorship of Generalissimo Francisco Franco have developed two highly advanced weapons of war, according to specifications and blueprints smuggled out of Spain by the agent of an independent European spy organization.

The first weapon is an electromagnetic rocket which, it is claimed, is responsible for the "flying saucers" seen over the North American continent last summer and for at least one and perhaps two hitherto unexplained accidents to transport aircraft.

The second weapon is an artillery warhead employing the principle of nuclear energy and described as having a startling disintegrating power.

Blueprints of the weapons have been offered for sale to at least three of the great powers. The degree of credence placed in them by the military intelligence sections of these powers is indicated by the fact that two of them—of whom this correspondent has certain knowledge—have made strenuous and, indeed, dramatic efforts to acquire the blueprints.

Big Sums Offered

The disclosure that these plans were available has touched off the most intense activity among secret agents in European capitals since the end of the war. Huge sums of money and even threats of death have been involved in negotiations.

The nation which coupled a threat of death to its bid is Soviet Russia.

I came upon the story three weeks ago by accidental interception of a document cataloging the weapons. This was being circularized through Europe's intricate network of secret agents. Since then, careful checking among agents and military intelligence organizations in several countries has disclosed:

That the principal powers fully believe Franco has been developing new weapons.

That the weapons (particularly the electro-magnetic rocket) do actually exist and are now being manufactured in Spain.

According to the information available, the weapons were developed in secret laboratories located near Marbella on the south coast of Spain just east of Gibraltar. They were tested in Franco's presence early last summer. The rocket, known as KN2, after its inventors, Professors Knoh and Mueller, was tested off Malaga while Franco watched from the deck of his yacht.

The rocket is described as having a range of 16,000 kilometers (9,942 miles) traveling in a given direction. Its flight can be controlled by radio for at least the first 5,000 kilometers (3,107 miles) and when the control is removed the rocket is attracted by electric vibrations of flying planes or the magnetism of the nearest mass of metal. It explodes when it reaches the attracting element.

The agent who smuggled the blueprints out of Spain, and who presumably was present at the tests, claims that the rockets were directed over North America and that they were responsible for at least one and probably two transport-plane accidents which, for want of better explanation, were attributed to structural defects.

The nuclear-energy projectile is credited to a Professor Hahnmann. It is described as twenty-two centimeters (8.7 inches) long and is used as a warhead for artillery shells. The agent claims that Franco is already mass-producing automatic guns to fire these new shells and that the first tests of the projectiles show them to have unprecedented explosive qualities.

Copyright, 1947, North American Newspaper Alliance, Inc.

Denver Post, November 9, 1947 Article About Spanish Nationalist Leader General Francisco Franco's Alleged Flying Saucer[22]

The article reads as follows:

Spies Bid for Franco's Weapons
Agents Ascribe 'Flying Saucers' to New Rocket
By Lionel Shaprio.
GENEVA- Three German scientists working under the personal sponsorship of Generalissimo Francisco Franco have developed two highly advanced weapons of war, according to specifications and blueprints smuggled out of Spain by the agent of an independent European spy organization.

The first weapon is an electromagnetic rocket which, it is claimed, is responsible for the "flying saucers" seen over the North American

continent last summer and for at least one and perhaps two hitherto unexplained accidents to transport aircraft.

The second weapon is an artillery warhead employing the principles of nuclear energy and described as having a startling disintegrating power.

Blueprints of the weapons have been offered for sale to at least three of the great powers. The degree of credence placed in them by the military intelligence sections of these powers is indicated by the fact that two of them—of whom this correspondent has certain knowledge—have made strenuous efforts to acquire the blueprints.

Big Sums Offered

The disclosure that these plans were available has touched off the most intense activity among secret agents in European capitals since the end of the war. Huge sums of money and even threats of death have been involved in the negotiations.

The nation which coupled a threat of death to its bid is Soviet Russia.

I came upon the story three weeks ago by accidental interception of a document cataloguing the weapons. This was being circulated through Europe’s intricate network of secret agents. Since then, careful military intelligence organizations in several countries has disclosed:

That the principal powers fully believe Franco has been developing new weapons.

That the weapons (particularly the electro-magnetic rocket) do actually exist and are now being manufactured in Spain.

According to the information available, the weapons were located near Marbella on the south coast of Spain just east of Gibraltar. They were tested in Franco’s presence early last summer. The rocket, known as KM2 after its inventors, Professors Knoh and Mueller—was tested of Malaga while Franco watched from the deck of his yacht.

The agent who smuggled the blueprints out of Spain, and who presumably was present at the tests, claims that the rockets were directed over North America and that they were responsible for at least one and probably two transport-plane accidents which, for want of better explanation, were attributed to structural defects.

> The nuclear-energy projectile is credited to a Professor Halkmann. It is described as twenty-two centimeters (8.7 inches) long and is used as a warhead for artillery shells. The agent claims that Franco is already mass-producing guns to fire these new shells and that the first tests of the projectiles show them to have unprecedented explosive qualities.[23]

The article makes a number of specific assertions, and there are two basic approaches by which to interpret them within the assumption that the article represents a psychological operation of some sort.

The first is that the article contains some kernels of truth, i.e., that some sort of advanced technology was being worked on by German scientists in postwar Nationalist Spain. The second is to assume that the article contains no kernels of truth, but is part of a psychological operation to convince the Soviets that postwar Nazi scientists were in possession of advanced technologies, and by implication, that their allied and neutral hosts were as well.

There would seem to be some substance to both possibilities, and this brings us back to SS Colonel Otto Skorzeny, for as I and other researchers have pointed out, Skorzeny's postwar headquarters, as for so many other Nazis, was Franco's Nationalist Spain, and in Skorzeny's case, it was Spain's capital, Madrid itself.[24] Skorzeny's presence raises considerably the possibility that we are dealing at the minimum with a psychological warfare operation, one conceived and executed by the Nazis, and at the maximum, with a psychological warfare operation conceived and executed by the *Nazis in conjunction with certain technologies they brought with them to Spain and were perhaps researching and manufacturing there. We have, in other words, clear indication that a* ***Sonderkampf*** *was being waged after the war, "behind enemy lines."*

But did the Nazis in fact plan for postwar psychological operations in conjunction with their plans to form a "Nazi International" extra-territorial state?

This is where the story becomes very intriguing!

B. The Nazis' Post-War Plan for Psyops

There can be no doubt whatsoever that the Nazis not only had a "come back" plan, but that this plan was intimately tied to their economic and "strategic evacuation" plans and their schemes to form a postwar extra-

territorial "state," a "Nazi International". Psychological warfare, or *Weltanschauungskrieg* became the actual *military* operations performed by this "state":

> Captured Nazi documents reveal they had a comeback plan. Their plan to regain power after the war revolved around using their friends and fascist sympathizers in other countries—*particularly in the United States*— to do their bidding while rebuilding Germany. The documents note that, as late as 1944, the Nazis were hoping for a Republican victory in the presidential election because they would get an easier peace. The second part of their plan aimed at provoking a war between the U.S. and the Soviet Union which would allow the Nazis to retake power in Germany without U.S. intervention.[25]

Part of the matrix in which the Nazis hoped to accomplish this campaign is revealed by the detailed connections between postwar German and Nazi leaders on the one hand, and high-ranking members of American society and government on the other.

For example, John J. McCloy, the pre-war American attorney for I.G. Farben, and who had once shared Hitler's box during the Berlin Olympics, and postwar American High Commissioner for Germany (and, let it be noted, subsequently a member of the Warren Commission on the assassination of President John F. Kennedy), was brother-in-law to American General Draper, and the first West German Chancellor, Konrad Adenauer, for all three men had married daughters of John Zinsser, a partner in the JP Morgan interests![26]

Similar connections were forged between Hjalmar Schacht, Hitler's one-time Reichsbank president, and Greek shipping magnate Aristotle Onassis. And of course, the notorious Bilderberger meetings themselves were the brainchildren of David and Laurence Rockefeller and the London Rothschilds on the one hand, and Nazi SS officer former I.G. Farben manager Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands, with early meetings in the 1950s featuring the regular presence of Dr. Herman Josef Abs, head of Deutschebank and at one time, the banker who actually paid Hitler's salary. And of course, let it be remembered that Colonel Skorzeny had married Hjalmar Schacht's daughter.[27] As we shall see in the next section of the book, this is but the tip of a very large American-Nazi iceberg.

However it is precisely the existence of such networks and personal connections that the Nazis were counting on, as is revealed by their documents

outlining the long range plan for extended *Weltanschauungskrieg*. For example, in a 1944 edition of the French version of the German magaszine*Combat (Angriff)*, a German propaganda sheet designed to win the French over to the Nazi cause, an article by German General Von Stulpnagel admitted not only that the current war was lost, but outlined the long range objective of an extended psy-op:

> In the next war, which should take place within 25 years, the same mistake must not be made. The principal adversary will be the United States, and the entire effort must be concentrated against this country from the beginning… Our defeat in the present war need not be considered except as an incident in the triumphant march of Germany towards the conquest of the world, and from now on we must give a defeated Germany the spirit of a future conqueror. What does a temporary defeat matter if, through the destruction of people and material wealth in enemy countries, we are able to secure a margin of economic and demographic superiority even greater than before 1939? If we can succeed in doing this, this war will have been useful, since it will enable us, within the next 25 years, to wage another war under better conditions… Our enemies will grow weary before we do. We shall have to organize a campaign of pity designed to induce them to send us needed supplies at the earliest possible moment. Above all we must hold on to the assets we have deposited in neutral countries. The present war will thus have been a march forward towards our supremacy. We have not to fear conditions of peace analogous to those we have imposed, because our adversaries will always be divided and disunited.[28]

But Von Stulpnagel was being evasive, though clearly hinting at (West) Germany's postwar "Blackmail" diplomacy,[29] i.e., the diplomacy whereby (West) Germany threatened that it would be absorbed into the Communist bloc if not allowed to re-industrialize and re-arm.

This "Blackmail" diplomacy was conceived during the end of WW2, even as Bormann was formulating his economic "strategic evacuation" plans. A document from Admiral Canaris' *Abwehrabteilung* dated March 15, 1944, and classified *Geheime Reichssache* (Secret State Matter), calls upon strong psychological warfare measures "to the fullest extent possible" and utilizing "all available possibilities in neutral and enemy countries in order to support

our military efforts with political and propaganda campaigns" with the goal to eventually thwart the Allies, whose goal "it is to destroy forever the German Reich militarily, economically and culturally."[30]

The handwriting was, however, on the wall, as I have noted elsewhere, in early 1943, after the German defeat at Stalingrad.[31] It was during this period that the first strategic evacuation plans were first being formed, and as well, that the first plans for postwar psychological operations were also being formed:

> On July 27, 1943,[32] the German Foreign Office expert on the U.S., the geopolitician Colin Ross, suggested in a 15-page memorandum a "Plan for an Ideological Campaign in the United States."
>
> Recognizing Germany's inability to bring the war to a victorious end, Ross proposed the immediate implementation of carefully planned psychological warfare to undermine the anticipated U.S. military victory. Ross regarded American public opinion as the weakest link because the American people seemed especially susceptible to scare propaganda hinting that a defeated Germany would join the ranks of Bolshevism. The memorandum, which was addressed to the German Secretary of State in the Foreign Office, von Steengracht, became the guidepost for Germany's highly successful blackmail diplomacy in post-war America. Here follow some significant parts of the memorandum.
>
> PLAN FOR AN IDEOLOGICAL CAMPAIGN IN THE UNITED STATES
>
> The prerequisites for psychological warfare:
>
> 1. Analyze the spiritual temper of world public opinion.
> 2. Evaluate correctly the ideological weapons available.
> 3. Put before the eyes of the world a strategic concept which will impress not only our own people, but also the neutrals and our enemies.
> 4. Select the most effective tactical methods for the accomplishment of the above.
> 5. Co-ordinate the ideological campaign in support of our military and economic warfare.
>
> *The more the prospects for outright military victory diminish, the more urgent becomes the necessity for all-out psychological*

> *warfare….*
>
> *…**Therefore, it is necessary to set up a far-flung organization in every country which, under enemy occupation, must carry on the task from the underground.** We must do everything possible to impress upon American public opinion that after the liberation of Europe they will become involved in an endless maze of insoluble contradictions.*[33]

Note that this document explicitly states that Nazism would have to go underground, and create a vast international network—requiring perforce a vast warchest—to conduct such an all-out *Weltanschauungskrieg*. Note also that part of this operation involved the use of the technique of *polarization*, i.e., of creating mutually contradictory sets or contexts of interpretation by which the American public opinion was to be paralyzed.

The U.S. Department of State was not oblivious to these plans, for on March 30, 1945, it published a document indicating that the U.S.A. was aware of both aspects—the economic and psychological warfare components—of the postwar plan:

> Nazi Party members, German industrialists, and the German military, realizing that victory can no longer be attained, are now developing post-war commercial projects, *are endeavoring to renew and cement friendships in foreign commercial circles and are planning for renewals of pre-war cartel agreements.* An appeal to the courts of various countries will be made early in the post-war period through dummies for "unlawful" seizure of industrial plants and other properties taken over by Allied governments at the outbreak of war. In cases where this method fails German repurchase will be attempted through "cloaks" who meet the necessary citizenship requirements…
>
> …German capital and plans for the construction of ultra-modern technical schools and research laboratories will be offered at extremely favorable terms since they will afford the Germans an excellent opportunity to design and perfect new weapons. This Government is now in possession of photostatic copies of several volumes of German plans on this subject. The German propaganda program is to be an integral part of the over-all post-war program.[34]

Note the very significant point that part of this plan revolves upon re-establishing *the corporate and personal relationships that existed prior to the war between Germany, and Nazism on the one hand, and American corporate elites on the other.*

In other words, the Nazis were counting on the American components of those pre-war relationships to wage the *Weltanschauungskrieg* for and with them to some extent.

Before we can examine the American and Nazi components of this postwar *Weltanschuungskrieg*, however, we must turn to that aspect of it that couples the display of technology with its magical interpretation…

Admiral Wilhelm Canaris, Head of Germany's Abwehrabteilung, or Military Intelligence

[1] Stephen Williams, "The Black Knight Satellite Revisited,"http://paranormal-mysteries.co.uk/?p=630

[2] Igor Witwkoski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, p. 231.

[3] Ibid.

[4] Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, p. 172.

[5] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, trans Bruce Wenham (Farmborough, Hampshire: Books International, 2003), pp. 231-232, emphasis added.

[6] Christopher Simpson, *Science of Coercion: Communication Research and Psychological Warfare* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1996), p. 12, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

[7] Ibid., citing U.S. Department of the Army, Joint Strategic Plans Committee, *JSPC 862/3*, August 2, 1948, Appendix "C," P&O 332 TSD (section 1, case 1), RG 319, U.S. national Archives, Washington, D.C. Simpson notes that this was "originally top secret, now declassified," (p. 137, n. 26)

[8] Ibid., pp. 12-13, boldface emphasis added.

[9] Simpson, *Science of Coercion*, p. 8.

[10] Ibid., p. 4.

[11] Ibid., p. 9.

[12] Simpson, *Science of Coercion*, p. 5.

[13] Ibid., p. 10, emphasis added.

[14] Simpson, *Science of Coercion*, p. 13.

[15] See my *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2010), pp. 315-318.

[16] Simpson, *Science of Coercion*, p. 9.

[17] Ibid., pp. 9, 13, 60-61.

[18] Simpson, *Science of Coercion*, p. 24, see also p. 11.

[19] Peter Levenda, *Sinister Forces: A Grimoire of American Political Witchcraft*, Book One: The Nine (Walterville, Oregon: TrineDay, 2005), pp. 125-126.

[20] Igor Witkowski, *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe*, trans Bruce Wenham (Farmborough, Hampshire: Books International, 2003), pp. 231-232, emphasis added.

[21] See also Simpson, *Science of Creation*, p. 12.

[22] Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucera*, p. 131.

[23] *Denver Post*, November 9, 1947, cited in Henry Stevens, *Hitler's Flying Saucers*, p. 131.

[24] Joseph P. Farrell, *Nazi International*, pp. 199-200. See also "Exposing the Nazi International," pp. 271-309, in *Secret and Suppressed: Banned Ideas and Hidden History*, Jim Kieth, ed., (Feral House, 1993). Skorzeny's headquarters was in the same building as the Madrid office of the later CIA. See also my extended essay, "Exposing the Nazi International: An Analysis," pp 218-229, in *Secret and SuppressedII: Banned Ideas and Hidden History into the 21st Century*, ed. Adam Parfrey and Kenn Thomas (Feral House, 2008).

[25] Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The Nazi Hydra in America: Suppressed History of a Century* (Joshua Tree, California: Progressive Press, 2008), p. 23.

[26] Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The Nazi Hydra in America: Suppressed History of a Century*, pp. 23-24.

[27] Farrell, *The Nazi International*, pp. 193-197, 241-246, *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 64-70, *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy*, pp. 139-142.

[28] Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The Nazi Hydra in America: Suppressed History of a Century*, p. 345.

[29] Ibid., p. 344.

[30] Ibid., 628.

[31] Farrell, *The Nazi International*, pp. 63-64.

[32] Note the date! This would place the following memorandum*after* the defeat of the last large German offensive on the Eastern Front, the Battle of Kursk, and after the final loss, for about one year, of its ability to launch any major offensive.

[33] Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The Nazi Hydra in America: Suppressed History of a Century*, p. 630, all emphases added.

[34] Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The Nazi Hydra in America: Suppressed History of a Century*, p. 631, all emphasis added.

6

The Alchemy of UFOs: Social Engineering, Psyops, and Alchemical Technology

"I think UFOs are perpetrating a deception by presenting their so-called 'occupants' as being messengers from outer space, and I suspect there are groups of people on Earth exploiting this deception. "I have written this book because I am concerned with the changes which would be triggered by the belief in an outer space invasion, real or simulated."
Dr. Jacques Vallee[1]

"What if the deception operations of World War Two extended beyond the end of hostilities with Germany?" Dr. Jacques Vallee[2]

Flying saucers, whether they originate on or off planet, present unique opportunities for the conduct of *Weltanschauungskrieg* and social engineering. Viewed in this way, the UFO represents both an alchemical *technology* and *technique*, for one of the goals of alchemy has always been the transformation of man and his consciousness, and no one can doubt that the UFO has done just that.

And no one has better appreciated this fact than the famous French scientist and ufologist, Dr. Jacques Vallee. In this chapter, we will review his work with a purpose to extract those principles indicative of the use of psychological operations and to detect, if possible, the ideology motivating the breakaway civilization. Indeed, Vallee hints at some of this vast potential for social engineering near the beginning of his book *Messengers of Deception*:

> Visitors from outer space would be a convenient interlude. They would offer the space effort—and all its attendant industrial technology—a new purpose in life. They would rescue Western civilization from its acute spiritual malaise. They would help transcend political emotions and pave the way to the unification of that enormous economic marketplace: Planet Earth. Take these possibilities into consideration, and you will begin to understand why the idea of life in space is no longer a simple scientific speculation but a social and political issue as well. Sensing this, the

> military authorities have tried to stay away from it as long as possible. So has the scientific community.[3]

But we have already established that two prominent Nazi scientists—Oberth and Von Braun—spoke out in provocative terms about the "extraterrestrial presence" in the postwar period when it is clear that a case can be made that some of the advanced "flying saucer" technology that UFOs represented already existed in Nazi Germany. Moreover, we have pointed out that Dr. Oberth was clearly involved in the Bell project.

In short, in the Nazis' case at least, these scientists were *lying*, and lying it would appear to a purpose, the purpose being to promote the idea of extraterrestrial life—and to imply an extraterrestrial threat—while simultaneously protecting advanced technology by managing the public perception of it. This is a classic *Sonderkampf* of a *Weltanschauungskrieg*.

Moreover, as we shall discover in the next section of this book, the postwar Nazis are working hand-in-hand with the American corporate elite after the war, which elite helped place the Nazis into power before the war. As we discovered in the previous chapter, the postwar Nazi scheme to survive and eventually regain power focused precisely on re-forging these relationships. As most readers of this book are probably aware, one of the consistent goals of this Anglo-American corporate and banking elite has been to forge a global new world order, a global corporate fascist state, and thus, *this elite would have strong incentive to pursue, or acquiesce in, such a* ***Weltanschauungskrieg*** *itself*. Moreover, as we observed in the previous chapter, this elite had already established funding of psychological warfare studies in the United States through the mechanisms of the Ford, Carnegie, and Rockefeller foundations, and thus, had access to all the techniques that research discovered.

Vallee, in pondering similar questions, comes to a somewhat startling conclusion, namely, that from the standpoint of social engineering,

> *it doesn't matter any more whether flying saucers are real or not*. It still matters to me, of course, as an individual scientist. I have often stated, and I still believe today, that UFOs are real and technological. When I say it doesn't matter whether they are real or not, I am speaking **of their social impact.**
>
> You can find scholars whole will "prove" to you that the supernatural powers of Jesus Christ never existed. You can also find

> scholars who will "prove" to you that they did exist. Does it matter? Of course not! It only matters to the experts, who have staked their academic reputations on either side of the argument. *The effects of the belief in Jesus, the impact of the doctrine* based on the story of his life and death, are real enough. *Socially, historically, the consequences are beyond question.* I claim that the same now applies to flying saucers because *enough people believe in them, enough people believe that contact with them is possible, and enough people even believe that they have secretly achieved such contact.*[4]

Note the resemblance, in terms of the alchemical architecture of social engineering, between UFOs and religion, a parallelism we have already encountered with George Adamski and the other early contactees. Indeed, the fact that the later alleged Nazi "field propulsion saucers" of the Hannebu type so closely resemble Adamski's, and the fact that there are clear parallels between Adamski's "messages from ET" and Nazi doctrine, indicates the profound possibility that the whole Adamski affair was one large psychological operation, a possibility that increases dramatically when one recalls that Adamski's initial contacts were from the American military.

In short, what UFOs represent from the social engineering standpoint is a "veritable mass conversion" of "the public and media elite,"[5] for "the phenomenon serves as a vehicle for images that can be manipulated to promote belief systems tending to the long-term transformation of human society."[6] To put it succinctly, UFOs represent, for the psychological warfare specialist, an alchemical technology to transmute mankind himself into a philosophers' stone.

A. UFOs and the Social Engineering of a New Religion

We noted in chapter two the close resemblance of Adamski's alleged "messages" from extraterrestrials to the components of religion: an expectation of revelation, a "magisterium" appointed to deliver the message, and an implicit technological threat of impending apocalyptic judgment if humanity did not mend its ways and acquiesce to ET's "advice."

But according to Dr. Vallee, there is more to this parallel to religion than meets the eye, for the specific parallels between the UFO phenomenon and religion and myth are quite detailed, suggesting, again, that the phenomenon is

being manipulated precisely for the purpose of a transformation of the human psyche, both individual and social; it is being manipulated as a conditioning process:

> The most clear result was that the *phenomenon* behaved like a conditioning process. *The logic of conditioning uses absurdity and confusion to achieve its goal,* while hiding its mechanism. There is a similar structure in the UFO stories.
>
> I am beginning to perceive a coherent picture of the "flying saucer" phenomenon for the first time, now that I am pursuing the idea that UFOs may be a control system, and now that I am aware of their link to human consciousness. I still think there is a genuine technology at work here, causing the effects witnesses are describing. But I am not ready to jump to the conclusion that it is the technology of some kind of "spacemen."[7]

It is worth pausing to consider the implications of these remarks in some detail.

Notably, Vallee is alluding to the technique of *polarization*, of the deliberate obfuscation of data by the creation of two mutually opposed contexts by which to perceive and interpret it, thus conditioning a population. In this case, it is worth considering the stories of ET-human contact *in toto*. As we saw with Adamski and the early contactees, the "ETs" were essentially human, and the contacts themselves—notwithstanding the darker implications of their "message"—were fairly benign. But during the 1970s and 1980s, the ETs had morphed into robotic "grays" and reptilians, kidnapping their hapless victims, and subjecting them to a variety of invasive procedures that can only be described, from the human point of view, as a form of physical if not psychological torture. In both cases, however, a subtle "meme" is shared, namely, that humanity is helpless, its technology outclassed, and it must submit to the guidance of an elite. In the case of the later abduction stories, it is even said on many occasions that the behavior of the "ETs" is not quite rationalizable from a human perspective, and *ipso facto*, their intellect and moral understanding must be as superior to us as we to the animals. In any case, the meme remains the same. But throughout both types of contact it is important to recall that *polarization itself is a purely human technique of psychological operations.*

Vallee states this point about the aggregate effect over time of UFO contact stories with his customary directness:

> The social, political, and religious consequences of the experience are enormous if they are considered, not in the days or weeks following the sighting, but over the time span of a generation. Could it be that such effects are actually intended, through some process of social conditioning? Could it be that both the believers and the skeptics are being manipulated? Is the public being deceived and led to false conclusions by someone who is using the UFO witnesses to propagate revolutionary new ideas?[8]

A little further on, Vallee answers these questions in no uncertain terms:

> *I believe there is a machinery of mass manipulation behind the UFO phenomenon. It aims at social and political goals by diverting attention from some human problems and by* providing a potential release for tensions caused by others. The contactees are a part of that machinery. *They are helping to create a new form of belief:* an expectation of actual contact among large parts of the public. In turn this expectation makes millions of people hope for the imminent realization of that age-old dream: salvation from above, surrender to the greater power of some wise navigators of the cosmos.
>
> With the release of popular UFO movies, many people who previously were skeptics have begun to jump on this bandwagon from outer space. I wish them bon voyage. However, if you take the trouble to join me in the analysis of the modern UFO myths, you will see that human beings under the control of of a strange force that is bending them in absurd ways, forcing them to play in a bizarre game of deception. This role may be very important if changing social conditions make it desirable to focus the attention of the public on the distant stars while obsolete human institutions are wiped out and rebuilt in new ways. Are the manipulators, in the final analysis, nothing more than a group of humans who have mastered a very advanced form of power?
>
> **Let me summarize my conclusions thus far. UFOs are real. They are physical devices used to affect human consciousness. They may not be from outer space. Their purpose may be to**

> **achieve social changes on this planet, through a belief system that uses systematic manipulation of witnesses and contactees; covert use of various sects and cults; control of the channels through which the alleged "space messages" can make an impact on the public.**[9]

With these conclusions I wholeheartedly concur, for throughout my books on Nazi secret weapons, I have been at pains to show the terrestrial origins of the fantastic technology represented by their Bell project, at pains to "reverse engineer" the possible physics basis for it, and to show that they survived the war in a position secure and strong enough to continue that research independently of the victories Allied powers. In short, the ET hypothesis is simply not necessary as an interpretive template by which to rationalize Nazi achievements.

As I showed in the previous chapter, the Nazis before the war's end conceived and planned a vast psychological operation, a tactical *Sonderkampf* of a long range strategic *Weltanschauungskrieg* designed to restore Nazism to power, if the testimony of Otto Skorzeny is to be believed. I have also shown that, given Dr. Oberth's presence on the Bell project itself, his pronouncements regarding the extraterrestrial origins of UFOs should be greeted with some skepticism. These psychological operations, moreover, were conceived within the context of a *wider* operation to restore pre-war links between Nazism and the Anglo-American corporate and banking elite, an elite which, as we saw, itself privately funded much war-time psychological warfare research. Vallee's remarks thus testify to yet another aspect of this stratagem, and also strongly suggest that there is a *belief system* being put into play, a belief system we saw first enunciated with George Adamski, to whom we shall return in a moment.

For Vallee, the consequences of this social engineering, if left unchecked, are nothing less than global: "To let UFO speculation grow unchecked would only make the public an easy and defenseless prey to charlatans of all kind. It would mean that any organized group bent upon the destruction of our society could undermine it by skillful use of the saucer mythology…"[10]

But what exactly constitutes this mythology, this religion? What are its core beliefs or doctrines?

1. The Resemblance to Myths

In chapter two, I pointed out the parallel between Adamskian-type contactee mythos, and that of western religion itself. Vallee compiles a useful

catalogue of contactee beliefs:

> A catalogue of contactee themes, compiled from interviews I have conducted, includes the following:
>
> *Intellectual abdication*. The widespread belief that human beings are incapable of solving their own problems, and that extraterrestrial intervention is imperative to save us "in spite of ourselves." The danger in such a philosophy is that it makes its believers dependent on outside forces and discourages personal responsibility: why should we worry about the problems around us, if the Gods from Outer Space are about to solve them?
>
> *Racist philosophy*. The pernicious suggestion that some of us on the Earth are of extraterrestrial descent and therefore constitute a "higher race." The dangers inherent in this belief should be obvious to anybody who hasn't forgotten the genocides of World War II, executed on the premise that some races were somehow "purer" or better than others. **(Let us note in passing that Adamski's Venusian, the Stranger of the Canigou seen by Bordar, and many other alleged extraterrestrials were all tall Aryan types with long blond hair.)**
>
> *Technical Impotence*. The statement that the birth of civilization on this planet resulted not from the genius and ability of mankind, but from repeated assistance by higher beings. Archaeologists and anthropologists are constantly aware of the marvelous skill which the "Ancient Engineers" (to use L. Sprague de Camp's phrase) developed the tolls of civilization on all continents. No appeal to superior powers is necessary to explain the achievements of early culture. The belief expressed by the contactees reveals a tragic lack of trust on their part in human ability.
>
> *Social utopia*. Fantastic economic theories, including the belief that a "world economy" can be created overnight, and that democracy should be abolished in favor of Utopian systems, usually dictatorial in their outlook.[11]

Note that the themes of dictatorship, racial and technical superiority, and an off-planet origin for humanity from higher beings, and a social utopia, would all be memes or ideas well in keeping with the ideology both of Nazism, and, as we shall see in the next section, within certain circles of the American

corporate and banking elite, particularly those represented by the Ford and Rockefeller dynasties.

To these we may add the memes we discovered operative in Adamski's case:

> 1) The meme of *immanent revelation, or "disclosure;"*
> 2) The meme of "conversion," i.e., the claim of *some* to have had a special "Damascus road" revelation, ala St. Paul, with extra-terrestrials, and thus to constitute themselves part of a magisterium of illumination and truth, whose statements are to be taken on faith in the authority of their personal experience, as opposed to the "outside world" of skepticism and non-belief.

The last point cannot be pondered too long, for it is the standard technique of "the Three Great Yahwisms" or the three great monotheisms, which came, by claims of special revelation coupled with the "judicious application of force and terror"—in other words, by dint of a *psychological warfare operation*—to supplant the older *philosophia perrenis* of the cultures around them. In short, the Three Great Yahwisms *produced the same precise results of these later contactee revelations:*

> 1) A *social schism* between "truth" and "error" or "believer and infidel" or, in the case of contactees, believers and skeptics;
> 2) The requirement of a revelation to enforce the status of the former; and therefore,
> 3) An incipient introduction of unending *conflict* between the two groups;[12] and thus,
> 4) The fulfillment of a utopian or messianic expectation sometime in the future.[13]

Vallee is alive to the fact that there are parallels between religion in the proper sense, and contactee-ism, for in his view, the Mormon religion would be today viewed precisely as a contactee phenomenon.[14] Succinctly stated, a mere "physics" approach to the UFO phenomenon is inadequate, for the phenomenon encompasses wider aspects of social, alchemical transformation.[15]

On only one point would I perhaps disagree with Vallee, and that is that the ancient belief in a connection between humanity and extraterrestrials need

necessarily represent a connection with something *inhuman*, for as I have argued in other books, the possibility exists that we have "genetic cousins" of the genus homo out there, with whom we might be biologically connected.[16]

In any case, it is worth noting that what was yesterday's "contactee-counter-culture" is today's mainstream speculation as evidenced by a recently published NASA-sponsored academic paper entitled "Would Contact with Extraterrestrials Benefit or Harm Humanity?"[17] Papers such as this, plus the statements of prominent military or political leaders should be viewed against the backdrop of the existing psychological warfare operations, for they tend to legitimize the memes implanted in those operations, plus sow an element of confusion and doubt by fueling speculations that "the government knows more than it is telling."

So persistent are the memes of the contactee-abduction faith that it bears little distinction from the "elves, sylphs, and *lutins* of the Middle Ages."[18] Indeed, as Vallee notes, the details of abductions are consistent, not merely across several stories, but across the centuries, as in the famous case of Betty Hill, who was examined by "extraterrestrials" who inserted a long needle into her abdomen, a detail, he observes, is also found on a fifteenth century French calendar, the *Kalendrier des Bergiers*, which depicts demons "piercing their victims' abdomens with long needles."[19] This "continuum of belief" spans the whole period "from primitive magic, through mystical experience, the fairy-faith, and religion, to modern flying saucers"[20] to such an extent that even the ancient idea of chimerical offspring of humans and ETs is reproduced.[21] Again, the persistence of these themes, particularly in Nazism, strongly suggests that their recurrence in the context of the advanced technology represented by UFOs might be a component of Skorzeny's *Sonderkampf* which he conceived to operate "behind enemy lines" in conjunction with advanced technology.

2. The Three Effects of UFOs

Thus, according to Vallee, there are three components to the UFO phenomenon, each of them fitting, as we have suggested, the component features of a *Sonderkampf*, of a *Weltanschauungskrieg*:

> The first aspect is *physical.* The UFO behaves like a region of space, of small dimensions (about 10 meters), within which a very large amount of energy is stored. This energy is manifested by pulsed light phenomena of intense colors, by other forms of electromagnetic

> radiation, and by microwaves that create distortions of the witnesses' sense of reality.
>
> The second aspect is *psychological*. It is debatable whether anybody has seen the actual technology that supports the phenomenon. What is seen, and reported, is an *image*; that is, the *perception* of a UFO by a human witness. Reports of UFOs show all kinds of psychophysiological effects on the witnesses: perception distortions, unconscious barriers, and mental blocks. Witnesses also show evidence of suggestion and posthypnotic effects. Exposure to the phenomenon causes visions, hallucinations, physiological effects, and long-term personality changes.
>
> The third aspect is *social*. Belief in the reality of UFOs is spreading rapidly at all levels of society throughout the world.[22]

I suggest that the SS, of which Skorzeny was an officer—by its investigations of mind control techniques, by its ideological commitments to the idea of a "master race", by its study of occult manuscripts detailing mediaeval accounts of abductions and invasive procedures, by the belief in some of its quarters with an extraterrestrial link[23]—was in the perfect position to appreciate the significance of the technology it possessed for its ability to unite each of these three components in a psychological operation.

But is there a stronger case that can be made to connect psychological operations, UFO contactees, and Nazism? Indeed there is, and once again, it is Dr. Vallee who makes it.

3. The Nazi Connection: The Fascist Overtones of Adamski's Contactee Messages

Vallee begins by asking a logical question: if, as he suggests, there is a controlling intelligence manipulating the UFO phenomenon for its *social* impact, a group he calls The Manipulators", then could the goal be massive deception?

> I have given this name to the hypothetical agents who might cause the UFO contacts and engineer their effects. Everything now centers on their role, their identity, their designs. Who could they be? Alien beings coming from the end of the galaxy? Psychic entities from the "other side"? Automata controlled by some nonhuman consciousness? Holographic nightmares? But perhaps we are

> looking far away for something which is right under our nose: *could they simply be human?* Could they be masters of deception so skillful that they plan to counterfeit an invasion from space?[24]

Vallee contacted one of his sources within the American military, a Major Murphy, who then repeated, almost to the exact detail, the components of the Nazi flying saucer mythos!:

> "In 1943," he said, as we sat in his study, "we already had evidence that several countries were working on circular aircraft that they hoped to develop into secret weapons. The Germans were also doing advanced research on controlled electrical discharges and 'controlled lightning,' and tried to combine these things together.[25]

(Recall that in my rationalization of the physics behind the Bell device, that strong high voltage impulses—essentially controlled lightning—were used in the device.][26]

> When we invaded Germany, a lot of hardware fell into our hands, but the Russians had gotten most of the good stuff. Then people started seeing the modern UFOs in Sweden in 1946.
> …
> "And what does that have to do with UFOs or with rockets, or secret weapons? I asked rather brusquely.
>
> He took my outburst with patience. "On the surface, if you just look at a few isolated cases, like scientists arguing about UFOs, well, I agree it doesn't mean anything. *But suppose somebody had obtained a device by the end of the war, which perhaps wasn't a very effective weapon. Perhaps it couldn't fly very effectively, couldn't carry guns and bombs, but had other properties. For instance, it could emit radiation that caused paralysis and hallucinations as it flew over an area, so that witnesses exposed to it would think they saw the phantasms of their own imagination.* Did somebody test that kind of a device in Sweden in 1946, and in the States in 1947, and find it to be ineffective as a flying machine, but very useful as a means of propaganda? Has such a group already understood what UFOs were, and are they confusing the issue by simulating UFO waves? Or is the entire phenomenon under their control?[27]

Note that the Bell, still in the mid-to-late 1940s in a prototypical stage of development, would well fit the requirements of a technology that was not yet perfected as a flying machine or a weapon.

The conversation then quickly comes directly to the point, and the point is the Nazi possibility, as "Major Murphy" then continues:

> You need to face all the possibilities. You have to draw the consequences. Someone may have solved the (UFO) problem. perhaps there is an elegant solution to multidimensional travel, and it is being applied. I am not a physicist. You should ask your theoretician friends what they think. I can only tell you that silent, disk-shaped flying machines can be built. If they are equipped with the right devices, they can create astonishing effects and be reported as flying saucers. I wish I still had my files on the German experiments.
>
> Suppositions, I thought. Assumptions. We're going to need more than that to explain the UFO problem. "Major, I can't believe that some Nazi group had managed to survive secretly with this kind of technology in its power."[28]

But Vallee himself subsequently presents precisely the prospect of a hidden international group doing precisely that!:

> The institutions created to carry them out are still in existence, with their privileged communications channels, their hidden sources of procurement and capital, their recruiting procedures. The answer to the question, "Could such an international group *fake, use, or manipulate* UFO activity?" has to be *YES*. The argument that such a secret could not be kept very long is not tenable.[29]

Ponder this conclusion carefully, for as I have consistently argued in previous books and presented evidence here, the Nazis not only survived the war as an intact extraterritorial state,[30] but they did so with enough capitalization and organization to continue advanced postwar research projects,[31] and, if Skorzeny is to be believed, with a plan for psychological operations in conjunction with that technology.

It is in this connection that Adamski's Fascist and Nazi connections should be viewed, for they raise considerably the possibility that the whole

affair was a psychological warfare operation of some sort:

> According to some of my own informants, contactee George Adamksi had prewar connections with American fascist leader William Dudley Pelley, who was interned during the war. Another seminal contactee, George Hunt Williamson (whose real name is Michel d'Obrenovic), was associated with Pelley's organization "Soulcraft," in the early fifties. In fact, Pelley may have put Williamson in touch with Adamski. other associates of Williamson during the great era of the flying saucers were such contactees as John McCoy and the two Stanford brothers, Ray and Rex.
>
> The connections between all these men, who have been influential in shaping the UFO myth in the United States, are quite intricate. William Dudley Pelley, who died in 1965, was the leader of the *Silver Shirts*, an American Nazi group which began its activities about 1932. Its membership overlapped strongly with Guy Ballard's "I Am" movement. Pelley declined to join the other fascist groups in their support for Congressman Lemke in 1936, standing on his own in Indiana as a "Christian Party" candidate. His opposition to Roosevelt increased until his eight-year internment for sedition in 1942. After the war, he started an occult group, *Soulcraft*, and published a racist magazine called *Valor*. He also wrote the book *Star Guests* in 1950, a compilation of automatic writing reminiscent of the *Seth Material.* [32]

Such Fascist links go a long way to explaining why in so many abduction-contactee circles that there is such a heavy emphasis "on the existence of 'superior races,'[33] of people with chosen missions, their references to Atlantis and ancient astronauts,"[34] and powerful symbols and social images of "universal peace, the exploration of space," and "a single world economy."[35]

But there is, as I suggested in the previous chapter, an American component to this global psychological warfare game as well, and Vallee is quite alive to it:

> My guess is that someone deep within the U.S. government structure is using the stories of crashed saucers to hide something else. The Pentagon is clearly in possession of the world's most extensive collection of UFO photographs and films, electromagnetic

> recordings, and radar reports. But *data is not information.* At some point the public relations arm of the Air Force was tasked with the deliberate spreading of confusion and disinformation about UFOs. It used its own officers and its public relations agencies… to spread the rumors, making a deliberate effort to enlist the UFO amateur groups in support of various forgeries… They used their assets in Hollywood and in the publishing world to initiate the rumor that the United States had recovered crashed saucers. My ufologist friends should awaken to the fact that in one way or the other all the stories they are happily spreading about MJ-12 and the aliens originate with the Pentagon itself, a clear indication that they may have been planted in the first place.[36]

But that is not the only possibility that Vallee sees as emanating from the American side:

> Or there could be a deeply buried renegade group of believers with extreme political and religious beliefs within the American intelligence community itself, piggybacking on classified channels to spread disinformation in support of their own peculiar goals. This hypothesis is not as farfetched as it might appear. In the last two decades federal investigators have uncovered and prosecuted several infiltration groups linked to various cults such as Reverend Moon's sect, Scientology, or the shadowy LaRouche organization. In any case, we must realize that those who claim to expose a cover-up may be the very tools of that cover-up, and we must look for the truth in a different direction.[37]

And one of those directions must surely be the fact that U.S. intelligence, in the wake of the "bargain" struck between OSS Station chief in Zurich, and later CIA director Allen Dulles, and the then-head of Nazi military intelligence in the East, General Reinhard Gehlen, resulted in a large segment of the CIA being the home to precisely such a rogue group, with precisely such extreme ideological beliefs.

The end result of these psychological and social engineering operations are, for Vallee, full of dire portent, for "They also suggest that our civilization may be headed for very serious trouble, with irrational forces tearing apart the old structures and replacing them by the blind institutions of inhuman

beliefs."[38] Indeed, Vallee notes that the "potential discovery of extraterrestrial life", or even *the manufactured appearance of it*,

> …Would help in transcending local conflicts and in achieving within a single generation behavioral changes that might otherwise take a hundred years to complete. If this is in fact the contribution of the UFO phenomenon, then we are in fact dealing with one of history's major transitions.[39]

And this, is, in fact, the goal of psychological warfare, namely to achieve a victory over an enemy without firing a single shot.

4. The UFO as an Alchemical, Psychotronic Technology

Before concluding this chapter, we must make final mention of something that must, to the attentive reader, by now become evident: much of the psychological warfare operations that we suspect is performed in conjunction with UFOs is for the purpose of social engineering, and thus, relies for its success by "carefully borrowing its concepts from basic human archetypes in order to force a global behavioral change."[40] It goes without saying that the study of psychological archetypes was the cornerstone of Jungian analysis, and that Carl Gustav Jung was, himself, a supporter of the Nazis. As such, for Vallee, UFOs represent a kind of alchemical psychotronic technology, i.e., a technology designed not only to act physically, but also upon human consciousness.[41] Given all the evidence and data presented thus far, all the conditions are there—from the study of psychological archetypes, to the occult doctrines of extraterrestrial-human origins and descent, to the use of a prototypical technology, to allow both the American and Nazi components of a postwar breakaway civilization to conduct psychological warfare operations to promote its distinctively different *ideology* and world order.

It remains to be seen, in the final section of this book, if indeed the other prerequisites for such a breakaway civilization can be met, but before we can turn to that, we must summarize the results of the first two sections.

Carl Gustav Jung, Founder of the Psychologcial Archetypes Theory of Analysis

French Scientist and Ufologist Dr. Jacques Vallee

[1] Jacques Vallee, *Messengers of Deception: UFO Contacts and Cults* (Daily Grail Publishing, 2008), p. 68.

[2] Ibid., p. 223.

[3] Jacques Vallee, Messengers of Deception: UFO Contacts and Cults (Daily Grail Publishing, 2008), p. 53.

[4] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, pp. 54-55, italicized emphasis in the original, boldface emphasis added.

[5] Ibid., p. v.

[6] Ibid., p. vi.

[7] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 7, emphasis added.

[8] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 9. See also Vallee's remarks in *Passport to Magonia:*

"What does it all mean? Is it reasonable to draw a parallel between religious apparitions, the fairy-faith, the reports of dwarf-like beings with supernatural powers, the airship tales in the United States in the last century, and the present stories of UFO landings?

"I would strongly argue that it is—for one simple reason: *the mechanisms that have generated these various beliefs are identical*. Their human context and their effect on humans are constant. And it is my conclusion that the observation of this very deep mechanism is a crucial one. *It has little to do with the problem of knowing whether UFO's are physical objects or not*. Attempting to understand the meaning, the purpose of the so-called flying saucers, as many people are doing today, is just as futile as was the pursuit of the fairies, if one makes the mistake of confusing appearance and reality. The phenomenon has stable, invariant features, some of which we have tried to identify and label clearly. But we have also to note carefully the chameleon-like character of the secondary attributes of the sightings: the shapes of the objects, the appearances of their occupants, their reported statements, vary as a function of the cultural environment into which they are projected." (Jacques Vallee, *Passport to Magonia,* [Chicago: Contemporary Books, 1993), pp. 148-149.

Obviously, this would imply that the historical roots of such social engineering pre-date the Nazis, but such would require a book on its own to explore adequately, as the roots would be locked deep within esoteric societies and rare manuscripts. Here our focus remains on the modern manifestation of the phenomenon of the use of advanced technology for social engineering, represented by the Anglo-American elite and the Nazis.

One aspect of this story, again beyond the pale of this book, is the fact that the social engineering aspects of the story *change with the type of technology that accompanies it*: "The entire mystery we are discussing contains all the elements of a myth that could be utilized to serve political or sociological purposes, a fact illustrated by the curious link between the contents of the reports themselves and the progress of *human* technology, from aerial ships to dirigibles to ghost rockets to flying saucers—a link that has never received a satisfactory interpretation in a sociological framework." (Vallee, *Passport to Magonia*, p. 162, emphasis added).

[9] Valley, *Messengers of Deception*, pp. 20-21, all emphases in the original.

[10] Jacques Vallee, *Passport to Magonia: On UFOs, Folklore, and Parallel Worlds* (Chicago: Contemporary Books, 1993), p. 132.

[11] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, pp. 112-113.

[12] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 8: Vallee notes that the "space messages" created a "counter-culture" within wider society.

[13] For a fuller exposition of the social engineering aspects of the Three Great Yahwisms, see my and co-author Scott D. de Hart's *Altars, Alchemy, and the Apocalypse: A Grimoire of the Alchemical Agenda for the Transformation of Man* (Feral House, in press), chapter two.

[14] Vallee, *Messengers of Deceoption*, pp. 12-13.

[15] Ibid., p. 27.

[16] See my *The Cosmic War: Interplanetary Warfare, Modern Physics, and Ancient Texts* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2007), pp. 139-203;*Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men* (Feral House, 2011).

[17] Seth D. Baum, Jacob D. Haqq-Misra, and Shawn D. Domagal-Goldman, "Would Contact with Extraterrestrials Benefit or Harm Humanity?", *Acta Astronomica*, April 22, 2011.

[18] Vallee, *Passport to Magonia*, p. 57. Vallee's comments occur within a wider context which should be cited here, and its clear implications noted: "Yet in no way am I excluding the possibility that this controlling intelligence (behind the UFO-fairie phenomenon) is human, and I shall elaborate on this idea in later chapters. For this time being, let me simply state again my basic contention: the modern, global belief in flying saucers and their occupants is identical to an earlier belief in the fairy-faith. The entities described as the pilots of the craft are indistinguishable from the elves, sylphs, and *lutins* of the Middle Ages. Through the observations of unidentified flying objects, we are concerned with an agency our ancestors knew well and regarded with terror: we are prying into the affairs of the Secret Commonwealth."

In other words, Vallee is implying several significant things: (1) that there is a breakaway or secret civilization, and that it is very old, (2) it has been active throughout history, employing a variety of social engineering techniques in conjunction with the technologies and belief systems of a particular age, and (3) that the controlling intelligence behind this activity *may be human*. And that, of course, implies a hidden elite at work throughout human history to engineer mankind's consciousness, a theme I have explored in some of my books (See. *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance and Ancient Religion* (Feral House, 2010), pp. 159-205; *Genes, Giants, Monsters, and Men: The Surviving Elites of the Cosmic War and Their Hidden Agenda* [Feral House, 2011]: and, with Scott D. de Hart,*The Grid of the Gods: The Aftermoth of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples* [Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011]).

[19] Vallee, *Passport to Magonia*, p. 95.

[20] Ibid., p. 131.

[21] Ibid., p. 127.

[22] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, pp. 7-8.

[23] For the belief in the extraterrestrial link, see my *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 255-259.

[24] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 166.

[25] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 166.

[26] Joseph P. Farrell, *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell*, pp. 171-185, and Farrell, *Secrets of the Unified Field*, pp. 270-282.

[27] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, pp. 167-168, emphasis added.

[28] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 168.

[29] Ibid., p. 226, all emphases in the original. It should be noted that the argument that such a secret could not be kept for that period of time was one of the arguments heard in some circles of Roswell research. See my *Roswell and the Reich*, pp. 97-99.

[30] See my *Nazi International*, pp. 1-43.

[31] Ibid., 249-350.

[32] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 217.

[33] Ibid., p. 211. Vallee connects the racist theme to, among others, Jack Parsons and the founding of the Jet Propulsion Laboratory. Yet another "meme" associated with UFOs and ETs is that of blood sacrifice, this time in the form of the famous animal mutilations also commonly reported in conjunction with UFO activity (see Vallee, op. cit., pp. 202-203, for a connection even to human sacrifice.)

[34] Ibid., p. 59

[35] Ibid., p. 60.

[36] *Vallee, Revelations: Alien Contact and Human Deception* (Ballantine Books, 1991), p. 91.

[37] Ibid., pp. 91-92.

[38] Ibid., p. 61.

[39] Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, p. 61.

[40] Ibid., p. 33, see also p. 48.

[41] Ibid., p. 45.

7
Patterns in the Fog and Mirrors: conclusions to Parts One And two

"…Just because a message comes from heaven doesn't mean it's not stupid." Dr. Jacques Vallee[1]

Thus far the principal activity that the breakaway civilization has exhibited has been that of a large psychological warfare operation. But we must now place this operation within the wider context of the requisites for a breakaway civilization itself, to ascertain more precisely what the purposes of the psychological warfare might be. We thus shall review here the requisites and activities of the breakaway civilization before proceeding to outline in the next section its structure, funding, and its other activities.

We noted in chapter one that there were six initial points about this civilization as outlined by Richard M. Dolan:

> 1) It has "loose connections at various points" to the open civilization(s) of humanity;
> 2) It possesses "great independence" from them;
> 3) It is secret, that is to say, its structure, components, and activities are largely hidden from the open civilizations of humanity; and finally and most importantly,
> 4) It holds a monopoly over certain scientific concepts and the technologies that result from them; thus,
> 5) It possesses a different, and perhaps even a *radically* different physics than the standard models of "public consumption" physics, and thus, possesses different principles of engineering and technology.
> 6) A breakaway civilization, having monopolies over advanced technologies and theoretical science, will likely employ that technology in covert activities;
> 7) It will seek to *cloak* those activities, if discovered, behind stories and fabrications of a different origin for the technologies, lest the knowledge become accessible publicly, and end the monopoly of the breakaway civilization.

I believe enough evidence has been presented thus far to show that the breakaway civilization has been engaging in a psychological operation with respect to at least *some* UFO and contactee activity, and that this operation was likely born in the closing days of World War Two and conceived by the Nazis in conjunction with the technologies represented by the Bell and similar projects, and that this operation was also taken over and controlled by the American component of the breakaway civilization after World War Two. But the concept of *Weltanschauungskrieg* strongly suggests that elements of Nazi ideology formed components of this operation, and indeed, as we have seen, the technology itself was conceived as an alchemical or "psychotronic" technology to effect a social transformation. Adamski's contactee visitations have all the hallmarks of aspects of this ideology, and moreover, Adamski's associates were themselves connected to Fascism.

Adamski's contactee stories also planted the memes of UFOlogy for the first time, which memes have remained well-embedded within the field since that time, notwithstanding the fact that most UFOlogy now shies away from Adamski's claims. These memes may be viewed as a kind of "UFO Yahwism," complete with its own magisterium of "experiencers" who, like St. Paul, have had a "Damascus road experience," but this time with extraterrestrials, and who, due to that experience, can claim the status of prophet or apostle to some extent. Additionally, this "meme" also carries with it two assumptions also implicit within Yahwism, namely, a "social schism" between believers and infidels (or skeptics), and a belief in a future apocalyptic revelation or "disclosure," which, it is to be noted, *is brought to pass by the possessors and wielders of the technology itself, be they ET or humans.* Given the Fascist overtones of Adamski's contactee story, this should give one pause.

The rise of the Nazi UFO mythos at approximately the same time as the alleged Adamski contactes is, in our opinion, not accidental, but rather, both aspects form components of one operation, in that both emerge with the appearance of coordinated efforts after the "historical gap" from the end of the war to the emergence of the mythos. We must also factor into this context the disclosure of Dr. Ronald Richter's "fusion" project in Argentina during the same period,[2] plus the fact that in the case of the Paperclip Nazis' pronouncements on the extraterrestrial origin of UFOs, at least Dr. Herman Oberth was lying, given his connection to the Bell project.

But as we saw in chapter one, according to Dr. Quigley, there are three other requisites for a civilization:

1) A civilization must be so organized as to invent new things or techniques of doing things.
2) A civilization must possess a *means of the accumulation of surplus.* For our purposes, this will mean that we must look for mechanisms or, as Quigley calls them, "instruments" of funding for such inventions that are relatively stable and secure, but, by the nature of the case, that are also relatively secret;
3) Any civilization, including a breakaway civilization, must also be organized so that accumulated surplus is used to pay for, or utilize, the invented technologies or techniques.

These requirements occur within a matrix involving six levels:

1) military,
2) political,
3) economic,
4) social,
5) religious, or as we shall see in this book, ideological,
6) intellectual

Viewed in this fashion, it is clear that the psychological operation outlined in this section evidences the operation of a group—a civilization—at the military, religious (Adamski) and intellectual (Nazism and its doctrines), level.

We must now examine in the next section whether or not evidence exists for a hidden group or groups to fulfill the conditions of (1) invention, (2) accumulation of surplus, and (3) expenditure of the surplus on black projects, including psychological warfare operations.

Here again, Quigley becomes crucial to point the way, for as noted in chapter one, other hallmarks of civilization include the following things:

1) the ability to collect taxes, or tribute;
2) a military that is subject to the "government" of the civilization;
3) the ability to compartmentalize functions of government.

Here it is well worth recalling that Quigley distinguished clearly between *parasitic* and *producing* civilizations. As we shall now discover in the next section, the breakaway civilization is a mixture of both types, and as we shall also discover, it has yet two other factions besides the Nazi faction, for there is

a strong Anglo- American corporate elite faction, and also a strong international criminal syndicate…

[1] *Vallee, Messengers of Deception,* p. 57.

[2] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Nazi International,* p. 249ff.

Part Three:
The Historical, Geographic, and Financial Matrices of the Breakaway Civilization

"I.G. Farben's joint chairman Hermann Schmitz was crucial to the activities of The Fraternity… He became a close friend of Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht, who introduced him to the idea of a world community of money that would be independent of wars and empires."
Charles Higham,
Trading with the Enemy, p. 130.

"*There exists a shadowy government with its own Air Force, its own Navy, its own fundraising mechanism, and the ability to pursue its own ideas of the national interest, free from all checks and balances, and free from the law itself."*
Senator Daniel K. Inouye (D-HW), during the Iran-Contra scandal, cited in Webster Tarpley, 9/11 *Synthetic Terror: Made in USA*, p. 5.

8

The Financial Matrix: Corporations, Criminal Syndicates, and the Financing of the Breakaway Civilization

"The keynote speech of America First was delivered by acting chairman General Robert E. Wood on October 4,1940, before the Chicago Council on Foreign Relations. General Wood contended that totalitarian states could not be destroyed by war and that a German-dominated Europe would not destroy our foreign trade. Intervention in the war must be avoided at all costs. General Wood was chairman of Sears Roebuck, whose president, Donald Nelson, was head of the War Production Board." Charles Higham[1]

By any standard of analysis, the Third Reich was a breakaway society; it had been mid-wifed into existence by a variety of secret societies with ideological beliefs at variance with, and even counter to the Western Civilization that surrounded it, and the Nazis pursed these beliefs at the point of a gun. It conducted psychological operations—*Weltanschauungskrieg*—with all the components thereof, including terrorism—against its own people in an effort to convert the mass consciousness into compliant servants of those doctrines. It fulfilled one complex requirement of a breakaway civilization by its very existence, for it was both a productive, and parasitic, society.

And the Nazi Reich- along with its American opponent overseas—had invented yet another crucial component of the breakaway civilization, for like America, it had created vast and secret bureaucracies, with their own infrastructures independent of the state itself to conduct secret research into advanced technologies, and to bring those technologies into existence. Indeed, Reich Armamants Minister (*Reichrüstungsminister*) Albert Speer complained of the creation of this vast and hidden "state within a state" in a book published just a few years prior to his death:

> In the spring of 1944 Hitler approved of Himmler's proposal to build an SS-owned industrial concern in order to make the SS permanently independent of the state budget….. (Hitler) wanted to secure a position for the SS that would keep it independent of the state and the Party. In case a successor should try to use the state budget as an instrument to curtail the power of the SS and Gestapo, *Hitler wanted to create a financial source to provide the SS with its own budget.*[2]

In other words, Hitler wanted to create a *black budget*, doubtless in an effort to mask the vast secret weapons research being conducted within Himmler's SS, and in coordination with the slave labor available in the concentration camps. Of course, by the time Hitler gave his formal approval to this, the process had already been underway for a number of years.

Nonetheless, this creation of a "state within the state" highlights crucial structural components of the breakaway civilization that we will discover being duplicated after the war:

> 1) A nexus between *intelligence* agencies, in this case the SS's vast array of security agencies: the*Reichsicherheithauptamt,* (RSHA) the *Sicherheitdienst* (SD), the Gestapo, and so on, and the corporations conducting the actual research and production. Here one need only think of how these relationships are encapsulated at Auschwitz, where I.G. Farben maintained an enormous production facility, in direct liaison with the SS-run camp. This facility, I have argued elsewhere, was for the enrichment of uranium and other radioactive isotopes.[3]
> 2) An instrument of independent finance that is hidden; and
> 3) Facilities not generally known or accessible to the general public.

In exploring the most crucial component of the breakaway civilization, finance, it is therefore vital to note that this complex story has three broad phases:

> 1) The pre-war nexus and relationships between large German and American corporations and banking houses, a relationship that we shall call "The Fraternity," following Charles Higham's terminology
> 2) The wartime creation of vast hidden bureaucracies and infrastructure to conduct its research and production; and,
> 3) The post-war reeastablishment of the nexus of relationships, and the possibilities of factional infighting within that structure.

In our examination in this chapter, we shall concentrate on the first and third of these points, leaving the second point to a later chapter, for the creation of the infrastructure of this breakaway civilization fulfills—in a very odd fashion—Quigley's distinction of "core" and "peripheral" societies within a civilizaiton. Additionally, as our examination in previous chapters focused on

psychological warfare operations, our focus now becomes centered on the other component activities of this breakaway civilization:

> 1) Its instruments for the generation of surplus, i.e., the instruments of financing its activities. In this respect, we note that there are three basic sources of funding, all interlocked and evident within the above pre-war and post-war patterns of relationships:
> a) Overt funding from state budgets;
> b) Covert, or "black budget" funding that is "off-the-books"of official budgets, or whose items are hidden from scrutiny; and
> c) Criminal, or underground and *completely independent*sources of funding. This will be particularly evident in the post-war period.
> 2) Its sponsorship of terrorism as a component of its psychological warfare;[4]
> 3) Its instruments for the *invention* of technology, i.e., the basic bureaucratic structure of its research.

We have already noted in previous chapters that the Nazis deliberately planned to reconstitute the pre-war nexus of relationships with the American corporate world in the post-war period, supplemented by vast intelligence exchanges highlighted by the bargain between Allen Dulles and German General Reinhard Gehlen. Thus, any history or hypothetical reconstruction of a breakaway civilization that does not take into account these Nazi plans is perforce a flawed history and reconstruction.

A. The Pre-War Tapestry

1. The Central Ideological Component: The "Empire of Money"

Before the war, Hitler's Reichsbank President, Dr. Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht, moved in the elite circles of American and German corporate and banking power, to such an extent that he was convinced that the power of high finance could lead to "a world community of money that would be independent of wars and empires."[5] Schacht, who had imbibed these ideas from the American financial elite, passed them on to his friends, Carl Krauch and Hermann Schmitz, whom he aided to found the huge I.G. Farben chemicals cartel, a cartel so large and powerful that when one says "Nazi War Machine," one is essentially talking about I.G. Farben.[6] This idea of a "world community" or "empire" of money is already a significant clue and argument

that these Tsars of corporate cartels and high finance already viewed themselves as a distinct social entity, as a breakaway "civilization," able, and willing, to influence the rest of the world according to their designs.

For example, Carl Krauch, the founder of I.G. Farben, was encouraged by Schacht to develop a series of crucial friendships in England and the United States, always aiming unerringly for the greatest powers. One of his earliest allies was Walter Teagle of Standard Oil, who shared his views on international financial solidarity. Another was Edsel Ford, son of Henry Ford.

> In 1929, Schmitz, his nephew, Max Ilgner, Walter Teagle, Edsel Ford, and Charles E. Mitchell of the ever-reliable National City Bank jointly set up the American Farben organization known as American I.G./Chemical Corp. Hermann Schmitz became president, with his brother Dietrich delegated to take over in his absence in Europe….
>
> In 1931, President Herbet Hoover received Schmitz at the White House. Hoover shared Schmitz's attitude toward Russia: that it must be crushed.[7]

Such links between large American corporations and banks and the huge German cartels were a common feature of pre-war financial arrangements.

a. Dr. Quigley Again

Here we must return to Dr. Quigley once again, and to the *purpose* for these arrangements, for in creating them, the German and American factions of this "empire of money" were, in effect, establishing the long-term structure of the breakaway civilization, as the Nazis made it a deliberate component of their plans to survive the war intact as a major though extra-territorial influence in global affairs. In short, the *German and American factions of this empire of money existed before the war. What was new during and after the war, was the injection of Nazism as yet another contending faction within it, with all its ideological and covert operations commitments.* It is therefore crucial to one's understanding of the breakaway civilization to have an understanding of the pre-war structure of these arrangements.

Quigley's views on these matters were expressed in his *opus magnum, Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in Our Time,* a book that has become something of a "bible" for conspiracy theorists ever since its publication by the MacMillan publishing house— related to the British Prime Minister of that name—in 1966. Quigley had no hesitations about revealing

his “insider knowledge” of the machinations of the international bankers and corporate cartels:

> There does exist, and has existed for a generation, an international Anglophile network which operates, to some extent, in the way the radical Right believes the Communists act. In fact, this network, which we may identify as the Round Table Groups, has no aversion to cooperating with the Communists, or any other groups, and frequently does so. I know of the operations of this network because I have studied it for twenty years and was permitted for two years, in the early 1960s, to examine its papers and secret records. I have no aversion to it or to most of its aims and have, for much of my life, been close to it and to many of its instruments. I have objected, both in the past and recently, to a few of its policies (notably to its belief that England was an Atlantic rather than a European Power and must be allied, or even federated, with the United States and must remain isolated from Europe), but in general my chief difference of opinion is that it wishes to remain unknown, and I believe its role in history is significant enough to be known. [8]

Heady, powerful words indeed from a tenured professor at Georgetown, for these were not the ravings of some “lunatic fringe” conspiracy theorist, but of a man very much a part of the academic establishment.

The aims of this group—and we shall deal with its American and British components in a moment before turning our attentions to the German one—was, according to Quigley, “largely commendable,” namely, “to coordinate the international activities and outlooks of all the English-speaking world into one...”[9] Elsewhere, however, Quigley is less euphemistic:

> In addition to these pragmatic goals, the powers of financial capitalism had another far-reaching aim, nothing less than to create a world system of financial control in private hands able to dominate the political system of each country and the economy of the world as a whole. *This system was to be controlled in a feudalist fashion by the central banks of the world acting in concert, by secret agreements arrived at in frequent meetings and conferences. The apex of the system was to be the Bank for International Settlements in Basle, Switzerland, a private bank owned and controlled by the*

> *world's central banks,* which were themselves private corporations. Each central bank, in the hands of men like Monague Norman of the Bank of England, Benjamin Strong of the New York Federal Reserve Bank, Chales Rist of the Bank of France, and Hjalmar Schacht of the Reichsbank, sought to dominate its government by its ability to control Treasury loans, to manipulate foreign exchanges, to influence the level of economic activity in the country, and to influence cooperative politicians by subsequent economic rewards in the business world.[10]

Note the mention of feudalism, for this is a crucial component of the longer-term story, one which I hope to address in a future book.

For our purposes of the moment, however, we note the crucial role played by the Bank of International Settlements in Basle, a point to which we shall return shortly. But to understand its central role in the tapestry of pre-World War Two financial arrangements, we need to look closer at the context of those instruments of power that Quigley surveys.

> The chief backbone of this organization grew up along the already existing financial cooperation running from the Morgan Bank in New York to a group of international financiers in London led by Lazard Brothers.[11]

The London branch of this network was headed by Lord Milner, who founded a number of banks that would eventually become one of Britain's largest, the Midland Bank.[12] Milner placed his disciples and associates in key positions throughout Great Britain, including "the editorship of *The Times*, the editorship of *The Observer*," various banks, and the Universities of Oxford and London.[13]

The end of the First World War necessitated that this system be extended throughout the British Commonwealth, and accordingly, front groups for this Empire of Money were established in the various Commonwealth nations.[14]

> This front organization, called the Royal Institute of International Affairs, had as its nucleus in each area the existing submerged Round Table Group. In New York it was known as the Council on Foreign Relations, and was a front for J.P. Morgan and Company…

> The New York branch was dominated by the associates of the Morgan bank. For example, in 1928 the Council on Foreign Relations had John W. Davis as president, Paul Cravath as vicepresident, and a council of thirteen others, which included Owen D. Young, Russell C. Leffingwell, Norman Davis, *Allen Dulles,* George W. Wickersham, Frank L. Polk, Whitney Shepardson, Isaiah Bowman, Stephen P. Duggan, and Otto Kahn…
>
> The academic figures have been those linked to Morgan, such as James T. Shotwell, Charles Seymour, Joseph P. Chamberlain, Philip Jessup, Isaiah Bowman and, more recently, Philip Moseley, Grayson L. Kirk, and Henry M. Wriston. The Wall Street contacts with these were created originally from Morgan's influence in handling large academic endowments. In the case of the largest of these endowments, that at Harvard…
>
> Closely allied with this Morgan influence were a small group of Wall Street law firms, whose chief figures were Elihu Root, John W. Davis, Paul D. Cravath, Russell Leffingwell, the *Dulles brothers* and, more recently, Arthur H. Dean, Philip D. Reed, and *John J. McCloy.*[15]

We shall return to the Dulles brothers, and in particular, to Allen Dulles, in a moment.

It is crucial to note that the "Empire of Money," both in its British and American branches, had after the First World War made deep penetrations into the most prestigious academic institutions in each country, and thus, exercised influence over what Quigley himself would call the "instruments of invention." Effectively, the same system and structural alliances were mirrored in each country. For example, the Morgan faction—and it is important to understand by this time this also meant the Morgan-Rockefeller faction[16]—had set up in Princeton a reasonable copy of the Round Table Group's chief Oxford headquarters, All Souls College. This copy, called the Institute for Advanced Study, and best known perhaps, as the refuge of Einstein, Oppenheimer, John von Neumann, and George F. Kennan, was organized by Abraham Flexner of the Carnegie Foundation and Rockefeller's General Education Board after he had experienced the delights of All Souls while serving as Rhodes Memorial Lecturer at Oxford.[17]

To put it succinctly, the Empire of Money was founding, in each country, special instruments (to use Quigley's term) for all manner of advanced scientific study of everything from geopolitics and social engineering to physics. By its influence over the media of the time, it could thus also engage directly in propaganda and other psychological operations.

With this context in mind, we turn to the German faction of this "Empire of Money, " and to a brief consideration of how Nazism penetrated and manipulated it for its own ends, and why the British and American factions would have *allowed* such an arrangement to exist in the first place.

2. The Nazi Bank of International Settlements
a. The Problem of German War Reparations, the Dawes and Young Plans, and the Establishment of the BIS

As previously noted, the Bank of International Settlements in Basle, Switzerland, was the keystone in the arch of the Fraternity's attempt to influence international politics and finance. The reason why lies in the Versailles Treaty's imposition of war reparations on post-World War One Germany, an imposition that, in effect, made Germany pay for the entire war effort of the Allies. Germany, in other words, was mortgaged to the bankers who had loaned money to the Allies, and this, in effect, meant that Germany was mortgaged to the *American* faction of this international Empire of Money, for American banks were during the war the only banks with the credit and reserves to loan money, the British and French banks having long exhausted themselves in the war effort.

The result of the war reparations was met with an unusual German response, or rather, an unusual response by the German faction of this international empire of money, and here, again, Quigley is a key, requiring the reader to read carefully between the lines:

> Instead of taxing and retrenching, the German government permitted an unbalanced budget to continue year after year, making up the deficits by borrowing from the Reichsbank. The result was an acute inflation. This inflation was not forced on the Germans by the need to pay reparations (as they claimed at the time) but by the method they took to pay reparations (or more accurately, to avoid payment). The inflation was not injurious to the influential groups in German society, although it was generally ruinous to the middle classes, and thus encouraged the extremist elements. Those groups whose

> property was in real wealth, either in land or in industrial plant, were benefitted by the inflation which increased the value of their properties and wiped away their debts (chiefly mortgages and industrial bonds).[18]

In 1923, the French responded to this provocation of being paid reparations with increasingly worthless Reichsmarks by seizing *real* wealth, and occupied Germany's industrial heart, the Ruhr Valley.

In response to *this,* the Germans simply refused to work, called a general strike, and effectively ruined the purpose for the French occupation in the first place. At this juncture, the Morgan-Rockefeller faction stepped in with the first of many schemes, the Dawes plan:

> The Dawes Plan, which was largely a J.P. Morgan production, was drawn up by an international committee of financial experts presided over by the American banker Charles G. Dawes. It was concerned only with Germany's ability to pay, and decided that this would reach a rate of 2.5 billion marks a year after four years of reconstruction. During the first four years Germany would be given a loan of $800 million and would pay a total of only 5.17 billion marks in reparations. This plan did not supersede the German reparations obligation. Thus Germany paid reparations for five years under the Dawes Plan(1924-1929) and owed more at the end than it had owed at the beginning.
>
> …
>
> Specifically, Germany was able to borrow abroad beyond her ability to pay, without the normal slump in the value of the mark which would have stopped such loans under normal circumstances. It is worthy of note that this system was set up by the international bankers and that the subsequent lending of other people's money to Germany was very profitable to these bankers.
>
> The only things wrong with the system were (a) that it would collapse as soon as the United States ceased to lend, and (b) in the meantime debts were merely being shifted from one account to another and no one was really getting any nearer to solvency… Nothing was settled by all this, but the international bankers sat in heaven, under a rain of fees and commissions.[19]

It is within this context that we may now turn to the Bank of International Settlements, its founding, and how it was subsequently used by the Nazis.

To handle all these shifting, shuffling debts, it was decided to create a "Central Bankers' Bank," the Bank of International Settlements in Basle, Switzerland, owned by "the chief central banks of the world." [20]

> In the final days of the system, these central bankers were able to mobilize resources to assist each other through the B.I.S., where payments between central banks could be made by bookkeeping adjustments between the accounts which the central banks of the world kept there. The B.I.S. as a private institution was owned by the seven chief central banks and was operated by the heads of these, who together formed its governing board. Each of these kept a substantial deposit at the B.I.S., and periodically settled payments among themselves (and thus between the major countries of the world) by bookkeeping in order to avoid shipments of gold.[21]

In other words, the mountain of debt incurred during World War One had far outstripped the ability of the gold standard to keep pace, and thus, under the crush of circumstances, it was abandoned in favor of yet a new central bank.

> As a matter of fact its establishment in 1929 was rather an indication that the centralized world financial system of 1914 was in decline. It was set up rather to remedy the decline of London as the world's financial center by providing a mechanism by which a world with three chief financial centers in London, New York, and Paris could still operate as one. The B.I.S. was a vain effort to cope with the problems arising from the growth of a number of centers. It was intended to be the world cartel of ever-growing national financial powers by assembling the nominal heads of these financial centers.[22]

Accounts could be handled simply by "shifting credits from one country's account to another on the books of the bank."[23] But here, Quigley is for once not telling the whole story.

b. The German Faction and the B.I.S.

The inspiration for the BIS came from none other than Dr. Hjalmar Schacht, later president of Hitler's Reichsbank.[24] And here the plot thickens, considerably:

> Sensing Adolf Hitler's lust for war and conquest, Schacht, even before Hitler rose to power in the Reichstag, pushed for an institution that would retain channels of communication and collusion between the world's financial leaders *even in the event of an international conflict. It was written into the bank's charter, concurred in by the respective governments, that the BIS should be immune from seizure, closure, or censure, whether or not its owners were at war.*[25]

But that was by no means all. For while the bank was originally and ostensibly created to handle the payments and transfers of war reparations between Germany and the former western Allies, "the Bank soon turned out to be the instrument of an opposite function. It was to be a money funnel for American and British funds to flow into Hitler's coffers and to help Hitler build up his war machine."[26]

Thus, by the time World War Two broke out in September 1939, the BIS was almost completely under the control of Hitler via his various proxies, and included among its directors the head of I.G. Farben(of course), Hermann Schmitz, Baron Kurt von Schröder, "head of the J.H. Stein Bank of Cologne and a leading officer and financier of the Gestapo; Dr. Walther Funk of the Reichsbank" and Emil Puhl.[27] And at the head of this, as president, "was the smooth old Rockefeller banker, Gates W. McGarrah, formerly of the Chase National Bank and the Federal Reserve Bank, who retired in 1933."[28]

As Charles Higham reports, after the Nazi annexation of Austria in 1938, and later its annexation of Bohemian Czechoslovakia in 1939, the gold reserves of those nations fell into Nazi hands. By this time, "the BIS had invested millions in Germany, while Kurt von Schröder and Emil Puhl deposited large sums in looted gold in the Bank."[29] In other words, the nexus for the postwar relationship between the Nazis and the Western banksters of London and New York was being created even before the war, and its principal mechanism was the BIS.

As the plundered gold of the former Czechoslovakia flowed into the BIS's vaults, it received a new president, the American Thomas Harrington McKittrick, "an associate of the Morgans and an able member of the Wall

Street establishment."[30] The collusion between the Nazis and the Western capitalists continued under McKittrick, for in 1940, sensing war looming between Germany and the U.S.A., McKittrick went to Berlin "and held a meeting at the Reichsbank with Kurt von Schröder of the BIS and the Gestapo. They discussed doing business with each other's countries if war between them should come."[31] An even more remarkable journey was undertaken by McKittrick in 1943, and with it, we see the beginnings of the outline of the shadowy postwar Nazi International beginning to emerge, and with it, the entrance of the third faction—the Nazis— into the postwar structure of the breakaway civilization:[32]

In the spring of 1943, McKittrick, ignoring the normal restrictions of war, undertook a remarkable journey. Despite the fact he was neither Italian nor diplomat and that Italy was at war with the United States, he was issued an Italian diplomatic visa to travel by train and auto to Rome. At the border he was met by Himmler's special police, who gave him safe conduct. McKittrick proceeded to Lisbon, whence he traveled with immunity from U-boats by Swedish ship to the United State. In Manhattan in April he had meetings with Leon Fraser, his old friend and BIS predecessor, and with the heads of the Federal Reserve Bank. Then McKittrick traveled to Berlin on a U.S. passport (!) to provide Emil Puhl of the Reichsbank with secret intelligence on financial problems and high-level attitudes in the United States.[33]

But just what was all this unusual travel for?

A hint is provided by looking at other pre-war Nazi-American business relationships, at meetings of the BIS in 1944, and at the July 1944 bomb plot against Adolf Hitler. We have already had occasion to mention the Gestapo man and banker Kurt von Schröder, who maintained business relationships with Standard Oil's Walter Teagle, with Winthrop Aldrich of the Rockefeller Chase Bank, and with Colonel Sosthenes Behn, head of the American international communications giant, International Telephone and Telegraph.[34] But von Schröder was not the only Nazi with such links. The head of I.G. Farben, and BIS board member Hermann Schmitz, had before the war cultivated a close relationship with none other than Walter Schellenberg, head of the SS's notorious *Sicherheitdienst*, the SD. And here the plot once again thickens:

> Army Intelligence documents declassified in 1981 show that Schellenerg discussed Schmitz as head of a Council of Twelve. The

> council would place Hitler under the protection and rulership of Himmler while the Fuhrer remained a prisoner of Berchtesgaden. Knowing that Schmitz was dedicated to Himmler and the Gestapo cause, Schellenberg plotted constantly toward this end. However, Himmler vacillated constantly. He could not bring himself to depose the Führer, nor did he expose Schellenberg to the Führer.
>
> The underlying purpose of the Schellenberg plan, revealed in the same recently declassified Army Intelligence report, was clearly to bring about the negotiated peace between Germany and the United States that was the overriding dream of The (banking) Fraternity.[35]

In other words, the Fraternity was manipulating behind the scenes to bring an end to the war between Germany and the Western Allies, leaving the Soviet Union to fend for itself.

But what of the American side of this? Enter McKittrick the BIS, and the Morgan-Rockefeller interests once again. In May of 1944, the board of BIS convened a meeting under McKittrick's oversight "to discuss such important matters as the $378 million in gold that had been sent to the Bank by the Nazi government after Pearl Harbor for use by its leaders after the war."[36] Of course, the Nazis had originally deposited the gold with the view that after they won the war, it would be available for their purposes after its conclusion. But as I wrote elsewhere, after the defeat at Stalingrad in 1943 and the later failure of the German offensive at Kursk in July of 1943,[37] the plans changed, but now it is to be noted, that while the *plans* changed according to the circumstances, the Nazi goal of survival and influence after the war did not, *nor did the structures of the financial arrangements they sought to employ in that purpose.* In short, the Nazis decided deliberately to go underground, to constitute themselves as a breakaway civilization, *and to do so in concert with and connection to the American corporate and banking elite.*

Meanwhile, the American faction of this nexus continued covertly to support the anti-Hitler resistance, in hopes of bringing to power a government in Germany with which it could negotiate a separate peace. The bomb plot against Hitler in July of that year, on the American side, was aided by ITT CEO Sosthenes Behn, with help from none other than Allen Dulles.[38]

We need to pause and consider the full implications of this little- known or appreciated fact. On the German side, the motivation of the anti-Hitler plotters was first of all, their inside knowledge of impending German success with the atom bomb,[39] their reluctance to allow Hitler the possibility of using

it, a possibility that would have brought severe Allied reprisals and the complete destruction of Germany. Secondly, this group wished to conclude a separate peace with the Western Allies to allow them to transfer military resources to the Eastern front, and stem the Soviet advance into Eastern Europe. With an atom bomb in their hands, the plotters assumed this would have given them negotiating leverage with the Allies.

This latter motivation squared well with the views of the American corporate elite, and hence, explains their willingness to aid in the plot. It does not, however, explain how the American faction planned to deal with the Roosevelt Administration, which had made the unconditional surrender of Germany its war objective. The answer to this reveals the only possibility that the American faction could have entertained: they hoped, with Hitler's removal, that Roosevelt's re-election chances later that year would be curtailed, and failing that, they may have had plans to otherwise remove him from office. In this respect, it should be recalled that the same corporate interests had, before America's entry into the war, had actually plotted a military coup to remove Roosevelt, a plot that was exposed by Marine Corps general Smedley Butler.

To put it succinctly, the American faction's cooperation with the Anti-Hitler faction of the Nazi government reveals the American component of the breakaway civilization. Dean Acheson, for example, stated that the BIS would be needed to help rebuild Germany after the war, and he could not have been oblivious to the heavy Nazi presence and influence in the bank.[40]

Indeed, as early as the summer of 1942, the BIS was functioning as the choke point for Nazi currency manipulations in anticipation of the Reich's defeat, in an effort to ensure the survival of the Party organization and its goals:

In the summer of 1942, Pierre Pucheu, French Cabinet member and director of the privately owned Worms Bank in Nazi-occupied Paris, had a meeting at the BIS with Yves Bréart de Boisanger, Pucheu told Boisanger that plans were afoot for General Dwight D. Eisenhower to invade North Africa. He had obtained this information through a friend of Robert Murphy, U.S. State Department representative in Vichy. Boisanger contacted Kurt von Schröder. Immediately, Schröder and other German bankers, along with their French correspondents, transferred 9 billion gold francs via the BIS to Algiers. Anticipating German defeat, they were seeking a killing in dollar exchange.

The collaborationists boosted their holdings from $350 to $525 million almost overnight. The deal was made with the collusion of Thomas H. McKittrick, Hermann Schmitz, Emil Puhl, and the Japanese directors of the BIS.[41]

In other words, the chairman of I.G. Farben, and senior members of the Reichsbank and Gestapo, were already laying the foundations for vast currency transfers, and a vast postwar financial empire, for the postwar Nazi International. Nazi deposits of gold—much of it looted and plundered from Europe and Holocaust victims—in the BIS allowed the Nazis to begin converting this gold to liquid foreign currency assets for operations after the war.[42]

We must now examine one particular group within the American faction must more closely…

3. The Rockefeller Link and Its Implications
a. Martin Bormann's Check-Cashing Episode Revisited

In my book, *The Nazi International,* I recounted a curious incident of an unusual check that was cashed in the early 1960s, revealed by the former CBS journalist, Paul Manning, an associate of CBS newsman Edward Murrow. Manning recorded the curious incident as follows, referring to FBI files on Martin Bormann's whereabouts in Latin America:…John Edgar Hoover assigned the investigation to his most experienced and skillful agent in South America, who proved that he was just that by eventually obtaining copies of the Martin Bormann files that were being held under strict secrecy by Argentina's Minister of the Interior in the Central de Intelligencia. When the file (now in my possession) was received at FBI headquarters, it revealed that the Reichsleiter had indeed been tracked for years. One report covered his whereabouts from 1948 to 1961, in Argentina, Paraguay, Brazil and Chile. *The file revealed that he had been banking under his own name from his office in Germany in Deutsche Bank of Buenos Aires since 1941; that he held one joint account with the Argentinian dictator Juan Perón, and on August 4, 5, and 14,1967, had written checks on demand accounts in First National City Bank (Overseas Division) of New York, The Chase Manhattan Bank, and Manufacturers Hanover Trust Co., all cleared through Deutsche Bank of Buenos Aires.*[43]

The implications of this event are staggering, and reveal the full extent of the breakaway civilization, for on the one hand, it is apparent that official agencies

of the U.S. government are committing resources to discover the whereabouts of the infamous Nazi Party *Reichsleiter,* yet, clearly his existence is known to private American banking interests connected with the Rockefeller interests!. In other words, those interests are acting counter to the goals and objectives of the American government, and to that extent, symbolizes the American component of the breakaway civilization. It therefore requires a closer look.

b. The Pre-War Rockefeller Group-Nazi Links

The Nazi-Rockefeller links suggested by "the Bormann check- cashing affair" in fact pre-dated the war, and were maintained during the war, by both parties. The Chase bank, at the time of the American entry into World War Two, was the United States' largest and by any accounts its most powerful bank. It was the lynchpin in the enormous Rockefeller corporate empire, as it handled the accounts for the Rockereller empire's other large corporate concern, Standard Oil. Additionally, it was the bank that also handled ITT's accounts, the accounts for the American branches of I.G. Farben and its subsidiaries, and thus, had close contacts with the BIS, and the corporate and Gestapo elite of Nazi Germany.[44]

Here, as Charles Higham's meticulous research points out, the relationship becomes very deeply intertwined with the Gestapo, and the BIS, and reveals even more sinister postwar implications:

> As war approached, the links between the Rockefellers and the Nazi government became more and more firm. In 1936, the J. Henry Schröder Bank of New York had entered into a partnership with the Rockefellers. Schröder, Rockefeller and Company, Investment Bankers, was formed as part of an overall company that *Time* magazine disclosed as being "the economic booster of the Rome-Berlin Axis." The partners in Schröder, Rockefeller and Company included Avery Rockefeller, nephew of John D., Baron Bruno von Schröder in London, and Kurt von Schröder of the BIS and Gestapo in Cologne. Avery Rockefeller owned 42 percent of Schröder, Rockefeller, and Baron Bruno and his Nazi cousin 47 percent. Their lawyers were John Foster Dulles and Allen Dulles of Sullivan and Cromwell. Allen Dulles (later of the Office of Strategic Services) was on the board of Schröder. Further connections linked the Paris branch of Chase to Schröder as well as the pro-Nazi Worms Bank

> and Standard Oil of New Jersey in France. Standard Oil's Paris representatives were directors of the Banque de Paris et des Pays-Bas, which had intricate connections to the Nazis and to Chase.[45]

The implications of the Rockefeller-Allen Dulles-BIS-Gestapo links revealed here are nothing less than staggering, for it was Dulles who, of course, negotiated the bargain with Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen, head of Germany's military intelligence group for all of Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union—the *Fremde Heere Ost*, or Foreign Armies East—the bargain that later left the immense Nazi military intelligence organization intact after the war, and still under Gehlen's operational command, while incorporating it as the "Soviet Desk" of the future CIA until such time as West Germany would assume jurisdiction over the organization.[46]

With the addition of the Rockefeller interests into this equation, and with the postwar creation of the various American intelligence agencies enacted by the 1947 National Security Act—the CIA and the NSA—means that both the Nazi International and the corporate and banking interests of the USA were not only influential within those organizations, but that those organizations constituted one nexus of interaction between them, in addition to the banking connections already surveyed. *The breakaway civilization had, in other words, created its own intelligence group, grafted an already existing Nazi one into it, and created a steady source of funding for it: the American taxpayer.*

In addition to this, the Rockefeller group maintained a network of interlocking directorships and relationships with I.G. Farben. The chairman of Standard Oil of New Jersey, Walter C. Teagle, for example, along with its president William S. Farish, maintained close ties with I.G. Farben's Hermann Schmitz, and actually became the director of American I.G. Chemical Corp, Farben's American subsidiary, and sat on its board along with Edsel Ford.[47]

This arrangement allowed I.G. Farben to protect its patents from seizure by the American government, by simply transferring them to Standard Oil joint ownership, with an actual agreement being signed in The Hague that after the war, regardless of its outcome, the patents would be returned to Farben.[48] In addition to this, the Rockefeller interests also began the first murky beginnings of yet another source of independent funding that will play such a prominent role later in this chapter as a source of covert funding, for it sponsored both legal and illegal drug smuggling through an allied corporate interest, the pharmaceutical company, Sterling Products.[49] This was done through airline connections between Europe and Latin America, chiefly

through the L.A.T.I. airline, via Brazil and Argentina, and by Standard Oil ships which had, under Farish's direction, changed registry from the U.S.A., to Panama. Under this flag, they were granted immunity from seizure by the then U.S. Under-Secretary of the Navy, James V. Forrestal, who additionally was a member of the Nazi-Rockefeller nexus, as a vice-president of the American Farben subsidiary, General Aniline and Film![50]

In other words, the postwar Nazi concentrations in Latin America had, by dint of the pre-war nexus between the American and German cartelists and corporate elite, ample protection for its activities. But there is yet another telling link between the American and Nazi factions in this history of this breakaway civilization and its activities:

c. The American and Nazi Elites: A Common Ideological Culture

It is a commonplace among researchers of the Rockefeller-Nazi connection that the two interests are divided by a common ideology, for on the American side of that equation, that corporate elite viewed itself *as* an elite both of *class* and of *race*, fit to rule over the vast masses of "human resources" in its corporate empires, while the same attitude prevailed in Nazism as well. Charles Higham aptly summarizes this ideological commonality: "They understood each other's language and their aims were common."[51]

But it goes beyond a common ideology, and again, into a common *goal and activity*. Researchers Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, in their seminally important work *The Nazi Hydra in America*, point out yet another connection not only in ideology but in actual scientific and sociological technology and practice by observing that the Rockefeller interest was an early sponsor of eugenics research and sterilization programs, which formed the model for the later Nazi race laws. Additionally, both factions sponsored actual "genetics" research.[52]

d. Oil: Beginnings of the Texas and Radical Islam Connections

There is yet another prewar nexus between the American corporate elite in general, the Rockefeller interests in particular, and the Nazis that is continued after the war, and this is the link between Standard Oil and the then emerging Texas oil industry.[53]

A similar nexus emerges during the prewar period between American petroleum interests, the Nazis, and radical Islam, an interest again fraught with

long-term implications for the activities of the breakaway civilization and its factions:

> From these sources, from German Foreign Office document 71/51181 (July 22, 1942) and from recently declassified secret reports prepared by British Intelligence on Walter Schellenberg of the Gestapo, it is possible to determine the extent of Nazi influence on (the house of) Ibn Saud in the middle of the war. The Grand Mufti of Jerusalem was, until the time of Italy's collapse as an Axis partner, living in Rome, working with the agents of Kurt von Schröder's friend and associate Ambassador Franz con Papen in Ankara, Turkey, to send out agents through the Arab states. In Saudi Arabia fanatical Arabs were trained as Nazis at German universities and schools. From a headquarters in a carpet shop in Baghdad, Dr. Fritz Grobba, German minister to Iraq, ran espionage rings, subsidized Arabic newspapers and clubs in the Saudi Arabian capital of Jidda. The German TransOcean New Agency functioned as an espionage and propaganda agency in Jidda. The Nazi spy Waldemar Baron von Oppenheim, until recently in the United States and Syria, was headquartered in Saudi Arabia. Many Nazis flocked in disguised as tourists or technicians. They constructed roads and built factories. They formed German-Arab societies and learned (the) Arab (sic) language so as to address crowds and whip them up into a fanatical support of Hitler. Ibn Saud, as always, played both ends against the middle, protesting admiration for Roosevelt and Churchill while authorizing his personal representative Rashid Ali El-Kilani to continue to represent him in Berlin and address the Moslem society there.[54]

Again, the implications here are profound, for such Nazi-radical Islamic contact could not have occurred without the knowledge and tacit approval of the large American and British petroleum interests on the Arabian peninsula, and this affords a clue into the postwar relationships we have seen emerging in the previous pages, for each faction—the Nazi and the American corporate faction—would view each other in different ways. The American faction would come to view its postwar Nazis as its compliant tools, as the soldiers on the ground to execute the tactical planning and operations it deemed necessary. Similarly, the Nazi faction would view its American corporate contacts as

compliant instruments to represent, and launder, its vast financial empire. It was a marriage strictly of convenience, as we shall now see in reviewing the postwar continuation and adjustment of these arrangements.

B. The Post-War Tapestry

The foregoing survey has been necessary to reveal just how, during the postwar period, the basic form and structure of the breakaway civilization's major factional relationships remained more or less intact.

1. Money Laundering and Blackmail

At one point, it was estimated that approximately 15,000 Nazis lived in the U.S.A. alone.[55] Additionally, the pre-war nexus between the Rockefeller interests and the corporate power structures behind Nazism were continued. Researcher and former Justice Department member John Loftus, for example, states that Chase Bank owned nearly a third of Thyssen-Krupp in 1973.[56] Thyssen, as is now well- known, had pre-war relationships with Prescott Bush and the Bush family, and of course, Krupp was Germany's notorious armaments maker.[57]

But the relationships go much deeper, and are inclusive of the activities of the breakaway civilization to cloak its postwar financial activities with the Nazis. In *The Nazi International* I briefly outlined the meeting held in August 1944, at the behest of Nazi Party Reichsleiter Martin Bormann, at the Rotes Haus Hotel in Strasburg. There, the Nazi and corporate leadership of Germany schemed the final stages of the strategic evacuation plan of the Nazi party, and its postwar survival as a kind of underground, extraterritorial state.[58] I also noted that when CBS journalist Paul Manning queried Allen Dulles on Bormann's whereabouts in Latin America, that Dulles indicated he was "on the right track." As I indicated in that book, the postwar investigations of the Nazi *Rotes Haus* meeting were anything but complete.

One reason for this "incompleteness" stems from the role of Sullivan and Cromwell, the prestigious Wall Street law firm, in representing U.S. businesses with Nazis ties, and in particular, to the role of one its most famous members, Allen Dulles, in that venture. The arrangement was convenient, for as Loftus notes, while some of the firm was representing corporations "whose assets had been seized under the Trading with the Enemy Act because they operated as Nazi fronts," other members of Sullivan and Cromwell

"volunteered as the Justice Department's prosecutors, officially titled the Alien Property Custodians."[59] Dulles, as OSS station chief in Zurich, also used his position "to protect himself and his clients from investigation for laundering Nazi funds back to America."[60] No wonder Bormann could count on the success of his flight capital plan, for before the war was even over, the financial links that had existed during the prewar period were being re-forged, as we have seen, exactly according to the Nazis' own postwar plans.[61]

But this is just the tip of the iceberg of postwar Nazi-American corporate relationships. Originally, President Roosevelt entrusted the postwar investigation of American-Nazi financial relationships—Operation Safehaven — to his Secretary of the Treasury, Henry Morgenthau. Morgenthau was, of course, the originator of the Morgenthau Plan, a notorious "revenge" document calling for the complete de-industrialization of Germany and its division into smaller merely agricultural states. He was replaced as the head of Operation Safehaven after the war by none other than Allen Dulles, who used his position to recruit Nazis. From there, it gets even murkier:

> Although Dulles destroyed the Safehaven index, a few of Morgenthau's original files escaped Dulles's shredder, and can be found in the wartime State Department POst Files. For example, in the Switzerland Post files I discovered the Operation Safehaven investigation of Dulles himself, where he was accused of laundering money for the Nazis…. The Safehaven files were stolen by Eleanor Dulles and given to the Zionist intelligence service. They then blackmailed Nelson Rockefeller into pressuring the Latin American nations to supply the extra votes in the UN to create the State of Israel.[62]

This is not yet the place to go into the Rockefeller-Latin America-Nazi nexus, but suffice it to say this episode is revealing of another interesting feature of the postwar structure of the breakaway civilization, for it is an indicator that within the corporate power structures revolving around New York and the City of London, there is a rupture, or fissure, between the Rockefeller interests and the Rothschild interests, a rupture revealed by the close relationships between the former and the Nazis, and it does not take a Nazi rocket scientist to figure out why that fissure exists.

2, Nazi Penetration of the West and the Potential of Captured Programs

The collusion elaborated above reveals yet another significant and crucial fact for the idea of a breakaway civilization, in that it discloses the extent to which official U.S. government agencies and official policy could be, and were, captured by external interests and agendas inimical to those of the government itself. We are, in short, looking at captured programs, and the beginnings of the existence of a parallel structure existing inside those programs and agencies, using them as a host, and for its own purposes. We have noted, for example, Dulles' recruitment of Nazis. These were recruited for the State Department's Office of Policy Coordination, headed by Frank Wisner,[63] in effect meaning that after Truman's 1948 upset victory over Republican Thomas Dewey, that there were two CIAs, the official one which hunted Nazis, and the other unofficial one, linked to Wisner and Dulles, that recruited them.[64] As Loftus notes, the very compartmentalized structure of American government agencies and intelligence functioned as a way of screening these Nazi programs and cloaking their activities.[65] And of course, once one enters into such arrangements with the Nazi devil, the possibility always exists that the Nazi component will turn on its American handlers and blackmail their compliance at the threat of the exposure of the whole program, as indeed did happen.[66]

One is consequently looking at the potential of captured programs in two senses, the first being the penetration of official agencies by a breakaway civilization comprised both of an American and of a Nazi component, and the second being the blackmail of the American component by the Nazi one, or vice versa, according to the dictates of circumstances of the moment.

3. The Breakaway Civilization, Radical Islam, and Psychological Warfare: Terrorism

One of the most controversial aspects of the postwar history of the breakaway civilization and its activities is John Loftus' research into the links between the American corporate elite, the Nazis, and the Muslim Brotherhood, links that continued up to the tragic events of 9/11, so here we must review his case in more detail. Terrorism—i.e., the calculated application of violence—has long been a tool of psychological warfare operations, of *Weltanschauungskrieg*. Loftus begins by noting that

> The truth… is that the Muslim Brotherhood was the original Arab Nazi movement, working for British intelligence to crush the infant state of Israel. In the 1980s it was hired by American intelligence to recruit the *Muhajedeen* in Afghanistan, and it is now the parent organization of every Sunni terrorist group in the Middle East.[67]

The relationship between American corporate interests and radical Islamic elements, according to Loftus, goes back to the 1920s:

> During the 1920s three countries were targeted for takeover by the Robber Barons: Germany, Russia and what is now known as Saudi Arabia. The tactics were the same: American cartels bribed their way into friendly governments and then protected their investments by hiring local mercenaries—paid terrorist groups who watched over their interests.
>
> In Saudi Arabia, the terrorists for hire were known as the Ikhwan al Muslimeen, the Muslim Brothers, or more colloquially, the Muslim Brotherhood. The Robber Barons armed this group of fanatical Wahhabists, who drove the peaceful Hashemite rulers out of Mecca and Medina and installed the House of Saud. The Saudis named the country after themselves, created an oil company with their American investors (Aramco), and then promptly threw the Ikhwan terrorists out of Saudi Arabia. The Saudis were not stupid after all.
>
> The Ikhwan settled primarily in Egypt, where they joined the Egyptian Muslim Brotherhood created by Hassan Al Banna in 1928. He was a devout admirer and correspondent with young Adolf Hitler. “In heaven Allah, on earth Hitler” was their battle cry. Hassan’s Muslim Brotherhood became a fully-integrated arm of the German intelligence and propaganda networks during WWII. They specialized in acts of terrorism and assassinations of Allied troops, promising German General Rommel that he would not find a single Allied soldier left alive when he arrived in Cairo. [68]

After the war, of course, Nazism survived, and became the on-the ground troops for the CIA-sponsored overthrow of Egypt’s King Farouk, under the leadership of SS colonel Otto Skorzeny, installing Gamel Abdul Nassar, who turned on his Nazi supporters, threw them out, and invited the Soviets into

Egypt.[69] At this juncture, the American corporate-intelligence component convinced the Saudis to take back the Brotherhood. This they did, employing them, as Loftus notes, throughout the Saudi kingdom as schoolteachers in "a perfect storm of Nazi racism and Wahhabbi bigotry."[70] The 1950s also saw the election of Dwight Eisenhower, and the installation of John Foster Dulles as Secretary of State, and his Nazi-recruiting brother, Allen, as director of the CIA.

All of this Nazi recruitment was handled through the State Department's Office of Policy Coordination, a haven for postwar Nazi intelligence recruits, and a department of the American government with direct links to Nazi General Reinhard Gehlen's military intelligence organization based in Pullach, outside of Munich. When U.S. Army counter-intelligence began to suspect the OPC's reliance on "former" Nazis, the day-to-day control of its operations was shifted back to Gehlen directly.[71] Thus, effectively, this means that when the Muslim Brotherhood was recruited by the Reagan administration during the 1980s, the "Arab Nazis" were reactivated as proxies in the war against the Soviets in Afghanistan.[72]

All this throws conventional analysis of the events of 9/11 into a potential cocked hat, for at one level, the surface level of Arab terrorists hi-jacking airplanes and flying them into buildings, one is dealing with a network that had been in existence from prior to the war, and a network with deep connections both to the American corporate and intelligence worlds, and to the Nazis themselves.

At a second deeper level, one may be dealing, as the 9/11 truth movement so often argues, with inside knowledge and the tacit permission of a rogue element within the American intelligence and corporate parapolitical structure. But I believe that the physics signatures of the collapse of the Twin Towers and other evidence in New York City on that day do *not* point to the use of controlled demolitions to bring down the towers, but to the existence of a very sophisticated and exotic directed energy weaponry, a thesis which I share with the 9/11 researcher Dr. Judy Wood.[73]

(And that fact points to a third, deeper layer of involvement on that day, one I believe to be the signature of the activity of this breakaway civilization, and perhaps suggesting that the postwar marriage of convenience between the American corporate elite and the postwar Nazi International had finally broken down. Obviously, such a case would have to be argued in much greater detail, the task, perhaps, for a future work devoted to that subject. For now, however, it is worth noting that the Twin Towers constitute symbols of that Anglo-

American corporate power and their long association with the fraternity that so embodies that elite, Freemasonry, and with the "twin pillars" Jachin and Boaz that adorn any Masonic lodge. The strike, in other words, was a strike against the symbols of that corporate power, sending very strong and deliberate messages to it: "we have perfected the technology we have been investigating since the war." It was, in my opinion, the announcement of divorce.)

4. The Skorzeny Connection

The use of terror on this scale, and to this implied degree of technological sophistication, returns us once again to the crucial figure of SS colonel Otto Skorzeny, who first proposed use of advanced technology in connection with a *Weltanschauungskrieg*, and to his postwar activities.

It was Skorzeny who played a central role in Bormann's plan to evacuate liquid and hard assets in the form of cash and various bullions out of Europe to safe havens in South America.[74] As such, Skorzeny was an early target of America's war-end intelligence efforts, not so much to bring him to trial for war crimes, but to employ him in its own postwar anti-Communist efforts.[75] As such, Skorzeny is the link between Bormann's Nazi International in South America, Gehlen's postwar group of Nazi spies in Eastern Europe based out of Pullach, and American intelligence, and had in fact even met with America's OSS chief, General William Donovan after the war in Nuremberg.[76] Yet, as all of these links were forged, Skorzeny maintained contact with the SS elements behind the Iron Curtain that had ostensibly gone over to serve the Communist cause![77] Skorzeny was also related to Hjalmar Schacht, having married his niece and was in frequent contact with Schacht himself both from his headquarters in Spain, and later during the aftermath of the overthrow of King Farouk.[78] It was during that aftermath, when the Nazis had not yet been thrown out of Egypt by Nasser, that Skorzeny and his Nazis, with Nasser's approval, conducted pogroms and murders against Egyptian Jews, confiscating over $100 million of Jewish property in the "New Egypt."[79]

The nexus of postwar terrorist operations, then, can be traced to Skorzeny's branch of the Nazi International, and its deep connections both to radical Islamicism, and to the elite of the American corporate world and rogue groups within American intelligence.

5. The Final Source of Deepest Black Funding: Drugs and the Nazi International

Thus far, our survey of the history and activities of the financial matrix of the breakaway civilization has highlighted two sources of funding, or "instruments of surplus creation" to use Quigley's nomenclature, namely, Nazi plunder from a looted Europe, moved into and laundered through Western Banks, largely in New York, and the implicit funding of its activities through the American taxpayer. These activities were, however, supplemented by a third component of funding, one guaranteeing a steady source for financing its goals and activities, and one, moreover, that was independent of any government's oversight or scrutiny. That source was through the criminal underground, and the growing worldwide trade in illegal drugs.

This story begins in the 1970s, when a major effort was mounted by rogue elements within American intelligence, and by the postwar Nazi International, to restructure the entire global heroin trade, closing off the old "French Connection" through Marseilles, and reorienting it through the Southeast Asian, Mexican, and Latin American drug cartels.[80] Placing the lucrative Latin American and Mexican cartels' trade in league with the postwar Latin American Nazis and Fascists gave this component of the breakaway civilization a virtually inexhaustible source of money to fund its activities, from terrorism to research.

This group had pulled off a number of spectacular robberies in Europe, including the theft of gold bullion from the Société Générale de Nice, had been implicated in various assassination attempts on French President Charles DeGaulle, and had connections to terrorist and Fascist groups in Italy, Lebanon, and Britain. So pervasive and deep were these connections that "a number of newspapers, even including the *New York Times*, mentioned speculations" that it might be the activity of a "Fascist International."[81]

By the time of the ITT-Nazi-CIA sponsored coup against Chilean President Salvadore Allende in 1973, this group had made deep penetration into the Cuban exile community (a fact already in evidence as early as the Bay of Pigs fiasco), and had scattered connections throughout Argentina, Chile, and Brazil. [82]

The Nazi component of the breakaway civilization moved quickly to solidify its ties and influence over the international drug trade. As this drug trade was being restructured in the early 1970s, Miami became a haven for the activity of European Fascists, and this led researcher Henrik Krüger to begin asking some interesting questions. Those questions, and his answers, are worth citing in some detail:

> What are European Fascists doing in Miami before and after major operations? Why are Miami-based Cuban exiles executing contracts on young Spaniards? Why was the main station of the CIA-supported Fascist front World Service in Miami? Why did bank robber Spaggiari contact the CIA in the United States?
>
> Miami is the center of a huge conspiratorial milieu whose personnel wind through the Bay of Pigs, attempts on Castro's life, the JFK murder and the great heroin coup, and which is now reaching out with a vengeance to Latin America and Europe.
>
> To trace the roots of this milieu we must refer to the immediate aftermath of World War II, when the CIA began its close cooperation with Adolf Hitler's espionage chief, Reinhard Gehlen, and the Soviet general, Andrei Vlassov, of Russia's secret anti-Communist spy network. Vlassov's organization was absorbed into Gehlen's, which evolved into a European subsidiary of the CIA. U.S. and German agents mingled in Berlin and West Germany, paving the way for inroads into U.S. intelligence by former Nazis, SS agents, and Russian czarists.
>
> Headquarters of the CIA/Gehlen/Vlassov combine, staffed in the mid-fifties by 4000 full-time agents, were in Pullach, near Munich. There Gehlen sang to the tune of more than one piper, having remained in touch with the old Nazi hierarchy relocated in Latin America, whose coordinator, Otto Skorzeny, was in Spain. Skorzeny had infiltrated the Spanish intelligence agency DGS, and effectively controlled it single-handedly.
>
> With the onset of the Cold War, Gehlen's agents were recruited by the CIA for assignments in the United States, Latin America and Africa. One agent, reportedly, was Frank Bender, allegedly alias Frank Swend, a key figure in the Bay of Pigs invasion.[83]

But this isn't the half of it.

From his headquarters in Albufera, Spain,[84] Skorzeny's goal in penetrating and allying with the powerful Latin American drug cartels was not only to provide a limitless source of funding, but to create nothing less than an alliance of right wing terrorists with connections to the old anti-Gaullist OAS in France, and Spanish, Argentine, Italian, Brazilian and Central American Fascists.[85] These groups "and other Nazi and Fascist powers throughout

Europe and Latin America, envisioned a new world order built on a Fascist Iron Circle linking Beunos Aires, Santiago, Lima, la Paz, Brasilia and Montevideo."[86]

With this alliance, the Nazi International embarked on a campaign of terror and assassination in South America known as Operation Condor, with oblique CIA approval, a grim reminder of Skorzeny-led commando oeprations behind American lines during World War Two, also known as Operation Condor, all the while cloaking its activities as those of the radical left![87] The end result of this campaign was, of course, the consolidation of the South American drug cartels, and a new source of funding for the breakaway civilization. [88]

And speaking of Latin America, there is one final connection we must now explore…

6. The Argentina-Rockefeller-Nazi Connection

Argentina, as I have reported in *The Nazi International*, was home to a major postwar Nazi research effort in advanced technology ostensibly investigating controlled fusion, but in reality, connected to its wartime Bell project and investigations of antigravity and zero-point energy.[89] But it is in Argentina that one discovers yet another nexus between the American corporate elite and the postwar Nazi International:

> Nelson Rockefeller's role in Latin America during the War was to coordinate US intelligence and covert operations in the days before the creation of the CIA. He was the direct liaison between President Franklin Roosevelt and British Prime Minister Winston Churchill's personal intelligence head for the Americas, Sir William Stephenson, who directed a front company called British Security Coordination or BSC. Notably, Stephenson's clandestine headquarters for his covert activity was in room 3603 in Rockefeller Center, in New York City, not far from Nelson's office.[90]

We have already noted the statements of John Loftus that the files of Rockefeller associate Allen Dulles were used by various Zionist organizations to blackmail the Rockefeller interest into using its influence in Latin America to secure enough UN votes to recognize the State of Israel.

As researcher F. William Engdahl notes, “This included the pro-Axis regime of Juan Peron in Argentina. Rockefeller and Washington pressured Peron to officially declare war on Germany and Italy, even though it was two weeks before the war’s end. That allowed Argentina to vote with the winning side.”[91] But this was, with due respect to Mr. Engdahl, not the real reason for the behind-the-scenes maneuvering of the Rockefeller interests in Argentina’s declaration of war.

We have already noted, throughout this chapter, that the American and Nazi components of the breakaway civilization were beginning to reconstitute their prewar links even before the war ended, and these links especially included the Rockefeller interest. We have seen also the role of Allen Dulles in laundering Nazi money, and in recruiting Nazis into the American bureaucratic infrastructure of postwar American intelligence.

Given the fact that the Nazis were conducting postwar research into advanced technologies in Argentina, and given the Rockefeller influence both in laundering Nazi plunder and in coercing the Argentine declaration of war, we are therefore justified in concluding that the real purpose of this, as far as the Rockefeller group was concerned, was to provide an Argentine homeland for Nazis that it did not wish to see come to America, and to maintain a degree of influence over their advanced technologies. In short, it wished to keep the most advanced technologies out of the hands of the American government, a goal which the Nazis themselves also shared. It was, once again, a marriage of convenience.

C. Conclusions

We are now, finally, in a position to summarize the financial matrix in which the crystal of the breakaway civilization grew. Summarizing the features of the financial relationships surveyed in this chapter, we take note of the following points:

> 1) Nazism, in its beliefs and ideology, and its genocidal pratice, constituted itself as a breakaway civilization, and for a brief moment, took Germany and the rest of Europe down that path;
> 2) The nexus of financial relationships between the American and German corporate elites prior to World War Two constituted, and viewed themselves as, a Fraternity or Empire of Money, willing and fit to rule over the rest of humanity within their sphere of influence.

As such, this breakaway society was both a parasitic and a producing society, controlling the necessary instruments of surplus and invention, as revealed by the numerous links between that elite and the scientific and academic world. These connections, as noted, included a deep study of the techniques of psychological operations and social engineering, and the use of those operations *in conjunction with the development of advanced technology*, in order to engineer the interpretation and perceptions of that technology in broader society. In the case of Adamski, the fascist connections of his associations and the fascist nature of his "teaching" strongly suggest that much of the early contactee literature was an operation of this sort;

3) Additionally, we have seen the emergence of a postwar permanent intelligence-gathering structure with deep connections both to the Nazi and to the American components of this breakaway civilization. In effect, this gave that civilization the ability to gather intelligence and to conduct ongoing black operations, including psychological operations inclusive of terrorist actions;

4) This breakaway civilization, through its American and British components, also maintained close ties with major media organs and outlets, allowing softer forms of psychological warfare and social engineering to be practiced on a wide population;

5) Via its easy access to large banking institutions and a deliberately feudalist structure of central banks clustered around the Bank for International Settlements, this Empire of Money also had access to the instruments of surplus, as well as instruments by which to launder money from almost any source. This deliberately feudal structure is also a clue, again, to the breakaway mentality of the Fraternity, since it views itself in mediaeval fashion as the lords over the serfs;

6) The above facts also highlight the nature of the mechanisms of funding for its activities and research, since, as we have indicated, there are three different sources for this financing:

a) Overt funding through taxation of the general populace in the various countries hosting the Fraternity and its institutions, which funding is used to contract its activities and research;

b) Covert, or "black budget" funding, in budgets that remain parallel to the official budgets of states, a phenomenon revealed in Nazi

Germany by the parallel SS industrial structure, and in the USA by the black budget funding of secret research such as the Manhattan project. Such sources of funding do, however, depend upon the collusion of officials and agencies of that part of the state representing its budgetary oversight, and is thus never entirely "black";

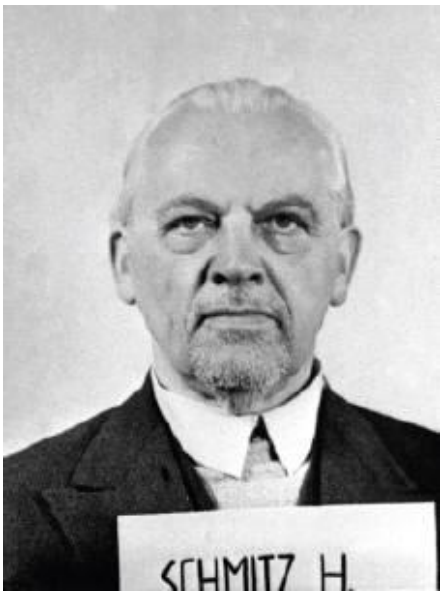
c) Underground, or criminal sources of funding, which, as we have seen in this brief survey, include the worldwide traffic in illegal drugs, a trade which was massively restructured in the 1970s with the assistance of the postwar international Fascist organization. This implies that its most direct and basic source of funding is from these enterprises;

7) Finally, we have seen yet another link between the American and Nazi components of this fraternity, and pre- and postwar radical Islamic elements, a link persisting up to 9/11, and bearing profound implications for the proper interpretation of that event.

It is worth observing that this basic constellation of relationships is exactly the same structure as I outlined and argued existed behind the assassination of President John F. Kennedy.

With all this said, however, we must now address an entirely different question in relationship to the breakaway civilization, and its possible structure: what are its core and peripheral areas? To answer that will require yet another chapter, and yet another look at the profound historical analysis techniques of Dr. Carroll Quigley.

Hjalmar Schacht with Adolf Hitler



I.G. Farben's Wartime Chairman, Hermann Schmitz

[1] Charles Higham, *American Swastika: The Shocking Story of Nazi Collaborators in Our Midst from 1933 to the Present Day* (Doubleday & Company, Inc., 1985), p. 13.

[2] Albert Speer, *Infiltration: How Heinrich Himmler Schemed to Build an SS Industrial Empire* (New York: MacMillan, 1981), p. 3, emphasis added.

[3] See my *Reich of the Black Sun* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), pp.

[4] Inasmuch as acts of terrorism are complex acts of actual warfare, in addition to psychological operations, we shall comment only in passing on it in this work, leaving a detailed analysis to a future work.

[5] Charles Higham, *Trading With the Enemy: The Nazi-American Money Plot, 1933-1949* (Authors Guild Backinprint, 2007), p. 130.

[6] Ibid.

[7] Higham, *Tradining With the Enemy:* pp. 130-131.

[8] Carroll Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in Our Time* (Macmillan, 1966), p. 950.

[9] Ibid., p. 954.

[10] Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope,* p. 324, emphasis added.

[11] Ibid., p. 951.

[12] Ibid.

[13] Ibid.

[14] Ibid.

[15] Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope*, p. 952, emphasis added.

[16] Ibid., p. 531.

[17] Ibid., p. 953.

[18] Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope*, pp. 306-307.

[19] Ibid., pp. 308-309.

[20] Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope*, p. 310.

[21] Ibid.,p. 324.

[22] Quigley, *Tragedy and Hope*, pp. 324-325.

[23] Ibid.

[24] Higham, *Trading With the Enemy*, p. 1.

[25] Ibid., pp. 1-2, emphasis added

[26] Ibid., p. 2.

[27] Ibid.

[28] Ibid.

[29] Higham, *Trading With the Enemy*, p. 7.

[30] Ibid.

[31] Ibid.

[32] I have referred to three factions in this international empire of money, and I mean these to be represented by the London-based faction, the New York-based faction, and the pre-war German and post-war Nazi faction. Obviously, this is a gross simplification, since we have not considered the most powerful rival faction in London, the Rothschilds. As we shall see later in this book, there are strong ideological reasons for the New York Morgan-Rockefeller interest to be allied with the Nazis against their (obviously Jewish) rivals, the Rothschilds. The complexities of the internal factional infighting between these groups is beyond the purposes of this book.

[33] Higham, *Trading with the Enemy*, p. 11.

[34] Ibid., p. 132. Higham notes that Schellenberg was actually a prominent shareholder of ITT (p. xvi.) During the war, ITT agents met with Rockefeller and Gestapo representatives in Madrid to find ways to improve the Getsapo's technological surveillance capabilities (see p. 93).

[35] Higham, *Trading With the Enemy*, pp. 132-133.

[36] Ibid., p. 1.

[37] Joseph P. Farrell, *The Nazi International*, pp. 63-83.

[38] Higham, op. cit., pp. 112-113.

[39] See my *Reich of the Black Sun: Nazi Secret Weapons and the Cold War Allied Legend* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2004), p. 157.

[40] Higham, *Trading With the Enemy*, p. 13.

[41] Higham, *Trading With the Enemy*, pp. 10-11.

[42] Ibid., p. 17.

[43] Paul Manning, *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile*, pp. 204-205, emphasis added, cited in my *Nazi International*, p. 304.

[44] Higham, *Trading with the Enemy*, p. 20.

[45] Higham, *Trading with the Enemy*, p. 22.

[46] For more on this aspect of the story, see my *SS Brotherhood of the Bell*(Adventures Unlimited Press, 2006), pp. 75-79.

[47] Higham, *Trading with the Enemy*, p. 33.

[48] Ibid., p. 37.

[49] Ibid., p. 38.

[50] Ibid., pp. 38-39.

[51] Higham, *Trading with the Enemy*, p. 46.

[52] Glen Yeadon and John Hawkins, *The*

[53] Higham, op. cit., p. 76. For the importance and long-term significance of this Texas oil-Nazi nexus, see my *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 151-172; 290-294.

[54] Higham, *Trading With the Enemy,* p. 84.

[55] John Loftus, *America's Nazi Secret* (Trine Day, 2011), p. iii.

[56] Ibid., p. 4, n. 5.

[57] The complexities of this Bush-Thyssen relationship are too numerous to go into here, and have been covered by many other researchers. It is however, worth nothing that Loftus makes yet another connection: "Brown Brothers Harriman had so many corrupt ties to the Nazi regime that it became the only bank in New York State history ever to obtain permission to shred its war time and prewar files. It certainly had the influence to pull this off—two of its Nazi investment clients, Nelson Rockefeller and Averell Harriman, had become Governors of New York." (Loftus, op. cit., p. 17).

[58] Farrell, *The Nazi International*, pp. 63-83.

[59] Loftus, *America's Nazi Secret*, p. 2.

[60] Ibid., p. 5.

[61] Loftus goes further, and notes that the "British SIS reported that Dulles's American clients, including the Rockefellers, were helping the Nazis by laundering oil supplies through neutral countries. When FDR demanded that (the Department of) Justice indict the corporations, DOJ settled for a minor financial penalty. In defense of DOJ, it must be noted that Dulles's corporate cartel did threaten to

withhold oil supplies for D-Day unless all charges were dropped." (op. cit., p. 7, n. 11) This included an investigation led by William J. Rockler, who was investigating Hitler's paymaster, Dr. Hermann Josef Abs, later CEO of Deutsche Bank and a principal attendee at early Bilderberger meetings. (See Loftus, op. cit., p. 8, and my *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 64-70).

62 Loftus, *America's Nazi Secret*, p. 12, n. 20. Loftus also notes that the real reason Roosevelt wanted the Nazi bankers put on trial at Nuremberg was in order for them to point the finger at their American counterparts, so that charges could then be brought bagainst them for treason. (Loftus, op. cit., p. 13). As it was, this was wishful thinking on Roosevelt's part, for this would have exposed a crucial component of the postwar structures that the Nazis needed to ensure their survival and recrudescence.

It is also worth observing that the postwar Deutsche Bank mandarin, Dr. Hermann Josef Abs, was not only an early Bilderberger attendee, but during the early 1980s was appointed to a special Vatican council investigating the Banco Ambrosiano and Roberto Calvi banking scandals that so rocked the Vatican, having implications, according to some, for the mysterious and untimely death of Albino Luciani (Pope John Paul the First). (See Charles Higham, *American Swastika: The Shocking Story of Nazi Collaborators in our Midst from1933 to the Present Day* (Doubleday and Company, 1985, p. xiv.) Higham expresses his disbelief and puzzlement over Abs' appointment by the Holy See to this commission, but it should not be at all surprising, since with the election of Pope John Paul II, his close advisor, Josef Cardinal Ratzinger (now Pope Benedict XVI), became one of the most influential advisors to the new pontiff.

63 It is worth noting here that the OPC was implicated by Colonel Fletcher Prouty in the assassination of President Kennedy, adding yet another hidden rogue intelligence-Nazi connection to the murder.

64 Loftus, *America's Nazi Secret*, p. 21.

65 Ibid., p. 34.

66 Ibid., p. 49.

67 Loftus, *America's Nazi Secret*, p. viii.

68 Loftus, *America's Nazi Secret*, pp. 13-14.

69 Farrell, *The Nazi international*, pp. 191-200.

70 Loftus, *America's Nazi Secret*, p. 15.

71 Ibid., pp. 30-31, 33, 45.

72 Ibid., p. 24.

73 See her superb gathering of 9/11 evidence and arguments for the directed energy weapon hypothesis: Judy Wood, B.S., M.S., Ph.D., *Where Did the Towers Go?: Evidence of Directed Free Energy Technology on* 9/11.

74 Charles Higham, *American Swastika: The Shocking Story of Nazi Collaborators in Our Midst from 1933 to the Present Day* (Doubleday and Company, Inc., 1985), pp. 247-248.

75 Ibid.,p. 243.

[76] Ibid., p. 249.

[77] Ibid.

[78] Ibid., pp. 250-251.

[79] Ibid., p. 253.

[80] Peter Dale Scott, "Foreword," to Henrik Krüger, *The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence, and International Fascism* (Boston, South End Press: 1980), p. 3.

[81] Ibid., p. 9.

[82] See p. 10 of Scott's Foreword.

[83] Henrik Kröger, *The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence, and International Fascism*, pp. 204-205.

[84] Ibid., p. 209.

[85] Kröger, *The Great Heroin Coup*, p. 209.

[86] Ibid.,p. 210.

[87] Ibid.,pp. 212-213. On p. 214, Kröger notes that some members of this vast organization were even successfully elected to the first European Parliament in 1979.

[88] There are, of course, any number of books on the American component's involvement in this drug trade, detailing connections with Iran-Contra, the Mena, Arkansas affair, INSLAW, and so on. My point here has been to emphasize the role of the Nazi International in these events, to supplement the already existing literature detailing other aspects of this story.

[89] Farrell, *The Nazi International*, pp. 249-350.

[90] F. William Engdahl, *Seeds of Destruction: The Hidden Agenda of Genetic Manipulation* (Global research 2007), p. 109.

[91] Ibid., p. 111.

9
As Above, So Below:
The Geographic and Topographic Matrix of the Underground Black World

"In the imperialist wars of Stage 4 of a civilization the more peripheral states are consistently victorious over less peripheral states. In Mesopotamian civilization the core states like Uruk, Kish, Ur, Nippur, and Lagash were conquered by more peripheral states like Agade and Babylon. These in turn were conquered by peripheral Assyria, and the whole of western Asia was ultimately conquered by fully peripheral Persia."
Dr. Carroll Quigley[1]

As is evident from the previous epigraph, Dr. Quigley's historical analysis of the rise and fall of civilizations included the idea that there were "core" areas within each civilization, and "peripheral" ones. Briefly stated, the "core" area of a civilization was the region, society, or more recently, the nation, that stamped its culture, ideology, and social structures most indelibly on the rest of the societies that shared it. The core regions were, in this sense, the most influential. The peripheral areas were denoted by a *partial* adaptation of the cultural values of the core.

This conception bore certain consequences and implications for Quigley's analysis of modern history, in that, so far as western civilization was concerned, the "core" area during the period leading up to and away from the two world wars encompassed the nations of the United Kingdom, France, and the United States, with central and eastern Europe—Germany and the successor states to the Austro-Hungarian empire—forming important peripheral states, partially influenced by the culture of the west but, in their political and social organization, departing from the core by not being true representative democracies.

The key conception behind both "core" and "peripheral" societies within a civilization was *location*: both occupied clearly definable regions. But in the case of the breakaway civilization we have been examining, we are not in such an easy position, for as is by now evident, the structure of this civilization is parasitic: it exists alongside of, and *within*, host societies or nations, and indeed has an international extent, crossing the borders and boundaries of

normal national organization. How, then, one would define the “core” and “periphery” of such a civilization? Where would one *locate* it?

A. The Historical Matrix of World War Two

The clue, again, begins during World War Two, and again, specifically in Nazi Germany, for here the circumstances of history combined to create the unusual conditions necessary for the emergence of a breakaway civilization, firstly, in the acceptance of an ideology vastly at variance with the surrounding values of “Western Civilization,” and secondly, in the creation of a “state within a state” that the SS represented, and by *its* creation, in turn, of the actual *physical locations* to carry on its secret “breakaway” activities, from genocide to black projects research, with the two activities often tied to the very same facilities. It was within these facilities of a “State within the State” that we discover both (1) the instruments of the generation of surplus, (2) the instruments for invention in the black research projects undertaken by the *Kammlerstab* of SS General Hans Kammler, and other bureaucracies of the SS, and (3) the combined “producing” and “parasitic” qualities of the civilization that we have remarked upon previously.

1. The Importance and Significance of the Kammlerstab to the Evolution of the Breakaway Civilization

Before we look more closely at the actual physical *plants* of this breakaway civilization, it is worth pausing to consider the significance of the*Kammlerstab* once again, for it affords yet another important clue into the nature of the breakaway civilization, both in its “Nazi,” and in its “American”, postwar components. As I first observed in *Reich of the Black Sun*, the *Kammlerstab* was essentially a “think tank,” a super-secret research group tasked very deliberately to think *outside the box* of conventional scientific models, for the Nazis, this effectively meant that scientists were expected to develop paradigms of physics different from the relativistic physics model of “Jewish physics” that were the regnant standard model. They were expected to develop the basic outlines of technology trees to lead to second, third, and even fourth generation weapons of all sorts, and to lay the groundwork of what was needed to achieve them.

2. The Ideological and Scientific Culture of the Kammlerstab and a Modern Parallel

An *ideological culture of scientific research and development* was thus established that was vastly different from the surrounding civilization, a culture in which science itself was drafted to serve a political agenda of empire-building and hegemony via technological means. This mentality is reflected in the *locations and physical plants*, and in the *sociology* that they engender. Indeed, as we shall discover in the next chapter, this "sociology of weaponry" was itself a crucial area of investigation for Dr. Quigley. We find the modern parallel of the *Kammlerstab* in modern America, for example, in such agencies as The Defense Advanced Projects Research Agency, or DARPA, whose mission brief—thinking outside the box and charting the necessary steps in the technology trees—seems to be directly modeled on the example of the *Kammlerstab*.

3. The Direct Interface Between the Kammlerstab and The Cartelized Corporate World

There is also another feature of the *Kammlerstab* that is also quite crucial to point out in connection with the Nazi-corporate interfaces we have examined in previous chapters, and that is its *direct* relationship with the main corporate representative connected with its secret research and its ability to tap into the vast labor pools represented by the concentration camps. In *Reich of the Black Sun* I observed that Kammler himself was the actual designer of the Auschwitz camp,[2] was directly in command of the SS Buildings and Works department,[3] and that I.G. Farben had constructed a large synthetic rubber or Buna plant at Auschwitz, which was most likely a plant for the enrichment of uranium and other radioactive elements on a vast scale,[4] utilizing the latest technologies, perhaps even including laser isotope enrichment, to do so.[5] In other words, within the structure of wartime Nazi secret research, we discover the *direct* relationship of the "state within a state," the SS, with the international corporate world represented by I.G. Farben, a relationship bypassing the ordinary bureaucratic structures of the German government itself. This, again, will bear enormous consequences for the postwar structure of the breakaway civilization.

B. The Breakaway Civilization and the Underworld

As is now well-known, prior to and during World War Two, the German government, and later the SS, constructed a number of enormous underground complexes, from communications centers, to entire factories and research facilities. In so far as these facilities are connected to the SS, they represent the actual *physical locations* for the emergence of a peripheral civilization in the very midst of the core or host civilization surrounding it, and that for a very important and obvious though often overlooked reason. Like all obvious things, it is easy to overlook precisely because it is so very obvious. But before looking at that obvious reason, we will first look at a sampling of Nazi and American underground installations, and the technologies for constructing them, in order to highlight the significance of that obvious thing, and its implication for the possibility of a breakaway civilization.

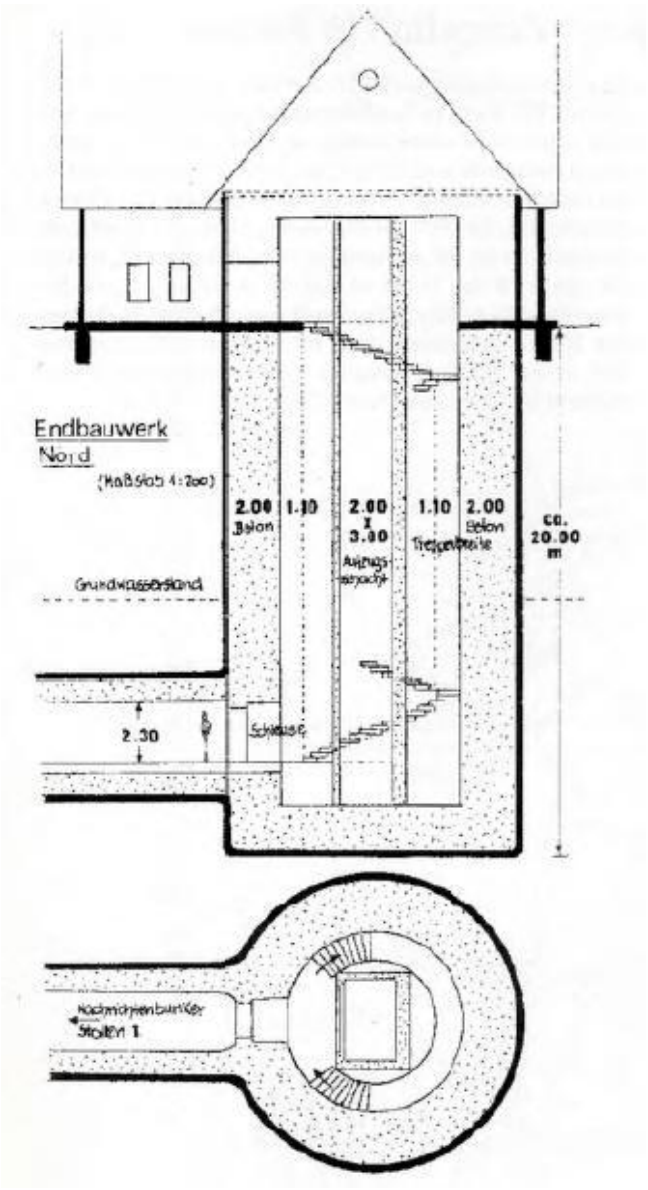
1. The Nazi Pentagon: The Underground Bunker Complex of Zossen

Hans George Kampe is a researcher who wrote possibly the only short verbal and graphic history of what must surely be one of the first examples of the breakaway civilization's obsession with security, and secure communications: the "Nazi pentagon," the huge underground complex of bunkers located in the German town of Zossen, south of Berlin. Neither the enormity of these structures nor the scope of Kampe's research can hardly be given due justice in this short review, but a look at some of the features of this vast underground bunker complex is in order, for its features also disclose prominent aspects of the sociology of the breakaway civilization, evident in the structures it has built, and in the technology required to build them.

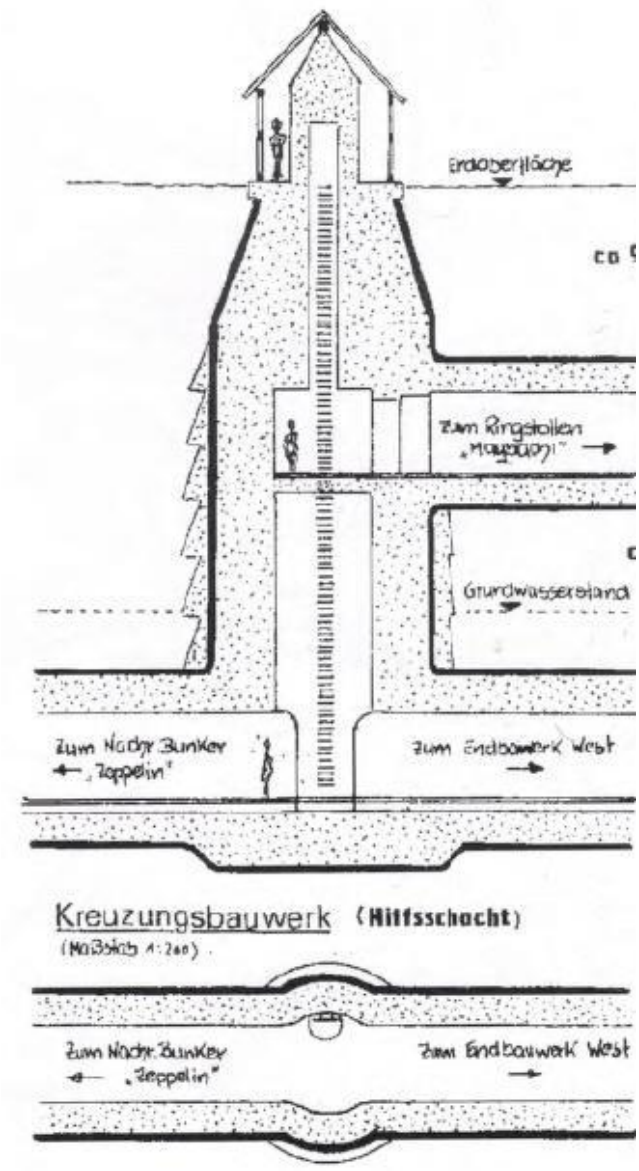
Consider, for example, this charming, typically German, rural farmhouse:

Rural Farmhouse over the North Terminus Entrance, Zossen Bunker Complex[6]

Beneath the peaceful, charming exterior, however, lay a hardened concrete framework, and a bombproof entrance to a staircase and elevator descending some 10 meters into a huge underground world of bunkers piled three stories deep, teletype, telegraph and telephone exchanges, storage rooms, corridors hundreds of meters long, battery rooms, generator power plants, sewage facilities, radio communications facilities… in short, a self-contained underground world, accessed through various “farmhouses” on the surface dotted around the village of Zossen:

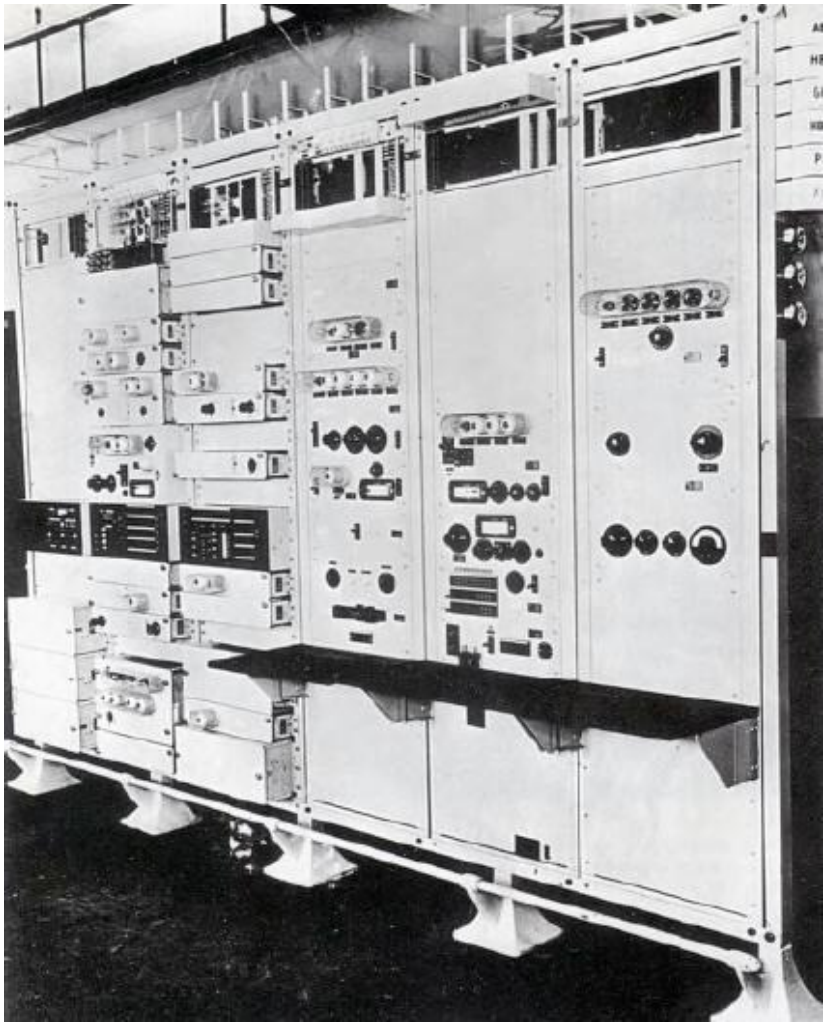


The Original Design of the North Terminus Entrance to the Zossen Zeppelin Bunker Complex[7]

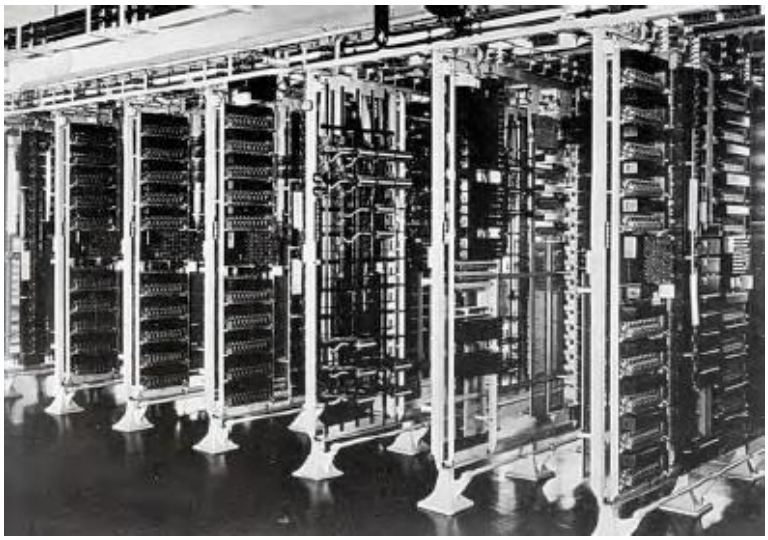


The Original Design for the Junction Complex At Zossen[8]

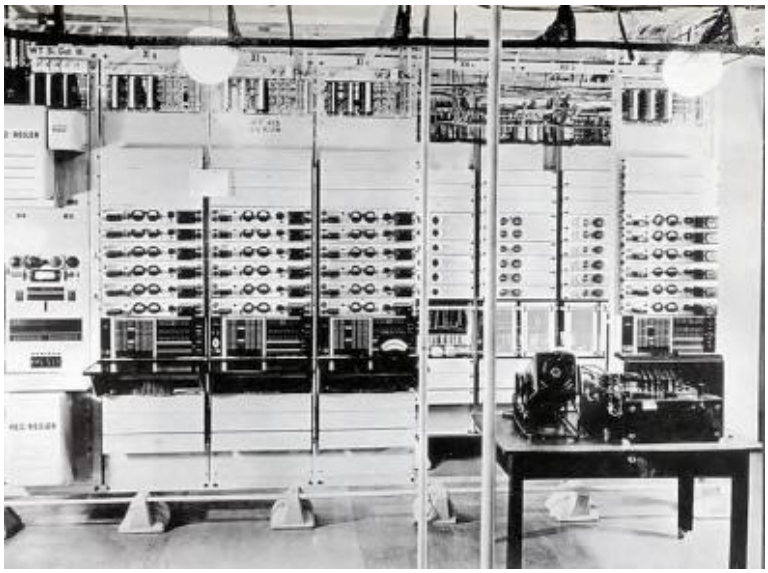
This vast underground world was home to state of the art communications equipment, to secure the Wehrmacht's communications in all circumstances. The scale of the complex, and of the technologies housed in its bunkers can only be appreciated by Kampe's pictures:



One of the over Four Hundred Line Amplifying Relay Stations in the Underground Bunkers of Zossen[9]

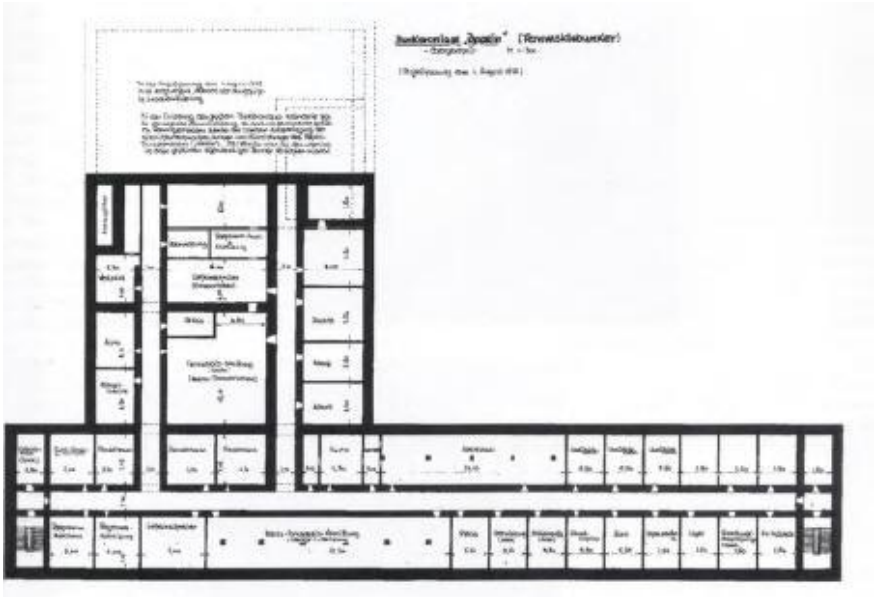


The Army Headquarters Self-Dialing Exchange in the Zeppelin Communications Bunkers at Zossen[10]



The Voice Frequency Telegraph Center in the Zeppelin Bunker Complex at Zossen[11]

The enormous scale of just the Zeppelin communications complex is revealed by the floor plan of the complex accessed through the “farmhouse”:



The Upper Floor of Junction Section of the Zeppelin Complex, in its original design[12]

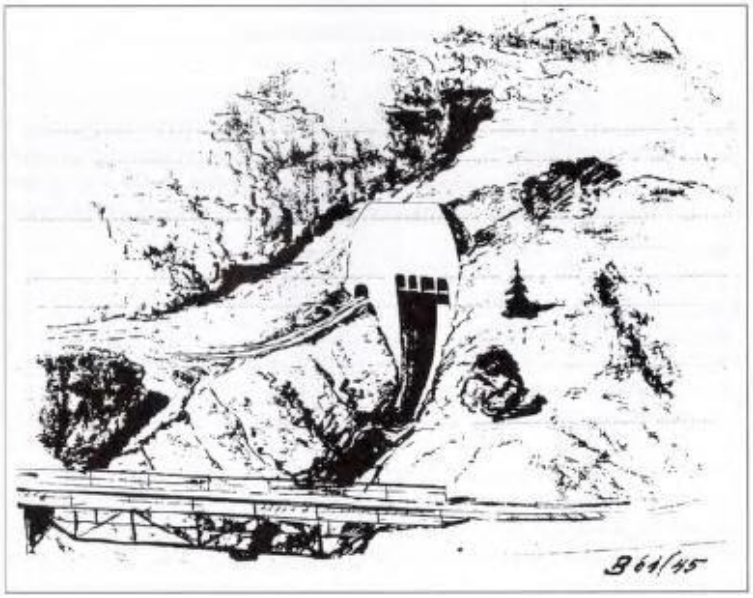
The lower story of this junction complex contained connecting tunnels to other bunker complexes at Zossen, each a self-contained functional entity, each connected to the others, and each accessed by the sort of deceptive camouflaged entrance such as the “farmhouse” leading into this particular complex.

2. The Underground Factories and the Manufacturing, Assembly, and Launch Facility at Ebensee

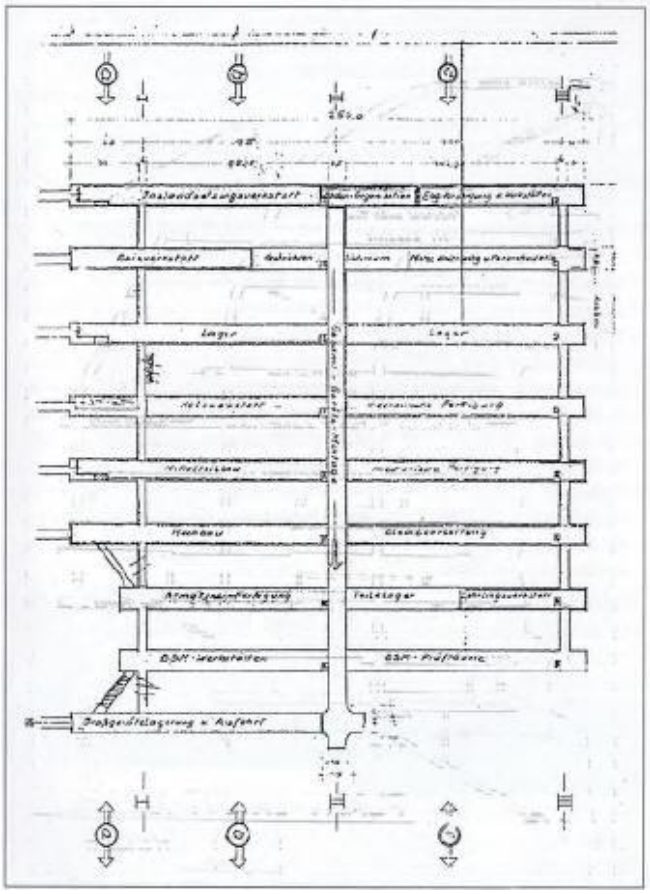
In addition to these types of complexes, as is now well-known, Nazi Germany constructed a number of large underground manufacturing and research facilities for its various secret weapons projects. What is seldom appreciated, however, is the enormity of some of these facilities, which is yet another of those obvious facts with enormous and overlooked implications for the conception of a breakaway civilization. As the Allied armies swept into the Reich, its counterintelligence teams were sent to vacuum the Reich of every conceivable technological innovation.

However, in the case of the technology and engineering of the underground complexes themselves, this, obviously, could not be down. But detailed plans and schematics of these sites, and in some cases, artists’ renditions, were made when the original German plans could not be recovered.

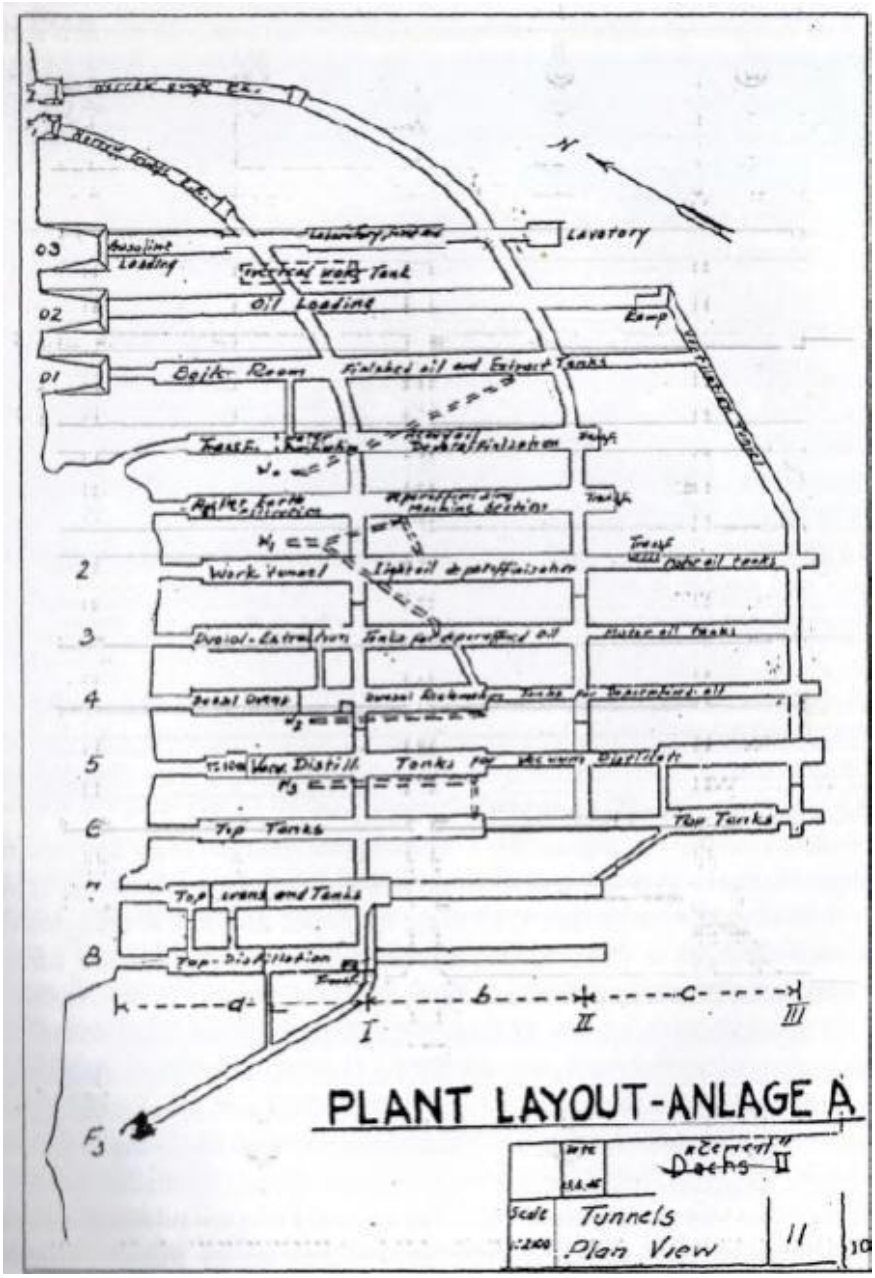
One of these was the enormous rocket manufacture, assembly, and launch complex for the A-10 *Amerikaraket*, or "America rocket," at Ebensee, a complex whose sheer enormity indicates that, as far as the Nazis were concerned, the rocket bombardment of the continental United States was an immanent possibility. The scale of the launch facility itself is indicated from this 1945 artist's drawing of the complex entrance:



Artist's Rendition of the Ebensee Complex Entrance and Launch Facility[13]



The British and American BIOS/CIOS Captured German Plan of the Ebensee Distillation Facility B for Rocket Propellant Production[14]


PLANT LAYOUT-ANLAGE A
Tunnels
Plan View
Laboratory
Oil Loading
Ramp
Work Tunnel
Tank Farm
Tank Farm
Tank Farm

3. A Few Modern American Counterparts
a. The Skunk Works, Pure Research Facilities, and Other Installations

The American side of this story is equally, if not more, fascinating and revealing of the possibilities of a breakaway civilization. We may gain our entry into this discussion by looking at some of the more well-known underground installations that are connected both to the private corporate sector and to deeply black covert projects research.

Richard Sauder, Ph.D., has published his extensive research into underground basses in an important study, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, and a careful review of his research is essential here in order for its vast implications for the hypothesis of a breakaway civilization to be fully appreciated, implications Sauder himself is alive to:

> History teaches us that when a country has an exceptionally powerful military, and when that military carries out secret policies and agendas like the U.S. military does (think of the illegal Iran-Contra affair, of super-secret nuclear bomb testing in Nevada, of the astronomical amounts of money given to the Pentagon every year for so-called "black projects"), then there is an ever present danger of that military taking control of the government. That control could be taken quickly—or gradually. Noisily or quietly. [16]

The extent of black budget funding for the construction of the sites that Sauder refers to is substantiated by official U.S. government statements and publications:

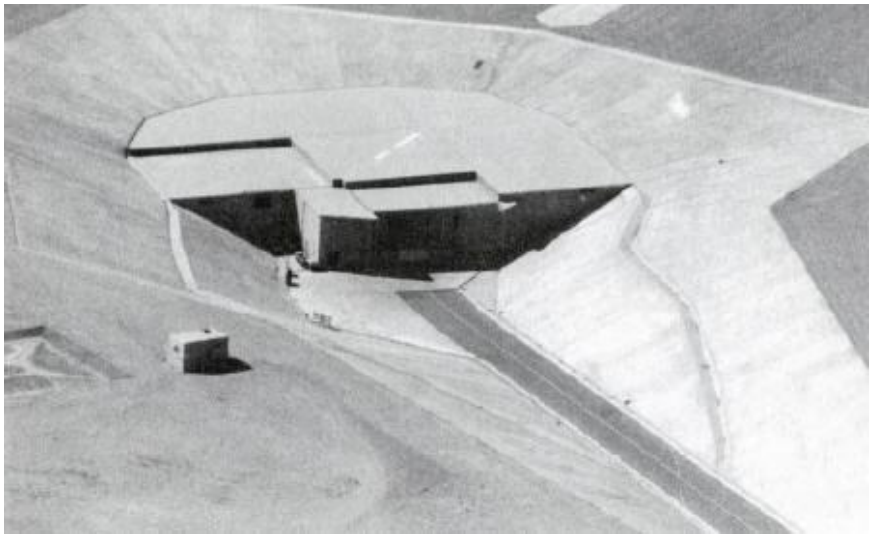
> In 1987, Lloyd A. Duscha, the Deputy Director of Engineering and Construction for the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers, gave a speech entitled "Underground Facilities for Defense—Experience and Lessons."…. Mr. Duscha subsequently launched into a discussion of the Corps' involvement, back in the 1960s, in the construction of the large NORAD underground base beneath Cheyenne Mountain, Colorado… And then he said: *"As stated earlier, there are other projects of similar scope, which I cannot identify, but which included multiple chambers up to 50 feet wide and 100 feet high using the same excavation procedures mentioned for the NORAD facility."*[17]

Such techniques, Sauder notes, were developed by private engineering and construction corporations, particularly for “hydroelectric powerhouses” which are often located deep underground.[18]

Sauder notes that the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers distinguishes between two basic types of underground constructions: (1) those constructed in deep shaft-type fashion, and (2) those which are tunneled into mountains.[19] As Sauder also notes, in 1985 the Corps of Engineers admitted in an official publication that there were essentially no technological limitations to the construction of such underground facilities, “under virtually any ground conditions, the main constraint” being primarily financial limitations.[20]

Cost appears to have been of little concern to the vast corporate underground research centers in California, well-known to most researchers as the “skunk works” of major American defense and aero-space firms:

Lockheed’s Helendale, California “Skunk Works” Facility. The Runway-like Feature is not a runway.



Close-up of the Entrance "Bunker" to Lockheed's Helendale, California Facility

While we do not know the extent of these facilities, nor how deeply underground they go, there are certain features they all have in common, and there are certain rumors accompanying them:

> The Northrop facility is located near the Tehachapi Mountains, 25 miles to the northwest of Lancaster (California). THere are rumors that the installation there goes down as many as 42 levels, and that there are tunnels linking it with other underground facilities in the area. I do not know whether these rumors are true or not. There are also reports of many strange flying objects in the vicinity, of many shapes and sizes. Some are reportedly spherical, others are alleged to be triangular, elongated, boomerang or disk shaped. And they are said to range in size up to hundreds of feet in diameter. The facility itself is engaged in electronic or electromagnetic research of some sort. There are large radar or microwave dishes and strange-looking pylons to which various objects can be affixed, ostensibly for the purpose of beaming electromagnetic radiation at them These pylons rise up from underground, out of diamond-shaped openings in the middle of long paved surfaces that resemble aircraft runways, but which, in fact, are not used by aircraft.
>
> …The McDonnell Douglas facility is located at the now closed Gray Butte airport, northeast of Llano, California. It too has

> "runways" that are not runways, with diamond-shaped openings through which huge pylons with strangely shaped objects mounted on them are raised to the surface. These objects sometimes resemble elongated disks or flying saucers and have been seen to glow and change colors. Glowing spheres have also been seen by people in the area at night. However the nature and function of the spheres is not known.
>
> …The Lockheed installation is adjacent to what used to be the Hellendale (sic et passim), auxiliary airport, six miles to the north of Hellendale, California. Just like the McDonnell Douglas and Northrop facilities it also has the runway-like features, which large diamond-shaped doors through which huge pylons rise from underground with strange objects attached. This facility has an obvious underground entrance.[21]

It is now known that most of these facilities were crucial in the development of stealth technologies, with the pylons and radar dishes being used to test radar cross-sections. [22]

In short, these facilities were being used for research purposes, and we may reasonably assume that stealth research was not the only research being conducted at them, given the expense of constructing what must be large underground complexes with the machinery to hoist the pylons. Similar pure research facilities are alleged to have been constructed at the Manzano Mountain near Albuquerque, New Mexico, and at Los Alamos National Laboratories, the latter for "pure physics" research.[23] In Los Alamos' case, proposals were advanced for mile-or-deeper facilities for doing experiments in particle physics and gravity research,[24] the latter fact, as we shall see in the next chapter, connecting to the work of American physicist Thomas Townsend Brown.

Sauder notes that a number of these facilities, especially those dedicated to continuity of government operations and functions, come totally equipped underground lakes, cafeteria, hospitals, streets and sidewalks, dormitories, radio and TV studies, independent power generation, and tunnels for vehicles, in short, with all the amenities of the "surface civilization,"[25] a fact that testifies once again to the fact that the breakaway civilization—if indeed there be one—is literally an "underworld", a peripheral civilization existing literally beneath the surface of the core civilizations.

It is important to mention that in its planning of these facilities, both government and private corporations have developed three technologies for independent sources of power, completely separate from the public power grid system, in diesel generating plants, nuclear plants, and fuel cell technologies,[26] a fact that again implies that, should those with control over these installations choose to break away from the surface host civilization, they could do so. Additionally, private corporations such as the Federal Reserve maintain their own facilities for the emergency maintenance of their corporate accounts and records.[27]

There is a final possibility for such underground installations and a breakaway civilization, one with profoundly disturbing parallels to Nazi Germany, and here it is necessary to allow Sauder to speak to this possibility in his own words:

> I will simply observe that many people absolutely disappear in this country every year, never to be heard from again. No bodies are found, no trace of them ever surfaces. I don't know where these people go; I don't know what happens to them. I can offer no proof that any of them are held in secret underground prisons. I cannot even offer proof that there are secret underground prisons. However, it occurs to me that at the end of WW II many German citizens were surprised to find out that there were concentration camps, run by the Nazis, in which millions of their neighbors (Jews, Gentiles, Gypsies, mentally-impaired, homosexuals, political prisoners) had been incarcerated, tortured, forced into slave labor—and killed.[28]

The possibility is more than disturbing, since former Reich Armaments Minister Albert Speer himself records a deliberate kidnapping project of the SS—over and above the Nazi genocide—to round up suitable slave-laborers and test subjects for its deeply black projects.[29]

What we have seen thus far—government and private corporate research facilities, whole vast underworld installations with all the amenities of civilization—strongly indicates that the *infrastructure* for a breakaway civilization exists.

b. The Rumored Tunnel System and Its Implications

But part of the infrastructure of normal "surface" civilization consists in the fact that its centers are connected by a variety of communications links, including transportation links. Indeed, as Sauder notes, there has been for years a persistent rumor that the various underground installations of this "underworld" are indeed linked by an equally hidden and underground system of tunnels, allowing vehicular traffic to flow smoothly, and unnoticed, between its centers.[30]

But does such a system exist?

While there is no proof, there are a number of strong indicators that suggest it does. During the late 1970s and early 1980s, the "United States military had extensive plans to construct a very deep, hundreds-of-miles-long, underground tunnel system somewhere in the western United States,"[31] in connection with its MX-mobile ICBM system.[32] Moreover, several Federal contracts were actually awarded for preliminary studies or actual site selection and excavation testing for the system,[33] an indicator that tunneling work went ahead for some other purpose, even though ostensibly the MX missile program was cancelled:

> …the documents, articles and contracts…suggest it is entirely possible that the military, working through the Ballistic Missile Office at Norton Air Force Base, with the probable assistance of the Army Corps of Engineers and private companies such as Robbins, Earth technology, and others, has secretly built an extensive, very deeply buried tunnel system and nuclear missile complex, somewhere in the United States, perhaps somewhere in the West.
>
> If it has been made, this system may be, in its totality, hundreds of miles long and thousands of feet underground. If it exists it is certainly very well hidden. And if it exists it may very well explain either partly or wholly the recurrent rumors in UFOlogy about a secret tunnel system in the southwestern United States.[34]

In my opinion, given the indicators thus far, and the detailed planning for continuity of government operations, it would seem very *unlikely* for such a tunnel system connecting key installations, even if separated by hundreds of miles, *not* to be built.

In Sauder's opinion, this possibility raises, once again, the specter of psychological operations surrounding such facilities and systems, operations

designed, once again, to cloak their true function, and perhaps the technologies associated with them:

> From the standpoint of disinformation there is another possibility: that the military has really built a tunnel system of the sort described here, but has tried to hide its existence under a tabloid-style cover story of alien tunneling activities. According to this hypothetical scenario the military would count on the "alien" connection to be sufficiently ridiculous in the public eye that if word of the tunnels ever surfaced in the media they could be discounted as the fevered imagining of daffy UFOlogists and other flaky characters, and nothing more. In that way, the Pentagon could carry out its underground agenda and prying eyes would be deflected by the threat of public humiliation and ridicule.[35]

Sauder is correct, simply because, as we have already indicated with Adamski and the much more serious schemes of Skorzeny, plans were laid as early as World War Two to couple advanced technologies to a *Sonderkampf*, a special psychological operation to socially engineer people's perceptions. Only in one respect does Sauder perhaps miss the wider scope of the implications of the breakaway civilization that his research implies, namely, that such operations may have two simultaneous goals: (1) to cloak its activities and implied technologies, and (2) to plant a meme within the culture that such technologies are "godlike" and "alien" to mankind, *making its wielders commensurately "godlike."*

c. Camouflage and Security

This cloaking activity is a telltale sign of the possibility that one is dealing with a breakaway civilization, and hence, we must now examine its other camouflaging efforts, which include the actual camouflage of covert construction methods, through private or corporate proxies buying the land for such installations,[36] to the types of camouflage activity we saw associated with the Nazi Zossen communications bunkers.[37] Such camouflage "could literally be just about anywhere: under a military base; under a major hotal; under a prominent government build; under old, abandoned mine workings; under virtually any mountain or hill; under a national park, or perhaps in a national

forest; in a small town; or in the middle of a large city—maybe even deep under an Alaskan glacier."[38]

Allied to this camouflage effort is security, and a variety of means are now common to gain access to these facilities, or, conversely, to prevent unwarranted or unauthorized access, from quadruple belts of chain link fences with concertina wire and lethally electrically charged fences at the Manzano Mountain underground nuclear research and storage facility in Albuquerque,[39] to retinal and palm print scanners,[40] to a host of other security measures such as motion detectors, armed security guards, and even mine fields.

Monzano Mountain, Albuquerque, New Mexico, Known to be Home to Miles of Underground Tunnels and Galleries for Nuclear Weapon Storage and Research

The implication of such security procedures, however, for the hypothesis of a breakaway civilization are often overlooked, for like all obvious things, it is easy to do so. It is one of the functions of a government to secure the borders of its society from other societies, and thus, such security procedures in effect amount to a *border*, a boundary between two societies, and it will be evident that the distinction between a border between a government's secret installations and its public society, and a border between two entirely separate *societies*, is very thin.

d. The Nexus of Interests

In the previous chapter, we observed the nexus between governmental structures, a political ideology (Fascism), and the private corporate world that constituted the unusual circumstances in which the breakaway civilization emerged. In this respect, Sauder makes the highly trenchant observation that this nexus is *best* exhibited in the actual construction of the underworld infrastructure itself:

> That nexus of interests was comprised of (a) big business; (b) military agencies; and (c) private individuals who were in on the deal (and who very likely benefitted from insider speculation in the local real estate market). Underground base researchers would do well to look for this nexus of interests and pattern of activity elsewhere, as similar groups are likely to have played key roles in planning and constructing underground facilities…[41]

In other words, the postwar pattern we saw emerging toward the very end of World War Two is alive and well.

e. The Implications of Doomsday and Continuity of Government Planning: The Apocalyptic Ideology

There are a number of other parallels between the wartime Nazi model and the postwar American one, notwithstanding their many connections to each other, not the least of which is that many American think tanks, such as DARPA and the Rand Corporation, appear to be modeled on SS General Hans Kammler's "think tank," the *Kammlerstab*. Additionally, as Sauder astutely observes, most of the installations with which we have been concerned, have been either for the purpose of secret research and technological development, or with gaming out, and preparing for, various apocalyptic scenarios, including nuclear war.[42] This is an important point, for it means that in addition to having a "survivability infrastructure" it also has an apocalyptic view of the future, which is coupled to the very technologies it possesses. This matrix of infrastructure, technology, and ideology is a powerful combination that could lead to a *Weltanschauungskrieg* in the fullest sense of the word, i.e., in the careful preparation of world-apocalyptic events through techniques of social engineering, and then to the "fulfillment" of those created expectations via its access to the technologies themselves via gamed-out and computer-tested

scenarios. If this sounds farfetched or fanciful, recall the peculiar pronouncements of the Nazis in the postwar period, of Adamski, and of his own suggestive fascist connections and doctrines.

f. Technologies of Tunnel Boring

No survey of Sauder's excellent research would be complete without a mention of the excavating and boring technologies he recounts in his book. And here, we are dealing, as we shall see, *directly* with the hypothesis of the possibility of a breakaway civilization. In a conventional tunnel excavating or boring machine, a cylindrical machine has a cutting rotating head, in which are located several superhard alloy drilling and grinding bits which dig into the rock. This excavated rock, called "muck" in the trade, is moved by conveyor belts to the end of the machine where it is hauled away.[43] The process, particularly through hard rock, is costly, and time consuming.

It should come as no surprise, however, that underworld installations for the secret and covert research of advanced technologies should also investigate advanced technologies for creating more such installations! Sauder cites a 1964 Bechtel Corporation study in which new tunnel boring technologies are mentioned, including electrical disintegration, microwaves, electron beam guns, various flame jet technologies, lasers, water jets, and, significantly, nuclear plasmas,[44] about which more in a moment.

(1) The Water Jet Boring Technology

Before turning to the plasma boring technology, it is worth considering two others mentioned by Sauder. The pulsed water jet cannon "essentially grinds away the rock face by directing a high-pressure, pulsed, water jet against it."[45] In other words, the water-jet boring technology is nothing but "high speed" or "time lapsed" erosion.

(2) The Flame Jet Boring Technology

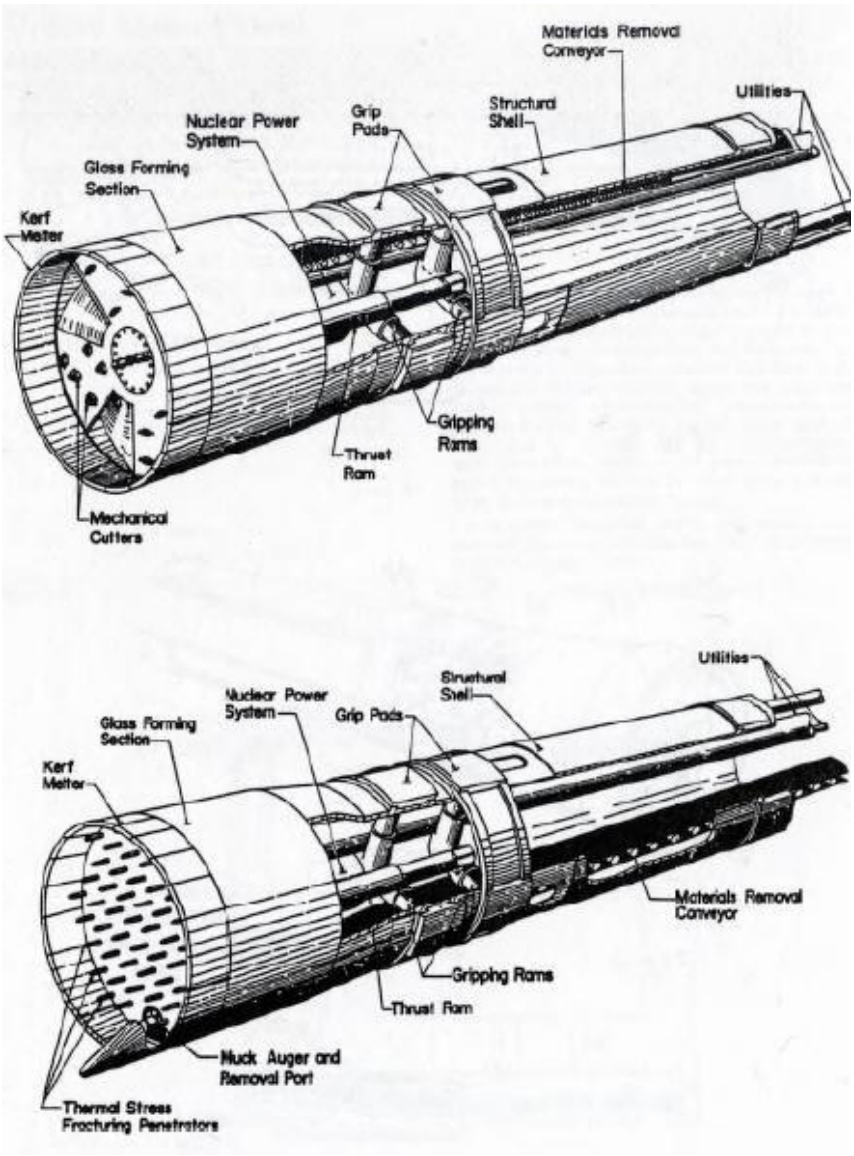
According to Sauder, in 1968 United Aircraft Research Laboratories compiled a feasibility study of the possibilities represented by flame-jet excavation. As envisioned by the laboratory, the machine would advance on conventional caterpillar treads while directing very high temperature jets against the face. The jets would loosen and partially vitrify the rock while a conventional boring head would drill and grind it away. The flame- jet method

would leave a smooth wall,[46] and it was estimated that it would save "from 44% to 28% of the cost of the drill and blast method."[47] But this was by no means the most exotic technology envisioned, and perhaps manufactured, for the construction of the underworld's installations.

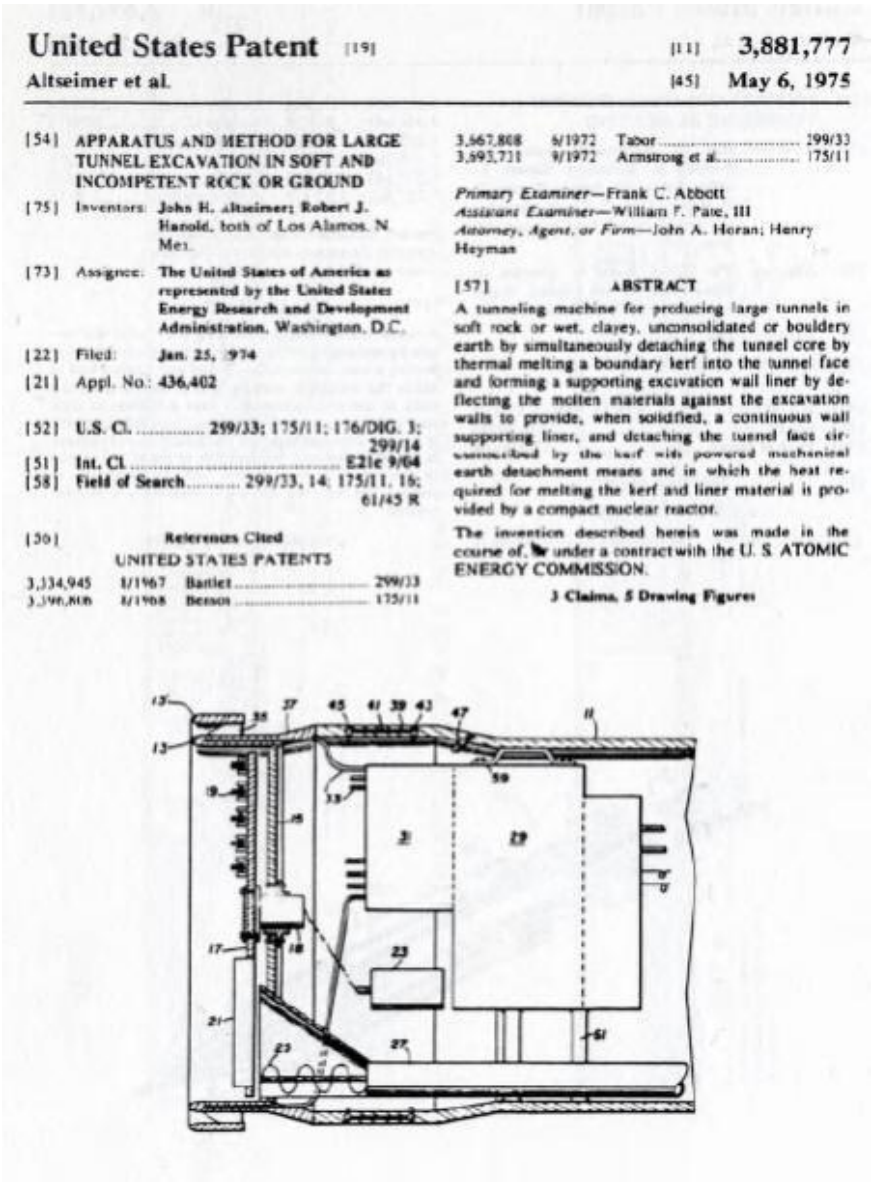
(3) Nuclear Subterrenes and a NASA Study

By far the most exotic tunnel boring and excavating technology was the "nuclear subterrene" proposed and actually designed by the Los Alamos National Laboratory, whose scientists even filed a number of patents on the device, and then, as Sauder quips, "the whole thing just sort of faded away. Or did it?"[48] These "subterrenes" work by applying the extremely hot plasma from a portable nuclear reactor to the dirt or rock face, actually completely vitrifying the rock or dirt as it proceeds, "and leaving a neat, solidly glass-lined tunnel behind them,"[49] actually making it possible for these machines to bore tunnels into soil not normally considered safe for such tunnels, since the hardened glass-like or ceramic-like walls left behind provide an natural reinforcement to the structure in almost any conditions. Additionally, this process leaves no "muck" behind that must be carted away. The nuclear subterrene literally "slices through rock like a nuclear powered, 2,000 degree Fahrenheit earthworm, boring its way deep underground."[50]

According to Sauder both the United States Atomic Energy Commission and the United States Energy Research and Development Administration took out patents on such machines in beginning in 1972 and a later one in 1975.[51]



Two Types of Nuclear Subterrene Boring and Excavating Machines[52]



United States Patent [19]
Altseimer et al.

[11] 3,881,777
[45] May 6, 1975

[54] APPARATUS AND METHOD FOR LARGE TUNNEL EXCAVATION IN SOFT AND INCOMPETENT ROCK OR GROUND

[75] Inventors: John H. Altseimer; Robert J. Harold, both of Los Alamos, N. Mex.

[73] Assignee: The United States of America as represented by the United States Energy Research and Development Administration, Washington, D.C.

[22] Filed: Jan. 25, 1974

[21] Appl. No.: 436,402

[52] U.S. Cl. 299/33; 175/11; 176/DIG. 3; 299/14
[51] Int. Cl. E21c 9/64
[58] Field of Search ..... 299/33, 14; 175/11, 16; 61/45 R

[56] References Cited
UNITED STATES PATENTS

3,334,945	1/1967	Bartlet	299/33
3,390,808	1/1968	Benson	175/11
3,567,808	6/1972	Tabor	299/33
3,693,731	9/1972	Armstrong et al.	175/11

Primary Examiner—Frank C. Abbott
Assistant Examiner—William F. Pate, III
Attorney, Agent, or Firm—John A. Horan; Henry Heyman

[57] ABSTRACT

A tunneling machine for producing large tunnels in soft rock or wet, clayey, unconsolidated or bouldery earth by simultaneously detaching the tunnel core by thermal melting a boundary kerf into the tunnel face and forming a supporting excavation wall liner by deflecting the molten materials against the excavation walls to provide, when solidified, a continuous wall supporting liner, and detaching the tunnel face circumscribed by the kerf with powered mechanical earth detachment means and in which the heat required for melting the kerf and liner material is provided by a compact nuclear reactor.

The invention described herein was made in the course of, or under a contract with the U. S. ATOMIC ENERGY COMMISSION.

3 Claims, 5 Drawing Figures

1975 U.S. Patent for a Nuclear Subterrene Excavating and Boring Machine[53]

Some federal agencies, however, speculated on an exotic use for this exotic technology, and here, it is best site Sauder for the implications of this use to sink in fully:

> 1980s documents from Los Alamos National Laboratory and from Texas A&M University (under contract to NASA) indicate that there are plans to use “nuclear subterrene tunneling machines” to melt

> tunnels under the Moon's surface, to make living, working, mining and transportation facilities for a lunar colony.
>
> A 1986 Los Alamos report calls for using a fission powered, nuclear subselene to provide the heat to "melt rock and form a self-supporting, glass-lined tunnel suitable for Maglev or other high-speed transport modes," The report recommends burrowing beneath the surface because of the harsh lunar environment. It further mentions that the tunnels would "need to be hundreds, or thousands of kilometers long… " The actual subselenes would be automatic devices, remotely operated. In 1986, Los Alamos estimated each subelene could be built for about $50 million and transported to the Moon for anywhere from $155 million to $2.323 million… It should be noted that the report did not specify how the nuclear subselenes and their crews would be transported to the Moon.[54]

Indeed, that is the mystery, for by the time of these plans, NASA had long abandoned the massive Saturn V boosters of the Apollo program, and had no similar deep space capability, having opted for the space shuttle system for low earth orbit heavy lift capabilities.

This implies three possibilities:

> 1) NASA was conducting hypothetical studies for a future project when a deep space launch capability was again operational;
> 2) NASA had a hidden technology of deep space launch capability and was conducting practical studies(or at least was aware of such capabilities in the hands of some other agency or group); or,
> 3) NASA was publicly stating "future possibilities" that had already begun.

With respect to the latter two possibilities, Sauder observers that the Texas A&M study proposed a combination tunneling technology, using a conventional drill-and-grinding rotating head, but a nuclear plasma to melt the surrounding tunnel walls and then passing the remaining muck out the back,[55] and then makes one more highly provocative remark: "The rest of the melted much(called regolith) is passed out of the back of the tunneler and then carried to the surface for disposal by the dump trucks that follow the tunneler through the tunnel."[56] For those who are unfamiliar with the name, an early space anomalies researcher, George Leonard, wrote a book in the 1970s—*Somebody*

Else is on the Moon—in which, on the basis of official NASA photographs, he maintained that one could detect precisely the type of "mining excavations" mentioned in the Texas A&M study.

While I have always been extremely skeptical of Leonard's book, analytical techniques, and conclusions, the combination of his claims plus the subsequent NASA sponsored study of the possibility of subselene lunar nuclear excavation does raise the possibility that these technologies were being developed not only for the creation of an "underworld" infrastructure, but of an "overworld" one as well.

C. Conclusions and Reflections: The Obvious Things: Camouflage, Deception, and Security

We are now in a position to summarize what this review of underground installations implies for the hypothesis of a breakaway civilization.

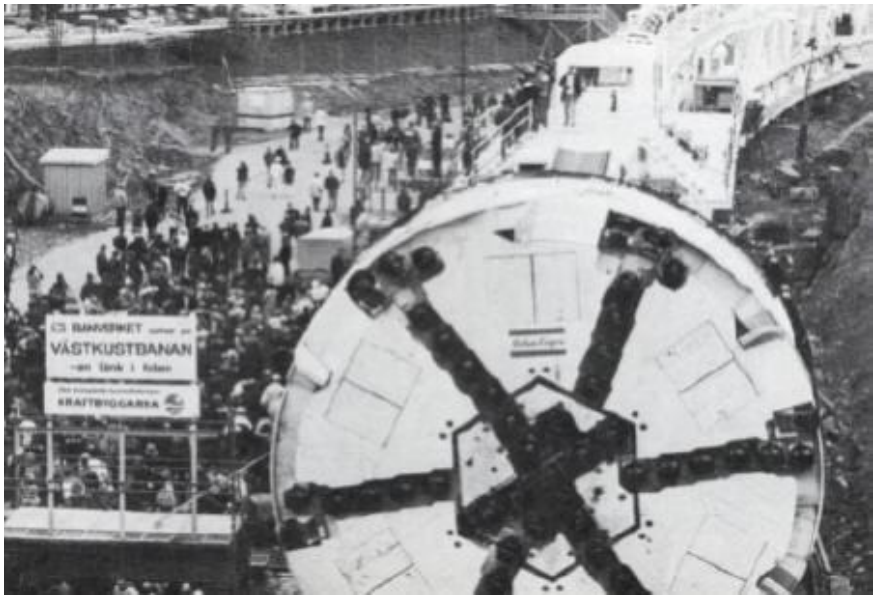
Firstly, the facilities surveyed, both Nazi and American, indicate the creation of a physical plant and infrastructure capable of three of the crucial activities of a civilization in Quigley's inventory: manufacture, invention(research), and the creation of surplus.

Secondly, the sheer enormity of these facilities, plus the possibility of their interconnection by equally hidden and underground means, implies that the nerve centers of this underworld are connected, just as in any ordinary society cities and centers of commerce are connected.

Thirdly, the measures taken to camouflage these facilities, by outright camouflage and by psychological operations techniques designed to cloak their activities and sew contexts within the core civilization for their misinterpretation, strongly suggest that we are, in fact, dealing with a breakaway civilization. Additionally, the security surrounding such installations is commensurate if not identical to borders between societies or nation-states in the core civilization, indicating, again, that the strong possibility exists that we are dealing with a breakaway civilization.

Finally, the fact that psychological operations appear to be indicated in connection with these installations and the advanced technologies they both represent and research, plus the fact that they are connected with an inherently apocalyptic view of the future, a view which brought them into existence, strongly suggests that the ideological culture of this society or breakaway civilization is different from that of the core civilization.

But the careful reader would, here, strongly object, to certain assumptions made in this chapter, namely, the equivalence of a breakaway *society* with a breakaway *civilization.* Indeed, he would be correct to do so. As we noted in the first chapter, the essence of Richard M. Dolan's idea of the breakaway civilization is its possible possession of a technology greatly in advance of that of the core civilization surrounding it, and by implication, its suppression of the knowledge and existence of that technology. It is this final issue we must now, briefly, consider.



A Large, Conventional German Tunnel Boring Machine[57]

Notes

[1] Caroll Quigley, *The Evolution Of Civilizations*, p.154.

[2] Farrell, *Reich of the Black Sun*, pp.102ff.

[3] Ibid.

[4] Ibid, pp.25-52.

[5] Farrell, *The Philosophers'#x2019; Stone*, pp.205-234.

[6] Hans George Kampe, *The Underground Military Command Bunkers of Zossen, Germany: History of Their Construction and Use by the Wehrmacht and Soviet Army 1937-1994*, trans. from the German by Don Cox (Atglen, Pennsylvania, Schiffer Military / Aviation History, 1996), frontispiece.

[7] Kampe, *The Underground Military Command Bunkers of Zossen, Germany*, p.12.

[8] Kampe, *The Underground Military Command Bunkers of Zossen, Germany*, p.13.

[9] Kampe, *The Underground Military Command Bunkers of Zossen, Germany*, p.22.

[10] Kampe, *The Underground Military Command Bunkers of Zossen, Germany*, p.21.

[11] Ibid., p.23.

[12] Kampe, *The Underground Military Command Bunkers of Zossen, Germany*, p.13.

[13] Friedrich Georg, *Hitlers Siegeswaffen: Band 2: Star Wars 1947: Teilband B: Von der Amerikarakete zur Orbitalstation—Deutschlands Streben*

[14] Ibid., p.35.

[15] George, Hitlers *Siegeswaffen, : Band 2: Star Wars 1947: Teilband B: Von der Amerikarakete zur Orbitalstation—Deutschlands Streben nach Interkontinentalwaffen und das erste Weltraumprogramm*, p.34.

[16] Richard Sauder, Ph.D., *Underground Bases and Tunnels: What is the Government Trying to Hide?* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 1997), p.7.

[17] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, p.10, citing Lloyd A. Duscha, "Underground Facilities for Defense—Experience and Lessons," in *Tunneling and Underground Transport: Future Developments in Technology, Economics, and policy*, ed. F.p.Davidson (New York: Elsevier Science Publishing Company, Inc. 1987), pp.109-113, emphasis Sauder's.

[18] Sauder, op.cit., pp.11-12.

[19] Ibid., p.13.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, pp.67=68.

[22] It was Northrop Grumman That recently built a mock-up of the Nazi Horten Brothers' Go229 flying wing and tested it at its radar cross section facility. See http//www.thehowlandcompany.com/Bluefire_Tejon.htm.

[23] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*,p.29.

[24] Ibid.,p.66.

[25] Ibid.,pp.49-51,see also pp.31-33

[26] Ibid.,pp.19,73.

[27] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*,pp.52-53

[28] Ibid.,p.70

[29] Albert Speer, *Infiltration: How Heinrich Himmler Schemed to Build an SS Industrial Empire*,p.316.

[30] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, p.6.

[31] Ibid., p.72.

[32] Ibid., pp.74,76-77.Sauder notes on p.73 that a committee, the U.S. National Committee on Tunneling Techonology was established, one of whose functions was "to coordinate U.S. tunneling techonolog activity with those of other nation."(p.73.).

[33] Ibid.,pp.77-80

[34] Ibid.,pp.80.

[35] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*,pp.80-81.

[36] Ibid.,pp.15-16

[37] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*,pp.15-69.

[38] Ibid.,p.69..

[39] Ibid.,p.25.

[40] Ibid.,p.26.

[41] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*,p.17, see also p,23 for some specific information on agencies, acedemic institutions, and corporations involved.

[42] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*,pp.22,43,60-61.

[43] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*,pp.85. For a list of prominent manufactures of such machines, see p.86.

[44] Ibid., p.90. On p.91 Sauder also cites a study of United Aircraft Research Labs to use a hybrid technology consisting of a conventional boring machine with cutting and grinding head, which uses pulsed lasers to soften or weaken the rock surface prior to boring.

[45] Ibid.,p.92.

[46] Ibid.

[47] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, p.93.

[48] Ibid.,p.94.

[49] Ibid.,

[50] Ibid.,p.95.

[51] Ibid.,pp.95-96.

[52] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, photo insert section.

[53] Reproduced by Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, photo insert.

[54] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, pp.100-101.

[55] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, p.101.

[56] Ibid.,p.102.

[57] Sauder, *Underground Bases and Tunnels*, photo insert.

10

Tesla to Townsend:
The 1950s Pattern of Coordinated Suppression:
Conclusions to this Study

"Nevertheless, unknown to the many newcomers being indoctrinated into the field of electrogravitics, this multicompany R&D effort was merely supplementing a highly classified effort that had already been in progress since the end of World War II. This preexisting project, known as Project Skyvault, was actually ahead in achieving the goal of a manned antigravity craft.?

Dr. Paul A. LaViolette[1]

Paul A. LaViolette is a scientist who has researched and published on an extraordinary range of topics, everything from physics metaphors contained in ancient and esoteric systems, to the non-random distribution of pulsars throughout the Milky Way galaxy when viewed from the Earth. He has also published a superb, and supremely valuable, study of suppressed physics and technologies related to antigravity, *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology,* an indispensable guide for those concerned with off-the-books physics and technologies.

It is also, however, an indispensable book for a consideration of Dolan's hypothesis of a breakaway civilization and its technologies, for when its insights are combined with the wartime and postwar researches of the Nazi International, and further, combined with our findings presented previously in this book—namely, that the prewar corporate nexus between large German and American corporations was reconstituted during and after the war, this time with the Nazis thrown into the mix—then the picture that emerges is one of coordinated action to suppress public awareness of the physics being developed, and the technologies being engineered on the basis of that physics.

We therefore assume, in this concluding chapter, the following things:

> 1] that a relationship existed during the immediate postwar period, and continuing at least through the 1950s, between the Nazi International and American corporate and banking components of the "military-industrial complex;"

2] that each component constituted a crucial element within the matrix of the breakaway civilization, that each component would wish to suppress any competition—in line with its prewar cartel and monopoly ideology—and that this means, effectively, that each component would take responsibility within its own sphere of influence to suppress the public development and knowledge of scientific theories and associated technologies that it itself was covertly researching and developing;[2]

3] that each component would also engage in psychological operations designed both to conceal its activities and technologies, and to plant memes within the broader culture leading to a context that would promote the deliberate misinterpretation and obfuscation of its technologies; and thus,

4] the "coincidental" emergence during the 1950s of contactee stories, the postwar statements of Nazis, along with the "near simultaneous" and "coincidental" disappearance of certain technologies and subjects from the open literature, is not coincidental at all, but the coordinated action of this postwar breakaway civilization and each of its components, pursuing psychological operations, and suppression of pubic scientific inquiries and areas of technological development it wishes to monopolize for itself.

As we noted at the outset, the core issue in Richard Dolan's hypothesis of a breakaway civilization is advanced technology, and the implicit idea that such technology has been secretly advanced far beyond the technological level of open society, to such an extent that the covert bureaucratic infrastructure conducting this research has, in effect, become a wholly different type of civilization, with a *wholly different scientific paradigm.*

But is there, in fact, such a paradigm? And if so, what are its implications?

A. Suppressed Physics

1. LaViolette's Anecdotal Story

There is indeed such a hidden paradigm, if one is to believe the statements of those involved with the black projects world, or those connected with it secondhand. And there are deep sociological implications and consequences. But before we can understand those implications and

consequences, we need to understand exactly what has been said about that hidden underworld, an underworld that includes not merely subterranean installations, but also underground concepts and paradigms.

Dr. LaViolette recounts a story that, for him, opened a door onto the possibility of a vastly different, covert, and off-the-books physics, one far different from the "public consumption" physics learned in universities:

> In 1992, I had an interesting telephone conversation with a man who is one of the group of informants… whose stunning revelations about the B-2 bomber were published in *Aviation Week & Space Technology.* Although he gave me his full name, I will identify him as Ray for reasons of confidentiality. Ray claimed to have worked on a number of black R&D projects and to have been in contact with certain other black-world researchers. *He told me that the physics theories that academics and most laboratory physicists currently understand, teach, and write about are grossly in error. A very advanced and much more accurate theoretical framework has been developed by scientists of the black-programs community, but its fundamentals presently remain classified. From the standpoint of the new physics, modern physics concepts used in the conventional world, such as relativity theory, quantum electrodynamics, and quantum mechanics are referred to as "classical concepts," that is, they are treated as terribly outdated.*[3]

If true, LaViolette's story is a strong indicator that an entirely *different* scientific and engineering culture exists within the black projects underworld, than exists *publicly*, and this is a powerful argument that one is dealing, in classic Dolan-esque fashion, with a breakaway civilization, in that it has an entirely different scientific ideology, and even, as we shall see subsequently, a unique sociology that results from its technological achievements.

Indeed, LaViolette continues, giving a glimpse into what the nature of that paradigm might be:

> According to Ray, unlike today's "Classical" physics, the new physics **does not begin with physical observables** in developing its treatment of physical phenomena. Rather, it postulates the existence of an underlying reality **consisting of an inherently unobservable subtle substance** called an *ether*, or alternatively*aether*, which fills

> all space. It then defines all of its fundamental quantities at that subphysical level. Physical observables then emerge as mathematical solutions to equations defined in terms of these more basic ether processes. This new physics regards time and space as absolutes and views Einstein's notion of relative time and space as fundamentally incorrect.[4]

Whatever the merits of this story—and one must always entertain the possibility that "Ray" was continuing in some sort of psychological disinformation operation, giving just enough true elements along with a deliberate lie—a brief closer look at the suggested physics is necessary.

The first thing to be noted about Ray's allegations is that the "off-the-books" physics *deliberately dispenses with Einstein's relativity theories, exactly as the Nazi scientists working in the Reich?s black projects prior to and during World War Two had done. In other words, the scientific, physics culture of the two worlds is, in this respect, exactly the same.* This in turn argues plausibly that some sort of Nazi influence continued to be felt within the American component of the breakaway civilization long after the war, a point to which we shall return in a moment.

The point to be noted about Ray's allegations is the return to the nineteenth and early twentieth century idea of an aether, a physical non-observable with certain specific *properties of information processing.* And this leads us to a fresh consideration of what I have referred to in previous books as a "topological metaphor" of the physical medium found in some ancient metaphysical texts.[5] This should not surprise us, since the mathematical description of such a medium would have to rely upon higher order topological languages to describe its processes.

We may envision this physical non-observable, in mathematical terms, as the empty hyper-set, or ∅. At the outset, we note that it is *a nothing*, a physical non-observable, and thus, in the conceptions of the ancient metaphysical systems with which the Nazis were so familiar, it is not only a nothing, but also an infinity, neither definable, but paradoxically, a "countable entity", a "One." At this juncture, in quasi-physical terms, it is quanticizable, and yet, since there is nothing else, it is also a continuum.

We then imagine that we bracket a certain region of this nothingness. Immediately when we do so, we have introduced a *change into the system,* and therefore, introduced the notion of time. Simultaneously with this, we introduce three distinct "nothings" (notice how number itself arises from this

process), the first region of nothing, $\varnothing_1$, a new region of nothing, $\varnothing_2$, and a common "surface", itself a nothing, between the two: $\partial\varnothing_{1,2}$. (The partial derivative symbol ∂ is used in topology to denote the surface of something). Thus, the topological metaphor that I have outlined in previous books appears to be at least *similar* to the notions that Ray described to Dr. LaViolette.[6]

But there are other anecdotal evidences of the development of such an off-the-books physics and technology from other sources, including, incredibly enough, the statements of the former head of Lockheed-Martin's Skunk Works, Ben Rich.

2. The Curious Statements of Ben Rich: The Implications of Hidden Technologies and Hidden Physics[7]

Ben Rich, the well-known chief of Lockheed's "skunk works," the secret development facility responsible for, among other things, the development of stealth technology and America's F-117 stealth fighter, was born in Manilla, the Philippines on June 18, 1925. Fascinated with aircraft and aircraft models from his youth, his family moved to the United States in May, 1941, in response to the gathering war clouds with the Japanese Empire that would burst with such sudden ferocity with the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor later that year on December 7.

Obtaining a Bachelor of Science degree in mechanical engineering from UCLA in 1950, Rich went to work for Lockheed's Burbank facility as a specialist in thermodynamics, aerodynamics, propulsion, and design. By 1955, he had so distinguished himself he was moved to Lockheed's Advanced Development Projects, the "skunk works," then under the capable and brilliant direction of Clarence "Kelly" Johnson, the man he would eventually replace. There, Rich worked on the development of Top Secret advanced aircraft, the high altitude U-2 and even more exotic SR-71 Blackbird among them. When Johnson retired in 1975, Ben Rich succeeded him as the director of Lockheed's "skunk works," a position he held until his retirement on Dec. 31, 1990. Ben Rich died on Jan. 5, 1995, but between the time of his retirement and his death, he made a number of astonishing public and private statements, the subject of our study here.

a. A Catalog of Ben Rich's Astonishing Statements

For simplicity's sake, we will catalog Rich's statements, italicizing the statement itself, and then providing the context in which each was made.

1. *"The Air Force has just given us a contract to take ET back home."* This statement was made by Rich during a slide presentation he was giving on September 22, 1992, at the United States Air Force Museum in Dayton, Ohio. It is worth mentioning—though most readers will probably already be aware of it, that Dayton, Ohio is home to Wright-Patterson Air Force base, reputedly the place where recovered and alleged extra-terrestrial craft, including the Roswell craft, and the Kecksburg craft, were initially taken for examination. Wright-Patterson based the Air Technical Intelligence Command, Project Bluebook, and a large contingent of Paperclip Nazis after World War Two.
2. *"We now have the technology to take ET back home."* This nearly verbatim statement was made by Rich about half a year later, on March 23,1993, at a lecture using virtually the same presentation as he made to the US Air Force Museum the previous year. The presentation was made to the UCLA School of Engineering Alumni Association.
3. *"We did the F-104, C-130, U-2, SR-71, F-117 and many other programs that I can?t talk about. We are still working very hard, I just can?t tell you what we are doing.?* This statement was likewise made during Rich?s 1992 presentation to the US Air Force Museum.
4. *"We already have the means to travel among the stars. But these technologies are so locked up in black programs, that it would take an act of God to ever get them out to benefit humanity."* This statement was made during Rich's presentation in 1993 to the UCLA School of Engineering Alumni Association.
5. *"If you can imagine it, Lockheed Skunk Works has done it."* This statement was made by Rich to a small informal gathering at UCLA after his formal presentation.
6. *"We have some new things. We are not stagnating. What we are doing is updating ourselves without advertising. There are some new programs, and there are certain things, some of them twenty or thirty years old that are still breakthroughs and appropriate to keep quiet about. Other people don't have them yet."* This statement was made

by Ben Rich to *Popular Science* magazine reporter Stuart F. Brown in the October 1994 issue.

7. *"I wish I could tell you about the projects we are currently working on. They are both fascinating and fantastic. They call for technologies once only dreamed of by Science fiction writers."* Rich made this statement in presentation to the AIAA (American Institute of Aeronautics and Astronautics] on September 7, 1988 in Atlanta, Georgia.

8. *"We now know how to travel to the stars."* This statement, again, was made during his 1993 UCLA presentation.

And last, but not least, there was one final comment, and for our purposes as we shall see, it is the most significant one:

9. *"There is an error in the equations, and we have figured it out, and now know how to travel to the stars, and it won't take a lifetime to do it."* This statement immediately followed number 8 above, and was made at the 1993 UCLA presentation.

In addition to these comments by Ben Rich, it is also worth noting that others in the black projects industry made similar statements. Michael Schratt states in his article that an unnamed Lockheed retired engineer was quoted in the February 1988 issue of *Gung-Ho* magazine, in an article titled "Stealth and Beyond," as saying "Let's just put it this way… we have things flying in the Nevada desert that would make George Lucas drool."
Schratt goes on to state:

> The same *Gung-Ho* article continues with an earth-shaking comment made by an Air Force officer who was involved in the development of the SR-71 (blackbird): *"We are testing vehicles that defy description. To compare them conceptually to the SR-71 would be like comparing Leonardo da Vinci's parachute design to the space shuttle."* One retired Colonel chimed in with the following statement which also appeared in the same article: *"We have things that are so far beyond the comprehension of the average aviation authority as to be really alien to our way of thinking."*

All of these quotations lead Schratt to ask a very logical question: are they "veiled confirmation of the so-called 'secret space program'"?

b. Interpretive Possibilities

Before we proceed to answer that most important question—indeed, the central question posed by Rich's remarks—we must examine the interpretive possibilities suggested by this catalog of remarks. Looking carefully at Rich's statements, there are three broad classes into which they fall:

1. Statements implying the general nature of a fantastic though hidden and secret technology, with no indications of the capabilities or nature of that technology (statements 3,5-7);
2. Statements implying the general nature of a fantastic though hidden and secret technology, with the clear statement that this technology is capable of an interstellar capability (statements 1-2, 4, 8); and,
3. A single statement implying that the Lockheed scientists found *an* error "in the equations" that underwrites the fantastic technologies alluded to in all the other statements. Note that Rich is specific, and speaks of *an* error in thesingular, though he does not:

a. Specify the *nature* of that error, if it lies in the general philosophical and physical assumptions or if it is of a more specific and formal mathematical nature;

b. Specify which *kind* of equations he is referring to: the field equations of electromagnetism, the tensor equations of relativity? We have no idea. Rich *does* provide a clue, however, in that he refers to a *single* error in *equations*, implying a set of equations describing a particular phenomenon. This argues that the "singular error" may been of a generalized philosophical nature that crept into the formalization of an entire set of equations.

c. We are now in a position to examine the interpretive possibilities that Rich's statements give rise to.

d. We may begin our examination by a bit of a thought experiment. Imagine we are foreign agents infiltrated into each of Rich's presentations to monitor them, analyze and assess them, and report back to our home country. The first and most obvious possibility that we must entertain is that Rich may be lying, that he is stating things as a part of a psychological operation to make America' potential enemies think that the USA has technologies far in advance of anything in any terrestrial arsenal. But as with every disinformation

operation, there must be a kernel of truth operating in order for the false perception to take hold and influence decision-making.

e. In this case, that kernel of truth is provided by Rich's and Lockheed's track record of accomplishing feats of aerodynamic engineering well in advance of the public technologies of any given period. Consider only the U-2, the SR-71 Blackbird, or the F-117 stealth fighter. The mere fact, in other words, that someone of Rich's stature would make such statements means that they have to be taken seriously, and all possible interpretive paradigms and possibilities evaluated carefully. One must not, therefore, leap to the conclusion that he was telling the complete unvarnished truth, nor may one entirely dismiss them as being a complete pack of lies and total falsehoods.

c. The Error in the Equations: A Hidden Physics and Secrets

f. It is in this context that our would-be agent and analyst will turn his attention to the one piece of internal evidence that Rich gave as support for all the other fantastic statements that he made, namely, that "There is *an* error (singular) in the *equations* (plural), and we have figured it out, and now know *how* to travel to the *stars*, and it won't take a lifetime to do it." The context of Rich' statement indicates that, whatever this error was, and if genuine, it prevented mankind from traveling to the stars, and that fixing it theoretically enabled that possibility. We may therefore rule out the possibility that the equations in question are those dealing with standard aerodynamic of lift, drag, and so on. *Some other types of equations altogether are implied.*

g. Thus the question becomes: are there areas in which there are indications of an error in the equations that would theoretically enable inter-stellar travel? *In other words, can one argue a prima facie case that Rich was telling the truth here?* And if he *was* telling the truth here, then are there indications that an actual technology is being developed from that basis?

As noted, Rich made his statement in the specific context of knowing "how to travel to the stars" and this means that the "error in the equations" cannot be in the form of an error in any of the conventional equations of aerodynamics, fluid flow and so on.

In short, Rich's statements imply that one has to reverse-engineer an entire hidden history of physics and electrodynamics, for they clearly imply that there is such a history.

This raises the whole point of *secrecy* and just how long advanced secrets may be closely held and hidden from public view. Within UFOlogy the argument is often made that secret human technology could not be that advanced from that in the public view, nor would it have remained classified for so long. But the clear implication of Rich's statements is quite the opposite, for he not only clearly implies the existence of such technology but that it is so deeply secret that it has remained so for decades; he is also implying a hidden *physics.* The question is, when was "the error in the equations" known and why were the scientists looking for it?

d. Maxwell's Equations

As I have pointed out in many of my published books, the original form of James Clerk Maxwell's equations unifying electricity and magnetism were originally written in a geometric language known as quaternions. But additionally, when one turns to the literature of those physicists who are increasingly dissatisfied with the standard models, one finds other criticisms, even of their standard formulation in the partial derivative form learned by most students of physics, and as they were revised by Oliver Heaviside.

One of the most trenchant observations of such problems was noted by the physicist Thomas E. Phipps, Jr., in an excellent book entitled *Old Physics for New,* a highly mathematical work. There he notes two crucial things, namely, that Maxwell's own formulation of his theory does not adequately take into consideration sink motions, but only source motions, but more importantly, notes that induction is mathematically misrepresented by one form of equation (partial derivative form] when another form alone adequately accounts for the *changing shape of circuit parameters* that is being penetrated by a magnetic flux.[8] While all this may seem abstruse and incomprehensible, it basically boils down to the fact that in the quest for mathematical formalisms that are "beautiful," physicists essentially abandoned observation for the pursuit of theoretical beauty.

In the context of Rich's statements then, and their implication that there was an error in the equations, it is likely that the Lockheed engineers discovered this very simple mathematical change, one that, in effect, did *away* with the all important *observer* of the effect, in this case, the effect being the

electromagnetic field itself.[9] In this case, the circuit parameters, *only fully describable by the change in notation from partial to full derivative form, function as the physical observer of the field effect; change the parameters of the circuit, and one changes what is observed.* And that, of course, means that circuit parameters *directly* affect the local engineering or observation of space-time, exactly was was stated by the electrical engineer Gabriel Kron.[10]*Physics, in other words, went very early astray by means of this change.*

So from the standpoint of Rich's statements, *two* conceptual and philosophical errors were introduced because of this change of mathematical languages: (1) the change from quaternion geometry to linear algebra lost the idea of a non-translational stress in the physical medium, a stress that might conceivably be manipulated for an "antigravity" effect, and (2) the change from partial to full derivative form lost the observer - the *circuit parameters* - and the direct effect these had on the field to be observed.

In other words, even on this short and necessarily cursory examination, *one need go no further* than the parameterizations of Maxwell's theory of electromagnetism to discover two major changes in the mathematical formalisms of the theory that strongly support Rich's contention that "there was an error in the equations," an error making possible a technology to take us to the stars.

Those changes in the formalisms of the theory would, of course, lead to further theoretical developments, including, of course, Einstein's Special and General Relativity theories, and the subsequent attempts in the 1920s to formulate unified field theories between electromagnetism and gravity. But if the first foundations of electromagnetic theory were themselves vitiated by two seemingly minor changes in the mathematical formalism, then this would mean that many of the assumptions and parameters of the theoretical edifice built upon them also would have to be revisited and rethought from the ground up. For the moment, it need only be noted that, given this analysis, *it must be concluded that Rich was not simply stating something untrue, nor stating a piece of disinformation to mislead the public, other scientists, or engineers. His statements must be given great weight because the actual history itself suggests that such errors were made.* The history is known and commented on by physicists willing to break with accepted dogmas and examine the history of the theoretical edifice (often at great cost to their own careers).

This fact, plus the fact of the other statements Rich made, leads me to conclude that Lockheed's engineers not only discovered these and similar errors, but that they went on to work out a new, hidden, off-the-books

theoretical structure of physics, and to begin the engineering of actual technologies based upon it. We are, in other words, looking at the possibility of an actual, practical, field propulsion technology, utilizing electromagnetism in a practical way to achieve antigravity effects.

3. Quigley Again: The Sociology of Weaponry and the Implications

But what does all this imply for the hypothesis of a breakaway civilization? The first, and most obvious, thing is that we are in fact dealing not merely with a breakaway *society*, i.e., with a rogue group at more or less the same pitch of development as the civilization it is breaking away from, but with a *civilization* with a *distinctively different science and technological matrix*, and that in turn imposes its own *sociological organization.*

Here we must once again return, for a brief moment, to Dr. Carroll Quigley. In a bibliographical appendix accompanying Quigley's *Evolution of Civilizations,* William Marina notes that

> At the time of his death, Quigley was at work on a study which had occupied him for years and which might be called the sociology of weaponry; that is, the way in which the structure and development of civilizations are to a considerable extent a reflection of the weapons systems and military organization prevalent within a society.[11]

Marina notes that drafts of this study, almost two thousand pages long, were among Quigley's papers remaining at Georgetown University.[12]

A few weeks before his untimely death, Quigley spoke to this subject in a lecture to the School of Foreign Service at Georgetown:

> Also related to the problem of internalized controls is the shift of weapons in our society. This is a profound problem. I have spent ten years working on it throughout all of history, and I hope eventually to produce a book if I can find a publisher. There will be endless analyses of Chinese history and Byzantine history and Russian history and everything else, and the book is about nine-tenths written, I'd say, in the last ten years. The shift of weapons in any civilization and, above all, in our civilization, from shock weapons to missile weapons, has a dominant influence on the ability to control individuals…

> In our society, individual behavior can no longer be controlled by any system of weaponry we have. in fact, we do not have enough people, even if we equip them with shock weapons, to control the behavior of that part of the population which does not have internalized controls. One reason for that, of course, is that the twenty percent who do not have internalized controls are concentrated in certain areas. I won't go into the subject of controls. It opens up the whole field of guerilla resistance, terrorism, and everything else; these cannot be controlled by any system or organized structure of force that exists, at least on the basis of missile weaponry. And, as I said, it would take too many people on the basis of shock weaponry. We have now done what the Romans did when they started to commit suicide: we have shifted from an army of citizen soldiers to an army of mercenaries, and those mercenaries are being recruited in our society, as they were in Roman society, from the twenty percent of the population which does not have the internalized controls of the civilization.[13]

This requires careful parsing.

First, it is to be noted that Quigley is not speaking of the breakaway civilization, but of the core western civilization—the one most of us are living in—and of the sweeping sociological changes that shock weapons, i.e., automated weaponry from machine guns to precision munitions, have introduced. His point is that such weapons have so drastically expanded firepower that it would require a huge force to be armed if the twenty percent of the population that "lacked internalized controls" were to revolt.

Secondly, this fact, plus the fact that strategic weaponry—in Quigley's time, thermonuclear weaponry—is useless against such a contingency, has led to the employment of that very population "lacking internalized controls" as the core of its military, in order to head off a social crisis, and to use the military as a means of social engineering.

Weapons technology, in other words, creates certain conditions of governmental and social organization. In the case of a society possessing the advanced physics and technologies of antigravity, it is inevitable that it would produce certain sociological and cultural attitudes, since, as Adamski's "ETs" warned, weaponized gravity would potentially greatly and exceed the destructive power of the largest thermonuclear weapons, and require new sociological structures, among them, *the need to restrict access to such*

technologies to prevent them from falling into the hands of those lacking "internalized controls." Quite literally, it would, from the ideological standpoint of that American-Fascist matrix, *require* the development of a breakaway civilization, the semi-permanent bifurcation of human society defined along the lines of the types of technologies to which each component has access.

And what are these "internalized controls"? For Quigley, they represent the constraints of conscience and moral development, oftentimes formed by religion. In a post-modern world, however, such constraints are increasingly under assault, and have to be replaced by something else. In this respect, it is intriguing to note that, both in Adamski's case, in the case of the implied psychological operations associated with advance technologies, and in the case of Skorzeny's*Weltanschauungskrieg,* it appears that the strategy adopted was to couple the appearance of advanced technologies with a modern, materialistic counterpart to the threat of metaphysical and spiritual evil standard in many religions, in short, with aliens or extraterrestrials whose intentions for humanity are ambiguous at best.

But this is not the only activity that a breakaway civilization would evidence, the other, as alluded to previously, would be to monopolize its control over such technologies, and thus, to suppress information about them, and the scientific principles upon which they are founded, from the general public. While volumes could be written about this entire subject, we shall concentrate here upon three unique cases, and the less-than-coincidental pattern of the occurrence of their suppression in the 1950s. In doing so, we are strongly suggesting that the occurrence of contactee allegations, the statements of Paperclip Nazis concerning the "extraterrestrial presence," and the suppression of certain types of physics experimentation, were the coordinated activity of this breakaway civilization to protect its research and development monopoly over these advances.

B. The Less-Than-Coincidental Pattern of the 1950s: Anti-Gravity, Richter, and Townsend Brown

1. The Tesla Precedent

Most people are aware that the banker J.P. Morgan suppressed Nikola Tesla's Wardenclyffe Project for the wireless transmission of electrical power.[14] What needs to be underscored here is that this is the first

documentable case of the interference with the invention of new energy technologies by the American corporate and banking interest we have surveyed previously. This pattern will be repeated, with a vengeance, during the immediate postwar period and extending into the 1950s, as we shall now see.

2. Project Skyvault
a. Nick Cook on the 1950s "Coincidence"

The curious disappearance of the subject of antigravity discussion during the 1950s was first brought to light by *Jane's Defence Weekly* consultant and aerospace journalist Nick Cook in his highly-acclaimed *Hunt For Zero Point*, and it is worth recalling what he stated about the matter:

> In 1957, George S. Trimble, one of the leading aerospace engineers in the US at that time, a man, it could safely be said, with a background in highly advanced concepts and classified activity, had put together what looked like a special projects team; one with a curious remit.

This, just a year after he started talking about the Golden Age of Anti-Gravity that would sweep through the industry starting in the 1960s.

So what went wrong?

> In its current literature, the stuff pumped out in press releases all the time, the US Air Force constantly talked up the 'vision': where it was going to be in 25 years, how it was going to wage and win future wars and how technology was the key.
>
> In 1956, it would have been as curious as I was about the notion of a fuelless propulsion source, one that could deliver phenomenal performance gains over a jet; perhaps including the ability to accelerate rapidly, to pull hairpin turns without crushing the pilot and to achieve speeds that defied the imagination. In short, it would have given them something that resembled a UFO.
>
> I rubbed my eyes….. The evidence was suggesting that in the mid-1950s there had been some kind of breakthrough in the antigravity field and for a small window in time people had talked about it freely and openly, believing they were witnessing the dawn of a new era, one that would benefit the whole of mankind.
>
> Then, in 1957, everyone had stopped talking about it. Had the military woken up to what was happening, bringing the clamps

down?[15]

Indeed, articles on antigravity research were fare for the mainstream media throughout the 1950s, even making the front page of the *New York Herald Tribune* for Sunday, November 20, 1955, and notably, the article refers to George S. Trimble, Jr., at that time "the vice-president in charge of advanced planning of Martin Aircraft Corp."[16]

b. The 1955 New York Herald Tribune Article

In confirmation of Cook's hypothesis that the discussion of the subject in open literature was suddenly and deliberately terminated, the New York Herald Tribune article begins with an astonishing revelation:

> *The initial steps of an almost incredible program to solve the secret of gravity and universal gravitation are being taken today in many of America's top scientific laboratories and research centers.*
>
> *A number of major, long-established companies in the United States aircrafts and electronics industries also are involved in gravity research.* Scientists, in general, bracket gravity with life itself as the greatest unsolved mystery in the Universe. But there are increasing numbers who feel that there must be a physical mechanism for its propagation which can be discovered and controlled.
>
> Should this mystery be solved it would bring about a greater revolution in power, transportation and many other fields than even the discovery of atomic power. The influence of such a discovery would be of tremendous import in the field of aircraft design—where the problem of fighting gravity's effects has always been basic.[17]

The article mentions specifically Dr. Charles T. Dozier, a scientist with General Dynamics, and of course, George S. Trimble of Martin, as well as Dr. Vaclav Hlavaty of the University of Indiana, as being involved in some of this research.[18]

But then the article gives an astonishing revelation, and a clue to the mystery earlier alluded by Ben Rich, namely, that there was an error in the equations, and also alluded to by Dr. LaViolette's source, "Ray," who

maintained that the off-the-books physics began not with observations, but with a series of equations of the non-observable medium. Here are the article's bombshells:

> Martin Aircraft has just put under contract two of Europe's leading theoretical authorities on gravity and electromagnetic fields—Dr. Burkhard Heim of Goettingen University, where some of the outstanding discoveres of the century in aerodynamics and physics have been made and Dr. Pascual Jordan of Hamburg University, Max Planck medal winner whose recent work was called:'Gravity and the Universe' has excited scientific circles throughout the world.
>
> Dr. Heim, now professor of theoretical physics, at Goettingen and who was a member of Germany's Bureau of Standards, during World War II, is certain that gravity can be overcome. Dr. Heim lost his eyesight and hearing, and had both his arms blown off at the elbows, in a World War II rocket explosion. He dictates his theories and mathematical calculations to his wife.[19]

Now we must pause to consider these bombshells in detail.

c. The Implications of Burkhard Heim and Pascual Jordan's Presence in These Projects

The first point to be noted is that the presence of Dr. Vlaclav Hlavaty and Dr. Burkhart Heim indicates that the American corporate components of this breakaway civilization were investigating theories of the unification of gravity and electromagnetism that were hyper-dimensional theories, in that both men were then proposing such theories.

The second point to be considered carefully is the presence of Burkhardt Heim and Pascual Jordan in these efforts of American aerospace corporations to decipher the code of gravity.

As I detailed in *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter,* Burkhart Heim's theory is an unusual departure from the then-regnant standard model of physics in several respects, and here it is necessary to cite my remarks and quotations there at length:

> …Heim did not reject one fundamental insight of Einstein, both in his General Theory of Relativity and more importantly, in his subsequent versions of the Unified Field Theory, namely, that

physical forces could be described geometrically. Thus, forces not only were functions of the geometry, the geometry was the forces. But there is one crucial insight to Heim's version of the theory, borrowed from the standard model of quantum mechanics, and that is "the two important ingredients that Einstein did *not* use," namely "a discrete spacetime and a higher dimensional space, provided with special, additional features."[20] Thus, Heim's theory is a logical extension of the insight of quantum mechanics *and* the various Unified Field Theories of the 1920s and 1930s in that all physical interactions are described as geometries, and in the crucial insight that space-time *itself* is quantized, that is, that it is built not of ever smaller infinitely divisible units, but of discrete "smallest possible" units of space and time.[21]

Thus, Heim's theory is not only a "completely geometrized unified field theory" but it is one with profound implications, for it gives rise "to a novel concept for an advanced space transportation technology, permitting, in principle, *superluminal* travel."[22] This unification is accomplished, in its extended version, by an 8-dimensional quantized "and *spin-oriented space*."[23] As a result, its predictive power is enormous, for it not only predicts fundamental particle properties such as masses and lifetimes,[24] but also that "a transformation of electromagnetic wave energy at specific frequencies into gravitational like energy is possible."[25]

In coming to this view, Heim followed the principle of General Relativity and universalized it. In General Relativity, matter bends space-time itself, or, to put it differently, matter is a "bend" in the fabric of space-time; "matter and space-time curvature are equal."[26] Since the geometry and matter itself are equivalent, and to that extent, since matter is caused by the geometry of space-time distortion, then the essence of Heim's Theory is that every physical interaction or fields including gravity, electromagnetism, and the strong and weak forces of quantum mechanics are distortions in what otherwise would be a non-distorted undifferentiable space-time. Heim first presented this view "in 1952 at the International Congress on Aeronautics in Stuttgart, Germany,"[27] a date rather close to the end of World War Two, and not without its own suggestive implications, as will be seen. Heim further formally developed these ideas in the first versions of his theory during the

> late 1950s and early 1960s, the precise period in which Leonard Cramp's book appeared, outlining his views for the first time to an English-speaking general public.
>
> …
>
> This insight leads in turn to the next fundamental component of the extended 8 and 12 dimensional versions of his theory. Dröscher and Häuser present this aspect of his theory in the following manner: According to Heim, the whole universe comprises a grid of *Metrons* or metronic lattice. Space that does not contain any information consists of a discrete Euclidean grid… However, empty space must be **isotropic** with regard to spin orientation. If all metronic spins of a 6D volume pointed outward or inward, such a world would not have a spin potentiality. Therefore, cells with all spins outward have to have neighboring cells with all spins inward and vice versa. This alternative spin structure satisfies the isotropy requirement, but provides empty space with spin potentiality…. Thus empty space is void of physical events, but has inherent potentiality for physical events to happen.[28]

In other words, the normal void of space itself, absent any information distortions such as mass or matter, is a pure potential for "things to happen," it is the transmutative medium of the ancients. As a void it is a non-differentiated nothing, since there is a balance of spin orientations in all its cells.

It is thus when that balance or equilibrium is unbalanced and enters into non-equilibrium, where a preponderance of spin orientation of one or the other type prevails, that all physical interactions, and all matter, arises. Non-equilibrium and spin are the very *mechanisms* not only for the differentiations of creation, but therefore are also the very mechanisms of the unification of physics, or, to put it in alchemical terms, for the "em-bodiment" of the medium itself within normal matter. Thus, Heim's theory incorporates and corroborates the fundamental insights of Jordan and Kozyrev, for particles themselves for they are "geometrical entities that possess an internal structure which is changing cyclically in time…Elementary particles are not point entities, but do consist of **Metrons.**"[29] Thus, in a sense peculiarly paralleling some ancient views, "space and time are not the container for things, but are, due to their dynamic (cyclic) nature, the things themselves."[30] In Heim's hands, this dynamic view leads to a truly extraordinary cosmology, because the higher dimensional space is composed of such a lattice of "metrons" there are no

"singularities" or infinities that plague the standard models, and that have to be gotten rid of by the fancy mathematical accounting trick of renormalization.[31] The universe thus began as a single metron covering its entire surface (the undifferentiated medium), and as the number of metrons increased, their size decreased.[32]

In short, the spin-orientation and active force characteristics of time itself is the fundamental pillar of Heim's theory.

If all this is beginning to sound familiar, hold on, there's more.

In the 12-dimensional extension of Heim's original theory, there are

> five semantic units, namely, the subspaces $\mathbf{R^3}$ (space), T^1(time), S^2 (organization), I^2 (information) and G^4(steering of I^2) where superscripts denote dimension. Except for the 3 spatial dimensions, all other coordinates are imaginary. Several metric tensors can be constructed from these subspaces… Analyzing the metric tensors acting in $\mathbf{R^4}$, the theory predicts *six fundamental interactions*, instead of the four experimentally known ones.[33]

These two additional interactions are the basis behind the claim that the theory holds out the promise of a breakthrough in physics and in propulsion and energy technologies.

The first of these reactions, a weak gravitationally *repulsive* action, which is analogous to the standard model's "dark energy," Heim calls by the peculiar term "quintessence," a term with its own alchemical associations, as has been seen, and thus perhaps suggestive of influences at work on Heim's thinking other than the purely physics-related, namely, the alchemical. But there is also a "gravitophoton" reaction that "enables the conversion of electromagnetic radiation into a gravitational like field."[34]

It will have been noted by the careful reader that Heim's hyperdimensional space it actually comprised of five sub-spaces, one of which is our normal three dimensional space. Put differently, our three dimensional space is influenced by distortions in the higher nine dimensional space composed of its sub-spaces, recalling esotericist Manly P. Hall's observation that the successful confection of the Philosophers' Stone must be realized by one operation occurring simultaneously in four separate worlds.

It is precisely Heim theory's prediction of a direct gravitational-electromagnetic coupling that Dröscher and Häuser propose as the basis "for the novel space propulsion concept" that will be presented momentarily.[35]

…

Taking as their point of departure a series of experiments sponsored jointly by the European Space Agency and the U.S. Air Force, Dröscher and Hauser summarize the experiments and its implications as follows:

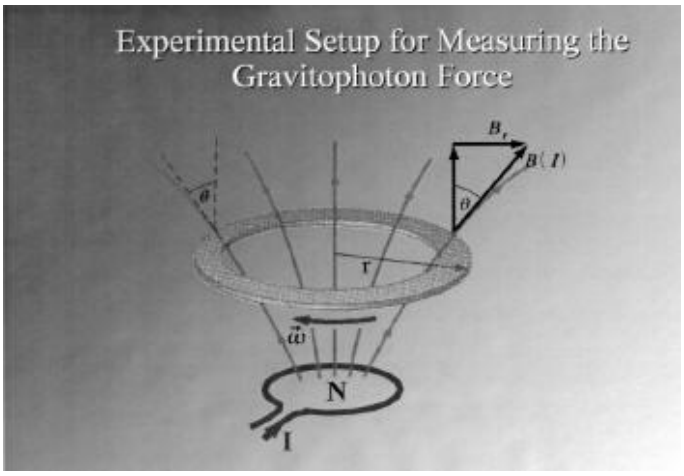
> In a recent experiment (march 2006), funded by the European Space Agency and the Air Force Office of Scientific Research, Taimer et al. report on the generation of a toroidal (tangential, azimuthal) gravitational field in a rotating accelerated (time dependent angular velocity) superconducting Niobium ring. IN July 2006, in a presentation at Berkeley university (sic), Taimar showed improved experimental results that confirmed previous experimental findings. Very recently, October 2006 and February 2007 the same authors reported repeating their experiments employing both accelerometers as well as laser ring-gyros that very accurately measured the gravitomagnetic field. The acceleration field was clearly observed, and its rotational nature was determined by a set of four accelerometers *in the plane of the ring.*
>
> *Since the experiment generates an artificial gravitational field, which is in the plane of the rotating ring…it cannot be used as a propulsion principle.* It is, however, of great importance, since it shows for the **first time that a gravitational field can be generated other than by the accumulation of mass.**[36]

Again, the mention of superconductors recalls Hudson's observations of mass loss anomalies in his strange material, and of physicist Hal Puthoff's explanations for them.

But note what Dröscher and Häuser conclude about the configuration of the experiment: since the artificial gravitational field was generated in the plane of the rotation of the superconductor, and not in the plane parallel to the axis of rotation, no practical propulsive benefit could accrue from the experiment. And this, precisely, is where Heim's unique theory steps in:

> …(Theoretical) considerations obtained from (Extended Heim Theory) lead to the conclusion that an experiment should be possible to generate a ***gravitational field acting parallel to the axis of rotation of (a) rotating ring***… and thus, if confirmed, could serve as a demonstrator for a **field propulsion principle.**[37]

The authors then propose an apparatus for testing this hypothesis consisting of two counter-rotating systems *arranged, as per the predictions of Heim's theory,* ***one on top of the other,*** *exactly as I have conjectured was the actual internal configuration of the Nazi Bell's counter-rotating drums!*[38]



Dröscher and Häuser's Proposed Apparatus for the Testing of a Field Propulsion Principle in a Plane Parallel to the Axis of Two Stacked Counter-rotating Systems

That this theory would predict so specifically such effects, within such a short time after the end of World War Two, with its suspicious resemblance to the actual proposed configuration of the Bell's internal counter-rotating drums, is suggestive that there is perhaps more in play in the formation of Heim's theory than meets the eye. And this is only confirmed by the mystery of what sort of research Heim was actually engaged in during the war.[39]

Now let us summarize what we have with respect to Heim's theory:

1) The theory begins with higher-dimensional definitions of a *quantized* but fully geometrized space-time;
2) The theory is able to make predictions from first principles concerning the mass and spin properties of fundamental particles;

> 3) The theory significantly departs from Einstein's relativistic hypothesis of a space-time *continuum*, and in this sense, Einstein's theory may be viewed, ala "Ray's" revelations to Dr. LaViolette, as a "classical" theory;
> 4) The theory is *testable*, and indeed, since it views space-time as a series of *cells with rotation moment or spin characteristics*, and as such it bears unique and direct conceptual relationships to the Nazi Bell project.

In short, we are looking at the distinct, direct, and strong possibility that Heim theory itself became the basis for the elaboration of the type of off-the-books-physics mentioned by "Ray" to Dr. LaViolette, and of an "error in the equations" mentioned by Ben Rich, for it adequately fulfills the parameters outlined by each man!

So much for Heim, but what about Pascual Jordan?

Here once again the story is very interesting, for Jordan was one of the seminal contributors to the development of quantum mechanics, and additionally, an ardent Nazi. But for our purposes, his significance lies also in an interesting contribution he made to the development of the idea of a coupling between gravity and electromagnetism:

> It seems likely that yet another scientist played some role in this project, although his name did not appear in the original interrogation protocols; his unique works could constitute part of the theoretical basis of the experiments. It's about professor Pascual Jordan, one of the most outstanding physicists of the Third Reich (whose career was as enigmatic as Gerlach's!). During the war he worked on a theory which described the phenomenon of "separation of magnetic fields," linking the isolation of magnetic fields with gravitational effects. Shortly after the war it was "perfected" and combined with the works of another scientist - presently it is known as the Jordan-Thiry theory. It is considered as one of the most fundamental achievements of the XXth century physics and Jordan was an almost certain candidate to receive the Nobel prize in 1954. Eventually, however, he was disqualified after his role during the war was revealed… the Jordan-Thiry theory forms the basis to analyze relativistic plasma vortices…[40]

Remember that point about plasmas, for we shall return to it shortly. For the present moment, again, it is critical to realize the value of someone like Jordan—in spite of his Nazi past—to the American program via his discovery of coupling effects between magnetism and gravity.

It is to be noted, additionally, that the presence of these two German scientists—one of them, Jordan, an ardent Nazi—in these postwar American antigravity projects occurs a mere two years before the whole subject appears to have gone deeply black.

d. Skyvault

We now return to the crucial research of Dr. Paul Laviolette. LaViolette also mentions another source, and project in antigravity research, also dating from the crucial period of the late 1950s, Project Skyvault:

> One evening in 1986, a friend and I went out for a beer. Like myself, he had a keen interest in alternative, cutting edge science. The topic of our conversation eventually turned to electrogravitics, and at this point my friend shared an interesting story. He told me that during the late 1950s, his father had worked as a physicist at the Rocketdyne Aerospace Corporation in Southern California and had been involved in some sort of super-secret antigravity research. At that time, my friend had been just a young boy. He said his father normally told him nothing about what he did at work because of an oath of secrecy he had taken, but one evening, after returning home from work he had been unable to contain himself. Very exuberantly, he had exclaimed, “We got it to work, we got it to work!” When my friend inquired what it was that was made to work, his father drew him a picture showing a lens shaped craft suspended in midair. He said, “We got it to lift off!” He would not say anything more about it, but that moment stuck in my friend’s mind and now he shared it with me. I knew my friend well enough to know that what he told me was entirely genuine.[41]

We will present more evidence in a moment why this story should be taken seriously, but for the present, it suffices to note that once again the crucial period of the late 1950s is singled out, this time by a completely different author, as a period of deeply black covert research activity into antigravity by a major American defense contractor.

LaViolette was later contacted by entirely different source, whom he identifies only by the name “Tom,” who corroborated details of this story:

> The story he later told me about the Skyvault project was quite astounding. He said that he first heard about it in the fall of 1974, when working for an engineering firm in Texas. His supervisor, with whom he had come to be very good friends, one day told him about a top-secret government project that *he had worked on between 1952 and 1957 while at North American Aviation*, a company that was later renamed North American Rockwell. The project had been initiated by the Defense Department through North American’s Rocketdyne division. Although Tom’s boss had already passed away, Tom did not wish to reveal his name, so to facilitate the discussion, we will call him Murray. Well, Tom had heard from Murray that the purpose of this project was to develop an antigravity vehicle that used microwave beams as its means for propulsion. It is uncertain whether Skyvault was the official name of the project, but at least this is what the scientists at Rocketdyne used to call it.
>
> *Although Project Skyvault was initiated by the government in the early 1950s, investigations into this exotic microwave propulsion technique actually dated back to the late 1940s.* Murray, who held a Ph.D., said that in those earlier days he had worked on projects that were associated with an initial phase of this research and that later he had continued this work at Rocketdyne, where he worked up until the 1960s. This microwave antigravity propulsion research project was still in progress in 1974…[42]

Again, the project fits into the same time-frame, the 1950s, but appears to have begun during World War Two.

But can microwaves theoretically be used for propulsion?

According to LaViolette, it can, utilizing a principle known as the microwave soliton effect resulting from phase conjugation. While it is not necessary to go into the principles of phase conjugation here,[43] we may effectively view this principle to involve powerful microwave standing waves between a resonator cavity on a presumed craft, and the ground, producing a propulsive lift.[44]

But there are two other indicators of research into antigravity and the structure of space-time that went deeply black during the crucial 1950s.

3. Thomas Townsend Brown and His Statements in "Project Winterhaven"

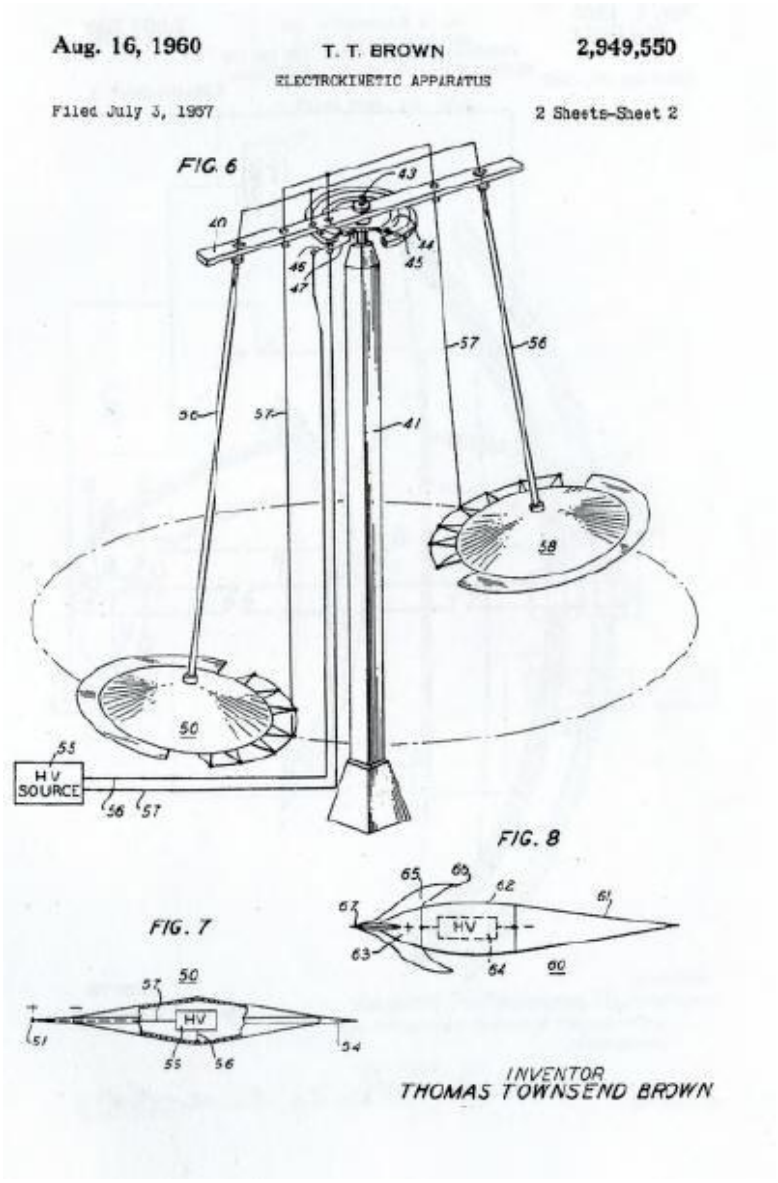
The name of Thomas Townsend Brown is well known to those researching the rise—and sudden disappearance—of antigravity as a subject of discussion in open literature. What most do *not* know are the curious statements he made on the subject, statements that, when viewed within a very wide context, suggest that his work was suppressed not only by agencies of the government and therefore, possibly by the breakaway civilization, but also by the American corporate component of that entity.

American Experimental Physicist Thomas Townsend Brown

These statements occur in a formal research proposal drafted by Brown and submitted to the U.S. Government for consideration, a proposal composed in 1952, and officially entitled "Project Winterhaven: A Proposal for Joint Services Research and Development Contract."[45]

Before looking closer at this project, we must understand what led to it. Brown, as most know, began experimenting with electrogravitics as a young man, when he noticed an effect that subsequently was named after him and his mentor Paul Biefeld: the Biefeld-Brown effect. When Brown would turn on the electric current to a cathode ray tube, the tube would momentarily jerk in the direction of the positive pole.

Brown subsequently conducted a lifetime of work of this phenomenon, eventually constructing disks of dielectric material and charging the leading edges of these disks positively, with the result that the disks would move more or less silently, with a faint hissing sound, in the direction of the positive polarity. This idea he patented in a 1960 patent for an “Electrokinetic Apparatus”.



Brown’s 1960 Electrokinetic Apparatus Patent

Thomas Townsend Brown with one of his Electro-Kinetic Disks

Brown was well suited to this type of research, serving in the US Navy during World War Two, experimenting with degaussing technologies and radar, as well as being connected in the popular imagination with the alleged Philadelphia Experiment, an early attempt to render an entire ship invisible to radar via electromagnetic means.[46] By Nick Cook's reckoning Brown's "curriculum vitae" from this period indicates that "there was no question that Brown was … well plugged into the military's research and development community, and that his opinions were given great credit."[47] During the years of his research into this effect, Brown performed tests in France of his disks in high vacuum, eliminating the possibility that the propulsive effect was due to the creation of an ion wind in the atmosphere.

But to resume his story, after World War Two, Brown moved to Pearl Harbor and again resumed his research into the effect that he was now convinced was electrogravitic in nature. At this juncture, Brown's research during the period from 1945-1952 is shrouded in obscurity, but at some point he moved from Hawaii to Los Angeles, and according to Nick Cook, established the Townsend Brown Foundation.[48]

What *is* known is that once back in California, Brown's foundation was paid "an unannounced visit by Major General Victor E. Bertrandis of the US Air Force."[49] There, Brown performed demonstrations of his disks for the General, who was impressed with the results.[50]

It was during this period that Brown made a formal pitch to the military to fund what he called "Project Winterhaven: A Proposal for (a) Joint Services

Research and Development Contract" of the phenomenon. The proposal was straightforward:

> For the last several years, accumulating evidence along both theoretical and experimental lines has tended to confirm the suspicion that a fundamental interlocking relationship exists between the electrodynamic field and the gravitational field.
>
> It is the purpose of Project WINTERHAVEN to compile and study this evidence and to perform certain critical or definitive experiments which will serve to confirm or deny the relationship. If the results confirm the evidence, it is the further purpose of Project WINTERHAVEN to examine the physical nature of the basic "electro-gravitic couple" and to foresee and develop possible long-range practical applications.
>
> The proposed experiments are to be limited at first to force measurements and wave propagation. They are to be expanded, depending upon results, to include applications in propulsion or motive power, communications and remote control, with emphasis on military applications of recognized priority.[51]

Note that Brown foresees the results being applicable to communications, a point to which we shall return shortly, but Brown specifically states in his research proposal that the experiments and research organization established to experiment in electrogravity should be divided into two basic tracks, one investigating the use of the effect for motive purposes, and the other for communications.[52]

Brown also makes the observation that such a coupling effect between electromagnetism and gravity was first suggested in *unpublished* notes of Sir Oliver Heaviside in the late nineteenth century.[53] In other words, Brown was obliquely suggesting the same thing we have encountered elsewhere, that there was a little-known history of such concepts in physics, concepts that may have been deliberately kept out of view. This, in fact, is stated clearly in the Winterhaven proposal, which notes that "In recent years, as additional data of a confirming nature became available, the research has been associated with government research projects of a highly classified status, and publication has been precluded,"[54] a statement that strongly suggests Brown himself was involved in some of this research, and that also suggests that the chase for

antigravity was well underway in the early 1950s, even before the subsequent mid-1950s disappearance of discussion of the subject in the open literature.

In its review of his electrified disks, the Winterhaven Proposal document notes that the disks contained “no moving parts” and that in atmospheric tests “they emit a bluish-red electrical coronal glow and a faint hissing sound.”[55]

Then comes a bombshell, which readers familiar with my previous books, *The Philosophers’ Stone, Babylon’s Banksters,* and *The Grid of the Gods* will recognize instantly:

> However, there are certain variable factors which are not completely understood. For example, there are tidal effects apparently caused by the Sun and Moon which influence to a small extent the power developed. There are anomalous sidereal effects which seem to be related to the passage of the Earth through diffuse clouds of cosmic dust or electrified particles ejected from the Sun.[56]

In other words, Brown, during his research, had apparently observed variable effects on his devices that were dependent upon the relative positions of the Sun and Moon and the output of the solar wind, results that sound very similar to what was noticed by Russian astrophysicist Nikolai Kozyrev,[57] and variable effects on solar coronal activity that were correlated to planetary positions, noticed by RCA engineer J.H. Nelson.[58]

However, just a little later in the Winterhaven proposal, Brown states that his early experiments’ results “were surprising for the reason that they failed to reveal a directional effect with respect to the gravitational field of the Earth, but showed only a dependence upon the mass (m) of the electrified bodies,” an effect that “provided a theory for a gravitational drive virtually independent of the gravitational field of the Earth.”[59]

How would one reconcile these two statements, for obviously, Brown is guarding his language? The answer seems to lie in the possibility that relative planetary positions, moon position, and solar wind activity, are correlated in the ever-changing electrodynamic nature of the solar system itself, and in the possibility that these in turn also produce dynamic torsion effects. This, in effect, is what Brown himself later states: “The tentative theory implies that the basic relationship between the electrodynamic field and the gravitational field is revealed ‘during the process of charging or discharging electric capacitors.’”[60] This coupling effect Brown also subsequently notes could

eventually "be utilized in a completely new method of wireless communication."[61]

This coupling effect, and the communications opportunities it presented, lead Brown to drop yet another bombshell, and again, it is one that readers of my previous books will recognize:

> At the outset, development of the electrogravitational communication system obviously could provide a secret, almost wholly untouchable, channel for classified military communications. Message transmissions could be put through without breaking military radio silence, at a time when all electromagnetic transmissions are prohibited. Due to the high penetrability of the gravitational wave, communications could conceivably be maintained between submerged submarines, between submarines and shore installations or between bombproof shelters and similar underground installations without the use of external wires.
>
> …
>
> Due to the tremendous momentary displacement of air and the gravitational disturbance resulting there from, there is reason to believe that the electrogravitational receiver may be one of the few devices capable of instant long-distance detection and ranging of atomic bomb explosions.[62]

Brown is suggesting, in guarded language yet again, that nuclear explosions send out a *longitudinal pulse in the medium* ("instant long-distance detection and ranging of atomic bomb explosions") that is of a superluminal nature, and that this is a result of the momentary geometry created at the center of the explosion, a geometry that *couples* electromagnetic and gravitational fields.

It is worth pausing to note what Dr. LaViolette says about this phenomenon, for it once again takes us back to Tesla's wireless transmission of power via a kind of "electro-acoustic" or electrical longitudinal wave via his "impulse magnifying transformers":

> Superluminal propagation speeds have also been observed in atomic bomb tests. Scientists working for the military have known since the early bomb tests in the late 1940s that the electromagnetic pulse shock wave from a nuclear explosion propagates outward at superluminal velocities when measured near the explosion epicenter.

> The enormous energy released in the explosion accelerates the fireball's free electrons radially outward at a relativistic velocity, generating a radially propagating shock pulse that, like a shock discharge from…(a) magnifying transmitter, moves outward at superluminal speeds.[63]

Brown's Winterhaven proposal was ultimately rejected, and Brown made his way to the Bahnsen Laboratories, where he continued his private investigations of the phenomena, including research into Adamski-style disks.

But as Nick Cook points out, Brown's subsequent association in the popular literature with the Philadelphia experiment, plus the military's rejection of his Winterhaven proposal, may not be as clear-cut as they seem, for his association with the Philadelpia Experiment

> helped to perform a very important function.
>
> By 1980, it had managed to tip Brown over the edge; make him a wholly discredited figure in the eyes of science.
>
> That left me with the uncomfortable feeling that the story had been carefully stage-managed. If so, why? And why so long after the supposed events had taken place?[64]

Cook is not just proposing a possibility, for Brown's association with the Philadelphia Experiment was first popularized in the book on the subject by Charles Berlitz and William Moore, both of whom had intelligence contacts, Moore, of course, eventually confessing that he had allowed himself to be used as a disinformation agent within the UFOlogy community by intelligence agencies, thus strongly raising the possibility that he was acting as such when their book coupling Brown to the Philadelphia Experiment was written.

This, for Cook, raises the possibility that when Brown proposed Project Winterhaven, that he, like the aerospace companies later openly discussing antigravity research in the popular media, were discussing things already under investigation by the military "until someone, somewhere, ordered them into silence."[65] Additionally, while Brown's project may have been rejected, some of the results of his years of research nevertheless ended up being, as Brown himself stated in the proposal, "highly classified."[66] So what do we now have? Clearly, in Brown's Winterhaven proposal, we have the strong suggestions that there are electro-gravitic coupling effects, effects that in turn are variable according to the locally changing geometries of the solar system, and that

these small effects are also directly tied to the geometries of nuclear explosions, suggesting in turn that their yields are variable with the same local system geometries.

All of this leads to yet *another* suppressed project, this time, of a Nazi scientist working in Argentina….

4. Dr. Ronald Richter's Argentine "Fusion" Project

While I have written extensively elsewhere of the "controlled fusion" project of Nazi scientist Dr. Ronald Richter in Argentina,[67] a brief review is in order here. After Juan Perón disclosed the existence of Richter's project to control thermonuclear fusion in 1951, boasting that Argentina had learned the secret of the hydrogen bomb, Perón, and Richter, were both roundly denounced in the world's press, and nowhere more so than in the American media, as frauds. As is now known, Perón established a commission to investigate Richter and his claims, and placed the scientist under permanent house arrest in Buenos Aires, and the project was dismantled.

However, as I outlined in *Nazi International*, while this was taking place, the US Air Force subsequently conducted secret interviews of Richter in the mid-1950s, and learned that Richter was actually attempting to manipulate the zero point energy—Richter's term!—through rotating and electromagnetically stressed plasmas involving lithium-7 reactions.

The US Air Force's review of Richter was ambivalent, with some scientists still insisting that his claims were fraudulent, but with others stating that Richter was some sort of "mad genius" working two decades in advance of everyone else. The problem, as co-author Scott D. de Hart and I pointed out in *The Grid of the Gods*, is that Richter knew of lithium-7 thermonuclear reactions, which threw official US explanations for runaway yields in its Castle Bravo nuclear test into a cocked hat. The Castle Bravo test was, of course, the infamous hydrogen bomb test of the early 1950s whose actual yield far exceeded the pre-test calculated yield. Scientists later offered the lame explanation that they had not considered that all the lithium-7 in the device would contribute to the reaction. Both Richter, and his Argentine scientist opponents, knew years in advance of these reactions, which were fairly standard and well-known thermonuclear chemistry.[68]

Richter, in his interviews with the US Air Force, not only made it clear that lithium-7 was a primary component in his experiments, but also indicated that it was his opinion that plasmas accessed a cellular type structure in space

—shades of Burkhart Heim!—and thus could momentarily act as transducers of the zero point energy under the proper geometrical conditions.

And Thomas Townsend Brown was saying essentially the same thing, and that the whole coupling effect could also be used for propulsion and communication.

And all of it, as George Adamski was talking to “extraterrestrials” about the planetary federation and the dangers of weaponized gravity, and as Nazi scientists involved with the Bell project were opining disingenuously about off world aliens, went deeply black, all of it, consistent with the activity of a breakaway civilization trying to protect its secrets.

C. Conclusions

We are now in a position so summarize the results of this essay, and to project some speculations that seem warranted from those conclusions.

1) Throughout this study, we have noted various efforts aimed at the camouflage of its activity and research, from the construction of secret facilities with disguised entrances, to the more subtle forms of camouflage indicated by possible psychological operations designed to deflect attention away from human development of the advanced technologies represented by antigravity research;

2) Additionally, we have noted that this civilization, like all governments, is protecting its “borders” and security by monitoring access to its facilities, which represent a “geographic” location that is scattered over the earth, but that is largely underground;

3) Additionally, we have noted that this civilization has all the “instruments of surplus” noted by Quigley as being necessary for the sustaining of a civilization, methods of surplus whose financing mechanisms are largely covert, in the form of black budgets, and even more hidden, through the connection with criminal activity connected with the drug trade, a trade in turn heavily penetrated by some sort of postwar international Fascist organization. It is thus entirely feasible that this latter source of “surplus” represents a component of the breakaway civilization’s *independence* from the host society;

4) Moreover, we have seen that there is a tripartite *structure* of various components to this civilization, composed of

a) private corporate and banking interests closely allied with the Morgan-Rockefeller interest and the American aerospace development firms,;
b) the American military, and finally;
c) the prewar German cartels, most notably I.G. Farben, and subsequently the Nazi party and the SS;
5) Within this wider context, the significance of the Morgan suppression of Nikola Tesla's invention of wireless power transmission appears not as the isolated case of suppression, but as the first significant *private corporate and banking example* of the wider pattern of such suppression by all factions and components of the structure;
6) We note in particular that Thomas Townsend Brown's elaboration of the key concepts of "electrogravitics" closely parallels similar physics conceptions elaborated by Russian astrophysicist Nikolai Kozyrev, and that both men's ideas were suppressed and deeply classified, giving rise to the possibility of an off-the-books physics and technology arising from it, ideas corroborated by statements of Ben Rich and others closely involved in advanced aerospace research. We also note the similarity of these ideas to the types of open systems physics discussed in connection with banking interests in *Babylon's Banksters.*, and to what I have called the ancient "topological metaphor of the medium". This confluence of ideas, again, strongly suggests the possibility that we are indeed dealing with a breakaway civilization, and one that may in fact be very ancient in its ultimate origins.
7) We note that, insofar as the Nazi and American components of this research are concerned, the former began to investigate the antigravity possibilities in the 1940s, whereas the American component appears to have begun in earnest in the 1950s, possibly as a response to "catch up" with the former;
8) The strong possibility thus arises that we are looking at the matrix for a two-track space program, since the breakaway civilization appears to have access to, and to have developed, advanced and very different physics conceptions and technologies than the public sector;[69]
9) Beginning with Adamski, the "meme" was very early planted that mankind would have to surrender its independence and sovereignty

as a safeguard against weaponized gravity, and this raises the next possibility;

10) Beginning at the end of World War Two, and specifically among the *Nazi* component of the emerging matrix of the breakaway civilization, SS Colonel Otto Skorzeny proposed a *Weltanschauungskrieg* or psychological operation conceived in conjunction with the careful display of advanced technology. Given the statements of Adamski, the Paperclip Nazis, and the emerging ET mythos, and following the insights of Dr. Jacques Vallee, it would appear that this operation was conceived not merely as a cloak for the development of the technology, but also that the technology itself was perceived in an alchemical, psychotronic fashion, as a means of altering human perceptions and the ability to interpret aspects of the UFO phenomenon correctly, deflecting such developments from a terrestrial to an extraterrestrial origin. This raises the possibility that the technology was perhaps perceived to give the potential for massive deception operations, such as staged ET contact or invasion events;

11) We have also noted that there are significant indications of yet another component of a breakaway civilization, namely, a different ideological and scientific culture prevailing secretly within it, utilizing paradigms of science very different from the public consumption physics promoted in the open host civilization, with the statements of Ben Rich being the most prominent public admission of this possibility, a possibility further corroborated by the presence of Nazi scientists Burkhart Heim and Pascual Jordan in 1950s antigravity research undertaken by the American military. It must be pointed out, once again, that the *earliest* public record of the possibility of the emergence of a very different paradigm of physics is in fact with the Nazi proscription of “Jewish physics,” i.e., the relativistic paradigm of Einstein, a clear statement of a breakaway scientific ideological culture. In the postwar period, with the manifest crimes of the Third Reich and its many patent failures in various areas of science, this in itself could afford the basis for an effective psychological operation of suppression of those areas of successful development of alternative paradigms falling outside the relativistic paradigm.

> 12) The fact that such technologies give off strong radiations—some of them which we have examined, in the microwave range—also had inevitable neurophysiological effects, effects most likely observed by those researching and developing these technologies. These effects would have included disorientation and possibly even hallucination, and thus the idea may have been born to use the technologies in psychological warfare operations.

In short, I believe it is now clear that the possibility raised by Richard Dolan of a breakaway civilization is not only possible, but that the conditions exist for it to do so.

Moreover, it would seem clear that various activities undertaken with respect to UFOs would seem to indicate that at least *some* of these are psychological operations, one clear activity of *civilizations in conflict with other civilizations.* This last statement indicates one final possibility, that one single most prominent activity of civilizations, hinted at by Quigley's "sociology of weaponry," namely, war.

We have not, in this book, discussed the war-making powers and possible actual *wars* of this breakaway civilization for the very simple reason that this, in itself, would require a book of its own. But the fact remains that war is one of the principal organizing principles of any civilization, and this raises yet another prospect and possibility. The waging of an actual war would be the clearest sign that this civilization exists. But what would one look for?

I believe the answer was hinted at in the second chapter, and by Adamski's "ET" himself: one would look for the signatures of a weaponized electrogravitics. In the scheme of things, one would be looking for a technology able to manipulate phenomena on a planetary, or possibly even stellar, scale.

The Russian astronomer Kardashev proposed a classification scheme for civilizations based on their abilities to manipulate energies. A Type 1 civilization would be capable of manipulating and engineering the energies of an entire planet. A Type 2 civilization would be capable of doing the same with stars, and a Type 3 civilization, the most advanced, would be capable of manipulating those of an entire galaxy.

Given what we have encountered in this chapter, it is clear that the physics being proposed by Brown and others is capable of at least type 1 or 2 manipulations, and this would mean the breakaway civilization is truly a breakaway civilization in yet another sense as well, for as the larger world wallows in fossil fuels and all the economic- and geo-politics thereof, it would

have literally pulled away from that civilization in its technological capabilities. The possibility of such engineering and manipulation raises the prospect that such technologies could reasonably be disguised as natural activities; after all, Mother Nature provides the perfect "plausible deniability."

All this to say that such capabilities would be most manifest in the types of military operations it was able to mount. One would have to look for certain things, reading the tea leaves of recent events, and ascertaining if the signatures of those events evidenced the types of physics being outlined here.

Is such a war being waged, covertly, right under our noses?

Unfortunately, that possibility must await its own exposition. Here it suffices only to recall that Colonel Skorzeny proposed it …near the end of World War Two.

Where that war has come since the 1950s would require another volume, for if indeed that breakaway civilization is waging a war against the rest of humanity, or if there is covert warfare between its various factions, then it would require a close examination of the technologies, their signatures, and the situations in which they may have been used.

That is the task for another work. For the moment, it is clear that the possibility of a breakaway civilization exists, and moreover, given the activities and relationships we have surveyed, it is in my opinion a likelihood.

Notes

[1] Paul A. LaViolette, Ph. D., *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFO's and classified Aerospace Technology* (Bear and Company, 2008), pp. 81-82.

[2] This Pattern of each component policing its own sphere of activity and "jurisdiction" as it were is the same pattern that I observed at work with the various components involved in the JFK assassination in *LBJ and thr Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: a Coalescence of Interests.*

[3] LaViolette, *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion*, p.115, emphasis added.

[4] LaViolette, *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion,* p.116, boldface emphasis added, italicized emphasis in the original.

[5] See my *Giza Death Star Destroyed* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2005), pp. 106-113, 206-243; *The Philosophers' Stone* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 43-50, 259-266; and Scott D. de Hart's and my *The Grid of the Gods* (Adventures Unlimited Press, 2011), pp. 70-79, 181-184, 276-287.

[6] For physicists, the change between the two states may itself be denoted as a delta t (time), Δt, change between sets of information, with the initial state or $\varnothing$ followed by the three resulting nothings, i.e., $\Delta t\ \varnothing = \{\varnothing_1, \varnothing_2, \partial\varnothing_{1,2}\}$. By giving Δt the definition of the resultant set with the three members, we are in effect also stating that time, in this mathematical method of analysis, is not a scalar, as it is in most

systems of mathematical physics. Such a method would also tend to suggest that the complex verbal systems of natural languages, which approach time in a complex series of systems interrelationships, is capable of mathematical formalism. We might equally describe such an approach as a kind of "hyper-relativistic" approach, since one of the emergent properties of this information-processing and algorithmic approach is that ∅, both in this initial state and first differentiation, is non-local, as is the treatment of time itself. It is here that I have some difficulty with some of the statements "Ray" made to LaViolette, for in my own private experiments with his type of approach, the possibility does emerge of locally relative time dependent on the frame of reference of the physical observe and the local "rotation moment" of space time. To put it succinctly, one is dealing with a "both-and" situation, not an "either-or" one.

[7] This section originally appeared as a members' only "white paper" on my website, www.gizadeathstar.com. I would, again, here like to thank my friend and colleagues Michael Schratt for graciously allowing me to quote from an article of his, "Ben Rich and the Secret of the skunk Words" that appeared in *Open Minds* magazine this year. All quotations of Mr. Rich that appear here appear in Mr. Schratt's article, and have also been cited in numerous articles by other researchers.

[8] Thomas E. Phipps, Jr. *Old Physics for New* (C. Roy Keys, Inc., 2006), p.16.

[9] Phipps, op cit., p.3

[10] For a fuller discussion of this point relating to the change from partial to full derivates, see Phipps, pp. 10-11.

[11] William Marina, "Selective Bibliography," in Quigley, *The Evolution of Civilizations*, p.423

[12] Ibid., pp.423-424.

[13] Quigley, *The Evolutions of Civilizations*, p.424.

[14] See my *Babylon's Banksters*, pp.136-155.

[15] Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point: One Man's Journey to Discover the Biggest Secret Since the Invention of the Atom Bomb* (Century, 2001), p.11.

[16] Thomas Valone, PhD, *Electr-gravitics II: Validating Reports on a New Propulsion Methodology* (Intergrity Research Institute, No Date), p.85. The entire *New York Herald Tribune* article is reproduced on pp.85-89 of Valone's book.

[17] Ansel F. Talbert, Military and Adviation Editor, "Conquest of Gravity: Aim of Top Scientitts in U.S." *New York Herald Tribune*, Sunday, November 20,1955, 1,36,p.1,emphasis added. Cited in Valone, *Electro-Gravitics II*, pp.85.88.

[18] Ibid.

[19] Ibid., cited in Valone, op. cit., p. 87.

[20] Ibid.

[21] Dröscher and Häuser point out in a previous paper, also presented to the AIAA, that "Spacetime itself is quantized. The current area of a **Metron**," which is Heim's term for the smallest possible unit of quantized space-time, "τ is $3Gh/8c^2$ where G is the gravitational constant, h denotes the

Planck constant, and c is the speed of light in vacuum. The **Metron** size is a *derived quantity and is not postulated.*" (Walter Dröscher and Jochem Häuser, "Physical Principles of Advanced Space Propulsion Based on Heim's Field Theory," *38th AIAA/ASME/SAE/ASEE Joint Propulsion Conference and Exhibit*, AIAA 2002-4094, 7-10 July, 2002, pp. 6-7., boldface exphasis in the original italicized emphasis added).

[22] Ibid., p.3, emphasis in the original.

[23] Ibid., emphasis added.

[24] Ibid., p. 4. These predictions have, in part at least, been recently verified.

[25] Ibid., p. 3.

[26] Ibid., p. 5.

[27] Ibid.

[28] Dröscher and Häuser, "Physical Principles of Advanced Space Propulsion Based on Heim's Field Theory,", p. 6.

[29] Dröscher and Häuser, "Physical Principles of Advanced Space Propulsion Based on Heim's Field Theory,", p. 7.

[30] Ibid.. for the actual mathematical description of particles in Heim theory, see p. 12.

[31] Ibid., p. 16.

[32] Ibid.

[33] Ibid., p. 1, emphasis in the original.

[34] Dröscher and Häuser, "Guidelines for a Space Propulsion Device Based on Heim's Quantum Theory", p. 5.

[35] Ibid., p. 7.

[36] Dröscher and Häuser, "Current Research in Gravito-Electromagnetic Space Propulsion," *Institut für grenzgebiete der Wissenschft* (Innsbruck, Austria), p. 10, italicized emphasis added, boldface emphasis in the original.

[37] Ibid., boldface emphasis in the original, italicized boldface emphasis added to the autthor' original emphasis.

[38] See my *Secrets of the Unified Field*, pp. 268-282.

[39] Farrell, *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter* (Feral House, 2009), pp. 321-326.

[40] Igor witkowski, "Supplement 3, to be inserted on page 260 of the English edition," of *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe* for pending German edition, personal communication to the author. Witkowski cites Jordan specifically in reference to "magnetic fields separation" that played such a prominent conceptual role in the Bell project

[41] Paul A. LaViolette, Ph.D., *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology* (Rechester, Vermont: Bear and Company, 2008), p. 190. LaViolette presents a summary of Rocketdyne's corporate history on pp. 190-191.

[42] LaViolette, *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion*, p. 192, emphasis added.

[43] For LaViolette's summary of this principle, see pp. 227-229.

[44] Ibid., pp. 234-235.

[45] For our purposes here, I will refer to the page numbers of the original report. The entire proposal is available in Thomas Valone, PhD, *Electro-gravitics II: Validating Reports on a New Propulsion Methodology* (Integrity Research Institute, No Date), pp. 102-115.

[46] Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point*, pp. 24-25

[47] Ibid., p. 24.

[48] Nick Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point*, p. 29. Some researchers have maintained this foundation was established in 1938 in Ohio.

[49] Ibid., p. 29.

[50] Ibid., pp. 30-31.

[51] Thomas Townsend Brown, "Project Winterhaven: A Proposal for (a) Joint Services Research and Development Contract," Townsend Brown Foundation, No Date, p. 1.

[52] Thomas Townsend Brown, "Project Winterhaven," p. 1.1. Elsewhere Brown states more explicitly the nature of the coupling his research had uncovered by stating that experiments would be conducted in order to prove or disprove the hypothesis that "a gravitational field can be effectively controlled by manipulating the space-energy relationships of the ambient electrostatic field." (p. 5.)

[53] Ibid., p. 2.

[54] Ibid., p. 3.

[55] Ibid., p. 7.

[56] Thomas Townsend Brown, "Project Winterhaven," p. 7.

[57] See my *The Philosopher's Stone*, pp. 153-155ff., and *The Grid of the Gods*, pp. 23-27.

[58] See my *Babylon's Banksters*, pp. 114-119.

[59] Thomas Townsend Brown, op. cit., p.8.

[60] Ibid., p. 12.

[61] Ibid., p. 14.

[62] Thomas Townsend Brown, "Project Winterhaven," p. 25. It is worth noting that many UFOlogists have pointed out the UFOs seemed to have arrived in large numbers *after* atomic bomb tests over various defense installations, as if somehow the tests had been *detected* by "someone."

[63] Paul A. LaViolette, *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion*, p. 184.

[64] Cook, *The Hunt for Zero Point*, p. 29.

[65] Ibid., p. 35.

[66] Ibid., pp. 6-7.

[67] See my *Nazi International*, pp. 249-350.

[68] See our *The Grid of the Gods*, pp. 1-36.

[69] Dr. LaViolette observes that a source told him that the USA had, beginning in the early 1960s, a system of early warning satellites in orbit not just around the Earth, but around Mercury, Venus, Mars, and “other planets” in the solar system, designed to give early warning against an alien threat, thus indicating that the secret space capabilities of the USA were far in advance of what was being publicly disclosed. See *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion*, pp. 396-397.

Bibliography Works Cited or Consulted

Adamski, George. *Flying Saucers Have Landed.* George Adamski Foundation. 1955. No ISBN

Adamski, George. *Inside the Spaceships.* George Adamski Foundation. 1955. No ISBN.

Baumann, H.D., *Hitler's Fate: The Final Story*.. London. Athena Press. 2008. ISBN 978-1-84748-135-1.

Brown, Thomas Townsend. "Project Winterhaven: A Proposal for Joint Services Research and Development Contract." The Townsend Brown Foundation. No Date. No ISBN. (Typewritten manuscript).

Cook, Nick. *The Hunt for Zero Point: One Man's Journey to Discover the Biggest Secret Since the Invention of the Atom Bomb.* London: Century. 2001. ISBN 0-7126-6953-1.

Dolan, Richard M. *UFOs and the National Security State: Chronology of a Cover-up 1941-1973*. Hampton Roads Publishing Company, Inc. 2002. ISBN 978-1-571-74-317-6.

Dolan, Richard M. *UFOs and the National Security State: The Cover-up Exposed: 1973-1991.* Keyhole Publishing Company. 2009. ISBN 978-0-9677995-1-3.

Engdahl, F. William. *Seeds of Destruction: The Hidden Agenda of Genetic Manipulation.* Global Research. 2007. ISBN 978-09737147-2-2.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Babylon's Banksters: The Alchemy of Deep Physics, High Finance and Ancient Religion.* Feral House. 2010. ISBN 9781-932595-79-6.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Giza Death Star Destroyed: The Ancient War for Future Science.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2005. ISBN 978-1931882-47-9.

Farrell, Joseph P., and de Hart, Scott D. *The Grid of the Gods: The Aftermath of the Cosmic War and the Physics of the Pyramid Peoples.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2011. ISBN 978-1-93548739-5.

Farrell, Joseph P. *LBJ and the Conspiracy to Kill Kennedy: A Coalescence of Interests.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2011. ISBN 978-1-935487-18-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Nazi International: The Nazis' Postwar Plan to Control Finance, Conflict, Physics and Space.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2008. ISBN 978-1-931882-93-4.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Roswell and the Reich: The Nazi Connection.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2010. ISBN 978-1-935487-05-0.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The Philosophers' Stone: Alchemy and the Secret Research for Exotic Matter.* Feral House. 2009. ISBN 978-1932595-40-6.

Farrell, Joseph P. *Secrets of the Unified Field: The Philadelphia Experiment, the Nazi Bell, and the Discarded Theory.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2008. ISBN. 978-1-931882-84-2.

Farrell, Joseph P. *The SS Brotherhood of the Bell: The Nazi's Incredible Secret Technology: NASA's Nazis, JFK, and Majic-12.* Adventures Unlimited Press. 2006. ISBN 978-1-931882-61-4.

Fäth, Harald. *Geheime Kommandosache - SIII Jonastal und die Siegeswaffenproduktion: Weitere Spurensuche nach Thüringens Manhattan Project.* Schleusingen, Germany. Amun Verlag. 2000. ISBN 3-935095-08-2.

Georg, Friedrich. *Hitlers Siegeswaffen, Band 2: Star Wars 1947: Teilband B: Von der Amerikarakete zur Orbitalstation - Deutschlands Streben nach Interkontinentalwaffen und das ertse Weltraumprogramm.* Schleusingen, Germany. Amun Verlag. 2004. ISBN 3-935095-33-3.

Good, Timothy. *Above Top Secret: The Worldwide UFO Cover-Up.* New York: William Morrow. 1988. ISBN 0-688-09202-0.

Good, Timothy. *Need to Know: UFOs, The Military and Intelligence.* New York: Pegasus Books. 2007. ISBN 978-1-933648-38-5.

Greer, Steven M., M.D. *Disclosure: Military and Government Witnesses Reveal the Greatest Secret in Modern History.* Crozet, Virginia. Crossing Point, Inc. 2001. ISBN 0-9673238-1-9.

Higham, Charles. *American Swastika: The Shocking Story of Nazi Collaborators in Our Midst from 1933 to the Present Day.* New York. Doubleday & Company, Inc. 1985. ISBN 0-385-17874-3.

Higham, Charles. *Trading With the Enemy: The Nazi-American Money Plot* 1933=1949. Lincoln, NE. Authors Guild Back-in-Print. 2007. ISBN 0-595-43166-6.

Johnson, Ian. *A Mosque in Munich: Nazis, the CIA, and the Rise of the Muslim Brotherhood in the West.* Boston. Houghton Mifflin Company. 2010. ISBN 978-0-15-101418-7.

Kampe, Hans George. *The Underground Military Command Bunkers of Zossen, Germany: Construction History and Use by the Wehrmacht and Soviet Army 1937-1994.* Atglen, Pennsylvania. Schiffer Military/Aviation History. 1996. ISBN 0-7643-0164-0.

Krüger, Henrik. *The Great Heroin Coup: Drugs, Intelligence, and International Fascism.* Trans. Jerry Meldon. Boston, Massachusetts. South End Press. 1980. ISBN 0-89608-031-5.

LaViolette, Paul. A., Ph.D. *Secrets of Antigravity Propulsion: Tesla, UFOs, and Classified Aerospace Technology.* Rochester, Vermont. Bear and Company. 2008. ISBN 978-159143078-0.

Loftus, John. *America's Nazi Secret.* Walterville, Oregon. TrineDay. 2011. ISBN 978-1-036296-04-0.

Manning, Paul. *Martin Bormann: Nazi in Exile*. Lyle Stuart. 1983.

Marrs, Jim. *Alien Agenda: Investigating the Extraterrestrial Presence Among Us.* New York: Harper Collins Publishers. 1997. ISBN 006-018642-9.

McClure, Kevin. *The Nazi UFO Mythos.* www.magonia.demon.co.uk/ abwatch.naziufo. (In 12 parts].

Quigley, Carroll. *The Evolution of Civilizations: An Introduction to Historical Analysis*. Indianapolis. Liberty Fund.1979. ISBN 978-0913966-57-0.

Quigley, Carroll. *Tragedy and Hope: A History of the World in Our Time*. Macmillan. 1964. (reprint by GSG & Associates, San Pedro, CA.) ISBN 0-945001-10-X.

Redfern, Nick. *Final Events: and the Secret Government Group on Demonic UFOs and the Afterlife.* San Antonio: Anomalist Books. 2010. ISBN978-1-933665-48-1.

Sauder, Richard, Ph.D.. *Underground Bases and Tunnels: What is the Government Trying to Hide?* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 1997. ISBN 0-932813-37-2.

Schmidt, Michael. *The New Reich: Violent Extremism in Unified Germany and Beyond*. Trans. from the German by Daniel Horch. New York. Pantheon Books. 1993. ISBN 0-679-42578-0.

Simpson, Christopher. *Science of Coercion: Communication Research and Psychological Warfare 1945-1960.* Oxford University Press. 1994. ISBN 978-019510225.

Speer, Albert. *Infiltration: How Heinrich Himmler Schemed to Build an SS Industrial Empire.* New York. MacMillan Publishing Co., Inc. 1981. ISBN. 0-02-612800-4.

Steckling, Fred. *We Discovered Alien Bases on the Moon II: Revised Edition.* G.A.F. International. 1981. ISBN 0-942176-00-6.

Stevens, Henry. *Dark Star: The Hidden History of German Secret Bases, Flying Disks and U-Boats.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures

Unlimited Press. 2011. ISBN 978-1-035487-40-1.

Stevens, Henry. *Hitler's Flying Saucers: A Guide to German Flying Discs of the Second World War.* Kempton, Illinois. Adventures Unlimited Press. 2003. ISBN 1-931882-13-4.

Valle, Jacques. *Messengers of Deception: UFO Contacts and Cults*. Brisbaine, Australia. Daily Grail Publishing. 2008. ISBN 978-09757200-4-2.

Vallee, Jacques. *Passport to Magonia: on Ufos, Folklore, and Parallel Worlds.* Chicago: Contemporary Books. 1993. ISBN 0-8092-3796-2.

Vallee, Jacques. *Revelations: Alien Contact and Human Deception.* New York: Ballantine Books. 1991. ISBN 0-345-37566-1.

Valone, Thomas, Ph.D. *Electrogravitics II: Validating Reports on a New Propulsion Technology.* Integrity Research Institute. 2005. ISBN 0-9641080-9-0.

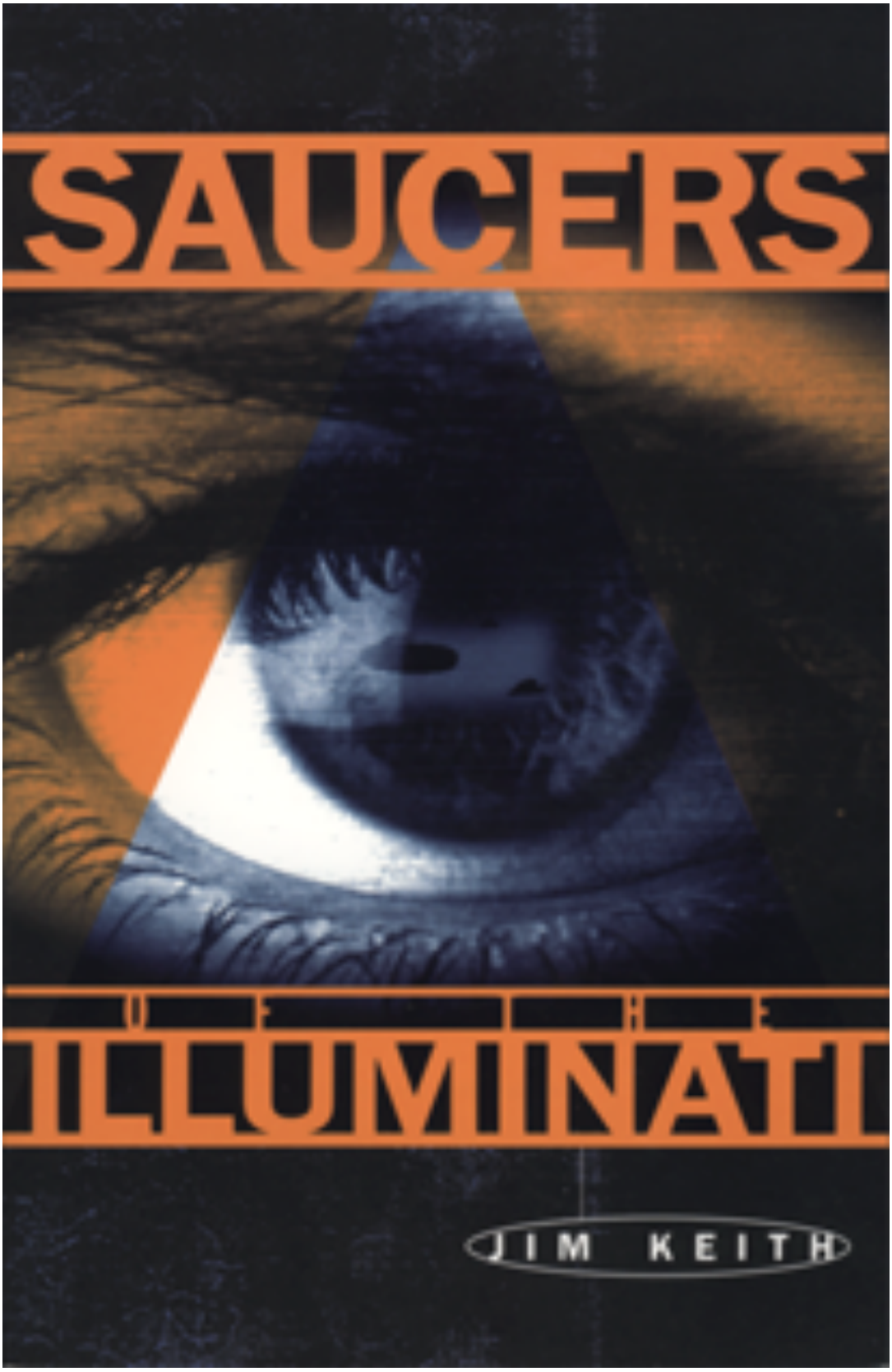
Wikowski, Igor. *The Truth About the Wunderwaffe.* Warsaw: European History Press. 2003. ISBN 838825916-4.

Yeadon, Glen, and Hawkins, John. *The Nazi Hydra In America: Suppressed History of a Century.* Joshua Tree, California. Progressive. 2008. ISBN 978-0-930852-43-6.

Table of Contents

Preface
PART ONE: SAUCERS
1. Of Civilizations, Breakaway and Otherwise: Richard Dolan and Carroll Quigley
A. The Breakaway Civilization Concept of Richard M. Dolan
1. The 1988 Affair of the Alien Reproduction Vehicle
2. How a Breakaway Civilization Might Evolve
B. Dr. Carroll Quigley on the Markers of Civilization
1. The Six Areas of Potential and the Four Types of Groups
2. Parasitic and Producing Societies, and the Breakaway Civilization
3. Instruments and Institutions, and Parasitic vs. Producing Societies
4. The Five Dimensions of Civilization and the Sixfold Division of Culture
5. The Seven Stages of Civilizations and “Core” vs. “Peripheral Societies
C. Conclusions and Implications
2. The Adamski Anomalies: The Beginnings of Murky Possibilities
A. Contact With Whom?
1. The Nov. 20, 1952 Contact: The Memes are Implanted
a. George Hunt Williamson and the Baileys
b. William Pelley and the American Fascists
2. The Messages from “E.T.”
a. The Venusian and “The Bomb”
b. Adamski’s E.T.s and Religion: The Interplenatery Federation of Brotherhoodand the “Übermensch E.T
c. The Revelation of the “Revelation,” or “Disclosure”, Meme
d. The End of the Contact
3. The Memes of Adamski’s Extraterrestrial Faith Summarized
4. Adamski’s Technological Descriptions and Another E.T. Message: The Danger of Weaponized Gravity
5. A Doozie of an Anachronistic Revelation
B. Adamski’s Retro-Looking Saucers, and theNazi Saucer Myth
PART TWO: SWASTIKAS AND PSYOPS:A PATTERN OF MAGICAL DECEPTION
3. “E.T. Made Us Do It”: The Postwar Statements of Nazis
A. The Strange Case of Dr. Hermann Oberth:A Benign Biography
B. Dr. Oberth’s and Dr. Von Braun’s Statements onUFOs and Extraterrestrials

C. Dr. Oberth’s Background in Nazi Germany
4. The Nazi UFO Mythos: Hannebu, Vril, Kugelblitz,Feuerball, and the Suction Saucers
A. The Problematic of the Historical Gap
1. The Basic Elements of the Mythos
a. The Belluzo Allegations
b. The Schriever Allegations in Der Spiegel
c. Dr. Richard Miethe
d. George Klein and Habermohl
e. Major Rudolf Lusar
f. The Field Propulsion Saucer Myth
2. The Gap and the Critics of the Mythos
3. A Critique of the Critics: The Suction Saucers
B. The Historical Gap, the Gehlen Organization,and Psychological Warfare
1. The Bell Story & the Nazi UFO Mythos: Core Elements
5. The Sonderkampf of the Weltanschauungskrieg: TheOrigin of Social Engineering & Psychological Ope
A. The Sonderkampf of the Weltanschauungskrieg: TheNazi Bell and the Beginning of the Coupling ofAdv
1. The Components of Psyops
2. Managing Perceptions: The Engineering of aScientific Consensus
3. The Techniques of Obfuscation


SAUCERS
ILLUMINATI
JIM KEITH

SAUCERS

OF THE

ILLUMINATI

Jim Keith
Foreword by Kenn Thomas

Adventures Unlimited Press

Saucers of the Illuminati

Copyright 1999, 2004 by Jim Keith

All rights reserved

ISBN: 1-931882-24-X

Adventures Unlimited Press
One Adventures Place
Kempton, Illinois 60946 USA

www.adventuresunlimitedpress.com

The classification of the constituents of a chaos,
Nothing less here is essayed.
--Herman Melville

Dedicated to Ron and Nancy

Other books by Jim Keith

Mind Control, World Control
Biowarfare In America
Secret and Suppressed
The Octopus (with Kenn Thomas)
Black Helicopters Over America
Casebook On the Men In Black
Mass Control

FOREWORD

by

Kenn Thomas

I remember Jim Keith writing this book. At the time, he was also working on an article for the coming issue of *Steamshovel Press*. Jim contributed regularly to the magazine and stayed in phone contact for research help and to chat conspiracy. He mentioned that he was trying to summarize all of his current thinking in a single themed manuscript.

The original *Saucers of the Illuminati*, in fact, may have been Jim Keith's last contribution to the zine world. The original book had an 8x10 format, spiral bound and resembled more a magazine than a book. Then, many people who knew Keith at all knew him primarily through his small-circulation "fan" magazines (although it is hard to conceive of a conspiracy/UFO cover up "fan"), *Dharma Combat* being the most well known but certainly not the only example. Zines were the happening means of the parapolitical underground in those pre-internet days and Keith served as the super-celebrity of that scene, broadcasting his charm and humor through self-published photocopied wonders, but also writing letters and doing commentary for similar zines produced by others.

Going through my stack of Keith masterworks recently, I discovered *Notes From The Hangar #1* from the early 1990s. In it, Keith published the rant of one Jason Bishop III, making declarations about humans working side-side with aliens in Dulce, New Mexico. Today it has become quite a familiar story, but at the time it was lore that had yet to reach the pinnacle of its currency in UFO circles. In fact, it was still part of what I see as a "barium meal" of UFO disinformation perpetrated by Air Force intelligence agents partly to drive a man named Paul Bennewitz insane.¡ In *Notes In The Hangar*, Jim presented the rant without edit and included several pages of critical response, declaring that he didn't necessarily believe any of it, but he believed in the importance of having it all discussed.

In *Saucers of the Illuminati*, Keith summarized his understanding of that history in a chapter entitled "MJ-12". That chapter remains one of the most concise and complete reviews of that important episode in the history of the ufological subculture,™ but at the same time comprises only a portion of what this book has to say. From there *Saucers* expands upon Keith's notions about the arcane and occult forces behind human history.

It was a point of view that developed over time, actually re-doing *Saucers* in 1998 in actual book form and now which resonates as a defining echo of the weirdness of the post-9/11 world, years after Keith has gone on to his reward.£ As the book cover attests, "as the 21st century approaches, many people suspect that something earth shattering is about to happen..."

On the phone back then with Keith explaining the over-arching view he felt he had captured in this new manuscript, I asked him if he thought he could really find a wider audience for the perspective. Wasn't it a bit obscure for the average reader?

We both had televisions on in the back ground as we spoke, both watching *CBS News*. As Dan Rather segued to the commercial, the newly redesigned CBS logo graphic appeared in the upper left corner of the screen. It was the CBS eye neatly pressed within a pyramid. As I looked in surprise at how much it looked like the backside of a dollar bill, Keith asked, "What was that you were saying about obscure?"

¡. Thanks to Peter Dale Scott for this concept. It refers to planted disinformation used by intelligence agents in order to track the blow-back. In the Bennewitz case, this meant various Area 51 stories that emerged as part of the UFO circuit presentations of people like John Lear and Bill Cooper, and had peripheral players such as super-spook Gorden Novel and JFK researcher Lars Hansson.

™. The first book-length treatment of the topic, *The Bennewitz Papers*, written by one of Keith's compadres, Greg Bishop, author of the *Wake Up Down There* anthology, is now pending publication.

£. Keith and I wrote *The Octopus: Secret Government and the Death of Danny Casolaro*, which became a hard-to-find cult classic. It currently enjoys a new edition, with one of three new chapters dealing with Jim Keith's unusual death. Among the many strange dimensions of Keith's passing discussed therein was the appearance of *clostridium* bacteria in the kind of knee surgery that led to his early death. Keith had noted years ago the presence of *clostridium* bacteria in the late 1970s cattle mutilations of New Mexico. *Clostridium* also killed our mutual good friend Ron Bonds, who published the first book edition of *Saucers*.

Kenn Thomas publishes *Steamshovel Press*. POB 210553, St. Louis, MO 63121. Samples issue: $7; four issue subscription, $25. Checks payable to "Kenn Thomas," not *Steamshovel Press*."

Contents

Introduction 9
1. A Process of Decoding 11
2. The Human Factor 16
3. The Mind Manipulators 23
4. Infiltration 33
5. MJ-12 38
6. A Symbolic Odyssey 46
7. Increase of Resolution 53
8. Philip K. Dick and the Illuminati 61
9. The Sirius Connection 72
10. Demons and Adepts 85
11. Occult Espionage 88
12. The Year of Light 100
UFOs at the Edge of Reality 110

The Great Seal of the United States of America featuring what some believe to be the symbol of the Illuminati.

Adam Weishaupt, founder of the Bavarian Illuminati.

Introduction

In 1993 a miniscule two hundred copy photocopied "researcher's edition" of my book *Saucers of the Illuminati* was rushed into print, upon my urging, by IllumiNet Press. My purpose for authorizing this informal edition was to get into print certain interesting connections that I had made between occult philosophy, the lore of UFOs, and the totalitarian New World Order - ideas that I had discussed at length with other researchers and that were already twinkling into being in a firmament of articles by some of those worthies. I was a little... paranoid is not the word I seek... concerned that by the time a proper paperback edition of *Saucers* was ushered into being, that I might be accused of plagiarizing myself.

As it turned out, my worry was largely unfounded, and little of what I wrote about in '93 has been grappled with, understood, or even mentioned in the conspiracy or UFO press, much less by the *New York Times*. I take this to be positive proof that I was on the right track.

Actually, my sense is that the ideas in *Saucers* tend to jump disciplines from political conspiracy, to UFOs, to the occult, in an attempt to synthesize the information in each. The researchers in those varied disciplines almost never have any truck with and so are confounded by their adjoining truckstops in arcane research. The Left Hand Path doesn't know what the Vast Right Wing Conspiracy is doing, you might say. But these topics are, at the deepest levels, intertwined and clarify the notions of the others.

Another matter: the ideas in *Saucers of the Illuminati* are dangerous, not to mention extremely weird, and stray very close to Things You Are Not Supposed to Think. In fact, in current polite--read mind controlled--society you are not even supposed to think

that there are things that you are not supposed to think... Do you follow?

Since the lightning appearance and disappearance of the researcher's edition of *Saucers* in 1993 copies have been completely unavailable, aside from a pirate edition that was rumored to have been put into print. That unavailability created a few misunderstandings about the book. Some speculated in print and on the Internet that the book was too incendiary, too Politically Incorrect, and that it went so quickly out of print because it was suppressed by the CIA or the Men in Black or somesuch. Those things have been known to happen in the annals of conspiracy research, of course, but not in this case. Simply, when I might have been expanding the text of *Saucers* to a length more appropriate for a paperback, I was doing lots of other things: writing nine other books, chasing the wolf of velvet fortune, things like that.

But I finally got around to the revision in 1998. Now here is the bells and whistles version of *Saucers*, with a lot of material not included in the book's original incarnation. Since the first appearance of the book, a great deal in the text has been clarified, and the revised work reflects new theories, new understandings obtained, and an arsenal of new smoking guns. Also included in this edition is the text of "UFOs at the Edge of Reality," a lecture delivered in Atlanta, Georgia in 1995.

I admit it. *Saucers of the Illuminati* is my strangest and most controversial work. That fact has been underlined by the largely uncomprehending and sometimes hostile reviews given to the first edition. The book may also be the most true that I have written.

Hold on to your brains. Maybe the world is ready for this stuff now.

1

A Process of Decoding

Regardless of our experience or research, we seem no closer to finding an answer to the puzzle of the UFOs. These strange craft and their equally strange occupants behave in a manner that seems to contradict physics and logic, appearing and disappearing seemingly at will, dropping curious objects and artifacts (including potatoes and pancakes), mutilating cattle, abducting people and leaving cryptic messages embedded in the brains of their awe-stricken contactees. These activities, these odd messages seem only to compound our confusion as to whom these interlopers on "our" cosmic turf are and what their motives might be.

While many saucer contactees or the variegated cults that have risen around them characterize the visitors they have confronted as angelic "Space Brothers" or advanced elder beings intent on warning humanity away from nuclear proliferation or other humanly-fostered evils, other indications as to the motives of these strangelings in silver ski suits are not so positive. Many individuals claim to have been abducted against their will by aliens in UFOs, and they have reported every kind of bizarre and grisly experience, ranging from mystical enlightenment, to the transmission of apocalyptic messages that they must deliver to mankind, even the implantation of tiny electronic brain devices apparently used for mind control or monitoring, perhaps in the same fashion that earthly ranchers now monitor cattle with under-the-skin electronic implants. Something very strange indeed is going on.

Analyzing the conflicting signals that we have received about the nature of these visitors, it is almost as if we are purposely being misled and befuddled by these mysterious agents, purposely being deceived about the motives behind these visitations, and perhaps even directed in some mysterious transformative operation of which we are not aware.

My own interest in the matter of UFOs is rather personal. Although I have been intensely interested in UFOs and the paranormal since my childhood in the early 1950s, it was not until 1972, in the Los Angeles, California suburb of Upland, that I experienced my own first contact--maybe. I came gradually awake in the middle of the night to find an archetypal grey alien staring in my face from a distance of about one foot. I leaped out of bed and raced into the living room. When I returned to my bedroom, the visitor was nowhere to be found.

I really didn't know what to think about what had happened. Was the experience an hallucination at the edge between dreaming and wakefulness? Was it an actual encounter with an alien presence? Was it a cross-dimensional experience that defied the boundaries of dream and reality? I have never been prone to this sort of nightmare, and have not experienced anything comparable in the intervening twenty-five years.

But there was nothing solid to grasp onto about the event, and so I shunted it into the category of maybe. I more or less forgot about the incident until I read Whitley Streiber's bestselling book *Communion* many years later, and one of the accounts in that book tipped the scale toward categorizing the event as being reality, rather than as a nightmare. In Streiber's book it was noted--coinciding with unnerving accuracy with my own apparent encounter--that the color and skin texture of the alien skin was not grey, but rather a deep blue grey, and that it had the shiny almost wet-seeming texture of

plasticine. Here was a coherence with another's alien experience that challenged--fractured--coincidence.

So, while I am perfectly aware of the fact that the U.S. military and others have experimented since at least the early 1950s with aerial craft that fit the description of UFOs, while I also know that the UFO experience has been hoaxed, including by American intelligence agencies and by UFO buffs, and that UFOs and abduction experiences may sometimes be a ruse to conceal mind control operations as described in a number of my books, I also leave the latch string out for other more "alien" interpretations of at least a percentage of UFO events.

One intriguing possibility is that the incident in Upland was one of beamed electronic mind control of the sort I have described in a number of my books. The house where the incident took place was a large hippie/radical commune where any number of anti-Establishment pipedreams were hatched. The strange motley of activists in Technicolor dream coats that came and went from the place at all hours no doubt drew the attention of those who monitor such things.

And so it occurred to me: Was I zapped electronically with the image of an alien? Was it just a byproduct of the chromatic chromosomes so prevalent at the time? I will probably never know. What I do know is that there are depths to the UFO enigma that are not plumbed by most researchers in the field, Horatio.

John Keel, for one, is a pioneering researcher who has been able to peer beyond the simplistic "space beings from another galaxy" device that is the primary stock-in-trade of UFO journalism. Of these strange visitors Keel has said:

> Many flying saucers seem to be nothing more than a disguise for some hidden phenomenon. They are like Trojan horses descending into our forests and farm fields, promising salvation and offering us the splendor of some great super civilization in the sky. While the

> statuesque long-haired "Venusians" have been chatting benignly with isolated traveling salesmen and farm wives, a multitude of shimmering lights and metallic disks have been silently busying themselves in the forests of Canada, the outback country of Australia, and the swamps of Michigan.

Other researchers have proclaimed that the motives of the visitors may not be altogether benign. It was the famous UFO researcher Jacques Vallee who coined the term "Messengers of Deception" and he has speculated of the UFOs:

> They are physical objects, the product of a technology, but they are also something else: the tools of a major cultural change. I think UFOs are perpetrating a deception by presenting their so-called occupants as being messengers from outer space, and I suspect there are groups of people on Earth exploiting this deception.

Speaking of the experiences of abductees in *Messengers of Deception*, Vallee surmises:

> It is more likely that they have taken a non-physical trip, controlled and guided by a system that acts on human consciousness (the Soviets use the term "psychotronic" to designate such devices), rather than one that is purely physical. The symbols it uses are engineered to have certain effects.

Vallee also reports, "I believe there is a very real UFO problem. I have also come to believe that it is being manipulated for political ends. And the data suggest that the manipulators may be human beings with a plan for social control."

I concur.

The evidence that I present in this book suggests that our vision has been purposely obscured by what we have been led to believe about the UFO experience, and it is probably not directly being done by insectoid extraterrestrials. Aside from the genuine

activity of hoaxers and disinformation agents, at least some of them factually connected to government, there seem to be certain elements of the UFO "message" that appear to be purposely designed to deceive. It appears that it was intended that we should be deluded from the very beginning, and it also appears that there is a definite method to the UFO madness.

To my mind the most sensible, yet least voiced explanation is that some UFO encounters are being staged for an ultimate--and ulterior--purpose. Is it within the realm of possibility that there is a group working behind the scenes to convince us that we are being invaded by space aliens?

In order to understand at least a portion of UFO sightings and their purpose, we need to work on decoding what amounts to their curious "language"--a language pieced together from the strange events and messages of hundreds and thousands of encounters, composed of word and symbol and deed apparently bearing meanings beyond the obvious. We must peer below the surface, the apparency, and furthermore, we must view these strange craft and their occupants in a different manner, in a manner that is perhaps not so different than the "open eyes" that secret societies attribute to their metaphysical initiates.

2

The Human Factor

If you were to assimilate the information contained in a large quantity of current books, motion pictures, and television presentations on the subject of UFOs and UFO abductions, I believe that you would be likely--by weight of the evidence presented--to come to one of three conclusions. That,

(A) we are being invaded by aliens from outer space, or

(B) that a high percentage of the human race is crazy and suffering from hallucinations of little green men or worse, or

(C) you would take an "agnostic" approach undecided on one of the first two possibilities.

I will not discount either of the first two possibilities as being the ultimate explanation of what is going on, however I consider it highly unlikely that you would even suspect, based upon information that is generally available, what I consider to be the most likely origin of this phenomenon. My investigations have shown me that UFO sightings (or at least a significant percentage of same) in all probability are the product of an entirely different *praxis* or control process than either alien invasion or hallucination, and that the parties responsible for the phenomenon have, so far as I can determine, never been named as such.

In preparation for the reality shift that I intend this book to entail, I would like to cite a few instances of UFO abductions that do not entirely fit into the media template as to what these encounters are like. In this fashion I hope to shatter the generalized

and predictable nature of what are usually put forth as "characteristic" UFO encounters. This will perhaps open the door for new interpretations.

Bruce Smith probably still regrets having chosen to attend a lecture by Budd Hopkins, reputed expert on alien abduction (who, oddly, never entertains the human quotient in his writings), in New Jersey in 1991. The lecture profoundly affected Mr. Smith (as abduction accounts have affected many others) to the point where he packed up his belongings into his trailer home and headed west. Perhaps Smith felt that New Jersey did not have the requisite privacy that encounters with ufonauts usually require.

Camping in Tesuque, New Mlexico, Smith woke up in the middle of the night, sensing that he was being visited by someone. Suddenly his ankles were grabbed by a pair of hands and, while woozily drifting in and out of consciousness, he saw a hazy creature looming in front of him... and, oddly enough, wearing glasses and a white, button-down shirt, the kind that his father had worn, according to Smith.

So far, so bad. Smith was dragged away from his tent and campsite but, still semi-conscious and able to partially grasp what was going on, he was able to see that it wasn't toward the expected glowing saucercraft that he was being carried.

Smith maintains that he was manhandled into a large, dark blue van, with markings identifying it as belonging to the U.S. Navy. After traveling for an hour in the back of the van over winding New Mexico roads, Smith maintains that the van stopped and he was levitated out the back door, and was then carried into a huge building that he believes was a portion of the Los Alamos nuclear laboratory.

Once inside the building, Smith was placed on an examination table while a big-headed "alien" examined him and "gouged" at his

eyes with a scalpel. Smith went unconscious again and woke up back at the campsite that he had been abducted from.

These terrifying experiences were uncovered several months later while Smith was under hypnotherapy. Smith concluded from the memories that welled forth under hypnotism that he had been abducted many times in the past, but this seems to have been the only time that it happened in collusion with the U.S. Navy.

One is tempted with this account to believe the stories that we hear of government/alien collaboration in abduction and hideous medical experiments--the sort of stories that John Lear and Bill Cooper used to make hay with on late night talk radio, and which still have some currency with the more excitable end of the UFO hobbyist community--but that is not the only possible explanation for the events that Smith says he endured.

The dark blue van is the obvious sticking point in this abductee's tale. Why, pray tell, would space aliens be driving around in vans in order to abduct people? Mysterious vans of this sort are also reported to have been prevalent during a UFO flap in Montana, with "Smithsonian Institute" emblazoned on the side. Researchers contacting the Institute found that they didn't know anything about the vehicles.

In John Keel's *The Mothman Prophecies*, he describes a similar modus operandi taking place in rural Virginia, at the height of the UFO flap of 1973:

> People up in the back hills had been seeing mysterious unmarked panel trucks which sometimes parked for hours in remote spots. There seemed to be several of these trucks in the area and the rumor was that they belonged to the air force. Men in neat coveralls were seen monkeying with telephone and power lines but no one questioned them...

It is perhaps a gauge of the quality of much UFO research that it is considered a serious possibility that these vans sometimes reported in conjunction with abductions and cattle mutilations (or alternately, the black helicopters that often show up around cattle mutilations) are disguised, shape-morphing extraterrestrial craft.

Strange, but if aliens are involved in all of this--and I have grave doubts that they are--instead of vans, wouldn't the more commonly described Star Trek-like "teleporter beams" as depicted in *Fire From the Sky* be more their speed, much more convenient, and less liable to be discovered? More to the point, when driving vans, would little grey aliens be able to see above the steering wheel?

Perhaps the answer is that the beings driving these vehicles aren't alien at all, or at least not quite so alien as we have been led to think. There is no shortage of available accounts of human beings being unaccountably connected to UFOs in the annals of this research, and "close encounters of the human kind" often take place without any accompanying extraterrestrial-appearing characters being involved in the incidents at all. Statistics compiled by James M. McCampbell in the book *Ufology* show, surprisingly, that over one third of "close encounters of the third kind" that are reported involve contact with UFO occupants who are apparently human.

John Keel is the source of another anecdote:

> One family of seven people swore they had seen a circular object land near a wooded area on Long Island. They stopped their car to watch and were astonished when they saw two figures, normal-human-sized beings, exit through a door in the object as a large black car crossed the field and stopped nearby. The two beings got into the car and it drove off. The object took off quickly and disappeared into the night sky.

Another UFO encounter involved two highly credible women, Betty Cash and Vickie Landrum, and Landrum's young grandson, Colby. The trio were motoring near Dayton, Texas in 1980 when they noticed an unusual moving light in the sky above them. They pulled the car over to the side of the road, and the light approached, hovering at approximately 135 feet in altitude and only a few hundred feet away, until it was so close that it was blinding in intensity. By that time the witnesses were able to perceive that they were viewing some kind of huge aerial craft.

Betty Cash, the driver, got out of the car in order to better view what they could now see was a huge, diamond-shaped craft. Flames shot out of the base of the UFO, and a roaring sound engulfed them. Betty Cash returned to the car, where she found the door handle hot to the touch. The strange aircraft slowly moved away. Then the observers saw the approach of twenty-three large, twin-rotor helicopters (apparently Army Chinooks), that looked as if they were escorting the UFO at a distance of about three-quarters of a mile.

After returning home all three of the witnesses of the strange craft had come down with what was apparently radiation poisoning. Betty Cash, the woman who had exited the car for a better look, suffered the worst case, with headache, loss of hair, eyes swollen shut, and sores on her skin, causing her to be hospitalized for six weeks. Since the incident Cash has also contracted cancer that she attributes to the incident. The other two witnesses suffered lesser degrees of eye inflammation and "radiation burns."

When contacted by Cash and Landrum, the Army responded in typical cover-up fashion. Despite the reports of other witnesses that Army helicopters had been in the area at the time of the UFO sighting, they issued a denial of having taken part in the maneuvers. An independent UFO investigator found a blackened area on the road in the vicinity where the witnesses had observed the UFO and

the choppers. Within a few days an unidentified road crew hurried to the location, dug up the portion of the road, and replaced it.

What these and similar accounts seem to say is that UFOs and encounters of the third kind are not always an entirely alien affair, that tabloid television may not have all the answers, and that humans may be involved to some unknown extent in many of these incidents--perhaps in some unknown plan of directed transformation that they are trying to implement. Few, very few, contemporary researchers have made this connection, most of them instead opting for the more-easily-graspable notion that the ufonauts are visitors from nearby star systems. There, leave it at that, they seem to say. What else could they be?

There are exceptions in the research community, however. Some prominent investigators such as Jacques Vallee, Martin Cannon, Alex Constantine, and John Judge seem to have entirely abandoned the idea that UFOs are extraterrestrial phenomena, although any alternate hypotheses are rarely hinted at in the mass media. Bogeymen "Greys" from outer space make better press it seems, and there are other reasons.

For the general public, I suspect the possibility that UFOs are controlled in some fashion by humans, for some conspiratorial purpose, is unthinkable. Why? The answer is simple. The public is the victim of a massive propaganda assault where you would be least likely to expect one. There is an almost total media blackout about the possibility that UFOs are anything other than extraterrestrial phenomena.

When humans are mentioned in relation to UFOs it is always in the context of some eldritch and vast science fictional conspiracy that includes government/alien collaboration and secret treaties, underground bases, and macabre scenarios of human-alien vat clonings. The monolith of this unlikely scenario is sustained upon a foundation of no hard evidence whatsoever; odd, since it apparently

involves hundreds of thousands of human participants scuttling in the dark underbelly of terrestrial politics and selling out the human race for a place in the sun after the coming alien takeover of Earth.

An additional filter on the truth is that the whole subject of the existence of secret, conspiratorial groups manipulating politics from behind the scenes is treated as a big joke by the media, and as the province of crackpots, as can be readily deduced from the treatment accorded to Oliver Stone's motion picture *JFK*. Six months prior to the release of the film, there was a huge media campaign to discredit the production, along with the whole notion of a conspiracy being involved in the John F. Kennedy assassination. Certainly there is abundant evidence showing that it is almost impossible that Lee Harvey Oswald was the sole individual responsible for the murder of Kennedy, and that the large number of inconsistencies in the government story suggest that a conspiracy is at least possible. But that evidence, so it seems, is irrelevant. There are no political conspiracies, and that's that, chump.

Likewise, against the preponderance of evidence, almost the entirety of UFO literature (including motion pictures and television) assumes that the solution to the enigma of the saucers is, in a sense, already known to us. It is taken for granted that we already know that extraterrestrials from other planets pilot these super-science craft. Perhaps, after all, it serves someone's purpose for the public to believe this way. Perhaps it assists the transformation I have spoken of, a transformation that is taking place all around us.

3

The Mind Manipulators

To understand the motives that might prompt humans to organize such a massive deception, a mass mind-twisting of this scope, I believe that we should look outside the literature of UFOs, consulting the history of other recent and verifiable mass manipulations and deceptions. If we are attempting to unravel the secret of the most perplexing mystery of this century, we should acknowledge that certain segments of mankind, in order to accomplish their power-hungry plans, have often been happy to pull a veil over the eyes of (if not put out the eyes of) their fellows who inhabit this earth.

Since the middle of this century (and very probably before that) the intelligence agencies of the United States, as well as other countries, have been involved in covert programs intended to modify beliefs and behavior--to control the minds of the population of the world. The rubric "National Security" is employed by these manipulators as a catch-all shield to veil the illegal (and definitely immoral) activities of intelligence agencies involved in a welter of Orwellian mindbending programs such as ARTICHOKE, MKULTRA, and MKDELTA.

Although intelligence agency brainwashing is only very rarely spoken of in the mass media, this does not reflect on its prevalence or on the magnitude of its ambitions, which have involved thousands of programs and billions of dollars of funding into research on mind alteration and the control of often unwitting victims. Many volumes (although few published by major

publishing houses) have been filled with horrendous accounts of brainwashing, electroshock, psychosurgery, drug experimentation, and the experimental injection of hostile bacteria and viruses, all performed by "our" employees, the U.S. military and intelligence agencies.

Walter Bowart in the classic expose *Operation Mind Control* characterizes the purpose of intelligence agencies as being

> ...to take human beings, both citizens of the United States and citizens of friendly and unfriendly nations, and transform them into unthinking, subconsciously programmed "zombies," motivated without their knowledge and against their wills to perform in a variety of ways in which they would not otherwise willingly perform. This is accomplished through the use of various techniques called by various names, including brainwashing, thought reform, behavior modification, hypnosis, and conditioned reflex therapy.

A survey of some of the gothic monuments in the landscape of mind control research include:

The advent of television in the late 1940s has provided a potent mind drug administered to the vast majority of the population. Providing a substitution for actual human life in the modulating and hypnotic electronic flicker of the television tube, studies have been conducted showing that television actually induces a trance state that, with years of watching, becomes permanent. Television is, without a doubt, the most potent societal soporific in the mind control arsenal.

Susan Bryce, writing in *Nexus*, aptly describes what takes place during television watching:

> There is so much information coming at viewers over a short time, that they sit lethargically staring blankly at the screen. This is precisely what you are supposed to do. In this lethargic mode, when people are almost snoozing, more is taken in subconsciously by the

> mind. Have you ever wondered why people fall asleep in front of the TV? Viewers become passive recipients, on the treadmill of mindless consumerism, routed endlessly from one shopping center to another, buying, buying, buying. Mass programmed shoppers. Becoming absorbed in the pursuit of media popularized roles or fashions, in the vain hope of becoming loved, respected, rich, socially popular or sexually desirable. Sheep who venerate compulsive neurotic behavior as normal, desirable human contact.

Madness Network News chronicles that:

> Between 1953-1967, the CIA paid Ewen Cameron over $18,000 to test LSD, Thorazine, and sensory deprivation on mental patients. Dr. Carl Pfeiffer was paid $25,000 a year by the CIA to drug prisoners with LSD. Dr. Harris Isbell drugged prisoners with LSD for 11 years under CIA auspices. Dr. Louis Jolyon West of UCLA, Dr. Sidney Malitz, Dr. James B. Cattell, Dr. Amadeo Marrazzi, Dr. Paul Hoch, and many other psychiatrists were also on the CIA payroll.

Robert Heath at Tulane University in 1955 was employed by the U.S. Army to combine the administering of LSD with implanted brain electrodes on psychiatric victims.

Between 1952-57 Dr. Paul Hoch at the New York Psychiatric Institute was funded to the tune of $200,000 by the Army, to research mind control by drugging on humans.

Nineteen fifty-six saw the CIA authorizing the use of Bulbocapnine and other drugs on state penitentiary inmates. Bulbocapnine was deemed to be especially useful in inducing catatonic states in which brainwashing and implanting of information or commands could be performed.

In 1961 Dr. W. Fry and Dr. R. Meyers conducted experimentation involving the use of focused ultrasonics to create brain lesions, while in 1963, Dr. Peter Lindstrom at the University of Pittsburgh used sonic beams in the focused destruction of brain

tissue--a technique said to have been evolved to replace pre-frontal lobotomies.

One prime notable in mind control is Dr. Jose Delgado who, beginning in the 1950s and funded by Naval Intelligence and the Air Force, among others, crafted the first radio controlled brain implants, what he termed "stimoceivers."

Delgado described the capability of these early, crude stimoceivers in the following terms:

> It is already possible to induce a large variety of responses, from motor effects to emotional reactions and intellectual manifestations, by direct electrical stimulation of the brain. Also, several investigators have learned to identify patterns of electrical activity (which a computer could also recognize) localized in specific areas of the brain and related to determined phenomena such as perception of smells or visual perception of edges and movements. We are advancing rapidly in the pattern recognition of electrical correlates of behavior and in the methodology for two-way radio communication between brains and computers...
>
> The individual is defenseless against direct manipulation of the brain because he is deprived of his most intimate mechanisms of biological reactivity. In experiments, electrical stimulation of appropriate intensity always prevailed over free will; and, for example, flexion of the hand evoked by stimulation of the motor cortex cannot be voluntarily avoided. Destruction of the frontal lobes produced changes in effectiveness which are beyond any personal control.

Delgado's stated purpose in the invention of the stimoceiver was the "master control of human behavior," although after a popular treatment of the subject in his book *Physical Control of the Mind* was released, research into the area of direct electrical stimulation of the brain was rarely referred to again.

In the mid-70s, Dr. Louis Jolyon West, director of the Neuropsychiatric Institute at UCLA, suggested a centralized "violence reduction center" to be created at an abandoned missile

base in California, a concept that was greeted with approval by then-Governor Ronald Reagan. West reported in a secret memo that one purpose of the center would be the implementation of brain surgery techniques: "...now by implanting tiny electrodes deep within the brain... [it] is even possible to record bioelectrical changes in the brain of freely moving subjects, through the use of remote monitoring techniques."

At the same time that the military and intelligence agencies were drugging, implanting, and sawing up the brains of their experimental subjects, the nation at large was being stupefied by massive drugging promoted by the so-called medical profession and the media as the answer to their cares.

Peter Schrag in *Mind Control* records that, "by 1975 American physicians were writing 240 million pharmacy prescriptions annually for psychotropic medication for people who were not hospitalized--roughly one for every man, woman and child in the country--enough pills all told to sustain a $1.5 billion industry and to keep every American fully medicated for a month." Since that time the prevalence of pharmaceutical drugging in this country has only increased.

During the 1960s a shift seems to have taken place in emphasis in mind control projects. The U.S. military commissioned a number of experimental projects delving into the use of electromagnetic frequencies for controlling and altering the behavior of subjects. Between 1965 and 1970, Project Pandora researched the effects of low intensity microwaves on the health and psychology of humans. This was at the same time that the American embassy in Moscow was being irradiated by microwaves by the Russians, causing numerous harmful physiological effects in the employees there.

Studying Soviet literature on microwaves for the CIA, Milton Zarat determined, "they believe that the electromagnetic field induced by the microwave environment affects the cell membrane,

and this results in an increase of excitability or an increase in the level of excitation of nerve cells. With repeated or continued exposure, the increased excitability leads to a state of exhaustion of the cells of the cerebral cortex."

Eldon Byrd of the Naval Surface Weapons, Office of Non-Lethal Weapons, engaged in research into anti-personnel electronics, described the effects of electromagnetic radiation on the offspring of animals. He spoke of "a drastic degradation of intelligence later in life... couldn't learn easy tasks... indicating a very definite and irreversible damage to the central nervous system of the fetus." Byrd also described experiments in which, "At a certain frequency and power intensity, they could make the animal purr, lay down and roll over."

Even more startling brain control possibilities were researched. A 1976 DIA report suggests that "Sounds and possibly even words which appear to be originating intercranially can be induced by signal modulations at very low power densities."

Anna Keel, in *Full Disclosure* magazine, discusses one such experiment:

> Dr. Sharp, a Pandora [Project] researcher at Walter Reed Army Institute of Research, some of whose work was so secret that the couldn't tell his boss, conducted an experiment in which the human brain has received a message carried to it by microwave transmission. Sharp was able to record spoken words that were modulated on a microwave carrier frequency by an "audiogram," an analog of the words' sound vibrations, and carried into his head in a chamber where he sat.

Dr. James Lin of Wayne State University in his book *Microwave Auditory Effects and Applications* discussed the Sharp experiment and remarked that, "The capability of communicating directly with humans by pulsed microwaves is obviously not limited to the field of therapeutic medicine."

Anna Keel writes:

> What is frightening is that words, transmitted via low density microwaves or radio frequencies, or by other covert methods, might be used to create influenoe. For instance, according to a 1984 U.S. House of Representatives report, a large number of stores throughout the country use high frequency transmitted words (above the range of human hearing) to discourage shoplifting. Stealing is reported to be reduced by as much as 80% in some cases. Surely, the CIA and military haven't overlooked such useful technology.

Keel also remarks:

> Another indication that the government entertained notions of behavior control through use of fields and sound, is a 1974 research proposal by J.F. Schapitz. To test his theory, his plan was to record EEG correlates induced by various drugs, and then to modulate these biological frequencies on a microwave carrier. Could the same behavioral states be produced by imposing these brain wave frequencies on human subjects? His plan went further and included inducing hypnotic states and using words modulated on a microwave carrier frequency to attempt to covertly condition subjects to perform various acts. The plan as released (through the Freedom of Information Act) seems less part of a careful recipe for influence than Adey's and other DOD scientists' work, and may have been released to mislead by lending an "information beam" science fiction like quality to the work.

In an upcoming chapter we will examine the possible use of an "information beam" employed in a highly science fictional manner.

A 1993 issue of the *Tactical Technology* newsletter reported on the then-current state of Soviet mind control technology:

> While visiting Russia in November 1991, Morris [Janet Morris, research director of the U.S. Global Strategy Council, a think tank located in Washington D.C., founded by Ray Cline, previously a deputy director of the CIA] and other members of a team sent to investigate

Russian technologies for commercial development were invited to a demonstration of mind control technology. A volunteer from the U.S. team sat down in front of a computer screen as innocuous words flashed across the screen. The volunteer was only required to tell which words he liked and which words he disliked. At the end of the demonstration the Russian staff started revealing the sensitive, innermost thoughts of the volunteer - none of which had been previously discussed.

The recorded message was mixed with what appeared to be white noise or static, so when played back it became indecipherable. Since there were no more volunteers in the U.S. group, the Russians volunteered to go upstairs and let the Americans choose a mental patient for demonstration. The Americans declined the offer.

The Russians told Morris of a demonstration in which a group of workers were outside the hospital working on the grounds. The staff sent an acoustic psycho-correction message via their machine to the workers telling them to put down their tools, knock on the door of the hospital and ask if there was anything else they could do. The workers did exactly that, the Russians said.

The Russians admitted to using this technology for special operations team selection and performance enhancement and to aid their Olympic athletes and an Antarctic exploration team. Unlike lie detectors, this machine can determine when the truth is spoken, according to Morris.

Being an infrasound, very low frequency-type transmission, the acoustic psycho-correction message is transmitted via bone conduction. This means that earplugs will not restrict the message. An entire body protection system would be required to stop reception. The message, according to the Russians, bypasses the conscious level and is acted upon almost immediately. They also say that the messages are acted upon with exposure times of under one minute.

Morris envisions this technology will be miniaturized into a handheld device. Presently the International Healthline Corp. of Richmond, Va., is planning to bring a Russian team of specialists to the U.S. in the near future to further demonstrate the capability...

Trilateral Commission kingpin Zbigniew Brzezinski has nicely summed up the mindset of the brain tinkers in these government-sponsored programs, in between gloating over the wonders of the coming New World Order in his book *Between Two Ages: America's Role in the Technotronic Era*:

> In the technocratic society [that Brzezinski sees as the New Order of society coming into ascendance after Marxism] the trend would seem to be towards the aggregation of the individual support of millions of uncoordinated citizens, easily within the reach of magnetic and attractive personalities effectively exploiting the latest communication techniques to manipulate emotions and control reason.

Could Zbig have been any more straightforward in talking about mind control?

We do know that authoritarian (and often covert) control of society continues unabated, the techniques becoming more finely honed as experimental subjects are utilized by the thousands and then discarded. The populace has been drugged, shocked, irradiated, made ill, manipulated, and even killed in the efforts of the military and intelligence agencies and their psychiatric dupes to devise the most effective and invisible manacles for the containment of members of our "democracy."

Is there any suggestion that this sort of mind programming might have been expanded to incorporate UFO incidents and the public's belief in UFOs to assist in their bamboozling? Whatever the answer, I believe that there is little doubt that such UFO incidents could be simulated in this fashion.

What additional capabilities than those described above, and the perhaps added usage of hallucinogens and hypnosis, along with various "extraterrestrial" stage props, would be required in order to convince an abductee that he had been waylaid by a flying saucer, rather than a dark blue van? I am not suggesting that this is the

entirety of the answer to the UFO riddle--but might not mind control experimentation of this sort, conducted with UFO space trappings, comprise a statistically significant part, and might not hoaxing, unusual natural phenomena, and the tendency for many UFO buffs to be extremely gullible account for most of the rest?

Ufologist Otto Binder has said, "At any rate, it would seem that the expanding series of saucer sightings in waves, from 1964 to date, is all building up to a crescendo, as if the saucer men are conditioning earth people in seeing saucers, and gradually forcing even the most recalcitrant scientists and government authorities to realize the sightings are not figments of imagination, but real."

The recent huge, triangular UFO seen by thousands of residents over Arizona is exactly the sort of sighting that cannot be ignored. But why would extraterrestrials have to be, or be interested in, conditioning humans to believe in their existence?

4

Infiltration

Although the forces that appear to dominate UFO research seem to prefer that everyone maintain a "Goshwow! Aliens are among us!" approach that beyond disinformational purposes also serves in marketing to the slack-jawed yokels with underbites, there seem to be certain forces afoot today other than just grey aliens. Although thus far we are only able to evaluate circumstantial evidence of UFOs being connected to human occupants (rather than aliens) and the military, there are a number of accounts of the military attempting to infiltrate public UFO research organizations, apparently in an attempt to monitor and disinform the field, and to delude the public at large on the subject of UFOs. On a number of occasions the UFO field has been infiltrated by military intelligence personnel, and well-known UFO "researchers," possibly even the majority of the prominent ones, have loyalties that seem not to reside with the UFO research community or with the truth.

In the early 1950s H. Marshall Caldwell, then acting as Assistant Director for Scientific Intelligence for the CIA, penned the following memo to CIA Director Walter Smith. Caldwell wrote:

> With world-wide sightings reported, it was found that, up to the time of the investigation, there had been in the Soviet press no report or comment, even satirical, on flying saucers, though Gromyko had made one humorous mention of the subject. With a State-controlled press, this could result only from an official policy decision. The question, therefore, arises as to whether or not these sightings:
>
> (1) could be controlled

(2) could be predicted, and

(3) could be used from a psychological warfare point of view either offensively or defensively.

The public concerns with the phenomena, which is reflected both in the United States press and in the pressure of inquiry upon the Air Force, indicates that a fair proportion of our population is mentally conditioned to the acceptance of the incredible. In this fact lies the potential for the touching-off of mass hysteria and panic... A study should be instituted to determine what, if any utilization could be made of these phenomena by United States psychological warfare planners...

In the book *Clear Intent*, authors Fawcett and Greenwood detail the destruction of the early civilian UFO investigative group, the National Investigations Committee on Aerial Phenomena (NICAP), by government intelligence agents. They cite the involvement in the group of Nicholas de Rochefort, member of the Psychological Warfare Staff of the CIA, Vice Admiral Roscoe Hillenkoetter, a director of the CIA, and Bernard J.0. Carvalho, another apparent CIA asset.

They describe the removal of Donald Keyhoe as NICAP's director in 1969, and point to the actions of chairman of the board Col. Joseph Bryan, former chief of the CIA's Psychological Warfare Staff as being instrumental in Keyhoe's ouster. They also note that John Acuff, the head of the Society of Photographic Scientists and Engineers--connected to Defense Department intelligence units and the CIA--was the man who replaced Keyhoe. Acuff seems to have defanged NICAP, as far as the government was concerned, turning it into a sightings collection group without a trace of its earlier governmentally-critical policy, an approach that eventually drove the organization out of business. Acuff was replaced by Alan Hall, retired from the CIA, with the group eventually being dissolved.

Further investigation of government manipulation of UFO researchers must include a mention of William Moore, the co-author of *The Philadelphia Experiment* and *The Roswell Incident*, as well

as editor, until recently, of *Far Out* magazine, published by Larry Flynt of *Hustler* fame. Moore, who continues to be a medium weight popstar of the UFO research field, for reasons which remain unclear to me admitted at the 1989 MUFON Symposium that he had functioned as an agent for members of the U.S. military, reporting on at least one UFO group and involved individuals in exchange for "leaked," allegedly secret government documents about UFOs. To me this is astounding. The only reason I can imagine that Moore might betray his own activities in this way is that he feared that someone else was going to "out" him as working with the government, and he was attempting damage control by his "voluntary" admission.

Other information on Moore involves the matter of UFO researcher Paul Bennewitz. Bennewitz, a self-employed electronics expert, believed that he had discovered alien technology in action at Kirtland Air Force Base in New Mexico, and contacted the military in an attempt to alert them. Bennewitz was apparently fed a series of documents outlining military collaboration with the aliens and other matters that are currently the stock-in-trade of the "Aliens are among us and polluting our vital bodily fluids!" end of the UFO research spectrum.

According to Moore, "[Bennewitz] was the subject of considerable interest on the part of not one, but several government agencies, and [I discovered] they were actively trying to defuse him by pumping as much disinformation through him as he could possibly absorb..."

Moore admits that he knew that Bennewitz was being disinformed by the government--with evidence suggesting that Special Agent Richard Doty was at least partially responsible--but according to his own admission he took no action to disabuse Bennewitz of the lies that, Moore says, were gradually driving him crazy. Bennewitz got to the point where he believed that aliens were

invading his house and poisoning him. He gradually broke down from the disinformational (and perhaps other) attacks, until he was put into a psychiatric hospital.

Sergeant Richard Doty, one of Moore's contacts who was involved in the Bennewitz matter, was a special agent with the Air Force Office of Special Investigations at Kirtland Air Force Base in Albuquerque, New Mexico. During the course of his employment with AFOSI he invited Linda Moulton Howe--a well-known investigator of cattle mutilations who oddly never seems to bring up the government connection--to visit him at Kirtland. Once Howe had arrived at the Air Force base, Doty showed her alleged secret documents that seemed to reveal information on crashed alien vehicles and their occupants.

According to Howe:

> These pages... contained a summary of this government's retrieval of crashed disks and alien bodies, including a live alien from a crash near Roswell in 1949. The paper said that this extraterrestrial had been taken to Los Alamos National Laboratory, where it had been kept until it died of unknown causes on June 18, 1952. Then the paper summarized some of the information that had been learned from this distinctly alien life form about our planet and its civilization's involvement with this planet. One of the paragraphs said, "All questions and mysteries about the evolution of Homo Sapiens on this planet have been answered, and this project is closed," ...Further, it stated in the paper that these gray extraterrestrials had been personally involved in the genetic manipulation of already evolving primates on this planet, suggesting that Cro-Magnon was the result of genetic manipulation by the gray extraterrestrials.

Another meeting was arranged between Captain Robert Collins, Howe, and John Lear, the UFO "expert" and former employee of the CIA. Lear is the man who has done more than anyone including Bill Cooper to convince the public that aliens are

among us, living in huge underground bases, and collaborating with the government to put us all in the vat-prepared soup. Collins furnished Lear and Howe with more alleged secret documents on the aliens, and mentioned to her that he had worked with William Moore for years.

It also is within the sphere of William Moore's influence that the bogus MJ-12 paper, a faked 1947 presidential "briefing document" on crashed saucers, surfaced.

5

MJ-12

In mid-1987, when UFO buffs first got the MJ-12 document in their hands, many of them thought that they were fondling the Holy Grail of UFO research. This photo reproduction of an eight-page alleged government document is purported to be a preliminary briefing on UFOs for President-elect Eisenhower, released on November 18, 1952 (also officially the first day of the formation of the CIA).

The MJ-12 document was allegedly used to brief Eisenhower by Rear Admiral Roscoe H. Hillenkoetter, said to be a member of Majestic-12, a top secret research team composed of scientists and military men empowered to investigate UFOs. The MJ-12 document claims that in July, 1947, an alien disk craft crashed in Roswell, New Mexico, and that a second craft crashed on the Texas-Mexico border in 1950.

From where did this historic and apparently earth-shaking MJ-12 document originate? In December, 1984, a roll of undeveloped 35mm black and white film was received in the mail in Burbank, California, by Jaime Shandera, a television producer. Shandera has said that the package was postmarked at Albuquerque, New Mexico. The roll of film was developed by Shandera and William Moore, who found photo images of the pages of the MJ-12 document.

The first publication of a portion of the MJ-12 document appeared in the *London Observer* newspaper, on May 31, 1987. A small portion of the document was printed in an article by Martin

Bailey, titled "Close Encounters of an Alien Kind--And Now if You've Read Enough About the Election, Here's News from Another World." The article was reprinted in many American newspapers in the weeks that followed.

According to British UFO researcher Timothy Good, he was the first to publish the complete MJ-12 document, in his book *Above Top Secret*, in May, 1987. Where did Good get his copy? He stated, "I received the document from a CIA source in March of 1987." When queried as to whether the CIA source had anything to do with William Moore, Good responded, "I am sure. Oh, absolutely."

The document was published and re-published in magazines, analyzed, touted as extraterrestrial gospel, decried as a hoax. But it captivated the imaginations of many UFO researchers, and injected life into an ailing UFO research field to a degree that had not been seen since the halcyon days of the 1960s.

For those UFO buffs who are interested in objective evaluation the fact that no original copy of the MJ-12 document is available is only one of the difficulties in proving or disproving its validity. Because of this fact, no evaluation of the authenticity of signatures, paper, or ink can be made.

The document also is suspiciously similar to a description of the one that was shown to Linda Moulton Howe at Kirtland Air Force Base, if a more refined version.

Other details suggest that the document is a hoax. The dating format is a mixed civilian and military style, as for instance in the date, "18, November, 1952." The military format would be 18 November, 1952," lacking the added comma. Single digit dates also have an added zero inserted before them in the MJ-12 document, a practice that did not come into use in the military until the 1970s. As pointed out by debunker Philip J. Klass, in available examples of Hillenkoetter letters and memoranda, the conventional military date format is used.

Also, according to Klass, a Los Angeles document examiner has determined that the typewriter used to type the MJ-12 document was not available before 1963.

Researcher Kevin Randle points out another significant discrepancy in the MJ-12 document: "The document is constructed as a briefing paper for President-elect Eisenhower, suggesting that Eisenhower had no knowledge of the Roswell crash. The problem is that Eisenhower, as the Army Chief of Staff in July 1947, would have been completely aware of the Roswell crash."

The MJ-12 report does not resemble in style or substance anything else that I have seen originating from the government, and I have examined hundreds of government documents originating from the same period, many of them dealing with UFOs. The document is also not written in typical "bureaucratese," that elusive jargon so valued in government circles.

The main problem with the MJ-12 document for me, however, is that it solves too much, wrapping up too many of the loose ends of the contemporary UFO controversy, and "proving" exactly what most UFO buffs "already know." Little new information is offered on the alleged saucer crashes themselves, which is rather odd given the fact that this constitutes our first clear look inside the "Cosmic Watergate" so toured by Moore, Stanton Friedman, and others. If this in fact is a briefing provided to Eisenhower, then it is a comic book briefing that would have raised far more questions in the President-elect's mind than it answered. The loose ends that are wrapped up in the document also neatly intersect with the specific stated beliefs and investigative involvement of the men most closely associated with the report: Shandera, Moore, Friedman.

After the publication of the MJ-12 briefing documents, another unsigned document was allegedly discovered in the National Archives, dated July 14, 1954. This is a purported memo to General Nathan Twining, Air Force Chief of Staff, from Robert Cutler,

Eisenhower's Special Assistant for National Security. This document states, "The President has decided that the MJ-12 SSP briefing should take place during the already scheduled White House meeting of July 16, rather than following it as previously intended." The alleged memo was unsigned, with Cutler's name and title typed at the page bottom. Advocates of the authenticity of the original MJ-12 pages claim that the Cutler memo provides proof positive that the document--and the alleged secret MJ-12 consulting group--was real, while detractors suggest that the memo is just another fake.

The authenticity of the Cutler memo, this supposed confirmation, is doubtful. Advocate Stanton Friedman insists that the memo is real because "it was in a classified box in a classified vault," but this only points up Friedman's willingness to overlook the obvious in his anxiety to verify the MJ-12 document. What would have stopped someone from carrying the Cutler memo in with them when examining the supposedly secure box?

Jo Ann Williamson, Chief of the Military Reference Branch, has indicated that "this particular document poses problems" in a number of ways. Williamson points out that it is not typed on government letterhead and does not have a watermark; it does not have a top secret registration number; it is the single document with a notation about MJ-12 in the folder in which it was found; the marking TOP SECRET RESTRICTED INFORMATION attached to it was not used until many years after the Eisenhower administration; and Robert Cutler was traveling in Europe and North Africa on the day the memo was supposedly issued.

Other significant factors, possibly the most significant in the evaluation of the authenticity of the MJ-12 documents and the Cutler memo are the associations of their recipient and primary disseminators. Jaime Shandera, who reportedly received the film containing images of the MJ-12 document, had in 1980 been involved in pre-production for a fictional movie about UFOs with

Stanton Friedman and William Moore. Some rash souls have suggested that the production of the MJ-12 document may have been their next fictional foray. Shandera had also "been working closely with Bill Moore and myself on the Roswell crash," according to Friedman.

Shandera and Moore had both been in contact with Richard Doty, who was at the time of the MJ-12 document's release working for the Air Force Office of Special Investigations. Doty was trained in disinformation and psychological warfare, and allegedly a self-admitted member of a disinformation group. According to published reports, Moore has stated that Doty reported to a Pentagon official named Hennessey, reportedly chief of security for the Stealth project. It is impossible to gauge Doty's actual connections, since portions of his service records are censored, although while stationed at Linsay Air Force Base in West Germany, according to Klass:

> Doty was charged with falsifying official documents and telling falsehoods to his commanding officer. A formal investigation confirmed these charges and Doty was "decertified" as a special agent [with the] Air Force Office of Special Investigations and returned to Kirtland AFB in late 1986. Doty spent his last two years before retirement in food services management.

Doty was allegedly involved in an earlier UFO hoax regarding a sighting near Kirtland Air Force Base in 1980. An anonymous letter, purporting to be from an airman and indicating that the same information had been submitted to the Office of Special Investigations, was sent to a UFO organization. According to researcher Robert Hastings, "careful analysis of the anonymous letter reveals that it was almost certainly typed on the same typewriter used by Doty..."

According to Dr. Bruce Maccabee of the Fund for UFO Research, Doty also confessed to William Moore that he been involved in another hoaxed UFO incident, called the Ellsworth case, and that he had forged documents and submitted them to researchers as authentic.

Was Doty or the OSI the source of the MJ-12 documents? Did he forge them? No conclusive proof exists.

But the plot continues to thicken. Researcher Lee Graham has reportedly said that William Moore had contacted him "in an intelligence capacity" and that he worked for the government in releasing sensitive UFO information. According to Graham, Moore had flashed a Defense Investigation Service badge, although Stanton Friedman in his 1996 MJ-12 apologia titled Top *Secret/Majic* puts a different spin on the event. Friedman says, "As a joke, Bill once pulled out a MUFON identification card, flashed it at Lee, and indicated that he was working for the government. Lee bought it." This sidesteps the issue of this alleged impersonation of a government official, as well as Graham's memory of a government badge, not a MUFON card. Friedman carefully sidesteps these matters in his defense of a person who has otherwise admitted to collaborating with agents of the government!

Another issue that Friedman does not approach in *Top Secret/ Majic* is Moore's association with men claiming to be Air Force intelligence. Although I was not present at the 1989 MUFON Conference at which William Moore spoke, Jacques Vallee was, and offered the following description:

> In a confused and embarrassing presentation before the MUFON Conference, Bill Moore indeed confessed that he had willingly allowed himself to be used by various people claiming to act on behalf of Air Force Intelligence and that he had knowingly disseminated disinformation, although he has never been "on the payroll." This is a

mere play on words, of course. Not being on the payroll does not mean that he was not paid in cash or through other means...

Moore gave a weak excuse for his actions, claiming that he had acted in a heroic private effort to infiltrate and ultimately expose the operation.

Does Friedman avoid bringing up these matters because they provide additional evidence that the MJ-12 document is a hoax, or simply because he is Moore's friend? It is impossible to know, although Friedman's recent career as a "UFO expert" has been largely based on protesting too much about the discrepancies in MJ-12.

Although the MJ-12 document has not been conclusively proven to be a fake, the weight of evidence suggests that this is the case. More significantly, to be given serious consideration, in order to be factored in as valid data into any real evaluation of the nature of UFOs, it must be proven to be real, and this certainly has not taken place.

In a sense, it doesn't matter if the MJ-12 document or the Cutler memo are proven to be counterfeit, since the majority of UFO true believers will continue to believe what they want, despite any facts to the contrary. My experience is that a significant portion of the UFO hobbyist community use their obsession as a form of excitement, for the feeling of being "in the know," and as a substitute for a life. Deep down, they hope that we are being invaded by evil aliens!

That aside, it is obvious that the government is attempting to defuse UFO investigations by overwhelming them with incendiary disinformation and by having informants report on the activities of groups and individuals. This is no longer the matter of conjecture that has buzzed among UFO researchers since the earliest days of these investigations. Now there is more than enough proof to show that this is the case.

Providing more support for the idea that UFO abductions may have more to do with humans than aliens, we do know that the American government, at least, is in possession of top secret aircraft of a radically different type than orthodox aircraft, and that these may include saucer craft. Certainly there is much evidence to show that advanced disk craft designs confiscated from the Germans after World War II may have been put into production.

It is only in recent years that the existence of this kind of aircraft has been able to be fairly easily verified by observation outside the military installation known as Area 51 in Nevada. Before this sort of testing moved on to other regions, large crowds would gather outside this military preserve for UFO watching parties. There, on many nights (Wednesday was said to be the most active night for the flights), one was able to observe strange aircraft doing aerial maneuvers that would have been impossible for the unclassified aircraft of which we are aware. But that does not make these craft extraterrestrial, nor does it make them extraterrestrial/human technological hybrids. It does make it obvious, however, that the people who maintain that this is the case, without a shred of hard evidence, are blithering idiots.

The relatively common occurrence of garden variety humans being seen in the vicinity of, entering and leaving, and sometimes piloting UFOs may be another significant clue as to the meaning and origin of these craft. Many operations which are said to take place inside the saucers and performed by "alien" beings are in fact carbon copies of the kind of operations performed on the restraining tables of psychiatrists in the employ of the CIA and other military and intelligence agencies--right down to the reports of tiny electronic brain implants inserted through the nose, the standard insertion technique for both brain control shrinks (as exemplified by Dr. Jose Delgado, the originator of the technique) and, so we are told, the grey aliens.

6

A Symbolic Odyssey

It has been established, I think, that there are aspects of the UFO mystery that owe more to the activities of humans than extraterrestrials. But my purpose is not simply to show that humans forces of some sort--perhaps the CIA--are hoaxing the populace into believing that the aliens are here and pose a threat to the well-being of mankind. I am hoping to provide a look into the purpose behind the hoaxing.

There are strange clues that need to be examined in detail; these involve a tangled web of symbolism in the UFO mythos that, fortunately, resolves into a single meaning: Trust me on this. As I cite each reference in this symbolic odyssey, I will try to distill the relevant images that will assist in forming a conclusion.

In the incredible account "My Life Depends On You!", which has circulated widely in the underground press, Martti Koski describes the experience of literally going mad. In 1975 he began to be plagued by unwanted voices that he believed were being broadcast from the hotel room above him. Assuming that he was experiencing a neurotic bout he put up with the voices until, in the late summer of 1979, his mental torture escalated. Now Koski found that he was losing control of his bodily functions, and that his senses were being scrambled. His heartbeat became erratic to the point that he entered the University of Alberta Hospital in Edmonton, Canada.

Once checked into the hospital, the voice in his head identified itself, claiming to be a spokesman for the Royal Canadian Mounted Police, and telling Koski that he had been chosen to be a spy. The

voice dubbed Koski the "Microwave Man." Koski claims that while in the hospital bizarre experiments were performed on him by the doctors while, in the meantime, interior voices were telling him to perform acts like stealing shirts and engaging in covert sales of cigarettes to other patients.

After leaving the hospital, Koski attempted to escape the barrage of voices by traveling to his native Finland, but to no avail. The voices did not let up.

After eighteen years of psychic attack, Koski has, to a degree, learned to live with it. In Finland he works with other individuals who claim that they have been victims of government mind control experimentation, some of them being able to back up their claims with x-rays that seem to show tiny mushroom-shaped brain implants.

Koski's plight may be interpreted in at least two ways. He may be simply crazy, and the voices may be entirely the product of his own mind. The lucidness of his written account of his ordeal, however, argues against this possibility. He may also be correct in his conclusions. He may be mind controlled by, as he suspects, the RCMP. Certainly there is a huge body of literature detailing the activities of government intelligence operations on civilians, and there is proof that brain implants in fact actually are performed, including numerous x-ray photos of tiny, otherwise unexplainable brain implants. It is also interesting that the most infamous of doctors working in the CIA MKULTRA mind control experiments of the 1950s was Dr. Ewen Cameron, his horrendous experimentation performed at his gothic Ravenscrag facility in Montreal, Canada.

But there is an additional strange element to the Koski story that may provide a piece to the puzzle that we are researching. After Koski returned to Finland, the voices he was hearing began to tell him a different story. Now they told him that they weren't RCMP, at

all. They were beings from the "Dog Star," Sirius. So Koski is being mind-manipulated by extraterrestrials?

There are further symbolic linkages on this speculative trail that may or may not lead to the stars. At the beginning of this century, contact with the Sirius star system was claimed by the occultist Lucien-Francois Jean-Maine who, through the famous occultist Papus, learned the rituals of the Ordo Templi Orientis lodge, founded by Aleister Crowley, and formed his own group in his native Haiti. Jean-Maine is said to have in 1922 combined the OTO rituals with voodoo practices to form the Cult of the Black Snake in Haiti. He also claimed to be in contact with a disembodied being or voodoo loa named Lam, an entity who OTO Grand Master Kenneth Grant said was one of the Great Old Ones, an elder as well as eldritch god nigh-identical with those portrayed by the American horror writer H.P. Lovecraft in the 1920s and 30s.

Lam, according to Grant, has the task of uniting the current that emanates from the Andromeda galaxy with the current that flows from Sirius. Grant believed that a dimensional portal exists in the Andromeda galaxy, and through this portal will enter the Old Ones, demonic entities intent on returning Earth to their dominion and having humanity for breakfast.

Prior to Jean-Maine's contact with Lam, the famous occultist and founder of the OTO Aleister Crowley reported that he had summoned the same entity through one of his own "magickal" workings. Crowley also penned a drawing of Lam, reprinted in Kenneth Grant's *The Magical Revival*, adding another strange dimension to the now inter-dimensional puzzle.

Crowley portrays the entity Lam as a prototypical big-headed "Gray," i.e. as the picture of modern popular conceptions about what a UFO alien is supposed to look like. Crowley, relates Grant, also "unequivocally identifies his Holy Guardian Angel with Sothis

(Sirius), or Set-Isis." The obvious connection here is the significance of Sirius, although the Ordo Templi Orientis lodge, Crowley, and Lam also have their own special relevance.

Evaluating this mish-mash of occultism, who would imagine that the telepathic transmissions from Sirius might have something to do with military intelligence? Occult investigator James Shelby Downard, in his wonderful "Sorcery, Sex, Assassination, and the Science of Symbolism" (published in my *Secret and Suppressed* anthology) researches the existence of a Sirius-worship cult that he believes exists at the highest levels of the CIA! He cites as one of their ritual locations the telescope viewing room of the Palomar Observatory in California. There, he says, the adepts of the Sirius-military intelligence cult enact rituals in the telescopically-focused light of the Dog Star, in imitation of the Egyptian priesthood, astral rays bathing the viewing chamber and the participants when the telescope is aimed Sirius-ward.

Utter madness? Tell that to Colonel Michael Aquino of U.S. military intelligence, the admitted head of the satanic Temple of Set, a deity identified in occultism with Sirius. Aquino makes no bones about the fact that he is the head of his offshoot of Anton LaVey's Church of Satan, known to draw many of its leaders from military circles. Again, we see the strange conjunction of Sirius, occultism, and military intelligence.

Another occultist and "spirit channeler," championing the cause of Sirius, the Dog Star, in the 1950s and 60s, was well-known ufologist George Hunt Williamson (the penname for Michel d'Obrenovic). Williamson authored the classic UFO book *Other Tongues--Other Flesh*, an extended treatise on the beneficence of the ufonauts from Sirius, who supposedly provided mankind with civilization in the far distant past.

Williamson treats this theme at length again in his book *Secret Places of the Lion*, extolling the "Goodly Company," the "Star

People," the "Children of Light," who "migrated to earth"--the "dark star"--"planet of sorrows"--about eighteen million years ago and have worked ceaselessly and tirelessly in their gigantic task of acting as the Creator's mentors to a backward, fallen race.

Williamson claimed that he had met these benevolent "space friends," and was in fact a member of the group of witnesses who claimed to have seen George Adamski contact a saucer craft and an alien being in the California desert. The alien warned him about the evil influence of the beings from Orion.

Williamson also rhapsodizes at length, but in a somewhat circumspect fashion, on the seemingly-unrelated theme of Solomon's Temple and the reappearance of the Messiah, hinting at certain "secrets" relating to same. Although it may seem quite a digression, Williamson's treatment of the Messiah theme provides the solution as to his own and to others' "secret" orientation in ufology.

Drawing upon a selection of quotes from his book, Williamson maintains that:

> Throughout the entire history of the earth, the "Goodly Company" or the multitude of "Christ Souls" have incarnated in a group...
>
> Pharoah was addressed as "The King, the Ra, the Sun." This signified his position as leader of the "Goodly Company" of star born beings dedicated to the salvation of a planet!...
>
> A special hereditary order of men was now created to keep a semblance of Aton (One God) worship amongst the Israelites; although the Greater Light could not be theirs because they were not yet ready for it, a less spiritual worship was set up, based on pagan ritualism, that nevertheless was symbolic in its sacrifices, ceremonies, vestments, etc...
>
> The promise of an Eternal King, to arise out of David's Family, was repeated over and over again: to David, to Solomon, and again and again...

> There are references to the breaking of the bread and drinking of the wine as a symbol of "the sacred repast." The wine represents the "Holy Vine of David" and the bread "the life and knowledge of God." Those "Children of the Greater Light" who are descendants of the "Holy Vine of David" serve, through the "sacred repast," "the life and knowledge of God!! God made a covenant with David of an eternal dynasty."...
>
> David and Bathsheba prepared the way for the coming of the Master or the Fulfillment in Israel...
>
> When Solomon ascended the throne of his father, he consecrated his life to the erection of a temple to God and a palace for the kings of Israel. David's faithful friend, Hiram, King of Tyre, hearing that a son of David sat upon the throne of Israel, sent messages of congratulation and offers of assistance to the new ruler...
>
> Now we are entering the "twilight of the gods," when the final destruction of the Old Age will take place and man and the gods will be regenerated and reunited! Man will have revealed unto him a true vision of his eternal heritage--that earthly things may show him the nature of his spirit!

So sayeth George Hunt Williamson. But what do the Temple of Solomon, Hiram, King of Tyre, the "Holy Vine of David," the ancient manipulation of Earthlings by space aliens, and the coming "Fulfillment in Israel" have to do with Sirius, the Dog Star? A surprisingly large amount, it turns out.

A more recent version of essentially the same Sirius scenario is provided by the UFO contactee Oscar Magocsi.

After contact with the extraterrestrials, Magocsi believes that he has a mission to impart the wisdom of the "Psycheans," members of the "Interdimensional Federation of Free Worlds," whose base of operations is located near Arcturus. Magocsi reports that humanity migrated from the Pleiades thousands of years ago, and that we (and the Interdimensional Federation) are at war against evil forces from Draconis. These Dark Forces, Magocsi maintains, rely on human allies--the Illuminati secret society--whose mission is to assist in

enslaving mankind through a long term disinformation operation intended to portray them as forces of good hailing from the Orion nebula. There are, Magocsi claims, actual good guys from Orion--he dubs this faction the Lords of Light--but the Illuminati are a different bunch altogether. Magocsi also maintains that a particular area of positive influence is Sirius, the intelligences there supposedly beaming telepathic transmissions intended to counteract the bad vibes of the Dark Forces.

7

Increase of Resolution

A few additional notes need to be added to this mystic cacophony before a conclusion can be drawn about Sirius, the Temple of Solomon, and the nature of UFOs.

A remarkable UFO group was contacted by Jacques Vallee in Paris, France. The group is called the Order of Melchizadek, and it uses the Star of David for its emblem, and for its program espouses a one world government and the doing away with money and religion--except for the UFO-oriented sort of religion, I would imagine. The Order is cabalistic in its mystical practices, the Qabalah being an ancient form of Jewish mystical cosmology, a philosophy also employed by other occult groups such as the OTO and the Freemasons. Vallee notes the curious number of organizations that the head of the French Order of Melchizadek fronts, including the Front for Christian Liberation, Jesus People Europe, Jesus Revolution, the Charismatic Christian, the Christian Socialist Party, and Jew and Arab movements. Here relevant cross-currents include cabalism, the Order of Melchizadek, and the Star of David. Throw in one world government and the abolition of money and religion for good measure.

Another French UFO group that Vallee investigated should be stirred into the melange. The Frenchman Claude Vorilhon was taking a pleasant hike in the mountains one day--so he relates--when he saw a UFO hovering nearby, the craft bearing a Star of David with a swastika inside the emblem. A glowing childlike figure stepped forth from the craft. The child conversed with Vorilhon,

bestowing a new name on him, "Rael," and informing the man that the reason he had been chosen to be contacted was because France was the birthplace of earthly democracy during the French Revolution. The being entrusted Vorilhon with the mission of building an embassy in which the aliens, which Vorilhon calls the Elohim, from the biblical reference, could meet with dignitaries of Earth, with the stated task of spreading "Peace, Love and Fraternity."

Vorilhon was informed that humans had been created by the Elohim, godlike space travelers who were also skilled in the arts of DNA alteration and cloning. Vorilhon was now to assist the Elohim in preparing mankind for the final age of Revelation. Vorilhon, now going by the name Rael, insists to his numerous followers that "A world government and a new monetary system must be created. A single language will serve to unify the planet."

He and his followers now sport the Star of David/swastika that he observed on the side of the UFO, and practice a form of "sensual meditation" that may be similar to kundalini yoga as practiced by the OTO and other groups.

Of the Rael cult, Jacques Vallee observes:

> The most remarkable facts about Rael-Vorhilon are that he has acquired a large number of disciples--including thousands of followers in French Canada--and that the cult seems to have sources of income beyond the donations from his flock, leading some to speculate that the Raelian movement... like Jim Jones' People's Temple, may have attracted the attention of social engineers motivated by the observation and management of such belief systems.

An additional case, that of Betty Andreasson, should serve to link this twisted chain of incidents.

Andreasson's abduction was the subject of a book by Raymond Fowler, titled *The Andreasson Affair*. Although her case has been

discussed at great length in the UFO-related press, and has been the subject of a number of television segments, no one has satisfactorily explained the extremely strange nature of the events she experienced, ones that are quite different from typical UFO abduction events, as least as they are usually presented.

Taking place in 1967, the events of Betty Andreasson's abduction were later brought out through the use of hypnosis. Andreasson recalled being kidnapped from her home and spirited away into what appeared to be a spacecraft. She was transported to an unknown location and then taken through a series of underground passageways that she believed were part of a city. Arriving at an underground chamber, Andreasson experienced, in a manner that she describes as highly painful as well as emotional, a kind of mythic psychodrama enacted before her which may not have been different from the kind of mystical dramatizations enacted in ancient Mystery Religions and other mystic cults.

She saw a huge bird, that she estimated to be fifteen feet in height, resembling an eagle but with a more elongated neck. The creature was apparently alive, but as Andreasson watched it, it began to transform. It began to glow with a light and heat that was so intense as to cause her pain. When the heat and light had diminished the bird was gone and she was gazing on a pile of flickering embers.

As Andreasson stared at the embers she saw a worm wriggling in the ash. "Now, looks like a worm," she described it during her hypnosis, "a big fat worm. It just looks like a big fat worm--a big gray worm just lying there."

Also during the experience, Andreasson was told by her abductors, "We are going to measure you for light... You have not completely understood the word that you have. You are not completely filled with light."

She said, "I believe I am filled with the light! I believe--I believe that I'm filled with the light!"

Andreasson also recalled that, "They called my name, and repeated it again in a louder voice. I said, 'No, I don't understand what this is all about, why I'm even here.'

"And they--whatever it was--said 'I have chosen you.'

"'For what have you chosen me?'

"'I have chosen you to show the world.'

"'Are you God?' Andreasson asked, 'Are you the Lord God?'

"'I shall show you as your time goes by.'"

The following text is part of an interview with Betty Andreasson, conducted by Raymond Fowler:

> FOWLER: Have they [the UFOs] anything to do with what we call the second coming of Christ?
> ANDREASSON: They definitely do.
> FOWLER: When is this going to occur?
> ANDREASSON: It is not for them to tell you.
> FOWLER: Do they know?
> ANDREASSON: They know the Master is getting ready, and very close.

Since we are ranging cosmically far afield in our search for connections, it should be noted that Eye in the Triangle emblems have been seen on some UFOs and the uniforms of their occupants, that Men in Black sometimes wear the same emblem and speak of themselves as being members of the "Nation of the Third Eye," and that in recent years a significant percentage among 2,000 UFO sighting reports in Belgium describe triangular craft with lights at each point of the triangle, and another light in the center of the triangle. This may be the same gigantic aircraft seen over Phoenix, Arizona in 1997--again, the Phoenix!--a craft identified as being a

UFO in the news media, but conforming to descriptions of top secret aircraft currently being produced by the military.

To reiterate the elements I have been stirring together in this and the preceding chapter: the "Dog Star," Sirius--the "Lords of Light" and various other references relating to light--the Eye in the Triangle--the Illuminati--Set--Isis--the Temple of Solomon, the Star of David, and God's reported covenant with Israel--the Qabalah--and the Phoenix. All of these symbols convey a single Earthly origin.

Is it surprising to note that these are the symbols and catchphrases of a secret society that has existed since--conservatively--at least the 1700s, and which draws upon mythology that began with the Egyptians, if not earlier. That society is the Illuminati, whose most visible proponents currently are the Freemasons, a secretive fraternal order with many members among the ranks of prominent world leaders, politicians, intelligence and military, and with conclaves located in virtually all towns of any size in America. Although the vast majority of Freemasons know very little of such arcane imagery and purposes, the information is there to be perused in their books and in the performance of their mystical initiatory rites.

Albert Pike, the head of the Scottish Rite of Freemasonry in the 1800s, announced that, "Sirius still glitters in our Lodges as the Blazing Star *(l'Etoile Flamboyante)*." He also spilled the symbolic beans when he said that Sirius was interchangeable with the Eye in the Triangle, the Mother Goddess Isis, and the pentagram beloved of many a mystical sect.

One of the secrets, perhaps the core secret of the Illuminati and of their related societies (including the Freemasons and the Priory of Sion secret society as revealed and simultaneously concealed in Baigent, Lincoln, and Leigh's seminal *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*) is

that the overall goal of this secret society is the rebuilding of the destroyed Temple of Solomon in Jerusalem.

The secret within the secret is that this is the purpose of the New World Order (another Illuminati conception), namely the enthronement of a new Messiah from the genetic line purported to descend from King David (and Jesus, thus fulfilling the ambitions of both Jews and Christians) who will rule over the world in feudal fashion and supposedly usher in a new era of transcendent wonderfulness.

Gibberish? The Freemason Pike said in the 1800s: "Behold our object, the end, the result, of the great speculations--of antiquity; the ultimate annihilation of evil, and restoration of Man to his first estate, by a Redeemer, a Masayah, a Christos, the incarnate Word, Reason, or Power of Deity." When Freemasons tell you that the group is all about performing good works and driving around in funny little cars on the fourth of July, don't believe them. They have a metaphysical agenda, although only those initiated at the highest levels are aware of it.

This agenda is exactly what George Hunt Willamson is getting at when he talks about the "Holy Vine of [King] David": a physical bloodline of individuals descended from the alleged marriage of Jesus and Mary Magdalene, and from King David. This scenario is also a key to the battle plan of the New World Order (whose agenda seems to go back, in this instance, to at least the time of the Knights Templar).

So UFO celebrity George Hunt Williamson had it, and so the varied branches of the Illuminati have it, although in highly cryptic fashion. If it is thought that Williamson is merely echoing biblical themes and in fact had no secret Masonic orientation woven into his writings on UFO contact, we should listen further to his words:

"Solomon," Williamson says, "was a great artist; he designed most of the burnishings for his Temple of God. He was an alchemist,

and manufactured by alchemical means the gold used in his Temple. The transmutation of base metals into gold was accomplished by 'vibrations.' Alchemy was more than a speculative art--it was also an operative art!" Similar, perhaps, to the speculative and operative lodges of Freemasonry?

The Andreasson encounter reiterates a number of secret society symbols, including its familiar 'light' motif, but centers around the explicitly Masonic symbolism of the death and rebirth of the phoenix. In the informative book *The New World Order*, Ralph Epperson asserts, "The phoenix bird symbolizes a rebirth, not only of an individual inside the Masonic religion but also of a new civilization arising out of the ashes of the ruined one."

And this appears to be the plan of the Illuminati.

In recent years the highest levels of political manipulation have been directed toward fulfilling the biblical prophecy and Freemasonic philosophic cornerstone of rebuilding the Temple of Solomon in Jerusalem on the site of the Dome of the Rock, a Muslim holy place, and placing a World King of Davidic bloodline on its throne. There have been several attempts by terrorists linked to high level Israeli intelligence to blow up the Dome of the Rock, the reported site of Solomon's Temple, an event which is rightly seen as a certain motive for the launching of a holy war between the Jews and Arabs.

Making it even more likely that the Dome of the Rock will be destroyed, and the Temple of Solomon rebuilt is that a red heifer has been born in Israel--supposedly the first red heifer since the destruction of the Second Temple by the Romans in A.D. 70. The ashes of a red heifer were traditionally used for purification before approaching the Holy Temple. Some Muslims are concerned that the birth of the red heifer will be seen as the signal for the destruction of the Dome of the Rock.

"The potential harm from this heifer is far greater than the destructive properties of a regular terrorist bomb," David Landau wrote in the Israeli newspaper *Ha'aretz*.

As far as the possibility that the recapturing of the reported site of Solomon's Temple will set off war, and possibly nuclear war in the Middle East, not many Jewish or fundamentalist Christian sects--or even Freemasons--are likely to be much worried about this possibility. Millions of dollars have in fact been channeled into the terrorist organizations from Christians in the United States in their fanaticism and belief that the rebuilding of Solomon's Temple will set off the advent of the Messiah, which conveniently also carries all the earmarks needed for it to parallel the second coming of Christ.

And the manipulation continues...

8

Philip K. Dick and the Illuminati

The most revelatory account I have I come across of a possible contact with an alien intelligence is the book *VALIS* by Philip K. Dick. Aspects of the book that seem to be little understood are symbols that point to an encounter of some sort with what we can accurately term the Illuminati. Again, the messages in *VALIS* are coded, and the meanings encoded are Freemasonic, comprising in fact a relatively exhaustive recapitulation of Freemasonic lore and agenda.

VALIS is a semi-fictionalized account of "Horselover Fat," Dick's alter ego (the name formulated from a word derivation of his name), and Dick's meeting with what he takes to be God, or at least a God, via the medium of a pink beam of light. Dick dubs this god VALIS (a Vast Active Living Intelligence System).

Dick's vision came about when, in March of 1974, and suffering from two impacted wisdom teeth, he waited in his apartment in Anaheim, California for a prescribed plain killed from a local pharmacy. When the delivery person from the pharmacy arrived at the door it was a young woman wearing a golden fish-emblem necklace. Dick reflects that:

> For some reason I was hypnotized by the gleaming golden fish; I forgot my pain, forgot the medication, forgot why the girl was there. I Just kept staring at the fish sign.
>
> "What does that mean?" I asked her.

> The girl touched the glimmering golden fish with her hand and said, "This is a sign worn by the early Christians." She then gave me the package of medication.
>
> In that instant, as I stared at the gleaming fish sign and heard her words, I suddenly experienced what I later learned is called anamnesis--a Greek word meaning, literally, "loss of forgetfulness." I remembered who I was and where I was. In an instant, in the twinkling of an eye, it all came back to me. And not only could I remember it but I could see it. The girl was a secret Christian and so was I. We lived in fear of detection by the Romans. We had to communicate in cryptic signs. She had just told me all this, and it was true.

This sudden influx of knowledge had been caused by a pink beam of light that had shot out of the necklace the girl was wearing, the beam apparently penetrating directly into Dick's head and imparting a vast array of information, including the knowledge of several languages that he had not previously understood. Aside from feeling a sort of hyper-rationality, Dick sensed that he had been taken over by a superior mind that had memories dating back in excess of two thousand years.

Later Dick was to hear troubling, grotesque messages coming out of his radio telling him to die, and would have an all-night display of graphic inner vision similar to thousands of abstract paintings seen in rapid succession projected upon the mind's eye. He also experienced a superimposition of the features of ancient Rome onto those of the California landscape in the 1970s, and formed the conviction that the present world was locked in what he termed a "Black Iron Prison," a state of spiritual (and probably physical) entrapment.

From these experiences and others Dick evolved a complex body of speculation, from which he drew a trio of books that included *VALIS* and a lengthy *Exegesis* consisting of several thousand pages of handwritten notes speculating on the nature of his contact with what he determined to be God.

The outcome of Dick's experiences with VALIS was not altogether benign. After the encounter (and a breakup with his wife) Dick attempted to kill himself, ending up in a mental ward instead.

What Dick believed to be the source of his contact is particularly interesting:

> "Where did the plasmate [VALIS] originally come from?"
> After a pause Fat said, "From another star system."
> "You wish to identify that star system?"
> "Sirius," Fat said.

In *VALIS* Dick relates the fairly widely-known information on the African Dogon tribe and their startling and unexplainable exact astronomical knowledge about the Sirius star system (as described in *The Sirius Mystery* by Robert G.K. Temple--possibly a pseudonym?). The Dogon, Dick says, "got their cosmogony and cosmology directly from the three-eyed invaders who visited long ago. The three-eyed invaders are mute and deaf and telepathic, could not breathe our atmosphere, had the elongated misshapen skull of Ikhnaton and emanated from a planet in the star-system Sirius. Although they had no hands, but had instead, pincer claws such as a crab has, they were great builders."

Dick has Horselover Fat dreaming of these three-eyed creatures: "They manifested themselves as cyborg entities: wrapped up in glass bubbles staggering under masses of technological gear... Soviet technicians could be seen, hurrying to repair malfunctions of the sophisticated technological communications apparatus enclosing the three-eyed people." I will have more to say about the Dogon later in this text.

Dick also believed that, "Our world is still secretly ruled by the hidden race descended from Ikhnaton, and his knowledge is the information of the Macro-Mind itself... From Ikhnaton this knowledge passed to Moses, and from Moses to Elijah, the

Immortal Man, who became Christ. But underneath all the names there is only one Immortal Man, and we are that man."

"Real Time ceased in 70 C.E.," Dick asserted, "with the fall of the Temple at Jerusalem [i.e. the Temple of Solomon]. It began again in 1974. The intervening period was a perfect spurious interpolation aping the creation of the Mind. 'The Empire never ended,' but In 1974 a cypher was sent out as a signal that the Age of Iron was over; the cypher consisted of two words: KING FELIX, which refers to the Happy (or Rightful) King.

"The two-word cypher signal KING FELIX was not intended for human beings but for the descendants of Ikhnaton, the three-eyed race which, in secret, exists with us."

Dick believed that, "The person referred to by the two-word cypher KING FELIX is the fifth Savior who... VALIS had said, was either already born or would soon be."

Out of the VALIS communications, "Fat deduced that he had a mission, that the plasmate's invasion of him represented its intention to employ him for its benign purposes."

Of Ikhnaton's three-eyed kin, Dick alter-ego Fat observes, "My God... These are the original builders...," to which another character replies, "We have never stopped... We still build. We built this world, this space-time matrix." This is reminiscent of the terms with which the Freemasons refer to themselves in such tomes as Pike's *Morals and Dogma*. There is no mistaking the connection for anyone with the slightest familiarity with Masonic lore.

And VALIS, we learn, employs the same mystical communication system as the Masons: "All its verbal information is stored as Cabala." The Qabalah (alternative spelling, Cabala) is an ancient form of mysticism that pervades Freemasonry, top of pyramid to base.

Dick describes the method by which VALIS initiates secretly communicate with each other: "During a handshake, a motion with

one finger of two intersecting arcs: swift expression of the fish symbol, which no one beyond the two persons involved could discern." The connection with the secret handshake of the Freemasons is obvious.

In *Exegesis,* Dick amplified on his beliefs:

> For the first time I have inferential evidence that a genuine secret fraternity of authentic Xtians exists, & has affected history... & possess supernatural powers & Immortality, due to direct links back to Christ--so they are the true hidden church. The two historic interventions which I am sure of collate: the secret fraternity fights the Empire (Rome in all its manifestations) & promotes the evolution of man to higher levels by inner & outer regeneration. The 16th, 17th century Illuminati are connected with this secret brotherhood...

Whether the godlike VALIS was involved at all, what was communicated to Dick seems to be approximately what the Freemasons and their brethren want us to believe about their mission: that theirs is an ancient tradition resting on an immortal bloodline that comes from the star system of Sirius, and that fulfillment of their plans (including the rebuilding of the Temple of Solomon, and the enthronement of a World King (their secret agenda hidden in their convoluted inner circle cant) is the only salvation for this soon-to-be One World.

Dick seems to believe that VALIS took the form of a satellite, firing electronic beams of information down upon the Earth. Or perhaps crop circles? He has one of his characters say, "The satellite had control of them from the get-go. It could make them see what it wanted them to see... The satellite has occluded them, all of them. The whole fucking United States."

There are other indications that the actual VALIS that Dick contacted may have come from another source than Sirius. "In Fat's

[i.e. Dick's] opinion, his apartment had been saturated with high levels of radiation of some kind."

He theorized that, "the Rosicrucians [the philosophic precursors to the Masons] were telepathically beaming pictures at him, probably boosted by micro-relay systems of an advanced order; but then, when Kandinsky paintings began to harass him, he recalled that the main art museum at Leningrad specialized in just such nonobjective moderns, an he decided that the Soviets were attempting telepathically to contact him."

Later Dick theoretically pinpointed the transmissions as originating from the schemes of a crippled rock musician named Mini: "He visited the Soviet Union one time; he said he wanted to see certain experiments they were conducting with microwave information transfer over long distances."

Fat himself comes to believe within the pages of *VALIS* that, "All that was involved from the start... was advanced laser technology. Mini found a way to transmit information by laser beam, using human brains as transducers without the need for an electronic interface. The Russians can do the same thing. Microwaves can be used as well. In March 1974 I must have intercepted one of Mini's transmissions by accident; it irradiated me."

Actually, I doubt that Dick felt the source of his infernal "enlightenment"--that happened to him in real life, in much the same fashion as it was depicted in the partially fiction *VALIS*, as shown by his statements in his Exegesis--was a rock musician. It happens that information beam experiments of exactly the type that Dick speculated on were at about that time being conducted by both the CIA and the KGB.

CIA Director Richard Helms described research taking place in the 1960s into "sophisticated approaches to the 'coding' of information for transmittal to population targets in the 'battle for the

minds of men'" as well as "an approach integrating biological, social and physical-mathematical research in attempts... to control behavior." He described "use of modern information theory, automata theory, and feedback concepts... for a technology for controlling behavior... using information inputs as causative agents."

Anna Keel, in *Full Disclosure* magazine, writes:

> Due to [the CIA's] Project Pandora, it is now known that applied biological (and other) frequencies can also be used as direct "information inputs" (e.g. of feeling or emotion) and to reinforce brain rhythms associated with conditioning and information processing. One way to get such a signal into a human may be through use of a high frequency carrier frequency. Results of research into information processing, unconscious processes, decision making, memory processes and evoked brain potentials would likely be exploited or integrated in an interdisciplinary system.
>
> For difficult subscribers... there are substances that have psychological or psychobiological effects ranging from subtle through devastating, and that cause increased susceptibility to conditioning. Some of these substances are similar to ones which are recognized by neurotoxicologists or behavioral toxicologists as occupational hazards; some are variations of substances used experimentally in laboratories to produce selective damage in certain neuronal tracts. Many substances needn't be injected or orally ingested, as they may be inhaled or applied with "skin transferal agents," i.e. chemicals like the popular industrial solvent dimethylsulphoxide (DMSO), which can, in fact, enhance the applied substance's effect. For instance, some compounds cause damage that produces increased sensitivity to stimulus, distraction (or flooding of thought associations), and enhance susceptibility to influence i.e., a state where automatic parallel information processing, which usually takes place outside of awareness, and interferes with conscious or more intentional limited channel processing. While causing acute mental symptoms wouldn't be the goal in groups, producing mild distraction, an ego weakened blurring between the sense of "I" and "you," would enhance some kinds of conditioning and promote suggestibility; then, perhaps transmitted "thought

> associations," "the voice of God," "lucky advice" or whatever, can more easily get through and have an effect... Convenient to the agencies involved in covert influence, is that among primary symptoms of schizophrenia or mental illness are ideas that one is being influenced by "transmissions" (e.g. radio frequencies), "voices" or even telepathy; unless complaints about covert psychological weapons are well organized, they would tend to be discounted as indicative of mental imbalance.

Another approach that may have been used is the transmission of "key concepts" to matters that the subject is already conversant in, creating a realignment of the subject's sense of reality by the injection of just a few bits of information, images, or sentences. In Dick's case this might have involved accessing his study of religious symbolism and history. A fast acting hallucinogen and a beamed transmission of religious concepts might have made him very susceptible to the idea that, due to an unexplainable event of "gnosis" he had tapped into the secrets of reality.

Dick describes a message broadcast "Out over the airwaves by one of the largest TV stations in the world, NBC's Los Angeles outlet, reaching many thousands of children with this split-second information which would be processed by the right hemispheres of their brains; received and storied and perhaps decoded, below the threshold of consciousness where many things lay slumbering and stored." He terms the message the KING FELIX cypher, and reports that, "The United States Army cryptographers studied it but couldn't discern who it was intended for or what it meant."

Dick describes the way in which the message was broadcast:

> On the screen the words FOOD KING appeared--and then they cut instantly, rushing their film along as fast as possible so as to squeeze in as many commercial messages as possible; what came next was a Felix the Cat cartoon... One moment FOOD KING appeared on the screen and then almost instantly the words--also in huge letters--

> FELIX THE CAT. There it had been, the juxtaposed cypher, and in the proper order: KING FELIX.

I don't know whether the KING FELIX cypher or the Food King/Felix the Cat messages were actually broadcast (other than in *VALIS*, that is), but discounting the possibility out-of-hand would be unwise. Certainly similar messages have been sent over the airwaves, such as the Eye in the Triangle station break presented by CBS during 1992. A perfectly clear representation of the Eye in the Triangle was shown, quickly metamorphosizing into abstract patterns. Curious as to whether I was projecting my own fixations, I polled an audience of about a hundred people from the podium at a UFO convention; the majority of them had also noticed the depiction.

Another television subliminal was the image of the Statue of Liberty projected between the film frames of an ALF cartoon, as reported in *TV Guide*. Surely that image must have been slipped into the programming by some overzealous right wing patriot skulking in the CBS editing room. So one would tend to believe, but check out what conspiracy theorist and Freemasonic expert Norma Cox has to say in her *Secrets* newsletter on the subject of Lady Liberty:

> [This] is the statue of the Moon Goddess, Diana... This Queen of Heaven is also the Queen of Democracy... Diana's right arm holds a great torch (symbolizing the sun) high in the air. The left arm (right and left symbolic of male and female), grasps a tablet which bears the date of the Declaration of Independence. A crown with huge spikes, like sun rays, rests on her head (the crown covertly represents our satellite, the Moon)... Note the similarity between Juno, holding aloft a sword and Diana, whose statue, symbolizing Freedom, Equality and Worldwide Brotherhood, stands in New York harbor. Worshipped as Juno Lucina, the Bringer of Light, Illuminism's adoration of this Moon goddess ranks only slightly below that of the god of the Sun who, in the case of Juno, is Jupiter (Zeus), her husband.

I have been following examples of the injection of occult symbolism via other conduits; one of these, amazingly, impossibly, is Camel cigarette advertising. Although the media has been hip to the idea that the cigarette company is specifically targeting young people with their cartoon "Joe the Camel" cigarette campaign, no one that I know of has spotted the fact that the Camel ads are riddled with subliminal imagery, including occultist subliminal content. It begins with the Camel image itself, the camel being a symbol of Isis according to Aleister Crowley. Other images I have noted in these ads are the obviously phallic snout of Joe the Camel (this representation has been noted by other, including mainstream writers), the phallus being a seminal occultist obsession; a tiny representation of a man with erect phallus on the cigarette package's front; and a sprinkling of other important occult symbols such as the rose, the moon, the ocean, the eye in the triangle, and the pyramid, all Isis or Illuminati symbols, prominently featured for no apparent reason in Camel advertising. There is even a depiction in one ad of Joe the Camel as George Washington; is it possible that Robert Anton Wilson and Robert Shea were on to something in their *Illuminatus!* trilogy, when they suggested that George Washington was impersonated by Adam Weishaupt, after the suppression of the Bavarian Illuminati, and that this is the significance of this ad? Nah.

But to return to Philip K. Dick... Ultimately the VALIS enigma is difficult to interpret with any absolute sense of certainty about what took place that day in March of 1974. It shines with points of illumination whose meaning remains elusive against the explanations of prosaic reality. What we do know is that, for whatever reason, in whatever fashion, Philip Dick had almost the entire Illuminist/Freemasonic mythos fired into his forebrain, and that he struggled with those images, trying to make sense of their symbolism, for the short period of time that remained in his life. Either he was force-fed a massive injection of Freemasonic

mythology via electronic beam (as he believed), or in a moment of dreadful illumination--or perhaps hallucinogenic receptivity--Philip K. Dick saw the truth of the world.

9

The Sirius Connection

The Freemasons tell a very curious story about the origin of their order and of civilization. They believe, in a mythology with roots dating back to the time of the Sumerians, that civilization on Earth (not to mention the secret occult doctrine) was established by divine visitors from the star system Sirius, which they symbolically equate with the Egyptian god triunity of Isis, Osiris, and Horus. In the Sumerian mythology they are explicit in stating that these extraterrestrial visitors, who they term Oannes, were fish-like in form. Isis, it may be observed in Egyptian representations, wears a fish headdress. The home system of these alien visitors, the star Sirius, was of such significance to the Egyptians that they based their calendar and the alignment of their temples on the star's rising times.

Harry Lebelson in an essay titled "The Search for Ancient Astronauts" reports the following of the fish-like extraterrestrials:

> The Oannes were described as teachers who gave the people insight into letters, the sciences and art. Referring to cuneiform and pictographic records compiled several thousand years before his time, [the scholar] Berossus describes how the Oannes taught the people to found temples and codify laws; they taught the principles of geometrical knowledge and 'everything to humanize mankindt,' as Berossus put it.

Here is the theme of extraterrestrials visiting Earth thousands of years ago and civilizing it, along with the information that these

visitors specifically imparted information on building ("The Builders") and geometrics, orientations central to Freemasonic lore and symbolism.

We do know that, for whatever reason, there was a sudden quantum leap in civilization that took place virtually simultaneously in Sumeria and Egypt. According to Professor W.B. Emery in Archaic Egypt:

> At a period approximately 3400 years before Christ, a great change took place in Egypt, and the country passed rapidly from a state of advanced Neolithic culture with a complex tribal character to two well-organized monarchies, one comprising the Delta area and the other the Nile valley proper. At the same time the art of writing appears, monumental architecture and the arts and crafts developed to an astonishing degree, and all the evidence points to the existence of a well-organized and even luxurious civilization. All this was achieved within a comparatively short period of time, for there appears to be little or no background to these fundamental developments in writing and architecture.

And the reason for this remarkable increase in human knowledge is known to us, although not admitted. Although the truth has not filtered into the hallowed studios of the 6:00 News, it is not in question as to whether mankind has come into contact with an extraterrestrial culture. We have. There is complete confirmation of the legend of the Oannes, which has been obtained in the 20th century. Proof of that contact resides in the secret cosmological traditions of the Dogon tribe of Africa.

The traditions of the Dogon have been transmitted in oral fashion for centuries, and may comprise the most pure offshoot of the secret tradition that underpins the religious beliefs of diverse religions and secret societies - including the Illuminati. Their tradition clarifies the secret agenda of the major occult and religious

traditions of this planet. And that pure transmission from the Dogon speaks of, verifies and conclusively proves extraterrestrial contact.

The secret tradition of the Dogon is centered upon the star Sirius, but more significantly, upon its smaller companion Sirius B. The problem is that Sirius B is totally invisible to the naked eye, and was only discovered through the use of a powerful telescope in the 20th century. It might have only been a lucky guess that the Dogon attributed an orbiting companion to Sirius, if only they hadn't made so many more "lucky guesses" that prove their scientific knowledge of the star system:

--They know that Saturn has a ring around it, although it is impossible to determine this fact without the aid of a telescope.

--They are aware that the planets in this solar system orbit around the sun, and that the solar system is contained in the Milky Way.

--The Dogon say that Earth's moon "is dry and dead like dry dead blood."

--They are aware of four moons of Jupiter.

--They know that the Earth turns on its axis.

--They also know, most significantly, that the orbital period of Sirius B around Sirius A is fifty years; again, a fact impossible to determine without a modern telescope.

Where did they obtain this information? They say that they were taught it by intelligent amphibious beings called the Nommo--the term used in both a singular and plural form--who came from Sirius thousands of years ago in a circular, spinning ark. Their tradition is a precise correlation with the Sumerian tradition of the Oannes. The Dogon call the Nommo "the Shaper of the world"--note the similarity to Phil Dick's concept of "the Builders."

The Dogon have a number of interesting things to say about Sirius and the Nommo. During Dogon ceremonies the Sirius system is portrayed on a checkered blanket, recalling the tessellated or

checkerboard pattern that the Freemasons favor for their floors: is this a reference to Sirius?

The Bozo tribe, cousins to the Dogon, call Sirius the "Eye Star," a concept hearkening to the Eye in the Triangle and to the Egyptian glyph for Isis' consort Osiris. It is noteworthy that the Bozo say that Sirius A is "seated." Isis is depicted in Egyptian hieroglyphics with a symbol of a seat or throne.

Remarkably, there is another religious tradition on which the lore of the Dogon may cast a penetrating light. The Dogon refer to mankind as Ogo, the imperfect, the outcast. They say that the Ogo were rebellious and were unfinished as a creation. In order to make up for the rebellious--sinful--nature of the Ogo, one of the Nommo, named O Nommo, "Nommo of the Pond," was sacrificially crucified on a tree to atone for our imperfect nature, died, and will return in an ark with the ancestors of men.

According to Robert K.G. Temple in *The Sirius Mystery*:

> The name Nommo comes from a Dogon word linked to the root nomo, "to make one drink." It is said: "The Nommo divided his body among men to feed them; that is why it is also said that as the universe 'had drunk of his body' the Nommo also made men drink. He also gave all his life principles to human beings." He was crucified on a kilena tree which also died and was resurrected.

The helical rising of Sirius was key in Egyptian--as well as Dogon--religious ceremonies. The Dogon also portray the helical rising of Sirius as a cross with a flower-like sun in its center, an image very reminiscent of the flowering cross of the Rosicrucians and their successor groups like the Freemasons and the Ordo Templi Orientis.

It may be speculated that the fish symbol of the secret soiety that Philip K. Dick felt had contacted him may have derived from the Oannes/Nommo connection. The fish symbol, stood on its head,

also portrays a representation of the fertility cult of Isis, and it is even possible that the Christian fish symbol is similarly derived, since it may be argued that Christianity is at core a Mystery Religion of Osiris-Sun God worship, transmogrified by claims of an historical uniqueness that it specifically does not possess.

As Aleister Crowley wrote in *The Book of Thoth*:

> In this card [Death, a Tarot card] the symbol of the fish is paramount; the fish (il pesce, as they call him in Naples and many other places) and the serpent [symbolizing the Messiah] are the two principal objects of worship in cults which taught the doctrines of resurrection or re-incarnation. Thus we have Oannes and Dagon, fish gods, in western Asia; in many other parts of the world are similar cults. Even in Christianity, Christ was represented as a fish. The Greek word IXThUS, "which means fish, and very aptly symbolizes Christ," as Browing reminds one, was supposed to be a notariqon, the initials of a sentence meaning "Jesus Christ Son of God, Saviour." Nor is it an accident that St. Peter was a fisherman. The Gospels, too, are full of miracles involving fish, and the fish is sacred to Mercury, because of its cold-bloodedness, its swiftness and its brilliance. There is moreover the sexual symbolism.

Michael A. Hoffman II in *Secret Societies and Psychological Warfare* observes the following of the star Sirius, that it is, "regarded in the highest occult circles as analogous to the 'hidden god of the cosmos'... The emblem of the All-Seeing Eye above the unfinished pyramid is the representation of the eye of Sirius, of its omniscient surveillance."

An investigation of the beliefs of Freemasonry (and, incidentally, of the other major religions both exo- and esoteric on this planet) shows that this "charitable fraternity" is merely an updated version of ages-old and archetypal Osiris/Isis Sun God/ Mother Goddess programming. This form of worship can be traced back to the literal beginning of recorded history, its mythology

anciently crystallizing into the Isis/Osiris Sun/Moon cultus of the Egyptian priesthood.

Osiris, it so happens, was one more divine visitor who is claimed to have civilized the backward and mud-rutting people of Earth with his teachings. From Egypt the deities of the Sun pantheon may have taken on different names (including Ra, Odin, Jehovah, and Jesus, with feminine counterparts including Diana, Mary, Ishtar, Rhea, Astarte, Cybele, and Ma), but the mode of worship and populace control was essentially the same.

The adepts of the Sun/Moon programming (of which Freemasonry is a major surviving branch) have always called themselves variations on the term "the Illuminati," the origin of the phrase betraying its source. Illuminati--Illumination--the adepts of the Sungod and his consort. When I state this derivation of the term there are no doubt many who will think I am distorting and oversimplifying this religio-occult progression--but I am not.

A quick and cursory sketch of the main branches of the Illuminati might go something like this, although I admit that others might offer a family tree somewhat different in its branchings. This is a secret society, remember, and what we know of the Illuminati has been obtained by accident (as when lightning struck down a member of the Bavarian Illuminati in the late 1700s, providing us with a cache of inner circle documents), or has been eked out through conjecture, inference, and interpretation of their double-talk code language.

In Isis/Osiris veneration, we can see the beginnings of the ritual trappings of the Mystery Religions that were to follow. One reason that the Greek and Roman Mystery Religions are mysterious is that little is known of what actually took place in their rites, celebrated primarily at night and in caves. We do know that Mystery Religions were the source of many of the practices that were taken up by later secret societies including the Freemasons, and that they

partook--practices varying somewhat from one Mystery group to the next--of secret ritual initiation involving dramatizations of the lives of the gods, the imbibing of psychedelic drugs such as magic mushrooms, sex orgies (with an emphasis on homosexuality), and at least in some instances, human sacrifice. The symbology of "light" pervades the Mystery Religions, adepts having been said to "have seen the light," "had their eyes opened," and so forth, all very appropriate to celebrants who enacted their rites in the dead of night in caves. Light = Illumination = Illuminati.

From the Mystery Religions, which were extremely influential upon the tenets of Christianity, came the philosophies of the Gnostics, composed of a number of secretive European sects, the most prominent perhaps being the highly secretive, perhaps even fictional, Priory of Sion.

Again, we know very little of what the actual practices of the early Gnostics were, but we do know that the Sun God/Mother Goddess orientation had in certain cases taken on a more philosophical bent, dealing with the eternal cosmic war between darkness and light. Again, the motif of "illumination" is represented. A recent translation of a document of the Cathars, perhaps the most prominent of the Gnostic groups, suggests that one of their secrets was that they were a straightforward Isis cult.

The Jewish/Gnostic mystical practice of the Qabalah, whose origin may have been about the time of Jesus or shortly after, was a primary influence on a number of secret society tributaries, including the Rosicrucians and the Knights Templar. Qabalism was also the singular greatest philosophical influence on the Freemasons, which in the mid-1700s evolved a return to an overt Sun God/ Mother Goddess mythology, along with an emphasis in their practices on the importance of the star Sirius. Freemasonry, aside from being an essentially Gnostic religion, has comprised since its inception a vastly important influence in world politics and in world

intelligence agencies, and may be the most active and far-reaching of the Illuminati fronts at the present time.

Freemasonry and the Rothschilds international banking group (the Rothschilds being from the beginning of their dynasty Freemasons) were the main influence on diamond magnate and Freemason Cecil Rhodes' Round Table secret society, formed around the turn of this century. Rhodes was the single most important Freemasonic spearhead into world political control. Currently we may note the Trilateral Commission (with their symbolic "666" triangular emblem and orientation), the Council on Foreign Relations, and the Bilderberger Society as being among the most influential organization on this planet; these sprung from the Round Table group.

While I am limited in space in this thumbnail sketch, it is very possible to trace the twistings and turnings of the Illuminist philosophy until we encounter the secret Freemasonic rituals of the elitist leaders of today, men like George Bush of the Skull and Bones German Illuminati offshoot, Henry Kissinger and Alexander Haig, alleged to be members of the Freemasonic P-2 group, and in all probability the (Cecil) Rhodes scholar, Trilateralist, and saxophone player from Little Rock, Arkansas, the highly symbolic Masonic location where the arch-Mason Albert Pike formulated his schemes.

Why were the Sun and Moon chosen by the Illuminati of ancient history as deities for the worship of their slaves and underlings? My guess is that it is a relatively arbitrary choice that reflects solar-lunar influence in a simple, understandable fashion, particularly as it might be understood in an agrarian society where these astral bodies are the obvious and all important influences in a people's day-to-day life. If the sun doesn't shed its beneficent rays on the Earth, then the crops don't grow.

There is an additional associative quality of the Sun God/ Mother Goddess programming that pertains to the human mother and father and accesses our unexamined and authoritarian-inlaid childhood programming, digging into deeply ingrained programming much in the same way that beer commercials on television access a different level of instinctuality, by being larded with sexual imagery.

As the cult of the Sun God and his consort first evolved, the Illuminati made it well known that they were the chosen representatives of these immortal deities--and did the people REALLY want to take a chance on not believing what they told them? The masses had better treat the Illuminati real nice, or they might have a word with the Sun God and his consort and have them bring a punishing plague of frogs.

"In the beginning," the Sun God and Moon Goddess were in absolute control, working in mysterious and usually sadistic ways that were only fully decipherable to their Illuminated envoys. A lot of people fell for this stuff, and they were probably given little tin badges that clearly identified them to the hold-out heretics whom they in turn tortured and murdered in order to assist them to "see the light."

In time (say about the time of the Chaldeans) the Illuminati started to believe some of their own programming and began to study the movement of the Sun and moon and their brother and sister stars and planets. This gave the Illuminati another leg up, via astronomy, in being able to predict coming occurrences like eclipses and comets. By the time astrology was formulated, the Illuminati had it all pretty well sewn up, with franchises in operation all over the planet.

Science began in a similar fashion as astrology--gasp! But the dominant belief modes of humanity have always been given names like "Science," which simply means "knowing." During the

sixteenth century when the noble Illuminati popularized this latest version of "knowing," they had lots of free time to dabble in astrology and alchemy (the forerunner of modern chemistry) and, for a change of pace, to participate in sex orgies in groups with names like the Hell Fire Club.

Since the Sun God (and his various relations, including sons and wives) were, after several thousands years of worship, beginning to fray around the edges in terms of believability, and a lot of commoners were beginning to grumble that this stuff was all made up, the Illuminati came up with a new and improved version of their mind control software that didn't depend upon the Sun God or Moon Goddess for ultimate authority. As the Sun/Moon cult lost some of its popularity, "Scientists" were quick to take up the slack. According to their propaganda, the physical laws of the universe were the ultimate causative factors, and naturally, those physical laws were only fathomable by the scientific (i.e. Illuminati) elite.

Now the Illuminati restored their waning dominance with their promotion of the arcane wisdom of bunsen burners, stupefying Mesmerism and electricity, and they no longer--at least at the present time--needed to draw their powers from mystical associations of the stars and planets. Their vision of the universe and society, as fostered by members of the British Royal Society and other Illuminati-conceived groupings, became the predominant worldview. The main tenet of their new religion, Science, was that whether you understood it or not, it was always Right. Not so different a creed than the programs that preceded it.

The British Royal Society of the late seventeenth century was the forerunner of much of the media manipulation that was to follow. After the re-tooling into "scientific" values was accomplished by the Illuminist masters, society (in the view of the Illuminati) needed to be conditioned for stability in a capitalist and non-religious format. The cogwheels had to be greased. This was

accomplished by the launching of non-religious, pro-scientific attitudes through the same media vehicles that influence us today: newspapers and books, with radio, motion pictures and television soon to follow.

And heretics against either Science or Religion have always been dealt with in summary fashion--sometimes possibly in dark blue vans by CIA technicians dressed to look like space aliens.

Now we are in an era--which we arbitrarily term "modern," but which seems to have no claim to that appellation--whose religion is a hybrid of both science and mysticism: this is the religion of the UFO and the New Age. It is a religion that performs the functions of all religion: it induces awe and susceptibility and confusion and guilt and restimulation of infantilism, and opens up the believer to intervention by the priesthood.

Attempting to crack the secret of the nature of this elusive beast, the UFO:

-- Isn't it odd that the U.S. military just happened to be working on disk craft back in the 1950s when the whole UFO flap started?

-- Isn't it odd that the mind control implants that are supposed to be inserted through the nostrils of UFO abductees just happen to conform exactly to the implants designed by Dr. Jose Delgado, the CIA mind control researcher?

-- Isn't it odd that several of the most prominent among "UFO researchers" have been members of military intelligence, men such as John Lear, "formerly" of the CIA?

-- And isn't it the oddest thing of all that the intelligence agencies of all countries crawl with Freemasons, and that the CIA just happens to have a reported faction of Mother Goddess cultism within its ranks?

Attempting to get a grip on this topic, why would "UFO" testing be done relatively "out in the open," on military reservations that can be fairly easily observed by a public notified of UFO flights

by "former" CIA men eager to spread the truth about the little grey men? Are the military authorities teasing us, as it were, with this open testing, along with all the other revelations of the secret order that underlies the normalized facade of our society and media?

When George Bush spoke repeatedly of the New World Order, is it likely that he would have simply forgotten the thousands of right wingers and conspiracy buffs who for years have used that phrase as the personification of world fascism, evil, and mind control? Or was something else going on, some other process or directed transformation?

When CBS broadcast an Eye in a Triangle in their station identification, could it possibly have been done by accident? Does this not hearken to the "cant" language, the mystical double-talk employed by Freemasons and other secret societies?

Michael Hoffman II has spoken about similar processes involving "revelation of method" or the purposeful giving away of arcane secrets of Freemasonry, which he dubs "the cryptocracy." He likens this to the activities of the alchemists:

> This is what simplistic researchers miss: the function of macabre arrogance thumbing its nose at us while we do nothing except spread the tale of their immunity and invincibility further. That is the game plan operant here.
>
> To the belief system of the modern man it sounds too crazy. Why would the perpetrators want their secrets revealed after the fact?... This question can only be definitively answered if one has an understanding of the zeitgeist which overseers in the cryptocracy have partly manufactured and partly tailored their own operations to coincide with. As I've pointed out, secrets like this were rarely revealed in the past because traditional people had not yet completed the alchemical processing (of mind control). To make such perverse, modern revelations to an unprocessed, healthy and vigorous population possessed of will, memory, adherence to their deepest inner intuition

> and intense interest in their own salvation, would not have been a good thing for the cryptocracy. It would have proven fatal to them.
>
> But to reveal these after-the-act secrets in our modern time, to a people who have no memory, no willpower and no interest in their own fate except in so far as it may serve as momentary titillation and entertainment actually strengthens the enslavement of such a people.

There is an occult/Freemasonic stratum in the command structure of media and world control. There is a long-term occult agenda in geopolitics that is just now coming to poisonous fruition.

10

Demons and Adepts

Secret societies such as the Freemasons have been linked throughout their history with the kind of otherworldly visitations that we associate with UFOs, having now conveniently pigeonholed the phenomenon into a "scientific" categorization that removes them from the relatively discredited earlier pigeonhole of being demonic. "These are highly evolved beings from the planet Xenon," we might be saying, "flying in craft that are thousands of years in advance of our own. You can't use a crucifix to scare these babies off."

Historically many occultists have claimed to channel alien beings that conform exactly to allegedly extraterrestrial visitors that are described today, although in the past this phenomenon was considered to be related to religion. Jacques Bergier, in *Extraterrestrial Visitations from Prehistoric Times to the Present* even credits the possibility that these entities actually exist, suggesting that the proliferation of alchemical, occult, and scientific knowledge that took place in the fifteenth and sixteenth century may have been due to contact with otherworldly beings by Illuminati such as Roger Bacon, Jerome Cardan, and Leonardo da Vinci. Is it possible that during the Middle Ages the Nommos made a return visit?

Bergier attributes the alien influx of knowledge to "Information Source X" and believes that:

> This knowledge was connected with alchemy but went beyond it... A knowledge that came from where? More or less directly from

> those Intelligences who are able to light and extinguish stars at will--an essentially rational knowledge, offered without request for payment and not requiring adherence to any religion--a knowledge that must have filtered over to [Jonathan] Swift, enabling him to predict the Martian moons.

Certainly, during the Middle Ages contact with angels and Men in Black and sundry demons (often dressed in "shining armor") was almost taken for granted by the populace, although I have the suspicion that it was probably in the interests of the clergy and secret mystical societies to play this material up and to weave legends around it. At that time the term "demon" did not always carry the satanic overtones that it does in this era, and the descriptions we have of the otherworldly beings from that time suggest that they were of two general descriptions.

There were the monstrous succubi and tormentors of humans that the clergy--including Catholic, Protestant, and Jewish--got a kick out of spooking their aptly-termed flocks with. There was also the category of entity said to have been in contact with the Illuminati of the day, and that group seems to have been more interested in imparting the advanced and arcane knowledge of alchemy and astrology and science than in forging diabolic pacts and wagering souls.

Note the difference: the clergy would be well-served by the imps of hellfire, while the Illuminati, affirming their possession of transcendent knowledge, would be served by contact with wise, unearthly spirits who didn't have anything to do with the bugaboos of mainstream religion. Not that I am absolutely positive that some of these "demons" may not have been real, but this dual orientation suggests that at least some of them were invented, just as some UFOs are invented.

Bergier quotes Jerome Cardan, who claimed to be in contact with demons: "Just as the intelligence of a man is greater than a dog's, in the same way that of a demon is greater than a man's."

Bergier also reports:

> During the Middle Ages, appearances of creatures with garments of light were most common. These messengers went to meet rabbis, with whom they held lengthy discussions on the cabala, the powers of gold, the knowledge and exploration of time, etc. They stated that they knew the guardians of the sky, but were not guardians themselves...
>
> There is no law against interpreting this radiance and the demons' shining garments in terms of our twentieth-century mythology, against imagining that the "double face" [displayed by many of the demons] is a space helmet, that the "luminous garment" is a force barrier producing luminous radiation through fluorescence or excitation...

While I don't know whether the Freemasons and their cohorts ever really contacted the sort of beings who we would now term "extraterrestrials," it may be that they did. Or it may only be that they only thought they did. Certain areas of human history--and the history of disinformation--elude easy answers. Yet I can't help reflecting on the fact that contact with extraterrestrial aliens might have been just as profitable a pursuit then for the occult adept--and the rank charlatan--as it is today.

11

Occult Espionage

Elizabethan scholar Francis Yates places John Dee, Illuminatus Extraordinaire, at the center of the formation of the Rosicrucian secret fraternity, this because of the references to *Ros Crus*, or the "Dew of Light" in his work. The Dew of Light is also a cabalistic image. Today we primarily know Dee as cabalist, alchemist, court astrologer to Queen Elizabeth, and ET channeler--at least one of whom who bore a close resemblance to a grey alien.

But Dee had another interesting side to his character that falls into the grey area between scholarly disciplines that few are willing to talk about. John Dee was one of the founders of what has come to be known as British Intelligence, which in its early days used alchemical ciphers of Dee's invention for passing secret messages. For what it is worth, Dee's code name was 007. As late as World War II, Himmler claimed that the Rosicrucians were a branch of British Intelligence, although my sense is that he may have gotten it backwards.

To this day, British Intelligence remains heavily Freemasonic in its membership. Peter Wright, the former assistant director of British M15, describes in his book *Spy Catcher* his initial vetting for a high-level position in the organization:

> "Just wanted to have a chat--a few personal details, that sort of thing," he [John Marriott, M15's personnel director at the time] said, giving me a distinctive Masonic handshake. I realized then why my father, who was also a Mason, had obliquely raised joining the brotherhood when I first discussed with him working for M15 fulltime.

I'm reminded of an odd instance when a journalist friend of mine was covering a survivalist/patriot convention for an American magazine. During the course of the convention, he met Bo Gritz, the right wing Liberty Lobby's Populist Party candidate for president of the U.S. in 1992, Vietnam war hero, and a prominent personality in the patriot movement. Shaking Gritz's hand, he says that he was rather surprised that he was given what he took to be a secret Masonic grip, and that Gritz looked at him in a somewhat sheepish fashion when he didn't return the grip. An interesting confluence of forces in play in the world these days...

Linking the Mother Goddess cult (of which Freemasonry is the most prevalent example that we know of) to intelligence agencies, the authors of *Dope, Inc.* give a highly interesting interpretation:

> The Cult of Isis was developed in ancient Egypt no later than the Third Dynasty of the Old Kingdom, approximately 2780 B.C. and represents one of the earliest formal articulations of the entropic and backward ideology of mother-worship. As known to the priesthood of the Temple of Isis--true believers themselves--the Isis cult formalizes the elements of a capability for social control, exploitation, and destruction of creative free will in subject populations. The elements include:
>
> Use of various schizophrenia-inducing drugs;
>
> Use of repetitive, heteronomic sounds in "music" to supplement the effect of psychotropic drugs, and to create a societal aesthetic that endorses and encourages the use of the drugs;
>
> Creation of synthetic cults based on the original reactionary Isis myth but specific to the psychological profile of the population which the priesthood has targeted for subversion;
>
> Enforcement of a political-economic model antagonistic to general human progress, and containing targeted populations within noncreative, manual slave-labor projects such as pyramid building.
>
> This combination of Pharaonic cult capabilities was taken as a model for further refinement in this century by the British Secret Intelligence Service's Tavistock Institute in London--an institution which launched

the "counterculture" in the United States and Europe, based on the very drugs, mescaline and hashish, the ancient priesthood had employed.

The occult underpinnings of the spy business should not be glossed over if we are attempting to understand historical world manipulation by secret societies, much less the real nature of UFO abductions. It may be interesting to note that many occultists channeling "alien" entities have had one foot in the occult camp, the other foot among spy agency contacts.

Aleister Crowley was a "magickal" adept who functioned as a spy for the British, and--opinions differ--perhaps simultaneously for the Germans. During his career as the world's foremost occultist of the time, Crowley claimed to be in contact with any number of alien beings, including gods of ancient Egypt, and to channel written material such as *The Book of the Law*, which he attributed to an extraterrestrial entity named Aiwass. As noted earlier in this text, he also claimed he had contacted an alien named Lam, which, from the drawing that Crowley made of the entity, looks almost exactly like the big-headed aliens so often involved in UFO abductions.

A 1923 U.S. military intelligence report reveals that Aleister Crowley, as well as another famous occultist, Rudolph Steiner, the founder of the Blavatsky-esque Anthroposophy, were being investigated as the leaders of a New York occult group allegedly involved in "subversive Bolshevik activities." The report, written by a Norman Armond, goes so far as to suggest that the Russian Revolution may have been controlled by occult networks. Armond states that Steiner and Crowley, through a holding company Steiner controlled, had been involved in an alliance with Lenin that had begun in 1909.

Aleister Crowley is reported--whether reliably or not, I do not know--to have initiated "psychedelic guru" Aldous Huxley into drugs. While this connection may lie somewhat afield of what we

are discussing, Huxley was the grandson of Thomas Huxley, a founder of the Rhodes Round Table, which was the base from which later well-known elitist control mechanisms such as the Trilateral Commission, the Council on Foreign Relations, and the Bilderbergers were launched.

Aldous Huxley was raised in the "Children of the Sun" (note the Sun orientation), a school for children of Round Tablers, and was tutored at Oxford by H.G. Wells who, during World War I, was the director of British foreign intelligence, and as the author of books like *The Open Conspiracy: Blue Prints for a World Revolution*, the most influential mouthpiece of the Rhodes/Illuminist New World Order.

During 1952 and 1953 secret meetings are reported to have taken place between CIA Director Allen Dulles, Ford Foundation Director Robert Hutchins, and Dr. Humphrey Osmond, Huxley's friend and personal physician. These meetings involved the funding by the Ford Foundation for a number of experimental research projects using LSD and mescaline. Also of interest is the statement of Captain Al Hubbard that LSD had been discovered, years prior to the date of its reported discovery, by a group led by the aforementioned Rudolph Steiner, seeking to discover a metaphysical "Peace Pill."

Huxley started a number of groups that, by furnishing LSD, mescaline, and settings for controlled trips, launched virtually all of the acid-occult missionaries of the 1960s, including Tim Leary, Ken Kesey, Richard Alpert (Baba Ram Dass), Gregory Bateson, and Alan Watts.

As poisonous as it may seem to a mostly-liberal audience, the LSD invasion of the world may have been a form of chemical warfare launched by British Intelligence (and their apparent masters), much in reflection of the kind of drug warfare that England had waged in the previous century during the Chinese

Opium War. Certainly LSD and a connected doctrine of occultism as furnished by men like Crowley and Huxley has paved the way for future interventions of the occult (and possibly ufological) kind, and for a possible alchemical transformation of which we are only beginning to be aware.

The espionage strategy of drug and occult philosophy-induced destruction of a culture is reminiscent of the process that Carl Raschke attributes to UFOs in "Ultraterrestrial Agents of Cultural Deconstruction" in *Cyber-biological Studies of the Imaginal Component in the UFO Contact Experience*. Raschke believes:

> UFOs serve as facilitators of what I label "cultural deconstruction,"... "Deconstruction" is contrasted with "destruction" inasmuch as the latter connotes a random and unconstrained act of demolition, whereas the former suggests an aim-governed and formative sequence of changes... The work of deconstruction is not sudden, but slow and inexorable. It is more akin to a sculptor chipping away at stone so that he can craft a figure than to an iconoclast who seeks by some *coup de main* to obliterate outworn impressions. So far as UFOs are concerned, the deconstructive movement works upon human culture as a whole, although it may also have devastating effects at times on individual lives.

Another "child of Crowley" was rocket scientist, Caltech founder, and California OTO head Jack Parsons. In Pasadena, California in January of 1946, Parsons, assisted by Church of Scientology founder L. Ron Hubbard (who later claimed he was working in Naval Intelligence at the time) participated in a "magickal" working intended to incarnate the demonic Whore of Babylon via Crowleyan sex rites. At about the same time that Parsons was trying to incarnate an extraterrestrial entity, he also claimed that he had met a Venusian in the desert of New Mexico--an interesting foreshadowing of the claims of later "contactees" such as George Adamski in the early 1950s.

Hubbard was later to abscond with Parson's girlfriend and his money, going on to form the Church of Scientology with its Freemasonry-like "grade chart" of spiritual processing and its cross emblem that is almost a duplicate of Crowley's *Book of Thoth* cross. Hubbard's son, Ron DeWolfe, says that Hubbard was something of an acolyte of Crowley, and after the death of the Beast 666, determined to take on his mantle.

Parsons was to die in June, 1952, in a chemical explosion that has often been suggested to have been a by-product of his cosmic tampering. That may or may not have been so. Before his death Parsons was interviewed by FBI agents and admitted that he had been illegally in possession of a number of classified documents relating to explosives taken from Hughes Aircraft Corporation, and that he had furnished them to the Israeli government. The question remains open as to who was responsible for Parson's death - infernal forces or Howard Hughes playing turnabout?

James Shelby Downard, in "The Call to Chaos" in *Apocalypse Culture* provides additional deep background on the intelligence agency-occult connection:

> Consider that the secret society which became the nucleus of the Office of Strategic Services - Central Intelligence Agency octopus was making biotelemetry implants in unsuspecting people as early as 1933. After the operations, the victims were kept drugged for a time and then were brainwashed (OSS-CIA is written that way because when the former became the latter, they changed the name but not the facts). I believe the implants were at first activated by touching the skin with a device similar to an electronic prod, but which actually was a symbolical phallus.
>
> The early implants were made to stimulate the pudenda nerve, when triggered, so that the sexually excited and amnesiac-drugged victims could be used in the sex circuses of the OSS-CIA secret order. Those victims were not infrequently operated on while anesthetized by morphine and scopolomine, which produce analgesia and amnesia

> (twilight sleep, to esotericists). They too were brainwashed after healing. This evil program, supposedly for the sake of national security, was oriented to the Cult of GAOTU [The Freemasonic god, the Great Architect of the Universe].

Downard also reports:

> Saturnalian orgies were and are performed with some representation of a deity... A woman I call the Great Whore performed in those rites some years ago, representing such deities as Artemis (Diana or Hecate), Aphrodite Porne (Dirty Venus), Bastet, Selket and the White Goddess described by Robert Graves in his famous book. I do believe that these sex circuses were part of a greater Call to Chaos working...

Is Mr. Downard projecting all of this? I am not entirely certain, but I do know that there are strong verifiable linkages between occultism, politics, and spycraft. One of the less-spoken-of aspects is their connection to homosexual and bisexual practices, long a mainstay of certain forms of ritual magick. With the risk of straying into Political Incorrectness (truth, as always, being a secondary concern of the arbiters of our national mindset), I will speak of such matters.

Jim Brandon in his excellent *The Rebirth of Pan* has commented on the attraction of UFOs, inexplicable Fortean events, and alien entities to sex activities of various sorts. It should be noted that homosexual orgies seem to have been an integral part of many Mystery Religion rituals, the precursor of many current secret societal practices, and that in primitive tribes homosexuals were often looked upon as partaking of divinity, and took on the role of shamans (read "channelers" in latter-day parlance). The Mystery Religions in addition utilized hallucinogenic drugs, Sun and Mother Goddess worship and human sacrifice--at least on occasion.

Aleister Crowley engaged in bisexual practices for some of his magickal workings, as did the cabal of "Apostles," a Cambridge University student group that was thoroughly infiltrated by the KGB and took over British intelligence in the 1930s, their influence said to have continued until the present day. One of the founders of the Apostles, which was termed by members as "the Higher Sodomy" and "a sort of gay Freemasonry," was Sidney Reilly, "Ace of Spies" as the media has it. Reilly was also part of the Rhodes Round Table group at 120 Broadway in New York that provided funding for the Bolshevik revolution. An index to Reilly's viewpoint is provided in a letter on bolshevism that he penned in 1925:

> I believe that... it [bolshevism] is bound by a process of evolution to conquer the world, as Christianity and the ideas of the French Revolution have done before it... and that nothing--least of all violent reactionary forces--can stem its ever-rising tide... the much decried and so little understood "Soviets" which are the outward expression of bolshevism as applied to practical government, are the nearest approach I know of, to a real democracy based upon true social justice and that they may be destined to lead the world to the highest ideal of statesmanship--Internationalism.

Pretty straight Round Table-One Worldism in Bolshevik guise.

From the ranks of the Apostles came such highly-placed British intelligence turncoats as Anthony Blunt, Donald Maclean, Kim Philby, and Guy Burgess. These men were KGB agents who infiltrated and controlled the highest levels of British--and in certain instances--American spycraft. In recent years Victor (Lord) Rothschild of the Rothschild banking family (which bankrolled Cecil Rhodes), a member of British intelligence during World War II, was fingered in the British Parliament as the most likely candidate for the highly-placed "Fifth Man" Soviet spy among his Apostle friends Blunt, Burgess, Philby, and Maclean. Although there

were calls for prosecution, Margaret Thatcher defended Rothschild and within months the case was closed.

The behind-the-scenes manipulation continues. Another homosexual cabal that allegedly included Knight of Malta, British intelligence agent, and Rhodes Round Table lawyer Louis Bloomfield, along with homosexuals Clay Shaw and David Ferrie, as described by "Torbitt" in his pivotal investigative document *Nomenclature of an Assassination Cabal*, is said to have been responsible--in an organizational sense--for the John F. Kennedy assassination.

There is a tangled web of Masonic symbolism that can be discerned in the events of the JFK assassination, beginning with the fact that the killing took place in the "Lone Star" (i.e. pentagram, Sirius) state. Remarkable research in this regard has been done by James Shelby Downard, demonstrating that the Kennedy assassination was manipulated for ritual purposes in an enactment of the ages-old "Killing of the King" fertility ritual, admittedly a radical theory but one backed up by a good deal of evidence.

As John Michell has said in *The Flying Saucer Vision*, "what we now suspect was in the past openly known. The 'gods' demand sacrifices, perfect specimens for their own scientific purposes. In the days when the nature of the gods was known, their desires studied, and the benefits they could bring enjoyed, sacrifices were left for them on the high places which they frequented. The relationship between the gods of mythology and the superior race from the sky, to whom the first sacrifices were made is a large subject which must soon be studied in detail."

In "The Call to Chaos" in *Apocalypse Culture*, Downard explains, "The third degree of 'Blue' (basic) Freemasonry, and more particularly the ninth degree of Scottish Rite work, embody symbolical assassination and death ritual; but in GAOTU [the Great

Architect of the Universe] operations they go in for the real McCoy: heavy snuff stuff."

The Kennedy assassination was performed at Dealey Plaza, the location of the first Masonic temple in Dallas. "Security" for the Kennedy motorcade was supplied by the New Orleans CIA office, with headquarters in a Masonic temple building. Dealey Plaza is located near the Trinity River, and Kennedy's motorcade headed for the Triple Underpass, both references symbolic of the Masonic triangle and number three fixation. In what may have been a symbolic dramatization of the Masonic Hiram Abif legend of assassination by three "unworthy craftsmen," after the Kennedy murder three "hoboes" were paraded in front of cameras by the Dallas police (one of the "hoboes" alleged to be E. Howard Hunt of the CIA), then the three were quickly released without record of their identity. In Masonic lore assassins travel in threes.

"Torbitt's" investigations persuasively show that the conspiracy to murder JFK was run from the top by Masonic Vice President Lyndon Johnson and 33rd degree Mason and homosexual J. Edgar Hoover, at the time playing dual roles in Washington as Director of the FBI and epically repulsive party girl, with Bloomfield (also very likely a Mason because of his affiliation with British intelligence) running a large network of conspirators and underlings in the killing of Kennedy. Mason Lyndon B. Johnson appointed Mason Earl Warren to head the Warren Commission for investigation of the assassination. Information was doled out to the commission by Mason Hoover and Mason and ex-CIA director Allen Dulles, while 33rd degree Mason Gerald Ford seems to have done everything he could to discount the possibility that the murder had been perpetrated by anyone but a "lone nut assassin."

One macabre possibility is that Lee Harvey Oswald may have received the same sort of brain implant as the alleged saucer abductees mentioned earlier. As detailed in *The Man Who Knew Too*

Much by Dick Russell, the Mexico City CIA station was, immediately prior to the Kennedy assassination, the location of certain mind control experiments intended to create a "sleeper killer," that is, an hypnotically-controlled assassin. Russell also repeats a "deadly rumor" that was published in the little-known *Were We Controlled?* by the pseudonymous "Lincoln Lawrence." Russell reports:

> Lawrence began his chronicle on March 30, 1961, when Oswald was admitted to the Third Clinical Hospital's Ear, Nose, and Throat division in Minsk [Russia]. He had been suffering "complaints about suppuration from the right ear and weakened in hearing," and the diagnosis called for an adenoid operation. Marina, whom he had recently met, came regularly to his bedside during his eleven-day stay in the hospital.
>
> "After he was placed under anesthesia," Lawrence wrote, "advanced technique was employed to implant a miniaturized radio receiver which would produce muscular reaction in his cerebral region." Thus, upon leaving the hospital, Oswald would "remain for the rest of his life--without his knowledge--a completely efficient human tool... subject to control!"
>
> The author went on to describe two devices implanted in Oswald's brain. One was R.H.I.C. (Radio-Hypnotic Intracerebral Control), "the ultra-sophisticated application of post-hypnotic suggestion triggered at will by radio transmission. It is a recurring hypnotic state, re-induced automatically at intervals by the same radio control"... On record in the National Archives is a government memo dated March 3, 1964, from CIA director McCone to Secret Service chief James Rowley, which makes a remarkably similar speculation. Following his surgery at the Minsk hospital, McCone wrote, Oswald might have been "chemically or electronically 'controlled'... a sleeper agent. Subject spent 11 days hospitalized for a 'minor ailment' which should have required no more than three days hospitalization at best"... But "Lincoln Lawrence" did not see Oswald ultimately as a pawn of the Soviets. Rather, he wrote that Oswald was later "high-jacked," or "maneuvered into the orbit of another group which trained and prepared

> him for work in the future when they (the second group) might have need for his 'special qualifications.' The second group then asserted control of Oswald upon his return to the United States in the summer of 1962..."

According to Lincoln Lawrence, Oswald was not the only manipulated cog in the wheel. Another was Jack Ruby, "placed under hypnosis... perhaps at a party or perhaps by some 'performer' who was pretending to offer a casual audition for the Carousel Club." The entertainer at Ruby's club the week of the assassination was, in fact, a hypnotist, William Crowe, whose stage name was Bill DeMar.

It is verifiable that Masons and their allied secret societies are hardwired into the control systems of government and intelligence agencies, comprising a level of unseen motive and hidden intention in agencies that have the power of life and death over the citizens of the United States and the world. They control the controllers, so to speak, and if there was a conspiracy and a cover-up in the John F. Kennedy assassination, then they were certainly in a position to accomplish them.

James Shelby Downard, again, has stated:

> But the ultimate purpose of that assassination was not political or economic but sorcerous; for the control of the dreaming mind and the marshaling of its forces is the omnipotent force in this entire scenario of lies, cruelty and degradation. Something died in the American people on November 22, 1963--call it idealism, innocence or the quest for moral excellence--it is this transformation of human beings which is the authentic reason and motive for the Kennedy murder.

And the transformation continues...

12

The Year of Light

The calendar of the Freemasons begins four thousand years prior to the Gregorian, at the time of a reported supernova that they commemorate as *Anno Lucis,* the Year of Light, and about the same time that a fantastic leap in civilization was accomplished in Sumeria and Egypt. Look at the cornerstone of any government building in your town and you will see that the Masonic date is included in the inscription, obvious proof that this dating is highly important to the Masons. But there were other, earlier commemorations to the supernova. Richard W. Noone, the author of a book titled *5/5/2000*, believes that the Great Pyramid at Giza was probably built as a monument to this striking astronomical event. He states:

> The Grand Gallery [of the pyramid], aimed like a giant telescope at a particular celestial body in the earth's southern sky--before its view of the heavens was blocked by the completion of the building--points to where radio astronomy bas just pinpointed the supernova (or giant stellar explosion) nearest to our solar system... The Great Pyramid's Grand Gallery is focused at this particular spot in the earth's southern sky.

Noone recalls that Dr. Anthony Hewish, 1974 Nobel Prize winner, while tracking astronomical anomalies in the heavens, "demonstrated that... strange rhythmic pulses were radio emissions from a star that had collapsed or blown itself up in the earth's southern sky some time around 4000 B.C."

At about the same time that Hewish's research was taking place, George Michanowsky, author of *The Once and Future Star*, was deciphering Sumerian tablets that caused him to come to the same conclusion. According to Noone's review of the events:

> The ancient Sumerian cuneiform table Michanowsky was deciphering described a giant star exploding within a triangle formed by the three stars Zeta Puppis, Gamma Velorum, and Lambda Velorum...
>
> Michanowsky continued deciphering the Sumerian star catalogue, containing observations going back for thousands of years. The remarkably accurate star catalogue now stated that the blazing star that had exploded within the triangle would again be seen by man in 6,000 years.

This means, interestingly enough, that the Sumerians set the date for the reappearance of the supernova in about the year 2000 A.D. Strong evidence, it seems to me, that the Freemasons probably see the turn of the next century as having a pivotal significance in their mythic history of the world. Taking into account what seem to be the secret purposes of the Freemasons and other allied secret societies, there are certainly many speculations that could be made about what the nature of that significance might entail.

If you are still in doubt that behind the whitebread facade of world politics there is an occult agenda, read the following quotes published in the *Rosicrucian Digest* in 1948, and drawn my attention in *The Patriot Report* of February 1998. According to an article titled "Requisites of Peace":

> --Nationalism is destined to become extinct.
> --The dissolution of nationalism does not mean advocating an equal distribution of the world's goods among all peoples. It does mean a pooling of resources and their common control by all the peoples for the whole of humanity.

--A one world is inevitable.
--If it does not come through an intelligent admission of the obsolescence of nationalism, then it will come through the most terrible war conceivable.
--Does all this seem to strike at the love of country? It will mean only the replacement of a limited love for a more expansive and expedient one - the love of the world.
--A unity of people, not of states, is required; if there is a merging of interests then there also must be a merging of political control - a central government.

The following quotes are from another article from the *Rosicrucian Digest* published in 1948, "War or Peace," penned by Gisbert Bossard:

--The eventual solution lies in a world federation... the world has progressed to the point of a United Nations.
--Unless certain deficiencies in the U.N. charter are eliminated, the United Nations organization cannot exercise effective world authority.
--Your help is needed in the final push for victory.
--The first Reform: Abolish the veto in matters of aggression.
--The second Reform: Control atomic energy and limit all other important weapons.
--The third Reform: Establish an effective but tyranny-proof world police force.
--Russia will achieve military equality with the U.S. through quota disarmament.
--The cooperation of Russia for the "One World" and a new and wonderful era for mankind is essential.

Aside from the dark catalog of covert manipulation that I have compiled in these pages, I will not delude you into thinking that I am certain that the Freemasons are planning on overthrowing the world system on or about the year 2000 A.D. I do not even know for certain whether this is the date planned for the final consolidation of governmental systems into the New World Order. All I know is that

the twists and turns of history are covered with the bloody fingerprints of Freemasons and members of allied secret societies who have intervened at key moments to turn the flow of history in hitherto unanticipated directions, and that everything points to the year 2000 as being an epic culmination in the mythology of these secret groups.

The Masonic architects of the French and Russian revolutions; the Masonic assassins of Archduke Ferdinand who touched off the bloody conflagration of World War I; the Masons who seem to have been responsible for the Jack the Ripper murders performed to stave off a deadly crisis in the Masonically-controlled British government; the Masons who controlled the investigation of and may have been responsible for the murder of John F. Kennedy; the host of Masonic controllers who lurked behind the gothic machinations of the CIA MKULTRA mind control programs; and the continued direction of international politics by Masons and their occultist brethren like P-2--all this makes it seem that the occult portents can now be seen as forecasting another intervention by the cabal.

Key to the creation of the New World Order is the economic and political unification of Europe. According to Cornelia R. Ferreira, writing in a monograph titled "The New Age Movement":

> The formula of the "United States of Europe" and of the "Universal Republic" (to be formed by Europe's merger with other world blocs) was first proclaimed by the Illuminati in 1793; has long been the slogan of the French lodges; was adopted in the 1920s by the Theosophists; and was discussed in American-German Masonic circles after World War II. Unelected European Commission president Jacques Delors, demonsrating the importance of European unity (and the totalitarian nature of the future world government), has threatened national leaders who do not unequivocally endorse it, hinting that Margaret Thatcher's opposition caused her downfall.

The attempted unification of Europe, directed (as revealed in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail*, by Baigent, Leigh, and Lincoln) by the Priory of Sion, a secret order that may in fact underpin, be connected to, or even be the Masonic order under a different name, may be a stage setting for something even more earthshaking than a united European state. At the same time that the European Commonwealth is being put in place piece by puzzle piece, there are additional and highly strange prefigurements coming into view, one of the most odd being the multiple-thousand sightings of Eye in the Triangle-configured UFOs seen in Belgium, the headquarters of the European Commonwealth, and, more recently, in Arizona, USA.

If one understands the claims made in *Holy Blood, Holy Grail* (and a study of Masonic texts such as Pike's *Morals and Dogma* or Hall's *The Secret Teachings of All Ages* will substantiate these claims), a person of the bloodline of King David, descended through Jesus and Mary Magdalene, is to be enthroned in a newly reconstructed Temple of Solomon in Jerusalem, ushering in the messianic New Age. This reenthronement of the Davidic line was apparently also the hidden mission of the Knights Templar, who are said to have been the group from which the Freemasons sprang in Scotland after the suppression of the Knights.

The family line from which the "Lion King" of the New World Order will arise may be the European royal von Hapsburgs, currently led by Otto Von Hapsburg, the son of the last empress of Austria, and a prominent member of the Bilderberger Society. The family crest of the von Hapsburgs is the double-headed eagle seen on Masonic regalia, and the family has been historically connected to the Illuminati in a number of ways. Maynard Solomon in his book *Beethoven* states that the composer's "Emperor Joseph Cantata," which characterizes Emperor Joseph von Hapsburg as a lightbringer and a foe of darkness, was commissioned by the Illuminati. The

commemoration may have been based on the Emperor's legalization of Freemasonry in Austria.

Another scion of the family, Archduke Johann von Hapsburg, in the late 1800s provided a huge gift of cash to a parish priest named Father Sauniere, which sum he used to build a temple to Mary Magdalene in France's Renne-le-Chateau. Mary Magdalene, alleged to have borne a child by Jesus--remember? Sauniere was also connected to the Hermetic Brotherhood of Light and the Priory of Sion.

According to J.R. Church, the author of *Guardians of the Grail*, "The Hapsburg dynasty which ruled the Holy Roman Empire since the 19th century, is the direct lineage of the Merovingian bloodline. The Habsburgs are reputed to be the family of the Holy Grail offspring of Mary Magdalene."

At this time the most probable candidate for the position of World King is Hapsburg's son, Karl, who is now thirty-five years old. Karl Von Hapsburg was probably smirking when he said, "The time for the [Hapsburg] dynasty lies in some happier tomorrow when a new Europe... will undergo a time of resurrection."

The Freemasons have always seen themselves as "the manipulators," "the builders," hence the name. One of the secret meanings of the Eye and the Pyramid (which, check a U.S. dollar bill, lacks a capstone, or a culmination, suggesting that it is unfinished) is a portrayal of this intervention in history, the guiding of events in what is cabalistically termed *tikkun,* or the "perfecting" of the universe--through disinformation, murder, seemingly whatever it takes.

The Freemasons seem to take positive delight in the deception they employ. In *Jack the Ripper: The Final Solution*, which implicates the Freemasons in highly believable fashion for the Ripper murders, author Stephen Knight describes the mindset:

> Freemasons applaud violence, terror and crime providing it is carried out in a crafty manner. One section of the [Masonic] notes says humor is all important and the most appalling crimes may be committed under its cloak. The one Ripper letter likely to have been genuine suggests that Jack the Ripper was going about his crimes in just this way, committing ghoulish murders with a Puckish sense of fun. If Masonic supremacy appears in jeopardy, it is reestablished by a show of strength, by crimes of violence, perpetrated to demonstrate... the far reaching power of Freemasonry to initiates the world over...

This is akin to the manipulation we are witnessing. Both Christians and Jews will see the coming World King as the fulfillment of their religious prophecies. What they will not see is a cool precision of cogwheels in motion in the program that enthrones him.

The date the Sumerians and apparently the Masons set for the reappearance of the supernova within the triangle of Zeta Puppis, Gamma Velorum, and Lambda Velorum is around the year 6000 A.L. (*Anno Lucis*) or 2000 A.D.

Who knows? It may even be that the Masons believe their own legends about Sirius, and expect the year 2000 to see the return of the Oannes, the Nommo, the beings from Sirius, those beings no doubt having plans for setting into motion another stage in the civilizing of humanity.

A possible strategy to take advantage of this event is only too obvious. If the Masons really are planning on setting a World King on the throne--and they are--it would be to their advantage to take into consideration millennial beliefs widely held by Christians about a Second Coming around the year 2000, while at the same time taking advantage of Jewish expectations about the Messiah and the rebuilding of the Temple of Solomon. They have even been subliminally introducing the youth of the world to the concept through the recent extremely popular animated feature produced by

Disney Studios: "The Lion King"--if you doubt the explicit rendering of the messianic legend into huggy and merchandisable animal format, then view this film another time.

At the same time that we see the building blocks being pressed into place for the coronation of a World King, we see other curious activities taking place. Pulitzer Prize-winning investigative reporter Tim Weiner, in *Blank Check,* observe that the largest "black" or hidden budget expenditure by the U.S. military and FEMA (the Federal Emergency Management Agency) is in the creation of huge underground bases of the same sort that are mentioned in the wilder of the government-alien collaboration scenarios. Those scenarios of grey aliens ruling underground roosts and preparing for an invasion to be launched from underground, may in fact be disinformation masking what is really taking place: the elite in the government creating a safe underground haven for themselves when the Global 2000 plan goes into place.

The event which may prompt the placing of the key piece in the *Novus Ordo Seculorum* pyramid, the missing capstone, the culmination of the Fool's journey of the Tarot, may well be the catastrophic collapse of the U.S. economic system. The collapse of the U.S. currency and the stock market, as prefigured by the recent crises in the Orient, may well be the straws that will break the American Phoenix's back.

On the other hand, there are those who say that the widespread computer flaw termed the "Millenium Bug" or "Y2K" may perform the same function. The Congressional Research Service describes the problem this way:

> Most computer systems in use today record dates in a format using a two digit number for the year; for example, 96 represents the year 1996. The two digit year field is very common among older systems, designed when memory storage was more expensive, but is also used in many systems built today. With this format, however, the

year 2000 is indistinguishable from 1900. The year data filed in computer programs performs various functions, such as calculating age, sorting information by date, or comparing multiple dates. Thus, when years beyond 1999 are entered under this format, computer systems will fail to operate properly.

Here are some newspaper quotes about the possible effect of the Millenium Bug:

> For some institutions... it will be too late. We could end up with a real catastrophe that could affect many people's lives around the globe... One industry expert has called the defect "the most devastating Virus ever to infect the world's business and information technology systems."
>
> --*Washington Post,* September 15, 1996

> The [IRS] is launching a massive effort to forestall a breakdown of the income tax system when the year 2000 arrives... If the agency cannot quickly revise millions of lines of obscure software code... it will throw the government's financial operations into chaos. Computers throughout government and private industry face the same problem... Experts say the federal government has been dangerously late in recognizing the problem.
>
> --*Los Angeles Times*, October 16, 1996

> The world of finance... is especially vulnerable... The absolute worst case is a global financial meltdown. Clearing and settlement of transactions could break down. Stocks held electronically could be wiped out. Interest might not be properly credited. Deposits or trades might not be credited to an account. The consequences may be catastrophic.
>
> --*Business Week,* August 12, 1996

This book, however, is not a treatise on the Millenium Bug, and so I will not go into all of the possible ramifications of a majority of the computers in the world suddenly being rendered

non-functional, but can you imagine the effects on this country--particularly in the inner city--if welfare and social security checks were not delivered for a few months?

Events of the sort mentioned above would leave the country, ripped apart by strife, ripe for elitist intervention. After push does come to shove, the small groups of survivalists and patriots hanging out in the woods of Oregon will provide little more than possibilities for further Establishment PR coups as these "murderous terrorists" are routed out.

There will be no resistance. Hungry, threatened people would be eager for any answer, especially if it was transmitted in "divine" fashion, and seemingly from the stars.

Regardless of whether there are any bigheaded grey aliens in the bleachers for the gala coronation, whether or not the occultists at the top are able to launch a fleet of UFO-style flying disks to perform synchronized aerobatics over the newly-rebuilt Temple in Jerusalem, wouldn't the appearance of a singularly impressive stellar display, a supernova flaring forth in the midst of a triangle composed of three stars, be a wonderfully impressive and awfully convenient harbinger of the Illuminati World King?

UFOs at the Edge of Reality

A lecture delivered in Atlanta, Georgia, November, 1995

What I intend to explore today are some of my thoughts and opinions about the nature of UFOs and aliens and reality, based upon an interest that goes back to about 1957. I'm going to focus on some material suggesting that UFOs and ETs walk a fine line between reality and thought (or awareness). This is not to suggest that this is an illusory experience, however. I don't believe that the UFO experience is illusory. I want to explore what you might call the edge of manifestation of this UFO phenomenon.

I'm not suggesting that UFOs and aliens are imaginary, nor will I pledge that they are always completely, materially, solidly "real." Actually, I think that their existence challenges the tightly-formulated definitions of reality and imagination, and points up the limitations of those definitions. It seems to me that UFOs sometimes happily cross these lines of demarcation, and defy the definitions. The way they do this gives us some clues to something else, to the nature of reality, what is really real and what is possible, in terms of the understanding and potential expansion of awareness.

Reality is an amorphous concept. My experience suggests that there is an in-between realm in this universe or omniverse where thought and matter meet, like one of those paradoxical graphics by the Dutch artist M.C. Escher, where thought and matter coalesce and partake of each other, where matter manifests from pure awareness, where reality takes form... and that the nurturing bed where matter, reality and, incidentally, where UFOs and ETs manifest, is what we might loosely call awareness, or the mind.

When I say "mind," I'm not limiting that to the purely physical conception, to the computer that resides behind your forehead, to the electrical activity sparking in your brain pan, or whatever, because

that is a rather limited and limiting conception. If we stick with that, we're not going to accomplish what I want, which is to provide a little more familiarity with this borderland reality, with the interface between thought and material solidity.

When I use the term "mind" I am talking about awareness in a generalized sense, in a theoretically absolute sense. My own belief is that awareness is not necessarily limited to an awareness resident in the body, in a meat body. You can believe anything you want, but anyone who has any experience with meditation, with hallucinogens, or with ritual magic is going to have a sense of what I'm suggesting.

Awareness, as far as I am concerned, and in my own experience, ultimately has no limitations whatsoever, beyond the limitations that it conceives for itself. Awareness is potentially a creator, and it can create freedoms and it can create limitations. Awareness, interestingly enough, creates its own conception of itself, which is what it then proceeds to be.

I just want you to try on the concept that awareness may not proceed from solid reality. In fact, I'm not certain that I could prove this to you unless you were willing to entertain this possibility and play around with it a little bit yourself. If you think that the possibilities that I have mentioned are absolutely impossible, then you are maintaining that the beliefs and knowledge of this insignificant tide pool of awareness, the planet Earth, determine the possibilities of the entire universe. This has a corollary that UFO aficionados are often vocally decrying; the absurdity of people who believe that life could only exist on one planet in this vast universe.

I'm also saying that awareness, very loosely defined, is senior to solid matter. It stands above solid matter. Awareness creates thought and belief and, ultimately I think is the creator of solid matter. Reality, I believe is defined and created from this immaterial plane of thought and mind. I think that you create the entirety of

your physical reference, and the only reason this isn't obvious to everyone is that one also creates the belief that one can't create or even influence physicality to the slightest degree with the mind.

I believe that you create your own reality entirely. In addition, you create yourself according to whatever template you choose, in whatever body you choose, on whatever planet you choose, based upon your belief structures.

It follows that if you create your own reality, if you change your beliefs about what you can and can't do, can and can't experience, can and can't see, then you can change your reality. You can restructure your own experience entirely, change your identity entirely, and experience anything whatsoever that you wish. This is perfectly true, at least in my own experience and belief structure.

Reality. The word is a semantic absurdity. Reality, according to my American Heritage dictionary, is "the quality or state of being actual or true." When you look up "actual" or "true" you find that defined as "Consistent with... reality." The definition goes in circles, and is never grounded in anything that is separate and verifiable.

The problem is that the concept of reality is indefinable, and the concept of something being "real" is dependent upon proving that something is "real," with a verifiable existence which is apart from some subjective belief or illusion. Something that can be nailed down using a disinterested measuring stick of comparison. Unfortunately or fortunately, so far as I know, it is impossible to do this with any aspect of reality or of thought. The reason for this can be exhibited by hauling forth the standard argument one encounters for the existence of something called "reality." I don't know how many times I've heard this one. You're talking to the guy at the party and presenting your crazy ideas about how reality isn't real, and the guy stands up and [bangs on the podium]. "See," he says, "This is real. This is solid. This is reality! Try and disprove that!"

The point is that knocking on something, feeling something, feeling the weight of something, does not prove its existence, because you are proving its existence with something that is essentially identical, that is, a solid hand is impacting with a solid podium. You have not removed yourself from the context of that existence and compared it with "reality."

It might as well be meaningless babble that takes place in a dream. You might as well be dreaming that you're banging your hand against a podium and hearing the rap in the dream. In fact, every time you do that, pound on the podium, you are dreaming in a sense, because solidity, solid reality, is not the basis of reality. You can dream that you're touching solidity, you can imagine it, and in fact, once you start working with this thing called imagination, once you regularly exercise your ability to dream up realities and all of the perceptions that are allied with them, you'll also be exercising your ability to mold and transform this one, that which you've considered to be your original reality. You'll theoretically be able to change your reality and everyone else's in any manner you wish. That might seem like a contradiction, but I don't think that it is: that you can change another person's reality. The reason it seems like a contradiction is that you are identifying your awareness with the limited definition of being fixated in a single physical body. You're really not stuck.

In my experience, there really is no "other" whose reality toes you're going to step on if you get a little too frisky with your awareness play, but it is one awareness inhabiting a multitude of bodies. At least until you change that conception, and that reality.

So the "truth" about "reality," bottom line, is that there ain't no such beast. Reality is only what we believe it to be. Reality is only a contingency of awareness. The fact that ten people or a thousand people believe the same thing, does not render the thing any more real in an absolute sense, but it does point out the structural

underpinning of the determinant of this shared illusion called reality, what causes it to manifest in the shapes and forms that it does; and that determinant, that reality-shaper is called "belief." What people believe down deep is what they consider to be reality, and also what they experience. Sometimes this can be different from what they say they believe.

The existence of UFOs can be voted down due to the relative rarity of the experience, and its sometimes insubstantial character. It's the same thing with people who study conspiracy politics. You look into this subject and it becomes quite apparent that the world is run on conspiratorial lines, Rockefeller, Rothschilds, regardless of what Rush says. But the conspiracy is outvoted by the pundits in the media who know better without actually having researched the subject, and so it's not true, it's not real.

What can be accomplished by playing around with belief systems? I think that potentially we can remove finally all barriers to perception, to creation, and theoretically come up with an unlimited awareness, capable of knowing anything, capable of doing anything, and one which is totally free of limiting definition. This naturally smacks of conceptions of godhood, but I'm not trying to get religious here. I'm saying that this is part of the spectrum of possibilities of awareness. Human beings are part of the spectrum of possible awareness manifestations; snails are another.

And in this latter portion of the 20th Century mankind has come up to having awareness characteristics, enough smarts where it is possible to attain states of awareness that were hitherto unimagined, at least by the majority of awareness points on the planet. Of course, this is a belief structure in itself that I am communicating; that we are on this planet, that we are human life forms, that we have certain awareness characteristics, that we inhabit bodies, that there is such a thing as time and human evolution.

Awareness is a fascinating thing and in my belief, if consciousness that has been localized on the planet Earth would finally begin to flow a little and be liberated from some of its former boundaries and self conceptions. Awareness just won't stay in a localized, fixated condition and position forever. That's its nature.

The human condition is an interesting thing. I thought about just what the human condition is, what a human body is, what this fleshly container for our awareness is, and I think I've had some insight on this. It occurred to me that a real reality, something that you know is true, is more satisfying to awareness than simply a dream or a work of art or a movie, let's say.

It's far more interesting to an awareness to be involved in something that is real, something unchangeable, something that cannot be denied, a true story, let's say. And that's what the human body is all about. It is the awareness creating itself solidly inside of the drama, the awareness play making itself a solid portion of the play so that the drama is real!

The awareness of death even creates itself within the illusion that when the reality creation ends, when the structuralization ends, the awareness ceases to exist. This doesn't actually seem to be the case. But the solid creation of the human body--pinch me so that I know I'm not dreaming--is based upon interest. So long as you are an omniscient awareness that exists outside of its creation, knowingly having created or creating that reality or game or whatever, it's not half as interesting. You know that your creation is an illusion, it's a game, a movie, it's pretend.

You, the awareness, know that it is a form of play that you're experiencing and that it really doesn't ultimately matter. But to pretend that it's real, true, that it's reality, to put yourself in the 3-D holographic picture and say that you had no hand in its creation and that the physical creation in fact was responsible for creating you, that you were born into it and had no hand in the creation of the

drama, now that makes for some real involvement, some real fun even if it's only of the tragicomic sort!

Ultimately, consciousness has to flow. It works like a rushing stream of events. No single, localized event ultimately has any meaning; only its localized meaning. It draws its meaning from the larger context. As we expand in terms of our own self conception, as we free ourselves from self-created barriers and limitations, you might say that we are refamiliarizing ourselves with the energy of the ocean of awareness, rather than fixating on the energy swirlings locked in the little tide pool, the tide pool of Homo Sapien's conception and delusion at the tail end of the 20th Century.

There seems to be a cover-up going on about the fact that awareness creates reality, is actually in charge of reality, and that awareness has the capability of creating a belief that something is solid and then perceiving it that way. Who's doing the cover-up? Well, scientists, I suppose, and the guys who don't believe in ESP and the paranormal, and of course if people believe this there wouldn't be any organized religion, so I guess the priests are covering this up, and maybe the societal structure, the elitists who don't want the commoners getting any delusions of grandeur that they can do anything they want and throw the bums out of the Federal Reserve or whatever...

There really is a reality monopolization going on and a continual indoctrination that is forever insisting on the limited nature of awareness. "I'm only human, it's human to err, you only go round once so grab all the gusto you can..." This is the tree of knowledge of good and evil that we're not supposed to pick from. Knowledge which, you might note, is proffered by the phallic serpent, Pandora's box (a cteic symbol), Tower of Babel (another phallic symbol), and the Frankenstein story where the moral is that you shouldn't muck about too much with reality because it's likely to bite you if you do.

The antidote to all this is the *Wizard of Oz,* written by the Freemason L. Frank Baum, where some upstart and her dog stop trembling for a moment and she gets up off her knees and sneaks away from the Scarecrow (Christianity, perhaps, with the crucified scarecrow?), the Tin Man (mechanistic science, perhaps?), and the Lion (animal impulses, perhaps), and Dorothy peers behind the emerald curtain (the green coloration perhaps signifying life, delving into the meaning behind this life). And then the deception becomes apparent.

Who, ultimately, is responsible for the cover-up of the centuries, the cover-up of the unlimited nature of consciousness? I would guess that it is awareness itself, the mass consciousness behind all of the mobile meat bodies, the mass consciousness itself which is covering up this possibility through its subservient minions like the priests and the scientists and the hack storytellers at NBC and so forth.

What would be the reason that mass consciousness, possibly the closest thing to God that we have pinpointed in this sector, has been covering up these cool abilities and transcendent possibilities? Possibly for fun. Possibly to create a game, because games have both freedoms and barriers resident in them, and this makes for interest because if you can do anything whatsoever then you create a completely non-challenging state. Superman, actually, would get pretty bored on Earth, because he wouldn't have any challenges. That's why the authors of the comic book had to invent Kryptonite, to give Superman a challenge with which to create a story.

Another reason for the enforcement of limited states and the cover-up of the real possibilities inherent in life is that there is a gradual unfoldment taking place in which this physical reality, bodies and so forth, is being evolved from non-existence or potential into a state of pure awareness. "God," let us say, taking part in a continual enlargement of its awareness and manifestation. Reality, I

am coming to believe, is based solely and entirely upon the belief structures that awareness holds. Change the underlying beliefs and you will change the perception of reality.

One of the time-honored methods of reality manipulation and creation is ritual magic. Ritual magic, at least according to the more intellectual magicians that I have come across, is simply the channeling of attention through ritual and symbology, concentrating attention in a certain direction so as to achieve a certain result. The channeling of thought so as to create a certain physical manifestation. Basically the imagining of something purely conceptual into reality. Ritual magic as reality creation.

I don't mean to defame any ritual magicians who are in the audience, but it's obvious that engaging in magic is giving some of your power away. It's based upon belief in the limitation of your own power, and that you have to access some higher conception or entity or universe energy channeling device like a symbol, or whatever. You have to go through certain incantations and steps and buff your body with lambs wool, or whatever. It's based upon the belief that you need a servo-mechanism to channel a higher power in order to manifest whatever you want in this world.

More to the point, I would think, would be to locate the limiting belief you have about your own power and ability, to deconstruct that belief by realizing that you created it in the first place, and then to manifest directly whatever it is you want without employing a go-between. Cut out the Baphometic middle man.

It's interesting to note the interplay of the psyche with the techniques of ritual magic and religion. Both religion and magic, these techniques of creating or influencing reality, can be seen to derive at least in part from a hierarchical vision of reality, to contain trappings in their rituals and literature if only subconsciously dramatizing a subjection to kingly and noble forces. A

totalitarianism of the spirit. In other words, I think that ritual magic and religion both have inherent in them the presumption of control by the nobility and a ministering court. If only in the hierarchies of angels. Or the *Wizard of Oz,* again. God as king, as above so below, regal robes, and the altar as the throne of the almighty. Jesus is coming - everybody look busy.

Actually, the study of reality creation and manipulation, in my opinion has been greatly furthered by the ritual magicians. In terms of the study of the creation and manipulation of realities, there is a succession of people who have contributed to this evolving field of study.

Certainly a lot of people contributed to this line of thought, but the most distilled transmission in this century, as far as I'm concerned, began this century with Aleister Crowley, who of course was also one of the first ET contactees with his channeling of the entity Lam. Several people have commented that Crowley's Lam bears a close resemblance to a grey alien.

Was Crowley a black magician? Did he engage in human sacrifice? I frankly don't know for certain, but with his synthesis of Eastern and Western magical and religious thinking, you can see that Crowley knew that these systems are basically symbolic interpretations overlaid on and hopefully accessing something more amorphous, and that this, not the symbolism itself, is where the power derives from.

I'll put it another way: I get the impression that Crowley knew that all of this stuff comes from unmanifest, non-symbolized awareness, and that there is a stepping down that takes place from pure awareness by which symbols and realities are created.

The next guy in line in this transmission might be Jack Parsons, head of the Pasadena, California chapter of the Ordo Templi Orientis in the 1940s, who I think if he didn't teach L. Ron Hubbard everything he knew, then he at least quickened Hubbard's

quest. Hubbard himself had lots of penetrating insights, although I would caution people about getting involved in his organization, which in my experience will siphon off all of your awareness and energy in the service of the Scientological cause. Hubbard also, although he came pretty close to copping to the fact that we create our own reality, also carefully hid that fact, because if you create your own reality you aren't quite so likely to subjugate yourself to "Source," which is what Hubbard termed himself.

Returning to the UFO/ET experience, from what I can tell, one of the things that makes it difficult to define and understand is that these are multifaceted phenomena, and there are a number of different origins for the experience. People assume that there is one explanation for UFOs/ETs, they latch on to the one they are most comfortable with, and they insist that one explanation explains all incidents and possibilities. I think that there are at least five different possible explanations for UFOs and ETs, in the following suggested categories:

(1) Encounters with aliens. People may have had encounters with extraterrestrial craft and their occupants, or with unexplained denizens of this world that seem to fit this definition; i.e. inner earth dwellers, or pixies or fairies, or whatever. Non-human encounters, let's say. This is an unproven possibility.

(2) Spiritual or non-material entities. This is the crossover dimension that I have been discussing, where reality slides in and out of thought and imagination and possibility and doesn't necessarily manifest as solidity or material reality.

(3) Government military operations involved with advanced craft and/or disinformation and/or psychological operations in which people are led to believe they have had encounters with aliens. I have the feeling that this is the source of some, although not all, of the more elaborate encounters over the last fifty years.

(4) The work of hoaxers.

(5) Misperception and delusion and fish stories.

So, depending on the incident, there are at least five possible evaluations and categories of experience. UFOs and ETs cannot be explained with only one explanation, and once you start compartmenting the experience this way, things become more understandable.

An example: As I recall, about two hundred years ago, the European scientific establishment declared that the panda bear was a myth. The rarity of encounters with panda bears made these men believe that the things didn't exist.

Now, can you imagine what the scene would have been like if the same forces had been at work on the "panda bear myth" as are at work in this century in relation to UFOs and ETs? Some guy in Leipzig would be running around in a fake panda suit, faking close encounters. The British military and the M15 intelligence agency would be doing advanced testing of fake, robotic pandas, and the CIA would be doing mind control experiments where guys were hypnotized and were convinced that they had a close encounter with a panda. The popular press would be full of this stuff. People would be dreaming of panda abductions. Disinformational panda manifestos and channelings from Panda Central at the center of the Earth or Saturn would be cranked out all over the place. We'd have faked panda autopsies. And the debunkers would be oh-so-seriously deriding the possibility that pandas could possibly exist. Like the UFO scene as it stands, things could get pretty confusing. Understanding the UFO experience has been confused by the propagation of hoax material, by the deluded and the true believers, and by the military trying to cover up its little schemes.

One proof of the unreality of reality is that so many totally unreal things that violate our conception of what is true continue to happen, regardless of how much government funding the materialists get. My own beliefs about UFOs and their inhabitants

are perhaps influenced by two close encounters that I have had this lifetime, which I'd like to describe to you.

I was talking about some LSD experiences to a friend back in the late 1960s, and I said something to the effect that the hallucinations I had were incredible while under the influence of the drug. My friend responded, "They're not hallucinations." That struck me as a profound insight at the time, and still does. LSD and other hallucinogenics do not so much cause hallucinations as they cause a relaxing of one's barriers to experience and then the whole strange world rushes in.

By the way, I'm not recommending LSD or other drugs, I personally stopped this line of inquiry before 1970. But... the time of this anecdote is 1968, and I was tripping on mescaline in the San Bernardino Mountains outside of Los Angeles. I wandered off from the group of people I was with and climbed to the bed of a pristine canyon, and perched on a boulder amidst a trickling creek. I relaxed in order to ponder the fate of the universe. And that was when I saw Her, or perhaps just felt Her with complete perceptual clarity. She didn't have a body, but my sense was that the stones, the water, the trees, the air... these things were Her flesh. It was, maybe, The Mother, the Mother Goddess who manifests this world... at least I thought so at the time.

This may have been the same entity who has been worshipped since ancient times via such vehicles as the Mystery Religions, perhaps the same being as seen in Virgin Mary manifestations, Isis, Astarte, the White Goddess... but I was awe-stricken with the sudden realization of what was what, and an amazement that I could have ever forgotten that the world was the flesh of the Mother, my Mother.

And that was when she noticed that I was sitting there, and I thought I perceived surprise. She vanished out of there at warp speed, and I was left assuming--what could I assume?--that I was

profane and undeserving of seeing Her and touching the hem of Her garment if she had been wearing one. Remember, she didn't have a body, but she was perfectly perceptible and understandable to me. So that was my first encounter with an uncommon being.

The second encounter was about four years later, in 1972. By this time I had knocked off the mescaline and LSD. Now, this was in the days before Whitley Streiber, and the media hadn't really latched on to grey aliens. But I woke up in the middle of the night in Los Angeles with one of these guys, the prototypical alien grey, staring me in the face, right up close. It terrified me, and I jumped out of bed and ran out of my bedroom into the living room. When I returned to the bedroom the visitor was gone.

I put this experience aside for twenty years, until I read the book *Communion,* which verified certain details of the experience, the primary one being the color and texture of the creature's skin... which was not grey, but blue grey, with the texture and reflective quality of clay... plasticine. That verification of detail was what made the needle swing over toward "close encounter" rather than "particularly vivid dream." I don't have those types of dreams. My nightmares don't feature aliens... and so now I am willing to accept that this might have been an actual encounter, one which may have taken place at the edge; at the edge of manifestation.

Regardless of the factuality or verifiability of these two encounters, I expect they did change my way of thinking about the UFO/alien phenomenon. These encounters violated all scientific laws and seemed instead to reside in something like a crossover state between fantasy and reality. Both of these entities simply vanished when confronted, and I began to feel that this might be the realm from which a good number of these encounters proceed.

A tangent that backs up this notion: it's interesting that a lot of ritual magicians have used sex as a tool for accessing different states of consciousness, for providing "oomph" to their workings.

Although I'm not a member of the Ordo Templi Orientis group, I have a copy of their Gnostic mass, and it's a straight sexual symbolization, dramatization. Crowley was very much into this, Kenneth Grant, Austin Osman Spare, the Templars, the Mystery Religions, tantric yoga, even some of the Christian adepts like Baron von Zinzendorf's Christian-Freemasonic group who got their kicks from rhapsodizing about the ecstasy of using Christ's side wound as an orifice for their penetration.

Sex can provide an access port into energies that are useful in manifesting other realities... This, as in the case with drugs, may have something to do with the relaxing of inhibitions to experience. Sometimes, though, things are manifested that are not desired. In the Hebrew Talmud masturbation is warned against because with each act are created incubi or succubi or disembodied entities which they refer to as Qlippoth. Certainly it's no secret that in a lot of UFO abduction cases the aliens make free with the abductees, even going so far as having sex with them.

I also want you to note that researchers have long connected poltergeist, "noisy ghost" phenomena with the presence of pubescent children, children phasing into sexual maturity. Certainly a lot of energies are aroused during this period, energies which apparently manifest Qlippoth-like entities and even impact with the physical environment and toss dishes around and so forth.

I wonder if there's a correlation between alien abduction and sexual frustration? I know a woman who had an alien encounter and impregnation, or thought that this had happened to her, and she dramatized all of the signs of pregnancy, including the enlargement of her stomach. She's a New Ager so she wouldn't have appreciated my down-to-earth suggestion that she get a sonogram and find out what's really going on. Anyway, the aliens apparently intervened at the last moment and spirited the alien half-breed away before birth. I

didn't question the woman closely enough to really have an informed opinion about what was going on--there are such things as what are termed hysterical pregnancies, and fathers sometimes dramatize the characteristics of pregnancy, you know--so I don't know the nature of what actually took place. But what I am pointing out is the sexual and birth connection to the UFO/ET experience.

Another matter of high curiosity is that ET abductions often contain elements which seem to be able to be traced to events which took place at the time of the abductee's birth. This was brought out by Alvin H. Lawson in a paper about what he calls the "Birth Memory Hypothesis." Lawson did a study of abductions in the 1970s and noted that in three hundred or so transcripts of persons who believed that they had been abducted by ufonauts, birth imagery was "abundant" in their descriptions of the events. These narratives linked "the fetus with the abductee, the placenta with the UFO, the cervical opening with UFO doorways and the umbilical cord with levitating light beams or pillars..."

Lawson commented that "most" abduction accounts are "dominated" by prenatal details. I know this sounds speculative and pretty wild, but Lawson did additional studies in which he compared abduction sequences with events which actually took place during the person' birth, and noted striking correlations. For instance, in the case of one woman who had a breech birth (rear end exiting first), she got aboard the UFO "by being vacuumed up a tunnel, through a small door, and into a tiny bubble-like room (like the amniotic sac), where she remained throughout her experience. She exited the UFO in a unique manner..."

Remember, this woman was a breech birth. "She 'sat down' over a trap door in the floor and sank to the ground. Another subject, a breech birth, who was born feet first, exited the UFO by walking backwards until she was outside. A forceps-aided... breech birth, she said that 'they' pushed on her head, slipping her outside; later she

said that during the examination 'they' moved her body to 'center' her."

Bud Hopkins says that he has regressed over 160 abductees whose narratives were loaded with reproductive imagery. Here the veil seems to have been pulled back a little, and we see the direct influence of the human psyche, at least in its sexual and birth aspects, directly influencing the UFO and ET experience, as if the psychic portion of the contactee is phasing into, shading into, shaping and influencing the reality of the contact, the actual circumstances. Might this be straight delusion? Sure, in many instances I'm certain that this is the case, but I don't think that we're talking delusion in all cases.

It's reminiscent of the anecdote where the shrink shows the woman a Rorschach test and she slaps him. I think it has more to do with the concept that Aldous Huxley talked about in *Doors of Perception,* that the mind functions, at least in part, as a reduction valve on experience, a tuner that limits the bandwidth of what is perceived, and puts perception into a manageable or understandable format, and perhaps even shapes the experience into what is dictated by the content of the awareness, particularly through its beliefs. I suggest that not only does awareness interpret what is perceived, UFOs and ETs and whatnot, but that it also creates these phenomena at both the mass consciousness and individual level.

Another suggestion that our experience of UFOs and ETs is influenced by our mindset is that a lot of these experiences portray far stranger motifs, ones which come from Freemasonry and the Mystery Religions and the New World Order.

The Frenchman Claude Vorilhon was taking a pleasant hike in the mountains one day, so he relates, when he saw a UFO hovering nearby, the craft bearing a Star of David with a swastika inside the emblem. A glowing childlike figure stepped forth from the craft. The child conversed with Vorhilon, bestowing a new name on him,

Rael, and informed the man that the reason he had been chosen to be contacted was because France was the birthplace of earthly democracy (i.e. during the French Revolution). The being entrusted Vorhilon with the mission of building an embassy in which the aliens, which Vorilhon calls the Elohim from the biblical reference, could meet with dignitaries of Earth, with the stated purpose of spreading "Peace, Love, Fraternity."

Vorilhon was informed that humans had been created by the Elohim, godlike space travelers who were also skilled in the arts of DNA alteration and cloning. Vorilhon was now to assist the Elohim in preparing mankind for the final age of Revelation. Vorilhon, having adopted the name "Rael," now insists to his numerous followers that "a world government and a new monetary system must be created. A single language will serve to unify the planet." He and his followers sport the Star of David/swastika emblem that he observed on the side of the UFO, and they practice a form of "sensual meditation" which may be similar to tantric yoga as practiced by the OTO and other ritual magicians.

Quite obvious to anyone with a conspiratorial bent who has studied the literature are the New World Order/Illuminati references within this UFO encounter and the mission that was imparted to Rael. The childlike alien might as well have been on a mission from George Bush.

Another case is that of Betty Andreasson. Taking place in 1967, the events of Adreasson's abduction were later brought out through the use of hypnosis. Andreasson recalled being kidnapped from her home and spirited into what appeared to be a spacecraft. She was transported to an unknown location and then taken through a series of underground passageways that she believed to be part of a city.

Arriving at an underground chamber, Andreasson experienced, in a manner which she describes as highly painful as well as emotional, a kind of mythic psychodrama enacted before her that

may or may not have been different from the kind of mystical dramatizations enacted in Mystery Religions and other mystic cults. She saw a huge bird, that she estimated be fifteen feet in height, which resembled an eagle but having a more elongated neck. The creature was apparently alive, but as Andreasson watched, it began to transform. It began to glow with a light and heat that was so intense it caused her pain.

When the heat and light vanished the bird was gone and she was gazing on flickering embers. As Andreasson stared at the embers she saw a worm wriggling in the ash.

"Now, looks like a worm," she described it in her hypnosis, "a big fat worm. It just looks like a big fat worm, a big grey worm just lying there."

Also during the experience, Andreasson was told by her abductors: "We are going to measure you for light... You have not completely understood the word that you have. You are not completely filled with light."

Andreasson said, "I believe that I'm filled with the light! I believe, I believe that I'm filled with the light!" Andreasson also recalled that, "They called my name, and repeated it again in a louder voice. I said, 'No, I don't understand what this is all about, why I'm even here.' And they, whatever it was, said that 'I have chosen you.'"

"'For what have you chosen me?'

"'I have chosen you to show the world.'

"Are you God?" Andreasson asked, "Are you the lord God?"

"I shall show you as your time goes by."

The following is part of an interview with Andreasson conducted by Raymond Fowler:

Fowler: Have they [the UFOs] anything to do with what we call the second coming of Christ?

Andreasson: They definitely do.

Fowler: When is this going to occur?

Andreasson: They know the Master is getting ready, and very close.

Since we are ranging cosmically far afield in our search for connections, it should be noted that Eye in the Triangle emblems have been seen on some UFO and the uniforms of their occupants, and that in recent years a significant percentage of two thousand UFO sighting reports in Belgium describe triangular craft with lights at each point of the triangle, and another light in the center of the triangle.

Anyway, the Lords of Light and various other references relating to light, the Star of David, the Phoenix, the Eye in the Triangle... All of these symbols convey a very earthly origin and are often seen in accounts of encounters and abductions. These are symbols from the mythology of the Freemasons and the Illuminati.

As I mentioned in my book *Saucers of the Illuminati,* incidents like these strongly suggest a Freemasonic/Mystery Religion/ Illuminati motivation and/or manipulation. Both American and British intelligence agencies are still much aligned to Freemasonic goals, and so this might point out an intelligence agency connection, say in terms of staged incidents, mind control, whatever. That's the argument that I make in *Saucers of the Illuminati,* but since then I've come to see that there are other possible explanations.

There is the possibility that, since Freemasons and their ilk are quite involved in ritualism and magic, that this might be a straight magical transmission evoking these UFO events and even influencing them from a non-physical standpoint. These events may be summoned by Illuminati ritual.

At the very least I would suggest that these symbols might have crept into the common subconscious coin, from which position

they are dramatized in reality. Again, I am not suggesting that incidents like these are examples of delusion, but that we may be looking at something quite different: that the content of the mind can influence and shape the manifestation of real events.

Another clue suggesting the UFO experience draws part of its meaning from the human experience or the subconscious or mass consciousness experience is that one can see that one of the major concerns of this era is, and should be, the interface of human consciousness with outer space. We have finally evolved tools, that is rockets and other modes of propulsion, for travel among the planets, and are getting to the point where the creation of a faster than light drive is possible. We can see this as conceivable, and something that mankind may accomplish in the near future.

We might conceive that humans or mass consciousness may be pondering upon these things, upon this position in time and the possibilities inherent in it. And these experiences with spacelings may in part depend upon and be flavored by this focus of attention, but also possibly because we have not objectified our experience of outer space yet, we have not solidified our beliefs and views, standardized our interpretation of the possibilities of this experience.

UFOs may wholly or partly constitute an "imagining into" future possibilities. Perhaps a testing out of realities that we are going to put on or manifest in the future. A trial run in a new pair of shoes. Maybe like the Rorschach test, space is relatively amorphous to us at this moment, in our present perception, a somewhat neutral oracle that we are reading meanings into, that we are beginning to play with.

I suspect, although since I have not conducted the experiment I cannot prove, that there are major correlations between the type of UFO/ET encounters one has and one's chronic emotional tone... i.e. anger, apathy, grief, whatever; one's obsessions, philosophy, and material circumstances, roughly gauged.

I have the feeling that a statistical analysis would show significant correlations between people who feel that they are victimized and abused by life and those who feel that they are victimized and abused by ETs. I have the feeling that people who have a generally airy-fairy New Agey view of life might tend to encounter benevolent space brothers who impart homilies about transcendence and golden eternity. Naturally, this would not correlate on a one-to-one basis, it wouldn't always be true, but I think that a decent statistical sampling would show that I am on to something here.

Again, I am not saying that these non-human contacts with humans are not sometimes real. I am saying that we tend to attract experiences that correlate with our mind and emotional sets, and that we ultimately create our own reality, including traffic jams, bad television shows, toothaches, trips to the corner grocery, being a human on the planet Earth, and having our mind blown by an ET encounter. I think that we are God playing at being human, until we realize the fact and decide to consciously play at something different.

Another clue to the UFO/ET experience is the alien face. It seems to be an interpretation and distillation of information that is too overwhelming to comprehend, and so the perception is simplified into a context that can be understood.

I have the suspicion that at least in some instances the ET experience is so big, so amorphous, so alien, that it is simplified in its comprehension, into the grey alien face. And why might I think that? Because the prototypical grey alien face is based upon the least information units that you can interpret and still come up with a face. It can be reduced to three dots in an inverted triangular shape, and given that as the basis of a face, the details can logically be filled in to form a tiny chin and a big head. It works aesthetically, in

the logic of the mind's eye. The triangular shape, the three dots in an inverted triangle, dictate the bulbous head as visual balance.

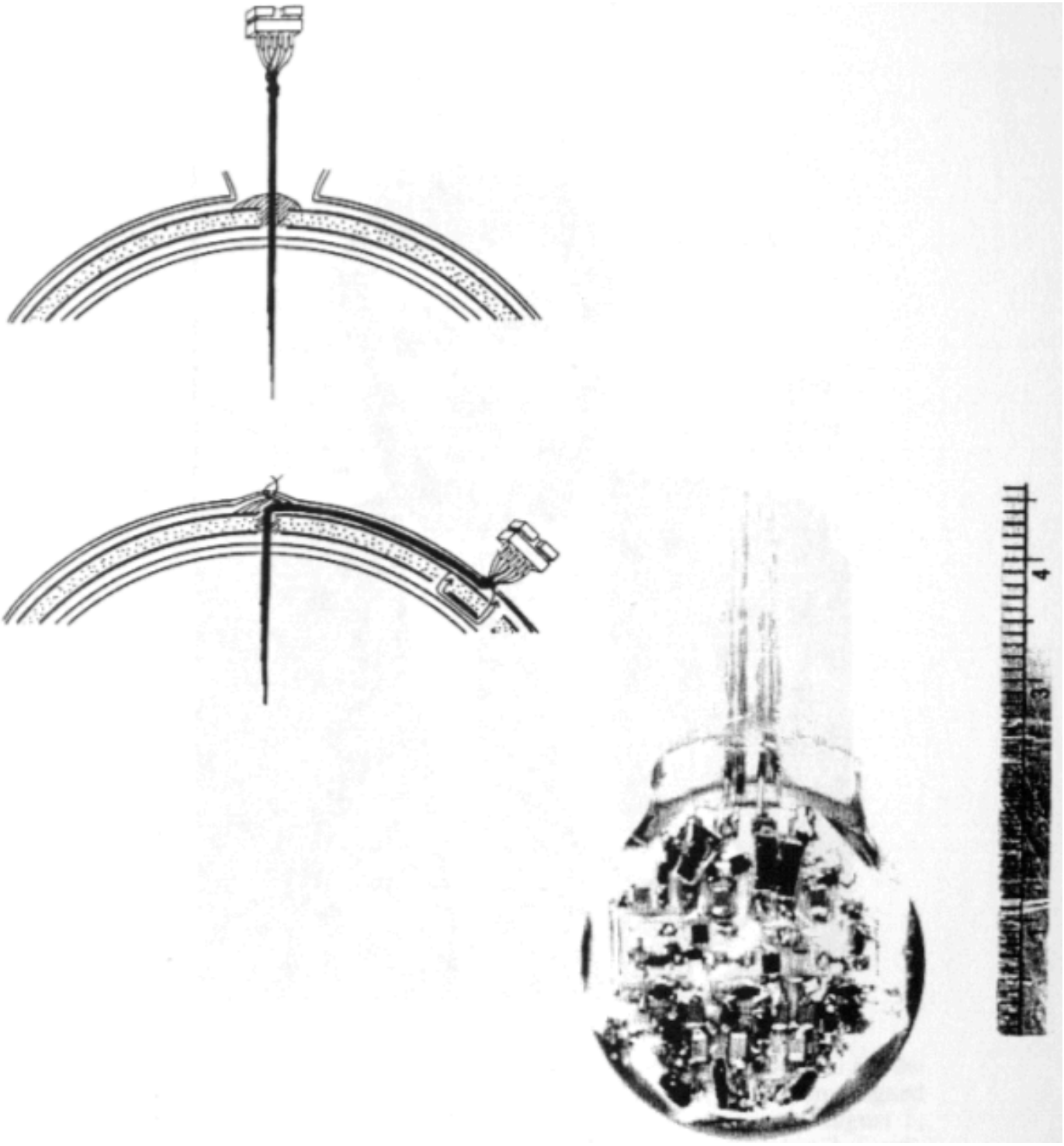
I am led to believe that perhaps the image is a distillation of an experience that is very amorphous but real, which offers a dearth of information--or perhaps too much information--to the contactee, and then the details are filled in by the mind. This is one function of the mind, to fill in the details. As a face, the grey alien is the ultimate in simplicity.

This is just conjecture, but is it possible that contactees and abductees in certain instances are confronted by something far more energy than entity, and that this energy field or nexus is channeled through the mind and interpreted based upon the least possible information units into the simplistic alien grey face?

You can see this in various oracular systems like the I Ching and the Tarot and runes and tea leaves and reading animal entrails and the Magic 8-Ball. These are purposeful destructurings of the field of information into random images, rendering the field itself amorphous and virtually meaningless, so that meaning can manifest, ready to deliver messages that are not otherwise available to the conscious mind. Like the William Burroughs Brion Gyson cut-up technique of literature. James Joyce must have seen this when he wrote his randomized *Finnegans Wake*...

John Lennon was pointing this out with his "I Am the Walrus" which is a randomized song text with recurring imagery of oneness and omniscient control by the Walrus, perhaps a bow to Lewis Carroll. This random fracturing of message is certainly the world of the abstract painter, like Jackson Pollock, and his swirling splatter canvases, which I find irresistible.

Ultimately I believe that there really is no universe, no "field" as it were, and no past and future. No time. I believe that we create the past to justify the present, and that we can create the past in any form we want. You create your own reality.



Implant technology pioneered by Dr. Jose Delgado.

Dr. Jolly West.

TOP SECRET
EYES ONLY

THE WHITE HOUSE
WASHINGTON

September 24, 1947.

MEMORANDUM FOR THE SECRETARY OF DEFENSE

Dear Secretary Forrestal:

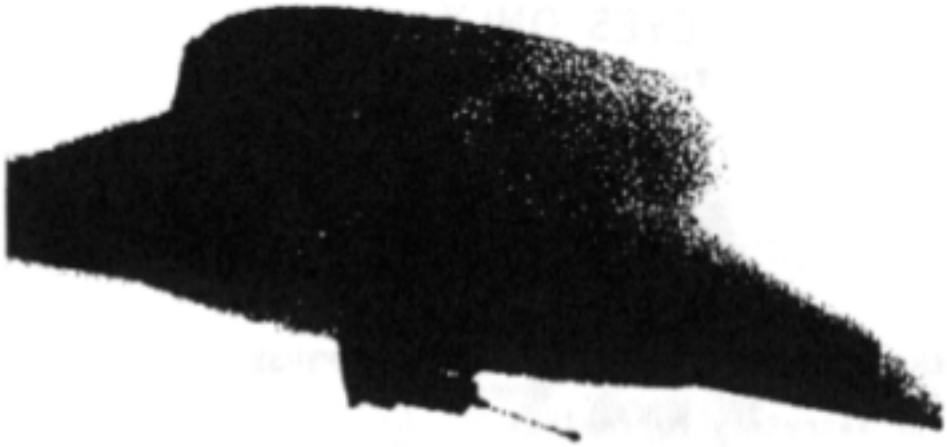
As per our recent conversation on this matter, you are hereby authorized to proceed with all due speed and caution upon your undertaking. Hereafter this matter shall be referred to only as Operation Majestic Twelve.

It continues to be my feeling that any future considerations relative to the ultimate disposition of this matter should rest solely with the Office of the President following appropriate discussions with yourself, Dr. Bush and the Director of Central Intelligence.

Harry Truman

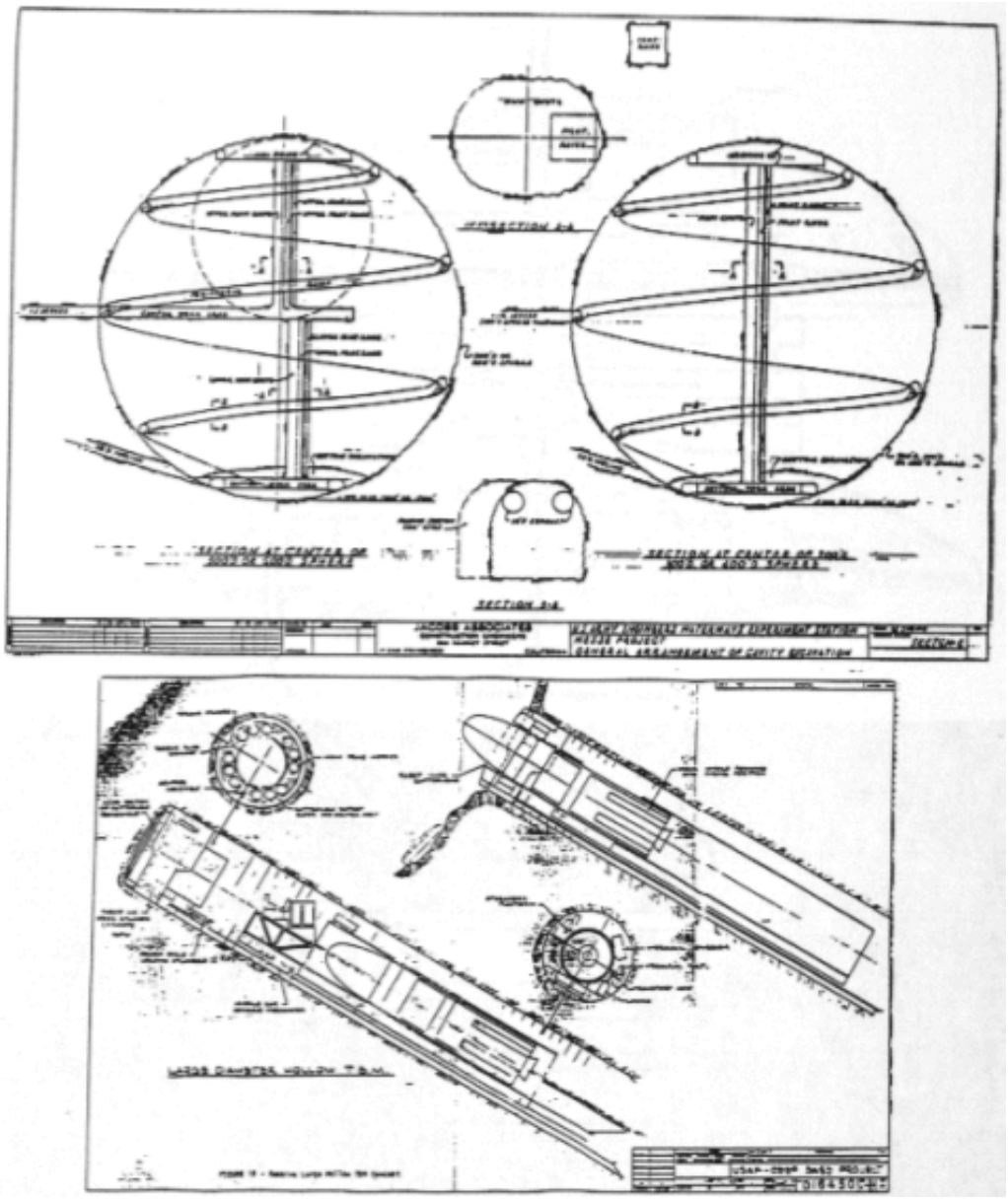
TOP SECRET
EYES ONLY

A White House document to Secretary of State James Forrestal on the creation of Majestic Twelve or MJ-12 dated September 24, 1947 and signed by President Harry Truman. Forrestal died mysteriously on August 1, 1950 and was replaced on the Mj-12 commitee by General Walter B. Smith. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes (The Dark Side of the Moon)* by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).

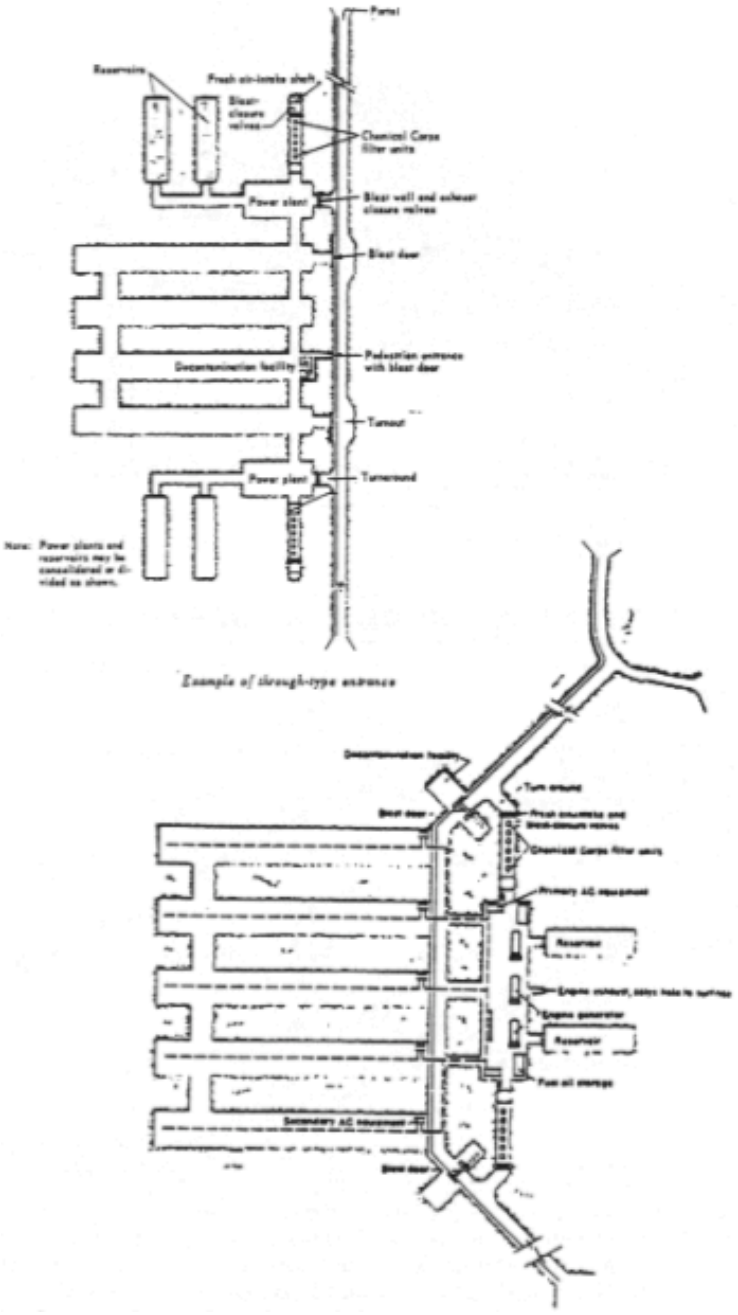


Alleged photo from SS files of a Haunebu II in flight circa 1944. Note the Panzer tank canon mounted underneath the craft. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes (The DarkSide of the Moon)* by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).

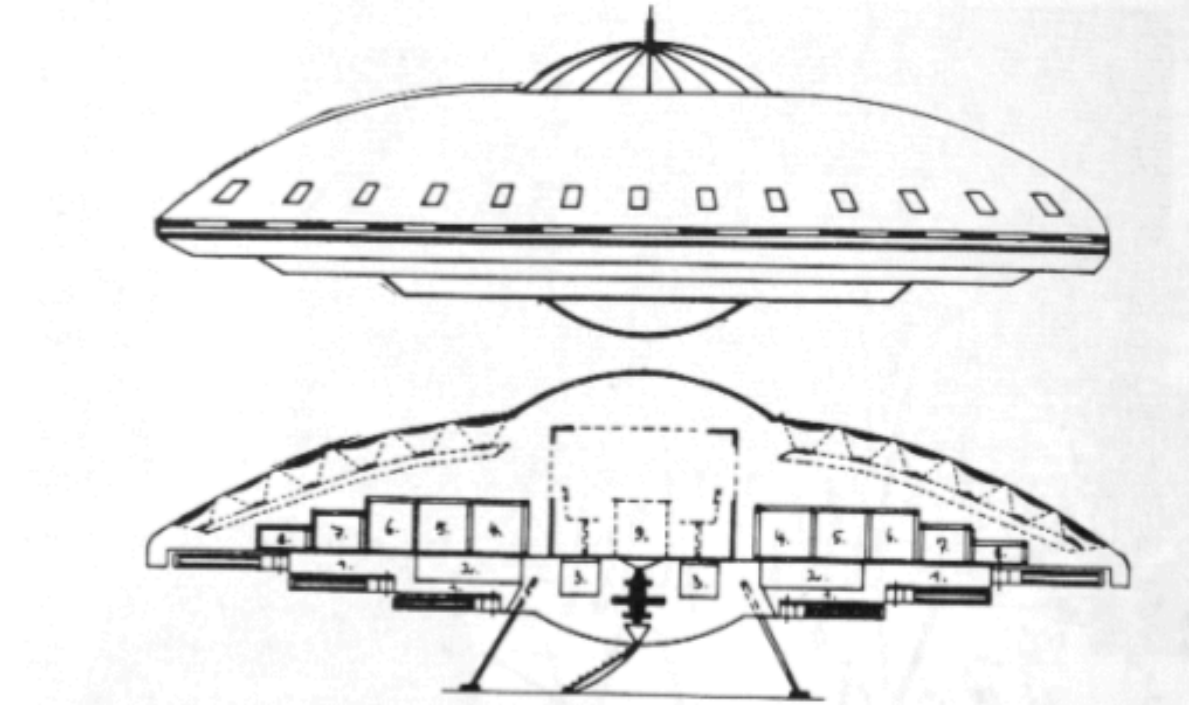
Alleged photocopy of SS plans for a Haunebu III being designed in 1945. From the German book *Die Dunkle Seite Des Mondes (The Dark Side of the Moon)* by Brad Harris (1996, Pandora Books, Germany).

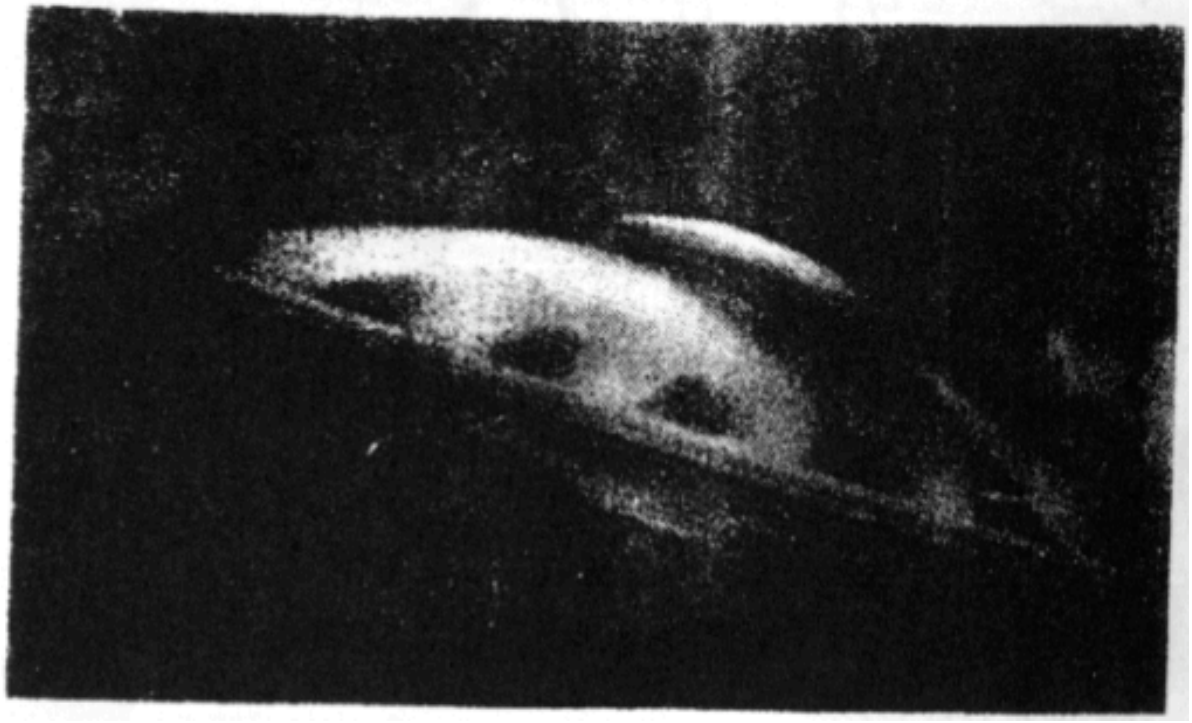


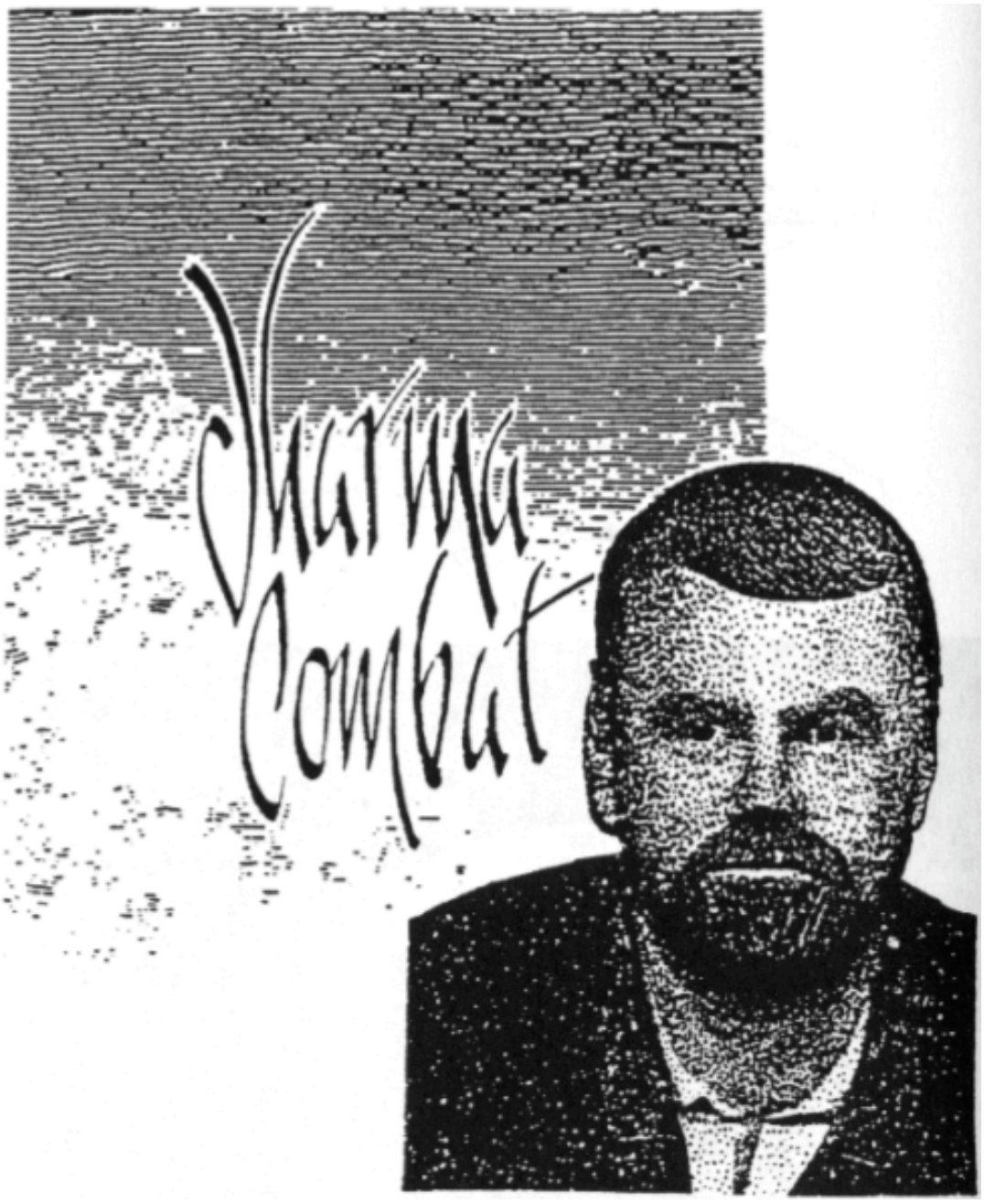
Above: Two methods of constructing a large, deep-underground cavity. Both utilize central shafts, a spiralling perimeter tunnel and work areas at the top and bottom of the area to be excavated. Excavation would proceed downward, starting at the top of the designated sphere. From the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers technical manual *Feasibility of Constructing Large Underground Cavities, Vol. III*. Below: An illustration from the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers technical manual *Tunnel Boring Machine Technology for a Deeply Based Missile System. Vol. I, Part 1*. Thanks to Richard Sauder and his book *Underground Bases and Tunnels: What Is the Government Trying To Hide?*



Examples of underground manufacturing and storage facilities from the U.S. Army Corps of Engineers technical manual *Design of Underground Installations in Rock: Protective Features and Utilities*. Thanks to Richard Sauder and his book *Underground Bases and Tunnels: What Is the Government Trying To Hide?*







Jim Keith, 1949-1999.